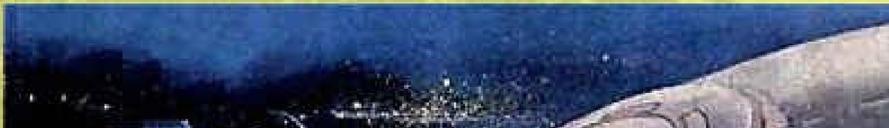
ORIGIN

The NINETEENTH CENTURY EMERGENCE of the 20TH CENTURY BREAKAWAY CIVILIZATIONS



WALTER BOSLEY

THE EMPIRE OF THE WHEEL TRILOGY & THE SECRET MISSIONS SERIES

ORIGIN

The NINETEENTH CENTURY
EMERGENCE
of the
20TH CENTURY
BREAKAWAY CIVILIZATIONS

WALTER BOSLEY

Corvos Books/LCL
California USA

Origin: The Nineteenth Century Emergence
of the 20th Century Breakaway Civilizations

Copyright 2015 by WALTER BOSLEY

All Rights Reserved

Use of any part of this book in any medium or form
must be credited to the author.

Inquiries may be addressed to:

Corvos/LCL Publishing
7231 Boulder Ave #505
Highland CA 92346

Lostamazon9@yahoo.com

FIRST PUBLICATION DECEMBER 2015

Cover Design: Walter Bosley
Art Images: Charles Dellschau, courtesy Stephen Romano; and

Published in the USA

WARNING: The publisher is a real bastard when it comes to plagiarism and the author has worked too hard to just give the fruit of his labor to some snot-nosed little would-be anarchist spending all his money on dope and video games, so God help you if you upload and distribute this material without permission from this publisher or author. If you’re truly poor and would like to read the book, just email me.

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

This book would not have happened without the strong urging of my associate and friend Dr. Joseph P. Farrell whose diligent guidance in the field of non-fiction alternative history and high octane speculation has been invaluable to me. I would also like to thank Jeroen Van Straaten who invited me to present the basics of this material at the 2015 Secret Space Program & Breakaway Civilization Conference in Austin which is an essential event for any reader of this book and was an outstanding opportunity for me to address his international audience. I must also acknowledge Margaret Weston, Carlos Garza and Chuck McCorkle for their never-ending logistical assistance, support and encouragement at the conferences and in the blogosphere. These three are the folks you can always count on, often at their own inconvenience.

Also, if it weren’t for the graciousness of Stephen Romano, my task of shedding light on the importance of the Sonora Aero Club and the mysterious NYMZA/NJMZa in the story of the breakaway civilizations would be much more difficult. Finally, I must praise the always reliable field support from Rafe Marhefka, Sesh Heri, Craig Guggolz and Stan Shambaugh.

Thank you all!

WBB
November 2015

This Book Is Dedicated To

PETE NAVARRO
DENNIS CRENSHAW
MICHAEL BUSBY
THEO PAIJMANS
SEAN CASTEEL

STEPHEN ROMANO
And JOSEPH P. FARRELL

And To The Memory Of

CHARLES A. A. DELLSCHAU
ETTA PLACE
HARRY LONGABAUGH
ROBERT L. PARKER
FRANK ROSASCO
KEVIN SMITH
GEORGEANN HUGHES
JEF HARVEY

And to two men who introduced me to
the enigmatic Wilsons and this strange history…

CHARLES BOSLEY & JACOB CORBIN

INTRODUCTION

I’m going to keep this brief.

After having written four books based upon elements of research on what I originally thought was an unrelated subject, I found myself with a different opinion of the origin of breakaway civilizations than was popular. When asked to make a presentation at the 2015 Breakaway Civilization & Secret Space Program Conference, I chose said opinion as my topic. Following a receptive response to my presentation, I was encouraged by an enthusiastic colleague and friend, Joseph P. Farrell, to write this book. And here it is.

First, let me state my position.

The breakaway civilizations of our time are not the product of Nazi Germany, nor are they product of the postwar military industrial complex, and they are certainly not the result of reverse engineering of a crashed ET spacecraft.

Now onto my points:

1. There was a technologically advanced human civilization in remote ancient history.

2. Secret societies and esoterically motivated hermetic organizations sought to recover and reconstruct the lost knowledge and technology of the forgotten ancient civilizations.

3. The technology of the 19th Century airship builders was based on the lost technology of forgotten civilizations preserved and rediscovered.

4. Charles Dellschau was not simply an outsider artist – he was telling the truth.

5. American airship builders developed aero technology in the first ‘black project’ launched at the end of the Civil War.

6. 20th Century Nazi Germany technology linked to the modern secret space program and breakaway civilization originated with the Prussian airship builders.

This is a book of speculations based upon historical research and personal analysis. I could be wrong.

But I don’t think so. Not entirely, anyway.

PART ONE

THE MISTY BACKDROP

CHAPTER ONE

THE NAMELESS ONES

Elder Ones: The Default Extraterrestrial Nature of the Gods

Let us get something out of the way.

The biggest clue as to where the gods come from is usually hiding in plain sight. In fact, it could not even be called hiding. Gods, we are often told, come from the heavens – the skies.

In the Yahwist Monotheisms -- Judaism, Christianity and Islam – we are told the heavens declare the glory of God (Psalm 19:1), that the 'Sons of God' were 'on the Earth' or came down to the Earth and took to wife the daughters of men (Genesis 6:1-4), and that God sends the rains down from the sky where He rules (Quran 22:63). The Egyptians, Sumerians, Celts, Greeks, Hindus, Aztec and Maori all have sky gods. The Zoroastrian Ahura Mazda is famously depicted as emerging from a winged disc, which puts an even finer point on the idea of the concept.

The theme is prevalent in nearly all cultures in world history. Gods come from the sky and thus are, by definition, extraterrestrials.

But so what?

What are the Gods *really*? 'Extraterrestrial' answers only part of the question. Anything could be extraterrestrial. A bird, a lizard, a monkey could all be from somewhere not of this Earth, but they would still be feathered, scaled or hairy. The Gods were in some cases two of those three at the same time (Quetzalcoatl). What if they were nothing more than humans whose civilization was more technologically advanced than our own? What if they were humans who had simply mastered consciousness to the extent that what we call 'supernatural' and 'psychic' was merely *technique* to them? Would not such people seem as Gods?

To most people they would, so let us proceed with this initial assumption for the sake of discussion and, frankly, because it makes practical sense. The existence and nature of extraterrestrial civilizations has been explored elsewhere and quite endlessly it continues to fascinate many people. By now, the concept is proliferated well enough that you get the point. Let us agree on an assumption for the sake of the big fat speculation we're going to spend the rest of this book exploring: The Gods are likely extraterrestrials or their close cousins, the ‘interdimensionals’.

Or maybe the Gods are simply mortal beings possessed of advanced knowledge and would have us *believe* they are ‘gods’. That is a very important distinction because, as I have argued elsewhere (the *Empire of the Wheel* trilogy), people have been motivated to do many things under the influence of believing that they are serving gods. This book concerns itself with what people have done according to human motivations, whether we think gods exist or not. I propose that the gods in question may have more likely have been extraterrestrial mortal humans with advanced knowledge and technology.

With that basic assumption we can continue along this thread, for in a discussion of the breakaway civilizations, the topic of extraterrestrials cannot be disregarded. In a discussion specifically of aerospace technology developed by breakaway civilizations, again extraterrestrials must be addressed. In my opinion, the technology that will be presented and examined herein reveals a thread leading back to the lost technology of forgotten civilizations of human antiquity – civilizations which remaining legend attributes to the Gods. I say it was in remote antiquity where we find any connection to anything remotely extraterrestrial in the modern breakaway civilizations prior to the 20th century.

With the Gods defined more specifically as mortal human extraterrestrials, we have a contextual handle with which to proceed. The sky gods were from places off this planet and influenced humanity here with their technology, a technology that would trickle its way down through time to the era of the 19th century airship builders.

But not all Gods appeared to us directly from the skies and this little fact is pertinent to the thesis of this book.

Under the Sea: The Fish God

Some Gods emerged from the sea, either across it or from under it. It is in this theme where we find a direct connection to one particular faction of the breakaway mystery.

Oannes was the Babylonian god described in the 3rd Century BC as being a man within the body of a fish, said to rise from the sea and teach science, writing and the arts to humankind; and he is also equated with the Hebrew Dagon. In this being we see a big clue as to the less-than-godly probability of such a character: A man in a ‘fish body’ could be a man in a fish suit, rather a man in ancient scuba or diving gear. Oannes may simply have been the representative of a civilization based under the sea.

Uh oh. We know what that means: A consideration of the Atlantis myth.

You know that old story, the island nation sunk beneath the waves in a day and a night. Plato wrote about it. And if you’re going to consider Atlantis, you can’t ignore Lemuria (even if you want to). Considered a 19th Century creation by most scholars, Lemuria is the rival Atlantis theory associated with the Pacific and Indian Oceans. Some scholars and writers of fantasy play Lemuria as a literal rival to Atlantis and even go so far as to propose the sinking of Atlantis was the result of a war between the two. Whether or not the legends are accurate isn’t the point here, but whether there is a nugget of truth buried in all this certainly is pertinent.

Suppose the legend of Atlantis, and by extension Lemuria, is actually based upon an actual place so far back in human antiquity that we are left only with the myths. Might we consider the possibility that there was a civilization possessed of advanced technology, as is often associated with Atlantis, and this civilization operated under the sea?

Sure. Why not? We do have worldwide legends of massive floods followed by the appearances of people with advanced knowledge emerging from the waters to rebuild human civilization on land. Since we have already considered the possibility of a nugget of truth beneath legends and myths, let us proceed with the suggestion that an advanced civilization once existed under the sea.

There is a very specific reason why I’m asking the reader to go along with this and we are working our way toward it. Right now, let’s review our allowed assumptions: There were beings called ‘Gods’ which came to the Earth from the sky and therefore would have indeed been extraterrestrial by definition. There were similar beings that came to us from under the sea, possibly as representatives of an advanced ocean-based civilization here, though they originally came from an extraterrestrial world. These ‘gods’ may actually have been no more than people with knowledge way beyond our own at the time who could build undersea habitats for the purpose of remaining greatly incognito to the surface dwelling natives.

Still with me?

Now let’s take it to the next level. Let us suppose said beings, whom the legends already tell us shared their knowledge in the development of our known civilizations, actually *did* share such knowledge with humanity. Why might they have done this?

Were these mysterious men who came from the sea to share their technology with us merely being altruistic? Did they simply seek to make our world better out of the goodness of their own hearts? Might they have had another agenda?

There are stories of two groups of supernatural beings engaged in a war that results in the defeated party being banished to the bowels of the Earth. The Bible tells of the war in Heaven in which Lucifer recruits a third of the angels in a rebellion against God Almighty. For this, the scripture tells us, Lucifer and his fellow rebels are cast down into a pit within the Earth where they remain imprisoned to this day.

Hmmm. Might said prison be under the sea? Might Lucifer and his rebellious buddies have merely been the losing side of a political struggle between two factions of an advanced civilization based on other worlds? How might this reflect upon the stories of Quetzalcoatl or Viracocha or Oannes?

Could the ‘fish men from the sea’ actually have been emissaries from the vanquished party seeking to build human civilization up to a standard of technology capable of taking on the victors? Could that be why they so graciously taught Earth-based humanity the art and science of megalithic architecture, metallurgy, warfare, astronomy and agriculture and so forth? Sort of changes the story a bit, doesn't it?

Here lies the root of the theory of this book: That a long lost extraterrestrial human influence on Earth-based humanity trickled its way down through the ages and landed in the hands of the modern breakaway civilizations central to this discussion.

Bear with me, for the extraterrestrial aspect of this story soon fades into the background. There is just a bit more and it's likely more interesting than you think.

Crowley & Lovecraft:
A Curious Chthonic Resonance

In my research on *Empire of the Wheel 2: Friends From Sonora* and *Empire of the Wheel 3: The Nameless Ones*, I found a thread and pulled it. That thread connected the airship mystery to both the most legendary and infamous occultist of his day and also to a celebrated author of cosmic macabre literature. I am speaking of Aleister Crowley and H.P. Lovecraft.

In *Empire of the Wheel: An Investigation of Occult Espionage and Murder* (re-subtitled in the new printed edition but still EOTW1), Richard B. Spence and I revealed that Aleister Crowley had passed through San Bernardino, California, in November 1915, the darkest and most mysterious season in that city's history. This was corroborated by the local railroad museum's historical records of the Southern Pacific Railroad. The significance of Crowley's presence in San Bernardino is underscored by the occult nature of events associated with the seven curious deaths that occurred there between August and December of that year. However long he found himself in San Bernardino at that time, Crowley's presence cannot be dismissed.

It so happens that the author Lovecraft has multiple connections to the *Empire of the Wheel* mystery. The wife of Lovecraft associate Clifford Eddy, Muriel Eddy had lived in the San Bernardino Valley shortly before the fateful season in 1915. Then there is the interesting fact that Lovecraft was himself in the Place family genealogy with Harry Longabaugh, The Sundance Kid, from whose mother both Harry and his partner Etta borrowed their alias surname. These are merely the two most direct connections but there are more detailed in *EOTW2: Friends From Sonora*. However, the one most pertinent to this discussion is the one that most directly links Lovecraft to Crowley.

As expertly laid out by Peter Levenda in *The Dark Lord*, Aleister Crowley and H. P. Lovecraft had each revealed to the world in their own way the alleged presence of an extraterrestrial influence entombed at the bottom of the sea. Sound familiar?

Levenda identifies six points of congruence between Crowley and Lovecraft and their writings about an ancient arcane being. In *EOTW3: The Nameless Ones*, I present a summary of this material:

(From EOTW3: The Nameless Ones, Corvos Books 2014)

Point One: The Same Date

Lovecraft wrote his most famous story *The Call of Cthulhu* in 1926. A significant episode in the story takes place in New Orleans in 1907, the night of a ritualistic orgy dedicated to the mysterious '**Cthulhu**' represented by a black stone sculpture on a pillar. The orgy begins on Halloween night and continues through into November 1st.

It was on that actual Halloween night into November 1st 1907 when Crowley first wrote the word '**Tutulu**' in his book *Liber Liberi vel Lapidus Lazuli*.

And there is more.

Point Two: Sepulchers of the Deep

In *Liber Cordis Cincti Serpente (The Book of the Heart Girt with a Serpent*), Crowley refers numerous times to an 'Abyss of the **Great Deep**',

In *Liber Liberi vel Lapidus Lazuli*, Crowley describes the mysterious god of the deep abyss as being buried in a coffin in a **sepulcher**.

In *The Call of Cthulhu* Lovecraft describes the abode of the Elder Gods thus: "*The great stone city R'lyeh, with its monoliths and* ***sepulchers****, had sunk beneath the waves, and the* ***deep waters****…*"

Point Three: 'Tutulu' and 'Cthulhu'

Halloween night into November 1st, 1907. One man on that very night writes of Tutulu, the other of an event dedicated to Cthulhu on that date. Same date, and essentially the same name connected to the same night.

Crowley, in *Liber Liberi vel Lapidus Lazuli*, writes many strange words, among which is the astonishingly resonant ‘Tutulu’. Cthulhu and Tutulu are respectively pronounced “K-too-loo” and “Too-too-loo”.

Point Four: The Stones

In the same book, Crowley describes a ‘sorry stone’ of **pure black marble** associated with Tutulu and Typhon. In *The Call of Cthulhu*, Lovecraft describes **a black stone** upon which sits the image of Cthulhu.

Point Five:
An Earthquake Wakens A Tentacled Being

In *Liber Cordis Cincti Serpente*, Crowley writes of an earthquake and the “tentacled” and “**old gnarled fish creature” being a messenger of greater and elder gods**. Lovecraft writes of an earthquake that activates a psychic link to Cthulhu, **the tentacled fish-like priest or messenger of the Old Ones** who shall return when ‘the stars are right’. It’s difficult, to say the least, to dismiss the similarity as coincidence.

Point Six: Stars

And what of the stars being right? What does this mean? Lovecraft writes that the Old Ones will return when “the stars are right”. This is usually interpreted literally, suggesting some alignment of celestial bodies will unlock the tomb of the abyss like some magical key. However, there is another possibility.

Crowley wrote that “Every man and woman is a star”. Could this illuminate and change Lovecraft’s message? Could Crowley’s idea mean that the Old Ones will return when their followers are “right”, meaning ready or simply numerous enough?

Let us reiterate what Levenda has taken beyond speculation:

On November 1st 1907, Aleister Crowley writes of **a tentacled and ‘gnarled fish’ entity** who is a **messenger of old gods entombed in a sepulcher in a ‘great and deep abyss’** and this particular writing session includes the word or name **‘Tutulu’** and a reference to an **earthquake** and a **mysterious stone of black marble.**

In 1926, Lovecraft writes *The Call of Cthulhu*, a tale about **a tentacled fish-like god priest** who heralds the coming of **Elder Gods** and who is **entombed in a sepulcher in the abyss of the deep** sea. The being’s name is **‘Cthulhu’** and a psychic connection between him and humans is associated with an **earthquake** – and even more specifically this links to an orgiastic rite in veneration of Cthulhu, represented by a **black stone** statue, performed on Halloween night into **November 1st 1907!**

Some say that Lovecraft might have met Crowley through his wife in New York, but there is neither record nor anecdote of this anywhere. It makes sense Lovecraft at least read Crowley’s material in spite of a lack of record of this. It is likely that the record we’re looking for is *The Call of Cthulhu* itself.

(End of Quoted Pages from EOTW3)

As I stated above in the prior book, of course I still think Lovecraft read Crowley's book. So what does all this have to do with a discussion of modern breakaway civilizations and the airship mystery?

'Name That Has Been Removed':
The Sesh Heri Analysis of NYMZA

Sesh Heri is the author of *The Handprint of Atlas*, a 2009 book, revised in 2010, on the engineering of the Earth by an extraterrestrial technology. Heri is also the author of the *Wonder of the Worlds* trilogy, fiction based on an entertaining blend of fact and legend that starts off with an adventure to Mars in 1893. We shall discuss this work later for it features Nikola Tesla rather prominently and reflects upon a particular legend in the airship mystery. For now, we shall look at Heri's interpretation of a word that figures most prominently in the milieu of this book.

Sesh Heri has provided a fascinating and illuminating analysis which I included in *EOTW3: The Nameless Ones* and serves as a major element in the thesis of that book. It has nagged me ever since, where the airship groups are associated, because it concerns the word 'NYMZA', which, as you shall learn, is the alleged name of a shadowy organization behind the airship mystery.

Let's take a look. The following is From *EOTW3: The Nameless Ones*. Again, I have highlighted what is pertinent to our discussion thus far:

In Sesh Heri's 2008 novel *Metamorphosis*, second book of the *Wonder of the Worlds* trilogy, Ed Morrell explains the NYMZA to Jack London and the narrator of the story:

"*That member of the Aero Club had figured it out. He was a professor of ancient languages. He had studied Latin and Greek all his life, and he had also studied ancient Egyptian, Sumerian and Mayan. This professor told me that NYMZA was a very ancient word that predated all known languages but that it had survived into ancient Egyptian, Greek and Latin in somewhat altered forms. For example:* nomen *in Latin and* onyma *in Greek are the words from where we derive our English word for* name. *But these Latin and Greek words were only derived from the older Egyptian* nym *which meant* 'who?'…

"*The word for* 'who?' *in Egyptian was related to several other words in that language that sounded the same…"*

“Homonyms,” Jack said.

“That’s it,” Morrell said, “There were a number of words that were all pronounced something like nym, *like the words for* sleep, walk *or* stride, to do evil, wrongdoer, place of slaughter, slaughterhouse, execution, chamber, cellar…

“*They tell a story, a very ancient story. It’s all about the* ***ancient gods who once ruled the Earth****. They weren’t human; they were different kinds of creatures. They were amphibian. The Sumerians called these* ***fish-men gods*** Annunaki – ‘Heavenly Ones Fallen To Earth’… *The fish-men fought* ***a war among their own kind and subdued the evil ones****. What the fish-men did was* ***confine the evil ones*** *among them to a particular astral plane for all eternity…*

“*That’s why all those* **nym** ***words in Egyptian mean things like*** **evil** ***and*** **slaughterhouse** ***and*** **cellar**. *The evil ones or wrongdoers,* nymi, *were* ***put to sleep,*** **nym*****, in a kind of cellar*** *which could also be likened to a slaughterhouse, for although these evil beings continually walk or stride in that place of confinement,* ***they exist in a kind of living death****…*

“*And should anyone ask about these evil beings who have been so confined in this living death, one can only reply* who?, nym, *for* ***they are forgotten*** *among the living…because their names have been taken away from them and this has cut them off from life…*”

“*And that thing I encountered on the bottom of the ocean,” I asked, “You’re saying you think it was one of those old ones, one of those fish-gods, imprisoned on the astral plane long ago?”*

“Yes,” Morrell said, “And not only that, but these things, ***the*** **NYMZA*****, continually try to reach out to the minds of mankind and control us****. Their ultimate aim is to escape from the astral plane and return here where they can once again rule according to all the evil that is in them.* ***This*** **NYMZA** ***has been a manipulating force throughout the history of mankind*** *on both Earth and Mars, and it was they who constantly interfered with mental communications going on between the Aero Club and some of the people on Mars…*

“***They cannot build in the material world, but they can project their thoughts into this material realm through the minds of living things, especially the humans****. Through such mental doors,* ***the*** **NYMZA** ***hope to eventually escape their endless imprisonment****. That machine on the ocean floor is designed to rend the fabric of space and open an astral portal so those things can escape…*”

NYM-ZA or NYM-SA means specifically, according to Heri, ‘Name That Has Been Removed’ and he makes the distinction that this is **the result of a punitive action**. The ‘cutting’ of the name was a revoking of a ‘key’, the name symbolizing the more important ‘identity’ or, as Joseph Farrell might say, ‘individuation’. This identity key is what, according to Heri’s interpretation, allows a being to exist on our plane, i.e. our material plane as opposed to the astral plane to which **the ‘NYM-ZA/NYM-SA’ were banished**. Heri adds that the desire for these beings to possess a key drives them to seek possession of the identity of others, for the specific identity does not matter to them so much as simply having the key to return to this material plane of existence. It is in this desire for the ‘key’ of identity/individuation that we may also find the motive for the possession of living bodies by disembodied entities, i.e. ‘demons’.

Consider the story in The Bible wherein Jesus encounters the man possessed by multiple demons. When Jesus asks for a name, the voice replies, **“My name is Legion”**. This apparent name actually refers to **a multitude of entities** possessing the man. Notice not one specific name identifying any of them by their personal identities is given but instead what Jesus is given is a group name. **Heri argues that 'Legion' is equivalent to NYMZA/NYM-SA**. Had any of these entities retained an 'identity key', they would not need a living body to enter this plane of existence.

Heri uses both his understanding of the phonetic cabala and modern words traced to ancient lexicons. Confining his examples to English, German, Latin, Greek and ancient Egyptian, which can be demonstrated to be the sources for Greek and Latin terms. His source on the ancient Egyptian is Budge's *An Egyptian Hieroglyphic Dictionary* (Murray, London, 1920) Pgs 373-385.

"-nym" is a suffix in English, i.e. patronym, pseudonym, etc. It refers to "name" as in the Greek *onyma* or "name". Heri is convinced *onyma* came from the Egyptian word *nem* which meant "who?"

***Nem* is a question concerning the specific identity of a person, the answer being their name.** In ancient Egyptian, there were two words for "name", being ren and ka.

***Nems* means veil.** Consider our context and remember this because we'll bring it up a little later.

Ka is usually translated as "soul", but Budge explicitly states that sometimes *ka* was used to mean "name". This demonstrates to Heri a crucial link between the concept of the soul and the idea of a name. Heri argues that the Egyptian *nem* or "who?" entered the Greek language as *onyma* i.e. "name".

Now let's bring the second syllable of NYMZA into the analysis. Heri believes the ancient Egyptian *sa* i.e. "cut" is the root of the "-ZA". Thus *nem-sa* means "who? cut". But then Heri points to ***nems*, meaning to enlighten or illuminate in one usage yet "veil" in another.** Heri thinks this hints at the "cutting off of illumination". We shall return to this momentarily.

Interestingly Heri points out that other *nem* related homonyms in ancient Egyptian mean "evil", *nehem* "to deliver", *nehem-ra* "to kill", *nemmta* a type of fish. There are *nem* words relating to "lake", "to bathe or swim", "to sleep or slumber", and "bedchamber". This also extends to the Greek and Roman (Latin) nymphs, often associated with water; and the Greek *nystagmos* "drowsiness" derived from the ancient Egyptian *nem* in its aforementioned "sleep" association.

Now we go to the German *nehmen* "to take" which is also used to mean "to possess" or "to consume" as in "eat". Heri is convinced that this can likely be traced back as well to the ancient Egyptian. He suggests *nehmen* might also be used to mean "to take someone" or *possess* someone.

Returning to the second syllable of NYMZA once again, we have the German *zahn* "tooth" which relates to chewing or cutting, bringing it back to the ancient Egyptian *sa*. But Heri also points out the **German *zahllos* "innumerable", which hints at the aforementioned "legion".**

Thus, according to Heri, do we have the following:
NYM meaning "name" and ZA(SA) meaning "cut"

NYM meaning the answer to "who?" and ZA relative to "innumerable"

NYM-ZA meaning "without a name" or "nameless"

Heri goes even farther to reveal the revelation that links his translation to our mystery:

a. Recall the nemmta or “type of fish” link to *nem*/-nym/name? Remember the “lake” and “swim” associative definitions to *nem*?

b. Consider the “sleep” usage of the ancient Egyptian nem and its Greek derivative nystagmos “drowsiness”.

c. Now add the “possession” usage of the German *nehmen* which, if it is derived from the ancient Egyptian *nem,* provides yet more evidence for a NYM-ZA association.

What does all this suggest to Heri?

A nameless fish-like being sleeping under the water yet taking possession of something.

Does this sound familiar? It should. **Heri argues that his analysis reveals to him that the NYMZA are equivalent to Lovecraft’s Elder Gods from the stars whose priest-god Cthulhu sleeps at the bottom of the sea** reaching out psychically to possess the minds of humans so as to appropriate their identities and capture the key necessary for the Elder Gods to enter our material plane.

That’s not all Sesh Heri has to offer as evidence. Heri argues that Nommo of the African Dogon tribe revealed the NYMZA presence on Earth.

Heri cites Robert K. G. Temple:

“**Nommo** is the ***collective*** name for the great culture hero and founder of civilization who came from the ***Sirius system*** to set up society (civilization) on Earth. Nommo – or, to be more precise, the ***Nommos*** – were ***amphibious creatures***…” (Note 131)

Nommo is a collective term, not a proper name. It does not mean any one particular personage, thus is essentially “nameless”. **Nameless, amphibious or fish-like, gods from the stars**.

(End book quote)

The above clearly resonates with what we’ve covered thus far, especially that of the Levenda analysis of Crowley and Lovecraft’s separate treatments of essentially the same entity or type of being.

I am not suggesting that you must agree with all the aspects of the above within the same context as Heri. You don’t have to buy into the supernatural or demonic conclusions to understand why this information is pertinent. My suggestion is that those who wrote of these ‘NYM-ZA’ either themselves believed in the god-like status of these beings or wanted others to believe in the idea. I’m also suggesting that representatives of an unknown and mostly forgotten civilization left their mark on humankind and likely used the perception of being a ‘god’ or the representatives of such.

NYM-ZA: The ET Element

Going back a few pages, I reiterate that advanced beings from a world possessed of technology far beyond our own would seem as gods and would certainly have a stake in us believing that idea. Thus do I propose that the 19th Century NYMZA organization, about which we shall discuss much in the coming chapters, was influenced by a very ancient culture of beings – *human* beings -- from an advanced world, rather by the legacy of that culture's technology possibly or even likely brought to Earth from another planet.

This examination of the earthly NYMZA of the airship mystery will focus on the very human activities of breakaway civilizations that emerged during that period of history. However, it was necessary to deal with the extraterrestrial issue up front because it is indeed in the mix, though way back in human history; so far back as to be deemed almost negligible in a practical fashion. Though the origin of the NYMZA is likely extraterrestrial by default, the extraterrestrial nature has not been at the center of the story for a very long time.

The story of the emergence of the modern breakaway civilizations I have found to be the story of the human quest to recapture what was lost long ago. Where it developed originally is not the primary point of this book but rather what humankind did with what was given to it. By the time of the airship mystery, anything extraterrestrial about what they were doing had been filtered through ages of human development and signature.

The ET element will not factor into the situation again until we reach the 20th Century. For now let us continue setting the stage…

CHAPTER TWO

THE OTHERS

There is a popular school of thought that places the extraterrestrial element at the center of importance and primary focus of attention in any theory of breakaway civilizations.

I am not of that school.

In my opinion, ETs exist. They’re simply not all that fascinating to me anymore. Of course, I’m not a ‘people person’ so folks from another world are no more enchanting to me than people in a bar down the street. ET is no morally better than us, from my perspective, so I don’t find myself enamored of the idea that they may likely be out there and come here on occasion. It’s not the big deal of the matter. Their appearance would confirm that there are other habitable worlds and *that* is interesting to me.

I am, however, especially interested in what humankind has done on its own, even with whatever remnants of an extraterrestrial civilization may have kick-started it. The way I see it, if we received help in getting our brand off the ground, the expectation was that we would run with it and develop ourselves as a productive race of beings should.

Yes, I do suspect what I suggested in the previous chapter is possible, that said ET may have been the loser of a war and whatever they gave us came with the expectation that we would develop into a civilization that could take on their victors in retaliation, or perhaps defend ourselves – and them -- upon the victors’ return. A long term plan, but quite realistic when you don’t drink the communion wine of ET moral superiority (which I find to be a sickeningly sweet vintage, akin to white zinfandel, a god awful thing).

I think that whatever we were given in Earth's remote past, ET human's direct technological influence ended then and there and, where the breakaway civilizations are concerned, did not become a major factor again until the 20th Century.

So let us now look to the practical human thread of origin of the breakaway civilizations.

Forbidden History:
The Denied Antiquity of Humankind

Fortunately for me, the theme of a human history contrary to what mainstream academia preaches has been rather popular in alternative media and particularly in entertainment over the past several years. Authors like Graham Hancock, David Hatcher Childress, Christopher Dunn, Joseph Farrell and Scott D deHart and many others have popularized the evidence for the argument that human civilization rises and falls and that technology has been on the level of our own – maybe beyond – more than once. There is probably no advocate of this stronger than Michael Cremo and Richard Thompson, authors of *Forbidden Archeology*. These authors are merely the few I have mentioned; there are others. The idea has been out there for several years now and most people reading this book have likely heard a lot about it.

That makes my job easier. You have probably heard more than once of the theories about who had what when. The argument is compelling and the thesis of this book depends upon acceptance that it was *possible*, i.e. that there indeed could have been civilizations on this planet which have come and gone and who possessed technology and knowledge beyond our own. To take it further, I suggest that said past advanced technology and knowledge remains with us in faded clues and artifacts existing today.

Let's follow this line of thought…

Forgotten Knowledge:
Legends and Rumors of Things Past

Ancient scriptures and literature speak of forgotten civilizations. Start with The Bible.

In Genesis, we learn of Adam and Eve. The way this story is told in the average Christian Sunday school in America, when I was a kid, is that Adam and Eve were the first two people created by God in the one inhabited place on Earth, the Garden of Eden. That means there were supposedly only two people on the planet. They next produce two children, their sons Cain and Abel. That makes four.

But then we are told that Cain slays Abel and is banished – to the land of Nod where he lives among the others from whose civilization he takes a wife.

“And Cain went out from the presence of the LORD, and dwelt in the land of Nod, on the east of Eden.” Genesis 4:16, King James Version

Genesis 4:17 tells us about said wife of Cain. Some scholars have argued that Cain’s wife was one of his many sisters that these same scholars conveniently argue must have existed, even though nothing is said about it beforehand. But I call shenanigans on that kind thing so let’s continue with the stated literal premise: Adam, Eve, Cain and Abel – and suddenly the others.

So back to the question: what is this? We are told there were only four people on Earth. Who are these others? What the hell is this ‘land of Nod’ if the Garden of Eden was the ‘first place’? Though Isaac Asimov cited the Hebrew word ‘Nod’, meaning ‘to wander’, to explain that Cain just lived like a nomad, we are still left with the question of the ‘others’ and his wife.

Even Biblical scholars debate the basics of this story, many going for the explanation that Adam and Eve and their boys were the first of a covenant, the first of a particular culture. That’s fine (if a little boring and pious) but I still find this idea of a land of Nod existing out there to be quite interesting. An entirely different civilization from these Edenites and what do we know about them? That’s more interesting to me.

But that’s not all because the issue we must consider with the Bible is that the book we have today is not complete. Councils of men decided which books would constitute the Bible and you know how councils of men can be, particularly men who have set themselves up as messengers of God. Certain councils cherry-picked certain books that supported the particular design they decided would be The Word – and then they quickly set about demonizing those which they did not select. Among those books not selected to serve as the new dogma were those which speak of a forgotten past.

For example, take the *Book of Enoch* discovered in 1773 in what is today Ethiopia by Scottish explorer James Bruce. Originally written in Aramaic, we are told, in either the First or Second Century BC, it was translated into Greek, Ethiopic and then Latin. First translated into English in 1821, the popular English edition is the one translated by Richard Laurence in 1883. This ‘lost book’ tells the curious saga of another man named Enoch, he of the seventh generation of Adam.

Enoch is considered by some traditions to have been the inventor of mathematics, astronomy and writing, but that seems unlikely to me. If you suppose that he’s the product of a civilization that was made up of people other than fur clad troglodytes, it’s more reasonable to think of Enoch as the *student* of these disciplines and technologies – especially when you get into the details of his experience with The Watchers. In fact, Enoch’s status as inventor of these disciplines may more accurately be that he was selected to teach these things to humankind of Earth.

I’m not going to spend countless paragraphs recounting the *Book of Enoch* here when you can obtain a copy and read it for yourself. Basically there are five parts, three of which are most pertinent to this book you are reading. In these three particular books, Enoch is taken away by the mysterious Watchers who reveal to him the workings of the planets and the stars and such. It is in these Watchers we may find a clue to the NYMZA.

In Chapter 7, Section II, we read the following:

“It happened after the sons of men had multiplied in those days that daughters were born to them, elegant and beautiful.

“And when the angels, the sons of heaven, beheld them, they became enamoured of them, saying to each other, Come let us select for ourselves wives from the progeny of men, and let us beget children.”

From there we are told that the fallen ‘angel’ Samyaza doesn’t want to be the only horn-dog at this panty raid, so he goads the other randy dudes among their landing party to swear to participate in the coming debauchery of the tasty daughters of Earthly men. It’s essentially the first fraternity rush party, you might say. Two hundred of his bros sign on and so, from their landing spot atop Mount Armon, they go about their naughty business. The book goes on:

“Then they took wives, each choosing for himself; whom they began to approach and with whom they cohabited; teaching them sorcery, incantations and the dividing of roots and trees.

“And the women conceiving brought forth giants…”

(Book of Enoch, Chap 7, Sec II)

We learn of these giants whose stature was quite impressive. They ate their parents out of house and home and then turned on them. We are told that these monstrous progeny set upon ‘birds, beasts, reptiles and fishes, to eat their flesh one after another and drink their blood’. And that was *after* they had begun to eat human beings and drink *their* blood. As delightful as all this sounds, pertinent here in this tale of the fallen angels is the part about guys from another world teaching human beings their advanced technology.

In Chapter 8 of the *Book of Enoch*, we learn that these descended ones teach the following arts and crafts to Earth humans: armor, bladed weapons, mirrors, jewelry, cosmetics for the ladies, the mining of precious stones, color dyes, and astronomy. But it was the cosmetics and mirrors and jewelry, along with sorcery and whipping up potions with roots, which apparently led to an increase of fornication – a *lot* of fornicating – and ‘corrupted all their ways’. It appears we may have the source of the Kama Sutra here, and perhaps the inspiration for French proclivities to come (take the pun, if you like). Aside from the religious spin, what we appear to have are extraterrestrial human explorers who shared their advanced technology, their special knowledge, and mixed it up with the genetics of Earth humans.

Naturally, the guys who weren’t getting any got pissed off and these 200 errant swingers had to be punished. Enoch is chosen to deliver the bad news. The fallen are imprisoned in another dimension, described as desolate and neither of the heavens nor of the Earth. Then the Watchers, seven top angels assigned to keep an eye on things after all the shenanigans, reveal the workings of planets and stars to an astonished Enoch. You can take all this as it's usually presented, an awe-inspiring experience of a lowly man before powerful creatures of God, or you can consider them an advanced race of human beings from somewhere else whose technology was like magic to Enoch, as is suggested by Lomas and Knight in *Uriel's Machine*.

Another Biblical tale we must consider is the Tower of Babel story.

In Genesis 11:1-9, we learn about human civilization being of one language and setting about to build an immense and high structure towering to Heaven. Looking down upon this venture, the exalted inhabitants of Heaven are worried that should humans complete this tower, whatever it really is, they will achieve the same advanced status as the gods. We are told this cannot be allowed to happen and what follows is a scattering of humanity and the division of languages so that they cannot communicate and thus their effort and its progress are destroyed. Anyone who grew up in the Judeo-Christian tradition is familiar with this story, usually told to explain why multiple languages exist, but there are other interpretations.

I have been criticized by some self-satisfied nitwits of 'too much dependence upon Joseph P. Farrell', so by all means let us look at Farrell's 'Tower of Babel Moment' because I really hate to disappoint my critics.

The 'Tower of Babel' story isn't just in the Bible, it represents a statement about the state of human knowledge in the forgotten past. In *Grid of the Gods: The Aftermath of the Cosmic War and the Physics of the Pyramid Peoples* written by Farrell and fellow Oxford scholar Scott D. de Hart, we find the following:

> *"There is even present in the Mayan mythology a Tower of Babel moment in which mankind is embarked upon a project that somehow threatens the gods' power over it, and accordingly, a* political *decision is taken to end that project, whatever it was." (Grid, Pg.)*

The humans building the tower represent 'an implicit threat to the power of the gods' because human knowledge was more far-reaching then. According to the Mayan *Popol Vuh*, as cited by Farrell and de Hart, humans possessed knowledge of the physics of the cosmos and this the authors equate with the technological knowledge possessed by the builders of the Tower of Babel.

Citing passages in the *Popol Vuh* as analogous to the Tower of Babel episode, Farrell and de Hart point out that the Mayan work suggests human beings on Earth at that time were asexual creatures focused on advancing their knowledge and civilization, and the gods interfered with their physical and psychological programming via injecting the drive to procreate and thus distracted humanity. This brings us back to the story of the descended angels and all that fornication between them and daughters of men as mentioned in the *Book of Enoch*. Once again, the human sex drive is the culprit, either pissing of the gods or serving them as they see fit in the moment.

The point is that something was going on in the remote antiquity of human history where advanced knowledge was concerned, according not only to the Bible but to other ancient sources as well.

The Vedic Version

Consider the Hindu scriptures. In the past decade or two, it has become popular to suggest that ‘flying saucers’ have been around since ancient times. David Hatcher Childress has founded a corner of his career on that idea. Erich von Daniken and his protege Giorgio Tsoukalos have made themselves and their ancient astronaut theory big TV stars. Childress and many others have produced several books with compelling evidence and the argument in favor of the idea that forgotten civilizations possessed an advanced technology now lost to us. Among David’s most popular books are those which deal with human-made UFOs, especially the ‘vimanas’.

If you’ve just entered the world that most readers of this book already know well, then you might not know what a *vimana* is. Essentially, it is an anti-gravity platform of various designs. Bill Clendenon wrote that *vimanas* mentioned in ancient Hindu scriptures utilized a ‘mercury vortex engine’ to lift and propel through the skies.

> “*From the ancient* Vymaanika-Shaastra, *I gained useful information concerning Vimanas or aircraft. Also in the* Samarangana Sutradhara, *it is written that the Vimanas were made of light material with a strong bell-shaped body. Iron, copper, and lead were used in their construction. They could fly great distances…They had ‘fire and mercury at the bottom’…*” (Childress, *Atlantis and the Power System of*

the Gods, Pg. 91).

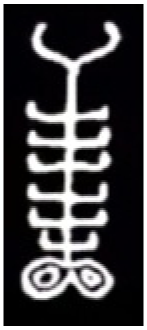
Though some scholars argue that the *Samarangana Sutradhara* is not an ancient text, they do agree that astounding technologies are indeed found in the other verifiably ancient Hindu texts. One scholar, who is an advocate of the ancient Hindu advanced technology theory, has done extensive analysis of the *Mahabharata*.

Sthithapragnan writes that the war depicted in the Mahabharata has been calculated to have taken place around 3000 BC. He points to marine archeologists having found pottery and other relics of the ancient port city Dvaraka in the Gujurat district. If you have read *SM2: The Lost Expedition of Sir Richard Francis Burton,* you may recall that Burton spent some time in Gujurat so it shouldn't come as a surprise that modern archeology is turning up a lost city there. Sthihapragnan thinks the ancient figures of the epic history encountered advanced technology via humanoid extraterrestrials (advanced humans, I say), which I don't dispute is reasonable within the context here. But this technology was indeed transferred to the Earth humans of ancient India, according to the lore.

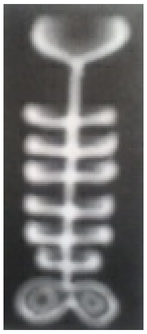
> *"The weapons used in Mahabharata were a combination of ancient earthly weapons and the highly powerful and advanced futuristic weapons provided by the Aliens. Especially the various types of "Asthras" (missiles) and various types of "Dhanush" (launchers) of Mahabaratha are all provided by the Aliens. The description of these weapons clearly makes us to believe that their production requires large scale industrial infrastructure involving complex technology and development. To manufacture such advanced weapons, thousand of years of research and development should have taken place. Therefore it is conclusive that these weapons were received from the Aliens and not manufactured in this planet. Mahabharata also provides detailed descriptions of these weapons received from Aliens. From a scientific view descriptions of gods and demigods described in Mahabharatha are Aliens far more advanced in science (in light years) than us." (Sthithapragnan's site)*

Plasma physicist and cosmologist Anthony Peratt provides startling evidence of how much advanced science the ancients must have known in his comparative study between plasma geometries and ancient petroglyphs and artistic depictions of the gods. In his focus on glyphs dated between 10,000 and 2,000 BC, Peratt, a respected physicist associated with the Los Alamos National Laboratory, conducted experiments in which he discovered how ancient Native American petroglyphs and Sumerian and Greek relief sculptures are an exact match for the shapes of plasma discharge figures which we have only been able to see or replicate with our modern technology.

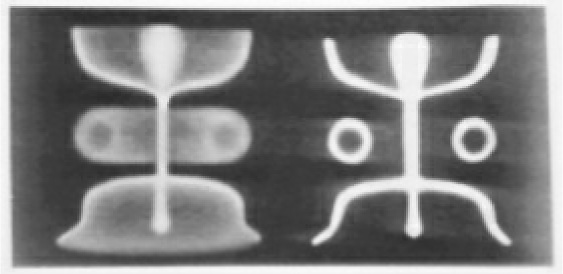
Better than me trying to explain it, take a look at how these ancient petroglyph shapes match plasma configurations that we can replicate and see *only with present day technology:*



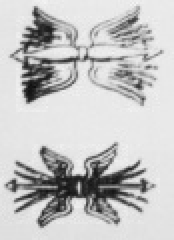
Ancient Native Petroglyph



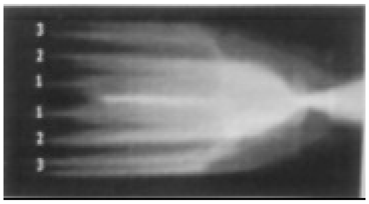
Plasma Discharge



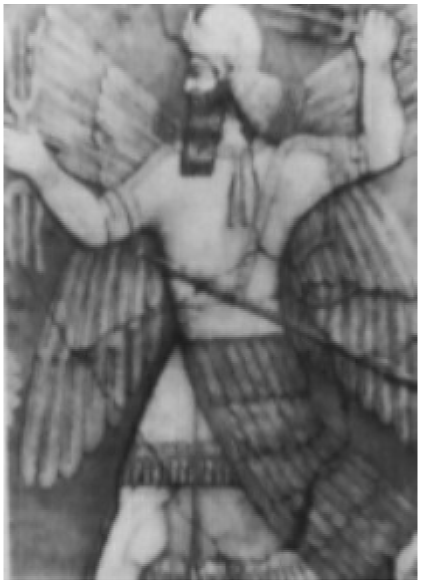
Plasma Discharge *Native Petrolgyph*



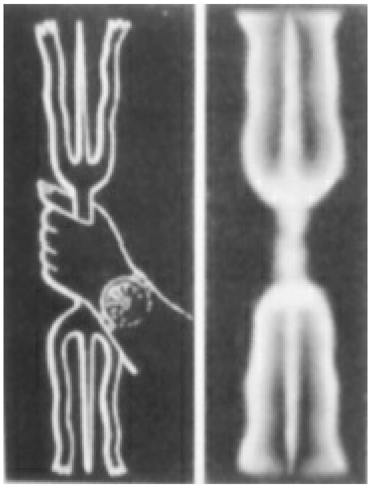
Ancient Greek
Thunderbolts of Zeus



Plasma Discharge



Ancient Sumerian Relief of NINURTA
With Weapons



Ancient Ninurta Relief Image vs. Plasma Discharge

Before you dismiss what Sthithapragnan says about the historical truth of the ancient war of Vedic scripture, take into account that the above petroglyphs and depictions above were usually attributed to human witnessing of ‘wars of the gods’. Joseph Farrell postulates that the above congruencies between ancient art and plasma discharges can only be the result of ancient humans possessing advanced technology memorialized in symbology we have labeled ‘mythology’ or someone else possessed said technology and shared its phenomena with humankind, or ancient humanity observed plasma discharges in the warfare or other scientific activities of those who possessed the technology and the petroglyphs and sculptures are their record of it.

What Peratt’s studies suggest is that someone high up in the professional world of modern physics takes what the ancients knew very seriously. I suggest we do the same, so let’s continue with our discussion of ancient lost technology of the Vedas.

Scholar Sthithapragnan argues also for vimanas as flying craft powered by mercury, as opposed to mere horse-drawn chariots or metaphors, and cites both the *Vana Parva* and the *Drona Parva*, the third and seventh of the eighteen books of the *Mahabharata*:

> *“According to the Dronaparva, Vimanas are described as shaped like a sphere and can move along at great speed on a mighty wind generated by mercury. It says the vimana moved like a UFO, going up, down, backwards and forwards as the pilot desired.*
>
> *Section XLIII of Vana Parva describes about Arjuna's arival at the city of Indra 'Amaravati'. Here not only vimanas are mentioned but even an area similar to airport, where vimanas are properly stationed and these vimanas are landing and taking off similar to the view we experience in busy airports.”*

He quotes the scripture:

> *"And it came to pass that once a day as those mighty charioteers were thinking of Arjuna, seeing Mahendra's vimana, yoked with horses of the effulgence of lightning, arrive all on a sudden, they were delighted. And driven by Matali, that blazing vimana, suddenly illuminating the sky, looked like smokeless flaming tongues of fire, or a mighty meteor embosomed in clouds…” -- CLXIV Vana Parva*

‘Horses of effulgence of lightning’ that blaze and ‘illuminate the sky’ with ‘smokeless flaming tongues of fire’? What does that sound like to you?
To me, it reads like technology described by a primitive author. And this was written thousands of years ago. The idea of advanced technology and a god-like civilization wielding it is well known to students of the ancient Hindu world. Sthihapragnan also cites evidence of advanced medical knowledge as well as weaponry and you can read about these in both the *Mahabharata* and the *Ramayana*.

Other Traditions of the Forgotten World

The idea of the forgotten civilization is known to many cultures. The ancient

Greek Homer alludes to the idea of advanced technologies of ancient civilizations in his epic *The Odyssey*.

When Odysseus is given a ‘bag of wind’ so powerful that, when his errant and greedy crew open it too soon, their ship is blown wildly off course at an incredible speed by the loud thunderous device, we must wonder if the ‘bag of wind’ was some sort of portable jet engine (or perhaps a global warming crisis advocate, or even an ET disclosure devotee).

In the classic saga of *Jason and the Argonauts* we learn of Talos the giant bronze statue that guards the island home of one of Zeus’ booty calls. This walking, fighting statue is essentially an automaton, a robot. It patrols the sea around the island, as well, using its keen long-distance super-vision to see approaching vessels. But, interestingly, Talos is brought down by loosening a screw at its heel and letting the fluid within run out.

Have you ever had the power steering line fail on your car? When that happens and the mechanism loses its lubricant, the steering wheel can freeze up. That is essentially what happened to Talos. This suggests to me that the giant statue was a humanoid machine. That’s certainly what Erich Von Daniken proposes in *Odyssey of the Gods*. Who could build such a thing?

Maybe the now forgotten advanced civilization created Talos. Or maybe it was the Hyperboreans first mentioned by Herodotus in *Histories* (Book IV, Chapters 32–36). Timothy P. Bridgman suggests in *Hyperboreans: Myth and History in Celtic-Hellenic Contacts* that the ancients believed the Hyperboreans lived eternal lives.

“The Hyperboreans were an idealized people, living in an eternally joyful, but remote country above an imaginary range of unattainable mountains, called the Rhipean Mountains. Some of the most well-known information about the Hyerboreans is contained in the writings of Pindar of Thebes: the Hyperboreans lived to be a thousand years old and knew no sickness or disease.” (Bridgman, Hyperboreans, Page 3)

This aspect of Hyperborea brings to mind the isle of Avalon where the wounded King Arthur goes to heal. Was Avalon an outpost of the

Hyperborean civilization, equipped with some sort of emergency care triage clinic?

Did the Hyperboreans possess advanced medical technology as Sthihapragnan claims the ancient Hindus did? What else might these Hyperboreans have known? One of my favorite depictions of Hyperborea is that in the 1970s film, *Sinbad and the Eye of the Tiger*, a tropical land in the arctic zone which is home to wondrous technology older than – and beyond -- the technology of Sinbad's medieval era.

There are other cultures with stories of the same idea; that of a lost civilization with advanced technology. The Aztecs, for instance, credited the Toltecs as builders of Tenochtitlan and considered them the originator of all culture. I have written about this idea from a different perspective in *SM2: The Lost Expedition of Sir Richard Francis Burton.*

In an examination of the *Book of Mormon,* from the angle that Joseph Smith had actually found records of an ancient civilization which he essentially plagiarized to create a scripture for his new church, I cite the curious device called 'Liahona':

> *"In 1 Nephi 16:10, Nephi's father finds a 'round ball of curious workmanship' made of fine brass and containing two 'spindles' which "pointed the way whither we should go into the wilderness". This device was called 'Liahona' and it not only served as a navigational device on land and sea, it would display written instructions that would appear on its surface as needed. As if that weren't enough, the ball compass' effectiveness was reportedly affected by the attitude of its user, at times much to the fright and wonder of them (Ibid, 1 Nephi 16:28)."* (Bosley SM2:Burton, Pg 151 print edition)

Setting aside the baggage that always comes with any discussion of Smith and the Mormons, consider this device within our context. In the 21st Century, we can easily comprehend the Liahona. It's essentially like a Mac version of an ultimate GPS device. One might even imagine such a system supported by that mysterious Black Knight satellite rumored to have been circling our planet in its odd orbit for 13,000 years. You could dismiss its existence if you like, but the known existence of the Antikythera mechanism, found off the coast of Greece and today housed in the Athens museum for all to see, gives pause. I am personally quite intrigued with this Liahona device and place it high on the list of clues to the lost technology of the forgotten past.

Consider Buyan from Slavic mythology, an island capable of appearing and disappearing at the will of its inhabitants and is also the home of all weather phenomena. Is this akin to modern cloaking technology? We know that weather technology exists in our civilization, so if they possessed cloaking, might they have achieved this using weather technology – hiding their island homeland in a shroud of clouds?

In Sumerian culture there is the myth about lost Dilmun where Utnapishtim was taken to live forever, another reference to a forgotten time possessed of advanced technology, perhaps.

Of course, we can't forget Shambhala of Tibetan and Hindu traditions. It is from Shambhala that Maitreya will emerge with a military force and vanquish the world. This legend resonates with that of Rex Mundi in the hollow Earth and even with the Book of Revelation of the Bible in which we learn of a shadowy force coming out of the dark northern arctic wasteland, riding on scorpion-like machines to fight all the armies of the world. Shambhala is also associated with the Shangri-la of James Hilton's novel *Lost Horizon*, where people age very slowly, another allusion to possible advanced medical technology.

There are also the various mythical cities of the El Dorado legends of the Americas. In my Burton book, I explore the possibility of ancient gold-making technology built into the site of Puma Punku. This would be a reflection of the existing legends about that site and the adjacent Tiahuanaco, which tell of an unknown civilization of giants that built these cities in a day and installed amazing machinery there which they took with them when cataclysm struck and they were forced to flee.

You may want to look at *SM2: The Lost Expedition of Sir Richard Francis Burton* for my lengthy exploration of the lost city of Z and other South American legends of lost civilizations, for they factor big in the idea conveyed by this book. As we shall see later, that continent provides a stage for airship society activity. I think I've made my point without re-writing the numerous books out there on this subject: History is full of legends and myths of lost civilizations possessing advanced technologies.

Perhaps Plato was not writing fiction after all.

Lost Civilizations: The Atlantean Idea

Now that we have looked at multiple examples of the idea of a lost past as seen by various cultures around the world, we can safely speculate that maybe Atlantis wasn't alone. If any of this happened, it's reasonable to imagine that the knowledge spread across the globe.

It now becomes easier to imagine that speculative war between Atlantis and Lemuria or some other such culture since there could have been more than one. But this is a book about modern breakaways so let's stay on point.

It may be that the first breakaway civilization made its move so long ago that it was even kicked out of The Bible.

The First Breakaway Civilization: Enoch's City in the Sky

There is an interesting story sometimes associated with the aforementioned apocryphal *Book of Enoch,* as well as the *Book of Mormon*. I have looked for the original source on this legend which I recall first hearing only about fifteen years ago or so, yet haven't found anything but the Joseph Smith version and a bunch of people who also recall having heard of the tale. Some folks say they heard about it in the 1970s in Sunday school. I mention the tale here because it resonates directly with our theme.

The story is that Enoch built a city that was taken from the Earth and placed in the sky. According to some, the Joseph Smith Mormon version included, the city was visible in the sky because the various levels of the atmosphere were thicker. If you play World of Warcraft and have ever been to Dalaran, you've essentially seen Enoch's city, according to the basics of this story. It's kind of a cool idea.

The city in the sky from our lost technology perspective might be more like

Bespin, the Cloud City, from the classic Star Wars film, *The Empire Strikes Back.* Again, a cool idea but drawn from fiction, about which many would say of the Joseph Smith version. Smith wrote that Enoch's sky city was why the Tower of Babel was being built, that it was close enough to reach via a skyscraper.

But where is Enoch's city today?

Some say it's hiding in plain sight: On or inside the Moon. I refer the reader to Richard Hoagland and Mike Bara's *Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA* which features an investigation into alleged ancient architecture on the lunar surface – not ancient as in classical Grecian design, ancient but technologically advanced in a modern sense. Between Hoagland and Bara's research, and all the strangeness associated with Martian artifacts, I propose that it is worthwhile to entertain the suggestion that the story of Enoch's 'city in the sky' might pertain to a civilization once on the Moon.

Because I think the best foundation for any consideration of the city in the sky theory is Hoagland's book, along with the others written on the subject, including David Childress' *Extraterrestrial Archeology* among many, we shall leave Enoch's city with the reader and press on. I mention it here because perhaps Enoch's 'city' was actually a small like-minded group of people possessed of advanced technology who relocated to the Moon – the first human breakaway civilization.

I bring all this up simply to illustrate that the idea of advanced human technology in remote ancient times has been around longer than most people realize.

The Iliad and the Tower of Babel: The Fall of the Lost World

Another peek at our lost technological past is related in Homer's *The Iliad.* In this epic saga of the Trojan War, we have another side of the Biblical tale of the Tower of Babel.

There is a school of thought that the fall of Troy and the destruction of the

Tower of Babel are different versions of the same event – the fall of the most recent ‘forgotten’ or lost advanced civilization. Human history as we know it might actually begin with this event. Though Homer told it in terms of ancient Greeks and the vanquished Trojans who were eventually the Romans, I’m convinced that his epic was merely an allegory fashioned for the audience of the day. I think Homer was telling a much older story than is generally assumed.

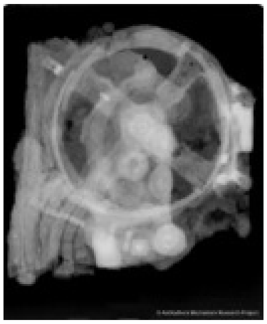
I think Homer was telling yet a version of the fall of the since lost advanced civilization.

Forgotten…But Not Gone: Architecture and Artifacts

So humankind marched on amid the remnants of a fallen age and with time lost direct touch with it, thus a real history became folk memories and those became legend and then mythology and religion. All that materially remained were several massive buildings too sturdy to disappear, and the odd object too well-crafted to ignore.

Most prominently there remains to this day the megalithia: The Great Pyramid, Baalbek, Teotihuacan, Tenochtitlan and other like sites. Then there are the strange things that keep turning up.

The aforementioned Antikythera Mechanism is one of the strongest arguments for the existence of lost technology of ancient times. It is essentially an analog computer that was determined to predict astronomical positions for astrology and calendars. Encased in a 340 mm × 180 mm × 90 mm wooden box, this complex clockwork mechanism employs 30 expertly fitted bronze gears. Its remains were found in nearly a hundred pieces, the largest gear 140 mm in diameter with 223 teeth. Found in a shipwreck off a Greek island in 1900–1901, the device is dated to around 150 BC. It is thought to have been designed and constructed by Greek scientists. Might this have been another type of ‘Liahona’ GPS device?



Jo Marchant Antikythera Mechanism Project

What are we to do with this? And what are we to conclude about grooved metal spheres embedded in rock almost three billion years before humankind is assumed to have emerged? Some accept an intelligent design of the grooved spheres, others question the conclusions about their discovery. Out-of-place-artifacts are a popular genre of alternative research and they piss off a lot of mainstreamers, to my great personal enjoyment. They should be taken into account in any discussion of possible evidence of forgotten civilizations of the remote past. But they are often dismissed.

No matter how aggressive the denial, these things remain insufficiently explained by mainstream science. That the objects seriously annoy those academia guys is mostly due to more people increasingly not buying what the modern establishment of the science priesthood has been selling. The most inquisitive minds never did drink that communion wine.

So for the sake of continuing the discussion, let’s assume we have sufficiently covered that the idea that a civilization lost and forgotten to known history, maybe more than one, has been around. Let us then assume there was a nugget of truth in this idea and propose an advanced civilization did indeed exist. Let’s proceed with the idea that relics and pieces of knowledge of that lost civilization’s advanced technology were around for longer than they were.

The pertinent question here is: What did some men set out to do with all of this stuff?

CHAPTER THREE

RECONSTRUCTION

We must now consider how the influence of the forgotten advanced civilization eventually reached the 19th Century airship builders.

Let’s say that by the time the lost advanced civilization had become legend and myth, Earthborn humanity was far enough away from an off-planet influence that what developed from this point it could call its own. In other words, I say humankind was figuring things out without ET by this point in our story.

The biggest step toward the breakaway civilizations of our time was taken by the establishment of the most legendary institution of knowledge in ancient history. I am convinced that said institution is responsible for humankind’s latest (and still current) attempt to reconstruct what has been lost.

The Library of Alexandria: The Known Source

Established in the 3rd Century BC, in Alexandria, Egypt, the Library was the legendary repository of all the knowledge of humankind up to that time and it was where all the great thinkers of its era went to study the countless scrolls within its walls. Burned and ransacked by various idiots and megalomaniacs in its last hundred years of existence, the Library’s final destruction amounted to a loss of the greatest spectrum of cultural knowledge of remote human history.

You might say the destruction of the Library of Alexandria is the reason we're discussing forgotten civilizations and their lost technology in the first place. But some scholars think most of what was in the Library actually survived, having been proliferated to other cities, especially the Imperial Library of Constantinople but also to the Academy of Gondishapur in Persia and the House of Wisdom located in Baghdad.

So how might such knowledge have eventually gotten into the hands of 19th Century Prussians?

The Knights Templar: Architects of the New World

You have likely heard much of all the mysteries and legends of the Knights Templar. Their origin is well known, their time in the Holy Land well documented and much discussed in our times. Joseph Farrell has written a bit on the Fourth Crusade, during which the Templars who were contracted to strike the infidels in Jerusalem but ended up sacking Constantinople instead. And guess what it appears they came away with as a reward?

You guessed it. Scrolls and maps thought lost in the destruction of the Library of Alexandria but actually ended up in the Imperial Library. Of course, the best stuff had likely been picked through and not put 'on the shelves' for circulation. That's why there were shenanigans surrounding said 'Fourth Crusade' – to get at the booty salvaged from Alexandria, specifically that 'special collections room' stuff relating to knowledge of other continents across the western sea. You can read more about this in my Burton book and even more in Farrell's *Financial Vipers of Venice* and also his *Thrice Great Hermetica And The Janus Age.*

I happen to agree with the theory that the Knights Templar captured said 'lost ancient knowledge' in Constantinople, and maybe some in Jerusalem before that, too. This knowledge was brought back to Western Europe via their headquarters in France and for a while the Templars were alpha dog in the west because of what they knew and how they applied that knowledge.

But all good things come to an end and so with the Templar order. Because of its autonomous wealth and independent political influence, the Knights Templar were betrayed and hunted down, their leader murdered. However, most of them got away with their fleet, their treasure and their vault of ancient knowledge. The knights were forced to flee to Scotland and Portugal or disperse throughout Europe to evade the insanity in France backed by the Pope.

Freemasonry: What They Knew

Whether it began in ancient times or was actually founded by the banished Knights Templar, what we know as Freemasonry has carried forth the knowledge and cause of the lost past and its reconstruction. Most scholars credit the banished Templars as the founders of freemasonry in Scotland. Associated with this history is the Rosslyn Chapel filled with much freemasonic symbolism.

Built by William Sinclair I in the 15th Century, the Templar association with the Sinclairs and the Rosslyn Chapel is often debunked by a few scholars who point to the family's testimony against the order in the 14th Century and because Scottish freemasonry didn't exist until the 1720s. These same scholars ignore the fact that freemasons are instructed not to defend the craft. I say the Sinclairs' testimony against the Knights Templar was a tactic to protect the order's secrets and freemasonry itself.

What were those secrets?

In 1867, freemason George Oliver wrote: "*It is admitted that we are in possession of numerous legends which are not found in holy writ, but being of very ancient date, are entitled to consideration, although their authenticity may be questioned and their aid rejected…Although some of the facts, how pure soever at their first promulgation, may have been distorted and perverted by passing through a multitude of hands in their transmission down the stream of time, amidst the fluctuation of the earth and the downfall of mighty states and empires*." (Oliver, *Historical Landmarks*)

Whatever you believe about the Templars and freemasonry in Scotland, the lore of the fraternity is that ancient secrets are embedded within its symbols and degrees. Funny thing about those Scots freemasons and forgotten civilizations…

The Royal Society: What They Sought

In my book *Secret Missions 2: The Lost Expedition of Sir Richard Francis Burton* I explore the history of the Royal Society and the men who founded it, including the man who envisioned it, Scots freemason Sir Robert Moray. In that book, I present the evidence for what I think the Royal Society was all about: the reconstruction of lost technology of the forgotten civilizations.

I agree with author Robert Lomas who in *Freemasonry and the Birth of Modern Science* demonstrates that the fraternal society had gained possession of ancient secrets and was in pursuit of the missing pieces of knowledge. Essentially, freemasonry sought to preserve the lost world.

Where do you suppose they got their ancient information? I say the Templars were indeed the source. That's likely why their influence on the fraternity there is so vehemently denied. The Sinclairs testified against the Templars? *So what*? Again, that's an old tactic; protest much in public in order to cloak your private advocacy and participation. Freemasonry didn't start in Scotland until the early 1700s? Says who? Oh, the mainstream historians. I'm laughing.

If it wasn't documented, it didn't happen? Please.

We're talking about a fraternal order notorious for its secrecy and known for going sub rosa as it sees fit. We're also talking about an order of knights who were legendary for their secrecy and forced to go underground – and most modern scholars say 'There's nothing to see here! No freemasonry in Scotland until the 1720s!'

Here's what I see: The Knights Templar fled France and its nefarious allies of the Church, taking their ancient secrets with them. Subsequently, when freemasonry decided to emerge, some of those secrets were in the hands of the founders of the Royal Society via lodge membership.

Moray, the founder of the Society, had a lodge named after him. He used masonic code when imprisoned as a spy in France and this earned him special status when serving in captivity for King Louis. Moray’s father-in-law, Lord Balcarres, owned an extensive library of ancient alchemical knowledge, among other relative subjects, and Moray spent a lot of time there. It’s obvious to anyone who knows what they’re looking at that Moray was a freemason and his vision of an organization devoted to the secrets of science and nature was filled with and made real by other freemasons armed with the Templars’ ancient knowledge.

How do I know? George Oliver’s 1867 quote above says as much. That quote is a clue but I’m also a freemason myself, raised to the 3rd Degree in the early 1990s in New York. I’m pretty confident about this issue.

The Royal Society started out with philosopher scientists who knew there was more to the remote human past than traditional history liked to acknowledge or even knew. Most Fellows of the society were were freemasons and if they weren’t, shortly after entry to the Society, they became lodge members. I’d say another clue is that members were called ‘Fellows’ and there is the Fellow degree of Masonry.

As freemasons, these members of the newly founded Royal Society shared an interest in the lost technology of forgotten times. While they were indeed first brought together to build a new navy for young England, the Society did not dissolve after that was accomplished. They continued on, armed with their special knowledge of the past, and they proceeded to seek out the forgotten civilization and to apply what they knew of its technology to their present world.

When you study their activities and pursuits, it becomes apparent that the Royal Society of England, like similar societies that existed in other countries, sought to rebuild the lost world in a new one. And the determined freemasons of the Royal Society were not the only beneficiaries of the Templars’ ancient secrets.

The Angelic Society

Though Freemasonry is a thread leading us into and through the 19th Century, I would be remiss if I neglected to consider the role legendary author Jules Verne may play in all of this talk of reviving lost technology. More specifically, we must take a brief look at an organization rumored to be behind Verne’s amazingly prescient vision of the 20th Century and beyond.

The Angelic Society is generally described as a 16th Century literary circle operating in a secretive masonic manner. It is alleged to be behind the mystery of Rennes-le-Chateau, the Priory of Sion and the Thule Society. It is the Angelic Society that is also rumored to have counted among its luminary membership the 19th Century author Jules Verne.

Because of his influence on the science and technology of the 20th Century, it has been rumored of Jules Verne that he was fed secrets by the Angelic Society, specifically the secrets of ancient technology that were developed by those who read his books. Submarine pioneer Simon Lake credited Verne’s *20,000 Leagues Under the Sea* as his inspiration. Likewise Dumont and Sikorsky, Goddard and Oberth, Von Braun, Marconi and Hubble all credit Verne’s influence on their accomplishments and these are men greatly responsible for the 20th Century as we know it. This influence could be interpreted as akin to that of a breakaway civilization seeking mastery over our world.

And what about that alleged association with the infamous Thule Society?

I’ll get to that.

The German Quest Begins

At last we are here. Prussia is where the 19th Century emergence I refer to in the title of this book actually takes flight, thus must we examine how it started there.

You will notice that we’ve looked at the Templar influence on Scottish freemasonry and the Royal Society of England, and we've glimpsed at a possible such influence on France's Societe Angelique. However, I saved the Germans for last because it is here we find the genesis of the Prussian breakaway civilization.

Like the Scottish freemasons after them, the Knights Templar was not the only recipient of lost ancient knowledge. During the Crusades, they fought beside their Christian European brothers, specifically the 'German order'.

The Teutonic Knights

With an origin dating back to a group of Knights Hospitallers ordered by Pope Celestine II to take control of a German hospital in Jerusalem in 1143AD, the Teutonic Knights rose from the subsequent desire of German knights to provide aid for their countrymen on pilgrimage. Modeled on the Knights Templar, the all-German order never attained the power or influence in the Holy Land as did their Templar inspiration. However, back in their European homeland it was a different story.

Starting out of the gate by pissing off the monarchy of Transylvania, the early 13th Century Teutonic Knights pulled a Templar and requested the privilege of answering directly to the Pope instead of the King of Hungary. This got them banished, so they set their sights on Prussia.

Wishing to use the order to secure the borders of his kingdom, the Prussian monarch gave imperial charter to the Teutonic Knights to conquer Prussia. For fifty years the knights and their armies fought the natives, who were considered pagans. Those who would not submit to Catholic baptism were either killed or banished, resulting in the homeland taken over by non-Prussian Catholics and ruled as a sovereign monastic state by the Teutonic Knights.

So what might have gotten into these guys who started out providing aid and comfort to German pilgrims? Why did they start strutting around in emulation of their big brothers, the Knights Templar?

It might be their participation in the sacking of Constantinople in 1203AD, that infamous Fourth Crusade from which the invading masterminds came away with the ancient knowledge of the Imperial Library. The trio of characters behind the invasion was Pope Innocent III, Dandolo the Doge of Venice and the German King Philip of Swabia. From this ‘crusade’ did the Teutonic Knights obtain what is vaguely described as ‘possessions’ and six years later they militarized in the fashion of the Templars, complete with a Grand Master.

What did the Teutonic Order get its hands on?

Joseph Farrell speculates:

“That there was in High Antiquity a maritime knowledge of the world commensurate with our own, and this knowledge included the existence of the North and South American (and Antarctic) continents that were only (re)discovered during the voyages of exploration in the fifteenth century;
“That this knowledge was retained on charts and maps copied, with varying degrees of accuracy, through the ages;
“That this knowledge was retained in various repositories, including the Library of Alexandria;…”

(*Financial Vipers of Venice*, Pg 80)

In my opinion, it was a result of the invasion of Constantinople that Germany first got its hands on ancient secrets of the lost technology of forgotten civilizations via the Teutonic Knights, who brought the roots of the ‘NYM-ZA’ to their homeland and there they grew.

CHAPTER FOUR

NEW ERA, NEW WORLD

The reader should now have a grasp on how the Prussians got involved in this breakaway development game. Before we continue to the story of the 19th Century breakaway civilizations, you must consider how the German reconstruction of the forgotten civilization came to be.

Age of Enlightenment: The Prussian Perspective

During the years leading up to and during the Renaissance, Prussia had progressed from a ‘pagan’ realm conquered by the Teutonic Knights into a loosely cohesive collection of like-minded yet fiercely independent states. It was a period in which the environment for the establishment of a group dedicated to recreating a version of the ‘forgotten civilization’ was ripe.

William Urban writes:

> *“The new way of thinking which made an impact on this situation was essentially secular and logical--to create from old forms new methods of governing, new approaches to managing the Church, and new means of raising money. All change, however, had to be accomplished with as much deference to tradition and accepted practice as possible. The role of Rhetoric was to persuade the skeptical that innovations were really returns to old practices, reestablishment of old institutions, and revitalization of ancient morality. This, in turn, required the study of history, especially the history of the Church and*

its relationship to the State. The study of the past was to put the service of the present, with practical, secular goals, not moralistic or theological ends. Thus the humanists and rhetoricians of Germany in the era of the Reformation introduced what appeared to be administrative and educational reforms, but which in reality was the secularization of society."

(*Renaissance Humanism in Prussia: The Court of the Grand Masters,* Monmouth College)

What this means is that the new Prussian leadership had a population that wanted the old ways respected as much as they wanted the new ways instated and thus was the opening provided for a group founded upon the idea of developing lost technology of the past. The group could more easily gain the support and cooperation of the princes of industry enchanted by the idea of the rebirth of a lost technological and superior tradition, especially if that tradition could be cloaked in a Germanic mask.

The product of the domination by the Teutonic Knights was that mask: the sentiment of a unified or national German identity. And this was not the only influence the Teutonic Knights had on the development of the Prussian breakaway group.

The Prussian Mystics: Willing Participants

Prussia was rich with mysticism.

In the mid-14th Century there was Dorothy of Montau, a Christian recluse who became Prussia's first native saint. She was a 'bridal mystic' whose existence did not resonate with the rule of the Teutonic Knights, mostly because her expression of Christianity was likely too reflective of the local pagan tradition they fought so hard to eradicate. But the native Prussians would never really let it go.

Instead of eradicating so called 'paganism', certain Germans sought to mine its forbidden lore.

During the Renaissance, Germans experienced an inferiority complex inspired by the more accomplished Italians whom they sought to separate themselves from through their own accomplishments. Alchemists such as Paracelsus, Dr. Johann Georg Faust, Heinrich Cornelius Agrippa, Johann Joachim Becher, Jakob Böhme and Johann Rudolf Glauber were active and influential during the 15th through 17th Centuries.

It is in the 18th Century that we find our most direct influences on the Prussian circles that were likely to have inspired the men who would pursue airship technology in the following century. This humanist Age of Enlightenment was a period of much alchemy and mysticism in the Kingdom of Prussia.

Johann Friedrich Bottger was an alchemist whose pursuit of the creation of gold got him recognized by Frederick I and the monarchy of Poland, who seemed more interested in employing Bottger in the production of porcelain. Perhaps more interesting to our context here is Johann Conrad Dippel, the pietist Christian doctor and alchemist associated with the legendary novel *Frankenstein*.

Actually born in the historic Castle Frankenstein near Darmstadt, Dippel earned a master’s degree in theology from the University of Giessen where he also studied alchemy and philosophy. His disciple Emanuel Swedenborg called Dippel a “most vile devil who did wicked things” and perhaps that was so. Dippel became known for avid dissection of cadavers and experiments with soul-transference from one corpse to another. Dippel claimed to have created an Elixir of Life and also pursued methods of exorcism. Ultimately, the things said about him ended up in both the novel and film versions of the story *Frankenstein*: grave-robbing, animating corpses, blowing up Castle Frankenstein, forsaking religious faith for indifferent humanist science and even being chased off from the village. Very colorful stuff and Dippel was not a literary creation, rather he was an inspiration for one.

Masonry and occult society were considered to have been at their most ‘deviant’ levels in Prussia, this reputation stemming likely from the character assassination of the Knights Templar who were a direct influence on the Teutonic Knights ruling Prussia before the Enlightenment. Karl Gotthelf von Hund, who instituted the Rite of Strict Observance into German Masonry, claimed to have Templar documents giving his rite the official stamp of approval.

The aforementioned ‘deviance’ grew from both the rumored and real practices of occult scientists such as Dippel. The spooky melodramatic stuff often overshadows the practical scientific accomplishments and the secrecy practiced by these occult scientists doesn’t help in that matter. In spite of the associated horror tales, these men would actually contribute to the advancement of German science and industry, from which would emerge the mysterious secret airship builders.

It’s no wonder that mystics and alchemists ascended to higher prominence in 18th Century Germany as Frederick the Great, King of Prussia, was a huge proponent of the Enlightenment and sought to advance German culture as far as possible in this direction. He also advocated advancement of occult sciences.

Isabel Cooper-Oakley writes:

> *“Few monarchs have more thoroughly protected the Mystic Schools within the Masonic body than Frederick II., King of Prussia, well named "The Great". Not only did he protect them, but he also actively sympathised with them. While still Crown Prince, he was initiated as a Mason at Brunswick in August, 1738, and was from that period the staunch protector of the Masonic Fraternity; nor did he omit to penetrate very deeply into the early traditions of Masonry, far more so, indeed, than many who have fewer duties to engage their time.”*
> (*Traces of a Hidden Tradition in Masonry and Medieval Mysticism,* 1900)

Frederick the Great established the Prussian Academy of Sciences, the German version of the philosopher-scientist group operating in England. He was also closely associated with Jean Arouet, aka Voltaire, who once said: “*The Veda was the most precious gift for which the West had ever been indebted to the East.”*

I can’t help but wonder about that statement within the context of Voltaire’s influence on the esoterically inclined monarch who founded the German version of the group of philosopher-scientists searching for the lost technology of forgotten civilizations. The reader should not be anankastic on this issue but rather recognize that influences do come from somewhere. This book is my argument for the human origin of airship technology and the breakaway civilization that developed it. If anyone created an environment from which the mysterious Prussian organization at the center of my thesis would emerge, it was Frederick the Great.

However, Frederick William II was responsible for the erosion of what Frederick the Great accomplished. He reigned from 1786-1797 and, in spite of an interest in mysticism and having joined the Rosicrucians, this Freddie opposed the Enlightenment. His reputation took a hit due to the perception that he had let German status slide in an era of rising French aggression. I think the result of his reign is what finally motivated the establishment of the 19th Century group that would pursue airship technology with an objective of creating a strong German nation from the pieces of Prussia that remained after Frederick William II.

The Sleeper Wakes

So how did that long ago fish god from the lost world beneath the sea exercise its influence over the emerging mystery airship group?

Prussia in the early 19th Century had to contend with Napoleon. Involved in the French emperor's defeat at Leipzig was Prussian alchemist Carl Adolf von Carlowitz, who was also deeply involved with the pursuit of making gold. I think Von Carlowitz would have been an influence – if not an active participant – in the formation of the group that would pursue airship technology in the subsequent decades of the 19th Century. But what really might have been the ignition point of the German application of secret technology?

At some point, the 'NYMZA' had to have been created. I initially suspected that it was in this period, possibly a result of Napoleon's time in Egypt. Just because the Templars had been banished as an order doesn't mean there were no longer such men in France. As to Napoleon's expedition to Egypt, it smells of Talleyrand cheese.

First, the expedition landed at Alexandria and from there it moved to Cairo and provided Napoleon the opportunity to play Quetzalcoatl to the local natives. Napoleon established a library, a chemical laboratory, an observatory, a botanical garden and a museum of antiquities. Probably the most famous product of this expedition is the discovery of the Rosetta Stone, but there is a legend about the emperor taking private time inside the Great Pyramid.

According to the lore, Napoleon emerged from the Great Pyramid in a somewhat unnerved state. When allegedly asked what happened inside the chamber, Napoleon is claimed to have replied, “What’s the use? You’d never believe me.” Refuted by modern scholars, their argument based upon the testimony of Napoleon’s private secretary who wrote that the emperor had never entered the Great Pyramid, we cannot say with any degree of proof or confidence that Napoleon did or did not have his moment inside the King’s Chamber. But it is a cool story and *might* be true. If so, what might the French have gained from it?

Not to be outdone by the French, there was a Prussian expedition to Egypt from 1842-1845. Commissioned by Friedrich Wilhelm IV, this expedition was led by Karl Lepsius who coined the phrase ‘Book of the Dead’ (‘totenbuch’) for the legendary book he discovered. Might Lepsius’ crew have also discovered something that was the introduction to the ‘NYM-ZA’ or ‘nameless ones’?

In the Egyptian *Book of the Dead* there are numerous references to the powerful god whose name is unknown. The lack of specific identity lends to the mystique of this particular god’s power as described. Might this have been done for that very purpose?

It may be so, but I bring up all this Egyptian stuff for that reason in a general sense: Mystique.

The mystique of ancient Egypt really picked up speed in the 19th Century. Between the tales of Napoleon’s strange episode in the Great Pyramid and the esoteric melodrama of the nature of the *Book of the Dead* (incantations, journeys through other realms, nameless gods, etc etc) and all the basic exotic nature of that ‘lost’ culture, there was a rich field from which to appropriate meaning.

Frederick the Great and his Academy of Sciences, the Prussian version of the Royal Society of England, along with his avid personal participation in freemasonry, demonstrate that Prussia was well populated with esoterically driven scholars, thus this decade just prior to the emergence of ‘NYMZA’ and their Sonora Aero Club of 1850s California may reveal the source of all the shadows around the airship organization.

The Mask of the Nameless One

What am I suggesting?

It’s simple. The hermetic scholars of Prussia, like their counterparts in England, who had been searching for the lost technology of the forgotten civilizations, had found their inspiration at about the same time they were making the astounding technological and scientific discoveries associated with it. I’m suggesting that the group of men who founded the first breakaway civilization, as presented in this book, borrowed the mystique of a ‘nameless god’ from the Egyptian *Book of the Dead* discovered by the Prussian archeologist Lepsius and applied said anonymity of identity to their new organization.

The nameless ‘NYM-ZA’ previously discussed is an analysis based on Egyptian hieroglyphic data and practices. That this specific moniker is associated with the mysterious airship group makes perfect sense when you also consider that it was reportedly a German group. A Prussian/German scientist discovered the *Book of the Dead* in the 1840s, the ‘NYMZA’ of Dellschau and aero club fame appears in the 1850s. Thus, NYM-ZA becomes Dellschau’s ‘NYMZA’, in my opinion.

I further propose that Lepsius’ expedition introduced the relative Prussians to the NYM-ZA hieroglyphic association with the ‘fish god’ and thus a more overt ‘lost ones’ aspect of the forgotten civilization. Certainly the Prussian mystics were familiar to some extent with this basic lore from various mythologies, but here was a specific point of clarity of concept. Whatever was made of this – or whatever science and technology leads arose from it – this was the moment in which I suspect this ‘nameless god of power’ theme was lifted and applied to the secret group of Prussian industrialist mystics who had discovered the lost secrets of anti-gravity and would form the group which will be discussed in the next section of this book.

Remember, hieroglyphs have multiple levels of meaning and intent. The Prussian archeologists associated with the secret organization would have known this and likely suggested that whatever the organization would be called, it should utilize this multi-level aspect. Thus NYM-ZA is used as the template for the creation of an acronym -- the ‘nameless’ aspect serving to shroud the group in the powerful anonymity of a name which only its members understood but outsiders would find intriguing.

In effect, ‘NYMZA’ may have been a 19th Century SPECTRE a la the James Bond opus.

New Reich, New World:
Unified Germanic Vision Applied

And so into the mid-19th Century we go where we find a growing sentiment among varied Prussian citizens to identify as Germans. From this sentiment grew a clear desire to bring all the varied states together into a single nation called Germany. As the industrial revolution propelled humanity forward at breakneck speed, so did these new Germans envision their culture at the forefront of a new world.

And within this greater vision was brewing a specific objective of applying ancient science to the modern world in a practical manner.

Frankenstein’s Real Monster?

So what did Prussian proponents of German unity intend to do with the lost technology?

Honore Gabriel Riqueti, le comte de Mirabeau said in 1788 that ‘war is the national industry of Prussia’. Notable contrary in what he said and did, Mirabeau was a member of the anti-royalist Jacobin Club yet considered them an obstacle to his own desires to restore French royalty. Mirabeau made the above statement about Prussia yet was later discovered to have been on the payroll of Austria. Whatever the case regarding the French count, history and the German chapters of the airship mystery apparently agreed that he was right about Prussia.

Frank Jacobs writes: *"This late-stage war octopus is housed inside the pre-war borders of Imperial Germany, but it is associated with Prussia. This most powerful, most militarised of German states was the driving force behind German Unification in 1871 (enabled, incidentally, by a war with France)."* (*510-"War is The National Industry of Prussia"*, Strange Maps, bigthink.com)

The Napoleonic Wars saw the birth of romantic nationalism in the Prussian states. The French invasion of the Holy Roman Empire sparked a secular Prussian response. Yet, not even the defeat of the emperor would result in the unification in a single German nation.

The push for all German speaking peoples of Europe to unify into a single nation was led by Austrian Germans whose vision expanded the Prussian territories into the Baltic region and more of Western Europe. By this era, philosopher Johann Gottfried von Herder's original ideal of nationalism was being industrialized with the development of railroads to more easily unify the Prussian territories into a unified German identity via easy access to each other. Economic unification had begun in 1818.

Despite the Revolutions of 1848, the most prolific period of European political revolutions in history, the proponents of German unification behind the March Revolution failed in their objective to formally unify the Prussian states into a single nation. However, the response to this effort was the Frankfurt Parliament, the first official attempt to unify Prussia under a constitution put forth by a freely elected body. The downfall of this came with Prussian and Austrian rivalry over dominance, the Prussian proponents of lesser Germany desiring hegemony that would surely be denied by Austria. Formal unification fell apart at this time and Prussian dominance would not come until the 1860s, after the period we will soon be coming to in our examination of the airship mystery.

Prussian advocates of unification were pushing for reforms in response to the economic and industrial crises of the states and thus the Prussian Constitution was adopted in 1850. A representative assembly was created, elected according to a system based on amount of tax paid. A ‘House of Lords’ comprised of conservative agrarians, Junkers, was formed by parties in control of east Prussian territories who also served as officers in the military. But industrialists enjoyed equal political power, thus resulting in an ultimate synthesis of militarism and bureaucracy, as pointed out by Judith Merkle in Management & Ideology: *The Legacy of the International Scientific Management Movement* (UC Press, 1980).

Merkle describes the post-Bismarck era as primarily influenced by the early 19th Century Prussian model: *“In industrial organization, the military model predominated, and many employers insured military discipline by only men who had first served in the army. The general ambience of industry and administration in Germany at that time was military and aristocratic.”* (Ibid)

This political and industrial environment of 1850s pre-unification Germany was the perfect theater for the formation and activities of a secret group of philosopher-scientist-industrialists to pursue their objectives under a banner of pan-Germanic unification. This environment is what I propose was the perfect storm of circumstances from which emerged the shadowy 19th Century ‘NYMZA’ revealed by Charles Dellschau in the early 20th Century.

As has been pointed out by numerous historians and scholars, the seeds of the arrogance of 20th Century Germany were planted in this 19th Century period of the aggressive movement toward Prussian unification. The modern military-industrial complex has its birth in this cradle of military-aristocracy of Prussian ideals.

There is a difference between a nation whose industrial captains come together in a time of crisis to defeat a national threat when necessary and a nation whose existence is built upon a militaristic ideology looking for opportunities to exercise its war machine as a means of imposing political dominance for its own sake. Prussian zealots certainly had such dominance in mind, and thus I say so did the group called ‘NYMZA’ of the writings of Dellschau.

Like the monster in the novel written by Percy Shelley under the pseudonym of his wife, the Prussian breakaway civilization first known as ‘NYMZA’ was brought to life by the descendants of those ‘deviant’ German hermetic scientists in pursuit of lost knowledge and ultimate power.

Whatever one chooses to accept about the legends and accounts of a forgotten civilization in our remote ancient past, scholars of hermetic arts and those technological sciences developed from them have believed in the idea.

Among the believers in the forgotten civilizations were the Prussian philosopher scientists of the 19th Century, following a long tradition of hundreds of years. Such beliefs fueled practical advances in known technologies, and thus was created an atmosphere that could very well have motivated a group of military-industrial leaders to pursue what they perceived was lost ancient technology, and with an objective of gaining an edge in their cause for a national identity and unification of their people.

In order to go further, we had to determine if there was anything in history to support the idea that a group of Prussian nationalists might have pursued the building of airships in the 1850s. My conclusion is that we have established a reasonable foundation to proceed in this examination.

What do I think of all the lore regarding beings from other worlds bringing their technology to Earth? What do I think of all the ‘NYMZA’ business?

I have no problem wrapping my mind around other civilizations coming here from elsewhere, directly interacting with and influencing us. I do think that, if this happened, it happened a very long time ago and they were either so advanced that we mistook them for gods, or they purposely presented themselves to be gods for their own benefit.

As regards the Prussian philosopher scientists and industrialists who may have pursued a modern application of ancient technological knowledge, I think that’s exactly what was going on. I also think it’s very possible that someone in their milieu decided to appropriate the lore of the ‘nameless ones’ as a mask to primarily hide their identities but also to manipulate and intimidate others. I base this upon what we know of early 19th Century

Prussian culture, especially their military-industrial philosophy. This philosophy reflected their dedication to a unified Germany that would theoretically dominate Europe and the world.

All of this means to me that what we’re talking about was most likely a very human accomplishment reflective of a forgotten time. It was also reflective of the dangerous and dark edge of the arcane secrets of material technology as well as those found in the psychological frontier.

So let’s proceed to the next part…

PART TWO

THE RISE OF THE BREAKAWAY CIVILIZATIONS

CHAPTER FIVE

THE SONORA AERO CLUB

I am convinced it was no accident that the airship mystery emerged in California – and it was not simply because of the state's geographical distance from the eastern population and the nation's power centers of government and finance.

There was something more going on.

California Tarot:
Cabrillo, Drake, Fremont & Hidden Legacy

In my previous work, *Secret Missions: The Hidden Legacy of Old California* (Corvos 2014), I explore the Alta California expedition of Juan Cabrillo in the middle 16th Century and its esoteric implications. As considered in that book, there is evidence to suggest that Cabrillo was a Templar by blood legacy and was looking for something embedded within the geography of California. I allude to it in Chapter Fourteen:

"It was during the night of Saturday, 11 November 1542, when the San Salvador was 'lost' from the other ship and continued on alone for the next four days. During this part of the voyage, we are to understand that Cabrillo sailed his ship close to shore – except where San Francisco Bay opens up, at which point the San Salvador allegedly was not sailed close to shore – until reaching the Russian River. Cabrillo then allegedly turns south to find the other ships, missing no cove, yet – again – missing San Francisco Bay. On Wednesday, 15 November, the ships are reunited…

"Juan Cabrillo reached the mouth of San Francisco Bay and he sailed his ship into it. How far he explored the bay is anyone's guess. The record shows four days during which the San Salvador was separated from its companion vessel. That was plenty of time for Cabrillo to enter the bay, make a single circumference, then exit for the brief leg north and turn back. He may even have done it en route back, but this author argues he most likely did enter San Francisco Bay. So why the secrecy, if he did?

"That Juan Cabrillo would have separated his flagship from the companion vessels and sailed on alone, entered and explored San Francisco Bay and it remained secret to this day suggests to me a clandestine purpose. If he was looking for the Northwest Passage, a sail around the enclosed bay would have resulted in his continuing north up the coast again – which he did. Whatever Cabrillo was

looking for in San Francisco Bay, it was of great importance…"

(Bosley, Corvos Books, 2014)

The premise here is that the explorer Cabrillo was actually on a secret mission embedded within his overt mission for Spain. The entire San Francisco Bay episode is suspicious and becomes even more so when you add the controversy involving Sir Francis Drake and whether he also explored the bay or not. I proposed in my book that both men were looking for something of interest to the hermetic scientists behind their expeditions, rather that the personal missions which these legendary explorers were conducting within their commissioned expeditions were their real assignments.

What was or is in San Francisco topography that so fascinated Cabrillo and Drake? England was looking for the Northwest Passage so might that have inspired the secrecy regarding a Drake investigation of the bay? The problem with that is that Drake went on to find the mouth of a passage much farther north thus reasonably eliminating that possibility. Cabrillo broke away from the other ship in his Spanish backed expedition exactly where his own ship would have encountered San Francisco Bay and had plenty of time to secretly conduct his own investigation. Why all the secrecy and why the official denials that these men even knew the bay was there?

My suspicion is that California is home to evidence of a forgotten Pacific based civilization. This idea is not new. In fact, Spain sent Cabrillo and other explorers in search of a California they believed to be the home of Amazons, an island kingdom of riches and mystery.

Over the centuries since that time, the curious relics that dot the landscape of the west coast state have inspired theories of Lemuria. From odd stone walls in Northern California to Santa Barbara petroglyphs to Malibu rock formations suspected of being weathered ancient statuary and on to accounts of cities in caverns in Death Valley and a giant arrowhead in the San Bernardino foothills, there is reason to consider the idea that one of the lost civilizations had established the colonial edge of its past glory in the Golden State. That is why Cabrillo and Drake were so keen on California, specifically the San Francisco Bay and, for whatever reason known to them, they had specific interest in the bay and this inspired the secrecy.

So what is in San Francisco Bay?

I don’t know yet. That is a part of my research that remains in progress so I’m reticent to discuss it at this time. All I’m willing to reveal presently is that it may be a landmark placed a very long time ago that would require a trained eye to recognize, and it has hermetic significance. What is pertinent here is the importance of California in the age following these historical expeditions.

There is more than meets the eye where California is concerned, especially in the area where the airship mystery took root.

The Gold Country:
A Staged Event on the World Grid?

The specific area in question where the airships are concerned happens to be where the Gold Rush of 1849 manifested in a gathering of towns that exist today on the western edge of Yosemite National Park. Tuolumne County is home to Jamestown, Columbia, Angels Camp, and Sonora. These towns started as miner’s camps, boom towns that sprouted up following the discovery of gold at Sutter’s Mill.

But our previously quoted theorist, Sesh Heri, thinks the discovery of gold in California was not an accident. In his nonfiction work *The Handprint of Atlas* (Corvos LCL), Heri proposes that the Sutter’s Mill discovery was a staged event aimed at the public on two levels, psychological and esoteric. The psychological aspect was intended to motivate a rush of more Americans into the territory to support the US government’s intention of bringing California into the union. The esoteric aspect involved alchemical knowledge on how to find gold and perhaps even to produce it, both via hermetic secrets.

We’ve all heard of alchemists making gold. I even propose that in ancient South America there existed a giant gold-making machine which I discuss in *Secret Missions 2: The Lost Expedition of Sir Richard Francis Burton*. But might not alchemists also possess the knowledge to predict where nature manufactures gold?

Sesh Heri thinks they do. He explains in *The Handprint of Atlas* the concept of the ‘hodge’ and how these natural circular formations contain the necessary elements and conditions that gold can and will be found there. What Heri concludes is that the US government knew exactly where to find the gold before a single pick was buried into the soil. His theory is that the gold at Sutter’s Mill was not so much discovered as it was *revealed* for the aforementioned purpose of expanding the population and exploiting further claim to the territory.

Where all this relates to the airship discussion is the hermetic angle. With esoteric knowledge at play here, we face the suggestion that the Gold Country of California is physically rich in elements of serious interest to alchemists and philosopher scientists. Not only does Sesh Heri see historical shenanigans relative to the gold factor, he has assisted my research with his knowledge of world grid energy flowing through the area of Yosemite and its environs, including Tuolumne County. I have argued elsewhere that such energy is critical to the airship technology developed there.

In *EOTW2: Friends From Sonora*, I suggested the following:

> *“The author proposes that whatever the mechanism…, it incorporated the ELF of the telluric current system of the earth in its anti-gravity and propulsion processes. Here's how it would work: The mechanism on the airship activates an electromagnetic connection to the telluric currents coursing through the terrain of the planet. The batteries that have been theoretically proposed as the power source of the airships would indeed have provided power aboard the ship for lighting and propellers and other shipboard needs. But the electro-magnetic process to which the activated engine is linked would be what provides the anti-gravity and navigational guidance. Essentially, the airship crews would have maps of the telluric currents and use compass-like devices reading the telluric frequency to fly the course of the energy current. You can find flying machines and all other manner of devices powered by this planetary grid in the patents and designs of Nikola Tesla, a major suspect of secret airship development.”*

(Bosley, Corvos 2013)

Sesh Heri’s analysis of the gold issue in question involves his opinion that the telluric currents, the ELF energy that runs through the planet and is used in known technologies like telegraphy, are road maps to finding gold, as these currents interplay with the natural hodges that produce it.

There is telluric current in the Gold Country of Tuolumne – lots of it. Heri has identified configurations of telluric currents massing much concentration in the area, one prominent nodal point being right outside the Ahwanee Lodge, located on the same spot from which researcher David Paulides has identified a strange disappearance. The point here is that the airship builders were drawn to the Gold Country because of the concentration of telluric current, though you shall soon learn here why the gold issue resonates soundly with what I think the NYMZA was doing in South America later in the century.

The time has come to introduce the Sonora Aero Club.

Charles A. A. Dellschau

Born in the Prussian city of Brandenburg in 1830, the source of everything we know about the Sonora Aero Club was this German immigrant who came to the United States as a young man. Charles A. A. Dellschau might have gone unknown to history were it not for a chance discovery.

In the spring of 1968, a man named Fred Washington happened upon 12 odd books being discarded with trash at his local dump. Washington ran an antique shop in Houston and took the curious books there where he further examined the colorful images painted on the large scrapbook-sized pages. He wasn’t sure what the images depicted but he was intrigued nonetheless. By the time a group of students saw the books and requested Washington donate them to their college display on the history of manned flight, he knew he had something of value.

Washington loaned the students one of the books for display at St. Thomas University. That was how artist Pete Navarro learned about them in May 1969. Particularly interested in aviation art and by this time an enthusiast of the late 19th Century airship reports, Navarro was instantly fascinated with the books and their artist-author Dellschau. How Navarro obtained much of the Dellschau art is interesting.

When Navarro inquired about the Dellschau book on display at the university, he learned that it had ended and the material was now owned by local art historian and philanthropist, Mrs De Menil – of the same De Menil family in the milieu of the JFK assassination via Permindex. From there, Navarro learned that Fred Washington still owned several of the Dellschau books, so there he went and obtained three of the books. Washington gave him unlimited access to the remainder so for nearly thirty years Navarro was unfettered in his analysis and research on Dellschau's drawings.

What is so fascinating about these books?

What Navarro and subsequent researchers have learned from the books, from Dellschau's personal diary and in further investigation is that Dellschau had drawn and painted the images between the 1890s and his death in 1923. The images are of flying machines built by a secretive group of German immigrants in Tuolumne County, California, and Dellschau's diary reveals some of the story of that group he said was called the Sonora Aero Club.

The Sonora Aero Club was led by a man named Peter Mennis who, according to Dellschau, knew the secret recipe for the fuel used in the propulsion and lift mechanism of the flying machines the group referred to as 'aeros'. Dellschau's account makes it clear that these aeros were not balloons. They were apparently anti-gravity craft. The problem with that is that Dellschau said the club flew these anti-gravity craft in the mid to late 1850s.

What's this? Practical anti-gravity isn't even supposed to exist now, how are we supposed to believe that men were flying anti-gravity machines before the US Civil War?

That was the point of the first part of this book, to reconsider what mainstream history imposes upon our perception of human knowledge. Once you do that, especially when you step back and look at where the Sonora Aero Club sits on the timeline of history in general, it doesn't seem ridiculous to suggest that perhaps someone had figured out anti-gravity just fifty years before Kitty Hawk, merely 110 years before Apollo 11 landed on the Moon. I'm taking a leap here and guessing you the reader are open to such an idea or you wouldn't be reading this book in the first place.

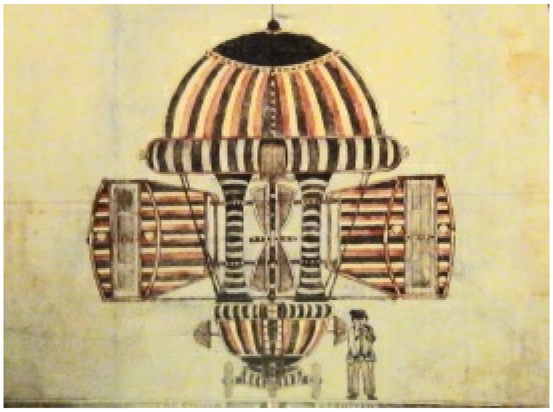
We'll look at the technology of the 'aeros' momentarily but let us return to Dellschau's tale. In the diary and also on several of the drawings, Dellschau identifies a mysterious group behind the Sonora Aero Club (and other clubs whom he does not identify by name): NYMZA.

So what were ‘aeros’?

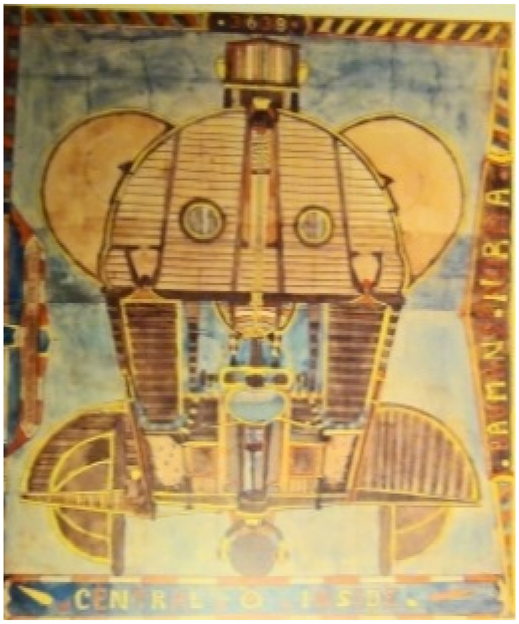
The Aeros: What They Were & Why Tuolumne County?

‘Aeros’ were the flying machines which Dellschau depicted in his art and also claimed were actually being built and flown in Tuolumne County in the 1850s.

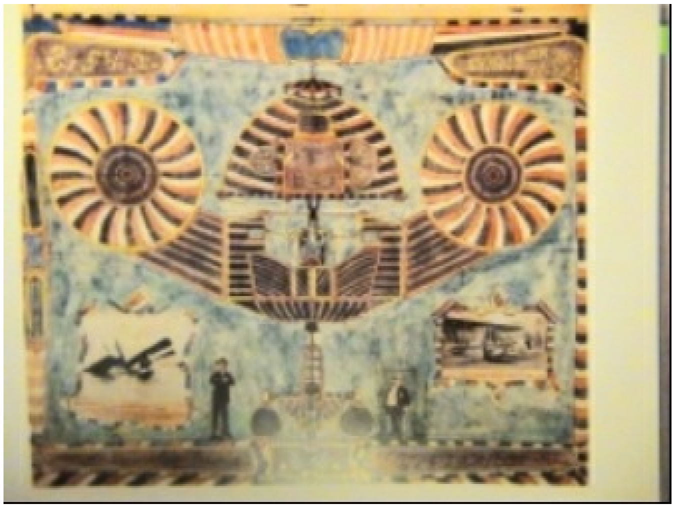
Here are some examples of the Dellschau drawings:



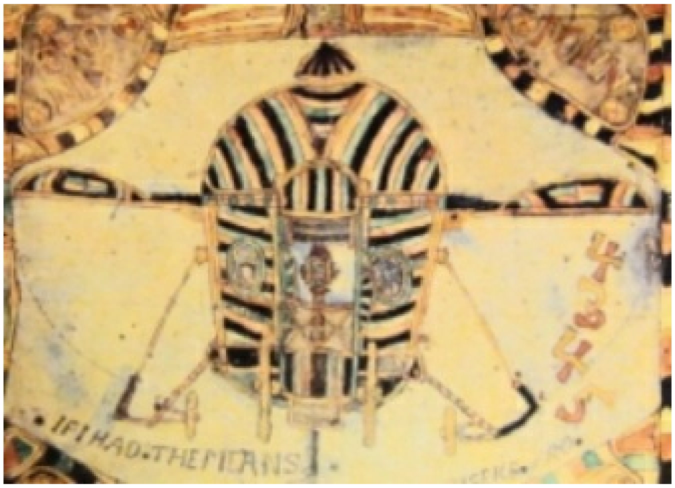
Courtesy of Stephen Romano



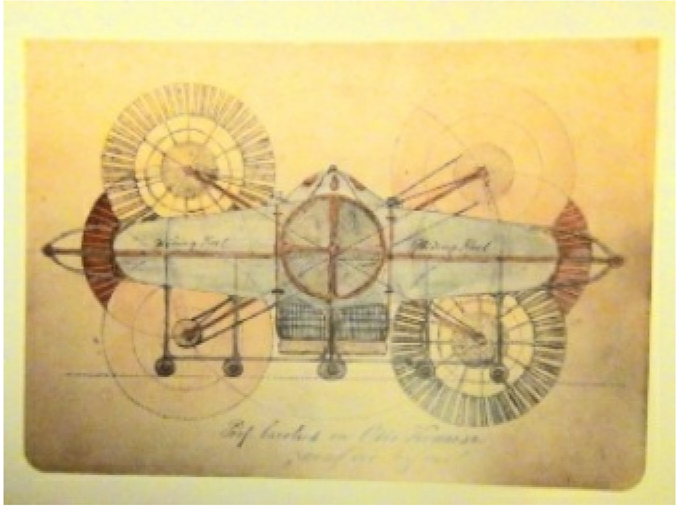
Courtesy of Stephen Romano



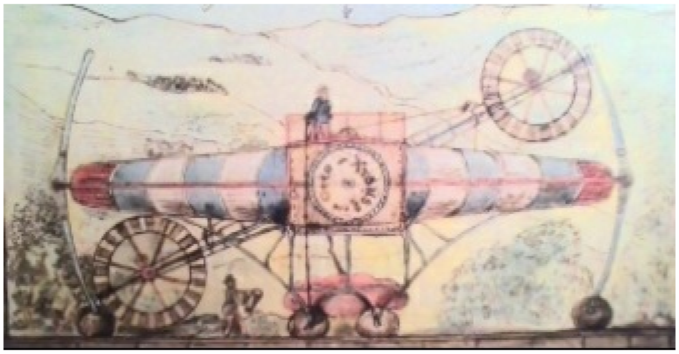
Courtesy of Stephen Romano


IF I HAD THE MEANS

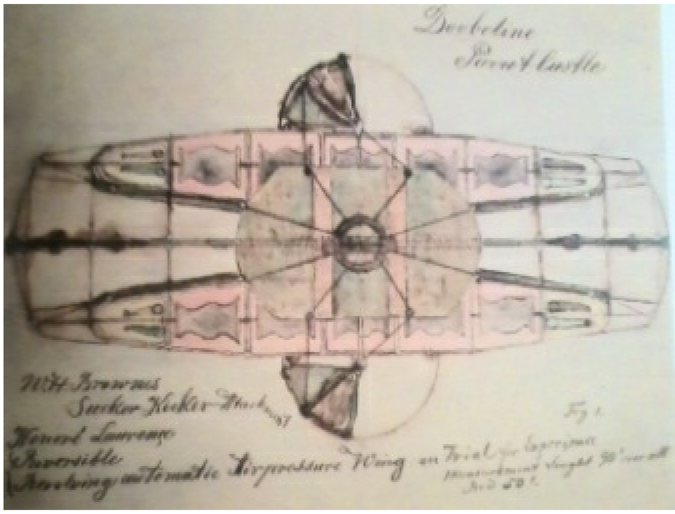
Courtesy of Stephen Romano



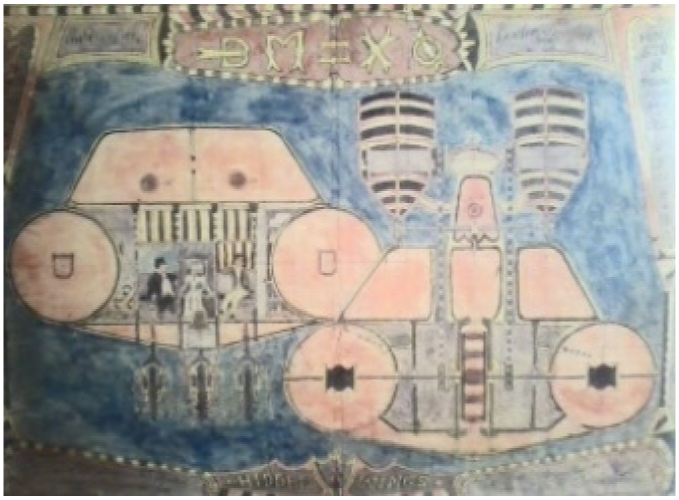
Courtesy of Stephen Romano



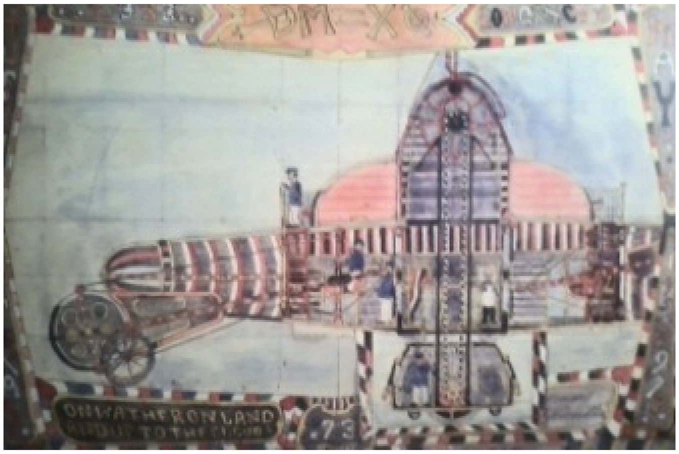
Courtesy of Stephen Romano


W.H. Browns
Sucker Kicker
Reversible
automatic Airpressure Wing on Trial
Fig 1

Courtesy of Stephen Romano



Courtesy of Stephen Romano



Courtesy of Stephen Romano

Now before you run over to a blog and start saying that ‘Bosley says there was stealth and flying saucers and ‘blah blah blah’ before the Civil War’, take a closer look at those drawings. Clearly these are not even 20th Century technology. What you’re looking at are rudimentary proof-of-concept ‘contraption’ models. The Dellschau aeros were the Model T of anti-gravity aero technology. Whatever anti-gravity systems they used, these were very basic mechanisms.

How did they work exactly?

I’m not an engineer so I’m not about to get into the intricate science on that question. I have a basic idea, but let’s look at what Dellschau says first, since he is our only source on the matter.

In his diary, Dellschau asks the leader of the Sonora Aero Club how the aeros work. As explained to him, the aeros possess two chambers that the engine mechanism fills with something called ‘NB gas’ which was produced using a secret blend of chemicals and an equal amount of water and this created a fuel that Dellschau called ‘supe’. This fuel was then applied to a rotating drum via a series of hoses and valves and this spinning process created the ‘NB gas’ which, in turn, spins the shaft with which the pilot controls the direction of the aero. This gas was the key as it was used in propulsion and lift, and only the leader of the club knew the chemical recipe.

This brings us to one of the most startling discoveries presented to me during my analysis of the Dellschau material. This may be one of the biggest revelations about the Dellschau material ever discovered and could also lift him from the obscurity of the ‘outsider artist’ reputation once and for all.

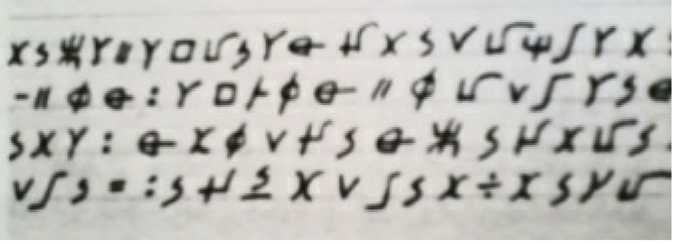
‘NYMZA’: The Dellschau Equation

We shall elaborate on the illuminating German association of NYMZA a little further on, but first let us consider yet another deep aspect of this enigmatic word ‘NYMZA’, in this case as used by Dellschau.

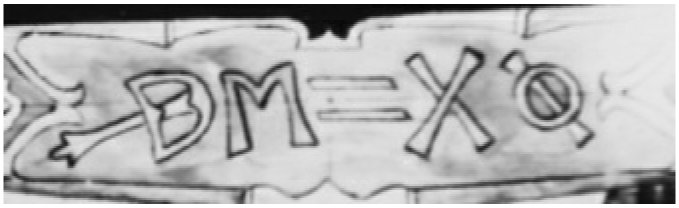
Where NYMZA is concerned, scholars of Dellschau generally stop at the Sonora Aero Club and the subsequent 1890s airship mystery. One might even be satisfied to go no further in analysis than I have with my translation which I'll reveal shortly. However, to do this would be short-sighted.

In the first part of this book, I already presented the word NYMZA in a more arcane context. The Sesh Heri analysis reveals an association between the curious word and material about a god-like being linked with the sea, upon which I expanded and demonstrated a thematic possibility of NYM-ZA association with the lost civilizations and forgotten technology. The suggestion of veiled identity exists in the history and analysis of the word NYM-ZA therefore we must recognize the obvious: NYM-ZA equals Dellschau's NYMZA on the etymological plane.

But that isn't all there is to it. Dellschau used a unique code in his drawings. Here is a sample copied by Pete Navarro:



In the decoding of these symbols, Pete Navarro realized that one particular coded phrase turned up frequently. This is it:



Navarro and subsequent researchers, including myself, agree that the above equation is the coded spelling of NYMZA.

And yet again, there is *more* to it than that.

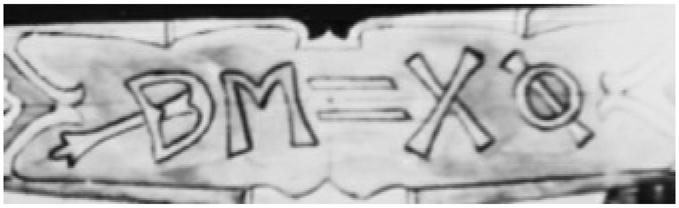
In the last few years, I've had several in-depth conversations with author and researcher Dr. Joseph P. Farrell well into the wee hours of the morning on several occasions. One particular night we were examining Dellschau's drawings in our respective copies of the excellent oversized volume published by New York gallery owner Stephen Romano. If you are interested in Dellschau, I urge you to obtain a copy of this book, there is no better presentation of Dellschau's work outside of the actual thing you might find at a gallery or otherwise in a private collection.

It was during this particular discussion with Dr. Farrell that something seemed to jump off the page at him. He immediately pointed out to me that Dellschau's coded spelling of NYMZA may also actually be an equation central to the secret of aero anti-gravity technology. This astounded both of us.

Is it possible that Dellschau had actually conveyed the secret of the aeros so openly?

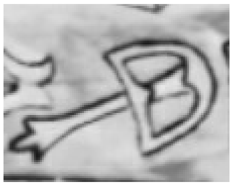
The following is what Joseph Farrell thinks the Dellschau coded NYMZA actually means:

The Dellschau NYMZA Coded Equation:



According to Dr. Farrell:

"Most of these symbolizations would have been established by Dellschau's time or in the PROCESS of being established by common usage during the airship period…



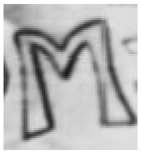
The "D/shovel" could be one of FOUR things:

(1) A reference to a capital DELTA in the Greek, which symolizes the "change in something" such as Delta "t" (change in time) etc,

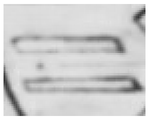
(2) It could symbolize a SMALL "d", meaning the differential or "INCREMENT" of something,

(3) It could be a stylized Greek "phi" laid sideways, and "phi" represents scalar potential

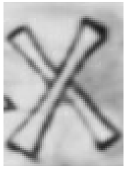
(4) It could be a stylized Greek capital PSI laid sideways, which symbolizes radiant flux or radiant power



Capital letters oftentimes represent a DIFFERENCE (NOT differential) in something, in this case, mass one (m subscript one) minus m (subscript two). Thus M=m1-m2, as in the famous E=Mc^2...



The equals is an equals sign.

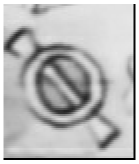


"X" could be:

(1) A variable "x" standing for what we don't know,

(2) A Greek letter "X" which often symbolizes "electrical susceptibility"

(3) The "x" component of a coordinate system... which interestingly enough, it is the "x" coordinate in the Lorentz transforms that transforms...



The final character, which looks most like a Greek "phi" or "backwards empty hyper set" could be again the symbol "phi" which represents the scalar potential, which, pace the type of thinking going on from Maxwell to Whittaker (1903) is the sum of infolded vectors summing to zero, i.e., there's no translation vector.

Thus, one reading of the equation would be:

"The change in the mass difference is equal to the transform of x times scalar potential,"

Whatever that means, we are looking at an equation of some sort, and depending on how each term is defined it might or might not make sense."

After having the above analysis explained to me by Dr. Farrell, it indeed makes sense. I think Dellschau's code for 'NYMZA', while the name for the group, is *also* an embedded equation that may be integral to the whole mystery of the aeros and Peter Mennis' 'supe'-fueled motors and beyond.

This is indeed startling. If there is such layered hieroglyphic meaning in this one term, we must commit to an answer to the nagging question as to whether Dellschau came up with the 'NYMZA' word himself (from personal knowledge of the arcane background) – or if it was, as his story clearly states, truly the name of a real organization. Such double-meaning applications, and there now appear to be three, imply a far-reaching hand spread across historical, political and hermetic dimensions. There already exists among researchers the reasonable suspicion that Dellschau was sent to California by said NYMZA to observe and report on the Sonora Aero Club, that he was given the term 'NYMZA', or was personally associated with its source, seems more likely at this point.

A very important point to keep in mind about all this potential layering of NYM-ZA to 'NYMZA' to Dellschau's coded NYMZA is the veiled aspect: The beings from the sea, the losers of the cosmic war, known as NYM-ZA, may have veiled themselves behind the Prussian veil of Dellschau's 'NYMZA'. Or, at least, perhaps that's what the Prussians wanted someone to believe.

But I think there was more to it than a controllable chemical reaction and make note, for this will come up again and serve as evidence in support of a very important point relative to the 20th Century application of this knowledge.

Essentially, the Sonora Aero Club guys had learned something about torsion (an advanced product of spin) where certain chemical substances were applied. These torsion engines were encased mechanisms that generated a magnetic reaction that canceled gravity in some particular manner and even that isn't all there was to it, in my opinion.

The aero builders of Sonora understood something about how gravity is a product of natural planetary energy, specifically telluric current and the World Grid. This is where the gravity-canceling aspect came into the process. As I laid out in *EOTW2: Friends From Sonora*, I am convinced the aeros, and subsequently the larger airships, worked in association with the telluric current of the World Grid, i.e. the aeros sailed the grid like ships on the currents of the seas. This means, to me, that the area in which the Sonora Aero Club operated was purposely selected.

The World Grid Stream

As alluded to earlier, Tuolumne County has been identified by Sesh Heri as a place abundant with telluric current.

In *EOTW2: Friends From Sonora* and *EOTW3: The Nameless Ones*, I tell the story of Frank Rosasco, a son of a prominent Tuolumne rancher who may very well have been a confidant of the aero club. Rosasco had a nervous breakdown while in San Bernardino during the 1915 episode and returned home with unidentified 'friends from Sonora', where he spent the remaining decades of his life obsessively surveying something on the family ranch property.

I asked Sesh Heri to independently prepare a telluric current analysis of the area prior to identifying the specific location of the Rosasco ranch property in question. The result was a major nodal point of energy in the Don Pedro Lake area of Tuolumne County – and a conversation with Nathan Rosasco, current patriarch of their family's ranching business, identified the site of the nodal point as being on the original Rosasco ranch property where Frank lived.

Why does this matter?

Because Dellschau states in his material that the Sonora Aero Club made deals with certain Tuolumne ranchers to construct and house their flying machines in barns on the ranch properties. Most of the ranchers in the area were Italian immigrants and Dellschau also stated that there were Italians in the club. The Rosasco family was among the Italian immigrant ranchers who had established themselves in Tuolumne in the 1850s, during the time of the Sonora Aero Club's existence. It is very likely that the Rosascos were associated with the Sonora Aero Club. I will discuss the implications of that, where Frank Rosasco is concerned, in the next part of this book.

All of this is why I think Tuolumne County was selected by the Sonora Aero Club as their area of operations. Their leader knew about the abundance of telluric current in the area, possibly from his NYMZA sponsors, perhaps on account of his own research and knowledge which got him associated with them in the first place. Whatever the case may have been, the aeros needed the telluric current and the environment west of Yosemite is loaded with it.

I also propose that it wouldn't be until the aero technology advanced sufficiently that the airships could venture farther away from the main telluric currents, but in the 19th Century they were dependent upon near proximity to the grid lines.

That Tuolumne County was rural and out of the way of prying eyes was of course a factor, though secondary to the need for telluric current. It should be noted that even though the group was called the 'Sonora Aero Club', their operations and gatherings centered in and around nearby Columbia, another mining town. Because the stagecoaches ran to Sonora, thus that town had more outsider traffic, and also because the club was a secretive group, naming it after one place while operating in another was an attempt to distract would-be snoops.

So who were these wizards of the Sonora Aero Club?

Peter Mennis and Tosh Wilson:
Who Were They Really?

This book is not a biography of the Sonora Aero Club. For that I recommend the reader consult Dennis Crenshaw and Pete Navarro's excellent book, *The Secrets of Dellschau* (Anomalist Books), as well as Michael Busby's essential volume *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery* (Pelican).

My objective is an overview of the 19th Century activities and players of the breakaway civilizations that emerged during this period. I'll go into those players as deeply as is necessary and no examination of this issue is complete without looking at Peter Mennis and the Wilsons, specifically Tosh Wilson in the case of the Sonora Aero Club.

All that we know of Peter Mennis we learn from Dellschau. A German immigrant, Mennis was the leader of the secretive 62-member group. His aero was the first and served as the basic model for all subsequent aeros built by members of the club, with variations, of course. Dellschau describes Mennis as always dressed typical of the American westerner: bright red shirt, pants tucked into cowboy boots, a wide brimmed hat and a six-gun on his hip. Dellschau depicts the man in more than one of his drawings. Peter Mennis is usually shown smoking a pipe and always accompanied by his little dog. The image is one of a cowboy dude, but there was more to Mennis than stylish affectation.

Peter Mennis had overseen the building of a laboratory which Dellschau describes as good as any he'd seen in Germany. Beakers, bottles, chemicals and liquids, this was serious alchemy. The Dellschau material describes Mennis as a mining engineer. Navarro and Crenshaw have derived an episode from the Dellschau material that reveals Mennis' discovery of the anti-gravity liquid was the result of his attempt to extract gold from quartz via a chemical method. According to this extrapolation, Mennis and his colleagues had discovered this independently but ran out of funds so he contacted interested parties in Germany, presumably resulting in Dellschau being sent by NYMZA.

This turn of events suggests that Mennis had become associated with the Prussian nationalists only out of necessity. While it appears that he had developed his technology on his own, that is, without the help of NYMZA, it doesn't mean that Mennis had not also come to it through study of lost technology as I propose NYMZA had done. In fact, that common thread might be how Mennis knew who to contact in the Prussian homeland. Mennis was an alchemist, in my estimation, and that places him within the ranks of the philosopher scientists of his day.

Did Peter Mennis accomplish controlled flight?

According to Dellschau, on a winter day in 1857, he did. Mennis reportedly conducted a test flight in which he ascended 100 feet and demonstrated controlled maneuvers back and forth across the field outside Columbia (now the airport, by the way). He did this all day, according to Dellschau's material.

If this is true, Peter Mennis was one of the most accomplished alchemists in history. True to form of mysterious hermetic scientists, nothing is known of the man outside of the Dellschau accounts. This has inspired some to suggest Mennis was a contactee guided by extraterrestrials, to which I slap my forehead and take a deep sigh of patience. Though it's understandable why people in our times go to this possibility, especially in light of the first part of this book, I remain reluctant to entertain the ET contactee theory.

Nothing about Peter Mennis' reported aero developments requires assistance from ETs and all of it can be found in the annals of hermetic science. I say Mennis learned what he knew from alchemical and arcane sources in the tradition of DaVinci and mystery school science.

So can anything outside the Dellschau material be found on Peter Mennis through other sources?

Not much. I found one man of that name worth mentioning because of his association to a place directly linked to airship players we will be discussing. There was a Peter Mennis born in Russia in 1869 who, as it turns out, migrated to the US. No records on his parents are available in the database, and any further details about this Peter Mennis are also unknown in the database – except that his daughter was born in 1899 in Kansas. The players we will be discussing shortly are linked to Kansas.

Does this mean there's a connection? Not unless the Sonora club's Peter Mennis left California and returned to Europe and fathered a son in Russia, or had a family member in Russia who named their son after our Sonora club Peter Mennis. Though possibilities are intriguing, it's a thin lead.

I also found a Peter Mennis who broke his leg while working in a coal mine in Illinois in 1892, but he was 25 years old at the time which is incongruent with the birth record of the above Peter Mennis by three years and is just as thin a lead.

By the later drawings and diary entries of the Dellschau material, Peter Mennis seems to disappear and what follows are Dellschau's comments about the failure of later aero models and the conspicuous lack of the 'supe' to create NB gas, suggesting the obvious. From this, Navarro determined that Delschau's cryptic statements and enigmatic drawings indicate Mennis had died, taking the secret of the fuel to his grave.

What Dellschau did state more clearly was that Mennis had been badly burned in an aero related accident. This was apparently not long after the club's encounter with a Prussian military officer, who shall be discussed in the next section.

But did Mennis' secrets really die with him?

I don't think so. There was another man in the Sonora Aero Club who may be the key to a legacy of aero technology development that resulted in the airship mystery of the 1890s. That man was named Tosh Wilson.

As in the case of his German colleague, what we know of Tosh Wilson we learn from Dellschau and it's not much. According to Dellschau, Tosh Wilson was associated with an aero he called 'Aero EE' which could allegedly handle a payload of 30,000lbs of passengers, baggage and freight. Dellschau refers to a crew associated with Tosh Wilson but he's not actually identified as a roster member of the Sonora Aero Club. However, in this tidbit of information we find a very big clue about this Wilson fellow.

The payload of the 'Aero EE' suggests a size far beyond what we see associated with the contraptions of the Sonora Aero Club in Dellschau's drawings. In fact, 30,000lbs and multiple passengers sound more like the mystery airships of the 1890s. As you will learn, there were Wilsons at the center of that later flap so we must note the possibility – maybe actually the likelihood – that Tosh Wilson was of that same line. Did Peter Mennis' knowledge live on with Tosh Wilson? We must recognize the possibility, particularly as we continue.

Of the other members of the Sonora Aero Club there is equally very little known. My personal investigation has turned up some of the names in local phone directories as of 2014 and one name in an historic cemetery in Columbia. To dig out leads and follow them is a project all its own so we'll press on.

'That Prussian Officer': The Crossroad of the Iron Cross

Now you'll understand even better why we had to look at the Prussians in Part 1.

When I first revealed my German translation of NYMZA in *EOTW2: Friends From Sonora*, there was some resistance among a few enthusiasts of this topic, in spite of Dellschau *clearly* stating the organization was headquartered in Germany. And there is yet another piece of evidence in the Dellschau material to support the German association, more specifically, the Prussian leadership of the larger organization. Like it or not, NYMZA was based in Germany, not in New York; Dellschau plainly says so, regardless whether my specific translation is exact or not. How am I so confident?

For starters, once the Sonora Aero Club had success with their aero technology, Dellschau tells us that there soon followed a flirtation with the idea of developing aeros for commercial and military purposes. Then came the day, Dellschau relates, when a military officer approached the club and suggested they construct aeros designed for warfare.

Whether this man was from the United States military or from Europe was supposedly unspecified, but Dellschau did specifically refer to him as "that Prussian officer". That statement alone makes it clear: the military officer was Prussian, thus may we presume that he was from Germany and therefore, in my opinion, represented the interests of the Prussian NYMZA. It is really that simple.

But this Prussian military representative still didn’t impress the leadership of the club, for Peter Mennis and most of the others were vehemently opposed to military or commercial uses of their aero technology. ‘That Prussian officer’ was sent home empty-handed.

This rebuff of said military representative was likely not taken well by the parent organization. Perhaps coincidentally (or perhaps not), shortly after this overture by the Prussian there was an accident that brought Peter Mennis to an end. He was badly burned and, though Dellschau is cryptic on the issue, the leader of the Sonora Aero Club apparently died.

As stated earlier, the death of Mennis and the subsequent dissolution of the Sonora Aero Club, which Dellschau indicates was complete by 1860, was not the end of the aero technology; not by any means.

The story of where the aero technology led after the Sonora group was gone requires a closer look at the Prussian masters of the enigmatic ‘NYMZA’.

CHAPTER SIX

THE PRUSSIAN INCARNATION

Some readers may be scratching their heads in confusion over my alternating use of ‘Prussian’ and ‘German’, or the reference of Prussians coming from Germany. The fact is, Prussians are Germans and created the unified Germany we know as such.

As the German thread is central to the thesis of this book, we must look more closely at the details behind what we've discussed especially pertaining Dellschau and the 19th Century Germans making much of this happen.

Unified Vision: A New Germany

At the time of the Sonora Aero Club, there was no such thing as a nation officially called Germany. In the early 19th Century, what we know today as Germany was a collection of 35 states and 4 city-states under Austrian leadership seated in Frankfurt. Attempts at unification had always failed and everyone involved was usually left dissatisfied. In 1848, a revolution was attempted by the Frankfurt Parliamentarians but King Frederick of Prussia rejected the crown. The revolutionaries fled, many of them coming to the United States where they remained politically active in other ways. By the 1850s, the many immigrants from Prussian upheaval could have included many members of the Sonora Aero Club.

Back home in the fatherland, Prussian leaders turned their backs on politics to focus upon agricultural development, territorial expansion and industrial progress of their interests. Dedicated to a unified nation, a national identity was pursued and railroads were promoted as a means of connecting more easily all the peoples of the Prussian states and cities. With new access to all of these areas, the people would see their heretofore provincial world as a singular nation and thus a singular culture: They would see themselves as Germans. All this moved the Prussian states toward unification.

Always thinking ahead, some Prussian leaders of the unification movement likely realized they would need an active military-industrial complex to both pursue and defend a new Germany's interests and sovereignty. I say this is why the NYMZA was conceived and we'll get to specifics on this shortly.

But first, it's time I presented here a very important point in my thesis.

The Revelation

So what inspired the temerity in me to throw my two cents into the lore of the airship mystery NYMZA?

As stated before, Dellschau’s NYMZA was not based in New York. Dellschau makes clear in his diary: ‘NYMZA’ was a covert organization headquartered in Germany. This is the reason I even attempted a translation of ‘NYMZA’ in German and to propose that the word is actually the transliterated acronym ‘NJMZa’, which I have laid out in detail in *EOTW2:Friends From Sonora* and presented more simply at the 2015 Breakaway Civilization & Secret Space Program Conference in Bastrop, Texas, shortly before this book was written.

I contend the following:

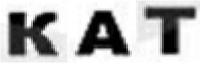
NYMZA is actually **NJMZa**:

Nationalistische
Jagdflugzeug
Maschinen
Zahlungs**a**mt

How do I get NJMZa from NYMZA?

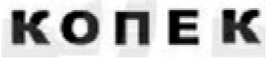
Transliteration, is the key. When you need to convey the pronunciation of a word to speakers of a language foreign to that word, you use the speaker’s alphabet or pronunciation of it to spell out the desired pronunciation of the selected word.

For instance, ‘CAT’ transliterated into Serbian Cyrllic would be:



КАТ

Conversely,



КОПЕК

is transliterated as ‘KOPEK’ in English.

Now you understand how ‘NJMZa’ becomes ‘NYMZA’. Because the second word is ‘Jagdflugzeug’ and begins with a German ‘J’, its first letter is pronounced ‘YAH’, i.e. like a short ‘Y’. That’s why Dellschau’s acronym is not ‘NIMZA’ – the German ‘J’ pronounced as a short ‘Y’ required Dellschau use a transliteration reflective of the short ‘Y’ pronunciation, thus the actual pronunciation of his ‘NYMZA’ should be ‘nyimza’, if I am correct that NYMZA is NJMZa.

So what does NJMZa actually translate to in English?

The ‘Nationalist Pursuit-Exploration Airship Program Office’, an organization under which aero development was sponsored.

From this point forward, I will refer to this airship organization as NJMZa.

NJMZa: The Program Office

The readers who have been in our modern military and specifically those who have worked in a national security organization involved with technology protection will be familiar with the concept of a ‘program office’. This is an apparatus, often a blend of civilian and military engineers, technicians and administrative personnel, tasked with the conception, development and applications of a particular aircraft, satellite or other system. It is different from a military or intelligence unit who are usually the customers of, or security providers to, the program office.

During my time as a Special Agent of the US Air Force Office of Special Investigations, I conducted counterintelligence activities in protection of program offices as well as military operations and assets. Based upon personal experience with such organizations, my opinion is that NJMZa was indeed a program office – possibly the first in modern history, only the Royal Society assembled to create a national navy technically preceding it.

Program offices as I refer to are usually formed by or with a nation’s military, but that’s not the case here.

NJMZa would have been a private program office formed and maintained *before* there was a nation to commission it. It would be like a military-industrial program office dedicated to the aggressive aims of the Democrat, Republican or other political parties, independent of federal or state governments and dedicated to the aims of the party. Imagine if Benjamin Franklin, Paul Revere and Thomas Jefferson had founded a privately owned shipyard and gathered the resources to build Leonardo da Vinci designed submarines in 1770 for the eventual purpose of sinking British warships when the revolution they personally advocated finally broke out. That's an example of the private program office I'm talking about; that's NJMZa.

Since program offices have a specific charter of purpose, they usually have what we call a 'mission statement'.

The Mission Statement

If I had to write a mission statement for NJMZa, it would be the following:

'NJMZa is a distinctly Prussian nationalist organization dedicated to a unified Germany's global superiority in active pursuit of influence and exploitation of the natural resources and industry of the Americas.'

That identifies well the distinctly German spectrum of participation in matters which the thesis of this book concerns itself. Nationalist here is not national, it's an ideological position taken by individuals. There was no German nation at the time thus NJMZa by definition was private.

Prussian nationalists were indeed dedicated to a unified Germany and, by natural extension, would seek global superiority of their nation over others. That superiority does not necessarily mean governing control of other nations; it usually means a military strength and economic prowess exceeding other nations in influence. Based upon what we know from Dellschau and of the subsequent airship sightings, I am convinced that NJMZa was very much involved with exploitation of natural resources in the Americas.

Its private status would serve to give NJMZa autonomy from whatever would become of the unified German government. Going into the unification, NJMZa would have realized its assets and power and likely recognize that it did not need nor desire to be absorbed into the new government, as long it enjoyed direct influence and benefit while being independent.

I conclude that the above mission statement is the likeliest stated purpose of NJMZa and would have reflected the first fully realized concept of the modern breakaway civilization.

Let us next examine who might have made NJMZa possible.

German Banksters: Likely NJMZa Investors

Someone had to provide the necessary resources for the organization but the Prussian states were experiencing economic difficulties. However, that did not mean there wasn't any money in German hands.

On the contrary; there was enough money in private and commercial hands to get NJMZa off the ground and it was in some of Germany's oldest banks, most of which exist to this day. I propose that the natural source for material support would have been the banks, especially those already involved in shipping and trade.

Let's look at which banks I suspect were involved in the founding of NJMZa.

BERENBURG - Established in 1590, it is the world's second oldest bank. From its earliest days, Berenburg has had offices in Portugal, Italy and London. If in the NJMZa mix there are 'banksters', as Joseph Farrell calls them, (and there are), these guys are among them.

Farrell points out in more than one of his books the threads of Knights Templar and Venetians that run through the world banking system. Portugal was a safe haven for the Templars during their persecution in France. King Denis founded the Order of Christ as a shelter for these knights. It seems reasonable that Templar banksters would set up operations there and subsequently we have a Berenburg branch there as well. The Venetian banksters started in Italy, of course, then relocated to Amsterdam and then to London.

Berenburg is a NJMZa suspect also for its early activity in North American trade and finance dating back to the colonial era. Remember the mission statement above: This bank would have been an aggressive player.

Within the context of what we've already discussed and will in chapters to come, it's reasonable to suspect that banksters would have been involved in an outfit like NJMZa and Berenburg's background appears to corroborate that suspicion.

SAL. OPPENHEIM – Established in 1789, the Oppenheim bankster elite credentials were made solid with the marrying of their family into the Rothschilds in 1834. This matrimonial merger meant that the bank was quite able and likely willing to back the NJMZa venture. Further evidence is Abraham Oppenheim's inner circle association with Kaiser Wilhelm II during the height of the 19th Century NJMZa era.

A member of this banking family factors in an issue with another bank down this list.

M.M.WARBURG – Established 1798. Here we have one of the most prominent banking and finance families of the era.

Banksters? The Warburgs and their bank are of the Venetian del Banco family. There will be more to say about the Warburgs in a later chapter as both the German and US factions of the family factor into the airship milieu.

DONNER & REUSCHEL – Established in 1798, this bank was into merchant shipping. It would be a no-brainer for Donner & Reuschel to get on board with NJMZa. Not only would they have the means and expertise to support the mission, D&R would be able to provide the manpower with expertise in literally building airships. In those days, it would have been natural to employ shipbuilders in the venture.

The remaining German banks in existence in the early 19th Century were:

METZLER. Established 1674, the second oldest bank in Germany.

TRINKHAUS & BURKHARDT (HSBC). Established in 1785.

HAUCK & AUFHAUSER. Established in 1796.

BERLINER SPARKASSE. Established in 1818.

STADTSPARKASSE MUNCHEN. Established in 1824.

HOERNER BANK. Established in 1849.

As you can see, in spite of the political upheaval and economic turmoil of the Prussian states, there had been and were German banks in solvent operation with the resources to fund NJMZa operations. Among those banks were the likely 'bankster' players I've identified who I propose most certainly would have had an interest in making NJMZa happen.

Now let's look at those banks that would have been brought into the fold once NJMZa launched.

OLDENBURGISCHE LANDESBANK was established in 1868.

COMMERZBANK. Established in 1870, is Germany's second largest bank. Its first chairman was a shipping magnate. This institution was among the WW2 'Grossbanken' that financed the German military. Officers of this bank sat on the boards of arms manufacturer Krupps, the engineering firm of Siemens, and the notorious I.G.Farben of concentration camp infamy (though not alone in that horrific venture by any means).

In our times, Commerzbank was caught laundering $253 billion through Iran, Sudan, and Myanmar. The bank was penalized for facilitating transactions on behalf of Iranian parties subject to international sanctions, including the Islamic Republic of Iran Shipping Lines and other sanctioned Iranian associates in Sudan, for whom the bank committed wire-stripping violations and altered country identification codes on Iran's behalf.

Looking deeper, we find a NJMZa thread in the Nazi strong tied to this scandal and it involves the previously mentioned Oppenheim banking family as well.

In 1914, Max von Oppenheim was instrumental in having the first modern jihad declared against the West, spun up by Germany for the benefit of Germany.

Joseph Farrell writes: “These detailed plans found public expression in Wilhelm’s desire to foment ‘the whole Mohammedan world in wild revolt’ against the British.”

The German hand behind modern Islamic terrorism becomes obvious when reflected in statements like that made by Field Marshal von Moltke when he declared it was time to “arouse the fanaticism of Islam”, and also in actions like Kaiser Wilhelm’s cable to the Turkish war minister to urge the Sultan to summon Muslims all over the world into “a holy war for the Caliphate”. The resulting fatwa was the first time in history in which jihad was waged against specific infidels.

Now here’s where the Iranian connection is pertinent. This Oppenheim encouraged manipulation by Germany that inaugurated specifically targeted Islamic jihad was enthusiastically continued by the Nazis who continued the policy. It was the Nazis who moved the Shah in 1934 to literally change the name of Persia to Iran – Farsi for ‘Aryan’.

Germany during both WW1 and the Nazi era was up to its goose-stepping ass in the affairs of Islamic jihad and Iran in particular. Funny how the United States stepped up its involvement with Iran following WW2 and the onset of Operation Paperclip and the OSS/CIA absorption of the Gehlen ring of ‘former’ Nazi intelligence operatives. Now give some thought to the possibility that a surviving Nazi International might today have a hand in the terrorism we are currently up against.

Now do you see why Commerzbank’s former Nazi patronage makes its laundering of $253 billion on behalf of Iran between the years 2000-2008 of interest to this discussion? I shall soon be pointing out the NJMZa shadow behind the rise of the Nazis, thus must we consider that Commerzbank also has ties to NJMZa and likely, in my opinion, predating those of the Nazis.

DEUTSCHE BANK, established in 1870, is the whopper here. George Siemens of the engineering firm, upon whose board sat officers of Commerzbank, was among the founders and many of the bank's first ventures were in South America. Deutsche Bank financed both the Northern Pacific and the Baghdad Railway. Already we have resonance with NJMZa's proposed mission statement: interest in the resources and industry of the Americas. Deutsche Bank (DB) sold bonds to Krupps and introduced Bayer to the stock market. During WW2, DB was the bank of choice of the Gestapo and funded Auschwitz, as well as the nefarious I.G.Farben (and Bayer) facilities built on site. This financial institution is a NJMZa suspect if there ever was one, in my estimation.

And it just gets worse with DB.

Personally, I think there is something to the idea that a Nazi International was behind the attack on the World Trade Center of New York in September 2001. History demonstrates the above discussed connection between the WW1 era German and subsequent Nazi hand behind modern Islamic terrorism, it's no great leap to suggest that a present day Nazi group might have had a hand in 9/11. Thus, if a Nazi act, it was also a NJMZa act within the context of our discussion here.

Deutsche Bank's headquarters was built in 1984 in Frankfurt. It is known as the Deutsche Bank Twin Towers. DB was the first company to list on the New York Stock Exchange after the attack on 9/11 that destroyed the twin towers of the World Trade Center in New York. What, if anything, is there to make of this?

If a Nazi International indeed perpetrated a jihad fronted attack on 9/11 as some sort of act of financial blackmail, that a German bank – and especially Deutsche Bank with its Nazi history – was the first company to list on the stock exchange after the attack is somewhat suspicious, don't you think?

Why would I say financial blackmail?

Because from 2001-2007, DB was committing corporate espionage and was behind the housing bubble and CDO scandals of the day in which their bank officers aggressively pushed $32,000,000,000 in bad debt and bonds onto the international market between 2004-2008. This resulted in the economic collapse we all recall in late 2008 – during the US Presidential election season.

Consider now the allegations that President Barack Obama is soft on Islamic terror. The collapse in 2008 greatly caused by actions of Deutsche Bank was revealed to the public *after* the election but what did the Bush administration and the President-elect's people know beforehand? Might said Nazi International have communicated its preference for the more sympathetic candidate in Obama? Could the jihadi-merchant Nazi International have made it clear to Obama that he was expected go gentle and not interfere in a deeper plan behind the global terror?

Now you understand why I place Deutsche Bank firmly among the suspected NJMZa backers and servants, via the corporate Nazi hand.

But these were the resource guys, not the men who envisioned what NJMZa should be. And I have purposely delayed discussion of one last suspect banker until the last section of this chapter because he represents the NJMZa plan in the Americas and serves as a precursor to a concept mentioned in the next section.

NJMZa had to have been the invention of individuals dedicated to a shared vision. Looking again to the mission statement I've proposed, we must consider who might likely have been the men who founded the organization from its conception and those who would have been recruited into its fold and carried it into the 20th Century.

Let's look at some likely suspects…

Mystic Industrialists: NJMZa Master Planners

Here is where we can put faces and names to the proposed NJMZa organization. Such an organization would certainly require men who possessed vision and a sense of how to bring about a practical application of that vision. What we're looking for are visionary industrialists and the Prussian-German milieu provides them.

CARL REICHENBACH (1788 – 1869). Chemist, geologist, metallurgist, industrialist and philosopher member of the Prussian Academy of Sciences, in Reichenbach we have the ideal NJMZa visionary.

Carl Reichenbach

Not only did Reichenbach's life span the likely establishment and early years of NJMZa, and the period of the Sonora Aero Club, his varied expertise was exactly made to order. Chemistry serves the development of fuels. Metallurgy serves the need for airship structural materials, and in the 1890s airship reports we learn that early aluminum production is a factor. Was Reichenbach instrumental in that?

That Reichenbach was a geologist serves the chemistry and the gold hunting needs and aims of NJMZa. Being an industrialist, all of Reichenbach's talents and skills were brought together in the all-important practical application of theory and science into a useful technology. Reichenbach was preeminently the ideal candidate to be among the very men who created NJMZa.

And there is yet another important aspect to Reichenbach relative to NJMZa and the big picture of this book: He was a *philosopher* member of the

Prussian Academy of Sciences. This is important, as you shall see in a later chapter, because it identifies the mystic factor present throughout the development and activities of NJMZa.

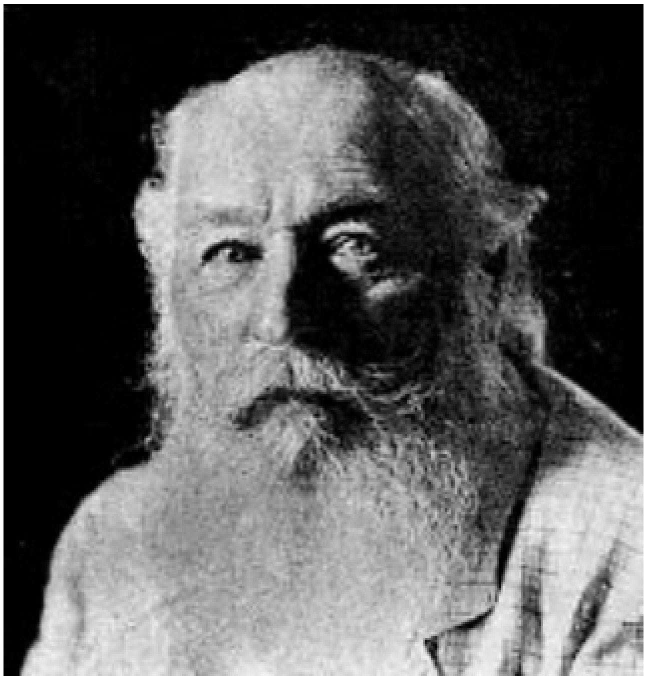
That Reichenbach was a ‘philosopher member’ of the academy will resonate with readers of my *Secret Missions 2: The Lost Expedition of Sir Richard Francis Burton*. In that book I explain the distinction between the modern scientist technician and the multi-talented and more comprehensively focused ‘philosopher scientist’ of which Burton could be counted in spite of the revolt in the Royal Societies resulting in the ascendancy of the technicians by his era.

‘Philosopher scientist’ really means that the scientist is as much a student of hermetic principles and practices as he is of material science. Another way to put is ‘mystic scientist’ and Reichenbach was one of these. The mystic aspect will continue to be very important to NJMZa, as you shall see.

Let’s continue with the identification of more NJMZa suspects.

FRIEDRICH WANNIECK (1838 – 1919)

A producer of iron, an engineering industrialist, Wannieck’s life spanned the era that this book’s thesis covers.



Friedrich Wannieck

He was 17 years old when Dellschau says the Sonora Aero Club emerged. Wannieck ascended to leadership in industry during the expansion of NJMZa and Germany into South America which also spanned the rise of the rival American group and its 1890s airship mystery. Wannieck was also a contemporary of the German mystics who would be instrumental in 20th Century German politics and inspire the early Nazis.

Wannieck was himself a mystic and very much the ardent Prussian nationalist. How early might he have been involved with NJMZa?

Aside from his obvious status in industry through which he would have provided valuable material resources, Wannieck was a good friend of mystics such as Guido von List who dedicated his *Secret of the Runes* (*Das Geheimnis der Runen)* to fellow Von List Society member Wannieck. Might it have been Wannieck's enthusiasm for runic language that inspired a use of coded written communication like that used by Charles Dellschau?

Wannieck would definitely have been a NJMZa player during the South American period in which young Germany was under the gold standard and actively involved in mining and the hunt for the precious stuff. Wannieck must be on our list.

CARL KELLNER (1851 – 1905)

A classic NJMZa candidate if there ever was one, Kellner was born just a few years prior to Dellschau's arrival in the United States but the late 19th Century period of NJMZa activity would have been right up his alley.

Carl Kellner

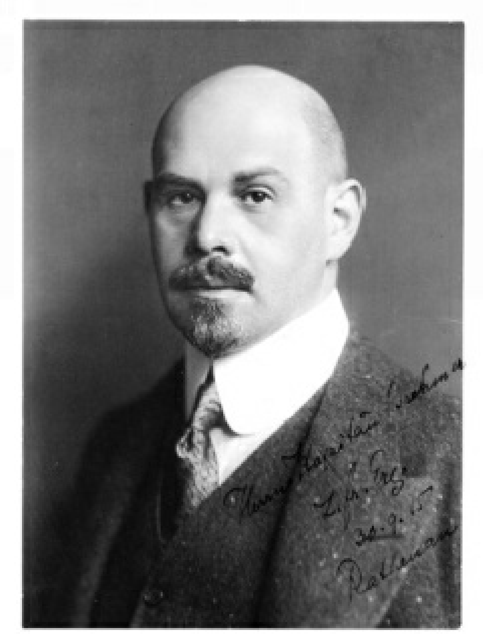
First, Kellner had the practical qualifications. He was a chemist and an inventor, applying his skills to industry. But it may be that Kellner founded the legendary and infamous Ordo Templi Orientis wherein we find his most important contribution to NJMZa objectives and organizational culture.

The Ordo Templi Orientis, or OTO as it's better known, was founded sometime between 1895-1906 and was based upon European Freemasonry, though Aleister Crowley would change that a few years later. Kellner would travel the world seeking out adepts of hermeticism. With his knowledge and expertise of chemistry, Kellner could very well have been tasked with advancing development of NJMZa propulsion technology. It should be noted that he co-invented the Castner-Kellner Process which involved the use of mercury and that suggests the possibility of discoveries related to pertinent technology discussed later.

Thus have we well demonstrated Kellner’s mystic and industrial qualifications for recruitment into NJMZa and probably management of some aspect of field operations.

WALTER RATHENAU (1867 – 1922)

Here we come to another potential whopper, for lack of a better term, as this guy would have been a big fish in the NJMZa pond, especially as the organization grew into a true breakaway civilization.



Walter Rathenau

Rathenau was an engineer who effectively applied his knowledge and skills in chemistry to German industry in the late 19th Century and into the 20th. He was, like the others before him, a philosopher scientist, i.e. hermetic inclined, and as you might have expected an ardent nationalist.

But that’s not all. Rathenau was also Chairman of AEG (Allgemeine Elektricitäts-Gesellschaft AG**),** the engineering firm identified with the development and manufacture of ‘Die Glocke’ the much discussed Nazi Bell.

As Foreign Minister of Germany in 1922, Rathenau forged an agreement known as the Treaty of Rapallo with the Russians which restored diplomatic relations between the two nations, wiped the slate clean on mutual WW1 indemnities, and established an economic bloc in which each was the other's primary international trading partner. All this cooperation was in defiance of Versailles but the real impact of the treaty was that it allowed Germany to proceed with rearmament by exporting its military industrial complex to Russian soil, thus serving as a loophole to evade Allied controls imposed by Versailles.

Walter Rathenau blazed the trail that would ultimately give the Nazis their material power. Ironically, two months after signing the Treaty of Rapallo which gave Germany back its teeth, German nationalist radicals opposed to the disarmament imposed by Versailles assassinated Rathenau, the man who made it possible for Germany to rise from its ashes. Unfortunately, it was a Nazi phoenix so perhaps Rathenau paid a karmic bill forward.

We'll discuss Rathenau again later for he is a bridge between the NJMZa and Nazi eras.

HJALMAR SCHACHT (1877 – 1970)

In Schacht we have another clear Nazi bridge between the 19th Century NJMZa and the post war ascendancy of the breakaway civilization.

Hjalmar Schacht

Banker and politician, Schacht was also a member of the Urania Lodge, providing his bonafides as a team player for the mystic brand, where the NJMZa would be concerned. And he was also an early supporter of Adolf Hitler.

In Schacht, as much if not more than even Rathenau, we have a NJMZa suspect with a hard link to the Nazis. Ditching the German Democratic Party for the Nazis, he threw in with the Nazi Party because of the promise of a new Germany. Though Schacht lent much support to raise funds, he curiously never actually joined the party officially. It was Schacht who masterminded the German scheme of exporting its manufacturing base, which effectively results in a portable civilization, suggesting that Schacht had actually formalized a 19th Century NJMZa tactic into the 20th Century German scheme under Nazism.

Schacht would live to see Paperclip scientist von Braun’s leadership send the ascended world power of the United States to the Moon. It might be suggested that NJMZa, more specifically the breakaway it had been absorbed into by 1969, or someone else, had likely already been there.

With suspects identified, and these are but a few for there are certainly others with whom we could fill an entire chapter, let us now move on. I will shift focus now to what I think NJMZa was doing in the Americas.

The Amerika Plan:
The Eagle’s Claws In The New World

Charles Dellschau tells us there were other groups. The Sonora Aero Club is just the one about which we were informed. It may have been the only one to which Dellschau was privy.

If some German bankers had been active in trade and finance since the days of the colonies, what else might have been serving Prussian aims prior to the 1850s? Shipping for certain, exploration likely, the story of German activities in the Americas may be bigger than we think. I am only looking at the 19th Century airship mystery and breakaway civilizations in this book.

The biggest piece of evidence that the Prussians took the NJMZa mission statement seriously is the existence of one of America's well known financial institutions.

Kuhn,Loeb: Schacht's German Export Model?

I'll say it up front.

I propose that the banking firm of *Kuhn,Loeb* was a Prussian plant established in the United States and it served the needs and aims of the NJMZa. *Kuhn,Loeb* was, in my opinion, the first example of what Hjalmar Schacht proposed in the following century: an exported German institution designed to influence and exploit resources in support of the Prussian unification ideal. By making the German presence strong around the world, it made the New Germany that much stronger.

And it was founded in America.

Not to be confused with the Alsatian otolarynologist, the banker Abraham Kuhn was a dry goods merchant who teamed with Solomon Loeb in Cincinnati and eventually relocated their banking business to New York. Loeb came to the United States in 1849 from Worms in the Rhineland, his father a wine merchant for the Grand Duchy. Loeb and Kuhn married into each other's families and would be linked to various power elites like the Warburgs. There isn't a lot of biographical detail at hand about these two but it's their business dealings that we're primarily interested in here.

By the late 19th Century, *Kuhn,Loeb* owned 64% of all rail lines in the United States. The firm had provided the capital for E.H.Harriman to acquire the Union Pacific Railroad for an exorbitant amount, beyond the asking price. Apparently Harriman wanted the UP very much, and *Kuhn,Loeb* wanted him to have it.

Why?

Just as Prussian leaders had used the railroads to unify the new nationalist

German culture, German born Abraham Kuhn and Solomon Loeb played their part in physically unifying the USA through the railroads. Are we to assume this pattern is coincidence?

I think not.

However, it is my suspicion that the Prussian designs on North America were stalled for a time by the rise of an American based airship group that emerged from the milieu of the Civil War. Thus a unified Germany shifted its focus southward and the American eagle spread its wings.

CHAPTER SEVEN

THE AMERICAN GROUP

Yankee Mysticism: Secret Traditions of a Lost World

America has always played host to the arcane. These continents are no different than the rest of the world in that regard. Look closely at any culture that has come here, excepting certain chartered franchises of Churchianity (but by no means excepting them all), and you will find magic and mysticism. Some say that these traditions are product of something that walks this land, permeates it in spirit and blood.

Peter Levenda writes of this dark undercurrent in the Americas and makes it relevant to our modern psyche by showing us (and picking at) its living connections to our times. Levenda shows us the ‘patriotic witchcraft’ in the national history of the United States, delicious morsels such as former CIA officer E. Howard Hunt’s stab at writing that produced three occult novels. Hunt was one of the Watergate plumbers and may have been one of the three hobos rounded up and paraded across the tessellated stage of the JFK assassination. And that is just a mild bit from Levenda's work.

What might Levenda be talking about?

In *Sinister Forces: A Grimoire of American Political Witchcraft, Book One: The Nine* (TrineDay), Levenda writes:

> *"And then I remembered the words of Cotton Mather, he of the Salem witch trials in seventeenth century Massachusetts, who said that America had been the Devil's land before the Europeans came, and wondered if he meant more than simply that the Native Americans were not Christians…. And then there were the stories of H.P. Lovecraft, the father of Gothic horror, who felt that there was something ancient and evil beneath the hardscrabble New England soil…"*

I would agree with Lovecraft on that one. We've already explored the forgotten civilizations in the first section of this book and therein we find a source of what the famous horror author – and Mather – found remarkably noteworthy. What religions might the lost ones have practiced? What gods might they have worshiped? What demons did they acknowledge or summon? Might their ghosts still haunt this land?

We cannot simply take the easy way out and acknowledge only the relics of a lost technology. We must also consider the magic and mysticism of the forgotten ones because, quite frankly, we're still dealing with it. This is something Burton knew when he visited the United States in 1860, as would any philosopher scientist such as he.

It appears to me that the arcane stream beneath the topsoil of North America did not flow unnoticed by the colonial founders.

Geomancy and the Frontier: The Louisiana Purchase

Napoleon has already appeared on the stage in Part 1 of this mystery, it should come as no surprise now that he shows up here again.

What possessed Napoleon Bonaparte to sell 828,000 square miles for eleven million dollars? The North American piece of territory no longer fit into his plan for empire and it eliminated a bunch of debt. US President Thomas Jefferson would have been nuts to turn down the deal, even though he was criticized heavily at the time. The Louisiana Purchase was a no brainer adding the real estate that would make up much of what became fifteen US states.

However, was westward expansion the only reason Jefferson took the deal in the face of resistance from his own countrymen? It is certainly a good enough rationale all its own, but was there more?

There is fertile ground for speculation in the story of the men whom Jefferson commissioned to explore the newly acquired landscape (and blaze a trail to the Pacific, for good measure): the famous Lewis & Clark Expedition, the Red River Expedition and the Pike Expedition. Each trod strange territory and in some cases left behind curious legacies.

Let’s look at the Pike Expedition first. Though interrupted by capture of its leader Captain Zebulon Pike and several of his men (who were all taken to Mexico City for a time, some of them not released for several years after), this expedition was the first official American team to explore the mysterious San Luis Valley near the spooky Sangre de Cristo Mountains about which much strangeness and horror has been investigated and written by intrepid researcher Christopher O’Brien who has stalked the shadowy Trickster there. Did Pike find anything strange or ancient – or both?

Zebulon Pike was the protégée of consummate asshole General James Wilkinson who did not actually have authorization to send the explorer on his second expedition, which was little more than the turncoat general’s personal contribution to Aaron Burr’s plans for a coup in the west. Pike used science as a cover for espionage and his capture did actually provide useful intelligence on Spanish positions and military strength. However, Pike's reputation was sullied with Jefferson and others because of this expedition.

On Pike’s Upper Mississippi expedition, his team attempted to explore Carver’s Cave which scholars have associated with a ‘forgotten Indian group’ (code for inconvenient non-Native civilizations) of mound-builders (Need I really have to stomp my foot here?) dating back 2,000 years. This cave was called ‘House of the Spirits’ by native tribes that eventually settled in the area after they had met with creepy noises and such in the shadows of its depths.

The cave is named after Captain Jonathan Carver of Connecticut who, in 1766, explored it. He found what he called "*strange hieroglyphs cut in the stone, some of which were very ancient and grown over with moss…*". No one knows how Carver learned of the cave in the first place but it is presumed the local natives told him of it. In spite of the fact the natives had been well aware of the cave and even gave it a cool name following their own explorations, history tells us Pike's team couldn't find it because limestone debris had fallen and covered the entrance.

Hmmm. I suppose the limestone debris that had fallen over the entrance to Carver's Cave also magically transformed the features of the terrain around the pile of debris covering the entrance so as to render it completely unrecognizable. Did the natives even forget the entire trail *to* the cave? It is interesting to note that, following the Pike Expedition, the cave has a history of being blocked or filled. Did Pike's men actually find something of the forgotten ones in there and it has been suppressed?

Though we are told they had no luck with the cave farther north, Pike's expedition did enter the 'Weirdville' that is the San Luis Valley, following a crossing of that legendary range of strange, the Sangre de Cristo Mountains of Colorado. Christopher O'Brien has written about French treasure and the reported discovery of someone's forgotten gold bars. Might Pike have been sent in to find gold? Could Napoleon have sold off the territory after a major French haul of the stuff proved more valuable than the selling price? Napoleon was also interested in ancient things, so it's also worth considering if there was something other than gold hiding there.

Other than these bits, the Pike chapter of the story doesn't offer much, short of someone digging deeper into the details for anything hiding in plain sight. We, however, must move on.

The Red River Expedition, which was stalled by Spanish military threats resulting from the treachery of aforementioned shit-heel General James Wilkinson, US Army, was considered a failure for a long time. Compared to the Lewis & Clark Expedition, this one led by astronomer-surveyor Thomas Freeman and academically trained naturalist Peter Custis did not provide as much data as hoped.

It is intriguing to consider the possibility that the findings of the Red River Expedition – and the possibility of a secret mission -- might actually remain classified, but that is outside the scope of the thesis of this book. I refer the reader to *Secret Missions: The Hidden Legacy of Old California* and *Secret Missions 2: The Lost Expedition of Sir Richard Francis Burton* for these books present material relative to potential ancient secrets of Texas, which is also rich in airship mystery accounts.

Of course, most everyone has heard of the Lewis & Clark Expedition.

Originating near St.Louis, the famous expedition led by Captain Meriwether Lewis and Lieutenant William Clark was the first American expedition to cross western territory through the continental divide and onto the Pacific coast with their Shoshone guide, Sacajawea. Its primary objective was the usual mapping and trailblazing one might expect, and much the same with the secondary objectives of science and trade, and also the natural display of geographical 'first dibs'. This expedition was a major accomplishment resulting from two years in the field. Curiously, though, Lewis and Clark and their expedition were essentially forgotten until 1904.

What the hell? We have a US dollar coin featuring Sacajawea and a movie that was made decades ago starring Fred MacMurray and Charlton Heston; Lewis and Clark 'forgotten' by 1876? Were they the original one hit wonder?

That such an effort resulting in valuable data and the eventual westward expansion of the nation become barely mentioned by the nation's centennial is quite odd, in my opinion. Sure, the Civil War had come and gone by 1876 and it was the biggest distraction from celebrating history in our national history. But the most successful and expansive exploration of the almost 900,000 square miles of Jefferson's controversial yet essential Lousiana Purchase to be scarcely mentioned in history books less than a century later is quite curious, from my point of view.

And then when you add the mysterious death of expedition commander Meriwether Lewis into the mix, this whole scenario screams 'bullshit!'

Just what in ‘tarnation’ was going on here?

Thomas Jefferson owned the largest library – in the world at that time -- on North American geography. Lewis was given full access to the books and charts and maps in Jefferson’s possession at Monticello. One wonders if that collection included items that would have been of interest to Charles Hapgood. If so, what might Jefferson have revealed to Lewis during that period of preparation? What ancient secrets about North America might Lewis have learned from the President?

There has been much evidence suggesting that Columbus had a chart of the Americas in his possession on his legendary 1492 journey. I’ve written about the evidence for Templar exploration of the Americas a hundred years before Columbus. Joseph Farrell has presented material in *Thrice Great Hermes* that demonstrates the likelihood that the Templars captured ancient documents and cartography of the Americas of forgotten times. Any reason to suspect Jefferson armed Lewis with such information?

Meriwether Lewis was a Mason, raised into the 3rd Degree in the Door To Virtue Lodge No.44, Albermarle, Virginia, and Thomas Jefferson was likely a Mason, despite some revisionist historian efforts to record otherwise. Taking all that into consideration, is it therefore reasonable to wonder if Jefferson’s library included such ancient charts and *portolans* of the American continents?

I think so and that’s my point in bringing it up. The reader needs to consider the possibility that Jefferson sent Lewis in search of something very arcane and it was to remain undisclosed to Clark and the team. Yes, a secret mission. Might it have had anything to do with the selection of Sacajawea as the guide? Sure, but that’s a different book. Suffice it to say here that we don’t know exactly what Jefferson shared with Meriwether Lewis nor do we really know what his orders were in totality.

We do know that Lewis was given a copy of Antoine Le Page’s account of the journey of native Moncacht-Ape who made the first known transcontinental trip across America in the early 18th Century (possibly the late 17th Century, according to some sources). This may be where the land bridge theory came from as Moncacht-Ape related that he was told about ancient people coming to North America in this manner. Interesting if an account which several scholars questioned for years became the source of this trans-Siberian idea that is often used by academia against diffusionist theory, where the question of who first visited North America is concerned. Might there be any clues to lost ancient civilizations in the account?

Meriwether Lewis died under questionable circumstances. Whether it was suicide or murder is has been under examination. One author who has explored these questions is Xaviant Haze in his book *The Suppressed History of America & The Murder of Meriwether Lewis*. Haze isn't the only researcher to dig into this mystery but his recent work is a good starting point if you're unfamiliar with this mystery. The point is, as Haze and the facts suggest to me, it may be that Lewis was murdered over an issue relative to the secrets investigated by the famed expedition that was completed just three years before his death.

What did Lewis find on the expedition and how might that have factored in his political persecution and suspicious untimely death just three years after his triumph – and the virtual suppression of the expedition for a century?

What no one has considered before is that the territory of the Louisiana Purchase, and the area covered by the Lewis & Clark Expedition, would become mystery airship country and the technology of the airships was likely based on lost technology of forgotten civilizations – civilizations that could very well have left relics behind for Meriwether Lewis and others to find.

I propose the following: Thomas Jefferson was a lifelong student of history and science. Being of the philosopher scientist class, Jefferson would be keen on any evidence of the lost technology of forgotten civilizations. He would have shared with Lewis any Templar data on the Americas in his possession, a fellow Mason. Lewis was probably on a secret mission embedded within his assignment as leader of the larger expedition, said secret mission to look for and retrieve or record relics and sites of said forgotten ones.

Whatever Lewis found on this secret mission, it could account for the sort of deep classification that inspired the informal suppression of the Lewis & Clark Expedition for nearly a century – as well as Lewis' murder.

I suggest that this is relevant to the thesis of this book because such ancient sites, especially the mounds, would have, in my opinion, been built upon the 'grid of the gods' aka the world grid of telluric current – and these sites might themselves factor into the flying routes and technology of the mystery airships.

There's a story there, but we must move on.

Solomon Andrews and the AERON

I mentioned the US Civil War as the major national distraction of the 19th Century and now it's time to look at this conflict from the perspective of the airship mysteries for it factors prominently.

Michael Busby has done an excellent job in presenting the Civil War service association between players of the airship mysteries in his book, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*. Busby reveals details of service of ten identified men linked to the airships. It is important to note that these are individuals associated with the 1890s period of the mystery and Busby suggests that they may have met during the war or immediately after.

Why do I agree with Busby on this point?

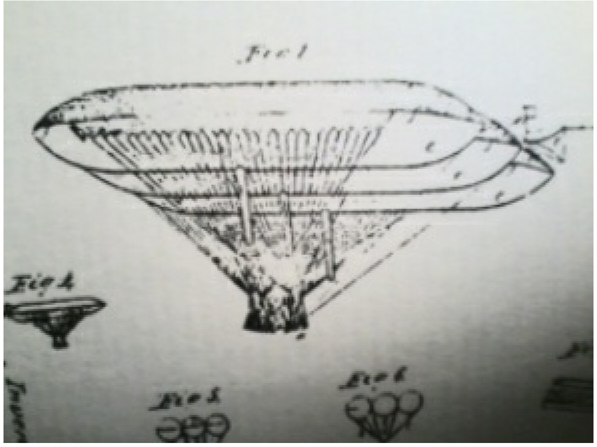
Solomon Andrews was born in 1806. He served as mayor of Perth Amboy, New Jersey, where he had been sanitary officer during the Civil War. Andrews was also a medical doctor, graduate of Rutgers University. His contribution of the city's first sewage system served to effectively fight illnesses like yellow fever and cholera. An inventor, Andrews created sewing machines, gas lamps, stoves, locks and a self-filtering tobacco pipe, among other things. He was also the inventor of an airship.

In 1847, Solomon Andrews converted a former barracks into a laboratory which he called the Inventor's Institute. Though the others there created a variety of things, Andrews was focused on powered flight thus did he alter the name of the institute to the Aerial Navigation Company. In 1849, the *New York Herald* ran an ad from a company offering air travel for gold miners. Was this the Aerial Navigation Company?

Busby asks the logical question: Was the Aerial Navigation Company associated with Dellschau’s Sonora Aero Club? More specifically, was the Inventor’s Institute among the ‘east coast investors’ often mentioned by Dellschau and other airship chroniclers? It bears consideration due to the timing and the California factor, so let’s continue our look at Solomon Andrews.

On 9 August 1862, Andrews wrote to President Abraham Lincoln to inform him of an ‘aerostat’ he could build for purposes of aerial reconnaissance needs of the union Army. Lincoln was intrigued enough to assign his War Department to give the suggestion serious consideration. After a test flight to correct mechanical issues, Andrews’ ‘Aeron’ was ready for its full demonstration and that happened on 4 September 1863 before reporters and representatives of the US War Department.

The ‘Aeron’ consisted of three 80-foot long cigar-shaped ‘forms’ much smaller than the average balloon of the day. Connected side by side, the ‘forms’ or ‘cylindroids’ were made of varnished linen and this composite fuselage supported a basket twelve feet long which Andrews designed to carry three men and their equipment. Moving against the wind, the *Aeron* maintained a speed of 120 mph and performed maneuvers for all to see. What is probably most intriguing is that the reporters refused to discuss the propulsion system or even describe the motor at all – citing concern that it get into the hands of the Confederate army.



Solomon Andrews’ aerostat Aeron, *US Pat #43,449*
This was NOT a balloon, nor a dirigible.

What’s this? Technology being classified in the interests of national security?

Might the *Aeron* have been America’s first black project?

I think so and here’s why. Following this demonstration, we are told Andrews met with tepid response from the War Department, but then we learn his request to meet personally with President Lincoln is honored. The result of that meeting, we are told, is that Lincoln ordered the War Department and Congress to provide details on acquiring Andrews’ airship technology and bring it into the arsenal. In March of 1864, Congress recommended immediate acquisition by the War Department, but a funny thing happened.

It took until the spring of 1865 before Secretary Edwin Stanton informed Andrews, through the House of Representatives’ Committee on Military Affairs, of the War Department’s alleged rejection of the airship development project – which had been recommended by the President and the US Congress, mind you.

Seriously? The President of the United States instructs Congress to acquire this demonstrated airship technology for development by the War Department and the Secretary of War is going to categorically reject it after stalling for a year?

Do you buy that? Because I don’t.

Here’s what I think really happened: Congress acquired the airship technology and, though clearly focused on the immediate requirements of a desperate war on the ground, secretly began to determine how to produce the *Aeron* in numbers and to what application in the field. The problem with this possibility is that clearly the Union did not deploy *Aeron* airships into the field of battle for we have no reports of them. So what happened?

We’re told that Andrews went on with his Aerial Navigation Company and flew the *Aeron II* over Long Island twice in 1866. But all his aspirations came to a halt when the postwar economic conditions bankrupted the company. That was it; Andrews gave up flying machines and died in 1872. However, I see an alternative possibility to this end.

The facts suggest to me a scenario in which Solomon Andrews was given a contract by the US government to develop his *Aeron II*. For whatever reason, it was not used during the war and that reason is hinted at in the annals of the Sonora Aero Club: several of the members were vehemently opposed to using their aero technology for military purposes, if you recall. Was there such influence in the War Department?

Michael Busby presents analysis of Civil War service records, specifically for the Union, in an attempt to further identify the men named in airship mystery reports, and he does so with some success. How difficult would it have been for the influence of those opposed to military uses of aero technology to have stalled the application of the technology during the war?

Not difficult, is what I say. Remember, this was the 1860s and the Civil War took every ounce and inch of resources on its various hot battlefields. We must resist the assumption that the US War Department or even military commanders would have seen the uses of airships so obvious to us in our time. The ascendancy of air forces in our military was a hard fought battle that almost put Billy Mitchell in the brig.

During the hostilities between the States, I doubt most people considered that airships could be used as bombers. Despite Dellschau’s report that Prussian military representatives (NJMZa) considered it, the idea of using airships for military applications, specifically for dropping bombs from the sky, might even have been considered ungentlemanly. This point of view, especially if held by Edwin Stanton, would explain why we didn't see *Aeron* skyships raining hellfire down on Confederate troops, camps and cities. Remember, the guys first associated with the technology were opposed to its military uses.

So where does this place Andrews? It would appear he violated the military application moratorium, if he was associated with the Sonora guys. In defense of Andrews, he did propose his *Aeron* be used for reconnaissance, not bombing. Still, might there have been intervention on the part of the guys opposed to military purposes?

The answer to all this, in my opinion, is that the development of the *Aeron* technology was indeed the first American black project and thus employed new personnel. New people suggests that institutional knowledge had to be reconstructed based on Andrews' work, they either didn't have the cooperation of the Sonora era guys or anyone who worked with that technology or the Sonora era guys who were on board didn't have all of Peter Mennis' secrets. In other words, the black project *Aeron* development was too slow and the resources too tight, to be effectively applied during the war.

Another possibility is that the US War Department was firmly discouraged from fully developing the *Aeron* technology for use during the war. Discouraged by whom? Perhaps the Prussian establishment, perhaps NJMZa itself, and there is some evidence for this.

NJMZa Lobbyists in America?

During the American Civil War, several Prussian military elites served for both the Union and the Confederacy. Robert von Massow, son of the chamberlain of the King of Prussia, was one of Mosby's Rangers in the 43rd Battalion Virginia Cavalry. Justus Scheibert, prominent military writer, served as an observer with Robert E. Lee's army and saw action at Gettysburg and Chancellorsville. Among the Union generals were six Prussian-born: Karl Matthies, Alexander Schimmelfennig, Peter Osterhaus, August Willich, Carl Schurz and Frederick Salomon whose brother was a governor of Wisconsin and lawyer representing German interests in New York. These men served at Gettysburg, Missionary Ridge, Resaca, and Sherman's March to the Sea. And these are just six Civil War Prussian officers we know about.

My point is that there could very well have been representatives of Prussia, specifically NJMZa, aware of or even involved with the proposed *Aeron* project and they could conceivably have discouraged an American military application of airship technology that they desired to preserve for a new Germany. This would fit with the aforementioned mission statement in the earlier chapter. Why give the Union such a technological advantage over the South and end the war sooner (thus expending less resources), thus giving the United States an equal footing in the skies with which Germany would have to contend?

With it a known fact of history that Prussian elites and Germany's future military leaders were quite actively involved in the US Civil War, I will conclude that NJMZa influence, embedded within Prussian representation, was responsible for us not seeing Union airships as part of the story of that conflict.

But that did not stop the American development of the *Aeron* technology. Not by a long shot.

Black Project

I will proceed from this point with the proposition that the *Aeron* technology development became America's first official black project. And let's be more specific: *American*, not United States government, I say.

Despite whatever Prussian influence existed to discourage wartime pursuit of airships, Solomon Andrews and groups like the Sonora Aero Club had already given Americans the taste and there was no stopping its further development. With the nation under reconstruction and having debts to pay off, airship technology development would have to be financed privately and thus would be *owned* by private parties, especially in the 19th Century.

Consider the possibility that private American backers aware of or even involved with the US War Department's situation with Solomon Andrews might have stepped up to provide the material resources and money to go forward with developing the *Aeron* technology – with the agreement that they would own said technology henceforth. The US military would provide personnel as needed, but essentially the private investors would take over the project because the government had its hands full putting the nation back together.

I argue that the US government in 1865 would likely have considered it a no-brainer. They weren't in the position to justify what would have been condemned as the chasing of Jules Verne style pipe dreams. It had to be kept secret to avoid outcry. Thus do I say that the *Aeron* development became the first modern military-industrial black project.

Why shrouded in the black? The obvious answer is that the investors themselves saw a benefit in developing this technology outside the public view. The government would reasonably have gone along because, as was the case during the war, it might not have been good public relations to be involved in building airships when there was infrastructure to be rebuilt and a rocky economy to be navigated. The investors would have also wanted to maintain an edge over any potential competition, of course, thus do I say it was America's first serious classified venture in technology.

So what did this black project look like? Essentially it was an American NJMZa with a slight variation. Whereas the Prussian group was first and foremost a German nationalist outfit with ideological objectives, an American NJMZa would be a private venture of commercial and scientific objectives, loyal to the United States. To gain a clear grasp on what we're talking about, let us postulate a mission statement for said organization.

First, what would we name our American NJMZa? Not anything 'NJMZa/NYMZA' of course. Due to the lack of such a word associated with the American faction of this topic, we are left to consider Andrews' 'Inventors Institute'. I eliminate that option because the corporate body that would have initiated this *Aeron* black project was likely not Andrews' outfit;

likewise neither his Aerial Navigation Company. Thus, due to a lack of any one name emerging from the material and lore, we cannot reasonably identify a name – befitting of a black project, that is.

However, we can speculate upon a mission statement so we'll continue in that direction. It's simple really: 'A private corporation dedicated to the advancement of superior aero technology for industry and commerce in the interests of the United States of America.' There's an example. What does it mean?

Look closely. It is distinctly neither a government department nor an office within any department. Its purpose is to develop the technology to a superior level. In that we find the justification for secrecy. Said superior level implies superior to competitors. Next comes a very important part, in that the purpose would be industry and commerce. Not the defense of the country, but industry and commerce. This would be further emphasized by a congruency with the 'interests of the United States'. That is critical to my point that said organization, which I think did exist in spite of variance from my specific vision, saw itself as separate from the War Department and therefore not under its control.

In my opinion, the organization that I suspect developed Solomon Andrews' *Aeron* technology which I also think had indeed been acquired by Lincoln's War Department was the first US government contractor in the modern sense and, due to the circumstances of the post war Reconstruction Era, shrewdly negotiated its autonomy and effectively taking ownership of whatever subsequent versions of *Aeron* technology it created. The only remaining obligation to the government would have been the agreement that said technology would be applied in the interests of the United States and the only remaining resource from the government, in my opinion, would have been personnel. In this initial autonomy would we have found the seed for the group's eventual break from known civilization.

So who did the US government provide as personnel to the *Aeron* black project?

Let's jump ahead to 1897 for a clue.

The Adventures of Tillman & Dolbear

In his essential work on the airship question, Michael Busby presents the astonishing details that link certain men by name to airship sightings and their crews.

As reported in both the *Dallas Morning News* and the *Galveston News* on 19 April 1897, an airship was sighted on the ground at Stephenville, Texas, and observed up close by twenty-two identified persons among several others. The identified included judges, a senator, a mayor, reporters and a district attorney. They met and talked about the airship with the pilot and an engineer who identified themselves as ‘S. E. Tillman’ and ‘A.E. Dolbear’ and told the witnesses they were on an experimental expedition under contract with ‘capitalists from New York’ who were their financial backers. The airship was described as cigar-shaped and sixty feet long with large wheels at both ends, driven by an electric engine powered by batteries.

Take note of the technology described above as we look at the names mentioned.

Our first candidate is Colonel Samuel E. Tillman about whom I discussed airship mystery involvement in *Empire of the Wheel II: Friends From Sonora*:

> *“Samuel Escue Tillman, 1847 - 1942 was an astronomer, engineer, military educator, and career officer in the United States Army who spent 30 years teaching at the United States Military Academy at West Point, New York. In addition to writing for periodicals on a wide range of subjects and authoring several influential textbooks on chemistry and geology, in 1917 Tillman was recalled from previous mandatory retirement to serve as superintendent of the United States Military Academy for the duration of World War I.*
>
> *Tillman began his military career shortly after the end of the Civil War as a cadet at West Point. His first assignment lasted fifteen months at Fort Riley, Kansas -- the state associated with the legendary Wilsons, of whom you will learn much more. You can read his own report of exploration in The Kansas Frontier 1869-1870: Lt Samuel Tillman’s First Tour of Duty (edited by Dwight Smith). Samuel E Tillman is known for exploration and mapping expeditions of then uncharted territories in Arizona, California, Idaho, Montana, Nevada, New Mexico and Utah. Here is where Etta Place finds a possible association with airship lore: Much of the territory Tillman explored would have put him in the same places where Etta's friend Butch Cassidy and his cohorts were to be found -- and years before the outlaws were there. Tillman was also an astronomer on the national expedition to Tasmania to observe the Transit of Venus, so his celestial navigation skills could certainly be argued to be worthy of airship*

piloting.

As a founding member of the Cosmos Club, Tillman was an associate of the men who created the National Geographic Society. He authored Descriptive General Chemistry and, probably the most pertinent book to reveal his association with the technology of the airship mystery, Elementary Lessons In Heat, a book in which Tillman addresses, among many, the following topics which specifically reflect upon the legendary secret technology of the Sonora Aero Club's leader, Peter Mennis: 'Mixture of Gas & Vapor', 'Refraction of Heat', 'Steam Engines', 'Cyclones', 'Movement of High Pressure Areas'. These topics relate to the mysterious 'supe' anti-gravity propulsion, particularly as described via the works of Dellschau[1].

It is this very point that ties Tillman to Mennis and suggests a development from the Sonora Aero Club into what we call Team Sonora to describe the club in its much larger incarnation of the 1890s. Mennis invented his 'supe', a liquid that would be injected into a casing inside of which was a spinning element. The chemical reaction would allegedly produce an anti-gravity effect. Tillman was a specialist in chemistry who wrote about gases and heat and engines and cyclones (which spin). It suggests that the 'S. E. Tillman' of the airship mystery of 1897 was indeed the actual Samuel Tillman we've discussed here and that he had studied and advanced the theories and application of Peter Mennis' 'supe' engine.

Samuel Tillman went to teach at, and then serve as superintendent of, West Point. Here is a US Army officer, respected and experienced explorer and West Point professor associated by name to the 'Great Airship Mystery' and writing about this stuff that resonates so suspiciously with the odd story of Peter Mennis and the Sonora Aero Club. Curiously, Samuel Tillman refused to include aviation in the curriculum of the military academy[2].*"*

(EOTW2: Friends From Sonora)

Samuel Tillman is an obvious choice for personnel on the *Aeron* project and is even identified by name in the airship mystery of the 1890s as a pilot or crewman.

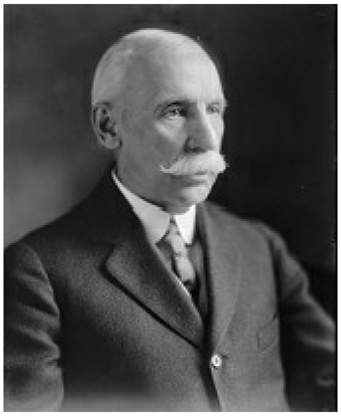
The next candidate is the gentleman named with Tillman as from the mystery airship, Amos Dolbear. Here is what I wrote of him in *EOTW2: Friends From Sonora*:

"Amos E. Dolbear was a graduate of Wesleyan University and in 1867 earned his PhD from the University of Michigan where he subsequently became a professor of chemistry. His academic resume includes professorships at University of Kentucky, Bethany College and Tufts College. Dolbear is credited with perfecting the electric gyroscope, tuning forks, epidiascope (which exhibits voice vibration), worked on the conversion of sound into electricity, and developed a magneto electric telephone over which he sued Alexander Graham Bell, and he also developed the static telephone.

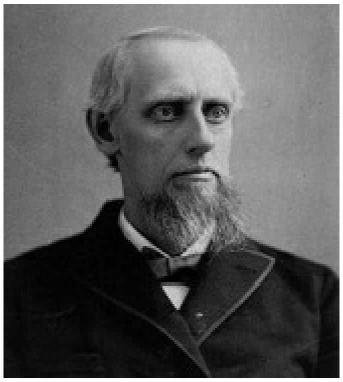
"In 1882, years before the accomplishments of Marconi and Hertz, Dolbear demonstrated communication without wires over a distance of a quarter mile and received a patent. Dolbear was recognized for many of his achievements at the Paris Expo of 1881 and the Crystal Palace Expo the following year. This was a man well documented in history, not a murky identity impossible to find in

public record. Dolbear's accomplishments fit very well with the technology of airship mystery lore."

As you can see, these men identified in witness reports as pilots or crewmen of the mystery airships were real and left their marks on history. They can be traced. Here are photos of them.



Samuel E. Tillman



Amos Dolbear, PhD

Was Amos and Sam just a couple of practical jokers in on an endless April Fools' gag that lasted several months? It's not likely men these two would have gone along with such a stunt, so did some mirthful reporter seek to season his tall tale with believable characters? That is possible, sure. But if so, why didn't either of them come out later and clarify the matter?

I say they didn't because it wasn't a joke. In my opinion, it looks Tillman and Dolbear really were on an airship in Texas in 1897. Of course, I can't prove it beyond what is presented here so let's continue.

My premise on this government personnel issue where the proposed *Aeron* project is concerned is that specialists in fields relative to the airship technologies would have been assigned to the corporate office as a ‘special duty assignment’. That is, being military or civil service personnel they were under orders to report for duty at the project office or site. Naturally they would have signed a nondisclosure agreement of whatever sort was used in the 19th Century. Military personnel would have been ideal for crews, of course, and civilians would likely have made up much of the technical engineering roster. However, it could have been any combination of the right people, knowledge and skills driving the choice.

Where were the American airships built? Not being restricted by operating on foreign soil, as in the case of the Prussian NJMZa, the American group had its choice of military bases, army forts (as suggested in newspaper accounts), or privately owned stations, likely using a variation of the Sonora Aero Club model of barns for hangars. It could be that the parts were manufactured in different locations for assembly in yet another location, just as alleged airship builder representative George Collins stated in a *San Francisco Chronicle* article dated 22 November 1896.

Whatever developed through the *Aeron* project, in a period of thirty years the mystery airships went from Solomon Andrews’ original ‘aerostat’ to more sophisticated models which we will discuss later in this book. What were they doing all this time?

We’re dealing with 19th Century technology. Design and development took longer back then. Not only were they working on the craft themselves, the project was also working on flying routes and this took time because, as I proposed in *EOTW2: Friends From Sonora,* I think the airships tapped into the telluric current of the so called ‘world energy grid’ and thus, in their early stages, had to stay close to the strength of this power. Thus, the *Aeron* project involved both airship construction and charting of the streams and currents of the world grid. And that is, for a time, what Samuel Tillman was doing during his explorations for the US Army, I suspect.

It could be noted that if you consulted a map of the world grid energy currents, you might be able to identify locations of some of these secret airship bases. Since I happen to have one, I’ll toss out a few possibilities:

Fort Stockton
Fort Sill
Fort Union
Fort Morgan (Colorado)
Fort Garland
Fort Laramie
Fort Peck

I identify the above as merely a few examples of possible locations of airship program facilities on or near enough to the currents of world grid energy, and there are others. It should be noted that the states where these installations are or were located are states with the most airship activity reports in the 1896-97 flap. An enterprising reader might want to dig deeper into the histories of these bases to see if my identification bears out further. My point is that the military posts were ready made installations in the middle of nowhere or far enough from somewhere during the period in question.

Now that we’ve proposed the establishment of the American airship project and identified some personnel and possible locations for development and flight tests, we have to consider who paid for all of it.

American Banksters:
Some Likely Breakaway Investors

The Aeron project had to be financed. It had to be financed by trusted investors. It may even have been financed under false pretenses, leading to the speculation that our modern practice of $10,000 toilet seats and $20,000 monkey wrenches had its conception in this first black project. So who may have put up the money?

There are American founded banks that I will not include in this list because, quite frankly, I suspect a loyalty to Germany. I further suspect one of these banks was already a NJMZa agent and therefore the American *Aeron* project managers would likely have no interest in association with said institution. This particular bank, *Kuhn,Loeb*, will be discussed in a later chapter, so let’s get to my list of American banker candidates.

I have identified the following banks as American financial institutions that existed during the period of proposed *Aeron* project development and would have been likely sources. The reader should take note of the New York locations of some of these banks as that city and state were identified in the reports in the 1890s as the location of airship investors.

THE BANK OF NEW YORK, established in 1784 by Alexander Hamilton. This institution was involved in financing the War of 1812, as well as civil engineering projects such as canals, subways and steamboats.

BROWN BROTHERS HARRIMAN, established in 1810. This is the oldest and largest private bank in the United States. The possible connection of a family member to NJMZa in the late 19th and early 20th Centuries would not have affected its possible participation in the *Aeron* project, in my opinion, and its place in the 20th Century military-industrial complex places it smack dab within the secret space program milieu.

CITY BANK OF NEW YORK (Citibank), established in 1812. Still around, albeit morphed over time, its past president Moses Taylor was a protégée of the famous Astor family. One particular Astor has a prominent place in the airship mystery milieu.

CHEMICAL BANK, established in 1824. This institution started as a chemical company. The inclusion on this list should be obvious from the technological perspective. Peter Mennis' propulsion system involved chemicals, Samuel Tillman was a chemistry scholar, and chemical manufacturers likely played a major role in airship technology development.

WELLS FARGO BANK, established in 1852. Starting out as a railroad telegraph and express delivery company, this company's origins and operations emerged from the heart of airship country and would have been keenly interested in the *Aeron* project as, according to my theory, it involved telluric world grid current which telegraphy utilized. Railroads and the telegraph companies are identified in my works as organizations that were aware of telluric current and how to tap into it.

ZIONS BANK, established in 1873 by Brigham Young. There are two very good reasons for including this bank on the list. It was based in Utah in the heart of airship country and because that state had an independent nature in its history and a project like the Aeron venture would have been appealing, especially the autonomous aspect of the project's operations as proposed earlier.

Let the reader understand that I have no specific evidence that any of the above banks were indeed involved in airship development. I'm merely trying to fill in the blanks of the mystery in as logical fashion as I can. That some reports of the late 1890s flap identified unspecified 'New York investors' certainly places a few of the above within candidacy but that by no means disqualifies investors from other areas of the country. I also remind the reader that any or all of these banks may have not really known what was being financed, i.e. they may not have been 'read in', as we call it.

So with the end of the American Civil War we find ourselves in a period of thirty years between what I speculate was the establishment of the *Aeron* project and the earliest reports of the 1890s airship mystery.

I propose this was a period of research and design, tests and advancements, and compilation of scientific data and breakthroughs. In my opinion, the three decades between the end of the war and the unveiling of the results of the Aeron project was the period in which the corporate program office making all this happen began to see the virtue in further autonomy. In this period, seeing what they could actually do, the seeds of breaking away were planted.

But before go there, there is a question we must attempt to answer: Between the end of the US Civil War and the 1890s, what were the Prussians doing…?

CHAPTER EIGHT

SOUTH OF THE BORDER: GOLDENEYE

While the American group was busy standing up an airship program, the Prussians decided to move further south.

In spite of the War Between the States, it was clear to the burgeoning German empire that there was no room for them in the continental US so they looked to Latin America where there was a vacuum to be filled.

Where Germany went, NJMZa had likely gone and already scouted the situation.

Prussia and Mexico: A Brief Contextual History

In 1803, the expedition of Alexander von Humboldt arrived to map Mexico and conduct anthropological studies. Diplomatic relations did not formally begin until 1879, eight years after German unification, but through the mid-19th Century immigration increased the German population in Mexico. Many of the immigrants established themselves in commerce and industry. In the 1830s, when Mexico owned Texas, German immigrants were attracted to the north; Charles Dellschau would be among these two decades later.

When Emperor Maximilian came into power in 1864, Prussian influence in Mexico seemed to notch up. The emperor was the brother of Austrian Emperor Francis Joseph I. He was also a naval officer and teamed up with Napoleon III of France to invade Mexico to revive French power in the Americas. England and Spain got in on the deal but that didn't last long when they learned of the French plan to seize the entire country. All this intrigue resulted in Maximilian being crowned as a cutout for the French. His Belgian wife even changed her name to 'Carlota' but by 1867, France opted to maintain a relationship with the United States and dropped its imperial designs on Latin America and Maximilian was captured and executed by the new Mexican regime.

Despite the French-Maximilian political theater, German immigration continued into Mexico, with many colonies forming in places like Veracruz, Tamaulipas, as well as in Chiapas and in the Yucatan. Much German cultural influence took root and remains today, including architecture, music, breweries, Oktoberfest celebrations, and agriculture. During World War I, Germany attempted to exert its control over Mexico by urging it to side with Central Powers but the exposure of the infamous Zimmerman Telegram led to Mexico rejecting that idea.

But there was more to the story, in my opinion…

German Immigration:
The First Export of the Third Way

In Joseph Farrell's *The Third Way: The Nazi International, European Union, and Corporate Fascism* (AUP, 2015), we read of Hjalmar Schacht's "supply side" scheme of export-production by developing lesser nations through the exportation of physical German industrial plants.

Schacht's specific plan involved loaning these under-developed countries the money needed to expand their industry and agriculture and said countries would in turn spend that money on German machinery and materials to support this new expansion. In other words, Germany gives a country some money and they give it back through establishment of German-built industry thus giving the Reich access to that country's natural resources and room to grow. It was a clever way for Germany to move in and establish what amounts to colonial presence and, obviously, much influence.

I say Schacht was a student of what Germany had already done with Kuhn.Loeb, had continued doing in Latin America and he may even have gotten the idea from NJMZa. Now you understand why I place Schacht on the NJMZa player suspect list. This and his association with the Nazi regime, which I think was a product of what NJMZa had become by the early 20th Century.

The Prussian presence in Mexico saw the rise of German immigration in that country and, as discussed, the appearance of German industry there. But this also happened throughout South America. German immigrants carried industry into Argentina, Chile, Brazil, Paraguay, Bolivia, Peru, Uruguay and Venezuela.

In 1843, Colonia Tovar was founded in Venezuela by immigrants from the Duchy of Baden and even today is known for maintaining its German culture and bringing German agriculture. Its sister city is Oxapampa, a German transplantation in the Peruvian highlands established in 1891 by descendants of Prussian immigrants who arrived in Lima in 1857. Along with Tyrolean houses in the jungle, the Germans built a thriving coffee growing industry there. These are just two examples of the German diaspora in South America, the point is that German 'colonies' in Latin America tend to display a distinct transplantation of Germany to the target country as opposed to an assimilation with the local culture. In my opinion, this transplantation reflects what Hjalmar Schacht would seek to institutionalize in the 20th Century.

As stated before, I suggest that the previously practiced and subsequently Schacht-corporatized system of transporting Germany itself around the world was embedded with intent to establish claim and influence over natural resources globally. This especially included mining.

There was much gold to harvest.

Goldfingers:
Source and Sorcery and Sir Richard Burton

There is a story to be told about the search for the lost technology of forgotten civilizations in the Americas and I have attempted to tell part of it in three books. This search is the running theme of my *Secret Missions* series but it's also discussed in *EOTW2: Friends From Sonora*. However, my most specific research into that quest in South America concerns the mysterious missing months in the annals of British explorer-scientist, Sir Richard Francis Burton.

In *EOTW2:FFS*, I briefly present the basic history of German gold-hunting activities of the 19th Century in South America, specifically within a context to illuminate what I suspect was active, though covert, NJMZa participation in that venture.

In *Secret Missions 2: The Lost Expedition of Sir Richard Francis Burton* the data implies that the legendary British explorer-scientist (and intelligence officer) could have been collecting on Prussian (read that 'NJMZa') activities while in South America. Burton went there over three decades prior to Butch and Sundance and the most mysterious period of his life – the only period about which he published not a word – following a few years as British Consul in Brazil.

What do I think Burton was doing during the four months that are blank in his journals and books? I explore that in great detail in *Secret Missions 2: The Lost Expedition etc* and it directly involved the very things we've discussed earlier in this book: the lost technology of the forgotten civilization, the very reason I think NJMZa was deployed to South America in the first place.

At the time of Burton's 'lost expedition', the Sonora Aero Club had been dissolved for a decade, the US Civil War was over, America was in reconstruction, and the *Aeron* project would have been in early development. Prussian influence in Mexican politics had ended badly with the execution of

French backed Austrian Maximilian, thus resulted the aforementioned shift to South America. With German immigration established, Prussian agents could move freely about the immense southern continent without raising any eyebrows.

Though it is true that the immigration had begun in the early 19th Century, the major flow of Germans into South America would not really pick up until the gold standard was implemented with the establishment of gold mark currency in 1871. This coincidentally places Burton in the areas of interest just a couple of years prior, which is why I suspect the gold issue to have been part of his proposed classified assignment.

I propose that NJMZa activity immediately preceded the German gold standard decision and subsequent German involvement in the South American gold rushes of the late 19th Century and early 20th Century. Prussian interest in Inca gold secrets would have led NJMZa agents to investigate some of the same sites Burton was known to be looking for and especially those which I think he investigated secretly on behalf of both British intelligence and his secret society masters. Why?

In the minds of those in pursuit of the forgotten civilizations and their lost technology, these South American sites would likely reveal either the locations of hidden ancient mining operations or the method by which the forgotten civilization manufactured – *physically produced* – gold itself.

Yes, I am suggesting alchemy on an industrial scale.

From my Burton book:

“But suppose the story of the Queen hiding the gold was true – in allegory?

“What if the hiding of the gold in subterranean passages is code for the knowledge of from where to draw the gold?

“Based on the failed ‘search for Eldorado’, we can safely assume that the Spanish never found it. But what if the story of hidden vaulted gold has nothing to do with a place as much as it does a ***process****?*

“Just as the megalithic sites and the lore of the tunnels are associated with the mysterious lost civilization, I propose that so, too, was the source of the Inca gold. As David Childress compellingly argues for a massive Tiwanaku-Puma Punku ore processing complex, I am willing to take it a step

further: Puma Punku and its associated Tiwanaku facility operated as a machine, not simply for the processing of ores, but for the raw production – the ***chemical creation****-- of gold."*

(*Secret Missions 2,* Bosley)

I realize what a colossal leap that will be for some to even consider, but I maintain that the proposition that the Inca gold had been a product of a much older civilization's gold-making machine we know as Puma Punku is valid. I also argue that NJMZa agents would have suspected this was the case with Puma Punku certainly as much as did the secret society which I contend sent Burton on his expedition.

NJMZa was created and managed by men who possessed and were dedicated to further gaining arcane knowledge every bit as much as they were to forging industry and founding a unified Germany, as I have pointed out already. So now let's explore what they might have known specifically…

NJMZa in Latin America: What the Prussians Knew, Etc

What did the Prussians of the early to mid-19th Century know of South America's ancient secrets? How might this have directly influenced – or have been influenced by – NJMZa?

We may not be able to answer that question directly, but we might surmise from known activity that Prussian/German explorers were in the right places to likely have learned a few things about South America's lost past.

It is very important to note here that not one of these explorers had to actually have even been aware of an organization like NJMZa, the organization would only have needed access to the data if not an embedded agent on the various expeditions which employ many people other than the identified scientific team, including porters, cooks, hunters, etc etc. NJMZa could have been on their expeditions without anyone's knowledge.

So which explorers could have been either NJMZa sources, agents or unwitting enablers?

Alexander von Humboldt is a good starting point.

Born in 1769, Berlin native Humboldt studied at the University of Frankfurt then Gottingen where his passion for travel was ignited. As a result, he dedicated his studies and life to scientific exploration.

Humboldt's Latin American explorations began in Venezuela in the summer of 1799. He followed this with a four month journey down the Orinoco River system and from there to Cartagena and eventually onto the Amazon for Lima, Peru. Humboldt's South American explorations resulted in the essential foundations of modern geography and meteorology and in this we find our resonance with NJMZa interests.

What I think Humboldt contributed most specifically to NJMZa interests is to be found in his work on the Earth's magnetic field. It was he who discovered that the planet's magnetic field decreases in intensity when moving from the poles toward the equator. The importance of this to NJMZa would be obvious: if the airships truly did require tapping into the world energy grid of telluric current and magnetic forces, this information would be vital to the organization's flight operations in South America. Technical compensations and adjustments would need to be made for the craft to fly in a weaker field.

Another aspect of Humboldt's early 19th Century explorations of South America was geology. Humboldt's study of volcanoes revealed linear grouping in them and, he presumed, corresponded with vast subterranean fissures. In this, do we find the source for creation of large open subterranean chambers leading to the legends of tunnels and Hollow Earth stories linked to the esoteric lore of ancient South America? NJMZa would definitely have been interested in these results of Humboldt's work.

I think it's reasonable that NJMZa would have gone into its South American venture armed with Humboldt's data. Might Humboldt have been a NJMZa player? Sure, why not? As I argue in another book that a secret hermetic society recruited Burton, why wouldn't the men behind NJMZa have recruited from among the brightest in the German universities?

It's possible that Humboldt was among the early NJMZa associates, but whether Humboldt was NJMZa or not, his South American work was available to them by 1804, decades before The Sonora Aero Club emerged in California.

Perhaps NJMZa took benefit from or even had a hand in the Austrian Expedition to Brazil which operated from 1817 to 1835 and included two German scientists and an Italian specialist in hieroglyphs among its prominent roster.

This expedition was commissioned by Rhenish Prince Klemens Wenzel von Metternich and linked to Dom Pedro IV, descendant of the Portuguese monarch of the Manuscript 512 tale. Might Dom Pedro, whose ancestor was denied the Lost Mines of Muribeca, have hoped the Austrian expedition would find the riches promised by Roberto Dias two centuries prior? Certainly NJMZa would have been curious about circumstances involving lost mines in Brazil and thus could have placed Germans on the expedition. Was sponsor Prince Wenzel of Metternich a NJMZa associate?

When Metternich was exiled during a revolutionary period, he went to Amsterdam and then to London, both cities known to be Venetian ‘bankster’ strongholds, according to Joseph Farrell. After his return to Austria, Metternich hobnobbed with Otto von Bismarck for the entire summer of 1851. The company Metternich kept might suggest a NJMZa association to some degree thus we must consider such an influence on the expedition decades prior.

German-Russian explorer Georg Heinrich von Langsdorff, who studied at Gottingen, participated in or led expeditions through Brazil between 1813-1822 and then again in 1826, specifically focusing on the Amazon region and the Minas Gerais, the locale of much of the lost city lore, and returning in 1829 to Rio de Janeiro. The journals of his scientific data and his log were supposedly ‘lost in the archives’ for a hundred years and their rediscovery revealed that much of the Langsdorff’s focus was on geography and ethnography – two disciplines of obvious value to a group like NJMZa in search of lost civilizations and the lore of forgotten cultures.

If there was a candidate for NJMZa field operative, it could have been Robert

Hermann Schomburgk. This Prussian-born adventurer emigrated to the United States and became a successful merchant, but his interests soon fell to shipwrecks and exploration. Having impressed the Royal Geographical Society with a self-financed survey of the Virgin Isles, Schomburgk was sent by them to lead a four year expedition through British Guiana, the results of which led to determination of border boundaries between several South American nations. He went onto serve in diplomatic positions for Britain and continued geographical explorations in Thailand and the Dominican Republic. He was an honored servant of England.

But Schomburgk has been identified as a knight of the Prussian Order of the Red Eagle which is usually bestowed only upon commissioned military officers or their civilian equivalents. Alexander von Humboldt's brother Wilhelm was a Knight First Class of this order and a Grand Cross Knight was the Prussian ambassador of the aforementioned Dom Pedro II of Brazil. However, the rosters fail to show Schomburgk among their ranks. It would be interesting know the origin of this alleged association from the perspective of potential NJMZa interest in Schomburgk. Might he have been a clandestine agent?

Another possible NJMZa source, if not agent, might have been Karl von den Steinen. Born in Mulheim, Steinen was a German psychiatrist who focused on anthropology, particularly of the cultures of Central Brazil. Steinen was an avid explorer between 1879 and 1898, participating in a circumnavigation of the world, a Polar Year expedition to South Georgia, and the first two expeditions into the Xingu region of Brazil. He also journeyed to the Marquesas Islands in the South Pacific. Steinen's work was focused most keenly on ancient languages of tribal cultures and of their art. Was he looking for evidence of the lost civilization? Did NJMZa learn anything from his work that they might have used during the early 20th Century period of their operations in South America?

August Kappler was a German born naturalist who spent many years in South America where he also served in the Dutch colonial service in Suriname which he subsequently explored for 33 years. He returned to Germany and is buried in Stuttgart.

Hugo Zoller was a German journalist explorer whose world travels included South American expeditions in 1881 and 1882, which resulted in two books.

Wilhelm Sievers was a professor of geography at the University of Giessen. He explored Colombia, Venezuela, Ecuador and Peru between 1884 and 1909 and wrote six books on these travels. Sievers time in South America spanned that period we will be looking at later, the first decade of the 20th Century.

Among the most prominent NJMZa candidates of the late 19th Century was Arthur Posnansky whose work has a direct bearing on the investigation of Tiahuanaco and Puma Punku.

Posnansky was born in Vienna in 1873 and educated at the Imperial and Royal Academy of Pula for a subsequent naval career. His father was an industrial chemist, which places Posnansky within reach of the NJMZa milieu. His interest in archeology was inspired on a naval voyage that took him to the South Pacific where he visited Easter Island. By the age of 23, Posnansky left Europe for South America.

Posnansky explored the Brazilian Amazon and got himself involved in military actions that forced him to move to Bolivia. Spending much of his time there exploring the highlands and neighboring Peru, Posnansky was fascinated with ancient Inca sites, especially around Lake Titicaca. He won national medals for his archeological and ethnologic writings and even became director of the National Museum. Posnansky would become a popular lecturer in Berlin, Frankfurt, Nuremburg, and the German government awarded him an honorary title of Professor in 1914. Posnansky's most active period of exploration spanned my proposed NJMZa gold-hunting era as well as the 1890s airship mystery period.

My point in looking at these German explorers of South America is that there was much Prussian activity down there throughout the 19th Century. With all the lost civilization association, it stands to reason that the Prussian NJMZa would have a stake in such exploration, if not a guiding hand. I shall reiterate that whether these men were associated with NJMZa or not, their works would have served NJMZa interests. I again propose that it's certainly possible that any of them could have been NJMZa agents.

So what might NJMZa have gained from all of the 19th Century German expeditions? Where to look for gold and relics. Along with data vital to the mechanical operations of the airships, these expeditions mostly revealed where NJMZa explorers could subsequently find sites associated with the lost civilization, which I think they did.

Is there any evidence that NJMZa airships ever flew in South America?

Airship Sightings in the Land of the Inca & The Rail Bankster: Abraham Kuhn

As I wrote in EOTW2: Friends From Sonora:

> *"In July of 1868, an 'aerial construction' with lights and making 'engine noises' flew over the town of Copiago(sic), Chile (actually Copiapo, south of Santiago) 828 nautical miles from Bariloche. The date of this sighting puts it within the range of activity of the original legendary Sonora Aero Club and its contemporaries under pre-schism Team NYMZA (NJMZa)."*

In 1880, a teenage boy in eastern Venezuela reported a hovering luminous ball in the sky. Here we are moving away from the era of the original Sonora Aero Club and drawing nearer to the Great Airship Mystery of the following decade. And remember that J. P. Morgan would be involved in banker activity in Venezuela not long after this period.

The *Dallas Morning News* reported that, on 17 April 1897, a man named C. G. Williams saw a cigar-shaped airship on the ground in Greenville, Texas. Williams reported an encounter with three crewmen of this airship. The captain of this craft explains how it works with electricity and moving parts. Williams is told about the airship traveling from New York to Indiana and down to Texas. This man even gives Williams letters to mail for him and tells Williams that if he does not disclose the names on the envelopes, the crew and he will take Williams "on a trip to Mexico and South America".

Anyone who has ever taken a trip to the Altiplano or Patagonia will tell you that the local natives have told tales of flying machines for many years, but these are usually dismissed as mythology or yarns for tourists. But what if they are actually true accounts of craft in an airship mystery context?

With the Sonora Aero Club’s reported use of ranchers’ barns for maintenance and storage hangars, we have more reason to consider the possibility that someone was hired to provide such a base for the South American airships of the mysterious NJMZa. The evidence that this could be the scenario is linked to unexpected suspects in the airship mystery.

But we’re not quite ready to tell that story just yet.

CHAPTER NINE

THE AMERICANS TAKE THE STAGE

We now approach that pivotal time in this 19th Century mystery when I think the airship groups moved closer to the decision to break away. Before it happened, the American group made its debut in a grand way.

The 1897 Airship Mystery

It is the reason for even considering the thesis of this book and is also the manifestation of the seed planted by the Sonora Aero Club and the other groups like it which Dellschau certainly said existed. The 1897 Airship Mystery, as it is usually identified, is the most misinterpreted event in the history of ufology, in my opinion, next to Roswell, perhaps.

In the philosophy borne of the ET hypothesis, UFOs are the primary evidence of visitors from other planets. Earth-originated flying saucers and their like are of marginal interest and the discussion of them is usually spun to further the ET hypothesis, i.e. the humans constructing these must have been guided by extraterrestrials or were reverse engineering an extraterrestrial craft. In spite of any argument to the contrary, the conclusion of the ET hypothesis is that it must be ET.

This position has become absurd and that’s part of my motive for writing this book. Not to bash but rather to present the evidence that has been out there for a long time yet goes ignored -- or spun to suit a stubborn belief that has careened into a religion.

For those who have never heard of it, the 1897 Airship Mystery concerned the sightings of large airships over major cities throughout the United States, mostly west of the Mississippi River between late 1896 and throughout the following year. The sightings were reported in several newspapers and witnessed by large populations among which reports from respected citizens were taken and published.

Though there were indeed a few hoaxes perpetrated by some newspapers, these hoaxes account for a small percentage of newspaper stories on the airship sightings yet are used repeatedly by skeptics and other naysayers to characterize the phenomenon in order to discredit it. The 1897 Airship Mystery is one of the few issues upon which skeptics and ET hypothesis devotees find harmony while selectively ignoring the finer details of the situation.

The reader should first understand that ‘airship’ does not mean flying saucer. Neither does it mean balloon nor dirigible. Within the context of the reports of the ‘1897 mystery’, the term ‘airship’ refers to a relatively large *heavier than air* craft constructed of metals and utilizes an unspecified technology for lift and a motor for propulsion capable of speeds much higher than a common dirigible. In the late 19th Century, people were not any more stupid nor backwards than people today, actually most were better educated in basic ways. These people knew the difference between balloons or dirigibles and what they described as ‘airships’.

Michael Busby writes in *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*:

“Although there was ample debate concerning the flying machines’ origins in 1897, including the supposition that the machines were of extraterrestrial design, all of the 1896-97 newspaper accounts referred to the unidentified flying objects **as airships** *(emphasis Busby). For the sake of continuity, I will continue the convention. The term UFO did not achieve widespread popularity until fifty years later…*

“I rushed off to the library to research the documented UFO sightings in Texas and almost immediately

came upon the great airship mystery of 1897, in Aurora, Texas. After uncovering a wealth of period newspaper stories regarding the topic and reading other documented material on the subject, I discovered it was not just a Texas airship mystery but a California, Nevada, Utah, Nebraska, Iowa, Illinois, Indiana, Michigan, Kansas, Missouri, New Mexico, Arizona, Oklahoma, and Louisiana airship mystery also…

"The story of the 1897 airship mystery is embedded in thousands of newspaper accounts reporting what happened in the local skies over (the) Western United States beginning in the fall of 1896 and proceeding through the spring of 1897."

Numerous accounts exist and some insist that it was all a hoax, while others smugly assure us that these airships had to be extraterrestrial in spite of the very human technology and clearly human pilots and crewmen and passengers repeatedly described. A closer look than is usually given should leave the reader better informed about the airship mystery than most other sources prefer.

In the late 19th Century, the Industrial Revolution had brought human civilization to a world of steam powered ships, electric lights, skyscrapers were emerging, phonographs brought recorded sound to people's homes and the world we know today had actually begun to take shape. By the time the curious object appeared in the sky over Sacramento, California, on the 17th of November in 1896, the people who saw it certainly understood that they were seeing something of the technology of the day as it is reflected in their eyewitness accounts. They were *not* describing extraterrestrial craft that had traversed space from other stars.

Many of these airships had open air decks. They utilized spinning propellers and had spot-lamps. They were crafted of known metals and of wood and fabric in some elements. Some reportedly carried very human passengers sporting fashionable attire of the day and enjoying tea to the music performed by a small live band on board as if the flight were a pleasure cruise. The supposed reports of alien beings on the airships turn out to fit the profile of the small percentage of hoax stories in the mix, yet it is these which the ET hypothesis advocates cite to discredit the human source of the airships. Read the accounts and check out Busby's book for these will demonstrate that the airships of the 1890s were of human creation – and that's what makes it truly interesting.

We have two major reasons to accept a human origin of the late 19th Century airships – the occupants and the technology.

Sky Pilots: Tillman, Dolbear & the Wilsons

You've already met Samuel Tillman and Amos Dolbear, identified by name as pilots of the airship that landed in Stephenville. The witnesses reported personal interaction with these two and there was absolutely nothing extraterrestrial in the encounter. The point has also been made that these two individuals are recorded in history. Look them up, they existed.

The most important about Tillman and Dolbear having been identified by witnesses are their credentials. Both of these men were experts in fields and skills specifically identified with the airship mystery from the time of the Sonora Aero Club in the 1850s to the 1890s era and beyond. Go back to that section and read again how Tillman was a US Army explorer mapping the states that factor prominently in the subsequent airship mystery, territory that has been identified by Sesh Heri (and others) as buzzing with world grid telluric current energy. Refresh your memory on his scientific writings and then look again at Dolbear and his inventions and specialty in electromagnetics.

Samuel Tillman and Amos Dolbear being identified as pilots of an airship should be taken as a major argument for the reality of these craft and as validation of the sightings as something more than a joke. But these two men go ignored in public discussion of the issue, especially because they don't support the spin of the ET hypothesis agenda and also because their presence is inconvenient to those who would rather disregard the whole thing as a hoax. In my opinion, that's a big mistake, in spite of the numbers who would agree with either side; it's also lazy and ignorant.

That is, of course, my personal position on the issue of Tillman and Dolbear. Yes, I do place importance on their inclusion by name in this mystery. Some might say that the alleged hoaxsters just used their names. But why would hoaxsters not use Tesla or Edison or even Keely? Tesla and Edison were much better known, and Keely was already moving in circles likely associated with the NJMZa milieu.

The identification of Tillman and Dolbear as airship pilots simply does not fit the objective of a hoax, even if these men were known more at that time than they are today. There are too many technical details in the details of the airship reports for it all to have been a passing April Fool's joke.

Among those airship personnel most successfully shrouded in the mists of time are an enigmatic family of inventors and airship pilots whose legacy has stretched into the 21st Century.

I am speaking (not in the usual hushed whisper that accompanies mention) of the Wilsons.

As we have already seen, there have been Wilsons associated with the airship mystery since the days of Dellschau and the Sonora Aero Club. The Prussian born chronicler identifies one 'Tosh Willson' as a member of the club. Pete Navarro and Dennis Crenshaw suggest Dellschau's spelling was an error so I will include Tosh in the Wilson clan as it seems too much of a coincidence for him not to be related to the other Wilsons identified in the later airship reports. I include him also because of a technological congruence between the Sonora club days and the 1890s craft.

Wilson, the Great & Powerful!

In 2013, I wrote this of the Wilsons:

"Virtually unknown to history, but well known among serious scholars of the mystery airship tableau (to a point of iconic status), are the Wilsons.

Described almost in terms of the Wizard of Oz, the Wilsons have left their fingerprints throughout the murkier speculative corners of aviation and the US space program right up to the present day. If ever there was a particular man who came near living up to the description of the L Frank Baum icon, it would be the man behind the airship legend curtain, referred to simply as 'Wilson'.

Anyone who has ever looked into Great Airship Mystery learns of the Wilsons, as does anyone who digs deep enough into the UFO question will come across the name 'Wilson', sometimes whispered in reverent tones. If there is one name seemingly at the center of the breakaway civilization myth that best identifies the master sorcerer behind it all, it isn't even Von Braun or Korolyov, it is this particular Wilson. He is said to be the greatest genius you've never heard of, his life spanning most of the 20th Century. Wilson is the man behind flying saucers, some say. He is the overseer of relations between *humanity and the extraterrestrial world, others say. Wilson may be the one who captured the Nazi Bell technology and applied it to US black programs. He could even be the creator of various secret sauces guarded jealously by various hamburger restaurant chains around the globe. You get the idea.*

But who is or was this particular Wilson and what evidence is there that such a man ever existed?"

According to various airship mystery scholars, among the airship pilots and crews encountered by witnesses are three earlier Wilsons. For instance, there is Tosh Wilson of the original Sonora Aero Club. Subsequently identified with the 1897 airship mystery are Hiram Wilson and son Willard Wilson. They are identified as investors and builders of an airship reported on in the San Antonio Express on April 26 1897. Willard Wilson is identified as an assistant master mechanic of the New York Central Railroad. Just days prior, in the Houston Daily Post (April 21) and repeated in the Bastrop Advisor (April 24), it is a Wilson identified as the airship crewman claiming the airship was one of five built in a quiet village in Iowa

(EOTW2: Friends From Sonora)

Tosh, Hiram and Willard are the 19th Century airship Wilsons. Interestingly, there is another Hiram in the mix, the second one described to me by my father.

The Wilson I Know

Yes, I have a personal connection to this milieu. Between full disclosure and the fact that I'd be an idiot if I didn't include it, I'm going to mention my dad's account of his experience with the Wilsons. I do this only because I have already discussed this publicly several years ago. My reticence to do this is due to reaching a point with 'whistleblower' storytelling where I frankly can't stand it anymore. Also, I know there's some crankypants out there who will bring it up if I don't.

In the April 2005 issue of FATE Magazine, my article was published under my pseudonym 'E. A. Guest'. At the time, I had sensitive employment and it was not proper for me to publish under my own name. Some readers will feel their panties bunch up at this, to which I say 'deal with it'. Most of you are familiar with the basics of my resume and it's in the back of this book. I was involved professionally in national security. I wrote it, it's about my dad, and I have all the necessary documentation to prove it, etc. etc. Let's move on.

Again from *EOTW2: Friends From Sonora*:

> *“These encounters occurred while the source was enlisted in the US Air Force in the 1950s. According to Charles Bosley, a staff sergeant at the time, Wilson and his father Hiram, affectionately known as The Professor, were in charge of a classified program involving what were essentially anti-gravity aerial platforms. Former SSgt Bosley claimed to have personally witnessed these ‘flying squares’, as they were supposedly called, demonstrated in a canyon somewhere between Apple Valley and Barstow, California. Bosley was assigned to George AFB at the time and maintained a high level security clearance related to his work in the early stages of the US space program. Bosley claimed the Wilsons had developed their ‘flying squares’ in an undisclosed location in Kansas.”*

This was just part of the story but it introduces the reader to what is supposed to be another Hiram Wilson, and his son whose first name my father never mentioned. That son – or grandson, because my dad might have made an assumption as to the actual relation -- is the most mysterious of the Wilsons and the one about whom many familiar with him often speak of in hushed tones. I include my dad’s story because I think it connects the airship era to the modern times of this breakaway discussion, that is I think the Wilsons are one of the two threads running through the 19th Century to the 21st, the other being the Germans, of course.

That there was a Hiram Wilson identified by name in the 1890s airship milieu and that my father claimed to have met a Hiram Wilson, whom he described as ‘The Professor’ or sometimes ‘the old man’, can’t be ignored here. You have two Hiram Wilsons associated with tales of anti-gravity and flying objects. Either my dad was thoroughly familiar with the 1897 airship mystery and was just pulling my leg – over the course of 25 years – or this supports his credibility. And so, what of these Hiram Wilsons?

I have given serious consideration to the idea that there was one Hiram Wilson where the airship milieu is concerned. In the 1897 reports, Hiram is identified as Willard’s son. Busby’s research revealed two Willard candidates from Civil War records, one of them aged 19 in 1861, the other’s age not identified. This is enough to surmise that a man with an adult son reported together aboard an airship in 1897 would reasonably have been around 18-20 in 1861, so we could go with that age for Willard.

If 18-20 years old in 1861, Willard Wilson would have been only 54-56 years old in 1897. That would reasonably place his son Hiram no older than 32-36, and possibly as young as 22-26 years old because we don’t know what year

Hiram was born. So in 1958, this Hiram would have been 83 to 93 years old, clearly fitting the description of ‘the old man’ or The Professor, as my dad called him.

However, Busby points out that the Hiram of the 1897 mystery was described by witness Sheriff Akers as being around 24 years old in 1876. That puts Hiram as being only within a decade younger than Willard, so Busby suggests they were actually uncle and nephew. Or cousins, I add. This means that Hiram would have been at least in his mid-forties at the time of the 1897 reports. That makes it less likely that he was the Hiram my father encountered but could have been father to the 1958 Hiram.

If Hiram Junior (we’ll call him) were born anytime 1876 or after, at least by 1900, this would have made him at least 58 years old when my father met him, but anything up to the 82 years that my estimate, based on an 1876 birth date, would be perfectly congruent to my father’s descriptions of ‘the old man’ and The Professor.

That brings us to that one known only by his last name – *the* Wilson, mystery man of modern times. If Hiram Junior was his father, as my dad said he was, that means Wilson the younger would reasonably have been not likely older than 58 but as young as his mid-thirties, which qualifies him as the rumored mastermind active well into the 1990s and perhaps the early years of this century. For example, in 1999 Wilson could have been just 71 years old having spent his middle aged prime during the rise of the US space program and the digital age.

I subject you to all of this because when you stop to calculate generations and ages, it helps comprehend how real these people were and thus how real might have been the airships. Working out these age numbers provides points of reference for us to acknowledge some degree of validity for these mysterious Wilson characters and the airship events, also to establish that it is possible for my father to have encountered the Wilsons while in the air force, specifically during the 1957-58 period of his enlistment.

Let’s stay on the Wilsons a little longer. My position is that this particular clan is so essential in the airship mystery and the military-industrial science milieu of the 20th Century that they most assuredly are involved in the breakaway civilization movement. I have mentioned the status of Wilsons among researchers of certain arcane topics and of the blurry corners of ufology so let's consider what I mean by that.

Though my introduction to the mysterious Wilson was via my father when he was heavily sedated while in the hospital for a blood clot (and experiencing flashbacks to 1957-58), I subsequently read about a Wilson presence in the world of occult science and magic. Peter Moon tells of Wilson brothers whose family is untraceable in history, beyond an alleged association with Aleister Crowley's father. These Wilsons were, according to Moon in *The Black Sun: Montauk's Nazi-Tibetan Connection*, the first manufacturers of electronic instruments in Great Britain. There being little to nothing yet found to corroborate this claim, let's look at other Wilson lore and history.

After hearing my father gibbering about a Wilson he worked with during an air force operation in 1957-58, I learned more about that Wilson a few years later after I had become an officer in the US Air Force. My source told me that said Wilson was 'the most brilliant man no one has heard of'. Allusions to secret projects followed and this later resonated significantly in a late night conversation with Joseph P. Farrell and Dorothy Murdoch the day I met them in 2004. When I told my Wilson story, Joseph puffed his pipe and then looked at me with his characteristic owl-like self-assurance and said, *"In the morning, run – don't walk – to the book store and get the copy of* Genesis *by Harbinson. There is one copy."*

He was referring to the Adventures Unlimited Press bookstore, as we were all in Kempton, Illinois, for a conference hosted by our well known associate David Hatcher Childress. The book, of course, was the third in W.A.Harbinson's *Projekt Saucer* series. The Wilson depicted therein is an aloof genius who manipulated Nazi scientists to develop a flying saucer during WWII and continues his masterminding through the years, always behind the scenes. This fictional Wilson seems based upon the legendary Wilson about whom I had learned. But is there anything beyond rumor and tales?

Starting with Moon's version of Wilson brothers who manufactured electronic instruments in England, I found British musician Steve Wilson whose father was an electronic engineer, but not likely a secret technology mastermind. A little close to that might be Dr. Carol Espy-Wilson, an electrical engineer and professor at the University of Maryland. However, she is not a Wilson by birth, but her husband is: John Silvanus Wilson, President of Morehouse College, was an administrator at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology. A lot of science goes on there, but he's not likely a shadowy technology mastermind either because his multiple degrees are in business, philosophy, education and theology. Accomplished as they all are, they aren't likely our airship geniuses.

There is something to be found in the British electronics industry with Wilson Process Systems located in East Sussex. Established in 1981, they manufacture printed circuit boards (PCBs). It is interesting to note that the establishment of this company was only a year or so after Moon claims the Wilson brothers' company was absorbed into Thorn EMI, a major British engineering firm of the time. Did the mysterious brothers have a hand in Wilson Process Systems?

Moon admits there's little to nothing to find of the Wilsons discussed in his Montauk books, so are there any other clues? Perhaps going farther back in history we might find one, like John Wilson the 18th Century British mathematician. This Wilson attended Cambridge and became a member of the Royal Society, which pings my radar, of course, and should also alert the reader. John Wilson is the namesake of the mathematical theorem that a natural number $n > 1$ is a prime number only if $(n - 1)! = -1 \pmod{n}$…etc. Interesting enough but what really caught my eye is that Wilson's theorem was first stated by Hasan Ibn al-Haytham in the 10th or 11th Century. Perhaps the 18th Century British John Wilson is a clue?

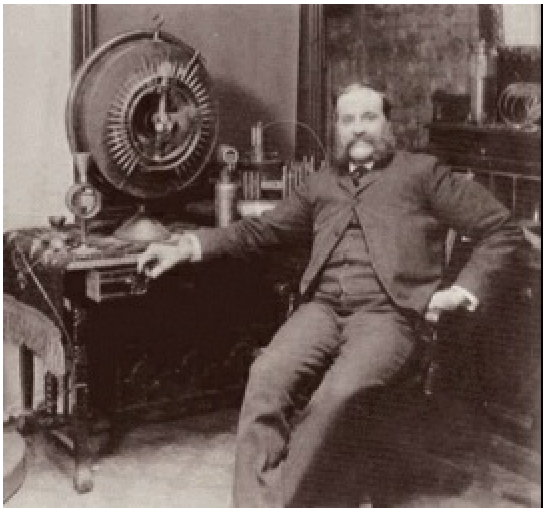
Ibn al-Haytham was an astronomer, mathematician, meteorologist, and explored optics. He is recognized as the first theoretical physicist who essentially created the scientific method. Al-Haytham was born in Basra, possible location of the Garden of Eden and the legendary home of Sinbad the Sailor. Interesting that a medieval scientist who grew up in a city associated with a lost paradise and the fantastical tales of a figure absorbed in the lore of forgotten technologies as magic would influence an 18th Century

British mathematician of the Royal Society which I have previously written about as being involved in the search for a lost civilization and their technology. And it’s even more interesting that said math guru was named Wilson. Could there be a connection?

There could be, but it can’t be proven at the present time. Thorough genealogical research for any connection in the records Busby found to the British mathematician is beyond the scope of this book so we’ll leave that there for an enterprising enthusiast to pursue further. The point is, Wilsons are at the heart of a milieu of arcane science and modern magick and so we must wonder and examine who they are or might be within the context of it all.

Wheels & Hammers

In the airship mystery reports, the Wilsons are often demonstrating anti-gravity through resonance and spin, specifically by tapping particular pieces linked to revolving spheres. What were they doing and from where did they learn about it?



John W. Keely

The name John W. Keely may not be familiar to most people when they think of inventors or even the airship mystery as it’s usually presented, but his presence is there and he is significant. For the best introduction to this man, there is no better source than Theo Paijmans' *Free Energy Pioneer: John Worrell Keely* (AUP, 2004).

Let's get something out of the way up front. Keely is a controversial figure in this discussion due to the reported scandal during his lifetime, specifically over accusations of fraud.

Reportedly, Keely's experiments with anti-gravity could not be repeated by anyone else but him. An examination of his laboratory revealed a large metal sphere with multiple fittings that was buried beneath the floor. This was assumed to be a tank for compressed air, the accusatory secret behind his supposed anti-gravity demonstrations. It did not look good for the man and this is why he has been written off by many who give his story a cursory look.

What skeptics tend not to mention is that several associates of Keely came forward and explained the sphere. Jefferson Thomas was vice president of the Keely Motor Company. He publicly stated at the time that the 6,000 pound cast iron sphere was used by Keely in levitation experiments. Company Secretary C. L. Schuellerman said the following of the sphere:

> *"(The sphere) was made many years ago by the Chester Steel Casting Company, and was made to serve as a reservoir for an invention that Mr. Keely was then constructing called a multiplicator or generator. The ball whose diameter is 42 inches is hollow, having a space inside 30 inches in diameter, where the power that was formed by the generator was stored. The weight of this steel sphere is 6,625 pounds, and the entire weight of the multiplicator, including the reservoir, was just 6,800 pounds."* (Paijmans, Pg 143)

Schuellerman went on to explain that Keely used the sphere until perfecting a better apparatus for the same purpose for which it served. He added that Keely then used the sphere as a weight in demonstrating the powers of what Keely called 'vibratory lift'. Schuellerman also added the following testimony:

> *"I saw him myself raise that ball, weighing so many hundreds of pounds, upon an iron tripod six feet high without the slightest trouble, and many others viewed this remarkable feat at the same time."* (Ibid)

A third witness, Keely's attorney Charles S. Hill said the sphere was part of

Keely's first engine: *"It was made in 1874, and was of enormous size. The machine was built by Mr. Keely at an expense of $60,000. The original scheme to obtain power by the disintegration of water was abandoned. A new system was adopted, and with the innovation came the utter uselessness of the old machine."*

Hill stated that the sphere contained Keely proprietary design and he did not wish it to fall into the hands of others so he buried it to simply get it out of the way, as it was so large and took much space in his laboratory.

Witnesses also attested to the strange sounds that emanated from within the sphere whenever it was struck. These noises were attributed to some mysterious internal mechanism and the sounds even scared some of the workmen assisting in the deconstruction of the lab. One witness said he and others watched Keely lift and move the 6,000 pound steel ball with a mere wire. All this testimony and the sheer physical reality of the sphere contributed to reasonable elimination of the 'compressed air tank' accusation.

I will most definitely return to a key phrase in Hill's statement. But first I think the reader needs to be brought up to speed on what Keely was supposedly doing and why he is important to the airship mystery.

John W. Keely became curious about tone and resonance following experiences with seashells in his youth. This led to experimentation with vibrational effects on various physical objects and eventually, by 1865, Keely had invented what he called a 'Globe Motor'. This consisted of a hollow sphere that spun rapidly in a vertical rotation. While the Globe Motor was itself not specifically patented, it was included among several of Keely's inventions on a list recorded with the U.S. Patent Office.

One of Keely's patented items is his flywheel, the patent granted on 15 August 1871.

For those who don't know exactly what a flywheel does, an arrangement of gears causes the wheel to spin faster than the shaft from which it is suspended. Consider Edward Leedskalnin and his Coral Castle, how he allegedly moved heavy blocks by himself, while using a flywheel and a tripod, and then reconsider the claim above that Keely alone could easily move a 6,000 pound cast iron sphere and set it atop a tripod. Did Leedskalnin study Keely's technology?

Keely's Globe Motor did not convert water into steam, instead it 'disintegrated' water via a particular configuration of metal parts inside the sphere, a configuration that Keely would not reveal as it was his design and therefore proprietary. Keely himself described his technology to Thomas Edison in a letter dated February 1878: *"My discovery consists in obtaining from air + water through vibratory action an elastic substance of great energy + capable of the same influences which produced absorption in water, giving a vacuum."* Keely also mentioned Edison's own interest in 'vibratory forces' in the same letter.

Being the cranky acerbic asshole that he was, Thomas Edison did not follow through on Keely's invitation and instead had something dismissive to say about the issue. The next month, the Franklin Institute, whose representatives had already witnessed a demonstration of Keely's technology, began to spread the allegation of fraud. Was it a coincidence? Not likely, in my opinion. Edison and the boys of the Franklin Institute knew what they were doing to Keely. This was a smear campaign.

None of this tomfoolery dissuaded Keely from pursuing his objectives. Of particular interest to my thesis in this book is his 'vibratory engine' which was contained in a cylinder through which ran a double shaft, one of which revolved in a sleeve, the graduation of equal positive and negative forces causing a harmonization. This was the beginning of years of research and development with devices that could be operated and controlled via tuning forks, bowstrings or the tapping of metal plates. Ultimately, Keely defied the gravity of objects and even created an apparatus by which a sphere spun only when the operator attuned to its harmonics stood in a particular spot.

In July of 1888, it was claimed by a Theosophist writer 'R. Harte' that Keely demonstrated a device by which he disintegrated quartz blocks, freeing the bits of gold within to the astonishment of twelve mining magnates. According to the story, Keely subsequently went these same men to an undisclosed location in the Catskill Mountains and used his device to drill a tunnel eighteen feet long and four and a half feet in diameter. The men all agreed to keep their silence. Of course, Harte wrote about it, so how secret could it have been?

Direct pertinence to the airship mystery finally came after several years of experimentation. Keely is indeed quoted on the matter in 1884: *"...And after my patents are taken out, I will devote the remainder of my life to aerial navigation, for I have the only true system to make it an entire success."*

The Pittsburgh Dispatch dated 7 April 1890 reports the following on its front page:

THE TEST AT LAST

Much-abused inventor Keely's new and mysterious motive force ***declared to be a success*** *after a thorough exhibition in the presence of two scientific experts.* ***Music plays a leading part in the operations of the device****, which is said to be moved by the power of vibration.* ***Gravity is apparently overcome*** *in one of the peculiar experiments shown by the man who claims to have made such a great discovery.* ***Navigation of the air to be attempted****. Keely's new motive force has been tested in the presence of well-known scientific experts. They pronounce the results wonderful, and inexplicable except by the discoverer. Many peculiar experiments were made, several apparently overcoming the force of gravity. No deception could be detected.* (Scanned image of actual newspaper, at *Chronicling America and Penn State University Library*)

However, despite this reported success with defying gravity and disintegrating quartz to 'atomic dust' in order to more easily get at the gold within, suddenly Keely claimed he could not repeat the process, and his experiments with anti-gravity using what he called 'vibratory lift' were now 'undocumented'.

Paijmans writes: *"In addition, a suspicious cloak of vagueness and secrecy surrounds this area of his research. This vagueness and the dubious quality of the sources make a reconstruction of his antigravity experiments all the more difficult."* (Paijmans, Pg 207).

Isn’t that interesting: a ‘suspicious cloak of secrecy and vagueness’ shrouds Keely’s success in the very things pertinent to the airship mystery technology?

Golly. I wonder why.

Look at what Keely was reportedly pursuing and supposedly achieving: antigravity through vibration and sound, disintegration of matter and water, and gold mining. Everything we’ve been talking about in this book that was of primary interest to both the NJMZa and the American airship group. I say it’s no wonder we can’t prove claims about Keely’s success to this day. I propose that Keely’s successful technologies were likely *classified* as proprietary by whichever between the airship groups were his happy customers.

I’ve already presented that the 1890s airship mystery group used water in their anti-gravity process. Witnesses reported Wilson demonstrating the vibratory technology on one airship, including the same tapping of objects as demonstrated by Keely in his lab prior to the 1890s. And might not the ‘disintegration’ of water involve a rudimentary process that would later find its way into the production of hydrogen bombs?

Is it just coincidence that we have these tales of Keely during the same exact era of airship mysteries using the technology he was known to develop and demonstrate? Or is it merely an inconvenient truth that ET ufology devotees prefer we ignore?

What Did Keely Know?

I propose that what Keely had reportedly accomplished can be found in the airship reports: ‘vibratory lift’, flywheels, rotation (of spheres especially), all resulting in anti-gravity.

As related in *Free Energy Pioneer* by Theo Paijmanns, in the chapter titled “The Great 19th Century Airship Wave”, a witness account in April 1897 reports the following description of the airship technology reported by a Mr. Hopkins of Springfield who was invited aboard an airship by its pilot:

"From the ceiling was suspended a curious ball, ***from which extended a strip of metal which he struck to make it vibrate****. Instantly the ball was illuminated with a soft white light, which lit up the whole interior…Another large ball of metal, supported in a strong frame-work and (was) connected to the shaft of the propeller. At the stern was a similar mechanism attached to each propeller and smaller balls attached to a point of metal that extended from each side of the vessel and from the prow. And connected to each ball was* ***a thin strip of metal*** *similar to the one attached to the lamp.* ***He struck each one*** *and when they* ***vibrated*** *the balls commenced to revolve with great intense rapidity and did not cease till* ***he stopped them with a kind of a brake****…I pointed to the balls attached to the propellers.* ***He gave each of the strips of metal a rap****, those attached to the propeller under the vessel first. The balls began to revolve rapidly,* ***and I felt the vessel begin to rise."***

The above witness account from 1897 describes what you just previously read about Keely's demonstrations of his own technology as reported *seven years earlier*. I think this demonstrates the human source of the airships. The available reports in 1890, and in some prior reports, show that Keely was apparently working with the same mechanisms a decade *before* to the appearance of the airships.

We also see this technology advanced in the account of my father when in 1957 he witnessed the Wilsons showing off their anti-gravity platforms. From EOTW2: FFS: "*There was a* ***"finger of metal"*** *sticking out from a corner of the anti-gravity platform. Wilson would* ***lightly tap this metal post with a small hammer-like implement and that would activate the buoyancy of the platform, turning on the anti-gravity****, as it were. Then, with a handheld controller, Wilson could elevate the platform into the sky, out into orbit and then return it at will. Quite a tale, if true, but what in the airship lore resonates with this?"* (Pg. 90)

Read again the above account from 1890 and compare it to my dad's story from the late 1950s. In my opinion, this is the same technology, at differing stages of development of course.

Keely's 1880s demonstration included the tapping of pieces of metal, the newspaper account witness of 1897 related the tapping of thin strips of metal, and my father's 1950s account also tells of the tapping of such strips of metal – and the result is antigravity. Keely's demonstrations involved revolving or spinning spheres, as did the 1897 account – and the result is anti-gravity. These are threads connecting Keely's work to the airship mystery and into the 20th Century post WW2 era with my father's account of Wilson's anti-gravity platforms.

But we're not done with Keely's technology yet because there remains the

thread of music mentioned above as an element of his demonstration related in the 1890 newspaper report:
*“**Music plays a leading part in the operations of the device**, which is said to be moved by the power of vibration.”* (*Pittsburgh Dispatch,* 7 Apr 1890).

Nearly a decade later, the *Abilene Reporter* of 20 April 1897 reports an airship sighting shortly before midnight in which a craft estimated to be 700 feet long and featuring ‘brilliantly lit’ windows was heard to emit ***‘faint strains of music’***.

On the day before, both the *Dallas Morning News* and the *Galveston News* (19 April 1897) reported a witness account of an airship sailing through the midnight sky and with it the ‘weird music of spirits’ described as a combination of an organ and woodwind and stringed instruments. This is quite significant as Keely’s demonstrations included a bowstring drawn across wires and the description of organs and woodwind instruments could actually apply to a technology involving pressure through tubes that sounds like the harmonizing mentioned above.

Return to my previous paragraph:

‘Of particular interest to my thesis in this book is his **‘vibratory engine’** *which was contained in a* **cylinder** *through which ran a double shaft, one of which revolved in a sleeve,* ***the graduation of equal positive and negative forces causing a harmonization.*** *This was the beginning of years of research and development with devices that could be* ***operated and controlled via tuning forks***, ***bowstrings or the tapping of metal plates***. *Ultimately, Keely* ***defied the gravity of objects*** *and even created an apparatus by which* ***a sphere spun only when the operator attuned to its harmonics*** *stood in a particular spot.’*

This may not have been simply ‘weird music of the spirits’ but rather the sound of the harmonic vibratory motor of an airship.

There is too much resonance with Keely’s work for him to be ignored where the airship mystery and the pursuit of anti-gravity technology are concerned.

The Usual Suspect

I am going to assume that the reader has heard of Nikola Tesla.

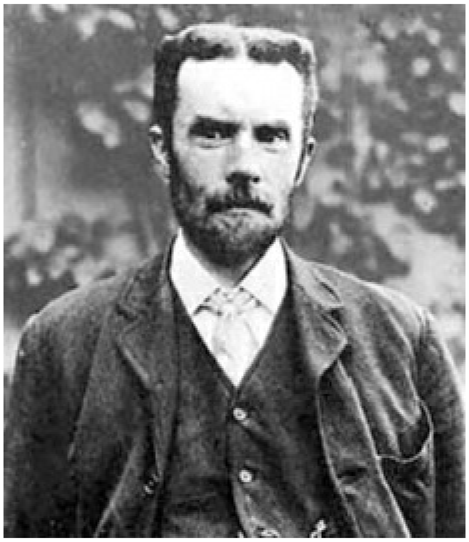
Born during the active period of the Sonora Aero Club, Tesla and his experiments are legendary and they are documented history. Tesla's work is also in perfect resonance with the mystery technologies of the airship stories.

Electromagnetism, antigravity, patented flying machines, a planetary energy system using towers in strategic nodes on the so-called world grid; it's all there in Tesla's annals, everything we've been talking about in this book. As you might expect, Tesla can be found in the suspected American airship milieu, including having once been briefly financed by John Jacob Astor IV, one of our suspected American airship investors. Nikola Tesla will be discussed in specific association with an airship mystery legend in the next part of this book.

Tesla has long been invoked in conversations about the airship mystery and Keely is becoming better known. However, there remains one more individual whose work may be as significant as theirs, especially as the 20th Century approached.

And Then There's This Guy…

Oliver Heaviside may be one of the most important players in this whole breakaway airship group mystery. You've likely heard of electrogravitics and T. Townsend Brown, who in my opinion is more important to the post WW2 period which this book does not cover. More important to the historical context of my examination and thesis of this book is the work of Heaviside, for the application of his likely contribution is more specific to the evidence.



Oliver Heaviside

Born in 1850 in England, Heaviside was an electrical engineer, mathematician and physicist who taught himself. But don't let it disturb your pedigree dependence that Heaviside merely altered telecommunications, mathematics, and science for our times. Inventing mathematical techniques for the solution of differential equations, adapting complex numbers to the study of electrical circuits, reformulating Maxwell's field equations in terms of electric and magnetic forces and energy flux, and independently co-formulating vector analysis – It's no wonder he was at odds with the scientific establishment for most of his life. Heaviside showed them up and that pisses off the professional establishment of any field, but particularly science and its sycophants (like self-styled skeptic fanboys).

But what is Heaviside's contribution to the airship mystery?

GravitoElectroMagnetism is how I like to spell it, but its abbreviation is GEM. Published in 1893, Heaviside's theory is comprised of 'formal analogies between the equations for electromagnetism and relativistic gravitation', specifically: 'between Maxwell's field equations and an approximation, valid under certain conditions, to the Einstein field equations for general relativity'. GEM specifically refers to kinetic effects of gravity, analogous to the magnetic effects of moving electric charge. Not bad for a self-taught guy, eh?

How does GEM fit within the context here? To get to the point, Heaviside's work led to leaps in airship technology development by the breakaway groups. How?

In GEM, it was discovered that counter-rotating wheels produced greater magnetic attraction than when rotating in the same direction, the toroidal mass rotational aspects of which may be applied to accelerate objects *without those objects experiencing G-forces*.

You know when you watch old NASA footage or movies about astronauts launching into space aboard rockets and they're mashed into their seats and hardly move? How about when you watch movies about jet fighter pilots and you see how they fight against the physical effects caused by sharp turns at high speeds? That's G-force causing all the physiological drama. But here's a guy in 1893 publishing his work on this stuff years before the Wright Brothers sputter-glided their little contraption.

Oliver Heaviside, in my opinion, provided the airship groups with vital knowledge for advancing their machines from the rudimentary jalopy craft of the Sonora Aero Club era to the larger and faster craft witnessed by thousands and reported in newspapers just three years after Heaviside's work was published. GEM is Heaviside's handprint in the anti-gravity aspects of the airship mystery. It's there in how the airships of the 1890s fly, it's there in the subsequent 20th Century applications of it rumored to have been accomplished by the Nazis. Essentially, through the simple study of mathematics and physics with a practical grasp on electrical engineering, Oliver Heaviside independently validated the principles that made Die Glocke – the Nazi Bell – actually possible.

How do we connect this to development of The Bell? Let's look at where Walter Rathenau was in 1893 and what he was doing, for starters.

When Heaviside published his theory, Walter Rathenau was 26 years old. His father had founded German Edison in 1883, which became AEG (Allgemeine Elektricitäts-Gesellschaft) or 'General Electricity Incorporated' five years later. Walter had studied physics, chemistry and philosophy in Strasbourg and Berlin, where he was born. Walter Rathenau joined the board of AEG in 1899 after starting his career as an engineer. It is very likely that, in 1893, he had learned of Heaviside and the principles of GEM. Why is this important?

AEG is directly linked to the development and production of The Bell, the Nazis most highly classified secret project during WW2. First revealed by defense technology author Nick Cook and extrapolated upon by researcher Igor Witkowski, the Nazi Bell was a cylindrical bell-shaped device composed of ceramic or metallic material and measuring somewhere between 12-15 feet tall and 9-12 feet wide. It contained counter-rotating parts within and was portable. The Bell reportedly made a 'beehive' sound when powered by the high voltage electricity required to operate it. Either mercury or something called Serum 525 was applied to the surfaces of the counter-rotating elements. A central shaft ran through the Bell, into which was placed a 'thermos bottle' reservoir containing Serum 525. Witnesses claim that among the various results of experimentation with this device was anti-gravity.

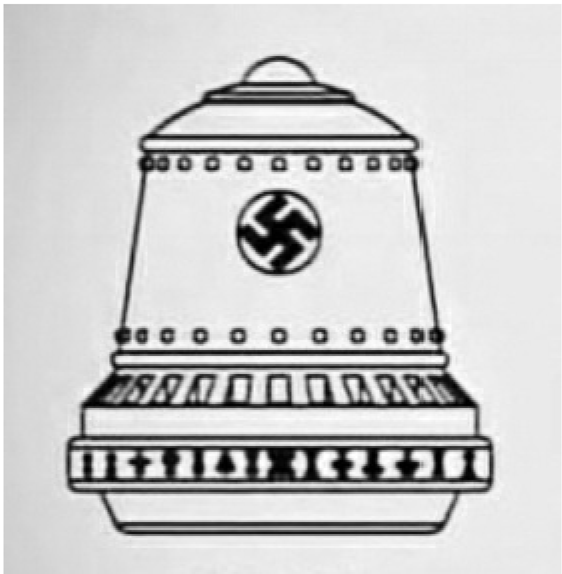


Illustration from rense.com

Already we see both Heaviside's and Keely's influence in this basic description of The Bell. We have anti-gravity and rotating parts a la Keely, specifically in his vibratory motor element described a few pages back as '*contained in a* ***cylinder*** *through which ran a double shaft, one of which* ***revolved in a sleeve'***. There is also electricity and the toroidal principles of counter-rotation per Heaviside and GEM in the mix. It could be argued that Keely and Heaviside could have together, independent of the Germans, built The Bell, given the proper resources.

So what might AEG's contribution have been?

AEG had been contracted in Germany's first government contractor arrangement by Walter Rathenau's father in 1884. Between that year and Walter's murder in 1922, AEG had become the power-engineering juggernaut of Germany. No one could compete. AEG built the power infrastructure, advanced the railroads, created the national telephone system, manufactured automobiles and aircraft, the list goes on. You might say AEG made modern Germany happen. They certainly helped make the Nazis happen.

In 1933, AEG contributed 60,000 Reichsmarks to the Nazi party in support of their total political power and the rearmament of Germany in violation of the Treaty of Versailles. AEG used slave labor and also provided the electrical powers system at Auschwitz. They provided pistol grips for the Walther weapons company. You could say they were 'all in' with Hitler and the boys. So who do you think likely provided the power system for operating the Nazi Bell?

Might AEG also have provided more than simply a power system for this classified device? Since I place Walter Rathenau (and probably should include his father, Emil) on my list of suspected NJMZa investor-administrators, it's reasonable to consider that AEG engineers could very well have been working with GEM and Heaviside's theory throughout the better part of the 1890s, at least as early as the first decade or so of the 20th Century. If I am right about NJMZa and a Rathenau connection to it, you could almost assume that airship engineers were already applying GEM to their craft.

This presents a problem for the theory that The Bell and its rumored technological progeny are strictly WW2 and postwar military industrial complex products. It also pees in the corn flakes of the reverse-engineered-from-ET-technology crowd. Keely and Heaviside based their theories and accomplishments on the study of physics and an application of mathematics. Neither man had a UFO encounter in which the usual presumably superior alien space angels provided them with the secrets of anti-gravity and space travel.

It appears that the very existence of Keely's and Heaviside's work lend firm evidence to the argument that technologies and phenomena often associated with secret military industrial complexes or extraterrestrials are more likely the product of development that can be traced back to the 1850s and possibly earlier. Add Tesla and the argument only becomes stronger.

We will look again at the thread of the 19th Century airship mystery technology and players leading to the Nazis in the next part of this book. There is more to consider before then.

CHAPTER TEN

BREAKING AWAY

It is my position that the NJMZa allied to and played their hand in the direction of Germany in the first half of the 20th Century.

NJMZa and Germany: A Marriage Made in Hell

The 19th Century Prussian vision of unification had finally happened and Germany was a single nation. What would come next did not emerge in a vacuum. Prussian enthusiasm for militarized industry and global superiority for Germany was alive and well by the time the Nazi brown shirts appeared. I argue that the philosophy and personnel behind NJMZa were involved in the rise of Nazism.

If I'm right about NJMZa and the general state of mystery airship technology by the 1890s, then NJMZa engineers would have been a likely source for the subsequent Nazi Bell and other possible technology developed by them during the WW2 era and after. The Nazis would have presented the perfect testing ground for the 20th Century objectives of NJMZa political and sociological philosophy.

There was reason to think that NJMZa had aspirations beyond aerospace development.

Mystic Nationalists: Stirring A Boiling Pot

In the lore and chronicles of Dellschau and the 1890s airship mystery milieu is a touch of esoteric philosophy, specifically the involvement of hermetic societies and mystery school inspired fraternal orders. Allusions to Freemasonry and enthusiasts of Theosophy and, by extension, Spiritualism are to be found in the news reports of the 1890s and in the circles of patrons often identified by researchers.

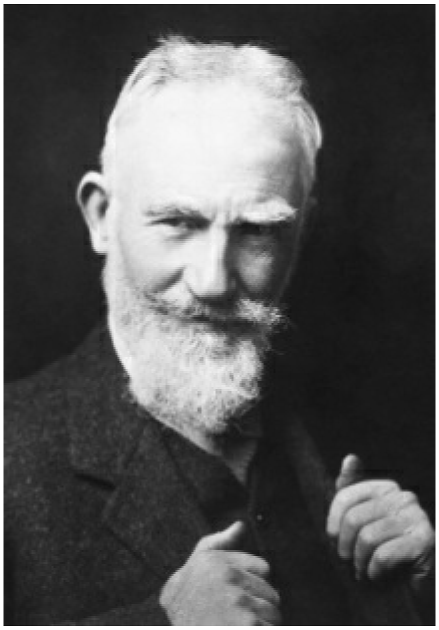
John Keely was a darling of the luminaries of Theosophy and Spiritualism, and particularly of Clara Bloomfield-Moore whose 1893 book *Keely And His Discoveries: Aerial Navigation* (Kegan Paul, Trench, Trubner & Co, Ltd) stands as a major piece of evidence that Keely was involved with the airship mystery technology. Bloomfield-Moore's son Clarence became an archeologist who explored and investigated ancient mounds and ancient sites in Europe, Asia Minor and South America. Clara also wrote two other books on Keely's airship technology and was a proponent of etheric force. Notably, a pamphlet on Keely by Bloomfield-Moore was published by the Theosophical Society of London.

Helena Blavatsky, who had also lived in Philadelphia where Bloomfield-Moore resided, was the legendary figure at the helm of Theosophy. She had a high opinion of Keely and his work: *"The discoveries made by him will prove wonderful – yet only in his hands and through himself."*

It was Blavatksy's writings on Keely that would introduce his work to esoteric communities around the world. Her personal associates included Henry Steel Olcott and occult author Bulwer-Lytton, an associate of William Blake, known to my readers for his friendship with John Varley, a likely philosophical influence on Richard Francis Burton (*SM2: Lost Expedition*, Bosley). Another of her friends was Annie Besant who would go on to become the president of the Theosophical Society following Blavatsky's death. She was pals with Charles W. Leadbeater who got into trouble recommending masturbation to the boys he mentored. Leadbeater (no pun intended…Well, maybe…) was among the prominent Spiritualists mentioned in *Empire of the Wheel* and was a major influence on contemporary New Age culture.

Annie Besant was also close friends with George Bernard Shaw, the writer so beloved by the literati regardless of his role in genocidal theory. Shaw is quoted the following: *"You must all know half a dozen people at least who are no use in this world, who are more trouble than they are worth. Just put them there and say Sir, or Madam, now will you be kind enough to justify your existence? If you can't justify your existence, if you're not pulling your weight, and since you won't, if you're not producing as much as you consume or perhaps a little more, then, clearly, we cannot use the organizations of our society for the purpose of keeping you alive, because your life does not benefit us and it can't be of very much use to yourself."*

What an asshole. Shaw also said this in a lecture he gave to the Eugenics Education Society in 1910: *"We should find ourselves committed to killing a great many people whom we now leave living... A part of eugenic politics would finally land us in an extensive use of the lethal chamber. A great many people would have to be put out of existence simply because it wastes other people's time to look after them."*



George Bernard Shaw
A consummate socialist and a reprehensible prick.

Let's connect this crap of a human being to the point of this book. Shaw also said this: *“Hitler and the rest can all depend on me to judge them by their ability to deliver the goods and not by... comfortable notions of freedom."*

As pointed out in *Empire of the Wheel*:

“George Bernard Shaw was known to admire Adolf Hitler and went on record in a 1933 issue of BBC Magazine recommending a gas be developed for the ‘humane killing’ of human beings who, no doubt, would not benefit his ideal society. The Nazis seem to have taken him to heart and developed Zyklon B, the ‘humane’ gas for human extermination, and applied it.”

Shaw is just one point of connection between the social circles of the 19th Century Spiritualist New Age and the 20th Century Nazi nightmare -- and in that fabric one finds the NJMZa airship milieu.

In this wide circle of esoteric players were many prominent Germans, including Carl Kellner, whom I have already identified as a possible NJMZa suspect. Another was Rudolf Steiner whom Annie Besant selected to head the German Theosophical Society until he split from the organization with his own group. The list of Germans goes on, but you get the point. It is interesting that the Nazis would eventually ban such groups, once in power, when you consider how much they influenced their founders.

Nazis seemed to be in denial about the influence esoterica had on their foundation. Gregor Schwartz-Bostunitsch had been a member of Steiner’s Anthroposophy Society (the offshoot of the German Theosophical Society) for years before joining the SS and writing a book bashing Steiner. Also, in spite of condemning astrology, the Nazis had no problem using astrologers in psyops and Hitler even corresponded officially with an international astrologer’s conference in 1936. When Rudolf Von Sebottendorff’s *Before Hitler Came* was published and pointed out the influence of esotericism on the Nazis, it infuriated Hitler.

The problem with the denial can be summed up in Karl Maria Wiligut, Austrian occultist and SS Brigadefuhrer, whom Joseph Farrell points out was the key influence:

"But as will now be shown, the influence is at one and the same time both more indirect and more direct, for it is mediated not by any one of these societies to Adolf Hitler, but by one man – Karl Maria Wiligut, 'Himmler's Rasputin' – and not to Hitler and the Nazi Party as a whole, but to Himmler and the SS as an institution within the Nazi Party and the State. As such, it is less accurate to speak of an occult influence on the entire Nazi State, as it is to speak of an esoteric influence at the uppermost levels of the command structure of the SS. One is, so to speak, dealing with a Black Reich within the Reich, and at the uppermost reaches of the SS, with a very secret esoteric, and specifically alchemical, belief system." (Stone, Pg 250)

Wiligut had been involved in the German occult scene since 1889 when he joined the semi-masonic Schlaraffia in which he was a knight and active until 1909 when he left and became more associated with Irminism, a philosophy of a Germanic god in contrast to Wotanism. Wiligut was a believer in the ideas that our system originally had three suns and Earth was inhabited by giants and dwarves. He was also a correspondent of the Ordo Novi Templi, 'Order of the New Templars', the first German organization to use the swastika in an Aryan context. Wiligut believed his psychic powers allowed him to access genetic memories of his ancestors. This was the man who was such an influence on Heinrich Himmler, the man at the heart of Nazism, not just in the political party. Wiligut stands on the bridge between the 19th Century occultists and the 20th Century Nazis and any esoteric, specifically alchemical, ideas that influenced NJMZa may very well have also influenced the Nazis through men like him.

Karl Maria Wiligut

The connection between Wiligut and Theosophy might have been Lanz Von Liebenfels who was the leader of the aforementioned Ordo Novi Templi. Von

Liebenfels' Aryan spin on the Bible was a product of his study of the theosophical writings of Helena Blavatsky and he advocated the idea of a long lost advanced civilization of the remote past. It also provided plenty of stuff on 'root race' degenerate influence on the 'pure race', right up Nazi Alley, you might say. This influence found its way to the Nazis via Wiligut.

Though Wiligut had no direct official association to the Ahnenerbe, he was Himmler's personal advisor and reported to him directly. Might Blavatsky's and, by extension, the Theosophical Society's promotion of John W. Keely and his technology, especially his aerial navigation technology, have found its way to the Nazis through German occultists like Karl Wiligut?

Heinrich Himmler

It appears so, though not exclusively. The German NJMZa was likely very much aware of Keely's technology. I suggest they were adapting it in their airships, though we don't have as many reports of what I argue were the German craft. The sightings of the 1890s were, in my opinion, the American group.

The American Group and the Coming Century

As you've read, it is my position that the American airship group emerged from the Civil War era, specifically from the secret acquisition of Solomon Andrews' *Aeron* design. Starting out as the first secret US military contractor, the American airship group developed the *Aeron* technology to the extent that they were willing to show it off in the 1890s, thus the occurrences of the legendary airship sightings across the western United States. This would have been a major landmark for the government of the swiftly expanding nation if it were not for one thing: the changes in American society in the late 19th Century.

In an extraordinary instance of foresight, the masters of the American airship group did not like what they saw as the new century approached. Rather, they did not trust what they saw coming.

On the Digital History page of the University of Houston we find the following description of America in the late 19th Century:

> “*Mark Twain called the late 19th century the ‘Gilded Age’. By this, he meant that the period was glittering on the surface but corrupt underneath. In the popular view, the late 19th century was a period of greed and guile: of rapacious Robber Barons, unscrupulous speculators, and corporate buccaneers, of shady business practices, scandal-plagued politics, and vulgar display…*
>
> *“But it is more useful to think of this as modern America's formative period, when an agrarian society of small producers were transformed into an urban society dominated by industrial corporations…*
>
> *“The late 19th century saw the creation of a modern industrial economy. A national transportation and communication network was created, the corporation became the dominant form of business organization, and a managerial revolution transformed business operations…*
>
> *“An era of intense partisanship…*
>
> *“These were turbulent years that saw labor violence, rising racial tension, militancy among farmers, and discontent among the unemployed. Burdened by heavy debts and falling farm prices, many farmers joined the Populist Party, which called for an increase in the amount of money in circulation, government assistance to help farmers repay loans, tariff reductions, and a graduated income tax.”*

It was an era which saw the dominance of the corporate structure over banking, manufacturing and railroads, and the expansion of urban growth. Like a scene out of the 1927 film *Metropolis*, both industry and labor were expressing the dark sides of their respective forces. Regardless of the so called ‘golden age’ of the United States, there was reason to be concerned about the direction of the young country.

When the airships began to appear over the cities of the American West, barely forty years had passed since the end of the Civil War. Certainly there were some who worried that this would happen again and wanted no part in the possible aftermath. I suggest that among the disenchanted were the leaders of the American airship group.

It think that after the successful demonstrations of airship technology of the 1890s, the American group made its move: Its core group of leading engineers, technicians and crews severed the relationship with the US government and set out on its own, establishing an airship corps which would eventually become autonomous from any nation on Earth. It was, in effect, one step beyond NJMZa – that is, in my opinion, the American group, while not opposed to the United States, was no longer primarily serving the nation’s interests.

In this regard, the American group may have actually preceded the German NJMZa in establishing itself as a breakaway group.

The Germans probably did not like that.

The Rivalry: Secret War Begins

Poised to become something new and different, the American airship group would have seen new worlds to conquer: new technologies would need to be developed and that meant independent resources, which in turn meant expansion of exploration operations. It also meant that any exclusivity the German NJMZa had enjoyed in South American gold mining would now be over as the Americans would no doubt be sending their airships and exploration teams into the region, bringing with them a sense of privilege borne from proximity.

The NJMZa would likely have been considered as raiders by the American group, thus sparking the looming rivalry sure to have existed beneath the surface since the Yankee upstarts first emerged in the 1860s. A rivalry soon became a conflict, in my opinion. The nature of the conflict: Initially a cold war of geo-commercial maneuvers, with much espionage, to gain access to more natural resources and attain technological superiority in control of world grid energy. A hot war would come later.

Thus, as we drew near the close of the 19th Century, did we have two secret airship groups opposed to one another, each with the resources and the motivations to secede themselves from their respective nations – though NJMZa would delay their departure. The Prussian masters of NJMZa had seen its vision of a unified German empire become a reality; its future was only more powerful. Their American counterparts with tremendous knowledge and the power it provided saw their opportunity to establish a society of their own making, separate from the woes they were able to glimpse in the glow of a gilded forecast for the United States.

The secret technology was, by this time, more comprehensive than mere airships; it promised global power to remake the world in the image of those who wielded it – and it also unleashed the freedom to seek out another world for the taking.

The 20th Century would reveal the choices that were made…

PART THREE

BLINDED BY THE BLACK SUN

CHAPTER ELEVEN

THE COLONY

Many people are convinced that Adolf Hitler was among other key Nazi leaders and officers who survived WW2. The stories have them fleeing to South America and history proved it so when the likes of Adolf Eichman and others were indeed found or captured in various countries on that continent several years after the end of the war. In recent years, reasonable evidence has emerged to suggest that Hitler himself may have indeed survived and lived the remainder of his years in a German refuge near the Andes.

Many assume that none of this was made possible before the Nazi era, but they are mistaken.

NJMZa and Argentina

I propose that the Nazi fugitive presence in South America after WW2 was made possible by a cultural support infrastructure already in place for nearly sixty years before Eichmann was captured in Buenos Aires. The historical facts alone demonstrate the German presence in Latin America, via specifically the mining and other trade and industrial activities of the early days of unification in the mid-19th Century. Embedded within that activity, and driving much of it, in my opinion, was NJMZa.

With the end of the Sonora Aero Club and the outbreak of the US Civil War, the Prussian masters of NJMZa would have been shrewd enough to set their sights elsewhere, thus do I suggest they went south. This is also corroborated by the German political and trade presence in Mexico, as well as South America. I’ve already presented in a previous chapter the airship sightings reported in newspapers in Chile during this post Sonora era. Based on all this, we can assume for the sake of this discussion that NJMZa airships went south.

They would need facilities, bases of operation and the personnel to tend to them. NJMZa could import native Germans and was likely doing that to man the airships. But having all their sites manned by Germans might not be wise, thus they would have likely hired some locals and imported others to be the face of their operations. More accurately, these geographic locals would serve as a mask.

NJMZa was a secret organization, remember. They couldn’t simply stand up an airship base even if it were in the middle of nowhere. They would have been more careful than that. NJMZa airship bases would logically need to be covert. Flight operations would probably have been relegated to night missions and we have the 1890s airship mystery to corroborate this suggestion since most sightings were at night, for obvious reasons. That suggests an airship base would have the ships stored during the daylight hours and that the base should not look like what it was, rather it should blend into the local environment.

That local environment was rugged and rustic, even still in the first few years of the 20th Century. Just as the Sonora Aero Club had recruited local Italian ranchers to house their aeros in barns, NJMZa would have camouflaged their bases to look like the ranches that were common in the Argentine wilderness back then.

They would need a ranch. What’s more, they would choose to maintain strict secrecy on its association with Germany, therefore it would have been best to acquire the property via means by which the transaction could be concealed. That would mean an associate fronting for NJMZa under a false pretense.

Who might that have been?

Kuhn,Loeb & The Rail Baron

In an earlier chapter, I identified Abraham Kuhn and possibly Solomon Loeb as suspected airship investors, specifically as likely sympathetic to German interests and therefore associated with NJMZa.

I find it interesting that it's difficult to find much on Abraham Kuhn, the man who founded *Kuhn, Loeb* with Solomon Loeb. What we're told repeatedly from source to source is that Kuhn was born in Germany and then we jump right to him being a dry goods merchant in Ohio when he got the idea to become a banker with Loeb and they moved to New York. I would like to find something on his family and youth, his associates in Prussia, his influences but it's not easy to find. Maybe Solomon Loeb should be on the list for perhaps it was he who was the NJMZa man. Whichever it was, their banking venture is the key here.

Solomon Loeb *Abraham Kuhn*

At one time, in the late 19th Century, *Kuhn,Loeb* owned **64% of all railroad miles** in the United States. That's a majority control of the physical railroad tracks across the entire country under the aegis of one banking firm: *Kuhn,Loeb.*

Edward H. Harriman was the well-known owner and CEO of the great Union Pacific Railroad. He was also the father of Averill and Roland 'Bunny' Harriman, close friend and associate of Prescott Bush. When Harriman set out to acquire the Union Pacific, he was backed by *Kuhn,Loeb* who financed the purchase for much more than the asking price. Harriman really wanted that railroad, apparently.

Kuhn,Loeb also financed Westinghouse during the years of Nikola Tesla's association with that company – during the 1890s, the era of the mystery airship sightings. One might wonder if this gave *Kuhn,Loeb* representatives any access to technologies being developed by Tesla at that time, an if the banking firm were indeed allied to NJMZa, as I suspect, the situation becomes even more interesting in that regard.

Also interesting is that *Kuhn,Loeb* later partnered with J.P.Morgan in a purchase of $50,000,000 notes of the Argentine Republic and then a $30,000,000 loan to Argentine State Railways in the early days of WW1, prior to US entry. This transaction alone demonstrates a material interest in Argentina on the part of *Kuhn,Loeb* by 1915, but there is more before that, in my opinion.

I suspect that *Kuhn,Loeb*'s material interest in Argentina began in the first decade of the 20th Century and it was on behalf of NJMZa.

The Arrangement: Butch & Sundance

The following is from my book *EOTW2: Friends From Sonora*:

Robert Leroy Parker and Harry Longabaugh, aka Butch Cassidy and The Sundance Kid, were legendary outlaws immortalized in the 1969 film and by the rumors of their having survived -- or simply not been present at -- an ambush in Bolivia. Most people know the story; if you don't, look it up. Butch and his cohorts are considered by some the most successful train and bank robbers in US history until the Newton Gang (1919 - 1924) who remain so.

It was the robbery of a Union Pacific train near Wilcox, Wyoming, that sparked the biggest manhunt the gang had ever motivated. Once again there was a killing involved after two of the robbers shot a sheriff. By this time, legendary lawmen were involved in the pursuit, including Tom Horn and Charles Siringo of the Pinkerton Agency. It was Siringo and the Pinkerton agents who would also be immortalized in the 1969 film, depicted as distant figures relentlessly pursuing the two outlaws. The gang was not caught, but it was the following train robbery at Folsom, New Mexico, that again resulted in a couple of the more violent gang members killing lawmen. This event appeared to have affected Parker who was not involved in these killings. Killing wasn't his style.

The official story is that in 1899 Parker approached Governor Wells of Utah with a proposal to discuss amnesty. Wells allegedly declined, yet recommended Parker approach the Union Pacific Railroad directly with the same proposal to negotiate them dropping their charges. We are told the meeting never happened due to 'bad weather'. Interestingly, some sources report that subsequent to that overture by Parker, Union Pacific chairman E. H. Harriman initiated a meeting with him through an associate of the outlaw who had recently been released from prison. That man was Matt Warner, *another good-hearted man like Parker who had turned to crime only because of hard knocks in youth. Warner became an effective lawman himself greatly because of his outlaw reputation, but also because he had truly turned his life around. This was the man to whom E. H. Harriman allegedly turned to approach Parker. But again, history tells us that meeting never took place (and a few writers insist it never would have, though their insistence is just as much opinion as that of advocates who claim it was offered). In the summer of 1900 Parker and his gang returned to robbery, starting with a Union Pacific train near Tipton, Wyoming.*

So not only did the 'honorable' outlaw Butch Cassidy, who first initiated an amnesty discussion, allegedly disregard following up on his own desire to change his ways, he then apparently refused to meet with one of the most powerful men in the United States who was reportedly willing to offer him amnesty. We are to believe that this same honorable Butch Cassidy also went on to not only rob one of Harriman's trains but do it in Wyoming where he had already given his word to the governor that he would not commit any crimes. Does this sound like the Robin Hood of the West who was considered to be one of the most respectable men on the Outlaw Trail?

What might Harriman's intent have been in meeting to discuss amnesty with a man responsible for stealing from his railroad -- a man who would end up being distinguished as the leader of the gang that successfully robbed more trains and banks than any other at that time? Was Harriman going to extend an offer to Parker? What might that offer have been? Does it matter, since we're told that the meeting between Parker and Harriman never took place?

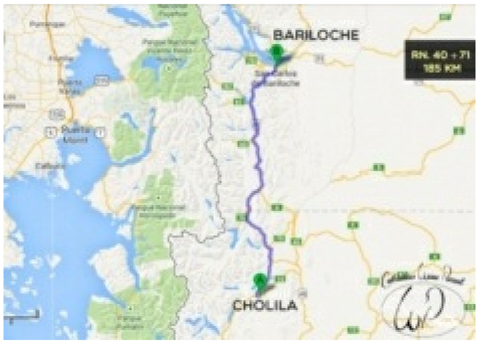
But what if it did? It does not make any sense that Butch Cassidy would have ignored Harriman's overture to amnesty. This investigation rejects that historical assumption and the author contends that Parker aka ***Butch Cassidy indeed met with Harriman****.(Emphasis added WB)*

E.H.Harriman   Robert L Parker aka 'Butch Cassidy

It is indeed my contention that Parker aka Butch Cassidy did meet with Harriman and a deal was made. I go into those details more in *EOTW2: Friends From Sonora* but the basics are this: Butch and Sundance went to South America to establish a ranch in Argentina on behalf of NJMZa via the front of Harriman and *Kuhn,Loeb.* It is reported that they had no difficulty with the immigration process and carried with them the means to purchase 15,000 acres of choice land in the Chubut Province of southwestern Argentina, near the Andes Mountains. There they lived without incident or difficulty, known to locals, for at least seven years before their disappearance from history, or their supposed death in a shootout in 1908, which I am convinced is not true.

The Cassidy ranch, in my opinion, was a NJMZa base. Just as the Italian ranchers in Tuolumne County, California, had provided the Sonora Aero Club with facilities to house and work on their craft, Butch and Sundance maintained a ranch where NJMZa airships could come and go for supplies or maintenance during explorations for gold mines in the Andes and other remote locations in Patagonia. The ranch would have provided a place for NJMZa crews and staff to rest and tend to their airships. I'm still researching the issue via sources in proximity to the area today, but I suspect there were barns on the ranch – or at least one – wherein an airship could be stored between flights. But if not, it doesn't change my position that the ranch served NJMZa interests.

The location of the Cassidy ranch was Cholila – located less than 190 kilometers from San Carlos de Bariloche. And why is that significant?



As I stated in *EOTW2: Friends From Sonora*:

> *San Carlos de Bariloche sits below the Andes mountains, specifically below Nahuel Huapi Lake. Although there is a legend of a crypto-zoological "lake monster" affectionately named 'Nahuelito' that started about the time Butch and Sundance arrived in Bariloche, the area has also been associated with legends of ancient Chilean natives evading the Spanish conquest via the Andes. 'Bariloche' comes from the word 'Vuriloche' meaning 'people from behind the mountain'. The Vuriloche Pass was used as a secret route across the Andes by the Poya people who kept it hidden from the Europeans for a very long time.*

Just like they kept their gold mines hidden?

There is more…

> *"Situated in the Rio Negro Province in the foothills of the Andes just below Nahuel Huapi Lake, modern Bariloche was founded by German Chilean immigrant Carlos Weiderhold. Developed in a European style, complete with Alpine architecture, it actually has more in common with Chile than Argentina.* ***What has put Bariloche back in relevance recently is a 1995 revelation that the city was a haven for Nazi war criminals including German Army Captain Erich Preibke who turned up having run a German school there for several years. Two separate books published since 2004 claim that Adolf Hitler and Eva Braun lived in the vicinity of Bariloche for several years after World War II.*** *These facts and claims would argue for German immigrant bankers Kuhn, Loeb's interest and possible role in the Bariloche area as the center for ersatz German colonies in Argentina."*

There you have it. I suggest that Butch and Sundance achieved their amnesty via a deal with Harriman. The deal was to establish a ranch, backed by assets paid through *Kuhn,Loeb*, for use by NJMZa for the purpose of seeking gold mines in the Andes – and to hunt for ruins of the forgotten civilization. This NJMZa presence further established and expanded upon the German 'colony' element of the area and thus was responsible for the subsequent choice of Bariloche as a refuge for Nazis fleeing WW2 justice, possibly including Hitler himself.

In the other book, I elaborate the reasons why I question the usual story we are told about Butch and Sundance in South America. I might change my mind, if you find the evidence that proves the traditional version of the Butch and Sundance story as told by the Pinkerton Agency.

You won't.

On Episcopal Secret Service

Why am I so confident in my position on Butch and Sundance?

Because of who went with them to Argentina.

In the *Empire of the Wheel* trilogy, the story of the mysterious Cora Stanton is presented with all available detail. Follow up investigation of that data convinced me that the woman's true identity was that of Butch and Sundance's associate, Etta Place.

Etta Place

My research and theory on Etta Place is detailed in the second and third volumes of that trilogy but the basics are this: Etta Place was a secular nun for an Episcopal order, meaning she was not tonsured by the church itself. A secular nun lives by an oath but her status is independent of official church sanction. The Episcopal Church has a long association with US intelligence community personnel and this provides a context for Etta Place to fit as a recruited operative.

Etta Place an operative? For whom?

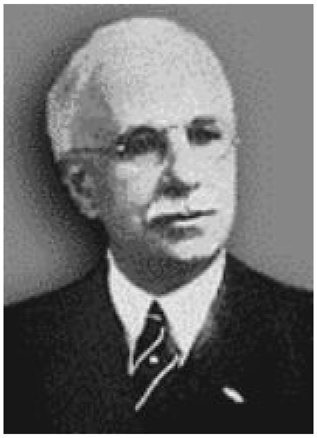
The US Secret Service. In the early 20th Century, there was no FBI so the Secret Service was it for all things federal, particularly where national security was concerned. In the other books, I provide the details, but essentially Etta Place, in my opinion, had been assigned to work Butch's gang with a partner already in place: Harry Longabaugh.

Harry Longabaugh aka 'The Sundance Kid'

Etta's assignment with Butch and Sundance in Argentina, as described in my other books, would have been to report on NJMZa activity. This theory is even corroborated by the fact that Pinkerton could supposedly never catch the boys and Etta down there.

Why not?

Because the Pinkerton man assigned to the case in South America was Frank Dimaio who started his investigative career as an undercover operative for none other than the US Secret Service. In fact, Etta Place as a Secret Service operative herself explains why the Pinkertons never caught Butch and Sundance in all those years. How so?



WILLIAM A. PINKERTON

Frank Dimaio

It so happens that the Pinkerton Agency itself was founded by Allan Pinkerton who also established the intelligence unit that became the Secret Service in the first place. That relationship did not likely end once Pinkerton started his agency, and we know it didn't because of Dimaio, who was hired full time by Pinkerton after his work for the Secret Service in cooperation with the detective agency. Pinkerton's sons took over the agency eventually and William, the son in charge of western operations for the company, chose the very same Texas brothel as did Butch and the gang for his club of preference. The Pinkerton agency had a long history with the US Secret Service and their boss liked to hang out in the same place we are told Etta met Butch and Sundance.

What am I implying?

I'm implying nothing – I'm flat out saying it: the Pinkerton agents pursuing Butch and Sundance were on orders to back off a bit once Etta was in place (no pun intended). That is my position based on professional experience.

Here's the situation as I see it: When Butch took the amnesty arrangement deal offered by Harriman (ostensibly *Kuhn,Loeb* for NJMZa), Sundance and Etta were part of the package. Not only did Frank Dimaio *not* pursue them in South America, I suggest he was Etta's communications and resources contact to the Secret Service. Yes, I suspect Dimaio was helping Etta (and Sundance) in her duties, delivering messages from the Secret Service, taking her intelligence reports, providing funds, necessary equipment and special supplies as required. Frank Dimaio was still an operative for the Secret Service, I am convinced.

The work that Etta Place and Harry Longabaugh would have done required a believable cover identity and I say this explains their relationship. They were not lovers, nor were they married. Etta Place was never a 'working girl' in the saloon context. The idea that they were romantically involved is based on rumor and opinion and lots of assumption. Their so called relationship was a cover for duty.

What Etta did was observe and report on the Germans who came and went at the ranch, including the NJMZa airships. It was this assignment that may have put her on a watch list of NJMZa security and, I propose, led her down a trail that marked her for murder in San Bernardino, California, in November of 1915.

But that’s another story.

CHAPTER THIRTEEN

BEYOND THE VEIL

This is the point in this examination at which we must address some rather fantastic rumors and also what I consider to be the true liberation point of the American airship group as a breakaway society (if not yet a civilization).

The Moon

Earlier I alluded to old tales of the Moon being the location of Enoch’s ‘City in the Sky’. The only traceable source of this idea appears to be Joseph Smith, founder of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints and Mormonism. If this be the case, the next time we hear of men on the Moon before they should have been, according to history, is Jules Verne. We have also noted Verne’s rumored link to the Angelic Society, that secretive group that may have shared secrets with the French author. The next notable lunar themed story is of men inside the Moon, by H.G.Wells. These tales are merely reflective of a long human fascination with the strange glowing orb that rules the night.

Might there have been some nugget of truth to these ‘men of the Moon’ ideas? Could there have been a city on the Moon, built by the forgotten civilization? Might these lunar inhabitants have visited the Earth in the remote past, leaving behind the tenacious idea that something or someone was or still is up there?

This was certainly on the minds of people during the era of the airship mystery and even more so into the 20th Century as the industrial revolution seemed to make anything possible, including flights to the Moon.

Or possibly to other planets…

Red Planet: The Legend of 1903

There is a story that someone went to Mars in 1903.

This is one of those fun things to talk about, yet I think it deserves serious consideration within our context. We have been looking at an alternate line of human technological development within a context of secret organizations successfully experimenting with powered heavier-than-air flight several decades prior to the Wright Brothers, in spite of what traditional history teaches us is so. In any such discussion, we must examine if a claim that human beings flew to Mars could possibly be true the same year the Wrights tossed their motor glider across a beach.

Author Sean Casteel's *Nikola Tesla's Journey To Mars: Are We Already There?* (Global/Beckley, 2002) poses the titular question. Did it happen?

In an interview with Tim Swartz that is presented in the book, Casteel discusses his personal interest with the Tesla association to Mars which, Casteel first learned about in 1973. Admitting that it sounded farfetched at the time, Casteel next tells of seeing the opening of a Project Blue Book exhibit in the US Air Force Museum at Wright-Patterson AFB in Dayton, Ohio. He was a journalist for a local TV station then and ended up getting an interview with the guest speaker: J. Allen Hynek.

According to Casteel, he was told by Hynek that there exist US Air Force files on Nikola Tesla's attempt to send a spacecraft to Mars. Hynek said further that Tesla was on a project financed by wealthy investors from 'the east coast' for whom Tesla was engineering a spacefaring airship. Hynek told Casteel that these were the same people responsible for the 1890s airship sightings. This was, Hynek added, one of the reasons Tesla's papers were confiscated by agents of the US government upon his death.

Casteel was intrigued. His research led him down a path where his sources attributed the mid-19th Century airship development, including that of the Sonora Aero Club, to information provided through spirit mediums, channeled from a source on Mars. Already we have a problem with this line of thought because Dellschau, the original and only real source on this issue of the Sonora group, says nothing about spiritism or Ouija boards being anywhere near any of the men who built the aeros. On the contrary, Dellschau's claims are firmly in the material technological realm, whether you accept them as fact or not. Was Casteel's source the product of a ridiculous cover story put out at the time by the airship builders themselves?

I don't know, but let's continue because I think Casteel was still onto something. The next part of Casteel's research introduced him to the episode in Tesla's research in which he thought he might be receiving intelligent signals via a low-frequency radio receiver in his Colorado Springs lab.

Here is what Tesla said about this incident in a March 1901 article from *Collier's Weekly*:

"As I was improving my machines for the production of intense electrical actions, I was also perfecting the means for observing feeble efforts. One of the most interesting results, and also one of great practical importance, was the development of certain contrivances for indicating at a distance of many hundred miles an approaching storm, its direction, speed and distance traveled....

"It was in carrying on this work that for the first time I discovered those mysterious effects which have elicited such unusual interest. I had perfected the apparatus referred to so far that from my laboratory in the Colorado mountains I could feel the pulse of the globe, as it were, noting every electrical change that occurred within a radius of eleven hundred miles.

"I can never forget the first sensations I experienced when it dawned upon me that I had observed something possibly of incalculable consequences to mankind. I felt as though I were present at the birth of a new knowledge or the revelation of a great truth.... My first observations positively terrified me, as there was present in them something mysterious, not to say supernatural, and I was alone in my laboratory at night; but at that time the idea of these disturbances being intelligently controlled signals did not yet present itself to me.

The changes I noted were taking place periodically and with such a clear suggestion of number and order that they were not traceable to any cause known to me. I was familiar, of course, with such electrical disturbances as are produced by the sun, Aurora Borealis, and earth currents, and I was as sure as I could be of any fact that these variations were due to none of these causes. The nature of my experiments precluded the possibility of the changes being produced by atmospheric disturbances, as has been rashly asserted by some.

It was sometime afterward when the thought flashed upon my mind that the disturbances I had observed might be due to an intelligent control. Although I could not decipher their meaning, it was impossible for me to think of them as having been entirely accidental. The feeling is constantly growing on me that I had been the first to hear the greeting of one planet to another. A purpose was behind these electrical signals...."

It is from this that the apocryphal story that Tesla received signals from Mars has likely been drawn. But look closely at what Tesla said: "…*the disturbances I had observed* ***might be due to an intelligent control.*** *Although* ***I could not decipher their meaning****, it was* ***impossible for me to think of them as having been entirely accidental****."*

Tesla suspected these 'disturbances' were signals created by an intelligent source, but he could not translate them and he was convinced they were consciously sent. Only his later comment about 'greeting from one planet to another' refers to any possibility of an extraterrestrial source – and this is a reflection made after much rumination following the radio incident in the lab. But the leap to signals sent by Martains based on that comment, though popular, is pure assumption.

Is there an alternative possibility?

Batiste’s Airship Transmission Theory

A scholar of space program mysteries, Jonathan Batiste recently dropped a startling theory in my lap. He asked me what I thought of the idea that the ‘intelligent signals’ picked by Tesla on his lab radio could actually have been transmissions from or between airships of the secret groups?

I was pleasantly surprised by the simplicity of the idea. I’m already convinced the airship mystery groups had been developing their technology since the 1850s, but I had gone into little but their flying machines. Of course they would need to communicate!

Batiste’s suggestion makes perfect sense within the context of the secrecy under which these airship groups reportedly operated. As Dellschau’s writings demonstrate, the airship groups used a coded written language, why not secure radio transmissions during flight operations? If they could make antigravity flight happen, surely they had something like radios. I’ve already presented in this book and others the association between the railroads and telluric current and how telegraphy (started by railroads) uses telluric current. We also know that Tesla utilized ‘world grid’ energy and what is this but telluric current? I have also discussed my theory that the airships use telluric current like an energy stream and fly them like ships on ocean currents. See how all of this fits?

With telluric current ‘world grid’ energy already identified in the use of telegraphy, I propose that Batiste’s idea is solid. I agree that the signals which Tesla was receiving were possibly the encoded communication transmissions between the airships in flight.

Thus are we presented with an important point pertaining to the airship mystery regarding Tesla’s involvement: the Collier’s article of 1901 has Tesla relating an incident that occurred in 1899. If Tesla did not know what these signals were then, does that mean he was not involved with the airship mystery prior to the 20th Century?

Or is it possible that Tesla was involved in the airship mystery in the 1890s but was completely unaware of any radio communications technology used by the groups?

I say that isn't likely. Tesla would more likely have been directly involved in the design of the communications system if he were already part of the airship milieu. This 1899 episode suggests to me that Tesla himself was out of the loop, but the airship groups were applying his *technology* or a technology he would certainly recognize. Tesla's receipt of the radio signals demonstrates that they were doing so – and I say this because he picked them up in the first place. His inability to translate the signals simply points to him not being able to decode the signals. The bottom line is that this 1899 radio signal episode suggests to me that Nikola Tesla may not have been directly involved in the airship mystery until the early 20th Century.

That brings us back to our Mars expedition theory.

Sean Casteel tells of sources claiming that members of the Sonora Aero Club came to Tesla and wanted him to apply himself to psychic communications, which the inventor refused to do, according to the story. We know that Tesla didn't think much of such things to begin with, so that refusal rings true, but the other problem with this is that the Dellschau journals state that the Sonora Aero Club did not exist much, if at all, after 1860. But I don't dismiss Casteel's report of this claim because it might be that he had come across something containing a nugget of truth.

Might this tale of Sonora Aero Club representatives approaching Tesla with 'psychic communication work' actually have spun from a real incident? Might representatives of the 1890s vintage American airship have approached Tesla on a project relative to their actual communications system? It's something to consider. You should also consider an extension of that thought: that the airship guys eventually went to Tesla for a new communications system that would work in space, across the expanse between planets – like between Earth and Mars.

I'm leaning more to the idea that all this talk of psychic channeling and Ouija boards relative to the airship group was possibly a cover story perpetrated and perpetuated by the airship group itself. If not, we are left with the likelihood that it's yet another unfortunate appropriation by the goofier elements of New Age culture.

Casteel continues with the airship to Mars theory, relating Tesla's Wardenclyffe Tower to the whole affair, based on newspaper reports of the day with witness accounts of extraordinary electrical phenomena over the area where the tower was located. This was reported on 15 July 1903 in the *New York Sun* and that is where the story becomes more interesting.

Casteel writes that the late author Jim Keith told him in a series of email correspondence that July 1903 was indeed the date an airship launched for Mars. According to Keith, says Casteel, said airship was assisted with balloons and combustion engines to a specified altitude at which the world grid power of the Wardenclyffe device could then take over, casting a bubble of ionized plasma around the ship to maintain life support in the vacuum of space. Could this have involved Heaviside's previously discussed GEM technology which also allowed for an object to accelerate to high speeds without experiencing g-forces? It seems to me that it's possible, especially where the 'bubble of ionized plasma' may factor into this episode, but we may never know.

According to Casteel, his sources claimed that once the airship left the atmosphere of the Earth, it was never heard from again despite repeated attempts to communicate.

Casteel presents a 24 August 1924 report about 'freak signals' received via the Jenkins Radio-Camera at Amherst College. According to sources, including *The New York Times*, the radio-camera produced a photographic tape depicting 'dots and dashes' along one side while the other side allegedly depicted a crude image of a human face.

Was this possibly a communication from the lost airship of 1903? 'Dots and dashes' is obviously a reference to Morse code which was indeed used by telegraphers from the mid-19th Century into the 20th – and we again point to the association of telegraphy to the airship technology milieu. Does it not make sense that an airship crew having reached Mars in 1903 or so would attempt communication using Morse code?

According to Casteel's research, Tesla reportedly confided to a nephew, Sava Kosanovic, a Yugoslav bureaucrat, his belief that the signals were from the lost airship that had set out for Mars years before. Casteel goes on to relate that Tesla reportedly developed his 'Teslascope' with the secret purpose of communicating with the lost airship crew on Mars, according to Tesla's assistant Arthur H. Matthews, which he allegedly succeeded with in 1938.

The Matthews tale goes on to claim that Tesla subsequently learned that as the airship approached Mars, it was drawn into an 'energy ray' exactly like that emitted from Wardenclyffe Tower and the craft was able to land safely. Matthews apparently claimed that the airship crew discovered Mars to be a long dead planet, the machinery casting the energy ray tractor beam merely left on for an indeterminable number of years. That is where Casteel's reference to the Matthews story ends.

So what are we to make of this? One of my first questions is from where did Jim Keith get his information? Where did the Matthews version come from?

We must consider this 1903 airship to Mars story because it's there. Within the context of everything we've been looking at in this book, this legend cannot be dismissed for it is possible there is a nugget of truth buried somewhere within the conjecture and myth-making. Especially when you look at what has been going on with Mars since the first lander images in the 1970s.

For the better part of four decades now, we have been treated to image after image from Mars that appears to openly refute the very story we are told by NASA about the Red Planet. Now we have been told there is indeed liquid water there. That there have been images that appear to show manufactured items and architecture in ruins, and that researchers like the late Kevin W. Smith have been able to present what might be living flora on Mars, and all the other strangeness of data and detail that defy what mainstream science about Mars demands that we at least consider what we really know about that planet – and when did we learn it?

I propose to the reader that any serious consideration of what we’ve discussed in this book hereafter requires a reasonable consideration that there may be something to the airship to Mars story.

The existence of this story puts the argument for human originated 19th Century airship technology as a means to develop a breakaway civilization on the table from this point forward in any discussion of the subject.

The First Libertarians: A New Secession

If the American airship group indeed achieved a flight to Mars as early as 1903, then I propose this was the turning point. This feat would have convinced them of the superiority of what they had in their hands. If not before, certainly by this point the American group would have realized that breaking away was to their benefit, especially if my earlier supposition that they were suspicious about the direction of the country and the world in the 20th Century is true.

What might else have happened to inspire breaking away from the United States and human civilization on Earth?

If we are to accept Matthews’ story, they learned of the lost civilization of Mars, and maybe where survivors of that civilization ended up. It might also be that, stretching Matthews’ credulity just a tad bit farther, the airship crew figured out how to operate the machinery left behind by said Martians. Remember, the story is that the energy ray device was left on auto, which implies the remaining machinery was operable. The airship crew might have found a ready-built base waiting for them.

Imagine the implications of *that*. The 1903 airship crew finding an operable technology in an abandoned city *on Mars* could explain the reported 1938 signals and much similar stuff since then. Of course, we can reasonably suppose (since we’re this far out on the limb) that the technology they found was a bit more advanced than what even the airship group possessed, thus a leap forward was handed to them on a silver platter.

What would you do if you were among a group of techno-industrialists cynical of human civilization on Earth but with the means to take over an abandoned city on another planet and establish a new world?

I damned well would have done it, too.

I contend that in the above scenario, that is exactly what the group would have done: Take what they found and make it their own. The legend of the 1903 airship expedition Mars may contain the story of the day the American airship group took its first true breakaway step.

Colonel Tillman's Curious Curriculum

I bring this up at this particular time because it is indeed curious but may also be a clue that the above supposition about the Mars breakthrough was the breakaway point, thin as it is.

In 1917, at the outbreak of US involvement in WW1, Samuel Tillman (of airship mystery fame) was brought out of retirement to serve as superintendent of West Point Military Academy for a little over a year before being retired again as a Brigadier General with a Distinguished Service Medal. In his time as superintendent of the academy, Tillman refused repeated requests to make aviation part of the West Point curriculum.

Why?

Who knows? We can only speculate. With Tillman identified by name in the airship mystery reports of the 1890s, I have proposed that he really was serving aboard the airships. If that is so, his position while at West Point is a curious one, because even if the airships were secret, airplanes were an ongoing concern by the time he commanded the academy. Aviation courses would not have had to reveal the airships.

But what if it's true about the American group's expedition to Mars in 1903? Might Tillman have expected to go and was denied? If I'm right about the breaking away point arising from the trip to Mars, might Tillman, a loyal military officer, have been angered by their secession and wanted no further involvement with airships or even airplanes?

Did Samuel Tillman really think aviation would have no place in the future of the US military?

It’s possible. Remember, legendary US Army air corps pilot Colonel Billy Mitchell was actually court-martialed over pushing the issue of the importance of military aviation. Tillman might have simply gone with the prevailing wind of the command culture at the time. There may be no mystery behind his reluctance to include the subject into the curriculum.

But it is curious.

CHAPTER FOURTEEN

THIRD REICH'S A CHARM

I think the Nazis were the prime expression of NJMZa in the 20th Century. They represented everything the NJMZa Prussians of the 19th Century dreamed of achieving. Certainly so in the esoteric philosophy of Nazism, but particularly in the administrative methods

NJMZa & The First World War

If the NJMZa existed, why did they not use their airships to ensure a German victory in WW1? This question potentially rebuts any argument in favor of the thesis of this book. Think about it. If these breakaway airship groups indeed existed, the history of WW1 and the 20th Century would be quite different.

The answer is the American airship group. It's really that simple, in my opinion. Even though NJMZa existed decades prior to the American group, by the time of the war the American group was capable of negating any advantage.

How?

If you assume the 1903 airship expedition to Mars really happened, the Americans might have then possessed either some technological breakthrough or they had encountered others on the Red Planet and that relationship, whatever it was, provided an advantage NJMZa wasn't then willing to test.

But if you don't think the Mars story is true at all, there remains the mere existence of the American airship group to consider being enough resistance to NJMZa. Whatever the case, the problem with WW1 where the secret airship milieu is concerned is their absence. There is an argument to be made that the secret airship groups would have emerged publicly in some manner during WW1 and, since they clearly did not, it serves to prove the whole thing is fantasy. That is a perfectly reasonable position.

The problem with that is World War Two.

The Hindu-German Conspiracy

Some have proposed that the Nazis must have mined ancient sources and that's how they got the idea for The Bell.

As discussed in the first part of this book, there have been organizations seeking the lost technology of forgotten civilizations and the Nazis were indeed among them. Before the Nazi era, Prussian and German anthropologists and archeologists of the 19th Century were part of this quest. Herein is another possible source of access to certain ancient texts.

Remember our discussion of the Hindu Vedic texts and lost technology? If the Germans didn't have complete access to the secrets behind these texts in the 19th Century, they may very well have gained it during the First World War with a mostly forgotten situation known as the Hindu-German Conspiracy.

The alliance was between Germany and India during the war and much of its activities were carried out in the United States, specifically California. My co-author Rick Spence and I present the details of this in *Empire of the Wheel* but the basics are that Germany buddied up with India in order to keep the British occupied on two fronts. India was in its early days of their fight for independence from British rule and Germany was at war with England, of course.

Each gave the other what they needed against England: revolt in India caused England to expend valuable resources they could have used in the European war, the Germans provided India with weapons and assorted munitions. There was a major Indian intelligence network operating in California during the war, so Germany shipped arms from the Gulf of Mexico and across the American southwest, likely via smuggled shipments on the railroad, to San Diego from where they were sent to Burma aboard ships. We know this because of the capture of one of these boats, the *Annie Larsen*.

It is an interesting episode in American history, but within the context here it is possibly even more significant. This alliance between Germany and India – facilitated through their respective intelligence services – may be the relationship that gave Germany deeper access to classified Vedic secrets of Hindu history. The alliance may have been the opening of the door to various German esoteric studies of ancient India and Tibet in the decades that followed. This suggests to me that, in this alliance, we have probably found the most materially effective source of any real lost Hindu technology that may have resulted in the Nazi Bell.

And who really brokered the Hindu-German alliance? History tells us the German Foreign Office, but I suspect NJMZa interests were directly involved.

Why?

Etta Place, Frank Rosasco and F. Lewis Clark

Readers of the *Empire of the Wheel* trilogy are familiar with events in San Bernardino, California, in the second half of 1915. The first book presents the mystery of seven curious deaths which may actually have been esoterically motivated murders. There are three players in that drama who bear particular interest to the context of this book.

To begin with, San Bernardino itself had to have played a role in the Hindu-German Conspiracy activities. The Germans were smuggling arms to India via the US southwest then out of San Diego to Burma. They were doing this by railroad shipments and private boats. As explained in EOTW1, San Bernardino was the central railroad hub for the region. Trains coming and going between the southwest coast and east coast of the United States went through San Bernardino, thus any smuggling activity involving the German and Indian agents and shipments by rail to San Diego were channeled through San Bernardino’s large rail yard. German and Indian intelligence agents were active in the area, which meant British and American agents were watching them.

During WW1, the only real federal agency working national security by charter was the US Secret Service, as the FBI didn’t exist yet as such. As stated earlier, I have reason to believe that Etta Place was a Secret Service field operative and had already collected on NJMZa while in South America. German agents operating in and smuggling weapons through Southern California was reason enough for the Secret Service to send operatives to San Diego and San Bernardino, but I think Etta Place ended up in San Bernardino relative to NJMZa interest in what else was there.

What was there? As laid out in EOTW1, it is my position that there is indeed a major grid of telluric ‘world grid’ energy in the San Bernardino Valley and throughout the Inland Empire. By now you should know that world grid energy means that the airship groups would know about such a major confluence as I propose for San Bernardino. Because of other things that may have been going on there relative to this world grid energy, NJMZa would have been keen on seeing to it that nothing interfered with the weapons smuggling arrangement. If NJMZa was there, it’s likely the American airship group had its agents there also, for anything going on around the world grid source of energy, which I argue was instrumental in powering the airships of both sides, would have motivated observation.

In a scenario wherein Etta Place is the operative sent to San Bernardino, we have the obvious presence of the Secret Service investigating German intelligence activities but we also have in her someone with personal experience with NJMZa. That suggests to me that Etta was on the ‘radars’ of both the German intelligence officers and of NJMZa agents specifically familiar with her. It’s certainly possibly they would likely have informed the German intelligence masters exactly who she was, putting Etta in an even more dangerous predicament.

Personally, I say her murder was likely at the hands of an opposition intelligence agent (German or NJMZa) or a co-opted agent in the local Spiritualist temple. The point is, based upon my past research and what we’ve discussed in this book, the presence of Etta Place in San Bernardino in 1915 suggests to me the presence of NJMZa activity or interest there – and that also suggests the presence of the American airship group.

That’s where Frank Rosasco comes in.

Giuseppe Rosasco and Sons
Frank Rosasco

Possible associates of the Sonora Aero Club

The details of the Rosasco case are presented in EOTW1. Essentially, he was arrested in San Bernardino on an outbound train less than two weeks after Etta was murdered in the city’s main park. Rosasco drew attention because of his erratic behavior; he was having a nervous breakdown. The police detained him with a ladies’ purse in his possession. The purse contained a large sum of cash and was never explained. In fact, though Rosasco was committed to the county hospital and doctors diagnosed him as being dangerously paranoid, he was released without explanation into the hands of unidentified ‘friends from Sonora’.

Yes, that Sonora. The very California town from which Dellschau’s Sonora Aero Club drew its name. It’s all detailed in *EOTW2: Friend From Sonora*. Of course there is the question of why would a ‘dangerous paranoiac’ arrested on a train leaving town during a bonafide murder mystery be released so readily into the custody of unnamed associates?

Because of their being from Sonora implies more than the literal interpretation. Rosasco came from a well-known ranching family of Tuolumne County. If he had been released to his family, the reports would have certainly said so. But they don’t. They say he was released to ‘friends from Sonora’. There is a finer distinction to be considered in this.

The Rosasco ranch was located in a part of Tuolumne County that is south of Jamestown. It’s not in Sonora proper. It’s close, sure, but it’s not there. The significance of the description ‘friends from Sonora’, in my opinion, was a message to NJMZa. That message being directed to the Germans that the American group was there, they were watching and they knew what had happened to Etta Place. That the American group let themselves be identified as ‘friends from Sonora’ was a reference to the aero club that ultimately rejected NJMZa and they knew that the ‘Prussians’ would damned well understand this.

In addition to the reference to Sonora revealing an American airship group interest in San Bernardino, it also suggests for whom Frank Rosasco may have been working. I think Rosasco was sent by the American airship group to San Bernardino to assist Etta Place with resources – the money in the purse he was found holding tightly on the train. Whatever actually happened to Rosasco in San Bernardino, it drove him mad for a time and he was never the same again.

The presences of Etta Place and Frank Rosasco aren’t the only reason to suspect airship group activity in San Bernardino in 1915. There is also the question of ‘O.H.Bailey’, the mummified corpse found in the San Bernardino foothills on the same day Etta Place was found dead in the lake across town.

You can read the details in EOTW1, but the basics are that the man called ‘Bailey’ was known in town as an itinerant citrus grove worker who kept a room in a local boarding house. He hadn’t been seen for a few months when the ghastly remains of a man’s body were discovered wearing Bailey’s suit and jewelry and carrying Bailey’s wallet. He had died from a gunshot wound to the head and the corpse was holding a gun. Subsequently, a suicide note was found in his boarding house room across town. Reportedly unidentifiable were it not for a ring, a watch and ID in his wallet, the body was accepted as that of the man known locally as Bailey because of the suicide note, case closed.

Not so fast. Bailey often came and went. The only local person who provided any further information was the daughter of the owner of the boarding house. She said Bailey supposedly came from Maine. He was allegedly depressed over loss of hearing at only around fifty years old. The girl said Bailey mentioned a daughter back in Maine but that was all anyone knew about her.

My big question regarding the boarding house is this: If Bailey intended to commit suicide and did so, leaving a note behind in his boarding house room, why was that note not discovered until after the body was found three months after the deed?

I question the Bailey suicide story. The facts suggest to me that the suicide note was planted – as was the body in the foothills. The man known as ‘Bailey’ around San Bernardino was not who they thought he was. I propose ‘O.H.Bailey’ was an alias for a man on whose behalf another body was provided to fake his death. Get a dead John Doe (or kill someone who won’t be missed, like a vagrant), put an old suit on him along with ‘Bailey’s’ watch and ring and wallet, and there you go. Whoever the body was, he probably was killed months before being placed on the hill, gun in hand. This is detailed in the EOTW books.

So who was Bailey, in my opinion?

I suspect he was F Lewis Clark, a wealthy industrialist from the state of Maine. Clark was the founder of successful ventures in Washington State and a resident of Seattle. Clark also founded a railroad called the Inland Empire Railway. Clark disappeared from a pier in Santa Barbara in 1914, a presumed suicide, distraught over illness, but his body was never found. Shortly after his disappearance, a comment in a Riverside newspaper – Riverside being the ersatz sister city of San Bernardino – is the first public source to refer to the greater San Bernardino Valley and Riverside as the ‘Inland Empire’. Coincidentally, this is the same period during which the itinerant ‘O.H.Bailey’ is known around San Bernardino.

The only known photo of F. Lewis Clark

This suggests to me that F. Lewis Clark was indeed living as ‘Bailey’ in San Bernardino and it was through him that the term Inland Empire originated for the Southern California area.

How does this relate to the context of our discussion?

A newspaper report in San Francisco on 22 November 1896, specifically the *San Francisco Chronicle*, in which an attorney named George Collins describes an airship investor as follows:

“He is a very wealthy man who has been studying the subject of flying machines for fifteen years and who came here seven years ago from the State of Maine in order to be able to perfect his ideas away from the eyes of other inventors.”

Let’s break this down: F Lewis Clark was a wealthy man. He was from Maine. By 1889, the seven year mark cited in the 1896 article, Clark had indeed come west. He was around 24 or 25 years old in 1889 so by the date of the article, Clark would have been about 31 years old. This puts him easily within range of the estimated 1915 age of the mysterious O.H.Bailey of San Bernardino, which was around 50 years old.

While it is true that the attorney Collins subsequently back-pedaled his earlier statements and in this sudden revision the name of a dentist-inventor named Elmer Benjamin came up as the airship man from Maine. The dentist was indeed from Maine and had come west seven years prior. Curiously, Benjamin's rebuttal to Collins' linking him to mystery airship construction was followed by an unexplained meeting of the two men for several hours at the dentist's home which resulted in both men denying knowledge of any airship business. Did someone get to them?

Whether Benjamin and Collins were deeply involved or not, there is the repeated mention of 'investors in the east' throughout the airship mystery lore, and specifically the mention of New York and Maine. The dentist need not have been the only investor from Maine. It's also possible that the Dr. Benjamin episode could have been a slapdash cover story for Collins having opened his mouth about airships and an investor from Maine in the first place. I say Clark still qualifies as that airship enthusiast from Maine because we have another little tidbit to keep Clark on the suspect list: F Lewis Clark was an avid sailor and it was via boat racing in Europe that he met and began a friendship with none other than Kaiser Wilhelm.

Yep, Clark was buddies with the Kaiser of Germany and thus we must take into consideration a NJMZa association. Add it up: the whole 'airship guy from Maine' thing, Clark being in the right place at the right time; his wealth, the whole suspicion about his presence in the *Empire of the Wheel* mystery, everything we have discussed about NJMZa and my suspicion that they were active in San Bernardino during the time 'Bailey' was found dead the year after Clark himself disappeared, etc.

I suspect that F Lewis Clark was indeed the heretofore unidentified airship investor/builder from Maine; that he faked his death in Santa Barbara, and he did it again in San Bernardino the following year in order to disappear yet again, and for good this time. I even speculate that Clark aka 'Bailey' may have been given refuge under the protection of NJMZa and lived the remainder of his life in South America.

Consider the following scenario: Germany was smuggling guns for India through San Bernardino. There is also major world grid energy in the San Bernardino Valley. That means the presence of both German spies and NJMZa agents. Etta Place may have been tipped off that someone, possibly the missing Clark masquerading as someone else, in San Bernardino was facilitating resources for the German gun smuggling operation. Due to Clark/Bailey's association to NJMZa via the airship milieu and his friendship with the Kaiser, NJMZa agents would have known he was in San Bernardino and maybe helped fake his death with a substitute body. Frank Rosasco could have been sent by the American airship group to provide Etta with operational funds and to exchange messages, but something went wrong, he was frightened off by whoever murdered her before he could get there. Clark eludes exposure and NJMZa provides him cover in some far off place, perhaps Bariloche.

Yes, it's a convoluted scenario in some regards, but it makes sense. Whatever really happened, the mystery of San Bernardino in 1915 has the fingerprints of the airship groups all over it.

The Cauldron: Post War Germany

After WW1, Germany was at its lowest point. The conditions of the treaty were such that Germany's economy was destroyed and the national morale was in the toilet. It was a perfect environment for a drastic new movement.

Aleister Crowley put it thusly in a letter to Karl Germer, fellow OTO and publishing associate:

"The whole thing is a function of the New Aeon. All these alarums and excursions are the birth throes. And I don't think that you are right either in supposing that Hitler has done Germany any good. I think that, on the contrary, he has run Germany right into the earth…has thoroughly alarmed France, England and America…

"You talk about Versailles as if it had ever existed; but it never did. From the day it was signed all sensible men realized that the terms were impossible. The treaty created a great deal of sympathy, and you were just beginning to get out of the mess, thanks to people like Stresemann and Bruning, when the Brown Shirts overthrew the Reich. What we absurdly call the "Cabinet" is meeting today and is bound to initiate decisive action, which will certainly mean rearmament…a speed up in armaments everywhere, with the final crash liable to arrive at any moment. I think we are at the mercy of lunatics…" (*The Beast In Berlin: Art, Sex and Magic in the Weimar Republic* by Tobias Churton, Pgs 343-344)

Author Tobias Churton writes: *"Before Hitler drew the world into a war that would leave Germany flattened, he had already wasted the culture of the country."* (Ibid)

Karl Germer would be arrested by the Gestapo in 1935. His crime was association with prominent Freemasons.

But wasn't that going around?

NJMZa & The Mystic Nationalists

As discussed previously, German society had been fascinated with the occult for years and the years after the war did nothing to change it.

In spite of Hitler's alleged desire to eradicate occultists and secret societies, some of the men at the heart of his apparatus were deeply involved with such topics, namely Heinrich Himmler. It seems the Nazis were selective in their persecution of esoterica, for that which appeared to promote Aryanism and the superiority of German folk culture over all others was acceptable.

The great film director Fritz Lang liked to tell a particular version of his encounter with the Nazis. After his legendary *Metropolis* had been released, Lang was a star auteur and was called to the headquarters of Joseph Goebbels' section where a Nazi official expressed the party's desire for Lang to direct films for them. Lang explained to the officer that he was a Jew, to which the officer supposedly replied: "*We decide who is Jewish, Herr Lang.*"

That is likely how Heinrich Himmler was allowed to create the Ahnenerbedienst aka 'Ahnenerbe' armed with a department devoted to archeological and scientific studies of ancient esoteric lore with any potential for military application. What is the specific significance here?

Joseph Farrell states it clearly: "*In a certain sense, Himmler had willed into existence an entire government bureaucracy to do nothing but military studies of the esoteric, all under his personal control. This created an unusual if not unique first in modern history, because for the first time in modern history a technologically and scientifically sophisticated great power was acknowledging, even if covertly, the existence of a very ancient Very High Civilization whose science it was intent upon recovering. Himmler had decreed, in effect, that the Third Reich was not only going to look for a* *‘paleoancient Very High Civilization’, for ‘Atlantis’, but more importantly, for its science.”*

(The Philosophers’ Stone, Feral House, Pg 254)

Regardless what the Nazis were doing to ‘unacceptable’ occultists and the like, they saw their occultism as acceptable and were officially setting themselves up as perfect candidates to become the beneficiary of all that the NJMZa could offer in that regard.

The Nazis & The Nameless Ones

The esoteric pursuits of Heinrich Himmler and other key Nazis are where the NJMZa handprint on the rise of Nazi Germany is to be found. Simply put, Himmler and Wiligut and their like-minded associates opened the door to the nefarious philosophical tyranny of the masters of NJMZa and their late 19th Century occult-socialist milieu. It may be that these masters foresaw all along the demise of Nazi Germany, having a ‘Nazi International’ envisioned from the beginning.

Can I offer any evidence?

First let me illuminate why I pick on socialism: their most powerful expressions have been the most murderous and tyrannical regimes of modern times – the Nazis and the Soviet Union.

Joseph Farrell closes *The Third Way* with the following: *“With both Nazis and Communists in the mix and potentially in conflict behind the scenes domestically and internationally, with a hidden system of finance and colossal science projects playing with anti-matter and searching for a ‘new physics’ within an institution that has a kind of international sovereign status all of its own, the stakes are too high to ignore the possibilities presented by the two great socialist ideologies of the twentieth century lurking in the background.”*

If some sinister NJMZa fronted cabal planned to temporarily use Nazi Germany to advance their vision global dominance, why so openly evil?

Because, as I have written in the *Empire of the Wheel* trilogy, it was part of a psychological shock strategy perpetrated on the public masses. It also worked with Soviet Russia under Stalin. But in spite of the horrors of both of these examples, there was a deeper and sneakier result: the influence of socialist ideology, i.e. there are more people in America and England enamored of socialism than ever before. This is a result of the social influence and manipulation carried out in the free west prior to, during and especially after WW2.

The answer to the question of 'why so openly evil' where the Nazis and Stalinist Russia are concerned is because it worked: after the extremes of Hitler and Stalin, the comparatively lesser evils of bureaucratic tyrannies go down easier and have actually been embraced, especially reinforced in our era of fear and the madness of hyper-sensitive political correctness.

Those who question the possibility of a Nazi International are ignoring facts and truths that they shouldn't, a cherry-picking of its own kind. The reader here should consider the following:

While the *nation* of Germany surrendered, the Nazis did not. You can go to the annals of Nazi survival, which includes the many captures of Nazis in the post WW2 era, for evidence. In my opinion, it's looking more and more like the Hitler survival school is going to have its day and a postwar Nazi survival network provided the means, including the 19th Century establishment of German real estate on the very continent where said captured Nazis were found.

The Happy Wanderer?

With the rise of the Nazis I mark the end of this examination of the issue of breakaway civilizations and secret space programs. Why do I stop here?

In my opinion, there has been enough written elsewhere about the breakaway civilization and secret space program topic as reflected in the post WW2 era. Other researchers have covered sufficiently that phase and continue to do so. My motive for writing this book was a distinct impression that the breakaways and whatever secret technology they possess neither started with the Nazis nor is the product of the reverse engineering of ET technology, as I stated in the beginning of this book. I hope to illustrate this to the reader with this book and I think I have done so.

But if you’re not yet convinced, the next chapter is likely the most illuminating of my thesis…

CHAPTER FIFTEEN

THE BRIDGE

Let’s summarize the technological thread illustrating my thesis that the secret space technology of today’s breakaway civilizations dates back at least 165 years. This is where I go balls out in staking my claim with the following ‘smoking guns’ that bridge the 19th Century origin to the 20th Century players and beyond.

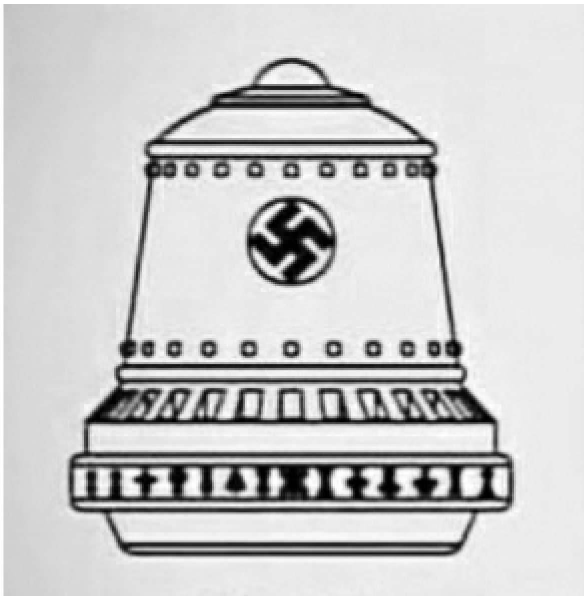
Aero Technology of the 1850s

As described by Charles Dellschau, our only documented witness to the activities of the Sonora Aero Club of California, the so called ‘aeros’ were small rudimentary contraptions designed and built more as ‘proof of concept’ than for continued practical use.

Using an analogous model of the automobile, the Dellschau ‘aero’ was the Model T of airships.

Now let me lay this humdinger on you because if it doesn’t give you pause, it should: These guys were doing what it appears the Nazis did eighty years later.

Exhibit A: The Bell

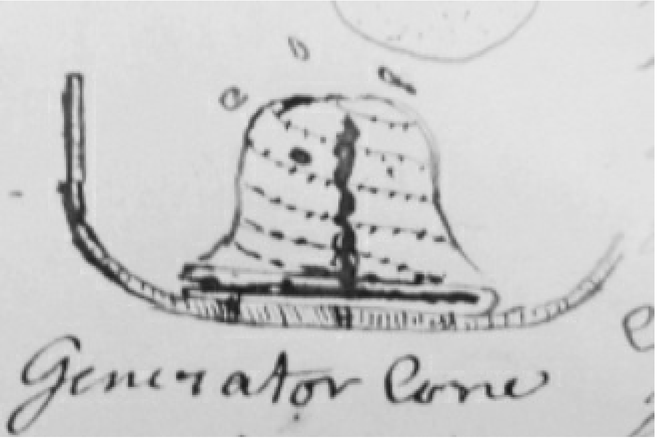


The Nazi Bell, circa 1930s-40s (rense.com)

What is reported about The Bell:

Named for its literal **‘bell’ shape**
A **secret serum** was instrumental in its operation
Creates intense **torsion effect via rotation/spin**
Believed to have been capable of **antigravity**

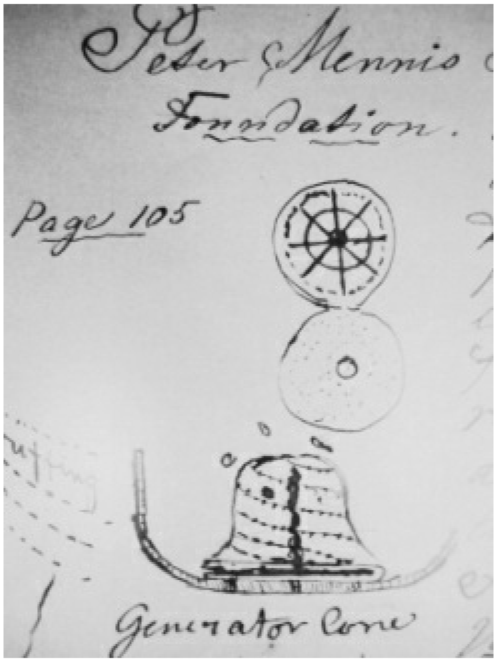
Exhibit B:


Generator Cone

The Aero 'Generator Cone', circa 1856, drawn by Dellschau

What we know about the Generator Cone:

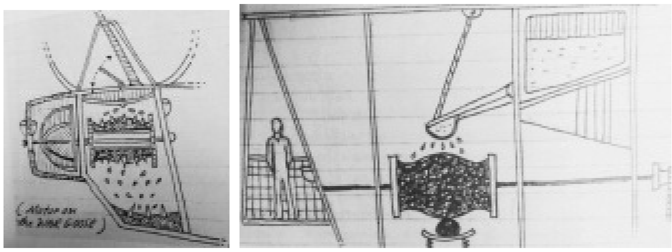
Shaped like a **bell**
A **secret liquid fuel** was instrumental in its operation.
It **spins** on a central axis and this creates **power**
It provided the propulsion for **antigravity flight**


Peter Mennis
Foundation.
Page 105
Generator Cone

Dellschau attributed this device to Peter Mennis

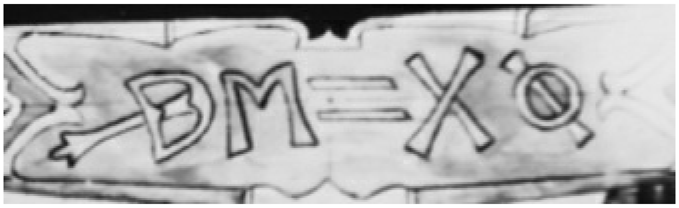
Exhibit C:

The Spinning Drum


The Spinning Drum Apparatus re-drawn from Dellschau by Pete Navarro

This device is seen on several aero drawings and schematics by Dellschau. It operates like the Bell, spinning and with the secret fuel applied to it.

Exhibit D:



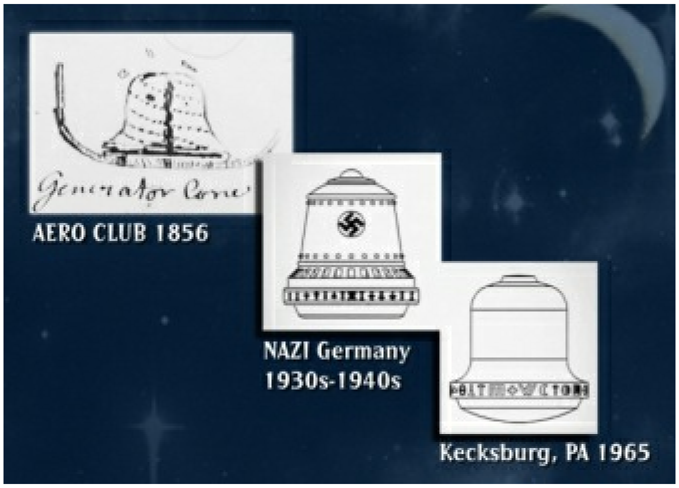
The ‘NYMZA’ Equation postulated by Joseph Farrell may be as dead a give-away as the image of the Cone itself.

You can think whatever you like. I say here was The Bell circa 1856. It was the Model T version of what years later the Germans built during WW2.

Still insist the Nazis got it from ET? Don’t be a fool. They more likely got it from the very human NJMZa. I propose this human developed ‘bell’ technology was applied in the 1850s to the aeros and was then developed further through the decades, certainly used in the NJMZa airships through the 19th Century, until the Nazis scientists tried their hand at making their own version with the extra added feature of an assload of electricity, courtesy of AEG in the 1930s.

If I were to just *say* that aeros used a ‘bell’ device, people would say: ‘Show me any evidence that someone had even tried this before the Nazis’. Well, the above is your evidence.

Dellschau did those drawings decades before the Nazis developed their Bell. Dellschau stated this bell-shaped ‘generator cone’ was a device used in the 1850s, so it was already forty or more years in use, according to him. It’s not a blurry photo of a UFO, it’s a clear drawing -- predating the Nazis -- with a description of what it is and how it works -- and it works like The Bell. And while we’re on the subject, I am in the school of thought that says the Kecksburg UFO was an early US military attempt at operating a Nazi Bell.



Get it? It’s pretty clear. Human technology, not ET

The Generator Cone is the quacking, walking duck armed with a smoking gun. It doesn’t even matter whether you believe the Nazi Bell or Dellschaus aeros were real or not – we have here a depiction of said Bell decades before it is believed to have existed. Even if all this Bell stuff is fantasy, the Dellschau Generator Cone is The Bell for all intents and purposes.

Therefore…I say this: The ‘NYMZA” Equation and the Dellschau Generator Cone are compelling evidence for the argument that the Nazi Bell technology was developed and applied by a human agency 80 years prior to the Nazi era and, if that is indeed so, whatever postwar technology that was developed from the Nazi Bell and went into the secret space program applications of the military-industrial ‘breakaway’ efforts has a ***distinctly human pedigree*** and did *not* result from the reverse (or any other) engineering of an extraterrestrial craft crashed or captured. Period.

Dellschau’s Generator Cone ‘Bell’ and the ‘NYMZA’ Equation aren’t the only evidence, strong as they are.

1890s Airship Development

The American group was certainly aware of Dellschau’s ‘Bell’ aka the Generator Cone, but it made its own contribution to airship propulsion technology via vibrational GEM.

Between the days of the Sonora Aero Club and the ‘1897 airship mystery’ there was clearly a progression of the technology. The airships witnessed by thousands across the western USA were larger and more sophisticated in design and construction, as well as abilities.

The 1890s model airship was to the Dellschau ‘aeros’ what a 1958 Buick was to the Model T.

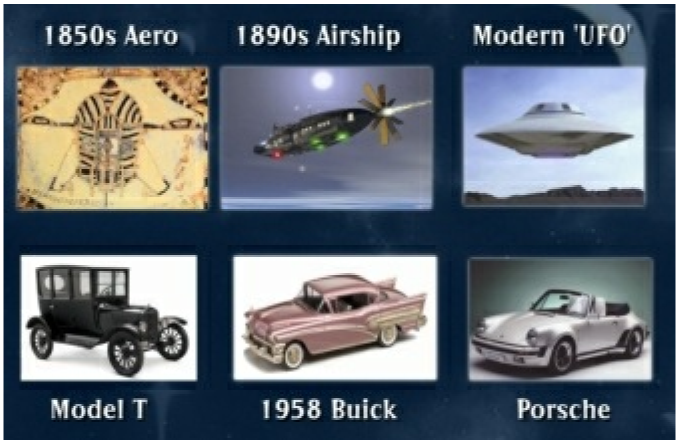
When we look again at the technology described in the witness report that appeared in 1897, we find the description of technology attributed to our alleged present day secret space program, again often described as originating in the post WW2 era and just as often cited as reverse engineered from an ET craft. The problem is that here was this technology being *demonstrated* by *humans* in the **1890s**.

The Modern ‘UFO’ Saucer

When I say ‘modern’, I refer to the classic flying saucer first sighted in the post WW2 era and probably best exemplified by the S4 model reported by Bob Lazar.

This modern flying saucer airship model would be like a 1985 Porsche compared to the ’58 Buick.

I provide this chart to simplify my point at a glance…



The Bosley Chart

The Nazi Bell’s Role

With the advent of the Nazis, the period where my primary focus ends, I see the Nazi Germany period as the beginning of the current era of the breakaway civilizations and secret space programs in our times. Note that I do not say ‘of’ our times – because my postulation is that these breakaways are ***not*** **of** our times.

I draw the line with the appearance of Nazi technology because that’s where airship technology took its next leap forward to something we can no longer call an ‘airship’ per se. That leap was an advanced version of the Dellschau/NJMZa Generator Cone, aka The Bell. With this technological breakthrough, that is, with this major advancement of the airship technology already in use for decades, the game changed and we were thrust into the era which has been much discussed and widely covered for some years now.

You have seen the evidence. This technology was so expansive and critical that it became the keystone to how the Nazi core elite survived Germany’s defeat and went on to build its Nazi International, as Joseph Farrell puts it.

This NJMZa technology also got into the hands of the United States (and probably Russia) via Operation Paperclip, and it may fill in some blanks in a couple of intriguing historical episodes. Was it NJMZa craft that Admiral Byrd and the US Navy reportedly encountered in Antarctica? Might General Patton and his Third Army have been looking for NJMZa technology as well as evidence of a Nazi atomic bomb? Was General Patton the first casualty in the modern era of the conflict between the known world and the breakaway civilization to which NJMZa now belongs?

I do think there are two ‘breakaway civilizations’, one the descendants of NJMZa, the other being the American group that I suspect made its move by the early 20th Century.

The NJMZa Breakaway Group

Because of its long association with 19th Century socialism and ultimately the fascist Nazis, I propose that this German-originated group today represents the ‘shadowy elite’ so often suspected behind the apparent totalitarian motives of the so called New World Order. I have discussed in other books certain historical events I think bear their nefarious fingerprints, including the 9/11 destruction of the World Trade Center.

When you hear someone ranting about who really controls the governments and wants to put us all in FEMA camps, who’s behind one world government and global banksters, etc. – that is the NJMZa breakaway group. They have their tendrils deep into the military-industrial complex and are dedicated to dominating this planet. Their German pedigree defined the history of the century leading up to WW2 and the Nazis. There is no better suspect.

Fortunately for us, they have opposition – such that it is…

The American Group aka ‘The 1903’

From this point forward, I’ll refer to the American group that sprung from the Civil War era acquisition of Solomon Andrews Aeron technology as ‘The 1903’, mainly because I don’t think they would be exclusively American in nationality by now. I suspect the ‘1903’ truly broke away with whatever actually occurred regarding the rumored Mars expedition. It might instead have been that they went to the Moon, but the result was the same: the 1903 found themselves with the means so they made the decision to go their own way.

I propose that the 1903 group opposes the NJMZa group, but it does not mean they are necessarily our friends. In my opinion the 1903 is more like an ally in critical times, when it suits them. I speculate that the 1903 is mostly neutral about us. Remember, I earlier postulated that they foresaw the 20th Century as an era of unacceptable changes in American and western culture in general – specifically those changes affecting the psyche of the nation and the world -- and they simply preferred not to endure it. In possession of an amazing technology that opened new possibilities to them, I think the 1903 took a well-timed leap away from what we would eventually become.

So we come to big questions that must be asked: Why did we not see the airship groups battling it out openly during World War Two? IF the 1903 group indeed opposes NJMZa and NJMZa was involved in the rise and establishment of Nazism, why didn't the 1903 reveal itself during the war? Why did we not see evidence of these airship groups showing up in the biggest conflict in known history?

The only answer I can postulate is going to be disturbing to some people and rejected by others: The philosophy and objectives of the airship groups defined their postures during World War Two and that posture was to remain in the background.

In other words, no matter how big the conflict was between the rest of us, the breakaway airship groups likely saw it as a passing event and no reason to blow their cover. These groups have roots centuries deep into the past and intend to be around long into the future. You might say the 1903 does not care enough to have swooped in to lead the Allies in victory against the Axis powers, and I already proposed that NJMZa was using the Nazis to advance a longer term plan from which emerged Farrell's proposed Nazi International. In that regard, one could say the NJMZa did leave fingerprints on the war while the 1903 turned its back. Admittedly, this question of 'where were the airship groups during WW2' is the most problematic of my hypothesis, though the technological evidence is compelling, but something may emerge to reveal a 1903 hand in the war.

But consider this possibility: If the 1903 encountered 'others' once they ventured into space, the 'others' may have held them back from interfering in

WW2.

I don’t think the 1903 turned its back forever. It may be that the ‘benevolent space brothers’ of the modern UFO era may be explained by encounters with Group 1903 masquerading as ‘Venusians’ to keep their actual existence a secret. They’re not ET; they’re a group of us who stopped beating their heads against the wall. They keep their secret because they don’t want the average Earthling spoiling their good thing elsewhere.

Would you?

CLOSING COMMENTS

Author and researcher Richard Dolan has coined the phrase and provided us with the current usage definition of 'breakaway civilization'. He describes it on the *After Disclosure* website:

> *"With a secret fleet of vehicles utilizing field propulsion and able to explore beyond Earth's orbit, it is easy to see how the cadre of people involved in such a program would develop new vistas of experience and imagination.*
>
> *"Such a group would continue to be funded secretly and covertly by a combination of public and private funds. In effect, it would constitute an invisible empire, with technology superior to the rest of the world, able to explore areas of our world unavailable to the rest of us. It would probably have a significant built infrastructure, possibly underground and "off the grid" in important ways. It might even have interactions or encounters with non-human intelligences behind the UFO phenomenon. Most certainly it would be concerned somehow with managing the problem of "others" here on Planet Earth. All of the above would indicate that the group members would have deeper scientific and cosmological insights."* (April 2011)

Dolan's work focuses primarily on the post WW2 military-industrial complex era. I would say his comments above are basically accurate, particularly for this time in history. My only suggestion would be for the reader to look at his definition from the point of view that these breakaway groups did not arise from the WW2 milieu but from over the prior century of activity this book has presented and discussed.

Pinning the origin of breakaways and the secret space program to a firm starting point of the 1940s, or especially to a Roswell type of incident involving a crashed "ET saucer" as many unfortunately do, is short-sighted and dismissive of evidence to the contrary.

Which brings me to the popular ET hypothesis.

Let’s get something established for the record: Walter Bosley is *not* saying ET does not exist. I am *not* saying ET craft have not visited this planet since ancient times, which I discussed earlier in this book. I am *not* saying that modern UFO sightings have absolutely not included ET craft. I have never taken such positions, quite the contrary.

What I am saying is that the ET influence on the airship technology, in my opinion, is so far back in human history as to be categorized as by default and somewhat negligible – because I say those ETs were as human as we are but from somewhere else. I am also saying that I think 90% of UFOs reported are sighting of classified/secret human technology. If there is an ET element to the story in our times, I think it began with whatever contact was made by the 1903, possibly the first of the breakaway groups to venture out into space.

I have mentioned in this book and in various interviews the book *Roswell and the Reich* by Joseph P. Farrell (AUP). I call it an inconvenient book because, frankly, to the ET hypothesis devotee crowd, it is.

Why?

Farrell’s take on the Roswell incident is that behind all the apparent otherworldly aspects is a very human source. I think you can see why I refer to his book often and consider it the best on the subject of Roswell. This does and will continue to annoy the ET crowd because they are in denial.

Every ET theory advocate with whom I’ve had the discussion about Farrell’s book, to a man, has admitted to not having read it. Think about that. They dismiss the hypothesis and categorically reject the evidence, yet have not actually examined the details of Farrell’s argument. And more often than not, they respond emotionally.

Why does the book *Roswell and the Reich* elicit such derision from these people? Because today’s devotion to the ET hypothesis has essentially become a religion and Farrell’s book is heresy. The congregation has simply decided it was an ET craft and they will not hear otherwise – and they do not even want discussion to the contrary to get any air time.

Like Roswell, there is another incident that must be examined outside the insistent ET filter of our times. The reported crash of an object at Aurora, Texas, in April of 1897 was not, in my estimation, anything to do with an extraterrestrial object.

The so called evidence that it was from another planet is all conjecture and assumption; all of it and without exception. If you doubt that, re-read the newspaper accounts and follow that up with Michael Busby's analysis of the event in Chapter 21 of *Solving The 1897 Airship Mystery* to which I have referred much in this book. If after this you still entertain an insistence that Aurora was an ET related event then I don't know what to tell you.

Here is my opinion of the Aurora event: One of the American group's airships crashed, tragically killing the pilot and burning him beyond recognition. The imaginations of the locals got the better of them and it was conflated into the crash of a craft from another world, its occupant's remains deemed alien because they were conveniently unidentifiable. It is unfortunate that the pilot did not survive or that his body was less disfigured, for imagine how that would have changed our discussion here today if we had been able to point to Aurora as an event involving an advanced flying machine built, and clearly operated, by a human being. Instead, we are left with rumor and lore and a lot of wishful thinking.

I have not set out to alienate those who believe that ETs are the primary source of the UFO phenomenon. I also think ETs exist, as stated in this book and elsewhere. However, I have also said in several instances that I think 90% of UFO activity is of a human source and this book is offered as support to that argument. I am also convinced that the assumption that ETs cannot be humans exactly like us is foolish and based on the unacknowledged limits of prevailing theory. When the advocates of the scientific mainstream have sent their representatives to every habitable planet in the universe and have found not a single human being exactly like us, only then can it be said they exist nowhere else but on Earth. Period.

The evidence and the facts demonstrate that the origin of this breakaway civilization and secret space program issue reaches back well before the 20th

Century with the material birth of the breakaway development clearly present in the 19th Century. The story is older than Roswell and the Nazis, and all the more fascinating because it is a *human* story.

In the discussions I have had deep into many nights with close colleagues and few select others, the issue of who the breakaways are has often meandered onto motivation and ethics. Whereas my position is that NJMZa allied itself to and expanded upon the most reprehensible ideology infecting our world, I find the group I call ‘1903’ a different issue.

From my perspective, as a result of my research and experiences during my investigations, I must admit that I find the 1903 to be the more interesting of the two breakaways. I am convinced that they simply got fed up and had the means to say the hell with it all here. I do not blame them. Had I the opportunity to ditch this place, I’d jump at it, too.

The 1903 owes nothing to anyone on this planet. In my view, they truly broke away and have not meddled – except in any instances where they may have assisted those who oppose the NJMZa and their descendant organization. But I think they have established a new world some place where they do not need us and simply don’t want us there.

Wherever they are and whoever they may be, the 1903, or whatever they call themselves, may have shown the way to the best course for humans in the future.

WBB
31 December 2015

Bibliography & Sources

A Classification of American Wealth: History and Genealogy of the Wealthy Families of America, Pt 2: America In The Gilded Age, raken.com

‘Ancient Dwarka: Study Based On Recent Underwater Archaeological Investigations’ by A.S.Gaur, Sundaresh and Sila Tripati, Migration & Diffusion Vol 6 Issue No.21; Significant Finds at Dwarka, T.S.Subramanian, *The Hindu* 23 Feb 07.

Ancestry.com

Balamonte Jr, John V, *Spirit of Vengeance: Nativism and Lousiana Justice*, Louisiana State University Press 1986

Beach Combing's Bizarre History Blog, *Napoleon and the Great Pyramid: Myth and Reality*, 2 December 2013

Bible, various editions: Holman Christian Standard, King James Version, NIV,

Bibliotheke; Apollonius Rhodius, *Argonautica; Jason And The Argonauts* directed by Ray Harryhausen, 1963 Columbia Pictures

Bosley, Walter & Richard B. Spence, *Empire of the Wheel:An Investigation of Occult Espionage and Murder*, Corvos Books 2011

Bosley, Walter, *Empire of the Wheel 2 :Friends From Sonora*, Corvos Books 2013

Bosley, Walter, *Empire of the Wheel 3: The Nameless Ones*, Corvos Books 2014

Bosley, Walter, *Secret Missions: The Hidden Legacy of Old California*, Corvos Books 2014
Bosley, Walter, *Secret Missions 2: The Lost Expedition of Sir Richard Francis Burton*, Corvos Books 2015

Brick, Greg, *History and Geology at Carver's Cave*, gregbrick.org

Bridgman, Timothy P., *Hyperboreans: Myth and History in Celtic-Hellenic Contacts*

Budge, E.A. Wallis, *An Egyptian Hieroglyphic Dictionary* (Murray, London, 1920) Pgs 373-385

Budge, E.A.Wallis , *The Egyptian Book of the Dead*, Courier 1967

Busby, Michael, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, Pelican 2004

Cartwright, Mark, Ancient History Encyclopedia, 9 Sep 2013

Childress, David Hatcher, *Atlantis and the Power System of the Gods: Mercury Vortex and the Power System of Atlantis*, AUP 2000

Childress, David Hatcher, *Extraterrestrial Archeology*, AUP

Childress, David Hatcher, *Technology of the Gods: The Incredible Sciences of the Ancients*, AUP 2000

Churton, Tobias, *Aleister Crowley, The Beast in Berlin:Art, Sex and Magick in the Weimar Republic*, Inner Traditions 2014

Coats, Callum, *Living Energies: Viktor Schauberger's Brilliant Work With Natural Energy Explained*, Gateway 2001

Cooper-Oakley, Isabel, *Traces of a Hidden Tradition in Masonry and Medieval Mysticism*, 1900

Cremo, Michael & Richard Thompson, *Forbidden Archeology: The Hidden History of the Human Race*,
Bhaktivedanta1996 & 1999

Crenshaw, Dennis & P.G. Navarro, *The Secrets of Dellschau*, Anomalist Books 2009

Dietrich, Anton, *Russian Popular Tales*, Norwood 1857, Page 23

Discovering Lewis & Clark, *Meriwether Lewis, Master Mason*, lewis-clark.org/article/ 2091

Dunstan, Simon, *Grey Wolf: The Escape of Adolf Hitler*, Sterling 2013

Encyclopedia Britannica, Cambridge Press, 11th Edition

Epic of Gilgamesh

Eridu Genesis

Farrell, Joseph P., *Covert Wars and Breakaway Civilizations: The Secret Space Program, Celestial Psyops and Hidden Conflicts*, AUP 2012

Farrell, Joseph P., *Covert Wars and the Clash of Civilizations: UFOs, Oligarchs and Space Secrecy*, AUP 2013

Farrell, Joseph P, *Financial Vipers of Venice*, Feral House 2013

Farrell, Joseph P & Scott D. de Hart, *Grid of the Gods: The Aftermath of the Cosmic War and the Physics of the Pyramid Peoples*, AUP 2011

Farrell, Joseph P., *LBJ & The Conspiracy To Kill Kennedy*, AUP 2011

Farrell, Joseph P., *Reich of the Black Sun:Nazi Secret Weapons & The Cold War Allied Legend* , AUP

Farrell, Joseph P., *Roswell and the Reich: The Nazi Connection*, AUP 2010

Farrell, Joseph P, *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics and Ancient Texts*, AUP 2007

Farrell, Joseph P., *The Nazi International: The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control the Worlds of Science, Finance, Space and Conflict*, AUP 2009

Farrell, Joseph P., *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter*, Feral House 2009

Farrell, Joseph P., *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell: The Nazis' Incredible Secret Technology*, AUP 2006

Farrell, Joseph P., *The Third Way: The Nazi International, European Union and Corporate Fascism*, AUP 2015

Farrell, Joseph P, *Thrice Great Hermes and the Janus Age*, AUP

Flynn, David E., *The Geoglyphs of Tiahuanaco: Discovery of Vast Prehistoric Works Built by Giants?*, 24 Feb 2008;

Garci Rodriguez de Montalvo, *The Adventures of Esplandian*, circa 1500

Hall, Manly P, *Secret Teachings of All Ages*, Tarcher/Penguin 2003

Heri, Sesh, The Handprint of Atlas, Corvos Books 2008; Revised 2010

Hoagland, Richard and Mike Bara, *Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA*

Homer, The Odyssey, Book 10

Hunt, Thomas, article on Frank Dimaio, American Mafia History, mob-who.blogspot.com

Jacobsen, Thorkild, *The Harps That Once__: Sumerian Poetry In Translation*, Yale University Press, Sep 1997, Page 150

Kalacakra Tantra

Knight & Lomas, *Uriel's Machine*, Fair Winds 1999

Krishna Dharma (Kenneth Anderson), *Mahabharata:The Greatest Spiritual Epic of All Time*, Torchlight 1999

Lamy, Michael, *Jules Verne, Initie et Initiateur: La Cle du Secret de Rennes-le Chateau et Le Tresor des Rois de France*

Lamy, Michael, *The Secret Message of Jules Verne*, Destiny Books 2007.

Laurence, Richard (Translator) *The Book of Enoch the Prophet*, AUP 2000 reprint of 1883 edition

Levenda, Peter, *The Dark Lord: H. P. Lovecraft, Kenneth Grant and the Typhonian Tradition in Magic*, Ibis Press 2013

Levenda, Peter, *Sinister Forces:A Grimoire of American Political Witchcraft, Book One: The Nine*, Trineday 2005

Lomas, Robert, *Freemasonry and the Birth of Modern Science*, Barnes & Noble Books 2002

Mackey, Albert, *The History of Freemasonry,* Random House 1996

McGraw Electric Railway Manual, Vol 15, 1908, Pgs 434-435

McIntosh, Christopher, *The Rosicrucians: The History, Mythology and Rituals of an Esoteric Order*, Wesier Books 1998, Page 57

Meier,Gabriel, Catholic Encyclopedia 1913 Vol 5

Mike Dash, *Inside the Great Pyramid*, Smithsonian.com 1 Sep 2011

Moore, Clara Bloomfield, *Keely And His Discoveries: Aerial Navigation*, 1893 (Reprint)

Nathan Rosasco

Oliver, George, *Historical Landmarks*

Open Culture, *Fritz Lang Tells the Riveting Story of the Day He Met Joseph Goebbels and Then High-Tailed It Out of Germany,* 28 April 2015, openculture.com

Paijmans, Theo, *Free Energy Pioneer: John Worrell Keely*, AUP 2004, Pgs 383-385;

Pratt, Orson, *Journal of Discourses*, Volume 16, 18 May 1873, Pgs 50-52.\

Prescott, *History of the Conquest of Peru*, Modern Library, Pgs 20-21

Reppetto, Thomas, *American Mafia: A History Of Its Rise To Power*, Henry Holt & Co. 2004

Ridgeon, Lloyd, *Major World Religions: From Their Origins To The Present*, Pg 29

Romano, Stephen, *Charles A. A. Dellschau*, Marquand Books

Schrag, Paul & Xaviant Haze & Michael Tsarion, *The Suppressed History of America: The Murder of Meriwether Lewis and the Mysterious Discoveries of the Lewis and Clark Expedition*, Bear & Co. 2011

Shaw, George Bernard, Lecture to the Eugenics Education Society, Daily Express 4 March 1910

Shaw, George Bernard, Preface in *On the Rocks*, 1933

Shaw, George Bernard, *Prefaces*, London & Constable 1934

Science and Technology Behind Mahabharatha, mahabharathascience.blogspot.com

Smith, Joseph etc, *Book of Mormon*

Spencer, Kate (Editor), *Spokane Club: Living History With A Living Legend*, spokaneclub.org

Strange Maps, bigthink.com, *510-"War is The National Industry of Prussia"*

Talbott, David and Wallace Thornhill, *Thunderbolts of the Gods: A Radical Reinterpretation of Human History and the Evolution of the Solar System,* Mikamar Publishing, 2005.

Teutonic Order (deutscher-orden.de/GB/)

'The Soviet Story' youtube.com

The United Grand Lodge of England

Thomas Jefferson Foundation, monticello.org

Urban, William, *Renaissance Humanism in Prussia: The Court of the Grand Masters*, Monmouth College

Von Daniken, *Odyssey of the Gods: The Alien History of Ancient Greece*, Element 2000, Pgs. 20-22, 58-59, 61, and 93.

Wikipedia

Wilson, Douglas, *Thomas Jefferson's Library*, Lawbook Exchange Ltd 2010

Wood, Judy, PhD, *Where Did The Towers Go? Evidence of Directed Free-Energy Technology On 9/11*, The New Investigation 2010

---

[1]

[2]

AUTHOR OF THE *NEW YORK TIMES* BESTSELLER *AREA 51*

ANNIE JACOBSEN

OPERATION PAPERCLIP

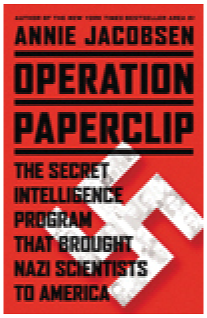
THE SECRET INTELLIGENCE PROGRAM THAT BROUGHT NAZI SCIENTISTS TO AMERICA

OPERATION PAPERCLIP

THE SECRET INTELLIGENCE PROGRAM THAT BROUGHT NAZI SCIENTISTS TO AMERICA

ANNIE JACOBSEN

Little, Brown and Company
New York Boston London


ANNIE JACOBSEN
OPERATION
PAPERCLIP
THE SECRET INTELLIGENCE PROGRAM THAT BROUGHT NAZI SCIENTISTS TO AMERICA

Begin Reading

Table of Contents

Photos

Newsletters

Copyright Page

In accordance with the U.S. Copyright Act of 1976, the scanning, uploading, and electronic sharing of any part of this book without the permission of the publisher constitute unlawful piracy and theft of the author’s intellectual property. If you would like to use material from the book (other than for review purposes), prior written permission must be obtained by contacting the publisher at permissions@hbgusa.com. Thank you for your support of the author’s rights.

For Kevin

PROLOGUE

This is a book about Nazi scientists and American government secrets. It is about how dark truths can be hidden from the public by U.S. officials in the name of national security, and it is about the unpredictable, often fortuitous, circumstances through which truth gets revealed.

Operation Paperclip was a postwar U.S. intelligence program that brought German scientists to America under secret military contracts. The program had a benign public face and a classified body of secrets and lies. "I'm mad on technology," Adolf Hitler told his inner circle at a dinner party in 1942, and in the aftermath of the German surrender more than sixteen hundred of Hitler's technologists would become America's own. What follows puts a spotlight on twenty-one of these men.

Under Operation Paperclip, which began in May of 1945, the scientists who helped the Third Reich wage war continued their weapons-related work for the U.S. government, developing rockets, chemical and biological weapons, aviation and space medicine (for enhancing military pilot and astronaut performance), and many other armaments at a feverish and paranoid pace that came to define the Cold War. The age of weapons of mass destruction had begun, and with it came the treacherous concept of brinkmanship—the art of pursuing dangerous policy to the limits of safety before stopping. Hiring dedicated Nazis was without precedent, entirely unprincipled, and inherently dangerous not just because, as Undersecretary of War Robert Patterson stated when debating if he should approve Paperclip, "These men are enemies," but because it was counter to democratic ideals. The men profiled in this book were not nominal Nazis. Eight of the twenty-one—Otto Ambros, Theodor Benzinger, Kurt Blome, Walter Dornberger, Siegfried Knemeyer, Walter Schreiber, Walter Schieber, and Wernher von Braun—each at some point worked side by side with Adolf Hitler, Heinrich Himmler, or Hermann Göring during the war. Fifteen of the twenty-one were dedicated members of the Nazi Party; ten of them also joined the ultra-violent, ultra-nationalistic Nazi Party paramilitary squads, the SA (Sturmabteilung, or Storm Troopers) and the SS (Schutzstaffel, or Protection Squadron); two wore the Golden Party Badge, indicating favor bestowed by the Führer; one was given an award of one million reichsmarks for scientific achievement.

Six of the twenty-one stood trial at Nuremberg, a seventh was released without trial under mysterious circumstances, and an eighth stood trial in Dachau for regional war crimes. One was convicted of mass murder and slavery, served some time in prison, was granted clemency, and then was hired by the U.S. Department of Energy. They came to America at the behest of the Joint Chiefs of Staff. Some officials believed that by endorsing the Paperclip program they were accepting the lesser of two evils—that if America didn't recruit these scientists, the Soviet Communists surely would. Other generals and colonels respected and admired these men and said so.

To comprehend the impact of Operation Paperclip on American national security during the early days of the Cold War, and the legacy of war-fighting technology it has left behind, it is important first to understand that the program was governed out of an office in the elite "E" ring of the Pentagon. The Joint Intelligence Objectives Agency (JIOA) was created solely and specifically to recruit and hire Nazi scientists and put them on weapons projects and in scientific intelligence programs within the army, the navy, the air force, the CIA (starting in 1947), and other organizations. In some cases, when individual scientists had been too close to Hitler, the JIOA hired them to work at U.S. military facilities in occupied Germany. The JIOA was a subcommittee of the Joint Intelligence Committee (JIC), which provided national security information for the Joint Chiefs of Staff. The JIC remains the least known and least studied U.S. intelligence agency of the twentieth century. To understand the mind-set of the Joint Intelligence Committee, consider this: Within one year of the atomic bombings of Hiroshima and Nagasaki, the JIC warned the Joint Chiefs of Staff that the United States needed to prepare for "total war" with the Soviets—to include atomic, chemical, and biological warfare—and they even set an estimated start date of 1952. This book focuses on that uneasy period, from 1945 to 1952, in which the JIOA's recruitment of Nazi scientists was forever on the rise, culminating in Accelerated Paperclip, which allowed individuals previously deemed undesirable to be brought to the United States—including Major General Dr. Walter Schreiber, the surgeon general of the Third Reich.

Operation Paperclip left behind a legacy of ballistic missiles, sarin gas cluster bombs, underground bunkers, space capsules, and weaponized bubonic plague. It also left behind a trail of once-secret documents that I accessed to report this book, including postwar interrogation reports, army intelligence security dossiers, Nazi Party paperwork, Allied intelligence armaments reports, declassified JIOA memos, Nuremberg trial testimony, oral histories, a general's desk diaries, and a Nuremberg war crimes investigator's journal. Coupled with exclusive interviews and correspondence with children and grandchildren of these Nazi scientists, five of whom shared with me the personal papers and unpublished writings of their family members, what follows is the unsettling story of Operation Paperclip.

All of the men profiled in this book are now dead. Enterprising achievers as they were, just as the majority of them won top military and science awards when they served the Third Reich, so it went that many of them won top U.S. military and civilian awards serving the United States. One had a U.S. government building named after him, and, as of 2013, two continue to have prestigious national science prizes given annually in their names. One invented the ear thermometer. Others helped man get to the moon.

How did this happen, and what does this mean now? Does accomplishment cancel out past crimes? These are among the central questions in this dark and complicated tale. It is a story populated with Machiavellian connivers and men who dedicate their lives to designing weapons for the coming war. It is also a story about victory, and what victory can often entail. It is rife with Nazis, many of whom were guilty of accessory to murder but were never charged, and lived out their lives in prosperity in the United States. In the instances where a kind of justice is delivered, it rings of half-measure.

Or perhaps there is a hero in the record of fact, which continues to be filled in.

PART I

“Only the dead have seen the end of war.”

—Unknown

CHAPTER ONE

The War and the Weapons

It was November 26, 1944, and Strasbourg, France, was still under attack. The cobblestone streets of this medieval city were in chaos. Three days before, the Second French Armored Division had chased the Germans out of town and officially liberated the city from the Nazis, but now the Allies were having a difficult time holding the enemy back. German mortar rounds bombarded the streets. Air battles raged overhead, and in the center of town, inside a fancy apartment on Quai Klébar, armed U.S. soldiers guarded the Dutch-American particle physicist Samuel Goudsmit as he sat in an armchair scouring files. The apartment belonged to a German virus expert named Dr. Eugen Haagen, believed to be a key developer in the covert Nazi biological weapons program. Haagen had apparently fled his apartment in a hurry just a few days prior, leaving behind a framed photograph of Hitler on the mantel and a cache of important documents in the cabinets.

Goudsmit and two colleagues, bacteriological warfare experts Bill Cromartie and Fred Wardenberg, had been reading over Dr. Haagen's documents for hours. Based on what was in front of them, they planned to be here all night. Most of Strasbourg was without electricity, so Goudsmit and his colleagues were reading by candlelight.

Samuel Goudsmit led a unit engaged in a different kind of battle than the one being fought by the combat soldiers and airmen outside. Goudsmit and his team were on the hunt for Nazi science—German weaponry more advanced than what the Allies possessed. Goudsmit was scientific director of this Top Secret mission, code-named Operation Alsos, an esoteric and dangerous endeavor that was an offshoot of the Manhattan Project. Goudsmit and his colleagues were far more accustomed to working inside a laboratory than on a battlefield, and yet here they were, in the thick of the fight. It was up to these men of science to determine just how close the Third Reich was to waging atomic, biological, or chemical warfare against Allied troops. This was called A-B-C warfare by Alsos. An untold number of lives depended on the success of the operation.

Samuel Goudsmit had qualities that made him the mission's ideal science director. Born in Holland, he spoke Dutch and German fluently. At age twenty-three he had become famous among fellow physicists for identifying the concept of electron spin. Two years later he earned his PhD at the University of Leiden and moved to America to teach. During the war, Goudsmit worked on weapons development through a government-sponsored lab at MIT. This gave him unique insight into the clandestine world of atomic, biological, and chemical warfare and had put him in this chair, reading quickly in the flickering candlelight. Just days before, Goudsmit's team had captured four of Hitler's top nuclear scientists and had learned from them that the Nazis' atomic bomb project had been a failure. This was an unexpected intelligence coup for Alsos—and a huge relief. The focus now turned to the Reich's biological weapons program, rumored to be well advanced.

Goudsmit and his team of Alsos agents knew that the University of Strasbourg had been doubling as a biological warfare research base for the Third Reich. Once a bastion of French academic prowess, this four-hundred-year-old university had been taken over by the Reich Research Council, Hermann Göring's science organization, in 1941. Since then, the university had been transformed into a model outpost of Nazi science. Most of the university's professors had been replaced with men who were members of the Nazi Party and of Heinrich Himmler's SS.

On this November night, Goudsmit made the decision to have his team set up camp in Professor Haagen's apartment and read all the documents in a straight shot. Alsos security team members set their guns aside, organized a meal of Krations on the dining room table, and settled in to a long night of cards. Goudsmit and the biological weapons experts Cromartie and Wardenberg sat back in Professor Haagen's easy chairs and worked on getting through all the files. Night fell and it began to snow, adding confusion to the scene outside. Hours passed.

Then Goudsmit and Wardenberg "let out a yell at the same moment," remembered Goudsmit, "for we had both found papers that suddenly raised the curtain of secrecy for us." There in Professor Haagen's apartment, "in apparently harmless communication, lay hidden a wealth of secret information available to anyone who understood it.” Goudsmit was not deciphering code. The papers were not stamped Top Secret. “They were just the usual gossip between colleagues… ordinary memos,” Goudsmit recalled. But they were memos that were never meant to be found by American scientists. The plan was for the Third Reich to rule for a thousand years.

“Of the 100 prisoners you sent me,” Haagen wrote to a colleague at the university, an anatomist named Dr. August Hirt, “18 died in transport. Only 12 are in a condition suitable for my experiments. I therefore request that you send me another 100 prisoners, between 20 and 40 years of age, who are healthy and in a physical condition comparable to soldiers. Heil Hitler, Prof. Dr. E. Haagen.” The document was dated November 15, 1943.

For Samuel Goudsmit the moment was a stunning reveal. Here, casually tucked away in a group of Haagen’s personal papers, he had discovered one of the most diabolical secrets of the Third Reich. Nazi doctors were conducting medical experiments on healthy humans. This was new information to the scientific community. But there was equally troubling information in the subtext of the letter as far as biological weapons were concerned. Haagen was a virus expert who specialized in creating vaccines. The fact that he was involved in human medical experiments made a kind of twisted sense to Goudsmit in a way that few others could interpret. In order to successfully unleash a biological weapon against an enemy force, the attacking army had to have already created its own vaccine against the deadly pathogen it intended to spread. This vaccine would act as the shield for its own soldiers and civilians; the biological weapon would act as the sword. The document Goudsmit was looking at was a little more than a year old. How much vaccine progress had the Nazis made since?

As Goudsmit stared at the documents in front of him, he was faced with a troubling reality. Once, Eugen Haagen had been a temperate man—a physician dedicated to helping people. In 1932 Dr. Haagen had been awarded a prestigious fellowship by the Rockefeller Foundation, in New York City, where he had helped to develop the world’s first yellow fever vaccine. In 1937 he had been a contender for the Nobel Prize. Haagen had been one of Germany’s leading men of medicine. Now here he was testing deadly vaccines on once healthy prisoners from concentration camps supplied to him by Himmler’s SS. If a leading doctor like Haagen had been able to conduct these kinds of research experiments with impunity, what else might be going on?

Goudsmit and his colleagues scoured Dr. Haagen’s papers, paying particular attention to the names of the doctors with whom Haagen corresponded about his prisoner shipments, his vaccine tests, and his future laboratory plans. Goudsmit started putting together a list of Nazi scientists who were now top priorities for Alsos to locate, capture, and interview. Dr. Eugen Haagen would never become a Paperclip scientist. After the war he would flee to the Soviet zone of occupation in Germany and work for the Russians. But among the names discovered in his apartment were two physicians important to Operation Paperclip. They were Dr. Kurt Blome, deputy surgeon general of the Third Reich, and Surgeon General Walter Schreiber. Dr. Blome was in charge of the Reich’s biological weapons programs; Dr. Schreiber was in charge of its vaccines. The sword and the shield.

Before Hitler rose to power, Blome and Schreiber had been internationally renowned physicians. Had Nazi science also made monsters of these men?

Almost two weeks after the Alsos mission’s discovery at Strasbourg, three hundred miles to the north, in Germany, a party was under way. There, deep in the dark pine forests of Coesfeld, a magnificent moated eight-hundred-year-old stone castle called Varlar was being readied for a celebration. The castle was a medieval showpiece of the Münster region, resplendent with turrets, balustrades, and lookout towers. On this night, December 9, 1944, the banquet hall had been decorated in full Nazi Party regalia. Trellises of ivy graced the podium. Flags featuring Germany’s national eagle-and-swastika emblem hung from walls, a motif repeated in each china place setting where the guests of the Third Reich celebrated and dined.

Outside, on Castle Varlar’s grounds, the snow-covered fields were also being readied. For centuries the castle had been a monastery, its broad lawns used as sacred spaces for Benedictine monks to stroll about and consider God. Now, in the frigid December cold, army technicians made last-minute adjustments to the metal platforms of portable rocket-launch pads. On each sat a missile called the V-2.

The giant V-2 rocket was the most advanced flying weapon ever created. It was 46 feet long, carried a warhead filled with up to 2,000 pounds of explosives in its nose cone, and could travel a distance of 190 miles at speeds up to five times the speed of sound. Its earlier version, the V-1 flying bomb, had been raining terror down on cities across northern Europe since the first one hit London, on June 13, 1944. The V-2 rocket was faster and more fearsome. No Allied fighter aircraft could shoot down the V-2 from the sky, both because of the altitude at which it traveled and the speed of its descent. The specter of it crashing down into population centers, annihilating whoever or whatever happened to be there, was terrifying. "The reverberations from each [V-2] rocket explosion spread up to 20 miles," the *Christian Science Monitor* reported. The V-weapons bred fear. Since the start of the war, Hitler had boasted about fearsome "hitherto unknown, unique weapons" that would render his enemies defenseless. Over time, and with the aid of Propaganda Minister Joseph Goebbels, references to these mysterious weapons had been consolidated in a singular, terrifying catchphrase: Nazi wonder weapons, or *Wunderwaffe*. Now, throughout the summer and fall of 1944, the V-weapons made the threat a reality. That the Nazis had unfurled a wonder weapon of such power and potential this late in the war made many across Europe terrified about what else Hitler might have. Plans to evacuate one million civilians from London's city center were put in place as British intelligence officers predicted that a next generation of V-weapons might carry deadly chemical or biological weapons in the nose cone. England issued 4.3 million gas masks to its city dwellers and told people to pray.

Major General Walter Dornberger was the man in charge of the rocket programs for the German army's weapons department. Dornberger was small, bald on top, and when he appeared in photographs alongside Himmler he often wore a long, shin-length leather coat to match the Reichsführer-SS. He was a career soldier—this was his second world war. He was also a talented engineer. Dornberger held four patents in rocket development and a degree in engineering from the Institute of Technology in Berlin. He was one of four honored guests at the Castle Varlar party. Later, he recalled the scene. "Around the castle in the dark forest were the launching positions of V-2 troops in [our] operation against Antwerp." It had been Dornberger's idea to set up mobile launch pads, as opposed to firing V-2s from fortified bases in the Reich-controlled part of France—a wise idea, considering Allied forces had been pushing across the continent toward Germany since the Normandy landings in June.

Antwerp was Belgium’s bustling, northernmost port city, located just 137 miles away from the V-2 launch pads at Castle Varlar. For a thousand years it had been a strategic city in Western Europe, conquered and liberated more than a dozen times. In this war Belgium had suffered terrible losses under four long years of brutal Nazi rule. Three months prior, on September 4, 1944, the Allies liberated Antwerp. There was joy in the streets when the British Eleventh Armored Division rolled into town. Since then, American and British forces had been relying heavily on the Port of Antwerp to bring in men and matériel to support fighting on the western front and also to prepare for the surge into Germany. Now, in the second week of December 1944, Hitler intended to reclaim Antwerp. The Führer and his inner circle were preparing to launch their last, still secret counteroffensive in the Ardennes Forest, and for this the German army needed Antwerp shut down. The job fell to the V-2. The party at Castle Varlar was to be a night of warfare and celebration, with one 42,000-pound liquid-fueled rocket being fired off at the enemy after the next, while the guests honored four of the men who had been instrumental in building the wonder weapon for the Reich.

The man at the scientific center of the V-2 rocket program was a thirty-two-year-old aristocrat and wunderkind-physicist named Wernher von Braun. Von Braun was at Castle Varlar to receive, alongside Dornberger, one of Hitler’s highest and most coveted noncombat decorations, the Knight’s Cross of the War Service Cross. Also receiving the honor were Walther Riedel, the top scientist in the rocket design bureau, and Heinz Kunze, a representative from the Reich’s armaments ministry. These four medals were to be presented by Albert Speer, Hitler’s minister of armaments and war production.

Armaments are the aggregate of a nation’s military strength, and as minister of weapons, Speer was in charge of scientific armaments programs for the Third Reich. He joined the Nazi Party in 1931, at the age of twenty-six, and rose to power in the party as Hitler’s architect. In that role he created buildings that symbolized the Reich and represented its ideas and quickly became a favorite, joining Hitler’s inner circle. In February 1942 Hitler made Speer his minister of armaments and war production after the former minister, Fritz Todt, died in a plane crash. By the following month

Speer had persuaded Hitler to make all other elements of the German economy second to armaments production, which Hitler did by decree. “Total productivity in armaments increased by 59.6 per cent,” Speer claimed after the war. At the age of thirty-seven, Albert Speer was now responsible for all science and technology programs necessary for waging war. Of the hundreds of weapons projects he was involved in, it was the V-2 that he favored most.

Like von Braun, Speer was from a wealthy, well-respected German family, not quite a baron but someone who wished he was. Speer liked to exchange ideas with youthful, ambitious rocket scientists like Wernher von Braun. He admired “young men able to work unhampered by bureaucratic obstacles and pursue ideas which at times sounded thoroughly utopian.”

As for General Dornberger, the Castle Varlar celebration was a crowning moment of his career. The pomp and power thrilled him, he later recalled. “It was a scene,” Dornberger said after the war—the excitement of the evening, “[t]he blackness of the night.…” At one point during the meal, in between courses, the lights inside the castle were turned off and the grand banquet hall was plunged into darkness. After a moment of anticipatory silence, a tall curtain at the end of the long hall swung open, allowing guests to gaze out across the dark, wintry lawns. “The room suddenly lit [up] with the flickering light of the rocket’s exhaust and [was] shaken by the reverberations of its engines,” remembered Dornberger. Outside, perched atop a mobile rocket-launch pad, the spectacle began. An inferno of burning rocket fuel blasted out the bottom of the V-2, powering the massive rocket into flight, headed toward Belgium. For Dornberger, rocket launches instilled “unbelievable” feelings of pride. Once, during an earlier launch, the general wept with joy.

On this night the excitement focus alternated—from a rocket launch to award decoration, then back to a rocket launch again. After each launch, Speer decorated one of the medal recipients. The crowd clapped and cheered and sipped champagne until the banquet hall was again filled with darkness and the next rocket fired off the castle lawn.

This particular party would end, but the celebrations continued elsewhere. The team returned to Peenemünde, the isolated island facility on the Baltic Coast where the V-weapons had been conceived and originally produced, and on the night of December 16, 1944, a party in the Peenemünde’s officer’s club again honored the men. Von Braun and

Dornberger, wearing crisp tuxedos, each with a Knight’s Cross from Hitler dangling around his neck, read telegrams of congratulations to Nazi officials as the group toasted their success with flutes of champagne. In the eyes of the Reich, Hitler’s rocketeers had good reason to celebrate. In Antwerp at 3:20 p.m., a V-2 rocket had smashed into the Rex Cinema, where almost 1,200 people were watching a Gary Cooper film. It was the highest death toll from a single rocket attack during the war—567 casualties.

The Allies were obsessed with the Nazis’ V-weapons. If they had been ready earlier, the course of war would have been different, explained General Dwight D. Eisenhower, Supreme Allied Commander in Europe. “It seemed likely that, if the German had succeeded in perfecting and using these new weapons six months earlier than he did, our invasion of Europe would have proved exceedingly difficult, perhaps impossible,” Eisenhower said. Instead, circumstance worked in the Allies’ favor, and by the fall of 1944, Allied forces had a firm foothold on the European continent. But back in Washington, D.C., inside the Pentagon, a secret, U.S.-only rocket-related scientific intelligence mission was in the works. Colonel Gervais William Trichel was the first chief of the newly created Rocket Branch inside U.S. Army Ordnance. Now Trichel was putting together a group of army scientists to send to Europe as part of Special Mission V-2. The United States was twenty years behind Germany in rocket development, but Trichel saw an opportunity to close that gap and save the U.S. Army millions of dollars in research and development costs. Trichel’s team would capture these rockets and everything related to them for shipment back to the United States. The mission would begin as soon as the U.S. Army arrived in the town of Nordhausen, Germany.

The British had the lead on intelligence regarding V-weapons. Their photo interpreters had determined exactly where the rockets were being assembled, at a factory in central Germany in the naturally fortified Harz Mountains. Trying to bomb this factory from the air was useless, because the facility had been built underground in an old gypsum mine. While the Americans made plans inside the Pentagon, and while von Braun and his colleagues drank champagne at Peenemünde, the men actually assembling the Reich’s V-2 rockets endured an entirely different existence. Nazi science had brought back the institution of slavery all across the Reich, and concentration camp prisoners were being worked to death in the service of war. The workers building rockets included thousands of grotesquely malnourished prisoners who toiled away inside a sprawling underground tunnel complex known by its euphemism, Mittelwerk, the Middle Works. This place was also called Nordhausen, after the town, and Dora, the code name for its concentration camp.

To average Germans the Harz was a land of fairy tales, of dark forests and stormy mountains. To those who read Goethe, here was the place where the witches and the devil collided at Brocken Mountain. Even in America, in Disney's popular film *Fantasia*, these mountains had meaning. They were where forces of evil gathered to do their handiwork. But at the end of the Second World War, the Reich's secret, subterranean penal colony at Nordhausen was fact, not fiction. The Mittelwerk was a place where ordinary citizens—of France, Holland, Belgium, Italy, Czechoslovakia, Hungary, Yugoslavia, Russia, Poland, and Germany—had been transformed into the Third Reich's slaves.

The underground factory at Nordhausen had been in operation since late August 1943, after a Royal Air Force attack on the Peenemünde facility up north forced armaments production to move elsewhere. The day after that attack, Heinrich Himmler, Reichsführer-SS, paid a visit to Hitler and proposed they move rocket production underground. Hitler agreed, and the SS was put in charge of supplying slaves and overseeing facilities construction. The individual in charge of expanding Nordhausen from a mine to a tunnel complex was Brigadier General Hans Kammler, a civil engineer and architect who, earlier in his career, built the gas chambers at Auschwitz-Birkenau.

The first group of 107 slave laborers arrived at the Mittelwerk in late August 1943. They came from the Buchenwald concentration camp, located fifty miles to the southeast. The wrought-iron sign over the Buchenwald gate read *Jedem das Seine*, "Everyone gets what he deserves." Digging tunnels was hard labor, but the SS feared prisoners might revolt if they had mining tools, so the men dug with their bare hands. The old mine had been used by the German army as a fuel storage facility. There were two long tunnels running parallel into the mountain that needed to be widened now for railcars. There were also smaller cross-tunnels every few meters that needed to be lengthened to create more workspace. In September 1943 machinery and personnel arrived from Peenemünde. Notable among the staff, and important to Operation Paperclip, was the man in charge of production, a high school graduate named Arthur Rudolph.

Rudolph's specialty was rocket engine assembly. He had worked under von Braun in this capacity since 1934. Rudolph was a Nazi ideologue; he joined the party before there was any national pressure to do so, in 1931. What he lacked in academic pedigree he made up for as a slave driver. As the Mittelwerk operations director, Rudolph worked with the SS construction staff to build the underground factory. Then he oversaw production on the assembly lines for V-weapons scientific director Wernher von Braun.

The prisoners worked twelve-hour shifts, seven days a week, putting together V-weapons. By the end of the first two months there were eight thousand men living and working in this cramped underground space. There was no fresh air in the tunnels, no ventilation system, no water, and very little light. "Blasting went on day and night and the dust after every blast was so thick that it was impossible to see five steps ahead," read one report. Laborers slept inside the tunnels on wood bunk beds. There were no washing facilities and no sanitation. Latrines were barrels cut in half. The workers suffered and died from starvation, dysentery, pleurisy, pneumonia, tuberculosis, and phlegmasia from beatings. The men were walking skeletons, skin stretched over bones. Some perished from ammonia burns to the lungs. Others died by being crushed from the weight of the rocket parts they were forced to carry. The dead were replaceable. Humans and machine parts went into the tunnels. Rockets and corpses came out. Workers who were slow on the production lines were beaten to death. Insubordinates were garroted or hanged. After the war, war crimes investigators determined that approximately half of the sixty thousand men eventually brought to Nordhausen were worked to death.

The Mittelwerk wasn't the first slave labor camp created and run by the Third Reich. The SS recognized the value of slave labor in the mid-1930s. Humans could be selected from the ever-growing prisoner populations at concentration camps and put to work in quarries and factories. By 1939 the SS had masterminded a vast network of state-sponsored slavery across Nazi-occupied Europe through an innocuous-sounding division called the SS Business Administration Main Office. This office was overseen by Heinrich Himmler but required partnerships. These included many companies from the private sector, including IG Farben, Volkswagen, Heinkel, and Steyr-Daimler-Puch. The most significant partner was Albert Speer's Ministry of Armaments and War Production. When Speer took over as armaments minister in February 1942 his first challenge, he said, was to figure out how to galvanize war production and make it more efficient. Speer's solution was to get rid of bureaucracy and use more slave laborers. He himself had been connected to the slave labor programs with the SS for years, including when he was an architect. Speer's buildings required vast amounts of stone, which was quarried by concentration camp laborers from Mauthausen and Flossenbürg.

The SS Business Administration Main Office specialized in engineering dangerous and fast construction projects, as was the case with the V-2 facility at Nordhausen. "Pay no attention to the human victims," Brigadier General Hans Kammler told his staff overseeing construction in the tunnels. "The work must proceed and be finished in the shortest possible time." In the first six months of tunnel work, 2,882 laborers died. Albert Speer praised Kammler for what he considered to be a great achievement in engineering, setting things up so efficiently and so fast. "[Your work] far exceeds anything ever done in Europe and is unsurpassed even by American standards," wrote Speer.

There were other reasons why the use of slave labor was so important to wonder weapons production, namely, the secrecy it ensured. The V-2 was a classified weapons project; the less Allied intelligence knew about it, the better for the Reich. When Albert Speer and Heinrich Himmler met with Hitler in August of 1943 to brief him on the benefits of using slave labor, Himmler reminded the Führer that if the Reich's entire workforce were to be concentration camp prisoners, "all contact with the outside world would be eliminated. Prisoners don't even receive mail."

In the spring of 1944, V-2 production had accelerated to the point where the SS provided Mittelwerk managers with their own concentration camp, Dora, which in turn grew to include thirty subcamps. The man in charge of "personnel" at the Mittelwerk, its general manager, was a forty-six-year-old engineer named Georg Rickhey, an ardent Nazi and party member since 1931. On Rickhey's résumé, later used by the Americans to employ him, Rickhey described himself as "Mittelwerk General Manager, production of all 'V' and rocket weapons, construction of underground mass-production facilities, director of entire concern." As general manager of the sprawling, subterranean enterprise, Rickhey was in charge of “renting” slaves from the SS. As a former Demag Armor Works executive, he had already overseen the creation of more than 1.5 million square feet of underground tunnels around Berlin, all dug by slaves. With this experience Rickhey had become a veteran negotiator between private industry and the SS Business Administration Main Office in the procurement of slaves. “The SS began, in effect, a rent-a-slave service to firms and government enterprises at a typical rate of four marks a day for unskilled workers and six marks for skilled ones,” writes V-weapon historian Michael J. Neufeld. The slaves were disposable. When they died they were replaced. At Nordhausen the SS gave Rickhey a discount, charging the Mittelwerk between two and three reichsmarks per man, per day.

On May 6, 1944, days after becoming general manager of the Mittelwerk, Rickhey called a meeting to discuss how best to acquire more prisoners for slave labor. Wernher von Braun, Walter Dornberger, and Arthur Rudolph were all present. It was decided that the SS should enslave another eighteen hundred skilled French workers to fill the shoes of those who had already been worked to death. The record indicates that von Braun, Dornberger, and Rudolph showed no objection to Rickhey’s plan.

In August, the same problem was again at issue. This time Wernher von Braun initiated the action himself. On August 15, 1944, von Braun wrote a letter to a Mittelwerk engineer, Albin Sawatzki, describing a new laboratory he wanted to set up inside the tunnels. Von Braun told Sawatzki that to expedite the process, he had taken it upon himself to procure the slave laborers from the Buchenwald concentration camp.

“During my last visit to the Mittelwerk, you proposed to me that we use the good technical education of detainees available to you [from] Buchenwald,” wrote von Braun. “I immediately looked into your proposal by going to Buchenwald [myself], together with Dr. Simon [a colleague], to seek out more qualified detainees. I have arranged their transfer to the Mittelwerk with Standartenführer [Colonel] Pister,” the commandant of Buchenwald.

In December of 1944, with slave laborers dying by the thousands in the Mittelwerk tunnels and V-2 rockets crashing into civilian population centers, causing mayhem and terror across Europe, it would have been hard to imagine that some of those directly responsible would ever be regarded as individuals of great value to the United States. And yet in less than a year

Arthur Rudolph, Georg Rickhey, Wernher von Braun, Major General Walter Dornberger, and other rocket engineers would secretly be heading to America to work. In the last days of World War II few would ever have believed such a thing.

But the war's last days were coming. Just three weeks after the celebration at Castle Varlar, Albert Speer found himself with a lot less to celebrate. Visiting the Belgian border town of Houffalize, accompanied by an SS armored force commander named Josef "Sepp" Dietrich, Speer had what he would describe in his 1969 memoir as a realization. Gazing upon the bodies of hundreds of dead German soldiers killed in a recent Allied bomber attack, Speer decided the war was over for the Reich. The German war machine could no longer compete against the force and will of the Allied offensive. "Howling and exploding bombs, clouds illuminated in red and yellow hues, droning motors, and no defense anywhere—I was stunned by this scene of military impotence which Hitler's military miscalculations had given such a grotesque setting," Speer wrote. Standing there in Houffalize, Speer—Hitler's minister of armaments and war production—decided to flee from the danger zone.

At 4:00 a.m. on the morning of December 31, under cover of darkness, Speer and an aide climbed into a private car and hurried east, headed for the comforts of a sprawling mountaintop castle outside Frankfurt called Schloss Kransberg, or Castle Kransberg. Built on a steep, rocky cliff in the Taunus Mountains, the castle was one of Hermann Göring's Luftwaffe (German air force) headquarters. Just as many of Hitler's scientists would soon become American scientists, so would many of the Reich's headquarters and command posts become key facilities used for Operation Paperclip. Castle Kransberg also had a storied past in the history of warfare. The structure dated from the eleventh century, but its original foundation had been built on top of the ruins of a ring-wall fortification constructed in the time of the Roman Empire. Battles had been waged in this region, on and off, for over two thousand years.

Castle Kransberg was grand and splendid, built piecemeal over the centuries to include watchtowers, half-timbered meeting halls, and stone walls. It had 150-odd rooms, including a wing that had been redesigned and renovated by Albert Speer in 1939, when Speer was still Hitler's architect. At Hitler's behest Speer added several state-of-the art defense features to Kransberg Castle, including a twelve-hundred-square-foot underground bunker complex, complete with poison gas air locks designed to protect inhabitants from a chemical warfare attack. Now here was Speer, having fled from the front lines to hide out in this citadel. The next time he would live here it would be as a prisoner of the Americans.

Hitler had his own headquarters just a few miles away. Adlerhorst, or the Eagle's Nest, had also been designed by Speer. It was a series of small cement bunkers at the edge of a long stretch of valley near the spa town of Bad Nauheim. Few knew it was there. From Adlerhorst, Hitler had been directing the Ardennes campaign—the Battle of the Bulge.

Arriving at Kransberg Castle late at night after fleeing Houffalize, Speer and his aide were shown to their quarters, where they freshened up before driving over to Adlerhorst to celebrate the coming year—1945—with Hitler. When Speer arrived at the Eagle's Nest at 2:30 a.m. on January 1, Hitler, who never drank, appeared drunk. "He was in the grip of a permanent euphoria," remembered Speer. Hitler made a toast and promised that the present low point in the war would soon be overcome. "His [Hitler's] magnetic gifts were still operative," Speer later recalled. In the end Germany would be victorious, Hitler said. This was enough for Speer to change his mind about losing the war.

Two weeks later, on January 15, with the war allegedly still winnable, Adolf Hitler boarded his armored train and began the nineteen-hour trip to Berlin, where he would spend the rest of his life living underground in the Führerbunker (Führerhauptquartier, or FHQ) in Berlin. The bunker was a fortress of engineering prowess, built beneath the New Reich Chancellery. Its roof, buried under several tons of earth, was sixteen feet thick. Its walls were six feet wide. Living inside the Führerbunker, with its low ceilings and cryptlike corridors, was "like being stranded in a cement submarine," said one of Hitler's SS honor guards, Captain Beermann. Beermann described a "bat-like routine of part-time prisoners kept in a cave. Miserable rats in a musty cement tomb in Berlin." Not everyone shared the sentiment. Months later, when Mittelwerk general manager Georg Rickhey was angling to get a job from the Americans, he would boast to army officers that he'd overseen construction of the grand Führerbunker in Berlin.

Now, in mid-January 1945, with Hitler moving back to Berlin, it was decided that Speer should head east, to Silesia, in Poland. There, he was to survey what was going on. Important chemical weapons factories had been built in Poland, armaments ventures jointly pursued with IG Farben, a chemical industry conglomerate. The location of these facilities was significant; Poland was, for the most part, out of reach of Allied bombing campaigns. But a new threat was bearing down. The Soviets had just launched their great offensive in Poland, a final military campaign that would take the Red Army all the way to Berlin. Germany was being invaded from both sides—east and west—squeezed as in a vise.

The same day that Hitler left the Eagle’s Nest, Speer was driven to Poland. There, he witnessed firsthand what little was left of the Reich’s war machine. On January 21, he went to the village of Oppeln to check in with Field Marshal Ferdinand Schörner, newly appointed commander of the army group, and learned that very little of the Wehrmacht’s fighting forces remained intact. Nearly every soldier and every war machine had been captured or destroyed. Burnt-out tank hulls littered the snow-covered roads. Thousands of dead German soldiers lay in ditches along the roadsides, but many more dead soldiers swung eerily from trees. Those who dared desert the German army had been killed by Field Marshal Schörner, a ferocious and fanatical Nazi Party loyalist who had earned his moniker, Schörner the Bloody. The dead German soldiers had placards hanging around their necks. “I am a deserter,” they read. “I have declined to defend German women and children and therefore I have been hanged.”

During Speer’s meeting with Schörner, he was told that no one had any idea exactly how far the Red Army was from overtaking the very spot where they were standing, only that the onslaught was inevitable. Speer checked into an otherwise empty hotel and tried to sleep.

For decades, this night remained vivid in Albert Speer’s mind. “In my room hung an etching by Käthe Kollwitz: La Carmagnole,” remembered Speer as an old man. “It showed a yowling mob dancing with hate-contorted faces around a guillotine. Off to one side a weeping woman cowered on the ground.… The weird figures of the etching haunted my fitful sleep,” wrote Speer. There, in his Oppeln hotel room, Albert Speer was overcome by a thought that had to have been preoccupying many Nazis’ minds. After Germany, what will become of me? The guillotine? Will I be torn apart by a yowling mob?

Jedem das Seine. Could it be true? Does everyone get what he deserves?

The following week, on January 30, 1945, Speer wrote a memorandum to Hitler outlining the huge losses in Silesia. “The war is lost,” is how Speer’s report began.

Widespread destruction of evidence would now begin.

CHAPTER TWO

Destruction

Ninety miles southeast of Speer's Oppeln hotel room, chaos was unfolding at the Auschwitz-Birkenau death camp. Speer's chairman of the ultra-secret Committee-C for chemical weapons, a chemist named Dr. Otto Ambros, had documents to destroy. It was January 17, 1945, and every German in a position of power at Auschwitz, from the army officers to the IG Farben officials, was trying to flee. Not Ambros. He would not leave the labor-extermination camp for another six days.

Otto Ambros was a fastidious man. His calculations were exact, his words carefully chosen, his fingernails always manicured. He wore his hair neatly oiled and parted. In addition to being Hitler's favorite chemist, Ambros was the manager of IG Farben's synthetic rubber and fuel factory at Auschwitz. With the Red Army bearing down, the Farben board members had ordered the destruction and removal of all classified paperwork; Ambros and colleague Walther Dürrfeld were at Auschwitz to do the job. In addition to being the plant manager of this hellish place, Ambros was the youngest member on Farben's board of directors.

All over the camp, SS guards were destroying evidence. Crematoria II and III were being dismantled, and a plan to dynamite Crematoria V was in effect. Some of the SS officers were already fleeing on horseback, while others were preparing to evacuate prisoners for the death march. Whips cracked. Dogs barked. Tanks painted white for camouflage outside the camp rolled through the muddy streets. Rumors swirled: The Red Army was only a few miles away. A female chemist in Farben's Buna-Werke Polymerization Department asked the prisoner and future world-renowned writer Primo Levi, a chemist by training, to fix her bicycle tire. After the war, Levi recalled how strange it was to hear a Farben employee use the word “please” with a Jewish inmate like himself.

Auschwitz was the Reich’s largest extermination center. As a concentration camp it consisted of three separate but symbiotic camps: Auschwitz I, the main camp; Auschwitz II, the Birkenau gas chambers and crematoria; and Auschwitz III, a labor-concentration camp run by the chemical giant IG Farben. Since April 7, 1942, IG Farben had been building the Reich’s largest chemical plant at Auschwitz, using a workforce of slave laborers selected from the Auschwitz train car platforms. Farben called their facility “IG Auschwitz.”

IG Auschwitz was the first corporate concentration camp in the Third Reich. The barracks in which the slave laborers lived and died was officially called Monowitz. “Those of us who lived there called it Buna,” recalls Gerhard Maschkowski, a survivor of the camp. Maschkowski was a nineteen-year-old Jewish boy spared the gas chamber because he was of use to IG Auschwitz as an electrician. That he was still alive in the second week of January 1945 was something of a miracle. He had arrived at Auschwitz on April 20, 1943, which meant that he had been there for a year and nine months. At Buna, the average lifespan of a slave laborer was three months. Many of Gerhard Maschkowski’s friends had long since been worked to death or had been murdered for minor infractions, like hiding a piece of food.

Gerhard Maschkowski remembers January 18, 1945, with clarity, because it was his last day at Auschwitz. It was still dark outside when the SS burst into the barracks. “They shouted, ‘Get up! March!’ They had large guns, thick jackets, and dogs,” Maschkowski recalls. He put on his shoes and hurried outside. There, nine thousand emaciated, starving inmates from Buna were lining up in neat rows. Maschkowski heard cannon fire in the distance and the crack of firearms close by. There was chaos all around. SS guards were burning evidence. Bonfires of papers sent ashes up into the dark sky. Snow fell fast, then faster. There was a blizzard on the way. The guards, dressed in warm coats and boots, waved submachine guns. “Dogs on leather leashes barked and snarled,” Gerhard Maschkowski recalls. Wearing thin pajamas, the prisoners at Buna-Monowitz began a death march toward the German interior. Within forty-eight hours, 60 percent of them would be dead.

Primo Levi was not part of the death march. A week before, he had contracted scarlet fever and had been sent to the infectious diseases ward. “He had a high temperature and a strawberry tongue,” remembered Aldo Moscati, the Italian doctor-prisoner who tended to him. “With a [104-degree] fever I was extremely feeble and could not even walk,” Primo Levi explained after the war. Lying supine in the infectious diseases ward, he listened to the sounds of the emptying camp.

On January 21, a memorandum from Berlin ordered all Farben employees to leave. The last train for Germans leaving Auschwitz, transporting mostly IG Farben’s female staff from the camp, left that same afternoon. Yet Otto Ambros stayed behind. Ambros’s official title was plant manager of Buna-Werk IV and managing director of the fuel production facility at IG Auschwitz. He had been involved in the facility since January 1941, back when Farben’s original plans were being drawn. Ambros had chosen the site location and sketched out the original blueprints for the plant. He was also the man who invented synthetic rubber for the Reich. Tanks, trucks, and airplanes all require rubber for tires and treads, and during wartime this feat was considered so important to the Reich’s ability to wage war that Ambros had been awarded 1 million reichsmarks by the Führer.

Finally, on January 23, 1945, Ambros left the concentration camp. Only random prisoners remained. Inmates like Primo Levi who were too weak to march and had not been killed by the SS lay in the infectious diseases ward. When Levi’s fever finally broke and he ventured outside, he found groups of prisoners roaming around the camp looking for food. Levi found a silo filled with frozen potatoes. He made a fire and cooked his first food in days. On January 27, he was dragging a dead friend’s corpse to a large grave dug in a distant field when he spotted four men on horseback approaching the camp from far away. They were wearing white camouflage clothing, but as they got closer he could see that at the center of the soldiers’ caps there was a bright red star. The Red Army had arrived. Auschwitz was liberated.

Otto Ambros was already on the way to Falkenhagen, Germany, to destroy evidence in another Farben factory there. Speer headed back to Berlin. Neither man dared travel north inside Poland, where a second armaments factory the two men were jointly involved in was also in jeopardy of being captured by the Soviets. At this facility, called Dyhernfurth after the small riverside village in which it was located, IG

Farben produced chemical weapons—deadly nerve agents—on an industrial scale. On January 24, 1945, the day after Ambros fled Auschwitz, Farben had given the word to evacuate Dyhernfurth and destroy whatever evidence remained there. All munitions were loaded onto railcars and trucks and sent to depots in the west.

The destruction of evidence was now becoming standard operating procedure at laboratories, research facilities, and armaments factories across the Reich. And while Nazi Germany faced imminent collapse, its scientists, engineers, and businessmen had their futures to think about.

All across Nazi-occupied Poland, German forces were retreating en masse as the Red Army continued to shred the eastern front. On February 5, 1945, one hundred and seventy miles northwest of Auschwitz, the Soviets captured the village of Dyhernfurth. Soviet soldiers took over the town's castle, built during the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, and drank up its wine cellar. The castle, with its fairy-tale-like conical spires, quickly transformed into a scene of wild debauchery, with inebriated Russian soldiers singing rowdy victory songs. The situation got so out of control that Russian commanders suspended fighting until order could be restored. This made for a perfect opportunity for a team of Nazi commandos hiding in the forest to launch a daring and unprecedented raid.

Less than half a mile away, one of the Reich's most prized wonder weapons facilities lay hidden underground. Camouflaged in a forest of pine trees, inside a large complex of underground bombproof bunkers, a workforce of 560 white-collar Germans and 3,000 slave laborers had been mass-producing, since 1942, liquid tabun—a deadly nerve agent the very existence of which was unknown to the outside world.

Tabun was one of Hitler's most jealously guarded secrets, a true wonder weapon of the most diabolical kind. Similar to a pesticide, the organophosphate tabun was one of the most deadly substances in the world. A tiny drop to the skin could kill an individual in minutes or sometimes seconds. Exposure meant the glands and muscles would hyperstimulate and the respiratory system would fail. Paralysis would set in and breathing would cease. At Dyhernfurth, where accidents had happened, a human's death by tabun gas resembled the frenetic last moments of an ant sprayed with insecticide.

Like the synthetic rubber and fuel factory at Auschwitz, the nerve agent production facility at Dyhernfurth was owned and operated by IG Farben, and here the Speer ministry worked with Farben to fill aerial bombs with tabun that could eventually be deployed from Luftwaffe planes. No one in the inner circle knew for sure when, or if, Hitler would finally concede to many of his ministers' wishes and allow for a chemical weapons attack against the Allies. But as evidenced at Dyhernfurth, the opportunity was real. Enough poison gas had been produced here to decimate the population of London or Paris on any given day.

Despite the overwhelming onslaught of Red Army troops to this region in February of 1945, Hitler remained determined to keep the secrets of tabun out of enemy hands. On the morning of February 5, 1945, Major General Max Sachsenheimer of the Reich's Seventeenth Field Replacement Battalion and his troops were hiding in the forest along the banks of the Oder River. Sachsenheimer's commando force was made up of several hundred soldiers, but he also had a unique secondary contingent of men, namely, eighty-two scientists and technicians. Some were army scientists but most were IG Farben employees and chemical weapons experts. Sachsenheimer's mission was to protect the scientists while they scrubbed Farben's facility of any and all traces of tabun.

The Dyhernfurth complex was a sprawling, state-of-the-art production plant. Speer's Armaments and War Production Ministry had paid Farben nearly 200 million reichsmarks to build and operate it. The facility had been secretly and skillfully designed and managed by Otto Ambros. As he had done with IG Auschwitz, Ambros had overseen every element of this chemical weapons factory dating from the winter of 1941, when the thick forest here was first cleared of pine trees by 120 concentration camp slaves.

As Nazi Germany blended industry, war making, and genocide, few corporations were as central a player as IG Farben. The chemical concern was the largest corporation in Europe and the fourth largest corporation in the world. IG Farben owned the patent on Zyklon B. And perhaps no single person at Farben was as central a figure in this equation as Otto Ambros had been. For his work as chairman of Committee-C, the chemical weapons committee inside the Speer Ministry, Ambros was given the prestigious title of military economy leader (Wehrwirtschaftsführer). He was awarded the War Merit Cross, 1st and 2nd Class, and the Knight's Cross of the War

Merit Cross, which was similar to the award bestowed on Dornberger and von Braun.

There was a second scientist who played an important role in chemical weapons—a man who, like Otto Ambros, would be targeted for Operation Paperclip. This was SS-Brigadeführer Dr. Walter Schieber, a chemist by training, Speer's deputy and director of the Armaments Supply Office. Schieber was a hard-core Nazi ideologue and a member of Reichsführer-SS Himmler's personal staff. Unusually corpulent for an SS officer, his official car and airplane required retrofitting to accommodate his 275-pound frame. With Hitler's physician, Karl Brandt, Schieber was in charge of gas mask production, a requisite for troop defense if chemical warfare was to be waged. As with biological weapons, the sword needs a shield, and by January of 1945 Schieber had overseen the production of 46.1 million gas masks. Their reliability had been tested at Dyhernfurth on concentration camp prisoners. The stories that would emerge during the Nuremberg trials about such tests were ghoulish, including locking prisoners in glass rooms and spraying them with nerve agent. War crimes investigators would later debate whether or not these actions were pilot programs for the gas chambers. The full story of how, and to what extent, Dr. Walter Schieber worked for the U.S. military after the war—and also for the CIA—has never been fully explained until this book.

Only weeks before the Red Army took Dyhernfurth, overran its castle, and drank all its wine, thousands of concentration camp slave laborers had been toiling away at Farben's secret chemical weapons plant performing the deadliest of jobs. Wearing double-layer rubber suits and bubble-shaped helmets, prisoners filled artillery shells and bomb casings with nerve agent, marking each munition in a secret code indicating tabun nerve agent: three green rings of paint. The prisoners' suits worked similar to deep-sea diving suits. Attached to the back of each helmet was a tube delivering breathable air. But the air tube was short and gave workers very little room to move. If a man accidentally detached from the air source, he would be exposed to the lethal vapors through the breathing tube and die.

But on the morning of February 5, 1945, the facility was empty. Not a chemist or a slave laborer remained. The munitions had been moved, documentary evidence destroyed, and all the IG Farben employees had fled. The prisoners had been evacuated by their SS guards three weeks before. Wearing prisoner pajamas and ill-fitting wooden work shoes, the

Dyhernfurth laborers were marched west toward the German interior. Witnesses in nearby villages described a column of three thousand walking corpses. Temperatures in the area reached -18 degrees Fahrenheit. By the time the prisoners reached the Gross-Rosen concentration camp, fifty miles to the southwest, two-thirds of them had died of exposure.

Now, working on Hitler's orders, a technical team was preparing to return to Farben's secret facility for a final scrub of tabun residue. In the freezing predawn air, the two chemists, eighty technicians, and a group of German commandos donned double-layered rubber suits, pulled gas masks over their heads, and stole down the banks of the Oder River. They moved quietly across a partially bombed-out railroad bridge, walked slowly down the railroad tracks, and headed to the chemical weapons plant. The protective suits were cumbersome, and it took the technical team sixty-five minutes to travel less than a half a mile. Reaching the plant, the group made its way into the production facility that housed massive silver-lined kettles in which the nerve agent was made. Each kettle sat inside an operating chamber enclosed in double-glass walls encircling a complex ventilation system of double-walled pipes. While one group got to work decontaminating the chambers with ammonia and steam, another group scoured the surfaces of the munitions-filling factory where so many slave laborers had met death. The commandos kept guard.

While the technicians scrubbed, two and a half miles downriver Major General Sachsenheimer's remaining platoon of soldiers sprang into action. They launched artillery shells at sleeping Russian forces in a diversionary feint. The Red Army reorganized and retaliated, and by lunchtime eighteen Soviet tanks were engaged in fierce fighting with Sachsenheimer's troops. The battle, a footnote in the annals of the war, lasted just long enough for IG Farben's technical team to get in, get out, and disappear.

Not for several days did the Red Army finally stumble upon Farben's chemical weapons facility at Dyhernfurth. By then it was void of people and tabun but otherwise entirely intact. As the Russians examined the facility, scrubbed immaculately clean, it became clear to the commanders that whatever this facility had produced must have been considered of great value to the Reich. The laboratory layout bore signs of chemical weapons production, and the Soviet army called in their own chemical weapons experts from the Sixteenth and Eighteenth Chemical Brigades. The factory was dismantled, crated, and shipped back to the Soviet Union for future use.

What had been produced here in the forest remained a mystery to its new owners—the Russians—for a little over a year. By 1946 the entire chemical weapons factory at Dyhernfurth would be reassembled in a little town outside Stalingrad called Beketovka, and the plant given the Russian code name, Chemical Works No. 91. The Soviets themselves then began producing tabun nerve agent on an industrial scale. By 1948, the Soviet *Military Chemical Text Book* would list tabun as part of the Red Army's stockpile. But 1948 was so far away. So much would happen with America and Hitler's chemists between 1945 and 1948, most of it predicated on the emerging Soviet threat.

Back in Berlin, Hitler read the first page of Speer's report and ordered it filed away. Then Hitler became enraged. His furor was likely exacerbated by a conference taking place on the Crimea Peninsula, at Yalta, beginning February 4, 1945. It was to last for eight days. There, Roosevelt, Churchill, and Stalin were confirming their commitment to demand Germany's unconditional surrender. There would be no bargaining, the three heads of state declared. No deals made with the Nazis. The end of the war would mean the end of the Third Reich. War criminals would be tried, justice meted out.

The idea of what defined justice varied dramatically from power to power. British Prime Minister Winston Churchill wanted Nazis leaders to be treated as "outlaws." He argued that they should be lined up and shot rather than put on trial. The premier of the Soviet Union, Joseph Stalin, rather unexpectedly argued for "no executions without trial." President Franklin D. Roosevelt wanted a war crimes trial. What all parties agreed on was that, after the surrender, Germany would be broken up into three zones of occupation. (Soon, France's involvement would make it four.) When Hitler learned of the Allies' plan to divvy up the spoils of Germany, he became furious. Then he called on Albert Speer.

"If the war is lost," Hitler famously told Speer, "the nation will also perish. This fate is inevitable." If Germany loses the war, Hitler said, the people deserved existential punishment for being weak. "What will remain after this struggle will be in any case only the inferior ones, since the good ones have fallen," Hitler said. Following this logic, Hitler decreed that Speer's ministry need not provide German citizens with even the most basic necessities, including shelter and food. He told Speer that if Speer were ever to give him another memorandum saying the war was unwinnable, and that negotiations with the enemy should be considered, Hitler would consider this an act of treason punishable by death.

Hitler then issued a nationwide "scorched-earth" policy. Speer was to help organize the complete destruction of all German infrastructure, military and civilian—from its transportation and communication systems to its bridges and dams. Officially entitled Demolitions on Reich Territory, this order became known as the Nero Decree, or Nerobefehl, invoking the Roman emperor Nero, who allegedly engineered the Great Fire of 64 AD and then watched Rome burn.

In central Germany, in the naturally fortified Harz Mountains, production of V-weapons continued at a frenzied pace despite every indication that Germany would soon lose the war. By late February 1945, conditions inside the Nordhausen tunnels had reached a cataclysm. It was bitterly cold, thousands were starving to death, and there was barely any food; watery broth was all the prisoners had to live on. The Nordhausen-Dora concentration camp was being overrun with new prisoners arriving on the death marches from Auschwitz and Gross-Rosen in the east. Some came on foot and others came in cattle cars. Many arrived dead. Dora's crematorium was overwhelmed. In this climate, Wernher von Braun and General Dornberger pressed on with plans to create a greater number of rockets each day.

Since moving his offices from the Peenemünde facility to the Harz Mountains, von Braun had been given a promotion. Now he was head of what was called the Mittelbau-Dora Planning Office, a division within Himmler's SS. Von Braun lived just a few miles from the Nordhausen complex, in a villa that had been confiscated from a Jewish factory owner years before. Each day he drove to his office in Bleicherode, eleven miles from the tunnel complex, where he drafted designs for new and better test stands and launch ramps for the V-2. Despite the reality that the war was lost, the area was abuzz with new armaments factories being built, "dug by workers from some of the forty-odd subcamps now tied to Mittelbau-Dora," Michael J. Neufeld explains. Von Braun's vision was to escalate rocket production from two or three rockets a day to two hundred rockets a day. To prepare for this ambitious expansion, he commandeered factories, schools, and mines throughout the region. But rocket assembly was dependent on workers, and the slave laborers in Nordhausen were now dying at an ever-increasing rate. Von Braun had to have known this; he visited the underground tunnels in an official capacity ten times during the winter of 1945.

For the emaciated slave laborers who had managed to stay alive, trying to assemble missiles in filthy, unfinished tunnels without food, water, or sanitation in the bitter cold of winter had become more and more difficult, and it showed in their work. In skies across Europe these hastily constructed rockets began breaking apart in flight. And in the pine forests of northern Germany, including those around the Castle Varlar, quickly assembled rockets were exploding on their mobile launch pads. The managers at Mittelwerk suspected sabotage. To send a message, public hangings were held.

“Prisoners were hanged up to 57 in one day,” read one war crimes report. “They were hanged in the tunnels with the help of an electrically controlled crane, a dozen at a time, their hands bound behind their back, a piece of wood was put in their mouth… to prevent shouting.” The hangings were carried out directly above the V-2 production lines. Laborers were forced to watch their fellow prisoners suffer an agonizingly slow death. In solidarity, a group of Russian and Ukrainian prisoners staged a revolt. The suspects were rounded up. Mittelwerk managers and SS guards decided to make an example of them. After these men were hanged, their bodies were left dangling for a day. Only after Arthur Rudolph, the Mittelwerk operations director, received a memo from one of his German engineers asking when they were going to get their crane back were the bodies taken down.

In addition to von Braun’s recent promotion to head of the Mittelbau-Dora Planning Office, he was also promoted to SS-Sturmbannführer, or SS major. One of the benefits that came with this position was a chauffeur-driven car to shuttle von Braun back and forth between Nordhausen and Berlin. It was in the backseat of this car on the night of March 12, 1945, that von Braun was nearly killed. As his car was speeding down the autobahn headed for Berlin, his driver nodded off at the wheel. The car veered off the road and hurtled down a forty-foot embankment until it crashed on its side near a railroad track. The driver was knocked unconscious. Von Braun broke his arm. Both men lay bleeding in the cold, dark night when two of von Braun’s colleagues from Nordhausen, facilities designer Bernhard Tessmann and architect Hannes Lührsen, happened to drive by and spot the smashed-up car. They called for a military ambulance, which came to the scene and transported von Braun and his driver to a hospital.

While recuperating, von Braun received a visit from his personal aide, Dieter Huzel, and Bernhard Tessmann, one of the two men who had saved von Braun’s life. Tessmann and Huzel told von Braun that the arrival of the U.S. Army was imminent. Any day now, they said, V-2 operations would cease. Word was going around that every man not considered a valuable scientist was going to be assigned to an infantry unit, handed a weapon, and ordered to fight the Americans on the front lines.

Von Braun was now ready to concede that Germany would lose the war. What he was unwilling to do was relinquish his career. He needed a bargaining chip to use against the Americans after he was captured. Von Braun told Tessmann and Huzel where he kept the most valuable classified V-2 documents. Because von Braun was bedridden, he needed his two subordinates to crate up these documents and hide them in a remote, secure place where the Allies would never find them on their own. Von Braun told Tessmann and Huzel that if they could do this they would be included in von Braun’s future negotiations with the Allies. General Dornberger would also be part of the team. Von Braun told Tessmann and Huzel that he would personally bring the general up to speed.

Mittelwerk laborers continued to produce missiles until the end of March. The last V-2s were fired on March 27 and the last V-1s were fired the following day. On April 1, Dornberger received an order from SS-General Kammler demanding that Dornberger evacuate his staff from the Mittelwerk at once. Kammler had selected five hundred key scientists and engineers who were to board his private train car, parked in Bleicherode and nicknamed the Vengeance Express, and then travel four hundred miles south into the Bavarian Alps to hide out. Huzel and Tessmann were on Kammler’s list, but after colluding with General Dornberger they were able to stay behind to complete the document stash. Von Braun, still requiring medical attention and encumbered by a heavy cast, was taken to the Alps in a private car. Dornberger and his staff drove themselves, fleeing the Harz in a small convoy.

When night fell on Dörnten, a small mining community at the northern edge of the Harz, the village was in a blackout. The local gauleiters (Nazi Party district leaders) had ordered villagers to shutter their windows, turn off the lights, and stay home. It was April 4, 1945, and American forces were reportedly camped out just thirty miles to the west. The village's cobblestone streets were empty, save a lone truck driving slowly with its lights off, navigating by the moon. In the front seat sat Tessmann and Huzel. In the back of the truck were seven German soldiers wearing blindfolds. Also in the truck were dozens of crates filled with classified V-2 information.

The truck passed through town and headed up a winding rural road leading into the mouth of an abandoned mine. Huzel and Tessmann parked the truck and shook hands with the caretaker, Herr Nebelung, a loyal Nazi, who sold the two engineers space in a large antechamber in the back of the Dörnten mine. The seven soldiers were told it was okay to take off their blindfolds now and get to work.

The group unloaded the crates, placed them onto flatcars, and oversaw them as they were driven down a long tunnel by an electric-battery-powered locomotive. At the end of the tunnel, behind an iron door, was a small, dry room. The crates of V-2 documents were packed inside, the door shut and locked. Outside, a soldier lit a stick of dynamite in front of the doorway to create a huge pile of rubble and keep the important Nazi documents hidden from the outside world.

Huzel and Tessmann had sworn not to tell anyone what they'd done, but just as they were leaving for Bavaria to rendezvous with Dornberger and von Braun, the two men decided to make an exception. Karl Otto Fleischer had served as the army's business manager for the Mittelwerk slave labor enterprise. Fleischer's name was not on General Kammler's list, and he'd gone home to his house in Nordhausen to blend in. Karl Fleischer was a loyal Nazi who reported directly to General Dornberger during V-2 production, and Huzel and Tessmann believed Fleischer would keep their secret safe. Fleischer was local. He could keep an eye on things and monitor if anyone started poking around the Dörnten mine. Huzel and Tessmann told Karl Fleischer about the secret location of the V-2 document stash, and with the U.S. Army just a few days outside Nordhausen, Huzel and Tessmann sped away.

CHAPTER THREE

The Hunters and the Hunted

In France, Samuel Goudsmit and his team of Operation Alsos scientists had been waiting patiently since November to launch their next scientific intelligence mission. It had been four months since the team hit intelligence gold, inside the Strasbourg apartment of the Reich's virologist Dr. Eugen Haagen. Now, in the last week of March 1945, Goudsmit and his military commander, Colonel Boris Pash, were finally getting ready to seize their next targets: IG Farben factories over the border in Germany, believed to be the locus of the Nazis' chemical weapons program.

Since November, Haagen's apartment in Strasbourg had been serving as Alsos headquarters. There had been long delays. In December, Hitler's counteroffensive in the Ardennes Forest meant that Alsos scientists could not conduct frontline missions as planned. But as serendipity would have it, the entire first floor below Haagen's Strasbourg apartment belonged to IG Farben, the primary chemical weapons supplier of the Third Reich, and Alsos seized a considerable cache of documents Farben kept there. Alsos knew Farben was involved in weapons-related vaccine research and suspected they were involved in medical experiments on prisoners. The two Farben factories they had in their sights were located only about eighty miles away, in the German cities of Ludwigshafen and Mannheim. For this, Operation Alsos had put together their largest task force to date: ten civilian scientists, six military scientists, and eighteen security operators. But venturing into German-held territory on their own was considered too dangerous for the American scientists. They had been waiting for Allied forces to cross over the Rhine River into Germany, at which point they, too, would be allowed in. Now, in the third week of March 1945, this long-awaited crossing appeared imminent.

On March 23, 1945, British Field Marshal Bernard Montgomery began a colossal troop offensive across the Rhine River, code-named Operation Plunder. Adding to the namesake's subtext of seizure and pillage were Montgomery's famous words: "Over the Rhine, then, let us go. And good hunting to you all on the other side." Sacking a vanquished country at the end of a war was as old as war itself, but the Hague Conventions of 1899 and 1907 prohibited looting beyond token items claimed as "trophies of war." What, exactly, did Montgomery mean? On a tactical level, the Rhine River crossing meant that the Allies would smash open more than five hundred miles along the western front. From an intelligence collection standpoint, it truly meant plunder.

As soldiers pushed forward into Germany, accompanying them were more than three thousand scientific and technical experts with the Combined Intelligence Objectives Subcommittee, or CIOS, the joint British-American program that had been established in London the summer before. CIOS teams reported to Supreme Headquarters Allied Expeditionary Forces, or SHAEF, located in Versailles and staffed by experts: scientists, engineers, doctors, and technicians accompanied by linguists and scholars to translate and interpret the documents that were seized. Representing the United States from CIOS were men from the War Department General Staff, the navy, the Army Air Forces, the State Department, the Foreign Economic Administration, the Office of Strategic Services (OSS), and the Office of Scientific Research and Development. The British sent experts from the Foreign Office, the Admiralty, the Air Ministry, and the Ministries of Supply, Aircraft Production, Economic Warfare, Fuel and Power. All CIOS staff worked from a list of targets, similar to those used by Alsos, which became known as Black Lists. Frontline requests for specific CIOS teams were relayed to SHAEF from the combat zone. An appropriate CIOS team would be dispatched into the field.

Assisting CIOS teams were security forces called T-Forces, identifiable by helmets with a bright red *T* painted on the front. These small squadrons of elite soldiers operated at the army group level but worked independently of traditional combat units. Their job was to recognize potentially valuable scientific targets and then secure them until personnel from CIOS arrived.

The goal of Combined Intelligence Objectives Subcommittee was to investigate all things related to German science. Target types ran the gamut:

radar, missiles, aircraft, medicine, bombs and fuses, chemical and biological weapons labs. And while CIOS remained an official joint venture, there were other groups in the mix, with competing interests at hand.

Running parallel to CIOS operations were dozens of secret intelligence-gathering operations, mostly American. The Pentagon's Special Mission V-2 was but one example. By late March 1945, Colonel Trichel, chief of U.S. Army Ordnance, Rocket Branch, had dispatched his team to Europe. Likewise, U.S. Naval Technical Intelligence had officers in Paris preparing for its own highly classified hunt for any intelligence regarding the Henschel Hs 293, a guided missile developed by the Nazis and designed to sink or damage enemy ships. The U.S. Army Air Forces (AAF) were still heavily engaged in strategic bombing campaigns, but a small group from Wright Field, near Dayton, Ohio, was laying plans to locate and capture Luftwaffe equipment and engineers. Spearheading Top Secret missions for British intelligence was a group of commandos called 30 Assault Unit, led by Ian Fleming, the personal assistant to the director of British naval intelligence and future author of the James Bond novels. Sometimes, the members of these parallel missions worked in consort with CIOS officers in the field. Certainly, they took full advantage of all the information CIOS made available, including its Black Lists. But each mission almost always put its individual objectives and goals first. The result, some officers joked, was CHAOS for CIOS.

What began as a gentlemanly collaboration among Allies quickly transformed into one of the greatest competitions for information about weapons-related research in the history of war. Once the Rhine River was crossed, the hunt for Nazi science became a free-for-all.

On its search for chemical weapons, Alsos scientists crossed the Rhine on the heels of the Third Army. They traveled in a small convoy of army jeeps. "The area was not in good shape," Colonel Pash recalled after the war. "Buildings of the town shook from the shock waves generated by the gun explosions," and "stalled or broken-down vehicles added to the confusion created by the wrecked armor and trucks of the retreating Nazis." Entering Ludwigshafen, one of the Alsos jeeps became separated from its convoy and ran smack into the line of fire of a German antitank gun. Hardly expecting a single jeep to appear on the road without a tank accompanying it, the Germans were apparently caught off-guard. “A single salvo and the few machine-gun bursts went wide,” Pash recalled after the war.

The Alsos scientists had heard that T-Forces units were close behind them and were making arrangements for a large team of technical experts to arrive under the CIOS banner. The Alsos scientists were determined to get to the IG Farben factory first. But what they ended up finding in Ludwigshafen was disappointing to them. Not only had the factory been heavily damaged by Allied bombing raids, but filing cabinets were empty. Paperwork had been destroyed or removed. There were no chemical weapons found.

The following morning, March 24, 1945, while at breakfast, the Alsos team met up with the T-Forces and the CIOS team. Both had come to inspect the Farben factory. “It was interesting to watch the effect of bombshells casually dropped by our scientists,” Pash recalled, “sounding something like… ‘Oh sure, You’ll be able to go to the Farben plant tomorrow, after the T-Forces secures it. You’ll find it interesting. We know, because we were there yesterday.’ ” The rivalry between the teams was evident.

The two men leading the CIOS chemical weapons team were an American officer named Lieutenant Colonel Philip R. Tarr and a British officer named Major Edmund Tilley. These men would soon become critical players in the Operation Paperclip story. Each was considered an expert in chemical warfare, but Major Tilley had a leg up on his American counterpart—at least in the field—in that he spoke fluent German. In addition to his role as a CIOS leader, Colonel Tarr was chief officer in the U.S. Army’s Intelligence Division of the U.S. Chemical Warfare Service, Europe. Unknown to Major Tilley at this time was that Colonel Tarr’s U.S. Army objective would soon supersede his loyalty to their work together as a CIOS team.

With American forces now on German soil, the fear that Hitler might unleash a devastating chemical weapons attack in a last-ditch attempt to make good on his wonder weapons promise was real, but Tarr and Tilley had very few leads as to where the chemical weapons might be stashed. German counterintelligence agents had done a brilliant job concealing the Reich’s nerve agent programs from foreign intelligence agencies during the war. Tabun had been given various code names, including Trilon 83, Substance 83, and Gelan 1. Even its raw materials were coded. Ethanol was “A4,” and sodium was “A-17,” making identification all but impossible. In 1942, a U.S. intelligence report entitled “New German Poison Gas” concluded that the possibility that Germany had new chemical weapons was “no longer seriously regarded.” Only in May of 1943, after capturing a German chemist in North Africa, did British agents learn of a colorless nerve agent of “astounding properties” being developed by IG Farben chemists in Berlin. The British interrogation officers found the German chemist’s information to be credible and wrote up a ten-page secret report for the Chemical Defense Experimental Establishment, which operated out of Porton Down. But the captured scientist knew only the substance’s code name, Trilon 83. Without further information, no action was taken by the British. Now, in March 1945, Tarr and Tilley were on the hunt for this mysterious Trilon 83 and anything else like it.

Leading the CIOS team into Germany, Tarr and Tilley inspected IG Farben factories at Ludwigshafen, Mannheim, and Elberfeld. At each location the officers noted with suspicion how remarkably little each town’s Farben scientists claimed to know. As far as intelligence collection was concerned, the scenario at each seized Farben factory was always strikingly similar: Where there should have been huge troves of company records, there were empty cabinets instead. Farben scientists who were taken into custody and questioned always said the same thing: IG Farben made chemical products for domestic use—detergent, paint, lacquer, and soap. And none of the scientists interviewed by CIOS officers claimed to have any idea where the bosses had gone.

In a CIOS memorandum, Tilley and Tarr expressed mounting frustration. One scientist after the next “lied vigorously about his activities,” the men wrote in their intelligence report, entitled “Interrogation of German Scientific Personnel.” Good, actionable intelligence remained out of reach. Then, as circumstance would have it, Alsos agents caught a huge break farther north in the city of Bonn.

Alsos had been trailing the Third Armored Division since it first rolled into Ludwigshafen on March 23. Several days later the soldiers liberated the city of Cologne and then set their sights on Bonn, some fifteen miles to the north. Scouting soldiers reported seeing men who might be professors burning caseloads of documents in Bonn University courtyards. What they couldn't see was that inside university bathrooms, professors were also desperately flushing documents down the toilet, hoping to destroy evidence that might implicate them in war crimes. When the Allies finally secured the university, a Polish lab technician approached a British soldier to say that he had salvaged a large pile of documents that did not properly flush down a toilet bowl, as had apparently been intended.

These papers looked important, the lab technician said. And indeed they were. The man had turned over to British intelligence a classified list of the Reich's top scientists. The officer handed the list over to Samuel Goudsmit of Operation Alsos. This group of documents would lead to what would become known as the Osenberg List.

Dr. Werner Osenberg, a mechanical engineer, was a dedicated Nazi and member of the SS; he was also a high-ranking member of the Gestapo, the secret police. In June 1943 Osenberg was assigned by Göring to run the so-called Planning Office of the Reich Research Council, which was dedicated to warfare. Per a Führer decree of June 9, 1942, the Research Council's charter read: "Leading men of science above all, are to make research fruitful for warfare by working together in their special fields."

From the council's Planning Office, Osenberg's job was to coordinate a Who's Who list of German scientists, engineers, doctors, and technicians. With bureaucratic precision Osenberg set to work, tracking down and cataloguing every scientist in Germany. Osenberg's mission was to put these men into service for the Reich. In short order he had compiled a list of fifteen thousand men and fourteen hundred research facilities. All across Germany scientists, engineers, and technicians were recalled from the front lines, an act Hitler called the Osenberg Action. This led to the release of five thousand scientists from the German Armed Forces. After being screened for skill level, the men of science were set up in appropriated universities and institutions across Reich territory where they could work on weapons-related research programs in service of the war effort.

The mystery of how the Osenberg List ended up in a Bonn University toilet was never solved, but for Alsos it was an intelligence gold mine. Not only was this list a record of who had been working on what scientific project for the Reich, but it contained addresses, including one for Werner

Osenberg himself. Goudsmit dispatched a team to a little town near Hannover. There, Alsos agents captured Osenberg and his complete outfit.

The papers found in the toilet were valuable, but it was an index of cards in Osenberg's office that was priceless. "The primary index consists of a four-drawer cabinet containing approximately two-thousand large printed cards (10″ x 7″) adapted for multiple entry on both sides of the card," reported Alsos. Secondary indexes included three additional sets of "approximately one thousand cards [each], 6″ x 4″… containing the same information but classified from a different standpoint and facilitating searches along different lines." This was an overwhelming trove of information, too much for any one organization to handle. Alsos shared the Osenberg List with CIOS; there were thousands of leads that needed following up on. Osenberg's card catalogue would allow the various teams to begin piecing together how science programs worked under the Reich and who had been in charge.

The Alsos officers packed up Osenberg's office and took him to Paris, where he was put to work organizing information. Goudsmit was appalled by the hubris Osenberg displayed after he was installed in an office in a guarded facility in Versailles. "Here, Osenberg had set up business as usual; he merely had his secretary change the address on his letterhead to… "at Present in Paris," Goudsmit explained after the war. He also became exasperated when Osenberg tried repeatedly to convince Goudsmit of his sworn loyalty to the Allies. "I became impatient," Goudsmit explained, and told Osenberg, "[O]ne cannot trust you.… You were in charge of the scientific section of the Gestapo, which you never revealed to us and you burned all the relating papers." Osenberg was enraged by the accusation. "No, I did not burn those papers," he told Goudsmit. "I buried them and, moreover, I was not the chief of the scientific section of the Gestapo, I was merely the second in command." After that it was easy for Goudsmit to find out from Osenberg "where those papers were buried and where the missing Berlin papers were stored."

But no one from the Allied forces was going into Berlin just yet. In these last days of March 1945, Berlin continued to be the heart of the Reich, and it was being fiercely defended. It would remain German-held territory for another month, until the last day of April 1945.

It was a city in ruins, and Berliners’ morale was sinking with each passing day. With nearly 85 percent of the city destroyed, Berlin had been reduced to rubble piles. The majority of buildings still standing had broken windows. Everyone was cold. The underground shelters were vastly overcrowded. Heating fuel was scarce. “During early April,” explains historian Anthony Beevor, “as Berlin awaited the final onslaught [of the Red Army,] the atmosphere in the city became a mixture of febrile exhaustion, terrible foreboding and despair.”

Nazi radio broadcasts reminded Berliners that they were required to fight to the end. According to Goebbels, “A single motto remains for us: ‘Conquer or die.’ ” Hitler blamed everything on the Jews and the Slavs. “The deadly Jewish-Bolshevik enemy with his masses is beginning his final attack,” he told troops on the eastern front, in a last appeal on April 15. The Russians were determined to exterminate all German people, Hitler promised, “the old men and children will be murdered, women and girls will be degraded as barracks whores.” Everybody else would be marched off to Siberia.

In the heart of Berlin, in the Wilhelmstrasse district, where the Reich’s ministries were located, Colonel Siegfried Knemeyer tried to maintain order over the vast group of personnel he was responsible for at the Air Ministry. It was a miracle that the building was still standing. Constructed of reinforced concrete, the Air Ministry was a prized symbol of Nazi Party intimidation architecture, seven stories tall, with twenty-eight hundred rooms, four thousand windows, and corridors that totaled four miles in length. At the height of the air war, the place bustled with four thousand Nazi bureaucrats and their secretaries. This was no longer the case. The Luftwaffe was in ruins.

Since 1943, Siegfried Knemeyer had served as chief of all air force technical developments for the Luftwaffe. His title was technical adviser to Reichsmarschall Göring, who adored Knemeyer, calling him “my boy.” From aircraft engines to instruments, if a new component was being developed for the Luftwaffe, Göring wanted to know what Knemeyer had to say about it before he gave the project the go-ahead. But now, in the second week of April 1945, most orders that arrived at the Air Ministry were impossible for Knemeyer to fulfill. In the second half of 1944, the German Air Force had lost more than twenty thousand airplanes. The Speer ministry had since managed to produce approximately three thousand new aircraft, but they were of little use now. Across the Reich, German aircraft sat stranded on tarmacs. The Allies had bombed Luftwaffe runways, and there was barely any aviation fuel left. The plan for IG Farben to make synthetic fuel at its Buna factory had ended when the Red Army liberated Auschwitz on January 27, 1945. Germany's fuel sources in Hungary and Romania were tapped out. The German jet was superior to conventional Allied fighter planes in the air, but that didn't mean much anymore, with most Luftwaffe aircraft stuck on the ground.

Soon Knemeyer would flee Berlin, but not before he completed a final task assigned to him by Speer. According to Nuremberg trial testimony, Speer instructed Knemeyer to hide Luftwaffe technical information in the forest outside Berlin. Stashing official documents was a treasonable offense, but according to Knemeyer's personal papers, Speer and Knemeyer had agreed that Germany's seminal scientific progress in aeronautics could not, under any circumstances, fall into Russian hands. There was also a second unofficial job that Speer tapped Knemeyer for, one that was not discussed at Nuremberg but which Speer admitted to decades later. Speer asked Knemeyer to help plot his escape.

Speer's plan to flee Germany had been in the works for some time; it was the details he needed help ironing out. Ever since Speer had seen the film *S.O.S. Iceberg,* starring Leni Riefenstahl and Ernst Udet, he knew he wanted to escape to Greenland should Germany lose the war. In Greenland Speer could set up camp and write his memoirs, he later explained. Of course he'd need a pilot, which is where Knemeyer fit in.

Knemeyer was an aeronautical engineer, but he was also one of the Luftwaffe's most revered pilots, ranked among the top ten aviators in all of Germany. His specialty, back when he flew missions in the earlier stages of the war, had been espionage. From 1938 to 1942, Knemeyer flew a number of the most dangerous Abwehr (military intelligence) missions on record, including ones over England and Norway. And it was Knemeyer who made the first high-altitude sortie over North Africa, flying at forty-four thousand feet. But Knemeyer was also a pragmatist. He knew, apparently more so than Speer, that attempting to fly out of Germany and into Greenland transporting one of the most wanted war criminals of the Third Reich during the final days of the war would be a near-to-impossible feat. There was brutal weather in Greenland and fierce terrain. The mission would require a very specific aircraft that could handle the harsh conditions and difficult landing, namely, the Bv 222, designed by Blohm & Voss. Only thirteen had ever been built. There was only one man who had access to that kind of airplane, and that was Knemeyer’s friend Werner Baumbach, a twenty-eight-year-old dive-bomber pilot whom Hitler had made general of the bombers.

Knemeyer knew that bringing Baumbach on board was imperative for a successful Greenland escape. During the war, Baumbach had flown missions between Norway and a German weather station located in Greenland. Speer agreed and Baumbach was brought into the plan. In secret, Baumbach and Knemeyer began gathering “food, medicine, rifles, skis, tents, fishing equipment and hand grenades” at Speer’s behest. At the Travemünde airfield, north of Berlin, Baumbach earmarked a Bv 222 for use. The only thing that remained was Speer’s command for the group to flee. Time was running out. Berlin was nearing its downfall.

CHAPTER FOUR

Liberation

All across Germany, the liberations were beginning. In one location after the next, prisoners in concentration camps and slave labor factories were being freed by Allied soldiers who stormed across Germany in tanks and jeeps and on foot. The action had begun in western Germany and continued steadily as the Allies marched east, headed toward Munich and Berlin. Alongside these liberations, soldiers also discovered Reich laboratories and research facilities, one after the next. After each discovery a team of CIOS scientists was called in to investigate. During the second week of April in 1945, four key facilities were seized—at Nordhausen, Geraberg, Völkenrode, and Raubkammer—each of which would lead to the capture of key scientists who would in turn become part of Operation Paperclip.

On the morning of April 11, 1945, a unit of American soldiers with the 104th Infantry Division, also known as the Timberwolves, entered the slave tunnels at Nordhausen. Among the liberating soldiers was an infantry sharpshooter, a private first class named John Risen Jones Jr. In his bag he carried a camera, a gift given to him by his family before he shipped off to war. Expensive and sleek-looking, Jones's Leica III was one of the first portable 35 mm cameras ever made.

It had been seven months since John Risen Jones landed in France, back in September 1944. He had spent 195 days on the continent thus far, many of them engaged in fierce combat, all the while pushing though snow, sleet, and mud—much of it on foot. Jones had walked across France, Belgium, and Holland, and now here he was, in the deep mountains of central Germany, the Harz. He had lost friends in battle and taken many photographs of the war. When his unit arrived in this little mountain town, he imagined the day would pass like the one before. Just one step closer to the end of this brutal war.

No amount of fighting prepared John Risen Jones for what he saw through the lens of his Leica when his unit entered Nordhausen. The photographs he took documented the tragedy that had befallen thousands of V-2 rocket laborers condemned to die as slaves in the tunnels here. Hundreds of corpses were stretched out across the tunnel floors. Equally disturbing was the condition of hundreds more still alive: emaciated humans covered with bruises and sores, too weak to even stand. "It was a fabric of moans and whimpers of delirium and outright madness," recalled fellow soldier Staff Sergeant Donald Schulz. John Risen Jones would not speak of it for fifty-one years.

Following along behind the soldiers was a team of seven war crimes investigators. Among them was a young Dutch officer working for the U.S. Army, William J. Aalmans. Like John Risen Jones, Aalmans was deeply affected by what he saw and smelled. "Stench, the tuberculosis and the starved inmates," he told journalist Tom Bower after the war. "Four people were dying every hour. It was unbelievable." Aalmans and his team began taking witness statements from prisoners, who sipped watered-down milk for strength. The job facing the war crimes investigators was overwhelming, and their schedule was intense. After five days in Nordhausen they were ordered to move on. Most of the official paperwork regarding rocket production had been hidden or destroyed, but Aalmans and his team found a single sheet of paper inadvertently left behind, tacked to the wall. It was the Mittelwerk telephone list; a directory of who was in charge. At the very top were two names: Georg Rickhey, director of production, and Arthur Rudolph, deputy production manager. Aalmans found the document interesting enough to staple it to the report. Although it would take years to come to light, this single sheet of paper would eventually lead to the downfall of Rudolph and Rickhey and threaten to expose the dark secrets of Operation Paperclip.

Seventy-five miles south of Nordhausen, in the Thuringian Forest at the edge of the Harz, Allied soldiers liberated the town of Geraberg. Here, they came upon a curious-looking research facility concealed in a thick grove of trees. Clearly the place had recently been abandoned. It comprised a laboratory, an isolation block, animal houses, and living quarters for fourteen men. Part of the facility was still under construction. Word was sent to SHAEF headquarters in Versailles that a team of bacteriologists was needed in Geraberg. Alsos scientists were dispatched to investigate. One of the first biological warfare experts to arrive was Bill Cromartie, who had been hunting for evidence of Hitler's biological weapons program since the mission began back in Strasbourg, France. Back in November, Cromartie had been one of the men scouring files with Samuel Goudsmit, inside the apartment of Dr. Eugen Haagen, when Alsos agents first learned that the Reich was testing deadly vaccines on prisoners in concentration camps. Arriving at Geraberg, Cromartie determined that the laboratory here was a significant lead.

"The building and sites were on either side of a small valley and constructed under tall trees," read Cromartie's classified report. "On one side there was a building [that] was to have been the experimental laboratory," he surmised, suggesting that this facility was designed to produce experimental vaccines to protect German soldiers against a biological weapons offensive.

A local villager provided Cromartie and a colleague, J. M. Barnes, with two key pieces of information in the biological weapons puzzle. The villager explained that an SS man named Dr. Karl Gross had been overseeing work at this facility. Gross kept dozens of trunks and boxes locked in the upper floors of a local schoolhouse, and, while he had recently disappeared, he had left the trunks behind. The villager took the American scientists to the schoolhouse to investigate.

An inventory was taken of Dr. Gross's possessions, mostly laboratory equipment. "There were crates of test tubes and small flasks and large numbers of test tube racks. There were two incubators and an autoclave. There were two boxes of gas mask filters and some rubber hoods and gowns," read the report. Everything was military-grade protective gear, marked as having "been obtained from the Hygiene Institute of the Waffen SS." There was also a large collection of books, "several boxes of periodicals all dealing with infectious diseases." The ones that really caught the scientists' attention were "Russian contributions on plague."

Next, the villager took the Alsos agents to the nearby boardinghouse where Dr. Gross had been renting a room. The place was cleared out and void of personal possessions. "His landlady said she believed he had burnt a lot of papers the night before he left," the Alsos scientists noted in their report. But Dr. Gross was only the intermediary, the landlady said. There was another man who came to the facility and appeared to be in charge. He was an older man, about fifty, five foot nine, with a mustache and black hair. On his upper lip he had a pronounced dueling scar. He had to have been of high rank, because everyone on the staff deferred to him. When cross-referenced by Alsos against the Osenberg List, the situation became even clearer: Dr. Karl Gross worked under Dr. Kurt Blome, the individual in charge of biological weapons research and the deputy surgeon general of the Third Reich.

All indicators pointed to the idea that Geraberg was a Reich facility for biological weapons research. Alsos agents photographed the site: the animal house, the vaccine station, the experimental laboratory, and the isolation hospital. They typed up a report and filed it away for future use. Now, near the top of the biological weapons Black List was the name Dr. Kurt Blome.

Sixty miles north of Nordhausen, a battalion of American soldiers with the First U.S. Infantry moved cautiously through the forest on the western edge of a small city called Braunschweig. It was April 13, 1945, when they came upon a compound of about seventy buildings. Great care had gone into camouflaging this place, the soldiers noted. Thousands of trees had been planted closely so that the area would appear from the air to be dense forest. The buildings in the compound had been designed to look like simple farmhouses. Traditional gardens had been planted and tended to. Stork nests covered the rooftops.

Inside the buildings, soldiers discovered state-of-the-art aircraft laboratories, including entire warehouses filled with airplane parts and rocket fuel. There were wind and weapons tunnels that were radically more advanced than anything the Army Air Forces had at Wright Field. The oldest division in the United States Army had unexpectedly happened upon the most scientifically advanced aeronautics laboratory in the world. It was called the Hermann Göring Aeronautical Research Center at Völkenrode. The Allies had never heard of it before. It didn't appear on any CIOS Black List. It was an incredible find.

At first, it seemed as if the place had been abandoned. But after an hour of looking around, the soldiers came upon the institute's scientific director, a man named Adolf Busemann. Busemann told the soldiers that this facility was called Völkenrode for short, and that it had been up and running for ten years. A team of Army Air Forces technical intelligence experts, working as part of a mission called Operation Lusty and stationed in Saint-Germain, France, was dispatched to investigate. By now the U.S. Strategic Air Forces in Europe had destroyed the Luftwaffe, and the bombing campaign had essentially stopped. Its commander, General Carl A. "Tooey" Spaatz, had just received a fourth star for his success commanding the largest fleet of combat aircraft ever assembled for war. Now Spaatz had a new mission for his field commanders. "Operation Lusty," Spaatz wrote in a memo, was "in effect," and everyone "not engaged in critical operational duties" was to seek out "technical and scientific intelligence [that would be] of material assistance in the prosecution of the war against Japan." The man Spaatz chose to lead the hunt for Luftwaffe scientists and engineers was Colonel Donald L. Putt.

When Putt arrived at Völkenrode on April 22, 1945, he was thrilled by what he saw. All he could think about was how quickly he could get all this equipment back to the United States. Putt was a legendary test pilot who had been at Wright Field since 1933, assigned to various branches, including the Flying Branch. He had walked away from a deadly air crash that killed his colleagues and left him with second-degree burn scars on his face and neck. Putt was a hard-charging, Type A personality—a tiger among men. "He displayed the ability to withstand great emotional shock, to absorb it, and take in stride," explained a colleague from Wright Field. Putt was also intellectually gifted, with a degree in electrical engineering from the Carnegie Institute of Technology and a master's in aeronautical engineering from the California Institute of Technology. As an older man, Donald Putt recalled the prewar mind-set regarding pilots who were also engineers. "Then, the philosophy was, 'Don't put an engineering pilot in the cockpit, because he tries to figure out why things happen.' " But when the air wars in Europe and Japan escalated, the Army Air Forces found itself in need of fast, out-of-the-box thinking from American pilot-engineers like Putt. The Army Air Forces put the old philosophy to the side and Putt's expertise to use. In 1944, Putt's career milestone arrived when he was put in charge of modifying a B-29 bomber so that it could deliver an extraordinarily heavy, Top Secret payload on Japan. This payload was eventually revealed to be the atomic bombs dropped on Hiroshima and

Nagasaki. After Putt finished his B-29 bomber retrofitting jobs, in January 1945, he was sent overseas as director of technical services for the Air Service Command. Now here he was in the last week of April 1945 at Völkenrode.

With his engineer’s expertise, Putt was able to clearly judge the revolutionary nature of the technology he was looking at. Most astonishing to Putt were Völkenrode’s seven wind tunnels that had allowed the Luftwaffe to study how a swept-back wing would behave at the speed at which an aircraft broke the sound barrier. This transition place, between Mach 0.8 and Mach 1.2, was still unknown to American fliers in 1945. When Putt learned from Völkenrode’s director, Adolf Busemann, that the sound barrier had already been breached by German scientists in these wind tunnels, he was amazed. Putt knew immediately that the facility had “the most superb instruments and test equipment” in the world.

Putt was taking orders from the U.S. Army, European Theater of Operations, Directorate of Intelligence, Exploitation Division, which meant that he had access to stripped-down B-17s and B-24s if he needed them, a means to transport much of this equipment to the United States, which Putt very much wanted to do. He wrote to his boss, Major General Hugh Knerr, deputy commander of U.S. Strategic Air Force in Europe, outlining his proposition and suggesting a second idea: Why not also fly scientists like Adolf Busemann out of Germany, along with the captured Luftwaffe equipment? “If we are not too proud to make use of this German-born information, much benefit can be derived from it and we can advance where Germany left off,” Putt wrote. The German scientists “would be of immense value in our jet engine and airplane development program.” Putt and Knerr both knew that the War Department General Staff was filled with individuals who were wary of Germans in general and totally opposed to making deals of any kind with the very Nazi scientists who had helped to prolong the war. But if anyone could get the War Department to bend, Knerr and Putt believed they could.

Major General Knerr sent a memo to the War Department in Washington, D.C., explaining that using Luftwaffe technology to fight the war in Japan was imperative. He added that the scientists’ Nazi Party membership needed to be overlooked. “Pride and face saving have no place in national insurance,” wrote Knerr.

The War Department General Staff was not so easily convinced—at least not now. Colonel Putt was informed that the equipment could come out of Völkenrode immediately but that getting German scientists to Wright Field would take some more time. Putt oversaw the massive airlift of German aircraft and rocket parts from Völkenrode to the United States; five thousand scientific documents were also shipped. Meanwhile, he and his staff rounded up as many Luftwaffe personnel as they could, tracking down leads and making deals with scientists and engineers in their homes. Putt informed the Germans that he could not offer them U.S. Army contracts just yet but that he would most likely be able to do so soon. In the meantime, he arranged for dozens of Luftwaffe scientists and engineers to be quartered in the Hotel Wittelsbacher Hof, in the spa town of Bad Kissingen, and made sure that the men had plenty to eat, drink, and smoke. Wait here, the scientists were told. The U.S. Army contracts are on the way.

Colonel Putt and Major General Knerr would then put their heads together and figure out a way to convince the War Department that their point of view was best for the United States.

Around this time, the single largest cache of chemical weapons discovered to date was found seventy-five miles west of Hannover. On April 16, 1945, British soldiers from Montgomery’s Twenty-first Army Group pulled up to the entrance of an abandoned German army proving ground called the Robbers’ Lair, or Raubkammer. The place appeared to be abandoned, but Waffen-SS snipers still were known to be hiding in the woods. The soldiers exercised caution as they drove their armored personnel cars through a pair of entrance pillars adorned with Reich eagles and swastikas.

At first glance the facility looked like a standard military proving ground—a place where bombs were exploded and blast measurements recorded. Raubkammer was located in a rural forested area called Münster-Nord, and it extended more than seventy-six square miles. Large craters in open fields suggested that Luftwaffe airplanes had practiced dropping bombs here. There was fancy housing for hundreds of officers. There were large administrative buildings and an officers’ mess hall. Then the soldiers came upon the zoo.

It was a large zoo, capable of housing a vast array of animals of all sizes. There were cages for mice, cats, and dogs, as well as large pens and stables for farm animals like horses, cows, and pigs. There were also monkey cages. But it was the discovery of a massive, round wooden cylinder—most likely an aerosol chamber—that triggered alarm. The structure was sixty-five feet tall and a hundred feet wide, and it was ringed with a network of scaffolding, pipes, and ventilator fans. Between the zoo and the large chamber, the soldiers were now relatively certain that Raubkammer was no ordinary military proving ground. The Robbers' Lair bore the hallmarks of a field-testing facility that likely involved poison gas. An urgent memo was sent to SHAEF asking for a team of chemical warfare experts to be dispatched to Raubkammer. Two teams descended, one from the British Chemical Defense Experimental Establishment at Porton Down and another from CIOS, including Major Tilley and Colonel Tarr.

At the same time, a second unit of British troops working just a few miles to the southwest of the Robbers' Lair came upon two bunker clusters totaling almost two hundred structures. The area had been artfully concealed from overhead view by dense forest cover. The first cluster consisted of several dozen small wooden buildings intermittently spaced between similarly sized concrete blockhouses. The soldiers inventoried the contents with caution. Inside one set of bunkers they found thousands of bombs, stacked in neat piles. Each bomb was marked with a single yellow ring painted around the sides of the munition. This was the standard marking to denote mustard gas, the chemical weapon used by both sides in World War I. The British soldiers took inventory and counted one hundred thousand mustard gas shells.

The second munitions depot was marked as belonging to the Luftwaffe. Here, 175 bunkers were filled with bombs that were unidentifiable to the Allies. Each bomb had been marked with three green rings painted around its sides. Montgomery's soldiers sent an urgent memo to SHAEF asking for a team of chemical weapons experts to come investigate the munitions in the forest.

The scientists from CIOS and Porton Down were nervous about what might be inside the mysteriously marked bombs. They decided that it was best to try to locate German scientists in the area who might be familiar with the contents of the bombs before they opened the casings themselves—so they began knocking on the doors of the nicer houses in the vicinity of Robbers' Lair. As they had suspected they would, CIOS officers located a number of individuals who confessed to being German army scientists and having worked at Raubkammer. While each scientist claimed to have no idea what kind of weapons testing had been going on at the military facility, CIOS officers were able to persuade several of the German scientists to assist them in extracting the liquid substance from the center of the bombs.

By this time, chemists with the U.S. Army's Forty-fifth Chemical Laboratory Company had arrived, bringing with them a mobile laboratory unit and cages filled with rabbits. The original thought was that the substance marked by three green rings was some kind of new Nazi blister agent—similar to, but perhaps more powerful than, mustard gas. The chemists were wrong. Extractions were made, and when tested on the rabbits in the mobile laboratory, whatever this liquid substance was killed a warm-blooded rabbit five times faster than anything that British or American scientists had ever seen, or even heard about, before. Even more alarming, the liquid substance did not have to be inhaled to kill. A single drop on the rabbit's skin killed the animal in just a few minutes. The millions of gas masks England had distributed to city dwellers during the war would have offered no defense against a chemical weapon as potent as whatever this killing agent was.

CIOS field agents wrote up a Top Secret report for their superiors at SHAEF. A menacing new breed of chemical weapons had been discovered. Aerial bombs "found to contain a markedly potent and hitherto unknown organophosphorus nerve agent" had been developed by the Nazis during the war and stashed in two hundred bunkers in the forest nearby. No chemical this lethal to man had ever been developed before. CIOS agents did not know it yet, but this nerve agent was tabun. The three green rings had been painted on the Luftwaffe bombs at Farben's Dyhernfurth facility in Poland.

Allied chemical weapons experts were suddenly in possession of one of the most dangerous wonder weapons—and one of the best-kept secrets—of the Third Reich. That these weapons were never used was astonishing.

Who were the scientists who had discovered this nerve agent, and where were they now?

Underground in the center of Berlin, in a makeshift hospital set up in a subway tunnel beneath the Reich Chancellery, Major General Dr. Walter Schreiber performed emergency surgeries on wounded Wehrmacht soldiers. He gave blood transfusions, performed amputations—whatever it was that needed to be done. As surgeon general of the Third Reich, Schreiber was not a hospital doctor accustomed to dealing with triage. But, as he would later testify at Nuremberg, all of his physician-colleagues had fled Berlin; this was not necessarily the truth. Schreiber was a short, squat man, five foot six, with blond hair, blue eyes, and a nose that ended in a fleshy point. A man of great willpower and stamina, he prided himself as setting his mind to a task and getting it done.

Today was the Führer’s fifty-sixth birthday, April 20, 1945. And because it was Hitler’s birthday, this Berlin morning began with Propaganda Minister Joseph Goebbels’s Happy Birthday broadcast, calling on all Germans to trust Hitler and to follow him faithfully to the bitter end. While Major General Dr. Schreiber performed surgeries in his makeshift underground hospital, a group of his Nazi Party colleagues had gathered for a party almost directly above where he was located, in the half-destroyed Reich Chancellery building. Around noon, Hitler’s inner circle made its way into a cavernous room with polished marble walls and floor-to-ceiling doors: Speer, Göring, Himmler, SA-Obergruppenführer and police and Waffen-SS general Ernst Kaltenbrunner, Nazi Party foreign minister Joachim von Ribbentrop, Grand Admiral Karl Dönitz of the navy, Generalfeldmarschall Wilhelm Keitel, military commander Alfred Jodl, and SS-Brigadeführer Hans Krebs. The men gathered around an enormous table covered with bottles of champagne and a spread of food. Hitler said a few words and promised that the Russians would soon suffer their most crushing defeat yet.

That morning, the Red Army had in fact begun its final assault on Berlin. Before dawn German soldiers had retreated from the Seelow Heights, fifty-five miles from the center of Berlin, leaving no front line. The Soviet operation to capture Berlin was colossal, involving 2,500,000 Red Army soldiers, 41,600 guns and mortars, 7,500 aircraft, and more than 6,000 tanks.

Rumor, panic, and chaos enveloped the city at an unstoppable pace. The majority of Berliners were now living underground, in cellars and air raid shelters, appearing aboveground only to scavenge for food. Every road out of Berlin leading west was overwhelmed with refugees. Casualties were skyrocketing. To the south, a detachment of Hitler Youth fighting near the Buckow Forest became trapped in a forest fire; most were burned alive. Major General Dr. Walter Schreiber’s makeshift hospital could not keep up with the wounded. During the course of the next twelve days the Red Army would fire 1.8 million shells on the city.

Hitler's birthday was also the day Knemeyer and Baumbach would flee Berlin for good. In the morning, Baumbach had received a cryptic message from Göring, who instructed him to go meet with SS-Brigadeführer Walter Friedrich Schellenberg, the notorious chief of military intelligence and Himmler's number-two man. The end was near and everyone seemed to know it, so what did Schellenberg want from Baumbach now? Schellenberg told Baumbach that a warrant had been issued for his arrest and that he was scheduled to be taken into custody during the Führer's birthday party. Baumbach should leave the city immediately, Schellenberg said. Anyone close to Hitler who was arrested this late in the war—usually suspected of treason—faced a quick execution. This was happening all across Berlin. Had Hitler found out about the Greenland escape plan?

"Schellenberg, whom I had known for years," Baumbach later explained, "was a clever man." Baumbach interpreted the tip-off to mean only one thing: Schellenberg needed Baumbach alive to help facilitate an escape. "It was known among a core group of SS officers that Himmler had been trying to use concentration camp inmates as bargaining chips for clemency, through an intermediary, the Swedish Red Cross," Baumbach explained. Of course Himmler would never be granted clemency; Baumbach figured that Schellenberg and Himmler wanted him alive so he could help them escape somewhere overseas.

Baumbach located Knemeyer and the two pilots agreed to flee Berlin immediately. They got in Baumbach's BMW and headed north to the Travemünde airfield, two hundred miles north of Berlin, on the Baltic Sea. The long-range aircraft they planned to use for their escape with Speer sat stocked and fueled on the tarmac. "We were supplied with everything we needed for six months," Baumbach explained after the war. Knemeyer and Baumbach found many Luftwaffe officers packing up their belongings, stripping themselves of military identification, and preparing to disappear among civilians. An aide delivered an urgent message to Baumbach. This time it was from Himmler himself. The Reichsführer-SS wanted to see Baumbach immediately. Baumbach was to come to Mecklenburg, halfway back to Berlin, where Himmler was staying. Baumbach asked Knemeyer to accompany him.

The road leading to Mecklenburg was swamped with refugees. This part of Germany was one of the only regions still in German control. SS guards herded concentration camp prisoners along the roads like cattle in a last-ditch effort to keep them out of the liberators' hands. The roads were almost impassable, and it took five hours for Baumbach and Knemeyer to drive a hundred miles. When they finally arrived at a large country home referred to as the manor of Dobbin, Himmler's SS-guards escorted them inside.

"The Reichsführer will receive you now," a guard said. Knemeyer was told to wait outside Himmler's office, while Baumbach was led down a long, narrow corridor, up a winding staircase, and into Himmler's study. Behind the desk, Himmler sat alone. He wore a gray field uniform covered with SS insignia, the death's head (Totenkopf). The sleeves on Himmler's uniform were too long, and Baumbach noted a cheap ring on the pinkie finger of his left hand. Himmler sized up the general of the bombers from behind his signature pince-nez and got to the point.

"I've sent for you to clear up some Luftwaffe problems," Himmler said, as recalled by Baumbach after the war. "The war has entered the final stage and there are some very important decisions I shall have to take." Baumbach listened. "In the very near future I expect to be negotiating with our enemies probably through some neutral country," Himmler said. "I've heard that all aircraft suitable for this purpose are under your command." Baumbach looked out the windows and across the carefully pruned gardens outside, considering his response. Yes, Baumbach told Himmler, he had aircraft at his disposal, ready at any time. Himmler assumed an even friendlier tone, Baumbach recalled, and asked where he could get hold of Baumbach in the coming days. At the Travemünde airfield, Baumbach said. An aide interrupted to announce the arrival of Field Marshal Keitel. Baumbach was dismissed.

Baumbach made his way back to the sitting room, where Knemeyer waited. By now Knemeyer had figured out whose fancy manor Himmler was living in. The home once belonged to Sir Henry Deterding, the English lord known as the Napoleon of Oil. Next to Knemeyer on a side table were two portraits in silver frames. One showed Göring wearing a medieval hunting costume and holding a large knife. It read, "[T]o my dear Deterding in gratitude for your noble gift of Rominten Reichs Hunting Lodge," a detail Knemeyer shared with his son decades after the war. The second photograph was a portrait of Hitler. "Sir Henry Deterding," it read, "in the name of the German people for the noble donation of a million reichsmarks. Adolf Hitler."

Knemeyer and Baumbach headed outside. The SS officer posted to guard the hallway gave the two men a stiff salute. He told them that the Reichsführer-SS had arranged a tray of coffee and sandwiches for them to enjoy before they headed back to Travemünde.

The reason that the Greenland escape plan was still on hold was because Speer decided to visit Hitler one last time at the Führerbunker, compelled by an "overwhelming desire to see him once more." Driving alone in his private car from Hamburg back into Berlin, Speer was fifty-five miles outside the city when the road became impassable, clogged with what Speer later recalled to be "a ten-thousand vehicle traffic jam." No one was driving into Berlin anymore; everyone was getting out. All lanes in both directions were being used for travel west. "Jalopies and limousines, trucks and delivery vans, motorcycles and even Berlin fire trucks" blocked the road. Unable to advance, Speer turned off the road and drove to a divisional staff headquarters, in Kyritz, where he learned Soviet forces had encircled Berlin.

He also learned that there was only one landing strip inside Berlin that remained under German control, Gatow airport, on the bank of the Havel River. Speer decided that he would now fly into Berlin. But the nearest aircraft with fuel were parked on the tarmac at the Luftwaffe's Rechlin test site, near Mecklenburg. Jet fuel was now as rare as hen's teeth, and the aircraft was undoubtedly needed for other things. Speer insisted that the commandant at Rechlin locate a pilot capable of flying him into Berlin. The commandant at Rechlin explained that from Gatow, Speer would never be able to get to the Führerbunker if he traveled by car or by foot; the Russians controlled the way there. In order to get to the Führerbunker under the New Reich Chancellery, Speer would need a second, smaller aircraft to fly him from Gatow to the Brandenburg Gate. He would need a short takeoff and landing aircraft, or STOL, like the Fieseler Fi 156 Storch (Stork).

"Escorted by a squadron of fighter planes, we flew southward at an altitude of somewhat over 3,000 feet, a few miles above the battle zone," remembered Speer. "Visibility was perfect.… All that could be seen were brief, inconspicuous flashes from artillery or exploding shells." The airfield at Gatow was deserted when they landed, with the exception of one of Hitler's generals who was fleeing Berlin. Speer and his pilot climbed into a waiting Stork and flew the short distance over Berlin, landing amid rubble piles directly in front of the Brandenburg Gate. Speer commandeered an army vehicle and had himself driven to the Chancellery, or what was left of it.

American bombers had reduced the building to ruins. Speer climbed over a pile of rubble that had once been a ceiling and walked into what used to be a sitting room. There, Hitler's adjunct, Julius Schaub, stood drinking brandy with friends. Speer called out. Schaub appeared stunned by the sight of Speer. The companions dispersed. Schaub hurried off to inform Hitler that Speer had come to see him. Speer waited next to a rubble pile. Finally, he heard the words he had come to hear: "The Führer is ready to see you now."

Speer walked down into the bunker, where he was met by Martin Bormann, "Hitler's Mephistopheles," holding court. Bormann wanted to know if Speer had come to try to get Hitler to fly with him out of Berlin. Propaganda Minister Joseph Goebbels and his wife, Magda, were also in the bunker, plotting the murder-suicide of their six children and themselves. Hitler's girlfriend, Eva Braun, invited Speer into her quarters to eat cake and drink Moët & Chandon until Hitler was ready to see him. At 3:00 a.m. Speer was told he could come in. "I was both moved and confused," Speer later recalled. "For his part he [Hitler] showed no emotion when we confronted one another. His words were as cold as his hand."

"So you're leaving?" Hitler asked Speer. Then he said, "Good. Auf Wiedersehen." Good-bye.

Speer felt scorned. "No regards to my family, no wishes, no thanks, no farewell." For a moment, Speer lost his composure and mumbled something about coming back. But Hitler dismissed his minister of war and weapons, and Speer left.

Six days after Speer's final meeting with Hitler, the U.S. Army liberated Dachau, a concentration camp located twelve miles outside Munich. It was 7:30 in the morning on April 29 when fifty tanks from the Seventh Army, Third Battalion of the 157th Infantry Regiment, pulled up to what at first seemed like an ordinary military post, located adjacent to an SS training camp. The weather was cold and there was a dusting of snow. The post was surrounded by high brick walls, an electrified barbed-wire fence, and a deep ditch. Seven fortified guard towers loomed overhead. The large iron front gates were closed and locked. A few American soldiers scaled the fence, cut the locks, and opened the gates. The soldiers rushed inside. A brief exchange of rifle fire ensued. Turkish newspaper correspondent Nerin E. Gun, imprisoned in Dachau for his reports on the Warsaw Ghetto, bore witness as some of the SS guards in the watchtowers began shooting at prisoners. But the American soldiers, Gun said, put a quick end to that. "The SS guards promptly came down the ladders, their hands raised high in surrender." Other accounts describe brutal acts of vengeance inflicted by prisoners against their former SS guards. More gunfire ensued as a second unit, the Forty-fifth Thunderbird Division, approached Dachau from the southwest. They discovered fifty open freight cars abandoned just outside the garrison. Each train car was filled with emaciated bodies. There were several thousand corpses in all.

Dachau, the first Nazi concentration camp, had been established by Himmler on March 20, 1933. It was originally a place where Communists and other political enemies of National Socialism, the ideology of the Nazi Party, were sent. The name came from the fact that prisoners could be "concentrated" in a group and held under protective custody following Nazi law. Quickly, this changed. Himmler made concentration camps "legally independent administrative units outside the penal code and the ordinary law." Dachau had served as a training center for SS concentration camp guards and became a model for how hundreds of other concentration camps were to be set up and run. It was also a model for Nazi medical research programs involving doctors who would later become part of Operation Paperclip.

A young U.S. Army lieutenant and physician, Dr. Marcus J. Smith, arrived at Dachau early on the morning of April 30, 1945, and in his journal Smith noted how cold and gloomy the thousand-year-old city was. Before noon it started to hail. Dr. Smith was the sole medical officer attached to a ten-man displaced persons team sent to the concentration camp the day after it was liberated. He and his fellow soldiers had instructions to do what they could to help the 32,000 starved, diseased, and dying camp survivors as they waited for Red Cross workers to arrive. The newly liberated suffered from dysentery, tuberculosis, typhus, pneumonia, scabies, and other infectious diseases in early, late, and terminal stages, Smith wrote. "Even my callous, death-hardened county-hospital exterior begins to crack.… One of my men weeps.”

During breaks, Dr. Smith walked around Dachau’s gas chamber to try to make sense of what had gone on there. “I cannot believe this is possible in this enlightened age,” he wrote. “In the rear of the crematorium is [a] sign, depicting a man riding a monstrous pig. ‘Wash your hands,’ says the caption. ‘It is your duty to remain clean.’ ”

In his spare time, Dr. Smith wandered through the camp. “On one of these walks I enter a one-story building that contains laboratory counters and storage shelves,” Smith wrote, “almost everything in it has been smashed: I step over broken benches and drawers, twisted instruments and shattered glassware. In the debris, I am surprised to find a few specimen jars and bottles intact, filled with preserved human and insect tissues.” Smith asked questions around the concentration camp to try to learn more. Prisoners told him that the laboratory had served Nazi doctors as an experimental medical ward, and that everyone was afraid of it because it was a place “where selected prisoners [were] used as experimental subjects without their consent.”

Although it was not yet known by American or British intelligence at the time, what Dr. Marcus Smith had come upon at Dachau was the place where a group of Luftwaffe doctors had been conducting medical research experiments on humans. This work took place in a freestanding barracks, isolated from the others, and was called Experimental Cell Block Five. Many of the Reich’s elite medical doctors passed through the laboratory here. The work that was performed in Experimental Cell Block Five was science without conscience: bad science for bad ends. That at least six Nazi medical doctors involved in this research at Dachau would be among the first scientists given contracts by the U.S. Army would become one of the darkest secrets of Operation Paperclip.

CHAPTER FIVE

The Captured and Their Interrogators

The capturing of Nazi scientists would now become a watershed. One by one, across the Reich, Hitler's scientists were taken into custody and interrogated. The day after Dachau was liberated, 375 miles to the north, Soviet commanders planned their final assault on the iconic Reichstag building, in Berlin. Sometime around 3:30 in the afternoon, inside the Führerbunker, Hitler fired a bullet into his head. The Russians were just five hundred meters from the Führerbunker's emergency exit door. Around the corner, under the Reich Chancellery, Red Army soldiers took over the underground subway tunnels, including the one Major General Dr. Walter Schreiber had been using as a hospital. Soviet film footage—alleged by Schreiber to have been filmed days later as a reenactment—shows Schreiber coming out of a cellar with his hands over his head.

Up north, Siegfried Knemeyer was captured by the British. Baumbach, Knemeyer, and Speer never escaped to Greenland after all. Shortly after Hitler killed himself, Baumbach was ordered by Grand Admiral Dönitz to go to the small town of Eutin, forty miles north of the city of Hamburg. Hitler had named Dönitz his successor; Dönitz set up his new government in the naval barracks at Eutin because it was one of the few places not yet controlled by the Allied forces.

Siegfried Knemeyer hadn't been invited to join the new inner circle. Baumbach let him keep the BMW and Knemeyer fled west. On a country road outside Hamburg, Knemeyer spotted a vehicle filled with British soldiers on approach. He knew that the BMW he was driving would be recognized as belonging to a senior military officer, so he pulled off the highway, ditched the car, and fled on foot. British soldiers found him hiding under a bridge and arrested him. Knemeyer was taken to a newly liberated concentration camp outside Hamburg, where hundreds of other German officers and Nazi Party officials were held. He was a prisoner of war now and was accordingly stripped of his valuables and military insignia. Years later, Knemeyer would share with his son that he managed to hide his one remaining meaningful possession in his shoe: a 1,000 Swiss franc note given to him by Albert Speer.

Von Braun and Dornberger were not captured. So confident were they as to their future use by the U.S. Army that they turned themselves in. Since departing from Nordhausen several weeks before, von Braun, Dornberger, and hundreds of other men from the rocket program had been hiding out in a remote ski village in the Bavarian Alps. Their resort, Haus Ingeburg, was located at an elevation of 3,850 feet along a windy mountain road then called the Adolf Hitler Pass (known before and after the war as the Oberjoch Pass). Thanks to the resources of the SS, the scientists had plenty of fine food and drink. There was a sun terrace and, as von Braun reflected after the war, little for any of them to do but eat, drink, sunbathe, and admire the snow-capped Allgäu Alps. “There I was living royally in a ski hotel on a mountain plateau,” von Braun later recalled, “the French below us to the west, and the Americans to the south. But no one, of course, suspected we were there.”

On the night of May 1, 1945, the scientists were listening to the national radio as it played Bruckner’s Symphony No. 7 when, at 10:26, the music was interrupted by a long military drumroll. “Our Führer, Adolf Hitler, fighting to the last breath against Bolshevism, fell for Germany this afternoon in his operational headquarters in the Reich Chancellery,” the radio announcer declared. The fight was a fabrication. But Hitler’s death spurred Wernher von Braun to action. Von Braun approached General Dornberger, suggesting that they move quickly to make a deal with the Americans. “I agree with you, Wernher,” Dornberger was overheard saying late that night. “It’s our obligation to put our baby into the right hands.”

At Haus Ingeburg the rocket scientists had been using a network of German and Austrian intelligence sources to keep track of U.S. Army developments in the area. Von Braun and Dornberger knew that a unit of U.S. soldiers had set up a base at the bottom of the mountain on the Austrian side. The two men agreed it was best to send von Braun’s younger brother, Magnus, down the mountain to try to make a deal with the Americans. Magnus was trustworthy. He understood what could be said about the V-2 and what could never be said. Magnus von Braun had been in charge of overseeing slave labor production of the gyroscopes that each rocket required, and he understood why the subject of slave labor was to be avoided at all cost. He also was the best English speaker in the group.

On the morning of May 2, Magnus von Braun climbed onto a bicycle and began pedaling down the steep mountain pass through the bright alpine sunshine. Shortly before lunchtime he came upon an American soldier manning a post along the road. It was Private First Class Fred Schneikert, the son of a Wisconsin farmer, now a soldier with the Forty-fourth Infantry Division of the U.S. Army. When Private Schneikert spotted a lone German on a bicycle, he ordered the man to drop the bike and raise both hands. Magnus von Braun complied. In broken English, he tried explaining to the American soldier that his brother wanted to make a deal with regard to the V-2 rocket. "It sounded like he wanted to 'sell' his brother to the Americans," Private Schneikert recalled.

Private Schneikert escorted Magnus von Braun farther down the mountain so he could speak with a superior at the Forty-fourth Division's U.S. Counter Intelligence Corps (CIC) headquarters, located in Reutte, just over the border in Austria. There, CIC contacted SHAEF headquarters in Versailles, which contacted a CIOS team. The CIOS Black List for rocket research included one thousand names of scientists and engineers slated for interrogation. Wernher von Braun was at the top of that list.

It was May 2, 1945, and although Hitler was dead, the German Reich had not yet surrendered. Allies feared members of a fanatical resistance group, the Werewolves, were lurking in Bavaria, planning a final attack. Thinking that the von Braun brother could be part of a trap, the Counter Intelligence Corps told Magnus to go tell his brother Wernher to come down and surrender himself. Magnus headed back up the mountain with the news.

At the Haus Ingeburg ski resort, Wernher von Braun and General Dornberger had selected a small group to join their deal-making team. They were Magnus von Braun; General Dornberger's chief of staff, Herbert Axster; the engine specialist Hans Lindenberg; and the two engineers who had hidden the V-2 documents inside the Dörnten mine, Dieter Huzel and Bernhard Tessmann. The men stuffed their personal belongings into three gray passenger vans and headed down the Adolf Hitler Pass. Heavy snow gave way to driving rain.

When the group of seven arrived in Reutte later that night, they found First Lieutenant Charles Stewart doing paperwork by candlelight. Their welcome was, by many accounts, warm. “I did not expect to be kicked in the teeth,” von Braun told an American reporter years later. “The V-2 was something we had and you didn’t have. Naturally, you wanted to know all about it.” The rocket scientists were served fresh eggs, coffee, and bread with real butter. Fancy, but not quite as good as what was being provided at Haus Ingeburg. The scientists were given private rooms to sleep in, with pillows and clean sheets. In the morning, the press had arrived. The “capture” of the scientists and engineers behind the deadly V-2 was a big story for the international press. The group posed for photographs, and in the pictures they are all smiles. Von Braun boasted about having invented the V-2. He was “its founder and guiding spirit,” von Braun insisted. Everyone else was secondary to him.

Some members of the Forty-fourth Division Counter Intelligence Corps found von Braun’s hubris appalling. “He posed for endless pictures with individual GIs, in which he beamed, shook hands, pointed inquiringly at medals and otherwise conducted himself as a celebrity rather than a prisoner,” noted one member, “treat[ing] our soldiers with the affable condescension of a visiting congressman.” Second Lieutenant Walter Jessel was the American intelligence officer originally in charge of interrogating von Braun. His first and most lasting impression was the lack of remorse. “There is recognition of Germany’s defeat, but none whatsoever of Germany’s guilt and responsibility.” So confident were von Braun and Dornberger about their value to the U.S. Army, they demanded to see General Eisenhower, whom they called “Ike.”

Another observer noted, “If we hadn’t caught the biggest scientist in the Third Reich, we had certainly caught the biggest liar.”

Hitler’s chemists—sought after as they were—were nowhere to be found. It was early May, and the Seventh Army was in control of the beautiful old city of Heidelberg, located on the Neckar River. Twenty-five agents attached to the U.S. military government’s Cartels Division, including clerks with OSS and the Foreign Economic Division, had descended on the town looking for board members from IG Farben. In addition to being wanted for war crimes, the IG Farben board of directors was being investigated for international money laundering schemes. A number of high-ranking Farben executives were known to have houses in Heidelberg, but to date no one had been able to find Hermann Schmitz, the company's powerful and secretive CEO. Schmitz was also a director of the Deutsche Reichsbank, the German central bank, and director of the Bank for International Settlements in Geneva. He was believed to be the wealthiest banker in all of Germany. The reason no one had been able to locate Hermann Schmitz was not because he was hiding out or had fled but because officers were going around Heidelberg looking for "Schmitz Castle." Despite the vast wealth he had accumulated during the war, Hermann Schmitz was actually a miser. He lived in a modest, if not ugly, little house. "No one would associate the legend of Schmitz with the house he lived in," Nuremberg prosecutor Josiah DuBois recalled after the war.

Working on a tip, and as part of a door-to-door search for suspected war criminals, a group of enlisted soldiers knocked on the door of a "stucco pillbox of a house" overlooking the city where a short man with a red face and a thick neck answered the door. Behind him, on a placard nailed to the wall, it was written that God was the head of this house. Schmitz had dark eyes and a goatee and was accompanied by his wife, described by soldiers as "a dumpy Frau in a crisp gingham dress." Frau Schmitz offered the soldiers coffee, but Schmitz intervened and told her no. Schmitz said he had no interest in answering the questions of the enlisted men whom he considered beneath him. If an officer came to speak with him, Schmitz said he might have something to say.

The men conducted a cursory search of the house. Schmitz's office was plainly furnished and contained nothing expensive or of any obvious value. Searching though his desk, however, the soldiers learned that Schmitz had friends in high places. They found a collection of birthday telegrams sent from Hitler and Göring, both of whom addressed Schmitz as "Justizrat," Doctor of Laws.

"Doctor of Laws Schmitz," the soldiers asked, mocking him. "How much money do you have in this house, and where is it?"

Schmitz declined to say, and the soldiers were only able to locate a small stash of about 15,000 reichsmarks, or about half the annual salary of a field marshal. So they left, letting Schmitz know that they would return the following day. On the second day, Schmitz let the soldiers back in. This time the soldiers found an air raid shelter behind the house, where Schmitz had hidden a trunk filled with IG Farben documents. There was still not enough evidence to justify arresting Schmitz. It would be a few more days until an incredible discovery was made.

When CIOS team leader Major Tilley learned that Hermann Schmitz had been located, he rushed to Heidelberg. Tilley and Tarr had been leading the CIOS chemical weapons mission across Germany. Ever since they had discovered the tabun nerve agent cache hidden in the forest outside the Robbers' Lair, they had been looking for Farben executives. Now they had the man at the top.

If anyone could skillfully interrogate Hermann Schmitz, Major Tilley could. Not only did he speak fluent German, but he was deeply conversant on the subject of chemical warfare. In Heidelberg, Tilley went directly to Schmitz's house. He suggested that the two men discuss a few things in Herr Schmitz's private study. Schmitz said that would be fine.

Tilley asked the Farben CEO a series of banal questions, all the while tapping on the walls of Schmitz's study. Slowly, Tilley made his way around the room this way, listening for any inconsistencies in the way the walls were built. Schmitz grew increasingly uncomfortable. Finally he began to cry. Tilley had found what he was looking for: a secret safe buried in Schmitz's office wall.

Hermann Schmitz was one of the wealthiest bankers in Germany and one of the most important players in the economics of the Third Reich. What secret was contained in his safe? Major Tilley instructed Schmitz to open it. Inside, lying flat, was a photo album. "The photographs were in a wooden inlaid cover dedicated to Hermann Schmitz on his twenty-fifth jubilee, possibly as a Farben director," Tilley explained in a CIOS intelligence report. Tilley lifted out the photo album from its hiding place, flipped open the cover, and began reviewing the pictures. On here of the scrapbook, the word "Auschwitz" was written. Tilley's eyes scanned over a picture of a street in a Polish village. Next to the photograph was a cartoonish drawing "depicting individuals who had once been part of the Jewish population who lived there, portrayed in a manner that was not flattering to them," Tilley explained. The caption underneath the cartoon read: "The Old Auschwitz. As it Was. Auschwitz in 1940."

At this point, Tilley wrote in his CIOS report, he was surprised at how "highly emotional" Schmitz became. What Tilley did not yet know was that he was looking at Schmitz's secret photo album that chronicled the building history of Farben's labor concentration camp, IG Auschwitz, from the very start. In May of 1945, almost no one, including Major Tilley, had any idea what really had happened at Auschwitz—that at least 1.1 million people had been exterminated there. The facts about the camp had not yet come to light. On January 27, 1945, Soviet troops liberated Auschwitz, and Red Army photographers took film footage and photographs of the atrocities they discovered there. But that information had not yet been shared openly with the rest of the world. A short report about the extermination camp had appeared in *Stalinskoe Znamya,* the Red Army's newspaper, on January 28, 1945. Stalin was waiting to release the bulk of information until after Germany surrendered. What was clear to Major Tilley was that this photo album was important to Schmitz, and that he wanted it to remain hidden. Why, exactly, Major Tilley had no idea.

As CIOS team leader, Major Tilley was on a hunt for Farben chemists who had developed nerve gas. Hermann Schmitz, while important to Farben in the bigger picture, was not a chemist. He claimed to have no idea where the Farben chemists had gone. The scrapbook was taken into evidence, and Tilley moved on in his search. Meanwhile, in southern Germany, in an Austrian border town called Gendorf, the man Major Tilley was really looking for—Dr. Otto Ambros—had just been located by U.S. Army soldiers. The soldiers had no idea who Ambros really was.

When American soldiers rolled into the town of Gendorf, about sixty miles southeast of Munich, they noticed one man in particular because he stood out like a sore thumb. This first encounter with Ambros, later recounted at the Nuremberg trials, stuck out in soldiers' minds because Ambros had been dressed in a fancy suit to greet the victors. The man hardly looked like he'd been through a war. The soldiers asked the man his rank and serial number.

"My name is Otto Ambros," he said, smiling. He added that he was not a military man but "a plain chemist."

Was he German, the soldiers asked?

"Yes, I am German," Ambros replied, and made a joke. He said that he had so many French friends he could almost be considered a Frenchman. In fact, his true home was in Ludwigshafen, on the border with France. He told the soldiers that the reason he was here in southern Bavaria was because he was the director of a large business concern called IG Farben.

The company had a detergent factory here in Gendorf, Ambros explained. As a Farben board member he'd been asked to oversee production. German society might be experiencing a collapse, he told the soldiers, but everyone needed to stay clean.

The soldiers asked to be taken to the detergent factory. Inside, they inspected huge vats of soap and other cleaning products. Work at the factory appeared to have been uninterrupted by the war. Ambros took the soldiers to his office, where someone had taped a rainbow of color spectrum cards to the wall. In addition to cleaning products, the facility made lacquers, Ambros explained. The soldiers looked around, thanked Ambros for the tour, and asked him not to leave town.

I have "no reason to flee," said Ambros. The soldiers noted how much he smiled.

Over the next few days, more soldiers arrived in Gendorf. These filthy, grime-covered American GIs were delighted when the so-called plain chemist offered them free bars of soap. Some of the soldiers hadn't washed in more than a month. The chemist's generosity did not stop there. Otto Ambros gave the soldiers powerful cleaning solvents so that they could wash their mud-covered armored tanks.

Soldiers interviewed Otto Ambros a second time. This time, Ambros voluntarily offered up character witnesses. Working at the Farben factory in Gendorf were skinny men with shaved heads. Ambros said they were war refugees and that they could vouch for his kindness as a boss. They were from Poland, just across the border to the east. Ambros told the soldiers that he had personally brought these poor workers here to Gendorf. He'd handpicked the men and trained them how to work hard. This way, when the refugees went home, they would have skills that could help them earn a living, Ambros explained. The skinny refugees were quiet and said nothing to dispute the plain chemist's claims. Some of them even helped the American soldiers wash their tanks.

Otto Ambros was a talkative man. He regaled the Americans with stories about the joys of chemistry. For example, did the soldiers realize what a miracle it was that man could make one hundred wonders from a single chemical compound like ethylene oxide? Or how amazing rubber was? Ambros told the soldiers that he had been to Ceylon, where the rubber plant grows. Rubber had so much in common with man, Ambros said. He was a rubber expert, so he knew this to be fact. Rubber was civilized. Neat and perfect if kept clean. Ambros told the soldiers that a rubber factory and a man must always be very clean. A single flake of dust or dirt in a vat of liquid rubber could mean a blowout on the autobahn one day. IG Farben had synthetic rubber factories and, like natural rubber, the laboratories and factories must always be kept perfectly clean. Ambros talked a lot, but he did not mention anything about the rubber factory he had built and managed at Auschwitz. The soldiers thanked him for his generosity with the soap and the cleaning agents. Before they left, they reminded Ambros again that it was important he not leave town. He was technically under house arrest.

When American officials of higher rank finally arrived in Gendorf a few days later, they had more specific questions for Ambros. Why was part of the Farben detergent factory built underground? It would take months for CIOS investigators to learn that the factory here in Gendorf produced chemical weapons during the war—and that, after Ambros had fled Auschwitz in late January 1945, he and his deputy, Jürgen von Klenck, had come to Gendorf to destroy evidence, hide documents, and disguise the factory so that it appeared to produce only detergents and soap.

In Munich, on May 17, 1945, U.S. soldiers at a checkpoint were conducting a routine identification request when a well-dressed man—134 pounds, five foot nine, with dark black hair, hazel eyes, and a pronounced dueling scar on the left side of his face between his nose and his upper lip—presented a German passport bearing the name Professor Doctor Friedrich Ludwig Kurt Blome.

Dr. Blome's name triggered an alert: "Immediate arrest. 1st Priority." Samuel Goudsmit and the entire team of biological warfare experts with Operation Alsos had been on the hunt for Dr. Blome. Agent Arnold Vyth, with the army's Counter Intelligence Corps, made the arrest. Agent Vyth completed the necessary paperwork while the prisoner was processed. Dr. Blome was sent to the Twelfth Army Group Interrogation Center for questioning. Several days later, a document arrived via teletype from the Office of Strategic Services (OSS), America's wartime espionage agency and the precursor to the CIA. They, too, had been searching for Dr. Blome.

The War Crimes Office had considerable information about Dr. Kurt Blome. He was deputy surgeon general of the Third Reich and vice president of the Reich's Physicians' League, Reichsärztekammer. He was believed to have reported directly to Göring and maybe even to Himmler, or to both. Blome had been named head of Reich cancer research in 1942. Alsos and OSS presumed that this was a cover name for biological weapons work. Blome was a dedicated and proud Nazi. His book *Arzt im Kampf* (Doctor in Battle) compared a doctor's struggle with the struggle of the Third Reich. Soldiers, officers, and doctors weren't all that different, each constantly in battle against invading forces and disease.

Investigators were trying to piece together the labyrinthine medical hierarchy of the Third Reich so as to understand who was in charge of what organization. Particularly interesting to the interrogators was the fact that Dr. Kurt Blome had been part of a top-tier group of Nazi doctors who focused on "hygiene." This word connoted disease control but was also believed to have been used by the Reich as a euphemism for ethnic cleansing and extermination of Jews. Alsos was in possession of correspondence between Blome and Himmler that discussed giving certain groups of sick individuals—in this case tubercular Poles—"special treatment" (*Sonderbehandlung*). What exactly did special treatment mean? At the time of Blome's capture and interrogation, Allied intelligence agencies believed that there was only one physician higher than Blome in the hierarchy of the Reich Hygiene Committee, and that was the notorious Reich Health Leader (Reichsgesundheitsführer), Leonardo Conti.

Dr. Blome spoke fluent English with his first army interrogator. He described himself as a "good Nazi"—obedient—and promised that he was willing to cooperate with the Allies. At first his interrogators were thrilled by the prospect of learning more about Reich medicine from such a big fish as Dr. Blome.

Why was he cooperating? Blome was asked.

"[I] can not approve of the way new advances in medical science have been used for atrocities," declared Dr. Blome.

What kind of atrocities? Blome's investigator wanted to know.

Blome stated that in his capacity as deputy surgeon general of the Reich he had "observe[d] new scientific studies and experiments which led to later atrocities *e.g.* mass sterilization, gassing of Jews." It was an astonishing admission. Until Dr. Blome gave up this information so freely, no physician in the inner circle had admitted to having known about such wide-scale atrocities as mass murder and sterilization programs. That Blome was willing to talk was extremely promising news. Blome was "cooperative and intelligent," noted his interrogator. Most important, he was "willing to supply information."

But the U.S. investigators' excitement did not last long. By his next interrogation, Dr. Kurt Blome had shut down entirely. He told his interrogating officer, Major E. W. B. Gill, that he had only ever been an administrator for the Reich; that he did nothing "hands-on." Major Gill pressed Blome for information about his direct superior, Dr. Leonardo Conti. Blome said he knew nothing about Conti's job.

"When I pointed out that the deputy must presumably know something about his chief's job," Major Gill wrote in his report, "he said the organization was extremely complicated and really he would like to draw me a diagram on it." Gill lost his temper. "I told Blome I didn't want his dammed diagrams, but an answer to a simple question. How did he take Conti's place if he [Conti] were absent or ill if he knew nothing of the job?"

Blome repeated his position. That it was all too complicated to explain to a man like Major Gill. Outraged by the sidestepping, Gill kept at it. But by the end of Blome's Alsos interrogation, Major Gill had been unable to get even a scrap of new information from Blome. He claimed never to have heard of the majority of the names of fellow doctors that Major Gill asked him about. Instead, Blome insisted that he knew nothing about the medical chain of command inside the Third Reich or the SS, despite the fact that he had personally met with Himmler five times since 1943. Gill asked how Blome, a "cancer expert," had been put in charge of the Reich's bioweapons program, a subject he claimed to know very little about. Blome said he had no answer for that.

"On my suggestion that a most important branch of war research would not be assigned to a complete ignoramus he, after endless explanations of the complexity of the German world, finally said it must have been because, as an undergraduate, he wrote on BW [biological weapons] as his thesis for a doctorate." Major Gill felt for certain that Dr. Blome was lying. But there was nothing he could do except present Blome with information and evidence that Alsos had compiled about him since they had seized Dr. Eugen Haagen's apartment six months before.

Gill told Blome that in a series of interrogations with sixteen Reich doctors also involved in bioweapons-related research, Alsos officers had learned about many horrific medical crimes. Gill explained that Alsos had documents that tied Blome to the crimes. For example, Alsos had found letters inside the apartment of Dr. Eugen Haagen that linked Dr. Blome to Dr. Haagen and also to an SS colleague named Dr. August Hirt. These letters made clear that someone was providing Reich doctors with human guinea pigs. Who exactly was in charge of this program, Gill asked Blome? Gill needed a name.

Blome denied having any idea what Gill was referring to. Major Gill told Blome he had a letter that implicated Blome. In another letter, Gill said, Dr. Blome had instructed Dr. Hirt to conduct research on “the effect of mustard gas on living organisms.” The phrase “living organisms” was a code name for people, wasn’t it? Gill asked Blome. Dr. Blome kept stonewalling. “On the whole subject of SS research, his attitude was always that it was so secret that not even [the] Reich chief medical advisor knew anything about it,” Major Gill wrote in his report.

Gill was convinced that Dr. Kurt Blome was lying. He felt certain that Doctors Haagen, Hirt, Blome, and the SS were connected to medical research on prisoners at concentration camps.

“This interrogation was extremely unproductive,” a frustrated Major Gill summarized in his report. “Although I do not wish to be definitive my first impression is that Blome is a liar and a medical charlatan.”

Down south in the Bavarian Alps, while the V-2 rocket scientists angled for a deal with the U.S. Army, Georg Rickhey, former general manager of the Mittelwerk, tried to blend in. Rickhey had taken a job ninety miles from Nordhausen, running operations in a salt mine. For several weeks, no one was looking for him. Then Colonel Peter Beasley, of the U.S. Strategic Bombing Survey (USSBS), arrived in the area on a mission from the War Department. Beasley’s job was to locate the engineers who had built the fortified underground weapons facilities in the Harz. These bombproof bunkers were extraordinary engineering feats, and the USSBS was impressed with how so many of them had withstood relentless Allied air bombing campaigns. The rocket facility at Nordhausen was of particular importance to USSBS officers, and Colonel Beasley set up shop in an abandoned barracks just north of the former Mittelwerk factory, in a town called Ilfeld, to investigate. As circumstance would have it, the barracks he chose to occupy was the building in which the former office of Georg Rickhey was located. From documents and equipment left behind, Colonel

Beasley learned that Rickhey possessed extremely valuable information about how the tunnel factory had been built. Beasley asked around, but none of the locals claimed to know where Rickhey had gone.

"I made daily visits to the jails in the small towns to see if I could locate anyone who might interest me," Beasley wrote in a report. Eventually he found a man who gave him a tip. Georg Rickhey was running operations at a salt mine in the Black Forest, the man said. Colonel Beasley sent two officers into the field to track Rickhey down.

Meanwhile, Beasley and his team followed another lead. "In Blankenburg," Beasley wrote, "we found a school building with some miscellaneous papers bearing the Speer Ministry insignia." From these documents Beasley learned that Georg Rickhey was the liaison between the Mittelwerk and the Ministry of Armaments. When Beasley's two officers returned with Georg Rickhey in custody, Beasley placed Rickhey under arrest and began to interrogate him. He was "a nervous little man who smoked incessantly and always brought the conversation back to scientific or technical matters," Beasley recalled after the war, but in the end he "was a most profitable catch."

"I've got a job for you," Beasley told Rickhey. "I want you to begin right now writing out a full description of yourself and all the activities of the V-2 factory, and what your people were working on." Rickhey complied. When the task was complete, Beasley told the former general manager of the Mittelwerk, "[W]e accept you as an official of the German Government; we have patience and time and lots of people—you have lost the war and so as far as I am concerned you are a man who knows a lot about rockets. As an American officer, I want my country to have full possession of all your knowledge. To my superiors, I shall recommend that you be taken to the United States."

Rickhey embraced this news with open arms. He told Beasley that he was a scientist and only wanted to work in pleasant surroundings, like the United States. He agreed to tell Beasley where some important records had been hidden. Rickhey took Colonel Beasley to a cave several miles away. There, forty-two boxes of worksheets, engineering tables, and blueprints relating to Nordhausen and the V-2 had been stashed. This was certainly not Wernher von Braun's documents stash, but for the USSBS, it was more than they possessed up to this point. Now that he was in possession of a huge trove of documents, Colonel Beasley realized that he needed to have them translated by someone with technical expertise. He had promised Rickhey a recommendation for a job in the United States, but first he needed Rickhey to come with him to London to translate and analyze these documents for him.

Albert Speer, one of the most wanted Nazi war criminals in the world, was finally captured on the morning of May 23, 1945. He was standing in one of the bathrooms of a friend’s castle, Schloss Glücksburg, near Flensburg, in north Germany. Hitler’s successor, Grand Admiral Dönitz, had by now moved his new government from Eutin to Flensburg, which was located just a few miles from the Danish border. Speer, a Dönitz cabinet member, had been making the daily six-mile drive from Schloss Glücksburg to the new government’s headquarters. The way Speer told the story of his capture, he had been shaving when he heard the sounds of heavy footsteps and loud orders being delivered in English. Sensing that the end of his freedom had arrived, Speer opened the bathroom door a little, his face half-covered in shaving cream, and saw the British soldiers standing there.

“Are you Albert Speer, sir?” a British sergeant asked.

“Yes, I am Speer,” he answered in English.

“Sir, you are my prisoner,” the sergeant said.

Speer got dressed and packed a bag. Outside on the castle lawn, a unit of British soldiers with antitank guns had surrounded Schloss Glücksburg. Speer was arrested and taken away.

By the time the British arrested Speer, American officials had known for nearly two weeks where he had been hiding out. Speer’s previous eleven days in the castle had been spent in discussions with American officials with the U.S. Strategic Bombing Survey (USSBS). The head of that organization, Paul Nitze, had managed to be the first person in an international manhunt to track down Albert Speer. Nitze considered Speer his most desired intelligence target, and on May 12, 1945, he boarded his DC-3 from where he was stationed in London and headed to Castle Glücksburg “before you could say ‘knife,’ ” Nitze recalled after the war. Because Flensburg was in the British zone of control, it was the British who needed to arrest Albert Speer. Until then, Nitze, an American, felt at liberty to get as much information from Speer as he could. “We were looking for absolutely vital information and knowledge and he was literally the only person in Germany who was in a position to provide it," Nitze recalled years later.

Specifically, Nitze's organization wanted to know which Allied bombing campaigns had proved the most devastating against Germany during the war. America was still at war with the Japanese, and the USSBS believed Speer could provide them with information that might help America defeat them. Nitze was joined at the castle by two of his colleagues, George Ball and John Kenneth Galbraith. For the next eleven days the three men questioned Speer. From inside an elegant sitting room wallpapered in red and gold brocade, the men discussed which Allied bombing campaigns had done the most damage to Nazi Germany and which had had the least effect. Of particular interest to Nitze, Ball, and Galbraith was how the Reich's armaments industry had been able to hold out for so long. Speer explained that at his initiative the majority of the Reich's weapons facilities had been moved underground. These weapons complexes had proved to be impervious to even the heaviest bombing campaigns. They were engineering triumphs, their construction spearheaded largely by Franz Dorsch and Speer's deputy Walter Schieber, Speer said. Speer's secretary, Annemarie Kempf, took notes. The only interruption was when the cook for the castle summoned everyone for lunch.

Speer did not mention that his deputy, SS-Brigadeführer Schieber, a chemist, also worked with Speer in chemical weapons production; that would be opening up a can of war crimes–related worms. The Americans were not interested in pressing Speer about his involvement in war crimes, and Speer was certainly not offering up any incriminating evidence against himself. Mostly he boasted about his ministry's feats. George Ball recalled that only once, maybe twice, during the USSBS questioning was Speer asked about the concentration camps. "I asked him what he knew about the extermination of the Jews. He said he couldn't comment because he hadn't known about it, but he added that it was a mistake not to have found out," Ball told Speer's biographer, Gitta Sereny, after the war.

John Kenneth Galbraith was the only one of the three men from the U.S. Strategic Bombing Survey who had toured a liberated concentration camp before interviewing Speer. Galbraith had seen the atrocities at Dachau and Buchenwald. He explained, "One was just beginning to hear rumors about Auschwitz." Did Galbraith believe that Speer did not know about the extermination of the Jews? "No, I don't believe he didn't know," Galbraith told Sereny. “Certainly he knew about all the slave laborers. I remember him saying to us, ‘You should hang Saukel’ ”—Speer’s deputy in charge of slave labor—“and then a few weeks later, Saukel said to us, ‘You should hang Speer.’ Nice people, weren’t they?”

After eleven days of discussions with the Americans, the British located and arrested Speer. They drove him the six miles to Flensburg, where the remaining members of Hitler’s government were also arrested. Under an escort of more than thirty armored vehicles, the prisoners were driven to waiting aircraft. There, in a field of grass, the men of Hitler’s inner circle were loaded onto two airplanes and flown to a Top Secret interrogation center code-named Ashcan.

That same afternoon, one hundred miles south of Flensburg, at the Thirty-first Civilian Interrogation Camp near Lüneburg, a former Wehrmacht sergeant was making a lot of noise. The officer in charge of Camp 31, Captain Thomas Selvester, found the man’s behavior odd. Wehrmacht soldiers who were prisoners rarely did anything to draw attention to themselves. Captain Selvester sent for the agitated man, whom he described as a short, “ill-looking” person in civilian clothing with a black eye patch over his left eye. Face-to-face with Captain Selvester, the small, ugly man ceremoniously pulled off the eye patch, revealing a pale, unshaven face. The man then produced a pair of horn-rimmed glasses from his pocket and put them on his face.

“Heinrich Himmler,” the prisoner announced in a quiet voice.

With the glasses on, Captain Selvester recognized Heinrich Himmler at once. Before him stood a man many considered the most powerful man in the Third Reich after Hitler. Himmler was Reichsführer-SS and chief of the German police, commander of the Reserve Army of the Wehrmacht, and Reich minister of the interior. That face. The cleft chin and the sinister, smiling eyes. Ever since a drawing of Himmler had appeared on the cover of *Time* magazine, on October 11, 1943—portraying the “Police Chief of Nazi Europe” in front of a mountain of corpses—he had become synonymous with evil. Now that the little round glasses were on, Selvester was certain this person was indeed Heinrich Himmler. Still, Captain Selvester followed protocol and asked for signature verification. When Himmler had been captured days before he’d presented forged military papers that identified him as a Wehrmacht sergeant named Heinrich Hitzinger.

The signature matched, and Captain Selvester sent for the most senior interrogator in Camp 31, a Captain named Smith. Once Smith arrived, Selvester ordered Himmler searched again. This time British soldiers found two vials of poison hidden in Himmler's clothes. It was medicine to treat stomach cramps, Himmler said. Captain Smith ordered a second physical exam of the prisoner, and the camp's doctor, Captain Clement Wells, spotted a blue-tipped object—hidden in the back of Himmler's mouth. When Dr. Wells tried to remove it, Himmler jerked his head back and bit down. The vial contained poison. Within seconds, the prisoner collapsed. Now Heinrich Himmler was dead. An assistant to Dr. Wells noted in his diary, "[T]his evil thing breathed its last breath at 23:14."

The war in Europe was over. Germans called it *die Stunde Null*, zero hour. Cities lay in ruins. Allied bombing had destroyed more than 1.8 million German homes. Of the 18.2 million men who had served in the German army, navy, Luftwaffe, and the Waffen-SS, a total of 5.3 million had been killed. Sixty-one countries had been drawn into a war Germany started. Some 50 million people were dead. The Third Reich was no more.

Heinrich Himmler and Adolf Hitler were dead. Albert Speer was in custody. So were Siegfried Knemeyer and Dr. Kurt Blome. Otto Ambros was under house arrest in Gendorf, with no one in CIOS or Alsos yet having figured out who he really was. Wernher von Braun, Walter Dornberger, and Arthur Rudolph were in custody, working toward contracts with the U.S. Army. Georg Rickhey had a job in London, translating documents for the U.S. Strategic Bombing Survey.

The future of war and weapons hung in the balance. What would happen to the Nazi scientists? Who would be hired and who would be hanged? In May 1945 there was no official policy regarding what to do with any of them. "The question who is a Nazi is often a dark riddle," an officer with the Third Army, G-5, wrote in a report sent to SHAEF headquarters in May. "The question what is a Nazi is also not easy to answer."

Over the next few months, critical decisions about what to do with Hitler's former scientists and engineers would be made, almost always based on an individual military organization's needs and justified by perceived threats. Official policy would follow, one version for the public and another for the Joint Chiefs of Staff (JCS). A headless monster called Operation Paperclip would emerge.

PART II

"The scale on which science and engineering have been harnessed to the chariot of destruction in Germany is indeed amazing. There is a tremendous amount to be learnt in Germany at the present time."

—W. S. Farren, British aviation expert with the
Royal Aircraft Establishment

CHAPTER SIX

Harnessing the Chariot of Destruction

What to do about Hitler's former scientists? The fighting had stopped, and the Allied forces were transitioning from a conquering army to an occupying force. Germany was to be disarmed, demilitarized, and denazified so its ability to make war would be reduced to nil, and science and technology were at the very heart of the matter. "Clearly German science must be curbed," noted Army Air Forces Lieutenant Colonel John O'Mara, in the CIOS report he authored on the rise of the Luftwaffe. "But how?" World War I had ended with a peace treaty that, among other restrictions, "sought to prevent the rise of German Air Power by forbidding powered flight. The result," explained O'Mara, "was as ludicrous as it was tragic." By the time Germany started World War II, its air force was the most powerful in the world. The mistake could not be repeated, and the U.S. procedural guidelines for an occupied Germany, contained in a directive known as JCS (Joint Chiefs of Staff) 1076, promised to nullify Germany's appetite for war. All military research was to cease. Scientists were rounded up and taken to detention centers for extensive questioning.

Across the former Reich, SHAEF had set up internment centers where more than fifteen hundred scientists were now being held separate from other German prisoners of war. The U.S. Army had approximately 500 scientists in custody in Garmisch-Partenkirchen, in the Bavarian Alps, including the von Braun and Dornberger group; there were 444 persons of interest detained in Heidenheim, north of Munich; 200 were in Zell am See, in Austria; 30 kept at Château du Grande Chesnay, in France. The U.S. Navy had 200 scientists and engineers at a holding facility in Kochel, Germany, including many wind tunnel experts. The Army Air Forces had 150 Luftwaffe engineers and technicians in Bad Kissingen, Germany, a majority of whom had been rounded up by Colonel Donald Putt. CIOS had 50 scientists, including Werner Osenberg, in Versailles. But there was no clear policy regarding what lay ahead for the scientists, engineers, and technicians in Allied custody, and General Eisenhower sought clarification on the issue. From Supreme Headquarters Allied Expeditionary Force in France, he sent a cable to the War Department General Staff in Washington, D.C., asking for specific direction about longer-term goals. "Restraint and control of future German scientific and technical investigations are clearly indicated," General Eisenhower wrote, "but this headquarters is without guidance on the matter and is in no position to formulate long-term policy." Were these men going to be detained indefinitely? Interrogated and released?

The War Department responded to Eisenhower's cable by letting him know his query was considered a "matter of urgency." Tentative responsibility was assigned to the Captured Personnel and Materiel Branch of the Military Intelligence Service, Europe. Now that group was in charge of overseeing the scientists' basic needs, including living quarters, food, and in some cases pay. But it would be another two weeks before the War Department would get back to General Eisenhower with any kind of a statement regarding policy. In the meantime, a number of events were unfolding—in America and in Germany—that would affect the decision making of the War Department General Staff.

In the absence of policy, ideas were floated at the Pentagon. Some, like Major General Kenneth B. Wolfe, of the Army Air Forces, took matters into their own hands. General Wolfe was chief of engineering and procurement for Air Technical Service Command at Wright Field, and he supported Major General Knerr and Colonel Putt in their quest for capturing Luftwaffe spoils discovered at Völkenrode. But General Wolfe envisioned an even bigger science exploitation program and felt strongly that policy needed to be set now. Wolfe flew to SHAEF headquarters in France to meet with Eisenhower's deputy, General Lucius D. Clay, to promote his idea.

General Clay told General Wolfe that he was not opposed to such a program but that now was hardly a good time to broach it. "Besieged by the countless demands and the chaotic conditions relevant to ending the war, and the burdensome complexities of planning for the peace, [Clay] considered such efforts six months premature," explains historian Clarence Lasby. General Clay told General Wolfe to come back and talk to him in six months. Instead, Wolfe set out for Nordhausen, Germany, where his colleague at the Pentagon, Colonel Gervais William Trichel, was running Special Mission V-2, the Top Secret scientific intelligence operation for the U.S. Army Ordnance, Rocket Branch.

Inside the abandoned rocket production facility in the underground tunnel complex at Nordhausen, Special Mission V-2 was just getting under way. When General Wolfe saw the vast numbers of V-weapons left behind, he became even more convinced that a U.S. program to exploit Nazi science had to happen now. Upon his return to Washington, D.C., General Wolfe wrote to General Clay with a revised idea. Not only did the United States military need to act immediately to capture Nazi armaments, Wolfe said, but America needed to hire the "German scientists and engineers" who had created the weapons and put them to work in America. "If steps to this end are taken, the double purpose of preventing Germany's resurgence as a war power and advancing our own industrial future may be served." Clay did not respond; he had already told General Wolfe to back off for six months. Meanwhile, the work that was going on at Nordhausen under the auspices of Special Mission V-2 would greatly influence the future of all the Nazi science programs that would follow.

The man in charge of Special Mission V-2, twenty-eight-year-old Major Robert B. Staver, was no stranger to the military significance of the Nazis' rockets. While preparing for Special Mission V-2 in London the winter before, Staver was nearly killed by one. He and a British colleague had been working inside an office at 27 Grosvenor Square one afternoon in February when a loud blast knocked both of them to the floor. Staver went to the window and saw a "big round cloud of smoke where a V-2 had exploded overhead." Watching pieces of burning metal rain down from the sky, Staver did a few calculations in his head and determined that the V-2 had likely been heading "very directly" at the building in which he was working when it blew up prematurely. A few weeks later, Major Staver was asleep in a hotel room near the Marble Arch when he was thrown out of bed by an enormous blast. A V-2 had landed in nearby Hyde Park and killed sixty-two people.

The near-death experiences made him ever more committed to Special Mission V-2. For six weeks Staver worked twelve hours a day, seven days a week, studying aerial photographs of Nordhausen supplied to him by the British and otherwise learning everything he could about the V-weapons.

As soon as the Allied forces liberated the tunnel complex, Major Staver would be one of the first intelligence officers inside.

Now, finally, here he was at Nordhausen. It was May 12, 1945, and though his mission was almost complete, time was running out, because the Russians were headed into this area soon. By U.S. Army calculations, they would most likely arrive in eighteen days from Berlin.

U.S. Army Ordnance believed that the V-2 rocket could help win the Pacific war, and for nearly two weeks Staver had been hard at work. He had overseen the collection of four hundred tons of rocket parts, which had been loaded onto railcars for delivery to the port at Antwerp, from where they would be shipped to the United States. But with his degree in mechanical engineering from Stanford University, Staver knew that the V-2 rocket was a lot more than the sum of its parts. Without blueprints or technical drawings, it was highly unlikely that American engineers could simply cobble the rocket components together and make the V-2 fly. The drawings and blueprints had to have been stashed somewhere near Nordhausen. If only Major Staver could find a German scientist to bribe, he might be able to find out where the crucial documents were hidden.

For two weeks now Staver had been traveling through the Harz Mountains touring underground weapons factories, searching for a clue or a lead as to who might know more about the V-2 document stash. Locals told a wide variety of stories. Some spoke of paperwork going up in flames. Others talked about truckloads of metal trunks being hidden away in abandoned buildings, in beer gardens, and in castle walls. But this was all hearsay. No one could produce a concrete lead, and it was not exactly difficult to understand why. War crimes investigators were also in Nordhausen asking locals lots of questions. And as Staver trolled for rocket scientists, American GIs continued to dig mass graves for the thousands of corpses found at Nordhausen-Dora slave labor camp. The entire town of Nordhausen still smelled of death.

While driving around on his hunt, Staver kept boxes stashed in the back of his army jeep, filled with cigarettes, alcohol, and cans of Spam. These valuable black market goods worked well in exchange for information, and finally, Staver got the lead he was looking for. A source told him that there was a V-2 rocket scientist by the name of Karl Otto Fleischer who lived nearby. Fleischer had been an engineer inside the Nordhausen tunnels as well as the Wehrmacht’s business manager, and he knew a lot more than he was letting on. Fleischer reported directly to General Dornberger; he knew things. Staver drove to the scientist’s residence with a proposition more powerful than a can of Spam.

Major Staver told Karl Otto Fleischer that he could cooperate or go to jail. Important V-2 documents had been hidden somewhere around Nordhausen, Staver said. If anyone knew, Fleischer did, Staver surmised. Dieter Huzel and Bernhard Tessmann had indeed told Fleischer about the document stash in the Dörnten mine before they fled for the Bavarian Alps. But Fleischer’s allegiance was to his colleagues, so he lied to Staver and said he had no idea what Staver was talking about. He pointed the finger at another colleague, an engineer and von Braun deputy named Dr. Eberhard Rees. Ask Rees, Fleischer said. He was the former chief in charge of the Peenemünde assembly line.

When interviewed by Staver, Dr. Eberhard Rees played his own disinformation card, using Major Staver’s influence to help spring a third colleague from jail. Walther Riedel, chief of V-2 rocket motor and structural design, had been one of the four men honored at the Castle Varlar event the previous December. Now Riedel was receiving rough treatment in a jail eighty miles away, in Saalfeld. He had been mistaken by military intelligence as having been Hitler’s biological weapons chief. Agents with the Counter Intelligence Corps had knocked out several of Riedel’s front teeth. His security report listed him as “an active Nazi who wore the uniform and the party badge. Ardent.” Riedel joined the Nazi Party in 1937 and was a member of five Nazi organizations.

In a series of interviews with Riedel, Major Staver found him to be a strange bird. Riedel was obsessed with outer space vehicles, which he called “passenger rockets.” In one interview, Riedel insisted he’d designed these passenger rockets for “short trips around the moon,” and that he’d been pursuing “space mirrors which would be used for good and possibly evil.” Riedel said he knew of at least forty rocket scientists besides himself who should be brought to America to complete this groundbreaking work. If the Americans didn’t act, Riedel said, the Russians surely would. Staver asked Riedel if he knew where the V-2 technical drawings were hidden. Riedel said he had no idea.

Staver was working on a number of problems, all compounded by the fact that the Russians were coming. That much was real. Nordhausen had been liberated by the Americans and was originally designated to be part of the American zone. Stalin protested, saying Russia had lost seventeen million men in the war and deserved greater reparations for greater losses sustained. The Allies agreed to turn over a large swath of American-held German territory to the Soviets on June 1. This territory included all of Nordhausen and everything in it.

But Staver had more to worry about than the Russians. On May 18, 1945, an airplane arrived carrying a physicist and ordnance expert named Dr. Howard Percy “H. P.” Robertson. Robertson had been a team leader for Operation Alsos, and now he served President Eisenhower as chief of the Scientific Intelligence Advisory Section under SHAEF. Dr. H. P. Robertson told Major Staver that he intended to take rocket engineers Fleischer, Riedel, and Rees to Garmisch-Partenkirchen for interrogation, where they would be held alongside General Dornberger and Wernher von Braun until the War Department General Staff decided on a policy regarding Nazi scientists.

Major Staver refused to give up Fleischer, Riedel, and Rees. They were his charges, he told Robertson. As far as exploiting Nazi science for American use, Staver and Robertson saw eye to eye. But as far as giving Nazi scientists special privileges, the two men were on opposite sides of the aisle. The idea outraged Robertson, who saw Nazi scientists as amoral opportunists who were “hostile to the Allied cause.”

Dr. Robertson was a mathematical physicist who had taken a leave of absence from a professorship at Princeton University to help in the war effort. He was a jovial, gentle man who liked crossword puzzles, Ivy League football matches, and scotch. Robertson spoke German fluently and was respected by Germany’s academic elite not just for his scientific accomplishments but because he had studied, in 1925, in Göttingen and Munich. Before the war, Dr. Robertson counted many leading German scientists as his friends. World War II changed his perspective, notably regarding any German scientist who stayed and worked for Hitler.

While at Princeton, Dr. Robertson had become friendly with Albert Einstein. The two men worked on theoretical projects together and spent time discussing Hitler, National Socialism, and the war. Einstein, born in Germany, had worked there until 1933, becoming director of the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute of Physics and professor at the University of Berlin. But when Hitler came to power, Einstein immediately renounced his citizenship in defiance of the Nazi Party and immigrated to the United States. Dr.

Robertson shared Einstein's core view. It had been the duty of German scientists to protest Hitler's racist policies, beginning in 1933. Anyone who had served the Reich's war machine was not going to be given a free pass by H. P. Robertson now.

Determined to keep the Nazi scientists in his custody, Staver played the Russian card. Robertson may have been anti-Nazi, but he was also deeply patriotic. With access to secret Alsos intelligence information, Robertson was well aware that Russian rocket development was a legitimate and growing threat. Both men knew that in as little as twelve days, the Russians would arrive in Nordhausen. If Staver was not able to locate the V-2 documents by then, the Russians would eventually find them. Major Staver appealed to Dr. Robertson, arguing that his keeping Fleischer, Riedel, and Rees was the army's last and best shot at locating the hidden V-2 documents. Ultimately, Dr. Robertson agreed. In a final appeal, Staver asked Robertson if there was anything Robertson could offer up that might help him in his search for the V-2 stash. Some clue or detail that Staver might be overlooking?

Indeed there was. Dr. Robertson's fluency in science and his familiarity with German scientific intelligence had thus far made him an extremely effective interrogator of the Nazi scientific and military elite. Wehrmacht generals, SS officers, and scientists were notoriously eager to speak with him. Listening to Staver, Dr. Robertson had an idea. He pulled a small writing pad out of his shirt pocket and looked over his notes. During an earlier interrogation of a rocket scientist named von Ploetz, Robertson had gotten an interesting lead. He decided to share it with Major Staver.

"Von Ploetz said that General Dornberger told General Rossman [the German army's Weapons Office department chief] that documents of V-weapon production were hidden in Kaliwerke [salt mine] at Bleicherode, walled into one of the mine shafts," read Robertson from his notes. Robertson suggested that Staver use that information to his advantage. He agreed to leave Fleischer, Riedel, and Rees with Major Staver while he headed to Garmisch-Partenkirchen to interview General Dornberger and Wernher von Braun.

At Garmisch-Partenkirchen, Robertson found the rocket scientists sunbathing in the Alps. This lovely Bavarian ski resort was the place where

Adolf Hitler had hosted the Winter Olympics in 1936. Now the U.S. Army had hundreds of scientists set up in a former military barracks here. The food was plentiful, and the air was fresh and clean. “Mountain springtime,” Dieter Huzel recalled in his memoir. “Trees by now had donned their fresh, new green, flowers everywhere as far as one could see from our windows and balconies. Rain was infrequent and almost every day sunbathing was possible on a lawn-covered yard.” Huzel’s only complaint was that he didn’t receive mail and couldn’t make telephone calls.

Wernher von Braun, General Dornberger, and their group had been here since being transferred from CIC headquarters in Reutte. Isolated in the Alps, the two scientists had been frustrating their interrogators, stonewalling and withholding information. Dr. Robertson came to see if he could get any better information out of the scientists. Most of the rocket team was here, including the two men who had stashed the V-2 documents that Staver was now searching for, Dieter Huzel and Bernhard Tessmann. Neither Huzel nor Tessmann had shared with von Braun or Dornberger the fact that they’d told Karl Otto Fleischer the location of the stash in the Dörnten mine. Dornberger and von Braun were under the assumption that they held all the bargaining chips.

The intelligence officer Walter Jessel had sensed something was amiss with Dornberger and von Braun—that the two rocket scientists were playing games. “Control was exercised by Dornberger in the course of the CIOS investigations,” Jessel noted in one report. Dornberger’s “first instructions [to other scientists], probably under the impression of immediate transfer of the whole group to the United States, were to cooperate fully with the investigators,” Jessel explained. But as the days wore on and no deal was offered by the Allies, Jessel watched Dornberger become intractable. “Sometime later, he [Dornberger] gave the word [to the others] to hold back on information and say as little as possible.” The scientists were walking on the razor’s edge. If they said too much, many of them could be implicated in the slave labor war crimes, as was the case with Arthur Rudolph, Mittelwerk operations director.

For Rudolph, it was best to say as little as possible. He described his time at Garmisch-Partenkirchen as enjoyable because it meant that “the horrible days of fleeing were over.” Years later, he described his weeks of internment in the Alps as ones where he could finally “enjoy a few days of relief,” but this relief was short-lived owing to his “restless intellect.”

Rudolph demanded more of himself than a suntan, he later said. “There were already rumors that the Americans would take us to the U.S.A. So, I decided I needed to learn English.”

Arthur Rudolph’s interrogator saw Rudolph differently than he saw himself. In military intelligence documents, Rudolph was described as “100% Nazi,” a “dangerous type.” There was a decision to be made: whether to use Rudolph as an intelligence source or to intern him for denazification and investigation into possible war crimes. Denazification was an Allied strategy to democratize and demilitarize postwar Germany and Austria through tribunals in local civilian courts (Spruchkammern) that were set up to determine individual defendants’ standings. Each German who was tried was judged to belong in one of five categories, or classes: (1) major offenders; (2) party activists, militarists, and profiteers; (3) individuals who were less incriminated; (4) Nazi Party followers; (5) those who were exonerated. Rudolph’s interrogator did not believe a committed Nazi like Arthur Rudolph would make a viable intelligence source, and he wrote, “suggest internment.”

Rudolph hoped he would be hired by the Americans. He located a murder mystery in the Garmisch-Partenkirchen library, *The Green Archer*, and attempted to learn English for what he believed, correctly, would be a new job.

Back in Nordhausen, Major Staver was making headway. Working on the new tip from Dr. Robertson, Staver drove to meet with his new source, Karl Otto Fleischer, in a parking lot. This time, Staver had Walther Riedel with him. In the parking lot, Staver demonstratively pulled a notebook from his breast pocket, just as Dr. Robertson had done with him. Staver read aloud a narrative he’d composed, part truth and part fiction. “Von Braun, [Ernst] Steinhoff, and all the others who fled to the south have been interned at Garmisch,” Major Staver told his two prisoners. “Our intelligence officers have talked to von Ploetz, General Dornberger, General Rossman, and General Kammler,” Staver said—also partially true. “They told us that many of your drawings and important documents were buried underground in a mine somewhere around here and that Riedel, or you[,] Fleischer, could help us find them,” Staver said, which was made up.

Staver told the men that it was in their best interest to think over their next move very carefully. They could cooperate, he said, and give up the location of the V-2 documents. Or they could stonewall and risk being put in prison for withholding information. They had one night to consider the offer. Staver would meet the two men the following morning, in the same parking lot, at exactly 11:00.

When Staver arrived at the rendezvous point the next day, he was disheartened to find Riedel waiting for him but not Fleischer. Even odder, Riedel said he had a message from Fleischer to pass along: Fleischer was waiting for Major Staver in Haynrode, a nearby village, with "some very important news." Staver needed to travel to Haynrode, find a boardinghouse called the Inn of the Three Lime Trees, and ask for the concierge. Was this some kind of a trap, or just another wild goose chase?

Staver and Walther Riedel drove together to the Inn of the Three Lime Trees. There, they met up with the innkeeper, who produced a message from Fleischer. Staver and Riedel were to walk through town, pass down a long alleyway, and head to the edge of the village, where they were to go to the home of a local priest. Staver and Riedel followed the trail, finally arriving at the priest's house. There, in flawless English, the priest told Major Staver that Fleischer would see him soon. Fleischer emerged at the top of the stairs, came down, and asked Staver to follow him outside so the two men could talk privately under an apple tree. There, "in almost inaudible, somewhat apologetic tones[,] Fleischer admitted he had not been completely frank" about the whereabouts of the V-2 document stash, Staver explained. In fact, he knew where they were hidden and "believed he was the only one in Nordhausen who did." But there was a problem, Fleischer said. He described to Staver how the caretaker at the mine had dynamited a wall of rubble over the entrance so no one could find them. This man was an ardent Nazi and would never turn over the documents to an American officer like Major Staver. Fleischer said he'd take Dr. Rees with him to do the job. As unreliable as he was, Staver decided to take Fleischer at his word. He gave him passes that allowed for travel around Nordhausen as well as enough gasoline to get back and forth between Nordhausen and the mine. Fleischer and Rees succeeded in getting the mine's caretaker, Herr Nebelung, to cooperate. Local miners were paid by Fleischer, using money from the U.S. Army, to excavate through the rubble and retrieve the documents hidden in the mine.

The stash was enormous, the crates weighing more than fourteen tons. Only now there was a new hurdle to overcome. British soldiers were set to arrive in Nordhausen on May 27 to oversee the transition to Red Army rule. This meant that Major Staver had to get the documents out fast. The original agreement between the British and the Americans was that the two Allies would share with one another everything they learned about the V-weapons. If the British found out Staver was planning to secretly ship one hundred V-2 rockets back to the United States, they would likely consider it a double-cross. Major Staver needed to get to Paris. It was the only way he could obtain access to the ten-ton trucks necessary for moving such a large cache in such a short period of time.

Staver assigned a colleague to oversee the Dörnten mine operation while he attempted to hitch a ride to Paris in a P-47 Thunderbolt. The pilot said it was impossible—that the Thunderbolt was a single-seat fighter. Staver said that his mission was urgent and offered to ride in the tiny space behind the pilot’s seat. The pilot finally agreed. Avoiding terrible weather higher up, the men flew all the way to Paris at “tree-top level” and arrived safely at Orly Field. Staver found a ride down the Champs-Élysées in a U.S. Army jeep. At Ordnance Headquarters he found the exact man he was looking for, Colonel Joel Holmes, sitting at his desk. As chief of the Technical Division, Colonel Holmes had the authority to grant Major Staver the semitrailers he needed to evacuate the Dörnten mine stash before the British and the Russians arrived.

But Staver had a second plan that he had been conceiving, and, as he later explained, this moment in Paris was his prime opportunity to act. He told Colonel Holmes that there was a third element necessary to make the V-2 rocket program in America a success. Staver had been locating rocket parts and the documents necessary to assemble them correctly. But to make the rockets fly, the Americans needed the German scientists. The army needed to bring these scientists to the United States, Staver explained. Their superior knowledge could be used to help win the war in Japan.

“You write the cable and I’ll sign it,” Staver remembered Colonel Holmes having said. In Paris, Staver sat down and wrote a cable that would have a huge impact on the future of the Nazi scientist program. “Have in custody over 400 top research development personnel of Peenemünde. Developed V-2,” Staver wrote. “The thinking of the scientific directors of this group is 25 years ahead of U.S.… Later version of this rocket should permit launching from Europe to U.S." Given the enormity of this idea in 1945, that a rocket could one day actually fly from one continent to another, Staver pushed: "Immediate action recommended to prevent loss of whole or part of this group to other interested parties. Urgently request reply as early as possible."

The cable was sent to Colonel Trichel's office at the Pentagon, and Major Staver returned to Nordhausen. The documents were loaded up and driven to Paris under armed guard. From there, they were shipped to the Foreign Documents Evaluation Center at the Aberdeen Proving Ground, in Maryland. Special Mission V-2 was declared a success. The U.S. Army Ordnance, Rocket Branch, now had one hundred rockets and fourteen tons of technical documents in its possession. But Staver did not view Special Mission V-2 as entirely complete. He still had his sights set on the rocket scientists themselves.

With the arrival of the Soviets into Nordhausen less than forty-eight hours away, Staver got the approval he'd been waiting for from SHAEF headquarters. He went to Garmisch-Partenkirchen, picked up von Braun, and returned to Nordhausen. The clock was ticking. Staver needed von Braun's help getting every last rocket scientist out of the Harz before the Soviets arrived.

"We landed running," remembered Staver's team member Dr. Richard Porter. Back at Nordhausen, the men got to work locating the scientists who were still living in the area. Staver had a stack of note cards with the names and addresses of the V-2 engineers. He instructed every available U.S. soldier he could find to round up anything with wheels—trucks, motorcycles, and donkey carts—and sent soldiers fanning out across the Harz. Scientists and their families were given an offer. They could be transported out of what would soon become the Russian zone, or they could stay.

Arthur Rudolph's wife was in Stepferhausen, eighty-five miles south of Nordhausen, when a U.S. soldier arrived. "A black GI drove into town in a truck looking for me," remembered Martha Rudolph. "He had a list of names and mine was on it. He told me that if I wanted to leave to get ready. He would be back in 30 minutes to pick me up. My friends all said, 'Go, go—the Russians are coming. Why would you want to stay here?' So I packed up what I could and left on the truck when the GI came back." The Rudolphs' daughter, Marianne, accompanied her to the train station.

The scene at the station was surreal, recalling the horrific transport of prisoners during the war but with the roles reversed, fate and outcome turned upside down. Over one thousand Germans—scientists and their families—stood on the platforms, waiting to fit themselves into boxcars and passenger cars. The train's engine had yet to be attached, and there was no announcement explaining the delay. Tension escalated, but the crowd remained calm until a mob of displaced persons flooded the station. Word had leaked out that German scientists were being evacuated out of Nordhausen in advance of the Red Army's arrival. Suddenly, many other locals wanted out of the Harz, too. The Red Army had a terrible reputation. There were stories of entire units arriving in towns drunk and seeking revenge. At the railroad station, U.S. soldiers were called to the scene. Using the threat of weapons, they prevented any displaced person who was not a scientist or an engineer from boarding the boxcars and passenger cars.

At the eleventh hour, Major Staver and Dr. Porter learned of one last potential disaster that needed to be dealt with. Right before boarding the train, General Dornberger confessed to having hidden his own stash of papers, an ace in the hole had Dornberger been double-crossed by von Braun and left out of the American deal. General Dornberger told Major Staver that he had buried five large boxes in a field in the spa town of Bad Sachsa. The boxes, which were made of wood and lined in metal, contained critical information about the V-2 rocket that would compromise the U.S. Army if it fell into Russian hands. In a last-ditch effort to find Dornberger's secret stash, Staver and Porter set out on a final mission.

The men drove sixty miles to the headquarters of the 332nd Engineering Regiment at Kassel, where they borrowed shovels, pickaxes, three men, and a mine detector. Back in a large field in Bad Sachsa, they searched the ground as if looking for a buried mine. Finally, they located Dornberger's metal-lined cases, which contained 250 pounds of drawings and documents. The stash was loaded onto a truck and driven to an army facility in the American zone.

On their way out of the Harz, Staver and Porter passed by Nordhausen to have one last look. "I wanted to blow up the whole factory at Nordhausen before we pulled out but [I] couldn't swing it legally. I was afraid at the time to do the job 'unofficially,' and have regretted it ever since," Porter recalled. He was referring to the European Advisory Commission decree, signed by General Eisenhower on June 5, 1945, in Berlin, which prohibited the destruction of military research installations in another power's zone.

The Soviets were now heirs to the Harz. Major Staver had succeeded in secretly shipping out enough parts to reassemble one hundred V-2 rockets in America. Still, thousands of tons of rocket parts remained. For all the effort and moral compromise that went into Special Project V-2, the Red Army would now have no shortage of wonder weapons parts to choose from. The underground slave labor factory at Nordhausen was still virtually intact. Thousands of machine tools sat on the assembly lines ready to manufacture more parts.

After an eleven-day delay, the Russians finally arrived. Leading the pack were technical specialists from Soviet missile program chief Georgy Malenkov's Special Committee for rocket research. For every German scientist that had taken up the U.S. Army's offer to evacuate, between two and ten remained behind. The Soviet secret police began rounding up hundreds of former rocket scientists and engineers and put them back to work. A Soviet guidance engineer named Boris Chertok even managed to move into von Braun's old villa, the one the SS had confiscated from a Jewish businessman a few years before. Chertok oversaw the renaming of the Nordhausen tunnel complex from the Mittelwerk to the Institute Rabe, an abbreviation for Raketenantrieb Bleicherode, or Rocket Enterprise Bleicherode.

Von Braun, eighty scientists, and their families were taken to the town of Witzenhausen, forty miles from Nordhausen, in the American zone. There, they were set up in a two-story schoolhouse and paid to get to work on future rocket plans while Army Ordnance worked on a plan to bring them to the United States, to the Fort Bliss Army Base, in Texas. The Americans had been obsessed with the V-weapons during the war. Now they had the science and the scientists.

In Washington, D.C., officials with the War Department General Staff remained undecided on a policy regarding what to do with Nazi scientists. General Eisenhower's questions about long-term plans had not yet been answered, and Undersecretary of War Robert Patterson was asked to weigh in. Major Staver's cable from Paris regarding the four hundred rocket scientists “in custody” drew attention to the issue. In America, five Nazi scientists had already been secreted into the United States for classified weapons work. Just a few days after the German surrender, the director of naval intelligence successfully lobbied the War Department General Staff to circumvent State Department regulations so that a Nazi guided missile expert named Dr. Herbert Wagner and four of his assistants could begin working on technology meant to help end the war with Japan. The War Department gave approval, and in mid-May Dr. Wagner and his team were flown from Germany to a small airstrip outside Washington, D.C., inside a military aircraft with the windows blackened to keep anyone from seeing who was inside.

During the war, Dr. Herbert Wagner had been chief missile design engineer at Henschel Aircraft. He was the man behind the first guided missile used in combat by the Reich, the Hs 293. This remote-control bomb was the nemesis of the U.S. Navy and the British Royal Navy and had sunk several Allied ships during the war. Not only did the U.S. Navy see glide bomb technology as critically important in the fight in the Pacific, but they saw Dr. Wagner as a man with “knowledge, experience and skills unmatched anywhere in the world.”

The perceived importance of having Wagner’s expertise in the fight against Japan was illuminated by a dramatic event unfolding in Portsmouth, New Hampshire, just as he and his team arrived. On May 15, 1945, a Nazi submarine, identified in a *New York Times* headline as “the Japan-bound U-234,” surrendered itself to the USS *Sutton* in the waters five hundred miles off Cape Race, Newfoundland. Inside the submarine, which was en route to Japan, was a cache of Nazi wonder weapons, “said to contain what few aviation secrets may be left,” as well as “other war-weapon plans and pieces of equipment.” One of the wonder weapons on board was Dr. Wagner’s Hs 293 glider bomb, meant for use against the U.S. Navy in the Pacific. Additionally, there were drawings and plans for the V-1 flying bomb and the V-2 rocket, experimental equipment for stealth technology on submarines, an entire Me 262 fighter aircraft, and ten lead-lined canisters containing 1,200 pounds of uranium oxide—a basic material used in making an atomic bomb. The specifics of the weapons cache were not made public, but the notion that the Nazis had sold the secrets of some of their most prized wonder weapons to their Axis partner Japan was alarming. The scenario was made even more forbidding by the fact that also on board the

U-234 was a top Reich scientist whose job it was to teach Japanese scientists how to copy and manufacture these Nazi wonder weapons for themselves.

The scientist in the submarine was Dr. Heinz Schlicke, director of Naval Test Fields at Kiel. To the public he was only identified as a German "technician." In fact, Dr. Schlicke was one of the most qualified Nazi scientists in the field of electronic warfare. His areas of expertise included radio-location techniques, camouflage, jamming and counterjamming, remote control, and infrared. The navy took Dr. Schlicke prisoner of war and brought him to the Army Intelligence Center at Fort Meade, in Maryland.

As for Dr. Wagner, the navy felt it needed to keep him happy so that his work would continue to bear scientific fruit. To soften the reality of his being a prisoner, his incarceration was called "voluntary detention." Wagner and his assistants required a classified but comfortable place to work, the navy noted in an intelligence report, ideally in "an ivory tower or a gilded cage where life would be pleasant, the guards courteous, the locks thick but not too obvious." The navy found what it was looking for in Hempstead House, a great stone castle on Sands Point, on the North Shore of Long Island, that was formerly the home of Daniel and Florence Guggenheim. The 160-acre estate had been donated by the Guggenheims to the navy for use as a training center. With its three stories, forty rooms, and sweeping view of the sea, the navy decided it was an ideal location. Hempstead House was given the code name the Special Devices Center, and Dr. Wagner and his assistants got to work.

There were more problems afloat in Washington, this time coming from the FBI. If Nazi scientists were going to work for the U.S. military, the Department of Justice said it needed to perform background checks. J. Edgar Hoover's FBI looked into Dr. Wagner's past, based on information collected by army intelligence in Europe, and learned that Dr. Wagner had "once belonged to the German SS," the paramilitary wing of the Nazi Party run by Himmler. This meant that Wagner was an ardent Nazi. If he had stayed in Germany, as a former SS member and per the laws of the occupying forces, he would have been arrested and subject to a denazification trial. But the FBI was made aware of how badly the navy needed Wagner, and they labeled him "an opportunist who is interested only in science." The FBI's bigger concern, read an intelligence report, was how much Dr. Wagner had been drinking lately. The FBI did not consider Wagner to be a “drunkard” but blamed his near-nightly intoxication on the recent death of his wife.

The scientist in the submarine, Dr. Heinz Schlicke, became a prisoner at Fort Meade, where it did not take long for the U.S. Navy to learn how “eminently qualified” he was. Soon, Schlicke was giving classified lectures on technology he had developed during the war. The first was called “A General Review of Measures Planned by the German Admiralty in the Electronic Field in Order to Revive U-Boat Warfare.” The navy wanted to hire Schlicke immediately, but State Department regulations got in the way. Schlicke was already in military custody in the United States as a prisoner of war. He would have to be repatriated back to Germany before he could be given a contract to work in the United States, according to the State Department. The saga of the U-234 and its passenger made one thing clear: If the War Department was going to start hiring German scientists on a regular basis, it needed to create a committee to deal with the intricacies of each specific case. Finally, on May 28, 1945, Undersecretary of War Robert Patterson weighed in on the classified subject of hiring Nazi scientists for U.S. military research.

Patterson wrote to the chief of staff to the president, Admiral William D. Leahy. “I strongly favor doing everything possible to utilize fully in the prosecution of the war against Japan all information that can be obtained from Germany or any other source,” Patterson wrote. He also expressed concern. “These men are enemies and it must be assumed they are capable of sabotaging our war effort. Bringing them to this country raises delicate questions, including the strong resentment of the American public, who might misunderstand the purpose of bringing them here and the treatment accorded them.” Patterson believed that the way to avoid foreseeable problems with the State Department, which handled visa approvals, was to involve the State Department in decision making now. Until a new committee was formed to deal specifically with Nazi scientists, Patterson suggested that the State-War-Navy Coordinating Committee (SWNCC) be in charge.

Patterson’s letter to the president’s chief of staff, which was not shared with President Truman, prompted a meeting at the Pentagon by the War Department General Staff. The group agreed on a temporary policy. Contracts would be given to a limited number of German scientists “provided they were not known or alleged war criminals.” The scientists were to be placed in protective military custody in the United States, and they were to be returned to Germany as quickly as possible after their classified weapons work was complete.

A cable was sent to General Eisenhower, at SHAEF headquarters in Versailles, fulfilling his two-week-old request to be advised on longer-term policy. But what had been decided in Washington, D.C., had very little impact on the reality of what was going on in the European Theater with scientists who had spent years serving Adolf Hitler.

CHAPTER SEVEN

Hitler’s Doctors

During the war, physicians with the U.S. Army Air Forces heard rumors about cutting-edge research being developed by the Reich’s aviation doctors. The Luftwaffe was highly secretive about this research, and its aviation doctors did not regularly publish their work in medical journals. When they did, usually in a Nazi Party–sponsored journal like *Aviation Medicine* (*Luftfahrtmedizin*), the U.S. Army Air Forces would circumvent copyright law, translate the work into English, and republish it for their own flight surgeons to study. Areas in which the Nazis were known to be breaking new ground were air-sea rescue programs, high-altitude studies, and decompression sickness studies. In other words, Nazi doctors were supposedly leading the world’s research in how pilots performed in extreme cold, extreme altitude, and at extreme speeds.

At war’s end, there were two American military officers who were particularly interested in capturing the secrets of Nazi-sponsored aviation research. They were Major General Malcolm Grow, surgeon general of the U.S. Strategic Air Forces in Europe, and Lieutenant Colonel Harry Armstrong, chief surgeon of the Eighth Air Force. Both men were physicians, flight surgeons, and aviation medicine pioneers.

Before the war, Grow and Armstrong had cofounded the aviation medicine laboratory at Wright Field, where together they initiated many of the major medical advances that had kept U.S. airmen alive during the air war. At Wright Field, Armstrong perfected a pilot-friendly oxygen mask and conducted groundbreaking studies in pilot physiology associated with high-altitude flight. Grow developed the original flier’s flak vest—a twenty-two-pound armored jacket that could protect airmen against antiaircraft fire. Now, with the war over, Grow and Armstrong saw unprecedented opportunity in seizing everything the Nazis had been working on in aviation research so as to incorporate that knowledge into U.S. Army Air Force's understanding.

According to an interview with Armstrong decades later, a plan was hatched during a meeting between himself and General Grow at the U.S. Strategic Air Forces in Europe headquarters, in Saint-Germain, France. The two men knew that many of the Luftwaffe's medical research institutions had been located in Berlin, and the plan was for Colonel Armstrong to go there and track down as many Luftwaffe doctors as he could find with the goal of enticing them to come to work for the U.S. Army Air Forces. As surgeon general, Grow could see to it that Armstrong was placed in the U.S-occupied zone in Berlin, as chief surgeon with the Army Air Forces contingent there. This would give Armstrong access to a city divided into U.S. and Russian zones. General Grow would return to Army Air Forces headquarters in Washington, D.C., where he would lobby superiors to authorize and pay for a new research laboratory exploiting what the Nazi doctors had been working on during the war. With the plan set in motion, Armstrong set out for Berlin.

The search proved difficult at first. It appeared as if every Luftwaffe doctor had fled Berlin. Armstrong had a list of 115 individuals he hoped to find. At the top of that list was one of the Reich's most important aviation doctors, a German physiologist named Dr. Hubertus Strughold. Armstrong had a past personal connection with Dr. Strughold.

"The roots of that story go back to about 1934," Armstrong explained in a U.S. Air Force oral history interview after the war, when both men were attending the annual convention of the Aero Medical Association, in Washington, D.C. The two men had much in common and "became quite good friends." Both were pioneers in pilot physiology and had conducted groundbreaking high-altitude experiments on themselves. "We had some common bonds in the sense that he and I were almost exactly the same age, he and I were both publishing a book on aviation medicine that particular year, and he held exactly the same assignment in Germany that I held in the United States," Armstrong explained. The two physicians met a second time, in 1937, at an international medical conference at the Waldorf-Astoria hotel in New York City. This was before the outbreak of war, Nazi Germany was not yet seen as an international pariah, and Dr. Strughold represented Germany at the conference. The two physicians had even more in common in 1937. Armstrong was director of the Aero Medical Research Laboratory at Wright Field, and Strughold was director of the Aviation Medical Research Institute of the Reich Air Ministry in Berlin. Their jobs were almost identical. Now, at war's end, the two men had not seen one another in eight years, but Strughold had maintained the same high-ranking position for the duration of the war. If anyone knew the secrets of Luftwaffe medical research, Dr. Hubertus Strughold did. In Berlin, Harry Armstrong became determined to find him.

One of the first places Armstrong visited was Strughold's former office at the Aviation Medical Research Institute, located in the fancy Berlin suburb of Charlottenburg. He was looking for leads. But the once-grand German military medical academy, with its formerly manicured lawns and groomed parks, had been bombed and was abandoned. Strughold's office was empty. Armstrong continued his journey across Berlin, visiting universities that Strughold was known to be affiliated with. Every doctor or professor he interviewed gave a similar answer: They claimed to have no idea where Dr. Strughold and his large staff of Luftwaffe doctors had gone.

At the University of Berlin, Armstrong finally caught a break when he came across a respiratory specialist named Ulrich Luft, teaching a physiology class to a small group of students inside a wrecked classroom. Luft was unusual-looking, with a shock of red hair. He was tall, polite, and spoke perfect English, which he had learned from his Scottish mother. Ulrich Luft told Harry Armstrong that the Russians had taken everything from his university laboratory, including the faucets and sinks, and that he, Luft, was earning money in a local clinic treating war refugees suffering from typhoid fever. Armstrong saw opportunity in Luft's predicament and confided in him, explaining that he was trying to locate German aviation doctors in order to hire them for U.S. Army–sponsored research. Armstrong said that, in particular, he was trying to find one man, Dr. Hubertus Strughold. Anyone who could help him would be paid. Dr. Luft told Armstrong that Strughold had been his former boss.

According to Luft, Strughold had dismissed his entire staff at the Aviation Medical Research Institute in the last month of the war. Luft told Armstrong that Strughold and several of his closest colleagues had gone to the University of Göttingen. They were still there now, working inside a research lab under British control. Armstrong thanked Luft and headed to Göttingen to find Strughold. Whatever the British were paying him, Armstrong figured he would be able to lure Strughold away because of their strong personal connection. There was also a great deal of money to be made pending the authorization of the new research laboratory. Armstrong and Grow’s plan meant hiring more than fifty Luftwaffe doctors. There was a lot of work to be had, not just for Strughold but for many of his colleagues as well.

A great drama was now set in motion owing to the fact that there was a second army officer also looking for Dr. Hubertus Strughold—a medical war crimes investigator and physician named Major Leopold Alexander. Dr. Strughold’s name had been placed on an army intelligence list of suspected war criminals with the Central Registry of War Criminals and Security Suspects, or CROWCASS. Major Alexander was on a mission to locate him.

It is not known if Armstrong was aware of the allegations against Strughold and chose to ignore them or if he was in the dark as to Strughold’s having been placed on the CROWCASS list. But as Armstrong forged ahead with plans to hire Dr. Strughold and to make him a partner in the U.S. Army Air Forces laboratory, he did so in direct violation of the policy that had just been set by the War Department. German scientists could be hired for U.S. military contract work “provided they were not known or alleged war criminals.” The CROWCASS allegations against Dr. Strughold were serious. They included capital war crimes.

The CROWCASS list came out of the immediate aftermath of the German surrender, when public pressure to prosecute Nazis accused of war crimes had reached fever pitch. On May 7, 1945, *Life* magazine published a story on the liberation of Buchenwald, Bergen-Belsen, and other death camps, complete with graphic photographs. This was some of the first documentary evidence presented to the public. When confronted by these ghastly images, people all over the world expressed their outrage at the scale of atrocity that had been committed by the Nazis. Death camps, slave labor camps, the systematic extermination of entire groups of people—this defied the rules of war. The idea of having a war crimes trial appealed to the general public as a means of holding individual Nazis accountable for the wickedness of their crimes.

The group responsible for investigating war crimes was the United Nations War Crimes Commission (UNWCC), located in London and founded by the Allies in 1942 (it was originally called the United Nations Commission for the Investigation of War Crimes). The War Crimes Commission was not responsible for hunting down the criminals; that job was delegated to SHAEF. The War Crimes Commission had three committees: Committee I dealt with lists, Committee II coordinated enforcement issues with SHAEF, and Committee III gave advice on legal points. The commission and its committees worked in concert with CROWCASS, also located in Paris, which was responsible for gathering and maintaining information about suspected war criminals.

After the fighting stopped, SHAEF sent war crimes investigators into the field to locate German doctors with the purpose of interrogating them. One of these investigators was Major Leopold Alexander, a Boston-based psychiatrist and neurologist and a physician with the U.S. Army. Dr. Alexander had been tending to wounded war veterans at a military hospital in England when he learned about his new assignment, just two weeks after the end of the war. With this undertaking, his whole life would change, as would his understanding of what it meant to be a doctor and what it meant to be an American.

Dr. Alexander would unwittingly become one of the most important figures in the Nuremberg doctors' trial. And he would inadvertently become a central player in one of the most dramatic events in the history of Operation Paperclip. That would take another seven years. For now, at war's end, Dr. Alexander accepted his orders from SHAEF, boarded a military transport airplane in England, and headed for Germany to begin war crimes investigative work. His first stop was the Dachau concentration camp. Dr. Alexander did not yet know that it was inside Dachau, in the secret barracks called Experimental Cell Block Five, that Luftwaffe doctors had conducted some of the most barbaric and criminal medical experiments of the war.

On May 23, 1945, Dr. Alexander, 39, was seated inside an American military transport airplane flying into Munich when, approximately fifteen miles north of the airport, his plane circled low and he saw the liberated Dachau concentration camp for the first time. "Surviving inmates were waving and cheering at the plane and you could see that two American field hospitals were set up on the camp grounds," Alexander wrote in his journal late at night. American aircraft brought fresh corned beef, potato salad, and real coffee by the ton to the newly liberated prisoners, many of whom were still too weak to leave the camp. The airplanes also brought doctors and nurses with the American Red Cross and the U.S. Army Typhus Commission and also, on occasion, a medical war crimes investigator like Dr. Alexander. The Dachau concentration camp was the first stop on a long list of Reich medical facilities and institutions that Dr. Alexander was scheduled to visit, locations where medical crimes were suspected of having taken place. With him, Dr. Alexander carried SHAEF instructions that granted him "full powers to investigate everything of interest" and also gave him the authority to "remove documents, equipment, or personnel as deemed necessary."

Fate and circumstance had prepared him for the job. Like Samuel Goudsmit, the scientific director of Operation Alsos, Dr. Alexander had a unique background that qualified him to investigate German doctors and had also made things personal. A Jew, he had once been a rising star among Germany's medical elite. In 1933, Germany's race laws forbade the twenty-eight-year-old physician from practicing medicine any longer. Devastated, he left the country and wound up in America. Now, thirteen years later, he was back on German soil. His former existence here seemed like a lifetime ago.

From as far back as he could remember, Leopold Alexander longed to be a doctor, like his father, Gustav. "One of the strongest unconscious motives for becoming a physician was the strong bond of identification with my father," he once said, explaining the pull toward medicine. Gustav Alexander was an ear, nose, and throat doctor in turn-of-the-century Vienna, a distinguished scholar who published more than eighty scientific papers before Leopold was born. His mother, Gisela, was the first woman awarded a PhD in philosophy from the University of Vienna, the oldest university in the German-speaking world. From a young age Leopold led a charmed life. The Alexanders were sophisticated, wealthy professionals who lived in intellectual-bohemian splendor in a huge house with live peacocks on the lawns. Sigmund Freud was a frequent guest, as was the composer Gustav Mahler. By the time Leopold was fifteen, he was allowed to accompany his father on weekend hospital rounds. The father-son bond grew deep. On weekends they would walk through Vienna’s parks or museums, always engaged in lively conversation about history, anthropology, and medicine, as Dr. Alexander later recalled.

In 1929, Leopold Alexander graduated from the University of Vienna Medical School and became a doctor, specializing in the evolution and pathology of the brain. For almost every aspiring physician in Europe at the time, the goal was to study medicine in Germany, and in 1932 Dr. Alexander was invited to enroll at the prestigious Kaiser Wilhelm Institute for Brain Research in Berlin. There he first rubbed elbows with Germany’s leading medical doctors, including Karl Kleist, the distinguished professor of brain pathology who would become his mentor. Alexander focused his studies on brain disorders and began fieldwork on patients with schizophrenia. Life was full of promise.

Tragedy struck in two cruel blows. In 1932, Gustav Alexander was killed by a former mental patient—murdered in cold blood on the streets of Vienna by a man who, ten years earlier, had been hospitalized and declared insane. The second tragedy occurred in January of 1933, when Adolf Hitler became chancellor of Germany. National Socialism was on the rise. For every Jew in Germany, life was about to change inexorably. Fortune blessed Dr. Alexander. On January 20, 1933, just days before Hitler took power, the ambitious physician prepared to decamp to rural China to study mental illness. “I have accepted an invitation to go for half a year to Beijing Union Medical College in Beijing (China) as an honorary lecturer in neurology and psychiatry,” Dr. Alexander wrote to his professors at the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute, promising to return to Germany by October 1, 1933. It was a promise he was never to fulfill.

Within two months of Hitler’s taking power, the Nazis initiated a nationwide boycott of Jewish doctors, lawyers, and business professionals. This was followed, in April 1933, by the Reich’s Law for the Restoration of the Professional Civil Service. It was now illegal for non-Aryans to work as civil servants, a ban that included every university teaching position throughout Germany. In Frankfurt, where Dr. Alexander had lived, sixty-nine Jewish professors were fired. The news of Germany’s radical transformation reached Dr. Alexander in China. The Alexander family lawyer, Maximilian Friedmann, wrote him a letter warning against return. “The prospects in Germany are most unfavorable,” Friedmann said. An uncle, Robert Alexander, was even more candid about what was happening in Nazi Germany when he wrote to Dr. Alexander to say that the nation had "succumbed to the swastika." A Jewish colleague and friend, a neurologist named Arnold Merzbach, also penned a letter to Dr. Alexander in despair, telling him that all of their Jewish colleagues in Frankfurt had been dismissed from their university posts. "Our very existences are falling apart," Merzbach wrote. "We are all without hope."

For months, Dr. Alexander lived in denial. He clung to the fantasy that Nazi laws would not apply to him, and he vowed to return once his fellowship ended. In China, Dr. Alexander was in charge of the neurological departments of several field hospitals, where he tended to soldiers with head injuries received on the battlefield. Ignoring the Nazi mandate that now barred Jews from working as doctors or professors, he wrote a letter to Professor Kleist, his mentor in Germany, saying how much he looked forward to returning home. Kleist wrote back to say that his return to Germany was "totally impossible.… You as a Jew [since] you have not served as a soldier in the First World War, can not be state employed." In closing, Kleist wrote, "Have no false hopes." The letter may have saved Dr. Alexander's life.

Untethered in China, Alexander was now a nomad, a man without a home to return to. With remarkable ambition and fortitude, he pressed on. As his father had done before him, he wrote and published scientific papers; his were on mental illness, which made him a viable candidate for a fellowship in America. Fortune again favored him when, in the fall of 1933, he learned that he had been awarded a position at a state mental hospital in Worcester, Massachusetts, fifty miles outside Boston. Dr. Alexander boarded an American steamship called *President Jackson* and set sail for America by way of Japan. Out at sea, a strange event occurred. It happened in the middle of the long journey, when his ship was more than a thousand miles from land. A series of violent storms struck, sending passengers inside for days until finally the weather cleared. On the first clear day, Dr. Alexander ventured outside to play shuffleboard. Gazing out across the wide sea, he spotted an enormous single wave traveling with great speed and force, bearing down on his tiny steamship. There was no escape from what he quickly recognized as a tidal wave. Before Dr. Alexander could run back inside the ship, the *President Jackson* was lifted up by this great wave. "The ship traveled up the steep slope very slowly, further and further, until we finally reached the top," he wrote to his brother, Theo. And then, with the ship balancing precariously at the top of the wave, he described the terrifying feeling that followed. “Suddenly there was nothing behind it… nothing but a steep descent.” The ship began to free-fall, “its nose plunged deep into the water.… The impact was harsh, water splashed to all sides, and things fell to this side and that in the kitchen and common rooms.” The ship regained its balance, almost effortlessly, and steamed on. “The whole thing happened so unbelievably fast,” Alexander wrote. “When it was over, I said to myself now I understand the meaning of the saying, ‘the ocean opens up before you and swallows you whole.’ ”

It did not take long for Dr. Alexander to thrive in America. He was a supremely hard worker. On average he slept five hours a night. Working as a doctor at a New England mental institution was endlessly fascinating to him. He once told a reporter that what interested him most was determining what made men tick. Only a few months after his arrival in New England, he was promoted to a full-time position in the neuropsychiatric ward at Boston State Hospital. While performing hospital rounds in 1934, he met a social worker named Phyllis Harrington. They fell in love and married. By 1938 they had two children, a boy and a girl. A prolific writer, Dr. Alexander published fifty scientific papers. By the end of the decade he’d been hired to teach at Harvard Medical School. He was a U.S. citizen now. Journalists wrote newspaper articles about the “doctor from Vienna,” citing his outstanding accomplishments in the field of mental illness. He had a new home; he had been accepted as one of Boston’s medical elite.

In December 1941 America went to war. Dr. Alexander joined the fight and was sent to the Sixty-fifth General Hospital in Fort Bragg, North Carolina, and then to an army hospital in England. For the duration of the war, Dr. Alexander helped wounded soldiers recover from shell shock. He also collected data on flight fatigue. After the Germans surrendered, he expected to be sent home. Instead he received his unprecedented order from SHAEF. He was to go to Germany and investigate allegations of Nazi medical crimes. In doing so, he would come face-to-face with former professors, mentors, and fellow students. It was his job to figure out who might be guilty and who was not.

Dr. Alexander’s first trip to Dachau did not produce any significant leads despite rumors that barbaric medical experiments had gone on there. On

June 5, 1945, he traveled the twelve miles to Munich to visit the Luftwaffe's Institute for Aviation Medicine. This research facility was headed by a radiologist named Georg August Weltz, still working despite Germany's collapse. On paper Weltz was a man of repute. He was gentle-looking, fifty-six years old with a shock of white hair and a wrinkled, suntanned face. In their first interview Weltz told Alexander he had worked as a military doctor his entire life, beginning as a Balloon Corps physician in World War I.

Dr. Alexander had a SHAEF dossier on Weltz that revealed Weltz had joined the Nazi Party in 1937, after which he had moved quickly up the Reich's medical chain of command. By 1941 he reported directly to the air marshal of the Luftwaffe, Erhard Milch, who reported to Reichsmarschall Hermann Göring. By war's end, there were only a few men with more medical authority on Luftwaffe issues than Georg August Weltz—one of them being Dr. Hubertus Strughold.

In their first interview, Weltz told Dr. Alexander that it had been his job to conduct a variety of research on methods of saving Luftwaffe pilots' lives. Weltz cited what happened to Luftwaffe pilots in 1940 during the Battle of Britain. Many had been shot down over the English Channel by the British Royal Air Force and had bailed out of their crashing airplanes and initially survived. The fatalities, Weltz explained, often occurred hours later, usually from hypothermia. The bodies of many Luftwaffe pilots had been rescued from the icy waters of the channel just minutes after they had frozen to death. The Luftwaffe wanted to know if, through medical research, doctors could learn how to "unfreeze a man," to bring him back to life. Dr. Weltz told Dr. Alexander that he and his team of researchers had performed groundbreaking research in this area. Weltz declared that they had in fact made a "startling and useful discovery." The results, said Weltz, were simply "astounding."

Dr. Alexander asked, "What kind of results?"

Weltz hesitated to provide details but promised that the U.S. Army would be very interested in the knowledge he possessed. Weltz asked Dr. Alexander if a deal could be made. Weltz said that he was interested in securing a grant with the Rockefeller Foundation. Dr. Alexander explained that he had no authority with any private-sector foundation and that, before anything else, he needed Weltz to tell him about this so-called "astounding" discovery.

Weltz said he and his team had solved an age-old riddle: Can a man who has frozen to death be brought back to life? The answer, Weltz confided, was yes. He had proof. He and his team had solved this medical conundrum through a radical rewarming technique they'd invented. Alexander asked Weltz to be more specific. Weltz said success was dependent upon precise body temperature and duration of rewarming in direct proportion to a man's weight. He was not at liberty to provide data just yet, but the method his team had developed was so effective that the Luftwaffe air-sea rescue service had employed this very technique during the war. The experiments, said Weltz, had been conducted on large animals. Cows, horses, and "adult pigs."

Dr. Alexander was in Germany to investigate Nazi medical war crimes. He got straight to the point and asked Weltz whether human beings had ever been used in these Luftwaffe experiments.

"Weltz explicitly stated that no such [human experiments] had been done by him and that he did not know of any such work having been done," Dr. Alexander wrote in his classified report. But the way in which Weltz responded made Dr. Alexander deeply suspicious of him.

Dr. Alexander was in a conundrum. Should he have Weltz arrested? Or was it best to try to learn more? "I still felt it wiser for the purposes of this investigation not to resort to coercive measures such as an arrest," Alexander explained. He asked Weltz to take him to the laboratory where these experiments on large animals were performed.

Weltz claimed that because of heavy bomb damage in Munich the Luftwaffe's test facility for its rewarming techniques had been moved out to a dairy farm in the rural village of Weihenstephan. Alexander and Weltz drove there together in an army jeep. An inspection of the farm revealed a state-of-the-art low-pressure chamber concealed in a barn. This, Weltz explained, was where Luftwaffe pilots learned performance limits under medical supervision. Also called a high-altitude chamber, the apparatus allowed aviation doctors to simulate the effects of high altitude on the body. But the rewarming facilities were nowhere to be seen. Where were they? Dr. Alexander asked.

Weltz hesitated and then explained. They'd been moved, Weltz said—this time to an estate near Freising, at a government-owned experimental agricultural station. Dr. Alexander insisted on seeing the Freising facility, and the two men got back into the army jeep and drove on. In Freising, Alexander was shown yet another impressive medical research facility, also hidden in a barn, complete with a library and X-ray facilities, all meticulously preserved. But the laboratory was clearly designed to handle experiments on small animals, mice and guinea pigs, not larger animals like cows, horses, and adult pigs. There were records, drawings, and charts of the freezing experiments—all carefully preserved. But, again, they chronicled experiments on small animals, mostly mice. Where had the large animal experiments taken place? Weltz took Alexander to the rear of the barn, behind a stable and into a separate shed located far in the back of the property. There Weltz pointed to two dirty wooden tubs, both cracked.

It was an extraordinary moment, Dr. Alexander would later testify, horrifying in its clarity. Neither of the tubs could possibly fit a submerged cow, horse, or large pig. What these tubs "could fit was a human being," Dr. Alexander said.

The grim reality of Dr. Weltz's Luftwaffe research became painfully clear. "I came away from all these interviews with the distinct conviction that experimental studies on human beings, either by members of this group themselves, or by other workers well known to and affiliated [with] the members of this group, had been performed but were being concealed," Dr. Alexander wrote. Without an admission of guilt, he had only suspicion. To make an arrest, he needed evidence. He thanked Dr. Weltz for his assistance and told him that he would be returning sometime in the future for a follow-up visit.

Dr. Alexander had been on German soil for two weeks, and the deviance of Nazi science overwhelmed him. In a letter to his wife, Phyllis, he described what had become of German science under Nazi rule. "German science presents a grim spectacle," he wrote. "Grim for many reasons. First it became incompetent and then it was drawn into the maelstrom of depravity of which this country reeks—the smell of the concentration camps, the smell of violent death, torture and suffering." German doctors were not practicing science, Alexander said, but "really depraved pseudoscientific criminality." In addition to investigating crimes committed in the name of aviation medical research, Dr. Alexander was the lead investigator looking at crimes committed in the name of neuropsychiatry and neuropathology. In this capacity, he came face-to-face with the odious and core Nazi belief that had informed the practice of medicine under Hitler’s rule. Not only were all people not created equal in the eyes of the Third Reich, but some people were actually not humans at all. According to Nazi ideology, *Untermenschen*—subhumans, as they were called, a designation that included Jews, Gypsies, homosexuals, Poles, Slavs, Russian prisoners of war, the handicapped, the mentally ill, and others—were no different from white mice or lab rabbits whose bodies could thereby be experimented on to advance the Reich’s medical goals. “The subhuman is a biological creature, crafted by nature,” according to Heinrich Himmler, “which has hands, legs, eyes, and mouth, even the semblance of a brain. Nevertheless, this terrible creature is only a partial human being.… Not all of those who appear human are in fact so.” German citizens were asked to believe this pseudoscience; millions did not protest. German scientists and physicians used this racial policy to justify torturous medical experiments resulting in maiming and death. In the case of the handicapped and the mentally ill, the *Untermenschen* theory was used by German doctors and technicians to justify genocide.

As a war crimes investigator, Dr. Alexander was one of the first American servicemen to learn that the Reich had first sterilized and then euthanized nearly its entire population of mentally ill persons, including tens of thousands of children, under the Law for the Prevention of Genetically Diseased Offspring. All across southern Germany, one German physician after the next admitted to Dr. Alexander his knowledge of the child euthanasia program. This included Dr. Alexander’s own mentor and former professor, the neurologist Karl Kleist. During an interview in Frankfurt, Kleist confessed to Dr. Alexander that he had known of the policy of euthanasia, and he handed over military psychiatric reports that allowed him to circumvent personal responsibility and claim he was just following orders. Kleist was not arrested, but a few days later he was removed from his teaching job. The former teacher and student never spoke again, and it remains a mystery if Dr. Alexander requested that Kleist be fired. Within a few years Kleist’s name would appear on a secret Paperclip recruiting list. It is not known if he came to the United States.

Each day brought atrocious new information. “It sometimes seems as if the Nazis had taken special pains in making practically every nightmare come true,” Dr. Alexander later told his wife, comparing Reich medicine to something out of a dark German fairy tale. Whereas doctors who knew about the euthanasia program tended to be forthcoming with information—the program was "justified" by a German law kept secret from the general public—it struck Dr. Alexander that criminal human experiments by Luftwaffe doctors, like the freezing experiments Weltz was involved in, appeared to have been more skillfully concealed. If Dr. Alexander wanted to learn the facts about what Luftwaffe doctors had been up to during the war, he knew that he had to understand the bigger picture. And he also had to determine where else the crimes might have taken place. The best way to do this was to interview the man nearest the top, Dr. Hubertus Strughold. Strughold had directed the Aviation Medical Research Institute for the Luftwaffe for ten of the twelve years of Nazi Party rule. When Dr. Alexander learned that Dr. Strughold was in Göttingen, in the British zone, he headed there.

En route to Göttingen, Dr. Alexander had a fortuitous break. "A curious coincidence played into my hands," he wrote. "On my way to Göttingen… while having dinner in the Officers' mess of the 433rd A. A. Bn. [Army Battalion] in camp Rennerod, Westerwald, I happened to meet another casual guest, an army chaplain, Lieutenant Bigelow. In the course of our conversation, Lt. Bigelow told me he was quite eager to get my ideas about rather cruel experiments on human beings, which had been performed at Dachau concentration camp. He had learned of them from a broadcast a few days earlier when ex-prisoners of Dachau had talked about these grim experiments over the Allied radio in Germany." This was exactly the kind of lead Dr. Alexander was looking for, and he asked Lieutenant Bigelow to share with him anything else he remembered from the radio report.

Lieutenant Bigelow told Alexander that as a member of the clergy he had ministered to many war victims. He had heard frightful stories about what had gone on in the medical blocks at the concentration camps. But nothing compared to what he had heard in that radio report. Doctors at Dachau had frozen people to death, in tubs of ice-cold water, to see if they could be unfrozen and brought back to life. These experiments were apparently meant to simulate conditions that Luftwaffe pilots went through after they'd been shot down over the English Channel, Bigelow said. Dr. Alexander now had a solid new lead. To his mind, the experiments Bigelow was referring to sounded "strikingly similar to the animal experiments performed by Dr. Weltz and his group" at the Freising farm. Was the Luftwaffe involved in medical research at the concentration camps? Dr.

Alexander asked the chaplain if he had caught any of the names of the doctors involved in the Dachau medical crimes. Bigelow said that he couldn’t recall but that he was certain he had heard that the Luftwaffe was involved. More determined than ever to investigate, Dr. Alexander continued on to Göttingen to interview Dr. Hubertus Strughold.

At the Institute for Physiology in Göttingen, Dr. Alexander located Strughold and arranged to interview him, getting straight to the point. Dr. Alexander told Dr. Strughold about the radio report claiming that freezing experiments had been conducted by the Luftwaffe at Dachau. Did Strughold, as the physician in charge of aviation medical research for the Luftwaffe, know about these criminal experiments at Dachau? Dr. Strughold said that he had learned of the experiments at a medical symposium he attended in Nuremberg in October 1942. The conference, called “Medical Problems of Sea Distress and Winter Distress,” took place at the Hotel Deutscher Hof and involved ninety Luftwaffe doctors. During that conference, Strughold said, a man named Dr. Sigmund Rascher presented findings that had been obtained from experiments performed on prisoners at the Dachau concentration camp. This was the same man “who had been mentioned over the allied radio the other day,” Strughold said. He called Rascher a fringe doctor whose only assistant at Dachau was his wife, Nini. Both Raschers were now dead.

Did Strughold approve of these experiments? Strughold told Dr. Alexander that “even though Dr. Rascher used criminals in his experiments, he [Strughold] still disapproved of such experiments in non-consenting volunteers on principle.” Dr. Strughold promised Dr. Alexander that within his institute in Berlin he had “always forbidden even the thought of such experiments… firstly on moral grounds and secondly on grounds of medical ethics.” Alexander asked Strughold if he knew of any other Luftwaffe doctors who had been involved in human experiments at Dachau. Strughold said, “Any experiments on humans that we have carried out were performed only on our own staff and on students interested in our subject on a strictly volunteer basis.” He did not reveal that a number of doctors on his staff had visited Dachau regularly and worked on research experiments there.

Also in Göttingen, Dr. Alexander interviewed several other doctors who had worked for Strughold, asking each of them specific questions about human experiments. Each doctor told a strikingly similar story. Dr. Sigmund Rascher was to blame for everything that went on at Dachau and now Rascher was dead. But one man, a physiologist named Dr. Friedrich Hermann Rein, let an important clue slip. Dr. Rascher had been an SS man, Rein said. This information gave Dr. Alexander a significant new piece of the puzzle he did not have before, namely, that the SS was also involved in the concentration camp freezing experiments. This was a revelation.

The day after this disclosure, Dr. Alexander received further extraordinary, related news. "I learned that the entire contents of Himmler's secret cave in Hallein, Germany [*sic*], containing a vast amount of miscellaneous specially secret S.S. records, had recently been discovered and taken" to the Seventh Army Document Center in Heidelberg. This huge trove of papers had been discovered by soldiers hidden away in yet another cave. The papers had been stamped with the unmistakable logo of the SS, and they bore Himmler's personal annotations, drawn in the margins in the green pencil he liked to use. Dr. Alexander set out for the Document Center to see what he could glean from the files. These papers would turn out to be among the war's most incriminating discoveries in a single document find.

In Heidelberg, Himmler's documents were being inventoried and sorted out when Dr. Alexander first arrived. One of the men tasked to the job was Hugh Iltis, the son of a Czech doctor, who, with his family, fled Europe in advance of the genocide. Iltis was a nineteen-year-old American soldier fighting on the front lines in France during the last months of the war when, he recalls, "a car showed up and an officer leapt out and pointed at me, then shouted 'You, come with me!' " Iltis climbed into the car and sped away from the battlefield with the officer. Someone had learned that Hugh Iltis was a fluent German speaker (and perhaps that his father was a leading geneticist and anti-Nazi). Iltis was needed in Paris to translate captured Nazi documents, and the work kept on coming. Now, six months later, here he was in Heidelberg documenting atrocities for the War Crimes Commission. His discovery of the Himmler papers—it was Iltis who identified how important they were—would also become the most important collection of documents on Nazi human experimentation to be presented at the doctors' trial.

Alexander told Iltis what it was that he was looking for: documents written by Dr. Sigmund Rascher that involved experiments on humans. Together, the two men broke the original seals on the innocuously named Case No. 707-Medical Experiments, papers that turned out to include years of correspondence between Rascher and Himmler.

"The idea to start the experiments with human beings in Dachau was obviously Dr. Rascher's," Alexander explained in his classified scientific intelligence report. But as Alexander learned from the papers, Rascher was far from the only Luftwaffe doctor involved. Nor were the human experiments limited to freezing experiments. Even more damning, Dr. Alexander learned that one of Dr. Strughold's closest colleagues and his coauthor, a physiologist named Dr. Siegfried Ruff, was in charge of overseeing Rascher's human experiments at Dachau. This was stunning news. "Dr. Ruff, and his assistant Dr. Romberg, joined forces [with Rascher] and arrived in Dachau with a low pressure chamber which they supplied," Alexander wrote in his report. This low-pressure chamber was used for a second set of deadly experiments involving high-altitude studies. Sitting inside the Seventh Army Documentation Center reading the Himmler papers, Dr. Alexander realized that Dr. Strughold had lied to him when he had said that the only Luftwaffe doctor involved in the Dachau experiments had been the "fringe doctor" Rascher. In fact, Strughold's friend and colleague Dr. Ruff was deeply implicated.

Most disturbing to Alexander were a group of photographs showing what happened in the course of the experiments as healthy young men—classified by the Nazis as *Untermenschen*—were strapped into a harness inside the low-pressure chamber and subjected to explosive decompression. These photographs, astonishing in their sadism, were essentially before, during, and after pictures of murder in the name of medicine. Other photographs among the Himmler papers documented the freezing experiments as they were being conducted at Dachau. Rascher's experiments were by no means the solo act of one depraved man. There were photographs of yet another of Dr. Strughold's Luftwaffe colleagues, Dr. Ernst Holzlöhner, holding prisoners down in tubs of icy water while their body temperatures were recorded as they died. It is believed that Rascher's wife, Nini, took the photographs.

In a classified CIOS report, Dr. Alexander expressed doubts about the veracity of Dr. Strughold's earlier testimony from their first interview in

Göttingen. The Dachau experiments were joint endeavors by the Luftwaffe and the SS, and, despite Strughold's denials, several aviation doctors on his staff, including individuals who reported to directly to him, were named in the Himmler papers. "Strughold at least must have been familiar with the parts played by his friend and co-worker Ruff," Dr. Alexander wrote. In his report, he advised SHAEF that, while he could not yet say if Dr. Strughold was directly involved in the death experiments, clearly Reich medical crimes "were still being covered up by" him.

On June 20, Alexander headed back to Munich to confront Dr. Weltz. Instead, he found a colleague of Weltz's, a Dr. Lutz, who broke down and confessed that he'd been aware of the human experiments, but that they'd been conducted by his team members, not him. Lutz claimed to have been offered the "human job," by Weltz, but declined to accept, on grounds that he was "too soft."

Before confronting Strughold, Dr. Alexander first returned to Dachau to locate eyewitnesses. There, he found three former prisoners who offered testimony. John Bauduin, Oscar Häusermann, and Dr. Paul Hussarek had managed to stay alive at the concentration camp by working as orderlies for the SS. After Dachau was liberated, the three men chose to stay behind so as to help investigators piece together medical crimes. They formed a group, calling it the Committee for the Investigation of SS Medical Crimes. From them, Dr. Alexander learned that the experiments had been conducted on Jews, Gypsies, homosexuals, and Catholic priests in the secret, freestanding barracks called Experimental Cell Block Five. "In general, the death of prisoners transferred to Block 5 was expected within 2–3 days," testified John Bauduin. The second witness, Dr. Hussarek, a Czech scholar sent to Dachau for committing "literary crimes," told Dr. Alexander that "only a few experimental subjects survived the low pressure experiments. Most were killed." All three men agreed that only one individual was known to have survived the experiments, a Polish priest named Leo Michalowski.

Father Michalowski's testimony provided a critical missing link in the medical murder experiments and how they were so skillfully concealed. Luftwaffe reports used the words "guinea pigs," "large pigs," and "adult pigs" as code words for their human subjects. In one of Weltz's papers confiscated by Dr. Alexander, entitled "Alcohol and Rewarming," Weltz wrote that "shipwreck experiments had been [simulated] in large pigs." The pigs were placed in tubs of water with blocks of ice and given alcohol to see if a rewarming effect occurred. The results, wrote Weltz, showed that "alcohol in pigs does not increase or accelerate the loss of warmth." In sworn testimony, Father Michalowski described what had been done to him at Dachau: "I was taken to room No. 4 on Block 5.… I was dropped in the water in which ice blocks were floating. I was conscious for one hour… then given some rum." In Weltz's paper the word "large pig" really meant "Catholic priest."

On June 22, Dr. Alexander returned to the Heidelberg Document Center to locate more information with the help of Hugh Iltis. Armed with new details and key words culled from survivor testimony, Dr. Alexander found what Dr. Rascher had called his "experiment reports." These charts, Alexander noted, were a scientific chronicle of medical murder. Rascher had also had bigger plans. He was working with the SS to have the aviation medicine experiments relocated from Dachau to Auschwitz. "Auschwitz is in every way more suitable for such a large serial experiment than Dachau because it is colder there and the greater extent of open country within the camp would make the experiments less conspicuous," Rascher wrote. Dr. Alexander also learned about a grotesque "motion picture of the record of the experiments" that had been shown at a private screening at the Air Ministry, at the behest of Himmler. The Luftwaffe doctor overseeing this event was yet another close colleague of Dr. Strughold's, a physiologist and government official named Dr. Theodor Benzinger. Dr. Alexander was unable to locate Benzinger but noted the name in his report. He then returned to Göttingen to interview Strughold a second time to see if he could confirm that Strughold had been lying to him.

In Göttingen, things had changed. Investigators working on scientific intelligence projects for the U.S. Army Air Forces (AAF) and the Royal Air Force (RAF) had interviewed many of the Luftwaffe doctors, including Dr. Strughold. Their conclusions were remarkably different from Dr. Alexander's. None of the RAF or AAF officers had traveled to the Document Center in Heidelberg to read the Himmler files. Instead, their reports were meant to serve and support Armstrong and Grow's secret, new research lab.

RAF Wing Commander R. H. Winfield wrote in his report, "Strughold was the mainspring of German Aviation Medical Research" and had a large staff of colleagues, including Dr. Siegfried Ruff, who all appeared to have “suffered tremendously from their isolation during the war years.” Winfield, having no idea that Dr. Ruff had been the person in charge of overseeing Rascher’s work at Dachau, stated that his “interrogations [of Ruff] revealed very little information not already known to the Allies.” Winfield saw Dr. Strughold as a patrician figure, “considerably disturbed about the welfare of his staff who, unable to evacuate Berlin, were now threatened by the Russians.”

Representing the U.S. Army Air Forces was Colonel W. R. Lovelace, an expert in high-altitude escape and parachute studies. The following decade, Lovelace would become famous as the physician for NASA’s Cold War–era Project Mercury astronauts. For his confidential CIOS report, entitled “Research in Aviation Medicine for the German Air Force,” Lovelace interviewed Dr. Strughold and many of his colleagues, including the freezing expert, Georg Weltz. Like Winfield, Lovelace was in the dark about the medical murder experiments going on inside the concentration camps. He saw Weltz’s research as benign and dedicated five pages of his CIOS report to praising his studies on “rapid rewarming of the cooled animal.” Lovelace was particularly impressed by the fact that Weltz had frozen a “guinea pig” to death and was still able to record a heartbeat after death. “[T]he heartbeat may continue for some time if the animal is left in the cold,” Lovelace wrote in summation of Weltz’s findings.

Unlike Dr. Alexander, Colonel Lovelace was able to interview Strughold and Ruff’s colleague Dr. Theodor Benzinger, the high-altitude specialist who ran the Reich’s Experimental Station of the Air Force Research Center, Rechlin, located north of Berlin. This was the same Dr. Benzinger who had overseen for Himmler the film screening at the Reich Air Ministry, in Berlin, of Dachau prisoners being murdered in medical experiments. And while Dr. Alexander had this information, Colonel Lovelace had no idea. Lovelace was particularly interested in Benzinger’s work involving “high altitude parachute escapes,” for which Benzinger had gathered much data and produced “studies in reversible and irreversible deaths.” Benzinger told Lovelace that he performed his studies on rabbits.

Finally, Lovelace interviewed Dr. Konrad Schäfer, a chemist and physiologist whose wartime efforts to render salt water drinkable made him famous in Luftwaffe circles. With high praise from RAF and AAF officers, Doctors Ruff, Benzinger, and Schäfer were now each being considered for leading positions at the new research lab.

It was the end of June 1945, and Dr. Alexander’s allotted time in the field as a war crimes investigator had drawn to a close. He was ordered back to London, where he would type up seven classified CIOS reports totaling more than fifteen hundred pages. Two weeks after Alexander left Germany, the chief of the Division of Aviation Medicine for the Army Air Forces, Detlev Bronk, and an AAF expert on the psychological and physiological stresses of flying named Howard Burchell, arrived in Germany to evaluate progress on the new research laboratory envisioned by Armstrong and Grow. Bronk and Burchell interviewed many of the same doctors and determined that they were all good candidates for the AAF center. Unlike Wing Commander Winfield and Colonel Lovelace, Bronk and Burchell had been made aware of some of the controversy surrounding Strughold and his Luftwaffe colleagues. In a joint report, they explained, “[N]o effort was made to assess [the doctors’] political and ethical viewpoints, or their responsibility for war crimes.” They also concluded, “Strughold was not always quite honest in presenting the true significance of the work which he supported.” But Bronk and Burchell stated that it was their position that army intelligence was better qualified to determine who was inadmissible “for political reasons” and who could be hired. As it turned out, military intelligence objected to hiring Dr. Benzinger and Dr. Ruff, on the grounds that both men had been hard-core Nazi ideologues. But in the following month, army intelligence determined that the doctors’ work at Heidelberg would be “short term,” and both men were cleared for U.S. Army employment.

A deal was made between the U.S. Army Air Forces and Dr. Strughold. He would serve with Armstrong as cochairman of a Top Secret research center that the AAF was quietly setting up at the former Kaiser Wilhelm Institute in Heidelberg, and to be called the Army Air Forces Aero Medical Center. No one outside a small group could know about this controversial project because, per JCS 1076, no foreign power was permitted to carry out military research of any kind in Germany, including in medicine.

Dr. Strughold handpicked fifty-eight Luftwaffe doctors for the research program, including Dr. Siegfried Ruff, Dr. Theodor Benzinger, and Dr. Konrad Schäfer—the first Nazi doctors to be hired by the U.S. Army Air Forces. In Munich, Dr. Georg Weltz was arrested and sent to an internment facility for processing. From there, he would be sent to the prison complex in Nuremberg to await trial.

In less than two years, many of the Nazi doctors chosen by Dr. Strughold would quietly begin their secret journeys to the United States.

CHAPTER EIGHT

Black, White, and Gray

In Washington, with policy now informally set, the debate over the Nazi scientist program became intense inside the State-War-Navy Coordinating Committee (SWNCC). Like its successor organization, the National Security Council, SWNCC acted as the president's principal forum for dealing with issues related to foreign policy and national security. The State Department was vocal in its opposition to the program. Exacerbating the situation for the State Department was a parallel issue it had recently become embroiled in. South American countries, Argentina and Uruguay in particular, were known to be giving safe haven to Nazi war criminals who had escaped from Germany at the end of the war. The State Department had been putting pressure on these countries to repatriate Nazis back to Europe to face war crimes charges. If it came out that the State Department was providing not only safe haven but employment opportunities for Nazi scientists in the United States, that would be cause for an international scandal. And while some generals and colonels in the War Department were decidedly for the Nazi science programs, others were fundamentally opposed to the idea. A secretly recorded conversation between two generals at the Pentagon summed up the conflict that the very idea of German scientists working for the U.S. military created.

"One of the ground rules for bringing them over is that it will be temporary and at the return of their exploitation they will be sent back to Germany," said one general, whose name was redacted.

The second general agreed. "I'm opposed and Pop Powers [a nickname for a Pentagon official] is opposed, the whole War Department is opposed," he said. To "open our arms and bring in German technicians and treat them as honored guests" was a very bad idea.

The Department of Justice was not happy about the voluminous workload that background checks on former enemy aliens would require. The Department of Labor was concerned about laws governing alien labor, and the Department of Commerce was concerned about patent rights. In an attempt to ease the contention, Undersecretary of War Robert Patterson sent a memorandum to the War Department General Staff stating that the person to mediate these issues was John J. McCloy, the assistant secretary of war and chairman of SWNCC.

John J. McCloy would become an especially significant player in Operation Paperclip starting in 1949. But now, in the summer of 1945, he wore two hats related to the issue of Nazi scientists. On the one hand, Undersecretary of War Robert Patterson had put McCloy in charge of coordinating policy regarding Nazi scientists coming to the United States to work. On the other hand, Patterson's boss, Secretary of War Henry Stimson, had given McCloy the job of helping to develop the war crimes program. McCloy's position regarding the exploitation of Nazi science and scientists was clear. He believed that the program would help foster American military superiority while engendering economic prosperity. To McCloy, those ends justified any means. It was not that McCloy believed that the Nazis should go unpunished, at least not in the summer of 1945. For that, McCloy was a strong supporter of the International Military Tribunal (IMT) and the idea of a war crimes trial. But he was someone who saw these two categories as black and white. There were scientists and there were war criminals.

In McCloy's eyes, a war criminal was a Himmler, a Hess, a Göring, or a Bormann. Scientists, like industrialists, were the backbone of a healthy economy in this new, postwar world. In the summer of 1945, McCloy was regularly briefed on the capture and arrest of these war criminals as they were rounded up and taken to a Top Secret interrogation facility in Luxembourg, code-named Ashcan, where they would be squeezed for information before facing judgment at Nuremberg.

John Dolibois, an officer with Army Intelligence, G-2, the Collecting and Dissemination Division, spent a significant portion of the last eight months of the war watching and rewatching *Triumph of the Will,* the three-hour-long Nazi propaganda film by Hitler's favorite filmmaker, Leni Riefenstahl.

Every Thursday night, inside a screening room at Camp Ritchie, America's Military Intelligence Training Center, located eighty miles north of Washington in the Catoctin Mountains, the twenty-six-year-old Dolibois used the film to teach German order of battle and Nazi Party hierarchy to colonels, generals, and intelligence officers preparing to go off to war.

The *Triumph of the Will* documentary was an ideal teaching tool and enabled Dolibois to point out to his students how individuals within the Nazi Party hierarchy spoke and gestured, what insignia they wore, who was subordinate to whom. Between the hateful speeches and the endless parades, the fawning inner circle and the Nuremberg rallies, John Dolibois had become so familiar with Hitler's inner circle that he could almost recite their speeches himself.

He enjoyed teaching, but, like so many dedicated Americans of his generation, Dolibois wished to see action overseas. There was a tinge of envy as well. He stayed in touch with his former colleagues from Officer Candidates School, most of whom had been sent to Europe months ago. Many had already been promoted to captains and majors. As the war in Europe drew to a close, John Dolibois had accepted that he was, in all likelihood, not going to be sent overseas as part of an interrogation team, called an IPW team, to interview newly captured prisoners of war. Then, on Easter Sunday, April 1, 1945, he received orders to ship out with the next detachment. Steaming out of the New York harbor only days later, he was standing on the deck of the *Île de France* when someone handed him a telegram. He'd been promoted to first lieutenant.

Things moved fast after he'd crossed the Atlantic. On April 13, Dolibois's ship landed in West Scotland. Every vessel in the harbor was at half-mast; President Roosevelt had died the day before. A quick train trip to London bore witness to "appalling devastation." Piles of rubble filled both sides of every street. Dolibois's channel crossing took place under a full moon, and he was grateful to arrive in the war-torn port at Le Havre, France, without incident. "Up until then our move from Camp Ritchie to Le Havre had been well orchestrated," explains Dolibois. "Now chaos set in." Driving into Munich, destroyed vehicles and weaponry littered the road. In the clearings in the woods sat small fleets of wrecked Luftwaffe airplanes, their wings torn off and their fuselages pockmarked with holes. Corpses rotted in ditches. "Suddenly the war was very real," Dolibois recalls.

His first assignment was at the Dachau concentration camp, just two days after its liberation. Dolibois had been sent to Dachau to look over groups of captured German soldiers to see if important generals, party officials, or scientists were hiding out among the crowd. “Primarily I was to watch for high ranking Nazis in disguise,” remembers Dolibois. “We had reports that many of them were passing themselves off as ordinary German soldiers, thus hoping to be overlooked in the confusion and to disappear.” His job was to intuit the meaning of certain manners of walk, greeting, and speech. Dolibois was on the lookout for anyone who might be useful to the Allies for a more detailed interrogation at a facility elsewhere.

At Dachau, John Dolibois scoured faces in the crowd for telltale marks, things that could not be hidden. The most obvious among them were the dueling scars of the Nazi elite. But at Camp Ritchie Dolibois had also become an expert in signs of concealment. Recently shaved facial hair or patches pulled off uniforms were indicators that a man had something to hide. True expertise, Dolibois knew, lay in recognizing nuance.

After a few days at Dachau, Dolibois received another assignment. He proceeded to Central Continental Prisoner of War Enclosure Number 32, or CCPWE No. 32. The mission he was now on was classified Top Secret. Everyone he asked about CCPWE No. 32 said that they had never heard of it before. When Dolibois’s driver left the borders of Germany and began heading into Luxembourg, Dolibois became overwhelmed with memories. Luxembourg, of all places—how capricious to be on assignment here. John Dolibois was born in Luxembourg. He had moved to America when he was a twelve-year-old boy, with his father; his mother had died in the great influenza pandemic. Driving into Luxembourg in 1945, Dolibois was seeing his native country for the first time in fourteen years. As his army jeep made its way into a little spa town called Mondorf-les-Bains, images of his youth flooded his mind. He recalled Mondorf’s “beautiful park, a quiet stream on which one could row a boat, lots of old trees, and acres of flowers.” Mondorf was built a few miles from the Moselle River in antiquity, developed by the Romans as a health resort. It was known for its restorative qualities, its mineral baths and fresh air. How different it all looked now, another small city devastated by war. Most homes and shops had been plundered or destroyed. Driving along the main boulevard, Dolibois observed how the façades of many houses had been blown off. He could see people carrying on with their lives inside of what was left of their homes.

Only when his jeep pulled up to its destination did Dolibois realize that he'd arrived at the Palace Hotel. It was unrecognizable to him. A fifteen-foot-high fence ran around the main building, on top of which was a double-stringed curl of barbed wire. There was a second fence that appeared to be electrified. Camouflage netting hung from panels of fencing. Wide canvas sheets had been strung from tree to tree. Huge klieg lights illuminated the place. There were four guard towers, each manned by American soldiers holding powerful machine guns. Not even in photographs had John Dolibois seen an Allied prison facility in the European war theater as heavily fortified as this place was. At the front gate there was a jeep, parked and with its engine turned off. A stern-faced sergeant sat inside. His name tag read "Sergeant of the Guard, Robert Block." Block addressed Dolibois with a nod.

"Good afternoon, sergeant," Dolibois said. "I'm reporting for duty here."

Block just stared at him. Dolibois recalled asking what kind of place this was. What was going on inside?

Block said he had not been inside.

There was a long, uncomfortable pause. Finally Block spoke. "To get in here you need a pass signed by God." He nodded at the prisoner-of-war facility behind him. "And have somebody verify the signature."

Dolibois handed over his papers. After Block looked at them, the gate swung open and Dolibois was waved inside. In spite of its fortifications, the Palace Hotel remained surprisingly unscathed by war. The boomerang-shaped building was five stories tall. The fountain at the front entrance lacked water, its stone-carved nymph rising up from an empty pool. Inside the hotel foyer Dolibois was greeted by two guards. A third soldier handed him a key and pointed up a flight of stairs. He told Dolibois to leave his things in room 30, on the second floor.

"I climbed up the stairs, located room 30 and let myself in with the key he had given me. It was an ordinary hotel room," remembers Dolibois, "with rather noisy wallpaper." Inside, the fancy light fixtures and plush furniture of a grand hotel had been replaced by a folding table, two chairs, and an army cot. Dolibois unpacked his duffel bag. There was a knock on the door.

Ashcan may have been heavily fortified on the exterior, but inside the facility, the prisoners were free to roam around. Dolibois opened the door and stood face-to-face with a large man dressed in a ratty pearl-gray uniform with gold braids on the collars and gold insignia on the shoulder pads. He held a pair of trousers draped over one arm. Clicking his heels, he nodded and introduced himself as if he were at a party, not in a prison. The man opened his mouth and barked, "Göring, Reichsmarschall!"

So this was Hermann Göring. Dolibois recognized him immediately from so many screenings of *Triumph of the Will*. Here was the man in flesh and blood. Göring was arguably the most notorious of Hitler's inner circle still alive. Former commander in chief of the Luftwaffe. Director of the Four Year Plan. Hitler's long-acknowledged successor until the perceived betrayal at the very end. It was Hermann Göring who ordered security police chief Reinhard Heydrich to organize and coordinate plans for a "solution to the Jewish question."

"At once I understood my assignment," recalled Dolibois. He was here in Luxembourg to interrogate the highest-ranking war criminals in the Nazi Party. This was not a Nazi propaganda film. The individuals who had so populated his mind and his teaching at Camp Ritchie for the past eight months were right here. And they were all prisoners now.

Göring stood before Dolibois, panting.

Göring said he had been unfairly tricked by his captors. "He had been told he was going to a palatial spa," Dolibois explained. When Göring arrived at Ashcan with his valet, Robert Kropp, he was expecting a vacation. He brought along eleven suitcases and twenty thousand Paracodin pills, and had made sure his toenails and fingernails had been varnished to a bright red shine for his stay. That the spa at Mondorf had lost its chandeliers and been turned into a maximum-security prison complex was not what Göring had in mind. His mattress was made of straw, Göring barked at Dolibois. He didn't have a pillow. A man of his rank deserved more.

Dolibois looked at Göring. Made a mental note.

"Are you by chance a welfare officer who will see to it that we are treated correctly, according to Articles of War?" Göring asked Dolibois.

In this question, Dolibois saw opportunity as an interrogator. "Yes," he said. He would be working "along those lines." Göring was pleased. "He made a great show again of heel-clicking, bowing and taking his 280 pounds out of my room."

Göring returned to his fellow prisoners. He told the other Nazis about the new officer’s arrival and his responsibilities to see better treatment for all of them. Suddenly everyone wanted to speak with First Lieutenant John Dolibois.

CCPWE No. 32 was filled with Nazi “Bonzen,” the big wheels, as Dolibois and the other interrogators called them. Hans Frank, the “Jew-Butcher of Cracow,” arrived at Ashcan on a stretcher, in silk pajamas drenched in blood. He had tried to kill himself by slashing his own throat. Frank was captured with his thirty-eight-volume diary, written during the war, a damning confession of many crimes he was guilty of. “Dark-eyed and balding,” noted Ashcan’s commandant, Colonel Burton Andrus, Frank had “pale hairy hands.” Other prisoners included members of the former German General Staff: Field Marshal Wilhelm Keitel, chief of the Oberkommando der Wehrmacht (OKW), or Armed Forces High Command; General Alfred Jodl, Keitel’s chief of operations; Grand Admiral Karl Dönitz, commander of submarines and commander in chief of the German navy; Field Marshal Albert Kesselring, former chief of Armed Forces Italy and later Supreme Commander West; Joachim von Ribbentrop, foreign minister; and Albert Speer, minister of armaments and war production. These were the men who personally helped Hitler plan and execute World War II and the Holocaust—those who hadn’t escaped, perished, or committed suicide.

“In a second circle, or clique, there were the real Nazi gangsters,” Dolibois explained, “the old fighters—who had been with Hitler at the beginning of his rise to power.” Among this group were Robert Ley, Labor Front leader; Julius Streicher, editor of the anti-Semitic newspaper and propaganda tool *Der Stürmer;* Alfred Rosenberg, Nazi philosopher; Arthur Seyss-Inquart, the man who betrayed Austria and became Reichskommissar of Holland; and Wilhelm Frick, former minister of the interior and Reichsprotektor of Bohemia-Moravia.

Stripped of their power, small details spoke volumes to Dolibois. Göring was terrified of thunderstorms. Keitel was obsessed with sunbathing and staring at his reflection in Ashcan’s only mirror, in its entrance hall. Robert Ley was repeatedly reprimanded for masturbating in the bathtub. Joachim von Ribbentrop, named by the Nazi Ministry of Propaganda as the best-dressed man in Germany for nine consecutive years, was a lazy slob. Day in and day out, John Dolibois interviewed them.

“Almost all the men at Ashcan were eager to talk,” Dolibois recalls. “They felt neglected if they hadn’t been interrogated by someone for several days.… Their favorite pastime was casting blame.” The greatest challenge for Dolibois and his fellow interrogators was determining, or trying to determine, who was lying and who was telling the truth. “Cross-examination. Playing one prisoner off the other,” according to Dolibois, was a tactic that worked best.

“Often, I was taken into their confidence when they needed a shoulder to cry on,” Dolibois explains. “At Mondorf, they still couldn’t believe they would be tried for their crimes.”

CHAPTER NINE

Hitler's Chemists

At war's end, the staff of the U.S. Chemical Warfare Service had their sights set on bringing Hitler's chemists to the United States. The service saw unbridled potential in making the Nazis' nerve agent program its own and was willing to go to great lengths to obtain its secrets. Less than one month after British tanks rolled into the Robbers' Lair and found the enormous cache of tabun-filled bombs in the forests of Münster-Nord, the Chemical Warfare Service had obtained a sample of the nerve agent and was analyzing its properties in its Development Laboratory in the United States. Work began on May 15, 1945, and took two weeks to complete. The analysis revealed that tabun was a revolutionary killer that could decimate enemy armies. General William N. Porter, chief of the Chemical Warfare Service, requested that five 260-kg tabun-filled bombs be shipped from the Robbers' Lair to the United States "by air under highest priority" for field tests. Separately, General Porter asked the U.S. Army Air Forces and U.S. Army Ordnance to conduct their own feasibility studies to determine if tabun bombs could be used in combat by U.S. troops.

Most people looked upon chemical warfare as abhorrent. In a June 1943 speech, President Roosevelt himself had said that using chemicals to kill people was immoral and inhumane. The president had denied Chemical Warfare Service officials their request to change the service's name to the Chemical Corps because of the permanence the name change suggested. And yet here was the interesting news for the Chemical Service. When German nerve gas entered into the world of chemical warfare, it brought with it the assurance of a U.S. chemical warfare program in peacetime. According to chemical weapons expert Jonathan B. Tucker, "In 1945, in the aftermath of World War II, the U.S. Army Chemical Warfare Service decided to focus its research and development efforts on the German nerve agents, the technological challenges of which promised to ensure the organization's survival through the period of postwar demobilization and declining military budgets." Within several months of the German surrender, 530 tons of tabun nerve agent were shipped to the United States and used in Top Secret field tests.

Requests to bring German chemists to the United States for weapons work quickly followed. But, as had been the case with the V-2 rocket scientists, the notion of issuing visas to Hitler's chemists was met with hostility inside the State Department. When the chief of the State Department's Passport Division, Howard K. Travers, learned about this idea, he sent his colleagues an internal memo stating, "We should do everything we consistently can to prevent German chemists and others from entering this country."

In Germany, Alsos scientific director Samuel Goudsmit had been tracking Hitler's chemists ever since the Allies crossed the Rhine. Likewise, the CIOS chemical weapons team, led by Lieutenant Colonel Philip R. Tarr of the U.S. Chemical Warfare Service and his British counterpart Major Edmund Tilley, were continuing their relentless pursuit. When Alsos located the chemist Richard Kuhn at the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute for Medical Research in Heidelberg, they paid him a visit. Kuhn had once been an internationally revered organic chemist, but rumor had it that he had become an ardent Nazi during the war. Kuhn won the Nobel Prize in Chemistry in 1938 but turned down accepting the award at the request of Hitler, who called it a Jewish prize. Here now to interview Richard Kuhn, Samuel Goudsmit had with him two American chemists, Louis Fieser of Harvard and Carl Baumann of the University of Wisconsin. Both men had actually worked with Kuhn in his laboratory before the war. After a cordial exchange of greetings, the interrogation began. Alsos sought information regarding the Third Reich's nerve agent program. What did Herr Kuhn know?

Kuhn, with his mop of straight reddish-brown hair, cunning smile, and schoolboy looks, swore that he had no connection whatsoever with Reich military research. He told his former colleagues that he was a pure scientist, an academic who spent the war working on the chemistry of modern drugs.

Samuel Goudsmit had his doubts. “Richard Kuhn’s record did not seem too clean to me,” Goudsmit recalled after the war. “As president of the German Chemical Society he had followed the Nazi cult and rites quite faithfully. He never failed to give the Hitler salute when starting his classes and to shout ‘Siegheil’ like a true Nazi leader,” Goudsmit recalled. But the Alsos leader did not have enough evidence to have Kuhn arrested, so he put him under surveillance instead.

Elsewhere in Germany, CIOS chemical weapons investigators Colonel Tarr and Major Tilley had been rounding up German chemists and sending them to prisoner-of-war facilities near where the individual arrests had taken place. Starting on June 1, 1945, these chemists would now be sent to a single location—a Top Secret interrogation facility outside Frankfurt. SHAEF was moving its headquarters from Versailles to Frankfurt and was to be dissolved in mid-July. The new organization in charge of all affairs, including scientific exploitation, was the Office of Military Government for Germany (OMGUS), whose commander was Eisenhower’s deputy General Lucius D. Clay. The Allies were also reorganizing the way in which scientific intelligence was going to be collected moving forward. CIOS was transitioning into American and British components: FIAT (Field Information Agency, Technical) and BIOS (British Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee). CIOS teams would remain active while they completed open investigations.

The structure that housed this new interrogation center was none other than Schloss Kransberg, or Kransberg Castle, Hermann Göring’s former Luftwaffe headquarters and the place where Albert Speer and his aide spent the night the last New Year’s Eve of the war. The Allies gave it the code-name Dustbin. This medieval structure built high in the Taunus Mountains had grand rooms, hardwood floors, beautiful stone fireplaces, and shiny chandeliers. These were hardly gulag-type quarters. In terms of security classification, Dustbin was top-tier. The facility was the second-most classified interrogation center after Ashcan. Dustbin was self-contained inside its centuries-old stone walls, and, as it went at Ashcan, the prisoners here were free to roam the grounds and chat among themselves. Karl Brandt, Hitler’s doctor, organized morning gymnastics classes in the garden. Others played chess. Industrialists held lectures in the large banquet hall that Göring had once used as a casino. Speer took walks in the castle’s apple orchard, almost always alone by choice. Whereas Ashcan housed the

Nazi high command, Dustbin had many Nazi scientists, doctors, and industrialists under guard. This included more than twenty chemists with IG Farben and at least six members of its board.

Throughout the early summer of 1945, several key players in Farben's tabun gas program were still at large. For Major Tilley, the chronology regarding how Farben first began producing nerve gas and how it transformed into wide-scale production remained a mystery until a Farben chemist named Dr. Gerhard Schrader was captured and brought to Dustbin. Schrader was the man who created the nerve agent that had been found at Raubkammer, the Robbers' Lair. The information Schrader had was among the most sought-after classified military intelligence in the world. Tilley prepared for intense stonewalling from the Farben chemist. Instead Dr. Schrader spoke freely, offering up everything he knew, beginning with tabun's startling discovery in the fall of 1936.

Dr. Schrader had been working at an insecticide lab for IG Farben in Leverkusen, north of Cologne, for several years. By the fall of 1936, he had an important job on his hands. Weevils and leaf lice were destroying grain across Germany, and Schrader was tasked with creating a synthetic pesticide that could eradicate these tiny pests. The government had been spending thirty million reichsmarks a year on pesticides made by Farben as well as other companies. IG Farben wanted to develop an insect killer that could save money for the Reich and earn the company a monopoly on pesticides.

Synthesizing organic, carbon-based compounds was trial-and-error work, Dr. Schrader told Major Tilley. It was labor-intensive and dangerous. Schrader, a family man, took excellent precautions against exposure, always working under a fume hood. Even trace amounts of the chemicals he was using had cumulative, potentially lethal effects. Schrader suffered from frequent headaches and sometimes felt short of breath. One night, while driving home after working on a new product, Schrader could barely see the road in front of him. When he pulled over to examine his eyes in the mirror, he saw that his pupils had constricted to the size of a pinhead. Over the next several days his vision grew worse. He developed a throbbing pressure in his larynx. Finally, Schrader checked himself into a hospital, where he was monitored for two weeks before being sent home and told to rest.

Eight days after the respite, Schrader returned to work. He had been developing a cyanide-containing fumigant, which he had given the code name Preparation 9/91. Picking up where he'd left off with his work, he prepared a small amount of his new substance, diluting it to 1 in 200,000 units to see if it would kill lice clinging to leaves. He was stunned when his new creation killed 100 percent of the lice. Schrader repeated the experiment for his colleagues. They all agreed that Preparation 9/91 was a hundred times more lethal than anything anyone at the Leverkusen lab had ever worked with before.

Dr. Schrader sent a sample of this lethal new fumigant to Farben's director of industrial hygiene, a man named Professor Eberhard Gross (not to be confused with Dr. Karl Gross, the Waffen-SS bacteriologist connected with the Geraberg discovery). Gross tested the substance on apes and was duly shocked by the results. After a healthy ape was injected with a tiny amount of Preparation 9/91—just 1/10th of a milligram per kilo of body weight—the ape died in less than an hour. Next, Gross tested the substance on an ape inside an inhalation chamber. He watched this healthy ape die in sixteen minutes. Professor Gross told Dr. Schrader that his Preparation 9/91 was being sent to Berlin and that he should wait for further instruction on what action to take next.

At Dustbin, Schrader told Major Tilley that when he learned his compound could kill a healthy ape through airborne contact in minutes, he became upset. His discovery was never going to be used as an insecticide, Schrader lamented. It was simply too dangerous for any warm-blooded animal or human to come into contact with. Schrader said his goal was to save money for the Reich. With the news of how powerful Preparation 9/91 was, Schrader felt he'd failed at his job. He got back to work, searching for a fumigant better suited for the task of killing weevils and leaf lice.

Meanwhile, Professor Gross brought the substance to his superiors. Starting in 1935, a Reich ordinance required all new discoveries with potential military application to be reported to the War Office. The Reich's Chemical Weapons Department began to evaluate Schrader's Preparation 9/91 for its potential use in chemical warfare. In May 1937 Schrader was invited to Berlin to demonstrate how he'd synthesized Preparation 9/91. "Everyone was astounded," Schrader told Tilley. This was the most promising chemical killer since the Germans invented mustard gas. Preparation 9/91 was classified Top Secret and given a code name: tabun gas. It came from the English word “taboo,” something prohibited or forbidden.

Dr. Schrader was told to produce one kilogram for the German army, which would take over tabun production on a massive scale. Schrader got a bonus of 50,000 reichsmarks (the average German worker during this time period earned 3,100 reichsmarks a year) and was told to get back to work. Farben still needed him to develop a lice-killing insecticide.

With their new nerve agent tabun, Farben executives saw all kinds of business opportunities. Karl Krauch, the head of Farben’s board of directors, began working with Hermann Göring on a longer-range plan to arm Germany with chemical weapons, ones that could eventually be dropped on the enemy from airplanes. In his report to Göring, Krauch called tabun “the weapon of superior intelligence and superior scientific-technological thinking.” The beauty in the nerve agent, Krauch told Göring, was that it could be “used against the enemy’s hinterland.” Göring agreed, adding that what he liked most about chemical weapons was that they terrified people. He responded to Krauch in writing, noting that the deadly effects of nerve agents like tabun gas could wreak “psychological havoc on civilian populations, driving them crazy with fear.”

On August 22, 1938, Göring named Karl Krauch his Plenipotentiary for Special Questions of Chemical Production. Farben was now positioned to build the Reich’s chemical weapons industry from the ground up. The Treaty of Versailles had forced Germany to destroy all its chemical weapons factories after World War I, which meant factories had to be secretly built. This was an enormous undertaking, now an official part of the Nazis’ secret Four Year Plan, and through Krauch IG Farben was made privy to the Reich’s war plan before war was declared.

At the Dustbin interrogation center, Major Tilley asked Schrader about full-scale production. Based on the Allies’ discovery of thousands of tons of tabun bombs in the forests outside Raubkammer, Farben must have had an enormous secret production facility somewhere. Dr. Schrader said that he was not involved in full-scale production. That was the job of his colleague, Dr. Otto Ambros.

Major Tilley asked Schrader to tell him more about Ambros. Schrader said that most of what Ambros did was classified but that if Major Tilley wanted to know more about what he actually did for Farben, Tilley should talk to individuals who sat on Farben’s board of directors with Ambros, either Dr. Karl Krauch or Baron Georg von Schnitzler. Both men were interned here at Dustbin.

"Who is Mr. Ambros?" Major Tilley asked Baron Georg von Schnitzler, in an interview that would later be presented as evidence in a Nuremberg war crimes trial.

"He is one of our first, younger technicians," von Schnitzler said. "He was in charge of Dyhernfurt [*sic*] as well as Auschwitz and Gendorg [*sic*]."

Where was Ambros now? Tilley asked von Schnitzler. The baron told Major Tilley to talk to Karl Krauch.

From Krauch, Major Tilley learned quite a bit more about Ambros. That he had been in charge of technical development of chemical weapons production at Gendorf and at Dyhernfurth. That Gendorf produced mustard gas on an industrial scale, and that Dyhernfurth produced tabun. Krauch also revealed a new piece of evidence. Dyhernfurth produced a second nerve agent, one that was even more potent than tabun, called sarin. Sarin was an acronym pieced together from the names of four key persons involved in its development: Schrader and Ambros from IG Farben and, from the German army, two officers named Rüdiger and Linde. Krauch told Major Tilley that the Dyhernfurth plant had fallen into Russian hands.

Karl Krauch said something else that caught Major Tilley by surprise. Before coming to Dustbin, Krauch said he had been in the hospital, where he'd been paid a visit by two American officers, one of whom was Lieutenant Colonel Tarr. "Judging from conversations I had a few months ago in the hospital with members of the USSBS [Colonel Snow] and Chemical Warfare [Colonel Tarr]," Krauch explained, "the gentlemen seemed mostly interested in sarin and tabun; they asked me for construction plans and details of fabrication. As far as I understood they intended to erect similar plants in the U.S.A. I told them to apply to Dr. Ambros and his staff at Gendorf."

Major Tilley was shocked. Lieutenant Colonel Tarr was his CIOS partner, and yet Tarr had neglected to share with him the story about visiting Krauch in the hospital. This was Tilley's first indication that Tarr was running a separate mission for the U.S. Chemical Warfare Service, one that apparently had a different objective than the CIOS mission. The full, dramatic story was about to unfold.

By June 1945, Otto Ambros had been questioned by soldiers with the Third Army numerous times. For reasons that remain obscure, no one from that division had been informed of the fact that Ambros was wanted for war crimes, or that he had served as Farben's chief of chemical weapons production throughout Hitler's rule. To the Third Army he was simply the "plain chemist" in the Bavarian village of Gendorf, the smiling, well-dressed businessman who supplied American soldiers with free bars of soap.

At Dustbin, Major Tilley relayed this critical new information about Dr. Otto Ambros to his FIAT superiors, who in turn sent an urgent message to the Sixth Army Group, also in Gendorf, ordering the immediate arrest of Dr. Ambros. The Sixth Army was to transport Ambros directly to Dustbin so that Major Tilley could interrogate him. A note card was placed in Ambros's dossier. Disparate bits of information were now coming into sharp focus. "Case #21877. Dr. Otto Ambros. Rumored to have been involved in use of concentration camp personnel for testing effectiveness of new poison gases developed at Gendorf."

CROWCASS notified SHAEF, insisting that Dr. Ambros be arrested. As the plant manager at Farben's Buna factory at Auschwitz, Otto Ambros had been linked to atrocities including mass murder and slavery. The Sixth Army Group swung into action. But when they arrived at Ambros's home in Gendorf, arrest orders in hand, Ambros was gone.

The first assumption was that Ambros had fled on his own. This proved incorrect. He had been taken away by Lieutenant Colonel Philip Tarr. Initially, the commanding officer at Dustbin found this impossible to comprehend. It was one thing for Tarr to try to interview Ambros before any other chemical warfare experts did. That kind of rivalry had been going on ever since the various scientific intelligence teams had crossed the Rhine. But why would Tarr defy orders from SHAEF to have Ambros arrested? While soldiers with the Sixth Army stood scratching their heads in Gendorf, Tarr and Ambros were actually headed to Heidelberg in a U.S. Army jeep. Their destination was an American interrogation center that was run by army intelligence officers with the Chemical Warfare Service. For days, no one at Dustbin had any idea where Tarr and Ambros had gone.

Otto Ambros had a razor-sharp mind. He was cunning and congenial, sly like a fox. He almost always wore a grin. The American war crimes prosecutor Josiah DuBois described him as having a "devilish friendliness" about him. He also had a distracting, rabbitlike habit of sniffing at the air. Ambros was short and heavyset, with white hair and flat feet. He was a brilliant scientist who studied chemistry and agronomy under Nobel Prize winner Richard Willstätter, a Jew. As a chemist, Ambros had a mind that was capable of pushing science into realms previously unexplored. Few men were as important to IG Farben during the war as Otto Ambros had been.

IG Farben first began producing synthetic rubber in 1935, naming it Buna after its primary component, butadiene. In 1937 Farben presented commercial Buna on the world stage and won the gold medal at the International Expo in Paris. When Germany invaded Poland in September 1939, the Reich's ability to import natural rubber diminished. Demand for a synthetic alternative skyrocketed, a fact Farben was well aware of in advance of Germany's attack. Tanks needed treads, aircraft needed tires, and Farben needed to produce rubber. Hitler directed Farben to increase its Buna production further. Dr. Ambros was put in charge and saw to it that Farben opened a second and then a third Buna plant so that supply could meet demand. As the invasion of the Soviet Union was secretly conceived by the German high command, Hitler again called upon Farben's board of directors to increase its synthetic rubber production. Farben needed to construct a massive new Buna factory. Otto Ambros was put in charge of masterminding this undertaking as well. The place chosen was Auschwitz.

Once, Auschwitz was a regular town. "Ordinary people lived there, and tourists visited to see the castle, the churches, the large medieval market square, and the synagogue," write historians Debórah Dwork and Robert Jan van Pelt. In the 1930s, visitors sent postcards from the area that read "Greetings from Auschwitz." When, in the fall of 1940, Otto Ambros pored over maps of this region, called Upper Silesia, in search of a Buna factory site, he found what he was looking for. The production of synthetic rubber required four things: water, flat land, good railway connections, and an abundance of laborers. Auschwitz had all four. Three rivers met in Auschwitz, the Sola, the Vistula, and the Przemsza, with a water flow of 525,000 cubic feet per hour. The land was flat and sixty-five feet above the waterline, making it safe from floodwaters. The railway connections were sound. But most important was the labor issue. The concentration camp next door could provide an endless labor supply because the men were cheap and could be worked to death.

For Farben, the use of slave labor could take the company to levels of economic prowess previously unexplored. First, a financial deal had to be made with the SS. Ambros was instrumental in this act. For months, before the building of the Buna factory got the go-ahead, the SS and Farben haggled over deal points. Some of the paperwork survived the war. On November 8, 1940, the Reich's minister of economics wrote to Farben's board of directors, requesting that they hurry up and "settle the question regarding the site." Otto Ambros lobbied hard for Auschwitz, and in December, IG Farben sent a busload of its rubber experts and construction workers to survey the work site. A Farben employee named Erich Santo was assigned to serve as Otto Ambros's construction foreman.

"The concentration camp already existing with approximately 7000 prisoners is to be expanded," Santo noted in his official company report. For Ambros, Farben's arrangement with the SS regarding slave laborers remained vague; Ambros sought clarity. "It is therefore necessary to open negotiations with the Reich Leader SS [Himmler] as soon as possible in order to discuss necessary measures with him," Ambros wrote in his official company report. The two men had a decades-old relationship; Heinrich Himmler and Otto Ambros had known one another since grade school. Ambros could make Himmler see eye-to-eye with him on the benefits that Auschwitz offered to both Farben and the SS.

In fact, the SS and IG Farben needed one another. Himmler wanted Farben's resources at Auschwitz and was eager to make the deal to supply the slaves, so SS officers hosted a dinner party for Farben's rubber and construction experts at the Auschwitz concentration camp, inside an SS banquet hall there. During the festivities, the remaining issues were finally agreed upon. Farben would pay the SS three reichsmarks a day for each laborer they supplied, which would go into the SS treasury, not to the slaves. "On the occasion of a dinner party given for us by the management of the concentration camp, we furthermore determined all the arrangements relating to the involvement of the really excellent concentration-camp operation in support of the Buna plants," Ambros wrote to his boss, Fritz Ter Meer, on April 12, 1941. "Our new friendship with the SS is proving very profitable," Ambros explained.

The SS agreed to provide Farben with one thousand slave workers immediately. That number, promised Himmler, could quickly rise to thirty thousand with demand. The relationship between Farben and the SS at Auschwitz was now cemented. Otto Ambros was the key to making the Buna factory a success. With his knowledge of synthetic rubber and his managerial experience—he also ran Farben's secret nerve gas production facilities—there was no better man than Otto Ambros for the Auschwitz job.

Major Tilley waited at Dustbin for the return of Tarr and Ambros. It was now clear to him that there was no single individual more important to Hitler's chemical weapons program than Otto Ambros had been. Ambros was in charge of chemical weapons at Gendorf and Dyhernfurth, and he was the manager of the Buna factory at Auschwitz. From interviewing various Farben chemists held at Dustbin, Tilley had also learned that the gas used to murder millions of people at Auschwitz and other concentration camps, Zyklon B, was a Farben product. Farben owned the patent on Zyklon B, and it was sold to the Reich by an IG Farben company. In one of these interviews, Tilley asked IG Farben board member Baron Georg von Schnitzler if Otto Ambros knew that Farben chemicals were being used to murder people.

"You said yesterday that a [Farben employee] 'alluded' to you that the poisonous gasses [*sic*] and the chemicals manufactured by IG Farben were being used for the murder of human beings held in concentration camps," Major Tilley reminded von Schnitzler in their interview.

"So I understood him," von Schnitzler replied.

"Didn't you question those employees of yours further in regard to the use of these gases?"

"They said they knew it was being used for this purpose," von Schnitzler said.

"What did you do when he told you that IG chemicals were being used to kill, to murder people held in concentration camps?" Major Tilley asked.

"I was horrified," said von Schnitzler.

"Did you do anything about it?"

"I kept it for [*sic*] me because it was too terrible," von Schnitzler confessed. "I asked [the Farben employee] is it known to you and Ambros and other directors in Auschwitz that the gases and chemicals are being used to murder people?"

“What did he say?” asked Major Tilley.

“Yes; it is known to all the IG directors in Auschwitz,” von Schnitzler said.

For Lieutenant Colonel Philip R. Tarr, there was a mission at hand. Enemy Equipment Intelligence Service Team Number One, which he served on, needed information that only Dr. Otto Ambros had. Specifically, the team needed blueprints for equipment necessary for producing tabun nerve gas.

When Tarr and Ambros arrived in Heidelberg, the U.S. Chemical Warfare Service had another IG Farben chemist in custody whom they wanted Ambros to work with on a classified job. The man is referred to in documents only as Herr Stumpfi. Ambros and Stumpfi were told to drive to a special metals firm located in Hanau, where they were to locate “30 or 40 drawings of silver-lined equipment.” The Chemical Warfare Service trusted Ambros to such a degree that they sent him and Stumpfi on this mission without an escort.

Manufacturing tabun gas was a precise and clandestine process. The United States desperately wanted to reproduce it, but attempting to do so without Farben’s proprietary formula and its secret equipment was a potential death sentence for any chemists involved. Farben had spent millions of reichsmarks on research and development. Hundreds of concentration camp workers had died in this trial-and-error process. When the U.S. Chemical Warfare Service learned that the silver-lined equipment used to manufacture tabun gas on a large scale had been outsourced from a special metals firm called Heraus, they coveted those blueprints and plans. Dr. Ambros and Herr Stumpfi were to go to this engineering firm to locate these drawings and blueprints and bring them back to Heidelberg. The Chemical Warfare Service agents could not conduct this mission on their own because they had no idea what equipment to look for.

The two Farben chemists, Ambros and Stumpfi, set off on their secret assignment. “When they arrived at the factory in Hanau, personnel of a [U.S.] CIC [Counter Intelligence Corps] group with headquarters at that time in Hanau, arrested them,” read a secret report. “When they explained their mission the CIC personnel concerned confirmed the German engineers’ statement by communication with Heidelberg and the two Germans were released.” Ambros and Stumpfi drove away. “The CIC personnel, concerned [after] having learned of the drawings through the two German engineers, then seized the drawings and took them to their own headquarters," read a classified Army report. The Chemical Warfare Service never obtained the drawings they were looking for. But at least Tarr had Dr. Ambros under his control, or so he believed.

Instead, somewhere between Ambros's release from the Heraus engineering firm in Hanau and his return to Heidelberg, he was able to communicate to his "network of spies and informants in Gendorf." From those sources, Ambros learned that soldiers with the U.S. Sixth Army had an order to arrest him. So instead of returning to Tarr's custody, Ambros drove to a fancy guesthouse that IG Farben maintained outside Heidelberg called Villa Kohlhof, where a staff of Farben employees tended to his every need.

CIOS and FIAT officials from Dustbin finally made contact with Tarr and ordered him to return with Ambros to the interrogation facility immediately. But Tarr was no longer in control of Ambros. Major Tilley went looking for Ambros himself and found Hitler's chemist residing at Villa Kohlhof. Ambros told Major Tilley that he would agree to continue cooperating with the U.S. Chemical Warfare Service and the various Allied agencies that sought information from him, but only on one condition: that Tilley "secure the release of all chemical warfare personnel already detained at Dustbin." This was a preposterous request.

Tilley's superior, Major P. M. Wilson of FIAT's Enemy Personnel Exploitation Section, attempted to take control of the situation, ordering Ambros brought to Dustbin immediately. This was not a matter of cooperation, Wilson said. There were orders to arrest the man. Lieutenant Colonel Tarr intervened on Ambros's behalf. He lobbied the British Ministry of Supply (the agency responsible for British chemical warfare issues) for help getting Ambros's Dustbin colleagues released. To Tarr, extracting Ambros's esoteric knowledge outweighed the need to hold him accountable for his crimes. But the British also flatly refused to help Tarr. The matter stalled.

Lieutenant Colonel Tarr flew to Paris. That night, a telegram arrived at Dustbin, sent from Paris and purporting to be from the British Ministry of Supply. The telegram ordered the release of all Farben chemical warfare scientists at Dustbin, and was signed by a British Ministry of Supply colonel named J. T. M. Childs. Officers at Dustbin suspected that something was amiss and contacted Colonel Childs about his outrageous request. Colonel Childs swore he had neither written the memo nor signed it and accused Lieutenant Colonel Tarr of forgery.

FIAT enhanced their efforts to have Dr. Ambros arrested in Heidelberg. The efforts failed. Ambros was able to evade capture by fleeing into the safety of the French zone. Double-crossing Lieutenant Colonel Tarr, Otto Ambros struck a deal with French chemical weapons experts. In exchange for information, he was given a job as plant manager at Farben's chemical factory in Ludwigshafen.

When FIAT officers at Dustbin learned what had happened, they were outraged. Ambros's escape had been entirely preventable. "It is evident that he was not kept in custody or under house arrest," noted Captain R. E. F. Edelsten, a British officer with the Ministry of Supply. Major P. M. Wilson saw the situation in much darker terms. Lieutenant Colonel Tarr had "taken steps to assist [Ambros] to evade arrest," he wrote in a scathing report. Wilson was appalled by "the friendly treatment being given to this man who is suspected of war criminality." But these were just words. Ambros was now a free man, living and working in the French zone.

The relationship among Tarr, Ambros, and the U.S. Chemical Warfare Service was far from over. It was only a matter of time before an American chemical company would learn of the army's interest in a whole new field of chemical weapons. An American chemist, Dr. Wilhelm Hirschkind, was in Germany at this same time. Dr. Hirschkind was conducting a survey of the German chemical industry for the U.S. Chemical Warfare Service while on temporary leave from the Dow Chemical Company. Dr. Hirschkind had spent several months inspecting IG Farben plants in the U.S. and British zones and now he was in Heidelberg, hoping to meet Ambros. Lieutenant Colonel Tarr reached out to Colonel Weiss, the French commander in charge of IG Farben's chemical plant in Ludwigshafen, and a meeting was arranged.

On July 28, 1945, Dr. Hirschkind met with Dr. Ambros and Lieutenant Colonel Tarr in Heidelberg. Ambros brought his wartime deputy with him to the meeting, the Farben chemist Jürgen von Klenck. It was von Klenck who, in the final months of the war, had helped Ambros destroy evidence, hide documents, and disguise the Farben factory in Gendorf so that it appeared to produce soap, not chemical weapons. Jürgen von Klenck was initially detained at Dustbin but later released. The Heidelberg meetings lasted several days. When Dr. Wilhelm Hirschkind left, he had these words for Ambros: “I would look forward after the conclusion of the peace treaty [to] continuing our relations [in my position] as a representative of Dow.”

Only later did FIAT interrogators learn about this meeting. Major Tilley’s suspicions were now confirmed. A group inside the U.S. Chemical Warfare Service, including his former partner, Lieutenant Colonel Tarr, did indeed have an ulterior motive that ran counter to the motives of CIOS, FIAT, and the United Nations War Crimes Commission. Tilley’s superior at Dustbin, Major Wilson, confirmed this dark and disturbing truth in a classified military intelligence report on the Ambros affair. “It is believed that the conflict between FIAT… and Lt-Col Tarr was due to the latter’s wish to use Ambros for industrial chemical purposes” back in the United States.

All documents regarding the Ambros affair would remain classified for the next forty years, until August of 1985. That an officer of the U.S. Chemical Warfare Service, Lieutenant Colonel Tarr, had sheltered a wanted war criminal from capture in the aftermath of the German surrender was damning. That this officer was also participating in meetings with the fugitive and a representative from the Dow Chemical Company was scandalous.

In 1945, the Chemical Warfare Service was also in charge of the U.S. biological weapons program, the existence of which remained secret from the American public. The program was robust; if the atomic bomb failed to end the war in Japan, there were plans in motion to wage biological warfare against Japanese crops. After the fall of the Reich, the staff of the Chemical Warfare Service began interrogating Hitler’s biological weapons makers, many of whom were interned at Dustbin. The Chemical Warfare Service saw enormous potential in making the Nazis’ biological weapons program its own and sought any scientific intelligence it could get. The man most wanted in this effort was Hitler’s top biological weapons expert, Dr. Kurt Blome.

On June 29, 1945, Blome was sent to Dustbin. The officers assigned to interrogate him were Bill Cromartie and J. M. Barnes of Operation Alsos. Each man was uniquely familiar with Blome’s background. Cromartie had been in Dr. Eugen Haagen’s apartment in Strasbourg in November 1944 when he and Alsos scientific director Samuel Goudsmit made the awful discovery that the Reich had been experimenting on people during the war (Blome was named in the Haagen files). And it was Cromartie and Barnes who led the investigation of the Geraberg facility, the abandoned, curious-looking research outpost hidden in the Thuringian Forest. Both Cromartie and Barnes had concluded that Geraberg had been a laboratory for Reich biological weapons research and that Dr. Blome was in charge.

During his initial interview at Dustbin, Blome refused to cooperate. “When he was first interrogated, he was very evasive,” Cromartie and Barnes wrote. But a few days later, when interrogated in more detail, Blome’s “attitude changed completely and he seemed anxious to give a full account not only [of] what he actually did but what he had in mind for future work.” Cromartie and Barnes were unsure if they should be enthused by Blome’s seeming change of heart or suspicious of it. Blome had been observed in the Dustbin eating hall conversing at length with Dr. Heinrich Kliewe, the Reich’s counterintelligence agent for bacterial warfare concerns. Perhaps the two men were concocting a misinformation scheme.

During the war, Dr. Kliewe’s job had been to monitor bioweapons progress being made by Germany’s enemies, most notably Russia. “Kliewe claims that he himself did all the evaluating of the reports received and determined what course of action his department should thenceforth follow,” investigators wrote in Kliewe’s Dustbin dossier. Kliewe told Blome that he would likely be taken to Heidelberg for a lengthy interrogation with Alsos agents, as Kliewe had been.

If Cromartie and Barnes were surprised by Blome’s sudden willingness to talk, they were also aware that most of what he told them could not be independently verified. “It is quite impossible to check many of his statements and what follows is an account of what he related,” read a note in Blome’s Dustbin dossier. What Blome recounted was a dark tale of plans for biological warfare spearheaded by Heinrich Himmler.

Himmler had a layman’s fascination with biological warfare. A former chicken farmer, the Reichsführer-SS had studied agriculture in school. According to Blome, it was Himmler who was the primary motivator behind the Reich’s bioweapons program. Hitler, Blome said, did not approve of biological warfare and was kept in the dark as to specific plans. Himmler’s area of greatest fascination, said Blome, was bubonic plague.

On April 30, 1943, Göring had created the cancer research post that was to be held by Blome. Over the next nineteen months, Blome explained, he met with Himmler five times.

At their first meeting, which occurred in the summer of 1943—Blome recalled it as being July or August—Himmler ordered Blome to study various dissemination methods of plague bacteria for offensive warfare. According to Blome, he shared with Himmler his fears regarding the dangerous boomerang effect a plague bomb would most likely have on Germany. Himmler told Blome that in that case, he should get to work immediately to produce a vaccine to prevent such a thing. To expedite vaccine research, Blome said, Himmler ordered him "to use human beings."

Himmler offered Blome a medical block at a concentration camp like Dachau where he could complete this work. Blome said he told Himmler he was aware of "strong objections in certain circles" to using humans in experimental vaccine trials. Himmler told Blome that experimenting on humans was necessary in the war effort. To refuse was "the equivalent of treason."

Very well, said Blome. He considered himself a loyal Nazi, and it was his intention to help Germany win the war. "History gives us examples of human disease affecting the outcome of wars," Blome told his Alsos interrogators, taking a moment to lecture them on history. "We know [that] from antiquity up till the time of [the] Napoleonic wars, victories and defeats were often determined by epidemics and starvation," Blome said. Spreading an infectious disease could bring about the demise of a marauding army, and Blome said that the failure of Napoleon's Russian campaign was "due in great part to the infection of his horses with Glanders," a highly contagious bacterial disease. History aside, Blome said he counseled Himmler on the fact that a concentration camp was a terrible place to experiment with bubonic plague because the population was too dense.

Blome then told Himmler that if he were to experiment with plague bacterium, he would need his own institute, an isolated facility far removed from population centers. Himmler and Blome agreed that Poland would be a good place, and they settled on Nesselstedt, a small town outside the former Poznań University (by then operated by the Reich). Blome's research institute was to be called the Bacteriological Institute at Nesselstedt.

In the interim, in Berlin, Blome oversaw a field test using rats, history's traditional carrier of bubonic plague. A debate had been taking place inside the Hygiene Institute of the Waffen-SS as to whether or not rats were the best plague carriers. Himmler's idea was "to take infected rats on to U-boats and release them near the enemy shores so they could swim to land." Blome doubted that rats could swim great distances. He believed they could swim only for as long as the air in their fur kept them afloat. To prove his point, Blome arranged for a test on a Berlin lake. "About thirty rats were taken out in a police boat and released at different distances from the shore to swim both with and against the wind." Blome said that the rats were dumber than he thought—that when placed in the water, "they had no idea where the shore was and swam around in different directions." A few of them drowned in ten minutes. The longest any of the rats swam for was thirty minutes. Of those released a little over a half-mile from shore, only a third reached land. As far as Blome was concerned, Himmler's U-boat dispersal idea was not practical.

Meeting Number Two took place a month or two later, in September or October 1943, and was largely a repetition of the first, at least according to Blome. There was one significant development, however. Himmler asked Blome if he needed an assistant. Blome agreed that a bacteriologist would be helpful. Himmler assigned Dr. Karl Gross, formerly a staff member at the Waffen-SS Hygiene Institute.

The two doctors did not get along. Blome became convinced that Dr. Gross had been sent by Himmler to spy on him. He told his interrogators that he was under great pressure to work faster. Himmler repeatedly "reiterated that the methods of waging BW [biological warfare] must be studied in order to understand the defense against it." What this meant was that Himmler wanted Blome to infect human test subjects with plague to see what would happen to them.

The third meeting took place four or five months later, in February 1944. By this time, Blome said, the facility at Nesselstedt had been built. There was ample staff housing, a well-equipped laboratory, and an animal farm. The block for experimental work included a climate room, a cold room, disinfectant facilities, and rooms for "clean" and "dirty" experiments. There was an isolation hospital for sixteen people in the event that workers on Blome's staff contracted the disease. Work progressed slowly, Blome said, and Himmler became enraged. Rumors of an Allied invasion of the European continent had become a constant thorn in the side of the Reichsführer-SS. Why wasn't the Reich's bioweapons program more advanced, Himmler demanded to know. He asked Blome if it was possible to "do something now—for example disseminate influenza—that would delay the heralded Anglo-American invasion in the West." According to Blome, he told Himmler "it was impossible to do anything on these lines." Himmler proposed another idea: How about disseminating a virulent strain of hoof-and-mouth disease? Or tularemia, also called rabbit fever, which affected man in a manner similar to plague? Blome told Himmler that these were dangerous ideas, as any outbreak would surely affect Germany's troops. The Reich needed a massive stockpile of vaccinations before it could feasibly launch a biological attack.

Himmler stretched his thinking to target the Allies on their own soil. How about spreading cattle plague, also called rinderpest, in America or England? Himmler told Blome that infecting the enemy's food supply would have a sinister effect on enemy troops. Blome agreed and said he would investigate what it would take to start a plague epidemic among the enemies' cows. There was, however, a problem, Blome explained. An international agreement prohibited stocks of the rinderpest virus to be stored anywhere in Europe. Strains of cattle plague were available only in the third world.

Himmler said that he would get the cattle plague himself. He sent Dr. Erich Traub, a veterinarian from the Reich's State Research Institute, located on the island of Riems, to Turkey. There, Dr. Traub acquired a strain of the lethal rinderpest virus. Under Blome's direction, trials to infect healthy cows with rinderpest began. Riems, in northern Germany in the Bay of Greifswald, was totally isolated and self-contained. It was the perfect place for these dangerous tests. The veterinary section used airplanes to spray the cattle plague virus on the island's grassy fields, where cows grazed. Blome said he didn't know much more about the program or its results—only that Dr. Traub, second in command at the research facility, was taken by the Russians when the Red Army captured Riems, in April 1945.

Blome's fourth meeting with Himmler took place in April or May of 1944. Himmler had become paranoid by now, Blome said. He believed that the Allies were plotting a biological weapons attack against the Reich. "Blome was summoned by telephone to see Himmler urgently. The latter had received a number of curious reports. Grass had come floating out of the sky over some part of Austria and a cow that had eaten some of it had died.” Blome told Himmler he’d look into it. There were additional strange events, Himmler confided to Blome. “Some small balloons had been found near Salzberg [*sic*] and Berchtesgaden” not far from Hitler’s mountain residence, the Berghof. And potato beetles had been dropped in Normandy. Blome promised to study each incident.

Blome told Himmler he had a pressing issue of his own. Given the progress of the Red Army, he thought it was wise to move his plague research institute at Posen (Poznań) somewhere inside Germany. The place Blome suggested was Geraberg, in the Thuringian forest, at the edge of the Harz Mountains. Himmler said that the Russians would never reach Posen. By early fall, he had changed his mind. In October a new biological weapons research facility was being built, concealed inside a pine forest in the village of Geraberg.

In the meantime, Blome told his interrogators, work on vaccines was moving forward—not at either of his research institutes but inside the army instead. Göring had moved epidemic control into the jurisdiction of a major general named Dr. Walter Schreiber, surgeon general of the Reich. Blome held the position of deputy surgeon general of the Reich, but the two men had equal positions under Göring, Blome explained. He, Blome, was in charge of creating the biological weapons; Dr. Schreiber was in charge of protecting Germans against biological weapons, should they be used—Major General Dr. Schreiber specialized in epidemic control. The sword and the shield.

Alsos was very interested in learning about these vaccines. Blome said that Major General Dr. Schreiber was the person to talk to about that. Where could he be found? Blome said Schreiber had last been seen in Berlin. Word was he had surrendered to the Red Army and was their prisoner now.

Blome said something else that alarmed interrogators. During the war, Dr. Kliewe told Blome that it was the Russians who had the single most extensive biological weapons program in the world—a program more advanced even than that of the Japanese. Further, the Russians had managed to capture everything from Dr. Traub’s laboratory on Riems, including Dr. Traub’s Turkish strain of cattle plague. Then, in the winter of 1945, the Russians had captured Blome’s bacteriological institute at Nesselstedt, outside Posen. This meant the Russians now had the Reich’s most advanced biological weapons research and development facility, its steam chambers, incubators, refrigerators, and deep-freeze apparatus. They also had all of the pathogens—viral and bacterial—that Blome had been working with when he had fled west.

Alsos had two key pieces of information now: The Russians had the laboratory from Posen and they had the doctor in charge of vaccines, Major General Dr. Walter Schreiber. They had both the science and the scientist.

CHAPTER TEN

Hired or Hanged

The future of the scientists at Dustbin was obscure. Would they be hired by the U.S. government for future work, or would they be prosecuted by the Allies for war crimes? At Ashcan the future facing the Nazi high command was almost certainly grim, although there was much work to do. War crimes prosecutors faced a monumental task. They had to build criminal cases from scratch, a conundrum described by Nuremberg trials prosecutor General Telford Taylor after the war. “Our task was to prepare to prosecute the leading Nazis on [specific] criminal charges.… The first question a prosecuting attorney asks in such a situation is, ‘Where’s the evidence?’ The blunt fact was that, despite what ‘everybody knew’ about the Nazi leaders, virtually no judicially admissible evidence was at hand.” For evidence, prosecutors like Telford Taylor were relying on interrogators like John Dolibois to glean facts from the Nazis interned at Ashcan.

Frustration was mounting at Ashcan. Prisoners were conspiring to withhold information. “They were whispering rather important secrets to each other,” Ashcan’s commander, Colonel Burton Andrus, recalled, “determined not to help on the question of hidden loot, the whereabouts of people like Martin Bormann, and the guilt for war atrocities.” Colonel Andrus racked his brain for ideas. How to make guilty men talk? “To jog the prisoners’ memories back to the reality of their grave situation we decided to show them atrocity films taken at Buchenwald.”

Colonel Andrus assembled his fifty-two Nazi prisoners in one room. Before the film began, he addressed them with the following words: “You know about these things and I have no doubt many of you participated actively in them. We are showing them to you not to inform you of what you already know, but to impress on you the fact that we know of it, too.”

The lights went down and the first frames of the documentary footage flickered across the screen. Colonel Andrus watched his prisoners. Hans Frank, governor general of occupied Poland, the lawyer and PhD largely responsible for the murder of the Jewish population there, put a handkerchief to his mouth and gagged. Joachim von Ribbentrop, the former champagne salesman who became Hitler's foreign minister and pressured foreign states to allow the deportation of Jews in their territories to extermination camps in the east, got up from his chair and walked out of the room. Albert Kesselring, commander of the Luftwaffe invasions into Poland, France, and the Soviet Union, who also led the Battle of Britain, turned white. Hermann Göring sighed as if bored. Julius Streicher, the schoolteacher who became Hitler's mouthpiece and encouraged readers to exterminate the Jews, sat on his chair "clasping and unclasping his hands." When the film was over, no one said a word. A little while later, Walter Funk, the fifty-five-year-old former minister of the war economy and president of the Reichsbank, asked to see Colonel Andrus alone.

Small, overweight, and suffering from venereal disease, this once supremely powerful Nazi Party official twisted his fingers anxiously, while telling Colonel Andrus he had a confession to make. Walter Funk "looked incapable of running a filling-station, let alone a bank," Andrus recalled. Funk fidgeted nervously. "I have something to tell you, sir," Andrus recalled Funk saying. "I have been a bad man, Colonel, and I want to tell about it." Funk started to cry. Then he told Colonel Andrus that it was he who gave the order that all gold in every prisoner's mouth—in every concentration camp across the Reich—be removed and collected for the Reichsbank's reserves. Funk confessed that at first he'd "had [the gold] knocked out of their mouths while they were alive, but [realized] if they were dead there was far less bother." Andrus was appalled. "I had never believed before that such a horrific order as the one Funk was confessing to had ever been given," Andrus said.

Colonel Andrus told Funk to leave. In his memoir, Andrus wondered what Walter Funk had hoped to gain from his confession; he never got his answer. Whatever motivated Funk that day at Ashcan eventually disappeared. Months later, at Nuremberg, Funk denied that the conversation with Colonel Andrus had ever taken place. Instead, he swore under oath that he had never been connected with orders involving acquiring gold from

Jews. “If it was done,” declared Funk, “it has been kept from me up till now.”

Save Funk’s tearful confession, the screening of the Buchenwald atrocity film had no apparent effect on the other prisoners. The men who gagged and left the room had nothing more to say, and the rest of the Nazi high command remained tight-lipped about their crimes. Colonel Andrus grew increasingly frustrated. The prisoners were allowed to sit outside in the Palace Hotel garden, in small groups out of earshot of prison guards. There, Andrus watched Hitler’s closest confidants prattle on among themselves.

“They could sit out in the garden in the spring sunshine and chatter to their hearts’ content,” recalled Andrus. “Undoubtedly they compared notes on the interrogation[s] which went on in sixteen booths every day.” If only G-2 had wired the Ashcan garden for sound. Colonel Andrus got an idea. He made a list of the four men who he believed were the biggest “backstabbers and gossips” in the group. “Those with outspoken views about their fellow Nazis—men ready to blame each other for their own crimes.” Göring, “verbose,” von Papen, “malicious,” Kesselring, “vain,” and Admiral Horthy, “the Prince of Austria who believed he was better than everyone else,” were chosen. With permission from headquarters, Andrus devised an elaborate ruse intended to extract information from the Nazi prisoners.

The four men were told that they were being handed over to the British for interrogation; that soon they would be traveling to a villa in Germany to be questioned there. In reality, Army Intelligence, G-2, had rented a house located three and a half miles from Ashcan. It was a traditional German-style half-timber house with a high wall running around its perimeter. U.S. Army signal intelligence engineers spent several days running hundreds of yards of wires through the house, under floorboards, behind walls, inside furniture cushions and lighting fixtures. In a final touch, they wired the garden for sound. The engineers burrowed through the backyard garden and attached tiny microphones to a single tree above the sitting area. All wires connected back to a recording machine capable of laying audio tracks down onto gramophone records. This was high technology in the summer of 1945.

At the Ashcan detention center, Göring, von Papen, Kesselring, and Admiral Horthy were loaded into an ambulance, a common means of transport after the war, and driven away. Black curtains had been drawn across the vehicle windows so the prisoners couldn’t see where they were being taken. For hours, the ambulance drove around in what Andrus called a “circuitous route,” covering fifty miles of terrain but never leaving Luxembourg. When the ambulance pulled up to the Germanic-looking house and unloaded the Nazis, Göring was thrilled.

“We are at a house I know!” boasted Göring, assuring his colleagues they had arrived in beautiful Heidelberg. “I recognize the decor on the walls,” Göring said once inside.

The bedrooms in the new quarters had fresh sheets, plush mattresses, and soft pillows. Strolling through the house, Göring pointed to a chandelier and warned his fellow Nazis to be wary of listening devices. When one of the prisoners asked if they could sit outside in the garden, a guard checked with a superior and said yes. Göring made note of a single patch of shade under a weeping willow tree and suggested it as a good spot. The men dragged four garden chairs into the shade, sat down, and began to gossip.

“Heavy, guttural voices could be heard loud and clear,” Andrus recalled. “They were being recorded onto the black gramophone disks.”

It was a brilliant start. But only a start. Soon, it began to rain. The men moved inside. There, they sat around barely saying a word. The following day, it rained again. That evening, Colonel Andrus received an order from SHAEF. The eavesdropping project was being shut down. Andrus had twenty-four hours to pack up his prisoners and leave.

This time the ambulance took the direct route back to Mondorf, just three and a half miles away. “Göring was furious,” Andrus recalled. “How could they have gotten back to the prison so quickly! They realized they’d been had.”

Back at Ashcan, things moved in a whirlwind. John Dolibois received a “Letter of Authority” on August 10, 1945, stating that CCPWE No. 32 was going to be closed down. Dolibois was to be part of the transport team now taking prisoners to new locations. For reasons Dolibois was not privy to, thirty-three of the fifty-two Ashcan internees were going to a new prisoner of war interrogation facility, this one located in the small town of Oberursel in the Taunus Mountains. Only later would Dolibois learn that many of these Nazis would be hired by the U.S. Army to write intelligence reports on work they had done during the war. Oberursel was just a few miles from the Dustbin facility at Castle Kransberg. The transport would be a convoy of six ambulances, a command car, a jeep, a trailer, and a truck carrying the prisoners' suitcases. Dolibois was assigned to ride in the first ambulance. His prisoner list included Admiral Karl Dönitz, Field Marshal Albert Kesselring, General Walter Warlimont, cabinet minister Schwerin von Krosigk, OKW Foreign Office head Admiral Leopold Bürkner, and Admiral Gerhard Wagner.

The trip from Mondorf to Oberursel was a journey through ruined countryside. Crossing from Luxembourg into Germany, Dolibois watched the chatter among the Nazis in his backseat come to a "halting end" as they saw the destruction and despair everywhere. "This was their first look at the condition of their country" since the war, Dolibois explained. From churches to administrative buildings to shops, entire villages had been reduced to rubble. In three months of peace there were no resources to clean anything up. People were starving and trying to survive. "The destruction that was the aftermath of Hitler's determination to 'fight to the last man,' " said Dolibois.

The convoy arrived in Oberursel. Like many other army interrogation facilities across the American zone in postwar Germany, the one in Oberursel had been an important Third Reich military post during the war. Oberursel had a particularly storied past. This Dulag Luft, or Durchgangslager (terms for air force prisoner of war camp, or transit camp), had functioned as the sole interrogation and evaluation center for the Luftwaffe. It was here that Nazi interrogators had questioned every Allied pilot who had been shot down during the war. The Luftwaffe's lead interrogator, Hanns Scharff, kept a diary. "Every enemy aviator who is captured… will be brought to this place for questioning. It makes no difference whether he is taken prisoner at the front lines or whether he comes dangling down from the sky in the most remote location… he comes to Oberursel," wrote Scharff.

Physically, things had not changed much since Oberursel had changed hands. The interrogation facility centered around a large half-timber "mountain house" that served as an officers' club. Nearby there were fourteen buildings for officer housing. The prisoners' barracks, a large U-shaped building, contained 150 solitary jail cells. This building had been called "The Cooler" during the war, and it was the place where interrogator Hanns Scharff did most of his work with captured Allied pilots. Now it was the new home for thirty-three former Ashcan internees, at least for a while.

Dolibois turned his charges over to the guard detail at Oberursel. His orders said to return to Luxembourg and wait for new orders. Setting out for Ashcan, he rode in the lead jeep with an enlisted man. A little less than an hour south of Frankfurt, Dolibois came upon a row of U.S. Army trucks stopped along the side of the road. One of the soldiers stepped into the road and signaled for Dolibois's convoy to stop. John Dolibois climbed out of his jeep. He became overwhelmed by a horrific stench, "sickeningly sweet, nauseating," he later recalled. He heard retching. Several of the men in his convoy had gotten out of their vehicles and were now throwing up along the side of the road.

"What is that horrible smell?" Dolibois asked a soldier behind the wheel of one of the stalled vehicles. "What in God's name are you hauling?"

The captain climbed out of his jeep. He did not say a word but motioned for Dolibois to follow him behind one of the two-and-a-half-ton trucks. In silence, the captain untied a rope and flipped back a sheet of canvas that had obscured the cargo from view until now. Dolibois stared into the body of the truck. It took him a moment for him to realize what he was looking at: rotting corpses. "Putrefied," he recalled. "Most were naked. Some still wore the pajama-like striped pants, the concentration camp uniforms, now just rotting rags. It was the most horrible sight I had ever seen."

The army captain spoke in a flat, emotionless tone. "There are thousands of them, five truck loads," he told Dolibois. "We're hauling them from one mass grave to another. Don't ask me why." These were bodies from Dachau. Corpses found upon liberation. The army captain's convoy had come to a standstill after one of the vehicles had broken down. They'd been waiting at the roadside for an escort when Dolibois's convoy from Oberursel had arrived. The captain asked Dolibois if his group could escort them to the next military station down the road. Dolibois agreed. "I found myself leading a bizarre caravan: six empty ambulances, an empty weapons carrier, followed by five two-and-a-half-ton trucks loaded with the obscenity of the Nazi final solution," remembered Dolibois. The dead bodies were being taken to a proper burial spot on orders from the Office of Military Government, United States (OMGUS).

Back at Ashcan the world appeared different to him now. There, the rest of Hitler's inner circle remained, men "directly responsible for that ghastly transport," said Dolibois. If John Dolibois ever had a shred of doubt about the degree of barbarism and the collective guilt of the men he had spent three months interrogating at Ashcan, in that moment there was no hesitation anymore. At age ninety-three, John Dolibois says, “I still smell that foul odor of death.”

But in August 1945, there was barely any time for the young interrogator to process what he had witnessed. Back at Ashcan he fell into bed and slept hard. Come morning, John Dolibois received new orders from Colonel Andrus. There was still a group of Nazi Bonzen at Ashcan. Dolibois was to be on the team that would move them to the Nuremberg prison. Colonel Andrus had selected John Dolibois to fly with the remaining members of the Nazi high command on a transport plane.

Dawn, August 12, 1945. The sun had not yet risen in the sky. Ashcan’s last group of Nazis were escorted out of the classified interrogation facility and driven in ambulances a short distance to the airport at Luxembourg City. A C-47 transport plane idled on the tarmac, stripped down to its bare bones. Inside the aircraft, a single row of seats ran down each side. There was a honey bucket toilet and a urinal attached to a door at the back of the airplane. To Dolibois, it seemed as if Colonel Andrus was nervous. “Something was cooking,” Dolibois recalled. Security was always on the colonel’s mind. “Aha!” Dolibois realized what it was. “Kaltenbrunner!”

Ernst Kaltenbrunner was considered the most dangerous Nazi among the high command. At 6′4″, he was a giant man with a massive frame, a pockmarked face, and a huge head with seven or eight deep dueling scars running across both sides of his forehead, cheeks, and chin. He drank and smoked heavily and was missing teeth. Kaltenbrunner was described by the British journalist Rebecca West as looking like “a particularly vicious horse.” He held a doctorate in law and specialized in secret police work. He was the head of the Reich Security Main Office and chief of the security police and the security services. He was as actively involved in concentration camp crimes as any Nazi had been. According to the OSS, even Heinrich Himmler was frightened of him.

If anyone was going to “cause trouble on the flight to Nuremberg,” Dolibois explains, Colonel Andrus was worried that Ernst Kaltenbrunner might. “Special precautions needed to be taken.” Kaltenbrunner would be handcuffed to Dolibois’s left wrist. “If he starts to run or goes for the door,” Colonel Andrus told Dolibois, “shoot!” Colonel Andrus wished John

Dolibois "good luck" during the flight and said that he would see him once they landed in Nuremberg. Colonel Andrus would be traveling in a different airplane.

During the flight Kaltenbrunner did not run for the door. Instead, he wanted to talk. He told Dolibois that he desired for the young interrogator to understand that he, Kaltenbrunner, was not responsible for war crimes. "He felt the need to explain about the Jews," Dolibois recalled, with Kaltenbrunner saying, "admittedly, he hated them, but he said that he had not been involved in their treatment in concentration camps. In fact, he claimed to have remonstrated with Hitler on the treatment of the Jews." As the airplane prepared to land in Nuremberg, Kaltenbrunner said what so many Nazis repeated after the war. "I am a soldier and I only obeyed orders," he told Dolibois.

"I didn't argue with him, I just listened," Dolibois said. "Kaltenbrunner was a ruthless killer determined to save his own skin. His soft talk did not change my mind about him, but it helped pass the time." When the aircraft finally touched the ground, Dolibois felt a huge wave of relief. The prisoners were unloaded, and Colonel Andrus assumed control of them once again. Without looking back, Dolibois hurried on to the transport plane. The plane taxied down the runway and took flight. Dolibois sat alone in the empty airplane. The weeks of interrogating the Nazi high command were over. The Nazis he had just flown with would now be tried for war crimes at the Palace of Justice in Nuremberg. A majority of them would be hanged.

Back at Ashcan, when Dolibois returned to his quarters to pack his bags, he came across a strange sight. Standing by the edge of the perimeter fence, not far from where Dolibois had first pulled up to this place in an army jeep three months before, he spotted a middle-aged man, apparently a local, with his hands in his pockets and a beret on his head. The man just stood there, shouting out in the direction of the Palace Hotel. Dolibois took a moment to pause and listen so he could make out what the man was saying.

"Hallo Meier! Hallo Meier!" the man shouted, again and again. "Wie gehts in Berlin?"

It took a moment for the significance of what the man was doing to register with Dolibois. The phrase translated into English as "Hello, Meier! Hello, Meier! So, how's it going in Berlin?" The beauty of the moment dawned on him. In the early days of the war, Hermann Göring was so confident the Third Reich would win the war that he'd famously bragged to the German people, "If the British and the Americans ever bomb Berlin, my name is Meier."

The image of the middle-aged Luxembourger taunting Göring was a perfect end to this chapter in John Dolibois's life. The man was enjoying himself so much Dolibois felt no need to tell him that Göring was gone. Besides, Hermann Göring was never coming back.

In Washington, on July 6, 1945, in a classified memorandum with the subject heading "Exploitation of German Specialists in Science and Technology in the United States," the Joint Chiefs of Staff finally approved—on paper—a Nazi scientist program. President Truman was not made aware of the initiative. The governing body that had been assigned to "exercise general supervision" over the program and to "formulate general policies for procurement, utilization and control of specialists" was the Military Intelligence Division of the War Department, G-2. A five-page memo was sent out to eight agencies within the War Department outlining "principles and procedures" governing the classified program. The three most important points were that "certain German specialists… could be utilized to increase our war making capacity against Japan and aid our postwar military research," that "no known or alleged war criminals should be brought to the United States," and that "the purpose of this plan should be understood to be temporary military exploitation of the minimum number of German specialists necessary." According to this initiative, as soon as the jobs were completed "the specialists would be returned to Europe." Participants, it was noted, should be hereafter referred to as "eminent German specialists" as opposed to "German scientists," because not all the Nazis being requested for program approval had degrees in science. Included in the mix were Nazi bureaucrats, businessmen, accountants, and lawyers. The project also now had an official code name, Operation Overcast. The name Paperclip would not be used for another eight months.

Military agencies that were interested in hiring German specialists were to submit their requests to the assistant chief of staff, G-2. "Only the most compelling argument should bring a German specialist to this country," the initiative stated, and only the "chosen, rare minds whose continuing intellectual productivity we wish to use" would be approved. The British would be made aware of the program, in general terms. At some point after the first large group of scientists had arrived in the United States, a "suitable" press release would be generated by the War Department so as to "avoid possible resentment on the part of the American public."

A list of desired German scientists—"List I"—accompanied the memo. It included 115 rocket specialists. When the British learned about the U.S. Army's intentions to hire the German rocket scientists, they asked to first be allowed to conduct two rocket exploitation projects of their own. The Americans agreed and released into British custody a group of scientists, engineers, and technicians including Wernher von Braun, Walter Dornberger, and Arthur Rudolph.

The first British project was called Operation Backfire, a V-2 field test that took place on Germany's north coast, at a former Krupp naval gun range in Cuxhaven. Operation Backfire was designed to analyze technical data about the V-2 by having the Nazi rocket engineers fire four rockets, also taken piecemeal from Nordhausen, at a target in the North Sea. This would allow the British to evaluate various technical elements, from how the rocket was launched to its flight controls and fuels. Arthur Rudolph, the former Mittelwerk operations director, was considered an expert in launch techniques, and to his biographer, he later recalled a scene from Operation Backfire: "The V-2 ran on alcohol of the same chemistry as that appearing in say, Jack Daniels and Old Grandad [*sic*]. The people at the test site apparently knew that." One night, according to Rudolph, a group of British and German V-2 technicians got drunk together on the rocket fuel. A British officer came upon the group arm in arm, "apparently comrades now, and lustily singing, *Wir Fahren gegen England*, or 'We Will March Against England.' " General Dornberger was not part of the drinking and singing. The British kept him on a short leash, away from the test firing and always under a watchful eye. The British had alternative plans for Walter Dornberger. They were not interested in the knowledge Dornberger possessed. They wanted to try him for war crimes. After the test, he would not be returned to the Americans as the British had originally promised.

"The British pulled a sneaky on us," explained Major Staver, who attended Operation Backfire. The Americans were not permitted to take Dornberger back after the Operation; instead, Dornberger was declared "on loan" and was taken to England. There, he and von Braun were “interrogated for a week by the British and then kept behind barbed wire in Wimbledon for four and one-half weeks while waiting to be picked up by the Americans.” Eventually, von Braun was returned but General Dornberger was not. Instead, he was issued a brown jumpsuit with the letters “PW” for Prisoner of War stenciled on the back. Under armed guard, he was taken to the London District Cage near the Windermere Bridge for interrogation. From there, General Dornberger was transferred first to a castle in Wales and then to Special Camp XI in Island Farm, South Wales, where he was an extremely unpopular prisoner.

“Walter Dornberger was definitely the most hated man in the camp,” Sergeant Ron Williams, a prison guard, recalled. “Even his own people hated him. He never went out to the local farms to work like other prisoners.” Wherever General Dornberger went while he was at Special Camp XI, he required an escort. The British feared that other prisoners might kill him.

On the morning of September 12, 1945, Wernher von Braun, Dr. Eberhard Rees, and five midlevel V-2 rocket engineers left their U.S. Army–sponsored housing, in the town of Witzenhausen, for the last time. The men climbed into two army jeeps, headed for France. The Germans knew they were heading to the United States to work. They were not aware that their driver, First Lieutenant Morris Sipser, spoke German. As First Lieutenant Sipser drove the group to their destination in Paris, he listened to von Braun crack crass anti-American jokes. The jeep crossed over the Saar River into France, and Sipser overheard von Braun say to his colleagues, “Well, take a good look at Germany, fellows. You may not see it for a long time to come.” In Washington, Operation Overcast had been approved as a “temporary” program, but von Braun, ever the visionary, had the foresight to see that many of the rocketeers and engineers were heading to America to stay. “We felt no moral scruples about the possible future use of our brainchild,” von Braun later told *New Yorker* magazine writer Daniel Lang. “We were interested solely in exploring outer space. It was simply a question with us of how the golden cow could be milked most successfully.”

After arriving in Paris, the Germans were taken to the officers’ club at Orly Airport for dinner. Accompanying von Braun, Rees, and the five other V-2 engineers were four scientists from the Hermann Göring Research Institute, handpicked by Colonel Putt and headed for Wright Field. They were Theodor Zobel, Rudolph Edse, Wolfgang Noggerath and Gerhard Braun. Luftwaffe test pilot Karl Baur was also with the group; he had served as aircraft manufacturer Messerschmitt's chief Me-262 test pilot. Accompanying him he had his mechanic, Andreas Sebald. A little before 10:00 p.m., the Germans boarded a C-54 military transport plane waiting on the tarmac in the pouring rain.

"Quickly the plane moved through the clouds and a beautiful, clear sky with a moonlight night greeted us," Karl Baur wrote in his diary. "For the first time—I cannot recall the number of years—I enjoyed a flight as a passenger."

After a stop to refuel on the island of Santa Maria, in the Azores, the aircraft crossed the Atlantic, refueled in Newfoundland, and landed at New Castle Airport in Wilmington, Delaware, at 2:00 a.m. on September 20, 1945. Because the Germans were under military custody, they could not be traditionally processed by Customs. After a few hours, the sixteen Germans boarded a second, smaller airplane and were flown to the Naval Air Station at Squantum, in Quincy, Massachusetts.

At the naval base the Germans were loaded into sedans and driven out to the edge of dock, where a troopship waited for them. They boarded the vessel and made a short trip to a chain of small islands in Boston Harbor, the Harbor Islands, and out to the far end to a gravel shoal off Nixes Mate, where they were obscured from civilian view. There, a small Boston whaler idled on the sea. Its captain was named Corky, and the twenty-one-year-old intelligence officer who would take charge of the Germans was named Henry Kolm. Each German scientist was lowered down into the little Boston whaler by a harness hanging from a rope. "They were all seasick as can be," Kolm later recalled.

Fort Strong, on an island in the middle of Boston Harbor, had been used as a training camp during the Civil War and remained in use on and off through World War I. The fortresslike nature of the coastal defense facility made it an ideal place for a secret military program like Operation Overcast. When the first German scientists arrived in September 1945, the fortress was still under army control but had not been used for nearly thirty years. Thick weeds grew in between the gun blocks and pedestal mounts. The administration and observation buildings had fallen into disrepair. But the army barracks was easily converted into what would become known as the Operation Overcast hotel. German prisoners of war were moved onto the island to work as staff, including as translators, cooks, bakers, and tailors. Kolm's job was to process the scientists, which included fingerprinting, medical examinations, and coordination with the FBI. This all took time, and the Germans were not known for patience. Before long an insidious unease settled in among the scientists, Kolm recalled.

When the weather was clear the Germans played volleyball games outside. Far off in the distance they could make out the Boston skyline and see the tall, shiny buildings on shore. But often the fog rolled in, and the island was soaked in a thick, dense mist for days at a time. To pass the time the scientists stayed indoors and played Monopoly, which they called the "capitalists' game." Still, it was impossible to deny that Fort Strong took on a penal colony feel, as Kolm recalled. Soon the Germans started calling their new home Devil's Island. Finally, on September 29, 1945, Major James P. Hamill, an intelligence officer with the Army Ordnance Corps, was sent to the east coast of the island to escort a group of Germans off. Hamill had been in Nordhausen with Major Staver at war's end and had personally assisted in the mission to locate enough rocket parts to reconfigure one hundred of them at the White Sands Proving Ground. His presence on Devil's Island had to have been a welcome one among the rocket scientists. Hamill took six of them—Eberhard Rees, Erich Neubert, Theodor Poppel, August Schulze, Wilhelm Jungert, and Walter Schwidetzky—to Aberdeen Proving Ground, where they began translating, cataloguing, and evaluating the information from the Dörnten mine stash. Hamill's next mission was to escort Wernher von Braun by train to Fort Bliss, Texas.

The train ride began on October 6, 1945, and was a memorable event. Operation Overcast was a highly classified military matter, and Major Hamill was required to keep watch over von Braun twenty-four hours a day. Drawing any kind of attention to the German scientist was to be avoided at all cost. In St. Louis, Major Hamill and von Braun were assigned to a Pullman car filled with wounded war veterans from the 82nd Division, renowned for parachute assaults into Sicily and Salerno. Also in the train car were wounded war veterans from the 101st Airborne Division, men lauded for action in the Normandy invasion and the Battle of the Bulge.

Hamill quickly arranged for himself and von Braun to be moved into a different car. The train moved along to the Texas border. Hamill watched as the man sitting next to von Braun began engaging him in friendly conversation, asking von Braun where he was from and what business he was in. Von Braun, apparently well versed in lying on demand, replied that he was from Switzerland and that he was in “the steel business.”

“Well it turned out that this particular gentleman knew Switzerland like the back of his hand,” Major Hamill later recalled, “and was himself in the steel business.” Von Braun quickly qualified “steel business” to mean “ball bearings.” As it so happened the man was also an expert on ball bearings, Hamill explained. The train whistle blew. The approaching station stop was Texarkana, which was the businessman’s destination. As the man prepared to exit the train he turned back to von Braun and waved good-bye to him.

“If it wasn’t for the help that you Swiss gave us, there is no telling as to whom might have won the war,” the businessman said.

Army Ordnance finally had their scientists on U.S. soil, and work commenced at Fort Bliss without delay. In Germany, the drama between the U.S. Chemical Warfare Service and FIAT over the suspected war criminal Otto Ambros escalated. Despite orders from SHAEF to arrest him, Ambros remained a fugitive in plain sight. He lived and worked with impunity in the French zone. At Dustbin, FIAT officers continued to learn more about who Ambros was and the wartime role that he had played in chemical weapons research and development. In an interrogation with Albert Speer, FIAT learned that no single person had been as critical to the development of Hitler’s vast arsenal of nerve agents and poison gases as Otto Ambros had been. “He is known to have spoken to Hitler at a high-level German conference on Chemical Warfare,” a FIAT report read. Another stated, “Ambros’ importance, from the Intelligence point of view, has been re-emphasized by the recent Chemical Warfare investigation at ‘Dustbin.’ Speer and the German Chemical Warfare experts agree that he is the key man in German Chemical Warfare production.” Major Tilley was outraged by it all, but there was little he could do except put Ambros under surveillance.

Initial attempts to capture Dr. Ambros maintained the fiction of civility. “At the end of August or beginning of September 1945, an attempt was made to induce Ambros to return to the American zone,” Tilley wrote in a FIAT report. In response, “Ambros claimed to be unable to return then as the French authorities would not permit him to leave the French zone.”

Major Tilley knew this was a lie. Ambros regularly traveled back and forth between Ludwigshafen, in the French zone, and the IG Farben guesthouse, Villa Kohlhof, outside Heidelberg, in the American zone. This made Tilley furious. “This man is thought to be far too dangerous and undesirable to be left at liberty, let alone be employed by the Allied authorities,” Tilley wrote. FIAT authorized him to set up a sting operation in an attempt to capture and arrest Ambros. Captain Edelsten was assigned the job of tracking Ambros day and night. Through the Counter Intelligence Corps in Heidelberg, Captain Edelsten, working with a Colonel Mumford, set up a network of undercover agents who began to follow Ambros’s every move. “Saw Ambros at LU [Ludwigshafen],” read one report. “Drives his own car, usually alone. Slept in car for two hours one night, on roadside,” another set of field notes revealed. Ambros traveled frequently: to Freiburg, Rheinfelden, and Baden-Baden. He’d even been back to Gendorf—a brazen move, considering the Seventh Army had an outstanding arrest warrant for him there. But Ambros was quicker than the U.S. Army and had a better intelligence network in place as well. Whenever the U.S. Army showed up to arrest him, he was already gone.

Finally, Captain Edelsten reached Ambros on the telephone. “Edelsten told Ambros that Col. Mumford was anxious to see him again,” and asked if a meeting could be arranged for the following Sunday, at the Farben villa. Ambros agreed. FIAT planned its takedown. Plain clothes CIC officers would wait outside Villa Kohlhof, out of eyesight, until after Captain Edelsten placed Ambros under arrest. Then they’d step in and transport the wanted war criminal back to Dustbin. Except Ambros was one step ahead. With his well established “private intelligence center complete with secretaries and errand boys,” he learned the meeting was a ruse to arrest him. When Edelsten arrived at the villa, Ambros’s secretary invited him inside. Smiling broadly, she apologized and said “Dr. Ambros is not able to come.” Edelsten feigned understanding and sat down at a large banquet table elegantly set for eight. The secretary whispered in his ear, “You have been at Gendorf,” as if to taunt him.

Ambros, it turned out, had his own people following the FIAT agents who had been tailing him, a posse of “various deputies [between] Ludwigshafen and Gendorf.” Embarrassed and infuriated by the audacity of it all, Edelsten finished his tea and got up to leave. “Just as Edelsten was leaving, Ambros’s car pulled in (Chevrolet),” and for a fleeting moment

Edelsten believed he would capture him after all. Instead, a look-alike “emerged from [the] car and said [Ambros] was unable to come.” Ambros had sent a double; Edelsten had been burned.

FIAT was being made fun of, and there was little they could do. Captain Edelsten left the IG Farben villa red-faced and empty-handed. “Gave CIC description of Ambros’s car,” he noted in his report. “Light blue closed Saloon (Chevrolet).” Edelsten posted his men to watch the bridges around Heidelberg and promised to arrest Ambros if he ever arrived. But of course he never did. Adding insult to injury, the following day Dr. Otto Ambros sent Captain Edelsten a formal note, neatly typed on fancy stationery, with Farben’s wartime address still embossed on the letterhead. “Sorry that I could not make the appointment,” Ambros wrote. He signed his name in thick black ink.

At Dustbin, Major Tilley continued to interrogate Ambros’s colleagues. In late August 1945, Tilley got a very lucky lead from Ambros’s former deputy, the Farben chemist Jürgen von Klenck. Von Klenck was back at Dustbin now, and under intense scrutiny after having been in attendance alongside Ambros at the meeting with Tarr and the representative from Dow Chemical, Wilhelm Hirschkind. Jürgen von Klenck had amassed a sizable Dustbin dossier of his own. A Nazi ideologue, von Klenck had been a loyal party member since 1933 and an officer with the SS since 1936. One interrogator described him as “wily,” “untrustworthy,” and “not employable.” Von Klenck was also an elitist and had made more than a few enemies because of this. Speaking in confidence with Major Tilley, fellow chemist and Dustbin internee Wilhelm Horn candidly expressed his thought about Jürgen von Klenck. Von Klenck had a “magnetic presence, a brilliant mind, [was] handsome, polished and a wonderful talker, but lack[ed] the essential characteristics that would make him a truly great man,” said Horn. This was because von Klenck was “an egoist… very proud of the nobility implied in his name, and an opportunist who knew how to make the best of his chances.” Horn confirmed that von Klenck was a long-standing and avowed Nazi but that “it had always grated von Klenck’s pride that such common people as Hitler and his minions were in the highest places,” said Horn.

Tilley asked Horn how high up von Klenck was in the production of war gases. Horn revealed that von Klenck had been deputy chief of the ultra-secret Committee-C for chemical weapons. In other words, Jürgen von Klenck was Otto Ambros's right-hand man. Armed with this information, Major Tilley presented von Klenck with a piece of paper to sign. It was a declaration, "stating that he knew none of which had been concealed by others." Von Klenck refused to sign. Tilley explained that withholding information was a crime. Threatened with arrest, von Klenck admitted that there were a few things he hadn't been entirely truthful about.

He told Major Tilley that in the late fall of 1944, Ambros had instructed him to destroy all paperwork regarding war gases, particularly the contracts between Farben and the Wehrmacht. Instead von Klenck had "carefully selected" a cache of important documents and secreted them away in a large steel drum. He had hired someone to bury the steel drum on a remote farm outside Gendorf. Where, exactly, von Klenck said he wasn't sure. He told Tilley that he had "deliberately refused to learn where the [documents] were buried in order to be able to deny that he knew of any documents concealed anywhere." He gave Major Tilley a list of possible hiding places.

For two months Major Tilley searched the countryside around Gendorf for the steel drum, interviewing locals and patiently waiting for a solid lead. Finally, on October 27, 1945, he found what he'd been looking for. During an interrogation with Gendorf's fire chief, a man called Brandmeister Keller, the location was revealed. There was more. Brandmeister Keller had also hidden documents for Otto Ambros. "At first, Keller denied that he had secreted any documents," read the FIAT report. "When he was told that his arrest order was in Major Tilley's pocket he remembered four boxes Ambros had asked him to fetch in 1945.… Ambros gave him various barrels and boxes to hide with various farmers in Gendorf." But the most important barrel, the large steel drum from von Klenck, had been "buried at the lonely farm of Lorenz Moser, near Burghausen."

Von Klenck's hidden barrel produced hard evidence, including a letter from Ambros stating that he had been in charge of document destruction—and why. "All papers which prove our cooperation with Tabun and Sarin in the low-works, the DL-plant in the upper-work, must of course be destroyed or placed in security," read one letter inside the drum, signed by Otto Ambros. It was attached to a stack of nerve agent contracts between Farben and Speer's ministry, papers that von Klenck had been ordered to destroy.

These contracts chronicled “full details of TABUN production and other details of DYHERNFURTH (now in Russian hands), including a detailed plan of all buildings and much or most of the apparatus… photographs and drawings… and many other valuable data, covering the period from 1938 or earlier until March 1945.” Now Major Tilley had two key pieces of evidence he had not had before.

There was more damning information pertaining specifically to Otto Ambros that had been hidden in the steel drum. One document, written by Albert Speer, described two meetings with himself, Ambros, and Hitler in June 1944 which not only confirmed the high position that Ambros held but that he was a war profiteer. “I (SPEER) reported to the Führer that Dr. AMBROS of I.G. FARBEN had developed a new process by which Buna of the same quality as natural rubber can be produced. Some time in the future no further imports of natural rubber will be required… the Führer has ordered a donation of one million marks” to Ambros, Speer wrote. A final piece of evidence shined a light on Farben’s long-term plans for its business venture at Auschwitz. In addition to its Buna factory, IG Farben planned to produce chemical weapons at the death camp. The company had “plans for further construction of CW plant at AUSCHWITZ… in February 1945,” Tilley wrote in his FIAT report.

Tilley returned to Dustbin with the steel drum and the documents. Von Klenck appeared shocked when Tilley told him that the steel drum had been located. “There are indications that he did not expect them to be found,” read Tilley’s intelligence report. FIAT now had documentary evidence that Ambros was “guilty of contravening American Military Government laws by concealing documents connected with German military preparations.” There were hundreds of documents, including “full data on Dyhernfurth, production sheets for Tabun and other war gases,” as well as “many other matters which [Ambros] claimed to have burned in the furnaces at Gendorf in April 1945. It may well be that these papers, added to the formulas, production methods, and the secret CW contracts between IG and the Reich from 1935 to 1945, which were discovered in a Gendorf safe on that same day, may give us a more complete picture of German CW preparations than of most other fields of German armament and general war production.” Major Tilley had pulled off a scientific intelligence coup d’état.

Tilley took the information to a colleague, a veteran intelligence officer, who reminded him that there was an alternative theory to be considered regarding von Klenck. “Basing oneself on experience with enemy agents who confess plots freely, one may come to the conclusion that a lesser secret has been admitted to deflect the investigation from a more important secret,” the officer explained. Efforts to capture Ambros were redoubled. Two days after the steel drum find, on October 29, 1945, the British Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee issued a warrant for the “Arrest of Dr. Ambros.” Now there were two out of three Allied nations lobbying for the immediate arrest of Hitler’s favorite chemist.

Otto Ambros was “dangerous” and “undesirable” and should not be “left at liberty,” read the arrest report. FIAT knew Ambros could remain protected as long as he stayed in the French zone. “He is wily and he will remain there as he knows the hunt for him is on in the U.S. Zone,” the report explained. There was little to do but wait. But patience again paid off.

It took three months for Otto Ambros’s hubris to get the better of him. On January 17, 1946, Ambros traveled outside the French zone and was arrested. He was sent to Dustbin, where Major Tilley was waiting to interrogate him. After FIAT squeezed him for information, Ambros was turned over to Colonel Burton Andrus, now commandant of the Nuremberg jail. Sometime in the foreseeable future Ambros would face judgment at Nuremberg.

Any suggestion that Otto Ambros would one day have a prominent and prosperous place in civilized society, and that the American government would be just one of the governments to employ him, would have seemed pure fantasy. Then again, the Cold War was coming.

PART III

“The past is a foreign country.”

—L. P. Hartley

CHAPTER ELEVEN

The Ticking Clock

In the late summer of 1945, the Nazi scientist program underwent a significant organizational change. At the behest of the State-War-Navy Coordinating Committee, control over the program was removed from the Military Intelligence Division of the War Department, G-2, and given over to the Joint Chiefs of Staff. The newly created Joint Intelligence Objectives Agency (JIOA) would now be in charge of decision making for the rapidly expanding classified program. The JIOA was a subcommittee of the Joint Intelligence Committee, which provided national security information to the Joint Chiefs of Staff. To understand the JIOA's power, and how it ran the Nazi scientist program so secretively, is to first understand the nature of the Joint Intelligence Committee. According to national security historian Larry A. Valero, who has written a monograph on the subject for the CIA, the JIC was and remains one of the most enigmatic of all the American intelligence agencies. "The JIC structure was always in motion, always morphing and changing, a flexible, ad-hoc system," Valero says. "Subcommittees came and went, so did staff officers, but JIC decisions always had to be by consensus and were always reported to the Joint Chiefs." Little has been written about the inner workings of the JIOA, but the stories of individual Nazi scientists, and the JIOA's trail of partially declassified papers, help to define this powerful postwar organization.

In the immediate aftermath of the German surrender, the Joint Intelligence Committee was focused on the emerging Soviet threat. Between June 15, 1945, and August 9, 1945, the JIC wrote and delivered sixteen major intelligence reports and twenty-seven policy papers to the Joint Chiefs. "The most important JIC estimates involved the military capabilities and future intentions of the USSR," says Valero. Those intelligence estimates determined that the Soviets were ideologically hostile to the West and would continue to seek global domination, an attitude they had managed to skillfully conceal during the war. In September 1945, the JIC advised the Joint Chiefs that the Soviet Union would postpone "open conflict" with the West in the immediate future but only so it could rebuild its military arsenal and by 1952 be back at fighting strength. After this date, said the JIC, the Soviets would be ready and able to engage the United States in "total war."

The following month, JIC intelligence report 250/4 (the fourth report in the JIC 250 series) warned the Joint Chiefs that "eight out of ten leading German scientists in the field of guided missiles" had recently gone missing from Germany, had most likely been captured by the Soviets, and were now at work in the USSR. Similarly threatening, noted the report, two German physics institutes had been seized by the Red Army and reassembled in the USSR—not just the laboratories and the libraries but the scientists as well. JIC 250/4 warned of "intensive Soviet scientific research programs" under way across Russia, all of which threatened the West. It was from within this environment of intense suspicion that the JIOA was created. The Nazi scientist program was an aggressive U.S. military program from the moment the JIOA took control, just a few weeks after two atomic bombs ended the war with Japan. The employment of German scientists was specifically and strategically aimed at achieving military supremacy over the Soviet Union before the Soviet Union was able to dominate the United States.

Attaining supreme military power meant marshaling all the cutting-edge science and technology that could be culled from the ruins of the Reich. In the eyes of military intelligence, the fact that the scientists happened to be Nazis was incidental—a troublesome detail. It had no bearing on the bigger plan. The clock was ticking and, according to the Joint Intelligence Committee, would likely run out sometime around 1952.

There was language in the existing Nazi scientist policy that now had to be dealt with by the JIOA. The phrase "no known or alleged war criminal" could not remain as part of policy nomenclature for long, nor could the phrase "no ardent Nazis." These words had been put there to appease a few generals in the Pentagon, certain individuals in the State Department and moralists like Dr. H. P. Robertson, General Eisenhower's chief of scientific intelligence. For the program to move forward according to this new strategy, the language needed to change.

With the Joint Intelligence Objectives Agency now in control, a new, aggressive recruitment process would begin. On its governing body, the JIOA had one representative of each member agency of the Joint Intelligence Committee: the army's director of intelligence, the chief of naval intelligence, the assistant chief of Air Staff-2 (air force intelligence), and a representative from the State Department. The diplomat in the group was outnumbered by the military officers three to one.

The State Department officer assigned to the JIOA was Samuel Klaus, and he was perceived by his JIOA colleagues to be a troublemaker from day one. Samuel Klaus was a forty-two-year-old shining star in the State Department, a brilliant lawyer, avid horseman, and Hebrew scholar who also spoke Russian and German. Because Klaus was the man on the JIOA who was in charge of approving the visas for all incoming German scientists, it was important that he be on board with what the JIOA wanted to accomplish. But Samuel Klaus was fundamentally opposed to the Nazi scientist program, and this created intense conflict within the JIOA.

Klaus had hands-on experience with Nazi Party ideology, owing to his wartime work for the U.S. Foreign Economic Administration during the war. During the war, Klaus ran Operation Safe Haven, a program with international reach designed to capture Nazi assets, including stolen art and gold being smuggled out of Germany for safekeeping in neutral countries. During his years running Safe Haven, Klaus had interviewed hundreds of German civilians, and he had developed the belief that many "ordinary Germans" had profited from the Nazi Party and had had a tacit understanding of what was happening to the Jews. In his role as the State Department representative on the JIOA, Klaus argued that the Germans at issue were not brilliant scientists who had been unwittingly caught in a maelstrom of evil but rather that they were amoral opportunists of mediocre talent. JIOA records indicate that Klaus's sentiments were shared by at least two of his State Department colleagues, including Herbert Cummings and Howard Travers. But it was Samuel Klaus who was unabashedly vocal about how he felt and what he believed. At a JIOA meeting in the late fall of 1945, Klaus vowed that "less than a dozen [German scientists] would ever be permitted to enter the U.S." on his watch. For this, he was seen as a thorn in the side of military intelligence and he was also outnumbered. Per the JIOA's charter, it was required to share its plan with a cabinet-level advisory board, which included a representative from the Department of Commerce. As it so happened, the representative from the Commerce Department, John C. Green, was an advocate of the German scientist program, apparently without benefit of knowing who these German scientists really were. In the fall of 1945 Green came up with an idea that would undermine Samuel Klaus's resistance to Operation Overcast.

After the war in Europe ended, President Truman put the Department of Commerce in charge of a program designed to excite the nation about a unique form of reparations being culled from the defeated German state, namely, the acquisition of scientific and technical information. There would be no financial compensation coming from Nazi Germany, the Department of Commerce explained, but American industry could now benefit from a different kind of restitution: knowledge. Secretary of Commerce (and former vice president) Henry Wallace had been appointed by the president to supervise the release of thousands of what would become known as PB reports, named after the Commerce Department's Office of the Publication Board. These reports contained non-armaments-related information collected by CIOS officers in Germany after the war. The idea behind the PB reports was to get average Americans to start their own small businesses inspired by German technological advances. These new businesses would be a boon to America's postwar prosperity, the Commerce Department said.

Thanks to Reich scientists, the public was told, beverage manufactures could now sterilize fruit juice without heat. Women could enjoy run-proof hosiery. Butter could be churned at the rate of 1,500 pounds per hour. These lists seemed not to end. Yeast could be produced in unlimited quantities, and wool could be pulled from sheepskins without injuring the animal's hide—all because of brilliant German scientists. Hitler's wizards had reduced suitcase-sized electrical components to the size of a pinkie finger and pioneered electromagnetic tape.

Henry Wallace was one of the nation's greatest champions of the idea that Americans could find prosperity thanks to science. Wallace had served under Roosevelt in 1944, when Roosevelt promised Americans sixty million jobs. The promise became the subject of a book by Wallace: *Sixty Million Jobs.* As secretary of commerce, he intended to make good on it.

Business, industry, and government could work together to make the world prosperous in peace, Wallace said. German science was a jumping-off point.

The public was not made aware of a second list regarding captured German scientific and technical information, one marked classified. This list catalogued eighteen hundred reports on German technology with military potential. Subject headings included: "rockets," "chemical warfare," "medical practice," "aeronautics," "ordnance," "insecticides," and "physics, nuclear." The man in charge of both lists—the classified and the unclassified one—was Henry Wallace's executive secretary and his representative on the JIOA, John C. Green.

Regarding the classified list, Green got an idea. Peace and prosperity were, in principle, sound ideas. But there was big business in war. Green wanted to make the classified list available to certain groups in industry. "Specialized knowledge [should not be] locked up in the minds of German scientists and technicians," Green said. It needed to be shared. To help foster this sharing, in the fall of 1945 John C. Green traveled to Wright Field, in Dayton, Ohio, to meet with Colonel Donald Putt.

The first group of six Germans brought to Wright Field in the fall of 1945 lived in an isolated and secure housing area called the Hilltop, a cluster of five single-story wooden buildings and three small cottages that had once housed the National Youth Administration. Almost no one but the program's administrators knew that the German scientists were there. There was a single-lane dirt road that passed by the Hilltop, used only by locals who needed to visit the town dump. Trucks and station wagons filled with trash sped by the Hilltop's secret inhabitants, and when it rained the road turned into a sea of mud. This annoyed the Germans, and they began compiling a list of grievances to share with Colonel Putt at a later date. They knew better than to complain just yet. Considering the fate and circumstances of many of their colleagues back in Germany, theirs was a particularly good deal. But when the timing was right they would share this list of indignities, which would in turn affect the Nazi scientist program in the most unusual way.

The original scientists at Wright Field were listed as Dr. Gerhard Braun, motor research; Dr. Theodor Zobel, aerodynamics; and Dr. Rudolph Edse, rocket fuels; the specialists were Mr. Otto Bock, supersonics; Mr. Hans

Rister, aerodynamics; and Mr. Albert Patin, a businessman. Their salaries averaged $12,480 a year, plus a $6.00 per diem—the equivalent of about $175,000 in 2013. Because of an “oversight,” later caught and corrected, the Germans did not pay U.S. taxes for the first two years and twenty months of the program.

At the Hilltop, a husband-and-wife team of housekeepers looked after the Germans’ domestic needs, washed their laundry, and made their beds. German prisoners of war who had already been brought to the United States and were not yet repatriated acted as cooks. The six scientists and specialists and the others who would soon follow carried military-issue identification cards that had a large green “S” stamped on the front, indicating that they were not allowed to leave the base on their own. A gate running around the perimeter of the Hilltop was to be locked from 5:00 p.m. to 7:00 a.m. each night. On weekends, U.S. Army intelligence officers escorted the Germans into Dayton, where they could exercise at the local YMCA. A priest was brought in from Cincinnati to deliver Sunday mass in German. “We would like you to know and to appreciate that you are here in the interest of science and we hope that you will work with us in close harmony to further develop and expand your various subjects of interest,” read the introductory pamphlet issued to each specialist at Wright Field. “We have tried to make you comfortable in the quarters assigned to you.”

What the Germans craved most was respect, and this eluded them. During the war Hitler’s scientists and industrialists had been treated with great admiration by the Reich. Most scientists enjoyed financial reward. But here at Wright Field, many of the Germans’ American counterparts looked down on them with disdain. “The mere mention of a German scientist is enough to precipitate emotions in Air Corp personnel ranging from vehemence to frustration,” one manager stated in an official classified report.

As commanding general for intelligence at Wright Field, Colonel Donald Putt was in charge of the German specialist program. Putt had great admiration for each of the scientists, having handpicked almost every one of them in Germany, at the Hermann Göring Aeronautical Research Center at Völkenrode, and elsewhere. He could not fathom why the specialists were looked upon with contempt. “[A]ll they wanted was an opportunity to work,” Putt said. Colonel Putt’s vision for the Germans’ workload in America was threefold. Initially, he planned for the men to write reports on their past and future work. Next, those reports would be translated and circulated among American engineers at Wright Field. Then Air Technical Service Command would hold research and development seminars at Wright Field, with invitations sent out to defense contractors, university laboratories, and any other interested parties with Top Secret clearance and a contract with the Army Air Forces. But Putt's idea came to a grinding halt after the War Department weighed in on his proposal, responding to what it called "calculated risk." The German scientist program was a highly classified military program and needed to remain secret. A War Department memo required that the Germans remain "properly segregated from persons not directly concerned with their exploitation." There was to be no fraternizing with American scientists. Collaboration with defense contractors and others was impossible at this point in the program.

The German specialists were offended by the way they were treated. Word from Dr. Herbert Wagner, inventor of the Hs 293 missile, was that Gould Castle on Long Island, where Wagner resided and worked, had marble bathtubs. Naval Intelligence allowed their German scientists to take field trips into Manhattan. The Germans at Wright Field told Putt they felt like "caged animals," and they demanded that something be done about it. Putt saw opportunity here. He wrote to Army Intelligence, G-2, to say that the Germans' overall malaise was "critically affecting" their ability to work. When the Pentagon ignored Putt's concerns, he appealed to Major Hugh Knerr, his commanding general at Air Technical Service Command. Knerr wrote to the Pentagon. "Intangibles of a scientist's daily life directly affect the quality of his product," he said, but this too had little effect. In Washington the general feeling was that Operation Overcast was temporary and that the Germans should be happy to have jobs. Besides, the Nuremberg trials were about to begin.

On October 18, 1945, an indictment was lodged by the International Military Tribunal against the defendants named as major war criminals. The trial would take place inside the east wing of the Nuremberg Palace of Justice, with opening statements beginning November 20. Because this was a military tribunal, sentences would be passed by judges, not jurors. Nuremberg as a city had played a unique role in the rise of the Nazi Party. It had been the site of Hitler's Nazi Party rallies—colossal military parades supported by as many as 400,000 Nazi loyalists—and home to the Nuremberg race laws. Now the leaders in the regime would be tried in this location for conspiracy, crimes against peace, war crimes, and crimes against humanity.

As the trial began, twenty-one defendants sat crammed onto two benches, inside Courtroom 600, headphones over their ears. (There were twenty-two defendants; Martin Bormann was tried in absentia.) Behind them on the wall, symbolically positioned over their heads, was a large marble statue of the hideous monster Medusa. The twenty-one present faced the death penalty if convicted. “The wrongs which we seek to condemn and punish have been so calculated, so malignant, and so devastating,” Chief U.S. Prosecutor Justice Robert H. Jackson famously declared, “that civilization cannot tolerate their being ignored, because it cannot survive their being repeated.” The trial would last almost a year. With stories about Nuremberg and the Nazi war crimes dominating world news, complaints about comfort from the Germans at Wright Field meant very little to the War Department General Staff.

The same month the Nuremberg trial opened, in October 1945, the Army Air Forces hosted a grand two-day-long fair at Wright Field. On display were captured German and Japanese aircraft and rockets seen by the public for the first time since war’s end. Over half a million people from twenty-six countries came to marvel at the confiscated enemy equipment, said to be worth $150 million. Among the items on display were the V-2 rocket, the Focke-Wulf Fw 190 G3 fighter aircraft, and the Messerschmitt Me 262. Particularly fascinating to the public was that some of the airplanes still had swastikas painted on their tails. The fair was so popular that the Army Air Forces extended it for five days. There was no mention made of the fact that several of the men who had designed and engineered these weapons were living a stone’s throw away, at the Hilltop.

Among the half-million visitors at the fair was John C. Green, the Commerce Department’s representative on the JIOA advisory board and its executive secretary overseeing the PB reports. The board had just changed its name to the Office of Technical Services, underscoring its transformation from a passive “board” to a more active “service” that would make use of cutting-edge science and technology. As planned, Green tracked down Colonel Putt at the Wright Field Fair. He had a myriad of questions for Putt, all of which centered around one idea: How could all this science and technology on display benefit American industry moving forward? Initially, Putt was uneasy about Green's attention, but in the end he decided to take a gamble on him. After all, John C. Green had access to the classified list. Putt shared with him some information about the German scientists on the Hilltop. How they were like men kept in an ivory tower, how their talents were squandered by policy and prejudice in some circles in Washington, D.C. They needed employment opportunities, Putt lamented. Perhaps Green could help?

Green seemed amenable, and Putt took note. "During his visit to the Air Forces Fair, Wright Field, [John C. Green] evidenced keen interest and inquired as to the reaction of industry toward the possible employment of German scientists," Putt wrote in a memo. He was not yet clear if Green's "influence is favorable or unfavorable." But Putt decided to take the risk. He forwarded to Green several "letters of interest" from defense contractors regarding potential employment of the German scientists. These documents had already been received by Air Material Command. They included letters from Dow Chemical Company, the AiResearch Manufacturing Company, and the Aircraft Industries Association. Defense contracts meant that there was business in the wings waiting to be transacted. It was Washington, D.C., that stood in the way. Putt explained to Green that these private businesses did not have a high enough security clearance to deal directly with the German scientists themselves.

John C. Green wrote to JIOA explaining what he had in mind: German scientists of "international repute" should be allowed, with their families, to enter the United States for long-term work, argued Green. This was good for American businesses. The letters from the defense contractors indicated that there was a great demand for this kind of work. The Commerce Department would set up a board to weed out the Nazis and bring the good Germans in. The German scientists' knowledge and know-how would be "fully and freely" available to all Americans, said Green. This boom to industry would help create tens of thousands of American jobs.

Inside the JIOA, reactions were mixed, particularly among advisory board members. The assistant secretary of the interior was skeptical as to how Commerce could guarantee to keep old Nazis out of the program. The War Department did not like the idea of having to bring the families to America. Army Intelligence felt Green's proposal had validity from an economic perspective. If Commerce got involved in the German scientist program, the army would not necessarily have to shoulder so much of the financial burden. The State Department continued to voice objections, saying that regardless of who footed the bill, visas were not going to be granted to former enemies of the state without thorough and individual investigations. The Nazi scientist program was a temporary military program, State said. Nothing more.

John C. Green had an alternative plan. Instead of arguing his case further to the JIOA advisory board, he appealed to his boss, Henry Wallace. In turn, Henry Wallace wrote directly to President Truman, requesting that the president support the German science program. Science would help create those sixty million jobs, Wallace said, and nothing had a higher national priority in peacetime than American jobs. It was “wise and logical” to bring to America “scientists of outstanding attainments who can make a positive contribution to our scientific and industrial efforts,” Wallace wrote to President Truman on December 4, 1945. The knowledge these men possessed, Wallace said, “if added to our own would advance the frontiers of scientific knowledge for national benefit.” To illustrate his point, Wallace used one of the most benign scientists in all of Germany, a concrete and road construction expert named Dr. O. Graff, who had helped design the autobahn. “If you agree that the importance of a selected few (approximately 50 in number) would be an asset to our economy, I suggest you declare that this to be U.S. policy,” Wallace urged the president.

For Colonel Donald Putt at Wright Field and the military intelligence members of the JIOA, Henry Wallace’s endorsement of the program was like a shot in the arm. Before Wallace’s letter to the president, Samuel Klaus of the State Department had suggested that the public would be outraged by the program once they found out about it. It could not stay secret forever, nor was it meant to. Klaus had said that bringing Hitler’s former scientists to America for weapons research and development gave the impression that the army and the navy were willing to make deals with the devil for national security gains. Henry Wallace’s economically minded endorsement changed all that. It gave the German scientists program an air of democracy, offering counterbalance to what could be perceived as an aggressive military program.

Henry Wallace had been staunchly anti-Nazi during the war. Preceding Truman in the vice presidency, Wallace had publicly called Hitler a “supreme devil operating through a human form.” In another famous speech, he had likened Hitler to Satan seven times. That Henry Wallace was encouraging President Truman to endorse the German scientist program in the name of economic prosperity gave Operation Overcast a future. Henry Wallace was exactly what the JIOA had been waiting for.

On November 4, 1945, a headline in the *Washington Post* caught the nation's attention: "Army Uncovers Lurid Nazi 'Science' of Freezing Men." The article, written by reporter George Connery, was a major news scoop. In an effort to garner support for subsequent military trials in Nuremberg, the War Department had leaked to Connery the secret CIOS report written by war crimes investigator Dr. Leo Alexander. The report chronicled the freezing experiments conducted at Dachau inside Experimental Cell Block Five. That human beings had been tortured to death by German physicians in the name of medical science was both horrifying and incomprehensible to most Americans. The *Post* article revealed that the only man believed to have survived the freezing experiments had been located by Dr. Leo Alexander. Most of the other victims—the so-called *Untermenschen* whom the Nazi doctors had experimented on—died in the process or were killed. It was likely that this sole surviving victim, a Catholic priest, would provide witness testimony in the Nuremberg courts. Americans were rapt.

Kept secret from the public was an astonishing hypocrisy. Less than 150 miles from the Nuremberg courtroom, several of the physicians who had participated in, and many others who were accessory to, these criminal medical experiments were now being employed by the U.S. Army at the Army Air Forces Aero Medical Center, the classified research facility in Heidelberg. This laboratory, dreamed up by Colonel Harry Armstrong and Major General Malcolm Grow at a meeting in France in the spring of 1945, would remain one of the best-kept secrets of Operation Paperclip for decades to come. Here, starting on September 20, 1945, fifty-eight doctors handpicked by Dr. Strughold had been working on medical research projects begun for the Third Reich. Some of the data the Nazi doctors were using in their new Army research had been obtained in experiments in which test subjects had been murdered.

For Grow and Armstrong, the plan was to have these Luftwaffe doctors reconfigure the results of their war work in Heidelberg under army supervision. The follow-on plan was for these doctors to come to the United States under Paperclip contracts. Because conducting military research inside Germany was a violation of Allied Control Council Law 25 of the Potsdam Accord, the Aero Medical Center's classified nature shielded the Nazi doctors from chance exposure.

The codirectors of the secret research facility, Colonel Harry Armstrong and Dr. Hubertus Strughold, were alike in many ways, so much so that some saw the two men as mirror images of one another. The growing success of the Aero Medical Center would prove to be a launching point for each man's meteoric postwar career. Armstrong would eventually be promoted to U.S. surgeon general of the air force. Strughold would become the father of U.S. space medicine.

Harry Armstrong, born in 1899, entered into the U.S. military when horses were still being ridden into battle. During World War I Armstrong learned how to drive a six-mule ambulance and decided to become a doctor. After receiving his medical degree from the University of Louisville, he opened a private practice in Minneapolis. He might have become a country doctor, but he was preoccupied by airplanes and dirigibles. Appointed first lieutenant in the Medical Corps Reserve, Armstrong entered the School of Aviation Medicine (SAM) at Brooks Field, in San Antonio, Texas, in 1924. In 1925 he decided to specialize in a field of medicine few had ever heard of, and soon he would become a flight surgeon. He had never flown in an airplane before.

It was a master sergeant named Erwin H. Nickles who inspired Armstrong to make his first parachute jump. In a lecture that took place in a parachute hangar, Nickles presented the idea that one day entire troops of infantrymen just might jump out of airplanes into combat situations as a group. After the class was over, Armstrong got in a long conversation with Nickles. "He told me that he was puzzled by the fact that people who he supervised in practice jumps almost invariably failed to follow his instruction which was to count ten after leaving the airplane before pulling the rip cord," Armstrong explained. He said that Nickles feared jumpers would "black out or get into a panic and pull the rip cord too quickly." When Nickles "hinted that he would be very happy if some doctor would make a jump to see if they could solve his problem," Armstrong's mind was made up. “I decided I would make a practice jump and delay my opening as long as possible.”

A few weeks later Armstrong was standing in the cockpit of a biplane, wearing a flying suit and a gabardine helmet and getting ready to jump. “I had a feeling of panic,” Armstrong explained, but he hurled himself out of the aircraft anyway. As he fell through the air he kept his eyes closed and paid attention to what his body felt like as he descended. The feeling of panic disappeared, he later recalled. He did not lose consciousness or black out. Armstrong allowed himself to free-fall for approximately twelve hundred feet before he finally pulled the ripcord. His parachute opened and he floated the last one thousand feet to earth, where he landed in a grassy Texas field. Harry Armstrong had set a U.S. Army record. He was the first flight surgeon to make a free fall from an aircraft.

Armstrong finished school and returned to Minnesota, but with an insatiable love of flying. On March 21, 1930, he closed his practice in Minneapolis and joined the army for good. His life as one of the most important figures in the history of American aviation and aerospace medicine had begun.

When Armstrong arrived with his family at Wright Field, in 1934, the world was enamored with airplanes, which were not yet associated with war but with peacetime progress and the spirit of adventure. Jimmy Doolittle set a transcontinental record flying from California to New Jersey in eleven hours, sixteen minutes. Wiley Post and Harold Gatty circled the globe in eight days. At Wright Field, the primary task of the flight surgeon was determining who was physically fit to fly in the airplanes of the day. Armstrong was a man with a vision and he was also a soldier. He envisioned a future where wars would be fought in the air. The Army Air Corps’ most advanced fighter aircraft was a biplane with a speed of around 200 miles per hour and a flight ceiling of 18,000 feet. Armstrong’s work centered around resolving problems related to oxygen deprivation and exposure to cold.

One day Armstrong spotted a trapdoor in the floor of his office inside Building 16 at Wright Field. He opened the door, saw a staircase, and climbed down. He found himself in a basement filled with old machinery and drafting tables. An unusual-looking chamber, like something out of a novel by Jules Verne, caught his eye. It was shaped like a globe, made of iron, and had windows like submarine portholes. This was the army's first and only low-pressure chamber, built decades earlier for its World War I flight surgeon school. The school, located in Mineola, Long Island, had closed down after the war and the chamber had wound up here, at Wright Field.

Armstrong got an idea. Next door to his office, Army Air Forces engineers were designing airplanes that could fly faster, higher, and farther than ever before. Armstrong wanted to begin research and development on the medical effects that flying these new airplanes would have on pilots. He wrote a letter to the engineering division at Wright Field requesting permission. The letter was forwarded to Washington. In no time, Armstrong was appointed director of the Physiological Research Unit (later called the Aero Medical Research Laboratory and other variations on the name) at Wright Field.

His lab took off. Shop mechanics built test chambers from old airplane parts. He hired a scientist from Harvard, a PhD named John "Bill" Heim. Using volunteer test subjects, Heim and Armstrong gathered data on how the body responds to speed, lower oxygen levels, and decompression sickness and extreme temperatures. But it was an experiment on himself, with a rabbit on his lap, for which Armstrong became legendary.

He had been wondering what really happened to the human body above 10,000 feet. Why, and at what specific height, would a man die? Armstrong climbed into the low-pressure chamber with the rabbit on his lap. His technician adjusted the pressure to simulate high altitude. Armstrong's chest began to tighten and his joints hurt. When he rubbed his hands, he felt tiny bubbles along his tendons, ones that he could move around under his skin. He surmised that these were nitrogen bubbles forming in his blood and tissues, and that death at high altitude was caused by blood clotting. Armstrong indicated to the technician that he should simulate an even higher altitude inside the chamber. He was wearing an oxygen mask, but the rabbit on his lap was not. Soon the rabbit would be dead. As the lab technician raised the pressure, the rabbit convulsed and died. When Armstrong got out of the chamber, he dissected the rabbit and found nitrogen bubbles, proving that his hypothesis was correct.

Armstrong's discovery gave way to a major milestone in aviation medicine. Working with Heim on more tests, he inserted a viewing tube into the artery of a test animal. The two men took data on what happens to a mammal's body at forty thousand, fifty thousand, and finally sixty-five thousand feet. They were the first to witness that body fluids boil at sixty-three thousand feet. This point would become known as the Armstrong line. This is the altitude beyond which humans cannot survive without a pressure suit.

In 1937, Captain Harry Armstrong was considered one of America's aviation medicine pioneers. On October 2 of that year he attended the Aero Medical Association's first international convention, which took place in the Astor Gallery of the Waldorf-Astoria hotel. There, he and Heim reported the results of their recent studies at Wright Field. One of the doctors most interested in these studies was the Luftwaffe physician representing Germany, Dr. Hubertus Strughold. The two men, Armstrong and Strughold, were pioneers in the same field. "We hit it off immediately," remembered Harry Armstrong decades later. That fortuitous meeting would profoundly shape Strughold's post-Nazi career.

Some men claim to be shaped by a single event. For Hubertus Strughold, it was watching Halley's Comet streak across the sky from his backyard tree house in Westtünnen, Germany, in 1910. Forever after, said Strughold, he became preoccupied with what lies above. That same year, a second event shaped the rest of his life. Strughold watched a solar eclipse through a viewing glass and nearly went blind. The lens wasn't as dark as he thought it was and he burned the retina of his right eye, causing permanent damage. "When I looked at somebody with the right eye, at his nose, he had no nose.… When I looked at somebody at the street, at a distance of about a hundred meters at somebody's head [with the right eye], he did not have any head. It was always clear with both eyes," Strughold later explained. Hubertus Strughold had learned the hard way that experiments using one's own body could be dangerous. Still, as a young man, he pursued auto-experimentation with vigor and imagination. In college he studied physics, anatomy, and zoology, but it was physiology that interested him most, the functions of living organisms and their parts.

At the University of Würzburg Strughold taught the world's first college course on the effects high altitude had on the human body. His experimental test data came from himself. On weekends he flew hot air balloons, recording everything from vision to ear pressure to muscle effects. Inside the flying balloon, Professor Strughold recorded how his body responded to rapid acceleration and descent, which in turn made him curious to know how he would feel during radical banking turns. For that he needed an airplane. Strughold found the perfect mentor in a World War I flying ace by the name of Robert Ritter von Greim.

Von Greim was a legend. Renowned for his fearlessness in battle, in World War I he had recorded twenty-eight kills. In the 1920s and 1930s he was considered one of the top pilots in Germany and performed a variety of flight-related jobs, including exhibition dogfights against fellow World War I flying ace Ernst Udet. When Adolf Hitler needed a pilot to fly him from Munich to Berlin for the Kapp Putsch coup attempt in 1920, he chose Robert Ritter von Greim for the job. In 1926, von Greim was hired by Chiang Kai-shek to set up the Chinese air force in Canton, China. Returning to Germany, von Greim opened a flight school, located at the top of a mountain in Galgenberg, two miles from where Hubertus Strughold taught aviation medicine to college students.

Strughold hired von Greim to teach him how to fly, paying him six marks per lesson. The two men became fast friends. In Robert Ritter von Greim, Hubertus Strughold found a brilliant match—another man willing to push pilot performance to the edge of unconsciousness. The men would strap themselves into harnesses in von Greim’s open cockpit airplane and fly loops and rolls in the skies over Galgenberg. Strughold kept track of their physiological reactions to extreme flight, seeking answers to questions. Can a man draw a straight line while flying upside down? Can a pilot mark a bull’s-eye on a piece of paper immediately after a barrel roll? With how little oxygen could a man legibly write his name? How far up can a man fly before his vision fades? Von Greim was challenged by Strughold’s strange requests, and he was willing to fly faster and higher as his new young physician friend recorded data on von Greim’s pilot performance and physical capabilities in the air. Strughold knew his tests were original and hoped they would attract interest from the United States. In 1928 his wish came true when he received a prestigious fellowship from the Rockefeller Foundation. Strughold packed his bags, boarded the SS *Dresden*, and headed to New York.

Hubertus Strughold took to America like a fish to water, he later explained. As a Rockefeller Foundation fellow at the University of

Chicago, he was at the center of the music scene in the roaring twenties. Listening to jazz music was his favorite pastime after flying. In Chicago he attended vaudeville shows, parties, and dances and became fluent in English. He loved to drink and almost always smoked. His thick German accent distinguished him from everyone else around and made most people remember him. His first scientific paper in English was on oxygen deficiency and how to revive a heart using electric shock. For research he used dogs as test subjects, importing them from Canada at a time when experimenting on dogs from the United States was illegal. Strughold attended conferences in Boston and visited the laboratories at Harvard, at the Mayo Clinic in Minnesota, and at Columbia University in New York. And he met and became friendly with American aviation medicine pioneers like Harry Armstrong.

The Rockefeller fellowship lasted only a year. Back in Germany, Strughold and von Greim took up where they left off. Von Greim was now flying a double-decker Udet Flamingo aircraft, an aerobatic sports biplane made of wood. To determine how many g-forces a man could take before his eyeballs suffered damage, the two men would climb high in the air, then dive down toward the ground until one of them blacked out.

Von Greim's longtime friend and colleague Adolf Hitler took power in 1933. In secret, von Greim was called upon by Hermann Göring to rebuild the German Air Force, in violation of the Treaty of Versailles. Through his personal friendship with von Greim, Strughold ingratiated himself into this inner circle of Nazi power. In 1935 he was offered a job that would shape the rest of his life. As director of the Aviation Medical Research Institute of the Reich Air Ministry in Berlin, he was now in the uppermost echelon of Luftwaffe medical research. The lab, located in the suburb of Charlottenburg, featured a state-of-the-art low-pressure chamber and a ten-foot centrifuge in which test subjects could be exposed to varying degrees of gravitational pull. The chamber could take both apes and humans to between fifteen and twenty Gs.

The job required time, commitment, and most of all dedication. The Reich needed the Luftwaffe to help conquer all of Europe. This was why Strughold had packed his bags and moved to Berlin. He would report directly to Erich Hippke, chief of the Luftwaffe's medical corps, who reported to Hermann Göring. This was a vertical career move for Strughold. He'd gone from a university teaching post to the top of the Reich's aviation medicine chain of command. The Reich had vast resources and a desire to conduct groundbreaking experiments for the benefit of its pilots. There were risks but with risks came rewards. For Strughold, the reward was monumental. For ten years he enjoyed a career as one of the most powerful physicians working for the Third Reich.

In Berlin, Strughold treated his expansive new laboratory as a haven for risk takers. Colleagues, including officials from the Nazi Party and the SS, would stop by to marvel over his work with the low-pressure chamber and the centrifuge. Experiments were almost always in progress. Strughold's medical assistants were forever allowing themselves to be hooked up to these odd-looking contraptions with pipes, valves, and hoses projecting from all sides. Assistants, one with and one without an oxygen mask, would allow themselves to be locked inside the low-pressure chamber in order to determine how high up a man could go before becoming unconscious. During one experiment, two officials with the Reich Air Ministry were on hand to observe. The man without the oxygen mask began to lose consciousness. First his eyes closed, then his head fell to his chest. The second man inside the chamber, wearing a mask, administered first aid. It did not take long for the man to quickly recover.

"Our studies are all very risky," Strughold told the Nazi Party officials. "They require great ability on the part of the assistants and great responsibility. If the man did not get oxygen… he might be dead in five minutes."

As the Luftwaffe prepared its pilots for war, Strughold continued to use his staff as test subjects. He also experimented on himself. He was said to have "ridden the centrifuge" for a full two minutes, simulating what it would be like to experience fifteen times the force of gravity while flying an airplane.

After Germany invaded Poland in September 1939, the war spread into areas of extreme climates, from Norway to North Africa to the Russian front. These new combat theaters created urgent new medical problems for the Reich, most notably for foot soldiers but also for the Luftwaffe. As the war progressed and the Luftwaffe unveiled one new airplane after the next, the pilot physiology challenges grew. By 1940 new engine systems were being developed, including turbo and jet engines, with countless pilot parameters to explore, including the effects of speed, lower oxygen levels, decompression sickness, and extreme temperatures on the body. A web of institutions sprang up across Germany and its newly conquered lands, all financed by the deep pockets of the Reich Research Council, and including Strughold's Aviation Medical Research Institute in Berlin. The institute worked hand in hand with two Luftwaffe facilities close by, and Strughold developed strong relationships with the director of each institute: Dr. Theodor Benzinger, of the Experimental Station of the Air Force Research Center at Rechlin, and Dr. Siegfried Ruff, of the German Experimental Station for Aviation Medicine, Aero Medical division, in Berlin.

This is why, after the war, when Strughold was asked by Colonel Armstrong to be the codirector of the classified AAF Aero Medical facility in Heidelberg, Strughold asked Benzinger and Ruff to come along. He put each man in charge of one of the four areas of aviation research at the new facility. They trusted one another. They all had the same secrets to protect.

Dr. Theodor Benzinger was tall, thin as a rail, 5′11″ and just 138 pounds. He had dark blue eyes, sharp, angular features, and kept his black hair slicked back, with a pencil part. Born in 1905, Benzinger was described, in his army intelligence dossier, as "an old school Prussian, willful, self-serving and willing to get what he wants by any means." At Heidelberg he was put in charge of a department that developed oxygen equipment for airplanes. Benzinger was a committed Nazi and had been from the earliest days of National Socialism. He joined the Nazi Party the year Hitler took power, in 1933. He was also a member of the SA, holding the position of medical sergeant major. He and his wife, Ilse Benzinger, were members of the NSV, the Nazi Party's so-called social welfare organization, which was overseen by Reich propaganda minister Joseph Goebbels. Ilse was active in NSV-sponsored programs like Mother and Child, whereby unwed German mothers could birth Aryan children on bucolic baby farms.

In 1934, the twenty-nine-year-old Dr. Benzinger was made department chief of the Experimental Station of the Air Force Research Center. Like Harry Armstrong, Benzinger predicted that pilots would fly high-altitude missions to sixty thousand feet sometime in the near future. In service of this idea Benzinger and his staff at Rechlin researched high-altitude durability and explosive decompression. They took great risks experimenting on themselves. On one occasion, one of Benzinger's technicians died as a result of complications from oxygen deprivation experienced inside a low-pressure chamber. In addition to researching aviation medicine, Benzinger became a pilot and served as a colonel in the Luftwaffe. He flew reconnaissance and combat missions over the British Isles. In 1939, showing “bravery before the enemy” Benzinger was awarded the Iron Cross, Class I and Class II.

In Heidelberg, at the Army Air Forces Aero Medical Center, Strughold put Dr. Siegfried Ruff in charge of work involving the effect g-forces have on human beings. This was work that Ruff had begun at the test center in Rechlin with Dr. Benzinger during the war. Ruff did not have the same striking looks as his colleague, Dr. Benzinger. Ruff’s smiling, professorial posture made it hard to imagine he had spent so much time supervising medical experiments inside the Dachau concentration camp, including Rascher’s murderous high-altitude studies in Experimental Cell Block Five. Like Benzinger, Ruff was an avowed and dedicated Nazi. He joined the party in 1938. The facility Dr. Ruff was in charge of for the Third Reich was located just ten miles across town from the institute that Dr. Strughold oversaw. As the directors of the two most important Luftwaffe medical facilities in Berlin, Ruff and Strughold collaborated closely on a number of projects during the war.

Ruff and Strughold coauthored several papers together and coedited *Aviation Medicine* (*Luftfahrtmedizin)*. One of the articles they cowrote so fascinated the U.S. Army Air Corps that in 1942 intelligence officers had it translated and circulated among flight surgeons at Wright Field. The two men also coauthored a book called the *Compendium on Aviation Medicine*, which served as a kind of handbook for Luftwaffe flight surgeons and included articles on explosive decompression and oxygen deficiency. At Heidelberg, Dr. Ruff was in charge of this work again, only now it was paid for by the U.S. Army.

Working directly under Dr. Ruff at the Aero Medical Center was Dr. Konrad Schäfer, listed in declassified documents as also researching the effects of g-forces on the body. This was not Schäfer’s primary area of expertise. His wartime research work, which had been supported by both the Nazi Party’s Reich Research Council and the Luftwaffe, was the pathology of thirst. Schäfer was a tall man, slightly overweight with a receding hairline and thick-lensed glasses that made him appear slightly cross-eyed. Unlike most of his colleagues, Schäfer avoided joining the Nazi Party, which he later said cost him jobs. In 1941 he was drafted and sent to a Luftwaffe air base at Frankfurt on the Oder. When his talents as a chemist came to light—he'd worked as chief physiological chemist for the firm Schering AG—Schäfer was transferred to Berlin and given an assignment in Luftwaffe sea emergencies. "This included research on various methods to render seawater potable," Schäfer later explained under oath.

Sea emergencies were an area of great concern. As the man in charge of aviation medical research for the Luftwaffe, Dr. Strughold had solutions to sea emergencies high on his priority list. During the air war, every pilot knew that drinking ocean water destroyed the kidneys and brought death faster than suffering indomitable thirst. But German pilots shot down over the sea and awaiting rescue were known to break down and drink seawater anyway. The Luftwaffe announced a contest. Any doctor or chemist who could develop a method to separate the salt from seawater would be greatly rewarded. Konrad Schäfer, one of Strughold's protégés in Berlin, aimed to solve that conundrum. Schäfer worked "in co-operation with IG Farben to create Wolfen, a mixture from barium and silver zeolith," he later explained, which he synthesized into "a tablet named Wolfatit [which] was developed to separate the salt in a residue." The results produced drinkable water, which was a remarkable achievement. Schäfer had succeeded where so many other doctors and chemists had failed.

Dr. Oskar Schröder, head of the Luftwaffe Medical Corps, was thrilled. Konrad Schäfer had "developed a process which actually precipitated the salts from the sea water," Schröder later testified. But another group of Luftwaffe doctors were already backing a different process, called the Berka method, which was bad news for the Schäfer process. "It was thought by the Chief of the Luftwaffe Medical Service to be too bulky and expensive," Schröder explained.

A second contest was proposed; this one to see which desalination method was superior. The effectiveness of both the Schäfer process and the Berka method would be tested on the *Untermenschen* at Dachau. A Luftwaffe physician named Hermann Becker-Freyseng was assigned to assist Dr. Schäfer, and to coauthor with him a paper documenting the results of the contest. The senior doctor advising Becker-Freyseng and Schäfer in their work was Dr. Siegfried Ruff. The resultant paper, called "Thirst and Thirst Quenching in Emergency Situations at Sea," described saltwater medical experiments conducted on prisoners inside Experimental Cell Block Five.

Dr. Hermann Becker-Freyseng had been a member of the Nazi Party since 1938. His specialty was oxygen poisoning in the human body. An odd-looking man, Becker-Freyseng's unusually large ears gave the appearance of handles on either side of his head. During the war Becker-Freyseng served as chief of the Department for Aviation Medicine and Medical Services in the Luftwaffe, another branch under an umbrella of medical facilities and laboratories overseen by Dr. Strughold. Becker-Freyseng was held in great esteem by his colleagues, many of whom, under interrogation, described him as "heroic" for the masochistic extremes he was willing to go in auto-experimentation. Becker-Freyseng conducted over one hundred experiments on himself, many of which rendered him unconscious. At least one took him to the brink of death. The story repeated most often about Becker-Freyseng was of a self-experiment he did in a chamber, also with a rabbit. Determined to learn how much oxygen would poison a man, Becker-Freyseng went into a low-pressure chamber with a rabbit with the goal of staying inside for three days. A few hours shy of his goal, Becker-Freyseng began to show symptoms of paralysis. "The rabbit died, Becker-Freyseng recuperated," Strughold later explained under oath. That was all during the war. Now Ruff, Benzinger, Schäfer, Schröder, and Becker-Freyseng, with the approval of Strughold and Armstrong, continued their work on secret aviation medical projects initially conceived for Hitler's war machine.

The Army Air Forces Aero Medical Center in Heidelberg was a squat, brick, two-story facility facing the Neckar River. Only a few months prior it had been the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute for Medical Research, a bastion of Nazi science where chemists and physicists worked on projects for the Reich's war machine. At its front entrance, the Reich's flag came down and the U.S. flag went up. Photographs of Hitler were pulled from the walls and replaced by framed photographs of Army Air Forces generals in military pose. Most of the furniture stayed the same. In the dining room German waiters in white servers' coats provided table service at mealtimes. A single 5″ x 8″ requisition receipt, dated September 14, 1945, made the transition official: "This property is needed by U.S. Forces, and the requisition is in proportion to the resources of the country." The mission statement of the project, classified Top Secret, was succinct: "the exploitation of certain uncompleted German aviation medical research projects." Dr. Strughold was put in charge of hiring doctors, "all of whom are considered authorities in a particular field of medicine."

Across the American zone of Germany, entire laboratories were dismantled and reassembled here at the secret facility in Heidelberg. More than twenty tons of medical research equipment was salvaged from the Tempelhof Airport, in Berlin, including a "huge human centrifuge… and a low pressure chamber the length of two, ordinary Pullman cars." There was equipment here that American physicians had never seen before: esoteric items including a Nagel Anomaloscope, a Zeiss-made interferometer, an Engelking-Hartung adaptometer, a Schmidt-Haensch photometer, and a precision-built Siemens electron microscope—with which to study night vision, blood circulation, g-forces, and the bends. Even the low-pressure chamber from Georg Weltz's research facility at Freising, near the Munich dairy farm, was brought to Heidelberg. This was the laboratory where Dr. Leo Alexander had experienced his revelation that Nazi doctors had been freezing people to death.

It was a precarious time for doctors who had previously worked for the Reich. With the Nuremberg trial under way, the international press had its attention focused on war crimes. German doctors were looked at with suspicion. Articles about Nazi doctors, including the November 1945 piece in the *Washington Post* about the "science" of freezing humans, put a spotlight on German medicine. Many doctors fled the country to South America through escape routes called ratlines. Others tried to blend in by offering their services in displaced-persons camps. Some killed themselves. Maximilian de Crinis, chief of the psychiatric department at the University Charité in Berlin, swallowed a cyanide capsule in the last days of the war. Ernst-Robert Grawitz, physician for the SS and president of the German Red Cross, killed himself and his family, including his young children, by detonating a small bomb inside his house outside Berlin. The Reich Health Leader, Leonardo Conti, hanged himself in his cell at Nuremberg. Ernst Holzlöhner, the senior doctor at the University of Berlin who conducted the freezing experiments at Dachau with Sigmund Rascher, committed suicide in June 1945 after being interrogated by British investigators.

The list of suicides was long, but the number of German doctors believed to have been involved in war crimes was even longer. The U.S. war crimes office for the chief counsel wrote up a list of doctors involved in medical research that resulted in "mercy killings," a euphemism used by the Reich for its medical murder programs. The list was classified with a strict caveat that access to it remain “restricted for 80 years from the date of creation.” This meant that, by the time the world would know who was on this list, it would be the year 2025, and everyone named would be dead.

A copy of the list was given to the commander of the Army Air Forces Aero Medical Center, Robert J. Benford. Five doctors working at the center starting in the fall of 1945 were on the list: Theodor Benzinger, Siegfried Ruff, Konrad Schäfer, Hermann Becker-Freyseng, and Oskar Schröder. Instead of firing these physicians suspected of heinous war crimes, the center kept the doctors in its employ and the list was classified. The list remained secret from the public until 2012, when the Department of Defense (DoD) agreed to declassify it for this book.

CHAPTER TWELVE

Total War of Apocalyptic Proportions

By the end of January 1946, 160 Nazi scientists had been secreted into America. The single largest group was comprised of the 115 rocket specialists at Fort Bliss, Texas, led by Wernher von Braun. The men resided in a two-story barracks on the Fort Bliss reservation and worked in a laboratory that was formerly the William Beaumont General Hospital. They ate in a mess hall shared with Native American Indians, which only enhanced von Braun's perception that he was living life inside an adventure novel. "It is such a romantic Karl May affair," von Braun wrote in a letter to his parents in Germany. Karl May was a German novelist famous for his cowboy and Indian westerns. Soon, von Braun would begin writing a novel of his own, in the science fiction genre, about space travel to Mars.

Von Braun loved the desert landscape, the cactus, the vast gypsum dune fields, and the long drives in open army jeeps. Rocket work was not perfect, but it progressed. "Frankly we were disappointed with what we found in this country during our first year or so," von Braun later recalled. "At Peenemünde, we'd been coddled. Here they were counting pennies," he said of the U.S. Army. V-2 launchings would take place about eighty miles away, on the White Sands Proving Ground, and getting there meant a long and beautiful ride. An army bus took scientists around the Franklin Mountains, through El Paso, and along the Rio Grande to Las Cruces. Next came the rugged journey over the San Andreas pass and into the Tularosa Basin, where the army's proving grounds began. Twelve to fifteen Germans were sent at a time to White Sands, where they lived in barracks alongside men from the General Electric Company and a technical army unit. The actual rocket firings took place inside a single forty-foot-deep pit, with the Germans watching the launches from a massive but rudimentary concrete blockhouse nearby. When the first V-2 was launched, in April 1946, it climbed to three miles. Although one of the fins fell off, von Braun felt inspired to draft a memo to Robert Oppenheimer, director of Los Alamos, proposing the idea of merging his missile with the atomic bomb. The memo turned into a proposal, "Use of Atomic Warheads in Projected Missiles," submitted to the army. In it, von Braun discussed building a rocket that could carry a two-thousand-plus-pound nuclear payload a distance of one thousand miles.

Two personal changes in von Braun were afoot. The first was that he joined an Evangelical Christian church and became "born again," something he rarely discussed in public. The second was that he decided to marry his first cousin, Maria von Quistorp, the daughter of his mother's brother, Alexander von Quistorp. Von Braun was nearly twice her age—she had just turned eighteen in the summer of 1946—and she lived in Germany. From Texas, von Braun began making plans to bring his future bride to the United States.

Descriptions of life out west in America varied from scientist to scientist. "The conditions of employment were considered to be fair and generous by all," said Dieter Huzel, the engineer who'd stashed the V-2 documents in the Dörnten Mine. Arthur Rudolph liked the fact that the swimming pool and the bowling alley were made available to the Germans exclusively one afternoon a week. He told his biographer, who did not want to be publicly identified and wrote using the pseudonym Thomas Franklin, that he missed his family and his Bible. Von Braun's brother, Magnus, was being investigated by the FBI for selling a platinum bar he had illegally smuggled into the United States. Interrogators with the Department of Justice found Magnus von Braun to be "snobby" and "conceited" and said that he seemed to pose "a worse threat to security than a half a dozen discredited SS Generals."

For Army Ordnance there were many problems to overcome. Funding was scarce. Shrinking military budgets offered very little room for missile development immediately after the end of a world war. Also at Fort Bliss the army discovered that not all the so-called rocket scientists had the talents they allegedly possessed. Karl Otto Fleischer, Major Staver's original lead for the Dörnten mine and the man who led him on the wild goose chase around the Harz and to the Inn of the Three Lime Trees, claimed to have been the Wehrmacht's business manager, when in reality he had been in charge of food services. In Texas, Fleischer was assigned the job of club manager until he was finally “repatriated” to Germany. Von Braun had also sold the army on hiring Walter Weisemann, a Nazi public relations officer who had done some work in the Peenemünde valve shop. Von Braun called him an “eminent scientist.” In reality, Weisemann learned engineering in America working for the army.

Fifteen hundred miles across the country, in the winter of 1946, there were now thirty German scientists at Wright Field. Colonel Putt considered this sum to be offensively low. At least once a month, he wrote to Army Air Forces headquarters in Washington requesting more German scientists and inquiring why the importation of these “rare minds” was happening at a snail’s pace. In fact, there was very little for the Germans to do at Wright Field, and many of them were restless. The Air Documents Research Center, formerly in London, had also moved to the Air Material Command headquarters, at Wright Field. There, five hundred employees sorted, catalogued, indexed, and put on microfiche some 1,500 tons of German documents captured by Alsos, CIOS, and T-Forces after the war. So abundant was the material that more than one hundred thousand technical words had been added to the Air Material Command’s English-language dictionary. The plethora of information provided some work opportunities for a predominantly idle group of German specialists who in turn resented this kind of work. The Germans perceived themselves as inventors and visionaries, not librarians or bureaucrats.

One of the Germans, a Nazi businessman named Albert Patin, had been keeping track of the groups’ complaints, which now made their way to Colonel Putt’s desk. It was not just the lack of challenging work, said the Germans; it was the whole package deal. The Hilltop was a dump. Payments were slow. The mail to Germany was even slower. Dayton had no civilized culture. The laboratory facilities at Wright Field were nothing compared to the grand laboratories of the Third Reich. In general, the Germans told Putt, they were beginning to “distrust” their American hosts “based on promises broken by USA officers.”

Colonel Putt’s next move was a controversial one. He appealed to Albert Patin for help. At fifty-eight, Patin was one of the more senior Germans at the Hilltop. He was a wartime armaments contractor whose numerous factories produced equipment for the Luftwaffe under the Speer ministry. When Patin’s facilities were first captured by the U.S. Army, one of the

American technical investigators, Captain H. Freiberger, was so amazed by Patin's industrial vision that he called "the soundness of his principles a revelation." For Colonel Putt, Albert Patin's wartime innovations represented the best and the brightest of Reich science. Putt coveted the scientific inventions that Patin's factories mass-produced, which included navigation aids, in-flight steering mechanisms, and automatic control devices. This kind of technology would give the Army Air Forces a ten-year jump on anything the Russians had, Putt believed.

Hiring Patin for a U.S. Army Air Forces contract meant ignoring his past. His armaments factories used slave labor, which was a war crime. In an autobiographical report for Putt, Albert Patin admitted that many of the people in his six-thousand-person workforce were slave laborers supplied by Heinrich Himmler's SS. Patin stated that he was not ashamed of this; he explained to Colonel Putt that he had been one of the better bosses in the Third Reich. He didn't encircle his factories in electric fencing like other industrialists did. Patin acknowledged that his wartime access to Hitler's inner circle benefited his businesses, but he did not see how this made him a war profiteer. He was just following orders. Patin took summer holidays with the Göring family and winter trips with Albert Speer's munitions procurement chief, Dieter Stahl, but so did a lot of people. He was no better and no worse.

During this slow period at Wright Field, Colonel Putt had Albert Patin survey the other Germans. He told Patin to be alert to grudges so that Patin could formalize his list of complaints. Putt would in turn forward this summary to his superiors at Air Materiel Command. Patin's job, Putt counseled, was to emphasize how the Germans had become depressed, even suicidal, without their families and without the promise of long-term work. Colonel Putt sent Patin's summary of complaints to Air Force Headquarters in Washington, to the attention of Brigadier General John A. Samford. In his own cover letter, Putt requested that immediate action be taken to "improve the morale [of the Germans] and save the existing situation."

The name Albert Patin had already caught General Samford's eye. All mail sent to the scientists at Wright Field was screened by army intelligence first. Albert Patin regularly received letters from his staff back in Germany, many of whom also sought work in the United States. A letter had recently been sent to Patin in which lucrative offers from French and Russian intelligence agents were discussed. Brigadier General Samford's office was made aware of this unwelcome development. Coupled with the summary of German scientists' dissatisfaction, General Samford took action. He sent the complaint list as well as Patin's intercepted mail to the War Department. "Immediate action in this situation is imperative if we are to divert the services of valuable scientists from France and Russia to the United States," General Samford warned his colleagues.

The timing created a perfect storm. The Joint Intelligence Committee was in the process of implementing a major policy change. It had just warned the Joint Chiefs that the existing idea of using restraint when dealing with the Soviets needed to be reconsidered. "Unless the migration of important German scientists and technicians into the Soviet zone is stopped," read a JIC memo to the Joint Chiefs, "we believe that the Soviet Union within a relatively short time may equal United States developments in the fields of atomic research and guided missiles and may be ahead of U.S. developments in other fields of great military importance, including infra-red, television and jet propulsion." The JIC also stated, incorrectly, that German nuclear physicists were helping the Russians develop a nuclear bomb and that "their assistance had already cut substantially, probably by several years, the time needed for the USSR to achieve practical results." In reality the Soviets had gotten to where they were in atomic bomb development not because of any German rare minds but by stealing information from American scientists at Los Alamos. Not until 1949 would the CIA learn that the Russian mole was a British scientist named Karl Fuchs, who worked on the Manhattan Project.

In response to the perception that the Soviets were getting all the "important German scientists," the Joint Intelligence Committee proposed to the JIOA that three changes be implemented in the Nazi scientist program, effective immediately. The first was to do everything possible in Germany to prevent more scientists from working for the Russians. The second was that the U.S. Army was to make sure that German scientists and their families were given whatever it was they were asking for, including American visas. Third, a list was drawn up proposing that as many as one thousand additional Germans be brought to America for weapons-related research.

For Samuel Klaus, the second proposed policy change was untenable. The Nazi scientist program was originally defined as "temporary," with scientists working under military custody. That was how the War

Department was able to circumvent immigration law for all the scientists already here. Now the JIOA was demanding that immigration visas be issued to scientists and their families. Even if the policy change were approved, Klaus argued, the visa process was a slow-going one. The State Department was legally required to approve each scientist's visa application individually. This was not an overnight task but a lengthy investigative process. The person requesting a visa was required to list on his or her application contacts who would in turn be interviewed by a representative from State. The Office of the Military Government in Germany needed to compile a security report on each individual scientist. Nazi Party records would have to be pulled from the Berlin Document Center. If the scientist had won an honorary award from the National Socialist German Workers Party (NSDAP)—the Nazi Party—or was a member of the SS or the SA, that needed to be explained. This was the law, Klaus said.

With the new information about the Soviets, Robert Patterson, now secretary of war, shifted from being weary of the Nazi scientist program to becoming its champion. Only a year earlier, Patterson had called the German scientists "enemies… capable of sabotaging our war effort," and had warned the Joint Chiefs of Staff that "[b]ringing them to this country raises delicate questions." Now he stated in a memorandum that "the War Department should do everything possible to clear away obstacles that may be raised in the State Department." This in turn caused Secretary of State James F. Byrnes, Samuel Klaus's boss, to soften his opposition to Operation Overcast. Due to the emerging Soviet threat, Secretary of State Byrnes and Secretary of War Patterson agreed informally that leaving German scientists unsupervised inside Germany, where they could be bought by the Russians, was too dangerous. If the State Department required individual investigations, so be it, Byrnes said. German scientists and their families should be allowed to enter the country under temporary military custody with an interim State Department blessing, Patterson wrote. The logic was simple. If we don't get them, the Russians will.

The State-War-Navy Coordinating Committee, now acting as an advisory body to JIOA, confirmed agreement with the positions of the Secretaries of War and State but added another consideration to the argument. German scientists left to their own devices presented "serious military implications to the future of United States Security," according to SWNCC. In other words, Samuel Klaus's argument could now be used against him in the military’s attempt to speed up the visa application process. Yes, the German scientists were inherently untrustworthy—so much so that they could not be trusted if they were left unsupervised, let alone left available to competing powers.

On March 4, 1946, SWNCC Paper No. 275/5 went into effect. German scientists could now be admitted to the United States in a classified program that was in the “national interest.” This shifted the focus from whether or not someone was a Nazi to whether they were someone the Russians would be interested in. The commander in chief of U.S. Forces of Occupation in Germany and commander of U.S. Forces, European Theater (USFET), General Joseph T. McNarney, was told to draft a list of one thousand top scientists in Germany who were to be brought to the United States at once so the Russians couldn’t get them. A military intelligence officer named Colonel R. D. Wentworth was assigned to provide General McNarney with material support on behalf of Army Intelligence, G-2. The scientists’ families were to be given food and clothing and were to be housed in a secret military facility northeast of Munich called Landshut until their visa applications were approved. It was a radical revision of the initial terms of the German scientist program, and it was exactly what the JIOA had envisioned all along.

The following month, the members of JIOA were called together to spend an entire day hammering out new program protocols. Expert consultants like Alsos scientific director Samuel Goudsmit were invited to attend. Expedite the German scientist program, said the Joint Chiefs of Staff. There were now 175 German scientists in America under military custody, none of whom had visas. The consensus, save Klaus, was that the application process needed to be sped up. The thorniest issue had to do with getting the State Department to approve certain individuals who had clearly been Nazi ideologues, including members of the SS and SA. Also at issue were those men who received high awards for their important contributions to the Nazi Party. These were people that by regulation were entirely ineligible for citizenship.

The meeting resulted in a clever workaround. Army Intelligence officers reviewing the OMGUS security reports of certain scientists could discreetly attach a paperclip to the files of the more troublesome cases. Those files would not be presented to the State Department right away. Instead, those men would remain under military custody in America, most likely for a longer period of time than some of their fellows. As a result, the Nazi scientist program got a new code name. Operation Overcast had apparently been compromised after the families of the German scientists starting calling their U.S. military housing Camp Overcast. So from now on, the Nazi scientist program would be called Operation Paperclip.

Not everyone understood the discreet paperclip-attached-to-the-file protocol. The first major setback came just a few months later, on July 17, 1946. General Joseph McNarney wrote to JIOA stating that he had worked with Colonel Wentworth to identify 869 German scientists who were ready to sign Paperclip contracts. But there was an obstacle. "There is a large number of former Nazis and mandatory unemployables among those shown on the list," General McNarney wrote. "These [men] cannot now or later be employed in the United States zone of Germany except in the labor category." McNarney was following USFET rules that said all members of the SS and the SA had to go through mandatory denazification trials.

Citing America's "national interest," the JIOA would now change the language of the core principle guiding Paperclip's original charter. "No known or alleged war criminals" and "no active Nazis" would become no persons who might try and "plan for the resurgence of German military potential." Assistant Secretary of War Howard Petersen felt this new language would allow the JIOA to "bypass the visa people," as stated in a memo dated July 24, 1946. But this was meant to be temporary. Eventually, State Department officials like Samuel Klaus would take umbrage at this language. What JIOA really needed was an endorsement from President Truman.

By the summer of 1946 the relationship between the United States and the Soviet Union was shattering. The legendary Long Telegram, written by George F. Keenan, America's diplomat in Moscow, had been received at the State Department, reviewed by the president and his advisers, and sent to every U.S. embassy around the world. After analyzing the Soviet's "neurotic view of world affairs," Keenan warned his bosses at the State Department that "in the long run there can be no permanent peaceful coexistence" with the Soviet Union. The two nations were destined to become steadfast enemies, Keenan said.

Influenced by Keenan's insights, President Truman asked White House counsel Clark Clifford to prepare a study of the current state of affairs and the future prospects regarding Soviet-American relations from a military standpoint. To do so Clifford culled reports and briefings from the Secretaries of War, State, and Navy as well as the attorney general, the Joint Chiefs of Staff, various directors of military and civilian intelligence, and George Keenan. The result was an alarming Top Secret analysis. The report's conclusion was made clear in the introduction: "Soviet leaders believe that a conflict is inevitable between the U.S.S.R. and the capitalist states, and their duty is to prepare the Soviet Union for this conflict." Clifford warned that Soviet leaders were on a path "designed to lead to eventual world domination." The Russians were developing atomic weapons, guided missiles, a strategic air force, and biological and chemical weapons programs. The idea of "peaceful coexistence of communist and capitalist nations is impossible," Clifford wrote. The only way to counter this threat was to use the "language of military power." Not military force, but military threat.

On August 30, 1946, the undersecretary of the State Department, Dean Acheson, asked President Truman to make a decision on Paperclip. If the president did not act quickly, Acheson wrote, many of the German scientists "may be lost to us." After four days of deliberation Truman gave his official approval of the program and agreed that Operation Paperclip should be expanded to include one thousand German scientists and technicians and allow for their eventual immigration to the United States. With presidential approval official, the attorney general was able to expedite the proposed changes to the program. A new JIOA contract was drawn up, allowing scientists who had been in the United States for six months to sign on for another year, and with the government maintaining the right to renew the contract for another five years. Operation Paperclip was transitioning from a temporary program to a long-term one. Former enemies of the state would now be eligible for coveted U.S. citizenship.

In response to the Clifford Report, the Joint Intelligence Committee conducted its own classified assessment of the Soviet threat, JCS 1696. The Soviet Union, wrote the JIC, sought world domination and would begin by bringing other nations into Soviet control to isolate the capitalist world. JIC saw a future war with the Soviet Union as being of apocalyptic proportion. In a war "with the Soviet Union we must envisage complete and total hostilities unrestricted in any way on the Soviet part by adherence to any international convention or humanitarian principals," noted JCS 1696. "Preparations envisaged on our part and our plans must be on this basis." In other words, for the United States to prepare for "total war" with the Soviets, America had to maintain military supremacy in all areas of war fighting, including chemical warfare, biological warfare, atomic warfare, and any other kind of warfare the other side dreamed up.

Copies of the classified report were sent out to thirty-seven or thirty-eight people, says CIA historian Larry A. Valero, including the Joint Chiefs of Staff. It was not known if President Truman received a copy of JCS 1696, as he was not on the distribution list.

One of the scientists on the JIOA list of one thousand was Dr. Kurt Blome. The Allies were unsure what to do with Hitler's biological weapons maker. Clearly, no discreet paperclip attached to Blome's file would be able to whitewash the reality of his inner-circle role as deputy surgeon general of the Third Reich. But if the United States were to go to war with the Soviet Union it would mean "total war" and, according to JCS 1696, would likely include biological warfare. America needed to "envisage" such a scenario and to plan for it, with both sword and shield. Dr. Blome had spent months at the Dustbin interrogation facility, Castle Kransberg, but had recently been transferred to the U.S. Army Military Intelligence Service Center at Darmstadt, located eighteen miles south of Frankfurt. In the summer of 1946, Dr. Blome was employed there by the U.S. Army "in the capacity of a doctor."

Dr. Kurt Blome's expertise was in great demand, but his future was as yet undecided. In his Posen laboratory, Blome had made considerable progress with live plague pathogens, including bubonic and pneumonic plague. How far that research progressed remained vague, likely because it would put an unwanted spotlight on human experiments many believed had taken place there. Blome repeatedly told investigators that he had intended to conduct human trials but never actually did.

Blome's American counterpart in wartime plague-weapon research was a left-leaning bacteriologist named Dr. Theodor Rosebury. During the war, the biological weapons work Rosebury conducted was so highly classified that it was considered as secret as atomic research. He had worked at a research facility outside Washington, D.C., called Camp Detrick. It was like Posen, only bigger. Detrick had 2,273 personnel working on Top Secret biological warfare programs. Like Blome, Rosebury worked on bubonic plague. Rosebury's colleagues worked on 199 other germ bomb projects, including anthrax spore production, plant and animal diseases, and insect research, in an effort to determine which bugs were the most effective carriers of certain diseases.

Almost no one in America had any idea that the U.S. Army had been developing biological weapons until January 3, 1946, when the War Department released a slim, sanitized government monograph called the Merck Report. That is when the American public learned for the first time that the government's Top Secret program had been "cloaked in the deepest wartime secrecy, matched only by the Manhattan Project for developing the Atomic Bomb." The rationale behind developing these kinds of weapons, the public was told, was the same as it had been with America's wartime chemical weapons program. If the Nazis had used biological agents to kill Allied soldiers, the U.S. military would have been prepared to retaliate in kind. Yes, the war was over, Americans were now told, but unfortunately there was a new and emerging threat out there, the Merck Report warned, an invisible and insidious evil capable of killing millions on a vast, unknowable scale. America's bioweapons program needed to continue, the Merck Report made clear. America may have won the war with the mighty atomic bomb, but biological weapons were the poor man's nuclear weapon. Biological weapons could be made by just about any country "without vast expenditures of money or the construction of huge production facilities." A bioweapon could be hidden "under the guise of legitimate medical or bacteriological research," the report said.

The Merck Report was written by George W. Merck, a forty-eight-year-old chemist and the owner of Merck & Co., a pharmaceutical manufacturer in New Jersey. Merck had served Presidents Roosevelt and Truman as civilian head of the U.S. biological warfare effort during the war. Merck & Co. made and sold vaccines, notably the first commercial U.S. smallpox vaccine, in 1898, and, in 1942, it manufactured penicillin G, among the first general antibiotics. During World War II, U.S. soldiers received smallpox vaccines. The man diagnosing the bioweapons threat, George Merck, was also the man whose company might sell the government the solution to combat the threat. In 1946 this was not looked upon with the same kind of scrutiny as it might have been decades later, because America's military-industrial complex had yet to be broadly revealed.

The Merck Report did not specify what kind of germ warfare had been researched and developed by the United States, only that it took place at a Top Secret facility "in Maryland." Camp Detrick was a 154-acre land parcel surrounded by cow fields about an hour's drive north of Washington, and under the jurisdiction of the former Chemical Warfare Service, then the Chemical Corps. After the release of the Merck Report, and coupled with the ominous "total war" prospects as outlined in the Clifford Report and the JCS 1696, Congress would grant vast sums of money to the Chemical Corps for biological weapons research and Detrick would expand exponentially.

Dr. Kurt Blome had information that was coveted by the bacteriologists at Camp Detrick, and plans were being drawn up to interview him. And then, in the summer of 1946, a totally unexpected event occurred inside the Palace of Justice in Nuremberg that would render hiring Dr. Kurt Blome for Operation Paperclip an impossibility, at least for now. In the tenth month of the trial, the Soviets presented a surprise witness, putting an unforeseen and unwelcomed focus on Dr. Kurt Blome. The witness was Major General Dr. Walter Schreiber—the shield to Blome's sword.

On August 12, 1946, prosecutors for the Soviet Union stunned the tribunal by announcing that a missing Nazi general and the former surgeon general of the Third Reich, Major General Walter P. Schreiber, was going to testify against his colleagues at Nuremberg.

Schreiber was brought forth as a witness to show that, after the Nazis' crushing defeat at Stalingrad, the Third Reich was planning to retaliate by conducting a major biological warfare offensive against Soviet troops. This was the first time information about biological warfare was being presented at the trial. The Allies were not informed that Schreiber was going to be a witness. U.S. prosecutors asked to interview him in advance of his testimony, but the Soviets denied the request. The medical war crimes investigator, Dr. Leopold Alexander, appealed to speak with Schreiber himself, to no avail.

During the war, Schreiber held the position of wartime chief of medical services, Supreme Command, Wehrmacht. He was the Third Reich's highest-ranking major general who was also a physician, and he held the title Commanding Officer of the Scientific Section of the Military Medical Academy in Berlin. Most important, he was the physician in charge of vaccines. Schreiber had been in Soviet custody for sixteen months, since April 30, 1945, when he was captured by the Red Army in Berlin. According to Schreiber, he had opened a large military hospital in a subway tunnel around the corner from the Führerbunker and had been tending to "several hundred wounded" soldiers when the Soviets captured him. After being taken by train to the Soviet Union, he was moved around various interrogation facilities, he said, until he ended up in Lubyanka Prison, the notorious penitentiary located inside KGB headquarters in Moscow. Nuremberg was Schreiber's first public appearance since war's end. No one, including his family members, had any idea where he had been.

That the former surgeon general for the Third Reich was now going to help Russian prosecutors send his former Nazi colleagues to the gallows for their crimes was as ironic as it was outrageous. Dr. Schreiber was on the U.S. Army's Central Registry of War Criminals and Security Suspects list. Along with many of those colleagues, and since war's end, Major General Walter Schreiber had been sought by the Allied forces for possible war crimes. If the Americans had located him and had a chance to interrogate him, he might well have been in the dock at Nuremberg facing the hangman's noose alongside his colleagues. Instead, here he was, testifying against them.

It was Monday morning, August 26, 1946, when Dr. Schreiber took the stand: Day 211 of the trial. Colonel Y. V. Pokrovsky, deputy chief prosecutor of the Soviet Union, presented Schreiber to the court as a witness. German defense lawyer Dr. Hans Laternser, counsel for the General Staff and Army High Command (Oberkommando des Heeres, or OKH), objected, on the grounds that the evidence was submitted too late. "The Tribunal is not inclined to admit any evidence so late as this, or to reopen questions which have been gone into fully before the Tribunal," said the tribunal's president, Lord Justice Sir Geoffrey Lawrence, "but, on the other hand, in view of the importance of the statement of Major General Schreiber and its particular relevance, not only to the case of certain of the individual defendants but also, to the case of the High Command, the Tribunal will allow Major General Schreiber to be heard as a witness." In other words, Schreiber was a high-ranking Nazi general and the judges wanted to hear what he had to say. With that, Schreiber was brought to the witness stand.

He stood five foot six and weighed 156 pounds. A long-sleeve shirt covered the saber scars on his right forearm. At fifty-three years old, Schreiber had been an active military doctor since 1921. He was an expert in bacteriology and epidemiology and had traveled the globe studying infectious diseases, from a plague outbreak in West Africa to a malaria epidemic in Tunisia. He claimed to understand medical aspects of desert warfare and winter warfare better than anyone else in the Third Reich. He was also an expert in biological and chemical weapons, in typhus and malaria epidemics, and in the causes and conditions of jaundice and gangrene. When war came Schreiber, an affable and ambitious son of a postal worker, was catapulted to the top of the Wehrmacht's medical chain of command. This was in part due to the Reich's zealously germ-phobic core. Schreiber's vast knowledge of and experience with hygiene-related epidemics made his expertise highly valuable to the Nazi Party. He was put in charge of the research to fight infectious disease, and also in remedial means to defend against outbreaks. In this way, he became privy to Reich medical policy from the top down. In 1942, Hermann Göring also put General Schreiber in charge of protection against gas and bacteriological warfare, which is how he came to be in charge of the Reich's program to produce vaccines.

"I swear by God the Almighty and Omniscient that I will speak the pure truth and will withhold and add nothing," Schreiber promised when taking the oath. Major General G. A. Alexandrov, the Russian assistant prosecutor, asked Schreiber what event had compelled him to testify at Nuremberg.

"In the second World War things occurred on the German side which were against the unchangeable laws of medical ethics," Schreiber said from the stand. "In the interests of the German people, of medical science in Germany, and the training of the younger generation of physicians in the future, I consider it necessary that these things should be thoroughly cleared up. The matters in question are the preparations for bacteriological warfare, and they give rise to epidemics and experiments on human beings." Schreiber was saying that the Reich had been preparing for offensive biological warfare and had used the *Untermenschen*—the subhumans—as guinea pigs.

General Alexandrov asked General Schreiber why he had waited so long to come forth—if he had been coerced into making statements or if he had taken the initiative himself.

“I myself took the initiative,” Schreiber declared. “When I heard the report of Dr. Kramer and Professor Holzlehner [Holzlöhner] here in Nuremberg I was deeply shocked at the obviously perverted conceptions of some of the German doctors,” he said. Holzlöhner and Schreiber had been close friends and colleagues. After Schreiber learned about Holzlöhner’s murderous freezing experiments—at the Nuremberg conference of 1942, “Medical Problems of Sea Distress and Winter Distress”—he invited Holzlöhner to come give the same lecture at the Military Medical Academy in Berlin.

But how had Dr. Schreiber heard these revelatory reports if he was in prison in the Soviet Union? Alexandrov asked. This had to have been a question on many people’s minds.

“In the prison camp German newspapers were available in the club room,” Schreiber claimed, making the notorious Lubyanka Prison sound like an aristocratic men’s club as opposed to the draconian penal institution that it was. “I had to wait and see whether this Court itself might not raise the question of bacteriological warfare,” Schreiber said. “When I saw that it did not raise this question I decided in April to make this statement.”

“Witness,” said General Alexandrov, “will you kindly tell us what you know about the preparations by the German High Command for bacteriological warfare?”

“In July 1943, the High Command of the Wehrmacht called a secret conference, in which I took part as representative of the Army Medical Inspectorate,” said Schreiber. “A bacteriological warfare group was formed at this meeting. As a result of the war situation the High Command authorities now had to take a different view of the question of the use of bacteria as a weapon in warfare from the one held up till now by the Army Medical Inspectorate,” Schreiber testified. “Consequently, the Führer, Adolf Hitler, had charged Reich Marshal Hermann Goering to direct the carrying out of all preparations for bacteriological warfare, and had given him the necessary powers,” Schreiber said. In this statement, Schreiber was contradicting the generally accepted notion that Hitler had never authorized his generals to use chemical or biological weapons against Allied troops. In fact, no chemical or biological weapons were ever used in World War II, which made it strange that Schreiber had been brought all the way to Nuremberg to testify to something that was ultimately irrelevant to the war crimes trial. Why, then, was Schreiber really there?

"At [this] secret conference it was decided that an institute should be created for the production of bacterial cultures on a large scale," Schreiber said, "and the carrying out of scientific experiments to examine the possibilities of using bacteria [in warfare]. The institute was also to be used for experimenting with pests which could be used against domestic animals and crops, and which were to be made available if they were found practicable."

"And what was done after that?" Major General Alexandrov asked rather pointedly.

"A few days later, I learned… that Reich Marshal Goering had appointed the Deputy Chief of the Reich Physicians' League, [Dr. Kurt] Blome, to carry out the work, and had told him to found the institute as quickly as possible in or near Posen."

"And what do you know about the experiments which were being carried out for the purpose of bacteriological warfare?" General Alexandrov asked.

"Experiments were carried out at the institute in Posen," Schreiber said ominously, referring to Blome's institute for plague research. "I do not know any details about them. I only know that aircraft were used for spraying tests with bacteria emulsion, and that insects harmful to plants, such as beetles, were experimented with, but I cannot give any details. I did not make experiments myself."

Alexandrov asked if the army high command knew about these experiments; Schreiber replied, "I assume so."

"Will you kindly tell us precisely what the reason was for the decision of the OKW to prepare for bacteriological warfare?" Alexandrov asked.

"The defeat at Stalingrad," Schreiber said, "led to a reassessment of the situation, and consequently to new decisions. It was no doubt considered whether new weapons could be used which might still turn the tide of war in our favor."

"So why didn't the Reich use biological weapons?" Alexandrov asked.

Instead of answering the question, General Schreiber went into minute detail regarding a meeting in March 1945 with Dr. Blome. "In March 1945, Professor Blome visited me at my office at the Military Medical Academy," Schreiber recalled. "He had come from Posen and was very excited. He asked me whether I could accommodate him and his men in the laboratories at Sachsenburg so that they could continue their work there; he had been forced out of his institute at Posen by the advance of the Red Army. He had had to flee from the institute and he had not even been able to blow it up. He was very worried at the fact that the installations for experiments on human beings at this institute, the purpose of which was obvious, might be easily recognized by the Russians for what they were. He had tried to have the institute destroyed by a Stuka bomb but that, too, was not possible. Therefore, he asked me to see to it that he be permitted to continue work at Sachsenburg on his plague cultures, which he had saved," Schreiber said.

Dr. Blome wasn't on trial. Why was Schreiber spending so much of his testimony talking about Dr. Blome? "During his visit Blome told me that he could continue his work at an alternative laboratory in [Geraberg,] Thuringia," Schreiber said, "but that this was not yet completed. It would take a few days or even a few weeks to complete it, and that he had to have accommodation until then. He added that if the plague bacteria were to be used when the military operations were so near to the borders of Germany, when units of the Red Army were already on German soil, it would, of course, be necessary to provide special protection for the troops and the civilian population. A serum had to be produced. Here again time had been lost, and as a result of all these delays it had never been possible to put the idea into effect."

Was Schreiber's testimony focused against Dr. Kurt Blome out of some kind of personal rivalry or vendetta? On the witness stand, Schreiber also fingered a number of other Reich medical doctors, none of whom was on trial. In addition to naming Kramer and Holzlöhner as organizers of the freezing experiments, Schreiber said that a man called Dr. Ding "had artificially infected [KZ prisoners] with typhus using typhus-infected lice" and that the "talented surgeon" Dr. Karl Gebhardt had "carried out cranium operations on Russian prisoners of war and had killed the prisoners at certain intervals in order to observe the pathological changes." Schreiber testified that the "Defendant Goering had ordered these experiments," and that the "Reichsführer-SS Himmler had kindly made available the subjects for the experiments." But in a disproportionate amount of his testimony Schreiber circled back to Dr. Blome's plague research for the Reich.

Dr. Hans Laternser was given an opportunity to cross-examine the witness. Laternser asked Schreiber if his testimony for the Russian assistant prosecutor was prepared. Schreiber said no.

"Was any advantage promised to you for making this report?" Laternser asked.

"No, nothing was promised me. I would refuse to allow anybody to hold out advantages to me," Schreiber said.

"Well, let us assume that such a devilish idea as actually to use bacteria did exist. Would that not have involved your troops in serious danger?" Laternser asked.

"Not only our troops, but the whole German people; for the refugees were moving from East to West. The plague would have spread very swiftly to Germany."

"I have one more question, Witness. Did you ever write down your objections to this bacteriological warfare?" Dr. Laternser asked.

Schreiber said, "Yes, in the memorandum which I mentioned before."

Dr. Laternser asked, "When did you submit that memorandum?"

"In 1942; may I now—"

"That is enough," Laternser interrupted. He'd caught Schreiber in a lie. "The conference took place in July 1943!"

Laternser had no further questions. The tribunal adjourned. Perhaps embarrassed by the fact that their star witness had been caught in a lie, the Russians did not call Schreiber back to the stand. Dr. Alexander made yet another attempt to interview him, again without success. The Russians said they were sorry, but Dr. Schreiber had already been transported back to Moscow. It was a curious event, but something did result from Schreiber's bizarre testimony. Two days later, a military vehicle pulled into the U.S. Army Military Intelligence Service Center at Darmstadt, where Blome had been employed by the army as a post doctor. Dr. Blome was arrested and taken to the prison complex at the Nuremberg Palace of Justice. A "confidential change of status report" now listed him as a prisoner in the custody of the 6850 Internal Security Detachment, Nuremberg, where Colonel Burton Andrus served as prison commandant.

Circumstance had altered Blome's future. He was off the Paperclip list and instead placed on a list of defendants who would face prosecution at the upcoming Nuremberg doctors' trial.

One hundred and fifty miles from Nuremberg, at the Army Air Forces classified research facility in Heidelberg, the massive undertaking forged ahead. For an entire year now, day in and day out, fifty-eight German physicians in white lab coats had been working on an array of research projects in state-of-the-art laboratories studying human endurance, night vision, blood dynamics, exposure to bomb blast, acoustic physiology, and more. They all reported to Dr. Strughold, who reported to the facility's commanding officer, Colonel Robert J. Benford. High-ranking military officers regularly visited the facility, including its two founders, General Malcolm Grow and Colonel Harry Armstrong. Grow was working in Washington, D.C., as the air surgeon (soon to be the first surgeon general of the U.S. Air Force). Harry Armstrong had returned to Texas where he was now commandant at the School of Aviation Medicine (SAM) at Randolph Field.

Working alongside the Nazi doctors in Heidelberg were dozens of army translators preparing English-language versions of the physicians' reports. By September 1946 there were over a thousand pages of documents completed. Soon everything would be compiled into a two-volume monograph for the Army Air Forces entitled *German Aviation Medicine, World War II.*

Work progressed well for Strughold's staff of doctors in Heidelberg until the institute was thrown into psychological chaos. On September 17, 1946, military security officers with the Counter Intelligence Corps, 303 Detachment, arrived at the center with five arrest warrants in hand. Doctors Theodor Benzinger, Siegfried Ruff, Konrad Schäfer, Hermann Becker-Freyseng, and Oskar Schröder were wanted by the International Military Tribunal, Nuremberg, for "War Crimes as suspect." The men were arrested and taken to the prison complex at the Nuremberg Palace of Justice, to the same wing where Dr. Blome was already incarcerated. If any of this were to come to light—that the U.S. Army Air Forces had been employing war crimes suspects and had them conducting military research at a facility inside Germany, expressly prohibited by Allied peace agreements—Harry Armstrong's institute would be shut down, Operation Paperclip would be exposed, and the U.S. Army would have an international scandal on its hands.

The Nazi doctors' trial was the first of the so-called subsequent trials to take place after the trial of the major war criminals at Nuremberg. It began on December 9, 1946. Unlike with the first trial, the twenty-three defendants at the doctors' trial—twenty doctors and three SS bureaucrats—were virtually unknown figures in the eyes of the American public. What was known, from earlier press coverage, was that these proceedings would put lurid Nazi science on trial. In the words of chief prosecutor General Telford Taylor, Nazi doctors had become proficient in the "macabre science" of killing. Torturous medical experiments conducted on concentration camp prisoners included freezing experiments, high-altitude tests, mustard gas research, seawater drinkability tests, malaria research, mass sterilization, and euthanasia. The *New York Times* called the doctors' crimes "beyond the pale of even the most perverted medicine" and cautioned that some details were difficult to report because they were impossible to comprehend. The *New York Times* cited one particularly grotesque example. Perfectly healthy people, "Jews and Slavs," had been murdered at the request of SS physician Dr. August Hirt for a university skeleton collection of the *Untermenschen*. This was the same anatomist named by Dr. Eugen Haagen in papers discovered by Alsos officers in Strasbourg in November 1944. Hirt, an expert in dinosaur anatomy, had committed suicide before the trial. The defendants ran the gamut from "the dregs of the German medical profession" to doctors who had once been internationally esteemed, like Dr. Kurt Blome.

On October 12, 1946, the *Stars and Stripes* newspaper, which operated from inside the Pentagon, listed the individual names of the doctors charged—a list that included the five Luftwaffe doctors who had been arrested at the U.S. Army Air Forces Aero Medical Center: Theodor Benzinger, Siegfried Ruff, Konrad Schäfer, Hermann Becker-Freyseng, and Oskar Schröder. In a matter of weeks, these physicians had gone from being employed by the U.S. Army to being tried by the U.S. military for war crimes. The ultimate judicial punishment was on the line: Each doctor faced a possible death sentence.

The following week, inside the prison complex at the Nuremberg Palace of Justice, there was a strange occurrence involving Dr. Benzinger. In Benzinger's pretrial investigation he admitted being aware of the fact that medical experiments were taking place at concentration camps and that nonconsenting test subjects had been murdered in the process. Benzinger also admitted that he had attended the October 1942 conference in Nuremberg, "Medical Problems of Sea Distress and Winter Distress," where data from murdered people was openly discussed among ninety Luftwaffe doctors. During Benzinger's Nuremberg incarceration, prosecutors revealed to him that they had a new detail regarding his accessory to medical crimes, namely, the "motion picture of the record of the [medical murder] experiments" that had been shown at a private screening at the Air Ministry. Benzinger did not deny that he had been one of a select group of doctors invited by Himmler to attend this film screening; nor did he deny that he was one of nine persons chosen by Himmler to host the event. Benzinger was part of an elite inner circle of Luftwaffe doctors favored by the Reichsführer-SS, he conceded, but that was not a crime. But prosecutors also had a document that suggested Benzinger was far more implicated in the crimes than he let on. "After the showing of the film, most of the spectators withdrew and a small group of doctors remained behind [including] Benzinger. They asked Rascher… for a verbal report on the experiments," the document read. Benzinger insisted that all he did was listen. That there was no evidence of his having participated in any of the medical murders and that there were no documents and no eyewitnesses that could prove otherwise.

On October 12, 1946, Dr. Theodor Benzinger was announced as a defendant in the forthcoming doctors' trial. And then, just eleven days later, on October 23, 1946, Benzinger was released from the Nuremberg prison without further explanation. He was returned directly to the custody of the Army Air Forces, as stated in his declassified Nuremberg prisoner file. After spending a little over a month in the Nuremberg jail, Benzinger was back in Heidelberg continuing his U.S. Army research work. There was no explanation as to why Benzinger was dropped from the list of defendants in the upcoming doctors' trial. It would take decades for an important clue to be revealed, by Nuremberg trial expert and medical history professor Paul Weindling. As it turned out, in the fall of 1946, Benzinger had recently completed a paper on pilot physiology concerning stratospheric, or extremely high-altitude, aircraft. "The US [Army] Air Forces, Wright Field circulated his report on this topic in October 1946—just weeks after his detention and release" from the prison complex at the Nuremberg Palace of Justice, Weindling explains. The suggestion is that perhaps someone in the Army Air Forces felt Benzinger's expertise was more in the "national interest” than was trying him for war crimes. One of the Nuremberg prosecutors, a Boston attorney named Alexander G. Hardy, was outraged when he learned of Benzinger’s release and insisted that the “interrogations were sloppy.”

Back at the AAF Aero Medical Center in Heidelberg, the arrests of the five doctors on war crimes charges had everyone on edge. The classified programs taking place there began to quietly wind down. While Doctors Ruff, Schäfer, Hermann Becker-Freyseng, and Schröder faced judgment at Nuremberg, thirty-four of the doctors remaining at the center prepared for shipment to the United States under Operation Paperclip. One of the first doctors in the group to head to America for work, in February 1947, was Dr. Theodor Benzinger.

At Nuremberg, while the doctors from Heidelberg remained incarcerated in one wing of the prison awaiting trial, preparations of another kind were also going on. The trial of the major war criminals was over. On the morning of October 1, the judges took turns reading the verdicts: nineteen convictions and three acquittals of the twenty-two accused major war criminals (one, Bormann, in absentia). That same afternoon, the tribunal pronounced what sentences would be imposed: twelve death sentences, three life sentences, and four lengthy prison terms. Albert Speer, the only defendant who pled guilty, was sentenced to twenty years.

The doctors from Heidelberg were housed in a separate wing of the prison where pretrial interviews would continue for another two months. Also in custody inside the prison complex at the Palace of Justice was Dr. Otto Ambros. Ambros would be tried in a subsequent trial, Case VI or the Farben trial, which was scheduled to begin in the summer of 1947.

As commandant of the facility, Colonel Burton Andrus was in charge of all prisoners, including those who were soon to be hanged. The condemned had roughly two weeks to live. Andrus described the surreal atmosphere of the last days at Nuremberg for the Nazis who had been sentenced to death. Ribbentrop, Kaltenbrunner, Frank, and Seyss-Inquart took communion and made a last confession to Father O’Conner, the Nuremberg priest. Göring bequeathed his shaving brush and razor to the prison barber. Streicher penned six letters. Ribbentrop read a book. Keitel requested that a German folk song be played on the organ as he was hanged. “On the night of 14th

October, I made arrangements for the tightest security to be put around the prison," Colonel Andrus recalled. "I wanted the condemned men to know only at the very last minute that their time had come to be hanged."

The Nuremberg gymnasium was chosen as the location where the executions would take place. Each night, the U.S. Army prison guards played basketball there to blow off steam. The night before the gallows were constructed Andrus allowed the usual game to go on. "Late at night," remembered Andrus, "when the sweating players had trotted off to their showers, the grim-faced execution team passed through a door specially cut into the catwalk wall, and began their tasks in the gymnasium. A doorway had been cut into the blind side of the building so that no prisoner would see scaffolding being carried in." The condemned prisoners were also shielded from seeing the stretchers that would soon carry their corpses away.

While the gallows were being built, drama unfolded in the prison. Göring had requested death by firing squad instead of hanging—to be hanged was something he considered beneath him. His plea was considered by the Allied Control Commission and rejected. The night before he was to be hanged, Göring swallowed a brass-and-glass vial of potassium cyanide that he had skillfully managed to keep hidden for eighteen months. In a suicide note, he explained how he had managed to keep the vial hidden from guards by alternating its hiding place, from his anus to his flabby navel. War crimes investigator Dr. Leopold Alexander would later learn that it was Dr. Rascher of the notorious Dachau experiments who had originally prepared Göring's suicide vial for him.

Shortly after midnight in the early morning hours of October 16, 1946, three sets of gallows had been built and painted black. Each had thirteen stairs leading up to a platform and crossbeam from which a noose with thirteen coils hung. The executioner was Master Sergeant John C. Woods, a man whose credentials included hanging 347 U.S. soldiers over a period of fifteen years for capitol crimes including desertion. At 1:00 a.m. Colonel Andrus read the names of the condemned out loud. After each name, a bilingual assistant said, *"Tod durch den Strang,"* or death by the rope.

One by one the Nazis were hanged. At 4:00 a.m. the bodies were loaded onto two trucks and driven to a secret location just outside Munich. Here, at what was later revealed to be the Dachau concentration camp, the bodies of these perpetrators of World War II and the Holocaust were cremated in the camp's ovens. Their ashes were raked out, scooped up, and thrown into a river.

When asked by *Time* magazine to comment on the hangings, executioner John C. Woods had this to say: "I hanged those ten Nazis… and I am proud of it… I wasn't nervous.… A fellow can't afford to have nerves in this business.… The way I look at this hanging job, somebody has to do it."

So it went, just one year and a few months after the end of World War II.

Some Nazis were hanged. Others now had lucrative new jobs. Many, like the four German doctors from the Army Air Forces Aero Medical Center at Heidelberg, now awaiting trial at Nuremberg, were in the gray area in between. Was the old German proverb true? *Jedem das Seine.* Does everyone get what he deserves?

CHAPTER THIRTEEN

Science at Any Price

The same week that the major war criminals convicted at Nuremberg were hanged and their ashes thrown into a river, Undersecretary of State Dean Acheson called Samuel Klaus into his office at the State Department to discuss Operation Paperclip. At issue was the fact that JIOA had circulated a new Top Secret directive, JIOA 257/22. The way in which Paperclip participants' would now receive visas had officially been changed. Instead of allowing State Department representatives to conduct preexaminations in Europe prior to visa issuance, as was required by law, that process would be completed here in America by the commissioner of the Immigration and Naturalization Service (INS). "The Department of State would accept as final, the investigation and security reports prepared by JIOA, for insuring final clearance of individuals concerned," wrote JIOA director Colonel Thomas Ford. Acheson and Klaus were both aware that JIOA had wrested control of how visas were issued and had done so in defiance of U.S. law. But the president had signed off on the directive. Operation Paperclip was now officially a "denial program," meaning that any German scientist of potential interest to the Russians needed to be denied to the Russians, at whatever cost.

There were now 233 Paperclip scientists in the United States in military custody. The State Department was told to expect to receive, in the coming months, their visa applications and those of their family members. The information contained within the scientists' OMGUS security dossiers promised to be the "best information available." Samuel Klaus knew this vague new language meant military intelligence officers could withhold damaging information about certain scientists from State Department officials. The pipeline to bring ardent Nazis and their families into the United States was open wide.

Three weeks later the *New York Times* reported for the first time that there were Nazi scientists living in America under a secret military program. Its sources were the Russian army's Berlin-based newspaper, *Tägliche Rundschau*, and the Russian-licensed East German newspaper *Berliner Zeitung*. In a follow-up article, an anonymous source told the newspaper that "one thousand additional German scientists" were on the way. "All were described as volunteers and under contract," the article reported. "Their trial periods are generally six months, after which they can apply for citizenship and have their dependents brought to the United States." *Newsweek* magazine revealed that the secret military program's classified name was Project Paperclip.

Rather than deny the story, the War Department decided to go public with a sanitized version of its program. They would also make several scientists at Wright Field "available to press, radio and pictorial services." An open house was organized with army censors releasing details and photographs that would foster the appearance that all of the German scientists in the United States were benign. At Wright Field the "dirigible expert" Theodor Knacke gave a demonstration with a parachute. The eighty-year-old Hugo Eckener, former chairman of the Zeppelin Company, explained to reporters that thanks to his army contract he was now working with Goodyear on a new blimp design. Alexander Lippisch, inventor of the Messerschmitt Me 163 jet fighter, was photographed in a suit holding up a scale model of a sleek, futuristic, delta-wing jet, his hawkline nose staring down the end of the airplane. The emphasis on Lippisch was not that his jet fighter held records for Allied shoot-downs in the war but that his aircraft set international records for speed. Ernst Eckert, an expert in jet fuels, discussed high-speed gas turbines in his thick German accent. It was by mistake that the War Department allowed Eckert to chat with reporters, considering that his JIOA file listed him as a Nazi ideologue and former member of the SS and the SA. The program was becoming unwieldy, and no matter how hard the JIOA tried to maintain control, they could not keep an eye on all things. One American officer, assigned as a spokesman for the Germans, told reporters he so enjoyed working with German scientists, "I wish we had more of them."

Other German scientists at Wright Field were kept away from reporters, particularly those men who had been members of Nazi Party paramilitary squads like the SA and the SS. In aerodynamicist Rudolf Hermann's intelligence file, it was written that during the war, while working inside the wind tunnels in Kochel, Bavaria, Hermann had held morning roll calls in his brown SA uniform, and that he often gave speeches in support of Hitler. The information in engineer Emil Salmon's OMGUS security report was even more incriminating. At the aircraft factory where he had worked, Salmon had been known to carry a rifle and wear an SS uniform. "He also belonged to the Storm Troops [*sic*] (SA) from 1933–1945 and held the position of Troop Leader (*Truppfuehrer*)," read one memo. When bringing him to America, the army stated, "This Command is cognizant of Mr. Salmon's Nazi activities and certain allegations made by some of his associates in Europe," namely, that during the war Emil Salmon had been involved in burning down a synagogue in his hometown of Ludwigshafen. But Emil Salmon was now at Wright Field because the Army Air Forces found his knowledge and expertise "difficult, if not impossible, to duplicate." Emil Salmon built aircraft engine test stands.

For various press events, the army provided photographs of some of the more wholesome-looking German scientists—definitely no one with a dueling scar. There were pictures of white-haired men playing chess, window-shopping outside a Dayton, Ohio, toy store, smoking cigarettes, and sunning themselves on army grounds. To be invited to the open house, a reporter had to agree in advance to clear his or her story with army censors before going to press. The military placed its own article in the *Stars and Stripes* purporting to tell the official story: None of the Germans had ever been Nazis; the men were under strict supervision here in the United States; they were all outstanding scientists and technicians "vital to national security"; they were moral family men.

The news stories about the scientists at Wright Field generated a flurry of response, including newspaper editorials and letters to congressmen. A Gallup Poll the following week revealed that most Americans believed that bringing one thousand more German scientists to America was a "bad idea." Journalist and foreign affairs correspondent Joachim Joesten was outraged by the very idea of Paperclip, writing in the *Nation*, "If you enjoy mass murder, but also treasure your skin, be a scientist, son. It's the only way, nowadays, of getting away with murder." Rabbi Steven S. Wise, president of the American Jewish Congress, penned a scathing letter to Secretary of War Patterson that was made public. “As long as we reward former servants of Hitler, while leaving his victims in D. P. [displaced-persons] camps, we cannot even pretend that we are making any real effort to achieve the aims we fought for.” Eleanor Roosevelt became personally involved in protesting Operation Paperclip, organizing a conference at the Waldorf-Astoria hotel with Albert Einstein as honored guest. The former First Lady urged the United States government to suspend visas for all Germans for twelve years. When professors at Syracuse University learned that a new colleague, Dr. Heinz Fischer, an expert in infrared technology and a former member of the Nazi Party, had been sent by the army to work in one of their university laboratories under a secret military contract, they wrote an editorial for the *New York Times*. “We object not because they are citizens of an enemy nation, but because they were and probably still are Nazis.”

The Society for the Prevention of World War III—a group of several thousand writers, artists, scholars, and journalists—did not mince words in their December journal. The group had been set up during the war to advocate for harsh punitive measures against a nation they perceived as inherently aggressive and militaristic, and against individuals they believed had substantially profited from the Nazi regime. “These German ‘experts’ performed wonders for the German war effort. Can one forget their gas chambers, their skill in cremation, their meticulous methods used to extract gold from the teeth of their victims, their wizardry in looting and thieving?” The society, which counted William L. Shirer and Darryl Zanuck among its members, urged all fellow Americans to contact the War Department and demand that Hitler’s scientists be sent home.

One engineer at Wright Field actually was about to be sent home. But tunnel engineer Georg Rickhey’s downfall came not because of the demands made by the public but because of the actions by a fellow German.

In the fall of 1946, of the 233 Nazi scientists in America, 140 were at Wright Field. With that many single men living together in isolation, the Hilltop became divided into social cliques. The Nazi businessman Albert Patin continued to serve as Colonel Putt’s ears and eyes among the Germans, reporting to Putt about the Germans’ needs and complaints. In this arrangement Patin wielded power at the Hilltop. With the arrival of former Mittelwerk general manager Georg Rickhey, in the summer of 1946, Albert Patin saw a business opportunity. Rickhey was a former employee of the Speer ministry. He served as the general manager of the Mittelwerk slave labor facility in Nordhausen where the V-2 rockets were built. Colonel Beasley of the United States Strategic Bombing Survey had evacuated Rickhey to London, and after that work was completed, Rickhey was hired to work at Wright Field. When asked by military intelligence officers what his job was, Rickhey said, "Giving my knowledge and experience in regard to planning, construction and operating underground factories."

Georg Rickhey was a tunnel engineer, and his value to the U.S. military was the knowledge he had gained while overseeing vast underground building projects for the Reich. A memo in Rickhey's dossier, written by the army's Office of the Deputy Director of Intelligence, kept his most powerful negotiating secret a secret: "He was in charge of all tunnel operations directly under Hitler's headquarters in Berlin." Georg Rickhey had overseen the building of the Führerbunker, where Hitler lived the last three months and two weeks of his life. With its more than thirty rooms, cryptlike corridors, multiple emergency exits, and hundreds of stairs, all located more than thirty feet under Berlin, the Führerbunker was considered an engineering tour de force. The army was impressed by how well Hitler's Führerbunker had withstood years of heavy Allied bombing and was interested in learning from Georg Rickhey how to build similar underground command centers of its own.

As the Cold War progressed, the U.S. Army would begin the secret construction of such facilities, notably ones that could continue to function in the aftermath of a chemical, biological, or nuclear attack. It would take decades for journalists to reveal that, starting in the early 1950s, several sprawling, multifloor, underground command centers had been secretly built for this purpose, including one in the Catoctin Mountains, called Raven Rock Mountain Complex, or Site R, and another in the Blue Ridge Mountains, called Mount Weather.

Georg Rickhey's expertise in underground engineering was not limited to the construction of the Führerbunker. During the war, he had also served as a director of the Reich's Demag motorcar company, where he oversaw the construction of a massive underground facility where tanks had been assembled. And as general manager of the Mittelwerk, he oversaw the construction of the rocket assembly facility near Nordhausen. In his army intelligence dossier, it was noted that Rickhey had overseen the underground construction of more than 1,500,000 square feet of space. At Wright Field, Rickhey was meant to start consulting with American engineers on underground engineering projects for the army. But that work was slow and Rickhey was given a second job. Despite poor English skills, Rickhey was put in charge of examining V-2 documents captured at Nordhausen and, in his words, the “rendering of opinions on reports.”

In the late summer of 1946 Albert Patin and Georg Rickhey started running a black market operation at the Hilltop, selling booze and cigarettes to their colleagues at premium prices. Rickhey had years of experience in wartime black market operations. Military intelligence would later learn that during the war, what little rations the slave laborers were allotted by the Speer ministry, Rickhey would sometimes sell off at a price. At Wright Field, Rickhey and Patin’s black market business quickly expanded, and the men enlisted outside assistance from Rickhey’s sister, Adelheid Rickhey, who was living in a hotel in New Jersey at the time. Adelheid Rickhey agreed to move to Ohio to help the men expand their black market business into Dayton and beyond. Because the Germans’ mail was monitored, it did not take long for the higher-ups at Wright Field to learn what was going on, but the Army Air Forces took no action against either man. The business continued into the fall of 1946, when it came to a head.

In their private time Rickhey and Patin liked to gamble. They also liked to drink. The two men regularly hosted parties at the Hilltop, staying up late drinking and playing cards. One night, in the fall of 1946, a sixty-three-year-old German aircraft engineer named Hermann Nehlsen decided he had had enough. It was a little after midnight during the second week of October when Rickhey, Albert Patin, and a third man were playing cards. The noise woke up Hermann Nehlsen, who knocked on the door and told the three cardplayers to quiet down. After Nehlsen’s second request was ignored, he opened the door, walked into the room, and turned off the lamp on the card table. Rickhey, by Nehlsen’s account, was drunk. As Nehlsen was leaving, Rickhey lit a candle and laughed at his German colleague. A man “could still play cards with a good kosher candle,” Rickhey joked.

The incident was a tipping point for Hermann Nehlsen, and he went to Colonel Putt to file a formal complaint against the two men. There was more to the story, Nehlsen told Colonel Putt. Rickhey was a war criminal.

He had been the primary person behind a mass hanging at Nordhausen, the hanging by crane of a dozen prisoners, and had bragged about it on the ship ride coming over to the United States. As for Albert Patin, Hermann Nehlsen told Colonel Putt he was an ardent Nazi as well, a member of the SA. Patin's companies used slave laborers from concentration camps. What Hermann Nehlsen did not know was that Colonel Putt was not interested in the past histories of the German scientists in the Army Air Forces' employ. Or that Putt had a gentleman's agreement with Albert Patin and had been using him to keep an eye on the other Germans at the Hilltop. Colonel Putt said he would look into the allegations. Instead, Putt had Nehlsen watched for future security violations. Hermann Nehlsen remained angry about the incident and wrote so in a letter to a friend in New York City named Erwin Loewy. Perhaps Nehlsen knew that all of his mail was read by military screeners, or maybe he did not. Either way, what Nehlsen wrote to Loewy caught the eye of Wright Field mail censors. Nehlsen's letter was turned over to the intelligence division to be analyzed. Several weeks later, Hermann Nehlsen violated security and left Wright Field for a weekend visit with a relative in Michigan. Colonel Putt reported the violation to Air Material Command headquarters and arranged to have Nehlsen transferred to Mitchel Field, an air force base in New York.

But Hermann Nehlsen's letter to Erwin Loewy about Georg Rickhey had a life of its own. It made its way to Army Air Forces Headquarters, in Washington, D.C., where it was read by Colonel Millard Lewis, Executive Assistant Chief of Air Staff-2. The allegations were serious, Colonel Lewis decided. They involved alleged war crimes. Lewis sent a memorandum to the director of intelligence for the War Department General Staff summarizing the situation and advising that an investigating officer be assigned to look into the matter. "Mr. Nehlsen stated that Dr. Georg Rickhey, age 47, specialist in the field of engineering and production of guided missiles, was employed in the underground plant at Nordhausen as a strong Nazi Party member, where in 1944, twelve foreign workers were strung up on a cross beam and raised by a crane in the presence of the group of workers," and killed, read Colonel Lewis's memorandum. "One of the group who acted as an observer asserted that Dr. Rickhey was the chief instigator for the execution." The Pentagon assigned an Air Corps Major named Eugene Smith to look into the Georg Rickhey case.

Back at Wright Field, Colonel Putt likely believed that the allegations against Rickhey had fallen by the wayside. Meanwhile, Hermann Nehlsen had been banished to Mitchel Field. In January 1947 Putt recommended that Rickhey be given a long-term military contract for employment at Wright Field. That request was authorized, and on April 12, 1947, Georg Rickhey signed a new, five-year contract with the War Department. Separately, and without Putt's knowledge, the Rickhey investigation was moving forward. At Army Air Forces Headquarters in Washington, Major Eugene Smith made preparations to travel to various military bases for interviews. It was Smith's job to talk to Rickhey's former colleagues from Nordhausen, to write up his findings, and to file a report. Colonel Putt did not learn about this investigation until Major Smith arrived at Wright Field. Putt suggested Major Smith discuss Rickhey's case with Captain Albert Abels, the officer in charge of the Paperclip scientists at the Hilltop, so that Abels could clear things up. Abels told Major Smith that the stories were "petty jealousy" between scientists. Just gossip among men. Major Smith was unconvinced. He headed to Mitchel Field to interview Hermann Nehlsen and other German scientists who might have knowledge regarding the Rickhey case.

Hermann Nehlsen stood by his original story. "In 1944, twelve foreign workers were simultaneously hanged by being strung up on a cross beam and raised by a crane in the presence of the workers," Nehlsen swore in an affidavit. "Dr. Rickhey was the chief instigator for the execution," meaning it was Rickhey's idea to hang the men. A second witness emerged at Mitchel Field, a former engineer on the Nordhausen rocket assembly lines named Werner Voss. Voss also testified that Rickhey was involved in the hangings, and he provided important new details that added context to the executions. Shortly before the hangings, Voss said, British airplanes had dropped leaflets urging the Nordhausen slave laborers to revolt. A group of them did revolt, and those men were among the ones hanged. The execution was a public event, Voss said, meant to intimidate other slave workers into subservience. These were serious allegations of war crimes. Major Smith needed corroboration, and for that, he headed to Fort Bliss, Texas. Smith had been told by the army that he would be able interview Wernher von Braun as well as some of the other men who had worked closely with Georg Rickhey inside the Nordhausen tunnels.

At Fort Bliss, in the evenings, the German rocket specialists gathered in a clubhouse built in a grove of cottonwood trees. There, they played cards while drinking American cocktails and beer. They strung hammocks between the trees and enjoyed balmy desert nights. Once a month, most of the Germans went into El Paso as a group to shop and have a restaurant meal. The nightmarish environment at Nordhausen, which the majority of the rocket engineers had participated in, must have seemed like another world—until Major Smith arrived to take official depositions for the U.S. Army and ask the men to recollect what those days had been like.

Major Smith's first interviews would be with Wernher von Braun and his brother Magnus von Braun. But after Major Smith arrived at Fort Bliss, he was told that both von Braun brothers were out of town. Smith interviewed Günther Haukohl instead. Haukohl had been the original designer of the Nordhausen rocket assembly line and, like Wernher von Braun, was an officer with the SS. Günther Haukohl told Major Smith that he had no clear memories about what happened in the tunnels in the last months of the war, but, yes, prisoners were abused. Rickhey's involvement is "probably a rumor," Haukohl said. V-2 engineers Hans Palaoro and Rudolph Schlidt seconded Haukohl's position, repeating the idea that the end of the war was nothing but a blur. Engineer Erich Ball, who also worked on the rocket assembly lines at Nordhausen, told Major Smith that he had witnessed two sets of prisoner hangings in the tunnels but that Georg Rickhey had not been involved in either of them. Major Smith accepted that the men might not be able to remember details about what had gone on, but surely as engineers they could remember the layout of the facility. Smith asked Haukohl, Schlidt, Palaoro, and Ball to use their engineers' precision and help him create an accurate illustration of the work spaces inside the Nordhausen tunnels, including where the rockets were assembled and where the hangings occurred. This was an important artifact for the investigation.

Next, Major Smith interviewed the former Mittelwerk operations director Arthur Rudolph. Like Georg Rickhey, Arthur Rudolph had authority over the Mittelwerk's Prison Labor Supply office, which was the unit responsible for getting food rations to the slave laborers. In his interview, Arthur Rudolph first denied ever seeing prisoners abused. Major Smith showed Arthur Rudolph the illustration that had been drawn by Rudolph's Nordhausen colleagues Haukohl, Schlidt, Palaoro, and Ball. Major Smith pointed out to Arthur Rudolph that Rudolph’s office was directly adjacent to where the twelve so-called political prisoners had been hanged from the crane. As Arthur Rudolph continued to deny ever seeing prisoners abused, Smith found his testimony increasingly suspicious. Everyone else interviewed admitted to having seen some prisoner abuse. Rudolph was adamant: “I did not see them punished, beaten, hung or shot,” he told Major Smith.

Smith approached the question in a different manner. He asked Rudolph if he could recall anything about the twelve men who had been hanged from the crane. This public execution, Smith said, had been confirmed by many of Rudolph’s colleagues, and Smith was trying to put together an accurate portrait of what had happened, and when. Rudolph replied, “[O]ne [dying prisoner] lifted his knees, after I got there.” In other words, Rudolph had witnessed the executions. Major Smith was now convinced that the truth about what happened at Nordhausen was being covered up, collectively, by the group, and that Arthur Rudolph knew a lot more than he let on. But as Smith noted in his report, the subject of the investigation was Georg Rickhey, not Arthur Rudolph. “Mr. Rudolph impressed the undersigned as a very clever, shrewd individual,” Smith wrote. “He did not wish to become involved in any investigations that might involve him in any way with illegal actions in the underground factory and as a result, was cautious of his answers.”

Smith returned to Washington and advised U.S. Army Air Forces Headquarters of his findings. In Germany, a serendipitous incident occurred at this same time. William Aalmans, the Dutch citizen who had been working on the U.S. War Crimes Investigation Team, had been hunting down SS officers from Dora-Nordhausen for an upcoming regional war crimes trial. Aalmans had managed to locate only eleven out of three thousand SS officers who had run the concentration camp. Aalmans was the man who had interviewed many of the newly liberated prisoners back in April 1945, and he was also the individual who had found the Mittelwerk employee telephone list tacked to the tunnel wall. The two names at the top of that list were Georg Rickhey and Arthur Rudolph. Aalmans had no idea that both men had been recruited into Operation Paperclip. In Germany, no one Aalmans interviewed claimed to know the whereabouts of either man. Then, one afternoon in May 1947, Aalmans was taking a break from his Nazi hunting work, reading the *Stars and Stripes* newspaper in the sunshine, when, as he told journalist Tom Bower decades later, "I just saw a tiny headline, 'German Scientist Applies for American Citizenship.' " The name mentioned was Georg Rickhey, Aalmans explained. "I screamed for joy and rushed into the head office shouting, 'We've found him!' " Within three days the Georg Rickhey matter had been escalated to the attention of the Joint Chiefs of Staff.

On May 19, 1947, an arrest warrant was issued for Georg Rickhey on orders from the War Crimes Branch, Civil Affairs Division, in Washington. "Georg Rickhey is wanted as a principal perpetrator in the Nordhausen Concentration Camp Case," the document read. Rickhey's immediate reaction was to claim he was being falsely accused. This was a case of mistaken identity, Rickhey declared. In response, the Office of the Deputy Director of Intelligence, Headquarters, European Command, had this to say: "The Dr. Georg Rickhey now employed at Wright Field and the Georg Rickhey engineer at Nordhausen are one and the same person. Dr. Karl Rahr, chief physician at Nordhausen, has been interrogated and states that he knew Rickhey, that he is now in his late 40's [or] early 50's and that there was only one Georg Rickhey at Nordhausen. This Group is making arrangements to have Rickhey returned to Germany for trial in the Nordhausen Concentration camp case." The War Department's Intelligence Division assigned the chief of security at Wright Field, Major George P. Miller, the role of escorting Rickhey back to Germany. Rickhey's five-year contract was terminated. He was instead going to be a defendant in the Dora-Nordhausen war crimes trial.

On June 2, 1947, JIOA deputy director Bosquet N. Wev wrote to J. Edgar Hoover, the powerful director of the FBI, alerting him of the situation and sending along Rickhey's classified dossier. If the public learned that an Operation Paperclip scientist had been returned to Germany to stand trial for war crimes, the JIOA, the Army, the War Department, and the FBI would all have a lot of explaining to do. It was in everyone's interest to keep the Georg Rickhey fiasco under wraps.

On August 7, 1947, Georg Rickhey appeared as one of nineteen defendants in the Dora-Nordhausen trial. The Nazis were charged with the deaths of at least twenty thousand laborers who were beaten, tortured, starved, hanged, or worked to death while being forced to build V-2 rockets. The trial, which took place inside a former SS barracks adjacent to the Dachau concentration camp, lasted four months and three weeks. The prosecution requested that Wernher von Braun be allowed to testify at the trial, but the army said it was too much of a security risk to allow von Braun to travel to Germany. The Russians could kidnap him, the U.S. Army said. They did not say that von Braun had recently traveled to Germany to marry his cousin and bring her back to Texas with him. At the end of the trial, fifteen of the nineteen defendants were found guilty. Four, including Georg Rickhey, were acquitted. “Then, in an unprecedented move, the Army classified the entire trial record,” explains journalist Linda Hunt. The record would remain secret from the public for another forty years. There was far too much at stake for the U.S. Army to allow the information about what had really gone on in the Nordhausen tunnel complex to get out to the public. The trial record would call attention to the backgrounds of the 115 rocket scientists at Fort Bliss. The future of the United States missile program was too important. The Russians had their rocket scientists and America needed hers, too.

Shortly after Rickhey was acquitted, back in Washington, D.C., the office of the secretary of the air force received a call from the State Department. The official identified himself as Henry Cox. The air force captain who took Cox’s call wrote up a memo of what was said.

“After exchanged pleasantries, [Cox] inquired if we had ever returned a specialist to Europe for trial. I thought a moment and, realizing that the Rickhey case was in the public domain and in all probability facts known to the State Department since his sister made inquiries, I did not dare deny the story. I, therefore, told Mr. Cox that one Air Force case had been returned to Europe under suspicion, that my recollection was he was cleared; that in any event we did not desire to take further chances on the case and that he had not been returned to the United States.” The State Department appeared to have bought the story.

Rickhey was gone, but there was no shortage of Nazis coming to Wright Field to work. On August 22, 1947, one of the Reich’s top ten pilots, Siegfried Knemeyer, arrived. This was the daring pilot and engineer whom Albert Speer had hoped would help him to escape to Greenland and whom Hermann Göring had called “my boy.”

"Knemeyer is very popular with his fellow nationals since he is a good mixer and free of vanity," read a memo in his intelligence dossier. "He is a diligent worker with an inventive mind. He is absorbed by his work and especially enthusiastic about participating in aerial tests." Soon Knemeyer's wife, Doris, and their seven children arrived in America to join him and to become U.S. citizens. The family moved into a large, drafty farmhouse on Yellow Springs Road. Doris Knemeyer hated provincial life in Dayton, Ohio. In Berlin, the Knemeyers had a grand home in the Charlottenburg district, with many servants to help take care of the Knemeyer brood. Raising seven children by herself in America was not what Doris Knemeyer had in mind. The difficulties at home did not go unnoticed by Knemeyer's supervisors at Wright Field.

"Since the arrival of his family he seems harassed and neglectful of his personal appearance," read an internal security report. But Knemeyer was determined to succeed. Assigned to the Communication and Navigation Laboratory at Wright Field, Knemeyer found his stride. He began to make significant contributions to navigational instruments for his new employer, the U.S. Air Force—no longer part of the army anymore. Knemeyer is "a genius in the creation of new concepts in flight control," wrote Colonel John Martin, Knemeyer's superior at the lab.

Knemeyer's friend Werner Baumbach, Hitler's general of the bombers, had been scheduled to come to Wright Field to work alongside Knemeyer, but an entry in Baumbach's intelligence dossier noted that there had been a last-minute change: "Lt. Colonel Baumbach has since been substituted," it read. Baumbach went to Argentina instead, to train fighter pilots for Juan Perón. Whether he had been dropped from Operation Paperclip or Juan Perón had offered him a better deal remains a mystery. Werner Baumbach died a few years later after an airplane he was testing crashed into the Río de la Plata, near Uruguay.

Also arriving at Wright Field in the summer of 1947 was General Walter Dornberger, newly released from England's Special Camp XI, outside Bridgend, South Wales (formerly Island Farm). Before turning General Dornberger over to the Americans, the British labeled him a "menace of the first order" and warned their Allied partners of his deceitful nature. While holding Dornberger for war crimes, British intelligence had eavesdropped on him and recorded what he said. When the Americans listened to these secret audio recordings, they, too, concluded that Hitler's former "chief of all rocket and research development" had "an untrustworthy attitude in seeking to turn ally against ally." Still, Dornberger signed a Paperclip contract, on July 12, 1947, just weeks after his release from prison. Dornberger's skill at manipulation was put to use by Army Ordnance, which had him write classified intelligence briefs. America needed to develop missiles regardless of what any naysayers might think, Dornberger believed.

"Russia strives now only for time to prepare for war before the United States," Dornberger wrote in a classified budget pitch, financed by the Ordnance Department, in 1948. "The United States must decide upon a research and development program that will guarantee satisfactory results within the shortest possible time and at the least expense. Such a program must be set up even if its organization appears to violate American economic ideals and American traditions in arms development," Dornberger wrote. At least it could be said that Dornberger remained true to his totalitarian-leaning principles—his belief that democratic ideals and traditions could be ignored in the quest for military supremacy. That the U.S. Army condoned Dornberger's idea appears never to have been made public before; his pitch was presented to Ordnance Department officials at the Pentagon. A copy of the classified document was found in 2012 in Dornberger's personal papers kept in a German state archive.

Opposition to Operation Paperclip gained momentum with America's scientific elite. On February 1, 1947, the Federation of American Scientists (FAS) met in New York City to ask President Truman to put an end to it. The American scientists saw the Nazi scientist program as a "drastic step in the search for military power." When it was learned that some of the one thousand additional German scientists on the Paperclip recruiting list were being hired for short-term military work followed by longer-term positions at American universities, many were outraged. "Certainly not wishing to jeopardize the legitimate needs of the national defense, and not advocating the policy of hatred and vengeance toward our former enemies, we nevertheless believe that a large-scale importation of German scientists… is not in keeping with the best objectives of American domestic and foreign policy," the members of FAS wrote. One American scientist was more forthright. "Certainly any person who can transfer loyalties from one idealology [*sic*] to another upon the shifting of a meal ticket is not better than Judas!” he said.

Albert Einstein was the most esteemed figure to publicly denounce Operation Paperclip. In an impassioned letter, written on behalf of his FAS colleagues, Einstein appealed directly to President Truman. “We hold these individuals to be potentially dangerous.… Their former eminence as Nazi Party members and supporters raises the issue of their fitness to become American citizens and hold key positions in American industrial, scientific and educational institutions.”

Another important figure among the opposition was the nuclear physicist Hans Bethe. Bethe had fled Nazi Germany in 1933 and had worked on the Manhattan Project during the war. In the *Bulletin of the Atomic Scientists*, Bethe and Dr. Henri Sack, a colleague from Cornell University, posed a series of simple questions about Operation Paperclip. “Was it wise, or even compatible with our moral standards to make this bargain, in light of the fact that many of the Germans, probably the majority, were die-hard Nazis?” Bethe and Sack asked. “Did the fact that the Germans might save the nation millions of dollars imply that permanent residence and citizenship could be bought? Could the United States count on [the German scientists] to work for peace when their indoctrinated hatred against the Russians might contribute to increase the divergency between the great powers? Had the war been fought to allow Nazi ideology to creep into our educational and scientific institutions by the back door?” Their final question struck at the dark heart of the Nazi scientist program. “Do we want science at any price?”

The condemnation of Operation Paperclip by these leading American scientists and others had a ripple effect on the general public. Reporters began searching for leads about individual German scientists’ wartime activities, but this proved an almost impossible effort given the program’s classified nature. Frustrated by the lack of information, some Americans sent threatening letters addressed to the German scientists at Wright Field and Fort Bliss. The army tightened security and surveillance. In Washington, D.C., the War Department was rightly concerned that intense opposition and bad publicity had put the entire program in jeopardy of collapse, and in the winter of 1947 the War Department forbade the further release of information about the program.

Despite the precautions, two individuals from the program at Fort Bliss were exposed by an angry public as “real Nazis”: Mr. and Mrs. Herbert Axster. Herbert Axster, a former lieutenant colonel in the Wehrmacht, had been a Nazi Party member since 1940. He was not a scientist but rather a patent lawyer and an accountant. At Peenemünde he worked as General Dornberger’s chief of staff. His wife, Ilse Axster, was a leader of NS-Frauenschaft, a Nazi Party organization for women. During a routine investigation of the Axsters conducted for their visa applications, neighbors in Germany told army intelligence officers that Mrs. Axster was a particularly sadistic Nazi. On the Axsters’ estate, the neighbors said, the couple kept forty “political prisoners,” Russians and Poles, whom they used as slave laborers. The neighbors said Mrs. Axster was known to use a horsewhip on her servants. This information was first passed on to Rabbi Stephen Wise of the American Jewish Congress and then to the press. “These scientists and their families are supposed to have been ‘screened,’ Wise wrote to the War Department. “The Axsters prove that this ‘screening’ is a farce and the War Department ‘screeners’ are entirely incapable of performing this task.” The Department of Justice withdrew Herbert Axster’s application for legal immigration, but the Axsters were not sent home. Eventually they left Fort Bliss and Herbert Axster opened a law firm in Milwaukee, Wisconsin.

The War Department cabled USFET demanding an explanation as to how the Axsters got through the screening process. A classified cable was sent back, stating that a few “ardent Nazis” may have slipped into the program based on “unavailability of records” immediately after the war.

CHAPTER FOURTEEN

Strange Judgment

The doctors' trial was the first of twelve subsequent war crimes trials at Nuremberg wherein the U.S. government prosecuted individuals in specific professions—including industrialists, lawyers, and generals—who had served the Third Reich. The first trial, called the trial of the major war criminals, was prosecuted by the four Allied powers. When it ended, in October 1946, tensions between the Soviet Union and the United States had escalated to the degree that cooperation between the two nations was no longer possible. The subsequent twelve trials took place at the Palace of Justice, as the others had, but with only American judges and prosecutors. The twenty-three defendants in the doctors' trial were charged with murder, torture, conspiracy, and atrocity in the name of medical science. "Mere punishment of the defendants," said Brigadier General Telford Taylor in his opening statement, "can never redress the terrible injuries which the Nazis visited on these unfortunate peoples." But General Taylor reminded the tribunal and the world that one of the central purposes of the trial was to establish a record of proof of the crimes, "so that no one can ever doubt that they were fact and not fable; and that this court, as agent of the United States and as the voice of humanity, stamps these acts, and the ideas which engendered them, as barbarous and criminal."

Dr. Leopold Alexander, the Viennese-born American psychiatrist who had first learned of the Luftwaffe freezing experiments, helped General Taylor write his opening speech. Dr. Alexander's official title was expert consultant to the secretary of war, but in layman's terms he was the most influential person involved in the doctors' trial after Telford Taylor. Dr. Alexander worked tirelessly to supply information and answers for the prosecution team as they prepared to go to trial. He conducted hundreds of hours of pretrial interrogations with the defendants and interviewed scores of witnesses and victims. He was able to converse in both German and English and he took extensive notes in both languages. Throughout the trial Dr. Alexander delivered presentations of evidence and cross-examined witnesses. When the trial was over he would be given credit for writing the Nuremberg Code.

Of the twenty-three defendants, no one outside a small group of American medical military elite had any idea that four of the accused had already worked for the U.S. Army under Paperclip. This fact would remain secret for forty years. Neither Siegfried Ruff, nor Konrad Schäfer, Hermann Becker-Freyseng, nor Oskar Schröder mentioned this damning fact during the trial.

Siegfried Ruff was one of the few physicians who admitted he'd overseen the medical murders at Dachau but said he did not perform any of the experiments himself. In his defense, he said he didn't believe that what he did was wrong. "It was understood that concentration camp inmates who had been condemned to death would be used in the experiments, and as compensation they were to have their sentences commuted to life in prison," Ruff told the judges. "Personally, I would not consider these experiments as immoral especially in war time." This line of defense, that extraordinary times called for extraordinary measures, was also used by Schröder and Becker-Freyseng.

The strange case of Konrad Schäfer played a unique role in Operation Paperclip. Having invented the Schäfer process to separate salt from seawater, Schäfer was clearly aware that concentration camp prisoners were going to be used in the testing process. Schäfer's superior, Oskar Schröder, chief of medical services for the Luftwaffe, confirmed this under oath, "In May 1944, in order to discuss what further steps should be taken, Becker-Freyseng and Schäfer attended [a] meeting as representatives of my office. As a result of the meeting it was decided to conduct further experiments on human beings being supplied by the Reichsführer-SS, Heinrich Himmler." It was Becker-Freyseng who drew up the letter, which was sent to Himmler, requesting more prisoners to conduct experiments on. But Schäfer said he never actually went to Dachau and no evidence placing him there survived the war. As for eyewitness testimony, all but one of the saltwater experiment victims had been killed. The sole survivor, Karl Höllenrainer, was located by Dr. Alexander and put on the witness stand. Höllenrainer did not recognize Konrad Schäfer but he recognized one of his codefendants in the dock. Höllenrainer's testimony proved to be one of the most dramatic events in the doctors' trial.

It was June 27, 1947, and Karl Höllenrainer stood trembling in the hushed courtroom. Small in stature, dark-haired, and nervous, he was a broken man.

"Now, witness," asked U.S. Prosecutor Alexander G. Hardy, "for what reason were you arrested by the Gestapo on May 29, 1944?"

"Because I am a Gypsy of mixed blood," Höllenrainer said.

Höllenrainer's crime was that he had fallen in love with and married a German girl, a violation of the infamous Nuremberg law that prohibited a non-Aryan from marrying or having sexual relations with a German citizen. After being arrested, Höllenrainer was sent to three different concentration camps, first Auschwitz, then Buchenwald, and finally Dachau, where he was selected to take part in the seawater experiments being performed by Luftwaffe.

At Dachau, Höllenrainer was deprived of food, forced to drink chemically processed seawater, and then monitored for signs of liver failure and madness. One experiment among the many stood out in his memory. Without using anesthesia, a Luftwaffe doctor had removed a piece of Karl Höllenrainer's liver in order to analyze it. Now, from the witness stand, Höllenrainer was asked to identify the Nazi doctor who'd performed this liver puncture on him.

"Do you think you would be able to recognize that doctor if you saw him today?" Prosecutor Hardy asked.

"Yes," said Höllenrainer. "I would recognize him at once."

Höllenrainer stared across the courtroom, his eyes focused sharply on one of the twenty-three defendants sitting in the dock, Dr. Wilhelm Beiglböck, 40, the Luftwaffe doctor in charge of the saltwater experiments. Beiglböck had deep crevices at each side of his mouth and five pronounced dueling scars running across his left cheek.

As Höllenrainer stared at Dr. Beiglböck, "everyone in the courtroom waited tensely," recalls Vivien Spitz, a young American court reporter whose job it was to take down the testimony. Spitz sat in front of the judges, within clear view of the witnesses and defendants. Höllenrainer "was a little man and I watched him stand up," she explains. The prosecutor asked

Höllenrainer to proceed to the defendants' dock to identify the doctor who'd removed a piece of his liver without anesthesia.

"He paused for just a moment," Vivien Spitz remembers, "with his eyes seeming to be fixed on a doctor in the second row of the prisoners' dock. Then, in a [flash] he was gone from the witness stand!"

Karl Höllenrainer sprang into action. To Vivien Spitz's eye, Höllenrainer seemed to leap over the German defense counsels' tables and "appeared to be almost flying through the air toward the prisoners' dock." In his right hand, stretched up high in the air, Karl Höllenrainer clutched a dagger, Vivien Spitz recalls. "He was reaching for Dr. Beiglböck, the consulting physician to the German Air Force."

There was shock in the courtroom. Confusion and mayhem. The Nazis' defense attorneys scrambled to get out of Höllenrainer's way. Three American military police rushed forward and grabbed Höllenrainer. Vivien Spitz remembers how security "subdued" Karl Höllenrainer just before he reached Beiglböck, "preventing him from delivering his own brand of justice."

It took minutes for order to be restored in the courtroom. The military police set Karl Höllenrainer before Presiding Judge Walter Beals, who was furious. Seventy years old, overworked and in failing health, Judge Beals clung to the idea that his primary role at Nuremberg was to educate the German people in the ways of American democracy and due process.

"Witness!" thundered the judge. "You were summoned before this Tribunal as a witness to give evidence."

"Yes," Karl Höllenrainer meekly replied.

"This is a court of justice," roared Beals.

"Yes," said Höllenrainer, trembling worse than before.

"And by your conduct in attempting to assault the defendant Beiglböck in the dock, you have committed a contempt of this court!"

Karl Höllenrainer pleaded with the judge. "Your Honor, please excuse my conduct. I am very upset—"

The judge interrupted and asked if the witness had anything else to say in extenuation of his conduct.

"Your Honor, please excuse me. I am so worked up. That man is a murderer," Höllenrainer begged, pointing to the expressionless Dr. Beiglböck. "He has ruined my whole life!"

The judge told Höllenrainer that his statement did not make his conduct forgivable. That he had insulted the court. That it was the judgment of the tribunal that he be confined in the Nuremberg prison for a period of ninety days, as punishment for insulting due process.

Karl Höllenrainer spoke in a tidy, pleading voice. The power and conviction that had allowed him to almost fly across the courtroom with the intent of stabbing Dr. Beiglböck with his dagger was gone. Now Höllenrainer was on the edge of tears. "Would the Tribunal please forgive me?" Höllenrainer asked. "I am married and I have a small son." He pointed at Dr. Beiglböck. "This man is a murderer. He gave me salt water and he performed a liver puncture on me. I am still under medical treatment." Karl Höllenrainer pleaded for mercy from Judge Beals. "Please, do not send me to prison."

The judge saw no room for clemency. Instead, Beals asked a guard to remove Karl Höllenrainer from the courtroom, referring to him as a "prisoner" now.

"My heart broke," Vivien Spitz recalls. All she could do was lower her head. She was a professional court reporter and it was inappropriate for anyone to see that she was crying. Sixty years later, when recollecting the incident, she still wondered why Judge Beals did what he did. "It was impossible to be dispassionate.… Why ninety days? Why not one or two days—just to make a point? After all the torture the witness had suffered it seemed to me to be an outrageous elevation of process over substance."

Karl Höllenrainer was removed from the courtroom. He was led down a long, secure corridor and into the prison complex, the same location where Dr. Beiglböck and all of the other Nazi war criminals were being held. It had been Dr. Alexander who had made the decision to put Karl Höllenrainer on the witness stand, and in his journal he wrote about how conflicted he felt about his decision. Dr. Alexander had spoken with Höllenrainer ten days before he testified against Beiglböck and was aware how upset Höllenrainer was, noting in a report how his hands shook. Karl Höllenrainer shared with Dr. Alexander that he suffered from a "tremendous feeling of inner rage" whenever he thought about what had happened to him at the Dachau concentration camp. Höllenrainer felt powerless, he said. He could close his eyes and "see the doctor in front of him who… had ruined his life and killed three of his friends." Dr. Alexander knew how powerful Höllenrainer's testimony would be. He was the only known victim of the saltwater experiments to have survived. Witness testimony was powerful, as his proved to be.

The thought of him being confined in a prison with the very doctors who had tortured him was unacceptable to Dr. Alexander, and that night he went to Judge Beals to advocate on Höllenrainer's behalf. The judge showed clemency and released him, on bail, into Alexander's custody. Four days later, on July 1, 1947, Karl Höllenrainer was allowed to continue his testimony. He rose to the occasion and provided harrowing details about what dying of thirst does to a man. He described how his friends "foamed at the mouth." How "they had fits of raving madness" before succumbing to an agonizing death.

One of the Nazi doctors' defense lawyers, Herr Steinbauer, was given an opportunity to cross-examine Karl Höllenrainer. Steinbauer accused Höllenrainer of lying.

"How can there be foam on a mouth which is completely dried out?" Steinbauer asked.

Höllenrainer said he was telling the truth.

"Listen, Herr Höllenrainer," Steinbauer said, "don't be evasive as Gypsies usually are. Give me a clear answer as a witness under oath."

Höllenrainer attempted to answer.

"You Gypsies stick together, don't you?" Steinbauer interrupted.

The exchange could have served as a metaphor for the whole trial. Through the eyes of a Nazi it was and always would be the *Übermenschen* versus the *Untermenschen.* It was why General Taylor's opening remarks sent such a powerful message. It wasn't just the acts of the Nazi doctors that were "barbarous and criminal" but the very ideas that had engendered such acts.

Late at night, Dr. Alexander wrote a private letter to General Telford Taylor stating how he felt about the Nazi doctors on trial. "I feel that all of the accused today, Schaefer, Becker-Freyseng and Beiglböck, would admit that this problem [seawater drinkability] could have been solved in one afternoon with a piece of jelly [and] a salt solution." Instead, Dr. Alexander wrote, "All of these men on the dock slaughtered for gain of scientific renown [and] personal advancement. They were like Tantalus, a mythical, ambitious ruler who slew his own child for reward."

In a letter to his wife, Dr. Alexander penned a fascinating reveal: "Dr. Beiglböck from Vienna, turns out to have been in the same class with me during our final year at medical school," before the war. The way Dr. Alexander remembered it, Beiglböck was caught cheating and had to leave the school. "He does not recognize me," Dr. Alexander told his wife, "but I regularly recognize him." Two men whose professional lives had begun so similarly had taken such radically diffent paths.

There was another dramatic turning point in the doctors' trial, and that involved the case of Dr. Kurt Blome. Blome was admittedly the director of biological weapons research for the Reich, which was not in itself a crime. But there were scores of documents in which Blome discussed the need to conduct experiments on human beings so as to further plague research at the Bacteriological Institute in Posen, where he was in charge. Blome's defense, some of which he argued himself, was that he intended to experiment on humans but that he never actually performed the experiments. Intent, said Blome, was not a crime. The prosecution had been unable to find any witnesses to testify against Blome, and Blome used this fact in his defense. There was the testimony of Major General Walter Schreiber against Blome from the first Nuremberg trial, but the Soviets had refused to let Dr. Alexander interview Dr. Schreiber himself, so the veracity of his testimony was never independently verified. The prosecution presented many documents in which Blome discussed with Himmler his plans to experiment on humans. But there were no documents showing Blome's actual guilt. There was another element of Blome's defense that the prosecution was completely unprepared for, and that was Dr. Blome's wife, Bettina, a physician and bestselling author. Frau Blome meticulously researched experiments that were conducted by the U.S. Office of Scientific Research and Development (OSRD) during the war. This included malaria experiments on Terre Haute federal prison inmates. She also uncovered Dr. Walter Reed's famous nineteenth-century yellow fever research for the U.S. Army, in which volunteer human test subjects had died. The defense counsel, Robert Servatius, picked up on this theme of U.S. Army human experimentation where Blome's wife left off.

Servatius had located a *Life* magazine article, published in June of 1945, that described how OSRD conducted experiments on eight hundred U.S. prisoners during the war. Servatius read the entire article, word for word, in the courtroom. None of the American judges was familiar with the article, nor were most members of the prosecution, and its presentation in court clearly caught the Americans off guard. Because the article specifically discussed U.S. Army wartime experiments on prisoners, it was incredibly damaging for the prosecution. “Prison life is ideal for controlled laboratory work with humans,” Servatius read, quoting American doctors who had been interviewed by *Life* reporters. The idea that extraordinary times call for extraordinary measures, and that both nations had used human test subjects during war, was unsettling. It pushed the core Nazi concept of the *Untermenschen* to the side. The Nuremberg prosecutors were left looking like hypocrites.

On August 6, 1947, the verdicts were read. Seven defendants were given death sentences, and nine were given prison sentences of between ten years and life, including Beiglböck (fifteen years), Becker-Freyseng (twenty years), and Schröder (life). Seven Nazi doctors were acquitted, including Blome, Schäfer, Ruff, and Weltz. Of Blome’s acquittal, the Nuremberg judges noted, “It may well be that defendant Blome was preparing to experiment on human beings in connection with bacteriological warfare, but the record fails to disclose that fact, or that he ever actually conducted the experiments.”

Konrad Schäfer returned to work at the Army Air Forces Aero Medical Center in Heidelberg where he assumed Dr. Strughold’s former position as chief of staff. Strughold had already set sail for America as part of Operation Paperclip and was now in Texas, serving as “professional advisor” to Colonel Armstrong, the commandant of the School of Aviation Medicine at Randolph Field. Armstrong had set up a new aeromedical research laboratory there and was in the process of bringing dozens of Hitler’s former doctors to Texas to conduct medical research. Hubertus Strughold’s job description also included “overall supervision of the professional activities of the German and Austrian scientists [to be] employed by the School.” Meanwhile, the FBI was having difficulty getting approval for Strughold’s visa application for immigration into the United States. The Bureau had conducted a special inquiry into Dr. Strughold back in Germany. “One informant, who had known the subject,” investigators learned, said that Strughold “had expressed the opinion that the Nazi party had done a great deal for Germany. He [Strughold] said that prior to Nazism, the Jews had crowded the medical schools and it had been nearly impossible for others to enroll.” To counterbalance this derogatory depiction of Strughold, Dr. Konrad Schäfer was asked to write a letter of recommendation for his former boss. In a sworn statement written just a few weeks after Schäfer was acquitted at Nuremberg, Schäfer praised Dr. Strughold for his “ethical principles” while conducting research work. “I also know that he strictly refused to take part [in] or permit scientific research work which was damaging to human health,” Schäfer wrote. The following year, Dr. Konrad Schäfer would be on a boat headed for America, an Operation Paperclip contract in hand.

As for Dr. Blome, he was seen as a highly desirable recruit for Operation Paperclip. Blome allegedly knew more about bubonic plague research than anyone else in the world. But, given his former position in Hitler’s inner circle, coupled with the fact that Blome had worn the Golden Party Badge, bringing him to America as part of Operation Paperclip remained too difficult for the U.S. Army to justify. But as the Cold War gained momentum and intense suspicion of the Soviets increased, even someone like Kurt Blome would eventually be deemed eligible for Operation Paperclip.

PART IV

"Only the commander understands the importance of certain things, and he alone conquers and surmounts all difficulties. An army is nothing without the head."

—Napoleon

CHAPTER FIFTEEN

Chemical Menace

It had been nearly a year since State-War-Navy Coordinating Committee Paper No. 275/5 authorized JIOA to import one thousand Nazi scientists from Germany so as to deny them to the Russians. For the JIOA, things were not happening nearly fast enough. The number of Operation Paperclip scientists who had come to America in this time frame had nearly doubled, from 175 in March 1946 to 344 in February 1947, but none of these scientists had been granted visas yet. JIOA officials perceived State Department official Samuel Klaus to be the man most responsible for the holdup. On February 27, 1947, Klaus was called into a meeting in the Pentagon with his military counterparts. There, JIOA director Colonel Thomas Ford told Klaus that he had a list of German scientists already in the United States whose visas needed to be expedited. He asked Samuel Klaus to sign a waiver that would allow JIOA to begin this process.

Klaus refused to rubber-stamp anything. "I told him that of course I could do no such thing and that certification presupposed that the Department should have an opportunity to pass judgment of some kind before affixing the signature," he wrote in a State Department memo. Colonel Ford reminded Klaus of the language in a recent JIOA directive dated September 3, 1946. According to the directive, the Department of State was to "accept as final the investigation and security reports prepared by JIOA, for insuring final clearance of individuals concerned." Klaus told Ford that he would not sign a document that was essentially a blanket waiver of anything—that he would have to see the list of scientists first.

Ford told Klaus that the list was classified and that he did not have the clearance to see it. Klaus still refused to sign off on it. "Ford stated in various ways that if I did not accept the paper on behalf of the State

Department he would give the information to several senators who would take care of the Department," Klaus wrote of Ford's threat. Colonel Ford accused him of standing in the way of "national interest."

Colonel Ford's request was likely influenced by information the JIOA had recently received from the Office of the Military Government in Germany. After months of negative press attention directed at Operation Paperclip, spearheaded by the Federation of American Scientists and given further momentum by the American Jewish Congress's having identified the Axsters, of Fort Bliss, as "real Nazis," the War Department had asked OMGUS to conduct an internal review of the Operation Paperclip scientists working in the United States. It was OMGUS in Germany that oversaw the reports on all the German scientists issued by Army Intelligence, G-2. The War Department told OMGUS that it did not want to have to deal with any other exposés.

In response, OMGUS sent the War Department 146 security reports that could potentially create scandals were the information contained in them to be revealed. One report pertained to rocket engineer Kurt Debus. Debus was an ardent Nazi. He had been an active SS member who, according to the testimony of colleagues, wore his Nazi uniform to work. Most troublesome was the revelation in his OMGUS security report that during the war he had turned a colleague, an engineering supervisor named Richard Craemer, over to the Gestapo for making anti-Nazi remarks and for refusing to give Debus the Nazi salute. From Nazi-era paperwork, it was clear that Debus had initiated the investigation into Craemer. No one else had heard the conversation between the two scientists; Debus had gone home after work and taken it upon himself to write up a report of what was allegedly said, which he had then submitted, in transcript form, to the SS. The specifics of the incident made it impossible for the European Intelligence Division of the U.S. Army to cast Kurt Debus as an apolitical scientist trying to survive in a fascist world. Debus had gone out of his way to have a colleague arrested by the Gestapo. Craemer was subsequently prosecuted for treason. According to the report, and as a result of Debus's actions, on November 30, 1942, "Craemer was called to Gestapo H.Q. and confronted with this damning evidence." The army intelligence officer assigned to the case, Captain F. C. Groves, explained what happened next. On April 5, 1942, "he [Craemer] was dragged before a 'Sondergericht' [a special Nazi court] and sentenced to 2 years imprisonment." Groves's lengthy summary and analysis of the incident was sent to the Joint Chiefs of Staff. Debus's "deliberate and vicious denunciation [of] Craemer" was not something army intelligence could disavow, wrote Groves. It was a matter of public record in Germany.

An OMGUS report put von Braun on equally shaky footing, and army intelligence cautioned that, given his international profile, pushing the State Department for a visa for von Braun could cause problems. The report revealed that not only had von Braun been an SS officer with the high rank of SS-Sturmbannführer, or SS-Major, but his membership had been sponsored by Heinrich Himmler. In response, JIOA director Colonel Ford proposed contrary action to what was being advised. Ford believed that the best solution was to get these undesirables on an even faster track toward citizenship. If Klaus signed the waiver, JIOA could expedite the process.

With Klaus refusing to sign the documents, the situation escalated into a standoff. Klaus left the meeting and did some investigative work on his own. In the months that followed, he learned what had transpired with Georg Rickhey at Wright Field—that Rickhey had been returned to Germany to stand trial for alleged war crimes. The information had purposely been withheld from the State Department. In a memo to the undersecretary of state, Klaus defended his opposition to the JIOA's bullish requests to have him sign a blind waiver. "That the department's security fears were not baseless was recently demonstrated when a war criminal, wanted for war crimes of a bestial kind, was found here among these scientists, to be returned to Germany." Klaus was determined to hold his ground, but so was the JIOA. The difficulty for Klaus was that he was outnumbered.

The same month that the standoff between the State Department and the JIOA began, the Chemical Corps finally imported its first German scientist, an expert in tabun nerve agent synthesis named Dr. Friedrich "Fritz" Hoffmann. The U.S. Army had been interested in stockpiling tabun ever since it obtained its first sample from the Robbers' Lair, in the British zone in Germany, in May of 1945. The man in charge of the tabun nerve agent program for the Chemical Corps was Colonel Charles E. Loucks, commander of the Army Chemical Center at Edgewood Arsenal, in Maryland.

The fifty-one-year-old Colonel Loucks had dedicated his life to chemical warfare. Born and raised in California, Charles E. Loucks received a Bachelor of Arts degree from Stanford University and first became fascinated by war gas while serving in World War I. During his assignment with the first Gas Regiment at Edgewood Arsenal, in 1922, his life's path seemed to have been set. While Loucks distinguished himself as an expert rifleman, competing in National Rifle and Pistol matches and winning awards, chemical weapons fascinated him the most. He went back to school, to the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, to study chemical engineering, and in 1929 he received a Master of Science degree. By 1935 Loucks was the technical director of Chemical Warfare Service, Research and Development, at Edgewood. He had served as an officer with chemical weapons ever since.

Major Loucks spent the first year of World War II refining the U.S. military's standard-issue gas mask. He even worked with Walt Disney and the Sun Rubber Company to transform the spooky, apocalyptic-looking face protector into a more kid-friendly version with a Mickey Mouse face. In August 1942, Loucks was made commander of the Rocky Mountain Arsenal, outside Denver, Colorado, where he was in charge of planning, building, and operating the largest-capacity toxic manufacturing plant in the United States. Rocky Mountain produced mustard gas and incendiary bombs on an industrial scale—incendiary bombs that were dropped on Germany and Japan. Loucks was awarded the Legion of Merit for his war service.

During the war the U.S. Army had more than four hundred battalions ready for chemical combat. If chemical warfare broke out, the army expected it would involve mustard gas. Sixty thousand soldiers trained in chemical warfare were sent into battle with gas masks and protective suits, carrying a small card that explained what to do in the event of a chemical attack. Fortunately, World War II ended without the use of chemical weapons, but experts like Charles Loucks were caught off guard when they learned just how outperformed America's chemists had been by Hitler's. With the discovery that the Nazis had mass-produced previously unknown agents like tabun and sarin gas came the realization that if Germany had initiated chemical warfare it would have been a grossly uneven match. Since war's end, the army's Chemical Corps had received 530 tons of tabun, courtesy of the British, who had seized the Reich's colossal cache from the Robbers' Lair. But the Chemical Corps had yet to produce much tabun on its own, which is why Dr. Fritz Hoffmann had been brought to America under Operation Paperclip. Hoffmann arrived in February 1947 and immediately got to work synthesizing tabun. Nerve agents were Hoffmann's area of expertise; he had synthesized poison gas at the Luftwaffe's Technical Academy, Berlin-Gatow, and also at the chemical warfare laboratories at the University of Würzburg during the war.

Fritz Hoffmann was a gigantic man, six foot four, with dark eyes, sharp, angular features, and high cheekbones. He kept his hair combed back behind the ears, perhaps with the help of hair oil. Hoffmann was a gifted organic chemist and a contemplative man who also had a PhD in philosophy. He had suffered from polio as a child. According to the State Department, he was one of the minority of individuals recruited into Operation Paperclip who had been anti-Nazi during the war. When Hoffmann was captured at war's end he carried with him an unusual document, an affidavit from the U.S. Embassy in Zurich, Switzerland, signed by American Consul General Sam E. Woods. "The bearer of this document… Dr. Frederick Wilhelm Hoffmann [was] anti-Nazi during the whole war," the document stated. It further explained that Hoffmann's father-in-law, the German economist Dr. Erwin Respondek, had risked life and limb to work as a spy for the Americans during the war. Respondek "rendered extremely valuable services to the Allied war effort," wrote Consul General Woods. "These services, which are known to the former Secretary of State, the Honorable Cordell Hull, were rendered at great personal risk to himself and family, were performed without compensation and were so valuable to our cause that… every courtesy and help should be accorded" to all members of the family, including Respondek's son-in-law, Fritz Hoffmann, the affidavit read.

After being interrogated by army intelligence in Germany, Hoffmann was found "fit for exploitation for the Office of the Military Government, United States." He was sent to the Army Chemical Center in Berlin, where he started working for the Chemical Warfare Service until his Operation Paperclip contract was finalized.

When Friedrich Hoffmann arrived at Edgewood Arsenal in February 1947, America's premier chemical weapons research and development facility had been producing war gases for thirty years. The three-thousand-acre peninsula, thick with field and forest, was located twenty miles northeast of Baltimore, Maryland, on the Chesapeake Bay. Because Fritz Hoffmann was the first German at Edgewood thus far, he was quartered inside a barracks with American soldiers. The Top Secret research and development division he had been assigned to was called the Technical Command, and it was there that he began work “synthesizing new insecticides, rodenticides and miticides,” which meant tabun.

Colonel Loucks had been ordered by the Chemical Corps to determine how to produce tabun on an industrial scale under a classified program codenamed AI.13. Army intelligence believed the Soviets’ chemical weapons program to be considerably ahead of its own, and the Chemical Corps was under pressure to catch up. The Soviets had captured the entire IG Farben laboratory at Dyhernfurth and had since reassembled it outside Stalingrad, in the town of Beketovka, under the codename Chemical Works No. 91. In addition to having the laboratory and the science, the Soviets had also captured some of the Farben chemists who had worked at Dyhernfurth. Through their own version of Operation Paperclip, a parallel exploitation program called Operation Osoaviakhim, the Soviets captured German chemist Dr. von Bock and members of his team. The group was taken to Chemical Works No. 91, where von Bock, an expert in air filtration systems, decontamination systems, and hermetically sealed production compartments, was put to work. Von Bock’s esoteric knowledge gave the Soviets access to critical technical aspects of producing tabun. The hope was that Fritz Hoffmann could bring the Americans up to speed at Edgewood.

Indeed, Fritz Hoffmann proved to be a great asset for the classified program. Within months of his arrival at Edgewood he was delivering “work of a high order” and had “shown considerable ingenuity and excellent knowledge,” according to a declassified internal review of his performance. Tabun work progressed. When military intelligence learned that the Soviets’ Chemical Works No. 91 was also producing sarin, Edgewood was told to continue working on tabun but also to redouble efforts in sarin production, with a plan to start producing it on an industrial scale as soon as possible. Project AI.13 was given even higher priority and a new code name, Project AI.13-2.1. In Germany, Nazi scientists with knowledge of tabun and sarin were now being even more aggressively sought for recruitment into Operation Paperclip.

Declassified documents reveal that the Chemical Corps wanted to employ Otto Ambros, but he was not available. Ambros was incarcerated inside the prison complex at Nuremberg, awaiting a war crimes trial. Imprisoned alongside Ambros were fellow Farben board members Fritz Ter Meer and Karl Krauch as well as Hermann Schmitz, Farben's powerful CEO and the man who kept the Auschwitz scrapbook hidden in a secret wall safe. SS-Brigadeführer Dr. Walter Schieber, Ambros's liaison to the Speer ministry and the man who oversaw the work at Dyhernfurth, was also high on the Paperclip target list, but recruitment of Schieber would have to wait. Schieber was also being held at Nuremberg. The IG Farben trial, officially called *United States of America v. Carl Krauch et al.*, was scheduled to begin in a few months, in the summer of 1947. Time would tell who, if any, of Hitler's chemists would become available.

It had been a little over four months since the *New York Times* had broken the story of Operation Paperclip, and the negative attention to the program had not subsided. Then, on March 9, 1947, journalist Drew Pearson reported the most outrageous news story about Operation Paperclip to date. According to Pearson, the U.S. Army had offered Farben executive Karl Krauch a Paperclip contract while he was incarcerated at Nuremberg. Krauch was the lead defendant in the upcoming war crimes trial. He had served as Göring's plenipotentiary for chemical production and had advocated for the use of nerve agents against the Allies. Krauch was the man who galvanized his fellow German industrialists to mobilize resources to help the Nazis go to war.

Drew Pearson's column, "Washington Merry-Go-Round," was widely read and highly influential, and the report about Krauch caused such a scandal that General Eisenhower, the U.S. Army chief of staff, demanded to know what was going on with Operation Paperclip. The man who briefed Eisenhower was chief of military intelligence Stephen J. Chamberlin. After what was reported to be a twenty-minute meeting, General Eisenhower remained in support of the Paperclip program. For the military chiefs inside the JIOA, the problems with the public's perception of Paperclip were almost universally blamed on the State Department. Dean Rusk, who worked in the office of the assistant secretary of war, summed up JIOA's attitude toward the State Department in a memorandum the day after the

Eisenhower briefing. “The public relations people are feeling mounting pressure on the German scientist business.… Our position is inherently weak because the State Department finds this whole program difficult to support.”

The JIOA decided it was time to get rid of Samuel Klaus. Director Thomas Ford wrote General Stephen Chamberlin saying that Klaus was “obnoxiously difficult” and needed to be removed. Within the week, Klaus was transferred from the visa section of the State Department to the Office of the Legal Adviser. He no longer had any say over the policies and procedures regarding Operation Paperclip. It remains a mystery if Klaus had anything to do with the public’s perception of the program, but in years to come, and as McCarthyism expanded, Klaus would be accused of having leaked negative stories about the German scientist program to the press. But even with Klaus banished from the program, for the first time since Paperclip’s inception in the spring of 1945, the entire operation was now in danger of collapse. Assistant Secretary of War Howard Petersen worried with colleagues that the War Department would be buried in scandals involving Nazi scientists. Petersen predicted that the whole program would be shut down in a matter of months.

Instead the opposite happened. With the signing of the National Security Act by President Truman, on July 26, 1947, America’s armed services and intelligence agencies were restructured. The War Department was reconstituted into the Department of Defense, the State-War-Navy Coordinating Committee became the National Security Council, and the Central Intelligence Agency was born.

A new age was dawning for the controversial Paperclip program. On the one hand, it struggled to hold up a false face of scientific prowess behind which lay a tawdry group of amoral war opportunists, many of whom were linked to war crimes. But just as von Braun admitted to *New Yorker* writer Daniel Lang that what he really cared most about was seeing “how the golden cow could be milked most successfully,” the newly created CIA saw the Paperclip scientists in similar quid pro quo terms. There was advantage to be had in using men who had everything to lose and were, at the same time, uniquely focused on personal gain.

In Operation Paperclip the CIA found a perfect partner in its quest for scientific intelligence. And it was in the CIA that Operation Paperclip found its strongest supporting partner yet.

Sometime in the spring of 1947, scientists at Edgewood Arsenal began conducting human experiments with tabun nerve agent. All soldiers used in these experiments were so-called volunteers, but the men were not made privy to the fact that they were being subjected to low-level concentrations of tabun. Some of the tests took place in Utah, at the Dugway Proving Ground. Other tests took place inside Edgewood's "gassing chamber for human tests," a 9 x 9-foot tile-and-brick cube with an airtight metal door. One of the people observing the tabun tests was Dr. L. Wilson Greene, technical director of the Chemical and Radiological Laboratories at the Army Chemical Center at Edgewood and a close collaborator of Fritz Hoffmann's. Greene was a short man with a square jaw and a barrel chest. What he lacked in height he made up for in vision. While observing the behavior of the soldiers in the tabun gas experiments, L. Wilson Greene had a revelation.

Greene noticed that, after soldiers were put in the "gassing chamber," they became "partially disabled for from one to three weeks with fatigue, lassitude, complete loss of initiative and interest, and apathy." What struck Greene most was that the men were wholly incapacitated for a period of time but not permanently injured. The men recovered entirely on their own; the antidote was time. Dr. L. Wilson Greene saw in this a new kind of warfare. He sat down and began outlining his idea for America's war-fighting future in an opus that would become known as "Psychochemical Warfare: A New Concept of War." In the monograph, Greene wrote, "The trend of each major conflict, being characterized by increased death, human misery, and property destruction, could be reversed." His seminal vision for psychochemical warfare—a term he coined—was to incapacitate a man with drugs on the battlefield but not to kill him. Greene believed that in this way the face of warfare could change from barbaric to human. Incapacitating agents were "gentle" weapons; they knocked a man out without permanent injury. With psychochemical warfare, Greene explained, America could conquer its enemies "without the wholesale killing of people or the mass destruction of property."

Greene was not proposing to use low levels of tabun gas on the battlefield. He was talking about using other kinds of incapacitating agents, drugs that could immobilize or temporarily paralyze a person, "hallucinogenic or psychotomimetic drugs… whose effects mimic insanity or psychosis." "There can be no doubt that their will to resist would be weakened greatly, if not entirely destroyed, by the mass hysteria and panic which would ensue," Greene explained.

Greene proposed that an immediate "search be made for a stable chemical compound which would cause mental abnormalities of military significance." He sought drugs that made people irrational. In his monograph, Greene provided the army with a list of "61 materials known to cause mental disorders." These sixty-one compounds, he said, should be studied and refined to determine which single compound would be the best possible incapacitating agents for U.S. military use. Greene requested a budget of fifty thousand dollars, roughly half a million dollars in 2013, which was granted. Research began. Greene assigned his colleague and friend Fritz Hoffmann the job of researching a multitude of toxins for potential military use.

Fritz Hoffmann was by now recognized at Edgewood as one of the most gifted organic chemists in the Chemical Corps. If anyone could find and prepare the ideal incapacitating agent for the battlefield, Hoffmann could. He began a broad spectrum of research on everything from well-known street drugs to highly obscure toxins from the third world. There was mescaline, obtained from the peyote cactus and used by Native American Indians, with side effects ranging from divination to boredom. He studied fly agaric, a hallucinogenic mushroom found on the barren slopes of Mongolia and rumored to facilitate contact with the spirit world, and piruri, a toxic vegetable leaf from Australia, used by Aborigines, that was found to suppress thirst. Yaxee and epena, from Venezuela, Colombia, and Brazil, caused people to see things that weren't really there. It was a drug that for centuries had been "used by primitive tribes to escape the realities of their plight by using hallucinogenic properties." Soon Hoffmann would travel the world in search of these incapacitating agents on behalf of the Chemical Corps.

Dr. Greene's idea of psychochemical warfare would have a profound effect on the future of the U.S. Army's Chemical Corps, but it would also greatly affect the direction of the newest civilian intelligence organization in Washington, the CIA. The Agency had deep pockets and big ideas. For the CIA, using drugs to incapacitate individuals had many more applications than just on the battlefield, and the Agency began developing programs of its own. Fritz Hoffmann and L. Wilson Greene were at the locus of a growing partnership being forged between the Chemical Corps and the CIA. Soon, biological warfare experts from Camp Detrick would also be brought into the fold. This particular biological weapons program, which would be run by a group called Special Operations Division, or SO Division, was fueled by Operation Paperclip and would develop into one of the most controversial and collaborative efforts in the history of the CIA.

It had been a year and a half since the Merck Report on the biological weapons threat had been released, and an influx of congressional funding had transformed Camp Detrick into a state-of-the-art bioweapons research and development facility. The army purchased 545 acres of land adjacent to what had been called “Area A” and created a new area, designated “Area B,” where some of Detrick’s first postwar field tests with crop dusters and spray hoses would occur. During the war, dangerous pathogens like anthrax and “X” had been tested and cultured inside Detrick’s germ lab, a rudimentary wooden building covered in black tarpaper and nicknamed the Black Maria by scientists. During the war, an industrial-size boiler, used for fermenting, sat on the lawn outside the germ lab. Now, given the scope of work planned for the immediate future, Detrick needed an aerosol chamber that was bigger and better than anything else like it in the world. The job of designing such a structure was assigned to a bacteriologist named Dr. Harold Batchelor.

Detrick’s British counterparts, at Porton Down, had an excellent chamber of their own, but it fit only two or three mice. What Batchelor came up with was a monstrous spherical one-million-liter chamber called the Eight Ball, shaped like a giant’s golf ball and held upright by iron “legs.” The Chicago Bridge and Iron Works was commissioned to build the Eight Ball to specifications that made it airtight and bombproof. The Eight Ball was to have portholes, doors, and hatchways and steel walls of one and a half inches.

Inside the Eight Ball, airflow would simulate weather systems, with scientists on the outside controlling temperatures on the inside within a range of 55 to 90 degrees Fahrenheit. Humidity could be controlled inside the Eight Ball to fluctuate between 30 and 100 percent. This state-of-the-art environmental control would allow Detrick’s scientists to understand how aerosolized biological agents would work at different altitudes in the open air. The sphere would weigh more than 131 tons and would stand four stories tall. A catwalk around its center would allow scientists to observe, through portholes, the test subjects sitting inside as they were exposed to the world's deadliest germs. The Chicago Bridge and Iron Works agreed to a delivery date of 1949.

With the chamber's design complete, Dr. Batchelor prepared to travel to Germany. There was an important German scientist who was just now becoming available for an interview. This was a man who knew more than almost anyone else in the world about biological weapons. He was particularly knowledgeable about weaponized bubonic plague.

The physician was Dr. Kurt Blome, the former deputy surgeon general of the Third Reich. He had just been acquitted of war crimes at the Nuremberg doctors' trial. Now he was back on the Paperclip list.

The doctors' trial had been over for forty-two days. It was October 2, 1947, and a message from Heidelberg, marked "Secret-Confidential," arrived on the desk of the chief of the Chemical Corps. It read: "Available now for interrogation on biological warfare matters is Doctor Kurt Blome."

A meeting was arranged for November 10, 1947, between Blome and Batchelor. Present alongside Dr. Batchelor were Detrick doctors Dr. Charles R. Phillips, a specialist in desterilization, Dr. Donald W. Falconer, an explosives expert, and Dr. A. W. Gorelick, a dosage expert. Lieutenant R. W. Swanson represented the U.S. Navy and Lieutenant Colonel Warren S. LeRoy represented the army's European Command Headquarters. An interpreter and a stenographer were also present. Dr. Blome was told in advance that everything discussed would be classified.

Dr. Batchelor spoke first, setting the tone for the all-day affair. "We have come to interview Dr. Blome personally as well as professionally," Batchelor said. "We have friends in Germany, scientific friends, and this is an opportunity for us to enjoy meeting [Dr. Blome] and to discuss our various problems with him." To begin, Batchelor asked, "Would it be possible for Dr. Blome to give us an overall picture of the information that he has? The nature of the world under discussion?"

Blome spoke in English, pausing on occasion for the interpreter to help him with a word. "In 1943 I received orders from Goering for all the research of Biological Warfare," Blome explained, "all the research for BW [would fall] under the name Kanserreseach.… Cancer Research had already started long before that, and I was already working all the time but in order to keep this development secret [the Reich] disguised it."

Dr. Blome laid out the command structure of those involved in biological weapons work under Himmler, and where the men were now. It was a surprisingly small group of "around twenty" men. As head of the Reich Research Council, Blome explained, Göring was at the top, as the Reich's dictator of science. There were three men in equal positions directly under Göring, Dr. Blome explained. Blome was in charge of all research and development of pathogens. Doctors and scientists working in this area reported to him. Major General Dr. Walter Schreiber—the Russians' surprise witness at Nuremberg and the man who had pointed the finger at Blome—was in charge of vaccines, antidotes, and serums for biological weapons. All doctors and scientists working in these areas ultimately reported to Schreiber. Finally, Blome explained, Field Marshal Wilhelm Keitel oversaw the Lightning Rod Committee, *Blitzableiter,* the code name for the ordnance experts who worked on delivery systems for biological bombs. Anyone conducting tests with these kinds of weapons had to go through Keitel.

Göring had committed suicide and Keitel had been hanged at Nuremberg after the trial of the major war criminals. Major General Walter Schreiber was working for the Russians now. It appeared that Dr. Blome was the last available man standing with extensive inside knowledge of the Third Reich's bioweapons program.

Dr. Gorelick asked, "Can Dr. Blome give us actual locations of various laboratories?"

Blome spoke of the Reich's outpost on the island of Riems, a facility that specialized in "Sickness of Cattle" research, including rinderpest and foot-and-mouth disease. Blome said that because "the isle was completely isolated except by wire," it was a perfect place to conduct this kind of dangerous research. The scientist in charge of the laboratory was Professor Otto Waldmann and his assistant was Erich Traub "of international fame." Blome was referring to the fact that before the war, Traub spent several years in America doing research at the Rockefeller Institute, in New Jersey.

Rinderpest was a terrible disease, Blome said. In many ways it was the biological weapon he feared most. "Germany depended on milk and butter for 60% of her fat resources," said Blome. "In 1944 it would have resulted in a great catastrophe if foot-and-mouth disease had been used against

Germany. It would have been the greatest catastrophe ever faced," according to Blome, "[i]f a country relies on all its fat resources to get milk and butter. Once the disease starts there is no stopping it." The Detrick scientists were very interested to learn more.

How did the Reich acquire and develop the pathogen, Batchelor asked? Blome had already explained this to the Operation Alsos interrogators, but that was two years ago, before the doctors' trial, and apparently these Detrick scientists were not familiar with what Blome had said when he was at Dustbin. "By international law it was prohibited to have the virus for this sickness in Europe," Blome said. "The virus was in Turkey and Himmler ordered that for the Isle." Blome confirmed that Dr. Erich Traub went to Turkey on direct orders from Himmler and acquired a strain of the dangerous virus there. At Riems, Traub then succeeded in producing a dry form of the virus. Dry forms were the deadliest of all, said Blome. "After a period of seven months based on experimentation on the Isle, this virus was still effective. After seven months they still spread and the cattle were all infected."

Blome then spoke of experimental tests conducted by Luftwaffe pilots in Russia, where the disease was sprayed from low-flying aircraft over fields of grazing cattle.

"Positive results," said Blome.

Where were Dr. Traub and Dr. Waldmann now?

"I believe that they have been taken prisoner of the Russians and they are still active in their research for the Russians," Blome said.

The conversation shifted to plague research at Posen, where Blome had set up an institute during the war. "Perhaps we would like to talk about the human angle," Dr. Phillips asked, trying to veil the uncomfortable subject by using the royal "we."

Dr. Blome had been acquitted of war crimes charges five weeks earlier. Seven of his codefendants were to be hanged. Clearly, the subject of experiments on humans was not something he was going to discuss. The question was rephrased: What did Blome believe was the most groundbreaking biological weapons work conducted by the Reich? Blome said that at Posen, he had been working at dispersing biological agents in a "combination with gas that [a]ffects the throat. When membranes are hurt [that is, damaged]… bacteria have a better chance to infect," Blome said.

Dr. Phillips rephrased his question again. Everyone wanted to know about the human experiments; it was the ultimate forbidden knowledge the Nazis possessed. “Perhaps we would like to talk about the human angle, which was, I think, Kliewe’s work,” he said.

Blome was no fool. “Professor Kliewe has not worked himself with experiments,” Blome said. Heinrich Kliewe performed intelligence work. He was in charge of keeping tabs on the biological weapons programs being pursued by nations at war with the Reich. “Kliewe investigated Polish and Russian sabotage,” Blome said. “The activity here was not to cause an epidemic amongst the population, merely to kill certain people.”

The Detrick doctors were intrigued by this line of conversation and asked Dr. Blome to explain further.

During the war, Polish resistance fighters in Posen had succeeded in assassinating “about twenty people,” Blome said, most of whom were SS officers. “A lot of cases of Typhoid,” said Blome. “The waiters in restaurants took fountain pens filled with the inoculum and injected the inoculum into the soup or the food on their way to and from the dining room. This has been proved. Polish resistance movement was heading all these activities. A German-Polish woman doctor was working in the hospital and got hold of the bacteria and forwarded it to the other people.”

“Were any preventative measures taken?” Dr. Phillips asked.

Blome explained that there was an extensive and well-funded Reich research program going on in the field of vaccines, antidotes, and serums—against many pathogens and diseases, from cholera to parrot virus to plague. But Blome explained that the holy grail of biological weapons research was the plague. “I believe the only thing of danger to Germany would have been the plague. Because for propaganda reasons the plague got more attention tha[n] any others,” Blome added. “People all over the world believe it is the worst sickness there is.”

Dr. Phillips wanted to learn more about the use of “live vaccines” in Blome’s plague research.

“Schreiber, as the head of the department [epidemics] had very good vaccine material on hand for typhoid, paratyphoid, cholera, diphtheria and Ruhr,” Blome explained. “For the plague, they had serum on hand but the serum was not very powerful, it was very weak. They did not have any vaccine so I started to build an institute which has never been completed.” On occasion, Blome said, he worked in concert with Schreiber’s vaccine research laboratory to provide them with “good vaccine material,” meaning the germs.

“Which laboratories?” asked Dr. Falconer.

“In the Medical Laboratory in Berlin,” said Blome. “There was an official appointed only for research of epidemics. Prof. Schreiber.”

“Was he under Kliewe?” Dr. Phillips asked, apparently still unaware that Professor Schreiber was the same Dr. Schreiber who had testified at Nuremberg. If, at Nuremberg, the Russians meant to send a message to American biological weapons makers with Schreiber’s testimony, this had gone over the head of these bacteriologists from Camp Detrick.

Blome repeated that Schreiber was “in the same position as I would be under Göring for my cancer researches, so this man was [directly] under Göring.” Meaning Blome and Schreiber were equals in the Reich’s chain of command. They were also archenemies. “Schreiber is a Russian PW [prisoner of war] and everybody who knew Schreiber is convinced he is working for them,” said Blome. In this world of intense suspicion, of deviance and trickery, it was impossible to know who was lying and who was telling the truth.

The time came to have a meal. “In closing this particular angle we express our gratitude to Dr. Blome for his wholehearted cooperation,” Dr. Batchelor said. He suggested that they all have dinner together. Pleasant talk. “During that time we will not discuss this matter,” Batchelor said. As if the Americans had not just tried to hang Dr. Blome for war crimes. As if Blome had not been a hard-core Nazi ideologue and member of the inner circle, or had not worn the Golden Party Badge. Pleasantries were exchanged and the meeting was adjourned.

After the meeting, the Detrick doctors requested from the Army Chemical Corps everything they knew about Dr. Erich Traub. That Dr. Blome said he was most afraid of an outbreak of cattle plague was serious news. Traub was the world’s leading expert in the disease. Now the U.S. Army wanted him as their own.

Dr. Traub was a virologist, microbiologist, and professor and a doctor of veterinary medicine. He had been the second in command at the Reich’s State Research Institute at Riems since 1942. He was also an expert in Newcastle disease, a contagious bird flu, that he was rumored to have weaponized. The Chemical Corps knew Traub spoke fluent English, that he had dark brown hair, gray-brown eyes, and two pronounced saber scars on his face—on the forehead and upper lip. And they knew that from 1932 until 1938, Traub had been a staff member at the Rockefeller Institute for Medical Research, in New Jersey. But after meeting with Dr. Blome, the Chemical Corps wanted more information on Traub, and they tracked down two of his former American colleagues for interviews. One of them, Dr. Little, described Traub as a "domineering German and a surly type individual with a violent temper." Another colleague, Dr. John Nelson, found that despite "long training in the care of animals, [Traub] went out of his way to be cruel to animals." This troubled Nelson, who felt that "any person who is cruel to animals shows little distinction and difference to his treatment of his fellow human beings."

Before the war, Traub was given the opportunity to stay in America and continue his research full-time. He chose to return to Germany, citing loyalty to the Reich. In 1939, Traub was drafted into the Wehrmacht, Veterinary Corps, and in 1940, he was elevated to captain and fought in the campaign against France. He was a member of several Nazi organizations, including the Nationalsozialistisches Kraftfahrerkorps (NSKK), or National Socialist Motor Corps; the National Socialist People's Welfare (NSV); and the Reichsluftschutzbund (RLB), or State Air Protection Corps. Dr. Traub's talents as a virologist had been identified, and he had been pulled back from the front lines and assigned to biological weapons work. According to Blome, Traub was the most talented scientist working on anti-animal research—biological weapons designed to kill the animals that a nation relies upon most for food. At the end of the war, when the Riems lab fell to the Russians, with it went Dr. Traub, his wife, Blanka, and their three children. The laboratory was renamed the Land Office II for Animal Epidemic Diseases and the Soviets put Traub back to work on bioweapons research. Now, in 1947, the Army began a plan to lure Traub away.

As for Dr. Blome, the scientists from Detrick knew it was far too risky to offer him a Paperclip contract just weeks after he'd been acquitted of capital war crimes at Nuremberg. Drew Pearson's reporting on the Paperclip contract offered to Karl Krauch in prison had upset General Eisenhower and nearly brought the program to its knees. While Blome made clear his willingness to work for the Army, the Detrick scientists knew he would have to remain an under-the-radar consultant, relegated to the JIOA target list for potential hire at a future date.

The army bacteriologist and biological weapons expert Dr. Harold Batchelor returned to Camp Detrick with many new ideas to explore, including assassination-by-poison techniques that had been shared with him by Dr. Blome. The Reich had been researching biological weapons that would initiate epidemics but could also “kill certain people,” according to Blome. In 1947, however, with scientific frontiers opening up wide, there would be hundreds of new ways to assassinate individuals using a single device carrying a biological or chemical agent. This was an area in which the CIA was interested. The Chemical Corps had the perfect scientist for the job of exploring poisons that could be used for individual assassinations, Fritz Hoffmann. But Hoffmann had a backlog of work. He still had to figure out how to synthesize tabun gas so the Chemical Corps could hurry up and begin producing it on an industrial scale.

CHAPTER SIXTEEN

Headless Monster

In June 1948, Colonel Charles E. Loucks, the man who oversaw the Paperclip scientists at Edgewood, was made brigadier general and transferred to Heidelberg. Loucks now served as chief of intelligence collection for Chemical Warfare Plans, European Command. In Heidelberg, he had access to a whole new group of Hitler's former chemists, from those who had been at the top of the chain of command on down. Within weeks of his arrival, Loucks formed a working relationship with Richard Kuhn, the former director of the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute for Medical Research in Heidelberg. Because Kuhn had an international profile before and during the war, he was a problematic candidate for Operation Paperclip. Though Kuhn had once been revered among scientists, Samuel Goudsmit of Operation Alsos was never afraid to remind colleagues that Kuhn had become an active Nazi during the war, and that he began his lectures with "Sieg Heil" and the Nazi salute. Kuhn had lied to Goudsmit in a postwar interview, swearing that he had never worked on Reich projects during the war. In fact Kuhn was a chemical weapons expert for the Reich and developed soman nerve agent. Soman was even deadlier than sarin and tabun but considered too delicate and therefore too costly to industrialize.

Richard Kuhn began working with General Loucks in Heidelberg on chemical weapons projects for the Chemical Corps. General Loucks's friendly relationship with Richard Kuhn drew ire from the British. When formally queried about his professional partnership with Kuhn, Loucks replied, "I was under the impression that Professor Kuhn had been cleared of his Nazi complicity or had suffered the penalty and is now in the good graces of both the British and the Americans." Further, wrote Loucks, "I am sure our people are certainly familiar with his background." To General

Loucks, moving forward on military programs considered vital to U.S. national security was more important than dredging up an individual's Nazi past. Through the lens of history, this remains one of the most complicated issues regarding Operation Paperclip. When working with ardent Nazis, some American handlers appear to have developed an ability to look the other way. Others, like General Loucks, looked straight at the man and saw only the scientist, not the Nazi.

Richard Kuhn had a connection with a scientist in Switzerland with whom General Loucks was particularly interested in working. The scientist had been investigating a little-known incapacitating agent that was far more potent than anything the Chemical Corps was working on at the time. This Swiss chemist had recently given a lecture, "New Hallucinatory Agent," to a gathering of the Swiss Society of Psychiatry and the Association of Physicians in Zurich. On December 16, 1948, General Loucks took a trip to Switzerland. So as not to draw attention to himself or the U.S. military, he took the unusual step of taking off his military uniform. This story does not appear in any known declassified army record but is told in Loucks's own words, in his personal diaries that were left to the U.S. Army Heritage Center in Pennsylvania. "Went back to the house and put on civilian clothes," Loucks wrote in his diary. His wife, Pearl, took the plainclothed general to the train station. En route to his destination in Switzerland, Loucks shared a compartment with a "foreigner, dark, nationality unknown," and a "Dutchman who acted Jewish in quizzing me all about myself." The train compartment, Loucks noted, provided a clean, comfortable, well-lit ride, and General Loucks arrived in Bern at 8:55 that night. Before heading to bed, Loucks enjoyed a fire in the fireplace in his hotel room. General Loucks did not note in his journal any of the details of the meeting with the mysterious Swiss scientist. The mission was classified.

Loucks returned to Germany the following day, and he did note in his journal that Richard Kuhn came over to his house for lunch with a special guest, Dr. Gerhard Schrader, the inventor of Preparation 9/91, or tabun gas. With snow coming down outside the Louckses' home in flurries, Richard Kuhn, Dr. Gerhard Schrader, and General Loucks had a pleasant chat and "lunch of pork chops."

Decades later, in a speech prepared for the Amherst chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution and the Sons of the American Revolution, General Loucks revealed that this Swiss chemist referred to him by Richard Kuhn had been Professor Werner Stoll, a psychiatric researcher at the University of Zurich. The hallucinatory agent that Loucks was after in Switzerland would be the ultimate "incapacitation chemical" also sought by L. Wilson Greene at Edgewood "to knock out not kill." The chemical, said Loucks, was called "Lysergic Acid Diethylamide," or LSD. Stoll did not discover LSD. That distinction went to Albert Hofmann, a chemist for Sandoz pharmaceutical company in Basel. Werner Stoll, a colleague of Hoffmann's (and the son of Sandoz chief chemist, Arthur Stoll), repeated Albert Hofmann's original LSD experiment and concluded, "modified LSD-25 was a psychotropic compound that was nontoxic and could have enormous use as a psychiatric aid." In 1947, Werner Stoll had published the first article on LSD, in the *Swiss Archives of Neurology.* Stoll's second paper, entitled "A New Hallucinatory Agent, Active in Very Small Amounts," was published two years later, in 1949. But General Loucks did not see LSD as a psychiatric aid but rather as a weapon, an incapacitating agent with enormous potential on the battlefield. Soon the army and the navy would all be experimenting with LSD as a weapon, and the CIA would be experimenting with LSD as a means of controlling human behavior, an endeavor that soon came to be known as mind control.

Eventually, physicians and chemists from Operation Paperclip would work on jointly operated classified programs code-named Chatter, Bluebird, Artichoke, MKUltra, and others. LSD, the drug that induces paranoia and unpredictability and makes people see things that are not really there, would become a strange allegory for the Cold War.

One day in the late summer of 1948 a call came in to Brigadier General Charles Loucks's new office in Heidelberg. A lieutenant answered the phone. The caller, a German, left a cryptic message to be relayed to General Loucks. It was short and to the point.

"I can help," the caller said.

He left a return telephone number and his name, Schieber. General Loucks had been in Germany since June. As chief of intelligence collection for chemical warfare plans in Europe, it was Loucks's job to determine which Western European countries were developing chemical weapons and to monitor their progress. Loucks was also working on unfinished business back at Edgewood, namely, the continuing failure by the Chemical Corps to develop industrial-scale production of nerve gas, an effort that by now had officially switched from the pursuit of tabun to the pursuit of sarin. The American university professors Loucks had hired back in the U.S. were making very little progress. "We put samples [of sarin] in front of them and everything, but yet they… could not come up with any process to make some Sarin," General Loucks explained decades later in an oral history for the U.S. Army. A fire in the sarin plant at Edgewood had set the program back even further.

Along came the Schieber call.

In 1947, a thick OMGUS security report had been compiled on SS-Brigadeführer Dr. Walter Schieber. He had been involved with the U.S. Army since the fall of the Reich.

Schieber was a Nazi Bonzen, a big wheel. He was unattractive, fat, and wore a Hitler mustache and false teeth. Since the 1920s he had been regarded as one of Hitler's Alte Kämpfer, the Old Fighters, trusted members of Hitler's inner circle who wore the Golden Party Badge. Dr. Schieber was also a loyal SS man and served on the personal staff of Heinrich Himmler.

SS-Brigadeführer Dr. Walter Schieber had been a dedicated and loyal member of the Nazi Party since 1931. He had also been frequently photographed alongside Hitler, Himmler, Bormann, and Speer as part of the inner circle. A number of these photographs survived the war, which made public dealings with Schieber impossible. U.S. Army transactions with him were classified Top Secret. As head of the Reich Ministry of Armaments Supply Office (Rüstungslieferungsamt), first under Fritz Todt when the ministry was called the Munitions Ministry, or Organisation Todt, and then under Albert Speer, Schieber was an engineer and a chemist and handled business in both areas for the Third Reich. As an engineer, he oversaw many of the Reich's underground engineering projects. "Designs for concentration camp armaments factories remained almost the exclusive work of Schieber," writes Michael Thad Allen, an expert on the SS and slave labor.

Schieber also wore his chemist's hat for at least one concentration camp experiment. In an attempt to save the SS money and address the growing problem of food shortages among slave laborers, Schieber designed a "nourishment" program called Eastern Nutrition (Östliche Kostform). It was tested at the Mauthausen concentration camp. For a period of six months, starting in December 1943, a group of one hundred and fifty slave laborers were denied the watery broth they usually received and instead were fed an artificial paste designed by Schieber and made up of cellulose remnants, or pieces of used clothing. One hundred and sixteen of the one hundred and fifty test subjects died. After the war, there was a judicial inquiry into Schieber's Eastern Nutrition program. The West German courts determined that the resulting deaths could not necessarily be "attributed to nutrition" because there were so many other causes of death in the concentration camp.

Walter Schieber was further linked to the deaths of hundreds, if not thousands, of slave laborers through the various chemical weapons programs that were carried out at Farben's multiple production plants. Schieber was not tried at Nuremberg but was used as a witness for the prosecution instead. During the war, with his expertise as a chemist, SS-Brigadeführer Dr. Walter Schieber was the Speer ministry's liaison to IG Farben and he oversaw the industrial production of tabun and sarin gas. According to his intelligence file, one of his titles was "confidential clerk of IG Farben AG." Dr. Walter Schieber and Dr. Otto Ambros worked together at the Dyhernfurth nerve agent production facility.

By the late summer of 1948, Otto Ambros had been tried and convicted at Nuremberg and was serving an eight-year sentence at Landsberg Prison for mass murder and slavery. Schieber had been released from his obligations as a witness for the tribunal and was a free man. Now, here he was on the telephone, requesting to speak with Brigadier General Loucks. Schieber was looking for work with the U.S. Army Chemical Corps.

"I'm free now," Schieber told Loucks's lieutenant during the call. "They have nothing against me."

It was, of course, more complicated than that.

Four months prior, in February 1948, former SS-Brigadeführer Walter Schieber had signed a Top Secret Operation Paperclip contract with the JIOA. He had been recruited by Colonel Putt at Wright Field, now Wright-Patterson Air Force Base. Putt wanted to make use of Schieber's underground engineering skills—just as Georg Rickhey's skills had been used before Rickhey was returned to Germany to stand trial for war crimes. Hiring a top Nazi like Walter Schieber was risky, and the potential problems facing the U.S. Air Force for doing so were candidly discussed in an exchange of memorandums. A JIOA case officer wrote to military headquarters in Frankfurt summarizing how things were progressing.

"Subject is Dr. Walter Schieber… requested priority shipment to Wright Field. Schieber's ability is outstanding and his potentialities believed invaluable to the United States." For the past three months, the case officer explained, Schieber had been working on "the underground factory project," a massive undertaking, at U.S. military headquarters in Germany. The project was spearheaded by Franz Dorsch, and Schieber had been working as Dorsch's first assistant. In Germany, Schieber and Dorsch had supervised "150 scientists and technicians" who had built underground factories for the Reich. The result was a thousand-page monograph for U.S. Air Force. Schieber, the report explained, "has been especially cooperative and is agreeable to going to [the] United States. He is well known to the Soviets and is desired by them. His exploitation in the United States is therefore believed highly desirable."

There was, however, a problem that needed to be addressed, wrote the case officer. "His party record is as follows: Entered party in June 31, Brigade Fuhrer in the SS, holder of the Golden Party Badge, member of SS, DAF [Deutsche Arbeitsfront, or German Labor Front], NSV [Nationalsozialistische Volkswohlfahrt, or National Socialist People's Welfare], and VDCH [VDCh, or Association of German Chemists]." There was no way to disguise that Schieber had been in Hitler's inner circle, but the JIOA also proposed a solution. "In order to minimize the possibility of unfavorable publicity in the United States your views requested on advisability of shipping subject via air under escort and or under an alias." Schieber could be part of Operation Paperclip as long as no one knew who Schieber really was. Unlike standard operating procedure with Operation Paperclip applicants, there was to be no photograph of SS-Brigadeführer Dr. Walter Schieber attached to his intelligence file.

The air force agreed with JIOA's suggestions. "Ship Dr. Walter Schieber to Wright Field Dayton Ohio. Air Force requests case be expedited and given top priority." There was one caveat that JIOA and the air force agreed upon. Dr. Schieber had to undergo a denazification trial first. "Trusting he would be placed in Class 3"—the category for individuals who were "less incriminated"—after his denazification trial, Dr. Walter Schieber packed his bags and awaited transport to the United States. Instead, on March 11, 1948, a different verdict came in: "the civilian Internee Dr. Walter Schieber, born 13-09-1897 at Beimerstetten, former Chief of Armaments Deliveries on the Reich Ministry for Armaments and War Production, Head of the Central

Office for Generators, Deputy Head of the Reich Organization Industry, SS-Brigadefueher [*sic*], PSt [presently] held at this enclosure," read the decree, "was tried by the Sonder-Spruchkammer for Hesse, Neustadt-Lager, and sentenced to Group II, 2 years Labor Camp and restriction to 5 years ordinary labor." The Group 2 designation meant that Schieber was in a category with "party activists, militarists, and profiteers." His Paperclip contract would have to wait.

Five days after his trial, Schieber contacted the U.S. Army Counter Intelligence Corps to relay to his Paperclip handler his version of events. "Herr Berbeth [the judge] had subject brought into the chamber and asked him about his trip to the United States, to which Schieber replied that he did not think it would be wise for him to go to the U.S. as an offender. Herr Berbeth suggested that he should immediately apply for a re-trial or ask the Minister for Political Liberation for a pardon. Herr Berbeth also told Schieber that he would recommend such a pardon." Schieber told his Paperclip handler that, after leaving the courtroom, he had returned to the internee camp where he was being held. Then, according to Schieber, something rather shocking happened: "Berbeth of the court joined Schieber and told him, contrary to his previous statement, not to apply for another trial or a pardon, but to go to Frankfurt immediately, contact the Russian Liaison Officer and ask for an Interzonal Pass. With this pass, subject [Schieber] was to enter the Russian Zone and proceed to one of his factories in the Schwarza/Saale [where] he could be assured of every possible help, should he have the desire to work in his former position." In other words, according to Schieber, the judge at this trial worked for the Russians and was offering him a job. Schieber claimed to have told the judge that his offer sounded impossible. Was he really being advised to ignore the court's judgment, to flee the camp, get an interzonal pass, and begin working for the Russians "at a high pay grade" comparable to what he was paid during the Hitler regime? "The President of the Spruchkammer assured [me] that arrangements would be made," Schieber said. Did this really happen? Was the judge a Russian mole? Or was Schieber playing the Americans with the proverbial Russian card?

Schieber's Counter Intelligence Corps handler asked him what he thought of the judge's black market offer. "Schieber believes that the [Spruchkammern] sentence was imposed to prevent his contract with the United States and to make his residence in Germany so difficult as to force him to accept the Russian Offers.” The handler had his own thoughts. “Cancellation of Schiebers [*sic*] contract after he has possibly jeopardized his safety and after he has cooperated so whole-heartedly with intelligence agencies here is certain to have an adverse effect on the future contracting or exploitation of specialists and will only serve as another example of broken faith on the part of the United States.” The CIC officer felt that when “considering the magnitude of Schiebers [*sic*] potential value to the United States either for military or civil exploitation,” it was obvious that his contract needed to be honored one way or other. The officer recommended that Schieber be paid as a consultant to the U.S. Army in Heidelberg. In the meantime, he could appeal the judgment of the Spruchkammern trial and become part of Operation Paperclip after the attention died down.

The air force had already soured on Schieber. At the Pentagon, his case had been reviewed again. The air force now saw Schieber’s Nazi Party history in a wholly different light. In their eyes, Schieber had transformed from a brilliant engineer to a ruthless, greedy war profiteer. “Walther Schieber started his business career at the Gustloff Werke in Weimar, a combine owned by the Nazi Party and comprising five industrial corporations,” read the air force response. “He soon became the leader in the German Cellulose and Rayon Ring, which was the second largest fiber combine in Germany. He founded Thuringische Zellwolle A.G. in Schwarza and subsequently gained control of the French Synthetic Fiber combine,” meaning that with the help of SS officers, Schieber had confiscated Jewish-owned businesses in France and made them the property of the Third Reich. Synthetic fibers were imperative to the Reich, used for everything from soldiers’ uniforms to blankets to parachutes. Photographs of Schieber displaying bolts of synthetic cloth to Hitler, Himmler, and Bormann show all parties smiling with pride.

“Schieber was appointed by Speer to the position of Chief of the Office for Delivery of Armament Goods in the Ministry for Armaments and Munitions and was named deputy leader of the National Group Industry by [Walter] Funk,” read the air force report. How he went from dealing fabrics to weapons production remained unclear, but his ambition had to have come into play. “Described as a top-ranking figure in the Nazi war economy, he is said to have constantly profited from being a party man,” noted the air force. There was only one conclusion: “Cancel Air Force request for Walter Schieber. Subject considered ineligible Paperclip.”

United States European Command (EUCOM) headquarters in Frankfurt—various commands had different headquarters—cabled the JIOA office at the Pentagon to let them know that cancellation of the request was an unsound idea: “It is believed here that these considerations outweigh the risk of possible criticism of his being sent to the United States, and if necessary, warrant an exception to present policy. Further, it is considered advisable that for Schieber’s future personal safety and for intelligence reasons, he not be present… when and if official action against him occurs. Therefore it is strongly recommended that reconsideration be given the decision to cancel Schieber’s contract and that he be sent to the United States regardless of the outcome of his appeal.” EUCOM wanted Schieber moved out of Germany and sent to the United States—now. Nothing happened for three months—until Brigadier General Charles Loucks arrived in Heidelberg.

After the second Schieber call came in to General Loucks’s office, Loucks told his lieutenant to set up a meeting with the man. As of 2013, their official meeting remains classified. But General Loucks wrote regularly in his desk diary, which fills in what the declassified Operation Paperclip case file on Schieber leaves out. On October 14, 1948, Dr. Schieber was invited to attend a roundtable conference at Army Chemical Corps headquarters in Heidelberg. “Classified matters” were discussed, Loucks penned in his journal that night. Schieber told Loucks he had been in on the Reich’s manufacturing of nerve gas “from the beginning.” He appealed to General Loucks’s patriotic side. “I want you to know that if there is anything I can do to help the West I shall do it,” Schieber said. Loucks liked Schieber’s willingness to help the cause so much that he invited Schieber to join him at his house for a drink.

That evening Loucks recorded his thoughts: “Attended conf. with… Dr. Walter Schieber—classified matters. No particular info but hope for more later, possibly when better acquainted. I’ll try to see him next time he reports in to Div. of Intell. He directed the production of war gases on a rather high echelon so doesn’t have the detailed knowledge that I want, but possibly I can get the names of useful people from him. Took him to the house for a drink.”

Chemical weapons, like biological weapons, were perceived by some to be "dirty business," as President Roosevelt once said. But to men like General Loucks and Walter Schieber, to advance a nation's arsenal of chemical weapons was a challenging and necessary job. It "was more interesting than going down to Paris on weekends," Loucks wrote in his journal.

General Loucks asked to meet with Dr. Schieber again, this time to ask Schieber if he could assist with a "problem" the U.S. Army was having producing sarin gas. Schieber was happy to help. He told Loucks that during the war it was the Farben chemists who had produced sarin gas and that he knew all these chemists very well. They were his friends. "They worked with me during the war," Schieber explained.

"We wouldn't expect you to do this for free," Loucks told Schieber, meaning provide the U.S. Chemical Corps with secrets. The two men arranged to meet again in the following weeks.

On October 28, 1948, Loucks and his wife, Pearl, hosted a dinner party in their home. Again, Schieber was a guest. Loucks had by now taken an extraordinary liking to Dr. Schieber and wrote his impressions of the man in his diary that night. "Schieber is interesting—an independent thinking, intelligent and very competent man. He related much of his experience with the Russians. A prisoner of war after the 1st World War for a year. He was an honorary (?) Brigade Fuehrer of SS this last war. In confinement in Nuremberg for seven months. Quartered next to Goering until the latter killed himself. Was an admirer of Todt, later worked for Speer, was directed to report to Hitler frequently. He has many anecdotes and is a loyal German. Is willing to do anything for the future of the world and Germany." Why was General Loucks so willing to overlook SS-Brigadeführer Dr. Walter Schieber's criminal past and his central role inside the Third Reich? A story that Charles Loucks told an army historian decades later sheds light on this question.

At the end of World War II, after the Japanese surrendered, Colonel Loucks went to Tokyo, where he served as the chief chemical officer for the U.S. Army. Sometimes Loucks took day trips into the countryside. In the last five months of war in Japan, American bombers conducted a massive incendiary bombing campaign against sixty-seven Japanese cities that killed nearly a million citizens, most of whom burned to death. Still, the Japanese refused to surrender, and it took two atomic bombs to end the war. The incendiary bombs dropped on those sixty-seven cities were produced at the Rocky Mountain Arsenal. Colonel Loucks oversaw the production of tens of thousands of them. In Japan, after the fighting was over, and when Loucks took day trips, he often brought his camera along and took photographs of the landscape, the damage, and the dead. When Loucks returned home to America, he compiled these photographs into an album of more than one hundred black-and-white snapshots. One photograph in the album, which is archived at the U.S. Army Heritage Center in Pennsylvania, shows Colonel Loucks standing next to an enormous pile of dead bodies.

Years later Colonel Loucks explained to the army historian what the photograph meant to him. “Driving one day in a Jeep from Yokohama to Tokyo, I stopped along the side of a road. The incendiary attacks had done their work,” Loucks explained. The area “was all burned out; a wasteland all the way through. We dropped tens of thousands of them [incendiary bombs] on the whole area between Yokohama and Tokyo.”

Out there in the Japanese countryside, said Loucks, “I noticed a great stack of incendiary bombs—small ones. I went over to take a look at them. They looked like something that we had made at Rocky Mountain. Sure enough, they were. Here in one place they had a great stack of them. They were burned out but the bodies were still there because they didn’t burn. They stacked them up in this big high pile. I had a picture of me standing beside them, because I had been responsible for the manufacturing of them. That was just one of those incidents that didn’t mean anything, but I just happened to see what had happened to some of our incendiary bombs that were over there.”

In describing the photograph—an enormous pile of dead bodies next to a stack of incendiary bombs—Colonel Loucks expressed a peculiar kind of detachment. To the army historian interviewing him, Loucks made clear that what interested him in the photograph was noting the effectiveness—or in this case ineffectiveness—of the bombs he had been responsible for manufacturing. Similarly, Loucks expressed detachment as far as Dr. Schieber was concerned, as evidenced in his journal entries. It was as if Loucks could not, or would not, see Schieber in the context of the millions of Jews murdered on the direct orders of Schieber’s closest wartime colleagues. What interested Loucks about Schieber was what an effective chemical weapons maker he was.

During the next meeting between General Loucks and Dr. Schieber, Loucks got very specific with Schieber in terms of what he was after. "Could you develop the process and put it on paper with drawings, specifications and tables and safety regulations to make Sarin?" Loucks asked, as noted in his desk diary.

"Yes, I could do that," Schieber said.

Loucks recalled the next conversation the two men had. "He said they had a big works outside of Berlin that was just completed when the war was over and made little token amounts but no production. When [the Reich] announced that the Russians were taking over, those engineers and chemists both came West into the American and British occupied zones." Schieber was lying to General Loucks. The nerve gas production plant outside Berlin to which Schieber referred was Falkenhagen, and it was run by Otto Ambros's deputy and the man who had stashed the steel drum outside Gendorf, Jürgen von Klenck. By war's end, the factory at Falkenhagen had produced more than five hundred tons of sarin gas, hardly "little token amounts," as Schieber claimed. If Loucks had read von Klenck's OMGUS security report, or any of the CIOS reports written by Major Edmund Tilley, he would have learned that Schieber was lying to him. Instead, General Loucks asked Schieber if he could locate these chemists who knew so much about sarin production and bring them to Heidelberg. He held out to Schieber the promise of a U.S. Army contract. Further, "We will pay all their [the chemists'] expenses and give them something for their work," Loucks said.

"Yes, I can do that." Schieber replied. He said that he knew all of the Farben chemists and could easily get them to tell the Americans everything. He listed their names for Loucks. One of the six Farben chemists on the list was Ambros's deputy and the man who ran Falkenhagen, Jürgen von Klenck.

On October 29, 1948, Colonel Loucks wrote a memorandum to the chief of the Army Chemical Corps. The best, fastest way to get German technical information on tabun and sarin gas was to hire Dr. Schieber, Colonel Loucks advised. In his diary, Loucks wrote, "Hope the chief will support us. If he does, we'll be able to get all of the German CW technical ability on our side and promptly. They know on what side they belong. All we need to do is treat them as human beings. They recognize the military defeat and the political and ideological defeat as well and accept it."

One week later, General Loucks told Schieber that he had been authorized to pay him 1,000 marks a month for consulting work. Schieber gave Loucks the contact information for the six chemists and technicians who would join him in his efforts to explain precisely how to produce sarin gas. On December 11, 1948, Loucks hosted the first roundtable meeting of Hitler's chemists in his Heidelberg home, secrecy assured. For the next three months, the chemists met every other Saturday at Loucks's home. There, they created detailed, step-by-step reports on how to produce industrial amounts of sarin gas. They drew charts and graphs and made lists of materials and equipment required. Years later, Loucks reflected, "One of the team [members] was a young engineer who had an excellent command of English which helped greatly and was his major contribution [and that was] Jurgend [*sic*] von Klenck."

When the work was finally compiled and sent to Edgewood, the results were the perfect recipe for the deadly nerve agent. According to General Loucks, without Hitler's chemists, the American program had been a failure. With them, it was a success. "That's when we built the plant out in Rocky Mountain Arsenal," Loucks explained. The incendiary bombs that Colonel Loucks oversaw at Rocky Mountain Arsenal during World War II would now be replaced by M34 cluster bombs filled with sarin gas. The Top Secret program was code-named Gibbett-Delivery.

A friendship between two brigadier generals, Loucks and Schieber, had been solidified. The following summer, Schieber sent Loucks a thank-you note and a gift, not identified in the records but described by Schieber as a piece of "equipment… that once stood at the beginning of the same work group." The unknown item had been used by Schieber during the Nazi era, when sarin gas was first developed for Hitler. Over the next eight years the two brigadier generals exchanged Christmas cards.

In January 1950, General Loucks was called to Washington, D.C., for several meetings at the Pentagon. According to Loucks's desk diary, during his first meeting there he was reprimanded by a Pentagon official for cultivating friendly relationships with Hitler's chemists.

" 'I don't like this," Loucks wrote that his superior had informed him. " 'I don't want to be made a fool of over this. Everyone seems to have cut them [the Nazis] off their list. To be friendly with them seems bad form.' "

But General Loucks noted in his diary that he had every intention of defying this superior's request. He had become good friends with the

German chemists. He regularly had meals with Walter Schieber and Richard Kuhn, and, on at least one occasion, Schieber had spent the night at Loucks's house. "I'll see them anyhow," he wrote, in a diary entry dated February 1, 1950. The following day, Loucks was called back in to the Pentagon. "Went to Pentagon," he wrote, "long session with H.Q. Int. [headquarters, intelligence] people… seemed interested in what we are doing [in Heidelberg]—would give me money necessary to exploit the Germans for scientific and technical intelligence." In other words, what some at the Pentagon refused to condone, others were willing to support through covert means.

General Loucks's secret Saturday roundtable at his house in Heidelberg with the Nazi chemists remained hidden from the public for six decades. Here was a brigadier general with the U.S. Army doing business with a former brigadier general of the Third Reich allegedly in the interests of the United States. It was a Cold War black program that was paid for by the U.S. Army but did not officially exist. There were no checks and no balances. Operation Paperclip was becoming a headless monster.

The CIA's working relationship with the JIOA and Operation Paperclip had begun within a few months of the Agency's creation. Within the CIA, Paperclip was managed inside the Office of Collection and Dissemination, and one of the first things requested by its administrator, L. T. Shannon, was "a photostatted copy of a set of files compiled by Dr. Werner Osenberg and consisting of biographical records of approximately 18,000 German scientists." By the winter of 1948, hundreds of memos were going back and forth between the JIOA and the CIA. Sometimes the CIA would request information from the JIOA on certain scientists, and sometimes the JIOA would ask the CIA to provide it with intelligence on a specific scientist or group of scientists.

Also in the first three months of the CIA's existence, the National Security Council issued Directive No. 3, dealing specifically with the "production of intelligence and the coordination of intelligence production activities within the intelligence community." The National Security Council wanted to know who was producing what intelligence and how that information was being coordinated among agencies. In the opinion of the CIA, "the link between scientific planning and military research on a national scale did not hitherto exist.” The result was the creation of the Scientific Intelligence Committee (SIC), chaired by the CIA and with members from the army, the navy, the air force, the State Department, and the Atomic Energy Commission. “Very early in its existence the SIC undertook to define scientific intelligence, delineate areas of particular interest and establish committees to handle these areas,” wrote SIC chairman Dr. Karl Weber, in a CIA monograph that remained classified until September 2008. “Priority was accorded to atomic energy, biological warfare, chemical warfare, electronic warfare, guided missiles, aircraft, undersea warfare and medicine”—every area involving Operation Paperclip scientists. Eight scientific intelligence subcommittees were created, one for each area of warfare.

Despite the urgency, the JIOA’s plan to make Operation Paperclip over into a long-term program was still at a standstill. By the spring of 1948, half of the one thousand German scientists bound for America had arrived, but not a single one of them had a visa. Troublemaker Samuel Klaus was gone from the State Department, but the JIOA could still not get the visa division to make things happen fast enough. On May 11, 1948, military intelligence chief General Stephen J. Chamberlin, the man who had briefed Eisenhower in 1947, took matters into his own hands. Chamberlin went to meet FBI director J. Edgar Hoover to enlist his help with visas. Cold War paranoia was on the rise, and both men were staunch anti-Communists. The success of Operation Paperclip, said Chamberlin, was essential to national security. The FBI had the Communists to fear, not the Nazis. Hoover agreed. Paperclip recruits needed the promise of American citizenship now more than ever, Chamberlin said, before any more of them were stolen away by the Russians. Chamberlin asked Hoover to put pressure on the State Department. J. Edgar Hoover said he would see what he could do. What, if anything, Hoover did remains a mystery. Three months later, the first seven scientists had U.S. immigrant visas. Now it was time to put the transition process to the test.

For Operation Paperclip, moving a scientist from military custody to immigrant status required elaborate and devious preparation, but in the end the procedure proved to be infallible. Scientists in the southwestern or western United States, accompanied by military escort, were driven in an unmarked army jeep out of the country into Mexico either at Nuevo Laredo, Ciudad Juárez, or Tijuana. With him, each scientist carried two forms from the State Department, I-55 and I-255, each bearing a signature from the chief of the visa division and a proviso from the Joint Chiefs of Staff, Section 42.323 of Title 22, signifying that the visa holder was "a person whose admission is highly desirable in the national interest." The scientist also had with him a photograph of himself and a blood test warranting that he did not have any infectious diseases. After consulate approval, the scientist was then let back into the United States, no longer under military guard but as a legal U.S. immigrant in possession of a legal visa. The pathway toward citizenship had begun. If the scientist lived closer to the East Coast than the West Coast, he went through the same protocols, except that he would exit the United States into Canada instead of Mexico and reenter through the consulate at Niagara Falls.

It was an international crisis in June of 1948 that finally gave Operation Paperclip its long-term momentum. Early on the morning of June 24, the Soviets cut off all land and rail access to the American zone in Berlin. This action would become known as the Berlin Blockade, and it was seen as one of the first major international crises of the Cold War. "The Soviet blockade of Berlin in 1948 clearly indicated that the wartime alliance [between the Soviets and the United States] had dissolved," explained CIA deputy director for operations Jack Downing. "Germany then became a new battlefield between east and west." The CIA presence in Germany was redoubled as its plans for covert action against the Soviets shifted into high gear. The CIA needed to hire thousands of foreign nationals living in Germany to help in this effort—spies, saboteurs, and scientists—many of whom had spent time in displaced-persons camps and interrogation facilities operated by the U.S. Army in the American zone of occupied Germany. Initially, the CIA and the JIOA worked hand in glove inside Germany to thwart Soviet threats, but soon the two agencies would start competing for German scientists and spies.

The two agencies worked together inside a clandestine intelligence facility in the American zone informally called Camp King. The activities there between 1946 and the late 1950s have never been fully accounted for by either the Department of Defense or the CIA. Camp King was strategically located in the village of Oberursel, just eleven miles northwest of the United States European Command (EUCOM) headquarters in Frankfurt. Officially the facility had two other names: the U.S. Military Intelligence Service Center at Oberursel and the 7707th European

Command Intelligence Center. A small plaque in a park outside the officers' club explained to visitors the significance of the informal name. Colonel Charles B. King, an intelligence officer, had been in the process of accepting the surrender of a group of Nazis on Utah Beach in June 1944 when he was double-crossed and slain by a "strong and concentrated barrage of enemy artillery fire." There was tragic irony in the name. Camp King had become home to many well-intentioned American officers trying to make deals with untrustworthy enemies. Many of these American officers would be double-crossed and at least one of them would be killed.

A lot had changed at Camp King since John Dolibois had personally delivered six Nazi Bonzen here in August 1945. The interrogation facility had become one of the most clandestine U.S. intelligence centers in Western Europe, and for more than a decade it would function as a Cold War black site long before black sites were known as such. Camp King was a joint interrogation center and the intelligence agencies that shared access to prisoners here included Army Intelligence, Air Force Intelligence, Naval Intelligence, and the CIA. By 1948, most of its prisoners were Soviet-bloc spies.

How the CIA used Camp King remains one of the Agency's most closely guarded secrets. It was here in Oberursel that the CIA first began developing "extreme interrogation" techniques and "behavior modification programs" under the code names Operation Bluebird and Operation Artichoke. The unorthodox methods the CIA and its partner agencies explored included hypnosis, electric shock, chemicals, and illegal street drugs. Camp King was chosen as an ideal place to do this work in part because it was "off-site" but mainly because of its access to prisoners believed to be Soviet spies.

When the Americans captured the facility in the spring of 1945, the Nazis had been using it as an interrogation facility for Allied fliers. Camp King's first commanding officer was Colonel William Russell Philp, and through the fall of 1945, Philp shared the Military Intelligence Service Center at Oberursel with General William J. Donovan, founding director of the Office of Strategic Services. General Donovan oversaw an operation here whereby high-ranking Nazi generals, including those dropped off by John Dolibois, were paid to write intelligence reports on subjects like German order of battle and Nazi Party chain of command. Dolibois, fluent in German, acted as Donovan's liaison to the Nazi prisoners during this time. General

Donovan kept an office at Oberursel until the OSS was disbanded in September 1945, after which he returned to Washington, D.C., and civilian life.

Colonel Philp's job was to handle the rest of the prisoners. In the months that followed war's end, the Camp King prisoner population grew to include Russian defectors and captured Soviet spies. There was valuable intelligence to be gained from these individuals, Philp learned, willingly or through coercion. But Philp also found that his officers lacked a greater context within which to interpret the raw intelligence being gathered from the Soviets. Russia had been America's ally during the war. Now it was the enemy. The Soviets were masters of disinformation. Who was telling the truth? The Nazi prisoners claimed to know, and Colonel Philp began using several of them to interpret and analyze information from Soviet defectors. These Nazis were "experts in espionage against the Russians," Philp later said. Two of them seemed particularly knowledgeable: Gerhard Wessel, who had been an officer in the German intelligence organization Abwehr, and Wessel's deputy, Hermann Baun. Philp put the men to work. What started out as a "research project using POWs" became a "gradual drift into operations," said Philp. He moved the Nazis into a safe house on the outskirts of Camp King, code-named Haus Blue, where they oversaw counterintelligence operations against the Soviets under the code name Project Keystone. Philp found that working with Nazis was a slippery slope, and in a matter of months the Germans had transformed from prisoners to paid intelligence assets of the U.S. Army.

In the summer of 1946 a major event occurred that influenced the CIA's future role in Operation Paperclip and Camp King. Major General Reinhard Gehlen, former head of the Nazis' intelligence operation against the Soviets, arrived at Camp King. Gehlen had been in the United States under interrogation since 1945. Here at Oberursel, Army Intelligence decided to make Gehlen head of its entire "anti-Communist intelligence organization," under the code name Operation Rusty. Eventually the organization would become known simply as the Gehlen Organization. A network of former Nazi intelligence agents, the majority of whom were members of the SS, began working out of offices at Camp King side by side with army intelligence officers. Colonel Philp was in charge of overall supervision. By late 1947, the Gehlen Organization had gotten so large it required its own headquarters. Army intelligence moved the organization to a self-contained facility outside Munich, in a village called Pullach. This compound was the former estate of Martin Bormann and had large grounds, sculpture gardens, and a pool. The two facilities, at Oberursel and Pullach, worked together. Gehlen and Baun claimed to have six hundred intelligence agents, all former Nazis, in the Soviet zone of occupied Germany alone. According to documents kept classified for fifty-one years, relations between Gehlen and Philp declined and became hostile as Philp finally realized the true nature of who he was dealing with. The Gehlen Organization was a murderous bunch, "free-wheeling" and out of control. As one CIA affiliate observed, "American intelligence is a rich blind man using the Abwehr as a seeing-eye dog. The only trouble is—the leash is much too long."

The army became fed up with the Gehlen Organization, but there was no way out. Its operatives were professional double-crossers and liars—many were also alleged war criminals—and now they had the army over a barrel. Decades later it would emerge that General Gehlen was reportedly earning a million dollars a year. In late 1948, CIA director Roscoe Hillenkoetter met with army intelligence to discuss the CIA's taking charge of the Gehlen Organization. The two parties agreed, and on July 1, 1949, the CIA officially assumed control of Gehlen and his men.

That same summer, the CIA created the Office of Scientific Intelligence (OSI), and its first director, Dr. Willard Machle, traveled to Germany to set up a program for "special interrogation methods" against Soviet spies. The CIA had intelligence indicating that the Soviets had developed mind control programs. The Agency wanted to know what it would be up against if the Russians got hold of its American spies. In an attempt to determine what kinds of techniques the Soviets might be using, the CIA set up a Top Secret interrogation program at Camp King. The facility offered unique access to Soviet spies who had been caught in the Gehlen Organization's web. Revolutionary new interrogation techniques could be practiced on these men under the operational code name Bluebird.

A limited number of official CIA documents remain on record from this program. Most were destroyed by CIA director Richard Helms. Initially the CIA envisioned Operation Bluebird as a "defensive" program. Officers from Scientific Intelligence were "to apply special methods of interrogation for the purpose of evaluation of Russian practices." But very quickly the Agency decided that in order to master the best defensive methods it needed to first develop the most cutting-edge offensive techniques. This sounded like doublespeak and was indicative of the Cold War mind-set that was taking hold in intelligence circles and also in the military. The CIA believed it needed to develop the sharpest sword to create the strongest, most impenetrable shield. Operation Bluebird was just the beginning. Soon the program would expand to include mind control techniques and Nazi doctors recruited under Operation Paperclip.

CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

Hall of Mirrors

In the fall of 1948, in Germany, one of the most unusual press conferences of the Cold War took place. Major General Walter Schreiber, the former surgeon general of the Third Reich, had last been seen on the stand at Nuremberg testifying against fellow members of the Nazi high command. Then, on November 2, 1948, he reappeared at a press conference. After three years, five months, and three days in Soviet custody, Schreiber had allegedly "escaped" from his Soviet captors. Now the vaccine specialist said he had important news to share with the free world. The press conference opened with Schreiber delivering a brief statement about what had happened to him—he'd been a prisoner of the Soviets since the fall of Berlin and had recently escaped—followed by a lengthy question-and-answer period with an American official acting as translator. The first question asked by a reporter was, How did Schreiber manage to escape?

Schreiber said he had "broken free" of his Communist guards in "a life or death situation" but hesitated to say more. With him now, in the safety of U.S. protective custody, he said, were his wife, Olga, his fourteen-year-old son, Paul-Gerhard, and one of his two grown daughters.

"How was it possible the Russians let him get out?" asked another member of the press, a question on everyone's mind. In the two years since General Schreiber's stunning testimony at Nuremberg, he'd been made *starshina,* or elder, in the Soviet military. It was almost inconceivable that a major player like Schreiber simply slipped away from his Soviet guards. Yet here he was.

"I'm not asking the details," the reporter clarified, "but how was it possible he was able to escape?"

In November 1948, Berlin was a city under psychological and physical siege. For more than four months now, the Soviets had blocked all rail, canal, and road access between East and West Berlin. To feed the civilians in the western zone, the Americans were flying in airplanes full of food. Schreiber's "escape" happened during the height of the Berlin Blockade.

"For reasons of security, [I] would not like to answer this question," Schreiber said.

"I don't want to ask any details," repeated the newsman. "But is it possible for others who are in the same position to get out?"

"The question was answered," said Schreiber.

Pressed further, Major General Dr. Schreiber reconstructed some of the events in his tale of escape. He'd been in Soviet Russia until the summer, he said. There, he and a group of other former Nazi generals lived together in a villa outside Berlin. In July or August, six of the generals, including Schreiber, were unexpectedly transported to a country house on the German-Polish border, near Frankfurt on the Oder, east of Berlin (not to be confused with Frankfurt on the Main, located in the American zone, southwest of Berlin). With regard to this mysterious journey and its greater purpose, Major General Schreiber said, "We were not asked, but we were told that we were going to join the police." Only then, Schreiber explained, did he learn he had been "appointed Chief Medical officer for the newly formed [East] German police." Schreiber said he was offered "food, clothing, housing, furniture… for advantages."

Four of the Nazi generals agreed to take the job. Schreiber said he objected. He was a scientist, not a policeman, he claimed to have told his Soviet handlers. The group of generals was transported to a home in Saxony, close to the Czechoslovakian border. Finally, "The last day of September, the four [generals] who had agreed were sent to Berlin in order to start their jobs," Schreiber said. He and another general, who had by this time also voiced objection, remained "guarded by police." Two days later Schreiber was sent to Dresden, in the Soviet zone. "There we were very well received, and I was offered the chance to become professor at the University of Leipzig," Schreiber told the press corps. "I demanded the University of Berlin. I had special reason for this demand. That was denied of me. For this reason, I made myself free."

So that was that. A chorus of West German reporters wanted more details. How does one simply make oneself free of Soviet military police, especially if one is the former surgeon general of the Third Reich? For the Soviets, turning high-ranking Nazi generals into Communist officials was an immense propaganda coup in the early days of the Cold War. One had to assume that Soviet military intelligence (Glavnoye Razvedyvatel'noye Upravleniye, or GRU) was keeping a watchful eye on each of the generals through their transition from Soviet Russia into the East German zone. The GRU's notorious official emblem featured an omnipotent bat hovering above the globe. The GRU kept radarlike track of people. They had eyes in the night. To allow Dr. Schreiber to get away sounded implausible.

"[I] took off alone, by express train, on the railroad, from Dresden to Berlin—and it was a trip of life and death," Schreiber said. And that was all he was going to say about it.

Next, Schreiber began to lecture his audience on the Soviet threat. He singled out a former colleague, Vincenz Müller, to blame, not unlike what he had done with Dr. Blome before the International Military Tribunal at Nuremberg. Lieutenant General Vincenz Müller was a dangerous man, exclaimed Schreiber. Now that he'd gone over to the Russian side, he was a threat to world peace. Lieutenant General Müller had recently been installed by the Soviet government as the new police leader in Berlin, Schreiber said. "He is a fanatical communist," promised Schreiber, "completely devoted to the Russians. This is all the more astonishing as Müller comes from a very devout Catholic family." The Russians had plans to arm Müller's new Berlin police force with "heavy weapons, tanks, [and] artillery." The Soviets had only one goal, Schreiber promised, and that was world domination. It was beginning right now with the rearmament of East Berlin.

"Can you give us the names of the four other generals, outside of General Vincenz Müller?" a news reporter asked.

"I don't think it is necessary in the scope of this press conference to give those names," said Schreiber.

"Could the Russians be selling you a bill of goods?" asked another reporter.

"The Russians are animated by the idea of world revolution," Schreiber said. He explained that in Russia, most people believe "the revolution is coming."

Another news reporter asked, "Were you wearing your [Soviet] uniform" when you escaped? It was a good question. If Schreiber had been wearing his Soviet uniform, then clearly he would have been noticed by border patrol guards, stopped, and questioned as he passed from the Soviet zone to the American zone of occupation. If Schreiber had not been wearing his Soviet uniform, then the obvious next question was, Why not? Schreiber's answer was convoluted. His Soviet uniform happened to be at the tailors' shop on the day of his escape, he said, getting new shoulder straps and embroidery on the collar. To emphasize his point, Schreiber even went so far as to re-create a conversation between himself and his Soviet handler—a man named "Fisher"—regarding the missing uniform. "Fisher said [to me], 'You are going to get [your uniform] later. For the time being, this is not yet possible.' "

The explanation seemed implausible to at least one newsman. "Why didn't you get your uniform tailored [earlier]?" the reporter asked.

Schreiber said that his measurements had been taken for the new uniform, but the tailoring was delayed.

When Schreiber's American handler moved to change the subject, another reporter asked for more information about the human experiments Dr. Schreiber had spoken of during the Nuremberg trial. "How did the Doctor obtain knowledge of experiments on human beings?" he queried.

Schreiber insisted he had "never taken part in any such research work.… The knowledge [I] gained about it, [I] either gained through documents [I] ran across in [my] position or in medical conventions, where intellectuals could see that something like that was being conducted in the background."

Every aspect of Schreiber's escape story seemed unreasonable, which made it difficult for the reporters to take seriously almost anything else he said. Yet the press conference went on for more than thirty minutes, with Schreiber standing his ground.

As it turned out, Schreiber's press conference was not impromptu but rehearsed. He had been discussing his testimony with officers from the U.S. Counter Intelligence Corps for two weeks—since October 18, 1948, the day he had walked into the CIC's Berlin office. CIC special agent Severin F. Wallach was Schreiber's handler. Wallach had heard a much longer version of what had allegedly been going on with Schreiber since his capture by the Red Army during the fall of Berlin.

According to the thirteen-page report by Wallach in Schreiber's intelligence dossier, "On the 5th of May Dr. Schreiber was sent, together with other captured German Generals, back to Berlin. The Generals were put in a cellar of the Reich Chancellery in Berlin and received orders to emerge from this cellar under strong Soviet guard. This whole scene was photographed by the Soviets, who were engaged in putting together an ‘authentic’ documentary film of the capture of Berlin.” On May 9, with the Reich’s surrender complete, Dr. Schreiber was sent with other officers to a much larger prisoner of war camp, in Posen, where he stayed until August 12, 1945. A transport of generals to Moscow had been organized; Schreiber said he arrived there on August 29. “The transport was very badly organized,” Schreiber said, according to the dossier report. “There was a food shortage because the cooks on the transport sold the food on the black market or kept it for themselves.” Schreiber’s testimony was resplendent with details. “All generals were sent to the PW camp No. 7027 in Krasnogorsk, near Moscow,” he recalled. Here, the food tasted wonderful because it came from the United States, in cans. Schreiber repeatedly told Wallach how much he loved everything about the United States.

On March 12, 1946, Schreiber said he was transferred to the Lubyanka prison in Moscow. “Treatment not bad.” On March 20 he claimed to have been interrogated by the Russians for the first time: “Subject was The German Preparation for Biological Warfare.” Wallach had to have known that this was highly improbable. Schreiber was one of the Third Reich’s highest-ranking medical doctors, and he was a major general in the army. On March 20, 1946, he would have been in Soviet custody for ten months. That this was his first interrogation was absurd. Schreiber told Wallach he was questioned by a lieutenant general named Kabulow for three days. Kabulow didn’t believe his testimony, Schreiber said, and so he was told, “Soviet interrogators are going to use now physical violence to break [you] and get the whole truth out of [you].” The next interrogation, recalled Schreiber, took place at three o’clock that same morning. “[I was] beaten by a Soviet officer who me knows as Lt. Smirnow [Smirnov]. Together with a Col. Walter Stern, who speaks German without the slightest accent and who [was] an excellent interrogator.”

Schreiber said he withstood three weeks of rough interrogation, at which point he finally broke down and “wrote the statement which later on was submitted by the Soviet Government to the International War Crimes Tribunal in Nuremberg.” He was flown from Moscow to Berlin, then down to Nuremberg to testify at the war crimes trial. During one of the flights Schreiber said his German-speaking Soviet interrogator, Colonel Stern, leaned over and whispered a warning to him. If Schreiber were to go off-book and say “anything detrimental to the interests of the Soviet Union, he would be hanged on his return to Russia.”

After testifying at Nuremberg, Schreiber said he was taken back to the Soviet Union, where he and three generals were set up in a two-story country house in Tomilino, sixteen miles southeast of Moscow. One of the three generals was Field Marshal Friedrich Paulus—the highest-ranking Nazi general to ever have surrendered to the Soviets, which Paulus did during the Battle of Stalingrad. Paulus’s own story, of the events leading up to his capture and his final communication with Hitler, was remarkable. The Soviets had also brought Paulus to testify at Nuremberg.

As William Shirer explained in *The Rise and Fall of the Third Reich,* the last days of Paulus’s command during the battle for Stalingrad were cataclysmic. “Paulus, torn between his duty to obey the mad Fuehrer and his obligation to save his own surviving troops from annihilation, appealed to Hitler.” Paulus sent an urgent message to the Führer that read, “Troops without ammunition or food… Effective command no longer possible… 18,000 wounded without any supplies or dressings or drugs… Further defense senseless. Collapse inevitable. Army requests immediate permission to surrender in order to save lives of remaining troops.” But Hitler refused to allow Paulus to surrender. “Surrender is forbidden,” Hitler wrote in return, “Sixth Army will hold their positions to the last man and the last round and by their heroic endurance will make an unforgettable contribution toward the establishment of a defensive front and the salvation of the Western world.”

“Heroic endurance” was a euphemism for suicide. Paulus was now supposed to kill himself. Hitler nudged him further in this direction by making Paulus a field marshal in what he hoped would be the last hour of the general’s life. “There is no record in military history of a German Field Marshal being taken prisoner,” Hitler told Alfred Jodl, who was standing next to him at the time. Instead, at 7:45 the following morning, Field Marshal Paulus surrendered. His last message to Hitler: “The Russians are at the door of our bunker. We are destroying our equipment.” He was taken prisoner shortly thereafter. What Paulus left behind was, as described by Shirer, a terrifying scene: “91,000 German soldiers, including twenty-four generals, half-starved, frostbitten, many of them wounded, all of them dazed and broken, were hobbling over the ice and snow, clutching their blood-caked blankets over their heads against the 24-degrees-below-zero cold toward the dreary, frozen prisoner-of-war camps of Siberia.” Of the ninety-one thousand Germans taken prisoner by the Soviets, only five thousand would come out of the prison camps alive. Paulus was one of them.

By 1947, he was living comfortably in this two-story country house with Major General Dr. Schreiber, outside Berlin. Actually, explained Schreiber, there were a total of four former Nazi generals living together under one roof. In addition to Field Marshal Friedrich Paulus, there was Lieutenant General Vincenz Müller, captured outside Minsk in 1944, and General Erich Buschenhagen, captured in eastern Romania in August 1944. For what purpose? Wallach asked. “Subject [Schreiber] is convinced Lt. Gen Vincenz Mueller was ordered by the Soviets to indoctrinate Professor Dr. Schreiber with communistic ideas.” Whatever the real reason, Schreiber said he and his fellow generals lived a relatively enjoyable life full of Soviet perks. At one point General Schreiber and General Buschenhagen were taken to live “in Moscow in a nicely furnished private house.” Their Soviet handler, with them constantly, “acted as a guide and took them to the museum, opera and to play-houses stressing the fact that Soviet Russia has a highly developed culture.” For Schreiber, the motive was clear. “This, too, was of course part of the planned indoctrination program,” he told Special Agent Wallach. All the while, Schreiber feigned that he was a happy Communist.

In July 1947, Field Marshal Paulus became sick and the group was “taken to a summer resort, Livadia, on the Crimea.” There was no shortage of irony here. This was the same palatial resort at which the Yalta Conference took place, in February 1945. The dangerous Lieutenant General Vincenz Müller was with Paulus and Schreiber at the resort. The group stayed through the summer and returned to Moscow, by private jet, when the summer weather passed. For the next year, the former Nazi generals resided again at the country house in Tomilino, Schreiber said. Only now they were heavily engaged in antifascist courses that the Soviets required them to take. Studying kept the generals occupied until September 7, 1948. That’s when Schreiber said he learned that he and twenty-five other former Nazi generals would be leaving for East Germany at once. After Schreiber said no to the police job, he was brought to Dresden and put up in the Hotel Weisser Hirsch, at Bergbahnstrasse 12. His handler, the man called Fisher, agreed to release him from police work, Schreiber said. Fisher stepped away to work on arrangements regarding Schreiber's teaching position. According to Schreiber, that was when he got away.

Special Agent Wallach summarized the details. "Subject remained alone without anybody looking after him… Subject simply took a train in Dresden on the 17th and arrived in Berlin on the same day. After contacting his family in Berlin… subject established contact with this agent… and was since then under the protection of U.S. authorities in Berlin. At the end of October subject was evacuated with his family to the U.S. Zone for detailed exploitation by ECIC [European Command Intelligence Center]," Camp King.

Was Schreiber a double agent? Was he a true-to-life James Bond? How was he able to resist the Soviets' notoriously brutal interrogation techniques when so many others—from hardened generals to civilians to spies—were beaten into human ruin? Was he a charlatan? Or a weasel of a man, uniquely skilled at saving his own hide? What was he really doing in Soviet Russia for three and a half years? Special Agent Wallach drew his own conclusion. "Subject made an excellent impression on the undersigned agent. It is not believed that subject is a Soviet plant," wrote Wallach. He signed his name in black ink.

Wallach's interrogation report was sent to the director of the Intelligence Division of the U.S. Army, EUCOM, with a memo written by Wallach's CIC superior marked "Secret-Confidential." It read: "Subject [Schreiber] claims to know everybody in his transport, their background, political attitude and new job assignments… Will be ready for transfer to your headquarters for detailed interrogation in about six days." Schreiber had told Wallach he had information on all the high-ranking Nazis now working for the East German police.

On November 3, 1948, the director of the Intelligence Division of the U.S. Army sent a telegram marked "Secret" to JIOA headquarters at the Pentagon, with a copy also sent to the Joint Chiefs of Staff. "If the Surgeon General replies that Schreiber is of importance to national security, his case should be processed under JCS procedure for immigration to the U.S." Major General Dr. Prof. Walter Schreiber, the former surgeon general of the Third Reich, was about to become part of Operation Paperclip. In the meantime, he and his family were taken to Camp King and put up in a safe house there. When General Charles E. Loucks learned that Schreiber was in U.S. custody, he traveled to Camp King to interview him. Loucks was the man who had welcomed Hitler's chemists into his home in Heidelberg to work on the secret formula for sarin production. He was particularly interested in learning from Dr. Schreiber about vaccines or serums produced by the Reich to defend against nerve agents.

Loucks found Schreiber to be "cooperative in all respects" and hired him to work for the U.S. Chemical Corps "in compiling data concerning the Nazi Chemical Corps." To oversee the project, General Loucks traveled back and forth from Heidelberg to Camp King. Next, Schreiber was hired to write a monograph for the U.S. Army about his experiences in Russia. When Loucks was finished working with Schreiber, he was asked by Camp King's commanding officer, Lieutenant Colonel Gordon D. Ingraham, if he would testify as to Schreiber's character for the doctor's OMGUS security report. Given Schreiber's position as a general in the Nazi high command, it was going to take serious effort on the part of JIOA to bring Schreiber into the United States. Loucks agreed but was uncharacteristically skeptical of the Nazi general's motivations. "Loucks stated subject was energetic and a good organizer of work projects.… Schreiber had apparently given accurate information [to Loucks] on all occasions [which has] been checked and confirmed by Technical Research experts in the United States.… However, Loucks stated that Schreiber may also have given this same information 'to the Russians.' " Loucks told Lieutenant Colonel Ingraham that he "believed that Schreiber could be persuaded by any attractive offer." In other words, Schreiber's loyalty could be bought.

At Camp King, Dr. Schreiber and his family were moved into a nice home provided by the U.S. Army. Despite General Loucks's concern about Schreiber's trustworthiness, in November 1949 Major General Dr. Walter Schreiber was hired by army intelligence to serve as post physician at the clandestine interrogation facility that was Camp King. According to Schreiber's declassified OMGUS security report, his new job involved "handling all the medical problems at Camp King [and] caring for internees." This meant Schreiber was in charge of the health and well-being of the Soviet prisoners held here, some of whom were being subjected to "special interrogation methods" by the CIA. Given the army's obsession with Soviet spies and the possibility of double agents, hiring a Nazi general turned Soviet *starshina* was an unusual choice when one considered the real possibility that Schreiber had not escaped from the Russians but was working for them. If Schreiber was a Soviet spy, it would have been very easy for him to learn everything that the CIA and military intelligence were doing at Camp King.

On the other hand, if Schreiber really had escaped from the Russians, then there was a lot to be exploited from his Soviet experience. Having been a prisoner of the Russians for the past three and a half years, he was familiar with at least some of the Soviets' interrogation techniques. He spoke Russian fluently as well. Lieutenant Colonel Ingraham was confident that Dr. Schreiber was a truth-teller. Ingraham kept him on as post doctor until August 1951. Colonel Ingraham also hired Schreiber's twenty-three-year-old daughter, Dorothea Schreiber, to serve as his personal secretary.

While employed at Camp King, Schreiber told his Army handler that the Russians were trying to capture and kill him and he asked to use the cover name of "Doc Fischer," to hide his identity. It was a cryptic choice for an alias. "Fisher" had been the name of the Soviet handler from whom Schreiber had allegedly escaped, in Dresden, and it was also the name of an SS doctor who served as one of Schreiber's wartime subordinates at the Ravensbrück concentration camp. Dr. Fritz Fischer had performed medical experiments on Polish women and girls at Ravensbrück, crimes for which he had been tried and convicted of murder at the Nuremberg doctors' trial. Fritz Fischer was one of the few doctors who had accepted his guilt over the course of the trial. After hearing some particularly shocking witness testimony against him, Dr. Fischer confided in war crimes investigator Dr. Alexander about how he felt. "I would have liked to stand up and say hang me immediately," Fischer told Alexander.

Looking at the whole scenario—Dr. Schreiber, Doc Fischer, the Soviet Mr. Fisher, and the SS doctor Fritz Fischer—was like seeing a man standing in a hall of mirrors. But then again Operation Paperclip was a world marked by duplicity and deception. It was impossible to know who was telling the truth.

In September 1949, John J. McCloy became U.S. high commissioner of Allied Germany, marking the end of more than four years of military rule of Germany by the Allies. The day also marked the beginning of the end of the time Dr. Otto Ambros would spend in prison for war crimes. Soon he would be placed on the Operation Paperclip target list.

Ambros, Hitler’s favorite chemist, had been incarcerated for roughly one year of an eight-year prison sentence. On July 30, 1948, Ambros had been convicted of mass murder and slavery in Case No. VI of the subsequent Nuremberg proceedings, the IG Farben trial, and sent to Landsberg Prison, also called War Criminal Prison No. 1. Located thirty-eight miles west of Munich, Landsberg was home to 1,526 convicted Nazi war criminals. The men were housed in a central prison barracks inside individual cells, but the facility itself was situated on a boarding school–like campus, with nineteenth-century buildings, leafy parks, and a grand, wood-paneled Catholic church. Adolf Hitler had been a prisoner here for eight months in 1924. Landsberg Prison was where Hitler wrote *Mein Kampf.*

In prison Ambros taught “chemical technology” to other inmates as part of a prisoner education program. He penned letters to his mother expressing how unfair it all was. “Politic[s] is a bitter disease and it is grotesque that I, as a non-political person, should suffer for something I have not done,” he wrote. “But one day, all this suffering will cease and then it will not be long before I have forgotten all this bitterness.” Ambros’s nineteen-year-old son, Dieter Ambros, wrote clemency appeals on his father’s behalf. “My father is innocent as you know,” began one letter to Bishop Theophil Wurm, a Protestant leader who regularly advocated for the war criminals’ release. “Thank you for supporting our efforts… my father is [being] illegally held.” Ambros was a model prisoner. Only once was he written up for disciplinary action: “Inmate Ambros, Otto, WCPL No. 1442 was standing and looking out the window at the women’s exercise yard [and] this is against the prison regulations,” reads a note in his prison file.

Otto Ambros had many lawyers working for him to secure an early release. He also wrote petitions himself, requesting small items. In 1948, he asked the prison board for an extra pillow, softer than the one provided. In 1949, he requested permission to keep his accordion in his cell. Each year, Ambros saw the Landsberg Prison doctor for a checkup. Convicted Nazi war criminal Dr. Oskar Schröder, former chief of the Medical Corps Services of the Luftwaffe, checked Ambros’s vitals and wrote up his annual health report. Schröder had been employed by the U.S. Army Air Forces at the Aero Medical Center in Heidelberg before the doctors’ trial and was now serving a life term at Landsberg. Also in the prison were Hermann Becker-Freyseng and Wilhelm Beiglböck, serving twenty and fifteen year sentences, respectively.

The twelve subsequent war crimes trials at Nuremberg had ended just a few months prior to John J. McCloy's becoming high commissioner of Germany. Most Americans had long since lost interest in following any of the trials. The majority of Germans disagreed with the whole war crimes trial premise, and many saw those convicted as having been singled out by American and British victors and given "victors' justice" as punishment. At war's end, U.S. occupation authorities had determined that 3.6 million Nazis in the American zone alone were "indictable" for political or war crimes. This enormous number was eventually whittled down to a more manageable 930,000 individuals, who were then processed through 169,282 denazification trials. More than 50,000 Germans had been convicted of various Nazi-era crimes, most in the Spruchkammern courts but also in Allied military tribunals. The majority of those convicted served some time in postwar detention camps or paid nominal fines. When McCloy took office, 806 Nazis had been sentenced to death and sent to Landsberg Prison, with 486 executions carried out to date. By the fall of 1949, the German press had begun referring to the convicted criminals held at Landsberg as the "so-called prisoners of war." This was just one of the sensitive issues that Commissioner McCloy was faced with when he arrived. Another was Operation Paperclip.

McCloy had been a champion of the Nazi scientist program from its very first days, back in the late spring of 1945, when he served as assistant secretary of war. He was also the chairman of the State-War-Navy Coordinating Committee at the time, which put him in charge of making some of the first decisions regarding the fate of the program. McCloy was a statesman and a lawyer but he was also an economist. In between his tenure as assistant secretary of war and high commissioner of Germany, he was president of the World Bank. His service there came at a critical time in the bank's early history. McCloy is credited in World Bank literature as "defining the relationship between the Bank and the United Nations and the Bank and the United States." Now he was back in government service as a diplomat, having come to Germany to fill the shoes of General Lucius D. Clay, exiting OMGUS chief. John J. McCloy was a short, plump man, balding, with a banker's bravado. When in public he almost always wore a crisp suit. As high commissioner he traveled around Germany in the private diesel train that had belonged to Adolf Hitler. While power had been officially transferred to a new West German civilian government, run by

Chancellor Konrad Adenauer, McCloy remained in charge of many aspects of Germany's law and order as West Germany transitioned into becoming its own sovereign nation once again. One area that Chancellor Adenauer had absolutely no jurisdiction over was the Landsberg prisoners. Several hundred of these convicted war criminals had already been hanged in the Landsberg courtyard. Eighty-six others faced death. When McCloy took office as high commissioner, the rhetoric around the Landsberg prisoners was at an all-time high. Many Germans wanted the prisoners released.

In November of 1949, a group of German lawyers linked to the Farben industrialists, including Otto Ambros, requested a meeting with John J. McCloy at his office in the former IG Farben building, in Frankfurt. The IG Farben building had been taken over by the U.S. Army when troops entered Frankfurt in March of 1945 and had served as a home for the U.S. Army and various U.S. government organizations ever since. The massive complex—the largest office building in Europe until the 1950s—had panoramic views of Frankfurt, as well as parklands, a sports field, and a pond. In August 1949, OMGUS moved its headquarters from Berlin to Frankfurt, and shortly thereafter the U.S. high commissioner's office headquarters were set up in the IG Farben complex. In September 1949, McCloy settled in. The CIA maintained an office in the IG Farben building throughout the Cold War. It was located just a few floors and a few doors down from McCloy's office.

It was a precarious time for an American civilian to be governing occupied Germany. The Soviets had just detonated their first atomic bomb, years ahead of what had been predicted by the CIA. The U.S. military was on high alert, perhaps nowhere more so than in West Germany. During the November meeting in McCloy's office at the IG Farben complex, German lawyers told McCloy that if West Germany and the United States were going to move forward together in a united front against the Communist threat, something had to be done about the men incarcerated at Landsberg. These prisoners were viewed unanimously by Germans as "political prisoners," the lawyers said, and they told McCloy that he should grant all of them clemency.

After the meeting, McCloy sent a memo to the legal department of the Allied High Commission, inquiring if "after sentences were imposed by military tribunal," he, as U.S. high commissioner, had any authority to review the sentences. The legal department told him that as far as the

Landsberg war criminals were concerned, he had the authority to do whatever he thought appropriate. In America, Telford Taylor, the former Nuremberg prosecutor general, caught wind of what was going on in the high commissioner's office in Frankfurt and was outraged. He wrote to McCloy to remind him that the Nazi war criminals at Landsberg "are without any question among the most deliberate, shameless murderers of the entire Nuremberg List, and any idea of further clemency in their cases seems to me out of the question." McCloy never responded, according to McCloy's biographer, Kai Bird.

McCloy established an official review board to examine the war criminals' sentences—the Advisory Board on Clemency for War Criminals, known as the Peck Panel, after its chairman, David W. Peck. A powerful former Nazi lieutenant general, Hans Speidel, appealed personally to McCloy. Speidel was one of Chancellor Konrad Adenauer's chief advisers on rearmament, a highly controversial subject but one being discussed nonetheless. Hans Speidel's younger brother, Wilhelm Speidel, was a convicted war criminal at Landsberg. Speidel told McCloy's adjunct in Bonn, "[If] the prisoners at Landsberg were hanged, Germany as an armed ally against the East was an illusion." In a similarly bullish manner, Chancellor Konrad Adenauer told McCloy the same thing, advising him that he should grant "the widest possible clemency for persons sentenced to confinement."

In June 1950, North Korean forces, supported by Communist benefactors, moved across the 38th parallel, marking the start of the Korean War. The idea that the Communists were also about to invade Western Europe took hold in the Pentagon. On July 14, 1950, the commander at Wright-Patterson Air Force Base sent an urgent memo to Operation Paperclip's in-house champion, Colonel Donald Putt: "Due to the threat of impending hostilities in Europe and the possibility that forces of the USSR may rapidly overrun the continent, this command is concerned with the problem of the immediate implementation of an evacuation program for German and Austrian scientists." Were these scientists to "fall into enemy hands… they would constitute a threat to our national security." Air force intelligence recommended to JIOA that it initiate a "mass procurement effort" in Germany. JIOA agreed and began making formal plans with the high commissioner's office to effect this.

The Korean War sparked a new fire under Operation Paperclip. Inside the high commissioner's office, McCloy maintained a group called the Scientific Research Division that was specifically dedicated to the issue of German scientists. The head of the division was Dr. Carl Nordstrom, and ever since McCloy had taken office Nordstrom had been trying to expedite the procession of German scientists to America. Dr. Nordstrom maintained a thick file labeled "Allocation of German Scientists and Technicians" and had sent many eyes-only memos to McCloy in "support of certain research projects" he foresaw as valuable to national interest. Now, in light of the Korean War, Nordstrom got a new job from JIOA. He was assigned to be the German liaison to a new JIOA program being fast-tracked out of the Pentagon, named Accelerated Paperclip but called Project 63 in the field: A number of Germans had soured on the name Paperclip. The premise of the Accelerated Paperclip program was to move "especially dangerous top level scientists" out of Germany in a "modified Denial Program" that needed to be kept away from the Soviets at all costs. The high commissioner's office began working with army intelligence to "evacuate" 150 of these scientists, code-named the "K" list, from Germany to the United States. A group of American officers called the Special Projects Team would be dispatched to recruit the "K" list scientists. The Joint Chiefs of Staff approved a prodigious $1 million procurement budget to help entice these "especially dangerous top level scientists" to come to America, the equivalent of approximately $10 million in 2013.

Accelerated Paperclip, or Project 63, meetings were held at the high commissioner's offices in Wiesbaden and Frankfurt, with Dr. Carl Nordstrom keeping notes. Representatives from JIOA, the army, the air force, EUCOM, and the CIA attended. Because many on the "K" list did not have a job offer already in place, the JIOA decided to set up a clandestine office in New York City, at the Alamac Hotel, where the scientists could live while they waited for assignments. The Accelerated Paperclip project director in America, Colonel William H. Speidel (no known relation to the Wilhelm Speidel war criminal at Landsberg Prison or his lawyer brother), maintained an office there. An entire block of rooms was set aside in the nineteen-story hotel, on Seventy-first Street and Broadway, for a yet-unnamed group of German scientists scheduled to arrive at a future date. A welcome brochure was printed up and kept on file at the high commissioner's office. "To insure your comfort, convenience and interest in general," it read, "a competent officer, assisted by a carefully selected staff… will serve your interests from the time of your arrival until the time of your departure to enter employment." The officer "will maintain an office at the hotel in which you reside and be prepared to complete, or make provisions for, all arrangements incident to housing, restaurant facilities, securing medical services, and the administrative details of the project." The U.S. Army's "primary interest," the scientists were told, "is in providing for your comfort, contentment, happiness and security [and] efforts will be directed to help you in attaining these goals with a minimum [of] friction, distraction, and delay."

But the program did not take off like fire in dry grass, as Dr. Nordstrom had hoped it would. Much to everyone's surprise, the offers made under Accelerated Paperclip were rejected by many of the German scientists who were approached. When JIOA requested an explanation from the high commissioner's office as to why, Nordstrom reported that some on the "K" list were simply "too old, too rich, too busy and too thoroughly disgruntled with past experiences with Americans," to see a free room at the Alamac Hotel in New York City as a career move. Besides, Germany had its own chancellor now, and for the first time in five years, many German scientists saw that a prosperous scientific future was possible in their own country.

Others could not wait to come to America. With Accelerated Paperclip's newest policy in place, Class I offenders could now be put on a JIOA list. This included Dr. Schreiber, still serving as post physician at Camp King. Another Class I offender was Dr. Kurt Blome, former deputy surgeon general of the Third Reich and Hitler's biological weapons expert. The sword and the shield.

Finally, there was Dr. Otto Ambros, the war criminal convicted at Nuremberg of slavery and mass murder. In the winter of 1951, Otto Ambros was placed on the JIOA list for Accelerated Paperclip even though he was still incarcerated at Landsberg Prison.

In January of 1951, John J. McCloy's office announced that he had come to a decision regarding the war criminals incarcerated at Landsberg Prison. The Peck Panel had finished its review process and recommended "substantial reductions of sentences" in the majority of cases involving lengthy prison terms. As for those who had been handed death sentences, the panel advised McCloy to consider each case individually. Also at issue was a financial matter. At Nuremberg, the judges had ordered the confiscation of property of convicted war criminals whose money was so often earned on the backs of slave laborers, tens of thousands of whom had been worked to death. Now, the Peck Panel suggested that this confiscation order be rescinded. For Otto Ambros, this would mean that he could keep what remained of the gift, from Adolf Hitler, of 1 million reichsmarks, a figure that has never been revealed before. McCloy spent several months considering the panel's recommendations. During this time he was deluged with letters from religious groups and activists in Germany urging for the war criminals' release. McCloy sent a cable from Frankfurt to Washington asking for counsel from the White House. The White House advised McCloy that the decision was his to make.

John J. McCloy commuted ten of the fifteen death sentences. This meant that ten men condemned by International Military Tribunal judges—including the commander of the Malmédy Massacre, considered one of the war's worst atrocities against prisoners of war, and several SS officers who had overseen the mobile killing units called Einsatzgruppen—would be released back into society within one and seven years. Among the death sentences McCloy chose to uphold were those of Otto Ohlendorf, commander of Einsatzgruppe D, responsible for ninety thousand deaths in Ukraine; Paul Blobel, commander of Einsatzgruppe C, responsible for thirty-three thousand deaths at Babi Yar, in Kiev; and Oswald Pohl, chief administrator of the concentration camps. McCloy also drastically reduced the sentences of sixty-four out of seventy-four remaining war criminals, which meant that one-third of the inmates tried at Nuremberg were freed. On February 3, 1951, Otto Ambros traded in his red-striped denim prison uniform for the tailored suit he had arrived in. He walked out of the gates of Landsberg Prison a free man, his finances fully restored.

General Telford Taylor was indignant. In a press release he stated, "Wittingly or not, McCloy has dealt a blow to the principles of international law and concepts of humanity for which we fought the war." Eleanor Roosevelt asked in her newspaper column, "Why are we freeing so many Nazis?"

The will and wherewithal to punish Nazi war criminals had faded with the passage of time. "Doctors who had participated in the murder of patients continued to practice medicine, Nazi judges continued to preside over courtrooms, and former members of the SS, SD and Gestapo found positions in the intelligence services," explains Andreas Nachama, curator of the Nazi Documentation Center in Berlin. "Even some leaders of the special mobile commandos ("Einsatzkommandos") [paramilitary extermination squads] tried to pursue careers in the public service."

The following month, on March 27, 1951, Dr. Carl Nordstrom dispatched Charles McPherson, an officer with the Special Projects Team, to go locate and hire Dr. Kurt Blome. The Special Projects Team was now composed of a group of twenty agents, each with his own "K" list of scientists to find. McPherson learned that Blome lived at 34 Kielstrasse, in Dortmund, and he traveled there to interview the doctor.

During his first visit, Charles McPherson learned that Dr. Blome lived in the apartment adjacent to Blome's private physician's practice in Dortmund during the week. On weekends he returned to his home in Hagen, twelve miles away, to be with his family. "His English is excellent and no interpreter is necessary to carry on a conversation," McPherson wrote in his report. The reason for the visit, McPherson told Dr. Blome, was to offer Blome a contract with Operation Paperclip. "He stated he would definitely be interested." Dr. Blome requested more details. "He feels he is too old to begin a new type of work and would prefer to return to biological research or cancer research." Blome alluded to the fact that he had already worked on Top Secret germ warfare research for the British, under Operation Matchbox, the British equivalent of Operation Paperclip. Blome said that the British had helped secure his house in Hagen for him. McPherson left Dortmund with the impression that the fifty-seven-year-old was "very interested but would need a definite offer before he could make up his mind."

Approximately three months later, on Thursday, June 21, 1951, McPherson again interviewed Dr. Blome. "I presented him with a copy of our contract form and informed him that we were willing to pay him about $6400 per year for the duration of the contract." Blome had additional questions. He asked McPherson about the buying power of this salary and the amount of taxes he would have to pay. "He then had another request which I informed him that I could do nothing about," McPherson wrote. Blome said he had "some money which was tied up in a professional account because it had been determined that these are funds of the Nazi Party." Blome asked McPherson for his help in trying to release the money back to him, and to look into "the possibilities of transferring [the money] from Marks into Dollars," in order to bring it to the United States. McPherson explained, "I informed him that there was no legal means at present of doing this but that this could be transacted through Switzerland."

Blome said he needed some time to read over the contract and to discuss the matter with his wife. He said he'd get in touch with McPherson in about two weeks. In August it was official: "Professor Kurt Blome was contracted under Project 63 on 21 August. Will be ready for shipment 15 November," McPherson wrote. The Blomes took their boys out of school and began teaching them English. Dr. Blome turned his practice over to another doctor in Dortmund. The couple traveled to the Berlin Document Center and provided sworn testimony regarding their Nazi past. The documents were reviewed by McCloy's office. Per Accelerated Paperclip, a key document that would be used for a visa application, the Revised Security Report on German (or Austrian) Scientist or Important Technician, was drawn up.

The single most important element governing justification of Accelerated Paperclip/Project 63 was now stated on page one: "Based on available records… Subjects have not been in the past and are not at the present time members of the Communist Party." The issue of being an ardent Nazi had lost first position and was relegated down to section six. There, the issue of Blome's Nazi Party record was addressed: "Kurt Blome entered the Party on 1 July 1931 with Party number 590233. He is also listed as a member of the SA since 1941 and is a holder of the Golden Party Badge since 1943. His wife, Dr. Bettina Blome, entered the Party on 1 April 1940 with Party number 8,257,157." It was also noted, "The 66th CIC Central Registry contains a Secret dossier on Dr. Kurt Blome." Those details were separately classified.

"Based on available records, Subjects were not war criminals but undoubtedly were ardent Nazis," wrote Lieutenant Colonel Harry R. Smith, an authorized representative of John J. McCloy. Blome was a Nazi ideologue and Smith stated so. He also wrote that Blome was not likely to become a security threat. "It is the opinion of the United States High Commissioner for Germany that they are not likely to become security threats to the United States." The report was signed and dated September 27, 1951. Two weeks later, on October 10, 1951, Blome's secret

Accelerated Paperclip contract was approved. But on October 4, 1951, the chief of Army Intelligence, G-2, a colonel by the name of Garrison B. Coverdale, read the high commissioner's security report on Dr. Blome and rejected Blome's admission to Operation Paperclip. McCloy's representative, Lieutenant Colonel Harry R. Smith, had failed to do the most important thing necessary when it came to drawing up a Paperclip contract: to lie by omission about Nazi party loyalty. All kinds of phrases could be used to allow the State Department to turn a blind eye to its legal obligation to keep Nazis out of the United States. Most OMGUS security officers knew to write "not a security threat" or "merely an opportunist" in the space that asked about the scientist's Nazi Party record. After reading the report, Colonel Garrison B. Coverdale sent a confidential cable to the director of JIOA in Washington, stating, "Attention is invited to paragraph 6 of subject report." In stating the truth, Lieutenant Colonel Harry R. Smith made it impossible for Dr. Blome's Paperclip contract to be approved.

On October 12, 1951, the JIOA and Army Intelligence read the high commissioner's report. A confidential memo from the Department of the Army in Heidelberg was sent back marked urgent: "Suspend shpmt Dr. Kurt Blome appears inadmissible in view of HICOG [High Commissioner of Germany]."

McPherson would not readily accept this setback. "Blome contract signed and approved Commander in Chief. Subject completing preparations for shipment late November. Has already turned over private practice Dortmund to another doctor. In view of adverse publicity which might ensue and which may destroy entire program this theatre recommend[s] subject be shipped for completion 6 months portion contract," he wrote. The case was sent to the consulate for an opinion. On October 24, 1951, the consulate in Frankfurt agreed with army intelligence: "Frankfurt Consul states Blome inadmissible."

Charles McPherson saw Blome's rejection as calamitous. It interfered with the core mission of the Special Projects Team and jeopardized the success of the entire Accelerated Paperclip program, he believed. "Recommend Blome be shipped and ostensibly occupied on inconsequential activities in the United States for 6 months," McPherson suggested. But that idea was rejected, too.

McPherson contacted Blome by telephone. They agreed to meet at the Burgtor Hotel in Dortmund. McPherson brought a colleague from the

Special Projects Team along with him this time, Philip Park. McPherson's job was "to explain to [Blome] the reasons why we were unable to send him to the United States at the present time." Agent Park could back him up if uncomfortable questions arose.

"Professor Blome was alone when we came in. I commenced by saying that I had some bad news to tell him," McPherson wrote in a memo. "I then stated that due to another change in our security laws we were forced to suspend our shipments to the United States."

Blome was no fool. This was a man who skillfully argued at Nuremberg that intent was not a crime and was acquitted on these grounds. Now, at the Burgtor Hotel, Blome made clear to McPherson that he did not believe McPherson's lies. Blome had recently been in communication with his colleague and former professor Pasqual Jordan and was entirely aware that Jordan was actively being prepared for Accelerated Paperclip work. Blome told McPherson that he had recently been in contact with one of his deputies in biological warfare research, the rinderpest expert Professor Erich Traub. Blome told McPherson that he was well aware that Traub had recently gone to America "under the auspices of the Paperclip Project." Blome was particularly upset because Traub had worked under him during the war.

McPherson tried to placate Dr. Blome. "I then said that we were still ready to put his contract in effect and that we had a position for him at a military post in Frankfurt, probably as a post doctor." McPherson suggested that Blome come have a look at the facility, that it was a pleasant place and offered a well-paying job. "He and his wife agreed," McPherson wrote in his report. Still, McPherson saw the situation with Dr. Blome as potentially disastrous. "The undersigned wishes to point out that he did not tell the Blomes that their opportunity to go to the United States is apparently nil and apparently will remain that way, but took the slant that our shipments have been suspended for an indefinite duration. This will leave the way open in the event something can be done."

McPherson worried that the Blome affair was going to have an unfavorable effect "upon our project not only by the immediate individuals concerned but by the chain reaction produced by one individual telling the other that the Americans have broken their word." McPherson was actively recruiting other German scientists at the same time. He believed that he had a handle on how the scientists communicated among themselves. "The professional class of Germany is tightly enough knit so that this word will be widely disseminated and the future effectiveness of our program will be greatly curtailed.”

McPherson was wrong. Not all the former Nazis in the “professional class” talked among themselves. Dr. Blome was not aware that the reason a job offer as a military post doctor near Frankfurt was available to him was because the previous post doctor, also a former high-ranking Nazi in the Reich’s medical chain of command, had just been shipped to America under Accelerated Paperclip. There was irony in the fact that the shoes Dr. Blome was about to fill had, for the past two years and four months, belonged to Major General Dr. Walter Schreiber, the man who had betrayed Dr. Blome in his testimony during the trial of the major war criminals at Nuremberg. The army post outside Frankfurt where Blome would soon start working was Camp King. McPherson made arrangements with its new commanding officer, Colonel Howard Rupert, to meet the Blomes and arrange for them to have a nice house.

Blome had been to Camp King before. He had worked for the U.S. government there on a “special matter” during the Reinhard Gehlen era. When Dr. Blome’s wife, Bettina, learned more about Camp King, she declined the invitation to live there. She was not interested in having her children live at an American military facility. The couple separated. Dr. Kurt Blome moved to Camp King alone. On November 30, 1951, McPherson reported: “Dr. Blome employed by ECIC effective 3 Dec for 6 months. Contract placed in effect.”

Meanwhile, halfway across the world, in the suburbs of San Antonio, Texas, Camp King’s former post physician, Major General Dr. Walter Schreiber, had arrived in the United States and was working at the School of Aviation Medicine at Randolph Air Force Base (formerly Randolph Field). In addition to his U.S. government salary, Schreiber had recently received a check from the U.S. government in the amount of $16,000—roughly $150,000 in 2013—as a settlement for the alleged lost contents of his former Berlin home. (Schreiber claimed that the Russians had stolen all his property in retaliation for his working for the Americans.) With the money, Schreiber bought a home in San Antonio and a car, and he enrolled his son in the local high school. Even Schreiber’s eighty-four-year-old mother-in-law had been brought along to live in Texas, courtesy of the United States Air Force. It could be said that Dr. Schreiber was living the

American dream. But in the fall of 1951 the dream was unexpectedly interrupted by a former war crimes investigator named Dr. Leopold Alexander, and a concentration camp survivor named Janina Iwanska.

CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

Downfall

In the fall of 1951, Dr. Leopold Alexander's life in Boston had returned to normal. It had been four years since he had served as an expert consultant to the secretary of war during the Nuremberg doctors' trial. Since returning home, Dr. Alexander continued to speak out against medical crimes, nonconsenting human experiments, and medicine under totalitarian regimes. He coauthored the Nuremberg Code, the set of research principles that now guided physicians around the world. The first principle of the Nuremberg Code was that informed voluntary consent was required in absolute terms. Dr. Alexander gave lectures, wrote papers, and practiced medicine. The doctors' trial had affected him deeply, as evidenced in nearly five hundred pages of journal entries. Whenever the occasion arose, he provided pro bono service to victims of the Nazi regime.

One day in the fall of 1951, Dr. Alexander was contacted by an aid group called the International Rescue Office. The group was organizing medical assistance for several concentration camp survivors who had been experimented on by Nazi doctors during the war and asked if Dr. Alexander could help. Dr. Alexander in turn contacted his friend and colleague at Beth Israel Hospital in Boston, chief surgeon Dr. Jacob Fine, and the two men helped arrange for the camp survivors to come to Massachusetts for medical treatment. One of the women was twenty-seven-year-old Janina Iwanska, a former prisoner at the Ravensbrück concentration camp. On November 14, 1951, Iwanska arrived at the Port of New York aboard a Greek ocean liner, the SS *Neptunia*.

At the doctors' trial, Janina Iwanska had delivered much of her testimony with Dr. Alexander standing beside her, pointing to her injuries and providing the judges with a professional medical analysis of what had been done to her by Nazi doctors during the war. Iwanska's testimony was generally regarded as among the most powerful evidence presented at the trial. At Ravensbrück she had had her legs broken by Waffen-SS surgeon Dr. Karl Gebhardt and pieces of her shinbones removed. Dr. Gebhardt then ordered that Iwanska's surgical wounds be deliberately infected with bacteria to cause gangrene, so he could treat them with sulfa drugs to see if the drugs worked. It was nothing short of a miracle that Janina Iwanska survived. Now, nine years later, she continued to suffer great physical pain. She walked with a limp because of the decimation of her shinbones. The purpose of the trip to the United States was to allow Iwanska to undergo surgery, at Beth Israel Hospital in Boston, to help alleviate this pain.

Dr. Gebhardt had been Major General Dr. Schreiber's direct subordinate at Ravensbrück. Gebhardt had been one of the twenty-three defendants tried at the doctors' trial. He was convicted, sentenced to death, and hanged in the courtyard at Landsberg Prison in June, 1948. Dr. Schreiber was working for the U.S. Air Force in Texas.

The same month that Janina Iwanska arrived in the United States, a brief note appeared in a medical journal stating that a doctor from Germany named Walter Schreiber had just joined the staff of the U.S. Air Force School of Aviation Medicine in Texas. As circumstance would have it, Dr. Leopold Alexander was a regular reader of this journal. When he came across Schreiber's name—familiar as he was with Dr. Schreiber's testimony at the Nuremberg trial of the major war criminals—Alexander was appalled. He wrote to the director of the Massachusetts Medical Society at once. "I regard it as my duty to inform you that the record shows that Dr. Schreiber is a thoroughly undesirable addition to American Medicine—in fact, an intolerable one," Alexander explained. "He has been involved as an accessory before and after the fact in the worst of the Medical War Crimes which were carried out by the Nazi Government during the war, and was a key person in perverting the ethical standards of the members of the medical profession in Germany during the war." Dr. Alexander demanded that Dr. Walter Schreiber be barred from practicing medicine in the United States. When he did not get the response he'd expected, he took the matter to the *Boston Globe.*

It was shortly after 10:30 p.m. on December 8, 1951, in San Antonio, Texas, when Dr. Walter Schreiber heard the telephone ring. He had been in America for three months, and it was an unusual hour for him to receive a phone call. It was not as if Dr. Schreiber was a hospital physician on call waiting to hear about a sick patient. In his capacity as a research doctor at Randolph Air Force Base, he spent most of his time lecturing about classified matters to a small group of other doctors.

Sometimes, he boasted to other doctors about how his area of expertise was extremely rare. He would tell colleagues that he was particularly valuable to the U.S. military because his knowledge was so esoteric. Dr. Schreiber knew everything there was to know about winter warfare and desert warfare. About hygiene and vaccines and bubonic plague. At the officers' club at the School of Aviation Medicine, where he gave lectures, he could be loud and boastful, delivering a highly sanitized version of his colorful life. He enjoyed telling long-winded stories about himself: how he had been a prisoner of the Soviets after the fall of Berlin; how he'd spent years in the notorious Lubyanka prison, in Moscow; how he'd doctored Field Marshal Paulus in a Russian safe house when Paulus got sick. But what Dr. Schreiber never discussed with anyone at Randolph Air Force Base was what he did before the fall of Berlin—from 1933 to 1945.

Schreiber answered the telephone and was greeted by a man who identified himself as Mr. Brown.

"I am calling from the *Boston Globe*," Brown said.

Mr. Brown did not ask Schreiber his name. Instead, Brown asked if he'd reached "telephone number, 61-210 in San Antonio, Texas." Dr. Schreiber told Brown the number was correct.

There was a pause. Later, Dr. Schreiber recalled to military intelligence that he'd asked Mr. Brown what it was that he wanted at this time of night.

"Are you the individual who performed experiments on the bodies of live Polish girls who were interned in German concentration camps during World War II?" Brown asked.

Schreiber told Brown he had never been connected in any way with experiments of that nature. "I [have] never worked in a concentration camp," Schreiber said. "I have never in my entire life conducted, ordered, or condoned experiments on humans of any nationality."

Brown told Schreiber he assumed he'd passed investigations before being brought to America to conduct secret U.S. Air Force work.

“I [have] been thoroughly investigated,” Schreiber said.

Brown thanked Schreiber. He said he was just checking up on a story that had been relayed to him by a physician in Boston, Dr. Leo Alexander.

Dr. Schreiber hung up the phone. He did not tell anyone that night about the call.

The following morning, the *Boston Globe* published an explosive story with an eye-catching headline: “Ex-Nazi High Post with United States Air Force, says Medical Man Here.” News reached Texas quickly. Dr. Schreiber was called into the Office of Special Investigations (OSI) at Randolph Air Force Base to provide details of the phone call with Mr. Brown the previous evening. Schreiber confirmed that “during World War II he had held a position in the Wermacht [*sic*] similar to the Surgeon General of the U.S. Army.” But his story, his struggle, he told the investigating officer, was so much more than that. Schreiber relayed his capture in Berlin, his life as a prisoner of war in Soviet Russia, and how he’d “served as a prosecution witness during the Nuremberg War Crimes Trials.” Schreiber explained that owing to “feigned compliance” with the Russians he’d been “awarded a high position with the East German Politzei [*sic*].” Instead of taking that job he’d escaped. Schreiber lied to the Office of Special Investigations and said that he had met Dr. Leo Alexander at Nuremberg. That he had been “given a clean bill of health by [Doctor] Alexander” himself.

Schreiber told the air force investigator he was certain that the Russians were behind all of this. He had recently written a manuscript called “Behind the Iron Curtain,” Schreiber said, and while he hadn’t found a publisher yet, he believed that the Russians had gotten hold of a copy of it. “He was of the opinion that [Soviet Intelligence] is perhaps attempting to slander him by implying that he was engaged in atrocious experiments on human subjects,” the investigating officer wrote in his report. Schreiber’s full statement was forwarded to air force headquarters. The security officers at Randolph Air Force Base did not have the kind of clearance that allowed them access to Dr. Schreiber’s JIOA file or his OMGUS security report. They had no idea who Schreiber really was. They most certainly had not been made aware that he was a Nazi ideologue and the former surgeon general of the Third Reich. All anyone at the School of Aviation Medicine would have known was that he was a German scientist who was part of Operation Paperclip. The facility had already employed thirty-four German scientists.

On December 14, the FBI got involved in the case. Dr. Leopold Alexander, Schreiber’s accuser in Boston, was an internationally renowned authority on medical crimes. His allegations had to be taken seriously. But the air force was unwilling to give up Dr. Schreiber right away. To garner support for him, a memo classified Secret was circulated among those involved, heralding the “Professional and Personal Qualifications of Dr. Walter Schreiber.” The memo stated, “He possesses an analytical mind, critical judgment, objectivity, and a wealth of well detailed, exact information.” Schreiber possessed “know how on preventative health measures, military and civilian, under conditions of total war.” He had “detailed information of medical problems in connection with desert and ‘Arctic’ warfare,” and had “contributed to Zeiss Atlas of Epidemology” [*sic*]. He’d been “a ‘key’ prisoner of war in Russia for three and a half years [and] he is in a position to provide authoritative information and serve as a consultant on vitally important medical matters in Russia.”

With public outrage brewing over the *Globe* article, the situation escalated quickly. The Pentagon became involved, and the matter was sent to the office of the surgeon general of the United States Air Force. That position was now held by none other than Harry Armstrong, recently promoted to major general. Armstrong knew the situation could very quickly get out of control. And hardly anyone had more to lose, personally and professionally, than he did. With the assistance of Dr. Hubertus Strughold, Harry Armstrong had personally recruited fifty-eight former Nazi doctors for work at the U.S. Army Air Forces Aero Medical Center in Heidelberg, five of whom had been arrested for war crimes, four of whom were tried at Nuremberg, two of whom were convicted at Nuremberg, and one of whom was acquitted and then rehired by the U.S. Air Force to work in America before being revealed as incompetent and fired. That said nothing of the thirty-four doctors who had since been hired to work at the School of Aviation Medicine, many of whom were Nazi ideologues as well as former members of the SS and the SA. The Schreiber scandal could trigger a domino effect, shining an unwanted spotlight on the highly suspicious backgrounds of Dr. Strughold, Dr. Benzinger, Dr. Konrad Schäfer, Dr. Becker-Freyseng, Dr. Schröder, Dr. Ruff, and so many others.

Major General Harry Armstrong wrote to the director of intelligence of the air force regarding Major General Dr. Schreiber. “I have been advised by the Commandant, USAF School of Aviation Medicine, Randolph Air Force Base, Texas, that they recently forwarded to your office a request for a new contract [for] Doctor Walter Schreiber until June 1952,” Armstrong wrote. “Recent information indicated that Doctor Schreiber may have been implicated in the medical war crimes in Germany during World War II, and his presence in this country has aroused a considerable amount of criticism. As a consequence of this, it is the firm opinion of this office that the Air Force Medical Service cannot associate itself with Doctor Schreiber beyond the six months’ contract under which he is now employed.” Further, said Armstrong, “it may be advisable to terminate this contract even prior to its expiration.” Armstrong promised that the commandant of the School of Aviation Medicine, Major General Otis Benson, “concurs with this recommendation.” General Benson had equal reason to want the Schreiber scandal to quietly disappear. After the war, Benson had served as technical supervisor of the German scientists working at the Army Air Forces Aero Medical Center in Heidelberg.

Two weeks after the scandal broke, Dr. Schreiber was informed that his contract would not be renewed. General Benson delivered the news in person. According to Schreiber, Benson also proposed a secret, alternative plan involving Schreiber’s future career in America. In an affidavit, Schreiber swore that General Benson “stated that he felt sure my services could be utilized in other branches of the government or in medical schools, and offered his assistance in soliciting for a position for me.”

In Boston, the matter continued to generate press. The Janina Iwanska story was news people were interested in reading about. Despite what had been done to her during the war, Janina Iwanska was a vibrant, beautiful, credible young woman; it was almost impossible not to marvel at her resilience. After being liberated from Ravensbrück, she had moved to Paris, where she had been working as a journalist for Radio Free Europe. She also worked as the Paris-based correspondent for several Polish newspapers in Western Europe.

When Iwanska was experimented on at Ravensbrück she was only seventeen years old. While imprisoned there, she and several other female prisoners had taken remarkable steps to get word outside the camp about what was being done by Nazi doctors at Ravensbrück. With the goal of getting their message to the Vatican, the BBC, and the International Red Cross, Iwanska and four other women sent secret messages to their relatives outside the camp. Remarkably, a French prisoner named Germaine Tillion took photographs of the women's wounds, then smuggled a roll of film out of the camp. The story was printed in the Polish underground press during the war, notifying the world about the Ravensbrück medical experiments. The story was eventually picked up by the BBC, as the women had hoped.

Now, with the Schreiber story gaining momentum, in January 1951, FBI agents arranged to interview Janina Iwanska in Boston. Under oath and from a photograph, she identified Dr. Schreiber as a high-ranking doctor who had overseen the medical experiments at Ravensbrück.

"How do you know that the Dr. Schreiber, whom you saw in the Concentration Camp in Germany in 1942 and 1943, is the same Dr. Walter Schreiber who is now in San Antonio?" an FBI agent asked her.

"Three weeks ago, the journalist was coming from the Boston Post [*sic*] and they showed me about fifty (50) pictures and they asked me if I know [which one] is Dr. Schreiber," Iwanska said. She described how she had no trouble picking Schreiber's photograph out of fifty presented to her. "I saw this face in the doctors' group in Ravensbrück," she said. "After, they asked me if I knew Schreiber's name. I told them, 'I know Schreiber's name.' "

Dr. Schreiber, in a separate interview, claimed that he had had nothing to do with the Ravensbrück experiments, that he had never even visited a concentration camp, and that he had never met Janina Iwanska, who was accusing him of outrageous acts. In response, Janina Iwanska had this to say: "I had an operation done on my legs by Dr. Gebhart [*sic*].… During the first dressing after the operations I spoke to him. I asked Dr. Gebhart why they did the operation and they gave the answer, 'We can do the experiment because you are condemned to die.' The number [tattooed on] my legs are T. K. M. III. If Dr. Schreiber cannot remember my name, I am sure perhaps he can remember the experiment [number]."

Janina Iwanska said she was sure that Dr. Schreiber was at the concentration camp; she had seen him with her own eyes. After operations were performed on seventy-four women, she explained, there was a doctors' conference at the concentration camp.

"Were you present at the Doctors' Conference?" the FBI agent asked.

"Yes, because every woman who had the experiment was taken in the [conference] room and Gebhart explained to the other doctors what he did."

“Do you remember the date of this conference by Dr. Gebhart and Dr. Schreiber about your experiment?”

“I think it was about three weeks after the [operation of] 15th of August 1942,” Janina Iwanska said.

“Did any of the people who were experimented on die as a result of the experiments?”

“Yes. Five died 48 hours after the operation, and six were shot after the operation,” Iwanska said.

“Do you know the names of those who died as a result of the operation?”

“I have the list at my house. I sent the names to the United Nations. They have all the documents. It was seventy-four who had the experiment.”

“Do you have any knowledge as to whether Dr. Schreiber ordered these experiments done?”

“I don’t know if he gave the orders. Only I know he was very interested in it,” she said.

Back in Texas, Dr. Schreiber began plotting his escape to Argentina. He wrote to his married daughter, Elisabeth van der Fecht, who was living in San Isidro, in Buenos Aires. He asked her to get information about how he could get a visa fast. The FBI intercepted Schreiber’s mail.

“I will be able to get a visa for you all within fourteen days,” promised Schreiber’s daughter. “To be honest, we always have feared something similar to come.… Everything started so well and seemed to be wonderful. Your nice house, your new furniture.…” She assured her father that she could help get the paperwork necessary to enter Argentina. “If, father, you wish us to take steps, send us the necessary documents,” Elisabeth wrote. “Anyhow the risk would be much less than if you must go to Germany. For Heaven’s sake do not go back.”

By mid-January, the JIOA weighed in. The Joint Chiefs decided that it was necessary to repatriate Dr. Schreiber. “Reason for Requesting Repatriation: Dr. Schreiber is basically not a research scientist, and as such his usefulness is very limited to the School of Aviation Medicine,” a memo read. “Recent criticism and adverse publicity [have] been directed against the School of Aviation Medicine in that it has been charged that Dr. Schreiber, as a high ranking Nazi Medical Officer, was connected with brutal experiments on concentration camp victims. The School of Aviation

Medicine and the Surgeon General do not wish to assume responsibility for Schreiber… in view of the above criticism.”

Army headquarters in Heidelberg, Germany, disagreed. On February 5, 1952, the army cabled a message marked “Secret” to JIOA, written in shorthand. “Recommend take act[ion] to retain Schreiber in US. Subj has invaluable info of intelligence nature regarding Russia and is outstanding [in] his professional field.”

The Office of the U.S. High Commissioner weighed in: “All reparations of paper clip personnel unless voluntary have some adverse effect [on] JIOA programs,” a memo stated. “Request coordinate with G2 Army prior to final decision on repatriation.” At air force headquarters, another idea was gaining support. Why not help Dr. Schreiber “move” to Argentina? To this end, a major named D. A. Roe, from Army Intelligence, G-2, contacted Argentinean General Aristobulo Fidel Reyes to discuss “the utilization of the services of Dr. Walter Paul Schreiber, M.D.” Major Roe queried if “in any way possible… his talents could be used in Argentina.” The army had originally intended to allow the talented Dr. Schreiber to immigrate to the United States, Major Roe explained, but, unfortunately, that had changed. “His admissibility, under current law, as an immigrate [*sic*] of the U.S. is questionable because of this close affiliation with the Nazi Army,” Major Roe clarified. Argentina did not have the same kinds of immigration laws prohibiting entry of former high-ranking Nazis. It would be great if they could help.

Faced with pushback from High Commissioner John J. McCloy, JIOA retooled its repatriation position and instead made a case for extending Dr. Schreiber’s stay. “Schreiber family may be subjected to reprisals due to his previously reported escape from Russian control,” JIOA wrote. “If repatriation is inadvisable believe Schreiber may be retained here by issuance of visa. Above is additional reason for desirability of entry with immigration visa.” But then a new document emerged, marked JIOA eyes only, and to be kept in Schreiber’s classified dossier. Schreiber’s wife of forty years, Olga, was also an old-time Nazi. According to official NSDAP paperwork, she had joined the Nazi Party on October 1, 1931, years before Hitler came to power.

Each week that passed brought more focus to the subject. The public was growing increasingly outraged with the notion that an ex-Nazi general and alleged war criminal was still living in the United States, and that his employment by the United States Air Force was still up in the air.

The Physicians Forum, a group of doctors representing thirty-six states, wrote to the Senate. “Had Dr. Schreiber been found and apprehended at the time of the Nuremberg Military Tribunal,” the doctors wrote, “it is virtually certain that he would have been brought to trial along with his associates many of whom were sentenced to life imprisonment or hanged for their crimes. Instead this individual is now in the United States working for our Air Force.” The physicians unanimously recommended “[i]mmediate expulsion of Dr. Schreiber from the United States [and] a thorough investigation of the circumstances leading to Dr. Schreiber’s entry into this country and his assignment to the Air Force.”

The final demand was far more threatening to the air force than the Physicians Forum doctors could have known. Were the Senate to hold hearings to investigate “similar appointments of German physicians formerly in important positions in the German armed forces during World War II,” the whole Paperclip program could be revealed. Heads would roll. Schreiber’s story could travel all the way up to the Joint Chiefs of Staff, the scandal all the way to the president of the United States.

With an astonishing degree of hubris, Dr. Schreiber gave one media interview after the next, professing innocence and calling all the charges against him “lies.”

“I am not fighting for a renewal of my contract,” Schreiber told the *Washington Post*, “I am fighting for justice, and I will continue to do so as long as I live.” He issued an egregiously false statement, declaring, “I never was a member of the staff of the supreme command of the Wehrmacht.” In another interview, he said, “I never worked in a concentration camp.” Later in the interview he clarified that he had actually “visited” a camp once, in eastern Pomerania, without knowing it was a concentration camp. His very brief job there was to inspect “a report for the delousing treatment,” for a group of girls whose “linen was disinfected with DDT,” Schreiber said. “After I arrived there, four days later, the girls were found clean and free of lice,” Schreiber said.

Dr. Schreiber had the air force and the Joint Chiefs of Staff over a barrel, and he likely knew it. If any one of these high-ranking U.S. government officials was forced to admit what was really known about Schreiber—what had been known all along—it would be a scandal of the first degree. Instead, the lie was allowed to expand. "Until we come up with some basic facts," JIOA director Colonel Benjamin W. Heckemeyer told *Time* magazine, in an exclusive sit-down interview with a reporter named Miss Moran, "a man should be given the all-American treatment here and not be given the bum's rush."

Behind the scenes, Harry Armstrong, surgeon general of the air force, had been spearheading Schreiber's removal. But in statements to the press, he maintained a façade of support. There is "no evidence he's guilty other than serving his country during war same as I did mine," General Armstrong told the Associated Press. Legendary newspaper columnist Drew Pearson did not see things in the same light. He pulled transcripts from the Nuremberg doctors' trial and quoted from them in "Washington Merry-Go-Round." "Here are the facts regarding the Nazi doctor who escaped the Nuremberg war crimes trials and is now working for the Air Force at Randolph Field, Texas," Pearson wrote, "kicking, screaming young Polish girls were held down by SS troops and forcibly operated on.… Nuremberg document No. 619 also shows that Schreiber was second on a list of prominent medical officers detached to the SS for two days.… Human victims were also used in typhus experiments at Buchenwald and Natzweiler concentration camps. Deadly virus was transferred from men to mice and back in an attempt to produce live vaccine." Schreiber responded by saying, "The Nuremberg Military Tribunal has prosecuted and held those responsible for the crimes."

That statement further incensed Dr. Leo Alexander and Boston attorney Alexander Hardy, the former chief prosecutor at the doctors' trial. The two men drafted a ten-page letter to President Truman. "He was not a defendant [but] beyond a doubt he is responsible for medical crimes," Hardy and Alexander explained. "He certainly had full knowledge that concentration camp inmates were being systematically experimented on by doctors of the Medical Service in which he was a General.… Schreiber's subordinates performed experiments encouraged by Schreiber," who in turn made "materials and funds available [and] the holding of conferences."

Hardy and Alexander cited testimony from five of Schreiber's physician-colleagues who testified at the Nuremberg doctors' trial that Schreiber had overseen a host of "hygiene"-related Reich medical programs in which countless humans were sacrificed in the name of research. Included were details of yellow fever experiments, epidemic jaundice experiments, sulfanilamide experiments, euthanasia by phenol experiments and the notorious typhus vaccine program “with its 90% death rate.” Alexander Hardy and Dr. Alexander’s letter to President Truman portrayed Major General Dr. Walter Schreiber not only as a war criminal of the worst order but as a sadist and a liar. Parts of the letter were made public. “Truman Is Urged to Expel Physician,” read a headline in the *New York Times*. Harry Armstrong wrote to the Physicians Forum assuring them that Schreiber would be returned to Germany at once.

JIOA director Colonel Heckemeyer was asked by *Time* magazine what the air force was going to do if, after completing its investigation, it found Dr. Schreiber guilty of war crimes. “That I will have to get guidance from the Office of the Secretary of Defense on,” Heckemeyer said. Could Schreiber be prosecuted, the *Time* reporter asked?

“We are not going to make a Nuernberg [*sic*] trial three years after the trials are closed,” Heckemeyer said. Finally, the secretary of the air force, Thomas Finletter, made a public announcement stating that Dr. Schreiber would be dropped from his contract and put under military custody. He would leave the United States at once.

But Dr. Schreiber refused to leave the United States. Instead, he packed up his family, left Texas, and drove to San Francisco. There, the Schreibers moved in with Dorothea, the couple’s married daughter, and her husband, William Fry, in their home at 35 Ridge Road, in San Anselmo. Just as Dorothea had worked at Camp King when her father was post surgeon there, her new husband, William Fry, had served at Camp King, as an army intelligence investigator. Having moved to America in July 1951, the two had lived in California since.

More than a month passed. The Physicians Forum received new information about Schreiber, which they submitted to President Truman on April 24, 1952, along with a telegram marked “Urgent.” They attached a document that showed that Brigadier General Otis Benson, commanding general at Randolph Field School of Aviation Medicine, “sought continued employment for Dr. Schreiber in the United States, preferably a ‘University Appointment,’ ” after the air force had already promised that Schreiber would soon be leaving the United States.

The outrageous part, said the physicians, was that the U.S. Air Force was colluding to keep Schreiber in the United States. In their letter to President Truman, they quoted General Benson from a letter he'd written to the dean of the Minnesota School of Public Health, seeking a new job for Schreiber in the private sector. "I like and respect the man [but] he is too hot for me to keep here using public funds," General Benson said of Schreiber. He said that the bad press had been little more than "an organized medical movement against him emanating from Boston by medical men of Jewish ancestry." The Physicians Forum's board of directors demanded that President Truman order the attorney general to open an investigation into the case.

A few days later, a lieutenant colonel named G. A. Little, representing the Joint Chiefs of Staff, flew to California to visit with Dr. Schreiber at his daughter's house, "for the purpose of attempting to persuade Dr. Schreiber to go to Buenos Aires at once, regardless of job opportunities which might or might not be developed through [our] office." According to Little, the visit went well.

"We were very cordially received by Dr. Schreiber and spent approximately two hours in conversation with him," Lieutenant Colonel G. A. Little wrote in a confidential report for the Joint Chiefs of Staff. In exchange for "transportation to South America" and "funds for travel," and "travel allowance for Schreiber Family Group," Dr. Schreiber agreed to leave the United States at once. "Schreiber's voluntary and immediate departure for Buenos Aires will provide a satisfactory solution for all concerned." The amount Schreiber was paid to leave was never disclosed and is not mentioned in his declassified Operation Paperclip file.

On May 22, 1952, Dr. Schreiber and his family were flown by military aircraft from Travis Air Force Base, in California, to New Orleans, Louisiana. There, they boarded a ship bound for Argentina. When they arrived in Buenos Aires, they were taken by car to the American consulate and given documents that allowed them to stay. The arrangements were made by General Aristobulo Fidel Reyes. The air force paid for police protection for Dr. Schreiber and his family during the transition. It was important that the Schreibers' resettlement in South America go smoothly. There were too many American officials whose reputations would never survive if the facts were revealed.

The Senate hearings never happened, and the attorney general never opened a case. In Argentina, Dr. Schreiber bought a home and named it Sans Souci (“without a care”), the name of the summer palace in Potsdam, outside Berlin, of Frederick the Great, king of Prussia. According to personal family documents, Schreiber’s final quest was to prove that he had been born a baron and was descended from Prussian royalty. “As a consequence of what the official investigation turned up, in addition to his own extraordinary meritorious achievements,” say the family documents, “Oberstabsarzt [Military Medical Doctor] Walter P. Schreiber was given ‘official’ permission to add ‘von’ to his name.” The personal papers do not say who gave this official permission. Schreiber died in September 1970 in San Carlos de Bariloche, Río Negro, Argentina.

CHAPTER NINETEEN

Truth Serum

As Dr. Schreiber sailed for Argentina, the Operation Bluebird interrogation program at Camp King expanded to include “the use of drugs and chemicals in unconventional interrogation.” Dr. Kurt Blome was Camp King’s post doctor during this period. According to a memo in his declassified foreign scientist case file, Blome worked on “Army, 1952, Project 1975,” a Top Secret project that itself has never been declassified. Blome’s file becomes empty after that.

“Bluebird was rechristened Artichoke,” writes John Marks, a former State Department official and authority on the CIA’s mind control programs. The goal of the Artichoke interrogation program, Marks explains, was “modifying behavior through covert means.” According to the program’s administrator, Richard Helms—the future director of the CIA—using drugs was a means to that end. “We felt that it was our responsibility not to lag behind the Russians or the Chinese in this field, and the only way to find out what the risks were was to test things such as LSD and other drugs that could be used to control human behavior,” Helms told journalist David Frost, in an interview in 1978. Other U.S. intelligence agencies were brought on board to help conduct these controversial interrogation experiments. “In 1951 the CIA Director approved the liaison with Army, Navy, and Air Force intelligence to avoid duplication of effort,” writes Marks. “The Army and Navy were both looking for truth drugs while the prime concern of the Air Force was interrogation techniques used on downed pilots.” Since the end of the war, the various U.S. military branches had developed advanced air, land, and sea rescue programs, based in part on research conducted by Nazi doctors. But the Soviets had also made great advances in rescue programs and this presented a serious new concern. If a downed U.S. pilot or soldier was rescued by the Russians, that person would almost certainly be subjected to unconventional interrogation techniques, according to the CIA. The purpose of Operation Bluebird was to try to predict what kinds of methods the Soviets might use against American soldiers and airmen. One of the so-called truth serum drugs the CIA believed the Soviets were most heavily involved in researching was LSD. One CIA report, later shared with Congress, stated that “the Soviets purchased a large quantity of LSD-25 from the Sandoz Company… reputed to be sufficient for 50 million doses.” Or so the CIA thought. A later analysis of the information determined that the CIA analyst working on the report made a decimal point error while performing dosage calculations. The Soviets had in fact purchased enough LSD from Sandoz for a few thousand tests—a far cry from fifty million.

For its Operation Bluebird experiments involving LSD and other drugs, the CIA teamed up with the Army Chemical Corps. The initial research and development was conducted by officers with the Special Operations Division who worked inside a classified facility designated Building No. 439, a one-story concrete-block building set among similar-looking buildings at Camp Detrick so as to blend in. Almost no one outside the SO Division knew about the Top Secret work going on inside. The SO Division was paid for by the CIA’s Technical Services Staff (TSS), a unit within the CIA’s Clandestine Service; many of its field agents were culled from a pool of senior bacteriologists at Detrick. One of these SO Division field agents was Dr. Harold Batchelor, the man behind the Eight Ball who consulted with Dr. Kurt Blome in Heidelberg in 1947. Another SO Division agent was Dr. Frank Olson, a former army officer and bacteriologist turned Agency operative whose sudden demise in 1953 would nearly bring down the CIA. The two men were assigned to the program at Camp King involving unconventional interrogation techniques.

In April 1950, Frank Olson was issued a diplomatic passport. Olson was not a diplomat; the passport allowed him to carry items in a diplomatic pouch that would not be subject to searches by customs officials. Frank Olson began taking trips to Germany, flying to Frankfurt and making the short drive out to Camp King. In one of the rare surviving official documents from the program, Deputy Director of Central Intelligence Allen Dulles sent a secret memo to Richard Helms and CIA Deputy Director for Plans Frank Wisner regarding the specific kinds of interrogation techniques that would be used. “In our conversation of 9 February 1951, I outlined to you the possibilities of augmenting the usual interrogation methods by the use of drugs, hypnosis, shock, etc., and emphasized the defensive aspects as well as the offensive opportunities in this field of applied medical science,” wrote Dulles. “The enclosed folder, ‘Interrogation Techniques,’ was prepared in my Medical Division to provide you with a suitable background.” Camp King was the perfect location to conduct these trials. Overseas locations were preferred for Artichoke interrogations, since foreign governments “permitted certain activities which were not permitted by the United States government (i.e. anthrax etc.).”

The next trip on record made by Frank Olson occurred on June 12, 1952. Olson arrived at Frankfurt from the Hendon military airport in England and made the short drive west into Oberursel. There, Artichoke interrogation experiments were taking place at a safe house called Haus Waldorf. “Between 4 June 1952 and 18 June 1952, an IS&O [CIA Inspection and Security Office] team… applied Artichoke techniques to two operational cases in a safe house,” explains an Artichoke memorandum, written for CIA director Dulles, and one of the few action memos on record not destroyed by Richard Helms when he was CIA director. The two individuals being interrogated at the Camp King safe house “could be classed as experienced, professional type agents and suspected of working for Soviet Intelligence.” These were Soviet spies captured by the Gehlen Organization, now being run by the CIA. “In the first case, light dosages of drugs coupled with hypnosis were used to induce a complete hypnotic trance,” the memo reveals. “This trance was held for approximately one hour and forty minutes of interrogation with a subsequent total amnesia produced.” The plan was straightforward: drug the spies, interrogate the spies, and give them amnesia to make them forget.

Another surviving memo from this otherwise unreported chapter of Cold War history is from Dr. Henry Knowles Beecher, chief anesthetist at Massachusetts General Hospital in Boston and a CIA-army-navy adviser on Artichoke techniques. Beecher traveled to Germany to observe what was happening at Camp King. He was a colleague of Dr. Leopold Alexander’s in Boston and, like Alexander, was an outspoken advocate of the Nuremberg Code, the first principle of which is informed consent. And yet in one of the stranger Cold War cases of dissimulation, Dr. Beecher was a participant in secret, government-sponsored medical experiments that did not involve consent. Beecher was paid by the CIA and the navy to consult on how best to produce amnesia in Soviet spies after they were drugged and interrogated so they would forget what had been done to them.

Dr. Frank Olson returned from Germany to his office in Detrick in a moral bind, according to his Detrick colleague the bacteriologist Norman Cournoyer. "He had a tough time after Germany… [d]rugs, torture, brainwashing," Cournoyer explained decades later, for a documentary for German television made in 2001. Cournoyer said that Olson felt ashamed about what he had witnessed, and that the experiments at Camp King reminded him of what had been done to people in concentration camps. Back in America, Olson contemplated leaving his job. He told family members he was considering a new career, as a dentist. Instead, he stayed on at the bioweapons facility, becoming chief of the SO Division for a while. He continued to work on Top Secret biological and chemical weapons programs in the CIA's office at Detrick, Building No. 439.

Unknown to Frank Olson, the CIA was expanding its Artichoke program in new ways, including expanding its use of LSD in "unconventional interrogations" through covert means. Strapping a suspected Soviet spy to a chair and dosing him with drugs, as was done at Camp King's Haus Waldorf, was one approach to getting a spy to spill his secrets. But the CIA wondered what would happen if an enemy agent were to be given an incapacitating agent like LSD on the sly, without knowing he had been drugged. Would this kind of amnesia be effective? Could it produce loyalty? How much, if any, of the experience would be remembered? These were questions the CIA wanted answered. The director of the Technical Services Staff, Dr. Sidney Gottlieb, a stutterer with a club foot, decided that the first field tests should be conducted on men from the SO Division without them knowing about it. One of those targeted for experimentation was Dr. Frank Olson.

A week before Thanksgiving, in November 1953, six SO Division agents including Frank Olson and the new SO Division chief, Vincent Ruwet, were invited to a weekend retreat at a CIA safe house in western Maryland called Deep Creek Lake. There, the men from Detrick were met by TSS director Sidney Gottlieb and his deputy, Robert Lashbrook, a chemist. One part of the agenda was to discuss the latest covert means of poisoning people with biological agents and toxic substances, including those that had been acquired from around the globe by Fritz Hoffmann, the Operation Paperclip scientist with the Chemical Corps. The second goal was to covertly dose the six SO Division men with LSD and record what happened. After dinner on the second night, Robert Lashbrook secretly added LSD to a bottle of Cointreau. The unwitting test subjects were all offered a drink, and all but two of the SO Division officers drank the aperitif; one had a heart condition and the other abstained from alcohol. Frank Olson had a terrible reaction to having been drugged with LSD. He became psychologically unstable and could not sleep. His boss, Vincent Ruwet, who had also been dosed, described his own LSD poisoning experience as "the most frightening experience I ever had or hope to have." The CIA had at least one of their questions answered now; covert LSD poisoning did not produce amnesia.

When Monday morning came around, Ruwet arrived for work at 7:30, as usual. Inside Detrick's Building No. 439 he found a very agitated Dr. Frank Olson waiting for him. Olson told Ruwet that he was devastated by what had happened at Deep Creek Lake. He wanted to quit or be fired. Ruwet told him to give the issue some time and to get back to work. But when Ruwet arrived for work the following morning at 7:30, he again found Frank Olson waiting for him. Olson's mental state had deteriorated considerably, and Ruwet decided that he needed medical help. He called Agency headquarters, in Washington, D.C., and told Robert Lashbrook what was going on. Frank Olson was privy to the CIA's most controversial behavior modification and mind control programs. If he had a psychotic break in public he could inadvertently talk—terribly ironic, since getting a man to spill his secrets was what this LSD poisoning program was all about. Were Frank Olson to talk, the Agency would have a nightmare on its hands.

"Dr. Olson was in serious trouble and needed immediate professional attention," Lashbrook wrote in an after-incident CIA report. Lashbrook told Vincent Ruwet to bring Olson to headquarters immediately. From there, the two men took Olson to a townhouse in New York City, at 133 East Fifty-eighth Street. There, Olson met with a doctor on the CIA's payroll named Harold Abramson. Abramson was not a psychiatrist. He was an allergist and immunologist who worked on LSD tolerance experiments for the CIA, and he carried a Secret clearance of his own. Frank Olson told Dr. Abramson that he was suffering from memory loss, confusion, feelings of inadequacy, and terrible guilt. Dr. Abramson noted that Olson seemed to have a perfectly good memory and could remember people, places, and events easily on demand. In other words, Frank Olson’s problems were all in his mind.

The next morning, Robert Lashbrook and Vincent Ruwet took Frank Olson on another visit, to another CIA contract employee, John Mulholland, a semifamous New York City magician. Like Dr. Abramson, magician John Mulholland had a Secret security clearance with the TSS. Mulholland taught CIA agents how to apply “the magician’s art to covert activities.” One of his specialties was “the delivery of various materials to unwitting subjects.” During the visit, Olson became suspicious of what was going on and asked to leave. By the next day, Frank Olson was hearing voices. He told Dr. Abramson that the CIA was trying to poison him, which they already had done at least once. Vincent Ruwet returned to Maryland to be with his family for Thanksgiving; Abramson and Lashbrook decided to have Frank Olson committed to the Chestnut Lodge sanitarium, in Rockville, Maryland. Conveniently, the CIA had doctors on staff there.

Robert Lashbrook and Frank Olson spent one last night in New York City, in the Statler Hotel, on Seventh Avenue and Thirty-third Street. They were given room 1018A, on the tenth floor. After eating in the hotel restaurant, Olson and Lashbrook returned to their room to have a drink and watch television. Olson called his wife for the first time since he had left home and told her not to worry—that he’d be home soon. Then he went to sleep.

At approximately 2:30 a.m. Olson crashed through the hotel window and fell more than one hundred feet to his death on the street below. According to the coroner’s report, Olson hit the ground feet first, as if standing up, fell backward, and broke his skull. The Statler Hotel night manager, Armand Pastore, heard the impact and ran outside. He found Olson lying on the pavement, still alive. His eyes were open, Pastore told the police, and he tried to say something. But no words came out, and after a few moments, Frank Olson took his last breath.

Pastore looked up to see which room Olson had come out of. He could see that one of the window shades in a room high above was sticking out, as if the shade had been down when Olson crashed through it. Pastore noted which room it might be. When the police arrived, he took them up to the tenth floor and into room 1018A, using the manager’s passkey to get inside. There, inside the bathroom, CIA agent Robert Lashbrook sat on the toilet seat in his underwear, holding his head in his hands. Lashbrook had already made two telephone calls. The first call was to the CIA's director of the Technical Services Staff, Sidney Gottlieb, the man who had, with Lashbrook, poisoned Frank Olson with LSD a little over a week before. The second call was to the hotel's front desk, to report Olson's suicide. When New York City Police detective James W. Ward arrived on the scene, he asked Robert Lashbrook several questions, to which Lashbrook responded using only the words "yes" and "no." Lashbrook did not identify himself as a CIA agent.

Dr. Lashbrook was taken in for questioning; homicide had not yet been ruled out. At the precinct, Detective Ward asked Lashbrook to empty his pockets. Among the contents were papers with addresses for Dr. Harold Abramson, in New York City, and the Chestnut Lodge sanitarium, in Rockville, Maryland. When asked about his profession, Lashbrook told Detective Ward that he was a chemist with the War Department and that Frank Olson was a scientist at Camp Detrick—and that Olson was mentally ill. Detective Ward called Dr. Abramson, who verified Lashbrook's story, leaving out that he also worked for the CIA.

Two days later, Detective Ward submitted Case Number 125124 to his station chief. The death of Frank Olson was determined to be a suicide. The case was closed.

If the Greek philosopher Heraclitus is right and war is the father of all things, then America's Nazi scientist program was a nefarious child of the Second World War. Operation Paperclip in turn created a host of monstrous offspring, including Operations Bluebird, Artichoke, and MKUltra. Before Frank Olson became involved in the CIA's poisoning and interrogation programs, he conducted research and development of the airborne delivery of biological weapons. Olson had been working in the field of biological weapons research since 1943. He was recruited by Detrick's first director, Ira Baldwin, during the war. After the war, Dr. Olson became a civilian scientist at Detrick. He joined the Special Operations Division in 1950 and was part of a team that covertly tested how a weaponized biological agent might disperse if used against Americans.

In the late 1940s and early 1950s, Olson had traveled across the United States overseeing field tests that dispersed biological agents from aircraft and crop dusters in San Francisco, the Midwest, and Alaska. Some field tests involved harmless simulants and others involved dangerous pathogens, as Senate hearings later revealed. One such dangerous experiment was conducted by Olson and his Detrick colleague Norman Cournoyer. The two men went to Alaska and oversaw bacteria being sprayed out of airplanes to see how the pathogens would disperse in an environment similar to that of a harsh Russian winter. "We used a spore," Cournoyer explained, "which is very similar [to] anthrax, so to that extent we did something that was not kosher. Because we picked it up all over [the United States] months after we did the tests." A third man involved in the covert tests with Cournoyer and Olson was Dr. Harold Batchelor, the bacteriologist who learned airborne spray techniques from Dr. Kurt Blome, whom Batchelor consulted with in Heidelberg. Olson and Batchelor also conducted covert field tests in closed spaces across America, including in subways and in the Pentagon. For these tests, the Special Operations Division used a relatively harmless pathogen that simulated how a deadly pathogen would disperse. A congressional inquiry into these covert tests found them "appalling" in their deception.

By being part of a team of covert poisoners, be it out in the Alaskan tundra or inside a safe house at Camp King in Germany, Dr. Frank Olson and his colleagues violated the Nuremberg Code, which requires informed consent. As circumstances would have it, the great tragedy of Frank Olson's life and death was that his own inalienable right to be protected from harm from his government and his doctor was violated on orders from the very same people to whom he had dedicated his life's work.

This new war, the Cold War, was now the father of its own dark events.

PART V

“War is the father of all things.”

—Heraclitus

CHAPTER TWENTY

In the Dark Shadows

The Cold War became a battlefield marked by doublespeak. Disguise, distortion, and deception were accepted as reality. Truth was promised in a serum. And Operation Paperclip, born of the ashes of World War II, was the inciting incident in this hall of mirrors.

But in 1952, the heedless momentum of Operation Paperclip began to slow as conflicts emerged between the JIOA and the CIA over policies with the new West German government. German officials warned High Commissioner John J. McCloy that Operation Paperclip violated NATO regulations and even America's own policies for governance in Germany. On February 21, 1952, McCloy sent a memo to the U.S. Secretary of State expressing his concern that if Paperclip was not curtailed, it could result in a "violent reaction" from officials in West Germany. With McCloy no longer expressing unbridled enthusiasm for Operation Paperclip, the JIOA began to lose its once indomitable grip on the program. But the CIA was not bound to the same NATO policies as were the Joint Chiefs of Staff, and so the CIA continued to do what it had been doing—namely, recruiting Nazi scientists and intelligence officers to act as advisers at Camp King. The five-year partnership between the two agencies began to unravel.

JIOA officials became furious as they watched the CIA poach German scientists and technicians from the Accelerated Paperclip lists. In response, and in spite of McCloy's requests otherwise, in the winter of 1952 the JIOA prepared to send a twenty-man team to Frankfurt on a recruiting trip. Delegates included JIOA's new deputy director, Colonel Gerold Crabbe; General Walter Dornberger; and five unnamed Paperclip scientists who were already working in America. When McCloy learned of the trip, he asked the State Department to intervene and cancel it, fearing it would draw the ire of German officials, which it did. The trip happened anyway.

A compromise was reached between U.S. officials and Chancellor Konrad Adenauer's office whereby the JIOA and the CIA agreed to stop recruiting new scientists but could continue to work with the scientists who remained on the original, President Truman–approved, thousand-person list. Official numbers vary dramatically in different declassified record groups, but there were approximately six hundred Paperclip scientists in the United States at this time, meaning some four hundred German scientists were still on the target list. JIOA renamed Paperclip the Defense Scientists Immigration Program, or DEFSIP, and the CIA renamed one vein of its involvement the National Interest program, but most parties still referred to it all as Operation Paperclip.

It was a dwindling empire. In 1956 the CIA ceded control of the Gehlen Organization to the West German government, which renamed it the BND (Bundesnachrichtendienst). The former Nazi general and his men were spies for Chancellor Adenauer's government now. Then, in 1957, JIOA got a new officer in Lieutenant Colonel Henry Whalen, a man whose actions would have a profound effect on the legacy of the Paperclip program. By 1959 Whalen was promoted to deputy director of JIOA, which meant he had access to highly classified intelligence reports from scientists working on atomic, biological, and chemical weapons. Whalen had an office in the "E" Ring of the Pentagon, reserved for senior officials, and enjoyed direct access to the Joint Chiefs of Staff. During his year-long tenure as JIOA deputy director, no one had any idea that Whalen was working as a Soviet spy. It wasn't until 1963 that the FBI learned that he had been passing military secrets to Colonel Sergei Edemski, a GRU intelligence agent posing as a military attaché in the Soviet embassy in Washington. By then Henry Whalen had already left the JIOA.

When the Justice Department began investigating Whalen, they seized all of the JIOA records that he had been working with. The FBI learned that Whalen had destroyed or given away thousands of Paperclip files. In 1966, a grand jury was presented with evidence against Whalen behind closed doors. He was indicted and the trial was conducted under a gag order, with the press denied access to what the FBI had learned and to Whalen's confession. Journalists were prohibited from reporting on the trial, and no one made the connection between Whalen, the JIOA, and Operation

Paperclip. The Nazi scientist program had long since faded from public discourse. Whalen was sentenced to fifteen years at a federal penitentiary but was paroled after six years. Most of the FBI's investigation of Whalen remains classified, which likely explains why so few Paperclip files from that time frame are housed at the National Archives.

In 1962, the JIOA was officially disbanded. What remained of the Paperclip program was taken over by the Research and Engineering Department at the Pentagon. Under the DoD Reorganization Act of 1958, this new office had been created to handle the military's scientific and engineering needs under a scientific director who reported to the Secretary of Defense. The act also gave a home to the Pentagon's new in-house, cutting-edge science agency—the Advanced Research Projects Agency, or ARPA, later renamed DARPA—with a *D* for defense. The first director of the Research and Engineering Department was the nuclear physicist Herbert York. York also served as the first scientific director of ARPA. He was one of the nation's leading experts on nuclear weapons and on Intercontinental Ballistic Missiles, or ICBMs.

The ICBM is the "truly revolutionary military offspring" of Hitler's V-2 rocket, says Michael J. Neufeld, curator of the Department of Space History at the Smithsonian National Air and Space Museum and author of several books and monographs on German rocket scientists. The ICBM is capable of carrying, in its nose cone, a weapon of mass destruction and delivering it to a target almost anywhere in the world. The ICBM became the centerpiece of the Cold War—the ultimate sword. It also became the ultimate shield. "Total war" with the Soviets never happened. The Cold War never became a shooting war. Deterrence prevailed.

Today, the Research and Engineering Department at the Pentagon, renamed the Department of Defense Research and Engineering Enterprise, develops all next-generation weapons and counterweapons of mass destruction—the twenty-first century's swords and shields. It is as true today as it was when World War II ended that America relies upon the advancement of science and technology—and industry—to prepare for the next war. This relationship is understood as America's military-industrial complex. It was President Eisenhower who, in his Farewell Address to the nation in 1961, coined this phrase. Eisenhower cautioned Americans to be wary of "the acquisition of unwarranted influence, whether sought or unsought, by the military-industrial complex." Eisenhower's famous warning is well known and often paraphrased. But he also delivered a second warning in his farewell speech, not nearly as well known. Eisenhower told the American people that, indeed, science and research played a crucial role in national security, "[y]et, in holding scientific research and discovery in respect, as we should, we must also be alert to the equal and opposite danger that public policy could itself become the captive of a scientific-technological elite."

Herbert York, as both ARPA chief and director of the Research and Engineering Department at the Pentagon, worked closely with President Eisenhower on matters of military science during the last three years of Eisenhower's presidency. He was deeply troubled by Eisenhower's words in his Farewell Address. "Scientists and technologists had acquired the reputation of being magicians who had access to a special source of information and wisdom out of reach of the rest of mankind," said York. In the mid-1960s, York went to visit Eisenhower at the former president's winter home, in the California desert. "I asked him to explain more fully what he meant by the warnings, but he declined to do so," York said. "I pressed this line of questions further by asking him whether he had any particular people in mind when he warned us about 'the danger that public policy could itself become the captive of a scientific-technological elite.' " York was surprised when Eisenhower "answered without hesitation: '(Wernher) von Braun and (Edward) Teller [father of the hydrogen bomb].' "

York spent decades considering what the President had told him. "Eisenhower's warnings[,] which were based largely on his intuition, pointed up very real and extremely serious problems. If we forget or downgrade his warnings, it will be to our peril," York wrote in his memoir, *Arms and the Physicist,* in 1995.

The legacy of some of the Operation Paperclip scientists as individuals parallels the heritage of many of the Cold War weapons programs they participated in. The biological and chemical weapons programs can now be looked back upon as distinct failures and the product of vague and often wrong intelligence. So it was with the Chemical Corps' relationship with former SS–Brigadier General Dr. Walter Schieber. Declassified files reveal that Schieber was double-crossing the Americans from the moment he began working for the U.S. Army in Germany, including the entire time he worked for Brigadier General Charles Loucks on the sarin gas project at Loucks's private home in Heidelberg. It took military intelligence until 1950 to determine that something about Hitler's trusted servant was untoward, and even longer to fully realize the extent to which Speer's Armaments Supply Office chief was deceiving them. Almost immediately after Schieber was released from Nuremberg, he began using his old Nazi contacts to sell heavy weapons to at least one enemy nation through a Swiss intermediary. In 1950, military intelligence intercepted a four-page letter addressed to Schieber, sent from Switzerland. There was no return address on the envelope and only an illegible signature inside. The letter writer discussed with Schieber the sale of weapons to a third party, describing the buyer as "A Prince of the Royal House," which military intelligence surmised was a code name. "They are looking for everything, tanks, aircraft, etc., weapons, ammunitions in short everything that pertains to armament. I can't write all that in a telegraph," stated the author, who requested "PAK anti-tank guns… willing to pay $5,000 a piece; 75 mm weapons at $3,000-$4,000 a piece, and 50mm (about $2,000.00)." This was a "first class business deal if we could arrange it," the intermediary promised.

Special Agent Carlton F. Maxwell, commander of a CIC Team in Heidelberg, was assigned the task of analyzing the letter and the situation. Maxwell quickly determined that the letter was legitimate and its implications dangerous. "Dr. Schieber, described as an extremely valuable scientist in the employ of the Chemical Division, EUCOM, where he possibly has access to Chemical Corps information of a highly classified nature, appears to be one person whom the United States can ill afford to have involved in any sort of international scheme of the nature which the letter seems to imply," Maxwell wrote. "Subject's connections during the Nazi regime with the armament industry, in his capacity as Armaments Supply Chief under Dr. Albert Speer, would make him valuable as a consultant and intermediary in any sort of plan involving illegal sales and shipments of arms." It is remarkable that despite many warning signs, the U.S. Army placed so much trust in Schieber in the first place, and that General Loucks was allowed to make back-door deals with him.

Special Agent Maxwell worried that "in light of recent indication of revival of right-wing activity it is not impossible to image that these arms might be used in a possible German monarchist coup." Schieber needed to be watched closely, Maxwell advised. The Counter Intelligence Corps put a tail on him and followed him into the Soviet zone. In four months' time, CIC confirmed, "Schieber has contacts with a Swiss Import-Export Agency in a dubious transaction involving the sale and shipment of arms to a foreign power." But there was even worse news for U.S. national security. The CIC also learned that Schieber was working for Soviet intelligence. "Subject is in some way involved with the MGB [Ministerstvo Gosudarstvennoi Bezopasnosti, or the Ministry of State Security, a forerunner of Komitet Gosudarstvennoi Bezopasnosti, or the KGB] in Weimar," Maxwell learned.

Maxwell advised his superiors that it appeared Schieber was a Soviet mole and summarized the dangers involved. Schieber had been cleared to work with highly classified material for the U.S. Chemical Corps, including but not limited to tabun and sarin nerve gas. He had worked on classified design projects involving underground bunker systems for the U.S. Air Force, ones that would supposedly protect the U.S. government's greatest military assets in the event of a nuclear attack. And now he was meeting with Soviet agents who were connected to the intelligence service. Maxwell was told to notify the CIA. The response from the Agency was surprising. "Just forget it," the CIA told Maxwell, and he was instructed to share this message with his colleagues inside the Counter Intelligence Corps. According to declassified memos in Schieber's file, in addition to working for the Chemical Corps, Schieber was also working for the CIA. The Agency told Special Agent Maxwell that they had Schieber under their control. Whether that meant that Schieber was spying on the Soviets as part of an Agency plan or that he was double-crossing both nations remains a mystery. Either way, he was also working on an illegal arms deal. According to a declassified memo in Schieber's foreign scientist case file, he remained on the Operation Paperclip payroll until 1956.

In America, Dr. Walter Schieber left an indelible mark on the future of the U.S. Chemical Corps. After he and his team of Farben chemists provided General Loucks with the secret of sarin gas, the United States began stockpiling the deadly nerve agent for use in the event of total war. The program was fast-tracked at the start of the Korean War. On October 31, 1950, Secretary of Defense George C. Marshall authorized $50 million (roughly $500 million in 2013) for the design, engineering, and construction of two separate sarin production facilities, one in Muscle Shoals, Alabama, and another inside the Rocky Mountain Arsenal. Most information on biological and chemical weapons was classified, and no one outside a core group of senior congressmen who portioned out money for these programs had a need to know about them. “Only five members of the House Appropriations Committee, and no more than 5 percent of the entire House of Representatives, were cleared for information on chemical and biological weapons,” writes chemical weapons expert Jonathan Tucker. “As a result, a small clique of senior congressmen was able to allocate money for these programs in secret session and then bury the line items in massive appropriations bills that were brought to the floor for a vote with little advance notice, so that few members had time to read them.”

Sarin production took off at a frenzied pace. Twenty-four hours a day, seven days a week, 365 days a year, the two plants cranked out thousands of tons of sarin nerve agent each year. The facility at Rocky Mountain Arsenal, code-named Building 1501, was a windowless five-story blockhouse designed to withstand a 6.0 earthquake and 100-mph winds. It was the largest poured concrete structure in the United States, and for years, no one in America without a need to know had any idea what went on inside. The Chemical Corps also fast-tracked its chemical warfare munitions program, developing state-of-the-art weapons with which to deliver deadly nerve agents in battle. At the Rocky Flats munitions loading plant, sarin was fitted into artillery shells, aerial bombs, rockets, and warheads for missiles, with the preferred method of delivery being the M34 cluster bomb, a 1,000-pound metal cylinder with 75 sarin-filled mini-bombs sealed inside.

Shortly after the Korean War ended with an armistice on July 27, 1953, the Chemical Corps began releasing public service announcements to educate Americans about chemical warfare. In November 1953, when *Collier’s* magazine published “G-Gas: A New Weapon of Chilling Terror. We Have It—So Does Russia,” the public learned for the first time that World War III with the Soviets would most likely involve nerve agents. Journalist Cornelius Ryan presented the information about sarin in the starkest of terms. “Right now, you and your family—all of us—are unprotected against the threat of a terror weapon which could prove more deadly than an atomic bomb.” The army described sarin as “an odorless, colorless, tasteless nerve gas designed to destroy people with paralyzing suddenness" and warned Americans of a possible "Pearl Harbor–type attack." Ryan described for readers a scenario wherein a Russian strategic bomber, the Tu-4, carrying seven tons of sarin bombs, would drop its load on an American city, killing every unprotected human in a 100-square-mile radius within four minutes of the attack. The chief of the Chemical Corps, Major General E. F. Bullene, promised the nation that the only defense was offense. "At this time the only safe course is to be prepared to defend ourselves and ready to use gas in overpowering quantities." Brinkmanship—the practice of pushing dangerous events to the edge, or brink, of disaster—was the new Cold War mentality.

In 1957, after years of producing sarin and filling munitions around the clock, the Chemical Corps finally fulfilled the Defense Department's stockpile requirement. Later that same year, Edgewood chemists found an even more lethal killer, "a toxic insecticide that penetrated the skin like snake venom," explains Jonathan Tucker. This nerve agent was code-named VX (the V stood for venomous)—a battlefield killer that was three times more toxic than sarin when inhaled and one thousand times more lethal when it came in contact with the skin. Ten milligrams of VX could kill a man in fifteen minutes. VX would be much more effective on the battlefield than sarin ever would be; sarin dissipated within fifteen or so minutes, but when VX was sprayed, it stayed on the ground for up to twenty-one days. Now, in 1957, the Chemical Corps began producing VX by the thousands of tons. Operation Paperclip scientist Fritz Hoffmann moved over from synthesizing tabun at Edgewood to working on VX munitions. But Fritz Hoffmann's more haunting legacy lies in the work he performed for the CIA's Special Operations Division and the Chemical Corps' antiplant division. Antiplant agents include chemical or biological pathogens, as well as insects, that are then used as part of a program to harm crops, foliage, or other plant life.

After the death of Frank Olson, the SO Division continued its LSD mind control schemes. But Sidney Gottlieb, the man who had suggested poisoning Frank Olson at the CIA safe house in Deep Creek Lake, Maryland, was assigned to also work on the CIA's assassination-by-poison program. Fritz Hoffmann was one of the chemists at the locus of this program. "He was our searcher," Edgewood laboratory director Dr. Seymour Silver told journalist Linda Hunt. "He was the guy who brought to our attention any discoveries that happened around the world and then said, ‘Here’s a new chemical, you better test it.’ ”

Hoffmann’s daughter, Gabriella, remembers her unusually tall, soft-spoken father regularly traveling the globe in the late 1950s and early 1960s, always with a military escort, gathering obscure poisons from exotic toads, fish, and plants. “He would send me postcards from places like Japan, Australia and Hawaii,” she recalls. “He always flew military and he was always escorted by military staff. They would pick him up at our house and bring him back home on a Sunday night.” A teenager at the time, Gabriella Hoffmann remembers the unconventional items her father brought home. “He’d unpack his luggage before he would go back to Edgewood on Monday and in his suitcase he’d have all these little jars. They were filled with sea urchins and things. It all seemed very exotic to me.”

The poisons Fritz Hoffmann sought for the CIA included substances like curare, a South American blowpipe poison that paralyzes and kills people. Curare was the poison that the CIA’s U-2 pilots carried in their flight suit pockets, hidden inside a tiny sheath inserted into an American coin. The SO Division had a Device Branch, which was run by Herb Tanner, co-designer of the Eight Ball. The Device Branch was responsible for the hardware behind the delivery systems, including fountain pens filled with poison projectiles, briefcases that spread bacterial aerosols, poisoned candies, invisible powders, and the “non discernible microbioinoculator,” a high-tech dart gun that injected a tiny, poison-tipped dart into the bloodstream without leaving a mark on the body.

In other situations it behooved the CIA to locate and weaponize a poison where death came after a delay, sometimes with an incubation period of about eight or twelve hours, sometimes much longer. The SO Division’s Agent Branch worked to find poisons that could make a target mildly ill for a short or long period of time followed by death, very ill for a short or long time followed by death, or any number of combinations, including mild to extreme illness followed by death. The rationale behind assassinating someone with a built-in time delay was to allow the assassin to get away and to deflect suspicion. SO Division targets included Fidel Castro, whose favorite drink, a milkshake, the CIA tried to poison several times.

Another CIA target was Patrice Lumumba, the first legally elected prime minister of Congo, who the CIA believed was a Soviet puppet. Sidney Gottlieb, the man who poisoned Frank Olson, was assigned the job of assassin. Gottlieb later told congressional investigators that for this job, he needed to locate a poison that was "indigenous to that area [Congo] and that could be fatal." Gottlieb decided on botulinum toxin. Armed with this toxin concealed inside a glass jar within a diplomatic pouch, Sidney Gottlieb traveled to Congo with the intention of killing Prime Minister Lumumba himself. On September 26, 1960, Gottlieb arrived in the capital, Léopoldville, and headed to the U.S. embassy. There, Ambassador Lawrence Devlin was expecting him.

Two days prior, Ambassador Devlin had received a Top Secret cable from CIA director Allen Dulles. "We wish give every possible support in eliminating Lumumba from any possiblity [*sic*] resuming govermental position," Dulles wrote. Ambassador Devlin knew to be on the lookout for a visitor who would introduce himself as "Joe from Paris." This was Sidney Gottlieb. Gottlieb's plan was to inject the botulinum toxin into Lumumba's toothpaste tube with a hypodermic syringe. Ideally, Lumumba would brush his teeth and eight hours later he'd be dead. But while in Léopoldville, Gottlieb could get nowhere near Prime Minister Lumumba, who was living in a house on a cliff high above the Congo River. Lumumba was constantly surrounded by bodyguards. After several days, the botulinum toxin lost its potency. Gottlieb mixed it with chlorine, tossed it into the Congo River, and left Africa. Patrice Lumumba died in January of the following year, beaten to death—allegedly by Belgian mercenaries.

"My father understood the risks [of] being a chemist at Edgewood," Gabriella Hoffmann says. "Because he never spoke of anything he did there is so much that is unknown." For Gabriella Hoffmann, memories of an unusual childhood include trips to military bases. "Whenever we traveled, me and my mom and dad, it was always to a military installation. We went to White Sands in New Mexico. We went to military bases in California, Arizona, North Dakota, and Dugway, Utah. I remember dad giving a lecture at Dugway Proving Ground." Hoffmann was a central player in some of the most mysterious and controversial government programs of the 1950s and 1960s, but the record of most of his work was destroyed or, as of 2013, remains classified. Gabriella Hoffmann is in the dark about her father's legacy, as is most of the rest of the world.

What remains are Gabriella Hoffmann's memories of the company her father kept. Dr. L. Wilson Greene, the man who coined the term "psychochemical warfare," lived down the street and was a colleague and family friend. During the late 1950s and early 1960s, Greene continued his LSD research for the army and the CIA's psychochemical warfare programs. LSD and other incapacitating agents were tested on thousands of U.S. soldiers and sailors with a questionable degree of informed consent. To Gabriella Hoffmann, Greene was simply an eccentric neighbor. "I recall [going] to the Greenes' house to see the amazing train garden, his hobby, that he built in the basement. It [had] hills and towns and little people. Ponds and lights and trains that whistled and chugged along with wisps of smoke. My attention and interest was solely on the trains." Another unusual neighbor on the same street was Maurice Weeks, from the Directorate of Medical Research at Edgewood. Weeks was chief of the Vapor Toxicity Branch, with expertise regarding "the inhalation toxicity of combustion products," and spent his time researching how biological and chemical agents became even more deadly when smoke and gas were involved. This picked up where Dr. Kurt Blome's research left off; it had been discussed by Blome in Operation Paperclip consultations in Heidelberg. "Maurice Weeks was a neighbor of ours," recalls Gabriella Hoffmann. "His son, Christopher, and I were the best of friends. There were all these monkeys in cages in Christopher's backyard. Christopher and I would amuse ourselves watching these monkeys for hours on end. Obviously it never dawned on me back then what they were for." Gabriella only learned the true nature of her father's job during interviews for this book.

The strange, tragic thing about Fritz Hoffmann and his legacy in Operation Paperclip is that during the war he was anti-Nazi—at least according to the affidavit written by the wartime American diplomat Sam Woods. And yet here in America, working for the Army Chemical Corps and for the CIA, Fritz Hoffmann's science projects took on a monstrous life of their own. This includes what his daughter believes was a role in the development of Agent Orange, the antiplant weapon, or defoliant, used by the U.S. military during the Vietnam War.

"During the Vietnam War, I remember one evening we were at the dinner table and the war was on the news," Gabriella Hoffmann explains. The family was watching TV. "Dad was usually a quiet man, so when he spoke up you remembered it. He pointed to the news—you could see the jungles of Vietnam, and he said, 'Wouldn't it be easier to defoliate the trees so you could see the enemies?' That's what he said. I remember it very clearly.

Years later I learned one of Dad's projects was the development of Agent Orange."

The army's herbicidal warfare program during the Vietnam War started in August 1961 and lasted until February 1971. More than 11.4 million gallons of Agent Orange were sprayed over approximately 24 percent of South Vietnam, destroying 5 million acres of uplands and forests and 500,000 acres of food crops—an area about the size of the state of Massachusetts. An additional 8 million gallons of other anticrop agents, code-named Agents White, Blue, Purple, Pink, and Green, were also sprayed, mostly from C-123 cargo planes. Fritz Hoffmann was one of the earliest known U.S. Army Chemical Corps scientists to research the toxic effects of dioxin—possibly in the mid-1950s but for certain in 1959—as indicated in what has become known as the Hoffmann Trip Report. This document is used in almost every legal record pertaining to litigation by U.S. military veterans against the U.S. government and chemical manufacturers for its usage of herbicides and defoliants in the Vietnam War.

It is the long-term effects of the Agent Orange program that Gabriella Hoffmann believes would have ruined her father, had he known. "Agent Orange turned out not only to defoliate trees but to cause great harm in children," Gabriella Hoffmann says. "Dad was dead by then and I remember thinking, Thank God. It would have killed him to learn that. He was a gentle man. He wouldn't hurt a fly."

Fritz Hoffmann's untimely death came like something out of a Special Operations Division's Agent Branch playbook. He suffered a serious illness that came on quickly, lasted for a relatively short time, and was followed by death. On Christmas Eve 1966, Fritz Hoffmann was diagnosed with cancer. Racked with pain, he lay in bed watching his favorite television shows—"Cowboy westerns and Rod Serling in *The Twilight Zone*," Gabriella Hoffmann recalls. One hundred days later, Fritz Hoffmann was dead. He was fifty-six years old.

"He did try, periodically, to go to work," Gabriella Hoffmann remembers, "but he was in too much pain. I do have a recollection of a lot of different men in dark suits always coming by the house to talk to him. At the time, Demerol as a painkiller had just come on the market. He had a prescription for it, from a doctor at Edgewood. During the time that [he was dying] there were a lot of questions asked of my mother and [me] that led me to think the FBI or the CIA, or whoever the men in the dark suits were, were worried that my father would start talking about whatever it was that he did. He never did say anything. He was silent until the end.”

Hoffmann’s antiplant work in herbicides was one element of Detrick’s three-part biological weapons division, the other two being antiman and antianimal. Antianimal weapons were aimed at killing entire animal populations, with the goal of starving to death the people who relied on those animals for food. At the locus of the U.S. antianimal program was Operation Paperclip’s Dr. Erich Traub, Dr. Kurt Blome’s deputy. Traub was recruited into the Accelerated Paperclip program by Dr. Blome’s handler, Charles McPherson, and arrived in America on April 4, 1949.

Traub worked on virological research at the Naval Medical Research Institute, in Bethesda, Maryland. Almost all of Traub’s work remains classified as of 2013. At the Naval Medical Research Institute, Traub became friendly with the Luftwaffe physiologist and explosive decompression expert Dr. Theodor Benzinger, whose early work for the navy also remains classified. In addition to working for the navy, Traub worked at Camp Detrick on antianimal research. The agents and diseases being studied by Detrick researchers at this time, meant to decimate a specific animal population, included rinderpest, hoof-and-mouth disease (also called foot-and-mouth disease), Virus III disease of swine (likely African swine fever), fowl plague, Newcastle disease, and fowl malaria. All of Traub’s Camp Detrick work remains classified as of 2013.

In 1948, Congress had approved a $30 million budget for antianimal weapons research (roughly $300 million in 2013), but because this work was so dangerous, Congress mandated that it needed to take place outside the continental United States, on an island and not connected to the nearest mainland by a bridge. Plans moved forward and the army chose Plum Island, a 1.3-square-mile land parcel located off the coast of Connecticut in the Long Island Sound. The obvious choice for a director was the world’s expert on antianimal research, Dr. Erich Traub. But the plan to activate Plum Island for biological weapons research languished for several years.

Traub received his immigrant visa on September 7, 1951, and he worked on classified programs for three more years. Then, under mysterious circumstances, in 1954, he resigned his position as medical supervisory bacteriologist at the Naval Medical Research Institute and asked to be repatriated to Germany. He told the navy he'd accepted a position with the West German government, as director of the Federal Institute for Virus Research. This move alarmed the JIOA. "Dr. Traub is a recognized authority in certain fields of virology, particularly in hoof and mouth disease of cattle and in Newcastle disease of poultry," read a declassified report. "It can be anticipated that this institution in Germany [where Traub was going] will become one of the leading research laboratories of the world in virological research." In view of the "recognizable military potentialities in possible application of his specialty, it is recommended that future surveillance in appropriate measure be maintained after the specialist's return to Germany." Traub needed to be kept under surveillance, likely for the rest of his life.

In Germany, throughout the late 1950s and early 1960s, U.S. military intelligence spied on Dr. Traub at his new home on Paul-Ehrlich-Strasse, in Tübingen. Agents stopped by the home of Traub's colleague and friend Dr. Theodor Benzinger, in Maryland, to ask whether Benzinger knew "of any associations retained by Dr. Traub outside the United States." Benzinger said he did not. Whenever Traub traveled outside Germany, military intelligence kept a watchful eye on him.

Dr. Traub was a man experienced in the illegal trafficking of deadly pathogens. During World War II, he was the trustworthy scientist chosen by Heinrich Himmler to travel to Turkey to obtain samples of rinderpest to weaponize on Riems. And after the war, when Traub fled the Russian zone at great risk of personal harm, he managed to smuggle deadly cultures with him out of the Eastern bloc, which he then stashed at an intermediary laboratory in West Germany until he was able to locate an appropriate buyer. In the mid-1960s, according to Traub's FBI file, Traub moved from Germany to Iran, with a new permanent address at the Razi Institute for Serums and Vaccines, in Hesarak, a suburb of the city of Karaj. When Traub traveled from Iran to the Shoreham Hotel in Washington, D.C., for a meeting with unknown persons, FBI agents watched him. What they learned about the mysterious Dr. Traub remains classified as of 2013.

Through the lens of history, it is remarkable to think that U.S. biological warfare and chemical warfare programs grew so quickly to the size they did. But the Pentagon was able to keep the scope and cost of these weapons programs secret from Congress in much the same way that it was able to keep the damaging details of Operation Paperclip secret from the public. Everything was classified.

It took President Richard Nixon to realize that playing chicken with the Russians, using a huge arsenal of biological and chemical weapons, was pure madness. On November 25, 1969, Nixon announced the end of all U.S. offensive biological warfare research and ordered that America's arsenal was to be destroyed. "I have decided that the United States of America will renounce the use of any form of deadly biological weapons that either kill or incapacitate," Nixon said. His reasons were simple and self-evident. The use of biological weapons could have "uncontrollable consequences" for the world. "Mankind already carries in its hands too many of the seeds of its own destruction," said Nixon. After twenty-six years of research and development, America's biological weapons programs came to an end. For the first time during the Cold War, a president decided that an entire group of weapons was going to be unilaterally destroyed.

The end of America's chemical weapons program was not far behind. Nixon reinstated the "retaliation-only" policy, which meant no new chemical weapons would be developed and produced. Over the next few years, Congress worked with the military to determine the best way to destroy this entire group of weapons. The original plan was to dispose of some twenty-seven thousand tons of chemical-filled weapons in the deep sea. But upon investigation, it turned out that many of the sarin-and VX-filled bombs stored at the Rocky Mountain Arsenal were already leaking nerve agent. These munitions needed to be encased in steel-and-concrete "coffins" before they could be dumped in the ocean. The Pentagon also had thirteen thousand tons of nerve agent and mustard gas stored in secret on its military base in Okinawa, Japan, which now needed to be disposed of. In 1971, these munitions were brought to an American-owned atoll in the South Pacific called Johnston Island in an operation called Red Hat. The plan was to store the sarin-and VX-filled bombs in bunkers on the atoll until scientists figured out how best to destroy them. But as it turned out, the sarin and VX bombs were not made to ever be dismantled. So the army had a massive new scientific endeavor on its hands, for which it created the Johnston Atoll Chemical Agent Disposal System, the world's first "full-scale chemical weapons disposal facility."

It took another thirty-four years for America’s arsenal of chemical weapons to be destroyed. “The numbers speak volumes,” says the army. “More than 412,000 obsolete chemical weapons—bombs, land mines, rockets and projectiles—all destroyed.” The elaborate destruction process involves the robotic separation of the chemical agent from the munitions, followed by incineration of the separated parts in three separate special types of furnaces. The army says it is “proud [of its] accomplishment,” which cost an estimated $25.8 billion as of 2006, or approximately $30 billion in 2013.

CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

Limelight

America’s Cold War biological and chemical weapons programs existed in the shadows, and the majority of the Nazi scientists who worked on them maintained anonymity for decades. Their JIOA case files and OMGUS security reports were classified, as were the programs they worked on. But some of the Operation Paperclip scientists enjoyed the limelight for their work, notably in instances where their work crossed over from weapons projects into space-related endeavors. In this manner, Walter Dornberger, Wernher von Braun, and Hubertus Strughold attained varying degrees of prominence and prestige in the 1950s and 1960s and onward.

Within two years of his arrival in the United States, Dornberger had transformed from public menace to American celebrity. In 1950 he left military custody at Wright-Patterson Air Force Base to work for Bell Aircraft Corporation in Niagara Falls, New York, quickly becoming vice president and chief scientist. His vocation was now to serve as America’s mouthpiece for the urgent need to weaponize space. Dornberger was given a Top Secret security clearance and a job consulting with the military on rockets, missiles, and the future of space-based weapons. In his desk diary, housed in the archives at the Deutsches Museum in Munich, he kept track of his cross-country business trips with an engineer’s precision. He attended “classified meetings” at U.S. Air Force bases including Wright-Patterson, Elgin, Randolph, Maxwell, and Holloman, as well as at Strategic Air Command headquarters, in Omaha, Nebraska, and the Pentagon. He also became a consultant to the Joint Chiefs on Operation Paperclip, visiting the inner circle in the Pentagon to discuss “clearance procedures” and the “hiring of German Scientists.” As a Paperclip scout, in 1952 Dornberger traveled with what he called “Pentagon Brass” to Germany to “interview

German scientists and engineers [in] Frankfurt, Heidelberg, Wiesbaden, Stuttgart, Darmstadt, Witzenhausen.”

In his desk diary Dornberger also detailed an ambitious schedule of public appearances, carefully noting the places he traveled and the people he met with. They were the kinds of engagements usually reserved for congressmen. Throughout the 1950s, he jetted from one event to the next, lecturing at dinners and luncheons and sometimes weeklong events. His speeches were always about conquest, with titles like “Rockets—Guided Missiles: Key to the Conquest of Space,” “Intercontinental Weapons Systems,” and “A Realistic Approach to the Conquest of Space.” He orated to anyone who would listen: the Men’s Club of St. Mark’s Episcopal Church, the Boy Scouts of America, the Society of Automotive Engineers. When the Rochester Junior Chamber of Commerce hosted General Dornberger for a women’s luncheon in the spring of 1953, the local press covered the event with the headline, “Buzz Bomb Mastermind to Address Jaycees Today.”

Dornberger became so popular that his memoir about the V-2, originally published in West Germany in 1952, was published in America in 1954. In these pages, Dornberger was able to reengineer his professional history from that of warmongering Nazi general to beneficent science pioneer. According to Dornberger, the research and development that had gone into the V-2 at Peenemünde was a romantic, science-laboratory-by-the-sea affair. There was no mention made of the slave labor facility at Nordhausen or the slaves at Peenemünde. The book was originally titled *V-2: The Shot into Space (V-2: Der Schuss ins All)*. “It would be nice to know who invented the subtitle,” says Michael J. Neufeld, “which so neatly captures the reinvention of a Nazi terror weapon as the space rocket it most certainly was not.”

In 1957, Dornberger seemed to have found his true post-Nazi calling, attempting to sell Bell Aircraft’s BoMi (bomber-missile) to the Pentagon. BoMi was a rocket-powered manned spacecraft designed for nuclear combat in space. Occasionally, and behind closed doors, usually at the Pentagon, Dornberger faced challenges. He was once pitching the benefits of BoMi to an audience of air force officials when “abusive and insulting remarks” were shouted at him, according to air force historian Roy F. Houchin II. In that instance, Dornberger is said to have turned on his audience and insisted that BoMi would receive a lot more respect if

Dornberger had had a chance to fly it against the United States during a war. There was “deafening silence,” in the room, Houchin noted.

In 1958 the FBI opened an investigation into General Dornberger based on an insider’s tip that he might be engaged in secret discussions with Communist spies. The special agent who interviewed Dornberger did not believe he was spying for the Soviets but honed in on Dornberger’s duplicitous nature: “It is believed that subject [Dornberger] could carry on satisfactorily in the role of a double agent.” Dornberger was a cunning man, and this quality, coupled with his scientific acumen, served him. No matter what the circumstances, Dornberger always seemed to come out on top.

Wernher von Braun became the biggest celebrity of the Operation Paperclip scientists. By 1950, the army decided that it required a much larger facility to research and develop longer-range rockets, so the Fort Bliss rocket team moved from Texas to the Redstone Arsenal, near Huntsville, Alabama. There, the German scientists began work on the army’s Jupiter ballistic missile. The group had launched sixty-four V-2s from White Sands. At the same time, von Braun was ambitiously developing a persona for himself as America’s prophet of space travel. Rockets, outer space, and interplanetary travel had gained a foothold in American culture. It was the dream of many 1950s American children to fly into outer space, and von Braun and Dornberger became national spokesmen on this issue. They promised the nation that the army’s development of a ballistic missile was the necessary first step in reaching outer space.

In 1952, von Braun experienced a breakthrough in his role of national space advocate when *Collier’s* magazine paid him $4,000 (approximately $36,000 in 2013) to write the lead article in what would eventually become an eight-part series on future space travel, edited by Cornelius Ryan. “Within the next 10 or 15 years,” von Braun wrote, “the earth will have a new companion in the skies, a man-made satellite that could be either the greatest force for peace ever devised, or one of the most terrible weapons of war—depending on who makes and controls it.” This space satellite, or station, would also be a “terribly effective atomic bomb carrier,” von Braun added. From its earliest days, space travel would be intertwined with war making. It still is.

In addition to earning von Braun a small fortune, the *Collier's* magazine series propelled him into the national spotlight, increasing his fame and affording him additional writing opportunities. Most important, this newfound limelight provided von Braun with a platform to recast himself as a patriotic American. In the summer of 1952, *American Magazine* published a piece with von Braun's byline entitled "Why I Chose America," in which he professed a deep love for America, Christianity, and democracy. In the article, von Braun claimed that during the war he opposed Nazism and was never in a position to do anything but follow orders. The piece earned him an award for "patriotic writing," even though it had been written by a ghostwriter. The article was reprinted in at least one book and, explains Michael J. Neufeld, would thereafter be "taken as a fundamental source by many later journalists and authors."

The national attention caught the eye of Walt Disney Studios, in Burbank, California, and an executive called von Braun to see if he wanted to film a couple of space-related shows for a new television series that Disney was working on. For over a year, von Braun had been trying to find a New York publisher for the science fiction novel he had written while living in the Texas desert. By this time, the novel had been rejected by eighteen publishers. The Disney contract offered a wider road to fame and von Braun signed on. The first Disneyland TV broadcast in which von Braun appeared, in 1955, called *Man in Space*, had an estimated 42 million viewers and was reported to be the second-highest-rated television show in American history at the time. The following month, on April 15, 1955, von Braun and many of his fellow German rocket scientists became U.S. citizens, in a public ceremony held in the Huntsville High School auditorium. In 1958, von Braun and his team launched America's first successful space satellite, *Explorer I*, as a quick response to the Soviets' *Sputnik*. Kurt Debus was in charge of the launch.

In 1960, von Braun and a group of approximately 120 Operation Paperclip scientists, engineers, and technicians were transferred from the army to the newly established National Aeronautics and Space Administration, or NASA, with a mandate to build the Saturn rockets designed to take man to the moon. Von Braun was made director of the new NASA facility, the Marshall Space Flight Center, also located at the Redstone Arsenal, as well as chief architect of the Saturn V launch vehicle, or "superbooster" rocket, as it would become known. Von Braun's deputy developer on the Saturn program was Arthur Rudolph, the former operations director at the Mittelwerk slave labor facility.

The Saturn V rocket would need its own launch complex and hangar. Cape Canaveral, on Florida's east coast, was chosen as the perfect site. On July 1, 1962, NASA activated its Launch Operations Center there, naming Kurt Debus as director. Debus was the ardent Nazi who, during the war and on his own volition, had turned an engineering colleague over to the Gestapo for making anti-Hitler remarks. To house the giant Saturn rocket, NASA constructed the Vertical Assembly Building on nearby Merritt Island. The structure would soon become the most voluminous building in the world—larger than the Pentagon and almost as tall as the Washington Monument. It was designed by Bernhard Tessmann, former facilities designer at Peenemünde and Nordhausen, and one of the two men who, at war's end, stashed the V-2 documents in the Dörnten mine.

As had Dornberger, von Braun worked carefully to whitewash his Nazi past. He knew never to speak of the fact that he had become a Nazi Party member in 1937. When a reporter once asked him, incorrectly, about his joining the party "in 1942," von Braun put his scientist's precision aside and chose not to correct the newsman. Instead von Braun did what he always did—he said that he'd been coerced into joining the Nazi Party. Never did von Braun speak of the SS cavalry unit he joined, in 1933, or that he was made an SS officer in 1944 and wore the SS officer's uniform, with its swastika on the armband and its cap with the death's-head image. With a revelation like that, he could have been deported under the Internal Security Act of 1950, which was meant to keep Communists out of the country but also covered anyone who had held membership in a "totalitarian dictatorship." Instead, the fact that he was an officer with the SS remained a jealously guarded secret by all parties—von Braun, the U.S. military, and NASA until CNN journalist Linda Hunt broke the story in 1985.

But the dark shadow of von Braun's complicity in Nazi war crimes followed him around. Sometimes it snuck up on him from behind. One day, while visiting the *Collier's* offices, he was riding in the elevator with fellow Paperclip Scientist Heinz Haber, from the School of Aviation Medicine at Randolph Air Force Base, and Cornelius Ryan, his editor. Also in the elevator were a few *Collier's* magazine staffers, one of whom reached out to Haber, rubbed a piece of the scientist's leather coat between his fingers, and said wryly, "Human skin, of course?"

As man got closer and closer to the moon, Wernher von Braun enjoyed a parallel ascent in fortune and in fame. Because von Braun was a public figure, his Nazi past was always there, but in shadow. By the 1960s, it was sometimes treated as a joke. One night, before an Apollo mission, von Braun stormed out of a press conference after a reporter asked him if he could guarantee that the rocket would not hit London. Tom Lehrer wrote a song famously satirizing von Braun: " 'Once the rockets are up, who cares where they come down? That's not my department,' says Wernher von Braun." Filmmaker Stanley Kubrick created a von Braun–inspired character in his black comedy *Dr. Strangelove,* in which a mad scientist famously gets out of a wheelchair and cries, "Mein Führer, I can walk!" But in 1963, in East Berlin, a popular author and lawyer named Julius Mader wrote a book called *The Secret of Huntsville*: The True Career of Rocket Baron Wernher von Braun. On the dust jacket there was a drawing of von Braun wearing a black SS-Sturmbannführer's uniform. Around von Braun's neck was the Knight's Cross, bestowed upon him by Albert Speer at the Castle Varlar event. The book, published by Deutscher Militärverlag, portrayed von Braun as an ardent Nazi and included detailed pages about the murderous conditions at the slave labor facility at Nordhausen, where von Braun oversaw work, and at the Dora-Nordhausen concentration camp, which supplied the slave laborers.

Several German-speaking U.S. citizens alerted NASA about the allegations against von Braun, as if NASA did not know. The space agency's three top officials, James E. Webb, Hugh Dryden, and Robert Seamans, discussed the situation with von Braun and counseled him on how to handle it. If anyone were to ask him about this matter, NASA administrator James Webb told von Braun pointedly, his answer was to be, "Everything related to my past activity in Germany… is well known to the U.S. Government." In the end, nothing much came of the book in the Western world. The narrative mixed "damaging facts" with "completely fabricated scenes," explains von Braun's biographer Michael J. Neufeld, which made the book easy to discount. When NASA learned that the book's author, Julius Mader, worked as an intelligence agent for the East German secret police, the revelations lost their potential power. If need be, Mader's book could be discounted as Soviet-engineered lies, meant only to damage the prestige of the U.S. space program.

The Secret of Huntsville: The True Career of Rocket Baron Wernher von Braun was a success in the Eastern bloc. It was also translated into Russian and sold half a million copies in the Soviet Union. The book inspired a Soviet-sponsored film, *Die Gefrorenen Blitze* (Frozen Lightning), also written by Mader and released by the East German state film studio, DEFA (Deutsche Film-Aktiengesellschaft), in 1967. The same year, West German prosecutors opened a new Dora-Nordhausen trial, this one called the Essen-Dora trial. An SS guard, a Gestapo official, and the chief of security for the V-2 were all charged with war crimes that took place while V-weapons were being built in the Mittelwerk tunnel complex. Mittelwerk general manager and former Paperclip scientist Georg Rickhey was called as a witness, as was Wernher von Braun. Rickhey, who lived in Germany, took the stand. He testified under oath that he did not know about the Dora-Nordhausen concentration camp; that he learned about it after the war. "I don't know much more because they were secret [concentration] camps," Rickhey told the court. "It was a secret commando group in charge. Eyes only. There were bad catastrophic conditions [at Nordhausen] but I learned about this only after the war." This was an absurd misrepresentation of the truth.

Back in America, NASA general counsel refused to send the star of their space program to Germany; this would open Pandora's box. Instead, they allowed von Braun to deliver oral testimony at a West German consulate in the United States. As a venue, NASA lawyers suggested New Orleans, Louisiana—a place about as far away from the media glare as there was. Representing the Soviet-bloc survivors of Dora-Nordhausen was an East German lawyer by the name of Dr. Friedrich Kaul. Upon learning that von Braun would not be coming to Germany, Dr. Kaul arranged to travel to New Orleans to take von Braun's testimony himself. Kaul was a supremely skillful lawyer, and he had information on von Braun that was damaging.

According to Michael J. Neufeld, the U.S. government knew that Dr. Kaul had served as legal adviser on *Die Gefrorenen Blitze,* and that Kaul's goal in interviewing von Braun was "to broadcast the connection between the rocket engineer, the SS and the concentration camps." NASA's moon program would never survive that kind of publicity, and the State Department denied Dr. Friedrich Kaul a visa.

Instead, at the courthouse in Louisiana, von Braun answered questions put to him by a German judge. As the U.S. Army had done with the 1947 Nordhausen trial, the government sealed von Braun's testimony. Word leaked to the news media that von Braun had been deposed for a war crimes trial, causing von Braun to issue a brief statement on the matter. He said he had "nothing to hide, and I am not implicated." When a reporter asked if there had been any concentration camp prisoners used as slave laborers at Peenemünde, von Braun said no.

The judge prosecuting the Essen-Dora trial also took the testimony of General Dornberger, in Mexico, where the now-retired Dornberger spent winters with his wife. Some months later, von Braun and Dornberger corresponded about the matter. "In regards to the testimony, fortunately I too have heard nothing more," wrote von Braun. No news was good news for both men.

After the Apollo 11 moon landing in July 1969, columnist Drew Pearson—whose fierce exposés of Major General Dr. Walter Schreiber had helped to banish the man from America—wrote in his column that von Braun had been a member of the SS. But von Braun's glory had reached epic proportions, and Pearson's article went by relatively unnoticed. Von Braun was an American hero. Citizens all across the nation showered him with praise, glory, and the confetti of ticker-tape parades.

After the Apollo space program ended, von Braun moved into the private sector. In his new life as a defense contractor, he traveled the world and met its leaders, including Indira Gandhi, the Shah of Iran, and Crown Prince Juan Carlos of Spain. In 1973, he decided to take up flying, and in June of that year he applied to get his pilot's license with the Federal Aviation Administration. This required a physical and a body X-ray, which revealed a dark shadow on his kidney. Von Braun had terminal cancer but would live for another four years.

The year before he died, there was a motion inside the Ford White House to award Wernher von Braun the Presidential Medal of Freedom. The idea almost passed until one of President Ford's senior advisers, David Gergen, famously wrote, in a note passed to colleagues, "Sorry, but I can't support the idea of giving [the] medal of freedom to [a] former Nazi whose V-2 was fired into over [*sic*] 3000 British and Belgian cities. He has given valuable service to the US since, but frankly he has gotten as good as he has given." Von Braun was awarded the Medal of Science instead. He died on June 16, 1977. His tombstone, in Alexandria, Virginia, cites Psalm 19:1, invoking God, glory, heaven, and earth.

It would be another eight years before the intrepid CNN reporter Linda Hunt became the first person to crack the pretense of Wernher von Braun. It took a Freedom of Information Act (FOIA) record release to reveal Wernher von Braun's Nazi past.

Dr. Hubertus Strughold, though never as famous as Wernher von Braun, played an equally vital role in the U.S. space program—in the field of medicine. In November 1948, fifteen months after Strughold arrived at the School of Aviation Medicine at Randolph Air Force Base, he and Commandant Harry Armstrong hosted the first ever U.S. military panel discussion on biology in space. Strughold served as professional adviser to Armstrong at the SAM, and he oversaw the work of approximately thirty-four German colleagues under Operation Paperclip contracts there. Strughold's broader vision, which he shared with Armstrong, was to create a space medicine program for the U.S. Air Force.

In 1948 the notion of human space flight was still considered science fiction by most. But Strughold's team had recently conducted a groundbreaking experiment with von Braun's rocket team at White Sands, the results of which they desired to make public. On June 11, 1948, a nine-pound rhesus monkey named Albert was strapped into a harness inside the nose cone of a V-2 rocket and jettisoned into space. Albert's pressurized space capsule, its harness and its cage, had been designed by Dr. Strughold and his team. The V-2 rocket carrying Albert traveled to an altitude of 39 miles. Albert died of suffocation during the six-minute flight, but for Dr. Strughold, the monkey's voyage signified the momentous first step toward human space flight.

Armstrong and Strughold's biology in space panel was cosponsored by the air surgeon, the National Research Council, and the medical research laboratory at Wright-Patterson Air Force Base, Wright Lab. For the first time ever in America, space medicine was now being looked at as a legitimate military science. Two months later, in January 1949, Armstrong and Strughold decided it was time to seek funding for a new department inside the SAM dedicated solely to researching space medicine. For this, Armstrong later explained, "we needed much larger accommodations, more space and facilities and much more sophisticated research equipment."

Armstrong traveled to Washington, D.C., to sell the idea to Congress and to explain that he and Dr. Strughold needed between fifteen and twenty years' lead time to do the necessary research to prepare humans for space travel. Congress approved Armstrong's idea. "There were no wild headlines," Armstrong later explained. The Department of Space Medicine at the SAM opened with little fanfare on February 9, 1949. "I appointed myself Director of the new aerospace laboratory… not Dr. Strughold since there were [*sic*] still some lingering enmity toward the Germans," Armstrong told an air force historian in 1976. But just a few months after the department officially opened, Armstrong was transferred to the Pentagon to serve as surgeon general of the U.S. Air Force. The man he was replacing was his long-time mentor, Major General Malcolm Grow. Back in Texas, Dr. Strughold was promoted to the position of scientific director of the Department of Space Medicine at SAM.

Strughold continued to oversee the professional activities of the Paperclip scientists. He also played an active role in further recruiting endeavors. In the fall of 1949, he traveled to Germany to try to facilitate the hiring of Dr. Siegfried Ruff, Strughold's long-time colleague and one of the doctors tried —and acquitted—at the Nuremberg doctors' trial. Siegfried Ruff was the Luftwaffe doctor who had overseen Rascher's medical murder experiments at Dachau. Information about Ruff's recruitment was leaked to journalist Drew Pearson, who allegedly threatened to tell the president if Dr. Ruff came to the United States as part of Operation Paperclip. Ruff's contract never materialized.

A second defendant acquitted at the Nuremberg doctors' trial was able to secure a Paperclip contract with Dr. Strughold's help. Konrad Schäfer, the "thirst and thirst quenching" expert who had "participated in the planning and execution of the saltwater experiments" at Dachau, arrived at the School of Aviation Medicine in August 1949. In Texas, Schäfer's military research was supervised by Dr. Strughold and an air force captain named Seymour Schwartz. During Schäfer's time at SAM, he worked in three departments: internal medicine, radiobiology and pharmacology. One of his research projects involved an effort to make Mississippi River water drinkable. Konrad Schäfer's American supervisor found him inept. "The scientist [Schäfer] has been singularly unsuccessful in producing any finished work and has displayed very little real scientific acumen," Captain Schwartz wrote. "The experience of this Headquarters indicates that this man is a most ineffective research worker and on the basis of his performance here his future worth to the U.S. Armed Forces is nil.”

In a letter to the director of intelligence at U.S. Air Force headquarters in Washington, D.C., in March 1951, Captain Schwartz requested that Schäfer’s Paperclip contract be terminated and that he be sent back to Germany. The air force terminated Schäfer’s contract, but the German doctor refused to leave the United States. Thanks to expedited protocols put in place by the JIOA, Schäfer was already in possession of a valid U.S. immigration visa by the time it was determined that he was incompetent. He moved to New York City to work in the private sector.

In the early 1950s, the School of Aviation Medicine and its Department of Space Medicine swiftly gained momentum as formidable medical research laboratories. The *Journal of Aviation Medicine* began publishing articles on space medicine, including ones written by Paperclip scientists and covering topics like weightlessness, urinating in zero gravity, and the effects of cosmic radiation on humans. There was also classified military research going on at the SAM, including experiments involving human test subjects. In January 1994, President Clinton created the Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments to investigate and report on the use of human beings in medical research related to Cold War atomic tests. The Advisory Committee found many of these experiments to be criminal and to be in violation of the Nuremberg Code, including studies conducted by German doctors with the SAM.

Starting in 1951, the Atomic Energy Commission (AEC) and the Department of Defense conducted aboveground nuclear weapons tests in the Nevada desert, at a facility called the Nevada Proving Ground and later renamed the Nevada Test Site. The experiments were designed to determine how soldiers and airmen would perform on the nuclear battlefield. The AEC and the DoD agreed that subjecting soldiers to blast and radiation effects of various-sized atomic bombs was required to accurately prepare for a nuclear war.

Colonel John E. Pickering was the director of medical research at the SAM in the early 1950s. In this capacity, Pickering oversaw the research of two German doctors working on a group of AEC studies involving “flashblindness”—the temporary or permanent blindness caused by looking at a nuclear weapon during detonation. According to testimony Colonel Pickering gave to the Advisory Committee in 1994, one set of flashblindness studies had been suggested by Dr. Strughold. Pickering said Strughold was interested in learning about permanent eye damage based on the fact that he himself had been partially blinded in one eye as a boy after watching a solar eclipse with a faulty viewing glass. "That's the thing that gave us curiosity," Pickering recalled of Strughold's accident.

Among the Paperclip scientists who carried out the initial flashblindness studies were Heinrich Rose and Konrad Büttner. Both men had been working for the U.S. government since the fall of 1945, when Dr. Strughold first recommended them for employment at the Army Air Forces Aero Medical Center in Heidelberg. And like so many of Strughold's close Luftwaffe colleagues, Rose and Büttner had been Nazi ideologues during the war. Both men were long-term members of the Nazi Party and also members of the SA.

For the first set of flashblindness studies, Rose and Büttner's test subjects were large pigs. The two doctors calculated that the flash of a 20-kiloton atomic bomb could produce retinal burns as far as forty miles from ground zero. As the atomic tests progressed, the Atomic Energy Commission sought more specific data regarding humans. In the fall of 1951, for an atomic test series called Operation Buster-Jangle, soldier volunteers were asked to stare at a nuclear explosion from varying distances. Crew flying in C-54 aircraft approximately nine miles from ground zero were told to look out the windows of the airplane when the bomb went off. Some wore protective eye goggles while others did not. "No visual handicaps" were reported, according to Pickering. In the spring of 1952, for an atomic test series called Operation Tumbler-Snapper, a trailer was set up on the Nevada desert floor, with porthole-like windows at viewing range. Soldier volunteers were asked to sit in front of the windows and stare at the nuclear explosion. The distance from ground zero was also approximately nine miles, only this time the soldiers were at blast level. One of the volunteers in the viewing trailer was Colonel Pickering, who said that some of the human test subjects were given protective eye goggles to wear but others were asked to observe the fireball with the naked eye. Two soldiers had their eyeballs burned and the trailer tests were suspended.

In the spring of 1953, for an atomic test series called Operation Upshot-Knothole, soldier volunteers were asked to perform duck-and-cover drills inside five-foot-deep trenches that had been dug into the desert floor several miles from ground zero. The men were specifically instructed not to look at the atomic blast. But curiosity got the better of at least one young officer, a twenty-two-year-old lieutenant identified in declassified records as "S.H." Instead of facing away from the blast, the lieutenant looked over his left shoulder in the direction of the atomic bomb when it detonated with a force of 43 kilotons.

"He didn't wear his goggles and he looked," Colonel Pickering told President Clinton's Advisory Committee in 1994. Because light enters the eye through the cornea and is refracted when it hits the lens, Pickering explained, images are flipped upside down. As a result, the image of an inverted nuclear fireball was seared on the lieutenant's retina "forever," leaving what Pickering described as "probably one of the most beautiful images of a fireball you'd ever see in your life." Pickering said that doctors at the SAM kept a photograph of the man's eyeball for their collection. The Advisory Committee determined that the SAM continued its classified flashblindness studies until at least 1962 but that most of the records had been lost or destroyed.

Dr. Strughold's personal research efforts remained focused on space medicine. Monkey astronaut rocket tests at White Sands progressed. On June 19, 1949, a monkey named Albert II was blasted off into space. During that flight, Strughold and his team monitored Albert II's vitals as the V-2 carried him past the Kármán line—the point at which outer space begins—and reached an altitude of 83 miles. Albert II died back on Earth, on impact, when his parachute failed to open. By 1952, Strughold had succeeded in convincing the air force to fund the construction of a sealed chamber, or capsule, to be used for space medicine research on humans. The cabin was designed by fellow Paperclip scientist Fritz Haber, brother of Heinz Haber, and completed in 1954. The sealed chamber was one hundred cubic square feet, with a single seat and an instrument panel, and was meant to duplicate the conditions that an astronaut would experience during a voyage to the moon. The first human test was conducted in March 1956, when an airman named D. F. Smith spent twenty-four hours inside the chamber, performing various tasks while being monitored by Strughold and his team. Approximately two years later, in February 1958, pilot Donald G. Farrell, a twenty-three-year-old native of the Bronx chosen from a pool of rigorously screened airmen, stepped into the chamber for seven consecutive days and nights. This time period, Strughold explained, was inspired by Jules Verne's prediction of how long it would take for a spaceship to get to the moon.

During the test, Strughold and Hans-Georg Clamann, Strughold's former assistant during the Luftwaffe years, as well as two air force colleagues, monitored Donald Farrell's vitals and his ability to perform tasks.

The space capsule simulator test with airman Donald Farrell attracted all kinds of media attention. On the seventh and final day, Texas senator Lyndon B. Johnson stopped by the School of Aviation Medicine to personally escort Farrell out of the chamber and join him at a press conference. Dr. Strughold stood by Farrell's side, as did General Otis Benson—the man who had tried, and failed, to find Major General Dr. Walter Schreiber a teaching position so he could remain in America. Benson singled out Strughold for his excellent work "in the name of medical science."

So excited was Lyndon Johnson by the event that he flew Dr. Strughold and his team to Washington, D.C., to attend a luncheon with seventy congressmen, the secretary of the air force, and a half-dozen four-star generals. Strughold later recalled the event: "After the soup, [Lyndon] Johnson asked me to give a five minute talk about the scope of space medicine and the meaning of the experiment." Hubertus Strughold, like Wernher von Braun and Walter Dornberger, was now an accepted member of the U.S. military scientific elite.

But there was a bump in the road. In May 1958, *Time* magazine featured a piece about Strughold, showering him with praise as America's space medicine research pioneer. In response, the widely read *Saturday Review* published an editorial by Julian Bach Jr., a former war correspondent for the *Army Talks* series of pamphlets for GIs, and "the first American correspondent to report in the general press on medical experiments on human beings by Nazi doctors during World War II." Bach's editorial was called "Himmler the Scientist." In it, the war correspondent reminded the public of the human experiments that the Nazi doctors had conducted on prisoners in concentration camps. "The German doctors carving them up were medical men of stature in many cases," wrote Bach. "Only the fewest were quacks." Bach correctly linked Strughold to the freezing experiments at Dachau, stating that, at minimum, he "had knowledge of them." This was the first time the public had heard anything about Dr. Strughold having knowledge of the medical murder experiments, a fact he had previously been able to keep hidden.

The article prompted an investigation at the federal level. Because Strughold had become a U.S. citizen two years prior, in 1956, the Immigration and Naturalization Service (INS) was now compelled to investigate. But after checking with the air force, the INS released a statement saying that Strughold had been "appropriately investigated" before becoming a U.S. citizen. The INS had not been shown Strughold's OMGUS security report or his classified dossier. If it had been, INS would have learned that military intelligence had concluded that Strughold's "successful career under Hitler would seem to indicate that he must be in full accord with Nazism."

In October 1958, the twenty-ninth meeting of the Aero Medical Association convened in San Antonio, Texas, for a daylong symposium, "Aviation Medicine on the Threshold of Space." The group's first international convention had taken place at the Waldorf-Astoria hotel twenty-one years before. Dr. Strughold and Harry Armstrong had both been in attendance. Here they were together again: Armstrong and Strughold were co-hosts of the event. General Dornberger delivered a speech. Eleven of the forty-seven scientists in attendance had been brought to America from Germany as part of Operation Paperclip. They were American citizens now.

A prolific writer, Strughold authored papers and journals, sometimes more than a dozen in a year. He had contributed a piece about space cabins to the *Collier's* magazine series. He created new, space-related nomenclature, including the words "bioastronautics," "gravisphere," "ecosphere," and "astrobiology." He studied jet lag—how the body responds to flight—and wrote a book about his findings, *Your Body Clock*. In 1964, he was interviewed by the space writer and journalist Shirley Thomas for her eight-volume series *Men of Space*. Now, with nearly two decades of distance between himself and his Nazi past, and with so many accolades to his name, Strughold began to construct a fictional past for himself, one in which he had actually been an opponent of the Nazis.

"I was against Hitler and his beliefs," Strughold told Shirley Thomas. "I sometimes tried to hide myself because my life was in danger from the Nazis," he said. This was, of course, absurd. Strughold was among the highest-ranking doctor-professors in the Luftwaffe.

"Were you ever forced to join the Nazi Party?" Thomas asked.

"It was tried," Strughold said. "They tried it" but failed. Strughold told Thomas that the same went for the staff at his Aviation Medical Research Institute in Berlin. "Only the janitor and the man who took care of the animals" were members of the Nazi Party, Strughold lied.

It was as if his close colleagues from the Nazi era—Doctors Siegfried Ruff, Konrad Schäfer, Hermann Becker-Freyseng, and Oskar Schröder—did not exist.

People began to look harder into the past. On September 3, 1973, Simon Wiesenthal, a freelance Nazi hunter who had played a role in the capture of Adolf Eichmann, wrote to Dr. Adalbert Rückerl, director of the Central Office of the State Justice Administration for the Investigation of National Socialist Crimes, in Ludwigsburg, Germany.

"I have information that Dr. Hubertus Strughold participated in experiments with human beings in Ravensbrück," Wiesenthal wrote. "We don't have the name in our archive. The information states that the experiments were in context of the German Air Force."

Dr. Adalbert Rückerl told Simon Wiesenthal that he would look into it. A few months later, Rückerl wrote back to Wiesenthal to say that a comprehensive investigation had been done and that the Central Office could not find any direct evidence of Strughold's personal participation in the medical crimes. Rückerl provided Wiesenthal with a copy of the documents pertaining to the conference, "Medical Problems of Sea Distress and Winter Distress," at the Hotel Deutscher Hof in Nuremberg in 1942, including the travel expenses that Strughold had submitted and the amount he was paid to attend. The Luftwaffe doctors in attendance had discussed the medical data of murdered people. But knowledge was not a crime, and there was no further action for the Central Office of the State Justice Administration to take, Rückerl said.

A few months later, toward the end of 1973, the U.S. Immigration and Naturalization Service announced that it was investigating Strughold and thirty-four other long-dormant cases of Nazi war criminal suspects living in the United States. That Strughold's name was on the list, which was published in the *New York Times*, came as a shock to him. Strughold rehearsed a succinct response for reporters, the same as von Braun had when allegations arose. “I was cleared before I came here, before I was hired,” Strughold said.

Leaders of Jewish groups sprang into action, and Charles R. Allen Jr., the former senior editor of *The Nation,* writing for *Jewish Currents,* presented evidence about Strughold’s knowledge of human experiments. Allen had acquired the first public copy of the proceedings of the Nuremberg medical conference at the Hotel Deutscher Hof in 1942, which included a list of those in attendance. On this list were five other Nazi doctors who had worked in America under Operation Paperclip—Major General Walter Schreiber, Konrad Schäfer, Hans-Georg Clamann, Konrad Büttner, and Theodor Benzinger—but neither Charles R. Allen Jr. nor anyone else involved in the Strughold exposé appears to have recognized any of these names. Twenty years prior, Major General Walter Schreiber had been fired from the SAM and banished to Argentina, and Konrad Schäfer had been fired from the SAM and moved to New York. But when this story broke in 1973, Hans-Georg Clamann, Konrad Büttner, and Theodor Benzinger had all been gainfully employed by the U.S. government for decades and were now living the American dream.

The cloud of suspicion hung over Strughold. Ralph Blumenthal wrote a follow-up article in the *New York Times,* in November of 1974, describing the freezing experiments in detail. “Victims were forced to remain naked outdoors or in tanks of ice water. Tests were made periodically as they were freezing to death… the victims suffered agonizing deaths, after which they were dissected for data.” INS director Leonard Chapman made inquiries with the U.S. Air Force and was told that there was “no derogatory information” on Strughold. The case was closed, yet again.

Now more than ever Strughold felt the need to promote the fiction that he was anti-Nazi. In an air force oral history interview that took place two days after Blumenthal’s piece ran in the *New York Times,* Strughold told interviewer James C. Hasdorff that during the war he constantly feared for his life. He said that he had been written up on Hitler’s “so-called enemy list.” Strughold insisted that at one point, shortly after the attempted assassination of Hitler by Count Claus von Stauffenberg, in July 1944, he, Strughold, had to go into hiding because he was receiving death threats—that he went from farmhouse to farmhouse until it was finally “safe to return to Berlin.” This was an absurd distortion of reality. In the months after the Stauffenberg incident, in the winter of 1945, Hubertus Strughold had been promoted to full colonel in the Luftwaffe reserves.

Three years passed. The spotlight moved away. In a ceremony on January 19, 1977, a bronze plaque bearing a portrait of Dr. Hubertus Strughold was unveiled in San Antonio, Texas, in the foyer at the Aeromedical Library at the School of Aerospace Medicine. The library, which was the largest medical library in the U.S. Air Force, was being dedicated to Dr. Hubertus Strughold, the Father of Space Medicine. The air force promised that Strughold's bronze plaque "will be permanently displayed in the foyer of the library." But permanence is impossible to predict. Only time tells what lasts.

CHAPTER TWENTY-TWO

Legacy

In the 1960s, what Operation Paperclip left behind in the country it recruited from reveals contradictory truths about the program's legacy. A watershed event occurred in 1963 when the West German courts opened the Frankfurt Auschwitz trial. This was the first large-scale public trial of Holocaust perpetrators to take place inside Germany. There had been one Auschwitz trial previously, in Cracow, Poland, in 1947, in which a number of camp functionaries were tried, including Auschwitz commandant Rudolf Höss, who was sentenced to death and hanged. But before the Frankfurt Auschwitz trial, which ran through 1965, Germany had not conducted any major war crimes trials of its own. The Nuremberg trials, of course, were presided over by the Allied forces. At the Frankfurt Auschwitz trial, 360 witnesses from 19 countries, including 211 Auschwitz survivors, would confront the accused. The judges hearing the case were all Germans.

Throughout the 1950s, Germany's political and legal elite had opposed holding these kinds of trials for a variety of reasons, but mostly because it would likely generate additional trials. Just as it behooved U.S. military intelligence to keep the details of Operation Paperclip a secret, so it went for many German jurists. Thousand of their fellow citizens had committed heinous crimes during the war and were now living perfectly normal and sometimes very productive lives.

But in 1963, with the trial under way, for the first time since 1945 people in Germany were openly talking about gas chambers, death camps, and the Holocaust. "The trial was triggered by a letter I received," recalled Hermann Langbein, the secretary of the International Auschwitz Committee. "It was mailed to me by an Auschwitz survivor. A German [named] Rögner." At Auschwitz, where both Langbein and Rögner had been prisoners, the SS guards had made Rögner a kapo—someone who supervised slave laborers. “He was a kapo in an electrical detail,” explained Langbein, “a decent kapo. There were some decent kapos there [at Auschwitz].”

In Rögner’s letter to Langbein he wrote, “I know where Boger is.”

Boger was a loaded name to anyone who had survived Auschwitz. Survivors knew Boger as the Tiger of Auschwitz. Wilhelm Boger was a man of indisputable evil. Witnesses watched him murder children on the train ramps with his own hands. In Rögner’s letter to Langbein, he said that he’d filed murder charges against Boger with the German authorities in Stuttgart. In the spring of 1958, in his capacity as the secretary of the International Auschwitz Committee, Hermann Langbein followed up on Rögner’s tip and discovered that Boger was working as an accountant in a town outside Stuttgart. There, the Tiger of Auschwitz lived with his wife and children as a family man. “Bringing the man to justice was one long obstacle course,” said Hermann Langbein. But finally, after several months of delays, Boger was arrested.

There were twenty-two codefendants in the Frankfurt Auschwitz trial. With the exception of Richard Baer, the last commandant of Auschwitz, all of the former Auschwitz functionaries had been leading normal lives using their own names. Commandant Baer had been living as a groundskeeper on an estate near Hamburg under the alias Karl Neumann. Auschwitz adjunct Robert Mulka was working as a merchant in Hamburg; at the death camp, Mulka had served as Rudolph Höss’s right-hand man. Josef Klehr was living in Braunschweig, working at an auto body shop called Büssing & Sons; Klehr had been a medical orderly at Auschwitz and had killed thousands with lethal injections to the heart. Oswald Kaduk was living in Berlin working in a nursing home; at Auschwitz Kaduk beat people to death with his boot. SS pharmacist Dr. Victor Capesius was living in Göppingen, a wealthy pharmacy and beauty shop owner; at Auschwitz, Capesius had assisted the notorious Dr. Mengele in selecting individuals for medical experiments and had managed the death camp’s supply of Zyklon B. With the actions of all these men under scrutiny at the Frankfurt Auschwitz trial, Germany faced its past through the lens of its own jurists, not American judges. Many young Germans paid attention and began to wonder how so many war criminals could have gotten away with so many war crimes for so long.

More important to the Operation Paperclip legacy is that when Rögner filed his civil suit, he named another name: Dr. Otto Ambros. Ambros was listed as a criminal in Rögner's complaint because he had been general manager of IG Farben's Buna factory at Auschwitz. German prosecutors looked into the Ambros case and saw that Ambros had already been tried and convicted of war crimes at Nuremberg and that he had served two years and five and a half months in Landsberg Prison. They decided not to press charges against him a second time. In December 1963, however, Ambros was called to testify at the trial, which was held in the Römer, Frankfurt's town hall. This brought Ambros into the limelight once again.

By 1964, Ambros had been a free man for thirteen years. He was an extremely wealthy, successful businessman. He socialized in Berlin among captains of industry and the professional elite. When the Frankfurt Auschwitz trial started, he was a board member of numerous major corporations in Germany, including AEG (Allgemeine Elekrizitats Gesellschaft), Germany's General Electric; Hibernia Mining Company; and SKW (Süddeutsche Kalkstickstoff-Werke AG), a chemical company. On the witness stand at the Frankfurt Auschwitz trial, Ambros gave testimony that contradicted statements he had made during his own trial at Nuremberg in 1947. He also said that the conditions at the Auschwitz Buna factory had been "cozy," and that the workers had enjoyed "good hospitality," which many Auschwitz survivors found appalling in its offensiveness. While contradictory statements might have gone unnoticed by Frankfurt's judges and jurors, there were a number of high-profile Israeli journalists in the courtroom who had become experts on the subject and caught Ambros's lies. These journalists began at once to investigate Otto Ambros's post-Nuremberg life. Here was a man who had been convicted of slavery and mass murder and had served very little time, considering the crimes. The Farben slaves at Auschwitz numbered sixty thousand, approximately thirty thousand of whom had been worked to death.

The journalists covering the trial were outraged by what they discovered. Otto Ambros now sat on the board of directors of numerous private corporations, but he was also on the board of directors of five companies that were owned by the Federal Republic of Germany. The exorbitant fees Ambros commanded in these positions were being paid by the German taxpayer. An Israeli female journalist, identified in Bundesarchiv documents only as "Frau Deutschkren," became so incensed by the arrogance and hubris she saw in Otto Ambros's postwar life that she wrote a letter to the state minister of finance, Ludger Westrick. That the Federal Republic of Germany was paying a "consulting fee" of 12,000 deutschmarks—about $120,000 in today's dollars—to a convicted war criminal was shameful, Frau Deutschkren said. She demanded that Finance Minister Ludger Westrick meet with her. He agreed.

Frau Deutschkren could not have known that Otto Ambros and Finance Minister Ludger Westrick were business colleagues and apparently on very friendly terms, as state archive correspondence reveals. After the meeting, Westrick promised to look into the matter. Instead, he told Ambros what was going on. In an effort to hold on to his lucrative and prestigious positions on company boards, Ambros produced a summary of the allegations against himself and his Nuremberg codefendants, written by his attorney, a Mr. Duvall. Ambros asked Finance Minister Westrick to circulate this apologia around the various boards on his behalf. "As a short summary of our case [shows] you will clearly find out we are innocent," Ambros explained, referring to charges of slavery and genocide that he and his Farben colleagues were convicted of at Nuremberg. "I and my colleagues are the victims of the Third Reich," Ambros insisted. "The former government utilized the success of synthetic rubber which they used to make a profit. If there had been anything against me, then I would have never been released by the American military." U.S. High Commissioner John J. McCloy had granted Ambros clemency under intense political pressure, a fact now being used by Ambros to suggest that he had been wrongly convicted at Nuremberg.

In a letter dated April 25, 1964, Ambros reminded Finance Minister Westrick that after he had been released from Landsberg Prison in 1951, "You helped me get back on the boards." For this, Ambros said he was grateful. "I see it as an honor and a duty to [remain] there. I do this for pure altruistic reasons. I appreciate anything you can do." In turn, Finance Minister Westrick wrote letters to the various boards on Ambros's behalf. "Ambros was chosen for the board because of exceptional talent," Westrick said. "In his field he is as wanted as Wernher von Braun. Everyone wants him. He can get a job anywhere he wants, anywhere in the world."

The Israeli journalists refused to let up on Otto Ambros. They continued to write news stories about him, making it increasingly difficult for both the Federal Republic of Germany and the publicly traded companies on whose boards Ambros sat to maintain business associations with him. “Former War Criminal Found Refuge in Switzerland,” read a headline on June 6, 1964. The story detailed time that Ambros spent in the Swiss village of Pura. Ambros, furious, submitted a “statement of facts” to Labor Ministry state secretary, Ludwig Kattenstroth, in response. “I did not hide myself in Pura,” Ambros wrote. “It is my holiday home. And I have to say that when I bought the parcel there [in 1956] I informed the Swiss government by handing over the judgment at Nuremberg. I am only there for holidays… my children go there, and my friends. After consulting with my lawyer, I will never go back.” Then came the blaming. “The whole affair,” wrote Ambros, “has to be seen in the shadow of the Frankfurt trial. A certain faction of the press is trying to blame me.” The subtext was that “the Jews” were trying to blame him.

In late summer of 1964, AEG’s board members met and decided that they could no longer retain convicted war criminal Otto Ambros. Ambros then also quietly left at least two of the five taxpayer-funded consulting positions he held on Federal Republic of Germany boards.

In separate letters to Finance Minister Ludger Westrick and Deputy Finance Minister Dr. Dollinger, a new secret was revealed, though Ambros promised not to make public a piece of the information they shared. “Concerning the firms abroad where I am a permanent co-worker advisor,” Ambros wrote, “I won’t name them [publicly] because I don’t want to tip off any journalists who might cause trouble with my friends. You know about W. R. Grace in New York… and I hope I can stay with Hibernia Company. Concerning the firms in Israel,” Ambros wrote, “stating their names publicly would be very embarrassing because they are [run by] very public, well-respected persons in public positions that have actually been at my home and are aware of my position, how I behaved during the Reich, and they accept this.”

The “well-respected” public figures in Israel to whom Ambros referred have never been revealed. That Ambros also had worked for the American company W. R. Grace would take decades to come to light. When it did, in the early 1980s, the public would also learn that Otto Ambros worked as a consultant for the U.S. Department of Energy, formerly the Atomic Energy Commission, “to develop and operate a plant for the hydrogenation of coal in a scale of 4 million tons/year at the former IG Farben industrie.” That a convicted war criminal had been hired by the Department of Energy sparked indignation, and congressmen and journalists sought further details about Ambros's U.S. government contract. In a statement to the press, the Department of Energy insisted that the paperwork had been lost.

The scandal was brought to the attention of President Ronald Reagan. Letters on White House stationery reveal that Deputy National Security Adviser James W. Nance briefed Reagan about how it was that the U.S. government could have hired Otto Ambros. Nance's argument to the president was that many others hired him. "Dr. Ambros had contacts with numerous officials from Allied countries," wrote Nance. "Dr. Ambros was a consultant to companies such as Distillers Limited of England; Pechiney, the French chemical giant; and Dow Europe of Switzerland. He was also the chairman of Knoll, a pharmaceutical subsidiary of the well known chemical corporation BASF." President Reagan requested further information from the Department of Energy on its Ambros contract. Nance told the president, "The DOE and/or ERDA [The Energy Research and Development Administration] do not have records that would answer the questions you asked in the detail you requested. However, with Dr. Ambros' involvement in the company shown and his special knowledge in hydrogenation of coal, we know there were productive contacts between Dr. Ambros and U.S. energy officials." Even the president of the United States could not get complete information about an Operation Paperclip legacy.

In the midst of the scandal, a reporter for the *San Francisco Chronicle* telephoned Ambros at his home in Mannheim, Germany, and asked Ambros about his 1948 conviction at Nuremberg for mass murder and slavery.

"This happened a very long time ago," Ambros told the reporter. "It involved Jews. We do not think about it anymore."

The third act of Dr. Kurt Blome's life contradicts the idea that the Soviets were desperately trying to hire Hitler's former biological weapons maker. In February 1962, a group of Communist physicians from Karl Marx University, in Leipzig, East Germany, sent an open letter "to all the doctors and dentists living in Dortmund," as well as many widely distributed newspapers "regarding the matter of the Dortmund physician, Dr. Kurt Blome." The letter listed the war crimes Blome had been accused of at the Nuremberg doctors' trial and stated that everyone in the town of Dortmund should "know who he is and what he did to the Jewish people." The Leipzig doctors identified the doctor in Dortmund as “the Deputy Surgeon General of the Third Reich.” They wrote that Western German medical colleagues should distance themselves “from this man who dares to call himself a doctor.” Blome was contacted by the East German radio station, Radio Berlin International, for comment. He agreed, and an interview was arranged for February 22, 1962.

“I have read the two pages you have presented to me,” Blome told his interviewer on the appointed day. “During the war I got the task to prepare a serum, a vaccine, against a bacterial plague. This all started because [Major General] Dr. Schreiber told a lie. Schreiber is a pawn of the Russians. It’s a sworn lie.” Blome spent the rest of his radio time blaming Schreiber for his own misfortunes. He ended by pointing out his innocence; Blome reminded the radio announcer that he had endured a ten-month trial at Nuremberg. “I was acquitted on every point that there was,” Blome said. “The U.S. judges were not easy. They handed out seven death penalties and five lifelong imprisonments. If I had been guilty, they would have convicted me.”

The allegations opened a subsequent investigation into Blome. Two weeks later, on April 4, 1962, the state’s attorney in Dortmund wrote to the Central Office of the State Justice Administration for the Investigation of National Socialist Crimes to see if there was anything on Dr. Kurt Blome. The state’s attorney put together a dossier on Blome, with most of the focus on a letter Blome had written on November 18, 1942, to Reich Governor (Reichsstatthalter) Arthur Karl Greiser, mayor of a Polish area near Posen and subsequently executed for war crimes. The subject matter was *Sonderbehandlung*, or “special treatment,” of Poles with tuberculosis. By now, in 1962, it had been established that *Sonderbehandlung* was a Nazi euphemism for extermination. In this 1942 correspondence, Blome and Greiser agreed that the best way to deal with this group of tubercular Poles being discussed was to give them “special treatment.” But Blome also raises “a problem” that had to be dealt with—namely, that if these tubercular Poles were to be exterminated, “[t]he general perception by relatives would be that something unorthodox is going on.” Blome reminds Reich Governor Greiser that the group they are proposing special treatment for totals approximately thirty-five thousand people.

Blome was called in to an interview with the state’s attorney. “I am aware that there is an investigation,” Blome said. “My position is that this has already been investigated by the Americans.” Dr. Blome then made the same argument he had used at Nuremberg as a defendant in the doctors' trial: that he may have recommended the extermination of thirty-five thousand Poles as a course of action, but that there was no proof that that action ever took place. Intent, Blome maintained, is not a crime. "Furthermore," Blome told investigators, "I want to add that I put the blame on [Major General Dr. Walter] Schreiber based on what I learned at the trial." Blome said that Dr. Schreiber was the true murderer and that he had framed Dr. Blome to deflect the guilt away from himself. After several days of consideration, on May 21, 1962, the state's attorney placed the investigation of Dr. Blome on hold. Blome continued to practice medicine in Dortmund and the case against him was never reopened. Three years later, Blome was dead. "He died of emphysema," says his son, who also reports that, by the time of his father's death, Dr. Kurt Blome was alone and estranged from the world.

Albert Speer served all twenty years of his sentence at Spandau Prison outside Berlin, despite the efforts by John J. McCloy, as U.S. High Commissioner for Germany, to get Speer released earlier. In 1956 McCloy wrote to Speer's wife, Margarete, "I have a very strong conviction that your husband should be released and would be very happy if I could do anything to expedite such a release."

In prison Speer secretly worked on the memoirs he would publish upon his release. On pieces of toilet paper, cigarette wrappers, and paper scraps he jotted down recollections of his days working alongside Hitler and the inner circle. It was illegal to write and send unscreened notes out of Spandau, so Speer had his writing smuggled out by two sympathetic Dutch Red Cross nurses. The notes were delivered to Speer's old friend and colleague Rudolf Wolters, a diehard Hitler loyalist living in Berlin. Over the course of twenty years Wolters painstakingly typed up tens of thousands of these individual paper scraps that Speer continued to send to him. After twenty years they amounted to a thousand-page manuscript, which Wolters turned over to Speer upon Speer's release. With the advance payments Speer received on his memoirs—he would write two, *Inside the Third Reich* and *Spandau: The Secret Diaries*—Speer became a wealthy man once again. He earned a reported 680,000 deutschmarks from *Die Welt* for serialization rights, and a reported $350,000 (roughly $2.4 million in 2013) advance for English-language book rights. Albert Speer bought a sports car and embarked on a new life as a successful author.

He never thanked or acknowledged Rudolf Wolters for his twenty years of work, at least not in his book and not publicly. A decade later, Speer defended this decision to his biographer, Gitta Sereny, saying "[I]t was for [Wolters's] own protection." Wolters's son reported that when Wolters died, the last word he uttered was "Speer."

After Speer sent Wernher von Braun a copy of *Spandau*, von Braun wrote a letter to his old friend and former boss at the Reich's Ministry of Armaments and War Production, pointing out how divergent their lives had been over the past twenty years. While Speer had been at Spandau Prison, von Braun's star had risen steadily. He thanked Speer for the book. "How often I thought of you during those last twenty long years when so much was happening in my life," wrote von Braun.

When Siegfried Knemeyer learned that Albert Speer was out of prison, Knemeyer took a trip to visit his old friend in Germany. The last time the two men had seen each other was in Berlin in April 1945, when Knemeyer was helping Speer plot his escape to Greenland. In the years that Speer had been in prison, Knemeyer had been working for the United States—formerly the sworn enemy of both men. As an employee of the U.S. Air Force in the 1940s, 1950s, 1960s, and 1970s, Knemeyer worked on classified and unclassified projects, won awards, and rose up through the ranks. For the air force, he established the Pilot Factors Program, which coordinated technologies as aircraft went from subsonic to supersonic flight. Upon his retirement in 1977, Pentagon officials awarded Knemeyer their highest civilian award, the Distinguished Civilian Service Award. Knemeyer died of emphysema two years later, on April 11, 1979. His last wish was that his body be "immediately taken to a crematory" and that no funeral be held. "He served his native country, Germany, and his adopted country, America, with equal enthusiasm and dedication," said his son Sigurd Knemeyer.

To the end, Albert Speer denied that he had direct knowledge of the Holocaust. Sixty-seven years after interviewing Speer at the Ashcan interrogation facility in Luxembourg, John Dolibois still takes umbrage at this. "I asked [Speer] if he was at the Wannsee Conference at which Himmler announced the 'Final Solution' for eradicating Jews," Dolibois explains. "In my opinion, anyone who was at that meeting could not say he knew nothing about extermination camps—like Auschwitz, Sobibor, Birkenau. Speer first denied being at Wannsee, then admitted [to me] he was there, but left before lunch and missed the important announcements. Others also asserted [Speer] was not telling the truth. I think he should have been hanged.”

Albert Speer died in a London hotel room in 1981. He was in town doing an interview for the BBC. “One seldom recognizes when the Devil puts his hand on your shoulder,” Albert Speer told James P. O’Donnell in a *New York Times Magazine* interview shortly after his release from Spandau. He was referring to Hitler but might have been talking about himself.

CHAPTER TWENTY-THREE

What Lasts?

In the 1970s, several events led to a major shift in the American public's perception of the Holocaust, Nazis, and the United States. A series of congressional oversight hearings were convened as a result of many high-profile cases of Nazi war criminals found living in America. The hearings drew attention to the fact that the Immigration and Naturalization Service had been negligent in its investigations of these individuals and in turn led to the creation of the Justice Department's Office of Special Investigations. Then came the 1978 broadcast of NBC's four-part miniseries *Holocaust*, which broke records for family viewing and made Americans who had never contemplated the Holocaust think seriously about what had happened in Nazi Germany and what the state-sponsored murder of six million people really meant. These events set the stage for a simple, fortuitous occurrence for a young Harvard law student named Eli Rosenbaum, the consequences of which would profoundly impact the Paperclip scientists who had something to hide.

In 1980, Eli Rosenbaum was perusing book titles inside a Cambridge bookstore when he came across *Dora: The Nazi Concentration Camp Where Modern Space Technology Was Born and 30,000 Prisoners Died*, written by a former Dora prisoner, the French Resistance fighter Jean Michel. The narrative is detailed and revelatory in its brutal honesty. Jean Michel called his book an homage to the thirty thousand slave laborers who died building the V-2s. He comments on the memoirs written by Wernher von Braun and General Dornberger, and the countless interviews given by many of the other V-2 scientists who worked under Operation Paperclip. None of these Germans, notes Michel, utters a word about Nordhausen.

"I do not reproach these men with not having made public confessions after the war," Michel writes. "I do not hold it against the scientists that they did not choose to be martyrs when they discovered the truth about the [death] camps. No, mine is a more modest objective. I make my stand solely against the monstrous distortion of history which, in silencing certain facts and glorifying others, has given birth to false, foul and suspect myths."

In that same Cambridge bookstore, on that same day, Eli Rosenbaum came across a second book about the V-2 rocket. This one was called *The Rocket Team* and was written by Frederick I. Ordway III and Mitchell R. Sharpe, with an introduction by Wernher von Braun. The book discusses and quotes the German scientists involved in the U.S. rocket program. In one part of the book, engineer Arthur Rudolph—praised as the developer of NASA's Saturn V rocket program—shares his thoughts with the authors. Rudolph is not identified as having once been operations director at the Mittelwerk slave labor facility.

Rudolph relates an anecdote from the war, concerning his dismay at being called away from a New Year's Eve party in 1943–44 because of a problem with some of the V-2 rockets. An accompanying photograph shows a POW in striped prisoner pajamas moving rocket parts. Eli Rosenbaum had spent the previous summer working for the Department of Justice in its Office of Special Investigations. He knew that the Geneva Convention forbade nations from forcing prisoners of war to work on munitions. He had also just read about what went on in the Nordhausen tunnels in Jean Michel's book *Dora*. Rosenbaum later recalled that he "was particularly offended by Rudolph's taking umbrage at missing a gala party while slave laborers toiled." The following year, after graduating from Harvard Law School, Rosenbaum started full-time work at the Department of Justice as a trial lawyer. He persuaded his boss, Neal M. Sher, to open an investigation into Arthur Rudolph.

In September of 1982, Marianne Rudolph, the daughter of Arthur Rudolph, received an unexpected telephone call at her home in San Jose, California. It was the Department of Justice calling. They explained that they had been trying to reach her father, Arthur Rudolph, who apparently lived nearby, but that they had been unable to do so. Marianne Rudolph, who worked as an artist for NASA, told the caller that her parents were vacationing in Germany and would be back at the end of the month.

The day after the Rudolphs returned, Arthur Rudolph received a registered letter in the mail from the Department of Justice, Office of Special Investigations. The letter stated that questions had been raised regarding Arthur Rudolph's activities during the Second World War. Rudolph was asked to meet with DOJ officials at the San Jose Hyatt on October 13 and to bring any documents with him that he owned covering the period between 1933 and 1945. During this first meeting, which included Arthur Rudolph, OSI director Allan A. Ryan Jr., Deputy Director Neal M. Sher, and trial attorney Eli Rosenbaum, the interview lasted five hours. There were two central questions the lawyers wanted answered: Owing to what set of principles had Rudolph decided to join the Nazi Party, which he did in 1933, and what exactly did he know about the Nordhausen executions, specifically about the prisoners who had been hanged from a crane? DOJ lawyers Allen, Sher, and Rosenbaum had documents with them including the previously sealed testimony from the 1947 Dora-Nordhausen trial. These documents included pretrial investigative material regarding former Paperclip specialist Georg Rickhey. Among the documents was the interview that Rudolph gave, on June 2, 1947, to Major Eugene Smith of the U.S. Army Air Force. In that testimony, Rudolph had first said that he never saw any prisoners beaten or hanged. Later in the interview with Major Smith, Rudolph changed his story to say that he had been forced to watch the hangings but had nothing to do with them.

During the San Jose Hyatt interview in 1982, the three Justice Department lawyers presented Rudolph with the drawing made by his former Nordhausen colleagues from Fort Bliss, the rocket engineers Günther Haukohl, Rudolph Schlidt, Hans Palaoro, and Erich Ball. This drawing illustrated the layout inside the tunnels and had been used as evidence in the Dora-Nordhausen trial. The Justice Department lawyers pointed out to Rudolph that there was a clear dotted line, labeled "Path of Overhead Crane Trolly [*sic*] On Which Men Were Hung." The dotted line ran right by Rudolph's office, which suggested that it would have been impossible for Rudolph not to have seen the hangings. The lawyers asked why he had lied. They also asked Rudolph about testimony from the 1947 Dora-Nordhausen trial that revealed that, at the Mittelwerk tunnel complex, he received daily "prisoner strength reports which showed the number of prisoners available for work, the number of ‘new arrivals,’ and the number of people lost through sickness or death.’ ” They said that, clearly, Rudolph knew people were being worked to death and were being replaced by fresh bodies from the Dora-Nordhausen concentration camp.

Back in Washington, D.C., the Justice Department put together its case. Four months later, on February 4, 1983, a second meeting took place at the San Jose Hyatt, and, shortly thereafter, Rudolph received a letter from the Justice Department in the mail. “Certain preliminary decisions have now been made,” wrote Neal Sher. “I would be prepared to discuss these decisions, as well as the evidence amassed to date, with an attorney authorized to represent your interest.”

The government stated intentions to pursue its case against Arthur Rudolph “showing that Mr. Rudolph enforced the slave labor system at Mittelbau [Mittelwerk] and aided in the transmission of sabotage reports to the SS.” Arthur Rudolph had two choices, the Justice Department said. He could hire a lawyer and prepare to stand trial, or, alternatively, he could renounce his U.S. citizenship and leave the country at once.

Thirty-eight years after coming to America as part of Operation Paperclip, Arthur Rudolph left the United States, on March 27, 1984. Neal Sher met Arthur Rudolph at the San Francisco International Airport and made sure he got on the airplane.

It was another seven months before the Justice Department made public that Arthur Rudolph had renounced his citizenship so as to avoid facing a war crimes trial. When asked to comment, Eli Rosenbaum said that Arthur Rudolph had contributed to “the death of thousands of slave laborers.” But Rosenbaum also said that it was Rudolph’s “almost unbelievable callousness and disregard [for] human life” that surprised him most. The story became front-page news around the world.

Some individuals affiliated with NASA and other rocket-related government programs remained staunch supporters of Arthur Rudolph, calling the Justice Department’s actions against him a “witchhunt.” One of Rudolph’s leading proponents, Hugh McInnish, an engineer with the U.S. Army Strategic Defense Command, helped promote the idea that Rudolph, Dornberger, and von Braun had all confronted members of the SS during the war and had tried to get better working conditions for the slave laborers. “Their defenders’ assertions must be regarded with the greatest skepticism, especially as there is not a single document to back them up,” says Michael

J. Neufeld. “There is little doubt in my mind that Rudolph was deeply implicated.” The Rudolph exposé triggered keen interest in how it was that Arthur Rudolph came to America in the first place. This was a turning point in Operation Paperclip’s secret history.

There is a broad misconception in America that there exists some kind of automatic declassification system that requires the government to reveal its secret programs after thirty or fifty years. In reality, the most damaging programs often remain classified for as long as they can be kept secret. The Freedom of Information Act, signed into law by President Lyndon Johnson, allows for the full or partial disclosure of some documents, but a request must be initiated by an individual or a group and is by no means a guarantee that information will be obtained. After the Arthur Rudolph story broke, journalist Linda Hunt began reporting on Operation Paperclip for CNN and the *Bulletin of the Atomic Scientists*. She filed FOIA requests with the different military organizations and intelligence agencies involved and received varied responses. “I obtained six thousand Edgewood Arsenal documents in 1987 but it took more than a year, two attorneys and a threatened lawsuit to get the records [released],” says Hunt. When she arrived at the Washington National Records Center in the late 1980s to inspect the documents, she was told that Edgewood’s own historian had checked out seven of the boxes and that another twelve were missing. The army later agreed to look for the missing records and sent her a bill for $239,680 in so-called search fees (the equivalent of $500,000 in 2013). Eventually Linda Hunt was granted access to the documents, and in the early 1990s she published a book that unveiled many of Operation Paperclip’s seemingly impenetrable secrets. It was now no longer possible for the government to uphold the myth that Paperclip was a program peopled solely by benign German scientists, nominal Nazis, and moral men.

As if pushing back against the Office of Special Investigations, just a few months after Arthur Rudolph was expelled from the United States, the Texas Senate passed a resolution declaring that June 15 was Dr. Hubertus Strughold Day. Then Ohio State University’s medical college unveiled a portrait of Strughold on its mural of medical heroes. But the attempts by one organization to perpetrate a false myth can serve as a great motivator for another organization, and to this end the World Jewish Congress discovered and released information on Dr. Strughold that army intelligence had managed to keep classified for nearly fifty years. The *New York Times* verified that Dr. Strughold had been listed as among those being sought on the 1945 Central Registry of War Criminals and Security Suspects, or CROWCASS, list. Strughold's portrait was removed from the Ohio State mural, where he appeared, ironically, alongside Hippocrates.

Citizens who were offended by the Strughold library at the Brooks Air Force Base asked the air force when Strughold's name was going to be removed from the U.S. government building. Library spokesman Larry Farlow told the Associated Press that there were no plans to remove the name from the Strughold Aeromedical Library. But growing pressure from the public forced the air force to reconsider its position. In 1995 General Ronald R. Fogleman, chief of staff of the Department of the Air Force, issued a terse statement stating that after reviewing Nazi-era documents, "the evidence of Dr. Strughold's wartime activities is sufficient to cause concern about retaining his name in an honored place on the library." The sign was removed from the building's exterior brick walls, and the Strughold bronze portrait was taken down. The permanence of the honor had come to an end. Strughold died the following year, at the age of eighty-eight. The Justice Department had been preparing a Nazi war criminal case against Strughold in his final years.

What does last? The desire to seek the truth? Or, in the words of Jean Michel, the ability to take a stand against "the monstrous distortion of history" when it gives birth to "false, foul and suspect myths"? In 1998, Congress passed the Nazi War Crimes Disclosure Act, which required various U.S. government agencies to identify and release federal records relating to Nazi war criminals that had been kept classified for decades. In accordance with the act, President Clinton established an Interagency Working Group—made up of federal agency representatives and members of the public—to oversee the interpretation of over eight million pages of U.S. government records and report its findings to Congress. The documentation revealed a vast web of profitable relationships between hundreds of Nazi war criminals and U.S. military and intelligence agencies.

In 2005, in a final report to Congress, *U.S. Intelligence and the Nazis,* the Interagency Working Group determined that "[t]he notion that they [the U.S. military and the CIA] employed only a few 'bad apples' will not stand up to the new documentation." In hindsight, wrote the Interagency Working

Group, the government's use of Nazis was a very bad idea, and "there was no compelling reason to begin the postwar era with the assistance of some of those associated with the worst crimes of the war." And yet history now shows us that that is exactly what the American government did—and continued to do throughout the Cold War.

In the decades since Operation Paperclip ended, new facts continue to come to light. In 2008, previously unreported information about Otto Ambros emerged, serving as a reminder that the story of what lies hidden behind America's Nazi scientist program is not complete.

A group of medical doctors and researchers in England, working on behalf of an organization called the Thalidomide Trust, believe they have tied the wartime work of IG Farben and Otto Ambros to the thalidomide tragedy of the late 1950s and early 1960s. After Ambros was released from Landsberg Prison, he worked as an economic consultant to German chancellor Konrad Adenauer and to the industrial magnate Friedrich Flick, the richest person in Germany during the Cold War. Like Ambros, Flick had been tried and convicted at Nuremberg, then released early by John J. McCloy.

In the late 1950s, Ambros was also elected chairman of the advisory committee for a German company called Chemie Grünenthal. Grünenthal was about to market a new tranquilizer that promised pregnant women relief from morning sickness. The drug, called thalidomide, was going to be sold under the brand name Contergan. Otto Ambros served on the board of directors of Grünenthal. In the late 1950s, very few people knew that Grünenthal was a safe haven for many Nazis, including Dr. Ernst-Günther Schenck, the inspector of nutrition for the SS, and Dr. Heinz Baumkötter, an SS captain (Hauptsturmführer) and the chief concentration camp doctor in Mauthausen, Natzweiler-Struthof, and Sachsenhausen concentration camps.

Ten months before Grünenthal's public release of thalidomide, the wife of a Grünenthal employee, who took the drug to combat morning sickness, gave birth to a baby without ears. No one linked the birth defect to the drug, and thalidomide was released by the company. After several months on the market, in 1959, Grünenthal received its first reports that thalidomide caused polyneuropathy, or nerve damage, in the hands and feet of elderly people who took the drug. The drug's over-the-counter status was changed so that it now required a prescription. Still, thalidomide was marketed aggressively in forty-six countries with a label that stated it could be "given with complete safety to pregnant women and nursing mothers without any adverse effect on mother and child.” Instead, the drug resulted in more than ten thousand mothers giving birth to babies with terrible deformities, creating the most horrific pharmaceutical disaster in the history of modern medicine. Many of the children were born without ears, arms, or legs and with reptilian, flipperlike appendages in place of healthy limbs.

The origins of thalidomide were never accounted for. Grünenthal had always maintained that it lost its documents that showed where and when the first human trials were conducted on the drug. Then, in 2008, the Thalidomide Trust, in England, headed by Dr. Martin Johnson, located a group of Nazi-era documents that produced a link between thalidomide and the drugs researched and developed by IG Farben chemists during the war. Dr. Johnson points out that Grünenthal’s 1954 patents for thalidomide cryptically state that human trials had already been completed, but the company says it cannot offer that data because it was lost, ostensibly during the war. “The patents suggest that thalidomide was probably one of a number of products developed at Dyhernfurth or Auschwitz-Monowitz under the leadership of Otto Ambros in the course of nerve gas research,” Dr. Johnson says.

The Thalidomide Trust also links Paperclip scientist Richard Kuhn to the medical tragedy. “Kuhn worked with a wide range of chemicals in his nerve gas research, and in his antidote research we know he used Antergan, which we are fairly sure was a ‘sister drug’ to Contergan,” the brand name for thalidomide, Dr. Johnson explains.

In 2005, Kuhn experienced a posthumous fall from grace when the Society of German Chemists (Gesellschaft Deutscher Chemiker, GDCh) announced it would no longer award its once-prestigious Richard Kuhn Medal in his name. Nazi-era documents on Kuhn had been brought to the society’s attention, revealing that in “the spring of 1943 Kuhn asked the secretary-general of the KWS [Kaiser Wilhelm Society], Ernst Telschow, to support his search for the brains of ‘young and healthy men,’ presumably for nerve gas research.” The Society of German Chemists maintains that “the sources indicate that these brains were most likely taken from execution victims,” and that “[d]espite his scientific achievements, [Richard] Kuhn is not suitable to serve as a role model, and eponym for an important award, mainly due to his research on poison gas, but also due to his conduct towards Jewish colleagues.”

It seems that the legacy of Hitler's chemists has yet to be fully unveiled. Because so many of these German scientists were seen as assets to the U.S. Army Chemical Corps' nerve agent programs, and were thus wanted as participants in Operation Paperclip, secret deals were made, and the many documents pertaining to these arrangements were classified. President Clinton's Interagency Working Group had access to eight million pages of declassified documents, but millions more documents remain classified. In *U.S. Intelligence and the Nazis,* the Interagency Working Group's authors write that "the truest reckoning with the official past can never be complete without the full release of government records."

Part of the problem lies in identifying where records are physically located. For example, a 2012 FOIA request to the State Department, asking for the release of all files related to Otto Ambros, was denied on the grounds that no such files exist. But it is a matter of record, owing to a May 1971 news article in the *Jewish Telegraphic Agency,* that Otto Ambros traveled to the United States twice with the State Department's assistance, despite his status as a convicted war criminal. In an interview with State Department official Fred Scott, the *Jewish Telegraphic Agency* learned, "Ambros came to the United States in 1967 after the State Department recommended to the Justice Department a waiver on his eligibility, which was granted," and that in 1969, Ambros received a second visa waiver and traveled to the United States again. In the spring of 1971 Ambros was attempting to get a third visa waiver from the State Department when the *Jewish Telegraphic Agency* reported the story. According to Fred Scott, Ambros's host for his May 1971 visit was listed as the Dow Chemical Company. After the story was published, Jewish groups held protests, and Ambros allegedly canceled his trip. But none of this information is contained in Ambros's declassified U.S. Army files, FBI files, or CIA files. Otto Ambros was a convicted Nazi war criminal. In accordance with the Nazi War Crimes Disclosure Act, all files about him should have been released and declassified. But records that cannot be located cannot be declassified. Where are the Otto Ambros records hidden? And what secrets might be guarded therein?

Names and dates continue to come to light, and researchers, journalists, and historians continue to uncover new facts. Fate and circumstance also inevitably play a part. In 2010 a cache of almost three hundred documents was found in the attic of a house being renovated in the Polish town of

Oświęcim, near Auschwitz. The documents include information about several Nazi doctors and Farben chemists who worked at the death camp. "The sensational value of this discovery is the fact that these original documents, bearing the names of the main murderers from Auschwitz, were found so many years after the war," says Adam Cyra, a historian at the Auschwitz museum.

Otto Ambros lived until 1990, to the age of ninety-two. After his death, the chemical conglomerate BASF, on whose board of directors he had served, lauded him as "an expressive entrepreneurial figure of great charisma." Is the old German proverb really true? *Jedem das Seine*. Does everyone get what he deserves?

Still, as of 2013, the Space Medicine Association in America continues to bestow its prestigious Hubertus Strughold Award to a scientist or specialist for outstanding contribution to aviation medicine. It has done so every year since 1963. On December 1, 2012, the *Wall Street Journal* ran a page-one story about Dr. Strughold, presenting revelatory new information about his criminal activities during the war. German historian Prof. Hans-Walter Schmuhl had been researching another subject when he came across evidence that showed that Dr. Strughold had allowed epileptic children to be experimented on inside the high-altitude chamber at Strughold's Aviation Medical Research Institute of the Reich Air Ministry in Berlin. Rabbits had been put to the test first and had died. Next, Reich medical researchers wanted to see what would happen to young children with epilepsy subjected to those same conditions. Strughold authorized the potentially lethal tests on the children. "The head of the Institute is responsible," says Schmuhl; "using this expensive equipment, the head of an institute had to have been informed about the use." When the German Society for Air and Space Medicine learned about Schmuhl's discovery, they eliminated their prestigious Strughold Award, which had been given annually in Germany since the mid-1970s.

In America, the *Wall Street Journal* article renewed debate as to why the Space Medicine Association had not yet eliminated its Hubertus Strughold Award. Dr. Mark Campbell, a former president of the Space Medicine Association, insists the award will not go away. Campbell blames the Internet for maligning what he sees as Dr. Strughold's good character. "I was a member of a committee investigating Dr. Strughold to see if his name should be removed from the Space Medicine Association Strughold Award," says Campbell. "I was amazed to find that the facts that were uncovered were so different from the claims being made on the Internet." But most of Dr. Campbell's colleagues disagree. "Why defend him?" asks Dr. Stephen Véronneau, a research medical officer at the FAA's Civil Aerospace Medical Institute in Oklahoma City, and a member of the Space Medicine Association. "I can't find another example in the world of [an institution] honoring Dr. Strughold except my own association."

The National Space Club Florida Committee, one of three committees of the National Space Club in Washington, D.C., gives out a similarly prestigious space-related award called the Dr. Kurt H. Debus Award. This annual award is named in honor of Operation Paperclip's Kurt Debus, who became the first director of the Kennedy Space Center. Kurt Debus is the scientist who, during the war, was an enthusiastic member of the SS, wore the SS uniform to work, and turned a colleague over to the Gestapo for making anti-Nazi remarks and failing to give Debus the Nazi salute. Under Operation Paperclip, Kurt Debus worked on missiles for the army and for NASA for a total of twenty-eight years—many of which he spent alongside Arthur Rudolph and Wernher von Braun. Kurt Debus retired in 1974. In 2013, after the Strughold award debate resurfaced, I interviewed Steve Griffin, the National Space Club chairman, to determine why the organization continues to give out an award that is named after someone who was once an avowed and active Nazi.

"Simple as it is, Kurt Debus is an honored American," Griffin says. I read to Griffin information from Kurt Debus's OMGUS security report. "It is a simple matter," Griffin told me. "Kurt Debus was the first director of the Kennedy Space Center."

Unlike the Strughold award, which was created in 1963 when Strughold's foreign scientist case file was still classified, the Dr. Kurt H. Debus Award was first bestowed in 1990, after Debus's OMGUS security report had been declassified and the revelation that he was an active member of Heinrich Himmler's SS had been revealed. "It is not my purview to decide if we have an award or what it is called," Griffin says. But Griffin conceded that he has been on the board of the National Space Club since the Debus award's inception, so technically it is, and always has been, within his purview. Like so many of those involved in Operation Paperclip decades ago, Griffin looks past Debus’s former commitment to Nazi Party ideology. He only sees the scientist.

“What do you say when people ask you about Kurt Debus’s Nazi past?” I asked. “Not a single person has asked me this question in [twenty-three] years,” Griffin said.

To report this book, I filed dozens of Freedom of Information Act (FOIA) requests, some of which were honored, many of which were denied, and most of which are still pending. I came across oblique references, circa 1945, regarding a supposed list of Nazi doctors whom the Office of U.S. Chief of Counsel, U.S. Army, sought for involvement in “mercy killings,” or medical murder crimes. FOIA requests for the list turned up nothing. Then, at the Harvard Medical Library, I found a collection of papers that once belonged to Colonel Robert J. Benford, the first commander of Operation Paperclip’s aviation medicine research program at the Army Air Forces Aero Medical Center in Heidelberg. Benford, with Dr. Strughold, oversaw the work of the fifty-eight Nazi doctors at the center; both Benford and Strughold worked under Colonel Harry Armstrong. In Benford’s papers I came across a file labeled “List of Personnel Involved in Medical Research and Mercy Killings,” but the access to the file was “Restricted Until 2015.” The Harvard Medical Library informed me that the Department of Defense had classified the list and that only the DoD had the authority to declassify it. Harvard filed a FOIA request on my behalf, and the “mercy killings” list was declassified and released to me.

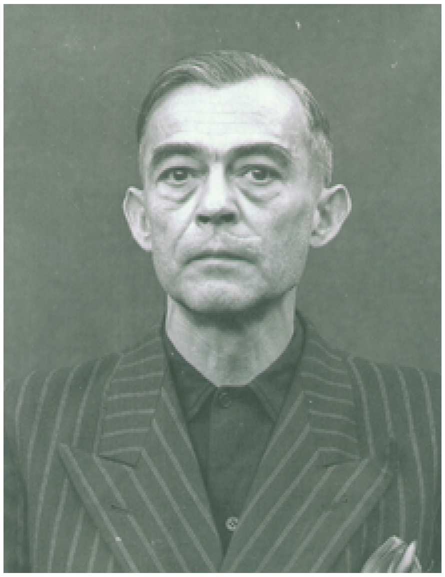
Included on this list, which had been in Colonel Benford’s possession, were seven Nazi doctors hired under Operation Paperclip: Theodor Benzinger, Kurt Blome, Konrad Schäfer, Walter Schreiber, Hermann Becker-Freyseng, Siegfried Ruff, and Oskar Schröder. The fact became instantly clear: U.S. Army intelligence knew all along that these doctors were implicated in murder yet chose to classify the list and hire the doctors for Operation Paperclip. Blome, Schäfer, Becker-Freyseng, Ruff, and Schröder were all tried at Nuremberg. Schreiber’s public outing in 1951 and his subsequent banishment from America are now on record. Dr. Theodor Benzinger seems to have slipped away from accountability.

From his *New York Times* obituary in 1999, the world learned that Dr. Theodor Benzinger, 94, invented the ear thermometer, a nominal contribution to the medical world. As for the military world, Benzinger's research work for the navy was destroyed or remains classified as of 2013. Wernher von Braun, Arthur Rudolph, Kurt Debus, and Hubertus Strughold led the American effort to get man to the moon. The question remains, despite a man's contribution to a nation or a people, how do we interpret a fundamental wrong? Is the American government at fault equally for fostering myths about its Paperclip scientists—for encouraging them to whitewash their past so that their scientific acumen could be exploited for U.S. weapons-related work? When, for a nation, should the end justify the means? These are questions that can only be answered separately, by individuals. But as facts emerge and history is clarified, the answers become more suitably informed.

In addition to the ear thermometer, Theodor Benzinger left the world with the Planck-Benzinger equation, fine-tuning the second law of thermodynamics, which states that nothing lasts. Benzinger's lifelong scientific pursuit was studying entropy—the idea that chaos rules the world and, like ice melting in a warm room, order leads to disorder.

I prefer Gerhard Maschkowski's take on what matters and what lasts. Maschkowski was the Jewish teenager fortuitously spared the gas chamber at Auschwitz because he was of use to IG Farben as a slave laborer at their Buna factory. I was interviewing Maschkowski one spring afternoon in 2012 when I asked him the question, "What matters, what lasts?" He chuckled and smiled. He pushed back the sleeve on his shirt and showed me his blue-ink Auschwitz tattoo. "This lasts," he said. "But it is also a record of [the] truth."

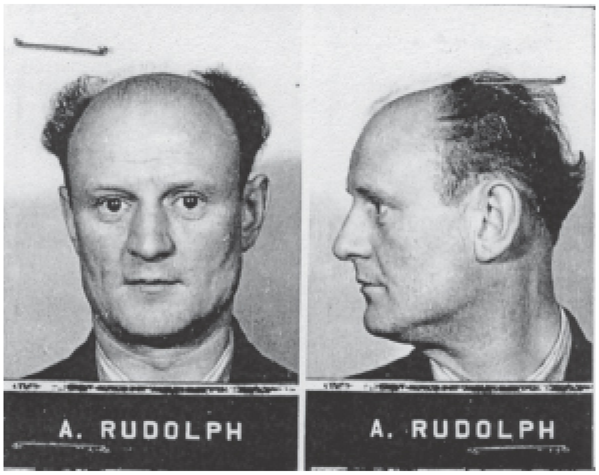
Major General Dr. Walter Schreiber was the surgeon general of the Third Reich. “The most sinister crime in which Schreiber is involved is the introduction of intravenous lethal phenol injections,” explained war crimes investigator Dr. Leopold Alexander, “as a quick and convenient means of executing troublemakers.” Paperclip contracts: U.S. Army, Camp King, Germany; U.S. Air Force, Texas. (NARA)



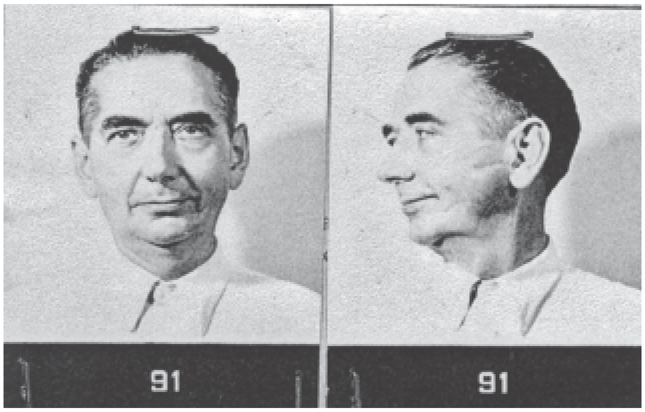
Dr. Kurt Blome was Hitler’s biological weapons maker and the deputy surgeon general of the Third Reich. He had nearly completed a bubonic plague weapon when the Red Army captured his research institute in Poland. Paperclip contract: U.S. Army, Camp King, Germany. (NARA)

Erich Traub was a virologist, microbiologist, and doctor of veterinary medicine. He weaponized rinderpest (cattle plague) at the request of Heinrich Himmler, Reichsführer-SS, traveling to Turkey to acquire a black market sample of the virus during the war. Paperclip contract: Naval Research Institute, Maryland. (NARA)

Major General Walter Dornberger was in charge of V-weapons development for the Reich. Arrested by the British and held for nearly two years on war crimes charges, Dornberger was released into U.S. custody with the warning that he was a “menace of the first order.” Paperclip contract: U.S. Army Air Forces. (NARA)



Arthur Rudolph specialized in V-weapons assembly and served as operations director at the slave labor facility in Nordhausen. In America he would become known as the Father of the Saturn Rocket. “I read *Mein Kampf* and agreed with lots of things in it,” Rudolph told journalist John Huber in 1985. “Hitler’s first six years, until the war started, were really marvelous.” Paperclip contract: U.S. Army, Texas. (NARA)



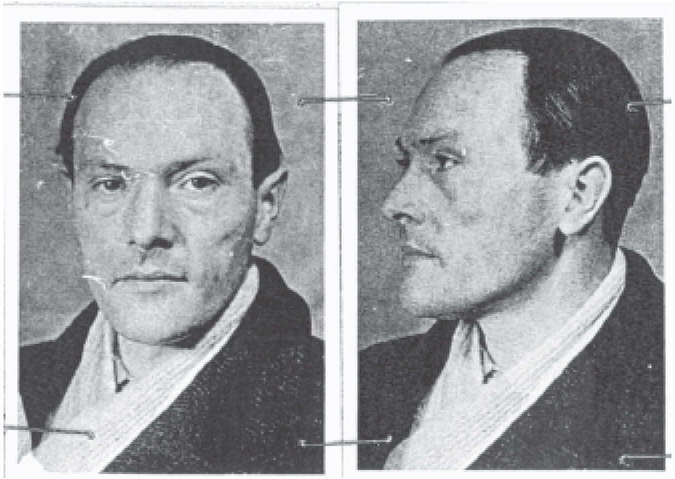
Georg Rickhey oversaw tunnel operations for Hitler’s Führerbunker headquarters in Berlin. On the V-2 program he was general manager of the slave labor facility and appeared as a defendant in the Nordhausen war crimes trial. Paperclip contract: U.S. Army Air Forces, Ohio. (NARA)

K.H. DEBUS
K.H. DEBUS

Kurt Debus was a V-weapons engineer who oversaw mobile rocket launches as well as those at Peenemünde. An ardent Nazi, he wore the SS uniform to work. In America, Debus became the first director of NASA’s John F. Kennedy Space Center in Florida. Paperclip contract: U.S. Army, Texas. (NARA)

Otto
AMBROS
WCPL 1442
Otto
AMBROS
WCPL 1442

Otto Ambros was Hitler’s most valuable chemist, codiscover of sarin gas (the “a” in sarin denotes his name), and chief of the Reich’s Committee-C for chemical warfare. The U.S. Army coveted his knowledge. Tried at Nuremberg, Ambros was convicted of mass murder and slavery, then granted clemency by High Commissioner John J. McCloy. Paperclip contracts: U.S. Department of Energy. (NARA)



Friedrich “Fritz” Hoffmann was a chemist and philosopher. When captured by Allied forces he carried a paper signed by a U.S. diplomat stating he was anti-Nazi. In America, Hoffmann synthesized Nazi nerve gas stockpiles and worked in the CIA’s assassination-by-poison program. Paperclip contract: U.S. Army Chemical Corps, Maryland. (NARA)

von KLENCK, J

Jürgen von Klenck was a chemist, SS officer, and deputy chief of the Committee-C for chemical warfare. Surprised by how much information von Klenck provided, his interrogators concluded “that a lesser secret has been admitted to deflect the investigation from a more important secret.” Paperclip contracts: U.S. Army, Heidelberg. (NARA)

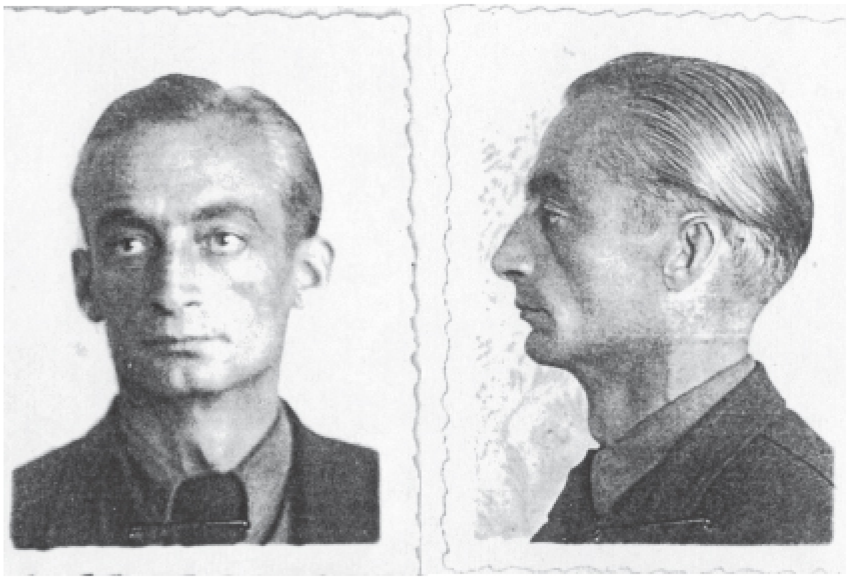
Dr. Hubertus Strughold was in charge of the Aviation Medical Research Institute of the Reich Air Ministry in Berlin. Despite being sought for war crimes, he was hired by the U.S. Army Air Forces and became America’s Father of Space Medicine. He went to great lengths to whitewash a dubious past. “Only the janitor and the man who took care of the animals,” were members of the Nazi party, he told a journalist in 1961, referring to his Institute, which was filled with hardcore Nazis. Paperclip contracts: U.S. Army Air Forces, Heidelberg; U.S. Air Force, Texas. (NARA)

Dr. Theodor Benzinger directed the Experimental Station of the Air Force Research Center, Rechlin, under Hermann Göring and was an officer with the SA (Storm Troopers). While working for the U.S. Army in Heidelberg, Benzinger was arrested, imprisoned at Nuremberg, and listed as one of the defendants in the doctors' trial. Shortly thereafter he was mysteriously released. Paperclip contracts: U.S. Army Air Forces, Heidelberg; Naval Medical Research Institute, Maryland. (NARA)

Dr. Konrad Schäfer was a physiologist and chemist who developed a wartime process to separate salt from seawater in sea emergencies. Medical experiments at the Dachau concentration camp were based on the Schäfer Process. He was tried at Nuremberg and acquitted. Paperclip contracts: U.S. Army Air Forces, Heidelberg; U.S. Air Force, Texas. (NARA)

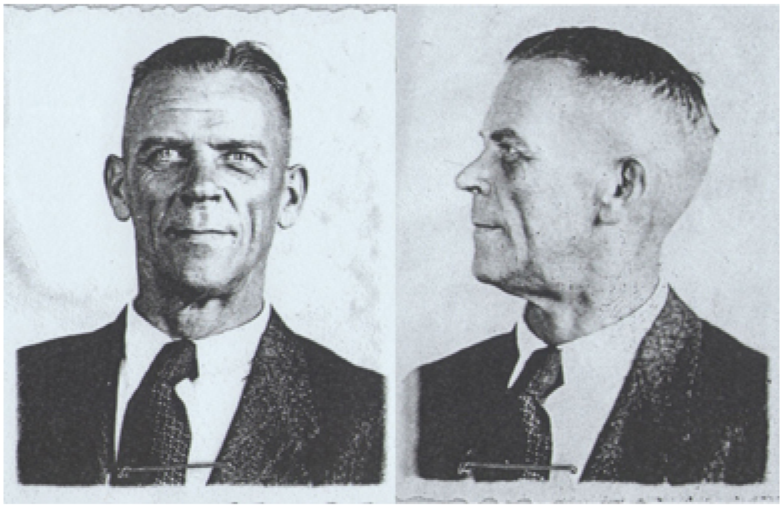
Dr. Hermann Becker-Freyseng was an aviation physiologist who worked under Dr. Strughold in Berlin and oversaw medical experiments on prisoners at Dachau. He was tried and convicted at Nuremberg, then contributed to Strughold's U.S. Army work from his prison cell. Paperclip contract: U.S. Army Air Forces, Heidelberg. (NARA)

Dr. Siegfried Ruff directed the Aero Medical Division of the German Experimental Station for Aviation Medicine in Berlin and was a close colleague and coauthor of Dr. Strughold. At Dachau, Ruff supervised medical murder experiments. Tried at Nuremberg and acquitted. Paperclip contract: U.S. Army Air Forces, Heidelberg. (NARA)



Siegfried Knemeyer was chief of German Air Force technical developments under Hermann Göring. Hailed one of the Reich's top ten pilots, Albert Speer asked Knemeyer to pilot his escape to Greenland. Paperclip contract: U.S. Army Air Forces, Ohio. (NARA)

Walther Riedel was an engineer with the V-weapons design bureau and part of the von Braun rocket team. His Army interrogator classified him as an “ardent Nazi,” but after Riedel threatened his handler that he would go work for the Russians he was hired and brought to America. Paperclip contract: U.S. Army, Texas. (NARA)



Emil Salmon, aircraft engineer and SS officer, was implicated in the burning down of a synagogue during the war. “This Command is cognizant of Mr. Salmon’s Nazi activities and certain allegations made by some of his associates in Europe,” wrote the U.S. Army Air Forces, but they found Salmon’s expertise “difficult, if not impossible, to duplicate.” Paperclip contract: U.S. Army Air Forces, Ohio.

Harry Armstrong set up the U.S. Army Air Forces Aero Medical Center in Germany and hired fifty-eight Nazi doctors to continue work they had been doing for the Reich. The Center violated the Potsdam Accord and was shut down after two years. Thirty-four Nazi doctors followed Armstrong to the U.S. Air Force School of Aviation Medicine in Texas. (U.S. Air Force)

Charles E. Loucks holding an incendiary bomb. Loucks oversaw the Paperclip scientists working on chemical weapons at Edgewood Arsenal. After being transferred to U.S. Occupied Germany, Loucks created an off-book working group on sarin production and invited Hitler's former chemists and Himmler's right-hand man to weekly roundtable discussions at his home. (Papers of Charles E. Loucks, U.S. Army Military History Institute)

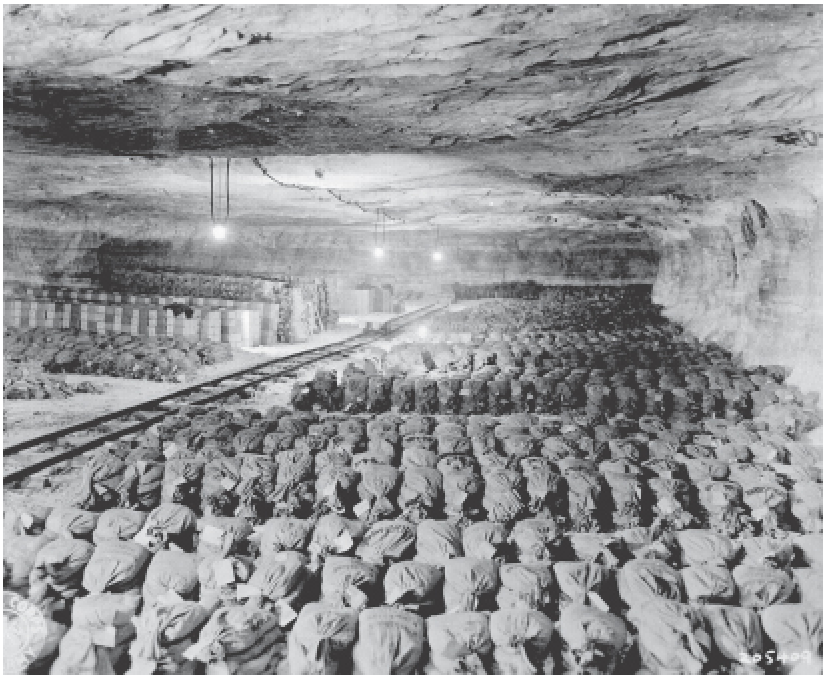
Donald L. Putt, accomplished test pilot and engineer, was one of the first wartime officers to arrive at Hermann Göring’s secret aeronautical research center at Völkenrode.

Amazed by what he saw, Putt recruited dozens of Nazi scientists and engineers for Operation Paperclip and oversaw their work at Wright Field. (U.S. Air Force)

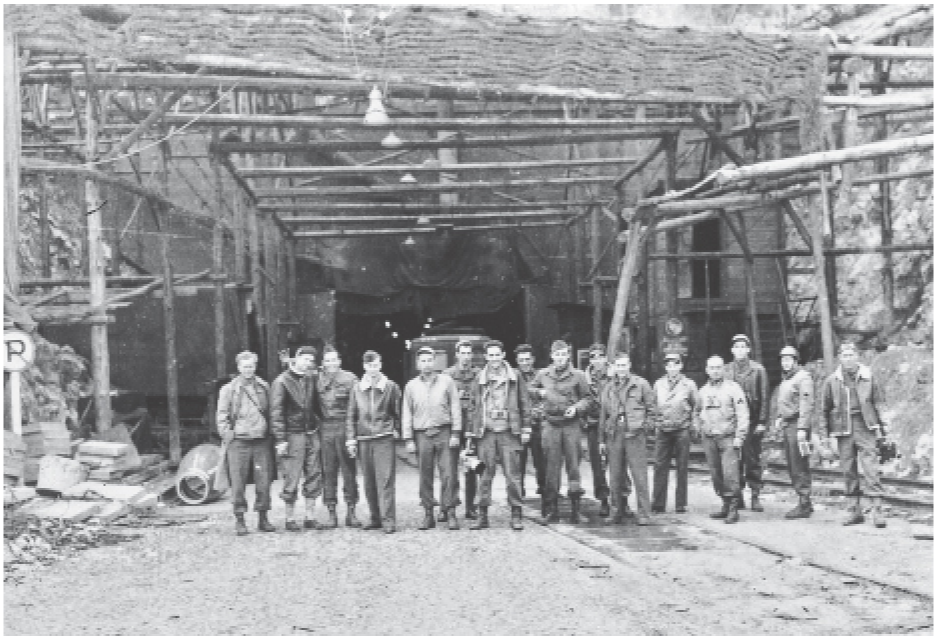
John Dolibois, a young U.S. Army officer and fluent German speaker, worked for military intelligence (G-2). He interrogated the major war criminals of the Nazi Party at the “Ashcan” internment facility in Luxembourg. (Collection of John Dolibois)

Heinrich Himmler, Reichsführer-SS, and his entourage during a tour of the Mauthausen concentration camp. Himmler's SS oversaw a vast network of state-sponsored slavery across Nazi-occupied Europe through an innocuous sounding division called the SS Business Administration Main Office. Reich slaves produced armaments, including the V-2 rocket. (USHMM)

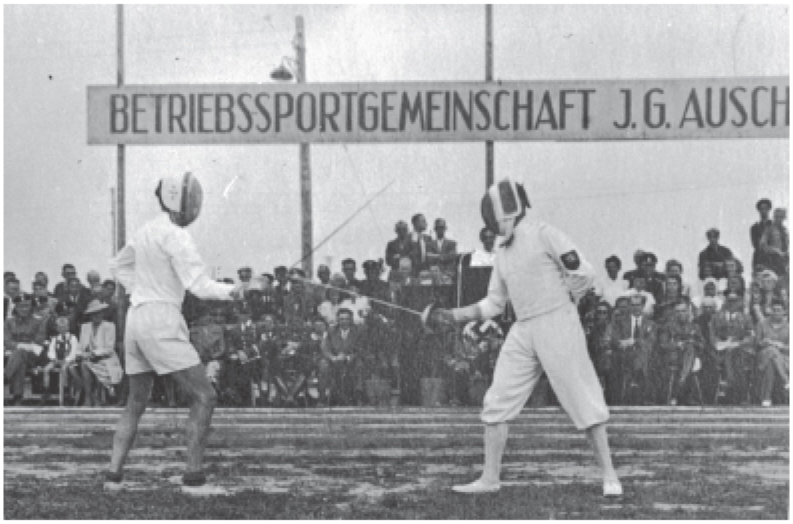
Albert Speer (left), Adolf Hitler, and a cameraman in Paris. As minister of Armaments and War Production, Speer was responsible for all warfare-related science and technology for the Third Reich, starting in February 1942. (NARA)



As the Third Reich crumbled, Nazis stashed huge troves of scientific treasure, secret documents, and gold in salt mines across Germany. The 90th Infantry Division discovered this enormous cache of Reichsbank money and SS documents in Merkers, Germany. (NARA)

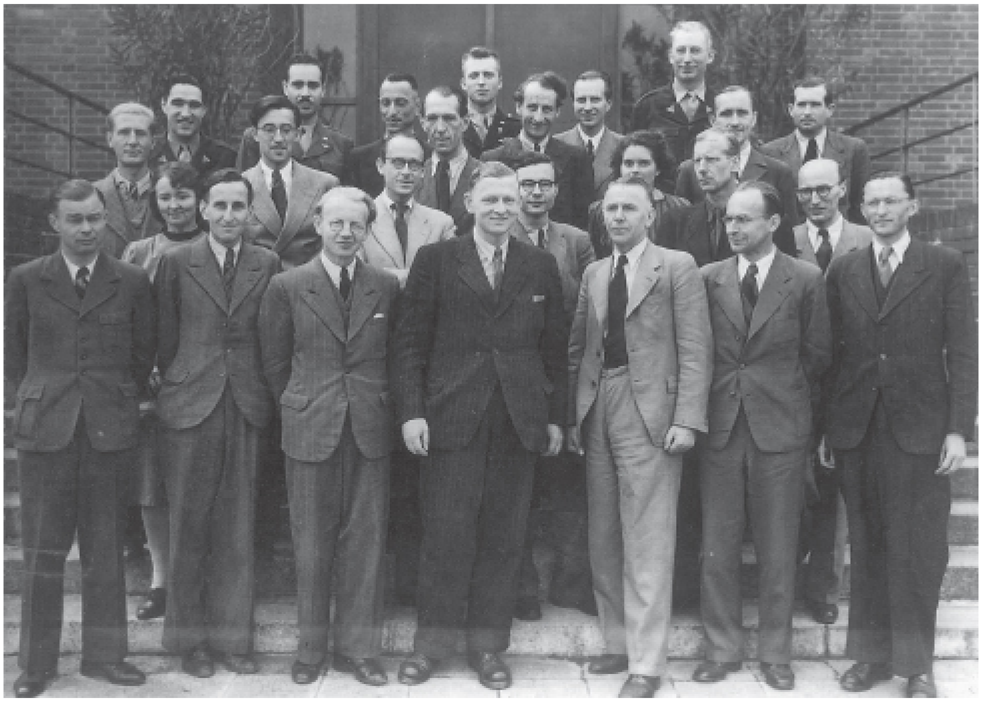


American liberators stand at the entrance of the Nordhausen underground tunnel complex where V-2 slave laborers assembled rockets. (U.S. Air Force)


BETRIEBSSPORTGEMEINSCHAFT J.G. AUSCH

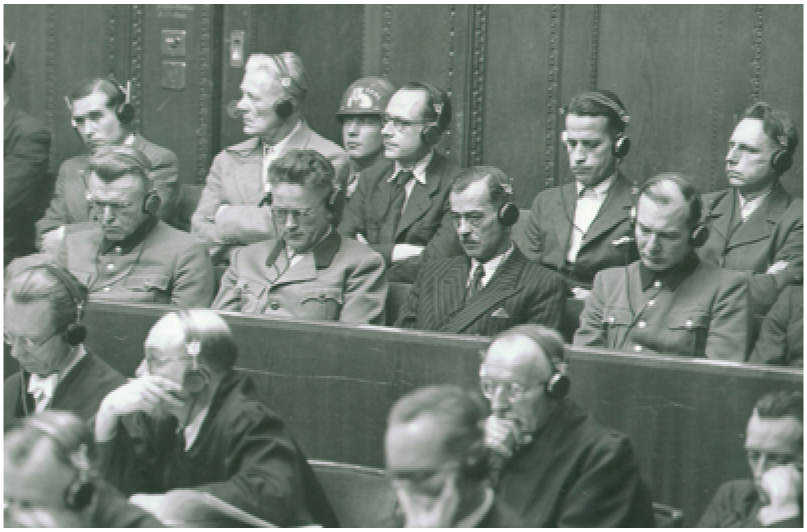
In this rare photograph, IG Farben employees are seen fencing for sport at the corporation’s Auschwitz facility and within sight of the three large chimneys of the death camp’s crematoria. The sign behind the fencers reads, “Company Sporting Club, IG Auschwitz.” Farben’s plant was also called Auschwitz III or Buna-Monowitz. (Fritz Bauer Institute)

Otto Ambros laughing with his attorney during the Nuremberg trial against IG Farben executives. Ambros served as Manager of IG Auschwitz and also managed the Reich’s Dyhernfurth poison gas facility in Silesia. (NARA)



In this previously unreleased photograph, Nazi doctors and scientists working for the U.S. Army Air Forces in Heidelberg gather with American officers for a group photograph circa 1946, prior to the arrest of five doctors on war crimes charges. Bottom row: at far left is Dr. Siegfried Ruff (arrested), at center is Richard Kuhn, third from right is Dr. Hubertus Strughold; Second row: third from left is Konrad Schäfer (arrested); Top row: third from left is Dr. Theodor Benzinger (arrested), far right (in tie) is Hermann Becker-Freyseng (arrested). (U.S.A.F School of Aerospace Medicine)

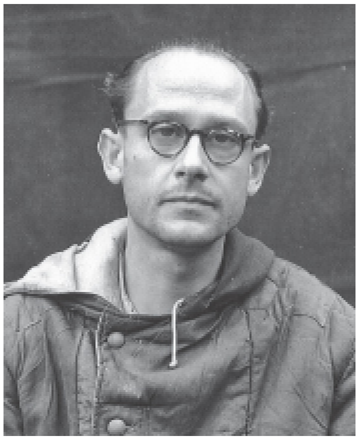
Dr. Kurt Blome consulting with his lawyer at the Nuremberg doctors’ trial. Dr. Konrad Schäfer sits behind Blome. (NARA)



At the Nuremberg doctors' trial, defendant Dr. Kurt Blome frowns (at center). Behind him are (left to right) doctors Hermann Becker-Freyseng, Georg Weltz, Konrad Schäfer, Waldemar Hoven, Wilhelm Beiglböck. To Blome's right is Karl Gebhardt, the SS doctor who performed experiments on Janina Iwanska and was hanged. (NARA)

Dr. Wilhelm Beiglböck oversaw the salt water experiments at Dachau and removed a piece of prisoner Karl Höllenrainer’s liver without anesthesia. During the trial, Höllenrainer, one of the only experiment survivors, tried to stab Beiglböck. (NARA)

Dr. Leopold Alexander, war crimes investigator and expert consultant at the Nuremberg doctors’ trial, explains to the judges the nature of the medical experiment performed on Jadwiga Dzido at the Ravensbrück concentration camp. Paperclip doctor Walter Schreiber was in charge of the experiments. (NARA)



After being acquitted at Nuremberg, Dr. Konrad Schäfer took over Strughold’s U.S. Army job in Germany while his Paperclip contract was sorted out. In Texas, Schäfer tried and failed to make the Mississippi River drinkable. His superiors found him “singularly unsuccessful in producing any finished work and has displayed very little real scientific acumen.” Schäfer was asked to leave the country but refused because he had already received his immigrant’s visa per Operation Paperclip. (NARA)

WOLFGANG GOETHE-UNIVERSITÄT

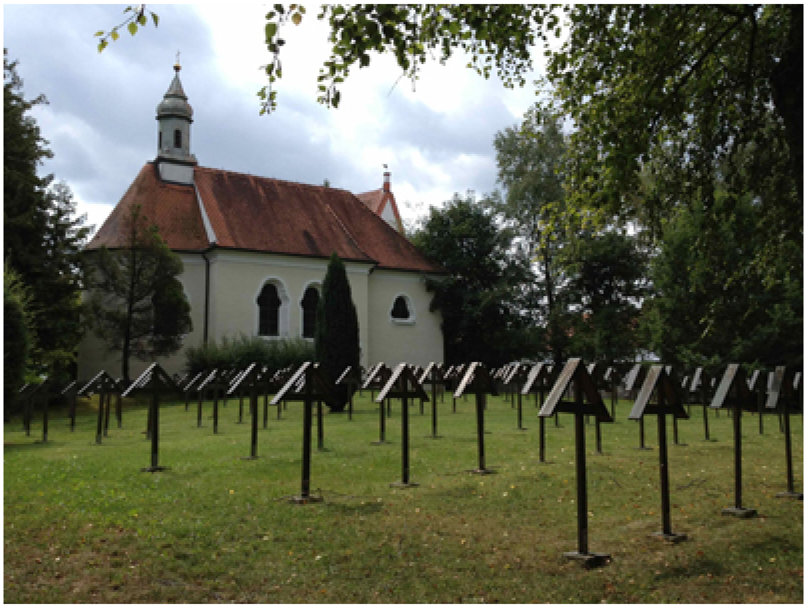
The IG Farben building in Frankfurt was taken over by the U.S. Army and became home to various American military and political organizations during the Cold War.

Today it is Johann Wolfgang Goethe University. (Author’s collection)

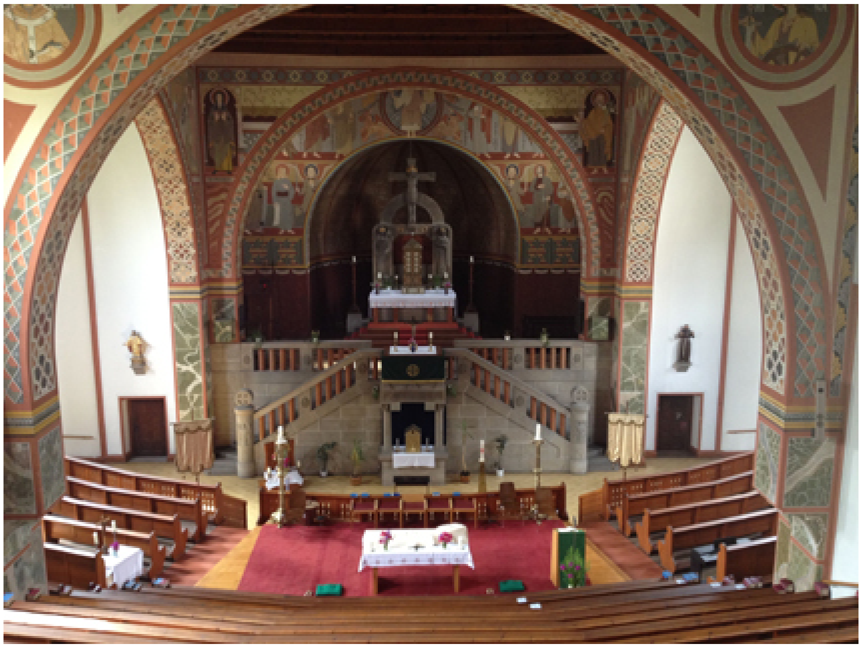
Castle Kransberg, outside Frankfurt, was Göring’s Luftwaffe headquarters. The Allies captured it, code named it “Dustbin,” and interrogated Nazi scientific and industrial elite here. (Author’s collection)

Hitler’s nerve gas–proof bunker underneath Castle Kransberg was designed by Albert Speer. In the event the Reich used chemical weapons, Hitler’s high command assumed the Allies would retaliate in kind. (Author’s collection)

Hitler wrote *Mein Kampf* at Landsberg Prison in 1924. After the war, it became home to 1,526 convicted Nazi war criminals until John J. McCloy granted clemency to the majority of those convicted at Nuremberg. (Author’s collection)



The unmarked graves of hanged Nazi war criminals mark the church lawn at Landsberg Prison. (Author’s collection)



The Cathedral inside Landsberg Prison, where convicted Nazi war criminals were allowed to pray. The benches were built at an angle so guards could observe individuals.

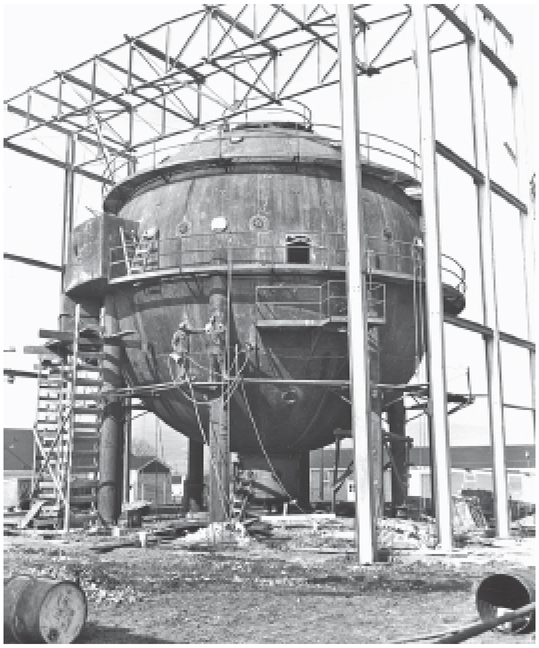
(Author’s collection)

Camp King was used as a Cold War black site. The CIA, Army, Air Force, and Naval Intelligence shared access to Soviet spies kept prisoner here using "extreme interrogation" techniques and "behavior modification programs," as part of CIA Operations Bluebird and Artichoke. Doctors Schreiber and Blome were Camp King Post physicians under Paperclip contracts from 1949 to 1952. (Author's collection)

John J. McCloy (center) with President Truman. McCloy championed the Nazi scientist program from its first days in May 1945. Between his tenure as assistant secretary of war and high commissioner of Germany, McCloy served as president of the World Bank. (NARA)

Charles E. Loucks with German scientists and others at a party at Edgewood Arsenal. Loucks befriended Nazi scientist and Nobel Prize winner Richard Kuhn, who introduced Loucks to LSD, which was later tested on hundreds of soldiers at Edgewood and used in the Army's Psychochemical Warfare program and the CIA's MKUltra mind-control program. (Papers of Charles E. Loucks, U.S. Army Military History Institute)

SS-Brigadeführer Walter Schieber served on Reichsführer-SS Himmler’s personal staff and was chief of the Armaments Supply Office in the Speer Ministry where he oversaw tabun and sarin production. Shown here in 1951, Schieber worked for the U.S. Army and for the CIA as part of Operation Paperclip. (Collection of Paul-Hermann Schieber)

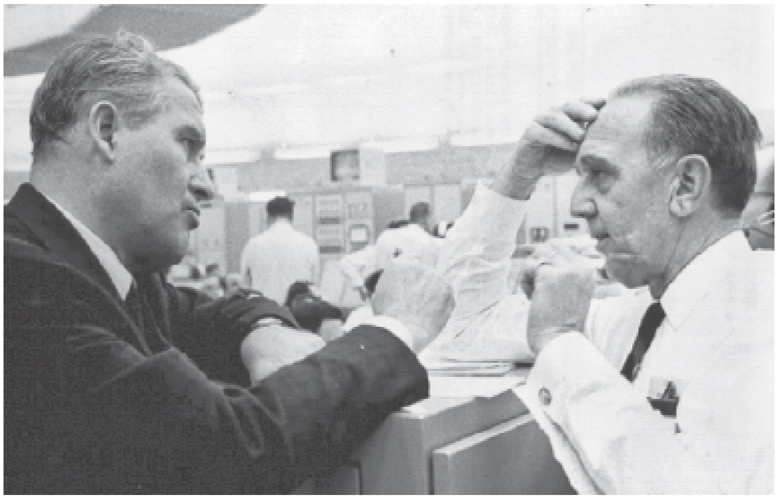


The “Eight Ball,” at Camp Detrick. Airtight, bombproof, and weighing 131 tons, this one-million-liter chamber allowed Detrick’s scientists to understand how aerosolized biological agents would work at different altitudes in the open air. Monkeys and human test subjects sat inside. (U.S. Army)

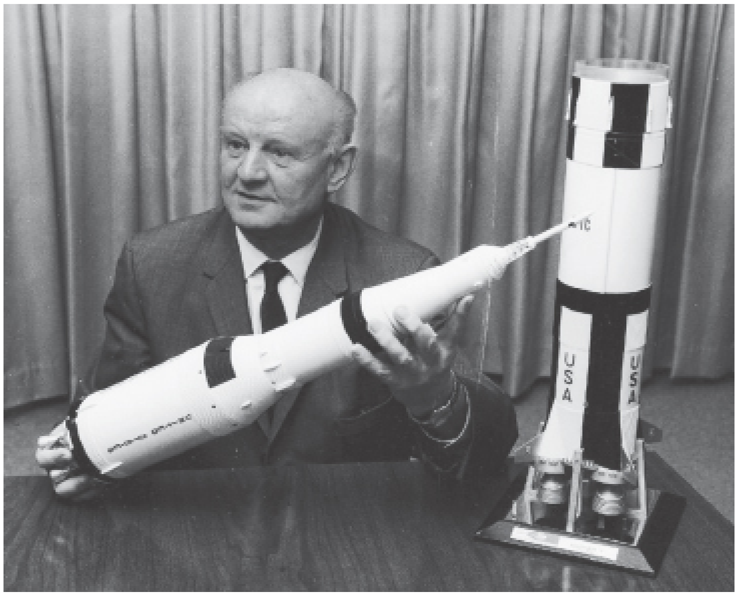
Fritz Hoffmann, the CIA's poison master, relaxes on his front lawn in suburban Maryland, circa 1948. (Collection of Gabriella Hoffmann)

Paperclip rocket scientists and specialists at Fort Bliss, Texas, circa 1946. Some were sent home when the Army learned they did not all have “rare minds.” Karl Otto Fleischer, for example, claimed to have been the Wehrmacht’s business manager when in reality he was in charge of food services. (NASA)

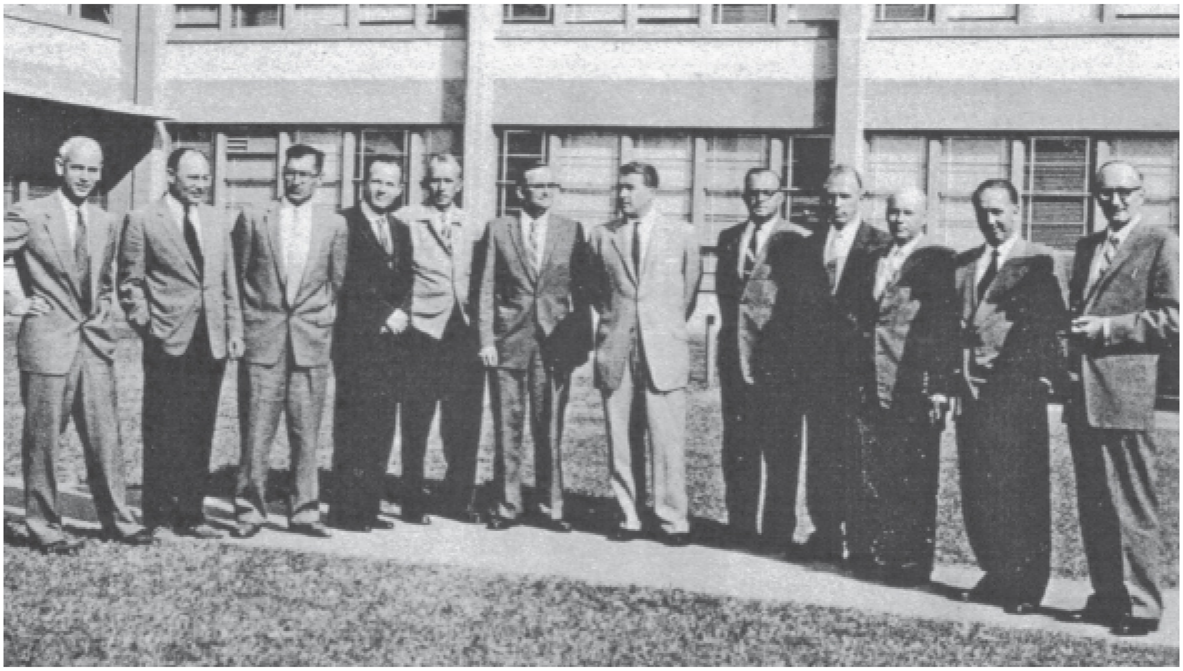
A V-2 rocket carrying the first monkey astronaut, Albert, blasts off at White Sands, New Mexico. (NASA)



Wernher von Braun and Kurt Debus confer during the countdown for a Saturn launch in 1965. (NASA)

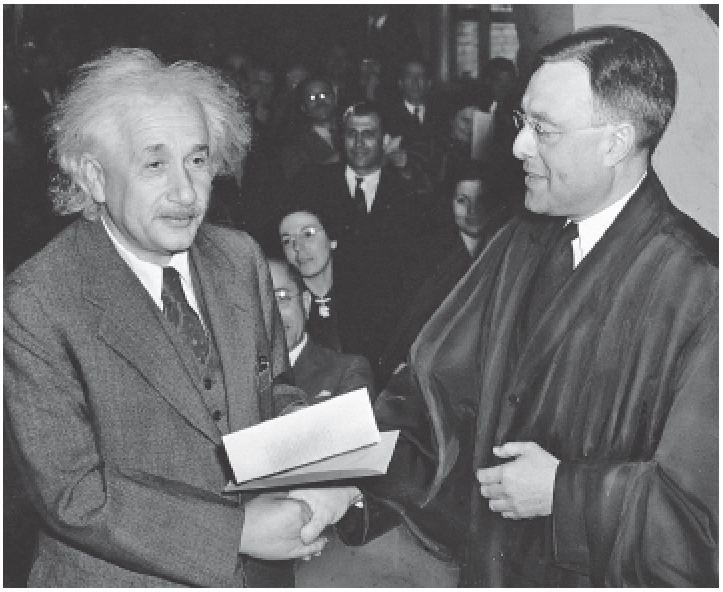


Arthur Rudolph holds a model of the Saturn V rocket, which launched man to the moon in 1969. In 1983 the Department of Justice began its investigation of Rudolph on war crimes charges. He was told to prepare to stand trial or to renounce his U.S. citizenship and leave the country. Rudolph left. (NASA)



Von Braun and his team at the Redstone Arsenal in 1958. Pictured from left are Ernst Stuhlinger, Helmut Hoelzer, Karl Heimburg, E. D. Geissler, E. W. Neubert, Walter Haeussermann, von Braun, W. A. Mrazek, Hans Hueter, Eberhard Rees, Kurt Debus, and Hans Maus. (NASA)

Kurt Debus, director of NASA’s John F. Kennedy Space Center, in an undated photo. According to his U.S. government security report, during the war Debus turned a colleague over to the Gestapo for making anti-Nazi remarks. The National Space Club in Washington, D.C., oversees the annual Dr. Kurt H. Debus Award. (NASA)



Albert Einstein accepting his certificate of American citizenship in 1940. One of Germany's most famous pre-war scientists, Einstein left Nazi Germany just months after Hitler took power, declaring that science and justice were now in the hands of "a raw and rabid mob of Nazi militia." He appealed to President Truman to cancel Paperclip, calling anyone who served Hitler unfit for U.S. citizenship. (Library of Congress, World-Telegram)

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

The idea for *Operation Paperclip* first took hold while I was reading documents about two Nazi aircraft designers, Walter Horten and Reimar Horten, both of whom play a role in my previous book, *Area 51: An Uncensored History of America's Top Secret Military Base*. In this research, I occasionally came across the name Siegfried Knemeyer, a senior adviser to the Horten brothers but, more notably, a man with quite a title from World War II: technical adviser to Reichsmarschall Hermann Göring. Not knowing much about Operation Paperclip back then, I was very surprised when I learned that just a few years after the war's end, Siegfried Knemeyer was living in America working for the U.S. Air Force, and that he would eventually be awarded the U.S. Department of Defense Distinguished Civilian Service Award—the highest civilian award given by the DoD. In 2010, I located Siegfried Knemeyer's grandson, Dirk Knemeyer, and asked if he would meet with me for an interview. He agreed.

Dirk Knemeyer is an American father, husband, entrepreneur, and businessman. By his own admission, he spends a good deal of his time thinking philosophically about concepts of "identity," "science," "time," and "life." When I first met him, Dirk Knemeyer shared with me that he had never before spoken publicly about his grandfather's wartime activities, and that most members of his family go out of their way to maintain silence about Siegfried Knemeyer's high ranking in the Nazi Party. "For the most part the family's position is: Do not discuss Siegfried's [past] with anyone, particularly not a journalist," Dirk Knemeyer says. "But what do you do when you have documents in your attic, as I do, praising your grandfather and his excellent work, and signed by people like Hermann Göring and Albert Speer?"

I find no easy answer to this question. The conundrum therein is one of the notions that made me want to learn much more about Operation Paperclip.

“Siegfried’s life is complicated,” Dirk Knemeyer says of his grandfather. “I am someone [who is] more interested in learning the truth about the past than denying it. Besides, some things are unwise to ignore.”

I asked Knemeyer if he would share with me some of his grandfather’s documents that were stored in boxes in his own attic. He said he would think about it. Eventually he agreed. Thank you, Dirk Knemeyer.

I wish to thank Dr. Götz Blome, Gabriella Hoffmann, Paul-Hermann Schieber, and Rolf Benzinger for their time and their transparency. The indomitable John Dolibois, whom I admire: Thank you for taking the time with me on so many different points. Dr. Jens Westemeier assisted me with all things German in this book and located some very difficult to find documents in numerous German archives; thank you, Jens. I thank the author and historian Clarence Lasby for sharing his insights with me. Lasby first began his book *Project Paperclip: German Scientists and the Cold War* (1971) in the 1960s, as an extension of his college thesis—decades before the truth about the German scientists’ Nazi past was revealed under the Freedom of Information Act. Lasby’s access to documents was seminal. As we have seen, many of these documents have since disappeared from various collections—been destroyed or lost.

In addition to interviews and oral history recordings, the foundations of this book are from military and civilian archives in the United States and Germany. Countless individuals were helpful, the following notably so: Lynn O. Gamma of the Air Force Historical Research Agency, Maxwell Air Force Base; Michael Jenack, INSCOM Freedom of Information/Privacy Act Office; Richard L. Baker and Clifton P. Hyatt, U.S. Army Military History Institute; Werner Renz, Fritz Bauer Institute; Leon Kieres, Instytut Pamieci Narodowej, Poland; Dorothee Becker, Wollheim Commission, Goethe University; Joerg Kulbe and Regine Heubaum, Mittelbau-Dora Concentration Camp Memorial; Peter Gohle, Bundesarchiv Ludwigsburg; Dr. Matthias Röschner, Deutsches Museum Archive; Christina Wooten, U.S. Air Force; Lanessa Hill, United States Army Garrison, Fort Detrick; Michael Fauser, U.S. Holocaust Memorial Museum; Bert Ulrich and Allard Beutel, NASA.

At the National Archives and Records Administration, I would like to thank David Fort and Amy Schmidt. At Harvard Medical School, at the Center for the History of Medicine at the Francis A. Countway Library of Medicine, Jessica B. Murphy graciously helped me to petition the Harvard

Medical School privacy board, which in turn petitioned the Department of Defense to declassify files under the Freedom of Information Act—with success. Many thanks, Jessica. At the Historical and Special Collections at the Harvard Law School Library, I thank Lesley Schoenfeld for her help with The Alexander Papers; Margaret Peachy and David Ackerman for copying historical film footage of Dr. Leopold Alexander and Telford Taylor at the Nuremberg doctors' trial; Adonna Thompson, Duke University Medical Center Archives; David K. Frasier, The Lilly Library Manuscript Collection, Indiana University; Lynda Corey Claassen, Mandeville Special Collections Library, UC–San Diego; John Armstrong, Special Collections and Archives, Wright State University Libraries; Carol A. Leadenham; Hoover Institution Archives; Loma Karklins, the Caltech Archives; Anne Coleman, Archives and Special Collections, M. Louis Salmon Library, University of Alabama in Huntsville; Dr. Martin Johnson, The Thalidomide Trust, England; Jen Stepp at *Stars and Stripes;* Brett Exton, Island Farm; Nick Greene, the *Village Voice;* author Danny Parker, who helped me locate documents at the National Archives and also a very obscure document at the Landeskirchliches Archiv in Stuttgart; Julia Kiefaber, who translated many German trial transcripts and wartime Nazi Party documents; Larry Valero, with the Intelligence and National Security Studies Program at the University of Texas at El Paso; John Greenewald, founder and curator of the Black Vault.

In Germany, Manfred Kopp graciously drove me around Oberursel, taking me to the old Camp King facilities and safe houses that were once used for classified programs, including Operations Bluebird, Artichoke, and MKUltra. Together with Maria Shipley, we journeyed to Schloss Kransberg, formerly the Dustbin Interrogation Center. Jens Hermann was most helpful in showing us around the castle and its grounds. The journalist and author Egmont Koch generously shared his findings on Camp King and the CIA's Artichoke program with me. Thanks to John Dimel for lending me a rare unpublished copy of *The History of Camp King,* and to investigative journalist Eric Longabardi for sharing his reporting on U.S. Army chemical weapons tests with me. I thank Michael Neufeld for answering questions about Wernher von Braun, Walter Dornberger, and Arthur Rudolph. Neufeld is curator of the Department of Space History at the Smithsonian National Air and Space Museum and the author of several books and papers on German rocket scientists, including monographs for NASA, all of which helped me tremendously.

I thank Albert Knoll, director of the archive and library at the Dachau concentration camp, for making the documents and photographs of medical murder experiments that were carried out at Dachau during the war available for my review, and also for showing me blueprints and maps of Experimental Cell Block Five. Riot police commissioner Mathias Korn and police historian Anna Naab took me around the expansive former SS training area grounds, which are adjacent to the Dachau concentration camp, including areas not open to the public. Thanks to them, I was able to go into the buildings used by the U.S. military to prosecute the Dachau war crimes trials, and to see where Georg Rickhey was tried and acquitted. Dr. Harald Eichinger, the warden of Landsberg Prison, gave me a comprehensive tour of that famous facility (still in use today), where Hitler wrote *Mein Kampf* and where the convicted Nuremberg war criminals were briefly imprisoned—until they were either hanged or granted clemency by U.S. High Commissioner John J. McCloy.

An author is nothing without a team. Thank you, John Parsley, Jim Hornfischer, Steve Younger, Nicole Dewey, Liz Garriga, Heather Fain, Amanda Brown, Malin von Euler-Hogan, Janet Byrne, Mike Noon, Ben Wiseman, and Eric Rayman. Thank you, Alice and Tom Soininen, Kathleen and Geoffrey Silver, Rio and Frank Morse, and Marion Wroldsen. And my fellow writers from group: Kirston Mann, Sabrina Weill, Michelle Fiordaliso, Nicole Lucas Haimes, and Annette Murphy.

The interviews I did with Gerhard Maschkowski I shall never forget. Thank you, Gerhard.

The only thing that makes me happier than finishing a book is the daily joy I get from Kevin, Finley, and Jett. You guys are my best friends.

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Annie Jacobsen was a contributing editor at the *Los Angeles Times Magazine* and is the author of the *New York Times* bestseller *Area 51*. A graduate of Princeton University, she lives in Los Angeles with her husband and two sons.

PRINCIPAL CHARACTERS

These brief character descriptions include information pertaining to the narrative of Operation Paperclip. Military titles refer to the highest rank achieved by individuals within the timeframe of this story. The term "Dr." is used to identify medical doctors.

William J. Aalmans: Post-war investigator with the U.S. War Crimes Division, he arrived on scene at the V-2 tunnel complex in Nordhausen shortly after it was liberated. Found the telephone list that implicated Georg Rickhey and Arthur Rudolph in slave labor and served on the prosecution staff during the Dora-Nordhausen war crimes trial.

Dr. Leopold Alexander: Boston psychiatrist and neurologist sent to post-war Germany to investigate medical crimes. He later served as expert consultant during the Nuremberg doctors' trial and coauthored the Nuremberg Code.

Otto Ambros: IG Farben chemist, codiscover of sarin gas and Buna synthetic rubber, he was awarded one million reichsmarks by Hitler as a scientific achievement award. Served the Reich as chief of the Committee-C for chemical warfare, manager of IG Farben's slave labor factory at Auschwitz and manager of the Dyhernfurth poison gas facility. He was tried and convicted at Nuremberg, and after an early release he worked for the U.S. chemical corporation W. R. Grace, the U.S. Department of Energy, and other European government and private sector business concerns.

Major General Dr. Harry G. Armstrong: Set up the post-war U.S. Army Air Forces Aero Medical Center in Heidelberg, employing fifty-eight Nazi doctors, thirty-four of whom followed him to the U.S. Air Force School of

Aviation Medicine in Texas, where he served as commandant. He was the second surgeon general of the U.S. Air Force.

Colonel Burton Andrus: U.S. Army commandant at Central Continental Prisoner of War Enclosure Number 32, code-named “Ashcan,” the interrogation facility where the major Nazi war criminals were interned after the war. Later, as governor of the Nuremberg Prison, he oversaw the hangings of the convicted high command Nazis.

Herbert Axster: Nazi lawyer, accountant and chief of staff on V-weapons under General Dornberger. Axster and his wife Ilse were among the few individuals in Operation Paperclip to be outed by the pubic as ardent Nazis. Forced to leave army employ, he opened a law firm in Milwaukee, Wisconsin.

Harold Batchelor: U.S. Army expert in weaponized bubonic plague and codesigner of the Eight Ball aerosol chamber at Camp Detrick. As a member of the Special Operations Division, he and Frank Olson conducted covert field tests across America using a pathogen that simulated how bioweapons would disperse. Consulted with Dr. Blome in Heidelberg after the Nuremberg doctors’ trial.

Werner Baumbach: Wartime general of the bombers for the Luftwaffe. Chosen by Albert Speer and Heinrich Himmler to pilot each man’s escape from Germany. Originally part of Operation Paperclip, he instead went to South America, where he died in a plane crash.

Dr. Hermann Becker-Freyseng: Nazi aviation physiologist under Dr. Strughold who oversaw medical murder experiments on prisoners at the Dachau concentration camp. He was tried at Nuremberg, convicted, and sentenced to twenty years. Granted clemency, he was released in 1952.

Dr. Wilhelm Beiglböck: Nazi aviation physiologist who oversaw salt water experiments at Dachau, he removed a piece of prisoner Karl Höllenrainer’s liver without anesthesia, one of the many crimes for which he was tried and convicted at Nuremberg. Sentenced to fifteen years, Beiglböck was granted clemency in 1951 and returned to Germany to work at a hospital.

Colonel Peter Beasley: Officer with the U.S. Strategic Bombing Survey sent to post-war Germany to locate engineers with knowledge about how underground weapons facilities were engineered. Recruited Georg Rickhey for Operation Paperclip.

Colonel Dr. Robert J. Benford: Commanding officer at the U.S. Army Air Forces Aero Medical Center, he oversaw the research efforts of fifty-eight Nazi doctors working in Heidelberg.

Dr. Theodor Benzinger: Wartime department chief of the Experimental Station of the Air Force Research Center in Rechlin and chief of medical work in the research department of the Technical Division of the Reich Air Ministry. An ardent Nazi and member of the SA (Storm Troopers) with rank of medical sergeant major, he was hired to work at the U.S. Army Air Forces Aero Medical Center in Heidelberg, then arrested, imprisoned at Nuremberg, listed as a defendant in the doctors' trial, and mysteriously released. Under Operation Paperclip he worked for the Naval Medical Research Institute in Bethesda, Maryland.

Dr. Kurt Blome: Deputy surgeon general of the Reich, deputy chief of Reich's Physicians' League, and member of the Reich Research Council, he served as chief of the Reich's bioweapons facilities in Nesselstedt, Poland, and in Geraberg, Germany. An "Old Fighter" Nazi Party member, he wore the Golden Party Badge and was a lieutenant general in the SA (Storm Troopers). The JIOA tried but failed to bring him to America; he worked for the U.S. Army at Camp King, in Oberursel, Germany.

William J. Cromartie: U.S. Army bacteriological warfare expert and officer with Operation Alsos.

Kurt Debus: V-weapons flight test director and member of the SS, he turned a colleague over to the Gestapo for making anti-Nazi remarks. Under Operation Paperclip he served as part of the von Braun rocket team at Fort Bliss, Texas and became the first director of NASA's John F. Kennedy Space Center, in Florida.

John Dolibois: U.S. Army officer with military intelligence who interrogated many of the Nazi Party high command interned at Ashcan, including Hermann Göring and Albert Speer. He was trained by General William Donovan in the art of interrogation.

Major General William J. Donovan: Founding director of the Office of Strategic Services, the forerunner to the CIA. After the German surrender Donovan kept an office at Camp King, in Oberursel, Germany, where he oversaw Nazis writing reports for the U.S. Army.

Major General Walter Dornberger: Wartime German general in charge of V-weapons development and the technical staff officer in the Nordhausen slave labor tunnels. He was arrested by the British for war crimes, interned in England, and later released into U.S. custody. Under Operation Paperclip he worked for the U.S. Air Force and then Bell Aircraft Corporation. Until the late 1950s he acted as a missile and space-based weapons consultant to the Joint Chiefs, carrying a Top Secret clearance and visiting the Pentagon frequently.

Captain R. E. F. Edelsten: British officer assigned to the joint British-U.S. interrogation center at Castle Kransberg, code-named “Dustbin.”

Donald W. Falconer: U.S. biological weapons explosives expert who consulted with Dr. Blome shortly after Blome’s acquittal at Nuremberg. Colleague of Frank Olson at Camp Detrick.

Karl Otto Fleischer: Allegedly the V-weapons business manager in Nordhausen, he played an important role in revealing to Major Staver the whereabouts of a key document stash after the German surrender. Under Operation Paperclip he worked at Fort Bliss, Texas, until it was learned he was not a scientist but worked in food services for the Reich’s missile program.

Dr. Karl Gebhardt: Himmler’s personal physician and chief surgeon of the staff of the Reich Physician SS and police, he was in charge of sulfa experiments at Ravensbrück, administrated by Major General Dr. Walter Schreiber. He was convicted at the doctors’ trial at Nuremberg, sentenced to death and hanged in the courtyard at Landsberg Prison.

Lieutenant General Reinhard Gehlen: Hitler's senior intelligence officer on the eastern front, he was hired by the U.S. Army to run the Gehlen Organization, a group that gathered intelligence on Soviet-bloc spies at Camp King. The organization was taken over by the CIA in 1949 and kept the majority of details classified until 2001.

Hermann Göring: Reichsmarschall, commander-in-chief of the Luftwaffe, and the long-serving designated successor to Hitler. As head of the Reich Research Council he was in charge of the coordination of all German research and streamlined Nazi science to weapons-related programs, making him the dictator of science.

Sidney Gottlieb: Director of the CIA's Technical Services Staff, he oversaw the MKUltra program and, with his deputy Robert Lashbrook, covertly drugged bacteriologist Frank Olson with LSD during an Agency weekend retreat.

Samuel Goudsmit: American particle physicist and wartime scientific director of Operation Alsos. Born in Holland, Goudsmit spoke Dutch and German. He discovered documents in Nazi scientist Eugen Haagen's Strasbourg apartment that revealed Reich doctors were conducting deadly human experiments on concentration camp prisoners.

John C. Green: Executive secretary for the Office of Publication Board, a division of the Commerce Department. He was instrumental in getting secretary of commerce Henry Wallaces to lobby President Truman to endorse Operation Paperclip.

L. Wilson Greene: Technical director of the Chemical and Radiological Laboratories at Edgewood, his secret monograph, entitled "Psychochemical Warfare: A New Concept of War," was the genesis for the CIA's MKUltra program. Colleagues with Paperclip chemist Fritz Hoffmann.

Dr. Karl Gross: Biological weapons researcher with the Hygiene Institute of the Waffen-SS, he was assigned by Himmler to work with Dr. Blome at Posen, Poland, and Geraberg, Germany.

Dr. Eugen Haagen: Virologist and key developer in the Nazi bioweapons program, notably vaccine research. Inside Haagen's Strasbourg apartment Alsos agents discovered the first evidence that Nazi doctors were experimenting on humans in concentration camps. Before the war Haagen codeveloped the yellow fever vaccine at the Rockefeller Institute in New York.

Alexander G. Hardy: Nuremberg prosecutor during the doctors' trial. In 1951, Hardy and Dr. Alexander wrote to President Truman portraying U.S. Air Force Paperclip contract employee Dr. Walter Schreiber as a war criminal, sadist, and liar, leading to Schreiber's expulsion from the U.S.

Major James P. Hamill: Wartime officer with the U.S. Army Ordnance Corps, he was in charge of the Paperclip group at Fort Bliss, Texas.

Heinrich Himmler: Reichsführer-SS, chief of police, and Reich commissar for the consolidation of the ethnic German nation, he championed medical experiments on human beings in concentration camps and oversaw the "sale" of more than half a million slave laborers to military and industrial concerns. Himmler's all-inclusive powers gave him unparalleled responsibility for Nazi terror and atrocities.

Karl Höllenrainer: German Roma, or gypsy, arrested during the war for marrying a German woman in violation of the Nuremberg Laws. He was sent to Auschwitz, then Buchenwald, and finally Dachau, where he became a rare survivor of medical murder experiments in Experimental Cell Block Five. During Nuremberg trial testimony, he tried to stab defendant Wilhelm Beiglböck.

Dr. Ernst Holzlöhner: Senior doctor at the University of Berlin who conducted freezing experiments at Dachau with Dr. Sigmund Rascher. He committed suicide in May 1945.

Friedrich "Fritz" Hoffmann: Wartime organic chemist at the chemical warfare laboratories at the University of Würzburg, and for the Luftwaffe. Under Operation Paperclip, he worked at Edgewood in the classified research and development division, the Technical Command, synthesizing tabun gas and later VX. For the CIA, he traveled the world in search of exotic poisons.

Dieter Huzel: Wartime personal aide to Wernher von Braun, he oversaw the V-weapons document stash with Bernhard Tessmann. Under Operation Paperclip, he worked as part of the von Braun team at Fort Bliss, Texas.

Colonel Gordon D. Ingraham: Commander of Camp King from 1949 to 1951, he supervised Paperclip contract employees Dr. Walter Schreiber and Dr. Kurt Blome.

Janina Iwanska: Rare survivor of the Ravensbrück concentration camp medical murder experiments. She came to the U.S. for medical treatment, in 1951, and unexpectedly provided critical testimony to the FBI regarding the alleged war crimes of Operation Paperclip’s Dr. Walter Schreiber.

John Risen Jones Jr.: American soldier with the 104th Infantry Division and one of the first men to enter the slave tunnels at Nordhausen. His iconic photographs documented the horror that had befallen thousands of V-weapon laborers.

Dr. Heinrich Kliewe: Reich chief of counterintelligence for bacterial warfare concerns, he was interned and interrogated at Dustbin with Dr. Blome. Testified as a witness in the Nuremberg doctors’ trial.

Colonel Siegfried Knemeyer: Luftwaffe spy pilot, engineer, and wartime chief of Luftwaffe technical developments under Hermann Göring. Considered one of the Reich’s top ten pilots, he was asked by armaments minister Albert Speer to pilot Speer’s escape to Greenland. Under Operation Paperclip, he worked at Wright Field from 1947 until 1977.

Major General Hugh Knerr: Post-war commanding general at Air Technical Service Command, Wright Field. An early advocate of Operation Paperclip, he sent a memo to the War Department encouraging them to overlook German scientists’ Nazi pasts. “Pride and face saving have no place in national insurance,” he said.

Karl Krauch: Chairman of IG Farben board of directors and Göring's Plenipotentiary for Special Questions of Chemical Production. Courted for Operation Paperclip while incarcerated at Nuremberg, he was convicted alongside colleague Otto Ambros.

Richard Kuhn: Nobel Prize–winning organic chemist who developed soman nerve agent for the Reich and was known to begin his classes at the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute with "Sieg Heil." Under Operation Paperclip he worked for the U.S. Army Air Forces Aero Medical Center in Heidelberg, and also privately for General Loucks's Heidelberg working group on sarin production.

Brigadier General Charles E. Loucks: Long-serving U.S. Army chemical warfare officer, he oversaw Operation Paperclip scientists working at Edgewood. He was transferred to Heidelberg, Germany, in June 1948, served as chief of intelligence collection for Chemical Warfare Plans, European Command, and created the Heidelberg working group on sarin production with Hitler's former chemical weapons experts, including Schieber, Schrader, Kuhn, and von Klenck. Initiated the first U.S. Army interest in the incapacitating agent Lysergic Acid Diethylamide, or LSD.

Dr. Ulrich Luft: Luftwaffe respiratory specialist and Dr. Strughold's deputy director at the Aviation Medical Research Institute in Berlin. Under Operation Paperclip he worked for the U.S. Army Air Forces Aero Medical Center, in Heidelberg, and for the U.S. Air Force School of Aviation Medicine, in Texas.

Gerhard Maschkowski: Auschwitz death camp prisoner No. 117028, he survived the Buna-Monowitz labor-concentration camp, also called IG Auschwitz, and was nineteen years old at liberation.

John J. McCloy: Lawyer, banker, politician, and presidential advisor, as chairman of the State-War-Navy Coordinating Committee, he played a crucial role in the earliest days of the Nazi scientist program. As U.S. high commissioner in Germany, he championed Accelerated Paperclip, also known as Project 63, and granted clemency to many Nazi war criminals convicted at Nuremberg.

Charles McPherson: Member of the Special Projects Team for Accelerated Paperclip, McPherson recruited Dr. Kurt Blome to work on biological weapons research.

Hermann Nehlsen: Sixty-three-year-old German aircraft engineer working under Operation Paperclip at Wright Field, he turned in Georg Rickhey for war crimes.

Carl Nordstrom: Chief of the Scientific Research Division under U.S. High Commissioner McCloy, he oversaw the Special Projects Team in their recruitment of Nazi scientists under the Accelerated Paperclip program.

Frank Olson: Bacteriologist for the Special Operations Division at Fort Detrick and CIA operative involved in the controversial interrogation programs at Camp King, including Operations Bluebird and Artichoke. He was covertly drugged with LSD by CIA colleagues, and later fell, or was pushed, out of a New York City hotel room to his death.

Werner Osenberg: Wartime high-ranking member of the Gestapo and an engineer, he ran the Planning Office inside Goring's Reich Research Council and was the eponymous creator of the Osenberg List, a "Who's Who" record of over 15,000 Reich scientists, engineers, and doctors.

Colonel Boris Pash: Commanding officer of the Alsos Mission and later an employee of the CIA.

Albert Patin: Reich businessman whose wartime factories mass-produced aircraft instruments using a 6,000-person workforce that included slave laborers supplied by Himmler. Under Operation Paperclip he worked for the U.S. Army at Wright Field.

Colonel William R. Philp: First commander of Camp King in Oberursel, Germany. He was one of the first post-war U.S. Army officers to hire Nazi military intelligence officers to analyze information from Soviet prisoners, an action that metastasized into the Gehlen Organization.

Lieutenant General Donald L. Putt: Accomplished test pilot and engineer. He was one of the first wartime officers to arrive at Hermann

Göring’s secret aeronautical research center at Völkenrode, where he recruited dozens of scientists for Operation Paperclip, later supervising them at Wright Field.

Dr. Sigmund Rascher: SS doctor at Dachau who conducted medical murder experiments at Experimental Cell Block Five. His correspondence with Himmler, including a gruesome collection of photographs, was used in the Nuremberg doctors’ trial. He was allegedly murdered on Himmler’s orders shortly before war’s end and became the scapegoat of many Luftwaffe doctors.

Georg Rickhey: General manager of the Mittelwerk slave labor facility in Nordhausen. Under Operation Paperclip he worked for the U.S. Strategic Bombing Survey and the U.S. Army Air Forces at Wright Field. Exposed by a fellow Paperclip scientist for alleged war crimes, he was returned to Germany as a defendant in the Dora-Nordhausen labor-concentration camp trial and was acquitted.

Walther Riedel: Engineer with the V-weapons design bureau. Under Operation Paperclip he worked for the U.S. Army at Fort Bliss, Texas, before returning to Germany.

Howard Percy “H. P.” Robertson: Physicist, collaborator of Albert Einstein, and ordnance expert who served as an officer with Operation Alsos. He served as General Eisenhower’s post-war chief of the Scientific Intelligence Advisory Section and chief of Field Information Agency, Technical (FIAT). He was vocally opposed to hiring Nazi scientists.

Arthur Rudolph: Operations director at Mittelwerk slave labor facility in Nordhausen, he specialized in V-weapons assembly and oversaw slave laborer allocation. Under Operation Paperclip he worked for the U.S. Army at Fort Bliss, Texas, and became project manager for the Saturn V. In 1980 he was investigated by the Department of Justice and left America in 1984 to avoid prosecution.

Dr. Siegfried Ruff: Director of the Aero Medical Division of the German Experimental Station for Aviation Medicine in Berlin, close colleague and coauthor of Dr. Strughold. As supervisor to Dr. Sigmund Rascher he administrated the medical experiments in Experimental Cell Block Five at Dachau. Under Operation Paperclip he worked for the U.S. Army Air Forces Aero Medical Center, in Heidelberg, before being tried at Nuremberg and acquitted.

Emil Salmon: Nazi aircraft engineer implicated in the burning down of a synagogue in Ludwigshafen, Germany. He was hired under Operation Paperclip to build engine test stands for the U.S. Army Air Forces, who found his expertise “difficult, if not impossible, to duplicate.”

Dr. Konrad Schäfer: Luftwaffe physiologist and chemist, he developed the Schäfer Process of desalination in pilot sea emergencies, which became part of the medical murder experiments at Dachau. Under Operation Paperclip he worked for the U.S. Army Air Forces Aero Medical Center, in Heidelberg, before being tried in the Nuremberg doctors’ trial and acquitted. His second Paperclip contract was for the U.S. Air Force School of Aviation Medicine, in Texas.

SS-Brigadeführer Walter Schieber: Chief of the Armaments Supply Office in the Speer Ministry, he acted as liaison to the industrial production of tabun and sarin gas. One of Hitler’s Old Fighters and holder of the Golden Party Badge, First Class, he served on Reichsführer-SS Himmler’s personal staff. Under Operation Paperclip he worked for the U.S. Army, in Heidelberg, for General Loucks’s Heidelberg working group on sarin production, and for the CIA.

Heinz Schlicke: Electronic warfare expert and director of the Reich’s Naval Test Fields at Kiel, he was on board the German submarine U-234, headed for Japan with a weapons cache, when captured. Under Operation Paperclip he worked for the U.S. Navy.

Hermann Schmitz: CEO of IG Farben and director of the Deutsches Reichsbank, it was inside a secret wall safe in Schmitz’s Heidelberg home that Major Edmund Tilley discovered the photo album connecting IG Farben to IG Auschwitz.

Gerhard Schrader: IG Farben chemist who discovered tabun nerve agent for the Reich. He repeatedly turned down Operation Paperclip contract offers but worked privately for General Loucks with the Heidelberg working group on sarin production.

Major General Dr. Walter Schreiber: Surgeon general of the Third Reich, wartime chief of medical services, Supreme Command of the German Army, member of the Reich Research Council, and chief of protection against gas and bacteriological warfare. Captured by the Soviets during the Battle for Berlin, he was a surprise witness for the Russian prosecution team at Nuremberg. Under Operation Paperclip he worked for the U.S. Army, at Camp King, Oberursel, and for the U.S. Air Force School of Aviation Medicine, in Texas.

Dr. Oskar Schröder: Chief of staff of the Luftwaffe Medical Corps, he ordered and oversaw medical murder experiments at Dachau. Under Operation Paperclip he worked for the U.S. Army Air Forces Aero Medical Center, in Heidelberg, before being tried and convicted at Nuremberg. Sentenced to life in prison, he was granted clemency and released 1954.

Robert Servatius: Nazi defense counsel during the Nuremberg doctor’s trial, he located a 1945 *Life* magazine story describing how U.S. military doctors experimented on U.S. prisoners during the war and read the article word-for-word in the courtroom, seriously damaging the prosecution’s case.

Major Eugene Smith: U.S. Army officer assigned to investigate Georg Rickhey on war crimes accusations. He took statements from Arthur Rudolph at Fort Bliss, Texas, which later proved instrumental for the Department of Justice.

Albert Speer: Reich minister of armaments and war production, he was responsible for all warfare-related science and technology for the Reich, starting in 1942, and oversaw the placement of millions of people into labor-concentration camps. Convicted at Nuremberg, he served twenty years in Spandau Prison. After his release he wrote several memoirs, always maintaining he knew nothing of the Holocaust.

Vivien Spitz: Youngest court reporter at the Nuremberg doctors’ trial, she authored *Doctors from Hell* at the age of eighty, after being outraged by a speech given by a Holocaust denier.

Major Robert B. Staver: Officer with the research and intelligence branch of U.S. Army Ordnance, he oversaw Special Mission V-2 and the capture of 100 V-weapons and related documents from Nordhausen. His actions led to the first group of rocket scientists coming to America under Operation Paperclip. He left the Army in December 1945.

Dr. Hubertus Strughold: Wartime director of the Aviation Medical Research Institute of the Reich Air Ministry in Berlin for ten years of Hitler's twelve-year rule. Despite being listed on the Central Registry of War Criminals and Security Suspects, CROWCASS, he was recruited by Harry Armstrong to codirect the Top Secret medical research program in post-war Germany. Under Operation Paperclip he worked for the U.S. Army Air Forces Aero Medical Center, in Heidelberg, and the U.S. Air Force School of Aviation Medicine, in Texas. Referred to as the Father of Space Medicine, he remains one of the most controversial figures in the history of Operation Paperclip.

Colonel Philip R. Tarr: Wartime chief officer of the Intelligence Division of the U.S. Chemical Warfare Service, Europe. Stationed at Dustbin interrogation center, he defied orders to arrest Otto Ambros on war crimes charges and drove him to Heidelberg to meet with Chemical Corps intelligence officers and a civilian with Dow Chemical.

Major Edmund Tilley: British officer in charge of post-war interrogations of Hitler's chemical weapons experts interned at Dustbin. Fluent in German, he was responsible for locating evidence used to convict Otto Ambros and other Farben chemists at Nuremberg.

General Telford Taylor: Chief prosecutor at Nuremberg. During the doctors' trial, he described Hitler's doctors as having become proficient in the "macabre science" of killing. He was a vocal critic of U.S. High Commissioner McCloy's decision to pardon convicted Nazis and overturn ten of the tribunal's death sentences.

Bernhard Tessmann: Weapons facilities designer at Nordhausen. With Huzel, and at the direction of von Braun, he hid the V-weapons documents in the Dörnten mine. Under Operation Paperclip he worked for the U.S. Army at Fort Bliss, Texas.

Erich Traub: Virologist, microbiologist, and doctor of veterinary medicine, he served as the wartime deputy director of the National Research Institute on the island of Riems, Germany. Sent by Himmler to Turkey in search of rinderpest, he sought to weaponize the virus for the Reich. Under Operation Paperclip he worked for the U.S. Army, the U.S. Navy, and the U.S. Department of Agriculture. He asked to be repatriated to Germany, in 1953.

Wernher von Braun: Technical director of V-weapons development for the German Army and head of the Mittelbau-Dora Planning Office, a division within the SS. Under Operation Paperclip he worked for the U.S. Army, Fort Bliss, Texas, and became director of the Marshall Space Flight Center and chief architect of the Saturn V launch vehicle, which propelled Americans to the moon.

Magnus von Braun: Gyroscope engineer at Nordhausen and the younger brother of Wernher von Braun. Under Operation Paperclip he worked for the U.S. Army, at Fort Bliss, Texas.

Robert Ritter von Greim: WWI flying ace who mentored Dr. Strughold in pilot physiology studies between world wars. At war’s end, he was appointed by Hitler to serve as the last chief of the Luftwaffe and committed suicide in May 1945.

Jürgen von Klenck: SS officer, IG Farben chemist, and deputy chief of special Committee-C for chemical warfare under Ambros, he inadvertently led Major Tilley to a document cache that led to the arrest and conviction of many Nazi colleagues. Under Operation Paperclip he worked for General Loucks’s Heidelberg working group on sarin production.

Herbert Wagner: Chief armaments design engineer at Henschel Aircraft Company and inventor of the HS-293 missile. He was the first Nazi scientist to arrive in the U.S. under Operation Paperclip and worked for U.S. Naval Technical Intelligence.

AUTHOR INTERVIEWS AND CORRESPONDENCE CONDUCTED 2011–2013

John Dolibois: Interrogator, prisoners of war, Central Continental Prisoner of War Enclosure Number 32, aka Ashcan. Army Intelligence, G-2

Vivien Spitz: American court reporter, Nuremberg war crimes trial, doctors' trial

Hugh Iltis: Translator of captured Nazi documents, Case No. 707-Medical Experiments, Himmler Papers

Michael Howard: British Intelligence Office No. 1, T-Force; W. R. Grace employee circa 1958

Ib Melchior: Agent, OSS and U.S. Army Counter Intelligence Corps

Gerhard Maschkowski: Prisoner at Auschwitz concentration camp, IG Auschwitz, Buna-Monowitz

Herman Shine: Prisoner at Auschwitz concentration camp, IG Auschwitz, Buna-Monowitz

Hanna Marx: Prisoner at Stutthof concentration camp

William Jeffers: Flight engineer, U.S. Army Air Forces, prisoner of war, Luftwaffe-Dulag Luft, Oberursel Dr. Leonard Kreisler: Post doctor, Camp Detrick (later Fort Detrick), Site "R," also known as Raven Rock Mountain Complex Dr. James Ketchum: Edgewood Army Chemical Center

Dr. Götz Blome: Son of Dr. Kurt Blome

Dirk Knemeyer: Grandson of Siegfried Knemeyer

Gabriella Hoffmann: Daughter of Dr. Friedrich "Fritz" Hoffmann

Dr. Dieter Ambros: Son of Dr. Otto Ambros

Dr. Rolf Benzinger: Son of Dr. Theodor Benzinger

Paul-Hermann Schieber: Son of Dr. Walter Schieber

Katrin Himmler: Grandniece of Heinrich Himmler

Eric Olson: Son of Dr. Frank Olson

Hanns-Claudius Scharff: Son of Hanns Scharff

Clarence Lasby: Author and historian

Werner Renz: Director, Fritz Bauer Institute

Dr. Harald Eichinger: Warden, Landsberg Prison

Albert Kroll: Director, Dachau concentration camp, archive and library

Mathias Korn: Police commissioner, Dachau

Anna Naab: Dachau Police Department, historian

Manfred Kopp: Historian, Camp King, Oberursel

Jens Hermann: Caretaker, Castle Kransberg

Dr. Jens Westemeier: Historian, University of Potsdam

Egmont Koch: Journalist and author

Joe Houston: Civilian contributor, U.S. Army Intelligence and Security Command

Dr. Martin Johnson: Thalidomide Trust, England

Mark Campbell: former present of the Space Medicine Association

Steve Griffin: Chairman, National Space Club

Michael J. Neufeld: Smithsonian National Air and Space Museum, curator, Department of Space History

ARCHIVES

National Archives and Records Administration, College Park, Md.

RG 549 Records of United States Army, Europe
RG 466 Records of the U.S. High Commissioner for Germany
RG 341 Records of Headquarters U.S. Air Force
RG 331 Records of Supreme Headquarters Allied Expeditionary Force
RG 330 JIOA Foreign Scientist Case Files 1945–1958
RG 319 Records of the Investigative Records Repository Case Files
RG 319 Army Intelligence and Security Command
RG 319 Records of the Military Intelligence Division
RG 263 Records of the Central Intelligence Agency
RG 238 World War II War Crimes Records (“201 Files”)
RG 226 Records of the Office of Strategic Services
RG 218 Records of the U.S. Joint Chiefs of Staff
RG 165 Records of the War Department General and Special Staffs

RG 153 Records of the Judge Advocate General (Army)
RG 65 Records of the Federal Bureau of Investigation
RG 59 General Records of the Department of State

U.S. Army Military History Institute, Carlisle, Pa.
Papers of Brigadier General Charles E. Loucks
Photograph Collection of Charles E. Loucks

Library of Congress, Washington, D.C.
Papers of the Office of Scientific Research and Development
Papers of the Veterans History Project

Harvard Law School Library, Cambridge, Ma.
Papers of Dr. Leopold Alexander

Harvard Medical School, Countway Library of Medicine, Boston, Ma.
Papers of Robert J. Benford
Papers of Henry K. Beecher

Wright State University, Special Collections and Archives, Dayton, Oh.
Papers of Theodor Benzinger

Duke University Medical Center Archives, Durham, NC.
Papers of Dr. Leopold Alexander

Hoover Institution, Stanford University, Palo Alto, Ca.
Papers of Boris Pash

Lilly Library, Indiana University, Bloomington, In.
Papers of Shirley Thomas

Pollak Library, California State University, Fullerton, Ca.
Papers of William Aalmans, Dora-Nordhausen trial

Mandeville Special Collections Library, UC San Diego, San Diego, Ca.
Papers of U.S. Army Air Forces, Aero Medical Center

Air Force Historical Research Agency, Maxwell Air Force Base, Montgomery, Al.

Air Materiel Command Historical Study No. 214 & No. 215, History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip (Exploitation of German Scientists) **Archives of the California Institute of Technology, Pasadena, Ca.**
Papers of Dr. Howard P. Robertson

Louis Salmon Library, University of Alabama, Huntsville, Al.
Papers of John Risen Jones Jr.

GERMAN ARCHIVES

Bundesarchiv Koblenz
Bundesarchiv Berlin: records of the former Berlin Document Center
Bundesarchiv Berlin-Lichterfelde
Bundesarchiv Militärarchiv Freiburg
Bundesarchiv Ludwigsburg
Bayerisches Staatsarchiv Nürnberg
Dachau concentration camp memorial site, archive and library, Dachau
Deutsches Museum archive, Munich
Wollheim Memorial, Fritz Bauer Institute, Frankfurt
The Agency of the Federal Commissioner for the Stasi records (BStU)

PERSONAL PAPERS, BOOKS, AND UNPUBLISHED MANUSCRIPTS

Siegfried Knemeyer
Dr. Kurt Blome
Friedrich Hoffmann
Paul-Hermann Schieber

BOOKS AND MONOGRAPHS

Alibek, Ken, with Stephen Handelman. *Biohazard: The Chilling True Story of the Largest Covert Biological Weapons Program in the World—*

Told from Inside by the Man Who Ran It. New York: Random House, 2000.

Allen, Michael T. *The Business of Genocide: The SS, Slave Labor, and the Concentration Camps*. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 2002.

Andrus, Col. Burton C., with Desmond Zwar. *I Was the Nuremberg Jailer.* New York: Coward-McCann, Inc., 1969.

Bar-Zohar, Michel. *The Hunt for German Scientists*. New York: Avon Books, 1970.

Baumbach, Werner. *The Life and Death of the Luftwaffe: Germany's "Lost Victories" of the Air by the Commander of Bomber Forces*. New York: Ballantine Books, 1972.

Beevor, Antony. *The Fall of Berlin 1945*. New York: Penguin Books, 2002.

Benford, Robert J., M.D. *Doctors in the Sky: The Story of the Aero Medical Association*. Springfield, IL: Charles C. Thomas Publisher, 1955.

Blome, Götz. *Bachflower Therapy: A Scientific Approach to Diagnosis and Treatment*. Rochester, VT: Healing Arts Press, 1999.

Blome, Kurt. *Arzt im Kampf*. Leipzig: Johann Ambrosius Barth, 1942.

Bower, Tom. *The Paperclip Conspiracy: The Hunt for the Nazi Scientists*. Boston: Little, Brown and Company, 1987.

Breitman, Richard, Norman J. W. Goda, Timonthy Naftali, and Robert Wolfe. *U.S. Intelligence and the Nazis*. New York: Cambridge University Press, 2005.

Burrows, William E. *This New Ocean: The Story of the First Space Age*. New York: Modern Library, 1999.

Campbell, Mark R., Stanley R. Mohler, Viktor A. Harsch, and Denise Baisden. "Hubertus Strughold: The 'Father of Space Medicine.' " *Aviation, Space, and Environmental Medicine* 78, no. 7 (July 2007): 716–19.

Chertok, Boris E. *Rockets and People*. Washington, D.C.: NASA History Office, 2005.

Clifford, Clark. *American Relations with the Soviet Union*. Washington, D.C.: Special Counsel to the President, September 24, 1947.

Cornwell, John. *Hitler's Scientists: Science, War and the Devil's Pact*. New York: Penguin, 2004.

Covert, Norman M. *Cutting Edge: A History of Fort Detrick, Maryland, 1943–1993*. Frederick, Maryland: Headquarters, U.S. Army Garrison, 1994.

Deichmann, Ute. *Biologists Under Hitler*. Translated by Thomas Dunlap. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1996.

Diefendorf, Jeffry M., Axel Frohn, and Hermann-Josef Rupieper. *American Policy and the Reconstruction of West Germany, 1945–1955*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1994.

Dolibois, John E. *Pattern of Circles: An Ambassador's Story*. Kent, OH: Kent State University Press, 1989.

Dornberger, Walter. *V-2: The Nazi Rocket Weapon*. New York: Ballantine Books, 1954.

Drummer, Heike, and Jutta Zwilling. *Von Der Grüneburg Zum Campus Westend: Die Geschichte des IG Farben-Hauses*. Frankfurt: Präsidium der Johann Wolfgang Goethe-Universität, 2007.

DuBois Jr., Josiah E. *The Devil's Chemists: 24 Conspirators of the International Farben Cartel Who Manufacture Wars*. Boston: Beacon Press, 1952.

Dwork, Debórah, and Robert Jan van Pelt. *Auschwitz: 1270 to the Present.* New York: W. W. Norton, 1996.

Eckart, Wolfgang U., ed. *Man, Medicine, and the State: The Human Body as an Object of Government-Sponsored Medical Research in the 20th Century.* Stuttgart, Germany: Franz Steiner, 2006.

Evans, Richard J. *The Third Reich at War.* New York: Penguin, 2009.

Feigin, Judy. *The Office of Special Investigations: Striving for Accountability in the Aftermath of the Holocaust*. Washington, D.C.: Department of Justice Criminal Division, December 1996.

Ferencz, Benjamin B. *Less Than Slaves: Jewish Forced Labor and the Quest for Compensation*. Bloomington, IN: Indiana University Press, 2002.

Frankenthal, Hans. *The Unwelcome One: Returning Home from Auschwitz.* Evanston, IL: Northwestern University Press, 2002.

Franklin, Thomas. *An American in Exile: The Story of Arthur Rudolph.* Huntsville, AL: Christopher Kaylor Company, 1987.

Frei, Norbert. *Adenauer's Germany and the Nazi Past: The Politics of Amnesty and Integration*. Translated by Joel Golb. New York: Columbia University Press, 2002.

Gehlen, Reinhard. *The Service: The Memoirs of General Reinhard Gehlen*. Translated by David Irving. New York: Popular Library, 1972.

Gimbel, John. *Science, Technology, Reparations: Exploitation and Plunder in Postwar Germany*. Palo Alto, CA: Stanford University Press, 1990.

Goudsmit, Samuel A. *Alsos*. Los Angeles and San Francisco: Tomash Publishers, 1983.

Groehler, Olaf. *Der Lautlose Tod: Einsatz und Entwicklung deutscher Giftgase von 1914 bis 1945*. Hamburg: Rowohlt Taschenbuch Verlag GmbH, 1989.

Hager, Thomas. *The Alchemy of Air: A Jewish Genius, a Doomed Tycoon, and the Scientific Discovery That Fed the World but Fueled the Rise of Hitler.* New York: Three Rivers Press, 2008.

______.*The Demon Under the Microscope: From Battlefield Hospitals to Nazi Labs, One Doctor's Heroic Search for the World's First Miracle Drug*. New York: Harmony Books, 2006.

Halberstam, David. *The Fifties.* New York: Random House, 1993.

Harris, Robert, and Jeremy Paxman. *A Higher Form of Killing: The Secret History of Chemical and Biological Warfare*. New York: Random House, 2002.

Heigl, Peter. *Nuremberg Trials*. Amberg: Druckhaus Oberpfalz, 2007.

Henkel, Matthias, and Hans-Christian Taubrich. *Memorium Nuremberg Trials*. Museen det stadt Nürnberg, 2012.

Hersh, Seymour M. *Chemical & Biological Warfare: America's Hidden Arsenal*. New York: Anchor Books, 1969.

Hilberg, Raul. *The Destruction of the European Jews*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 2003.

Hitler, Adolf. *Reden und Proklamationen, 1932–1945*. Edited by Max Domarus. Wauconda, IL: Bolchazy-Carducci Publishers, 2003.

______. *Hitler's Second Book: The Unpublished Sequel to Mein Kampf*. Translated by Krista Smith. Edited by Gerhard L. Weinberg. New York: Enigma Books, 2003.

______.*Table Talk, 1941–1944: His Private Conversations*. Translated by Norman Cameron and R. H. Stevens. Edited by H .R. Trevor-Roper. London: Enigma Books, 2000.

Howard, Michael. *Otherwise Occupied: Letters Home from the Ruins of Nazi Germany*. United Kingdom: Old Street Publishing Ltd., 2010.

Hunt, Linda. *Secret Agenda: The United States Government, Nazi Scientists, and Project Paperclip, 1944–1990*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1991.

Huzel, Dieter K. *Peenemünde to Canaveral*. United States: Prentice-Hall, Inc., 1962.

Irving, David. *The Rise and Fall of the Luftwaffe: The Life of Field Marshal Ernhard Milch*. Focal Point, 2002.

Isaacson, Walter, and Evan Thomas. *The Wise Men: Six Friends and the World They Made*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1986.

Jacobsen, Annie. *Area 51: An Uncensored History of America's Top Secret Military Base*. New York: Little, Brown and Company, 2011.

Jeffreys, Diarmuid. *Hell's Cartel: IG Farben and the Making of Hitler's War Machine*. New York: Metropolitan Books, 2008.

Karman, Theodore von. *Where We Stand: A Report Prepared for the AAF Scientific Advisory Group*. Dayton, OH: Headquarters, Air Materiel Command, Publications Branch, Intelligence T-2, May 1946.

Kershaw, Ian. *The End: The Defiance and Destruction of Hitler's Germany, 1944–1945*. New York: Penguin, 2011.

Kleber, Brooks E., and Dale Birdsell. *The Chemical Warfare Service: Chemicals in Combat*. Washington, D.C.: Center of Military History, United States Army, 1990. The series title was *United States Army in World War II: The Technical Services*.

Koch, Egmont R., and Michael Wech. *Deckname Artischocke: Die geheimen Menschenversuche der CIA*. Munich: C. Bertelsmann Verlag, 2002.

Koritz, Thomas F. *USAF Pilot/Physician Program: History, Current Program, and Proposals for the Future*. Brooks Air Force Base, TX: USAF School of Aerospace Medicine, July 1989.

Krause, Joachim, and Charles K. Mallory. *Chemical Weapons in Soviet Military Doctrine: Military and Historical Experience, 1915–1991*. Boulder, CO: Westview Press, 1992.

Lasby, Clarence G. *Project Paperclip: German Scientists and the Cold War*. New York: Atheneum, 1971.

Lebert, Norbert, and Stephan Lebert. *My Father's Keeper: Children of Nazi Leaders—An Intimate History of Damage and Denial*. Translated by Julian Evans. Boston: Little, Brown and Company, 2001.

Lifton, Robert Jay. *The Nazi Doctors: Medical Killing and the Psychology of Genocide*. New York: Basic Books, 1986.

Lockwood, Jeffrey A. *Six-Legged Soldiers: Using Insects as Weapons of War.* New York: Oxford University Press, 2009.

Longden, Sean. *T-Force: The Race for Nazi War Secrets, 1945*. London: Constable & Robinson Ltd., 2009.

Longerich, Peter. *Heinrich Himmler*. Translated by Jeremy Noakes and Lesley Sharpe. New York: Oxford University Press, 2012.

Lord, M. G. *Astro Turf: The Private Life of Rocket Science.* New York: Walker & Company, 2006.

Mackowski, Maura Phillips. *Testing the Limits: Aviation Medicine and the Origins of Manned Space Flight*. College Station: Texas A&M University Press, 2006.

Marks, John. *The Search for the "Manchurian Candidate": The CIA and Mind Control: The Secret History of the Behavioral Sciences*. New York: W. W. Norton, 1991.

Mauroni, Albert J. *Chemical and Biological Warfare: A Reference Handbook*. Santa Barbara, CA: ABC-CLIO, 2007.

McGovern, James. *Crossbow & Overcast.* London: Hutchinson & Co., 1965.

Melchior, Ib. *Case by Case: A U.S. Army Counterintelligence Agent in World War II.* Novato, CA: Presidio Press, 1993.

______.*Order of Battle: Hitler's Werewolves*. Novato, CA: Presidio Press, 1991.

Michel, Ernest W. *Promises to Keep: One Man's Journey Against Incredible Odds*. New York: Barricade Books, 1993.

Michel, Jean, and Louis Nucera. *Dora: The Nazi Concentration Camp Where Modern Space Technology Was Born and 30,000 Prisoners Died*. New York: Holt Rinehart and Winston, 1979.

Miller, Judith, Stephen Engelberg, and William Broad. *Germs: Biological Weapons and America's Secret War.* New York: Simon & Schuster, 2001.

Mole, Robert L., and Dale M. Mole. *For God & Country.* New York: Teach Services, Inc., 1998.

Moreno, Jonathan D. *Undue Risk: Secret State Experiments on Humans.* New York: W. H. Freeman and Company, 1999.

Nachama, Andreas. *Topography of Terror—Gestapo, SS, and Reich Security Main Office on Wilhelm-and Prinz Albrecht-Strasse.* Berlin: Stiftung Topagraphie des Terrors, 2010.

Naimar, Norman M. *The Russians in Germany: A History of the Soviet Zone of Occupation, 1945–1949.* Cambridge, MA: Belknap Press, 1997.

Nelson, Donald M. *Arsenal of Democracy: The Story of American War Production*. New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1946.

Neufeld, Michael J. *Creating a Memory of the German Rocket Program for the Cold War.* Washington, D.C.: NASA Special Publications, 2008.

______.*The Rocket and the Reich: Peenemunde and the Coming of the Ballistic Missile Era*. New York: The Free Press, 1995.

______.*Von Braun: Dreamer of Space, Engineer of War.* New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 2007.

Newell, Homer E., Jr. *Beyond the Atmosphere: Early Years of Space Science*. Washington, D.C.: NASA, 1980.

O'Donnell, James P. *The Bunker: The History of the Reich Chancellery Group*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1978.

Oleynikov, Pavel V. "German Scientists in the Soviet Atomic Project." *The Nonproliferation Review* 7, no. 2 (Summer 2000): 1–30.

Ordway, Frederick I. III, and Mitchell R. Sharpe. *The Rocket Team.* New York: Thomas Y. Crowell, 1979.

Overy, Richard. *Interrogations: The Nazi Elite in Allied Hands, 1945*. New York: Penguin, 2002.

Pash, Boris T. *The Alsos Mission*. New York: Charter Books, 1969.

Pendas, Devin O. *The Frankfurt Auschwitz Trial, 1963–1965. Genocide, History, and the Limits of the Law*. New York: Cambridge University Press,
Pogue, Forrest C. *U.S. Army in World War II, European Theatre of Operations, the Supreme Command.* Washington, D.C.: Center of Military History, United States Army, 1954.

Regis, Ed. *The Biology of Doom: The History of America's Secret Germ Warfare Project.* New York: Henry Holt and Company, 1999.

Ryan, Allan A. Jr. *Quiet Neighbors: Prosecuting Nazi War Criminals in America.* San Diego: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, 1984.

Samuel, Wolfgang W. E. *American Raiders: The Race to Capture the Luftwaffe's Secrets.* Jackson: University Press of Mississippi, 2004.

Sasuly, Richard. *IG Farben*. New York: Boni & Gaer, 1947.

Sayer, Ian, and Douglas Botting, with the *London Sunday Times*. *Nazi Gold: The Biggest Robbery in History.* New York: Grove Press, 1986.

______.*The Untold Story of the Counter Intelligence Corps, America's Secret Army*. New York: Franklin Watts, 1989.

Scalia, Joseph M. *Germany's Last Mission to Japan: The Failed Voyage of U-234.* Annapolis, MD: Naval Institute Press, 2000.

Schmaltz, Florian. *The Death Toll at the Buna/Monowitz Concentration Camp.* Frankfurt am Main: J. W. Goethe-Universität, 2010.

Schmidt, Amy, and Gudrun Loehrer. *The Mauthausen Concentration Camp Complex: World War II and Postwar Records.* Washington, D.C.: National Archives and Records Administration, 2008.

Schmidt, Ulf. *Justice at Nuremberg: Leo Alexander and the Nazi doctors' trial.* New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2004.

______.*Karl Brandt: The Nazi Doctor: Medicine and Power in the Third Reich.* London: Hambledon Continuum, 2007.

Schwartz, Thomas A. *America's Germany: John J. McCloy and the Federal Republic of Germany.* Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press,

1991.

Sereny, Gitta. *Albert Speer: His Battle with Truth.* New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1995.

Shirer, William L. *End of a Berlin Diary.* New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1947.

______.*The Rise and Fall of the Third Reich.* New York: Simon & Schuster, 1960.

Simpson, Christopher. *Blowback: The First Full Account of America's Recruitment of Nazis and Its Disastrous Effects on Our Domestic and Foreign Policy*. New York: Weidenfeld & Nicolson, 1998.

Smith, Bradley F. *Adolf Hitler: His Family, Childhood, and Youth.* Palo Alto, CA: Hoover Institution Press/Stanford University, 1986.

Smith, Marcus J. *Dachau: The Harrowing of Hell.* Albany, NY: State University of New York Press, 1995.

Speer, Albert.*Inside the Third Reich: Memoirs*. Translated by Richard Winston and Clara Winston. New York: Galahad Books, 1995.

______.*Spandau: The Secret Diaries*. Translated by Richard Winston and Clara Winston. New York: Macmillan, 1976.

Stafford, Peter. *Psychedelics Encyclopedia*. Berkeley, CA: Ronin Publishing, 1993.

Strughold, Hubertus. *Your Body Clock.* New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1971.

Swift, Shayla. *Lost Lessons: American Media Depictions of the Frankfurt Auschwitz Trials 1963–1965*. Lincoln: DigitalCommons@University of Nebraska, April 8, 2006.

Taylor, Telford. *The Anatomy of the Nuremberg Trials: A Personal Memoir.* New York: Little, Brown and Company, 1992.

______.*Nuremberg and Vietnam: An American Tragedy.* New York: Bantam Books, 1971.

______.*Final Report to the Secretary of the Army on the Nuernberg War Crimes Trials Under Control Council Law No. 10*. Washington, D.C.: U.S. Printing Office, August 15, 1949.

Thomas, Shirley. *Men of Space, Volume 7: Profiles of the Leaders in Space Research, Development, and Exploration*. Philadelphia: Chilton Books, 1965.

Thompson, Nicholas. *The Hawk and the Dove: Paul Nitze, George Keenan, and the History of the Cold War*. New York: Henry Holt and Company, 2009.

Thomson, Ian. *Primo Levi: A Life*. New York: Metropolitan Books, 2002.

Toliver, Raymond F. *The Interrogator: The Story of Hanns Joachim Scharff—Master Interrogator of the Luftwaffe*. Atglen, PA: Schiffer Military History, 1997.

Tucker, Jonathan B. *War of Nerves: Chemical Warfare from World War I to Al-Qaeda*. New York: Pantheon, 2006.

Urban, Markus. *The Nuremberg Trials: A Short Guide*. Translated by John Jenkins. Nuremberg: Geschichte für Alle e.V.—Institut für Regionalgeschichte, 2012.

Van Der Vat, Dan. *The Good Nazi: The Life and Lies of Albert Speer*. New York: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1997.

Wagner, Jens-Christian. *Produktion Des Todes: Das Kz Mittelbau-Dora*. Göttingen: Wallstein, 2001.

Wegener, Peter P. *The Peenemünde Wind Tunnels: A Memoir*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1996.

Weichert, Klaus. *100 Jahre JVA Landsberg am Lech: Ein Chronik über 100 Jahre*. Nuremberg, Germany: 2008.

Weindling, Paul Julian. *Nazi Medicine and the Nuremberg Trials: From Medical War Crimes to Informed Consent*. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2004.

Weiner, Tim. *Legacy of Ashes: The History of the CIA*. New York: Anchor Books, 2008.

Weinreich, Max. *Hitler's Professors: The Part of Scholarship in Germany's Crimes Against the Jewish People*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press, 1999. (Originally published in 1946 by the Yiddish Scientific Institute, with a new introduction by Martin Gilbert.) Welsome, Eileen. *The Plutonium Files: America's Secret Medical Experiments in the Cold War*. New York: Dial Press, 1999.

Wheelis, Mark, Lajos Rózsa, and Malcolm Dando, eds. *Deadly Cultures: Biological Weapons Since 1945*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 2006.

Wiesenthal, Simon. *The Sunflower: On the Possibilities and Limits of Forgiveness*. New York: Schocken Books, 1970.

Winterbotham, F. W. *The Nazi Connection: The True Story of a Top-Level British Agent in Pre-War Nazi Germany*. London: Granada, 1978.

York, Herbert F. *Arms and the Physicist*. Woodbury, NY: American Institute of Physics Press, 1995.

GOVERNMENT DOCUMENTS

Aalders, Gerard. *Operation Safehaven*. Amsterdam: Netherlands Institute for War Documentation, 1996.

Aalmans, William J. *A Booklet with a Brief History of the "Dora"-Nordhausen Labor Concentration Camps and Information on the Nordhausen War Crimes Case of the United States of America Versus Arthur Kurt Andrae et al.: Trial Commenced at Camp Dachau, Germany, August 7, 1947*. [Germany]: Prosecution Staff, 1947.

"Agent Orange" Product Liability Litigation, United States Court of Appeals for the Second Circuit, Brief for Defendants-Appellees on the Government Contractor Defense, No. 05-1760-CV: New York, n.d.

“The Air Force and the Worldwide Military Command and Control System.” Montgomery, AL: USAF Historical Division, Liaison Office.

“An Air Force History of Space Activities, 1945–1959.” United States Air Force Historical Division, Liaison Office, August 1964.

Alexander, Leo. “German Military Neuropsychiatry and Neurosurgery.” CIOS Item 24, August 2, 1945.

______.“Miscellaneous Aviation Medical Matters.” CIOS Item 24, File no. XXIX-21, n.d.

______.“Neuropathology and Neurophysiology, Including Electro-encephalography, in Wartime Germany.” CIOS Item 24, File no. XXVII-1, n.d.

______.“The Treatment of Shock from Prolonged Exposure to Cold, Especially in Water.” CIOS Report 24/CIOS Target No. 24 Medical, File no. XXVI-37, n.d.

Anderson, Arthur O. *Biowarfare to Biodefense: Operation Whitecoat & USAMRIID History.* U.S. Army Medical Research Institute of Infectious Diseases Office of Human Use and Ethics, 2011.

Andrews, A. H. “The Aviation Medicine Organization of the Luftwaffe.” CIOS Target Number 24/36, File No. XXIII-10, May 1945.

Armed Services Technical Information Agency. AD 20374. Dayton, OH: Document Service Center, February 4, 2009.

Army Air Forces Aero Medical Center. “Report from Heidelberg: The Story of the Army Air Forces Aero Medical Center in Germany, 1945–1947.”

“Aviation Medicine: From the Aeronauts to the Eve of the Astronauts.” Bethesda, MD: National Library of Medicine, February 1979.

Benford, Robert J. “Report from Heidelberg: The Story of the Army Air Forces Aero Medical Center in Germany, 1945–1947.” Unpublished.

Brophy, Leo P., with Wyndham D. Miles and Rexmond C. Cochrane. *The Chemical Warfare Service: From Laboratory to Field*. U.S. Center of Military History Publication 10-2. Washington, D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1959.

Central Intelligence Agency. “50 Years of Supporting Operations.” Office of Technical Services, March 7, 2007.

______.Participation in Planning of Department of Defense Experiments, Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments, September 1, 1994.

Central Registry of War Criminals and Security Suspects, Consolidated Wanted Lists, Part 1, Part 2, Supplementary Wanted List No. 2, CROWCASS Allied Control Authority, APO 742, U.S. Army. September 1947.

Cole, Ronald H., with Walter S. Poole, James F. Schnabel, Robert J. Watson, and Willard J. Webb. *The History of the Unified Command Plan, 1946–1993*. Washington, D.C.: Office of the Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, 1995.

Committee on Human Resources. Biological Testing Involving Human Subjects by the Department of Defense, 1977. Washington, D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1977.

Committee on Toxicology, National Research Council. “Review of Acute Human-Toxicity Estimates for Selected Chemical-Warfare Agents.” Washington, D.C.: National Academies Press, 1997.

“Counter Intelligence Corps History and Mission in World War II.” The Counter Intelligence Corps School. Baltimore, MD: Counter Intelligence Corps Center.

Cromartie, William J., and Carl Henze. “Medical Targets in the Strasbourg Area.” CIOS Black List Item 24 Medical, File no. XIII-8, XXX-9, and XIV-3, n.d.

Dean, Jay B. *Aviator vs. the Environment: Aeromedical Research and the Physiology of High-Altitude Flight During WWII*. Dayton OH: Wright State

University School of Medicine, n.d.

Dempsey, Charles A. *Fifty Years of Research on Man in Flight*. Air Force Aerospace Medical Research Lab, Wright-Patterson AFB, OH: U.S. Air Force, 1985.

Department of Commerce. Classified List of OTS Printed Reports. Washington, D.C.: Office of Technical Services Reports Division, October 1947.

Dick, Steven J., ed. *Remembering the Space Age*. Washington, D.C.: National Aeronautics and Space Administration Office of External Relations, History Division, 2008.

Dornberger, Walter. *Centralized vs. Decentralized Development of Guided Missiles.* Fort Bliss, TX: Ordnance Department U.S.A., 1948.

Dowden, H. J. "Examination of Dr. Ing. [Engineering] W. Osenberg and Documents." CIOS Target No. 28, File no. XXXI-49, June 25th–July 2nd, 1945.

"Elimination of German Resources for War." Hearings Before a Subcommittee of the Committee on Military Affairs, Volumes 10–11. Washington, D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office, April 1946.

Feigin, Judy. The Office of Special Investigations: Striving for Accountability in the Aftermath of the Holocaust, Department of Justice, Criminal Division. New York, December 2006.

Greene, Wilson L. *Psychochemical Warfare: A New Concept of War.* Army Chemical Center, August 1949.

Harbert, John, and Gil Whittemore. "Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments, Interview with Colonel John Pickering." Transcript. Albuquerque, NM, November 2, 1994.

Helms, Richard. History Staff, Center for the Study of Intelligence, Central Intelligence Agency, Vol. 44, No. 4; Adapted from an interview with Helms taped by David Frost in Washington, D.C., May 22–23, 1978.

Hilmas, Corey J., Jeffery K. Smart, and Benjamin A. Hill, “History of Chemical Warfare.” In *Medical Aspects of Chemical Warfare*, edited by Martha K. Lenhart. Washington, D.C.: Borden Institute/U.S. Government Printing Office, 2008.

Housen, Roger T. “Why Did the U.S. Want to Kill Prime Minister Lumumba of the Congo?” Washington, D.C.: National War College, 2002.

Hylton, A. R. *The History of Chemical Warfare Plants in the United States*. Kansas City: Midwest Research Institute, U.S. Arms Control and Disarmament Agency, 1972.

Intelligence Throughout History: U.S. Intelligence and the German Invasion of the Soviet Union, Studies in Intelligence, CIA Story Archive, 2011.

Joint Hearing before the Select Committee on Intelligence and the Subcommittee on Health and Scientific Research of the Committee on Human Resources, United States Senate, Ninety-Fifth Congress, First Session, August 3, 1977. “Project MKUltra, the CIA’s Program of Research in Behavioral Modification.” Washington, D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1977.

Kent, Sherman. *Sherman Kent and the Board of National Estimates: Collected Essays*. Washington, D.C.: History Staff, Center for the Study of Intelligence, Central Intelligence Agency, 1994.

Keogh, James, and Tom Betsy. *Assessment of the Continuing Operability of Chemical Agent Disposal Facilities and Equipment.* Committee on Continuing Operability of Chemical Agent Disposal Facilities and Equipment, National Research Council. Washington D.C.: National Academies Press, March 16, 2007.

“The Last Days of Ernst Kaltenbrunner: Personal Recollections of the Capture and Show Trial of an Intelligence Chief.” Washington, D.C.: Central Intelligence Agency, September 22, 1993.

Lovelace, W. R. “Research in Aviation Medicine for the German Air Force.” CIOS Item Number 24 Medical, File no. XXVI-56, n.d.

Nazi War Crimes & Japanese Imperial Government Records Interagency Working Group: Final Report to the United States Congress. Washington, D.C.: National Archives, April 2007.

Office of the Chief, Chemical Corps. “Classification of Quick-Acting, Non-persistent Agent, GB, as a Substitute Standard Type.” Edgewood, MD: Army Chemical Center, 1948.

O’Mara, John. “Long-Range Policy on German Scientific and Technological Research, AIF.” CIOS XXXII-66, May 16, 1945.

“Paperclip, Part I.” *Office of Naval Intelligence Review,* February 1949.

Pash, Boris T. “Code Name: Alsos Mission, Scientific Intelligence Mission, A Photographic History of the Alsos Mission, 11 May 1944–15 November 1945.”

Peyton, G. *Fifty Years of Aerospace Medicine*. AFSC Historical Publication Series No. 67-180, Bethesda, Maryland, 1968.

“Report to the Secretary of War by Mr. George W. Merck, Special Consultant for Biological Warfare.” Washington, D.C.: January 1946.

Ruffner, Kevin C. “Forging an Intelligence Partnership: CIA and the Origins of the BND, 1945–1949.” A Documentary History, Vol. 1. CIA History Staff, Center for the Study of Intelligence, European Division, 1999 (declassified 2002 per Nazi War Crimes Disclosure Act).

Savage, Charles. *Lysergic Acid Diethyl Amide (LSD-25): A Clinical-Psychological Study.* Naval Medical Research Institute. Bethesda, MD: National Naval Medical Center, September 9, 1951.

Schreiber, Walter Paul, M.D. Affidavit of January 23, 1952, recorded by Dolly C. Buechel, Notary Public, Bexar County, Texas.

Simon, Leslie M. “Special Mission on Captured German Scientific Establishment: Artillery and Weapons, Rockets and Rocket Fuels, Guided Missiles, Aircraft Instruments and Equipment.” CIOS Items 2, 4, 6, 25 & 27, File no. XXX-71, June 1, 1945.

Technical Report No. 331-45, “German Aviation Medical Research at the Dachau Concentration Camp.” October 1945. U.S. Naval Technical Mission in Europe.

Tilley, Edmund. “Report on the Finding of Evidence of Hermann Schmitz’s Connection with and Knowledge of the Auschwitz Concentration Camp,” April 11, 1947. Archive of the Fritz Bauer Institute.

Tilley, Edmund, and J. M. Whitten. “Interrogation of German Scientific Personnel I.G. Farbenindustrie A.G., Ludwigshafen, March 25–31, 1945.” CIOS Item No. 30, File no. XXV-49, April 10, 1945.

United States Army. Army Intelligence & Security Command. On the Trail of Military Intelligence History: A Guide to the Washington, D.C., Area. Washington, D.C.: U.S. Army Intelligence and Security Command History Office, n.d.

United States of America v. Karl Brandt et al., Case No. 1 (The Medical Case), Vols. 1 and 2. Washington, D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1946–June 1948.

U.S. Department of the Army. “Soviet Research and Development Capabilities for New Toxic Agents.” Intelligence Staff Study, Project No. A-1735. Washington, D.C.: Office of the Assistant Chief of Staff for Intelligence, July 28, 1958.

Weber, Karl H. “The Directorate of Science and Technology, Historical Series, Top Secret, The Office of Scientific Intelligence, 1949–1968, Volume II, Annexes IV, V, VI and VII.” OSI-1, June 1972. FOIA/Declassified 2008.

Weir, Francis W., Dale W. Bath, and Maurice H. Weeks. “Short Term Inhalation Exposures of Rodents to Pentaborane-9,” ASD Technical Report 61-663, Chemical Research and Development Laboratories, Army Chemical Center. Bethesda, MD, December 1961.

Westphal, Otto. *Research on the Production and Immunological Examination of Artificial Antigens Containing Known Sugars (or Oligosaccharides) as the Determinant Groups, in Relation to the Immuno*

Chemical Analysis of Enterobacterial O-Antigens (Endotoxins). Frankfurt am Main: Wander Forschungsinstitut, November 30, 1962.

Winfield, R. H. “Preliminary Report of Points of Interest in Aviation Medicine and Physiology in Belgium and France.” CIOS Black List Item 24 Medical, File no. XIII-10, January 8, 1945.

Ziemke, Earl F. *The U.S. Army in the Occupation of Germany, 1944–1946*. Center of Military History, United States Army. Washington, D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1990.

MICROFILM

Records of the United States Nuremberg War Crimes Trials: *United States of America v. Carl Krauch et al.* (Case VI). Washington, D.C.: National Archives Microfilm Publications, 1977.

Records of the United States Nuremberg War Crimes Trials: United States Army Investigation and Trials Records of War Criminals: *United States of America v. Kurt Andrae et al.* (and Related Cases) April 27, 1945–June 11, 1985. Washington, D.C.: National Archives Trust Fund Board National Archives and Record Services, 1981.

ARTICLES

Allen, Charles Jr. “Hubertus Strughold, Nazi in U.S.” *Jewish Currents,* September 28, 1974.

“Ambros, Convicted Nazi War Criminal, Abandons Plans to Visit U.S.” Jewish Telegraphic Agency, May 3, 1971.

Bach, Julian Jr. “Himmler the Scientist.” *Saturday Review,* August 9, 1958.

Beasley, Norman. “The Capture of the German Rocket Secrets Military Intelligence: Its Heroes and Legends.” *American Legion Magazine,* October

1963.

Blumenthal, Ralph. “Drive on Nazi Suspects a Year Later: No U.S. Legal Steps Have Been Taken.” *New York Times,* November 23, 1974.

Boeri, David. “Looking Out: Nazis on the Harbor.” *WBUR,* August 19, 2010.

Campbell, Mark R., *et al.* “The Controversy of Hubertus Strughold during World War II,” http://www.spacemedicineassociation.org/strughold.htm.

______.“Hubertus Strughold: ‘The Father of Space Medicine.’ ” Aviation Space Environmental Medicine, http://www.spacemedicineassociation.org/strughold.htm.

Conason, Joe, with Martin A. Rosenblatt. “The Corporate State of Grace: Reagan’s Friends Tries to Bury the Past.” *Village Voice,* April 12, 1983.

Central Intelligence Agency. “The Last Days of Ernst Kaltenbrunner: Personal Recollections of the Capture and Show Trial of an Intelligence Chief.” September 22, 1993.

Crowther, Bosley. “About von Braun: *I Aim at the Stars* Opens at the Forum.” *New York Times*, October 20, 1960.

Day, Matthew. “SS Documents Discovered Near Auschwitz.” *Telegraph,* March 23, 2010.

Eliot, George F. “Our Armed Forces: Merger or Coördination?” *Foreign Affairs,* January 1946.

Epstein, Edward J. “The Spy Wars.” *New York Times Magazine,* September 28, 1980.

Foggo, Daniel. “Thalidomide ‘Was Created by the Nazis.’ ” *Sunday Times,* February 8, 2009.

“Foreign Relations of the United States, 1950–1955: The Intelligence Community, Document 244.” U.S. Department of State Office of the Historian, December 1955.

Gapay, Les. “The Holocaust and the Sins of the Father.” *Los Angeles Times,* May 6, 2012.

Hunt, Linda. “U.S. Coverup of Nazi Scientists.” *Bulletin of the Atomic Scientists* 41, no. 4 (April 1985).

Lagnado, Lucette. “Space Medicine Group Jousts over Fate of Strughold Prize.” *Wall Street Journal,* December 1, 2012.

Lang, Daniel. “A Romantic Urge.” *The New Yorker,* April 21, 1951.

Marlow, James. “60 Million Jobs. Late Henry Wallace’s Dream Comes True.” Associated Press, April 6, 1966.

McBee, Susan. “Interviewing an Accused Spy.” *Life,* July 22, 1966.

McCoy, Alfred W. “Science in Dachau’s Shadow: HEBB, Beecher, and the Development of CIA Psychological Torture and Modern Medical Ethics.” *Journal of the History of the Behavioral Sciences* 43, no. 4 (Fall 2007): 401–17.

Middleton, Drew. “7 Nazis Executed for War Murders.” *New York Times,* June 7, 1951.

“Nazi Brains Help U.S.” *Life,* December 9, 1946.

“Nazi Doctors to Be Tried Next.” *Stars and Stripes,* October 12, 1946.

“Nazi Escape Plan Revealed to Fly Leaders to Greenland.” *Scotsman,* December 28, 2003.

New York Times. “Cured in U.S. of Her Ills, Left as Nazi Guinea Pig.” March 7, 1952.

O’Donnell, James P. “The Devil’s Architect.” *New York Times Magazine,* October 26, 1969.

Pearson, Drew. “Air Force Hires Nazi Doctor Linked to Ghastly Experiments.” Associated Press, February 14, 1952.

Ravo, Nick. “Dr. Theodor H. Benzinger, 94, Inventor of the Ear Thermometer,” Obituary, *New York Times,* October 30, 1999.

Reichhardt, Tony. “First Up? Even Before NASA Was Created, Civilian and Military Labs Were in Search of Spacemen.” *Air & Space,* September 2000.

Reuters. “Factbox: Five Facts about Russian Military Intelligence.” April 24, 2009.

Roosevelt, Eleanor. My Day. United Feature Syndicate, December 14, 1949.

Rule, Andrew. “Thalidomide, A Wreckage of Innocent Lives.” *Daily Telegraph,* June 27, 2011.

Ryan, Cornelius. “G-Gas: A New Weapon of Chilling Terror. We Have It —So Does Russia.” *Collier’s,* November 1953.

Schmidt, Dana Adams. “Germans on Trial in ‘Science Crimes.’ ” *New York Times,* December 10, 1946.

Shane, Scott. “C.I.A. Knew Where Eichmann Was Hiding, Documents Show,” *New York Times,* June 7, 2006.

______.“Md. Experts’ Key Lessons on Anthrax Go Untapped.” *Baltimore Sun,* November 4, 2001.

Shaw, Herbert. “Wright Field Reveals ‘Operation Paperclip.’ ” *Dayton Daily News,* December 4, 1946.

Shevell, Michael I. “Neurosciences in the Third Reich: From Ivory Tower to Death Camps.” *Canadian Journal of Neurological Sciences* 26, no. 2 (May 1999): 75–76.

Siegel, Barry. “Can Evil Beget Good? Nazi Data: A Dilemma for Science.” *Los Angeles Times,* October 30, 1988.

Silver, Arnold M. “Questions, Questions, Questions: Memories of Oberursel.” *Intelligence and National Security* 8, no. 2 (April 1993): 202–6.

Stoll, Werner A. “Lysergsäure-diethylamid: Ein Phantastikum aus der Mutterkorngruppe.” *Schweizer Archiv für Neurologie und Psychiatrie* 60 (1947).

______.“Psychische Wirkung eines Mutterkornstoffes in Ungeewöhnlich Schwacher Dosierung.” *Schweizer medizinische Wochenschrift* 79, no. 5 (1949).

Tucker, Jonathan B. “Farewell to Germs: The U.S. Renunciation of Biological and Toxin Warfare, 1969, 1970.” *International Security* 27, no. 1 (Summer 2002): 107–48.

U.S. News & World Report. “What’s Happening in the Race to the Moon?” June 1, 1964.

Walker, Lester C. “Secrets by the Thousands.” *Harper’s,* October 1946.

Weeks, Maurice, and Paul Yevich. *American Industrial Hygiene Association Journal* 24, no. 6 (1963): 622–29. Declassified December 27, 2007.

ORAL HISTORIES

Major General Charles E. Loucks, U.S.A., Retired, Oral History Interview by Morris C. Johnson. Senior Office Oral History Program, U.S. Army, 1984.

Major General Harry G. Armstrong, Retired, Oral History Interview by J. Bullard and T. C. Glasgow. U.S. Air Force Oral History Program, 1976.

Hubertus Strughold, Oral History Interview with James C. Hasdorff. Office of the Air Force History. San Antonio, TX. November 25, 1974.

Hubertus Strughold, Oral History Interview by Ingrid Kuehne Kokinda. Institute of Texan Cultures Oral History Collection, University of Texas at San Antonio, 1982.

Paul A. Campbell, Oral History Interview by Frances Kallison. Institute of Texan Cultures Oral History Collection, University of Texas, 1977.

Robert C. Haney, Oral History Interview by Charles Stuart Kennedy. The Association for Diplomatic Studies and Training Foreign Affairs Oral History Project, September 21, 2001.

Kurt H. Debus, Oral History Interview with Walter D. Sohier and Eugene M. Emme. John F. Kennedy Presidential Library and Museum. March 31, 1964.

Wernher von Braun, Interview with Robert Sherrod, NASA, August 25, 1970.

Wernher von Braun, Interview from an unnamed film (discusses the Mittelwerk), Linda Hunt donation to the United States Holocaust Memorial Museum, February 2003.

ONLINE COLLECTIONS

Central Intelligence Agency, Freedom of Information Act Electronic Reading Room.

Nuremberg Trials Project, A Digital Document Collection. Harvard Law School Library, Harvard University.

Library of Congress: Trial of the Major War Criminals before the International Military Tribunal, Nuremberg, November 14, 1945–October 1, 1946.

The National Archives, Kew, Richmond, Surrey.

T-Force and Field Information Agency, Technical Archiv und Bibliothek, Fritz Bauer Institut, Frankfurt am Main.

The Avalon Project, Lillian Golden Law Library, Yale Law School, New Haven, CT. Nuremberg Trial Proceedings, Vol. 7, 2008.

Time & Life Pictures Collection, Getty Images.

United States Holocaust Memorial Museum, Washington, D.C.: *Holocaust Encyclopedia; Photo Archives; Encyclopedia of Camps and Ghettos, 1933–1945.*

The Wollheim Memorial, Fritz Bauer Institute, Frankfurt, Germany.

Also by Annie Jacobsen

Area 51: An Uncensored History of America’s
Top Secret Military Base

NOTES

Prologue

“I’m mad on technology”: Hitler, *Table Talk*, 308.

“These men are enemies”: Maxwell AFB History Office document. Memo, Patterson to Secy, General Staff, May 28, 1945, Subj: “German Scientists.”

the JIC warned the Joint Chiefs of Staff: JIC estimate, JIC 250 (Winter 1945), said that the Soviets would avoid war with the United States until 1952. JIC estimate, JCS 1696 (Summer 1946), said that war with the Soviets would be “total war.”

the surgeon general: RG 319 Walter Schreiber, Schuster File, August 18, 1949; HLSL Item No. 286. The Harvard Law School Library owns approximately one million pages of documents relating to the trial of the major war criminals before the International Military Tribunal (IMT) and to the subsequent twelve trials of other accused war criminals before the United States Nuremberg Military Tribunals (NMT). As part of Harvard’s Nuremberg Trial Project, many of these documents are now available online. When such a digital document exists, I list it hereafter by its HLSL item number.

sarin gas: Sarin, tabun, soman, and VX are all organophosphorus nerve agents—liquids, not gases (under most combat conditions); some chemical weapons experts use the term “nerve agent,” not “nerve gas.”

Chapter One: The War and the Weapons

difficult time: Pash, *The Alsos Mission*, 147–51.

Air battles raged overhead: Goudsmit, 68.

soldiers guarded: Ibid., 73.

documents in the cabinets: Pash, *The Alsos Mission*, 154.

Bill Cromartie and Fred Wardenberg: Ibid., 157.

Reich Research Council: HLSL Item No. 2076; *Deichmann*, 4, 90–93. Originally established in 1937, the Reich Research Council was designed to focus Germany's individual science branches on a war economy—to be in sync with Hitler's Four-Year Plan, of which Hermann Göring was plenipotentiary (minister). The original president of the Reich Research Council was General Karl Becker, an engineer. On June 9, 1942, by Führer decree, Hermann Göring was made chairman of the Reich Research Council, with all research to focus on warfare.

members of the Nazi Party: Goudsmit, 73.

set up camp in Professor Haagen's apartment: RG 165 "Code Name: Alsos Mission, Scientific Intelligence Mission, M.I.S., G-2, W.D.," photographic history compiled by Colonel Boris T. Pash, 10.

Krations on the dining room table: Ibid., 11.

"usual gossip": Goudsmit, 69.

"Heil Hitler, Prof. Dr. E. Haagen": Goudsmit, 74–75; Pash, *The Alsos Mission*, 150.

The document: Goudsmit, 74.

troubling reality: Goudsmit, 79; Pash, *The Alsos Mission*, 149–52.

The sword and the shield: HLSL Item No. 1614; HLSL Item No. 1615.

readied for a celebration: Neufeld, *Von Braun*, 187–88. There are conflicting reports about where this ceremony may have taken place (Schlossberg?), as discussed with Michael Neufeld on April 3, 2013.

china place setting: Photographs, Dornberger files, Deutsches Museum, Munich.

Christian Science Monitor reported: April 28, 1945, http://www.nasm.si.edu/events/spaceage/vengeance.htm.

“hitherto unknown, unique weapons”: Evans, 674. The quote is from Adolf Hitler, *Reden und Proklamationen, 1932–1945* (Speeches and Proclamations, 1932–1945).

rocket programs: The German army called the V-2 the A-4; Neufeld, *The Rocket and the Reich*, 1.

“Around the castle in the dark forest”: Neufeld, *Von Braun*, 188.

wunderkind-physicist: Von Braun was a poor student. His excellence in physics took off after 1929, when he read *Die Rakete zu den Planetenräumen* (By Rocket into Interplanetary Space), by Hermann Oberth.

Knight’s Cross of the War Service Cross: Neufeld, *Von Braun*, 187. Neufeld explains that this award is “a very high noncombatant decoration equivalent to the Knight’s Crosses awarded for valor” and illustrates von Braun’s high place in the Nazi hierarchy in the final months.

receiving the honor: Photographs, Dornberger files, Deutsches Museum, Munich.

Albert Speer was now responsible: Evans, 324.

“Total productivity in armaments”: Ibid., 327.

science and technology programs: Cornwell, 313.

“sounded thoroughly utopian”: Speer, *Reich*, 366.

“excitement of the evening”: Dornberger files, Deutsches Museum, Munich; Neufeld, *Von Braun*, 188.

flutes of champagne: Photographs, Dornberger files, Deutsches Museum, Munich.

highest death toll: See www.V2Rocket.com. This website contains an eyewitness account of the incident by Charles Ostyn under “The Rex Cinema.”

“It seemed likely that”: McGovern, 62.

Trichel was putting together: NASA History Office, 194.

The British had the lead: McGovern, 101.

the Middle Works: It is sometimes also referred to as the Central Works.

move rocket production underground: Himmler wanted to take charge of the entire V-weapons program, displacing Albert Speer, but this proved impossible considering the fact that Hitler saw Speer as the miracle worker of armaments production (Evans, 320–25).

Hans Kammler: Neufeld, *The Rocket and the Reich*, 201.

Jedem das Seine: Derives from the Latin phrase *Suum cuique,* “to each his own” or “to each what he deserves.” The phrase is also attributed to Cicero, who wrote, “Iustitia suum cuique distribuit.” In Nazi Germany these slogans were transformed into propaganda phrases and were hung over the main entrance gate to many concentration camps. *Jedem das Seine* was over Buchenwald. *Arbeit macht frei,* “Work makes you free,” was over Auschwitz.

high school graduate: RG 330 Arthur Rudolph, JIOA Form No. 2., Basic Personnel Record. The extent of Rudolph’s higher education, listed on his personnel record, was “toolmaking and machine construction”—courses he’d taken at vocational school.

Rudolph worked with the SS construction staff: Neufeld, *The Rocket and the Reich,* 206.

The prisoners worked: Aalmans, 10. I use the monograph Aalmans wrote for the U.S. War Crimes commission as my primary source for Dora-

Nordhausen facts unless otherwise noted. The statistics vary dramatically in secondary works.

read one report: Aalmans, 10.

workers suffered and died: Ibid., 11.

dead were replaceable: The Mittelbau-Dora Memorial has many details online: http://www.buchenwald.de/en/338/.

approximately half of the sixty thousand: This is Aalmans's figure. The memorial puts the death rate at two out of three.

innocuous-sounding division: Allen, 2. The German term is Wirtschaftsverwaltungshauptamt.

This office was overseen by Heinrich Himmler: Himmler received his authority directly from Adolf Hitler. The SS functioned as an extrajudicial organization, carrying out the most atrocious aspects of the war, including the concentration camp system, mass exterminations, and the slave labor network.

required partnerships: Allen, 173.

Speer's buildings: Evans, 327.

"The work must proceed": Aalmans, title page of the war crimes monograph.

first six months: Evans, 665.

"American standards," wrote Speer: Neufeld, *The Rocket and the Reich*, 212.

Himmler reminded the Führer: Evans, 663–65.

thirty subcamps: As explained at the memorial site, "Dora and other subcamps originally belonging to the Buchenwald complex were amalgamated to form the independent Mittelbau-Dora Concentration Camp, in which Dora now served as the main camp. Once Mittelbau had become an independent concentration camp, it gained further subcamps through the relocation of new armament projects to the Southern Harz Mountains."

“Mittelwerk General Manager”: RG 330 Georg Rickhey, JIOA Form No. 2, Basic Personnel Record. His position as such earned him a salary of 54,000 reichsmarks a year. The average German worker during this period earned 3,100 reichsmarks a year.

Rickhey was in charge: Bundesarchiv Ludwigsburg, Georg Rickhey B-162/964; RG 330 Georg Rickhey “Statement of Work History” and “Condensed statements of my education and my activities” (March 4, 1948).

typical rate of four marks: Neufeld, *The Rocket and the Reich*, 186. Along with slaves, writes Neufeld, the SS Business Administration Main Office supplied security guards, food, and clothing “in a manner that led to a heavy death toll from starvation, disease and overwork.”

two and three reichsmarks per man: Aalmans, 12.

were all present: Neufeld, *The Rocket and the Reich*, 228.

“During my last visit to the Mittelwerk”: Ibid., 229.

“Howling and exploding bombs”: Speer, *Reich*, 418.

poison gas air locks: Author tour of Schloss Kransberg estate and interview with Jens Hermann, caretaker of the castle, August 1, 2012.

series of small cement bunkers: Photographs, Bavarian State Archive, Munich; interview with Hanns-Claudius Scharff, September 27, 2012.

Hitler had been directing: Photographs of Hitler at Adlerhorst/Eagle’s Nest, Bavarian State Archive, Munich.

Speer later recalled: Speer, *Reich*, 419–21.

grand Führerbunker in Berlin: RG 330 Georg Rickhey, “Statement of Work History”; Bundesarchiv Ludwigsburg, Georg Rickhey B-162/964.

Hitler moving back: On January 15, Hitler boarded his armored train for the nineteen-hour trip to Berlin.

captured or destroyed: Speer, *Reich*, 422.

ferocious and fanatical Nazi Party loyalist: Kershaw, *The End*, 50.

“I am a deserter”: Photographs on display at the Dachau concentration camp memorial site, permanent exhibition.

no one had any idea: Speer, *Reich*, 422.

an otherwise empty hotel: Ibid., 422.

“In my room hung an etching”: Ibid.

“The war is lost”: Shirer, *Rise and Fall*, 1097. Shirer also notes that “from the afternoon of January 27, the Russians had crossed the Oder 100 miles from Berlin. Hitler’s HQ had moved to the Chancellery in Berlin where he would remain until the end.”

Chapter Two: Destruction

Levi recalled: Thomson, 184.

Auschwitz III: U.S. Army aerial photograph, “Auschwitz-Birkenau Complex, Oświęcim, Poland 26 June 1944.” Enlarged from the original negative and captioned by the CIA: “SS War Industries, IG Farben *etc.* Auschwitz III Buna.” National Archives; Schmaltz, Buna Monowitz monograph.

first corporate concentration camp: Drummer and Zwilling, 80.

had been murdered for minor infractions: Interview with Gerhard Maschkowski, June 2, 2012.

nine thousand emaciated, starving inmates: Ibid.; see also oral history interview with Gerhard Maschkowski, June 29, 2007, Archive of the Fritz Bauer Institute, Norbert Wollheim Memorial, Frankfurt, Germany.

“Dogs on leather leashes”: Interview with Gerhard Maschkowski, June 2, 2012; Primo Levi describes this similarly.

infectious diseases ward: Thomson, 186; the German word is Infektionsabteilung.

“He had a high temperature”: Thomson, 186.

Primo Levi explained: In a letter to his friend Jean Samuel (Thomson, 186–87).

plant manager of Buna-Werk IV: Author visit to Fritz Bauer Institute in Frankfurt, which is located inside the former IG Farben building. For a full listing of the Fritz Bauer collection of documents on Ambros, which include many from the NMT, see the Wollheim Memorial: http://www.wollheim-memorial.de/en/igwerksleitung.

Ambros had been awarded: RG 319 Otto Ambros, SHAEF file card, WD44714/36, “Microfilm Project MP-B-102.” The card reads: “Name: Ambros, Career: Member of I.G. Board, Chairman of C-Committee (i.e.

Committee for Poison Gas) in Speer Ministry, Chief of CW Production, Chief of Buna Production. In June 1944 Hitler [m]ade a donation of one million marks to him. [*sic*] sotensibly [*sic*] as a reward to him and his collaborators for an important discovery in Buna making Germany independent of natural rubber."

Ambros left the concentration camp: Walther Dürrfeld, the engineer in charge of the Buna plant, was the second man. Walther Dürrfeld, affidavit, February 18, 1947, NI-4184. Archive of the Fritz Bauer Institute, Subsequent Nuremberg Trials, Case VI, 73–77.

to destroy evidence: RG 330 Jürgen von Klenck, D-64032, July 25, 1952; RG 319 Otto Ambros, September 28, 1944.

evacuate Dyhernfurth: "Elimination of German Resources for War," 1282; Tucker, 70.

kill an individual in minutes: The figure varies. Many WWII-era documents state that liquid tabun can kill a man in thirty seconds from exposure. The Centers for Disease Control and Prevention (CDC) puts the figure at "within 1 to 10 minutes."

Exposure meant: CDC Fact Sheet, "Chemical Emergencies, Facts about Tabun."

where accidents had happened: Tucker, 48.

last moments of an ant: Harris and Paxman, xiv.

Sachsenheimer's commando force: Groehler, 11.

first cleared of pine trees: Gross-Rosen Museum, Rogoznica, Poland. The concentration camp was established in August 1940 as a subcamp of Sachsenhausen. Prisoners were assigned slave labor in a local granite quarry, which belonged to the SS.

largest corporation in Europe: Dwork and Van Pelt, 198.

chairman of Committee-C: RG 319 Otto Ambros, SHAEF file card, WD44714/36.

prestigious title: Ibid.; Stasi records (BStU), Dr. Otto Ambros file, MfS HA IX/11 PA 5.380. In German, the medals are Kriegsverdienstkreuz and Ritterkreuz des Kriegsverdienstkreuzes.

official car and airplane retrofitted: Stasi records (BStU), Dr. Walter Schieber file, MfS HA IX/11 AS 253/68.

Their reliability: Groehler, 246, 268–69.

Dr. Walter Schieber: Nuremberg Trial Testimony, February 10, 1947. Transcript, 2788.

similar to deep-sea diving suits: Tucker, 51.

Witnesses in nearby villages: Groehler, 9–10; Tucker, 70–71.

void of people and tabun: Tucker, 71–72.

Sixteenth and Eighteenth Chemical Brigades: RG 218 Joint Chiefs of Staff, Joint Intelligence Group Report, “Intelligence on Soviet Capabilities for Chemical and Bacteriological Warfare,” 15–16.

The factory was dismantled: RG 319 Otto Ambros, “Report on Chemical Warfare Based on the Interrogation and Written Reports of Jürgen E. von Klenck, Also Comments by Speer and Dr. E. Mohrhardt,” 25, 34–35.

Chemical Works No. 91: Tucker, 402.

Red Army’s stockpile: Tucker, 107.

Stalin, rather unexpectedly argued: From the *Telegraph*, January 1, 2006, “Churchill Wanted Hitler sent to the electric chair,” based on the notebooks of Sir Norman Brook, the former deputy cabinet secretary to Churchill, who kept a shorthand account of the proceedings.

“If the war is lost,” Hitler famously told Speer: Shirer, *Rise and Fall*, 1104.

“What will remain”: Kershaw, *The End*, 290. This famous passage is translated from German in a variety of ways and has been cited many different ways.

He told Speer: Sereny, *Albert Speer,* 475.

Demolitions on Reich Territory: Ibid., 475–76.

death marches from Auschwitz: Aalmans, 10–11.

given a promotion: Mittelbau was the parent corporation to Mittelwerk and operated additional weapons factories in the area.

Jewish factory owner: The businessman had fled to South Africa to avoid being deported to a concentration camp.

launch ramps for the V-2: Neufeld, *Von Braun,* 194.

"dug by workers": Ibid., 195.

he commandeered: Ibid., 194.

Von Braun had to have known: *United States v. Kurt Andrae et al.,* trial records.

To send a message: Neufeld, *Von Braun,* 165.

one war crimes report: Aalmans, 11.

get their crane back: "Interview with Rudolph by Major Eugene Smith of the U.S. Army Air Force, June 2, 1947," (DOJ monograph); Feigin, 333.

benefits: Neufeld, *Von Braun,* 193–94.

facilities designer Bernhard Tessmann: McGovern, 108. Tessmann had been chief designer of the test facilities at Peenemünde.

transported von Braun: Neufeld, *Von Braun,* 195, citing a letter that von Braun wrote to his parents after the war.

personal aide, Dieter Huzel: McGovern, 108.

last V-1s were fired: Neufeld, *The Rocket and the Reich,* 263.

taken to the Alps in a private car: McGovern, 111; the rocket engineers were under guard by the SD (Sicherheitsdienst).

wearing blindfolds: Huzel, 151–61.

Nazi documents hidden: Huzel, 159.

decided to make an exception: This is from Huzel’s memoir. There are different versions of the story, concerning whether or not the two men were supposed to tell Fleischer.

Chapter Three: The Hunters and the Hunted

their next scientific intelligence mission: Pash, *The Alsos Mission*, 160–62. Pash had done several reconnaissance-type missions, including in Italy, without Goudsmit, before Normandy.

apartment belonged to IG Farben: Pash, *The Alsos Mission*, 161.

largest task force to date: Pash, *The Alsos Mission*, 171; Goudsmit, 77.

Montgomery's famous words: Lasby, 23.

it truly meant plunder: Associated Press, March 24, 1945.

Representing the United States: Gimbel, 3–17.

Black Lists: Ibid., 3, 9.

Frontline requests: Ibid., 8; SHAEF sent CIOS requests through the London secretariat for coordination.

bright red *T* painted: RG 165 "Code Name: Alsos Mission, Scientific Intelligence Mission, M.I.S., G-2, W.D.," photographic history compiled by Colonel Boris T. Pash, 20.

dispatched his team to Europe: McGovern, 101–2. Major Staver was already in London.

"30 Assault Unit": Bower, 75–76.

CHAOS for CIOS: Lasby, 66.

one of the greatest competitions: Ibid., 18–19.

"not in good shape": Pash, *The Alsos Mission*, 172.

"A single salvo": Ibid., 173.

the factory been heavily damaged: RG 165 "Code Name: Alsos Mission, Scientific Intelligence Mission, M.I.S., G-2, W.D.," photographic history compiled by Colonel Boris T. Pash, 18.

destroyed or removed: Pash, *The Alsos Mission*, 174–75.

Lieutenant Colonel Philip R. Tarr: In much of the existing secondary literature, Philip R. Tarr is misidentified as Paul R. Tarr; Kleber and Birdsell, 40, 45, 454.

CIOS team: Kleber and Birdsell, 40, 45, 79.

raw materials were coded: Tucker, 49.

always said the same thing: DuBois, 37–38.

“lied vigorously”: Tilley and Whitten, “Scientific Personnel I.G. Farbenindustrie A.G., Ludwigshafen,” 45.

Alsos had been trailing: Pash, *The Alsos Mission*, 174.

flushing documents down the toilet: McGovern, 104.

assigned by Göring: Goudsmit, 187–89; NMT Case 1, Document No-897, “List of Plenipotentiaries.”

“Leading men of science”: HLSL Item No. 2076.

led to the release: Goudsmit, 188.

weapons-related research programs: Goudsmit, 80–85; Osenberg also worked with the Gestapo to learn and record the habits of the individual men, their weaknesses and their strengths—if they had a drinking problem, a mistress, or were homosexual.

captured Osenberg: Goudsmit, 93, 197.

index of cards: Dowden, “Examination of Dr. Ing. W. Osenberg and Documents,” 4, Appendix II.

appalled by the hubris: Goudsmit, 198. In German the sign read: “z.Zt.Paris.”

“[O]ne cannot trust you”: Ibid., 200.

85 percent of the city destroyed: O’Donnell, 31.

“as Berlin awaited”: Beevor, 173.

“The deadly Jewish-Bolshevik”: Quoted in Evans, 683, 685.

four thousand Nazi bureaucrats: Beevor notes that ironically, in April 1945, there were more than double the number of those assigned work here.

adored Knemeyer: Knemeyer, 23.

lost more than twenty thousand airplanes: Evans, 683.

didn’t mean much: Shirer, *Rise and Fall*, 1099.

Speer and Knemeyer had agreed: Knemeyer, 23, 34; Letter from Albert Speer to Sigurd Knemeyer, February 7, 1981.

escape to Greenland: Knemeyer, 31; Speer, *Inside*, 494. “It was a plan hatched in a combination of panic and romanticism,” Speer claimed after the war, telling the British historian Hugh Trevor-Roper, “Greenland is simply wonderful in summer and May” (Trevor-Roper, 178).

made the first high-altitude sortie: Knemeyer, 39.

Baumbach and Knemeyer began gathering: Ibid., 31; Baumbach, 230.

Speer’s command: Knemeyer, 31.

Chapter Four: Liberation

Jones’s: Collection at Huntsville, AL, Company L, 414th Regiment, 104th Infantry Division.

“It was a fabric of moans”: Bower, 109.

seven war crimes investigators: Dora-Nordhausen memorial. Aalmans’s photographs have become iconic images of the liberation of Nordhausen.

“Four people were dying every hour”: Bower, 119.

“The building and sites”: RG 319 Kurt Blome, “Alsos Mission Report by Cpt. William J. Cromartie and Major J. M. Barnes,” July 30, 1945.

Dr. Gross’s possessions: Ibid., 9.

“Russian contributions on plague”: Ibid., 10.

the Alsos scientists noted in their report: Ibid., 11.

Hermann Göring Aeronautical Research Center at Völkenrode: Samuel, 147. This institution (Luftfahrtforschungsanstalt) is referred to a number of different ways; I use the U.S. Air Force term.

Operation Lusty: It stood for LUftwaffe Secret TechnologY (Operation LUSTY fact sheet, National Museum of the U.S. Air Force, World War II gallery).

When Putt arrived: Samuel, 105–6.

a legendary test pilot: USAF biography, Lieutenant General Donald Leander Putt, U.S. Air Force website; Thomas, 219–40.

“He displayed the ability”: Thomas, 224, quoting Lieutenant General L. C. Craigie.

payload was eventually revealed: Thomas, 226.

still unknown to American fliers: Samuel, 150.

When Putt learned: McGovern, chapter 15; History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip; Samuel, 4–5.

“the most superb instruments”: Samuel, 143.

Why not also fly: McGovern, chapter 15; Samuel 4–5.

“If we are not too proud”: Samuel, 4, cites Colonel Putt’s “Technical Intelligence Speech” given to the Dayton Country Club, May 7, 1945.

Knerr and Putt believed they could: Lasby, 76.

“Pride and face saving”: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 0920.

dispatched to Raubkammer: CIOS Report 31: “Chemical Warfare Installations in the Münsterlager Area, Including Raubkammer.”

single yellow ring: Tucker, 85; Photographs, Loucks papers (mustard, sarin, and tabun munitions).

extracting the liquid substance: CIOS Report 31: “Chemical Warfare Installations.”

rabbit’s skin: Ibid.

menacing new breed of chemical weapons: Tucker, 85–86; Groehler, 323–24; Bower, 94–95.

set up in a subway tunnel: RG 319 Walter Schreiber, “Capture and Preliminary Interrogation,” December 17, 1948.

not necessarily the truth: RG 319 Walter Schreiber, “Agent Report,” October 27, 1948.

Goebbels’s Happy Birthday broadcast: http://archive.org/details/Hitler_Speeches.

Hitler said a few words: Beevor, 251.

final assault on Berlin: Beevor, 255. Beevor notes that the Red Army was still outside Berlin proper, and the artillery fire actually hit the Berlin suburbs in the northeast.

Soviet operation to capture Berlin: Beevor, 147.

1.8 million shells: Ibid., 262.

Knemeyer and Baumbach would flee Berlin: Knemeyer, 34; Baumbach, 233.

Baumbach later explained: Baumbach, 233.

through an intermediary: Pogue, 476.

escape with Speer: Baumbach, 230.

manor of Dobbin: Knemeyer, 34, 35–36; Baumbach, 234–37.

“In the very near future”: Baumbach, 236. Baumbach says he told Himmler, “I was examining a map of the world yesterday to see where we could fly to. I have planes and flying boats ready to fly to any point at the globe. The aircraft are manned by trustworthy crews. I have given instructions that nothing is to take off without a verbal order from myself.”

where Knemeyer waited: Knemeyer, 35–36.

was still on hold: Speer, *Inside,* 494. Knemeyer, Baumbach, and Speer met up in the interim in Hamburg. In his memoirs, Speer claims that Baumbach pressed him to escape, but Speer says he “rejected this idea” because he had other things to do first. Speer also says the plan was Baumbach’s idea but then contradicts himself by explaining how he had wanted to go to Greenland since seeing the Udet film.

“overwhelming desire”: Ibid., 476.

Driving alone in his private car: Ibid., 477.

landing amid rubble piles: Ibid., 478.

Speer’s final meeting with Hitler: Ibid., 485. Speer does not specify a date on his last visit to the FHQ but writes that “six days later” Hitler wrote his political testament, which was recorded on April 29, 1945, at 4:00 a.m.

The post was surrounded: Author tour of Dachau concentration camp memorial site; maps and old photographs in the archive and library.

several thousand corpses: NMT Evidence Code PS-2428; War Crimes Investigation Team No. 6823.

“concentrated” in a group: Lifton, 153.

“legally independent administrative units”: Martin Broszat, “The Concentration Camps, 1933–1945,” in *Anatomy of the SS State*, edited by Helmut Krausnick, Martin Broszat, and Hans-Adolf Jacobsen (London: Collins, 1968), 429–30.

cold and gloomy: Smith, 79.

“One of my men weeps”: Ibid., 91.

“I cannot believe this is possible”: Ibid., 92.

“On one of these walks”: Ibid., 178.

freestanding barracks: Author tour of Dachau concentration camp memorial site, archive and library, postwar, witness drawings.

Experimental Cell Block Five: Technical Report No. 331-45, “German Aviation Medical Research at the Dachau Concentration Camp,” 6; Alexander, “Exposure to Cold,” 17. The facility was also called “Block 5, Experimental Station.”

Reich’s elite medical doctors: HLSL Item No. 995; HLSL Item No. 80; HLSL Item No. 4.

Chapter Five: The Captured and Their Interrogators

planned their final assault: To the Soviets, the Reichstag symbolized the “fascist beast.” To fly the Soviet flag from the top of the Reichstag on May 1, a national holiday in the Soviet Union, would be a Red Army propaganda coup.

Sometime around 3:30: Beevor, 359.

given to him by Albert Speer: Knemeyer, 37.

Their resort, Haus Ingeburg: Neufeld, *Von Braun,* 198.

“There I was living royally”: Lang, “A Romantic Urge,” 75.

the radio announcer declared: McGovern, 141.

make a deal with the Americans: Neufeld, *Von Braun,* 199.

Dornberger was overheard saying: McGovern, 142, citing his own interviews with Dornberger and von Braun about their time at Oberjoch.

German and Austrian intelligence sources: von Braun, *Space Man,* 12–13.

When Private Schneikert spotted: Burrows, 116.

CIOS Black List: McGovern, 123. “Staver had placed von Braun’s name at the top of his Black List.”

“biggest liar”: Neufeld, *Von Braun,* 199–201.

Twenty-five agents: DuBois, 40; Jeffreys, 354.

wealthiest banker in all of Germany: DuBois, 40; Wollheim Memorial IG Farben, biographies of key executives of IG Farben, Hermann Schmitz (1881–1960).

“the legend of Schmitz”: DuBois, 40.

“a dumpy Frau”: Ibid., 40.

“Doctor of Laws Schmitz”: Ibid., 41.

justify arresting: Jeffreys, 356.

Major Tilley could: Affidavit of Major Edmund Tilley, November 21, 1945; DuBois, 6–20.

buried in Schmitz’s office wall: Tilley, “Report on the Finding of Evidence of Hermann Schmitz’s Connection with and Knowledge of the Auschwitz Concentration Camp.”

cartoonish drawing: DuBois, 43–44.

Tilley did not yet know: Beevor, 46. Three months earlier, on January 27, 1945, Soviet reconnaissance troops with the 107th Rifle Division discovered the Auschwitz concentration camp. Red Army photographers took pictures of the atrocities they found, all of which were sent back to Moscow. A report about the liberation of Auschwitz was published on February 9, 1945, in *Stalin’s Banner* (*Stalinskoe Znamya*), the Red Army newspaper, but as for news for the outside world, that was being withheld by the propaganda ministry in Moscow until Germany surrendered.

Stalin was waiting: *Pravda,* the Soviet newspaper, published a small report on January 28, 1945, and on February 1 printed a thirty-line article about the liberation of Auschwitz, stating only the size of the camp, the number of inmates left, and the nutritional condition of the prisoners left behind.

Tilley had no idea: DuBois, 44; Tilley, “Report on the Finding of Evidence of Hermann Schmitz’s Connection with and Knowledge of the Auschwitz Concentration Camp.”

at the Nuremberg trials: DuBois, 4–10.

“a plain chemist”: Ibid., 4.

triggered an alert: RG 319 Kurt Blome, Arrest Report, May 17, 1945.

searching for Dr. Blome: RG 330 Kurt Blome, Preliminary Interrogation Report (PIR) No. 1; RG 319 Kurt Blome, File No. 100-665, War Crimes Office, Judge Advocate General’s Office.

a dedicated and proud Nazi: RG 330 Kurt Blome, PIR No. 1.

His book: Kurt Blome, *Arzt im Kampf*, 138–39; chapter 7, “Kampf für Adolf Hitler und der Sieg” (Battle for Adolf Hitler and the Victory). Blome also wrote *Der Krebs* (The Cancer), and conducted extensive cancer research for the Reich before the war.

trying to piece together: RG 330 Kurt Blome, Extract from 12 Army Group Interrogation Centre, June 22, 1945; Interrogation of Doctor Kurt Blome, July 1, 1945.

“special treatment” (*Sonderbehandlung*): Bundesarchiv Ludwigsburg, Dr. Kurt Blome file, B162/28667.

hierarchy of the Reich Hygiene Committee: Conti hanged himself in his cell in October 1945, thereby becoming a convenient scapegoat for Blome and others during the doctors’ trial.

“[I] can not approve”: RG 330 Kurt Blome, PIR No. 1.

“mass sterilization, gassing of Jews”: Ibid.

Major Gill pressed Blome for information: all the information in the Gill-Blome interview comes from RG 330 Kurt Blome, Interrogation of Doctor Kurt Blome, July 1, 1945.

Blome denied having any idea: Ibid.; Goudsmit, 73.

Beasley asked around: Beasley, 76.

“I made daily visits to the jails”: Ibid.

“a nervous little man”: From Norman Beasley, “The Capture of the German Rocket Secrets,” *American Legion*, October 1963. The piece was later compiled by Diane L. Hamm in *Military Intelligence: Its Heroes and Legends* (U.S. Army Intelligence and Security Command History Office, October 1987; rev. ed. Honolulu, HI: University Press of the Pacific, 2001), 73–83.

“[W]e accept you”: Beasley, 80.

He had promised Rickhey: RG 330 Georg Rickhey, Letter to Mr. Peter Beasley, April 6, 1948.

daily six-mile drive: Sereny, 547.

he had been shaving: Ibid., 555.

soldiers with antitank guns: Ibid.

arrested and taken away: Schmidt, *Justice*, 130; also in the castle, and dually listed on Speer's arrest report, was Speer's good friend and Hitler's personal doctor, Karl Brandt.

American officials had known: Sereny, 547–49.

in discussions with American officials: Ibid., 556. Sereny notes that in *Spandau*, Speer made no mention of his arrest or his first interrogations.

Nitze recalled years later: Ibid., 549. Speer's secretary, Annemarie Kempf, recalled May 12, 1945, as the date that the American officials arrived at the castle.

"He said he couldn't comment": Ibid., 551.

the prisoner announced: Longerich, 1; *After the Battle* 14 (August 15, 1976): 35.

"Police Chief of Nazi Europe": The *Time* cover image was drawn by Boris Artzybasheff.

papers that identified him: Longerich, 2.

blue-tipped object: Ibid., 3.

jerked his head back: Ibid.

"[T]his evil thing": Quoted in Winston G. Ramsey, "Himmler's Suicide," in *After the Battle* 14 (August 15, 1976), 35. The officer assisting Dr. Wells was Major Norman Whittaker.

Of the 18.2 million: Kershaw, 379.

50 million people: A definitive figure is impossible to pin down. This one comes from the Eleanor Roosevelt papers project, George Washington University, Washington, D.C.—available online: http://www.gwu.edu/~erpapers/.

“The question who is a Nazi”: Ziemke, 380.

Chapter Six: Harnessing the Chariot of Destruction

“The scale on which science”: Bower, 102. Farren was director of Farnborough, a research facility of the Royal Aircraft Establishment.

“German science must be curbed”: Lasby 32, 63; O’Mara, “Long-Range Policy on German Scientific and Technological Research, AIF.”

a directive known as JCS 1076: RG 164, Records of the War Department General and Special Staffs; Valero, 3.

scientists were now being held: Secondary sources vary on this number. I use Lasby’s figures; telephone interview with Clarence Lasby, March 23, 2013.

General Eisenhower sought clarification: RG 331 AC/SG-2 to Chief, MIS, May 16, 1945, Subj: “Long-Range Policy on German Scientific and Technological Research”; Lasby, 75–76.

a “matter of urgency”: Quoted in Lasby, 63–64.

Wolfe flew to SHAEF headquarters: General Wolfe also served on a classified study regarding secret German weapons that was being conducted by the Foreign Economic Administration (FEA). In this capacity, General Wolfe was to determine if the Nazis had shipped wonder weapons out of Germany before the end of the war, with the purpose of later selling them on the black market—similar to stolen artwork and Nazi gold. The results were inconclusive, but it gave General Wolfe a broader vision of the kinds of secret weapons projects the Nazis had been working on, and their value.

hardly a good time: Lasby, 65, 106.

“Besieged by the countless demands”: Lasby, 65.

RG 169. Memo, Major K. B. Wolfe to War-Navy Ad Hoc Interdepartmental Committee to Handle FEA Projects, May 14, 1945.

“V-2 had exploded overhead”: McGovern, 99. Cites his own interview with Major Staver.

learning everything he could: Ibid., 99–106.

U.S. Army calculations: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, “Letter and Report from Staver to Colonel S. B. Ritchie,” May 23, 1946.

Ask Rees, Fleischer said: McGovern, 163.

interviewed by Staver: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, “Letter and Report from Staver to Colonel S. B. Ritchie,” May 23, 1946.

rough treatment: RG 330 Walther Riedel, JIOA Form No. 4, Security Report by Sponsoring Agency.

“short trips around the moon”: Ibid.: McGovern, 166–67.

Riedel insisted: RG 330 Walther Riedel, JIOA Form No. 2, Basic Personnel Record. The five Nazi organizations were: NSDAP, NSKK (Motor Corps) NSV (Welfare), DAF (Labor Front), NSBDT (technicians), RLB (air raid defense).

This territory included: McGovern, 151. Even though the land had been conquered by American forces, it was agreed, per Yalta, that the Soviets would control it. The Russians lost seventeen million people fighting the Nazis and wanted reparations to represent losses. This piece of land was 400 miles long and 120 miles wide in some places.

Dr. H. P. Robertson told Major Staver: Papers of Dr. Howard P. Robertson, California Institute of Technology, Pasadena, California; Telephone interview with Clarence Lasby, March 23, 2013; Lasby, 108.

“hostile to the Allied cause”: Papers of Dr. Howard P. Robertson, California Institute of Technology, Pasadena, California.

Dr. Robertson was a mathematical physicist: Ibid.

in defiance of the Nazi Party: Albert Einstein biography online at Nobel Prize.org.

“Von Ploetz said”: McGovern, 168.

Neither Huzel nor Tessmann had shared: In his book, Huzel says that he told von Braun about Fleischer. Every other account says that he did not.

“100% Nazi,” a “dangerous type”: RG 330 Arthur Rudolph, JIOA Form No. 4, Security Report by Sponsoring Agency.

Denazification was an Allied strategy… through tribunals: Thomas Adam, ed., *Germany and the Americas: Culture, Politics, and History, O–Z* (Santa Barbara: ABC-CLIO, 2005), 275.

The Green Archer: Franklin, 98–99.

Staver was making headway: McGovern, 163–76.

Inn of the Three Lime Trees: McGovern, 169.

“in almost inaudible”: Ibid.

hitch a ride: Ibid.; the colleague was Major William Bromley.

Urgently request reply: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, “Letter and Report from Staver to Colonel S. B. Ritchie,” May 23, 1946.

Major Staver returned: McGovern, 175.

“ ‘Go, go—the Russians are coming’ ”: Franklin, 98–99.

Over one thousand Germans: McGovern, 183.

“I wanted to blow up”: Ibid., 185. The agreement required captured facilities to be “held intact and in good condition at the disposal of Allied representatives for such purposes as they may prescribe.”

Institute Rabe: Chertok, 345–48.

set up in a two-story schoolhouse: McGovern, 195.

Dr. Herbert Wagner and four: RG 330 Herbert A. Wagner, “Certificate from Sponsoring Department German (or Austrian) Scientist or Important Technician.” Wagner had been kept in the same facility as von Braun and Dornberger in the Bavarian Alps.

nemesis of the U.S. Navy: “Paperclip, Part I,” *Office of Naval Intelligence Review*, February 1949, 22–23.

surrendered itself: On May 8, Lieutenant Commander Johann Heinrich Fehler received a message that had been broadcast through the Japanese cipher ordering the U-234 to return to Bergen, Norway, or to continue on to Japan. Fehler chose to continue on to Japan. A few hours later, his chief radioman picked up news from Reuters that the Japanese government had severed all ties with Germany and was arresting any German citizens who were in Japan. On May 15, the USS *Sutton* intercepted the U-234 and turned her over to U.S. Coast Guardsmen, who escorted the vessel to Portsmouth, New Hampshire.

“said to contain”: William M. Blair, “Big U-Boat Arrives with High General,” *New York Times*, May 19, 1945.

Additionally, there were drawings and plans: William Broad, “Captured Cargo, Captivating Mystery,” *New York Times*, December 31, 1995.

one of the most qualified: Scalia, 144–45.

intelligence report: RG 330 Herbert Wagner, “Certificate from Sponsoring Department German (or Austrian) Scientist or Important Technician.”

Sturmabteilung: RG 65 Herbert Wagner, Federal Bureau of Investigation, File No. 106-131, June 1, 1948; Hunt, 7.

laws of the occupying forces: Bower, 120.

“an opportunist”: RG 65 Herbert Wagner, Federal Bureau of Investigation, File No. 106-131, June 1, 1948.

giving classified lectures: Scalia, 42–43.

“These men are enemies”: Maxwell AFB History office document. Memo, Patterson to Secy, General Staff, May 28, 1945, Subj: “German Scientists.”

Patterson suggested: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 9028; SWNCC was created in December 1944 to address political-military issues in U.S.-occupied Germany.

Chapter Seven: Hitler's Doctors

Nazi Party–sponsored medical journal: Weindling, 23; Bundesarchiv Ludwigsburg, Dr. Hubertus Strughold file, No. 828/73.

Eighth Air Force: Bullard and Glasgow, 47–48. Also known by its famous moniker, the Mighty Eighth. By the time Armstrong took over as its chief surgeon in 1944, the Mighty Eighth had 190,000 personnel, 300 of whom were flight surgeons. They were the command that conducted round-the-clock bombing against Nazi-occupied Europe.

twenty-two-pound armored jacket: USAF Biography of Major General (Dr.) Malcolm C. Grow. It also protected soldiers against a .45-caliber round fired at point-blank range.

hatched during a meeting: Bullard and Glasgow, 54.

new research laboratory: Benford, "Report from Heidelberg," 9. The actual quote is "bring back from Germany everything of aero medical interest to the Army Air Forces and all information of importance to medical science in general."

list of 115 individuals: Weindling, 80.

"became quite good friends": Bullard and Glasgow, 52.

Aviation Medical Research Institute: Benford, "Report from Heidelberg," 6. The institute's name, Luftfahrtmedizinische Forschungsinstitut, has been translated from the German in many different ways. The name as stated in the original report: Aviation Medical Research Institute of the Reich Air Ministry in Berlin.

specialist named Ulrich Luft: Bullard and Glasgow, 55–56.

Luft told Harry Armstrong: Mackowski, 111.

first documentary evidence: *Life*, "Life Behind the Picture: The Liberation of Buchenwald," May 7, 1945.

(UNWCC): Complete History of the United Nations War Crimes Commission and the Development of the Laws of War. Compiled by the United Nations War Crimes Commission. Published for the UNWCC by His Majesty's Stationery Office (London, 1948).

become a central player: Alexander Papers, Harvard Law School Library, Series 1, Nuremberg Materials, 1939–1947. Subseries A, Trial Documents, 1942–1947.

saw the liberated: Alexander Papers, Harvard Law School Library, Box 2, Letter to Mrs. Alexander in Newtonville, Mass, n.d.

brought doctors and nurses: Smith, 215; an estimated 75 percent of the former prisoners were still at Dachau.

medical crimes were suspected: Weindling, 77.

Fate and circumstance: Alexander Papers, Harvard Law School Library, Series II, Box 7, Subseries A, Personal Life, 1883–1985.

pull toward medicine: Ibid.; Schmidt, *Justice*, 24.

first woman awarded a PhD: That is, since the institution opened its doors in 1685; his mother received her PhD in 1903; Schmidt, *Justice*, 23.

intellectual-bohemian splendor: Alexander Papers, Harvard Law School Library, Series II, Box 7, Subseries A, Personal Life, 1883–1985.

would become his mentor: Weindling, 74; Schmidt, *Justice*, 30. In his notes, Schmidt states that Kleist has only recently become the focus of debate (301n).

Gustav Alexander was killed: Alexander Papers, Harvard Law School Library, Series II, Box 7, Subseries A, Personal Life, 1883–1985.

Schmidt, *Justice*, 40; on page 48, Schmidt writes, "According to a government census from July 1933, the German Reich had a total of 51527 doctors (4395 female doctors), of whom 5557 (10.9 per cent) were identified as Jewish. The figure was probably higher because hundreds of Jews had already emigrated by the time of the census. The Reich Representation of the German Jews estimated a total of 9000 'non-Aryan' doctors; about 17 per cent of all German doctors were therefore considered to be Jews. Compared to the number of Jews in the German population as a whole, which amounted to little more than 1 per cent in 1933, the Jews had acquired disproportionate representation in the medical and legal professions, in banking and the arts.”

“succumbed to the swastika”: Schmidt, *Justice*, 44. Prof. Kleist warned Dr. Alexander not to come back to Germany.

“Our very existences”: Schmidt, *Justice*, 55.

In China, Dr. Alexander: Alexander Papers, Harvard Law School Library, Series II, Box 7, Subseries A, Personal Life, 1883–1985.

“Have no false hopes”: Schmidt, *Justice*, 55.

“The ship traveled up”: Alexander Papers, Harvard Law School Library, Subseries B, 14-3, Letters, Theo Alexander Worcester, January 21, 1934.

to thrive in America: Alexander Papers, Harvard Law School Library, Series II, Box 7, Subseries A, Personal Life, 1883–1985.

joined the fight: Ibid. In 1938, Dr. Alexander had signed up to fight the Nazis on the front lines as part of the Army Reserve Medical Corps, but he was rejected because he was overweight. After war was declared, he signed a waiver that allowed him to join.

who might be guilty: Alexander Papers, Harvard Law School Library, Series 1, Nuremberg Materials, 1939–1947, Subseries A, Trial Documents, 1942–1947.

Institute for Aviation Medicine: Eckart, 111. The institute he was in charge of in Munich had previously been named the Physiological Institute in Munich, Department of Aviation Physiology.

In their first interview Weltz: Alexander, “Exposure to Cold,” 3–12.

“unfreeze a man”: Ibid., 5–7, 67.

“startling and useful discovery”: Ibid., 4.

groundbreaking research: Ibid., 11.

had solved an age-old riddle: Ibid., 8. The exact translation of Weltz’s goal was: “Is it possible to revive a man who is apparently dead from chilling… and after what interval of time can this still be done?”

this very technique: Ibid.

“adult pigs”: Ibid., 9.

“Weltz explicitly stated”: Ibid., 11–12.

dirty wooden tubs: Ibid., 9.

“were being concealed”: Ibid., 8.

“German science presents”: Alexander Papers, Harvard Law School Library, Series II, Box 2, Letter to Mrs. Alexander in Newtonville, Mass, n.d.

Untermenschen: Herausgegeben vom Reichsführer-SS und SS-Hauptamt. Berlin 1942 (Berlin Do 56/685), per Dr. Jens Westemeier.

Law for the Prevention of Genetically Diseased Offspring: Correspondence with John Dolibois, 2012–2013; United States Holocaust Memorial Museum (USHMM), *Holocaust Encyclopedia*, The Biological State: Nazi Racial Hygiene, 1933–1939. The *Holocaust Encyclopedia* is an online resource of the USHMM that provides text, historical photographs, maps, audio clips, and other artifacts related to the Holocaust, in fourteen languages.

requested that Kleist be fired: Schmidt, *Justice*, 95.

“It sometimes seems as if”: Alexander Papers, Harvard Law School Library, letter dated December 31, 1946. Dr. Alexander cited *The Tales of Hoffmann* by example. There, the evil Dr. Coppélius, posing as the Sandman, enters the bedrooms of sleeping children at night and cuts out their eyes. “Some new evidence has come in where two doctors in Berlin, one a man and the other a woman, collected eyes of different colour,” Alexander wrote in another letter to his wife, Phyllis. “It seems that the concentration camps were combed for people who had slightly differently coloured eyes. That means people whose one eye had a slightly different colour than the other. Who ever was unlucky enough to possess such a pair of slightly unequal eyes had them cut out and was killed, the eyes being sent to Berlin."

"On my way to Göttingen": Alexander, CIOS Report 24: "Exposure to Cold," 13.

To his mind, the experiments: Ibid., 8, 13.

Dr. Alexander told Dr. Strughold: Ibid., 13.

The conference: Bundesarchiv Ludwigsburg, Dr. Hubertus Strughold file, 828/73.

Rascher: Alexander, "Exposure to Cold," 13–68; Technical Report No. 331-45, "German Aviation Medical Research at the Dachau Concentration Camp," 77–92.

Did Strughold approve: Alexander, "Exposure to Cold," 13, 14.

received further extraordinary, related news: Ibid., 17–18.

"a car showed up": Telephone interview with Hugh Iltis, January 24, 2012.

most important collection: Ibid.

broke the original seals: Weindling, 76.

"The idea to start the experiments": Alexander, "Exposure to Cold," 20.

Dr. Ruff had been in charge: Ibid., 17; HLSL Item No. 28; HLSL Item No. 995.

photographs: Author viewed copies at Dachau concentration camp memorial site archive and library.

"Strughold at least must have": Alexander, "Exposure to Cold," 17.

"were still being covered up by" him: Ibid., 17, 65–66.

"too soft": Ibid., 41.

prisoner-witnesses who offered testimony: Ibid., 42–44.

Alexander first returned to Dachau: Ibid., 43. The men worked with Häusermann in the Dachau disinfectant plant, where cadavers were taken after they were autopsied.

“shipwreck experiments”: Alexander, “Exposure to Cold,” 10, Appendix I.

Father Michalowski described: HLSL Item No. 2585.

help of Hugh Iltis: Telephone interview with Hugh Iltis, January 24, 2012.

“Auschwitz is in every way”: Alexander, “Exposure to Cold,” 33.

private screening at the Air Ministry: Ibid., 66.

named Dr. Theodor Benzinger: Ibid., 66; HLSL Item No. 1320.

Winfield wrote: Winfield, “Preliminary Report,” 4–5; Strughold promised Winfield that his work was “largely academic,” which Winfield conceded was “somewhat contradictory,” given the work Strughold published, particularly high-altitude studies, which required that research be conducted in the field.

“[T]he heartbeat may continue”: Lovelace, 65.

high-altitude specialist who ran: Benford, “Report from Heidelberg,” 6.

“studies in reversible and irreversible deaths”: Lovelace, 67.

efforts to make salt water drinkable: HLSL Item No. 83.

“Strughold was not always quite honest”: Weindling, 78–80.

military intelligence objected: Ibid., 82.

handpicked fifty-eight: Benford, “Report from Heidelberg,” 1–3. Benford specifies who started when, circa October–November 1945, but indicates that deals were made in the summer/fall before.

Chapter Eight: Black, White, and Gray

debate over the Nazi scientist program: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 9030; Bower, chapter 7.

To "open our arms": History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 9028.

Patterson sent a memorandum: McGovern, 192–93.

chairman of SWNCC: Bird, 192.

helping to develop the war crimes program: Taylor, *Nuremberg Trials*, 22, 36.

backbone of a healthy economy: Bird, 229–30.

In McCloy's eye: This presentation is informed by Bird's biography of McCloy. It is also interesting to note that McGovern, who authored the book on the V-2 in the 1960s and interviewed many of the U.S. Army players, went on to work for McCloy in the high commissioner's office.

wished to see action overseas: Correspondence with John Dolibois, 2012–2013.

"the war was very real": Ibid.; Dolibois, 64–65.

"We had reports": Dolibois, 71.

He recalled Mondorf's "beautiful park": Correspondence with John Dolibois, 2012–2013.

the Palace Hotel: Ziemke, chapter 5, gives an overview of the interrogation centers.

five stories tall: Correspondence with John Dolibois, 2012–2013.

"solution to the Jewish question": USHMM, *Holocaust Encyclopedia*, SS and the Holocaust.

“At once I understood”: Correspondence with John Dolibois, 2012–2013; Dolibois, 85.

“He had been told”: Dolibois, 85.

fingernails had been varnished: Andrus, 29.

“Yes,” he said: Dolibois, 86; at Ashcan, Dolibois used the cover name Lieutenant John Gillen.

noted Ashcan’s commandant: Andrus, 27.

committed suicide: Henkel and Taubrich, 40–47.

“In a second circle”: These are the descriptions of these men that Dolibois uses in his book.

masturbating in the bathtub: Dolibois, 128.

“Often, I was taken”: Correspondence with John Dolibois, 2012–2013; Dolibois, 89.

Chapter Nine: Hitler’s Chemists

analyzing its properties: Tucker, 90.

“by air under highest priority”: Ibid.

using chemicals to kill people: FDR speech, June 9, 1943; Harris and Paxman, chapter 5.

“In 1945, in the aftermath”: Tucker, 103.

tons of tabun: Hilmas, chapter 2; the British had inherited the facility but willingly shared its spoils, which included three thousand bombs and five thousand artillery shells.

“We should do everything”: Bower, 121.

He told his former colleagues: Goudsmit, 81.

“ ‘Siegheil’ like a true Nazi”: Ibid.

The Allies were also reorganizing: Gimbel, 60. Some of FIAT’s officers saw the name of their agency as alluding to *fiat voluntas tua,* Latin for “thy will be done”; Ziemke, 272.

Dustbin was self-contained: Author tour of Schloss Kransberg estate, August 1, 2012.

Speer took walks: Interview with Jens Hermann, August 1, 2012.

Dr. Schrader had been working: BIOS Report No. 542, “Interrogation of Certain German Personalities Connected with Chemical Warfare”; Harris and Paxman, 55.

IG Farben wanted to develop: “Elimination of German Resources for War,” 1156–58.

discoveries with potential military application: Ibid., 1276–78.

“Everyone was astounded”: BIOS Report No. 542, “Interrogation of Certain German Personalities Connected with Chemical Warfare,” 24–35.

English word “taboo”: Tilley interview with Karl Krauch; “Elimination of German Resources for War,” 1278–80.

Dr. Schrader was told: BIOS Secret, Final Report 714, “The Development of New Insecticides and Chemical Warfare Agents,” by Gerhard Schrader, 22–23; CIOS Report 31,“Chemical Warfare Installations.”

report to Göring: Tucker, 35.

“psychological havoc on civilian populations”: Tucker, 36.

most of what Ambros did: “Elimination of German Resources for War,” 1256, 1278, 1409.

“Who is Mr. Ambros?”: Ibid., 1261.

Tilley learned quite a bit more: Ibid., 1280–95.

“Judging from conversations”: Ibid., 1278.

“plain chemist”: Dubois, 5.

“Case #21877. Dr. Otto Ambros”: RG 238 Otto Ambros: FIAT EP, June 14, 1946.

impossible to comprehend: Ibid.

American interrogation center: Kleber and Birdsell, 40, 45, 73, 454.

sniffing at the air: DuBois, 5.

Few men were as important to IG Farben: Stasi records, Dr. Otto Ambros file, BStU MfS HA IX/11 PA 5.380, “Report on the IG Farben Ludwigshafen and leading persons of IG Farben.”

butadiene: Dwork, 199. Synthetic rubber was called Buna after its components butadiene and sodium.

masterminding this undertaking: Otto Ambros, affidavit, April 29, 1947, NI-9542. Archive of the Fritz Bauer Institute, Subsequent Nuremberg Trials, Case VI, PDB 75 (e), 1–18.

“Greetings from Auschwitz”: Dwork, 17.

production of synthetic rubber required: Ibid., 197.

“settle the question regarding”: DuBois 168–75; Dwork, 201.

official company report: DuBois, 172.

“It is therefore necessary”: Otto Ambros, Letter to Ter Meer and Struss, April 12, 1941, NI-11118. Archive of the Fritz Bauer Institute, Subsequent Nuremberg Trials, Case VI.

SS officers hosted a dinner party: Ibid.

Farben would pay: Drummer and Zwilling, 80.

“Our new friendship with the SS”: DuBois, 172; the Farben plant would be called Buna-Werke, Auschwitz 3. Prisoners selected for work at Buna-Werke would be awakened for roll call at 4:00 a.m., marched four miles to the rubber plant to work for ten to twelve hours, and then marched home. As for the workers who died during a shift, it was up to the laborers to carry the bodies back to the main concentration camp for cremation; Jeffreys, 302–4.

“You said yesterday”: “Elimination of German Resources for War,” 1262.

“known to all the IG directors in Auschwitz”: Ibid.

“30 or 40 drawings”: RG 319 Otto Ambros, File CML-SP-la, February 9, 1949.

trusted Ambros: Ibid.

concentration camp workers: RG 319 Otto Ambros, Case 21877, Microfilm Project MP-B-102; FIAT EP 254-82, June 14, 1946; File XE021877, April 14, 1958.

“The CIC personnel”: RG 319 Otto Ambros, File CML-SP-la, February 9, 1949.

“network of spies”: RG 319 Otto Ambros, FIAT E 254-82, September 13, 1945.

guesthouse that IG Farben maintained: Ibid.

found him residing: Ibid.

something was amiss: Tucker, 95.

given a job as plant manager: RG 319 Otto Ambros, FIAT E 254-82, September 18, 1945.

Wilson saw the situation in much darker terms: RG 319 Otto Ambros, P. M. Wilson letter, September 4, 1945.

“I would look forward”: Tucker, 95–96. For the Hirschkind quote to Ambros, Tucker cites a letter written by Hirschkind dated July 21, 1967, and located at the Carroll County, Maryland, library.

“It is believed”: RG 319 Otto Ambros, FIAT E 254-82, September 13, 1945.

initial interview at Dustbin: RG 330 Kurt Blome, Alsos report, July 30, 1945 (23 pages).

Blome had been observed: Ibid.

“Kliewe claims”: RG 330 Kurt Blome, Alsos report, 2, 14, 16; RG 65 Heinrich Kliewe, No. 655815-1, July 12, 1945.

what he told them: RG 330 Kurt Blome, Alsos report, 1–23. Alsos agents interviewed Blome first in Dustbin, then in Heidelberg, then back in Dustbin. On October 1, 1945, he was moved to Oberursel, per letter from FIAT director of intelligence.

specific plans: Ibid., 4.

Himmler ordered him: Ibid., 6, 17.

“History gives us examples”: Ibid., 17–18.

they settled on Nesselstedt: Ibid., 6.

“infected rats on to U-boats”: Ibid., 11. Blome says the original idea came from a Dr. Strassburger, assistant to Dr. Kisskalt, of the Hygiene Institute.

Himmler assigned: Ibid.; see also Erhard Geissler et al., *Conversion of Former Btw Facilities* (Berlin, Germany: Kluwer/Spring Verlag, 1998), 60.

He told his interrogators: RG 330 Kurt Blome, Alsos report, 6.

There, Dr. Traub acquired: Ibid., 13.

alarmed interrogators: Ibid., 18.

The Russians had the laboratory: Ibid., 18.

Chapter Ten: Hired or Hanged

“Our task was to prepare”: Taylor, 49.

“guilt for war atrocities”: Andrus, 57.

“atrocity films taken at Buchenwald”: Ibid., 54.

Funk started to cry: Andrus, 55–56.

“They could sit out in the garden”: Ibid., 57.

fifty-two Ashcan internees were going: Correspondence with John Dolibois, 2012–2013; Dolibois, 133.

His prisoner list included: Dolibois, 133.

chatter among the Nazis in his backseat: Ibid.

Hanns Scharff, kept a diary: Telephone interview with Hanns-Claudius Scharff, September 27, 2012, in California; Toliver, 16–18.

“What is that horrible smell?”: Correspondence with John Dolibois, 2012–2013; Dolibois, 134.

airport at Luxembourg City: Correspondence with John Dolibois, 2012–2013; Dolibois, 135.

even Heinrich Himmler was frightened: Last Days of Ernst Kaltenbrunner, CIA Center for the Study of Intelligence, September 22, 1993.

middle-aged man: Dolibois, 137.

approved—on paper—a Nazi scientist program: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 0938–0942.

“formulate general policies”: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 0941.

Operation Backfire: McGovern, 200–204.

“lustily singing, *Wir Fahren gegen England*”: Franklin, 99–100.

“The British pulled a sneaky on us”: McGovern, 202.

“interrogated for a week”: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 0994.

issued a brown jumpsuit: McGovern, 203.

“the most hated man”: correspondence with Brett Exton, October 14, 2012. The source was a guard at Island Farm, Sergeant Ron Williams. More at: http://www.islandfarm.fsnet.co.uk.

five midlevel: They were Erich Neubert, Theodore Poppel, August Schulze, William Jungert, and Walter Schwidetzky. These men signed several of the first contracts for Project Paperclip’s precursor, Operation Overcast.

crass anti-American jokes: Neufeld, *Von Braun*, 212.

Sipser overheard von Braun: Ibid., 502n.

von Braun later told *New Yorker* magazine writer Daniel Lang: Lang, “A Romantic Urge,” 89–90.

handpicked by Colonel Putt: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 1016.

the Germans boarded a C-54 military transport: Samuel, 185.

“Quickly the plane moved”: Ibid., 374.

“They were all seasick as can be”: David Boeri, “Looking Out: Nazis on the Harbor,” NPR, August 19, 2010.

ideal place for a secret military program: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 0997–0998.

an insidious unease: Ibid; intelligence officer Henry Kolm had been working with many of these prisoners already—he was part of a Top Secret German prisoner of war interrogation program at Fort Hunt, Virginia, code-named P.O. Box 1142.

Operation Overcast hotel: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 0997–0998.

the “capitalists’ game”: Samuel, 380.

Major Hamill was required: McGovern, 207–8.

“Well it turned out”: Neufeld, *Von Braun*, 215. Cites a speech given by Hamill on October 19, 1961.

Major Hamill later recalled: Ibid.; McGovern, 208.

“He is known to have spoken to Hitler”: RG 319 Otto Ambros, FIAT file, November 7, 1945; FIAT EP 254-82, June 14, 1946.

“he is the key man”: Ibid.

“Ambros claimed to be unable”: Ibid.

“Saw Ambros at LU [Ludwigshafen]”: RG 319 Otto Ambros, Report by Captain Edelsten, August 28, 1945.

Whenever the U.S. Army showed up: Ibid.

“private intelligence center”: Ibid.

“Sorry that I could not”: RG 238 Otto Ambros, 201 File, letter from Ambros dated August 27, 1945.

a sizable Dustbin dossier: RG 330 Jürgen von Klenck, D-64032, July 25, 1952.

Horn confirmed: RG 330 Jürgen von Klenck, summary report by Walter Spike, April 23, 1952.

Otto Ambros’s right-hand man: RG 330 Jürgen von Klenck, summary report by Lawrence R. Feindt, July 25, 1952.

“buried at the lonely farm”: RG 319 Otto Ambros, FIAT file, November 7, 1945.

of nerve agent contracts: RG 319 Otto Ambros, IG Farbenindustrie AG Ludwigshafen, September 28, 1944, signed “Ambros.”

“full details”: RG 319 Otto Ambros, FIAT file, November 7, 1945.

“I (SPEER)”: RG 319 Otto Ambros, SHAEF report, Microfilm MP-B-102; RG 319 Otto Ambros, FIAT file, November 7, 1945.

“CW plant at AUSCHWITZ”: RG 319 Otto Ambros, FIAT file, November 7, 1945.

Tilley’s intelligence report: Ibid.

discovered in a Gendorf safe: Ibid.; RG 330 Jürgen von Klenck, summary report by Lawrence R. Feindt, July 25, 1952.

an alternative theory: Ibid.

issued a warrant: RG 319 Otto Ambros, FIAT file, November 7, 1945.

Chapter Eleven: The Ticking Clock

removed from the Military Intelligence Division: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 1032; Lasby, 107, 128; telephone interview with Clarence Lasby, March 23, 2013.

“The JIC structure”: Telephone interview with Larry Valero, May 24, 2013.

“The most important JIC estimates”: Ibid.; Valero, 1.

would postpone “open conflict”: Valero, 4–5.

most likely been captured by the Soviets: Ibid., 5-6.

On its governing body: RG 330 Defense Secretary, Joint Intelligence Objectives Agency. http://www.archives.gov/iwg/declassified-records/rg-330-defense-secretary/.

Klaus had hands-on experience: NARA, Holocaust-Era Assets, Overview. Klaus is an unsung hero in this story; most of the State Department files in his name remain classified. Of note, in 1946, a Foreign Economic Administration historian wrote: “There is, so far as this writer knows, no record which names one man as the originator of the Safe Haven project idea. Internal evidence from the records, however, supports the testimony of many participants in the project’s work that Samuel Klaus must be credited with formulating the concepts upon which the program was based.” Klaus was also credited with helping to set up the Berlin Document Center, a central repository for Reich documents, many of which would be used during the Nuremberg trials. The center was used by G-2 intelligence to source German scientists’ past history with the NSDAP, as 90 percent of its member documents survived the war.

Klaus’s sentiments were shared: Hunt 121–23; telephone interview with Clarence Lasby, March 23, 2013; Bower, 164–65. “The military had been won over by phony propaganda that the Germans were the greatest scientists,” the State Department’s Herbert Cummings told journalist Tom Bower decades after the war.

unabashedly vocal: Telephone interview with Clarence Lasby, March 23, 2013.

“less than a dozen”: Bower, 188.

Green came up with an idea: Truman Library, Howland H. Sargeant Papers, 1940–1943; Technical Industrial Intelligence Committee—General, 1944–1950.

different kind of restitution: Library of Congress, Technical Reports and Standards, PB Historical Collection, http://www.loc.gov/rr/scitech/trs/trspb.html. The Publication Board soon changed its name to the equally bland Office of Technical Services, which continued running a public relations campaign.

sixty million jobs: Marlow, “60 Million Jobs. Late Henry Wallace’s Dream Comes True,” Associated Press, April 6, 1966.

Subject headings included: Office of Technical Services, “Classified List of OTS Printed Reports,” John C. Green, Director, Library of Congress, October 1947.

The man in charge of both lists: Lasby, 129–31.

“Specialized knowledge”: Ibid.

first group of six: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 0990; Lasby, 119–21. Note that there is some discrepancy as to who the six were, and the lists (made later) differ in both primary and secondary sources. Luftwaffe test pilot Karl Bauer had already come to the United States and been repatriated, which adds to the confusion.

they began compiling: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 1705. Also contains a map of Wright Field and surrounding area.

original scientists at Wright Field: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 0986, 0988.

the Germans did not pay U.S. taxes: Ibid., 1720.

At the Hilltop: Ibid., 0962.

introductory pamphlet: Ibid., 0992, 0988; Lasby, 120.

“The mere mention”: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 1055.

having handpicked: Samuel, 383.

A War Department memo: War Department General Staff Memo, MIL 920, September 26, 1946 (FOIA).

specialists were offended: Lasby, 123.

like “caged animals”: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 0989.

“Intangibles of a scientist’s daily life”: Ibid., 0989–0990.

hideous monster Medusa: Author tour of Courtroom 600, Palace of Justice, Nuremberg; Museen der Stadt Nürnberg audio guide; Henkel and Täubrich, 30.

twenty-one present: Three defendants were missing: leader of the German Labor Front Robert Ley had committed suicide in his Nuremberg jail cell; arms magnate Gustav Krupp was eighty-five years old and deemed too frail to stand trial; Martin Bormann had disappeared while attempting to flee from Berlin and was believed dead.

news about Nuremberg: Taylor, 279. Two hundred fifty journalists from twenty countries crowded into the upper balcony area of Courtroom 600; eighty of them were from America. The only nation that seemed relatively uninterested in the trial of the major war criminals was Germany. “Considering the shock, the horror and the destruction Germany was confronted with, getting them interested proved to be very difficult,” said prosecutor Telford Taylor after the trial.

swastikas painted on their tails: Wright Field Air Fair footage at http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=jrXTHMtX5Nc.

make use of cutting-edge science: *The Code of Federal Regulations of the United States of America*, Volume 12, Title 15, p. 2306.

questions for Putt: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 1020.

Putt wrote in a memo: Ibid., 1027–29; Lasby, 128, 306n.

Air Material Command: Note nomenclature change, from USAF.gov: Redesignated Army Air Forces Technical Service Command on August 31, 1944; Air Technical Service Command on July 1, 1945; Air Materiel Command on March 9, 1946.

“letters of interest”: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 1021–1029.

continued to voice objections: Lasby, 129–32.

temporary military program: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 0938.

Wallace urged the president: Office of Technical Service, Letter from Wallace to Truman, December 4, 1945; Lasby, 133.

once they found out about it: On October 1, 1945, the War Department Bureau of Public Relations issued a two-paragraph press release about the program with instructions to bury the story. No major news organizations reported on it. The headline of the press release was “Outstanding German Scientists Being Brought to U.S.”

air of democracy: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 1044–1050 (includes Wallace letter to Honorable Robert Patterson, Secretary of War, November 9, 1945); Lasby, 33–35.

likened Hitler to Satan: Henry A. Wallace, U.S. vice president, in an address to the Free World Association, New York, August 5, 1942.

a major news scoop: Weindling, 83.

their meeting in Saint-Germain: Bullard and Glasgow, 54.

war work in Heidelberg under army supervision: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 1208.

“follow-on plan”: Benford, “Report from Heidelberg,” 9, notes.

Control Council Law 25: Gimbel, 175. Peaceful research was allowed.

Armstrong: USAF biography. At the time, his official title was surgeon of the Air Division of OMGUS, with headquarters in Berlin.

Nickles who inspired Armstrong: Bullard and Glasgow, 2.

When Nickles "hinted": Ibid., 18–20.

closed his practice in Minneapolis: Dempsey, 1.

arrived with his family at Wright Field: Bullard and Glasgow, 3, 6.

He envisioned a future: Benford, *Doctors in the Sky*, 29.

spotted a trapdoor: Bullard and Glasgow, 21.

unusual-looking chamber: Ibid.; photographs from Wright Field archives.

wrote a letter to the engineering division : Bullard and Glasgow, 6–8; Mackowski, 20.

death at high altitude was caused by: Bullard and Glasgow, 18–20.

he dissected the rabbit: Ibid., 19.

Armstrong's discovery: Dempsey, 5, 63, 116.

Halley's comet: Kokinda, 4. Halley's comet lasted fourteen days.

"When I looked": Ibid., 6.

pursued auto-experimentation: Mackowski, 43; his PhD thesis, which earned him a medical diploma in 1922, was called "The Distribution of Pain Spots on the Skin."

Adolf Hitler needed a pilot: Mackowski, 46.

Strughold packed his bags: Hasdorff, 10, 20.

until one of them blacked out: Thomas, 27–28; Hasdorff, 3.

apes and humans: Thomas, 32; Mackowski, 51.

a haven for risk takers: Thomas, 37–38.

officials from the Nazi Party: Ibid.; photographs, Bundesarchiv Ludwigsburg Collection. Note: In “Biologists under Hitler,” Ute Deichmann explains that Nazi Party membership was never a requirement for doctors or professors. To be appointed to a university teaching position (*Habilitation* in German) did not require NSDAP membership. Only 45 percent of doctors joined the Nazi Party. Of scientists between the ages of thirty-one and forty, 63 percent became members (Mackowski, 65).

“Our studies are all very risky”: In his interview with Thomas, Strughold uses the story as a means to illustrate how he had to regularly outfox the Nazi Party in order not to succumb to their pressure to join. He says that he suggested the Nazi Party officials try out the low-pressure chamber test themselves. “That did it,” Strughold told Thomas. “The older one said to the younger one, ‘Herr Oberregierungsrat, we must go in five minutes. We can not stay.’ ”

the pilot physiology challenges grew: Heinz Beauvais, “Performance and Characteristics of German Airplanes in Relation to Aviation Medicine,” *German Aviation Medicine in World War II*, Volume I, 55–68; Eckart, *Man, Medicine, and the State*, 117.

Dr. Theodor Benzinger: RG 330 Theodor Benzinger; Benford, “Report from Heidelberg,” 6. Benzinger was also head of medical work in the research department of the Technical Division of the Reich Air Ministry.

put each man in charge: Ibid.

a committed Nazi: Bundesarchiv Militärarchiv Freiburg, Benzinger file, Pers 6/138768; RG 330 Theodor Benzinger, JIOA Form No. 2.

In service of this idea: Benford, “Report from Heidelberg,” 6.

In addition to researching aviation medicine: RG 330 Theodor Benzinger, JIOA Form No. 2, June 1947; War Department, Intelligence Division, Basic Personnel Record, n.d.

Ruff was an avowed and dedicated: HLSL Item No. 28, 995.

Dr. Ruff who oversaw: Alexander, “Exposure to Cold,” 17, 39; HLSL Item No. 28; HLSL Item No. 995.

coauthored several papers: Weindling, 23. Weindling says the U.S. Air Corps circulated 250–300 copies to individual flight surgeons and air force bases across the country.

coauthored a book: Weindling, 372n.

His wartime research work: HLSL item 1878.

A contest was proposed: HLSL Item No. 80; HLSL Item No. 83, NMT Trials Document No. 02626002.

Becker-Freyseng was held in great esteem: HLSL Item No. 229.

a self-experiment he did in a chamber: Ibid.,; HLSL Item No. 83.

symptoms of paralysis: HLSL No. 2626.

continued their work: Benford, “Report from Heidelberg,” 3–28.

military pose: Ibid., 4.

“This property”: Ibid., 36; Exhibit 5.

There was equipment here: Ibid., 1, 10–16. A photograph shows the Freising chamber being installed in a corner of the institute. The caption reads, “[T]he low pressure chamber… was moved to Heidelberg from the Munich Institute of Aviation Medicine at Freising.”

number of German doctors believed: Weindling, 1, 162.

classified list: Office of U.S. Chief of Counsel, APO 124-A. U.S. Army. List of Personnel Involved in Medical Research and Mercy Killings, n.d. (FOIA).

Chapter Twelve: Total War of Apocalyptic Proportions

end of January 1946: Lasby, 185. Lasby writes that the secretary of war revealed that there were 130 scientists in the country and that approximately 140 more would arrive in the near future. A group of rocket men arrived January 15, and it took them a little more than a month to get to Fort Bliss.

men resided in a two-story barracks: McGovern, 210.

“romantic Karl May affair”: Neufeld, *Von Braun*, 222; Neufeld says that work on the sci-fi novel began in 1947.

“Frankly we were disappointed”: Quoted in Lasby, 116; V-2 Firing Tables summarizing all flights at White Sands—www.wsmr.army.mil.

The actual rocket firings: McGovern, 211.

one of the fins fell off: Neufeld, *Von Braun*, 220.

marry his first cousin: Ibid., 228.

“The conditions of employment”: Huzel, 217.

swimming pool: Franklin, 102.

“half a dozen discredited SS Generals”: RG 65 Magnus von Braun, September 25, 1948; RG 330 JIOA list: Neufeld, *Von Braun,* 508n.

job of club manager: Bower, 200.

some work opportunities: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 1030–1050.

the groups’ complaints: Ibid., 0989; Bower, 158.

Patin’s industrial vision: RG 319 Albert Patin, “Statements Made by Paperclip Specialist Albert Patin, 18 October 1948.”

Patin acknowledged that his wartime access: Ibid.

“improve the morale”: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 0989–990; Bower, 158–60.

Brigadier General Samford’s office: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 1008, 1055.

created a perfect storm: Bower, 161.

Patterson, now secretary of war, shifted: Maxwell AFB History office document, Memo, Patterson to Secy, General Staff, May 28, 1945, Subj: “German Scientists”; Lasby, 71, 303n.

left to their own devices: Bower, 165–68.

new program protocols: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 1190–1192; Bower, 168.

program would be called Operation Paperclip: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 1190-1192.

McNarney wrote to JIOA: RG 319, JIOA, General Correspondence 1946–1952.

“These [men] cannot now”: Bower, 176.

America’s “national interest”: Ibid.; Lasby, 174–75.

legendary Long Telegram: Thompson, 59. The telegram was sent on February 22, 1946. Keenan’s official title was “The Charge in the Soviet Union.”

regarding Soviet-American relations: “American Relations with the Soviet Union,” September 24, 1946; Report by Clark Clifford, Subject File; Conway Files; Truman Papers.

one thousand German scientists: The word “Austrian” was also added to the mission statement, even though there were only twelve Austrians on the list.

With presidential approval official: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 1190–1192; telephone interview with Clarence Lasby, March 23, 2013. On June 3, 1963, Lasby interviewed Truman and asked the former president about his classified decision to hire Hitler's former scientists en masse. Truman told Lasby that because of America's precarious relationship with Russia at the time, "this had to be done and was done." These former Nazis, Truman insisted, "should always have an American 'boss.' "

"in the capacity of a doctor": RG 238 Kurt Blome, 201 Prisoner file, May 9, 1946.

unwanted spotlight: Deichmann, 282–89.

like Posen, only bigger: Covert, 21. Of the 2,273 personnel, 1,770 were military.

199 other germ bomb projects: Regis, 79.

Top Secret program: Covert, 15; Regis, 93.

made and sold vaccines: "Key Facts About Merck," Associated Press, November 3, 2005.

he held the title: RG 330 Walter Schreiber, File RT-758-48, December 17, 1948.

Schreiber held the position: RG 330 Walter Schreiber, "Memorandum to President Truman from Boston physicians," February 1952.

moved around various interrogation facilities: RG 330 Walter Schreiber, "The Case of Walter Schreiber," February 17, 1952.

Dr. Schreiber took the stand: HLSL Item No. 286.

Wehrmacht's medical chain of command: RG 330 Walter Schreiber, Report: Interrogation of General Schreiber, December 16, 1948.

invited Holzlöhner: RG 330 Walter Schreiber, Dr. Alexander and Hardy's letter to the Physicians Forum, February 1952; NMT-1 Document No. 922.

Dr. Blome's plague research: HLSL Item No. 286.

employed by the army: RG 238 Kurt Blome, 201 Prisoner file, May 9, 1946.

the prison complex: Henkel and Taubrich, 32.

“confidential change of status report”: RG 238, Kurt Blome 201, Prisoner file, No. 31G5173069.

fifty-eight German physicians: Benford “Report from Heidelberg,” 1–5, photograph Exhibit 16; the army also requisitioned the Helmholtz Institute and set up Strughold as director there, with a salary of 28,000 marks a year. The Helmholtz Institute had been home to Philipp Bouhler, head of the Action T-4 euthanasia program.

They all reported: Benford, “Report from Heidelberg,” 37.

regularly visited the facility: Ibid., 20.

compiled into a two-volume monograph: Ibid., 1–2.

five arrest warrants: RG 238 Theodor Benzinger, 201 File.

twenty-three defendants: Weindling, 6; sixteen Nazi doctors, four non-Party physicians, and three SS administrators.

“beyond the pale”: *New York Times*, “Germans on Trial in ‘Science’ Crimes,” December 10, 1946.

university skeleton collection of the *Untermenschen:* RG 319 August Hirt, OSS Biographical Report, n.d. A student of Hirt’s described him as missing part of his jaw, which made him speak with a “hissing sound.”

“the dregs of”: *New York Times,* “Germans on Trial in ‘Science’ Crimes,” December 10, 1946.

once been internationally esteemed: Interview with Dr. Götz Blome, August 3, 2012, in Germany; Report on the Third International Congress for Medical Postgraduate Study, 1937 and 1938.

listed the individual names: “Nazi ‘Doctors’ to Be Tried Next,” *Stars and Stripes,* October 12, 1946.

October 1942 conference: Bundesarchiv Ludwigsburg, Dr. Hubertus Strughold file, 828/73.

film screening: HLSL Item No. 1320; NMT-I Document No. 224.

that was not a crime: interviews with Rolf Benzinger, February 19, 2013, and April 10, 2013.

“After the showing of the film”: NMT-1 Document No. 224, August 21, 1946.

Benzinger insisted: Wright Library Papers. “Sworn Statement of Theodor Hannes Benzinger,” U.S. Department of Justice, Office of Special Investigations, November 22, 1983; telephone interviews with Rolf Benzinger, February 19, 2013, and April 10, 2013.

a month in the Nuremberg jail: RG 238, Theodor Benzinger, 201 File.

Wright Field circulated his report: Weindling, 192. Years later, in an interview with journalist Linda Hunt, Theodor Benzinger blamed his arrest and incarceration at Nuremberg on Dr. Strughold. Benzinger said he was “set up” by Strughold—that Strughold did so as a means of deflecting his own participation in war crimes. Strughold “had to put the blame on someone [else] because he was so vulnerable,” Benzinger told Hunt. “He was wedged in amongst all the criminals and his way out was to finger me.”

“interrogations were sloppy”: Weindling, 193.

thirty-four of the doctors remaining: Bullard and Glasgow, 64–66.

what sentences would be imposed: Steinbach, 84.

“I wanted the condemned men”: Andrus, 186.

alternating its hiding place: Ibid., 184. Taylor, in his book, suggests that Göring might have had help from an American guard from Texas in hiding the poison vial.

river: Andrus, 198. Taylor also refers to this in his book, but adds that he could not verify it as fact.

“I hanged those ten Nazis”: Quoted in *Time*, October 28, 1946, p. 34.

Chapter 13: Science at Any Price

“State would accept as final”: Bower, 180.

Russian army’s newspaper: *New York Times,* “U.S., Britain Hold German Experts, Berlin Communist Papers Charge,” October 27, 1946.

“apply for citizenship”: “U.S. To Offer Citizenship to German Scientists,” Associated Press, November 24, 1946.

sanitized version of its program: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 0874–0875.

“I wish we had more of them”: “Nazi Brains Help Us,” *Life,* December 9, 1946; *Newsweek,* December 9, 1946, pp. 68–69; Herbert Shaw, “Wright Field Reveals ‘Project Paperclip,’ ” *Dayton Daily News,* December 4, 1946.

“This Command is cognizant”: RG 330 Emil Salmon, JIOA Form No. 3.

provided photographs: *Time* and *Life* photographs are now Getty Images and were taken by Thomas D. McAvoy.

news stories about the scientists: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 0867–0871; Lasby, 186; Hunt, 36.

“We object not because they are citizens”: Bower, 189.

With its more than thirty rooms: O’Donnell, 24.

Raven Rock Mountain Complex, or Site R: Interviews with Dr. Leonard Kreisler, 2012–2013, in Nevada. Kreisler served as the post doctor at Fort Detrick and Site R in the mid-to late 1950s.

Reich’s Demag motorcar company: Bundesarchiv Ludwigsburg, Georg Rickhey file, B162/25299.

oversaw the construction: RG 330 Georg Rickhey, “Condensed statements of my education and my activities,” March 4, 1948; “Transcript of Conference of May 6, 1944 in the office of Director General Rickhey.” This document is from the DOJ, Office of Special Investigations.

Rickhey and Patin's black market business: RG 319 Georg Rickhey, Summary, "Georg Rickhey's mail from wife, sister, brother," October 7, 1946.

liked to gamble: Ibid.

Nehlsen decided he had had enough: RG 330 Hermann Nehlsen, October 17, 1947.

Putt had a gentleman's agreement: RG 330 Georg Rickhey, May 19, 1947; Hunt, 38.

Wright Field mail censors: RG 330 Hermann Nehlsen, October 17, 1947; Hunt, 37–42.

"One of the group who acted": RG 330 Georg Rickhey. Memorandum for the Director of Intelligence, December 19, 1946.

The Pentagon assigned: Ibid. Colonel Lewis also requested "a more comprehensive investigation of scientists requested for shipment into the Unites States."

five-year contract: RG 330 Georg Rickhey, Document No. 1258.

Putt suggested: RG 319 Georg Rickhey, December 19, 1946.

Nehlsen swore: Ibid.

Voss also testified: Werner Voss changed his story twice. Smith interrogation of Werner Voss, in *United States of America v. Arthur Kurt Andrae et al.*, Preliminary Investigation file, roll 1.

At Fort Bliss, in the evenings: Huzel, 215: According to Dieter Huzel, these were "simple, average people who were happy to have escaped the more serious consequences of the war, and who, with nothing else to do, devoted themselves with enthusiasm to their tasks.… As a result, the food was excellent."

his findings: Major Eugene Smith to Air Provost Marshal, "Investigation Regarding Activities of Dr. Georg Rickhey, Former Director-General of the Underground Mittelwerk Factory Near Nordhausen, Germany," June 10, 1947, in *United States of America v. Arthur Kurt Andrae et al.*, Preliminary Investigation file, roll 1; Hunt, 62–69.

three thousand SS officers: Aalmans, postscript.

“I just saw a tiny headline”: Bower, 201. Author’s note: Coming across this quote in Bower’s book was one of my favorite moments researching the book.

“making arrangements”: RG 330 Georg Rickhey, Office of the Deputy Director of Intelligence, Hq., European Command, n.d.

escorting Rickhey: RG 319 Georg Rickhey, May 19, 1947.

at least twenty thousand laborers: *United States of America v. Arthur Kurt Andrae et al.;* a copy of the trial data, charges, finding, and sentences can be found online at the John F. Kennedy Presidential Library and Museum.

former SS barracks: Author’s private tour of former SS barracks.

“unprecedented move”: Hunt, 77.

Cox’s call: RG 330 Georg Rickhey, Office Memorandum, March 1948.

“He is absorbed”: RG 330 Siegfried Knemeyer, Report on Siegfried Knemeyer, Siegfried, n.d.

hated provincial life: Interview with Dirk Knemeyer, May 21, 2012, in California.

to make significant contributions: RG 319 Siegfried Knemeyer, “Knemeyer contributions to Wright Field.”

“a genius in the creation”: Knemeyer, 63.

last-minute change: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 1447; photograph collection of Baumbach and Peron, Hans Ulrich Rudel.

“menace of the first order”: Lasby, 113; telephone interview with Clarence Lasby, March 23, 2013. Lasby interviewed and corresponded by mail with 175 Paperclip scientists in the mid-1960s.

“Such a program must”: Dornberger files, Deutsches Museum archive, Munich. The monograph is titled “Centralized vs. Decentralized Development of Guided Missiles by Walter Dornberger.”

were outraged: Minutes of the Council, FAS, New York, February 1–2, 1947; “Hiring of German Scientists,” W.A.S. Bulletin, February 1947; Lasby, 201.

sent threatening letters: History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, 0132.

neighbors told army intelligence: RG 330 Herbert Axster, “The Axster Couple,” March 25, 1948.

Axster opened a law firm: Hunt; Bower, 206–7. Later the couple returned to West Germany.

demanding an explanation: Lasby, 207; Delbert Clark, *New York Times*, “Nazis Sent to U.S. as Technicians,” January 4, 1947.

Chapter 14: Strange Judgment

“Mere punishment of the defendants”: HLSL Item No. 565.

in both languages: Papers of Dr. Leopold Alexander, Duke University Medical Center Archives, “Log Book, Journey to Nuremberg.”

writing the Nuremberg Code: Schmidt, *Justice*, 169. Schmidt writes, “On 7 December 1946, two days before the start of the trial, Alexander completed the first of two key texts on the ethics of human experimentation, which he addressed to [General] Taylor. The second memorandum was completed in April 1947. Both memoranda contributed to the debate about human experimentation inside the prosecution team, and ultimately shaped parts of the Nuremberg Code.” Schmidt dedicates chapter 7 of his book to a full discussion of the Nuremberg Code.

Ruff told the judges: HLSL Item No. 28, HLSL Item No. 995.

dueling scars: NMT-1 photograph, Beiglböck in profile.

clutched a dagger: interview with Vivien Spitz, January 17, 2012. In secondary accounts, it has been said that Höllenrainer punched or slapped Beiglböck. Vivien Spitz was at the trial and I report her account.

“He was reaching”: Spitz, 161.

shock in the courtroom: Ibid.

“My heart broke”: Telephone interview with Vivien Spitz, January 17, 2012.

how conflicted he felt: Papers of Dr. Leopold Alexander, Duke University Medical Center Archives, “Log Book, Journey to Nuremberg,” n.d.

“tremendous feeling of inner rage”: Schmidt, *Justice*, 237.

continue his testimony: *United States of America v. Karl Brandt et al.*, July 1, 1947.

“You Gypsies stick together, don’t you?”: Spitz, 172.

private letter to General Telford Taylor: Alexander Papers, Harvard Law School Library, Box 2, Letter to Brigadier General Telford Taylor, December 7, 1946.

Dr. Alexander remembered it: Alexander Papers, Harvard Law School Library, Box 2, Letter to Mrs. Alexander, November 27, 1946.

scores of documents: HLSL Item No. 180; HLSL Item No. 194; HLSL Item No. 279.

Blome’s defense: HLSL Item No. 276.

left looking like hypocrites: Schmidt, *Justice*, 135.

Seven doctors were acquitted: HLSL Item No. 184; HLSL Item No. 185; HLSL Item No. 186.

“professional advisor” to Colonel Armstrong: RG 330 Hubertus Strughold, JIOA Form No. 3.

“overall supervision of”: Ibid.

“the Jews had crowded the medical schools”: RG 263 Central Intelligence Agency, Hubertus Strughold file, A-1-2062. This file was kept classified until the Nazi War Crimes Disclosure Act forced its declassification and release in 2006.

“ethical principles”: RG 330 Hubertus Strughold, “Sworn Statement of K. E. Schäfer,” September 23, 1947.

Chapter 15: Chemical Menace

he wrote in a State Deparment memo: Hunt, 107–9.

security reports: RG 59 General Records of the Department of State, Doc. No. 862.542; Bower, 176, 237–39.

wore his Nazi uniform to work: RG 330 Kurt Debus, File No. D-34033.

revelation in his OMGUS security report: RG 330 Kurt Debus, File No. 384.201.

transcript form: Ibid. The full transcript, in German and English, is in Debus's file.

on November 30, 1942, "Craemer": RG 330 Kurt Debus, "Certified True Copy, F. C. Groves," n.d.

sponsored by Heinrich Himmler: Hunt, 44.

Klaus refusing to sign: Bower, 180–81.

expert in tabun nerve agent synthesis: RG 330 Friederich Hoffmann, Basic Personnel Record.

dedicated his life: Johnson, 2, 5–14; Loucks Papers (USAMHI), U.S. Army Military History Institute, Department of Defense Press Office, Biography of Charles E. Loucks.

Mickey Mouse face: Brophy et al., 264. As technical director at Edgewood, Major Loucks was in charge of updating all soldiers' gas masks.

incendiary bombs: Johnson, 202; Loucks Papers (USAMHI), photographs.

four hundred battalions: Mauroni, 13.

experts like Charles Loucks: Johnson, 59.

Hoffmann arrived: RG 330 Friedrich Hoffmann, Security Report by Employing Agency.

PhD in philosophy: Telephone interviews with Gabriella Hoffmann, September 27, 2012, and October 17, 2012; Hoffmann personal papers.

risked life and limb: Hoffmann personal papers; Telephone interview with John Dippel, October 19, 2012.

quartered inside a barracks: Hoffmann personal papers.

“synthesizing new insecticides”: RG 330 Friedrich Hoffmann, JIOA Form 3.

code-named AI.13: Tucker, 104. Tabun was given the code name GA; sarin, GB; and soman, GD.

under pressure to catch up: Krause and Mallory, 114–18; Loucks considered the greatest stumbling block to production to be the missing silver-lined cooking kettles that had been precision-designed to withstand the highly corrosive nature of tabun gas, items that had been at the very center of the Otto Ambros escape debacle in July 1945.

Edgewood lagged behind: U.S. Army monograph, “Soviet Research and Development Capabilities for New Toxic Agents,” Project No. A-1735, July 28, 1958, 6–7.

“work of a high order”: RG 330 Friedrich Hoffmann, JIOA Form 3.

redouble efforts: Loucks Papers (USAMHI), “Germans Have Nerve Gas: 9GB0” (handwritten document). In addition to serving as commanding general of the Army Chemical Center at Edgewood Arsenal, Loucks was the deputy chief chemical officer for research and development there.

United States of America v. Carl Krauch et al.: His name was spelled with both a *K* and a *C*.

According to Pearson: Bower, 193.

advocated for the use: Tucker, 35.

briefed Eisenhower: Bower, 189, 194–95.

“The public relations”: Bower, 195.

get rid of Samuel Klaus: Hunt, 132, 133.

“obnoxiously difficult”: Bower, 189.

buried in scandals: Bower, 189, 194–95.

was born: Center for Studies in Intelligence, “A Look Back, The National Security Act of 1947,” available online at www.cia.gov.

observing the tabun tests: Office of the Historian, U.S. Department of State, Memorandum from the Director of the Central Intelligence Dulles to Secretary of Defense Wilson, “Subject: Research on Psychochemicals,” December 3, 1955.

Greene was a short man: Interview with Gabriella Hoffmann, October 17, 2012; Hoffmann personal papers (photographs). In the 1960s, the Greenes and the Hoffmanns were neighbors.

His seminal vision: L. Wilson Greene, “Psychochemical Warfare: A New Concept of War,” Army Chemical Center, August 1949; Memorandum from Director of Central Intelligence Dulles to Secretary of Defense Wilson, December 3, 1955, Document 244, “Research of Psychochemicals,” U.S. Department of State, Office of the Historian.

“hallucinogenic or psychotomimetic drugs”: U.S. Army Inspector General, Report, DAIG 21-75, p. 12.

“There can be no doubt”: L. Wilson Greene, “Psychochemical Warfare: A New Concept of War,” Army Chemical Center, August 1949; U.S. Army Inspector General, Report, DAIG 21-75, pp. 12–14.

These sixty-one compounds: Ibid.

recognized at Edgewood: Hoffmann personal papers; telphone interview with Gabriella Hoffmann, March 22, 2013; telephone interview with Dr. James Ketchum, November 7, 2012; Hunt, chapter 10.

travel the world: Hoffmann personal papers; interview with Gabriella Hoffmann, September 27, 2012.

the Black Maria: Covert, 39–40.

the Eight Ball: Author tour of Fort Detrick, July 20, 2012; Covert, 40, 83, 95.

back on the Paperclip List: RG 319 Kurt Blome, October 2, 1947, Ref No. 3047; Batchelor's colleague, Dr. Norbert Fell, had just returned from Japan where he had been working in secret with General Shiro Ishii, the dominant figure in the Japanese biological weapons program, located inside a secret facility on the Manchurian Peninsula and code-named "Water Purification Unit 731." The U.S. Chemical Warfare Corps struck a deal with General Ishii whereby in exchange for immunity, he agreed to "write a treatise on the whole subject" of his work during the war. Ishii's sixty-page report, in English, promised full disclosure "on B.W. activities directed against man [including] full details and diagrams." The report was worthless. Norman Fell returned to Detrick in June 1947. Harold Batchelor prepared for his visit to Germany. Fell later committed suicide.

marked "Secret-Confidential": RG 319 Kurt Blome, October 2, 1947.

everything discussed would be classified: RG 319 Kurt Blome, "Report of Interview of German Scientist, German Research on Biological Warfare," 86.

"all the research for BW": Ibid., 86.

Reich's outpost on the island of Riems: Ibid., 89.

"the plague got more attention that any others": Ibid., 98.

"Schreiber, as the head of the department": Ibid., 99.

"everybody who knew Schreiber": Ibid., 99.

everything they knew: RG 330 Erich Traub, JIOA Form No. 2, Basic Personnel Record.

chose to return to Germany: RG 330 Erich Traub, Military Government of Germany, Fragebogen (questionnaire).

lure Traub away: RG 330 Erich Traub, JIOA No. 461. In May 1948, Traub was appointed director of the institute by the Russians. Around that same time, with the aid of British intelligence, Traub began plotting his escape. On August 20, 1948, the following note was written and attached to his dossier: “He escaped the Russian zone carrying with him cultures of the Hoof and Mouth disease and has them stored in Marburg at the Behring Werke. Wants to secure employment in England, Canada, or the United States preferably.” On July 1, 1949, he signed a Paperclip contract.

shared with him by Dr. Blome: RG 319 Kurt Blome, “Report of Interview of German Scientist, German Research on Biological Warfare,” 93.

Chapter Sixteen: Headless Monster

made brigadier general: Loucks Papers (USAMHI). Loucks was made brigadier general on December 11, 1944. He was later regraded to colonel and then appointed commanding general of the Army Chemical Center in January 1951.

working relationship with Richard Kuhn: Loucks Papers (USAMHI), speech to the Daughters of the American Revolution, Lynchburg Chapter, n.d.

developed soman nerve agent: Tucker, 63, 89, 91–92.

Nazi complicity: Loucks Papers (USAMHI), Letter to Mr. L. Patrick Moore, April 12, 1949.

“I was under the impression”: Loucks Papers (USAMHI), speech to the Daughters of the American Revolution, Lynchburg Chapter (n.d).

gathering of the Swiss Society: Loucks Papers (USAMHI), “Lysergic Acid Compound” speech, n.d. Loucks wrote three different drafts of the speech. Some are typed, some handwritten, and some typed with handwritten notes.

“Went back to the house”: Loucks Papers (USAMHI), “Desk Diary 1948.”

“foreigner, dark, nationality unknown”: Ibid.

“lunch of pork chops”: Ibid.

“Lysergic Acid Diethylamide”: Loucks Papers (USAMHI), “Lysergic Acid Compound.”

“enormous use as a psychiatric aid”: Robert Stone, “Albert Hofmann, b. 1906: Day Tripper,” *New York Times*, December 24, 2008.

first article on LSD: Stafford, 30.

chemists from Operation Paperclip: That these programs were originally linked to Operation Paperclip through General Charles E. Loucks was not documented before this book.

“I can help,” the caller said: Loucks Papers (USAMHI), “Desk Diary 1948.”

“We put samples [of sarin] in front of them”: Loucks Papers (USAMHI); Johnson, 53–54.

false teeth: RG 330 Walter Schieber, JIOA Form No. 2, Basic Personnel Record, n.d.

Hitler’s inner circle: Bundesarchiv Berlin-Lichterfelde, Dr. Walter Schieber file, No. 39002.

on the personal staff of Heinrich Himmler: Ibid.

an engineer and a chemist: RG 165 Walter Schieber, “Schuster File,” Report from Dustbin, 31 pages.

“Designs for concentration camp”: Allen, 176.

Schieber designed a “nourishment” program: Schmidt, *Karl Brandt*, 262.

“confidential clerk of IG Farben”: RG 319 Walter Schieber, Ref-No: S-3338.

“I’m free now”: Loucks Papers (USAMHI), “Desk Diary 1948”; Johnson, 53–54.

signed a Top Secret Project Paperclip contract: RG 330 Walter Schieber, JIOA Form No. 2, Basic Personnel Record.

“Subject is Dr. Walter Schieber”: RG 330 Walter Schieber, HQ EUCOM, Frankfurt, Germany, to JIOA, January 9, 1948.

“shipping subject via air under escort”: Ibid.

“Ship Dr. Walter Schieber to Wright Field”: RG 330 Walter Schieber, War Department, Staff Message Center, Outgoing Classified Message, January 2, 1948.

“Trusting he would be placed”: RG 319 Walter Schieber, Ref No: S-2929, April 2, 1948.

told his Paperclip handler: RG 319 Walter Schieber, March 16, 1948.

“Schieber believes that”: RG 319 Walter Schieber. Ref No: S-2929, April 2, 1948.

“Walther Schieber started his business career”: RG 330 Walter Schieber, File No. 8060622.

“constantly profited from being a party man”: Ibid.

“Cancel Air Force request”: RG 330 Walter Schieber, April 1, 1948.

“exception to present policy”: RG 330 Walter Schieber, April 7, 1948.

set up a meeting: Loucks personal papers; Tucker first found this story in the Loucks papers archived at the U.S. Army Military History Institute. The quotes Tucker uses differ slightly from those I found in Loucks’s desk diary (which also differ slightly from references in Loucks’s oral history interview), meaning that there could be a third source in Loucks’s voluminous papers where he discusses his work with the German chemists.

“Classified matters” were discussed: Loucks Papers (USAMHI), “Desk Diary 1948.”

Loucks recorded his thoughts: Ibid.

“was more interesting”: Ibid.; Johnson, 58.

“Schieber is interesting”: Ibid.

One photograph in the album: Loucks Papers (USAMHI); photographs.

“Driving one day in a Jeep”: Johnson, 201–2.

“one of those incidents that didn’t mean anything”: Ibid.

“Could you develop the process”: Loucks Papers (USAMHI), “Desk Diary 1948.”

recalled the next conversation: Johnson, 55.

“We will pay all their expenses”: Loucks Papers (USAMHI), “Desk Diary 1948.”

memorandum to the chief of the Army Chemical Corps: Ibid.

“Hope the chief will support us”: Ibid.

industrial amounts of sarin gas: Johnson, 55–57.

“One of the team”: Loucks, “German Nerve Gas (GB),” 3 Sheets, “Written from memory but believed to be correct,” signed Charles E. Loucks, April 10, 1972, Arlington, Virginia.

“That’s when we built the plant”: Johnson, 56.

code-named Gibbett-Delivery: Tucker, 123, 128. In May 1948, the Chemical Corps decided that sarin would be the standard U.S. nerve agent it would mass-produce. The plant was constructed under the code name Gibbett.

unknown item: Loucks Papers (USAMHI), Letter, “Sehr geehrten Herr Loucks!” August 31, 1949.

Christmas cards: Loucks Papers (USAMHI), cards dated 1949, 1952, 1955.

“I don’t like this,” Loucks wrote: Loucks Papers, “Desk Diary 1950.”

Schieber had spent the night: Loucks Papers, “Desk Diary 1949.”

“long session with H.Q. Int.”: Loucks Papers, “Desk Diary 1950.”

office at CIA handling the Paperclip: CIA Executive Assistant Director was Kenneth K. Addicott.

“a photostatted copy”: “CIA Memo to JIOA, Subject: Werner Osenberg Files on German Scientists,” December 4, 1947 (FOIA).

“production of intelligence”: Karl H. Weber, “The Directorate of Science and Technology, Historical Series, Top Secret, The Office of Scientific Intelligence, 1949–1968, Volume II, Annexes IV, V, VI and VII,” OSI-1, June 1972 (FOIA/Declassified 2008), Annex IV, p. 1.

“Priority was accorded”: Weber, 24. Weber was chairman from 1954 to 1972. The Scientific Intelligence Committee created joint intelligence subcommittees in each group: the Joint Atomic Energy Intelligence Committee was JAEIC, the Joint Biological Warfare Committee was JBWIC, the Joint Chemical Warfare Committee was JCWIC, the Joint Medical Sciences Intelligence Committee was JMSIC, and so forth. JIOA recruited German scientists and brought them to America, and the others produced and coordinated information that their work generated.

half of the one thousand German scientists: These numbers and dates vary in secondary sources. I use JIOA records at the National Archives.

moving a scientist from military custody: I use a summation of multiple scientists’ case files, including those of Benzinger, Strughold, Traub, Schäfer, Dornberger, and Knemeyer.

“Germany then became a new battlefield”: Ruffner, ix.

its plans for covert action: Weiner, 33, 36.

spent time in displaced-persons camps: Ibid., 44.

strategically located: Author tour of Camp King, which is about halfway between the Dustbin interrogation center and the former EUCOM headquarters in Frankfurt (also the former IG Farben building). Interview with Manfred Kopp, August 1, 2012, in Germany.

the facility had two other names: General Order No. 264, Headquarters USFET, September 19, 1946, Designation of Military Installation (FOIA).

significance of the informal name: “History of Camp King,” 77. King had been assigned to the VII Corps of the First U.S. Army Corps, G-2.

prisoners were Soviet-bloc spies: Ruffner, xlviii; “History of Camp King,” 82. The partnership was effective from July 1, 1949, to May 31, 1952.

Operation Artichoke: Marks, 31–36; Koch and Wech, 89, 97, 113. According to documents declassified by the Clinton administration, the sponsoring agency was the Joint Medical Sciences Intelligence Committee, or JMSIC, the JIOA’s “intelligence production” counterpart. The Clinton panel identified the man in charge of Operation Bluebird as “Dr. Yaeger [*sic*] from the Central Intelligence Agency.”

first commanding officer: Memo CO No. 205, Headquarters USFET, August 25, 1945 (FOIA); interview with Egmont Koch, August 6, 2012, in Germany.

intelligence reports on subjects: Correspondence with John Dolibois, 2012–2013: “I directed a study of the history of the German General Staff. Among those Donovan had me write intelligence monographs [of] were General Walter Warlimont, Field Marshal Albert Kesselring and Minister of Labor Robert Ley.” The Donovan Nuremberg Trial Collection at Cornell contains 150 bound volumes of Nuremberg trial transcripts and documents from the personal archives of General William J. Donovan (1883–1959). Many of the source documents originated at Camp King.

lacked a greater context: Silver, 2.

analyze information from Soviet defectors: Ruffner, xv, xiv–xv. The Soviets repeatedly requested that Wessel and Baun be extradited.

“gradual drift into operations”: “Report of Interview with Brigadier General Edwin L. Sibert on the Gehlen Organization,” March 26, 1970.

make Gehlen head: Ruffner, xxi–xvii. Gehlen’s official title was chief of intelligence collection, Foreign Armies East (Fremde Heere Ost). He had been a prisoner in the United States, at Fort Hunt, Virginia, since 1945.

a village called Pullach: Ruffner, li–lviii; photographs from Central Intelligence Agency. The attachment shows photograph of the building, code-named Nikolaus Compound.

finally realized the true nature: Ruffner, xvii–xviii.

a million dollars a year: Bird, 353. Bird reports that in 1949, “Gehlen signed a contract with the CIA—reportedly for a sum of $5 milllion a year.” Various former Agency sources suggest that sum was likely $1 million a year for five years; Breitman *et al.* use a figure of $500,000 a year.

The two parties agreed: Ruffner, xlviii.

CIA created the Office of Scientific Intelligence: Weber, IV, 23.

“to apply special methods of interrogation”: Marks, 23; CIA Memorandum for the Record, Subject “Project Artichoke,” n.d., No. 75/42-75/46 (FOIA).

Chapter Seventeen: Hall of Mirrors

most unusual press conferences: RG 65 Walter Schreiber, press onference, November 19, 1948, transcript.

The GRU's notorious official emblem: Reuters, *Factbox:* Five facts about Russian military intelligence, April 24, 2009; GRU, abbreviation of Glavnoye Razvedyvatelnoye Upravlenie (Russian: Chief Intelligence Office).

discussing his testimony: RG 65 Walter Schreiber, Agent Report, File VIII-III49, October 27, 1948.

Hitler refused to allow Paulus: Shirer, *Rise and Fall*, 836–37.

"Heroic endurance": Ibid., 837.

"91,000 German soldiers": Ibid., 839. When Hitler learned that Field Marshal Paulus had surrendered to the Soviets, he became enraged. " 'The man [Paulus] should have shot himself just as the old commanders who threw themselves on their swords when they saw that the cause was lost.… What hurts me most, personally, is that I still promoted him to field marshal. I wanted to give him this final satisfaction. That's the last field marshal I shall appoint in this war. You mustn't count your chickens before they're hatched' " (Shirer, *Rise and Fall*, 840).

he was living comfortably: RG 65 Walter Schreiber, File VI-878.16, October 22, 1948. Paulus, like Schreiber, testified at Nuremberg against his fellow Nazi Bonzen. "The mere presence of Paulus in Nuremberg was far more startling than anything he had to say," wrote General Telford Taylor.

Special Agent Wallach: RG 65 Walter Schreiber, Agent Report, File VIII-III49, October 27, 1948.

Loucks found Schreiber: RG 330 Walter Schreiber, Memo, File No. D-249361, December 15, 1949; Loucks Papers (USAMHI), "Desk Diary 1948."

“Loucks stated subject was energetic”: RG 330 Walter Schreiber, Memo, File No. D-249361, December 15, 1949.

to serve as post physician: Ibid. Starting on November 18, 1949, “employed as physician, 7707 ECIC, Oberursel.”

name of the Soviet handler: In the English transcript of the press conference, dated November 19, 1948, Schreiber’s handler’s name is translated/transcribed as “Fisher.”

“I would have liked to stand up: Schmidt, *Justice*, 189.

incarcerated for roughly one year: RG 319 Otto Ambros, 201 File; the dates Ambros was in prison, according to his official Prison File: “confined since 16 August 1948,” he was “discharged 3-2-1951 [February 3, 1951].” Dates vary, including those cited at the Nuremberg Military Tribunal Museum.

boarding school–like campus: Author tour of Landsberg with Prison Warden Dr. Harald Eichinger.

“Politic[s] is a bitter disease”: RG 319 Otto Ambros, Letter to Mrs. Prof. C. Ambros from O. Ambros, n.d.

“my father is [being] illegally held”: Landeskirchliches Archiv, Nachlass Landesbischof Wurm file (folder 307/2), correspondence file for the IG Farben Case, letter of Dieter Ambros, August 26, 1949.

disciplinary action: RG 549 Otto Ambros, Disciplinary Report, January 18, 1951.

requested permission: RG 549 Otto Ambros, “Special Permit,” July 26, 1949; August 16, 1949.

wrote up his annual health report: RG 549 Otto Ambros, Report of Physical Examination, August 8, 1949.

given “victors’ justice”: Frei, 104–6. Meanwhile, men who had served Hitler began the creep back into German politics and industry. Three notable former Nazis were in Adenauer’s cabinet: Dr. Thomas Dehler, Minister of Justice, Dr. Hans Seebohm, Minister of Transportation, and Dr.

Hans Globke, a former member of Hitler’s Interior Ministry and coauthor of Reich race laws.

the “so-called prisoners of war”: Bird, 329–30.

McCloy served: Ibid., 193.

credited in World Bank literature: Archives, World Bank, www.worldbank.org.

that had belonged to Adolf Hitler: Bird, 316. McCloy had two trains at his disposal. The larger of the two belonged to Hitler.

Many Germans wanted: Frei, 114.

the largest office building in Europe: Drummer and Zwilling, 44–45.

McCloy settled in: Ibid., 105.

It was located: Author tour of the IG Farben building, which is now home to the Johann Wolfgang Goethe Universität in Frankfurt am Main, and the Wollheim Memorial, Fritz Bauer Institute, Frankfurt.

something had to be done: Frei, 94, 178.

The legal department: Bird, 330. There exists a famous and controversial story about McCloy when he was the assistant secretary of war (Bird, 214–23). Toward the end of the war, Nahum Goldmann, president of the World Jewish Congress, read in the *New York Times* that between July 7, 1944, and November 20, 1944, ten fleets with sometimes more than three hundred heavy bombers had bombed targets within thirty-five miles of Auschwitz. Goldmann went to see John McCloy at his office in the Pentagon to appeal to the assistant secretary of war, who was able to bring recommendations to European commanders. According to Goldmann, he pleaded with McCloy for Auschwitz to be bombed, saying some would die but a hundred thousand lives might be saved. McCloy said there was little he could do and instead passed off Goldmann to his British counterpart in Washington, Sir John Dill. Goldmann met with Dill, who also rejected the idea, arguing that bombs needed to be saved for important military targets. A second appeal was made to McCloy: to destroy “the execution chambers and crematories at [Auschwitz] Birkenau through direct bombing action.” McCloy turned the matter over to an American lieutenant general named John Hull for quick evaluation; no commanders in Europe were consulted. Hull rejected the appeal, claiming, "The target is beyond the maximum range of medium bombardment, dive bombers and fighter bombers located in the United Kingdom, France or Italy"—a statement, Bird reminds readers, that was contrary to the facts. Goldmann pointed out that the Royal Air Force had already targeted IG Farben's Buna factory, which was four miles away from the gas chambers.

deliberate, shameless murderers: Bird, 331.

McCloy never responded: Ibid.

Peck Panel: David W. Peck was at the time the presiding justice of the New York Supreme Court Appellate Division.

McCloy's adjunct in Bonn: Schwartz, 165.

"the widest possible clemency": Diefendorf et al., 445.

"Due to the threat": History of AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, Office of the Sec of Defense, 7/14/50; Bower, 253.

Dr. Nordstrom maintained a thick file: RG 330 Records of the U.S. High Commission for Germany, Project 63, 1948–1952.

Accelerated Paperclip program: RG 330 Records of the U.S. High Commission for Germany, Files of Research Control Group, Dr. Nordstrom.

"especially dangerous top level scientists": RG 330 Records of the U.S. High Commission for Germany, Project 63, November 22, 1950: Hunt, 203–6; Bower, 253.

Accelerated Paperclip, or Project 63, meetings: RG 330 Records of the U.S. High Commission for Germany, Project 63, 1948–1952; the actual meeting summary notes are missing from the HICOG files—destroyed or misfiled. Only a cover letter remains, indicating who was there.

Representatives from JIOA: RG 330 Records of the U.S. High Commission for Germany, August 2, 1951. The CIA worked under the code name “7955 Scientific Detachment,” which can be identified as the CIA by its representative, Karl H. Weber.

U.S. Army’s “primary interest”: RG 330 Records of the U.S. High Commission for Germany, Project 63, “Instructions for German and Austrian Nationals residing in the United States Under the Terms of Contract Agreement,” 5–7.

Otto Ambros was placed on the JIOA list: RG 319 Otto Ambros, File 291888, “Release of Inmate from Landberg Prison,” RG 319 Otto Ambros, January 11, 1951.

The Peck Panel suggested: Schwartz, 162–65.

1 million reichsmarks: RG 319 Otto Ambros, SHAEF file card dated 10/44, WD44714/36, “Microfilm Project MP-B-102”; when contacted in 2012, Ambros’s son, Dieter Ambros, declined to comment on the figure.

panel’s recommendations: Bird, 360–61.

John J. McCloy commuted: Congressional Record—Senate, February 1951, page 1581. Drew Middleton, “7 Nazis Executed for War Murders,” *New York Times,* June 7, 1951.

one-third of the inmates tried at Nuremberg were freed: RG 549 Otto Ambros, Case Record. The “Order with Respect to Sentence of Otto Ambros” was signed by John J. McCloy and dated January 31, 1951.

Otto Ambros traded in his red-striped denim prison uniform: Ibid.

“Why are we freeing so many Nazis?”: This is the way the quote appears in many books and papers. The way the quote appears in her column (February 28, 1951) is “the fact that we have freed so many Nazis of late must be puzzling the German People.”

“Doctors who had participated”: Nachama, 379.

Charles McPherson learned: RG 330 Kurt Blome, Special Projects Team, March 27, 1951.

Blome said he needed some time: RG 330 Kurt Blome, Special Projects Team, June 25, 1951.

took their boys out of school: Interview with Dr. Götz Blome, August 3, 2012, in Germany.

Blome’s secret Accelerated Paperclip: RG 330 Kurt Blome, Document No. 384.63.

“Suspend shpmt Dr. Kurt Blome”: RG 330 Kurt Blome, October 12, 1951.

“In view of adverse publicity”: RG 330 Kurt Blome, October 19, 1951.

“Recommend Blome be shipped”: RG 330 Kurt Blome, October 24, 1951.

particularly upset because Traub: RG 330 Kurt Blome, November 27, 1951.

have a nice house: Ibid.

She was not interested: Interview with Dr. Götz Blome, August 3, 2012, in Germany.

recently received a check: RG 319 Walter Schreiber, January 18, 1951.

a home in San Antonio and a car: Ibid.

Chapter Eighteen: Downfall

The doctors' trial had affected him: Alexander Papers, Harvard Law School Library, Series II, Box 7, Subseries A, Personal Life, 1883–1985; Papers of Dr. Leopold Alexander, Duke University Medical Center Archives, "Log Book, Journey to Nuremberg."

continued to suffer: *New York Times*, "Cured in U.S. of Her Ills, Left as Nazi Guinea Pig," March 7, 1952.

"I regard it as my duty": RG 330 Walter Schreiber, December 3, 1951.

Dr. Walter Schreiber heard the telephone ring: RG 330 Walter Schreiber, "Department of the Air Force Headquarters United States Air Force Washington," December 14, 1951.

expertise was extremely rare: RG 330 Walter Schreiber, Memo No. 24-170.

long-winded stories: RG 319 Walter Schreiber, Basic Personnel Record for Paperclip Specialist, 30.

identified himself as Mr. Brown: RG 330 Walter Schreiber, "Department of the Air Force Headquarters United States Air Force Washington," December 14, 1951.

did not tell anyone: RG 330 Walter Schreiber, Memo No. 24-170.

"He was of the opinion": Ibid.

FBI got involved: RG 65 Walter Schreiber, File No. A8091581.

"I have been advised": RG 330 Walter Schreiber, January 3, 1952.

General Benson "stated": RG 330 Walter Schreiber, affidavit, January 23, 1952, p. 2.

sent secret messages: Weindling, 15.

FBI agents arranged to interview: RG 330 Walter Schreiber, "Statement taken from Miss Janina Iwanska in connection with an investigation of Dr. Walter Emil Wilhelm Paul Schreiber, at the Boston Office," February 27, 1952.

"I don't know if he gave the orders": Ibid.

Dr. Schreiber began plotting: RG 330 Walter Schreiber, letter dated March 27, 1952.

Schreiber's wife of forty years: RG 330 Walter Schreiber, NSDAP Party document 160-75, Nazi Party No. 917,830.

"I am fighting for justice": *Washington Post*, "Charges Denounced as 'Lies' by Schreiber," February 13, 1952.

"I never worked in a concentration camp" RG 330 Walter Schreiber, affidavit, January 23, 1952.

"a man should be given": RG 330 Walter Schreiber, transcript of interview between Colonel Heckemeyer, director of JIOA, and Miss Moran, *Time*, February 26, 1952.

"Here are the facts regarding the Nazi doctor": Drew Pearson, "Air Force Hires Nazi Doctor Linked to Ghastly Experiments," Associated Press, February 14, 1952.

Letter to President Truman: RG 330 Walter Schreiber, telegram to the president dated April 24, 1952, 9:34 p.m.

"We are not going to make": RG 330 Walter Schreiber, transcript of interview between Colonel Heckemeyer, director of JIOA, and Miss Moran, *Time*, February 26, 1952.

made by General Aristobulo Fidel Reyes: RG 330 Walter Schreiber, Department of the Air Force staff message No. 52571.

air force paid for police protection: RG 330 Walter Schreiber, memorandum, Travis Air Force Base, California, April 4, 1952.

say the family documents: Records of Schreiber’s mother-in-law, Marie Conrad, and of Walter E. W. Paul Schreiber, at www.my heritage.com.

Chapter Nineteen: Truth Serum

“the use of drugs and chemicals”: CIA Memorandum for the Record, Subject Project Artichoke, January 31, 1975. This was part of the review prompted by John Marks’s FOIA request and is part of the John Marks Collection at the National Security Archives. “Between 1950 and 1952, responsibility for mind-control went from the [CIA’s] Office of Security to the Scientific Intelligence Unit back to Security again,” writes Marks, who successfully petitioned the government in 1975 to release to him the MKUltra documents under the Freedom of Information Act.

Blome’s file: RG 330 Kurt Blome, Contract, DoD DA-91-501, December 3, 1951.

“Bluebird was rechristened”: Marks, 31.

“modifying behavior through covert means”: Ibid., 61.

“We felt that it was our responsibility”: Interview with Richard Helms, History Staff, Center for the Study of Intelligence, Central Intelligence Agency, adapted from an interview with Mr. Helms taped by David Frost in Washington, May 22–23, 1978.

“to avoid duplication of effort”: Marks, 61.

“50 million doses”: “Joint Hearing Before the Select Committee on Intelligence,” 91.

SO Division: Marks, 61, 70–72; Regis, 116–19.

secret memo to Richard Helms: Helms was Wisner’s deputy at this time. CIA’s Program of Research in Behavioral Modification,” August 3, 1977; “Joint Hearing Before the Select Committee on Intelligence,” 72–76.

“ ‘Interrogation Techniques’ ”: CIA Memorandum for Deputy Director (Plans), Subject Special Interrogation, February 12, 1951.

since foreign governments: “Joint Hearing Before the Select Committee on Intelligence,” 101. This memo was read aloud in the hearing.

safe house called Haus Waldorf: Koch and Wech, 115–16; the CIA called Camp King ECIC, or European Command Intelligence Center, DOJ Klaus Barbie investigation, iii, List of Abbreviations.

“Between 4 June 1952 and 18 June 1952”: “Joint Hearing Before the Select Committee on Intelligence,” 68; Koch and Wech, 113.

make them forget: CIA Memorandum for Director of Central Intelligence, Subject: Artichoke, June 1952.

Beecher was paid by the CIA: Interview with Egmont Koch, August 6, 2012, in Germany; Koch and Wech, 102–5.

“He had a tough time after Germany”: The documentary *Codename Artichoke* (2001), by Egmont Koch and Michael Wech, minute 16:00.

expanding its Artichoke program: the CIA assigns code cryptonyms to each of its projects. One vein of its drug-induced interrogation program at Detrick was called MKDETRIC until agents decided that that was too obvious and changed it to MKNAOMI, after Abramson’s secretary, Naomi Busner.

“the most frightening experience”: Marks, 84.

“Dr. Olson was in serious trouble”: “Joint Hearing Before the Select Committee on Intelligence,” 77.

LSD tolerance experiments: Regis, 158. He was also working on a book about LSD, which would be published in 1959.

Frank Olson’s problems were all in his mind: “Joint Hearing Before the Select Committee on Intelligence,” 75–78; Abramson gave Frank Olson a bottle of bourbon and the sedative Nembutal to sleep.

“the delivery of various materials”: Marks, 84.

Olson became suspicious: “Joint Hearing Before the Select Committee on Intelligence,” 75–76.

room 1018A: Marks notes that room 1018 was actually thirteen floors up.

empty his pockets: A curious detail from the Regis account—Lashbrook carried a slip of paper with thirty letters in a row, which Lashbrook said was the coded combination to a safe.

from aircraft and crop dusters: home movie film footage from Frank Olson's camera, found by his son Eric, can be seen in *Codename Artichoke*, minute 11:00.

as Senate hearings later revealed: "Joint Hearing Before the Select Committee on Intelligence," 3, 23, 68–78.

"We used a spore," Cournoyer explained: *Codename Artichoke*, minute 16:00.

Chapter Twenty: In the Dark Shadows

violated NATO regulations: Hunt, 182.

fearing it would draw the ire: NARA 59 General Records of the Department of State, HICOG Cable from John McCloy to Secretary of State, February 21, 1952.

the CIA continued to do: NARA 59 General Records of the Department of State, HICOG Memo from Karl Weber to P. G. Strong, March 18, 1952. It is worth noting that the CIA had its own photostatted copies of the Osenberg files, thanks to the JIOA, which included the names, biographical records, and addresses of nearly eighteen thousand German scientists from the Reich Research Council years—which the CIA used as a recruiting list.

twenty-man team to Frankfurt: Dornberger files, "Calendar 1952," Deutsches Museum, Munich.

When McCloy learned of the trip: Hunt, 182, 304n.

A compromise was reached: Ibid., 182–83.

target list: RG 330 U.S. High Commissioner for Germany, "Project 63 (Index 1948-52)."

JIOA renamed Paperclip: Ibid.

During his year-long tenure: Hunt, 2–3.

FBI learned that Whalen: Hunt, 202–3.

Whalen was a spy: Hunt, 2; RG 319, Records of the Army Staff, Subject: Technical Assesment Re: Former Retired LTC Willian Henry Whalen, 8 April, 1967; "Damage Assessment of Classified Documents," January 18, 1965.

a grand jury was presented: "Indicted in Espionage," Associated Press, July 13, 1966.

“truly revolutionary military offspring”: Neufeld, *The Rocket and the Reich*, 274.

“Developing Technology”: http://www.acq.osd.mil.

“the acquisition of unwarranted influence”: York, 144.

“Scientists and technologists had acquired”: Ibid., 145.

“Eisenhower’s warnings”: Ibid., 148.

In 1950, military intelligence: RG 319 Walter Schieber, Agent Report, January 10, 1950.

“first class business deal”: Ibid.

Special Agent Maxwell worried: Ibid.

even worse news: RG 319 Walter Schieber, Agent Report, March 22, 1950; Agent Report, May 1, 1950. Schieber was also collecting a regular paycheck of 880 deutschmarks from the Office of the Land Commission for Baden-Württemberg in Stuttgart, in their Scientific Research Division. This meant that he was working for three governments at the same time.

Operation Paperclip payroll until 1956: RG 263 Walter Schieber, “Official Dispatch, Chief of Mission, Frankfurt,” November 18, 1963.

“a small clique of senior congressmen”: Tucker, 213.

Sarin production took off: Ibid., 128; Keogh and Betsy, 10.

Rocky Mountain Arsenal: Hylton, 59–70.

Rocky Flats munitions loading plant: Hylton, 60; Tucker, 133.

Collier’s magazine published: Ryan, 89.

VX by the thousands of tons: Tucker, 164–69.

working on VX munitions: Hoffmann personal papers; Tucker, 160.

“He was our searcher”: Hunt, 159–61.

He always flew military”: Telephone interviews with Gabriella Hoffmann, October 17, 2012, and March 22, 2013.

“non discernible microbioinoculator”: “CIA poison arsenal explained,” Associated Press, September 17, 1975.

The SO Division’s Agent Branch; “Joint Hearing Before the Select Committee on Intelligence,” 9–12, 67–71; Regis, 151.

favorite drink, a milkshake: Marks, 81.

“We wish give every”: Regis, 184.

Gottlieb’s plan: Housen, 1–21; Regis, 182–85.

botulinum toxin lost its potency: Housen, 8.

thousands of U.S. soldiers: Senate Committee on Veterans’ Affairs, “Is Military Research Hazardous to Veterans’ Health?” December 8, 1994.

“the inhalation toxicity”: Weeks and Yevich, 622–29.

became even more deadly: Weeks, Weir, and Bath, 663. At the laboratory at Edgewood, Maurice Weeks conducted “inhalation exposure” experiments on rodents.

recalls Gabriella Hoffmann: Telephone interview with Gabriella Hoffmann, October 17, 2012.

American diplomat Sam Woods: Telephone interview with John Dippel, October 19, 2012.

“I remember it very clearly”: Telephone interview with Gabriella Hoffmann, October 17, 2012; “Agent Orange” Product Liability Litigation, 1–115.

Hoffmann Trip Report: “Agent Orange” Product Liability Litigation, 52–53.

Traub worked on virological research: RG 65 Erich Traub, Special Contract, War Department.

Traub became friendly: Interview with Dr. Rolf Benzinger, February 19, 2013; the navy was conducting research on explosive decompression techniques in order to create what a Senate hearing later termed “the perfect concussion,” meant to give an enemy combatant amnesia.

agents and diseases being studied: Moon, 22.

Congress mandated: Loucks Papers (USAMHI), “Fort Terry Historical Report: 1 January 1951–30 June 1952”; U.S. Army Chemical Corps; Robert Hurt, “Fort Terry Historical Report: 1 April–30 June 1953,” July 31, 1953.

choice for a director: RG 65 Erich Traub, File A-7183623.

accepted a position: RG 65 Erich Traub, Special Contract. In German, the institute is called Bundesanstalt für Virusforschung.

at his new home: RG 65 Traub, Agent Report, neighborhood check, January 28, 1963.

Razi Institute: RG 65 Erich Traub, November 11, 1965.

an entire group: Tucker, “Farewell to Germs: The U.S. Renunciation of Biological and Toxin Warfare, 1969, 1970,” *International Security* 27, no. 1 (Summer 2002): 107–48.

dumped in the ocean: Not until 1972 was dumping chemicals into the ocean prohibited by the Marine Protection, Research and Sanctuaries Act of 1972.

not made to ever be dismantled: Tucker, 221–22.

robotic separation of the chemical agent: Keogh and Betsy, 9.

“The numbers speak volumes”: U.S. Army Chemical Materials Agency, “A Success Story—Johnston Atoll Chemical Agent Disposal System,” press release, September 21, 2005.

program cost: Keogh and Betsy, 10.

Chapter Twenty-One: Limelight

he kept track of: Dornberger files, Calendars 1949–1959, Deutsches Museum, Munich.

beneficent science pioneer: Dornberger, *V-2: The Nazi Rocket Weapon;* McGovern, 46; In Dornberger papers housed at the Deutsches Museum, the unedited manuscript drafts of this book include re-creations of conversations Dornberger said he had with Himmler. In one, on the use of slave labor, Dornberger cites Himmler as having said to him, "[T]he power of Germany [meant] a return to the era of slavery." To this Dornberger says he wondered aloud if other nations might object, to which Himmler said, "After our victory they will not dare!"

"It would be nice to know": Neufeld, *Creating a Memory of the German Rocket Program for the Cold War*, 78.

There was "deafening silence": Heppenheimer, 133.

"in the role of a double agent": RG 65 Walter Dornberger, FBI file No. 39-137.

Fort Bliss rocket team moved: Biography of Dr. Wernher von Braun, First Center Director, July 1, 1960–Jan. 27, 1970 (available at www.nasa.gov).

necessary first step: Neufeld, *Von Braun*, 246.

"patriotic writing": Ibid., 271.

"taken as a fundamental source": Neufeld, *Creating a Memory of the German Rocket Program for the Cold War*, 77.

The first Disneyland TV broadcast: Wolper, *The Race to Space*, narrated by Mike Wallace; Brzezinski, 91.

NASA constructed the Vertical Assembly Building: NASA facts, "Building KSC'S Launch Complex 39" (www.nasa.gov); McGovern, 251.

designed by Bernhard Tessmann: Wolper, *The Race to Space.*

chose not to correct the newsman: Neufeld, *Creating a Memory of the German Rocket Program for the Cold War,* 76.

“Human skin, of course?”: Neufeld, *Von Braun*, 271, 514n.

the rocket would not hit London: Cornwell, 423.

The Secret of Huntsville: Neufeld, *Creating a Memory of the German Rocket Program for the Cold War*, 84.

The space agency’s three top officials: Neufeld, *Von Braun*, 405–6.

success in the Eastern bloc: Ibid., 408.

“I don’t know much more”: Bundesarchiv Ludwigsburg, Rickhey Files, B-35/66, April 20, 1967.

Essen-Dora Trial: Bundesarchiv Ludwigsburg, Rickhey Files, B-162/964.

NASA lawyers suggested New Orleans: Neufeld, *Von Braun*, 428–29.

“to broadcast the connection”: Neufeld, *Von Braun*, 428; Telephone interview with Michael Neufeld, April 3, 2013.

von Braun said no: Feigin, 330–35.

von Braun and Dornberger corresponded: Neufeld, *Von Braun*, 429.

“Sorry, but I can’t support”: Neufeld, *Von Braun*, 471.

first ever U.S. military panel discussion on biology: Mackowski, 125–26.

Albert was strapped into a harness: Tara Gray, “A Brief History of Animals in Space,” NASA History Office, 1998, http://history.nasa.gov/printFriendly/animals.html.

decided it was time: Hasdorff, 9.

“we needed much larger accommodations”: Bullard and Glasgow, 69.

sell the idea to Congress: Ibid., 70–75.

“I appointed myself Director”: Ibid., 77.

he traveled to Germany: RG 330 Hubertus Strughold, November 16, 1945.

leaked to journalist Drew Pearson: Hunt, 54.

at SAM, he worked: RG 330 Konrad Schäfer, March 27, 1951.

make Mississippi River water drinkable: RG 263 Central Intelligence Agency, Hubertus Strughold file, A-1-2062.

“The experience of this Headquarters”: RG 330 Konrad Schäfer, March 27, 1951.

that he be sent back to Germany: Ibid.

He moved to New York City: RG 65 Konrad Schäfer, FBI File No. 105-12396. The FBI paid Schäfer at least one visit in New York, during which they “advised him of the jurisdiction of the FBI concerning espionage, sabotage and subversive activities.” Schäfer promised the FBI that if the Russians were to try and recruit him, he would contact the FBI and let them know.

in violation of the Nuremberg Code: “Memorandum to Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments,” April 5, 1995; Jacobsen, 302–3, 331.

aboveground nuclear weapons tests: Jacobsen, xi–xvi, 107–23.

Top Secret studies: USAF School of Aviation Medicine, Randolph Air Force Base, Randolph Field, Texas, “Trip Report,” August 19, 1952 (FOIA).

studies involving “flashblindness”: Ibid. In addition to the flashblindness studied, SAM conducted experiments involving “Blasts, Burns, and Psychological” effects.

“That’s the thing that gave us curiosity”: Welsome, 292.

members of the SA: Ibid., 293.

forty miles from ground zero: Welsome, 295.

porthole-like windows: Harbert and Whittemore, 54.

Some of the soldier volunteers: Ibid., 55.

in declassified records as “S.H.”: Ibid., 290.

“one of the most beautiful images of a fireball”: Harbert and Whittemore, 33.

Monkey astronaut rocket tests: It would be another ten years before two monkeys, Able and Miss Baker, traveled into space and returned to earth alive. The taxidermied body of Able, strapped into his flight seat, is on display at the National Air and Space Museum.

personally escort Farrell: Reichhardt, “First Up? Even Before NASA Was Created, Civilian and Military Labs Were in Search of Spacemen,” *Air & Space,* September 2000.

Benson singled out Strughold: Thomas, 54.

“Johnson asked me”: Ibid.

“Nazi doctors during World War II”: “Himmler the Scientist” by Julian Bach Jr. Letters to the Editor, *Saturday Review,* August 9, 1958.

twenty-ninth meeting of the Aero Medical Association: Benford, *Doctors in the Sky: The Story of the Aero Medical Association*, 56.

Strughold authored papers and journals: Mackowski, 215–16.

“Only the janitor”: Thomas, 49–56.

Simon Wiesenthal: Bundesarchiv Ludwigsburg, Hubertus Strughold Files, 828/73.

provided Wiesenthal with a copy: Ibid.

included a list: Charles Allen Jr., “Hubertus Strughold, Nazi in U.S.,” *Jewish Currents,* September 28, 1974.

the freezing experiments in detail: Ralph Blumenthal, “Drive on Nazi Suspects a Year Later; No U.S. Legal Steps Have Been Taken,” *New York Times*, November 23, 1974.

told interviewer James C. Hasdorff: Hasdorff, 15, 42. Strughold also said he married a “pretty secretary” named Mary Webb Dalehite, in 1971, at the age of seventy-two.

Hitler’s “so-called enemy list”: Hasdorff, 16. Strughold relayed to Hasdorff an almost certainly invented story involving the Nazi general and the American general George Patton. The scene was allegedly set in Garmisch-Partenkirchen, Germany, in the days or weeks after the end of the war. “This [American] General covered in full medals asked Dornberger, ‘Are you the guy who was in charge of development of the V-2 rockets?’ ” Strughold quoted Dornberger as saying. “He [Dornberger] said, ‘Ja wohl, Herr General. Yes, General.’ Then [Patton] gave [Dornberger] three cigars and said, ‘My Congratulations. I could not have done it [myself]!’ Dornberger told me this story himself,” said Strughold (Hasdorff, 19–20).

distortion of reality: RG 330 Hubertus Strughold, JIOA Form No. 2, Basic Personnel Record.

Chapter Twenty-Two: Legacy

large-scale public trial: Pendas, 1–3.

“The trial was triggered”: Hermann Langbein narrates this story in *Verdict on Auschwitz* (2007), directed by Rolf Bickel and Dietrich Wagner. The sequence begins at minute 7:00. The film is based on 430 hours of original audio tapes from the trial.

filed murder charges: Bundesarchiv Koblenz, Otto Ambros Files, B 162/3221.

leading normal lives: This is all told with stunning precision in *Verdict on Auschwitz*. The details are incredible. For example, Prosecutor Joachim Küger found Rudolph Höss’s right-hand man by a twist of fate. He, Küger, was attending the Olympic Games in Rome when he noticed that an athlete with the last name of Mulka had won a medal for sailing. “Mulka is not a common name,” explained Küger. This is how Küger was able to track down the Auschwitz adjunct Robert Mulka. The Olympic sailor was the son of the war criminal.

were business colleagues: Bundesarchiv Koblenz, Dr. Otto Ambros Files, B 162.

“I and my colleagues are the victims of the Third Reich”: Ibid.

“Former War Criminal”: Ibid. The newspaper is not identified, only referred to in one of Ambros’s letters.

“The whole affair”: Bundesarchiv Koblenz, Dr. Otto Ambros file, B 162; the letters are both dated April 25, 1964.

“how I behaved during the Reich”: Ibid.

W. R. Grace: correspondence with Ambros’s former colleague (from the 1950s) Michael Howard, 2012. Ambros was “always the most intelligent of those with whom he consorted,” recalls Howard. “Ambros was a puppet master, the éminence grise.”

“Dr. Ambros had contacts”: Memorandum for the president, from James W. Nance, the White House, Washington, D.C., March 23, 1982 (FOIA).

Even the president: Ibid.; Letter to Congressman Tom Landon from James W. Nance, the White House, Washington, D.C., April 13, 1982 (FOIA).

“It involved Jews”: Hilberg, 1089.

“to all the doctors and dentists”: Bundesarchiv Ludwigsburg, Dr. Kurt Blome file, B 162/28667.

Sonderbehandlung: Ibid.

alone and estranged: interview with Götz Blome, August 3, 2012, in Germany.

“I have a very strong conviction”: Bird, 375.

two sympathetic Dutch Red Cross nurses: Weindling, 309, 315.

and a reported $350,000: Sereny 646; Van Der Vat, 328.

“How often I thought of you”: Neufeld, *Von Braun*, 472.

Pilot Factors Program: Knemeyer personal papers; telephone interview with Dirk Knemeyer, June 20, 2012.

“immediately taken to a crematory”: Knemeyer, 70.

“One seldom recognizes when the Devil”: O’Donnell, “The Devil’s Architect,” SM45. The fate of Wilhelm Beiglböck is worth noting. He was the Nazi doctor who performed seawater experiments at Dachau, and he removed a piece of Karl Höllenrainer’s liver without anesthesia. Convicted and sentenced to fifteen years in Landsberg Prison, he was granted clemency by U.S. High Commissioner John McCloy in 1951. Within a year, Beiglböck was back practicing medicine, at a hospital in Buxtehude, Germany, thanks to a former SS colleague, August Dietrich “Dieter” Allers, who ran the hospital. Beiglböck published medical papers and enjoyed prominence in the German medical community until 1962, when he traveled to his native Vienna to give a lecture. In Austria, there were open war crimes charges against Beiglböck, and he was arrested. Back in Germany, and likely as a result of attention from the Frankfurt Auschwitz trial, Dieter Allers was arrested around the same time. With no job to return to at the hospital, Beiglböck committed suicide on November 22, 1963. He was fifty-eight years old. He left all of his money to Die Stille Hilfe, or Silent Help, a clandestine society that Allers ran. It provided aid to fugitive SS members (Weindling, 309, 315).

Chapter Twenty-Three: What Lasts?

“I do not reproach”: Michel, 98.

Rudolph relates: Ordway and Sharpe, 70–71, 77–79; Neufeld, *Von Braun*, 471.

Rosenbaum later recalled: Feigin, 2.

Arthur Rudolph’s activities: Feigin, 300–342.

One of Rudolph’s leading proponents: Hunt, photographic insert opposite page 149.

“not a single document”: Neufeld, *The Rocket and the Reich*, 186–87, 227.

“There is little doubt”: Telephone interview with Michael Neufeld, April 3, 2013. Neufeld adds that in the summer of 1990, while researching *The Rocket and the Reich*, he came across a document in a German archive showing that Arthur Rudolph had been a staunch advocate of slave labor even before the creation of the Mittelwerk. On April 12, 1943, “Rudolph took a tour of the Heinkel aircraft plant and returned to Peenemünde excited about the use of slave labor,” says Neufeld, notably because it offered partnership with the SS and “greater protection for secrecy.”

a bill for $239,680: Hunt’s book, *Secret Agenda: The United States Government, Nazi Scientists, and Project Paperclip, 1945–1990*, was preceded by a book by British journalist Tom Bower, *The Paperclip Conspiracy: The Hunt for the Nazi Scientists*, for which Bower accessed unreported stories from both American and British archives. Both books helped me tremendously in my understanding of Operation Paperclip.

Dr. Strughold had been listed: *New York Times*, “Portrait of Nazi Prompts Protest,” October 26, 1993.

“[t]he notion that”: Breitman, Goda, Naftali, and Wolfe, 7.

“there was no compelling reason”: Ibid.

chairman of the advisory committee: Letter to Congressman Tom Landon from James W. Nance, the White House, Washington, D.C., April 13, 1982 (FOIA).

Grünenthal was a safe haven for many Nazis: Roger Williams and Jonathan Stone, "The Nazis and Thalidomide: The Worst Drug Scandal of all Time," *Newsweek*, September 10, 2012.

"given with complete safety": Statistics about the release of the drug are available on the company's website: http://www.contergan.grunenthal.info.

group of Nazi-era documents: Daniel Foggo, "Thalidomide 'Was Created by the Nazis,' " *Times* (London), February 8, 2009.

Dr. Johnson points out: Correspondence with Dr. Martin Johnson, May 15, 2012; June 1, 2012; October 25, 2012.

"The patents suggest that thalidomide": Andrew Levy, "Nazis Developed Thalidomide and Tested It on Concentration Camp Prisoners, Author Claims," *Daily Mail*, February 8, 2009.

"the spring of 1943 Kuhn asked": *Nachrichten aus der Chemie*, May 2006, 514; the revelatory information is also contained in the 2007 edition of the *Complete Dictionary of Scientific Biography*, in the entry for Richard Kuhn.

the many documents pertaining: Author's note: Pursuant to my FOIA denial and subsequent appeal, these records are awaiting review and possible release. However, the incumbent president has privilege over their release, per Executive Order 13489.

"Ambros came to the United States in 1967": Jewish Telegraphic Agency, "Ambros, Convicted Nazi War Criminal, Abandons Plans to Visit U.S.," May 3, 1971.

"The sensational value": *Daily Mail*, "Mengele's Food Coupons Found: Bizarre Insight into the Lives of Nazi Death Doctors Unearthed in Auschwitz House," March 23, 2010.

"an expressive entrepreneurial figure": Quoted at the Wollheim Memorial, Fritz Bauer Institute, http://www.wollheim-memorial.de/en/home.

page-one story: Lucette Lagnado, “Space Medicine Group Jousts over Fate of Strughold Prize,” *Wall Street Journal*, December 1, 2012.

came across evidence: Telephone interview with Hans-Walter Schmuhl. Schmuhl was in the archive of the Max-Planck Institute in or around 2008, researching Dr. Nachtsheim, when he came across the Strughold information. There is an even earlier reference about exactly this matter in Ute Deichmann, *Biologists Under Hitler* (237). I cite Schmuhl, as it was the public release of his information that led to a policy change.

Campbell blames the Internet: Interview and correspondence with Dr. Mark Campbell, February 4, 2013, and March 30, 2013.

“Why defend him?”: Lagnado, “Space Medicine Group Jousts.”

“Simple as it is, Kurt Debus is an honored American”: Telephone interview with Steve Griffin, February 8, 2012.

classify the list: Office of U.S. Chief of Counsel, APO 124-A. U.S. Army. List of Personnel Involved in Medical Research and Mercy Killings, n.d. (FOIA).

obituary in 1999: Nick Ravo, “Dr. Theodor H. Benzinger, 94, Inventor of the Ear Thermometer,” *New York Times*, October 30, 1999.

lifelong scientific pursuit: Telephone interview with Rolf Benzinger, February 19, 2013.

“This lasts,” he said: Interview with Gerhard Maschkowski, June 2, 2012, California.

Thank you for buying this ebook, published by Hachette Digital.

To receive special offers, bonus content, and news about our latest ebooks and apps, sign up for our newsletters.

Sign Up

Or visit us at hachettebookgroup.com/newsletters

BOOKish

For more about this book and author, visit Bookish.com.

CONTENTS

1. Cover
2. Title Page
3. Welcome
4. Dedication
5. Prologue
6. **Part I**
    1. **Chapter 1** The War and the Weapons
    2. **Chapter 2** Destruction
    3. **Chapter 3** The Hunters and the Hunted
    4. **Chapter 4** Liberation
    5. **Chapter 5** The Captured and Their Interrogators
7. **Part II**
    1. **Chapter 6** Harnessing the Chariot of Destruction
    2. **Chapter 7** Hitler's Doctors
    3. **Chapter 8** Black, White, and Gray
    4. **Chapter 9** Hitler's Chemists
    5. **Chapter 10** Hired or Hanged
8. **Part III**
    1. **Chapter 11** The Ticking Clock

    2. **Chapter 12** Total War of Apocalyptic Proportions
    3. **Chapter 13** Science at Any Price
    4. **Chapter 14** Strange Judgment
9. **Part IV**
    1. **Chapter 15** Chemical Menace
    2. **Chapter 16** Headless Monster
    3. **Chapter 17** Hall of Mirrors
    4. **Chapter 18** Downfall
    5. **Chapter 19** Truth Serum
10. **Part V**
    1. **Chapter 20** In the Dark Shadows
    2. **Chapter 21** Limelight
    3. **Chapter 22** Legacy
    4. **Chapter 23** What Lasts?
11. Photos
12. Acknowledgments
13. About the Author
14. Principal Characters
15. Author Interviews and Bibliography
16. Also by Annie Jacobsen
17. Notes
18. Newsletters
19. Copyright

Copyright

Copyright © 2014 by Anne M. Jacobsen Cover design by Ben Wiseman Author photograph by Hilary Jones Cover copyright © 2014 by Hachette Book Group All rights reserved. In accordance with the U.S. Copyright Act of 1976, the scanning, uploading, and electronic sharing of any part of this book without the permission of the publisher constitute unlawful piracy and theft of the author's intellectual property. If you would like to use material from the book (other than for review purposes), prior written permission must be obtained by contacting the publisher at permissions@hbgusa.com. Thank you for your support of the author's rights.

Little, Brown and Company
Hachette Book Group
237 Park Avenue, New York, NY 10017
littlebrown.com
twitter.com/littlebrown
facebook.com/littlebrownandcompany

First ebook edition: February 2014

Little, Brown and Company is a division of Hachette Book Group, Inc. The Little, Brown name and logo are trademarks of Hachette Book Group, Inc.

The Hachette Speakers Bureau provides a wide range of authors for speaking events. To find out more, go to hachettespeakersbureau.com or call (866) 376-6591.

The publisher is not responsible for websites (or their content) that are not owned by the publisher.

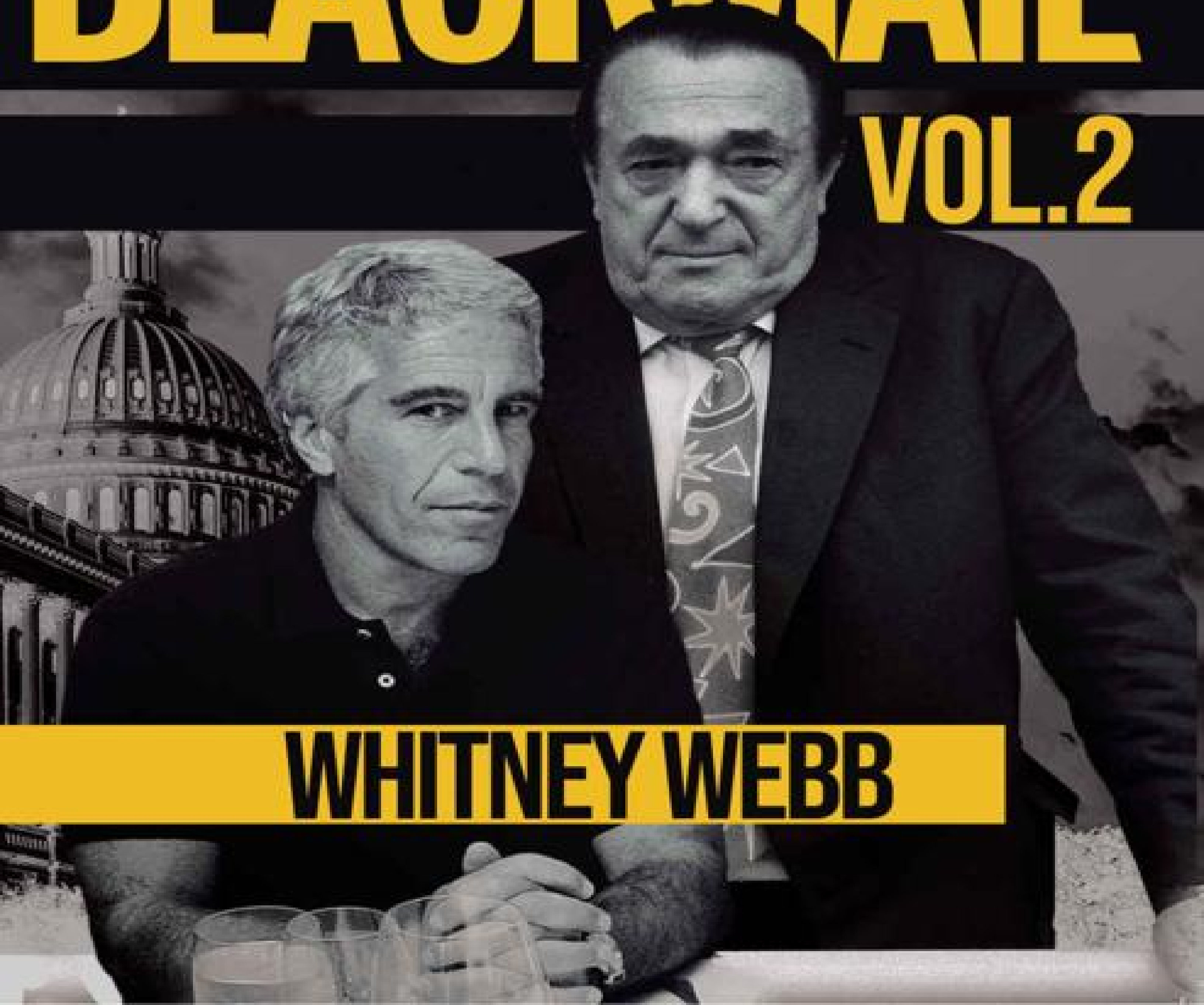
ISBN 978-0-316-22105-4

E3

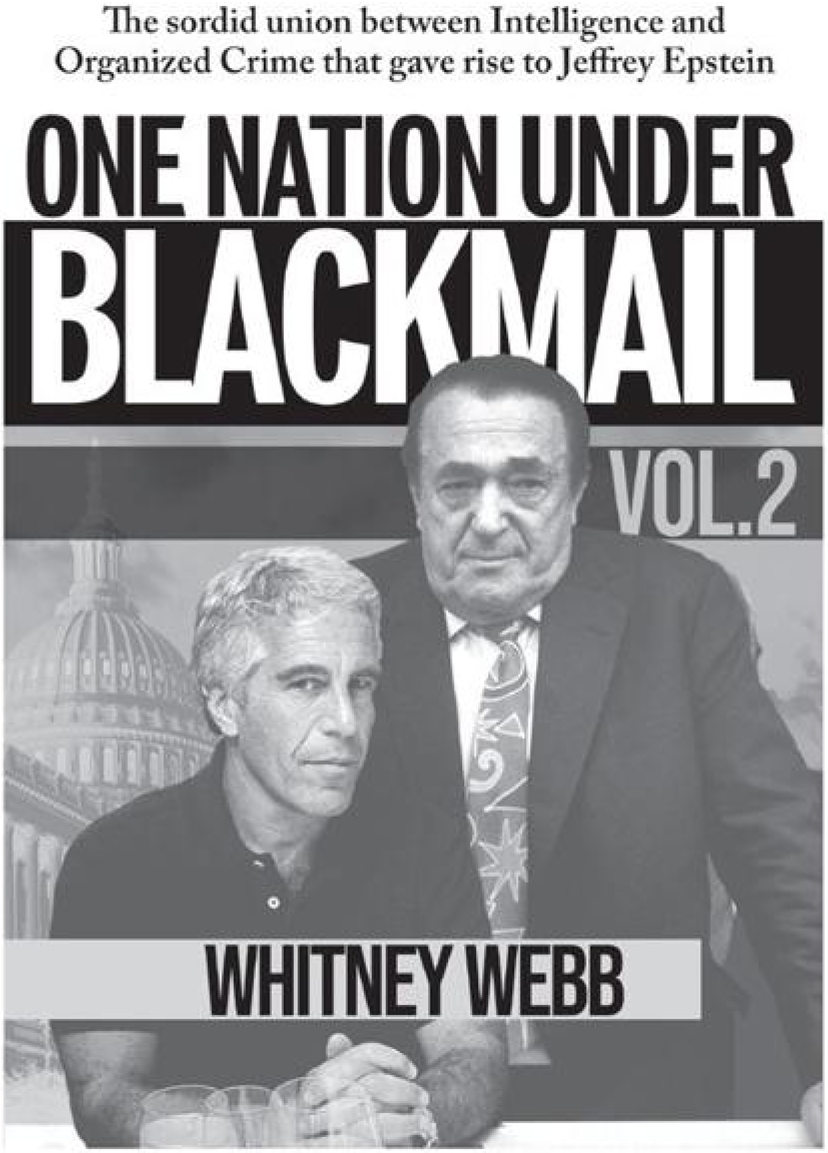
The sordid union between Intelligence and Organized Crime that gave rise to Jeffrey Epstein

ONE NATION UNDER BLACKMAIL

VOL.2



WHITNEY WEBB



The sordid union between Intelligence and
Organized Crime that gave rise to Jeffrey Epstein

ONE NATION UNDER BLACKMAIL

VOL.2

WHITNEY WEBB

One Nation Under Blackmail: The Sordid Union Between Intelligence and Crime that Gave Rise to Jeffrey Epstein, Volume Two.
Copyright © 2022 Whitney Webb. All Rights Reserved.

Published by:
Trine Day LLC
PO Box 577
Walterville, OR 97489
1-800-556-2012
www.TrineDay.com
trineday@icloud.com

Library of Congress Control Number: 2022945124

Webb, Whitney
One Nation Under Blackmail: The Sordid Union Between Intelligence and Crime that Gave Rise to Jeffrey Epstein, Volume Two.—1st ed.
p. cm.

Epub (ISBN-13) 978-1-63424-303-2
Print (ISBN-13) 978-1-63424-302-5
1. Epstein, Jeffrey, -- 1953-2019. 2. Epstein, Jeffrey, -- 1953-2019 -- Friends and associates. 3. Extortion -- United States 1940-2022. 3. Organized Crime -- United States. 5. Organized Crime -- Canada. 6. Intelligence services -- United States. 7. Espionage. 8. POLITICAL SCIENCE / Corruption & Misconduct. 9. Truthfulness and falsehood -- Political aspects. 10. Espionage -- Israel -- United States. 11. Sex scandals -- Political aspects -- United States. 12. TRUE CRIME / Sexual Assault. I. Title First Edition First Edition
10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

Distribution to the Trade by: Independent Publishers Group (IPG)

814 North Franklin Street

Chicago, Illinois 60610
312.337.0747
www.ipgbook.com

PUBLISHER'S FOREWORD

For although the act condemn the doer, the end may justify him…
– Niccolò Machiavelli, *Discourses*: I, 9, 1531

The illegal we do immediately. The unconstitutional takes a little longer. [laughter] But since the Freedom of Information Act, I'm afraid to say things like that.
– Henry Kissinger, *Memorandum of Conversation,* March 10, 1975

We're an empire now, and when we act, we create our own reality. And while you're studying that reality – judiciously, as you will – we'll act again, creating other new realities, which you can study too, and that's how things will sort out. We're history's actors … and you, all of you, will be left to just study what we do.
– [S}enior adviser to Bush, Ron Suskind, *New York Times,* 2004

Government by blackmail is incompatible with democracy.
– Jerrold Nadler, *The Huffington Post,* October 7, 2013

Lord have mercy – and as God knows – we could use some!

After running around this blue ball for nigh on seventy-three years and moving in some strange circles, I reckoned I had seen, heard and read about most everything.

But the depth and breadth of Whitney Webb's opus, *A Nation Under Blackmail: The Sordid Union Between Intelligence and Crime that Gave Rise to Jeffrey Epstein,* exceeded my expectations. Matter-of-fact, Whitney delivered two books, over 900 fact-filled pages of exposé, exploring a netherworld nexus of criminals, scammers, drug-dealers, bagmen, intelligence agents, government operatives and political fixers.

How did this corruption happen? How did it seep so far into our body politic? What can we the people do?

TrineDay has been striving for years to bring these shameful actions more exposure, because we believe that by informing folks of the atrociousness of our current situation, we the people can overcome the perfidy we find ourselves enmeshed in.

We have published Nick Bryant's *Franklin Scandal: A Story of Power-brokers, Child Abuse & Betrayal,* Henry Vinson's *Confessions of a DC Madam The Politics of Sex, Lies, and Blackmail,* Dr. Lori Handrahan's *Epidemic America's Trade in Child Rape,* and others. We tried to get these books mainstream press coverage, hired PR folks, sent out numerous press releases – to no avail. Even the fringe outlets wouldn't cover, we were told directly that Coast-to-Coast AM wouldn't cover these subjects, and were never able to get these authors on. Jesse Ventura informed us that he was instructed that his show *Conspiracy Theory with Jesse Ventura* could not cover pedophilia scandals. Why? And by keeping honest information away from folk, it has allowed for the spurious politicization of very real events into crazy conspiracy theories and meme warfare that devalues, deflects and derides the actuality of the abuse.

Our forefathers and subsequent generations have given much so that we can live in this grand experiment of people running their own affairs, not ruled by Royals or Popes, but by our own wit and gumption. We can survive this corruption, and be better by it's exposure.

Whitney Webb is one of the lonely voices of truth in the wilderness of today's media landscape. She has been delivering solid information through various websites and podcasts. TrineDay is proud to publish her two volume exposition, *A Nation Under Blackmail,* a deep, deep dive into corruption that effects all of our lives and futures. Not salacious reportage but one that asks the basic questions: who, what, where, how and why.

Looking at this history, Whitney sorts out the different players, agendas and scandals giving us a honest view of our past – warts and all. And gives us a surprising glimpse of forthcoming technological advances in blackmail techniques. Thank-you, Whitney!

Whither goest our ship of state?

Onwards to the Utmost of Futures!
Peace,

R.A. “Kris” Millegan

Publisher

TrineDay
August 22, 2022

CONTENTS

Introduction

11) The Rise of Jeffrey Epstein

12) The Property Developer

13) The World of Leslie Wexner

14) The Darkside of Wexner's "Philanthropy""

15) Ghislaine Maxwell: Heiress to an Espionage Empire

16) Crooked Campaigns

17) Epstein's Enterprise?

18) Predators

19) The Prince and the President

20) Epstein, Edge, and Big Tech

21) From PROMIS to Palantir: The Future of Blackmail

Documents

Index

INTRODUCTION, VOLUME 2

The July 2019 arrest of Jeffrey Epstein and his subsequent death that August brought national as well as international attention to a sex ring where certain members of the power elite sexually abused and exploited female minors and young women. Epstein's death, officially ruled a suicide, has been treated skeptically by many, for a variety of reasons. Regardless of the real circumstances of his death, it has led to scores of Americans embracing the view that his death was both intentional and necessary to protect his powerful co-conspirators and the full extent of his covert and illegal activities.

Even if one chooses not to entertain such disconcerting possibilities, it is quite apparent that most of those who aided or enabled Epstein will never see the inside of a prison cell. Though Ghislaine Maxwell is now serving a 20 year sentence, others known to have been intimately involved in his illegal activities continue to enjoy protection from the so-called "sweetheart deal", or plea deal that followed Epstein's first run-in with the law for his sex trafficking activities in the mid-2000s. In addition, Ghislaine Maxwell's recent trial saw information involving third parties redacted, leading many to believe that the public will never know the names of the "johns" or clients, who benefitted from the sex trafficking activities of Epstein and Maxwell and who were potentially blackmailed by them.

Yet, for both Jeffrey Epstein and Ghislaine Maxwell, there is much more to the story. This became apparent when it emerged that Alex Acosta, then-serving as Secretary of Labor in the Trump administration, had disclosed to the Trump transition team that he had previously signed off on Epstein's "sweet-heart deal" because Epstein "had belonged to intelligence." Acosta, then serving as US attorney for Southern Florida, had also been told by unspecified figures at the time that he needed to give Epstein a lenient sentence because of his links to "intelligence." When Acosta was later asked if Epstein was indeed an intelligence asset in 2019, Acosta chose to neither confirm or deny the claim.

Other hints of a connection between Epstein and intelligence subsequently emerged, with reporting from a variety of sources that Epstein was affiliated with the CIA, Israeli intelligence, or both. Despite the implications and significance of these connection(s) to intelligence, most of mainstream media declined to dig deeper into these claims, instead largely focusing on the salacious aspects of the Epstein case. The narrative soon became that Epstein was an anomaly, the sole mastermind of an industrial sex trafficking enterprise and a talented con artist. Even his closest associates and benefactors, like retail billionaire Leslie Wexner, have been taken at their word that they knew nothing of Epstein's crimes, even when there is considerable evidence to the contrary.

Indeed, it was later stated by Cindy McCain, wife of former Senator John McCain, that "we all knew what he [Epstein] was doing" at an event in January 2020, where she also claimed that authorities were "afraid" to properly apprehend him. If he was such an anomaly and a stand-alone con artist – how was he singlehandedly able to intimidate the law enforcement apparatus of an entire nation for decades? The claim that Epstein did not have powerful backers and benefactors stands on incredibly shaky ground.

Oddly enough, mainstream reporting on Epstein was once relatively open about his alleged intelligence ties, with British media reporting as early as 1992 and throughout the early 2000s that Epstein had ties to both US and Israeli intelligence. In addition, also in the early 1990s, Epstein's name was mysteriously dropped from a major investigation into one of the largest Ponzi schemes in history even though he was labeled the mastermind of that swindle in grand jury testimony. Around the same time, subsequently released White House visitor logs show that Epstein visited the Clinton White House 17 times, accompanied on most of these visits by a different, attractive young woman. Reporting on those visitor logs was largely done by a single media outlet, Britain's The Daily Mail, with hardly any American mainstream media outlets bothering to investigate these revelations about Epstein and a former US president.

Why was Epstein so heavily protected from justice for decades – in connection to both his sex trafficking crimes and his financial crimes? Why have the once commonly reported intelligence connections of Jeffrey Epstein now been relegated to "conspiracy theory" despite evidence to the contrary? If powerful Senators knew what Epstein was doing to young women and girls – who else knew and why wasn't something done?

This two-volume book endeavors to show why Jeffrey Epstein was able to engage in a series of mind-boggling crimes for decades without incident. Far from being an anomaly, Epstein was one of several men who, over the past century, have engaged in sexual blackmail activities designed to obtain damaging information (i.e. “intelligence) on powerful individuals with the goal of controlling their activities and securing their compliance. Most of these individuals, including Epstein himself, have their roots in the covert world where organized crime and intelligence have intermingled and often cooperated for the better part of the last 90 years, if not longer. Perhaps most shockingly, these men are all interconnected to various degrees and those connections, networks and associations were the subject of Volume 1 of this book.

In Volume 2, we are introduced to Jeffrey Epstein. Detailed here are the key players in his rise and early career, many of whom have not been properly scrutinized by the media, and the existing evidence of Epstein’s connections to intelligence agencies and the networks detailed at length in Volume 1. We then turn to Epstein’s connections to retail mogul Leslie Wexner, with a focus on Wexner’s own rise, his particular brand of philanthropy and the many roles that Epstein went on to play in his business empire, including some with apparent links to espionage activity. Also examined in detail is the history behind Ghislaine Maxwell and her relationship with Epstein in the wake of her father’s death in 1991.

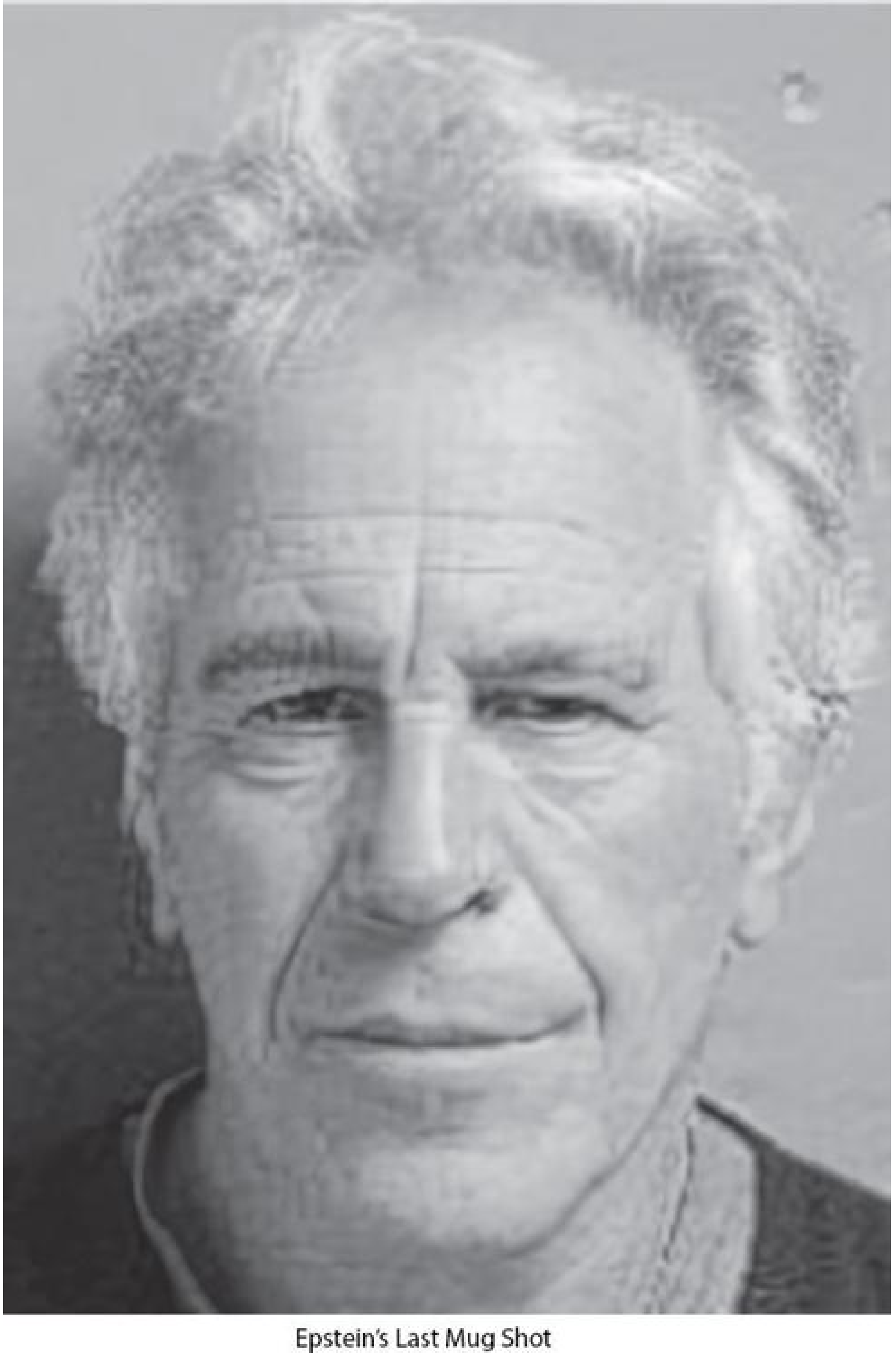
While the sex trafficking activities of Epstein and Maxwell are discussed at length and examined in depth, this book gives particular attention to the dramatically under-reported relationship that Jeffrey Epstein had with the Clinton White House from 1993 through 1995 and the significance of his 17 known White House meetings. Epstein brought many attractive, young women with him to these meetings and many of his meetings were with a man named Mark Middleton. Middleton, who died under suspicious circumstances in May 2022, was embroiled in foreign espionage activities at the time he was meeting with Epstein. Those activities were later investigated by Congress in relation to illegal fundraising efforts for Bill Clinton’s 1996 re-election campaign. Epstein’s activities at the Clinton White House, and in other parts of the country during this same period in time, point toward a major scandal of the Clinton era that has yet to be properly investigated.

Volume 2 of One Nation Under Blackmail concludes by examining the relationship between Jeffrey Epstein/The Maxwells and Big Tech, particularly Microsoft executives such as Bill Gates and Nathan Myhrvold, among others. The book closes out tracing how at least two of Ghislaine Maxwell’s siblings appear to have major intelligence connections as well as great influence in Big Tech while also tracing their ties to the apparent successors to the stolen PROMIS software. The theft of that software, as noted in Volume 1, had been intimately related to the activities of Robert Maxwell.

In closing, it becomes evident that the nature of blackmail evolved with society's increasing dependence on technology. Now, technologyderived blackmail is harvested through systems of mass surveillance and sex blackmailers, such as those discussed in Volume 1 as well as Jeffrey Epstein, became increasingly irrelevant and expendable. It is perhaps for this reason, as noted in this book, that Epstein and the Maxwells began efforts to influence and even blackmail top figures in Silicon Valley soon after Epstein's first arrest for sex trafficking in the mid-2000s. Epstein also began making major investments in data harvesting firms and those involved in mass surveillance.

The end result of is that the long-time reliance on the control of information, including information used for blackmail, by the power structures discussed throughout both volumes of this book has led them to create a society that gives them access to more information than ever before. Enabled by remarkable advances in technology, today the United States and much of the world have their digital secrets in the hands of people who will do absolutely anything to maintain their wealth, power and control. Essentially, the US – rather than one nation under God – has become one nation under blackmail.

Whitney Webb, 8/23/22



Epstein's Last Mug Shot

CHAPTER 11

THE RISE OF JEFFREY EPSTEIN

UNUSUAL BEGINNINGS

Jeffrey Epstein was born on January 20, 1953 to Paula (nee Stolofsky) and Seymour Epstein in Brooklyn, New York. His mother was a homemaker while his father was a groundskeeper for the New York Parks Department. His parents valued education, hoping that sending their sons – Jeffrey and Mark – to the right schools could be a "way out," or rather, a way up into a higher strata of New York society.[1]

Epstein was raised in the Lafayette neighborhood around Coney Island and attended Lafayette High School. In 1967, at age 14, he also attended the Interlochen Center for the Arts. He reportedly received a scholarship to Interlochen for his aptitude at playing the bassoon.[2] As an adult, Epstein would later donate heavily to Interlochen, from 1990 to 2003, and used his connection to the school to recruit unwitting female teens with musical talents into his sex trafficking and sex blackmail enterprise. Epstein was even allowed to construct his own lodge at Interlochen, the Jeffrey Epstein Scholarship Lodge (now the Green Lake Lodge), before the school cut ties with him after his first conviction in 2007.[3] Given his own early attendance and his subsequent return for nefarious purposes, some have suggested that Epstein himself may have been groomed at Interlochen.[4]

In 1969, two years after he attended Interlochen, Epstein graduated from Lafayette high school at age 16 after skipping two grades. Epstein then studied at Cooper Union, from the fall of 1969 through the spring semester of 1971. He attended New York University (NYU) from September 1971 to 1974, but never graduated. Per a 2002 profile in *New York Magazine*, Epstein had studied at NYU's Courant Institute of Mathematical Sciences.[5]

During this period, Epstein claims to have backpacked across Europe with friends in 1971 and, while visiting London, met British cellist Jacqueline du Pré, whose patron was Queen Elizabeth II. Epstein would later claim to have played the piano for a du Pré performance during this visit and that, through her, he gained access to the British royals, ultimately leading to his close relationship with Prince Andrew, Duke of York.[6] It's unclear when du Pré would have made such an introduction, but it would have had to have occurred before her 1987 death. What does seem certain is that Epstein, during this trip, did befriend some British aristocrats as, a few short years later, he was seen at the New York mansion of British tycoon and corporate raider James Goldsmith.

It's unclear how Epstein, while ostensibly backpacking, had come to make du Pré's acquaintance, though du Pré did have ties to the Israeli and New York Jewish communities through her 1967 conversion to Judaism and subsequent marriage that same year to Daniel Barenboim, as well as her friendships with musicians Yehudi Menuhin, Itzhak Perlman, and Pinchas Zukerman. It's possible that Epstein met du Pré through some mutual connection in these circles. Years later, Epstein would claim to have once been a concert pianist, with media reports from the early 1990s onwards referencing such claims.[7] However, some who knew Epstein early in life, including his brother Mark, give little weight to Epstein's claim to have been an accomplished pianist.[8]

In the latter half of 1974, Epstein began working at the elite Dalton School, teaching mathematics and physics. He would remain with the school until 1976. There has been much disagreement in the mainstream press over who at Dalton was responsible for hiring Jeffrey Epstein. At the time Epstein began working at Dalton, the headmaster was Peter Branch. Branch, when contacted in 2019 by professor and author Thomas Volscho, did not recall hiring Epstein and was "relatively certain" that the previous headmaster, Donald Barr, or perhaps the head of the Math Department, had hired Epstein because "hiring decisions were typically made in the Spring."

Branch also noted that Barr "liked to hire unconventional teachers to enhance the educational experience for students at Dalton."[9] Epstein certainly fell in the unconventional category, as he lacked the academic credentials to even teach at a public school in New York City. *Vanity Fair* later reported that Barr had hired other "gifted college dropouts," which would make his hire of Epstein not as much of an anomaly as some outlets have implied.[10]

Donald Barr was the son of an economist and psychologist who had joined the OSS during World War II. He is alleged to have been a member of an OSS "target team" in Germany and to have worked at a prisoner of war camp.[11] His son, William Barr, would subsequently follow his father into the world of intelligence and served in the CIA from 1971 to 1977, which overlaps with the last few years his father was headmaster at the Dalton School – including the year Donald Barr is alleged to have hired Jeffrey Epstein. William Barr, whose alleged role in Iran-Contra was mentioned in Chapter 8, would go on to serve as Attorney

General under George H.W. Bush and Donald Trump, and served in that capacity when Jeffrey Epstein was arrested and found dead in a New York prison in 2019.

After exiting from US intelligence, Barr briefly worked as a literary editor and then went into academia. He taught English at Columbia for ten years while pursuing graduate studies. There, he started a series of conferences in 1955 focused on "the identification, guidance, and instruction of the gifted." Barr joined the School of Engineering the following year and these conferences then grew into the Science Honors program, which offered Saturday classes to gifted high schoolers.[12] At the same time he was running this high school-focused program, Barr was also directing the Talent Preservation Project, "a massive research and therapy program for high school under-achievers." It is possible that there may have been an early Epstein-Barr connection if Epstein had attended one of these programs for gifted high school students.

Donald Barr would become headmaster of the Dalton School in 1964 and, a decade later, in 1974, Donald Barr would leave the school under a cloud of controversy, amid claims that he had meddled in the college admission prospects of prominent students, including the son of writer Betty Friedan. The Dalton parent who is credited with orchestrating Barr's ouster was Richard Ravitch, a real estate magnate who served in several government-appointed positions related to housing during his career. Ravitch claimed that, by the end of his stint as headmaster, Barr was reviled by many Dalton teachers as well as parents.[13]

Soon after leaving his post as headmaster, Donald Barr published *Space Relations*, a bizarre science fiction novel that deals with power, drugs, and sex slavery, which has fueled speculation about Barr's apparent decision to hire someone like Epstein and what the fantasy book implies about Barr's own "extracurricular" interests.

During his time at Dalton, Jeffrey Epstein taught mostly seniors, ages 17 and 18. He also coached the math team, which competed locally and had a few notable victories under Epstein's leadership. The school's newspaper, *The Daltonian*, reported on March 5, 1976 that Epstein wanted to start a "math-track team" due to his "unique philosophy of integrating physical exercise with spiritual and mathematical stimulation." An earlier issue of the school paper refers to Epstein as "the ivory show man on the piano," again raising the running theme of Epstein's alleged musical talents.[14]

Several Dalton alumni later told various media outlets in 2019 how Epstein attended student parties during his time as a Dalton teacher. One former student who graduated from Dalton in 1976, Scott Spizer, told the *New York Times* that Epstein was well known among students for the "persistent attention" he directed at teenage girls in the hallways and recalled that Epstein had attended a party where Dalton students were drinking. "I can remember thinking at the time 'This is wrong,'" Spizer later stated. A 1978 graduate of Dalton, Paul Grossman, also recalled Epstein attending student parties, stating that "it was weird" and that "everyone talked about it." A woman who attended Dalton during this period, but asked to remain anonymous, claimed that Epstein had "made multiple attempts to spend time with her away from school" and she also specifically recalled "reporting Epstein's advances toward another female student to the school's headmaster."[15]

The headmaster at that time, Peter Branch, did not mention such reports when he was interviewed in 2019 regarding Epstein's time at the school. This may relate to the fact that several Dalton alumni who attended during this period asserted that student-teacher relationships at the school "were not unheard of," suggesting that Epstein's alleged behavior was part of a larger problem, as opposed to an aberration.[16] Branch has asserted that Epstein left the school following concerns from his colleagues in the math and science departments that his teaching skills had failed to improve over the previous year.[17] "He was a young teacher who didn't come up to snuff. So, ultimately, he was asked to leave," Branch was quoted as saying in late 2019.[18]

BEAR STEARNS AND THE BRONFMANS

After Epstein left the Dalton School in 1976, he went to work on Wall Street for Bear Stearns. There are two conflicting accounts of how he landed his first job there – as a junior assistant to a floor trader at the American Stock Exchange. Both accounts intimately involve Alan "Ace" Greenberg, then a partner at Bear Stearns and who would become the bank's CEO in roughly two years' time, in 1978.

One account appears to have first been circulated in a 2002 profile on Epstein published by *New York Magazine*. Per that account, while still at the Dalton School, "So impressed was one Wall Street father of a student that he said to Epstein point-blank: 'What are you doing teaching math at Dalton? You should be working on Wall Street – why don't you give my friend Ace Greenberg a call.'"[19] However, a year later, in the 2003 *Vanity Fair* profile penned by Vicky Ward, it is claimed that the connection with Greenberg was more direct, with Epstein tutoring Greenberg's son who attended Dalton and also being "friendly" with one of his daughters.[20] Both claims have been repeated by numerous mainstream and independent outlets over the years, though Greenberg's daughter, Lynne Koeppel (nee Greenberg), has publicly backed the version of events as published in 2002 by *New York Magazine*.[21] Yet, other sources cite Koeppel as having recommended Epstein to her father.[22] Regardless of which account is closer to reality, it is agreed that Greenberg was ultimately the person who brought Epstein into Bear Stearns.

Once installed at the bank, Epstein's ascent was rapid and he was mentored by both Greenberg and James Cayne, who had also been hired by Greenberg years prior. While he started off as a floor trader, he soon "began working with wealthy clients on bigger projects that sought an edge in esoteric markets."[23] According to a former senior Bear Stearns executive interviewed by *Fox Business*, "Epstein's accumulated knowledge of the U.S. tax codes – and how rich people can avoid taxes through various investments – made him one of Bear's prized assets in its small, but specialized brokerage department." "He never went to college, but he knew everything about taxes. In fact, he could figure out just about anything if he studied it. The guy was a genius," the former executive was quoted as saying.[24] Thanks to these talents, Epstein became a limited partner in relatively short order, by 1980. While working at the bank, he met his former girlfriend Paula Heil Fisher, now an opera producer.

Epstein abruptly left Bear Stearns in 1981. In the years before he became notorious, he claimed to have left because he wished "to run his own business." However, within the company, claims abounded that Epstein had been involved in a "technical infringement," with Epstein's later associate, Steven Hoffenberg, claiming that Epstein had left the bank after he was caught performing "illegal operations." The former Bear Stearns executive interviewed by *Fox Business* claimed that Epstein had been asked to leave over "very serious stuff," which he insisted was related to "a significant expense account violation concerning an airline ticket that upper management was misled about."[25] These claims were denied by Cayne and Epstein, while Greenberg said he was unable to recall the circumstances. In 2003, Cayne supported Epstein's version of events, stating that he had left the bank of "his own volition" because he wanted to strike out on his own.

However, as noted by *Vanity Fair*, the SEC's records of Epstein in 1981 tell a different story. Per those records, Epstein was interviewed, along with other Bear Stearns employees as part of an investigation into insider trading at the bank. The insider trading case revolved around a tender offer placed on March 11, 1981 for St. Joe Minerals Corp by the Bronfman-owned company Seagram Company Ltd. A handful of investors were ultimately found guilty of insider trading, including Giuseppe Tome, former head of overseas operations of Bache & Company and E.F. Hutton.

In Tome's case, he was ordered to "disgorge," or hand over, $3.5 million in illegal profits related to the 1981 failed takeover attempt by Seagram in mid-1986. However, Tome left the US shortly after the SEC began its investigation and did not return to the country after the court's decision, complicating the enforcement of the ruling against him.

The court claimed that Tome had "insinuated himself into the confidence of Seagram Co. Chairman Edgar M. Bronfman." However, a spokesperson for Bronfman declined to discuss his relationship with Tome and, in court testimony, Bronfman had admitted to discussing "Seagram's secrets" with Tome because Tome counted with "20 years in this business … he ought to know the rules. I assume he does know the rules."

The *Los Angeles Times* described the Tome-Bronfman relationship in greater detail:

> According to testimony in the case, Tome and Bronfman met in July, 1980. Bronfman was impressed with Tome's financial acumen and within weeks had made him an unofficial adviser to Seagram, a major producer and marketer of spirits and wine, on foreign currency matters.
>
> The two men also struck up a close personal friendship, and Bronfman opened a commodities account at Tome's Geneva brokerage. The pair invested together in "Sophisticated Ladies," the Broadway show, and at one point Bronfman even covered a bounced check that Tome had issued to the show's producers. The families vacationed together in Switzerland and the hunt country of Virginia.
>
> Throughout this time, Bronfman was telling Tome of Seagram's secret plans for major corporate acquisitions. Pollack's order indicated that Tome used inside information to trade in stock and options of Texaco and Santa Fe, two tentative Seagram targets. (Those trades were not cited in the SEC lawsuit, however.) In some cases, testimony showed, Tome learned from Bronfman of Seagram's plans even before its board of directors.
>
> On March 9, 1981, Bronfman declined a dinner invitation from Tome, saying he had to visit Montreal for a board meeting. Tome concluded that a Seagram offer was imminent for St. Joe, which he knew as Bronfman's next target."[26]

There is also the fact that Bronfman had considerable connections to Tome's former employer Bache & Company, a company with ties to the OSS-organized crime networks previously discussed in chapter 1. For instance, the Loeb banking dynasty had intermarried into the family of Jules Bache of Bache & Company as well as into the Bronfmans, with Edgar Bronfman's wife Ann being the daughter of John Loeb. Not only did the Bronfmans, Loebs, and Baches mingle through marriage, but the multi-million dollar holdings of all three families combined "to make up the largest single holding of stock in New York's Empire Trust Company" – Edgar Bronfman had joined that company's board in 1963.[27]

Notably, the Empire Trust Company, with Bronfman still intimately involved, announced a merger with the Bank of New York (BoNY) in 1968.[28] Bronfman was placed on the board of the Bank of New York after the merger and remained there at least through 1975, if not later.[29] As previously mentioned in chapter 9, BoNY essentially merged with the banking network of Bruce Rappaport by the 1980s and, by 1992, executives at the bank were found to be closely associated with Russian mobster and Robert Maxwell business associate Semion Mogilevich.

When the SEC investigation took place, Bronfman subsequently claimed to have no knowledge of insider trading by Tome and claimed that Tome, conveniently outside of the country and tried *in absentia*, lied to him about having been involved in illegal trades related to the attempted takeover of St. Joe's. As the

1986 court case against Tome makes clear, Bronfman's ties to Tome were considerable and he had a history of voluntarily supplying the man with Seagram's "secret plans" before the company's board even knew, as the *Los Angeles Times* had noted. It appears, from Tome's case, that Bronfman seemed to have thought nothing of sharing "secret plans" with those outside the company and within his inner circle. Also of note is that Tome, and presumably others, made insider trades on Texaco and Santa Fe, two tentative Seagram targets, and profited off those as well. However, the trades involving those companies were, for reasons still unclear, excluded from the SEC investigation.

Another figure sued in connection with insider trading as part of the failed Seagram takeover attempt was Dennis B. Levine, "a prominent mergers specialist with the Drexel Burnham Lambert investment banking firm" who allegedly made $12.6 million in illegal profits from the deal.[30] Drexel Burnham Lambert and many of its more infamous employees are mentioned throughout this book, as – at this time – Drexel was "corralling the majority of American [corporate] raiders."[31]

Dennis Levine was directly involved with many of these "raiders", specifically Ron Perelman, who dined with Epstein at Epstein's home throughout the 2000s and whose political fundraiser for Bill Clinton's re-election campaign was attended by Epstein in the mid-90s (see Chapter 16). Levine worked regularly with Perelman, serving as the "lead banker" for Perelman's 1985 takeover of Revlon, which Levine called "the high point" of his career.[32]

In addition, Levine also played a key role in the hostile takeover of Crown Zellerbach by Sir James Goldsmith, a member of the Clermont Club mentioned in Chapter 4. Levine was intimately involved in Goldsmith's 1984-1985 takeover of Crown Zellerbach. That takeover was actually the brainchild of Rothschild Inc. and its then-President Robert S. Pirie.[33] Goldsmith was a longtime business associate of the Rothschilds and a distant cousin of the family.[34]

As will be mentioned again in chapter 15, Pirie and Rothschild Inc. were later the architects of Robert Maxwell's takeover of Macmillan in 1989. By 1989, Maxwell and Goldsmith were closely associated, and Goldsmith would also later have his own ties to Jeffrey Epstein.[35] Goldsmith apparently knew Epstein long before Epstein had started at Bear Stearns. According to a former friend of Epstein's, art collector Stuart Pivar, he had first met Epstein at "Jimmy Goldsmith's mansion" in the early 1970s. "There," Pivar later told *Mother Jones*, "there was somebody playing the piano with great virtuosity. And it was Jeffrey Epstein."[36] Epstein's ties to Goldsmith may have come through his daughter, Isabel Goldsmith, who has numerous telephone numbers and two addresses in Epstein's "little black book" of contacts.[37]

In the context of this 1981 takeover attempt by Seagram, it is worth noting that Pirie's soon-to-be "second in command," Gerald Goldsmith, was previously the executive vice president of E.F. Hutton, where Giuseppe Tome had also served in a top executive position. Goldsmith left to join the Rothschild bank in 1982.[38] (There is no familial relationship between Gerald Goldsmith and James Goldsmith).

These networks that surrounded this SEC investigation would, after the fact, clearly intersect with Epstein's own network within a few years' time. This raises the possibility that this 1981 insider trading affair may have marked Epstein's entry into these circles or may indicate that he had already developed connections there, as he was alleged to have been directly involved in such trades.

On March 12, 1981, a day after Seagram made the tender offer at the heart of this insider trading case, Epstein resigned from Bear Stearns. At some point in their investigation, the SEC was tipped off that Epstein knew something about relevant insider trades that had been made at Bear Stearns, and the SEC interviewed him on April 1st.

During that testimony, per SEC records, Epstein complained about how he had been disciplined for a possible "Reg D" violation where he was said to have lent money to a friend, who he later identified as Warren Eisenstein. Epstein had been questioned about the loan, per his recollection, on March 4th and, five days later, had been fined $2,500 by the bank. However, the SEC was mainly interested in the timing of Epstein's exit from Bear Stearns and the Bronfman/Seagram-related insider trading. Epstein denied any connection and was never charged, but *Vanity Fair* noted that the SEC interviewers were skeptical of Epstein's denials. *Vanity Fair* also noted that "if [Epstein] was such a big producer at Bear Stearns, [why would he] have given it up over a mere $2,500 fine."

It seems evident that the timing of Epstein's "abrupt" departure and the Bronfman-related insider trades go a bit beyond mere coincidence. It certainly does seem unlikely that Epstein would abandon Bear Stearns over a relatively small fine (by the bank's standards), unless he had received another offer of employment or if there was a risk that he would soon face greater, more costly problems at Bear Stearns.

Furthermore, given that Edgar Bronfman had been somewhat open about the plan for a Seagram takeover of St. Joe Mineral Corp., it is not outside the realm of possibility that those "rumors" would have made their way to Epstein. Epstein had become installed at Bear Stearns, and likely risen in its ranks so quickly, due to the patronage of Alan Greenberg, who was intimately involved in several of the same organizations as the Bronfmans, like the United Jewish Appeal and the Jerusalem Foundation (the latter was notably created by Teddy Kollek, see chapter 3). Like Greenberg, the Bronfmans also donated heavily to those same groups in addition to being closely involved in their affairs. Greenberg also, at some point, saw his philanthropic efforts intersect closely with those of Charles Bronfman, per the *Jewish Telegraphic Agency*.[39]

Had Greenberg potentially been informed by a loose-lipped Edgar Bronfman, just as Giuseppe Tome had been, and passed this along to one of his "protégés" at Bear Stearns, Jeffrey Epstein? Or had Epstein, a protégé of Greenberg's, been advising Bronfman on behalf of the bank? After all, Epstein was said to have worked "with wealthy clients on bigger projects that sought an edge in esoteric markets," and Bronfman could have been such a client.[40]

If so, it may have prompted Epstein's "abrupt" resignation, not so much to protect a young Epstein, but potentially to protect Greenberg, who had – by then – risen to become Bear Stearns's CEO. Greenberg being ensnared in the SEC's investigation would have been a much bigger headache for the bank than Epstein – now, a former limited partner in the bank.

In addition, given the networks of both Giuseppe Tome and Danny Levine at this time, and how Epstein would become a fixture in those networks in short order, it may be possible that Epstein's abrupt resignation was part of an effort not just to shield Greenberg, but the full extent of these particular networks in this 1981 insider trading scheme, which was considerably larger than the select components that the SEC had chosen to investigate.

If Epstein was advised to leave due to potential legal concerns, it is worth mentioning that, as noted in Chapter 6, Bear Stearns was represented by the law firm Rogers & Wells and, from 1976 to 1981, was specifically a client of William Casey. Though Casey likely wasn't involved in this particular situation, given that he had become CIA director several weeks before the tender offer, it is worth reminding the reader that Casey's influence is another potential factor to consider when examining this situation as well as Epstein's activities immediately after leaving the bank.

THE FINANCIAL MERCENARY AND INTELLIGENCE ASSET

After leaving Bear Stearns, Epstein would later claim that he went on to manage "money only for billionaires," telling Vicky Ward in 2003 that "I was the only person crazy enough, or arrogant enough, or misplaced enough, to make my limit a billion dollars or more."[41] However, it appears that there was much more to the story, as the details of Epstein's life, from his 1981 exit from Bear Stearns until around 1986, are murky at best. The details that are known about Epstein during this period point to something considerably different than Epstein's own account of his activities at this time. This is particularly obvious when one considers that his formal role as a money manager did not appear to begin until 1988, when he founded J. Epstein & Co.[42]

Throughout the 1980s, Epstein's main company was called Intercontinental Assets Group, which was incorporated in 1981.[43] Apart from that, little about the company is known. However, there is little indication he used the company to manage billionaire wealth, as the existing evidence about his life during this decade points in another direction.

After Epstein's 2019 arrest, a former friend of Epstein's, Jesse Kornbluth, stated that Epstein had claimed to be a "bounty hunter" for the rich and powerful:

> When we met in 1986, Epstein's double identity intrigued me – he said he didn't just manage money for clients with mega-fortunes, he was also a high-level bounty hunter. Sometimes, he told me, he worked for governments to recover money looted by African dictators. Other times those dictators hired him to help them hide their stolen money.[44]

Actress Anna Obregón later stated that she had hired Epstein, who mentioned his company Intercontinental Assets Group, to help her father, Madrid-based real estate magnate Antonio García Férnandez. García Férnandez had been one of several powerful Spanish individuals, which included members of the Spanish royal family, who had invested in Drysdale Government Securities, which collapsed due to fraud in 1982. Epstein had been hired by Obregón to "recover" money from the Drysdale collapse on behalf of her father, according to James Patterson's book *Filthy Rich*.[45]

Similar claims also surfaced in Vicky Ward's 2003 profile of Epstein in *Vanity Fair*. Ward wrote that: "A few of the handful of current friends who have known him since the early 1980s recall that he used to tell them he was a 'bounty hunter,' recovering lost or stolen money for the government or for very rich people. He has a license to carry a firearm."[46]

Reference to firearms during this period can be found in even earlier reports of Epstein, such as a 2001 report in the UK's *Evening Standard* that was written by Nigel Rosser. There, Rosser asserts the following about Epstein:

> He has a licence to carry a concealed weapon, once claimed to have worked for the CIA although he now denies it – and owns properties all over America. Once he arrived at the London home of a British arms dealer bringing a gift – a New York police-issue pump-action riot gun. "God knows how he got it into the country," a friend said.[47]

The identity of this British arms dealer may be Sir Douglas Leese. Per Steven Hoffenberg, an alleged "mentor" to Epstein who worked closely with him beginning in 1987, he had been introduced to Epstein by Leese and further claimed that, soon after Epstein left Bear Stearns, he began working closely with the "mysterious" British arms dealer.[48] Hoffenberg's own relationship with Epstein is dealt with later in this chapter.

Per Hoffenberg, in an interview with journalist Edward Szall, Epstein was hired by Leese to serve as an investment banker for Leese-owned and Leese-managed companies.[49] Douglas Leese's son, Julian Leese has stated that Epstein first interacted with the Leese family around 1981, after meeting another of Douglas Leese's sons, Nick, at a party hosted by "a well-known oil baron down in Texas."[50] Julian Leese has acknowledged that his father was a "mentor" to Epstein and has spoken at length about Epstein seeming bright and intelligent as well as deeply entwined with business and social networks in the UK during this period.

Hoffenberg has also asserted that Epstein, in the early 1980s, "was trained in arms trafficking and money laundering by Adnan Khashoggi and Sir Douglas Leese jointly.… Jeffrey Epstein was a major participant and principal in the arms trafficking and money laundering operations of Adnan Khashoggi and Sir Douglas Leese, for Israel, for what they were doing in the United Kingdom."[51]

Much of Leese's own history is shadowy. Throughout the 1950s and 1960s, he worked at Cam Gears Limited, an automobile parts manufacturing company, and became its managing director in 1957.[52] Cam Gears was acquired by TRW Inc. in 1965, which had previously been known as Thompson Ramo-Woolbridge. It was the result of a merger between Thompson Products, a major supplier of aircraft parts for the US Air Force, and Ramo-Woolbridge, a military contractor for ICBM components and components for other weapons systems.

Though it's not exactly clear, TRW seems to have been Leese's introduction into the world of weapons dealing. Oddly enough, years later, a young Bill Gates, who would eventually develop his own ties to Epstein (see Chapter 20), would also get "his first big break" thanks to TRW, when he worked "debugging grid control software for" the company at age 15.[53]

Anecdotal evidence may also indicate the Leese family's persistent ties to TRW. After it was acquired by TRW, Cam Gears would have fallen under TRW's automobile-focused subsidiary, TRW Automotive, which was headquartered in Livonia, Michigan. In 2017, the International Police and Fire Chaplains Association (IPFCA) of Taylor, Michigan, received a $50,000 donation from Gratitude America Limited, a foundation connected to Jeffrey Epstein. The donation was brokered by Douglas Leese's son Julian Leese, who was friends with IPFCA director Daniel Tackett.[54] Taylor and Livonia are just 13 miles apart and the aforementioned donation seems to indicate long-standing family ties of the Leese's to the local area, as well as Epstein's enduring ties to the Leese family.

Julian Leese has denied his father was an "arms dealer," claiming he worked in "defense" but was mainly involved in manufacture and sale of defense products other than weapons, such as radar systems.[55] However, Julian Leese has conceded that his father was a friend of notorious arms dealer Adnan Khashoggi, whose freindshipn with Douglas Leese most likely revolved around something other than radar and navigation systems.

Between 1966 and 1967, soon after Cam Gears was acquired by TRW, Leese began living in South Wraxall Manor, a luxurious home in Wiltshire, England. The house had been sold by its previous owners, the aristocratic Long family, in 1966, and at least one account from 1967 states that Leese was living in the home at that time, suggesting that he had been the mysterious "businessman" who had purchased the home.[56] An acquaintance of Leese's later stated that Leese "gave very unusual parties" at South Wraxall Manor as early as the 1970s, but didn't elaborate as to why they were "very unusual."[57]

In 1978, House of Wraxall Limited was established with Douglas Leese and his wife, Jane Primrose Leese, listed as company directors. Douglas Leese listed his address as being located in Hong Kong, while that of his wife was listed as

South Wraxall Manor. The company was officially involved in the development and sale of real estate projects.[58]

Not long after the creation of this company, Leese found himself involved with the Wraxall Group. It is unclear, given the name of Leese's residence at the time, if he was the founder/owner of the Wraxall Group. However, he was certainly in charge of the Group's Bermuda subsidiaries, including the Bermuda-based, wholly-owned subsidiary of the Wraxall Group, the Lorad Company.[59] Before going into greater detail about Lorad, and how Lorad may have been central to not only Leese's but Epstein's activities in the early 1980s, it is worth detailing a few of the other characters involved with the Wraxall Group.

Other individuals tied to the Wraxall Group aside from Leese include Sir Maurice (Robert) Johnston, who had previously served in the British military, attaining the rank of Lieutenant General and serving in Germany, Egypt, Jordan, Libya, Northern Ireland, and Borneo. He was Deputy Chief of Defense Staff in 1982 and 1983 before retiring from the military. A year later, in 1984, Johnston became "managing director, Freshglen Ltd, Wraxall Group."[60]

Another interesting individual was "executive vice president of the Wraxall Group" from 1986 to 1990 – Peter Maxwell Dickson.[61] Dickson, who has a lengthy history of engaging in fraud and suspect banking practices, ran the Bermuda-based firm Grosvenor Group Holdings, a decades-old offshore complex that has stashed away over $1 billion for the Dukes of Westminster over the years.[62] Grosvenor Group Holdings also controlled a Dickson-owned bank called Horizon Bank International that was set up in 1995 by William Cooper, who then served as the bank's managing director.

From 1981 to 1984, Cooper was the general manager of Swiss American Banking Group, which had been organized by Bruce Rappaport and Marvin Warner with the assistance of Burton Kanter.[63] Rappaport, discussed at length throughout this book (mainly in chapter 3), was intimately involved with the Iran-Contra affair and BCCI, as well as intelligence/organized crime networks in Israel and Russia. He was also a close friend of William Casey. Kanter was the mob-linked attorney that had previously partnered with CIA banker Paul Helliwell who was first introduced in chapter 1.

While Dickson has his own ties to the shadow banking empires previously detailed in this book, it is uncertain when he made those connections. It's quite likely that he came into contact with those forces during or after his time with the

Wraxall Group. This is because, Sir Douglas Leese, who managed Wraxall's businesses in Bermuda, where Dickson also resided, seems to have been very much connected to these same networks, including via his reported involvement in arms deals that paralleled Iran-Contra itself back in the early 1980s. These deals are also alleged to have involved not only Saudi arms dealer and Iran-Contra figure Adnan Khashoggi, but also Jeffrey Epstein.

The Lorad Company was one of the main Wraxall subsidiaries in Bermuda that was firmly under Leese's control. In June 1983, a joint venture of Lorad and another company was formed called Norinco Lorad Limited and, six months later, Lorad (Far East) Limited was created in Hong Kong, where Leese had already had at least one address listed as early as 1978.[64] The Norinco referenced here is the Chinese state-owned weapons producer Norinco (North Industries Corporation), which was founded in 1980 with the approval of the State Council of China.

After its founding, Norinco, along with a handful of other Chinese state-owned firms, helped China to emerge "as a leading arms supplier to the Third World, signing agreements between 1983 and 1990 worth more than $16 billion" ($33.7 billion in 2022 dollars). During this period, "much of China's business was with Iran; Beijing became Tehran's biggest weapons supplier during the 1981-88 Iran-Iraq War, selling $4.8 billion [$10.1 billion in 2022 dollars] in weapons and munitions to Iran in 1983-90," according to then-senior staff member of the Senate Foreign Relations Committee William Triplett II, writing for the *Washington Post* in 1991.[65]

These sales to Iran during this period were dominated by Norinco as well as Poly Technologies, owned by the People's Liberation Army (PLA), and China Jingan, controlled by the People's Armed Police. Thus, the very year these Chinese weapons companies began selling massive amounts of weapon to Iran, 1983, was also the same year the main company involved in its sales, Norinco, set up a joint venture with the Leese-managed Lorad Company in Bermuda.

According to Steven Hoffenberg, by 1983, Leese was working closely with Jeffrey Epstein, specifically on the sale of Chinese weapons to Iran.[66] Per Hoffenberg, Saudi arms dealer Adnan Khashoggi, by then on the payroll of Israel's Mossad and close to the intelligence apparati of the Saudis and the United States, was also part of these efforts and had a "revenue sharing agreement" with Leese on arms deals.[67] Hoffenberg also asserts that Leese was deeply enmeshed in British intelligence networks and was actively involved with those networks at the time. If we are to believe Hoffenberg, then Khashoggi, Leese, and Epstein were working together on a parallel operation to Iran-Contra while Iran-Contra was on-going.

In addition, Leese and Khashoggi were both involved in the 1985 arms deal with Saudi Arabia, known as the Al-Yamamah Deal, albeit on different sides. Khashoggi represented the French weapons industry, while Leese, along with Khashoggi rival Wafic Said, represented British defense interests, which ultimately won the day. Khashoggi later claimed that the deal had been secured for Britain, in part, due to the involvement of Mark Thatcher, Margaret Thatcher's son whose peripheral role in Iran Contra is discussed in Chapter 7.[68] Margaret Thatcher was Prime Minister at the time the Al-Yamamah Deal was signed, whereby Saudi Arabia paid for weapons largely manufactured by BAE Systems in oil, and accusations later arose that Britain only won the deal due to having bribed Saudi leadership.[69] Corruption investigations into Al Yamamah were later shut down thanks in large part to the efforts of Tony Blair as well as Prince Andrew, with the latter being a well-known Epstein confidant.[70]

Aside from the documented Norinco-Leese and Leese-Khashoggi connections, there is further evidence that supports Hoffenberg's claims. For instance, during this period, Adnan Khashoggi was a reported client of Epstein, per Vicky Ward as cited by *New York Magazine*, during the period after he left Bear Stearns and before he formally teamed up with Hoffenberg and Leslie Wexner, which includes this period of time (i.e. 1983).[71] Epstein is also known to have been associated with Leese during this period, and Leese subsequently appears in Epstein's black book of contacts. In addition, Epstein later maintained a relationship with at least one of Leese's sons, Julian. Douglas Leese's other son, Nicholas, who allegedly introduced Epstein to the Leese family, was arrested in 1996 and charged with over 200 counts related to corruption in Singapore.[72]

Furthermore, during this period of time, Epstein was clearly involved in the world of shadowy banking practices and fronts. Per his claims to several friends and as mentioned in more than a few press reports authored prior to his 2007 arrest, Epstein was working as a financial "bounty hunter" and helped both recover and hide stolen money on behalf of powerful people. Thus, to be successful in such work, he would have needed an intimate working knowledge of front companies, offshore banking, and other components of the financial webs woven by those looking to hide away "looted" money.

If Adnan Khashoggi was indeed Epstein's client, this suggests that Epstein may have been associated with BCCI in some capacity. If Epstein worked in this financial "bounty hunter" capacity for Khashoggi, it's very likely that he would have come into contact with BCCI during this period, as BCCI was the main bank Khashoggi used during the period in which they were alleged to have worked together. In addition, the weapons sales to Iran that involved Norinco during this period, in which Leese, Epstein, and Khashoggi are alleged to have been involved, also made heavy use of BCCI. As noted by the *Washington Post* in 1991:

> According to a Hong Kong source with detailed knowledge of China's weapons sales policies, until recently, the Bank of Credit and Commerce International (BCCI) was the bank of choice for the arms exporters. With its extensive Mideast operations and reputed money-laundering proclivities, BCCI would have been a natural fit for the Chinese. BCCI also operated in Beijing, the Shenzhen Special Economic Zone outside Hong Kong and in 27 branches in Hong Kong itself through what BCCI called the Bank of Credit and Commerce Hong Kong (BCCHK).[73]

Years later, when BCCI was collapsing, the Lippo Group of the Riady family, who boasted close ties to Bill Clinton and Clinton/Bush financier Jackson Stephens, would attempt to intervene to rescue BCCHK. It is worth noting the involvement of Riady/Stephens with the BCCI subsidiary that was used by Norinco and other state-owned firms during this period. This is because, as will be detailed extensively in Chapters 16 and 17, Epstein may have been involved in arms smuggling activities related to a network that spanned the Clinton White House, Norinco and the Poly Group, and the Riadys in the mid-1990s. The fact that Epstein would find himself enmeshed within these same networks in the mid-1990s further corroborates his involvement with those same entities back in 1983, as has been alleged by Hoffenberg and other sources.

Hoffenberg, who was found dead in his apartment in late August 2022, had notably confided in Edward Szall off the record that Epstein had had a relationship with BCCI, but did not provide any specifics.

BCCI's considerable intelligence ties and the reported intelligence connections of Khashoggi and Leese also make it worth considering Epstein's past claims, as cited by Nigel Rosser, that he once worked for the CIA. BCCI's connections to the CIA and other allied intelligence agencies were discussed in Chapter 7. In addition, at the time this operation involving Khashoggi, Leese, and Epstein was said to have occurred – around 1983 – Khashoggi also employed two other men deeply enmeshed in these networks where Big Business, intelligence, and organized crime intermingle: Roy Cohn and Robert Keith Gray.[74] Notably, Gray was also very much involved with BCCI, as noted in Chapter 7, and both Cohn and Gray were involved in sexual blackmail operations to some extent.

In addition, in 1989, Khashoggi himself had been called by *Vanity Fair* "one of the greatest whoremongers in the world."[75] His biographer, Ronald Kessler, remarked in 1988 that "His [Khashoggi's] whole modus operandi was to influence clients with his opulent lifestyle" and that "he would give them [potential clients] anything they wanted: girls, food, cash… He had quite a variety of occasions on the boat. Some were very formal, some were orgies."

According to the UK's *Independent*, "One of the 'girls' used in this way, Pamella Bordes, later spoke of being 'part of an enormous group … used as sexual bait,'" suggesting that Khashoggi commanded a veritable harem of women who were used to entice, or potentially coerce, would-be clients.[76] However, these lists of "potential clients" also included notable politicians, diplomats, celebrities, and a cadre of businessman. In the case of politicians and diplomats, it's entirely possible that Khashoggi's yacht was used as a means of collecting blackmail that Khashoggi used to benefit his network, or anyone willing to pay the right price.[77] This was also alleged by the head of a highly-connected call-girl ring, Fortuna Israel a.k.a. "Madame Tuna," as discussed in Chapter 7.

Notably, Khashoggi's infamous yacht would be sold to Roy Cohn's protégé, Donald Trump, in 1988, with the involvement of the Sultan of Brunei.[78] As will be mentioned in the next chapter, the Sultan of Brunei would become Epstein's landlord in the office he shared with Evangeline Gouletas-Carey and, as we will see in Chapter 19, the Sultan of Brunei makes other curious appearances in the Epstein-Clinton relationship.

In addition, both Cohn and Gray were very close to then-CIA Director Bill Casey. In Gray's case, as noted in the previous chapter, *Newsweek* described him as often having "boasted of his close relationship with the CIA's William Casey; Gray used to say that before taking on a foreign client, he would clear it with Casey."[79] In Cohn's case, Christine Seymour, Cohn's long-time switchboard operator, said Casey and Cohn were close friends and, during the 1980 Reagan campaign, Casey "called Roy almost daily."[80] As noted in the last chapter, in the immediate aftermath of Reagan's electoral victory, both Cohn and Gray took Khashoggi on as a client. Jeffrey Epstein would follow suit, shortly after his resignation from Bear Stearns. As previously mentioned, Casey had been the legal representative of Bear

Stearns during Epstein's time there up until several weeks before Epstein's abrupt resignation, when Casey became CIA director.

With Cohn, Gray, and Casey in the periphery, this also raises the additional possibility that Epstein may have first been exposed to the idea of sexual blackmail operations in this period, due to his proximity to people like Cohn and Gray through Khashoggi, as well as (and more likely) his proximity to Khashoggi himself. Another possibility is that Epstein was first exposed to this type of operation through a potential link to BCCI, as the "dirtiest bank of them all" was also alleged to have been involved in the sex trafficking of minors.

According to the report entitled *The BCCI Affair*, by then-US Senators John Kerry (D-MA) and Hank Brown (R-CO), BCCI officials were alleged to have obtained leverage over and curried favor with powerful individuals, including prominent members of the ruling families of the United Arab Emirates (UAE), by providing them with young virgins, many of whom were under the age of 18.

The report (pages 69-70) specifically states:

> BCCI's involvement in prostitution arose out of its creation of its special protocols department in Pakistan to service the personal requirements of the Al-Nahyan family of Abu Dhabi, and on an as-needed basis, other BCCI VIPs, including the families of other Middle Eastern rulers.
>
> Several BCCI officers described the protocol department's handling of prostitution to Senate investigators in private, and two – Abdur Sakhia and Nazir Chinoy – confirmed their general knowledge of the practice in testimony.
>
> The prostitution handled by BCCI was carried over from practices originally instituted by [BCCI founder Agha Hasan] Abedi at the United Bank, when working with a woman, Begum Asghair Rahim, he cemented his relationship with the Al-Nahyan family through providing them with Pakistani prostitutes.
>
> Among BCCI bank officials in Pakistan, Begum Rahim was reputed to have in United Bank first won the favors or attention of the royal family by arranging to get virgin women from the villages from the ages of 16 to 20. Rahim would make payments to their families, take the teenaged girls into the cities, and there taught them how to dress and how to act, including the correct mannerisms. The women would be then brought to the Abu Dhabi princes. For years, Rahim would take 50-60 of these girls at a time to large department stores in Lahore and Karachi to get them outfitted for clothes. Given the size of Rahim's revenue and her spending habits – $100,000 at a time was not unusual when she was engaged in outfitting her charges – her activities became notorious in the Pakistani community generally, and there was substantial competition among clothiers and jewelers for her business.
>
> According to one U.S. investigator with substantial knowledge of BCCI's activities, some BCCI officials have acknowledged that some of the females provided some members of the Al-Nahyan family [one of the ruling families in the UAE] were young girls who had not yet reached puberty, and in certain cases, were physically injured by the experience. The official said that former BCCI officials had told him that BCCI also provided males to homosexual VIPs.[81]

This BCCI-run sex trafficking operation has some obvious similarities to the operation that would later be run by Jeffrey Epstein and Ghislaine Maxwell, with Maxwell's actions in that operation paralleling the actions of Begum Asghair Rahim to a considerable degree (see Chapter 18).

Returning to the matter of Epstein's past claim to have been tied to the CIA during this period, there is also evidence of Norinco specifically working with CIA assets to arm the CIA-backed Mujahideen in Afghanistan. Michael Riconosciuto, who was then directly affiliated with the CIA and who programmed a backdoor into PROMIS (see Chapter 9), also claimed to have personally assisted the CIA effort to arm the Mujahideen in Afghanistan with unassembled Chinese rocket systems in 1986. Riconosciuto alleges that he aided this specific effort using pre-existing connections of his to Norinco.

In an interview with author Cheri Seymour, Riconosciuto stated that the furnishing of weapons to Iran, the Afghanistan Mujahideen, and the Contras were done by the a single entity, which he referred to as simply "The Company."[82] Riconosciuto also said that Mujahideen and Contras would "pay" for the arms with drugs, not currency, as part of the parallel "arms-for-drugs" trafficking operations that was detailed in Gary Webb's *Dark Alliance*, among other sources. The FBI would later refer to "The Company" in a case file on Andrew C. Thornton II, calling it a CIA-linked network of former special forces officers and law enforcement officials involved in the smuggling of cocaine into the US.[83]

Another associate of Riconosciuto during this period, namely W. Patrick Moriarty, was also deeply involved in managing negotiations and trade agreements with China during this period, supporting Riconosciuto's claim that he and his networks during this period were connected to influential Chinese firms, such as Norinco. The Norinco connection to BCCHK, as well as the alleged connections to Epstein and then-CIA-connected Riconosciuto, makes the case that Norinco was involved with the CIA-affiliated individuals and entities during this period as it related to arms deals.

Furthermore, given that Khashoggi was affiliated with Saudi, American, British, and Israeli intelligence by 1982, it is also possible that Epstein made his way into the fold of intelligence himself through Khashoggi.

Epstein's affiliation with some national intelligence agency was essentially confirmed in 2019, when it was reported that then-Secretary of Labor Alex Acosta, who had signed off on Epstein's "sweetheart deal" during his first criminal case, had “been told” to back off of Epstein, that Epstein was above his pay grade. “I was told Epstein ‘belonged to intelligence’ and to leave it alone,” Acosta had reportedly told the Trump transition team.[84] It is unclear, from Acosta’s reported statements, exactly what intelligence agency, American or foreign, Epstein had been affiliated with and when.

It is entirely possible that, as Epstein once claimed, he worked for the CIA during this specific period, and later affiliated himself with another intelligence agency. Alternatively, he may have worked for more than one intelligence agency at a time, being a double or potentially even triple agent.

According to former Israeli military intelligence officer Ari Ben-Menashe, who I first interviewed in December 2019, Epstein’s affiliation with Israeli intelligence dated back at least to the mid-1980s, when Ben-Menashe was personally introduced to Epstein by Robert Maxwell. Per Ben-Menashe, Maxwell introduced Epstein as having been approved by the “higher ups” in the Israeli intelligence network where Ben-Menashe and Maxwell were both operating. The introduction reportedly occurred at Maxwell’s offices in London.[85]

During this period, Ben-Menashe has stated that he believes one of these “higher ups” was Ehud Barak, the future Prime Minister of Israel who was head of the Israeli military intelligence directorate AMAN from 1983 to 1985. Ben-Menashe could not recall the exact date of his introduction to Epstein, but stated that it occurred within that 1983-1985 period in which Barak held this post. Barak would later become infamous for his close proximity, not only to Epstein, but his sex trafficking/sex blackmail operation, which is discussed in the next chapter.

In a September 2019 interview with journalist and former *CBS News* producer Zev Shalev, he stated “he [Maxwell] wanted us to accept him [Epstein] as part of our group.… I’m not denying that we were at the time a group that it was Nick Davies [Foreign Editor of the Maxwell-Owned *Daily Mirror*], it was Maxwell, it was myself and our team from Israel, we were doing what we were doing.”[86]

Past reporting by Seymour Hersh and others revealed that Maxwell, Davies, and Ben-Menashe were involved in the transfer and sale of military equipment and weapons from Israel to Iran on behalf of Israeli intelligence during this time period. Ben-Menashe was not aware of Epstein being involved in arms deals for anyone else he knew at the time, but did confirm that Maxwell wanted to involve Epstein in the arms transfer in which he, Davies, and Ben-Menashe were engaged on Israel’s behalf.

After the initial introduction, Ben-Menashe would witness Epstein at Maxwell's offices on several occasions, stating that Epstein was "frequently present" at that location. Ben-Menashe stated specifically that Epstein "used to be in [Robert Maxwell's] office [in London] quite often" and would arrive there between trips to and from Israel.[87] Ben-Menashe also asserted that Ghislaine Maxwell accompanied her father so frequently that she was involved in his intelligence-related activities to some extent. However, he stopped short of saying how involved she was or what she had specifically been involved in prior to her father's death. Ghislaine's early life and her relationship with her father is detailed in Chapter 15.

Aside from Ben-Menashe's claims, there are also statements made by Steven Hoffenberg that, during the late 1980s, Epstein had boasted of his ties to Israel's intelligence services, claiming that it had been Ghislaine Maxwell who had made the introduction.[88] Furthemore, Zev Shalev reported that another well-placed and independent source, who has remained anonymous, had corroborated Ben-Menashe's assertions that Epstein had been an intelligence asset for Israel.[89]

Close ties to Israel's government later in his life can also be seen in an odd visit Epstein made to Israel in 2008. The visit was odd partly due to the timing, as it took place during the course of his trial and just a few months before he was sentenced to prison in June 2008. In April of that year, the *Palm Beach Daily News* reported that Epstein was staying at the Tel Aviv Hilton and quoted an Epstein spokesman as saying that he was "spending Passover, meeting with Israeli research scientists, and taking a tour of military bases."[90] Access to military bases is certainly not something easily obtained by tourists to Israel, even very wealthy ones, again suggesting that Epstein had long-standing connections to Israel's national security apparatus, along with his "friendship" to Ehud Barak.

Some have speculated that the timing of this trip saw Epstein implore prominent Israelis for aid in his legal troubles back in the US. After all, as will be revisited again in chapter 14, Ehud Barak was a key reason behind Bill Clinton's controversial pardon of Marc Rich and Epstein may have thought a similar intervention could work to his benefit.

It is worth noting that, during and before this period of Epstein's career (i.e. the early to mid-1980s), both Israeli and British intelligence were already involved in the acquisition of sexual blackmail domestically within the United States. Some of the blackmail sources were call services operating in New York and Washington, DC that sexually exploited minors.

In 1982, the New York State Select Committee on Crime, which investigated nationwide networks of underage sex trafficking and the production of child pornography, saw committee investigator Dale Smith reveal that an accountant for "several call service operations" in Washington, DC, named Robert Koehler was selling "information on the sexual proclivities of the clients to agents of foreign intelligence services."[91] Two other call service operations were called Brian's Boys and Fantasies Unlimited, which were operated out of Alexandria, Virginia, and managed by Jonathan C. Reynolds III. Reynolds told Smith that he was "selling information out of the call services" specifically "to British and Israeli intelligence."[92] Smith also stated that Soviet Military Intelligence had been purchasing similar information from call services in Washington.[93]

Epstein's involvement with intelligence during this period and his subsequent sex trafficking activities suggest that these operations, as well as those practiced by top officials at BCCI during this period, may have served as a sort of blueprint for Epstein's own, subsequent sex trafficking/sex blackmail operation with Ghislaine Maxwell, daughter of the intelligence-connected Robert Maxwell.

THE AUSTRIAN PASSPORT MYSTERY

The mystery surrounding the exact nature of Epstein's intelligence connections forged during the 1980s deepened soon after Epstein's 2019 arrest, when it was revealed in court that Epstein possessed in a safe "a passport from a foreign country with a picture of the defendant [i.e. Epstein] under another name." The passport had been issued in the 1980s.[94] The contents of that safe were used by the prosecution to argue that Epstein was a flight risk, as the safe with the passport had also contained $70,000 in cash and 48 small diamonds.[95] It was later revealed, during the course of the Ghislaine Maxwell trial, that the safe had actually contained multiple passports, but only the details of the aforementioned passport "under another name" have been made public.[96] That passport was long expired and would not have facilitated Epstein's potential "quick getaway."

The passport had been issued in Austria and listed Epstein's alias and a Saudi Arabian address. The alias of Epstein's used in this passport remains unknown. The passport showed stamps from France, Spain, the United Kingdom, and Saudi Arabia.[97] These locations suggest deeper links to Khashoggi, who was from Saudi Arabia and close to Saudi intelligence, as well as the Maxwell family, who had family homes in both the United Kingdom and France. The visits to Spain may be explained by Epstein's involvement with recovering lost millions on behalf of powerful Spaniards in 1982, including Ana Obregón's father, as it related to the collapse of Drysdale Government Securities.

Epstein's defense lawyers had attempted to explain away the passport. According to the *Associated Press,* they argued that "a friend gave it to him [Epstein] in the 1980s after some Jewish-Americans were informally advised to carry identification bearing a non-Jewish name when traveling internationally during a period when hijackings were more common."[98] This claim appears to be related to concerns that followed the hijacking of Air France Flight 139 in 1976, when Israeli and Jewish hostages were separated from other hostages based largely on the passports in their possession.[99]

Given that Epstein was unable to meet the conventional qualifications for an Austrian passport – including long-term residency in Austria (the passport lists him as a resident of Saudi Arabia) and fluency in German – it appears that the only way to have acquired an Austrian passport was by unconventional means, meaning assistance from a well-connected Austrian official or foreign diplomat with clout in Austria.

The origins of this passport still remain shrouded in mystery. Some, such as journalist Edward Szall, have speculated that the source was Ronald Lauder, heir to the Estee Lauder fortune who served as the US ambassador to Austria from April 1986 to October 1987. There is certainly a case to be made for Lauder being the potential source. He would have been well-positioned to acquire such a passport, particularly for the reason cited by Epstein's attorneys that Jewish-Americans could be targeted during travel, and in light of Lauder's very public concerns over threats Jews faced from certain terror groups during that period.

In addition, Lauder swam in the same social circles as Epstein's former patron Alan Greenberg as well as Donald Trump, another friend of Lauder and Greenberg who began his friendship with Epstein in 1987.[100] Lauder's parents were also close friends of Roy Cohn, Trump's mentor who was the lawyer of Epstein's client in the 1980s, Adnan Khashoggi.[101] In 1987, Epstein also began his formal relationship with Leslie Wexner, who shares strong "philanthropic" connections to the Bronfmans with Lauder. Lauder would later take over Edgar Bronfman's role as head of the influential Zionist lobby organization the World Jewish Congress in 2007. Wexner's role in co-founding the Mega Group with Charles Bronfman and other intersections of their philanthropic endeavors are detailed in chapter 14.

Lauder also possessed some apparent connections to US intelligence as well as close ties to Israel's government, particularly during Benjamin Netanyahu's first term as Prime Minister, as Netanyahu's successful 1996 campaign was largely bankrolled by Lauder. Regarding a potential US intelligence connection, Lauder co-founded the Eastern European broadcasting network CETV with Mark Palmer, a former US diplomat, Kissinger aide, and Reagan speechwriter. Palmer is best known for co-founding the National Endowment for Democracy (NED), an organization often described as an accessory to US intelligence. NED's first president confessed to the *Washington Post* in 1991 that "a lot of what we do today was done covertly 25 years ago by the CIA."[102]

In the case of Lauder's Israel ties, Lauder himself has been alleged to have ties to Israel's security and intelligence services, as he is a long-time, major funder of IDC Herzliya, an Israeli university founded in 1994 and closely associated with Israeli intelligence agencies.[103] Lauder even founded IDC Herzliya's Lauder

School of Government, Diplomacy, and Strategy.[104] In 2007, founding president of IDC, Uriel Reichman, told the *Jerusalem Post* that “a central mission of ours is the strengthening and development of Israel’s security forces.”[105] Notably, Israeli intelligence services have a history of using ambassadors abroad to procure false, foreign passports for its operatives.[106]

However, it is hard to know the likelihood of Lauder’s involvement in procuring the passport as the date of issuance or the passport’s creation, as well as the dates on the stamps to Saudi Arabia and other countries, remains unknown. Prosecutors in the 2019 case against Epstein stated that the document had expired in 1987, the year Lauder left his ambassadorship, but there is still a possibility it had been given to Epstein for shorter term use during Lauder’s time in that position.

Another possibility other than Lauder is the previous US ambassador to Austria, Helene Von Damm, who held that post from 1983 to 1986, and was a known attendee of parties on Roy Cohn’s yacht.[107] Still another, and more likely, possibility was Von Damm’s deputy, Felix Bloch, who was known to buck protocol and was deemed insubordinate by both Von Damm and her successor Ronald Lauder.

Bloch is a controversial figure who found himself investigated for illegal activities by the FBI and was alleged to have had relationships with foreign intelligence services, namely the Soviet Union. He had been the second-ranking officer at the US embassy in Vienna until 1987, when he returned to the US to head the State Department office handling regional affairs for Europe.[108] He was suspended from his diplomatic post in mid-1989 and reportedly told investigators that the Soviet Union had paid him “a lot of money” and that he had collaborated with the Soviets for “many years,” per the *New York Times*.[109] However, he was never charged due to a purported “dearth of evidence.”[110]

If Bloch indeed had had ties to the KGB, it is possible he had helped furnish a passport clandestinely for Epstein. This is because Robert Maxwell, who had reportedly brought Epstein into his arms dealing-intelligence network by the mid-1980s, had considerable ties to the KGB and could have likely arranged for the Austrian passport through a man like Bloch. Among Maxwell’s close contacts in the KGB was Vladimir Kryuchkov, who joined the KGB in 1967 and would serve as the agency’s head from 1988 until August 1991, at which point he was involved with a failed coup against Mikhail Gorbachev.[111] Another of Maxwell’s contacts with KGB connections was Yuri Andropov, who served as head of the KGB from 1967 through 1982.[112]

FROM LEESE TO HOFFENBERG

In 1987, it would again be Douglas Leese who would further alter the course of Epstein's career, introducing him to Steven Jude Hoffenberg, who had founded and led Towers Financial Corporation. Towers Financial was ostensibly a collection agency, which originally focused on buying the debts people owed to hospitals, banks, and so on. Yet, with Epstein's assistance, it would soon become much more.

Hoffenberg has stated that Douglas Leese was a principal at Towers Financial and wanted Hoffenberg to hire Epstein at the company for a position specifically related, originally at least, to the sale of securities.[113] Per Hoffenberg, Douglas Leese, in introducing Epstein to Hoffenberg, was interested in using Towers Financial funds for the purpose of "embezzlement" and fraud and that this was part of his motive in introducing Epstein to Hoffenberg.[114] Julian Leese has claimed that he worked briefly at Towers Financial and that he was the one who first introduced his father to Hoffenberg.[115] Criminal financial activity would take place at Towers Financial, though those crimes would later be tied to Epstein and Hoffenberg, not Douglas or Julian Leese. However, Hoffenberg, who ultimately took the fall for the entire scheme, has stated that, not only was Douglas Leese involved in the planning of these crimes, but so were Douglas Leese's sons Julian and Nicholas.

Hoffenberg told the *Washington Post* in 2019 that Leese had told him about Epstein, "The guy's a genius.… He's great at selling securities. And he has no moral compass."[116] Hoffenberg, at the time, has admitted to having been "a schemer," stating that he "was always under investigation," well before Towers Financial Corporation collapsed and became known as one of the largest Ponzi schemes in US history.

Hoffenberg, after founding Towers in the early 1970s, had had several run-ins with the law. In one example, in 1980, Hoffenberg and two partners were "sued for fraud over their acquisitions of a hardware supplier," resulting in a $300,000 settlement.[117] It was also reported in the 1980s that "the Securities and Exchange Commission accused Towers of selling $34 million in unregistered securities to the public" and that charge was also settled, though with "no admission of guilt."[118]

Leese's assertion about Epstein's genius and lack of morals appeared to have piqued the interest of Hoffenberg, perhaps because, with such talents, Hoffenberg could execute bigger and more lucrative "schemes." Between 1987 and 1993, Epstein was paid $25,000 a month by Hoffenberg. A year after they met, in 1988, Hoffenberg would also provide Epstein with a $2 million loan that, per Hoffenberg, Epstein never paid back.

The same year that Hoffenberg met Epstein and Epstein became involved in Towers Financial, the company "began constructing one of the largest frauds in history." The *Washington Post* detailed the origin of the scheme as follows:

> The scheme began when Towers acquired the parent of two insurance companies, Associated Life Insurance United Fire. Then, Towers launched a takeover attempt against Pan Am, the once-proud but then-struggling airline.
>
> To boost its chances, Towers told the SEC that it had an expert on its team: Epstein. Towers called him "a financial advisor who has been familiar with Pan Am for approximately six years" and was now advising Towers.
>
> What neither regulators nor Pan Am knew was that, as Hoffenberg admitted later in court, Towers had begun devising a classic Ponzi scheme, named for a swindler who defrauded investors by moving money back and forth to create the false impression that profit was being made.
>
> After acquiring the insurance companies, Towers began siphoning funds from them to make its bid for Pan Am look viable. Hoffenberg and Epstein also began pulling out hundreds of thousands of dollars for themselves, court documents show. Hoffenberg issued more than 50 checks from the insurance companies to pay his stepdaughter's tuition, expenses on his private plane, and monthly $25,000 checks to Epstein.
>
> "I advanced money to Epstein perpetually because I thought this thing could work," Hoffenberg said. "He could sell anything. People loved him."[119]

However, the takeover attempts of the airlines failed, causing problems for the Towers-owned insurance companies. Hoffenberg would then siphon off an additional $1.8 million from those companies in a failed attempt to acquire Emery Air Freight, leaving the insurance companies insolvent and robbing thousands of customers in Illinois and Ohio. The Illinois Department of Insurance and the SEC then sued Towers. Hoffenberg has said that some of these takeover attempts involved assistance from people at Epstein's former employer Bear Stearns, but qualified that it was "not a lot."[120]

Yet, the duo of Epstein and Hoffenberg showed no signs of slowing down and instead expanded, developing a separate Ponzi scheme in 1988 that involved selling around $272 million in promissory notes, where they were "offering returns of 12 to 16 percent and marketing them largely to people of modest means, among them widows, retirees, and people with disabilities."[121] Money from the sale of the promissory notes was used to convince Illinois regulators that the company was not actually insolvent and that the insurance companies had sufficient capital to cover claims. Two years later, in 1990, they would engage in similar behavior, selling about $210 million in bonds and filing false financial statements to cover their tracks.[122] Regarding these acts, Hoffenberg would tell the *Washington Post* in 2019, "I call it a turnover. You raise a dollar here, you pay a dollar there. Epstein was brilliant at this."

During this period, Epstein and Hoffenberg grew very close. "They traveled everywhere together – on Hoffenberg's plane, all around the world, they were always together," one source told Vicky Ward in 2003.[123] Hoffenberg, on the matter of their then-close relationship would later tell *CBS News* "He was my best friend for years. My closest friend for years.… We ran a team of people on Wall Street, investment people that raised these billion dollars illegally. He was my guy, my wingman."[124]

Hoffenberg later claimed to have fired Epstein in the early 1990s because Epstein "was stealing too much. I couldn't supervise him."[125] However, the manner in which they parted ways is disputed. Even if Hoffenberg did cut ties with Epstein well before he was arrested in 1993, Hoffenberg did seem to maintain ties with Epstein/Maxwell-connected networks until the very end. For example, when Hoffenberg moved to buy the *New York Post*, which he had done at Governor Mario Cuomo's request, he used the same lawyers that Robert Maxwell had used to take over the *New York Daily News* just a few years prior to secure that transaction.[126] It's also worth noting that the way both Hoffenberg and Maxwell played up their respective "rescues" of well-known New York newspapers was remarkably similar.

Shortly after Hoffenberg became the *New York Post*'s "savior," he was sued by the SEC and Towers Financial filed for bankruptcy shortly thereafter. The Ponzi scheme had imploded.

Soon, Hoffenberg appeared in front of a Chicago grand jury, in November 1993, to which he confirmed while being questioned that "Jeffrey Epstein was the person in charge of the [fraudulent] transactions." When asked by federal prosecutor Edward Kohler if Epstein had been trying to manipulate the price of stocks, Hoffenberg responded affirmatively. Kohler's line of questioning and overarching narrative at the hearing painted Epstein as the "technical wizard" of the Towers Financial fraud; yet, somehow, three months later, Epstein's name mysteriously disappeared from the case.[127]

Hoffenberg was arrested in 1994 and pled guilty in April 1995. Hoffenberg had been offered a reduced sentence by prosecutors in exchange for information about co-conspirators, but either prosecutors were no longer interested in pursuing Epstein or Hoffenberg chose not to talk about Epstein.[128] Other Towers executives, Mitchell Brater and Michael Rosoff, were charged for their role in the Towers Financial schemes, but Epstein was never charged.[129]

Hoffenberg has since alleged that he only pled guilty at the behest of his then-lawyer in order to reduce his sentence. His lawyer at the time, Jeffrey Hoffman, told the court that the guilty plea and accompanying confession from Hoffenberg was offered "to spare Mr. Hoffenberg the trauma, embarrassment, and expense of a trial," according to the *New York Times*.[130]

Hoffenberg has since claimed that, if his case had gone to trial, not only Epstein's role in the fraud, but also the true extent of the Epstein-Leese connection would have been exposed. If so, this would have been damaging for several parties, including the intelligence agencies to which both Epstein and Leese were allegedly connected. There is evidence that Hoffenberg did attempt to withdraw his guilty plea after it had been filed, but this effort was mentioned in press reports at the time as having been "based in part on claims of mental illness," with Hoffenberg claiming he had been "mentally impaired" when he had pled guilty.[131]

Hoffenberg would attempt to file a lawsuit against Epstein in 2016, but Hoffenberg later withdrew the lawsuit, saying that victims of the Towers Financial fraud "may be in a better position to pursue and assert their own claims" against Epstein.[132] A similar lawsuit was filed in 2018 by Towers Financial note and bondholders, but was dismissed, suggesting that efforts to shield Epstein from culpability in the Towers case continued nearly up until his 2019 arrest.[133] Notably, that complaint alleged that Hoffenberg, despite having been offered a reduced sentence for offering information about co-conspirators in the early 1990s, did not provide any useable intel to investigators on Epstein until his 2016 lawsuit. *The Daily Beast* reported in 2019 that, in the early 1990s, Hoffenberg had never made an attempt to implicate Epstein prior to the 2016 lawsuit, but this was contradicted by reporting from the *Washington Post*, which referenced

Hoffenberg's November 1993 testimony that did both mention and implicate Epstein.[134]

According to Vicky Ward's 2003 report on Jeffrey Epstein in *Vanity Fair*, it had been Hoffenberg who, in 1987, had originally "set Epstein up in the offices he still occupies in the Villard Houses, on Madison Avenue, across a courtyard from the restaurant Le Cirque." If that is the case, as other reports also claim, it would mean that Hoffenberg directly connected Epstein to a network involving the Gouletas family. Evangeline Gouletas appeared to share that very office directly with Epstein.

In his article "My Tea with Jeffrey Epstein," Edward Jay Epstein writes how in the late 1980s, Jeffrey Epstein introduced him to "Evangeline Gouletas-Carey, the wife of former governor Hugh Carey, who shared an office with Epstein at the Villard Houses."[135] That the two shared an office is confirmed by *Business Insider*: "John Catsimatidis, who owns the Manhattan grocery chain Gristedes, told *Insider* that he met Epstein through his friend Evangeline Gouletas, a real estate executive who shared an office with Epstein in the building of the then-Helmsley Hotel in the early 1990s."[136]

The Helmsley Hotel was the name of a Manhattan luxury hotel that was open from 1981 to 1992, at which point it was purchased by the Sultan of Brunei.[137] The complex encompassed a portion of the Villard Houses, confirming that the shared Epstein/Gouletas-Carey office alluded to by both Edward Jay Epstein and John Catsimatidis were one and the same. Given the timing, it seems as though Hoffenberg helped forge the connection between Epstein and the Gouletas.

There seems to be special significance to the Gouletas connection. The Gouletas family's lawyer – Allan Tessler – would join the board of Leslie Wexner's The Limited in 1987, the same year that Epstein formally allied with Hoffenberg at Tower Financial and that Epstein became a financial advisor for Wexner. This could potentially mean that Hoffenberg may have had a role in the genesis of the Wexner-Epstein relationship by helping set Epstein up with Gouletas. As we shall see, the Gouletas had considerable ties, throughout the 1980s, to organized crime-linked businessmen in Wexner's inner circle, corrupt New York politicians bankrolled by the Bronfmans and other companies and characters that have already been explored in previous chapters of this book.

Endnotes

1 Vicky Ward, “The Talented Mr. Epstein,” *Vanity Fair*, March 1, 2003, https://www.vanityfair.com/news/2003/03/jeffrey-epstein-200303.

2 James B. Stewart, “Jeffrey Epstein, a Rare Cello and an Enduring Mystery,” *New York Times*, April 22, 2022, https://www.nytimes.com/2022/04/22/business/jeffrey-epstein-william-derosa.html.

3 Paula Froelich, “Epstein Reportedly Had Secret ‘Lair’ at Famed Michigan Art School,” *New York Post*, September 5, 2020, https://nypost.com/2020/09/05/epstein-reportedly-had-secret-lair-at-interlochen-school/.

4 Jimmy Falun Gong, Twitter post, February 17, 2021, https://twitter.com/JimmyFalun-Gong/status/1362244440274919425

5 Landon Thomas Jr, “Jeffrey Epstein: International Moneyman of Mystery,” *New York Magazine*, October 28, 2002, https://web.archive.org/web/20021219121133/http://www.newyorkmetro.com/nymetro/news/people/n_7912/.

6 Stewart, “Rare Cello.”

7 Michael Robotham, “The Mystery of Ghislaine Maxwell’s Secret Love; Revealed: The Unlikely Romance Between a Business Spy and the Crooked Financier’s Favourite Daughter,” *Mail on Sunday* (London), November 15, 1992, https://www.mintpressnews.com/wp-content/uploads/2019/10/The-mystery-of-Ghislaine-Maxwell_s-secret-love_REVEALED-1.pdf.

8 Stewart, “Rare Cello.”

9 Thomas Volscho, “Jeffrey Epstein Dodged Questions About Sex With His Dalton Prep-School Students,” *The Daily Beast*, July 13, 2019, https://www.thedailybeast.com/jeffrey-epstein-dodged-questions-about-sex-with-his-dalton-prep-school-students.

10 Marie Brenner, “The Untold Tale of Young William Barr Among the Manhattan Liberals,” *Vanity Fair*, October 7, 2019, https://www.vanityfair.com/news/2019/10/the-untold-tale-of-young-william-barr.

11 Gumby4christ, Twitter post, April 23, 2021, https://twitter.com/gumby4christ/status/1385635127636774917.

12 “Columbia Assistant Dean To Be Dalton Headmaster,” *New York Times*, March 24, 1964, https://www.nytimes.com/1964/03/24/archives/columbia-assistant-dean-to-be-dalton-head-master.html; Gumby4christ, Twitter post, April 23, 2021, https://twitter.com/gumby4christ/status/1385635127636774917.

13 Brenner, “Young William Barr.”

14 Volscho, “Epstein Dodged Questions.”

15 Jerry Lambe, “The Dalton School’s ‘Epstein-Barr’ Problem,” *Law & Crime*, July 13, 2019, https://lawandcrime.com/high-profile/the-epstein-barr-problem-of-new-york-citys-dalton-school/.

16 Linda Robertson and Aaron Brezel, “How Epstein Went from Teaching to Wall Street,” *Virgin Islands Daily News*, http://www.virginislandsdailynews.com/ap/how-epstein-went-from-teaching-to-wall-street/article_59c0234e-cf7d-59c3-96a7-bb8a04dacaa8.html.

17 Volscho, “Epstein Dodged Questions.”

18 Lambe, “Dalton School’s ‘Epstein-Barr’ Problem.”

19 Thomas, “International Moneyman.”

20 Ward, “Talented Mr. Epstein.”

21 Linda Robertson and Aaron Brezel, “‘Poor, smart and desperate to be rich’: How Epstein went from teaching to Wall Street,” *Miami Herald*, July 16, 2019, https://www.miamiherald.com/news/state/florida/article232678997.html.

22 Charlie Gasparino, “The Woes of Jeffrey Epstein: How He Maintained Wall Street Connections While Downplaying Child Sex Accusations,” *FOX Business*, July 26, 2019, https://web.archive.org/web/20190804174520/https://www.foxbusiness.com/features/jeffrey-epstein-wall-street-connections-child-sex-trafficking.

23 Gasparino, “The Woes of Jeffrey Epstein.”

24 Gasparino, “The Woes of Jeffrey Epstein.”

25 Gasparino, “The Woes of Jeffrey Epstein.”

26 Michael A. Hiltzik, “Financier Found Guilty of Illegal Insider Trading : Tome Ordered to Give Up $3.5-Million Profit From Seagram Takeover Attempt,” *Los Angeles Times*, June 4, 1986, https://www.latimes.com/archives/la-xpm-1986-06-04-fi-8701-story.html.

27 Stephen Birmingham, *Our Crowd: The Great Jewish Families of New York*, 1st. Syracuse University Press ed, Modern Jewish History (N.Y: Syracuse University Press, 1996), 378.

28 H. Erich Heinemann, “Bank of New York and Empire Trust Agree in Principle on a Merger Plan,” *New York Times*, March 18, 1966, https://www.nytimes.com/1966/03/18/archives/friday-march-18-1966-bank-of-new-york-and-empire-trust-agree-in.html.

29 1975 Bankers Almanac and Year Book, published by University of Minnesota, p. 499, https://www.google.com/books/edition/_/Co8RAQAAMAAJ.

30 Hiltzik, “Financier Found Guilty.”

31 William H. Meyers, “Megadealer for the Rothschilds,” *New York Times*, December 4, 1988, https://www.nytimes.com/1988/12/04/magazine/meagdealer-for-the-rothschilds.html.

32 Dennis B. Levine, “The Inside Story of an Inside Trader,” *CNN Money*, May 21, 1990, https://money.cnn.com/magazines/fortune/fortune_archive/1990/05/21/73553/index.htm.

33 Levine, “Inside Story,”; Meyers, “Megadealer.”

34 Meyers, “Megadealer.”

35 “Photograph from Malcolm Forbes’ 70th Birthday Party,” 1989, https://www.gettyimages.com.mx/detail/fotograf%C3%ADa-de-noticias/sir-james-goldsmith-and-robert-maxwell-during-fotograf%C3%ADa-de-noticias/105903255.

36 Leland Nally, “Jeffrey Epstein, My Very, Very Sick Pal,” *Mother Jones*, August 23, 2019, https://www.motherjones.com/crime-justice/2019/08/jeffrey-epstein-my-very-very-sick-pal/.

37 “Epstein’s Black Book,” https://epsteinsblackbook.com/black-book-images/22.jpg.

38 “Rothschild Shuffles Top Ranks,” *New York Times*, June 9, 1992, https://www.nytimes.com/1992/06/09/business/rothschild-shuffles-top-ranks.html.

39 Steve Lipman, “Federation’s ‘Ace’ Giver Remembered,” *Jewish Telegraphic Agency*, July 29, 2014, https://www.jta.org/2014/07/29/ny/federations-ace-giver-remembered.

40 Gasparino, “The Woes of Jeffrey Epstein.”

41 Ward, “Talented Mr. Epstein.”

42 "J. EPSTEIN & COMPANY, INC," *OpenCorporates*, https://opencorporates.com/companies/us_ny/1307306.

43 Janna Herron and Kevin McCoy, "From Private Island to Private Jet: What Is 'billionaire' Jeffrey Epstein's Net Worth?," *USA TODAY*, July 14, 2019, https://www.usatoday.com/story/money/2019/07/14/jeffrey-epstein-net-worth-is-he-billionaire-or-not/1708479001/.

44 Jesse Kornbluth, "I Was a Friend of Jeffrey Epstein; Here's What I Know," *Salon*, July 9, 2019, https://www.salon.com/2019/07/09/i-was-a-friend-of-jeffrey-epstein-heres-what-i-know/.

45 James Patterson, John Connolly, and Tim Malloy, *Filthy Rich* (Hatchette Book Group, 2017), 99.

46 Ward, "Talented Mr. Epstein."

47 Nigel Rosser, "Andrew's Fixer; She's the Daughter of Robert Maxwell and She's Manipulating His Jetset Lifestyle," *Evening Standard* (London), January 22, 2001, https://www.mintpress-news.com/wp-content/uploads/2019/10/ANDREW_S-FIXER_SHE_S-THE-DAUGHTER-OF-ROBERT-MAXWELL-AND-1.pdf.

48 NY Magazine Editors, "The High Society That Surrounded Jeffrey Epstein," *Intelligencer*, July 22, 2019, https://nymag.com/intelligencer/2019/07/jeffrey-epstein-high-society-contacts.html.

49 Edward Szall, "Jeffrey Epstein's 'Mentor' Talks to TruNews," *TruNews*, July 30, 2020, https://www.trunews.com/stream/part-1-jeffrey-epsteins-mentor-talks-to-trunews.

50 Peter McCormack, *Defiance*, Ghislaine: Part 4 - Epstein's Mentor, October 2020, https://open.spotify.com/episode/0LDTjGTUS3fQuRSlgAlJhN?si=d5c80c3f121c4833&nd=1.

51 Szall, "Epstein's Mentor."

52 "Douglas Sims Leese," Graces Guide To British Industrial History, https://www.graces-guide.co.uk/Douglas_Sims_Leese.

53 *NY Magazine* Editors, "High Society."

54 Colin Maloney, "Downriver Nonprofit Received Donation from Foundation Associated with Jeffrey Epstein," *News Herald*, August 13, 2019, https://www.thenewsherald.com/news/downriver-nonprofit-received-donation-from-foundation-associated-with-jeffrey-epstein/article_a2512d98-bdcf-11e9-8a43-53b212666c96.html.

55 McCormack, *Defiance*.

56 Matthew Beckett, "New Series: The Country House Revealed – South Wraxall Manor, Wiltshire," *The Country Seat*, May 10, 2011, https://thecountryseat.org.uk/tag/rood-ashton-house/; "A Farming Life: Michael George Pope," *Box People and Places*, June 2015, http://www.boxpeoplean-dplaces.co.uk/pope-family.html.

57 Offshore alerts forum, saved image, https://unlimitedhangout.com/wp-content/uploads/2022/07/Photo_2022-07-01-12.22.52.jpeg.

58 "House Of Wraxall Limited," *Companies London*, https://www.companieslondon.com/uk/01359147/house-of-wraxall-limited.

59 Matt Schaffer, *Winning the Countertrade War: New Export Strategies for America* (New York: Wiley, 1989), 173–74.

60 *Who's Who 1985: An Annual Biographical Dictionary* (London: A. & C. Black, 1985), 1021.

61 Investigate Design, “Owen Glenn’s Shady Friends,” *Investigate Magazine*, February 19, 2008, https://theoutdoorphonestore.com/13980/owen-glenns-shady-friends/.

62 Juliette Garside, “Dukes of Westminster Pumped Millions into Secretive Offshore Firms,” *The Guardian*, November 7, 2017, https://www.theguardian.com/business/2017/nov/07/duke-of-westminster-offshore-firms-wealth-paradise-papers.

63 “Case History No. 8 Swiss American Bank” (Swiss American National Bank), http://archivo.lavoz.com.ar/2001/0305/112.pdf.

64 “Norinco Lorad Limited,” *OpenCorporates*, https://opencorporates.com/companies/bm/10097; “LORAD Far East Limited” (HK Corporation Search, n.d.), https://www.hkcorporationsearch.com/companies/0131346/.

65 William C. Triplett II, “China’s Weapons Mafia,” *Washington Post*, October 27, 1991, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/opinions/1991/10/27/chinas-weapons-mafia/5a0f8884-8953-4bbe-9ae8-fc72fb09442f/.

66 Szall, “Epstein’s Mentor.”

67 Szall, “Epstein’s Mentor.” For Khashoggi’s Mossad ties at this time see Victor Ostrovsky and Claire Hoy, *By Way of Deception*, 1st U.S. ed (New York: St. Martin’s Press, 1990), 327, https://archive.org/details/isbn_9780312926144.

68 Adam Lusher, “Adnan Khashoggi: The ‘whoremonger’ Whose Arms Deals Funded a Playboy Life of Decadence and ‘Pleasure Wives,’” *The Independent*, October 29, 2019, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/long_reads/adnan-khashoggi-dead-saudi-arms-dealer-playboy-plea-sure-wives-billionaire-lifestyle-wealth-profit-from-arms-sales-war-death-wealth-sex-superyacht--super-rich-iran-contra-iraq-alyamamah-thatcher-conspiracy-a7778031.html.

69 Lusher, “Adnan Khashoggi.”

70 Whitney Webb, “The Genesis and Evolution of the Jeffrey Epstein, Bill Clinton Relationship,” *MintPress News*, August 23, 2019, https://www.mintpressnews.com/genesis-jeffrey-epstein-bill-clinton-relationship/261455/; Richard J. Aldrich, “Prince Andrew Laid Bare by Wikileaks: Duke of York Journalist Rant,” *Mail Online*, September 28, 2021, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-10035265/Prince-Andrew-laid-bare-Wikileaks-Duke-York-ranted-journalists.html.

71 *NY Magazine* Editors, “High Society.”

72 Chris Blackhurst, “Littlewoods Prompts Trader’s Arrest for Bribes,” *The Independent*, July 26, 1996, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/littlewoods-prompts-trader-s-arrest-for-bribes-1330625.html.

73 Triplett, “China’s Weapons Mafia.”

74 Nicholas Von Hoffman, *Citizen Cohn* (1st ed. New York: Doubleday, 1988), 424.

75 Dominick Dunne, “Khashoggi’s Fall,” *Vanity Fair*, September 15, 2008, https://www.vanityfair.com/magazine/1989/09/dunne198909.

76 Lusher, “Adnan Khashoggi.”

77 John Taylor, “Trump Princess: Inside Donald Trump’s Lavish 86m Superyacht,” *Boats International*, December 1, 2021, https://www.boatinternational.com/yachts/editorial-features/trump-princess-inside-donald-trumps-superyacht.

78 “Trump Bought Yacht from “World’s Largest Arms Dealer” (Democratic Coalition Against Trump, October 31, 2016), https://youtu.be/yuWMH5TD5bE.

79 Staff, “The Bcci-Cia Connection: Just How Far Did It Go?,” *Newsweek*, December 6, 1992, https://www.newsweek.com/bcci-cia-connection-just-how-far-did-it-go-195454.

80 Marcus Baram, “Eavesdropping on Roy Cohn and Donald Trump,” *The New Yorker*, April 14, 2017, http://www.newyorker.com/news/news-desk/eavesdropping-on-roy-cohn-and-donald-trump.

81 Sen. John Kerry and Sen. Hank Brown, *The BCCI Affair: A Report to the Committee on Foreign Relations*, 102nd Congress 2nd Session US Senate, December 1992, 72, https://play.google.com/store/books/details?id=CoKC-Sxb9kIC.

82 Cheri Seymour, *The Last Circle: Danny Casolaro’s Investigation Into the Octopus and the PROMIS Software Scandal*, 1st ed (Walterville, Oregon: TrineDay, 2010), 37.

83 “Andrew Thornton Part 01 of 01,” FBI File, https://vault.fbi.gov/andrew-thornton/andrew-thornton-part-01-of-01.

84 John R. Schindler, “It Sure Looks Like Jeffrey Epstein Was a Spy—But Whose?,”*Observer*, July 10, 2019, https://web.archive.org/web/20191218171112/https://observer.com/2019/07/jeffrey-epstein-spy-intelligence-work/.

85 Whitney Webb, “Former Israeli Spy Ari Ben-Menashe on Israel’s Relationship with Epstein,” *MintPress News*, December 13, 2019, https://www.mintpressnews.com/ari-ben-menashe-israel-relationship-jeffrey-epstein/263465/.

86 Zev Shalev, “Blackmailing America,” *Narativ*, September 26, 2019, https://narativ.org/2019/09/26/blackmailing-america/.

87 Webb, “Ari Ben-Menashe.”

88 Emma Parry and Chris White, “Jeffrey Epstein Would Boast to Pals That He Was Selling Prince Andrew’s Secrets to Mossad, Former Mentor Claims,” *The Sun*, January 24, 2020, https://www.thesun.co.uk/news/10814102/jeffrey-epstein-boasted-he-was-selling-prince-andrews-secrets-to-a-mossad-spy-and-called-him-his-super-bowl-trophy/.

89 Shalev, “Blackmailing America.”

90 “Bleznaks rose to still-cool occasion,” *Palm Beach Daily News*, April 27, 2008, p. 17, https://archive.ph/1tufZ.

91 *A Public Hearing to Consider the Boy Prostitution and Pornography*, New York State Select Committee on Crime, 1982, 58–59, https://web.archive.org/web/20190225212253/https:/disobedientmedia.com/dm/NY_Sex_Trafficking.pdf.

92 *Hearing to Consider the Boy Prostitution and Pornography*, 59.

93 *Hearing to Consider the Boy Prostitution and Pornography*, 61.

94 Tom Winter and David K. Li, “Jeffrey Epstein Had Cash, Diamonds and a Foreign Passport Stashed in Safe, Prosecutors Say,” *NBC News*, July 15, 2019, https://www.nbcnews.com/news/us-news/jeffrey-epstein-had-cash-diamonds-foreign-passport-stashed-safe-prosecutors-n1029851.

95 Tracy Connor, “Epstein Says Friend Gave Him Fake Foreign Passport Used in 4 Countries,” *The Daily Beast*, July 17, 2019, https://www.thedailybeast.com/jeffrey-epsteins-fake-foreign-passport-was-used-in-saudi-arabia-and-other-countries.

96 Jacob Shamsian, “FBI Agents Used a Saw to Open a Safe in Jeffrey Epstein’s Manhattan Mansion That Held Hard Drives and Diamonds,” *Insider*, December 6, 2021,

https://www.insider.com/fbi-used-saw-open-jeffrey-epstein-safe-hard-drives-diamonds-2021-12.

97 Connor, "Fake Foreign Passport."

98 "The Latest: Politicians Praise Jeffrey Epstein's Bail Ruling," *AP NEWS*, July 18, 2019, https://apnews.com/article/jeffrey-epstein-judiciary-courts-manhattan-new-york-14dcf4ad8e2740ed-89194712252be9e8.

99 "1976: Israelis Rescue Entebbe Hostages," *BBC*, July 4, 1976, http://news.bbc.co.uk/on-thisday/hi/dates/stories/july/4/newsid_2786000/2786967.stm.

100 Shelby White, "It's All in Who You Know (and Who They Know)," *New York Times*, November 18, 1998, https://www.nytimes.com/1998/11/18/giving/it-s-all-in-who-you-know-and-who-they-know.html; Ivylise Simones, "The Trump Files: Donald Perfectly Explains Why He Doesn't Have a Presidential Temperament," *Mother Jones*, August 30, 2016, https://web.archive.org/web/20200604025119/https://www.motherjones.com/politics/2016/08/trump-files-donald-per-fectly-explains-why-he-doesnt-have-presidential-temperament/.

101 Peter Manso, "My Bizarre Dinner Party with Donald Trump, Roy Cohn and Estee Lauder," *POLITICO Magazine*, May 27, 2016, https://www.politico.com/magazine/story/2016/05/donald-trump-2016-dinner-party-213923, Von Hoffman, *Citizen Cohn*, 369, 424.

102 David Ignatius, "Innocence Abroad: The New World of Spyless Coups," *Washington Post*, September 22, 1991, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/opinions/1991/09/22/innocence-abroad-the-new-world-of-spyless-coups/92bb989a-de6e-4bb8-99b9-462c76b59a16/.

103 Asa Winstanley, "How Israeli Spies Are Flooding Facebook and Twitter," *The Electronic Intifada*, June 25, 2019, https://electronicintifada.net/content/how-israeli-spies-are-flooding-face-book-and-twitter/27596.

104 "Ronald S. Lauder Founder," *Reichman University*, https://www.runi.ac.il/en/schools/government/about-lauder/.

105 Haviv Rettig Gur, "It's All in the Plans," *Jerusalem Post*, June 11, 2007, https://web.archive.org/web/20130512150049/http://www.jpost.com/Features//Article.aspx?id=64503.

106 "Israeli Secret Service Might Use Fake Irish Passports," *Al Bawaba*, October 11, 2016, https://www.albawaba.com/editorchoice/israeli-secret-service-might-use-fake-irish-passports-891814.

107 Von Hoffman, *Citizen Cohn,* 393.

108 "Dearth of Evidence May Block Prosecution of Diplomat Bloch," *Deseret News*, December 17, 1989, https://www.deseret.com/1989/12/17/18836992/dearth-of-evidence-may-block-prose-cution-of-diplomat-bloch.

109 "Felix Bloch, the Career Diplomat Suspected of Espionage, Told…," *UPI*, July 28, 1989, https://www.upi.com/Archives/1989/07/28/Felix-Bloch-the-career-diplomat-suspected-of-espio-nage-told/1302617601600/.

110 *Deseret News*, "Death of Evidence."

111 Gordon Thomas and Martin Dillon, *Robert Maxwell, Israel's Superspy: The Life and Murder of a Media Mogul*, 1st Carroll & Graf ed (New York: Carroll and Graf, 2002), 13.

112 Thomas and Dillon, *Israel's Superspy*, 8.

113 Szall, "Epstein's Mentor."

114 Szall, "Epstein's Mentor."

115 McCormack, *Defiance*.

116 Marc Fisher and Jonathan O'Connell, "Final Evasion: For 30 Years, Prosecutors and Victims Tried to Hold Jeffrey Epstein to Account. At Every Turn, He Slipped Away,"*Washington Post*, August 11, 2020, https://www.washingtonpost.com/politics/final-evasion-for-30-years-prosecutors-and-victims-tried-to-hold-jeffrey-epstein-to-account-at-every-turn-he-slipped-away/2019/08/10/30b-c947a-bb8a-11e9-a091-6a96e67d9cce_story.html.

117 George Garneau, "Averting a Crisis," *Editor & Publisher*, May 4, 2011, https://web.archive.org/web/20200609200628/https://www.editorandpublisher.com/news/averting-a-crisis-p/.

118 Garneau, "Averting a Crisis."

119 Fischer and O'Connell, "Final Evasion."

120 Gasparino, "The Woes of Jeffrey Epstein."

121 Fischer and O'Connell, "Final Evasion."

122 Kate Briquelet and Tracy Connor, "Ponzi Scheme Victims Say Epstein Swindled Them," *The Daily Beast*, July 15, 2019, https://www.thedailybeast.com/did-jeffrey-epstein-help-steven-Hoffenberg-swindle-dollar460-million-in-ponzi-scheme.

123 Ward, "Talented Mr. Epstein."

124 Brian Pascus and Mola Lenghi, "Jeffrey Epstein Worked at Financial Firm That Engaged in Massive Ponzi Scheme in 1980s and 1990s," *CBS News*, August 13, 2019, https://www.cbsnews.com/news/jeffrey-epstein-worked-at-towers-financial-with-stephen-hoffenberg-who-committed-ponzi-scheme-crimes/.

125 Gasparino, "The Woes of Jeffrey Epstein."

126 Briquelet and Connor, "Ponzi Scheme Victims,"; Szall, "Epstein's Mentor."

127 Fischer and O'Connell, "Final Evasion."

128 Pascus and Lenghi, "Jeffrey Epstein Worked at Financial Firm."

129 "Towers Financial Figures Charged," *New York Times*, April 17, 1997, https://www.nytimes.com/1997/04/17/business/towers-financial-figures-charged.html.

130 Diana B. Henriques, "Hoffenberg Confesses to Ponzi Scheme," *New York Times*, April 21, 1995, https://www.nytimes.com/1995/04/21/business/hoffenberg-confesses-to-ponzi-scheme.html.

131 Dow Jones, "Hoffenberg Gets A Delay Again," *New York Times*, May 23, 1996, https://www.nytimes.com/1996/05/23/business/hoffenberg-gets-a-delay-again.html; Leslie Eaton, "Judge Planning Severe Sentence For Hoffenberg In Fraud Case," *New York Times*, March 6, 1997, https://www.nytimes.com/1997/03/06/business/judge-planning-severe-sentence-for-hoffenberg-in-fraud-case.html.

132 Herron and McCoy, "Private Island to Private Jet,"; Briquelet and Connor, "Ponzi Scheme Victims."

133 Herron and McCoy, "Private Island to Private Jet."

134 Briquelet and Connor, "Ponzi Scheme Victims,"; Fischer and O'Connell, "Final Evasion."

135 Edward Jay Epstein, "My Tea with Jeffrey Epstein," *Airmail*, September 14, 2019, https://airmail.news/issues/2019-9-14/my-tea-with-jeffrey-epstein.

136 Angela Wang, "Billionaires Carl Icahn and John Catsimatidis Appear in Jeffrey Epstein's 1997 Address Book," *Business Insider*, July 8, 2021, https://www.businessinsider.com/carl-icahn-john-catsimatidis-jeffrey-epsteins-address-book-2021-6.

137 Years later in 2002, Epstein would later take a suspect series flights on his plane, the so-called "Lolita Express", along with Bill Clinton that included a visit with the Sultan of Brunei. That flight is discussed in Chapter 19.

CHAPTER 12

THE PROPERTY DEVELOPER

THE GOULETAS' REAL ESTATE EMPIRE

The real estate empire of the Gouletas clan – brothers Victor and Nicholas, and sister Evangeline – was a vast, interlocking enterprise composed of multiple layers of ownership, comprised of firms nestled within holding companies and with tendrils that spread out from its capital city of Chicago and spanned from New York City to San Diego.

Each of the Gouletas, through individually-owned firms, were the shareholders in Ambelos Corp., the 100% owner of their flagship company, American Invesco Corp. There was also Tamco Holding Co., another company owned by the family. More specifically, this was a holding company that controlled Tamco Industries Inc. American Invesco would pour its money into Tamco, in order to both finance the company's operations – which consisted mainly of acquiring other companies, in an embrace of the wild corporate takeover culture of the 1980s – and to protect the Gouletas' wealth from the creditors that so often dogged Invesco.

It's actually something of a mystery where the Gouletas' wealth came from in the first place. Newspaper records show that, in the early 1970s, American Invesco peddled apartments, and then condominiums, but the units that they offered were unremarkable. Then, suddenly, sometime between 1976 and 1978, their fortunes exploded. The Gouletas became *the* source of condominiums in Chicago, and American Invesco was turning millions upon millions over in annual profit.

One explanation that has been offered for this sudden change was that the Gouletas were backed by Greek shipping money, particularly that of Aristotle Onassis. These rumors were fueled by American Invesco's interest in purchasing half of New York's Olympic Tower, which had been developed and co-owned by Onassis.[1] Another was that their coffers were flush with money from the Middle East. This notion arose because one of Invesco's partners was the J.P. Construction Company, which specialized in construction projects in that particular region.

Another, perhaps more likely although ultimately unproven, allegation is that the Gouletas were fronting for organized crime interests. *Fortune* magazine, in 1981, alluded to an "anonymous report received … by Congressman Benjamin Rosenthal, chairman of the House subcommittee on commerce, consumer, and monetary affairs" that "traced American Invesco's seed money back to Greek mobsters in Chicago."[2] There was also the issue of a "confidential intelligence bulletin, issued in 1978 by the Los Angeles County district attorney" that raised the possibility that American Invesco was tied to "Briar Management Co., 'a vehicle for organized crime infiltration of Chicago real estate.'"[3]

Other hints of potential organized crime connections can be found among some of American Invesco's management. A long-time president of the company was Douglas Crocker II, who, by the time he linked up with the Gouletas, had amassed a serious track record in the high-stakes real estate game. According to a 1987 issue of the *Chicago Tribune,* one of Crocker's early business partners was Sam Zell, another wizard in the Chicago real estate scene who, like Ronald Lauder, is a major funder of the intelligence-connected IDC Herzliya. The same article describes another "partner in some of those early ventures" as being Burton Kanter – the mob-linked attorney who joined together with CIA banker Paul Helliwell to form management Castle Bank & Trust, the offshore hot money vortex located in Grand Bahamas' Freeport (see chapter 1).[4] In 1976, Kanter, Zell, and two other associates were charged with having used Castle Bank accounts to evade taxes on the sale of a Reno, Nevada, apartment complex that the group – along with other principals, such as Florida senator George Smathers (who had boasted of his own ties to organized crime) – had purchased in 1969.[5]

In 1983, the Gouletas decided to break into the savings and loan game. Through Tamco, they purchased Imperial Corp., a holding company that controlled Imperial Savings and Loan. Imperial controlled numerous thrifts scattered across the United States – at one point, these totalled 40 different institutions with $6.8 billion in assets.[6] The holding company had fallen under the control of Saul Steinberg, the corporate raider, friend of Michael Milken, and eager client of the Drexel Burnham Lambert junk bond pipeline. Shortly thereafter, "he split Imperial Corp's S & L operations into two entities, Imperial Savings in San Diego and Gibraltar Savings in Texas."[7] Gibraltar passed through a chain of owners before finally ending up in the hands of Ronald Perelman, another participant in the Milken junk bond universe. Twenty-five percent of Imperial was then bought by Tamco.

In keeping with tradition, Imperial under the control of the Gouletas saw its portfolio swell with Drexel Burnham Lambert junk bonds. It also tapped other Milken clients for financing. Among these was Fred Carr's First Executive Corp, which, by 1990, owned nearly $10 billion worth of debt sold through Drexel. First

Executive went insolvent in 1991 and was taken over by the State of California. This followed Imperial's own spectacular collapse at the end of 1990. In all likelihood, the two collapses were intertwined, as the run-up to their parallel breakdowns was characterized by highly irregular business activities that appear to have indicated a large-scale case of stock manipulation.

Those "irregularities" played out as follows: by 1987, the thrift industry as a whole was destabilizing, and a massive cascade of failures was well under way. In late summer, the Gouletas defaulted on a massive loan from First Executive. While Tamco still owned a big chunk of the company, majority ownership was edged out by Fred Carr's insurance firm. Yet, by October, the markets were in turmoil, and the stock price of Imperial was plummeting. It was at this point that strange moves began to be made. As Peter Brewton writes, "who should come to the rescue – none other than Larry Mizel's M.D.C. Holdings, another one of Milken's big clients." (M.D.C. had "raised more than $700 million from Drexel junk bonds.")[8]

M.D.C. – which continues to exist today – was a major development company with a slew of subsidiaries that specialized in things like home construction. Brewton points out that the manager for Mizel's various investment trusts was Calvin Eisenberg, formerly of Burton Kanter's law firm.[9] Given the ties between Invesco manager Douglas Crocker and Kanter's circle, it appears that there was a shared social network or *milieu*, where the worlds of real estate, organized crime, and intelligence intersected in Chicago.

The way that M.D.C. "saved the day" was by buying, between November 1987 and February 1988, massive shares of Imperial, causing the stock price to rise from $7.50 to $12.50. Then, between June and September of 1988, the company sold off all its stock for "nominal gain."[10]

M.D.C.'s timing was auspicious. In October 1988, regulators opened an investigation into a potential "daisy chain" operation involving M.D.C., Silverado Savings in Colorado, Charles Keating's Lincoln Savings in California, San Jacinto Savings in Dallas, and its parent company Southmark – a "vulture capitalist" institution that feasted on the remains of dead thrifts.[11] Daisy chains made the illusion of liquidity where it may actually have been scarce, and entailed a network of financial institutions making loans to one another, swapping stock and flipping properties among themselves. These complex wranglings were also deployed by Milken to circulate junk bonds, by making them look more attractive. With that in mind, it's not surprising at all that when the regulators were looking at this specific cluster of entities, “particular interest was whether securities had been ‘parked’ at the insured institutions by Drexel Burnham and other brokers.”[12]

There were close ties between all of these institutions. Charles Keating of Lincoln was a major Drexel Burnham client, while Southmark was “the largest estate-based conglomerate financed by Milken.”[13] Over at Silverado Savings, Colorado attorney Norman Brownstein, who also did legal work on behalf of Larry Mizel and M.D.C., had a position on the board. Brownstein was also reportedly a co-trustee for some of Mizel’s investment trusts, alongside the aforementioned Calvin Eisenberg.[14]

Brownstein had other clients of interest. There was “Ohio shopping center magnate Edward DeBartolo,” and – importantly – American Invesco. DeBartolo’s considerable ties to both organized crime and Leslie Wexner are discussed in the next chapter. The Gouletas’ ties to this “daisy chain” didn’t stop there, however. Serving as president of Southmark and vice president and chief loan officer of its subsidiary, San Jacinto Savings, was Joseph Grosz – formerly of American Invesco, where he had served under Douglas Crocker.[15]

Given the ties between all the individuals involved and the way that the events overlapped at the time, it seems very likely that M.D.C.’s pump and dump of Imperial stock was connected directly to the “daisy chain” operations between M.D.C., Lincoln, Silverado, and Southmark.

ALLAN TESSLER: THE GOULETAS' ATTORNEY

As Imperial was nearing collapse, Allan R. Tessler, the Gouletas family's attorney and board member at a number of their enterprises, was briefly appointed CEO of the thrift combine. His goal was to restructure the organization, salvage its finances, and get it up and running again. In this task, Tessler failed. It is a black spot on his long career, which has included some curious connections.

Tessler was a mergers and acquisitions specialist from the New York City law firm Shea & Gould. The firm's partners and clients were prominent. They had, for example, represented Carmine de Sapio, the last boss of the Tammany Hall political machine, close associate of mobsters like Frank Costello as well as a close personal friend of Roy Cohn. One of the firm's partners was Thomas A. Macioce, brought in by the Vatican in 1989 to help clean up its scandal-ridden bank.[16] Macioce, who chaired Allied Stores, was also on the board of Capital Cities, which took over the American Broadcasting Corporation (ABC) in 1985. There he had served alongside William Casey, who worked for the company between 1976 and 1981, at which point Casey became director of the CIA.[17] Casey continued to hold a significant amount of stock in Capital Cities well into his tenure as CIA director.[18]

This wasn't Casey's only connection to Shea & Gould. Milton Gould, the firm's co-founder and senior partner, was Casey's friend and lifelong attorney. It's fair to say that Shea & Gould wouldn't even have existed if it weren't for Casey, as he had introduced Gould and his fellow co-founder William Shea to one another sometime in the 1960s.[19]

It isn't clear exactly when Tessler became counsel to the Gouletas, but it was certainly prior to their acquisition of Imperial, and probably dated back to the late 1970s, right around the time that the family's wealth began to rapidly expand.

Throughout this same period, Tessler had another important client: Dr. Earl W. Brian, the Ronald Reagan crony and one of the main architects of the PROMIS software bugging and related scandals (see chapter 9). Brian was also head of the venture capital firm Infotechnology. In 1990, Infotechnology was teetering on the brink of collapse, with cash flow problems tearing the company apart. Tessler, in a move that directly paralleled his actions at Imperial not even a year prior, became

Infotechnology's co-CEO, with a mandate for a corporate restructuring that entailed selling off subsidiary firms, among other things.[20]

By his own admission, Tessler had been involved with Brian's business affairs since around 1977. This aligned with Brian's time as president of a technology firm called Xonics – and more specifically, with an SEC law-suit against the company for, among other things, artificially manipulating its stock price to raise money for acquisitions. Xonics managed to limp on for several years before it finally collapsed, at which point Brian took control of a subsidiary company called Hadron. As noted in chapter 9, it was Brian, operating through Hadron, who attempted to acquire the PROMIS software from William Hamilton's Inslaw on behalf of the Department of Justice, and he, as well as Hadron, remained deeply tied to the events that surrounded the software's eventual theft and illicit use by intelligence agencies.

Tessler himself makes a brief appearance in the annals of the "Inslaw Affair" itself. William Hamilton of Inslaw Inc. charged that a venture capital firm called 53rd Street Ventures, which held a stake in Inslaw, was party to the Hadron-DOJ conspiracy to acquire PROMIS. An affidavit by Hamilton states that 53rd Street's founder and owner, Daniel Tessler, was "a relative of Alan [sic] Tessler, the senior partner in the New York City law firm of Shea and Gould responsible for Brian and Hadron's mergers and acquisitions work."[21] Daniel Tessler's wife, Patricia Cloherty, was reported to have told an officer at Hambro International Bank that she "'knew all about' Brian's role in the INSLAW matter." The report of special counsel Nicholas J. Bua – a dismissal of Hamilton and Inslaw's allegations – says that Daniel Tessler met with Inslaw concerning potential investments into the company on behalf of another investor in the company, Hambro International. He further denied that he was related to Allan Tessler and that he or his wife knew Earl Brian.

In the "Rebuttal of the Bua Report", drafted by Hamilton's lawyers, it is pointed out that Daniel's statement concerning his and wife's unfamiliarity with Brian was unlikely to be true: Cloherty served alongside Brian on the board of National Association of Small Business Investment Companies in 1980.[22] The question of a family relation between Daniel and Allan Tessler is not mentioned, however.

As detailed in chapter 9, the CIA's modification of the PROMIS software was alleged to have taken place at the Cabazon Indian Reservation in Indio, California.

Cabazon, at this point, was under the dominion of a mobster (and possible CIA asset) named John Nichols, who had managed to take control of the reservation from the tribal government after becoming the manager of a bingo hall – and projected casino project – at the reservation. Between 1981 and 1983, Nichols and his partner G. Wayne Reeder, a land developer of ill repute, steered Cabazon into a joint venture with the Wackenhut Corporation and several smaller companies. The multifaceted plan – which never came to full fruition, despite a surprising number of dead bodies turning up along the way – included a scheme for an arms research, development, and manufacturing plant. It seems that the weapons made at Cabazon were to be deployed into the different theatres of the Reagan administration's various covert wars. For instance, as previously mentioned, it is a matter of record that representatives of the Contras attended a meeting at Cabazon to observe a weapons demonstration.

According to a Riverside, California, district attorney intelligence report that was later made available to Inslaw, that meeting took place in September 1981, *before* the consolidation of the Contra-support apparatus. It was attended by two Contra generals, representatives from the Cabazon tribal government, and the president of the weapons company Armtech. Also in attendance were Earl Brian and Wayne Reeder. According to the report, the pair "arrived together in a 1981 White Rolls Royce, License Plate 2XG2302."[23]

The connection between Brian and Reeder is Brian's second connection, following his relationship with Tessler, to the world of savings and loans. Reeder was a prolific borrower from Silverado Savings. For instance, later, when the thrift was near collapse, one of Reeder's companies defaulted on a $14 million loan. He was also affiliated with Herman Bee-be, the king of bad S & Ls that had a long list of mob and intelligence ties stretching back to the 1960s, if not earlier.[24] A 1985 report by the Comptroller of the Currency on Beebe's banking and insurance empire listed San Jacinto Savings – a key node in the S & L "daisy chain" that involved the Gouletas, M.D.C., Lincoln, and Silverado – as an institution under his control.[25] Beebe's pernicious influence could also be felt at the parent company, Southmark. "The company's 1985 10-L showed that Herman Beebe held nearly 62% of Southmark's Series E Preferred Stock."[26]

To return briefly for a moment to Tessler, in 1987 he joined the board of Leslie Wexner's company The Limited.[27] This is the same year that Epstein officially entered Wexner's inner circle by becoming his financial advisor and the same year that he began sharing an office with Evangeline Gouletas. Tessler remained at The Limited for some time, and by the mid-late 1990s, he became chairman of the company's finance committee. Thus, Tessler would have come into contact with Epstein at some point – and indeed, Tessler appears in Epstein's contact book, with two addresses and four different phone numbers listed. Among the numbers was Tessler's line at Data Broadcasting Corp – an "electronic news summary" company that had been acquired by Earl Brian's Infotechnology in 1987.

THE GOULETAS IN NEW YORK, PART I: HUGH CAREY'S WORLD

In 1982, just as the Gouletas' adventures in the wild world of savings and loans were just getting started, Evangeline Gouletas left Chicago for New York. The reason was marriage: she had married New York governor Hugh Carey, just three months after meeting him. Evangeline's surname was then changed to Gouletas-Carey and, even though the marriage wouldn't last, the name-change would. The exact circumstances through which Hugh and Evangeline met remains unknown, but one possibility is a mutual relationship to the law firm of Shea & Gould. Carey himself would later be a veteran of the firm, and had long counted Shea as a close, personal friend.[28] Shea's protégé—and NYC governmental law specialist at Shea & Gould – Kevin McGrath worked on Carey's 1974 and 1978 gubernatorial campaigns.[29]

Carey surrounded himself with other curious individuals. One of these was Arthur D. Emil, an attorney from Surrey & Morse – the law firm of Walter Surrey, the OSS alumni who had helped set up the World Finance Corporation. Emil had served as the treasurer for Friends of Governor Carey, Hugh Carey's campaign finance vehicle during the 1978 campaign season. In 1979, he was mentioned in a *New York Times* article on the allegations that Anthony M. Scotto – head of the International Longshoremen's Association Local 1814 and a racketeer for the Gambino crime family – had provided large sums to both Mario Cuomo and Carey.[30] "Around this time," Peter Brewton writes, "Edgar Bronfman allegedly made a $350,000 loan to Carey to help pay off a campaign debt."[31]

The nexus around Governor Carey wasn't the only place where Arthur Emil and Edgar Bronfman could be found together. In the 1980s, both served on the board of the Gulfstream Land & Development Corp, a major Florida real estate concern, with Bronfman serving as chairman.[32] In 1986, Gulfstream was purchased by a real estate developer named Kenneth M. Good, using $250 million he had borrowed from a variety of sources. "This included $70 million of the usual junk bonds and $90 million from major East Coast banks and the rest from a group of mostly Florida savings and loans".[33] Also telling is the man then serving as Good's attorney: Norman Brownstein, the same lawyer who sat on the board of

Silverado, and had represented M.D.C., Edward DeBartolo, and the Gouletas' American Invesco. After Gulfstream was acquired, Good put two new individuals on the board. One was Brownstein, and the other was Brownstein's fellow Silverado director, Neil Bush, the brother of then-Vice President George H.W. Bush.

When Silverado finally collapsed, the blame was placed on Good and one of his business associates, Bill Walters. The pair not only "walked away from more than $132 million in bad debts" – both were investors in JNB Exploration, an oil company formed by Neil Bush in 1983.[34] Remarkably, Bush had invested a mere $100 into the company, while Good and Walters put in $160,000 and a bank Walters controlled issued JNB a $1.75 million line of credit.[35] It was two years after this operation was up and running that Bush arrived at Silverado, with the S&L subsequently issuing multi-million dollar loans to Good and Walters. Real estate developments and other investments across the country were the recipients of this money.

Were the Silverado shenanigans that ensnared Bush, Brownstein, Walters, and Good just a case of cronyism when it came to lending practices, or was there something else going on? The problem with suspect S&L lending during this period is that, without having a full picture of where the money was coming from, it becomes more difficult to see the significance of where it was going. In cases where this full picture has been developed, it becomes clear that the flow of money was often related to broader money laundering networks that involved organized crime and intelligence services. Then, there was the junk bond-related "daisy chain" that Silverado was engaged with, and that involved M.D.C., the Gouletas, and Keating, in this same period. Money from this network could have been siphoned out into Walters and Good's various operations.

There is a possibility that paints Silverado's lending activities in a darker light, and which might be relevant to the daisy chain operation as a whole. Silverado had appeared in Operation Polar Cap, a major DEA investigation into Medellin cartel money laundering networks in the US.[36] Culminating at the end of the 1980s, Polar Cap involved revelations around "La Mina" or "The Mine," a triangular formation linking banks, jewelers, and precious metals dealers in Florida, New York City, and Los Angeles. One informant described the objectives of "La Mina" as:

> …the exploitation of legitimate gold mines for the purposes of laundering illegitimate monies. This involved linking up with and taking control of gold mines in Peru, Venezuela, Chile, Uruguay, etc., of gaining access to US gold refineries and jewelry stores, and of amalgamating money generated through legitimate gold sales with drug money to conceal its origin. Some of the money was reinvested by the cartel to fund the operation. Laundered drug money paid for airplanes and boats in the United States, and bought coca paste in Bolivia and Peru. Later, accounts in Banco de Occidente and BCCI were identified by the US and the Canadian RCMP as having been used to purchase aircraft used to ferry drugs. The RCMP also identified a number of cartel operatives and airplane manufacturers and fixed-based operators (FBO) such as Aviel in Colombia, Eagle Air in Memphis, and Downtown Air, in Oklahoma City.[37]

The details of Silverado's connection to La Mina and/or to related money laundering operations are unknown, but there are several reasons to consider the possibility that cartel money laundering was key to this network:

- While BCCI accounts were directly used by the cartels, other banks in the wider BCCI network were also deployed. Among these was Independence Bank in LA, which was owned by BCCI frontman Ghaith Pharaon.[38] Pharaon also owned an S&L in Florida called CenTrust, which did extensive business with both Keating and Milken's Drexel Burnham Lambert.[39]
- Neil Bush's brother, Jeb Bush, was close to a major Florida GOP activist and fundraiser named Leonel Martinez. Ostensibly a prominent construction magnate, Martinez was involved in the trafficking of cocaine and marijuana into Florida from Colombia and elsewhere.[40] Both Martinez and Jeb were boosters of the Contras, and Martinez was particularly close to Eden Pastora – the same Eden Pastora who appeared at Cabazon in the company of Earl Brian and Silverado borrower Wayne Reeder.
- According to Cheri Seymour, the final leg of Danny Casolaro's investigation was into connections between his "Octopus" and cartel money laundering, with a focus on Michael Abbell, a high-ranking DOJ official-turned-cartel attorney. The cartel in that case, however, was the Cali Cartel, and not the Medellin cartel.[41]

- One of the New York City banks utilized by Medellin's money laundering networks that was turned up by Polar Cap was Republic National Bank. Robert Owen, Oliver North's primary liaison to the Contras, utilized an officer at Republic National Bank named Nan Morabia as a courier.[42] The founder and owner of Republic National was Edmond Safra, as noted in chapter 7. According to Gordon Thomas, and as previously noted in chapters 7 and 9, Safra was a close friend of Robert Maxwell and allowed Maxwell-linked crime syndicates to move money through his bank.[43] Safra's name, address, and number can also be found inside Epstein's contact book.

THE GOULETAS IN NEW YORK, PART II: IMB CAPITAL

In 1985, Evangeline Gouletas-Carey oversaw the relocation of Tamco's merchant banking subsidiary, IMB Capital, to New York City, and also became the family member tasked with overseeing its operations. That same year, IMB Capital, working through a front called 457 Corp, acquired Electronic Realty Associates Inc. (ERA) from its "financially-troubled" parent company, Control Data Corp.[44] Part and parcel of this acquisition was a software program that had been developed for ERA and was called Remote Mortgage Origination (RMO) – "a computerized prequalification, origination, loan tracking, process, and underwriting network."[45] RMO had been developed by an "affiliate" of ERA, the Commercial Credit Mortgage Company; a perusal of newspaper archives and other records shows that Commercial Credit often worked with various savings and loan associations.

Control Data Corp, previously discussed in connection with PROMIS, the World Bank and technology transfer in chapter 9, was a long time defense contractor that was started by a team of engineers dedicated to developing code-breaking technology. It was historically close to the Navy, and supplied this branch of the Armed Forces with super computers. Later, in the 1960s, it began to acquire various technology-oriented firms that were less directly connected to the national security state. In 1976, they hired one of Edwin Wilson's companies – possibly Consultants International, where Robert Keith Gray served on the board – in an advisory capacity. Notably, this would have taken place prior to the shutdown of the Navy's Task Force 157, where Wilson was working. In addition, Wilson apparently bugged the offices of the Army Materiel Command on behalf of the Control Data Corp in order to "get inside information on the Army's bidding and procurement plans."[46]

The address for the New York City corporate headquarters of IMB Capital was 457 Madison Ave – the location of the Villard Houses, where Gouletas-Carey shared an office with Jeffrey Epstein.[47] This suggests that the shared office of Gouletas-Carey and Epstein was, in fact, also the offices of IMB Capital, thus hinting at possible ties between Epstein and the firm.

DONALD TRUMP, THE REAL ESTATE MOGUL, AND JEFFREY EPSTEIN, THE "PROPERTY DEVELOPER"

The year 1987 was a pivotal year for Epstein, as it was the year he not only became involved with Hoffenberg and the Gouletas, but also with Donald Trump and Leslie Wexner. Both Trump and Wexner, at the time, were deeply involved in the worlds of New York real estate, as were the Gouletas. It was during this period that Epstein would begin branding himself a "property developer" and become focused on real estate deals, with numerous media reports referring to Epstein as "a property developer" well into the 2000s.[48]

However, it seems that Epstein's involvement with real estate may have been a new means of disguising his old financial tricks, as many of his real estate transactions during this period involved the sale of the same property multiple times, all for miniscule sums, including for as low as $1. Another property under his control he had mysteriously obtained from the US State Department. The specifics of Epstein's real estate involvement were intimately interwoven into his relationship with Leslie Wexner, whose connections and ties to organized crime are dealt with specifically in the next two chapters.

Commercial real estate in the US has a long history of being used to launder money, and the practice is particularly common in specific American real estate markets, like New York City and Palm Beach, Florida.[49] These are notably two places where Epstein, as well as Trump, have long been active in property markets. Trump and his inner circle, including the family of his son-in-law Jared Kushner, have long been accused of both permitting or engaging in money laundering in connection with their real estate interests, particularly in New York.[50] Much of the money laundering accusations that would later dog Trump during his political career revolved around his alleged cooperation with Russian mobsters whereby those mobsters used Trump properties to launder their ill-gotten gains.

However, while some in the mainstream press misleadingly painted this Russian mobster-connection as meaning that Trump was "owned" by Vladimir Putin, it is important to note that the Russian mobsters in question tied back to Russian mob boss Semion Mogilevich. As noted in Chapter 9, Mogilevich was a major business partner of Robert Maxwell and a key fixture in the global criminal syndicate that Maxwell had helped create at the end of the 1980s. Thus, the connections point more to money laundering on behalf of a Maxwell-connected criminal enterprise that encompassed Eastern European/Russian organized crime than one necessarily tied to the current Russian government. Trump very much appeared to exist in the Robert Maxwell orbit, having been photographed attending parties in the late 1980s hosted by the media baron/intelligence asset on his yacht, the *Lady Ghislaine*.[51] His connections to such circles is also evident given his relationship with Jeffrey Epstein as well as Epstein's "girlfriend" Ghislaine Maxwell.

As previously mentioned, Epstein is known to have met Trump in 1987. It is unclear exactly how the two men met, but it may have been through Epstein's relationship with Steve Hoffenberg, which was established that same year. Hoffenberg would later tell the *Washington Post* that, during this period, "Donald's crowd was my crowd."[52] He is also known to have rented a floor in Trump Tower before his arrest.[53]

In 1988, Trump purchased the Plaza Hotel, once the site of sexual blackmail "parties" involving minors that had intimately involved Roy Cohn and were first discussed in chapter 2. Cohn was not only Trump's lawyer, but his mentor and friend, and the two men regularly partied together. Cohn's former switchboard operator Christine Seymour claimed that, prior to Cohn's 1986 death, Trump called Cohn regularly, "up to five times a day."[54] Cohn is also alleged to have aided the judicial career of Trump's sister, Maryanne Trump Barry.[55]

After purchasing the Plaza Hotel, it would be reported and confirmed by then-attendees that Trump "used to host parties in suites at the Plaza Hotel when he owned it, where young women and girls were introduced to older, richer men" and "illegal drugs and young women were passed around and used."[56]

Andy Lucchesi, a male model who had helped organize some of these Plaza Hotel parties for Trump, said the following when asked about the age of the women present: "A lot of girls, 14, look 24. That's as juicy as I can get. I never asked how old they were; I just partook. I did partake in activities that would be controversial, too."[57]

Some authors, such as Michael Wolff, have alleged that, during the late 1980s and early 1990s, Trump and Epstein, along with Tom Barrack, were a "set of nightlife Musketeers" who frequently partied together.[58] Barrack, founder and CEO of Colony Capital, was also a major player in real estate and subsequently played a key role in Trump's later political career. During this same period, in 1990, Epstein bought a home in Palm Beach, making him Trump's neighbor. This suggests that – at the very least – the two men became even better acquainted after that purchase.

Other evidence for the early partying days of Trump and Epstein later emerged with a video recording of the two men chatting and laughing while pointing at women during a Mar-a-Lago party held in 1992.[59] It certainly appears from the video that the two men were well acquainted. There are several other occasions where Trump was photographed alongside Ghislaine Maxwell during the 1990s.

There are also other allegations, such as those made by Florida businessman George Houraney. He told the *New York Times* that, in 1992, he organized an exclusive, "calendar girl" competition that was only attended by Trump and Epstein. Houraney claims that he flew in about 28 women for the event, at Trump's request. Houraney claimed to know Epstein "really well" and subsequently declined to host more events involving Epstein at Trump's request.[60] Some, however, have accused Houraney's allegations as being politically motivated and possibly inaccurate, as he had accused Trump of inappropriate behavior toward his girlfriend and business partner shortly before the 2016 presidential election.

The relationship with Trump would continue for some time, with Trump flying on Epstein's plane in 1997 and the two men being photographed together at a Victoria's Secret party that same year. A year later, Epstein had claimed to have introduced Trump to his current wife, Melania, at an event during New York fashion week. They would attend other parties together, including an event in 2000 hosted by media baron and convicted fraudster Conrad Black, who appears in Epstein's book of contacts.

Also, in 2000, Epstein, Maxwell, and Prince Andrew attended a celebrity tennis tournament at Mar-a-Lago, where Trump and the Prince took pictures together.[61] Mar-a-Lago would figure prominently as a place of socialization for Epstein and Maxwell, as well as a place where they recruited minors into their sexual blackmail/sex trafficking operations, with the most well-known of these being Virginia Roberts (now Virginia Giuffre). However, the Trump Organization has claimed that Epstein was not a dues-paying member of the club. Trump is also present in Epstein's contact book with several numbers listed; Melania Trump is also listed among his contacts.[62]

In 2002 and 2003, Trump was still in Epstein's good graces, attending several of his dinner parties in Palm Beach as well as in Manhattan.[63] At one 2003 dinner at his Upper East Side home, other attendees besides Epstein and Trump included Google co-founder Sergey Brin, Leslie Wexner, controversial British political operative Peter Mandelson, and Bill Clinton aide Doug Band.[64] In 2002, *New York Magazine* quoted Trump as saying the following about Epstein: "I've known Jeff for fifteen years. Terrific guy […] He's a lot of fun to be with. It is even said that he likes beautiful women as much as I do, and many of them are on the younger side. No doubt about it – Jeffrey enjoys his social life."[65]

However, in 2004, the two men had a falling out, reportedly over their rivalry to purchase a Palm Beach property called Maison de l'Amitie that was being sold out of bankruptcy. Trump, for his part, declined to publicly state exactly why their friendship ended, saying that "the reason doesn't make any difference, frankly" and that what mattered is that the relationship had ended well over a decade before his political career and prior to Epstein's arrests.[66] Years later, lawyer Brad Edwards, who has represented victims of Epstein's, said that, in 2009, Trump was very cooperative in providing information about Epstein for the cases against him.[67]

Some, such as Steve Hoffenberg, have alleged that – in the early days – Trump was not only close to Epstein, but was arguably even closer to Ghislaine Maxwell.[68] After Epstein's 2019 arrest, Trump attempted to distance himself even further from Epstein, saying he was "not a fan" of the then-jailed billionaire. However, when Ghislaine was arrested roughly a year later, Trump publicly offered her well wishes instead of aiming to distance himself from her as he had with Epstein. This is despite the charges she was then facing, all of which pertained to sex trafficking of minors in connection with Epstein.[69]

EPSTEIN'S REAL ESTATE WEB

According to a Columbus, Ohio police document from the early 1990s, numerous Wexner-linked entities, like the Wexner Investment Company, SNJC Holdings, and PFI Leasing, shared the same office space and telephone numbers.[70] That document, part of a murder investigation detailed extensively in the next chapter, also noted that this office was on the same floor as Wexner's New Albany real estate project and the offices of New Albany's co-founder Jack Kessler. One of the companies that shared this space was originally named Lewex and was later renamed Parkview Financial.

Records from 1990 list Leslie Wexner as Parkview's director and president whereas Epstein is listed as vice president and treasurer. Records from 1987 show that the role of vice president had previously been occupied by Harold Levin, Wexner's money manager before Epstein took over that role.

This specific office space shared by all of these entities was located on the 37th floor of the Huntington Center, located at 41 South High Street, Columbus, Ohio. Beginning in 1982, the Huntington Center was largely controlled by the business interests of Gerald D. Hines, a Houston-based real estate developer and chairman of the Federal Reserve Bank of Dallas from 1981 to 1983. Hines's other notable real estate projects include Houston's Galleria, which was discussed in chapter 7 as money from the Marcos family was invested into that particular project and Adnan Khashoggi, who was also involved with Marcos family finances, had suspect real estate dealings immediately adjacent to the Galleria. Another notable Hines project was Pennzoil Place in Houston, which leased space to the Bush family-connected companies, Pennzoil and Zapata Petroleum.

Hines had also been an investor in Houston's "Fantasy Island" project alongside Walter Mischer, whose connections to George H.W. Bush were discussed in chapter 6.[71] There, it was also mentioned that Mischer may have played a role in Bush's own private intelligence network and that Mischer's son-in-law, Robert Corson, had been connected to both American and Israeli intelligence.

Another investor in "Fantasy Island" alongside Hines and Mischer was Joe Russo, a close associate of both Bush and Mischer. Russo was also connected to the suspect S & L Lamar Savings, which had alleged connections to Israeli intelligence and Adnan Khashoggi, as noted in chapter 7. Russo, incidentally, was also a "minority owner" of the media outlet UPI at the time that a company controlled by Earl Brian, one of the architects of the PROMIS scandal, took control of the outlet. Russo, on Brian's role in acquiring UPI, told the *Houston Post* "He [Brian] knows what he is doing."[72]

It is unknown if there were any direct interactions between Hines and Wexner aside from Wexner-controlled companies leasing office space from Hines's Huntington Center. However, it is interesting that many of Wexner's business entities, particularly those flagged by Columbus police as part of a murder investigation, leased office space from a man whose other ventures were enmeshed with Mischer, the Bush family, Khashoggi and other intelligence-linked entities, particularly when one considers Epstein's own intelligence connections and his intimate involvement, from 1987 on, in several of these specific companies.

Parkview Financial, following the Shapiro murder, became a key vehicle for Wexner's, and later Epstein's, role in real estate, specifically in New York City. However, Wexner's interest in Manhattan real estate pre-dated his relationship with Epstein, as – by 1985 – he had already acquired the Gurney House on East 74th Street for $5.8 million and was cited by *New York Magazine* that year as already owning "small chunks of New York" at the time.[73]

Once Epstein became Wexner's financial advisor, Parkview Financial continued to expand Wexner's real estate holdings in the metropolis by scooping up a condominium complex in Queens called Dara Gardens. The financing for this purchase was arranged by Dime Savings Bank of New York – one of the largest S & Ls in the state.[74]

During this time, Dime Savings was one of many savings and loans that "had extended themselves too far, making real estate loans to questionable borrowers."[75] When the S & L crisis erupted, Dime was "left with huge losses on some 1500 defaulted mortgages," but avoided collapse, largely thanks to the bank's top executive at the time – Richard Parsons, a lawyer and former aide to Nelson Rockefeller.[76] As a lawyer, Parsons' clients had included "members of the Rockefeller family and Estee Lauder among others." In 1991, Parsons was recommended to Time Warner CEO Steve Ross, a fixture on Robert Maxwell yacht parties with past ties to organized crime, by Laurance Rockefeller. He joined Time Warner's board and later became the company's CEO.[77]

Once Wexner's business interests had taken over Dara Gardens, it was revamped and financially managed by Imperial Properties, the president of which was Myles J. Horn.[78] A few years later, in 1994, Horn was reported to be the owner of the company HSI Inc. and was arrested after attempting to bribe the Trump-owned Taj Mahal casino to recover a lost contract. Horn had mistakenly offered the bribe to an undercover police officer.[79] This may indicate that Horn, like some other Wexner-connected businessmen from this period (e.g. Frank Walsh, see the next chapter), had a tendency to engage in illegal activity prior to his 1994 arrest and at a time when he was actively involved in managing Wexner properties.

In May 1991, Dara Partners L.P. was created, apparently to manage the condominium complex. The filing lists Ossa Properties as the owner, with offices at 457 Madison Avenue, the very place where Epstein and the Gouletas shared offices.[80] The same day that Dara Partners was created, Ossa also created 301 66th Street East Acquisition Partners, L.P.[81] Jeffrey Epstein's brother, Mark Epstein, has been the owner of Ossa Properties for several years, and has denied that the company had any connection to his brother whatsoever. This is despite the fact that documentation exists listing Ossa Properties as an "affiliate" of Epstein's company J. Epstein & Co.[82]

However, Ossa Properties appears to have been originally founded by Anthony Barrett. Barrett, in 1987, had founded 301/66 Owners Corp, which owned 301 East 66th Street and was listed as an "affiliate" of Ossa Properties.[83] During the time these entities were controlled by Ossa, Myles Horn and Imperial Properties were tapped to carry out a conversion on this same property, just as they had done with Dara Gardens.[84] There is a possibility that Imperial Properties was connected to the Gouletas family, as the Gouletas had several other companies called "Imperial" and the Gouletas also shared the office space assigned to Ossa Properties in these filings, not only with Ossa, but with Jeffrey Epstein.

Those apartments at 301 East 66th Street would play a role in Epstein's sexual trafficking and blackmail activities. For instance, Ehud Barak, former Israeli Prime Minister and Israeli military intelligence chief, was a frequent visitor to this location, so much so that *The Daily Beast* reported that numerous residents of this Ossa Properties-owned apartment building "had seen Barak in the building multiple times over the last few years, and nearly half a dozen more described running into his security detail."[85] *The Daily Beast* report also noted that "the building is majority-owned by Epstein's younger brother, Mark, and has been tied to the financier's alleged New York trafficking ring."[86] Specifically, several apartments in the building were "being used to house underage girls from South America, Europe, and the former Soviet Union," according to a former bookkeeper employed by one of Epstein's main procurers of underage girls, Jean Luc Brunel.[87] The Brunel-Epstein relationship is detailed in chapter 18.

Reporting from *Crain's New York* has noted that the majority of the units in the complex are not sold, but can be rented out as long as the rental period is longer than 30 days. However, it has been alleged that many of the apartments, and apparently those alleged to have been used to "house underage girls" from foreign countries, were being occupied for far less than 30 days, leading to accusations that the site was "illegally operating as a hotel" as late as 2019.[88]

Barak is also known to have spent the night at one of Epstein's residences at least once. He was also photographed leaving Epstein's residence as recently as 2016, and has admitted to visiting Epstein's island, which has since sported nicknames including "Pedo Island," "Lolita Island," and "Orgy Island." In 2004, Barak received $2.5 million from Leslie Wexner's Wexner Foundation, where Epstein was a trustee as well as one of the foundation's top donors at the time. The massive grant to Barak was officially for unspecified "consulting services" and "research" on the foundation's behalf.[89] Barak is alleged to have met Epstein in the 1980s, though Barak himself has asserted that they met much later and were originally introduced by Shimon Peres.

It is also worth noting that Ossa Properties former Vice President and CFO, Jonathan Barrett, was the brother of Ossa Properties' founder Anthony Barrett. From 1992 to 1996, Jonathan Barrett was an asset manager for J. Epstein & Co., Epstein's main company during that time, and an executive at Ossa Properties simultaneously. His resumé states that Ossa Properties "acquired and 'turned around' distressed NYC real estate."[90]

Jonathan Barrett has since become director of acquisitions and investments at Luminus Management, "a hedge fund that invests in the energy and power sectors." He has held that position since 2003.[91] Luminus is also listed as a "declared affiliate" of LS Power, where Barrett is also a managing director.[92] LS Power's CEO is Paul Segal.[93] His father, Mikhail Segal, had originally founded LS Power and formerly worked for the Department of Energy in the Soviet Union before becoming president of The Energy Systems Company (ENESCO), "a private developer of cogeneration projects."[94] Notably, the "first recorded public transactions of ENESCO were alongside Pagnotti Enterprises, a firm linked to the Bufalino crime family via founder mafia boss Louis Pagnotti."[95]

Today, LS Power is a major supplier to Elon Musk's Tesla, while Luminus Management was the largest shareholder in Valaris, which – in 2020 – sold $650 million in oil rigs to Musk's SpaceX.[96] SpaceX plans to transform the rigs into rocket launching platforms. As reported by *Business Insider*, Jeffrey Epstein had introduced a member of his entourage to Elon's brother Kimbal Musk, who sits on the board of SpaceX and Tesla. The woman in question, who lived at an apartment at 301 East 66th Street and had previously "dated" Epstein, dated Musk from 2011 to 2012 and the relationship "brought Epstein into contact with the Musk family and its businesses."[97] It was alleged that in 2012, Epstein had toured a SpaceX facility, though a SpaceX attorney denied the claim six months after it was initially reported.[98] In 2019, it was reported that Epstein had confirmed rumors to journalist James Stewart that he had been secretly advising Tesla.[99]

Notably, a director for the related Luminus Capital Partners and the Luminus Capital Partners Master Fund is Alex Erskine, who was also a director for Epstein's financial vehicle Liquid Fundings.[100] Erskine is also listed as a director for numerous Glencore subsidiaries, with Glencore being the firm founded by Mossad asset and controversial commodity trader Marc Rich.

Yet another director for Luminus Capital Partners Master Fund and Luminus Capital Partners as well as Luminus Energy Partners is a man named Stephen Martin Zolnai.[101] Zolnai was also a director of Forexster Limited, an electronic foreign exchange platform operating from Bermuda that claimed it "would revolutionize the market, taking banks out of forex trades and enabling clients to deal directly with each other."[102]

Notably, Forexster was co-founded by the Bosnian-born Arman Glodjo who gained a reputation as a highly skilled systems designer working for oil trader John Deuss.[103] As mentioned in chapter 6, John Deuss was a major employer of Ted Shackley and his "private CIA." In addition, a director of Deuss's Transworld Oil, Hugh Edwin Gillespie, was also a director of Epstein's Liquid Funding alongside Alex Erskine, Bear Stearns principals, and Epstein himself. As will be noted in chapter 16, one of Epstein's many 1990s "girlfriends" that also lived in the 301 66th

Street apartments, Francis Jardine, would end up marrying John Deuss. Epstein took Jardine with him to at least one of his visits to the Clinton White House.

This makes Forexster's connections to Bear Stearns, Epstein's former employer where he later became a major client, worth noting. According to an article published by *InformationWeek*:

> Though the system is not yet live, Bermuda-based Forexster is about to go live with Bear Stearns' prime brokerage customers. "We will sit on the other side of those customers and act as a liquidity provider," explains [Seppo] Luskinen. The function of a prime broker is to extend credit and clear and settle the customers' trades.
>
> Bear Stearns plans to "white label" the system to its clients, which include hedge funds, commodity trading advisors, and money managers, says Luskinen. SEB will take advantage of existing credit relationships so that it can trade with prime brokerage clients of Bear Stearns. "All of their prime brokerage customers will deal in (Bear Stearns') name, and our counterparty will be Bear Stearns," explains Luskinen.[104]

There are numerous references to Epstein's interest and extensive involvement in foreign currency trading throughout the media and elsewhere. He was also a major client of Bear Stearns following his depature from the bank in the early 1980s until its collapse as part of the 2008 economic crisis. This raises the possibility that Epstein himself not only benefitted from Bear Stearn's "white labeling" of Forexster, but that Epstein potentially could have been a driving force behind the "white labeling" policy himself.

The references to Epstein and currency markets over the years are many and some allude to Epstein having an apparent advantage over others when conducting trades in foreign currency markets. For instance, Vicky Ward's 2003 report on Epstein stated that he often touted "his skill at playing the currency markets 'with very large sums of money.'"[105] Such claims can also be found in the 2002 profile on Epstein by *New York Magazine*, which alludes to Epstein's frequent calling of currency traders abroad, and quotes close Epstein associate, Danny Hillis, formerly of the US military contractor and supercomputer firm Thinking Machines, as saying:

> We talk about currency trading – the euro, the real, the yen. He has something a physicist would call physical intuition. He knows when to use the math and when to throw it away. If I had acted upon all the investment advice he has been giving me over the years, I'd be calling you from my Gulfstream right now."[106]

Many journalists and others who have interviewed or met Epstein over the years have also referenced currency trading. For instance, not long before Epstein's 2019 arrest, journalist James Stewart went to interview Epstein in connection with claims that Epstein had been advising Elon Musk's Tesla and Epstein was working on a computer. Epstein stated that he "was doing some foreign-currency trading."[107]

Perhaps the most notable mention over the years of Epstein's connection to foreign currency markets can be found in a letter written by Epstein's close friend, Lynn Forester (later Lynn Forester de Rothschild) to then-president Bill Clinton in April 1995. In that letter, Forester wrote:

> Dear Mr. President: it was a pleasure to see you recently at Senator Kennedy's house. There was too much to discuss and too little time. Using my fifteen seconds of access to discuss Jeffrey Epstein and currency stabilization, I neglected to talk to you about a topic near and dear to my heart…[108]

A TALE OF TWO HOUSES

As previously mentioned, the specific house that Epstein would occupy, 9 71st Street East, was formally purchased by Nine East 71st Street Corp, the address of which is listed as being the Huntington Center in Columbus, Ohio, in 1989. *Crain's New York* reported that records they accessed show Epstein as having been president of Nine East 71st Street Corp and that, on the deed of the property, it lists that corporation as no longer being the Huntington Center, but 301 66th Street East, the apartment complex associated with Ossa Properties.[109] Elsewhere, it was reported that Wexner had purchased the residence in 1989 for $13.2 million, even though Epstein was president of the company that became the residence's official owner at that time. This suggests that, contrary to mainstream reporting, the residence had always been intended for Epstein's use.

Indeed, after it was purchased by Nine East 71st Street Corp, Wexner appeared to have never moved into the property despite spending over $13 million to purchase the property and "at least" the same amount "on artwork – including multiple works by Picasso – Art Deco furnishings, Russian antiques, rosewood tables and doors and a gut renovation of the home."[110] The refurnishing effort has, in some reports, been estimated to have cost "tens of millions."

In addition, "security devices, including a network of cameras, were installed" at that time of the residence's refurbishment and the oddities of that particular security system were described in a *New York Times* article from 1996.[111] That article states that "visitors [to the residence] described a bathroom reminiscent of James Bond movies: hidden beneath a stairway, lined with lead to provide shelter from attack and supplied with closed-circuit television screens and a telephone, both concealed in a cabinet beneath the sink."[112]

There has been considerable speculation that these very cameras were used to record footage that was subsequently stored on numerous hard drives and CDs that were known to law enforcement, both in the case of Epstein's first run-in with the law and in the case of his 2019 arrest. It wasn't revealed until the Ghislaine Maxwell trial in late 2021 that these hard drives and CDs had been known to the FBI at the time of their 2019 raid of the property. During the Maxwell trial, it was also revealed that the FBI agents involved did not seize them and only photographed them. This was allegedly because the hard drives and CDs were outside the scope of their warrant.

FBI agent testimony at the Maxwell trial also revealed that, when FBI agents did return to the residence with an appropriate warrant, the CDs and hard drives "went missing" and the FBI requested that evidence from one of Epstein's lawyers, who later brought the items to the FBI's team.[113] However, Special Agent Kelly Maguire noted in her testimony that "She could not confirm the content on the returned CDs was the same as the ones that were taken, but confirmed all the items were accounted for."[114]

Per the photographs taken at the time of the raid, hard drives were found inside a safe forced open by the FBI and numerous large black binders were found in a closet that contained "CDs, carefully categorized in plastic slipcovers and thumbnails with photos on them." When shown in court, the "homemade labels" were redacted, as Judge Alison Nathan had ruled that they contained "identifying information for third parties."[115] Did that information involve only the names of underage girls, the names of blackmail victims, or both?

Numerous high-profile Epstein victims, as well as former Epstein employees, have alluded to the videos and to blackmail, stating that Epstein had "a lot of information on people, a lot of blackmail videos."[116] Others have stated that the cameras were intended to record "private moments" as they were located, among other places, in bedrooms and bathrooms.[117] Court documents have also revealed claims from different victims that other residences occupied by Epstein, including his private island and Palm Beach mansion, were "wired up" in the same way as his Manhattan residence on East 71st Street.[118] As previously noted in this book, such surveillance outfits in private homes had been used by the intelligence-linked pedophile Craig Spence (see chapter 10) as well as in the Manhattan home of organized crime-linked liquor baron Lewis Rosenstiel (see chapter 2) for the purposes of blackmail. The blackmail-ready home of the latter, as previously noted, was purchased by Israeli businessman Meshulam Riklis at the same time Riklis took over Rosenstiel's main business interests.

Also interesting is the history of the adjacent property, 11 71st Street East. A year before a Wexner/Epstein-linked entity purchased 9 71st Street East, SAM Conversion Corp purchased the adjacent property, 11 71st Street, from Xandra Corporation, which was associated with Nicholas Cowan, a former attorney for the Beatles. That year, both SAM Conversion Corp and Parkview Financial (formerly Lewex) were listed on the mortgage assignment for that property. Like Parkview, SAM Conversion Corp's address was listed as the Huntington Center in Columbus, Ohio.

In 1992, SAM Conversion Corp sold that property to 11 East 71st Street Trust for "ten dollars and other valuable consideration paid by the party of the second part." Epstein was listed as a vice president for SAM Conversion Corp and a trustee of 11 East 71st Street Trust.

The property would be controlled by Epstein until 1996, when it was sold to Comet Trust for "10 dollars and other valuable consideration," per official documentation. However, *Crain's New York* reported that the likely sum of the sale of this property was around $6.2 million.

Crain's also revealed that the Comet Trust trustee involved in this sale was a man named Guido Goldman.[119] Goldman is the son Nahum Goldman, a prominent Zionist and founder of the World Jewish Congress, as well as its first president.[120] His leading role there overlapped with his term as president of the World Zionist Organization, which was intimately linked to Max Fisher's revival of the Jewish Agency. As will be detailed in the next two chapters, Fisher was one of Leslie Wexner's mentors.

At the time that Goldman, via the Comet Trust, purchased the home from Epstein, the president of the World Jewish Congress was Edgar Bronfman. *Crain's* noted that the Comet Trust, where Goldman was trustee, was one of three trusts established "for the benefit of descendants of the late Minda de Gunzburg," Edgar Bronfman's sister.

Minda Bronfman had married Alain de Gunzburg, who was managing director of Bank Louis-Dreyfus, which was a merger of the Gunzburg family bank, Louis Hirsch & Cie, as well as interests of Louis Dreyfus and the French banking interests of the Seligman family.[121] The Seligmans are worth mentioning because the family's main bank, J.W. Seligman, held accounts with the CIA-linked David Baird foundation previously mentioned in chapter 4.[122] In addition, a prominent member of the Seligman banking family, Hans Seligman, was involved with Permindex and on the board of directors of their subsidiary CMC (see chapter 3).[123]

As for the Gunzburgs, they have been reported to be relatives of the Rothschilds and shared a mutual connection with the Rothschilds to Club Mediterranee. The Gunzburgs were part of the "controlling" group of the company, which had been bailed out in 1961 by Baron Edmond de Rothschild, "who had visited a Club Med in Israel and liked it. Baron Edmond not only paid Club Med's debts, he acquired a 34 percent stake in the growing tour operator."[124] Another shareholder in Club Med was BCCI frontman Ghaith Pharaon and Pharaon had used his shares in the company to secure lines of credit from BCCI.[125]

Aside from Comet Trust's connection to the Bronfman/de Gunzburgs, Guido Goldman's role here is also worth noting for a couple other reasons. One of those reasons is Goldman's close relationship to Henry Kissinger, which was forged during both men's time at Harvard and saw Goldman described as one of Kissinger's "closest friends" by the press in 1973.[126] Another important connection of Goldman's is that he apparently served as the Council on Foreign Relations liaison to the CIA.

In a March 1977 letter from Goldman to then CIA director Stanley Turner, Goldman wrote:

> As a member of the [CFR's] Committee on Membership, I am continuing to serve as chairman of a panel with special responsibility for locating and screening candidates under 31 to bring to the Committee's attention. I am therefore writing to ask if you can recommend one or two outstanding young men or women who you believe should be given possible consideration."[127]

Also publicly available is a letter written to Goldman by Joe Zaring, a top CIA officer who worked "in the Western Europe division of the agency's Directorate of Intelligence," which instructs Goldman about visiting CIA headquarters for an Agency "conference on Western Europe."[128]

At the time of the sale of 11 71 Street East, Epstein was also a member of the CFR, which he joined in 1995 until 2009. Notably, the CFR did not eject Epstein after his first arrest related to soliciting sex from a minor. The CFR has admitted to such, with the *Washington Post* quoting CFR spokeswomen Lisa Shields as saying that the Council "did not connect the news [of Epstein's first conviction] with Epstein's membership" even though they were aware of his arrest and, by extension, its implications.[129] Epstein's membership in the CFR was only revoked in 2009 because of "nonpayment of dues" and had no relation whatsoever to his indictment or conviction.[130]

From 1995 to 2006, Epstein donated annually to the council at its highest level of donors, meaning he contributed at least $25,000 to the council on a yearly basis. Other donors at that level during that time included Leon Black, head of

Apollo Global Management, and Mort Zuckerman, owner of the *New York Daily News* after Robert Maxwell, both of whom were known associates of Epstein.

Also at this tier was David Rockefeller, who appears in one of Epstein's contact books. Articles from the early 2000s reported "rumors" from two separate sources that one of Epstein's high-profile clients at the time had been Rockefeller.[131] Also in one of Epstein's two contact books was the Trilateral Commission, which Rockefeller co-founded and where Epstein had also been a member.

It later emerged that Leon Black claimed to only have begun associating himself with Epstein in part because Epstein had been personally appointed by David Rockefeller to the board of Rockefeller University.[132] According to the university, Epstein was on the board of the university for three years in the 1990s.[133] However, Vicky Ward reported in 2003 that Epstein had been appointed to the board in 2000.[134] As previously mentioned, the Rockefeller-connected Dime Savings Bank had financed some of Epstein's first forays into New York real estate via Wexner-linked business entities.

RENTING A THIRD MANHATTAN MANSION

While the two houses on East 71st Street are of great interest to the Epstein case, it is worth noting where Epstein appears to have been living before he began occupying that residence around 1995 or so. Beginning in 1992, Epstein was renting a mansion on East 69th Street that had previously been the residence of the Iranian consul general.[135] The property, described as a "small castle" and as "palatial" in reports, had been seized by the US government in 1980. It was specifically the State Department, under president George H.W. Bush, that began leasing that property to Epstein for $15,000 a month and Epstein, per reports, "had moved out" by January 1996.

However, Epstein continued to lease the building from the State Department well through 1997, but had begun subletting the residence in May 1996 to "high-profile attorney Ivan Fisher," who is best known for having "vigorously represented notorious crime figures over four decades."[136] Some of those "crime figures" were represented by Fisher in the French Connection and Pizza Connection narcotics cases and a 2013 report in the *New York Times* noted that Fisher, early on in his legal career, had "developed a reputation for representing clients in federal narcotics cases."[137]

Epstein was charging Fisher $20,000 a month in rent, pocketing $5,000 for himself – a cozy arrangement which he did not clear with the State Department beforehand. However, Epstein had allegedly told Fisher that "the State Department had signed off on the deal."[138] The State Department then sued Epstein and Fisher in November 1996 and, roughly a year later, Fisher was taken to court with the US Attorney's office saying he owed "a year's worth of $15,000-a-month rent for his uptown palace."[139]

However, around November 1996, Fisher had offered repeatedly to pay the government directly to continue renting the property, which was repeatedly declined. Per reports, the State Department was mainly upset that "Epstein hadn't gotten permission to sublet" and would have been fine continuing to rent to him, ostensibly just "a financial adviser," but would not rent to a high-profile lawyer.[140] This suggests that the State Department, in 1992, may have leased to Epstein for other reasons beyond just seeking a financially well-off tenant. Why Epstein would rent the property is also a mystery, as he owned two other (and neighboring) palatial residences on East 71st Street at the time, only one of which was known to be undergoing renovations during part of this period. Another relevant question: was this residence under Epstein's care also fitted with an extensive camera network, as some of the properties under his control were?

This situation raises a still more obvious and important question: why did the State Department rent to Epstein in the first place? It appears the answer was Secretary of State from 1989 to 1992, James Baker III. According to *Yahoo! News*, the lawsuit brought against Epstein (and Fisher) by the State Department suggests that Epstein had a relationship with Baker. Epstein's lawyer Jeffery Schantz was asked, "Do you know how Mr. Epstein came to know Secretary of State James Baker?" to which he responded 'No.'"[141] The answer to this question may be related to a close friend of Baker's Raymond Hill, who owned Mainland Savings in Houston, the S & L mentioned in chapter 7 that was tied to Adnan Khashoggi, also a client of Epstein's.[142] Hill was also connected to Walter Mischer and his son-in-law Robert Corson, who – as noted in chapter 6 – was allegedly tied to Israeli and American intelligence. According to an interview with Pete Brewton, James Baker's former law firm, Andrews & Kurth, helped suppress investigations into Mainland Savings.[143]

Endnotes

1 Roy Rowan, “Condomania’s First Family,” *Fortune*, August 10, 1981.

2 Rowan, “Condomania.”

3 Rowan, “Condomania.” See also Pete Brewton, *The Mafia, CIA, and George Bush* (S.P.I. Books, Dec. 1992), 231. Brewton notes that at this time, “The Los Angeles Mafia crime family was under the dominion of the Chicago family”.

4 David Elsner, “‘Grave Dancer’ Calls the Tune,” *Chicago Tribune*, April 27, 1986; Brewton, *The Mafia*, 245. On Kanter, Helliwell and Castle Bank, see Alan A. Block, *Masters of Paradise: Organized Crime and the Internal Revenue Service in the Bahamas* (Routledge, 1991).

5 Robert L. Jackson, “Four Charged in Bahamanian Tax Scheme,” *Los Angeles Times*, March 5, 1976.

6 Pamela A. Holley, “What’s in Imperial Corp’s Future? Maybe Liquidation,” *Fresno Bee*, August 27, 1980.

7 Brewton, *The Mafia*, 241.

8 Brewton, *The Mafia*, 243.

9 Brewton, *The Mafia*, 244-45. Brewton elaborates: “When questioned about the relationship between Mizel and Kanter, Mizel spokesman Bill Kostka said that Kanter’s law firm prepared wills for the Mizel family in the 1970s. However, one of Kanter’s law partners at the time said the firm’s primary business was the formation of trusts, particularly offshore trusts, and that the preparation of wills would have been incidental to that”.

10 Brewton, *The Mafia*, 243.

11 *Silverado Banking, Savings and Loan Association, Hearing Before the House Committee on Banking, Finance and Urban Affairs, Part I*, One Hundred First Congress, Second Session, May 22-23, 1990, p. 185, https://www.google.com/books/edition/Silverado_Banking_Savings_and_Loan_Assoc/41FFAQAAMAAJ. On Southmark as a ‘vulture’, see Stephen Pizzo, Mary Fricker, and Paul Muolo, *Inside Job: The Looting of America’s Savings and Loans*, 1st HarperPerennial ed (New York, NY: HarperPerennial, 1991), 246-48, https://archive.org/details/insidejoblooting0000pizz.

12 House Committee, *Silverado Banking, Savings and Loan Association*, 185.

13 Pizzo, Fricker and Muolo, *Inside Job*, 248.

14 Brewton, *The Mafia*, 244.

15 Brewton, *The Mafia*, 246-47.

16 Victor L. Simpson, “Vatican Names Laymen to Manage Scandal-Tainted Bank,” *Associated Press*, June 20, 1989, https://apnews.com/article/e63ff88d19e9d072cccc318a1eedb3e4.

17 Doug Henwood, “Capital Cities/ABC: No. 2, and Trying Harder,” *FAIR*, March 1, 1990, https://fair.org/extra/capital-citiesabc/.

18 “Casey Stake in Capital Cities,” *New York Times*, March 27, 1985, https://www.nytimes.com/1985/03/27/business/casey-stake-in-capital-cities.html.

19 Eric Pooley, “The Firm: The Inside Story of How One of the City’s Richest and Most Powerful Firms Beat Itself to Death,” *New York Magazine*, February 24, 1994, 22.

20 Mariann Caprino, “Infotech May Sell Businesses; Confirms SEC Investigation,” *Associated Press*, October 24, 1990, https://apnews.com/article/ac4612e353a3c0e8202957968bb52392.

21 Nicholas J. Bua, "Report of Special Counsel Nicholas J. Bua to the Attorney of the United States Regarding the Allegations of Inslaw, Inc.," March 1993, https://archive.org/details/Inslaw-PROMISBuaReport.

22 Elliot Richardson, "Addendum to Inslaw's Analysis and Rebuttal of the Bua Report: Memorandum in Response to the March 1993 Report of Special Counsel Nicholas J. Bua," February 14, 1994, https://archive.org/details/AddendumToInslawsAnalysisAndRebuttalOfTheBuaReport.

23 Memo reprinted in Cheri Seymour, *The Last Circle: Danny Casolaro's Investigation Into the Octopus and the PROMIS Software Scandal*, 1st ed (Walterville, OR: TrineDay, 2010), 491-91. In 1981, Tessler sat on the board of Jackpot Enterprises, which managed slots and other gambling machines for truck stops and small casinos. It would be interesting to know if Jackpot was doing any business with the Cabazon's casino project.

24 Pizzo, Fricker and Muolo cite Dale Anderson, Beebe's right-hand man, as saying that the two "tried to do several deals together." Both maintained property at La Costa in California, a hangout for mob types that had been built with a sizable Teamster pension loan fund. See Pizzo, Fricker, and Muolo, *Inside Job*, 253. Burton Kanter, linked to the Chicago real estate scene and to Helliwell's Castle Bank in the Bahamas, had been La Costa's agent at its incorporation. See Gene Ayers and Jeff Morgan, "Pension Fund Loans Buy Luxury," *Oakland Tribune*, September 23, 1969.

25 Pizzo, Fricker and Muolo, *Inside Job*, 401.

26 Pizzo, Fricker and Muolo, *Inside Job*, 247. Pizzo, Fricker and Muolo also note that "Southmark conducted nearly $90 million in business deals with Beebe."

27 "Diversification puts limits on success," *Akron Beacon Journal*, January 19, 1995.

28 "'Bad Management' Topples a Firm," *ABA Journal*, May, 1994.

29 Kevin McGrath bio, https://www.phillipsnizer.com/kevin-mcgrath; *The American Lawyer Guide to Law Firms* (Am-Law Publishing Corporation, 1981), 709.

30 Arnold H. Lubasch, "$75,000 Cash Was Given to Help Carey and Cuomo, Scotto Testifies," *The New York Times*, October 31, 1979, https://www.nytimes.com/1979/10/31/archives/75000-cash-was-given-to-help-carey-and-cuomo-scotto-testifies.html; Brewton, *The Mafia*, 266. Lubasch notes that "Scotto lives in Brooklyn's Bay Ridge section, which Mr. Carey represented in Congress for many years."

31 Brewton, *The Mafia*, 266.

32 Brewton, *The Mafia*, 265; Gulfstream Land & Development Corp, "Annual Report," 1980, https://docplayer.net/101679934-Gulfstream-land-development-corp-annual-report-1980.html. Other directors included Herbert J. Bachelor, a managing director at Drexel Burnham Lambert and Joseph L. Mailman, chairman of the board of Air Express International Corporation. In 1985, Air Express was identified among a group of companies that was paying racketeers from the Lucchese crime family to avoid labor issues. The racketeering had been going on since around 1978. Joseph P. Fried, "11 Indicted in New York Case," *New York Times*, February 22, 1985, https://www.nytimes.com/1985/02/22/nyregion/11-indicted-in-airport-extortion-case.html.

33 Brewton, *The Mafia*, 265.

34 Martin Tolchin, "2 Debtors' Role in Silverado's Fall," *New York Times*, September 24, 1990, https://www.nytimes.com/1990/09/24/business/2-debtors-role-in-silverado-s-fall.html.

35 Stephen Pizzo, “Loose Change,” *Mother Jones,* March-April 1992, 20-21, https://books.google.com/books?id=O-cDAAAAMBAJ.

36 Brewton, *The Mafia*, 385.

37 Rachel Ehrenfeld*, Evil Money: Encounters Along the Money Trail* (Harper Business, 1992), 112-113.

38 Ehrenfeld, *Evil Money*, 76.

39 Floyd Norris, “CenTrust, Keating linked to Drexel,” *Tampa Bay Times*, November 19, 1990, https://www.tampabay.com/archive/1990/11/19/centrust-keating-linked-to-drexel/.

40 Jefferson Morley, “See No Evil,” *SPIN*, March 1991.

41 According to Cheri Seymour, the final leg of Danny Casolaro’s investigation was into connections between his “Octopus” and cartel money laundering, with a focus on Michael Abbell, a high-ranking DoJ official-turned-cartel attorney. The cartel in that case, however, was the Cali Cartel, and not the Medellin cartel. Seymour, *The Last Circle*, 211-214. See also “Ex-prosecutor turned drug cartel lawyer gets prison,” *Los Angeles Times*, June 12, 1999, https://www.latimes.com/archives/la-xpm-1999-jun-12-mn-45739-story.html.

42 Lawrence Walsh, *Final Report of the Independent Counsel for Iran/Contra Matters Vol 1*, chap. 14, https://irp.fas.org/offdocs/walsh/chap_14.htm.

43 Gordon Thomas and Martin Dillon, *Robert Maxwell, Israel’s Superspy: The Life and Murder of a Media Mogul*, 1st Carroll & Graf ed (New York: Carroll and Graf, 2002), 50, 239, https://archive.org/details/robert-maxwell-israels-superspy-thomas-dillon-2002.

44 “ERA Firm Sold by Control Data,” *Newsday*, November 30, 1985.

45 Janet Reilley Hewitt, *Computerized Loan Origination Networks and Traditional Mortgage Lenders* (Federal Home Loan Bank Board, 1986), 25.

46 Jack Anderson, “Did Terpil and Wilson bug Army for Control Data Corp?,” *Washington Merry-Go-Round*, October 14, 1981.

47 *Supplement to Who’s Who in America, 1987-1988*, Vol. 44 (Wilmette, Ill.: Marquis Who’s Who, 1987), 345.

48 Some examples of older articles that introduce and describe Epstein as a property developer include: Michael Robotham, “The Mystery of Ghislaine Maxwell’s Secret Love; Revealed: The Unlikely Romance Between a Business Spy and the Crooked Financier’s Favourite Daughter,” *Mail on Sunday* (London), November 15, 1992, https://www.mintpressnews.com/wp-content/uploads/2019/10/The-mystery-of-Ghislaine-Maxwell_s-secret-love_REVEALED-1.pdf; Rosaline Reines, “Cap’n Bob’s Girl Afloat,” *Sydney Morning Herald*, December 24, 1995, https://www.newspapers.com/clip/35047388/the-sydney-morning-herald/; “Andy’s pal worries Palace,” *Sunday Mail* (Australia), April 23, 2000; William Cash, “The sins of the father,” *Evening Standard*, November 21, 2003.

49 “Money Laundering in the Commercial Real Estate Industry,” *Financial Crimes Enforcement Network*, December 2006, https://www.fincen.gov/money-laundering-commercial-real-estate-industry; Sean McGoey, “‘A Kleptocrat’s Dream’: US Real Estate a Safe Haven for Billions in Dirty Money, Report Says,” *ICIJ,* August 10, 2021, https://www.icij.org/investigations/fincen-files/a-kleptocrats-dream-us-real-estate-a-safe-haven-for-billions-in-dirty-money-report-says/; Joshua B. Brandsdorfer, “FinCEN Increases Scrutiny to Combat Money Laundering on Residential Real Estate in Miami-Dade and Palm Beach Counties Attorneys,” *Berger Singerman LLP*, August 28, 2017, https://www.bergersingerman.com/news-insights/fincen-increases-scrutiny-to-combat-

money-laundering-on-residential-real-estate-in-miami-dade-and-palm-beach-counties; Staff Writer, “Palm Beach County Added to List of Regions Scrutinized for Money Laundering,” *Palm Beach Post*, July 27, 2016, https://www.palmbeachpost.com/story/business/2016/07/27/palm-beach-county-added-to/6894745007/.

50 Philip Bump, “Analysis | How Money Laundering Works in Real Estate,” *Washington Post*, January 4, 2018, https://www.washingtonpost.com/news/politics/wp/2018/01/04/how-money-laundering-works-in-real-estate/; Craig Unger, “Trump’s Russian Laundromat,” *The New Republic*, July 13, 2017, https://newrepublic.com/article/143586/trumps-russian-laundromat-trump-tower-luxury-high-rises-dirty-money-international-crime-syndicate; Thomas Frank, “SECRET MONEY: How Trump Made Millions Selling Condos To Unknown Buyers,” *BuzzFeed News*, January 12, 2018, https://www.buzzfeednews.com/article/thomasfrank/secret-money-how-trump-made-millions-selling-condos-to.

51 “On Their Toes,” *St. Louis Post Dispatch*, May 17, 1989, sec. 7w, https://www.newspapers.com/clip/9383143/donald-trump-and-ghislaine-maxwell-on/.

52 Marc Fisher and Jonathan O’Connell, “Final Evasion: For 30 Years, Prosecutors and Victims Tried to Hold Jeffrey Epstein to Account. At Every Turn, He Slipped Away.,” *Washington Post*, August 11, 2020, https://www.washingtonpost.com/politics/final-evasion-for-30-years-prosecutors-and-victims-tried-to-hold-jeffrey-epstein-to-account-at-every-turn-he-slipped-away/2019/08/10/30bc947a-bb8a-11e9-a091-6a96e67d9cce_story.html.

53 Jacob Bernstein, “Trump Tower, a Home for Celebrities and Charlatans,” *New York Times*, August 12, 2017, https://www.nytimes.com/2017/08/12/style/trump-tower-famous-residents.html.

54 Marcus Baram, “Eavesdropping on Roy Cohn and Donald Trump,” *The New Yorker*, April 14, 2017, http://www.newyorker.com/news/news-desk/eavesdropping-on-roy-cohn-and-donald-trump.

55 Baram, “Eavesdropping.”

56 Daniel Halper, “Trump Partied with Teen Girls at Cocaine-Fueled Romp in ‘90s: Report,” *New York Post*, October 25, 2016, https://nypost.com/2016/10/25/trump-partied-with-teen-girls-at-the-plaza-hotel-in-the-90s-report/; Michael Gross, “Inside Donald Trump’s One-Stop Parties: Attendees Recall Cocaine and Very Young Models,” *The Daily Beast*, October 25, 2016, https://www.thedailybeast.com/articles/2016/10/24/inside-donald-trump-s-one-stop-parties-attendees-recall-cocaine-and-very-young-models.

57 Gross, “Trump’s One-Stop Parties.”

58 Michael Wolff, *Fire and Fury: Inside the Trump White House*, ePub (New York: Henry Holt and Company, 2018), 41.

59 “NBC Archive Footage Shows Trump Partying with Jeffrey Epstein in 1992,” *CNBC*, August 12, 2019, https://www.cnbc.com/video/2019/07/25/nbc-archive-footage-shows-trump-partying-with-jeffrey-epstein-in-1992.html.

60 Annie Karni and Maggie Haberman, “Jeffrey Epstein Was a ‘Terrific Guy,’ Donald Trump Once Said. Now He’s ‘Not a Fan,’” *New York Times*, July 10, 2019, https://www.nytimes.com/2019/07/09/us/politics/trump-epstein.html.

61 Beth Reinhard, Rosalind S. Helderman, and Marc Fisher, “Donald Trump and Jeffrey Epstein Partied Together. Then an Oceanfront Palm Beach Mansion Came between Them,” *Washington Post*, July 31, 2019, https://www.washingtonpost.com/politics/donald-trump-

and-jeffrey-epstein-partied-together-then-an-oceanfront-palm-beach-mansion-came-between-them/2019/07/31/79f1d98c-aca0-11e9-a0c9-6d2d7818f3da_story.html.

62 Reinhard, Helderman, and Fisher, "Donald Trump and Jeffrey Epstein."

63 Ken Silverstein, "The Salacious Ammo Even Donald Trump Won't Use in a Fight Against Hillary Clinton," *Vice,* January 29, 2016, https://www.vice.com/en/article/j59vm8/the-salacious-ammo-even-donald-trump-wont-use-in-a-fight-against-hillary-clinton-bill-clinton.

64 Sarah Bernard and Deborah Schoeneman, "The Dish on Dinner," *New York Magazine*, April 25, 2003, https://nymag.com/nymetro/news/features/n_8672/.

65 Landon Thomas Jr, "Jeffrey Epstein: International Moneyman of Mystery," *New York Magazine,* October 28, 2002, https://nymag.com/nymetro/news/people/n_7912/.

66 Reinhard, Helderman, and Fisher, "Donald Trump and Jeffrey Epstein."

67 Silverstein, "Salacious Ammo."

68 Reinhard, Helderman, and Fisher, "Donald Trump and Jeffrey Epstein."

69 Morgan Phillips, "Trump Comments on Ghislaine Maxwell Arrest, Says 'I Wish Her Well,'" *Fox News*, July 21, 2020, https://www.foxnews.com/politics/trump-ghislaine-maxwell-i-wish-her-well.

70 Bob Fitrakis, "The Shapiro Murder File," *Free Press*, June 16, 2019, https://freepress.org/article/shapiro-murder-file.

71 Joseph Nocera, "Fantasy Island," *Texas Monthly*, November 1983, 168.

72 Brewton, *The Mafia*, 233.

73 Julie Baumgold, "Bachelor Billionaire," *New York Magazine*, August 5, 1985.

74 "Mortgage agreement between Dara Gardens Associates and Dime Saving Bank of New York," May 6, 1987, https://a836-acris.nyc.gov/DS/DocumentSearch/DocumentDetail?doc_id=FT_4170003041017; "Mortgage agreement between Dara Garden Associated and Dime Saving Bank of New York," February 27, 1989, https://a836-acris.nyc.gov/DS/DocumentSearch/DocumentImageView?doc_id=FT_4350002551435.

On the history of Dime Savings Bank and it's status as a major New York City thrift, see "History of Dime Savings Bank of New York, F.S.B.," *Reference for Business*, https://www.referenceforbusiness.com/history2/17/Dime-Savings-Bank-of-New-York-F-S-B.html.

75 "History of Dime Savings Bank of New York."

76 "History of Dime Savings Bank of New York."

77 Whitney Webb, "Mega Group, Maxwells and Mossad: The Spy Story at the Heart of the Jeffrey Epstein Scandal," *Unlimited Hangout*, August 7, 2019, https://unlimitedhangout.com/2019/08/investigative-series/mega-group-maxwells-and-mossad-the-spy-story-at-the-heart-of-the-jeffrey-epstein-scandal/; "In Pictures: The Parsons Connections," *Forbes*, February 25, 2009, https://www.forbes.com/2009/02/24/parsons-obama-citigroup-intelligent-investing_citigroup_slide.html.

78 "Dara Gardens: Apple of Forest Hills," *Daily News*, July 8, 1988; "See Values in Queens coop," *Daily News*, September 30, 1988.

79 "N.J. bars executive for bribe charges," *The Record*, December 1, 1994.

80 "Dara Partners, L.p.," OpenGovUS, https://opengovus.com/new-york-state-corporation/1548791.

81 “301 East 66th Acquisition Partners, L.p.,” OpenGovUS, https://opengovus.com/new-york-state-corporation/1548784.

82 “Final Chartered Agreement,” (Harlem Link Charter School), Vol. 2, http://www.newyork-charters.org/wp-content/uploads/Harlem-Link-C.S._Charter_Volume-02-of-03_Redacted.pdf.

83 “301/66 Owners Corp.,” *NY Company Registry*, https://www.nycompanyregistry.com/companies/301-66-owners-corp/; Will Bredderman, “Unraveling the Web of Epstein’s Manhattan Real Estate,” *Crain’s New York Business*, July 11, 2019, https://www.crainsnewyork.com/real-estate/unraveling-web-jeffrey-epsteins-manhattan-real-estate.

84 Thomas L. Waite, “POSTINGS: Conversion on East 66th Multiple Choices,” *New York Times*, August 21, 1988, https://www.nytimes.com/1988/08/21/realestate/postings-conversion-on-east-66th-multiple-choices.html.

85 Emily Shugerman, “Israeli Politician Ehud Barak Often Crashed at Epstein Apartment Building, Neighbors Say,” *The Daily Beast*, August 5, 2019, https://www.thedailybeast.com/jeffrey-epstein-israeli-politician-ehud-barak-often-crashed-at-his-manhattan-apartment-neighbors-say.

86 Shugerman, “Ehud Barak.”

87 Shugerman, “Ehud Barak.”

88 Bredderman, “Unraveling the Web.”

89 Julie K. Brown, “Epstein Scandal Explodes in Israel as Ties to Former Prime Minister under Scrutiny,” *Miami Herald*, July 14, 2019, https://www.miamiherald.com/news/state/florida/article232658477.html.

90 “Final Chartered Agreement.”

91 Joe Wallace, “Energy-Focused Hedge Fund Luminus Liquidates Some Assets,” *Wall Street Journal*, April 29, 2021, https://www.wsj.com/articles/energy-focused-hedge-fund-luminus-liquidates-some-assets-11619707524.

92 Sebastian Miralles, “Letter to The Honorable LinhThu Do,” August 23, 2021, https://cases.stretto.com/public/X088/10396/PLEADINGS/1039608232180000000078.pdf.

93 “Paul Segal,” LS Power, https://www.lspower.com/paul-segal/.

94 On founding LS: “Mike Segal,” *LS Power*, https://www.lspower.com/mike-segal/; on relationship to Paul: Jeffrey Ryser, “LS Power Acquisitions Would Boost Generating Capacity More than 50%,” *SP Global*, March 10, 2017, https://www.spglobal.com/marketintelligence/en/news-insights/trending/aVNsbL9bcumk7zqCAOoj0Q2.

95 Mirelles, “Letter to The Honorable LinhThu Do.”

96 Mirelles, “Letter to The Honorable LinhThu Do.”

97 “Jeffrey Epstein Set Elon Musk’s Brother up with a Girlfriend in Effort to Get Close to the Tesla Founder, Sources Say,” *Business Insider*, January 13, 2020, https://www.businessinsider.com/jeffrey-epsteins-ex-girlfriend-dated-kimbal-musk-brother-of-tesla-founder-elon-musk-2020-1.

98 “Jeffrey Epstein Set Elon Musk’s Brother up.”

99 James B. Stewart, “The Day Jeffrey Epstein Told Me He Had Dirt on Powerful People,” *New York Times*, August 12, 2019, https://www.nytimes.com/2019/08/12/business/jeffrey-epstein-inter-view.html.

100 "Gillespie-Hugh Edwin," *ICIJ Offshore Leaks Database*, https://offshoreleaks.icij.org/nodes/80069756.

101 "Zolnai - Martin Stephen," *ICIJ Offshore Leaks Database*, https://offshoreleaks.icij.org/nodes/80038197.

102 Tessa Oakley, "Forexster Throws down Client-to-Client Patent Challenge," *Euromoney*, March 1, 2002, https://www.euromoney.com/article/b1320nys7fyblj/forexster-throws-down-client-to-client-patent-challenge.

103 Arman Glodjo as co-founder of Forexster: See Oakley, "Forexster Throws down Client-to-Client Patent Challenge,"; On the Arman Glodjo-John Deuss connection, see Phillip Morton, "Bermudan Company Set To 'Revolutionize' Online Forex Trading," *Investors Offshore.com*, March 31, 2003, https://unlimitedhangout.com/wp-content/uploads/2022/08/photo_2022-08-02-16.00.09.jpeg.

104 Ivy Schmerken, "Swedish Bank Signs On as Liquidity Provider to Forexster," *Wall Street & Technology*, September 4, 2003, https://web.archive.org/web/20121218043803/https://www.wallstreetandtech.com/electronic-trading/swedish-bank-signs-on-as-liquidity-provi/14701869.

105 Vicky Ward, "The Talented Mr. Epstein," *Vanity Fair*, March 1, 2003, https://www.vanityfair.com/news/2003/03/jeffrey-epstein-200303.

106 Thomas, "International Moneyman."

107 Stewart, "Dirt on Powerful People."

108 Emily Shugerman and Suzi Parker, "EXCLUSIVE: Jeffrey Epstein Visited Clinton White House Multiple Times in Early '90s," *The Daily Beast*, July 24, 2019, https://www.thedailybeast.com/jeffrey-epstein-visited-clinton-white-house-multiple-times-in-early-90s.

109 Bredderman, "Unraveling the Web."

110 Matthew Haag, "$56 Million Upper East Side Mansion Where Epstein Allegedly Abused Girls," *New York Times*, July 8, 2019, https://www.nytimes.com/2019/07/08/nyregion/jeffrey-epstein-nyc-mansion.html.

111 Haag, "$56 Million Mansion,"; Christopher Mason, "Home Sweet Elsewhere," *New York Times*, January 11, 1996, https://www.nytimes.com/1996/01/11/garden/home-sweet-elsewhere.html.

112 Mason, "Home Sweet Elsewhere."

113 Josie Ensor and Jamie Johnson, "Evidence from Jeffrey Epstein's Safe 'went Missing' after FBI Raid, Court Hears in Ghislaine Maxwell Trial," *The Telegraph*, December 7, 2021, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/world-news/2021/12/07/evidence-jeffrey-epsteins-safe-went-missing-fbi-raid-court-hears/.

114 Ensor and Johnson, "Evidence from Jeffrey Epstein's Safe."

115 Jacob Shamsian, "FBI Agents Used a Saw to Open a Safe in Jeffrey Epstein's Manhattan Mansion That Held Hard Drives and Diamonds," *Insider*, December 6, 2021, https://www.insider.com/fbi-used-saw-open-jeffrey-epstein-safe-hard-drives-diamonds-2021-12.

116 Daniel Bates, "Jeffrey Epstein's Surveillance Cameras Were 'Blackmail Scheme'," *Mail Online*, May 27, 2020, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-8361607/Jeffrey-Epsteins-surveillance-cameras-blackmail-scheme-extort-powerful-friends.html.

117 Chris Spargo, "Jeffrey Epstein Victim Confirms Cameras Were Set up in His Bathrooms," *Mail Online*, November 18, 2019, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-7698229/Jeffrey-Epstein-victim-confirms-pedophile-cameras-rooms-NYC-townhouse.html.

118 Bates, "Surveillance Cameras Were "Blackmail Scheme.""

119 Bredderman, "Unraveling the Web."

120 "Guido Goldman, 83, Established Future Minda de Gunzburg Center," *Harvard Gazette*, November 30, 2020, https://news.harvard.edu/gazette/story/2020/11/guido-goldman-83-estab-lished-future-minda-de-gunzberg-center/.

121 Peter C. Newman, *Bronfman Dynasty: The Rothschilds of the New World* (Toronto: McClelland and Stewart, 1978), 202.

122 *Tax-exempt Foundations and Charitable Trusts: Their Impact on Our Economy: Second Installment,* House of Representatives, 88th Congress, 1963, 97-100, https://www.google.com/books/edition/Tax_exempt_Foundations_and_Charitable_Tr/5EVdGo3joKwC.

123 Maurice Phillips, "The Permindex Papers Iv: Freemason Georges Mantello's Monopoly Money," *I Have Some Secrets For You*, June 20, 2010, http://somesecretsforyou.blogspot.com/2010/06/permindex-papers-iv.html.

124 John Tagliabue, "Gilbert Trigano, a Developer of Club Med, Is Dead at 80," *New York Times*, February 6, 2001, https://www.nytimes.com/2001/02/06/business/gilbert-trigano-a-developer-of-club-med-is-dead-at-80.html.

125 *The BCCI Affair: Hearings Before the Subcommittee on Terrorism, Narcotics and International Terrorism of the Committee on Foreign Relations*, One Hundred and Second Congress, First Session, August 1, 2, and 8, 1991, 792-793, https://books.google.com/books?id=8DLDVLJN_sUC.

126 Maxine Chershire, "Party for Henry," *Sacramento Bee*, May 22, 1973.

127 Guido Goldman, "Letter to Stansfield Turner," March 1, 1977, https://www.cia.gov/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP05T00644R000200420001-6.pdf.

128 Goldman, "Letter to Stansfield Turner."

129 Marc Fisher, "Council on Foreign Relations, Another Beneficiary of Epstein Largesse, Grapples with How to Handle His Donations," *Washington Post*, September 10, 2019, https://www.washingtonpost.com/politics/council-on-foreign-relations-another-beneficiary-of-epstein-largesse-grapples-with-how-to-handle-his-donations/2019/09/10/1d5630e2-d324-11e9-86ac--0f250cc91758_story.html.

130 Fisher, "Council on Foreign Relations."

131 Thomas, "International Moneyman."

132 Dechert LLP, "Memorandum to Apollo Conflicts Committee Re: Investigation Of Epstein/Black Relationship And Any Relationship Between Epstein and Apollo Global Management, Inc.," SEC.gov, January 22, 2021, EX 99.1, https://www.sec.gov/Archives/edgar/data/1411494/000119312521016405/d118102dex991.htm.

133 Neel V. Patel, "Jeffrey Epstein Liked Palling around with Scientists — What Do They Think Now?," *The Verge*, July 13, 2019, https://www.theverge.com/2019/7/13/20692415/jeffrey-epstein-scientists-sexual-harassment.

134 Ward, "Talented Mr. Epstein."

135 Greg B. Smith, “Legal Eagle’s Free Ride: Lawyer Pays Not a Cent for Palatial East Side Digs,” *New York Daily News*, December 23, 1997; Benjamin Weiser, “Defending the Notorious, and Now Himself,” *New York Times*, January 5, 2013, https://www.nytimes.com/2013/01/06/nyregion/ivan-fisher-defender-of-the-notorious-and-now-himself.html.

136 Smith, “Legal Eagle’s Free Ride,”; Weiser, “Defending the Notorious.”

137 Weiser, “Defending the Notorious.”

138 Smith, “Legal Eagle’s Free Ride.”

139 Smith, “Legal Eagle’s Free Ride.”

140 Smith, “Legal Eagle’s Free Ride.”

141 “Docket for United States v. Epstein, 1:96-Cv-08307,” *Court Listener*, https://www.courtlistener.com/docket/10516885/united-states-v-epstein/; Julia La Roche, Aarthi Swaminathan, and Calder McHugh, “Jeffrey Epstein’s Lawyers Deeply Involved in His Business Dealings for Decades, Documents Show,” *Yahoo Finance*, August 13, 2019, https://finance.yahoo.com/news/jeffrey-epstein-lawyers-darren-indyke-jeffrey-schantz-164305188.html.

142 “Pete Brewton Interview,” *Texas Observer*, December 25, 1992, https://archives.texasobserver.org/issue/1992/12/25#page=15.

143 “Pete Brewton Interview.”

Leslie Wexner speaking Woodrow Wilson Award ceremony

CHAPTER 13

THE WORLD OF LESLIE WEXNER

JOINING THE CLUB

Leslie Wexner was born to Russian immigrants, Harry and Bella Wexner, in 1937 in Dayton, Ohio. The family later moved to Columbus, where his father soon opened a small shop downtown that he had named after his son – “Leslie’s.” Money was reportedly tight in the Wexner family, but not too tight, as his parents managed to finance his education at a private high school in the wealthy Columbus suburb of Bexley.[1]

Wexner later attended Ohio State University, graduating in 1959, and he subsequently served in the Air National Guard. In school, he had wanted to become an architect, but was pressured by his parents to study business administration instead. He tried law school, but dropped out and instead went to work for his parents at Leslie’s. Despite the apparent domineering nature of his parents and in particular his mother, a young Leslie Wexner butted heads with them over their business strategy. He felt that his parents’ decision to stock their store with every possible type of women’s apparel was foolish, and he sought to create a store focused on women’s sportswear, as it was the most profitable category of clothing they sold. When his parents wouldn’t budge, Les Wexner borrowed money from his Aunt Ida and, at 26, opened the first “The Limited” Store in 1963 at a suburban shopping center.[2]

The Limited began with Wexner being “an unabashed imitator” and modelling his store’s wares after the Villager brand of stores, which catered to high school and college age girls. By 1965, he had just two store locations; yet, he somehow caught the attention of Milton Petrie, one of the wealthiest retail barons at the time. Petrie wanted Wexner to become his understudy for what was then a massive salary – $75,000 a year (around $705,500 in 2022 dollars). Wexner reportedly turned down the offer as well as a subsequent offer from Petrie to buy a 49.5% interest in The Limited for $500,000.[3] This was a considerable offer given that The Limited’s total sales volume was only $400,000 at the time.

It’s unclear how Petrie learned of Wexner and why he was so interested in joining forces with him. While Wexner was apparently not too keen on the offer, he soon became enmeshed with other wealthy businessmen in Petrie’s inner circle. The retail baron’s inner circle is notable as it included Alan “Ace” Greenberg, the long-time head of Bear Stearns who later had a close relationship with Jeffrey Epstein and gave him his first job on Wall Street; Laurence Tisch, chairman and CEO of the Loews Corporation and later of CBS News; and Adolph Alfred Taubman, who would go onto to become what Petrie had unsuccessfully hoped to be to Wexner – his mentor. Per Petrie, "The main reason Wexner and I never got together […] is that we couldn't decide who was going to be the top man. Personally, I'd never go along on a deal where I won't be the boss."[4]

Wexner quickly became close to A. Alfred Taubman at some point in the late 1960s, when Wexner was looking to expand his retail business beyond Ohio. According to Wexner, the two men first met in person after he was "summoned" by Taubman to Detroit. Wexner said the following of their first meeting:

> He [Taubman] is a very big man, and he didn't say a word to me. We had coffee and then got into his helicopter, which was waiting out back, but he still hadn't talked. He flew me to three shopping centers and stopped at my stores, and then finally he turned to me and said "Do you wonder why I called you? Your stores are a blight on my shopping centers."[5]

Taubman claims that Wexner "immediately got on it" and redesigned his stores.[6] Taubman's approach and Taubman's own penchant and interest in architecture, which was what a younger Wexner had once hoped to study, apparently left quite the impression and blossomed into a close relationship. Not only would Taubman take "Wexner under his wing," he would also give "him his first crack at prime mall space."[7] Years later, in 1987, Wexner would tell the *New York Times* that "Alfred and I have a very intimate relationship, like father and son," adding that Taubman taught him "most of what he knows" about real estate and also influencing his approach to retail to a considerable degree was well.[8]

Soon after their introduction, Taubman would induct Wexner into his own inner circle and Wexner would consequently develop a relationship with Taubman's closest partner, the similarly wealthy and politically connected Max Fisher. Fisher and Taubman would rank top among the wealthy businessmen mentors that Wexner later referred to as his "business 'rabbis.'"[9] Both Taubman and Fisher have been described as Wexner's "mentors" by different media outlets and their influence on Wexner's activities is significant for several reasons.[10]

MEET MAX FISHER

"Max Fisher is Perfect Success Story," celebrated the 1965 headline of a fawning *UPI* profile detailing the life and accomplishments of the Detroit industrialist.[11] Fisher, the article elaborated, had endured hard labor, hauling 400 pound bags of ice to pay his way through college, and had made every penny count by eating "bowl after bowl of cheap chili." For all intents and purposes, Fisher is presented as the perfect "rags-to-riches" American success story.

Such hyperbolic and fawning assessments by the media weren't unusual for Fisher, as most media accounts of Fisher, up until and following his death in 2005, have extolled the Detroit-based businessman for his many "virtues."

Among these virtues was Fisher's finesse with the media. Fisher's biographer Peter Golden reported that Fisher's close friend George Romney, former governor of Michigan and father of Mitt Romney, had praised Fisher's ability to deal with the press: "Max has good judgment."[12] Fisher's long time business associate A. Alfred Taubman was likewise impressed with how Fisher managed the press, "with an adroitness based on a subtle combination of his personality, skill, and reputation." Taubman, as quoted in the 1992 Fisher biography *Quiet Diplomat*, continued:

> Max is a patrician, in the best sense of the word. He is so courtly that reporters are charmed by his taking the time to talk and seeming – when he does say something – to talk frankly with them. Yet I wonder if they ever analyze what he tells them, how little he reveals. You won't get any secrets from Max. He's too guarded. Also, as far as the Detroit media is concerned, Max is a sacred cow. He's good for Detroit, he's a symbol of all that is progressive about the city and the media responds to this. He is above reproach.[13]

More than the oil or real estate industries, Fisher had seemed to profoundly understand how his respected public image as a clever businessman and endlessly generous philanthropist was the most valuable of his many assets. Yet, this carefully constructed public image, as is so often the case, was hardly the whole story.

For instance, Fisher's early, humble beginnings, as often lauded by media profiles such as the 1965 *UPI* piece, have an alleged darker side, with claims of Fisher's past ties to Detroit's Purple Gang having swirled around him for years.

While the truth of this allegation is debatable, Fisher would go on to have several close business associates who were all too familiar with the incestuous networks linking organized crime and intelligence networks, with Charles Bronfman, brothers Charles and Herbert Allen of Allen & Co., and Fisher's eventual "protégé" Leslie Wexner being just some examples.

As soon as Fisher graduated from Ohio State University, he went into the oil business, rising from his first, relatively small refining effort that produced a mere 100 barrels of crude oil a day, to being "the chief stockholder in Marathon Oil, general chairman of the nationwide United Jewish Appeal, and one of Michigan Governor George Romney's chief fundraisers."[14]

When questioned about his success, Fisher remained ever modest. "One of the things that was good for us," Fisher had told *UPI*, "is that I happened to be in the right place at the right time."[15] The 1965 article claims that, while every major analyst had predicted a post-war contraction in the national oil industry, Fisher dared to stick to his convictions: "We gambled every penny on the belief that the oil business was going to expand, not contract."[16] It is remarkably similar to the narrative once used by Lewis Rosenstiel to explain why he had hoarded liquor for several years during the Prohibition Era – all due to a "tip" that ran counter to common knowledge at the time. Rosenstiel had, of course, also been "in the right place at the right time" for his chance meeting in France with Winston Churchill, who would fortuitously offer him that "tip," on which Rosenstiel would bet everything and, subsequently, build an empire.

As bleak as the oil industry's outlook may have been at the time, Fisher had stood firm, leading his underdog company, the Aurora Gasoline Company, through dire straits to a $39 million buyout of Aurora shares by Ohio Oil, once part of the Rockefeller's Standard Oil monopoly, in 1959. Fisher held 38% of that stock, amounting to $13,870,000.[17] Ohio Oil would become Marathon Oil a few years later, in 1962.

Once in his mid-50s, Fisher gradually retired from the oil industry, which he had spent more than thirty years helping to develop. Yet, Fisher was hardly withdrawing from public life and the pursuit of power. His exit from the industry was, instead, a long planned move whereby Fisher would now work to cultivate and expand his influence full-time, now that his commitments to Aurora and Ohio had been settled.

Detroit would serve as Fisher's staging ground for the aggressive national expansion of his own image. In Motor City, he served on the board of the Detroit Economic Club, the Detroit Board of Commerce and the Detroit Metropolitan Building Fund. He was also then serving as vice president of both Sinai Hospital and the Greater Detroit Hospital Council and was also a director of the Detroit Symphony and the Detroit Institute of Arts.[18]

Around the same time, Fisher increasingly turned his attention to real estate deals and development in the city, focusing on projects favored by the New Detroit Committee that he, Henry Ford II, and other prominent Detroit business leaders helped create. New Detroit was billed as a "new urban coalition," as it included representatives of the working class and African-American community. However, the group was nevertheless dominated, and bankrolled, by the city's oligarchs.[19]

The committee worked to install a "new political apparatus" whereby the oligarchs behind New Detroit would "enlist the services of radical-sounding advocates of black power and community control, in addition to their tried and true agents in the trade union bureaucracy and the traditional middle-class black leaders."[20] This would give the outward appearance that positive change had been made, while the forces behind New Detroit, including Fisher, would continue to advance what some have termed "the era of regional competition." The book *Detroit: Race and Uneven Development* described this era as follows:

> International economic crisis brought on by world overproduction and increasing international competition is now spawning reorganization in the basic manufacturing industries. To maintain profitability, industrial corporations are shifting blue-collar production work abroad and automating it at home. They are concentrating their domestic capital on administration, research and development, and high-value, high-technology operations. The upshot is a corresponding reorganization of the regional economy according to a new spatial logic. […]
>
> The patterns of racial inequality are related to the uneven spatial distribution of blacks and whites in the metropolitan area. This uneven racial distribution is also related to uneven economic development. Whites are over-represented in economically developing suburban municipalities of Oakland County. Blacks, on the other hand, are over-represented in the central city of Detroit and in Wayne.[21]

Fisher was directly involved in a "government-subsidized downtown real estate boom," which "siphoned off virtually all funds from the reformist programs promised by New Detroit in its infancy, most of which never got off the ground, and enriched the banking and industrial establishment as well as a thin layer of middle-class blacks."[22] Fisher had given the visionary impetus for one of the flagship projects of this effort – the Detroit Renaissance Center, a lavish, $337 million development of seven interconnected skyscrapers undertaken by Henry Ford II, the son of the automobile magnate, a close business associate of Fisher's, and one of the main funders of New Detroit.[23]

Fisher followed the Detroit Renaissance Center with other projects, like the luxurious Riverside West, two 29-story residential towers with amenities including "a view of the Detroit River, tennis courts atop the parking garage, a glass-enclosed swimming pool, a 77-boat marina, a health club, a gatehouse with private access, around-the-clock security, and a downtown People Mover stop near the front door."[24]

In these urban development efforts, Fisher was frequently joined by A. Alfred Taubman. These included the Irving Ranch, the Somerset Mall Apartments in Troy, and the Somerset Inn. Several of these projects also involved Henry Ford II. Taubman and Fisher had first become associates during the 1950s, when Taubman was hired by Aurora Gasoline Company to handle construction of the company's expanding network of Speedway service stations. At the time, Taubman was just a "struggling builder" based in Pontiac, Michigan, and his business with Fisher placed him on the road to financial success. Taubman would then become a builder of small stores before becoming "the nation's preeminent developer of giant regional malls."[25]

Fisher used his carefully crafted public image and business acumen to help sell his real estate projects as fantastic and grand undertakings, not just for Fisher and other members of the city's elite, but for the city as a whole. His seemingly effortless ability to direct the sentiments and attention of the pliant local media wherever and however he chose allowed him to use these projects and the positive press they generated to carefully conceal the cannibalization of American blue-collar industry by himself and his many business associates. His deftness with the press helped turn media attention away from the destruction of the city's industrial base and towards the magnificent residential towers and luxurious riverside apartments that made him, Taubman, and others incredibly wealthy.

However, Fisher's influence extended far beyond his native Detroit. Fisher was a long-time supporter of the Republican Party, and was an intimate of presidents Eisenhower, Nixon, and Ford. He repeatedly offered his services as a diplomatic liaison between America's foreign policy leadership and the State of Israel. In this capacity, more often than not, Fisher lobbied hard, and often successfully, for Israeli policy goals and specifically military aid.

Fisher has been described, for instance, as the driving force behind the Nixon administration's airlift of US weapons to Israel in the 1973 Yom Kippur War. In another example from that period, in 1975, Fisher provided his services to the Ford Administration in spearheading a reconciliation between American and Israeli leaders following the US government's flirtation with the possibility of rolling back military assistance to Israel.[26]

Sallai Meridor, an Israeli politician then serving as chairman of the Jewish Agency, would later refer to Fisher as "the prime mover in canvassing support for Israel during the wars of '67 and '73" as well as "the most prominent leadership figure in mobilizing identification with and support for the State of Israel in world Jewry, and the United States, in particular."[27]

Fisher also, apparently, played a leadership role in his close-knit networks of wealthy business associates. In 1990, *Fortune* magazine wrote that Fisher, described in the article as a "long time Republican powerbroker and big fundraiser for Jewish causes," was the "nexus" (i.e. the center) of the nation's "oldest of the old boys' networks," the most prominent members of which were Taubman, Henry Ford II, and Leslie Wexner.[28]

FROM UNITED BRANDS TO THE UNITED JEWISH APPEAL

That same year, 1975, Fisher became the chairman of United Brands, previously known as United Fruit, and Alfred Taubman would later join him there as a company director. As previously mentioned in earlier chapters, United Brands had a long history of CIA connections, from the CIA's 1954 intervention that overthrew Guatemala's government on behalf of United Brands to the company's lending of two freighters to the CIA's unsuccessful Bay of Pigs invasion of Cuba in 1961.[29] United Brands had also been represented for years by the law firm Sullivan & Cromwell, once run by the Dulles brothers, and was previously headed by J. Peter Grace, who would later be intimately involved in AmeriCares, Covenant House, and the Knights of Malta (see Chapter 10) as well as Samuel Zemurray, who had helped smuggle arms to Zionist paramilitary organizations after World War II (see Chapter 3).

Fisher became chairman of United Brands the year that Eli Black, the corporate raider who took control of the company in 1968, fell to his death from the 44th floor of the Pan Am building in Manhattan. He was reportedly "under great strain because of business pressures" at the time and his death was ruled a suicide.[30] Black's son, Leon, would also become a corporate raider like his father, later founding Apollo Global Management and becoming a close associate of Jeffrey Epstein, who would play a major role at Leon Black's "philanthropic" family foundation.[31]

Fisher would later step down from his position as chairman of United Brands, in 1978, turning the reins over to his close friend Seymour Milstein. He continued to maintain a position on the board of directors, however, as well as a significant interest in the company.

While Fisher was still chair of United Brands, in 1977, a consortium consisting of Fisher, Alfred Taubman, Henry Ford II, Charles and Herbert Allen of Allen &Co., and several other industrialists, real estate giants, and businessmen took control of the famed Irvine Ranch in Orange County, California.[32] Among these additional partners was Howard Marguleas, who sat on the board of United Brands, alongside Fisher and Taubman.[33] Having outbid Mobil Oil for the property, these individuals became the principals in a new corporation established to control the ranch, the Irvine Company.

According to Taubman, the Irvine plan had originated with Charles Allen, who approached him with the idea in 1976. Originally, the entity had been conceived as a straightforward Allen-Taubman partnership. However, when Mobil Oil expressed interest in acquiring the property, Taubman and Allen saw an opportunity to cast a wider net in their search for partners. "The first person I called," Taubman writes, "was Max Fisher, my dear friend from Detroit whose financial resources were matched by his extraordinary business judgment. My next calls were to other close friends: Henry Ford II … and Howard Marguleas."[34]

Taubman and Allen had first become acquainted in the 1950s, when they were introduced to one another by Vincent Peters, generally known as "Jimmy" Peters, who was vice president of the New York City brokerage firm Cushman & Wakefield, Inc.[35] The three men joined forces with real estate tycoon Arthur Rubloff to launch Bayside Properties, which was created to manage a series of West Coast shopping centers they jointly owned.[36]

Both Charles Allen and his brother, Herbert Allen, had long maintained connections to organized crime and intelligence services – the most notable example being their involvement in the companies that dominated Freeport, the largest city on the island of Grand Bahama. Charles Allen, along with the aforementioned Arthur Rubloff, were both among the initial investors in the Grand Bahamas Development Company (DEVCO), which had been formed by Meyer Lansky frontman Louis Chesler.[37] According to Dan Moldea, Chesler himself had first been recruited by Allen into the Bahamian business: "Chesler's attorney, Morris Mac Schwebel, told me 'Allen originally brought the Bahamas deal to Chesler, who became fascinated by the islands.'"[38]

Allen had also helped arrange Chesler's ouster from DEVCO, which saw him replaced by the Miami businessman Max Orovitz.[39] Orovitz was also closely tied to Lansky interests, having previously served on the board of Chesler's General Development Company and later maintaining a position at Major Realty. Both of these were Florida real estate concerns that have been linked to Syndicate money laundering. Major Realty would later become enmeshed in the business empire of an organized crime-linked associate of Leslie Wexner's, Edward DeBartolo.

In 1983, Fisher, Taubman, and Henry Ford II sold their stakes in the Irvine Company, which coincided with their efforts to acquire Sotheby's, the esteemed auction house founded in London in 1744. In pursuing this acquisition, the Fisher-Taubman-Ford group formally added a new partner to their business circle – Leslie Wexner. Wexner, as previously mentioned, had been associated with members of this set for at least a decade, and had first become well acquainted with Taubman in the late 1960s.[40]

That year, Taubman and company would come together to "save" Sotheby's, along with a group of investors that included Ann Getty, Milton Petrie, and Leslie Wexner.[41] They paid $139 million for the auction house, $70 million of which was loaned to the group by Chase Manhattan bank.[42] Some press reports stated that "Henry Ford II was rumored, though never proven, to have greased the wheels by putting a good word in with Queen Elizabeth II."[43]

In 1983, the *New York Times* reported that Taubman's original group of investors that aimed to take over Sotheby's had not included Wexner, but had instead included Max Fisher, Henry Ford II, and a man named David H. Murdock. These men were reported as being the central group looking to take over Sotheby's.[44] Murdock was notably one of the largest shareholders in Occidental Petroleum, led by Murdock's close friend Armand Hammer.[45] His involvement in the Taubman-Fisher network is significant for other reasons, even though he ended up not being part of the final deal.

At the time the Sotheby's deal was taking place, Murdock's investments were managed by a man named Herbert S. "Pug" Winokur Jr., who had previously been involved with Penn Central in the years after its 1970 bankruptcy. Winokur was involved in launching a joint venture between David Murdock's Pacific Holdings Corporation and Peter Kiewet & Sons Inc., which was called the Kiewit-Murdock Investment Corporation.[46] The purpose of this venture was to acquire the Continental Group, Inc., where Ken Lay, best known as the infamous CEO of Enron, would serve as president in the early 1980s.[47] However, the Murdock team-up with Peter Kiewet & Sons is significant as the corporation was identified as one of the main companies that "poured millions into the Franklin Credit Union," then-managed by the child abuser, pedophile, and sex trafficker Larry King (see chapter 10).[48] Kiewet chairman Walter Scott Jr. was also on the board of FirsTier Bank in Nebraska, which provided "cover for" the Franklin Credit Union when it ran overdrafts.[49]

Once Wexner and Petrie, among others, had apparently stepped in to replace David Murdock as part of "Team Taubman," Sotheby Parke Bernet, the parent company of Sotheby's, would officially become controlled by Taubman, who was described at the time as "the 'white knight' that Sotheby's hoped would win in the takeover battle."[50] Taubman and his associates moved quickly to form a new company to manage the international auction house and cement their complete control over the famous international brand.[51]

Within four years, sales at Sotheby's were booming and the Taubman takeover was seen as a success. Part of this was due to Taubman's policy of "offering good customers financing for up to half the most conservative estimate of the value of Sotheby's art."[52] Sotheby's was led during this period and until 1994 by Michael Ainslie. In 1994, Ainslie would become a director at Lehman Brothers, and he served in that capacity until the bank's bankruptcy in 2008.[53]

The late 1980s saw a boom at the auction house with the firm selling impressionist and modern art for over $1.1 billion in both New York and London. By the close of the decade, prices had risen to ridiculous levels and its auctions attracted global media attention. In 1988, the company went public for the second time. The global recession at the beginning of the 1990s had little effect on the auction house's business and Sotheby's would continue to grow considerably throughout the rest of the decade.

However, the recession of the early 1990s had negatively impacted Taubman's larger business empire and he began engaging in suspect business methods to make more money through Sotheby's. In 2000, government prosecutors began investigating whether, in 1995 and perhaps earlier, Sotheby's had conspired with its rival auction house, Christie's, to split business and fix commissions.[54] Documents subsequently presented in court showed that Sir Anthony Tennant, the former chairman of Christie's auction house, turned up in the date-books and appointment schedules of Taubman at least a dozen times between 1993 to 1996.[55]

Once the price fixing between Sotheby's and Christie's was discovered, Taubman and the chief executive of Sotheby's during this time, Diana D. Brooks, were investigated by the FBI and subsequently prosecuted. The prosecution offered leniency to the first conspirator in the case to confess and Christie's quickly confessed and acknowledged its role in the situation, sealing Taubman's fate.

Taubman ended up serving time at the Federal Medical Center in Rochester, Minnesota, and he was prohibited from conducting business from prison.[56] Diana

Brooks was also found guilty for her own admitted role in the scheme, but was spared prison time and instead was sentenced to three years of probation, including six months of house arrest.[57] At the Taubman trial, Taubman's lawyer presented dozens of letters written on Taubman's behalf. One of those letters was written by Leslie Wexner, where he called Taubman "the best person I know."[58]

In the lead up to Taubman's arrest, Ghislaine Maxwell was a regular visitor to both Sotheby's and Christie's auction houses. The *Daily Mail* stated in an August 2020 article that Maxwell "trawled high-end art galleries and auction houses for pretty 'gallerinas' to meet Jeffrey Epstein." The article goes on to state that "Ms. Maxwell regularly attended events at Christie's and Sotheby's on both sides of the Atlantic." It quotes an anonymous, former friend of Maxwell's as saying:

> She [Maxwell] would go to every art gallery opening and was a familiar presence at auctions and parties at Christie's and Sotheby's, [...] The art world is full of pretty young girls and many of them are young and broke. You'd see her everywhere, often with beautiful blonde girls in tow.[59]

It is worth explicitly noting that Maxwell engaged in these activities on Epstein's behalf while Wexner, Epstein's principal benefactor, was on the Sotheby's board and while his close friend, Taubman, controlled the auction house. Ghislaine's role in recruiting "gallerinas" and other young women and girls for Jeffrey Epstein and their sex trafficking operation is discussed in detail in chapter 18.

A year after the acquisition of Sotheby's, in 1984, Fisher relinquished his remaining United Brands stock by selling it to Carl Lindner Jr., the secretive Cincinnati businessman behind American Financial Corporation.[60] These shares, along with those of Seymour Milstein, allowed Lindner to take control of United Brands in February 1984. The company has since become Chiquita Brands International.

A month later, Oliver North would record in his notebook that United Brands had issued a grant to the National Defense Council Foundation – founded and run by NSC staffer and low-intensity warfare expert F. Andrew Messing – "for the study of Mexican political center [*sic*]."[61] Like Messing himself, principals of the National Defense Council Foundation were closely tied to the Iran-Contra affair. For instance, one of the directors was John K. Singlaub, who worked closely with both the Contras and American mercenaries involved with the Contras. Singlaub's Contra activities and his role at GeoMiliTech were mentioned in Chapter 7.

Another figure at the National Defense Council Foundation was J. Herbert Humphreys, a Memphis businessman and financier of Civilian Material Assistance, a paramilitary unit deployed to Honduras to aid the Contras.[62]

This was one of two mentions related to Carl Lindner Jr. found in North's notebook in March 1984. The second was a reference to a meeting held at the Ocean Reef Club – a Florida luxury hang-out owned by Lindner.[63] As previously noted in Chapter 7, the Ocean Reef also played a role in the cocaine smuggling activities of Jack Raymond DeVoe. As one 1985 news report recounted: "…the cocaine was taken to the Bahamas in large airplanes. The cocaine was hidden inside the wings of smaller planes that landed at south Florida airports to clear customs. The cocaine, unloaded at the posh Ocean Reef Resort in Key Largo, totaled more than 15,000 pounds, according to the state indictment."[64] The bank accounts utilized for laundering DeVoe's proceeds had been set up by Lawrence Freeman – a veteran of Castle Bank & Trust, the infamous bank set up by CIA banker Paul Helliwell.[65]

At the time that these various moves were being made, Fisher developed a cozy relationship with President Ronald Reagan – continuing the tradition of advising Republican presidents on Middle Eastern and Jewish matters. In 1980, he, along with Taubman, organized a fundraiser dinner for Reagan – with tickets priced at $1,000 each.[66]

During the Reagan years, i.e. the 1980s, Fisher also became a member of the board of overseers of the B'nai B'rith International, where he served alongside Edgar Bronfman and the notorious banker Edmond Safra. It was during this same period that Safra's bank, Republic National, became embroiled in the financial activities of the Iran-Contra network and with BCCI (see Chapter 7).

Also in the 1980s, Fisher was instrumental in covert *aliyah*, or immigration to Israel, operations that brought thousands of Ethiopian Jews to Israel, specifically Operation Moses (1984) and later Operation Solomon (1991).[67] Fisher and Gordon Zacks, who – like Fisher – was an accomplished businessman, ardent Zionist, and adviser to US presidents, "provided the political fire-power for the CIA to team up with the Mossad," with those intelligence agencies executing much of the operation.[68] George H.W. Bush, who counted on both Zacks and Fisher as advisers, was also involved with Operation Moses while serving as US Vice President and it had been Fisher who had personally involved him in the operation.[69]

Roughly a decade earlier, in 1970, Fisher had recreated along with Louis Pincus, the Jewish Agency, which had been the operative branch of the World Zionist Organization (WZO) and had played a major role in the founding and development of the State of Israel. Its role in the smuggling of arms to Zionist paramilitaries in Palestine after World War II was detailed in Chapter 3. When it was re-launched by Fisher and Pincus, its leadership was divided among the WZO, the United Jewish Appeal and the United Israel Appeal. Fisher would hold leadership roles at the organization for many years.[70]

Louis Pincus was the first managing director of El Al airlines, the main airline historically used by Israeli intelligence for covert operations, including Operation Moses.[71] Leaked cables from South African intelligence in 2015 confirmed this to an extent, as those documents revealed that South Africa's national intelligence agency believed that Israel used El Al "as cover for its intelligence agencies."[72] Those documents also note that "Israeli intelligence agents posed as El Al employees" and that those employees conducted "security operations at the airport that were illegal under South African law."[73] After Pincus' death in 1973, Fisher would manage the Pincus Fund in his memory, which was largely financed by the Israeli government and the Jewish Agency.[74]

Notably, Leslie Wexner's father-in-law, Yehuda Koppel, after starting his career in the British-led Jewish Brigade and transitioning into a leading role in the Haganah, opened the first US office of El Al airlines, expanding the front company's presence into the United States.[75] It is also worth noting that Livia Chertoff, the mother of former head of the Department of Homeland Security Michael Chertoff, was a flight attendant for El Al and participated in Mossad operations, like Operation Magic Carpet, while working for the airline.[76] Michael Chertoff later became intimately involved in an Orwellian company funded by both Epstein and former Israeli Prime Minister Ehud Barak named Carbyne911 whose founding leadership was replete with Israeli intelligence veterans and assets (see chapter 21).[77]

In addition to the Jewish Agency, Fisher would also hold major leadership roles at the United Jewish Appeal as well as the United Israel Appeal.[78] Both of those organizations would play a major role in the affairs of Fisher's protégé Leslie Wexner during the 1980s. Wexner, for instance, was "one of the largest individual contributors to the United Jewish Appeal in America" by 1986.[79] The United Jewish Appeal has since merged with United Israel Appeal, which was later headed by Fisher's daughter Jane Sherman.[80] By 1987, Wexner had also become vice chairman of the United Jewish Appeal and the eventual creator of the Wexner Foundation's Wexner Heritage Program. Rabbi Herbert Friedman was also a former CEO of the United Jewish Appeal.[81] The Wexner Foundation's creation is discussed in the next chapter.

THE SHAPIRO MURDER

In March 1985, a lawyer in Columbus, Ohio named Arthur Shapiro was shot and murdered at point-blank range in broad daylight. Per police reports, he was eating breakfast in his car with an unidentified man. Shortly after 9:30am that morning, Shapiro sprung from his car with the unknown man also abruptly leaving the vehicle to give chase. The man fired his handgun at Shapiro, grazing his hip and arm before Shapiro reached a condominium and began pounding on the door. The man, described as wearing all black and running with a limp, then shot Shapiro twice in the head at close range before fleeing the scene in Shapiro's car. The car was found the next morning in a mall parking lot. It had been wiped clean of all fingerprints. The murder was regarded by police as a professional hit and one that was likely tied to organized crime.[82]

Local authorities suspected that Shapiro's murderer had been hired by Columbus-based accountant Berry L. Kessler. Two of Kessler's employees from this period later alleged to the *Columbus Dispatch* that they had seen a man matching the killer's description visit Kessler's office the next day and had seen Kessler counting a large pile of money before this man had arrived.[83] However, since the killer's description was mainly based on clothing alone, this would mean the killer came to receive what is presumed to be payment for a contract killing in the same or very similar attire in which he committed the murder a day later. This seems unlikely given the presumed "professional" nature of the hit and hitman. It is also not clear how long after the murder these former employees of Kessler relayed this information to the *Dispatch.* A review of other *Dispatch* reporting on the matter suggests that such claims were not made until the early 1990s, when Kessler was arrested for an unrelated contract killing after the FBI got involved.

In 1991, Kessler was charged in Florida with arranging the slaying of his business partner John Deroo. He was convicted for that crime in 1994 and died in prison in 2005.[84] Kessler was caught in the Deroo case through the use of an FBI informant, leading Kessler's attorney to argue that Kessler had been "tricked by a government informant into complicity in a criminal act."[85] Per a *Columbus Dispatch* article entitled "Informant led way in Florida arrest," it was only when Kessler was charged in connection with Deroo's slaying in 1993 that he became the "prime suspect" in the Shapiro case, though he had previously been an initial suspect. However, Kessler was never charged in connection with Shapiro's murder.[86] Police later stated that no suspect in the Shapiro murder had ever been eliminated from their suspect list.

Kessler had been convicted, along with two co-conspirators, of helping Arthur Shapiro file false tax returns in 1986, a year after the murder. Shapiro, shortly before his death, had been named an unindicted co-conspirator in that tax case and was killed a day before he was set to testify.[87]

As an unindicted co-conspirator, Shapiro would not have been indicted himself, but could have provided damaging information to those who had been indicted during his planned testimony. This offers a potential motive for Shapiro's murder, as it would have been in the interest of Kessler and other co-conspirators, who are unnamed in *Dispatch* or other media reports of the time, to see to it that Shapiro did not testify. Yet, what is odd about this court case, including the fact that a key witness had been murdered in what police referred to as a "mob style murder" or "mafia hit," is that Kessler and his co-conspirators were only sentenced to probation and did not serve prison time for the charges, which were centered around helping Shapiro file false tax returns from 1971 to 1976.[88]

This raises several questions. Why was Shapiro an unindicted co-conspirator if he was the one actually filing the fraudulent tax returns, especially given that those who were charged were charged with aiding Shapiro? Does that mean he had planned to testify about other individuals involved in the scheme who were not yet part of this particular case in exchange for avoiding charges? Also, why were those convicted given such a lenient sentence, despite the high-profile murder of the key witness? After all, the most likely motive for Shapiro's murder was to prevent him from testifying in this specific case.

Other questions are raised by Kessler's past history prior to the Shapiro slaying. Kessler had previously come under suspicion after the murder of his business partner Frank Yassenoff and his fiancée Ella Rich in 1970, but Kessler was never charged. Both Yassenoff and Rich had been found dead in Yassenoff's car in his driveway. Two years later, in 1972, Kessler was taken to court by the IRS for failing to provide records of an Ohio-based construction company, Brittany Builders, where Kessler was secretary and thus custodian of those records.[89] Kessler was first ordered to provide those records, but that decision was later dismissed in 1973. One of the lawyers defending Kessler in these cases, Joseph F. Dillon of Detroit, Michigan, later represented Detroit mafia figure Anthony

Giacalone on federal tax evasion charges in 1976.[90] A decade later, Dillon was also involved in the 1986 case involving Kessler and Arthur Shapiro's filing of fraudulent tax returns.

In 1972, the records of Brittany Builders were wanted in connection with a tax liability investigation into Carl and Sandra Neufeld and the requested records ranged from the years 1967 to 1969. Brittany Builders was incorporated in 1967 by Joseph L. Eisenberg, a Columbus area lawyer and B'nai B'rith member, and was cancelled as a company in 1970, the year of Yassenoff's death.[91] Local media reports cite Yassenoff as having been president of Brittany Builders. Yassenoff's son, Solly Yassenoff, later told the *Columbus Dispatch* that he knew for a fact that his father had been involved in making bribes to public officials in connection with real estate deals while he had been president of Brittany Builders.[92]

A year later, in 1973, Columbus police claimed that Yassenoff and Rich were killed during a robbery, a claim they had not made at the time of their deaths. However, this claim only emerged when police reported that the prime suspect in that robbery and their murders, Joseph Bogen, had been killed by his partner, Rudolph Glenn. Police also stated that Bogen, Yassenoff, and Rich had all been killed with the same gun due to ballistics tests they had conducted, meaning that the gun Glenn had used to kill Bogen was also the weapon they believed was used to kill Yassenoff and Rich. Yet, police claimed that the gun in question was "never recovered" even though they could have ostensibly obtained it from Glenn. Glenn was cleared of any wrongdoing in Bogen's death due to a self-defense plea and the murders of Yassenoff and Rich are still classified as unsolved.[93]

It later emerged that Kessler was heavily involved in resolving issues related to Yassenoff's estate after his death, with Arthur Shapiro also being heavily involved as he was the attorney who served as the executor of Yassenoff's will. Kessler and a woman named Marjorie Dyer were the only witnesses who had signed Yassenoff's will and Kessler had also come under suspicion when Dyer died in a suspicious auto accident. It was later reported by the *Columbus Dispatch* that Kessler, Shapiro, and Yassenoff had all been "connected through a maze of business dealings."[94]

Perhaps most unsettling of all is the fact that, when police researchers were looking for the files on the Yassenoff murder case during the investigation into Shapiro's murder, they were unable to locate them.[95] This suggests that some police official or officials had deliberately removed or destroyed those documents. The interconnectedness of Yassenoff, Shapiro, and Kessler and other aforementioned information suggests that members of local law enforcement were involved in a series of cover ups in Yassenoff's, Rich's, and Shapiro's murders and potentially in the death of Marjorie Dyer as well. Did Berry Kessler, an accountant, really wield enough influence in Ohio to avoid being heavily scrutinized for not just one but several murders? It seems unlikely.

In the case of the Shapiro murder, more evidence later emerged to suggest that a cover-up had indeed taken place. The main evidence in question emerged in 1996 when then-Columbus Police Chief James Jackson was under investigation for corruption. As a part of that investigation, Jackson was charged with the "improper disposal of a public record for ordering the destruction of a report on the Shapiro homicide."[96]

The report had been written by Elizabeth A. Leupp, an analyst with Columbus police's Organized Crime Bureau, and sent to the commander of the Intelligence Bureau, Curtis K. Marcum, on June 6, 1991. James Jackson quickly suppressed the document and then ordered its destruction less than a month after it had been written. According to reports, Marcum bypassed protocol in order to carry out Jackson's order. The charge was upheld by the Civil Service Commission and Jackson received a five-day suspension for destroying a public record.[97] Jackson had justified his actions by claiming that the report was "filled with wild speculation about prominent business leaders" and "potentially libelous."[98]

Though the document in question was believed to have been destroyed, it was later obtained by Bob Fitrakis – attorney, journalist and executive director of the Columbus Institute for Contemporary Journalism – after Fitrakis was accidentally sent a copy of the report in 1998 as part of a public records request.[99] When confronted with the document after Fitrakis reported on its contents, Jackson responded "I thought I got rid of it," adding that the report was "scandalous." However, another high-ranking law enforcement official familiar with the Shapiro murder investigation told Fitrakis at the time that "the report is a viable and valuable document in an open murder investigation."

The report is officially titled "Shapiro Homicide Investigation: Analysis and Hypothesis" (henceforth referred to as the Shapiro Murder File in this book).[100] The report was most likely suppressed to protect two of Ohio's wealthiest men who are both named in the document – Leslie Wexner and Edward DeBartolo Sr. Notably, the document does not mention Berry L. Kessler once.[101] It does, however, mention John W. "Jack" Kessler, former Columbus City Council

President, and co-founder of the New Albany company alongside Wexner, as well as Wexner associate Jerry Hammond, and former Columbus City Council member Les Wright. Jack Kessler would go on to become a board member of Banc One and later JPMorgan, where he played a key role in the hiring of current JPMorgan CEO Jamie Dimon.[102] Notably, JPMorgan would be the main bank used by Epstein for several years following the collapse of Bear Stearns in 2008.

The document notes that the law firm where Shapiro worked, called Schwartz, Shapiro, Kelm & Warren at the time of his murder but later called Schwartz, Kelm, Warren & Rubenstein, was representing Wexner's company The Limited. Arthur Shapiro, prior to and at the time of his death, managed The Limited's account with the law firm, and was in direct contact with Robert Morosky, the top man at The Limited after Wexner. Morosky left The Limited in 1987 and had previously been referred to by *New York Magazine* as "one of those real demons of American business."[103] Stanley Schwartz, a senior partner at Shapiro's firm, took over the account following Shapiro's murder.

Shortly after Shapiro was killed, per the document, Schwartz incorporated Samax Trading Corporation, which was controlled by Wexner, with the express purpose of engaging in "business liquidation." Through Samax, the report notes, Wexner acquired 70% of Omni Oil/Omni Exploration and was elected to its board of directors along with Schwartz that same year.

However, Ohio state records show there is more to the story. Schwartz incorporated the Samax Trading Corporation and Samax Trading Company within one month of each other in 1987, per state records. Samax Trading Company did not adopt the name Samax until 1987 and had previously been called JAS Liquidation Inc. Company records include a consent letter stating that the board of directors of Lewex Inc., another company controlled by Wexner, had given its consent for JAS to adopt Samax as its trade name.[104] Thus, it was JAS, not Samax that was incorporated in 1985, but the company does not appear to have been incorporated in Ohio as it does not appear in that state's records, despite its address being listed as within Columbus, Ohio. It is possible that the company was reincorporated in Ohio under a different name, Samax, two years after its initial creation, potentially to obfuscate its previous activities in liquidating "distressed businesses." One month after JAS became the Samax Trading Company, the Samax Trading Corporation was also incorporated as an Ohio corporation by Stanley Schwartz as a holding company for shares in Omni Oil.

Company records note that the trade name, Samax Trading Corporation, had been used by Schwartz and Wexner since July 1985.[105]

The year that JAS became Samax, 1987, Schwartz also incorporated the Wexner Investment Company. Harold Levin, Wexner's top money manager from 1983 to 1990, was its initial president according to the Shapiro Murder File. Levin was also listed as Vice President of PFI Leasing, which shared the same telephone number and address as the Wexner Investment Company. PFI Leasing was incorporated by Levin in 1983, the year he began managing Wexner's fortune.[106] Records list the address of Schwartz, Kelm, Warren & Rubenstein, then listed as Schwartz, Shapiro, Kelm & Warren. The Shapiro Murder File also notes that, in 1986, Richard Rubenstein, of Schwartz, Kelm, Warren & Rubenstein, was given a speeding ticket while driving a vehicle registered to PFI Leasing Company.

The Wexner Investment Company, at the time the Shapiro Murder File was written in 1991, also shared a different office with Omni Oil and Intercontinental Realty. Intercontinental Realty was incorporated the same year as the Wexner Investment Company with the involvement of Dorothy Snow, an attorney at Schwartz, Kelm, Warren & Rubenstein.[107] The name is somewhat similar to the name of Epstein's main company in the 1980s – Intercontinental Assets Group.

At the time the Shapiro Murder File was written, the head of Wexner Investment Company and Wexner's new money manager was Jeffrey Epstein, whose name is notably not mentioned in the Shapiro Murder File. Crucially, the year 1987, when many of these changes with Samax and the creation of the Investment Company took place, is the very year that Jeffrey Epstein began to serve as a financial adviser to Wexner.[108] Levin was forced out of the Wexner Investment Company in 1990 after Epstein was put in charge, effectively demoting Levin and prompting him to resign a few months afterward. It is unknown how involved Epstein was in these different entities from 1987 until he formally became Wexner's money manager in 1990. However, Epstein must have significantly benefitted Wexner during this period to warrant such a rapid and dramatic promotion within a 3-year span and he may have been involved in some of the business decisions detailed in this report.

Notably, once Epstein had taken over as Wexner's top money manager, PFI Leasing was dissolved in 1990. Records of its dissolution list Wexner as Director and President of PFI Leasing and Epstein as its Vice President.[109] Levin had been delisted as the company's agent just a few weeks prior.[110] Both Samax companies were similarly dissolved in 1992, though the records of their dissolution are not publicly available.

Just before Epstein became involved with Wexner's inner circle, in 1986, John W. Kessler and Wexner co-founded the New Albany Company. The Shapiro Murder File report notes that the Wexner Investment Company and PFI Leasing shared a telephone number and office on the 37th floor of Columbus' Huntington Center, which is also the address listed for John W. Kessler Company and the New Albany Company (The significance of the Huntington Center was discussed in the previous chapter). A 1993 article in the *Cleveland Plain Dealer* and cited by Bob Fitrakis describes the origins of the New Albany Company as follows:

> Legend has it that in 1986 or so, Jack and Les were cruising in Les' Land Rover near New Albany, about 12 miles from downtown Columbus. They saw acre after acre of empty farmland. Virgin soil. And thus the billionaire, getting a vision thing, declared to his buddy, this will be my new home.[111]

That same report states that "Wexner and Kessler formed the New Albany Co. and spun off a bunch of paper corporations to cover their footprints. Then their minions knocked on doors and made the proverbial offers you couldn't refuse." The aforementioned business linkages between the New Albany Company, PFI Leasing, the Wexner Investment Company, the Samax companies, Omni Oil, and Intercontinental Realty are worth reconsidering given this context, especially considering that – per the Columbus police – they were suspected of being somehow connected to the organized crime style murder of Arthur Shapiro.

It is worth noting that Epstein himself was involved in New Albany as well. By the late 1980s, he was a general partner in New Albany's real estate holding company (called New Albany Property) and he had put at least a few million dollars into the project. Fitrakis told *New York Magazine* in 2002 that Epstein's role in New Albany was significant, stating "Before Epstein came along in 1988, the financial preparations and groundwork for the New Albany development were a total mess […] Epstein cleaned everything up, as well as serving Wexner in other capacities."[112] Epstein would later obtain a 23-room mansion and estate at the New Albany development from Wexner in 1992.[113]

Per Fitrakis, New Albany's success required changes be made to Columbus city policy as well as zoning laws.[114] This is alluded to in the Shapiro Murder File as having been accomplished through questionable investments made by a Wexner-controlled entity in a jazz club run by former City Council member Jerry

Hammond and his successor on the council, Les Wright. The Wexner-controlled entity in this case was called SNJC Holding Inc., incorporated in 1987, and gives the same address as the Wexner Investment Company at the Huntington Center. The Shapiro Murder File then cites circumstantial evidence regarding how Hammond was mysteriously able to make payments on a luxury apartment despite not having enough known income for such payments, suggesting a bribe had been paid. Hammond had also been "swept up in an emotional debate about the Wexley luxury housing project [i.e., the New Albany project] in 1988" and was accused by local officials of selling out the city's interests to benefit his "friend" Leslie Wexner.

Even though New Albany Company managed to secure these local policy changes, regardless of how it was actually accomplished, some of its subsequent projects were later accused of acting in complete disregard for existing state and city law, though no action was taken against the company.[115]

WEXNER AND THE MOB

The Shapiro Murder File also notes that the motive for Shapiro's murder was most likely related to the IRS investigation, stating that Shapiro was due to appear before a grand jury in connection with that investigation the day after his murder occurred. It states "while the motive remains unclear, the suspect is an individual who (a) knew Shapiro and had some personal/professional contact with him; (b) would benefit from his death or from ensuring his silence; (c) had close contact with LCN [La Cosa Nostra – mafia, or organized crime] figures or trusted LCN associates; and (d) had the personal financial resources to afford the cost of the contract ("hit")."

The Shapiro Murder File hypothesizes that Wexner and/or his associates were involved in ordering or financing the "hit" on Shapiro. It discusses several transactions of questionable ethics and legality involving associates of Wexner, specifically Kessler, Wright, and Hammond, and some involving Wexner himself. Regarding these transactions, the report states that "Arthur Shapiro could have answered too many of these sort of questions, and might have been forced to answer them in his impending Grand Jury hearing; Stanley Schwartz might now be able to answer some of the same questions for the same reason, but does not face a Grand Jury, is immersed in the pattern [of questionable Wexner-linked/Wexner-adjacent transactions] himself, and now has a powerful incentive to maintain discretion."

The most important part of the Shapiro Murder File, from the perspective of this book, is related to the report's discussion of Wexner associates with ties to organized crime, specifically the Genovese crime family. Those associates are Edward DeBartolo Sr. and Frank Walsh.

Edward DeBartolo Sr. was born in 1909 and got his start working for his stepfather's construction business, Michael DeBartolo Construction.[116] In the 1940s, DeBartolo founded his own company, Edward J. DeBartolo Corporation, and eventually became a real estate baron, mainly of suburban shopping malls and complexes. Some of his earlier ventures, such as the 1960 purchase of the Thistledown racetrack near Cleveland, Ohio, involved the Emprise Corporation, which was indicted and convicted in 1972 for racketeering and serving as a front for organized crime.[117] In 1976, *Cleveland Magazine* described DeBartolo's business empire as “deliberately labyrinthian” with each venture encapsulated as a separate corporation, some of them being joint ventures with the real estate arm of a major retailer.[118]

DeBartolo appears in the Shapiro Murder File listed as a Youngstown, Ohio-based real estate developer associated with Leslie Wexner. The report states that the two men “have a well-known history of business and investment partnerships, and in the late 1980s, twice attempted jointly to acquire Carter-Hawley-Hale Department Stores,” with that partnership having received considerable press attention at the time.[119] The Shapiro Murder File goes on to state that DeBartolo is an “associate of the Genovese-LaRocca crime family in Pittsburgh,” information that – per other indications in the report – seems to have been sourced from the Pennsylvania Crime Commission. At the time of the Shapiro murder, the boss of the Genovese crime family was Tony Salerno.

There is much more to DeBartolo’s links to organized crime than those mentioned in the Shapiro Murder File. According to investigative journalist Dan Moldea, a 1981 report from US Customs Service special agent William F. Burda asserted that DeBartolo’s business empire was “operating money-laundering schemes, realising huge profits from narcotics, guns, skimming operations, and other organized-crime-related activities” through Florida-based banks in which DeBartolo had controlling interests.[120] Burda further claimed that DeBartolo’s organization, specifically the parts of his empire based in Florida, had reported “ties to [Carlos] Marcello, [Santos] Trafficante, and [Meyer] Lansky and, because of its enormous wealth and power has high-ranking political influence and affiliations.”[121]

An earlier report authored by Burda and cited by Moldea stated that “Meyer Lansky, the financial wizard of OC [Organized Crime], is now considered by most to be almost senile and getting out of the business. His successor and new financial wizard is recognized as Edward J. DeBartolo.”[122]

The ties of DeBartolo to criminal activity as mentioned by Burda’s reports are supported by other documents. For instance, a confidential report from Florida Department of Law Enforcement (FDLE) stated that the “WFC Corporation is a cover for the largest narcotics operation in the world” and further states that the organization, under federal and Florida state investigation in the late 1970s, had been heavily influenced by Santos Trafficante.[123] WFC Corporation was previously mentioned in chapter 7.

In 1979, Florida authorities were investigating "spurious loans made by WFC Corporation from its Grand Cayman Island subsidiary, through Metropolitan Bank and Trust Company of Tampa, a banking institution whose majority stockholder is Edward DeBartolo Sr."[124] DeBartolo had bought Metropolitan Bank in 1975 and had such a strong position that he was able to unilaterally force the resignation of the bank's president in 1981, with other board members having no say in the matter whatsoever. The bank collapsed a year later, which bank leadership attributed to bad real estate loans.[125] At the time, it was the largest bank failure in Florida history.[126]

Furthermore, DeBartolo had appeared on the Justice Department's 1970 Organized Crime Principal Subjects List, which listed individuals with suspected links to organized crime.[127] In the late 1970s, an FBI wiretap of Los Angeles-based mob figure Jimmy Fratianno picked up Fratianno's claims that DeBartolo was "very friendly" with Ronald Carabbia, the mob boss of DeBartolo's hometown of Youngstown, Ohio.[128]

Wexner's cozy association with DeBartolo is thus highly significant. While the Shapiro Murder File reports there is a connection between DeBartolo and organized crime, it offers little in the way of specifics, whereas other sources, including the work of Dan Moldea, elucidates this connection to a considerable degree. Indeed, this additional information shows that DeBartolo worked with known to mob figures throughout the country and was close to several high-ranking members in prominent organized crime networks, as well as allegations that he had taken on the mantle of Meyer Lansky himself.

DeBartolo was one of Ohio's richest men during his lifetime and, like Wexner, lived his life above the law, having investigations and charges dismissed left and right due to his power and political influence. That legacy has continued with DeBartolo's son and heir, Edward J. DeBartolo Jr., who was pardoned by Donald Trump right before the former president left office.[129]

Another close business partner of Wexner's mentioned in the Shapiro Murder File, Francis J. "Frank" Walsh, similarly had ties to organized crime, specifically the Genovese crime family. As the Shapiro Murder File notes, Walsh was "owner and chief executive officer of Walsh Trucking Company out of New Jersey" and "Walsh Trucking is/has been [the] primary transporter for The Limited in Columbus." The document goes on to note that Walsh was under investigation by the New York Organized Crime Task Force in 1984 and all notices sent to Walsh in connection with this investigation were addressed to Frank Walsh Financial Resources at One Limited Parkway, Columbus, Ohio – the same address of Wexner's The Limited.

In addition to what is mentioned in the Shapiro Murder File, Frank Walsh was charged in 1988 by then-District Attorney Samuel Alito Jr., now a US Supreme Court Justice, with paying thousands to officers of a corrupt Teamsters union as well as members of the Genovese crime family in exchange for a "sweetheart" union contract.[130] This corroborates the claim in the Shapiro Murder File that Walsh had ties to the Genovese crime family.

Per Alito, the case "illustrated how certain seemingly legitimate businesses are able to get a jump on their competitors by entering into an agreement with organized crime and it illustrates how organized crime is able to get enormous profits by entering into an agreement with seemingly legitimate businesses." Tony Salerno, the Genovese crime boss, was listed as an unindicted co-conspirator in the case.[131]

After the charges were filed, Walsh was arrested at his home. According to his lawyer, Walsh – at that point – had somehow become a real estate developer worth between $60 and $100 million, while Walsh Trucking, among other companies of his, had been forced into bankruptcy by an antitrust suit. Walsh pled guilty to the charges and was sentenced to four years of prison in 1990.[132]

Walsh was again accused of corruption years later in 2003, when a Teamsters Union filed internal charges against a member of their executive board, Donato DeSanti. DeSanti was accused of "helping Walsh, whom he knew to be a convicted labor racketeer with ties to organized crime, manipulate officers of [Teamsters Local] 107 into cooperating with a scheme DeSanti knew, or should have known, was of questionable legality."[133] The union further charged DeSanti with hiding Walsh's past conviction and organized crime association from union members.

These connections, as laid out in the Shapiro Murder File, present Arthur Shapiro's 1985 murder in a different light than what is conventionally reported. While Berry L. Kessler may well have played a role in Arthur Shapiro's death, it seems unlikely that he had the political pull to push police to cover-up not one, but three apparently connected murders – Arthur Shapiro, Frank Yassenoff, and Yassenoff's fiancée Ella Rich – or the financial resources to pay for a professional contract killing. Given the evidence, it appears that Kessler was a deeply corrupt operator, but most likely a middleman for the dirty deed, if he was in fact involved in orchestrating a "hit" on Shapiro.

These concerns appear to be what led Columbus Police investigators to produce a document like the Shapiro Murder File in the first place. Its subsequent suppression and attempted destruction suggest that the scrutiny aimed squarely at Leslie Wexner was too close for comfort for those in law enforcement seeking to protect the criminal nexus that was ultimately responsible for Shapiro's death.

That the police would move to protect Wexner isn't that surprising considering the billionaire's cozy ties to area law enforcement are well known, with local police doubling as his security staff at his New Albany home and with the chief of police even vacationing at Wexner's home in Vail, Colorado. Wexner's involvement with suspect entities and actors continued well after the Shapiro case, with Jeffrey Epstein being the most infamous. Yet, the blatant murder of The Limited's lawyer under these circumstances is the first documented instance and, arguably, one of the more important.

MEETING EPSTEIN

Leslie Wexner's relationship with Jeffrey Epstein has mystified mainstream media outlets, executives of The Limited, and other Wexner associates, friends, and acquaintances. Years after the pair "officially" parted ways during Epstein's first arrest and subsequent imprisonment, in 2019, the *New York Times* reported that, from the very beginning, "Wexner's friends and colleagues were mystified as to why a renowned businessman in the prime of his career would place such trust in an outsider with a thin résumé and scant financial experience," with that "outsider" being Jeffrey Epstein.[134]

Yet, as noted in the last two chapters, Epstein was hardly the "outsider" that mainstream media and his associates – from the close to the distant – have strove to portray him since his second arrest, and subsequent death, in 2019.

Indeed, "outsider" Epstein was reportedly introduced to Wexner around 1985 by a well-connected insurance executive named Robert Meister who was a "close friend" of Wexner's at the time.[135] Though most media reports on the Wexner-Epstein relationship refer to Meister as being an executive at Aon Insurance, at the time he allegedly made this introduction he had recently become vice chairman of Alexander & Alexander (A&A), "the second largest insurance brokerage company, and the largest retail insurance broker, in the world."[136]

Since around 1958, A&A had been a major provider of consulting services to W.R. Grace & Co., the company led by J. Peter Grace. Grace was discussed in Chapter 10 in connection with both Covenant House and AmeriCares. In the early 1990s, A&A "was awarded a $350 million insurance brokerage contract by the government of Kuwait to find marine and war-risk insurance for $500 million worth of cargo to be shipped from all over the world as part of an international relief effort," the same relief effort that involved both AmeriCares and the CIA-linked Southern Air Transport also discussed in Chapter 10.[137]

Meister joined A&A at a time when it was particularly troubled. The company's troubles in 1985 were largely related to its acquisition of the Alexander Howden group, which – soon after it was acquired – revealed it was missing around $50 million in assets that had been apparently embezzled and "diverted to corporations based in Panama and Liechtenstein."[138] Could Meister have met

Epstein through Epstein's purported job as a "financial bounty hunter" who was equally capable of tracking down, as well as helping to hide, embezzled funds?

It may well have been the case. According to Meister, Epstein had "struck up a conversation" with the insurance mogul during "a commercial flight to Palm Beach" and Meister remembered "being impressed with the young banker."[139] However, at the time that Meister had met Epstein, he had already left Bear Stearns and was managing his financial "bounty hunting" firm IAG.

Not long after their initial introduction, Meister claims that Epstein invited him to play racquetball and began "turning up in the steam room at [Meister's] gym while he was using it." The two men apparently became well acquainted and, soon, Epstein asked Meister to introduce him to Wexner, claiming that "he had learned Wexner's money manager was stealing from him."[140] Epstein offered his financial "bounty hunter" skills and said he could "help recover those funds."[141] Per Meister, he subsequently arranged a meeting between Epstein and Wexner at Wexner's Colorado vacation home.

Unfortunately, Meister is the only person to have made claims about these events and, as a result, there is no way to corroborate them. However, Wexner subsequently claimed in a statement after Epstein's 2019 arrest that he had only ever hired Epstein because friends of his, presumably Meister among them, "recommended him as a knowledgeable financial professional."[142] If true, this would further suggest that Meister, perhaps at A&A's behest, may have employed Epstein's "bounty hunting" services.

Meister has stated his relationship with Epstein ended not long after he made the introduction between the two men and that he began spending much less time with Wexner when the Ohio billionaire declined to heed his alleged warnings about Epstein. However, Meister's claims may not be entirely accurate. Indeed, in 1990, roughly five years after he introduced Wexner and Epstein, it was Meister's wife Wendy who introduced Wexner to Abigail Koppel, a corporate lawyer at the London office of the powerful, white-shoe law firm Davis Polk (now Davis Polk & Wardwell).

As previously mentioned, Abigail's father was a major figure in the Haganah who opened the first American office of El Al Airlines, a frequent front for Israeli intelligence. At the time, Davis Polk was representing Wexner's company, The Limited. Thus, the Meisters were still connected enough to Wexner to make this important introduction at that time. Notably, Epstein was also involved with aspects of Wexner's relationship with Abigail, having reportedly arranged their prenuptial agreement and attended their January 1993 wedding.

Regardless of the exact truth of the Meisters' relationship with Wexner following the introduction to Epstein, Epstein's entry into Wexner's world would dramatically alter his behavior as well as his public profile. For instance, Wexner began dying his hair, hiring a live-in personal trainer, and began dressing differently soon after Epstein came into his life, adopting a new style of clothing that Wexner's colleagues reportedly began to call "chairman's casual."[143]

Wexner also took on new interests. According to Jerry Merritt, a former Ohio state highway patrolman who later served as The Limited's security chief for over two decades, not long after Wexner hired Epstein as a financial adviser, Wexner "had started collecting guns, but Les didn't know which end of a gun worked." Nevertheless, Wexner invited Epstein to shoot targets with him in rural Ohio. Even though Merritt had arranged for a "world-class trap shooter to teach Wexner to shoot," Wexner instead wanted Epstein to teach him.

This could have happened because Epstein, at this point, had had considerable connections to powerful, intelligence-linked arms dealers and may have privately disclosed these connections to Wexner. It's certainly possible, given that Epstein is reported to have said "Les knows everything about me. He knows every experience I've had."[144]

Wexner likely knew more about Epstein than mainstream media reports have led on and Epstein's connections to arms dealing and Israeli intelligence may have impressed Wexner, just as much as (if not more so than) his talents for both legal and illegal financial maneuvers. Indeed, it's worth keeping in mind that Epstein's introduction to Wexner came not long after the suspect murder of Arthur Shapiro, and Epstein's connections to certain circles along with his financial "talents" could have been very attractive to someone like Leslie Wexner.

By 1987, Epstein was formally a financial adviser to Wexner, where he helped manage Wexner's fortune and offered advice about the finances of Wexner's businesses, namely The Limited, and his other endeavors, like the Wexner Foundation. In the late 1980s, Epstein was also the main force behind the design and construction of Wexner's yacht, named *Limitless*.[145]

By 1990, Wexner's apparent fascination with Epstein alienated key figures in his inner circle, including former vice chairman of The Limited Robert Morosky and even Wexner's mother, Bella.[146] In the case of the latter, it seemed that

Wexner's mother saw her long privileged position as a driving force behind her son's business decisions directly challenged by Epstein. As noted in a 2021 article published in *Vanity Fair*:

> Wexner may have been CEO, but it seemed that his mother, Bella, was the boss. For 34 years she served as The Limited's corporate secretary. A former executive [of The Limited] recalled that Bella belittled her son in meetings when she didn't like his ideas. "It'll never work! Don't do it!" Bella would yell in front of his staff. "I remember sitting there thinking, How dare this woman?" the executive said. Les seemed to be terrified of Bella. According to [Robert] Meister, Les would sometimes stay at Meister's house in Palm Beach so that Bella, whose Palm Beach house was near Les's, wouldn't know Les was in town. "He was afraid of her. She was running his life," Meister said.[147]

Epstein's growing influence over Wexner's affairs and Bella Wexner's previous (and apparently domineering) role were seemingly incompatible and, when Bella fell ill in the early 1990s, an inevitable rupture ensued. While she was too ill to fulfil her role at the Wexner Foundation, which she had co-founded with her son in 1973, Epstein took over her role as trustee. When she recovered, she demanded to be reinstated and the Wexner Foundation, with Epstein as trustee, ended up suing her in 1992 as a result.[148] Epstein later claimed that he and Bella had "settled by splitting the foundation in two."[149]

By that point, it had already been clear for some time that Leslie Wexner had decided to replace his mother with Epstein in terms of who would serve as his closest adviser. In 1990, as previously mentioned, Epstein had become head of the Wexner Investment Company and Wexner's top money manager, ousting his predecessor Harold Levin in the process. A year later, in July 1991, Wexner had handed near complete control of his affairs over to Epstein in a far-reaching Power of Attorney document. That document, among other powers, gave Epstein the ability to "ask, demand, sue for, recover, collect, and receive all sums of money" on Wexner's behalf as well as take over, buy, sell, or transfer "property, tangible or intangible." The document also notes that, at the time, Epstein was still occupying the offices he apparently shared with the Gouletas at the Villard Houses, which – as previously noted – had been arranged by Steven Hoffenberg.

This power of attorney is significant as it means Epstein could engage in these activities without Wexner's knowledge following the signing of this document. Thus, after this point and up until the 2000s, it is hard to know what decisions of Wexner's (and Wexner-owned businesses like The Limited) may have been made solely by Epstein. This is particularly important when considering that shortly after this document was signed, efforts were made to have the logistics of The Limited intimately connected to not one, but two, CIA-linked airlines that had become infamous in the 1980s for their use in Iran-Contra and broader efforts that involved the smuggling of both arms and drugs. More on those airlines, and Epstein's role in bringing them into The Limited's fold, are discussed in chapter 17.

In addition to his influence on the logistics of Wexner-owned businesses, Epstein became increasingly enmeshed with Wexner's real estate interests during and shortly after this period, particularly in New York City. As detailed in the previous chapter, this would include Wexner's acquisition and redecorating of the now infamous Manhattan townhouse that Epstein would inhabit and where he would abuse countless underage women for several years, enabled by Ghislaine Maxwell and others.

Endnotes

1 William H. Meyers, “Rag Trade Revolutionary,” *New York Times*, June 8, 1986, https://www.nytimes.com/1986/06/08/magazine/rag-trade-revolutionary.html.

2 Meyers, “Rag Trade.”

3 Meyers, “Rag Trade.”

4 Isadore Barmash, “The Acquisition Kings of Women’s Wear,” *New York Times*, March 31, 1985, https://www.nytimes.com/1985/03/31/business/the-acquisition-kings-of-women-s-wear.html.

5 Julie Baumgold, “Bachelor Billionaire,” *New York Magazine*, August 5, 1985.

6 Baumgold, “Bachelor Billionaire.”

7 Meyers, “Rag Trade.”

8 Meyers, “Rag Trade.”

9 Baumgold, “Bachelor Billionaire.”

10 Bob Fitrakis, “Jeffrey Epstein: There’s Much More to the Story,” *Free Press*, June 18, 2020, https://freepress.org/article/jeffrey-epstein-there%E2%80%99s-much-more-story-1.

11 Margaret Bancroft, “Max Fisher is Perfect Success Story,” *Daily Independent* (North Caroli-na), March 17, 1965, 27, https://www.newspapers.com/image/48664315/.

12 Peter Golden, *Quiet Diplomat: A Biography of Max M. Fisher* (New York: Cornwall Books, 1992), 148.

13 Golden, *Quiet Diplomat*, 148.

14 Bancroft, “Max Fisher.”

15 Bancroft, “Max Fisher.”

16 Bancroft, “Max Fisher.”

17 Joe T. Darden et al., eds., *Detroit, Race and Uneven Development, Comparative American Cities* (Philadelphia: Temple University Press, 1987), 56.

18 Bancroft, “Max Fisher.”

19 Barry Grey, “Fifty Years since the Detroit Rebellion,” *World Socialist Web Site*, July 24, 2017, https://www.wsws.org/en/articles/2017/07/24/riot-j24.html.

20 Grey, “Detroit Rebellion.”

21 Darden, et al., eds., *Detroit*, 106-7.

22 Grey, “Detroit Rebellion.”

23 Darden, et al., eds., *Detroit*, 4.

24 Darden, et al., eds., *Detroit*, 58.

25 Alex Taylor III, “The $400 Million Friendship,” *CNN Money*, April 9, 1990, https://money.cnn.com/magazines/fortune/fortune_archive/1990/04/09/73361/index.htm.

26 Arlene Lazarowitz, “American Jewish Leaders and President Gerald R. Ford: Disagreements Over The Middle East Reassessment Plan,” *American Jewish History* 98, no. 3 (2014), 175–200, https://www.jstor.org/stable/26414374.

27 “Max M Fisher 1908-2005,” *The Jewish Agency*, https://archive.jewishagency.org/leaders/content/31421.

28 Taylor, “$400 Million Friendship.”

29 “United Fruit?C.I.A. Link Charged,” *New York Times*, October 22, 1976, https://www.nytimes.com/1976/10/22/archives/united-fruitcia-link-charged.html.

30 “Eli Black’s Rites Attended by 500,” *New York Times*, February 6, 1975, https://www.nytimes.com/1975/02/06/archives/eli-blacks-rites-attended-by-500-united-brands-head-hailed-for.html.

31 Josh Kosman, “Leon Black Kept Jeffrey Epstein as Charity Director after Plea Deal,” *New York Post*, July 10, 2019, https://nypost.com/2019/07/09/leon-black-kept-jeffrey-epstein-as-charity-director-after-plea-deal/.

32 Robert Lindsey, “Taubman?Alien Group Is Winner Of Irvine as It Tops Mobil’s Offer,” *New York Times*, May 21, 1977, https://www.nytimes.com/1977/05/21/archives/taubmanallen-group-is-winner-of-irvine-as-it-tops-mobils-offer.html.

33 A. Alfred Taubman, *Threshold Resistance: The Extraordinary Career of a Luxury Retailing Pioneer*, 1st ed (New York: Collins, 2007), 51.

34 Taubman, *Threshold Resistance*, 51.

35 Taubman, *Threshold Resistance*, 49.

36 “Biography” A. Alfred Taubman papers: 1942-2014,” (Bentley Historical Library), https://quod.lib.umich.edu/b/bhlead/umich-bhl-2011097.

37 Alan A. Block, *Masters of Paradise: Organized Crime and the Internal Revenue Service in the Bahamas* (Routledge, 1991) 33-35.

38 Dan E. Moldea, *Interference: How Organized Crime Influences Professional Football*, 1st ed (New York: Morrow, 1989), 450, https://archive.org/details/interferencehowo00mold/.

39 Moldea, *Interference*, 450.

40 Taylor, “$400 Million Friendship.”

41 Leslie Eaton, “Knight Errant Or Erring? Sotheby’s Tale,” *New York Times*, April 27, 2000, https://www.nytimes.com/2000/04/27/business/knight-errant-orerring-sotheby-s-tale.html; Ger-aldine Fabrikant, “Sotheby’s Stake Under the Gavel,” *New York Times*, October 7, 1987, https://www.nytimes.com/1987/10/07/business/sotheby-s-stake-under-the-gavel.html.

42 Fabrikant, “Sotherby’s Stake.”

43 Taylor, “$400 Million Friendship.”

44 Rita Reif, “Taubman to Buy Out Southeby Rivals,” *New York Times*, June 29, 1983, https://www.nytimes.com/1983/06/29/arts/taubman-to-buy-out-southeby-rivals.html.

45 “Bid for Zapata: How It Arose,” *New York Times*, October 15, 1981, https://www.nytimes.com/1981/10/15/business/bid-for-zapata-how-it-arose.html.

46 *Tax Aspects of Acquisitions and Mergers Hearings Before the Subcommittee on Oversight and Subcommittee on Select Revenue Measures of the Committee on Ways and Means*, House of Rep-resentatives, Ninety-ninth Congress, First Session, April 1, 2, and 16, 1985, 238.

47 *Advanced Coal Combustion Systems Hearings Before the Subcommittee on Energy Development and Applications of the Committee on Science and Technology,* House of Representatives, Ninety-sixth Congress, Second session, September 16, 17, 1980, 191.

48 John W. DeCamp, *The Franklin Cover-Up: Child Abuse, Satanism, and Murder in Nebraska*, ePub (Nebraska: AWT, 1992), 134.

49 DeCamp, *Franklin Cover-Up*, 145.

50 Taylor, “$400 Million Friendship,”; Reif, “Taubman to Buy Out Southeby Rivals.”

51 Jon Nordheimer, “Taubman Forms Company to Operate Sotheby’s,” *New York Times*, September 20, 1983, http://timesmachine.nytimes.com/timesmachine/1983/09/20/176380.html.

52 Taylor, “$400 Million Friendship.”

53 Emily Chasan, “Trial Begins in Lehman, Barclays Dispute over Sale,” *Reuters*, April 26, 2010, https://www.reuters.com/article/lehman-barclays-idUSN2619364820100426.

54 Eaton, “Knight Errant.”

55 Ralph Blumenthal, “Taubman Datebooks Cited In Sotheby’s Collusion Trial,” *New York Times*, November 14, 2001, http://timesmachine.nytimes.com/timesmachine/2001/11/14/184578.html.

56 Andrew Ross Sorkin, “Two Families, Two Empires and One Big Brawl at the Mall,” *New York Times*, December 1, 2002, http://timesmachine.nytimes.com/timesmachine/2002/12/01/157511.html.

57 Ralph Blumenthal and Carol Vogel, “Ex-Chief of Sotheby’s Gets Probation and Fine,” *New York Times*, April 30, 2002, http://timesmachine.nytimes.com/timesmachine/2002/04/30/803561.html.

58 “Taubman Sentenced To One Year--Plus A Day,” *Forbes*, April 22, 2002, https://www.forbes.com/2002/04/22/0422taubman.html.

59 Caroline Graham, “Ghislaine Maxwell Trawled Galleries for Girls to Meet Jeffrey Epstein,” *Mail Online*, August 9, 2020, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-8608267/Ghislaine-Maxwell-trawled-galleries-gallerinas-meet-Jeffrey-Epstein-claims-former-friend.html.

60 Two other Ohio businessmen that Lindner was closely associated, both personally and professionally, would become major players in the collapse of the American savings and loans industry: Marvin Warner (of ComBanks, Great American Bank, and most notoriously, Home State Saving) and Charles Keating (of American Continental Corporation—previously known as American Continental Homes, the housing division of Lindner’s American Financial.) Importantly, American Financial Corporation boasted Hugh Culverhouse on its board of directors. It is unknown at this time whether or not it was Culverhouse Sr. or Culverhouse Jr.; Hugh Culverhouse Sr. had sat on the board of directors of Major Realty with Max Orovitz. He held this position when Major Realty sold its property to future Wexner-business partner Edward J. DeBartolo, for whom he also acted as tax attorney.

61 Pete Brewton, *The Mafia, CIA, and George Bush* (S.P.I. Books, Dec. 1992), 291.

62 “National Defense Council Foundation,” Militarist Monitor, January 9, 1989, https://militarist-monitor.org/national_defense_council_foundation/. On the National Defense Council Foundation’s principles, see “National Defense Council Foundation,” *Militarist Monitor*; on the role of Humphreys as Civilian Material Assistance paymaster, see the deposition of Thomas V. Posey: *Report of the Congressional Committees Investigating the Iran-Contra Affair*, Appendix B, Volume 21, One Hundredth Congress, First Session, 115-117, https://archive.org/details/reportofcongress87unit.

63 Brewton, *The Mafia*, 290.

64 Robert A. Liff “Cocaine Indictment Names Prominent Bahamian Lawyer” *Orlando Sentinel*, September 19th, 1985.

65 Brewton, *The Mafia*, 294-95. It is worth pointing out that Helliwell and Singlaub both served in the China-Burma theater in the OSS.

66 Darden, et al., eds., *Detroit*, 56.

67 “Max M Fisher 1908-2005.”

68 Yosef I. Abramowitz, “Break-Lines: How Conservative Israelis and Reform U.S. Jews Are Torn,” *Jerusalem Post*, October 13, 2018, https://www.jpost.com/Jerusalem-Report/Of-Federations-and-fault-lines-569186.

69 Michael Omer-Man, “This Week in History: Operation Moses Begins,” *Jerusalem Post*, November 19, 2010, https://www.jpost.com/Features/In-Thespotlight/This-week-in-History-Operation-Moses-begins; Jacob Stein, “GOP’s Max Fisher, Tireless Advocate For World Jewry,” *The Forward*, March 11, 2005, https://forward.com/news/3062/gop-e2-80-99s-max-fisher-tireless-advocate-for-world-je/.

70 “Max Fisher Calls for End to Party Structure in Wzo, Says It Interferes with ‘Effective Functioning,’” *Jewish Telegraphic Agency*, July 7, 19880, https://www.jta.org/archive/max-fisher-calls-for-end-to-party-structure-in-wzo-says-it-interferes-with-effective-functioning.

71 “Louis A. Pincus, 61, Top Zionist, Dead,” New York Times, July 26, 1973, https://www.nytimes.com/1973/07/26/archives/louis-a-pincus-61-top-zionist-dead-also-led-jewish-immigration.html.

72 Rahul Radhakrishnan and Will Jordan, “Spy Cables: Israel Airline Used as Intelligence ‘Front,’” *Al Jazeera*, February 24, 2015, https://www.aljazeera.com/news/2015/2/24/spy-cables-israel-airline-used-as-intelligence-front.

73 Radhakrishnan and Jordan, “Spy Cables.”

74 “Louis Pincus Fund Established,” *Jewish Telegraphic Agency*, October 24, 1975, https://www.jta.org/archive/louis-pincus-fund-established.

75 “Paid Notice: Deaths KOPPEL, YEHUDA,” *New York Times*, September 27, 2006, https://www.nytimes.com/2006/09/27/classified/paid-notice-deaths-koppel-yehuda.html.

76 “Livia Eisen Chertoff (1925-1998),” *Find a Grave*, https://www.findagrave.com/memorial/176914514/livia-chertoff.

77 Whitney Webb, “The CIA, Mossad and “Epstein Network” Are Exploiting Mass Shootings,” *MintPress News*, September 6, 2019, https://www.mintpressnews.com/cia-israel-mossad-jeffrey-epstein-orwellian-nightmare/261692/.

78 “United Jewish Appeal V-E Day Commemorative Medal – Max Fisher,” *The Max M Fisher Archives*, http://maxmfisher.org/content/united-jewish-appeal-v-e-day-commemorative-medal?dis-play=list.

79 Meyers, “Rag Trade.”

80 “Max M Fisher 1908-2005,”

81 “Wexner Foundation to Channel $3-4 Million in Grants to Help Enhance and Improve Professional Leaders,” *Jewish Telegraphic Agency*, May 22, 1987, https://www.jta.org/archive/wexner-foundation-to-channel-3-4-million-in-grants-to-help-enhance-and-improve-professional-leaders.

82 Steve Stephens and Bruce Cadwallader, “Informant Led Way in Florida Arrest,” *Columbus Dispatch*, September 9, 1993, p. 04D.

83 “25-Year-Old Killing Still Puzzles,” *Columbus Dispatch*, March 6, 2010, https://web.archive.org/web/20191102004351/https://www.dispatch.com/article/20100306/NEWS/303069782.

84 “25-Year-Old Killing.”

85 “Accountant held in murder plot,” *Pasco Times*, September 8, 1993.

86 Stephens and Cadwallader, “Informant Led Way.”

87 Stephens and Cadwallader, “Informant Led Way.”

88 Stephens and Cadwallader, “Informant Led Way.”

89 “United States v. Kessler, 338 F. Supp. 420 (S.D. Ohio 1972),” *Justia Law*, February 16, 1972, https://law.justia.com/cases/federal/district-courts/FSupp/338/420/2182245/.

90 Jo Thomas, “Giacalone Convicted in Tax Trial,” *Detroit Free Press*, May 7, 1976, https://www.newspapers.com/clip/6375779/detroit-free-press/.

91 “Brittany Builders Articles of Incorporation,” May 1967, https://bizimage.ohiosos.gov/api/image/pdf/B507_0111; “Joseph Eisenberg Obituary,” *Ohio Jewish Chronicle*, April 12, 1984, https://www.ohiomemory.org/digital/collection/ojc/id/38011.

92 Bruce Cadwallader, “Tangle of Deaths Hangs Over Past of Berry Kessler – Arrest Sends Police Back to Files,” *Columbus Dispatch*, September 20, 1993, p. 01B.

93 Cadwallader, “Tangle of Deaths.”

94 Cadwallader, “Tangle of Deaths.”

95 Cadwallader, “Tangle of Deaths.”

96 “25-Year-Old Killing.”

97 Bob Fitrakis, “The Shapiro Murder File,” *Free Press*, June 16, 2019, https://freepress.org/article/shapiro-murder-file.

98 “25-Year-Old Killing.”

99 Fitrakis, “Shapiro Murder File.”

100 “Complete Shapiro Murder File ” (Columbus Police Department, 1991), https://archive.org/details/shapiromurderfilecomplete1.

101 “Complete Shapiro Murder File.”

102 “CEO Jack Kessler: Local Visionary: It’s How You Treat People,” *Columbus Dispatch*, August 24, 2014, https://www.dispatch.com/story/business/2014/08/24/ceo-jack-kessler-local-visionary/23336557007/.

103 Baumgold, “Bachelor Billionaire.”

104 “JAS Liquidation Trade Name Registration” (State of Ohio, December 10, 1987), https://unlimitedhangout.com/wp-content/uploads/2021/08/G287_1362.pdf.

105 “Lewis Trade Name Registration” (State of Ohio, November 25, 1987), https://unlimitedhangout.com/wp-content/uploads/2021/08/G279_0234.pdf.

106 “PFI Leasing Articles of Incorporation ” (State of Ohio, December 1, 1983), https://unlimitedhangout.com/wp-content/uploads/2021/08/F358_1398.pdf.

107 “First Intercontinental Realty Corporation Articles of Incorporation” (State of Ohio, May 21, 1987), https://bizimage.ohiosos.gov/api/image/pdf/G158_0867.

108 Landon Thomas Jr, “Jeffrey Epstein: International Moneyman of Mystery,” *New York Magazine*, October 28, 2002, https://nymag.com/nymetro/news/people/n_7912/.

109 “PFI Leasing Certificate of Dissolution” (State of Ohio, December 20, 1990), https://unlimitedhangout.com/wp-content/uploads/2021/08/H043_1630.pdf; “Jeffrey Epstein Affidavit” (State of Ohio, December 21, 1990), https://unlimitedhangout.com/wp-content/uploads/2021/08/H043_1630.pdf.

110 “PFI Leasing Appointment of Agent” (State of Ohio, December 6, 1990), https://unlimitedhangout.com/wp-content/uploads/2021/08/H025_0808.pdf.

111 Fitrakis, “Shapiro Murder File.”

112 Thomas, “International Moneyman.”

113 Mary Hanbury, “Jeffrey Epstein Reportedly Lived the Life of a Billionaire Thanks to Hand-Me-Downs from Victoria’s Secret Head Les Wexner,” *Business Insider*, July 26, 2019, https://www.businessinsider.com/les-wexner-helped-jeffrey-epstein-live-like-a-billionaire-2019-7.

114 Fitrakis, “Shapiro Murder File.”

115 Steve Wright, “Not Everyone Favors New Albany Area Land Trade,” *Columbus Dispatch*, February 1, 1994, p. 07C.

116 Stamatios Tsigos and Kevin Daly, *The Wealth of the Elite: Toward a New Gilded Age* (Singapore: Springer Singapore, 2020), 147.

117 Moldea, *Interference*, 288-89; Anthony Marro, “Emprise Corp, Loses Plea for U.S. Pardon,” *New York Times*, September 29, 1977, https://www.nytimes.com/1977/09/29/archives/emprisecorp-loses-plea-for-us-pardon-sports-conglomerate.html.

118 Gary W. Diedrichs, “Edward J. DeBartolo: The Pharaoh From Youngstown,” *Cleveland Magazine*, July 1, 1976, https://clevelandmagazine.com/in-the-cle/the-read/articles/edward-j-debartolo-the-pharaoh-from-youngstown.

119 Nancy Rivera Brooks and Denise Gellene, “Wexner, DeBartolo: Hard Workers Who Don’t Like to Lose,” *Los Angeles Times*, November 26, 1986, https://www.latimes.com/archives/la-xpm-1986-11-26-fi-15458-story.html.

120 Moldea, *Interference*, 352.

121 Moldea, *Interference*, 352.

122 Moldea, *Interference*, 352.

123 Moldea, *Interference*, 294.

124 Moldea, *Interference*, 294.

125 “Debts Lead to a Bank Takeover,” *New York Times*, February 13, 1982, https://www.nytimes.com/1982/02/13/business/debts-lead-to-a-bank-takeover.html.

126 AP, “Tampa Bank Indictments,” *New York Times*, August 17, 1983, https://www.nytimes.com/1983/08/17/business/tampa-bank-indictments.html.

127 Moldea, *Interference*, 286.

128 Moldea, *Interference*, 290; AP, “FBI Criticizes Ex-Prosecutor Over Parole For Mobster,” *Cleveland 19 News*, July 12, 2002, https://www.cleveland19.com/story/854621/fbi-criticizes-ex-prosecutor-over-parole-for-mobster.

129 AP, “Trump Pardons Former 49ers Owner DeBartolo,” ESPN, February 18, 2020, https://www.espn.com/nfl/story/_/id/28729223/president-trump-pardons-former-49ers-owneredward-debartolo-jr.

130 “Trucker Charged with Paying off Teamsters Local,” UPI, May 16, 1988, https://www.upi.com/Archives/1988/05/16/Trucker-charged-with-paying-off-Teamsters-local/2051579758400/.

131 “Trucker Charged.”

132 Steven Greenhouse, “Teamsters Accuse Top Union Official of Scheming With Organized Crime,” *New York Times*, January 25, 2003,

https://www.nytimes.com/2003/01/25/nyregion/team-sters-accuse-top-union-official-of-scheming-with-organized-crime.html.

133 Greenhouse, "Teamsters Accuse Top Union Official."

134 Emily Steel et al., "How Jeffrey Epstein Used the Billionaire Behind Victoria's Secret for Wealth and Women," *New York Times*, July 26, 2019, https://www.nytimes.com/2019/07/25/business/jeffrey-epstein-wexner-victorias-secret.html.

135 Gabriel Sherman, "The Mogul and the Monster: Inside Jeffrey Epstein's Decades-Long Relationship With His Biggest Client," *Vanity Fair*, June 8, 2021, https://www.vanityfair.com/news/2021/06/inside-jeffrey-epsteins-decades-long-relationship-with-his-biggest-client.

136 "Robert A Meister Bio," Kando, https://kando.tech/person/robert-meister; "Alexander & Alexander Services Inc. - Company Profile," Reference for Business, https://www.referenceforbusiness.com/history2/55/Alexander-Alexander-Services-Inc.html.

137 "Alexander & Alexander Services Inc."

138 "Alexander & Alexander Services Inc."

139 Sherman, "Mogul and the Monster."

140 Sherman, "Mogul and the Monster."

141 Sherman, "Mogul and the Monster."

142 Sherman, "Mogul and the Monster."

143 Sherman, "Mogul and the Monster."

144 Sherman, "Mogul and the Monster."

145 Emily Steel et al., "How Jeffrey Epstein Used the Billionaire Behind Victoria's Secret."

146 Emily Steel et al., "How Jeffrey Epstein Used the Billionaire Behind Victoria's Secret."

147 Sherman, "Mogul and the Monster."

148 Emily Steel et al., "How Jeffrey Epstein Used the Billionaire Behind Victoria's Secret."

149 Vicky Ward, "The Talented Mr. Epstein," *Vanity Fair*, March 1, 2003, https://www.vanityfair.com/news/2003/03/jeffrey-epstein-200303.

CHAPTER 14

THE DARK SIDE OF WEXNER'S "PHILANTHROPY"

WEXNER AND HIS "DYBBUK"

The year of Arthur Shapiro's murder was also the year that Leslie Wexner became a billionaire and began to build up his public persona. This began with a series of fawning media profiles, which Wexner may have sought out on the advice of his mentor Max Fisher. Fisher, after all, viewed his pristine public image, which was arguably divorced from reality in key ways, as one of his greatest assets. Wexner's first main, personal PR campaigns were written by prominent New York City-based outlets, like *New York Magazine* and the *New York Times*.

The *New York Magazine* profile, which was the cover story for its August 5, 1985 issue, was entitled "The Bachelor Billionaire: On Pins and Needles with Leslie Wexner."[1] Though filled with photos of a middle-aged Wexner grinning and embracing friends as well as lavish praise for his business dealings and his "tender" and "gentle" personality, one of the main themes of the article revolves around what is apparently a spiritual affliction or mental illness of Wexner's, depending on the reader's own spiritual persuasion.

The *New York Magazine* article opens as follows:

> On the morning Leslie Wexner became a billionaire, he woke up worried, but this was not unusual. He always wakes up worried because of his dybbuk, which pokes and prods and gives him the itchiness of the soul that he calls shpilkes ["pins" in Yiddish]. Sometimes he runs away from it on the roads of Columbus, or drives away from it in one of his Porsches, or flies from it in one of his planes, but then it is back, with his first coffee, his first meeting, nudging at him.

One may interpret this use of *shpilkes*, literally "pins" or "spikes" in Yiddish and often used to describe nervous energy, impatience or anxiety, as Wexner merely personifying his anxiety. However, his decision to use the word *dybbuk*, which he does throughout the article, is quite significant. Also notable is how Wexner goes on to describe this apparent entity throughout the article and his intimate relationship with it.

As defined by Encyclopedia Britannica, a dybbuk is a Jewish folklore term for "a disembodied human spirit that, because of former sins, wanders restlessly until it finds a haven in the body of a living person."[2] Unlike spirits that have yet to move on but possess positive qualities, such as the *maggid* or *ibbur*, the dybbuk is almost always considered to be malicious, which leads it to be translated in English as "demon." This was also the case in this *New York Magazine* profile on

Wexner. Indeed, the author of that article, Julie Baumgold, describes Leslie Wexner's *dybbuk* as "the demon that always wakes up in the morning with Wexner and tweaks and pulls at him."

Wexner could have easily chosen to frame the entity as a righteous spirit (maggid) or as his righteous ancestors (ibbur) guiding his life and business decisions, especially for the purpose of an interview that would be read widely throughout the country. Instead, Wexner chose this particular term, which says a lot for a man who has since used his billions to shape both mainstream Jewish identity and leadership in both the US and Israel for decades.

As the article continues, it states that Wexner has been with the *dybbuk* since he was a boy and that his father had recognized it, and referred to it as the "churning." Per Wexner, the dybbuk causes him to feel "molten" and constantly pricked by "spiritual pins and needles." It apparently left him at some point only to return in 1977 when he was 40, half-frozen during an ill-fated trip up a mountain near his vacation home in Vail, Colorado. This specific trip is when Wexner says he both rejoined with his childhood *dybbuk* and decided to "change his life."

He told *New York Magazine* that his dybbuk makes him "wander from house to house," "wanting more and more" and "swallowing companies larger than his own." In other words, it compels him to accumulate more money and more power with no end in sight. Wexner later describes the dybbuk as an integral "part of his genius."

Wexner further describes his dybbuk as keeping "him out of balance, emotionally stunted, a part of him – the precious, treasured boy-son part – lagging behind [the dybbuk]." This is consistent with other definitions of the term in Jewish media, including a feature piece published in the *Jewish Chronicle*. That article first defines the term as "a demon [that] clings to [a person's] soul" and then states that: "The Hebrew verb from which the word dybbuk is derived is also used to describe the cleaving of a pious soul to God. The two states are mirror images of each other."[3] Per Wexner's word choice and his characterization of what he perceives as an entity dwelling within him, the entity – the dybbuk – is dominant while his actual self and soul "lags behind" and is stunted, causing him to identify more with the entity than with himself.

This is also reflected in the concluding paragraph of the *New York Magazine* article:

> Les Wexner picks up his heavy black case and flies off in his Challenger, with his dybbuk sitting next to him, taunting and poking him with impatience, that little demon he really loves. The dybbuk turns his face. What does he look like? "Me," says Leslie Wexner.

Outside of the spiritual aspect of this discussion, it can also be surmised from the above that there is a strong possibility that Wexner suffers from some sort of mental disorder that causes him to exhibit two distinct personalities which continuously battle within him. What is astounding is that he describes this apparent affliction to a prominent media outlet with pride and the author of the piece weaves Wexner's "demon" throughout a piece that seeks to praise his business acumen above all else.

Yet, perhaps the most troubling aspect of Wexner's experience with his "dybbuk," whether real or imagined, is the fact that Wexner, in the years before and after this article was published, has had a massive impact on Jewish communities in the US and beyond through his "philanthropy." Some of those philanthropic efforts, like the Wexner Foundation, saw Wexner help mold generations of Jewish leaders through Wexner Foundation programs while others, such as the Mega Group, the organized crime-linked Leslie Wexner joined by several other like-minded billionaires, many of which also boast considerable organized crime connections, in an effort to shape the relationship of the American Jewish community, as well as the US government, to the state of Israel.

For a man of such influence in the Jewish community, why has there been essentially no questions raised as to Wexner's role in directing the affairs of that ethno-religious community given that he has openly claimed to be guided by a "dybbuk"?

THE ORIGINS OF THE WEXNER FOUNDATION

It is hard to know exactly when the Wexner Foundation was originally created. The official website for the foundation states clearly in one section that the Wexner Foundation was first set up in 1983 alongside the Wexner Heritage Foundation.[4] However, the 2001 obituary of Wexner's mother, Bella, states that she and her son created the foundation together in 1973.[5] Regardless of the exact year, Wexner's mother, Bella, became the secretary of the foundation (just as she had with his company The Limited), which Wexner wanted people to refer to as a "joint philanthropy."

The foundation's website states that the original purpose of the Wexner Foundation was to assist "emerging professional Jewish leaders in North America and mid-career public officials in Israel."[6] Per the website, Wexner's main philanthropic endeavors were created after Wexner "reached the conclusion that what the Jewish people needed most at that moment was stronger leadership." As a result, Wexner sought to focus his foundation's attention chiefly on the "development of leaders." As a consequence of this, Wexner's programs have molded the minds and opinions of prominent North American, as well as Israeli, Jewish leaders who went on to work at the top levels of finance, government and, even, intelligence.

One of the Wexner Foundation's original advisors, and perhaps one of the most important, was Robert Hiller, who had previously been executive vice president of the Council of Jewish Federations and Welfare Funds. Robert I. Hiller was described in an article in the *Baltimore Sun* as a "nonprofit leader who helped develop community fundraising strategies and was active in the Soviet Jewry movement."[7] As well as being known as a community development leader, Hiller was also an executive with Community Chest of Metropolitan Detroit in 1948. In that position, Hiller helped bring together corporations such as General Motors to create "social service groups under an umbrella organization, a precursor to collective fundraising efforts today."[8] In 1950, Hiller became the associate director of the Jewish Community Federation of Cleveland and six years later he also joined the United Jewish Federation of Pittsburgh. He would spend another nine years in that position before his move to Baltimore.

In his autobiography, Hiller wrote about his extensive dealings with various Israeli heads-of-states, saying: "I had pictures of every Israeli Prime Minister from David Ben-Gurion to Menachem Begin. I would have many more with Begin because he was the current Prime Minister. My favorite picture, however, (it was to be hung) was taken in Washington, D.C. at a gala party where Marianne and I were with the then Ambassador, Yitzhak Rabin, and his wife, Leah."

Hiller was extremely proactive when it came to seeding suitable, high ranking candidates for appropriate positions in Jewish community organizations, a task that the Wexner Foundation would later reproduce on a grand scale via its various Fellowship programs and apply to the world of business and government. One example of this matchmaking was the appointment of Larry Moses as assistant to Rabbi Maurice Corson. Corson is credited as co-founding the Wexner Foundation with Leslie Wexner in 1983, per the foundation's website, and served as its first president. After Corson left that post, Moses stepped in to serve as the foundation's president.

Hiller wrote in his autobiography that he had "personally enticed" Moses to become Rabbi Corson's assistant and this later resulted in Larry Moses becoming the executive vice president of the Wexner Foundation.[9] When Hiller was 33 years-old, he was presented with an opportunity to become a member of the Big 16, which was classed as an informal grouping of the 16 largest communities in North America headed by prominent Jewish executive members. One of the people who Hiller connected with the Wexner Foundation was originally meant to lead the Big 16 Federation, Fern Katelman. Katelman declined this prestigious leadership role in order to join Larry Moses, where he became his assistant at the Wexner Foundation.[10]

Hiller, when revisiting his life, would state: "One of the most stimulating relationships I had was with the Wexner (Leslie) Foundation of Columbus, Ohio, and New York City. Rabbi Maurice Corson was the foundation president. My relationship with him started in Baltimore where he had been a new rabbi for one of the city's largest Conservative synagogues. He came from Philadelphia with an interesting background and credentials."

Hiller goes on to write: "He [Corson], however, seemed bored and uneasy with the routine of being a synagogue rabbi. When he and the congregation decided to part company, I assisted in getting him an executive position with the United Israel Appeal of Canada. He did so well that he was recruited to return to the U.S.A. in an executive position with International B'nai B'rith. Leslie Wexner met him through his work with B'nai B'rith, and when Les began to put together a formal foundation, he engaged Rabbi Corson as the chief executive."[11] B'nai B'rith, the "Jewish fraternal organization" modeled as a secret society, was previously discussed in chapter 10.

Hiller went on to assist Corson in the initial stages of setting up the Wexner Foundation while they put together "a distinguished advisory group" with the group meeting in Columbus, Ohio, and New York City. Hiller describes assisting Corson in creating the foundation, which Hiller called: "an unusual foundation with its own agenda and programming." After several years of service to the Wexner Foundation, Hiller retired from his consultancy role and was replaced by Philip Bernstein, the former executive of the Council of Jewish Federations and Welfare Funds (CJF).

Now, it makes sense to examine Rabbi Maurice S. Corson himself. Corson was a prominent Jewish educator who, as previously mentioned, already had associations with various Jewish welfare organizations prior to serving as co-founder and then president of the Wexner Foundation. Corson had been ordained as a rabbi in 1960 through the Jewish Theological Seminary, after previously studying at the University of Cincinnati where he graduated in 1955. By 1964, Corson had become the president of the Religious Education Society in Seattle, and he remained in that position until 1966.

Over the following decade, he began working for the Zionist Organization America in Atlantic City and, shortly thereafter, became the Senior Rabbi at the Chizuk Amuna Congregation, a position he held from 1976 until 1979. Around this time, Hiller helped Corson get an executive position with the United Israel Appeal of Canada, where he went on to work for only a year before joining B'nai B'rith.[12]

Once recruited into serving a leadership role within the influential "secret society," Corson worked as director of development for B'nai B'rith International, based in New York City, between 1980 until 1985. During this very period, as noted in chapters 3,10 and 13, the board of overseers of B'nai B'rith included Edmond Safra, Edgar Bronfman, and Max Fisher.

As noted previously, while Corson was at B'nai B'rith, he first met Leslie Wexner, who persuaded him to co-found the Wexner Foundation (per the version of events on the foundation's website). Although he had been recruited by Wexner and subsequently left the B'nai B'rith organization, Corson became a member of the executive committee of B'nai B'rith Hillel Commission in Washington in 1987.

Another important player, mentioned in Hiller's autobiography as being on the original advisory board of the Wexner Foundation, is Charles S. Liebman. Born in New York City in 1934, Liebman was an influential Jewish political scientist who spent most of his career teaching at Bar-Ilan University. He was born to a self-described "Zionist family" and, by 1965, Liebman had published his seminal work, "Orthodoxy in American Life," in the *American Jewish Year Book*.[13] The paper, often referred to as Liebman's "pioneering essay," received critical acclaim among the American Jewish community.

In 1983, the year that Wexner Foundation was ostensibly created, Liebman was preparing to publish his most controversial work, "Extremism as a Religious Norm."[14] In this paper Liebman analyzed religious extremism in Israel and argued that: "religious extremism is the norm and that it is not religious extremism but religious moderation that requires explanation." In this paper, Liebman explains: "Since religious commitment is a total commitment, and the behavior it elicits is by definition moral behavior, religious adherence becomes a criterion by which other people can be evaluated. The religiously committed individual will experience moral repugnance in associating with the non-religious."

Liebman's paper was criticized by those who saw it as an attempt to excuse and justify extremism within Israel. John Cumpsty, for instance, responded to this particular work of Liebman's in a 1985 piece entitled: "Glutton, Gourmet or Bon Vivant: A response to Charles S. Liebman," calling Liebman's essay "an attempt at methodological generalization" and "quite extraordinarily reductionist."[15]

Liebman's subsequent works were never as controversial as Extremism as a Religious Norm, and he was later lauded as "the preeminent social scientist of Jews and Judaism in the latter third of the 20th century."[16] In March 2003, Liebman was awarded the Israel Prize, for government studies and then, in September of that same year, he passed away.[17]

Another key figure who is important to mention is the co-founder of the Wexner Heritage Foundation, Rabbi Herbert A. Friedman. Depending on which part of the Wexner Foundation site you visit, that Foundation is listed as having been founded in either 1983 or 1985. However, Friedman is clearly listed as the co-founder of the foundation and as having served as its president for a decade.[18]

The Wexner Heritage Foundation, per its website, was created "to strengthen volunteer leaders in the North American Jewish Community."[19] It spawned the Wexner Heritage program, which "provides young North American Jewish volunteer leaders with a two-year intensive Jewish learning program, deepening their understanding of Jewish history, values, and texts and enriching their leadership skills."[20]

Friedman was a US Army chaplain during World War II and also served as an "adviser on Jewish affairs to General Lucius D. Clay, the commander of American occupation forces in Germany." He was later personally recruited by David Ben-Gurion, who went on to serve as Israel's first Prime Minister, to join the paramilitary group, the Haganah. As noted in chapter 3, the Haganah was the precursor to the Israeli military and was armed in large part by organized crime-linked networks. Per the *New York Times*, "as a member of the Haganah, Rabbi Friedman participated in the Aliyah Bet, the illegal transport of European Jews to Palestine."[21]

From 1954 to 1971, Friedman was the chief executive of the United Jewish Appeal (UJA) and, in that role "raised more than $3 billion to support the fledgling state of Israel."[22] During this period, UJA was intimately involved in the relaunching of the Jewish Agency by Wexner's mentor Max Fisher in 1970. As noted in the previous chapter, Fisher was also intimately involved with the UJA as well as the related United Israel Appeal. Throughout the 1980s, Wexner was "one of the largest individual contributors to the United Jewish Appeal in America" and, after creating the Wexner Heritage Foundation with Friedman, Wexner became UJA's vice chairman.[23]

While Wexner was serving in these capacities, he was also engaged in closed door meetings with the highest levels of Israeli leadership, not just about "philanthropy," but also about his business interests. One specific meeting saw him meet with top Israeli government officials about "Chinese and Israeli interests" working with his company, The Limited, to establish factories in the occupied Golan Heights.[24]

Notably, the Wexner Foundation has direct and controversial ties to at least one former Israeli head of state, Ehud Barak, who – as previously mentioned in chapter 12 – was intimately involved with Jeffrey Epstein. As reported by *Israel Today* in 2019:

[Barak's ties to the Wexner Foundation] became an issue only after right-wing journalist Erel Segal called last October to investigate the $2.3 million "research" grant Barak received from the Wexner Foundation, which has in turn for years been the beneficiary of Epstein's financial contributions. According to Segal, the grant under question was given to Barak in 2004-2006, when he held no public position. Barak insists he has no authority to disclose details about this grant. Only the Wexner Foundation can, if they so choose (they choose silence).[25]

DEVELOPING LEADERS

Set up simultaneously alongside the Wexner Foundation, Wexner's Heritage Program (WHP) planned to connect American Jews with the ever expanding nation-state of Israel. The program was created so as to "expand the vision of Jewish volunteer leaders, deepen their Jewish knowledge and confidence and inspire them to exercise transformative leadership in the Jewish community."[26] The foundation defines the program as: "essentially a Jewish learning and leadership development program for volunteer leaders in North America."

There have been, to date, around 2000 "leaders" who have taken part in the program. The WHP is a vehicle for standardizing a certain perspective on the history of Israel, as well as Judaic texts. The two year program is made up of 36 evening seminars, which occur bi-monthly for four-hour periods, as well as three short-term and out-of-town summer institutes hosted in either the US or Israel. Each of these summer institutes are between 5 and 7 days long and take place throughout the program.

As with other well-founded leadership programs, such as the World Economic Forum's Young Global Leader program, the Wexner Heritage Program targets a very specific age group, aiming at professionals who are generally between the ages of 30 and 45 years-old. Some of the most important criteria required of program participants include showing a demonstrated commitment to Judaism, the Jewish community and/or Israel and a track record of leadership in Jewish communal life.

The Wexner Foundation website claims that:

> The 2,300 Alumni of the Wexner Heritage Program are top lay leaders at the local, national and international level. In the 35 cities where we have convened WHP cohorts, virtually every Jewish communal organization continues to be supported by our alumni. They become presidents or chairs of synagogues, Federations, JCC's, Hillels, day schools, camps and more; they often are founders or chairs of allocations or annual campaigns. They serve on the boards of JFNA, 70 Faces Media, the Foundation for Jewish Camp, International Hillel, AIPAC and J Street; The Shalom Hartman Institute, Pardes, Hadar and every US rabbinical seminary; the Jewish Education Project, Prisma, the JDC and so many more.

It is worth noting that, of those aforementioned groups, the Wexner Foundation (and especially the Wexner Heritage program) enjoys particularly close ties to AIPAC (American Israel Public Affairs Committee). For instance, Elliot Brandt, AIPAC's national managing director, is an alumnus of the Wexner Heritage Program and, in a 2018 speech at that year's AIPAC policy conference, Brandt noted that "most of the [AIPAC] National Board consists of Wexner Heritage Alumni, not to mention its regional chairs and some of its most committed donors as well."[27]

Wexner's close ties to AIPAC take on a different tone when one considers, not only his close association with the Israeli intelligence-connected Jeffrey Epstein, but also the fact that AIPAC itself has long-standing and controversial ties to Israeli intelligence. For instance, AIPAC was at the center of an Israeli espionage scandal in the US in the mid-1980s as well as again in 2004, when a high-ranking Pentagon analyst was caught passing highly classified information over to Israel's government via top officials at AIPAC.[28]

Despite extensive evidence, particularly in the latter case, AIPAC itself avoided charges. As journalist Grant Smith noted at the time, "the Department of Justice's chief prosecutor on the [AIPAC] espionage case, Paul McNulty, was suddenly and inexplicably promoted within the DOJ after he backed off on criminally indicting AIPAC as a corporation."[29] The charges against the specific AIPAC officials involved were also dropped.[30]

In the years after the Wexner Heritage Program was launched, other similar efforts followed. In 1987, the Wexner Foundation announced it would begin channeling "$3-$4 million in grants to the first year of a program dedicated to the enhancement and improvement of professional leadership in the North American Jewish community."[31]

Per the *Jewish Telegraphic Agency*, "Wexner said an Advisory Group drawn from among leading Jewish academicians and communal professionals recommended that attention be focused on three critical groups: rabbis, communal professionals and educators."[32] These efforts would result in the formal creation of the Wexner Graduate Fellowship in 1988. Chairmanship of the Wexner Fellowship Committee was given to Professor Henry Rosovsky.

HENRY AND HARVARD

Henry Rosovsky was an economist at Harvard University. Like Wexner, and like many other of the Wexner Foundation's associates, Rosovsky was born to Russian Jewish parents. He grew up speaking Russian, German, and French and, in 1940, Rosovsky emigrated to the United States of America with his parents.

During World War II, he served in Counterintelligence Corps of the US Army.[33] He became a naturalized US citizen 9 years later. That same year, he received his B.A. degree from the College of William and Mary in Williamsburg, Virginia, followed by his PhD from Harvard in 1959.

Rosovsky taught overseas as a visiting professor in Japan at Hito Subashi and Tokyo Universities, and subsequently taught Japanese studies, economics and history at the University of California at Berkeley until 1965.[34] He also taught at the Hebrew University of Jerusalem in Israel, again as a visiting professor, as well as working as a consultant with the United States government, the Asian Development Bank, the World Bank, and UNESCO.[35]

Rosovsky settled down into his eventual career at Harvard in 1965 and brought with him the intention of making Jewish life at Harvard flourish. By 1978, Rosovsky had helped to establish the Center for Jewish Studies, which was led by Harry Wolfson, the first chairman of a Judaic studies center at any American college. Rosovsky was the first Jew to serve on the board of the Harvard Corporation. Rosovsky's wife, Nitza Rosovsky, also had a presence at Harvard, and in 1986, during Harvard's 350th anniversary celebrations, she wrote a piece entitled "The Jewish Experience at Harvard and Radcliffe," which traces the Jewish history at the university dating back to the 1720s.[36]

Rosovsky developed a close relationship with some key faculty members at Harvard, including future US Treasury Secretary and Harvard president Larry Summers. In 2017, Summers stated in a video tribute to Rosovsky the following: "Thirty-five years ago, I sat in your office as a young recruit to the Harvard faculty, and I was trembling with the majesty of it all," he said. "Over time I became less intimidated and came to value your wisdom and your experience."[37]

Rosovsky became involved with the Wexner Foundation in 1987, when the Wexner Foundation announced the aforementioned initiative to recruit, support, and retain "the highest quality professional leadership" in the American Jewish community through grant-making to individuals and institutions. Those individual grants were awarded as Wexner Foundation fellowships and the Foundation appointed Rosovsky to serve as the chairman of the Wexner Fellowship Committee.[38]

Rosovsky was prominent and well-connected by the time Wexner approached him, with his connections including Israeli politicians and heads of state like Menachem Begin and Yitzhak Rabin.[39] By this point, Rosovsky was also being publicly honored for his many achievements. In 1987, after Wexner had launched several of his philanthropic endeavors, the American Academy of Achievement – a non-profit educational organization that recognizes some of the highest achieving individuals in the country – had awarded Rosovsky its "Golden Plate Award."[40]

One of Rosovsky's most important links that were likely of interest to Wexner was his strong connection with Harvard Hillel. What is today referred to as the "Harvard-Radcliffe Hillel," the Harvard Hillel is commonly described as a service organization that provides Jewish educational, cultural, religious, and social opportunities for students and faculty. Rosovsky had been a key player in paving the way for Hillel's relocation from a simple home at the outskirts of campus to a location at the heart of Harvard life.[41] Wexner's subsequent involvement with Harvard Hillel would also mark Epstein's own entry into what would become his controversial, and intimate, relationship with the prestigious university.

According to a 2003 article in the *Harvard Crimson* on Epstein's donations to the University, Rosovsky was not only one of Epstein's closest associates at Harvard, but was also Epstein's "oldest friend of the bunch," having been introduced to Rosovsky by Wexner around 1991. That is notably the same year that Epstein and Ghislaine Maxwell began their sexual blackmail/sex trafficking operation.

1991 was also the year that the *New York Times* reported that four donors, among them Leslie Wexner and Jeffrey Epstein, had pledged to raise $2 million for the construction of the new student center of Harvard-Radcliffe Hillel. In that article, the *Times* lists Epstein as the "president of Wexner Investment Company."[42] The building was completed in 1994 and named Rosovsky Hall in Henry Rosovsky's honor. Rosovsky Hall is a 19,500-square-foot building, which cost $3 million to complete and includes a garden courtyard, a student lounge, a dining hall, a library, offices, and multi-purpose rooms for worship and meetings.[43]

After Epstein's 2019 arrest, Hillel executive director Rabbi Jonah Steinberg claimed that Epstein had merely "facilitated" a gift that was actually donated by the Wexners and did not involve Epstein's personal money. However, a now-absent plaque on the building, cited by the Harvard Crimson in 2003, named both Epstein and Wexner as donors responsible for funding the center's construction.

Steinberg did note that Epstein did donate $50,000 to Hillel in 1991, the same year that the gift for the construction of Rosovsky Hall was also made. The following year, records from Harvard's Office of Alumni Affairs and Development reveal that Epstein was courted as a potential donor by the University, with Harvard's "most senior leaders" first officially meeting with Epstein to "seek his support."[44] It is unclear exactly what resulted from this meeting, as Epstein's first official donation to Harvard was recorded in 1998, raising the possibility that support could have been given in other ways that did not necessarily involve direct donations to the University.

Indeed, when Harvard moved to reject donations from Epstein following his 2008 conviction, Epstein continued to donate *indirectly* to the University by directly sponsoring several professors as well as a student social club at Harvard. Epstein may have contributed in this fashion during this earlier period, especially given that he had already donated to Harvard's Hillel by the time of the 1992 meeting.

It is worth noting that Epstein's first "official" donation to Harvard in 1998 was the same year he was using his private plane, now best known to the public as the "Lolita Express," to transport then-Deputy Treasury Secretary Lawrence "Larry" Summers. As will be noted in chapter 16, Summer's then-boss, Treasury Secretary Richard Rubin, had previously facilitated Epstein's first official visit to the Clinton White House in early 1993. Summers would become president of Harvard University shortly after the conclusion of the Clinton administration, in July 2001. During Summer's tenure, Epstein's access to Harvard's campus and many of its most notable professors increased exponentially. While president of Harvard, Summers continued to fly on Epstein's plane.

DEVELOPING YOUNG GLOBAL LEADERS

Though Epstein's ties to Harvard have been scrutinized, Wexner also dramatically expanded his donations to Harvard during much of the same period. However, the role this may have played in facilitating Epstein's own connections to the university have been largely glossed over by mainstream media reports on the matter.

Even before Wexner and Epstein donated to Harvard's Hillel in 1991, Wexner's philanthropic "development of leaders" had become entangled with Harvard University. In 1989, the year after the Wexner Graduate Fellowship was launched, the Wexner Israel Fellowship program was created to specifically "support up to 10 outstanding Israeli public officials earning their Mid-Career Master of Public Administration (MC/MPA) at Harvard Kennedy School."

Per the Wexner Foundation's website: "The goal of the Fellowship is to provide Israel's next generation of public leaders with advanced leadership and public management training. More than 280 Israeli public officials have participated in the Israel Fellowship, including leaders who have gone on to become Directors General of government ministries, Generals and Commanders in the Israeli military, and top advisers to Prime Ministers." As part of the program, participants "meet with senior U.S. government officials."[45] Wexner Israel Fellows also "commit to returning to Israel and remaining in the public sector for at least three years after completing the program."[46]

Similar claims can be found among Israeli media. For example, *Israel 21c* stated the following about the program in 2002:

> Several Wexner graduates have gone on to become Director-Generals of government ministries. Others have reached the highest echelons of the military, the health service, and the educational establishment. But ultimately, for Israel, the value of the program is not the titles of its participants, but in the quality of leadership exercised by these individuals at every level.[47]

That same article also notes that Wexner's interest in having this program be hosted at Harvard's Kennedy school "is the quality of the international exposure it permits. It attracts the highest caliber of public sector leadership from around the world and Israeli participants find themselves sitting next to ex-presidents and future prime ministers from every continent. It also creates a rare opportunity for high quality public relations, as future world leaders are exposed to some of the finest and most dedicated individuals Israel has to offer."[48]

Among the 10 alumni of the first class of Wexner Israel Fellows is Shay Avital, a prominent leadership figure in the Israeli military and who had first served under Benjamin Netanyahu's brother, Yonatan Netanyahu.[49] Other alumni include Avinoam Armoni, former special adviser to Teddy Kollek (see chapter 3), as well as Israeli prime ministers;[50] Moshe Lador, former Israeli state prosecutor;[51] Arik Raz, former governor of Israel's Misgav region;[52] Uzi Vogelman, current justice on Israel's Supreme Court;[53] Eduardo Titelman Goren, a Chilean economist who has played a major role in managing Chile's copper mining industry (the world's largest);[54] and Yossi Tamir, Director General of the JDC-Israel, "the leading global Jewish humanitarian organization."[55]

Another interesting alumnus from this first class was Amos Slyper, who was Deputy Director-General of the State Comptroller's Office in Israel, making him responsible for the auditing of Israeli government ministries and offices.[56] During Slyper's tenure, the legal adviser to that office was Nurit Israeli, an alumnus of the second class of Wexner Israel Fellows.

As can be seen from just the first class of fellows, the Wexner Israel Fellow programs and its active alumni community have given Wexner considerable clout with prominent Israelis in major positions in government and industry. Years after this program was launched, it has since expanded to include the Wexner Senior Leaders program, which "leverages the training and scholarship of the Harvard Kennedy School to strengthen Israel's public service leadership and spur innovative, collaborative projects across government departments and agencies."[57] It specifically seeks applicants from "senior level positions within Israel's public service sector, including the civil service, local government, government agencies, and security forces."[58]

Thus, even before the 1991 donation by Wexner and Epstein, Wexner was actively bringing prominent Israelis, many with careers in Israel's national security apparatus or in the public sector, to study at Harvard's Kennedy school. In the years that followed, Wexner would become one of the guiding forces behind this particular school and would have even greater influence over the "development of leaders" at the institution.

Shortly before Larry Summers became Harvard's president, Leslie Wexner, via the Wexner Foundation, funded the creation of the Harvard Kennedy School's

Center for Public Leadership (CPL).[59] The CPL is described as "a premier training ground for emerging public leaders in the United States."[60]

The long-time director of CPL, who was likely chosen with direct input from Wexner, is David Gergen, an adviser to former presidents Nixon, Ford, Reagan, and Clinton. In the Nixon years, Gergen was the speechwriter for William E. Simon, whose ties to Covenant House, AmeriCares, and much more have already been discussed throughout this book.

Gergen has also had a parallel career in journalism and, in the late 1980s, "he was chief editor of *U.S. News & World Report*, working with publisher Mort Zuckerman." Zuckerman was a close associate of Epstein and bought the *New York Daily News* after the death of its previous owner, Robert Maxwell. Gergen is also a long-time member of the Council on Foreign Relations and the Trilateral Commission, where Epstein also had memberships.

Wexner's contributions to Harvard's CPL reached $19.6 million by 2006 and totaled more than $42 million by 2012.[61] Notably, during this period, Jeffrey Epstein – one of Wexner's closest associates until they parted ways between 2007 and 2008 – was also making major connections and gaining unprecedented access to the school.

In 2006, when the Wexner's announced an additional donation of $6.8 million to the CPL, Gergen was quoted by the *Harvard Crimson* as saying:

> It has been a great personal privilege to work with Les and Abigail Wexner over the past half-dozen years, at the University and beyond. They are both leaders in their own right – people of vision, imagination, and keen dedication to advancing the quality of public life. They have been wonderful partners."[62]

In 2014, Gergen participated in the Wexner Foundation's 30th anniversary gala, hosting a session where he interviewed former Israeli Prime Minister Shimon Peres at length.[63]

Before Epstein's second arrest, the Wexner-dominated CPL saw Epstein associates like Glenn Dubin and Leon Black creep into its top leadership bodies. For example, Dubin had become a member of CPL's advisory council, which Leslie and Abigail Wexner co-chaired. Both Wexner and Dubin were pressured to remove themselves from that council after Epstein's second arrest and subsequent death and departed in February 2020.[64] At the time, the *Harvard Crimson* noted that the chief of staff to then-Harvard president Lawrence Bacow, Patricia

Bellinger, had been added to the board of directors of Wexner's L Brands (the current corporate name of The Limited).[65]

Also at the time, Dubin had been named in court documents as one of the men Virginia Giuffre was forced to have sex with when she was under Epstein's control, with another being Harvard Law professor emeritus Alan Dershowitz. In addition, as noted by the *Crimson*, a "former manager of the Dubin household Rinaldo Rizzo recount[ed] his encounter with a 15-year-old girl allegedly trafficked by Epstein who was brought to the Dubins' house in 2005."[66] In 2010, Dubin had donated $5 million to the CPL to create his own fellowship aimed at "developing leaders," called the Dubin Graduate Fellowships for Emerging Leaders.[67]

In another example, Leon Black, of Apollo Global Management and whose "philanthropic" family foundation was also managed by Epstein for years, was on the CPL's leadership council. Black, however, did not resign his post after the Epstein scandal became a national concern. However, after Wexner and Dubin had left their positions on the advisory council, Black's connection to Epstein resulted in considerable media scrutiny as well as an "internal investigation" by Apollo.[68] As of 2022, Black is no longer listed on the CPL's website as a member of its leadership council.[69]

In 2006, plans were made for the Wexner-funded CPL to team up with the World Economic Forum's Young Global Leaders (YGL) program. The World Economic Forum, which describes itself as the pre-eminent facilitator of "public-private partnerships" on a global scale, originally created what would become YGL in 1992 under the name the Global Leaders of Tomorrow. It was rebranded as the YGL program in 2004.

In recent years, the Forum and its YGL program have become infamous in some circles, specifically after a clip of the Forum's chairman Klaus Schwab went viral. In that clip, Schwab states the following of the YGL program:

> I have to say then I mention names like Mrs. Merkel, even Vladimir Putin and so on they all have been Young Global Leaders of The World Economic Forum. But what we are really proud of now with the young generation like Prime Minister Trudeau, President of Argentina and so on, is that we penetrate the cabinets.… It is true in Argentina and it is true in France now…[70]

Notably, that clip comes from a 2017 discussion between Klaus Schwab and the CLP's David Gergen that took place at the Harvard Kennedy school. In the introduction to that discussion, the close ties between the Harvard Kennedy school and the World Economic Forum are highlighted and it is also mentioned that YGL participants are also present and attending the Harvard Kennedy school for an executive session. Gergen, in addition to his many roles and appointments, is also formerly a board member of the Schwab Foundation for Social Entrepreneurship, which Klaus Schwab co-founded with his wife in 1998, and is also an agenda contributor to the World Economic Forum.[71]

The CPL began hosting an Executive Session for Young Global Leader participants in order to allow "the Young Global Leaders a much greater opportunity to form personal connections and bonds that will encourage opportunities for the leaders to working together, across multiple sectors, to solve international issues and problems in the future."[72]

These executive sessions were "designed and hosted by the Kennedy School of Government" and a significant amount of the funds raised were connected to the Clinton Global Initiative (CGI). In 2007, Epstein's defense lawyers claimed that Epstein had played a major role in developing the CGI, writing to federal prosecutors that "Mr. Epstein was part of the original group that conceived the Clinton Global Initiative, which is described as a project 'bringing together a community of global leaders to devise and implement innovative solutions to some of the world's most pressing challenges.'"[73]

At the time, the executive director of the CPL, working under David Gergen, was Betsy Meyers, a former senior adviser to president Clinton, specifically on women's issues. Meyers also played a "critical role in Clinton's re-election effort in 1996." The corruption surrounding Clinton's re-election campaign that year and Epstein's own connections to that corruption are discussed in chapter 16.[74]

Klaus Schwab's now infamous "penetrate the cabinets" quote may offer insight as to Leslie Wexner's own interest over the decades in "developing leaders" in American Jewish communities, in Israel and beyond. With nearly 40 years focused specifically on training men and women of influence in American Jewish society – as well as in Israel's government and private sector – ideas and policies that benefit Wexner both personally and professionally have been instilled into generations of leaders and influencers, who then go on to influence many others. In the specific case of the Wexner Israel fellows, Wexner has been able to "penetrate" key posts in Israel's government, and even its national security/intelligence apparatus, with people he has funded and who have participated in courses that were shaped by, and reflect, Wexner's views.

Over the past two decades, Wexner's foray into becoming one of the main donors of the Harvard Kennedy school allows for much the same to occur, but this time for leaders who operate and influence those far outside of the boundaries of the global Jewish community.

Wexner's exact reasons for establishing and maintaining this legitimate yet massive influence operation, which paralleled Epstein's own blackmail-based influence operation, have never been made explicit.

Yet, in speculating as to why he would want to mold the powerful and soon-to-be powerful, it is worth considering Wexner's lesser known connections, including to organized crime, to Jeffrey Epstein, and (as will be discussed in chapter 17) to not one but two CIA-linked airlines with histories of drug and arms trafficking.

THE MEGA GROUP

The same year he and Epstein began donating to Harvard, in 1991, Leslie Wexner teamed up with Charles Bronfman to establish an exclusive group of 20 of "the nation's wealthiest and most influential Jewish businessmen" that is referred to as either the "Study Group" or the "Mega Group." Though it was created in 1991, no media reports were written about the group until 7 years later, in 1998, when a short report on the group was published in the *Wall Street Journal*.[75] At that time, it was reported that each member of this "loosely organized club" contributes $30,000 to the group annually and its members meet twice a year for two days. The official focus of the group is Jewish philanthropy.

However, per the *Wall Street Journal*'s report, the main concerns about these billionaires, as it relates to "philanthropy," centered around declining support for Israel's policies and concern that an increasing number of Jews were intermarrying with other ethno-religious groups. It seems, instead, that many of the Mega Group's members were more concerned about using their money and influence to control Jewish identity. Indeed, one prominent Mega Group member, Michael Steinhardt, who went on to form Birth-right-Taglit with Charles Bronfman and with the backing of Benjamin Netanyahu, has long been open that he is an atheist who thinks that devotion to the State of Israel should serve as "a substitute for [Jewish] theology."[76]

There is reason to speculate as to whether the sole intention of the Mega Group was focused on philanthropy. The main reason to suspect that ulterior motives may hide behind the group's "philanthropic" mission is because many of the group's members, including its founders Wexner and Bronfman, have direct and indirect ties to organized crime and/or intelligence networks that have been explored in this book.

Aside from Wexner, Charles Bronfman and his brother Edgar, other Mega Group members/associates at the time of the *Journal*'s article included Laurence Tisch, Steven Spielberg, and Wexner's mentor Max Fisher. Fisher's ties to the governments of the US and Israel, their intelligence agencies and an indirect organized crime connection through his association with the Allen brothers and others were discussed in the previous chapter. Similar connections of the

Bronfman family and Leslie Wexner himself were mainly discussed in chapter 2 and chapter 13, respectively.

As for Steven Spielberg, the famous director, he is the best known protégé of Lew Wasserman, the Hollywood mogul of MCA with major organized crime connections.[77] There is also the case of Lester Crown. As previously noted in Chapter 1, Lester Crown is the son of the "Supermob" figure, Henry Crown. As discussed there, Crown's closest associates included Jake Avery, a political fixer for the Democrats who was allied with Al Capone, and Sidney Korshak, a lawyer linked to prominent organized figures like Moe Dalitz as well as mob-linked executives at MCA, including Wasserman.

In the case of Laurence Tisch, his ties to the networks discussed at length in this book are a bit less direct. He began his career in the OSS, before building a massive hotel chain. Tisch would subsequently become intimately involved with Drexel Burnham Lambert and convicted felon Michael Milken. Their relationship would enable Tisch's takeover of Columbia Broadcasting System (CBS).

Another case is Michael Steinhardt, a well-known and controversial hedge fund manager who co-founded Birthright-Taglit with Mega Group co-founder Charles Bronfman. Birthright-Taglit is managed by the Jewish Agency that Fisher helped relaunch in 1970 and has also received substantial funding from the Wexner Foundation.

Steinhardt opened up about his own family ties to Meyer Lansky in his autobiography *No Bull: My Life in and out of the Markets,* where he noted that his father, Sol "Red McGee" Steinhardt, was Lansky's jewel fence of choice and a major player in New York's criminal underworld.[78] Sol Steinhardt was also his son's first client on Wall Street and helped him jump-start his career in finance.

Such associations are not limited to Steinhardt's past, however. In 1991, Steinhardt owned a hedge fund called JGM Management with James Marquez. Samuel Israel III also worked at the firm and he and Marquez would go on to fund the Bayou Group, which became one of the "one of the most bizarre hedge fund blowups" in recent decades.[79]

The fraud that resulted in that "blowup" was directly related to Israel's relationship to Robert Booth Nichols, the figure deeply tied to organized crime and intelligence who figured prominently in the PROMIS scandal (See chapter 9). Israel claimed to once have defended Nichols during a "secret trade at a German bank," killing a "Middle Eastern guy" in the process.[80]

Other, similar associations can also be found in the earliest stages of Steinhardt's career. For decades, Steinhardt was particularly close to Marc Rich, first meeting the Mossad-linked commodities trader in the 1970s and then managing $3 million for Rich, Rich's then-wife Denise, and Rich's father-in-law from the early 1980s to the mid-1990s through his hedge fund.[81] Rich's fortune during this time was "a source of funding for secret financial arrangements" and that "his worldwide offices, according to several reliable sources, frequently served Mossad agents, with his consent."[82]

Rich had more direct ties to the Mossad as well. For instance, his foundation – the Rich Foundation – was run by the former Mossad agent Avner Azulay. Rich was also friendly with prominent Israel politicians, including former Prime Ministers Menachem Begin and Ehud Barak, and was a frequent provider of "services" for Israeli intelligence, services he freely volunteered.[83] In addition, as mentioned in Chapter 7, Rich had a relationship with BCCI and the corrupt bank lent him tens of millions of dollars throughout the 1980s.[84]

In the late 1990s, Steinhardt would enlist other Mega Group members, such as Edgar Bronfman, in the effort to settle the criminal charges against Rich, which eventually came to pass with Clinton's controversial pardon before he left office in early 2001. Steinhardt claimed to have come up with the idea of a presidential pardon for Rich in late 2000.[85]

Rich's pardon was controversial for several reasons, and many mainstream outlets asserted that it "reeked of payoff." As the *New York Post* noted in 2016, in the run-up to the presidential pardon the financier's ex-wife Denise had donated $450,000 to the fledgling Clinton Library and "over $1 million to Democratic campaigns in the Clinton era."[86] In addition, Rich had hired high-powered lawyers with links to powerful individuals in both the Democratic and Republican parties as well as the Clinton White House, including Jack Quinn, who had previously served as general counsel to the Clinton administration and as former chief of staff to Vice President Al Gore.

Per Clinton's own words and other supporting evidence, the main reason behind the Rich pardon was the heavy lobbying from Israeli intelligence, Israeli politicians, and members of the Mega Group like Steinhardt, with the donations from Denise Rich and Quinn's access to the president likely sweetening the deal.[87] Ehud Barak had played a pivotal role in the pardon, reportedly even shouting at the president to pardon Rich on at least one occasion.[88] In early 2019, it was reported that several women who had worked with Steinhardt at various Jewish organizations, including Hillel International, had accused him of sexual harassment.[89]

A “MEGA” MYSTERY

Roughly a year before the Mega Group was formally reported on by the mainstream American press, an explosive story was published by the *Washington Post*. The story centered on an intercepted phone call made between a Mossad official in the US and his superior in Tel Aviv that discussed the Mossad’s efforts to obtain a secret US government document.

According to the *Post*, the Mossad official stated during the phone call that “Israeli Ambassador Eliahu Ben Elissar had asked him whether he could obtain a copy of the letter given to [Palestinian leader Yasser] Arafat by [then-Secretary of State Warren] Christopher on Jan. 16, the day after the Hebron Accord was signed by Arafat and Israeli Prime Minister Binyamin Netanyahu.”

The *Post* article continued:

> According to a source who viewed a copy of the NSA transcript of the conversation, the intelligence officer, speaking in Hebrew, said, “The ambassador wants me to go to Mega to get a copy of this letter.” The source said the supervisor in Tel Aviv rejected the request, saying, “This is not something we use Mega for.”[90]

The leaked communication led to an investigation that sought to identify an individual code-named “Mega” that the *Post* said “may be someone in the U.S. government who has provided information to the Israelis in the past,” a concern that subsequently spawned a fruitless FBI investigation.

The Mossad later claimed that “Mega” was merely a code word for the CIA, but the FBI and NSA were unconvinced by that claim and believed that it was a senior U.S. government official that had potentially once been involved in working with Jonathan Pollard, the former U.S. naval intelligence analyst later convicted of spying for the Mossad.[91]

However, the main source for the claim that “Mega” was code for the CIA and not something else was none other than Rafi Eitan, one of the architects of the PROMIS scandal and the handler of both Robert Maxwell and Jonathan Pollard on behalf of Israeli intelligence.[92] Per the *Los Angeles Times*, Eitan had said that “Mega” was derived from Megawatt and that name, “[d]uring the ‘70s and ‘80s, it was the name of an international gathering of representatives from a dozen Western intelligence organizations, including the Mossad and CIA, who exchanged information and assessments of Soviet capabilities and intentions.” The

LA Times notes that "Megawatt" had been disbanded long before the 1997 spy scandal and intercepted phone call. This, of course, suggests that Eitan was seeking to cover for something else and it is thus unsurprising that neither US intelligence nor the Clinton administration took his claims at face value.

And why would they? After all, Eitan had been involved in several espionage operations that targeted sensitive American installations and military secrets. He also had previously relied on organized crime networks in the US for his intelligence work, such as when he contacted and met with Meyer Lansky, who helped him illicitly obtain sensitive electronic equipment from the CIA.[93]

"Mega" was, most likely, some sort of mole in the US power establishment and this was the belief of US intelligence at the time, per media reports of the period. However, they had suspected that "Mega" referred to an individual who was servicing Israeli intelligence the way Jonathan Pollard had. Yet, the subsequent reporting in the *Wall Street Journal,* on the "Mega Group" of billionaires deeply connected, not just to Israel's power structure, but also to organized crime networks, suggests that "Mega" could have potentially referred to a group, as opposed to an individual.

Indeed, when considering that – in the intercepted call – the Mossad operative planned to "go to Mega" to get a copy of a diplomatic letter, the possibility isn't so far-fetched. Max Fisher, a Mega Group member, was an advisor to several presidential administrations and served as a diplomatic liaison between the US and Israel, essentially acting as a "private Middle East diplomat" to quote Bob Fitrakis.[94] In playing that role, Fisher would have likely had access to sensitive diplomatic documents.

Other Mega Group members were similarly actively involved in both Israeli and US politics and particularly focused on influencing US foreign policy with respect to Israel. In addition, as detailed earlier in this chapter, several Mega members had intelligence connections as well. Would it be so unheard of for these wealthy figures to have such a document or be able to readily obtain a copy, given that some of them had a history of acting as *de facto* diplomats in such matters and had easy access to major political power centers?

With journalists positing soon after the *WSJ* article that the Mega Group's "charitable interests are often a cover for lobbying activities on behalf of Israel," the possibility seems important to consider. This is especially true given that one of the Mega Group's co-founders, Leslie Wexner, was employing Jeffrey Epstein, who was tied to Israeli intelligence and then working closely with Ghislaine Maxwell in an influence operation that allegedly had a specific focus on targeting the sitting President of the United States.

Notably, a year after the "Mega" spy scandal, Israeli Prime Minister Netanyahu was alleged to have used blackmail against Bill Clinton to gain leverage during the Wye Plantation talks between Israel and Palestine in 1998. It was later reported by author Daniel Halper – relying on on-the-record interviews with former officials and hundreds of pages of documents compiled in the event that Lewinsky took legal action against Clinton – that Benjamin Netanyahu told Clinton that he had obtained recordings of sexually-tinged phone conversations between Clinton and Monica Lewinsky and attempted to use that blackmail to pressure Clinton into pardoning Jonathan Pollard.[95] Clinton considered the pardon, but only declined when then-Director of the CIA George Tenet threatened to very publicly resign his post if the pardon went forward.

Investigative journalist and author Gordon Thomas had made similar claims years prior and asserted that the Mossad had obtained some 30 hours of phone-sex conversations between Lewinsky and Clinton and used them as leverage.[96] In addition, a report in *Insight* magazine in May 2000 claimed that Israeli intelligence had "penetrated four White House telephone lines and was able to relay real-time conversations on those lines from a remote site outside the White House directly to Israel for listening and recording."[97]

Those phone taps apparently went well beyond the White House, as revealed by a December 2001 investigative report by Carl Cameron for *FOX News*. According to Cameron's report:

> [Israeli telecommunications company Amdocs] helped Bell Atlantic install new telephone lines in the White House in 1997… [and] a senior-level employee of Amdocs had a separate T1 data phone line installed from his base outside of St. Louis that was connected directly to Israel…
>
> [I]nvestigators are looking into whether the owner of the T1 line had a "real time'" capacity to intercept phone calls from both the White House and other government offices around Washington, and sustained the line for some time, sources said. Sources familiar with the investigation say FBI agents on the case sought an arrest warrant for the St. Louis employee but [Clinton] Justice Department officials quashed it.[98]

Amdocs and another Israeli company were also the subjects of similar reporting from journalist Chris Ketcham:

> [Both Amdocs and Verint Inc. (formerly Comverse Infosys)] are based in Israel – having arisen to prominence from that country's cornering of the information technology market – and are heavily funded by the Israeli government, with connections to the Israeli military and Israeli intelligence…
>
> The companies' operations, sources suggest, have been infiltrated by freelance spies exploiting encrypted trapdoors in Verint/Amdocs technology and gathering data on Americans for transfer to Israeli intelligence and other willing customers (particularly organized crime).[99]

The 1990s saw a proliferation of Israeli espionage activity that targeted the highest levels of government, including the White House. While this wiretapping for the purpose of blackmail took place, it is important to keep in mind that Jeffrey Epstein had been visiting the White House, where he allegedly courted the president and influential White House officials, Congressmen and Senators.

Former Israeli intelligence official Ari Ben-Menashe has alleged that Epstein's sexual blackmail operation was created at Israel's behest specifically to blackmail president Bill Clinton. Ben-Menashe specifically said the following:

> The Israelis feared that Mr. Clinton, when he was campaigning for President, will be a repeat of Mr. Carter. He wanted to press them for peace with the Palestinians and all that stuff. They feared … Clinton wasn't that … but they feared he was that.… And I think Mr. Epstein was sent early on to catch up with President Clinton.[100]

As previously mentioned in chapter 6, Israel had allegedly been behind the effort to blackmail president Carter through his brother, Billy Carter. It is also worth noting again that Epstein's blackmail operation is believed to have been set up in 1991, the same year the Mega Group was created by Epstein's closest associate Leslie Wexner.

As will be noted in detail in chapter 16, Epstein visited the Clinton White House 17 times in less than two years. During this period of increased espionage of the US government by Israel, Epstein's efforts to court top administration officials, including the president himself, continued. Other notable politicians believed to have been blackmailed by Epstein, Democratic politicians Bill Richardson and George Mitchell, were also notably involved in sensitive Middle East policy negotiations that were of obvious interest to Israel.

HOLLINGER INTERNATIONAL

In 1996, Leslie Wexner joined the board of directors of Hollinger International, a media holding company created by Conrad Black, a now disgraced media mogul who also makes an appearance in Epstein's contact book. Black was the son of prominent Canadian businessman George Montegu Black, Jr., who managed a division of Argus Corporation called Canadian Breweries.

The Argus Corporation was modeled after the Atlas Corporation, Floyd Odlum's company tied to OSS chief William Donovan, as detailed in chapter 1. According to Argus's founder E.P. Taylor, after being "introduced to an American, Floyd Odlum, who had achieved great success with a non-diversified trust called Atlas Corporation in the states[,] 'I conceived of modeling Argus after Atlas.'"[101]

Early on, Atlas had a financial stake in Argus and two directors of Atlas were initially placed on Argus's board, one of whom was David Baird, whose CIA-linked foundation has been a recurring theme in this book.[102] Argus was also connected to defense contractor General Dynamics via Argus director W.E. Phillips, who was also a director of General Dynamics's Canadian subsidiary Canadair Ltd.[103] As was also noted in chapter 1, General Dynamics included the interests of Atlas's Floyd Odlum as well as the Supermob-linked Henry Crown, Lester Crown's father.

By the late 1970s, Conrad and his brother controlled the company. Between 1978 and 1985, Conrad Black asset stripped the conglomerate and used the spoils to build a major Anglo-American media empire, rivaling that of Rupert Murdoch and Robert Maxwell.

Over the course of 1985, Conrad Black became the controlling shareholder of the UK's *Daily Telegraph*, a newspaper closely aligned with the UK's conservative party and Black himself became increasingly associated with Margaret Thatcher. That same year, he founded Hollinger International as a holding company for his media interests. A year later, he began aggressively acquiring US media assets, and, by the time Wexner joined the board, Black, via a Hollinger subsidiary, controlled 393 newspapers in the US alone.[104]

Shortly before Wexner joined the board, in 1994, Hollinger's advisory board was a hive of people that have been previously mentioned throughout this book, including: co-founder of the Trilateral Commission, Zbigniew Brzezinski;

journalist and close friend of Roy Cohn, William Buckley; corporate raider and Clermont Club member, James Goldsmith; and "the Lord Rothschild."[105] Also present was Chaim Herzog, president of Israel from 1983 to 1993; former Federal Reserve chairman Paul Volcker; and Richard Perle, Assistant Secretary of Defense for International Planning under Ronald Reagan who was an architect of that administration's "Star Wars" defense program and, later, an architect of the Iraq War. Also listed as senior international advisors to Hollinger that year were Henry Kissinger, who would formally join Hollinger's board alongside Wexner in 1996, and former UK Prime Minister Margaret Thatcher herself.

Not long after Wexner joined the board of Hollinger, Conrad Black began to extensively defraud the company. It was later discovered that, from 1997 to 2004, Black stole approximately $400 million from the company, "a sum equal to 95 percent of the net profits for the period 1997-2003." According to reports, Black had "packed the board of directors with his own nominees, who turned a blind eye" to his most suspect financial transactions during this period and, as a result, "not one of these $400 million payments was questioned by his docile board."[106] After Wexner joined the board in 1996, he apparently brought his mentor, A. Alfred Taubman, onto the Hollinger board and, according to David Gross, Taubman "remained on Hollinger's board *even after* he had been convicted of violating antitrust laws" related to his role at Sotheby's.[107]

Though Conrad Black's financial crimes during Wexner's time on the board of Hollinger International are important to note, the proximity of Wexner to Richard Perle via Hollinger is also significant. A year after Wexner became a director of Hollinger, in 1997, the company created a new subsidiary called Hollinger Digital and Hollinger International board member Richard Perle was made CEO.[108]

A year prior, Perle had been the co-author, along with prominent neo-conservatives like Douglas Feith, of a policy document written for then-Israeli Prime Minister Benjamin Netanyahu, whose 1996 electoral victory had been largely financed and orchestrated by the wealthy heir to the Estee Lauder fortune, Ronald Lauder. That document, entitled "A Clean Break: A New Strategy for Securing the Realm," advocated for the aggressive removal of Iraq's Saddam Hussein from power and regime change in Syria via proxy war. Journalist Jason Vest, writing in *The Nation*, described the document as "a blueprint for a mini-cold war in the Middle East, advocating the use of proxy armies for regime changes, destabilization, and containment. Indeed, it even goes so far as to articulate a way to advance right-wing Zionism by melding it with missile-defense advocacy."[109]

Prior to writing "A Clean Break," Perle's relationship with Israel had been a source of controversy. According to Seymour Hersh in his book *The Price of Power*, Perle was caught via an FBI wiretap in the early 1970s passing classified material to the Israeli embassy. At the time, Perle was the top foreign policy aide to Senator Henry "Scoop" Jackson (D-WA).[110] Perle's close associate, Stephen Bryen, was subsequently embroiled in a major Israeli espionage scandal in the late 1970s. The case was closed even though the FBI had recommended the case against Bryen be brought before an investigative grand jury for espionage.[111] Shortly thereafter, in 1981, Perle secured Bryen a top secret security clearance by hiring him as his deputy assistant at the Reagan Defense Department. Bryen, throughout the 1980s, continued to pass classified material to Israel on US weapons systems.[112]

Upon leaving his job as a Senate aide in 1980, Perle became a consultant with the Abington Corporation and his first clients were Shlomo and Chaim Zabludowicz, a father and son team of arms dealers from Israel. During the early part of this relationship between the Zabludowiczs and Perle, Perle retained his Senate security clearance and his employer Abington was paid $10,000 a month by the Zabludowicz's weapons firm. In 1983, while at the Reagan Defense Department, Perle had recommended that the Army purchase weapons from one of the Zabludowicz's weapons firms.[113] The Zabludowiczs were later alleged to have benefitted from an improper business relationships with Melvyn Paisley, a former Navy official.[114]

Perle, during the George W. Bush administration, had been appointed to serve on the Defense Policy Board, where he worked closely with then-Secretary of Defense Donald Rumsfeld. In that capacity, Perle "embraced the advantages of being both a businessman and a policy insider."[115] As noted by journalist Daniel Gross in 2003, "Hollinger is now investigating a $2.5 million investment that Hollinger Digital made in Trireme Partners, where Perle is a managing partner. According to the [*Financial Times*], Perle also directed a $14 million investment into Hillman Capital, a fund controlled by Gerald Hillman. Gerald Hillman, a fellow member of the Defense Policy Board, is also a member of Trireme Partners."[116] Notably, Hollinger-owned media outlets largely acted as cheerleaders for the Iraq War, which Perle had helped to orchestrate.

WEXNER AND THE WAR

Also in the year 2003, a document prepared for and financed by the Wexner Foundation was leaked to the news website *Electronic Intifada*. The document, entitled "Wexner Analysis: Israeli Communication Priorities 2003," was prepared by the firm led by Republican pollster Frank Luntz and The Israel Project (TIP). Luntz and TIP co-wrote other similar documents that are intended for those "on the front lines of fighting the media war for Israel."[117]

This particular Wexner Foundation-funded document was the subject of controversy upon being made public, as it laid out various "communication priorities" for Israel's government and pro-Israel partisans as it related to the American invasion and occupation of Iraq – a war that some analysts believed was more beneficial to Israeli policy goals than American policy goals in the region. Former top military officials, like Bush's former Middle East Envoy and former head of US Central Command, Anthony Zinni, have explicitly stated that the Iraq war had been fought for Israel's benefit and that "pushing the war for Israel's benefit was 'the worst-kept secret in Washington.'"[118]

The document specifically states that "now is the time to link American success in dealing with terrorism and dictators from a position of strength to Israel's ongoing efforts to eradicate terrorism on and within its borders." This document was thus deemed by some journalists as part of "a systematic campaign to identify Israeli national security interests with U.S. military and security interests," a campaign that also intimately involved think tanks deeply tied to the George W. Bush administration, specifically the Project for a New American Century (PNAC).[119] One of the key figures who were both part of PNAC and the Bush administration, aside from Dick Cheney and Donald Rumsfeld, was Hollinger International's Richard Perle.

The Wexner Analysis document shows that the Wexner Foundation was funding at least one effort directly focused on benefitting Israeli policy goals as well as on influencing the opinions of the American public with respect to Israeli foreign policy. While this is the best known example of Wexner's interests intermingling with Israeli policy goals as it relates to the Iraq War, it seems there is more to the story.

On August 31, 2002, Epstein flew to Birmingham, England accompanied only by an attractive young woman named Nicole Junkermann. Junkermann had previously worked as a super model represented by Elite Model Management in 1995 – the same modeling agency that Epstein's friend Naomi Campbell famously worked for and which Epstein unsuccessfully tried to purchase in the early 2000s. At the time of this flight, Junkermann had recently graduated from a Harvard management development program.

From the airport, the pair reportedly traveled by helicopter to the Foxcote House hunting retreat in the countryside of North Warwickshire, which Abigail Wexner had purchased in 1999. The next day, on September 1, 2002, Epstein welcomed two US senators to the property. That evening, the house also hosted a mix of off-duty Metropolitan Police officers, some private security, as well as a US-origin security detail present to guard the senators.

A witness of these events, an employee on the premises, later spoke to journalist Johnny Vedmore and revealed that Epstein met the senators in the evening accompanied by two ladies, one on each arm. Both ladies – one being an attractive blonde (presumably Nicole Junkermann) and the other being described as an unnamed tall brunette – were glamorously dressed and were escorted by Epstein to the waiting senators.

When a Freedom of Information Act request was filed with UK Metropolitan Police about the meeting, they said they could "neither confirm nor deny" providing officers to guard US Senators, nor provide the identity of those senators due to concerns that included potential harm to "national security" and "international relations."

The implications of this are truly staggering as it appears that Epstein may have used two attractive (though not underage) women to influence two US Senators at a very critical time in recent US history. Indeed, September 4, 2002 – just a few days after this UK meeting – was the day that George W. Bush "launched a campaign to justify to Americans the need to mount a war against Iraq." (In launching that campaign, Bush sat next to then-speaker of the House Dennis Hastert, who notably was later revealed to have sexually abused several teenage boys while working at a high school prior to his political career.)[120]

In the weeks and months that followed, the effort to take America to war, based on a series of falsehoods and misinterpretations, grew steadily until the US formally invaded Iraq in March 2003. Yet, there is now a possibility that Jeffrey

Epstein himself may have played a role in securing support for that war through the sexual blackmail of sitting US Senators, blackmail ultimately obtained at a residence owned by the Wexner family.

Endnotes

1 Julie Baumgold, "Bachelor Billionaire," *New York Magazine*, August 5, 1985.

2 "Definition of Dybbuk" Encyclopedia Britannica, https://www.britannica.com/topic/dybbuk-Jewish-folklore.

3 Dr Harry Freedman, "How to Deal with a Dybbuk," *Jewish Chronicle*, January 28, 2019, https://www.thejc.com/judaism/features/how-to-deal-with-a-dybbuk-1.479193.

4 "Our Story," The Wexner Foundation, https://web.archive.org/web/20220103195922/https://www.wexnerfoundation.org/our-story/.

5 Wolfgang Saxon, "Bella C. Wexner, 93, Matriarch of a Retail Chain," *New York Times*, November 10, 2001, https://www.nytimes.com/2001/11/10/us/bella-c-wexner-93-matriarch-of-a-retail-chain.html.

6 Wexner Foundation, "Our Story."

7 Jeff Barker, "Robert I. Hiller, Community Development Leader," *Baltimore Sun*, June 7, 2015, https://www.baltimoresun.com/obituaries/bs-md-ob-robert-hiller-20150607-story.html.

8 Barker, "Hiller."

9 Robert I. Hiller, *Getting Results: Fifty Years of Opportunities and Decisions* (Charlotte, NC: POPLAR STREET PRESS, 2011), 89, https://archive.org/details/gettingresultsfi0000hill.

10 Hiller, *Getting Results*, 125.

11 Hiller, *Getting Results*, 136.

12 "Maurice S. Corson Profile," *Prabook*, May 26, 2022, https://web.archive.org/web/20220526161102/https://prabook.com/web/maurice_s.corson/583139.

13 Relly Sa'ar, "Bar-Ilan Univ. Political Scientist Charles Liebman Wins Israel Prize," *Haaretz*, May 7, 2003, https://www.haaretz.com/2003-03-07/ty-article/bar-ilan-univ-political-scientist-charles-liebman-wins-israel-prize/0000017f-dbb6-db5a-a57f-dbfe87640000.

14 Charles S. Liebman, "Extremism as a Religious Norm," *Journal for the Scientific Study of Religion* 22, no. 1 (March 1983), https://doi.org/10.2307/1385593.

15 John Cumpsty, "Glutton, Gourmet or Bon Vivant: A Response to Charles S. Liebman," *Journal for the Scientific Study of Religion* 24, no. 2 (June 1985): 217, https://doi.org/10.2307/1386343.

16 Steven M. Cohen, "Charles Liebman Shed Light on Jewish Culture," *The Forward*, September 12, 2003, https://forward.com/news/8108/charles-liebman-shed-light-on-jewish-culture/.

17 "Charles S. Liebman," *Geni*, https://web.archive.org/web/20151114162232/https://www.geni.com/people/Charles-S-Liebman/6000000026845820333.

18 "Rabbi Herbert A. Friedman," *The Wexner Foundation*, https://web.archive.org/web/20210508140306/https://www.wexnerfoundation.org/team/rabbi-herbert-a-friedman/.

19 Wexner Foundation, "Our Story."

20 Wexner Foundation, "Our Story."

21 Dennis Hevesi, "Rabbi Herbert A. Friedman, Israel Backer, Dies at 89," *New York Times*, April 4, 2008, https://www.nytimes.com/2008/04/04/nyregion/04friedman.html.

22 Hevesi, “Rabbi Friedman.”

23 William H. Meyers, “Rag Trade Revolutionary,” *New York Times*, June 8, 1986, https://www.nytimes.com/1986/06/08/magazine/rag-trade-revolutionary.html.

24 Meyers, “Rag Trade Revolutionary.”

25 Tsvi Sadan, “Epstein, Barak and the Wexner Foundation,” *Israel Today*, July 23, 2019, https://www.israeltoday.co.il/read/epstein-barak-and-the-wexner-foundation/.

26 “The Wexner Heritage Program,” *The Wexner Foundation*, https://web.archive.org/web/20210131041351/https://www.wexnerfoundation.org/programs/wexner-heritage-program/.

27 “The Wexner Network in Full Force at AIPAC,” The Wexner Foundation, March 7, 2018, https://www.wexnerfoundation.org/the-wexner-network-infull-force-at-aipac/.

28 Grant Smith, “Spy Crisis Launched AIPAC’s Think Tank,” *Antiwar.Com*, October 6, 2012, https://original.antiwar.com/smith-grant/2012/10/05/spy-crisis-launched-aipacs-think-tank/; Justin Raimondo, “AIPAC, Espionage, and Legal Sabotage,” *Antiwar.Com*, November 5, 2007, https://original.antiwar.com/justin/2007/11/05/aipac-espionage-and-legal-sabotage/.

29 Grant Smith, “Why Bush Will Pardon AIPAC for Espionage,” *Antiwar.Com*, August 20, 2008, https://original.antiwar.com/smith-grant/2008/08/20/why-bush-will-pardon-aipac-for-espionage/.

30 Chris McGreal, “US Government to Drop Espionage Charges against Aipac Officials,” *The Guardian*, May 1, 2009, https://www.theguardian.com/world/2009/may/01/aipac-israel-lobby-lobbying-washington.

31 “Wexner Foundation to Channel $3-4 Million in Grants to Help Enhance and Improve Professional Leaders,” *Jewish Telegraphic Agency*, May 22, 1987, https://www.jta.org/archive/wexner-foundation-to-channel-3-4-million-in-grants-to-help-enhance-and-improve-professional-leaders.

32 “$3-4 Million in Grants.”

33 Jessica Axel, “Honoring Henry Rosovsky – The Future of Jewish Life at Harvard,” *The Campaign for Harvard Hillel*, March 11, 2020, http://campaignforharvardhillel.com/2020/03/11/honoring-henry-rosovsky/.

34 “Advocate of Calm: Henry Rosovsky,” *New York Times*, April 24, 1969, https://timesmachine.nytimes.com/timesmachine/1969/04/24/78343339.html?pageNumber=36.

35 “Henry Rosovsky Profile,” *Harvard Department of Economics*, https://economics.harvard.edu/people/henry-rosovsky.

36 Nitza Rosovsky, Pearl K. Bell, and Ronald Steel, *The Jewish Experience at Harvard and Radcliffe: An Introduction to an Exhibition Presented by the Harvard Semitic Museum on the Occasion of Harvard’s 350th Anniversary*, September, 1986 (Cambridge, Mass: The Museum : Distributed by Harvard University Press, 1986).

37 Brett Milano, “In Praise of Harvard’s Henry Rosovsky at 90,” *Harvard Gazette*, November 2, 2017, https://news.harvard.edu/gazette/story/2017/11/in-praise-of-harvards-henry-rosovsky-at-90/.

38 “$3-4 Million in Grants.”

39 Axel, “Honoring Henry Rosovsky.”

40 “Our History,” Academy of Achievement, https://web.archive.org/web/20220111113217/https://achievement.org/our-history/.

41 Penny Schwartz, “Harvard Honors a Professor Who Helped Its Jewish Life Flourish,” *Jewish Telegraphic Agency*, November 1, 2017, https://www.jta.org/2017/11/01/united-states/harvard-honors-a-professor-who-helped-its-jewish-life-flourish.

42 Susan Heller Anderson, “CHRONICLE,” *New York Times*, June 3, 1991, https://www.nytimes.com/1991/06/03/style/chronicle-639191.html.

43 “Harvard Rosovsky Hall,” Safdie Architects, https://www.safdiearchitects.com/projects/harvard-rosovsky-hall.

44 Diane E. Lopez, Ara B. Gershengorn, and Martin F. Murphy, “Report Concerning Jeffrey E. Epstein’s Connections to Harvard University,” May 2020, https://ogc.harvard.edu/files/ogc/files/report_concerning_jeffrey_e._epsteins_connections_to_harvard_university.pdf.

45 Wexner Foundation, “Our Story.”

46 “Wexner Israel Fellowship,” *The Wexner Foundation*, https://www.wexnerfoundation.org/programs/wexner-israel-fellowship/.

47 “The Wexner Israel Program - Creative Philanthropy and Leadership,” ISRAEL21c, March 10, 2002, https://www.israel21c.org/the-wexner-israel-program-creative-philanthropy-and-leadership/.

48 “The Wexner Israel Program.”

49 “Wexner Israel Foundation Class List,” *Wexner Foundation*, https://www.wexnerfoundation.org/app/classList/75?class=Class%201.

50 “Executive Committee,” *The Academic College*, https://www.int.mta.ac.il/executive-committee.

51 TOI Staff, “Former State Prosecutor, Who Charged Olmert, Says Netanyahu Should Resign,” *Times of Israel*, November 28, 2019, https://www.timesofisrael.com/former-state-prosecutor-who-charged-olmert-says-netanyahu-should-resign/.

52 Rafael Alvarez, “Israeli Mayors See City at Its Worst,” *Baltimore Sun*, July 19, 1995, https://www.baltimoresun.com/news/bs-xpm-1995-07-20-1995201041-story.html.

53 TOI Staff, “Justice Uzi Vogelman Said to Forgo Role as Head of Supreme Court,” *Times of Israel*, March 22, 2022, https://www.timesofisrael.com/justice-uzi-vogelman-said-to-forgo-role-as-head-of-supreme-court/.

54 “Cochilco heads the Chilean delegation that will analyze REACH regulations with the EU,” *Minería Chilena*, June 5, 2006, https://www.mch.cl/2006/06/05/cochilco-encabeza-delegacion-chilena-que-analizara-con-ue-normativa-reach/.

55 “Yossi Tamir’s Blog,” *Times of Israel*, May 29, 2014, https://blogs.timesofisrael.com/yossi-tamir/.

56 Nurit Israeli, “Amos Slyper In Memorium - Wexner Foundation,” *BlankGenealogy.com*, https://www.blankgenealogy.com/histories/Biographies/Levy/Amos%20Slyper%20Memorium.pdf.

57 “Wexner Senior Leaders,” *The Wexner Foundation*, https://www.wexnerfoundation.org/programs/wexner-senior-leaders/.

58 “Senior Leaders.”

59 “History,” *Harvard Kennedy School Center for Public Leadership*, https://cpl.hks.harvard.edu/history.

60 “What We Do,” *Harvard Kennedy School Center for Public Leadership*, https://cpl.hks.harvard.edu/what-we-do.

61 “Wexners Pledge Additional $6.3 Million to Center,” *Harvard Gazette*, June 1, 2006, https://news.harvard.edu/gazette/story/2006/06/wexners-pledge-additional-6-3-million-to-center/.

62 “$6.3 Million to Center.”

63 “A Conversation between Shimon Peres and David Gergen,” *The Wexner Foundation*, January 8, 2014, https://www.wexnerfoundation.org/aiovg_videos/a-conversation-between-shimon-peres-and-david-gergen/.

64 Ema R. Schumer, “Epstein-Linked Donors Dubin and Wexner Depart from HKS Leadership Council,” *Harvard Crimson*, March 17, 2020, https://www.thecrimson.com/article/2020/3/17/dubin-wexner-harvard-kennedy-school-departures/.

65 Michelle G. Kurilla and Ruoqi Zhang, “Reports: Wexner, Harvard’s Billionaire Donor, Allowed Culture of Misogyny in Victoria’s Secret” *Harvard Crimson*, February 10, 2020, https://www.thecrimson.com/article/2020/2/10/wexner-l-brands/.

66 Molly C. McCafferty and Jania J. Tumey, “Harvard Kennedy School Donor Glenn Dubin Implicated in Epstein’s Alleged Sex Ring, Unsealed Filings Allege,” *Harvard Crimson*, August 18, 2019, https://www.thecrimson.com/article/2019/8/18/dubin-epstein-unsealed-docs/.

67 McCafferty and Tumey, “Glen Dubin Implicated.”

68 Schumer, “Epstein-Linked Donors,”; Dechert LLP, “Memorandum to Apollo Conflicts Committee Re: Investigation Of Epstein/Black Relationship And Any Relationship Between Epstein and Apollo Global Management, Inc.,” January 22, 2021, EX 99.1, SEC.gov, https://www.sec.gov/Archives/edgar/data/1411494/000119312521016405/d118102dex991.htm.

69 “Leadership Council,” *Harvard Kennedy School Center for Public Leadership*, https://cpl.hks.harvard.edu/leadership-council.

70 “Improving the State of the World: A Conversation with Klaus Schwab | Institute of Politics,” https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=qyR0Wy3hO3M.

71 “David R. Gergen,” *World Economic Forum*, https://www.weforum.org/people/david-r-gergen/.

72 “The WEF’s Young Global Leaders Summer Executive Program,” *The Clinton Foundation*, https://web.archive.org/web/20170221003018/https://www.clintonfoundation.org/clinton-global-initiative/commitments/wefs-young-global-leaders-summer-executive-program.

73 Jack Crowe, “Epstein’s Lawyer Claimed the Alleged Pedophile Helped Devise the Clinton Global Initiative,” *Yahoo News*, July 8, 2019, https://news.yahoo.com/epstein-lawyer-claimed-alleged-pedophile-223701676.html.

74 “About Betsy,” *Myers Leadership*, http://betsymyers.com/about-betsy.

75 Lisa Miller, “Titans of Industry Join Forces To Work for Jewish Philanthropy,” *Wall Street Journal*, May 4, 1998, https://www.wsj.com/articles/SB894240270899870000.

76 Shimon Cohen, “‘Birthright: The Issue That Unites Netanyahu and Beilin,’” *Israel National News*, December 26, 2016, https://www.israelnationalnews.com/news/222268; Kiera Feldman, “The Romance of Birthright Israel,” *The Nation*, June 15, 2011, https://web.archive.org/web/20190812035610/https://www.thenation.com/article/romance-birthright-israel/.

77 Tim Gray, “Lew Wasserman: Still Remembered as Hollywood’s Ultimate Mover and Shaker,” *Variety*, March 22, 2016, https://variety.com/2016/biz/news/lew-wasserman-birthday-mover-shaker-1201721984/.

78 Robert Lenzner, “Michael Steinhardt’s Voyage Around His Father,” *Forbes*, November 8, 2001, https://www.forbes.com/2001/11/08/1108steinhardt.html; “Top’ Jewel Fence Is Convicted Here; Jury Finds Sol Steinhardt Guilty on 2 of 4 Counts After 11-Week Trial,” *New York Times*, March 26, 1959, https://www.nytimes.com/1959/03/26/archives/top-jewel-fence-is-convicted-here-jury-finds-sol-steinhardt-guilty.html.

79 Roddy Boyd, “Burning Hedges – Onetime Whiz Kid Knew How to Cover Tracks,” *New York Post*, December 17, 2006, https://nypost.com/2006/12/17/burning-hedges-onetime-whiz-kid-knew-how-to-cover-tracks/.

80 Andrew Ross Sorkin, “A Con Man Who Lives Between Truth and Fiction,” *DealBook*, 1340673462, https://dealbook.nytimes.com/2012/06/25/a-con-man-who-lives-between-truth-and-fiction/.

81 *TIME* February 5, 2001 Vol. 157, No. 5, p. 30, https://books.google.cl/books?id=1y_gAAAAMAAJ.

82 Eytan Avriel, “How Two Phone Calls From Ehud Barak to Bill Clinton May Have Led to President Trump,” *Haaretz*, November 25, 2016, https://www.haaretz.com/israel-news/2016-11-25/ty-article-magazine/.premium/the-jewish-billionaire-who-cost-hillary-her-presidency/0000017f-e84f-da9b-a1ff-ec6ff7330000.

83 Daniel Ammann, *The King of Oil: The Secret Lives of Marc Rich*, 1st ed (New York: St. Martin’s Press, 2009), 203.

84 Sen. John Kerry and Sen. Hank Brown, *The BCCI Affair: A Report to the Committee on Foreign Relations*, 102nd Congress 2nd Session US Senate, December 1992, 575, https://play.google.com/store/books/details?id=CoKC-Sxb9kIC.

85 “Justice Undone, Clemency Decisions in Clinton White House,” United States Congressional Serial Set, No. 14778, House Report No. 454, p. 197, https://www.google.com/books/edition/United_States_Congressional_Serial_Set_N/UnpnlYZOks0C.

86 Peter Schweizer, “Bill Clinton’s Pardon of Fugitive Marc Rich Continues to Pay Big,” *New York Post*, January 17, 2016, https://nypost.com/2016/01/17/after-pardoning-criminal-marc-rich-clintons-made-millions-off-friends/.

87 JTA Staff, “Jews Feel Clinton Scapegoating Them in Rich Affair,” *Jewish Telegraphic Agency*, February 20, 2001, https://www.jta.org/archive/jews-feel-clinton-scapegoating-them-in-rich-affair.

88 Eytan Avriel, “How Two Phone Calls From Ehud Barak to Bill Clinton May Have Led to President Trump,” *Haaretz*, November 25, 2016, https://www.haaretz.com/israel-news/2016-11-25/ty-article-magazine/.premium/the-jewish-billionaire-who-cost-hillary-her-presidency/0000017f-e84f-da9b-a1ff-ec6ff7330000.

89 Hayley Miller, “Billionaire Michael Steinhardt Accused Of Pattern Of Sexual Harassment,” *HuffPost*, March 21, 2019, https://www.huffpost.com/entry/michael-steinhardt-sexual-harassment_n_5c9385f0e4b08c4fec3518dc.

90 Nora Boustany and Brian Duffy, “A Top U.S. Official May Have Given Sensitive Data to Israel,” *Washington Post*, May 7, 1997,

https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1997/05/07/a-top-us-official-may-have-given-sensitive-data-to-israel/8a160042-26b9-40b4-80e9-32f7579733aa/.

91 "FBI Investigating Possibility of U.S. Spy Passing Secrets to Israel," *Jewish Telegraphic Agency*, June 5, 1997, https://www.jta.org/1997/06/05/default/fbi-investigating-possibility-of-u-s-spy-passing-secrets-to-israel; Yossi Melman, "Pollard Revisited: Is Mr. X Spying Again in Washington?," *Los Angeles Times*, May 18, 1997, https://www.latimes.com/archives/la-xpm-1997-05-18-op-59966-story.html.

92 Melman, "Pollard Revisited."

93 Michael Bar-Zohar and Nissim Mishal, *Mossad: The Great Operations of Israel's Secret Service* (Bitback Publishing, 2015), 119.

94 Bob Fitrakis, "The Wexner War," *Free Press*, August 1, 2003, https://freepress.org/article/wexner-war.

95 Rebecca Shimoni Stoil, "Netanyahu Said to Have Offered Lewinsky Tapes for Pollard," *Times of Israel*, July 23, 2014, http://www.timesofisrael.com/netanyahu-said-to-have-offered-lewinsky-tapes-for-pollard/.

96 Stoil, "Netanyahu."

97 Michael J. Waller and Paul M. Rodriguez, "FBI Probes Espionage at Clinton White House," *Insight on The News*, May 29, 2000, https://web.archive.org/web/20191116045938/https://www.questia.com/magazine/1G1-62401780/fbi-probes-espionage-at-clinton-white-house.

98 "Censored Israeli Software Spying On US Am Docs Comverse Infosys Carl Cameron," *Fox News*, December 2001, https://archive.org/details/CensoredIsraeliSoftwareSpyingOnUSAm-DocsComverseInfosysCarlCameronDec2001.

99 Christopher Ketcham, "An Israeli Trojan Horse," *CounterPunch*, September 27, 2008, https://www.counterpunch.org/2008/09/27/an-israeli-trojan-horse/.

100 Whitney Webb, "Former Israeli Spy Ari Ben-Menashe on Israel's Relationship with Epstein," *MintPress News*, December 13, 2019, https://www.mintpressnews.com/ari-ben-menashe-israel-relationship-jeffrey-epstein/263465/.

101 H.T. Seymour, *Argus Corporation Limited : A Corporate Background Report* (Pitfield, Mackay, Ross & Company Limited, 1977), https://publications.gc.ca/site/eng/9.873197/publication.html.

102 "Atlas Corporation has an interest in Argus Corporation Ltd., a new Canadian investment company," *Pittsburgh Post-Gazette*, November 29th, 1945; Roger Gilbert, vice president of Atlas, was placed on the Argus board when it was launched (Seymour, *Argus Corporation*, 20); David Baird, closely tied to Odlum and a director of Atlas, was on the board of Argus ("E.P. Taylor and Group Form 'Specialized' Firm," *National Post* (Toronto), November 29, 1945.)

103 Libbie Park and Frank Park, *Anatomy of Big Business* (Toronto: J. Lorimer, 1973), 169, https://www.deslibris.ca/ID/413338.

104 "Hollinger International Inc.," *Company Histories*, https://www.company-histories.com/Hollinger-International-Inc-Company-History.html.

105 "Invitation to the Hollinger Dinner," Dole Archives, November 21, 1994, https://dolearchivecollections.ku.edu/collections/speeches/095/c019_095_011_all.pdf.

106 Jean Shaoul, "Conrad Black and Hollinger International: A Financial Oligarchy out of Control," *World Socialist Web Site*, September 16, 2004,

https://www.wsws.org/en/articles/2004/09/holl-s16.html.

107 Daniel Gross, “Man Overboard,” *Slate*, November 20, 2003, https://slate.com/business/2003/11/conrad-black-s-corporate-board-from-hell.html.

108 “Hollinger International Inc.,”

109 Jason Vest, “The Men From JINSA and CSP,” *The Nation*, August 15, 2002, https://www.thenation.com/article/archive/men-jinsa-and-csp/.

110 Seymour M. Hersh, *The Price of Power: Kissinger in the Nixon White House*, 1st ed (New York: Summit Books, 1983), 322, https://archive.org/details/priceofpowerkiss0000hers_h0c3.

111 Stephen Green, “Serving Two Flags: Neo-Cons, Israel and the Bush Administration,” *CounterPunch.org*, September 5, 2006, https://web.archive.org/web/20060905183335/http://www.counterpunch.org/green02282004.html.

112 Green, “Serving Two Flags.”

113 Jeff Gerth, “PENTAGON AIDE DEFENDS ACTION AIDING EX-CLIENT,” *New York Times*, April 18, 1983, https://www.nytimes.com/1983/04/18/us/pentagon-aide-defends-action-aiding-ex-client.html.

114 Michael Wines, “Arms Inquiry Adds 2 Israeli Concerns,” *New York Times*, July 11, 1988, https://www.nytimes.com/1988/07/11/business/arms-inquiry-adds-2-israeli-concerns.html.

115 Paul Krugman, “Citizen Conrad’s Friends,” *New York Times*, December 23, 2003, https://www.nytimes.com/2003/12/23/opinion/citizen-conrad-s-friends.html.

116 Gross, “Man Overboard.”

117 Patrick Cockburn, “Gaza: Secret Report Helps Israelis to Hide Facts,” *The Independent*, July 29, 2014, https://www.independent.co.uk/voices/comment/israelgaza-conflict-the-secret-report-that-helps-israelis-to-hide-facts-9630765.html.

118 Ami Eden and Ori Nir, “Ex-Mideast Envoy Zinni Charges Neocons Pushed Iraq War To Benefit Israel,” *The Forward*, May 28, 2004, https://forward.com/news/5719/ex-mideast-envoy-zinni-charges-neocons-pushed-iraq/.

119 Fitrakis, “The Wexner War.”

120 James Hill, Lee Ferran, and Brian Ross, “Disturbing Details of Dennis Hastert’s Alleged Sex Abuse Revealed,” *ABC News*, April 8, 2016, https://abcnews.go.com/Politics/disturbing-details-dennis-hasterts-alleged-sex-abuse-revealed/story?id=38252730.

CHAPTER 15

GHISLAINE MAXWELL: HEIRESS TO AN ESPIONAGE EMPIRE

DADDY'S GIRL

Early on in life, Ghislaine Maxwell was surrounded by the rich and powerful figures who frequented her father's offices as his publishing empire and political connections grew both in the UK and abroad.[1] Her father, Robert Maxwell, was a dominant force in her life, just as he was for her siblings. Later, Ghislaine gained a reputation as his favorite child, despite having been neglected in the earliest years of her life.[2] The neglect, acknowledged by her family members and Ghislaine herself, was due to the car accident of her eldest brother, Michael Maxwell, which left him in a coma until he died several years later. The accident occurred just days after Ghislaine's birth and its effect on the family led her to be neglected to such an extent that she developed anorexia as a baby. She reportedly declared to her mother, Betty Maxwell, "Mummy, I exist" at age 3 in a bid for attention from one of her parents.[3]

However, Ghislaine did not escape the abuse that was known to befall Robert Maxwell's other children. While brothers Kevin and Ian were well known to regularly receive tongue lashings from their father in full view of friends and business associates, Ghislaine received "prearranged hidings [beatings]" from her father, with a nine-year-old Ghislaine telling author Eleanor Berry, a friend and confidant of her father's, that "Daddy has a series of things lined up in a row. There's a riding crop with a swish to it, another straight riding crop and a few shoehorns. He always asks me to choose which one I want."[4]

By all accounts, Robert Maxwell had firm control over young Ghislaine's life. This was particularly true when it came to her love life through her teens and into her time at university, when he reportedly would ban her boyfriends from the family home and try to keep her from being seen with them publicly. It appears that Robert Maxwell applied this rule uniquely to Ghislaine and not to his three older daughters. This may be because he saw Ghislaine, out of all of his children, as most like himself and sought to develop those shared qualities in his youngest daughter.

Robert Maxwell was open about viewing Ghislaine this way by the time she was a young adult, according to British journalist Petronella Wyatt. When Ghislaine was 21 years old, in 1983, Wyatt, whose father was an advisor to then-Prime Minister Margaret Thatcher, was introduced to Robert Maxwell by her mother. Per Wyatt, Maxwell told her mother "What a beautiful daughter you have," before adding "I have a beautiful daughter, too. She is just like me."[5]

Though such behavior could be attributed merely to his being fatherly, he later went to great lengths – even involving his publishing empire – to promote Ghislaine's affairs with certain individuals, particularly those who inhabited elite circles (more on that shortly). This behavior suggests that Robert Maxwell may have seen Ghislaine's sexuality as a useful tool in growing his influence empire, beginning when she was quite young. It also may have contributed to Ghislaine's willingness, years later, to sexually exploit and abuse the young women she targeted alongside another man often compared to her father, Jeffrey Epstein.

In much the same way as Ghislaine's young personal life was controlled by her father, her entry into the working world after her graduation from Oxford was directly facilitated and managed by Robert Maxwell, with him setting her up "with a string of jobs across his business empire." By 1984, at age 22, she was serving as a director of the British football club Oxford United alongside her brother Kevin.[6] At the time, Robert Maxwell held shares in the club through a company created explicitly for that purpose. He served as the club's chairman beginning in 1982.

Prior to and during this same period, Ghislaine worked in various roles at her father's companies Pergamon Press and the Mirror Group, with British media later describing her early career as "entirely dependent on her father's patronage."[7] She was working for the Mirror Group by 1984 and possibly earlier.[8] During this period, Robert often used Ghislaine to market and generally represent his newspapers publicly.

In 1985, and with Robert Maxwell's full approval, *The People* – the Sunday edition of the *Daily Mirror* – ran a story claiming that efforts were being made to blackmail the paper's publisher, Maxwell himself. The blackmailer had reportedly threatened Maxwell with information regarding Ghislaine's alleged relationship with David Manners, the then-Marquis of Granby and the future Duke of Rutland. The article sought to paint Robert Maxwell as bravely resisting the "blackmailer," but there is more to the story.

This astonishing article claimed that people connected with the British MP Harvey Proctor had tried to blackmail Maxwell via *The People*. The article claimed that a "sinister phone caller" had warned that, if the newspaper continued its campaign to expose Harvey Proctor, they would "produce a story about Ghislaine and Lord Granby at Belvoir Castle with incriminating pictures of them in compromising positions." Manners denied the claim, stating that he and Ghislaine were merely friends.

The bizarre decision to publish a front-page story exploiting his own daughter's alleged sexual relationship because of an anonymous phone call was especially odd, given that Robert Maxwell had previously been known for his tight control over his youngest daughter's love life. As previously mentioned, he had banned her boyfriends from visiting the family house and had gone to great lengths to prevent her from being seen in public with them. Yet, for whatever reason, Robert Maxwell clearly wanted information linking Ghislaine to the future Duke to be put out into the public sphere. Though it is difficult to know exactly what was behind this odd episode in Ghislaine's past, the situation suggests that Robert Maxwell saw Ghislaine's young sexuality as a useful tool.

The story is also odd for other reasons. The motive of the blackmailer was ostensibly to prevent Maxwell-owned papers from covering the Harvey Proctor scandal. But Manners (Lord Granby in the article), who was allegedly involved with Ghislaine, was also a close friend and later the employer of Harvey Proctor. Why would someone close to Proctor seek to blackmail Maxwell by putting the reputation of his own friend on the line?

In addition, the appearance of Harvey Proctor, then a Conservative member of Parliament, in this tabloid spectacle is interesting for a few reasons. In 1987, Proctor pleaded guilty to sexual indecency with two young men, who were sixteen and nineteen at the time, and several witnesses interviewed in that investigation described him as having a sexual interest in "young boys."[9] Later, a controversial court case saw Proctor accused of having been involved with well-connected British pedophile and procurer of children Jimmy Savile as well as being part of a child sex-abuse ring that was said to include not only Savile but former UK prime minister Ted Heath.

Of course, the Maxwell-owned newspapers, in covering the alleged effort to blackmail Robert Maxwell, did not mention the "young boys" angle at all, instead focusing on claims that distracted from the then-credible accusations of pedophilia by claiming that Proctor was merely into "spanking" and was "whacky," among other things.[10]

In this same 1985 period, Ghislaine also became involved with "philanthropy" tied to her father's business empire by hosting a "Disney day out for kids" and benefit dinner on behalf of the Mirror Group for the Save the Children NGO.[11]

Part of the event took place at the home of the Marquess and Lady of Bath, a gala that was attended by members of the British Royal family. It's worth noting that the Marquess of Bath at the time was an odd person, having accumulated the largest collection of paintings made by Adolf Hitler and having said that Hitler had done "great things for his country."[12] The very same evening that the Ghislaine-hosted bash concluded, the Marquess of Bath's son was found hanging from a bedspread tied to an oak beam at the Bath Arms in what was labeled a suicide.[13]

While Ghislaine was working in these capacities for her father's business empire, there are indications that she had also, to some extent, begun to become involved in his espionage-related activities. According to former Israeli intelligence operative and associate of Maxwell in his dealings with Mossad, Ari Ben-Menashe, Ghislaine accompanied her father so frequently that she was certainly involved with his intelligence work during this time, though he declined to say just how involved she was.[14]

Beginning roughly during this same period, in 1986, Ghislaine began dating an Italian aristocrat named Count Gianfranco Cicogna, a member of the Knights of Malta whose grandfather was Mussolini's finance minister and the last doge of Venice.[15] Cicogna also had ties to both covert and overt power structures in Italy and beyond. As previously noted in chapter 3, Cicogna was related to the Mavroleons, as his mother had been married to the patriarch of the Mavroleon family – and original founder of London & Overseas – Basil "Bluey" Mavroleon. Contact information for Bluey Mavroleon and his son, Nicholas Mavroleon (Gianfranco's half-brother), can be found in Epstein's black book.[16] Another Cicogna-related entry in Epstein's contact book is Luca Giussani, who was Cicogna's partner in a South African telecom company, Ursus. Also mentioned in chapter 3 was the fact that the Mavroleons created London & Overseas with their cousins, the Kulukundis family, who worked closely with Bruce Rappaport. Rappaport, by this time, had become involved with notorious Russian mobster Semion Mogilevich, as had Ghislaine's father.

Cicogna's relationship with Ghislaine lasted from 1986 until around sometime in 1990, though numerous media outlets have misreported their relationship in recent years, claiming they were only intimate briefly during the early 1990s. It was reported in the British media in 1992 that Cicogna had been

Ghislaine's "great love" and that he had "moulded the Ghislaine we now see. He told her where to get her hair cut, and what to wear."[17]

Toward the end of her relationship with Cicogna, Ghislaine founded the Kit Kat Club, which she depicted as a feminist endeavor. Why Ghislaine chose the name "Kit Kat Club" is something of a mystery. The original Kit Kat Club was set up by a well-known pie maker named Christopher Catling in London during the eighteenth century to promote the freedoms obtained during the 1688 Glorious Revolution. Until the late 1800s, Catling's organization was the only entity to use the name. Then, in the 1900s, various wealthy private clubs, music venues, and public houses adopted the name for establishments all around the UK.[18] The original name of the club created by Catling was also the inspiration behind the naming of the famous KitKat chocolate bar produced by Nestlé.[19] The name caught on, with independent music venues bearing the name in Wales, Northern Ireland, and the North of England; there was even a Kit Kat Club band in Scotland. Then came the 1966 musical *Cabaret*, which was set in the Kit Kat Club in Berlin.[20] *Cabaret* had been turned into a movie around the time Ghislaine Maxwell supposedly founded and named her own Kit Kat organization, but her true reasons for choosing this name may never be known.

An article in the *Sydney Morning Herald* later described Maxwell's Kit Kat Club as "a salon held in a variety of locations, designed to bring together women from the arts, politics, and society."[21] The article goes on to quote an attendee of the events, author Anna Pasternak, who stated, "It was bright, wealthy and society women. Nowadays, it seems quite normal to be going to a meeting just for women, but 30 years ago it seemed exciting."[22] Regarding Ghislaine, Pasternak stated that she was "very mindful of who you were, your status, your importance. I think it was more a way of advancing herself, making contacts that could be useful to her."

The Kit Kat Club, despite being described by other outlets as "an all-female debating society" and group meant to "help women in commerce and industry," held functions that were hosted by Maxwell and that often had many men in attendance.[23] One apparently frequent attendee of the Kit Kat Club was Jeffrey Archer. Archer is a former Tory (i.e. Conservative Party) MP turned novelist who has been accused of financial fraud on various occasions over the years and has also served time in prison for perjury. He was another close colleague of Harvey Proctor and personally helped finance Proctor's business ventures following his conviction for acts of "gross indecency" with two teenage boys.[24] In a 1996 article published by the *Daily News,* Archer said of his experience at the Kit Kat Club: "I had the time of my life, surrounded by women under 40. I had orgasm after orgasm just talking to them!"[25]

Archer can also be seen in images taken at a Kit Kat Club event in 2004.[26] Pictures from that same event show other attendees, including Stanley and Rachel Johnson, the father and sister of recent UK Prime Minister Boris Johnson.[27] Also seen at this 2004 Kit Kat function was former Tory MP Jonathan Aitken, who went to jail for perjury and is known for his close ties to Saudi royalty; former key figure in the Rupert Murdoch media empire, Andrew Neil; and Anton Mosimann, who has been called the "chef to royalty."[28]

There has since been speculation that Ghislaine's Kit Kat Club is where Donald Trump met his future wife Melania. Although the *New York Times* and other outlets reported that, at Fashion Week 1998, Donald Trump first met Melania at the Kit Kat Club in New York, this locale was not related to Maxwell's Kit Kat Club and is instead a famous club in New York, the name of which is also derived from Catling's original Kit Kat Club.[29] However, these same outlets also reported that Epstein and Maxwell claimed to have been the ones who originally introduced Donald and Melania Trump to each other.

Soon after her "painful" split from Gianfranco Cicogna, Ghislaine was seen skiing in Aspen, Colorado – "where the rich and famous mix" during the winter season – with American actor George Hamilton, who was also seen escorting Ghislaine to the Epsom races in 1991.[30] Hamilton, twenty-two years Ghislaine's senior, is apparently much more than just an actor, as he allegedly played a major role in aiding Ferdinand Marcos, the former dictator of the Philippines, and his wife Imelda move billions of public funds out of the country and convert them into private wealth for themselves and their accomplices abroad. Marcos originally rose to power with the help of the CIA and, as previously mentioned, Adnan Khashoggi – who worked with Epstein in the 1980s – was also close to the Marcos's, specifically Imelda Marcos, and stood trial alongside her for his alleged role in aiding her in illegal financial schemes.[31]

In that same trial involving both Imelda Marcos and Adnan Khashoggi, a NY prosecutor referred to Hamilton as a "front" for Marcos, and media reports at the time claimed he had also acted as Imelda Marcos's financial adviser. The *Associated Press* reported that Hamilton had been an unindicted co-conspirator in the fraud and racketeering cases brought against Imelda Marcos after she and her husband fled their country in 1986.[32] The congressional committee tasked with investigating the flight of billions from the Philippines just prior to Marcos's ouster declined to investigate the financial transactions surrounding Hamilton, which were alleged to have been connected to that very crime.[33] Notably, at the same time, the CIA refused to disclose what it knew about the capital flight.[34]

As mentioned later in this article, the private investigator hired by this congressional committee to track down the Marcos's money was Jules Kroll. Jules Kroll and Kroll Associates seem to have been regularly brought in to help cover up the crimes of many of the figures detailed in this book, including those of Bruce Ritter, Michael Milken, the Marcos family, and Adnan Khashoggi. This firm's rise was also closely linked to Thomas Corbally (as noted in chapter 4) and, as will be mentioned shortly, was also hired by Robert Maxwell shortly before his death.

Around the same time she was vacationing and traveling with Hamilton, in 1990, Ghislaine was added to the payroll of another of her father's newspapers, *The European*, which had launched that same year. It's not exactly clear, however, at what point she joined the company or in what role(s) she served. A website recently set up by Ghislaine's siblings following her July 2020 arrest for crimes related to sex trafficking alongside Jeffrey Epstein states that she developed and created "advertising opportunities" in the newspaper's supplement during her time there.[35] This same year, she moved to the United States, first to Los Angeles after being "offered a small part in a movie" that was being filmed there.[36] Shortly thereafter, her father – Robert Maxwell – would begin planning his grand entry into the United States, specifically New York City.

ROBERT MAXWELL DESCENDS ON NEW YORK

During the late 1980s, Robert Maxwell's media empire began to falter as he had overextended his finances by making massive purchases of large media companies. Part of the reason behind his rapid, and arguably hasty, expansion was related to his rivalry with fellow media baron Rupert Murdoch. Another factor was his desire to become ever more wealthy and powerful. Former British ambassador to the US Peter Jay, who had also served as Maxwell's chief of staff, later said that these purchases were partially motivated by Maxwell being "offended and upset that he was seen as merely a printer.… He was determined to go and demonstrate to the world that he was a publisher as well."[37]

One of these purchases was Maxwell's acquisition of Macmillan Inc., where Robert Pirie – president of Rothschild Inc. – "had been serving as chief tactician in Maxwell's offensive against" that particular company.[38] It was also reported that Maxwell's effort to acquire Macmillan was part of his "campaign to establish a strategic presence in the United States." Yet, according to the *New York Times*, Maxwell only "entered the fray" to purchase Macmillan after being "encouraged by Pirie" and Pirie also "counseled" Maxwell on his subsequent moves that saw him take control of the company in 1988.[39] The *Times* article, which focused largely on Pirie and Rothschild Inc., also reported that "The Macmillan takeover is critical to Maxwell's standing as a world-class mogul. The deal is equally crucial to Pirie and to his employers, the Rothschild family, who yearn for a prominent foothold in Wall Street." The article also adds that, for the Rothschilds, "dynastic pride as much as money is at stake."

The Rothschilds' interest in gaining a foothold in Wall Street indeed seems to have been motivated by more than money. The *Times* report notes that "although the family staked valuable claims in Africa, the Middle East, and South America, they grossly misjudged the opportunities directly across the Atlantic" and in the United States. It quotes Evelyn de Rothschild as saying "We've been in business for 200 years, but we never seized the initiative in America and that was one of the mistakes my family made."

In 1981, "the French and British Rothschild cousins determined to rectify their mistake" and appointed Robert Pirie as "their agent." They tasked him with building "a powerful investment bank that would help the family reassert its dominant role in international finance." In order to accomplish this task, Pirie allied with "foreign predators, principally British," the "most voracious" of whom were James Goldsmith, a cousin of the Rothschilds, Clermont Club member, and corporate raider; Goldsmith's associate Robert Maxwell; as well as Sir Gordon White, a friend of Maxwell's who originally connected him with Rothschild Inc. Goldsmith's ties to Epstein, which apparently date back to the early 1970s, were discussed in chapter 11.

The *New York Times* also states, perhaps controversially, that "No other family in the annals of finance can match the Rothschild record for influencing the course of history, or its Machiavellian instincts for economic opportunity." It seems that, if we are to take this *Times* article at face value, the banking entity looking to help the Rothschild family "reassert its dominant role in international finance," i.e. Rothschild Inc., was directing Robert Maxwell's efforts to "establish a strategic presence in the United States" via a takeover of a major US-based publishing company. This intimate mate relationship between Rothschild banks and Robert Maxwell would again become evident as N.M. Rothschild was the group "called in to in vestigate his books and arrange the sale of his heirs' 54 percent stake in Mirror Group Newspapers" after Maxwell's 1991 death.[40]

After Maxwell purchased Macmillan with the help of Pirie and Rothschild Inc., he indeed used the company to establish his foothold in the United States, specifically New York City. There, he would begin a sprawling influence operation to cultivate the city's elite, which would soon intimately involve his daughter Ghislaine. With Macmillan under his control, he began using funds from the company's charitable trusts, "spend[ing] lavishly on events in New York, paying large sums of money, sometimes as much as $100,000, for a seat at charitable functions attended by people he wanted to impress."[41] He had acquired Macmillan for $2.6 billion, a sum "considerably more than his own Maxwell Communications Corporation was worth." The amount of money he had to repay for this and other acquisitions of his period would become a factor in his infamous decision to pilfer the pension funds of the Mirror Group.[42]

Once he had obtained Macmillan, it gave him his desired "foothold in New York publishing – and made him eager to expand his footprint."[43] He had little trouble raising money for this planned, grander entry into New York business and society, despite his well-known past of financial chicanery that had earned him the nickname "the bouncing Czech" back in the United Kingdom. Rothschild Inc. and other prominent investment banks, such as Lehman Brothers, Salomon Brothers, and Goldman Sachs lined up to represent and help finance Maxwell and his ever-growing web of businesses and corporate entities.[44]

Some speculated at the time that some of the funds Maxwell raised during this period for these acquisitions had originated in the Soviet Union, where he had considerable connections, including to the KGB. There are also the possibilities that some of the funds included proceeds from Maxwell's sale of bugged PROMIS software to governments around the world on Israel's behalf or, as previously detailed in chapter 9, included profits from his business interests that were interlaced with notorious Russian mobster Semion Mogilevich.

Despite having opened a considerable new stream of revenue through his alliances with major players in Eastern European organized crime, major Wall Street firms and "Machiavellian" banking dynasties, years of financial fraud and stock-buying schemes caught up with Robert Maxwell's empire, which began rapidly imploding in early 1991. In what is often considered a bizarre move by observers, given Maxwell's dire financial situation and the poor state of the newspaper, Maxwell decided to expand his presence in New York by buying the *New York Daily News* in March 1991. However, Gordon Thomas later reported that the paper's previous owners, the Chicago Tribune Group, had offered Maxwell $60 million to take over the floundering paper. Regardless of the true story behind his acquisition of the paper, he chose to put his daughter Ghislaine in charge of "special projects" shortly after becoming its owner.[45] That position, per London's *Sunday Times*, "provided her with her entree to the power base of the city."[46]

In addition to her new role in charge of "special projects" for the paper, Ghislaine was also made managing director of a "ready-made" company based in New York and created by her father, Maxwell Corporate Gifts.[47] The *New York Post* later described the company as Ghislaine's "own fiefdom."[48] Little is otherwise known about Maxwell Corporate Gifts, with the Maxwell family subsequently describing the company as "a business that supplied long-term service awards for companies."[49] In 2021, Ghislaine's siblings published a short biography of their sister that asserted that Ghislaine had founded Maxwell Corporate Gifts in the mid-1980s after her graduation from Oxford and before her move to the US.[50] Their claim is at odds with past media reports that predate Ghislaine's infamy by several years and even decades. It is also possible, however, that the entity's formal creation took place several years before its use by Ghislaine and her father in New York.

Because no public records remain readily accessible regarding the company's activities, we can only speculate about how it was used by Ghislaine during this time. However, it was most likely a part of the growing Maxwell influence network in the city. New York media outlets subsequently claimed that Robert Maxwell saw himself as "the patriarch of a dynasty that would wield financial and political power on a global scale" and that he additionally saw New York City as where the Maxwell "dynasty" would truly make their mark.[51]

After buying the *New York Daily News*, and despite his mounting financial problems, Maxwell received such positive attention in New York City that it surprised even him. According to an anecdote from Robert Pirie, the then-president of Rothschild Inc.:

> After he bought the *Daily News*, I picked him up at his boat. He liked Chinese food, so I decided to take him to Fu's, which is the best Chinese restaurant in the city. As we drove up First Avenue, people would recognize him, and open their car doors and come out and shake his hand. At Fu's, the entire restaurant got up on its feet and started clapping. He was overwhelmed. He told me, "In my whole life in London, no one's ever acted like this. I'm here a month and look what's happening."[52]

This type of reception throughout the city led Maxwell to become even more determined to expand his presence there. He hired a "group of prominent consultants and lawyers to help him make his way in America."[53] These included former Senators Howard Baker and John Tower as well as Republican Party consultant and high-profile public relations executive Robert Keith Gray. The inclusion of these three men in advising Maxwell on his entry into the United States is highly significant, but each is important for a different reason.

Tennessee Senator Howard Baker, best known for being the vice-chairman of the Senate Watergate Committee and subsequently Reagan's chief of staff after the Iran-Contra scandal, had become Robert Maxwell's business partner in 1991 in a venture called Newstar. Newstar focused on expanding investment opportunities for Americans in the former Soviet Union and was described by Richard Jacobs, who cofounded the company with Baker, as "an international merchant banking, investment, and advisory company." Jacobs also stated that Robert Maxwell was one of the major shareholders in the company. Newstar was just one of several companies that Maxwell used to enrich himself through privatizing assets of the former Soviet Union. Baker and Maxwell also attempted to recruit other respected public figures into Newstar, including the former top banking regulator in the US, William Seidman.[54] Notably, prior to founding Newstar with Baker, Jacobs worked intimately with Armand Hammer as his assistant and then as Occidental Petroleum's vice president.[55] As previously mentioned in chapter 7, Hammer played a role in the entry of BCCI into the United States and had attempted to acquire Financial General Bankshares himself for the purpose of "financially blackmailing" American politicians. Hammer also had a controversial relationship with Soviet leadership. Part of the controversy was related to Hammer's father, Julius Hammer, having been a Soviet spy. Baker was also previously mentioned in Chapter 9, as he had been on the board of MCA, where Lew Wasserman was a long-time executive, at the time the company was being investigated for its organized crime ties. It was posited there that Baker may have been the "United States Senator with much seniority whom [Robert Booth] Nichols claimed to utilize in the trafficking of narcotics and money laundering."

Maxwell may have first encountered Baker through Baker's years-long relationship with Senator Tower, as the two men shared a decades-long partnership in the Senate. As detailed in chapter 9, Maxwell had first gotten close to Tower years earlier, at Henry Kissinger's behest, with the intention of advancing Israeli intelligence's goal of installing PROMIS software on the computers of top-secret US laboratories tied to the nuclear weapons program. It was Maxwell who placed Tower on Israel's payroll, prompted his involvement in the Iran-Contra deal, and later added him to his own payroll via the company Pergamon-Brassey, which appears to have been strongly related to both the PROMIS scandal and the Bulgarian-led Neva program. Tower died just months before Maxwell, in early 1991, as the result of a suspicious plane crash, which – at the time – reportedly made Robert Maxwell fear for his own life.

Robert Keith Gray is perhaps the key to unlocking the truth about Robert Maxwell's plans and ambitions for his future in New York City. As detailed throughout this work, Gray was a smooth operator, having worked on major presidential campaigns and as the top executive at the public relations firm Hill and Knowlton. Lesser known are Gray's extensive ties to US intelligence and also to a handful of call girl and sexual-blackmail rings that encircled the Watergate scandal of the Nixon presidency and the more obscure Koreagate scandal and pageboy scandal (explored in depth in chapter 5). As previously mentioned, Gray was also tied, through connections in his home state of Nebraska, to figures involved in the Franklin Scandal (see chapter 10). One of the common threads throughout several of the scandals that were linked in some way to Gray was the Georgetown Club, owned by South Korean intelligence asset Tongsun Park. Gray was the company's president at the time when it was used by CIA and other intelligence-linked figures to acquire sexual blackmail. John Tower was also a member of the Georgetown Club during this period, as were many other prominent politicians and power brokers in Washington, DC, and had been close to Tongsun Park as well. Also, as noted in chapter 10, Gray was working for Adnan Khashoggi in the same period of time that both Roy Cohn and Jeffrey Epstein also counted Khashoggi as a client. Given that Maxwell's daughter Ghislaine and Epstein would begin a sex trafficking/blackmail operation shortly after Maxwell sought to consult Baker, Tower and Gray, Gray's role in advising Maxwell about how to best expand his influence in the city and throughout the United States is clearly significant.

Robert Maxwell himself had been a client of Gray's PR firm, H & K, for some time and Gray had previously had very public connections with Maxwell. For instance, in 1988, Gray brought former president Ronald Reagan and Robert Maxwell to Hastings, Nebraska – located roughly two hours from Omaha – for the ceremonial debut of the Gray Center for the Communication Arts at the local college. Maxwell returned to Hastings two years later to deliver the commencement speech at the college. Gray, meanwhile, told the *Washington Times* that "getting President Reagan and Robert Maxwell to Nebraska" was his "greatest feat."[56] That says a lot considering the trajectory and impact of Gray's career up to this point in time.

During this period where he sought these men's advice on how to grow his influence in New York, Robert Maxwell was also eager to get closer to George H.W. Bush – then the US president – with whom he had cultivated a relationship decades earlier.[57] It is unclear how successful Maxwell was in that effort. Yet, as noted in chapter 12, by 1992, Jeffrey Epstein had developed a mysterious yet apparently significant relationship with Bush's Secretary of State James Baker III, suggesting that the Epstein-Maxwell network did make significant in-roads with the Bush administration. As will be detailed in the next chapter, they did so again to a much more significant degree with the subsequent Clinton administration.

Soon after Robert Maxwell's effort to expand his footprint in New York, which author Gordon Thomas alleges was motivated by Maxwell's desire to become "king" of the city, he was also being "courted" by Edgar Bronfman, Laurence Tisch, and other "luminaries of the New York Jewish community" in 1991.[58] Bronfman and Tisch, as noted in the previous chapter, were among the founding members of the Mega Group, which had been founded that same year by Leslie Wexner and Edgar Bronfman's brother Charles. Charles Bronfman had previously teamed up with Maxwell in 1989 in an ill-fated attempt to purchase the *Jerusalem Post*.[59] As noted in the last chapter, several Mega Group members, including Wexner and the Bronfmans, have clear ties to organized crime networks and/or intelligence. Maxwell himself also checked these boxes.[60]

The Mega Group's existence was not revealed to the public until seven years later, in 1998. At that time, it underwent a very public reveal in the *Wall Street Journal*, and the names of its most prominent members were disclosed.[61] Given that Robert Maxwell was connected to this network and was being "courted" by its members the year of its founding, as well as the fact that Maxwell had died long before the publication of the *Wall Street Journal* article, it is worth considering the possibility that Robert Maxwell himself was potentially an early Mega Group member and that the only reason his name was not included in the *WSJ*'s disclosure of the group is because he had died years prior. Circumstantial, yet significant, support for this thesis can be found in the subsequent team-up of Jeffrey Epstein, who had been a financial adviser to Mega Group co-founder Leslie Wexner since 1987 and his money manager since 1990, and Ghislaine Maxwell, Robert Maxwell's favorite daughter, in 1991 – the same year of the Mega Group's founding – in a sexual blackmail operation, itself ultimately an influence and extortion operation.

COURTING THE KENNEDYS

As previously noted, soon after arriving in New York City, Robert Maxwell was determined to expand his footprint in there as well as to grow the influence of a Maxwell "dynasty." His hopes to establish a dynasty were also described by the *New York Post,* which noted that Maxwell "saw himself as Britain's Joseph P. Kennedy, the patriarch of a dynasty that would wield financial and political power on a global scale. Like Kennedy, he expected much of his children and pushed them hard."[62]

Yet, Robert Maxwell's interest in the Kennedy political dynasty went beyond mere metaphors. A 1992 article from the *Mail on Sunday* stated that Ghislaine's "one important role" when she arrived in New York City was to act "as Captain Bob's [i.e. Robert Maxwell's] ticket into New York society […] She accompanied him to all the right parties and helped to woo the Kennedy clan."[63]

Apparently "woo" was meant in relatively literal terms. Per *Vanity Fair,* he had apparently hoped that his daughter Ghislaine, then serving as his "ambassador to America," would intermarry with them, specifically John F. Kennedy Jr., thereby "binding two great dynasties into one."[64] This desire was also reported by the *New York Post,* which later stated that "Maxwell even dreamed that he might one day forge an alliance with the Kennedys by marrying Ghislaine to JFK Jr. The two became close friends and remained so until Kennedy's tragic death last year [1999]."[65] It then notes that "Ghislaine has also been a guest at a number of Kennedy weddings and family events."[66]

One of these weddings Ghislaine attended was the June 1990 nuptials between Kerry Kennedy, daughter of Robert F. Kennedy, and Andrew Cuomo.[67] Cuomo, the son of New York governor Mario Cuomo who would later become governor of the state himself, was said to have treated the planning of the wedding "like a political campaign" and, not unlike Robert Maxwell, had allegedly sought to marry into the Kennedy political dynasty for personal gain.[68] Notably, Andrew Cuomo's name is in Epstein's book of contacts. However, other attendees of the Kennedy-Cuomo wedding have claimed that it was likely Kerry Kennedy, not Cuomo, who had invited Ghislaine Maxwell to the event.[69]

Per Cuomo's biographer Michael Shnayerson: "To the Cuomos, the Kennedys were American royalty, for all the reasons they were to everyone else. Marrying into that charismatic clan would make the Cuomos royal, too, insofar as any American political dynasty could be seen as such. It would also draw them into a private world of wealth and privilege."[70] It seems probable that Robert Maxwell's dream to see Ghislaine marry a Kennedy had similar motivations.

However, it is worth noting that Ghislaine Maxwell's and Jeffrey Epstein's subsequent influence and blackmail operation, beginning in 1991, had largely targeted politicians or prominent figures within the Democratic Party. Given this context, it is also entirely possible that Robert Maxwell and his network, including organized crime networks and intelligence services, were looking for a launching pad to more broadly influence the Democratic Party before Maxwell's death – and what better way to do that than marry into the most prominent (and respected) of Democratic political dynasties.

During and after this wedding, it seems that Ghislaine Maxwell's efforts to court a Kennedy were extensive and have been largely overlooked in media reports. For instance, a photo taken of a reception for the Kennedy-Cuomo wedding shows Ghislaine sitting in the grass in a short dress, posing flirtatiously alongside Joe Kennedy II, the eldest son of Robert F. Kennedy and Kerry Kennedy's older brother.[71] The caption of the image oddly does not disclose Maxwell's identity but stated that Kennedy "turned on the famous Kennedy charm" while talking to Maxwell, described as "a lovely brunette" who "couldn't take her eyes off him [Kennedy]."

That reception was at the Kennedy's Hickory Hill estate and was attended by a "trimmed-down group" of wedding guests.[72] Maxwell also reportedly attended an "even-more-private lunch at Ethel's home that was attended only by family and some tag-along[s] with odd links to the bride or groom," per one attendee.[73] A few months later, in November 1990, Joe Kennedy II arrived with Ghislaine Maxwell to a ritzy London party in honor of the fashion designer for the royal family and other elites, Bruce Oldfield.[74] At the time, Joe Kennedy was separated and finalizing his divorce from his first wife Sheila Brewster Rauch.

During her early days in New York City, Maxwell befriended John F. Kennedy Jr. and several media reports have claimed that the friendship lasted until the former's death in a 1999 plane crash.[75] Few details are known about their friendship and only a few pictures of them interacting at large social events have emerged, including photos showing Kennedy being approached by Maxwell and then quickly losing interest in her, focusing his attention instead on nearby hors d'oeuvres.[76]

While details of their relationship are scarce, it was later reported that Maxwell had claimed to have had a "one-night stand" with John F. Kennedy Jr. and she reportedly told friends that he was her "chief conquest."[77] The tryst allegedly took place "in the early 1990s soon after Ghislaine had started to establish herself on the New York social scene" according to an anonymous source that was "close to Maxwell."[78] Although there is no corroboration for this claim, Maxwell's father had desired this match and, given Ghislaine's devotion to her father (who was still alive at the time), it seems probably that she would have attempted to have relations with him if she had indeed had the chance.

Several questions arise from this – the first being how did Ghislaine Maxwell manage to gain entry into the Kennedy's social network? In an interview with Robert F. Kennedy Jr. for this book, he stated that Ghislaine Maxwell's entry into his family's social network in the early 1990s was likely through his former wife Mary Richardson. Per Kennedy, Richardson seemed to have known Maxwell through Richardson's former boyfriend Carlos Mavroleon. There is considerable supporting evidence for this claim.

Before their 1994 marriage, Mary Richardson had been close friends for years with his sister, Kerry Kennedy, with the two having first met during their time together at the Putney School and later as roommates in college.[79] Richardson was Kennedy's maid of honor at her marriage to Andrew Cuomo. After becoming close to Kerry Kennedy at the Putney school, Mary spent many holidays with the Kennedy family, with a friend of Mary's stating that "Mary was always with the Kennedys. Unless there was a crisis, she never had anything to do with the Richardsons."[80] She began dating Robert F. Kennedy Jr. in 1993, and they married a year later.

Media reports attest to Richardson having dated Carlos Mavroleon prior to her relationship with Robert Kennedy Jr.[81] As mentioned earlier in this chapter, the Mavroleons were relatives of Ghislaine's boyfriend from 1986 to 1990, Gianfranco Cicogna. More specifically, Carlos Mavroleon was Gianfranco's half-brother and Carlos's father and brother were both in Epstein's contact book. In the 1980s, Carlos converted to Islam and joined Afghanistan's Mujahideen, which received training and funding from the CIA.

Reports on Mavroleon's 1998 death from a heroin overdose suggested he was murdered even though his death was ruled a suicide. At the time of his death, he had been working as a journalist and was the first outsider to visit camps "that the CIA believed were run by Osama Bin Laden" that had just been bombed by US cruise missiles.[82] He was subsequently detained by Pakistani intelligence and, shortly thereafter, found dead in his hotel room.[83]

Robert F. Kennedy Jr. also stated that the two occasions he was on Epstein's plane had been arranged between Ghislaine Maxwell and Mary Richardson. In one instance, the flight was part of a pre-planned fossil hunting trip to South Dakota, which he believed had been Ghislaine's idea as Epstein had appeared to only have attended "grudgingly." On that trip, Kennedy remembered that Epstein "did not mingle with us and hardly spoke and did not participate in the fossil hunt." The other flight came about after Richardson accepted an offer from Ghislaine to fly Richardson and her family from New York to Palm Beach in order to visit Ethel Kennedy (his mother). Kennedy said he and Mary were accompanied by Kennedy's two older children on each flight.

On one of the flights, the return trip to New York from South Dakota, Epstein "clearly" had a problem with Kennedy's "rambunctious children" and "half way back to New York, he [Epstein] ordered the pilot to put down at Midway Field in Chicago. He got off the plane and made his own way home. A blonde was waiting for him at planeside in Chicago." Kennedy remembered that Ghislaine was "in silent tears" after Epstein's abrupt departure.

Among other questions that emerge when considering Ghislaine's efforts to court at least two Kennedy men – would she have continued to court a Kennedy, or perhaps a Democratic politician of influence, if her father had not died so abruptly in late 1991? Indeed, Robert Maxwell's planned trajectory, not just for himself but for his "dynasty," was in tatters after his death, particularly as his financial crimes were revealed, permanently staining his legacy. Indeed, numerous reports have alleged that it was the chaos after her father's abrupt death that drove Ghislaine so publicly into the arms of Jeffrey Epstein.

THE DEATH OF ROBERT MAXWELL

At the end of October 1991, Robert Maxwell contacted private investigator Jules Kroll and arranged a meeting to see if he could hire Kroll to investigate a "conspiracy" to ruin him financially and destroy his empire. Kroll told Maxwell he would take the case.

Jules Kroll's involvement in this matter is significant for several reasons but chiefly because of the ties of his firms to US and Israeli intelligence. Kroll Associates, founded by Jules Kroll in 1972, became known as "the CIA of Wall Street" and was later alleged by French intelligence to have been used as an actual front for the CIA.[84] As noted in chapter 4, the organized crime and intelligence-connected Thomas Corbally had played a major role in the firm's early days.

The reasoning behind the "CIA of Wall Street" nickname is partially related to the company's penchant for hiring former CIA and FBI officers as well as former operatives of Britain's MI6 and Israel's Mossad. The successor company to Kroll Associates, K2 Intelligence, has similar hiring practices. In 2020, former Kroll Associates employee Roy Den Hollander was accused of murdering the son of New York judge Esther Salas at their family home just as Salas was due to preside over a case involving the ties between Jeffrey Epstein and Deutsche Bank.[85]

At the time that Robert Maxwell hired Kroll, the brother of then-US president and former CIA director George H.W. Bush – Jonathan Bush – was on its corporate advisory board. Soon afterward, Kroll was employed by Bill Clinton in his first presidential campaign and was later hired to manage security for the World Trade Center in New York after the 1993 bombing. In addition, Kroll had been hired to investigate how money had been spirited out of the Philippines by the Marcos family. As previously mentioned, Ghislaine's friend and vacation buddy George Hamilton, as well as Adnan Khashoggi, had played a significant role in that affair.

Furthermore, just weeks before 9/11, Kroll worked closely with John P. O'Neill, who was hired as the head of security at the World Trade Center shortly before the attacks.[86] As previously mentioned in chapter 9, O'Neill had been involved in efforts to unravel "Maxwell's legacy." A report from January of that year noted that federal investigators were still trying to determine "how much of her

[Ghislaine's] father's fortune is buried in the offshore trusts he used so freely for the benefit of his family."

Kroll was unable to give Robert Maxwell the information he had wanted before Maxwell died under suspicious circumstances on his yacht in November 1991. Though media reports often say that his death was most likely a suicide, several biographers, investigators, and Ghislaine herself assert that he was murdered, having hit the end of the line in terms of his usefulness to those who had empowered his legal and illegal activities over the years.[87] Many of them have asserted that "rogue" Mossad agents had been responsible, including Ghislaine herself. Ghislaine reportedly blames "a dark conspiracy of Mossad renegades and Sicilian contract killers" for taking her father's life.[88]

Soon after news of Robert Maxwell's death spread, his wife Betty Maxwell, accompanied by Ghislaine, headed to his place of death – his yacht, then located near the Canary Islands. Journalist John Jackson, who was present when Ghislaine and Betty boarded the yacht shortly after Robert's death, claims that it was Ghislaine who "coolly walked into her late father's office and shredded all incriminating documents on board."[89] Ghislaine denies the incident, though Jackson has never retracted his claim, which was reported in a 2007 article published in the *Daily Mail*.[90] If Jackson is to believed, it would indicate that Ghislaine – out of all of Robert Maxwell's children – was most intimately aware of the incriminating secrets of her father's financial empire and espionage activities. However, Betty Maxwell subsequently claimed that Ghislaine had been the child she chose to accompany her because she spoke Spanish and could help more than her other children in communicating with local authorities. As previously mentioned, the books of Robert Maxwell's troubled businesses, several of which were insolvent and/or had engaged in substantial fraud, were subsequently "investigated" by N.M. Rothschild.[91]

“CIRCLING THE WAGONS”

After the death of Robert Maxwell, his children – Ghislaine included – began to pick up the pieces and sought to rebuild their father’s empire. Of his seven children, five appeared to take on different aspects of their father’s legitimate and illegitimate business activities.

Kevin and Ian Maxwell took over much of his businesses (and the associated fall-out) along with his murky network of interlocking companies, trusts, and foundations spread throughout the world. Once they were officially cleared of wrongdoing in connection with Robert Maxwell’s financial crimes (despite evidence of their complicity), they began their own forays into the world of business. Over the next ten years, Kevin would serve as director of 81 different companies, only 32 of which survived, while Ian – in 2001 – was director 31 companies, four of which then faced insolvency.[92]

Ghislaine, having already positioned herself in New York at her father’s behest to anchor his efforts to expand his empire and operations into Manhattan, began a sexual blackmail operation on behalf of Israeli intelligence alongside Jeffrey Epstein (discussed in depth in chapters 18 and 19). Yet, she reportedly began “working selling real estate” shortly after her father’s death, which may have been connected to Jeffrey Epstein’s career as a “property developer” at the time (see chapter 12).[93]

Throughout the 1990s, however, Maxwell described herself to the press as an “internet operator.” That latter claim seems to trace back to the efforts after Robert Maxwell’s death of her twin sisters, Christine and Isabel Maxwell. They appeared to take off where Maxwell’s intelligence-linked work with PROMIS and in technology had left off and they started by cashing in on a new revolutionary technology – the Internet.

“We literally were trying to think about how to restart this whole business” that had collapsed after their father’s death, Christine Maxwell *would later say* of her decision to found, along with her husband Roger Malina, Isabel and Isabel’s then-husband David Hayden, their internet services company – the McKinley Group – in January 1992.[94] Isabel would remember the decision similarly, telling *Wired* in 1999, that she and her sister had “wanted to circle the wagons and rebuild,” seeing McKinley as “a chance to recreate a bit of their father’s legacy.”[95]

Years later, in 2000, Isabel would tell *The Guardian* that her father would "love it [the internet] if he was still here."[96] "He was very prescient.… He'd be in his element, he'd be having a blast, I'm sure he'd be thrilled to know what I'm doing now," she told the UK-based publication while "throwing back her head and laughing loudly."

Notably, at that time, Isabel was leading an Israeli software company with ties to Israeli military intelligence and powerful Israeli political players, including some who had previously worked directly with her father in his espionage activities. Isabel's and Christine's connections following the sale of the McKinley group is detailed in chapters 20 and 21, respectively.

It's not hard to see why Christine and Isabel saw the internet as their chance to expand upon and rebuild upon Robert Maxwell's "legacy." As previously mentioned in chapter 9, Christine, right up until her father's death, had been president and CEO of the Robert Maxwell-owned Israeli intelligence front company, Information on Demand, where Isabel had also worked. Upon his death, Christine had founded a related (and similarly named) company called Research on Demand, which specialized in "internet and big data analytics" for telecommunications firms, and would later overlap with the McKinley Group's work. McKinley began as a directory with a rating system for websites, later transitioning into the Magellan search engine, all of which was Christine's idea according to an interview Isabel Maxwell gave to *Cnet* in 1997.[97]

McKinley created what became known as the Magellan online directory, remembered as "the first site to publish lengthy reviews and ratings of websites." Magellan's "value-added content" approach attracted several large corporations, resulting in "major alliances" with AT&T, Time Warner, IBM, Netcom, and the Microsoft Network [MSN], all of which were negotiated by Isabel Maxwell.[98] Microsoft's major alliance with McKinley came in late 1995, when Microsoft announced that Magellan would power the search option for the company's MSN service.[99] Time Warner first chose Magellan for its early web portal called Pathfinder and Magellan was on the homepage of the internet browser Netscape for much of the 1990s.

However, McKinley's fortunes were troubled as its efforts to be the first search engine to go public fell through, igniting a stand-off between Christine Maxwell and Isabel's then-husband that also resulted in the company's essentially falling behind other market leaders. As a result, it missed the window for a second IPO attempt and failed to increase ad revenue.[100] Excite, which was later acquired by AskJeeves, ultimately bought the McKinley Group and Magellan for 1.2 million shares of Excite stock in 1996, which was then valued at $18 million.[101] It was allegedly Isabel Maxwell who made the deal possible, with Excite's CEO at the time, George Bell, claiming she alone salvaged their purchase of McKinley.[102]

Despite the company's lackluster end, the Maxwell sisters and other stakeholders in the company, Ghislaine Maxwell among them, not only obtained a multi-million dollar payout from the deal, but also forged close connections with Silicon Valley high-rollers, including Microsoft co-founder Bill Gates. Upon McKinley/Magellan's sale, the overt ties of Christine and Isabel Maxwell to intelligence in both the U.S. and Israel would grow considerably (see chapters 20 and 21).

While the company is often framed as being a venture between Christine and Isabel Maxwell, the McKinley Group and Magellan were much more than just the twin sisters' business. For instance, **a** November 2003 article in the *Evening Standard* notes that Christine and Isabel launched the company with considerable help from their brother, Kevin Maxwell who the article described as being "consumed by an overwhelming desire to be his 'dad reincorporated'" according to confidants.[103] Another *Evening Standard* article from March 2001 claimed that "Kevin played a major role" in the company's affairs.[104]

In addition, *the Sunday Time*s noted in November 2000 that Ghislaine Maxwell "had a substantial interest in Magellan" and netted a considerable sum following its sale to Excite in 1996.[105] It also noted that Ghislaine, throughout the 1990s, had "been discreetly building up a business empire as opaque as her father's" and that "she is secretive to the point of paranoia and her business affairs are deeply mysterious." She would nevertheless describe "herself as an 'internet operator'" even though "her office in Manhattan refuses to confirm even the name or the nature of her business." A separate article in *The Scotsman* from 2001 also notes that Ghislaine "is extremely secretive about her affairs and describes herself as an internet operator."[106]

Exactly how involved Ghislaine Maxwell was in the McKinley Group and Magellan is unclear, though her decision to describe herself as an "internet operator" and her documented "substantial interest" in the company suggest that it was more than superficial. Also notable is the fact that Ghislaine's time as an "internet operator" and her business interests in Magellan overlapped directly with her time working alongside Jeffrey Epstein in an intelligence-linked sex trafficking/sexual blackmail operation.

ENTER EPSTEIN

Following her father's death, Ghislaine publicly claimed to know next to nothing of his affairs and to have no money herself, despite it being well known that her father had created numerous trusts in the Lichtenstein tax haven that were meant to fund the Maxwell family for "generations." A New York detective who interviewed Ghislaine in Manhattan while trying to trace her father's assets later stated:

> She came in dressed in sackcloth and ashes. It was pathetic. She said she had no money. Yet here was this expensive lawyer arguing with us in a room so air conditioned we couldn't hear what he said. In between claiming she had no money, you couldn't but help warming to her, she was so solicitous. We hadn't had any lunch and she was recommending restaurants here and there and where to stay and go shopping, and slipping in from time to time how she never had anything to do with her father's affairs.[107]

Another investigator said that "It is entirely possible, and we didn't have the resources to check, that Maxwell could have siphoned off money from some of his 400 companies in America to her. She was living on something."[108]

In 1992, Ghislaine repeated the claims that she was destitute but promised her family would soon make a comeback. That year, she told *Vanity Fair*, "I'm surviving – just. But I can't just die quietly in a corner … I would say we'll be back. Watch this space."[109] As previously mentioned, it was during this same period that the Maxwell siblings were "circling the wagons" and attempting to rebuild their father's empire and legacy, potentially including his intelligence activities.[110]

It later emerged that, during this period and the years that followed, Ghislaine had shifted from being dependent on her father to being "entirely dependent" on Jeffrey Epstein for her "lavish lifestyle."[111] Some acquaintances of Ghislaine have since claimed that "she started working for him [Epstein] immediately after her father died."[112]

Ghislaine and Jeffrey Epstein's public relationship is believed to have officially begun in 1991 during a tribute dinner at the Plaza Hotel held in Robert Maxwell's honor, where Epstein sat at the same table with Ghislaine and Betty Maxwell.[113] According to media reports, this was Ghislaine's "first step in publicly announcing her deep affection for him [Epstein]." The choice of the Plaza would prove to be ironic given that Ghislaine and Epstein were beginning an extensive sexual-blackmail operation that would go on for well over a decade. As detailed in chapter 2, the hotel had previously been the site of a sexual-blackmail operation involving the infamous lawyer Roy Cohn and his mentor, the liquor magnate Lewis Rosenstiel. The Plaza Hotel was purchased in 1988, not long after Cohn's death, by Cohn's protégé Donald Trump.

In the year that followed his first public appearance with Ghislaine, Epstein was treated by both the press and those close to Ghislaine as her father reincorporated, with various media reports stating and/or quoting their associates comparing Epstein directly to Robert Maxwell. Some of these reports, some published as early as 1992, also openly discussed the possibility that Epstein, like Robert Maxwell, was working for Israeli intelligence as well as the CIA.[114]

Endnotes

1 “George Brown and Ghislaine Maxwell,” Getty Images, https://www.gettyimages.com.mx/detail/fotograf%25C3%25ADa-de-noticias/four-year-old-ghislaine-maxwell-who-is-sat-on-fotograf%25C3%25ADa-de-noticias/1161864085.

2 Jon Kelly, “Who Is Ghislaine Maxwell? The Story of Her Downfall,” *BBC News*, June 28, 2022, https://www.bbc.com/news/world-us-canada-59733623.

3 Benjamin Weiser, “Maxwell Describes Childhood Mistreatment in Bid for Lighter Sentence,” *New York Times*, June 16, 2022, https://www.nytimes.com/2022/06/15/nyregion/ghislaine-maxwell-sentence-jeffrey-epstein.html.

4 Guy Kelly, “Ghislaine Maxwell: From Socialite to Shadowy Figure in a Sex Scandal; Daughter of a Media Mogul, Darling of the Cocktail Scene, and Friend Guy Kelly Lifts the Lid on a UI, of Jeffrey Epstein. Mysterious Life,” *The Daily Telegraph* (London), August 13, 2019, https://unlimitedhangout.com/wp-content/uploads/2022/03/Ghislaine-Maxwell_-From-socialite-to-shadowy-figure-in.pdf.

5 Petronella Wyatt, “The Night Ghislaine Tried to Give Me a Very Public Sex Lesson,” *Mail Online*, September 11, 2019, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/femail/article-7453533/The-night-Ghislaine-tried-public-sex-lesson.html.

6 “Oxford United Football Club Limited,” *Gov.UK*, https://find-and-update.company-information.service.gov.uk/company/00470509/officers.

7 Saskia Sissons, “Mysterious Business of the Queen of NY-Lon,” *Sunday Times* (London), November 12, 2000, https://www.mintpressnews.com/wp-content/uploads/2019/10/Mysterious-business-of-the-queen-of-NY-Lon-1.pdf.

8 “Ghislaine Maxwell, daughter of Mirror Group publisher Robert Maxwell,” Getty Images, September 2, 1984, https://www.gettyimages.com.mx/detail/fotograf%25C3%25ADa-de-noticias/ghislaine-maxwell-daughter-of-mirror-group-fotograf%25C3%25ADa-de-noticias/637669478.

9 “1987: MP on Gay Sex Charges,” *BBC*, April 16, 1987, http://news.bbc.co.uk/onthisday/hi/dates/stories/april/16/newsid_2524000/2524727.stm.

10 Andrew Pierce, “Spanking Parties and the Enoch Fan Too Right Wing for Maggie,” *Mail Online*, March 6, 2015, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2981983/Spanking-parties-Enoch-fan-right-wing-Maggie-Shamed-Tory-MP-Harvey-Proctor-revelled-notoriety-writes-ANDREW-PIERCE.html.

11 Alamy Limited, “Photo: Ghislaine Meets Henry Thynne, Lord and Lady Bath,” Alamy, September 12, 1985, https://www.alamy.com/stock-photo-the-mirror-organised-a-disney-day-out-for-the-kids-at-lord-and-lady-84714570.html.

12 William Langley, “The Marquess of Bath: The Old Lion Abandons His Pride,” *The Telegraph*, November 27, 2010, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/celebritynews/8165099/The-Marquess-of-Bath-the-old-lion-abandons-his-pride.html.

13 Guy Kelly, “Ghislaine Maxwell: How Did She Go from Socialite to the Shadowy Figure in a Sex Crime Investigation?,” *The Telegraph*, August 13, 2019, https://unlimitedhangout.com/wp-content/uploads/2021/12/2019-08-13-Ghislaine-Maxwell_-How-did-she-go-from-socialite-to-the.pdf.

14 Whitney Webb, “Former Israeli Spy Ari Ben-Menashe on Israel’s Relationship with Epstein,” *MintPress News*, December 13, 2019, https://www.mintpressnews.com/ari-ben-menashe-is-

rael-relationship-jeffrey-epstein/263465/; “Donald Trump and Ghislaine Maxwell on Her Dad’s (Robert) Yacht in May 1989,” *St. Louis Post-Dispatch*, May 17, 1989, https://www.newspapers.com/clip/9383143/donald-trump-and-ghislaine-maxwell-on/; Whitney Webb, “Mega Group, Maxwells and Mossad: The Spy Story at the Heart of the Jeffrey Epstein Scandal,” *MintPress News*, August 7, 2019, https://www.mintpressnews.com/mega-group-maxwells-mossad-spy-story-jeffrey-epstein-scandal/261172/.

15 Edward Helmore and Mark Townsend, “High Society to Hideaway Arrest: Ghislaine Maxwell’s Dramatic Fall,” *The Observer*, July 4, 2020, https://www.theguardian.com/us-news/2020/jul/04/high-society-to-hideaway-arrest-ghislaine-maxwells-dramatic-fall.

16 Webb, “Mega Group.”

17 Michael Robotham, “The Mystery of Ghislaine Maxwell’s Secret Love; Revealed: The Unlikely Romance Between a Business Spy and the Crooked Financier’s Favourite Daughter,” *Mail on Sunday* (London), November 15, 1992, https://unlimitedhangout.com/wp-content/uploads/2022/03/The-Mystery-Of-Ghislaine-Maxwell_S-Secret-Love_Revealed-1.pdf.

18 International Herald Tribune, “1925:Kit Kat Club : In Our Pages:100, 75 and 50 Years Ago,” *New York Times*, May 18, 2000, https://www.nytimes.com/2000/05/18/opinion/IHT-1925kit-kat-club-in-our-pages100-75-and-50-years-ago.html.

19 Mail Online Staff, “Why Is a KitKat Called a KitKat? Vintage Nestle Poster Reveals All,” *Mail Online*, October 16, 2015, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3275974/Why-Kit-Kat-called-KitKat-Vintage-Nestle-poster-reveals-inspiration-chocolate-bar-17th-century-pastry-chef-named-Christopher-Catling.html.

20 Peter Edidin, “Something There Is That Does Love a Wall,” *New York Times*, April 17, 2005, https://www.nytimes.com/2005/04/17/nyregion/thecity/something-there-is-that-does-love-a-wall.html.

21 Mick Brown and Harriet Alexander, “The Rise and Fall of Socialite Ghislaine Maxwell, Jeffrey Epstein’s ‘Best Friend,’” *Sydney Morning Herald*, January 31, 2020, https://www.smh.com.au/national/the-rise-and-fall-of-socialite-ghislaine-maxwell-jeffrey-epstein-s-best-friend-20200103-p53omx.html.

22 Brown and Alexander, “The Rise and Fall of Ghislaine Maxwell,”; “Anna Pasternak - Writer,” *Anna Pasternak*, https://www.annapasternak.co.uk/.

23 “Photo: Elizabeth Harris, Jonathan Aitken, Stanley Johnson,” Getty Images, July 5, 2004, https://www.gettyimages.com.mx/detail/fotograf%25C3%25ADa-de-noticias/elizabeth-harris-former-mp-jonathan-aitken-fotograf%25C3%25ADa-de-noticias/51027008.

24 “1987: MP on Gay Sex Charges.”

25 George Rush and Joanna Molloy, “Rush & Molloy, An Arrow at Archer,” *The Daily News*, June 9, 1996, https://unlimitedhangout.com/wp-content/uploads/2022/03/Photo_2022-03-16-10.39.11.jpeg.

26 “Photos: Kit Kat Club” July 5, 2004, https://www.gettyimages.com.mx/fotos/kit-kat-club-maxwell?assettype=image&family=editorial&phrase=kit%2520kat%2520club%-2520maxwell&sort=oldest

27 “Photo: Elizabeth Harris, Jonathan Aitken, Stanley Johnson.”

28 “Photo: Elizabeth Harris, Jonathan Aitken, Stanley Johnson,”; Guardian staff, “Aitken Jailed for 18 Months,” *The Guardian*, June 8, 1999, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/1999/jun/08/uk; “Guest, Chef Anton Mosimann, actress Fiona Macpherson and Lord Jeffrey Archer,” Getty Images, July 5, 2004, https://www.gettyimages.com.mx/detail/fotograf%25C3%25ADa-de-noticias/guest-chef-anton-mosimann-actress-fiona-fotograf%25C3%25ADa-de-noticias/51027010.

29 *International Herald Tribune*, “1925: Kit Kat Club,”; Douglas Charles, “Alleged Jeffrey Epstein Address Book Contains Hundreds Of Names, Including Celebrities And Politicians,” *BroBible*, July 7, 2021, https://brobible.com/culture/article/jeffrey-epstein-address-book-celebrities-politicians/.

30 Edward Klein, “The Sinking of Captain Bob,” *Vanity Fair*, March 1992, https://archive.vanityfair.com/article/share/772fa3a5-0e89-4442-9c1f-3e0dbe42f349; Gordon Thomas and Martin Dillon, *Robert Maxwell, Israel’s Superspy: The Life and Murder of a Media Mogul*, 1st Carroll & Graf ed (New York: Carroll and Graf, 2002), 239, https://archive.org/details/robert-maxwell-israels-superspy-thomas-dillon-2002; “Actor George Hamilton with Ghislaine Maxwell,” Getty Images, June 5, 1991, https://www.gettyimages.com.mx/detail/fotograf%25C3%25ADa-de-noticias/actor-george-hamilton-with-ghislaine-maxwell-fotograf%25C3%25ADa-de-noticias/1161864082.

31 Nick Davies, “The $10bn Question: What Happened to the Marcos Millions?,” *The Guardian*, May 7, 2016, https://www.theguardian.com/world/2016/may/07/10bn-dollar-question-marcos-millions-nick-davies; Craig Wolff, “Focus at Marcos Trial Turns to Khashoggi,” *New York Times*, May 24, 1990, https://www.nytimes.com/1990/05/24/nyregion/focus-at-marcos-trial-turns-to-khashoggi.html.

32 “Report: Marcos Moved Funds Through Actor George Hamilton,” *AP News*, October 9, 1990, https://apnews.com/article/5710a62f791a248dc54e74fd2a89bea5.

33 “Actor George Hamilton Denies Marcos Link in Home Sale,” *UPI*, March 28, 1986, https://www.upi.com/Archives/1986/03/28/Actor-George-Hamilton-denies-Marcos-link-in-home-sale/8031512370000/.

34 Davies, “The $10bn Question.”

35 “About Ghislaine Maxwell,” RealGhislaine.com, https://www.realghislaine.com/about-ghislaine.

36 “about Ghislaine Maxwell.”

37 Klein, “The Sinking of Captain Bob.”

38 William H. Meyers, “Megadealer for the Rothschilds,” *New York Times*, December 4, 1988, https://www.nytimes.com/1988/12/04/magazine/meagdealer-for-the-rothschilds.html.

39 Meyers, “Megadealer.”

40 Niall Ferguson, *The House of Rothschild: Volume 2: The World’s Banker: 1849-1999* (New York: Penguin, 1998), 526, https://archive.org/details/houseofrothschil000v2ferg_c6f9.

41 Thomas and Dillon, *Israel’s Superspy*, 171.

42 Thomas and Dillon, *Israel’s Superspy*, 171, 188.

43 Thomas and Dillon, *Israel’s Superspy*, 196.

44 Klein, “The Sinking of Captain Bob.”

45 Sissons, “Mysterious Business.”

46 Sissons, “Mysterious Business.”

47 UK News, “Robert Maxwell’s Contacts Book to Be Auctioned after Discovery in ‘Dusty Box,’” *Express & Star*, December 18, 2020, https://www.expressandstar.com/news/uk-news/2020/12/18/robert-maxwells-contacts-book-to-be-auctioned-after-discovery-in-dusty-box/.

48 Peter Fearon, “How Ghislaine Rose From the Ashes – Maxwell’s Heirs Building a New Business Empire,” *New York Post*, March 23, 2000, https://nypost.com/2000/03/23/how-ghislaine-rose-from-the-ashes-maxwells-heirs-building-a-new-business-empire/.

49 “About Ghislaine Maxwell.”

50 “About Ghislaine Maxwell.”

51 Fearon, “How Ghislaine Rose From the Ashes.”

52 Klein, “The Sinking of Captain Bob.”

53 Klein, “The Sinking of Captain Bob.”

54 “His Collateral? Prestige,” *Daily News* (New York), December 15, 1991.

55 *Hearing on Business and Investment Opportunities in the Baltic States, Eastern Europe and the Former Soviet Union*, Hearings Before the Committee on Small Business, United States Senate, One Hundred Second Congress, First Session, November 21, 1991, Vol 4, p. 119.

56 Susan Trento, *The Power House: Robert Keith Gray and the Selling of Access and Influence in Washington* (St. Martin’s Press, 1992), 377, https://archive.org/details/powerhouserobert00tren.

57 Thomas and Dillon, *Israel’s Superspy*, 41.

58 Klein, “The Sinking of Captain Bob.”

59 “Maxwell and Bronfman Make Joint Bid for Jerusalem Post,” *Jewish Telegraphic Agency*, April 17, 1989, https://www.jta.org/archive/maxwell-and-bronfman-make-joint-bid-for-jerusalem-post.

60 Whitney Webb, “Meet Ghislaine: Daddy’s Girl,” *Unlimited Hangout*, December 16, 2021, https://unlimitedhangout.com/2021/12/investigative-reports/meet-ghislaine-daddys-girl/.

61 Lisa Miller, “Titans of Industry Join Forces To Work for Jewish Philanthropy,” *Wall Street Journal*, May 4, 1998, https://www.wsj.com/articles/SB894240270899870000.

62 Fearon, “How Ghislaine Rose From the Ashes.”

63 Robotham, “The mystery of Ghislaine Maxwell’s secret love.”

64 Mark Seal, “‘Ghislaine, Is That You?’: Inside Ghislaine Maxwell’s Life on the Lam,” *Vanity Fair*, July 3, 2020, https://www.vanityfair.com/style/2020/07/inside-ghislaine-maxwells-life-on-the-lam.

65 Fearon, “How Ghislaine Rose From the Ashes.”

66 Fearon, “How Ghislaine Rose From the Ashes.”

67 Klein, “The Sinking of Captain Bob.”

68 Michael Shnayerson, “The Fall of Cuomolot: Inside the Ill-Fated Kennedy-Cuomo Marriage,” *Vanity Fair*, March 31, 2015, https://www.vanityfair.com/news/2015/03/cuomo-kennedy-cuomolot-marriage.

69 Katy Forrester, “Ghislaine Maxwell ‘Was a Guest at Andrew Cuomo’s Wedding & Private Lunch,’” *The US Sun*, November 2, 2021, https://www.the-sun.com/news/3948010/ghislaine-maxwell-guest-andrew-cuomo-wedding-jeffrey-epstein/.

70 Shnayerson, “The Fall of Cuomolot.”

71 HashTigre, Twitter post, February 28, 2021, https://web.archive.org/web/20210228194143/https://twitter.com/hash_tigre/status/1366111075641425920.

72 Forrester, "Ghislaine Maxwell 'Was a Guest.'"

73 Forrester, "Ghislaine Maxwell 'Was a Guest.'"

74 "London Watch: Oldfield Party," *Women's Wear Daily*, December 4, 1990, 16.

75 Debbie Lord, "Who Is Ghislaine Maxwell, Companion of Jeffrey Epstein?," *WFTV*, July 2, 2020, https://www.wftv.com/news/trending/who-is-ghislaine-maxwell-conpanion-jeffrey-epstein/NVSLGQYQDVGVDOU25GY4FIEDJA/; "Ghislaine Maxwell: The British Socialite, Tycoon's Daughter and Friend of Jeffrey Epstein," *Sky News*, July 2, 2020, https://news.sky.com/story/Ghislaine-maxwell-focus-turns-to-british-socialite-in-the-wake-of-jeffrey-epsteins-death-11784582; Tom McCarthy and Daniel Strauss, "Ghislaine Maxwell Arrest Sends Tremors through Epstein's Celebrity Circle," *The Guardian*, July 2, 2020, https://www.theguardian.com/us-news/2020/jul/02/ghislaine-maxwell-jeffrey-epstein-celebrity-circle.

76 "Photo: Ghislaine Maxwell Says Hello to John Kennedy Jr.," *Spy*, March 1993, 75, https://books.google.com/books?id=FItmGUfHBkgC.

77 Alex Osmichenko, "Ghislaine Maxwell Hooked Up Sexually With JFK Jr.," *OK Magazine*, August 10, 2020, https://okmagazine.com/news/ghislaine-maxwell-hohn-f-kennedy-jr-sexual-hookup/.

78 Osmichenko, "Ghislaine Maxwell Hooked Up."

79 Nancy Collins, "New Questions Arise About Mary Richardson Kennedy's Suicide," *The Daily Beast*, May 16, 2013, https://www.thedailybeast.com/articles/2013/05/16/new-questions-arise-about-mary-richardson-kennedy-s-suicide.

80 Collins, "New Questions."

81 Jason Burke, "Carlos Mavroleon," *The Observer*, August 19, 2000, https://www.theguardian.com/theobserver/2000/aug/20/features.magazine47.

82 Burke, "Carlos Mavroleon."

83 Burke, "Carlos Mavroleon."

84 David Ignatius, "The French, the Cia and the Man Who Sued Too Much," *Washington Post*, January 8, 1996, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1996/01/08/the-french-the-cia-and-the-man-who-sued-too-much/d81e2a2b-96e7-4a75-8680-1a76b24c9f36/.

85 Whitney Webb, "Alleged Salas Family Assailant Previously Worked for US/Israeli Intelligence-Linked Firm," *Unlimited Hangout*, July 21, 2020, https://unlimitedhangout.com/2020/07/reports/alleged-salas-family-assailant-previously-worked-for-us-israeli-intelligence-linked-firm/.

86 Robin Pogrebin, "John O'Neill Is Dead at 49; Trade Center Security Chief," *New York Times*, September 23, 2001, https://www.nytimes.com/2001/09/23/nyregion/john-o-neill-is-dead-at-49-trade-center-security-chief.html.

87 M.L. Nestel, "Ghislaine Believes Disgraced Tycoon Dad Was MURDERED, Her Brother Reveals," *The US Sun*, June 26, 2021, https://www.the-sun.com/news/3160152/ghislaine-maxwell-believes-dad-roberts-drowning-was-murder/; Thomas and Dillon, *Israel's Superspy*, 301.

88 Fearon, "How Ghislaine Rose From the Ashes."

89 Webb, "Meet Ghislaine."

90 Wendy Leigh, “JUST LIKE Her Daddy; With a Ruthless Ambition Worthy of Her Father, Ghislaine Maxwell Has Clawed Her Way Back from the Brink of Ruin,” *Daily Mail* (London), May 19, 2007, https://unlimitedhangout.com/wp-content/uploads/2021/12/2007-05-19-JUST-LIKE-her-daddy_-With-a-ruthless-ambition-worthy-of.pdf.

91 Ferguson, *The House of Rothschild*, 526.

92 “Maxwell Scandal: The Report – Family: Widow’s Modest Life,” *The Mirror*, March 31, 2001, 4.

93 Fearon, “How Ghislaine Rose From the Ashes.”

94 CNET News staff, “Magellan Cofounder Finds Email,” *CNET*, February 21, 1997, https://www.cnet.com/tech/services-and-software/magellan-cofounder-finds-email/.

95 Po Bronson, “On The Net, No One Knows You’re a Maxwell,” *Wired*, February 1, 1999, https://www.wired.com/1999/02/maxwell/.

96 “Voyaging around Her Father, the Hi-Tech Maxwell,” T*he Observer*, October 8, 2000, https://www.theguardian.com/business/2000/oct/08/theobserver.observerbusiness.

97 CNET, “Magellan Cofounder.”

98 Bronson, “On The Net.”

99 CNET News staff, “MSN to Use McKinley Directory,” *CNET*, December 18, 1995, https://www.cnet.com/tech/mobile/msn-to-use-mckinley-directory/.

100 Sharon Wrobel, “Serial Entrepreneur,” *The Jerusalem Post*, August 24, 2006, https://www.jpost.com/Business/Business-Features/Serial-entrepreneur; Katie Hafner, “The Perils of Being Suddenly Rich,” *New York Times*, April 21, 2007, https://www.nytimes.com/2007/04/21/technology/21hayden.html.

101 Julia Angwin, “Excite Will Buy Magellan Search Engine,” *SFGATE*, June 28, 1996, https://www.sfgate.com/business/article/Excite-Will-Buy-Magellan-Search-Engine-2976079.php.

102 Bronson, “On The Net.”

103 William Cash, “The Sins of the Father,” *Evening Standard* (London), November 21, 2003, https://www.mintpressnews.com/wp-content/uploads/2019/10/The-sins-of-the-father.pdf.

104 Nigel Rosser, “What Happened to the Maxwell Women,” *Evening Standard* (London), March 30, 2001, https://web.archive.org/web/20200719010043/https://www.questia.com/newspaper/1G1-75315251/what-happened-to-the-maxwell-women.

105 Sissons, “Mysterious Business.”

106 Newsroom, “Misery in the Maxwell House,” *The Scotsman*, November 16, 2001, https://www.scotsman.com/news/misery-maxwell-house-2510066.

107 Nigel Rosser, “Andrew’s Fixer; She’s the Daughter of Robert Maxwell and She’s Manipulating His Jetset Lifestyle,” *Evening Standard* (London), January 22, 2001, https://www.mintpressnews.com/wp-content/uploads/2019/10/ANDREW_S-FIXER_SHE_S-THE-DAUGHTER-OF-ROBERT-MAXWELL-AND-1.pdf.

108 Rosser, “Andrew’s Fixer.”

109 Klein, “The Sinking of Captain Bob.”

110 Whitney Webb, “The Maxwell Family Business Series,” *Unlimited Hangout*, https://unlimitedhangout.com/the-maxwell-family-business/.

111 Rosser, “Andrew’s Fixer.”

112 Stephanie Nolasco, “Ghislaine Maxwell ‘Would Do Anything’ to Meet Jeffrey Epstein’s Demands, Prince Andrew’s Cousin Claims,” *Yahoo News*, December 2, 2021, https://web.archive.org/web/20211203054324/https://news.yahoo.com/ghislaine-maxwell-anything-aposmeet-180037844.html.

113 Nolasco, “Ghislaine Maxwell ‘Would DO Anything’.”

114 Robotham, “The mystery of Ghislaine Maxwell’s secret love.”

CHAPTER 16

CROOKED CAMPAIGNS

A DONOR TO REMEMBER

The earliest official interaction between Jeffrey Epstein and the Clinton White House took place in 1993. For Epstein, it would be the first of 17 visits he would make to the executive residence in just under two years. Epstein's first visit took place on February 25, 1993 and he had been invited, per visitor logs, by "Rubin." The location of the visit was noted as "WW," for the West Wing. The Rubin listed here is believed to be Robert Rubin, who at that time was serving as the director of the National Economic Council (NEC) as well as Assistant to the President for Economic Policy. The NEC coordinated all economic policy recommendations that went into the President's office, meaning that any meeting between or involving both Rubin and Epstein would have likely related to economic policy.

If Rubin was indeed responsible for Epstein's initial entry into the White House, this is highly significant. Right before taking his post at the National Economic Council when Bill Clinton became president, Rubin had been serving as co-chairman of Goldman Sachs, a post which he assumed in 1990. Before that he was Goldman Sachs' Chief Operating Officer and its Vice Chairman from 1987 to 1990. That means that Rubin held the top leadership posts at the bank prior to and during its involvement with Robert Maxwell's theft of hundreds of millions from his own companies' pension funds to stave off the collapse of his business empire.

Goldman Sachs' role in the financial fraud and illegal activities that directly preceded Maxwell's death (and were alleged to have played some role in his demise) stands out among Maxwell's other banks. Per the official report by Britain's Department of Trade and Industry on the scandals that erupted in the wake of Maxwell's death, Goldman Sachs bore "'substantial responsibility' for allowing Mr. Maxwell to manipulate the stock market prior to the collapse of his businesses."[1] In addition, before Maxwell died, "Trade and Industry Secretary Peter Lilley had received complaints before Maxwell died about dealings between Captain Bob's other public company, Maxwell Communications Corp, and Wall Street bankers Goldman Sachs," according to *The Guardian*.[2] Rubin, in his role at the time, likely had knowledge of these shady dealings in the lead up to Maxwell's death and almost certainly played a major role in dealing with the subsequent fallout, as Goldman Sachs – along with the UK government and Shearson Lehman – were tasked with replenishing the stolen pension fund money.[3]

In summary, one of the top executives of Robert Maxwell's main bank with "substantial responsibility" for at least one of his major financial crimes, was the person to first connect Jeffrey Epstein with the Clinton White House.

Furthermore, Rubin would become Treasury Secretary at the tail end of 1994, the year where Epstein made 12 of his 17 White House visits. Rubin took over that post from Lloyd Bentsen Jr., who had previously served on the board of his family's Jefferson Savings and Loan alongside Guillermo Hernandez-Cartaya and his father, Marcelo Hernandez-Cartaya. Guillermo, importantly, was the figure behind the WFC Corporation, the CIA-linked drug smuggling and money laundering operation mentioned in chapter 13 (among other places) in connection with Leslie Wexner's business associate, Edward DeBartolo.

At the time Hernandez-Cartaya was added to the board, he was making major inroads in Brownsville, Texas, a border town close to the Gulf of Mexico. Brownsville's local papers reported that Hernandez-Cartaya was part of a crew of Miami real estate developers planning to transform the town into "one of the most popular resort areas of the world."[4] Two years later, Hernandez-Cartaya bought Jefferson S&L outright from Lloyd Bentsen Sr.[5] Law enforcement sources, as well Texas state regulator Art Leister, told journalist Pete Brewton that Hernandez-Cartaya was using the S&L as a drug money laundromat.[6]

While Robert Rubin served as Clinton's second Treasury Secretary, his deputy was Lawrence "Larry" Summers, who would later take over for Rubin as Treasury Secretary in 1999 and who, along with Rubin, helped engineer the repeal of the Glass-Steagall Act. This allowed an economic bubble to inflate, ultimately resulting in the 2008 crisis. Epstein is also alleged to have played some role in the 2008 financial crisis by apparently helping to instigate the collapse of Bear Stearns.[7] As previously noted in chapter 14, Summers also had a close relationship with Henry Rosovsky, who was intimately involved with the Wexner Foundation and associated with Jeffrey Epstein at the time.

Summers, whose very close ties to Epstein were also discussed in chapter 14, was known to have taken at least one of his flights on Epstein's plane in 1998, when he was serving under Rubin as Deputy Secretary of the Treasury. A 2003 report in the *Harvard Crimson,* written at the time Summers was Harvard's president, noted that the two men's friendship "began a number of years ago –

before Summers became Harvard's president and even before he was the Secretary of the Treasury."[8]

With respect to Rubin and Summers, it is worth examining a claim made by Epstein associate Leon Black, of Apollo Global Management. In 2020, Black claimed that, in addition to himself, clients of Epstein's included various heads of state as well as a US Treasury Secretary.[9] Though he didn't name any of those people, it seems likely that either Rubin or Summers was the US Treasury Secretary in question.

Around the same time as Epstein's first Rubin-facilitated White House meeting, Epstein also officially became a Clinton donor. Indeed, Epstein's second visit to White House, which he made alongside Ghislaine Maxwell in September 1993, was to attend a reception for donors who had specifically contributed to White House renovation efforts, with those efforts having begun in November 1992.

Sometime prior to that reception, Epstein had donated $10,000 to the White House Historical Association for a specific project to redecorate the White House. It is unclear when exactly between November 1992 and September 1993 Epstein would have become a donor. Most likely, he had donated by the time of his first White House visit in February 1993, if not before, given the Clinton family's long association with "pay-to-play" politics.

The project eventually cost nearly $400,000 and was said to have been funded completely by private donations. Epstein, accompanied by Ghislaine Maxwell, attended the donors' reception, which included a thorough tour of the refurbished White House.[10] A photo of the couple greeting the President at that function was eventually published by the *Daily Mail* in December 2021.[11] Other attendees at the exclusive reception included Clark Clifford, the former presidential adviser and Secretary of Defense who was one of the key players in the Bank of Credit and Commerce International (BCCI) scandal, as previously mentioned in chapter 7. According to documents related to the event, the point of contact for the event was the then-White House Social Secretary Ann Stock, who appears in Epstein's "little black book" of contacts.

Bernard Meyer, who was then the executive Vice President of the White House Historical Association, wrote a letter in October 1993 to Epstein, thanking him for the $10,000 contribution, which Meyer assured him would "assist in funding the costs of the refurbishing of the Oval Office in the West Wing and certain areas of the Executive Residence."[12] A copy of the letter thanking Epstein was also sent to A. Paul Prosperi, a real estate lawyer who had been a close friend of Bill Clinton's from their college days.

Prosperi had been intimately involved in the White House Historical Association's fundraising at the time of the redecoration-related donations in 1993. He was sent copies of thank you letters to other attendees aside from that addressed to Epstein and is identified by Meyer as the recipient of the donations. Like Epstein, Prosperi had donated $10,000 to the redecoration effort personally.

According to *The Daily Beast*, which first unearthed the donor dinner records in 2019, Prosperi likely facilitated this early Epstein-Clinton connection, not only due to the aforementioned, but also due to the fact that Prosperi's close relationship with Epstein persisted well past this event, and even continuing after Epstein's first arrest in 2006. Indeed, while Epstein was serving his initial prison sentence in Palm Beach, FL, Prosperi visited him at least 20 times. Prosperi was, notably, a real estate attorney in the Palm Beach area. Just a few years after he served as a "bundler" for this 1993 fundraiser, in 1996, Prosperi was indicted for embezzling $1.8 million from a client. His prison sentence was subsequently commuted by Bill Clinton during his final hours in office.[13]

Prosperi was not the only corrupt Palm Beach-based figure tied to this particular Clinton fundraiser who would continue to maintain close ties with Epstein up until his first arrest in 2006. The White House donor reception attended by both Epstein and Ghislaine Maxwell also counted C. Gerald Goldsmith of Palm Beach, Florida as a guest.

In 2009, the *New Times* of Palm Beach ran an op-ed titled "Palm Beach Mayoral Candidate Has Corrupt Past in the Bahamas."[14] The subject was C. Gerald Goldsmith, then serving as chairman of the First Bank of the Palm Beaches and who was then pursuing local political ambitions. The op-ed's description of the Florida-born, Harvard-trained businessman as a figure of corruption was hardly hyperbole. While Goldsmith maintained positions on the boards of new numerous banks and companies (with an inclination towards the offshore variety), many of his business partners and contacts came from the underworlds of organized crime and intelligence.

Goldsmith spent considerable time as an officer at Cosmos Bank, a Zurich-based bank with branches in New York and numerous interests throughout Florida and the Caribbean. Like Goldsmith himself, Cosmos straddled the line between the underworld and the overworld and maintained close ties to the networks around David Baird and his CIA-linked foundations (See chapter 4). One of Cosmos's directors, for example, was Frederick Glass, the vice chairman and CEO of the Empire State Building Corp. This company was owned by Henry Crown, the organized crime insider and client of the Baird Foundation in 1961 (see chapter 1). Henry's son, Lester Crown, was a founding member of the Wexner/Bronfman "Mega Group."[15] Crown's Empire State Building Corp. sold control of the Empire State Building to Lawrence Wien, another Baird Foundation client and advisor to Moe Dalitz's Cleveland mob. Since 1959, Dalitz's Desert Inn, at the center of the Roy Cohn United Dye case discussed in Chapter 4, had been owned by Wien.[16]

This wasn't Cosmos's only connections to these networks. Loan money from the bank mingled freely with loans from the mob-controlled Teamster Pension Fund in the real estate ventures of San Diego development mogul Irvin Kahn. One of Kahn's business partners in at least several of these ventures with Morris Shenker, attorney for Teamster boss Jimmy Hoffa and a controlling figure for the Teamster Pension Fund in his own right.[17]

Goldsmith himself seemed to have been particularly close to Lansky frontman (and Baird client) Lou Chesler. When Chesler helped organize the Grand Bahama Development Corporation (DEVCO), which managed Freeport and helped transform the island into a hub for organized crime-linked gambling, Goldsmith was on hand to act as one of the original investors. It was one of at least several joint business ventures: in August 1961, Chesler and Goldsmith led a group to buy up a private issuing of stock in a national bowling company called Consolidated Bowling Corp.[18]

It would prove to be the connection to the Bahamas, however, that was responsible for Goldsmith's notoriety. Through a position as head of a company called Intercontinental Diversified Corp (IDC), a Panamanian company set up by DEVCO, Goldsmith became party to a series of nearly-incomprehensible business transactions and political kickback schemes.[19] These revolved around the strange purchase of DEVCO and the Bahamas Port Authority – by Benguet, one of the Philippines' major gold mining companies. Benguet had been taken over by Herbert Allen, the brother of Chicago developer and Fisher/Taubman business associate Charles Allen (who, incidentally, was both another Baird client and himself a DEVCO investor). The Allens were also closely associated with the business interests of the PROMIS scandal conspirator Dr. Earl Brian. The reason for the acquisition of the Port Authority had to do with a law in the Philippines that barred foreign stockholders from controlling Filipino natural resources. Merging Benguet and DEVCO would allow the Allens to "spin-off" their assets from the gold holdings, which would then be sold back to Filipino parties.

The way the scheme functioned was essentially as follows: Benguet, steered by the Allen brothers, took control of DEVCO, and then transferred these assets to IDC, then headed by Goldsmith. Benguet was then sold to a group of Filipino businessmen with close ties to – and perhaps front men for – President Marcos. IDC was then left with DEVCO, the Bahamas Port Authority, and foreign holdings that had previously belonged to Benguet.[20] The ties of Ghislaine Maxwell's close friend and vacation escort George Hamilton and Epstein's client Adnan Khashoggi to the Marcos family and their suspect financial dealings were discussed in chapter 15.

If these matters were not already complex enough, there was also the question of a purported $100,000 kickback to the Bahamas prime minister Lynden O. Pindling that took place right in the middle of the Benguet transactions.[21] This payment originated from IDC and passed through Paul Helliwell's Castle Bank. The linkages between Helliwell and IDC were many: his law firm was retained by IDC, while his former partner, Mary Jane Melrose, had gone to work directly for DEVCO and IDC.

Goldsmith left IDC in 1976. Despite the cloud of scandal hanging over him he continued to move in elite circles. His name appeared on the 1978 membership roster of the secretive 1001 Club, an exclusive consortium that ostensibly served as the primary financing mechanism for the World Wildlife Foundation.[22] Joining him that year were notables such as BCCI founder Agha Hasan Abedi, members of the Bechtel family, Louis Mortimer Bloomfield of Permindex fame, shipping magnate Daniel K. Ludwig (who had worked closely with DEVCO in first developing the port at Grand Bahama), David and Laurance Rockefeller, Mossad banker Tibor Rosenbaum, and Rosenbaum's close colleague Edmond de Rothschild.

Throughout the 1980s and 1990s, Goldsmith held directorships in numerous companies. According to SEC filings these included Innkeepers USA Trust, a real estate management company with a focus on upscale hotel properties; U.S. Banknote, a shadowy Delaware company; and the Nine West Group Inc., the apparel company headed by billionaire Sidney Kimmel. Goldsmith also sat on the board of Palm Beach National Bank, which he had joined in November of 1990.[23]

In his book *Relentless Pursuit*, Bradley Edward charges that Goldsmith regularly called Epstein's Palm Beach house throughout the early 2000s, as indicated by message pads purported to have been recovered by Palm Beach police officers.[24] Corroboration for this claim can be found in Epstein's black book, which contains numerous numbers for Goldsmith, including one listed as the Worth Avenue branch of Palm Beach National Bank. According to testimony, both Epstein and Ghislaine Maxwell maintained accounts at Palm Beach National Bank.[25]

THE VINCE FOSTER CONNECTION

The White House renovations made possible by the donations of Epstein, Goldsmith, Clifford and others were the subject of a November 1993 article in the *New York Times*, which stated that the redecorated White House reflected the "personal energy" of the Clintons, "especially in their bold use of color."[26] It also noted that the effort to redecorate the White House was particularly controversial at the time due to its connection to the "suicide note" allegedly found on the lifeless body of Clinton aide Vince Foster's earlier that year.

As previously mentioned in Chapter 9, Foster was under government surveillance at the time of his death and was reportedly distraught over recent developments tied to the PROMIS scandal/Inslaw affair. However, the death itself – officially ruled a suicide – and its immediate aftermath have long raised suspicions for several reasons.

On July 20, 1993, between Epstein's first White House meeting and the September donor dinner, Vince Foster's lifeless body was found in Fort Marcy Park. He had last been seen at the White House, yet no exit logs or video footage show him leaving the premises. At the park, those who witnessed the scene were surprised by the lack of blood, as Foster was alleged to have shot himself in the mouth with a revolver, an act that normally results in a messy, bloody death. In contrast, the amount of blood found at the scene was considered to be minor.

The report produced by Whitewater special counsel Robert Fiske asserted that those present observed "a large pool of blood" where Foster's head had been, but other parts of Fiske's own report contradict this claim and observers of the scene of death, including medical examiner Dr. Donald Haute, denied ever seeing a pool of blood.[27] Haute, who was the only doctor to examine Foster's body at the park, was not interviewed for the Fiske report. Haute's own report was reportedly improperly and illegally altered, with one page alleging the gunshot had been "mouth-head" while another alleges it was in fact "mouth-neck."[28] In addition, the presence of a bullet wound in the neck had been attested to by Richard Arthur, a firefighter/paramedic who was at the scene where Foster's body had been found.[29]

Other oddities include the fact that the murder weapon was unknown to Foster's wife and family, as he had owned a silver gun, not the black gun observed in photographs of the scene. Furthermore, the bullet that killed Foster was never found.[30] In addition, the FBI appears to have intervened in the investigation by telling eyewitnesses not to report that they had seen cars of other people beside Foster present at the scene. In addition, the FBI was accused of altering the statements of several eyewitnesses.[31]

The autopsy of Foster's body was also controversial. For instance, Dr. James Beyer, who performed the autopsy, unexpectedly moved the time of the autopsy so it took place a day earlier than planned, meaning that he performed much of the autopsy without observers who had been at the crime scene, as is custom.[32] When those police observers had finally arrived, Beyer had conveniently already removed Foster's entire tongue and upper palette, obfuscating evidence of the alleged "mouth-neck," as opposed to "mouth-head," injury that had been observed in the field by Dr. Haute.[33] Beyer had also spoken to Park Police about the results of X-rays of Foster's body, but then subsequently claimed those X-rays never existed.[34]

Aside from the death, there is the matter of the unauthorized search of Foster's office that began between the time the body was found in the park at around 6pm and when Craig Livingston, the director of the White House's Office of Personnel Security, identified Foster's body at around 10pm. It was reported by *Deseret News* that "about an hour after White House aides learned of Foster's death at 9pm that night, [White House counsel Bernard] Nussbaum, Maggie Williams, Hillary Rodham Clinton's chief of staff, and Patsy Thomasson, an aide to the White House chief of administration, entered Foster's office."[35] A secret service agent had seen Williams "carrying a stack of files from the area of his office" around this time.[36]

Nussbaum later confirmed that he had been in Foster's office that evening for "a brief, 10-minute search." He disputed interfering with the investigations, claiming that he was merely "seeking to 'balance the interests' of Foster's privileged communications with the president with the 'legitimate' needs of the police."[37] Nussbaum had made an agreement with the Justice Department that resulted in the official search of Foster's office taking place two days after his death, on July 22nd.[38]

This unauthorized search may have been related to "a blizzard of phone calls to and from the first lady and her closest friends and aides soon after Foster's death." According to the *Washington Post*, "Congress has heard flatly conflicting sworn accounts of what happened during those days [from the first lady and her friends and aides]. A parade of witnesses have described searches of Foster's office while angry police and Justice Department officials investigating his death were kept at bay. Missing files and documents have been suddenly discovered and released."[39]

Perhaps one of the oddest phenomena surrounding Vince Foster's death was his supposed suicide note or "resignation letter," which the White House later said had been found in Foster's briefcase. For reasons still unknown, the White House waited to report the note's existence until about 30 hours after it had allegedly been discovered.[40] Adding to the confusion is the fact that police had observed Foster's briefcase as having been empty when his office was searched in the immediate aftermath of his death.

There was also an unusual amount of secrecy around the note as well, as photographing the note was forbidden and it was exempt from Freedom of Information Act requests. However, a copy was subsequently obtained by James Davidson, editor of a financial newsletter. Davidson arranged for three handwriting experts to examine the note and all three judged it to be a forgery.[41] Subsequently released documents found that Hillary Clinton had been the main person "behind the 30-hour delay in releasing late White House counsel Vincent Foster's suicide note to authorities."[42]

Hillary Clinton's personal involvement is notable, as she is directly mentioned in the alleged "suicide note." The note states in particular that "The Usher's Office plotted to have excessive costs incurred, taking advantage of Kaki [Hockersmith] and HRC [Hillary Rodham Clinton]."

The *New York Times* wrote shortly after the note's "discovery" that this part of the note referred to "Hillary Rodham Clinton's redecoration plans for the White House" and cryptically charged that the Usher's Office, which oversees renovations, was using those plans against Clinton and her decorator Kaki Hockersmith.[43] A subsequent summary of the note's contents, published by the *New York Times* that November, stated that, in this portion of the note, "Mr. Foster alluded to cost overruns and schemes associated with the redecorating, which he did not describe but feared would embarrass the President and Mrs. Clinton."[44]

Given that the "suicide note" was highly suspicious and most likely a forgery, this would mean that the note, and its assertions about the renovation endeavor, had been placed there with the intention, not only of being discovered, but of seeding a particular narrative about the money flows related to the White House renovation.

The inclusion of this line seems meant to publicly absolve Kaki Hockersmith and Hillary Clinton from wrongdoing while also casting shade on the Usher's Office, potentially stopping anyone at that office from advancing accusations against the First Lady or her associates as it related to financial impropriety that may have been associated with the redecoration effort. If the note was indeed a forgery intended to publicly absolve Hillary Clinton and Kaki Hockersmith from a potential role in financial "schemes" related to the renovation, it would suggest that the opposite narrative – i.e. that Hillary Clinton and the renovation were involved in suspect financial schemes – was closer to the truth.

This seems more than plausible because, as the *New York Times* article notes, "Mr. Foster's office would have decided whether there was anything inappropriate about the private funds donated for the renovation" and [his] role was to advise on the legality of anything relating to the executive office.[45] Had something been uncovered by either Foster or the Usher's office about the recent donations to the White House Historical Association? Given that the donors included figures deeply embedded in shady financial networks, like Jeffrey Epstein, Clark Clifford, and C. Gerald Goldsmith, it's certainly possible.

However, soon after the note was made public, both the Usher's Office and Clinton denied any impropriety had taken place. It was also noted that the sizable gap between initial cost estimates made by the usher's office and the final cost was merely due to a "miscommunication" between the Usher's Office and Hockersmith, with Hockersmith allegedly having underestimated the cost of labor and overtime pay. In an August 1993 statement, Clinton stated that this particular "miscommunication" had since been resolved. Gary Walters, who had been chief usher since 1986, told the *Times* in 1993 that he had "no idea what he [Foster] was thinking when the note was written."[46]

This seemingly rapid turnaround from the narrative seeded by Foster's alleged note makes it unclear what, if anything, transpired in the relatively short window of time between that note's creation and the *New York Times* report a few weeks later. Was this "miscommunication" resolved or did the note's narrative pressure the Usher's Office to drop potential complaints? Adding to the intrigue is the fact that the White House "refused to identify anyone associated with the Historical Association fundraising at the time."[47] One can only speculate about the White

House's reasons, though the level of secrecy, the involvement of Epstein/Maxwell and similar actors as well as the Vince Foster connection strongly suggests that this particular fundraiser was related to much more than simply the reupholstering of furniture and the swapping of drapes.

FOSTERGATE

In 1995, journalist James R. Norman, then working as "*Forbes*' ace investigative reporter" and a senior editor at the magazine, wrote a cover story for *Forbes* entitled "Oil! Guns! Greed!", which centered on Chase Manhattan bank and allegations relating to "bank fraud, oil trading, and bombs." The connections he uncovered there led him to develop another and arguably much more groundbreaking investigation, which bore the title "Fostergate."

On April 17, 1995, Norman sent a letter to Michael D. McCurry, White House Press Secretary, the contents of which were later leaked onto the early internet. In that letter Norman had informed McCurry that *Forbes* was "preparing an article for immediate publication" and was seeking comment on several allegations contained in the reporting, of which there were ten in total. A few of them deal with Foster's role with the Jackson Stephens-owned company Systematics, previously discussed in chapter 9. Those allegations, as Norman wrote them, were as follows:

> 1.) That Vincent W. Foster, while White House Deputy Counsel, maintained a Swiss bank account.
>
> 2.) That funds were paid into that account by a foreign government, specifically the State of Israel.
>
> 3.) That shortly before his death and coincident with the onset of severe and acute depression, Vincent Foster learned he was under investigation by the CIA for espionage.
>
> 4.) That this information was made available to him by Hillary Rodham Clinton.
>
> 5.) That while he was White House Deputy Counsel and for many years prior, Vincent Foster had been a behind-the-scenes control person on behalf of the National Security Agency for Systematics, a bank data processing company integrally involved in a highly secret intelligence effort to monitor world bank transactions.
>
> 6.) That Systematics was also involved in" 'laundering: funds from covert operations, including drug and arms sales related to activities in and around Mena, Ark.
>
> 7.) That through Systematics' relationship with E-Systems, Vincent Foster may have had access to highly sensitive code, encryption, and data security information of strategic importance.
>
> 8.) That both prior to and after his death, documents relating to Systematics were removed from Vincent Foster's office in the White House.
>
> 9.) That the meeting at the Cardozo (Landau) estate on the eastern shore of Maryland on the weekend before Vincent Foster's death was attended by, among others, George Stephanopoulos.

> 10.) That Hillary Rodham Clinton was also a beneficiary of funds from Foster's Swiss account.[48]

The White House responded on April 20, and stated that the allegations were all "outrageous" and "baseless." *Forbes* killed Norman's story, which was due to be published in May with the magazine's editor James Michaels claiming that the story would not be published because "many of the story's sources were not credible."[49] Norman's story relied on several anonymous sources in intelligence, including the CIA, and, as can be surmised from the allegations above, centered around "charges that Foster had been under Central Intelligence Agency surveillance for selling US secrets to Israel and secreting the proceeds in a Swiss bank" account.[50] It also alleged that Hillary Clinton had been involved in the selling of those secrets alongside Foster.

Norman eventually published "Fostergate" in a small magazine called *Media Bypass*. After publication there, he wrote to *Forbes*' editor James Michaels, imploring him to reconsider publishing the article in *Forbes*, where Norman was still employed. The letter informed Michaels that Norman had obtained significant, additional corroboration of his reporting. This included "credit card and airline frequent flier records that VWF [Vince W. Foster] was making periodic one-day trips to Switzerland" and that "a staffer on Jim Leach's House Banking Committee has confirmed, on tape, that VWF had a Swiss bank account."

Norman continued defending his reporting to Michaels by noting that "Foster's former executive assistant, Deborah Gorham, has testified under oath in a private deposition that Foster had her put two inch-thick NSA binders in Bernie Nussbaum's safe. This establishes beyond a doubt that Foster had access to sensitive NSA documents." Norman noted that his sources stated that "one of the binders contained presidential authentication codes required to authorize the use of nuclear weapons or other significant military action." Foster did not have the security clearance necessary to obtain that information, Norman notes, meaning he "must have gotten them from someone in or close to the oval office."

Norman identified this "someone" as Hillary Rodham Clinton. In his letter to Michaels, he states the following:

> Pouring gasoline on this fire is the revelation over the past weekend that Lisa Foster, Vince's wife, received a mysterious $286,000-plus payment, which came through Foster's sister Sheila Anthony, an Assistant Attorney General at the time, just four days before Foster's death. This clearly smacks of a hush-money payment. And apparently Foster wouldn't take the bait, despite

> being forced into a tight financial bind from the loss of his Swiss funds and probably from picking up the tab on all sorts of incidental Clinton campaign expenses. Faced with the likelihood he would be the fall guy for Hillary's sale of high-level nuclear code secrets to the Israelis (through Foster), he apparently threatened to dump the whole mess in Bill Clinton's lap at a one-on-one meeting set for Wednesday morning, July 21, 1993. But Foster never lived that long.[51]

Norman, writing later that year in *Media Bypass*, noted that Hillary Clinton had not only been a probable "beneficiary" of the funds in Foster's Swiss bank account, but was also "under suspicion for espionage" at the same time Foster was under counterintelligence surveillance. He also noted that, "Although Systematics attempted to prevent the publication of Fostergate in *Media Bypass*, the company (Alltel) [formerly Systematics] has not even bothered to demand a retraction of anything published in the [Fostergate] story. Indeed, I have been told by at least four sources that senior officials of the company are now hiring criminal legal defense attorneys, and that Alltel itself is quietly up for sale. The *WSJ* has offered to help pick up *Media Bypass*' legal tab if they are sued (which is unlikely)."[52]

Michaels's response to the letter was to offer Norman two choices: take indefinite unpaid leave or accept a severance package. Norman resigned from *Forbes* in response and his Fostergate investigation was subsequently largely forgotten. Norman revealed, both in his letter to Michaels and elsewhere, that major political power players, including Caspar Weinberger had played a critical role in killing his Fostergate story.

In addition, Norman's sources had notably given him "an encrypted code (KPFBMMBODB) for an unknown Swiss account" as a means of corroborating their information. Norman then gave this code to a government employee, likely working for intelligence as their name is redacted, "who either gave it to one of his colleagues or personally decrypted the number and hacked his way into the account at Union Bank of Switzerland in Berne. They removed $2.3 million, and then left a note with the decrypted account number in the account holder's mailbox in Maine." Norman notes that it was subsequently revealed to him that the bank account had belonged to Weinberger himself. He wrote that "The source of this account number was the trunk of arms/drug smuggler Barry Seal's car. A copy of documents from a suitcase in that trunk is attached. The clear implication is that Caspar Weinberger, while Sec. of Defense, was taking kickbacks on drug and arms sales."[53] Barry Seal's activities in Mena, Arkansas, and beyond were previously discussed in chapter 8.

In addition, Mellon bank, which was also a key part of Norman's investigation, had donated to the ill-fated presidential campaign of *Forbes*'s controlling stockholder and editor-in-chief Malcolm Forbes. When Norman had sent a letter to bank executives in connection with his Fostergate investigation, Malcolm Forbes reportedly received numerous calls, urging him to kill Norman's story.[54]

Norman also reported in *Media Bypass* that another senior editor at *Forbes*, Dana Weschler Linden, had previously been a director at Boston Systematics, which was "loosely affiliated with the Systematics in Arkansas and run by her father, former CIA operative Harry Weschler." Boston Systematics' two Israeli subsidiaries were, incidentally, run by Weschler Linden's cousins.[55]

After Norman's report was killed, one of the people he contacted was the economist and writer J. Orlin Grabbe. Grabbe began his own investigation, producing an online series entitled "Allegations Regarding Vince Foster, the NSA, and Banking Transactions Spying." Only fragments of Grabbe's original series remain on the internet today. Grabbe's investigation corroborated key components of Norman's reporting and he followed some of Norman's leads even further. He also utilized at least some of the same sources that Norman had used in composing Fostergate. One of them, Chalmer "Charles" Hayes, was the subject of a records request in 2021 and the FBI refused to release any of its files on Hayes, saying it "can neither confirm nor deny the existence of the requested documents."[56]

For instance, Grabbe was provided "evidence that said that one of the things stolen [by Foster] through White House channels were Presidential authentication codes (generated daily by the NSA), by which the President identifies himself in the event of nuclear war. There was also a notebook giving all the global and regional nuclear options – a menu of pre-arranged military scenarios – that the President could select. This information had been sold to Israel."[57]

Grabbe reported that a Mossad agent was with Foster and in his apartment during his final hours. He wrote that "a woman with brownish-blonde hair" had accompanied Foster into his apartment after he'd left the White House the day he was murdered. He notes "that this apartment is Foster's is confirmed both by the landlord and by banking records of Foster's rental payments. The front entrance to Foster's apartment was being videotaped as part of an on-going national security investigation into espionage by members of the White House. The woman in the tape has been identified as an Israeli agent." This videotape referenced by Grabbe did not record the exit of Foster and the woman, only their entry, suggesting they left via the apartment's "back entrance."

However, Grabbe's investigation found it unlikely that this woman had been responsible for Foster's death, which would mean their meeting was likely related to the Fostergate allegations regarding Foster and espionage on behalf of Israel. Grabbe's investigation instead pointed to a "Bush plumbers unit" that continued to operate after Clinton's election as having been responsible for Foster's death. Grabbe notes that Foster's murder had been sloppy and had "taken place under emergency conditions – a spontaneous, last-minute solution when Vince Foster failed to react in expected fashion to a $286,000 attempted bribe."

He goes on to relate how the details of his death and the events surrounding it indicate that Foster's murder seemed to take the Clintons and other key figures at the White House by surprise. One of the alleged members of this "Bush plumbers unit," Robert Goetzman of the FBI, reportedly admitted to Debra von Trapp, a computer expert who worked in the Bush administration, while drunk that he had been involved in Foster's death. He reportedly said "We dumped him [Foster] in a queer park to send Clinton and his queer wife a message."[58] von Trapp had recorded the conversation and that tape eventually made its way to special counsel Kenneth Starr (who would later become one of Epstein's defense lawyers). Starr did nothing with the tape and some speculate that he may have destroyed it.[59]

Given the factionalism in the Reagan and Bush eras, this is not outside the realm of possibility. However, it is also important to note that some have speculated that Goetzman's drunken confession was part of an effort to misdirect and take the heat off of the Clintons as it related to Foster's death.

After Grabbe's investigation into Fostergate and other issues, he was smeared by *60 Minutes*' Leslie Stahl as a source of "misinformation" online and an example of why Americans should not read reporting outside of mainstream media outlets, which are now owned by a small handful of companies and many of which are controlled by the intelligence-organized crime networks profiled in this book.

Stahl's segment sought to portray Grabbe, a Harvard-trained economist and former assistant professor of economics at Wharton Business School, as a loony "conspiracy theorist" without making an effort to factually challenge any of Grabbe's reporting. In an earlier version of the current establishment rationale for online censorship, Stahl argued that interest in Grabbe's reporting was indicative of the danger of allowing "just anyone" to post content onto the internet.[60] *60 Minutes* may have had a vendetta against Grabbe's reporting on Fostergate as he had written, as part of that series, that *60 Minutes*' Mike Wallace (an attendee of parties on the Lady Ghislaine) had been paid $150,000 by the Democratic National Committee to attack reporters who questioned the official narrative that Foster had committed suicide.[61] At the time of Wallace's segment and Stahl's segment, CBS, which produces *60 Minutes*, was owned by Mega Group member and OSS veteran Laurence Tisch, who was then also acting as CBS's CEO.

If we are to believe the reporting of James Norman and J. Orlin Grabbe, then it may be worth re-examining a few things. First, the White House Historical Association fundraiser. Not only did this fundraiser include people like Jeffrey Epstein, BCCI-linked Clark Clifford, and C. Gerald Goldsmith, it was directly mentioned in the forged "suicide note" that was most likely created with Hillary Clinton's direct involvement. If both Hillary Clinton and Foster were under investigation for espionage at the time, and Foster's death was connected to the reason for that investigation – i.e. the involvement of Foster and Clinton in selling secrets to Israel – one would assume that Clinton would attempt to absolve herself from anything that could lead to her involvement in those espionage activities being outed.

As previously stated, the only mention of Clinton in Foster's "suicide note" directly relates to the White House Historical Association fundraiser. These pieces of evidence, when considered together, suggests that the fundraiser may have been connected to either Systematics' role in PROMIS-facilitated money laundering or Foster's and Clinton's alleged Israeli espionage activities (or potentially both).

However, it seems that these espionage activities involving Foster and Hillary Clinton were not only limited to selling state secrets to Israel. As detailed in chapter 9, James Norman had noted in his book, *The Oil Card*, that it was suspected (though unproven) that other foreign governments aside from Israel had bought "high-level code, encryption, and other secrets via Foster's Swiss bank account and Israeli banks."[62] Per Norman, chief among the suspects of those foreign governments was China. As will be noted in subsequent sections of this chapter, there is substantial evidence that some Israeli espionage activities during this period were related to efforts to funnel US secrets, as well as sensitive US technology, to China.

However, before broaching those issues in greater detail, it's important to note that another Arkansas company tied to Systematics was, throughout this period, engaging in sensitive business dealings with China. The company in question was Arkansas Systems, which was located "just down the road" from Systematics in Little Rock and was founded in 1975 by a former Systematics employee and Army veteran, John Chamberlain.[63] Norman's reporting in Fostergate makes brief mention of Arkansas Systems, noting that it "was one of the first companies to receive funding from the Arkansas Development Finance Authority, an agency created by then Gov. Bill Clinton that is now coming under congressional scrutiny."[64] ADFA and its significance was discussed in chapter 8.

Arkansas Systems was founded in 1975 and described itself as "a privately held provider of card systems, payment systems, and operations solutions through Integrated Transaction Management (ITM), a comprehensive system architecture."[65] Like Systematics, Arkansas Systems focused on selling software to banks. Its software was used extensively on "remote teller terminals and ATMs" both domestically and abroad.[66] According to the company's founder, John Chamberlain, Arkansas Systems "assisted with file conversions and some consulting on the Systematics financial management system" in connection with Systematics' "processing [of American Express's] military banking contracts." Chamberlain claims to have been the developer of Systematics "financial management system."[67]

Arkansas Systems was also involved in tech transfer due to its role in the "export of encrypted software and hardware" and lobbied for the removal of "export controls on software and hardware containing the DES algorithm," which the company framed "as needless red tape."[68]

Norman's Fostergate report noted that the company did considerable business in Asia and Eastern Europe, including in Russia and China. Chamberlain has stated that both his company and Systematics were "doing business in Moscow at the same time."[69] In 1994, Arkansas Systems reached an agreement with China's central bank, the People's Bank of China "to provide regional clearinghouses in three major Chinese cities."[70] The company would specifically "provide check processing software converting the Chinese banking system from a paper-heavy operation to a high-speed electronic system." The *American Banker* reported at the time that "the clearinghouses are being established in Nanjing, Shenyang, and Harbin" and that these "sites will serve as regional clearing centers for the People's

Bank of China, which controls more than 100,000 branches nationwide."[71] The report then notes that "similar clearinghouses are planned for 76 other regions." Given Arkansas Systems' connections to ADFA and Systematics, it is entirely possible that the company's software enabled US intelligence or other parties to spy on financial transactions or its software was being used to facilitate financial crimes, such as money laundering.

Instrumental to Arkansas Systems' ability to secure this deal with China's central bank was the US Department of Commerce's International Trade Administration (ITA). Notably, working at ITA at that time, was a man connected to powerful Clinton donors involved in large-scale, highly suspect banking activities – Jackson Stephens and the Riady family (see chapter 8). His name was Johnny Huang. At ITA, Huang had access to classified information and made regular "mysterious" visits to Stephens Inc.'s DC offices, while also focusing specifically on ITA issues relating to China. Huang would later become a central figure in the Clinton-era scandal sometimes referred to as "Chinagate." One of the other key figures in Chinagate, Mark Middleton, a White House staffer, would incidentally be the man who facilitated most of Jeffrey Epstein's 17 White House visits.

CHINAGATE

Jeffrey Epstein's donation to the White House Historical Association would not be his only Clinton White House connection that was intimately tied to alleged corruption and financial "schemes." Not long after his first (official) donation in 1993, Epstein gained great access to the White House, meeting with Mark Middleton, then-special assistant to Thomas "Mack" McLarty, in the White House itself on several occasions. The subject of those discussions and their duration remain unknown. McLarty was initially Clinton's Chief of Staff, a position he held until mid-1994, when he became Counselor to the President and Special Envoy for the Americas. Middleton, a former Little Rock lawyer with ties to the Clintons prior to 1993, was reportedly chosen by McLarty to serve as his assistant after observing Middleton's role in fundraising for the 1992 election.[72]

Epstein visited the White House 15 times after his attendance of the September 1993 donor reception. Most of those visits occurred in 1994, with only one meeting taking place in 1995. He notably visited the White House twice on one day during three separate dates throughout 1994.

Many of those 1994 meetings appear to have been with Middleton or other individuals working in the Chief of Staff's office, namely Karen Ewing, as visitor logs show that Epstein had often been signed into and out of the White House by Middleton or Ewing and, on one occasion, Ann Stock. The *Daily Mail*, which reported on the visitor logs in late 2021, cited sources stating that it was likely that Epstein met directly with Clinton during a handful of these 1994 visits.[73]

One of Middleton's main duties at the White House, per a 1999 report from the House Committee on Government Reform, was being "in contact with many prominent business people and contributors to the President," with Epstein falling in the latter category at this time. Middleton's name would later appear in Epstein's little black book of contacts.

Middleton, who had raised $4 million for Clinton's first presidential campaign, would leave the White House in 1995, but continued to maintain close ties with the White House, as he controversially kept using his White House business cards and maintained a voicemail on the White House telephone system long after he officially lost his job there. A source cited by the *Daily Mail* and familiar with Middleton's role at the White House at that time stated that "Mark knew that Epstein was managing the money of Les Wexner [...] The year 1994 there were midterm elections, Clinton needed money and Mark thought he could get some of Wexner's money."[74]

Middleton was closely associated with John "Johnny" Huang, who raised millions of dollars from illegal or questionable sources, some tied to the Chinese government, for the Democratic National Committee (DNC).[75] Middleton's involvement in that illegal fundraising would become known after those funds came under scrutiny following the 1996 presidential election. One of those "questionable" fundraising sources would later tell the FBI that Middleton had received tens of thousands of dollars from him prior to Middleton's departure from the White House. When Congressional hearings were conducted into the scandal over 1996 election financing, Middleton pleaded the Fifth Amendment on 28 occasions, including in response to the question asking if he was an agent of influence for a foreign government.[76]

One of the reasons why Middleton likely pled the Fifth on so many occasions is the fact that there is much more to the story involving his association with Huang, as their relationship ties back to the corrupt power base that helped Clinton first become Arkansas' governor and, later, the nation's president. Huang, in particular, was deeply enmeshed in the business interests of Jackson Stephens (whose companies included Stephens Inc., Systematics Inc., and Beverly Enterprises) and Mochtar Riady of the Lippo Group. Riady and Stephens forged a multi-decade working partnership in the early 1980s that would then act as a hub of political cronyism in Arkansas, meaning it was also intimately tied to the political rise and fortunes of the Clinton family. The Riady-Stephens relationship, their role in BCCI and in the corruption surrounding the Clinton-launched Arkansas Development Finance Authority were discussed in detail in chapter 8.

Huang was a career banker, working first at the American Security Bank in DC before moving to Kentucky in 1979 to work for the First National Bank of Louisville.[77] A few years prior to Huang joining that bank, the First National Bank of Louisville had partnered, alongside two other banks, with Guillermo Hernandez-Cartaya's World Finance Corporation (WFC Corp) to establish a Panama-based bank called Unibank.[78] WFC's extensive ties to drug trafficking and organized crime was discussed in chapters 7 and 13 and WFC's ties to the Savings and Loans run by Clinton's first Treasury Secretary Lloyd Bentsen Jr. and his father were referenced earlier in this chapter. Unibank served as a vehicle for First

National Bank of Louisville and other banks to make massive, multi-million dollar loans to Colombian businesses.[79]

The association between First National Bank of Louisville and WFC Corp continued at least through 1977 and First National was also closely linked with the political fortunes of John Y. Brown, Kentucky's governor from 1979 to 1983 and who was known to law enforcement as connected to organized crime interests.[80]

In 1981, Huang went to work for Union Planters National Bank in Memphis, Tennessee.[81] Union Planters of Memphis was one of the shareholders in a company formed in 1980 called Turks and Caicos Banking Company Ltd. The other shareholder in this company was Jean de la Giroday, whose ties to Bank Cantrade and John Singlaub's GeoMiliTech were discussed in Chapter 7.

Huang then relocated to Hong Kong in 1983 to manage that bank's Far East branch. In Hong Kong, Huang became connected with James Riady, Mochtar Riady's son, and he went on to work for the Riadys in 1985, taking a position as Vice President at a Hong Kong bank controlled by the Riadys as well as at Worthen Bank.[82] As previously mentioned in Chapter 8, Worthen Bank was deeply enmeshed in the Stephens-Riady web of businesses/banks. C. Joseph Giroir, head of the Rose Law firm, also held significant amounts of Worthen stock and had a spot on Worthen's board, while Rose Law firm represented Worthen. It would be through Worthen that Mark Middleton would first connect with both Huang and the Riadys.[83]

Huang's ties with the Riady family soon deepened and he became president and COO of the Riady-controlled Lippobank of California in 1986, a post he held until 1988. That year, Huang moved to New York City and became general manager of Bank Central Asia, in which the Riadys were also heavily invested.[84] He returned to California in 1990 to serve as president of the US operations of the Lippo Group. Throughout late 1991 and early 1992, Huang personally worked on the negotiations of the Lippo Group's failed attempt to purchase and rescue BCCI's Hong Kong branch.[85]

In late 1991, Huang had his first known association with the DNC, having planned "the Hong Kong/Lippo portion of the trip" of a DNC delegation that traveled to Asia and was hosted by the Riadys. The head of that delegation was then-DNC chairman Ron Brown, who would later become president Clinton's Secretary of Commerce. The Riady's Lippo Group scheduled several meetings for the DNC delegation, including an apparent fundraiser hosted by Huang as well as other fundraising events. The fundraiser hosted by Huang, per DNC officials, included "wealthy Asian bankers who are either US permanent residents or with US corporate ties."[86] A congressional report found that "although there were several fundraising events scheduled, the DNC is unable to account for any contributions which may have been raised in conjunction with the Hong Kong trip."[87] It is important, here, to point out that foreign nationals cannot legally contribute to US election campaigns.

In addition, Huang's top position in the Lippo Group meant that Huang oversaw a series of real estate holding companies which donated heavily to the Democratic Party in 1992 and 1993. $50,000 was donated to the DNC Victory Fund by one such company, Hip Hing Holdings, in August 1992. The other contributions, made by three separate Lippo-controlled companies and totaling $50,000, were made to the DNC in September 1993. Somewhere in this time frame, Huang was given a "favor" by the Clinton administration "in the form of a top-secret security clearance" that Huang received "while still a private citizen."[88] This was reportedly because Commerce Department head Ron Brown had a "critical need for his [Huang's] expertise." Ron Brown was courted extensively by Huang as well as the subject of the next section, Yah Lin "Charlie" Trie.

Per a congressional report on the matter, "at the time of the election, Huang began pursuing an appointment through Clinton's transition team." Not long after Clinton took office, Maeley Tom, who had previously worked for the DNC, wrote to Clinton's Deputy Director of Personnel to recommend Huang, stating that "John [Huang] is the Riady family's top priority for placement because he is like one of their own."[89] Maeley Tom was hired right after Clinton's election to serve as the Riady family's liaison to the Democrats.[90] James Riady himself was notably placed on a list of "must consider" appointments for the new administration. Congressional investigators noted that Riady "was interested in placement on a commission or advisory council dealing with international trade or banking."[91] Riady was ultimately not appointed but another associate of Riady's as well as Huang's, Yah Lin "Charlie" Trie, was appointed to such a commission under dubious circumstances.

In December 1993, Huang was approved for a position at the Department of Commerce. There, he served as Principal Deputy Assistant Secretary for International Economic Policy in the Department's International Trade

Administration (ITA), but did not officially assume his post until July 1994.[92] A few months after he was approved, in February 1994, James Riady hosted a luncheon for Commerce Department officials who were traveling in Indonesia. Among the attendees were Commerce undersecretary Jeffrey Garten and Deputy undersecretary David Rothkopf, who were the superiors of Huang's soon-to-be boss at the Department, Charles Meissner.[93]

Upon joining ITA, Huang officially left his position at the Lippo Group, receiving $780,000 in salary and bonuses.[94] Huang reportedly obtained his job at ITA with the help of Maria Haley, who was on the board of the Export-Import Bank of the United States and who was friendly with C. Joseph Giroir, who had become the Riady's main business partner and lawyer in the United States.[95] His superiors at ITA reportedly deemed Huang unqualified for the work being done at ITA and, as a result, he was often kept out of the loop, aside from matters dealing with Taiwan, in which he was intimately involved. Notably, while at the ITA, Huang somehow had managed to enjoy "frequent access to classified information relating to China."

About a month after Huang joined the ITA, Commerce Secretary Ron Brown embarked on a trade mission to China, returning "with a $1 billion power-plant project to be financed by the Lippo Group and managed by Entergy Corp., a Louisiana-based concern with heavy interests in Arkansas." According to *TIME* magazine, Commerce officials claimed that Huang recused himself from any matters involving Indonesia due to his ties to the Lippo Group, but congressional investigators later found documents which revealed that Huang, while at ITA, had attended "meetings at which officials from several federal agencies discussed ways to strengthen trade relations with Indonesia."[96]

While at the Department of Commerce, Huang also kept in close contact with Riady associates like Giroir as well as Webster Hubbell, a Rose Law firm lawyer then serving as Associate Attorney General. Notably, when Hubbell was forced to resign his post at the DOJ under the cloud of scandal in 1994, he was offered a consulting job immediately after by the Riady family as well as by a company owned by another Clinton mega-donor, Ron Perelman.

During this same period, Huang continued to remain closely connected to the interests of Jackson Stephens as well, maintaining a "secret office across the street from Commerce" that was located in the Washington DC offices of Stephens Inc. Huang was reportedly using this "secret office" on behalf of the Lippo Group and a subsequent Congressional inquiry would note that "Huang's purpose in visiting Stephens DC so regularly remains a mystery."[97]

As previously mentioned, ITA worked closely with the Systematics-related company, Arkansas Systems, specifically on its sale of software to the People's Bank of China. Huang was quite possibly involved in this matter, given that Arkansas Systems was funded by ADFA and tied to Systematics – both of which were connected to Jackson Stephens of Stephens Inc. As was just noted, Huang mysteriously visited Stephens Inc's DC offices regularly while at ITA. In addition, Arkansas Systems largest market was in Indonesia, which hints at a possible connection to the Riadys. If Huang was involved with Arkansas Systems' sale of software to China's central bank, it would lend support to the theory that that software may have been part of an effort to spy on financial transactions that was similar to (or potentially related to) what Systematics had done for the NSA.

Aside from these "mysterious" dealings, Huang began soliciting "contributions to the DNC, thereby violating the Hatch Act" while still at the Commerce Department. At the time, the DNC attempted to obscure Huang's role in these contributions by fudging records so that Huang's wife was identified as the source of the funds. By 1995, Riady partner C. Joseph Giroir, who had been donating $200,000 to the Democrats annually since 1993, began lobbying then-national chairman of the DNC, Don Fowler, to hire Huang. Also lobbying on Huang's behalf was Mark Middleton, "special assistant to the President and Deputy to Counselor Mack McLarty."[98]

While Middleton worked at the White House, Huang and Riady met with him frequently. Between March 1993 and October 1996, James Riady went to the White House 20 times, while Huang – before, during, and after his role at Commerce – went a total of 95 times during this same period. As congressional investigators later noted, "some of these visits, for both Huang and Riady, included visits with the president. [...] On many occasions when James Riady visited the White House, John Huang accompanied him. Riady was granted private meetings with the president as well."[99] Many of these meetings also included Middleton.[100] Some of the meetings Riady had with the president involved the issue of China and granting China "most favored nation" (MFN) trading status. Even though Clinton campaigned against granting that status to China, he reversed his stance and approved MFN for China in May 1993. Then, in 1994, he delinked MFN status from China's human rights record.

Earlier that year, in February 1995, Mark Middleton, just weeks after he left his White House position, had accompanied James Riady to a meeting in the Oval Office with President Clinton. The next day, C. Joseph Giroir created a new corporation, the Arkansas International Development Corporation, as well as a Caymans-based counterpart called the Arkansas International Development Corporation II. According to a Congressional report, "Through Giroir and AIDC II, [the Riady-owned] Lippo [and closely tied to Huang] attempted to gain influence by hiring people with access to the Clinton administration." Middleton was then hired by AIDC II in July 1995, which paid him a salary of $12,500 per month.[101]

On the Riady payroll, Middleton was "supposed to seek out businesses looking for opportunities in the Asian market, particularly joint venture partners for Lippo entities." However, from July 1995 to April 1997, Middleton produced no joint venture portions for the Riadys, despite being paid at least $262,000 during that time period.[102] Middleton's other jobs for the Riadys included arranging meetings for James Riady and essentially acting as his exalted errand boy. While traveling to Asia at the Riady's behest, Middleton passed out his White House business cards, even though he was no longer working there. Middleton somehow was able to maintain a voicemail and phone line at the White House until October 1996, well over a year after he left, and he also frequented the White House while employed by the Riadys. He allegedly even gave some of his clients White House tours during this time.[103]

After a meeting in September 1995, attended by the President, Huang, the Riadys, Giroir, and White House attorney Bruce Lindsey, Lindsey contacted Huang and asked if he would like to move from Commerce to the DNC. This was reportedly in response to Huang having indicated that "he thought that he could raise money in the Asian-Pacific community" for Clinton. The next month, the DNC's Don Fowler subsequently made the decision to hire Huang, who then became the DNC's "Vice Finance Chairman, a title created for Huang that no other DNC employee held."

One of the reasons that Huang's role at ITA, and later the DNC, was so controversial was because his former employer, the Lippo Group, had become increasingly involved with the Chinese government beginning in 1991. The Lippo Group's first known business connection to the Chinese government was related to Lippo's efforts to rescue BCCI's Hong Kong branch. That effort, in which

Huang had been personally involved, saw Lippo court China Resources – the Chinese government's "agent for all of the PRC's foreign trade corporations" – with the intention that China Resources would acquire BCCI Hong Kong. However, China Resources ultimately backed out of that deal.[104]

Though this effort failed, China Resources purchased 15 percent of the Riady-controlled Hong Kong Chinese Bank in 1992 and increased their stake in the bank to 50 percent in mid-1993, "paying 50 percent over market price of this stock, more than a $125-million premium." Around that same time, China Resources "infused the flailing LippoLand with tens of millions of dollars, effectively bailing out the Riady family."[105] In the years that followed, the Lippo Group and China Resources grew even closer, partnering on "dozens of shared development projects throughout" mainland China.[106]

According to a Defense Intelligence Agency analyst named Nicholas Edtimiades and an investigator with the Senate Government Affairs Committee named Thomas Hampson, China Resources is "an agent of espionage, economic, military and political."[107] Thus, the fact that China Resources began forging close ties with the Riady's Lippo Group after Clinton's election and the fact that this paralleled Johnny Huang's own unusual rise through Commerce and into the DNC gives Huang's role here increased significance. Indeed, Huang played a direct role in efforts to connect China Resources to the Commerce Department as a letter written from Huang to Ron Brown urged Brown to meet with China Resources chairman Shen Jueren.[108] During Jueren's visit to the US, Huang and Riady also arranged a meeting between Jueren and then-vice president Al Gore.[109]

Several controversial and illegal fundraisers followed Huang joining the DNC. One of the most controversial was "an intimate gathering of four wealthy businessmen, their families, and President Clinton" hosted at the Jefferson Hotel in July 1996. One of those businessmen was James Riady. Three of the four businessmen, including Riady, were not American citizens and could not legally contribute to Clinton's election campaign. One of those non-citizens, James Lin, the chairman of a construction company in Taiwan and then a member of Taiwan's National Assembly, was also the co-founder of a California company that was fined $41,000 for "laundering campaign funds to Los Angeles City Council candidates."[110]

Other fundraisers that garnered controversy involved both Huang and a woman named Maria Hsia, who had co-founded the Pacific Leadership Council with Huang, the Riadys, and others in 1988. Hsia was also close to Al Gore and his political fundraising efforts. Another fundraiser directly involved James Riady – the 1996 fundraiser hosted at the Los Angeles homes of MCA mogul Lew Wasserman where Riady was listed on a DNC "commit list" even though he was ineligible to donate.[111] Another figure, Yah Lin "Charlie" Trie who had befriended Clinton in Arkansas, had served as a proxy to donate large sums of money from foreign nationals based in Taiwan and mainland China to the Clinton-Gore campaign.

THE TRIE TEAM

Yah Lin “Charlie” Trie was born in August 1949 and, later on in life, would claim four different birthdays, making it difficult to know exactly when or even where he was born. This is due to a “number of unexplained discrepancies” on his birth and immigration records. Though he was often reported to be Taiwanese, documents provided to the US Congress by the Taiwanese government list him as having been born in China before immigrating to Taiwan at age 16.[112] Trie immigrated to the US in 1976 and settled in Little Rock, Arkansas. Two years later, he co-owned a Chinese restaurant in Little Rock, called Fu-Lin, with his sister.

Trie began donating to the Clinton family in 1982, two years before he became a citizen. Trie’s contributions seem to have been a factor in then-Governor Bill Clinton becoming a “frequent guest of Trie’s restaurant.”[113] By 1988, the ties between Trie and Clinton seem to have deepened, with Trie referring to Clinton as “Lao Ke,” which roughly translates as “Big Boss.” Clinton, during his re-election campaign, would refer to Trie as his “close friend” of more than two decades.[114]

Not long after Trie began donating to Clinton’s gubernatorial campaigns in the 1980s, he became involved with the Riadys. Trie first waded into the Riady swamp in 1983, when he became friends with Antonio Pan, who was then working for United Pacific Trading Inc., a subsidiary of the Lippo Group. Pan later became executive vice president of Lippo’s Chinese subsidiary, the Tati Group.[115] Sometime between 1983 and 1985, Trie became acquainted with James Riady, who would later give Trie a $60,000 loan in 1985 so Trie could “expan[d] his restaurant operations.”[116]

In late 1991, Trie sold his restaurant and created an import-export business in the US called Daihatsu International Trading Corp and began making frequent trips to China. A Senate report found that Trie had consulted Clinton about his plans and Clinton then urged him to create such a company and later sent him a letter of congratulations after the company was founded.[117] During his trips to China, Trie would play up his connections to Bill Clinton and touted it, on several occasions, to prominent Arkansas businessmen as well as Arkansas state auditor Julia Hughes Jones. Jones would later, at Trie’s behest, arrange for meetings between then-president Clinton and high-ranking Chinese government officials.[118] During this period, Trie would bring eight delegations of prominent Chinese officials and businessmen to Arkansas and elsewhere in the United States. Despite his frequent and extremely costly trips and his Clinton ties, Daihatsu struggled to secure even a single successful business venture.

Trie's activities eventually caught the attention of a Macau real estate developer with ties to the Chinese government named Ng Lap Seng. Allegedly born into dire poverty but somehow also managing to bribe his way into the then-Portuguese enclave of Macau, Ng Lap Seng was a wealthy businessman by the time he forged a connection with Trie. Their first public interaction centered around what would ultimately be a failed joint venture to purchase and revamp the dilapidated Camelot Hotel in Little Rock. Assisting Trie and Seng in that failed venture was C. Joseph Giroir.[119]

Congressional and media reports alike have questioned how Ng's transformation from peasant to mogul was accomplished, as his "rag to riches" story is improbable without some sort of outside intervention. Per the "official" story, Ng somehow went from being little more than a beggar to a multi-millionaire solely by "selling bales of cheap cloth" to garment factories.[120] A former associate of Ng's interviewed in 1996 by congressional investigators claimed that Ng's transformation occurred because, for reasons unknown, he "had been selected to act as a front for municipal and provincial authorities in the People's Republic of China."[121] By the time he teamed up with Trie, Ng was also a part of the Chinese People's Political Consultative Conference, an advisory board that worked with the Communist Party of China.

By the early 1990s, Ng's holdings in Macau included the Fortuna Hotel, described as "where the Communist Party partied, a massage-table dance-karaoke spot for the Chinese military and supposedly Triad gangsters," specifically the Wo On Lok Triad.[122] Other allegations of Ng's "criminal ties in Asia" that were unrelated to Fortuna had also emerged during Ng's and Trie's failed effort to acquire the Camelot hotel.

One Fortuna advertisement from the period specifically highlighted the main "attraction" at Fortuna:

> Attractive and attentive hostesses from China, Korea, Singapore, Malaysia, Vietnam, Indonesia and Burma, together with erotic girls from Europe and Russia, certainly offer you an exciting and unforgettable evening with friends or business associates.[123]

Macau, during this period, was a hotspot for prostitution and sex trafficking and this official description of Fortuna, as well as its organized crime association, suggests that it was the site of such activities. This is also likely because of its description as being a "massage-table dance-karaoke spot," as – even today – sex work in Macau frequently occurs in massage parlors, where it is "de facto legal."[124]

A 2007 US State Department report noted the following in this regard:

> Macau is a transit and destination for trafficking of women for the purposes of commercial sexual exploitation […] Women are deceived or misinformed with promises of work in tourism or commerce, come to Macau and instead they see themselves in an organized net of saunas and massage parlors which are in fact brothels.[125]

After Ng and Trie failed to acquire Little Rock's Camelot hotel, Trie moved to Washington DC to open up a new branch of his export-import business Daihatsu. Trie's decision to do so is odd because his company, at the time, had still made essentially no money. This trend would continue well after he opened a DC branch for Daihatsu, with a Senate investigation finding that "Daihatsu made little or no money at any time." In addition, the report also noted that, at the time, "Trie and his wife had very little income from other sources."[126]

Trie chose a rather interesting location for Daihatsu's DC branch – an apartment in the Watergate complex. Trie allegedly chose the Watergate because he believed it would give him "a certain stature" in the DC area. However, for those in the know in DC, and as noted back in chapter 5, that same Watergate apartment complex, around two decades prior, had once hosted a call-girl ring. Daihatsu did hardly any legitimate business at the time, but its DC "office" at the Watergate was used, not just by Trie, but also by Ng Lap Seng as well as Ng's bookkeeper Keshi Zhan and former Lippo Group executive Antonio Pan, who was – by this time – sporting business cards listing him as "CEO" of Daihatsu.

The Watergate location was used mainly to host parties for Chinese delegations and Trie's local political contacts, including Mark Middleton and other prominent White House and DNC officials. In addition to Middleton, particularly close to Trie was Jude Kearny, Deputy Assistant Secretary of Commerce, who also attended these parties at Trie's Watergate apartment. Given the apparent links of Ng's Macau holdings to sex work, and potentially sex trafficking, one is left wondering if the Watergate apartments had again become the site of blackmail and influence operations.

Then, in October 1994, Trie incorporated a company in Arkansas on Ng's behalf, San Kin Yip International Trading Company. It was officially involved in the "export [of] chemicals, machinery and advanced technology" but subpoenaed bank records showed "neither earnings nor any genuine business activity." Notably, Ng's main Macau-based company at the time was named the San Kin Yip Group.

Shortly thereafter, Trie incorporated San Kin Yip (USA) Inc., which also "neither made money nor engaged in any actual business activity." Another company incorporated by Trie in 1996, American Asia Trade Center "also never made money" per Senate investigators. All of these apparent shell companies, however, would donate to the 1996 Clinton campaign.

Despite having no income and several shell companies to his name, Trie was somehow responsible for donating large sums to the DNC and 1996 Clinton campaign. Investigators determined that Ng Lap Seng must have "fun[ded] all of his [Trie's] DNC contributions."[127] Indeed, between 1994 and 1996, with negligible income from his company Daihatsu, Trie and his businesses received $1.5 million in foreign wire transfers, $1.1 million of which were directly from Ng Lap Seng. Upon receiving these large sums of money, Trie "shuffled" the money "among a total of six domestic [bank] accounts" in an effort to obscure its origins.[128] Of the other $400,000 in foreign wire transfers, a large sum came from a Hong Kong entity named Lucky Port Investments Limited. Antonio Pan was a director of Lucky Port at the time of the wire transfer and LippoBank Los Angeles had "served as an intermediary for the transaction."[129]

In addition to his donations to the Democrats, Trie was also involved in fundraising for the 1996 election on behalf of the DNC. By 1995, Trie became a member of the DNC's Finance Board of Directors, where he sat alongside Edgar Bronfman.[130] Several of these fundraisers courted Commerce Department personnel, specifically Ron Brown.

One such fundraiser took place in October 1995 at Hong Kong's Shangri-La hotel. There, Ng and Trie organized a dinner where Commerce Secretary Ron Brown was introduced to "a number of foreign business leaders." The dinner had been "consciously taken off" Brown's schedule during his Asia tour. During the event, Trie and Antonio Pan, who was also in attendance, then solicited donations for the DNC from the guests, none of whom were eligible to contribute. Many of the wealthy guests in attendance "attended [other] fundraising events with Trie just months after this event."[131] One of the attendees of this event, Wang Jun, described by the *Chicago Tribune* as "China's premier arms dealer," later attended a presidential coffee with Trie and was photographed with president Clinton. Jun's background and weapons company is discussed in-depth in the next chapter.

A few months later, Trie and a "boatload" of guests attended the DNC's "top-level African-American fundraiser" at the Car Barn in Washington, DC. Some of the guests had previously met with Ron Brown at the Shangri-La hotel. Video footage revealed that Ron Brown remarked to president Clinton, as Trie's group was breaking up, "this is part of the Trie team," to which the president responded "yes." Those remarks, later described as "cryptic" by investigators, suggest that Brown and Clinton were familiar with Trie and his associates and did not find it odd that so many foreign nationals were attending a fundraiser where they could not legally contribute funds.[132]

Aside from the events themselves, a significant amount of Trie's "fundraising" involved Trie soliciting donations to the DNC from third parties who were reimbursed with money from Ng Lap Seng shortly after their donation. Senate investigators described these third parties as "alternate conduits for the flow of Ng's foreign-source funds to the DNC."[133] Some of these donations were specifically solicited so that Ng could "pass the gate" and attend functions at the White House.

Both Ng and Trie "passed the gate" several times, making 10 and 22 visits to the White House between 1993 and 1996, respectively. Many of their White House visits, as had been the case with Johnny Huang, were with Mark Middleton. Ng may have been giving Middleton large amounts of cash during some of those meetings. As noted by the House investigation into Trie, Ng "imported large amounts of cash into the United States shortly before each of his meetings with Trie and Middleton" at the White House, with the amount of cash ranging from $12,000 to $200,000.[134] Given that Ng's stays in the US were short and were centered around visiting the White House, it seems likely that at least some of this cash ended up in Middleton's hands.

Middleton traveled with Trie extensively while on the Riady payroll. During one of these trips, Middleton allegedly sought a large (and illegal) donation from a top member of Taiwan's ruling KMT party.[135] On another trip, Middleton was seen "holding court" in a suite at Hong Kong Grand Hyatt hotel, where he "had 8 to 10 businessmen and government officials from mainland China in his suite, all of whom were waiting to meet Middleton. Middleton was holding private meetings in a bedroom adjoining the suite." Both Ng and Seng were present on this occasion.

In addition, Middleton also worked closely with Trie's planning of suspect fundraisers in relation to the 1996 election. Middleton, along with close Clinton friend and Lehman Brothers banker Ernie Green, "emerged as [one of] Trie's principal political and business confidants" while also "act[ing] as Trie's Washington liaison."[136] Green later went into business with Trie, allegedly in a venture based around "self-inflating novelty balloons."

Trie extensively promoted a real estate project in Macau to his White House contacts, specifically Green and Middleton, both of whom "expressed interest" in the project verbally as well as in writing. The project was called Nam Van Lakes, and the House investigation revealed that the project was co-owned by Ng Lap Seng and "Macau's Ho brothers." The most well-known of the Ho brothers, Stanley Ho, was mentioned in chapter 8 in connection with his business dealings with the Riady family as well as his ties to figures deeply involved in the illicit gold trade.

Ho, like Ng, was both closely connected to Chinese political power as well as Macau organized crimes, i.e. the triads. Ho served on China's Standing Committee of the Chinese People's Political Consultative Conference, the country's top advisory council.[137] Ng was also a member of the Chinese People's Political Consultative Conference. In addition, his family had a long history with Jardine Matheson & Co., the Anglo-Hong Kong trading house controlled by the British intelligence-linked Keswick family.[138] The Keswick's intermingling with the Hong Kong-based Sassoon family, who were connected to the illicit opium trade, was discussed in chapter 1.

Stanley Ho was also the top casino magnate in Macau, "the Las Vegas of Asia," until his *de facto* monopoly ended in 1999. His ties to organized crime have been noted in official reports in the US, Australia and elsewhere.[139] According to a report from the New Jersey Casino Control Commission, "numerous governmental and regulatory agencies have referenced Stanley Ho's associations with criminal enterprises, including permitting organized crime to operate and thrive within his casinos."[140]

The Nam Van Lakes project was deemed "one of the largest private investment projects to have been undertaken since July 1991," and was planned to be around

130 hectares in size.[141] It is unknown if there were other ulterior motives behind Trie's promotion of the project to the White House aside from efforts to secure financing.

The following year, in 1996, Trie was added to the Commission on United States Pacific Trade and Investment Policy. Objections to Trie's appointment were numerous and well-substantiated, as his English was poor, his businesses were unsuccessful, and he was generally unqualified to contribute to the commission's work. Despite this chorus of dissent, Trie was labeled a "must appointment" from "the highest levels of the White House."[142]

The other commissioners, in general, were "less than complimentary" about Trie's input as part of the commission. He eventually attempted to offer his own recommendations, which the rest of the commission saw as "superficial, grammatically deficient, and generally unhelpful."[143] Trie was a part of commission when his role in illegal campaign financing surfaced, which saw him flee to China. Despite the controversy then surrounding Trie, the Clinton administration never formally revoked Trie's appointment and he remained a member until the commission concluded its work in April 1997.[144] Congressional investigations into Trie determined that he, as well as another associate Maria Hsia – the aforementioned close friend of and fundraiser for Vice president Al Gore, had "close relationships with the Chinese government and/or intelligence agencies."[145]

Years later, in 2018, Ng Lap Seng, Trie's accomplice, was sentenced to 48 months in a US prison for attempting "to bribe United Nations ambassadors to obtain support to build a conference center in Macau that would host, among other events, the annual United Nations Global South-South Development Expo."[146]

JOHNNY CHUNG

Along with John Huang and Charlie Trie, another major player in the scandal around 1996 campaign financing was Johnny Chien Chuen Chung. Like Huang and Trie, Chung was granted numerous White House visits, many of which directly involved Mark Middleton, in exchange for his sizable donations to the Democratic party, the Clinton/Gore re-election campaign, and John Kerry's campaign for Senate during that same election season. Also like Huang and Trie, the vast majority of Chung's donations were illegal as they were of foreign origin.

Born in Taiwan in 1954, Chung immigrated to the US in 1988. In 1992, he founded a company called Telform Inc. that later developed into Automated Intelligence Systems Inc. (AISI). The company marketed a "fax broadcast system" and soon had branch offices in Hong Kong, Washington DC, and China. Soon after founding Telform/AISI, Chung came into contact with the Clintons.

His claims about their initial meeting is bizarre – per Chung, he flew to Little Rock from Los Angeles after watching Clinton and Bush debate and having an epiphany – that "political candidates and governments send out more faxes than private companies." After landing in Little Rock, he was – in late 1992 – able to approach the governor's mansion unimpeded. There, he "banged on the door" and "was fortunate enough to meet Hillary Rodham Clinton and pass her some information."[147]

A few months later, in April 1993, Chung – at this point just a random businessman who had knocked on her door – received a letter from Hillary Clinton, which stated that he was "already on the right track" and wished him luck with his "innovative system." Chung used his letter from the First Lady to convince California Governor Pete Wilson to adopt his company's "fax broadcast system," and Wilson became his first client.[148] By the spring of 1995, Chung's company served 48 state government offices as well as federal agencies.

Chung began visiting the White House in February 1994, and quickly gained access to "the highest levels" of White House staff, ostensibly to sell his fax broadcast services. Among the White House documents handed over to congressional investigators was a page of handwritten notes about AISI with a notation stating "First Lady – if we don't use Johnny Chung we're in trouble."[149] Though the White House did not ultimately use Chung's service, Chung did take many photographs of himself with the Clintons, vice president Gore, and others – and used them in a promotional brochure to market his company's services throughout the public and private sectors.

Chung's contributions, on a few occasions, intersected directly with events hosted or planned by Ernie Green, Charlie Trie, and others mentioned in the previous section(s).[150] On at least one occasion, he met with the same person at the White House at the same day and time that Johnny Huang was also meeting that same individual (who is referred to as "Lewis" in White House visitor logs).[151] Like Charlie Trie, Chung received millions ($2.4 million to be exact) in foreign wire transfers during the period he made his controversial campaign donations. During this same period, he co-founded eight corporations where "no business was conducted" with six prominent and very wealthy Chinese businessmen. The alleged purpose of these companies was to provide those prominent foreigners with easy access to a US visa and/or permanent residency.

In February 1995, Chung began planning the trip of a delegation of "very important and powerful business leaders from China" to the White House. Chung sought the aid of Mark Middleton to arrange the delegation's meeting with the president and also sought to have the delegation meet with Vice President Al Gore and Commerce Secretary Ron Brown. A month later, Chung donated $50,000 and was awarded a meeting with Hillary Clinton, who had apparently jumpstarted Chung's career in the first place. Chung reportedly said, in response to this episode: "I see the White House is like a subway. You have to put in coins to open the gates."[152]

He had apparently made the donation at the behest of Hillary Clinton's top aides. After he sought "VIP treatment" for the delegation at the White House, "he was asked to help the First Lady defray the cost of White House Christmas receptions."[153] A staff assistant of Clinton's at the time, Evan Ryan, claimed that she "had some debts with the DNC" and solicited the money from Chung, allegedly on behalf of Maggie Williams, then Hillary Clinton's chief of staff.[154] This explanation deserves as least some scrutiny because, as noted previously, Hillary Clinton's "defraying" of the cost of White House redecorating had resulted in a controversial fundraiser involving Jeffrey Epstein, Clark Clifford and others, and had also been mentioned in Vince Foster's "suicide note." Thus, it appears that Hillary Clinton's "fundraising" efforts for seemingly innocuous First Lady-related activities seemed to have been linked, on more than one occasion, to suspect individuals, including foreign intelligence assets.

Hillary Clinton's office subsequently assisted Chung in taking his Chinese delegation to president Clinton's radio address, where several pictures were taken of the delegation with the president. Some White House staff raised concerns about these pictures, worrying that their release could "embarrass the president."[155] Chung used his influence with the DNC to "vigorously pursue" the release of the pictures. He secured their release only after he paid $125,000 to attend a fundraiser at the home of the Mega Group's Steven Spielberg.

These pictures were apparently picked up at the White House by Gina Ratcliffe, an intern in Hillary Clinton's office who had been offered a "dream job" by Chung and who accompanied him to China a few days later. Chung had also attended the fundraiser of Spielberg's mentor, Lew Wasserman, which James Riady also attended. After the event, a DNC director wrote him, stating "Thank you for your help in making the event at Edie and Lew Wasserman's home such a success."[156] That same DNC director, Kimberly Ray, also wrote identical letters to two Chinese businessman who had attended despite being unable to legally contribute and had wired large sums of money to Chung's company a week before the fundraiser.

Like Charlie Trie, Chung also solicited numerous "straw donors" who were reimbursed by Chung or his foreign national associates after donating. It is worth mentioning that Trie also nearly became a business partner of Chung's. According to the *Washington Post*: "Trie and his Macao-based financier Ng Lap Seng tried to broker a deal with Chung in which they would buy the rights to market his fax business in China," but Chung ultimately declined the offer.[157]

Chung's access to the highest levels of government did not stop at the First Lady's office. Acting on behalf of major Chinese corporations, such as state-owned oil company Sinopec, Chung secured meetings with the Secretary of Energy Hazel O'Leary and Deputy Treasury Secretary Larry Summers. The most controversial Chinese businessman that Chung assisted in his influence efforts was a woman named Liu Chao-Ying, the vice president of China Aerospace International Holdings, a Hong Kong subsidiary of the state-owned China Aerospace corporation. During investigations, it emerged that Liu Chao-Ying's father was, at the time, "the most senior general" of China's military and "one of seven members of China's all-powerful ruling party standing committee."[158] He is also the man credited with overseeing the modernization program of China's armed forces.[159]

Chung officially assisted Liu with her efforts to purchase aircraft parts from US suppliers and to raise capital from US financiers. He also incorporated a division of her company, Marswell Investments, in California and the two explored using it in "phone parts and telecommunications ventures," though it appears the company never did any business.[160]

Chung later admitted that the funds he had received from Liu Chao-Ying, who "held the military rank of lieutenant colonel in the Chinese military," had originated from Chinese military intelligence and were funds explicitly intended to influence US elections.[161] Chung specifically stated that, in his presence, Gen. Ji Shengde, the head of China's military intelligence, "informed Liu that he would wire $300,000 to her and she was to transfer it to Chung. Chung said that Ji also told Liu that he required a receipt 'in order for me to report [the expenditure] to the [intelligence] agency.'"[162]

Chung's testimony also implicated Mark Middleton, the Clinton aide who had assisted Huang, Riady, Trie, and Ng as well as Chung. Chung stated that Liu Chao-Ying told him that Middleton had also been given funds from Chinese military intelligence, over half a million dollars, "to do good things for China."[163] The payment to Middleton, per Chung, had been made through an unknown group in Singapore.

Around the same time the illegal campaign finance scandal (i.e. Chinagate) emerged, an American business partner of another China Aerospace subsidiary, Great Wall Industries, came under investigation for illegally transferring advanced technology to China. That company, Loral Space Systems, is notable as, during this very election cycle, the largest (legal) donor to the Clinton re-election campaign was Loral's CEO – Bernard Schwartz.

Schwartz's activities will be revisited in the next chapter alongside Wang Jun – the arms dealer aided by Charlie Trie – as both were involved in technology transfers of dubious legality to China during this period. For now, it is important to note that Schwartz paid $100,000 to the DNC in 1994 and subsequently appeared to be rewarded with a spot on Commerce Secretary Ron Brown's plane to China. The *New York Times* reported that "On the plane, Schwartz said he asked Brown if he could arrange a private meeting with Zhu Gao Feng, the vice minister of China's Ministry of Post and Telecommunications" and another prominent telecommunications official. As a result of that meeting, Loral won "a deal to provide cellular telephone service to China."[164]

In February 1996, a failed rocket launch revealed that Great Wall Industries, the China Aerospace subsidiary, had obtained a commercial satellite from Loral that "led to accusations of an unauthorized transfer of missile technology to China".[165] After donating heavily to the DNC in 1996, Schwartz subsequently pushed for "the transfer of satellite export approval from the State Department to the Commerce Department," which Clinton granted.[166] As Schwartz's donations kept flowing, president Clinton continued to sign off on Loral's exports of satellites containing sensitive technology to China. It was later revealed that "the president was warned that approving the launching could be seen as letting Loral 'off the hook on criminal charges for its unauthorized assistance to China's ballistic missile program,'" yet he continued to sign waivers for Loral.[167]

Schwartz, like those in the illegal campaign finance scandal (i.e. Chinagate), had mainly used his wealth and campaign donations to secure favors; favors which enabled his company to transfer sensitive technology to China. In doing so he – like Huang, Riady, Trie, and others – focused specifically on the Commerce Department, especially the then Commerce Secretary Ron Brown. Given what has already been detailed in this chapter, it appears that the main thrust of "Chinagate" and suspect donations made during this campaign cycle were focused on changing US trade policy so as to enable the increased export of sensitive technology to China. This helps explain why Ron Brown and the Commerce Department were the prime targets of this extensive influence operation.

CRASH IN CROATIA

On April 3rd, 1996, just as "Chinagate" and its effort to specifically influence the Commerce Department were beginning to come to light, tragedy struck. USAF CT-43, a US military plane operated by the 76th Airlift Squadron of the 86th Airlift Wing from the Ramstein airbase in Germany, crashed while en route to Dubrovnik, Croatia.

Officially, the cause of the crash was attributed by investigators to "failure of command, aircrew error, and an improperly designed instrument approach procedure" – in part because of an unfamiliar "1930s-era navigational system" maintained by the airport and a lack of "proper training" of the pilots.[168] In his speech following the crash, President Clinton stated that it had been a "peculiar mix of circumstances," before adding that "if only one or two little things had happened, the crash might not have happened."[169] Three days after the crash, the head of navigation at the Čilipi Airport, Niko Jerkuić, was found dead, shot in the chest. His death was ruled a suicide.[170]

The list of those killed in the USAF CT-43 crash was significant. Onboard was Commerce Secretary Ron Brown himself as well as Kathyrn Hoffman, his special assistant. There was also Charles Meissner of the Commerce Department's ITA, who had been Johnny Huang's superior at Commerce. Meissner wasn't the only one from ITA to have died in the crash. A number of other ITA personnel – Stephen Kaminsky, Bill Morton, Lawrence Payne, and Naomi Warbasse – were killed, as was an "economic reconstruction expert" from the CIA's Balkan Task Force, James Lewek. All these individuals were in Croatia for a trade mission that was set up "not only support U.S. business interests, but to assist and enable the development of a newly independent Croatia."[171]

Almost immediately following the crash, anomalies were found by US military investigators who had arrived quickly on the scene. Most of these focused on Brown himself: he bore, for example, a perfectly "circular hole" in his skull.[172] Steve Cogswell, the deputy medical examiner for the Armed Forces Institute of Pathology (AFIP), would later repeatedly refer to this hole as an "apparent gunshot wound."[173] Cogswell further noted that "Brown had a .45 inwardly beveling circular hole in the top of his head, which is essentially the description of a .45 caliber gunshot wound" ("inwardly beveling" means that the interior of the wound is larger than the surface of the wound, which is consistent with gunshot wounds).[174] Others, including AFIP forensic photographer Kathleen Janoski, agreed that by all appearances the hole was caused by a bullet.[175]

Air Force Col. William Gormley, who carried out the first examination of Brown's body, disagreed with Cogswell's insistence on the hole's gunshot wound characteristics – citing most specifically the lack of any exit wound elsewhere in Brown's head. Gormley, however, was not authorized to carry out an autopsy on Brown's body. No subsequent autopsy was ever performed.

There was also the question of strange elements that were found in X-rays taken of Brown's head. Around the wound were what appears to have been metal fragments, which itself is consistent with instances where bullets begin to break apart and shed metal upon impact. Kathleen Janoksi would later tell journalist Wesley Phelan that, according to Jean Marie Sentell, a criminal investigator for the Navy, the original X-rays of Brown's head were "deliberately destroyed because they showed a lead snowstorm" – the technical term for the fragmenting of a bullet inside a body.[176]

The deaths of Brown and his colleagues in April 1996, weren't the only strange deaths to befall the Commerce Department that year. Months later, on November 30th, the body of Barbara Alice Wise was found in her office.[177] Wise had worked for over a decade as an "industry analyst in … the office of materials, machinery, and chemicals" within the ITA, which "provided analysis of industries designed to boost export sales."[178] Though bruises were found on her body and "no outward sign of any cause of death" was noted by investigators, Wise's death was quickly determined to be a result of natural causes.[179]

As for Brown, at the time of the plane crash, he was involved in not one but two legal affairs related to the Commerce Department. The first was the Judicial Watch suit against the Commerce Department in connection with John Huang, in which Brown "was a material witness … noticed to testify."[180] The second was an independent counsel probe. Nolanda Hill, a close associate of Brown, reported that Brown had told her he was going to negotiate a "plea agreement" with the independent counsel and, shortly thereafter, was "asked unexpectedly to travel to Croatia."[181]

The independent counsel probe involved a small Hohokam energy company called Dynamic Energy Resources. Yet, it appears that the inquiry was on track to link that company's affairs – and its connection to Brown – to the wider networks involving the activities of Huang, the Riadys, and Jackson Stephens within the Clinton administration.

Dynamic Energy was closely tied to the Brown's Commerce Department. For example, Brown's son Michael had been placed on Dynamic Energy's board and had received a number of rewards – including "a five percent stake" in the company and a "$60,000 golf club membership."[182] Meanwhile, Helen Yee, mother of Commerce Department insider – and close Huang associate – Melinda Yee, was also placed on the board of Dynamic Energy and received company stock.[183] Melinda Yee herself accepted "at least two trips" from Dynamic Energy between 1994 and 1996, neither of which were reported on her government financial disclosure statements as required by law.[184] Then, there was Trisha Lum. The daughter of Dynamic Energy's owners, Nora and Eugene Lum, Trisha was given a job at Brown's Commerce Department.[185]

Brown himself had close ties to the Lum family. According to the *Washington Post,* Nora Lum and Brown had become acquainted during his tenure as DNC chairman (around 1989 or so), and the Lums had become major Democratic Party fundraisers during the 1992 election cycle.[186] Following meetings with Brown that year, the couple had organized the DNC's Asian Pacific Advisory Council (APAC) – a fundraising and outreach body whose events had been attended by Huang.[187] There are allegations that APAC was used by the Lums to move illegal donations into the Clinton campaign. According to APAC fundraiser Charles Chidiac, Nora showed him a "grocery bag containing cash at APAC's offices one day in October 1992. The money was in stacks of $100 bills" and allegedly amounted to $50,000.[188]

Intriguingly, Chidiac had earlier been named an un-indicted co-conspirator in the Banca Nazionale del Lavoro "arms for Iraq" affair (discussed in chapter 7).[189] Chidiac, described in testimony as someone who presented himself as being "connected with US intelligence services," had engaged in fraudulent financial transactions with BNL's troubled Atlanta branch via his company, Selco East Consultants.[190] Selco East was also the subject of considerable controversy in the UK, when it was discovered in the late 1980s that Chidiac had used the company to court Conservative MP John Browne, a close advisor to Thatcher on Soviet issues. Together, Chidiac and Browne lobbied for companies looking to do business in the Middle East.[191] Subsequently, Chidiac turned his attention towards Hawaiian real estate, and it was there that he encountered the Lums.

It was immediately following the APAC fundraising and the subsequent election of Clinton that the Lums set up Dynamic Energy. It was a shady deal from the beginning: The Lums "had no experience in the oil and gas business" and it "was not clear where [they] got the money" for their new enterprise.[192] One of their partners was Stuart Price, a Clinton campaign official who later testified that "he was invited into [Dynamic Energy] by a friend at the Democratic National Committee."[193] Price was the son-in-law of George Mitchell, then serving as Senate Majority Leader. Later, Mitchell would be identified by Virginia Giuffre as one of the men that Jeffrey Epstein forced her to have sex with.

Accusations soon arose that the Lums were using Dynamic Energy as little more than a glorified apparatus for funneling money to politicians, as well as themselves. The company's coffers were used by Nora to "pay more than $3 million for dividends, unearned consulting fees, and outside investments, including a Honolulu condominium unit and a California stereo manufacturer."[194] According to the FBI, the Lums were "alleged to be facilitators and conduits for payments from private individuals involved in real estate developing to public officials."[195] Unsurprisingly, the Justice Department, when Webster Hubbell was still Associate Attorney General, turned a blind eye toward the Lums. When Hubbell was asked about the family during the course of the 1996 inquiry, he and his lawyers declined to comment.

The capstone of Dynamic Energy's activities involved a contract with Oklahoma Natural Gas (ONG), a major supplier of natural gas to Oklahoma and surrounding states. Despite having no oil and gas holdings at the time, Dynamic Energy and ONG entered into negotiations over an arrangement where Dynamic Energy would supply ONG with gas at a rate that exceeded the market price. This deal, according to a subsequent lawsuit, would lead to $65 million in overcharges to be paid by ONG customers.[196] In other words, the wealth that was being accrued by the Lums and their cohorts was being milked from the American public.

ONG had ties to another energy company operating in the Midwest, Arkla Inc. While they had turbulent relations during the 1970s, by the late 1980s and 1990s, the two companies had developed a collaborative relationship. For example, the pair were building Oklahoma's largest natural gas pipeline, which would help provide ONG gas to Arkla and its customer base.[197] Arkla itself had been previously tied to the fortunes of the Stephens family. In 1956, it had been acquired by Jackson Stephens' brother, Witt Stephens, who at the time was the controlling figure in Stephens Inc. After taking over Arkla, Witt left Stephens Inc. in Jackson's hands.[198] The family held control of Arkla until sometime in the 1980s.

Arkla also had ties, beyond the Stephens connection, to the circles around Clinton. During the course of the Clinton administration confirmation hearings, it was revealed that Webster Hubbell held Arkla stock and was personally familiar with the company's president.[199] Even more important, however, was the role played at the company by Mark Middleton's boss, Clinton chief of staff Thomas "Mack" McLarty. From 1983 through 1992, he had served as Arkla's chairman and CEO.

During the height of its negotiations with ONG – which surely would have had ramifications for Arkla – Dynamic Energy went about acquiring another oil company called the GAGE Corporation. This was presumably done to obtain the gas reserves needed for the ONG deal, and there is evidence to suggest that the Clinton administration personally intervened to ensure that the acquisition took place. Nolanda Hill later stated that she was present when Ron Brown made a call to McLarty where they discussed "a glitch in the timing of the GAGE deal and the need for bridge financing to keep the deal from falling apart."[200] Around the same time, Hill said, Brown had a meeting with Hillary Clinton where the GAGE deal and McLarty's role in it was discussed.

The Lums did end up obtaining the financing it needed, which allegedly came from the Llama Company.[201] Llama was an Arkansas investment bank set up by Alice Walton, the heir to the Walton fortunes behind Walmart. As discussed in chapter 8, Walmart was part of the corporate network tied into the circles around Hillary Clinton. It was a Rose Law client, and Hillary Clinton herself had sat on the board of directors of the company for six years.[202] In documents made public during the Whitewater hearings, Llama was shown to have been one of the firms tapped by the ADFA to underwrite the bonds it issued.[203]

In addition, Dynamic Energy's offices were located in the State Bank of Tulsa building. The State Bank of Tulsa had been owned, since 1991, by Arvest, another Walton company and where Alice Walton had run the investments division prior to forming Llama.[204] Dynamic Energy's move into this building had been arranged by George Mitchell's son-in-law, Stuart Price.[205]

It's fairly apparent what was taking place here: Dynamic Energy Resources seems to have been an attempt to provide rewards, monetary and otherwise, to individuals linked to the early 1990s "Chinagate" fundraising efforts and the subsequent activities that were taking place at the Commerce Department under Ron Brown, and in the ITA in particular. It also appears that when the deal was in jeopardy due to financing issues related to the GAGE acquisition, the Clinton administration intervened and used the tools at their disposal, tools they had been built up through their long history of political nepotism. The simultaneous probes into shady fundraising and into the relationship between Brown and the Lums likely would have revealed the full extent of this corruption, and could have unraveled much more. In light of this, the deaths of Brown and a number of high-ranking ITA employees in the crash USAF CT-43 – as well as the anomalous wound on Brown's head – raise troubling questions.

Remarkably, this isn't the only death that appears in close proximity to the Lums and Dynamic Energy. There was also the case of Ron Miller, the former owner of GAGE until the company was sold to the Lums. Shortly thereafter, Miller began to cooperate with authorities, supplying information to the FBI and Congressional investigators concerning the Lums family and their activities. This included 165 tape recordings he had made with the Lums and other Dynamic Energy principals.[206] In late 1997, Miller died following a short illness that was described by the Oklahoma state medical examiner's office as "respiratory distress syndrome due to undetermined etiology," although it was ultimately written off as a death from natural causes.[207] Yet, prior to his demise, Miller and those close to him had reported that he was being followed and had received death threats.[208]

EPSTEIN AND MIDDLETON

Aside from the sudden death of Ron Brown and other Commerce officials, Mark Middleton – a central figure in the campaign finance scandals of the mid-1990s – would also, years later, suffer a grisly fate. He died on May 7, 2022 at a ranch in Arkansas owned by Heifer International, a non-profit whose funders include Walmart, Blackrock and the Bill & Melinda Gates Foundation.[209] Heifer International is partnered with the Heifer Foundation, and the foundation's board of trustees is chaired by Martha Brantley, the former Director of Strategy and Business Development for the Clinton Development Initiative, which is part of the Clinton Foundation.[210]

The local sheriff told media that, at the ranch, Middleton was found hanging from a tree branch by the neck with a shotgun blast to the chest.[211] It was subsequently claimed by authorities that he had hung an extension cord around his neck before shooting himself in the chest with a shotgun. Despite the shotgun blast to his chest, police claimed there "was not a lot of blood or anything" at the scene.[212] Speculation about Middleton's death grew after an Arkansas judge sealed all photos, videos, and visual content related to Middleton's alleged suicide.[213]

Shortly after Middleton's death was reported, it was widely noted that he had been the official at the Clinton White House to sign off on many of Jeffrey Epstein's visits. The full extent of Middleton's role in facilitating these visits had been made public only a few months before Middleton's death, in December 2021.

Thus, not only was Middleton the point man for questionable individuals with links to Chinese military intelligence seeking to gain access to the White House compound, he was also the point man for the intelligence-linked Epstein to do the same. This should be a clear indication that the real "Chinagate" scandal was much larger in scope than just China and the same can also be said of Mark Middleton's activities at the time.

While foreign intelligence-linked individuals were gaining unparalleled access to the Clinton White House through fundraisers, so was another intelligence-linked individual, Jeffrey Epstein. As previously mentioned, Epstein's first visit on – February 25, 1993 – was signed off on by Robert Rubin, who would go on to serve as Treasury Secretary. Other visits in 1993 included the donor reception detailed earlier in this chapter as well as other visits signed off by Ann Stock, then-White House social secretary who also appears in Epstein's book of contacts, and Lisa Mortman, then-staff assistant to the director of media affairs.

Epstein began meeting with Mark Middleton in 1994 and it was this year that the bulk of Epstein's visits to the White House were made. Several of the visits during 1994 either list Middleton or Karen Ewing as signing Epstein into the White House. According to sources cited by the *Daily Mail*, Ewing "was involved in sending names of visitors to be cleared by the Secret Service and that Epstein was there to see Middleton, not her."[214]

In addition, the three days in 1994 where Epstein made multiple White House visits in a single day were all tied to Middleton. Middleton, from early 1994 on, seems to have been the main facilitator of Epstein's White House visits as Epstein's final visit, in January 1995, took place just weeks before Middleton resigned. It was during these visits that Epstein allegedly met then-Senate majority leader George Mitchell. As previously mentioned, Mitchell was named by Virginia Giuffre in a deposition as one of the men Epstein forced her to have sex with.

Epstein was notably accompanied by young women, as well as Ghislaine Maxwell, during several of his White House visits. The first of the women to accompany him appears to have been a woman named Shelley Gafni, of which little is known. It was suspected that an Israeli model of the same name had been the one to accompany Epstein, but she denied this was the case when confronted by a journalist in early 2022.[215]

Other women included Celina Midelfart, a Norwegian heiress who was 21 at the time and had also dated Donald Trump; Eva Andersson-Dubin, a former girlfriend of Epstein's who was then 33 and married Glen Dubin shortly before her White House visit with Epstein; and Francis Jardine, a South African former model who was believed to be in her 20s; and his one-time girlfriend turned madam, Ghislaine Maxwell, who was 32 at the time.[216] Midelfart, Jardine, and Maxwell were all reported to be Epstein's "girlfriends" during the 1990s and it seems their intimate relationships with Epstein may have overlapped. Their relationships with Epstein are revisited in chapter 18.

Francis Jardine was alleged to have been in a relationship with Epstein in the 1990s, as revealed during the trial of Ghislaine Maxwell. Jardine flew on Epstein's plane 12 times and appears in his contact book. Sometime in the 1990s, Jardine married John Deuss, the oil trader with deep ties to Marc Rich and Ted Shackley.

Deuss, like Epstein, Khashoggi, and others in this network, had a reputation for using beautiful young women, usually models, to secure favors and loyalty (as well as potential blackmail) from business associates.[217] Notably, Jardine's address during this time is listed as being the Ossa Properties-owned apartments at 301 66th Street discussed in chapter 12.

Other women who also appear in the White House visitor logs alongside Epstein are Jennifer Garrison, Jennifer Driver, and Lyoubov Orlova. Flight logs from Epstein's plane confirm that these women were traveling with him at the time of those visits.[218] However, little about them is known. Some of them may be the mysterious women who are in photographs with Epstein that were taken at the White House. During the Ghislaine Maxwell trial, two framed pictures hanging on the wall of Epstein's mansion showed Epstein standing at the podium of the White House briefing room on two occasions. In one, he is with an unidentified brunette, and in another with an unidentified blonde.[219]

Jennifer Driver's visit to the White House with Epstein, which took place on May 13, 1994 is particularly interesting. Flight logs for that day show Epstein flying from Teterboro to Reagan National Airport with Jennifer Driver. After their visit to the White House, the two flew from Washington to Palm Beach, this time – per flights logs – accompanied by "Mark."[220]

This Mark was Mark Middleton, as the following day, Mark Middleton appeared on the flight logs, showing that he accompanied Epstein on his plane from Palm Beach to Grand Bahama International Airport.[221]

With both Middleton and Epstein dead, it is exceedingly difficult to determine the exact nature and extent of their relationship as well as the subject of their White House meetings. Yet, Middleton's major role in the campaign finance scandal, as described above, is a critical clue. As it turns out, Epstein and other unsavory figures tied to Robert Maxwell were also involved in suspect fundraising and influence efforts during the 1996 campaign season in what is perhaps the other, less explored side of the so-called Chinagate scandal.

THE DNC AND THE MAXWELL MAFIA

Whatever Middleton and Epstein had discussed at the White House, Epstein's involvement with the Clintons had grown considerably by the time Middleton departed the Clinton administration. Roughly a month after Middleton's resignation, Epstein was among a "very select group of people," fourteen in total, who joined President Clinton for a three-hour dinner at the home of billionaire Ron Perelman in Palm Beach, FL, in March 1995.

Ron Perelman, like another close Epstein associate Leon Black, is a veteran of the infamous corporate raiders of Drexel Burnham Lambert during the 1980s and prior to its collapse in 1990. Perelman's business tactics were known to be informed by his volcanic temper and his ruthlessness, with former Salomon Brothers CEO John Gutfruend once having remarked that "believing Mr. Perelman has no hostile intentions is like believing the tooth fairy exists."[222]

Perelman apparently first became interested in courting influence with the Clintons after marrying Patricia Duff in 1994. Duff was deeply connected to the Democratic Party, having worked for Democratic pollster Pat Cadell. Prior to marrying Perelman, she had been married to movie mogul Michael Medavoy and had "introduced Clinton to the Hollywood establishment," according to the *Washington Post*.

As Perelman's wife, Duff styled herself a leading Democratic fundraiser, with the 1995 fund-raising dinner being emblematic of that. Also, in 1995, Perelman attended a $1,000-a-plate dinner in New York for the Clintons, where Perelman sat across from the President, as well as a state dinner for Brazil's president at the White House.[223]

For Perelman, his generosity to the Clinton political machine resulted in an appointment by Clinton to the board of trustees of the Kennedy Center in 1995. Other, less public gestures from the Clintons were likely, as Perelman offered much more to the First Family than he appears to have received in return. Perhaps most notable of Perelman's favors for the Clintons was his offering of jobs to scandal-ridden members of their administration, Webster Hubbell and Monica Lewinsky, in the wake of their respective controversies.[224]

However, after the job offers were publicly reported, both Hubbell and Lewinsky were let go, though the offers later caught the attention of independent counsel Ken Starr. Starr never subpoenaed or investigated Perelman or the offers he had made to Hubbell or Lewinsky and, years later, would be one of Epstein's defense lawyers.[225] Perelman would later be listed as a frequent dinner guest of Epstein's in the 2003 *Vanity Fair* profile penned by Vicky Ward and is listed in Epstein's black book of contacts.[226]

Perelman's controversial hiring of Hubbell and Lewinsky had been arranged by Clinton advisor Vernon Jordan, who sat on the board of Revlon, a Perelman-owned company, while his wife was on the board of another Perelman-owned firm. Jordan was known as Clinton's "conduit to the high and mighty" and had taken Clinton to the 1991 Bilderberg conference.[227] On the decision to hire Lewinsky following the scandal, a former business associate of Perelman's told the *Washington Post* that "It's like the Mafia, it's all done in code," adding that "I can assure you that Ronald made the decision to give Lewinsky the job. And I can assure you he wouldn't want to know why Jordan was asking."

At the 1995 fundraiser in Perelman's mansion, other guests besides Epstein included: Clinton friend and "bundler" A. Paul Prosperi, singer Jimmy Buffett, Miami Vice actor Don Johnson, actor Michael Douglas' then-wife Deandra, and DNC co-chair Don Fowler. According to the *Palm Beach Post*, guests had donated at least $100,000 to the DNC to attend the dinner with the President, including Epstein.[228] This was, of course, part of the fundraising season for the 1996 Clinton-Gore re-election campaign, where the DNC was later under heavy scrutiny due to illegal fundraising, much of which appears to have been linked to foreign intelligence operations.

Other notable guests at the fundraiser included Bob Kanuth, an investment banker who previously served in both the US military and the CIA, and Sylvia Hassenfeld of the Hasbro family.[229] Aside from being extremely wealthy due to her family connections, Hassenfeld was intimately involved in Zionist philanthropic organizations, serving as the national chairwoman of the United Jewish Appeal's women division and holding top leadership posts at related organizations like United Israel Appeal and the Jewish Agency for Israel.[230] This is significant as Leslie Wexner was, as previously mentioned in chapters 13 and 14, one of the largest donors to the United Jewish Appeal and served as its national vice chairman while also attending closed door meetings with Israel's top leadership during this period.[231]

In addition, all three of these organizations to which Hassenfeld belonged also had considerable ties to the Bronfman family, particularly Charles Bronfman, who co-founded the Mega Group with Leslie Wexner in the early 1990s. In the 1980s, Charles Bronfman served on the Board of Governors of the Jewish Agency for Israel; served as honorary President of United Israel Appeal's Canada branch and built a coalition with the United Jewish Appeal via the Charles and Andrea Bronfman Foundation to create Israel Experience Inc., an initiative to send Jewish teens to Israel founded in 1993.[232]

In addition, Bronfman's foundation has donated millions to the Jerusalem Foundation, where Hassenfeld served as vice chairwoman.[233] The foundation had been founded in the late 1960s by Teddy Kollek, the former mayor of Jerusalem whose ties to the organized crime and intelligence-linked Bruce Rappaport were detailed in chapter 3. Bronfman would lead both the United Jewish Appeal and United Israel Appeal after those organizations merged in 1999 with the Council of Jewish Federations to form what is now called the Jewish Federations of North America. Soon after the merger, Bronfman became its first chairman of the board and served in that capacity until 2001.

As mentioned earlier in this chapter, Edgar Bronfman, Charles's brother, was on the DNC's Finance Board of Directors during this campaign season. In addition, other members of the Mega Group were involved with major fundraising events during this controversial election cycle, namely Steven Spielberg. Spielberg, as well as his organized crime-linked mentor Lew Wasserman, hosted fundraisers that played a role in the activities of Johnny Chung and Johnny Huang, respectively. Also discussed earlier in this chapter was the fact that the Mega Group's other co-founder, Leslie Wexner, has been alleged to have been courting influence at the White House at the time via his "protégé" and money manager, Jeffrey Epstein.

It is certainly telling that all of Epstein's earliest documented interactions with the Clinton White House revolved around controversial fundraising, including illegal fundraising tied to foreign influence campaigns. This is especially true given that Mark Middleton was Epstein's main White House contact, as Middleton was one of the key players in the Chinagate affair that also involved controversial fundraising tied to foreign intelligence. It is also important to keep in mind that, by this point, Epstein had been involved in criminal financial activity with Towers

Financial and in helping to both find and hide "looted" funds for powerful people, including Adnan Khashoggi.

It is also worth noting that, during this period of questionable fundraising in which Epstein was involved, other dubious figures linked to organized crime also sparked controversy for attending prominent Clinton and DNC fundraisers. For instance, Richard Mays, an Arkansas lawyer and Clinton friend, secured the attendance of twice-convicted felon Eric Wynn, who was linked to the Bonanno crime family via court documents, at a DNC-arranged coffee with the President in December 1995.[234] Wynn had also attended several DNC fundraisers using tickets purchased by Richard Tienken, who had close ties to the Lucchese crime family. Wynn had also aided Tienken's separate fundraising efforts for Clinton, according to the *Washington Post*. Notably, Richard Mays also played a peripheral role in the suspect activities of Charlie Trie during this period.

Another organized crime figure was nearly brought into the 1996 election fundraising fold by DNC fundraiser and Zionist millionaire Sam Domb, a close friend of Steven Spielberg and former Israeli prime minister Ariel Sharon, among others.[235] Domb was a major fundraiser during the 1996 campaign for Clinton, so much so that he was prominently seated at the First Lady's table at a DNC managing trustees' dinner in February 1995. Next to Domb at the table was Charlie Trie. Notably, Domb can be found in Epstein's book of contacts.

Domb came under media scrutiny in 1996 for having brought a man named Grigori Loutchansky to a DNC dinner in 1993. At that fundraiser, Loutchansky later "told reporters that the President asked him to convey a message to the president of Ukraine, asking him to reduce the country's nuclear stockpile," a charge later denied by a senior administration official.[236]

Domb attempted to bring Loutchansky to a 1995 DNC fundraiser at the Hay Adams hotel, until the Clinton administration's national security council recommended Loutchansky not attend. Domb was asked to rescind the invitation and reluctantly did so. It later emerged that the NSA had monitored conversations between Domb and Loutchansky and those conversations revealed that Domb was planning to donate $25,000 to the DNC so Loutchansky could attend a DNC fundraiser. In 1996, *TIME* magazine reported that Loutchansky was "under investigation by law enforcement and intelligence agencies in the United States and other countries" for suspected involvement "in arms-trafficking, money laundering, and other crimes." Loutchansky's US attorney at the time was Thomas Spencer Jr., a close friend of Ted Shackley's.[237]

It turns out that Loutchansky was most likely a part of the "global coalition of criminals" organized by Robert Maxwell in the late 1980s when he went into business with organized crime in Eastern Europe and Russia. Loutchansky, at the time, was the president of a company called Nordex, a trading company based in Austria that mainly did business in the former Soviet Union and was previously discussed in chapter 9. Though he was born and raised in the Soviet Union, like Semion Mogilevich, he was using an Israeli passport to do business in Europe and the United States. Loutchansky was also "considered a significant player in Russian mob activities," according to a congressional report.[238]

Per that same report, and as previously noted in chapter 9, Loutchansky was close to Marc Rich. The report noted that Rich "has … been linked" to Loutchansky and that "According to press accounts, Loutchansky worked with Rich in the early 1990s selling Russian oil and aluminum from formerly state-run enterprises."[239] In addition, "English investigators found that [Loutchansky's company] Nordex was co-founded by Rich when the Soviet empire collapsed. At the time, it served to transfer the Communist Party's funds abroad, including stolen assets."[240] It was also reported that Nordex was a key part of Rich's network after he helped found it: "the Volga Refinery, one of the largest in the Russian petroleum network, was acquired by Rich through an underworld corporate storefront called Nordex."[241]

Nordex was later described by Andrew Cockburn as an "ex-KGB front company" that intelligence sources believed was "involved in arms, drugs, the whole nine yards."[242] It was also involved in the trade of nuclear materials. Its ties to both Soviet Union era intelligence and an Israeli intelligence asset like Marc Rich make Nordex a prime example of the intermingling of those networks, particularly after the fall of the Soviet Union. Another prime example of how those networks intermingled was, of course, Robert Maxwell himself. Perhaps unsurprisingly, the Maxwell child who had sought to be his "father reincorporated," Kevin Maxwell, was intimately involved with Nordex as was his brother Ian.

According to a *Guardian* report from 1996:

> [Kevin and Ian Maxwell] are working in what is described as a freelance capacity for Westbourne Communications, a central London consultancy run by Jean Baddeley – Robert

> Maxwell's long-standing secretary – which has a number of projects in the former Soviet Union.… At one time they were working with Nordex, a mysterious Vienna-based trading company, many of whose employees are former Soviet intelligence officers. Their involvement with Nordex was arranged through Westbourne.[243]

According to Tom Bower in his book *Maxwell: The Final Verdict,* Kevin Maxwell used Westbourne to continue his father's work in Russia and Bulgaria.[244] Bower writes: "Kevin offered his expertise in finance and banking to Russians looking for investment opportunities in the West. Simultaneously, he had proffered his services to Western companies seeking contracts in the Soviet bloc."[245] Those companies, per Bower, included Nordex and Salomon brothers.

Thus, it seems that many of the same tactics employed by those linked to the Riady family and/or Chinese military intelligence in Chinagate were also utilized by Jeffrey Epstein and those in his broader network.

FRIENDS IN HIGH PLACES

Aside from Epstein's growing importance as a Clinton donor, it appears that 1995 was also the year that the relationship between the Clintons and Epstein became more intimate in other ways.

In a letter dated April 27, 1995, Lynn Forester, now Lynn Forester de Rothschild, wrote:

> Dear Mr. President: it was a pleasure to see you recently at Senator Kennedy's house. There was too much to discuss and too little time. Using my fifteen seconds of access to discuss Jeffrey Epstein and currency stabilization, I neglected to talk to you about a topic near and dear to my heart. Namely, affirmative action and the future.[246]

Forester de Rothschild then states that she had been asked to prepare a memo on behalf of George Stephanopoulos, former Clinton communications director and currently a broadcast journalist with *ABC News*. Stephanopoulos attended a dinner party hosted by Epstein at his now infamous Manhattan townhouse in 2010, years after Epstein's first conviction.[247]

While it is unknown exactly what Forester de Rothschild discussed with Clinton regarding Epstein and currency stabilization, a potential lead may lie in the links of both Forester de Rothschild and Epstein to Deutsche Bank. As noted previously in chapter 12, Epstein boasted of "skill at playing the currency markets 'with very large sums of money'" and that "Epstein had several meetings with Harold Levin, then head of Wexner Investments, in which he enunciated ideas about currencies that Levin found incomprehensible." Epstein also often claimed that he had made his fortune investing clients' money, including Wexner's, into currency markets.[248]

Epstein's more recent activity in currency markets, in the years that followed his first conviction, appears to have been achieved through his long-standing relationship with Deutsche Bank. As the *New York Times* reported in 2019:

> [Epstein] appears to have been doing business and trading currencies through Deutsche Bank until just a few months ago, according to two people familiar with his business activities. But as the possibility of federal charges loomed, the bank ended its client relationship with Mr. Epstein. It is not clear what the value of those accounts was at the time they were closed.[249]

As previously mentioned, the son of Esther Salas, the judge set to oversee a case against Deutsche Bank related to its role in enabling Epstein's financial activities, was murdered right before that court case was to begin. The alleged assailant was Roy Den Hollander, formerly of Kroll Associates.

Forester de Rothschild, at the time of Epstein's arrest and still today, has served as an advisor to the Deutsche Bank Microfinance Consortium for several years and is currently a board member of the Alfred Herrhausen Society of International Dialogue of Deutsche Bank.[250] Her close relationship with Epstein may be part of the reason why Deutsche Bank kept Epstein as a client for so long, despite years of warnings from bank employees regarding questionable activities connected to Epstein's accounts.

At the time the 1995 letter was written, Forester de Rothschild was a member of Clinton's National Information Infrastructure Advisory Council and, during the latter years of Clinton's second term, she also served on the advisory board for then-Secretary of Energy Bill Richardson. Richardson would later become one of the Clinton era officials closest to Jeffrey Epstein.

Forester de Rothschild had apparently known Epstein for at least a few years before she wrote the 1995 letter. Epstein had apparently played a role in her divorce from Andrew Stein, a major figure in New York Democratic politics, in 1993.[251] Andrew's brother, James Finkelstein, had married Cathy Frank, the granddaughter of Lewis Rosenstiel, the mob-linked businessman whose role in sexual blackmail operations were discussed in Chapter 2 and elsewhere.

Rosenstiel's apparent protégé, Roy Cohn, was the lawyer for Cathy Frank and James Finkelstein.[252] It was at their behest that Cohn attempted to trick a nearly comatose Lewis Rosenstiel into naming Cohn, Frank, and Finkelstein the executors and trustees of his estate, valued at $75 million (more than $407 million in 2022 dollars). Stein later worked for Ron Perelman and Perelman had hired Roy Cohn to represent him during his first divorce in the early 1980s.

According to a 2019 *Vanity Fair* article, Epstein claimed that Forester de Rothschild had "needed his financial help" during her divorce and that he had "graciously floated her," a claim that a Forester de Rothschild spokesperson denied at the time of the article's publication.[253] A few years later, as a "gift" to Epstein, Forester de Rothschild introduced him to Alan Dershowitz, who would allegedly become entangled in his sex trafficking activities and later become one of Epstein's defense attorneys.

Forester de Rothschild also has ties to Ronald Lauder through her position on the board of directors of Estee Lauder companies. Forester de Rothschild also partnered with Matthew Bronfman, son of Mega Group billionaire Edgar Bronfman, to create the investment advisory firm Bronfman E.L. Rothschild LP.

More relevant, however, is Forester de Rothschild's decades-long relationship with the Clintons. Forester de Rothschild is a long-time associate of the Clintons and has been a major donor to both Bill and Hillary Clinton since 1992. Their ties were so close that Forester de Rothschild and her current husband, Evelyn de Rothschild, spent the first night of her honeymoon at the Lincoln Bedroom in the White House while Clinton was president. She and Rothschild had first been introduced at a Bilderberg conference by former Secretary of State Henry Kissinger, whose close relationship with Hillary Clinton is well documented.[254] Kissinger's role in the PROMIS scandal as an enabler of Robert Maxwell's sale of the bugged software to Sandia national laboratory was discussed in Chapter 9.

Furthermore, a leaked email between Forester de Rothschild and Hillary Clinton saw Clinton request "penance" from Forester de Rothschild for asking Tony Blair to accompany Clinton on official business while she was Secretary of State, preventing Blair from making a planned social visit to Forester de Rothschild's home in Aspen, Colorado.[255] Humbly requesting forgiveness is not something Hillary Clinton is known for, given that her former bodyguard once said she could "make Richard Nixon look like Mahatma Gandhi."[256]

Endnotes

1 G. Pascal Zachary, "Report on Robert Maxwell Blames Goldman Sachs, Accounting Firm," *Wall Street Journal*, April 1, 2001, https://www.wsj.com/articles/SB985943439894847660.

2 Paul Farelly, "How the City Ignored Alarm Bells on Maxwell," *The Observer*, April 1, 2001, https://www.theguardian.com/business/2001/apr/01/theobserver.observerbusiness11.

3 Martin Armstrong, "Epstein His Connection to 'The Club' of Manipulators," *Armstrong Economics*, August 13, 2019, https://www.armstrongeconomics.com/international-news/rule-of-law/epstein-his-connection-to-the-club-of-manipulators/.

4 "Multi-million Dollar Country Club Complex Due North of Brownville," *Brownsville Herald*, March 3, 1974.

5 Aiding Hernandez-Cartaya in his purchase of Jefferson S&L was E.S.M. Government Securities, a Florida-based securities dealer. See James Ring Adams, *The Big Fix: Inside the S & L Scandal : How an Unholy Alliance of Politics and Money Destroyed America's Banking System* (New York: Wiley, 1991), 150-51. One of E.S.M.'s top clients was the Cincinnati businessman Marvin Warner. Warner's son-in-law, Stephen Arky, served as E.S.M.'s attorney. In 1985, E.S.M was shut down by regulators, triggering a subsequent collapse of Warner's Home State Savings Bank. This, in turn, triggered a run on Ohio's banking system that was halted when the state's governor declared a bank holiday and organized a bail-out passage.

E.S.M employees have insisted that the meeting with Hernandez-Cartaya was by chance. There are reasons to doubt this story: Warner was a close friend associate of Edward DeBartolo, and had even purchased DeBartolo's beleaguered Metropolitan Bank and Trust. DeBartolo, as noted in chapter 13, had a history of business with Hernandez-Cartaya's WFC Corp.

6 Pete Brewton, *The Mafia, CIA, and George Bush* (S.P.I. Books, Dec. 1992), 186.

7 Epstein's role in the collapse of Bear Stearns was unfortunately not explored in this book due to time and space limitations. However, some have written specifically about Epstein and the collapse of Bear Stearns and their arguments are worthy of consideration. See Steve Sailer, "Did Jeffrey Epstein Personally Set off the Financial Crash of 2008?," *The Unz Review*, August 14, 2019, https://www.unz.com/isteve/did-jeffrey-epstein-personally-set-off-the-financial-crash-of-2008/.

8 Jaquelyn M. Scharnick, "Mogul Donor Gives Harvard More Than Money," *Harvard Crimson*, May 1, 2003, https://www.thecrimson.com/article/2003/5/1/mogul-donor-gives-harvard-more-than/.

9 Lisette Voytko, "Leon Black Reveals Other Jeffrey Epstein Finance Clients—Including A U.S. Treasury Secretary," *Forbes*, October 29, 2020, https://www.forbes.com/sites/lisettevoytko/2020/10/29/leon-black-reveals-other-jeffrey-epstein-finance-clients-including-a-us-treasury-secretary/.

10 Emily Shugerman and Suzi Parker, "EXCLUSIVE: Jeffrey Epstein Visited Clinton White House Multiple Times in Early '90s," *The Daily Beast*, July 24, 2019, https://www.thedailybeast.com/jeffrey-epstein-visited-clinton-white-house-multiple-times-in-early-90s.

11 Daniel Bates, "Jeffrey Epstein Visited Clinton White House 17 Times, Logs Reveal," *Mail Online*, December 2, 2021, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-10235499/Epstein-Clinton.html.

12 Shugerman and Parker, "EXCLUSIVE: Jeffrey Epstein Visited Clinton White House."

13 Leon Fooksman, "EMBEZZLER GETS HOUSE ARREST," *Sun Sentinel*, March 2, 2001, https://www.sun-sentinel.com/news/fl-xpm-2001-03-03-0103021175-story.html.

14 Bob Norman, "Palm Beach Mayoral Candidate Has Corrupt Past In Bahamas," *New Times Broward-Palm Beach*, February 10, 2009, https://www.browardpalmbeach.com/news/palm-beach-mayoral-candidate-has-corrupt-past-in-bahamas-6453841.

15 Lisa Miller, "Titans of Industry Join Forces To Work for Jewish Philanthropy," *Wall Street Journal*, May 4, 1998, https://www.wsj.com/articles/SB894240270899870000.

16 On Glass, Cosmos, and the Empire State Building Corp, see Jonathan Marshall, *Dark Quadrant: Organized Crime, Big Business, and the Corruption of American Democracy: From Truman to Trump*, Additional Endnotes (Lanham: Rowman & Littlefield, 2021), https://rowman.com/WebDocs/Dark_Quadrant_Extra_Notes.pdf.; on Crown and organized crime, see Peter Dale Scott, *Deep Politics and the Death of JFK* (University of California Press, 1996), 154-55; on Wien, Dalitz and the Desert Inn, see Marshall, *Dark Quadrant*, 166.

17 Information linking Kahn and Shenker is found in Shenker's declassified FBI file. See "Morris Shenker FBI Files," https://archive.org/details/MorrisShenker/Morris%20Shenker%2001/. See also Marshall, *Dark Quadrant*, Additional Endnotes.

18 "U.S. Wide Pin Group is Formed," *Miami Herald*, April 1, 1961.

19 This is discussed at length in Alan A. Block, *Masters of Paradise: Organized Crime and the Internal Revenue Service in the Bahamas* (Routledge, 1991); see also SEC Docket: A Weekly Compilation of Releases from the Securities and Exchange Commission, Vol. 14, 1978, 974-76.

20 Sterling Seagrave, *The Marcos Dynasty* (New York: Ballantine Books, 1990), 366.

21 Robert L. Jackson, "Alleged $100,000 Payment to Bahamian Leader Probed," *Los Angeles Times*, May 28, 1976.

22 "1001 Club Membership List," 1978, accessed via https://isgp-studies.com/1001-club-membership-list

23 "New Board Member," *Palm Beach Daily News*, November 11, 1990.

24 Bradley J Edwards, *Relentless Pursuit: My Fight for the Victims of Jeffrey Epstein*, ePub (Simon and Schuster, 2020), 48.

25 Marlon Ettinger, "The Money - Ghislaine Maxwell Trial Day 7," *Footnotes Newsletter*, December 7, 2021, https://footnotesnews.substack.com/p/the-money-ghislaine-maxwell-trial; Document 55-12, Case 1:15-cv-07433-LAP, March 14, 2016, https://ia801009.us.archive.org/25/items/gov.uscourts.nysd.447706/gov.uscourts.nysd.447706.55.12.pdf.

26 Patricia Leigh Brown, "A Redecorated White House, the Way the Clintons Like It," *New York Times*, November 24, 1993, https://www.nytimes.com/1993/11/24/us/a-redecorated-white-house-the-way-the-clintons-like-it.html.

27 *Hearings Before the Committee on Banking, Housing, and Urban Affairs on Death of Vincent W. Foster, Jr.*, United States Senate, One Hundred Third Congress, Second Session, Volume I, July 29, 1994, p. 211, 228, https://archive.org/details/WhitewaterHearingsOnTheDeathOfVinceFoster/.

28 Allan J. Favish, "Explanation of The Haut Report," AllanFavish.com, http://www.allanfavish.com/index.php/vincent-foster/143-explanation-of-the-haut-report;

Reed Irvine, “AIM Report: Evidence Proving Foster Was Murdered,” *Accuracy in Media*, July 1, 2001, https://www.aim.org/aim-report/aim-report-evidence-proving-foster-was-murdered/.

29 Hearings Before the Committee on Banking, Housing, and Urban Affairs on Death of Vincent W. Foster, Jr., 883.

30 Irvine, “AIM Report.”

31 Irvine, “AIM Report.”

32 On normal procedures where investigator from the scene is usually present and how the autopsy was rescheduled see: *Hearings Before the Committee on Banking, Housing, and Urban Affairs on Death of Vincent W. Foster, Jr.*, 412; on observer to autopsy see: *Hearings Before the Committee on Banking, Housing, and Urban Affairs on Death of Vincent W. Foster, Jr.*, 419.

33 Irvine, “AIM Report.”

34 Beyer told Park Police about X-rays then denied taking them. See: Hearings *Before the Committee on Banking, Housing, and Urban Affairs on Death of Vincent W. Foster, Jr.*, 95; Irvine, “AIM Report.”

35 Michael Isikoff, “Foster Tried to Hire Lawyer Before Suicide,” *Washington Post*, accessed via *Deseret News*, August 15, 1993, https://www.deseret.com/1993/8/15/19061099/foster-tried-to-hire-lawyer-before-suicide.

36 Ann Devroy and Susan Schmidt, “The Mystery in Foster’s Office,” *Washington Post*, December 20, 1995, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1995/12/20/the-mystery-infosters-office/7d2abb40-35c6-439e-a943-4ba6d001af7d/.

37 Isikoff, “Foster Tried to Hire Lawyer.”

38 Devroy and Schmidt, “The Mystery in Foster’s Office.”

39 Devroy and Schmidt, “The Mystery in Foster’s Office.”

40 “Memo Links First Lady To Handling Of Suicide Note,” *CNN*, August 27, 1996, https://web.archive.org/web/20210509000103/https://edition.cnn.com/ALLPOLITICS/1996/news/9608/27/whitewater/index.shtml.

41 The hand-writing experts were former New York Police Department homicide expert Vincent Scalice, Oxford University manuscript expert Reginald Alton and Boston private investigator Ronald Rice. For more on their analysis and Davidson, see: “Foster Suicide Note Called Forgery,” *Tampa Bay Times*, October 26, 1995, https://www.tampabay.com/archive/1995/10/26/foster-suicide-note-called-forgery/.

42 “Memo Links First Lady To Handling Of Suicide Note.”

43 Karen de Witt, “Redecorating Private Rooms in Political Limelight,” *New York Times*, August 15, 1993, https://www.nytimes.com/1993/08/15/us/redecorating-private-rooms-in-political-limelight.html.

44 Brown, “Redecorated.”

45 Brown, “Redecorated.”

46 Brown, “Redecorated.”

47 Shugerman and Parker, “EXCLUSIVE: Jeffrey Epstein Visited Clinton White House.”

48 James Norman, “Fostergate,” Document 01, *Media Bypass Magazine*, August 1995, https://archive.org/details/VinceFoster-NSA-Banking-Transactions-Spying.

49 Linda Grant, “A Story You Won’t Read in Forbes,” *CNN Money*, October 2, 1995, https://money.cnn.com/magazines/fortune/fortune_archive/1995/10/02/206527/index.htm.

50 Grant, “A Story.”

51 Norman, “Fostergate,” Document 19.

52 Norman, “Fostergate,” Document 19.

53 Norman, “Fostergate,” Document 19.

54 James Norman, “Ye Shall Know the Truth..and the Truth Shall Get You Fired,” *Media Bypass*, October 1995, https://www.fbicover-up.com/ewExternalFiles/James%20Norman%20Media%20Bypass.pdf.

55 Norman, “Ye Shall Know.”

56 Nathan Isaac, “FOIA Request for Chalmer C. Hayes Files (Federal Bureau of Investigation),” MuckRock, August 2, 2021, https://www.muckrock.com/foi/united-states-of-america-10/foia-request-for-chalmer-c-hayes-files-federal-bureau-of-investigation-116707/.

57 Norman, “Fostergate,” Document 40.

58 Dov Ivry, “Kavanaugh Sabotaged Vince Foster Probe,” *Times of Israel*, October 3, 2018, https://blogs.timesofisrael.com/kavanaugh-sabotaged-vince-foster-probe/.

59 Ivry, “Kavanaugh Sabotaged.”

60 Scott Rosenberg, “Let’s Get This Straight,” Salon, March 6, 1997, https://web.archive.org/web/20081211102225/http://dir.salon.com/story/tech/col/rose/1997/03/06/straight/.

61 Norman, “Fostergate,” Document 36.

62 James R. Norman, *The Oil Card: Global Economic Warfare in the 21st Century*, 1st ed (Oregon: Trine Day, 2008), 101.

63 Norman, “Fostergate,” Document 03.

64 Norman, “Fostergate,” Document 03.

65 John O’Conor, “Seeds of Commerce: A Report on How the US Department of Commerce Helps Others Foster Economic Growth” US Department of Commerce, January 1997, 72, https://books.google.cl/books?id=7R6rBSkL1_kC.

66 Jim Brown, “Protocol Converters Play Integral Role in AS/400 Net,” *Network World*, May 21, 1990, 21, https://books.google.cl/books?id=jh0EAAAAMBAJ; “Banks Gain Interface,” *Computer World*, January 17, 1983, 52, https://books.google.cl/books?id=XnG8BXjSkSMC.

67 John Chamberlin, “This Month’s Q&A: August 2021,” *Arkansas Center for Data Science*, August 18, 2021, https://www.acds.co/post/q-a-august-2021.

68 “Export Controls on Mass Market Software” *Hearing Before the Subcommittee on Economic Policy, Trade and Environment*, Committee on Foreign Affairs (1993), 31, https://books.google.cl/books?id=9p7jRTSF9aMC.

69 Chamberlin, “Q&A: August 2021.”

70 “Arkansas Systems Aids China’s Central Bank,” *American Banker*, August 29, 1994, https://www.americanbanker.com/news/arkansas-systems-aids-chinas-central-bank.

71 “Arkansas Systems.”

72 Sara Fritz, “White House Curbs Access of Former Clinton Staffer,” *Los Angeles Times*, November 16, 1996, https://www.latimes.com/archives/la-xpm-1996-11-16-mn-65315-story.html.

73 Bates, “Epstein Visited Clinton White House 17 Times.”

74 Bates, “Epstein Visited Clinton White House 17 Times.”

75 Fritz, “White House Curbs Access.”

76 Alamo Girl, “Mark Middleton, The Clintonista Shielded by Pres. Bush’s Executive Privilege Claim,” *Free Republic*, September 5, 2001, https://freerepublic.com/focus/f-news/517500/posts.

77 *Investigation of Illegal or Improper Activities in Connection With 1996 Federal Election Campaign*, Final Report of the Committee on Government Affairs, United States Senate, Together with Additional and Minority Views, Vol. 1, March 10th 1988, p. 1212, https://play.google.com/store/books/details?id=djl7og6qFboC.

78 Jeff Gerth, “Cuban Exile Banker Under Wide Inquiry,” *New York Times*, December 15, 1977; James Ring Adams, *The Big Fix*, 73-74.

79 Adams, *The Big Fix*, 75.

80 Dan E. Moldea, *Interference: How Organized Crime Influences Professional Football*, 1st ed (New York: Morrow, 1989), 292-94, https://archive.org/details/interferencehowo00mold/.

81 *Investigation of Illegal or Improper Activities*-Final Report, Vol. 1, 1211.

82 *Investigation of Illegal or Improper Activities*-Final Report, Vol. 1, 1211.

83 Fritz, “White House Curbs Access.”

84 *Investigation of Illegal or Improper Activities*-Final Report, Vol. 1, 1210.

85 Laurence Zuckerman, “Rescue of BCCI Hong Kong Abandoned,” *New York Times*, February 20, 1992; *Investigation of Illegal or Improper Activities*-Final Report, Vol. 1, 1122.

86 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties and Possible Violations of Law: Interim Report*, Sixth Report by the Committee on Government Reform and Oversight, Together with Additional and Minority Views, Vol. 2, November 5th, 1988, 1190, https://books.google.com/books?id=XT7_xMCH4KkC.

87 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1190.

88 John Greenwald, “John Huang: The Dems Cash Cow,” *TIME*, November 11, 1996.

89 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1193.

90 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1191.

91 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1193.

92 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1193.

93 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1205.

94 Greenwald, “John Huang.”

95 Jeff Gerth, Stephen Labaton, and Tim Weiner, “Clinton and Friends: Strong Ties, Few Questions,” *New York Times*, February 14, 1997, https://www.nytimes.com/1997/02/14/us/clinton-and-friends-strong-ties-few-questions.html.

96 Greenwald, “John Huang.”

97 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*-Final Report, Vol. 1, 1180.

98 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1195.

99 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1200-01.

100 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1195.

101 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1195.

102 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1195.

103 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1196.

104 On China Resources: George Driscoll and Susan S. Medgyesi-Mitschang, "Trading with the People's Republic of China" (US Department of Commerce Office of International Commercial Relations, 1971), 10, OBR-71-024, https://play.google.com/books/reader?id=mGwMvGW2hBsC.

On the Lippo-China Resources-BCCIHK negotiations: *Investigation on Illegal Or Improper Activities in Connection With the 1996 Federal Election Campaign-Part 2*, Hearings Committee on Governmental Affairs United States Senate One Hundred Fifth Congress 1997, 29, https://play.google.com/store/books/details?id=cvI6AQAAMAAJ&rdid=book-cvI6AQAAMAAJ&r-dot=1.

105 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1202.

106 *Investigation on Illegal Or Improper Activities in Connection With the 1996 Federal Election Campaign-Part 2*, Hearings Committee, 29.

107 *Retaliation at the Departments of Defense and Energy: Do Advocates of Tighter Security for U.S. Technology Face Intimidation?*, Hearing Before the Committee on Government Reform, House of Representatives, One Hundred Sixth Congress, First Session, June 24, 1999, p. 210, https://play.google.com/store/books/details?id=N87kpvbYyRIC.

108 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1201.

109 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1202.

110 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1210.

111 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1209.

112 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1350.

113 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1351.

114 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1351.

115 *Investigation of Illegal or Improper Activities in Connection With 1996 Federal Election Campaign*, Final Report of the Committee on Government Affairs, United States Senate, Together with Additional and Minority Views, Vol. 2, March 10th 1998, p. 2523, n. 42, https://www.google.com/books/edition/Investigation_of_Illegal_Or_Improper_Act/YUBBozZSz0kC.

116 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1351-52.

117 *Investigation of Illegal or Improper Activities-Final Report, Vol. 2*, 2521.

118 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1352.

119 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1354.

120 Lena H. Sun and John Pomfret, "The Curious Cast of Asian Donors," *Washington Post*, January 27, 1997, https://web.archive.org/web/20081015235608/http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-srv/politics/special/campfin/stories/donors.htm.

121 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1353.

122 Michael Daly, "Chinese Billionaire Arrested in U.N. Bribery Case Has Clinton Links," *The Daily Beast*, October 7, 2015, https://www.thedailybeast.com/articles/2015/10/07/chinese-billionaire-arrested-in-u-n-bribery-case-has-clinton-links.

123 Daly, "Chinese Billionaire Arrested."

124 Zhidong Hao, *Macau History and Society* (Hong Kong: Hong Kong University Press, 2011), 180.

125 Hao, *Macau History*, 180.

126 *Investigation of Illegal or Improper Activities-Final Report, Vol. 2*, 2522.

127 *Investigation of Illegal or Improper Activities-Final Report, Vol. 2*, 2525.

128 *Investigation of Illegal or Improper Activities-Final Report, Vol. 2*, 2526.

129 *Investigation of Illegal or Improper Activities-Final Report, Vol. 2*, 2526.

130 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1364.

131 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1370-72.

132 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1373-74.

133 *Investigation of Illegal or Improper Activities-Final Report, Vol. 2*, 2528.

134 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1361.

135 Sara Fritz and Rose Tempest, "Ex-Clinton Aide Arranged for Taiwan Connection," *Los Angeles Times*, October 30, 1996.

136 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1364.

137 Michelle Toh et al., "Stanley Ho, Hong Kong Billionaire and Macao's 'godfather of Gambling,' Dies at 98," *CNN Business*, May 26, 2020, https://www.cnn.com/2020/05/26/business/stanleyho-obit-intl-hnk/index.html.

138 Arnold Wright, *Twentieth Century Impressions of Hong-Kong, Shanghai, and Other Treaty Ports of China* (London Lloyd's Greater Britain Pub. Co, 1908), 178, https://archive.org/details/twentiethcentury00wriguoft.

139 Sean Nicholls, "Uncensored Documents Reveal Gambling Authority's Concern about James Packer's Links with Mogul Stanley Ho," *Sydney Morning Herald*, November 13, 2014, https://www.smh.com.au/national/nsw/uncensored-documents-reveal-gambling-authoritys-concern-about-james-packers-links-with-mogul-stanley-ho-20141113-11lqtr.html; AP, "Atlantic City Casino Mogul and Daughter Have Ties to Chinese Mob, Authorities Say," *NewJersey.com*, March 17, 2010, https://www.nj.com/news/2010/03/atlantic_city_casino_mogul_and.html; Wayne Perry, "Asian Casino Magnate Stanley Ho Denies Organized Crime Ties, Refuting NJ Casino Regulators," *Business GAEA Times*, March 18, 2010, https://business.gaeatimes.com/2010/03/18/asian-casino-magnate-stanley-ho-denies-organized-crime-ties-refuting-nj-casino-regulators-42784/.

140 AP, "Atlantic City Casino Mogul."

141 "Macao Factsheet," *Government Information Bureau of the Macao* SAR, https://www.gcs.gov.mo/files/spage/CFA7_E.html.

142 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1374.

143 *Investigation of Illegal or Improper Activities-Final Report, Vol. 2*, 2535.

144 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1388.

145 *Investigation of Illegal or Improper Activities-Final Report, Vol. 2*, 2536.

146 "Macau Billionaire Sentenced To 48 Months In Prison For Role In Scheme To Bribe United Nations Ambassadors To Build A Multibillion-Dollar Conference Center" (United States Attorneys Office-SDNY, May 11, 2018), https://www.justice.gov/usao-sdny/pr/macau-billionaire-sentenced-48-months-prison-role-scheme-bribe-united-nations.

147 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1674.

148 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1675.

149 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1676.

150 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1676.

151 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1676-77.

152 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1687.

153 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1687.

154 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1687-88.

155 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1696.

156 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1727.

157 David Jackson and Lena H. Sun, "Liu's Deals With Chung: An Intercontinental Puzzle," *Washington Post*, May 24, 1998, https://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-srv/politics/special/campfin/stories/liu052498.htm.

158 Jackson and Sun, "Lui's Deals."

159 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1714.

160 Jackson and Sun, "Lui's Deals."

161 Jackson and Sun, "Lui's Deals."

162 William C. Rempel and Alan C. Miller, "Chung Details Alleged Chinese Funding Scheme," *Los Angeles Times*, May 7, 1999, https://www.latimes.com/archives/la-xpm-1999-may-07-mn-34766-story.html.

163 Rempel and Miller, "Chung Details."

164 Jill Abramson and Don Van Natta Jr., "Clinton-Loral: Anatomy of a Mutually Rewarding Relationship," *New York Times*, May 24, 1998, https://archive.nytimes.com/www.nytimes.com/library/politics/052498clinton-donate.html.

165 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1715.

166 Abramson and Van Natta, "Clinton-Loral."

167 Abramson and Van Natta, "Clinton-Loral."

168 Laura Myers, "Air Force Cites Pilot, Command Errors in Crash of Brown's Plane," *Associated Press*, June 7, 1996.

169 Myers, "Air Force Cites Pilot."

170 "Avionom Je, Ipak, Najsigurnije," *Slobodna Dalmacija*, August 30, 2008, https://web.archive.org/web/20080909153644/http://www.slobodnadalmacija.hr/Spektar/tabid/94/article-Type/ArticleView/articleId/20301/Default.aspx.

171 "25 Years Later: Honoring the Memory of the Lives Lost on April 3, 1996," *Tradeology: The Official Blog of the ITA*, April 2, 2021, https://blog.trade.gov/2021/04/02/25-years-later-honoring-the-memory-of-the-lives-lost-on-april-3-1996/.

172 Christopher Ruddy, "Experts Differ on Ron Brown head wound," *Pittsburgh Tribune Review*, December 3, 1997.

173 Ruddy, "Experts Differ."

174 Ruddy, "Experts Differ."

175 Wesley Phelan, "The Botched Ron Brown Investigation: An Interview with AFIP Forensic Photographer Kathleen Janoski," *The Laissez Faire City Times*, Vol. 2, No. 35, October 26, 1998, http://www.buchal.com/library/coverups/ronbrown.htm.

176 Phelan "The Botched Ron Brown Investigation."

177 Robert E. Pierre and Martin Weil, "Employee's Body is Found in Commerce Dept. Office," *Washington Post*, November 30, 1996,

https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/local/1996/11/30/employees-body-is-found-in-commerce-dept-office/73570a2f-cd90-48bd-8424-fc54cfe81cbd/.

178 Pierre and Weil, "Employees Body is Found,"; Dana Hedgpeth, "Washington police rule out foul play in death of Gambrills woman in office," *Baltimore Sun*, November 30, 1996, https://www.baltimoresun.com/news/bs-xpm-1996-12-01-1996336009-story.html.

179 Pierre and Weil, "Employees Body is Found."

180 "Judicial Watch petitions to continue Ron Brown investigation by Independent Counsel," *Judicial Watch*, February 12, 1998, https://www.judicialwatch.org/archive/1998/printer_66.shtml.

181 "Judicial Watch petitions."

182 "Commerce chief's son scrutinized for ties," *Associated Press*, October 6, 1995.

183 "Suit claims ex-islander 'looted' Oklahoma firm," *Honolulu Star-Bulletin*, September 1, 1995.

184 "Prosecutor Investigating Commerce Chief Expands Inquiry to Son," *New York Times*, February 7, 1996, https://www.nytimes.com/1996/02/07/us/prosecutor-investigating-commerce-chief-expands-inquiry-to-son.html.

185 Toni Locy, "Brown Pleads Guilty to Election Violation," *Washington Post*, August 29, 1997, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1997/08/29/brown-pleads-guilty-to-election-violation/e6b58691-5afe-424f-b082-cad3ea2fcc24/.

186 Locy, "Brown Pleads Guilty."

187 Susan Schmidt and George Lardner, "Asian Pacific Group's 92 Role Still Sketchy," *Washington Post*, December 6, 1996, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1996/12/06/asian-pacific-groups-92-role-still-sketchy/a2388d34-6385-4a06-a334-eeb846c95c40/.

188 Schmidt and Lardner, "Asian Pacific Group's 92 Role."

189 Bob Jones, "Lebanon's Chidiac's Hawaii Ties," *Midweek*, October 24, 2007, http://archives.midweek.com/content/columns/justthoughts_article/lebanons_chidiacs_hawaii_ties/.

190 *Testimony of Former Employees of the Banca Nazionale Del Lavoro Hearing Before the Committee on Banking, Finance, and Urban Affairs, House of Representatives*, One Hundred Third Congress, First Session, November 9, 1993, Volume 4, p. 30, https://books.google.com/books/about/Testimony_of_Former_Employees_of_the_Ban.html?id=lNmza17bNioC; "Developer charges Isle 'corruption, extortion," *Honolulu Advertiser*, January 18, 1993.

191 David Leigh and Mark Hollingsworth, "'I planned 250,000 dollar business gift for MP," *The Observer*, May 21, 1987.

192 Byron York, "Michael Brown Goes Free," *The American Spectator*, Vol. 30, Issue 11, 1997, 25.

193 York, "Michael Brown Goes Free," 25.

194 "Suit claims ex-islander 'looted' Oklahoma firm"

195 John Solomon, "FBI Probed Fund-Raising in 1992," *Associated Press*, May 22, 1998.

196 "Oklahoma Natural Gas Overcharges Tied to Clinton White House," *Oklahoma Constitution*, https://www.oklahomaconstitution.com/ns.php?nid=113.

197 "Pipeline nears completion," *The American*, September 29, 1990.

198 "Arkla, Inc. History," *Funding Universe*, http://www.fundinguniverse.com/company-histories/arkla-inc-history/; "Witt Stephens (1907-1991)," *Encyclopedia of Arkansas*,

https://encyclopediaofarkansas.net/entries/witt-stephens-1773/.

199 *Confirmation Hearings for the Department of Justice Hearings Before the Committee on the Judiciary on the Nominations of Philip Benjamin Heyman*, United States Senate, One Hundred Third Congress, First Session, May 18, 19, 20; June 9, 16, 22; September 30; and October 14, 1993, Volume 4, 156, https://archive.org/details/confirmationhear00unit/.

200 "Oklahoma Natural Gas Overcharges."

201 "Oklahoma Natural Gas Overcharges."

202 Michael Barbaro, "As a Director, Clinton Moved Wal-Mart Board, but Only So Far," *New York Times*, May 20, 2007, https://www.nytimes.com/2007/05/20/us/politics/20walmart.html.

203 *Hearings before the Special Committe to Investigate Whitewater Development Corporation and Related Matters*, United States Senate, One Hundred Fourth Congress, First Session, 1997, 227, https://www.google.com/books/edition/Investigation_of_Whitewater_Development/BpTCvux-p4NYC.

204 "Oklahoma Natural Gas Overcharges,"; Todd Gill, "Alice Walton to receive honorary degree from the University of Arkansas," *Fayetteville Flyer*, February 16, 2012, https://www.fayettevilleflyer.com/2012/02/16/alice-walton-to-receive-honorary-degree-from-the-university-of-arkansas/.

205 Gene Lum, Nora Lum, and Ron Brown, "Interview With Michael McAdams," *PBS Frontline*, https://www.pbs.org/wgbh/pages/frontline/shows/fixers/interviews/mcadams.html.

206 "Oklahoma Natural Gas Overcharges."

207 "Informant's Death Ruled as Natural," The Oklahoman, March 19, 1998, https://www.oklahoman.com/story/news/1998/03/19/informants-death-ruled-as-natural/62288014007/.

208 "Oklahoma Natural Gas Overcharges."

209 "Heifer Partners," *Heifer International*, https://archive.ph/WFLQW.

210 "Board of Trustees," *Heifer Foundation*, https://myheiferfoundationgiving.org/about/board-of-trustees/.

211 Ben Ashford, "Family of Clinton Advisor Block Release of Files Related to His Death," *Mail Online*, June 6, 2022, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-10882101/Family-late-Clinton-advisor-Mark-Middleton-block-release-files-relating-suicide.html.

212 Ashford, "Family of Clinton Advisor Block Release of Files."

213 Max Brantley, "Judge Seals Photos of Mark Middleton Suicide," *Arkansas Times*, June 22, 2022, https://arktimes.com/arkansas-blog/2022/06/22/judge-seals-photos-of-mark-middleton-suicide.

214 Bates, "Epstein Visited Clinton White House 17 Times."

215 Daniel Bates, "Jeffrey Epstein Brought 8 Women with Him to the Clinton White House," *Mail Online*, January 13, 2022, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-10394863/Jeffrey-Epstein-brought-eight-women-Clinton-White-House.html.

216 Bates, "Jeffrey Epstein Brought 8 Women."

217 HashTigre, Twitter post, June 15, 2022, https://twitter.com/hash_tigre/status/1537250800581283840.

218 Bates, "Jeffrey Epstein Brought 8 Women."

219 Bates, "Jeffrey Epstein Brought 8 Women."

220 Bates, “Jeffrey Epstein Brought 8 Women.”

221 Bates, “Jeffrey Epstein Brought 8 Women.”

222 Michael Powell, “Perelman Power,” *Washington Post*, February 6, 1998, https://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-srv/politics/special/clinton/stories/perelman020698.htm.

223 Powell, “Perelman Power.”

224 Paula Dwyer, “Ron Perelman, Vernon Jordan, And Zippergate,” *Bloomberg*, February 15, 1998, https://www.bloomberg.com/news/articles/1998-02-15/ron-perelman-vernon-jordan-and-zippergate.

225 Aamer Madhani, “2 Lawyers on Trump Defense Team Shared Epstein as a Client,” *AP News*, January 24, 2020, https://apnews.com/article/005baf1972164c49924f787c08f985ae.

226 Vicky Ward, “The Talented Mr. Epstein,” *Vanity Fair*, March 1, 2003, https://www.vanityfair.com/news/2003/03/jeffrey-epstein-200303.

227 R. W. Apple Jr, “The President Under Fire: The Power Broker; Jordan Trades Stories With Clinton, and Offers Counsel,” *New York Times*, January 25, 1998, https://www.nytimes.com/1998/01/25/us/president-under-fire-power-broker-jordan-trades-stories-with-clinton-offers.html.

228 “Photo: Jeffrey Epstein at Clinton Fundraising Dinner,” *The Palm Beach Post*, March 31, 1995, https://www.newspapers.com/clip/33707828/jeffrey-epstein-at-clintondnc/.

229 “Bob Kanuth and Lesley Visser to Lead Altitude International’s Worldwide Revolution in Fitness and Performance,” *Altitude International Inc*, February 14, 2019, https://www.globenews-wire.com/news-release/2019/02/14/1725638/0/en/Bob-Kanuth-and-Lesley-Visser-to-Lead-Altitude-International-s-Worldwide-Revolution-in-Fitness-and-Performance.html.

230 Paul Vitello, “Sylvia Hassenfeld, Philanthropist From Hasbro’s Founding Family, Dies at 93,” *New York Times*, August 21, 2014, https://www.nytimes.com/2014/08/21/nyregion/sylvia-hassenfeld-philanthropist-from-hasbros-founding-family-dies-at-93.html.

231 William H. Meyers, “Rag Trade Revolutionary,” *New York Times*, June 8, 1986, https://www.nytimes.com/1986/06/08/magazine/rag-trade-revolutionary.html.; “Wexner Foundation to Channel $3-4 Million in Grants to Help Enhance and Improve Professional Leaders,” *Jewish Telegraphic Agency*, May 22, 1987, https://www.jta.org/archive/wexner-foundation-to-channel-3-4-million-ingrants-to-help-enhance-and-improve-professional-leaders.

232 Kenneth Schultz, “PROFILE Bronfman Relishes Chance to Be Pioneer Chair of New Partnership,” *Jewish Telegraphic Agency*, February 16, 1999, https://www.jta.org/1999/02/16/lifestyle/profile-bronfman-relishes-chance-to-be-pioneer-chair-of-new-partnership.

233 “Grant Directory,” *The Andrea & Charles Bronfman Philanthropies*, http://www.acbp.net/grant-directory_2.php.

234 Bob Woodward and Charles R. Babcock, “Stock Manipulator Attended Coffee With Clinton,” *Washington Post*, February 1, 1997, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1997/02/01/stock-manipulator-attended-coffee-with-clinton/56a1e238-c869-47c6-b0b8-50cdef31c33b/.

235 Kelly Crow, “Hotel Developer Recasts Himself As an Angel for Old Synagogues,” *New York Times*, August 26, 2001, https://www.nytimes.com/2001/08/26/nyregion/neighborhood-

report-new-york-up-close-citypeople-hotel-developer-recasts-himself.html.

236 *Investigation of Illegal or Improper Activities in Connection With 1996 Federal Election Campaign*, Final Report of the Committee on Government Affairs, United States Senate, Together with Additional and Minority Views, Vol. 6, March 10th 1988, p. 8257, https://www.google.com/books/edition/Investigation_of_Illegal_Or_Improper_Act/qmHb7ZqmWvYC.

237 For Spencer serving as Loutchansky's attorney, See: Bob Woodward, "White House Gave DNC Top-Secret Intelligence," *Washington Post*, April 8, 1997, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1997/04/08/white-house-gave-dnc-top-secret-intelligence/3054512d-5a72-4a16-909e-81c84e1da623/; For Spencer as a close friend of Shackley, See: "CIA Operative Theodore Shackley Dies," *The Edwardsville Intelligencer*, December 13, 2002, https://www.theintelligencer.com/news/article/CIA-Operative-Theodore-Shackley-Dies-10483436.php.

238 "Justice Undone: Clemency Decisions in the Clinton White House," Second Report, Volume 1, US Congress House Committee on Government Reform, 2002, 112, https://www.congress.gov/congressional-report/107th-congress/house-report/454.

239 "Justice Undone: Clemency Decisions in the Clinton White House," 112.

240 "Did Rich work with Russian mafia?," *SWI*, June 2002, https://www.swissinfo.ch/ger/arbeitete-rich-mit-russen-mafia-/2764916.

241 Bruce Raphael, King Energy: The Rise and Fall of an Industrial Empire Gone Awry (CA, Writers Club Press, 2000), 537–38, https://books.google.com/books?id=MsM7-2tOoQ4C.

242 Andrew Cockburn and Leslie Cockburn, *One Point Safe*, 1st Anchor Books ed (New York: Anchor Books, 1997), 106.

243 Lisa Buckingham "Maxwell's Star Shines in the East," *The Guardian*, September 20, 1996.

244 Tom Bower, *Maxwell: The Final Verdict* (London: HarperCollins, 1995), 371.

245 Bower, *Maxwell*, 371.

246 "Letter to President Clinton," *The Daily Beast*, April 27, 1995, https://img.thedailybeast.com/image/upload/c_crop,d_placeholder_euli9k,h_1500,w_1598,x_0,y_0/dpr_1.5/c_limit,w_792/fl_lossy,q_auto/190723-epstein-embed1_mfpeel.

247 *NY Magazine* Editors, "The High Society That Surrounded Jeffrey Epstein," *Intelligencer*, July 22, 2019, https://nymag.com/intelligencer/2019/07/jeffrey-epstein-high-society-contacts.html.

248 Taylor Nicole Rogers, "Jeffrey Epstein Made $200 Million in 5 Years after He Registered as a Sex Offender. Here's How the Mysterious Financier Made His Fortune," *Business Insider*, July 8, 2019, https://www.businessinsider.com/how-financier-jeffrey-epstein-made-his-fortune-2019-7.

249 James B. Stewart et al., "Jeffrey Epstein's Fortune May Be More Illusion Than Fact," *New York Times*, July 11, 2019, https://www.nytimes.com/2019/07/10/business/jeffrey-epstein-networth.html.

250 "Lynn Forester De Rothschild," *The McCain Institute for International Leadership*, https://web.archive.org/web/20170803135655/https://www.mccaininstitute.org/staff/lynn-forester-de-rothschild/.

251 Vanessa Grigoriadis, "'They're Nothing, These Girls': The Mystery of Ghislaine Maxwell," *Vanity Fair*, August 12, 2019, https://www.vanityfair.com/news/2019/08/the-mystery-of-ghislaine-maxwell-epstein-enabler.

252 Laurie Johnston, “Usery Is Confirmed As Labor Secretary,” *New York Times*, February 5, 1976, https://www.nytimes.com/1976/02/05/archives/notes-on-people-usery-is-confirmed-as-labor-secretary.html.

253 Grigoriadis, “‘They’re Nothing, These Girls’: The Mystery of Ghislaine Maxwell.”

254 Meghan Keneally, “Hillary and Henry: Clinton’s Relationship With Kissinger,” *ABC News*, May 18, 2016, https://abcnews.go.com/Politics/hillary-henry-clintons-relationship-kissinger/story?id=39195203.

255 Whitney Webb, “Hillary Clinton Begs Forgiveness From Rothschilds In Leaked Email,” *MintPress News*, October 19, 2016, https://www.mintpressnews.com/hillary-clinton-begs-forgiveness-rothschild-leaked-email/221570/.

256 Wills Robinson, “Secret Service Agent Pens Tell-All Book about the Clinton White House,” *Mail Online*, June 5, 2016, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3626031/A-Secret-Service-agent-protected-Hillary-Clinton-set-publish-tell-book.html.

Doorway of 11 East 71st Street
Wikimedia/Jim Henderson

CHAPTER 17

EPSTEIN'S ENTERPRISE?

SPOOK AIR

The timing of Jeffrey Epstein's 17 White House visits, as well as Bill Clinton's suspiciously financed re-election campaign, largely coincided with at least three separate ventures that, not only intimately involved Epstein and Leslie Wexner's The Limited, but also two different CIA-linked airlines: Arrow Air and Southern Air Transport.

Beginning in March 1992, The Limited was linked in local press reports to efforts by different airlines to install themselves at Rickenbacker, specifically at Rickenbacker Air Industrial Park. The first of these involved the Russian state-owned airline Aeroflot. A Columbus development group, named A.R. Corp (with A.R. standing for Aeroflot/Rickenbacker) brought a seven-man delegation representing Aeroflot to Columbus.[1]

The goal was to make Rickenbacker a main cargo hub for the airline and A.R. Corp had obtained the rights to set up North American Aeroflot Corp, an "independent U.S. cargo carrier." Reports at the time noted that an air cargo hub had originally been set up by none other than Flying Tiger Line – the airline connected to Anna Chennault and Robert Keith Gray (discussed in Chapter 5) – in the 1980s. By 1993, that hub had been leased to Federal Express, which had acquired the remnants of Flying Tigers, but had fallen into disuse.[2]

During the delegation's visit, they made just four stops: a tour of Rickenbacker's facilities, a reception hosted by the Columbus law firm Emens, Hurd, Kegler & Ritter, a visit with Franklin County commissioners and then Mayor Greg Lashutka, and – last but not least – "a tour of The Limited's distribution center with Lee Johnson, president of Limited Distribution."[3]

The deal was subsequently promoted as offering "a gateway to world markets for Rickenbacker Air Industrial Park," with Ralph Fresca – one of the three partners in A.R. Corp. – telling the *Columbus Dispatch* that "Little Rickenbacker would have access to ports that no other US airline can fly into" if the deal was approved.[4]

At the time, Larry Garrison, then the executive director of the Rickenbacker Port Authority, asserted that "international cooperative ventures such as North American Aeroflot are the wave of the future." Garrison also urged for many existing restrictions on Rickenbacker flights, such as having at least one American having to present on the crew, be lifted.[5]

A little less than a year later, in January 1993, efforts to cement the deal continued. It was reported in the *Columbus Dispatch* on January 16 that a delegation from central Ohio was due to visit Moscow in March "in connection with a mid-April target to begin air cargo service from Columbus via Aeroflot Russian Airlines" at Rickenbacker.[6] Among the six person delegation, and the only member of the delegation representing a private company was Lee Johnson, president of The Limited Distribution Services who, incidentally, had also become the chairman of the Inland Port Commission of Greater Columbus. A subsequent report, from March 17, stated that the Ohio delegation that included Johnson did indeed meet in Russia "with Aeroflot and government officials there [in Moscow] to work out arrangements for chartering cargo flights to Rickenbacker."[7]

The January 1993 report also noted that unnamed "Columbus -area entrepreneurs" involved in getting the cargo service established were "talking to three major prospective investors to provide $10 million to fund the venture, including two Wall Street investment banks and one Ohio-based corporation."[8]

More importantly, the report added that "The fledgling cargo service [i.e. North American Aeroflot] is still talking to several air carriers to tie into its proposed worldwide service." Per reports, "so far, the most firm is Arrow Air Inc. of Miami, which would connect with Latin American cargo bound for Europe and Russia."[9]

This *Columbus Dispatch* report added more about Arrow Air's planned role, stating that:

> Arrow has committed to an almost daily flight to Columbus from five or six Latin American countries, Arrow Air President Dick Haberly said. It would bring pharmaceuticals, medical equipment, electrical goods, fresh flowers, and seafood for destinations in the United States, Europe, and Russia. Flights going back to Latin America would be loaded with electrical equipment, computers and textiles, Haberly said.
>
> Arrow now has one daily flight into Columbus from various points in Latin America, a DC-8-63F capable of carrying 100,000 pounds of cargo. The capacity would be doubled by the new commitment.
>
> Arrow recently brought some of its key customers from Latin America to Columbus, in order to tour Rickenbacker International Airport and to make them "comfortable" with the new arrangement, Haberly said."[10]

As the deal involving Aeroflot and Arrow Air continued to be cemented, it was then reported in March 1993 that "Among the many international companies that have central Ohio homes, The Limited played a key role in cultivating the Aeroflot Enterprise."

In apparent reference to the role Arrow Air stood to play, this report also stated "The airline anticipates that its Rickenbacker flights also will link with cities in South America and along the Pacific Rim. The Limited each year imports about 60 million pounds of merchandise from Pacific Rim nations."[11] The first flight of North American Aeroflot would take place shortly thereafter on April 26, 1993, originating in far eastern Russia and stopping in Anchorage, Alaska before arriving in Columbus. Its cargo, local media reported, "was bound for The Limited."[12]

The involvement of Arrow Air in the Aeroflot charter flights, in which The Limited had been intimately involved, is highly significant. In court documents from 1991 and related to the arrest of Arif Durrani, federal prosecutors had referred to Miami-based Arrow Air as "a Florida Corporation contracted by the NSC[National Security Council]/CIA/SAT[Southern Air Transport] to move weapons and equipment as part of the covert Iran-Contra weapons/hostage operation."[13] Other documents referred to in that text are stated to "clearly show the CIA/NSC Arrow Air links." Also referenced is the testimony of Southern Air Transport's Charles Mulligan confirming that SAT had contracted Arrow Air for "extremely secret operations."[14]

Also worth noting is the December 1985 crash involving an Arrow Air plane that had been carrying 248 American soldiers. It was subsequently determined that the plane had been involved in the "arms for hostages" aspect of Iran-Contra and had been carrying contraband weapons at the time it crashed. Also found among the plane's wreckage was a "thirty-two-kilo army-issue duffel bag stuffed with US currency."[15]

According to Jonathan Beaty and S.C. Gwynne in their book *The Outlaw Bank*, the money – likely amounting to millions of dollars – had been "BCCI money." A BCCI-connected arms dealer interviewed by Beaty and Gwynne, referred to in the text of their book as "Heinrich," subsequently claimed that the money had indeed belonged to BCCI, stating "This money on the plane was money that [BCCI founder] Abedi, money that the [BCCI] bank, had provided US intelligence for covert operations. The money was being used by the American military. I have no idea what for."[16]

Remarkably, less than a month after the Aeroflot/Arrow Air arrangement in Rickenbacker had begun, Southern Air Transport itself would begin its efforts to claim dominance over the Columbus area airstrip. This, of course, raises questions as to why two airlines linked to Iran-Contra arms smuggling and covert intelligence networks were so eager to insert themselves into cargo concerns that intimately involved Leslie Wexner's The Limited.

On Wednesday May 12, 1993, Columbus newspapers reported that "another start-up air cargo service is poised to begin serving Rickenbacker International Airport with weekly flights," beginning that Sunday. This company was known as Polar Air Cargo, based in Long Beach, California, and it planned specifically – in its inaugural flight to Rickenbacker – "to land … with clothing bound for The Limited Inc. from Hong Kong." The report also stated that "Polar hopes to make The Limited a regular customer, but it will deal with freight forwarders, not with the company."[17]

The article also notes that "Of Polar Air Cargo's 17 employees, more than half formerly worked for Flying Tigers, and the company one day hopes to use a portion of the now mostly vacant Flying Tigers facility at Rickenbacker, said Ned Wallace, chief executive officer."[18] At the end of the article, it is revealed that Polar Air Cargo is a company that "harnesses the resources of three partners – NedMark Transportation Services, Long Beach Calif.; Southern Air Transport, Miami; and Polaris Corp., San Francisco."[19] At the time, Southern Air Transport was owned by James Bastian, a former CIA lawyer, who had owned the airline since 1979 and throughout its use by the CIA in Iran-Contra and related operations. As previously mentioned in chapter 10, a few months after Polar Air made this announcement, The Limited began hiring pilots from Executive Jet Aviation/NetJets, the aviation company tied to the Penn Central bankruptcy that was later "frequently used" by Larry King, the man at the center of the Franklin Scandal.

By January 1994, Polar Air was still making regular trips to and from Rickenbacker, about four per week, while Arrow Air was making about five.[20] Around this time, Arrow Air was reportedly in talks about "relocating its central Ohio business to Rickenbacker," which didn't end up panning out.[21] However, soon after, in early 1994, Polar Air dissolved its relationship with Southern Air Transport and announced it was "seeking governmental authority" to expand its Columbus operations. Yet, area retail giant The Limited, which had been a major force behind the changes at Rickenbacker beginning in 1993, seemed uninterested in this “new” Polar Air. Instead, The Limited, Ohio politicians, and Rickenbacker officials, among others, would instead move to court Southern Air Transport directly, despite the airline’s history.

When Edmund James, president of James & Donohew Development Services, told the *Columbus Dispatch* in March 1995 that SAT was relocating to Columbus’s Rickenbacker airfield, he stated that “Southern Air’s new presence at Rickenbacker begins in April with two regularly scheduled 747 cargo flights a week from Hong Kong,” citing SAT President William Langton.[22]

“By fall, that could increase to four a week. Negotiations are underway for flights out of Rickenbacker to the Far East.… Much of the Hong Kong-to-Rickenbacker cargo will be for The Limited,” Wexner’s clothing company. “This is a big story for central Ohio. It’s huge, actually,” Edmund James said at the time.[23]

The day following the press conference, Brian Clancy, working as a cargo analyst with MergeGlobal Inc., told the *Journal of Commerce* that the reason for SAT’s relocation to Ohio was largely the result of the lucrative Hong Kong-to-Columbus route that SAT would run for Wexner’s company. Clancy specifically stated that the fact that “[The] Limited Inc., the nation’s largest retailer, is based in Columbus … undoubtedly contributed in large part to Southern Air’s decision.”[24]

According to documents obtained by journalist Bob Fitrakis from the Rickenbacker Port Authority, Ohio’s government also tried to sweeten the deal to bring SAT to Columbus in order to please powerful Ohio businessmen, namely Wexner.[25] Orchestrated by Governor George Voinovich’s then-Chief of Staff Paul Mifsud, the Rickenbacker Port Authority and the Ohio Department of Development created a package of several financial incentives, funded by Ohio taxpayers, to lure the airline to relocate to Ohio.[26] The *Journal of Commerce* described the “generous package of incentives from the state of Ohio” as “including a 75 percent credit against its corporate tax liability for the next 10 years, a $5 million low-interest loan, and a $400,000 job-training grant.”[27] In 1996, then-SAT spokesman David Sweet had told Fitrakis that the CIA-linked airline had only moved to Columbus because “the deal [put together by the development department] was too good to turn down.”[28] It was alleged that this package had largely been the result of political pressure applied by The Limited and its executives.

Reporting from Bob Fitrakis in particular noted that Jeffrey Epstein was one of the figures involved with Wexner and The Limited that was involved in courting SAT.[29] In addition, in 2001, Fitrakis had told the *Evening Standard* of the UK that Epstein was "Wexner's Mr. fix-it. He has the spook connections and pulls the strings worldwide. He handles all the logistics and moves the portfolio around for him."[30] If Epstein indeed handled "all the logistics" for Wexner, he was then most certainly one of the key people involved in the effort to court SAT, as well as Polar Air and Arrow Air.

The past role of SAT in Iran-Contra and its CIA ties did not go unnoticed by local journalists or the public, prompting the SAT's Langton to tell the *Columbus Dispatch* that the airline was "no longer connected to the CIA."[31] SAT owner James Bastian also later claimed that he "took steps to remove the ties with the CIA" at the time, though little – if any – evidence of such "steps" having been taken exists.[32] Instead, it appears that his effort to remove ties was more an effort to rebrand the airline during the 1990s, following the apparent involvement of the airline in the Gulf War (discussed in chapter 10).[33]

Reasons to doubt Langton's claim would soon emerge, thanks to reporting from local journalist Bob Fitrakis. Fitrakis would note that, in addition to Leslie Wexner, Jeffrey Epstein and other key figures at The Limited, the other main figures who were key in securing SAT's relocation to Ohio were Alan D. Fiers Jr., the former chief of the CIA Central American Task Force, and retired Air Force Major General Richard Secord, head of air logistics for SAT's covert action in Laos between 1966 and 1968, while the company was still known as Air America.[34]As noted in chapter 7, Secord was also the air logistics coordinator in the illegal Contra resupply network for Oliver North during Iran-Contra, while Fiers was also one of the key individuals involved in Iran-Contra. The involvement of both Secord and Fiers in SAT's relocation to Columbus to run cargo for The Limited is incredibly telling, given their history. At the very least, this strongly suggests that SAT planned to utilize the Hong Kong to Columbus route for much more than just textiles.

This concern was apparently shared by local Ohio officials at the time. In a 2019 interview with Bob Fitrakis I conducted while working for *MintPress News*, Epstein's and Wexner's involvement with SAT's relocation to Ohio had caused suspicion among some prominent state and local officials, who suspected that the two were working with intelligence.[35] Fitrakis specifically stated that then-Ohio

Inspector General David Strutz and then-Sheriff of Franklin County Earl Smith had personally told him that they believed that both Epstein and Wexner had ties to the CIA. Past allegations of Epstein's intelligence links prior to this period were previously discussed in chapter 11.

Fitrakis also told *me* that Strutz had referred to SAT's route between Hong Kong and Columbus on behalf of Wexner's company The Limited as "the Meyer Lansky run," as he believed that Wexner's association with SAT was related to Wexner's ties to elements of organized crime, which were detailed in chapter 13.

In addition, Catherine Austin Fitts – the former investment banker and government official who has extensively investigated the intersection of organized crime, black markets, Wall Street, and the government in the U.S. economy – was told by an ex-CIA employee that Wexner was one of five key managers of organized crime cash flows in the United States. She revealed this in a 2019 interview I conducted with her for *MintPress News*.[36] This allegation is worth considering in the context of both SAT's and Arrow Air's historic ties to not only the CIA, but banks utilized by the CIA for covert smuggling operations, like BCCI.

Perhaps unsurprisingly, the lofty promises SAT had made as the deal was being cemented rapidly dissolved. While SAT had promised Ohio's government that it would create 300 jobs in three years, it quickly laid off numerous workers and failed to construct the maintenance facility it had promised, even though it had already accepted $3.5 million in taxpayer funds for that and other projects. As the company's financial problems mounted, Ohio's government declined to recoup the millions in dollars it loaned the company, even after it was alleged that $32 million discovered in the personal bank account of Mary Bastian, the wife of SAT's owner and former CIA lawyer James Bastian, were actually company funds.[37] On October 1, 1998, SAT filed for bankruptcy. Incidentally, it was the very same day that the CIA's Inspector General had published a comprehensive report on the airline's illicit involvement in drug trafficking in connection with the Agency.

After bankruptcy, Southern Air Transport would re-emerge a year later in 1999 as Southern Air. Thomas Gillies, who had been president of SAT when it collapsed in 1998, would return as Southern Air's president.[38] In 2003, Southern Air filed for bankruptcy. Prior to its bankruptcy, it had won and operated US government contracts related to the Iraq War.[39] Southern Air Transport was largely reorganized by Southern Air thanks to James "Jim" Neff, who had previously orchestrated "the massive international expansion of the world's largest all cargo airline, Flying Tigers," the airline tied to Anna Chennault and Robert Keith Gray that was also seemingly connected to the aforementioned Polar Air Cargo.[40] Neff later went on to create Western Global airlines, where SAT and Southern Air's president Thomas Gillies served as executive vice president.[41] In 2016, Western Global became a source of controversy after one of its unmarked planes was found to contain a dead body and 67 tons of South African banknotes in its cargo hold during an emergency landing.[42] Given the history of SAT following its Ohio relocation and into the present, it seems unlikely that SAT was unconnected to US intelligence at the time of its 1995 relocation and afterwards, as had been claimed SAT executives.

As for Wexner, Epstein, and The Limited, it seems as though their attention turned towards Lane Aviation Corp. following the implosion of SAT in 1998. Originally founded in 1935, Lane had expanded into Rickenbacker first in June 1995, shortly after SAT's relocation to the airport, and can be found in Epstein's black book of contacts.[43] Lane would later handle some Columbus area visits of celebrities in Epstein's and Maxwell's inner circle, such as the Duchess of York Sarah Ferguson, as well as aircraft for The Limited.[44] By 2010, Lane was a critical provider of "essential services that are largely invisible to the public but support most of the flights into and out of the airport [Rickenbacker]."[45]

In 2011, something rather curious happened at Rickenbacker. After heavy lobbying from local businessmen, US customs officials began to clear private planes at "the two private terminal operators at Port Columbus" instead of having to go through customs checks at the main terminal.[46] The main businessman behind this lobbying effort, per media reports, was "Limited Brands chairman and CEO Leslie H. Wexner."[47] The two private terminal operators at Port Columbus at the time were Lane Aviation and Landmark Aviation. After the news was announced, flights for The Limited between Columbus and Hong Kong doubled.[48] A few years later, in 2014, Lane Aviation moved to add its own customs office to Rickenbacker, which it would share with Landmark Aviation.[49]

Here, it is important to add some context about Landmark Aviation. Landmark's board of trustees has included such figures as former CIA director, former Secretary of Defense, and former head of the intelligence/military contractor MITRE James Schlesinger as well as former US Senator Bob Kerrey and former Pentagon Comptroller Dov Zakheim.[50] In 2012, it was purchased by the Carlyle Group.[51] That same year, *Free Press*, where Bob Fitrakis served as editor-in-chief, reported that Landmark Aviation had been involved in extraordinary rendition flights on behalf of the CIA.[52]

The Carlyle Group is a global investment firm with historic ties to intelligence and the Bush family. In addition, after September 11, 2001, their ties to the bin Laden family in the years prior to the 9/11 attacks came under scrutiny. Carlyle's executives have often had ties to intelligence, with one example being its chairman emeritus, Frank Carlucci, who served as deputy director of the CIA and, later, Reagan's Secretary of Defense.

Carlyle's co-founder and current co-chairman is David Rubenstein. Rubenstein served on the board of the influential Trilateral Commission at the same time as Jeffrey Epstein, while his ex-wife Alice Rogoff (whom he divorced in 2017) had a very close relationship with Ghislaine Maxwell as well as Maxwell's now defunct "charity," the TerraMar Project.[53] In 2022, during the Ghislaine Maxwell trial, a juror in the case, Scotty David, who works for the Carlyle Group, subsequently took credit for the jury's decision to find Ghislaine Maxwell guilty and "inadvertently" revealed that he had incorrectly answered a pre-trial questionnaire. This affair, referred to as "JurorGate" by some, almost resulted in a mistrial.[54]

RE-EXAMINING "CHINAGATE"

Returning to 1995 – the year of SAT's relocation to Ohio and the year where Epstein made his last visit to the Clinton White House – is there any possibility that the White House visits and Epstein's involvement with the affairs of SAT are linked? Given Clinton's own history in Iran-Contra as it relates to Southern Air Transport and Mena, Arkansas (See Chapter 8), it is not unreasonable to posit a relationship between Epstein's visits to the Clinton White House and Epstein-connected efforts related to CIA-linked airlines, particularly Southern Air Transport. This is especially true given Epstein's own past associations with arms trafficking and the broader Iran-Contra network.

Why, of all the possible airlines, were Arrow Air and Southern Air Transport – airlines extensively involved in the covert smuggling of drugs and weapons – specifically courted by Epstein, Wexner, and the Limited to take up activities at the Rickenbacker Airstrip in Columbus? Is there a connection to Rickenbacker's longstanding ties to the Anna Chennault and Robert Keith Gray-connected Flying Tigers, going back decades? Why did The Limited, a company whose logistics networks had been tied to organized crime at least as early as 1985, seek to team up with these specific airlines? What do we make of Epstein, who had historic ties to arms smuggling, intelligence, and operations that ran parallel to Iran-Contra, and his involvement with these affairs? And what of the involvement of Iran-Contra figures Alan Fiers and Richard Secord in Southern Air Transport's relocation to Columbus?

There are a mass of questions that emerge when examining, not only the activities surrounding Rickenbacker in the early to mid-1990s, but also in examining that past connections of both that specific airstrip and the airlines involved, as previously detailed in this book.

Yet, when looking at both this situation in tandem with the nature of Epstein's Clinton White House visits, Epstein's own past and the controversial activities of his main White House contact, Mark Middleton – there may be yet an answer to many of these questions, one which may hint at a major scandal of the Clinton era that has managed to remain hidden for decades.

In 1991, the *Washington Post* published an article entitled "China's Weapons Mafia," written by William Triplett III, then a senior staff member of the Senate

Foreign Relations Committee.[55] The article named many of the companies that popped up in the course of the investigations around "Chinagate," including Great Wall and Poly Technologies. Also mentioned is Norinco. As noted in chapter 11, Douglas Leese, at the time he was "mentoring" Epstein, was involved with a joint venture between his company Lorad and Norinco. In addition, Leese, along with Epstein and Adnan Khashoggi, were allegedly involved with the sale of Norinco weapons during the Iran-Iraq War.

The *Post* article continues, stating that "this network of front companies and secretive international trading firms have one other thing in common: They are run for profit by China's ruling clans, the dynastic families that were disgraced in the Cultural Revolution but survived and thrive today." Almost all of these companies, it notes, were set up "in the 1980s as export companies for the various armament ministries and the Equipment (Armament) Department of the Chinese People's Liberation Army (PLA)." Other reports from the 1990s stated that three specific companies – Norinco, Poly Technologies (also referred to in some reports as the Poly Group), and China Jingan "have dominated global small-arms traffic" since the 1980s.[56]

Triplett cites a DIA report, which states:

> The companies … are established and chartered to conduct business in the international market. Many have offices overseas. While they are profit-oriented and are the key means for defense complex foreign-exchange earnings, they are also the primary conduits for the acquisition of new and advanced technologies.

In other words, these companies not only seek to market their armaments, but also play a significant role in technology transfer.

It goes on to note that, in the 1980s, "China emerged as a leading arms supplier to the Third World, signing agreements between 1983 and 1990 worth more than $16 billion." During that time, the article points out, the biggest markets for Chinese weapons were Iran and Iraq during the Iran-Iraq war (1981-1988). Yet, since that war concluded, the article states that "China must look elsewhere for major sales."

The article also critically notes that, during these arms sales in the 1980s, "the bank of choice" for Chinese arms dealers in this network was none other than BCCI. It also states that "BCCI also operated in Beijing, the Shenzhen Special Economic Zone outside Hong Kong, and in 27 branches of Hong Kong itself through what BCCI called the Bank of Credit and Commerce International Hong

Kong (BCCIHK). Profits through this system were used by the Chinese elite who were intimately tied to these companies to import luxury goods for themselves, foreign travel, or stored abroad in 'secret stashes.'"

As previously mentioned in chapter 8 and the last chapter, the Riady family and John Huang – central figures in the Chinagate campaign finance scandal and later associates of Mark Middleton – had been the main forces behind the ultimately unsuccessful rescue of BCCIHK in 1991. It was also noted that they had attempted to bring in state-owned China Resources, an alleged front for Chinese military intelligence, to that rescue. After BCCIHK did fail, China Resources and the Riadys' network increasingly intermingled from 1992 onwards.

On the BCCIHK collapse, Triplett writes that "It is unclear what effect the BCCI scandal and the multiple investigations of the bank and its affiliates may have on Beijing's ability to smoothly arrange financing for insuring, storing, and shipping weapons, or diverting money to bank accounts abroad."

Triplett also quotes a Congressional Research Service report, which stated that "it is not clear whether China will be able to sustain its level of arms sales in the Near East region now that the Iran-Iraq war has ended and it is a party to discussions aimed at regulating arms transfers to this region …. Given China's need and desire to obtain hard currency, it seems prepared to pursue arms-sales opportunities it deems appropriate whenever they present themselves."

Last but not least, this article also indicates that, at the time, "control of Chinese sales of weapons of mass destruction" was a hot topic in foreign policy circles, so much so that "Secretary of State James A. Baker III reportedly may soon go to Beijing to take up the issue." As previously mentioned in chapter 12, Baker had a mysterious relationship with Jeffrey Epstein and, before leaving office in 1992, had rented a Manhattan mansion then-owned by the State Department to Epstein.

Thus, in 1991, we have a situation where Chinese arms giants, also major figures in technology transfer, were at a crossroads. They needed new markets for their weapons and, with the collapse of BCCIHK, they needed a new yet similar web of financial institutions that would aid them in the laundering and sequestering of their profits.

They found their new market, not in the Middle East, but in the United States. As the *LA Times* later reported: "When [the Iran-Iraq] war subsided, the three companies [Norinco, Poly Group, and China Jingan] moved into the market created by the ballistic mayhem of American streets, selling primarily semiautomatic versions of the AK-47 and low-cost handguns modeled on more famous brands. Norinco joined Colt and Smith & Wesson on police logs across the country."[57] Poly Group created a US subsidiary, PTK Holdings, which claimed to have sold around $200 million in weapons in the US between 1987 and 1992.[58]

However, like the "boom years" of the Iran-Iraq war, the companies' "boom years" in the US didn't last. In 1993, Clinton issued an executive order that linked the annual review of China's most favored nation (MFN) trading status to "overall significant progress" in human rights. A year later, in May 1994, as the activities of Huang, Trie, and others picked up steam in the Clinton White House, Clinton reversed course and "de-linked" China's MFN status from any human rights concerns.[59] As noted in the previous chapter, much of the early lobbying around what later became Chinagate had revolved around the Clinton Commerce Department, export-import and trade policy as well as China's MFN status. Particularly interested in the MFN issue was James Riady, who broached the issue during at least one of his meetings with Clinton. It is highly likely that the activities of the Riadys, Huang, and others during this period (particularly their sizable donations) had contributed to Clinton's policy reversal.

However, to appease some in his party, including George Mitchell and Nancy Pelosi, Clinton announced that he would ban the import of Chinese munitions, which Clinton described as a "discrete" sign of US discontent with certain Chinese government policies.[60] The ban "deeply wounded one of the main profit sources of the three primary Chinese companies" involved in selling arms to the US, namely Norinco and the Poly Group.[61] Gun sales to the US, per the *LA Times*, had been "one of Norinco's most profitable businesses." In the case of Poly Group, the US ban "cut off an important source of revenue for the Chinese military," which owns Poly Group. Despite the blow to major state-owned weapons manufacturers, "the Chinese government only mildly protested the weapons sanctions."[62]

This lack of protest may have been because, soon after the ban was announced, plans were apparently being made to smuggle weapons into the US. As the *LA Times* reported, citing sources that worked in China's arm trade, "it was the sudden elimination of the United States as the biggest market for Chinese small arms in 1994 that created an atmosphere in which smuggling weapons into the US became a dangerous possibility."[63] In the case of the Poly Group, it later emerged that "Poly executives quickly began seeking to smuggle Chinese-made guns" after the ban was made public in 1994.[64]

In the previous chapter, it was mentioned that among the controversial activities of Charlie Trie, arguably the most controversial was his role in bringing China's "premier arms dealer" Wang Jun to a presidential coffee. Wang Jun, at the time was chairman of the Poly Group, described as the "chief weapons trading arm" of the PLA.[65] The company's president was He Ping, the son-in-law of Deng Xiaoping, China's leader from 1978 to 1992. Poly's vice president was also the daughter of former Chinese leader Yang Shangkun. Wang Jun had similar family ties – his father was Wang Zhen, formerly a vice president of China who served in prominent posts during Deng Xiaoping's government and who was also a close friend of the Deng family.

At the presidential coffee, Wang Jun met and was photographed with President Clinton. Later, both Clinton and White House officials would say they knew nothing about Wang, with Clinton adding that his presence at the coffee was "clearly inappropriate."

While other White House officials may not have known who Wang Jun was, Mark Middleton certainly did and long before the February 1996 event where Jun would meet the president. In early May 1994, at a private White House luncheon, an American employee of Wang Jun named Claude Collins was asked to speak to a "small gathering of business leaders" after he had escorted Deng Xiaoping's son, Deng Zhifang, "to some of America's premier corporate centers." After the lunch, Middleton called Collins "for more details about Wang." "He grilled me and grilled me … It's hard to believe that they didn't know who he was," Collins later told journalist Rebecca Carr.[66] It is also worth noting that during this time frame, Middleton was already deeply involved with the main conspirators in the "Chinagate" scandal as well as another intelligence-linked individual closely tied to Chinese arms sales – Jeffrey Epstein.

Also, in October 1995, Wang Jun met Commerce Secretary Ron Brown at the Shangri-La hotel in Hong Kong, a controversial dinner that had been orchestrated by Charlie Trie, Ng Lap Seng, Antonio Pan, and Ernie Green. All four had close ties to the Riadys and, as mentioned in the previous chapter, Trie relied on Middleton and Green as his main confidants during this period. It is also worth mentioning that a business partner of Wang Jun, Huang Jichum, was a member of Johnny Chung's "China delegation" that visited the White House in 1995.[67]

Thus, Wang Jun had met other figures with prominent positions in the US government and/or DNC aside from Middleton before the February 1996 coffee. As a result, it is hard to believe that Middleton was alone in knowing who Wang Jun was at the time of the coffee.

Indeed, as the *Chicago Tribune* noted, Wang "is well-known in international arms circles and reportedly enjoys close personal and political ties to several chiefs of state" and is "regarded as one of the world's more powerful private citizens."[68] It seems odd that, given this, he was completely unknown to White House officials. The DNC, in allowing Trie to bring Wang to the coffee, had asked the White House to clear entry for Trie and Wang; yet, for some reason, no such check was done. Had Middleton been involved in scuttling these checks?

Though possible, Congressional reports indicate that Ernie Green – a Lehman Brothers banker, DNC managing trustee, and Charlie Trie's other confidant – had been intimately involved in securing Wang's attendance.[69] Part of Green's role involved his $50,000 donation to the DNC on the same day as the coffee. While Green claimed the donation came purely from him and his wife, David Mercer of the DNC said he received Green's check, not from Green but from Charlie Trie, and testified that he understood the donation as being connected to the coffee.[70] Beginning in December 1995 and through the end of February 1996, Green engaged in suspect banking activity, including "depositing large amounts of cash." He later "could not account for any of these transactions" when questioned by congressional investigators.[71] Thus, Wang Jun's White House visit and meeting with the president intimately involved the nexus responsible for the campaign finance scandal. That nexus, as detailed in the last chapter, was deeply tied to individuals enmeshed with the Chinese government as well as the Riady family.

Returning to Wang Jun, while the February 6, 1996 coffee was his most controversial meeting, it was not his only important meeting during this particular trip to the US. Wang had actually entered the US on February 1 and his whereabouts between the 1st and the 5th are unknown. On February 5, Trie hosted a party for Wang at his Watergate apartment that he shared with Ng Lap Seng and used as an office/event center.[72] Little is known about the party, but at least one important player in the Clinton administration who was associated with Trie, Jude Kearney of the Commerce Department, was scheduled to attend. The next day, not only did Wang attend the coffee, he also met with Commerce Secretary Ron Brown. After meeting Brown he met with Ernie Green, Ng Lap

Seng, and Trie. Only after that did Wang attend the White House coffee. After the coffee, Green took Wang to New York, ostensibly for a meeting between Wang and Lehman Brothers.

There is much to the timing of Wang Jun's White House visit. Wang's visit coincided with a major ATF/US Customs investigation into arms smuggling by Wang's Poly Group as well as Norinco, the Chinese state-owned weapons company that, since 1983, had a joint venture with Jeffrey Epstein's mentor and associate Douglas Leese. As congressional investigators later noted "Shortly after Wang's Washington tour and appearance at the White House, word of the Federal investigation into Poly Technologies was leaked to the press."[73] It continues, stating that "this leak brought an early end to the sting operation run by the Customs Service [known as Operation Dragon Fire]. At the time of the leak, Customs officials were on the verge of arresting high-ranking Chinese officials for arms smuggling. After the leak, which came from 'diplomatic sources,' the Customs officials were left only with low-level criminals to arrest."

One of the "high-ranking" officials who escaped to China after being tipped off by "diplomatic sources" in the Clinton administration was Robert Ma, who "ran most of Wang's operations in Atlanta," including Poly Group's US subsidiary PTK Holdings.[74] Ma had left the US for China just two days before his arrest warrant was executed.[75] In addition, *Vanity Fair* later reported that Poly Group, even prior to the initiation of Operation Dragon Fire, was already under investigation due to "allegations that the Polytech subsidiary [PTK Holdings] was attempting to covertly acquire advanced US weapons and radar technology."[76] Despite the leak and the escape of the top co-conspirators, the sting operation – which took place in San Francisco – was still "the largest seizure of fully operational automatic weapons in the history of US law enforcement."[77]

The source of the leaks that derailed Operation Dragon Fire was never revealed. It is also important to point out that those leaks not only prevented the arrest of the main conspirators, but also came just before Congress was due to vote on China's MFN status that year. If the leaks hadn't happened and Operation Dragon Fire had been allowed to continue and arrest its top targets, press reports and statements from Congressmen at the time make it clear that the country's MFN status would have been revoked.[78]

It turns out that the ships used to smuggle the weapons seized via Operation Dragon Fire were owned by China Ocean Shipping Company (COSCO), the “merchant marine arm” of the PLA. A partner of COSCO at the time was Hutchinson-Whampoa, whose main shareholder was Li Ka-Shing. Li was another figure related to Charlie Trie and who attended the October 1995 Shangri-La meeting with Trie, Ng Lap Seng, Ernie Green, and Wang Jun. Li was also a principal of the China International Trust and Investment Corporation (CITIC), a state-owned conglomerate which Wang Jun also ran. In addition, Li was also a partner in the Riady-owned Hong Kong Chinese bank alongside the chairman of China Resources.[79] COSCO was subsequently a source of controversy in the late 1990s over allegations it was involved in smuggling and due to concerns that plans to lease land to the company on or near US ports may have “security implications.”[80]

In addition to the smuggling activities, Wang Jun’s Poly Group was intimately involved with technology transfer. After his company’s US branches came under scrutiny in connection with weapons smuggling, documents and records kept by Poly’s Atlanta subsidiary, PTK Holdings, indicated that “the company may have intended to serve as a conduit through which the Chinese military could covertly acquire advanced US weapons technology and products.”[81]

The *Chicago Tribune* reported that company records showed that “starting in the late 1980s, top Poly executives in China and Atlanta discussed plans to disguise shipments of militarily sensitive technology to China.” It was also revealed that Poly Group “executives transferred funds between offshore accounts and shell corporations in an apparent attempt to conceal their assets and activities.”[82]

In 1988, a year after PTK was founded in the US, company memos revealed plans to ship at least $19 million “worth of militarily sensitive US-made radar equipment, then use a state-controlled shipping line to send the products to a harbor” close to Beijing.[83] That same year, “an officer in Poly’s purchasing branch in Beijing wrote to a PTK executive instructing him to repackage a shipment of computer equipment in brown paper and unmarked wood crates” in another apparent effort of illicit technology transfer.[84]

In this context, it is also worth returning to re-examine Loral and its CEO Bernard Schwartz. As mentioned in the last chapter, Schwartz, between 1992 and 1996 was among the top (legal) contributors to the DNC, and some of his donations controversially seemed to result in privileged access to Commerce Secretary Ron Brown and a spot on Brown’s plane during a trade mission to

China. It was also noted in the previous chapter that Schwartz's company Loral was under investigation for passing sensitive technology to China, specifically a subsidiary of Chinese Aerospace Corporation, China Great Wall Industries.

In 1998, Schwartz revealed in an interview with the *New York Times* that, on the plane with Brown to China, he asked Brown to "arrange a private meeting with Zhu Gao Feng, the vice minister of China's Ministry of Post and Telecommunications. In a meeting with Chinese telecommunications officials, Brown publicly praised Loral's Globalstar cellular telephone system." The *Times* then states that "Brown did arrange the meeting for Schwartz and another executive at the Chinese telecommunications ministry. 'I thought it was terrific – a real opportunity, what a shot,' Schwartz recalled. 'It was a big deal. In a place like China, it was important because the next time I went, I was able to say I had met with the minister.'"[85]

It appears that Schwartz also met with another Chinese businessman involved with the telecommunications industry during that visit – Li Kashing. During a Senate committee hearing in 1999, it was revealed that "Li [was] so close to the Chinese government that the Clinton White House included his bio along with Chinese president Jiang Zemin to the CEO of Loral Aerospace, Bernard Schwartz, just prior to the 1994 Ron Brown trade trip to Beijing. According to documents provided by the Commerce Department, Brown and Schwartz were to meet both Li and Gen. Shen Rougjun of COSTIND." COSTIND is China's Commission for Science, Technology, and Industry for National Defense, the government ministry that sets policy for arms and defense procurement and has been compared to the Pentagon's DARPA.[86]

As recently mentioned, Li Ka-shing was a business partner of the Riadys, China Resources chairman Shen Jueren, and Wang Jun. In addition, Li Ka-shing had attended one of the controversial Chinagate fundraisers with many of these same characters and a shipping company linked to his business empire was directly involved in the smuggling operations targeted by Operation Dragon Fire.

Soon, Schwartz began to heavily lobby the Clinton administration to transfer the approval of satellite exports from the State Department to Ron Brown's Commerce Department. Joining Schwartz in these efforts were the chairmen of Hughes Electronics and Lockheed Martin. A letter co-signed by the three executives stated: "By making possible real 'one stop shopping' for all export authorizations related to commercial communications satellite systems, your decision will greatly enhance the ability of U.S. manufacturers to retain our global competitiveness."[87]

The relationship with Loral and Lockheed was particularly close, as Loral sold off its defense division to Lockheed Martin in 1996.[88] The decision to sell was made by Schwartz during a private dinner with Lockheed's CEO Norm Augustine.[89] Loral subsequently moved to "focus exclusively on the satellite industry as Loral Space & Communications." Schwartz later said that his close relationship and fondness of Norm Augustine was "key to the transaction" and that "without Augustine's presence, [...] there would have been no deal."[90] Just a few years later, Augustine would create In-Q-tel, the CIA's venture capital arm, at the behest of the US intelligence community.

The same year Loral merged with Lockheed, Loral came under investigation for its alleged role in illicit technology transfers to entities associated with the Chinese military, specifically a subsidiary of the China Aerospace Corporation, Great Wall. As noted in the last chapter, the well-connected daughter of China's top general was running another China Aerospace subsidiary and had been involved with Johnny Chung's illegal fundraising activities and influence operations.

Notably, Hughes Electronics, which lobbied alongside Loral and Lockheed to change satellite export approval policy, also came under investigation with Loral for technology transfers to the same company.[91] Hughes also made campaign contributions for the 1996 election, though the *New York Times* described its donations as "modest and bipartisan" in comparison to Schwartz's donations.[92]

Once under investigation, Schwartz retained two notable individuals to defend Loral – Richard Perle and Douglas Feith. Shortly before being retained by Schwartz and Loral, both Perle and Feith had written the policy document "A Clean Break."[93] As noted in chapter 14, A Clean Break was written for Israeli Prime Minister Benjamin Netanyahu and was described in the press as "a blueprint for a mini-cold war in the Middle East, advocating the use of proxy armies for regime changes, destabilization, and containment. Indeed, it even goes so far as to articulate a way to advance right-wing Zionism by melding it with missile-defense advocacy."[94] Also noted in that chapter was Perle's longstanding proximity to Israeli arms dealers and Israeli espionage efforts targeting the United States.

At the time he was retained by Schwartz, Perle was on the board of Hollinger International and ran its subsidiary Hollinger Digital. Alongside him on the board at the time was Leslie Wexner, among others. Perle's involvement with Schwartz and Loral also overlapped with his time on the Defense Policy Board, where he worked closely with then-Secretary of Defense Donald Rumsfeld. In the case of Feith, his time working on the Loral matter overlapped with his stint as Under Secretary of Defense for policy under Rumsfeld.

For Perle, he was also involved in another concern at the time he worked on behalf of Schwartz and Loral. Per the *New York Times*, Perle had also been "retained by Global Crossing, the communications giant, to overcome Defense Department opposition to its proposal to be sold to a venture led by Hutchison Whampoa, the conglomerate controlled by Hong Kong billionaire Li Ka-shing."[95]

Before Clinton left office, he granted Schwartz what he and Loral had sought and gave satellite export approval to the Commerce Department. Clinton's decision to do so "overruled a recommendation by Secretary of State Warren Christopher and caused friction inside the Cabinet over concerns that American security could be compromised."[96]

The Clinton White House continued to give Schwartz what he wanted, even signing waivers that authorized Loral to continue selling satellites to the same Chinese network of companies despite being under federal investigation at the time for those exact same activities. The president had been told that, in signing these waivers, he was "letting Loral 'off the hook on criminal charges for its unauthorized assistance to China's ballistic missile program.'"[97]

THE ENTERPRISE STRIKES BACK

We now return to a point where one question in particular stands out: Is there significance to the fact that Mark Middleton, involved with Chinese military espionage operations engaged in arms smuggling and technology transfer, was also meeting with Jeffrey Epstein, a figure tied to US and Israeli intelligence networks with a history in arms smuggling, during the exact same period? Given the frequency of Middleton's meetings with Charlie Trie, Johnny Huang, and Epstein it seems that Middleton was meeting at least a few times a month with some of these espionage-linked figures. What of Epstein's relationship with Ghislaine Maxwell, whose father had also previously played a major role, on Israel's behalf, in arms smuggling and technology transfers?

On top of that, it is also critical to consider what was detailed in the first part of this chapter – that Epstein, during this very period, had played a key role in courting first Arrow Air and then Southern Air Transport – two CIA-linked airlines with histories of arms and/or drug smuggling – to relocate to Columbus, Ohio, for the express purpose of servicing Leslie Wexner's the Limited. At the time, Epstein had such a far-reaching power of attorney with Wexner, he could have utilized the Limited's flights (and general relationship) with Southern Air Transport in any way he saw fit. Is there a possibility that Epstein's meetings at the White House with Mark Middleton were also connected to his efforts related to Southern Air Transport?

If so, this could this be the reason why Clinton's successor, George W. Bush, used his first invocation of "executive privilege" while in office to shield any information on the investigation into Middleton in the 1990s from being made public. The *Associated Press* reported on September 6, 2001 that Bush was "prepared" to engage in his "first known use of executive privilege" to subpoena memos "about three Clinton-era cases."[98] One of these cases, the article reveals, was that involving Mark Middleton. The Bush administration subsequently invoked concerns that documents related to the investigation into Middleton would violate the "national interest" if released to Congress.[99] The Bush administration's decision to block these records, but not, for instance, transcripts between Bill Clinton and Ehud Barak related to the pardon of Marc Rich, reveals the significance of Middleton's activities before and after his 1995 resignation from the White House.

If Epstein's meetings with Middleton were connected to Southern Air Transport's activities during this same period, what would that mean? The Chinese network in which Middleton was enmeshed at the time was known to be engaged in smuggling weapons into the US. They simultaneously seem to have been paying off the DNC and the Clintons, a political dynasty notorious for "pay-to-play" politics. In addition, one of these companies smuggling weapons as part of this network – Norinco – had past ties to Epstein and Douglas Leese. Were Middleton's meetings with Epstein related to efforts to smuggle Norinco and Poly weapons into the United States in a way that would forever elude future sting operations like the thwarted Operation Dragon Fire? If so, would technology transfer to China have also been involved?

These possibilities seem increasingly likely when considering Epstein's affiliation with Israeli and US intelligence at this time as well as the close-knit network that had surrounded Robert Maxwell prior to his death.

In chapter 7, it was noted that an odd plan developed by GeoMiliTech (GMT), a company tied to veterans of US and Israeli intelligence and to the arms dealing network involving Robert Maxwell and Nicholas Davies, was brought up at a CIA meeting with Bill Casey. That plan had involved "a complicated three-way trading scheme, developed by GMT as a means of sustaining finances and equipment for covert operations."

The details of the plan were "a circular arrangement in which a trading company would be established to supply freedom fighter movements which Congress was unwilling to support for one reason or another. … Israel would sell certain things, military equipment, to the People's Republic of China, who would supply Soviet arms, which would then be brokered. … Israel would be benefited by the United States through a high technology support or other compensation."[100]

The following was also stated in chapter 7:

> A schematic outline of this trading arrangement that was entered into evidence shows the destination for the arms sourced from China.[101] They would go to US-backed rebels in Afghanistan, Angola, Nicaragua, and Cambodia. GMT, in other words, was proposing the creation of a multi-national economic arrangement that would bind together the US, Israel, and China through a series of credit extensions, technology transfers, and arms deals.

> It is quite possible that this was the ultimate plan for what the Enterprise was intended to become though the official narrative holds that this arrangement was never completed. It seems clear that certain elements of the plan did go into motion. Israel and China intensified economic and political relations in the 1980s and both actively collaborated with the US in covert operations.

Here, we have individuals tied to the networks explored in depth in this book discussing plans to bring the US, Israel, and China together through arms deals and technology transfers. In this chapter and the previous one, we have already seen an apparent effort by the Clinton network, also previously involved in Iran-Contra and with BCCI, to sign off on and then shield illegal technology transfers between the US and China and then sabotage efforts to hold to account Chinese state-owned companies engaged in arms smuggling into the US.

Much of this book, particularly Chapters 9 and 14, has dealt with the lesser known aspects of the "special relationship" between the US and Israel that resulted in the plunder of US military technology by Israeli espionage efforts. And, of course, as part of the better known aspects of that special relationship, the US government sells a massive amount of arms and sensitive military technology to Israel every year. But, what of Israel and China?

In 1993, a year when the Riady family – the key power nexus behind "Chinagate" – began to take on China Resources as a major business partner, then-CIA director James Woolsey told Congress that Israel had been selling "advanced military technology to China for more than a decade and is moving to expand its cooperation with Beijing."[102] The CIA also asserted that Israel's sale of military technology to China "may be several billion dollars." The agency also said that "Beijing probably hopes to tap Israeli expertise for cooperative development of military technologies, such as advanced tank power plants and airborne radar systems, that the Chinese would have difficulty producing on their own." According to a *New York Times* report on Woolsey's statements, "The agency's assessment is likely to provoke calls by members of Congress for greater scrutiny of the sale of American military technology to Israel."[103] However, thanks to the "special relationship" between the US and Israel, this did not come to pass. The *Times* noted too that, also in 1993, the General Accounting Office "asserted that the United States had not adequately supervised the sale of American technology to Israel" for at least one sensitive military program.

A year prior in 1992, it had been disclosed in a Pentagon-funded report produced by RAND Corporation that Israel was, at that time, "China's primary supplier of weapons-related technology." Also, in 1992, it was reported that the Bush administration was "concerned that Israel may have shared American-made Patriot missile technology with China, in violation of United States-Israeli agreements banning diversion of such technology to a third country."[104] These allegations were ultimately investigated by the State Department, then headed by James Baker, which found no evidence for the allegations. As previously mentioned in chapter 12, Baker had a relationship with Jeffrey Epstein at the time and rented a State Department property in Manhattan to Epstein that year for reasons that still remain unclear.

With the issue coming up at congressional hearings in 1993, and again throughout the Chinagate and related scandals of the mid-1990s, it seems that, contrary to the claims made by Baker's State Department, Israel and China had a deep technology transfer and military relationship. It is also worth reconsidering the matter of Fostergate, discussed in the last chapter, and how allegations were made that Vince Foster and Hillary Clinton gave extremely sensitive military and intelligence secrets to Israel, and that Israel was subsequently alleged to have passed them onto China.

It is also important to discuss the key figures behind the Israel-China technology transfer/military relationship and how it began. Israeli defense officials set foot in China for the first time in February 1979, when a plane carrying the CEO of Israel Aerospace Industries and senior representatives of Israel's Foreign Ministry and Defense Ministry touched down in Guangzhou. According to historians Yaakov Katz and Amir Bohbot in their book *The Weapon Wizards*, Israel was "about to lose one of its primary arms customers" – Iran, due to the 1979 revolution. Top Israeli officials felt that "China could fill that vacuum."[105]

Katz and Bohbot go on to state that "the man who opened the door to China for Israel was Saul [i.e. Shaul] Eisenberg," who had been "one of the first Westerners to do business in China, Japan, and Korea."[106] Per Katz and Bohbot, Eisenberg "used these ties to interest China in Israeli weaponry and even donated his private Boeing 707 to transport the Israeli delegation on that maiden flight to Beijing in 1979." This and subsequent negotiations saw the Israelis hope "for a shopping bonanza" from the Chinese. Weapons deals continued through the 1980s but were still conducted "in complete secrecy" up until Israel and China formally established diplomatic ties in 1992.[107]

Eisenberg, for a time Israel's richest man, had close contacts with Israeli intelligence. In fact, a meeting between Eisenberg and Mossad's David Kimche had been the occasion where Robert Maxwell first met Kimche. At that meeting, Kimche reportedly told Maxwell that the "big question is whether the State of Israel owns Eisenberg, or whether Eisenberg owns the State of Israel."[108] During that meeting, "Eisenberg developed his views on the need for connections in that most important of all connected cities, Washington."[109] Thus, in the 1980s, Eisenberg – who had personally talked to Maxwell about making connections in Washington alongside top Mossad figures – was the man who had cemented Israel's relationship with China. During this time and after, Maxwell himself was intimately involved in technology transfers and weapons deals in connection with Soviet and (mainly) Israeli intelligence. Furthermore, Maxwell's arms dealing activities, linked to Israeli intelligence, were also directly linked to GMT, which had developed plans for "a multi-national economic arrangement that would bind together the US, Israel, and China through a series of credit extensions, technology transfers, and arms deals" that had allegedly been discussed with then CIA director Bill Casey.

Author Gordon Thomas also noted that Shaul Eisenberg was intimately involved with the weapon industry, particularly with Israel Aircraft Industries, which he then owned. Thomas also noted that Eisenberg's "senior staff were drawn from the world of intelligence and included Zvi Zamir, who had run Mossad from 1968 to 1973, and Amos Manor, the first head of Shin Bet, the country's equivalent to the FBI."[110] It is also worth pointing out some similarities between Eisenberg and Leslie Wexner, as Wexner also had close ties with Chinese commercial interests and was one of the first Western businessman, after Eisenberg, to do business in the East, having partnered with Mast Industries to that effect in the early 1980s. As previously noted in chapter 14, Wexner had met with top Israeli officials to discuss opening a joint venture between his company and Chinese firms in the Golan Heights.

Did the GMT plan discussed in chapter 7 end up serving as a blueprint for some of the later activities of the intelligence-organized crime networks discussed in this book? Did Epstein, Mark Middleton, and Southern Air Transport play key roles in such a plan? Clearly, these events warrant a full investigation – one that would require access to critical information that more than one presidential administration has sought to hide from the US public for well over two decades.

Those of us without national security clearances are left to look at a trail of crumbs, which seem to paint a certain picture and lead us to a particular conclusion. However, it seems that, unless greater pressure from the public is applied to these concerns, the true nature of Epstein's meetings with Middleton and the real motive behind Epstein's courting of CIA-linked airlines on Wexner's behalf will remain elusive. At the same time, as this book has labored to show, the US government is clearly in a position where it cannot investigate itself. Indeed, if any of these threads were to be pulled on, much of the excessive corruption, espionage, and criminal activity that has filled these pages thus far would quickly unravel.

Endnotes

1 Peter D. Franklin, “Rickenbacker May Land World’s Largest Aircraft,” *Columbus Dispatch*, March 3, 1992, 01F.

2 Franklin, “Rickenbacker May Land,”; Mary Stephens, “Aeroflot Venture Could Open Markets,” *Columbus Dispatch*, March 5, 1992, Page 01B.

3 Franklin, “Rickenbacker May Land.”

4 Mary Stephens, “Aeroflot Venture.”

5 Mary Stephens, “Aeroflot Venture.”

6 Phil Porter, “Aeroflot Invites Local Group to Firm Up Plans in Moscow,” *Columbus Dispatch*, January 16, 1993, 01C.

7 “Russian Connection-Rickenbacker Runway Ready for Aeroflot,” *Columbus Dispatch*, March 17, 1993, 06A.

8 Porter, “Aeroflot Invites Local Group.”

9 Porter, “Aeroflot Invites Local Group.”

10 Porter, “Aeroflot Invites Local Group.”

11 “Russian Connection-Rickenbacker Runway.”

12 Steve Stephens, “Aeroflot Flight Lands at Rickenbacker in Trial Run From Russia,” *Columbus Dispatch*, April 26, 1993, 01C.

13 “Memorandum of Facts and Law in Support of the Defendants Motion to Vacate, Set Aside or Correct the Sentence Under 28 u.s.c.2255” (US District Court, District of Connecticut, November 2007), https://www.cia.gov/readingroom/docs/DOC_0001474387.pdf.

14 “Memorandum of Facts.”

15 Jonathan Beaty and S. C. Gwynne, *The Outlaw Bank: A Wild Ride into the Secret Heart of BCCI*, 1st ed (New York: Random House, 1993), 232, https://archive.org/details/outlawbank00jona.

16 Beaty and Gwynne, *The Outlaw Bank*, 233.

17 Phil Porter, “Cargo Service Targets City-Polar Plans to Land Weekly Flights at Rickenbacker Starting Sunday,” *Columbus Dispatch*, May 12, 1993, sec. 01D, 01D, https://dispatch.newsbank.com/doc/news/10E0D9C54B7D92F8?search_terms.

18 Porter, “Cargo Service Targets City.”

19 Porter, “Cargo Service Targets City.”

20 Barnet D. Wolf, “Rebuilding Rickenbacker’s Payloads-Hustle and Bustle Missing from Air Cargo Operations,” *Columbus Dispatch*, January 23, 1994, 01D.

21 Wolf, “Rebuilding Rickenbacker’s Payloads.”

22 Darris Blackford, “Rickenbacker Attracts Air Transporter,” *Columbus Dispatch*, March 13, 1995, 01A.

23 Blackford, “Rickenbacker Attracts Air Transporter.”

24 William Armbruster, “2 Major Carriers Set to Relocate Midwestern Hubs Aif, Southern Air Plan Big Expansions,” *Journal of Commerce Online*, March 16, 1995, https://www.joc.com/2-major-carriers-set-relocate-midwestern-hubs-aif-southern-air-plan-big-expansions_19950316.html.

25 Bob Fitrakis, “Spook Air” *Columbus Alive*, April 22, 1999, https://freepress.org/article/spook-air.

26 Fitrakis, "Spook Air."

27 William Armbruster, "Rickenbacker Airport a Growing Cargo Hub," *Journal of Commerce Online*, August 27, 1995, https://www.joc.com/rickenbacker-airport-growing-cargo-hub_19950827.html.

28 Fitrakis, "Spook Air."

29 Fitrakis, "Spook Air."

30 Nigel Rosser, "Andrew's Fixer; She's the Daughter of Robert Maxwell and She's Manipulating His Jetset Lifestyle," *Evening Standard* (London), January 22, 2001, https://www.mintpressnews.com/wp-content/uploads/2019/10/ANDREW_S-FIXER_SHE_S-THE-DAUGHTER-OF-ROBERT-MAXWELL-AND-1.pdf.

31 Blackford, "Rickenbacker Attracts Air Transporter."

32 Mike Pramik, "The $32 Million Mystery," *Columbus Dispatch*, April 4, 1999, 01H.

33 Pramik, "The $32 Million Mystery."

34 Fitrakis, "Spook Air."

35 Whitney Webb, "From 'Spook Air' to the 'Lolita Express': The Genesis and Evolution of the Jeffrey Epstein-Bill Clinton Relationship," *Unlimited Hangout*, August 23, 2019, https://unlimited-hangout.com/2019/08/investigative-series/from-spook-air-to-the-lolita-express-the-genesis-and-evolution-of-the-jeffrey-epstein-bill-clinton-relationship/.

36 Webb, "From 'Spook Air' to the Lolita Express."

37 Pramik, "The $32 Million Mystery."

38 "Southern Air Transport Remembered," *Airlines Remembered*, https://ruudleeuw.com/rem-sat2.htm.

39 Penn Bullock, "South Florida's Notorious Southern Air Connected to Zimbabwe Plane Mystery," *New Times Broward-Palm Beach*, February 23, 2016, https://www.browardpalmbeach.com/news/south-floridas-notorious-southern-air-connected-to-zimbabwe-plane-mystery-7603348.

40 "Ownership," *Western Global Airlines*, https://web.archive.org/web/20200516060117/http://www.westernglobalairlines.com/Ownership.

41 "Thomas Giles," LinkedIn, Accessed July 7, 2022, https://www.linkedin.com/in/thomas-gillies-8218133/

42 Bullock, " Zimbabwe Plane Mystery."

43 Bill Henson, "Aviation Company Continues Service to Columbus Air Travel-Loaded With History," *Columbus Dispatch*, July 24, 1995, 01.

44 Marla Matzer Rose, "Under the Radar-Lane Aviation Has Flown Own Way for 75 Years," *Columbus Dispatch*, May 2, 2010, 01D.

45 Rose, "Under the Radar."

46 Marla Matzer Rose, "Customs Alters Way It Inspects Private Jets," *Columbus Dispatch*, August 24, 2011, 10A.

47 Rose, "Customs Alters Way It Inspects."

48 Rose, "Customs Alters Way It Inspects."

49 Steve Wartenberg, "Aviation-Lane to Add Customs Office at Its Airport Hub," *Columbus Dispatch*, July 2, 2014, 1D.

50 “Landmark Aviation Announces Appointment of Shawn Vick as CEO of Airport Services,” *Charter Broker*, August 1, 2007, http://www.charterbroker.aero/newsrelease.html?id=899.

51 “The Carlyle Group Partners with Management to Acquire Landmark Aviation from GTCR and Platform Partners,” *Carlyle.com*, September 13, 2012, https://www.carlyle.com/media-room/news-release-archive/carlyle-group-partners-management-acquire-landmark-aviation-gtcr.

52 Gerry Bello, “Who Owns Scytl? George Soros Isn’t in the Voting Machines, but the Intelligence Community Is,” *Free Press*, September 18, 2012, https://freepress.org/article/who-owns-scytl-george-soros-isn%E2%80%99t-voting-machines-intelligence-community.

53 Johan Palmstruch, “Controlled Demolition: The Maxwell Trial Carlyle Group Juror,” *The Free Press Report*, January 21, 2022, https://patriotone.substack.com/p/controlled-demolition-the-maxwell, Marc Fisher, “Jeffrey Epstein: Former Member Of The Trilateral Commission,” *Technocracy News*, July 10, 2019, https://www.technocracy.news/jeffrey-epstein-former-member-of-the-trilateral-commission/.

54 Gillian Tan and Katia Porzecanski, “Ghislaine Maxwell Juror Who Could Upend Conviction Works for Carlyle Group,” Bloomberg, January 6, 2022, https://www.bloomberg.com/news/articles/2022-01-06/maxwell-juror-who-could-upend-conviction-works-for-carlyle-group.

55 William C. Triplett II, “China’s Weapons Mafia,” *Washington Post*, October 27, 1991, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/opinions/1991/10/27/chinas-weapons-mafia/5a0f8884-8953-4bbe-9ae8-fc72fb09442f/.

56 Rone Tempest, “Chinese Gun Dealer Is Global, Diversified Giant,” *Los Angeles Times*, May 25, 1996, https://www.latimes.com/archives/la-xpm-1996-05-25-fi-8129-story.html.

57 Tempest, “Chinese Gun Dealer.”

58 Tempest, “Chinese Gun Dealer.”

59 Ann Devroy, “Clinton Reverses Course on China,” *Washington Post*, May 27, 1994, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1994/05/27/clinton-reverses-course-on-china/07bc8540-a81b-4b28-8346-c0715b7534a2/.

60 Devroy, “Clinton Reverses Course.”

61 Tempest, “Chinese Gun Dealer.”

62 Tempest, “Chinese Gun Dealer.”

63 Tempest, “Chinese Gun Dealer.”

64 David Jackson, “Chinese Arms Dealer Leaves a Tangled Web,” *Chicago Tribune*, January 5, 1997, https://www.chicagotribune.com/news/ct-xpm-1997-01-05-9701050114-story.html.

65 Jackson, “Chinese Arms Dealer.”

66 Rebecca Carr, “In Atlanta, Collins Was ‘go-to’ Man for Wang,” *Atlanta Constitution*, August 15, 1999, A11, https://www.newspapers.com/image/403471141.

67 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties and Possible Violations of Law: Interim Report*, Sixth Report by the Committee on Government Reform and Oversight, Together with Additional and Minority Views, Vol. 2, November 5th, 1988, 1684, https://www.google.com/books/edition/Investigation_of_Political_Fundraising_I/XT7_xMCH4KkC.

68 Jackson, “Chinese Arms Dealer.”

69 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1390-91.

70 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1392.

71 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1392.

72 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1395.

73 *Investigation of Political Fundraising Improprieties: Interim Report*, 1396.

74 Carr, " Collins Was 'go-to' Man."

75 Howard Blum, "The Trail of the Dragon," *Vanity Fair*, December 1997, https://archive.vanityfair.com/article/1997/12/the-trail-of-the-dragon.

76 Blum, "Trail of the Dragon."

77 Blum, "Trail of the Dragon."

78 Blum, "Trail of the Dragon."

79 *Security of the Panama Canal: Hearing Before the Committee on Armed Services*, United States Senate, One Hundred Sixth Congress, First Session, October 22, 1999, p. 14, https://play.google.com/store/books/details?id=1iUt5_QRoXMC.

80 Anne-Marie O'Connor and Jeff Leeds, "U.S. Agents Seize Smuggled Arms," *Los Angeles Times*, March 15, 1997, https://www.latimes.com/archives/la-xpm-1997-03-15-mn-38557-story.html.

81 Jackson, "Chinese Arms Dealer."

82 Jackson, "Chinese Arms Dealer."

83 Jackson, "Chinese Arms Dealer."

84 Jackson, "Chinese Arms Dealer."

85 Jill Abramson and Don Van Natta Jr., "Clinton-Loral: Anatomy of a Mutually Rewarding Relationship," *New York Times*, May 24, 1998, https://archive.nytimes.com/www.nytimes.com/library/politics/052498clinton-donate.html.

86 *Security of the Panama Canal: Hearing Before the Committee on Armed Services*, 24.

87 Abramson and Van Natta, "Clinton-Loral."

88 James Sterngold, "Lockheed to Acquire Loral In a Deal Worth $10 Billion," *New York Times*, January 9, 1996, https://www.nytimes.com/1996/01/09/business/lockheed-to-acquire-loral-in-a-deal-worth-10-billion.html.

89 Peter B. de Selding, "Loral Deals, Dilemmas Detailed in Retired Chief's Autobiography," *SpaceNews*, March 4, 2014, https://spacenews.com/39701loral-deals-dilemmas-detailed-in-retired-chiefs-autobiography/.

90 de Selding, "Loral Deals."

91 Abramson and Van Natta, "Clinton-Loral."

92 Abramson and Van Natta, "Clinton-Loral."

93 Stephen Labaton, "Adviser to U.S. Aided Maker Of Satellites," *New York Times*, March 29, 2003, https://www.nytimes.com/2003/03/29/business/adviser-to-us-aided-maker-of-satellites.html.

94 Jason Vest, "The Men From JINSA and CSP," The Nation, August 15, 2002, https://www.thenation.com/article/archive/men-jinsa-and-csp/.

95 Labaton, "Adviser to U.S. Aided Maker Of Satellites"

96 Abramson and Van Natta, "Clinton-Loral."

97 Abramson and Van Natta, "Clinton-Loral."

98 John Solomon, "Bush May Use Privilege to Fight a House Request," *Philadelphia Inquirer*, September 6, 2001, A12, https://www.newspapers.com/image/179427146.

99 John W. Dean, *Worse than Watergate: The Secret Presidency of George W. Bush*, 1st Trade ed (New York: Little, Brown and Co, 2005), 86, https://archive.org/details/worsethanwaterga00dean_0.

100 *Report of the Congressional Committees Investigating the Iran-Contra Affair*, Appendix B, Vol. 10, 612, https://www.maryferrell.org/showDoc.html?docId=146480.

101 Report of the Congressional Committees, Appendix B, Vol. 10, 691.

102 Michael R. Gordon, "Israel Selling China Military Technology, C.I.A. Chief Asserts," *New York Times*, October 12, 1993, https://www.nytimes.com/1993/10/12/world/israel-selling-china-military-technology-cia-chief-asserts.html.

103 Gordon, "Israel Selling China Military Technology."

104 Elaine Sciolino, "U.S. Said to Suspect Israelis Gave China American Arms," *New York Times*, March 13, 1992, https://www.nytimes.com/1992/03/13/world/us-said-to-suspect-israelis-gave-china-american-arms.html.

105 Yaakov Katz and Amir Bohbot, *The Weapon Wizards: How Israel Became a High-Tech Military Superpower*, ePub (New York: St. Martin's Press, 2017), 214.

106 Katz and Bohbot, *Weapon Wizards*, 214.

107 Katz and Bohbot, *Weapon Wizards*, 216.

108 Gordon Thomas and Martin Dillon, *Robert Maxwell, Israel's Superspy: The Life and Murder of a Media Mogul*, 1st Carroll & Graf ed (New York: Carroll and Graf, 2002), 54, https://archive.org/details/robert-maxwell-israels-superspy-thomas-dillon-2002.

109 Thomas and Dillon, *Israel's Superspy*, 54.

110 Thomas and Dillon, *Israel's Superspy*, 54.

CHAPTER 18

PREDATORS

MODELING SCOUTS

The exact date that Jeffrey Epstein began sexually abusing women and underage girls is unclear. Court documents place the beginning somewhere in the mid-1980s, specifically around 1985 – the year he met Wexner and around the time he was alleged to have become affiliated with Robert Maxwell and Israeli intelligence. One accuser, referred to as Jane Doe #2 in court documents, accused Epstein of sexually assaulting, abusing, and battering her beginning in 1985, when she was 23.[1] Another accuser in that same lawsuit, Jane Doe #1, said she was 14 years old when Epstein began abusing her in 1990.[2] Thus, by the time he began publicly associating himself with Ghislaine Maxwell after her father's death in 1991 (and allegedly took on Robert Maxwell's mantle), Epstein had allegedly already engaged in horrific acts of sex abuse against young women, including underage girls.

Though the details of the abuse suffered by his earliest victims are scarce, much of Epstein's early sex crimes appear to be linked to his connections to the modeling industry. It is unknown exactly when his connections to the industry were made, but he had dated – during the 1980s – then Ford model Eva Andersson Dubin, a former Miss Sweden who, as mentioned in chapter 16, accompanied Epstein to the White House on at least one occasion.

Yet, one man in particular – Jean Luc Brunel – was key to Epstein's activities as it relates to the modeling industry. Brunel first became prominent in that industry in his native France in the 1980s through his work as a model scout for the Karin Models agency in Paris, which he reportedly co-founded.[3] There, he claimed to have "launched the careers of some of the most successful models of the era."[4] Former models at the time have alleged that Paris's Les Bains nightclub was "where young women who've starved themselves parade for Jean Luc Brunel."[5] Many of these young women would then attend "lively parties" at Brunel's apartment near Karin headquarters. According to the *Guardian*, his apartment "also housed a succession of younger models, many in their teens, who arrived from the US and elsewhere in Europe in search of success. They found they were expected to share bedrooms and to keep Brunel and his male friends company."[6] Those who declined reportedly weren't given modeling work.

By December 1988, Brunel was featured in a *60 Minutes* exposé. The report detailed that Brunel, among other predatory modeling scouts, had invited underage girls, many around the age of 15 or 16 years old, to Paris with promises of a glamorous, European modeling career.[7] Some of the girls interviewed for the report accused Brunel of sexual assault after he had drugged them. Another girl, who was 19 years old at the time, said Brunel "sabotaged" her career when she rejected his advances.

Despite the controversy, a year later, Brunel teamed up with Faith Kates to form Next models, which soon became "one of the most respected agencies in the industry."[8] Kates claims to have met Epstein through a "mutual friend" in the 1980s, but claims to have lost touch with him in the early 1990s before becoming reacquainted with him around 2009 or so. Reporting from *The Daily Beast* contradicts many of Kates' claims as Epstein was seen meeting with her in the late 1990s and was regularly seen at Next's offices during their supposed hiatus.[9]

From Next's founding and through much of the 1990s, Brunel and his brother Arnaud owned about 25 percent of the agency. Arnaud was also employed by Next as a consultant, where he was paid a base salary of $30,000 a year in addition to 3% of the company's annual revenue. Kates, in a 1996 lawsuit, alleged that Brunel and his brother Arnaud "basically had control of the Florida Next office." Kates had sued the Brunels, accusing them of attempting to set up a rival agency while running Next's Florida branch.

After the split, Brunel opened New York and Miami branches of Karin Models. Brunel had taken over Karin Models in 1995, one year before the lawsuit, and expanded it into the US with modeling agent Joey Hunter. It was during this period that he reportedly first met and became associated with Jeffrey Epstein. They were allegedly introduced by Ghislaine Maxwell. Maxwell had met Brunel in the 1980s, reportedly in connection with work she was doing for her father, Robert Maxwell.[10] Notably, Maxwell had considerable ties to France, including French citizenship, as her mother, Betty Maxwell, was French.

During this same period, in 1995, Jerome Bonnouvrier, a French modeling impresario, told author Michael Gross that "Jean Luc is considered a danger," presumably to young women and aspiring models.[11] Sometime between 1995 and 1999, Brunel rented an apartment in Trump Tower, whose owner Donald Trump was still close to Epstein at that time and who also has had controversial ties to the modeling industry.[12] The *New York Post* reported that Brunel was forced to leave

Trump Tower because of his antics late at night with "beautiful women," a charge Brunel denied.

Epstein's relationship with both the Brunels and Kates was unaffected by their acrimonious split. Epstein was seen at Kates' Next models "constantly" in the early 2000s and a former Next employee reported being "pulled into a meeting with Epstein and Kates" at Next's New York offices in the late 1990s. One former Next employee told *The Daily Beast* "I would only see him come in and go straight to her office with the door closed […] It was always like, 'Get Jeffrey Epstein on the phone.'"[13] Another employee at the New York office recalled answering the phone when Epstein called during this same period. Kates subsequently claimed that Epstein only visited Next's New York offices to say hello "on occasion" and rejected claims that they had any business or financial relationship during this time.

During this period, however, Epstein dated some of Next's models, including Alina Puscau, who he later arranged to work as a Victoria's Secret "angel." Another Next model Epstein dated later became a real estate agent and her name, withheld in press reports on Epstein's relationship with Next, was also reportedly listed on Epstein's flight logs. The *Daily Beast* also reported that a third Next model was listed in Epstein's book of contacts as well as in Epstein's butler's notes with the annotation "visitor's massage."[14] She also appears in Epstein's flight logs once in 2003 and attended several public functions as Epstein's escort, including to a gala associated with Next's founder and owner Faith Kates.

The Daily Beast also reported that Epstein's "secret" charity organization, Gratitude America Limited, donated considerable sums associated with Kates-linked philanthropies as well as to an organization where her son, Dylan Kogan, was employed.[15] Epstein's Gratitude America, as previously mentioned in chapter 11, also donated to a charity associated with Julian Leese, son of Douglas Leese. It also donated to charity's associated with his former girlfriend, who was herself a former model, Eva Andersson Dubin.

After Brunel's split from Kates and Next models, his ties to Epstein deepened considerably. Between 1999 and 2005, Brunel would fly on Epstein's private plane over 20 times and was described as a "regular" at Epstein's Palm Beach residence. During Epstein's time in prison after his first conviction, Brunel visited him around 70 times. It was at this time that Brunel became close with Ghislaine Maxwell as well.

During the earlier part of this period, Brunel was still running Karin Models, which, according to a former employee, was "barely profitable" at the time and was only kept afloat by cash infusions from Brunel's brother Arnaud and their business partner, Etienne des Roys. Both later dumped Jean Luc Brunel in 2003, putting his entire operation in peril.[16]

Around this time, in 2004, Epstein was seeking to gain his own foot-hold in the modeling industry as he attempted, but failed, to acquire the US branch of Elite Models.[17] That same year, the Paris branch of Karin Models sued to force Brunel to abandon his use of the Karin trademark. In 2005, Brunel rebranded his agencies in the US under the name MC2. That same year, Epstein created a new company, registered at his Villard Houses office at 457 Madison Avenue (see chapters 11 and 12), and offered Brunel a million dollar line of credit. The line of credi was part of Epstein's effort to recruit Brunel into a joint venture that would have created a new modeling agency with Elite Paris.[18] That venture fell through once reports surfaced that Epstein was under investigation for sex trafficking in Florida. However, MC2's business continued unimpeded. However, during this period, Brunel claimed Epstein ordered him to leave Florida and so he "went to Europe and Asia for a period of time."[19]

It seems that Epstein had also offered Brunel another million dollar line of credit to get MC2 back on its feet the same year he sought to go into business with Elite Paris. MC2's former bookkeeper Marita Vasquez, in a sworn statement given to federal investigators in 2010, stated that Epstein had guaranteed a line of credit of $1 million for MC2 and that he also "directly paid for the visas of models brought to the US to work for the company."[20]

At this point, Brunel's significance to Epstein's sex trafficking activities greatly increased. Vasquez also testified that the teenage models that Brunel flew in to "work" for MC2 (and whose visas had been paid for by Epstein) were housed in the 301 66th Street apartment owned by Ossa Properties – the company of Mark Epstein, Jeffrey Epstein's brother (see chapter 12). Vasquez stated that the girls were then "loaned out to wealthy clients" for as much as $100,000 a night. If they refused to have sex with the "client," then they weren't paid.[21] Brunel denied these claims, but they were notably corroborated by the most well-known of Epstein's victim, Virginia Roberts Giuffre.

In a 2014 court filing, Giuffre alleged that Brunel offered "girls 'modeling' jobs [...] Many of the girls came from poor countries or impoverished backgrounds, and he lured them in with a promise of making good money."[22] She has also alleged that she was forced to have sex with Brunel on several occasions. She also stated that Epstein imported underage girls from France with Brunel's assistance, including 12-year-old triplets he had flown from France so he could abuse them as a "birthday present" to himself.[23] Epstein maintained a residence in Paris, located in a wealthy area along Avenue Foch, but little about his activities in the country have been publicly reported.[24]

Another girl brought into Epstein's fold by Brunel was reportedly Nadia Marcinkova, who media reports have claimed was "purchased" by Epstein from her family in Eastern Europe at age 14 and never even worked as a model.[25] She has been referred to as Epstein's "sex slave" and was subsequently accused of aiding his sex trafficking operations by recruiting underage girls for Epstein and pressuring them to engage in sexual activity with him. She was also accused, like Ghislaine Maxwell, of engaging in sex acts herself with Epstein's victims as well as in "threesomes" with Epstein and underage girls.

In 2011, a few years after Epstein's first stint in prison, Marcinkova founded a company called Aviloop. *Wired* described Aviloop in 2019 as a "supremely odd aviation branding business."[26] Business records list its address as the Ossa Properties-owned apartment complex at 301 E 66th Street, suggesting it was linked with the Epstein brothers in some capacity.[27]

Further evidence of Brunel's role in Epstein's sex trafficking operation can be seen in memos seized from Epstein's Palm Beach mansion by police. One memo, taken by Epstein's staff, noted that Brunel had called and left a message for Epstein that read: "He [Brunel] has a teacher for you to teach you Russian. She is 2 x 8 years old not Blonde. Lessons are free and you can have 1st today if you call." In court, the "2 x 8 year old" claim was suggested by lawyers, including Brad Edwards, as potentially referring to two 8 year old girls.[28] However, others believe it was a coded way of referring to single 16 year old girl.

In addition, Epstein is believed to have had many of his underage victims photographed in the nude, pictures which were displayed all over his Palm Beach mansion when it was first raided by police in 2005.[29] He was never charged, nor have any of his accomplices ever been charged, with child pornography. Police also found that clocks in parts of the house had contained hidden cameras which filmed many of the girls while inside the house and potentially some of their sex acts with Epstein and his wealthy “friends.” Those images were stored on a computer hard drive also found in the residence.

Vanity Fair reported that Ghislaine had openly stated that, in addition to Epstein’s residences in Palm Beach and New York, Epstein’s “island had been completely wired for video.” Those in whom Maxwell had confided this information were left with the impression “that she [Maxwell] and Epstein were videotaping everyone on the island as an insurance policy, as blackmail.”[30] More on the hidden camera/hard drive aspects of Epstein’s operation were previously discussed in chapter 12.

Brunel, like Epstein himself, died under what some regard as suspicious circumstances while in prison. Brunel was detained in December 2020 in connection with a French investigation into Epstein’s sex crimes in that country and was found hung in his cell in February 2022.[31] The death was quickly ruled a suicide.

In addition to prominent modeling agencies, Epstein also had connections to prominent fashion designers. For instance, Tom Ford was listed in Epstein’s book of contacts at the time when Ford was creative director of Gucci, a post he held from 1994 until 2004. Ford has been routinely criticized for using naked women and/or crudely objectifying women in ad campaigns.[32] Ford is listed alongside his long-time and recently deceased partner, Richard Buckley, in Epstein’s contact book. Buckley was a well-known fashion journalist, described as “a titan of the fashion media world” who worked for outlets including *Vogue* and *Vanity Fair*.[33]

Other figures in the fashion industry in Epstein’s book of contacts include models Janice Dickinson, Naomi Campbell, and Chris Royer. Heidi Klum has also been named by Epstein victims as having flown on Epstein’s private plane, a charge she denies. Klum, for years, was notably the “biggest star” and top featured model of the Wexner-owned lingerie brand, Victoria’s Secret. Epstein repeatedly used his connection to Victoria’s Secret via Wexner to lure young women and girls into his sex trafficking enterprise.[34]

VICTORIA'S SECRETS

While Epstein was involved with Next models and Jean Luc Brunel, he was becoming increasingly involved in the affairs of the Wexner-owned lingerie brand, Victoria's Secret. Wexner had acquired Victoria's Secret in 1982, well before he met Epstein, after its previous owner, Roy Raymond, was on the verge of bankruptcy.[35] By the time Epstein linked up with Brunel in 1995, Victoria's Secret had started its iconic lingerie fashion show, which later became a televised spectacle replete with celebrities and scantily clad models. For years, until it ended in 2019, the show attracted "more viewers than all other fashion shows combined."[36] The fashion show was run by L Brands' chief marketing officer, Ed Razek, who appears in Epstein's black book of contacts and was later accused of inappropriate behavior toward company models.[37]

Victoria's Secret's clout in the industry was something Epstein was known to use on several occasions in order to grant him access to women he would abuse or attempt to abuse. Several former aspiring models have recounted how Epstein portrayed himself as either a scout or even the "owner" of the lingerie brand. These women include Alicia Arden, who was reportedly assaulted by Epstein in 1997 after being invited by Epstein to audition for the Victoria's Secret catalog. Another was Elizabeth Tai who was introduced to Epstein by a booking agent who notably referred to Epstein as "one of the important people in modeling."

Tai later told the *New York Post* that the booking agent had also told her that "this man [Epstein] is in charge of Victoria's Secret and he's going to change your life."[38] Upon meeting Epstein, Tai attempted to show Epstein her portfolio and he instead attempted to sexually assault her before she escaped. Three other models subsequently testified in a court case that Epstein had used his modeling industry connections as a lure.[39] Yet another woman, identified as Jane Doe #3 in court, was brought to Epstein by a friend who described him as "a caring man who could help with her modeling career." Upon meeting, she, too, was sexually assaulted.[40]

Epstein apparently used this lure with so many aspiring models that media reports have since characterized the situation as "an Epstein-Victoria's Secret pimp pipeline."[41] A former Manhattan-based modeling agent told the *New York Post* that "He [Epstein] portrayed himself as the back door to get a girl into Victoria's Secret. Some of those girls got in.… Not all the girls sent to him got jobs, but a lot of them did."[42] As previously mentioned, one of them was Epstein's former "girlfriend" and Next model, Alina Puscau.

Ghislaine Maxwell also played a role in Epstein's activities as it related to Victoria's Secret. Per the *New York Post,* Maxwell was a "constant fixture" at Victoria's Secret events. According to one Manhattan model entrepreneur quoted by the *Post*: "They were always [at] these really trashy shows full of rich men in the audience. Ghislaine acted as the kind of Nazi guard, telling everyone where they were sitting in the audience and that she had new 'pop tarts,' which is what she called the young models."[43] This further suggests that "young models," lured in through Victoria's Secret and other avenues, were a key target of Epstein and Maxwell's for recruitment into their sex trafficking operation.

The first sex crimes of Epstein's that involved him using Victoria's Secret as a lure reportedly took place in the late 1990s. However, it was allegedly known to the company years prior that Epstein had posed as a Victoria's Secret modeling recruiter. According to former CEO of Victoria's Secret Direct, Cindy Fedus-Fields, an executive entered her office in 1993 to tell her that Epstein, then Wexner's money manager, had been posing as a Victoria's Secret modeling recruiter. "I asked this executive to call Les directly and tell him what was happening. She did, and Les told her he would put a stop to it. The point being that inappropriate behavior was reported to Les sometime in '93."[44] In addition, as will be mentioned at the end of this chapter, Epstein appears to have recruited Melanie Walker as early as 1992 with promises of a career modeling for Victoria's Secret.

GALLERINAS

In addition to targeting aspiring models, Epstein and Maxwell also targeted aspiring fine artists and musicians. Maxwell reportedly referred to this category of girls/women as "gallerinas." Friends of Maxwell's have claimed that, on Epstein's behalf, she would "trawl high-end art galleries and auction houses looking to find" these "gallerinas," who she would then take to meet Epstein.[45] Just as she was a "fixture" at Victoria's Secret events, Maxwell was also a regular at Sotheby's, the auction house owned by Wexner's mentor A. Alfred Taubman and where Wexner himself sat on the board (see chapter 13). She also was a "familiar presence" at the other main auction house, Christie's. One former Maxwell friend stated that "The art world is full of pretty young girls and many of them are young and broke.… You'd see her [Maxwell] everywhere, often with beautiful blonde girls in tow" while at art gallery and auction house functions.[46] Another one of Epstein's many "girlfriends" during the 1990s was Shelley Lewis, who was reportedly a "gallerina" herself, having been introduced to Epstein while working in the Contemporary Art Department at Christie's New York.[47] In addition, Tiffany Dubin, another Epstein "girlfriend" from the period, was the fashion director at Sotheby's.[48]

The numerous connections to the Epstein-Wexner nexus made places like Sotheby's a controlled, safe environment for Maxwell to seek out, and lure in, unwitting "gallerinas." An additional benefit, from Maxwell's perspective, would have been the secretive dynamic of the major auction houses, which have severe restrictions around photography, meaning there is no photographic evidence of Maxwell's alleged "recruitment" activities at those places. The claim that she would attend these place with "beautiful blondes in tow" also suggests that the lack of photography made it easy to parade around an entourage of Epstein/Maxwell victims and potentially arrange "dates" between those young women and the wealthy, elite clientele that also frequented these auction houses.

Epstein and Maxwell also sought out "gallerinas" at art schools in New York, specifically the New York Academy of Art. The most well-known Epstein victim recruited from the art world, Maria Farmer, first encountered Epstein while a student at the Academy. Epstein served on the academy's board from 1987 to 1994.[49] Epstein reportedly bought a painting from Maria Farmer at a gallery show tied to her graduation and she was then employed by Epstein beginning in 1995 after he had promised to help her with her career.[50] Epstein had originally promised her work in acquiring art on his behalf, but she also spent time working in other capacities, such as managing the entrance to one of his New York properties. She and her then underage sister, Annie Farmer, were subsequently abused and targeted by Epstein as well as Ghislaine Maxwell. Maria Farmer has accused Eileen Guggenheim, then-dean of the academy and the current chairman of its board, of facilitating and enabling Epstein's predatory behavior towards her. Epstein also had a close friendship with Stuart Pivar, the co-founder of the academy, and the two had reportedly first met at the New York home of the corporate raider James Goldsmith in the early 1970s.[51]

Aside from the New York Academy of Art, Epstein also had connections to the art world through art dealers like Leah Kleman, who later told *Bloomberg* that Epstein sought to collect art with "shock value" in order to make an impression on others.[52] He is also alleged to have recruited victims from performing-arts high schools in Manhattan.[53]

In addition, as previously mentioned in chapter 11, Epstein attempted to recruit talented young female musicians from the Interlochen Centre for the Arts in Michigan, which he had once attended as a teen. His status as a prominent donor afforded him access to the exclusive fine arts summer school. He was even allowed to build what was formerly known as the Jeffrey Epstein Scholarship Lodge – which was located close to a junior girls' camp.[54] He also hosted fundraisers and events for Interlochen alumni at his New York office and townhouse.[55]

An unidentified woman sued Epstein's estate in January 2020, claiming that Epstein and Maxwell recruited her from Interlochen when she was 13 years. She was reportedly approached by Epstein and Maxwell while sitting alone between classes. The two claimed to be "arts patrons" that were interested in offering her a scholarship. Epstein paid for some of her music lessons and sent money to her mother and began making "sexual comments" as the grooming process wore on.[56] She later testified during the Ghislaine Maxwell trial and accused Maxwell and Epstein of molesting and abusing her.[57]

Nadia Bjorlin was also 13 years old when Epstein and Maxwell attempted to groom her at Interlochen. Her father had recently died before she attended and her mother, Fary Bjorlin told the *Daily Mail* in 2011 that "Epstein was a big donor and he heard about Nadia and that her father had died, so she was vulnerable, and he contacted her. He said, ‘Here’s my number.’”[58] When Bjorlin met Epstein and asked what he wanted with her daughter, he promised that he only wanted to help her singing career and “be like a godfather” to her. Bjorlin was uncomfortable with Epstein from that point on and she said she never let her daughter meet him alone.

Epstein and Maxwell also attempted to recruit cellist Melissa Solomon at Interlochen, beginning when she was 14 years old. Solomon said she maintained ties with Epstein and Maxwell, but was never abused by the pair. Their relationship ended when she refused to recruit young girls for Epstein from New York’s Juilliard School and also declined an offer to meet Prince Andrew.[59]

Epstein also attempted to recruit attendees of Juilliard on other occasions, reportedly as early as 1983. That year he contacted the school looking for a young dance instructor and one attendee of the school obliged. She was flown to Palm Beach to teach dance to his then guests, two Swedish models, one of whom was Eva Andersson-Dubin. Epstein had enticed her to continue working for him by offering to pay her senior year at Juilliard and to donate to the school. For reasons unknown, he never followed through.[60]

BROKEN PROMISES

In addition to the girls lured into his sex trafficking operation from the worlds of modeling, art, and music, Jeffrey Epstein and Ghislaine Maxwell sought to use many of the same tactics to bring in vulnerable local girls who they could exploit to their benefit. Many would become sexually abused by Epstein, as well as Maxwell herself, while others – depending on their reactions during the grooming process – were cultivated to serve other roles in the operation, such as that of a recruiter.

For instance, in New York, some victims that have come forward have detailed how they were lured into Epstein's sex trafficking operation "under the guise of being recruited to work" while in high school. This was a lure similar to that used on aspiring models, artists, and musicians – i.e. offers of career assistance.[61] However, in other cases, they expressly targeted teens and young women who weren't just looking for career boost, but were economically disadvantaged. In these cases, the lure was often simply money and vague promises of a better life.

In the 2021 criminal case against Ghislaine Maxwell, Minor Victim-4, who testified under her first name, Carolyn, was victim of Jeffrey Epstein's in Florida who was sexually abused by him up to three times a week for several years. Carolyn testified that Ghislaine Maxwell routinely called her to schedule "massages" and eventually invited the young girl to Epstein's private island.[62] Carolyn was only 14 when Epstein began to abuse her and she received a few hundred dollars after giving Epstein a massage that finished with him masturbating while he touched her.

Carolyn told the court, "I was young and $300 was a lot of money to me." She also testified that Epstein molested her more than 100 times between 2001 and 2004 at his Palm Beach mansion. Once Carolyn was inside the ring, she was offered further financial incentives by Epstein, Maxwell, and their close collaborators to engage in more sexually focused behavior. Carolyn also testified that alleged co-conspirator Sarah Kellen snapped nude photos of her on Epstein's orders while there was no one else present. She told the court that Kellen called her to tell her that she would get paid $500 to $600 if Kellen could take more nude photographs of her.

Epstein eventually pressured Carolyn into bringing him her younger friends, and she ultimately recruited three girls who were approximately the same age she was at the time. She told the court in 2021 that she was paid $600 for luring in other victims.

Other girls were offered a mix of money and promises that Epstein could help them receive an education at places like Harvard. In court testimony from 2021, a victim referred to as Jane Doe #11 stated that: "He promised me that he would write me a letter of recommendation for Harvard if I got the grades and scores needed for admission. His word was worth a lot, he assured me, as he was in the midst of funding and leading Harvard's studies on the human brain, and the president was his friend."[63] Epstein, once in a locked room with Jane Doe #11 after luring her in with such promises, threatened to kill her and then raped her.

Another woman, Marijke Chartouni also testified to having a similar experience, but she was lured in, not by Epstein, but by Ghislaine Maxwell. She stated that "She [Maxwell] told me he went to Cooper Union. He was a mathematical genius. That he had favorite girls that he would take to Chanel for 15-minute, all-you-can-buy shopping trips. She told me his right-hand person had connection to the arts and the fashion world, and she could help me."[64]

Perhaps the best known of Epstein's victims, Virginia Roberts Giuffre, was also recruited with similar promises at age 16 by Ghislaine Maxwell. She was working at Trump's Mar-a-Lago when approached by Maxwell. Maxwell's "sales pitch" to Giuffre was summed up by the *New York Times* as "If she gave a wealthy man a massage, a whole world of opportunity would open to her." "If the guy likes you, then, you know, it will work out for you. You'll travel. You'll make good money. You'll be educated," Maxwell reportedly told Giuffre.[65]

While many of Epstein's publicly known victims had experiences very similar to those described above, some of the economically disadvantaged girls recruited by Epstein and Maxwell were cultivated for other uses. Take, for example, the case of Haley Robson. The *New York Times* reported that Haley Robson was a 16 year-old high-school student when she was approached by an acquaintance at a Palm Beach swimming pool.[66] This acquaintance asked her if she wanted to make extra money giving massages to a local billionaire. At the time, Robson was a Palm Beach Community College student from nearby Loxahatchee and she soon had her own experience of Jeffrey Epstein's wandering hands and dismissing his advances early on.[67]

Her rejection of his unwanted sexual advances saw Epstein offer Robson a different way "to make extra money." No longer seen as easily exploited sexual prey, Epstein instead began to cultivate, groom, and coerce Robson into recruiting other young local girls to "massage" him. Haley was later accused of "rounding-up" dozens of high-school girls from low income rural populations just outside of Palm Beach for Epstein and Maxwell. Robson received $200 for each new "masseuse" she brought to Epstein's home, according to police reports.

Court documents suggest that Epstein thought that a young Miss Robson targeting these girls from poorer areas on his behalf would attract less unwanted attention and made it less likely that potentially distressed victims would go to the authorities. In a later court deposition, Robson stated, "I didn't have to convince them. I proposed to them. They took it." In October 2020, it was reported that interviews of Robson from around 2005 suggested that she "truly believed she was helping [these girls] by setting up these appointments with Epstein."[68]

Robson famously compared herself to the so-called Hollywood Madam, Heidi Fleiss, in one interview with Palm Beach police.[69] She told police that she was scolded by Epstein for bringing back a woman who was apparently too old for him (aged 23), with the detective noting that Robson had been told by Epstein, "the younger the better."

Other victims of Epstein's have stated that, in addition to luring women and girls in with promises to help them, Epstein also perversely claimed to some of his victims that being sexually abused by him was also a form of "help." One victim, identified as Jane Doe #9, stated that "When I was 15 years old, I flew on Jeffrey Epstein's plane to Zorro Ranch, where I was sexually molested by him for many hours. What I remember most vividly was him explaining to me how beneficial the experience was for me and how much he was helping me to grow."[70]

“THEY’RE NOTHING, THESE GIRLS”

Aside from the role played by Epstein himself, Ghislaine Maxwell arguably played the most critical role in the sex trafficking operation. She was not only instrumental in recruiting girls into the operation, she was also key in recruiting blackmail victims using similar tactics (discussed more in the next chapter).

When it came to recruiting unwitting underage girls, Maxwell would feign friendship with victims, take them shopping, and act interested in their lives and problems. She made them feel special and would promise them that her “boyfriend” Jeffrey Epstein could help them. Once they were lured into one of Epstein’s residences and trusted Maxwell, she would normalize outrageous and dangerous behavior and seek to erode their personal boundaries, priming them for extreme abuse at the hands of Epstein’s and his associates, including herself.

Named in the 2021 indictment against Ghislaine Maxwell is a woman who testified under the pseudonym “Kate” and was also referred to as “Minor Victim-3.” She detailed how, after initially being recruited, Ghislaine Maxwell systematically groomed her. Kate says that she was approximately 18 years-old when Epstein and Maxwell invited her to the Palm Beach estate in Florida. She recounts that it had a beautiful swimming pool and that the walls were littered with photographs of naked young girls. “They were in almost every room,” Kate stated, going on to say of Maxwell, “I was excited to be friends with her. She was exciting… She was everything I wanted to be.”[71]

Kate confided in Maxwell all the details about her problems at home, her mother’s poor health, and her desire to pursue a career in music. Maxwell showed interest in Kate, telling the teenager about her boyfriend, Jeffrey Epstein, who she described as a wealthy philanthropist with a passion for “helping” young people. Kate would testify that she was left with the distinct impression that it “would be great for me to meet him” and stated that Maxwell “said he was going to love me and that I was exactly the kind of person he would help.”

When Kate entered her guest room at Epstein’s Palm Beach residence, she was surprised to find that there was a schoolgirl outfit waiting for her on the bed. Kate testifies that she asked Maxwell what the costume was for, and Maxwell handed her a tray and told her she “thought it would be fun” for her to dress up while she brought Epstein tea. Soon after entering the Palm Beach property, Epstein initiated low level sexual contact with Kate who recounts in court, "She asked me if I had fun and told me I was such a good girl and that I was one of his favorites."

On one occasion, Maxwell called Kate saying that Epstein's massage therapist had canceled and asked if Kate could "do her a favor because [she] had such strong hands." Kate testified that, during this meeting, Epstein was wearing only a robe, which he soon slipped off, leaving him naked. The sudden shock caused Kate alarm, but she couldn't easily escape the encounter as Maxwell was standing in the doorway. According to Kate's testimony, Maxwell handed her some massage oils and quickly shut the door. Shortly thereafter, Epstein first initiated unwanted sexual contact with her.

After the event, Maxwell allegedly asked Kate: "How'd it go? Did you have fun? Was it good?" Maxwell implied to Kate that the unsettling, abusive encounters were normal and meant to be enjoyable for her as well as Epstein. On the third occasion where Kate encountered Epstein, Maxwell told Kate to "have a good time," before shutting the door. This normalization of abuse was also followed closely by a compliment for her compliance. After that third occasion, Kate recalled Maxwell saying: "You're such a good girl. I'm so happy you were able to come… he obviously likes you a lot."

Maxwell's interest in Kate, and the other victims she groomed in much the same way, was feigned so as to create the perception that they were becoming friends, and that Maxwell was someone Kate could trust and look up to. Simultaneously, Maxwell would tell adult friends in her elite New York and UK social circles that the underage girls she helped to traffic were nothing more than "trash." One anonymous friend quoted in *Vanity Fair* not only revealed that Maxwell "spoke glibly and confidently about getting girls to sexually service Epstein," she described her young victims by saying, "they're nothing, these girls. They are trash."[72]

Maxwell was an expert at acting as though very bizarre behavior was completely normal. The victim who testified as Carolyn (mentioned in the previous section) also stated that Maxwell would normalize the abuse by entering Epstein's massage room while Carolyn was nude. Carolyn states that Maxwell felt her hips, buttocks, and breasts, telling the young girl that she "had a great body for Mr. Epstein." Carolyn also went on to reveal that, on that occasion, Maxwell groped her breasts before leaving the room. Maxwell's behavior not only sought to make Epstein's victims become more compliant, but to also blur and erode their personal boundaries. With Kate, she worked slowly in an apparent effort to give her reassurance and confidence, gaslighting her to believe that Epstein's and Maxwell's behavior was normal, while also frequently crossing and blurring Kate's personal boundaries.

Kate's recollection of Maxwell's behavior is remarkably similar to the accounts of several other victims, who have portrayed Maxwell as central to the sex trafficking ring as well as an active participant in their sexual abuse. Epstein would tell those he sought to impress that Maxwell was merely a former girlfriend of his who had "fallen on hard times" and who he was hoping to help.[73] Instead, however, former employees of Epstein's, like his former butler Alfredo Rodriguez, described her in a deposition as "the boss" of the entire operation. Epstein's former house manager, Janusz Banasiak, described Maxwell and Epstein as "partners in business."[74] Maxwell was also the person who developed the methods for recruiting and who managed the network of recruiters. Per the *New York Times,* Maxwell told these recruiters to "target young, financially desperate women, and to promise them help furthering their education and careers."[75]

Maxwell also trained victims in sex techniques. This sometimes began with Maxwell teaching victims "massage" techniques, but several victims – including Virginia Giuffre and Sarah Ransome – allege that she also trained them in sexual techniques.[76] She would reportedly sometimes instruct girls in what to do while they were "massaging" Epstein.

She was apparently so prolific in these efforts that references to her behavior can be found in British media reports as far back as 2003, several years before Epstein was first investigated for sex trafficking. A 2003 article from the UK's *Evening Standard* states: "Salacious reports have crossed the Atlantic about Ghislaine hosting bizarre parties at her house to which she invites a dozen or so young girls, then brandishes a whip and teaches them how to improve their sexual techniques."[77] It turns out that those "salacious reports" were ultimately true and their appearance in press reports well before Epstein was ever formally investigated also reflects how some of their most sinister acts were, more often than not, hidden in plain sight.

Though there are a wealth of reports on Maxwell's grooming tactics based on victim testimony, it appears that she engaged in other activities that were aimed at facilitating the abuse of minors in other ways. For example, the reason Maxwell reportedly got her license to pilot a helicopter was "so she could transport anyone she liked without pilots knowing who they were."[78] Given that Maxwell is now a convicted sex trafficker and helped traffic women and girls on a near industrial scale, it is worth re-examining her reasons for obtaining that helicopter license through that lens.

Per Maxwell's reasoning, her ability to pilot a helicopter would have afforded her the ability to transport any of these trafficked girls anywhere without anyone, aside from her and Epstein and their accomplices, knowing. This is particularly sinister considering that several Epstein victims, including Sarah Ransome, have reported that their passports and phones were seized upon flying to Epstein's island.[79]

The known seizure of victim documentation combined with Maxwell's desire to "transport anyone" she chose unseen suggests that the full dimensions of the Epstein/Maxwell sex trafficking operation could be much larger and more disturbing than previously understood. Indeed, while most media reports have focused on the pair's sex trafficking activities in the domestic United States, their operation was global in scope, targeting women and girls in Eastern Europe, Southeast Asia, and South America as well as the United States.[80] However, of the few official investigations that have been conducted, they have been rather limited in scope and little remains known of the international dimensions of the Epstein/Maxwell sex trafficking operation.

ACCOMPLICES

For Jeffrey Epstein to have a steady supply of suitable victims who met his very specific criteria, he needed a team of collaborators to organize the "masseuses" and ensure their compliance through constant reassurance, a false sense of emotional support, and/or the use of threats. This team, which ultimately organized the systematic abuse of hundreds, if not thousands, of girls, was headed by Maxwell, but also included several others, such as Nadia Marcinkova, discussed earlier in this chapter. Epstein and Maxwell may have been running the show, but without the help of their alleged co-conspirators, their operation would probably have been difficult to manage, would have taken place on a smaller scale, and likely would have been exposed much earlier.

One of these key co-conspirators was Sarah Kellen. Former employees of Epstein's have alleged that Kellen was "like an assistant to Ghislaine" and was just below Maxwell "in the chain of command."[81] Kellen has also been regularly named in court cases as a co-conspirator in the Epstein/Maxwell sex trafficking operation and she, like Maxwell, was instrumental in the recruitment and grooming of young girls. Sarah Ransome, for instance, has alleged that "It was Ghislaine and Sarah Kellen that showed me how to please Jeffrey," and described to the *New York Times* how Kellen would escort her to Epstein's massage room and then instruct her in how to "best satisfy him sexually."[82] The West Palm Beach lawyer who has represented several accusers in lawsuits targeting Kellen, Spencer T. Kuvin, stated that Kellen "saw herself as the boss," particularly at Epstein's Palm Beach residence. Kuvin has also alleged that "Sarah was really running that organization, bringing girls and getting them in and out of the Palm Beach home."[83] It was also Kellen's role to greet the victims arriving at that particular mansion, where she would then escort them to a room with a massage table where Epstein would be waiting, usually wearing nothing but a towel or a bathrobe.

Sarah Kellen reportedly grew up as a Jehovah's Witness and was reportedly married off by the time she was 17. In 2020, Sarah Kellen's parents stated that they had known virtually nothing about their daughter's occupation because they had become estranged from Kellen when she was 18 or 19 years-old.[84] They also claimed that Kellen, around that same time, was recruited to work for Epstein. They have also argued that "Kellen should be treated as a victim rather than a co-

conspirator because she, too, was groomed and manipulated after falling out with her family and going to work for Epstein in her teens."[85]

Also around that time, Kellen's marriage to Noa Bonk, who she had met through the church, quickly soured, allegedly because Kellen was more interested in a "glamorous life of modeling and fashion."[86] Kellen was then expelled from the church for allegedly leading an "immoral lifestyle" which included reported nude modeling. However, later reports have claimed that this "nude modeling" was really "a modeling assignment for a life drawing art class rather than pornography." Sarah Kellen's mother, Mary Kellen, later told reporters that her daughter "wasn't mistreated or shunned, she made her own choices. She turned her back on Jehovah God, her conduct went against the standards." Kellen later married a NASCAR driver in 2013 and changed her last name to Vickers.

Alongside Sarah Kellen, another alleged co-conspirator was Polish born Adriana Ross. Ross was a former *Playboy* model who moved to Florida in 2002, where she was soon hired to work at the Epstein estate. Ross, who sometimes referred to herself Adriana Mucinska, was a frequent flier onboard Epstein's private plane, infamously known as the Lolita Express, with flight records showing that Ross had accompanied US President Bill Clinton on the plane, among others. Ross was questioned in a 2010 civil suit that focused on Prince Andrew's participation within the Epstein/Maxwell sex ring. Ross has repeatedly refused to comment, invoking her Fifth Amendment rights while under official questioning.[87]

Another of the core members of Epstein and Maxwell's team of recruiters and assistants was Lesley Groff, who was officially Epstein's Executive Assistant. Groff coordinated the travel and transport of Epstein and his entourage, including underage girls who were being trafficked specifically for sex. She also repeated promises of Epstein's and/or Maxwell's to victims that Epstein would help them financially or with their careers and, in at least one case, monitored victims' weight on Epstein's behalf.[88] A 2017 lawsuit alleged that Groff was also responsible for arranging the massage itineraries of many of Epstein's victims. She is also said to have taken steps to ensure the girls complied with the rules of behavior imposed by Epstein, Maxwell, and others.[89]

Lesley Groff was treated well by Epstein and he reportedly saw her as a vital member of his organization. Her other duties in his employ also included "making appointments for Epstein as directed by him, taking his messages, and setting up high-level meetings with CEOs, business executives, scientists, politicians, celebrities, charitable organizations, and universities."[90] In 2004, when she announced that she was pregnant and that she intended to leave his employ, Epstein offered to buy her a Mercedes and offered to pay for a full-time nanny. Epstein told reporters at the time "There is no way that I could lose Lesley to motherhood."[91] In that same article, Epstein also referred to Groff as "an extension of my brain."[92] She is believed to have received a salary of around $200,000 per year.

Another apparent co-conspirator is Claire Hazell, who later married an aristocrat of the Guinness brewing family, Edward Guinness, Earl of Iveagh. She became Claire Iveagh upon their marriage in 2001. Hazell reportedly worked for Epstein throughout the 1990s, but few specifics are known of her work for him.[93] However, after Ghislaine Maxwell's arrest on charges that focused on Maxwell's sex trafficking activities during the 1990s, Hazell-Iveagh was sought by federal investigators as she was believed to have knowledge of Maxwell's illegal activities during that time.[94] Hazell-Iveagh appears on the flight logs 32 times between 1998 and 2000 and appeared in Epstein's black book of contacts under her married name. Some Epstein victims, like Maria Farmer, have alleged that Hazell-Iveagh was a co-conspirator in the sex trafficking operation and played a role similar to that later played by Sarah Kellen.

Hazell-Iveagh appears to have been brought into Epstein's world during her time studying at Ohio State University in the 1990s.[95] The university is heavily funded by and closely associated with Leslie Wexner. Hazell-Iveagh reportedly had a modeling agency in Columbus, Ohio, at the time and a friend of hers from this period recalled Hazell-Iveagh constantly being at Epstein's "beck and call."[96] Hazell-Iveagh also reportedly took vacations with her boyfriends at Epstein's island. Given Epstein's interest in recruiting models during this period, Hazell's alleged knowledge of Maxwell's trafficking activity at the time and Epstein's simultaneous connection with suspect airlines in Columbus, Hazell's activities in the early 1990s and her modeling agency should be more heavily scrutinized by investigators.

GIRLFRIENDS FOR THE RICH AND FAMOUS

In examining the different milieus in which Epstein and Maxwell recruited young women and girls, it seems that, depending on how those girls reacted to the stressful situations in which they were placed as well as other factors, they were placed in separate tiers that served different, complementary functions to the overall sex trafficking and influence operations of Epstein and Maxwell.

For instance, several former models, former recruiters, and others who ended up becoming associated with Epstein were seen and treated as part of a higher tier than those women and girls deemed more vulnerable and exploitable. Often these were not underage woman, but women in their early 20s and, unlike the exploited and abused girls mentioned in earlier parts of this chapter, Epstein appeared to keep his promises to "help" them with their careers and problems. Yet, most of these women, despite the better treatment, seem to have still been used in influence operations by Epstein.

One of these women is Francis Jardine. As mentioned in chapter 16, Francis Jardine was a former model from South Africa who was alleged to have been in a relationship with Epstein in the 1990s, as revealed during the trial of Ghislaine Maxwell. Jardine flew on Epstein's plane 12 times and appears in his contact book. She also accompanied Epstein to the Clinton White House alongside Eva Andersson Dubin, who Epstein is said to have dated between 1983 and 1991.[97] Jardine reportedly first met Epstein while working as a model and was housed in the apartments owned by Ossa Properties tied to his sex trafficking operation.

However, unlike other women recruited from the modeling world and housed in those apartments, Jardine's opinion of Epstein, even today, is remarkably different than that held by most women, particularly after his perversions became public knowledge. In a statement to the *Daily Mail* in 2022, Jardine said:

> He tried to expose me to a larger world, open my mind and stimulate my belief in myself that I could be many things as I was sorely lacking in true confidence when I first met him.… I asked Jeffrey for help, he was many things to me over a period of years, trying to address the various areas that were holding me back as a human being, helping me find my way into a future that would suit my level of sensitivity and my proclivity to jump into relationships too quickly. He wanted me to develop skills and shared the importance of making the right choices. People around me misinterpreted my relationship with him because he was definitely more way out than the average man's idea of what a woman could be or should be to a man.[98]

She also stated that she would "always be grateful to have known him [Epstein] no matter how people have slated him," adding that "I loved him and grieve for the way his life has turned out. I would have wished I could have expressed myself in a way that might have saved his life."[99]

Needless to say, Jardine – despite "dating" Epstein at a time when he was dating multiple other women, including Ghislaine Maxwell and others – held Epstein in the highest esteem. It shows that some women with whom he was associated were left with a strong impression that he had truly helped them, whereas most women he encountered and whom he abused were given empty promises of such help and left battered and broken.

This, in addition to Jardine's known activities during and after her relationship with Epstein, provides corroboration for the theory that some women were singled out for "star" treatment by Epstein and were "helped" with their careers and/or paired up with powerful, wealthy men in Epstein's broader network who would then become their husbands.

Sometime in the 1990s, after her relationship with Epstein ended, Jardine married John Deuss, the oil trader with deep ties to Marc Rich and Ted Shackley. As noted in previous chapters, Deuss, like Epstein, Khashoggi, and others in this network, had a reputation for using beautiful young women, usually models, to secure favors and loyalty (as well as potential blackmail) from business associates.[100]

Another woman Epstein "dated" while dating Jardine and Maxwell (and apparently others) was Celina Midelfart. Midelfart was another woman who accompanied Epstein to the Clinton White House, where she escorted Epstein to the executive residence twice in a single day.[101] Midelfart has since claimed that she and Epstein did not date but had a "business relationship" between 1994 and 1997, though several witnesses at Ghislaine Maxwell's trial contradicted this claim.[102] Shortly after she stopped dating Epstein, she began dating Epstein's then-associate Donald Trump. Trump reportedly dumped Midelfart to date his current wife, Melania. As previously mentioned in chapter 12, Epstein and Maxwell claimed to have originally introduced Donald and Melania Trump. However, it also seems possible that Epstein may have introduced Trump to Celina Midelfart, his girlfriend prior to Melania, as well.

Given that several of these "higher tier" women who were Epstein's "girlfriends" at the time accompanied him to the White House, it seems likely that the other, anonymous women who also accompanied him there, of which there are four, had similar relationships with Epstein. It is also suggestive of the fact that some of Epstein's "girlfriends" may have been used as part of influence operations on White House grounds, some potentially involving Bill Clinton or other high-ranking administration officials. Several cabinet members had known relationships with Epstein, including Bill Richardson, Robert Rubin, and Larry Summers, and one of Epstein's closest White House contacts – Mark Middleton – flew with Epstein to the Bahamas (and possibly Epstein's Caribbean island) after one White House visit. Of those Clinton administration contacts, Richardson, as well as former Senate majority leader George Mitchell, were later accused of participating in Epstein's sex trafficking operation and of abusing underage girls. It is entirely plausible that Richardson and Mitchell could have first been introduced to Epstein's operation via his visits to the White House where he was accompanied by one of his many "girlfriends."

Another former model who seems to have operated in this higher strata of Epstein's sex trafficking and influence operations is Nicole Junkermann of Germany. Junkermann was a model represented by Elite Model Management in 1995. This was the same modeling agency that represented Epstein's and Maxwell's associate, supermodel Naomi Campbell. As previously mentioned in this chapter, Epstein attempted but failed to acquire Elite's American branch in the early 2000s. In addition to her modeling career, Junkermann was also a talented businesswoman with a peculiar amount of access to wealthy elites from a young age. It is unclear when the glamorous German model turned business woman originally connected with Epstein, but Junkermann did attend Harvard at a time when Epstein's relationship with the university was considerable.

Junkermann also ended up escorting wealthy, older men at social events, including Microsoft co-founder Paul Allen, whose ties to the Maxwell siblings are discussed in chapter 20. Junkermann also flew on Epstein's plane on several occasions, including when she alone accompanied Epstein to the UK for a meeting at the Wexner-owned Foxcote house in early September 2002. As discussed in chapter 14, employees working at Foxcote during that meeting saw Junkermann and a brunette woman, both glamorously dressed, escorting Epstein on either arm. Epstein then brought Junkermann and the other women to two US senators with whom he was meeting, suggesting that the two women were meant to entice the senators for some purpose, possibly to influence their views on the upcoming effort to invade Iraq.

Junkermann later became a business partner in an Epstein-funded company chaired by his close associate, former Israeli Prime Minister Ehud Barak.[103] The company, Carbyne911 and formerly known as Reporty, was closely associated with Israeli intelligence at the time Junkermann served on its board (see chapter 21).[104] In 2017, she married the Italian aristocrat, Count Ferdinando Maria Brachetti Peretti, who is CEO of Italian energy giant, the API Group. The Brachetti Peretti family, like Francis Jardine's former husband John Deuss, have long been intimately involved in the global oil industry.

Another example of this "higher tier" of women within Epstein's operation is Melanie Walker. Walker, now a celebrated neurosurgeon, met Jeffrey Epstein in 1992 soon after she graduated from college, when he offered her a Victoria's Secret modeling job.[105] As mentioned earlier in this chapter, such offers were often made by Epstein and his accomplices when recruiting women into his operation. It is unclear if Walker ever actually worked as a model for the Leslie Wexner-owned company.

She then stayed at a New York apartment building associated with Epstein's trafficking operations during visits to New York – the Ossa property-owned apartments on 66th Street. However, it is unclear how long she stayed there or at any other Epstein-owned properties. After she graduated from medical school in 1998, she became Epstein's science adviser for at least a year. By 1999, she had grown so close to Prince Andrew that she attended a Windsor Castle birthday celebration hosted by the Queen alongside Epstein and Ghislaine Maxwell.[106] During this period, Melanie appears on Epstein's flight logs under her birth name, Melanie Starnes, though it looks like "Starves" on the flight logs.[107]

The close relationship between Prince Andrew and Melanie Walker came under scrutiny after Epstein's former housekeeper at the Zorro Ranch property, Deidre Stratton, stated in an interview that Prince Andrew had been "given" a "beautiful young neurosurgeon" while he stayed at Epstein's New Mexico property.[108] Given that only one neurosurgeon was both close to Prince Andrew and a part of Epstein's entourage at the time, it seems highly likely that this woman "given" to Andrew was Melanie Walker. According to Stratton, Andrew was "kept company" by this woman for three days. The arrangement was set up by Epstein, who was notably not at the property at the time. The exact timing of the stay is uncertain, but it likely took place between 1999 and 2001.

Stratton said the following about the stay:

> At the time, Jeffrey had this, she supposedly was a neurosurgeon, quite young, beautiful, young and brilliant, and she stayed in the home with him.… At one point we had all these different teas and you could pick the teas that you wanted and she asked me to find one that would make Andrew more horny.
>
> I'm guessing she understood her job was to entertain him because I guess, the fear, I don't know; the fear would be that Andrew would say, "No I didn't really find her that attractive." … He would tell Jeffrey that and then she would be on the ropes.
>
> I'm guessing that, another theory is, that Jeffrey probably had her on retainer and she knew what her job would be, should be, to make these people happy.… Sex was all they thought about. I mean, I know for sure that Jeffrey would ideally like three massages a day.[109]

Sometime later, Walker moved to Seattle and began living with then Microsoft executive Steven Sinofsky, who now serves as a board partner at the venture capital firm Andreessen Horowitz.[110] At the time, Epstein and the Maxwells had cultivated several significant ties to top Microsoft executives, including its two founders – Bill Gates and Paul Allen (see chapter 20). Andreessen Horowitz notably backs Carbyne911, the aforementioned Israel intelligence-linked company funded by Epstein and his close associate Ehud Barak, and where Nicole Junkermann served on its board. The firm also backs another Israeli intelligence-linked tech company led by Barak, called Toka.[111] Toka recently won contracts with the governments of Moldova, Nigeria, and Ghana through the World Bank, where Melanie Walker is currently a director and a former special adviser to its president.[112] It is unclear when, how, and under what circumstances Walker met Sinofsky.

After moving to Seattle to be with Sinofsky and after a brief stint as a "practitioner in the developing world" in China with the World Health Organization, Walker was hired as a senior program officer by the Bill & Melinda Gates Foundation in 2006. Epstein's ties to Gates and Microsoft are discussed in detail in chapter 20. During her time at the Gates Foundation, Walker introduced Boris Nikolic, Gates's science adviser, to Epstein.

Today, Melanie Walker is the co-chair of the World Economic Forum's Global Future Council on Neurotechnology and Brain Science, having previously been named a WEF Young Global Leader. The ties of Leslie Wexner's philanthropy, in which Epstein was intimately involved, to the Young Global Leader program were discussed in chapter 14. Walker also advises the World Health Organization, which is closely linked to Bill Gates' "philanthropy."

In addition to the above, there are also the instances where former employees and alleged co-conspirators of Epstein were either aided in their subsequent careers, such as Nadia Marcinkova, or ended up marrying into the wealthier strata of society, as in the cases of Sarah Kellen and Claire Hazell-Iveagh. In the case of Hazell-Iveagh, she began dating her aristocrat husband at a time that overlapped with the conclusion of her work for Epstein. Her husband has been accused of being a notorious womanizer often seen in the company of other women, suggesting that there may have been other motives behind their marriage.[113] Their divorce was announced in 2021.

It appears that women such as these, who had benefitted Epstein and his operation considerably, as well as the women in whom he had invested heavily, were part of another parallel sex trafficking operation of a different nature. As part of this operation, the women were groomed, educated, and trained to, not be exploitable "trash" to be abused by pervert elites, but to be the girlfriends and wives of the elite and were apparently left with the impression that Epstein had "helped" them advance their careers and advance into elite social circles.

Endnotes

1 Jonathan Stempel, "Jeffrey Epstein's Sexual Abuses Began by 1985, Targeted 13-Year-Old, Lawsuit Claims," Reuters, December 3, 2019, https://www.reuters.com/article/us-people-jeffrey-epstein-lawsuit-idUSKBN1Y72K5.

2 Stempel, "Jeffrey Epstein's Sexual Abuses."

3 Jon Swaine, Jon Henley, and Lucy Osborne, "Jean-Luc Brunel: Three Former Models Say They Were Sexually Assaulted by Jeffrey Epstein Friend," *The Guardian*, August 17, 2019, https://www.theguardian.com/us-news/2019/aug/17/jean-luc-brunel-jeffrey-epstein-models-sexual-assault; "Jean-Luc Brunel: Epstein Associate Found Dead in Paris Prison Cell," *BBC News*, February 19, 2022, https://www.bbc.com/news/world-europe-60443518.

4 Swaine, Henley, and Osborne, "Jean-Luc Brunel."

5 Swaine, Henley, and Osborne, "Jean-Luc Brunel."

6 Swaine, Henley, and Osborne, "Jean-Luc Brunel."

7 Diane Sawyer, "American Girls in Paris," 60 Minutes (CBS, December 23, 1988), https://youtu.be/xwhQMLOZx0U.

8 Swaine, Henley, and Osborne, "Jean-Luc Brunel."

9 Emily Shugerman, Kate Briquelet, and Lachlan Cartwright, "Jeffrey Epstein's Modeling Ties Go Much Deeper Than Victoria's Secret," *The Daily Beast*, September 7, 2019, https://www.thedailybeast.com/jeffrey-epsteins-ties-to-the-modeling-industry-go-much-deeper-than-victorias-secret.

10 Bradley J Edwards, *Relentless Pursuit: My Fight for the Victims of Jeffrey Epstein*, ePub (Simon and Schuster, 2020), 109.

11 Swaine, Henley, and Osborne, "Jean-Luc Brunel."

12 Swaine, Henley, and Osborne, "Jean-Luc Brunel."

13 Shugerman, Briquelet, and Cartwright, "Jeffrey Epstein's Modeling Ties Go Much Deeper."

14 Shugerman, Briquelet, and Cartwright, "Jeffrey Epstein's Modeling Ties Go Much Deeper."

15 Shugerman, Briquelet, and Cartwright, "Jeffrey Epstein's Modeling Ties Go Much Deeper."

16 Shugerman, Briquelet, and Cartwright, "Jeffrey Epstein's Modeling Ties Go Much Deeper."

17 Sarah Marks, "New York Branch of Elite is sold for £4.4m," *Evening Standard*, August 25, 2004, Section D, p. 33.

18 Shugerman, Briquelet, and Cartwright, "Jeffrey Epstein's Modeling Ties Go Much Deeper."

19 Swaine, Henley, and Osborne, "Jean-Luc Brunel."

20 Swaine, Henley, and Osborne, "Jean-Luc Brunel."

21 Shugerman, Briquelet, and Cartwright, "Jeffrey Epstein's Modeling Ties Go Much Deeper."

22 Swaine, Henley, and Osborne, "Jean-Luc Brunel."

23 Reuters and Chris Pleasance, "Jeffrey Epstein: Three 'victims' Have Come Forward in Paris," *Mail Online*, September 11, 2019, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-7451645/Jeffrey-Epstein-Three-victims-say-abused-come-forward-Paris.html.

24 Reuters and Pleasance, "Jeffrey Epstein: Three 'victims' Have Come Forward."

25 Swaine, Henley, and Osborne, "Jean-Luc Brunel."

26 Virginia Heffernan, "The Twisted Flight Paths of 'Global Girl' and the Lolita Express," *Wired*, July 23, 2019, https://www.wired.com/story/global-girl-jeffrey-epstein-and-the-lolita-

express/.

27 Janet Winikoff, “Nada Marcinkova: 5 Fast Facts You Need to Know,” *Heavy.com*, August 12, 2019, https://heavy.com/news/2019/08/nada-marcinkova/.

28 Chris Spargo, “Messages for Jeffrey Epstein Suggest Sexual Abuse of Girl, 8,” *Mail Online*, July 31, 2019, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-7303529/Jeffrey-Epstein-messages-procuring-two-8-year-old-girls-pedophile-sexually-abuse.html.

29 Chris Spargo, “Jeffrey Epstein Had Photos of His Naked Underage Victims in Home,” *Mail Online*, July 30, 2019, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-7299269/Jeffrey-Epstein-photos-naked-underage-victims-displayed-Palm-Beach-home.html.

30 Vanessa Grigoriadis, “‘They’re Nothing, These Girls’: The Mystery of Ghislaine Maxwell,” *Vanity Fair*, August 12, 2019, https://www.vanityfair.com/news/2019/08/the-mystery-of-ghislaine-maxwell-epstein-enabler.

31 “Jean-Luc Brunel: Epstein Associate Found Dead in Paris Prison Cell,” *BBC News*, February 19, 2022, https://www.bbc.com/news/world-europe-60443518.

32 Laura Stampler, “These Modern Ads Are Even More Sexist Than Their ‘Mad Men’ Era Counterparts,” *Business Insider*, April 10, 2012, https://www.businessinsider.com/these-modern-ads-are-even-more-sexist-than-their-mad-men-era-counterparts-2012-4; Adweek Blogs, “Italy Gives the Finger to Latest Tom Ford Ad,” *Adweek*, April 25, 2008, https://www.adweek.com/creativity/italy-gives-finger-latest-tom-ford-ad-15947/.

33 Megan C. Hills, “Fashion Editor Richard Buckley, Husband of Tom Ford, Dies at 72,” *CNN*, September 21, 2021, https://www.cnn.com/style/article/richard-buckley-tom-ford-husband-death/index.html.

34 Jason Guerrasio, “Heidi Klum Demanded to Wear the Biggest Wings out of All the Victoria’s Secret Models for the Fashion Shows, a New Docuseries about the Brand Reveals,” *Insider*, July 13, 2022, https://www.insider.com/heidi-klum-biggest-wings-victorias-secret-fashion-shows-do-cuseries-hulu-2022-7.

35 Dan Alexander, “Victoria’s Other Secret: The Low-Key Billionaire Behind The Lingerie Giant,” *Forbes*, September 30, 2014, https://www.forbes.com/sites/danalexander/2014/09/30/victorias-other-secret-the-low-key-billionaire-behind-the-lingerie-giant/.

36 Alexander, “Victoria’s Other Secret.”

37 Mary Hanbury, “Jeffrey Epstein Reportedly Tried to Meddle in Selecting Victoria’s Secret Models, and Now the Firm Is Investigating,” *Business Insider*, July 25, 2019, https://www.businessinsider.com/victorias-secret-board-investigates-jeffrey-epstein-connection-2019-7; Katy Docherty, “How a Toxic Trio at Victoria’s Secret Made Life Hell for Lingerie Models,” *The Sun*, February 4, 2020, https://www.thesun.co.uk/news/10885341/victorias-secret-toxic-trio-bullying/.

38 Isabel Vincent, “Inside the Victoria’s Secret Pipeline to Jeffrey Epstein,” *New York Post*, July 14, 2019, https://nypost.com/2019/07/14/inside-the-victorias-secret-pipeline-to-jeffrey-epstein/.

39 Shugerman, Briquelet, and Cartwright, “ Jeffrey Epstein’s Modeling Ties Go Much Deeper.”

40 Shugerman, Briquelet, and Cartwright, “ Jeffrey Epstein’s Modeling Ties Go Much Deeper.”

41 Vincent, “Inside the Victoria’s Secret Pipeline.”

42 Vincent, “Inside the Victoria’s Secret Pipeline.”

43 Vincent, “Inside the Victoria’s Secret Pipeline.”

44 Charles Trepany, "Victoria's Secret Hulu Doc Explores Jeffrey Epstein, Les Wexner Ties: The Biggest Revelations," *USA TODAY*, July 15, 2022, https://www.usatoday.com/story/entertainment/tv/2022/07/14/victorias-secret-hulu-doc-biggest-bombshells-jeffrey-epstein-lex-wexner/10065106002/.

45 Caroline Graham, "Ghislaine Maxwell Trawled Galleries for Girls to Meet Jeffrey Epstein," *Mail Online*, August 9, 2020, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-8608267/Ghislaine-Maxwell-trawled-galleries-gallerinas-meet-Jeffrey-Epstein-claims-former-friend.html.

46 Graham, "Ghislaine Maxwell Trawled Galleries."

47 Graham, "Ghislaine Maxwell Trawled Galleries."

48 Elizabeth Hayt, "Bringing the Party to Sotheby's," *New York Times*, September 26, 1999, https://www.nytimes.com/1999/09/26/style/bringing-the-party-to-sotheby-s.html.

49 Claire Selvin, "Jeffrey Epstein's Art World Connections: A Guide," *ARTnews*, August 27, 2019, https://www.artnews.com/art-news/news/jeffrey-epstein-art-connections-13147/.

50 Kate Briquelet, "Epstein Had His Own Lodge at Interlochen's Prestigious Arts Camp for Kids," *The Daily Beast*, July 12, 2019, https://www.thedailybeast.com/jeffrey-epstein-had-his-own-lodge-at-interlochens-prestigious-arts-camp-for-kids-in-michigan.

51 Selvin, "Epstein's Art World Connections."

52 Selvin, "Epstein's Art World Connections."

53 Briquelet, "Epstein Had His Own Lodge."

54 Briquelet, "Epstein Had His Own Lodge."

55 Briquelet, "Epstein Had His Own Lodge."

56 Ariel Zilber, "Jeffrey Epstein 'befriended' First Victim, 13, at Michigan Arts Camp," *Mail Online*, July 18, 2021, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-9800051/Jeffrey-Epstein-befriended-victim-13-Michigan-arts-camp-book-claims.html.

57 Ben Feuerherd and Tamar Lapin, "'Just Turned into This Orgy': First Accuser Testifies at Ghislaine Maxwell Trial," *New York Post*, November 30, 2021, https://nypost.com/2021/11/30/just-turned-into-this-orgy-first-accuser-testifies-at-ghislaine-maxwell-trial/.

58 Briquelet, "Epstein Had His Own Lodge."

59 Zilber, "Jeffrey Epstein 'befriended' First Victim."

60 Briquelet, "Epstein Had His Own Lodge."

61 Priscilla DeGregory, "Jeffrey Epstein Victim Says He Sexually Abused Her for 15 Years: Suit," *New York Post*, August 11, 2021, https://nypost.com/2021/08/11/jeffrey-epstein-victim-says-he-abused-her-for-15-years-suit/.

62 Kate Briquelet, "'I Told Him I Was Only 15': Epstein Victim Weeps As She Recounts Orgies With Other Girls," *The Daily Beast*, December 7, 2021, https://www.thedailybeast.com/jeffrey-epstein-and-ghislaine-maxwell-abused-14-year-old-and-sent-her-victorias-secret-lingerie-court-hears.

63 Julia Reinstein, "23 Women Stood In Court And Said Jeffrey Epstein Abused Them. Here Are Their Most Powerful Quotes," *BuzzFeed News*, August 27, 2019, https://www.buzzfeednews.com/article/juliareinstein/jeffrey-epstein-women-victims-testify-court-quotes.

64 Reinstein, "23 Women Stood In Court And Said Jeffrey Epstein Abused Them."

65 Amy Julia Harris, Frances Robles, Mike Baker and William K. Rashbaum, "How a Ring of Women Allegedly Recruited Girls for Jeffrey Epstein," *New York Times*, August 29, 2019, https://www.nytimes.com/2019/08/29/nyregion/jeffrey-epstein-ghislaine-maxwell.html.

66 Harris, Robles, Baker, and Rashbaum, "How a Ring of Women Allegedly Recruited Girls."

67 Andrew Marra, "The Man Who Had Everything: Jeffrey Epstein Craved Big Homes, Elite Friends and Underage Girls," *Palm Beach Post*, August 14, 2006, https://www.palmbeachpost.com/story/news/courts/2019/07/17/man-who-had-everything-jeffrey-epstein-craved-big-homeselite-friends-and-underage-girls/4676283007/.

68 Chris Spargo, "Jeffrey Epstein Recruiter Was Raped Before Pedophile Paid The Teen To Lure In Girls," *OK Magazine*, October 30, 2020, https://okmagazine.com/news/jeffrey-epstein-recruiter-haley-robson-he-paid-the-teen-lure-girls/.

69 Chris Spargo, "'I'm like Heidi Fleiss': Epstein 'pimp' Haley Robson 'Bragged about Providing Pedophile with Girls and Was Set to Be Charged by Police - despite Being in High School and a Victim Herself'," *Mail Online*, July 29, 2019, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-7297353/High-school-student-Haley-Robson-bragged-getting-Jeffrey-Epstein-girls-charged.html.

70 Reinstein, "23 Women Stood In Court And Said Jeffrey Epstein Abused Them."

71 Kate Briquelet, "Epstein Victim Had to Dress in Schoolgirl Outfit to Serve Him Tea," *The Daily Beast*, December 6, 2021, https://www.thedailybeast.com/jeffrey-epstein-victim-says-ghislaine-maxwell-made-her-dress-in-schoolgirl-outfit-to-serve-him-tea.

72 Grigoriadis, "'They're Nothing, These Girls."

73 Grigoriadis, "'They're Nothing, These Girls."

74 Harris, Robles, Baker, and Rashbaum, "How a Ring of Women Allegedly Recruited Girls."

75 Harris, Robles, Baker, and Rashbaum, "How a Ring of Women Allegedly Recruited Girls."

76 Danya Hajjaji and Jack Royston, "Ghislaine Maxwell's 'Grooming' Explained by a Forensic Psychologist," *Newsweek*, December 22, 2021, https://www.newsweek.com/ghislaine-maxwells-grooming-behavior-explained-forensic-psychologist-1662100; Victoria Bekiempis, "Ghislaine Maxwell Trained Underage Girls as Sex Slaves, Documents Allege," *The Guardian*, July 31, 2020, https://www.theguardian.com/us-news/2020/jul/31/ghislaine-maxwell-underage-girls-sex-jeffrey-epstein.

77 William Cash, "The Sins of the Father," *Evening Standard* (London), November 21, 2003, https://www.mintpressnews.com/wp-content/uploads/2019/10/The-sins-of-the-father.pdf.

78 Grigoriadis, "'They're Nothing, These Girls."

79 Sarah Ransome, "I Survived Epstein and Maxwell's Sex Ring. Then the Gaslighting Be-gan," *Washington Post*, July 19, 2022, https://www.washingtonpost.com/opinions/2022/07/19/i-survived-jeffrey-epstein-ghislaine-maxwell-sex-trafficking-ring/.

80 Reports indicate that the 66th Street apartments owned by Ossa Properties housed women associated with Epstein's sex trafficking operation, many of whom were from Eastern Europe and South America. Epstein is also alleged to have "purchased" Nadia Marcinkova from her family in Eastern Europe. His activities in Southeast Asia are known because Virgina Giuffre traveled to Thailand at Epstein's behest "to pick up a young girl, interview her, and let Epstein know if she was 'qualified.'" See: *The Mail on Sunday*, "Virginia Roberts Fled Epstein after Being Asked to Have Surrogate," *Mail Online*, March 21, 2020, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-8138821/Virginia-Roberts-fled-Epstein-Ghislaine-Maxwell-asked-surrogate-baby.html.

81 Harris, Robles, Baker, and Rashbaum, "How a Ring of Women Allegedly Recruited Girls."

82 Harris, Robles, Baker, and Rashbaum, "How a Ring of Women Allegedly Recruited Girls."

83 Harris, Robles, Baker, and Rashbaum, "How a Ring of Women Allegedly Recruited Girls."

84 Ben Ashford, "Parents of Ghislaine Maxwell's 'lieutenant' Fear She Will Be Charged," *Mail Online*, July 17, 2020, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-8510925/Parents-Ghislaine-Maxwells-lieutenant-fear-charged-Epsteins-sex-ring.html.

85 Ashford, "Parents of Ghislaine Maxwell's 'lieutenant'."

86 Ashford, "Parents of Ghislaine Maxwell's 'lieutenant'."

87 Ben Ashford, "Epstein 'scheduler' Adriana Ross Dodges Questions about His Sick Past," *Mail Online*, August 16, 2019, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-7361001/Epstein-scheduler-Adriana-Ross-dodges-questions-sick-past-fleeing-Florida-church.html.

88 Harris, Robles, Baker, and Rashbaum, "How a Ring of Women Allegedly Recruited Girls."

89 Jacob Shamsian, "Prosecutors Won't Charge Jeffrey Epstein's Former Assistant Lesley Groff, Who Accusers Say Booked 'massage' Appointments and Flights, Her Lawyers Say," *Insider*, December 30, 2021, https://www.insider.com/prosecutors-decline-charge-jeffrey-epstein-associate-lesley-groff-lawyers-say-2021-12.

90 Shamsian, "Prosecutors Won't Charge Jeffrey Epstein's Former Assistant Lesley Groff."

91 Landon Thomas Jr, "Working for Top Bosses on Wall St. Has Its Perks," *New York Times*, February 5, 2005, https://www.nytimes.com/2005/02/05/business/working-for-top-bosses-on-wall-st-has-its-perks.html.

92 Thomas, "Working for Top Bosses on Wall St."

93 Kate Briquelet and Lachlan Cartwright, "Epstein's 'Madam' Is Behind Bars. Is Prince Andrew Next?," *The Daily Beast*, July 3, 2020, https://www.thedailybeast.com/jeffrey-epsteins-madam-ghislaine-maxwell-is-behind-bars-is-prince-andrew-next.

94 Natalie Musumeci, "Investigators Eye Guinness Beer Aristocrat amid Ghislaine Maxwell's Arrest," *New York Post*, July 3, 2020, https://nypost.com/2020/07/03/investigators-eye-guinness-beer-aristocrat-amid-ghislaine-maxwells-arrest/.

95 Tim Stickings, "Epstein Investigators 'want to Talk to' Guinness Family Aristocrat," *Mail Online*, July 3, 2020, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-8487581/Epstein-investigators-want-talk-Guinness-family-aristocrat.html.

96 Stickings, "Epstein Investigators."

97 Daniel Bates, "Jeffrey Epstein Brought 8 Women with Him to the Clinton White House," *Mail Online*, January 13, 2022, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-10394863/Jeffrey-Epstein-brought-eight-women-Clinton-White-House.html.

98 Bates, "Epstein Brought 8 Women with Him."

99 Bates, "Epstein Brought 8 Women with Him."

100 HashTigre, Twitter post, June 15, 2022, https://twitter.com/hash_tigre/status/1537250800581283840.

101 Bates, "Epstein Brought 8 Women with Him."

102 Bates, "Epstein Brought 8 Women with Him."

103 Whitney Webb, "Palantir's Tiberius, Race, and the Public Health Panopticon," *Unlimited Hangout*, December 7, 2020, https://unlimitedhangout.com/2020/12/investigative-series/palantirs-tiberius-race-and-the-public-health-panopticon/.

104 Whitney Webb, "The CIA, Mossad and "Epstein Network" Are Exploiting Mass Shootings," *MintPress News*, September 6, 2019, https://www.mintpressnews.com/cia-israel-mossad-jeffrey-epstein-orwellian-nightmare/261692/.

105 "The Rockefeller Foundation Announces Inaugural Cohort of Fellows," *The Rockefeller Foundation*, January 8, 2018, https://www.rockefellerfoundation.org/news/rockefeller-foundation-announces-inaugural-cohort-fellows/.

106 James Beal, Dan Wootton, and Hugo Daniel, "Prince Andrew Close to Brain Surgeon Who Worked for Paedo Pal Epstein," *The Sun*, March 27, 2020, https://www.thesun.co.uk/news/11274254/prince-andrew-brain-surgeon-paedo-jeffrey-epstein/.

107 "Flight Manifests Page 65," *EpsteinsBlackBook.com*, https://epsteinsblackbook.com/flights/65; "Patricia Zuniga Starnes Facebook Profile," Facebook, https://www.facebook.com/patricia.z.starnes; "Oscar Zuniga Obituary," *Legacy.com*, July 23, 2007, https://www.legacy.com/obituaries/sanantonio/obituary.aspx?pid=91489007.

108 Tom Sykes, "Prince Andrew Was 'Given' 'Beautiful Young Neurosurgeon' by Epstein, Says Ex-Housekeeper," *The Daily Beast*, November 22, 2019, https://www.thedailybeast.com/prince-andrew-was-given-beautiful-young-neurosurgeon-by-jeffrey-epstein-says-ex-housekeeper.

109 Sykes, "Prince Andrew Was 'Given' 'Beautiful Young Neurosurgeon'."

110 "Team," *Andreessen Horowitz*, https://a16z.com/about/team/.

111 Kate Clark, "Former Israeli Prime Minister Helps Launch A16z-Backed Cyber Defense Startup," *PitchBook*, July 16, 2018, https://pitchbook.com/news/articles/former-israeli-prime-minister-helps-launch-a16z-backed-cyber-defense-startup.

112 "Melanie Walker," *World Economic Forum*, https://www.weforum.org/people/melanie-walker/.

113 Richard Eden, "Countess of Iveagh, 46, Splits from £900m Guinness Heir," *Mail Online*, February 27, 2021, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-9306473/Countess-Iveagh-splits-Guinness-heir-one-Britains-biggest-divorces.html.

Prince Andrew

CHAPTER 19

THE PRINCE AND THE PRESIDENT

"RANDY ANDY"

As discussed in the previous chapter, Epstein and Maxwell recruited, groomed, and trafficked countless women, teens, and girls, often luring them in with promises of glamorous modeling careers or other forms of "help." These girls were seemingly divided into tiers, with some being treated as easily exploitable and expendable and others being treated as more elite and worthy of increased investment. One of Epstein's most well-known targets in terms of sexual blackmail, Prince Andrew, the Duke of York, would become associated with both.

It's unclear exactly when Epstein met Prince Andrew. As noted in chapter 11, Epstein's connection to the British Royal family allegedly began as far back as the 1970s and was forged through Epstein's ties to violinist Jacqueline du Pré. Ghislaine Maxwell, however, is widely believed to be the person who introduced Epstein to Prince Andrew and her social connections to the British nobility from a young age saw her socializing with members of the Royal family at least as early as the mid-1980s, if not before. Several media reports from the early 2000s claim that Maxwell was introduced to the Prince by his ex-wife Sarah Ferguson.[1] Years after this introduction was reportedly made, Jeffrey Epstein provided financial assistance to Ferguson at Prince Andrew's behest by paying Ferguson's former personal assistant £15,000, allegedly in order to allow for "a wider restructuring of Sarah's £5 million debts to take place," according to *The Telegraph*.[2]

Steven Hoffenberg, Epstein's former business partner and financial schemer (see chapter 11), has claimed that Epstein bragged of his relationship with Prince Andrew in the early 1990s and that he had met the Prince via Maxwell around 1991 in the United Kingdom.[3] Hoffenberg has claimed that Epstein's relationship with Andrew was one of his earliest "blackmail plots" and that Epstein openly boasted of plans to sell the prince's secrets to Israeli intelligence.[4] Epstein also reportedly referred to Andrew as his "superbowl trophy." Prince Andrew has since claimed that he didn't meet Epstein until 1999 and has sought to downplay the extent of their relationship.

However, well before Epstein was infamous, there are numerous indications that Andrew's relationship with him was very close as well as very abnormal. The Epstein-Prince Andrew relationship has long been a fascination of the UK press, even before Epstein's notoriety, with numerous articles from the early 2000s detailing the most outrageous aspects of their relationship. Prior to his association with the Prince, Epstein had also garnered attention from UK newspapers regarding his association with Ghislaine Maxwell, whose reputation in the UK has long been notorious due to the legacy left by her father, Robert Maxwell.

Reports from the UK between 2000 and 2001 on the Epstein-Prince Andrew relationship are rather revealing. Perhaps unsurprisingly, many of them were apparently scrubbed from the internet around the time of Epstein's first arrest and subsequent conviction. These reports not only reference Epstein's connection to both US and Israeli intelligence years before the first investigation into Epstein's exploitation of minors began, but also reveal surprising aspects of Prince Andrew's involvement with Epstein that strongly suggest that the Prince partook in illicit sexual activities with minors to a much greater extent than has previously been reported.

The public, close relationship between Prince Andrew, Ghislaine Maxwell, and Jeffrey Epstein began in February 2000, around the time the Prince turned 40 years old. That month he took a vacation at the Trump-owned Mar-a-Lago club in Palm Beach with Ghislaine Maxwell and subsequently traveled with her to New York.[5] Andrew, in New York, reportedly stayed at Epstein's residence.

Regarding this New York trip, the *Daily Mail* reported the following in February 2000:

> For almost a week Andrew had been a guest of "A" list party girl Ghislaine at the Manhattan apartment on the smart Upper East Side she shares with New York property developer Jeffrey Epstein, 50. While in New York, Ghislaine took Andrew to a fashion show, at the headquarters of designer Ralph Lauren. The Prince even went backstage afterwards and chatted with the models. He looked remarkably comfortable among the willowy creatures, especially as the once-portly Prince – privately known among Buckingham Palace staff as "three puddings" – has shed some weight.[6]

Given the relationship that Maxwell and Epstein had to the modeling industry, it is quite possible that Andrew being given access to attractive models at a fashion show by Maxwell was used to entice and tempt the Prince, drawing him deeper into their social circle. Indeed, shortly after this particular visit, Andrew's relationship with Maxwell and Epstein grew considerably.

The next month, in March, Andrew accompanied Ghislaine to a fundraising dinner in New York for the London Symphony Orchestra.[7] Shortly thereafter, in April 2000, the *Daily Mail* again reported that Maxwell and the Prince had met up for a "romantic lunch." The article states that, since his 40th birthday in February, the Prince has been linked "to a series of stunning companions." It adds that, of those companions, "none, surely, is more intriguing than Ghislaine Maxwell, daughter of the disgraced newspaper tycoon, with whom, it is claimed yesterday, Andrew held hands over lunch in a fashionable New York restaurant."[8] The pair were seen "[holding] hands as they toyed with lobster salad and champagne cocktails. They left separately only to play cat and mouse with photographers."

The conduct between Maxwell and Andrew was described as odd, in part, because Andrew was then dating a friend of Maxwell's, Australian-born PR executive Emma Gibbs. Friends interviewed by the *Daily Mail* asserted that the relationship between Maxwell and Andrew was "strictly platonic" and they were just "good friends." However, a separate report from 2007 in the *Evening Standard* refers to Maxwell as one of Prince Andrew's former girlfriends.[9]

This type of behavior seems to be a key part of Maxwell's manipulative tactics. While she was also an expert at manipulating young, vulnerable women and girls, Maxwell was also talented at manipulating men, which she often did to benefit herself and Epstein (and before Epstein, her father). This is attested to in yet another article from the period, published in November 2000 by the *Sunday Times*, which quoted friends as saying "The reason she [Maxwell] has men eating out of her hand is she manages to make them feel sexy and fascinating. She's an outrageous flirt and fascinated by dodgy, powerful men. It's all part of her Electra complex."[10] This type of flirtatious, quasi-romantic behavior on Maxwell's part appears to have been behavior she readily engaged in with, not only Prince Andrew, but another of Epstein's main "targets" during this time – Bill Clinton (discussed later in this chapter).

It is also entirely possible that Maxwell had helped arrange Andrew's then-relationship with her friend Emma Gibbs and that this was another means of making Andrew more dependent on Maxwell to arrange (and thus control) his social life. Indeed, she would soon become known as Andrew's "social fixer" and she was also described as fulfilling that same role for Jeffrey Epstein.[11]

Ghislaine Maxwell, over the years, appears to have used a range of her "girlfriends" to infiltrate, manipulate, and control powerful men, and those men may have been content to be coerced in such a way. It seems that this was also the likely motive for Maxwell's and Epstein's arranging of relationships between the "elite" tier of girls and women they recruited who later became the girlfriends and wives of powerful, elite men in their broader social networks (see the previous chapter). Returning to the case of Prince Andrew, before his increased involvement with Epstein and Maxwell, he already had some significant relationships with socialites before his marriage in 1986 to Sarah Ferguson that, notably, had some connection to Epstein.

In 1981, for example, he dated *Dynasty* actress Catherine Oxenberg – daughter of Princess Elizabeth of Yugoslavia – followed by a two year relationship with New York-based actress Koo Stark.[12] After his marriage to Ferguson fell apart in 1996, Andrew seemingly took some years off before he paired up with Caroline Stanbury. She dated Prince Andrew in 2000, with *The Sun* later reporting in 2017 that the Prince "even took her to a Martha's Vineyard Gala with Bill and Hillary Clinton, but the pair split due to the continued press attention on their relationship." Stanbury has also been previously been reported to have dated actors Hugh Grant and Sylvester Stallone, among others.[13]

Both Koo Stark and Caroline Stanbury appear in Epstein's little black book of contacts with Catherine Oxenberg's sister, Christina, also being listed. In 2001, Andrew was again dating a member of the Epstein-Maxell social circle, Emma Gibbs. Later on, in 2006 and 2007, the Prince dated Angie Everhart, who is also listed in Epstein's book of contacts. Another name linked with Prince Andrew can also be found in Epstein's book of associates, his ex-wife Sarah Ferguson.

A month after their "romantic" lunch, in May, Andrew made an "official trip" to New York and subsequently went on vacation with Ghislaine in Florida. Next, in June, Ghislaine and Epstein attended a celebration for the Queen's birthday at Windsor Castle. After a few months, in September, Maxwell and Andrew attended the wedding of Andrew's ex-girlfriend Aurelia Cecil together. The following month, in October, Andrew again made an "official" visit to New York where he partied with Ghislaine Maxwell. In December, Andrew helped arrange a weekend house party "in honour" of Maxwell's 39th birthday in the UK.[14]

The next year, in January 2001, a very telling article penned by Nigel Rosser was published in the UK's *Evening Standard.*[15] By that point, Prince Andrew – between February 2000 and January 2001 – had eight recorded outings and trips with Maxwell, five of which had also involved Epstein. The report claimed that Andrew, for the past year, had been spending more time with Maxwell than his own children. This article, in addition to a November 2000 piece in the *Sunday Times*, mentions allegations that Epstein was rumored to be affiliated with intelligence and both the CIA and Israel's Mossad are mentioned.[16] Such allegations, as previously mentioned elsewhere in this book, were reported in British media as early as 1992.[17]

Rosser's report also quoted several personal friends of Maxwell and Epstein, who provided telling insights into the pair's relationship with the Prince. For instance, one friend was quoted as saying that Maxwell "is able to entrance anyone she chooses and Epstein can pay for anything anyone wants. She is very manipulative, and winds people round her little finger. The whole Andrew thing is probably being done for Epstein."[18]

Another friend of the pair similarly told Rosser that "Ghislaine is manipulating him [Prince Andrew] and he's too naive to realise it. She's his social fixer and he's going along with it – why? Because I think Epstein's fantastically impressed by it all. It's all very premeditated."[19]

Rosser's 2001 article in the *Evening Standard* further describes Epstein and Prince Andrew as having a "curious symbiotic relationship," adding that "wherever Ghislaine is seen with Prince Andrew, Epstein isn't far behind."

These quotes are particularly revealing now that it is widely acknowledged, over a decade after this article was published, that Epstein was seeking out rich and powerful individuals and entrapping them with minors for the purpose of blackmail. The fact that personal friends of Epstein and Maxwell at the time openly stated that their "manipulative" relationship with Prince Andrew was "very premeditated" and "probably being done for Epstein" strongly suggests that not only was the Prince entrapped, but that this entrapment activity was known to those who were close to Epstein and Maxwell at the time (and presumably British intelligence and other intelligence agencies). The quotes also speak to Maxwell's "manipulative" behavior, which she used to groom not only young, vulnerable girls (as noted in the last chapter), but also targets for sexual blackmail, like Prince Andrew.

Prince Andrew – as a member of the Royal Family, which is very protective of its social reputation – certainly fits into the category of people that Epstein sought to entrap on behalf of intelligence: rich, politically powerful, wary of damaging their social reputation, and thus susceptible to blackmail.

Notably, the year this article was published in the *Evening Standard* (i.e. 2001), is the same year that Epstein's most well-known accuser and victim, Virginia Giuffre (then Virginia Roberts), claims that she was introduced to Prince Andrew by Maxwell and Epstein and forced to have sex with the Prince on at least three occasions. She has also claimed that Epstein would subsequently instruct her to describe to him the encounters in order to learn compromising information about the Prince's sexual habits and preferences. Her claims regarding Epstein's trafficking of her, specifically to Prince Andrew, have since been largely corroborated by photographic evidence, flight logs, and public records.[20]

Perhaps the best corroboration of Giuffre's allegations is that fact that, in 2022, Prince Andrew decided to pay Giuffre a reported sum of $20 million as part of an out-of-court settlement in order to avoid having to face her in court or to give any statement about the past encounters between them under oath.[21] Giuffre's lawsuit had alleged that the Prince had sexually abused her at Epstein's island, Epstein's New York mansion, and at a residence of Ghislaine Maxwell's in London. It also alleged that Andrew knew she was underage at the time of the encounters.[22]

While it appears that Prince Andrew was deliberately entrapped as part of Epstein's intelligence-linked sexual blackmail operation, Rosser's article further suggests that Andrew's involvement with the minors and young women exploited by Epstein went far beyond his alleged three encounters with Giuffre. For instance, Rosser quotes a friend of Prince Andrew's ex-wife Sara Ferguson as saying that Andrew "used to be smart when he came back from abroad.… He's started having a girl massage him… He even travels abroad with his own massage mattress."

During this same time period, Epstein and Maxwell also introduced Prince Andrew to "sex aid entrepreneur" Christine Drangsholt during a trip to Mar-a-Lago and describes Andrew traveling to Los Angeles, where he was seen "flirting … with a group of young girls," and to Phuket, Thailand, where he "wandered around the sex bars in the area's red light district."[23] The Los Angeles trip saw Andrew accompanied by artist and close friend of Michael Jackson, Brett Livingstone Strong. Ghislaine Maxwell had also accompanied Andrew to Thailand, the same country to which Epstein later sent Virginia Giuffre to recruit others into his international sex trafficking operation.

The mentions of "massages" from a "girl" and Andrew traveling around with Maxwell and Epstein while bringing along "his own massage mattress," are particularly striking given what is now known about Epstein's sex trafficking and sexual blackmail operation. Court documents, police reports, and other evidence have since made it clear that "massage" was the code word Epstein and his co-

conspirators used for sex with the minors he exploited and massage tables and sex toys were frequently present together in the rooms of his various residences where he forced underage girls to engage in sexual acts with him and others.[24]

Most notable of all is the fact that these claims of Prince Andrew receiving "massages" from girls during his trips with Epstein and Maxwell were published in January 2001, at least two months before Virginia Giuffre states that she was first introduced to and forced to have sex with the Prince in March 2001. This means that the claims in Rosser's article regarding Epstein-and Maxwell-brokered "massages" refer to *at least* one other girl, strongly suggesting that Andrew's involvement with minors ex-ploited by Epstein is much greater than what has been publicly acknowledged. Also somewhere in this same timeframe, between 1999 and 2001, Andrew was a guest of Epstein's at Zorro Ranch, where he was "given" a "beautiful young neurosurgeon" believed to be Melanie Walker (discussed in the previous chapter).

Over the past few years, other reports have added to the likelihood that Prince Andrew engaged in illicit activities with more minors than Virginia Giuffre. For instance, in September 2019, the FBI expanded its probe into Epstein's sex trafficking network to include a specific focus on the Prince's role.[25] The FBI then stated that they were reviewing claims regarding Prince Andrew made by other Epstein victims aside from Giuffre, but did not specify the nature of those claims.

It is worth examining why Epstein and Maxwell were interested in associating so closely with Prince Andrew and enticing him to partake in their illicit activities at this point in time. One possible motive may lie in gaining access to certain "philanthropies," as the British Royal family are active patrons of various children's charities. As will be discussed later in this chapter, access to powerful "philanthropies" appears to be one of the reasons for Epstein's increasingly public association with Bill Clinton during this same period.

For instance, while Prince Andrew and Ghislaine Maxwell were reportedly partying in New York during April 2000, Prince Andrew also attended a Patron's Company Lunch for the Outward Bound Trust as a trustee on 14 April 2000 at Buckingham Palace.[26] This may have also been attractive to sex traffickers like Epstein and Maxwell, as the Outward Bound Trust is an educational charity which "takes more than 25,000 young people each year, many from deprived areas, to climb mountains, sleep under the stars, and brave the elements in the wild places of the UK."[27] The Duke of York only stepped down from his position as trustee of the Outward Bound Trust in 2019, and was eventually replaced by his daughter, Princess Beatrice.[28] There has never been any official investigation into Andrew's time at the children's charity.

Another reason Epstein may have promoted his increasingly public association with Andrew during this time may be related to Andrew's other roles during this period. Beginning in 2001, the Duke of York worked with UK Trade and Investment which was part of the Department for Business, Innovation and Skills. The Duke was then acting as the United Kingdom's Special Representative for International Trade and Investment. This position had previously been occupied by the first cousin of Queen Elizabeth II, Prince Edward, and the organization was formerly referred to as the "British Overseas Trade Board."

In this official position, Andrew began doing business with executives from some of the world's most powerful companies as well as major politicians in both the UK and abroad. In this position, Prince Andrew traveled throughout the United Kingdom and the wider world.[29] For instance, in 2004 alone, Prince Andrew undertook "around 300 UKTI engagements including 148 calls or visits in the UK and 152 overseas."[30] Notably, during this time, Andrew's relationship with Epstein and Maxwell was at its peak, meaning that the pair would likely have been able to influence Andrew's behavior on these trade missions were it in their interest to do so.

Significantly, Andrew's role at UKTI saw him accused of "open[ing] doors to arms dealers," specifically in Indonesia, a country where the Riady family (see chapters 8, 16 and 17) are a dominant force.[31] Andrew was also accused on this and other occasions of seeking to facilitate business deals that specifically benefitted British weapons dealer BAE Systems.[32] As noted in chapter 11, Epstein's British mentor, Sir Douglas Leese, had been associated with a massive BAE weapons deal to Saudi Arabia in the 1980s. Epstein's close relationship with Prince Andrew at this time and his own history with weapons companies and arms smugglers suggests that Andrew's relationship with Epstein could have been a factor in the Prince's promotion and facilitation of arms deals to specific countries during this period.

Another possible reason as to why Maxwell and Epstein targeted Prince Andrew was because of the protection from prosecution that an association with the British royal family can provide. While only the Queen herself has official immunity from prosecution, aside from police warnings for speeding violations given to Princess Anne on a few occasions, the only previous occasion where a member of the British royal family was prosecuted for crimes was King Charles I during the English Civil War of the 1600s.

Even though members of the royal family are not officially exempt from prosecution, the UK police rarely act when the royals are accused of crimes. For example, Prince Charles has had some very suspicious associations, such as to the infamous BBC star and pedophile, Jimmy Savile, and various members of the clergy who have been convicted of sex acts against children – such as the former-Church of England Bishop, Peter Ball, who served only 16 months in prison for offenses against 18 young men.[33] Yet, Charles's association with active pedophiles, much like Andrew's relationship with Epstein – a foreign intelligence asset – have never been properly investigated by the UK police.

EPSTEIN, CLINTON, AND PHILANTHROPY 2.0

Around the same time that Epstein and Maxwell were growing closer to Prince Andrew and "arranging his social life," they also began to publicly cozy up to another man of influence – Bill Clinton. Indeed, shortly after Bill Clinton left office, his relationship with Epstein and Maxwell deepened considerably. It has also been the erroneous contention of the mainstream media that Clinton's relationship with Epstein only began during this period of time, in his post-presidency. This is likely part of a broader effort to obfuscate Epstein's relationship with the Clinton White House in the 1990s (see chapters 16 and 17).

By 2002, Clinton was being referred to in media reports as Epstein's "latest prized addition."[34] The article also quoted Clinton via a spokesman as saying the following of Epstein: "Jeffrey is both a highly successful financier and a committed philanthropist with a keen sense of global markets and an in-depth knowledge of twenty-first-century science." Clinton also said at the time that he "especially appreciated his [Epstein's] insights and generosity" as it related to "work on democratization, empowering the poor, citizen service, and combating HIV/AIDS."[35]

In the months after leaving the White House, Bill Clinton not only began to spend a lot more time (at least publicly) with Jeffrey Epstein, he was also focused on the launching of his "philanthropic" organization, the Clinton Foundation. In examining the Epstein-Clinton relationship in the early 2000s, there are numerous indications that Epstein – the man who previously had "masterminded" one of the largest Ponzi schemes in US history via Towers Financial and whose past financial activity was interwoven with organized crime and intelligence networks – played a key role in shaping Clinton's post-presidential philanthropy. It is also worth keeping in mind that Epstein's past associations with the Clinton White House revolved around controversial fundraisers with links to foreign espionage operations.

Epstein was also involved in the philanthropy of Bill Gates, which will be discussed more in the next chapter. The philanthropies of Gates and Clinton, both launched in 2001, were intertwined in key ways, with Epstein being one major, yet underreported connection between the two.

Epstein's role in shaping these high-profile philanthropies was no accident. During the early 2000s, there were major shifts in the world of philanthropy underway where people in Epstein's broader network – like convicted felon and former "junk bond king" Michael Milken and tech entrepreneurs like Bill Gates – were developing what some have called "philanthropy 2.0."

Much of this new model of "philanthropy" has centered around securing "pledges" from billionaires, multi-millionaires, and wealthy celebrities that are ultimately "multi-year promises to invest time and money" in businesses in particular markets which are framed as having a high "social impact." These "pledges" receive a lot of publicity and are publicly treated as "philanthropic." However, critics and even supporters have noted that this is "not philanthropy – not as the U.S. Tax Code defines it, or really, how popular culture has always considered it since the earliest societies adopted alms giving to the poor."[36]

Key aspects of so-called "philanthropy 2.0" are related to the rise of "venture philanthropy," which is defined as "the application or redirection of principles of traditional venture capital financing to achieve philanthropic endeavors."[37] Such "philanthropic endeavors" are further defined as "making investments that promote some sort of social good, like socially responsible investments (SRI) to meet environmental, social, and governance (ESG) criteria" as opposed to turning a profit. However, if the "venture philanthropist" is also on the board of the company and holds stock in the company benefitting from the "philanthropy" (as often happens), there are ultimately few tangible differences between venture capitalism and "venture philanthropy." It should come as no surprise, then, that "philanthropists" of this mold often refer their "philanthropic" donations as investments and openly tout the high return on investment those "donations" have generated.[38]

The Clinton Foundation is a notable example of such "philanthropy." It has also been routinely accused of functioning as a more sophisticated version of the corrupt, "pay-to-play" political slush funds used by the Clintons in the past. Yet, instead of their past use of formal political fundraising bodies for these purposes, this time they used what is nominally a "charity."[39] When considering that Epstein's earliest involvement with the Clintons was related to their most questionable fundraising activities (see chapter 16), as well as Epstein's own past of financial crimes, this suggests that his role in guiding the early days of the Clinton's "philanthropic" ventures was hardly coincidental and also suggests there were ulterior motives behind the foundation's creation. Notably, one of the participants in the suspect 1996 fundraising meetings discussed in chapter 16, Bruce Lindsey, was one of the earliest heads of the Clinton Foundation.

Epstein's covert role in the early days of the Clinton Foundation can be seen in key ways. The foundation, for instance, was created by Bill Clinton alongside Doug Band with input from people like Ira Magaziner, among others, in 2001. Notably, Epstein's several flights with Clinton during this period often saw Band onboard and, on a few occasions, Ira Magaziner as well.[40] Another person on flights on Epstein's plane with Clinton, Band, and/or Magaziner is Gayle Smith, a former advisor to Clinton who later became the Working Group Chair on Global Poverty for the Clinton Global Initiative from 2005 to 2007.[41]

In addition, Epstein's defense lawyers during his first arrest for sex crimes claimed that "Epstein was part of the original group that conceived the Clinton Global Initiative [CGI], which is described as a project 'bringing together a community of global leaders to devise and implement innovative solutions to some of the world's most pressing challenges.'"[42] Others have described the CGI as "a kind of dressed-up Woodstock for corporate generals and NGO dreamers" and as the Clinton Foundation's "glitzy annual gathering of chief executives, heads of state, and celebrities."[43]

Epstein's plane being shared by Clinton, Band, Magaziner, Smith, and others during this critical period where Clinton's post-presidential philanthropies were being designed and established corroborates the claim from his lawyers that Epstein was part of this particular group. This is especially true when considering the destinations and purposes of many of those specific flights.

The flights Clinton took on Epstein's plane began in February 2002 and involved 6 unique trips, which involved 26 flights overall, between 2002 and 2003. On February 9, 2002, Clinton was recorded as flying on Epstein's plane from Miami International Airport to Westchester County, New York, where he lives. On that occasion, the flight logs record that there were three Secret Service agents accompanying the former-President.

Clinton again appears on Epstein's flight manifest accompanied by a sizable Secret Service detail, with flight logs recording that on March 19, 2002, Clinton and Epstein flew from JFK to London Luton airport along with three members of the Secret Service, Doug Band, Ghislaine Maxwell, and Sarah Kellen. The group returned to JFK on March 21, accompanied by an additional seven members of the Secret Service, supermodel Naomi Campbell, and one unidentified male passenger. Though little is known about the purpose of these earliest flights, Clinton's subsequent trips on Epstein's plane were intimately linked to Clinton's efforts to develop his "philanthropies."

On May 22, 2002, Bill Clinton was again recorded on the flight logs for Epsein's plane, but on this occasion, without his Secret Service detail. Before they made their eventual rendezvous with Clinton in Japan, Epstein, Maxwell, and Kellen had arrived via Nice, France, and Novosibirsk in Russia.

Clinton had already been in Asia since at least May 19, when he was acting as then-president George W. Bush's official emissary and led an official delegation to East Timor from May 19 to May 20.[44] The next day, Clinton was in Japan to receive an honorary law doctorate, which was presented to him by the president of Nihon University, Yukiyasu Sezaki.[45] The following day, Clinton boarded Epstein's plane and the group took off from Japan's Atsugi Naval Air Facility and traveled to Hong Kong.

Aboard this flight were Jeffrey Epstein, Ghislaine Maxwell, Sarah Kellen, Bill Clinton, Pete Rathgeb (a Florida-based pilot), and Doug Band. They were accompanied by two girls only referred to as Janice and Jessica in the flight logs, believed by some to be trafficked women, and someone identified by the letters "MCXG" and a note of "+6 pax." The latter annotation appears to refer to 6 additional passengers, whose identities are unknown, joining that particular flight. Epstein's plane had originally arrived on the Japanese naval base on 20 May, two days prior to their departure to Hong Kong.

Epstein's plane briefly stopped in Hong Kong before flying on to China, where it landed at Shenzhen Bao'an International Airport in the Guangdong province of China, on May 23, 2002. There, the group only stayed for a few hours. The group then flew from China and landed at Singapore's joint civilian-naval base, Changi Air Base.

The trip to Singapore is significant as Epstein and Maxwell were photographed at the Fullerton Hotel attending a dinner meeting alongside Clinton and Singapore's Prime Minister, Goh Chok Tong, among others.[46] Others at that meeting who can be seen seated alongside Clinton, Epstein and Maxwell are Harvard-educated, Singaporean politicians George Yeo Yong-Boon and Tharman Shanmugaratnam, who were then working in the Ministry for Trade and Industry. Both of those politicians are now part of the leadership bodies of the

World Economic Forum.[47] Also present was the then US ambassador to Singapore Steven Green, who had been appointed when Clinton was president in 1997 and continued to serve through the earlier part of George W. Bush's first term.[48]

Green was previously the head of E-II holdings, which was rescued from bankruptcy thanks to a cash infusion from corporate raider (and later Epstein associate) Leon Black.[49] Green, after he began working for Samsonite Corporation, was "a frequent flyer on the late Commerce Secretary Ron Brown's trade missions" and in the mid-1990s, prior to being appointed ambassador to Singapore by Clinton, had donated $10,000 to the DNC and thousands more to Democratic candidates. In 1995, Green was placed on president Clinton's Export Council, where he served on the Executive and Strategic Communications Committees.[50] That council was situated within the Commerce Department and "advises the president on matters related to export performance and develops policy guidance to promote export expansion" and "provides a forum for addressing significant trade issues affecting U.S. businesses and workers."[51] Green, in other words, seems to have been part of the controversial happenings related to the Commerce Department in the mid-1990s (see chapters 16 and 17) and was, notably, given an ambassadorship to Singapore, a country which played a minor role in aspects of that scandal, during that period of time.

After the dinner meeting, Clinton went on to meet Goh Chok Tong's predecessor, Lee Kuan Yew at the Istana, the official residence of Singapore's president.

After a two night stay in Singapore, the group flew to Bangkok, Thailand, where they had a short lay-over before flying on to a meeting with the Sultan of Brunei, arriving on May 25, 2002.[52] Upon arriving in Brunei, they were welcomed by the Sultan Haji Hassanal Bolkiah, who made the group his guests of honor for a meal at the Istana Nurul Izzah, which was discussed in the government-run media outlet *Pelita Brunei* a few days after the meeting on May 29, 2002.[53]

The Sultan of Brunei and some of his relatives have faced disturbing accusations of illegal sexual behavior over the years. The rulers of Brunei have become well renowned for throwing lavish and outrageous parties where they import Western models, strippers, and prostitutes to entertain the members of the royal family. This is despite the fact that prostitution and paying for sexual services is a serious criminal offense in the country. Epstein had some notable, indirect connections with the Sultan of Brunei, who, for example, owned the building where Epstein's offices at the Villard Houses were located (see chapter 11). As noted in chapter 7, the Sultan of Brunei had also been involved in covert Contra support efforts.

In 1997, Shannon Marketic, a former-Miss USA, took legal action against Jefri Bolkiah – the Prince of Brunei – saying that she and other women were hired for promotional modeling work but instead found themselves being held "virtual prisoners."[54] Marketic claimed that they were drugged during their captivity and forced to act as sex slaves for members of the Brunei royal family. Eventually, the court ruled that the sultan had sovereign immunity as head of state and the case was dismissed.

The group that had flown in on Epstein's plane spent two nights in Brunei, before flying out of Brunei International Airport. Here, at their departure from Brunei, Clinton's group and Epstein's entourage went their separate ways, with Epstein and company continuing on to Indonesia, where they would spend two days before flying out to Sri Lanka.

In addition to this trip, Clinton's last trip on Epstein's plane, in November 2003, also saw him travel to Hong Kong and China. On that trip, he traveled to the Far East with Epstein after touting and developing his "philanthropic" projects in the developing world with European officials. As will be noted later, Clinton also traveled to China and Taiwan with Ghislaine Maxwell in 2005.[55]

The fact that Clinton made two major trips to these countries on Epstein's plane (and a later one with Maxwell) takes on new significance when considering the subjects of chapters 16 and 17, which detailed the intersections of Epstein's visits and activities with the Clinton White House and how it related to administration scandals involving China. The Singapore visit seems particularly significant as there is photographic evidence of Epstein and Maxwell meeting that country's then head of state alongside Clinton. As previously mentioned in chapter 16, Mark Middleton's suspect activities in the 1990s, in addition to his involvement with Epstein, saw him accused of receiving funds from Chinese military intelligence via entities in Singapore. The country was also the site of major Lippo Group (i.e. Riady family-owned) businesses. In addition, Steven Green's aforementioned history and presence at this meeting is also noteworthy.

After the trip to Asia in May 2002, Epstein accompanied Clinton on another trip associated with the Clinton Foundation later that year, this time to Africa. In

September 2002, President Clinton flouted his normal security protocols while traveling with Epstein and his entourage. This time, in the name of "charity," the group brought along some celebrity additions. Throughout this week-long African sojourn, Jeffrey Epstein, Ghislaine Maxwell, and Sarah Kellen would host not only President Clinton, but also actor Kevin Spacey as well as comedian Chris Tucker. Spacey was, a few years later, charged with sexual assault and has been accused of sexual abuse by several men over the years, beginning in 2005, then again in 2008 and in 2013 as well as more recently in early 2022.[56] As of the writing of this book, he has yet to be convicted.

The flight logs also show that other travelers included Clinton's advisor Doug Band as well as American businessman Ron Burkle, the co-founder of the Yucaipa Companies, LLC, a private investment firm. He formed Yucaipa Co. in 1986 while he was in his mid-30s and his subsequent rise was meteoric. In a 2010 article published in the *Pittsburgh Post-Gazette*, it was noted that: "With the fortune has come attention, most of it unwanted. At times the subject of salacious gossip, Mr. Burkle fanatically tries to guard his privacy." Many of Burkle's close associations with the usual suspects may be the likely reason for the billionaire's success.

For instance, a 2006 *New York Times* article described the wealthy business man as follows: "Mr. Burkle, a kingmaker in California political circles and a confidant of a former governor, Gray Davis, has also been a loyal supporter of Mr. Clinton and former Vice President Al Gore, who both now have business relationships with him."[57] By the time of the Africa trip, Clinton was also on Burkle's payroll, as the former-president was serving as an advisor to Yucaipa. Clinton is believed to have earned around $15 million in five years of working for Burkle's company.[58] Burkle told *Forbes* in 2006 that, at the time, he "figures he accompanies Clinton at least half the time Clinton travels abroad."[59]

The aforementioned *Times* article also states that Burkle "had a highly publicized falling-out with Michael Ovitz, the former Hollywood power broker, several years ago, and came under the news media microscope in late 2000 for soliciting Mr. Clinton about a possible pardon for Michael Milken, the former junk-bond king and convicted felon. But for the most part, Mr. Burkle, who sits on the boards of the Occidental Petroleum Corporation and Yahoo, has avoiding engaging in high-profile business disputes."

As previously mentioned in earlier chapters, Occidental Petroleum has long been associated with corporate raiders and other suspect characters explored throughout this book, especially its long-time head, Armand Hammer. In addition, Burkle's effort to solicit a pardon for Michael Milken speaks to Burkle's own past association with the "junk bond king," as Milken had been involved with Burkle's early rise and at least one of Yucaipa's early successes.[60] Burkle has many other interesting connections. For instance, described as "a former family friend of Michael Jackson," Burkle purchased the late singer's Neverland Ranch in 2020.[61]

Joining Ron Burkle, Clinton, Epstein, and others on this trip to Africa was Casey Wasserman, an American entertainment executive and the grandson of "supermob" kingpin and longtime head of MCA, Lew Wasserman. Casey Wasserman was the son of Jack Norman Myers (formerly Meyrowitz) and Lynne Wasserman. Casey's father was once convicted alongside reputed mobster Chris Petti for money-laundering.[62]

After his parents divorced, Casey began using his mother's maiden name, Wasserman, suggesting that he wanted to play up the connections shared by the maternal side of his family. In an interview with Jack Myers conducted by author Dennis McDougal, who wrote *The Last Mogul: a biography of Lew Wasserman,* Myers said: "My son changed his name to Wasserman, I said, 'Casey, first of all everyone will think you're a fool if you do that. You look like an idiot.'" But Wasserman was obviously more interested in the clout his mother's maiden name would afford him than keeping his father's name intact.

Indeed, Casey Wasserman would eventually become president and chief executive officer of the Wasserman Foundation, which was founded by Lew and Edie Wasserman in 1952. The Wasserman Foundation eventually became a major contributor to the Los Angeles Police Foundation as well as a major donor to the Democratic Party. In addition, Casey Wasserman's wife, Laura, was the granddaughter of none other than the organized crime-linked lawyer Paul Ziffren, previously mentioned in chapters 1 and 9. Thus, Casey Wasserman seems to have had an apparent interest in operating within the same networks as his grandfather.

As previously noted in chapter 16, the Wassermans were major political patrons of the Clintons. As noted by *Variety*: "In 1991, Bill Clinton attended his first major introduction to Hollywood fundraising circles at the home, when the Wassermans hosted an event that August for the Democratic National Committee. They threw another fundraiser for him in August of 1992, and then after he won the presidency that December, according to *Variety* archives."[63] The article goes on to note that:

> Other guests at the [Wasserman] home through the years including a host of governors and senators, as well as Henry Kissinger when he was secretary of state. [Jimmy] Carter was a largely unknown Georgia governor when he first met Lew Wasserman, but he said in a 1982 interview that Wasserman's backing proved "extremely helpful." "When I decided to run, Mr. Wasserman was one of the first out-of-state-people I told," Carter said, according to the book Mr. and Mrs. Hollywood. "People respected his judgment in political affairs."[64]

As previously noted in chapter 10, Wasserman was also one of the driving forces and chief political patrons of Ronald Reagan, making him a "kingmaker" for several US presidents during his lifetime.

Another big player and Clinton ally who joined this particular trip was Rodney Slater, who had previously been Secretary of Transportation under President Bill Clinton, and David Slang, reportedly a personal assistant to Doug Band. Also listed were the names Andrea Mitrovich, Chauntae Davies, Cindy Lopez, as well as Jim Kennedy, Gayle Smith, and a man named Eric, whose surname is illegible. Andrea Mitrovich is listed in Epstein's contact book as a "ballerina" and appears on Epstein's flight logs numerous times, often listed by her initials "AM." She flew on numerous flights that also included Bill Clinton aside from the Africa trip. Chauntae Davies, also on this particular flight, is one of Epstein's better known accusers and was allegedly trafficked by him under the guise of working as a "masseuse." Cindy Lopez is listed in Epstein's black book as being affiliated with Karin Models, the modeling agency tied to Epstein co-conspirator Jean Luc Brunel discussed in the previous chapter.

Gayle Smith refers to Clinton's former special assistant and senior director for African Affairs at the National Security Council in Clinton's second term. At the time of the flight, she was working for the Clinton-adjacent Center for American Progress think tank and, by 2003, was working for the Clinton Global Initiative. Before joining the Clinton administration, Smith was chief of staff to the head of the US Agency for International Development (USAID), an alleged CIA cut-out.[65]

The trip officially started in Ghana, where Bill Clinton "promote[d] efforts to curtail the AIDS epidemic and encourage economic development." During his trip to Accra, Clinton met with the then president of Ghana. On this trip to Ghana, Bill Clinton was the guest of honor at the launch of the Foundation for the Building of Capital of the Poor (FBCP), a program ostensibly designed to assist in "mobilizing the assets held by the poor to facilitate their economic development" and which was also described as a "property reform program." Clinton was reported to be a patron of the foundation.[66] President John Agyekum Kufuor of Ghana launched the Foundation, which also established a regional training institute in Accra for the benefit of other African countries interested in these property reform programs.

The foundation, which was supported by the United Nations Development Programme (UNDP), was developed jointly by the Ministry of Justice of Ghana and the Peru Institute for Liberty and Democracy (ILD). The latter organization was founded by Peruvian economist and author, Dr. Hernando De Soto, a close ally of Clinton's. De Soto had previously delivered a series of lectures in Accra earlier that same year, reportedly at the invitation of the government and facilitated by the UNDP. Speaking to reporters upon his arrival at the Kotoka International Airport on this occasion, De Soto told the press that he had decided to set up the foundation in Ghana because the country's government had shown a commitment to democratic principles by developing proper property documentation.[67]

Clinton's meetings in Ghana took place behind closed doors, with African media outlets at the time stating that, "The discussions were, however, believed to have centered on the launching of the foundation, economic and political developments in Africa and other parts of the world." Clinton also caused controversy during this trip to Ghana by meeting with former-Ghanaian President Jerry John Rawlings.[68] The private meeting between Clinton and Rawlings caused concern among the Ghanaian officials who accused Clinton of diverging from the agreed protocol for his visit to Ghana. However, Clinton insisted that his visit to Rawlings had been included on his original itinerary.

The government and organizers of the visit claimed they had not been told about this meeting beforehand and Clinton's account of events was soon contradicted by reports that the US Embassy officials had discreetly informed the Rawlings's household that Clinton planned to visit him on the same day that visit took place. Rawlings's Special Aide, Victor Smith, confirmed that they had been formally informed of a request by Clinton to meet Rawlings the same day of the meeting: "We received the information at 11am today."[69]

The Epstein-Clinton group then left Accra and landed in Abuja, Nigeria, for the next stop of their African tour.[70] When leaving Ghana, the passengers of Epstein's plane were seen off by Alphonse Arthur, who was Director of State Protocol, as well as officials stationed at the US Embassy in Accra. The group's next stop in Nigeria saw the former-president give a speech at the annual lecture of the Nigerian Institute of International Affairs (NIIA) at the ECOWAS Secretariat in Abuja. His lecture was entitled "Democratisation and Economic Development" and seemed to follow a similar tone to his previous public statements made during his time in Ghana.[71]

After Nigeria, the group journeyed onto Rwanda.[72] Clinton began his visit on this occasion at Kicukiro Health Centre and then had lunch with the President of Rwanda, H.E. Paul Kagame and First Lady Mrs. Jeanette Kagame at State House, Kigali. Clinton also visited the Gisozi Genocide Memorial site and Ndera village, where villagers were reportedly receiving support from the Clinton Foundation.

At Kicukiro Health Centre, President Clinton had signed an agreement between the Clinton Foundation and the Government of Rwanda to "to help Rwanda provide drugs and care to HIV /AIDS patients, train health workers and develop health services." Speaking at the health center, President Clinton stated that, "I believe reversing the AIDS (pandemic) is the most important issue that is facing the whole world. It should unite all people."[73]

Again, on this leg of the trip it was reported that Clinton was "accompanied by actors Kevin Spacey and Chris Tucker" and that Clinton was "in Africa to promote efforts to fight AIDS and encourage economic development."[74] The former-president and his entourage left Rwanda for their next leg of their journey, arriving in Maputo, Mozambique, on Wednesday evening. Clinton's visit to Mozambique was a two-day event and the group disembarked at Maputo International Airport, where they were greeted by President Joaquim Chissano.[75] Clinton gave another speech, pledging to help attract further US investment to Mozambique. Clinton and the then-Prime Minister of Mozambique, Pascaol Manuel Mocumbi, then signed a joint-memorandum on HIV/AIDS.

The last leg of the group's journey saw them travel to South Africa, where President Clinton delivered an address on the future of Africa and the role of the international community. He also joined Nelson Mandela in an event to recognize the importance of a project called "loveLife" as a model for global HIV/AIDS prevention.[76] "loveLife" was a project largely financed by the Henry J. Kaiser Family Foundation in partnership with the South African Government and the Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation and was created with the goal of reducing South Africa's youth HIV/AIDS infection rate by 50 percent in five years.[77]

Per Clinton, this mission to promote specific HIV and AIDS solutions in Africa had been formed with key input from Jeffrey Epstein. This is significant as Clinton's AIDS work closely intersected with that of another man of influence whose philanthropy was also intimately tied to Epstein: Bill Gates (see chapter 20). In addition, well after this visit, in 2012, Epstein claimed that he does "lots of work in Africa" and further described Africa as "a fertile ground for experimentation because it has been so underdeveloped."[78] At the time, Epstein had no formal presence or organization in Africa, suggesting that his claims of doing "lots of work in Africa" may have been based around his continued involvement in Africa-focused initiatives of the Clinton and/or Gates "philanthropies," potentially with a focus on HIV/AIDS, well after this trip in 2002.

After the Africa trip, the group flew to the United Kingdom, where Prince Andrew arranged for Maxwell, Epstein, Bill Clinton, and Kevin Spacey to visit Buckingham Palace in September 2002. Maxwell and Spacey were photographed sitting in the palace's throne room.[79]

In his apparent role in helping plan and lending his jet to Clinton's fledgling "philanthropies," Epstein had, perhaps unexpectedly, gained the media's attention due to his increasingly public globetrotting with the former president. Epstein, in 2002, suggested that the raising of his public profile had created unintended consequences: "If my ultimate goal was to stay private, traveling with Clinton was a bad move on the chessboard. I recognize that now. But you know what? Even Kasparov makes them. You move on."[80]

Indeed, prior to the Africa trip, Epstein only appeared in reports, mainly in the British press, that focused on (and speculated about) the nature of his relationship with Ghislaine Maxwell as well as his relationship with Prince Andrew. When Epstein's relationship with Clinton began to garner press attention, it was one of the first times that Epstein was scrutinized by the American press.

However, Maxwell herself apparently cultivated a relationship with Clinton during the period in which Epstein was involved with the Clinton philanthropies. For instance, Maxwell reportedly accompanied Clinton on Ron Burkle's private jet to India in November 2003.[81] That trip was also associated with Clinton's philanthropic endeavors, but – notably – Epstein was not present. In addition, Maxwell accompanied Clinton, alongside billionaire philanthropist Ted Waitt – a former tech mogul and then-boyfriend of Ghislaine's, on another trip to Asia in 2005 that included visits to Taiwan, Japan, and China.[82]

Vicky Ward has reported that Maxwell, at the time, was considered by Clinton's staff as "just as important as Jeffrey – if not more so" in terms of fundraising for the Clinton Foundation and was deemed as the "go-to person for 'financial asks' for Jeffrey's money by the Clinton Foundation and then the Global Initiative."[83] Some of Epstein's donations to Clinton's philanthropies included a "high six-figure sum" in 2005 to become founding members of the CGI. As a result, Maxwell was "constantly being asked" to attend VIP events associated with the Clinton Foundation and the CGI.

At that time, and shortly after the alleged trip of Epstein's and Clinton's to China in 2005, Maxwell and Clinton were reported to have grown closer and Epstein "seemed to be completely left behind." This can be seen in Maxwell being a guest to Chelsea Clinton's wedding in 2010 and the involvement of her subsequent philanthropy, TerraMar, with the CGI. Some authors have since alleged that Clinton and Maxwell began having an affair at this time because Clinton visited Maxwell's New York residence numerous times and they were seen dining together.[84] However, as previously mentioned, Maxwell also engaged in the same behavior with Prince Andrew and this was likely just part of the behaviors that Maxwell used to enthrall and manipulate powerful men.

Endnotes

1 Saskia Sissons, "Mysterious Business of the Queen of NY-Lon," *Sunday Times* (London), November 12, 2000, https://www.mintpressnews.com/wp-content/uploads/2019/10/Mysterious-business-of-the-queen-of-NY-Lon-1.pdf.

2 Caroline Hallemann, "The Royal Family's Troubling Connection to Jeffrey Epstein," *Town & Country*, June 28, 2022, https://www.townandcountrymag.com/society/money-and-power/a28339290/royal-family-prince-andrew-jeffrey-epstein-relationship/.

3 "Epstein 'boasted' about Selling Prince Andrew's 'Secrets' to Israeli Spies," *NZ Herald*, January 24, 2020, https://www.nzherald.co.nz/lifestyle/my-super-bowl-trophy-epstein-boasted-about-selling-prince-andrews-secrets-to-mossad-spy/467VXHW7FTVYU74EZU4EEXQDOI/.

4 NZ Herald, "Epstein 'boasted' about Selling Prince Andrew's 'Secrets' to Israeli Spies."

5 Nigel Rosser, "Andrew's Fixer; She's the Daughter of Robert Maxwell and She's Manipulating His Jetset Lifestyle," *Evening Standard* (London), January 22, 2001, https://www.mintpressnews.com/wp-content/uploads/2019/10/ANDREW_S-FIXER_SHE_S-THE-DAUGHTER-OF-ROBERT-MAXWELL-AND-1.pdf.

6 Richard Kay and Geoffrey Levy, "So Is Fergie Trying to Show Andy What He Is Missing?," *Daily Mail* (London), February 12, 2000, https://www.mintpressnews.com/wp-content/uploads/2019/10/So-is-Fergie-trying-to-show-Andy-what-he-is-missing__As-1.pdf.

7 Rosser, "Andrew's Fixer."

8 Richard Kay "The romantic lunch; Holding hands across a table, Maxwell's daughter and Prince Andrew," *Daily Mail*, April 22, 2000, https://unlimitedhangout.com/wp-content/uploads/2022/08/The-romantic-lunch_Holding-hands-across-a-table_-Maxwel.pdf.

9 "The Duke of Hazzards," *Evening Standard* (London), June 1, 2007, https://www.mintpressnews.com/wp-content/uploads/2019/10/THE-DUKE-OF-HAZZARDS.pdf.

10 Sissons, "Mysterious Business."

11 Rosser, "Andrew's Fixer."

12 Lauren Hubbard, "Prince Andrew Once Dated an American Actress," *Town & Country*, November 21, 2020, https://www.townandcountrymag.com/society/tradition/a34272463/koo-stark-prince-andrew-american-actress-girlfriend/.

13 Helen Thomas, "Who Is Caroline Stanbury? Star of Ladies of London and Ex of Prince Andrew," *The Sun*, April 5, 2017, https://www.thesun.co.uk/tvandshowbiz/2883167/caroline-stanbury-ladies-of-london-ex-prince-andrew/.

14 Rosser, "Andrew's Fixer."

15 Rosser, "Andrew's Fixer."

16 Rosser, "Andrew's Fixer"; Sissons, "Mysterious Business."

17 Michael Robotham, "The Mystery of Ghislaine Maxwell's Secret Love; Revealed: The Unlikely Romance Between a Business Spy and the Crooked Financier's Favourite Daughter," *Mail on Sunday* (London), November 15, 1992, https://unlimitedhangout.com/wp-content/uploads/2022/03/The-Mystery-Of-Ghislaine-Maxwell_S-Secret-Love_Revealed-1.pdf.

18 Rosser, "Andrew's Fixer."

19 Rosser, "Andrew's Fixer."

20 Tom Sykes, “Flight Logs Reportedly Link Prince Andrew to Alleged Jeffrey Epstein Victim Virginia Roberts,” *The Daily Beast*, August 20, 2019, https://www.thedailybeast.com/flight-logs-reportedly-link-prince-andrew-to-alleged-jeffrey-epstein-victim-virginia-roberts.

21 Brad Hunter, “Ghislaine Maxwell’s Brother Claims Prince Andrew Had ‘no Option’ in $20M Deal,” *Toronto Sun*, April 16, 2022, https://torontosun.com/news/world/ghislaine-maxwells-brother-claims-prince-andrew-had-no-option-in-20m-deal.

22 Lauren del Valle, “Prince Andrew Has Paid Settlement to Virginia Giuffre, According to Her Attorney,” *CNN*, March 8, 2022, https://www.cnn.com/2022/03/08/us/prince-andrew-virginia-giuffre-settlement/index.html.

23 Rosser, “Andrew’s Fixer.”

24 Benjamin Weiser, “‘Massage’ Was Code for ‘Sex’: New Epstein Abuse Revelations,” *New York Times*, August 9, 2019, *https://www.nytimes.com/2019/08/09/nyregion/epstein-sex-slave-documents.html*; Talia Kaplan, “Jeffrey Epstein Florida Mansion Police Video Shows Massage Tables Allegedly Used for Sex Acts with Minors,” *Fox News*, August 30, 2019, https://www.foxnews.com/us/jeffrey-epstein-massage-tables-palm-beach-raid.

25 Eileen AJ Connelly, “FBI Expands Epstein Probe; Hopes to Snare More Prince Andrew Accusers,” *New York Post*, September 28, 2019, https://nypost.com/2019/09/28/fbi-expands-epstein-probe-hopes-to-snare-more-prince-andrew-accusers/.

26 “Buckingham Palace Royal Diary, 10 May 2000,” No. 12/2000 ROYAL DIARY - PART ONE OF THREE PARTS, April 12, 2000, https://web.archive.org/web/20000510234411/http://porch.ccta.gov.uk/coi/coipress.nsf/6dd085f9e5a8e859802567350059376b/f2cadedca00f865b802568bf-005708d3?OpenDocument.

27 “Clare Balding BBC Radio 4 Appeal, The Outward Bound Trust,” *BBC*, January 20, 2022, https://web.archive.org/web/20220117133034/https://www.bbc.co.uk/programmes/m0013hbz.

28 Telegraph Reporters, “Prince Andrew Resigns from Outward Bound Trust as Aides Confirm He Will Continue Working for Pitch@Palace,” *The Telegraph*, November 21, 2019, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/royal-family/2019/11/21/prince-andrew-resigns-outward-bound-trust-aides-confirm-will/.

29 “His Royal Highness’s UKTI Engagements in 2007,” *The Duke of York*, August 26, 2007, https://web.archive.org/web/20070826043756/http://www.thedukeofyork.org/output/Page5767.asp.

30 “10 Facts about The Duke of York and UK Trade and Investment,” *The Duke of York*, August 26, 2007, https://web.archive.org/web/20070826122804/http://www.thedukeofyork.org/output/Page5771.asp.

31 David Brown, “Prince Andrew Attacked for Opening Door to Arms Dealers,” *The Australian*, April 11, 2011, https://web.archive.org/web/20181224003401/https://www.theaustralian.com.au/news/world/prince-andrew-attacked-for-opening-door-to-arms-dealers/news-story/c35acb2ba8d3c7f06a1965e7d9f4e29e.

32 Rob Evans and David Leigh, “WikiLeaks Cables: Prince Andrew Demanded Special BAE Briefing,” *The Guardian*, November 30, 2010, https://www.theguardian.com/uk/2010/nov/30/prince-andrew-wikileaks-cables.

33 Harriet Sherwood, "Peter Ball, Former C of E Bishop Jailed for Sexual Abuse, Dies at 87," *The Guardian*, June 23, 2019, https://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2019/jun/23/peter-ball-bishop-jailed-sexual-abuse-dead-at-87.

34 Landon Thomas Jr, "Jeffrey Epstein: International Moneyman of Mystery," *New York Magazine*, October 28, 2002, https://web.archive.org/web/20021219121133/http://www.newyorkmetro.com/nymetro/news/people/n_7912/.

35 Thomas, "International Moneyman."

36 Tom Watson, "Exploding Philanthropy: What the Clinton Party Really Meant," *HuffPost*, September 27, 2006, https://www.huffpost.com/entry/exploding-philanthropy-wh_b_30381.

37 "What Is Venture Philanthropy?," *Investopedia*, February 22, 2016, https://www.investopedia.com/terms/v/venture-philanthropy.asp.

38 Matthew J. Belvedere, "Bill Gates: My 'best Investment' Turned $10 Billion into $200 Billion Worth of Economic Benefit," *CNBC*, January 23, 2019, https://www.cnbc.com/2019/01/23/billgates-turns-10-billion-into-200-billion-worth-of-economic-benefit.html.

39 Daniel Halper and Bob Fredericks, "Emails Reveal Hillary's Shocking Pay-for-Play Scheme," *New York Post*, August 10, 2016, https://nypost.com/2016/08/09/emails-reveal-hillarys-shocking-pay-for-play-scheme/; MintPress News Desk, "Wikileaks: Clinton Foundation's 'Pay-To-Play' With Ukraine Oligarch To Show Support For Coup," *MintPress News*, November 3, 2016, https://www.mintpressnews.com/wikileaks-clinton-foundations-pay-play-ukraine-oligarch-show-support-coup/222011/; David A. Graham, "Clinton Still Hasn't Faced Questions About Pay-to-Play Head On," *The Atlantic*, October 20, 2016, https://www.theatlantic.com/politics/archive/2016/10/clinton-foundation-pay-to-play-debate/504803/.

40 Maggie Haberman, "Hillary Clinton's next Act," *POLITICO*, August 13, 2013, https://www.politico.com/story/2013/08/hillary-clinton-family-foundation-095468.

41 "Gayle Smith, Co-Chair of the Enough Project," *Enough Project*, https://enoughproject.org/files/Gayle_Smith.pdf.

42 Malia Zimmerman, "Billionaire Sex Offender Epstein Once Claimed He Co-Founded Clinton Foundation," *Fox News*, July 6, 2016, https://www.foxnews.com/us/billionaire-sex-offender-epstein-once-claimed-he-co-founded-clinton-foundation.

43 Watson, "Exploding Philanthropy"; Nicholas Confessore and Amy Chozick, "Unease at Clinton Foundation Over Finances and Ambitions," *New York Times*, August 14, 2013, https://www.nytimes.com/2013/08/14/us/politics/unease-at-clinton-foundation-over-finances-and-ambitions.html.

44 "Clinton to Represent Bush at Timor Event," *New York Times*, May 8, 2002, https://www.nytimes.com/2002/05/08/world/clinton-to-represent-bush-at-timor-event.html.

45 "Clinton Receives Honorary Law Doctorate from Japan," *Donga*, May 22, 2002, https://www.donga.com/en/article/all/20020522/222784/1/Clinton-Receives-Honorary-Law-Doctorate-from-Japan.

46 "Prime Minister Goh Chok Tong Hosts Dinner for Former United States President Bill Clinton at Jade Restaurant, The Fullerton Singapore," *National Archives of Singapore*, May 23, 2002,

https://www.nas.gov.sg/archivesonline/photographs/record-details/a9549bbb-1162-11e3-83d5-0050568939ad; "Prime Minister Goh Chok Tong Hosts Dinner for Former United States President Bill Clinton at Jade Restaurant, The Fullerton Singapore (Group Photo)," *National Archives of Singapore*, May 23, 2002, https://www.nas.gov.sg/archivesonline/photographs/record-details/577bde17-1162-11e3-83d5-0050568939ad.

47 George Yeo Yong Bon is on the board of the World Economic Forum Foundation, See: "World Economic Forum Announces New Foundation Board Members," *World Economic Forum*, August 21, 2014, https://www.weforum.org/press/2014/08/world-economic-forum-announces-new-foundation-board-members/. ; Tharman Shanmugaratnam is on the board of trustees of the World Economic Forum, See: "Leadership and Governance," *World Economic Forum*, https://www.weforum.org/about/leadership-and-governance/.

48 "Prime Minister Goh Chok Tong Hosts Dinner for Former United States President Bill Clinton at Jade Restaurant, The Fullerton Singapore (George Yeo Yong-Boon, Bill Clinton, Goh Chok Tong, Steven Green)," *National Archives of Singapore*, May 23, 2002, https://www.nas.gov.sg/archivesonline/photographs/record-details/a954ae48-1162-11e3-83d5-0050568939ad

49 "Riding the Gravy Train to Post as Ambassador," *Denver Business Journal*, December 21, 1997, https://www.bizjournals.com/denver/stories/1997/12/22/editorial1.html.

50 "Steven J. Green," *Council of American Ambassadors*, https://www.americanambassadors.org/members/steven-j-green.

51 "Sanford Weill Named to President Clinton's Export Council," *Weill Cornell Medicine*, May 25, 2000, https://news.weill.cornell.edu/news/2000/05/sanford-weill-named-to-president-clintons-export-council.

52 "Clinton Makes Stop in Brunei," *Huron Daily Tribune*, May 26, 2002, https://www.michiganstthumb.com/news/article/Clinton-Makes-Stop-in-Brunei-7354325.php.

53 "Clinton Meeting with Sultan," *Pelita Brunei*, May 29, 2002, https://www.pelitabrunei.gov.bn/Arkib%20Dokumen/2002/29%20MEI%202002.pdf.

54 Tim Cornwall, "So Who's Telling Lies: The Swinging Sultan or the `white Slave'," *The Independent*, May 10, 1997, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/world/so-who-s-telling-lies-the-swinging-sultan-or-the-white-slave-beauty-1260898.html.

55 Daniel Bates, "Bill Clinton Took TWO MORE Trips with Jeffrey Epstein and Maxwell," *Mail Online*, July 15, 2021, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-9789355/Bill-Clinton-took-TWO-trips-Jeffrey-Epstein-Ghislaine-Maxwell.html.

56 Rob Picheta and Jo Shelley, "Kevin Spacey Appears in London Court after Being Charged with Sexual Assault," *CNN*, June 16, 2022, https://www.cnn.com/2022/06/16/uk/kevin-spacey-london-sexual-assault-hearing-gbr-intl/index.html.

57 Timothy L. O'Brien, "A California Billionaire Who Avoided the Spotlight Suddenly Finds Himself in It," *New York Times*, April 8, 2006, https://www.nytimes.com/2006/04/08/nyregion/a-california-billionaire-who-avoided-the-spotlight-suddenly-finds.html.

58 Susan Berfield, "The Other Ron Burkle," *Bloomberg*, March 4, 2010, https://web.archive.org/web/20160306080521/http://www.bloomberg.com:80/bw/magazine/content/10_11/b4170042334079.htm#p2.

59 Matthew Miller, "The Rise Of Ron Burkle," *Forbes*, November 24, 2006, https://www.forbes.com/forbes/2006/1211/104.html.

60 Berfield, "The Other Ron Burkle."

61 Deanna Hackney and Alanne Orjoux, "Michael Jackson's Neverland Ranch sold to Pittsburgh Penguins co-owner Ron Burkle," *CNN*, December 27, 2020, https://web.archive.org/web/20210126020511/https://edition.cnn.com/2020/12/27/us/neverland-ranch-purchased-penguins-burkle/index.html.

62 Alan Abrahamson, "Alleged Courier for Silberman Gets Probation: Courts: Banker Jack Norman Myers, Who Testified in Money-Laundering Case of Silberman and Petti, Avoids Jail in Plea Bargain," *Los Angeles Times*, November 6, 1990, https://www.latimes.com/archives/la-xpm-1990-11-06-me-3842-story.html.

63 Ted Johnson, "Hillary Clinton's Final L.A. Campaign Fundraiser Will Be at Site Steeped in Hollywood-D.C. History," *Variety*, October 13, 2016, https://variety.com/2016/biz/news/hillary-clinton-fundraiser-casey-wasserman-lew-wasserman-1201888222/.

64 Johnson, ""Hillary Clinton's Final L.A. Campaign Fundraiser."

65 See "USAID: A Front for Cia Intelligence Gathering," *Wrong Kind of Green*, May 14, 2013, https://www.wrongkindofgreen.org/2013/05/14/usaid-a-front-for-cia-intelligence-gathering/; "Is USAID the New CIA? Agency Secretly Built Cuban Twitter Program to Fuel Anti-Castro Protests," *Democracy Now*, April 4, 2014, http://www.democracynow.org/2014/4/4/is_usaid_the_new_cia_agency; Scott Creighton, "CIA Front, USAID, Gearing Up in Ukraine – Suharto II?," *Shadowproof*, May 14, 2014, https://shadowproof.com/2014/05/14/cia-front-usaid-gearing-up-in-ukraine-suharto-ii/; Catherine A. Traywick, "'Cuban Twitter' and Other Times USAID Pretended To Be an Intelligence Agency," *Foreign Policy*, April 3, 2014, https://foreignpolicy.com/2014/04/03/cuban-twitter-and-other-times-usaid-pretended-to-be-an-intelligence-agency/.

66 "Clinton, De Soto Arrive," *Ghana Web*, September 22, 2002, https://web.archive.org/web/20021218203744/http://www.ghanaweb.com/GhanaHomePage/NewsArchive/artikel.php?ID=27637.

67 "Clinton, De Soto Arrive."

68 "Clinton Meets Rawlings against Protocol Arrangement," *Ghana Homepage*, December 18, 2002, https://web.archive.org/web/20021218200946/http://www.ghanaweb.com/Ghana-HomePage/NewsArchive/artikel.php?ID=27684.

69 "Clinton Meets Rawlings against Protocol Arrangement."

70 "Clinton, De Soto Arrive."

71 Eddy Odivwri, "Solutions to Nation's Problems Within, Says Clinton," *AllAfrica.com*, September 25, 2002, https://web.archive.org/web/20021014093438/http://allafrica.com/stories/200209250147.html.

72 Rodrique Ngowi, "Clinton Offers to Help Rwanda Combat AIDS after Genocide Including Rape and Deliberate HIV Infection," *Rwanda Information Exchange*, September 25, 2002, https://web.archive.org/web/20021004075243/http://www.rwanda.net/english/News/news092002/nouv09242002.htm.

73 Ngowi, "Clinton Offers to Help Rwanda Combat AIDS."

74 Ngowi, "Clinton Offers to Help Rwanda Combat AIDS."

75 "Clinton Visits the Country," *AIM Page*, Issue 2923, September 24, 2002, https://web.archive.org/web/20021002012309fw_/http://www.sortmoz.com/aimnews/Portuguese/edicoes/2923p.htm.

76 Grant Williams, "Clinton's Good-Works Plan," *The Chronicle of Philanthropy Gifts & Grants*, October 17, 2002, https://web.archive.org/web/20021019164016/http://philanthropy.com/free/articles/v15/i01/01000601.htm.

77 Williams, "Clinton's Good-Works Plan."

78 "Jeffrey Epstein Testimony," Economic Development Commission (2012), p. 15, https://www.documentcloud.org/documents/6379775-Epstein-testimony-before-the-Economic.html.

79 Robert Mendick, "Exclusive: How Ghislaine Maxwell and Kevin Spacey Relaxed at Buckingham Palace 'as Guests of Prince Andrew'," *The Telegraph*, July 3, 2020, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/2020/07/03/exclusivehow-ghislaine-maxwell-kevin-spacey-relaxed-buckingham/.

80 Thomas, "International Moneyman."

81 Bates, "Bill Clinton Took TWO MORE Trips."

82 Vicky Ward, "Ghislaine's Doomed Escape Bid," July 15, 2021, in *Chasing Ghislaine*, https://www.audible.com/pd/Chasing-Ghislaine-Podcast/B09887Z858.

83 Bates, "Bill Clinton Took TWO MORE Trips."

84 Bates, "Bill Clinton Took TWO MORE Trips."

CHAPTER 20

EPSTEIN, EDGE, AND BIG TECH

MICROSOFT AND THE MAXWELLS

The 2001 article by Nigel Rosser that was published in the *Evening Standard*, discussed at length in the previous chapter, also contained other, telling revelations about Epstein and his activities aside from his connections to Prince Andrew and allegations of his ties to US and Israeli intelligence.

One of the most interesting lines in that article provides perhaps the first major clue toward demystifying the true origin of Epstein's relationship with another powerful man of influence, Microsoft co-founder and billionaire "philanthropist" Bill Gates.

In his article, shortly after introducing Epstein as an "immensely powerful New York property develop and financier," Rosser states that Epstein "has made many millions out of his business links with the likes of Bill Gates, Donald Trump, and Ohio billionaire Leslie Wexner, whose trust he runs."[1] Both Wexner's and Trump's relationships with Epstein prior to 2001 have already been discussed at length in this book and date back to around 1985 and 1987, respectively. Mainstream media, however, continue to report that Gates and Epstein first met in 2011 and have declined to follow the leads laid out by Nigel Rosser. I am personally aware of this withholding of information to a degree as a BBC reporter contacted me in 2019 for details about this 2001 *Evening Standard* article, which I provided. To date, the BBC has never reported on the contents of that article. Notably, the BBC has received millions in funding over many years from the Bill & Melinda Gates Foundation.[2]

Some may argue that the addition of Gates's name here may have been in error. However, Rosser's article was never retracted or even challenged. In addition, Gates, Trump, and Wexner never – collectively or separately – disputed the claims made in the article at the time, which was published well before Epstein became notorious. In addition, given that Gates is named alongside two known close Epstein associates at the time – Donald Trump and Leslie Wexner – it further suggests that Gates's ties to Epstein prior to 2001 were considerable enough to warrant his mention alongside these two other men.

In addition to the *Evening Standard* article, there is evidence from Maria Farmer, an Epstein victim who was employed by Epstein and Maxwell from 1995 to 1996. She has stated that she recalled hearing Epstein mention Bill Gates in such a way as to imply they were close friends and which gave her the impression that the Microsoft cofounder might soon be visiting one of Epstein's residences.[3]

Beyond these two key pieces of evidence, there is also the fact that, prior to the *Evening Standard* article, Gates's Microsoft, which he still led at the time, already had a documented connection to a business run by Ghislaine Maxwell's sisters in which Ghislaine had a financial stake. This may offer a clue as to the nature of the "business links" alluded to by Nigel Rosser. Furthermore, the odd nature of Gates's relationship with Isabel Maxwell, who has ties to the PROMIS software espionage scandal (see chapter 9) and to Israeli intelligence, is documented in a 2000 article from the *Guardian*.

As previously noted in chapter 15, twin sisters Christine and Isabel Maxwell, along with their husbands at the time, created the McKinley Group in January 1992. Christine and Isabel had both previously worked for the front company Information on Demand used by their father Robert Maxwell to sell the compromised PROMIS software to the US government (see chapter 9).[4] After Robert Maxwell's death, Christine and Isabel had "wanted to circle the wagons and rebuild" and saw McKinley as "a chance to recreate a bit of their father's legacy."[5] The McKinley Group, however, was not solely a venture of Isabel, Christine, and their husbands, as Ghislaine Maxwell also had "a substantial interest" in the company, according to a *Sunday Times* article published in November 2000.[6]

That same article also noted that Ghislaine, throughout the 1990s, had "been discreetly building up a business empire as opaque as her father's" and that "she is secretive to the point of paranoia and her business affairs are deeply mysterious." She chose to describe "herself as an 'internet operator'" during this period, even though "her office in Manhattan refuses to confirm even the name or the nature of her business." Another article, appearing in *The Scotsman* from 2001, separately notes that Ghislaine "is extremely secretive about her affairs and describes herself as an internet operator."[7]

It is unclear how involved Ghislaine actually was in the McKinley Group's affairs. McKinley created what became known as the Magellan Internet Directory, remembered as "the first site to publish lengthy reviews and ratings of websites." Magellan's "value-added content" approach attracted several large corporations, resulting in "major alliances" with AT&T, Time-Warner, IBM, Netcom, and the Microsoft Network (MSN) that were all negotiated by Isabel Maxwell.[8]

Microsoft's major alliance with McKinley came in late 1995, when Microsoft announced that Magellan would power the search option for the company's MSN service.[9]

McKinley's fortunes fell, as its effort to become the first search engine to go public failed, igniting a stand-off between Christine Maxwell and Isabel's then husband that also resulted in the company essentially falling behind other market leaders.[10] As a result, McKinley missed the window for a second IPO attempt and continued to lag behind in adding ad revenue to their business model. Excite, which was later acquired by AskJeeves, ultimately bought the McKinley Group and Magellan for 1.2 million shares of Excite in 1996, which was then valued at $18 million.[11] It was said that it was Isabel Maxwell who made the deal possible, with Excite's CEO at the time, George Bell, claiming she alone salvaged their purchase of McKinley.[12]

Despite McKinley's lackluster end, the Maxwell twins and other stakeholders in the company, Ghislaine Maxwell among them, not only obtained a multimillion-dollar payout from the deal but also forged close connections with Silicon Valley high rollers. It is unclear if the money Ghislaine received from the sale was used to further the sexual trafficking and influence operations she was then conducting alongside Jeffrey Epstein.

After the sale of McKinley/Magellan, the overt ties of Christine and Isabel Maxwell to intelligence in both the US and Israel grew considerably. Isabel's ties to Microsoft also persisted following the sale of the McKinley Group. She became president of the Israeli tech company CommTouch, the funding of which was linked to individuals and groups involved in the Jonathan Pollard nuclear spying affair.[13]

COMMTOUCH AND ISABEL MAXWELL

In 1992, Israel's government created the Yozma Program at the urging of the Chief Scientist of Israel's Ministry of Industry and Trade, Yigal Erlich, as Erlich moved to leave that position.[14] The Yozma Program sought to "incentivize venture investment" by creating state-linked venture capital funds, which would spawn a myriad of Israeli hi-tech startups with the goal of merging them with major, foreign technology companies.[15] According to Erlich's website, he had lobbied Israel's government to launch Yozma because he had "identified a market failure and a huge need in Israel to establish for the first time a professionally-managed venture capital industry that will fund the exponential growth of high tech ventures coming out of Israel."[16] He then "convinced the Israeli government to allocate $100 million for his venture capital vision."

Erlich's vision would also result in the fusion of Israel's hi-tech sector, which he helped to create, with Israel's intelligence apparatus, specifically Israel's signal intelligence agency, Unit 8200. This also resulted in numerous Israeli hi-tech conglomerates that were created with funding from the Yozma program, and their successors, doubling as tools of Israeli espionage.[17]

By 2012, the use of Israeli tech companies as fronts for intelligence would become an open secret. As reported by the Israeli media outlet *Calcalist Tech*, the Israeli government by 2012 embarked on a formal policy that saw "cyber-related and intelligence projects that were previously carried out in-house in the Israeli military and Israel's main intelligence arms [be] transferred to companies that, in some cases, were built for this exact purpose."[18] One of the front companies named in that particular article is Black Cube, which Epstein associate Ehud Barak would later recommend to movie mogul Harvey Weinstein as a company he could utilize to harass women who accused him of sexual abuse. Weinstein later invited Barak and the president of Black Cube to a fundraiser for Hillary Clinton.[19]

Notably, not long before Erlich convinced Israel to place $100 million into this program, Israeli intelligence, thanks largely to the work of infamous spymaster Rafi Eitan, had learned the benefits of placing backdoors for their intelligence services into commercial software through the theft and subversion of the PROMIS software. As noted in chapter 9, Israel's bugged version of PROMIS was largely marketed by Robert Maxwell.[20]

After the Yozma program was established, the first venture capital fund it created was called Gemini Israel Ventures and Israel's government chose a man named Ed Mlavsky to lead it.[21] Mlavsky, at the time, was the Executive Director of the Israel-U.S. Bi-national Industrial Research and Development Foundation (BIRD), where Erlich was Chairman of the Executive Committee. Mlavsky states that, while heading the BIRD foundation, "he was responsible for investments of $100 million in more than 300 joint projects between U.S. and Israeli high-tech companies."[22]

BIRD's connections to Gemini Israel Ventures and the Yozma Program in general are interesting, given that just a few years prior it had come under scrutiny for its role in the one of the worst spy cases in US history – the Jonathan Pollard affair. Jonathan Pollard had been a naval intelligence analyst turned Israeli spy who passed troves of documents regarding US military technology (specifically nuclear technology) as well as clandestine US intelligence operations to Israeli intelligence, specifically to the now defunct spy agency Lekem. Pollard's handler was none other than Rafi Eitan, who had also engineered Israel's outsized role in the PROMIS software scandal.[23]

In the indictment of Pollard for espionage, it was noted that Pollard delivered documents to agents of Israel at two locations, one of which was an apartment owned by Harold Katz, the then-legal counsel to the BIRD foundation and an adviser to Israel's military, which oversaw Lekem. Government officials told the *New York Times* at the time that they believed Katz "has detailed knowledge about the [Pollard] spy ring and could implicate senior Israeli officials."[24]

Journalist Claudia Wright, writing in 1987, openly speculated about whether the close ties between Katz and Pollard's handlers meant that BIRD itself had been used to pass funds to Pollard or that BIRD funds, most of which were financed by US taxpayers despite public claims of "joint" funding, had been used to pay Pollard for his "services" to Israel.[25] In her article, she notes that Mlavsky had considerable discretion over the use of those funds while the US official in charge of overseeing the US's interests in BIRD did "not know how investment is regulated" by the foundation. In addition, no US official had access to any audit of the foundation. Audits were supposedly conducted by an Israel-based accounting firm, yet that firm had no US offices. The *New York Times* noted at the time that Katz specifically "may have knowledge of the method used to pay Mr. Pollard, who received tens of thousands of dollars from his Israeli handlers."[26]

After BIRD's Mlavsky was chosen to head Gemini Israel Ventures, one of the first companies the firm invested in was called CommTouch (now known as Cyren and majority owned by Warburg-Pincus).[27] Founded in 1991 by Gideon Mantel, a former officer in a "special bomb-squad unit" of the Israel Defense Forces (IDF), alongside Amir Lev and Nahum Sharfman, CommTouch was initially focused "on selling, maintaining, and servicing stand-alone email client software products for mainframe and personal computers."[28] They specifically courted Original Equipment Manufacturers (OEMs), meaning companies whose products are used as components in the products of another company that are then sold to end users.[29] Integration of its products into those of major software and hardware developers would allow CommTouch's products to be widely used but unseen.[30] A *Wired* article discussing CommTouch noted as much, stating that CommTouch products are meant "to be as seamless and unnoticeable as the copper is to a phone caller."[31]

However, from their founding through early 1997, CommTouch struggled to stay afloat, unable to turn a profit and unable to secure any notable deals or to expand the size of the company beyond 25 employees.[32] Yet, thanks to Gemini Israel Ventures and grants from Israel's government, which were used to finance the research and development of its products, CommTouch managed to stay solvent.[33] As late as 2006, CommTouch noted in official documents that the company "has a history of losses and may never achieve profitability," further noting that they repeatedly hemorrhaged millions of dollars a year in net losses.[34] Clearly, the decision by Gemini Israel Ventures and Israel's government to continue to pour money into a decidedly unprofitable company for several years was motivated by something other than profits.

At some point in early 1997, CommTouch decided to enter the US market and began seeking out a new President for the firm who had "local clout." "We knew exactly what we were looking for," Gideon Mantel later told *Wired* of CommTouch's search.… "Someone who knows her way around the Valley."[35] They found their woman in Isabel Maxwell, one of the daughters of Israeli intelligence asset and PROMIS salesman *par excellence*, Robert Maxwell. Mantel and CommTouch allegedly chose to court Isabel Maxwell for their company's presidency through an unspecified placement company and were "attracted to her expertise and insight in Silicon Valley when it sought her out."[36] The Israeli outlet *Globes* states that Gideon Mantel "went to Isabel Maxwell as soon as he arrived in

Silicon Valley and realized that in order to progress, an e-mail solutions company like CommTouch needed help from someone who knew the rules of the game."[37] *Wired* offers a similar portrayal, further adding that it was "Gideon Mantel [who] got Isabel Maxwell to take the job."[38]

Mantel told *Jewish Weekly* that while Maxwell's pedigree, i.e. being Robert Maxwell's daughter, "was very intriguing at the beginning … it wasn't her name that made the decision for us."[39] However, Mantel, in separate reports, compares Isabel to her father on numerous occasions when praising her professional abilities. For example, he told *Haaretz* that Isabel "is not cowed by anyone, and she never gives in …. She got all that at home. They taught her to go after things and not give up."[40] Similarly, he told *Wired* that "Like her father, she is a fighter," later adding that "She always charges. She has no fear. Of course, it is from her father. It is in her blood."[41] Given that Robert Maxwell is rarely posthumously remembered (in media anyway) as "a fighter" and "fearless," it goes without saying that Mantel views him with a degree of reverence, which he also associates with his daughter Isabel.

Isabel, notably, has herself stated on several occasions that her acceptance of Mantel's offer to be CommTouch's President was largely informed by her father's controversial ties to Israel. She told *Haaretz* that her reasons for accepting the CommTouch presidency had come "from the heart" because it was "a chance to continue her father's involvement in Israel," leading her to reject other more lucrative job offers from actually established companies that she had received at the time.[42] It goes without saying that Robert Maxwell's "involvement in Israel" was intimately linked to Israeli intelligence operations. Isabel similarly described her reasons for joining CommTouch to *Jewish Weekly* as "an affair of the heart," adding that "it had to do with my father and my history."[43] The *New York Times* quoted her as saying that she had "considered other California-based Internet start-ups [in 1997], but felt a pull toward CommTouch and the Israeli connection."[44]

Isabel has some interesting views on her father, whom she has described as the "ultimate survivor," as well as his involvement in Israel.[45] She describes her father as "highly complex," adding that she doesn't "have rose-coloured glasses about him," but nonetheless says she is "proud" of his controversial legacy and that "if he were alive today that he would be proud of us, too."[46] She said something similar to *The Guardian* in 2002, stating that "'I'm sure [my father would] be thrilled to know what I'm doing now,'… throwing back her head and laughing loudly."[47] In addition, when asked who the most influential person in her life had been, Isabel responded "My father was most influential in my life. He was a very accomplished man and achieved many of his goals during his life. I learned very much from him and have made many of his ways my own."[48]Isabel told *Haaretz* around that same time that "When I was with him [her father], I felt power. Like being at the White House.… Beyond that, it was a collective power, not my personal power. I was part of this unit," apparently referring to her other siblings, Ghislaine and Christine among them, and suggesting that they were all collectively extensions of their father's power.[49]

However, Isabel stands out from her other siblings, and even Ghislaine, in terms of a sense of loyalty to her father and to the state of Israel. According to Elizabeth "Betty" Maxwell, Isabel's mother, Isabel "is also loyal to the memory of her father, and to what Judaism represents in her life. All my children were brought up as Anglicans, but Isabel was very taken by the Jewish faith and the politics in Israel," even when compared to her other children, including Ghislaine.[50]

Indeed, Isabel developed close relationships to several prominent former Mossad officials and Israeli heads of state, with several of those relationships having been first "forged by her father."[51] A now deleted report published by the *Jerusalem Post* in 2003, entitled "Isabel Maxwell Fights Back," notes that "Maxwell travels in the same circles as her father, but she is more comfortable behind the camera, not in front of it … she is carrying on her father's legacy in Israel, albeit in her own way."[52] It also noted that, by 2003, Isabel was visiting Israel every month, visiting her father's grave on the Mount of Olives at least once every visit.

Arguably the most interesting part of this particular *Jerusalem Post* article is the way in which Isabel views her father's legacy. In discussing the book by Gordon Thomas and Martin Dillon, *Robert Maxwell, Israel's Superspy: The Life and Death of a Media Mogul*, Isabel – even though she participated in interviews for the book – rejected its premise that her father was a "spy" and went on a private smear campaign against the book and its authors prior to its publication.[53] Tellingly, she does not object to the book's contents regarding her father's activities on Israel's behalf, including his role in the PROMIS software scandal or Iran-Contra, but merely objects to the use of the word "spy" to describe those activities. "My father was certainly a 'patriot' and helped in back business and political channels between governments," Isabel told the *Jerusalem Post,* "But that did not and does not make him a 'spy.'"[54]

It could be said, then, that Isabel would view her subsequent career "in back business and political channels" within the "same circles as her father" as similarly "patriotic." Yet, for those that consider her father a "spy" for his activities, they could logically state the same of Isabel, who notably self-identifies as Israeli.[55]

Aside from these connections, it is worth briefly revisiting Isabel's own history. As previously detailed in chapter 9, Isabel, as well as her twin sister Christine, became involved in working for the Israeli intelligence front company used by her father to sell bugged PROMIS software in the US, Information on Demand. Isabel's past with Information on Demand must have been known to CommTouch at the time of Isabel's hiring. It's also worth noting that, on several occasions, Isabel asserts that CommTouch owes much of its success to the ties **of** its Israeli employees to the Israeli military and Israeli military intelligence, resulting in a "dogged work ethic" and a "trained mind-set" among its Israeli workforce.[56]

MICROSOFT PUTS COMMTOUCH "ON THE MAP"

Upon taking the job at the Israeli tech firm, Maxwell's promotion of the company was described as "almost messianic" even though her enthusiasm was also described as "hard to fathom" given the lackluster performance of the company and its products.[57] However, soon after becoming CommTouch's president, her personal connections to prominent figures in Silicon Valley – forged through her past work at Magellan – paid off and the company announced new partnerships with Sun Microsystems, Cisco, and Nippon Telephone and Telegraph, among others.[58] At CommTouch, Maxwell managed "all sales and marketing activities for CommTouch and co-direct[ed] strategic business development."[59]

Some reports have noted that Maxwell's connections with prominent Silicon Valley figures were the key to her professional success, with Globes noting that "Everyone who has worked closely with Maxwell says that her advantage lies in her ability to help penetrate the market with a new product by opening the right doors," an "advantage" also ascribed to her father while he sold bugged PROMIS software on behalf of Israeli intelligence.[60] Yet, despite Isabel's penchant for "opening the right doors," reports well after Maxwell joined the company still referred to the firm as "an obscure software developer."[61]

However, out of all the alliances and partnerships Isabel negotiated early on during her time at CommTouch, it was her dealings with Microsoft co-founders Bill Gates and Paul Allen that would put CommTouch "on the map."[62] Maxwell had previously negotiated a major deal with Microsoft's Bill Gates during her time as the McKinley Group/Magellan's Executive Vice President, resulting in Microsoft announcing that the Maxwell-owned Magellan would power the search option for the company's MSN service.[63]

Microsoft's cofounders did much more than put CommTouch "on the map," however, as they essentially intervened to prevent the collapse of its initial public offering, a fate that had befallen Isabel Maxwell's previous company, the McKinley Group, not long before. Indeed, CommTouch kept pushing back its IPO until a massive investment miraculously arrived from firms tied to Microsoft co-founder

Paul Allen, which was announced in July 1999.[64] The investments from Allen's Vulcan and Go2Net resulted in a jump in "interest in the stock sale and in CommTouch, until now an obscure software developer," according to a *Bloomberg* report. The news also inflated the company's stock price immediately prior to their going public.[65] The money from the Allen-linked companies was specifically used by CommTouch "to expand sales and marketing and build its presence in international markets."

Allen's decision to invest in CommTouch seems odd from a financial perspective, given that the company had never turned a profit and had over $4 million in losses just the year before. Yet, thanks to Allen's timely investment and his apparent coordination with the company's repeated delays of its IPO, CommTouch was valued at over $230 million when it went public, as opposed to a $150 million valuation just weeks before Allen's investment.[66] Thus, it is not exactly clear why Paul Allen came to the rescue of CommTouch's IPO and what he expected to gain from his investment.

It is worth pointing out, however, that Allen later became among a member of an elite online community set up in 2004 called A Small World, whose membership also included Jeffrey Epstein and Epstein-linked figures such as Lynn Forester de Rothschild and Naomi Campbell, as well as Petrina Khashoggi, the daughter of Adnan Khashoggi.[67] A Small World's largest shareholder was Harvey Weinstein, the now-disgraced media mogul who was a business partner of Epstein and who has since been convicted of rape and sexual abuse.[68] In addition, around this same time, Paul Allen was photographed with Epstein associate Nicole Junkermann, herself an asset apparently utilized by Epstein to blackmail US senators during this same period, circa 2002 (see chapters 14 and 18).[69] Junkermann would later be placed on the board of an Israeli intelligence-linked tech company funded by Epstein and Ehud Barak, Carbyne911 (see the next chapter).

Less than three months after Allen's investments in CommTouch in October 1999, the company announced that it had struck a major deal with Microsoft whereby "Microsoft will utilize the CommTouch Custom MailTM service to provide private label web-based email solutions for select MSN partners and international markets."[70] In addition, per the agreement, "CommTouch will provide MSN Messenger Service and Microsoft Passport to its customers while building upon its Windows NT expertise by supporting future MSN messaging technologies.” “We are looking forward to further enhancing our relationship with Microsoft by integrating other state-of-the-art Microsoft products,” Gideon Mantel of CommTouch said at the time of the deal’s public announcement.

In December 1999, Microsoft announced that it had invested $20 million in CommTouch by purchasing 4.7 percent of its shares.[71] The announcement pushed CommTouch stock prices from $11.63 a share to $49.13 in just a few hours’ time. Part of that deal had been finalized by Richard Sorkin, a recently appointed CommTouch director. Sorkin had just become a multimillionaire following the sale of Zip2, Elon Musk’s first company of which Sorkin had been CEO. Musk’s ties to the broader Epstein network were discussed in chapter 12.

It further appears that Bill Gates, then head of Microsoft, made a personal investment in CommTouch at the behest of Isabel Maxwell. In an October 2000 article published in the *Guardian*, Isabel “jokes about persuading Bill Gates to make a personal investment” in CommTouch sometime during this period.[72] The *Guardian* article then oddly notes, regarding Isabel Maxwell and Bill Gates:

> In a faux southern belle accent, [Isabel] purrs: “He’s got to spend $375m a year to keep his tax-free status, why not allow me to help him.’ She explodes with laughter.”[73]
>
> Given that individuals as wealthy as Gates cannot have “tax-free status” and that this article was published soon after the creation of the Bill & Melinda Gates Foundation, Isabel’s statements suggest that it was the Bill & Melinda Gates Foundation Trust, which manages the foundation’s endowment assets, that made this sizable investment in CommTouch.

Furthermore, it is worth highlighting the odd way in which Isabel speaks about her dealings with Gates (“purring,” speaking in a fake Southern accent), describing her interactions with him in a way not found in any of her numerous other interviews on a wide variety of topics. This odd behavior may be related to Isabel’s previous interactions with Gates and/or the mysterious relationship between Gates and Epstein that pre-dated Nigel Rosser’s article from January 2001.

After the year 2000, CommTouch’s business and clout expanded rapidly, with Isabel Maxwell subsequently crediting investments from Microsoft, Gates, and Allen for the company’s good fortune and the success of its effort to enter the US market. Maxwell, as quoted in the 2002 Larraine Segil book *Fastalliances: Power Your E-Business*, states that Microsoft viewed CommTouch as a key “distribution network,” adding that “Microsoft’s investment in us put us on the map. It gave us instant credibility, validated our technology and service in the marketplace.”[74] By this time, Microsoft's ties to CommTouch had deepened through new partnerships, including CommTouch's hosting of Microsoft Exchange.[75]

Though Isabel Maxwell was able to secure lucrative investments and alliances for CommTouch and saw its products integrated into key software and hardware components produced and sold by Microsoft and other tech giants, she was unable to improve the company's dire financial situation, with CommTouch netting a loss of $4.4 million in 1998 and similar losses well into the 2000s, with net losses totaling $24 million in 2000 (just one year after the sizable investments from Microsoft, Paul Allen, and Gates).[76]

The losses continued even after Isabel formally left the company and became president emeritus in 2001. By 2006, the company was over $170 million in debt. Isabel Maxwell left her position at CommTouch in 2001 but for years retained a sizable amount of CommTouch stock valued at the time at around $9.5 million.[77] While Maxwell remained honorary president, CommTouch added Yair Shamir, son of former Israeli Prime Minister and friend of Robert Maxwell, Yitzhak Shamir, to its board.[78] Yair Shamir, Chairman of the Israeli government owned corporation, IAI (Israeli Aerospace Industries) when he joined CommTouch's board, had previously managed Scitex when it was owned by Robert Maxwell.

After nearly collapsing due to its long-standing debt burden a few years later, CommTouch was rebranded as Cyren and, today, runs in the background of Microsoft, Google, Intel, McAfee, and Dell products, among many others.[79]

Haaretz wrote in 2002 that Isabel, as CommTouch was in dire financial straits, had decided to "work only on things involving Israel.[80] Even the failure of CommTouch, the Israeli Internet company she headed, hasn't deterred her: She still believes in the medium, and she still believes in Israel." Maxwell would subsequently create "a unique niche for herself in high tech as a liaison between Israeli companies in the initial development stages and private angel investors in the US" as a private consultant, subsequently creating Maxwell Communications Network in 2006.[81] That company offered "cross-border communications, funding, and market research to leading venture capitalists and hi-tech companies in the US and Israel."[82] However, she notes that her "specialty" was in "helping Israeli high-tech companies."[83]

During this period (2001-2006), Isabel would also head an Israeli tech company that "protects children online," at a time when her sister – Ghislaine Maxwell – was actively abusing and trafficking minors as part of an intelligence-linked operation alongside Jeffrey Epstein.[84] Isabel took the job at iCognito (now Pure Sight) "because it [the company] is in Israel, and because of its technology."[85] She also joined the board of the Israeli company Backweb alongside Gil Shwed, a famous alumnus of Unit 8200 (often likened to Israel's NSA equivalent) and co-founder of Israeli tech giant Check Point, which is a long-time partner of CommTouch.[86]

Isabel's close involvement with former Israeli heads of state and heads of intelligence would only deepen after leaving CommTouch, particularly with former Israeli Prime Minister Shimon Peres.[87] The *Jerusalem Post* described the Peres-Isabel relationship as "close" and she, for many years, was governor of the board of the Peres Center for Peace and Innovation.[88] Today other members of the center's international board of governors include Mega Group members Charles Bronfman and Lester Crown, Evelyn de Rothschild, Ronald Lauder, and Max Fisher's daughter Jane Sherman, while its board of directors includes Shimon Peres's son Chemi Peres and former Mossad director Tamir Pardo.[89] Isabel was also very close to former Mossad deputy director David Kimche until his death in 2010 as well as former head of Israeli military intelligence and Prime Minister Ehud Barak.[90]

In the years that followed, Isabel Maxwell became, among other things, a "technology pioneer" of the World Economic Forum and a key fixture at the Israel Venture Network (IVN), a "venture philanthropy" organization partnered with the Edmond de Rothschild Foundation and other organizations discussed in chapters 13 and 14, such as the Jewish Agency.[91] One of IVN's funds bears the Yozma name and, like the Yozma program, is formally allied with Israel's government. IVN's manager of that particular fund, Itsik Danziger, is a former top executive at Comverse/Verint, another Israeli tech company tied to Israeli military intelligence that was discussed in chapter 14 in the context of allegations it spied on US institutions.[92]

EPSTEIN AND MICROSOFT

While Isabel Maxwell and CommTouch offer one possible explanation for the Gates-Epstein "business ties" discussed by the *Evening Standard* in 2001, another clue regarding the early Gates-Epstein relationship can be found in Epstein's cozy ties with Nathan Myhrvold, who joined Microsoft in the 1980s and became the company's first chief technology officer in 1996. At the time, Myhrvold was one of Gates's closest advisers, if not the closest, and co-wrote Gates's 1996 book, *The Road Ahead*, which sought to explain how emerging technologies would impact life in the years and decades to come.

In December of the same year that he became Microsoft's CTO, Myhrvold traveled on Epstein's plane from Kentucky to New Jersey, and then again in January 1997 from New Jersey to Florida. Other passengers accompanying Myhrvold on these flights included Alan Dershowitz and "GM," presumably Ghislaine Maxwell. It is worth keeping in mind that these flights took place during the same period that Gates had a documented relationship with Ghislaine's sister Isabel.

In addition, in the 1990s, Myhrvold traveled with Epstein to Russia alongside Esther Dyson, a digital technology consultant who has been called "the most influential woman in all the computer world."[93] She currently has close ties to Google as well as the DNA testing company 23and-me and is a member of and agenda contributor to the World Economic Forum.[94] Dyson later stated that the meeting with Epstein had been planned by Myhrvold. The meeting appears to have taken place in 1998, based on information posted on Dyson's social media accounts.

One photo taken during the trip features Dyson and Epstein, with a time stamp indicating April 28, 1998, posing with Pavel Oleynikov, who appears to have been an employee of the Russian Federal Nuclear Center.[95] In that photo, they are standing in front of the house of the late Andrei Sakharov, the Soviet nuclear scientist and dissident, who is alleged to have had ties to US intelligence. Sakharov and his wife, Yelena Bonner, were supporters of Zionist causes.[96]

The photos were taken in Sarov, where the Russian Federal Nuclear Center is based. That same day, another photo was taken that shows Epstein inside a classroom full of teens, apparently also in Sarov, given the time stamp.[97] Notably, about a year before Epstein's visit, this particular nuclear research facility was a source of controversy in the US as it had imported four US-made supercomputers from the company Silicon Graphics, "setting off a US criminal investigation and attempts in Congress to reverse [a] Clinton administration decision that relaxed computer export controls."[98] The company had not obtained the required export license before the sale and (somewhat unbelievably) claimed they didn't know that their customer was affiliated with Russia's nuclear weapons program.[99]

Notably, prior to the scandal's emergence, Silicon Graphics' CEO, Ed McCracken, had been "a White House regular, hobnobbing with Bill Clinton and Al Gore" and had co-chaired Clinton's National Information Infrastructure Advisory Council.[100] Silicon Graphics and Microsoft had worked in close partnership since 1991 and had deepened that relationship by forming a "strategic alliance" in December 1997, a few months before Epstein and Myhrvold visited Sarov in a trip affiliated with Microsoft Russia[101].

As previously discussed in chapter 16, many of the covert and illicit activities behind Fostergate and Chinagate were related to efforts to alter US export controls as it related to sensitive technology being sent abroad, specifically to Russia and China. Those efforts specifically targeted the Commerce Department. In the case of Silicon Graphics, it was the Commerce Department, heavily targeted by foreign espionage activity, which was tasked with investigating the company's activities.[102] Reporting at the time noted that the Commerce Department's export control system, by that point, amounted only to an "honor system."[103]

Notably, Silicon Graphics had, shortly before the sale to the Russian Federal Nuclear Center in Sarov, acquired supercomputer firm Cray Research, whose founder, Seymour Cray, had previously worked for Control Data Corporation (CDC).[104] CDC's ties to Edwin Wilson, the Soviet Union, Robert Maxwell, and technology transfers were detailed mainly in chapter 9.

In addition, regarding supercomputers, it is worth noting that Epstein had many connections to the one-time main competitor to Cray Research – Thinking Machines Corporation. Thinking Machines had been a major contractor for the Pentagon's DARPA. Epstein was particularly close to Thinking Machines co-founder Danny Hillis as well as other key figures associated with the company, such as Artificial Intelligence expert Marvin Minsky, who Virginia Giuffre alleged was involved with abusing minors that Epstein trafficked, including herself.[105]

Another Thinking Machines associate who would later have considerable ties to Epstein is geneticist Eric Lander.[106] Lander served as president Biden's top science adviser until he was forced to resign in early 2022 over harassment allegations and, prior to joining the Biden White House, Epstein had claimed to be a major patron of Lander's research.[107]

Another photo taken by Dyson, one without a visible time stamp but with a caption stating the photo was taken "at Microsoft Russia in Moscow" in April 1998, shows Nathan Myhrvold. Dyson's caption further states, "This was the beginning of a three-week trip during which Nathan and a variety of hangers-on (including a bodyguard) explored the state of post-Soviet science."[108] Epstein appears to be one of the "hangers-on," given the photographs, dates, and the described purpose of the trip.

Myhrvold and Epstein apparently had more in common than an interest in Russian scientific advances. When Myhrvold left Microsoft to cofound Intellectual Ventures, *Vanity Fair* reported that he had received Epstein at the firm's office with "young girls" in tow who were described as "Russian models."[109] A source close to Myhrvold and cited by *Vanity Fair* claimed that Myhrvold spoke openly about borrowing Epstein's jet and staying at his residences in Florida and New York. *Vanity Fair* also noted that Myhrvold has been accused of having sex with minors trafficked by Epstein and is named in court documents in that regard alongside George Mitchell and Bill Richardson.[110]

In addition, a former colleague of Myhrvold's at Microsoft later developed her own ties to Epstein. Linda Stone, who joined Microsoft in 1993 and worked directly under Myhrvold, eventually became a Microsoft vice president.[111] She introduced Epstein to Joi Ito of the MIT Media Lab after Epstein's first arrest. "He has a tainted past, but Linda assures me that he's awesome," Ito later said in an email to three MIT staffers.[112] In Epstein's black book of contacts, there are several phone numbers for Stone, and her emergency contact is listed as Kelly Bovino, a former model and alleged Epstein co-conspirator. After Epstein's 2019 arrest, it emerged that Epstein had "directed" Bill Gates to donate $2 million to the MIT Media Lab in 2014.[113] Epstein also allegedly secured a $5 million donation from his associate Leon Black for the lab. Ito was forced to resign his post as the lab's director shortly after Epstein's 2019 arrest.

EPSTEIN'S EDGE

One of Epstein's main entries into elite circles of scientific academia, and specifically Big Tech, was through the Edge Group, an exclusive organization of intellectuals "redefining who and what we are" that was created by John Brockman.[114] Brockman, a self-described "cultural impresario" and noted literary agent, is best known for his deep ties to the art world in the late 1960s, though lesser known are his various "management consulting" gigs for the Pentagon and White House during that same period.[115] Edge, which the *Guardian* once called "the world's smartest website," is an exclusive online symposium affiliated with what Brockman calls "the Third Culture."[116]

According to an entry on Edge's website written by Brockman, the "Third Culture" consists of scientists and other thinkers who "are taking the place of the traditional intellectual in rendering visible the deeper meaning of our lives, redefining who and what we are" as well as those "who have tremendous influence on the emerging communication revolution surrounding the growth of the Internet and the Web."[117] "Emerging out of the third culture," Brockman writes, "is a new natural philosophy, founded on the realization of the import of complexity, of evolution."

Regarding Edge's membership, Brockman openly acknowledged to the *Guardian* that Edge was "elitist," but added that he meant elitist "in the good sense of an open elite, based on meritocracy."[118] However, the validity of Edge's "meritocracy" is debatable given Epstein's long presence in the Edge community. When asked why Edge's membership was so exclusive and elite, Brockman stated the following: "The problem with a discussion that uses the word 'elites' is that the word is automatically perceived as a pejorative. But that's not how I feel about it at all. Elites are a problem if they're closed and exclusive. Elites that are open, inclusive and based on merit can be nurturing. Also, members of elites give one another permission to be great."

Brockman has long hobnobbed with the elite since his early career, when he was already "a master of serving up New York Bohemia in a palatable way for investors and businessmen."[119] His ability to market "cutting-edge" art to not just the ultra-wealthy, but to corporations, established him "as a consultant who could sell his services to anyone."[120] He would float between the corporate and art worlds, as well as to and from Washington, DC for consulting jobs with the US military and the White House, throughout the 1960s. In 1969, he would also publish the first of his own books, *By the late John Brockman*, which reflected on Brockman's interest in transhumanism and his interest in "cybernetics" and the "comparative study of brains and computer systems."[121]

He founded his eponymous literary agency in 1973, which flourished due to his vast array of contacts, knack for securing large advances, and his reputation as "a networker's networker."[122] His style rubbed many in the industry the wrong way, with journalist James Gorman writing in 1997 that "Editors and other agents who deal with Mr. Brockman or compete with him, complain, off the record, about quickie book proposals, overblown advances and books that do not come in on time or in good shape."[123] Nonetheless, Brockman is credited with making scientists' books marketable to the masses and significantly raising how much money "celebrity" scientists make off of their book sales, regardless of whether they are represented by Brockman.

At the dawn of the 1980s, Brockman began to merge his business with interests in the nascent software industry. He declared himself the first "software agent" in anticipation of the "future gold rush" and sold the word processing program of his first client for $1 million. His biggest break in this area came soon when, in 1983, he sold the Whole Earth Software Catalog for $1.3 million. Just as in the literary world, he eventually angered major figures in tech like Bill Gates for "poaching" software authors, leading Brockman to remark that the Microsoft co-founder "is not a fan of mine," though he added that this was at "the beginning of the personal computer revolution and I've been at the center of it ever since."[124]

In this milieu, Brockman began hosting an annual event, originally dubbed "the Millionaires' Dinner," in 1985, which matched some of the biggest names in Big Tech with potential benefactors. According to Brockman, major partnerships and deals in the tech world were being made at the event, stating that "In the beginning, it was very consequential; there was heavy stuff going down, alliances coming and going about browsers…"[125] However, "once people had their jets parked outside," meaning Silicon Valley leadership had become more showy with their quickly growing wealth, "it got upgraded to the Billionaires' Dinner."

Shortly before Brockman began hosting these annual events, Charles and Herbert Allen of Allen & Co. - linked to organized crime, Earl Brian, Leslie Wexner's mentors and others - began hosting the Allen & Co. Sun Valley

Conference in 1983, which has since been described as a "billionaire summer camp" that, like Brockman's event, regularly attracts the elite of Silicon Valley.[126]

In the early 1990s, Brockman played an interesting role in a 1994 FBI investigation into whether Soviet intelligence had recruited a Carter administration official that allegedly passed state secrets on to Moscow. The investigation was spurred by the accounts of a former Soviet spy in an unpublished manuscript that Brockman had obtained.

In February 1993, former senior KGB official Valentin Aksilenko met with American businesswoman Brenda Lipson, who had "befriended Mr. Aksilenko on one of his Washington tours when the KGB official was working under the cover of a commercial attaché to the Soviet Embassy," according to the *New York Times*.[127] Lipson had sought Aksilenko out for an interview, which resulted in Aksilenko "abruptly" asking if she could help publish a novel "written by a friend." Lipson agreed to help find the book a publisher and, through a mutual friend, passed the manuscript onto John Brockman. Brockman agreed to publish and, sometime between February and April, the manuscript "wound its way through the world of publishing to the Central Intelligence Agency."

In April 1993, Aksilenko and his "friend," former KGB agent Yuri Shvets, traveled to the US and spent a weekend at Brockman's Connecticut farm and subsequently sold the book to Simon & Schuster. Right after concluding their meeting with Brockman, Aksilenko and Shvets traveled to Virginia, telling friends they wanted to "revisit some of their old haunts" in Virginia. In reality, they clandestinely met with FBI counterintelligence agents and became government informants. Soon after these meetings, the two former KGB agents returned to Moscow only to travel back to the US just months later, settling in suburban Virginia, a common destination for foreign assets of US intelligence.

The whole affair was obviously strange, with the *New York Times* noting that "the FBI's willingness to allow its informers to undertake the writing project" was odd given that the FBI officials had publicly expressed their worry that "disclosures prompted by the book might compromise their investigation."[128] However, the FBI did not interfere with or attempt to block the book's publication. Also odd is the fact that the FBI admitted that it did "not know if these events actually happened, and some officials are skeptical." In addition, Shvets' previous comments about a separate incident had been deemed not credible by prominent former and current intelligence officials.

Brockman's role in this episode is notable, as it appears that his Washington connections (due to his past consulting for the US military and White House) were utilized to somehow pass the manuscript along to the CIA, which may have led to the FBI counterintelligence meeting with Aksilenko and Shvets immediately following their time with Brockman. Brockman's apparent passing of the manuscript to the CIA raises the possibility that Brockman may have done so in other instances, especially if he possessed a deeper relationship with the agency. It is true that some other espionage-linked figures explored in this book, specifically Robert Maxwell, were intimately involved in science-focused publishing, not unlike Brockman.

The potential CIA tie is also significant for another reason, as Brockman and the intelligence-linked Epstein became closely connected around this time. In 1995, Brockman was the literary agent of physicist Murray Gell-Mann and had originally sold Gell-Mann's book, *The Quark and the Jaguar*, to Bantam for $550,000. Gell-Mann only managed to produce a partial manuscript, which Bantam rejected. Brockman scrambled to try and resell the book, which he eventually did to W.H. Freeman for $50,000. While these sums are considerable alone, additional financing for the book was provided by Epstein. Gell-Mann's book thanks Epstein for his financial support.[129] Given the subsequent and close relationship between Epstein and Brockman/Edge, it is highly likely that Epstein's support of Gell-Mann, at a time when the future of his book hung in the balance, had been arranged between Brockman and Epstein.

That year, Brockman also released his treatise on the Third Culture and founded what was called the Reality Club soon after with physicist Heinz Pagels. Pagels died a year later in 1996 and their Reality Club then became known as Edge.[130]

Three years later, in 1999, Brockman's Edge officially rebranded the Millionaires' Dinner to the Billionaires' Dinner, though it was formally known as the Edge Annual Dinner.[131] The Edge website describes the dinner as offering an opportunity for conversation between the "leading third culture intellectuals of our time," the majority of whom are often Brockman's clients, as well as "the founders of Amazon, AOL, eBay, Facebook, Google, Microsoft, PayPal, Space X, Skype, and Twitter." Edge asserts that it is this "remarkable gathering of outstanding minds" who are "rewriting our global culture."

In writing about the dinner on the Edge website, Brockman divides many of its attendees into two categories first mentioned by physicist Freeman Dyson: the "computer wizards," the tech billionaires who dominate Silicon Valley's most successful companies, and the "biology wizards," scientists and thinkers whom Brockman refers to as "a new generation of artists, writing genomes as fluently as Blake and Byron wrote verses."[132] As an active member of Edge, Jeffrey Epstein, beginning around the time Bill Clinton left office and picking up considerably after his first arrest, courted and financed (and potentially blackmailed) both varieties of Edge's "wizards."

Epstein's ties to Edge, and to Brockman, are considerable, with Epstein having funded $638,000 out of a total of $857,000 donations raised by Edge from 2001 to 2017. During this period, there were several years where Epstein was Edge's only donor.[133] Epstein stopped giving in 2015 and that was incidentally the same year that Edge decided to discontinue its annual Billionaires' dinner tradition. In addition, the only award Edge has ever given out, the $100,000 Edge of Computation prize, was awarded once in 2005 to Quantum computing pioneer David Deutsch and was funded entirely by Epstein.

While he bankrolled Edge and Brockman, Epstein was photographed at the first and second Billionaires' dinners in 1999 and 2000 and was mentioned in a published summary of the 2004 dinner. BuzzFeed reported in 2019 that Epstein also attended Edge events after his first arrest and as recently as 2011. Epstein is likely to have been present at several other Billionaires' dinners because his accomplice and Ghislaine Maxwell's then-"assistant," Sarah Kellen, was photographed with Brockman at Edge's Billionaires' dinner in 2002 and again in 2003 at Edge's "science dinner," which replaced the Billionaires' dinner that year, alongside John Brockman's son, Max.

On the heels of the first Billionaire's dinner and just before he began heavily funding Edge, Jeffrey Epstein created the Jeffrey Epstein VI Foundation in 2000, which would be the main vehicle for his science-focused "philanthropy" that would lead him to fund prominent individual scientists and develop close ties with leading academic institutions, specifically MIT and Harvard. Most of those scientists were also clients of Brockman as well as members of the Edge community.

In addition, several individuals mentioned in this chapter in connection with Epstein - Nathan Myhrvold, Linda Stone, Joi Ito, Esther Dyson, and Bill Gates –

were all members of the Edge Foundation community (Edge.org website), alongside several other Silicon Valley icons.[134] Since the Epstein scandal, regular attendees of the Billionaires' Dinner (i.e. the Edge annual dinner), have referred to the event as an "influence operation." If one follows the money, it appears it was an influence operation largely benefitting one man, Jeffrey Epstein, and his network.

While this does not mean that everyone involved with Edge or with Brockman was targeted by Epstein, it certainly gave him the network and the cover to target and cultivate specific, prominent figures in Silicon Valley and in academia, and it should be considered a key component of Epstein's broader influence operations during this period. Indeed, it may have been through Edge that Epstein gained privileged access to the elite of "Big Tech."

Before his 2019 arrest, Epstein had attempted to re-brand as a tech investor/entrepreneur. Indeed, in the lead-up to his most recent arrest, Jeffrey Epstein appeared to have been attempting to rebrand as a "tech investor," as he had done interviews with several journalists about technology investing in the months before he was hit with federal sex trafficking charges.[135] Similarly, after Epstein's first arrest, Ghislaine Maxwell began to also schmoozing key networks in Silicon Valley, as seen by her attendance at the 2011 holiday party of Silicon Valley venture capital firm Kleiner Perkins.[136]

For example, Jessica Lessin, editor-in-chief of *The Information*, told *Business Insider* that a journalist working for *The Information* had interviewed Epstein a month before his most recent arrest because "he was believed to be an investor in venture capital funds."[137] However, Lessin claimed that the interview was not "newsworthy" and said the site had no plans to publish its contents. *Business Insider* claimed that the way the interviews with Epstein had been arranged "suggests that someone in Silicon Valley may have been trying to help Epstein connect with reporters."[138]

Around this same time, Epstein had also told journalist James Stewart that he had "potentially damaging or embarrassing" information on Silicon Valley's elite and told Stewart that these top figures in the American tech industry "were hedonistic and regular users of recreational drugs." Epstein also told Stewart that he had "witnessed prominent tech figures taking drugs and arranging for sex" and claimed to know "details about their supposed sexual proclivities."[139]

Whether through Edge or another avenue, there is a strong case to be made that Epstein had blackmail on powerful Silicon Valley figures. Though it is unknown exactly which Silicon Valley figures were most connected to Epstein and which tech executives were potentially being blackmailed by him, it is known that Epstein associated with several prominent tech executives, including founders of Big Tech's most important firms, such as Google, Tesla/SpaceX, Microsoft and Facebook.[140]

For instance, in 2019, Epstein claimed to be advising Tesla and Elon Musk, who had been previously photographed with Epstein's alleged madam Ghislaine Maxwell. Epstein had also attended a dinner hosted by LinkedIn's Reid Hoffman, where Musk had allegedly introduced Epstein to Mark Zuckerberg of Facebook/Meta.[141] Google's Sergey Brin is known to have attended a dinner hosted by Epstein at his New York residence where Donald Trump was also in attendance. In addition, Ghislaine Maxwell was reportedly close to Amazon's Jeff Bezos who she referred to as her "pal" and who invited Maxwell to exclusive events he hosted.[142] Several of these companies whose founders had some Epstein-Maxwell connection, including Google, Microsoft, SpaceX, and Amazon, are also major contractors to the US government, the military, and/or the intelligence community.

Around the same time he began to cultivate the titans of Big Tech, Epstein's links to celebrity scientists also became obvious. In 2002, he flew cognitive psychologist Steven Pinker, evolutionary biologist Richard Dawkins, and "philosopher of the mind" Daniel Dennett to that year's TED conference. The trip in Epstein's private jet, which also included Brockman and his wife Katinka Matson, was ritzy enough to receive a mention in the *New York Times*' summary of the 2002 TED conference, which spoke of the "mink and sable throws" that adorned the plane as well as the group's "high-altitude lunch catered by Le Cirque 2000."[143] The article refers to Epstein as a "financial adviser to billionaires."

Some scientists that Epstein began to cultivate after the creation of his Jeffrey Epstein VI Foundation have courted controversy for their ties to eugenics or eugenicists. For instance, Epstein was a long-time patron of George Church, a Harvard geneticist who was also connected to Edge. Church has been accused of promoting eugenics as well as unethical human experimentation, such as using human women as surrogates for "resurrected" embryos of extinct species.[144] In addition, another scientists allegedly funded by Epstein, Eric Lander, controversially praised James Watson, a geneticist and a notorious eugenicist who had stated his belief that people of African descent have genetically inferior intelligence on numerous occasions prior to Lander's complimentary statements.[145]

Epstein's own interest in eugenics was the subject of several mainstream reports after his death. In the early 2000s, around the same time he began to court these top "celebrity" scientists including Church, Epstein began to tell friends and scientists that he wanted to impregnate 20 women at a time at his Zorro Ranch property.[146] Some prominent scientists later told the *New York Times* that Epstein's social events and outings may have been an opportunity for Epstein "to screen attractive women with impressive academic credentials as potential mothers for his children."[147] Using the Zorro property, Epstein reportedly sought to "seed the human race with his DNA" due to his interest in controlled breeding and eugenics.

Some Epstein accusers, like Virginia Giuffre, have alleged that Epstein and Maxwell had asked her to serve as a "surrogate" for what they said would be their child.[148] In addition, another victim who testified under the name Carolyn (see chapter 18), reported seeing pictures of Ghislaine Maxwell nude and pregnant.[149] It is unknown what became of the pregnancy, but Epstein's apparent interest in impregnating women with his DNA as well as his interest in genetics and eugenics suggest that these episodes, as well as his ambitions at the Zorro Ranch property, deserve greater scrutiny.

A TALE OF TWO BILLS

While he courted top scientists and tech moguls, including a few alleged eugenicists, Epstein – as discussed in the previous chapter – had become intimately involved in planning key aspects of major "philanthropies" that would later become major drivers of global health policy in the developing world: the Clinton Foundation and, later, the Bill & Melinda Gates Foundation.

It is worth exploring the ties between the "philanthropic" endeavors of Bill Gates and Bill Clinton in the early 2000s, given Epstein's and Ghislaine Maxwell's ties to the Clinton Foundation and the Clinton Global Initiative during that period.

Despite tensions arising from the Clinton administration's pursuit of Microsoft's monopoly in the late 1990s, the Gates and Clinton relationship had thawed by April 2000, when Gates attended the White House "Conference on the New Economy."[150] Attendees besides Gates included close Epstein associate Lynn Forester (now Lynn Forester de Rothschild) and then Treasury Secretary Larry Summers, whose ties to Epstein were discussed in chapter 14.[151] Another attendee was White House chief of staff Thomas "Mack" McLarty, whose special assistant Mark Middleton had met with Epstein numerous times at the Clinton White House.[152] Another participant in the conference was Janet Yellen, Biden's current Secretary of the Treasury.

Gates spoke at a conference panel entitled "Closing the Global Divide: Health, Education and Technology." He discussed how the mapping of the human genome would result in a new era of technological breakthroughs and discussed the need to offer internet access to everyone to close the digital divide and allow the "new" internet-based economy to take shape. At the time, Gates was backing a company, along with American Telecom billionaire Craig McCaw, that hoped to establish a global internet service provider monopoly through a network of low-orbit satellites.[153] That company, Teledesic, shut down between 2002 and 2003 and is credited as being the inspiration for Elon Musk's Starlink.[154]

Bill Clinton and Bill Gates entered the world of philanthropy around the same time, with the Bill & Melinda Gates Foundation launching in 2000 and the Clinton Foundation following in 2001. Not only that, but *Wired* described the two foundations as being "at the forefront of a new era in philanthropy, in which decisions – often referred to as investments – are made with the strategic precision demanded of business and government, then painstakingly tracked to gauge their success."[155]

Yet, critics and supporters alike, as noted in the previous chapter, challenged that these foundations engaged in "philanthropy" and asserted that calling them such was causing "the rapid deconstruction of the accepted term."[156] The *Huffington Post* further noted that the Clinton Global Initiative (part of the Clinton Foundation), the Gates Foundation, and a few similar organizations "all point in the direction of blurring the boundaries between philanthropy, business, and non-profits." It is worth noting that several of Epstein's own "philanthropic" vehicles, such as the Jeffrey Epstein VI Foundation, were also created just as this new era in philanthropy was beginning.

Years after creating their foundations, Gates and Clinton have discussed how they have "long bonded over their shared mission" of normalizing this new model of philanthropy. Gates spoke to *Wired* in 2013 about "their forays into developing regions" and "cites the close partnerships between their organizations."[157] In that interview, Gates revealed that he had met Clinton before he had become president, stating, "I knew him before he was president, I knew him when he was president, and I know him now that he's not president."

Also in that interview, Clinton stated that after he left the White House he sought to focus on two specific things. The first is the Clinton Health Access Initiative (CHAI), which he stated exists "thanks largely to funding from the Gates Foundation," and the second is the Clinton Global Initiative (CGI), "where I try to build a global network of people to do their own thing." Ira Magaziner, who flew on Epstein's plane alongside Clinton and Doug Band, was the key figure behind the creation of CHAI and served as its CEO.

The Clinton Health Access Initiative first received an $11 million donation from the Gates Foundation in 2009.[158] Since then, the Gates Foundation has donated more than $497 million to CHAI. CHAI was initially founded in 2002 with the mission of tackling HIV/AIDS globally through "strong government relationships" and addressing "market inefficiencies."[159] As mentioned in the previous chapter, Epstein was credited with helping shape Clinton's HIV/AIDS policies during that period, suggesting he was involved with the creation of CHAI, as well as the Clinton Global Initiative. Notably, the Gates Foundation's significant donations began not long after CHAI's expansion into malaria diagnostics and treatments.[160] In 2011, Tachi Yamada, the former president of the Gates Foundation's Global Health program, joined CHAI's board alongside Chelsea Clinton.

As previously noted in the last chapter, Epstein's defense lawyers argued in court in 2007 that Epstein had been "part of the original group that conceived of the Clinton Global Initiative," which was first launched in 2005.[161] The Gates Foundation gave the CGI a total of $2.5 million between 2012 and 2013 in addition to its massive donations to the CHAI and an additional $35 million to the Clinton Foundation itself.[162] In addition to the Gates Foundation donations, Gates's Microsoft has been intimately involved in other "philanthropic" projects backed by Clinton.[163]

In addition to these ties, Hillary Clinton established a partnership between the Clinton Foundation and the Gates Foundation in 2014 as part of the Clintons' "No Ceilings" initiative.[164] That partnership sought to "gather and analyze data about the status of women and girls' participation around the world" and involved the two foundations working "with leading technology partners to collect these data and compile them." Months before the partnership was announced, Gates and Epstein met for dinner and discussed the Gates Foundation and philanthropy, according to the *New York Times*.[165] During Hillary Clinton's unsuccessful run for president in 2016, both Bill and Melinda Gates were on her short list as potential options for vice president.[166]

In addition, Epstein attempted to become involved in the Gates Foundation directly, as seen by his efforts to convince the Gates Foundation to partner with JPMorgan on a multibillion-dollar "global health charitable fund" that would have resulted in hefty fees paid out to Epstein, who was very involved with JPMorgan at the time.[167] Though that fund never materialized, Epstein and Gates did discuss Epstein becoming involved in Gates's philanthropic efforts. Prior to this proposal of a more direct role for Epstein, he had previously worked indirectly through Gates, as he had "directed" Gates to donate to at least one organization – $2 million in 2014 to the MIT Media Lab.

Other Gates and Epstein meetings that took place between 2013 and 2014 have further underscored the importance Epstein apparently held in the world of billionaire "philanthropy," with Gates reportedly claiming that Epstein was his "ticket" to winning a Nobel Prize.[168] Norwegian media, however, reported in October 2020 that Gates and Epstein had met the Nobel Committee chair, which failed to make a splash in international media at the time.[169] It is worth asking if Epstein managed to arrange such meetings with other individuals who also coveted Nobel Prizes and if any such individuals later received those prizes. If Epstein had such connections, it is unlikely that he would have used them only once in the case of Bill Gates, given the vastness of his network, particularly in the tech and science worlds.

The year 2013 is also when Bill and Melinda Gates together met with Epstein at his New York residence, after which Melinda allegedly began asking her then-husband to distance himself from Epstein.[170] While the stated reason for this, in the wake of the their divorce announcement in 2021, was that Melinda was put off by Epstein's past and his persona, it could potentially be related to other concerns about Melinda's reputation and that of the foundation that shares her name.

Indeed, 2013 was also the year that the Gates' mansion systems engineer, Rick Allen Jones, began to be investigated by Seattle police for his child porn and child rape video collection, which contained over six thousand images and videos. Despite the gravity of his crimes, when Jones was arrested at the Gates' mansion a year later, he was not jailed after his arrest but was merely ordered "to stay away from children," according to local media reports.[171] From Melinda's perspective, this scandal, combined with Bill Gates's growing association with then-convicted pedophile Jeffrey Epstein may have posed a major threat to the Bill & Melinda Gates Foundation's reputation, well before Epstein's 2019 arrest.

Around this same time, Ghislaine Maxwell's TerraMar Project, which officially supported UN Sustainable Development Goals as they relate to the world's oceans, made a $1.25 million commitment to the Clinton Global Initiative as part of an effort to form a Sustainable Oceans Alliance.[172] TerraMar shut down shortly after Epstein's 2019 arrest.

Notably, Ghislaine's TerraMar Project was in many ways the successor to Isabel Maxwell's failed Blue World Alliance, which was also ostensibly focused on the world's oceans.[173] Blue World Alliance was set up by Isabel and her now deceased husband Al Seckel, who had hosted a "scientific conference" on Epstein's island. The Blue World Alliance also went under the name the Globalsolver Foundation, and Xavier Malina, Christine Maxwell's son, was listed as Globalsolver's liaison to the Clinton Foundation.[174] He was previously an intern at the Clinton Global Initiative.

Malina later worked in the Obama administration at the Office of White House Personnel.[175] He now works for Google. It is also worth noting that during this same period, Isabel Maxwell's son, Alexander Djerassi, was chief of staff at the Bureau of Near Eastern Affairs in the Hillary Clinton-run State Department, where he would have overseen key policies of interest to Israel.[176]

GATES SCIENCE AND EPSTEIN SCIENCE

While the Gates Foundation and the Clinton Foundation intermingled and shared ties to Epstein and Maxwell, it also appears that Epstein had significant influence over two of the most prominent science advisers to Bill Gates over the last fifteen years – Melanie Walker and Boris Nikolic.

As detailed in chapter 18, Melanie Walker, now a celebrated neurosurgeon, met Jeffrey Epstein in 1992 soon after she graduated from college, when he offered her a Victoria's Secret modeling job.[177] She then stayed at a New York apartment building associated with Epstein's trafficking operations during visits to New York, but it is unclear how long she stayed there or at other Epstein-owned properties. After she graduated from medical school in 1998, she became Epstein's science adviser for at least a year. Shortly afterwards, she grew close to Prince Andrew and was reportedly "given" to him when he visited Epstein's Zorro Ranch property.

After leaving Epstein's employ as his science adviser (and as an apparent occasional companion for Prince Andrew), Walker moved to Seattle and began living with then Microsoft executive Steven Sinofsky, who now serves as a board partner at the venture capital firm Andreessen Horowitz.[178] Andreessen Horowitz notably backs Carbyne911, the Israel intelligence-linked pre-crime start-up funded by Epstein and his close associate, former prime minister of Israel Ehud Barak.[179] It is unclear when, how, and under what circumstances Walker met Sinofsky.

After moving to Seattle to be with Sinofsky and after a brief stint as a "practitioner in the developing world" in China with the World Health Organization, Walker was hired as a senior program officer by the Bill & Melinda Gates Foundation in 2006. Given that the main feature of Walker's resume at the time was having been a science adviser to another wealthy "philanthropist," Jeffrey Epstein, her hire by the Gates Foundation for this critical role further underscores how Bill Gates, at the very least, not only knew who Epstein was but knew enough about his scientific interests and investments to want to hire Walker at that time.

Walker went on to become deputy director for Global Development as well as a deputy director of Special Initiatives at the foundation.[180] According to the Rockefeller Foundation, where she is now a fellow, Walker later advised Gates on issues pertaining to neurotechnology and brain science for Gates's secretive company bgC3, which Gates originally registered as a think tank under the name Carillon Holdings.[181] According to federal filings, bgC3's focus areas were "scientific and technological services," "industrial analysis and research," and "design and development of computer hardware and software."[182]

During her time at the Gates Foundation, Walker introduced Boris Nikolic, Gates's science adviser, to Epstein. Today, Melanie Walker is the co-chair of the World Economic Forum's Global Future Council on Neurotechnology and Brain Science, having previously been named a WEF Young Global Leader. She also advises the World Health Organization, which is heavily funded by and closely linked to Bill Gates's "philanthropy."

In 2016, while at the WEF, Walker wrote an article entitled "Healthcare in 2030: Goodbye Hospital, Hello Home-spital," in which she discusses how wearable devices, brain-machine interfaces, and injectable/swallowable robotic "medicines" will be the norm by 2030.[183] Years before efforts to change health care in just this way were as visible as they today, Walker wrote that, while the dystopian scenario she was painting "sounds crazy [,] most of these technologies are either almost ready for prime time, or in development."

In the case of Boris Nikolic, after being introduced to Epstein through Walker, he attended a 2011 meeting with Gates and Epstein where he was photographed alongside James Staley, then a senior JPMorgan executive, and Larry Summers.[184] Nikolic was chief adviser for science and technology to Bill Gates at the time, advising both the Gates Foundation and bgC3.[185] According to the mainstream narrative, this is supposed to be the first time that Gates and Epstein had ever met. In addition, this may have been the meeting where Epstein pitched the joint Gates Foundation-JP-Morgan "global health charitable fund."

In 2014, Nikolic "waxed enthusiastic" about Epstein's supposed penchant for financial advice ahead of a public offering for a gene-editing company that Nikolic had a $42 million stake in.[186] Notably, both Nikolic and Epstein were clients of the same group of bankers at JPMorgan, with *Bloomberg* later reporting that Epstein regularly helped those bankers attract wealthy new clients.

In 2016, Nikolic co-founded Biomatics Capital, which invests in health-related companies at "the convergence of genomics and digital data" that are "enabling the development of superior therapeutics, diagnostics, and delivery models."[187] Nikolic founded Biomatics with Julie Sunderland, formerly the director of the Gates Foundation's Strategic Investment Fund.

At least three of the companies backed by Biomatics – Qihan Biotech, eGenesis, and Editas – were co-founded by George Church, the Harvard geneticist with deep ties to Epstein and Edge.[188] Biomatics' investment in Qihan Biotech is no longer listed on the Biomatics website.[189] Church's Qihan Biotech seeks to produce human tissues and organs inside pigs for transplantation into humans, while eGenesis seeks to genetically modify pig organs for use in humans. Editas produces CRISPR gene-editing "medicines" and is also backed by the Gates Foundation as well as Google Ventures.[190]

After Epstein's death in 2019, it was revealed that Nikolic had been named the "successor executor" of Epstein's estate, further suggesting he had very close ties to Epstein, despite Nikolic's claims to the contrary. After details of Epstein's will were made public, Nikolic declined to sign a form indicating his willingness to be executor and did not ultimately serve in that role.[191]

Endnotes

1 Nigel Rosser, "Andrew's Fixer; She's the Daughter of Robert Maxwell and She's Manipulating His Jetset Lifestyle," *Evening Standard* (London), January 22, 2001, https://www.mintpressnews.com/wp-content/uploads/2019/10/ANDREW_S-FIXER_SHE_S-THE-DAUGHTER-OF-ROBERT-MAXWELL-AND-1.pdf.

2 "Where Our Money Comes From," *BBC*, https://www.bbc.co.uk/mediaaction/about/bbc.com/mediaaction/about/funding/; "Gates Foundation Awards $20 Million to BBC World Service Trust," *Philanthropy News Digest*, March 7, 2011, https://philanthropynewsdigest.org/news/gates-foundation-awards-20-million-to-bbc-world-service-trust.

3 Whitney Webb, "Epstein Victim Maria Farmer Speaks With Whitney Webb, Full Phone Call - Part 2," *The Last American Vagabond*, May 26, 2020, https://www.thelastamericanvagabond.com/epstein-victim-maria-farmer-speaks-with-whitney-webb-full-phone-call-part-2/.

4 Whitney Webb, "The Maxwell Family Business: Espionage," *Unlimited Hangout*, July 15, 2020, https://unlimitedhangout.com/2020/07/investigative-series/the-maxwell-family-business-espionage/.

5 Po Bronson, "On The Net, No One Knows You're a Maxwell," *Wired*, February 1, 1999, https://www.wired.com/1999/02/maxwell/.

6 Saskia Sissons, "Mysterious Business of the Queen of NY-Lon," *Sunday Times* (London), November 12, 2000, https://www.mintpressnews.com/wp-content/uploads/2019/10/Mysterious-business-of-the-queen-of-NY-Lon-1.pdf.

7 The Newsroom, "Misery in the Maxwell House," *The Scotsman*, November 16, 2001, https://www.scotsman.com/news/misery-maxwell-house-2510066.

8 Bronson, "On The Net."

9 CNET News staff, "MSN to Use McKinley Directory," *CNET*, December 18, 1995, https://www.cnet.com/tech/mobile/msn-to-use-mckinley-directory/.

10 Sharon Wrobel, "Serial Entrepreneur," *The Jerusalem Post*, August 24, 2006, https://www.jpost.com/Business/Business-Features/Serial-entrepreneur; Katie Hafner, "The Perils of Being Suddenly Rich," *New York Times*, April 21, 2007, https://www.nytimes.com/2007/04/21/technology/21hayden.html.

11 Julia Angwin, "Excite Will Buy Magellan Search Engine," *SFGATE*, June 28, 1996, https://www.sfgate.com/business/article/Excite-Will-Buy-Magellan-Search-Engine-2976079.php.

12 Bronson, "On The Net."

13 Whitney Webb, "Isabel Maxwell: Israel's 'Back Door' Into Silicon Valley," *Unlimited Hangout*, July 24, 2020, https://unlimitedhangout.com/2020/07/investigative-reports/isabel-maxwell-israels-back-door-into-silicon-valley/.

14 "The Full History of the Israel Start Up Nation," *Ntegra*, https://www.ntegra.com/insights/israel-start-nation.

15 "The Full History of the Israel Start Up Nation."

16 "Team - Yozma," *Yozma*, https://www.yozma.com/team/yigal_erlich.asp.

17 Whitney Webb, “The CIA, Mossad and “Epstein Network” Are Exploiting Mass Shootings,” *MintPress News*, September 6, 2019, https://www.mintpressnews.com/cia-israel-mossad-jeffrey-epstein-orwellian-nightmare/261692/; Whitney Webb, “From ‘Spook Air’ to the ‘Lolita Express’: The Genesis and Evolution of the Jeffrey Epstein-Bill Clinton Relationship,” *Unlimited Hangout*, August 23, 2019, https://unlimitedhangout.com/2019/08/investigative-series/from-spook-air-to-the-lolita-express-the-genesis-and-evolution-of-the-jeffrey-epstein-bill-clinton-relationship/.

18 Orr Hirschauge and Yoav Stoler, “Israel Blurs the Line Between Defense Apparatus and Local Cybersecurity Hub,” *CTECH*, March 29, 2018, https://www.calcalistech.com/ctech/articles/0,7340,L-3735256,00.html.

19 “Former Israeli PM Ehud Barak Gave Harvey Weinstein Info on Israeli Firm Hired to Fight Accusations,” *Haaretz*, November 7, 2017, https://www.haaretz.com/us-news/2017-11-07/ty-article/ex-pm-barak-gave-weinstein-info-on-israeli-firm-hired-to-fight-accusations/0000017f-e6bb-df2c-a1fffefb60db0000.

20 Webb, “Maxwell Family Business.”

21 “Ed Mlavsky,” *Gemini Israel Ventures*, http://www.gemini.co.il/team/ed-mlavsky/.

22 “Ed Mlavsky.”

23 Marcy Oster, “Rafi Eitan, Spymaster Who Led Capture of Nazi Adolf Eichmann and Handled Jonathan Pollard, Dies at 92,” *Jewish Telegraphic Agency*, March 24, 2019, https://www.jta.org/2019/03/24/israel/rafi-eitan-spymaster-who-led-capture-of-eichmann-and-handled-jonathan-pollarddies-at-92.

24 “Jonathan Pollard Indictment,” US District Court for the Dictrict of Columbia, November 7, 1984, https://www.israellobby.org/pollard/06041986_pollard_indictment.pdf; Grant Smith, “The Jonathan Pollard Affair: Unanswered Questions Abound,” *Antiwar.com*, December 3, 2015, https://original.antiwar.com/smith-grant/2015/12/02/the-jonathan-pollard-affair-unanswered-questions-abound/; Philip Shenon, “American Linked to Pollard Case Reports Work for Israeli Military,” *New York Times*, April 3, 1987, https://www.nytimes.com/1987/04/03/world/american-linked-to-pollard-case-reports-work-for-israeli-military.html.

25 Claudia Wright, “Did U.S. Government Funds Pay Costs of Pollard Espionage?,” *Washington Report on Middle East Affairs*, August 1987, https://www.wrmea.org/1987-august/shadows-did-us-government-funds-pay-costs-of-pollard-espionage.html.

26 Philip Shenon, “Another Is Sought in Pollard Case,” *New York Times*, April 2, 1987, https://www.nytimes.com/1987/04/02/world/another-is-sought-in-pollard-case.html.

27 “Commtouch,” *Gemini Israel Ventures*, http://www.gemini.co.il/companies/commtouch/; “CommTouch - Home of Pronto Internet Mail,” *CommTouch*, https://web.archive.org/web/19970106042705/http:/www.commtouch.com/commtouch/; “Cyren,” *Warburg Pincus*, https://warburgpincus.com/investments/cyren/.

28 Bronson, “On The Net,”; “Cyren LTD. SEC Filing,” *EDGAR Online*, January 25, 2006, https://yahoo.brand.edgar-online.com/DisplayFilingInfo.aspx?Type=HTML&text=%2526lt%253bNEAR%252f4%2526gt%253b(%22IAN%22%2C%22BONNER%22)&FilingID=4148067&ppu=%2FPeopleFilingResults.aspx%3FPersonID%3D2707526%26PersonName%3DIAN%2520BONNER.

29 “Cyren LTD. SEC Filing.”

30 “CommTouch Business Partners,” *CommTouch*, https://web.archive.org/web/19970106042746/http:/www.commtouch.com/commtouch/partners/partners.html.

31 Bronson, “On The Net.”

32 Bronson, “On The Net.”

33 “Cyren LTD. SEC Filing.”

34 “Cyren LTD. SEC Filing.”

35 Bronson, “On The Net.”

36 Wrobel, “Serial Entrepreneur.”

37 Ronit Adler, “Isabel Maxwell: I Think My Father’s Death Was an Accident, My Sister Thinks It Was Murder,” *Globes*, February 9, 2006, https://en.globes.co.il/en/article--1000059949.

38 Bronson, “On The Net.”

39 J. Correspondent, “Magnates Daughter Forges Own Path in Silicon Valley,” *Jewish News of Northern California*, December 24, 1999, https://jweekly.com/1999/12/24/magnate-s-daughter-forges-own-path-in-silicon-valley/.

40 Yehoshua Sagi and Mary Sagi-Maydan, “Comfortable in Her Skin,” *Haaretz*, February 13, 2002, https://www.haaretz.com/2002-02-13/ty-article/comfortable-in-her-skin/0000017f-f6fb-d5bd-a17f-f6fb5de60000.

41 Bronson, “On The Net.”

42 Sagi and Sagi-Maydan, “Comfortable in Her Skin.”

43 “Magnates Daughter Forges Own Path.”

44 Jessica Steinberg, “New Ventures: Born in Israel, Raised in U.S.,” *New York Times*, June 13, 1999, https://www.nytimes.com/1999/06/13/business/business-new-ventures-born-in-israel-raised-in-us.html.

45 Adler, “I Think My Father’s Death Was an Accident.”

46 Ann McFerran, “Relative Values: Elisabeth Maxwell, the Widow of Robert Maxwell, and Their Daughter Isabel,” *The Times* (UK), April 11, 2004, https://www.thetimes.co.uk/article/relative-values-elisabeth-maxwell-the-widow-of-robert-maxwell-and-their-daughter-isabel-7s67c-qwksvb.

47 “Voyaging around Her Father, the Hi-Tech Maxwell,” *The Observer*, October 8, 2000, https://www.theguardian.com/business/2000/oct/08/theobserver.observerbusiness.

48 “WITI Women - Isabell Maxwell,” WITI, https://witi.com/wire/witiwomen/imaxwell/imaxwell3.shtml.

49 Sagi and Sagi-Maydan, Comfortable in Her Skin.”

50 McFerran, “Relative Values.”

51 Alan D. Abbey, “Isabel Maxwell Fights Back,” *The Jerusalem Post*, December 12, 2003, https://www.academia.edu/40635328/Isabel_Maxwell_fights_back.

52 Abbey, “Isabel Maxwell Fights Back.”

53 Isabel Maxwell, “Case Dismissed,” *The Jewish Chronicle*, November 22, 2002, https://archive.thejc.com/archive/1.302835.

54 Abbey, “Isabel Maxwell Fights Back.”

55 “International Board of Governors of the Peres Center for Peace,” *The Peres Center For Peace*, October 4, 2011, https://web.archive.org/web/20111004150505/http:/www.peres-

center.org/fulllist.html.

56 Bronson, “On The Net,”; J. Correspondent, “Magnates Daughter Forges Own Path,”;

57 “Voyaging around Her Father, the Hi-Tech Maxwell.”

58 CNET News staff, “Magellan Cofounder Finds Email,” *CNET*, February 21, 1997, https://www.cnet.com/tech/services-and-software/magellan-cofounder-finds-email/.

59 “WITI Women - Isabell Maxwell Profile,” *WITI*, https://witi.com/wire/witiwomen/imaxwell/index.shtml.

60 Adler, “I Think My Father’s Death Was an Accident.”

61 “CommTouch Boosts Number of Shares for IPO,” *Los Angeles Times*, July 12, 1999, https://web.archive.org/web/20200719212101/https:/www.latimes.com/archives/la-xpm-1999-jul-12-fi-55177-story.html.

62 Larraine Segil, Fastalliances: Power Your E-Business (New York: John Wiley, 2001), 40, https://archive.org/details/fastalliances00larr.

63 CNET Staff, “MSN to Use McKinley Directory.”

64 “CommTouch Boosts Number of Shares for IPO.”

65 “CommTouch Boosts Number of Shares for IPO.”

66 Steinberg, “New Ventures: Born in Israel, Raised in U.S.”

67 Astrid Wendlandt and Claude Chendjou, “Markets Too Tough for A Small World IPO,” *Reuters*, May 19, 2008, https://www.reuters.com/article/us-summit-asmallworld-idUSL1939397020080519; “Well Connected: The Net Jet Set,” *The Sunday Times* (UK), June 13, 2004, https://www.thetimes.co.uk/article/well-connected-the-net-jet-set-79zmj6bt93k.

68 Wendlandt and Chendjou, “Markets Too Tough.”

69 “Paul Allen during AmfAR’s ‘Cinema Against AIDS Cannes’ Benefit,” Getty Images, May 20, 2004, https://www.gettyimages.co.uk/detail/news-photo/paul-allen-during-amfars-cinema-against-aids-cannes-benefit-news-photo/107278856; Johnny Vedmore, “Epstein & Junkermann: September 1, 2002 - The Secret Senators and the Wexner War on Iraq,” *Vocal Media*, August 26, 2019, https://vocal.media/theSwamp/epstein-and-junkermann-september-1-2002-the-secret-senators-and-the-wexner-war-on-iraq.

70 “Commtouch and Microsoft Enter Into Distribution and Service Agreement,” *Yahoo*, October 27, 1999, https://web.archive.org/web/19991128155905/http:/biz.yahoo.com/bw/991027/ca_commtou_2.html.

71 Reuters, “Company News; Commtouch Discloses Stock Purchase by Microsoft,” *New York Times*, December 31, 1999, https://www.nytimes.com/1999/12/31/business/company-news-commtouch-discloses-stock-purchase-by-microsoft.html.

72 “Voyaging Around Her Father, the Hi-Tech Maxwell.”

73 “Voyaging Around Her Father, the Hi-Tech Maxwell.”

74 Segil, *Fastalliances*, 40.

75 “Messaging Solutions: Hosted Exchange,” *CommTouch*, https://web.archive.org/web/20010204034600/http:/www.commtouch.com/solutions/hostedxchg.shtml.

76 “CommTouch Boosts Number of Shares for IPO,”; Shlomy Golovinsky, “Commtouch CEO Gideon Mantel: We Have Better Chances than Rival Critical Path,” *The Marker*, July 16, 2001,

https://www.themarker.com/misc/2001-05-16/ty-article/0000017f-e703-df5f-a17f-ffdf18af0000.

77 Scotsman Newsroom, “Misery in the Maxwell House.”

78 “New Directors Named to Commtouch Board,” SEC.gov, March 19, 2008, https://www.sec.gov/Archives/edgar/data/1084577/000114420408016270/v107455_ex99-2.htm.

79 “Cyren Launches Free Online Web Security Test for SMBs and Enterprises,” *PR Newswire*, September 15, 2016, https://www.prnewswire.com/news-releases/cyren-launches-free-online-web-security-test-for-smbs-and-enterprises-300328519.html.

80 Sagi and Sagi-Maydan, “Comfortable in Her Skin.”

81 Adler, “I Think My Father’s Death Was an Accident.”

82 “Isabell Maxwell Bio,” *Maxwell Communications*, https://archive.vn/20130701061134/http:/webcache.googleusercontent.com/search?q=cache:Wqex6Jwe6C4J:www.maxwell-communications.com/isabel.htm+&cd=12&hl=en&ct=clnk&gl=us.

83 Adler, “I Think My Father’s Death Was an Accident.”

84 “Icognito Raises $3.1 Million to Expand Its Next Generation Content Filtering Solutions Globally and Recruits Veteran Executive Isabel Maxwell as CEO,” *PRWeb*, September 15, 2003, https://www.prweb.com/releases/2003/09/prweb80151.htm.

85 Abbey, “Isabel Maxwell Fights Back.”

86 Sagi and Sagi-Maydan, “Comfortable in Her Skin,”; “Gil Shwed,” *Prabook*, https://prabook.com/web/gil.shwed/726125.

87 Adler, “I Think My Father’s Death Was an Accident,”; “Shimon Peres Breakfasts at Buck’s in Woodside,” *The Almanac*, May 10, 2000, https://www.almanacnews.com/morgue/2000/2000_05_10.peres.html.

88 “Isabel Maxwell,” *World Economic Forum*, https://www.weforum.org/people/isabel-s-maxwell; Abbey, “Isabel Maxwell Fights Back.”

89 “International Board of Governors,” *The Peres Center for Peace and Innovation*, https://www.peres-center.org/en/the-organization/international-board2/; “About Us,” *The Peres Center for Peace and Innovation*, https://www.peres-center.org/en/the-organization/about-us/.

90 “People by Andrew Pierce,” *The Times* (UK), December 4, 2002, https://www.thetimes.co.uk/article/people-by-andrew-pierce-9fr20dk5qkk; Adler, “I Think My Father’s Death Was an Accident.”

91 “Isabel Maxwell,” *World Economic Forum*; “About Us,” *IVN-Israel Venture Network*, https://ivn.org.il/.

92 “Itsik Danziger, IVN Yozma Fund Chairman,” *IVN-Israel Venture Network*, https://ivn.org.il/itsik-danziger/.

93 “Freeman Dyson,” *Wikipedia*, Last modified July 21, 2022, https://en.wikipedia.org/w/index.php?title=Freeman_Dyson; Tara McKelvey, “Esther Dyson: Breaking through Tech’s Glass Ceiling,” *BBC News*, May 27, 2014, https://www.bbc.com/news/magazine-26858383.

94 “Esther Dyson,” *World Economic Forum*, https://web.archive.org/web/20160928050515/https://www.weforum.org/agenda/authors/estherdyson/.

95 Esther Dyson, Andrei Sakharov's House, in Sarov, photo, April 12, 2005, https://www.flickr.com/photos/edyson/9209120/; Pavel V. Oleynikov, "German Scientists in the Soviet Atomic Project," *Nonproliferation.org*, https://www.nonproliferation.org/wp-content/uploads/npr/72pavel.pdf.

96 Hillel Fendel, "Sakharov Widow Supports Israel," *Israel National News*, May 22, 2009, https://www.israelnationalnews.com/news/131510.

97 Esther Dyson, *And What Do They Learn?*, photo, April 12, 2005, https://www.flickr.com/photos/edyson/9209659/.

98 "Chelyabinsk-70," *GlobalSecurity.org*, https://www.globalsecurity.org/wmd/world/russia/chelyabinsk-70_nuc.htm.

99 John J. Fialka, "U.S. Probes Silicon Graphics' Computer Sale to Russian Lab," *Wall Street Journal*, February 18, 1997, https://www.wsj.com/articles/SB856227124490610000.

100 "The Sad Saga of Silicon Graphics," *BusinessWeek*, August 4, 1997, https://archive.ph/20131230135538/http://www.businessweek.com/1997/31/b35381.htm.

101 "Silicon Graphics and Microsoft Form Strategic Alliance To Define the Future of Graphics," *Microsoft*, December 17, 1997, https://news.microsoft.com/1997/12/17/silicon-graphics-and-microsoft-form-strategic-alliance-to-define-the-future-of-graphics/.

102 Fialka, "U.S. Probes Silicon Graphics' Computer Sale."

103 Fialka, "U.S. Probes Silicon Graphics' Computer Sale."

104 "Control Data Corporation," *Minnesota Computing History*, https://mncomputinghistory.com/control-data-corporation/.

105 Kate Briquelet and Noah Kirsch, "This Year's TED Conference Will Be a Mini Epstein Reunion," *The Daily Beast*, April 9, 2022, https://www.thedailybeast.com/this-years-ted-conference-will-be-a-mini-epstein-reunion; Russell Brandom, "AI Pioneer Accused of Having Sex with Trafficking Victim on Jeffrey Epstein's Island," *The Verge*, August 9, 2019, https://www.theverge.com/2019/8/9/20798900/marvin-minsky-jeffrey-epstein-sex-trafficking-island-court-records-unsealed.

106 On Lander's connection to Thinking Machines: Robert Buderi, *Where Futures Converge: Kendall Square and the Making of a Global Innovation Hub* (Cambridge, Massachusetts: The MIT Press, 2022), 94. Whitney Webb, "Biden's Nominee For New Cabinet-Level Science Position Is Epstein-Linked Geneticist," *Unlimited Hangout*, February 5, 2021, https://unlimitedhangout.com/2021/02/reports/bidens-nominee-for-new-cabinet-level-science-position-is-epstein-linked-geneticist/.

107 Jeremy Diamond and Kate Sullivan, "White House Science Adviser Resigns, Acknowledges 'disrespectful and Demeaning' Behavior after Investigation," CNN, February 8, 2022, https://www.cnn.com/2022/02/07/politics/eric-lander-white-house-investigation/index.html.

108 Esther Dyson, *Nathan Myhrvold and Olga Dergunova, Microsoft*, photo, April 12, 2005, https://www.flickr.com/photos/edyson/9208938/.

109 Gabriel Sherman, "The Epstein Case Puts New Focus on Old Names – Including Clinton," *Vanity Fair*, July 23, 2019, https://www.vanityfair.com/news/2019/07/the-epstein-scandal-spirals-a-new-focus-on-clinton.

110 Sherman, "The Epstein Case Puts New Focus on Old Names."

111 "Report Concerning Jeffrey Epstein's Interactions With the Massachusetts Institute of Technology," *MIT*, January 10, 2020, http://factfindingjan2020.mit.edu/files/MIT-report.pdf?

200117.

112 "Report Concerning Jeffrey Epstein's Interactions With the Massachusetts Institute of Technology."

113 Kat Tenbarge and Benjamin Goggin, "Bill Gates Made Donations to MIT through Jeffrey Epstein —Here Are All of the Tech Mogul's Connections to the Financier," *Business Insider*, September 10, 2019, https://www.businessinsider.com/bill-gates-connections-jeffrey-epstein-mit-donations-ronan-farrow-2019-9.

114 "About Edge.Org," *Edge*, https://www.edge.org/about-edgeorg.

115 "John Brockman," Dazed, July 8, 2012, https://www.dazeddigital.com/artsandculture/article/13944/1/john-brockman.

116 John Naughton, "John Brockman: The Man Who Runs the World's Smartest Website," *The Observer*, January 8, 2012, https://www.theguardian.com/technology/2012/jan/08/john-brockman-edge-interview-john-naughton.

117 "About Edge.Org."

118 Naughton, "John Brockman."

119 Dazed, "John Brockman."

120 Andrew Brown, "The Hustler," *The Guardian*, April 29, 2005, https://www.theguardian.com/books/2005/apr/30/featuresreviews.guardianreview25.

121 James Gorman, "Nimble Deal-Maker For Stars Of Science," *New York Times*, October 14, 1997, https://www.nytimes.com/1997/10/14/science/nimble-deal-maker-for-stars-of-science.html.

122 Evgeny Morozov, "Jeffrey Epstein's Intellectual Enabler," *The New Republic*, August 22, 2019, https://newrepublic.com/article/154826/jeffrey-epsteins-intellectual-enabler.

123 Gorman, "Nimble Deal-Maker."

124 Dazed, "John Brockman."

125 Dazed, "John Brockman."

126 Soo Kim, "Sun Valley Conference 2021—Billionaire Summer Camp Explained and Who Is Attending," *Newsweek*, July 9, 2021, https://www.newsweek.com/sun-valley-conference-2021-billionaire-summer-camp-explained-who-attending-1608334.

127 John Markoff and David Johnston, "U.S. Investigates Whether K.G.B. Recruited Ex-White House Aide," *New York Times*, April 9, 1994, https://www.nytimes.com/1994/04/09/us/us-investigates-whether-kgb-recruited-ex-white-house-aide.html.

128 Markoff and Johnston, "U.S. Investigates."

129 James B. Stewart, Matthew Goldstein, and Jessica Silver-Greenberg, "Jeffrey Epstein Hoped to Seed Human Race With His DNA," *New York Times*, July 31, 2019, https://www.nytimes.com/2019/07/31/business/jeffrey-epstein-eugenics.html.

130 Dazed, "John Brockman."

131 "The Edge 'Billionaires' Dinner' 2015," *Edge*, March 18, 2015, https://www.edge.org/event/the-edge-billionaires-dinner-2015.

132 "The Edge 'Billionaires' Dinner' 2015."

133 Kayla Kibbe, "Edge Foundation President May Have Been Jeffrey Epstein's Connection to Intellectual Elite," *InsideHook*, August 23, 2019, https://www.insidehook.com/daily_brief/news-opinion/edge-foundation-president-may-have-been-jeffrey-epsteins-connection-to-intellectual-elite.

134 “Nathan Myhrvold,” *Edge*, https://stage.edge.org/memberbio/nathan_myhrvold; “Linda Stone,” *Edge*, https://stage.edge.org/memberbio/linda_stone; “Esther Dyson,” *Edge*, https://www.edge.org/memberbio/esther_dyson; “Bill Gates,” *Edge*, https://www.edge.org/memberbio/bill_gates.

135 John Cook, “Jeffrey Epstein Was Meeting with Silicon Valley Reporters before His Arrest, ‘rambling’ about All the People He Knew in Tech,” *Business Insider*, August 13, 2019, https://www.businessinsider.com/jeffrey-epstein-interview-tech-reporters-weeks-before-death-2019-8.

136 Aaron Holmes, “Former Silicon Valley VC Says Ghislaine Maxwell Attended an Investor Party in 2011 despite Reports ‘about Her Supplying Underage Girls for Sex,’” *Business Insider*, July 6, 2020, https://www.businessinsider.com/ghislaine-maxwell-attended-kleiner-perkins-vc-party-alleges-ellen-pao-2020-7.

137 Cook, “Jeffrey Epstein Was Meeting with Silicon Valley Reporters before His Arrest.”

138 Cook, “Jeffrey Epstein Was Meeting with Silicon Valley Reporters before His Arrest.”

139 James B. Stewart, “The Day Jeffrey Epstein Told Me He Had Dirt on Powerful People,” *New York Times*, August 12, 2019, https://www.nytimes.com/2019/08/12/business/jeffrey-epstein-interview.html.

140 Sarah McBride, “Epstein Arrest Leaves Top Technology Figures Racing to Distance Themselves,” *Bloomberg*, July 31, 2019, https://www.bloomberg.com/news/articles/2019-07-31/jeffrey-epstein-arrest-spurs-tech-figures-to-distance-themselves.

141 McBridge, “Epstein Arrest Leaves Top Technology Figures Racing.”

142 Kate Briquelet, “Ghislaine Maxwell Bragged About ‘Pal’ Jeff Bezos,” *The Daily Beast*, July 23, 2020, https://www.thedailybeast.com/ghislaine-maxwell-bragged-about-pal-jeff-bezos; Ebony Bowden, “Ghislaine Maxwell Attended Jeff Bezos’ Secretive Writers’ Retreat: Report,” *New York Post*, November 1, 2019, https://nypost.com/2019/11/01/ghislaine-maxwell-attended-jeff-bezos-secretive-writers-retreat-report/.

143 Patricia Leigh Brown, “3 Days In the Future,” *New York Times*, February 28, 2002, https://www.nytimes.com/2002/02/28/garden/3-days-in-the-future.html.

144 Blake Montgomery, “Epstein-Funded Scientist George Church Is Creating a Genetics-Based Dating App,” *The Daily Beast*, December 10, 2019, https://www.thedailybeast.com/epstein-funded-scientist-george-church-is-creating-a-genetics-based-dating-app; Allan Hall and Fiona Macrae, “Wanted: ‘Adventurous Woman’ to Give Birth to Neanderthal Man - Harvard Professor Seeks Mother for Cloned Cave Baby,” *Mail Online*, January 20, 2013, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2265402/Adventurous-human-woman-wanted-birth-Neanderthal-man-Harvard-professor.html.

145 Julia Belluz, “DNA Scientist James Watson Has a Remarkably Long History of Sexist, Racist Public Comments,” *Vox*, January 15, 2019, https://www.vox.com/2019/1/15/18182530/james-watson-racist.

146 Stewart, Goldstein, and Silver-Greenberg, “Jeffrey Epstein Hoped to Seed Human Race With His DNA.”

147 Stewart, Goldstein, and Silver-Greenberg, “Jeffrey Epstein Hoped to Seed Human Race With His DNA.”

148 “Virginia Roberts Fled Epstein after Being Asked to Have Surrogate,” Mail Online, March 21, 2020, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-8138821/Virginia-Roberts-fled-Epstein-Ghislaine-Maxwell-asked-surrogate-baby.html.

149 Sravasti Dasgupta, “Accuser Says She Saw Photos of Ghislaine Maxwell Nude and Pregnant at Epstein’s Home,” *The Independent*, December 8, 2021, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/world/americas/crime/ghislaine-maxwell-pregnant-photo-epstein-b1971772.html.

150 “Conference on the New Economy Panelists,” *The White House*, April 5, 2000, https://clintonwhitehouse5.archives.gov/WH/New/html/20000405-b.html.

151 “Conference on the New Economy Panelists.”

152 Webb, “From ‘Spook Air’ to the ‘Lolita Express.’”

153 Robert Cyran, “SpaceX Is a Throwback to the 1990s,” *DealBook*, January 21, 2015, https://dealbook.nytimes.com/2015/01/21/spacex-is-a-throwback-to-the-1990s/.

154 Cyran, “SpaceX Is a Throwback.”

155 Steven Levy, “Bill Gates and President Bill Clinton on the NSA, Safe Sex, and American Exceptionalism,” *Wired*, November 12, 2013, https://www.wired.com/2013/11/bill-gates-bill-clinton-wired/.

156 https://www.huffpost.com/entry/exploding-philanthropy-wh_b_30381

157 Levy, “Bill Gates and President Bill Clinton.”

158 “Committed Grants,” *Bill & Melinda Gates Foundation*, https://www.gatesfoundation.org/about/committed-grants?q=clinton

159 “How We Work,” *Clinton Health Access Initiative*, https://www.clintonhealthaccess.org/how-we-work/.

160 “About Us,” *Clinton Health Access Initiative*, https://www.clintonhealthaccess.org/about-us/#history

161 Jack Crowe, “Epstein’s Lawyer Claimed the Alleged Pedophile Helped Devise the Clinton Global Initiative,” *Yahoo*, July 8, 2019, https://news.yahoo.com/epstein-lawyer-claimed-alleged-pe-dophile-223701676.html.

162 “Committed Grants,” *Bill & Melinda Gates Foundation*.

163 Nancy Gohring, “Bill Clinton Drops In at Microsoft to Say Thanks,” *PCWorld*, November 2, 2007, https://web.archive.org/web/20210125053227/https://www.pcworld.com/article/139219/article.html.

164 “Clinton Foundation And Gates Foundation Partner To Measure Global Progress For Women And Girls,” *Clinton Foundation*, February 13, 2014, https://web.archive.org/web/20161110141528/https://www.clintonfoundation.org/press-releases/clinton-foundation-and-gates-foundation-partner-measure-global-progress-women-and.

165 Emily Flitter and James B. Stewart, “Bill Gates Met With Jeffrey Epstein Many Times, Despite His Past,” *New York Times*, October 12, 2019, https://www.nytimes.com/2019/10/12/business/jeffrey-epstein-bill-gates.html.

166 Monica Nickelsburg, “Vice President Gates? WikiLeaks Emails Reveal Bill and Melinda Were on Hillary Clinton’s Short List,” *GeekWire*, October 18, 2016, https://www.geekwire.com/2016/vice-president-gates-wikileaks-emails-reveal-bill-melinda-hillary-clintons-short-list/.

167 Kate Briquelet and Pilar Melendez, “Bill Gates Praised Pedophile Jeffrey Epstein’s Lifestyle: ‘Kind of Intriguing,’” *The Daily Beast*, October 12, 2019, https://www.thedailybeast.com/bill-gates-praised-pedophile-jeffrey-epstein-kind-of-intriguing.

168 Kate Briquelet and Lachlan Cartwright, “Bill Gates Thought Jeffrey Epstein Was His Ticket to a Nobel Prize, Ex-Staffer Says,” *The Daily Beast*, May 18, 2021, https://www.thedailybeast.com/bill-gates-thought-jeffrey-epstein-was-his-ticket-to-a-nobel-ex-staffer-says.

169 Tore Gjerstad and Gard Oterholm, “Bill Gates and Jeffrey Epstein met with Nobel Committee chair,” *The Daily Beast*, October 2, 2020, https://www.dn.no/magasinet/dokumentar/jeffrey-epstein/thorbjorn-jagland/terje-rod-larsen/bill-gates-and-jeffrey-epstein-met-with-nobel-committee-chair/2-1-885834.

170 Kate Briquelet and Lachlan Cartwright, “Melinda Gates Warned Bill About Jeffrey Epstein,” *The Daily Beast*, May 7, 2021, https://www.thedailybeast.com/melinda-gates-warned-bill-gates-about-jeffrey-epstein.

171 “Man Arrested at Bill Gates’ Estate for Reportedly Trading Child Porn,” *KIRO 7 News Seattle*, December 31, 2015, https://www.kiro7.com/news/man-arrested-bill-gates-estate-reportedly-trading-/43531857/.

172 “Clinton Global Initiative,” *Clinton Foundation*, https://web.archive.org/web/20220805174405/https://www.clintonfoundation.org/programs/leadership-public-service/clinton-global-initiative/.

173 “Globalsolver Foundation, Blue World Alliance in Tarzana, California,” *NonProfitFacts.com*, https://web.archive.org/web/20210406032822/http://www.nonprofitfacts.com/CA/Globalsolver-Foundation.html.

174 Rudy Havenstein, Twitter post, April 10, 2021, https://web.archive.org/web/20210615032010/https://twitter.com/RudyHavenstein/status/1381015795011047427; “Xavier Malina’s Email & Phone Number,” *SignalHire*, https://web.archive.org/web/20210410231719/https://web.archive.org/web/20201002204816/https://www.signalhire.com/profiles/xavier-malina’s-email/53404874.

175 “Xavier Malina.”

176 “Alexander Djerassi,” *Carnegie Endowment for International Peace*, https://carnegieendowment.org/experts/1088.

177 “The Rockefeller Foundation Announces Inaugural Cohort of Fellows,” *The Rockefeller Foundation*, https://www.rockefellerfoundation.org/news/rockefeller-foundation-announces-inaugural-cohort-fellows/.

178 “Team,” *Andreessen Horowitz*, https://a16z.com/about/team/.

179 Kate Clark, “Former Israeli Prime Minister Helps Launch A16z-Backed Cyber Defense Startup,” *Pitchbook*, July 16, 2018, https://pitchbook.com/news/articles/former-israeli-prime-minister-helps-launch-a16z-backed-cyber-defense-startup.

180 “Melanie Walker,” *Speakerpedia*, https://speakerpedia.com/speakers/melanie-walker.

181 “The Rockefeller Foundation Announces Inaugural Cohort of Fellows,”; “Bill Gates Is Back in Business with BgC3,” *Geek.com*, December 4, 2019, https://web.archive.org/web/20191204112441/https://www.geek.com/news/bill-gates-is-back-in-business-with-bgc3-606971/; Caroline Waxler, “Bill Gates Starts Mysterious New Company Just In Time For Halloween,” *Business Insider*, October 22, 2008, https://www.businessinsider.com/2008/10/bill-gates-starts-mysterious-new-company-just-in-time-for-halloween.

182 Waxler, “Bill Gates Starts Mysterious New Company.”

183 Melanie Walker, “Healthcare in 2030: Goodbye Hospital, Hello Home-Spital,” *World Economic Forum*, November 11, 2016, https://www.weforum.org/agenda/2016/11/healthcare-in-2030-goodbye-hospital-hello-home-spital/.

184 Emma Nolan, “A Timeline of Bill Gates and Jeffrey Epstein’s Relationship,” *Newsweek*, May 10, 2021, https://www.newsweek.com/bill-gates-jeffrey-epstein-timeline-friendship-relationship-1590004.

185 Meghana Keshavan, “Science Advisor to Bill Gates Launches New Firm, Raising $150M Fund,” *MedCity News*, April 19, 2016, https://medcitynews.com/2016/04/biomatics-capital-partners-bill-gates/.

186 Briquelet and Cartwright, “Melinda Gates Warned Bill,”; Priscilla DeGregory, “Bill Gates’ Former Advisor Boris Nikolic Turns down Role as Executor of Jeffrey Epstein’s Estate,” *New York Post*, September 27, 2019, https://nypost.com/2019/09/27/bill-gates-former-advisor-boris-nikolic-turns-down-role-as-executor-of-jeffrey-epsteins-estate/.

187 “Transforming Health Care and Medicine, One Investment at a Time,” *Biomatics Capital*, https://biomaticscapital.com/.

188 “Portfolio,” *Biomatics Capital*, https://biomaticscapital.com/portfolio/; “About Us: Leadership,” QIHAN BIOTECH, https://www.qihanbio.com/about#leadership; “George M. Church - EGenesis Bio,” *eGenesis*, https://web.archive.org/web/20201201110141/https://www.egenesisbio.com/portfolio-item/george-m-church/; Elizabeth Cooney, “‘A Terrific Choice’: George Church Salutes Fellow CRISPR Pioneers’ Historic Nobel Win,” *STAT*, October 7, 2020, https://www.statnews.com/2020/10/07/a-terrific-choice-george-church-salutes-fellow-crispr-pioneers-historic-nobel-win/.

189 Yusuf Tuna, “Sequoia-Backed Qihan Biotech Raises 20 Million to Address China’s Organ Shortage,” *EqualOcean*, July 24, 2019, https://equalocean.com/news/2019072411437.

190 David Crow, “Bill Gates Joins $120m Fundraising for Editas Medicine Gene Start-Up,” *Financial Times*, August 10, 2015, https://www.ft.com/content/bd0f94ae-3f79-11e5-b98b-87c7270955cf.

191 DeGregory, “Bill Gates’ Former Advisor Boris Nikolic Turns down Role.”

John Poindexter

CHAPTER 21

FROM PROMIS TO PALANTIR: THE FUTURE OF BLACKMAIL

CARBYNE911

Carbyne911, formerly Reporty, is an Israeli tech-start-up founded in 2014 that promises to revolutionize how calls are handled by emergency service providers, as well as by governments, corporations, and educational institutions. Prior to Jeffrey Epstein's arrest in mid-2019, Carbyne had received high praise from US and Israeli media, with *Fox News* hailing the company's services as the answer to the "aging 911 systems" in the US and the *Jerusalem Post* writing that the company's platform offers "hi-tech protection to social workers and school principals" in the event of school shootings.[1] Other reports claimed that Carbyne's services result in "a 65% reduction in time-to-dispatch" for emergency services.[2]

Carbyne's call-handling/crisis management platform has already been implemented in several US counties and Latin American countries and the company now boasts offices in not only the US but also in Mexico, the UK, and Israel. Carbyne's expansion to more emergency service provider networks in the US is likely, given that federal legislation seeks to offer grants to upgrade 911 call centers throughout the country with the very technology of which Carbyne is the leading provider. One of the main lobby groups promoting this legislation, the National Emergency Number Association (NENA), has a "strong relationship" with Carbyne, according to Carbyne's website.[3]

Yet, what seemed like the inevitability of Carbyne's widespread adoption in the US hit a snag following the 2019 arrest and subsequent death of Jeffrey Epstein. After his first arrest and light sentence for soliciting sex from a minor in 2007, Epstein had been tapped by former Israeli Prime Minister and former head of Israeli military intelligence Ehud Barak to become a key financial backer of Carbyne.

As a result of increased scrutiny into Epstein's business activities and his ties to Israel, particularly to Barak, Epstein's connection to Carbyne was revealed and extensively reported on by the independent media outlet *Narativ*, whose exposé on Carbyne revealed not only some of the key intelligence connections of the start-up company but also how the architecture of Carbyne's product itself raises "serious privacy concerns."[4]

After media scrutiny of Carbyne in the wake of Epstein's death, its board and executive team were shaken up dramatically, with the apparent goal of obfuscating its intimate ties to Israel and Barak specifically. This is likely because the intelligence links of Carbyne's leadership at the time of Epstein's arrest and death, were considerable.[5] In addition to Barak – a former Israeli prime minister and former head of Israeli military intelligence – who was then serving as Carbyne's chairman, the company's executive team were mainly former members of Israeli intelligence, including the elite military intelligence group, Unit 8200. Also on the board at the time was Nicole Junkermann, whose ties to Epstein have been discussed in chapters 14 and 18.

Carbyne's founding and current CEO, Amir Elichai, served in Unit 8200 and had tapped former Unit 8200 commander and board member of AIPAC Pinchas Buchris to serve as the company's director and on its board.[6] In addition to Elichai, another Carbyne co-founder, Lital Leshem, also served in Unit 8200 and later worked for Israeli private spy company Black Cube. As previously mentioned in the last chapter, Black Cube is a known front for Israeli intelligence. The only Carbyne co-founder that didn't serve in Unit 8200 is Alex Dizengoff, who previously worked for the office of Israel's Prime Minister.[7]

Unit 8200 is an elite unit of the Israeli Intelligence corps that is part of the IDF's Directorate of Military Intelligence and is involved mainly in signal intelligence (i.e., surveillance), cyberwarfare, and code decryption. It is frequently described as the Israeli equivalent of the NSA, and Peter Roberts, senior research fellow at Britain's Royal United Services Institute, characterized the unit in an interview with the *Financial Times* as "probably the foremost technical intelligence agency in the world and stand[ing] on a par with the NSA in everything except scale."[8]

Notably, the NSA and Unit 8200 have collaborated on numerous projects, most infamously on the Stuxnet virus as well as the Duqu malware.[9] In addition, the NSA is known to work with veterans of Unit 8200 in the private sector, such as when the NSA hired two Israeli companies to create backdoors into all the major U.S. telecommunications systems and major tech companies, including Facebook, Microsoft, and Google.[10] Both of those companies, Verint and Narus, have top executives with ties to Israeli intelligence; one of those companies, Verint (formerly Comverse Infosys), has a history of aggressively spying on US government facilities and was previously discussed in chapter 14.[11] Unit 8200 is also known for spying on civilians in the occupied Palestinian territories for "coercion purposes" – i.e., gathering info for blackmail – and also for spying on Palestinian-Americans via an intelligence-sharing agreement with the NSA.[12]

Unlike many other Unit 8200-linked start-ups at the time, Carbyne also boasted ties at the time to the Trump administration, including Palantir founder and Trump ally Peter Thiel – another investor in Carbyne alongside Epstein and Barak.[13] Thiel's company Palantir, discussed later in this chapter, is a major contractor to US intelligence and law enforcement agencies in the US. In addition, Carbyne's board of advisers at the time included former Palantir employee Trae Stephens, who was a member of the Trump transition team, as well as former Secretary of Homeland Security Michael Chertoff.[14] Trump donor and New York real estate developer Eliot Tawill was also on Carbyne's board, alongside Ehud Barak, Nicole Junkermann, and Pinchas Buchris.[15] After the personnel shake-up, its board of advisers now includes former Secretary of Homeland Security under Trump, Kirstjen Nielsen.[16]

Privacy concerns with Carbyne go beyond the company's ties to Israeli intelligence and US intelligence contractors like Peter Thiel's Palantir. For instance, Carbyne's smartphone app extracts the following information from the phones on which it is installed:

> Device location, video live-streamed from the smartphone to the call center, text messages in a two-way chat window, any data from a user's phone if they have the Carbyne app and ESInet, and any information that comes over a data link, which Carbyne opens in case the caller's voice link drops out.[17]

According to Carbyne's website, this same information can also be obtained from any smartphone, even if it does not have Carbyne's app installed, if that phone calls a 911 call center that uses Carbyne or merely any other number connected to Carbyne's network.

Carbyne is a Next-Generation 9-11 (NG911) platform and the explicit goal of NG911 is for all 911 systems nationwide to become interconnected. Thus, even if Carbyne is not used by all 911 call centers using an NG911 platform, Carbyne will ostensibly have access to the data used by all emergency service providers and devices connected to those networks. This guiding principle of NG911 also makes it likely that one platform will be favored at the federal level to foster such interconnectivity and, given that it has already been adopted by several counties and has ties to influential former US government officials, Carbyne is a logical choice.

Another cause for concern is how other countries have used platforms like Carbyne, which were first marketed as emergency response tools, for the purpose of mass surveillance. *Narativ* noted the following in its investigation of Carbyne:

> In May, Human Rights Watch revealed Chinese authorities use a platform not unlike Carbyne to illegally surveil Uyghurs. China's Integrated Joint Operations Platform brings in a much bigger data-set and sources of video, which includes an app on people's phones. Like Carbyne, the platform was designed to report emergencies. Chinese authorities have turned it into a tool of mass surveillance.[18]

Human Rights Watch reverse-engineered the app and discovered that the app automatically profiles a user under 36 "person types" including "followers of Six Lines" which is the term used to identify Uyghurs. Another term refers to "Hajj," the annual Islamic pilgrimage to Mecca. The app monitors every aspect of a user's life, including personal conversations, power usage, and tracks a user's movement.[19] Such technology is currently used by Israeli military intelligence and Israel's domestic intelligence agency Shin Bet to justify "pre-crime" detentions of Palestinians in the occupied West Bank.

Carbyne's platform has its own "pre-crime" elements, such as its c-Records component, which stores and analyzes information on past calls and events that pass through its network. This information "enables decision makers to accurately analyze the past and present behavior of their callers, react accordingly, and in time predict future patterns."[20] Notably, pre-crime, i.e. "predictive policing," has long been a key focus of Palantir, the company co-founded and closely tied to Peter Thiel, whose Founders Fund helped finance Carbyne.[21]

PROMIS, PALANTIR, AND PRE-CRIME

In general terms, Palantir was created to be the privatized panopticon of the national-security state, the newest rebranding of the big data approach of intelligence agencies to surveilling both foreign and domestic populations. The latter in particular has long been a key objective of US intelligence, having been pioneered by the CIA as far back as the Vietnam War.[22] It was later covertly turned against the bulk of the US population by both US and Israel intelligence during the Iran-Contra and PROMIS software scandals of the 1980s, though efforts to use these big data approaches to target domestic protests and specific social movements had been ongoing for years.

The panopticon was originally an English philosopher's concept for a new, revolutionary prison design, but the idea was more fully developed by the French philosopher Michel Foucault. Foucault, in his book *Discipline and Punish,* noted that: "*The major effect of the panopticon is to induce in the inmate a state of consciousness and permanent visibility that assures the automatic functioning of power." Said differently, the uncertainty that one may be under surveillance at any time and for any reason induces obedience in that individual, allowing a small number of people to control the masses.*[23]It is perhaps unsurprising that, for a 2020 profile on Palantir in the *New York Times,* the company's co-founder and CEO Alex Karp chose to pose with three Palantir employees under a large portrait of Foucault.[24]

As previously detailed in chapter 9, in the 1980s, individuals at the heart of the Iran-Contra scandal began to develop a database called Main Core, which firmly placed the US national security state on its current, tech-fueled Foucauldian path.[25] A senior government official with a high-ranking security clearance and service in five presidential administrations told *Radar* in 2008 that Main Core was "a database of Americans, who, often for the slightest and most trivial reason, are considered unfriendly, and who, in a time of panic might be incarcerated. The database can identify and locate perceived 'enemies of the state' almost instantaneously."[26] It was expressly developed for use in "continuity of government" (COG) protocols by figures like Oliver North and was used to compile a list of US dissidents and "potential troublemakers" to be dealt with if the continuity of government protocol was ever invoked.

Main Core utilized PROMIS software, which was stolen from its owners at Inslaw Inc. by top Reagan and US intelligence officials as well as Israeli spymaster Rafi Eitan.[27] Also intimately involved in the PROMIS scandal was media baron and Israeli "super spy" Robert Maxwell.[28] Like PROMIS, Main Core involved both US and Israeli intelligence and was a big data approach to the surveillance of perceived domestic dissidents.[29]

Meanwhile, Main Core persisted and continued to amass data. That data could not be fully tapped into and utilized by the intelligence community until after the events of September 11, 2001, which offered a golden opportunity for the use of such tools against the domestic US population, all under the guise of combating "terrorism." For example, in the immediate aftermath of 9/11, government officials reportedly saw Main Core being accessed by White House computers.

September 11 was also used as an excuse to remove information "firewalls" within the national security state, expanding "information sharing" among agency databases and, by extension, also expanding the amount of data that could be accessed and analyzed by Main Core and its analogues.

As Alan Wade, then serving as the CIA's chief information officer, pointed out soon after 9/11:

> One of the post-September 11 themes is collaboration and information sharing. We're looking at tools that facilitate communication in ways that we don't have today.[30]

In an attempt to build on these two post-9/11 objectives simultaneously, the US national security state attempted to institute a "public-private" surveillance program so invasive that Congress defunded it just months after its creation due to concerns it would completely eliminate the right to privacy in the US. Called Total Information Awareness (TIA), the program sought to develop an "all-seeing" surveillance apparatus managed by the Pentagon's DARPA.[31] The official agreement was that invasive surveillance of the entire US population was necessary to prevent terrorist attacks, bioterrorism events, and even naturally occurring disease outbreaks before they could take place.

The architect of TIA, and the man who led it during its relatively brief existence, was John Poindexter, best known for being Reagan's National Security Advisor during Iran-Contra and being convicted of five felonies in relation to that scandal.[32] Poindexter, during the Iran-Contra hearings, had famously claimed that it was his duty to withhold information from Congress.[33]

One of Poindexter's key allies at the time as it related to TIA was the chief information officer of the CIA, Alan Wade.[34] Wade met with Poindexter in relation to TIA numerous times and managed the participation of not just the CIA but all US intelligence agencies that had signed on to add their data as "nodes" to TIA in exchange for gaining access to its tools.

The TIA program, despite the best efforts of Poindexter and his allies such as Wade, was eventually forced to shut down after considerable criticism and public outrage. For instance, the American Civil Liberties Union claimed that the surveillance effort would "kill privacy in America" because "every aspect of our lives would be catalogued," while several mainstream media outlets warned that TIA was "fighting terror by terrifying US citizens."[35] Though the program was defunded, it later emerged that TIA was never *actually* shut down, with its various programs having been covertly divided among the web of military and intelligence agencies that make up the US national security state.[36] While some of those TIA programs went underground, the core panopticon software that TIA had hoped to wield began to be developed by the very company now known as Palantir, with considerable help from the CIA and Alan Wade, as well as Poindexter.

At the time it was formally launched in February 2003, the TIA program was immediately controversial, leading it to change its name in May 2003 to Terrorism Information Awareness in an apparent attempt to sound less like an all-encompassing domestic surveillance system and more like a tool specifically aimed at "terrorists." Nevertheless, the TIA program was shuttered by the end of 2003.

The same month as the TIA name change and amid the growing backlash against the program, Peter Thiel incorporated Palantir.[37] Thiel, however, had begun creating the software behind Palantir months in advance, though he claims he can't recall exactly when. Thiel, Karp, and other Palantir co-founders claimed for years that the company had been founded in 2004, despite the paperwork of Palantir's incorporation by Thiel directly contradicting this claim.[38]

Also, in 2003, apparently soon after Thiel formally created Palantir, none other than Richard Perle called Poindexter, saying that he wanted to introduce the architect of TIA to two Silicon Valley entrepreneurs, Peter Thiel and Alex Karp. According to a report in *New York Magazine*, Poindexter was told by Perle that he "was precisely the person" who Thiel and Karp wanted to meet, mainly because "their new company was similar in ambition to what Poindexter had tried to create at the Pentagon," that is, TIA.[39] During that meeting, Thiel and Karp sought "to pick the brain of the man now widely viewed as the godfather of modern surveillance." Perle's roles at Hollinger International, ties to Israeli espionage scandals and his lobbying on behalf of Bernard Schwartz's Loral were discussed in chapters 14 and 17.

Soon after its incorporation, though the exact timing and details of the investment remain hidden from the public, the CIA's In-Q-Tel became Palantir's first backer, aside from Thiel himself, who invested an estimated $2 million in the company.[40] In-Q-Tel's stake in Palantir would not be publicly reported until mid-2006.[41]

Though the influx of cash was certainly useful, Palantir's CEO Alex Karp later told the *New York Times* that "the real value of the In-Q-Tel investment was that it gave Palantir access to the CIA analysts who were its intended clients."[42] A key figure in the making of In-Q-Tel investments during this period, including Palantir, was the CIA's chief information officer at the time, Alan Wade.[43]

After the In-Q-Tel investment, the CIA would be Palantir's only client until 2008. During that period, Palantir's two top engineers – Aki Jain and Stephen Cohen—traveled to CIA headquarters at Langley, Virginia every two weeks.[44] Jain recalls making at least two hundred trips to CIA headquarters between 2005 and 2009. During those regular visits, CIA analysts "would test [Palantir's software] out and offer feedback, and then Cohen and Jain would fly back to California to tweak it." As with In-Q-Tel's decision to invest in Palantir, the CIA's chief information officer at the time, Alan Wade, played a key role in many of these meetings and subsequently in the "tweaking" of Palantir's products.

It should come as no surprise, then, that there is a clear overlap between Palantir's products and the vision that Wade and Poindexter had held for the failed TIA program. One can see the obvious parallels between Palantir and TIA by examining how the masterminds behind each describe their key functions.

Take, for instance, the following excerpt from Shane Harris' book *The Watchers: The Rise of America's Surveillance State* regarding Wade's and Poindexter's views of TIA's "built-in privacy protections":

> Wade liked the idea, but he heard something even more intriguing in Poindexter's pitch, a concept that he hadn't heard in any of the tech briefings he'd sat through since 9/11: the words

> "protect privacy." Wade thought that Poindexter's was the first ambitious information architecture that included privacy from the ground up.
>
> He described his privacy appliance concept, in which a physical device would set between the use and the data, shielding the names and other identifying information of the millions of innocent people in the noise. The TIA system would employ "selective revelation," Poindexter explained. The farther into the data a user wished to probe, the more outside authority he had to obtain.[45]

Compare TIA's "selective revelation" sales pitch with that more recently offered by Karp and Thiel to the *New York Times* about Palantir's own supposed privacy safeguards:

> Karp and Thiel say they had two overarching ambitions for Palantir early on. The first was to make software that could help keep the country safe from terrorism. The second was to prove that there was a technological solution to the challenge of balancing public safety and civil liberties – a "Hegelian" aspiration, as Karp puts it. Although political opposites, they both feared that personal privacy would be a casualty of the war on terrorism…
>
> To that end, Palantir's software was created with two primary security features: Users are able to access only information they are authorized to view, and the software generates an audit trail that, among other things, indicates if someone has tried to obtain material off-limits to them.[46]

The explanation offered by Poindexter and Wade for TIA and the explanation presented by Karp and Thiel for Palantir are essentially analogous. Similarly, Palantir's "immutable log" concept, whereby "everything a user does in Palantir creates a trail that can be audited," was also a hallmark of the TIA system envisioned by Poindexter and Wade.[47]

As noted in *The Watchers*:

> Poindexter also proposed "an immutable audit trail," a master record of every analyst who had used the TIA system, what data they'd touched, what they'd done with it. The system would be trained to spot suspicious patterns of use.… Poindexter wanted to use TIA to watch the watchers. The CIA team [including Alan Wade] liked what they heard.[48]

The benefits in repurposing the "public-private" TIA into a completely private entity after TIA was publicly dismantled are obvious. For instance, given that Palantir is a private company as opposed to a government program, the way its software is used by its government and corporate clients benefits from "plausible deniability" and frees Palantir from constraints that would be present if it were instead a project tied to the military or public sector.

As noted in an October 2020 profile on the company in the *New York Times:*

The data, which is stored in various cloud services or on clients' premises, is controlled by the customer, and Palantir says it does not police the use of its products. Nor are the privacy controls foolproof; it is up to the customers to decide who gets to see what and how vigilant they wish to be.[49]

CHRISTINE MAXWELL'S CHILIAD

While Wade was involved in operating the information technology infrastructure of US intelligence and in guiding the rise of Palantir, he was also intimately involved with another company known as Chiliad. Chiliad was a data analytics company founded in the late 1990s by Paul McOwen, Robert Maxwell's daughter Christine Maxwell, and an unnamed third individual.[50] However, sources such as *Bloomberg* lists Alan Wade as the "mysterious" third co-founder of Chiliad, meaning that Wade, as the third co-founder, was involved in creating Chiliad while also serving in a top post at the CIA.[51] The company was founded with "$3 million in angel investment" of unknown origin.[52]

This is significant for two main reasons. First, Chiliad was developed to be the very tool that would be sought by US intelligence in the immediate aftermath of September 11, an event that notably took place shortly after Wade became the CIA's chief information officer.[53] The company had conveniently been set up well in advance, allowing it to score key contracts with the US government, including the FBI, thanks to the advanced stage of its product as well as its founders's intelligence connections. This, along with a glowing recommendation from the 9/11 Commission, benefited Chiliad's software, which was remarkably similar to the PROMIS software and early versions of Palantir.[54]

Due to ongoing litigation in the PROMIS case, efforts were made by the US national security state to retool and tweak the PROMIS software sufficiently so that they could argue that the software then in use had become dissimilar to the original stolen product, according to the original PROMIS developer, Bill Hamilton of Inslaw Inc. To avoid further litigation with Inslaw, the authors of the theft of PROMIS, and other beneficiaries of that theft, likely saw a need to create analogous software, likely by further developing already modified versions of PROMIS, that appeared to have different origins.

Second, Wade, who was employed by the CIA at the time of Chiliad's founding, created the company with Christine Maxwell, sister of Ghislaine Maxwell and daughter of Robert Maxwell. As noted in chapter 9, Christine was intimately involved in and ended up leading the US-based front company that Robert Maxwell had used to sell versions of PROMIS that seriously compromised US national security.[55] Her subsequent effort, through the McKinley Group, was an effort that involved several of her siblings (Isabel, Kevin and Ghislaine) and was aimed at "rebuilding" their father's legacy. As was also noted in chapter 9, US intelligence, Israeli intelligence and figures tied to organized crime were all intimately involved in the PROMIS software scandal. Thus, the involvement of both Wade and Maxwell in creating Chiliad and the overlap between the PROMIS software and Chiliad's software, suggests Chiliad was a successor to PROMIS produced by this same network.

In addition, Wade's role in the rise of Palantir suggests that Palantir may be another successor to PROMIS, a possibility explored in greater detail in my past reporting at *MintPress News*.[56] Maxwell's involvement with the company suggests that Chiliad could also have carried a back door, much like the original PROMIS, to give foreign intelligence agencies or other groups covert access to the electronic infrastructure of the FBI and US intelligence community.

Other notable and relevant aspects, in terms of the Maxwell connection to Chiliad include a key source of its early funding. According to reports, among Chiliad's three early investors was Allied Commercial Exporters Ltd., which is based in London. Company records show that the company is part of the business empire of British real estate mogul, Jack Dellal.[57] As previously noted in chapter 4, Dellal was a member of the Clermont Club, whose early members included either individuals tied to the Profumo Affair or subsequent business associates of Robert Maxwell, such as James Goldsmith and Roland Walter "Tiny" Rowland.

Dellal was a noted gambler and a rather infamous banker who is alleged to have played a role in the collapse of Keyser Ullman due to fraudulent loans, many of which were tied to real estate markets and some of which were used to finance the foundations of Dellal's subsequent real estate empire.[58] Keyser Ullman, prior to its collapse, was also intimately linked to the main business concern of Tiny Rowland, Lonrho (see chapter 6).

Another key source of funding for Chiliad was Hewlett-Packard. Hewlett-Packard has long had a very close relationship with US intelligence, which expanded dramatically in 2001 under the leadership of its then-CEO Carly Fiorina.[59]

Notably, Palantir began its rise to prominence as the go-to counterterrorism software of the West, just as Chiliad began to pivot away from that sector. Chiliad eventually folded a few years later. Notably, in the years prior to its shutdown, Chiliad had begun moving into health-care data, a pivot that became very obvious by 2012, when it began adding prominent health-care industry executives to its company board and getting involved in aiding “medical research.”[60]

Not long after Chiliad was shut down, Wade, who had also been the chairman of its board for many years, was added to the board of a UK cybersecurity firm called Darktrace.[61] Darktrace is the result of the joining of UK intelligence with a team of AI researchers at Cambridge who were seeking to develop the AI “singularity.”[62] This attempt at “self-aware” AI was subsequently developed into “cybersecurity” software under the watchful eye and direction of UK intelligence. Darktrace’s intelligence-linked software now runs not only a large swath of the UK power grid and the computers of major corporations around the world but also cybersecurity for the UK’s National Health Service (NHS), giving it access to masses of patient-health data.

Not long after Darktrace’s foray into healthcare began, Palantir made its own pivot into healthcare, both for the NHS in the UK and the Department of Health and Human Services (HHS) in the US. The latter partnership has expanded considerably during the Covid-19 crisis, from the HHS Protect database to contact tracing to Operation Warp Speed. Palantir’s expansion into nearly every sector of government is set to continue, particularly with president Biden’s appointed leader of the US intelligence community—Avril Haines, who was a consultant to Palantir right up until she joined Biden’s 2020 campaign as an adviser.[63]

Notably, Palantir’s expansion into the NHS was facilitated in part by the NHS Healthtech Advisory Board, which was created in 2018 to advise the UK’s then-Health and Social Care Secretary Matt Hancock. On that board was a familiar face, Nicole Junkermann. One of the other board members, and its alleged architect, is a military and intelligence-linked figure named Daniel Korski.[64] The same year the Healthtech Advisory Board was created, Korski co-founded the Govtech Summit, which has heavily promoted the products of Carbyne911 and related companies.

That these very networks would converge around valuable stores of personal health data is no accident, as the intelligence-linked Epstein was also seeking to move into this space. Around the same time he sought to rebrand as a tech investor, Epstein was also working to build up a company focused around “DNA data-mining.” Created in 2012, Southern Trust was a “start-up” created by Epstein with the apparent goal of sequencing people’s genomes and selling that data to the pharmaceutical industry.[65] Per reports, Southern Trust sought to create a "search engine capable of pinpointing genetic links to diseases."[66]

Epstein claimed that "what Southern Trust will do will be basically organizing mathematical algorithms so that if I want to know what my predisposition is for cancer we can now have my genes specifically sequenced."[67] Epstein was reportedly working with at least one US scientist on the project who was affiliated with Harvard, though their identity remains unknown.[68] As previously mentioned, Epstein had funded the work of several prominent scientists and Epstein likely had recruited one of them to the project. Of the scientists Epstein funded, Harvard's Martin Nowak fits the description of the scientist that Epstein gave in testimony. Epstein had previously donated $6.5 million in 2003 to Harvard's Program for Evolutionary Dynamics, which Nowak led.[69] In 2012, the year Southern Trust was created, Nowak had developed mathematical models that described the behavior of colon cancer cells.[70]

Southern Trust specifically sought to gather DNA from residents of the US Virgin Islands, where Southern Trust was based. This DNA collection would then be used to "create a catalog of population-level genetics data." Then, Southern Trust's team would develop a search engine to assess that data for links to diseases that Epstein once called a "biomedical Google."[71] The company then planned to create a "virtual laboratory" to conduct experiments via computer models as well as to produce "computer generated solutions for medical problems."[72]

The company also, oddly, planned to amass data for its proprietary search engine that would allow it "to search things on an individual basis both in the medical field and the financial field." Southern Trust was also described as planning to provide "cutting edge consulting services to companies around the world lying in part upon the use of biomedical and financial information."[73] Was Southern Trust seeking to correlate people's genetic data with their financial data?

Epstein also said of his vision for the company that "I would like to have young people – I'm a teacher by heart – engaged early on" in his project.[74] Epstein also spoke at length in testimony saying that he wanted to train young people to program and develop his company's algorithms, training them in the Virgin Islands. He also implied that he would one day would be able to tailor educational programs for those young people based on their sequenced genome.[75]

Despite being a sex offender and having suffered a financial decline due to his past controversies the 2008 financial crash, Epstein's Southern Trust netted him

$200 million in a few short years and was a key part of what the *New York Times* described as Epstein's "financial rebound."[76]

THE FUTURE OF BLACKMAIL

In 2012, Epstein seemed to know something that those guiding other, more prominent "data mining" firms like Chiliad and Palantir also knew – that, soon, data would become the world's most valuable commodity. This would become a common public talking point in the years that followed. For instance, in 2017, *The Economist* declared that the world's most valuable resource was no longer oil, but data. Referring to data as "the oil of the digital era," it notes that this new "data economy" runs on masses of data generated by billions of devices as well as algorithms, particularly Artificial Intelligence algorithms. It also notes that the "data economy" is intimately linked to Big Tech's "surveillance systems," which gives these powerful companies a "God's eye view" of both markets and citizen behavior.[77]

Epstein's decision to court and gather "dirt" on Big Tech scions, while also rebranding as a tech investor and entrepreneur, was carefully calculated. Indeed, he and the Maxwells were intimately aware of how the digital revolution was drastically reshaping the face of blackmail and influence operations. Arguably beginning with the PROMIS software scandal, which intimately involved the Maxwells, the utility of bugged software to intelligence agencies quickly became obvious. With a few lines of surreptitious code, intelligence agencies could gain access to troves of sensitive data in real-time, which previously would have required scores of highly embedded and sophisticated spies. Yet, those spies could be caught if just one in their network slipped up. However, with a few lines hidden among thousands and thousands lines of code, a software program's "treachery" is much more difficult to detect.

By the time computers and mobile phones began to become increasingly commonplace, the more communication that took place in the digital world. People, including powerful businessmen and politicians, began conducting much of their most sensitive communications, both personally and professionally, on electronic devices. Leaks from Hillary Clinton's email server and, more recently, Hunter Biden's laptop, are important reminders of this. The more dependent people became on digital platforms and software, the more that their data could reveal about their preferences (whether "normal", embarrassing or abnormal) and their activities (whether legal or criminal).

While Jeffrey Epstein and Ghislaine Maxwell, throughout the 1990s and beyond, blackmailed powerful people using trafficked women and girls, the digital revolution offered them, and their benefactors, a new opportunity to fulfill the same operational goals, but with much less risk. For example, if a Congressman's phone or computer logs attempts to access pornography websites, one needs only obtain the electronic proof of those searches or website visits to blackmail that Congressman. There is no longer a need to spend significant sums of money on maintaining remote locations with pinhole cameras or on maintaining a harem of trafficked women and girls. Instead one only needs to gain access to the data on the person they are targeting in order to find their darkest and most damaging secrets.

Some of Epstein's own interest in technology appears to have been informed by his obsessions with genetics and eugenics, as well as his interest in the merging of man and technology (i.e. transhumanism).[78] However, it appears that his targeting of top leaders of Big Tech, via Edge and other means beginning in the late 1990s and early 2000s, was based on a belief that, if he could exert influence over those who controlled Big Tech (influence which he claimed to have due to his knowledge of their sexual proclivities), he could gain privileged access to the masses of data they harvest and control. Given the intersections of Epstein and the Maxwell to the tech sector over the years, and how their involvement with Big Tech grew precipitously after Epstein's sex trafficking operation first came under scrutiny and fell apart, it appears that Epstein and Maxwell moved away from sexual forms of blackmail to electronic forms of blackmail, from sex trafficking to data trafficking.

While this shift may have provided new opportunities for Epstein and Maxwell, it also made them irrelevant. If software can be exploited to extract and compile secrets and artificial intelligence can then analyze that information, then human operators of previous varieties of blackmail schemes become increasingly unnecessary. In a world where blackmail is overwhelmingly electronic, people like Jeffrey Epstein and Ghislaine Maxwell become liabilities to be silenced, rather than assets to protect.

Another critical consequence of the advent of electronic blackmail is that the very same systems that enable that blackmail to occur are intimately enmeshed with the infrastructure of mass surveillance. This is the core idea behind the panopticon model. As noted earlier in this chapter, if an individual is under the impression that they may be being watched at any given time for any given reason, the perpetual possibility of surveillance induces obedience. Such a model allows for the masses to be controlled much more easily. The ultimate goal of blackmail is also control, albeit of a different variety. Yet, with mass surveillance and the ability to harvest the digitally logged secrets of anyone with a digital profile, this allows forms of control, like blackmail, to be used on a mass scale.

No longer must intelligence assets develop and execute sophisticated operations to obtain damaging information on a person – that information now likely lies in their digital footprint. This is not just true for men and women of power and influence – today it is true for most of us in our increasingly digital world. In order to obtain damaging information on a person of interest, intelligence agencies and their allies in the corporate world or the world of organized crime, only need to search for that person in the right database. In a matter of seconds, your secrets are in their hands.

While the United States has long been "one nation under blackmail," the perpetuation of this system and means of control is rapidly reaching its logical conclusion. Before, public officials, politicians and others of power and influence were targeted with blackmail. Now, blackmail is more readily accessible and more easily obtained on any American than ever before in history. We now live in a reality where our communications are monitored and stored, where many willingly surround themselves with audio and video recording devices that intelligence agencies have known access to.[79]

The more we live our lives on our phones and our computers, the more we can be exploited if and when certain groups and networks with access to our data decide that they want something from us. Yet, now that these corrupt power structures have grown so accustomed to our digital dependence, we now have the chance to disrupt the empire that they have built on a foundation of blackmail, bribes and bullets. By taking ownership of our data, and depriving intelligence-linked Big Tech their monopoly of control over it, we can start to rupture a system that would enslave us if allowed to advance. Main Core, Total Information Awareness and other such systems have never gone away and lie in wait, waiting to be weaponized against the civilian populace if and when demands for change become too great.

The power structures explored in this book represent generational networks of criminal activity. Those networks have only continued to grow and accumulate power through their corruption of institutions, including the government and the media. Also key to their success has been our compliance. However, our compliance is born out of the belief that our institutions are not corrupt or, at least, not *that* corrupt.

When one realizes where power really lies and how it really functions, it becomes clear that the only way to deter a corrupt system of this magnitude, which has now merged public and private power into the hands of a very small few, is not to comply. The government is no longer capable of investigating itself and our institutions have long been too compromised to guarantee American well-being or the American way of life. Instead quite the opposite has taken place. The US, after being used by these networks to loot countries around the world, has itself been looted and hung out to dry to benefit families and groups who trace their origins back to when organized crime first merged with intelligence.

Upon realizing the reality of the situation, as this book has endeavored to show, non-compliance is a must when facing a system that, among other crimes, is willing to enable and engage in the unconscionable exploitation and abuse of children to further its stranglehold over the country, and ultimately over us.

Endnotes

1 Emilie Ikeda, "'Aging' 911 Systems Slowly Begin to See Video and Text Upgrades," *Fox News*, December 20, 2018, https://www.foxnews.com/tech/aging-9-1-1-systems-begin-to-see-video-and-text-upgrades-nationwide; Eytan Halon, "Jerusalem Looks to Hi-Tech to Protect Social Workers, Teachers," February 5, 2019, https://www.jpost.com/Jpost-Tech/Jerusalem-looks-to-hi-tech-to-protect-social-workers-teachers-579737.

2 "Carbyne Partners With Global Hitss, an América Móvil Company, to Bring Next-Gen Emergency Response Technology to Latin America," *PR Newswire*, October 24, 2018, https://www.prnewswire.com/news-releases/carbyne-partners-with-global-hitss-an-américa-móvil-company-to-bring-next-gen-emergency-response-technology-to-latin-america-851182270.html.

3 "I3 Compliant," Carbyne, https://unlimitedhangout.com/wp-content/uploads/2022/07/http-carbyne911.comi3-compliant-scaled.jpg.

4 Zev Shalev and Tracie McElroy, "Jeffrey Epstein: Building Big Brother," *Narativ*, July 27, 2019, https://narativ.org/2019/07/27/building-big-brother/.

5 "Our Team - Carbyne," *Carbyne*, https://web.archive.org/web/20190901003641/https://carbyne911.com/team/.

6 Shalev and McElroy, "Building Big Brother,"; "Pinchas Buchris," *Carbyne*, https://web.archive.org/web/20190912132020/https://carbyne911.com/team/pinchas-buchris/.

7 "Our Team – Carbyne."

8 John Reed, "Unit 8200: Israel's Cyber Spy Agency," *Financial Times*, July 10, 2015, https://www.ft.com/content/69f150da-25b8-11e5-bd83-71cb60e8f08c.

9 "NSA, Israel Created Stuxnet Worm Together to Attack Iran, Says Snowden," *South China Morning Post*, July 9, 2013, https://www.scmp.com/news/world/article/1278286/nsa-israel-created-stuxnet-worm-together-attack-iran-says-snowden.

10 James Bamford, "Shady Companies With Ties to Israel Wiretap the U.S. for the NSA," *Wired*, April 3, 2012, https://www.wired.com/2012/04/shady-companies-nsa/.

11 Whitney Webb, "The Genesis and Evolution of the Jeffrey Epstein, Bill Clinton Relationship," *MintPress News*, August 23, 2019, https://www.mintpressnews.com/genesis-jeffrey-epstein-bill-clinton-relationship/261455/.

12 Staff, "Snowden Reveal Makes Israeli Spies' Protest An American Issue," *NPR*, September 21, 2014, https://www.npr.org/sections/thetwo-way/2014/09/21/350274814/snowden-reveal-makes-israeli-spies-protest-an-american-issue.

13 Shalev and McElroy, "Building Big Brother."

14 "Our Team – Carbyne."

15 Rich Bockmann, "NYC Real Estate Players Are Wasting No Time Backing Trump's 2020 Run," *The Real Deal New York*, April 17, 2017, https://therealdeal.com/2017/04/17/nyc-real-estate-players-are-wasting-no-time-backing-trumps-2020-run/.

16 "Management Team," *Carbyne*, https://carbyne.com/en/management-team/.

17 Andrew Westrope, "Carbyne-Cisco Partnership Means IoT Data for 911 Dispatch," *Gov-Tech*, April 10, 2019, https://www.govtech.com/biz/Carbyne-Cisco-Partnership-Means-IoT-Data-for-911-Dispatch.html.

18 Shalev and McElroy, “Building Big Brother.”

19 Shalev and McElroy, “Building Big Brother.”

20 “C-Records,” *Carbyne*, https://web.archive.org/web/20181223030635/https://carbyne911.com/c-records/.

21 Ali Winston, “Palantir Has Secretly Been Using New Orleans to Test Its Predictive Policing Technology,” *The Verge*, February 27, 2018, https://www.theverge.com/2018/2/27/17054740/palantir-predictive-policing-tool-new-orleans-nopd.

22 For more on this topic, see: Douglas Valentine, *The Phoenix Program*, 1st ed (New York: Morrow, 1990); Yasha Levine, *Surveillance Valley: The Secret Military History of the Internet* (New York: PublicAffairs, 2018).

23 Johnny Vedmore, “Daniel Korski: The Intelligence-Linked Mastermind Behind the UK’s Orwellian Healthtech Advisory Board,” *Unlimited Hangout*, October 1, 2020, https://unlimitedhangout.com/2020/10/investigative-reports/korski/.

24 Michael Steinberger, “Does Palantir See Too Much?,” *New York Times*, October 21, 2020, https://www.nytimes.com/interactive/2020/10/21/magazine/palantir-alex-karp.html.

25 Whitney Webb, “The CIA, Mossad and “Epstein Network” Are Exploiting Mass Shootings,” *MintPress News*, September 6, 2019, https://www.mintpressnews.com/cia-israel-mossad-jeffrey-epstein-orwellian-nightmare/261692/.

26 Christopher Ketcham, “THE LAST ROUNDUP: Is the Government Compiling e List of Citizens to Detain under Martial Law?,” *Radar Online*, May/June 2008, https://web.archive.org/web/20090129230746/http://radaronline.com:80/from-the-magazine/2008/05/government_surveillance_homeland_security_main_core_01-print.php.

27 Webb, “The CIA, Mossad and “Epstein Network” Are Exploiting Mass Shootings.”

28 Whitney Webb, “The Maxwell Family Business - Investigative Series,” *Unlimited Hangout*, 2020, https://unlimitedhangout.com/the-maxwell-family-business/.

29 Webb, “The CIA, Mossad and “Epstein Network” Are Exploiting Mass Shootings.”

30 Justin Hibbard, “[ISN] Mission Possible,” *InfoSec News*, January 18, 2002, http://lists.jammed.com/ISN/2002/01/0069.html.

31 “Q&A on the Pentagon’s ‘Total Information Awareness’ Program,” *American Civil Liberties Union*, https://www.aclu.org/other/qa-pentagons-total-information-awareness-program.

32 “Q&A on the Pentagon’s ‘Total Information Awareness’ Program,”; David Johnston, “Poindexter Is Found Guilty of All 5 Criminal Charges for Iran-Contra Cover-Up,” *New York Times*, April 8, 1990, https://www.nytimes.com/1990/04/08/us/poindexter-is-found-guilty-of-all-5-criminal-charges-for-iran-contra-cover-up.html.

33 “Q&A on the Pentagon’s ‘Total Information Awareness’ Program.”

34 Shane Harris, *The Watchers: The Rise of America’s Surveillance State* (New York: Penguin Press, 2010), 189, https://archive.org/details/watchersriseofam00harr/.

35 “Q&A on the Pentagon’s ‘Total Information Awareness’ Program,”; Rob Morse, “Fighting Terror by Terrifying U.S. Citizens,” *SFGATE*, November 20, 2002, https://www.sfgate.com/news/article/Fighting-terror-by-terrifying-U-S-citizens-2752084.php.

36 Mark Williams Pontin, “The Total Information Awareness Project Lives On,” *MIT Technology Review*, April 26, 2006, https://www.technologyreview.com/2006/04/26/229286/the-total-

information-awareness-project-lives-on/.

37 “A (Pretty) Complete History of Palantir,” *Maus Strategic Consulting*, May 16, 2014, https://web.archive.org/web/20140516035733/http:/www.mausstrategicconsulting.com/1/post/2014/04/a-pretty-complete-history-of-palantir.html.

38 Andy Greenberg, “How A ‘Deviant’ Philosopher Built Palantir, A CIA-Funded Data-Mining Juggernaut,” *Forbes*, August 14, 2013, https://www.forbes.com/sites/andygreenberg/2013/08/14/agent-of-intelligence-how-a-deviant-philosopher-built-palantir-a-cia-funded-data-mining-juggernaut/.

39 Sharon Weinberger, “Is Palantir’s Crystal Ball Just Smoke and Mirrors?,” *Intelligencer*, September 28, 2020, https://nymag.com/intelligencer/2020/09/inside-palantir-technologies-peter-thiel-alex-karp.html.

40 Vaibhavi Khanwalkar, “Before Secretive Palantir Went Public, AOC Warned SEC Of ‘Material Risks’ To Investors,” *International Business Times*, October 1, 2020, https://www.ibtimes.com/secretive-palantir-went-public-aoc-warned-sec-material-risks-investors-3055015.

41 “A (Pretty) Complete History of Palantir.”

42 Steinberger, “Does Palantir See Too Much?”

43 The Agency’s Chief Information Officer (CIO) works closely with In-Q-tel to identify investments that are of interest to the Agency. The CIO of the CIA at the time In-Q-tel invested in Palantir was Alan Wade. For the role the CIA’s CIO plays in In-Q-tel, See: Rick E. Yannuzzi, *In-Q-Tel: A New Partnership Between the CIA and the Private Sector*, (Joint Militrary Intelligence College Foundation, 2000), https://web.archive.org/web/20190404132537/https://www.cia.gov/library/publications/intelligence-history/in-q-tel.

44 Steinberger, “Does Palantir See Too Much?”

45 Harris, *The Watchers*, 189.

46 Steinberger, “Does Palantir See Too Much?”

47 Greenberg, “How A ‘Deviant’ Philosopher Built Palantir.”

48 Harris, *The Watchers*, 190.

49 Steinberger, “Does Palantir See Too Much?”

50 Christopher Calnan, “Chiliad Nets $4.5M of New $6M Round,” *Boston Business Journal*, May 8, 2007, https://www.bizjournals.com/boston/blog/mass-high-tech/2007/03/chiliad-nets-45m-of-new-6m-round.html.

51 “Chiliad Inc Company Profile,” *Bloomberg*, https://www.bloomberg.com/profile/company/0817391D:US.

52 Calnan, “Chiliad Nets $4.5M of New $6M Round.”

53 “Chiliad, the Company That Solved the 9/11 ‘Connecting the Dots’ Problem, Hires Dan Ferranti as CEO,” *Business Wire*, August 29, 2019, https://www.inknowvation.com/sbir/story/chiliad-company-solved-911-connecting-dots-problem-hires-dan-ferranti-ceo-industry.

54 “Chiliad, the Company That Solved the 9/11 ‘Connecting the Dots’ Problem.”

55 Webb, “The Maxwell Family Business - Investigative Series.”

56 Webb, “The CIA, Mossad and “Epstein Network” Are Exploiting Mass Shootings.”

57 "Allied Commercial Exporters Limited," *Gov.UK*, https://find-and-update.company-information.service.gov.uk/company/00403053/officers.

58 David Brewerton, "Jack Dellal Obituary," *The Guardian*, November 8, 2012, https://www.theguardian.com/business/2012/nov/08/jack-dellal.

59 Jim Geraghty, "The CEO and the CIA," *National Review*, May 5, 2015, https://www.nationalreview.com/2015/05/ceo-and-cia-jim-geraghty/.

60 "Chiliad Removes the Big Data Consolidation Obstacle for Government and Healthcare With Discovery/Alert 7.0," *Business Wire*, October 2, 2012, https://www.businesswire.com/news/home/20121002005564/en/Chiliad-Removes-the-Big-Data-Consolidation-Obstacle-for-Government-and-Healthcare-With-DiscoveryAlert-7.0; "Chiliad Inc. Names Thomas R. Sobocinski National Healthcare Executive; Brings More Than 30 Years Experience in Healthcare Provider and Insurance Industries," *Insurance NewsNet*, June 28, 2012, https://insurancenewsnet.com/oarticle/Chiliad-Inc-Names-Thomas-R-Sobocinski-National-Healthcare-Executive-Brings-Mo-a-347855; "Chiliad Appoints Dr. Douglas M. Boyle to Board of Directors, Experienced Healthcare Executive to Help Guide Chiliad's Expansion into Healthcare Market," *PRWeb*, November 20, 2012, https://www.prweb.com/releases/2012/11/prweb10153900.htm; "Chiliad Inc Company Profile," *Bloomberg*, https://www.bloomberg.com/profile/company/0817391D:US.

61 "Advisory Board," *Darktrace*, https://web.archive.org/web/20200110221719/https://www.darktrace.com/en/advisory-board/.

62 Johnny Vedmore, "Darktrace and Cybereason: The Intelligence Front Companies Seeking to Subjugate the World with the A.I. Singularity," *Unlimited Hangout*, November 3, 2020, https://unlimitedhangout.com/2020/11/reports/darktrace-and-cybereason-the-intelligence-front-companies-seeking-to-subjugate-the-world-with-the-a-i-singularity/.

63 Murtaza Hussain, "Controversial Data-Mining Firm Palantir Vanishes From Biden Adviser's Biography After She Joins Campaign," *The Intercept*, June 26, 2020, https://theintercept.com/2020/06/26/biden-adviser-avril-haines-palantir/.

64 Vedmore, "Daniel Korski."

65 Erin Brodwin, "Jeffrey Epstein Had a 'Frankenstein'-like Plan to Analyze Human DNA in the US Virgin Islands, and It Reportedly Pulled in $200 Million," *Business Insider*, October 4, 2019, https://www.businessinsider.com/jeffrey-epstein-dna-genetics-research-drug-companies-2019-8.

66 Brodwin, "Jeffrey Epstein Had a 'Frankenstein'-like Plan."

67 Brodwin, "Jeffrey Epstein Had a 'Frankenstein'-like Plan."

68 "Jeffrey Epstein Testimony," Economic Development Commission, 2012, https://www.documentcloud.org/documents/6379775-Epstein-testimony-before-the-Economic.html#text/p38.

69 Nicholas M. Ciarelli, "Harvard To Keep Epstein Gift," *The Harvard Crimson*, September 13, 2006, https://www.thecrimson.com/article/2006/9/13/harvard-to-keep-epstein-gift-after/.

70 "Home Page," *Jeffrey Epstein Foundation*, https://web.archive.org/web/20131123123028/http://www.jeffreyepsteinfoundation.com/.

71 "Jeffrey Epstein Testimony," Economic Development Commission.

72 "Jeffrey Epstein Testimony," Economic Development Commission.

73 "Jeffrey Epstein Testimony," Economic Development Commission.

74 "Jeffrey Epstein Testimony," Economic Development Commission.

75 "Jeffrey Epstein Testimony," Economic Development Commission.

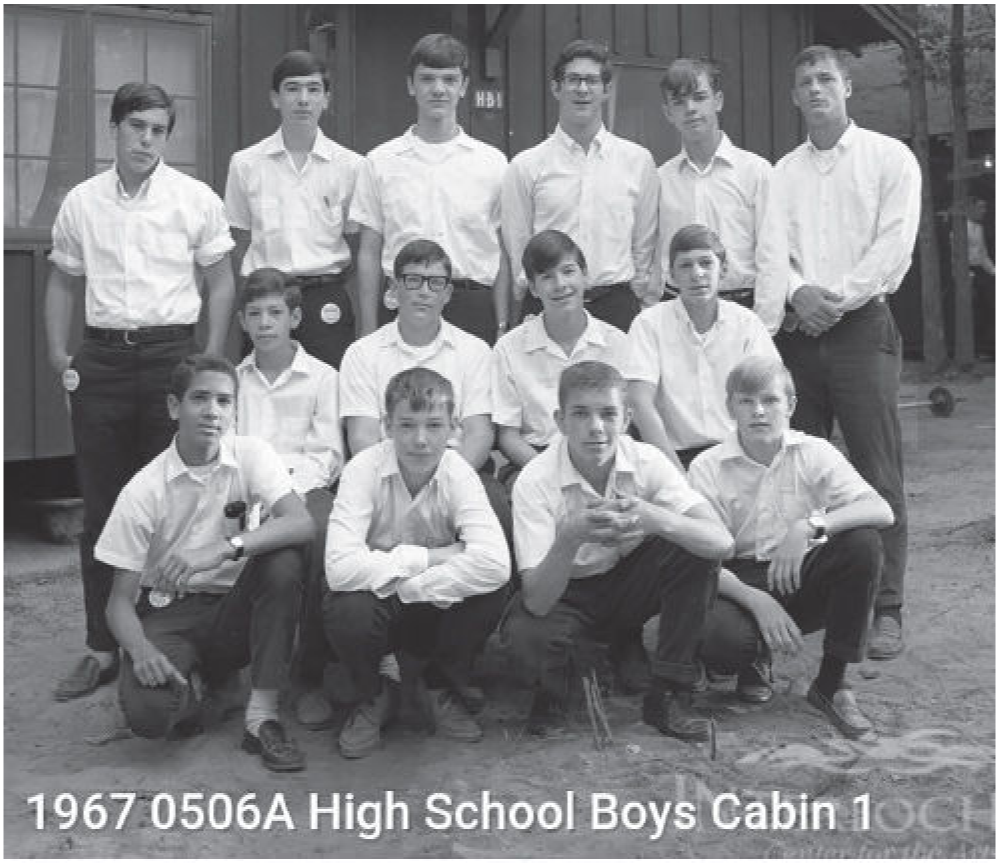
76 Matthew Goldstein and Steve Eder, "Jeffrey Epstein Raked In $200 Million After Legal and Financial Crises," *New York Times*, October 3, 2019, https://www.nytimes.com/2019/10/03/business/jeffrey-epstein-southern-trust.html.

77 "The World's Most Valuable Resource Is No Longer Oil, but Data," *The Economist*, May 6, 2017, https://www.economist.com/leaders/2017/05/06/the-worlds-most-valuable-resource-is-no-longer-oil-but-data.

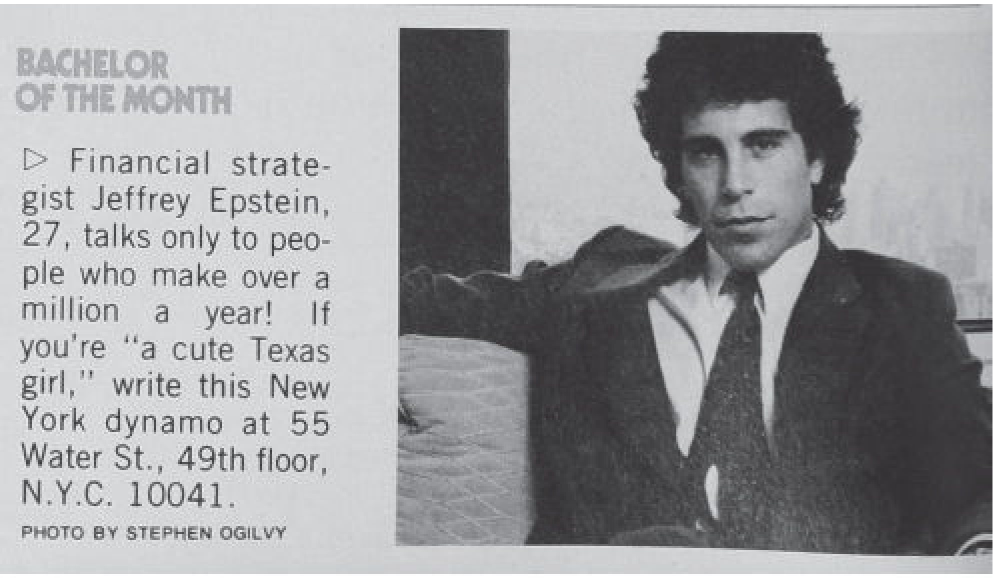
78 Epstein's interest in transhumanism was, unfortunately, under-explored in this book. For example, Epstein funded the World Transhumanist Association (now Humanity+) and its chairman, AI researcher Ben Goertzel. See: Michael Cook, "The Bizarre Transhumanist Fantasies of Jeffrey Epstein," *BioEdge*, August 3, 2019, https://bioedge.org/uncategorized/the-bizarre-transhumanist-fantasies-of-jeffrey-epstein/; Edward Helmore, "Epstein Reportedly Hoped to Develop Super-Race of Humans with His DNA," *The Guardian*, August 1, 2019, https://www.theguardian.com/us-news/2019/aug/01/jeffrey-epstein-seed-human-race-report.

79 Chris Smith, "How a Smartphone Backdoor Can Be Used to Spy on Absolutely Everything You Do," *Yahoo*, December 19, 2016, https://www.yahoo.com/tech/smartphone-back-door-used-spy-absolutely-everything-043910940.html.

PHOTOGRAPHS & DOCUMENTS


1967 0506A High School Boys Cabin 1

Jeffrey Epstein (1st on the left, top row) at the Interlochen Center for the Arts Summer School in 1967.

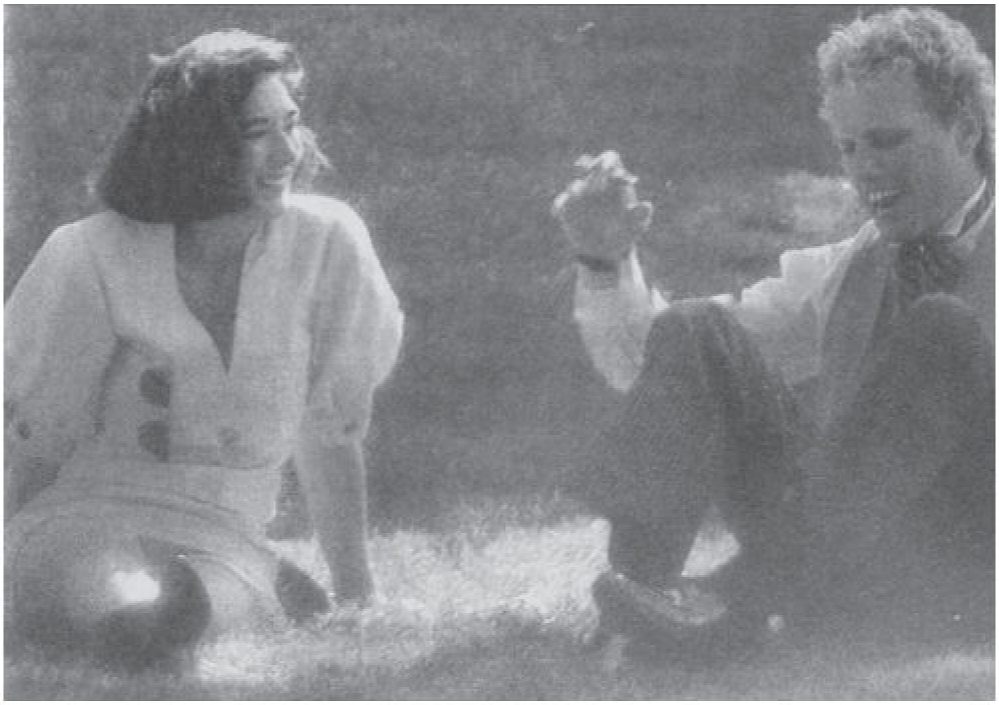


BACHELOR
OF THE MONTH

▷ Financial strategist Jeffrey Epstein, 27, talks only to people who make over a million a year! If you're "a cute Texas girl," write this New York dynamo at 55 Water St., 49th floor, N.Y.C. 10041.

PHOTO BY STEPHEN OGILVY

Jeffrey Epstein was featured as "bachelor of the month" in the July 1980 issue of Cosmopolitan. He was then working for Bear Stearns.
Source: *Cosmopolitan*, July 1980, Photo by Stephen Ogilvy.



Ghislaine Maxwell and Joe Kennedy at a reception following Kerry Kennedy's wedding to Andrew Cuomo in 1990. The caption for the photo from *Star Magazine* suggested that their interactions at the wedding were flirtatious.

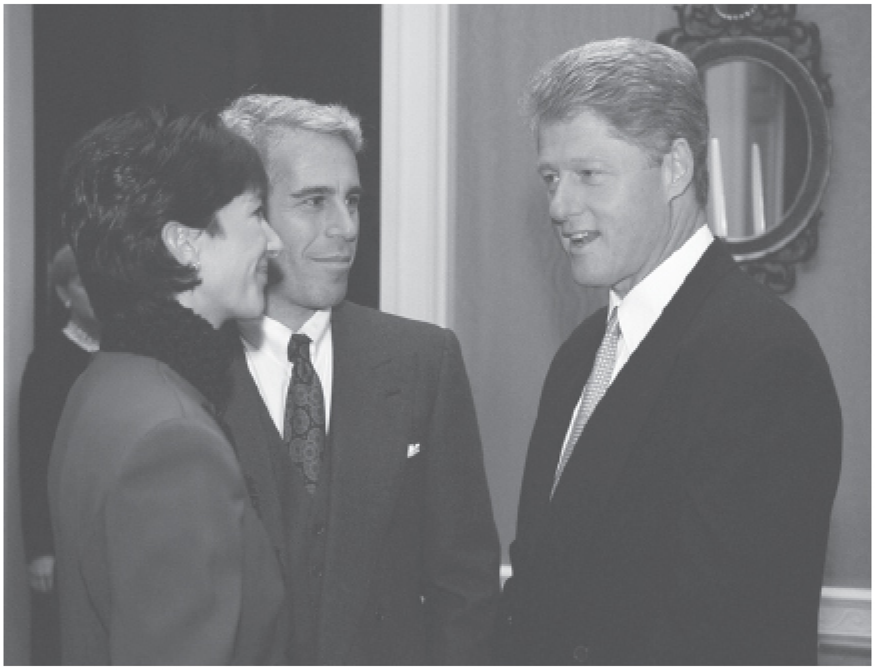
Esther Dyson, Jeffrey Epstein, and Russian Federal Nuclear Center employee Pavel Oleynikov pose in front of Andrei Sakharov's house in Sarov, Russia in April 1998. https://www.flickr.com/photos/edyson/9209120/.

Nathan Myhrvold and Jeffrey Epstein chat at the 2000 Edge Billionaires' Dinner.

Source: https://www.edge.org/igd/1200.

Microsoft's Paul Allen poses for a photo with Nicole Junkermann at the Cinema Against AIDS Cannes event in Cannes, France. Getty Images.

Leslie Wexner and Rabbi Maurice Corson in an undated photo. https://www.wexnerfoundation.org/wp-content/uploads/Wexner-22-
1670x1077.jpeg.



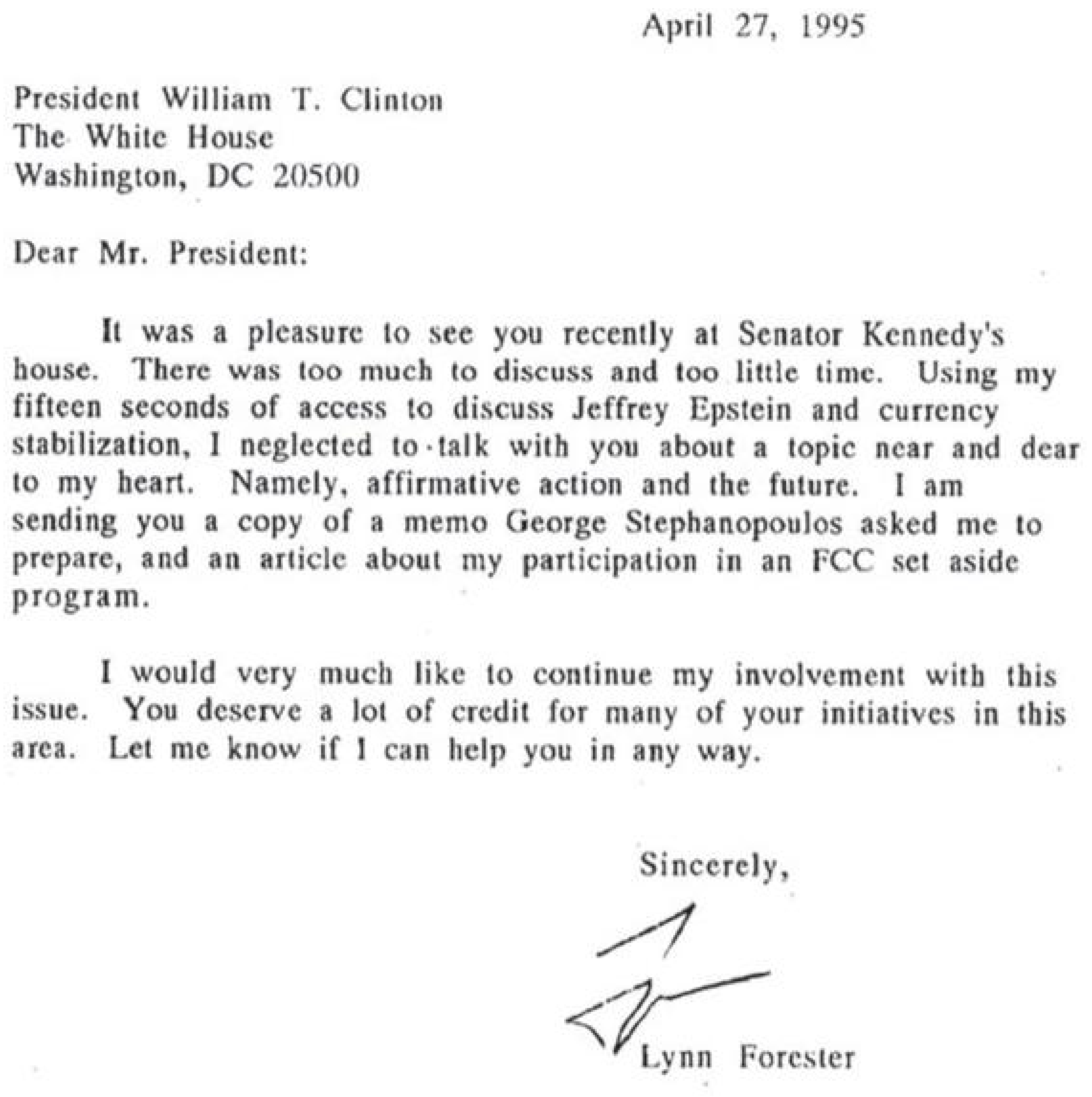
Jeffrey Epstein and Ghislaine Maxwell greet then-President Bill Clinton at a September 1993 Donor Reception at the White House. Source: William J. Clinton Presidential Library.

Bill Clinton meets with Chinese weapons dealer Wang Jun in February 1996. Source: White House Communications Agency.

The Clintons photographed with Ng Lap Seng at a DNC event, date unknown. Source: DNC.

CHARLIE TRIE
FORMER DEMOCRATIC PARTY FUNDRAISER
C-SPAN2
Today

Charlie Trie testifies before the House Government Reform and Oversight Committee on March 1, 2000. Source: C-SPAN.



April 27, 1995

President William T. Clinton
The White House
Washington, DC 20500

Dear Mr. President:

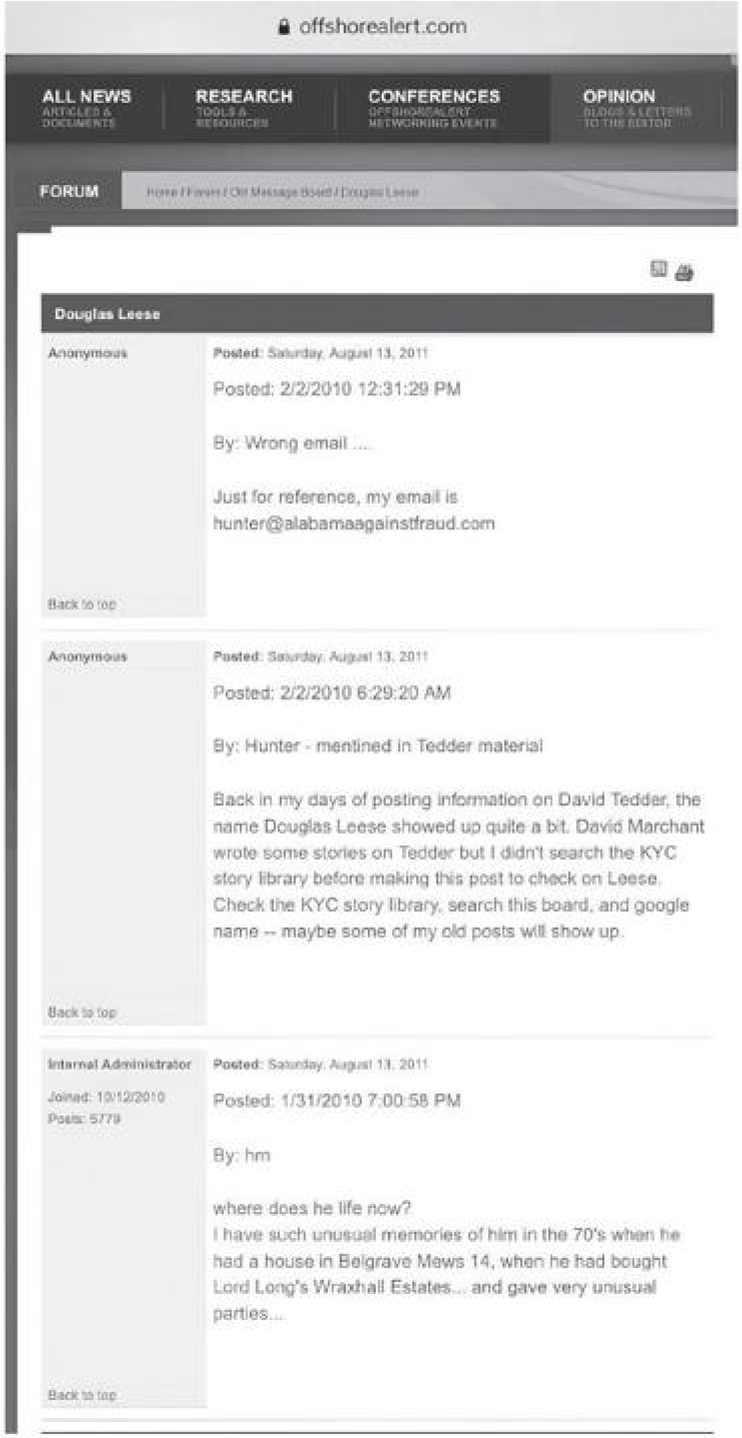
It was a pleasure to see you recently at Senator Kennedy's house. There was too much to discuss and too little time. Using my fifteen seconds of access to discuss Jeffrey Epstein and currency stabilization, I neglected to talk with you about a topic near and dear to my heart. Namely, affirmative action and the future. I am sending you a copy of a memo George Stephanopoulos asked me to prepare, and an article about my participation in an FCC set aside program.

I would very much like to continue my involvement with this issue. You deserve a lot of credit for many of your initiatives in this area. Let me know if I can help you in any way.

Sincerely,

Lynn Forester

A 1995 letter from Lynn Forester to President Clinton that discusses Jeffrey Epstein.


offshorealert.com
ALL NEWS
ARTICLES & DOCUMENTS
RESEARCH
TOOLS & RESOURCES
CONFERENCES
OFFSHOREALERT NETWORKING EVENTS
OPINION
BLOGS & LETTERS TO THE EDITOR
FORUM
Home / Forum / Old Message Board / Douglas Leese

Douglas Leese

Anonymous

Posted: Saturday, August 13, 2011

Posted: 2/2/2010 12:31:29 PM

By: Wrong email ....

Just for reference, my email is hunter@alabamaagainstfraud.com

Back to top

Anonymous

Posted: Saturday, August 13, 2011

Posted: 2/2/2010 6:29:20 AM

By: Hunter - mentined in Tedder material

Back in my days of posting information on David Tedder, the name Douglas Leese showed up quite a bit. David Marchant wrote some stories on Tedder but I didn't search the KYC story library before making this post to check on Leese. Check the KYC story library, search this board, and google name -- maybe some of my old posts will show up.

Back to top

Internal Administrator

Joined: 10/12/2010
Posts: 5779

Posted: Saturday, August 13, 2011

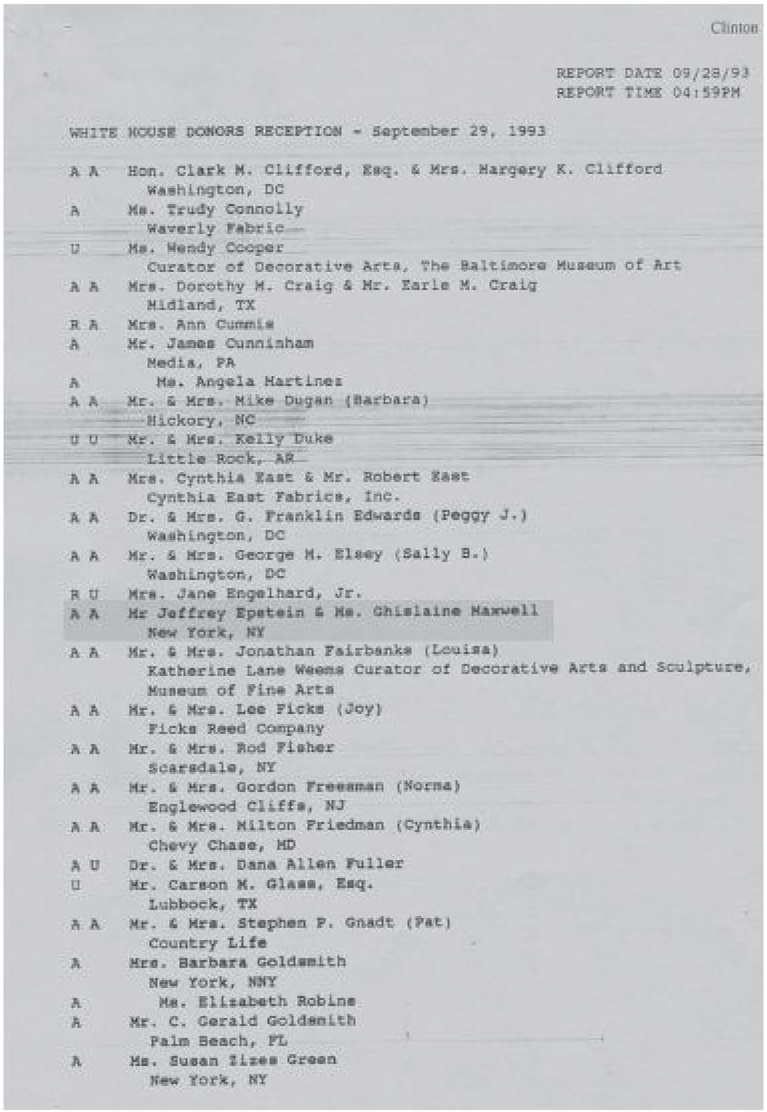
Posted: 1/31/2010 7:00:58 PM

By: hm

where does he life now?
I have such unusual memories of him in the 70's when he had a house in Belgrave Mews 14, when he had bought Lord Long's Wraxhall Estates... and gave very unusual parties...

Back to top

The administrator of Offshore Alerts discusses his experiences with Douglas Leese, a mentor of Epstein's.



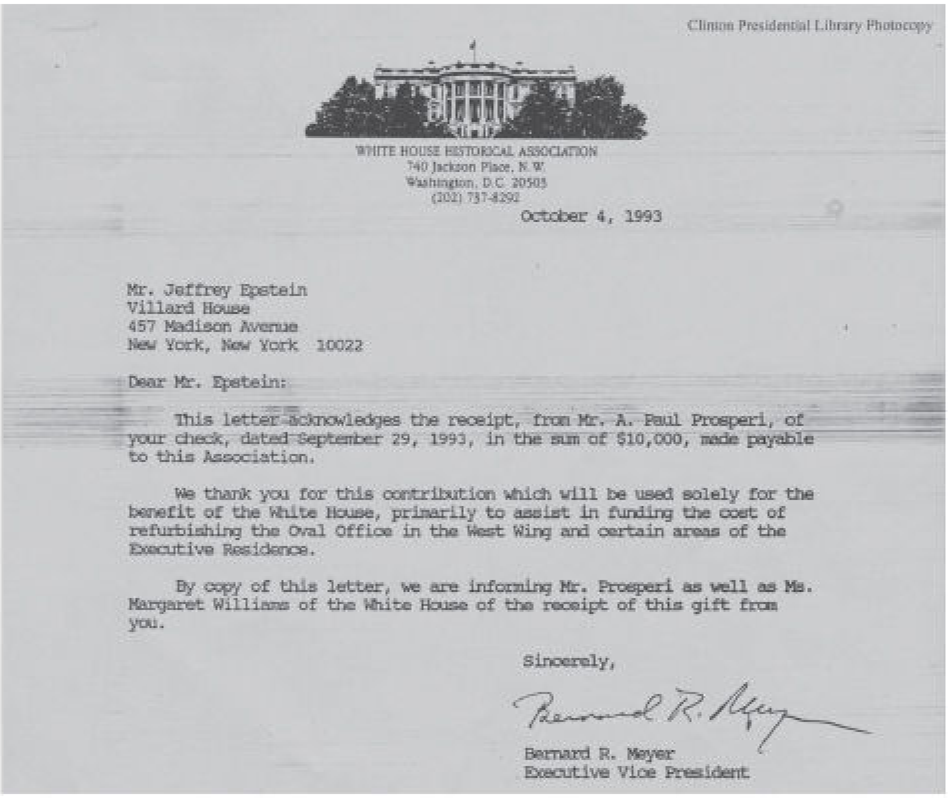
```
                                                           Clinton

                                                 REPORT DATE 09/28/93
                                                 REPORT TIME 04:59PM

WHITE HOUSE DONORS RECEPTION - September 29, 1993

A A   Hon. Clark M. Clifford, Esq. & Mrs. Margery K. Clifford
        Washington, DC
A     Ms. Trudy Connolly
        Waverly Fabric
U     Ms. Wendy Cooper
        Curator of Decorative Arts, The Baltimore Museum of Art
A A   Mrs. Dorothy M. Craig & Mr. Earle M. Craig
        Midland, TX
R A   Mrs. Ann Cummis
A     Mr. James Cunninham
        Media, PA
A        Ms. Angela Martinez
A A   Mr. & Mrs. Mike Dugan (Barbara)
        Hickory, NC
U U   Mr. & Mrs. Kelly Duke
        Little Rock, AR
A A   Mrs. Cynthia East & Mr. Robert East
        Cynthia East Fabrics, Inc.
A A   Dr. & Mrs. G. Franklin Edwards (Peggy J.)
        Washington, DC
A A   Mr. & Mrs. George M. Elsey (Sally B.)
        Washington, DC
R U   Mrs. Jane Engelhard, Jr.
A A   Mr Jeffrey Epstein & Ms. Ghislaine Maxwell
        New York, NY
A A   Mr. & Mrs. Jonathan Fairbanks (Louisa)
        Katherine Lane Weems Curator of Decorative Arts and Sculpture,
        Museum of Fine Arts
A A   Mr. & Mrs. Lee Ficks (Joy)
        Ficks Reed Company
A A   Mr. & Mrs. Rod Fisher
        Scarsdale, NY
A A   Mr. & Mrs. Gordon Freesman (Norma)
        Englewood Cliffs, NJ
A A   Mr. & Mrs. Milton Friedman (Cynthia)
        Chevy Chase, MD
A U   Dr. & Mrs. Dana Allen Fuller
U     Mr. Carson M. Glass, Esq.
        Lubbock, TX
A A   Mr. & Mrs. Stephen F. Gnadt (Pat)
        Country Life
A     Mrs. Barbara Goldsmith
        New York, NNY
A        Ms. Elizabeth Robins
A     Mr. C. Gerald Goldsmith
        Palm Beach, FL
A     Ms. Susan Tizes Green
        New York, NY
```

The invitation list for the September 1993 Donors Reception at the White House that Jeffrey Epstein and Ghislaine Maxwell attended. Also listed as attending are Clark Clifford and C. Gerald Goldsmith. https://www.thedailybeast.com/jeffrey-epstein-visited-clinton-white-house-multiple-times-in-early-90s.



Clinton Presidential Library Photocopy

WHITE HOUSE HISTORICAL ASSOCIATION
740 Jackson Place, N.W.
Washington, D.C. 20503
(202) 737-8292

October 4, 1993

Mr. Jeffrey Epstein
Villard House
457 Madison Avenue
New York, New York 10022

Dear Mr. Epstein:

This letter acknowledges the receipt, from Mr. A. Paul Prosperi, of your check, dated September 29, 1993, in the sum of $10,000, made payable to this Association.

We thank you for this contribution which will be used solely for the benefit of the White House, primarily to assist in funding the cost of refurbishing the Oval Office in the West Wing and certain areas of the Executive Residence.

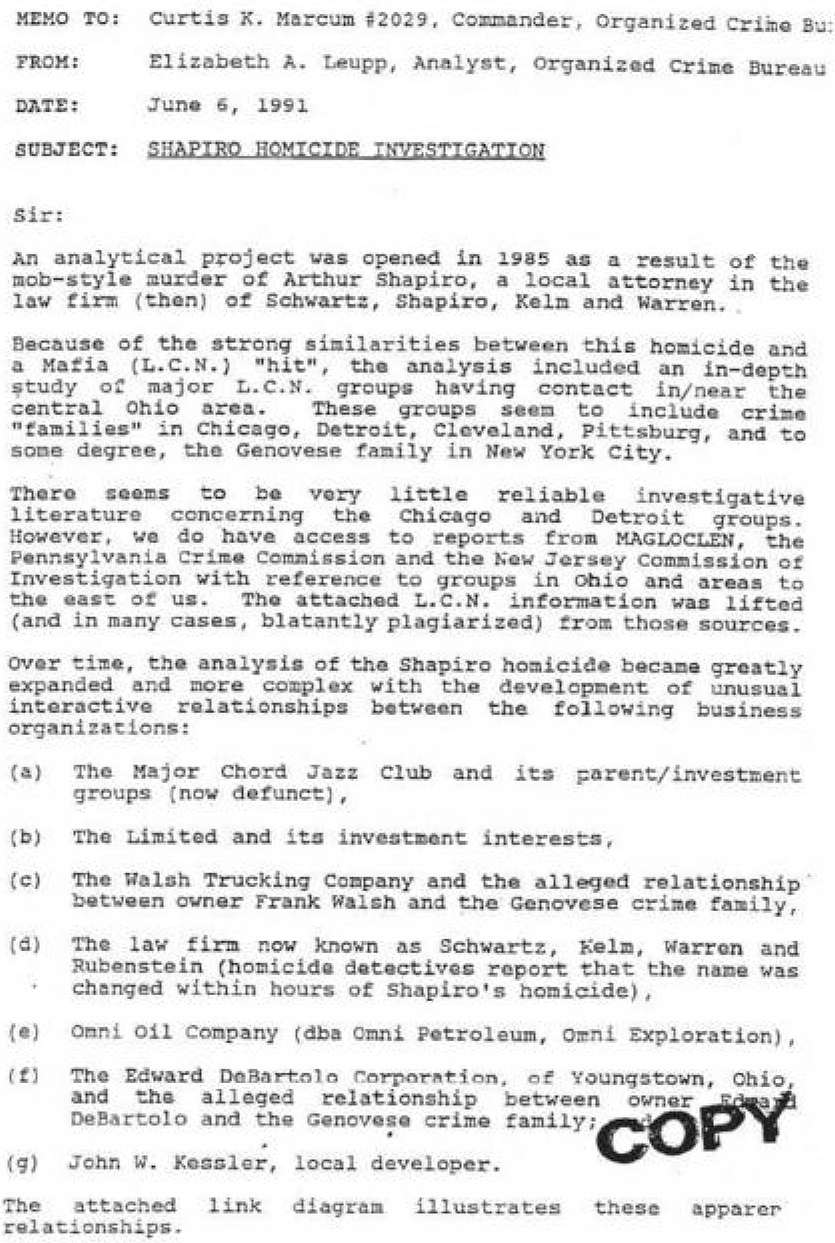
By copy of this letter, we are informing Mr. Prosperi as well as Ms. Margaret Williams of the White House of the receipt of this gift from you.

Sincerely,

Bernard R. Meyer

Bernard R. Meyer
Executive Vice President

A letter to Jeffrey Epstein from Executive Vice President of the White House Historical Association, Bernard Meyer, thanking Epstein for his donation of $10,000. The address listed for Epstein is his office at the Villard House he shared with Evangeline Gouletas-Carey.
https://www.thedailybeast.com/jeffrey-epstein-visited-clinton-white-house-multiple-times-in-early-90s.



MEMO TO: Curtis K. Marcum #2029, Commander, Organized Crime Bu

FROM: Elizabeth A. Leupp, Analyst, Organized Crime Bureau

DATE: June 6, 1991

SUBJECT: SHAPIRO HOMICIDE INVESTIGATION

Sir:

An analytical project was opened in 1985 as a result of the mob-style murder of Arthur Shapiro, a local attorney in the law firm (then) of Schwartz, Shapiro, Kelm and Warren.

Because of the strong similarities between this homicide and a Mafia (L.C.N.) "hit", the analysis included an in-depth study of major L.C.N. groups having contact in/near the central Ohio area. These groups seem to include crime "families" in Chicago, Detroit, Cleveland, Pittsburg, and to some degree, the Genovese family in New York City.

There seems to be very little reliable investigative literature concerning the Chicago and Detroit groups. However, we do have access to reports from MAGLOCLEN, the Pennsylvania Crime Commission and the New Jersey Commission of Investigation with reference to groups in Ohio and areas to the east of us. The attached L.C.N. information was lifted (and in many cases, blatantly plagiarized) from those sources.

Over time, the analysis of the Shapiro homicide became greatly expanded and more complex with the development of unusual interactive relationships between the following business organizations:

(a) The Major Chord Jazz Club and its parent/investment groups (now defunct),

(b) The Limited and its investment interests,

(c) The Walsh Trucking Company and the alleged relationship between owner Frank Walsh and the Genovese crime family,

(d) The law firm now known as Schwartz, Kelm, Warren and Rubenstein (homicide detectives report that the name was changed within hours of Shapiro's homicide),

(e) Omni Oil Company (dba Omni Petroleum, Omni Exploration),

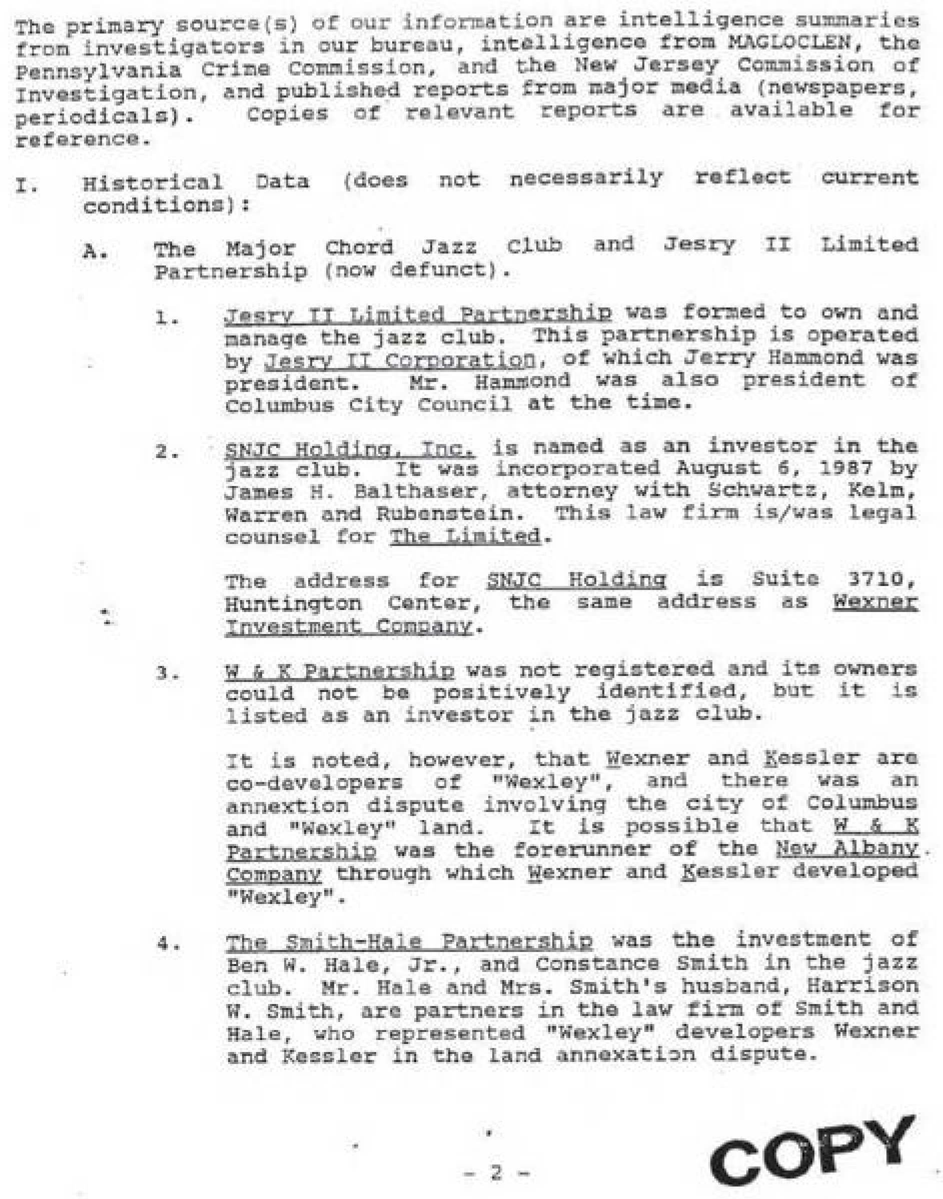
(f) The Edward DeBartolo Corporation, of Youngstown, Ohio, and the alleged relationship between owner Edward DeBartolo and the Genovese crime family;

COPY

(g) John W. Kessler, local developer.

The attached link diagram illustrates these apparer relationships.

The full text of the Columbus police document written by Elisabeth Leupp, an analyst with the Organized Crime Bureau, entitled "Shapiro Homicide Investigation: Analysis and Hypothesis." The document examines the murder of the lawyer Arthur Shapiro and focuses extensively on Leslie Wexner and his associates. https://archive.org/details/shapiromurderfilecomplete1.



The primary source(s) of our information are intelligence summaries from investigators in our bureau, intelligence from MAGLOCLEN, the Pennsylvania Crime Commission, and the New Jersey Commission of Investigation, and published reports from major media (newspapers, periodicals). Copies of relevant reports are available for reference.

I. Historical Data (does not necessarily reflect current conditions):

A. The Major Chord Jazz Club and Jesry II Limited Partnership (now defunct).

1. Jesry II Limited Partnership was formed to own and manage the jazz club. This partnership is operated by Jesry II Corporation, of which Jerry Hammond was president. Mr. Hammond was also president of Columbus City Council at the time.

2. SNJC Holding, Inc. is named as an investor in the jazz club. It was incorporated August 6, 1987 by James H. Balthaser, attorney with Schwartz, Kelm, Warren and Rubenstein. This law firm is/was legal counsel for The Limited.

The address for SNJC Holding is Suite 3710, Huntington Center, the same address as Wexner Investment Company.

3. W & K Partnership was not registered and its owners could not be positively identified, but it is listed as an investor in the jazz club.

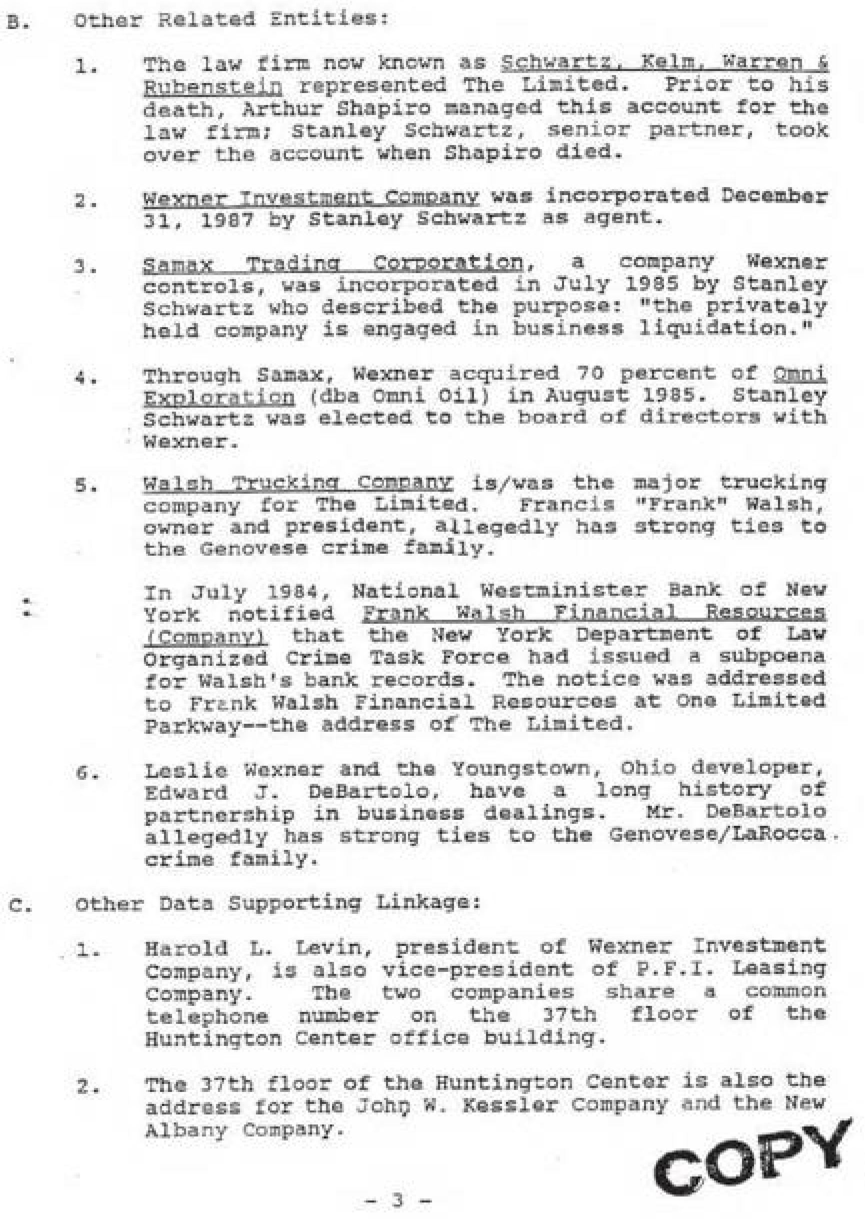
It is noted, however, that Wexner and Kessler are co-developers of "Wexley", and there was an annextion dispute involving the city of Columbus and "Wexley" land. It is possible that W & K Partnership was the forerunner of the New Albany Company through which Wexner and Kessler developed "Wexley".

4. The Smith-Hale Partnership was the investment of Ben W. Hale, Jr., and Constance Smith in the jazz club. Mr. Hale and Mrs. Smith's husband, Harrison W. Smith, are partners in the law firm of Smith and Hale, who represented "Wexley" developers Wexner and Kessler in the land annexation dispute.

- 2 -

COPY

The full text of the Columbus police document written by Elisabeth Leupp, an analyst with the Organized Crime Bureau, entitled "Shapiro Homicide Investigation: Analysis and Hypothesis." The document examines the murder of the lawyer Arthur Shapiro and focuses extensively on Leslie Wexner and his associates. https://archive.org/details/shapiromurderfilecomplete1.



B. Other Related Entities:

1. The law firm now known as Schwartz, Kelm, Warren & Rubenstein represented The Limited. Prior to his death, Arthur Shapiro managed this account for the law firm; Stanley Schwartz, senior partner, took over the account when Shapiro died.

2. Wexner Investment Company was incorporated December 31, 1987 by Stanley Schwartz as agent.

3. Samax Trading Corporation, a company Wexner controls, was incorporated in July 1985 by Stanley Schwartz who described the purpose: "the privately held company is engaged in business liquidation."

4. Through Samax, Wexner acquired 70 percent of Omni Exploration (dba Omni Oil) in August 1985. Stanley Schwartz was elected to the board of directors with Wexner.

5. Walsh Trucking Company is/was the major trucking company for The Limited. Francis "Frank" Walsh, owner and president, allegedly has strong ties to the Genovese crime family.

   In July 1984, National Westminister Bank of New York notified Frank Walsh Financial Resources (Company) that the New York Department of Law Organized Crime Task Force had issued a subpoena for Walsh's bank records. The notice was addressed to Frank Walsh Financial Resources at One Limited Parkway--the address of The Limited.

6. Leslie Wexner and the Youngstown, Ohio developer, Edward J. DeBartolo, have a long history of partnership in business dealings. Mr. DeBartolo allegedly has strong ties to the Genovese/LaRocca crime family.

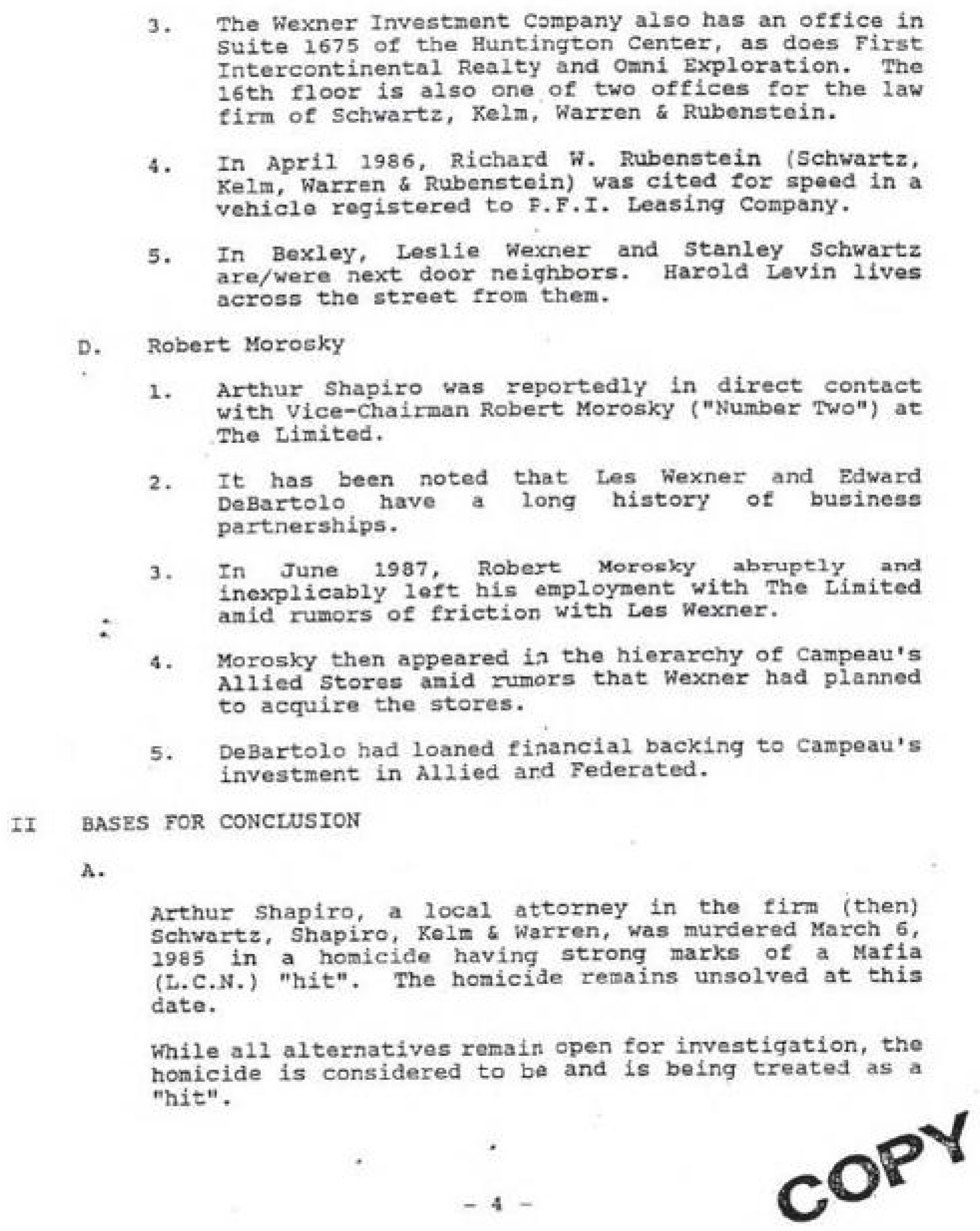
C. Other Data Supporting Linkage:

1. Harold L. Levin, president of Wexner Investment Company, is also vice-president of P.F.I. Leasing Company. The two companies share a common telephone number on the 37th floor of the Huntington Center office building.

2. The 37th floor of the Huntington Center is also the address for the John W. Kessler Company and the New Albany Company.

COPY

The full text of the Columbus police document written by Elisabeth Leupp, an analyst with the Organized Crime Bureau, entitled "Shapiro Homicide Investigation: Analysis and Hypothesis." The document examines the murder of the lawyer Arthur Shapiro and focuses extensively on Leslie Wexner and his associates. https://archive.org/details/shapiromurderfilecomplete1.



3. The Wexner Investment Company also has an office in Suite 1675 of the Huntington Center, as does First Intercontinental Realty and Omni Exploration. The 16th floor is also one of two offices for the law firm of Schwartz, Kelm, Warren & Rubenstein.

4. In April 1986, Richard W. Rubenstein (Schwartz, Kelm, Warren & Rubenstein) was cited for speed in a vehicle registered to F.F.I. Leasing Company.

5. In Bexley, Leslie Wexner and Stanley Schwartz are/were next door neighbors. Harold Levin lives across the street from them.

D. Robert Morosky

1. Arthur Shapiro was reportedly in direct contact with Vice-Chairman Robert Morosky ("Number Two") at The Limited.

2. It has been noted that Les Wexner and Edward DeBartolo have a long history of business partnerships.

3. In June 1987, Robert Morosky abruptly and inexplicably left his employment with The Limited amid rumors of friction with Les Wexner.

4. Morosky then appeared in the hierarchy of Campeau's Allied Stores amid rumors that Wexner had planned to acquire the stores.

5. DeBartolo had loaned financial backing to Campeau's investment in Allied and Federated.

II BASES FOR CONCLUSION

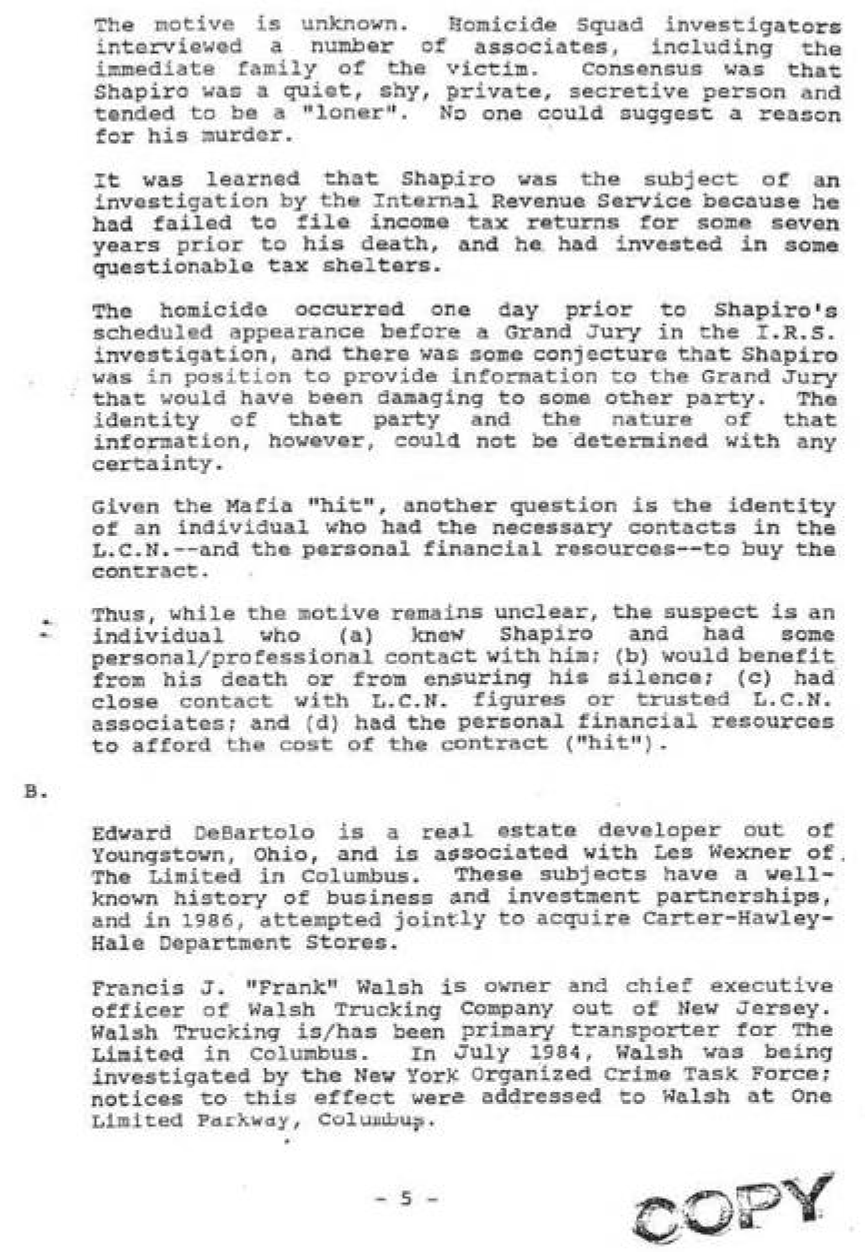
A.

Arthur Shapiro, a local attorney in the firm (then) Schwartz, Shapiro, Kelm & Warren, was murdered March 6, 1985 in a homicide having strong marks of a Mafia (L.C.N.) "hit". The homicide remains unsolved at this date.

While all alternatives remain open for investigation, the homicide is considered to be and is being treated as a "hit".

COPY

The full text of the Columbus police document written by Elisabeth Leupp, an analyst with the Organized Crime Bureau, entitled "Shapiro Homicide Investigation: Analysis and Hypothesis." The document examines the murder of the lawyer Arthur Shapiro and focuses extensively on Leslie Wexner and his associates. https://archive.org/details/shapiromurderfilecomplete1.



The motive is unknown. Homicide Squad investigators interviewed a number of associates, including the immediate family of the victim. Consensus was that Shapiro was a quiet, shy, private, secretive person and tended to be a "loner". No one could suggest a reason for his murder.

It was learned that Shapiro was the subject of an investigation by the Internal Revenue Service because he had failed to file income tax returns for some seven years prior to his death, and he had invested in some questionable tax shelters.

The homicide occurred one day prior to Shapiro's scheduled appearance before a Grand Jury in the I.R.S. investigation, and there was some conjecture that Shapiro was in position to provide information to the Grand Jury that would have been damaging to some other party. The identity of that party and the nature of that information, however, could not be determined with any certainty.

Given the Mafia "hit", another question is the identity of an individual who had the necessary contacts in the L.C.N.--and the personal financial resources--to buy the contract.

Thus, while the motive remains unclear, the suspect is an individual who (a) knew Shapiro and had some personal/professional contact with him; (b) would benefit from his death or from ensuring his silence; (c) had close contact with L.C.N. figures or trusted L.C.N. associates; and (d) had the personal financial resources to afford the cost of the contract ("hit").

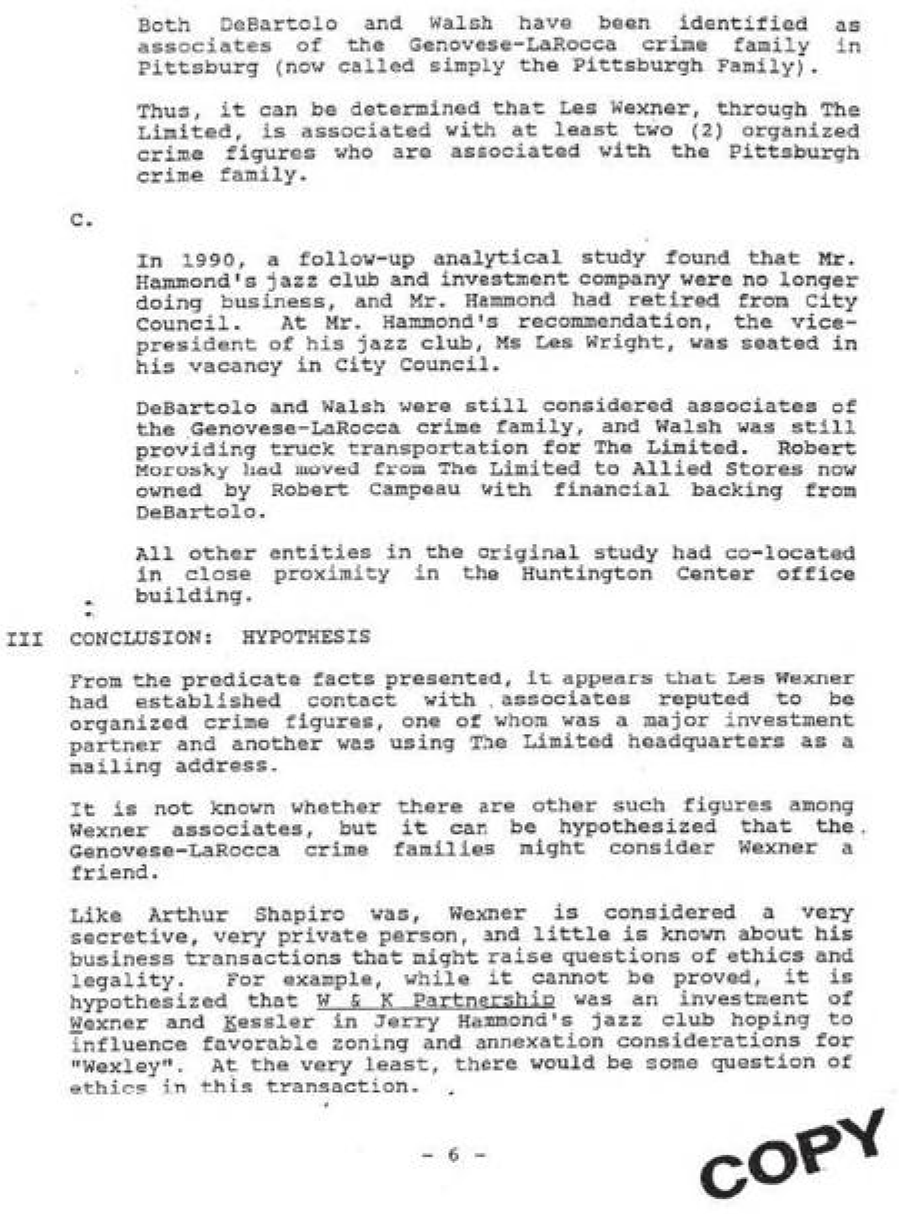
B.

Edward DeBartolo is a real estate developer out of Youngstown, Ohio, and is associated with Les Wexner of The Limited in Columbus. These subjects have a well-known history of business and investment partnerships, and in 1986, attempted jointly to acquire Carter-Hawley-Hale Department Stores.

Francis J. "Frank" Walsh is owner and chief executive officer of Walsh Trucking Company out of New Jersey. Walsh Trucking is/has been primary transporter for The Limited in Columbus. In July 1984, Walsh was being investigated by the New York Organized Crime Task Force; notices to this effect were addressed to Walsh at One Limited Parkway, Columbus.

COPY

The full text of the Columbus police document written by Elisabeth Leupp, an analyst with the Organized Crime Bureau, entitled "Shapiro Homicide Investigation: Analysis and Hypothesis." The document examines the murder of the lawyer Arthur Shapiro and focuses extensively on Leslie Wexner and his associates. https://archive.org/details/shapiromurderfilecomplete1.



Both DeBartolo and Walsh have been identified as associates of the Genovese-LaRocca crime family in Pittsburg (now called simply the Pittsburgh Family).

Thus, it can be determined that Les Wexner, through The Limited, is associated with at least two (2) organized crime figures who are associated with the Pittsburgh crime family.

C.

In 1990, a follow-up analytical study found that Mr. Hammond's jazz club and investment company were no longer doing business, and Mr. Hammond had retired from City Council. At Mr. Hammond's recommendation, the vice-president of his jazz club, Ms Les Wright, was seated in his vacancy in City Council.

DeBartolo and Walsh were still considered associates of the Genovese-LaRocca crime family, and Walsh was still providing truck transportation for The Limited. Robert Morosky had moved from The Limited to Allied Stores now owned by Robert Campeau with financial backing from DeBartolo.

All other entities in the original study had co-located in close proximity in the Huntington Center office building.

III CONCLUSION: HYPOTHESIS

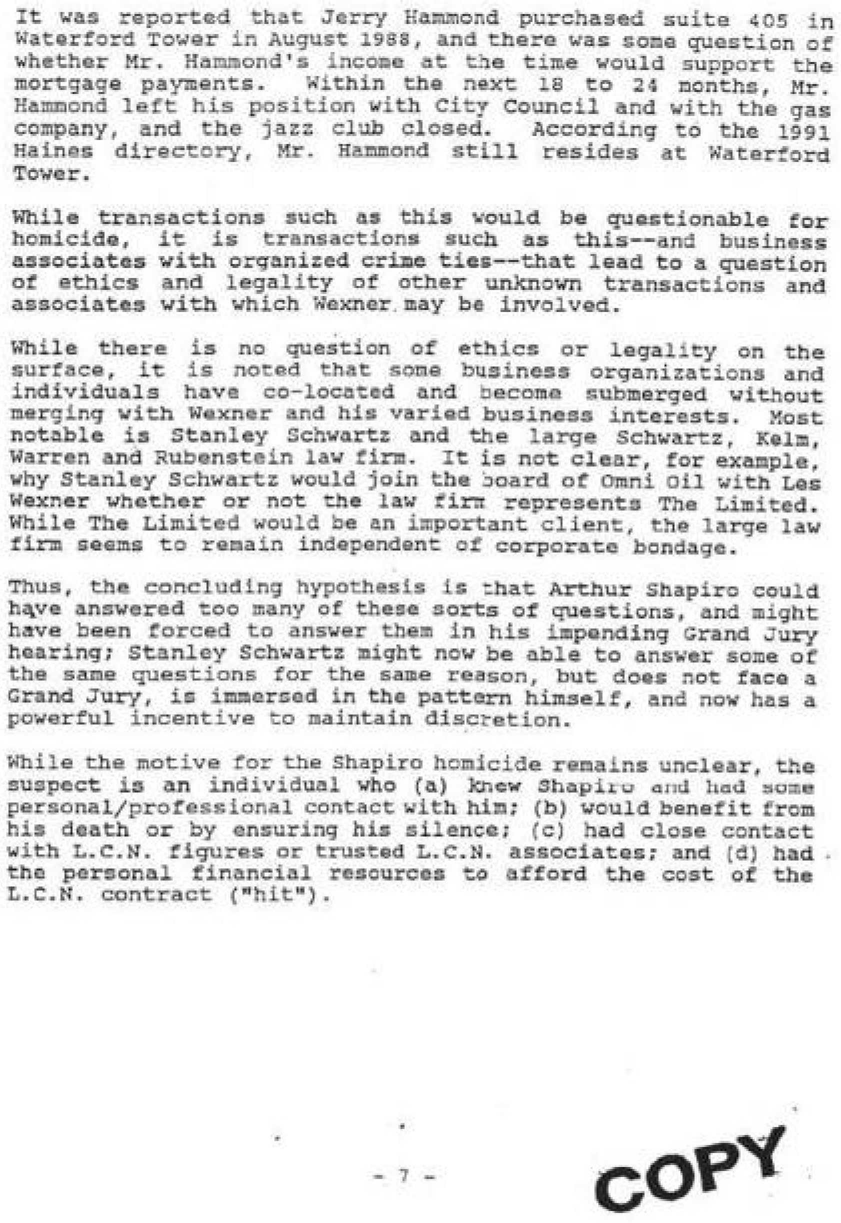
From the predicate facts presented, it appears that Les Wexner had established contact with associates reputed to be organized crime figures, one of whom was a major investment partner and another was using The Limited headquarters as a mailing address.

It is not known whether there are other such figures among Wexner associates, but it can be hypothesized that the Genovese-LaRocca crime families might consider Wexner a friend.

Like Arthur Shapiro was, Wexner is considered a very secretive, very private person, and little is known about his business transactions that might raise questions of ethics and legality. For example, while it cannot be proved, it is hypothesized that W & K Partnership was an investment of Wexner and Kessler in Jerry Hammond's jazz club hoping to influence favorable zoning and annexation considerations for "Wexley". At the very least, there would be some question of ethics in this transaction.

COPY

The full text of the Columbus police document written by Elisabeth Leupp, an analyst with the Organized Crime Bureau, entitled "Shapiro Homicide Investigation: Analysis and Hypothesis." The document examines the murder of the lawyer Arthur Shapiro and focuses extensively on Leslie Wexner and his associates. https://archive.org/details/shapiromurderfilecomplete1.



It was reported that Jerry Hammond purchased suite 405 in Waterford Tower in August 1988, and there was some question of whether Mr. Hammond's income at the time would support the mortgage payments. Within the next 18 to 24 months, Mr. Hammond left his position with City Council and with the gas company, and the jazz club closed. According to the 1991 Haines directory, Mr. Hammond still resides at Waterford Tower.

While transactions such as this would be questionable for homicide, it is transactions such as this--and business associates with organized crime ties--that lead to a question of ethics and legality of other unknown transactions and associates with which Wexner may be involved.

While there is no question of ethics or legality on the surface, it is noted that some business organizations and individuals have co-located and become submerged without merging with Wexner and his varied business interests. Most notable is Stanley Schwartz and the large Schwartz, Kelm, Warren and Rubenstein law firm. It is not clear, for example, why Stanley Schwartz would join the board of Omni Oil with Les Wexner whether or not the law firm represents The Limited. While The Limited would be an important client, the large law firm seems to remain independent of corporate bondage.

Thus, the concluding hypothesis is that Arthur Shapiro could have answered too many of these sorts of questions, and might have been forced to answer them in his impending Grand Jury hearing; Stanley Schwartz might now be able to answer some of the same questions for the same reason, but does not face a Grand Jury, is immersed in the pattern himself, and now has a powerful incentive to maintain discretion.

While the motive for the Shapiro homicide remains unclear, the suspect is an individual who (a) knew Shapiro and had some personal/professional contact with him; (b) would benefit from his death or by ensuring his silence; (c) had close contact with L.C.N. figures or trusted L.C.N. associates; and (d) had the personal financial resources to afford the cost of the L.C.N. contract ("hit").

- 7 -

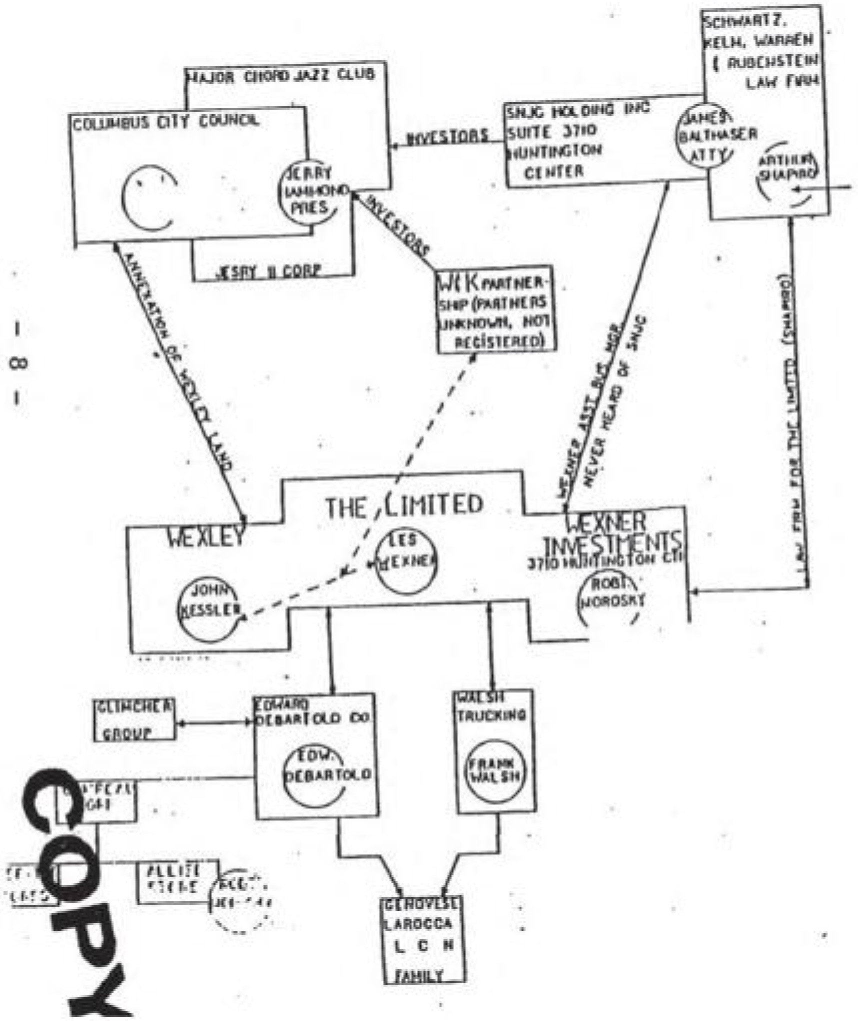
COPY

The full text of the Columbus police document written by Elisabeth Leupp, an analyst with the Organized Crime Bureau, entitled "Shapiro Homicide Investigation: Analysis and Hypothesis." The document examines the murder of the lawyer Arthur Shapiro and focuses extensively on Leslie Wexner and his associates. https://archive.org/details/shapiromurderfilecomplete1.

SHAPIRO HOMICIDE INVESTIGATION

Link Diagram

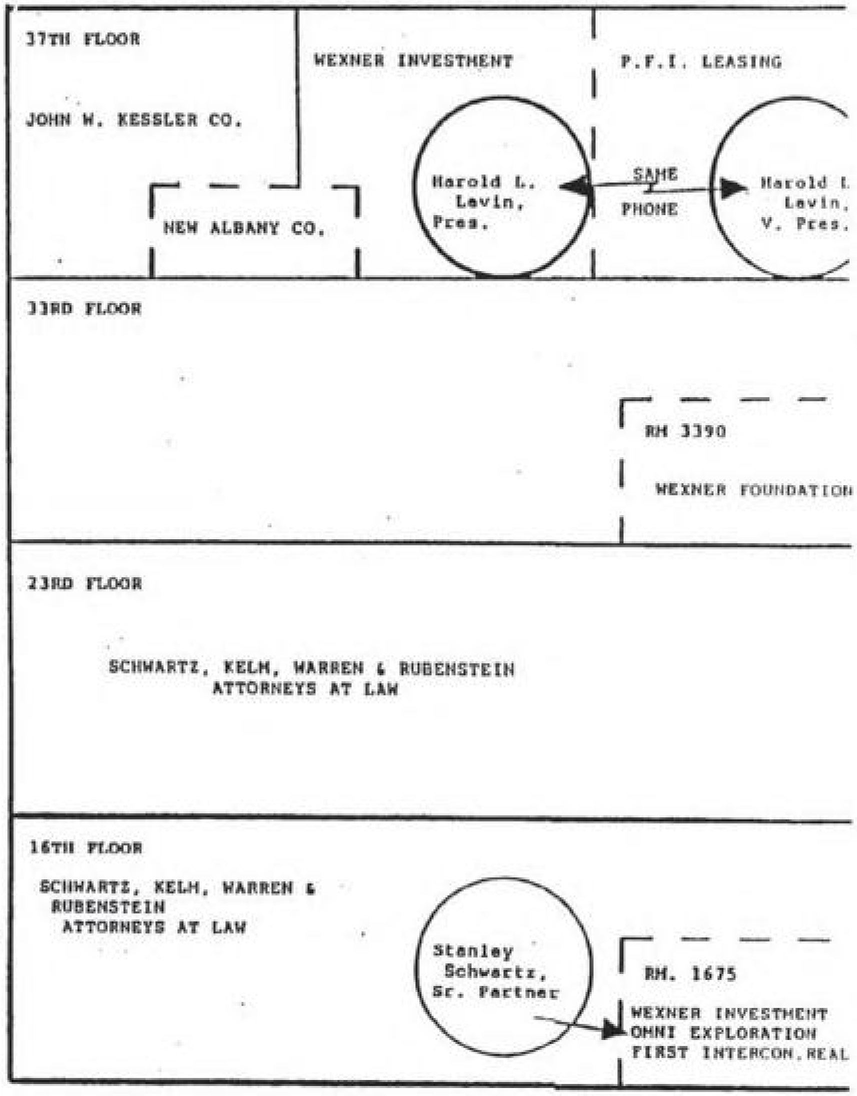
1985 - 1990


MAJOR CHORD JAZZ CLUB
COLUMBUS CITY COUNCIL
JERRY IANNONO PRES
JERRY II CORP
INVESTORS
SNJC HOLDING INC SUITE 3710 HUNTINGTON CENTER
SCHWARTZ, KELM, WARREN & RUBENSTEIN LAW FIRM
JAMES BALTHASER ATTY
ARTHUR SHAPIRO
INVESTORS
W & K PARTNERSHIP (PARTNERS UNKNOWN, NOT REGISTERED)
ANNEXATION OF WEXLEY LAND
WEXNER ASST BUS MGR NEVER HEARD OF SNJC
LAW FIRM FOR THE LIMITED (SHAPIRO)
THE LIMITED
WEXLEY
JOHN KESSLER
LES WEXNER
WEXNER INVESTMENTS 3710 HUNTINGTON CTR
ROBT. MOROSKY
GLIMCHER GROUP
EDWARD DEBARTOLO CO
EDW. DEBARTOLO
WALSH TRUCKING
FRANK WALSH
GENOVESE LAROCCA L C N FAMILY
COPY

The full text of the Columbus police document written by Elisabeth Leupp, an analyst with the Organized Crime Bureau, entitled "Shapiro Homicide Investigation: Analysis and Hypothesis." The document examines the murder of the lawyer Arthur Shapiro and focuses extensively on Leslie Wexner and his associates. https://archive.org/details/shapiromurderfilecomplete1.

HUNTINGTON CENTER OFFICE BLDG.
41 SOUTH HIGH STREET

AUGUST, 1990


37TH FLOOR
JOHN W. KESSLER CO.
NEW ALBANY CO.
WEXNER INVESTMENT
Harold L. Levin, Pres.
SAME PHONE
P.F.I. LEASING
Harold L Levin, V. Pres.
33RD FLOOR
RM 3390
WEXNER FOUNDATION
23RD FLOOR
SCHWARTZ, KELM, WARREN & RUBENSTEIN ATTORNEYS AT LAW
16TH FLOOR
SCHWARTZ, KELM, WARREN & RUBENSTEIN ATTORNEYS AT LAW
Stanley Schwartz, Sr. Partner
RM. 1675
WEXNER INVESTMENT
OMNI EXPLORATION
FIRST INTERCON. REAL

The full text of the Columbus police document written by Elisabeth Leupp, an analyst with the Organized Crime Bureau, entitled "Shapiro Homicide Investigation: Analysis and Hypothesis." The document examines the murder of the lawyer Arthur Shapiro and focuses extensively on Leslie Wexner and his associates. https://archive.org/details/shapiromurderfilecomplete1.

INDEX

Index

A

Abbell, Michael 46, 64
Abedi, Agha Hasan 19, 176, 238
Acosta, Alex 20
Ainslie, Michael 80
Air America 240
Aitken, Jonathan 148, 167
Aksilenko, Valentin 336, 337
Alexander & Alexander (A&A) 96, 97
Alexander Howden group 96
Alito, Samuel Jr. 94
Allen, Charles 74, 78, 125, 175, 176, 336
Allen & Co 74, 336
Allen, Herbert 74, 78, 125, 175, 176, 336
Allen, Paul 284, 285, 327-330, 351
Alltel (formerly Systematics) 183
Amazon 338, 340
Amdocs 130
American Banker 188, 226
American Invesco 37, 38, 40, 44
American Israel Public Affairs Committee (AIPAC) 115, 116, 137, 138, 360
American Jewish Year Book 113
AmeriCares 77, 96, 121
Andreessen Horowitz 285, 291, 346, 356
Andropov, Yuri 25
Anthony, Sheila 183
Antonio, Pan 27, 78, 197, 199, 200, 248

API Group 284
Apollo Global Management 61, 68, 78, 122, 139, 173
Arafat, Yasser 127
Archer, Jeffrey 147, 148, 167
Arden, Alicia 269
Argus Corporation 131, 141
Arkansas Development Finance Authority (ADFA) 187, 188, 193, 211
Arkansas International Development Corporation II (AIDC II) 194
Arkansas Systems 187, 188, 193, 226
Arkla Inc 211, 231
Armoni, Avinoam 120
Arthur, Richard 178
Arvest 212
Asian Pacific Advisory Council (APAC) 209, 210
Atlas Corporation 131, 132, 141
AT&T 163, 321
Aurora Gasoline Company 74, 76
Automated Intelligence Systems Inc. (AISI) 203
Avery, Jake 125
Aviloop 267
Azulay, Avner 126

B

Bache & Company 6, 7
Backweb 331
Bacow, Lawrence 122
Baddeley, Jean 220
Baird, David G. 59, 131, 141, 175
Baker, Howard 153, 154
Baker, James III 62, 155, 246, 256
Baltimore Sun 110, 137, 138, 230
Banca Nazionale del Lavoro (BNL) 209, 210
Band, Doug 50, 303, 304, 307, 309, 343
Bank Louis-Dreyfus 59

Bank of Credit and Commerce Hong Kong (BCCHK) 16, 17, 20
Bank of Credit and Commerce International (BCCI) 14, 16-19, 22, 34, 45, 46, 60, 68, 83, 126, 140, 153, 173, 176, 186, 190, 191, 195, 227, 237, 238, 241, 245, 255, 259
Bank of New York (BoNY) 7
Barak, Ehud 21, 22, 53, 54, 67, 84, 114, 126, 127, 137, 140, 254, 284-286, 322, 328, 331, 346, 349, 360, 361
Barenboim, Daniel 2
Barrack, Tom 49
Barr, Donald 2, 3
Barrett, Anthony 53, 54
Barrett, Jonathan 54
Barr, William 2, 3, 31
Barry, E.P. 101, 184
Barry, Maryanne Trump 49
Baumgold, Julie 66, 101, 104, 108, 137
Bayou Group 126
BCCI Affair, The 18, 34, 68, 140
Bear Stearns 4-6, 8-10, 12, 16, 18, 27, 55, 56, 72, 88, 96, 172, 224
Bechtel family 176
Begin, Menachem 110, 117, 126, 376
Bell, George 163, 321
Bellinger, Patricia 122
Benguet 175, 176
Ben-Gurion, David 110, 114
Ben-Menashe, Ari 20-22, 34, 130, 141, 146, 166
Bentsen, Lloyd Jr. 172, 190
Bentsen, Lloyd Sr. 172
Bernstein, Philip 65, 112
Berry, Eleanor 143
Beverly Enterprises 190
Beyer, James 178, 225
Bezos, Jeff 340, 354
bgC3 346, 347
Biden, Hunter 372
Biden, Joe 333, 342, 353, 370, 372, 378

Bill & Melinda Gates Foundation 212, 286, 319, 329, 342, 345, 346, 355
Bin Laden, Osama 159
Biomatics 347, 356
Birthright-Taglit 125
Bjorlin, Fary 272
Bjorlin, Nadia 272
Black, Conrad 50, 131, 132, 133, 141
Black Cube 322, 360
Black, Eli 78,
Black, George Montegu Jr. 131
Black, Leon 61, 101, 122, 173, 215, 224, 305, 334
Blair, Tony 15, 223
Blake, William 338
Bloch, Felix 25, 35
Block, Alan 35, 63, 102, 225, 231
Bloomberg 231, 260, 271, 316, 328, 347, 354, 368, 378
Bloomfield, Louis Mortimer 176
Blue World Alliance 345, 356
B'nai B'rith International 82, 86, 111, 112
Bogen, Joseph 86
Bonk, Noa 279
Bonner, Yelena 332
Bonnouvrier, Jerome 265
Bordes, Pamella 17
Bovino, Kelly 334
Bower, Tom 220, 232
Brachetti Peretti, Ferdinando Maria 284
Branch, Peter 2, 4
Brandt, Elliot 115
Brantley, Martha 213, 231
Brater, Mitchell 29
Brewton, Peter 39, 44, 62-64, 66, 69
Brian, Earl W. 22, 35, 41-43, 46, 52, 176, 336
Brin, Sergey 50, 340
Brockman, John 334-340, 353, 354

Brockman, Max 59, 73, 78, 79, 101, 103, 104, 107, 112, 114, 125, 128, 231, 331, 339
Bronfman, Charles 24, 74, 124, 125, 155, 217, 232, 331
Bronfman Dynasty: The Rothschilds of the New World 68
Bronfman, Edgar 4, 6, 7, 9, 24, 44, 59, 60, 68, 74, 82, 112, 124-126, 155, 168, 175, 200, 217, 222
Bronfman family 125, 217
Bronfman, Matthew 222
Bronfman, Minda 59, 68
Brooks, Diana 81
Browne, John 210
Brown, Hank 18, 34, 140
Brown, John Y. 190
Brown, Michael 209
Brown, Ron 191, 192, 195, 200, 204, 206, 207, 211, 212, 230, 231, 248, 249, 251
Brownstein, Norman 40, 44, 45
Brunel, Jean Luc 54, 263-268, 287, 288, 309
Bryen, Stephen 133
Buchris, Pinchas 360, 361, 376
Buckley, William 132
Buffett, Jimmy 216
Burda, William F. 93
Bush, George H.W. 3, 44, 51, 61, 83, 155, 160
Bush, George W. 134-136, 254, 262, 304, 305
Bush, Jeb 46
Bush, Jonathan 160
Bush, Neil 44, 46
Business Insider 30, 36, 55, 67, 105, 233, 288, 339, 340, 353, 354, 356, 378
By the late John Brockman 335

C

Cabaret 147
Cabazon Indian Reservation 42, 43, 46, 63
Cadell, Pat 215

Calcalist Tech 322
Cameron, David 130, 141
Cam Gears Limited 12, 13
Campbell, Naomi 135, 268, 283, 304, 328
Capital Cities Communications 41, 63
Capone, Al 125
Carabbia, Ronald 93
Carbyne (software company) 84, 359, 360, 361, 362, 376
Carbyne911 (Reporty) 84, 284, 285, 328, 346, 359, 370
Carey, Hugh 30, 43, 44
Carillon Holdings 346
"Carolyn" (victim) 273, 276, 277, 341
Carr, Fred 39
Carter, Billy 131
Carter, Jimmy 131, 309, 336
Casey, William J. 10, 14, 18, 41, 63, 255, 258, 308
Casolaro, Danny 34, 46, 63, 64
Castle Bank and Trust 38, 63, 64, 82, 145, 176, 285, 296
Castro, Fidel 317
Cayne, James 5
CBS News 21, 28, 35, 72
Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) 3, 10, 11, 14, 17-20, 24, 38, 41, 42, 55, 59, 60, 63, 68, 77, 82, 83, 96, 99, 103, 124, 128, 129, 131, 148, 149, 154, 159, 160, 165, 172, 175, 181, 182, 184, 208, 217, 224, 232, 235, 237-243, 252, 254-256, 258, 291, 297, 309, 317, 336, 337, 349, 363-368, 377, 378
Chamberlain, John 187
Chao-Ying, Liu 205, 206
Chartouni, Marijke 273
Check Point 331
Cheney, Dick 135
Chennault, Anna 235, 242, 243
Chertoff, Livia 83
Chertoff, Michael 83, 84, 361
Chesler, Louis 79, 175
Chicago Tribune 38, 63, 152, 200, 248, 250, 261
Chidiac, Charles 209, 210, 230

Chiliad 368, 369, 371, 378
Chinagate 188, 206, 207, 212, 213, 215, 218, 220, 243-246, 248, 251, 256, 333
China Resources (Chinese government's agent) 195, 227, 245, 250, 251, 256
Chinoy, Nazir 19
Christie's 80, 81, 270
Christopher, Warren 127
Chung, Johnny Chien Chuen 203-206, 218, 229, 248, 252
Church, George 341, 347, 354, 356, 357
Churchill, Winston 74
Cicogna, Gianfranco 146-148, 158
Clay, Lucius D. 113
Clermont Club 8, 132, 150, 369
Cleveland Magazine 92, 105
Cleveland Plain Dealer 90
Clifford, Clark 173, 177, 180, 186, 204
Clinton, Bill Clinton 8, 16-18, 22, 33, 36, 50, 55, 57, 66, 67, 119, 121, 123, 126-131, 139, 140, 141, 155, 160, 171-174, 188, 189-197, 199, 200-202, 205-207, 209, 210, 212, 213, 215, 216, 218-233, 235, 243, 244, 246, 247, 249, 251-255, 257, 260-262, 280, 281, 283, 290, 295, 296, 299, 301-313, 315-318, 322, 332, 338, 342-345, 349, 353, 355, 356, 372, 376
Clinton, Chelsea 313, 343
Clinton Global Initiative (CGI) 123, 303, 313, 343
Clinton Health Access Initiative (CHAI) 343
Clinton, Hillary 66, 178-183, 186, 187, 203-205, 211, 222, 223, 233, 257, 296, 315, 317, 322, 344, 345, 355, 372
Cloherty, Patricia 42
Cockburn, Andrew 142, 219, 232
Cogswell, Steve 208
Cohen, Stephen 137, 140, 366
Cohn, Roy 17, 18, 24, 25, 33-35, 41, 48, 49, 65, 132, 154, 165, 175, 222
Columbus Dispatch 84-87, 104, 105, 235, 236, 239, 240, 259, 260
Commercial Credit Mortgage Company 47
CommTouch 321-331, 350-352
Continuity of government (COG) 363
Control Data Corporation (CDC) 46, 47, 64, 333
Cooper Union 1, 273

Cooper, William 14
Corbally, Thomas 149, 160
Corson, Maurice 111, 112, 137
Corson, Robert 51, 62
Cosmos Bank 175, 224
Costello, Frank 41
Council of Jewish Federations and Welfare Funds (CJF) 112
Council on Foreign Relations (CFR) 60, 61, 68, 121
Covenant House 77, 96, 121
Crain's New York 54, 57, 59, 66
Cray Research 333
Cray, Seymour 333
Crocker, Douglas II 38-40
Crown, Henry 125, 132, 224
Crown, Lester 125, 175, 331
Crown Zellerbach 8
Cumpsty, John 113, 137
Cuomo, Andrew 156
Cuomo, Mario 28, 44, 64, 156-158, 168
Cyren 323, 330, 350, 352

D

Daihatsu International Trading Corp 197, 198, 199
Daily Beast, The 29, 31, 34, 35, 53, 65, 67, 169, 174, 224, 228, 233, 264, 265, 287-291, 314, 353-356
Daily Mail 81, 161, 169, 173, 189, 213, 272, 282, 294, 295, 314
Daily Mirror 21, 144
Daily Telegraph 132, 166
Dalitz, Moe 125, 175, 224
Dalton School 2-5, 31
Danziger, Itsik 331, 352
Dark Alliance 20
Darktrace 370, 378
DARPA 251, 333, 364

Data Broadcasting Corp 43
Davidson, James 179, 226
Davies, Nick 21, 167
Dawkins, Richard 340
DeBartolo, Edward J. Jr 40, 44, 79, 93, 94, 103, 105, 172, 224
DeBartolo, Edward Sr 88, 92, 93
DeCamp, John 102
Deep Politics and the Death of JFK 224
de Gunzburg, Alain 59
Dellal, Jack 369, 378
Democratic National Committee (DNC) 189, 191-196, 199, 200, 204-206, 209, 215-219, 232, 248, 251, 254, 305
Dennett, Daniel 340
Department of Health and Human Services (HHS) 370
Deroo, John 85
Dershowitz, Alan 122, 222, 332
DeSanti, Donato 95
Desert Inn 175, 224
Detroit: Race and Uneven Development 75
Deuss, John 55, 67, 214, 282, 284
Deutsch, David 338
Deutsche Bank 160, 221
DeVoe, Jack Raymond 82
Dickinson, Janice 268
Dickson, Peter Maxwell 14
Dillon, Joseph F. 86
Dillon, Martin 35, 64, 86, 167, 168, 169, 262, 326
Dime Savings Bank of New York 52, 61, 66
Dimon, Jamie 88
Discipline and Punish 363
Dizengoff, Alex 360
Djerassi, Alexander 345, 356
Domb, Sam 218, 219
Donovan, William J. 131
Douglas, Michael 216
Drexel Burnham Lambert 8, 38-40, 46, 64, 125, 215

Driver, Jennifer 214, 215
Drysdale Government Securities 11, 23
Dubin, Eva Andersson 214, 263, 265, 272, 281
Dubin, Glenn 122, 139
Dubin, Tiffany 270
Duff, Patricia 215, 216
du Pré, Jacqueline 2, 293
Dyer, Marjorie 87
Dynamic Energy 209, 210, 211, 212
Dyson, Esther 332, 333, 339, 353, 354
Dyson, Freeman 338, 352

E

Economist, The 372, 379
Edge Group 319, 334, 335, 338-341, 347, 353, 354, 373
Editas 347, 357
Edtimiades, Nicholas 195
Edward, Bradley 177
Edward J. DeBartolo Corporation 92
Edwards, Brad 50, 267
eGenesis 347, 356
Eisenberg, Calvin 39, 40
Eisenberg, Joseph L 86, 104, 257, 258
Eisenhower, Dwight D 77
Eitan, Rafi 128, 322, 323, 350, 363
Electronic Intifada 35, 134
Electronic Realty Associates Inc. (ERA) 46, 47, 64
Elichai, Amir 360
Elissar, Eliahu Ben 127
Elite Model Management 105, 135, 266, 283, 287, 289, 354
E.L. Rothschild LP 222
Emery Air Freight 27
Emil, Arthur D. 44
Empire Trust Company 7, 32

Energy Systems Company, The (ENESCO) 54
Enron 80
Epstein, Jeffrey 1-3, 8, 10, 12, 14, 15, 18, 19, 28, 29-36, 47, 48, 53, 55, 57, 65-69, 72, 78, 81, 89, 95, 96, 101, 102, 104-106, 114, 116, 118, 121, 124, 129, 130, 136, 144, 149, 154-157, 159, 160, 162, 164-167, 169-173, 180, 186, 188, 204, 210, 213, 218, 220, 222, 224-226, 231-233, 235, 240, 243, 246, 248, 249, 253, 256, 260, 263-266, 271-275, 278, 284, 287-290, 293, 294, 296, 301, 304, 307, 312, 314-317, 321, 328, 330, 338, 339, 341, 343, 345, 346, 349, 353-356, 359, 372, 373, 376, 378, 379
Epstein, Mark 1, 2, 53, 266
Epstein/Maxwell 28, 181, 271, 278, 279, 280
Epstein, Paula 1, 31, 231
Epstein, Seymour 1
Erlich, Yigal 321, 322
Erskine, Alex 55
E-Systems 182
European, The 149
Evening Standard 11, 32, 65, 163, 170, 240, 259, 277, 287, 290, 295, 297, 298, 314, 319, 320, 331, 349
Ewing, Karen 189, 213

F

Facebook 35, 291, 338, 340, 361
Faith, Nicholas 265
Farmer, Annie 271
Farmer, Maria 271, 281, 320, 349
Fastalliances: Power Your E-Business 329, 351
Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI) 20, 25, 34, 58, 68, 81, 85, 93, 105, 128, 130, 133, 140, 141, 160, 178, 184, 185, 189, 210, 212, 225, 230, 258, 299, 315, 336, 337, 368, 369
Fedus-Fields, Cindy 270
Feith, Douglas 133, 252, 253
Férnandez, Antonio García 11
Filthy Rich 11, 32

Financial General Bankshares 153
Financial Times 134, 357, 360, 376
Finkelstein, James 222
Fiorina, Carly 369
First National Bank of Louisville 190
Fisher, Ivan 61, 62
Fisher, Max 35, 59, 73-79, 81-84, 101, 103, 104, 107, 112, 114, 125, 126, 128, 129, 175, 260, 331
Fisher, Paula Heil 5
Fiske, Robert 177
Fitrakis, Bob 66, 87, 88, 90, 91, 101, 104, 105, 129, 141, 142, 239-242, 259, 260
Fitts, Catherine Austin 241
Fleiss, Heidi 274, 289
Florida Department of Law Enforcement (FDLE) 93
Flying Tiger Line 235
Flying Tigers 235, 238, 242, 243
Forbes 32, 66, 102, 140, 181-184, 224, 226, 288, 307, 316, 377
Forbes, Malcolm 32, 184
Ford, Gerald 77, 101, 121
Ford, Henry II 75-79
Ford, Tom 268, 288
Forester, Lynn (Lynn Forester de Rothschild) 57, 220-223, 233, 328, 342
Forexster Limited 55, 56, 67
Fortune 38, 63, 77, 233
Fostergate 181-187, 226, 257, 333
Foster, Lisa 183
Foster, Vince 177-187, 204, 225, 226, 257
Foucault, Michel 363
Fowler, Don 194, 195, 216
Fox Business 5
FOX News 130
Frank, Cathy 222
Fratianno, Jimmy 93
Freeman, Lawrence 82, 337, 352
French Connection 61
Friedan, Betty 3

Friedman, Herbert 84, 113, 114, 137

G

Gafni, Shelley 214
GAGE Corporation 211, 212
Gandhi, Mahatma 223
Garrison, Jennifer 214, 236
Garten, Jeffrey 192
Gates, Bill 12, 163, 285, 286, 302, 312, 315, 319, 320, 327, 329, 334, 336, 339, 342, 344-347, 353-357
Gates, Melinda 344, 345
Gates Foundation 212, 286, 311, 319, 329, 342-347, 349, 355
Gell-Mann, Murray 337, 338
Gemini Israel Ventures 322-324, 349, 350
General Dynamics 131, 132
Genovese crime family 92, 94
GeoMiliTech 82, 190, 255
Gergen, David 121-123, 139
Getty, Ann 79
Gibraltar Savings 38
Gillespie, Hugh Edwin 55, 67
Giroday, Jean de la 190
Giroir, C. Joseph 191-195, 197
Giuffre, Virginia 50, 122, 210, 214, 266, 274, 277, 290, 298, 299, 314, 333, 341
Giussani, Luca 146
Glass, Frederick 175
Glencore 55
Glenn, Rudolph 33, 86, 139
Globes 324, 327, 350
Go2Net 327
Goetzman, Robert 185
Golden, Peter 73, 101
Goldman, Guido 59, 60, 68
Goldman, Nahum 59

Goldman Sachs 151, 171, 172, 224
Goldsmith, Gerald 8, 174-177, 180, 186
Goldsmith, Isabel 8
Goldsmith, James 2, 8, 132, 150, 271, 369
Good, Kenneth M. 44, 45, 317
Google 50, 330, 332, 338, 340, 345, 347, 361, 371
Gorbachev, Mikhail 25
Gore, Al 127, 196, 202-204, 216, 307, 332
Goren, Eduardo Titelman 120
Gormley, William 208
Gouletas-Carey, Evangeline 18, 30, 43, 46, 47
Gouletas, Victor and Nicholas 37-41, 43-47, 53, 99
Govtech Summit 370
Grabbe, J. Orlin 184-186
Grace, J. Peter 77, 96
Grand Bahamas Development Company (DEVCO) 79, 175, 176
Gratitude America Limited 12, 265
Gray, Robert Keith 17, 18, 47, 140, 153-155, 168, 235, 242, 243, 307
Great Wall Industries 206, 244, 251, 252
Greenberg, Alan "Ace" 4, 5, 9, 10, 24, 72, 354, 355, 377, 378
Green, Ernie 1, 141, 201, 204, 248-250
Green, Steven 305, 307, 316
Groff, Lesley 280, 290
Gross, David 65, 132, 134, 141, 142, 265
Grossman, Paul 4
Grosz, Joseph 40
Guardian 33, 138, 162, 167, 169, 172, 220, 232, 264, 287, 289, 315, 320, 325, 329, 334, 335, 353, 378, 379
Gucci 268
Guggenheim, Eileen 271
Guinness, Edward 280
Gulfstream Land & Development Corp, 44, 56, 64
Gunzburg, Minda de 59, 60, 68
Gutfruend, John 215

H

Haaretz 137, 140, 324, 325, 330, 349, 350
Hadron 41, 42
Haganah 83, 97, 114
Haines, Avril 370
Haley, Maria 192
Halper, Daniel 65, 129, 315
Hambro International Bank 42
Hamilton, George 148, 149, 160, 167, 176
Hamilton, William 41, 42, 368
Hammer, Armand 79, 153, 308
Hammer, Julius 153
Hammond, Jerry 88, 91, 92
Hampson, Thomas 195
Hancock, Matt 370
Harris, Shane 366, 377
Harvard Crimson 118, 121, 122, 139, 173, 224, 378
Harvard Kennedy School's Center for Public Leadership (CPL) 121-123
Hassenfeld, Sylvia 217, 232
Hastert, Dennis 136, 142
Haute, Donald 177, 178
Hayden, David 162
Hayes, Chalmer "Charles" 184, 226
Hazell, Claire (Claire Iveagh) 280, 281, 286
Heath, Ted 145
Heifer International 212, 231
Helliwell, Paul 14, 38, 63, 64, 82, 103, 176
Hernandez-Cartaya, Guillermo 172, 190, 224
Hernandez-Cartaya, Marcelo 172
Hersh, Seymour 21, 133, 141
Herzog, Chaim 132
Hewlett-Packard 369
Hill and Knowlton 154
Hiller Robert L. 110-112, 137

Hillis, Danny 56, 333
Hillman, Gerald 134
Hines, Gerald D. 51, 52
Hip Hing Holdings 191
Hockersmith, Kaki 179, 180
Hoffa, Jimmy 175
Hoffenberg, Steven 5, 11, 12, 15-17, 21, 26-30, 36, 47, 48, 50, 99, 293
Hoffman, Jeffrey 29, 33, 35
Hoffman, Kathyrn 207
Hoffman, Reid 340
Hollander, Roy Den 160, 221
Hollinger International 131-135, 141, 253, 365
Horn, Myles J. 53
Ho, Stanley 201, 202, 228, 229
Houraney, George 49
Houston Post 52
Hoy, Patrick 33
Hsia, Maria 196, 202
Huang, Johnny 188-196, 201, 203, 204, 206, 207, 209, 218, 227, 245, 246, 248, 254
Hubbell, Webster 193, 210, 211, 216
Huffington Post 342
Human Rights Watch 362
Humphreys, J. Herbert 82, 103
Hussein, Saddam 133

I

iCognito (now Pure Sight) 331
IDC Herzliya 24, 25, 38, 175, 176
IMB Capital 46, 47
Imperial Savings and Loan 38-41, 53, 63
Independent 17, 33, 64, 101, 142, 230, 316, 355
Information on Demand 162, 320, 326
Information, The 339

InformationWeek 55
In-Q-Tel 365, 366, 377
Insight (magazine) 129, 141
Inslaw 41, 42, 63, 177, 363, 368
Intellectual Ventures 334
Intercontinental Assets Group (IAG) 10, 11, 89, 96
Intercontinental Realty 89, 90, 104
Interlochen Centre for the Arts in Michigan 1, 271, 272, 288
International Trade Administration (ITA) 188, 192, 193, 195, 207, 208, 212, 230
Iran-Contra scandal 3, 14, 15, 82, 83, 99, 103, 153, 154, 237, 238, 240, 243, 244, 255, 262, 326, 363, 364, 377
Israel Defense Force (IDF) 323, 360
Israel, Fortuna (Madame Tuna) 17
Israel, Samuel III 126
Israel-U.S. Bi-national Industrial Research and Development Foundation (BIRD) 322, 323
Israel Venture Network (IVN) 331, 352
Ito, Joi 334, 339

J

Jackson, Henry "Scoop" 133
Jackson, James 87
Jacobs, Richard 153
Jain, Aki 366
Janoski, Kathleen 208, 230
Jardine, Francis 55, 214, 281, 284
Jardine Matheson & Co 201
JAS Liquidation Inc. 89, 104
Jay, Peter 149
Jefferson Savings and Loan 172
Jeffrey Epstein Scholarship Lodge (Green Lake Lodge) 1, 271
J. Epstein & Co. 10, 53, 54
Jerusalem Post 25, 35, 103, 155, 168, 170, 326, 331, 349, 351, 359
Jewish Agency 59, 77, 83, 84, 101, 114, 125, 217, 331

Jewish Chronicle 104, 109, 137, 351
Jewish Telegraphic Agency 9, 32, 103, 104, 116, 138, 140, 168, 232, 350
Jewish Weekly 324, 325
Johnson, Boris 148
Johnson, Don 216
Johnson, Stanley and Rachel 148
Johnston, Maurice (Robert) 13, 233, 354, 377
Jones, Julia Hughes 197
Jones, Rick Allen 345
Jordan, Vernon 216, 231
JPMorgan 88, 344, 347
Judicial Watch 209, 230
Jueren, Shen 196, 251
Juilliard School 272
Junkermann, Nicole 135, 283-285, 328, 351, 360, 361, 370
Jun, Wang 200, 206, 247-251

K

K2

Intelligence 160
Kahn, Irvin 175, 225
Kaminsky, Stephen 207
Kanter, Burton 14, 38, 39, 63, 64
Kanuth, Bob 217, 232
Karin Models 263, 264, 266, 309
Karp, Alex 363, 365-367
Katelman, Fern 111
Kates, Faith 264, 265
Katz, Harold 257, 262, 323
Kearny, Jude 199
Keating, Charles 39, 40, 45, 46, 64
Kellen, Mary 279

Kellen, Sarah 273, 279, 281, 286, 304, 307, 339
Kennedy, Jim 310
Kennedy, Joseph P. 156
Kennedy, Joe II 156, 157
Kennedy, John F. Jr. 156, 158, 169
Kennedy, Kerry 156-158
Kennedy, Robert F. 156-159
Kennedy, Robert F. Jr. 158, 159
Kerry, John 18, 34, 140, 203
Kessler, John W. "Jack" 88
Kessler, Ronald 17, 51, 84-88, 90, 92, 95, 104
Keswick family 202
Ketcham, Chris 130, 141, 377
Keyser Ullman 369

KGB 25, 151, 219, 336, 337
Khashoggi, Adnan 12-18, 20, 23, 24, 33, 34, 51, 52, 62, 148, 149, 154, 160, 167, 176, 214, 218, 244, 282, 328
Khashogg, Petrina 328
Kimche, David 257, 331
Kimmel, Sidney 176
King, Larry 80, 238
Kissinger, Henry 24, 60, 132, 141, 154, 222, 233, 309
Kleman, Leah 271
Klum, Heidi 268, 288
Knights of Malta 77, 146
Koehler, Robert 22
Kogan, Dylan 265
Kohler, Edward 28
Kollek, Teddy 9, 120, 217
Koppel, Abigail 97
Koppel, Yehuda 83
Kornbluth, Jesse 11, 32
Korshak, Sidney 125
Korski, Daniel 370, 376, 378
Kroll Associates 149, 160, 221
Kroll, Jules 149, 159, 160
Kryuchkov, Vladimir 25
Kuomintang (KMT) 201
Kushner, Jared 48
Kuvin, Spencer T. 279

L

La Cosa Nostra (LCN) 91
La Costa Club 63, 64
Lador, Moshe 120
Lady Ghislaine 48, 186
Lander, Eric 333, 341, 353
Landon, Curt 31, 66, 104, 290, 315

Lansky, Meyer 79, 93, 94, 126, 128, 175, 241
Lauder, Ronald 24, 25, 35, 38, 52, 133, 222, 331
Lay, Ken 80
L Brands 122, 269
Leach, Jim 182
Leese, Douglas 11-17, 26, 29, 32, 33, 244, 249, 254, 265, 300
Leese, Jane Primrose 13
Leese, Julian 12, 13, 26, 265
Leese, Nicholas 16
Leese, Nick 12, 167
Lehman Brothers 80, 151, 201, 248, 249
Lekem (agency) 323
Leshem, Lital 360
Lessin, Jessica 339, 340
Leupp, Elizabeth A. 87
Lev, Amir 323
Levine, Dennis B. 7, 8, 10, 32, 376
Levin, Harold 51, 89, 90, 99, 221
Lewek, James 208
Lewinsky, Monica 129, 141, 216
Liebman, Charles S. 112, 113, 137
Lilley, Peter 172
Lincoln Savings 39, 40, 43
Linden, Dana Weschler 184
Lindner, Carl Jr. 81, 82, 102, 103
Lindsey, Bruce 101, 195, 303
Lippo Group 16, 190-195, 197, 199, 227, 307
Lipson, Brenda 336
Liquid Funding 55
Livingston, Craig 178
Llama Company 211, 212
Loeb, John 7
London & Overseas 146
Lonrho 369
Lorad Company 13-15, 33, 244
Loral Space Systems 206, 207, 229, 251-253, 261, 262, 365

Lord Granby 145
Lord Rothschild 132
Los Angeles Times 6, 7, 32, 63, 64, 105, 128, 140, 225, 227-229, 246, 247, 260, 261, 317, 351
Loutchansky, Grigori 218, 219, 232
LS Power 54, 55, 67
Lucchesi, Andy 49
Luminus Capital Partners 55
Luminus Capital Partners Master Fund 55
Luminus Energy Partners 55
Lum, Nora and Eugene 209-212
Lum, Trisha 209
Luntz, Frank 134
Luskinen, Seppo 56

M

Macioce, Thomas A. 41
Magaziner, Ira 303, 343
Magellan (search engine) 162-164, 169, 170, 321, 327, 349, 351
Maguire, Kelly 58
Mail on Sunday 31, 65, 156, 167, 290, 314
Main Core 363, 364, 374
Mainland Savings 62
Major Realty 79, 103
Malina, Roger 162, 345, 356
Mandelson, Peter 50
Manners, David 145
Mantel, Gideon 323-325, 328, 352
Mar-a-Lago 49, 50, 274, 294, 298
Marcello, Carlos 93
Marcinkova, Nadia 267, 278, 286, 287, 290
Marcos family 51, 148, 149, 160, 167, 176, 225
Marcos, Ferdinand 148
Marcos, Imelda 148, 149

Marcum, Curtis K 87
Marguleas, Howard 78
Marquez, James 126
Marshall, Jonathan 224, 225
Martinez, Leonel 46
Matson, Katinka 340
Mavroleon, Basil “Bluey” 146
Mavroleon, Carlos 158, 169
Mavroleon, Nicholas 146
Maxwell, Betty 3, 143, 161, 165, 264, 325
Maxwell, Christine 162, 163, 320, 321, 325, 326, 345, 368
Maxwell Communications Corp 172
Maxwell Communications Network 151, 172, 330, 352
Maxwell Corporate Gifts 152
Maxwell, Ghislaine 19, 21, 23, 31, 32, 48-51, 58, 65, 66, 68, 81, 100, 102, 118, 129, 143-149, 151, 152, 154, 156-161, 163-170, 173, 174, 176, 177, 186, 214, 225, 233, 243, 254, 260, 263, 264, 266-269, 271-275, 277, 279-283, 285, 288-290, 293-299, 304, 306, 307, 312, 314, 316-318, 320, 321, 325, 326, 330, 332, 339-342, 345, 354, 355, 368, 372, 373
Maxwell, Ian 143, 161, 220
Maxwell, Isabel 8, 162, 163, 288, 320, 321, 324-332, 345, 349-352, 368
Maxwell, Kevin 163, 220, 368
Maxwell, Michael 143
Maxwell, Robert 7, 8, 20, 21, 23, 25, 28, 32, 35, 46, 48, 52, 61, 64, 121, 128, 132, 143-145, 149-157, 159-162, 165-168, 170-172, 215, 219, 220, 222, 224, 255, 257, 259, 262-264, 294, 314, 320, 322, 324-326, 330, 333, 337, 349, 350, 363, 368, 369
Maxwell: The Final Verdict 220, 232
Mays, Richard 218
MC2 (model agency) 266
McCaw, Craig 342
McCoy, Alfred 32, 36
McCracken, Ed 332
McCurry, Michael D. 181
McGrath, Kevin 44, 64
McKinley Group 162-164, 170, 320, 321, 327, 349, 351, 368

McLarty, Thomas “Mack” 188, 194, 211, 342
McNulty, Paul 116
M.D.C. Holdings 39, 40, 43, 44, 45
Medavoy, Michael 216
Media Bypass 182-184, 226
Mega Group 24, 66, 109, 124-129, 131, 155, 156, 166, 175, 186, 205, 217, 218, 222, 331
Meissner, Charles 192, 207
Meister, Robert 96, 97, 99, 105
Meister, Wendy 97
Menuhin, Yehudi 2
Meridor, Sallai 77
Merkel, Angela 123
Merritt, Jerry 98
Messing, F. Andrew 82
Meyer, Bernard 174
Meyers, Betsy 32, 101, 103, 123, 137, 168, 232
MI6 160
Michaels, James 182
Microsoft Corporation 163, 284-286, 319-321, 327-334, 336, 338, 340, 342, 344, 346, 351, 353, 355, 361
Microsoft Network [MSN] 163, 170, 321, 327, 328, 349, 351
Middleton, Mark 188-191, 194, 199, 201, 203, 204, 206, 211-215, 218, 227, 231, 244, 245, 247, 248, 253, 254, 258, 283, 306, 342
Midelfart, Celina 214, 283
Milken, Michael 38-40, 46, 125, 149, 302, 307, 308
Miller, Ron 212
Milstein, Seymour 78, 82
MintPress News 33, 34, 103, 141, 166, 233, 240, 241, 291, 315, 349, 369, 376, 377
Mirror Group 144, 146, 151, 166
Mischer, Walter 51, 52, 62
Mitchell, George 29, 131, 210, 212, 214, 246, 283, 334
MIT Media Lab 334, 344
Mizel, Larry 39, 40, 63
Mlavsky, Ed 322, 323, 349, 350
Mogilevich, Semion 7, 48, 146, 151, 219

Moldea, Dan 79, 93, 94, 102, 105, 227
Morabia, Nan 46
Morgan, Jeff 64
Moriarty, W. Patrick 20
Morosky, Robert 88, 98
Mortman, Lisa 213
Morton, Bill 67, 207
Moses, Larry 111
Mosimann, Anton 148, 167
Mossad 15, 33, 34, 55, 66, 83, 103, 126-129, 141, 146, 160, 161, 166, 176, 185, 257, 258, 291, 297, 326, 331, 349, 377, 378
Mother Jones 8, 32, 35, 64
Murdoch, Rupert 132, 148, 149
Murdock, David 80
Music Corporation of America (MCA) 125, 153, 196, 308
Musk, Elon 55, 57, 67, 329, 340, 342
Musk, Kimbal 55
Myhrvold, Nathan 331-334, 339, 353, 354

N

Narativ 34, 360, 362, 376
Narus 361
National Economic Council (NEC) 171
National Emergency Number Association (NENA) 359
National Endowment for Democracy (NED) 24
National Health Service (NHS) 370
National Security Agency (NSA) 127, 128, 182, 184, 193, 219, 226, 331, 355, 360, 361, 376 181
Nation, The 133, 140, 141, 262
Neil, Andrew 148
Netanyahu, Benjamin 24, 120, 125, 127, 129, 133, 138, 140, 141, 252
Netanyahu, Yonatan 120
Neufeld, Carl and Sandra 86
New Albany Property 51, 88, 90, 91, 95, 105

Newstar 153
New Times 174, 224, 260
New York Daily News 28, 61, 69, 121, 152
New York Magazine 1, 4, 5, 16, 31, 50, 52, 56, 63, 66, 88, 91, 101, 104, 10-109, 137, 315, 365
New York Post 28, 31, 65, 101, 127, 140, 152, 156, 168, 265, 269, 288-290, 315, 354, 356
New York Times 4, 25, 29, 31, 32, 35, 36, 44, 49, 57, 62-69, 72, 79, 95, 101-103, 105, 107, 114, 118, 137, 138, 140, 141, 148, 150, 166-170, 177, 179, 180, 206, 221, 225-227, 229-233, 251-253, 256, 261, 262, 274, 277, 279, 288-290, 307, 314, 316, 323, 325, 336, 337, 340, 341, 344, 349-351, 353-355, 363, 366, 367, 371, 377, 379
New York University (NYU) 1
Next-Generation 9-11 (NG911) (platform) 361, 362
Next model agency 218, 264, 265, 268, 269, 290, 296, 352, 361, 376
Ng Lap Seng, 197-202, 205, 206, 248-250
Nichols, John Booth 42, 126, 154
Nielsen, Kirstjen 361
Nikolic, Boris 286, 345-348, 356, 357
Nixon Richard 77, 121, 141, 154, 223
N.M. Rothschild 151, 161
No Bull: My Life in and out of the Markets 126
Nordex 219, 220
Norman, James R. 40, 44, 181-184, 186, 187, 224, 226, 308, 317
North, Oliver 46, 82, 240, 363
Nowak, Martin 371
Nussbaum, Bernard 178, 182

O

Oakland Tribune 64
Obama, Barack 345
Obregón, Anna 11, 23
Occidental Petroleum 79, 153, 308
Odlum, Floyd 131, 132, 141

Office of Strategic Services (OSS) 2, 7, 44, 103, 125, 131, 186
Oil Card, The 187, 226
Oklahoma Natural Gas (ONG) 210, 211
Oldfield, Bruce 157, 169
O’Leary, Hazel 205
Omni Oil 88-90
Onassis, Aristotle 37
O’Neill, John P. 160, 169
Operation Magic Carpet 83
Operation Moses 83, 103
Operation Polar Cap 45, 46
Operation Solomon 83
Orlova, Lyoubov 214
Orovitz, Max 79, 103
Ossa Properties 53, 54, 57, 214, 266, 267, 282, 284, 290
Owen, Robert 46
Oxford United 144, 166

P

Pagels, Heinz 338
Pagnotti, Louis 54
Palantir 291, 359, 361-363, 365-371, 376-378
Palm Beach Daily News 22, 34, 225
Palm Beach Post 65, 216, 232, 289
Palmer, Allan George 24
Pardo, Tamir 331
Park, Tongsun 154
Parkview Financial 51, 52, 59
Parsons, Richard 52, 66
Pasternak, Anna 147, 167
Pastora, Eden 46
Patterson, James 11, 32
Payne, Lawrence 208
People, The 144, 145

People's Bank of China 188, 193
People's Liberation Army (PLA) 15, 244, 247, 250
Perelman, Ron 8, 39, 193, 215, 216, 222, 231
Peres, Shimon 54, 122, 139, 331, 351, 352
Pergamon Press 144, 154
Perle, Richard 132-135, 252, 253, 365
Perlman, Itzhak 2
Peters, Vincent "Jimmy" 78
Petrie, Milton 71, 72, 79, 80
PFI Leasing 51, 89, 90, 104
Pharaon, Ghaith 46, 60
Phillips, W.E. 131
Pincus, Louis 83, 103, 323, 350
Pindling, Lynden O. 176
Pinker, Steven 340
Pirie, Robert S. 8, 150, 151, 152
Pivar, Stuart 8, 271
Pizza Connection 62
Playboy 33, 279
Plaza Hotel 48, 49, 165
Poindexter, John 364-367, 377
Pollard, Jonathan 128, 129, 140, 141, 321, 323, 350
Price of Power, The 133, 141
Prince Andrew (Duke of York) 2, 15, 33, 34, 50, 170, 272, 280, 284, 285, 290, 291, 293-301, 312-315, 317, 319, 346
Proctor, Harvey 145-148, 166
Project for a New American Century (PNAC) 135
PROMIS, 19, 34, 41, 42, 47, 52, 63, 126, 128, 151, 154, 162, 176, 177, 186, 222, 320, 322, 323, 324, 326, 327, 359, 362, 363, 368, 369
Prosperi, A. Paul 174, 216
Purple Gang 74
Puscau, Alina 265, 269
Putin, Vladimir 48, 123

Q

Qihan Biotech 347, 357
Quark and the Jaguar, The 337
Queen Elizabeth II 2, 79, 300
Quiet Diplomat 73, 101
Quinn, Jack 127

R

Rabin, Leah 111
Rabin, Yitzhak 111, 117
Radar 260, 363, 377
Rahim, Begum Asghair 19
RAND Corporation 256
Ransome, Sarah 277, 278, 279, 290
Rappaport, Bruce 7, 14, 146, 217
Rauch, Sheila Brewster 157
Ravitch, Richard 3
Ray, Kimberly 205
Raymond, Roy 62, 82, 268
Raz, Arik 120
Razek, Ed 269
Reagan, Ronald 18, 24, 41, 42, 82, 121, 132, 133, 153, 155, 185, 215, 243, 309, 363, 364
Reality Club (Edge) 338
Reeder, G. Wayne 42, 43, 46
Relentless Pursuit 177, 225, 287
Remote Mortgage Origination (RMO) 46, 47
Republic National Bank 46, 82
Research on Demand 162
Revlon 8, 216
Reynolds, Jonathan C. III 22
Riady, James 16, 17, 188, 190, 192, 194, 196, 197, 201, 205-207, 220, 245, 246, 249, 250, 256, 300, 307
Riady, Mochtar 190
Richardson, Bill 131, 222, 283, 334

Richardson, Mary 158, 159, 169
Rich, Denise 105, 126, 127
Rich, Ella 86, 95
Rich, Marc 22, 35, 55, 65, 68, 126, 140, 214, 219, 254, 260, 282
Riconosciuto, Michael 19, 20
Riklis, Meshulam 59
Ritter, Bruce 149, 235
Rizzo, Rinaldo 122
Road Ahead, The 331
Roberts, Peter 360
Roberts, Virginia (*see Giuffre*) 50, 266, 274, 290, 298, 314, 355
Robson, Haley 274, 275, 289
Rockefeller, David 61, 176
Rockefeller, Laurance 176
Rockefeller Foundation 291, 346, 356
Rockefeller, Nelson 52, 311
Rodriguez, Alfredo 277
Rogers & Wells 10
Romney, George 73, 74
Romney, Mitt 73
Rose Law 191, 193, 211
Rosenbaum, Tibor 176
Rosenstiel, Lewis 58, 59, 74, 165, 222
Rosenthal, Benjamin 38
Rosoff, Michael 29
Rosovsky, Henry 116-118, 138, 172
Rosovsky, Nitza 117, 138
Ross, Adriana (Adriana Mucinska) 279, 290
Rosser, Nigel 11, 17, 32, 170, 259, 297-299, 314, 319, 320, 329, 349
Ross, Steve 52
Rothkopf, David 192
Rothschild, Edmond de 46, 60, 82, 112, 176, 331
Rothschild, Evelyn de 150, 222, 331
Rothschild family 150
Rothschild Inc. 8, 150-152
Rowland, Roland Walter "Tiny" 369

Royer, Chris 268
Roys, Etienne des 266
Rubenstein, Richard 88, 89, 243
Rubin, Richard 119, 171-173, 213, 283
Rubloff, Arthur 78, 79
Rumsfeld, Donald 134, 135, 253
Russo, Joe 52

S

Safra, Edmond 46, 82, 112
Sakharov, Andrei 332, 352
Sakhia, Abdur 19
Salas, Esther 160, 169, 221
Salerno, Ralph 92, 94
Samax Trading Company 88-90
San Jacinto Savings 39, 40, 43
San Kin Yip International Trading Company 199
Sassoon family 202
Savile, Jimmy 145, 301
Schwab, Klaus 123, 124, 139
Schwartz, Bernard 88, 89, 92, 138, 206, 207, 251-253, 365
Scotto, Anthony M. 44, 64
Scott, Peter Dale 224, 226, 317
Scott, Walter Jr. 80
Seagram Company Ltd 6-9, 32
Seagram's Seagram Company Limited 6, 7
Seal, Barry 184
Securities and Exchange Commission (SEC) 6-10, 27, 28, 41, 63, 68, 139, 176, 225, 350, 352, 377
Segal, Erel 114
Segal, Mikhail 54, 67, 114
Segal, Paul 54, 67
Selco East Consultants 210
Seligman, J.W. 59, 60

Seymour, Cheri 20, 34, 46, 63, 64
Seymour, Christine 18, 49
Shackley, Ted 55, 214, 219, 232, 282
Shalev, Zev 21, 34, 376
Shamir, Yair 330
Shamir, Yitzhak 330
Shapiro, Arthur 52, 66, 84-95, 98, 104, 105, 107
Shapiro Murder File 66, 88-95, 104, 105
Sharfman, Nahum 323
Shengde, Ji 206
Shenker, Morris 175, 225
Sherman, Jane 84, 331
Sherwood, Robert 315
Shields, Lisa 60
Shin Bet 258, 362
Shnayerson, Michael 157, 168, 169
Shvets, Yuri 336, 337
Shwed, Gil 331, 352
Silicon Graphics 332, 333, 352, 353
Silverado S&L 39, 40, 43-46, 63, 64
Simon, William E. 121
Singlaub, John 82, 103, 190
60 Minutes 186, 264, 287
Slyper, Amos 120, 139
Smathers, George 38
Smith, Dale 22
Smith, Earl 241
Smith, Gayle 303, 309
Smith, Grant 116, 137, 138, 350
Smith, Victor 310, 315
SNJC Holdings 51, 91
Snow, Dorothy 89
Sorkin, Richard 102, 140, 329
Sotheby's 79-81, 102, 132, 270, 288
Southern Air Transport 96, 235, 237-239, 241, 243, 244, 254, 258, 260
Southern Trust 370, 371

Southmark (conglomerate) 39, 40, 43, 63, 64
Space Relations 3
SpaceX 55, 340, 355
Spence, Craig 58
Spielberg, Steven 125, 205, 217, 218
Spizer, Scott 4
Stahl, Leslie 186
Starlink 342
Starr, Ken 185, 216
Stein, Andrew 222
Steinberg, Jonah 38, 118, 350, 351
Steinhardt, Michael 125-127, 140
Steinhardt, Sol “Red McGee” 126
Stein, Julius Caesar 103, 222
Stephanopoulos, George 182, 221
Stephens Inc. 188, 190, 193, 211
Stephens, Jackson 17, 181, 188, 190, 193, 209, 211
Stephens, Trae 361
Stewart, James 55, 56, 340
Stock, Ann 173, 189, 213
Stone, Linda 334, 339, 354
Stratton, Deidre 285
Sultan of Brunei 18, 30, 36, 305, 306, 316
Summers, Larry 117, 121, 205, 283, 342, 347
Sunday Times 152, 163, 166, 295, 297, 314, 320, 349, 351
Sunderland, Julie 347
Sun Valley Conference 336, 354
Supermob 125, 132
Sydney Morning Herald 65, 147, 167, 229
Systematics 181-184, 186-188, 190, 193
Szall, Edward 12, 17, 24, 32, 33, 35, 36

T

Tackett, Daniel 13

Tai, Elizabeth 269
Tamco Holding Co. 37, 38, 39, 46
Tamir, Yossi 120, 139
Task Force 157 47, 140
Taubman, Adolph Alfred 72, 73, 76-82, 101, 102, 132, 175, 270
Tawill, Eliot 361
Teledesic 342
Tenet, George 129
Tennant, Anthony 81
TerraMar Project 243, 313, 345
Terrorism Information Awareness 365
Tesla 55, 57, 67, 340
Tessler, Allan 30, 40, 41, 42, 43, 63
Thatcher, Margaret 15, 132, 144, 210
Thatcher, Mark 15
The Israel Project (TIP) 134
The Limited 30, 43, 71, 72, 88, 94, 95, 97-99, 110, 114, 122, 235, 236-243
Thiel, Peter 361, 362, 365-367
Thinking Machines Corporation 56, 333, 353
Thomas, Gordon 35, 46, 64, 129, 152, 155, 167, 258, 262, 326
Thomasson, Patsy 178
Thornton, Andrew C. II 20, 34
301 66th Stree 53, 55, 57, 214, 266, 267
Tienken, Richard 218
TIME 140
Tisch, Laurence 72, 125, 155, 186
Toka 286
Tome, Giuseppe 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 32
Tom, Maeley 192
Total Information Awareness (TIA) 364-367, 374, 377
Tower, John 153, 154
Trafficante, Santo 93
Trie, Yah Lin “Charlie” 192, 196,-207, 218, 246-250, 254
Trilateral Commission 61, 121, 132, 243, 260
Triplett, William III 15, 33, 244, 245, 260
Trireme Partners 134

Trudeau, Justin 123
Trump, Donald 3, 18, 20, 24, 34, 35, 47-51, 53, 65, 66, 94, 105, 140, 148, 165, 166, 214, 224, 231, 265, 274, 283, 294, 319, 320, 340, 361, 376
Trump, Melania 50, 148, 283
TRW Inc. 12, 13
Turner, Stanley 60, 68

U

Union Bank of Switzerland 184
Unit 8200 322, 331, 360, 361, 376
United Brands 77, 78, 81, 82
United Dye 175
United Fruit 77, 101
United Israel Appeal 83, 84, 111, 112, 114, 217
United Jewish Appeal 9, 74, 77, 83, 84, 103, 114, 217
U.S. News & World Report 121

V

Valentine, Douglas 376
Vanity Fair 2, 5, 6, 9, 11, 17, 29, 31, 33, 67, 98, 105, 106, 156, 164, 167, 168, 216, 222, 232, 233, 249, 261, 268, 276, 288, 334, 353
Vasquez, Marita 266
Vedmore, Johnny 135, 351, 376, 378
Verint 130, 331, 361
Vest, Jason 133, 141, 262
Victoria's Secret 50, 105, 106, 139, 265, 268-270, 284, 287, 288, 346
Villard Houses 29, 30, 47, 99, 266, 306
Vogelman, Uzi 120, 139
Volcker, Paul 132
Volscho, Thomas 2, 31
Von Damm, Helene 25
Von Hoffman, Nicholas 33, 35
von Trapp, Debra 185

Vulcan 327

W

Wade, Alan 364-369, 377
Walker, Melanie 270, 284-286, 291, 299, 345, 346, 356
Wallace, Mike 186
Wall Street Journal 67, 124, 125, 128, 139, 155, 156, 168, 183, 224, 352
Walmart 211, 212
Walsh, Frank 53, 64, 92, 94, 95
Walters, Bill 44
Walters, Gary 180
Walton, Alice 211, 212, 231
Warbasse, Naomi 208
Ward, Vicky 5, 10, 11, 16, 28, 29, 31, 56, 61, 67, 106, 216, 232, 313, 318
Warner, Marvin 14, 52, 103, 163, 224, 321
Washington Post 15, 16, 24, 26-29, 33, 35, 48, 60, 65, 66, 68, 127, 140, 169, 179, 205, 209, 216, 218, 225, 228-232, 244, 260, 261, 290
Washington Times 155
Wasserman, Lew 125, 140, 153, 196, 205, 217, 308, 309
Watchers: The Rise of America's Surveillance State, The 366, 367, 377, 378
Webb, Gary 20
WEF Young Global Leader 286, 346
Weinberger, Caspar 183, 184, 377
Weinstein, Harvey 322, 328, 349
Weschler, Harry 184
Wexner, Abigail 97, 121, 122, 135
Wexner, Bella 71, 98, 99, 110, 137
Wexner Foundation 54, 84, 98, 99, 104, 109-117, 119, 121, 122, 126, 134, 135, 137-139, 173, 232
Wexner, Harry and Bella 71
Wexner Investment Company 51, 89-91, 99, 118
Wexner, Leslie, 16, 24, 30, 40, 43, 47, 48, 50-54, 57, 59, 61, 71-74, 77, 79-81, 83, 84, 88-100, 103-105, 107-122, 124-126, 129, 131-142, 155, 156, 172, 173,

175, 189, 217, 218, 221, 232, 235, 238-243, 253, 254, 258, 263, 268, 270, 281, 284, 286, 288, 319, 336, 351
Wexner's Heritage Program (WHP) 114, 115
WFC Corporation 93, 172, 190, 224
White, Gordon 150
White House Historical Association 173, 174, 180, 186, 188
Wien, Lawrence 175, 224
Williams, Maggie 178, 204
Wilson, Edwin 47, 333
Winokur, Herbert S. "Pug" Jr. 79, 80
Wired 162, 170, 267, 287, 324, 342, 343, 349, 355, 376
Wise, Barbara Alice 208
Wolff, Michael 49, 65, 167
Wolfson, Harry 117
World Bank 47, 117, 286
World Economic Forum 115, 122, 123, 139, 286, 291, 305, 316, 331, 332, 346, 352, 356
World Economic Forum's Young Global Leaders (YGL) program 115, 122, 123
World Health Organization 286, 346, 347
World Jewish Congress 24, 59
World Zionist Organization (WZO 83
Worthen Bank 191
Wraxall Group 13, 14, 33
Wright, Claudia 323, 350
Wright, Les 88, 91
Wyatt, Petronella 144, 166
Wynn, Eric 218
Y Yamada, Tachi 343
Yassenoff, Frank 86, 87, 95
Yassenoff, Solly 86
Yellen, Janet 342
Yozma (program) 321, 322, 331, 349, 352

Z

Zabludowicz, Shlomo and Chaim 133
Zacks, Gordon 83
Zapata Petroleum 51, 102
Zell, Sam 38
Zemurray, Samuel 77
Zhan, Keshi 199
Zhu Gao Feng 206, 251
Ziffren, Paul 308
Zinni, Anthony 134, 142
Zolnai, Stephen Martin 55, 67
Zorro Ranch 275, 285, 299, 341, 346
Zuckerberg, Mark 340
Zuckerman, Mort 61, 121, 227
Zukerman, Pinchas 2

LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS

ABC – American Broadcasting Corporation **AFIP** – Armed Forces Institute of Pathology **AIPAC** – American Israel Public Affairs Committee **AISI** – Automated Intelligence Systems Inc **APAC** – Asian Pacific Advisory Council **A.R. Corp** – Aeroflot/Rickenbacker **BCCHK** – Bank of Credit and Commerce Hong Kong **BCCI** – Bank of Credit and Commerce International **BCCIHK** – Bank of Credit and Commerce International Hong Kong **BONY** – Bank of New York

CBS – Columbia Broadcasting System **CGI** – Clinton Global Initiative

CJF – Council of Jewish Federations and Welfare Funds **COSCO** – China Ocean Shipping Company **CPL** – Center for Public Leadership **DEVCO** – Grand Bahama Development Corporation **DNC** – Democratic National Committee **ENESCO** – Energy Systems Company

ERA – Electronic Realty Associates Inc **FBO** – fixed-based operators

FDLE – Florida Department of Law Enforcement **GMT** – GeoMiliTech

IDC – Intercontinental Diversified Corp **IPFCA** – International Police and Fire Chaplains Association **ITA** – International Trade Administration **ITM** – Integrated Transaction Management **MC/MPA** – Mid-Career Master of Public Administration **NEC** – National Economic Council

NED – National Endowment for Democracy **Norinco** – North Industries Corporation **NYU** – New York University

ONG – Oklahoma Natural Gas

PLA – People's Liberation Army

PNAC – Project for a New American Century **RMO** – Remote Mortgage Origination **TIP** – The Israel Project

UAE – United Arab Emirates

UJA – United Jewish Appeal

WFC – World Finance Corporation

WHP – Wexner's Heritage Program

WZO – World Zionist Organization

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

First and foremost, I'd like to extend my deepest and sincerest thanks to Ed Berger, without whom this book would not have been possible. Ed contributed amazing, in-depth and original research to several key parts of this book and his contributions were and are invaluable. If you enjoy historical deep dives about the intersection of organized crime networks, corporate power and intelligence agencies, please consider listening to and supporting his podcast: The Pseudodoxology Podcast Network at https://www.patreon.com/wydna

I also want to thank my amazing assistant Star Parsons for helping keep my website afloat while I worked on this book and for painstakingly formatting all the many, many citations within this book. I also owe much to my publisher Kris Millegan for his infinite patience and understanding, as this book was delayed several times, and for his support of my work. Also, an important thank you to Johnny Vedmore who made some important contributions to this book and whose original past reporting on the Epstein case was key to developing important parts of this book.

In addition, this work, and my journalistic career in general, would not have been possible if not for Mnar Muhawesh and the team at MintPress News. Mnar and the MintPress team first gave me the space and platform necessary to develop my journalistic work and provided me with the support I needed to publish my original, four-part series on which this book is based. Thank you so much for believing in me and for supporting my work from the very beginning – I owe you all so much.

I also would like to thank my amazing babysitters, Fresia Retamal and Patricia Guzmán, for taking great care of my little ones so that I could put in the time to write this book.

Last but not least, I would like to extend my deepest, heartfelt thanks to all of my supporters, specifically the thousands of readers who financially support my work, allowing me to be 100% independent. Without your support, this book would not have happened and I cannot thank you enough for your help in

financing this book as well as in supporting and sharing my other work, both online and in print.

ONE NATION UNDER BLACKMAIL

VOL.2

WHITNEY WEBB

Exposes vastly under-explored topics compared to other media reports and books on Jeffrey Epstein

How did Jeffrey Epstein manage to evade justice for decades? Who enabled him and why? Why were legal officials told that Epstein "belonged to intelligence" and to back off during his first arrest in the mid-2000s?

Volume 2 of One Nation Under Blackmail examines the rise of Jeffrey Epstein and his closest associates, such as Leslie Wexner and Ghislaine Maxwell, and contextualizes them within the organized crime-intelligence networks detailed in-depth in Volume 1. It subsequently details their ties, with a focus on Epstein, to intelligence networks, espionage activity and the subversion of American institutions as well as the role of Epstein and the Maxwell family in the evolution of blackmail in the digital era.

Whitney Webb has been a professional writer, researcher, and journalist since 2016. She has written for several websites and, from 2017 to 2020, was a staff writer and senior investigative reporter for *Mint Press News*. She currently writes for *Unlimited Hangout* and contributes to *The Last American Vagabond*. She also hosts an independent podcast called *Unlimited Hangout*. Her work aims to highlight under-reported issues and find common ground between people of different political persuasions regarding corruption, government overreach, the lack of accountability for militaries and intelligence agencies, and the military industrial complex.

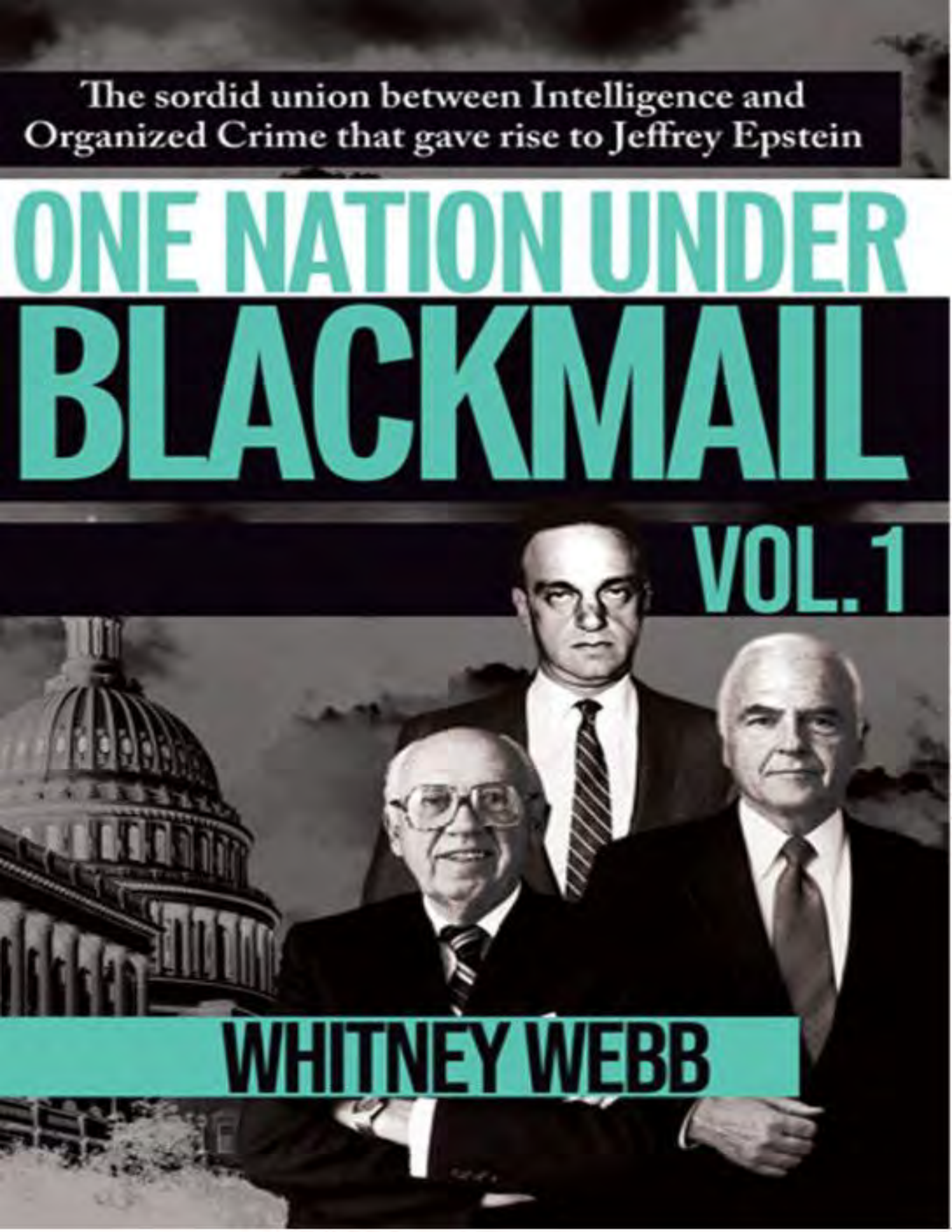
UnlimitedHangout.com

TrineDay
P.O. Box 577
Walterville, OR 97489
1-800-556-2012
TrineDay.com

The sordid union between Intelligence and
Organized Crime that gave rise to Jeffrey Epstein

ONE NATION UNDER BLACKMAIL

VOL. 1



WHITNEY WEBB

One Nation Under Blackmail: The Sordid Union Between Intelligence and Crime that Gave Rise to Jeffrey Epstein, Volume One.
Copyright © 2022 Whitney Webb. All Rights Reserved.
Published by:
Trine Day LLC
PO Box 577
Walterville, OR 97489
1-800-556-2012
www.TrineDay.com
trineday@icloud.com
Library of Congress Control Number: 2022945071
Webb, Whitney
One Nation Under Blackmail: The Sordid Union Between Intelligence and Crime that Gave Rise to Jeffrey Epstein, Volume One.—1st ed.
p. cm.
Epub (ISBN-13) 978-1-63424-303-2
Print (ISBN-13) 978-1-63424-301-8

1. Epstein, Jeffrey, -- 1953-2019. 2. Epstein, Jeffrey, -- 1953-2019 -- Friends and associates. 3. Extortion -- United States 1940-2022. 3. Organized Crime -- United States. 5. Organized Crime -- Canada. 6. Intelligence services -- United States. 7. Espionage. 8. POLITICAL SCIENCE / Corruption & Misconduct. 9. Truthfulness and falsehood -- Political aspects. 10. Espionage -- Israel -- United States. 11. Sex scandals -- Political aspects -- United States. 12. TRUE CRIME / Sexual Assault. I. Title First Edition

FIRST EDITION
10987654321
Distribution to the Trade by:
Independent Publishers Group (IPG)
814 North Franklin Street
Chicago, Illinois 60610
312.337.0747
www.ipgbook.com

PUBLISHER’S FOREWORD

PROSPERO: But you, my brace of lords, were I so minded,
I here could pluck his highness’ frown upon you
And justify you traitors: at this time
I will tell no tales.
SEBASTIAN: The devil speaks in him.
– William Shakespeare, The Tempest, Act 5, Scene 1

I want something embarrassing! Something sexual! Little boys, midgets, that sort of thing! Cows! I don’t give a goddamn!
– Sam Elliott as Kermit Newman, The Contender

“Where’s my Roy Cohn?”
– Donald Trump, New York Times, January 4, 2018

Why do folks lie, cheat and steal? Is it simply the survival of the fittest? What about our rule of law and the hoary moral codes left to us? Are they worth the paper they are printed on? Will we ever learn?

Whitney Webb takes us on a hidden history excursion – beyond the realm of the gatekeepers – delving into a deep netherworld where disgraceful actions seemingly trump noble principles. One Nation Under Blackmail: The Sordid Union Between Intelligence and Crime that Gave Rise to Jeffrey Epstein is a tour de force. A deep exposé into how the world actually works.

I will never forget my introduction to this underworld: a “talk” with my “spooky” father and his professor friend from Vanderbilt. It was a reality beyond my ken, way further than my teen-age experience. So I simply went on with growing up, but looking in the dark corners.

My education was through reading, magazine articles and books – so many books. There was much going on in the late 1960s and ’70s. My father and his friend had talked about an activity I call “CIA-Drugs,” and about “political forces,” using psychological warfare to move agendas.

It soon became apparent that within this milieu there were many players: intelligence agencies and their operatives, criminal gangs, secret societies, bag men, money launderers, financial institutions and governments.

As my studies into intelligence matters and protocols progressed, I became aware of “honey-traps” and the use of blackmail to compromise individuals and stilt honest political discourse. It floored me that there were, it appeared, federal agents running interference to some of the operations. Where was the country and the values I had been taught? How did we get here?

“It’s far more constructive to work for the church than to work for the Central Intelligence Agency. When you work for the CIA the ends justify the means,” my father was quoted in a local paper a few years before his passing.

Immoral methods skew our futures and lead to imbalance. Leaving us ruled by “rich men who are not quite respectable.”

British historian Eric Hobsbawm opined, “He [Roy Cohn] made his legal and political career in a milieu where money and power override rules and law – indeed where the ability to get, and get away with, what lesser citizens cannot, is what proves membership of an elite.”

A corrupt elite debasing our future. Trying to bully us into their depravity. With this book and others we can become educated and empowered to right our ship-of-state.

Whitney has done her homework and A Nation Under Blackmail shows with great alacrity the past actions, present situations, and future problems that we face. And must deal with in order to fulfill our founder’s aspirations, foster current needs, and forsee our children’s future.

A blackmailer believes that they are “in control,” but secrets can cut many ways, and ultimately we are in the driver’s seat. What will we do?

Onwards to the Utmost of Futures!

Peace,
R.A. “Kris” Millegan
Publisher TrineDay August 18, 2022

CONTENTS

Introduction
1) The Underworld
2) Booze and Blackmail
3) Organized Crime and the State of Israel
4) Roy Cohn's "Favor Bank"
5) Shades of Gray
6) A Private CIA
7) A Killer Enterprise
8) Clinton Contra
9) High Tech Treason
10) Government by Blackmail: The Dark Secrets of the Reagan Era
Documents
Index

INTRODUCTION, VOLUME 1

The July 2019 arrest of Jeffrey Epstein and his subsequent death that August brought national as well as international attention to a sex ring where certain members of the power elite sexually abused and exploited female minors and young women. Epstein's death, officially ruled a suicide, has been treated skeptically by many, for a variety of reasons. Regardless of the real circumstances of his death, it has led to scores of Americans embracing the view that his death was both intentional and necessary to protect his powerful co-conspirators and the full extent of his covert and illegal activities.

Even if one chooses not to entertain such disconcerting possibilities, it is quite apparent that most of those who aided or enabled Epstein will never see the inside of a prison cell. Though Ghislaine Maxwell is now serving a 20 year sentence, others known to have been intimately involved in his illegal activities continue to enjoy protection from the so-called "sweetheart deal," or plea deal that followed Epstein's first run-in with the law for his sex trafficking activities in the mid-2000s. In addition, Ghislaine Maxwell's recent trial saw information involving third parties redacted, leading many to believe that the public will never know the names of the "johns" or clients, who benefitted from the sex trafficking activities of Epstein and Maxwell and who were potentially blackmailed by them.

Yet, for both Jeffrey Epstein and Ghislaine Maxwell, there is much more to the story. This became apparent when it emerged that Alex Acosta, then-serving as Secretary of Labor in the Trump administration, had disclosed to the Trump transition team that he had previously signed off on Epstein's "sweetheart deal" because Epstein "had belonged to intelligence." Acosta, then serving as US attorney for Southern Florida, had also been told by unspecified figures at the time that he needed to give Epstein a lenient sentence because of his links to "intelligence." When Acosta was later asked if Epstein was indeed an intelligence asset in 2019, Acosta chose to neither confirm or deny the claim.

Other hints of a connection between Epstein and intelligence subsequently emerged, with reporting from a variety of sources that Epstein was affiliated with the CIA, Israeli intelligence, or both. Despite the implications and significance of these connection(s) to intelligence, most of mainstream media declined to dig deeper into these claims, instead largely focusing on the salacious aspects of the Epstein case. The narrative soon became that Epstein was an anomaly, the sole mastermind of an industrial sex trafficking enterprise and a talented con artist. Even his closest associates and benefactors, like retail billionaire Leslie Wexner, have been taken at their word that they knew nothing of Epstein's crimes, even when there is considerable evidence to the contrary.

Indeed, it was later stated by Cindy McCain, wife of former Senator John McCain, that "we all knew what he [Epstein] was doing" at an event in January 2020, where she also claimed that authorities were "afraid" to properly apprehend him. If he was such an anomaly and a stand-alone con artist – how was he singlehandedly able to intimidate the law enforcement apparatus of an entire nation for decades? The claim that Epstein did not have powerful backers and benefactors stands on incredibly shaky ground.

Oddly enough, mainstream reporting on Epstein was once relatively open about his alleged intelligence ties, with British media reporting as early as 1992 and throughout the early 2000s that Epstein had ties to both US and Israeli intelligence. In addition, also in the early 1990s, Epstein's name was mysteriously dropped from a major investigation into one of the largest Ponzi schemes in history even though he was labeled the mastermind of that swindle in grand jury testimony. Around the same time, subsequently released White House visitor logs show that Epstein visited the Clinton White House 17 times, accompanied on most of these visits by a different, attractive young woman. Reporting on those visitor logs was largely done by a single media outlet, Britain's The Daily Mail, with hardly any American mainstream media outlets bothering to investigate these revelations about Epstein and a former US president.

Why was Epstein so heavily protected from justice for decades – in connection to both his sex trafficking crimes and his financial crimes? Why have the once commonly reported intelligence connections of Jeffrey Epstein now been relegated to "conspiracy theory" despite evidence to the contrary? If powerful Senators knew what Epstein was doing to young women and girls – who else knew and why wasn't something done?

This two-volume book endeavors to show why Jeffrey Epstein was able to engage in a series of mind-boggling crimes for decades without incident. Far from being an anomaly, Epstein was one of several men who, over the past century, have engaged in sexual blackmail activities designed to obtain damaging information (i.e. "intelligence) on powerful individuals with the goal of controlling their activities and securing their compliance. Most of these individuals, including Epstein himself, have their roots in the covert world where organized crime and intelligence have intermingled and often cooperated for the better part of the last 90 years, if not longer. Perhaps most shockingly, these men are all interconnected to various degrees.

Following the formal establishment of the organized crime-intelligence in World War II through what is today remembered as Operation Underworld, the relationship between these two entities has since become so intertwined and so symbiotic that, today, it is nearly impossible to know where one ends and the other begins. As this book will show, many of the biggest scandals and events of the last century have not only been tied to these networks, but many of them also have counted with the involvement of sex traffickers and blackmailers, Epstein among them. Publicly, these men have been powerful lawyers, businessmen and lobbyists. Their more clandestine and shadowy activities, though a matter of record, are often known only to those who are well read on certain historical events or in the field of "deep politics."

In order to understand Jeffrey Epstein and his activities in their full context, one must understand his powerful contacts and the structures that protected him. Those structures and those networks did not begin with Jeffrey Epstein and they also did not die with him. In revealing his broader milieu, and that of his past associates and clients, one is left not only with a damning indictment of Jeffrey Epstein, but a damning indictment of American institutions, particularly those involved in "national security" matters and law enforcement. We cannot properly address the crimes of Jeffrey Epstein, nor prevent them being committed by others in the future, unless we grapple with the covert power structures that have long wielded blackmail, bribes and assassinations as their weapons of choice to corrupt and control public institutions while manipulating and looting the public.

Jeffrey Epstein was not an anomaly and his activities represent just the tip of the veritable iceberg.

Whitney Webb, 8/14/22

"Who are these people? They are the group that is popularly called the Enterprise. They are in and outside [the] CIA. They are mostly Right Wing Republicans, but you will find a mix of Democrats, mercenaries, ex officio Mafia and opportunists within the group. They are CEOs, they are bankers, they are presidents, they own airlines, they own national television networks. They own six of the seven video documentary companies of Washington, DC and they do not give a damn about the law or the Constitution or the Congress or the Oversight committees except as something to be subverted and manipulated and lied to. They abhor sunlight and love darkness. They deal in innuendo and character assassination, and planted stories, the incomplete thought and sentence. They burn and shred files if caught, they commit perjury, and when caught they have guaranteed sinecures with large US corporations.

If you let them, they will take over not only [the] CIA but the entire government and the world, cutting off dissent, free speech, a free media, and they will cut a deal with anyone, from [the] Mafia to Saddam Hussein, if it means more power and money. They stole $600 billion from the S & L's and then diverted our attention to the Iraqis. They are ripping off America at a rate never before seen in history. They flooded our country with drugs from Central America during the 1980s, cut deals with Haro in Mexico, Noriega in Panama, and the Medillin and Cali cartels, and Castro, and recently the Red Mafia in the KGB. They ruin their detractors and they fear the truth. If they can, they will blackmail you. Sex, drugs, deals, whatever it takes."

–Former CIA officer and Iran-Contra whistleblower Bruce Hemmings, circa 1990

CHAPTER 1

THE UNDERWORLD

OF SPIES AND CROOKS

At 2:30 in the afternoon on February 9th, 1942, a fire broke out on-board the Normandie, a ship that was then in the process of being converted into a troop transporter in New York City's harbor. As the flames roared, winter winds fanned the flames, spiraling the fire up, and then down onto the ship's top decks. Within hours, the Normandie began to lean to her port side, weighed down by the water that was being dumped onto the boat by fire crews. Soon, the ship capsized and an expensive, unprecedented salvage operation was mounted. Despite these efforts, repairing the ship was soon found to be too complicated and too costly, and the Normandie was scrapped in 1946.

Investigations into the destruction of the Normandie quickly revealed that the cause of the disaster had been incompetence and carelessness. Yet, nevertheless, rumors grew that it had been the work of German saboteurs, who were intent on disrupting America's early war efforts. Proponents of these theories argued that the alleged saboteurs sought to break down the country's logistical capabilities through attacks in ports and harbors as well as factories and other strategic, industrial locations. William B. Herlands, the then-New York Commissioner of Investigation, summed up the spirit of the times when he said, "We are faced with a grave national emergency.… A blackout was imposed over the … waterfront area within the Third Naval district, which included New York and New Jersey. Many of our ships were being sunk by enemy submarines off the Atlantic Coast … and the outcome of the war hung in the balance."[1]

Management and regulation of these critical harbors and coastlines was the responsibility of the Office of Naval Intelligence (ONI). An ONI inquiry was opened in May 1942 into potential saboteurs and Nazi agents operating in the ports and the possibility of U-boat movements off the east coast. The man tasked with overseeing this inquiry was C. Radcliff Haffendon.[2] Several of the agents assigned to work under Haffendon had previously worked with Thomas E. Dewey, the US State Attorney who later served as governor of New York. Dewey was best known for his prosecution of organized crime, and through these contacts, Haffendon learned of the role played by gangsters and other criminal elements on the New York City waterfront. Dewey's chief of staff, attorney Frank Hogan, suggested to Haffendon and the ONI that they speak with a man named Joseph "Joe Socks" Lanza.

Lanza was officially a "business agent for the United Seafood Workers Union." He was also a mobster in his own right and was known as the "rackets boss of the Fulton Fish Market … in downtown New York City."[3] Yet, compared to the stature of other criminal figures in the city, Lanza was a small-fry, and he knew it. As a result, he ended up telling the ONI that they would have better luck higher up the food chain. He suggested either Meyer Lansky, who controlled the longshoreman's union, or Frank Costello, a gambling figure with numerous interests throughout the waterfront. But to get to them, Lanza told Haffendon, he would need to first speak to Charles "Lucky" Luciano.

Luciano, at the time, was locked away in prison, having been put there by Thomas Dewey. A delicate series of negotiations were subsequently launched in what is now known as "Operation Underworld." This operation, which the government was forced to reluctantly acknowledge after decades of public denials, involved the recruitment of high-level organized crime figures for work with American intelligence services, justified by war-time necessity. Not long after Operation Underworld had been given the go-ahead, Luciano agreed to the ONI's requests, and his prison cell soon became a hub for meetings between him and his criminal associates, meetings in which they would coordinate counter-intelligence activities with the Navy.

Despite Operation Underworld's initial and relatively narrow objectives, the scope of the operation organically expanded. Before long, Luciano and his colleagues – Meyer Lansky, chief among them – were helping the ONI cultivate intelligence for the Allied invasion of Sicily. Lower ranking mob figures and immigrants were frequently brought to Haffendon's offices for questioning. Names and contact information for friendly Sicilians, many of whom were Mafia figures, were provided to ONI agents for use in the military campaign. While the resulting collaborations between the Mafia and the military on the beaches and in the villages of Sicily have slipped into legend, the legacy of Operation Underworld has endured and undeniably forever altered the United States of America, and beyond. Indeed, Operation Underworld was the beginning of the creation of a new underworld entirely, one built on the cooperation, if not outright symbiosis, between organized crime and American intelligence.

SHADOWY ALLIANCES

Lucky Luciano was born in Sicily in 1897 and arrived on American shores in 1906. At a young age, he formed his own gang, which offered protection to Jewish immigrants from Italian and Irish organized crime elements in exchange for small fees. This protection, unsurprisingly, was tantamount to extortion, and the money he accrued allowed him to begin expanding into other rackets – including, notably, prostitution. Early on, he met and formed an alliance with another young gangster named Frank Costello, an immigrant from Calabria, Italy. Together, the two consolidated their power by taking control of the numerous environs now considered typical of organized crime: prostitution, narcotics, and even organized labor in New York City's docks.

As their business expanded, so too did their revenue. Soon, Luciano and his cohorts were being propelled to the heights of power in New York City. Thomas Dewey once commented that Luciano's "business was far-flung and brought in a colossal revenue. This was estimated to be far, far in excess of $12 million a year."[4] Key to Luciano and Costello's operation was the fact that it had overcome the traditional bifurcation of organized crime into ethnic enclaves. For the first time, in Luciano's growing criminal empire, Italian, Jewish, and Irish criminal networks intermingled and cooperated with one another. However, this early cooperation lacked the cohesion and integration that the networks born out of Luciano's and Costello's enterprise would develop in the years to come.

Joining Luciano and Costello in their criminal enterprise was Meyer Lansky and his close friend, Benjamin "Bugsy" Siegel. Lansky was well-connected in Jewish mob circles, and he, along with Siegel, had amassed significant wealth during the Prohibition era. Lansky, whose long shadow is cast across the entire history of organized crime in the twentieth century, was something of a visionary. Various accounts paint him as the intellectual architect behind the multi-ethnic organized crime model that Luciano successfully pursued. Lansky was also instrumental in bringing mob groups into the world of gambling, helping set up casinos in the Caribbean that would be utilized to wash the money generated by their various vices and rackets. Perhaps most important of all was that Lansky had also helped develop the use of a complex banking network, which he adopted in an effort to avoid the fate of Al Capone. After all, Capone had not been taken down not for murder or extortion, but for tax evasion.

This Luciano-Costello-Lansky-Siegel alliance was the basis of what subsequently became known as the National Crime Syndicate. Far from the well-organized image of the Mafia often promoted by the media, the National Crime Syndicate operated loosely at best – and, according to some commentators, did not actually exist in any meaningful way. Such arguments might be going a step too far, although they are worth considering. The National Crime Syndicate might be best understood as a social network – a sprawling, faction-filled web of associations and organizations that either collaborated or competed, depending on the situation or the spoils.

In 1936, this emerging crime network took what, at first glance, appeared to be a major blow following the arrest and successful prosecution of Luciano by Thomas E. Dewey in a spectacular, if not sensational, trial. Luciano's apparent downfall came via an assault on New York City's prostitution rackets, which his organization firmly controlled. As Alfred McCoy summarizes, "Dewey's investigators felt that the forced prostitution charge would be more likely to offend public sensibilities and secure a conviction."[5] A handful of prostitutes who worked in Luciano's brothels testified against him, and a New York court quickly sentenced the gangster "to a thirty-to-fifty year jail term."

Dewey's role in this affair is quite interesting. Six years later, when he ran to secure the presidential nomination for the Republican Party, he joined forces with John Foster Dulles, the brother of Allen Dulles – best known for his role as the first civilian head of the CIA in the early years of the Cold War. Dulles, a member of the "internationalist" camp of American politics that typified the attitudes of the elite

"Eastern Establishment," impressed upon Dewey the importance overcoming the isolationist factions of the Republican Party.[6,7] What Dulles got in exchange for his steering of Dewey in pursuit of political power was his own rise through the ranks of the party, ultimately culminating in his service as President Dwight D. Eisenhower's Secretary of State.

Even more curious was an investment that Dewey made, during the 1950s, in an entity called the Mary Carter Paint Company, later renamed Resorts International. Mary Carter was controlled by the Crosby family, and its operations were overseen by the most practical-minded of the family's sons, James Crosby. Mary Carter was deeply tied to organized crime networks.[8,9] It worked closely in developing businesses in the Bahamas, hand-in-hand with a number of Meyer Lansky frontmen, while James' brother, Peter Crosby, was a notorious confidence man with an impressive roster of criminal contacts. It had also been widely rumored that Mary Carter was a CIA front company.[10]

THE OSS

Lurking in the background of Operation Underworld, which had seen the ONI directly recruit Luciano, was the Office of Strategic Services (OSS), the wartime forerunner to the CIA and America's first robust national intelligence organization. The precise role that the OSS played in the affair isn't exactly clear. According to George White, a notorious agent of the Federal Bureau of Narcotics who had been recruited into the OSS, he had been propositioned by an organized crime associate to enlist Luciano in exchange for a pardon – but this was a bridge too far. An alliance between the OSS and "a person of Luciano's reputation 'would be a very naive way of doing business' … White maintained that he felt it was outrageous to entertain … [the] proposition, 'even for the OSS' who were willing to do almost anything."[11]

White would make these statements in the course of Federal testimony, and, in all likelihood, he was lying to protect the OSS. According to Richard Harris Smith, an historian of the OSS, Earl Brennan, an OSS officer in Italy, was kept in the loop regarding negotiations between Luciano and the ONI.[12] Meanwhile, Assistant District Attorney Murray Gurfein, who handled the legal end of the Luciano negotiations, subsequently went to Europe to serve as a colonel in the OSS.

The OSS was many things, operating in many different theaters. In Europe, it ran a fairly unsuccessful paramilitary campaign. However, in the China-Burma-India theater, its military operations achieved remarkable results. When it came to spycraft, its supporters gushed with praise, while its detractors regarded the tales later woven by its veterans as worthy of skepticism. The OSS was frequently – and accurately – seen as a social club. While its ranks did boast a great many military officers and figures from other government agencies like the FBI and the FBN, its leadership and higher-ranking administrative posts tended to be secured by the sons of the country's wealthiest elite. In London, Madrid, Geneva, Paris and elsewhere, posts were held by members of the Mellon family of Pittsburgh, the family behind the Gulf Oil fortune. Heirs of the Morgan family also secured positions within the agency, as did members of the DuPont and the Vanderbilt families.

"Only the Rockefellers were conspicuously absent" from the OSS, writes Richard Harris Smith, adding that "Nelson [Rockefeller] headed his own agency, the Coordinator of Inter-American Affairs."[13] David Rockefeller, Nelson's brother, also reportedly ran his own intelligence apparatus during the war.[14]

The agency itself was something of brainchild – at least partially – of General William J. Donovan, a prominent New York City anti-trust lawyer and veteran of World War I. Along with figures like Dewey and Dulles, Donovan was the consummate "Eastern Establishment" insider. He maintained a deep preoccupation with organization and rationalization, which filtered into his work defending the trusts and combines that dotted the corporate landscape of his day. He was also a firm internationalist when it came to his political outlook. During the inter-war years, Donovan had acted as an agent for various corporate interests, and had even traveled to Russia on behalf of the Morgans to collect information on the developments of the Bolshevik Revolution.[15]

In the course of his wartime intelligence work, Donovan was first appointed by President Roosevelt to head the Office of the Coordinator of Information (COI), which was intended to help coordinate the scattered intelligence outfits and military organizations that communicated infrequently and cooperated even less. COI was the seed from which the OSS would later spring. Under Donovan's direction, it became a clearinghouse for military and political propaganda. This was in no small part thanks to Donovan's close friend, a British intelligence operative named William Stephenson.

Stephenson was the wartime head of a British intelligence unit in the United States, headquartered in New York City and known as the British Security Coordination (BSC). He reported to Stewart Menzies, who was then serving as the head of MI6. Menzies had tasked Stephenson with "establish[ing] relations on the highest possible level between the British SIS [the Secret Intelligence Service, another name for MI6] and the U.S. Federal Bureau of Investigation."[16] Stephenson and the BSC operated from an office located in Rockefeller Center's International Building, which was also the home of numerous, other BSC front organizations. Stephenson also worked closely with other British intelligence agencies, including MI6 itself and the Special Operations Executive (SOE), which had begun its life as Section D of MI6.

In agreement with Menzies' mandate, Stephenson developed a close working relationship with J. Edgar Hoover, who seemed to be enthusiastic about being a liaison to British intelligence on matters concerning the war in Europe (at this stage, the US had yet to enter the conflict). Reportedly, the BSC "provided the FBI with over 100,000 confidential reports," while Hoover kept the British in the loop with American reports on German naval movements and the like.[17] The relationship between Hoover and Stephenson would ultimately break down by 1941. Soon after, Stephenson began to cultivate William Donovan, who increasingly challenged Hoover's position as the sole conduit between the Americans and the British. When Donovan was appointed by Roosevelt as the Coordinator of Information – and subsequently formed the OSS – an intense bureaucratic struggle erupted between Hoover and his rivals. As will be discussed in greater detail in the next chapter, this struggle allegedly led Donovan to coordinate with organized crime kingpins, namely Meyer Lansky, to blackmail Hoover in an effort to bring him to heel.

Stephenson did more than simply cultivate Donovan. In 1940, he reported back to his handlers in England that "There is no doubt we can achieve infinitely more through Donovan than through any other individual.… He is very receptive … and can be trusted to represent our needs in the right quarters and in the right way in the U.S.A."[18] Donovan's COI and OSS were, in all actuality, the offspring of these British-led efforts, and a great deal of the decisions Donovan made were influenced by figures tied to Stephenson's BSC. Before the COI was up and running, for example, Donovan conferred closely with Robert Sherwood, a playwright, ardent interventionist and close confidant of President Roosevelt. "On June 16th, 1941," writes Thomas Mahl, "Sherwood sent to Donovan a list of people he thought he could trust, 'for the work we discussed … yesterday evening at your home'."[19] At the time, Sherwood was working closely with the BSC – even sending them copies of speeches he had written for the president prior to Roosevelt receiving them.[20]

As efforts were undertaken to get the American intelligence apparatus up and running, the BSC undertook a propaganda campaign aimed at garnering support for such an institution. Mahl, in his book Desperate Deception, shows how BSC assets seeded the idea throughout the mass media, which in turn was circulated up to the heights of political power. One characteristic incident took place in May 1941, just a month prior to Donovan's meeting with Sherwood. It was on 9th of that May that:

> Vincent Astor, FDR's friend and New York area coordinator of intelligence, sent the president a clipping from the New York Herald Tribune that was probably a plant to build the consensus for voices calling for the plan British intelligence wanted. The Herald Tribune … was BSC's favorite outlet for planted articles. Moreover, the putative author, George Fieling Eliot, was a devoted British sympathizer, one of the most influential people in the BSC front Fight for Freedom, and a favorite vehicle for planted articles. Citing the threat from fifth columnists and enemy agents, Eliot pointed out with alarm at the lack of a coordinator for the FBI, ONI, and G-2 intelligence.

THE DRUG CONNECTION AND “OPERATION X”

The story of the China’s Green Gang is complicated, partially due to the mixing of fact with rumor and legend. Yet, it is undeniable that their rise was a consequence of the rapid transformations that shook Chinese society in the early twentieth century. However, the Green gang itself began long before the twentieth century dawned, originating as a secret society with roots stretching back to Luoism, a folk religion that followed the teachings of Buddhist mystic Luo Menghong. During the late 1700s, this particular branch of Luoism had become a powerful force among boatmen whose trade was the transport of grain and other foodstuffs. Fearful of their growing power, authorities stepped in to suppress this network, driving it underground. Once bitterly ensconced in the margins of society, these Luoists began engaging in smuggling and formed alliances with other smuggling groups. Soon, they consolidated their power and became a formidable force in the world of crime.

Under the leadership of Du Yuesheng, the Green Gang helped bring to power the Kuomintang (KMT), later known as the Nationalist Chinese, under the direction of Chiang Kai-Shek.26 Chiang himself was not a member of the Green Gang, but his political mentor and protector, General Ch’en Ch’i-mei, had been. Between the 1920s and 1930s, the Green Gang was fully integrated with the government of Shanghai, and became a primary source of power for the KMT. They “relied on the Green Gang to conduct counter-espionage activities and gather political intelligence,” and called upon the resources of the organization to suppress trade unionists and communists.[27]

The Green Gang financed its activities through the cultivation and sale of opium – an activity that was fully sanctioned by Chiang and the KMT. Prior to the KMT’s rise to power, Chinese opium production was unorganized, distributed among many different warring figures. Under Chiang, however, a “suppression” was carried out with the ostensible goal of wiping out the opium trade in the name of public health. Behind the scenes, however, the KMT was doing quite the opposite: the “suppression” of opium production was actually an integrated effort to centralize it, placing production, distribution and ultimately control of the substance in the hands of a joint KMT-Green Gang monopoly.[28]

Support for the KMT opium monopoly came from Western modernizers – including the Rockefeller Foundation, which had set up shop in China during the 1910s with the creation of the China Medical Board.[29] Through this apparatus, the Rockefeller Foundation undertook efforts to promote “modern science,” develop medical education programs, and set up hospitals. It is likely that the foundation’s support for opium monopolization was intricately bound up with their health crusade, since opium had important, wide ranging medicinal applications.

At the same time, it was also part of a larger tendency among internationalists like the Rockefellers to seek the regulation and control of the global drug trade. After the First World War, the nascent League of Nations formed an Advisory Committee on the Traffic of Opium and Other Dangerous Drugs. It worked closely with the Rockefeller Foundation’s International Health Board, the “parent” of the China Medical Board. The overarching imperative of the League’s efforts for global drug regulation was to rationalize the production of opium and other precursors and to consolidate drug refining and distribution within a series of select major pharmaceutical corporations.

Under Chiang’s leadership, China simultaneously kowtowed to the League’s initiatives while using the monopolization drive to cement itself at the center of drug production for both the criminal underworld and the “legitimate” overworld. A full-blown narco-state was in the process of being formed, as opium cultivation came to be the central focus of the government’s revenue-raising programs. As Jonathan Marshall noted:

> “In the central provinces of China, especially in Hubei and Hunan, nearly every government organization has come to depend on opium revenue for maintenance,” observed one expert. “Even law courts, Tangpus (Kuomintang organizations), and schools are no exception.” Thus in one locality, authorities charged one picul of opium $320 for general taxes, $32 for Communist suppression, $3.20 for national revenue, $1.50 for the Chamber of Commerce, $2.50 for Special Goods (opium) Association fees, $2.50 for the Hsih-tsun Girl’s School, and $7.00 for protection fees. Later, highway

> maintenance and more school taxes were added. When the opium finally reached Hankou, monopoly authorities added another $920 tax. The original cost of the opium was only $400.[30]

It was in this context that American organized crime figures arrived on China's shores and began to organize an intensely lucrative global narcotics trading network. Among the first was Arnold Rothstein, who acted as a mentor to Lansky, Luciano, and Costello. He dispatched a series of frontmen to China: Sidney Stajer, Jacob Katzenberg, and George Uffner.[31] Uffner would later be described by Federal investigators as a long-time friend of Costello, while Katzenberg was a high-level figure in New York City's Jewish crime syndicates. These syndicates, according to Alfred McCoy, "controlled much of New York's heroin distribution." Katzenberg – himself a Lansky flunky as much as a Rothstein frontman – was involved with a secret heroin processing laboratory in the city, which was refining opium flowing from Asia.[32]

Hans Derks, in his encyclopedic History of the Opium Problem: The Assault on the East, 1600-1950, suggests that the connections between American organized crime and the KMT/Green Gang-dominated Chinese opium trade more than likely involved the complicity of Western – predominantly Anglo-American – economic interests in the region.[33] He singles out in particular the powerful Sassoon family. Nicknamed the "Rothschilds of the East," the Sassoons had emerged as economic administrators in Iraq before organizing one of the dominant opium trading complexes in the East. It is said, writes Derks, "that 'one fifth of all opium brought into China was shipped on the Sassoon fleet.' Thanks to opium they became not only the wealthiest family in India, but also the largest real estate dealers in Shanghai."[34] The family also became integrated into the world of oil: they invested heavily, at various times, in Britain's Burmah Oil and the Anglo-Iranian Oil Company (a subsidiary of Burmah that eventually became British Petroleum), among others.

During the 1800s, the Sassoons competed for dominance of the opium trade with Jardine-Matheson, one of the great Anglo-Hong Kong trading houses that has been firmly controlled by the prominent Keswick family. Over time, the interests of the Sassoons and the Keswicks intermingled and became part of a vast network winding its way through Hong Kong, Shanghai, and elsewhere. This is by no means ancient history: as late as 2013, the Financial Times reported that Lord James Sassoon, having just finished a stint serving as the Commercial Secretary to the Treasury in the government of UK Prime Minister David Cameron, became an executive director of the Jardine-Matheson board.[35]

These dynastic-corporate structures not only influenced the shape of the international drug trade during the twentieth century, but also the evolution of Western intelligence services during and after World War II. Take, for example, the offspring of Henry Keswick, who served as one of the most powerful heads of Jardine Matheson and the controller of numerous affiliated entities (such as the Hong Kong and Shanghai Banking Corporation, the Hong Kong & Whampoa Company, and the Shanghai Municipal Council). Two of Henry's sons, John Henry Keswick and William Johnston "Tony" Keswick, served in the Chinese theater as part of the UK's Special Operations Executive. In addition to the SOE, John Henry Keswick served as the personal aide to Lord Mountbatten, the Supreme Allied Commander of the Southern Asia Theater.[36]

Tony Keswick, meanwhile, crossed paths with Federal Bureau of Narcotics (FBN) veteran and OSS operative Garland Williams. When the OSS was still being organized and efforts were underway to expand its paramilitary capacities, Williams was dispatched by Preston Goodfellow – "a former Hearst executive and publisher of Brooklyn Eagle" who had become William Donovan's special assistant – to meet with the SOE officer. "After meeting the British spymaster Keswick," writes Douglas Valentine, "Williams returned to Washington with the SOE's training manuals and helped establish OSS training schools in Maryland and Virginia."[37]

After the war came to an end, Tony Keswick returned to the world of corporate affairs, taking up a position running one of the family's correspondent companies in London. He also served, for a time, as a governor of the Hudson's Bay Company in Canada. As discussed in the next chapter, the Hudson's Bay Company was central to the rise of the Bronfman family, who have long straddled the murky line between "legitimate" corporate enterprises and the criminal underworld. In turn, the Bronfmans, as will be illustrated at length in this book, would be important to the rise of the network that later enabled the illicit activities of Jeffrey Epstein.

Through his acquisition of the SOE manuals from Keswick, Garland Williams played an essential role that paralleled – and was almost certainly framed by – the higher level cooperation between William Donovan and William Stephenson. At the same time, Williams appears to have operated at the intersection of the American intelligence services, still in their infancy, and the networks of American organized crime.

In his book Deep Politics and the Death of JFK, Peter Dale Scott theorizes that there existed a formation that he provisionally dubs "Operation X." Williams, and other veterans of the FBN that were brought into the OSS and the CIA, are identified as players in this apparatus:

> …the intelligence-mob collaboration established with Operation Underworld did not end after World War II. On the contrary, post-war narcotics operations overseas were subordinated to anti-Communist activities; and they were used as a cover for ongoing use of mob assets, above all drug traffickers, around the world. In developing these post-war mob contacts, White and his FBN associates, notably his former supervisor Garland Williams, and his protégé Charles Siragusa, even while formally back in the FBN hierarchy, 'functioned as a counterintelligence unit, attached to the CIA and, at times, the Army.'… In the 1950s and 1960s it would appear that the FBN systematically subordinated the prosecution of drug cases to a second, hidden agenda, the use of traffickers as agents against communism.[38]

One example that Scott cites is the "selective arrests made by George White in a 1959 heroin case involving the anti-Communist (and pro-Kuomintang) Hip Sing tong or gang."[39] White, an agent for the FBN and OSS who was a contractor for the CIA after the war, had busted a heroin ring operating out of San Francisco that tracked back to these pro-KMT gangster elements – and then subsequently identified the heroin as originating from Chinese Communists.[40] Interestingly, White himself had a history with the Hip Sing tongs. "In 1936 he infiltrated the notorious Hip Sing Tong brotherhood of Seattle by masquerading as a drug dealer," leading to a massive sting operation that nabbed some thirty drug smugglers and their associates.[41]

It is worth saying a bit more about George White, who was no stranger to courting the services of organized crime figures to bolster the early American intelligence apparatus. The research carried out by the late Hank Albarelli has shown that White cultivated a protégé named Pierre Laffite, who he had recruited into the CIA as a "special employee" in June 1952.[42] Twenty years prior, Lafitte worked in France for Jean Voyatzis, "the greatest importer of manufactured Chinese opium into Europe" and a figure of considerable interest to the FBN.[43] Later, Lafitte turned up in Cuba in the company of Amleto Battisti y Lora, a Corsican expat who had partnered with Meyer Lansky in a Havana hotel. Battisti, according to a 1955 FBI memo, was "for many years … known unofficially as the numbers king of Havana."[44]

When White brought Lafitte to the CIA, the FBN agent was himself being recruited by Sidney Gottlieb, a chemist who was working at the Agency's Office of Technical Service. There, Gottlieb oversaw the CIA's research into potential "truth drugs," which in time expanded into a sweeping inquiry that dealt with the effects of drugs, shock therapy and sensory deprivation, hypnosis and even more esoteric currents on the human mind. The most famous of these programs, MK-ULTRA, saw the CIA become the largest consumer of LSD, which it used to experiment on witting and unwitting subjects. The subjects included soldiers, patients in psychiatric hospitals, prisoners (sometimes organized crime figures), and private citizens. Under Gottlieb's directions, CIA-run "safehouses" were established in New York City and San Francisco, where unsuspecting people were dosed with hallucinogenic substances while being monitored from behind two-way mirrors.

Gottlieb was impressed by White's street smarts and his inclinations towards the other side of the law – traits that were necessary for the covert drug program. As one of Gottlieb's Agency employees later stated, "We were Ivy League, white middle class.… We were naive, totally naive about this, and he felt pretty expert. He knew the whores, the pimps, the people who brought in the drugs.… He was a pretty wild man."[45] Under the alias of "Morgan Hall," White maintained a safehouse in Greenwich Village, New York City, where he supplied unsuspecting people with LSD and other substances. In order to lure people into his web, he deployed false life stories – "He posed alternatively as a merchant seaman or a bohemian artist, and consorted with a vast array of underworld characters, all of whom were involved in vice, including drugs, prostitution, gambling and pornography."[46]

In 1955, Harry J. Anslinger, the commissioner of the FBN, transferred White to San Francisco to fill a vacant post as the FBN district supervisor for the city. This was by no means the end of his work with Gottlieb and the CIA. Instead, he was granted control of MK-ULTRA Subproject 42 – or, as White called it, "Operation Midnight Climax." Midnight Climax involved a safehouse, much like the one set up in New York City, which was then decked out with electronic surveillance equipment. Prostitutes were then enlisted, who would lure unsuspecting clients back to the "pad," where they would then be slipped LSD. John Gittinger, a Harvard psychologist who was on the CIA payroll – best known perhaps for developing the Personality Assessment System – later admitted in Congressional testimony that the Agency "was interested in the combination of certain drugs with sex acts. We looked at the various pleasure positions used by prostitutes and others.… Some of the women, the professionals, we used, were very adept at this practice."[47]

White wasn't alone in obscuring the role of the KMT in the drug trade. This was also the modus operandi of Harry Anslinger, the FBN commissioner who served as boss to both George White and Garland Williams. Although Anslinger – like Donovan – was a bitter enemy of J. Edgar Hoover, he rode the rising tide of McCarthyism in the US, and identified China as the number one threat to public order.[48] The Chinese Communist Party, he claimed in the media and in official FBN reports, was over-seeing vast opium fields and had trained thousands of agents to distribute heroin within the West. Per Anslinger, Chinese opium production totaled "more than 4,000 tons … a year," with the "profits from the smuggling [being] used to finance the activities of the Communist Party and the obtain strategic raw materials."[49] Importantly, Anslinger did not have any agents located in Asia in the post-war years, with FBN posting taking place at a fairly late date in 1962.

The claims made by Anslinger in the 1950s were sourced from intelligence provided by the KMT itself and, in the early years, by the intelligence apparatus of General Douglas MacArthur's military command in post-war Japan. Overseeing this intelligence web was MacArthur's protégé, a fascist sympathizer named General Charles Willoughby. Willoughby, as will be discussed in Chapter 5, would later become a player in the so-called China Lobby, a domestic political pressure network that supported the KMT and hardline Cold War politics.

It is doubtful that the misdirection being deployed by Anslinger, White, and others in their milieu was for propagandistic purposes alone. Scott's "Operation X" thesis suggests a dual function. First, it bolstered Cold War propaganda efforts, which roughly followed the same template as the "fifth column" propaganda of the OSS during World War II. Second, it helped hide the roles of certain individuals, organizations, and networks that worked in tandem with Western intelligence services, militaries, governments, and businesses in the global drug trade. During this period, investigations into organized crime in America were soft-pedaled, if they took place at all, in part thanks to coercion and blackmail, particularly the blackmailing of FBI director J. Edgar Hoover. This also worked to obscure the role of the KMT in the drug trade due to the historical unity of American organized crime with Asian drug traffickers, forged in the inter-war period.

There is the stark possibility that this unity was maintained, well into the post-war epoch, through the efforts of American intelligence services themselves. This would result from the long-term effects of the OSS apparatus that had been set up in the China-India-Burma theater during the war. That apparatus had been concentrated around a powerful unit called Detachment 101 (which, incidentally, had been set up with the aid of Garland Williams). Many of the most notorious intelligence operatives and soldiers who dotted the landscape of the late 20th century can trace their roots back to this OSS theater – and many of them will appear throughout this book. Those who served there included E. Howard Hunt, later a CIA coup-master who achieved infamy during Watergate. Another was John Singlaub, a major player in the Iran-Contra affair. There was also Paul Helliwell, soon to become one of the architects of convoluted shadow banking strategies and a primary node between the worlds of intelligence and organized crime.

In 1943, William R. Peers – who would later lead the CIA's first training program – became the head of OSS Detachment 101 after his predecessor, Carl F. Eifler, was injured. Peers subsequently became the head of all OSS operations in the China-Burma-India theater, and personally oversaw commando operations carried out by KMT troops against Chinese Communist forces. Peers later reflected on his OSS years in an autobiography and, while discussing payment issues needed to finance the OSS' operations in Asia, made a startling disclosure:

> Simply stated, paper currency and even silver were often useless, as there was nothing to buy with money; opium, however, was the form of payment everybody used. Not to use it as a means of barter would spell an end to our operations. Opium was available to agents who used it for a number of reasons, from obtaining information to buying their own escape. Any indignation felt was removed by the difficulty of the effort ahead. If opium could be useful in achieving victory, the pattern was clear. We would use opium.[50]

The OSS activities in Burma would lay the groundwork for the country to subsequently act as an essential node in early Cold War activities against Communist elements in Asia. Importantly, after Chinese Communists drove the KMT out of the mainland and into Taiwan, Burma became one of their main outposts. There, the CIA organized a secret army with prospective plans to stage an invasion of China. "Although the KMT was to fail in its military operations," writes Alfred McCoy, "it succeeded in monopolizing and expanding … the opium trade."[51] He continues

> The KMT shipped the opium harvests to northern Thailand, where they were sold to General Phao Siyanan of the Thai police, a CIA client. The CIA had promoted the Phao-KMT partnership to secure a rear area for the KMT, but this alliance soon became a critical factor in the growth of Southeast Asia's narcotics traffic. With CIA support, the KMT remained in Burma until 1961, when a Burmese army offensive drove them into Laos and Thailand. By this time, however, the Kuomintang had already used their control over the tribal populations to expand Shan state opium production by almost 500 percent – from less than 80 tons after World War II to an estimated 300-400 tons by 1962.[52]

The CIA's Burma-Thailand support for the KMT was code-named "Operation Paper."[53] One of the architects of the operation was a close associate of Thailand's General Phao named Willis Bird – later nicknamed Mr. Opium. Bird, during World War II, had served with OSS in the Burma-China-India theater. After the end of the conflict, he remained in the region as a supplier to the Thai military and police. Whether or not Bird was an on-the-books asset of the CIA isn't clear, though he certainly was a mid-dleman for moving supplies that had been obtained via Agency financing.

These supplies arrived in Thailand by way of a company called South East Asia Supply Corporation, most frequently referred to simply as SEA Supply.[54] Willis Bird acted as SEA Supply's Bangkok office manager under the direction of Sherman Joost – a veteran of OSS Detachment 101. SEA Supply was not set up in Thailand, however. The business was instead registered in Miami, Florida by OSS-veteran-turned lawyer and banker Paul Helliwell. At the same time that Helliwell was handling the legal end of SEA Supply's activities, he was also acting as consul for the Thai government in the US. In this capacity, he was closely linked to General Phao and the network of politicians who supported him.[55]

SEA Supply worked closely with Civil Air Transport (CAT), the CIA's first proprietary airline. The roots of CAT were planted during the Second World War, when Claire Chennault organized the Flying Tigers, a volunteer aviation unit set up to provide support for the KMT in China in their fight against Japan. With ranks drawn from the US military, the Flying Tigers trained at bases in Burma, which acted as a logistics hub for their airlift. Chennault had long standing ties to the KMT: since the late 1930s, Chennault had served as a military advisor to Chiang Kai-Shek and his brother-in-law, the powerful Nationalist Chinese banker and diplomat T.V. Soong.

Besides his links to the KMT leadership and to the US military, Chennault maintained an impressive array of contacts. His lawyer was Thomas Corcoran, a top advisor in President Roosevelt's New Deal brain trust. Corcoran was close to Helliwell, and both worked together to promote Chennault's aviation plans when the war ended. Back in America, Chennault fell in with the so-called China Lobby, the network of politicians, businessmen, and other players who lobbied for support for the KMT as the only viable group who could oppose the Chinese communists. He set up and managed an impressive airlift of

"American relief supplies in China" – with the supply flight contracts going to Chennault, of course.[56] Central to this effort was the 1946 creation of a new airline called Civil Air Transport that Chennault had co-founded with Whiting Willauer.[57] Willauer would go on to be US ambassador to Costa Rica and was also later involved in the 1954 CIA-led coup in Guatemala. When the KMT retreated to the island of Formosa (now Taiwan), Chennault used CAT to run arms and medical supplies to National Chinese fighters.

CAT was brought into the world of special operations thanks to the efforts of Helliwell. He had brought Chennault and the aviation company to the attention of Frank Wisner, then the head of a covert body called the Office of Policy Coordination (OPC). Within several years, the OPC was incorporated into the CIA, cementing in place a militarized command structure governing the dark arts of the clandestine services. By 1950, CAT was a full-fledged CIA proprietary airline, operating under the auspices of a holding company set up by the Agency called Airdale Corp[58] Later, Airdale Corp was renamed Pacific Corp, and CAT would become Air America.

Air America was the CIA's premier airline, and remained active from the 1950s into the 1970s. It was finally dissolved in the wind-down of the Vietnam War, though many of its assets were sold off and absorbed into a CIA-linked firm called Evergreen International Aviation. Meanwhile, several Flying Tigers pilots went on to create the air freighter firm Flying Tiger Line, a major commercial cargo airline that also operated military contract services and engaged in covert operations. Flying Tiger Line would later have a major presence at the Rickenbacker airfield near Lockbourne, Ohio. CAT's later incarnation, Southern Air Transport, would relocate there in the early 1990s, a few years after Flying Tiger Line was absorbed into Federal Express. The airline's relocation was thanks, in part, to Jeffrey Epstein and had chiefly relocated to manage cargo for Leslie Wexner's The Limited (see chapter 17).

Connections to organized crime appear in nearly every corner of this web. Take, for instance, Margaret Chung, an "attending physician" for Chennault's Flying Tigers. A member of the Hip Sing tong, she made "frequent trips" to Mexico City in the 1940s in the company of Virginia Hill – an inside player in organized crime circles with close ties to the likes of Bugsy Siegel and Meyer Lanksy.[59] During this period, Hill "became intimate with a number of Mexico's top politicians, army officers, diplomats, and police officials," which likely facilitated the activities of her friends in the underworld.[60] Hill was also particularly close to the Chicago Outfit during this time, the significance of which will become clear shortly.

As mentioned above, Mexico had become an important base of operations for the drug smuggling network of Costello and Carolla. Given their ties to Meyer Lansky, it is certainly possible that Hill's own appearance in Mexico was connected to these earlier activities. Importantly, Mexico had also become a vital transshipment point for the KMT's own drug trafficking during this same period. Does the presence of Margaret Chung alongside Hill, then, suggest that the KMT's drug operations in Mexico directly intersected with those of Lansky and his milieu? Given the history of Lansky associates working with the KMT and the Green Gang, it is certainly possible, if not likely.

The structure of this apparently intricate network can be developed further when considering that Civil Air Transport, one of the successors to the Flying Tigers, was, by 1960, flying in and out of Laotian territory controlled by the Hmong tribesmen. The tribesmen were a major supplier of opium destined for refinement into heroin (the CIA's covert support for the Hmong is discussed in Chapter 5). Airstrips for CAT's flights were built by Bird and Sons, a "private engineering firm" controlled by "the CAT representative in Bangkok," William H. Bird.[61] Bird was the cousin of Willis Bird of the OSS and of Helliwell's SEA Supply.

There was also the case of Helliwell himself. By this point, he had become a prominent player in Republican politics. He was, for example, a delegate for Dwight Eisenhower as he strove to clinch the Republican Party presidential nomination. Helliwell had also been a leader in the Florida chapter of Citizens for Eisenhower. That chapter was subsequently accused of "being taken over by professionals who refuse[d] to work with the regular GOP leaders and who are accountable to no one for the finances they collect."[62] Members of this cadre of operators aside from Helliwell included Curt Landon and James

Guilmartin. Together, these three men were tightly-connected co-conspirators amassing unaccountable power:

> Landon is a substantial client of Helliwell's law firm; Guilmartin is a partner of Helliwell's and Guilmartin is married to Landon's daughter. We find these men closely allied by business and marriage who, if their plan succeeds, will find themselves in a position of enormous power in Florida and responsible to no recognized Republican authority.[63]

While Helliwell was making waves in the world of politics and in the world of covert operations, he was also making a foray into the world of Florida insurance. He was the consul for, and later secretary, then chairman, of American Bankers Life Assurance, located in Miami. Importantly, Helliwell utilized the offices of American Bankers Life as the hub for many of his activities. The Florida Thai consulate, for instance, was located at the same address as the insurance company – as was SEA Supply.

In addition to this important CIA linkage, American Bankers Life also shared important connections – one of which was Helliwell himself – with Miami National Bank. Founded with a loan from the Teamster pension fund, Miami National "was identified in 1969 as having served between 1963 and 1967 as a conduit through which 'hot' syndicate money was exported by Meyer Lansky's couriers and 'laundered' through the inter-locking Exchange and Investment Bank in Geneva."[64] The importance of Lansky's Geneva bank will be discussed in Chapter 3.

Helliwell's ventures, and specifically his banking endeavors, were probably related to the flow of heroin that originated as KMT opium and then passed through the hands of American organized crime figures. In his book Hot Money and the Politics of Debt, offshore banking expert R.T. Naylor writes that "South Florida is … a major refuge for Latin American flight money, which pours into the Florida banking system and local real estate. The flight capital-into-real estate business is an old one. In the 1950s and 1960s, Kuomintang money from Thailand and Burma came via Hong Kong to be washed in Lansky-related property firms."[65]

THE SUPERMOB

The global drug trade is a massive business, and the offshore banking system that enables it is even bigger. Although most imagine drug networks, their controllers and their users as existing on the fringes of society, in reality, the massive amounts of capital that result from the production and distribution of illicit drugs occupy a central place with-in the global economic system. Consider a statement made in 2009 by Antonio Maria Costa, who was then the head of the UN Office on Drugs and Crime. According to Costa, proceeds from the drug trade were an important source of liquidity for cash-starved banks at the height of the 2008 economic crisis. The amounts absorbed by the banking system were enough to prevent some banks from collapsing: "Inter-bank loans were funded by money that originated from the drugs trade and other illegal activities…. There were signs that some banks were rescued that way."[66]

In 2000, Le Monde Diplomatique suggested that the global drug trade was a billion dollar a year business – an incredibly low estimate. Seventeen years later, the Global Financial Integrity Project estimated that worldwide drug trafficking revenue stood somewhere between $426 to $652 billion annually.[67] In the same report, the overall revenue of illicit activities was posited to be $2.2 trillion. The UN Office on Drugs and Crime, meanwhile, estimated that money laundering activities – encompassing the washing of illicit drug revenue and more – make up anywhere from 2 to 5% of global GDP, at around $800 billion to $2 trillion.68 This, again, is almost certainly a conservative estimate. In 2012, $21-$32 trillion was estimated to be sloshing through the offshore banking system.[69] This number would have only increased in the wake of the earlier 2008 financial crisis.

When such immense sums of money are being generated, it isn't left to idle in bank accounts in the Caymans, Bermuda, the City of London, or wherever. The end destination of a money washing process is to transform dirty money into seemingly-clean investment capital. Journalist Michael Ruppert, in his book Crossing the Rubicon, cites cases where companies have tapped illicit money flows in order to borrow money at a lower interest rate than they would receive from major banking institutions.[70] The conversion of dirty or hot money into "credit capital" (capital that begins as a line of credit issued by a lending institution) is made easier by bank secrecy laws in tax havens, which makes it possible for legitimate and illegitimate pools of capital to intermingle freely.

Catherine Austin Fitts and Chris Sanders have gone even further by suggesting that there is a positive correlation between the upwards trajectory of stock market performance and the consistent ballooning of the drug trade. While there are a number of factors that impact stock market performance – such as easy money injected into the economy by the central banks of various countries – Fitts and Sanders write that:

> It may seem strange to think of a positive correlation between narcotics trafficking and the stock market, but consider … the proceeds of crime need to find a way into legitimate, that is, legal, channels or they are worthless to the holders. If one further imagines that the banking system earns a fee of one per cent for handling this flow (rather low considering that money laundering is a seller's market) then the profits for banks from this activity are of the order of $5 to $10 billion. Applying Citigroup's current stock market multiple of 15 or so to this yields a market capitalisation of anywhere from $65 to $115 billion. One can thus readily see the importance of the illegal drug trade to the financial services industry.[71]

Another tactic for washing money is the "capital-into-real estate" operations that Naylor referred to in relation to KMT drug money flows in Florida. Indeed, it seems that the explosive growth of the world economy in the decades following World War II opened up countless investment opportunities where the funds from drugs and other sources of capital for organized crime would be socked away. It was this period, after all, that saw the great ballooning of real estate markets and the high tech industry, along with the modern tourism industry that spawned everything from destination resorts in "exotic" locales to the sparkling lights of Las Vegas casinos.

In his book Power Shift, Kirkpatrick Sale argues that the post-war era was characterized by a rising "Southern Rim" that came to confront the traditional seat of American economic and political power in the north-east. The Southern Rim was made of the southern states, portions of the Midwest and the Sunbelt – a large expanse that stretched from Florida to California. The Rim's ascendancy, he argues, was connected to the opening up of vast real estate opportunities, related in part to tourism and retirement, to the oil and gas industries, and to the delirious growth of defense-related industries under the new Cold War paradigm.

Sale suggests that organized crime, so often associated with the American northeast, found a remarkable range of new opportunities in the Southern Rim, thus propelling these networks to previously inconceivable heights of power and influence. The blossoming trade of opium and heroin, clearly spurred and protected by the CIA, fit snuggly into these series of developments. Sale writes that:

> Smuggling – especially of heroin, in which the trade grew steadily more lucrative after the opening up of Asia's golden triangle in 1948 – tilted to the South, taking advantage of the enormous Rim coastline and the porous Mexican border, along which whole networks of "Latin connections" and "Mexican connections" were developed.… And everywhere in the booming Rim, millions of dollars were placed in legitimate investments, chiefly in those high-risk operations where venture capital is hard to come by – oil exploration, for example, and land speculation – and in those large-scale businesses where sizable amounts of capital are necessary – corporate farming, for example, technological manufacturing, and, above all, real estate development.[72]

The observations and arguments made by Kirkpatrick Sale, Michael Ruppert, and Catherine Austin Fitts neatly dovetail with the complicated yet organized history detailed by Gus Russo in his book Supermob. The term "Supermob," per Russo, refers to a close-knit circle of Jewish and Italian mobsters and businessmen who arose in the corruption-ridden corridors of Chicago and who then installed themselves in California and elsewhere. What makes the "Supermob" unique is that it was particularly stark and fairly unmasked example of how criminal networks, political power, and "legitimate" commercial activity mixed together in the period of explosive economic and cultural growth in the wake of World War II.

A key player in this group was Jake Avery, who started off as a political fixer in Chicago's 24th Ward. He acted as a precinct captain, and managed to swing the dominant political orientation of the ward from the Republican to the Democratic Party. He was later praised by Franklin D. Roosevelt for his efforts to make his district "the best Democratic ward in the country."[73] By 1928, Avery was the ward chairman – and a budding associate of organized crime. He forged an alliance with the gangster Al Capone, and the two worked together to elevate Anton Cermak to the mayor's office.

On the business side of things, one of Avery's closest associates was Henry Crown, who later became a major figure in the Hilton hotel company, the dominant controlling interest in the major defense contractor General Dynamics, and the owner of the Empire State Building. He subsequently sold the iconic building to Lawrence Wien, a New York City lawyer and real estate developer who was helping manage the assets of the Desert Inn in Las Vegas, which was controlled by mobster Moe Dalitz and, as will be noted in Chapter 4, tied up with the affairs of the infamous lawyer Roy Cohn.

Crown was also in business with David G. Baird, who ran a trio of foundations closely tied closely to organized crime and that moved CIA money. David Baird and his foundations will also be discussed in Chapter 4. Crown's son, Lester, would later join the "Mega Group," which was co-founded by Leslie Wexner and Charles Bronfman in 1991 and is discussed in detail in Chapter 14.

Henry Crown's business empire first began with his company Material Services Corporation, a supplier of concrete and other materials for construction companies. During World War II, Crown took leave from Material Service to serve in the Army Corp of Engineers. During this same period, the company benefited greatly from Crown's relationship with Jake Avery. As Russo writes, Avery, who had also joined the armed services, "managed to become, with no small thanks to friends in the Roosevelt administration, the overseer of countless international post exchange (PX) facilities on military bases. Soon, the military was supplying these PXs with goods purchased from buddy Col. Crown's Material Service Corporation."[74]

In 1959, Material Services Corporation merged with General Dynamics, which – at the time – was a producer of bomber aircraft, ballistic missile systems and other cutting-edge technologies for the American military. Crown received 20% equity in the company, making him the controlling stakeholder, and his right-hand man, Patrick Hoy, was installed as vice president of the corporation. Hoy had earlier been president of the Hotel Sherman in Chicago, a popular watering hole for various denizens of the city's organized crime community.[75] Since General Dynamics' board was populated by a cross-section of individuals tied to the Cold War military and intelligence structures, this chain of ownership and associates is a surprisingly straightforward instance of mutual collusion between these spheres and the criminal underworld. In 1966, after leaving General Dynamics, Hoy became vice chairman of the Penn-Dixie Cement Company – the CEO of which, Jerome Castle, "was an admitted 'old friend' of New York crime boss Frank Costello."[76]

Avery, Crown, and Hoy were all close to an important Chicago lawyer named Sidney Korshak. The Korshak family had grown up with the Averys, and just like Jake Avery, Sidney Korshak forged an early working relationship with Al Capone. Even before he was officially an attorney, Korshak's side gig, while he was in law school, had been to act as an advisor to the infamous gangster. His subsequent law partner, Edward King, was the "lawyer for Capone's heir Frank Nitti," before setting off for "greener pastures in New York," where he worked for Meyer Lansky himself.[77] Lansky and Korshak also did business together, as partners in the Acapulco Towers Hotel. Notably, the magazine New West stated in 1976 that Korshak was the "logical successor to Meyer Lansky."78

Like Crown's business associate Lawrence Wein, Korshak had ties to mobster Moe Dalitz's circles. According to Russo, Korshak lent his considerable legal talents to helping arrange frontmen for organized crime interests in Las Vegas hotels and casinos. "[T]he hoods," he writes, needed owners of record whose IRS statements reflected legitimate wealth. The obvious first choice was … Moe Dalitz."[79] Dalitz, his criminal background, and his webs of associations will be discussed mainly in Chapter 4.

Another associate of the "Supermob" was Julius Caesar Stein, an "ophthalmologist and musician" that abandoned "his medical career to book dance bands and singers into speakeasies and nightclubs on Chicago's South Side."[80] In 1924, he founded the Music Corporation of America (MCA) as an umbrella company for his booking efforts; reportedly, Al Capone owned a secret piece of the company. While this cannot be confirmed, it is true that Capone and Stein had a cozy relationship, with the gangster ensuring that Chicago's bars, clubs, and music halls directed their business towards Stein and MCA.[81]

In 1936, Stein brought a man into the MCA fold who would go on to fundamentally shape the character and direction of the American entertainment industry forever – Lew Wasserman. Unsurprisingly, Wasserman already boasted a background in mob circles: he had been the publicist for Cleveland, Ohio's Mayfair Casino, which was controlled by Moe Dalitz's network. Dalitz and Wasserman maintained life-long ties – Wasserman would even marry Edith Beckerman, the daughter of Dalitz's lawyer, Henry Beckerman.[82] Wasserman knew Beckerman from his days at the Mayfair Casino: Beckerman's name was listed on the club's liquor license.[83] Wasserman's and MCA's connections to organized crime are discussed in greater detail in chapters 9 and 10.

Soon, the Chicago mob began its slow creep into Los Angeles, moving into Hollywood and adjacent industries. The man who started off their advance was Johnny Roselli, who would later land in Las Vegas as the Chicago mob's frontman in the casino business. He was placed in charge of skimming operations, which, as will be discussed in Chapter 3, moved money into offshore banks in the Caribbean that were themselves controlled by representatives of Meyer Lansky. Perhaps it was his intimate familiarity with this world that helped Roselli become the CIA's mafiosi of choice when it came to recruiting organized crime figures for its covert assassination plots against Fidel Castro in Cuba.

Through the operations that took shape in California, massive amounts of illicit money began to be dumped into "above-board" industries. Real estate was a particularly hot commodity, and the architect of many of the investments made by the "Supermob" was a protégé of Avery and Korshak named Paul Ziffren. Ziffren's granddaughter would later marry Lew Wasserman's grandson, later bringing these families even closer together. Ziffren acted as the LA representative of Hilton Hotel interests, and he was the source of the seed capital that launched Store Properties Inc., a real estate holding company whose ostensible owner was a man named Sam Genis. Genis was most likely a conduit for enabling the flow of organized crime money into real estate. Per Russo, Genis was:

> …a known associate of mob bosses Longy Zwillman, Doc Stacher, Frank Costello, Joey Adonis, and Meyer Lansky. Genis' criminal record showed that he had been arrested for bad checks in Florida, embezzlement in New York, and mail fraud and securities law violations in Georgia.… By 1957, Store Properties had bought thousands of acres of land in over three hundred transactions worth $20 million in Los Angeles alone. When Store's other California purchases are factored in (in San Bernardino, Fresno, Oakland, and San Francisco), the estimate approaches $100 million. Then there were the additional investments in such states as Arizona, Utah, Colorado, Oklahoma, Florida, Illinois, and New York.[84]

Genis, interestingly, was the member of an organized circle of businessmen who helped provide the start-up capital for the Committee on the Present Danger (CPD), an early Cold War-pressure group set up to build public support for the militarization plan that had been drawn up by NSC [68]. NSC [68] was a National Security Council policy paper that called for the remarkable expansion of the US' military budget. Naturally, the CPD counted among its members many representatives of defense contracting companies, a field that, as noted above with the case of Crown, Hoy, and General Dynamics, was becoming increasingly infiltrated by elements of organized crime.

The organizers behind this California group (CPD) were the movie producer Samuel Goldwyn and industrialist Floyd Odlum. Odlum, a shadowy figure who is now largely forgotten, was the man behind the towering Atlas Corporation, through which he invested heavily into a vast array of aviation companies, film studios, real estate, and natural resources. Atlas Corporation would later gain lucrative government contracts; in particular for its interests in uranium mining inside the United States and abroad. Odlum's interests were certainly diverse: through Atlas, his money seeped into Hilton hotels, into the United Fruit Company, and into Pan Am. Atlas also controlled Convair, the aircraft manufacturer and defense contractor, which it sold to General Dynamics in 1953. As part of the deal, Atlas received large amounts of General Dynamic stock and a representative on the company's board. Odlum and Harry Crown, in other words, were directly affiliated.[85]

Other associates of the California group backing the formation of the CPD were a number of film industry figures, including future president Ronald Reagan. Reagan was a MCA man through and through, having been represented by the company when it bought out the agency that had previously represented him in 1940. "Based on the success of King's Row in 1942," wrote Dan Moldea in his book on MCA, Dark Victory, "[Lew] Wasserman renegotiated Reagan's contract with Warner Brothers, obtaining a deal that paid Reagan $3,500 a week for seven years. The deal gave Reagan the distinction of being Wasserman's first 'million-dollar client'."[86]

As will be noted again in Chapter 10, the rise of Reagan to the heights of political power in the United States was facilitated in large part by Wasserman and MCA. At the same time, Reagan was vital to the survival and success of MCA in Hollywood. At the behest of Wasserman, Reagan ran for, and won, the presidency of the powerful Screen Actors Guild (SAG). At the time, Reagan was also acting as an FBI informant, reporting to the bureau on leftists in Hollywood. Once in charge of the SAG, Reagan began to change the rules to benefit his benefactors. SAG had previously restricted companies like MCA – that is, talent agencies – from becoming producers. However, in 1952, Reagan granted the company a special waiver. MCA thus gained "an insurmountable edge over competing agencies in Hollywood" and "began to exponentially increase its hold over the entertainment industry."[87]

Later, when Reagan secured the governorship of California in 1966, MCA's hidden hand was again lurking in the background. The co-chairman of his campaign was Taft Schreiber, the long-running vice president of MCA, while the company's founder Jules Stein went to work arranging funding. According to Moldea, a "standing joke in Hollywood was that 'MCA even had its own governor'."[88] MCA had actually hedged its bets in that election. Running against Reagan was the incumbent Pat Brown, who was being backed by Wasserman and Korshak. Henry Denker, a playwright and producer with numerous Hollywood connections, stated that:

MCA was divided into two groups. There was a Democratic group and a Republican group. They always wanted to have a hand in the White House, no matter which party was there. When Reagan was doing the General Electric show, somebody came up with the idea that he would promote GE to the plants, make visits. These appearances were very successful. They saw how the workers loved him, and somebody at MCA said, 'Hey, he could be governor of the state.' In show business you go with what's working – that's an old maxim.[89]

After being defeated by Reagan, Pat Brown took a directorship at Investors Overseas Services (IOS), an international mutual fund with connections to Meyer Lansky. He had been brought to the fund by James Roosevelt, one of the sons of former President Franklin D. Roosevelt. James, it seems, had organized crimes ties of his own, as he had done business with Store Properties, the mob-controlled real estate company that had been set up by Ziffren and Genis. Also partnered alongside Roosevelt in Store Properties was James Swig, who would serve earlier as "Pat Brown's statewide finance chairman in his successful California gubernatorial campaign."[90]

The Roosevelt boys seemed to have a penchant for fostering ties to the underworld. James' brother, John Roosevelt, had arranged for Jimmy Hoffa to get a job at Bache & Company, a New York City securities and stock brokerage that "handled about 25 percent of the [Teamster Pension's] funds $160 million dollar investments."[91] The president of Bache & Co., incidentally, was Frank T. Ryan, a veteran of the OSS, who was partnered with the spymaster William Donovan and other veterans of US and British wartime intelligence in the World Commerce Corporation (WCC). WCC itself was capitalized by a handful of firms, including Bache & Co. itself and Floyd Odlum's Atlas Corporation, which was represented on the WCC board by Odlum's brother-in-law, L. Boyd Hatch.[92]

With this set of ties, the specter of intelligence connections begins to emerge once again. It is no surprise, then, that there is a direct line running from the Chicago-Los Angeles "Supermob" to the networks that were simultaneously being organized by Paul Helliwell.

KINGS OF THE CASTLE

On the forty-fifth page of the most-well known of Jeffrey Epstein's two black contact books are the names and numbers of two individuals from the same prominent Chicago family: Nicholas and Thomas Pritzker. Epstein listed two addresses, five phone numbers and one email address for Nicholas; for Thomas, he had two addresses, one email, and twelve phone numbers ranging from his main office number to his farm to his emergency contact line. Under Nicholas Pritzker, Epstein placed the name "Hyatt Development Corp" – the Hyatt hotel company had been taken over by the Pritzker family late in the 1950s – while under Thomas he cryptically noted "Numero Uno."

The Pritzkers have long been a potent force in local, state and national politics. Penny Pritzker, a cousin to Thomas (and a board member of the Council on Foreign Relations), had met Barack Obama in the early 1990s, and the future president's political career has long relied on lucrative donations made by her and her family. Obama repaid his debt by making Penny Pritzker a member of the President's Economic Recovery Advisory Board. During Obama's second term, Penny was nominated – and confirmed – as his Secretary of Commerce.

Penny's brother J.B. Pritzker, meanwhile, served as the co-chair of Hillary Clinton's 2008 campaign before working to broker an agreement between Clinton and Obama. In 2019, he was elected Governor of Illinois. The third sibling, Anthony Pritzker, has avoided taking public office, but maintains a post on the advisory board of the Center for Asia Pacific Policy at the RAND Corporation.

Travel up the family tree and one begins to find that the Pritzker family's wealth and influence might have originated in darker corners. Take Abram Nicholas Pritzker, grandfather to Nicholas, Thomas, Penny, J.B. and Anthony. One of three sons of Nicholas J. Pritzker, Abram had worked with his brothers at the family law firm, Pritzker & Pritzker, where he specialized in business law. In the 1930s, he decided to dip into the world of business himself, and he and his brother Jack invested in a string of companies across Chicago. One of these was Hyatt, which would help the family secure lasting influence. As was the case with Henry Crown, the Pritzkers had to deal with the Hotel and Restaurant Employees Union – where Sidney Korshak was the labor negotiator.

Then, there was the case of the Frontier Finance. As Gus Russo writes:

> Jack Clarke, a renowned Chicago private investigator, recently recalled what he heard on the streets: "Frontier Finance was used and owned by the Pritzkers as a holding company and is believed to be the secret to the origins of the family's involvement with criminals. Pritzker lent to immigrants 'five for seven,' or five dollars lent against seven dollars repayment with interest. It was started on the West Side and the Pritzkers let the mob run it for them. This company office was where the mob held their meetings." Frontier Finance was a state-licensed loan company, with a number of legit investors, such as the postmaster of Chicago, a former chairman of the Cook County Republican Party, and a retired Chicago police captain. But curiously, the president of the firm was Frank Buccieri, brother of the notorious Fiore "Fifi" Buccieri, one of the Outfit's top gambling bosses and a dreaded "juice" collector.[93]

Another Abram Pritzker venture was the Franklin Investment Company, which later went on to dominate the hotel business in Columbus, Ohio. It had been set up with the aid of Paul Ziffren, who acted as a partner in the venture. Joining them was a friend of Abram named Arthur Greene. Described by the Chicago Crime Commission as the "brains of all the Chicago rackets," Greene – a close associate of the aforementioned James Roosevelt – was reported to have facilitated investments on behalf of Meyer Lansky. Additionally, "Greene somehow figured in the California expansion of Jules Stein's MCA, through a relative named Edwin Greene" – a vice president at MCA.[94]

The Pritzker family employed Burton Kanter to serve as the tax attorney for their burgeoning empire, and Kanter gained a spot on the Hyatt board. Kanter would, in time, boast connections to powerful operatives from international criminal networks – not to mention the CIA and Israel's Mossad. Yet, earlier on, Kanter received massive kickbacks from Abram Pritzker after Kanter arranged for the family to take over a San Francisco hotel built by Prudential Financial (Kanter, in characteristic fashion, opted not to pay any taxes on his gains).[95] As part of the deal, Kanter had arranged for secret payments to be made to Prudential executives. What's remarkable about this story is that it took several decades to unravel: Kanter and Pritzker had put this scheme in motion in the 1970s, but it was not revealed until 2007.

Kanter was deeply connected to the world of mob-linked business. In 1968, for example, he was listed as the agent for the La Costa Club near San Diego. La Costa, for all intents and purposes, was built for and by organized crime figures. Gene Ayres and Jeff Morgan, writing in the Oakland Tribune, noted that "La Costa's original developers include Allard Roen, who was convicted in 1962 on stock fraud charges, and Morris Barney 'Moe' Dalitz, who, with Roen, was part of the old-time Cleveland gambling crowd."[96] Ayres and Morgan then added that "Among La Costa's visitors have been Chicago 'politicians' Marshall Korshak [brother of Sidney Korshak] and Jake Avery; St. Louis attorney Morris Shenker, a legal defender of James Hoffa…. One man who reportedly spends more time at La Costa than anyone else is Allen Dorfman, the Chicago insurance magnate who wields tremendous influence over the Teamsters Central State Pension Fund".[97] La Costa itself managed to tap into $62 million in Teamster pension fund loans.98 Importantly, a close associate of Kanter named Stanford Clinton – himself a partner at the Pritzker & Pritzker law firm and Hyatt board member – was a trustee for the fund.[99]

Other Kanter ventures were located far from the windswept cityscapes of Chicago and the sunny, beach-adjacent plains of Southern California. He was also connected to a most curious bank located in the Bahamas: Castle Bank and Trust. When the IRS came knocking on Castle's door, Kanter told them he was merely a tax consultant to the bank. That was a lie – he was one half of the bank's top management, and he was shepherding money from his various clients into its coffers. The Pritzker family itself would later be revealed to be the bank's largest depositors, while a number of people tied closely to them maintained accounts there as well. Stanford Clinton held money in Castle, as did the actor Tony Curtis, a close friend of Sidney Korshak.[100] Playboy's Hugh Hefner was there as well; he intriguingly "planned to join with a Pritzker company in an Atlantic City casino venture."[101]

Castle maintained accounts for the usual crew of organized crime suspects. Morris Kleinman, Sam Tucker and Lou Rothkopf, as well as major parts of the Cleveland mob scene that surrounded Moe Dalitz, held money in Castle. However, accounts vary as to whether or not Dalitz himself had money there.[102] Kleinman, whose attorney was Kanter, was reportedly a secret co-owner in the bank. Either way, his accounts in Castle reflected his hidden interest in a company called Karat Inc., which operated the Stardust Casino in Las Vegas. The Stardust itself was owned by Lodestar Inc., a company controlled by Dalitz.

Authorities had been put on the trail of Castle Bank in 1971 after a man named Allan George Palmer and several of his associates were busted flying marijuana from Florida to Oakland, California. Palmer was subsequently revealed to have been "a major producer of LSD, mescaline, and THC" in the San Francisco Bay area since around 1968.[103] Palmer fell under the scrutiny of the San Francisco IRS office, which was then leading a program against drug money networks. That office soon discovered that the dealer had used the then-unknown Castle Bank, whose services he accessed via American National Banker & Trust Company in Chicago. Palmer, it seems, had been brought to Castle via Roger S. Baskes, Kanter's brother-in-law and a partner in his law firm.

This was not the only LSD-related banking taking place at Castle. Accounts were also maintained by William Mellon Hitchcock, a scion of the Mellon family, who will appear again in connection with the UK's Profumo Affair in Chapter 4. Hitchcock was one of the financial backers of the Brotherhood of Eternal Love, the so-called "hippie mafia" that produced and distributed psychedelics on an international scale.[104] Given that they were based in Orange County, California, it is possible that Palmer's ring was part of their operation – though that cannot be confirmed at this time.

The San Francisco IRS requested aid from the IRS intelligence apparatus in Chicago, which promptly tracked down Castle's information. They found a card that listed the bank's principals, several of whom were revealed to have been fictitious characters. At the top of the list was Kanter and his partner, the other half of Castle's management: Paul Helliwell. Alan Block writes that "Kanter and Helliwell had known each other since the late 1950s, having met while working on a deal between a Kanter client and one of Helliwell's."[105]

Castle Bank was a melding of worlds. On the one hand, there was Kanter's specialty in offshore trusts and his connections to both the city's political power centers and the sprawl of its "supermob". On the other hand, there was Helliwell – the Republican Party insider, intelligence veteran (and continued intelligence asset), and an offshore specialist in his own right with intimate connections to the blossoming heroin traffic coming out from Southeast Asia. Together, they organized a complicated money laundering operation that silently moved the funds of powerful gangsters, politicians, businessmen, and intelligence services around the globe.

When Castle was first established, it was a just a paper company – a company that existed only as a legal entity, with no officers, infrastructure or business activity to speak of. It sat for three years from when it was registered in 1964 until 1967, when it was finally activated. A physical headquarters was established in Nassau and a law firm – that of a British expat living in Argentina named Anthony James Tullis Gooding – was retained. Shortly thereafter, the number of accounts at the bank began to balloon. Banking relations were then established with banks in the United States; namely, Bank of Perrine and Bank of Cutler-Ridge.

Bank of Perrine and Bank of Cutler-Ridge were small, Florida-based institutions that were intimately interconnected. They shared relationships not only with Castle Bank, but with one another as well. Both had the same chairman – Paul Helliwell – and they were also owned by the same sets of holding companies, HMT Corporation and later Florida Shares, Inc. The shares of these companies were owned by Helliwell and his circle of associates, with one being a mysterious figure by the name of E.P. Barry. Helliwell and Barry had known each other since their days together in the OSS, though the details of the particulars of their relationship are murky. Barry had spent time in the Middle East during his clandestine service, but, by the end of the war, he was serving as the head of OSS' X-2 Vienna branch (i.e. the OSS counterintelligence division).[106]

Following the war, Barry remained in Europe and became immersed in the world of Zurich banking. Through Barry and his connection to Helliwell and HMT/Florida Shares, a number of connections can be found. As will be discussed in Chapter 3, Barry, at the same time that he was involved with these Florida banks, could also be found at the ground floor of Inter Maritime Bank, which was controlled by a close friend of future CIA director William J. Casey and a businessman-underworld operator named Bruce Rappaport (Casey, also an OSS veteran, was reportedly close to Barry as well).

Another bank, discussed in later chapters, is the Bank of World Commerce, a Lansky-controlled bank that helped move casino skim and other "hot money" funds abroad. According to Tom Farer, Bank of Perrine had banking relations with the Bank of World Commerce in addition to Castle Bank and Trust.[107] What was taking shape, in other words, appears to have been an elaborate "daisy chain" of offshore banks.

One of the early ventures that Castle engaged in was a convoluted land fraud that netted millions and intimately involved Kanter. The fraud was carried out under the auspices of a company called International Computerized Land Research (ICLR). Gooding, the British-Argentine attorney who represented Castle, registered the company, and Kanter appears to have kept the company afloat financially, in addition to it using the services of Castle Bank. Thanks to the Bahamas' bank secrecy structures, Kanter was able to obscure his position as hidden partner in ICLR.

ICLR was run by James McGowan and James Farrara, the latter of whom was a "fairly sleazy operator with a criminal record stretching back to 1926 when he was fined for running a whorehouse. He spent some time in prison in the 1930s and 1940s for violations of the Mann Act, having to do with transporting women across state lines for immoral purposes."[108] ICLR was just one, albeit the largest and most complex, in a string of companies this pair had formed in order to hawk low-value California land at high price to unsuspecting investors in Europe and Asia. "The promotional material," reads one press report, "lists Nassau, Okinawa, Hong Kong, Zurich, and Munich as sites of real estate agencies representing ICLR."[109]

Like Kanter's elaborate kickback schemes on behalf of the Pritzkers, authorities took decades to untangle the web left by ICLR. When indictments were finally brought against McGowan and Farrara in 1982, the Los Angeles Times reported that the duo stood accused of running a "far-flung land sales empire" that defrauded "buyers of more than $15 million over a 17-year period. 'The $15 million is a very conservative number,' said Assistant U.S. [Attorney] Gary Feess."[110] Given that Kanter and his associates effectively structured ICLR, provided it with financing, took a financial stake in the company, and provided it with banking services, there are obvious questions as to the ultimate purpose – and destination – of this pilfered money.

Castle Bank wasn't only a repository and conduit for money belonging to tax-evading billionaires, shady businessmen, drug dealers and land fraudsters. It seems some of their other clients wielded a different kind of power that helped grant the bank its knack for evading official inquiry. First, a sweeping IRS probe into Castle that had unearthed an expansive network dedicated to tax evasion was shut down. In addition, the list of names of Castle clients investigators had obtained was declared to have been found through illegal means. Then, a Department of Justice probe into the bank was dropped in 1977. Three years later, in 1980, the real circumstances of this obstruction were revealed:

> It now appears that pressure from the Central Intelligence Agency, rather than any legal problem, was what caused the Justice Department to drop what could have been the biggest tax evasion case of all time. Moreover, the supposed legal obstacle to using the Castle Bank Depositors' list was questionable at best – the government already had in its possession the same list, legally obtained – What caused the Justice Department to back off seems to have been the CIA's argument that pursuit of the Castle Bank would endanger "national security."[111]

According to an unnamed Federal source, Castle Bank was "one of the CIA's finance channels for operations against Cuba." Helliwell – and presumably Castle – was purportedly involved with the Agency in "financing a series of covert forays between 1964 and 1975 against Cuba by CIA operatives working from Andros Island," one of the many islands located in the Bahamas not too far from Florida's southernmost coastline. Declassified CIA files show that, going back to the pre-Bay of Pigs invasion era, Andros was used as a staging ground for the CIA's cadres of Cuban exiles that the Agency had armed and trained to fight against Castro. Later, in the 1980s, Andros would serve as one of the transshipment points for Colombian cocaine flowing into the United States by way of Nicaragua. Involved in this particular channel was a figure who will be addressed at length in future chapters, Robert Vesco.[112]

Endnotes

1Alfred W. McCoy, The Politics of Heroin: CIA Complicity in the Global Drug Trade: Afghanistan, Southeast Asia, Central America, Colombia, Rev. ed (Chicago: Lawrence Hill Books: Distributed by Independent Publishers Group, 2003), 31.

2The role of Haffendon is discussed at length in Rodney Campbell, The Luciano Project: The Secret Wartime Collaboration of the Mafia and the U.S. Navy (New York: McGraw-Hill, 1977).

3McCoy, The Politics of Heroin, chap. 1.

4Campbell, The Luciano Project, 76.

5McCoy, The Politics of Heroin, 30.

6Priscilla M. Roberts in "The American 'Eastern Establishment': A Challenge for Historians" describes the concept as encompassing "A body of individuals committed to what are often loosely term 'internationalist' policies, men drawn from the leading financial and business institutions, law firms, Ivy League universities, major philanthropic foundations, and communications media of the East Coast, who take a particular interest in and have a substantial impact upon the direction of twentieth century foreign affairs." From the SHAFR Newsletter, XIV, December 1983, 9.

7Richard H. Immerman, John Foster Dulles: Piety, Pragmatism, and Power in U.S. Foreign Policy (Rowan & Littlefield Publishers, 1998), 23-24.

8Donald Janson, "Resorts Head Tells of Dropping Partner," New York Times, January 17, 1979, https://www.nytimes.com/1979/01/17/archives/resorts-head-tells-of-dropping-partner.html.

9Joan Cook, "James M. Crosby, 58, Founder of Hotel and Casino Concern," New York Times, April 12, 1986, https://www.nytimes.com/1986/04/12/obituaries/james-m-crosby-58-founder-of-hotel-and-casino-concern.html.

10Sally Denton and Roger Morris write that the Mary Carter Paint Company "was widely considered to be a CIA front that laundered money to the Cuban exile army in the early 1960s." Sally Denton and Roger Morris, The Money and the Power: The Making of Las Vegas and Its Hold on America, 1947-2000, 1st ed (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 2001), 284, https://archive.org/details/moneypowermaking00dent.

11John C. Williams, "Covert Connections: the FBN, the OSS, and the CIA," The Historian, Vol. 53, No. 4, Summer, 1991, 668.

12Richard Harris Smith, OSS: The Secret History of America's First Central Intelligence Agency (Guilford, Conn: Lyons Press, 2005), 80.

13Smith, OSS, 14.

14David Rockefeller's wartime intelligence activities is discussed in David Rockefeller, Memoirs (New York: Random House, 2003).

15Richard B. Spence, Wall Street and the Russian Revolution, 1905-1925, ePub (Oregon: Trine Day LLC, 2017), 507-08. Spence notes that when Donovan returned to New York City in October 1920, another passenger on the same ship was William Wiseman, the British spymaster who maintained a post in New York City during World War I (sort of a model for the later activities of William Stephenson and the British Security Coordination during World War II). In 1920, Wiseman went to work for Kuhn Loeb, and two years later became head of the New York & Foreign Development Corporation – a "spin-off" of Kuhn Loeb set up to "capitalize on Eastern European opportunities."

16Thomas E. Mahl, Desperate Deception: British Covert Operations in the United States, 1939-44, ePub (Washington [D.C.]: Brassey's, 1998), 44.

17Curt Gentry, J. Edgar Hoover: The Man and the Secrets (New York, N.Y.: Norton, 2001), 265–66.

18Smith, OSS, 29.

19Mahl, Desperate Deception, 65.

20David Ignatius, "How Churchill's Agents Secretly Manipulated the U.S. Before Pearl Harbor," Washington Post, September 17, 1989, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/opinions/1989/09/17/how-churchills-agents-secretly-manipulated-the-us-before-pearl-harbor/0881f7a8-7c9d-49d0-8338-eac3be333134/

21Mahl, Desperate Deception, 64.

22Mahl, Desperate Deception, 96

23Peter Dale Scott, Deep Politics and the Death of JFK (University of California Press, 1996), 174.
24John H Davis, Mafia Kingfish: Carlos Marcello and the Assassination of John F. Kennedy (New York: New American Library, 1989), 50.
25Davis, Mafia Kingfish, 59.
26For an excellent overview of this history, see Shiu Hing Lo, The Politics of Controlling Organized Crime in Greater China, 2016.
27Lo, Controlling Organized Crime, 12.
28The most in-depth treatment of the KMT's opium monopoly efforts is Jonathan Marshall, "Opium and the Politics of Gangsterism in Nationalist China, 1927–1945," Bulletin of Concerned Asian Scholars, No. 8, Vol. 3, 1976.
29On the Rockefeller Foundation and the KMT, see Marshall, "Opium and the Politics of Gangsterism," 21. On the activities of the China Medical Board, see the "Rockefeller Foundation Annual Report," 1922, https://www.rockefellerfoundation.org/wp-content/uploads/Annual-Report-1922-1.pdf.
30Marshall, "Opium and the Politics of Gangsterism," 22.
31Marshall, "Opium and the Politics of Gangsterism," 30.
32McCoy, The Politics of Heroin, 27.
33Hans Derks, History of the Opium Problem: The Assault on the East, ca. 1600-1950 (Boston: Brill, 2012), 689.
34Hans Derks, History of the Opium Problem, 93.
35George Parker, "Lord Sassoon to Join Jardine Matheson," Financial Times, January 3, 2013, https://www.ft.com/content/1a7c4e5c-55ad-11e2-bbd1-00144feab49a.
36"All the World's a Fair, Parts 1-4," January 3, 2021, Pseudodoxology Podcast Network, https://patreon.com/posts/45747840.
37Douglas Valentine, The Strength of the Wolf: The Secret History of America's War on Drugs, ePub (London: Verso, 2004), 44.
38Scott, Deep Politics and the Death of JFK, 167-68.
39Scott, Deep Politics and the Death of JFK, 168.
40Valentine, Strength of the Wolf, 195.
41"Guide to the George White Papers," https://oac.cdlib.org/findaid/ark:/13030/tf6k40059b/.
42H. P Albarelli, Coup in Dallas: The Decisive Investigation Into Who Killed JFK (NY: Skyhorse Publishing, 2021), 94.
43Albarelli, Coup in Dallas, 101.
44"NRO, Mafia, Organization A/O Membership, BKG, Criminal Act, Method of Operation, Legitimate Enterprises, Polit Act, Cuba," FBI Memo, October 11, 1955, https://www.archives.gov/files/research/jfk/releases/docid-32301903.pdf.
45Stephen Kinzer, Poisoner in Chief: Sidney Gottlieb and the CIA Search for Mind Control (New York: Henry Holt and Company, 2019), 123.
46Kinzer, Poisoner in Chief, 126.
47H. P. Albarelli, A Terrible Mistake: The Murder of Frank Olson, and the CIA's Secret Cold War Experiments, 1st ed (Oregon: Trine Day, 2009), 744.
48Jonathan Marshall, "Cooking the Books: The Federal Bureau of Narcotics, the China Lobby and Cold War Propaganda, 1950-1962," The Asia-Pacific Journal 11, no. 37 (September 15, 2013), https://apjjf.org/-Jonathan-Marshall/3997/article.pdf.
49Marshall, "Cooking the Books."
50Bertil Linter, Burma in Revolt: Opium and Insurgency Since 1948 (Routledge, 2019), 62.
51McCoy, The Politics of Heroin, 162.
52McCoy, The Politics of Heroin, 162.
53Peter Dale Scott, "Operation Paper: The United States and Drugs in Thailand and Burma," The Asia-Pacific Journal 8, no. 44 (November 1, 2010), https://apjjf.org/-Peter-Dale-Scott/3436/article.pdf.

54Linter, Burma in Revolt, 104.
55See, for example, "20 Children," Miami Herald, November 20, 1954, https://miamiherald.newspapers.com/image/618421882.
56Peter Dale Scott, The War Conspiracy: The Secret Road to the Second Indochina War (Indianapolis: The Bobbs-Merril Company, Inc., 1972), 7, https://archive.org/details/warconspiracys00scot.
57John Prados, Safe for Democracy: The Secret Wars of the CIA (Chicago: Ivan R. Dee, 2009), 125.
58Prados, Safe for Democracy, 196-197.
59Valentine, Strength of the Wolf, 44.
60Ed Reid, The Mistress and the Mafia: The Virginia Hill Story (Bantan Books, 1972), 42.
61Scott, The War Conspiracy, 207.
62"GOP 'Regulars' Hit At 'Harmful' Tactics In State Ike Group," Tampa Bay Times, August 25, 1952.
63"GOP Regulars' Hit."
64Scott, The War Conspiracy, 241.
65R.T. Naylor, Hot Money and the Politics of Debt (Linden Pub, 1988), 292.
66Rajeev Syal, "Drug Money Saved Banks in Global Crisis, Claims UN Advisor," The Guardian, December 12, 2009, https://www.theguardian.com/global/2009/dec/13/drug-money-banks-saved-un-cfief-claims.
67"Transnational Crime Is a $1.6 Trillion to $2.2 Trillion Annual 'Business', Finds New GFI Report," Global Financial Integrity, March 27, 2017, https://gfintegrity.org/press-release/transnational-crime-is-a-1-6-trillion-to-2-2-trillion-annual-business-finds-new-gfi-report/.
68"Money Laundering," United Nations : Office on Drugs and Crime, https://www.unodc.org/unodc/en/money-laundering/overview.html.
69"Super Rich Hold $32 Trillion in Offshore Havens," Reuters, July 22, 2012, https://www.reuters.com/article/us-offshore-wealth-idUSBRE86L03U20120722.
70Michael C. Ruppert, Crossing the Rubicon: The Decline of the American Empire at the End of the Age of Oil (New Catalyst Books, 2004), 60.
71Chris Sanders and Catherine Austin Fitts, "The Black Budget of the United States: The Engine of a 'Negative Return Economy'," World Affairs 8, no. 2 (April-June 2004), 29-30.
72Kirkpatrick Sale, Power Shift: The Rise of the Southern Rim and Its Challenge to the Eastern Establishment (Random House, 1975), 86.
73Gus Russo, Supermob: How Sidney Korshak and His Criminal Associates Became America's Hidden Power Brokers, 1st U.S. ed (New York: Bloomsbury, 2006), 16.
74Russo, Supermob, 20.
75On Patrick Hoy at the Hotel Sherman, see the Chicago Tribune, July 22, 1957, 52. Interestingly, the operator of the Hotel Sherman was famed hotelier Ernie Byfield. Byfield's son, Ernie Byfield Jr., served in the OSS. After he passed away, his wife remarried to Robert McNamara in 2004. "Ex-U.S. Defense Secretary Remarries," AP News, September 16, 2004, https://apnews.com/article/7a9915a3b31cd47f699e07c586224518.
76Jonathan Marshall, Dark Quadrant: Organized Crime, Big Business, and the Corruption of American Democracy: From Truman to Trump, Additional Endnotes (Lanham: Rowman & Littlefield, 2021), 28, https://rowman.com/WebDocs/Dark_Quadrant_Extra_Notes.pdf.
77Russo, Supermob, 37.
78"New West," New West Communications, 1976, Volume 1, p. 27, https://www.google.com/books/edition/New_West/6SkcAQAAIAAJ?hl=en&gbpv=0.
79Russo, Supermob, 202.
80Jane Applegate, "The History of MCA," Los Angeles Times, November 27, 1990, https://www.latimes.com/archives/la-xpm-1990-11-27-fi-5451-story.html.
81Russo, Supermob, 43.

82Mike Barnes, "Edie Wasserman, Wife of Lew Wasserman, Dies at 95," The Hollywood Reporter, August 18, 2011, https://www.hollywoodreporter.com/news/general-news/edie-wasser-man-wife-lew-wasserman-225101/.

83Russo, Supermob, 204.
84Russo, Supermob, 100.
85Marshall, Dark Quadrant, 252-253.
86Dan E. Moldea, Dark Victory: Ronald Reagan, MCA, and the Mob (New York, N.Y: Viking, 1987), 37.
87Russo, Supermob, 231.
88Moldea, Dark Victory, 254.
89Russo, Supermob, 306.
90Russo, Supermob, 100.
91Scott, Deep Politics and the Death of JFK, 285.
92"Trading Unit Bridges Foreign Exchange Gap", Los Angeles Times, September 24, 1947; "Foreign Trade: Idealism, Inc.," TIME, October 6, 1947, https://content.time.com/time/subscriber/article/0,33009,779340,00.html.
93Russo, Supermob, 68-9.
94Russo, Supermob, 93.
95David Cay Johnston. "Court Upholds Tax Evasion Ruling," New York Times News Service, February 4, 2007.
96Gene Ayres and Jeff Morgan, "Pension Fund Loans Buy Luxury," Oakland Tribune, September 23, 1969.
97Ayres and Morgan, "Pension Fund."
98Russo, Supermob, 67.
99Lee Dembart, "Teamster Pension Chiefs May Quit," New York Times, October 13, 1976, https://www.nytimes.com/1976/10/13/archives/teamster-pension-chiefs-may-quit-11-trustees-of-teamsters-pension.html.
100Russo, Supermob, 440.
101Penny Lernoux, In Banks We Trust, 1st ed (Garden City, N.Y: Anchor Press/Doubleday, 1984), 80.
102Alan A. Block and Constance A. Weaver, All Is Clouded by Desire: Global Banking, Money Laundering, and International Organized Crime (Connecticut: Praeger, 2004), 45.
103Alan A. Block, Space, Time & Organized Crime, 2nd ed (New Jersey: Transaction Publishers, 1994), 354.
104Martin A Lee and Bruce Shlain, Acid Dreams: The Complete Social History of LSD: The CIA, the Sixties, and Beyond (New York: Grove Press, 2007), 245.
105Block and Weaver, All is Clouded By Desire, 40.
106Block and Weaver, All is Clouded By Desire, 35.
107Tom J. Farer, Transnational Crime in the Americas: An Inter-American Dialogue Book (New York: Routledge, 1999), 67.
108Block and Weaver, All is Clouded By Desire, 42.
109Subcommittee of the Committee on Government Operations, Oversight Hearings Into the Operations of the IRS, 1975, 917.
110Victor Merina, "Two Promoters Indicted in Southland Land Fraud," Los Angeles Times, October 5, 1982.
111Jim Drinkhall, "CIA Helped Quash Major, Star-Studded Tax Evasion Case," Washington Post, April 24, 1980, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1980/04/24/cia-helped-quash-major-star-studded-tax-evasion-case/a55ddf06-2a3f-4e04-a687-a3dd87c32b82/.
112"Fugitive Vesco Indicted In Drug Conspiracy," New York Times, April 18, 1989, https://www.nytimes.com/1989/04/18/us/fugitive-vesco-indicted-in-drug-conspiracy.html.

CHAPTER 2

BOOZE AND BLACKMAIL

THE WHISKY MEN

Per his own account, Samuel Bronfman had never planned to become one of North America's top liquor magnates, having previously aspired to a career in law. Nevertheless, true to his family's last name, which means "whisky man" in Yiddish, he and his brothers went on to build a liquor empire that would rocket the Bronfmans into the upper echelons of the Western business elite, though the road they traveled to get there was hardly elegant.

While the Bronfmans are now remembered as scions of Canada's upper class, this was certainly not the case when Samuel's parents – Mindel and Yechiel Bronfman – brought the family to Canada from Bessarabia, now part of modern-day Moldova and Ukraine, in 1889. They had left as part of a wave of Jewish immigrants fleeing the anti-Semitic pogroms of czarist Russia, leaving behind a somewhat profitable tobacco farming business.

In Bessarabia, they had been relatively well off and had emigrated to Canada along with two of their servants and their personal rabbi. However, Canada, particularly Manitoba where the Bronfmans eventually settled, was poorly suited for tobacco farming, forcing Yechiel to labor on Canadian railroads and in sawmills before moving into the sale of firewood and the trading of livestock and fish. It would be their trading of horses that would eventually lead them to begin work in the hospitality sector and, subsequently, the liquor business.[1]

The Bronfmans' beginnings, particularly following their arrival in Canada, stand in such stark contrast to their current reputation that even Sam's sons, Edgar and Charles, were kept in the dark by their own father regarding the family business' early days. "He would never tell us any of the early history," Edgar Bronfman would later remember of his father. A Bronfman biographer – former senior editor at The Economist, Nicholas Faith – would also write that "underlying the family's riches was a deep sense of shame as to their origins" and that Sam's generation had "shared an absolute refusal to tell their offspring anything about their life before their arrival in the Promised Land," i.e., Canada.

Part of the reason for this secrecy, even within the family and between father and son, was likely related to the personal struggle of many immigrants, some of whom choose to turn their back on their lives prior to immigrating and strive to establish and prove their connections to the new land in which they find themselves. Indeed, Sam Bronfman went to great lengths to do just that, publicly claiming for much of his late life that he had been born on March 4, 1891 in Brandon, Manitoba, Canada, obfuscating both his real date and place of birth – February 27, 1889, Bessarabia.[2] Michael Marrus, one of Bronfman's more sympathetic biographers, would write that Sam Bronfman never truly "abandoned his enthusiastic identification with the country in which his career began, and [his attempts to obfuscate his place of birth] is perhaps the most significant indication of his obsession with the respectability he associated with Canadian citizenship."[3]

While Sam Bronfman was undoubtedly ill at ease with his status as an immigrant, there is another factor that may explain his unwillingness, and that of his seven siblings, to discuss the family's "early days" and, specifically, the chain of events and eventual alliances with unsavory characters that would lead them to the top of Canada's business elite.

At some point in the early 1890s, as he sampled spirits in a dingy saloon after selling off some horses, Yechiel Bronfman mulled the merits of leaving behind a life of hard labor in favor of the intertwined businesses of hospitality and liquor sales. Sam Bronfman would later claim that it was actually he who had convinced his father to move into hospitality and bartending, though most biographers doubt this, given Sam's age at the time.[4] Regardless, it would be over a decade before the Bronfman family patriarch and his eldest sons managed to scrape together the funds necessary to realize Yechiel's dreams.

The Bronfmans had saved enough money to lease their first Canadian hotel, the Anglo-American Hotel in Emerson, Manitoba, by 1903.[5] Soon, they acquired several more hotels in Yorkton, Saskatchewan and later in Winnipeg and beyond, building a small yet profitable network of hotels prior to the onset of World War I. The dramatic shift in the family's fortune was largely thanks to the business acumen of

Sam's brother Harry, who managed to stave off the financial damage and legal trouble caused by the gambling and other "unseemly" habits of their older brother, Abe.

Sam Bronfman formally joined the new family business in 1907, though he would later regale some of his biographers with tales of how he had been the original "dynamo" behind the family's success in hospitality, despite considerable evidence to the contrary. What is notable, however, is the fact that, not long after Sam formally became involved in hotel management, the family's hotels were targeted by a series of unfortunate accusations, including when they went to renew their liquor license in Yorktown in 1908. Locals had alleged that the Bronfmans were guilty of violating local liquor laws and condoning illegal gambling in their inns.[6] The latter is particularly likely given the well-known gambling habits of Abe Bronfman, which were known to have threatened the family business on more than one occasion.

The same year that Sam joined the family's hotel business, the organization that would eventually bring "Prohibition" to Canada also emerged, the Social and Moral Reform Council. A joining of the leadership of various Protestant churches, the Women's Christian Temperance Union, the Royal Templars of Temperance and other like-minded groups, the Social and Moral Reform Council was born out of a far-reaching Protestant religious movement of the period, known as the "Social Gospel" movement, that sought to "fight social evils," particularly those caused or exacerbated by rapid urbanization and industrialization.[7] For groups like the Social and Moral Reform Council, liquor quickly became a main target.

The Council and its allies managed to successfully appeal to many Canadians, both those who shared and lacked their religious zeal, as bars and saloons were often disliked for other reasons aside from their "moral depravity," such as their often far-reaching stenches and the fact that around a third of criminal prosecutions at the time were related to drunkenness.[8] Though the Temperance movement in Canada deeply divided its population, it got the boost it needed to become common policy with the onset of the First World War.

In Canada, Prohibition was initially a provincial matter, with a handful of provinces having enacted Prohibition laws prior to the war. Yet, once the curtain of war had fallen, many Canadians came to believe that banning the sale, trade and manufacture of alcohol would aid the war effort. As a result, most Canadian provinces enacted some sort of alcohol ban prior to Canada's short-lived federal ban, enacted near the end of the war in 1918 and expiring a year after hostilities ended.[9] The impact of Prohibition on Canada's liquor industry was substantial and felt long after it was repealed, with 75% of its breweries having closed by 1928. However, Prohibition was conveniently fortuitous for some, the Bronfmans chief among them.

Given the provincial nature of Prohibition in Canada prior to its brief stint as a federal policy, the differences between the Temperance laws of various provinces provided numerous loopholes that the Bronfmans were able to exploit to great effect. So successful were the Bronfmans at aptly working in the gray area of the varied and often temporary gaps between provincial laws that author Peter Newman remarked in his biography of the Bronfmans, Bronfman Dynasty: The Rothschilds of the New World, "Sometimes it almost seemed that the American Congress and the Canadian federal and provincial legislatures must have secretly held a grand conclave to decide one issue: How they could draft anti-liquor laws and regulations that would help maximize the Bronfman brothers' bootlegging profits."[10]

In one example, during World War I, the three eldest Bronfman brothers (Abe, Harry, and Sam) exploited the fact that Manitoba and Ontario, while prohibiting the sale of liquor within the province, allowed alcohol to be imported. The brothers set up several mail-order liquor businesses throughout these two provinces and profited handsomely, that is until the ban on interprovincial trading would go into effect in 1918 with federal Prohibition.

However, federal Prohibition also came with a loophole, which allowed alcohol to be sold for "medicinal purposes." This prompted Harry Bronfman to create a wholesale drug company that permitted him to import alcohol in bulk and provide it to area pharmacies. He placed its offices next door to one of the family's ritzier hotels, the Balmoral, and its business model involved offering doctors a bonus for each liquor prescription they wrote if that prescription was fulfilled by a pharmacy whose liquor was furnished by the Bronfmans.[11]

Canadian writer Mordecai Richler would later allege that the initial license for Harry's new enterprise, named the Canada Pure Drug Company, was acquired by a well-placed bribe to a prominent politician.[12] Other family biographers, like Michael Marrus, called the firm "a thinly disguised liquor outlet that soon pumped more whiskey into retail drugstores than any other wholesaler in Saskatchewan."[13] The company also benefitted from the corruption of the province's liquor commission, which allowed a percentage of the liquor it seized to be sold back to Harry Bronfman, who then resold it an exorbitantly marked-up price.

Subsequent government investigations that were part of a Royal Commission would further allege that the Bronfman family "drug" company was "never engaged in the drug business, but confined its activities to the sale of alcohol in the western provinces," adding that the company imported hundreds of thousands of gallons of alcohol from the United States.[14] Out of the Bronfman brothers, it had been Sam who was sent to travel across Canada and the United States, which allowed him to build a vast network that included numerous American and Canadian distilleries and bootleggers. This network would, in a few years, prove essential to the Bronfmans, especially Sam, once Prohibition arrived in Canada's southern neighbor, the United States.

THE MANY FRIENDS OF MR. SAM

Beyond the complicity of corrupt officials and doctors, a driving force behind the Bronfman family's Prohibition era success was their ties, forged by Sam, to the Hudson's Bay Company, long a dominant force in Canada's economy backed by the political and economic elite of England since its founding in the 1600s. According to Nicholas Faith, Hudson's Bay Company "trusted him [Sam] implicitly after he had refused to make any profit on a couple of thousand cases of Dewar's whisky that Hudson's Bay wanted to buy back from him." However, in the cutthroat and often extremely violent world of bootlegging in Canada, "implicit trust" was unlikely to have been granted from just a single act.

More likely was the fact that Hudson's Bay Company had long been the dominant force in Canada's liquor industry and had every intention of continuing to operate its liquors business during Prohibition. The Bronfmans were sure to have caught their attention early on, not just through their mail order business, but because Harry Bronfman had quickly gained a reputation as "the king of bootleggers" who was able to easily skirt the law due to his contacts with corrupt local and provincial officials. His brother Sam sought to focus the entire family business on liquor early on in Prohibition, which would have made him a critical contact for any business seeking to clandestinely deal with the Bronfmans' sale of spirits during this period.[15]

The Hudson's Bay Company's import of liquor into Canada by various means during Prohibition greatly aided the business of several distillers in England and Scotland. Many of those British distillers boasted close ties to the royal family and England's political elite, like Dewar's. These companies risked losing a considerable amount of income if their ability to export spirits to Canada had been entirely cut off, especially at a time when drinking in England was on the wane. The British government itself was clearly aware of these concerns and made the promotion of exports, liquor in particular, a key policy aimed at offsetting the country's considerable war debts.[16]

Direct ties of the company to bootlegging in Canada emerged when British Colombia's Prohibition Commissioner, Walter Findlay, was caught engaging in and profiting from the illegal liquor trade. At his trial, the existence of "a liquor delivery service run by the Hudson's Bay Company" that sent alcohol to private addresses and spanned the nation was revealed, despite Findlay's refusal to testify.[17]

Whatever the real story was behind the ties that were forged between Sam Bronfman and the Hudson's Bay Company, the dominant distillers of England and Scotland that held great sway over the company's liquor subsidiary would be critical to Bronfman's success during and after Prohibition, and he to theirs.

Soon after the conclusion of Canadian prohibition, Prohibition went into effect in the United States in January 1920. The Bronfmans, now largely under Sam's leadership, continued to import American liquor at incredible quantities, but at a much cheaper rate given that the new law had made it essentially worthless in its country of origin. That imported liquor was then mixed with raw alcohol and water. This degradation allowed the Bronfmans to ship a much larger quantity of the liquor than they had purchased back into the United States.[18] Such was the story of the Bronfman family's initial entry into the distilling business.

As stock from American distilleries began to run out in 1923, the Bronfmans built a distillery near Montreal. They named their newest venture Distillers Corporation Limited, the same name as the then-unrelated and significantly more prestigious Scottish company that included the top five whisky and gin producers in the British Isles. The name the Bronfmans had chosen was no coincidence, as the "audacious" name Sam had chosen for the family's first distillery succeeded in attracting the near-immediate attention of the Scottish firm. The Bronfman family subsequently formed a joint venture with the elite of Scotland's and England's liquor industry, thereby uniting the two companies that shared the name Distillers Corporation Limited. Their union also allowed the Bronfmans to secure the exclusive rights to import many of the top brands from "across the pond."[19] Roughly a decade later, in the 1930s, Samuel Bronfman purchased and built a number of distilleries in Scotland, further deepening his ties to the liquor barons of the "Old World."

The ability of the Bronfmans to secure this deal at the time likely owed to Sam's pre-existing ties to the Hudson's Bay Company, which had previously imported many of the brands united under the British Distillers Company Limited. Another potential factor was the "chance" meeting between one of the Bronfman's "middlemen," Lewis Rosenstiel, and Winston Churchill in 1922. A year later, Bronfman traveled to Kentucky, where Rosenstiel was based at the time, and purchased an ailing distillery, the components of which were then shipped North and used to create the Bronfman's first distillery. Churchill had deep family and personal ties to the Hudson's Bay Company and, from 1919 to 1922, he was in charge of Britain's Colonial Office.[20] In this capacity, Churchill refused to use British authority or influence to interfere with the liquor trade in any British colony, including in British-dominated "Rum Row" where the Bronfmans were also active. Churchill argued that England was not obligated to enforce the laws of another nation, and would later call Prohibition as a policy "an affront to the whole history of mankind."[21] Churchill would later emerge as a key investor in America's post-Prohibition liquor industry, which Bronfman and Rosenstiel would quickly come to dominate.[22]

As the Bronfman family's clout in the liquor industry grew after Prohibition, Sam Bronfman would later manage to personally meet Queen Elizabeth II of England and he would even create a Canadian whisky, Crown Royal, to specifically commemorate her visit to Canada in 1939.

Five years after creating the successful joint venture with Distillers Company Limited, the Bronfman's Distillers Corporation Limited purchased Joseph E. Seagram's and Sons Limited and their distillery in Water-loo, Ontario. The merged company became Seagram Company Limited, or Seagram's, and would serve as the Bronfman family's financial vehicle, not just for their ever-expanding liquor empire, but their subsequent interests in chemicals, oil, and entertainment.

Though his British and Scottish connections were important to his and Seagram's success, Sam Bronfman's rise as a global liquor baron also depended significantly on the ties he had forged, often through his "middlemen," with more unsavory actors, namely key figures in North American organized crime. Many of them still live on in American urban legend and were discussed at length in the previous chapter, including Charles "Lucky" Luciano, Moe Dalitz, Abner "Longy" Zwillman, Meyer Lansky, and members of Detroit's Purple Gang, among others.

Much of the Bronfmans' early involvement in bootlegging took place across the Saskatchewan-North Dakota border in "boozoriums" where their liquor could be purchased in Canada and then moved to their final destination in the United States. Yet, the murder of a Bronfman brother-in-law turned associate, and the promise of more lucrative markets for Bronfman booze soon drew their attention elsewhere.

"We were late starters in the two most lucrative markets – on the high seas and across the Detroit River. What came out of the border trade in Saskatchewan was insignificant by comparison," Bronfman once told Canadian journalist Terence Robertson. Despite being late to the game, "this was when we started to make our real money," Bronfman recounted.[23]

The bootlegging operation of the Bronfmans would later extend far beyond the Canadian-US border, with the family establishing warehouses and fronts throughout the Caribbean and Mexico. They were encircling their main market – the United States – like prey.

Of course, with great profit came great risk, and though they avoided major legal trouble for their ties to bootlegging operations during American Prohibition, it caught up with them soon after. In 1934, the Bronfman brothers were charged with conspiracy "to violate the statutes of a friendly country" and for evading taxes on liquor that they had exported out of Canada.

Soon after the charges were announced, Sam Bronfman allegedly ordered the destruction of thousands of documents aimed at "shielding their early operations from inquisitorial eyes" and Bronfman-owned companies tied to smuggling and their assets would mysteriously vanish. As a result, the case against the Bronfmans ran into an insurmountable roadblock and the four Bronfman brothers were acquitted on all charges by the summer of 1935. They even managed to settle with US authorities, negotiating a $3 million settlement with the Treasury Department, a mere fraction of what they had gained during American Prohibition.

Most of Bronfman's mob associates during American Prohibition were members of, or somehow tied to, the National Crime Syndicate. This Syndicate, described in detail in the previous chapter, was subsequently defined by the 1950s Senate investigative body, the Kefauver Committee, as a confederation of organized crime interests then dominated by the Italian-American mafia and the Jewish-American mob. During the Kefauver Committee's investigation, some of the biggest players in the American Mafia named Bronfman as a central figure in their bootlegging operations.

Though Sam was careful to distance himself as much as possible from prominent criminals, he did have a somewhat cozy relationship with Meyer Lanksy, with Lansky's wife later recounting how Bronfman had thrown lavish dinner parties for her husband. The relationship appears to have begun in 1923 when Lansky bought Sam prized tickets to the boxing championship between Jack Dempsey and Luis Firpo in New York, likely a gesture aimed at gaining Sam's favor, or perhaps returning one. Subsequently, Lansky would, among other thing, offer exclusive protection of Bronfman's booze shipments.

In his old age, Lansky, apparently bitter that Bronfman had managed to launder his post-Prohibition reputation into that of an "upstanding" member of North American aristocracy, would remark "Why is Lansky a 'gangster' and not the Bronfman and Rosenstiel families? I was involved with all of them in the 1920s, although they do not like to talk about it and change the subject when my name is mentioned."[24]

The ties between the Bronfman family business and organized crime may explain why some past efforts to chronicle the rise of the Bronfmans were ill-fated, particularly during Sam Bronfman's lifetime. The first person who attempted to write a biography of Samuel Bronfman, Terence Robertson, had traveled to New York to investigate Bronfman and the then-sprawling corporate empire of Seagram's. While in New York, he had allegedly concluded the book, but had telephoned a journalist colleague back in Canada, distraught. In that phone call, Robertson claimed to have "found out things about Sam, they didn't want me to write about."

Robertson would call a second colleague, stressing that his "life had been threatened and we would know who was doing the threatening but that he would do the job himself." After receiving the frantic call and fearing that Robertson's life was in danger, the second journalist called the New York police, who quickly responded, only to find Robertson dying of barbiturate poisoning, to which he succumbed. Robertson's lengthy interviews with Bronfman were never published, but still exist in manuscript form.

Subsequent attempts to author a biography of Sam Bronfman and his family's rise to prominence also failed to make it to publication, such as the effort made by former editor of the Canadian edition of TIME magazine, John Scott, and another made by Canadian journalist Erna Paris. However, some books on the Bronfman family did emerge once Sam had reached old age, such as an account of the family by Peter Newman and a novel by Mordecai Richler believed to have been inspired by the Bronfmans. The Bronfmans apparently did not take kindly to their portrayal by either Newman or Richler, both of whom were Jewish, prompting the family behind Seagram's to allege that both authors were "anti-Semitic Jews." The Bronfman clan has always been sensitive to critical reports, given that their longstanding efforts to develop their reputation as elite “philanthropists” are marred by the evidence of the symbiotic relationship between their family business and organized crime.

THE MIDDLEMEN

Aside from these more personal ties, also crucial to the success of Seagram’s and the Bronfman family enterprise during this period were an assortment of “middlemen.” Two of these men were particularly essential to the Bronfman business – Joseph Reinfeld and the aforementioned Lewis “Lew” Rosenstiel. The two men were of extremely different temperaments, with Reinfeld being described as “a jovial, avuncular Jewish immigrant from Poland” whereas Rosenstiel was described as “loud, opinionated and domineering.”

Reinfeld served as a close advisor to Sam Bronfman as well as an important business associate as he was the principal purchaser of Seagram’s Whiskey. It was also Reinfeld who convinced Sam to “build up inventory” prior to and during Prohibition, which would help Bronfman secure a significant portion of the post-Prohibition liquor market. He also managed much of the in-person dealings with crime-linked individuals on Bronfman’s behalf, which was key to Bronfman’s winning strategy to mitigate legal risks and prevent further damage to his social reputation.

The end result saw Reinfeld buy large amounts of Seagram’s liquor, mainly at Rum Row, while ensuring that the Bronfmans did not have to directly deal with their final, crime-linked customers. However, in at least one instance, Reinfeld actually brought Sam Bronfman, and his family business, into close contact with a notorious mobster. By 1923, the Reinfeld syndicate was half-owned by Longy Zwillman, who Reinfeld sent to negotiate directly with Sam Bronfman. Bronfman was reportedly very impressed with Zwillman, then in his early 20s, calling him “well-behaved” and “studious looking,” adding that “you’d never guess he was a shtarker.”[25]

Reinfeld’s operation during Prohibition was massive, and massively profitable for Bronfman. Government investigators later revealed that Reinfeld had “imported nearly 40 percent of all the illicit alcohol consumed in the United States during Prohibition.” Retired US Treasury agents later testified that the Bronfman family were Reinfeld’s main supplier, while also alleging that much of Reinfeld’s ill-gotten profits had been laundered in Canada, some of it allegedly laundered with the help of Seagram’s employees. The use of Canadian institutions as laundries for Reinfeld is not only plausible but likely, given the intimate involvement of the Royal Bank of Canada in Rum Row, the same place where Reinfeld had received his shipments of Bronfman liquor.[26] The Bronfmans themselves were known to operate a network of shell companies, some registered to fictitious individuals and linked to a series of both domestic and foreign bank accounts. This network facilitated the family’s own “elaborate money laundering operations,” according to Canadian historian Stephen Schneider.

The close association between Bronfman and Reinfeld would later come back to haunt them both, particularly when Reinfeld’s longtime bodyguard, James Rutkin, testified in front of the Kefauver Committee in the early 1950s. Rutkin would tell all regarding the “early days” of the Bronfman family business, including the relationships of both Bronfman and Reinfeld with mobsters like Zwillman and Lansky. Some Bronfman family biographers, like Nicholas Faith, have alleged that Rutkin sought to use his testimony in a failed attempt to blackmail the Bronfmans, threatening to reveal more if he was left uncompensated.

Among Rutkin’s claims regarding the Bronfmans, several pertained to the family’s hotel business in Canada that had preceded their liquor empire. Rutkin, describing the Bronfmans as “four brothers from Montreal,” teased the Kefauver Committee, stating first that “if you want to find out more about the [Bronfman owned] hotels, you can ask the Canadian Mounted Police, and they will tell you about the little hotels, and you can use your imagination.” He later added that these hotels serviced people who slept “very fast,” and that the same room would be rented “quite a few times during the night,” implying that the hotels were in fact brothels.[27] Several Bronfman family biographers also mention these accusations, which had dogged the family since their earliest days in the hotel business. Some believe that Sam Bronfman tacitly confirmed that this was the case many years after Rutkin first made these claims, when he remarked “If they were [brothels], they were the best in the West!”[28]

Nevertheless, in the early 1950s at the time of the Kefauver hearings, the Bronfmans alleged that Rutkin's claims were "absurd," and they declined to pony up any of the "hush money" that Rutkin was rumored to have been seeking. Yet, despite their best efforts, Rutkin's testimony, which received considerable publicity due to the televised broadcast of the hearings, created a whirlwind of rumors that refused to be snuffed out for some time, at least until Rutkin turned up dead, having allegedly slit his own throat with a borrowed razor in 1956.[29]

Lewis Rosenstiel, the other most prominent of Sam Bronfman's Prohibition Era "middlemen," saw his relationship with the Seagram's chairman take a completely different trajectory than that of Bronfman and Reinfeld. As Prohibition neared its end, Rosenstiel and Bronfman would grow into bitter rivals, despite continuing to share many of the same contacts in the North America's criminal underworld.

THE CHAIRMAN

While Sam Bronfman struggled with his would-be biographers, no biography was ever written of his one-time middleman and later chief rival, Lewis Rosenstiel. Of those books and other writings that do touch on Rosenstiel's history and demeanor, few are favorable. For instance, a 1959 piece in Esquire offers one of the more favorable accounts, calling Rosenstiel "intelligent, articulate and extraordinarily aggressive," adding that he often "slopes in his chair, plays with his tongue as he speaks, and utters his strong opinions with a growl, expressing dislike and contempt for anyone who might disagree."[30]

Others, like Bronfman biographer Nicholas Faith, describe Rosenstiel as "loud, opinionated and domineering," a "hulking figure who favored amber-tinted glasses, which he rarely removed, and large cigars to go with his status as one of the wealthiest men alive."[31] The New York Times obituary for Rosenstiel uses similar terms, referring to the liquor baron known to many simply as "the Chairman" as having been "a domineering man with [a] quick temper."[32]

Official accounts of Rosenstiel's past and how he built his company Schenley into a corporate behemoth seem oddly sanitized, not unlike the official accounts of the Bronfman family's early days that decline to mention the darker side of their business model that was particularly important to their activities prior to the repeal of American Prohibition.

Born in 1891 in Cincinnati, Ohio, Rosenstiel – thanks to an unfortunate injury during a football match in his teenage years – dropped out of high school and went to work for his uncle at the Susquemac Distilling Company in Milton, Kentucky in 1907. Rosenstiel worked on largely menial tasks at the facility, including as a "pinhooker" rolling barrels in warehouses and as a belt splicer. His fortunes shifted dramatically from those humble beginnings during the era of American Prohibition, with little being known of his life during the period, aside from him allegedly leaving the tedious tasks of his uncle's distillery behind to become a "whisky broker."

According to official accounts, Rosenstiel turned to selling shoes and bonds once Prohibition set in, with his prior line of work in the distilling and sale of spirits drying up. Yet, somehow, the young Rosenstiel accumulated enough money to afford a vacation to the French Riviera in 1922. It was during that vacation that he would be lucky enough to score a "chance" meeting with Winston Churchill, "who advised him to prepare for the return of liquor sales in the United States," per the New York Times.[33] There is little, if any, context given in official accounts as to how or why a high-school dropout turned distillery worker and shoe salesman would have attracted the attention of a notorious elitist and member of the British aristocracy like Churchill.

As the story goes, Rosenstiel spent the next ten years of his life dutifully following Churchill's advice. He somehow convinced one of the most powerful banks on Wall Street, Lehman Brothers, to offer him a massive loan to finance his acquisition of closed distilleries and to accumulate aged whisky inventories for the yet-to-materialize date of repeal. Again, no official explanation is offered as to how an elite banking institution like Lehman Brothers would grant someone with Rosenstiel's background such a large amount of capital based merely on advice he had received from a British politician, suggesting there is more to the story.

Returning to the official narrative of Rosenstiel's rise, we are told that Rosenstiel then incorporated Schenley Distillers Company in the wake of Repeal in 1933. He was conveniently well-placed to become “the most powerful figure in the distilled spirits business,” all thanks to him having heeded Churchill’s advice and thanks to a remarkable patience that he was never known to have possessed during any other point in his life.[34] Indeed, per these same official sources, impatience, rather than patience, was one of Rosenstiel’s most well-known traits, with his characterization by media as a “domineering man with a quick temper” being one of many examples.

Of course, as should be clear to the reader, this narrative conveniently obfuscates any hint of illegality in Rosenstiel’s Prohibition era dealings and fails to mention Rosenstiel’s documented ties to organized crime figures or his role as a prominent purchaser of Bronfman liquor alongside Joseph Reinfeld and other Seagram’s “middlemen.” Years later, James P. Kelly, chief investigator for the Interstate and Foreign Commerce Committee of the New York House of Representatives, testified under oath that Rosenstiel had been part of an “underworld consortium” that bought Bronfman liquor and sold it throughout the United States during Prohibition.[35]

Key figures in this consortium, aside from Rosenstiel, included Meyer Lansky as well as Joe Fusco, an associate of Al Capone, and Joe Linsey, a Boston-based criminal associated with Joe Kennedy’s bootlegging operations. Kelly added that the Rosenstiel was “particularly close” to Lansky, and it later emerged that they had “owned points together” in mob-operated businesses. He was also reportedly close to Frank Costello, who was said to have attended a business meeting alongside Rosenstiel “to give [the meeting’s attendees] a message that Rosenstiel was one of their people.”[36]

One of Rosenstiel’s ex-wives, Susan Kaufman, later told journalist Anthony Summers that, in Summers’ words, “living with Rosenstiel was to live with the command structure of organized crime.” Kaufman’s testimony to Summers includes numerous, specific, and very detailed allegations of the various meetings between her ex-husband and organized crime figures she witnessed during their marriage, including business meetings where Rosenstiel was given “thousands and thousands and thousands of dollars in bundles of cash” from Lansky.

After Prohibition, Fusco and Linsey took their operations into the legal and legitimate business world, just as Rosenstiel had done. They set up legitimate companies in Chicago and Boston, respectively, to market Schenley products. As a result, Rosenstiel maintained his links to the criminal underworld long after publicly transitioning from bootlegger to businessman. Frequent dinner guests at Rosenstiel’s home in the years and decades after Prohibition included legendary figures of American organized crime, including Frank Costello, Sam Giancana, Santo Trafficante and Meyer Lansky. Lansky was known to address Rosenstiel as “Supreme Commander,” a name that Roy Cohn, Rosenstiel’s attorney and close friend, also used for the liquor baron.[37]

Rosenstiel’s transition from bootlegger to businessman very nearly included a direct partnership with Sam Bronfman. In 1929, as the end of Prohibition neared, Bronfman invested $585,000 in a Rosenstiel-owned distillery producing “medicinal spirits” and had acquired a 20% stake in Rosenstiel’s company. Per Sam, however, he concluded after visiting Rosenstiel’s distillery that it was “a piece of junk and … on the inside it was even worse” and he was allegedly offended at the inferiority of his whisky production method. It’s unclear if this was the actual motive for their falling out, but, regardless, their subsequent business and personal rivalries became legendary.

According to Nicholas Faith’s account of Bronfman’s life, the falling out with Rosenstiel, whatever the cause, took a tremendous emotional toll on the two men before it descended into a decades-long, acrimonious spat. Faith asserts that Bronfman’s failure to reach an agreement with Rosenstiel “really hit him, for he came down with severe flu” soon after calling off any possibility of a partnership. Despite being gravely ill, Bronfman told Rosenstiel that “we have nothing to discuss” when the latter had arrived to attempt to salvage a deal. Terence Robertson’s manuscript, as cited by Faith, states that Rosenstiel “all but wept as he begged ‘for just a minute with my friend.’”[38]

Their feud would subsequently escalate to such an extent that it would transcend business competition, with a 1959 article in Esquire noting that either man “appears willing to sacrifice profit to do the other in the eye.” Rosenstiel was known to refer to Bronfman and his business as “unscrupulous alien competition,” with alien in this instance meaning foreign, i.e. Canadian.[39] Bronfman, for his part, was known to become angry rather quickly when Rosenstiel’s name or business came up, saying he had “no admiration" for the man, and would frequently refer to him as "Rosenschlemiel," with "schlemiel" meaning something along the lines of simpleton or a born loser in Yiddish.[40] It was also alleged that Bronfman's lavish Seagram building in New York City had been planned to make "Rosenstiel's 1930s-style offices in the Empire State Building look just a little shabby in their luxury."[41]

THE KING OF BOURBON AND BLACKMAIL

Though both men had legendary tempers and a legendary feud to match, Bronfman and Rosenstiel had major differences in character, particularly in how they managed their respective businesses and in their personal lives. One of these differences was the fact that Sam Bronfman did not share Rosenstiel's obsession with blackmail.

Indeed, reports of Rosenstiel's behavior at his company's offices, as cited by Nicholas Faith, included Rosenstiel having placed "bugging devices" throughout his offices. Per Faith, he would treat his employees "like dirt, sacking them at a moment's notice" and then go "to the toilet to leave them time to compromise themselves by talking in his absence." Those employees were "compromised" as their conversations were recorded by the devices that Rosenstiel had strewn about the premises.

Additional assertions made in court and under oath by one of Rosenstiel's ex-wives held that Rosenstiel had also placed microphones throughout his home in order to record conversations that took place at social events he hosted for the alleged purpose of obtaining potential blackmail against his guests. In addition, several sources reported to the 1971 New York State Legislative Committee on Crime that Rosenstiel's Manhattan home had been "wired from roof to basement with hidden microphones, so that he could spy on visitors and staff."[42]

The system in Rosenstiel's home had been installed by Fred Otash, an infamous private detective who had used electronic means to spy on the Kennedy family, Marilyn Monroe, and others. Otash later said that Rosenstiel's home "was rigged to tape conversations for hours on end." Otash had a penchant for blackmail himself, particularly sexual blackmail – he had once attempted to entrap John F. Kennedy using a call girl named "Sue Young" in the lead-up to the 1960 presidential election.[43] As we'll see shortly, Rosenstiel was also involved in a broader effort to obtain this variety of blackmail, which may explain why he had sought out the California-based Otash to bug his New York home.

Some of the sources that discuss Rosenstiel's interest in blackmail also claim that Rosenstiel was bisexual. According to Nicholas Faith, discussions about Rosenstiel's bisexuality among Schenley office employees were frequent enough for Rosenstiel to be referred to as "Rosie" around the office. Additional evidence for these claims later came from Rosenstiel's fourth wife, Susan Kaufman.

Per Kaufman, whose previous marriage had collapsed because her first husband had been homosexual, she soon discovered that she had made a similar mistake in marrying Rosenstiel. Rosenstiel was reportedly un-interested in having sex with his new wife, but "went to great expense to have her dress up in clothes that made her look like a little girl."[44] He would later be discovered in bed with one of his lawyers, Roy Cohn, and shrugged it off to his wife by asking for some more "alone time" with his attorney. Kaufman remembered responding, "I've never seen Governor [Thomas] Dewey in bed with you," as Dewey was also one of his attorneys at the time, and she walked out.[45]

Kaufman remembered the young Cohn, who was best known for his infamous stint as Joe McCarthy's chief counsel during the height of the Red Scare, as flaunting his homosexuality whenever he was around Kaufman, openly caressing a former congressional associate in front of her and describing the homosexual antics of a close friend of his and Rosenstiel's – Cardinal Spellman, one of the most powerful figures in the Catholic Church in North America. Cohn reportedly was so open with her because her first husband "had been gay and I must have understood because I'd stayed with him for nine years," Kaufman later stated.[46]

In 1958, Kaufman accompanied her husband Lewis Rosenstiel to a "party" hosted by Cohn at the Plaza Hotel in New York. Kaufman recalled entering through a side entrance and taking an elevator to the 2nd or 3rd floor; her husband knew the way well enough that she "had the impression [he] had been there before." The suite was one of the largest available at the hotel and it was "all done in light blue." Inside the suite were Cohn and another figure closely associated with both Cohn and Rosenstiel: FBI Director J.

Edgar Hoover. To Kaufman's surprise, Hoover was wearing women's clothes and wig, with Cohn introducing him as "Mary" in a bout of barely concealed laughter. "Mary" was also incidentally the nickname widely used among New York Catholic clergy for Cardinal Spellman, who was also alleged to attend other parties hosted by Cohn in the Plaza's "blue suite."[47]

After being served a few drinks, Kaufman recalled seeing "a couple of boys come in, young blond boys. I'd say about eighteen or nineteen. And then Roy [Cohn] makes the signal we should go into the bedroom."[48] Sexual activities between the "young blond boys," Cohn and Hoover ensued, with Kaufman declining to participate after being urged to do so by her then-husband. The Rosenstiels then left, leaving the boys alone with Cohn and Hoover. Cohn later laughed about the incident to Kaufman, saying that "Mary Hoover" attends his parties regularly and that he would make sure to "arrive at the Plaza first with his clothes [the female clothes allegedly used by Hoover at the parties] in a suitcase."[49]

Per her testimony, Kaufman was repulsed by the whole affair, but ended up attending another of these parties at the Plaza after Rosenstiel bribed her with "an expensive pair of earrings from Harry Winston's."[50] The events of that evening played out as they had the time before, but the Rosenstiels later quarreled, and she never attended any more Cohn-hosted parties at the Plaza hotel.

These allegations made by Kaufman resulted in considerable efforts to discredit her testimony, especially during the 1971 New York State Legislative Committee on Crime. Kaufman had agreed to serve as a witness for the State regarding her ex-husband's ties to organized crime figures. The very week that she was due to testify, Kaufman was hit with an "attempted perjury" charge that was regarded as unprecedented and bizarre by lawyers and outraged the Committee's Chairman and Chief Counsel. Kaufman still testified, but mostly behind closed doors, in executive session. Her testimony – several decades later – still remains sealed.

Members of the Committee believed at the time that the "attempted perjury" charges had been instigated by Lewis Rosenstiel himself in order to prevent his wife from testifying, as he had previously used similar tactics to protect his corrupt dealings.[51] This "attempted perjury" charge has since been used by some authors to discredit Kaufman's later testimony regarding her ex-husband and his associates.

However, the former Chief Counsel of the Crime Committee, New York Judge Edward McLaughlin, and Committee investigator William Gallinaro found Kaufman to be "an exceptionally good witness."[52] McLaughlin later told journalist and Hoover biographer Anthony Summers, "I thought her absolutely truthful.… The woman's power of recall was phenomenal. Everything she said was checked and double checked, and everything that was checkable turned out to be true." Additional evidence corroborating Kaufman as a witness came from two male witnesses who supported the astonishing allegations of Hoover's habit of cross-dressing, with those witnesses having learned of the former FBI director's habit at a different time and place than the events described by Kaufman. They also had no knowledge of Hoover and the "blue suite" parties in New York.

In addition, Kaufman told Anthony Summers that she possessed photographs showing Hoover in the company of Lewis Rosenstiel's organized crime associates. Though Summers did not see these pictures personally, they were confirmed as authentic and had been seen by journalist Mary Nichols of the Philadelphia Enquirer. Nichols told Summers "She did have suitcases of photographs that she had hauled away from her marriage to Lewis Rosenstiel. The ones I saw showed Hoover, lawyer Roy Cohn and Rosenstiel, at all sorts of social events with mobsters."[53]

There is also evidence that, not only did these parties at the Plaza hotel take place, but that they were used to obtain sexual blackmail, with Kaufman asserting that her husband possessed pictures of Hoover wearing women's clothes and that those images had been passed to Rosenstiel's associate, mobster Meyer Lansky.[54] Journalist and author Anthony Summers has noted that, given Rosenstiel's interest and ability to have his residences and businesses bugged, "[Rosenstiel] was quite capable of having the sex sessions at the Plaza bugged or arranging for Edgar to be photographed in his female costumes."[55]

In addition, New York attorney John Klotz, tasked with investigating Roy Cohn for a case well after Kaufman's testimony, independently found evidence of the "blue suite" at the Plaza Hotel and its role in a sex extortion ring after combing through local government documents and information gathered by private detectives. It allegedly involved minors as well as young men aged eighteen and older. Klotz later summarized his findings, telling journalist and author Burton Hersh:

> Roy Cohn was providing protection. There were a bunch of pedophiles involved. That's where Cohn got his power from – blackmail.[56]

Further confirmation of Rosenstiel's and Cohn's activities in the "blue suite," later determined to be Suite 233, comes from statements made by Cohn himself to former NYPD detective and ex-head of the department's Human-Trafficking and Vice-Related Crimes Division, James Rothstein. Rothstein later told John DeCamp – a former Nebraska state senator who investigated the Franklin scandal of the 1980s – that Cohn had admitted to being part of a sexual blackmail operation targeting politicians with minors during a sit-down interview with the former detective.

Rothstein told DeCamp the following about Cohn:

> Cohn's job was to run the little boys. Say you had an admiral, a general, a congressman, who did not want to go along with the program. Cohn's job was to set them up, then they would go along. Cohn told me that himself.[57]

Rothstein later told Paul David Collins, a former journalist turned researcher, that Cohn had also identified this sexual blackmail operation as being part of the anti-communist crusade of the time.[58]

The fact that Cohn, per Rothstein's recollection, stated that this sex blackmail ring was part of the anti-communist crusade coupled with Hoover's involvement in these "blue suite" events suggests that elements of the government, including Hoover's FBI, may have been connected at a much broader level to the operation in a way that transcended Hoover's own personal involvement.

Rothstein confirmed his statements to both DeCamp and Collins in an interview with me that was conducted in early 2020. He additionally told me that Cohn had told him that his role in this ring had originally come about because he himself had been entrapped and blackmailed, leading Rothstein to feel some sort of sympathy for Cohn.

For those that may find it hard to believe that such an operation would take place with the involvement of the FBI director, there are also other, related allegations to consider – that American intelligence operatives and organized crime had competed and then collaborated to blackmail Hoover years before Kaufman witnessed these events at the Plaza hotel beginning in 1958.

Lansky was credited with obtaining compromising photos of FBI Director J. Edgar Hoover sometime in the 1940s, which showed "Hoover in some kind of gay situation," according to a former Lansky associate, who also said that Lansky had often said of Hoover, "I fixed that sonofabitch." Meyer Lansky's widow also later claimed that her husband had acquired "hard proof of Hoover's homosexuality and used it to neutralize the FBI as a threat to his own operations."[59] The photos showed Hoover engaged in sexual activity, specifically oral sex, with his long-time friend, FBI Deputy Director Clyde Tolson.[60] There is considerable, separate evidence from the period that the close, professional relationship between Hoover and Tolson was also intimate and that this was an "open secret" in Washington.[61]

At some point, these photos fell into the hands of CIA counterintelligence chief James J. Angleton, who later showed the photos to several other CIA officials, including John Weitz and Gordon Novel.[62] Both Weitz and Novel later stated that the pictures they had seen showed Hoover engaged in oral sex on a man who Angleton identified as Tolson; however, only Hoover's face was recognizable in the photographs.[63]

Angleton also claimed that the photos had been taken in 1946.[64] Angleton was in charge of the CIA's relationship with the FBI as well as Israeli intelligence until he left the agency in 1972. Angleton was also a CIA figure who had pushed for the Agency to forge ties with Meyer Lansky, raising the possibility that Angleton could have received the photo from Lansky.

However, Anthony Summers, in Official and Confidential: The Secret Life of J. Edgar Hoover, has argued that it was not Lansky, but William Donovan, the director of the OSS, who obtained the original photos of Hoover and either he, or another person at the OSS or early CIA, had later shared them with Lansky. Summers also states that "To [gangster Frank] Costello and Lansky, the ability to corrupt politicians, policemen and judges was fundamental to Mafia operations. The way they found to deal with Hoover, according to several mob sources, involved his homo-sexuality."[65]

With the mobster associates of Rosenstiel being under significantly more pressure during the 1950s, in large part thanks to the Kefauver Committee, it's possible that Hoover's appearances at The Plaza Hotel may have served as additional "insurance" for these interests.

Hoover, for his part, was likely already used to the realities of being blackmailed by this point, given that his private sex life had been known to the mob and US intelligence community for years. He likely saw the opportunity to partake in the scheme as a means of amassing his own, massive collection of blackmail. With thick dossiers on friend and foe alike, Hoover's office contained "secret files" on numerous powerful people in Washington and beyond, files he used to gain favors and protect his status as FBI director for as long as he wished. Even former OSS veterans like Richard Helms have made such claims, alleging that Hoover "played 'a very skillful game' with knowledge of the sexual habits of prominent people."[66]

Further evidence for this comes from journalist and author Burton Hersh who alleges in his book Bobby and J. Edgar: The Historic Face-Off Between the Kennedys and J. Edgar Hoover That Transformed America that Hoover had also been tied to Sherman Kaminsky, who helped run a sexual blackmail operation in New York that involved young male prostitutes.[67] Kaminsky claimed to have been New York-bred, but federal investigators later stated he was originally from Baltimore. Some reports claim Kaminsky had ties to Israel, having served in the Israel Defense Forces.[68]

The ring, which was called "The Chickens and the Bulls" by the NYPD, targeted prominent men who were closeted homosexuals throughout the United States, many of them married with families. Among those who had been blackmailed were a Navy admiral, two generals, a US congressman, a prominent surgeon, an Ivy League professor and well-known actors and television personalities.[69] That operation was busted and investigated in a 1966 extortion probe led by Manhattan District Attorney Frank Hogan, though the FBI quickly took over the investigation and photos showing Hoover and Kaminsky together soon disappeared from the case file.[70] Kaminsky successfully avoided arrest for 11 years, having "disappeared" from a New York courthouse undetected during his sentencing hearing.[71]

Why would Hoover have been involved with the activities of Kaminsky? There are only a few possibilities. One possibility is that Hoover had been blackmailed by Kaminsky, though it's more likely that Kaminsky instead had ties to figures in organized crime that had already blackmailed Hoover long before. Another possibility is that Hoover was cozy to a second sexual blackmail operation targeting closeted homosexual men because he sought to pad his own library of blackmail for personal and professional gain.

What does seem clear is that Hoover was well aware of the power that amassing blackmail afforded and was willing to indulge in taboo behavior at the "blue suite" because he was no longer concerned about being extorted or manipulated with sexual blackmail in ways that would end his career or destroy his public image. He had fallen in with the very crowd that had reportedly blackmailed him, later developing a symbiotic relationship with that same network.

The most obvious, and troubling, symptom of this symbiosis was Hoover's reluctance to tackle organized crime as FBI director. Hoover repeatedly declined to use the Bureau to target organized crime networks, referring to organized crime as a "local" problem in which the FBI did not need to intervene for most of his nearly fifty year stint as the top law enforcement administrator in the country.[72]

According to congressional crime consultant Ralph Salerno, Hoover's apparent aversion to targeting organized crime networks, such as those in which Rosenstiel and Lansky figured prominently, "allowed organized crime to grow very strong in economic and political terms, so that it became a much bigger threat to the wellbeing of this country than it would have been if it had been addressed much sooner."[73]

BUSINESS AS USUAL

Other aspects of Hoover's symbiotic relationship with these organized crime-tinged networks can also be seen in Hoover's ties to Rosenstiel, and Rosenstiel's close associate Roy Cohn, in the "above-board" worlds of "legitimate" business and politics.

Most records place the beginning of Hoover's relationship with Rosenstiel as occurring in the 1950s, the same decade that that Hoover was allegedly attending Rosenstiel's blackmail parties. Rosenstiel's FBI file, obtained by Anthony Summers, cites the first Rosenstiel meeting as taking place in 1956.[74] After requesting that meeting, Rosenstiel was granted a personal face-to-face meeting with the director in a matter of hours, a rare feat. However, Summers notes that there is evidence that the two men had met much earlier, as Hoover was on record showing an unusual concern in the FBI's handling of Rosenstiel's criminal links as early as 1939.[75]

The "blue suite" parties and blackmail may also explain the uncharacteristic ease with which a young Roy Cohn was able to meet with J. Edgar Hoover upon his arrival as a young man in Washington DC in 1952, an event that has puzzled Cohn's biographers. Roy Cohn's account of how he was able to meet Hoover in person, deemed "improbable" by Cohn biographer Nicholas von Hoffman, involves Hoover calling Cohn after the latter had unsuccessfully sought to go through the normal channels to communicate with the FBI Director.[76] Cohn, only in his mid-20s, had been seeking Hoover's aid in gathering support for a controversial presentment, which alleged communist subversion among United Nations staff.

Hoover, who is supposed to be talking to Cohn for the first time per "official" accounts, is alleged to have said "Roy, are you trying to see me?" To that, Cohn claimed to have responded "You're darn right I'm trying to see you. It's been rather difficult." Hoover then offered, "Whenever you want to see me, you just pick up the phone and ask for me and you'll be able to see me." "Well, when can I see you?" Cohn had asked, with the director then saying, "Come on over." Per Cohn, he was then seated in front of Hoover within ten minutes. Von Hoffman, who notes elsewhere in his Cohn biography that some of Cohn's unlikely stories "do turn out to be true," notes that the story is improbable, in part, because the only tie he could find between Cohn and Hoover at the time was a connection to George Sokolsky, the director of the American Jewish League Against Communism.

Also unlikely, per Von Hoffman, was Hoover's alleged urging to Roy that "When you want to see me, call me directly. Don't go through channels … [The Justice Department] is monitoring your calls at your own office across the way." Von Hoffman states that this degree of frankness "with a junior whom he had only recently met" is at odds with Hoover's reputation "as one of the most adept of mountain goats in negotiating the trails and passes of the federal bureaucracy." Von Hoffman asks, "Would merely sharing a political outlook on the dangers of communism be enough to seduce Hoover, who was never indiscreet, into such indiscretions as advising Roy, all else failing, to threaten to quit and back it up by calling a press conference if there were no other way to shake the presentment loose?"

Von Hoffman concludes that Cohn's story was inaccurate, though he notes that "Roy's account of what Hoover told him is a story that somebody with a dangerous secret to hide might tell."[77] However, in the context of the "blue suite" parties at the Plaza hotel, it's certainly possible that both Cohn's account of his first "official" meeting with Hoover and his harboring of "a dangerous secret" are both true. This is supported from press reports of the same period that claim that, soon after "Cohn caught Hoover's eye" in Washington DC, Hoover "showered Cohn with compliments and notes and photographs."[78] Author Burton Hersh similarly asserts that, soon after meeting, Hoover and Cohn "traded favors, effusive compliments, gifts and elaborate private dinners. It quickly became 'Roy' and 'Edgar.'"[79]

The "official" story also holds that the only bond initially shared between Rosenstiel and Cohn, as it is alleged with Hoover and Cohn, was a shared commitment to anti-communism, which has similarly left biographers and observers of their relationship puzzled by "improbable" anecdotes similar to that described above. Yet, in an era where the Red Scare raged alongside the so-called Lavender Scare (which targeted homosexuals with the same fervor as the Red Scare targeted communists), the bonds forged between a group of men who shared their forbidden passions in a milieu of secretive orgies, blackmail, and organized crime, would have fostered a much stronger sense of camaraderie.

The surprising closeness shared among Rosenstiel, Cohn and Hoover can be seen in other arrangements. For instance, soon after meeting Hoover "officially" for the first time in 1956, Hoover sent Rosenstiel flowers when the latter fell ill. A year later, Rosenstiel was heard telling Hoover "Your wish is my command" during a meeting.[80] That same year, Louis B. Nichols, Hoover's "Number 2" at the Bureau for decades, was hired to become executive vice president of Rosenstiel's empire of Schenley. Around this time, it was reported that Rosenstiel had "bought large quantities of books about Hoover and distributed them as gifts."[81] In addition, Rosenstiel had also bought no less than 25,000 copies of Masters of Deceit, a book written by Hoover about how to fight communism in the United States, which he sent "to schools around the country."[82]

A few years later, in 1965, Nichols incorporated the J. Edgar Hoover Foundation. Rosenstiel was the principal contributor, giving the foundation 1000 shares of Schenley stock. Nichols also gave a smaller, yet unknown amount of Schenley shares to the foundation, while the American Jewish League Against Communism, of which Roy Cohn was now president, gave $500 to help start the foundation. A year later, the Dorothy H. and Lewis Rosenstiel Foundation gave $50,000 to the foundation. In 1968, the Rosenstiel Foundation gave an additional $1 million to the foundation that was made in the form of bonds of the Glen Alden Corporation, which took over Schenley industries that same year. A 1969 report in the Washington Post later noted that "nearly everyone directly associated with Nichols in the Hoover Foundation is or was connected with either the FBI or Schenleys. The report also noted that, despite lofty promises regarding the foundation's activities, it spent hardly any money at the time the Washington Post's report was published in 1969, suggesting that something about the foundation's activities during that period was odd.[83]

Around this same period, Rosenstiel began to retire, selling his controlling interest to Glen Alden in 1968 and resigning as chairman and CEO of Schenley. While it seemed that Cohn would serve as Rosenstiel's successor in matters of blackmail, it seems another man served as his successor in matters of business. Per Rosenstiel's New York Times obituary, around the time he sold his control of Schenley to Glen Alden and retired, he also sold his Manhattan town house, bugged for blackmail, to Israeli-American businessman Meshulam Riklis.[84] Riklis was then an "influential figure" at Glen Alden, whose rise had been regarded with skepticism by Wall Street and the press. Indeed, Riklis had absorbed so many companies, including Glen Alden/Schenley in 1972, into his Rapid-American Corporation that he was forced to defend himself publicly, insisting that the fuel for his corporate takeovers involved "no mystery money, no un-named associates, no Swiss-bank money."[85]

Endnotes

1Peter C. Newman, Bronfman Dynasty: The Rothschilds of the New World (Toronto: McClelland and Stewart, 1978), 66–68.

2Michael R. Marrus, Samuel Bronfman: The Life and Times of Seagram's Mr. Sam (Hanover: Published by University Press of New England [for] Brandeis University Press, 1991), 15.

3Marrus, Samuel Bronfman, 22.

4Nicholas Faith, The Bronfmans: The Rise and Fall of the House of Seagram, 1st ed (New York: St. Martin's Press, 2006), 217–18.

5Eli Yahri, "Seagram | The Canadian Encyclopedia," February 13, 2012, https://www.thecanadianencyclopedia.ca/en/article/seagram-company-limited.

6Stephen Schneider, Iced: The Story of Organized Crime in Canada (Mississauga, Ont: Wiley, 2009), 199.

7Richard Allen, "Social Gospel | The Canadian Encyclopedia," February 7, 2006, https://www.thecanadianencyclopedia.ca/en/article/social-gospel; Leona Anderson, Bryan Hillis, and Margaret Sanche, "The Encyclopedia of Saskatchewan | Details," n.d., https://esask.uregina.ca/entry/religion.jsp.

8Faith, The Bronfmans, 28.

9John M. Bumsted, The Peoples of Canada, Fourth edition (Don Mills, Ontario: Oxford University Press, 2014), 218–19.

10Newman, Bronfman Dynasty, 74.

11Daniel Okrent, Last Call: The Rise and Fall of Prohibition, First Scribner hardcover ed (New York: Scribner, 2010), chap. 10.

12Faith, The Bronfmans, 34-5.

13Marrus, Samuel Bronfman, 68.

14Schneider, Iced, 200.

15Faith, The Bronfmans, 34-5.

16Okrent, Last Call, chap. 12.

17Jesse Donaldson, "On BC Day, a Look at Five Wacky Stories from the Province's Past," The Tyee, August 5, 2019, https://thetyee.ca/Culture/2019/08/05/BC-Day-Provincial-Past-Wacky-Stories/.

18Okrent, Last Call, chap. 11.

19Davin de Kergommeaux, "Whisky Heroes: Sam Bronfman, Seagram | Scotch Whisky," March 21, 2019, https://scotchwhisky.com/magazine/whisky-heroes/24781/sam-bronfman-seagram/.

20James W. Muller, "Two Churchills and the Hudson's Bay Company," APSA 2009 Toronto Meeting Paper (Rochester, NY: Social Science Research Network, September 3, 2009), https://papers.ssrn.com/abstract=1451764.

21Okrent, Last Call, chap. 12.

22Thomas Maier, "Prohibition and Profit: The Secret Kennedy-Churchill-Roosevelt Deals," TIME, October 21, 2014, https://time.com/3529756/kennedy-churchill-roosevelt-investment-deal/.

23Faith, The Bronfmans, 132. Note on Robertson's death. Source: Faith. Page 132?

24Schneider, Iced, 203.

25Faith, The Bronfmans, 64.

26Okrent, Last Call, chap. 12.

27Investigation of Organized Crime in Interstate Commerce, Hearings before the Special Committee to Investigate Organized Crime in Interstate Commerce (1950, 1951), p. 544, https://archive.org/details/investigationofo07unit/page/544/mode/2up.

28Schneider, Iced, 199.

29Faith, The Bronfmans, 65.

30Martin Mayer, "The Volatile Business," Esquire, August 1959, https://classic.esquire.com/article/1959/8/1/the-volatile-business.

31Faith, The Bronfmans, 65.

32Leonard Sloane, “Lewis Rosenstiel, Founder Of Schenley Empire, Dies,” New York Times, January 22, 1976, https://www.nytimes.com/1976/01/22/archives/lewis-rosenstiel-founder-of-schenley-empire-dies.html.

33Sloane, Lewis Rosenstiel Dies.

34Sloane, Lewis Rosenstiel Dies.

35Nicholas Gage, “Ex-Head of Schenley Industries Is Linked to Crime ‘Consortium,’” New York Times, February 19, 1971, https://www.nytimes.com/1971/02/19/archives/exhead-of-schenley-industries-is-linked-to-crime-consortium.html.

36Anthony Summers, Official and Confidential: The Secret Life of J. Edgar Hoover (New York: Pocket Star Books, 1994), 285, https://archive.org/details/officialconfide000summ.

37Summers, Official and Confidential, 287.

38Faith, The Bronfmans, 98-99.

39Mayer, The Volatile Business.

40Faith, The Bronfmans, 64.

41Mayer, The Volatile Business.

42Summers, Official and Confidential, 297.

43M.A. Jones, “Potential Criminal Informant (PCI) Sue Young, Hollywood, Calif., Call Girl” (Archives.gov, July 26, 1960), https://www.archives.gov/files/research/jfk/releases/docid-32304320.pdf.

44Summers, Official and Confidential, 291.

45Summers, Official and Confidential, 292.

46Summers, Official and Confidential, 292.

47Lucian K. Truscott IV, “I Was Groped by a Man Called ‘Mary’: The World Changes but Not the Catholic Church,” Salon, February 9, 2019, https://www.salon.com/2019/02/09/i-was-groped-by-a-man-called-mary-the-world-changes-but-not-the-catholic-church/.

48Summers, Official and Confidential, 293.

49Summers, Official and Confidential, 293.

50Summers, Official and Confidential, 294.

51Summers, Official and Confidential, 515.

52Summers, Official and Confidential, 515.

53Summers, Official and Confidential 516.

54Michael Newton, The Mafia at Apalachin, 1957 (Jefferson, N.C: McFarland, 2012), 117.

55Summers, Official and Confidential, 297.

56Burton Hersh, Bobby and J. Edgar: The Historic Face-off between the Kennedys and J. Edgar Hoover That Transformed America (New York: Basic Books, 2008), 88.

57John W. DeCamp, The Franklin Cover-up: Child Abuse, Satanism, and Murder in Nebraska (Lincoln, Neb: AWT, 1992), 179.

58Terry Melanson, “The Ghost of Roy Cohn – Conspiracy Archive,” August 24, 2014, https://www.conspiracyarchive.com/2014/08/24/the-ghost-of-roy-cohn/.

59Jerome A. Kroth, Conspiracy in Camelot: The Complete History of the Assassination of John Fitzgerald Kennedy (New York: Algora Pub, 2003), 233, https://books.google.cl/books?id=VStz_I0QcB0C.

60“New Book Pictures J. Edgar Hoover as Drag Queen,” UPI, February 6, 1993, https://www.upi.com/Archives/1993/02/06/New-book-pictures-J-Edgar-Hoover-as-drag-queen/1064728974800/.

61Many of the key pieces of evidence for Hoover’s relationship with Tolson, as well as Hoover’s closeted homosexuality, can be found in this article published by the UK’s The Guardian: Anthony Summers, “The Secret Life of J Edgar Hoover,” The Guardian, December 31, 2011, https://www.theguardian.com/film/2012/jan/01/j-edgar-hoover-secret-fbi.

62“J. Edgar Hoover Was Homosexual, Blackmailed by Mob, Book Says,” Los Angeles Times, February 6, 1993, https://www.latimes.com/archives/la-xpm-1993-02-06-mn-1078-story.html.

63Summers, Official and Confidential, 280.
64Jerome A. Kroth, Conspiracy in Camelot: The Complete History of the Assassination of John Fitzgerald Kennedy (New York: Algora Pub, 2003), 233.

65Summers, Official and Confidential, 276.
66Mark Riebling, Wedge: From Pearl Harbor to 9/11: How the Secret War Between the FBI and CIA Has Endangered National Security, 1st Touchstone ed. (New York: Simon & Schuster, 2002, n.d.), 131.
67Hersh, Bobby and J. Edgar, 88.
68William McGowan, “The Chickens and the Bulls,” Slate, July 11, 2012, https://slate.com/human-interest/2012/07/the-chickens-and-the-bulls-the-rise-and-incredible-fall-of-a-vicious-extortion-ring-that-preyed-on-prominent-gay-men-in-the-1960s.html.
69McGowan, “The Chickens and the Bulls.”
70Hersh, Bobby and J. Edgar, 88.
71Ronald Smothers, “Seize 11-Year Fugitive in Homosexual Blackmail Case,” New York Times, January 14, 1978, https://www.nytimes.com/1978/01/14/archives/seize-11year-fugitive-in-homo-sexual-blackmail-case.html.
72Summers, Official and Confidential, 517.
73Summers, OOfficial and Confidential, 517.
74Summers, Official and Confidential, 516.
75Summers, Official and Confidential, 516.
76Nicholas Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 1st ed (New York: Doubleday, 1988), 123–24.
77Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 123-125.
78Maxine Cheshire, “The Director,” Washington Post, 1969, http://jfk.hood.edu/Collection/Weisberg%20Subject%20Index%20Files/H%20Disk/Hoover%20J%20Edgar%20Foundation/Item%2005.pdf.
79Hersh, Bobby and J. Edgar, 133-134.
80Summers, Official and Confidential, 516.
81Cheshire, “The Director.”
82Summers, Official and Confidential, 289.
83Cheshire, “The Director.”
84Sloane, Lewis Rosenstiel Dies.
85“CORPORATIONS: The Rapid Riser – TIME,” June 6, 1960, https://web.archive.org/web/20111007012745/http://www.time.com/time/magazine/article/0,9171,874162-1,00.html.

CHAPTER 3

ORGANIZED CRIME AND THE STATE OF ISRAEL

STATE-BUILDING

n its July, 1971 obituary for Samuel Bronfman, the New York Times wrote that, after World War II, the liquor baron had "helped finance a secret purchase of Canadian weapons for troops of the Haganah."[1] Additional details on Bronfman's role in that purchase, beyond its brief mention by the Times, are rather difficult to come by. Peter Newman, in his otherwise exhaustive The Bronfman Dynasty, writes that Sam "personally underwrote life insurance policies for Canadian pilots recruited to help Israel fight its 1948 war of independence."[2] However, it is also known that, a few years after Israel's creation, in 1951, Bronfman would play a leading role in a similar, "secret purchase" for the Haganah's successor, the Israel Defense Force (IDF). In that case, Bronfman specifically answered the call of Israel's Shimon Peres, taking Peres to Ottawa, Canada to negotiate the transfer for $2 million worth of weapons to Israel. Bronfman then raised funds to cover the entire cost of the sizable arms cache.[3]

Yet, aside from that little is known of his earlier role in arming Zionist paramilitaries prior to Israel's founding. As Newman noted, Bronfman preferred to remain tight-lipped on "Zionist matters," despite his position as head of the Canadian Jewish Congress – an example of the family's characteristic "quiet manipulation." Regardless of the exact nature of Bronfman's activities in this area, his connection to the Haganah was not unique for those in his social circles. Yet, even outside of Bronfman's contacts, efforts to aid the Zionist paramilitary group, which would later form the backbone of the IDF, were already indicative of a wider tendency in pro-Zionist activism that swept across Canada, America, Latin America and beyond during the late 1940s.

What was at stake was the creation of Israel itself, as a sovereign political entity independent of the British, who, until 1948, had controlled Mandatory Palestine in accordance with treaties set up at the end of World War I. When the British Mandate ended in May 1958, Israel declared itself independent, and immediately entered into conflict with the Palestinians and a coalition of Arab forces. Those fighting to create Israel were able to assert themselves so forcefully largely because of the careful groundwork that had been laid out in advance by a number of individuals and groups, many of them working in the shadows.

Such was the historical mission of the Haganah ("Defense"), an organized Zionist paramilitary network that had been set up by the Jewish Agency – an activist branch of the World Zionist Organization (WZO). The Jewish Agency, under the leadership of David Ben-Gurion, oversaw the creation of numerous towns, villages, communal outposts and defense groups in Mandatory Palestine. The Jewish Agency would later atrophy, only to be relaunched by one of Leslie Wexner's mentors, Max Fisher, in 1970.

The formation of the Haganah in 1920 was a major step forward towards the formation of the Israeli state. Vital to its functioning was the training and arms provided by the British military. Major General Orde Charles Wingate, who had been dispatched to help administer British control over the territories, worked closely with the Haganah. Wingate even organized joint British Army-Zionist paramilitary commando units dedicated to patrolling and suppressing Arab elements in the region. These were called the Special Night Squads.

In 1945, the Haganah began its effort to stockpile weapons, ammunition, aircraft, non-lethal supplies, and machine tools sourced from around the globe. In the US, Ben-Gurion reached out to a close associate, Zionist activist Rudolf Sonneborn, who had traveled to Palestine years earlier to survey the construction of Jewish villages on behalf of the World Zionist Organization.[4] Under the leadership of Sonneborn, eighteen or so Jewish millionaires and billionaires were recruited into bankrolling the supply effort. Thus, the Sonneborn Institute, as it was known, was born.

The Institute, an activist collaboration of Zionist millionaires and billionaires that pursued specific, Zionism-related causes, would later serve as sort of a model for the "Mega Group," founded years later by Leslie Wexner and Charles Bronfman in 1991. The Sonneborn Institute's chief asset was a Haganah operative named Yehuda Arazi. During World War II, he served as a soldier in the Jewish Brigade, a British army unit that recruited its fighters from the immigrant populations living in Mandatory Palestine. By 1945, he was an old hand at gun-running. Indeed, Arazi "had been active smuggling arms for the Haganah into Palestine from Europe since 1938."[5] Through these efforts, he developed an impressive roster of contacts, many of whom were tapped to set up front companies through which the Sonneborn Institute and the Haganah could carry out their activities. Ricky-Dale Calhoun wrote that:

> [One] Arazi associate was Leonard Weisman, who was probably a member of the Sonneborn group. Weisman was a 34-year-old from Pittsburgh who had made a fortune in scrap metals and construction materials. His businesses included Materials Redistribution Company, a firm that dealt in scrap machinery; Paragon Design and Development Corporation, a company that traded in building materials; and Pratt Steamship Lines. A fourth Weisman company, Foundry Associates, Inc., existed only on paper. All assisted in the purchase and illegal export of arms from the United States."[6]

Other front companies were organized by Nahum Bernstein, an attorney in New York City, that were used to source weapons and/or construct them from spare parts, and then export them overseas. Bernstein's name can be found on the corporate registrations of firms like Machinery Processing and Converting Company, which "provided cover for the purchase and illegal export of arms-making machines as well as armaments," and Oved Trading Company, which supplied "legal cover for buying and transporting explosives."[7]

There was also a trio of interlaced companies: Materials for Palestine, Inland Machinery and Metal Company, and the Eastern Development Company. Materials for Palestine was a charity through which money could be raised, while Inland Machinery actively shipped armaments and lethal munitions. Eastern Development, meanwhile, "exported legal nonmilitary goods and machinery to Palestine as relief supplies." There is a possibility that Paul Helliwell, discussed in Chapter 1, had some connection to this company, as he was listed as the attorney for the similarly named Eastern Development Corporation. According to a 1951 article in the Miami News, this Eastern Development was doing business in Florida, but had been formed in Pittsburgh.[8] As mentioned above, Leonard Weisman, the probable Sonneborn group member who worked with Arazi to create fronts for arms exporting, was also from Pittsburgh.

The potential presence of Helliwell in this mesh leads naturally to another question: was organized crime also involved in these efforts? Unlike the mysteries around Eastern Development, the role of organized crime in covertly arming the Haganah is well-documented. As these un-official arms trade networks spread across the US, gangsters and mobsters – many of whom actively identified with the Zionist cause – threw their hats into the ring. Early on, Arazi forged ties with Meyer Lansky, requesting aid in maritime transit for the arms. Lansky, in turn, contacted two of his associates who controlled New York City's docks and the long-shoremen's union, Albert Anastasia and Joe Adonis. The trio then "helped Israeli agents conceal the arms purchased for Israel, while arms bound for Egypt mysteriously fell overboard."[9]

Lansky's close associate, Bugsy Siegel, met with Reuven Dafne, a representative of the Haganah looking to raise funds. Dafne, as the story goes, told Siegel that the Zionists were looking to unshackle themselves from British rule and that the path to do this was to fight. Siegel told Dafne "I'm with you," and for several weeks afterwards, the Haganah would receive suitcases "filled with $5 and $10 dollar bills – $50,000 in all."[10]

Besides Lansky, one of the more active mobsters in the flow of arms was Joseph "Bayonne Joe" Zicarelli. According to files obtained from the Federal Bureau of Narcotics, Zicarelli was "alleged to have been involved in the traffic of arms and munitions sold to the government of Israel."[11] It was one of many destinations for Zicarelli's arms: he also brokered arms sales to Cuba, Mexico, Venezuela, the Dominican Republic, and Nicaragua. The latter, as will be discussed shortly, was also active in the acquisition of arms for Israel. Zicarelli was close to Carmine Galante, a key player in the Bonanno mafia family, who would later become one of Roy Cohn's main clients from the criminal underworld. Allegedly, Zicarelli had been the subject of a feud between Charles Tourine of the Genovese family and Galante, with each wanting to recruit him into their crime family.[12] Galante won out, and it was under his watch that Zicarelli's lucrative arms trade flourished. At one point in the 1950s, Zicarelli was dispatched to Montreal by Galante to work with the Canadian mobster Vincenzo Cotroni. Together, Zicarelli and Cotroni organized the import of large sums of heroin into the country, as part of the Canadian wing of the French Connection.

Zicarelli was also alleged to be a close business associate of Lewis Rosenstiel. Rosenstiel's fourth wife Susan Kaufman testified that Zicarelli had been a secret partner New Jersey warehouses owned by Schenley Industries, Rosenstiel's company. She furthered alleged that Rosenstiel had meetings with Zicarelli and Meyer Lansky.[13] The connection to Schenley signals Zicarelli's penchant for involving himself in quasi-legitimate businesses that acted as both "above-board" profit-turners and as fronts for less-than-reputable activities. Another one of these businesses was ABCO Vending, a cigarette vending machine company that was controlled by Zicarelli and Galante. Joining them there was Irwin "Steve" Schwartz, who later became infamous in the 1970s for his involvement in costly stock manipulation schemes. FBN files describe Schwartz as representing "the Galante-Zicarelli interests in the arms traffic, promotion and sale of worthless stocks and securities, and the cigarette vending business," before adding that "Since 1946 Schwartz has been engaged in the traffic of arms, a good portion of which have been obtained from Communist Bloc nations and shipped first to Israel and later to Cuba. Associated with Schwartz in these ventures were Irving Schindler and Adolf Schwimmer."[14]

Adolph "Al" Schwimmer was the founder of Israel Aircraft Industries, one of the country's great military contractors known today as Israel Aerospace Industries (IAI). During the 1930s, he worked for Lockheed and TWA, and, after World War II broke out, he was affiliated in some capacity with the US Air Transport Command. Schwimmer would remain active down through the decades, with a tendency to crop up in various Cold War-era covert operations. Perhaps most notoriously, he emerged as a key player on the Israeli side of the Iran-Contra Affair, and by some accounts was the individual who conceived of the "arms-for-hostages" plot at the center of Oliver North's complicated web. As for IAI, it would become owned, years later, by Israel's richest man Shaul Eisenberg. Under Eisenberg, IAI would have close ties to Israeli intelligence, from which he drew most of the company's senior staff.[15]

In his work securing materials for the Haganah, Schwimmer worked closely with Irvin "Swifty" Schindler. Schindler owned an airfreight company called Service Air, which Schwimmer relocated to California with funds from the Haganah. Together, Schwimmer and Schindler utilized the company as a means of acquiring aircraft and aircraft parts to be shipped to Palestine. Yet, with an embargo in place due to President Truman's declaration of neutrality, Service Air was prohibited from sending them overseas. Schwimmer and Schindler, aided by Arazi, turned to the Haganah's contacts in Panama. Soon, "legal ownership of the airplanes was transferred to the newly established Panamanian national airline LAPSA, allowing the aircraft to be legally flown to Panama" and from there they were moved abroad.[16]

In Chapter 7, which details the Iran-Contra Affair, Israel's close-knit relationship with Panama is mentioned in greater detail. Yet, the origins of this relationship began here, with the efforts of the Haganah to arm Zionist forces in Palestine following World War II. It wasn't, however, the only country in that region to have similar connections to Israel. Many of the people discussed in this chapter, like Bayonne Joe Zicarelli, were actively working with anti-communist forces in the Dominican Republic, Cuba, and elsewhere at the same time that they were working with the Haganah. One particularly important anti-communist force that was collaborating with the Haganah was the Somoza regime in Nicaragua.

The special relationship between the Zionist cause and Somoza's Nicaragua was largely due to the heavy presence of United Fruit, the New York-Boston banana trading company whose influence in Latin America was to be fundamentally intertwined with the CIA's activities in the region.[17] In 1933, United Fruit had fallen under the control of Samuel Zemurray, whose Cuyamael Fruit Company – a favorite of top Wall Street firms like Lehman and Goldman Sachs – had merged with the company several years prior. Zemurray, during the 1940s, was a big backer of Zionist causes. He aided the supply of arms to the Haganah, and reportedly helped the organization acquire the SS Exodus, a steamship used to ferry refuges to Palestine, in 1946. United Fruit, which later became United Brands, is discussed throughout this book due to its persisting intelligence connections as well as the fact its main leadership later included members of Leslie Wexner's inner circle and his two main mentors, Max Fisher and A. Alfred Taubman.

By 1947, as Truman's embargo began to be enforced, Nicaragua started providing arms to the Haganah. Somoza reportedly profited directly from this venture: he "received 3.5. percent commission on all arms purchases made by the Haganah under Nicaraguan aegis."[18] A decade later, Israel returned the favor when Shimon Peres negotiated an arms deal with Somoza that transformed Israel's emergent military-industrial complex into the primary supplier of weapons for Nicaragua.[19] As will be discussed in Chapter 7, Israel was active in arming and training the Nicaraguan Contras, the US-backed paramilitary forces that opposed the Sandinista government, which had toppled the Somoza regime in the late 1970s. The entry of Israel into this conflict was guaranteed by this precise history – and the Reagan administration, as part of its propaganda campaign, was quick to paint the new, Sandinista-led government as violently anti-Semitic.

The relationship between the Haganah and Latin America wasn't solely dependent upon the graces of Zemurray and United Fruit. Reportedly, Haganah officers called upon the services of Sam Kay, a Florida businessman and real estate developer, who had extensive contacts in Panama, Batista's Cuba, and elsewhere. FBI files describe Kay as a "reputed international gangster," and one of his close business associates was the Miami Beach hotel impresario Morris Lansburgh, who was himself a frontman for Meyer Lansky. Kay would later be linked to Florida mob boss Santo Trafficante, though the two were purported to have had a falling out that would almost cost Kay his life.

It was at this point where the Zionist interests melded with organized crime's real estate ventures, casino operations, and slush funds at the door of the Caribbean. Soon, these connections would truly begin to sprawl outwards and become truly intercontinental in scope.

THE HOT MONEY WEB

"During the Second World War," writes Jim Hougan, Tibor Rosenbaum "became a hero for the resistance through his activities on behalf of the Jews. Using 'Istvan Lukacs' as a nom de guerre, he carried out a series of Mission Impossible rescues. In one instance he posed as a high-ranking Nazi officer, entered a concentration camp, and under 'administrative pretext' obtained the release of thirty doomed prisoners."[20] His subsequent activities, however, were less than heroic.

With high-level connections secured through his position as a delegate for the World Zionist Congress, Rosenbaum set up his Geneva bank, International Credit Bank (ICB). ICB regularly moved money for Mossad and for Israel's Ministry of Defense. The British Sunday Times later reported in 1975 that "as much as [90%] of the Israeli Defense Ministry's external budget flowed … through Rosenbaum's bank."[21] It also moved money for organized crime. In 1967, an expose in LIFE magazine fingered ICB as the recipient of large sums of money skimmed off by the mob from the casinos they owned in Las Vegas, the Caribbean, and elsewhere.[22]

Overseeing the complex chains of inter-bank relations and transfer chains that enabled this "hot money" to flow around the globe was a series of banking institutions controlled by Meyer Lansky frontmen. The set-up was essentially as follows: casino skim (as well as profits generated by the drug trade and other organized crime rackets) was moved into two key offshore banks, the Bank of World Commerce (BWC) and Atlas Bank, the latter of which was a subsidiary of Rosenbaum's ICB. The funds would then be moved to accounts held by ICB in Geneva, where they would be converted into loans and investments to complete the money laundering loop. As will be discussed shortly, some of these funds may have been used to finance real estate investments that were made by people connected to American and Israeli intelligence.

The organizer of Atlas, on behalf of ICB, was Sylvain Ferdmann. The expose in LIFE described Ferdmann as a "Swiss citizen who is an international banker and economist," before adding that "US authorities have marked Ferdmann a fugitive … accused of interfering with the federal inquiry into the skimming racket."[23] Working alongside Ferdmann and Rosenbaum was a coterie of Lansky's closest allies. Sitting on the board of ICB itself was Ed Levinson and John Pullman. Levinson, who was partnered with Lansky in the Miami International Airport Hotel, ran the "mob-controlled Fremont Hotel-Casino in Las Vegas."[24] Levinson was also tight with Clifford Jones, the lieutenant governor of Nevada between 1947 and 1954 who was also an alleged associate of Meyer Lansky.[25]

Sitting alongside Levinson on the ICB board was John Pullman, Lansky's personal financial advisor. Pullman was also close to Lou Chesler, having becoming acquainted with the Canadian businessman in the 1940s. He subsequently introduced Chesler into Lanksy's orbit. Soon, Chesler began managing Lansky's interests in the Bahamas – including the development of hotels and casinos. At the same time, Pullman was organizing the Bank of World Commerce, the partner bank to Atlas Bank and correspondent bank to ICB.

Levinson and Pullman also sat on the board of BWC. An IRS report aptly described this bank as having been set up to maintain "a liquid supply of funds to be used for setting up new gambling casinos in the Caribbean wherever and whenever the opportunity presents itself."[26] They were joined on the board by Benjamin Siegelbaum, a money courier for Lansky and a prominent figure in organized crime circles in his own right. Besides BWC, Siegelbaum held posts at the Exchange and Investment Bank, a sort of Geneva-based counterpart bank to Rosenbaum's ICB. R.T. Naylor, in his book Hot Money and the Politics of Debt, writes that, for a time, Exchange and Investment Bank was Lansky's preferred financial institution – at least until his role in the bank was accidentally exposed by Chase Manhattan. This occurred after the bank found two of their employees using accounts there to spirit away embezzled funds. It was at this point that Lansky shifted the bulk of his business to Rosenbaum's bank.

Aside from Geneva banking, Siegelbaum also dabbled in Florida real estate. His money backed one of the state's large landowners, Major Realty, which had been co-founded in part by a Florida entrepreneur named Max Orovitz. Orovitz was, as Jonathan Marshall points out, "a legitimate businessman and an honored Jewish philanthropist, but no stranger to criminals."[27] He was partnered with Lou Chesler in both Florida real estate (albeit via Chesler's General Development Company, not Major Realty) and in development projects in the Bahamas that ultimately spawned Resorts International, which was previously Mary Carter Paint and had been linked to both the mob, to former New York governor Thomas Dewey and to Paul Helliwell's Castle Bank.

Orovitz was part of what was known as the "Miami Group" – a circle of organized crime-linked Jewish businessmen with holdings across various economic sectors in Florida and in Israel. Members of the Miami Group established Dan Hotels, a luxury hotel chain with locations in Israel and India, and also set up "Israel's first successful oil drilling company, Israel Oil Ventures."[28] Israel Oil Ventures expanded its capacities considerably in 1960, when it purchased Israel-American Oil Corp – an oil venture that was intimately tied to organized crime via its holding in another oil firm, Rimrock Tidelands. A subsidiary of Rimrock Tidelands, Rimrock International, was of interest to a Senate investigation into "international narcotics traffic." This was because Rimrock International's managing director was Santo Sorge, who was described in the Senate report as "one of the most important Mafia leaders" and a liaison between American and Sicilian mafia clans.[29]

Compared to its fellow dark money conduits, Atlas Bank – later renamed the "Atlas Trust" – is something of a mystery. It not only sat at the intersection of Geneva-bound money flows, but was also tied to hot money from the Middle East. According to Alan Block, Atlas "was united in some shadowy way with Intra Bank in Beirut, Lebanon," which maintained its own offshore entity in the Bahamas called Intra Bahamas Trust Ltd.[30]

Intra Bank was formed in 1951 by Yousef Beidas, a Christian Palestinian refugee who had been born into a prominent banking family. Just over a decade later, what began as a modest operation ballooned into a sprawling empire, at which point Beidas forged agreements with leading American banks. These included Bank of America and Chase Manhattan, and Beidas then placed branches of Intra Bank in the world's important hotspots for hot money: London, Geneva, and the Caribbean. At home, in Lebanon, Intra held "20% of the country's total deposits" and "56[%] of all the country's banking assets." [31] There was also a deep relationship between Intra Bank and illicit activities of all types. As Jonathan Marshall notes:

> Smugglers of all sorts availed themselves of Intra Bank's services. It was a prime depository for many of the world's leading arms traffickers, who received financing from Lebanese traders for illegal weapons sales in the Southern Arabian peninsula (Yemen and Aden), Cyprus, Sudan, Nigeria, Rhodesia, South Africa, and Kurdish communities in the Middle East. Wealthy Arabs with too many petrodollars on their hands, looking for a savvy bank in the region to look after their wealth, fattened

> its deposits further.… Lebanon was prized as a "haven for cash for anybody with a balance to hide – U.S. tax evaders, oil-rich sheiks who want to lay something by for the rainy day of revolution, and assorted racketeers and purveyors of stolen or smuggled wealth from all over the world," observed LIFE magazine in 1967.[32]

Naturally, this sort of environment made Intra Bank an attractive financial institution for the CIA, and the bank helped transform Beirut into a core hub for the Agency's covert operations in the Middle East. Marshall reports that Beidas in particular had a "personal touch" when it came to dealing with the CIA – he was even seen "taking CIA officers into his private office to handle their checks."[33] Sitting on the board of directors of Intra Bank was Kamal Adham, the head of Saudi intelligence and a cousin of the infamous arms dealer Adnan Khashoggi – a later key player in Iran-Contra, the BCCI affair, and numerous other covert activities. According to the Congressional BCCI Report, Adnan "was the CIA's principle liaison for the entire Middle East from the mid-1960s through 1979."[34]

Intra Bank was identified by American law enforcement as being a major laundromat and source of funding for the global drug trade, a sizable portion of which was based in Lebanon. This was thanks to the country's position as a key node in the famed French Connection, as Lebanon was a major source of hashish, raw opium, and even refined heroin that was destined for black markets in Europe and North America.

This node of the international drug trade was largely controlled by Sami Khoury and his partner, Omar Makkouk. They had forged close ties to the Lebanese political establishment and law enforcement community, generating an atmosphere of generalized corruption that gained Khoury the nickname of "the Untouchable." Khoury's ties soon expanded overseas. According to a CIA report, Corsican organized crime figures allied with Khoury had made inroads into "the highest levels of French government, industry and society, including the cabinet, police, and military."[35]

Khoury also enjoyed protection from Israel. James Attie, an agent of the Federal Bureau of Narcotics (FBN) assigned to the Middle East, reported that the drug lord had provided thousands of guns to Israel, and that the country had "provided the contacts and money that enabled Khoury to move narcotics across Europe."[36] Intriguingly, another figure implicated by the FBN in the flow of drugs from Lebanon to Europe was the banker Edmond Safra, whose connection to BCCI, Iran-Contra, and figures like Robert Maxwell and Jeffrey Epstein is discussed in Chapter 7.[37] Safra was also a Zionist with strong ties to Israel. For instance, during the 1980s, he served on the board of overseers of B'nai B'rith International, seated alongside figures like Edgar M. Bronfman and Max Fisher.

One of Intra Bank's most lucrative holdings was the Casino du Liban, a gambling establishment outside of Beirut. The casino was a hot-spot for the international jet-set as well as a meeting place for various figures from the underworld who regularly rubbed shoulders with elites. According to Jonathan Marshall, the Casino du Liban "was a favorite playground for Saudi sheiks and rich Arab businessmen, such as Adnan Khashoggi.… It was also a favorite gathering place for foreign businessmen, diplomats and spies."[38] Jim Hougan, meanwhile, writes that the casino, at its height, was "said to be the biggest gambling emporium in the world – dwarfing the Sands, the Dunes, the Flamingo, and Monte Carlo."[39]

At the Casino du Liban, gambling concessions were held by Marcel Francisci, the leader of the Corsican underworld. In the 1940s, Francisci allied himself with Sami Khoury, and, prior to his murder in 1968, he forged a close working relationship between French and Italian gangsters. "Mr. Heroin," as he was known by American authorities, "was the man with the international perspective." As a result of his other connections to Francisci and others, Khoury did perhaps more than anyone to maintain the French connection drug pipeline.[40] Francisci was also a partner with Meyer Lansky, who was likewise known to haunt the Casino du Liban from time to time.[41]

Intra Bank's peculiarities make a little more sense when one considers that, for bankers and organized criminals alike, there is often money to be made on both sides of any given conflict. After all, this was a bank that had been founded by someone who had fled the Haganah's activities in Palestine – and a casino that, according to Jim Hougan, would siphon money off to finance the Palestine Liberation Organization (PLO).[42] Yet, at the same time, Zionist-aligned gangsters, bankers and other figures were caught up in its web. This apparent contradiction was ultimately indicative of a trend that would grow in the 1970s and

1980s: a “behind-the-scenes” alignment between the ruling elites of Arab societies, enriched by the petrodollar system, and the Israeli business class and security apparatus. This tension-filled, often contradictory and ever-shifting alignment was of considerable interest to the US, which often found itself serving as the mediator between these two forces. The US, of course, would use that role as its pivot-point in its attempts to dominate the Middle East. This environment was fertile soil for crooks, businessmen and operatives of all types – many of whom were interlaced with the command structures of Western (and sometimes Eastern) intelligence services.

BANKERS AND TANKERS: THE WORLD OF BRUCE RAPPAPORT

While he was President Ronald Reagan’s director of the CIA, William Casey, maintained – much to the chagrin of many in the Agency – an informal intelligence apparatus composed of his close friends and associates. Nicknamed the “Hardy Boys,” this group lacked CIA clearances but its members “had their own back door, so to speak, into Langley. They would ride upstairs in Casey’s own elevator.”[43] Among this clique was Max Hugel, who managed to be appointed deputy director of the CIA before his history of dubious stock trading caught up with him. Hugel makes a brief appearance later, in Chapter 10.

Other members, who will also be discussed in later chapters of this book, included John Shaheen and Robert B. Anderson. Shaheen, an oil trader, played a role in the October Surprise affair, while Robert B. Anderson’s career veered from being a prominent figure in the Eisenhower administration to being disbarred for money laundering in 1980s. One of Casey’s most important friends, however, was Bruce Rappaport.

Across the latter half of the twentieth century, Rappaport left a string of business deals that were mind-numbing in their complexity and tied to fraud, intelligence-linked bust-out operations, and backroom dealings, all of which was facilitated by a sophisticated web of interlocking shipping companies, banks, oil companies, mines, and numerous other holdings. Rappaport and Casey were sometimes co-participants in these activities, some of which predated Casey’s time at the CIA. During the 1980s, they were also known to be golfing buddies, and made frequent visits together to the Deepdale Golf Club on Long Island.

“When Rappaport visited Deepdale,” writes Alan Block, the author of an exhaustive study on his life and times, “his chauffeur was often Louis Filardo, an alleged associate of New York area mobsters.”[44] By the late 1980s – if not earlier – he was tied to Russian organized crime interests, including Semion Mogilevich, the “boss of bosses” of Russian crime syndicates who makes several appearances later in this book. With a position on the FBI’s top 10 most wanted list, Mogilevich is described by the bureau as a leader in “weapons trafficking, contract murders, extortion, drug trafficking, and prostitution on an international scale.”[45] Interestingly, it is quite possible that Rappaport had been introduced to Mogilevich by none other than Robert Maxwell, who, by the late 1980s, had become a key business partner of Mogilevich’s and facilitated Mogilevich’s entry into the Israeli and US financial systems. Another contact of Mogilevich’s crime networks was the aforementioned banker Edmond Safra, who was acquainted with both Maxwell and Rappaport.[46]

Rappaport’s origins are murky, though a few facts are known. He was born in Haifa, Palestine, in 1922 to a family that had settled there from Ukraine. At some point he earned a law degree, and spent time as a judge after Israel’s founding. He also served in the IDF, achieving the rank equivalent to major. His military career, however, had begun before the formation of the state of Israel in 1948.

Rappaport has stated that he spent a portion of World War II fighting with the British Army, who dispatched him to Africa. He may have been a member of the African Auxiliary Pioneer Corps, later shortened to the African Pioneer Corps. The Corps had existed from 1941 until 1946, and had started off as a logistic support unit that gradually expanded to include combat capabilities. Many of the African Pioneers were attached to the Ninth Army, one of the British field armies that was part of the Middle East Command. Rappaport was also reportedly a member of the Special Interrogation Group (SIG), the British commando group made up Jewish volunteers from Mandatory Palestine. SIG recruited heavily from the ranks of the Haganah, the Irgun and the Special Night Squads.

After the war, Rappaport joined the 6th Airborne Division, another British Army outfit. This was an airborne infantry division that had been deployed to Palestine in the late 1940s, and worked closely with Jewish groups in the region to administer the territories until Israel's creation in 1948. The 6th Airborne, which had a fairly significant casualty rate among its personnel, worked to regulate and balance the competing interests of Jewish and Arab factions in the region, while also laying the logistical groundwork for the steady influx of refugees from Europe.

During his time with the 6th Airborne, Rappaport helped organize Israel's military police. Soon, however, he began to focus more on his another of his interests – the world of criminal enterprises and covert operations. According to Alan Block, a Scotland Yard report provided some of the earliest known information on Rappaport's shadier activities, charging that "in the early 1950s, Rappaport and Teddy Kollek, who became the charismatic mayor of Jerusalem, devised a scam on construction materials serious enough to produce warrants."[47] Israeli newspapers reported a similar story, but sometimes Paul Kollek – Teddy's brother – was instead identified as Rappaport's partner. Regardless of which Kollek was actually involved, Rappaport's proximity to the Kollek brothers points to his own proximity to the centers of power in nascent Israel. This connection is also one that leads back to the Haganah and the inter-mixing of intelligence and organized crime: Teddy Kollek, in the 1940s, "ran the day-to-day operations of the arms procurement" in New York for the Haganah, which brought him into contact with the city's criminal elements.[48] His close contacts included Al Schwimmer and Yehuda Arazi, and he worked with the two in delivering aircraft to Israel by way of intermediaries in South America.

Kollek's activities put him on the radar of British intelligence and their interest in him was multi-fold. On the one hand, he was treated with suspicion: "His phone was bugged, his bags were searched" and his movements were consistently tracked.[49] On the other hand, he was actively courted by MI5 – first indirectly, and then later directly. Kollek's main contact with British intelligence was through an MI5 officer named Simkin. The two had a mutual friend, Ben Aharon, who was reportedly an ardent Bolshevik who would subsequently become head of the Histadrut, the centralized body that coordinated Israel's trade unions. Aharon's wife, Miriam, worked for the Shai, the intelligence apparatus of the Haganah.

After his scam with one of the Kollek brothers went bust, Rappaport fled Israel. Over the course of his lifetime, he held passports for numerous countries: he was listed as a citizen of Panama, Costa Rica, Israel, and Switzerland. It was the latter location where he settled down in the early 1950s. Early support for his Swiss ventures came from the Société Générale de Surveillance (SGS), a Geneva-based multinational that provides inspection and verification services for international trade.[50] Besides SGS, another entity that helped Rappaport launch his early activities was Swiss-Israel Trade Bank, headquartered in Geneva. According to Rappaport, he knew Swiss-Israel's owner, who provided him with loans.[51] Interestingly, the bank's original founder and owner – likely who Rappaport was referring to – was Gideon Persky.[52]

Gideon was the brother of Shimon Peres, the leading Israeli Labor Party politician who would later serve as both president and prime minister of the country and become a close friend of Robert Maxwell and, later, his daughter Isabel. Years later, Ehud Barak, who would later serve as Israel's Defense Minister and Prime Minister, alleged that Shimon Peres had been the person who had originally introduced him to Jeffrey Epstein.[53] Shimon, a veteran of the Haganah, had joined the IDF towards the end of the 1940s, and was appointed by David Ben-Gurion as the chief purchaser of munitions for Israel's military. By 1953, Shimon headed Israel's Ministry of Defense. According to Jonathan Nitzan and Shimshon Bichler, Shimon's control over defense spending greatly benefited the businesses of his brother.

That Swiss-Israel helped prop up Rappaport is significant, as it was effectively a Mossad front in Europe.[54] Overseeing the bank's daily operations was Yehuda Assia, who was actively on the Mossad payroll. Under his direction, the bank both raised funds for the bank and acted as a conduit for the financing of its international operations. It was also utilized to raise money for the construction of nuclear reactors that played a major role in Israel's covert construction of nuclear weapons. Avner Cohen, in his book Israel and the Bomb, writes that Ben-Gurion and Shimon Peres "conducted [the management of funds] outside the official state budget," and had enlisted the aid of an American-Jewish fundraiser and businessman named Abraham Feinberg to locate private donors.55 Feinberg ran American Bank & Trust, a subsidiary of Swiss-Israel.[56]

There are other lines running from Swiss-Israel to the worlds of organized crime and – unsurprisingly – to Helliwell's banking complex. Prior to his relocation to Geneva to take over the operations of Swiss-Israel, Yehuda Assia spent World War II in Thailand, where he met General Phao Sriyanonda.[57] During the 1950s, Phao spent a considerable amount of time in Geneva, where he lived with Assia. As mentioned in Chapter 1, Phao was closely connected to Helliwell, and stood at a nexus of American intelligence's complicity in the opium trade during the post-war period.

In 1960, Assia was contacted by Irving Davidson – a powerful lobbyist whose clients included the CIA, the Teamsters, Texas oil giant Clinton Murchison, and the state of Israel – concerning a Bahamian bank called Guarantee Trust Company.[58] Guarantee Trust was run by a major supporter of Israel named Abe Multer and was one of the offshore entities that handled hot money flows from the Teamsters pension fund and from other organized criminal activities, such as the skim from casinos. The vice chairman of the bank was Leonard Bursten, a former director of Miami National Bank – which, as previously mentioned in Chapter 1, had been founded with the aid of a loan from the Teamster pension fund and had employed the services of Paul Helliwell's law firm.

With these early ties, Rappaport's empire began to expand in all directions, interlocking with shipping and financial interests all over the world. This process began in 1959, with the creation of International Maritime Services and International Maritime Supplies Company Limited. The latter company was closely linked to a shipping concern in the UK called Wilson (London & International) Limited, which was soon joined by a trio of major maritime companies. These were, per Alan Block, "a Dutch company, N.S. Frank & Zoon, N.V.; the American Maritime Supply Service Inc., based in Chicago; and the Italian Maritime Supplies Co. Ltd. Rappaport noted with glee that with three other firms buying into International Maritime … it would be possible to have a shipping clientele of 161 firms that will cover the entire world."[59]

In those early years, Rappaport formed what would be a lifelong connection to the Kulukundis family, a Greek shipping clan who had set up shop in the United States and in Great Britain. Michael Kulukundis was the co-organizer of International Maritime Supplies, and court documents show that, as early as 1961, the pair were using the company to run scams and loot the coffers of unsuspecting businesses.[60] At the same time, the Kulukundis family advanced their own shipping interests through London & Overseas Freighters, which, in time, would boast an impressive fleet of tankers that played a significant role in the global oil trade. Some of the affairs of the Kulukundis family will be discussed in Chapter 6.

In the early 1960s, Inter Maritime Supplies owned a stake in London & Overseas Freighters. It is worth mentioning that London & Overseas was formed by the Kulukundis family with their cousins, the Mavroleon family. As will be noted in Chapter 15, the Mavroleons were themselves connected to the circles around Jeffrey Epstein and Ghislaine Maxwell. For several years, Ghislaine Maxwell dated Gianfranco Cicogna, whose mother had been married to the patriarch of the Mavroleon family – and original founder of London & Overseas – Basil "Bluey" Mavroleon. Contact information for Bluey Mavroleon and his son, Nicholas Mavroleon (Gianfranco's half-brother), can be found in Epstein's black book of contacts.

It wasn't until 1965 that Rappaport set up the institution that would later stand at the center of his complex network of firms and money conduits: Inter Maritime Bank (IMB). IMB, writes Block, "had A and B shareholders." The various holders of Class B stock were representatives of banking institutions that were in business with Rappaport. These included Klaus Uilke Polstra, representing Bank M. van Embden, and Rolando Zoppi, representing Weisscredit, a bank in the Swiss Canton of Ticino. Nestled near the border of Swiss and Italy, Weisscredit was identified by the US State Department as a bank utilized by numerous Italians involved with organized crime to hide their money from financial authorities in their home country.[61] Zoppi would wind up with a five-year prison sentence in 1975 when Weisscredit lost some $150 million of depositors' money due to "fraud and mismanagement in high-risk speculative operations."[62]

Another holder of Class B stock was David Hodara, from the Swiss financial outfit Sofigest. Sofigest would later be involved in the strange affairs of Investors Overseas Services, an international mutual fund and capital flight apparatus with ties to Tibor Rosenbaum and Meyer Lansky. Later, Sofigest would emerge in Brazil, where it was involved in everything from a joint venture with Fiat to frauds perpetuated by the infamous Naji Nahas.

When it came to the holders of Class A stock, things were a bit more limited. The bulk was held by Rappaport himself, albeit filtered through various other companies that he either owned or controlled. The rest were held by E.P. Barry – the OSS veteran who, as mentioned in Chapter 1 was one of the primary figures in Paul Helliwell's Florida banking network. In fact, at the same time that Barry was involved with HMT/Florida Shares, the holding company for some of Helliwell's banks, he came to hold IMB Class A shares. This link to the world of Helliwell would endure: one of Rappaport's chief financial allies, and an architect of a large number of his ventures, was Helliwell's banking partner Burton Kanter, also an affiliate of the mob.

Over the decades, there has been a slow and steady trickle of news articles in major publications that examine Bruce Rappaport. In 1988, the New York Times published on Rappaport entitled "A Secret Emperor of Oil and Shipping."63 The article described how Rappaport had:

> […]developed a reputation for both openness and secrecy. On one hand, Mr. Rappaport – who is said by some associates to be a billionaire – sponsors golf and tennis tournaments and gives huge sums to a host of charities, especially medical and Jewish ones. On the other hand, former and current business associates say Mr. Rappaport is involved in hundreds of companies, registered in remote places like Liberia and Panama, to run his banking, shipping and oil empire.[64]

The appearance of Rappaport in Liberia is particularly interesting. It was there that he had established one of his many Inter Maritime outfits; in this case, it was Inter Maritime Owners Corporation of Monrovia. Liberia was a favorite for owners of shipping companies: besides the low tax rates, the astoundingly lax regulation, and the degree of bank secrecy, the country boasts a robust flags of convenience system, which "allows ship owners to register their vessels in an alternative sovereign to their place of origin."[65] Liberia's shipping registry system also has some unique characteristics: it was managed not in Liberia itself, but was overseen by International Bank, located in Washington DC. The longtime controller of International Bank, George Olmsted, would end up on the periphery of the BCCI affair, discussed later in Chapter 7.

Rappaport wasn't a lone figure in this network with ties to Liberia; in fact, there is every indication that Liberia was of immense importance to a number of the individuals that have discussed in this chapter. Tibor Rosenbaum, for example, was listed as the managing director of Swiss-Liberian Finance Corporation in 1954. That year, Swiss-Liberian Finance Corporation provided a multi-million dollar line of credit to help capitalize the Bank of Liberia Inc. – a development bank partially controlled by the Liberian government.[66] Other capital inflows for the Bank of Liberia came from the Bank of Monrovia and the Liberian Trade and Development Corp (TRADEVCO). The Bank of Monrovia had first been owned by the Firestone Tire & Rubber Company before it was acquired by the First National City Bank, an institution controlled by the Rockefeller family.[67] TRADEVCO, meanwhile, was controlled by a group of Italian banks.

Tax banking laws and the flags of convenience system certainly helped attract people to Liberia. Another may have been the lucrative diamond trade: during the 1950s, the country became the primary transshipment point for the flow of diamonds from countries like Sierra Leone to diamond cutting hubs.[68] Many of these hubs were located in Antwerp and in Israel. In Israel, one of the major banks involved in the financing of the diamond cutting industry was Bank Leumi, which opened offices and branches in Liberia early on. The board of Bank Leumi reportedly interlocked with that of Rosenbaum's ICB – while Rosenbaum himself was affiliated with Kupat Am Bank, a subsidiary of Bank Leumi.

Serving as honorary counsel to Liberia in this period was a man named Louis Mortimer Bloomfield. He was a powerful Canadian attorney with an exhaustive roster of connections to all sorts of elite figures and institutions, starting with the law firm he belonged to: Phillips & Vineberg of Montreal. Through its senior co-partner Lazarus Phillips, it was connected to the Royal Bank of Canada. Libbie and Frank Park, in their classic study of the Canadian elite establishment, The Anatomy of Big Business, show that this bank was one of the commanding institutions in Canada, and acted as a conduit for the entry of foreign capital originating in the US, the UK and Belgium.[69]

The firm was also closely tied to the Bronfman family. Peter Newman writes in The Bronfman Dynasty that "Because of the many family feuds, two of Montreal's best lawyers – Lazarus Phillips and Philip Vineberg – have become ex officio members of the family, charged with arbitrating among its several factions."[70] It has been alleged that Bloomfield himself did work on behalf of the Bronfmans. While this is by no means outside the realm of possibility, it is difficult to find evidence to confirm this particular claim. What is known and extensively documented, however, is Bloomfield's ties to a mysterious entity in Rome that was tied to American, Italian, French, and Israeli intelligence networks – as well as to international organized criminal actors and their banks.

MOSSAD GOES TO ROME

In 1967, Gershon Peres, a brother of Shimon Peres, joined the board of Centro Mondiale Commerciale (CMC), the Italian subsidiary of Permindex – a world trade center organization headquartered first in Basel and then in Rome and made famous by New Orleans district attorney Jim Garrison's investigation into the assassination of John F. Kennedy.[71] Ostensibly, the purpose of Permindex-CMC was to maintain what was effectively a permanent world's fair – a centralized site where businessmen could display their wares, deals could be made, and important corporations could maintain offices. On the back end, however, Permindex-CMC was tied into various covert networks. What first placed Garrison on the trail of Permindex, for example, was the presence of Clay Shaw, an apparent CIA contract agent, on their board.[72]

Italian journalist Michele Metta, who recovered a cache of CMC corporate documents, has shown that Permindex-CMC was plugged into the Italian state security apparatus, and also had a curious series of connections to Israel.[73] One of CMC's founders, Georges Mandel (also known as Giorgio Mantello), was affiliated with the Banque pour le Commerce Suisse-Amerique Centrale, which was identified as having "supplied cover employment for [Israeli Intelligence Service] agents."[74] Another CMC board member, Alberto Forte, subsequently became managing director of Banque Belgo-Centrade – a subsidiary of the Mossad-linked Swiss-Israel Trade Bank.[75]

Louis Mortimer Bloomfield has often been described as the founder of Permindex, and sometimes as its dominant shareholder. This seems to be an inaccurate picture of his role in the complex, as Bloomfield was Permindex's attorney. In this capacity, he was responsible for coordinating all the different players involved, who were scattered across multiple continents. He does not appear to have owned stock of his own in Permindex or CMC. Instead, he acted as a proxy for particular interests, effectively hiding their identities. Their stock was held in his name, and he occupied their spots on the board.

With the links between Permindex-CMC and the world of intelligence, it is unsurprising that rumors have circulated for decades that Bloomfield was, during the Second World War, a member of the OSS. There is little to corroborate this claim, though he did serve in the Royal Canadian Army Service Corps, achieving the rank of major in August 1946. Correspondences in his archive show that he was in communication with the British spymaster William Stephenson, who at the time was active in Canadian industry and finance. Bloomfield did hold membership in a number of elite organizations, including the Most Venerable Order of the Hospital of St. John of Jerusalem – a British chivalric order established by royal charter in the [18]80s as something of a Protestant counterpart to the Catholic Sovereign Military Order of Malta (better known as the Knights of Malta). He eventually became both the attorney for and president of the Order's Quebec Council.

Bloomfield was also attached to a number of Zionist organizations. He served as honorary counsel to the World Jewish Congress, and was active in building up the Canadian branches of the Histadrut, Israel's trade union complex.[76] In addition to organized labor, Bloomfield's concerns involved maritime commerce as well. He was president of the Canadian wing of the Israel Maritime League, set up in the late 1940s to "make the people of Israel 'sea-conscious."[77] The Israel Maritime League and the Histadrut were tightly connected: along with the Jewish Agency, the three organized Zim Shipping, the major transport concern that was a key supplier of weapons and supplies to Israel in the early days of the state's existence.[78]

Later in life, Bloomfield corresponded with George H.W. Bush, including while Bush was serving as director of the CIA.[79] The letters indicate that the two first met at a meeting at the Canadian embassy in Beijing in 1975. Bloomfield appears to have had a long-running fascination with China, having traveled there as early as 1966 (if not earlier). After that particular trip, he gave public addresses calling for the normalization of diplomatic relations with the country and for increased trade relations between the East and the West. As Maurice Phillips – the first to explore the contents of Bloomfield's archives – points out, Bloomfield's position on China predated that of President Richard Nixon and Henry Kissinger by a number of years.[80]

Another prominent figure in touch with Bloomfield was Tibor Rosenbaum. Permindex documents show that Rosenbaum and his International Credit Bank were deeply involved with Permindex and CMC. A July 12th, 1961, memo from Bloomfield to Rosenbaum discusses an adjacent project, headed by CMC's founder Georges Mantello, called Marina Reale.[81] Registered in Panama, Marina Reale was a holding company utilized by Permindex's principals to acquire real estate. Just as with Permindex itself, Bloomfield acted as a proxy for shareholders whose names remain unknown. The communication between him and Rosenbaum, however, identifies some of the other parties with interests tied up in Marina Reale. Among these were Dov Biegun, a leading figure in the World Zionist Organization who became the national secretary for the National Committee for Labor Israel. Much like Bruce Rappaport and Robert Maxwell, Biegun spent World War II in the British Army. According to his obituary, he "served in intelligence operations in France, Holland and Norway."[82]

Another investor in Marina Reale – and one who received his shares directly from Mantello – was "Nate Dolin of Cleveland, Ohio." Dolin achieved notoriety in 1970 when a firm he was connected to, Realty Equities, ran a fraud scheme in conjunction with Rosenbaum's ICB.[83] Interestingly, Dolin had a business relationship with the Lansky-connected mobster Moe Dalitz going back to the 1940s, when they both owned shares of the Cleveland Indians sports team.[84]

There were other big names involved in Permindex-CMC's real estate deals. Communiqués found in Louis Bloomfield's archival papers show that his law partner Stanley Vineberg was keeping a close eye on these developments, and perhaps even had a role in these transactions that superseded that of Bloomfield.[85] These same cables identified a French company called Compagnie Financière as holding a 10% stake in one of the real estate ventures. Compagnie Financière had been set up in 1953 by Francois Pereire, a scion of the famed French banking family, and Edmond de Rothschild, who exerted dominant control over the institution. Today, Compagnie Financière is known as the Edmond de Rothschild Group.

Rothschild was also a business partner of Tibor Rosenbaum: the two had organized the Israel Corporation, "Israel's largest investment company," designed to "encourage large-scale private investment in Israel."[86] When it was discovered in 1974 that Rosenbaum had bilked the company to the tune of $60 million dollars, the Israeli government linked up a small handful of the country's leading banks "to participate in efforts to prevent its liquidation."[87] One of these banks was Bank Leumi.

Rothschild himself appears all over Bloomfield's correspondences, and was clearly intimately involved with Permindex-CMC's activities. One cable from Bloomfield to Abraham Friedman at the Israel Continental Oil Corporation in Tel-Aviv requested that Friedman discuss matters relevant to the Italian real estate deals with Rothschild. Intriguingly, the Oil and Petroleum Year Book identifies Israel Continental Oil as having been set up in Canada in 1952, while Canadian government records show that Louis Bloomfield's nephew, Bernard Bloomfield – mentioned earlier as a director of International Credit Bank's subsidiary, Atlas Bank – was the oil producer's president.[88]

According to the Jewish Telegraph Agency, a year after Israel Continental Oil was founded, it became a player in a consortium of oil firms looking to drill "near the Dead Sea and in other sections of Israel."[89] Other partners in this consortium included Husky Oil Company, which was affiliated with the aforementioned mob-linked Rimrock Tidelands oil company, and New Continental Oil Company, with which Israel Continental Oil set up joint ventures in Canada. The president of New Continental was Frank

Kaftel, an organized crime associate and stock manipulator originally from Cleveland, the stomping grounds of Moe Dalitz and CMC investor Nate Dolin.[90] Federal Bureau of Narcotics documents identified Kaftel as a close associate of "Bayonne Joe" Zicarelli – the aforementioned mobster and businessman who had been involved in the running of arms to Israel.[91]

Another Canadian-based oil concern active in the Israel petroleum industry of the early 1960s was Tri-Continental Pipelines, where Edmond de Rothschild, Francois Pereire, and Louis Bloomfield could all be found.[92] Galina Nikitina, in her political and economic history of the state of Israel, notes that Tri Continental was part of a group that controlled a pipeline from Eilat to Haifa – the basis for the larger "Trans-Israel Pipeline" that linked Israel and Iran – alongside the Miami Group and the Palestine Economic Corporation (PEC).[93] The Miami Group, as mentioned above, maintained ties to organized crime interests and was also connected to the family of companies that was partnered with the Israel Continental Oil Corporation. PEC, on the other hand, was a primary conduit for the investment of American capital into nascent Israeli industries. To quote Nikitina:

> […]described as the largest American private investor in Israel, [PEC] was formed in 1926 as an instrument through which American Jews could render material assistance to production enterprises in Palestine. In only the period from 1950 to 1959 its capital increased 70 percent. PEC assets totalled 19,300,000 dollars in 1961. It has numerous daughter companies, banks and agencies, and shares in other companies. Having grown to gigantic proportions, PEC has its tentacles in all the key branches of Israel's economy.
>
> PEC is linked with leading financial and industrial monopolies in the USA, such as the Wall Street bankers Lehman Brothers, Kuhn, Loeb and Company (one of the eight largest financial groups in the USA), the Mellon group of Pittsburgh, the Cabot Lodge group of Boston, and the Hanna group of Cleveland.[94]

This particular network of individuals and institutions is complex and convoluted; yet, what is clear is that there was something of an Israel-Italy-France-Canada axis that was tied directly into hot money networks in the Caribbean, to the flow of capital from the west into Israel itself, and to the outflows of raw materials (like diamonds) from the "third world." Once this foreign investment – generally from American and Canadian sources – was in Israel, it went to work building up various industries. It appears, then, that the logical successor to the earlier efforts to raise money, supplies, and weapons for the Zionist paramilitary groups in Mandatory Palestine was now all about building up the capacities of the new state.

As for the more narrow case of Permindex-CMC itself, it is clear how this "world trade center" would have been beneficial for engendering international capital flows and business arrangements of this very nature. At the same time, however, the links between these entities and intelligence services, like the CIA, the Italian special services and Mossad, also suggests a more covert imperative.

Michele Metta, in his book on Permindex, notes that, in the early 1960s, special arrangements were made between Israel and Italy to support the OAS – the French paramilitary group – in Algeria, in return for Italian oil companies getting access to Algerian crude.[95] While the geopolitical implications of this arrangement are wide-ranging, it was also intimately connected to CMC. Leading these secret negotiations was former Italian prime minister Fernando Tambroni, whose son-in-law, Micucci Cecchi, sat on the board of CMC.[96] On the side of the OAS, the negotiations were reportedly handled by the paramilitary leader Jacques Soustelle.[97]

This particular angle emerged during the investigation into the mysterious death of Enrico Mattei, whose plane exploded in October 1962. Mattei was the head of ENI, the dominant oil and gas firm in Italy that supplied, among other things, petroleum to NATO and the US Sixth Fleet. In the early 1960s, however, Mattei had embarked on something of a path different from the status quo of Cold War politics. He sought to sign oil agreements with the Soviet Union, and with Algerian and Egyptian interests who were, at the time, opposed to Israel.

With such a pivot taking place, theories that Mattei's death was less than accidental have existed for decades and have also led to multiple official inquiries into the incident. Italian journalist Fulvio Bellini turned over information allegedly identifying the real culprits to one of these inquiries headed by the judicial magistrate Vincenzo Calia. "I think to understand the death of Enrico Mattei," Bellini told Calia, "you need to follow the trail to Jacques Soustelle. This was the man given the job of doing Operation Mattei with around one hundred thousand dollars from Montreal, through Permindex."[98]

And what, then, of the connections to organized crime networks? One possibility is that, through its connection with Tibor Rosenbaum's International Credit Bank, Permindex-CMC was involved with money laundering activities. In one of the earliest exposes of Permindex-CMC, published by investigative journalist Mario Ugazzi in the now-defunct Paese Sera, a company called the Italo-American Hotel Corporation (IAHC) was identified as an affiliate of CMC (Metta, meanwhile, describes IAHC as a subsidiary of CMC).[99] IAHC was dedicated to high-end real estate development in various locations in Rome. One of its big projects was the Hotel du Lac, curiously located next to ENI's headquarters.[100] Financing for IAHC's projects came from Banca Nazionale del Lavoro (BNL) – a bank that, as will be discussed in Chapter 7, was tied to notorious banks like BCCI and Banco Ambrosiano and also played a role in the flow of weapons to Iraq in the 1980s. The money that BNL handled, however, came from a variety of other sources in Geneva and Lichtenstein. One of these sources was none other than ICB. While this is to be expected given Rosenbaum's numerous ties to Permindex-CMC, it does raise questions about the ultimate provenance of this money. Given that ICB was moving the hot money being poured into its correspondent banks into the Caribbean, it is possible that, via these various companies, this money was being put into Italian real estate ventures.

Such conclusions are at best speculative. Yet, what is certain and undeniable is that much of the wartime OSS and CIA as well as Israel's intelligence services operated in close proximity to, and were effectively indistinguishable from, organized crime. What's unique in Israel's case, however, is that such collusion was baked in at the very foundations of, not only its intelligence service, but the origins of the state itself.

Endnotes

1“Samuel Bronfman Dead at 80; Founded Distillers Corporation,” New York Times, July 11, 1971, https://www.nytimes.com/1971/07/11/archives/samuel-bronfman-dead-at-80-foundeddistillers-corporation-his.html.

2Peter C. Newman, Bronfman Dynasty: The Rothschilds of the New World (Toronto: McClelland and Stewart, 1978), 46.

3“Samuel Bronfman,” Entrepreneur, October 10, 2008, https://www.entrepreneur.com/article/197618.

4Wolfgang Saxon, “Rudolf Sonneborn Dies at 87; A Zionist Leader in the US,” New York Times, June 4, 1986, https://www.nytimes.com/1986/06/04/obituaries/rudolf-sonneborn-dies-at-87-a-zionist-leader-in-the-us.html.

5Ricky-Dale Calhoun, “Arming David: The Haganah’s Illegal Arms Procurement Network in the United States, 1945-49,” Journal of Palestine Studies 36, no. 4 (July 1, 2007): 22–32, https://doi.org/10.1525/jps.2007.36.4.22.

6Calhoun, “Arming David,” 25.

7Calhoun, “Arming David,” 26.

8“Marina Request Rouses Protest,” Miami News, October 31, 1958.

9Robert Rockaway, “Gangsters for Zion,” Tablet, April 18, 2018, https://www.tabletmag.com/sections/arts-letters/articles/gangsters-for-zion.

10Michael Feldberg and American Jewish Historical Society, Blessings of Freedom: Chapters in American Jewish History (NJ: KTAV Publishing House, 2002), 223.

11“Federal Bureau of Narcotics Memo on Joseph Zicarelli,” Doug Valentine Drug War documents, April 1, 1961, http://archive.org/details/DougValentineDrugWarDocuments.

12Scott M. Deitche, Garden State Gangland: The Rise of the Mob in New Jersey (Lanham: Rowman & Littlefield, 2018), 84.

13Jonathan Marshall, Dark Quadrant: Organized Crime, Big Business, and the Corruption of American Democracy: From Truman to Trump, ePub (Lanham: Rowman & Littlefield, 2021), 107.

14Valentine, “Memo on Joseph Zicarelli.”

15Gordon Thomas and Martin Dillon, Robert Maxwell, Israel’s Superspy: The Life and Murder of a Media Mogul (New York: Carroll and Graf, 2003), 54.

16Calhoun, “Arming David,” 30.

17See, for example, Ignacio Klich, “Latin America, the United States and the Birth of Israel: The Case of Somoza’s Nicaragua,” Journal of Latin American Studies 20, no. 2 (November 1988): 389–432, https://doi.org/10.1017/S0022216X00003047.

18Calhoun, “Arming David,” 27.

19Margo Gutierrez, “Israel in Central America,” Middle East Research and Information Project, June 1986, https://merip.org/1986/05/israel-in-central-america/.

20Jim Hougan, Spooks: The Haunting of America: The Private Use of Secret Agents (New York: Morrow, 1978), 172.

21Hougan, Spooks,172.

22Sandy Smith, “Monsters in the Marketplace: Money, Muscle, Murder,” Life, September 8, 1967.

23Smith, “Monsters.”

24Marshall, Dark Quadrant, 204.

25Dennis Eisenberg, Uri Dan, and Eli Landau, Meyer Lansky: Mogul of the Mob (New York: Paddington Press, 1979), 266.

26Marshall. Dark Quadrant, 247-48.

27Jonathan Marshall, “Nixon’s Caribbean Milieu, 1950–1968,” Dark Quadrant Appendix, https://rowman.com/WebDocs/Dark_Quadrant_Appendix_Nixon-Caribbean.pdf.

28Marshall, “Nixon’s Caribbean Milieu.”

29Peter Dale Scott, Deep Politics and the Death of JFK (University of California Press, 1996), 202-5.

30Alan A. Block, Masters of Paradise: Organized Crime and the Internal Revenue Service in the Bahamas (Routledge, 1991), 51.

31R. T. Naylor, Hot Money and the Politics of Debt (New York: Linden Press, 1987), 34; Jonathan Marshall, The Lebanese Connection: Corruption, Civil War, and the International Drug Traffic (California: Stanford University Press, 2012), 49.

32Marshall, The Lebanese Connection, 50.

33Marshall, The Lebanese Connection, 53.

34Sen. John Kerry and Sen. Hank Brown, The BCCI Affair: A Report to the Committee on Foreign Relations, 102nd Congress 2nd Session US Senate, December 1992, 299.

35Marshall, The Lebanese Connection, 43.

36Marshall, The Lebanese Connection, 134.

37Douglas Valentine, The Strength of the Wolf: The Secret History of the War on Drugs, ePub (Verso, 2004), 407.

38Marshall, The Lebanese Connection, 47.

39Hougan, Spooks, 213.

40Henrik Krüger, The Great Heroin Coup: Drugs, Intelligence & International Fascism (Montreal: Black Rose Books, 1980), 88.

41Valentine, The Strength of the Wolf, 261.

42Hougan, Spooks, 213.

43Jonathan Beaty and S.C. Gwynne, The Outlaw Bank: A Wild Ride Into the Secret Heart of BCCI (Ramjac Inc, 1991), 309.

44Alan A. Block and Constance Weaver, All is Clouded by Desire: Global Banking, Money Laundering, and International Organized Crime, (Praeger, 2004), 27.

45“Top Ten Fugitives - Global Con Artist and Ruthless Criminals,” FBI, October 2009, https://www.fbi.gov/news/stories/2009/october/mogilevich_102109.

46The use of Safra’s Republic National Bank by Russian organized crime interests, some of which involving Mogilevich, is discussed in Constance and Weaver, All is Clouded By Desire; Robert I. Friedman, Red Mafiya: How the Russian Mob Invaded America (Little, Brown & Company, 2000).

47Block and Weaver, All is Clouded by Desire, 8.

48Rockaway, “Gangsters for Zion.”

49Marc Goldberg, “Teddy Kollek: The British Spy Who Never Was,” Tablet, December 15, 2020.

50“Baruch Rappaport, the man who founded and continues to support the Faculty of Medicine at the Technion, speaks for the first time in the media,” Hayadan, October 19, 2004.

51“Baruch Rappaport.”

52Jonathan Nitzan and Shimshon Bichler, The Global Political Economy of Israel (Pluto Books, 2002), 116.

53Noga Tarnopolsky, “Ehud Barak: I Visited Epstein’s Island But Never Met Any Girls,” The Daily Beast, July 15, 2019, https://www.thedailybeast.com/israels-ehud-barak-i-visited-epsteins-island-but-never-met-any-girls.

54“Yehuda Assia Banker to the Mossad, Dies at 99,” Haaretz, September 3, 2016.

55Avner Cohen, Israel and the Bomb (Columbia University Press, 1998), 70.

56Jonathan Marshall, “‘Bayonne Joe’ Zicarelli, Irving Davidson, and Israel,” https://rowman.com/WebDocs/Dark_Quadrant_Addendum_to_Chapter_4.pdf

57American Bank & Trust appeared in the strange story of Argentine financier David Graiver, who controlled the bank at the time of its collapse in 1976. Graiver had maintained a bank in Belgium called Banque pour L’ Amerique du Sud (BAS), which according to Barron’s journalist Richard Karp was simply a money laundering operation. In order to finance BAS, Graiver took control of American Bank & Trust and systematically looted it via the aid of roughly 13 dummy companies set up to create a byzantine maze of money flows. In the end, both BAS and American Bank fell apart, and Graiver allegedly died in a fiery plane crash near Mexico City – though suspicions abounded that he faked his death. It was subsequently revealed that Graiver may have been the banker for the Montoneros, a left-wing Peronist paramilitary organization. See Richard Karp, “Hands Across the Sea: Millions Were Looted from the American Bank & Trust,” Barron’s, December 27, 1976; Steven Rattner, “Financial Intrigue, Mystery Shroud American Bank and Trust Collapse,” New York Times, September 25, 1976, https://www.nytimes.com/1976/09/25/archives/financial-intrigue-mystery-shroud-american-bank-and-trust-collapse.html; Karen DeYoung, “‘Argentine Watergate’: Charges of Guerrilla High Finance,” Washington Post, April 18, 1977, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1977/04/18/argentine-watergate-charges-of-guerrilla-high-finance/5e3b5b2b-d260-48da-a284-9ea9b4b33825/.

58Marshall, Dark Quadrant, 185-86.
59Block and Weaver, All is Clouded By Desire, 9.
60See Atlantic Steamers Supply Co., Inc against Manuel E. Kulukundis, New York Supreme Court
61“Margaret P. Grafeld Declassified,” US Department of State, May 22, 2009, https://archive.org/details/State-Dept-cable-1977-243051/page/n1/mode/2up?q=Weisscredit&view=theater.
62“4 Swiss Bankers Convicted,” New York Times, March 1, 1979, https://www.nytimes.com/1979/03/01/archives/4-swiss-bankers-convicted.html.
63Steven Greenhouse, “A Secret Emperor of Oil and Shipping,” New York Times, February 4, 1988, https://www.nytimes.com/1988/02/04/world/a-secret-emperor-of-oil-and-shipping.html
64Greenhouse, “Secret Emperor.”
65“Liberia’s Flags of Convenience,” Al-Jazeera, November 15, 2011, https://www.aljazeera.com/news/2011/10/15/liberias-flags-of-convenience.
66“The New Bank of Liberia,” Liberia Today, Vol. 3-4, 1954, 8.
67On Bank of Monrovia and First National City Bank, see Area Handbook for Liberia, US Government Printing Office, 1964, 340. The influence of the Rockefeller family at First National City came via the presence of James Stillman Rockefeller. He went to work for the bank in 1930s, was elected president in 1952, and became its chairman in 1959. Wolfgang Saxon, “James S. Rockefeller, 102, Dies; Was a Banker and ‘24 Olympian,” New York Times, August 11, 2004, https://www.nytimes.com/2004/08/11/business/james-s-rockefeller-102-dies-was-a-banker-and-a-24-olympian.html#:~:text=Rockefeller%20joined%20the%20National%20City,as%20a%20world%20financial%20power.
68See Ian Smillie, Blood on the Stone: Greed, Corruption and War in the Global Diamond Trade (Anthem Press, 2010). FO a historical background on the role of Israel in the global diamond trade and diamond cutting industry, see David De Vries, Diamonds and War: State, Capital and Labor in British-Ruled Palestine (Berghahn Books, 2010).
69Libbie Park and Frank Park, The Anatomy of Big Business (Progress Books, 1973), 71-77.
70Park and Park, Anatomy of Big Business, 21.
71Michele Metta, “Gershon Peres (brother of former Israeli president) was a member of the CMC,” Anti-Diplomatico, November 22, 2017, https://www.lantidiplomatico.it/dettnews-esclusivo_ad_gershon_peres_fratello_dellex_presidente_israeliano__stato_membro_del_cmc_il_centro_occulto_della_cia_legato_allomicidio_kennedy/6_22228/; Michele Metta, On the Trail of Clay Shaw: The Italian Undercover CIA and Mossad Station and the Assassination of JFK (Independent, 2019), 141–42.
72For an overview of Jim Garrison’s interest in Clay Shaw and Shaw’s ties to the CIA, see Joan Mellen, “Clay Shaw Unmasked: The Garrison Case Corroborated” http://joanmellen.com/wordpress/2013/10/21/clay-shaw-unmasked-the-garrison-case-corroborated/2/.
73One of Metta’s most fascinating discoveries is that board meetings of CMC and its subsidiary, the Italo-American Hotel Corporation, were held in the law offices of Robert Ascarelli at 72/A Piazza di Spagna, in Rome. When Licio Gelli was first organizing the infamous P2 Masonic Lodge, which operated as a sort of shadow government within Italy, the early meetings took place in these same law offices. Gelli stated that “In the first phase we celebrated the initiation rituals [to P2] in Ascarelli’s office, at

number 72 in Piazza di Spagna, on the third floor… As it wasn't a Masonic headquarters, we used a portable temple which we carried in a briefcase that we opened on the table… For each initiation, I provided Ascarelli with the new Freemason's curriculum vitae, so that when the ceremony was finished he could talk to the neophyte about his job and his experiences." Metta, On the Trail of Clay Shaw, 39.
74Metta, On the Trail of Clay Shaw, 143.
75Metta, On the Trail of Clay Shaw, 142. One of the directors of Banque Belgo-Centrade was one Arturo Klein, described by Metta as a 'Chilean right-winger'. Interestingly, a heavily-redacted CIA report published in a US Senate Subcommittee on International Operations n assassination plot against Jimmy Carter. "A Staff Report Concerning Activities of Foreign Intelligence Agencies in the United States," Subcommittee on International Operations, Senate Committee on Foreign Relations, January 18, 1979, 118-122.
76"Louis M. Bloomfield," Canadian Jewish Chronicle, April 7, 1967.
77"Israel Day Observation Here Monday," The Gazette (Montreal), May 25, 1965; Matitiahu Hindes, "Israel and the Sea," Wisconsin Jewish Chronicle, September 23, 1949.
78Bernard Reich and David H. Goldberg, Historical Dictionary of Israel (Maryland: Rowman and Littlefield, 2016), 558.
79Letter from George H.W. Bush to Louis M. Bloomfield, February 11, 1976, https://www.kennedysandking.com/images/2019/kowalski-metta/exhibit-9.pdf.
80Maurice Phillips, "Revelations from the Bloomfield Archives (4): Permindex, Bloomfield Linked to Freemasons and Rothschilds," I Have Some Secrets For You, April 14, 2010, http://somesecretsforyou.blogspot.com/2010/04/revelations-from-bloomfield-archives-4.html.
81"Cable from Louis M. Bloomfield to Tibor Rosenbaum," July 12, 1961. https://www.kennedysandking.com/images/2019/kowalski-metta/exhibit-8.pdf.
82"Dov Biegun Dead at 66," Jewish Telegraphic Agency, January 22, 1980, https://www.jta.org/archive/dov-biegun-dead-at-66.
83"Realty Equity Official, Others Indicted on Charges Tied to Sale of Firm's Notes," Wall Street Journal, April 14, 1969.
84Randall Cannon and Michael Gerry, Stardust International Raceway: Motorsports Meets the Mob in Vegas, 1965-1971 (McFarland, Incorporated, 2018), 346.
85Maurice Phillips, "The Permindex Papers II: Canadian Attorneys, Venezuelan Corporation, and French Rothschild," I Have Some Secrets for You, May 16, 2010, http://somesecretsforyou.blogspot.com/2010/05/permindex-papers-ii.html.
86"Israeli Corporation - Rosenbaum - International Credit Bank Controversy," Wikileaks (Israel Tel Aviv, September 30, 1974), https://wikileaks.org/plusd/cables/1974TELAV05552_b.html.
87Clyde H. Farnsworth, "Israeli Investing Scandal Unveiled By Rothschild," New York Times, October 19, 1974, https://www.nytimes.com/1974/10/19/archives/israeli-investing-scandal-unveiled-by-rothschild.html.
88Oil and Petroleum Year Book, Volume 58, 1967, p. 58; Report of the Royal Commission Appointed to Inquire Into the Failure of Atlantic Acceptance Corporation, Limited, September 12, 1969, vol. 3, p. 1484, https://archive.org/details/reportofroyatlant03onta.
89"Seven Oil Companies Prepare to Drill in Israel, Agency Reports," Jewish Telegraphic Agency, September 2, 1953, https://www.jta.org/archive/seven-oil-companies-prepare-to-drill-in-israel-agency-reports.
90Alan Philips, "The Inner Workings of a Crime Cartel," Macleans, October 5, 1963, https://archive.macleans.ca/article/1963/10/5/the-inner-workings-of-the-crime-cartel.
91FBN Memo on Joseph Zicarelli.
92"Cable from Louis M. Bloomfield to Joseph Kowalaski," June 27, 1959, https://archive.org/details/bloomfield_201907/Tri%20Continental%20Pipe%20Lines/mode/1up.
93Galina Nikitina, The State of Israel: A Historical, Economic and Political Study (Progress Publishers, 1973), 290.
94Nikitina, The State of Israel, 292.

95Metta, On the Trail of Clay Shaw, 167-168.
96Metta, On the Trail of Clay Shaw, 167.
97Metta, On the Trail of Clay Shaw, 167. Further information on the relationship between Israeli intelligence services, Soustelle and the OAS can be found in Sylvia K. Crosbie, A Tacit Alliance: France and Israel from Suez to the Six Day War (Princeton University Press, 2015), 140-41. The Italian newspaper Paesa Sera reported that Permindex's president, Ferenc Nagy, had helped finance the activities of Soustelle and the OAS. "The Kennedy Conspiracy," Paesa Sera, date unknown, http://www.kenrahn.com/Marsh/Scans/Permindex.txt. Ferenc Nagy's papers archives at Colombia University libraries in New York City show extensive correspondence between him and figures like Tibor Rosenbaum, William Donovan, and a "Dr. Rappaport." It is unknown whether or not Dr. Rappaport is Bruce Rappaport.

98Metta, On the Trail of Clay Shaw, 170.
99Mario Ugazzi, "The Mysterious Activity in Rome of the Businessman Prosecuted for the Kennedy Assassination," Paese Sera, date unknown, http://www.kenrahn.com/Marsh/New_Scans/CMC.txt
100Ugazzi, "The Mysterious Activity in Rome."

CHAPTER 4

ROY COHN'S "FAVOR BANK"

"THE CITY'S PREEMINENT MANIPULATOR"

Roy Cohn, whose public reputation ranged from "boy wonder" to sleazy mob lawyer over the course of his lifetime, was one of the most influential political operators in the country for the better part of three decades. Not only would he serve as Joseph McCarthy's right-hand man during the height of the Red Scare, he would also help secure electoral victories for prominent politicians in New York and beyond, including for US presidents. Years after his death, Cohn's protégé, New York real estate billionaire Donald Trump, would serve as the 45th president of the United States.

Yet, for someone who was so influential, both his admirers and detractors have declined to dig too deeply into his career and dealings, particularly those that are most unsavory. Part of this may owe to Cohn's apparently contradictory nature – he was an anti-communist crusader that closely collaborated with the FBI as well as a close confidant, business associate, and legal counsel to some of the biggest names in organized crime. Perhaps for that reason, Cohn's story is central when detailing the rise of the networks that are the focus of this book.

Roy Cohn was a man once called New York City's "preeminent manipulator," precisely because he was "a one-man network of contacts that have reached into City Hall, the mob, the press, the Archdiocese, the disco-jet set, the courts and the backrooms of the Bronx and Brooklyn where judges are made and political contributions are arranged."[1] In addition, Cohn's ability to manipulate the press, politics and much more may have been partially due to his ability to wield blackmail in a way similar that practiced by his close associate and friend, J. Edgar Hoover. This particular relationship, aspects of which were discussed in Chapter [2], may explain why, long after Cohn's death in 1986, much of the FBI file on Cohn – believed to be over 4,000 pages long in total – has still not been made publicly available despite efforts by Cohn biographers and others over the years.2

Cohn's background and the earlier parts of his career serve as a useful window into how the world of "above-board" and "legitimate" business and politics has intermingled with the criminal underworld throughout the decades and how blackmail was critical to Cohn's ability to successfully navigate those murky, grey areas between the legal and the illegal.

AL COHN AND THE NEW YORK MACHINE

Roy Cohn's father, Albert Cohn, was the son of immigrants from Poland, whose limited financial means forced Albert to skip high school. He eventually attended City College, working his way through university, and graduated in 1903. Afterwards, he attended New York Law School, teaching high school classes simultaneously, and became a practicing lawyer in 1908.[3] In 1910, Albert Cohn became heavily involved in the Democratic Party clubhouses based in the Bronx, which involved "attending the once-a-week meetings, working the precincts and winning the district leader's favor," according to Roy Cohn biographer Nicholas von Hoffman.[4] Albert's connections to the Bronx Democrats grew strong enough that he was appointed assistant district attorney for the Bronx by 1917.[5] At this point, Albert or "Al" Cohn sought to become a judge but lacked the money that was necessary to secure such a position. This was because the party required payments from the men it put on the ballot as a form of fundraising, and the more influential the position, the more money was required. Cohn lacked such wealth but continued to ascend through the ranks of New York's legal scene, becoming chief district attorney in 1923 under Bronx County District Attorney Edward Glennon.

Around the time that Al Cohn had gone as far as he could without having the money required for the judgeship he coveted, he met Dora Marcus, the daughter of a wealthy banking family. According to friends of Al Cohn and members of the Marcus family, the relationship between Cohn and Dora Marcus quickly led to an arranged marriage, as Dora "was the ugly duckling daughter they couldn't marry off."[6] According to interviews given by members of the Marcus family, which aired in Matt Tyrnauer's 2019 documentary Where's My Roy Cohn?, Dora's father Joseph S. Marcus essentially offered Albert Cohn the money and influence necessary to become a judge in exchange for his marrying Dora.[7] They married in January 1924, and, a year later, Albert Cohn was appointed Bronx County judge by New York governor Al Smith.[8] After their marriage, Al and Dora argued about where to live, with Al initially winning, securing their place in the Bronx. Al's desire to stay in the Bronx was motivated by his desire to stay connected to the political connections he had developed, where he handled the party's "Jewish patronage" on behalf of Bronx party boss Ed Flynn.[9] Al Cohn is regarded as a protégé of Flynn's who came to wield "substantial power in the Democratic Party," according to author Robert Shogan.[10]

In 1921, Cohn created the Pontiac Democratic Club at Flynn's behest in order to weaken the political base of a Flynn rival, Patrick Kane.[11] The club later became hugely influential in local elections. Years later, Roy Cohn would describe his father as Flynn's "chief lieutenant" during this period while his mother Dora would host annual dinner parties at their home in Flynn's honor. As a judge, Al Cohn was incredibly loyal to Flynn and the Democratic Party. According to historian Christopher Elias, "When the party needed Al to rule a certain way for reasons political or personal, he followed through. When they needed his support for a specific candidate, he gave it. When the son of a friend and fellow Democratic operative killed a young woman in an automobile accident, Al made a late-night visit to the police station and 'straightened it out.'"[12]

Al's service to the party and to Flynn paid off, with New York governor Franklin Delano Roosevelt appointing Cohn to the Bronx Supreme Court in 1929, making him Roosevelt's first judicial appointment.[13] At the time and for years afterward, Flynn was one of Roosevelt's most senior strategists. Eight years later, Albert Cohn was appointed to the State Supreme Court's Appellate Division.[14] Like many of the networks already explored in this book, the political machine in which Al Cohn was intimately nestled was interwoven with the city's criminal underworld.

Some modern-day mainstream sources trace the origin of organized crime's influence on New York's Democratic Party to 1931 when Lucky Luciano sent two hired guns to intimidate Harry Perry, the co-leader of Manhattan's 2nd Assembly District, demanding he step down in favor of Albert Marinelli.[15] However, the same crime syndicate had cozy ties with labor unions, a key component of the Democratic Party's power base, going back to the 1920s – an arrangement for which mobster Arnold Rothstein is credited.[16]

Similarly, Marinelli's ties to the mob also dated back to the 1920s, when he owned a trucking company that Lucky Luciano managed during the Prohibition era. Luciano had been responsible for helping Marinelli become the first Italian-American district leader at Tammany Hall well before the incident with Perry, which speaks to organized crime's earlier influence over New York politics through Tammany. Yet, after Perry stepped aside and ceded his position to Marinelli, the National Crime Syndicate's influence on New York City politics, particularly the Democratic Party, became "brazen," according to decades-old reports in New York magazine, as the move gave Marinelli – and by proxy, Luciano – control over who was chosen to serve on grand juries as well as the counting of votes in local elections.[17]

The influence of the National Crime Syndicate on top New York politicians was considerable at the time when Albert Cohn was deeply involved in Democratic affairs. For instance, Meyer Lansky is known to have donated to the political campaigns of Al Smith, the governor of New York for much of the 1920s.[18] Smith was a top figure with Tammany Hall, the political powerhouse of New York Democratic politics that controlled Democratic Party nominations and became synonymous with corruption. Smith is regarded as one of the main protégés of Tammany boss Charles M. Murphy, who had worked to improve the organization's reputation until his death in 1924. However, Murphy's success in cleaning up Tammany's public image did not extend long past his death, largely because many of the top names at the organization had remained closely enmeshed with the city's criminal underworld.

During the now-infamous effort of the National Crime Syndicate to rig the Democratic National Convention in 1932 in favor Franklin Delano Roosevelt, it was a tearful Al Smith, who had personally warned Luciano, Lansky, and Costello that Roosevelt would betray them.[19] Smith specifically warned that Roosevelt would break his promise to restrain an official inquiry into criminal activity in New York City, a promise Roosevelt had made to appease organized criminal interests in order to secure his nomination. This anecdote was relayed separately by both Lansky and Luciano.[20] Smith's warning, which the crime bosses had ignored, turned out to be true, as Roosevelt allowed the inquiry, led by Judge Samuel Seabury, to advance after his nomination was cemented. The inquiry soon exposed extensive criminal activity being conducted by Tammany politicians, leading several top officials to resign. Jimmy Walker, the Tammany-backed mayor of New York City and Al Smith's own protégé, not only resigned as mayor but fled to Paris to avoid charges.[21]

Regarding the 1932 convention, Luciano later stated that it was commonly known at the time that his criminal enterprise controlled most of New York City's delegates to the convention, which speaks to their considerable influence over the party's dealings in the city during that period.[22] Seabury and Roosevelt's combined determination to clean up the Democratic Party's image in New York, however, saw Tammany's influence wane due to its entrenched association with organized crime becoming public knowledge. The National Crime Syndicate's influence on New York politics nevertheless remained strong well past Tammany's fall from grace.

The elder Cohn remained deeply involved in the Democratic political apparatus during this period and, as mentioned, was specifically close to Edward Flynn, who had tightly controlled the Democratic Party in the Bronx since 1922. Flynn, who was another protégé of Tammany Hall boss Charles Murphy but not a Tammany member himself, became favored by Roosevelt in the wake of the Seabury inquiry, supposedly because Flynn had kept his district free of corruption.[23] An argument can be made, however, that Flynn had merely kept his district and his own reputation free from a public association with corruption, as Flynn later moved to protect the mob-linked politician William O'Dwyer. According to Robert Shogan, O'Dwyer was one of the Cohn family's "famous family friends."[24]

The rise of William O'Dwyer, not unlike that of Thomas Dewey, was based on his reputation as a crusader against organized crime, including Meyer Lansky's Murder Inc., and specifically his role in the takedown of syndicate boss Louis "Lepke" Buchalter. It has been disputed, however, as to whether the reality of the Buchalter case was the same as what was publicly reported (i.e., ex-cop O'Dwyer bravely taking on the mob) or, rather, the masking of the consolidation of mob power into fewer hands.

As noted by Sally Denton and Roger Morris in The Money and the Power, it was Lansky himself who had arranged for Buchalter to be arrested by the FBI and the Federal Bureau of Narcotics in 1937. Of this alliance, Denton and Morris write that the "betrayal [of Buchalter] at once removed a Lansky rival, gratified Hoover and FBN director Harry Anslinger in their mutual obsession with popular image, and further compromised federal law enforcement, which was growing ever more dependent on informers and double agents for its successes."[25] Both Dewey and O'Dwyer prosecuted Buchalter with great zeal, gaining considerable recognition for themselves in the process.[26] The man they took down, however, had already been consigned to death by both his "friends" and the government before Dewey and O'Dwyer were even involved, which casts doubt on the narrative that Buchalter's prison sentences and eventual death sentence were merely the result of Dewey's and O'Dwyer's prosecutorial abilities.

Further doubt regarding the official story of this incident is raised when one considers that both star prosecutors had their own ties to the same syndicate, with Dewey's ties to Mary Carter Paint/Resorts International having already been noted in Chapter 1. In the case of O'Dwyer, he was meeting with Frank Costello the same year that he secured Buchalter's death sentence.[27] O'Dwyer ran for mayor of New York in 1941 and lost, but he was later elected in 1945, largely on his anticorruption public image. However, an investigation launched by an attorney O'Dwyer had once hired and who was successfully elected to O'Dwyer's old position as Brooklyn District Attorney, Miles McDonald, brought that image – and O'Dwyer's career – crashing down. In 1950, McDonald began investigating Harry Gross, who had been running a multi-million-dollar gambling empire in the city. The investigation into Gross grew rapidly with McDonald discovering a series of other related rackets throughout the city. Most of those rackets led back to one man, James Moran – the man who had served as O'Dwyer's right-hand man when O'Dwyer served as a judge, as a district attorney, and now as the city's mayor.

Once word got out that McDonald was onto Moran, heat started to be applied from the very top, with O'Dwyer denouncing the man he had once hired and calling his investigation a "witch hunt."[28] Soon afterward, Ed Flynn called President Harry Truman and urgently requested a meeting. No formal record of the meeting exists, but it is believed that the topic was the implications that McDonald's investigation would have, not just for New York City but for the Democratic Party and Truman himself. Two days later, Truman met with the head of New York's Democratic Party and a close associate of Flynn's, Paul Fitzpatrick. He then met with Eleanor Roosevelt, whose influence on the New York Democratic Party was still considerable. According to journalist David Samuels:

> What McDonald's investigation would reveal, Flynn and Fitzpatrick knew, was that Mayor O'Dwyer was the frontman for a system of citywide corruption that was administered by Moran, the mayor's closest political associate. Worse, they knew – as the public would find out the following August, from the public testimony of a gangster named Irving Sherman – that O'Dwyer and Moran had been meeting personally with the syndicate boss Frank Costello as far back as 1941. And as a former chairman of the Democratic National Committee, Flynn also knew that the urban political operations that had helped elect Franklin Roosevelt to the presidency four times, and Truman once, were based on a system of unsavory alliances. Putting O'Dwyer on the stand would put the Democratic Party in New York – and elsewhere – on trial. One way to keep O'Dwyer safe from McDonald's grand jury was to get him out of the country.[29]

This is precisely what happened, as Truman appointed O'Dwyer to be ambassador to Mexico, which allowed O'Dwyer to avoid charges and further scrutiny. Ed Flynn's close ally and accomplice in helping orchestrate this deal to protect O'Dwyer, Paul Fitzpatrick, thanked Truman in a letter: "Your recent announcement of the pending appointment of the Ambassador to Mexico, again proves to me your deep understanding of many problems and your kindness in rendering assistance.… May I just say thanks."[30]

Though O'Dwyer had escaped from McDonald's investigation, he was forced to return to the US from Mexico City to testify before the Kefauver Committee on his alleged dealings with organized crime in March 1951. During his testimony, he did not deny having visited Frank Costello's home in 1941. He also admitted that he had appointed the friends and relatives of powerful mobsters to public offices and became evasive when asked how much he had known about their ties to organized crime at the time. A subsequent report issued by the committee stated that "during Mr. O'Dwyer's term of office as district attorney of Kings County between 1940 and 1942, and his occupancy of the mayoralty from 1946 to 1950, neither he nor his appointees took any effective action against the top echelons of the gambling, narcotics, water-front, murder, or book-making rackets," while his time as mayor had "contributed to the growth of organized crime, racketeering, and gangsterism in New York City."[31]

Less than a year later, O'Dwyer's right-hand man, James Moran, was convicted on twenty-three counts of extortion for his role in the corruption McDonald had exposed. If Flynn was indeed a Bronx political boss who was free of scandal and corruption as some historians claim, it is hard to justify why he would intervene so dramatically – directly involving the White House – in order to protect the corruption that had enabled O'Dwyer. Rather, he stepped in to protect the system of "unsavory alliances" that had given his party its power, including its obvious organized crime ties. There is also the fact that a young Roy Cohn had been considerably involved with and worked in O'Dwyer's election campaign, bragging that he had been the one who had found dirt on O'Dwyer's Republican challenger.[32] The mob connections and the use of "dirt" and blackmail in politics is something that would later define much of Roy Cohn's career and, ultimately, his legacy.

UNCLE BERNIE'S BANK

Though Roy Cohn was undeniably born into privilege given his father's influence and connections, it can easily be argued that much of Albert Cohn's own success and clout had been due to marrying into the Marcus family. Roy Cohn's mother, Dora Marcus, hailed from an elite family in New York's Jewish community that was later mired in controversy and scandal in connection with their Wall Street activities during the Great Depression.

Dorothy "Dora" Marcus was the daughter of Joseph S. Marcus, who had created the Bank of the United States. Marcus, a Russian-Jewish immigrant, started his career in the garment industry before entering the world of banking, first creating the Public Bank of New York in 1906. He disposed of his interest in that bank in 1912 and chartered the Bank of the United States a year later. One of Marcus' reasons for doing so was apparently related to problems at the Public Bank that had resulted from Marcus' hiring of

William Koelsch as cashier. Koelsch's presence at the bank caused "friction" among the bank's directors, according to the New York Times.[33]

Marcus, Koelsch, and a business partner of Marcus' named Saul Singer came together to create the Bank of the United States soon afterward, but they had different men officially file the bank's incorporation. This was allegedly done in order to hide their involvement to avoid alerting Public Bank's leadership that Marcus and Koelsch were the real forces behind their new competitor. Marcus' new bank was the subject of immediate controversy, as his new for-profit enterprise was to be located just a stone's throw from Public Bank, leading Public Bank's leadership to complain that "there was no public necessity for such additional banking facilities in that particular block" of the street.[34]

In addition, Public Bank leadership objected to the name of Marcus' new bank, arguing that the name "Bank of the United States" sounded too much like some historical government-linked institutions, such as that which had served as a prototype for a central bank during the days of President Andrew Jackson. This, they argued, could give the false impression of a direct US government connection to Marcus' bank, particularly to the uninformed. This point was made explicit in a letter written on behalf of Public Bank by Samuel I. Frankenstein and sent to the Senate Banking Committee.

Frankenstein, according to a report on the letter published by the New York Times, argued that "ignorant foreigners … would believe that the United States Government was interested in this bank and that it was a branch of the United States Treasury in Washington, and if the bank should fail these poor depositors would bewail the fact that they had entrusted their scant savings to the United States government."[35] He added, "It must be evident to any impartial mind that the motive and purpose in selecting this very peculiar and misleading name for a bank to be located in a neighborhood almost exclusively inhabited by foreigners, especially when so many other appropriate names could have been so easily adopted, was not a laudable one. This name was not selected through pure accident."[36] TIME would prove Frankenstein very prescient.

Despite these concerns, the Bank of the United States was granted its charter by George C. Van Tuyl Jr., NY State Superintendent of Banks, who subsequently became become a vice president and later a director of the bank. The Bank of the United States, as Frankenstein had expected, immediately worked to attract business and deposits from the local Jewish immigrant community. Starting with a modest $100,000 in working capital, it experienced moderate growth and had a total of five branches by 1925. Given its Jewish ownership and efforts to cater directly to Jews, it became a point of pride for the New York Jewish community, which "eagerly embraced the new bank, opening savings accounts and borrowing money for fledgling businesses," according to historian Beth S. Wenger.[37]

Legal proceedings were, however, filed against the bank in 1926, requiring an independent examination of the bank's books. The case was dismissed by NY State Supreme Court judge Joseph S. Proskauer, allegedly because the plaintiffs had failed to "make out a case."[38] Yet, there are reasons to doubts Proskauer's objectivity in the case, as he was connected to the same political machine as Albert Cohn. For instance, Proskauer had been appointed by New York governor Al Smith, whose ties to organized crime have already been discussed. Proskauer had also served as Smith's key political advisor during campaigns bankrolled by Lansky, which took place while Proskauer served on the NY State Supreme Court and subsequently the Appellate Court. Proskauer was appointed chair of the New York State Crime Commission in the early 1950s, despite his past conflicts of interest.[39]

That commission had been created at the behest of Governor Thomas Dewey, who, as mentioned in Chapter 1, had released Lucky Luciano from prison after his involvement in Operation Underworld and who was also closely tied to both John Foster Dulles and Allen Dulles. Allen Dulles was serving as CIA director at the time of the commission's activities and as the Agency's ties to organized crime deepened. Soon after the Crime Commission's work was completed, Dewey's former chief assistant, Paul Lockwood, in 1955 became a top executive at Lewis Rosenstiel's moblinked Schenley Industries, while Dewey himself officially became a business associate of Lansky frontmen in 1958.[40] Lansky had also previously donated to Dewey's unsuccessful bid for the US presidency in 1944.[41] The Proskauer-led Crime Commission was insignificant in terms of its end results, especially in comparison to the impact the Kefauver Committee had had the year before, when Dewey had been called to testify due to his suspected mob ties.[42] This suggests that Proskauer, like Albert Cohn, Ed Flynn and others, could be counted on to protect certain influential actors within the system of "unsavory alliances" that was woven throughout the city.

In addition to Proskauer's own apparent conflicts of interest, there is the added fact that Joseph Marcus had promised Albert Cohn a judgeship in exchange for his marrying his daughter Dora, which further reveals the influence of the Marcus family within legal and judicial circles, as well as with the politicians who appointed judges in New York during this period. Albert Cohn had been appointed as judge for Bronx County by Al Smith a year before this case was brought against Marcus' bank, in 1925.[43]

Joseph Marcus died in 1927, giving his son Bernard K. Marcus – Roy Cohn's "Uncle Bernie" – complete control over the bank's affairs.[44] Bernard Marcus had already been intimately involved with the bank's leadership since 1919, when his father had turned over active management of the bank to him. After his father's death, Bernard was named president of the bank and went on an aggressive acquisitions-and-mergers spree, resulting in the bank growing from five branches in 1925 to sixty two in 1930.[45] Two major mergers took place in 1928 followed by two more in 1929, resulting in the Bank of the United States becoming the third-largest bank in New York City by May 1929.[46] The bank became a member of the Federal Reserve of New York, which was greatly influenced by the Warburg brothers, Felix and Paul. Paul Warburg was the main architect of the privately owned Federal Reserve banking system and a powerful force at the central bank during its early years.[47]

Due to the Bank of the United States' apparent success, Bernard was hailed at the time as "a financial wizard who could make dividends sprout from virtually nothing."[48] Yet, it was soon revealed that Bernard Marcus' wizardry was largely the result of fraud and corruption by the Marcuses and Saul Singer, validating the earlier rationale for having the bank investigated, which had been dismissed by Proskauer.

In February 1930, just months after the Black Tuesday stock market crash of October 1929, Bernard Marcus assured shareholders that the bank stood on solid ground.[49] A few months later, the bank began negotiations for its largest merger yet, which would have resulted in their bank managing $1 billion in deposits. The would-be bank was to have been headed by J. Herbert Case, then head of the Federal Reserve Bank of New York, of which the Marcus-run bank was a member.[50] In addition, Goldman Sachs was poised to have "a substantial interest" in the new bank, further underscoring that the merger was set to create another Wall Street behemoth.[51] Terms of the merger were reportedly negotiated in November 1929.[52]

Yet, by December, rumors were proliferating that the Marcus-run bank was insolvent. Nervous investors and depositors, most of whom were Jewish, lined up to withdraw their money on December 10, 1930. By midday, over $2 million had been withdrawn, and tens of thousands of the bank's estimated four hundred thousand clients had gathered outside the doors of the bank's Bronx branch, leading to the police being called to maintain order. The panic quickly spread to other branches, but – by that time – all of the other branches had closed their doors. A massive sell-off of the bank's stock ensued, plunging it to $3 a share, whereas it had stood at $91 the previous year. Bernard Marcus insisted that the bank would reopen following the planned merger. The merger, however, fell through, as clearinghouse banks involved in the deal pulled out after examining the books of the Marcus-run bank.

Superintendent of Banks Joseph Broderick attempted to work with Wall Street's leading bankers to rescue the bank on December 11, 1930, but failed to reach any solution. The governor of New York at the time, Franklin D. Roosevelt, ordered the Bank of the United States closed, which made its failure the largest in US history at the time. An investigation was launched, and the evidence of fraud quickly piled up.

As the investigation began, it became readily apparent that Bernard Marcus and Saul Singer, the bank's vice president, had engaged in illegal activity, including purchasing the bank's stock with depositor funds in order to drive up the stock price.[53] Not only that, but they loaned out over $37 million under suspicious circumstances, including $10 million in mostly unsecured loans to bank directors and their companies, as well as $5.5 million in loans to sixteen insolvent subsidiaries of the bank in the months leading up to its collapse.[54] Marcus and Singer also raided the bank's reserve to finance their own investments in the real estate market.

Public hearings revealed that two months before the bank shut down, officers at the bank had burned a truckload of documents, more than a thousand bundles of papers of bank records, at an incinerator located at the Beresford Apartments, which was owned by a subsidiary of the Bank of the United States.[55] Marcus, in a style that would later be exemplified by his nephew Roy Cohn, fought the investigation of his bank bitterly, even going so far as to refuse to testify and to seek the removal of the lead investigator of the case.[56] Both Marcus and Singer were found guilty of fraud and were sentenced to three years in Sing Sing maximum-security prison, and their appeal was unsuccessful.

According to members of the Marcus family, including Roy's mother Dora, the reason the other banking chieftains of New York had declined to step in to rescue the Bank of the United States had been "anti-Semitism," and editorials appeared in some New York newspapers arguing the same.[57] Per this theory, the Episcopalian J. P. Morgan, the Anglo-Saxon-dominated New York Clearing House, and the German-Jewish bankers – e.g. the Kuhns, Loebs, and Lehmans – had let the Russian-Jewish bankers fail when they could have saved their bank. Dora Marcus referred to these figures as "a dirty anti-Semitic cabal" that sought to destroy her family due to their Russian-Jewish origins.[58]

Other banks, however, have been allowed to fail throughout US history, and "anti-Semitism" was not blamed for those occurrences. In addition, the German-Jewish banking establishment was in part dominated by another powerful family – the Warburgs – with both Felix and Paul Warburg having married into another German-Jewish banking family, the Loebs. In June 1930, just months before the collapse of the Marcus-owned bank, Albert Cohn – Bernard Marcus' brother-in-law – was the guest of honor at a luncheon hosted by Felix Warburg, suggesting that this alleged hatred held by the German-Jewish banking establishment for the Russian-Jewish Marcus family did not exist at the time.[59]

It is perhaps more likely that either the fraud of the Bank of the United States was too enormous or that the German-Jewish banking establishment was disgruntled that such a massive fraud had been perpetrated by a Jewish-owned bank against mostly Jewish depositors. After all, the bank sought to target the Jewish immigrant community through deceptive means from its inception and subsequently committed fraud to rob mostly Jewish immigrants of their money. For example, the bank deliberately advertised its services to the Jewish community in Jewish newspapers and magazines less than a year before its failure at a time when its executives had been engaged in fraudulent activity.[60] In addition, there had been efforts to investigate the bank for fraud earlier, but they had been dismissed with the intervention of Judge Proskauer. That intervention also raises the possibility that powerful interests had been willing to intervene on behalf of the Marcus-owned bank once but would not do so a second time.

Furthermore, Bernard Marcus was pardoned after just twenty-seven months in prison by Herbert Lehman when he was serving as New York governor.[61] Lehman had been one of the judges presiding over Marcus' appeal and was the only one who had argued for the conviction to be overturned.[62] Lehman, who hailed from the German-Jewish Lehman Brothers banking family, was close to Albert Cohn, who had allegedly lobbied Lehman to grant the pardon.[63] If the Lehmans and the rest of the German-Jewish banking establishment had indeed sought to destroy Marcus, it is highly unlikely that Herbert Lehman would have intervened to try to prevent his initial conviction and then intervened again by pardoning Marcus.

The trial and imprisonment of Bernard Marcus had a considerable impact on Roy Cohn, as "Bernie" was his favorite uncle. Roy, like other members of the Marcus family, took the view that the "anti-Semitic cabal" had used Bernard Marcus as a "scapegoat," leading some of his cousins on the Marcus side to claim that it was this view that led Cohn to "fight the establishment."[64] Given other accounts and insights into Roy Cohn's up-bringing, it seems more likely that he just resented the law and felt that it should not apply to him, a sentiment apparently shared by Bernard Marcus, as revealed by his conduct during the investigation and trial related to his role as the president of the Bank of the United States.

On Roy Cohn's maternal side, it was not only his grandfather and uncle who were influential figures in New York (despite their very public fall from grace in the 1930s). His maternal grandmother, Celia Cohen Marcus, was the sister of Joshua Lionel Cowen (born Cohen), who cofounded Lionel Corporation, a producer of model railroads and toy trains. The origins of the prominent toy company lie in Cowen's work for Acme Electric Light company, where he began registering patents for lamps and motors in

1899.[65] That same year, Cowen was awarded a $12,000 contract from the US Navy to design and manufacture fuses to ignite submarine mines.[66] Cowen used the money to finance the creation of Lionel Corporation in 1900. Though Cowen is best known as the long-time and founding president of Lionel Corporation, he was also a director of the Bank of United States at the time of its demise.[67]

While his nephew was sent to Sing Sing, Cowen managed to get off light through the help of Fred Piderit, the special deputy banking superintendent charged with overseeing the liquidation of the Bank of the United States.[68] Piderit's son later became a prominent fixture at the New York Federal Reserve.[69] Cowen ultimately settled for $5,000 (about $107,000 in 2022 dollars), despite having personally attended bank directors' meetings during which many of the fraudulent loans had been approved. He testified that he knew nothing of the bank's criminal activities and learned about its many problems from media reports after its closure. Cowen's avoidance of charges in the case further weakens the theory that the prosecution of Bernard Marcus over the bank's collapse was a plot against the Marcus family perpetrated by other Jewish banking families.

Lionel's influence grew and peaked in the early 1950s when it became the world's largest toy manufacturer.[70] Its glory days faded relatively quickly, and by the end of decade, Cowen and his son Lawrence stepped away from the company, selling their shares to none other than Roy Cohn. Cohn's involvement with and role at the company would subsequently be linked to suspect financial activity and organized crime networks. Friends of Cohn's, including former congressman Neil Gallagher, have alleged that Roy persuaded friends and acquaintances to buy Lionel stock while he privately shorted the firm, resulting in Cohn getting rich while those who had invested at his behest took a financial beating.[71] Cohn also "side-stepped" federal regulations in the late 1950s by borrowing large sums from US and foreign sources to buy Lionel stock.[72] At the time, Cohn had already become enmeshed in business interests tied to mob figures such as Moe Dalitz and Tony Salerno.

Regarding other notable claims about Roy Cohn's family tree, it has been alleged by some, including his biographer Nicholas von Hoffman, that his maternal grandmother, Celia Cohen Marcus, was "deranged," suffering from serious mental issues. One of his uncles on his mother's side, Jesse Marcus, was "either mentally retarded or brain-damaged," which the family speculated was due to the misuse of forceps by the doctor who delivered him, while others suspected a congenital condition. Von Hoffman also reported that some members of the Cohn family thought that Roy Cohn's mother needed to be institutionalized, while others thought something similar but believed that being well-to-do made her eccentricities manageable.[73]

Other members of the Marcus family, including Roy Cohn's cousins, have not made such extreme claims but have said that Dora's neurotic and sociopathic tendencies left an undeniable mark on her son. According to one of his cousins, it all started the day Roy Cohn was born in 1927, with Dora telling Al, "This is my baby. I'm going to bring this child up and you're going to have nothing to say about it."[74]

Though dominated by his mother and having much less contact with his father, Cohn was aware from a young age of their unhappy marriage and was able to play his parents against each other with ease. Bernard Marcus' wife, Libby Marcus, once stated to biographer von Hoffman that Cohn's parents "saw quite differently in ways of discipline and so forth, so Roy was never said no to. He could always find one person on his side, and that's the one he would use." Cohn's Aunt Libby, added, "I don't think there was any [discipline] between Roy and his mother. It was always in a direction of power, influence, recognition, and there was no chance of Roy ever being stymied because he always, always got his way.… It was not a normal relationship."[75]

This permissiveness was, perhaps, the most lasting impact Cohn's mother had on his character. It was also expressed by one of his law partners, who was anonymously cited by von Hoffman as saying, "His doting mother created a person who was totally free of the rules that you and I or most people go by. What will people think, what's the right thing, what does my religion say about this – Roy played by his own set of rules. Whatever he wanted at any given moment was the right thing."[76].

ROY RISING

From a young age, Roy Cohn was known for being adept at "the trade of human calculus, of deal making, swapping, maneuver, and manipulation."[77] By the time he was twelve, for example, he was using his father's political connections to secure men jobs at the post office, collecting a finder's fee. Those who knew him all agree that he felt more comfortable in the presence of powerful businessmen and New York political power-brokers than with children his own age. Despite being so different from other children, Roy Cohn developed a few close childhood friends, some of whom would dramatically impact his career trajectory as well as his later ability to manipulate the media for political gain and for the gain of his clients.

These childhood pals of Cohn's included Si Newhouse Jr., who went on to oversee the Conde Nast empire that now includes Vanity Fair, Vogue, GQ, the New Yorker, and many other publications; Edwin Weisel Jr., who became assistant attorney general under President Lyndon Johnson and whose father was a prominent lawyer in the movie business; and Generoso (Gene) Pope Jr., who eventually ran the National Enquirer. Cohn's Aunt Libby Marcus stated that Roy "had very few contemporary friends, because even as a little boy, if he had a party there would be two youngsters, Generoso Pope [Jr.] and Eddie Weisel, Jr. – those were his two friends. Every time he had a party, he had these two contemporaries and everybody else was somebody in politics or somebody with power. Older. He didn't bother too much [with] people his own age."[78]

Gene, like Roy, had an insatiable interest in politics and, more specifically, the politics of power. He was the favorite son of Generoso Pope Sr., an immigrant who had famously come to the US from Italy essentially penniless and who had risen to the top of New York City's – and then the nation's – concrete industry. Pope Sr. was a controversial man at the time due to his admiration and support for Italian fascism and his ties to Benito Mussolini as well as the Vatican and New York's top mobsters.[79] Pope Sr. was also close to William O'Dwyer, the mob-linked mayor of New York who was also a friend to the Cohn family. Pope Sr. also had the ear of prominent US politicians, including Democratic presidents Franklin D. Roosevelt and Harry Truman as well as Truman's Republican challenger and governor of New York, Thomas Dewey.

Regarding the family's mob ties, Pope Sr. was particularly close to Frank Costello, who he had known since his earliest days in New York and who had shaped the trajectory of his business, Colonial Sand and Stone, by securing the most lucrative city contracts for concrete for Pope's company.[80] The seemingly endless series of sweetheart deals led Colonial to become the largest concrete company in the country and allowed Pope Sr., its head, to become one of the wealthiest, "legitimate" businessmen with intimate organized crime ties.

So close was the tie that Costello – who was the real-life inspiration for Vito Corleone, the main character of the famous Mario Puzo novel The Godfather – was chosen to be Gene Pope Jr.'s actual godfather and served as his guide for years. Gene, after a brief stint working in psychological operations for the CIA, got a loan from Costello to construct his own media empire around the National Enquirer. Gene Pope Jr.'s son, Paul Pope, described Costello's influence on his family as "like a guardian angel, his power felt but unseen."[81]

The mafioso-style "deals" that brought the Pope family to prominence also became their modus operandi. Through his control of the city's concrete industry and the local Italian immigrant voting bloc through his essential monopoly on Italian-language newspapers in New York, Pope was a force that major politicians, and any ambitious politician, could not afford to ignore. He operated through an elaborate system of quid pro quo that was later adopted by Roy Cohn, who called his own version of this system his "favor bank."[82] As Gene Pope Jr. later said of both his and his father's roles in New York – and even national – politics: "We made deals. That's how judges got made, DAs, things like that. That's when you did all your talking. I mean I did everything from fixing parking tickets to making judges."[83]

Cohn, later on in life, reminisced about his closeness to the Pope family, stating that "virtually every Saturday night, we would go out to dinner or have dinner at 1040 Fifth and then Mr. and Mrs. Pope, Gene and I would go see a new Broadway show."[84] According to Gene Pope Jr. and Cohn, Gene Pope Sr.

served as a “mentor” to Cohn, whom he admired for his “magnetic personality.” Cohn later said that he “learned an awful lot about practical politics” from Pope Sr., including the politics of the “favor bank,” and that the mob-linked businessman “had more to do with my incipient political career than any other single person.”[85]

Pope Sr. certainly aided Cohn’s rise in the world of lawfare, having pulled strings to secure the appointment of Irving Saypol as US Attorney for the Southern District of New York (SDNY), where Cohn subsequently served as assistant attorney. According to Cohn, as cited by his biographer Nicholas von Hoffman, Saypol’s appointment as US Attorney was “thanks to the influence of an odoriferous triumvirate” of Pope Sr., Carmine de Sapio of Tammany Hall, and Frank Costello.[86] Saypol’s focus on prosecuting Communists led to Cohn’s now infamous role in the trial of Julius and Ethel Rosenberg and, shortly thereafter, the McCarthy hearings.

It was Roy Cohn’s oddly cozy relationship with J. Edgar Hoover, described in Chapter 2, that was the deciding factor in Cohn’s appointment as Joe McCarthy’s chief counsel during the controversial anti-Communist hearings. The position had nearly gone to Robert F. Kennedy, who was a lifelong rival and bitter enemy of Cohn’s – with Kennedy attempting to nail Cohn on more than one occasion when he was Attorney General during his brother’s presidency. Though Cohn was ruthless and seemingly untouchable as McCarthy’s counsel, having played a pivotal role in destroying many careers and lives during the parallel “Red” and “Lavender” scares, his antics in relation to his work on the committee eventually led to his downfall after he attempted to blackmail the Army in return for preferential treatment for committee consultant and his rumored lover, David Schine. Notably, shortly before Schine became involved with Cohn and McCarthy, his sister, Renee Schine, married Lester Crown, the future Mega Group member and son of the “Supermob”-linked Henry Crown discussed in Chapter 1.[87]

While Cohn’s failed power play with the Army was his most well-known attempt to use blackmail during this period, he was also known to have used blackmail of various sorts to target diplomats, such as Charles Thayer, the US consul general in Munich, Germany, after Thayer’s brother-in-law, Charles Bohlen, was nominated for an ambassadorship by Eisenhower. Both Thayer, but especially Bohlen, were hated by the “McCarthyite right” despite there being no solid evidence of communist affiliations in either case.[88] Cohn had learned that, during a stint in Mexico, Thayer had produced a son with a Mexican woman whom he had briefly married and then divorced. Cohn threatened to inform Thayer’s aged mother of this long-past affair by shoehorning it into the public confirmation hearings of Charles Bohlen, who had been nominated to serve as US ambassador to the Soviet Union. Thayer, fearing that the news would greatly distress his elderly mother, chose to resign from the State Department.[89]

Cohn also likely used blackmail obtained by other means, given that he had already become involved with the Rosenstiel-linked sexual-blackmail operation during this period. As discussed in chapter 2, this operation was allegedly tied to the anti-Communist “hunt” of the period, and its apparent target, homosexual men, were also being “hunted” due to so-called lavender scare. Ironically, one of the main motives behind the lavender scare was the concern that closeted homosexuals were vulnerable to blackmail. Though the idea was that Communists would use this information to subvert homosexuals in the US government, the evidence suggests that it was this specific anti-Communist group with which Cohn was directly affiliated, who were more adept at blackmailing these men. This group was also subversive, given that their top men, homosexuals such as Hoover and Cohn, where entangled with and compromised by organized crime. After all, it had been Hoover’s FBI and the Catholic Church, dominated by Cohn’s pal Cardinal Spellman, that had originally backed and legitimized McCarthy and his now infamous witch hunt.[90]

Like Hoover, Cardinal Spellman, the archbishop of New York from 1939 until his death in 1967, was incredibly powerful. As Gene Pope Jr., Roy Cohn’s lifelong friend, later recalled: “You couldn’t get a job in New York without Spellman’s okay.… Before anybody had a Chinaman’s chance, it had to be cleared by Spellman.… He controlled everything with an iron fist, he controlled the legislature, he controlled the city council. He controlled everything.”[91] Spellman was very much a control freak, having been known to interpret “any sign of opposition to his will as a sign of Communist subversion.”[92] Also like Hoover, Spellman’s power was likely the main reason why he was able to keep the facts about his homosexual life under wraps. Spellman's double life not only allegedly involved the "blue suite" parties at the Plaza hotel, but also included private sex parties at his mansion. Even Spellman biographer John Cooney had to acknowledge Spellman's private life, writing, "In New York's clerical circles … Spellman's sex life was a source of profound embarrassment.… There were stories about his seducing altar boys and choir boys. He had his favorites among handsome young priests and was known to have lovers outside the clergy."[93] One interesting anecdote shared by Cooney relates to a choir boy who had a relationship with Spellman and who was particularly vocal about it. A man named C. A. Tripp, who later became a sex researcher for the controversial Alfred C. Kinsey, stumbled on this relationship by accident after he met the choir boy, who was bragging about his trysts with Spellman. Tripp was stunned that the powerful Cardinal was not more discreet about his dealings. Tripp asked the boy to ask Spellman why he was not worried that news would get out and harm his reputation. The boy returned several days later and responded: "The archbishop says, 'Who would ever believe that?'"[94]

It seems that Spellman was confident that his powerful position would shield him from any real scrutiny, allowing him to carry on his sex life as he saw fit. As Rod Dreher of the American Conservative wrote in a 2019 article that detailed various anecdotes about Spellman's double life: "Cardinal Spellman was confident that he would never be outed, and that if someone tried, no one would believe it. And they wouldn't have, until today."[95] As previously noted, Spellman was alleged to have been seen at the "blue suite" parties at the Plaza hotel.

While Spellman and Hoover apparently had similar, and potentially connected, private lives that carried the risk of exposure, it seems that only the latter was blackmailed. Such blackmail was not only wielded by organized crime interests to protect their rackets from FBI meddling, but also by American intelligence agencies. According to David Talbot in The Devil's Chessboard, McCarthy's efforts to target CIA analyst and CIA director Allen Dulles' ally William McBundy in mid-1953 led Dulles to put the squeeze on Hoover, who (despite having expressed doubts about McCarthy's campaign at this time) continued to feed the Wisconsin senator and Roy Cohn "a stream of damaging information on his [Hoover's] Washington enemies."[96]

Dulles, himself the subject of a thick dossier kept in Hoover's office that documented his adulterous trysts, made sure the CIA maintained the blackmail on Hoover, including that which had been shared between OSS veterans, most likely James Jesus Angleton, and Meyer Lansky years earlier. As Talbot notes, "The CIA counterintelligence chief [J. J. Angleton] was rumored to occasionally show off photographic evidence of Hoover's intimate relationship with FBI deputy Clyde Tolson, including a photo of Hoover orally pleasuring his longtime aide and companion," while one of Allen Dulles' mistresses was known to refer to Hoover as "the Virgin Mary in pants."[97]

Dulles had also compiled a lengthy dossier on Joe McCarthy's sex life, which included allegations of homosexuality. Talbot details those allegations:

> The senator who relentlessly hunted down homosexuals in government [i.e., McCarthy] was widely rumored to haunt the 'bird circuit' near Grand Central Station as well as gay hideaways in Milwaukee. Drew Pearson got wind of the stories but was never able to get enough proof to run with them. But the less discriminating Hank Greenspun, editor and publisher of the Las Vegas Sun, who was locked in an ugly war of words with McCarthy, let the allegations fly. Greenspun had been given access to the Pearson files, and he had picked up his own McCarthy stories involving young hotel bellboys and elevator operators during the senator's gambling trips to Vegas. "Joe McCarthy is a bachelor of 43 years," wrote Greenspun. "He seldom dates girls and if he does, he laughingly describes it as window dressing.… It is common talk among homosexuals who rendezvous at the White Horse Inn [in Milwaukee] that Senator Joe McCarthy has often engaged in homosexual activities."[98]

In the world of Beltway blackmail, these allegations of McCarthy's homosexuality were dismissed by those in Hoover's inner circle, as Hoover had also compiled his own set of secret files on McCarthy's sex life, should he ever need it. Instead, Hoover's secret files were alleged to contain a series of disturbing stories of McCarthy drunkenly groping young girls, which was allegedly so frequent that they had become "common knowledge" around the capital.[99] Talbot quotes Walter Trohan, Washington bureau chief of the Chicago Tribune, who witnessed McCarthy molest one such girl, as saying, “He just couldn’t keep his hands off young girls. Why the Communist opposition didn’t plant a minor on him and raise the cry of statutory rape, I don’t know.”[100]

Yet, as previously discussed, it appears that the anti-Communist forces that surrounded McCarthy, as opposed to the “Communist opposition,” was the side that most readily engaged in such operations, and it is entirely possible that McCarthy could have been targeted and entrapped by some of his ostensible allies, given that he wielded considerable power and his indiscretions were said to have been widely known in those circles.

For Dulles’ part, he didn’t need to “plant a minor” on McCarthy, as the compendium of stories of his actions alone was enough to give the CIA director leverage over the senator. As a result, Talbot states, “there was an explosive sexual subtext to the CIA’s power struggle with McCarthy, one that was largely hidden from the public but would eventually erupt in the Senate hearings that brought him down.”[101]

Though it is debatable as to whether McCarthy’s struggle with Dulles provoked his undoing, their scuffle did mark his first major failure and was a turning point in his anti-Communist campaign. It would be the relationship between Roy Cohn and David Schine, the chief consultant to McCarthy’s committee who has been described by one Cold War historian as Roy Cohn’s “dumb blonde,” that became the deciding factor behind both McCarthy’s and Cohn’s fall from grace.[102] Though some Cohn biographers have cast doubt on the claims of a romantic relationship between Cohn and Schine, other historians of the period treat it as fact. There is really no way of knowing one way or the other, aside from a series of anecdotes that have been the subject of speculation for, at this point, several decades.

For instance, during Cohn’s and Schine’s infamous European tour, the German press reported on the two men’s “flirtatious antics in a hotel lobby” while also describing how the pair had left “their hotel room in a shambles after a vigorous round of horseplay.”[103] Von Hoffman, who dismisses a homosexual relationship between Cohn and Schine in his book Citizen Cohn, nevertheless notes some eyebrow-raising stories. One such story that had been reported in TIME revolved around how Schine and Cohn “would fly down to Washington from New York on Monday, take adjoining rooms at the Statler Hotel for the week, then fly back on Friday night for a weekend of nightclubbing.” On one occasion, the Statler did not have adjoining rooms for the two men, instead only having two single rooms that were not connected. It was Schine, as opposed to Cohn, who then provoked “quite a hassle in the lobby” as he “roared his disapproval.”[104]

At the very least, even if there was no sexual relationship, the evidence points to Cohn having been enamored with Schine to the point that he was willing to aim the full force of the McCarthy machine squarely at the Army after Schine, who had been drafted in 1953, was due to be shipped overseas. Cohn’s reported response to the news was, “We’ll wreck the Army.… The Army will be ruined … if you pull a dirty, lousy, stinking, filthy, shitty double cross like that.”[105] The targeting of the Army did lead to ruin, just not the Army’s.

Eventually, and with the full approval of the Eisenhower administration, the Army responded by compiling “the Schine report,” which revealed all of the ways that Cohn and McCarthy had sought to blackmail the Army to secure special privileges and favors on Schine’s behalf. This led to the now-infamous Army-McCarthy hearings in 1954, which ultimately ended McCarthy’s reign and humiliated Cohn to such an extent that it would overshadow him for the rest of his career, long after he left Washington. The intensity of the controversy would also provoke the dissolution of the close relationship between Cohn and Schine. What is undeniable about the whole affair is that it reveals how blackmail, particularly sexual blackmail, had become a major, even if largely invisible, force in American politics.

COHN UNDER FIRE

After the end of McCarthyism, Roy Cohn returned to New York and, thanks to Judge David Peck, joined the Saxe, Bacon & O’Shea law firm in 1957. Peck, a close friend of Roy’s father, was also very closely associated with Thomas Dewey and, prior to and after his judgeship, was a lawyer for Sullivan & Cromwell, the Wall Street firm long run by the Dulles brothers.[106] The firm, later renamed Saxe, Bacon & Bolan, came to be dominated by Cohn, for better or for worse. One lawyer who worked there in the early days alongside Cohn has accused him of being the driving force behind the deterioration of its reputation, which declined rapidly in the 1960s.[107] Yet, despite the firm's decline in professional reputation, Roy was making quite a bit of money during this same period, as well as a name for himself.

What could have been good times for Roy Cohn were marred by his ongoing feud with the Kennedys, namely Robert F. Kennedy. "I knew when Bobby Kennedy was lurking nearby, nothing good could happen to me," Cohn was known to have said.[108] He was particularly concerned after learning of John F. Kennedy's plans to run for president, as it would likely mean his "mortal enemy" would be appointed to a powerful position in a future administration. Cohn had done all he could to keep the Kennedys from power by vigorously supporting Lyndon Johnson in the Democratic primary.[109] This involved him lobbying Carmine de Sapio of New York's Tammany Hall to back Johnson.

Yet, the Kennedys were not so easily thwarted, and once Robert Kennedy became Attorney General, the feud became even more acrimonious and particularly dangerous for Cohn. Cohn sought refuge in his powerful connections, which now included even more overt ties to major figures in organized crime. Indeed, the same year that John Kennedy won the presidential election, in 1960, Cohn was the guest of honor at a New Year's Eve party hosted by Moe Dalitz, the Ohio-based gangster who was a close associate of Meyer Lansky and a key figure in the Jewish mob. This same year, Cohn had also begun engaging in illegal financial schemes involving Lionel, his uncle's company.[110] Cohn's control over Lionel had been arranged with the help of Los Angeles accountant Eli Boyer, who – along with Cohn – had invested in a project alongside Dalitz and his associates.[111]

Cohn initially attempted to smooth things over with Kennedy, writing a letter claiming he "harbored no ill will" toward him, a gesture that was ignored.[112] Former congressman Cornelius "Neil" Gallagher, who had met and befriended Roy while representing him in a legal case, later remembered that "Roy was very set back at the fact that Bobby was now named as Attorney General. He was, to put it mildly, very disturbed.…Roy felt, and rightfully so, that they were coming after him. And in fact there was a Get-Roy-Cohn team put together and a Get-Jimmy-Hoffa team put together."[113]

The creation of the "Get-Roy-Cohn" team by the Robert Kennedy-led Justice Department was attested to by Robert Arum, then Assistant US Attorney in New York, while many others have noted the obvious personal hatred that helped fuel Kennedy's efforts to get Cohn. The combined hatred for Cohn shared by Robert Kennedy and Robert Morgenthau, then the US Attorney in New York, resulted in Cohn being taken to court three times over the next few years. He managed to avoid being found guilty in all three cases, thanks to pure luck in at least one instance.

The first case came in 1964, when a grand jury indictment charged Cohn with obstruction of justice for having tried to prevent the indictment of four men in a stock-swindle scheme involving a company called United Dye, as well as perjury for having lied that he had done so. The case focused considerable attention on Cohn's dealings with Moe Dalitz and his associates, particularly those involved in the Desert Inn (discussed in more detail later in this chapter).

During the trial, the allegation was made that Cohn had called Dalitz in June 1962, demanding that the mobster return immediately from a vacation in Europe in order to assist Cohn in intimidating men tied to the United Dye swindle so they would lie under oath to the grand jury investigating the scheme. It also emerged during the case that Cohn, Dalitz, Eli Boyer, and stock swindler Sam Garfield (a close friend of Dalitz's and a central figure in the United Dye scandal) had all been original investors, and thus business associates, in the Sunrise hospital, as had Desert Inn manager Allard Roen, another figure in the United Dye case. Roen was previously discussed in connection with Burton Kanter and the "supermob" in chapter 1. Media reports on the case also noted that Cohn, as previously mentioned, had been the guest of honor at Dalitz's New Year's Eve party in 1960.[114]

Other aspects of the United Dye case, which were ignored or merely glanced over during the trial, are critical for establishing Cohn's ties not just to organized crime during this period but also to organized criminal activity that was intimately enmeshed with a series of CIA assets and other figures of interest in the context of this book. The United Dye web and its organized crime-intelligence links are explored later in this chapter. For now, the focus will be on Cohn and how he fared against the Kennedy-led Justice Department.

Cohn's defense in the case was based on his assertion that the "two Bobbies" – Kennedy and Morgenthau – were after him because of personal vendettas.[115] In the case of Kennedy, it was because Cohn had beat him out to be counsel to Joe McCarthy; for Morgenthau, it was because Cohn had helped target his father, the former treasury secretary, during the McCarthy hearings.[116] Though Cohn had the formidable media empires of the Newhouse family and the Hearst Corporation at his back, his ties to Hoover and Cardinal Spellman also proved useful in this particular legal battle. Spellman's ties to Cohn, writes von Hoffman, were so well known throughout New York that it "enabl[ed] him to put the connection to use in his lawyerly tricks" and served as "Roy's insurance that there would be some political constraints on what Bobby [Kennedy] might do" in his quest to send Cohn to prison, in large part because of the Kennedys' own Catholic connections.[117] Hoover was of more immediate assistance to Cohn at this time, with a lawyer who worked alongside Cohn at Saxe, Bacon & O'Shea claiming that Hoover "gave Roy the government's case, not directly but from FBI agents and witnesses."[118]

Yet, despite all this help, things were not going Cohn's way in the trial, with a single juror holding out for conviction. It later emerged that Cohn and his legal team had done everything they could to have this juror, an African American woman, replaced prior to deliberation, as they assumed that she would surely vote to convict. Unfortunately for this woman juror, her father was killed in a car accident during deliberation, and she was excused from the jury. The judge reluctantly ruled a mistrial as a result of her dismissal.[119]

When the case was retried, it resulted in acquittal. One of the main reasons for this shift was that Cohn's defense lawyer – Frank Raichle – had caught Sam Garfield, a key government witness, in a lie related to his denial that the government had offered him leniency for his role in the United Dye stock swindle if he testified against Cohn. The optics helped Cohn's "vendetta" defense.[120] The second trial Cohn faced, the Fifth Avenue Coach Lines case, saw him charged with "bribery, conspiracy, extortion and blackmail for allegedly bribing a city appraiser to help his client, Fifth Avenue Coach, snare a higher award in a pending condemnation trial."[121] This trial had a very different trajectory than the United Dye case, particularly when Cohn's defense attorney Joseph Brill had a heart attack in the middle of the case. Brill's heart attack was suspected by some as having been a ploy so that Cohn could serve as his own defense lawyer as the trial drew to a close. While it is debatable if such suspicions were warranted, Cohn becoming his own defense attorney allowed him to offer his own testimony without being cross-examined. It also allowed him to offer "an eloquent seven-hour summation, ending with a protestation of [Cohn's] love for America."[122] That performance saw tears stream down the cheeks of both Cohn and the jurors, who then acquitted Cohn.

The third trial was also related to the Fifth Avenue Coach Lines case and saw Cohn accused of bribery, conspiracy, and filing false reports to the Securities and Exchange Commission. The government's case against Cohn in this instance involved deposits that Cohn had arranged with the money Fifth Avenue Coach received as a result of the condemnation award. One of those two deposits arranged by Cohn, which the government asserted "provoked considerable controversy," was a deposit of five hundred thousand dollars in Geoffrey's Bank in Belgium, which was made the same day that Fifth Coach received the award. One hundred thousand of those funds were then sent to Cohn and deposited in his personal bank account the next day.

Cohn testified that the money was a payment he was owed by A. Newman, "a friend of Cohn's with whom he had certain business dealings" and who was an officer of Geoffrey's Bank.[123] The other "mysterious" deposit made by Cohn was "never fully explained," according to the judge who oversaw the case, despite having been a key point of focus during the trial.[124] Cohn was acquitted when the government's strategy of offering former business associates of Cohn leniency for testifying against him backfired yet again. Nevertheless, the acquittal came with caveats, as the court did find that "Cohn benefitted from the use of Fifth's money to pay the loans made to him by" other directors and that he engaged in a "cover up" of the involvement of two company directors in suspect financial schemes.[125]

The appearance of "A. Newman," or Arno Newman, in this case is worth noting as Newman, who used the last name "Nejman" in Belgium, and his family bank, named for Arno's son Geoffrey, were later tied to illegal arms deals with Israeli intelligence in the 1980s, during roughly the same period as the Iran-

Contra affair (see Chapter 7). Some of these deals, gone awry, bankrupted Geoffrey's Bank by 1981, but no legal consequences for the bankruptcy ever befell the Newman/Nejman family.

A key figure in the Mossad-linked smuggling of weapons through Belgium at this time was David Benelie, a Belgian-Israeli dual citizen and an official business partner of the Nejman family. It later emerged that Benelie's real last name was Azulay and that he was the brother of Avner Azulay, who worked closely with Marc Rich, a Mossad-connected commodity speculator and later fugitive. Belgian investigative reporter Willy Van Damme has claimed that both Azulay brothers worked for Mossad.[126]

While these were the three cases brought against Cohn by the "two Bobbies," they were not Cohn's only trials during the period, as he was also indicted for violating banking laws on more than one occasion. However, the conduct of the two Bobbies, particularly that of Robert Morgenthau, in their quest to nail Cohn, ultimately resulted in a flip of the narrative in which Cohn – once seen as an attack dog in McCarthy's witch hunt – now became viewed as a victim of a witch hunt himself. There is some truth to that view, as Cohn's mail had been illegally intercepted during his 1964 trial, and stories that painted Cohn in a negative light were leaked to the press by the government in a clear bid to sway jurors.

Yet, one of the motivating factors behind Kennedy's and Morgenthau's efforts to "get" Cohn, that he was a crooked lawyer with organized crime ties who felt himself to be above the law, was also true. Nevertheless, despite their best efforts, none of the cases stuck, and their failure granted Cohn "an aura of invincibility, respectability, and even sympathy."[127] Though he had garnered some public sympathy, that does not mean that Cohn did not try to get even with his arch nemeses, particularly Bobby Kennedy.

VENDETTA BEGETS VENDETTA

One of the many things that Roy Cohn and J. Edgar Hoover shared was having Robert Kennedy as an enemy. Hoover not only subverted the Kennedy-led effort to "get" Roy Cohn by passing Cohn the government's case against him on at least one occasion, he also looked for ways to bring Kennedy down. This was not motivated by Kennedy's efforts to indict Cohn but instead by his efforts as Attorney General to rein in Hoover and bring down the organized crime networks that had first blackmailed Hoover and later formed an "unsavory alliance" with him.[128] According to von Hoffman, regarding Hoover's strategy:

> Hurting Kennedy demanded some ingenuity, for the target was clean on money, far cleaner on sex than his brother, in short not an easy one to bring down. One approach might be to embarrass him with his liberal constituency, to depict him as a ruthless Attorney General indifferent to the Bill of Rights and individual liberty. To put the plan into effect, Roy was needed as a membrane of protection for the Director; others were needed, including Congressman Gallagher who was making a reputation for himself in the House as a civil libertarian, a legislator committed to preventing the government from turning itself, by aid of computers, lie detectors and advanced electronics, into a free-world version of Big Brother.[129]

According to Cornelius "Neil" Gallagher, Cohn called him up and asked him if he would meet with "a friend of ours" who wanted to talk "about some real substantive abuses that are going on in the United States" that could form the basis for a series of Congressional hearings. This "friend" was Sid Zagri, chief lobbyist for the Teamsters Union. At the time that Robert Kennedy instructed his Justice Department to target Cohn he had also had his sights set on the organized crime-linked head of the Teamsters Union, Jimmy Hoffa, meaning that the Teamsters had their own score to settle with the Attorney General.

The meeting with Zagri went forward. Zagri had brought with him a trove of documents that were "aimed at Bobby Kennedy and the strike force concept, the IRS, the uses that Kennedy was making of them," according to Gallagher. Zagri said that he wanted Gallagher to host hearings on the material. When Gallagher asked how he had acquired these "dangerous" documents, Zagri said, "Don't worry about it."[130]

In Gallagher's version of what happened, he gave a noncommittal response to Zagri about the possibility of hearings. Zagri responded, stating that he had been promised by Cohn that Gallagher would do the hearings. The meeting went downhill from there and ended when Gallagher angrily ejected Zagri from his office.

Cohn called Gallagher the next day, telling him, “You made a big mistake,” to which Gallagher responded that he had not wanted to commit because he was unsure of the documents’ authenticity. Cohn then revealed that the documents were authentic, as they had come from the FBI, adding, “They all come from Mr. Hoover and Mr. Deke DeLoach [one of the two top assistants to the director]. Mr. Hoover will consider it a very personal favor if you chair these hearings. He’s sick and tired of the bullshit of Bobby Kennedy.”[131] Gallagher responded that he wanted to stay out of the brewing battle between Kennedy and Hoover, stating, “I don’t agree with what Bobby’s doing; I think it’s terrible. I don’t agree with what Hoover’s doing; it’s even worse.” Cohn promised that if Gallagher did host the hearings both Hoover and Teamster boss Jimmy Hoffa would shower him with favors and aid his reelection efforts. Gallagher was still unwilling to step into the ring. Cohn warned him, “You’re going to be sorry.… I know how they [the FBI] work.… If you’re not their friend, you’re their enemy.”[132]

Cohn would repeated the same thing to Gallagher a second time. This next occasion saw Gallagher receive a letter prepared for his signature that demanded that the attorney general at the time, Nick Katzenbach, appear before a Congressional committee with the authorizations for the (illegal) bugging of civil rights activist Martin Luther King Jr. Gallagher asked who had produced this letter for him to sign, since he had never dictated it to anyone. His secretary responded that it had been Roy Cohn. Cohn, when contacted by Gallagher, asserted that Hoover had dictated the letter because “he’s sick and tired of Bobby Kennedy proclaiming himself the great liberal when he himself signed the authorizations of his bugging.”[133] Gallagher declined to do the director’s bidding once more, to which Cohn again replied, “You’re going to be sorry.… I told you before, if you’re not their friend, you’re their enemy. They’re gonna get you.”[134]

Hoover made good on his threat, and, in 1968, he leaked a story to LIFE magazine that tied Gallagher to mobster Joe Zicarelli in the middle of Gallagher’s reelection campaign. The story relied on transcripts of taped conversations allegedly between Gallagher and Zicarelli, whose organized criminal activities and role in arms smuggling was discussed in the previous chapter. The FBI later denied the authenticity of these recordings, though some have posited that the tapes might have been authentic, with the FBI only denying their validity to avoid admitting they had illegally wiretapped Gallagher. Given that Gallagher had long been friendly with Cohn, the Zicarelli tie is not outside the realm of possibility, as Zicarelli was an alleged business associate of Lewis Rosenstiel, who was close to Cohn as well as Hoover.

However, the story in LIFE is a bit odd for a few reasons. For instance, it failed to establish any benefit to Gallagher from his alleged dealings with the Mafia. It did claim that Gallagher had asked for the Mafia’s help in disposing of a dead body, yet Gallagher was not accused of killing him, and the person appeared to have died of natural causes as there were no indications of foul play. The article provided no explanation as to why Gallagher would not have just called a doctor or the police if the man had died of natural causes on his property. The article also asserted that Gallagher’s criticisms of the FBI’s and the Justice Department’s wiretaps were mainly motivated by his purported “alliance” with these Mafia figures. Considering that the FBI itself was later revealed to have been the source of the accusations detailed in the LIFE article, as well as Hoover’s own conflicts of interest relating to organized crime, the claims about Gallagher in this article are best taken with a grain of salt.[135]

After publication of the LIFE story, Gallagher claimed he was again threatened by Hoover, with Roy Cohn again serving as the conduit. Gallagher was told that he had to resign or an even more sensational story would be published, this one involving a man allegedly dying in his bed after fornicating with his wife and with Gallagher again asking for Mafia help in disposing of the body. Gallagher was told by both Roy Cohn and a mutual friend of theirs, Neil Walsh, that Hoover was going to have the story published in LIFE unless Gallagher resigned from Congress in the next ten days. According to Cohn, Hoover wanted Gallagher out of Congress because he was “too dangerous” for them, as he had not agreed to Hoover’s demands now on two occasions. Walsh summed up the situation by telling Gallagher, “You’re not their friend, so you’re finished.”[136] Needless to say, Gallagher did not take kindly to the threats and delivered a speech on the House floor, exposing Hoover’s threats and claiming that the FBI had leaked false information to LIFE in a plot against him. Gallagher won reelection despite the FBI director’s efforts, but he was indicted in 1972 for perjury and tax evasion.[137]

Regarding Hoover's attempt to blackmail him, Gallagher later stated:

> "The Faustian contracts that were daily made by important parts of the United States media on these kinds of deals, without any recourse as to what the hell they were really building up, has become part and parcel of why we don't have a goddamn presidential candidate around anymore.… You know it's okay to talk about these things, but information is controlled and the bastards [i. e., men like Hoover] have the information, and they use guys like Roy as the interlocutors."[138]

Von Hoffman notes that Gallagher's statement here has "special meaning" given Cohn's subsequent role in similar political power plays, such as those that doomed the vice presidential candidacies of Thomas Eagleton in 1972 and Geraldine Ferraro in 1984.[139] The weaponization of the media, however, was but one of the methods employed by Cohn and allies such as Hoover in their elaborate "favor bank" system.

COHN AND CORBALLY

Roy Cohn served Hoover politically through various means, including by acting as his intermediary in political battles and other power struggles. Cohn and Hoover understood the power of blackmail quite intimately, with both allegedly having been blackmailed themselves, leading to their roles in the Plaza hotel "blue suite" parties. Not only is there evidence of Cohn and Hoover participating in sexual-blackmail rackets alongside Lewis Rosenstiel and (in Hoover's case) Sherman Kaminsky, but there is also evidence of Cohn and Hoover having ties to another sexual-blackmail scandal of the 1960s, one which took place in the United Kingdom and is remembered today as "the Profumo Affair." The key link between Hoover, Cohn, and the Profumo Affair is a man named Thomas Corbally, who used Cohn as a conduit to pass inside information on the scandal to Hoover's FBI as it was unfolding.

Corbally came from a family of private investigators, and his family's detective agency had close ties to organized crime, particularly Meyer Lansky and his immediate network. These ties were extensive enough that the Corbally family used their detective agency to benefit organized crime interests, which included spying on federal agents in the 1920s and 1930s. As a young man, Thomas Corbally served in World War II in the OSS according to Anthony Summers and Stephen Dorril, though this is disputed by others such as author Steven Snider, who calls the claim a "Corbally embellishment."[140] Corbally does appear to have served in intelligence during the war but in military intelligence via the Army Counterintelligence Corps. He subsequently served in the War Department Detachment, a group whose name has been used interchangeably with the Department of the Army Detachment. The latter was a name used as cover by the CIA in Europe in the immediate post-war period.[141]

In the 1950s, Corbally became a jet-setting private detective who courted the rich and famous, particularly in London and New York. During this period, he met and befriend Roy Cohn, and the two remained close, with Cohn serving as Corbally's attorney over the years. In the 1960s, Corbally began living in London, sharing an apartment with William Mellon Hitchcock of the wealthy Mellon family, who was previously mentioned in Chapter 1. Mellon Hitchcock was the former in-law of David Bruce, an OSS station chief and close ally of William Casey. During the time Corbally and Mellon Hitchcock shared an apartment in London, Bruce was US ambassador to the United Kingdom.

While living together, Mellon Hitchcock and Corbally developed a reputation for throwing "wild parties" or "orgies" for the elite.[142] At the same time, Corbally was courting organized crime networks in the United Kingdom, becoming close to Irish gangster Johnny Francis, who later facilitated the entry of Philadelphia mob boss Angelo Bruno into various businesses in London. Those interests included the Colony Sports Club, where Meyer Lansky associate and Washington, DC-based mobster Joe Nesline held a significant stake.

Both Bruno and Francis worked closely with Ronnie and Reggie Kray, twin brothers and nightclub owners who ran the London-based organized crime gang known as "The Firm" for over a decade. As Stephen Snider and Douglas Thompson have both noted, the Kray brothers "were known to have supplied 'rent boys' [teenage boys] to Lord Boothby [Conservative MP and former Churchill aide] during" the time they were associated with Johnny Francis.[143] Declassified MI5 documents reveal that British intelligence was aware of the Boothby-Kray association that included "sex parties" and "rent boys" at the time these events took place, with those documents also referring to both Boothby and Ronnie Kray as "'hunters' of young men."[144]

Corbally was not only plugged into the more powerful crime networks in the UK, but he was also a member of the Clermont Club, an elite group of gamblers in 1960s London. Many of Clermont's members became extremely powerful during the government of Margaret Thatcher. Several members also later developed close ties to Robert Maxwell, Ghislaine Maxwell's father, and the global arms trade. The Clermont Club was opened by John Aspinall in London's Mayfair district in 1962. Aspinall gave £3,000 to Corbally shortly after he opened the exclusive casino. While he publicly claimed the payment was to settle an old gambling debt with the detective, others associated with the club claimed it was meant as tribute to the organized crime networks that, by that time, were deeply connected to Corbally.

The Clermont Club, as noted in Adam Curtis' documentary series The Mayfair Set, acted as a catalyst for the formation of a power nexus around a series of powerful businessmen and politicians who were incredibly influential during Margaret Thatcher's government during the 1980s.[145] At the center of this nexus were figures such as David Stirling, Sir James Goldsmith, and Roland Walter Rowland. Goldsmith later employed Thomas Corbally directly. Lord Boothby was also a member of the Clermont Club. Stirling and Rowland, in particular, had significant ties to the global arms trade as well as relationships with Saudi weapons dealer Adnan Khashoggi, who later became a client of Roy Cohn as well as Jeffrey Epstein around the same time, as well as a key figure in the Iran-Contra affair. Both Stirling and Rowland also had their own associations with the Iran-Contra operation. Roland Walter Rowland, better known as "Tiny" Rowland, was also a very close associate of Robert Maxwell, as was fellow Clermont Club member and corporate raider James Goldsmith. Goldsmith not only had ties to Maxwell, but also to white collar crime-linked figures including Charles Keating, Michael Milken, and, later, Jeffrey Epstein. Both Keating and Milken were directly connected to the savings and loan scandal of the 1980s that, according to Pete Brewton and others, was largely the result of a collaboration between the CIA and organized crime. The Goldsmith-Epstein connection is revisited in Chapter 11. Another figure at the Clermont Club was Jack Dellal, whose family business later backed Christine Maxwell's homeland-security-focused software venture, Chiliad (see Chapter 21).

In the context of Corbally and the Profumo affair, another very important member of the Clermont Club was a man named Stephen Ward. Ward was an osteopath, who became intimately acquainted with top figures in Britain's aristocracy through W. Averell Harriman. Harriman was the former governor of New York whose Wall Street firm, Brown Brothers Harriman & Co., had been financially entangled with assets of Nazi Germany well after World War II had begun. Harriman's bank employed George H.W. Bush's father Prescott Bush and his maternal grandfather father George Herbert Walker. At the time he was promoting Ward, Harriman was an "Ambassador at Large" of the Kennedy State Department.[146]

Ward's friends among the British elite included the Churchills and photographer of the royal family Sterling Henry Nahum.[147] Nahum was particularly close to Lord Louis Mountbatten, Prince Philip's uncle and mentor to Prince Charles.[148] Nahum, Ward, and Lord Mountbatten were attendees of the so-called Thursday Club, which Nahum is said to have founded. Other attendees at the Thursday get-togethers included Prince Philip and the Kray twins.[149] Many of the attendees of the Thursday Club dinners were involved in sex parties, such as those hosted by Corbally and Mellon Hitchcock. Nahum was also a regular host of such parties at his apartment in Piccadilly, some of which featured "girls dressed only in Masonic aprons."[150] Ward regularly attended Nahum's sexually explicit get-togethers as well as analogous events hosted by elite members of British society.

Ward's "talents" were quickly recognized by British intelligence outfit MI6, which had a "reputation for targeting visiting dignitaries in the UK with sexual blackmail operations and recognized Ward's potential in this regard," according to Steven Snider.[151] Ward was first approached by MI6 agent Harold Tracey in 1952 and Tracey cultivated him for years with the help of a close confidant of Ward's, Warwick Charlton. Tracey regularly passed MI6-derived money to Ward via Charlton, but MI6 has since claimed that they never made "operational use" of Ward, despite their known interest and funding.[152]

During the early 1960s, when Corbally and the Clermont Club were becoming established in London, a British politician named John Profumo, who was then serving as the UK's Secretary of State for War, met

Christine Keeler. Keeler was a nineteen-year-old model who lived with Stephen Ward, and she began having an affair with Profumo shortly after they met. Keeler was simultaneously having an affair with Eugene Ivanov, a Soviet military attaché and GRU agent in London. Ward allowed Keeler and Ivanov to use his apartment over the course of their affair, and Ivanov had his own ties to Ward, having sought to use Ward as a back channel between the Soviet Union and the UK during the 1962 Cuban Missile Crisis. MI5 began to have concerns that Ivanov was "working" Ward, and Keeler later asserted that Ward was a British and Soviet double agent. Incidentally, Ward was also close to the Astor family and rented a cottage from them. The Astor family's estate at Cliveden was the site of Profumo and Keeler's first meeting, which led to their subsequent affair.

The scandal began only after Keeler, for reasons that are still unclear, told Labour MP John Lewis that she was having affairs with both Ivanov and Profumo. Lewis subsequently informed Profumo's political enemy, Labour MP George Wigg. Wigg, like Ward, was an asset of British intelligence at the time. Between her testimony to Lewis and via him to Wigg, Keeler also told her story to the British press, causing a scandal to erupt around Profumo and leading not only to his resignation but to the breakdown of Harold Macmillan's Conservative government. As an aside, Macmillan's wife was allegedly in a long-term adulterous relationship with the aforementioned Lord Boothby, who was a member of the Clermont Club along with Stephen Ward and tied to the same organized-crime networks as Corbally.

According to Phillip Knightley and Caroline Kennedy in An Affair of State, as cited by Steven Snider, it was David Bruce – William Mellon Hitchcock's former in-law and former OSS station chief – who involved Corbally directly in the Profumo affair.[153] According to the authors, Bruce was asked by Macmillan to uncover the truth surrounding Profumo's relationship with Keeler, and Bruce turned to Corbally for information due to Corbally's relationship with Ward, his profession as a private detective, and his close friendship with Mellon Hitchcock. Snider also notes a different account of these events is offered by Anthony Summers and Stephen Dorril in their book The Secret Worlds of Stephen Ward. Summers and Dorril assert that it was Ward himself who "dropped in" on Corbally and Mellon Hitchcock, where he confessed everything to them and begged them for help in preventing Keeler's story from going to press.[154]

Whatever the details, Ward, Corbally, and Mellon Hitchcock ultimately met with David Bruce's assistant Alfred Wells, and Ward told Wells how the incidents at the heart of the Profumo affair had transpired. At least a month prior to that meeting and apparently before Keeler had revealed the affair to John Lewis, both Corbally and Mellon Hitchcock had known about Profumo and Keeler via Ward. Bruce's role in these meetings with Wells seems odd, as he sat on this inside information about the affair despite its security implications for the US State Department and the Anglo-American establishment.

Hoover's FBI got the inside scoop from Corbally and began investigating other women of interest in Stephen Ward's circle while the Profumo affair was just beginning. Corbally kept the FBI informed of developments in the scandal through Roy Cohn, Corbally's longtime friend and attorney. In the public release of the FBI case files on the affair, nicknamed the "Bowtie dossier," the information that Cohn gave to the FBI is entirely censored, as is a seventeen-page interview the FBI had with Corbally.[155] One of the reasons for these extensive redactions likely owes to the ties between the other women associated with Stephen Ward and efforts to sexually blackmail John F. Kennedy. Peter Dale Scott discusses this subject in Deep Politics and the Death of JFK, drawing partially on the work of Anthony Summers in Official and Confidential:

> [Meyer] Lansky had by the 1930s acquired compromising evidence of Hoover's homosexual activities. In the 1950s, Meyer Lansky, and other mob figures such as Sam Giancana, supplied women to John F. Kennedy, some of whom were logged into Hoover's growing files of dirt on the young senator. In the 1960s this deep political equilibrium was threatened by Robert Kennedy's war on organized crime, which alienated Hoover. Feeling increasingly threatened, especially after the Kennedys began to collect their own files on Hoover, both Hoover and the mob began to escalate their collection of Kennedy sexual dirt. At first Hoover gained White House influence by protecting the Kennedys against mob blackmail, but in 1963 Hoover, desperate, began to leak some of his own dirt on Kennedy to the public.

> Hoover's sexual dirt on the Kennedys began to surface in late June 1963, after the President's "peace speech" at American University with its appeal, "Let us reexamine our attitude toward the Cold War." On June 20, the United States and the Soviet Union signed an agreement establishing a "hot line" between the Kremlin and the White House.
>
> A week later, there was a flurry of veiled hints linking the President to the Profumo story, such as the Drew Pearson-Jack Anderson column for June 29: "Britishers who read American criticisms of Profumo throw back the question 'What high American official was involved with Marilyn Monroe?'" On the same day, in a front-page story, the Hearst paper in New York, the Journal-American, linked the Christine Keeler-Stephen Ward sex ring itself to a" 'high U.S. aide," one of the biggest names in American politics. Back in 1960, after his election but before his inauguration, the President had slept with two members of the ring, including Mariella Novotny (a former stripper in London's Club Pigalle).[156]

Mariella Novotny, born Stella Marie Capes, met Stephen Ward through her job as a stripper at the Mayfair nightclub The Black Sheep. The owner of that club, Horace Dibben, was a close friend of Ward's who also had an interest in sex parties. Dibben's sex parties were alleged to have a notably occult element, with allegations of "black magic and men in masks" as well as "ritual sadomasochism" based around a master/slave dynamic. Novotny was directly involved in Dibben's occult-themed sex parties, which reportedly attracted prominent individuals in Harold Macmillan's government as VIP guests as well as Stephen Ward.[157]

Novotny was subsequently whisked away from London to New York, where she began working as an upscale prostitute, servicing a lengthy list of powerful men out of four different apartments just months after she arrived. She had been brought to New York through her affair with Harry Alan Towers, a British television producer, and both were charged with operating a sexual-blackmail ring in New York that specifically targeted UN diplomats and other men of influence. John F. Kennedy was also reportedly one of her "clients."

Before she fled the US in 1961, Novotny left her address book, replete with the names and contact information of America's rich and powerful, with the FBI. For "mysterious reasons," the FBI dropped its case against Novotny and Towers and chose to destroy Novotny's address book as well as their files on both Novotny and Towers.[158]

The other woman linked to both Stephen Ward and efforts to sexually blackmail John F. Kennedy was Suzy Chang, a former nurse turned model who moved to London at nineteen. How Chang met Ward is still unknown, though Chang later described Ward as "a good, good, good friend" whom she had met sometime in the early 1950s.[159] Chang was associated with Ward's close friend and Thursday Club founder Sterling Henry Nahum and lived at the Nell Gywne House in London, where another woman working with Ward also lived. William Mellon Hitchcock, Corbally's London roommate, later referred to Chang as "one of Stephen's girls," and Chang later confirmed that she knew Corbally as well.[160]

Novotny is the source of the claim that Chang had sex with John F. Kennedy, which is possible given that Chang was in the US in both 1960 and 1961. Chang acknowledged knowing Kennedy but denied having sex with him. According to Snider, she reportedly denied the affair with "less vigor" as time went by, however.[161] Another noteworthy event that, according to Snider, was more indicative of "shadowy purposes" was Chang's mother hiring the law firm of former OSS chief William Donovan to secure Suzy Chang a visa to the US in 1962.[162] The year 1962 was a critical year for John Kennedy, and it also happened to be the year that the Profumo affair first surfaced.

The first stories on the Profumo affair emerged in the midst of the Cuban Missile Crisis, which may explain why Keeler decided to go public with her story and create a scandal around her lover, costing him his career and setting in motion the destruction of the entire Macmillan government. As previously mentioned, Ivanov had attempted to use Ward as a back channel during the crisis. Not only that, but Ivanov and Ward were also working with Permanent Undersecretary of the British Foreign Office, Harold Caccia, to arrange a summit conference in England to resolve the crisis. The precise timing of the Profumo affair ensured that Ivanov would be rapidly recalled to Moscow, thus scuttling plans for the summit.

In addition, as Peter Dale Scott points out, the reports attempting to link President Kennedy to the Profumo affair only emerged after Kennedy's June 1963 "peace speech." That speech deeply unsettled the anti-Communist network that included Hoover, Cohn, and others, and stories attempting to tie Kennedy to Profumo's scandal were published by the Hearst Journal-American. The paper's editor, Guy Richards, was very much involved in this anti-Communist network and had "excellent intelligence contacts," according to Peter Dale Scott, citing Anthony Summers.[163] Summers also noted that the story was published shortly after Richards brought an anti-Communist friend of Keeler's, Michael Eddowes, to the United States.

In addition, Roy Cohn was a longtime close personal friend of Richard Berlin, the top manager of the Hearst newspaper conglomerate, which owned the Journal-American.[164] Cohn was notorious for placing stories in Hearst newspapers, as well as publications controlled by his other close friends, such as Si Newhouse, for the benefit of his clients and his network.

The Profumo affair was probably Corbally's most notable tie to a sex-blackmail ring, but it was hardly his only such connection. Years later, Corbally was deeply connected to the so-called Hollywood madam, Heidi Fleiss, as well as a VIP S & M scene in the Hamptons. Corbally claimed, in the case of the latter, to have started that ring, which he said he had "imported" from the UK.[165] He was also said to possess numerous "pictures of various individuals engaged in some rather strange sexual practices that were staples of these parties."[166] Another important association of Corbally's, though not tied necessarily to sexual blackmail, was his connection to Jules Kroll of Kroll and Associates, with many early Kroll employees crediting Corbally for the firm's initial success. Kroll and Associates, long known as the "CIA of Wall Street" and believed by French intelligence to have been an actual front for the CIA, makes a few, yet critically important appearances in the last days of Robert Maxwell and other events related to Maxwell's posthumous legacy in the US, which are discussed in more detail in Chapter 15.

THE UNITED DYE WEB

Another interesting figure in Corbally's close orbit worth exploring is his mentor, John G. "Steve" Broady. Broady was a private investigator who had more than a few run-ins with the law, including for his role in the wiretapping of then mayor of New York William O'Dwyer on behalf of Broady's longtime employer Clendenin Ryan.[167] Ryan was not only Broady's principal sponsor, but also the main financial backer of the International Services of Information Foundation, a private intelligence outfit that had been formed by Ulius Amoss, a veteran of the OSS. Amoss was known, after his service in the OSS, for investing in companies embedded in the country's growing military-industrial complex, some of which were alleged to be CIA fronts for money laundering.[168] Another prominent figure linked to the foundation was Charles Willoughby, Douglas MacArthur's former intelligence chief, who was a trustee.

Clendenin Ryan's son, Clendenin Ryan Jr., was close to a man named Douglas Caddy, who led an anti-Communist group called Young Americans for Freedom (YAF). Clendenin Ryan Jr. and Caddy were roommates at Georgetown University, and the former was "tangentially involved in founding YAF."[169] Another key member of YAF was former CIA officer, National Review founder, and close friend of Roy Cohn, William F. Buckley. Caddy's ties to the George Town Club, "established in 1966 for the purpose of bringing together leaders who had an impact on the United States, and the world," via another of his college roommates, Tongsun Park, and the sex blackmail rings that surrounded both that club and the Watergate scandal are discussed in the next chapter.[170]

Another associate of Broady's was Peter Crosby, whose brother – James Crosby – was the chairman of Resorts International (formerly Mary Carter Paint) in the Bahamas. Top investors in Resorts International included the Moody family company American National Insurance Company (ANICO) and Delafield & Delafield. ANICO and the Moody family, specifically Roy Cohn's close friend Shearn Moody Jr., are mentioned in future chapters. Delafield & Delafield is worth noting as it was William Mellon Hitchock's employer.[171]

Peter Crosby was a stock manipulator and associate of organized crime figures who made an appearance in the financial webs surrounding the United Dye stock swindle, the aftermath of which resulted in the indictment of Roy Cohn in the early 1960s. During their "adventures" together in the 1970s, Crosby and

Broady were arrested in 1973, though only Crosby went to prison. According to the late journalist Gary Webb, Broady evaded conviction because of his past work for the CIA, an association Broady denied but that was attested to by Crosby associates. Webb, citing reports in the Kentucky Post, also noted that the papers confiscated from Crosby and Broady at the time of their arrest showed that the two men dealt "with many of the same men believed by investigators to be part of a nationwide network of confidence men and organized crime figures."[172] Crosby certainly seems to have been part of such a network.

Before his 1973 arrest, for example, he was involved in shady financial dealings with William McCarthy, brother of Texas oil tycoon Glenn McCarthy. Those dealings centered around American Montana Oil & Gas, a dummy corporation through which McCarthy aimed to seize properties then controlled by Ajax Oil Company. Other companies were involved in McCarthy's Ajax takeover plan, including Sundown Oil Company, which counted Paul Roland Jones as a director. Jones was a known figure in Chicago's organized crime scene who had relocated to Texas in 1947 and was implicated in narcotics trafficking.[173] He also, incidentally, had connections to Jack Ruby (born Jacob Rubenstein), the gangster who is now best known for killing Lee Harvey Oswald after the assassination of John F. Kennedy. Ruby also had connections to the Moody family of ANICO. Crosby and McCarthy entered into an arrangement with Satiris "Sonny" Fassoulis as part of this elaborate scheme. Fassoulis also had a business relationship with a man named Alexander Guterma and the Bon Ami company, which played a critical role in the United Dye swindle.

Guterma was a Russian national who came to the United States in the 1950s, arriving first in California before relocating to Florida. There he launched Shawano Corporation and began acquiring other companies by trading Shawano stock. He soon made his way to Las Vegas, where "he found the Vegas mob at the Desert Inn eager to unload the hotel."[174] Guterma "then traded Shawano stock for the little Isle d'Capri Hotel, Bay Harbor Islands, forming the nucleus of United Hotels Inc., which was to dump the Desert Inn on the public if need be.[175] The Desert Inn was very much a focus of Cohn's trial related to United Dye. As previously mentioned, the Desert Inn's manager, Allard Roen, was also in the employ of mobster Moe Dalitz and was a key figure in the United Dye trial. So was Sam Garfield – a lifelong friend of Dalitz.

The government asserted in its case against Cohn that Eli Boyer, the accountant who helped Cohn take control of Lionel Corporation, had been used by Cohn to pipeline threats to Roen to keep him from giving truthful testimony to the grand jury investigating United Dye. Boyer confirmed this in his testimony. In addition, Boyer, Roen, Garfield, Dalitz, and Cohn had all been the original investors together in a venture called Sunrise hospital.[176] In June 1955, Guterma and Sam Garfield as well as Irving Pasternak teamed up to acquire the Franklin County Coal Corporation. That same month, Guterma became an associate of Virgil Dardi, who was then a director at United Dye and subsequently arranged to sell Guterma a large bloc of shares in the company. Guterma then distributed that stock between himself, Garfield, Pasternak, and others. By that September, Guterma had become chairman of the United Dye board, with Dardi serving as its president.[177]

The following year, Guterma took control of a manufacturing company called F. L. Jacobs. The intention of Guterma and his associates was to "loot and divert for their own purposes the assets of F. L. Jacobs and to use its credit as collateral for loans, the proceeds of which were diverted to Guterma's own use and benefit."[178] Soon after, Dardi informed Guterma that the Bon Ami company had 63,000 shares for sale; they then arranged for the purchase of those shares by United Dye via a loan from F. L. Jacobs. Guterma later testified that they had taken control of Bon Ami to "enable Garfield and Pasternak to satisfy the $519,000 obligation owed by them to United Dye." To support Guterma's testimony in the United Dye case, the government "introduced evidence of various 'loan' transactions involving Garfield and Pasternak and, as directors of Bon Ami, Guterma and Dardi," many of which involved United Dye.179

When the decision was made to use the United Dye grand jury to "get Cohn," Garfield and Pasternak evaded being sentenced in exchange for their testimony against Cohn and other accomplices. As previously mentioned, their deals to obtain immunity, which were not publicly acknowledged, helped convince a jury to acquit Cohn during the retrial (i. e., the second trial that followed the initial mistrial) of the United Dye case. Guterma had already been found guilty and was serving a four-year prison sentence for having looted millions from F. L. Jacobs when Cohn's case went to trial. He was sentenced in 1961. Before Guterma was caught and the United Dye swindle unraveled, Guterma and Dardi used Bon Ami company to establish ties with some interesting figures as they obtained a controlling stake in the company. In 1957, Guterma and Dardi entered into negotiations with an entertainment executive named Matthew Fox in which they sought to purchase $5 million worth of spot time for TV commercials for Bon Ami.[180] Bon Ami loaned Fox $115,000, and Fox arranged for Guild Films to supply Bon Ami spot time if Fox defaulted on the loan, which he did.

Fox was much more than a television/movie executive, however, as he had led a CIA front in Indonesia, the American-Indonesian Corporation, until the early 1950s.[181] In that capacity, Fox had controlled extensive rights to develop Indonesia's natural resources and also controlled all Indonesian government buying and selling in the United States.[182] He was also involved in covertly supporting the CIA-backed prime minister of the country, Mohammed Hatta, at the behest of agency intermediaries.[183]

That same year, 1957, Guterma entered into negotiations with Sonny Fassoulis, leading to Fassoulis' acquisition of over 100,000 shares of Bon Ami stock. At the time, 25,000 of these shares were owned by another Guterma-controlled company, the Chatham Corporation. Fassoulis did not have the money for the purchase, however, and sold film rights held by a company he controlled, Icthyan Associates, to Bon Ami to cover the cost. The so-called Icthyan package was intended to "enable Bon Ami to obtain television spot time by transferring the 'Icthyan Package' to Guild Films as credit against the purchase price of a large quantity of television spot time."[184]

Well before Fassoulis and Fox entered the scene as it related to Bon Ami, they appeared to have already been involved in a shadowy financial network that involved Virgil Dardi. In 1953, Fox was the chairman of a company called Pola-Lite, and Fassoulis was its president. Pola-Lite was actually the subsidiary for an intelligence-linked company named Commerce International Corporation that Fassoulis ran.[185] Around the same time, in 1954, it was reported that Matthew Fox was president of C & C Television corporation, a subsidiary of C & C Super Corporation, where Virgil Dardi served as a director. This connects Fassoulis, Fox, and Dardi together years before Guterma and Dardi became involved in the events surrounding the United Dye situation.

Around the same time the United Dye scandal erupted, in the early 1960s, an investigation was launched into the David, Josephine and Winfield Baird Foundation and the Lansing Foundation, both of which were controlled by New York businessman David Baird. The Baird Foundation was listed as owning 24.5 percent of the C & C Television Corporation that Matthew Fox ran, and the foundation also owned significant rights to several other C & C subsidiaries. The Baird Foundation's clients included several organized crime associates, such as Lansky front man Louis Chesler; real estate magnate William Zeckendorf; and Lawrence Wien, another real estate magnate who was a partner in the Dalitz-linked Desert Inn that was tied to the United Dye case. As mentioned in Chapter 1, Wien had bought the Empire State Building from "Supermob" figure Henry Crown.

Other clients of the Baird Foundation included Allen & Co., which later became closely involved with Les Wexner's "mentor" Max Fisher, as well as the director of Maurice L. Rothschild, Nathan Cummings. Cummings was a director of Bon Ami company and was personally involved in selling the controlling stake of that company to United Dye when it was controlled by Guterma and Dardi.[186] Cummings subsequently departed Bon Ami, which opened spots for Guterma and Dardi on its board.

As for David Baird himself, he and Charles Allen of Allen & Co. were known to have dealings with Guterma, even after the Las Vegas mob, specifically the Desert Inn crowd tied to Moe Dalitz, "had exhausted its use" of Guterma in the aftermath of United Dye's unraveling.[187] In addition, Louis Mortimer Bloomfield, attorney for Permindex and whose law firm was deeply enmeshed with the Bronfman family, wrote to Carlo d'Amelio of Permindex's Italian subsidiary in 1961, describing the interest that Permindex had cultivated among American businessmen, specifically David Baird, in their affairs and projects.[188]

Another interesting thread concerning David Baird is related to his client and the de facto banker for the Baird Foundation, Serge Semenenko. Semenenko was the vice president of First National Bank of

Boston, whose executives were close to the CIA. The Baird Foundation itself was later revealed to be an asset of the CIA's International Organizations Division and, between 1961 and 1964, received $456,800 of agency funds in "pass throughs" that were piped into CIA programs in the Middle East and Africa.[189] In addition to the direct CIA connection, there is also some level of connection between Baird and Meshulam Riklis. As mentioned in Chapter 2, Riklis took over not only Lewis Rosenstiel's business empire but purchased his blackmail-ready townhouse at around the same time.

Jonathan Marshall, in his article "Wall Street, the Supermob and the CIA," notes:

> Not long after Semenenko left First National, at the height of the 1960s merger mania, he began wheeling and dealing with Baird over the fate of Stanley Warner Corp., a leading theater owner that Baird had advised on financial matters since 1956. The first public hint of their dealings came in November 1967, when New York City newspapers touted Baird's philanthropy by reporting that he was chairing the annual Celebrity Ball of the Variety Club of New York in honor of Democratic Rep. Emmanuel Celler. Vice chairmen for the ball were Semenenko, Stanley Warner Corp. Chairman S. H. Fabian, and Meshulam Riklis, the young, Odessa-born chairman of Glen Alden Corp., a fast-growing conglomerate that was angling to acquire Stanley Warner."[190]

Marshall goes onto reveal that Celler, once the chairman of the House Judiciary Committee, was a "notable friend" of Lewis Rosenstiel. He also notes that David Baird received a $3 million finder's fee for his role in arranging sale of Stanley Warner stock to Riklis' Glen Alden Corporation. Shortly thereafter, Riklis, via Glen Alden, took control of Rosenstiel's Schenley Industries. Incidentally, another Baird associate, Charles Allen of Allen and Co., had previously considered acquiring Schenley before Riklis succeeded in doing so.

Ultimately, this series of serpentine financial connections reveals a dense web linking several organized crime figures, their intermediaries, organized crime–linked businessmen, and intelligence agencies. Some key figures in this network, as mentioned in this and previous chapters, engaged in various forms of blackmail and power plays to ensure the continued growth of both their legal and illegal financial interests. As we shall see, this incestuous web of crime, intrigue, and covert action that was tightly interwoven throughout major events of the 1960s would continue its expansion, largely unimpeded and employing many of the same tactics, throughout the decades that followed.

Endnotes

1Nicholas Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 1st ed (New York: Doubleday, 1988), 414.

2Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 465.

3Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 49.

4Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 49.

5“Albert Cohn Dies; A Former Justice,” New York Times, January 9, 1959, https://timesmachine.nytimes.com/timesmachine/1959/01/09/89104614.html?pageNumber=27.

6Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 50.

7Where’s My Roy Cohn?, 2019, [DVD] Directed by M. Tyrnauer, Sony Pictures.

8“Albert Cohn Marries; First Assistant District Attorney Weds Miss Dorothy Marcus,” New York Times, January 12, 1924, https://www.nytimes.com/1924/01/12/archives/albert-cohn-marries-first-assistant-district-attorney-weds-miss.html?searchResultPosition=11

9Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 414.

10Robert Shogan, No Sense of Decency: The Army-McCarthy Hearings: A Demagogue Falls and Television Takes Charge of American Politics (Chicago: Ivan R. Dee, 2009), 139.

11Kenneth T. Jackson, The Encyclopedia of New York City, 2nd edition (New Haven : New York: Yale University Press ; New-York Historical Society), 2010, p. 1015.

12Christopher M. Elias, Gossip Men: J. Edgar Hoover, Joe McCarthy, Roy Cohn, and the Politics of Insinuation (Chicago, The University of Chicago Press, 2021), 120.

13Michael Whitney Straight, Trial by Television and Other Encounters, 1st ed. (New York: Devon Press, 1979), 180; “Justice Albert Cohn Takes Office,” New York Times, April 3, 1929, http://timesmachine.nytimes.com/timesmachine/1929/04/03/95902552.html?pageNumber=37.

14“Justice Albert Cohn Promoted,” New York Times, April 28, 1937, p.17.

15Nicholas Pileggi, “The Mob and the Machine,” New York Magazine, May 5, 1986. https://nymag.com/news/features/crime/46610/.

16David Samuels, “The Mayor and the Mob,” Smithsonian, October 2019, https://www.smithsonianmag.com/history/mayor-william-odwyer-new-york-city-mob-180973078/.

17Pileggi, “The Mob and the Machine.”

18Sally Denton and Roger Morris, The Money and the Power: The Making of Las Vegas and Its Hold on America, 1947-2000, 1st ed (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 2001), chap. 1, https://archive.org/details/moneypowermaking00dent.

19James Cockayne, “How the Mafia Almost Fixed the 1932 Democratic National Convention,” The New Republic, July 25, 2016, https://newrepublic.com/article/135466/mafia-almost-fixed-1932-democratic-national-convention; Martin A Gosch and Richard Hammer, The Last Testament of Lucky Luciano: The Mafia Story in His Own Words (Enigma Books, 2013), 163.

20Dennis Eisenberg, Uri Dan, and Eli Landau, Meyer Lansky: Mogul of the Mob (New York: Paddington Press : distributed Grosset & Dunlap, 1979), 173; Gosch and Hammer, Last Testament of Lucky Luciano, 163-64.

21Jay Maeder, “Inside Mayor Jimmy (Beau James) Walker’s Mighty Downfall,” New York Daily News, August 14, 2017, https://www.nydailynews.com/new-york/mayor-jimmy-beau-james-walker-mighty-downfall-article-1.792838.

22Gosch and Hammer, Last Testament of Lucky Luciano, 105.

23“Ed Flynn, the Bronx Boss at FDR’s Side,” Irish Echo Newspaper, March 14, 2012, https://www.irishecho.com/2012/3/ed-flynn-the-bronx-boss-at-fdrs-side.

24Shogan, No Sense of Decency, 122.

25Denton and Morris, Money and Power, chap.1.

26Bernard Ryan, Jr., “Murder, Inc. Trials: 1941,” https://www.encyclopedia.com/law/law-magazines/murder-inc-trials-1941.

27Samuels, “Mayor and Mob.”

28Samuels, “Mayor and Mob.”

29Samuels, “Mayor and Mob.”
30Samuels, “Mayor and Mob.”

31Samuels, “Mayor and Mob.”
32Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 83.
33“High-Titled Bank Can Hold Its Name,” New York Times, June 24, 1913.
34“High-Titled Bank Can Hold Its Name.”
35“High-Titled Bank Can Hold Its Name.”
36“High-Titled Bank Can Hold Its Name.”
37Beth S. Wenger, New York Jews and the Great Depression: Uncertain Promise (Syracuse University Press, 1999), 11.
38“Joseph S. Marcus, Banker, Dies at 65,” New York Times, July 4, 1927. http://timesmachine.nytimes.com/timesmachine/1927/07/04/120423238.html?pageNumber=15.
39Rare Book and Manuscript Library, Columbia University, 2005, http://www.columbia.edu/cu/lweb/eresources/archives/rbml/NYSCrimeCommission/.
40“Paul E. Lockwood, Dewey Aide, Dead,” New York Times, September 2, 1973, https://www.nytimes.com/1973/09/02/archives/paule-lockwood-dewey-aide-dead-governors-secretary-was-on.html; Joan Cook, “James M. Crosby, 58, Founder of Hotel and Casino Concern,” New York Times, April 12, 1986, https://www.nytimes.com/1986/04/12/obituaries/james-m-crosby-58-founder-of-hotel-and-casino-concern.html; Donald Janson, “Resorts Head Tells of Dropping Partner,” New York Times, January 17, 1979, https://www.nytimes.com/1979/01/17/archives/resorts-head-tells-of-dropping-partner.html.
41Denton and Morris, Money and Power, chap.1.
42“Kefauver to Hear Top Officials Here,” New York Times, January 24, 1951, https://www.nytimes.com/1951/01/24/archives/kefauver-to-hear-top-officials-here-dewey-and-mayoralty-rivals.html.
43“Albert Cohn Dies,” New York Times, January 9, 1951, http://timesmachine.nytimes.com/timesmachine/1959/01/09/89104614.html?pageNumber=27.
44“Joseph S. Marcus, Banker, Dies at 65,” New York Times, July 4, 1927, http://timesmachine.nytimes.com/timesmachine/1927/07/04/120423238.html?pageNumber=15.
45“B.K Marcus Dies; Led Bank of US,” New York Times, July 18, 1954, http://timesmachine.nytimes.com/timesmachine/1954/07/18/83342783.html?pageNumber=57.
46“$300,000,000 Merger of Banks Approved,” New York Times, May 10, 1929, http://timesmachine.nytimes.com/timesmachine/1929/05/10/95947545.html?pageNumber=45.
47Michael A. Whitehouse, “Paul Warburg’s Crusade to Establish a Central Bank in the United States,” Federal Reserve Bank of Minneapolis, May 1, 1989, https://www.minneapolisfed.org:443/article/1989/paul-warburgs-crusade-to-establish-a-central-bank-in-the-united-states; Roger Lowenstein, “The Jewish Story Behind the U.S. Federal Reserve Bank,” The Forward, November 29, 2015. https://forward.com/culture/325447/the-man-behind-the-fed/.
48“B.K Marcus Dies; Led Bank of US,” New York Times, July 18, 1954, http://timesmachine.nytimes.com/timesmachine/1954/07/18/83342783.html?pageNumber=57.
49“President of Bank Reviews Its Growth,” New York Times, February 2, 1930, http://timesmachine.nytimes.com/timesmachine/1930/02/02/96018687.html?pageNumber=43.
50“$1,000,000,000 Union of Banks Completed,” New York Times, November 25, 1930, http://timesmachine.nytimes.com/timesmachine/1930/11/25/102190782.html?pageNumber=9.
51“$1,000,000,000 Union of Banks Completed.”
52“$1,000,000,000 Union of Banks Completed.”
53John Olszowka et al., America in the Thirties: America in the Twentieth Century (NY: Syracuse University Press, 2014), 30.
54“Bank Heads Face Contempt Action,” New York Times, February 25, 1931, http://timesmachine.nytimes.com/timesmachine/1931/02/25/100992834.html?pageNumber=4; “Juggling

of Loans by Bank Is Shown," New York Times, January 24, 1934, http://timesmachine.nytimes.com/timesmachine/1934/01/24/95029871.html?pageNumber=11.

55Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 47; Christopher, Gray, "Streetscapes: The Bank of the United States in the Bronx," New York Times, August 18, 1991, https://www.nytimes.com/1991/08/18/realestate/streetscapes-bank-united-states-bronx-first-domino-depression.html.

56"Marcus Is Arrested as He Defies Steuer," New York Times, February 21, 1931, http://timesmachine.nytimes.com/timesmachine/1931/02/21/98323627.html?pageNumber=1; "$50,000,000 Suit Is Filed Against Bank US Officers," New York Times, February 12, 1931, http://timesmachine.nytimes.com/timesmachine/1931/02/12/102214836.html?pageNumber=1.

57Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 45; Beth S. Wenger, New York Jews and the Great Depression: Uncertain Promise (NY, Syracuse University Press, 1999), 14, https://archive.org/details/newyork-jewsgreat0000weng.

58Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 45.

59"Justice Cohn Is Honored Here," New York Times, June 7, 1930, http://timesmachine.nytimes.com/timesmachine/1930/06/07/96146710.html?pageNumber=9.

60Wenger, New York Jews and the Great Depression, 11.

61Elias, Gossip Men, 109.

62"Marcus and Singer Must Serve Terms," New York Times, March 15, 1933, https://www.nytimes.com/1933/03/15/archives/marcus-and-singer-must-serve-terms-appeals-court-upholds-their.html.

63Elias, Gossip Men, 109.

64David L. Marcus, "5 Things You May Not Know About My Vile, Malicious Cousin Roy Cohn," The Wrap, September 27, 2019, https://www.thewrap.com/roy-cohn-cousin-5-things-to-know/.

65David B. Green, "1965: Pioneer of Electric Model Trains Dies," Haaretz, September 8, 2013, https://www.haaretz.com/jewish/2013-09-08/ty-article/.premium/1965-electric-model-trains-pioneer-dies/0000017f-f8cc-ddde-abff-fceda8150000.

66"Joshua Lionel Cowen," Jewish Virtual Library, n.d. https://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/joshua-lionel-cowen.

67"J.L. Cowen Settles Bank of U.S. Suit," New York Times, February 27, 1934, https://www.nytimes.com/1934/02/27/archives/jl-cowen-settles-bank-of-us-suit-former-director-eliminated-from.html.

68"J.L. Cowen Settles."

69"Fred W. Piderit, Bank Aide, 79, Dies," New York Times, June 20, 1961, http://timesmachine.nytimes.com/timesmachine/1961/06/20/97674643.html?pageNumber=33.

70"Joshua Lionel Cowen."

71Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 273.

72Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 300.

73Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 52.

74Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 51.

75Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 54.

76Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 68.

77Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 70.

78Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 69.

79Tate Delloye, "The Godfather of Tabloid: How childhood friend of Roy Cohn and son of an influential political fixer with ties to Mussolini left the CIA to start the National Enquirer with a loan from mob boss Frank Costello," Mail Online, November 20, 2019, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-7687673/national-enquirer-roy-cohn-CIA.html.

80Delloye, "Godfather of Tabloid."

81Delloye, "Godfather of Tabloid."

82Tate Delloye, “Roy Cohn: New Documentary Explores the Man Who Made Donald Trump,” Mail Online, March 14, 2019, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-6809557/Roy-Cohn-Donald-Trumps-ruthless-homophobic-attorney-partied-Studio-54-died-AIDS.html.
83Delloye, “Godfather of Tabloid.”
84Delloye, “Godfather of Tabloid.”
85Delloye, “Godfather of Tabloid.”
86Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 82.
87“Miss Renee Schine Becomes a Bride,” New York Times, December 29, 1950, http://timesmachine.nytimes.com/timesmachine/1950/12/29/82089074.html.

88Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 169.
89Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 168-70
90David Talbot, The Devil’s Chessboard: Allen Dulles, the CIA, and the Rise of America’s Secret Government, First Harper Perennial edition (New York: Harper Perennial, 2016), 176.
91Delloye, “Godfather of Tabloid.”
92“Catholic Anti-Communism,” Crisis Magazine, March 1, 1996, http://www.crisismagazine.com/1996/catholic-anti-communism-2.
93Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 280.
94Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 280-81.
95Rod Dreher, “Cardinal Mary,” The American Conservative, February 9, 2019. https://www.theamericanconservative.com/dreher/cardinal-mary-francis-spellman-gay-frederic-martel/.
96Talbot, Devil’s Chessboard, 188.
97Talbot, Devil’s Chessboard, 188.
98Talbot, Devil’s Chessboard, 188.
99Talbot, Devil’s Chessboard, 189.
100Talbot, Devil’s Chessboard, 189.
101Talbot, Devil’s Chessboard, 189.
102Talbot, Devil’s Chessboard, 186.
103Talbot, Devil’s Chessboard, 187.
104Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 188.
105Talbot, Devil’s Chessboard, 192.
106Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 249; Joan Cook, “David W. Peck, 87, Former Justice And Court Reformer in New York,” New York Times, August 24, 1990, https://www.nytimes.com/1990/08/24/obituaries/david-w-peck-87-former-justice-and-court-reformer-in-new-york.html.
107Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 250.
108Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 259.
109Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 259-60.
110Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 272, 300.
111Keith Wheeler and William Lambert, “Roy Cohn: Is He a Liar under Oath?,” LIFE, October 4, 1963, p. 25, 100; Homer Bigart, “Witness Says Cohn Told Him ‘It’s No Crime Not to Remember,’” New York Times, April 4, 1964, https://www.nytimes.com/1964/04/04/archives/witness-says-cohn-told-him-its-no-crime-not-to-remember.html.
112Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 260.
113Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 261.
114Wheeler and Lambert, “Cohn: Is He A Liar?,” 100.
115Foster Hailey, “Cohn Scheduled for Trial Today,” New York Times, March 23, 1964, https://www.nytimes.com/1964/03/23/archives/cohn-scheduled-for-trial-today-he-is-charged-with-perjury-before-us.html.
116Ken Auletta, “Don’t Mess With Roy Cohn, The Man Who Made Donald Trump,” Esquire, December 1978, https://www.esquire.com/news-politics/a46616/dont-mess-with-roy-cohn/.

117Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 282.

118Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 282-83.

119Auletta, “Don’t Mess with Roy Cohn,”; Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 295-96.

120Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 296-97.

121Auletta, “Don’t Mess with Roy Cohn.”

122Auletta, “Don’t Mess with Roy Cohn.”

123Securities & Exchange Commission v. Fifth Ave. Coach Lines, Inc., 289 F. Supp. 3 (S.D.N.Y. 1968), Justia Law, July 26, 1968, https://law.justia.com/cases/federal/district-courts/FSupp/289/3/1419260/.

124Securities & Exchange Commission v. Fifth Ave. Coach Lines.

125Securities & Exchange Commission v. Fifth Ave. Coach Lines.

126Willy Van Damme, “Mossad–A safe pass in Belgium,” Willy Van Damme’s Weblog, February 27, 2013, https://willyvandamme.wordpress.com/2013/02/27/mossadeen-vrijgeleide-in-belgi/.

127Auletta, “Don’t Mess with Roy Cohn.”

128Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 284.

129Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 284.

130Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 284-85.

131Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 285-86.

132Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 287.

133Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 331.

134Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 332.

135Russell Sackett, Sandy Smith, and William Lambert, “The Congressman and the Hoodlum,” LIFE, August 9, 1968, 20-26.

136Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 333-37.

137Sam Roberts, “Cornelius E. Gallagher, 7-Term New Jersey Congressman, Dies at 97,” New York Times, October 22, 2018, https://www.nytimes.com/2018/10/22/obituaries/cornelius-gallagher-dead.html.

138Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 341.

139Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 341; Elizabeth Mehren, “A Thirst for Power : Life and Times of Roy Cohn, the Flamboyant Lawyer Who Put Stamp on U.S. History,” Los Angeles Times, March 18, 1988, https://www.latimes.com/archives/la-xpm-1988-03-18-vw-1638-story.html.

140Anthony Summers and Stephen Dorril, Honeytrap - The Secret Worlds of Stephen Ward: Sex, Scandal and Deadly Secrets in the Profumo Affair (London: Headline, 2013), 249; S. William Snider, A Special Relationship: Trump, Epstein, And the Secret History of the Anglo-American Establishment, (Independently published, 2020), 332, https://www.amazon.com/gp/product/B08PX93Z1H/.

141“Klaus Barbie and the United States Government,” US Department of Justice, August 1983, 56, https://www.justice.gov/sites/default/files/criminal-hrsp/legacy/2011/02/04/08-02-83barbie-rpt.pdf.

142Snider, A Special Relationship, 347.

143Snider, A Special Relationship, 349.; Douglas Thompson, Stephen Ward, Scapegoat: They All Loved Him (Chicago: John Blake, 2014), 150.

144Tom Morgan, “The Spy Files: Lord Boothby’s Sordid Sex Parties with Ronnie Kray Revealed in MI5 Files,” The Telegraph, October 23, 2015, https://www.telegraph.co.uk/news/uknews/11948323/lord-boothby-sex-parties-ronnie-kray-mi5-documents.html.

145Adam Curtis, “The Mayfair Set: Four Stories about the Rise of Business and the Decline of Political Power,” BBC, July-August, 1999, video, https://www.bbc.co.uk/iplayer/episodes/p073k9s0/the-mayfair-set.

146“William Averell Harriman-People-Department History-Office of the Historian,” https://history.state.gov/departmenthistory/people/harriman-william-averell.

147Snider, A Special Relationship, 264-26.

148Snider, A Special Relationship, 268.

149Rebecca Pocklington, “Secret Society: The Sex, Secrets and Spies Rumours Surrounding Prince Philip’s Wild Thursday Club, as Portrayed in The Crown,” The Sun, February 12, 2020,

https://www.thesun.co.uk/news/10930861/prince-philip-thursday-club-the-crown-real-story-inside-sex-secrets-spies/.
150Snider, A Special Relationship, 270-71.
151Snider, A Special Relationship, 288-89.
152Snider, A Special Relationship, 288-89.
153Snider, A Special Relationship, 387.
154Snider, A Special Relationship, 387.
155Summers and Dorril, Honeytrap, 189.
156Peter Dale Scott, Deep Politics and the Death of JFK (University of California Press, 1996), 229-30.
157Snider, A Special Relationship, 356-59.

158Snider, A Special Relationship, 360-63.
159Snider, A Special Relationship, 364.
160Snider, A Special Relationship, 364-65.
161Snider, A Special Relationship, 366.
162Snider, A Special Relationship, 364-66.
163Snider, A Special Relationship, 230.
164Robert Sherrill, “King Cohn,” The Nation, August 12, 2009, https://www.thenation.com/article/archive/king-cohn/.
165Snider, A Special Relationship, 345-46.
166Snider, A Special Relationship, 345-46.
167“Broady Found Guilty In Wiretapping Case,” New York Times, December 9, 1955, https://www.nytimes.com/1955/12/09/archives/broady-found-guilty-in-wiretapping-case-broady-is-guilty-in-wiretap.html.
168H. P Albarelli, Leslie Sharp, and Alan Kent, Coup in Dallas: The Decisive Investigation into Who Killed JFK (Skyhorse Publishing, 2021), 229-32.
169Douglas Caddy, “Clendenin J. Ryan - Baltimore Millionaire and CIA Funder,” The Education Forum, November 18, 2007. https://educationforum.ipbhost.com/topic/11614-clendenin-j-ryan-baltimore-millionaire-and-cia-funder/.
170“Home - The George Town Club,” The George Town Club, https://www.georgetownclub.org/.
171Alan A. Block, Masters of Paradise: Organized Crime and the Internal Revenue Service in the Bahamas (Routledge, 1991), 85-102.
172Gary Webb, The Killing Game (New York: Seven Stories Press, 2014), 106.
173“House Select Committee on Assassinations Appendix to Hearings,” March 1979. Vol. 9, p.518. https://aarclibrary.org/publib/contents/hsca/contents_hsca_vol9.htm.
174Bock, Masters of Paradise Island, 85-102.
175“Guterma Died Taking Just One More Gamble,” Fort Lauderdale News, April 9, 1977.
176Wheeler and Lambert, “Cohn: Is He A Liar?,” 100.
177“United States of America, Appellee, v. Virgil D. Dardi, Robert B. Gravis, Charles Rosenthal and Charles Berman, Defendants-Appellants, 330 F.2d 316 (2d Cir. 1964),” Justia Law, March 17, 1964, https://law.justia.com/cases/federal/appellate-courts/F2/330/316/116165/.
178Hearings, Reports and Prints of the Senate Committee on Banking and Currency, 1964, p.299, https://www.google.com/books/edition/Hearings_Reports_and_Prints_of_the_Senat/9T-c4AAAAIAAJ
179“US vs. Dardi.”
180“Decisions and Reports: Volume 40,” Securities and Exchange Commision, 1960, p. 936, https://play.google.com/store/books/details/United_States_Securities_and_Exchange_Commission_D?id=4z2-9QYg4X4C.
181Jeremy Kuzmarov, Modernizing Repression: Police Training and Nation Building in the American Century (Amherst: University of Massachusetts Press, 2012), 101.
182Chester L. Cooper, The Lost Crusade: America in Vietnam (New York: Dodd, Mead, 1970), 52.
183Kuzmarov, Modernizing Repression, 101.

184“Decisions and Reports,” 938.
185Regarding CIC’s intelligence connections: Scott, Deep Politics, 168-69; Alfred Friendly, “Four Agencies Probe Act of Chiang’s United States Contractor,” Washington Post, September 10, 1951, printed in P.11066-67. Senate Congressional Record, https://www.congress.gov/bound-congressional-record/1951/09/10.
186“Memorandum In The Matter of The Bon Ami Company: File No. 1-685,” Securities and Exchange Act Release no. 34 - 6677, 1934, p. 3, https://play.google.com/store/books/details?id=YhM7AQAAMAAJ.
187J. C. Louis and Harvey Yazijian, The Cola Wars, 1st ed (New York: Everest House, 1980), 302.

188“Letter from Louis Mortimer Bloomfield to Carlo d’Amelio,” January 26, 1961, https://archive.org/details/Damelio.
189Frances Stonor Saunders, The Cultural Cold War: The CIA and the World of Arts and Letters (New Press: Distributed by W.W. Norton & Co, 2000), 298.
190Jonathan Marshall, “Wall Street, the Supermob and the CIA,” Lobster, May 2022, https://www.lobster-magazine.co.uk/free/lobster83/lob83-wall-street-supermob-cia.pdf.

CHAPTER 5
SHADES OF GRAY

THE PR MAN

Today, the Koreagate scandal of the 1970s is largely forgotten, despite the lurid headlines it inspired at the time. Shadowy intelligence operatives, slush funds, kickbacks, complicated schemes to buy political loyalty, and rumors of sex and blackmail were just some of the themes that swirled around Koreagate and the man at its center, Tongsun Park.

As noted in the previous chapter, Park had studied at Georgetown University, where he developed close ties to certain groups of young conservative activists. While there, he was also recruited by the KCIA, the Korean intelligence apparatus. After graduating, Park became a well to-do businessman in the DC area as well as a social gadfly, forming connections with congressmen, senators, and staffers on both sides of the political aisle.

What became known as Koreagate was said to have begun when Chung Il Kwon, South Korea's prime minister, tasked the head of the KCIA, Kim Hyong-uk, with devising an operation to influence political opinion in the United States. The resulting scheme entailed the services of Park, who was then brokering rice sales contracts from the US to South Korea under the auspices of the government's Food for Peace program. Working with Congressman Richard T. Hanna – who represented California, one of America's largest rice-producing states – Park utilized the commissions on these sales to peddle influence. He called upon his impressive network of contacts, who were interwoven throughout the offices of powerful Washington businesses and institutions, as well as the private clubs and backrooms of the capital, to carry out his series of kickbacks and bribes.

Appearing on the periphery of Koreagate – at least as far as the official investigation was concerned – was one of Park's close associates, the powerful lobbyist and Public Relations executive Robert Keith Gray. Across the course of his lengthy and impressive career, Gray was adept at the art of influence peddling. The breadth of his associates ran from Korean CIA operatives such as Park to US CIA agents such as Edwin P. Wilson and soon-to-be CIA director William Casey. Among his other close associates and/or clients were Adnan Khashoggi, Robert Maxwell, the Teamsters, and BCCI (the Bank of Credit and Commerce International), among many others. It all added up to Gray acting as a key node in a shadowy network that was becoming increasingly aligned, and integrated, with the halls of power. Gray's name would often bubble up alongside numerous scandals, with Koreagate being just one. Others would include Watergate, the largely forgotten pageboy scandal of 1982, and the Iran-Contra affair.

Gray hailed from Hastings, a moderately sized industrial town nestled in the Nebraskan countryside, about two and half hours west of Omaha. Early on, he showed an interest in politics and was an avid participant in his high school debate club. After his graduation in 1939, he and several members of his debate club attended Carleton College in Minnesota; his chosen area of study was political science. A year later, with World War II looming on the horizon, the US Navy launched its V-7 program, which was a rapid-training course for naval officers. V-7 worked closely with universities across the United States, and Gray quickly enlisted.

The next couple of years were a whirlwind for Gray. He attended the Navy Supply Corps Midshipmen Officer's School in Newport, Rhode Island, and found time to take business management courses at Harvard. This threefold educational path – politics, business, and adjacency to the military – became defining characteristics of the rest of his long and storied career. Yet, it would be some time before he was able to make a name for himself.

After the war he bounced back to Hastings, where he worked at the naval depot that had been built there. He spent his free time building social capital: he taught business courses at Hastings College and joined many of the city's organizations and social clubs (including the local Masonic lodge).[1]

During this second period in Hastings, Gray became acquainted with Fred Seaton, owner of the Hastings Tribune and a powerful figure in Nebraskan politics. Gray then served as a state senator before serving as President Eisenhower's assistant secretary of state for legislative affairs. He brought few things with him to the capital – among them Seaton's contact information. Seaton managed to find Gray a position in the vast complexes of the post-war bureaucracy. He went to work in the Pentagon, serving as a special assistant to Assistant Secretary of the Navy Albert Pratt.

Gray received a promotion in May 1956, which propelled him higher in the strata of power within the Eisenhower administration. He became a special assistant to the White House, acting as deputy to Seaton. Yet, as Susan Trento points outs in The Power House, there may have been more to this position than meets the eye. He had been designated as an "excepted appointment," which means that, in lieu of a standard promotion, he had "been simply detailed to the White House from the Navy."[2]

If Gray was still technically working for the Navy while at the White House, it is likely that his new position involved intelligence and security concerns. His primary task was to sift through reams of data in connection with Washington job seekers. "Gray," Trento writes, "was controlling the flow of information about everyone looking for patronage, or political jobs, at a federal level."[3] A significant amount of this information was marked "highly confidential," which gave Gray an inside track on government power. Soon, he was working under Sherman Adams, Eisenhower's chief of staff. Adams was an early Rockefeller Republican and a master bureaucrat. He was known for regulating access to the president: nobody, it was said, could speak to Eisenhower without Adams' approval. He made up an inner core of Eisenhower cronies that included Floyd Odlum and George Allen – powerful, politically connected businessmen whose interests existed in immediate proximity to the emergent "military industrial complex," as Eisenhower would later call it, as well as the increasingly brazen intersection of intelligence and business interests. This was the world that Gray was easing his way into under the tutelage of Adams. After the untimely departure of Adams under the cloud of scandal, Gray gained a new mentor – Richard Nixon. This was Gray's introduction into an expanded network of contacts that shaped the trajectory of the rest of his life. In 1960, he went to work on the ill-fated Nixon presidential campaign, perhaps encountering for the first time his future friend William Casey. He also became associated with Clark Clifford in this period; Clifford, a Democratic Party insider and archetypal cold warrior, was one of DC's elite attorneys and had an extensive Rolodex.

Decades later, Clifford was among the numerous US political and business figures implicated in the BCCI scandal, the subject of chapter 7. Beginning in the early 1980s, Clifford served as chairman of the board of First American Bankshares, a major DC-based bank that had fallen under the secret control of BCCI via their takeover of the bank's parent company. As Edward Jay Epstein has pointed out, First American was a bank used by numerous congressmen and other political figures – control of the bank created possible blackmail opportunities.[4] Shortly after Clifford took control of First American, Gray joined the bank's board of directors.[5]

Following John F. Kennedy's defeat of Nixon in 1960, Gray left government service for a position at Hill & Knowlton (H & K), a major public relations and lobbying firm that had been launched in the 1920s by John Hill and Donald Knowlton. While H & K would become synonymous with the inner conflicts and flashy affairs of the DC Beltway – with clients including everyone from presidential hopefuls to BCCI – in the early days, it was a Cleveland-based company with a particular focus on the local steel industry and the banks that financed it.[6]

In the aftermath of World War II, H & K became a major promoter of the aviation industries that were then benefitting from the fusion of American heavy industry and the US military. John Hill, for example, was a member of the Air Power League, a pressure group formed by a large coterie of businessmen and military officers with the goal of educating the public about aviation and raising support for the construction of "greater airport facilities and air training programs."[7] The league was closely aligned with the Aviation Industries Association (AIA), the major aviation trade association that H & K had taken on as a client. Such connections firmly ensconced H & K within the military-industrial complex, as the Encyclopedia of Public Relations makes clear:

> "The [Aviation Industries Association] sought a steady diet of military appropriations for its member companies, and it promoted air safety, travel, and other aspects of civil aviation. After the war ended, military contracts took a nosedive, so the agency focused on convincing the federal government to audit the nation's air policies and its readiness for another war. When both Congress and President

> Harry S. Truman set up commissions to review air policy, Hill & Knowlton helped industry officials prepare their testimony and publicize the board's findings. Joining with the American Legion, the AIA sponsored a campaign, "Air Power is Peace Power," beginning in 1947."[8]

H & K was also linked, it seems, to the CIA. Robert Crowley, a longtime operator within the Agency's Directorate of Operations, stated that the firm's "overseas offices were perfect 'cover' for the ever-expanding CIA."[9] Crowley would have been in a position to know: he acted as the CIA's "liaison" to the business world, which entailed the use of existing businesses as covers for agents abroad and the creation of proprietary firms to act as fronts.[10] Crowley may even have helped bring a young George H.W.Bush into the CIA's fold, as Bush's Zapata Petroleum served as an Agency front for various Caribbean operations during Crowley's time as an Agency liaison.[11] Gray himself was likely tied directly to these efforts. When Edwin Wilson checked with the CIA's Office of Security prior to adding Gray to the board of a CIA front called Consultants International, "he discovered that Gray had already been cleared by the spy agency – that Gray had previous clearances."[12]

INSIDE THE GEORGE TOWN CLUB

During the 1960s Gray became aligned with a powerful bloc of interests known as the China Lobby. An early Cold War equivalent of today's Israel Lobby, the China Lobby represented the Nationalist Chinese – the Kuomintang (KMT) – and their supporters in Washington. The China Lobby called for US support for Chiang Kai-Shek's government in Taiwan against the Chinese Communists led by Mao Zedong. In its most extreme form, this support entailed militarized intervention in mainland China and elsewhere in Southeast Asia. As scholars such as Peter Dale Scott have shown, many of these activities set in motion a complex chain of events that later cascaded into the Vietnam War.[13]

One of the strongest actors in the China Lobby was Anna Chennault, who cultivated contacts with countless politicians, businessmen, military figures, and intelligence officers. She held positions on the boards of numerous companies and acted as an advisor to various US presidents. She also served as a diplomatic channel to the leaders not only in Taiwan but in South Korea, the Philippines, Japan, and elsewhere. Gray was particularly close to Chennault, though the exact details of how the two first met are unknown.

Anna Chennault's husband had been Claire Chennault, the leader of the First American Volunteer Group – better known as the "Flying Tigers" – during World War II. With ranks drawn from the US military, the Flying Tigers trained at bases maintained in Burma before flying to China to fight Japanese forces alongside the KMT. From the late 1930s, Claire Chennault had served as a military advisor to Chiang Kai-Shek and his brother-in-law, the powerful T. V. Soong.

As previously detailed in Chapter 1, Claire Chennault was a very well-connected man and this included ties to the Roosevelt administration. After the war, the Chennaults became the core members of the China Lobby and, in those early years, managed an impressive airlift of "American relief supplies in China."[14] Central to this effort had been the creation of a new airline called Civil Air Transport (CAT). As previously noted, CAT would later morph into the CIA airline Air America, which would subsequently become the infamous Southern Air Transport.

There were also other airline companies in this mix. As was also noted in Chapter 1, an air freighter called Flying Tiger Lines was set up by a coterie of Claire Chennault's former pilots, and Anna Chennault joined the company as its vice president of international affairs. Evidence suggests that Flying Tiger Lines was also utilized by the CIA, and its board of directors included individuals linked to organized crime.[15] At the same time, Anna acted as a consultant to numerous large aviation concerns, including Pan American, whose interests directly intermingled with those of the CIA's CAT/Air America complex.16 At any rate, Flying Tiger Lines remained squarely in the fold of the China Lobby and its numerous allies. "Over the years," writes Susan Trento, "Flying Tiger … would evolve into World Airways, and Gray would become a board member."[17]

Gray's early political mentor, the future president Richard Nixon, was also an ally of the China Lobby. Many journalists and academics have identified Nixon as being a "member" of the lobby, but a 1992 academic paper suggests that his involvement with them was more pragmatic than ideological.[18] He fostered good relations with Chiang Kai-Shek and T. V. Soong, which spilled over into business arrangements during the 1960s, when Nixon temporarily left politics for private law. One of his biggest clients was Pepsi, the Taiwanese interests of which were firmly held by members of Soong's family.[19]

All of this provides a backdrop to the creation of the George Town Club in March 1966. Its main organizers included Gray, Park, and Chennault, along with Henry Preston Pitts, Lawrence Merthan, and General Graves B. Erskine. The Club was officially established "for the purpose of bringing together leaders who had an impact on the United States, and the world, through their work in various business, professional, civic, social and political milieus."[20] Pitts and Merthan, according to the Washington Post, worked alongside Gray at H & K at the time of the club's founding.[21] By the time the Koreagate hearings began in the late 1970s, Pitts had left H & K and gone to work for the US Information Agency, the once covert body set up during the Eisenhower administration to direct "public diplomacy" and Cold War propaganda.[22]

Erskine had a lengthy career in the world of intelligence and covert operations. In 1950, he ran the military wing of the Survey Mission to Southeast Asia, which brought him into close contact with the anti-Communist interests that were aligned with the domestic China Lobby. Working closely with representatives of Nationalist China, he developed a military strategy to support KMT fighters in Burma and their allies in Thailand. This was the birth of Operation Paper, which marshaled the resources of CIA operatives such as the mob-linked banker and OSS veteran Paul Helliwell.[23] Arms flowed to Thailand and Burma aboard ships chartered by Sea Supply, a front company organized by Helliwell, while others were procured through the shadowy World Commerce Corporation. Peter Dale Scott has argued that Operation Paper was a key point in the development of US intelligence complicity in the global drug trade – at the very least, it marked a major instance of intelligence's indirect support for drug traffickers.[24]

In 1953, Erskine became the director of Special Operations at the Department of Defense. This put him in charge of an obscure office within the Pentagon that served as the liaison between the armed forces and the CIA. Here, Erskine oversaw an ever-increasing number of covert operations and special wars dotting the globe. Operating under Erskine was the infamous Edward Lansdale, America's architect of guerrilla warfare and psychological operations in the post-war era. When Erskine suffered a heart attack in 1957 and took a protracted leave from the Special Operations office, Lansdale stepped in and ran it in his stead.

The intersection of the George Town Club's membership with China Lobby interests and skilled operators in the world of covert intelligence was apparently unending. The manager of the club, for example, was Norman Larsen. Larsen had previously worked in the Washington offices of the Life Line Foundation, one of the charitable bodies owned by Texas oilman and financier of right-wing causes, H. L. Hunt.[25] Other recipients of Hunt's largess included Foreign Intelligence Digest, a private intelligence magazine organized and edited by Douglas MacArthur's former intelligence chief, Charles Willoughby. While Willoughby operated far from the environs of the George Town Club, numerous authors have highlighted his linkages to the wider China Lobby network. David Clayton, for example, writes that the lobby "was intrinsically tied to advocates of [a foreign policy of] rollback … and to MacArthur, through his intelligence chief General Charles Willoughby," while Harvey Klehr writes that Willoughby was a "China Lobby ally."[26] And Peter Dale Scott writes that "others who used [Joseph] McCarthy to settle old scores included the Chinese Nationalists of the China Lobby, their spokesman Alfred Kohlberg, and General MacArthur's Prussian-born intelligence chief in Japan, General Charles Willoughby."[27] The expansive nature of this network can also be illustrated by Norman Larsen's membership in the International Youth Federation for Freedom, a "non-profit anti-Communist group" that appears to have had some working relationship with the CIA.[28] The International Youth Federation for Freedom was founded by none other than Tongsun Park, along with his close friend and college roommate Douglas Caddy.

Park, in his Koreagate testimony, makes passing reference to Caddy, noting that Caddy – who would appear later in the course of the Watergate scandal by serving briefly as E. Howard Hunt's attorney – had been the executive director of the Young Americans for Freedom. As noted in the previous chapter, Young Americans for Freedom had been organized by former CIA officer, close friend of Roy Cohn, and National Review founder William F. Buckley and counted Charles Willoughby on its advisory board. When Park mentioned Caddy in his testimony, it was during a line of questioning concerning a man who later figured heavily in the clandestine espionage activities of Robert Maxwell: Senator John Tower. Tower, who was also a member of the George Town Club, had been particularly close to Park. "I was a friend of the [Tower] family," Park stated, before noting Tower's involvement in "helping Young Americans for Freedom, which was founded by one of my closest friends."[29] The "closest friend" alluded to here was Caddy.

A State Department telegram concerning the George Town Club reports that, for the first six years of its existence, the club had operated in the red. Nevertheless, it managed to stay afloat, apparently through the intercession of its owners. The governing board was "divided … equally between the Democratic and Republican parties." The telegram goes on to state that, at the time, Clark W. Thompson had been serving as chairman of the club's board. Thompson was the quintessential moderate Texas Democrat, having served for some three decades as one of the state's representatives. Working both sides was Thompson's forte. For instance, when it came to the issue of school desegregation, he broke with most of his colleagues who opposed it, while he also voted against the Civil Rights Acts of 1957 and 1960.

A careful examination of Thompson's affiliations reveals links to the worlds of organized crime and intelligence. Thompson was married to the daughter of William Lewis Moody Jr., a key player in the world of Texas finance and insurance. Moody's flagship firm was American National Insurance Company (ANICO), founded in Galveston, Texas, in 1905. The Moodys were briefly mentioned in the last chapter as Moody's grandson, Shearn Moody Jr., was a close friend and client of Roy Cohn. According to a mutual friend of Cohn's and Moody's, the "eccentric" Moody supplied Cohn with "many little boys of the night," which he also he did for other specific guests who visited his Texas ranch.[30]

Thompson had served on the board and as ANICO's treasurer during the 1920s but departed when he entered politics. At the same time that he was serving as chairman of the George Town Club, he had rekindled ties to the conglomerate and was listed as its official lobbyist.[31] Morris Shenker, best known as Jimmy Hoffa's attorney, was also ANICO's attorney for a time and he helped bring the insurance firm into the mob-dominated world of Las Vegas hotels and casinos. As Sally Denton and Roger Morris write, "ANICO … funneled untold millions into Las Vegas gambling interests, including $13 million to Shenker himself … and, most significantly, to Parvin-Dohrmann – the company that owned the Stardust, Aladdin, and Fremont."[32] It certainly helped that E. Parry Thomas, the man credited with establishing the Las Vegas strip, was closely aligned with Marriner and George Eccles, the offspring of a prominent Mormon banking and construction family (e. g., Marriner served as President Roosevelt's Federal Reserve chief). George Eccles maintained a spot on the board of ANICO and nurtured ties to a number of ventures that were, at the very least, adjacent to organized crime.[33]

George Eccles was also affiliated with American Bankers Life Assurance Company, located in Miami, Florida, where the CIA's Paul Helliwell served as its general counsel. Furthermore, the offices of American Bankers Life were used by Helliwell as headquarters for the Agency's SEA Supply operation.[34]

In addition to this important CIA linkage, American Bankers Life also connected to Miami National Bank. As discussed in Chapter 1, Miami National "was identified in 1969 as having served between 1963 and 1967 as a conduit through which 'hot' syndicate money was exported by Meyer Lansky's couriers and 'laundered' through the interlocking Exchange and Investment Bank in Geneva."[35]

Clearly, the George Town Club was nestled within a wider network of entities and institutions that were very sensitive to Washington backroom politics, organized crime, and the CIA. Perhaps that is why, as reported in numerous accounts, the CIA became concerned that one of the main figures behind the club was Tongsun Park, a known asset of the Korean CIA. While the KCIA and the CIA were cooperating entities, the KCIA did engage in activities – such as those that later blossomed into the Koreagate scandal – that were seen as compromising US political figures and also seen as potentially disruptive for US geopolitical interests. As a result, the CIA dispatched an agent to monitor the club's comings and goings.

That individual was Edwin P. Wilson, a man who would become known as a "rogue" agent roughly a decade later, after he was linked to various terrorist and assassination plots.

A sizable portion of Wilson's early career in the CIA entailed operating undercover as a staffer for the American Federation of Labor and the Congress of Industrial Organizations (AFL-CIO), the large union combine known as a proponent of "business unionism." Since the Agency's inception, the Agency and the AFL-CIO had worked closely together, with the union providing cover for agents and operations, while the CIA often subsidized the activities of the AFL-CIO's foreign wings.[36] Wilson worked in the office of Paul Hall, the head of the AFL-CIO's Maritime Trades Department, which covered unions involved in shipping-related trades and industries. This was the beginning of Wilson's long-running involvement in maritime activities.

After leaving the AFL-CIO, his work for the CIA involved the management of proprietary firms, many of which operated in the world of shipping, freight forwarding, and logistics. One of the first of these was Maritime Consultants, which had been set up in Washington, DC with CIA funds. According to Joseph Trento, "within months he was chartering barges to Vietnam, arranging cover in commercial businesses for CIA agents, and setting up businesses around the world. Using his maritime cover, Wilson did detailed surveys of nearly every port in Africa and the Pacific."[37] One wonders if Wilson's involvement with the George Town Club had less to do with monitoring the activities of Gray, Park, and Chennault and more to do with managing the complexities of these covert maritime operations. It is certainly possible, given Gray's own past with the Navy. In addition, Wilson's business in Vietnam would have gained considerably from contacts with Anna Chennault, who was closely connected to the government and elsewhere in Southeast Asia. At any rate, the arrival of Wilson at the George Town Club marked the beginning of a long association between him and Gray.

There were, for example, their trips to Taiwan, where each had business interests – interests that, in all likelihood, were interrelated. Wilson gained lucrative contracts from the Nationalist Chinese military, while Gray signed on the Taiwanese government as a client. The account was entrusted to George Murphy, an actor who became a US Senator representing California, but, at the time, was an H & K employee. Curiously, Gray routed the work through a separate company that he set up specifically for these purposes, called GM (presumably for Gray-Murphy). Susan Trento writes that "according to Wilson, Gray set up … GM to handle the Taiwanese account. Since Anna Chennault trusted Murphy, Gray put the senator in charge of GM."[38] Murphy, unsurprisingly, was a member of the George Town Club.

Some of Wilson and Gray's joint activities dovetailed with those of the CIA. Gray was a board member of Consultants International, a firm that Wilson managed from offices adjacent to those of H & K on K Street in the capital. Gray later disavowed knowing Wilson and stated that he had been added to the board of Consultants International without Gray's knowledge. Gray's account is hard to believe and many of those embedded in this network, including H & K employees and Wilson himself, have pushed back against Gray's interpretation of events. At any rate, Consultants International was not simply a consultancy firm. It was also an Agency proprietary firm, set up as a successor to Wilson's earlier CIA front company, Maritime Consulting.[39]

There are plenty of hints and suggestions that Gray, Wilson, Park, and the byzantine web of China Lobby activists and intelligence operatives that circulated around the George Town Club were involved in more than just social networking and the creation of lobbying groups. Eavesdropping and blackmail seem to have been part of the club's covert mandate. Future Reagan national security advisor Richard Allen – who would have known Gray through the involvement of each in the Heritage Foundation – suggested when interviewed by Susan Trento that the club was bugged.[40] Jim Hougan, in his classic Secret Agenda, points to even darker possibilities. He writes that he was informed in a letter from Frank Terpil, Wilson's longtime partner, that Wilson had used the club to collect dirt on prominent Washington politicians and businessmen by using it as a place to "arrange trysts for the politically powerful."[41] He quotes from the letter:

> Historically, one of Wilson's Agency jobs was to subvert members of both houses [of Congress] by any means necessary…. Certain people could be easily coerced by living out their sexual fantasies in the flesh…. A remembrance of these occasions [was] permanently recorded via selected cameras, I'm sure for historical purposes only. The technicians in charge of filming [were] TSD personnel. The unwitting porno stars advanced in their political careers, some of [whom] may still be in office. You may now realize the total ineffectiveness of the "Watchdog Committees" assigned to oversee clandestine operations.[42]

Former Nebraska state senator John DeCamp, in his work on the Franklin scandal (the subject of chapter 10), alleges that Gray was the "closest friend in Washington" of Harold Andersen, the publisher of the Omaha World Herald who was alleged to have played a role in that scandal, which dealt with a politically-connected, nationwide pedophile ring.[43] DeCamp also notes that Andersen was one of the key Nebraskans who was closely tied to the man at the center of Franklin scandal, Larry King, who was also actively aided by George H.W.Bush in rehabilitating his post-scandal image.[44]

DeCamp, who attempted to expose government efforts to sweep the scandal under the rug in The Franklin Cover-Up, also asserted that Gray himself was "reportedly a specialist in homosexual blackmail operations for the CIA." DeCamp also wrote that the sexual-blackmail operations in which Gray's associate Edwin Wilson was intimately involved were "apparently continuing the work of a reported collaborator of Gray from the 1950s – McCarthy committee counsel Roy Cohn."[45] Cohn and Gray reportedly knew each other, but the exact nature of their relationship is difficult to discern. They were, however, most certainly intimately acquainted during Ronald Reagan's 1980 presidential campaign, when both men worked closely with William Casey, who was the campaign's manager and subsequently Reagan's CIA director. Shortly after the campaign, Cohn, Gray and Jeffrey Epstein would all take on arms dealer Adnan Khashoggi as a client at the dawn of the Iran-Contra affair.

THE CIA'S BLONDE GHOST

Edwin Wilson ostensibly left the CIA in 1971 under incredibly murky circumstances, though the most common story involves his commercial cover being blown by a Soviet asset. Per the media narrative that was spun during the course of the manhunt for Wilson and his subsequent imprisonment, Wilson is said to have cut ties with the Agency and become a covert private operator for hire – a "rogue." Yet, evidence released not only during his trial but well after its conclusion shows that Wilson remained in close contact with a cadre of CIA officers and officials whose activities, as the 1970s wore on and the Agency was battered by reformists' efforts, took on increasingly strange and frightening forms. This circle was centered around the man known as the "blonde ghost," Theodore "Ted" Shackley.[46]

Shackley, like Wilson, came from a background somewhat different from the usual CIA leadership, which tended to cultivate its upper ranks from the posh world of white-shoe law firms and high finance. He instead hailed from Florida and began his career in the Army; his recruitment into the CIA came after a stint in the Army Counterintelligence Corps. By 1953, he was working under William Harvey at the West Berlin CIA station. Here, Shackley operated at the very frontier of the Cold War: the West Berlin station's activities were carried out under the shadow of the Berlin Wall, and the city was a veritable melting pot of espionage intrigue. While working under Harvey, Shackley may have gotten a taste for the more "exotic" aspects of CIA work. After he returned to the States, Harvey managed a CIA assassination team – with many of its members having been mob hitmen recruited into Agency service under the auspices of the ZR/RIFLE program.

Harvey's assassination activities were woven into Operation Mongoose, the joint CIA-Army covert war against Castro's Cuba. The central hub of the CIA's side of the anti-Castro operations was the Miami station, code-named JM/WAVE. Tucked away in an unassuming building on the extended campus of the University of Miami, the station "employed from 300 to 700 agents and 2,000 to as many as 6,000 Cubans."[47] In 1962 – right as the CIA's Cuban project was spiraling toward its violent apex – Shackley became JM/WAVE's station chief. Joseph Trento asserts that, in this period, Shackley was mentored in the fine of art of covert financial activities by Paul Helliwell: "Helliwell showed Shackley … the importance of income from Agency fronts. According to numerous case offices who worked at

JM/WAVE, Helliwell helped Shackley make certain that fronts like Zenith Technical Enterprises were the perfect cover for JM/WAVE."[48]

These allegations are partially corroborated by other sources. The Washington Post, for instance, reported in 1980 that Helliwell "was instrumental in helping to direct a network of CIA undercover operations and 'proprietaries.'"[49] Curiously, one of the only declassified CIA documents to mention Helliwell is a list of files removed from internal circulation in order to avoid turning them over to Watergate investigators.[50] Almost all of the other files in the list deal directly with the CIA's support of anti-Castro Cuban exiles.

JM/WAVE was where Shackley formed close relationships that would shape the rest of his long career, both inside the Agency and out. Chief among Shackley's alliances that were forged via JM/WAVE was with Thomas Clines, who later emerged as a key player in the Iran-Contra conspiracy. Clines served as Shackley's deputy, even after both men stepped beyond the confines of the CIA itself. There was also a score of Cuban exiles: the notorious Felix Rodriguez (known for his involvement in the death of Marxist revolutionary Che Guevara and his own role in Iran-Contra), Rafael Quintero, and Ricardo Chavez. Many of these individuals followed Shackley overseas in 1966, when the "blonde ghost" was made the CIA station head in Vientiane, Laos. It was a perfect spot for a crew that was increasingly adept at "wetworks" (i.e. assassinations) and black operations. This particular station oversaw the Agency's participation in the secret war being waged within Laos and Cambodia.

Vientiane, during this period, was the epicenter of a major illicit trade in contraband, gold, and raw opium, most of it destined for Saigon.[51] Laos boasted a handful of prominent opium merchants with deep ties to the country's political and military establishment. One of these merchants, Ouane Rattikone, had previously commanded the Laotian army, and his drug trafficking operations saw extensive collaboration with Nguyen Cao Ky, the high-ranking commander of the South Vietnamese Air Force. Not only were Ky and his men moving raw opium from Laos on their planes, but Ky was also working closely with the CIA in their secret war efforts such as Operation Haylift, which dropped saboteurs deep into the jungles of North Vietnam.[52] The raw opium was refined into heroin and then moved into Hong Kong, where it was readied for global export.

This circuit was of immense interest to American organized crime figures. In 1965, Meyer Lansky's financial agent John Pullman flew to Hong Kong, reportedly to investigate the burgeoning wartime trade. Several years later, Florida mob boss Santo Trafficante arrived in Hong Kong and soon made his way to Saigon. "Soon after Trafficante's visit to Hong Kong," writes Alfred McCoy, "a Filipino courier ring started delivering Hong Kong heroin to Mafia distributors in the United States. US Bureau of Narcotics intelligence reports in the early 1970s indicated that another courier ring was bringing Hong Kong heroin into the United States through the Caribbean, Trafficante's territory."[53]

The presence of Trafficante is telling. He had been an active supporter of the anti-Castro operations, and after the Agency wound down its JM/WAVE activities, many Cuban exiles trained by the CIA as part of that program went to work trafficking drugs for Trafficante. Was Shackley involved in some way with Trafficante's arrival in Southeast Asia? It is possible, as there are plenty of apocryphal stories about Shackley personally introducing Trafficante to Vang Pao, a Laotian heroin warlord, during a 1968 trip to Saigon. While the details of those stories cannot be confirmed, Vang Pao would have had to have known of Shackley, as he commanded the Hmong troops that were being backed and trained by the CIA in Laos. According to McCoy, the CIA's logistical networks allowed Vang Pao to increase the efficacy of the Laos-South Vietnam opium trade:

> Air logistics for the opium trade were further improved in 1967 when the CIA and USAID … gave Vang Pao financial assistance in forming his own private airline, Xieng Khouang Air Transport. The company's president, Lo Kham Thy, said the airline was formed in late 1967 when two C-47s were acquired from Air America and Continental Air Services. The company's schedule was limited to shuttle flights between Long Tieng and Vientiane that carried relief supplies and an occasional handful of passengers. Financial control was shared by Vang Pao, his brother, his cousin, and his father-in-law.… Reliable Hmong sources reported that Xieng Khouang Air Transport was the airline used to carry opium and heroin between Long Tieng and Vientiane.[54]

This was the crucial context for the formation of a group that would later be known as Shackley's "private CIA." On hand in Laos was Thomas Clines, and there they soon became acquainted with another future Iran-Contra co-conspirator – Richard Secord. An Air Force pilot, Secord had been detailed to the CIA's Laotian station and he personally knew many of those involved in the traffic of opium via the airways, including the aforementioned Air Marshal Ky.[55] Another figure, who would also later play a key role in the Iran-Contra affair and who also worked with Shackley in Laos was Major John K. Singlaub. Singlaub had served alongside Paul Helliwell in the OSS.

Playing an active role in logistical support for the Agency's secret war was Edwin Wilson. Much of this involved a close working relationship with the head of the Southeast Asian division of the CIA's Air America, James Cunningham, who also ultimately answered to Shackley.[56] Though Wilson was not stationed in Southeast Asia, he frequently made trips between Washington and Vientiane. There can be little doubt that these jaunts of his were of immense interest to Gray, Park, Chennault, and other members of the China Lobby who populated Wilson's inner stateside circle. The China Lobby, after all, was wired into the world of intelligence and had stumped for the escalation of conflict in Southeast Asia, an escalation that finally erupted into the Vietnam War.

In 1968, Shackley took over the Saigon CIA station, which gave him operational oversight of a vast gamut of operations – including, for a period, the infamous Phoenix Program. The Phoenix Program, while financed by the CIA, operated under the auspices of CORDS (Civil Operations and Revolutionary Development Support). Overseeing CORDS was the CIA's old Southeast Asian hand and bureaucratic mastermind, William Colby. Rumors among the military's in-country brass abounded that Shackley exerted influence over Colby through sexual blackmail. Clearly, Shackley and Wilson, alleged to have been carrying out similar activities at the George Town Club, were quite similar in this regard:

> Colby, then married to his first wife, returned to Vietnam without his family from a stint back in Langley. According to retired US Army Colonel Tullius Accompura, who served in Vietnam, Colby had a girlfriend, a Vietnamese senator's wife. Shackley's colleagues soon realized that Shackley was keeping a book on the private lives of all of his superiors in Vietnam, including Colby and military officers such as General Creighton Abrams, who, according to Accompura, was involved with a Vietnamese woman. If pressed upon an undesirable topic by a colleague, Shackley would warn him off by mentioning any personal entanglements. As John Sherwood put it: "He was good at letting you know he knew, that he had something on you, that he had an edge."[57]

Shackley remained in Saigon until May 1972, when he took over as head of the CIA's Western Hemisphere Division. Since Cuba fell under the rubric of this division, it was something of a return for Shackley to his earlier haunts. Yet, by this point, the anti-Castro operations had largely fallen by the wayside. There was still operational support for Cuban exile groups, many of which were factionalizing into militant terrorist groups such as Coordination of United Revolutionary Organizations (CORU). The Agency's eyes were darting farther south, toward Southern Cone countries like Chile, where socialist leader Salvador Allende had come to power. From his perch at the top of the Western Hemisphere Division, Shackley was on the bureaucratic frontline for the 1973 coup that brought Augusto Pinochet to power in Chile and the parade of dirty wars that ripped across South America.

Even before Shackley left Saigon, his network of contacts was busy making arrangements. Thomas Clines – who would soon be embroiled in the Agency's ventures in Chile – had left Saigon in 1970 and rotated back stateside to spend time at the Naval War College. Joining him there was Richard Secord. Secord, in this period, completed his War College thesis, which had been directed by the "CIA advisor to the president," Clarence Huntley. The prescient title of his thesis was "Unconventional Warfare/Covert Operations as an Instrument of US Foreign Policy."

Throughout 1971, Clines kept in touch with Edwin Wilson, who was now allegedly operating outside of the CIA's purview. It was at that point that Clines brought Wilson into the realm of naval intelligence by way of a secretive unit known as Task Force 157.

TASK FORCE 157

The groundwork for what became Task Force 157 (TF-157) was laid in 1965 by a memo drafted by President Johnson's secretary of the navy, Paul Nitze. Titled "Instructions for the coordination and control of the Navy's clandestine intelligence collection program," Nitze's program for a naval human intelligence (HUMINT) gathering apparatus had originated with plans made by Admiral Rufus Taylor.[58] Taylor had served in the Office of Naval Intelligence (ONI) as well as the National Security Agency (NSA). In 1966, as this new Navy unit was being prepared for action, he took up a post as deputy director of the Defense Intelligence Agency (DIA). Later that same year, he became deputy of director of the CIA, serving under Richard Helms.

The first iteration of the Navy's HUMINT unit, established in 1966, was the Naval Field Operations Support Group. Author Michael McClintock suggests that the original template for the unit was Task Force 98, a Navy program that supported the Southeast Asian paramilitary activities carried out by Ed Lansdale and Lucien Conein.[59] By July 1966, the Support Group was given the mandate to establish "a worldwide intelligence collection organization while preserving non-intelligence attributability of collection operations."[60] Internal Navy communiqués and information sharing identified the Support Group by name; soon, to help obscure the organization's activities, it was granted the code-name "Task Force 157."

TF-157's primary focus was "intelligence information on Communist Bloc Naval and shipping information."[61] Subunits were devised and located across the world; many of these were located in ports, adjacent to shipping channels and choke points for maritime traffic, and even out at sea. Just as the CIA deployed commercial covers for their operations, TF-157 set up front companies to charter ships and maintain offices. Listening posts were established, and TF-157 worked closely with the military and the CIA in developing improved navigational maps for the support of military activities. TF-157 even maintained its own international communication system based on encryption technology inherited from the NSA, which was code-named the "Weather Channel."[62]

TF-157's operational autonomy was only partial. It answered to both the Office of Naval Intelligence and the CIA. Though, between the two, the Agency apparently had an edge for nabbing the various projects that TF-157 developed. When it came to organizing the networks of proprietary companies, it was again to the CIA that TF-157 turned. "Ed Wilson is the man you need," the CIA told the task force.[63] Wilson, meanwhile, learned of TF-157 from Thomas Clines, presumably with Ted Shackley lurking not far in the background.[64] Soon enough Wilson was on the TF-157 payroll, making an annual salary of $32,000. Despite his official salary, Wilson quickly became a multimillionaire.

This was because TF-157 allowed him to keep earnings from the commercial fronts he set up, which he operated as legitimate businesses. Two of the new front companies were World Marine Inc. and Maryland Maritime Co. They were registered in DC and were run from the same offices as Consultants International – the same company where Robert Keith Gray sat on the board of directors.[65] There was also Aroundworld Shipping & Charting, based in Houston, Texas, where Wilson spent a considerable amount of time. Whether Aroundworld was tied to TF-157 like World Marine and Maryland Maritime or a CIA-adjacent firm like Consultants International is unknown, but it later played a key role in the activities of Shackley's "private CIA." As Wilson was settling into his new position, TF-157 was becoming embroiled in one of the major foreign policy shifts of the Cold War era. Nixon and Kissinger, as part of a broader geopolitical push for detente – a relaxing of tensions with the Soviet Union and China, alongside curbing the nuclear arms race – were pushing for an opening with China. The initiative was treated with the utmost secrecy: while Alexander Haig was involved in the efforts, the Joint Chiefs of Staff and the CIA were largely boxed out. For Kissinger, the success of these China-focused efforts would require the diplomatic channels and corridors of information to be airtight.

Kissinger appealed to Admiral Thomas H. Moorer, then serving as chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff. Moorer had previously been the chief of Naval Operations and thus had had operational involvement with TF-157. Moorer arranged for Kissinger to use the Weather Channel to send encrypted messages and arrange the necessary diplomatic back channels for this impending geopolitical shift. What Kissinger did not seem to realize was that Moorer opposed Kissinger's bureaucratic wrangling and Nixon's overarching imperative of circumventing the usual bastions of political power. Moorer also strongly opposed the initiative itself and was allied with elements of the pro-KMT China Lobby.

THE RADFORD-MOORER AFFAIR

Yeoman Charles Radford barely knew Jack Anderson, the famed muckraking journalist. He was actually more familiar with Anderson's parents, whom he had met during a posting in India in 1970. Radford had been raised Mormon, a faith he shared with the Andersons, and this seems to have kindled a casual friendship between the young naval officer and the older couple. In 1970, Radford briefly crossed paths with Jack Anderson himself, having been invited by his parents to a family reunion. It seemed innocuous enough.

The second time Radford met Anderson was over a year later, in December 1971. Anderson, out of the blue, had contacted Radford and invited him to dinner at the Empress, a Chinese restaurant in which he owned a stake. Radford later told Jim Hougan that the reason he took Anderson up on his offer was "because he was Jack Anderson. He was famous."[66] The dinner took place on a Sunday evening. The following day, Anderson ran in his newspaper column – renowned for the journalist's intrepid pursuit of insider sources in the fast-paced world of DC – an article that contained explosive revelations.

Anderson's column brushed right up against the most sensitive undertaking then being carried out by President Nixon – Henry Kissinger's secret diplomatic negotiations with China. One primary channel being used by Kissinger was Pakistan, which had historically maintained close geopolitical relations with China. Pakistan's president Yahya Khan was especially close to Beijing and had garnered extensive military aid from China in the face of Pakistan's rising hostilities with India. China, likewise, had reason to oppose India. Tensions with the Soviet Union had been escalating steadily since the Sino-Soviet split, and Moscow had thrown its weight behind India. The chessboard was full, and Nixon and Kissinger were stepping carefully into a complex and potentially dangerous position.

Pakistan's conflict with India greatly complicated matters for the administration: outwardly, it took a position of neutrality. In 1971, when martial law was imposed in East Pakistan by President Khan, the White House made an announcement: "The United States does not support or condone this military action." Behind closed doors, however, it was a very different story. Nixon and Kissinger had embarked on a covert path of "tilting" toward Pakistan. President Khan was assured that the administration would "not do anything to complicate the situation … or embarrass him."[67]

What was unfolding was a truly remarkable series of events. Nixon's rise to the Oval Office had been dependent on the support of the domestic China Lobby, and he personally maintained close relations with the KMT's top leadership. The Kissinger-led initiative toward China undermined all of that. In the course of his ongoing negotiations with China, Kissinger was tacitly abandoning the hawkish iterations of a pro-Taiwanese foreign policy. The administration, he said, wasn't looking for a "two Chinas" solution or a "one China, one Taiwan" solution."[68] There was also talk of committing the US military to an exit strategy from Vietnam and a reduction of the US troop presence in the Middle East.

The diplomatic channels of these negotiations were fragile, complex, and, most of all, secret. Nixon and Kissinger strove to keep the agenda hidden. The CIA, the State Department, the Joint Chiefs, the China Lobby itself – and even Soviet interests – were recognized as threats to the long-term plan. But Anderson, in his column, nearly scuttled it all. In a single article, he revealed that, despite the carefully calculated public position of neutrality, the "tilt" toward Pakistan was well underway. It threatened to reveal the diplomatic back channel while also putting a question into people's minds: Why, exactly, was the US tilting toward Pakistan?

Journalist Clark Mollenhoff – who served as special counsel to Nixon in 1969 – summed up the implications of Anderson's reporting in a column published on January 22, 1972. "Kissinger's role in the India-Pakistan policy seems to be faulty," he wrote, before adding that "there is a question of why the administration was secretly advocating a 'tilt for Pakistan' when India was able to prove far quicker its overwhelming military superiority."[69] Mollenhoff then sketched out what he saw as the "bigger picture," implicating Nixon and Kissinger's drive toward extreme bureaucratic compartmentalization:

> At both the State and Defense departments, there is hope that President Nixon will view these errors as evidence that some changes are needed in the National Security Council's method of operations. Both departments point out that this isn't the first time the National Security Council decisions haven't been supported by a realistic appraisal of the facts."[70]

Within the corridors of power, Anderson's revelations of the "tilt" strategy set off a firestorm. It was quickly determined that the journalist must have had access to at least three memos – memos that were highly secret and had only been issued to a handful of people. Those people were Kissinger himself, Alexander Haig, Admiral Robert O. Welander (the military assistant for national security affairs to the chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, Admiral Moorer), and Welander's assistant, Yeoman Charles Radford. Welander eliminated himself from suspicion for the leak, as well as Kissinger and Haig. The culprit had to have been Radford; yet, what happened next only increased the strangeness of the case. Radford, who had acted as a document courier and aide to members of the Joint Chiefs of Staff and the National Security Council, was subjected to a polygraph test by a Pentagon interrogation specialist.[71] When it came to questions concerning the theft of confidential memoranda from diplomatic pouches and burn bags, the yeoman became agitated. "The cause of his concern was a very sensitive operation," writes Colodny, which Radford "could not discuss without the direct approval of Admiral Welander."[72]

Welander had initially kicked off the investigation into Radford. With allegations of a secret operation surfacing, however, he moved quickly to try to squash the investigation before it went any further. The attempt did not succeed, and Radford ended up revealing his role in a military-led espionage ring.

The yeoman had pilfered confidential files and made copies of "uncounted documents – just thousands, thousands of documents."[73] He made notes on reports of Kissinger's meeting with Chinese premier Zhou Enlai and other sensitive documents related to the "China initiative." These were then turned over to people working for the Joint Chiefs of Staff, who used them to learn the inner workings of the Nixon-Kissinger strategy, bypassing the carefully constructed blockages on the flow of information within the top tiers of the US government.

Radford would turn the documents over to Admiral Welander who, in turn, gave them to Admiral Moorer. According to Radford, his contribution "put Admiral Moorer in a very powerful position [to] anticipate what Kissinger was going to do and say" in National Security Council meetings.[74] Welander later hinted that Alexander Haig was involved in the ring as well. There was little doubt, he suggested, that Haig had known of Radford's meddling with the diplomatic pouches – and Haig himself had, at times, assigned Radford to accompany Kissinger on diplomatic trips.

According to Radford, the whole operation was designed to thwart a wide-ranging conspiracy that was taking root at the highest levels of the foreign policy establishment. At the center of the conspiracy was Kissinger himself, here appearing as an alleged agent of the Rockefeller family and the institution where the Rockefellers carried so much weight, the Council on Foreign Relations. "The purpose of this alleged conspiracy," writes Jim Hougan, "was to win the Soviets' cooperation in guaranteeing the Rockefellers' 'continued domination' over the world's currencies – in exchange for which, Radford insists, Kissinger was to construct a foreign policy that would ensure eventual Soviet hegemony and a one-world government."[75] The source of his knowledge about this conspiracy, Radford said, was Welander and Moorer.

The accusations being made by Radford echo those being made by the John Birch Society and other groups and actors operating in that same milieu – many of which were also intimately connected to the KMT–China Lobby. (The aforementioned Charles Willoughby, for example, made this world his primary haunt.) Many of the accusations made by John Birch Society affiliates – that Kissinger himself was a Soviet mole – appeared later in the 1970s, with Frank Capell's Henry Kissinger: Soviet Agent and Gary Allen's Kissinger: The Secret Side of the Secretary of State. (Capell, in the 1960s, had worked for Willoughby's Foreign Intelligence Digest.) What makes this important is that Moorer himself had maintained extensive ties to the John Birch Society and related groups. These ideas intensified in the later part of the 1970s and the 1980s, when he became affiliated with the American Security Council, the preferred outpost of military hawks who laid the intellectual groundwork for the so-called Reagan revolution.

There are two puzzling loose threads that are evident when considering the Radford-Moorer affair. The first is that, due to Kissinger's use of the TF-157 Weather Channel, Moorer and the Joint Chiefs were already privy to much of the information concerning the China initiative. Likewise, through Edwin Wilson's arrival at TF-157, there is the distinct possibility that the CIA was also listening in and perhaps, as well, Wilson's KMT–China Lobby friends. It is through the China Lobby, and the incestuous networks of defense hawks, military operatives, and Washington fixers that these two sides met. Was this network the original source of Moorer and Welander's manipulation of Radford?

The second loose thread is that Radford, while admitting to pilfering thousands of pages of sensitive documentation, fervently denied having leaked the documents to Jack Anderson. He disavowed a close association with the journalist, noting that they had only met a handful of times and were distant acquaintances at best. If it is true that Radford had not leaked the documents, who did and for what ends? A likely answer is that Welander or Moorer or somebody working on behalf of them was responsible for the leak. With the information gained from both the access to the TF-157 channels and through Radford's pilfering, they had an inside look at the "tilt'" strategy and its position within a wide-ranging geopolitical calculus that threatened to shift the entire thrust of the Cold War. Perhaps by hanging their asset Radford out to dry they had hoped to derail Kissinger's process through a calculated leak to Anderson. But what about Anderson himself? His appearance with Radford at the Empress would then suggest that he was at least partially complicit in this plot.

Surprisingly, Anderson boasted longstanding ties to the China Lobby. He seemed particularly close to Anna Chennault: the two had been cofounders of the Chinese Refugee Relief Organization, a pro-KMT humanitarian agency that maintained offices at 1612 K Street. This office was just down the street from Robert Keith Gray's H & K and the offices of Wilson's TF-157 fronts. When the organization was operational, Chennault played the role of president and Anderson served as its secretary.

There is also the fact that a column of Anderson's had been used to hint at John F. Kennedy's connection to the Stephen Ward-connected sex ring that sparked the Profumo Affair. As mentioned in the last chapter, Anderson had co-written in the column "Britishers who read American criticisms of Profumo throw back the question 'What high American official was involved with Marilyn Monroe?'" Which was apparently part of a Hoover-connected effort to use sex blackmail obtained from the broader networks woven throughout the Profumo Affair against Kennedy. This suggests that Anderson's column had, on certain occasions, been weaponized by powerful political factions well before this particular column in the early 1970s.

It is also worth noting that, in the post-Watergate era, Anderson held accounts at – and stock in – Diplomat National Bank in DC, where Anna Chennault sat on the board of directors. The bank was used as a conduit for the Korean CIA and the closely related Unification Church, which – like Anderson – held bank stock.[76] Never one to be far from the action, Tongsun Park "told American friends that he was behind the bank and that [bank chairman Charles] Kim was his agent."[77] This wasn't the only suspect bank that Anderson was connected to. During the 1960s, he owned "complimentary shares" of the District of Colombia National Bank, which had been organized by Democratic Party fixer Bobby Baker and Ed Levinson, a notorious organized crime insider.[78] Joining Anderson at this bank was Arthur Arundel. Arundel – who had served under Edward Lansdale in Southeast Asia – was the son of Pepsi lobbyist Russell Arundel. As mentioned earlier, Pepsi itself was closely tied to the China Lobby and to the KMT itself.

Even the restaurant used to implicate Radford can be found within this matrix. Anderson, as mentioned, had a stake in the establishment – yet so did Anna Chennault. These connections between Anderson and the China Lobby, curiously enough, are known thanks to a dossier on the journalist compiled by the White House "plumbers." Soon enough the "plumbers" would be making history, and Anderson would be there too. There is every indication that he, like so many others in this bizarre world, had foreknowledge of the events that were about to take place, which would later be remembered simply as "Watergate."

BLACK BAGS AND INSIDE JOBS

In April 1972, Jack Anderson received a dossier from William Haddad with information on plans being concocted by the "November group" – "President Nixon's personal advertising agency" – to burglarize the Democratic National Committee (DNC) headquarters at the Watergate and other schemes: surveillance, dirty tricks, and the like.[79] Anderson, for reasons that still remain vague, appears to have effectively suppressed this information, and he later mischaracterized the information that Haddad had provided to him.

Others who were provided information by Haddad took it a little more seriously. A month before Anderson was brought into the fold, Haddad had alerted the DNC's head, Larry O'Brien, who in turn put Haddad in touch with the DNC director of communications John Stewart.[80] In late April, Stewart, Haddad, and Haddad's source, a private investigator named A. J. Woolston-Smith, met in New York City to discuss the accusations. This was roughly a month prior to the first of the break-ins at the Watergate complex.

William Haddad and A. J. Woolston-Smith were by no means strangers to intrigue. Haddad was a longtime political insider within the Democratic establishment and had been particularly close to the Kennedy family. He held various bureaucratic positions, married a Roosevelt daughter, and made a name for himself as a muckraker. It was through the latter role that he became close to Woolston-Smith, whom he employed from time to time. Woolston-Smith had previously worked for Robert Maheu's private detective firm and worked with the CIA on its resettlement programs for Cuban exiles. Maheu himself was no stranger to the CIA's secret wars on Cuba – a background shared by countless individuals interwoven in the Watergate saga – and some investigators have compiled considerable evidence implicating him in the 1968 assassination of Robert F. Kennedy.[81]

Woolston-Smith likely came upon the information concerning the DNC via convoluted networks that snaked across the often incestuous world of private investigators and security firms. As Jim Hougan details, "Woolston-Smith's secretary, Toni Shimon, was the daughter of a Runyonesque former Washington police detective named Joseph Shimon. A convicted wiretapper in his own right, Shimon was the partner of one John Lenn in a detective agency named Allied Investigators Inc. One of the investigators with whom Shimon and Lenn were allied on a part-time basis was Louis James Russell."[82] Russell supplied tips to Jack Anderson and, in late 1971, was employed by General Security Services. This was the company hired by the DNC to run security at their Watergate offices, and they would have been the ones tasked with handling the information Haddad had provided. Shortly after Haddad notified the DNC of Woolston-Smith's information, Russell resigned from General Security Services and went to work for McCord Associates, the security consulting firm owned by "former" CIA operative James McCord. At that time, McCord was serving as the head of security for the Committee for the Reelection of the President (CRP), the fundraising body for President Nixon's re-election campaign. Russell, too, worked part-time for CRP.

McCord was one of the White House "plumbers," the team put together to plug, prevent, and investigate information leaks, which were endemic in the highly paranoid world of 1970s Washington, DC. Operating alongside him was former FBI agent G. Gordon Liddy and E. Howard Hunt, another CIA veteran. Yet another CIA man in "the plumbers" was Frank Sturgis, who had served alongside Hunt in the Agency's anti-Castro operations. When McCord and Sturgis were arrested in the Watergate DNC offices in July 1972, they were accompanied by a group of CIA-trained Cuban exiles: Virgilio Gonzales, Bernard Baker, and Eugenio Martinez.

There are a few things about McCord's background that are worth mentioning. After a time in the FBI, he joined the CIA, taking a position within the CIA's Office of Security – the in-house body that monitored the internal security of the Agency, ran counterintelligence operations, and provided cover or support for some of the CIA's most sensitive operations. Specifically, McCord was assigned to the Security Research Staff within the Office of Security. There, he honed the craft of electronic eavesdropping, surveillance, and "audio countermeasure programs" to protect sensitive CIA stations and outposts in Europe.[83] These were all of the sorts of techniques that were brought to bear in the course of the Watergate burglary. They also raise some important questions – for example, if McCord was an adept at these sorts of affairs, why were the burglaries so remarkably sloppy?

McCord had also served as deputy to Paul Gaynor, the longtime head of the Security Research Staff and a powerful figure within the CIA as a whole. From his commanding place within the Office of Security, Gaynor played an essential role in some of the CIA's darkest projects, such as Project ARTICHOKE – a "special interrogation" program that, with its focus on hypnosis, sensory deprivation, chemical substances, and "psychological harassment" that was the immediate forerunner of the notorious MK-ULTRA program.[84] The groundwork for ARTICHOKE had been laid by an earlier project, BLUEBIRD, described in CIA files as experiments involving "drugs and hypnosis."[85] Jim Hougan writes that Gaynor was reputed to have maintained an extensive array of files on US citizens, with a particular focus on sexual proclivities; these files were known around the Agency as the "fag files."[86] These allegations can be found among the statements made in the 1975 official report of the Rockefeller Commission, an entire section of which is dedicated to the file systems maintained by the CIA's Directorate of Operations. One telling passage of the report reads:

> Miscellaneous files maintained by the Office of Security includes lists of individuals with known or suspected foreign intelligence connections, files associated with handling defectors (some of whom may now be US citizens), lists of individuals from whom crank calls have been received by the Agency, and lists of persons previously charged with security violations. The Office of Security formerly maintained extensive computer lists of approximately 300,000 persons who had been arrested for offenses related to homosexuality, but these lists were destroyed in 1973.[87]

Gaynor's proclivity for dirt collecting – particularly of the sexual variety – brought him into contact with Roy Blick, the head of the Washington Metropolitan Police's so-called morals squad until he was forced into retirement in the mid-1960s. The morals squad, which today would be called the vice squad, conducted a series of anti-homosexual campaigns under Blick's leadership. According to author Anna Lvovsky, Blick had a penchant for targeting politicians and other people of influence across the Beltway.[88]

His crusading zeal to target homosexuals in the area frequently became the butt of jokes for those in the know. E. Bennett Williams, a DC attorney who appeared in the periphery of the Watergate affair, liked to perform a short routine for the denizens of the after-hours Atlas Club. He would "imitate Blick standing at the urinal for hours, hoping, praying that a 'queer' [Blick's preferred terminology] would come along and grab his penis – so he could make a morals arrest, of course."[89]

Like Gaynor, Blick kept rigorous logs on numerous private citizens. These were recorded on index cards that were stacked high in a safe in Blick's office. According to Lvovsky, "when he left the department, he threatened to keep the key."[90] During the CIA's own information-collection program on homosexuals and other "deviants," police forces across the country were marshaled into the effort, freely turning over their files and working hand in glove with the Agency. Yet, when it came to Roy Blick, who was stationed in the nation's capital, cooperation with the CIA went beyond just file sharing. Numerous declassified files show Blick working closely with the CIA. For example, he made his own contacts at the British embassy available to William Harvey as part of the counterintelligence operation against the Kim Philby spy ring.

The CIA's largest domestic espionage operation, which saw the full co-operation of various police departments and other law enforcement agencies with the Agency, was called Operation CHAOS. It had been initiated during the Johnson years to monitor the growing civil rights and antiwar movements. James Jesus Angleton, the ultraparanoid CIA counterintelligence chief, was the driving force behind CHAOS' inception. Multiple subprograms were created, each tasked with different operational imperatives, and adjacent programs were rallied for support. One such program was called MERRIMAC, which "involved CIA infiltration of antiwar/peace groups in the Washington, DC area in order to gather … information on the organizations, their members, sources of funds, and plans."[91]

MERRIMAC provided much of the information it harvested to CHAOS. MERRIMAC was run from the CIA's Office of Security. As Shane O'Sullivan points out, McCord was then working as chief of the office's Physical Security Division, which would have brought him into direct cooperation with MERRIMAC and CHAOS.[92] Interestingly, E. Howard Hunt appears to have been delivering "sealed envelopes and packages," believed to contain information on the White House "plumbers," to Richard Ober – one of the top CIA officials, then overseeing Operation CHAOS.[93] O'Sullivan draws other parallels between McCord's post-CIA security firm, McCord Associates, and the CIA's proprietary firms that were involved in MERRIMAC, CHAOS, and more general counterintelligence concerns.

Chief among these was Anderson Security, set up in 1962 to provide support for the Office of Security. Even after MERRIMAC was supposedly terminated in 1968, Anderson Security was, as late as 1971, managing infiltration and espionage of dissident groups in the capital on behalf of the Office of Security.[94] Intriguingly, Hunt seems to have crossed paths with Anderson Security at the same time that he was delivering files to Ober, and he brought them on to carry out security sweeps of the CRP offices.[95] All of this is highly suggestive that lurking within the "plumbers" unit was an apparatus connected to long-running CIA information-collection operations and security matters. The background of James McCord in the Office of Security certainly makes this possible as does Hunt's involvement with Ober and Anderson Security. McCord and Hunt, however, claimed not to have met until their mutual involvement with CRP.

There are reasons to doubt this. Hunt, for example, had been active in the CIA's anti-Castro operations. There he had worked alongside David Atlee Phillips, the eventual chief of the CIA's Western Hemisphere Division, which encompassed the Caribbean and Latin America. In January 1961, McCord was temporarily detailed to Phillips to run a counterintelligence operation against the Fair Play for Cuba Committee, a pro-Castro activist group.[96]

The possibility that McCord and Hunt knew each other because of having operated in the same web of overlapping CIA operations in the 1950s, raises other questions. Why were the "plumbers" being stocked with CIA agents, and why was Hunt turning over information to the CIA? Interestingly, these moves were being made at a time when Richard Nixon – rightfully suspicious of the Agency – was seeking to blunt its power. Early plans were made to exclude Richard Helms, the director of the CIA, from National Security Council meetings.[97] While the administration ultimately backed away from these efforts, the administration had nonetheless engaged in consistent bureaucratic wrangling that induced all sorts of headaches for the CIA. Part of the reason for this, Kissinger later noted, was that Nixon "brought to the presidency … a belief that the CIA was a 'refuge of Ivy League intellectuals opposed to him.'"[98]

Regardless of whatever else was going on in this dense fog of palace intrigue, the house of cards collapsed on June 17 when police officers arrested McCord, Sturgis, Baker, Martinez, and Gonzalez in the Watergate offices of the DNC. Martinez was found with a key, which he reportedly attempted to conceal by swallowing it.[99] The leader of the arresting officers was Carl Shoffler, a detective in the DC police's Criminal Intelligence Division. Shoffler, incidentally, had been nicknamed "Little Blick" by his fellow officers, presumably for having interests and activities that resembled those of the infamous Captain Roy Blick.[100] It was soon revealed that a previous break-in had taken place, that bugs had been planted in the offices of the DNC, and that McCord had set up a listening post in a rented room in the Howard Johnson Motor Lodge across the street.

The morning after the break-in, the deputy chairman of the DNC, Sam Gregg, called the organization's general counsel, a well-known Washington lawyer named Joseph Califano Jr. Gregg told Califano about the break-in and mentioned that there was photographic equipment in the offices. Califano advised Gregg that the DNC should closely cooperate with the DC police. Califano then hung up the phone and promptly called another of his other top clients. He later said, "I picked up the phone and called Howard Simons who was the managing editor of the Post, who was on duty that weekend, and told him there'd been a break-in at the DNC. We didn't know who it was, but it looked suspicious."[101]

That the DNC and the Washington Post, soon to be written into history for its coverage of the Watergate affair, had the same general counsel is a surprising coincidence – but it's Califano's deeper history, and the close relations that he had forged in the previous decade, that stretch credulity. At the beginning of the 1960s, he worked for the white-shoe law firm Dewey Ballantine – the "Dewey" being Thomas Dewey – before he was tapped to serve as the special counsel to the Department of Defense's general counsel. A year later, Califano was promoted to become special assistant to US Secretary of the Army, Cyrus Vance. It was during this period that Vance had delved into the world of the CIA and the Army's secret wars.

While serving as assistant to Vance, Califano was deployed to the numerous coordinating bodies that brought the CIA and Army together for covert operations against Castro's Cuba. Internal CIA memoranda and the more recently declassified "Califano papers" illustrate that his involvement with Operation Mongoose would have brought him into contact with a wide-ranging cast of characters, including Edward Lansdale and Ted Shackley. After Mongoose came to a close, Califano was assigned to its successor, the Interdepartmental Coordinating Committee of Cuban Affairs. He worked closely with the Joint Chiefs of Staff, as evidenced by memoranda Califano sent to them outlining "special actions."[102] Califano had his own assistant who worked alongside him through the numerous iterations of the anti-Castro coordinating committees – a young Alexander Haig. Haig later summarized the nature of some of their activities for historian Gus Russo:

> I was part of it, as deputy to Joe Califano and military assistant to General Vance. We were conducting two raids a week at the height of that program against mainland Cuba. People were being killed, sugar mills were being blown up, bridges were demolished. We were using fast boats and mother ships and the United States Army was supporting and training these forces. This was after the Missile Crisis, when the Cuban Coordinating Committee was set up [in 1963]. Cy Vance, the Secretary of the Army, was [presiding] over the State Department, the CIA, and the National Security Council. I was intimately involved.[103]

As late as January 1964, Haig was working with Califano when the lawyer became the Department of Defense's "Executive Agent for Cuban Affairs."[104] His mandate in this position was broad and took place during the general winding down of the Agency's heavy focus on Cuba. He was involved in the management and resettlement of Cuban refugees and helped find homes and employment for scores of CIA-trained exile fighters. This likely would have brought both Califano and Haig into contact with the future private investigator A. J. Woolston-Smith – the same Woolston-Smith who had curious foreknowledge of the Watergate break-ins through his connections to Lou Russell.

And what of the Washington Post itself, whose intrepid journalists Bob Woodward and Carl Bernstein so famously broke the case? Originally, Woodward and Bernstein had worked separately, pursuing leads into the murky world of "former" CIA agents and shadowy security units like the plumbers. At the behest of the journal's leadership – including Howard Simons, who had been contacted by Califano on the morning after the break-in – the two journalists began to pool their resources and contacts.

At least, this is the official story. The networks of sources that Woodward and Bernstein cultivated suggests that other dynamics were in play. There was, for example, Robert Bennett, the owner of the public relations firm Robert R. Mullen & Company. Bennett "said … that he [had] been feeding stories to Bob Woodward of the Washington Post with the understanding that there would be no attribution … to Bennett."[105] Mullen & Company was also the firm that E. Howard Hunt had gone to work for at the suggestion of CIA director Richard Helms following Hunt's questionable retirement from the CIA. In addition, the firm itself was closely aligned with the CIA. An undated Agency summary, drafted sometime during the Watergate affair, noted that "Robert R. Mullen and Company has been utilized by the [CIA's] Central Cover Staff since 1963. … Mr. Mullen has provided sensitive cover support overseas for Agency employees and he was instrumental in the formation of the Cuban Freedom Committee."[106] The Cuban Freedom Committee was similar to CIA projects like Radio Free Europe and broadcast anti-Castro propaganda to Cuba. In addition, Robert R. Mullen & Company's attorney was Edward Bennett Williams, a partner in the same law firm as Joseph Califano. As an aside, among Williams' clients was Robert Vesco, whose frighteningly intricate history – and peripheral role in Watergate – are discussed in the next chapter.

And what about Woodward himself? Carefully removed from the official Watergate narrative is Woodward's stint, immediately prior to his career as a journalist, in the military. After attending Yale, Woodward had gone into the Navy, where he spent "four years of sea duty as a communications officer."[107] He served under two superiors who would go on to land important positions at the Pentagon. The first of these was Rear Admiral Francis Fitzpatrick, who became the "assistant chief of naval operations for communications and cryptology."[108] The second was Admiral Welander – the top assistant to Moorer and associate of Haig who, as discussed, was a central player in the Radford-Moorer espionage ring. In August 1969, Woodward, still an enterprising young naval officer, arrived in Washington, DC. Because of his expertise in communication systems, the military gave him a post at the Pentagon, where he worked in direct proximity to Fitzpatrick and Welander. As Len Colodny writes:

> Woodward was tasked with overseeing approximately thirty sailors who manned the terminals, teletypes, and classified coding machines at the naval communication center through which all Navy traffic flowed, from routine orders to top-secret messages. It was a sensitive position that afforded Woodward access to more than one hundred communication channels, among them, according to Admiral Fitzpatrick, the top-secret SR-1 channel through which the Navy sent and received its most important messages."[109]

We have already encountered SR-1 under its colloquial name of the Weather Channel, the secret communication system utilized by Task Force 157. Woodward, in other words, was directly linked to the cable traffic of this ultrasecret unit, which became connected in one direction to Edwin Wilson, Robert Keith Gray, and the China Lobby complex and in the other direction to the Joint Chiefs of Staff and the Nixon administration's internal power struggles over East Asian policy and overarching bureaucratic organization. Furthermore, in this position, Woodward would have answered directly to Admiral Thomas Moorer, who not only made SR-1 available to Kissinger but who had also sought to undermine Kissinger's efforts in the China initiative.

According to Colodny's sources, which included Admiral Moorer himself, Woodward also acted as a "briefer," meaning he collected information from a variety of sources for assimilation and subsequent presentation to his commanding officers. Moorer was not the only military official who would have received Woodward's briefings. "On his briefing assignment," writes Colodny, "Woodward was often sent across the river from the Pentagon to the basement of the White House, where he would enter the offices of the National Security Council. There, Woodward would act as briefer to Alexander Haig."[110]

This suppressed connection between Woodward and Haig led Colodny to suggest that Haig was, in fact, the infamous Deep Throat, the mysterious informant who provided Woodward and Bernstein with vital bits and pieces of information. The more recent claims made by Mark Felt, a veteran FBI official, to have been the real Deep Throat has disturbed the Haig thesis. Felt was certainly in a position to have known a lot. His posts at the FBI had included, for example, overseeing the COINTELPRO operations before he became assistant director of the Bureau in 1972. He also had a personal animus against the administration, which had passed over him in appointing a new director after J. Edgar Hoover's death. But, as Colodny's co-author Robert Gettlin has pointed out, certain essential pieces of information that Woodward attributes to Deep Throat simply could not have been known by Felt at that place and time.[111] As a result, it has been posited that Deep Throat was likely a composite of multiple informants.

CALLS GIRLS AND MOBSTERS

The Watergate scandal was one of the great political imbroglios of the latter half of the twentieth century. It collapsed an entire administration, set off a decade of power plays, reform efforts, and bureaucratic changes. It contributed, along with the deeply unpopular Vietnam War and subsequent revelations of government skullduggery, to an overwhelming air of distrust on the part of the American people toward their rulers. Yet, what remains remarkable, despite all of this, is that the rationale for the break-ins has never been satisfactorily explained.

There are an array of competing explanations and interpretations, even from the burglars themselves. According to James McCord, the reason they broke in was to place listening devices in Larry O'Brien's offices. E. Howard Hunt, meanwhile, suggested that the team had been dispatched to the Watergate to unearth evidence of illicit campaign contributions being made to the DNC by Fidel Castro. However, as Jim Hougan has untiringly pointed out time and again, there is no evidence to substantiate either claim.[112]

The FBI never found evidence of the purported bugs – which would not have worked anyway. As Hougan writes, "O'Brien's office was part of the interior suite at the DNC and … was shielded from McCord's 'listening post' in the motel across the street from the Watergate."[113]

As for the Castro claims, evidence has never surfaced that the leader of Cuba was funneling money to Democratic politicians, and it is highly unlikely that this is what McCord, Hunt, and company were rummaging for. The most likely repositories for information of this sort – the offices of the DNC treasurer, for example – were left untouched over the course of the break-ins.

There is also the issue of unexplained evidence, the most important of which may be the mysterious key in the possession of Eugenio Martinez. At the time of the burglars' arrest, the lock that matched the key was not discovered. Yet, in the subsequent investigation, it was found that the key fit the lock of the office of Maxine Wells, the secretary to R. Spencer Oliver, whose phone had been tapped. Hougan states that, according to arresting officer Carl Shoffler, photographic equipment "was clamped to the top" of Well's desk."[114] Len Colodny asks: "Why would a Watergate burglar have a key to Wells' desk in his possession, and what items of interest to a Watergate burglar were maintained in Wells' locked desk drawer?"[115]

Intimations that something strange had been afoot involving Oliver's secretaries was reported early on in Nightmare by veteran journalist Anthony Lukas. Alfred Baldwin, a former FBI agent hired by McCord to monitor calls being made from Oliver's phone at the nearby listening post, stated that the secretaries were actively using the phone when Oliver, who was frequently away from the office for long stretches of time, was not present. "Some of these conversations," Lukas writes, citing Baldwin, "were 'explicitly intimate.'"[116] Lukas adds that "so spicy were some of the conversations that they have given rise to confirmed reports that the telephone was being used for some sort of call-girl service catering to congressmen and other prominent Washingtonians."[117] Here, Lukas is being deceptive, as the allegations concerning the potential of a Watergate-connected call girl service do not arise on the basis of the phone calls alone. There was, in fact, evidence that several rings were being operated at the nearby Colombian Plaza Apartments, adjacent to both the Watergate and to the motel where McCord's listening post was located. These rings were overseen "by at least two madams, Lil Lori and Helen Henderson"; another woman involved was identified by Hougan as "Tess."[118] He writes:

> Besides their location at the Colombian Plaza Apartments, the prostitutes had at least two things in common. The first was the homogeneity of their clients. With few exceptions, they were professional men – lobbyists, lawyers, stockbrokers, physicians, congressional aides, and real estate developers. They were among the movers and shakers of the capital, and included at least one US senator, an astronaut, a Saudi prince, a clutch of US and KCIA intelligence agents, and a host of prominent Democrats.… According to a 1971 police intelligence report… "The Watergate Hotel … was a prime source of their business."[119]

To make matters more complicated, Lou Russell – linked to McCord and other figures nebulously circling around the Watergate affair – was closely acquainted with the proprietors of the call girl ring. Writes Hougan: "According to Russell's friends … Russell chose to idle away his leisure time in the apartments at the Colombia Plaza. He was a friend to many of the girls, a sometime customer, a free-lance bouncer, and a source of referrals."[120] Russell may, however, have been playing an even more important role at those apartments. Phillip Bailley, a figure of incredible importance to the deeper context of the Watergate saga, encountered Russell there with a set up that included recording equipment, cameras, and two-way mirrors to record the girls' clients.[121]

Who was Phillip Bailley, and why was he so important to these unfolding events? Bailley was a DC lawyer with a predilection for the dark side of life. He presented himself as a well-connected player, an operative in the capital's nighttime world. However, the reality was a bit different – he was, to quote Phil Stanford, a "fledgling lawyer at the bottom of the D.C. legal food chain."[122] A graduate of the local Catholic University of America law school, his self-declared role model was Bobby Baker – the notoriously crooked political fixer of the Democratic establishment of the 1950s and 1960s. Baker himself operated within a constellation of Texas-based businessmen and organized crime figures. It is possible that, after setting his sights on that type of milieu, Bailley decided to begin his ascent into these networks. His preferred clientele included "petty criminals, drug dealers, and prostitutes."[123]

In Secret Agenda, Bailley is described as being close to the call girl Jim Hougan dubbed "Tess," which was not her real name.[124] Len Colodny, in Silent Coup, identifies Bailley's consort in the call girl ring as

Cathy Dieter. To make matters more confusing, Dieter was not the girl's real name either. She was actually Erika "Heidi" Rikan, "a woman who between 1965 and 1966 had performed as a stripper at Washington's Blue Mirror Club in the notorious 14th Street District."[125] Rikan, like Bailley, was well connected. Her best friend was Maureen Biner, who at the time was dating John Dean, the Nixon administration's White House counsel.[126] Dean and Biner later married, and she changed her name to Maureen Dean.

Rikan and Biner had known each other for many years at this point. For a brief period in the late 1960s, Biner was married to George Owen, scout for the Dallas Cowboys. Owen had the inside track to the top Texas power players; his personal friends included the oil heir Clint Murchison Jr.; Bedford Wynne, the offspring of a prominent Dallas family with numerous interests, including oil, real estate, industry, insurance, and law; Bobby Baker; and Gordon McLendon, a prominent radio man and occasional intelligence asset. McLendon's close associates included, interestingly enough, Jack Ruby, the mobster famous for killing Lee Harvey Oswald, and David Atlee Phillips, the CIA officer connected to both E. Howard Hunt and James McCord.[127] Maureen writes in her autobiography of an extended trip to Lake Tahoe "with a good and new friend I had met through George, Heidi Rikan."[128]

What's interesting here is that, through their mutual relationship with George Owen and the high flyers of Dallas, Texas, Maureen and Rikan were moving into a circle that overlapped considerably with organized crime interests. McLendon's friend Jack Ruby was himself an insider and participant in the Dallas criminal underworld. The Murchison oil and construction interests, meanwhile, deployed as lobbyist Irving Davidson, who also was lobbyist for the CIA, the FBI, Israel, and crime bosses such as Carlos Marcello.[129] The Murchisons also maintained their own ties to Marcello.[130] Rikan continued to maintain her ties to this side of Texas, even after her move to DC. Phil Stanford reports that within her contact book were Wynne, McLendon, Murchison, and others.[131] The roster of names helps to further illustrate the convergence of Texas business interests and organized crime: one of the names, for example, was Fred Black Jr. Black was a close friend and business partner of the controversial Bobby Baker – and also an intimate of Moe Dalitz, Johnny Roselli, and Clifford Jones, the mob-linked lieutenant governor of Nevada.[132] Jones was also an alleged confidant of Meyer Lansky, representing his interests in several Vegas casinos. It might be important, then, that Black – who maintained an apartment in the Watergate – also owned stakes in several Caribbean casinos owned by Jones.

Another name that appeared in Rikan's contact book was Ben Barnes, a Texas real estate major who had served as the state's lieutenant governor between 1968 and 1973. Among Barnes' close circle of contacts was Herman Beebe, and the two, by the 1980s, were linked to a string of collapsed savings and loans – many of which bore the fingerprints of organized crime and intelligence agencies in their demise. Yet, even in the 1960s and 1970s, Beebe was making the rounds. The network of banks and real estate ventures that would lay the groundwork for his later escapades were tightly interwoven with the criminal enterprises of Carlos Marcello.[133]

Just as Rikan maintained her Texas connections after moving to Washington, she also continued her own personal ties to powerful organized crime figures. At the time that she was involved with Phillip Bailley and active in the ring operating across from the Watergate, she was also reportedly the girlfriend of the mob boss of Washington, DC, Joe Nesline.[134]

Born in Washington, DC, in September 1913, Nesline was first arrested in 1931 for "violation of illegal whiskey laws."[135] Over the years, he raked up an immense number of encounters with the law – primarily arrests for his persistent involvement in illicit gambling activities. Nesline's early gambling operations were operated from numerous establishments such as the Spartan Club. Many of his ventures were carried out in partnership with Charles "Charlie the Blade" Tourine. The pair were arrested on June 13, 1963, in a gambling parlor the two had organized in Maryland.

One 1962 FBI report identified Tourine as the "collection man" for Nesline. Nesline and Tourine's gambling interests intertwined with those of Dino Cellini, Meyer Lansky's top casino operator in the Caribbean. Nesline, for example, maintained a stake in the Colony Club in London, which was operated for a time by Dino Cellini.[136] Much earlier, in pre-revolutionary Cuba, Nesline had worked at the Tropicana Club in Havana, where Cellini was acting as manager. At this time, Tourine was managing the nearby Capri. In the wake of Castro's 1959 revolution, Cellini, Tourine, Meyer Lansky's brother Jake, and Florida mob boss Santo Trafficante were imprisoned together in a camp called the Trescornia.[137] In addition, in the early 1960s, Nesline and Tourine co-owned a posh Miami beach house. In 1964, this property was inhabited by Alvin Malnik, a Mafia financier who was something of a protégé of Lanksy's.[138] Malnik, in this same period, was plugged into the web of international banking that the organized crime groups surrounding Lansky used to move the money they reaped from countless real estate interests, the narcotics trade, and the skim from casinos. He was also the counsel for the Allied Empire Corporation, a major stockholder in Lansky's offshore Bank of World Commerce.

Given these sorts of associations, it is perhaps noteworthy that George Owen told Len Colodny that he first met Rikan in the mid-1960s in Antigua.[139] He was visiting the island with his good friends Bedford Wynne and Gilbert Lee Beckley. Beckley, a world-renowned gambler and bookie described by TIME as "a valuable man to the Cosa Nostra," co-owned a hotel on the island called the Miramar, which is where Owen first crossed paths with Rikan.[140] An FBI report states that in 1966, Charles Tourine was dispatched to Antigua "to protect Beckley's interests." The same report states that in addition to Beckley, co-investors in the Miramar included Anthony "Fat Tony" Salerno of the Genovese crime family.

Nesline's DC operations seem to have been enabled by the extensive corruption of the local police force. An FBI report from late May 1962 describes information provided by an informant with intimate knowledge of police involvement with organized crime in the area. The informant's name is withheld in the report – he felt that "his life and that of his family would be placed in jeopardy if knowledge of his interviews and cooperation with the FBI were even suspected by the various members of the Washington DC area gambling element."[141] The report continues: "No gambler operates in the Washington DC area unless he obtains protection from the Metropolitan Police Department."[142] According to the anonymous informant, influence over the gambling rackets was divided up according to the various police precincts, with the "gambling 'backers'" often having to deal "directly with the Captain of the particular precinct."[143] But perhaps some of the most interesting information concerns Roy Blick, the morals squad head who worked so closely with the CIA: "[Redacted] stated that he was told by Mitchell and feels certain that it is true that "Snags" Lewis was paying Inspector Roy Blick and Chief of Police Barnett.… He had been recently advised that "Snags" Lewis, "Billy" Mitchell, and Joe Nesline are currently doing business with Blick."[144]

POTENTIAL MOTIVES

Sometime in 1971, Heidi Rikan came to Phillip Bailley with the idea of using his contacts at the DNC to expand the customer base for the girls at Colombia Plaza.[145] The connection between Bailley and the DNC was Spencer Oliver, and the "thought was someone – perhaps Oliver himself, perhaps another employee – would be able to steer 'high-rolling pols' to [Rikan's] Colombia Plaza operation."[146] According to Bailley, he managed to make contact with someone within the DNC, and the arrangements were made for a call-out line to be set up from the offices. The location of this line was purported to be the phone of Spencer Oliver, though he does not appear to have been the one with whom Bailley was negotiating. As 1971 gave way to 1972, the operation was bearing fruit, reportedly with one client or more a day being set up through the DNC offices. "Other clients," writes Len Colodny, drawing on statements made by Bailley, "included men from the State Department, major hotels in town, a private club, and the Library of Congress."[147]

Unfortunately for Bailley, trouble was looming on the horizon. On April 6, 1972, the DC police and the FBI raided his home. While Bailley was away, tied up in court, the authorities were busy pulling a veritable treasure trove of incredibly incriminating items from his apartment. Among the sex paraphernalia, video-recording equipment, and other such odds and ends were photographs, home movies, ledgers, and contact books. Each of these was taken into police custody and logged as evidence.

The reason for the raid, interestingly enough, was separate from the complex arrangements running at Watergate and the Colombia Plaza Apartments. Bailley was being charged with violating the Mann Act, which is better known as the White-Slave Traffic Act of 1910. The crooked lawyer, it seems, was accused of drugging a university of student, taking pornographic pictures of her and blackmailing her. As the story goes, Bailley threatened to dispatch copies of the photographs to her school's administrators and her parents if she "did not submit to the attentions of his political cronies and business associates. So, she did submit, having sex with fifteen consecutive partners at a party hosted by Bailley in a suburban Maryland house."[148]

Phil Stanford, in his book on Rikan, presents a slightly more complicated story. He identifies the student as Astrid Leflang, who Bailley had attempted to recruit into Rikan's call girl ring.[149] Rikan, however, rejected Leflang on the grounds that she was "too low-class" and not sophisticated enough for the operation she was trying to get up and running. Soon enough, Leflang was feeling snubbed – and began to provide information to the Capitol Police vice squad.[150] Thus began Bailley's legal woes.

Within a month, Assistant US Attorney John Rudy was building a major case against Bailley. By this time, many women had come forward with accusations against the attorney, and lists of potential witnesses were being compiled. Because Bailley's social networks were so broad, there were quite a few to choose from. Nevertheless, the media buzz about Bailley's situation and the seriousness of his crimes was minimal – at least until June 9, when the Washington Star ran a front-page story stamped with the headline "Capitol Hill Call Girl Ring Uncovered." "The FBI has uncovered," the article states, "a high-priced call girl ring allegedly headed by a Washington attorney and staffed by secretaries and office workers from Capitol Hill and involving at least one White House secretary."[151] The article seems to be alluding directly to the Rikan call girl ring, while misconstruing just how involved Bailley was with it. Who exactly tipped off the Star is unknown, but it set off alarms elsewhere in DC. Attorney John Rudy received a call from John Dean demanding access to "all documentary evidence involved in the [Bailley] investigation."[152] Rudy and his assistants were personally summoned to the White House. The evidence, including Bailley's contact book, was packed up and brought to Dean. Rudy would later tell Colodny that the main focus of Dean's attention, besides the potential sources for the Star's story, was the black contact book. Many of the individuals in the book were hidden behind aliases, and two of those were "Cathy Dieter" and "Clout." Rudy had taken pains to confirm the identities behind the aliases: Cathy Dieter was Heidi Rikan, while Clout was her good friend and former roommate Maureen Biner. Rudy, at the time, did not know that Dean was dating Biner – or, for that matter, that Biner had moved in with Dean.[153]

The timeframe of these events is telling. The raid on Bailley took place on April 6, 1972, and a day later the CRP provided G. Gordon Liddy with $83,000. On April 12, McCord received a large chunk of this money to purchase electronic surveillance equipment. Hougan notes that it was "three days later, on April 15, that William Haddad wrote to [Jack] Anderson for the first time, informing him of plans to spy on Democrats."[154] The first of the break-ins at the DNC then took place toward the end of May. The Star article and John Dean's encounter with Bailley's contact book was June 9..On June 12, Jeb Magruder suggested to Liddy another break-in – ostensibly for the purposes of acquiring the files of DNC chairman Larry O'Brien. Magruder, however, had not concocted the scheme out of whole cloth. It had been Dean's idea.[155] Within five days the police were in the DNC offices making arrests, and Eugenio Martinez was trying to prevent the mysterious key from falling into police hands. From there, it was all downhill for the Nixon administration.

Had Dean ultimately ordered the break-ins to obtain potentially incriminating information related to the Watergate–Colombia Plaza ring, which was connected to his future wife via Heidi Rikan? With the specter of organized crime – chiefly, Rikan's relationship with Joe Nesline – in play and the rumors swirling about high-profile Washingtonians indulging in prostitution, it was certainly an explosive situation. Perhaps Dean was hoping to get out ahead of any revelations that might emerge from the investigation of Bailley and his impending conviction.

There are also other looming questions. Was there a connection between the Watergate call girl ring and the sorts of sexual-blackmail operations alleged to have been carried out by Edwin Wilson? Jim Hougan offers some provocative evidence. For instance, the "trick book" maintained by Lil' Lori (Barbara Ralabate) reportedly contained the names "Ed Wilson" and "Tungsten Park."[156] The "Tungsten Park" was clearly Tongsun Park. Furthermore, he writes that the apartment owned by "Tess" (Heidi Rikan) had been rented in the name of Phillip Bailley but had actually been paid for "by a wealthy defense contractor, a sometime lobbyist on Capitol Hill who owned a huge farm and claimed to 'hail' from Houston, Texas."[157] Each of these descriptions match Edwin Wilson, who had indeed spent time as a lobbyist (covertly working on behalf of the CIA), owned a sprawling farm in Virginia, and managed lucrative defense contracts via the TF-[157] front companies – one of which, Aroundworld Shipping & Chartering, operated from Houston, Texas. The implications of this are immense. If Wilson and Park were indeed connected to the Watergate ring, then it was plugged into a network that encompassed the activities of Robert Keith Gray, the George Town Club, the internal politics of Task Force 157, and, ultimately, the forces seemingly aligning themselves against Richard Nixon.

Seen from this point of view, the Watergate incident, which imploded Nixon's presidency, appears less like a sloppy robbery gone awry and more like an elaborate frame-up, followed by a controlled demolition. The specter of the CIA in Watergate continued even into the trials that followed the unveiling of the break-ins, as evidenced by the man who was appointed as the Watergate special prosecutor, Leon Jaworski.

A partner at the Houston-based firm of Fulbright & Jaworski, Jaworski populated numerous boards and maintained affiliations with a wide gamut of powerful interests. He held the position of trustee at the M.D. Anderson Foundation, which had been established in the late 1930s to help build the now-famous medical center in Houston. Sometime towards the end of the 1950s, M.D. Anderson became a conduit for funds originating from the CIA. As trustee, Jaworski was aware of the nature of the funds, and had signed off on it – as had the foundation's president, John Freeman, who was a former partner at Jaworski's firm.[158]

Another Houston-based foundation moving CIA money in this same period was the San Jacinto Fund.[159] Heading the San Jacinto Fund was Ernest Cockrell Jr. – a board member of the wealthy Bank of the South-west. Jaworski and his law partners could also be found here: a 1977 Texas Monthly article describes how "the partners had their closest and most lucrative relationship with the Bank of the Southwest. In addition to serving as the bank's legal counsel, members of the firm dominated the board of directors and occupied the top executive positions."[160] Another bank director was the businessman John de Menil, then the representative of Schlumberger oil interests in America.[161] Schlumberger would later be implicated in the covert support for the anti-Castro Cuban exiles, suggesting yet another CIA element in this network of individuals.[162]

By the time that the Watergate scandal had erupted, Jaworski could be found working closely with a veteran of those same anti-Castro operations, and one who played a prominent role in the events detailed in this chapter: Alexander Haig. The nature of this relationship was so particular that it saw Haig act as a channel for the flow of information to Jaworski, including some which had not been subpoenaed.[163] It seems that Haig was playing a direct, if shadowy, role in shaping the overall thrust of the Watergate prosecution.

THE PAGEBOY SCANDAL

The sordid story rumbling beneath the Watergate fiasco was not the only time that Robert Keith Gray's name would come up in connection with sexual-blackmail rings. As previously mentioned, John DeCamp's 1992 classic book on the Franklin scandal raised the specter of Gray – and his connections to Edwin Wilson – due to his close association with Harold Andersen, the publisher of the Omaha World Herald newspaper and a close ally of the man at the city of that particular web, Larry King. Andersen himself stood accused of being a willing participant in King's activities.

Nearly a decade earlier, Gray had surfaced in the course of an investigation into a purported sex-and-drug ring that allegedly operated on Capitol Hill. The scandal made a momentary splash in the media, but it is now merely a footnote. It began when Leroy Williams Jr., a congressional page – pages were high school students employed to fulfill various administrative tasks such as acting as couriers for congressmen – made startling accusations that he "had sex with three House members and procured homosexual prostitutes for a senator."[164] The latter incident was reported as having taken place at the Watergate office complex.[165]

Initial reports suggested that unnamed witnesses came forward with further information on sexual activities between politicians and pages, prostitution rings, and a connected drug ring operating on the Hill. CBS Evening News ran the story first on July 30, 1982, and the hints of drug abuse were quickly linked to arrests that had occurred several months earlier. On April 19, Douglas Marshall, Robert Finkel, and Troy Todd had been nabbed by undercover Washington, DC, Metropolitan Police for possession of cocaine; of the three, Marshall and Finkel were charged "with distributing and conspiring to distribute cocaine."[166] Todd and another accomplice, a young woman named Devon Dupres, were subsequently named as "unindicted co-conspirators."

Newspapers described Dupres as "a Georgetown cocktail waitress," though she appears to have been an assistant to Michael O'Harro, the owner of a DC discotheque called Tramps.[167] Others stated that she

"reportedly socialized with a California congressman now under investigation by drug agents" and was subsequently entered into the "Justice Department federal witness program" and "moved to an undisclosed location."[168] This odd cast of characters operated a cocaine ring that employed the services of congressional pages, tour guides, and other Hill employees who enjoyed wide-ranging access to members of Congress. Douglas Marshall himself had been a page, while Robert Finkel had worked as an elevator operator in the Capitol. On July 7, Jack Anderson reported that "more than 15 members of congress were customers of a cocaine ring that operated on Capitol Hill, the ringleaders have told narcotics agents."[169] He also appeared on ABC News Nightline with Sam Donaldson, publicly linking the cocaine ring with the emerging allegations of prostitution and sexual abuse:

> Donaldson: All right, Jack, tell us about the page setup. Did you actually catch some pages involved as couriers?
>
> Mr. Anderson: There were some pages involved, but the drug scam … changed into a sex scam later. I know very little about the sex angle of it except that the same people were involved. Some of the same people.
>
> Donaldson: But pages were acting as couriers for the dealing of drugs?
>
> Mr. Anderson: That's correct. So were congressional aides.[170]

By the time that Anderson was making these accusations, an FBI investigation and a House Ethics Committee inquiry had formed to assess the possibilities of a sex-and-drugs ring on Capitol Hill. Oddly enough, old Watergate familiar Joseph Califano was put in charge of the inquiry. Califano's team employed a score of lawyers and investigators, including two private investigators – Richard Powers, a former New York City police officer, and John "Jack" Moriarty, a former DC police officer.

Gray's name came up in the inquiry from an anonymous tip, which was handled by Powers, who drafted a memo on it to Califano. The memo quickly disappeared.[171] The lead to Gray arose on July 21, when Ethics Committee counsel Donald Purdy and John Moriarty interviewed yet another figure from the Watergate days, DC police officer Carl Shoffler. Shoffler turned over the extensive information that he had compiled on Gray – his links to Edwin Wilson and the CIA, rumors of his involvement in the use and distribution of narcotics, wild tales of orgies taking place at his home in Rehoboth Beach.

The most alarming allegation made by Shoffler, however, was that a consultant for Diamond Shamrock, a major Texas-based oil and gas concern, and a local photographer personally known to Gray were involved in "a male prostitution service on Capitol Hill."[172] Diamond Shamrock was, at the time, a client of Gray & Co., an independent PR firm set up by Gray in the early 1980s.[173] Several weeks after he provided this information to Purdy and Moriarty, Shoffler was contacted by a security specialist with longtime intelligence ties, Michael Pilgrim.[174] Pilgrim wanted to know if Shoffler had been hired by H & K – Gray had left the firm to start Gray & Co. – to keep tabs on their former executive. Pilgrim, in turn, had been asked to assess Shoffler by Neil Livingstone, yet another strange character from the murky netherworld where intelligence and Beltway subterfuge intersected.

Livingstone, who will be discussed at greater length in the next chapter, was at the time working for Gray at Gray & Co. while also maintaining extensive ties to the circles around Ted Shackley, Thomas Clines, and Edwin Wilson that went back to the mid-1970s. The arrival of Livingstone on the scene raised even more puzzling questions. As Susan Trento asked: "How did Livingstone find out that Shoffler had received allegations about Gray?"[175]

The day after his encounter with Pilgrim, Shoffler was contacted by Thomas Fortuin, Gray's attorney. It was an interesting choice for a lawyer as, in 1981, Fortuin had taken over from Roy Cohn as the chief attorney for Tony Salerno, the boss of the Genovese crime family.[176] These ties may have run deep – Gray was reportedly a friend of Cohn, though – as previously mentioned, the exact nature of their relationship remains vague.

A year after the pageboy scandal first broke, Salerno arranged for the appointment of Jackie Presser as president of the Teamsters Union.[177] Presser was a client and close associate of Gray; the two may have even owned a mysterious company together called Member Services Corporation.[178] Fortuin offered Shoffler the opportunity to interview Gray, with the clarification that Gray would deny the allegations that Shoffler had made to Purdy and Moriarty. He then added that it was Moriarty himself who had turned over the information to Gray's associates. It was an incredible conflict of interest: in addition to working on the Ethics Committee probe, both Moriarty and Powers were moonlighting on behalf of Gray & Co. Powers himself was a longtime associate of Fortuin, who had employed Powers as his own private investigator.[179] In a subsequent meeting with Powers, Shoffler himself was offered a job working for Gray – at a very lucrative salary. Shoffler saw this as an attempted bribe and reported it to the US Attorney. Very soon a sweeping Department of Justice investigation was underway.

On September 28, 1982, the New York Times ran an article stamped with the title "Califano suspends 2 investigators in Congress sex and drugs inquiry."[180] These two investigators were identified as Powers and Moriarty. Califano "did not return repeated calls to his office, and Justice Department officials declined to disclose the nature of the charges against Mr. Moriarty and Mr. Powers."[181]

After the Moriarty and Powers debacle, the entire episode came to a close, much more quietly than it had begun. More questions than satisfactory answers were raised. In the final Ethics Committee reported, Califano cited evidence that the US Capitol Police had systematically destroyed documentary records related to drug trafficking on the Hill – including vital documents put together in the critical month of July 1982 when the accusations first began to gain momentum. While the report suggested that disciplinary action in connection with the destruction might be warranted, there was insufficient evidence "to conclude that the records … contained information important to the Committee's investigation of illicit drug use or distribution of drugs."[182]

The allegations of sexual abuse of pages and homosexual prostitution were also soon swept to the side. Leroy Williams, the page who first came forward, suddenly recanted. He told investigators working on behalf of the Ethics Committee that he "concocted the tale of sexual misconduct and drug use to draw public attention to the pressures of the page system."[183] Importantly, the congressman with whom he had claimed to have had sex – Larry Craig of Idaho – was himself a member of the House Ethics Committee.[184] In 2007, Craig was arrested after propositioning an undercover police officer for sex in the men's restroom of the Minneapolis-Saint Paul International Airport.[185]

Endnotes

1Susan Trenton, The Power House: Robert Keith Gray and the Selling of Influence and Access in Washington (St. Martin’s, 1992), 11. https://archive.org/details/powerhouserobert00tren.

2Trento, Power House, 17.

3Trento, Power House, 17.

4Edward J. Epstein, Dossier: The Secret History of Armand Hammer (Random House, 1996), 322.

5Trento, Power House, 370.

6“Knowlton, Donald Snow,” Encyclopedia of Cleveland History, May 11, 2018, https://case.edu/ech/articles/k/knowlton-donald-snow; Robert L. Heath, Encyclopedia of Public Relations (SAGE Publications, 2013), 418; “Tough Problems Were His Hobby,” Brooklyn Eagle, April 10th, 1927.

7Karen Miller, “‘Air Power Is Peace Power’ The Aircraft Industry’s Campaign for Public and Political Support, 1943–1949,” Business History Review, Vol. 70, no. 3 (1996): 297–327, https://doi.org/10.2307/3117240.

8Heath, Encyclopedia of Public Relations, 419.

9Trento, Power House, 99.

10Joseph John Trento, Prelude to Terror : The Rogue CIA and the Legacy of America’s Private Intelligence Network (New York : Carroll & Graf, 2005), p. xvi, http://archive.org/details/preludetoterrorr00tren.

11“Cryptonym: WUSALINE,” https://www.maryferrell.org/php/cryptdb.php?id=WUSALINE.

12Trento, Power House, 106.

13Peter Dale Scott, The War Conspiracy: The Secret Road to the Secret Indochina War (Indianapolis: Bobbs-Merrill, 1972), https://archive.org/details/warconspiracys00scot.

14Scott, War Conspiracy, 7.

15“Subject: Earl Scheib,” The President John F. Kennedy Assassination Records Collection, March 1, 1962, FBI Record 124-10328-10003, https://www.archives.gov/files/research/jfk/releases/docid-32313329.pdf.

16Catherine Forslund. Anna Chennault: Informal Diplomacy and Asian Relations (Rowman & Littlefield, 2002), 101.

17Trento, Power House, 98.

18Glenn Michael Speer, “Richard Nixon’s Position on Communist China, 1949-1960: The Evolution of a Pacific Strategy,” CUNY Graduate Center, 1992, 15-16, https://academicworks.cuny.edu/cgi/viewcontent.cgi?article=2513&context=gc_etds.

19J. C. Louis and Harvey Z. Yazijan, Cola Wars: The Story of the Global Battle between the Coca-Cola Company and PepsiCo, Inc (Everest House, 1980), 115.

20“Home - The George Town Club,” https://www.georgetownclub.org/.

21Phil McCombs, “Tongsun Park’s Club,” Washington Post, October 16, 1977, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/opinions/1977/10/16/tongsun-parks-club/fc4e8ef5-f79b-4a55-b458-25bb6eeea07a/.

22Korean Influence Inquiry: Executive Session Hearings Before the Select Committee on Ethics of the United States Senate, Ninety-fifth Congress, Second Session, 1978. p. 316.

23Richard M. Gibson, The Secret Army: Chiang Kai-Shek and the Drug Warlords of the Golden Triangle (South Tower Singapore: John Wiley & Sons (Asia), 2011), 58-63.

24Peter Dale Scott, “Operation Paper: The United States and Drugs in Thailand and Burma,” no. 2, no. 44 (November 1, 2010), https://apjjf.org/-Peter-Dale-Scott/3436/article.html.

25“Life Line Tax Status Queried,” Broadcasting: The Businessweekly of Television and Radio, September 7, 1964, 72.

26David Clayton, Imperialism Revisited: Political and Economic Relations Between Britain and China, 1950-54 (Palgrave Macmillan, 1997), 25; Harvey Klehr and Ronald Radosh, The Amerasia Spy Case: Prelude to McCarthyism (Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 1996) 207, https://archive.org/details/amerasiaspycasep0000kleh.

27Peter Dale Scott, Deep Politics and the Death of JFK (University of California Press, 1996), 212.

28Maxine Cheshire and Charles Babcock, “Tongsun Park and the Korean CIA,” Washington Post, August 28, 1977, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1977/08/28/tongsun-park-and-the-korean-ciacia-had-reason-to-know-of-parks-ties-to-korean-ciapapers-interviews-show-scope-of-parks-korean-cia-link/99cdbf98-965e-4c6a-a333-f7c146cfc445/.

29Korean Influence Inquiry: Executive Hearings Before the Select Committee on the Ethics of the United States Senate, Ninety-Fifth Congress, Second Session, Vol. 1, (US Government Printing Office, 1978), 152.

30Nicholas Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn (1st ed. New York: Doubleday, 1988), 364.

31Congressional Quarterly Weekly Report 29: January-December 1971, 1134.

32Sally Denton and Roger Morris, The Money and the Power: The Making of Las Vegas and Its Hold on America, 1947-2000, 1st ed (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 2001), 316.

33Scott, Deep Politics, 202-5.

34Peter Dale Scott, The War Conspiracy: JFK, 9/11, and the Deep Politics of War, ePub (Sky-horse, 2013), 240.

35Scott, War Conspiracy: JFK, 9/11, and the Deep Politics of War, 241.

36Kim Scipes, AFL-CIO’s Secret War against Developing Country Workers (Lexington Books, 2011), 54-60.

37Trento, Prelude to Terror, 40.

38Trento, Power House, 108.

39Peter Maas, Manhunt: The Incredible Pursuit of a CIA Agent Turned Terrorist (Random House 1986), 32.

40Trento, Power House, 181.

41Jim Hougan, Secret Agenda: Watergate, Deep Throat, and the CIA (Random House 1984), 120.

42Hougan, Secret Agenda, 120.

43John W. DeCamp, The Franklin Cover-Up: Child Abuse, Satanism, and Murder in Nebraska (Nebraska: AWT, 1992), 178.

44DeCamp, Franklin Cover-Up, 177.

45DeCamp, Franklin Cover-Up, 179.

46Jean-Guy Allard, “Philip Agee Versus the CIA,” CounterPunch.org, January 21, 2008. https://www.counterpunch.org/2008/01/21/philip-agee-versus-the-cia/.

47Andrea Conception, “The Mystery of the JM Wave,” Distraction, February 10, 2018, https://www.distractionmagazine.com/the-mystery-of-the-jm-wave/; Peter Dale Scott, “Document: Transnationalised Repression Parafascism and the US,” Wikispooks, https://wikispooks.com/wiki/Document:Transnationalised_Repression_Parafascism_and_the_US.

48Trento, Prelude to Terror, 29.

49Jim Drinkhall, “CIA Helped Quash Major, Star-Studded Tax Evasion Case,” Washington Post, April 24, 1980, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1980/04/24/cia-helped-quash-major-star-studded-tax-evasion-case/a55ddf06-2a3f-4e04-a687-a3dd87c32b82/.

50Listing of Traffic Removed from C/WHD Files Watergate File Research, April 24, 1974, https://www.archives.gov/files/research/jfk/releases/2018/104-10095-10326.pdf.

51Alfred McCoy, The Politics of Heroin: CIA Complicity in the Global Drug Trade (Lawrence Hill Books, 2003), 212-13.

52McCoy, Politics of Heroin, 212-13; Frank Browning and Banning Garrett, “The New Opium War,” Wisconsin Historical Society, p. 6, https://content.wisconsinhistory.org/digital/collection/p15932coll8/id/54609/.

53McCoy, Politics of Heroin, 254.

54McCoy, Politics of Heroin, 318.

55Richard Secord and Jay Wurts, Honored and Betrayed: Irangate, Covert Affairs, and the Secret War in Laos (Wiley, 1992), 20-60.

56Trento, Prelude to Terror, 41.

57Trento, Prelude to Terror, 47.
58Jeffrey T. Richelson, ed., “The Pentagon’s Spies,” National Security Archive, George Washington University, May 23, 2001, https://nsarchive2.gwu.edu/NSAEBB/NSAEBB46/.
59Michael McClintock, Instruments of Statecraft: U.S. Guerilla Warfare, Counterinsurgency, and Counterterrorism, 1940-1990, chap. 4, https://www.statecraft.org/chapter4.html.
60Jeffrey T. Richelson, “Task Force 157: The US Navy’s Secret Intelligence Service, 1966-77,” Intelligence and National Security, Vol. 11, no. 1 (January 1996): 109.
61Richelson, “Task Force 157,” 110.
62Richelson, “Task Force 157,” 122-23.
63Maas, Manhunt, 48.
64Maas, Manhunt, 48; Trento, Prelude to Terror, 52.
65Maas, Manhunt, 49.
66Hougan, Secret Agenda, 71.
67Sajit Gandhi, ed., “The Tilt: The US and the South Asian Crisis of 1971,” National Security Archive, George Washington University, Dec. 16, 2002, https://nsarchive2.gwu.edu/NSAEBB/NSAEBB79/.
68Gandhi, “Tilt.”
69Clark Mollenhoff, “Kissinger Doesn’t Get High Mark on Anderson Papers,” Courier-Post (Camden, New Jersey), January 22, 1972.
70Mollenhoff, “Anderson Papers.”
71David R. Young, “Memorandum for the President Re: Record of Investigation into Disclosure of Classified Information in Jack Anderson Articles December 14 and 16, 1971 on Indian/Pakistan Confrontation,” http://nixontapes.org/welander/Young_memo_to_Nixon.pdf.
72Len Colodny and Robert Gettlin, Silent Coup: The Removal of the President (St. Martin’s Press, 1992), 22.
73Colodny and Gettlin, Silent Coup, 24.
74Colodny and Gettlin, Silent Coup, 30.
75Hougan, Secret Agenda, 75.
76R. T. Naylor, Hot Money and the Politics of Debt (Linden Pub, 1987), 155-56; Richard Halloran, “Papers Link Bank to K.C.I.A. Aide in Stock Disposal,” New York Times, Nov. 2, 1977.
77Richard Halloran, “Inquiry Suggests Korean Agents Tried to Gain Control of Bank in US,” New York Times, May 31, 1977.
78Jonathan Marshall, Dark Quadrant: Organized Crime, Big Business, and the Corruption of American Democracy, Kindle (Lanham: Rowman & Littlefield, 2021), n. 127, https://rowman.com/WebDocs/Dark_Quadrant_Extra_Notes.pdf.
79Emma North-Best, “FBI Evidence Points to Journalist Jack Anderson’s Role in Watergate,” MuckRock, Dec. 7, 2017, https://www.muckrock.com/news/archives/2017/dec/07/jack-anderson-watergate/.
80Hougan, Secret Agenda, 79.
81Lisa Pease, A Lie Too Big to Fail: The Real History of the Assassination of Robert F. Kennedy, Kindle (Feral House, 2018), 732–55.
82Hougan, Secret Agenda, 78.
83Shane O’Sullivan, Dirty Tricks: Nixon, Watergate, and the CIA. (La Vergne: Hot Books, 2018), 248.
84“Memorandum for the Record, Subject: Project Artichoke,” National Security Archive, George Washington University, Jan. 31, 1975, https://nsarchive2.gwu.edu/NSAEBB/NSAEBB438/st02.pdf.
85“Subject: Project Artichoke.”
86Hougan, Secret Agenda, 13.
87Rockefeller Commission Report (1975), 249, History Matters Archive, https://history-matters.com/archive/church/rockcomm/html/Rockefeller_0131a.htm.
88Anna Lvovsky, Vice Patrol: Cops, Courts, and the Struggle Over Urban Gay Life Before Stonewall (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2021), 106.
89Evan Thomas, The Man to See (Simon & Schuster, 2012), 59-60.

90Lvovsky, Vice Patrol, 106.

91William Conrad Gibbons, The US Government and the Vietnam War: Executive and Legislative Roles and Relationships, Part IV (Princeton University Press, 2014), 857.
92O'Sullivan, Dirty Tricks, 252.
93O'Sullivan, Dirty Tricks, 515.
94O'Sullivan, Dirty Tricks, 251.
95O'Sullivan, Dirty Tricks, 251.
96O'Sullivan, Dirty Tricks, 247-48.
97Robert M. Hathaway and Russell Jack Smith, Richard Helms As Director of Central Intelligence (Center for the Study of Intelligence, 1993), 8, https://archive.org/details/Richard-Helms-CIA.
98Hathaway and Smith, Richard Helms, 9.
99Hougan, Secret Agenda, 202.
100Hougan, Secret Agenda, 232.
101Joseph A. Califano Jr., "Timothy Naftali interview transcription," Nixon Library documents, April 3, 2007, https://www.nixonlibrary.gov/sites/default/files/virtuallibrary/documents/histories/califano-2007-04-03.pdf.
102Joseph A. Califano Jr., "ICCA: Report on status of implementation of actions designed to counter subversion," Califano Papers (box 2, folder 26), July 18, 1963.
103Gus Russo, Live by the Sword: The Secret War against Castro and the Death of JFK (Bancroft Press, 1998), 163.
104"Cuban Contingency Planning," Joint Chiefs of Staff Debrief Item Re Cuban Actions, January 23, 1964, https://www.maryferrell.org/showDoc.html?docId=10249.
105Hougan, Secret Agenda, 264.
106"Entry into Democratic National Headquarters," JFK Assassination Records, NARA Record Number: 104-10256-10268 https://www.maryferrell.org/showDoc.html?docId=161720&relPage-Id=9
107Colodny and Gettlin, Silent Coup, 70.
108Colodny and Gettlin, Silent Coup, 70.
109Colodny and Gettlin, Silent Coup, 70-71.
110Colodny and Gettlin, Silent Coup, 71.
111Robert Gettlin, "Author Reflects on Watergate and 'Deep Throat,'" Fredericksburg.com, July 16, 2005, https://fredericksburg.com/town_and_countyother_history/author-reflects-on-watergate-and-deep-throat-robert-co-author-of-silent-coup-1991-watergate/article_b85944c7-3b85-50c4-a339-c184b9386fa1.html.
112Jim Hougan, "Hougan, Liddy, the Post and Watergate," Investigative Notes, June 22, 2011, http://jimhougan.com/wordpress/?p=11.
113Hougan, "Hougan, Liddy, the Post and Watergate."
114Hougan,"Hougan, Liddy, the Post and Watergate."
115Colodny and Gettlin, Silent Coup, 63.
116Anthony J. Lukas, Nightmare: The Underside of the Nixon Years (Penguin, 2008), 201.
117Lukas, Nightmare, 201.
118Hougan, Secret Agenda, 115.
119Hougan, Secret Agenda, 115.
120Hougan, Secret Agenda, 116.
121O'Sullivan, Dirty Tricks, 267.
122Phil Stanford, White House Call Girl: The Real Watergate Story (Feral House, 2013), 69.
123Colodny and Gettlin, Silent Coup, 156.
124Hougan, Secret Agenda, 39.
125Colodny and Gettlin, Silent Coup.
126Colodny and Gettlin, Silent Coup.
127See Scott, Deep Politics, 232-35.

128Maureen Dean and Hays Gorey, “Mo”: A Woman’s View of Watergate (Simon & Schuster, 1975), 40.

129Marshall, Dark Quadrant, 283-86.
130Peter Brewton, The Mafia, CIA, and George Bush (S.P.I. Books, 1992), 98-100.
131Stanford, White House Call Girl, 158n23.
132Marshall, Dark Quadrant, 236-39.
133Brewton, Mafia, CIA, and Bush, 23-26.
134Colodny and Gettlin, Silent Coup, 164.
135“Report on Joseph Francis Nesline,” FBI Criminal Intelligence Program, Miami, November 15, 1963.
136Scott, Deep Politics, 240.
137Report of the Select Committee on Assassinations: Findings and Recommendations, US House of Representatives, Ninety-Fifth Congress, Second Session, March 29, 1979, 154.
138Alan A. Block, Masters of Paradise: Organized Crime and the Internal Revenue Service in the Bahamas (Routledge, 1991) 50.
139Lindo Minor, “Off the Boards,” Quixotic Joust, March 30, 2011, https://quixoticjoust.blogspot.com/2011/03/off-boards.html?m=1
140Minor, “Off the Boards.”
141“Subject: Joseph Shimon,” FBI, May 29, 1962, https://www.maryferrell.org/showDoc.html?docId=116549
142“Subject: Joseph Shimon.”
143“Subject: Joseph Shimon.”
144“Subject: Joseph Shimon.”
145Hougan, Secret Agenda, 116-17; Colodny and Gettlin, Silent Coup, 130-31.
146Colodny and Gettlin, Silent Coup, 130.
147Colodny and Gettlin, Silent Coup, 136.
148Hougan, Secret Agenda, 112.
149Stanford, White House Call Girl, 78.
150Stanford, White House Call Girl, 106.
151Colodny and Gettlin, Silent Coup, 147.
152Colodny and Gettlin, Silent Coup, 148.
153Colodny and Gettlin, Silent Coup, 149.
154Hougan, Secret Agenda, 111.
155Colodny and Gettlin, Silent Coup, 152.
156Hougan, Secret Agenda, 121.
157Hougan, Secret Agenda, 121.
158“Leon Jaworski Etex ‘Man of the Month,’” Tyler Courier Times, November 27, 1960; “Jaworski Reportedly Had Role in Setting Up C.I.A. Aid Conduit,” New York Times, November 6, 1973.
159“Texas, Philanthropy, 007, and the Varsity Drag,” Texas Observer, March 3, 1967.
160Harry Hurt III, “Have Conscience, Will Travel,” Texas Monthly, November 1977, 260.
161Sophy Burnham, “The Manhattan Arrangement of Art and Money,” New York, December 8, 1969, 38.
162James DiEugenio, Destiny Betrayed: JFK, Cuba, and the Garrison Case, Kindle (New York: Skyhorse Publishing, 2012), 255–58; Russo, Live by the Sword, 153.
163Colodny and Gettlin, Silent Coup, 386-396.
164Andy Davis, “NLR Teen’s Allegations Surface in Light of Craig Arrest,” Arkansas Democrat Gazette, August 31, 2007, https://www.arkansasonline.com/news/2007/aug/31/nlr-teens-allegations-surface-light-craig-20070831/.
165Robert Pear, “Authorities Meet on Capitol Sex and Drug Inquiry,” New York Times, July 8, 1982, https://www.nytimes.com/1982/07/08/us/authorities-meet-on-capitol-sex-and-drug-inquiry.html.

166“Report on the Investigation Pursuant to House Resolution 12 Concerning Alleged Illicit Uses or Distribution of Drugs By Members, Officers, or Employees of the House,” House of Representatives, 98th Congress, 1st Session, Report no. 98-559, Nov. 17, 1983, https://ethics.house.gov/sites/ethics.house.gov/files/Hrpt98-559%20pt.%201.pdf.

167Robert Gearty and Joseph Volz, “Pol Snorts at Coke Use Rap,” Daily News, Jan. 22, 1983
168Robert Gearty and Joseph Volz, “Probe Senator in Coke Case,” Daily News, Jan. 15, 1983; Gearty and Volz, “Pol Snorts at Coke Use Rap.”
169“Report on the Investigation Pursuant to House Resolution 12,” 18.
170“Report on the Investigation Pursuant to House Resolution 12,” 8.
171Trento, Power House, 176.
172Trento, Power House, 177.
173Sari Horwitz, “Gray & Co.,” Washington Post, Sept. 6, 1984, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/business/1984/09/06/gray-38/7cf190f1-e247-4e06-803b-6c6dcdc6c35a/.
174Trento, Power House, 177.
175Trento, Power House, 177.
176Daily Labor Reports, vols. 21-40<correct?>, Bureau of National Affairs, 1981, 5.
177Arnold H. Lubasch, “Mob Figures Chose Teamsters’ Chief, Government Says,” Nov. 25, 1986, https://www.nytimes.com/1986/11/25/nyregion/mob-figures-chose-teamsters-chief-government-says.html.
178Trento, Power House, 203.
179Trento, Power House, 177-79.
180Leslie Maitland, “Califano Suspends 2 Investigators in Congress Sex and Drugs Inquiry,” New York Times, Sept. 26, 1982, https://www.nytimes.com/1982/09/26/us/califano-suspends-2-investigators-in-congress-sex-and-drug-inquiry.html.
181Maitland, “Califano Suspends 2 Investigators.”
182“Report on the Investigation Pursuant to House Resolution 12,” 161.
183“Leroy Williams, the former page whose tales of sex …,” UPI, Aug. 27, 1982, https://www.upi.com/Archives/1982/08/27/Leroy-Williams-the-former-page-whose-tales-of-sex/8930399268800/.
184Davis, “NLR Teen’s Allegations Surface.”
185New York Times, “Senator, Arrested at Airport, Pleads Guilty,” New York Times, August 28, 2007, https://www.nytimes.com/2007/08/28/washington/28craig.html.

CHAPTER 6

A PRIVATE CIA

CHANGING TIMES

During the Watergate affair, Henry Kissinger appeared as something of an outsider, even though he had entered the administration as a favored intellectual scion of the Rockefeller-dominated “Eastern Establishment.” His positions on the easing of tensions with the Soviet Union, arms reduction, and opening to China put him out of step with the robust, semi-covert network of spooks, lobbyists, power brokers, and businessmen who were oriented toward the Nationalist Chinese, toward rolling back the Soviets through military means, and increasing defense budgets. Until the Watergate scandal, the lines seemed starkly drawn. But, as time wore on, the battles between liberal reformers and hardliners reached a fever pitch, and certain lines seemed to bend and blur.

Kissinger, in particular, appeared to have undergone something of a geopolitical reorientation, retooling his commitments to reflect the new power bloc. In the latter part of the 1970s, he took up a post at the Center for the Institute of International Studies. As Jerry Sanders has noted, the Center and its partner organization, the American Enterprise Institute, “set themselves up in competition with such august bodies as the Council on Foreign Relations and the Trilateral Commission.”[1] The Center’s director was Ray Cline, an old China Lobby hand, OSS veteran (having served in the China theater alongside notables such as Paul Helliwell, E. Howard Hunt, and John K. Singlaub), and a high-ranking CIA officer. Cline had been a consistent critic of the Nixon-Kissinger policies of detente and opening to China.

To acclimate properly to his new affiliations and associates, Kissinger adopted a harsh line on the ongoing arms reduction talks with the Soviet Union. It was indicative, he said, of a “defeatist consensus” accepted by the “traditional establishment.”[2] By this point, a robust network of New Right activist groups, think-tanks, advocacy groups, and their conservative backers had formed to push back against detente policies and arms reduction, calling instead for an increase in military spending and more hawkish orientation toward the Soviets. Many of these were organized from classic centers of power like the American Security Council, an entity described as the “heart and soul of the military-industrial complex,”[3] the Committee on the Present Danger, the Heritage Foundation (where Robert Keith Gray maintained a post), and the AFL-CIO.

New groups such the Conservative Caucus, the Coalition for Peace through Strength, and the Free Congress Foundation also dotted the landscape, drawing on money unleashed by philanthropies such as the Scaife, Olin, and Koch foundations. Other active players in this world included Reverend Moon’s Unification Church, which was tied very closely to the China Lobby and to the KCIA. Two of the Unification Church’s top US allies were Ray Cline and Alexander Haig.[4] Managing a sizable portion of the Unification Church’s promotional campaigns and serving in a secretarial role in many of its front groups was the political direct-mail mastermind Richard Viguerie. A member of the George Town Club, Viguerie was associated with numerous groups during this period, carrying out work on behalf of the Conservative Caucus and the various anti-disarmament campaigns launched by organizations such as the Committee on the Present Danger and its allies. All of these activities were run from Viguerie’s headquarters, a building he owned at 7777 Leesburg Pike in Falls Church, Virginia. It was a location that came to play a fundamental role in the world of Ted Shackley, Edwin Wilson, and Thomas Clines.

Reformist efforts, nevertheless, continued to build. One such reformer was Admiral Bobby Ray Inman, who had risen through the ranks to become director of Naval Intelligence in 1974. He followed this with stints as head of the Defense Intelligence Agency, the National Security Agency, and then, briefly, as deputy director of the CIA under William Casey. Inman privileged signal intelligence – intelligence acquired via electronic means as opposed to human intelligence gathering methods – and had a strong distaste for what he perceived as waste, inefficiency, and redundancy within the intelligence community. He was also seen as a something of a moderate, a counterpoint to those fixated on covert operations and assassination programs such as those favored by Shackley and his clique.

In 1976, Task Force 157 was on the chopping block. For Inman, “it was an expensive unit of dubious benefit to the Navy.”[5] There were also the rumors and hints that TF-157, via Wilson, had become embroiled in covert operations quite different from its stated mandate. In 1975, for example, Wilson entered into a series of curious business arrangements with Bernie Houghton of Nugan Hand, a bank headquartered in Australia whose management consisted predominately of supposed former US intelligence officials.[6]

Houghton himself was no stranger to the circle of individuals around Wilson, having worked in Vietnam in close proximity to the primary operators in Shackley's secret wars.[7] At the time that Houghton was meeting up with Wilson, the Nugan Hand Bank appears to have been involved in brokering the sale of arms to paramilitaries in South Africa. The financing of the arms was arranged through a web of banks such as Nugan Hand's Hong Kong subsidiary. Yet, when it came to purchasing and shipping the arms, Houghton and his partner, Michael Hand, turned to Edwin Wilson. According to an official Australian government report on the criminal activities of the Nugan Hand Bank:

> There was a number of meetings between Wilson, Houghton, and the others over a relatively short period of time. Subsequently, under the cover of Task Force 157, Wilson placed an order for something like "10 million rounds of ammunition, 3,000 weapons including machine guns, M-1 carbines, and others." The shipment is believed to have left the US from Boston. The End Users' certificate indicated that [Wilson's TF-157 front company] World Marine was the US purchasing agent while the middle company or buyer's agent was an Australian company but not Nugan Hand. The name given as the buyer was Portuguese, and was a name that had been used previously and possibly after by World Marine in other unrelated covert operations.[8]

Rumors also abounded that TF-157 and Nugan Hand were complicit in the destabilization of the Australian government of Gough Whitlam, which was considering closing the CIA's satellite monitoring station called Pine Gap. Alarms about Whitlam's intentions were raised in the halls of the CIA by none other than Shackley; according to Victor Marchetti, a high-ranking CIA officer, Whitlam "caused apoplexy in the White House … a kind of Chile [coup] was set in motion."[9] Likely with these and other incidents in mind, Inman determined that TF-157 was "out of control."[10] Wilson attempted to negotiate with the naval intelligence chief, suggesting that if TF-157 were shut down, perhaps another, more effective organization should be set up (with Wilson getting the lucrative contracts to run it, of course). Shackley also attempted to intercede, suggesting to Inman that shuttering the program and firing Wilson would be the "loss of a major intelligence asset. Inman told Shackley that if he found Wilson so valuable, he could put him back on the CIA payroll."[11]

TF-157 was ultimately shut down, and Wilson was, by all appearances at least, out of the job. At that same moment, events were taking place that would ultimately lead to Wilson's downfall. In December 1975, shortly before Inman's decision to dismantle TF-157 began, Wilson met a former CIA operative named Frank Terpil. Terpil ran a company called Intercontinental Technology, a subsidiary of Stanford Technology – a firm that would feature prominently in the Iran-Contra affair.[12] Stanford's owner was Albert Hakim, an Iranian businessman who acted as a back channel between Iran and Israel.[13]

By the time he met Terpil, Wilson was already familiar with Hakim, as they had been introduced by Richard Secord. Terpil proposed to Wilson a business venture that involved scouring weapons and other sensitive technologies for the government of Muammar Gaddafi in Libya. Terpil had been trading with Libya through a partnership with a Pennsylvania businessman named James McElroy. McElroy, according to Peter Maas, "had been one of the first entrepreneurs to cash in on money-flush OPEC oil nations in Africa and the Middle East. McElroy began supplying them with everything from Pampers to pistols. Gradually Libya became one of his big customers, and from Pampers, it was more and more pistols."[14] But what the Libyans hoped to score, from Terpil and Wilson, was heavier equipment: "C-4 plastic explosives and a Red-Eye Missile."[15]

With the approval of Shackley and Clines, Wilson went to work in Libya. The operation quickly expanded into a training program for Libyan fighters. To carry this out, Wilson and Terpil set up a cover company called Inter-Technology and several other export firms. Former CIA officers like Kevin Mulcahy were brought in to run them, while the secret training school was staffed by former Green Berets.[16] Among the trainers was Eugene Tafoya, "a beefy, acne-scarred thug, widely disliked by his comrades, who after a few glasses of 'flash,' the Libyan equivalent of bathtub gin, would boast about all the people he'd blown away behind enemy lines in Vietnam."[17] Soon enough Tafoya was working as a hitman for Wilson and was outsourced to the Libyan government for an ultimately ill-fated assassination plot against political dissidents living abroad.[18] All the while Wilson reported information back to Shackley and Clines and, reportedly, to the SAVAK – the Iranian intelligence apparatus under the Shah – as well.

At this point, Shackley's star was continuing to rise within the CIA. In January 1976, George H.W.Bush was made President Gerald Ford's director of the CIA, and Shackley was made assistant deputy director for Operations. His coveted position was director of central intelligence, and he fully expected to serve as Bush's successor: "Shackley had been tapped to become CIA director if Gerald Ford had been re-elected president."[19] This, however, never came to pass. Ford didn't win the election and was instead succeeded by President Jimmy Carter. Bush was ousted from his position as director of central intelligence and replaced by a reformist, Admiral Stansfield Turner.

Turner came from outside the world of the CIA. A career military officer, he was a former schoolmate of Carter's and was selected to reorganize the CIA. Large swaths of the Agency dedicated to undercover operations and special warfare were systematically removed, fundamentally changing the character and culture of the CIA. Shackley held on for a while, compartmentalizing what remained in the directorate of Operations and hiding it from the watchful eyes of Carter and Turner.

In 1979, Shackley retired from the CIA to dedicate himself to a series of private business ventures. In reality, these ventures were components of a private intelligence network that he had been designing over the course of several years. The long-term plan was to use this private CIA as the foundation for a rollback of Carter's reforms, when a Republican president would inevitably succeed him. This private network, unsurprisingly, quickly found itself embroiled in a series of international scandals.

Much of Shackley's network was bankrolled with money provided by Wilson. According to FBI memoranda, published as part of a later report by the Congressional Committee Investing the Iran-Contra affair, Wilson provided Clines with a loan to organize a company called International Research and Trade (IRT), which acted as a corporate umbrella for two other Clines-owned companies. These were System Services International (SSI) and API Distributors.

SSI, registered in Bermuda, was later described by Shackley as "designed originally to be a trading company [for] securities." According to his testimony during the Iran-Contra hearings, SSI did very little business.[20] This was soon revealed to be untrue. API Distributors, registered as a Delaware corporation, was organized to act as a supplier for oil companies. One of its primary clients was Pemex, the Mexican state-owned petroleum firm. It set up shop in Houston, Texas, where it shared offices with Wilson's Aroundworld Shipping. API had a tendency to bring into the fold old veterans of the Agency's secret wars. Rafael Quintero and Ricardo Chavez, both old recruits who operated under the auspices of JM/WAVE, were put on the API payroll and dispatched to Mexico, ostensibly to work on the Pemex project.[21]

When questioned about his role in these companies, Shackley offered only vague responses. For SSI, he did some sort of unspecified work, while for API he "worked as a consultant, employee, office manager, trying to get the company off the ground."[22] He told the FBI that he had not played any role whatsoever in IRT, stating that he only had passing knowledge of this Clines-owned parent company. Despite Shackley's efforts to distance himself, numerous figures associated with the private CIA – people like Clines, Wilson, and Richard Secord – "told the FBI and other government agencies that it was quite clear that Shackley was the boss."[23]

Further evidence comes from the curious office arrangement of Research Associates International, the "consultancy and risk analysis" firm Shackley launched in 1979.[24] Just as API Distributors shared office space with Wilson's Aroundworld Shipping, Research Associates International shared offices with SSI and International Research and Trade.[25] RAI's staff included multiple Shackley associates from his CIA days. Directors of the firm included Jim Critchfield, Donald Jameson, and a mysterious "Mr. Ledbetter," who may have actually been Calvin Hicks. If so, Hicks would have known Shackley from his JM/WAVE days.[26]

Research Associates International was formed with a specific focus on the oil industry, and it appears to have only had one, exclusive, client: John Deuss (deceptively spelled as “Dois” in the transcripts of Shackley’s Iran-Contra testimony). Deuss, through an expansive corporate web organized around Transworld Oil, moved in the murky world of oil trading where he worked with the likes of the infamous commodity trader (and Mossad asset) Marc Rich. Between 1979, when he first hired Shackley’s Research Associates International, and 1993, Deuss dominated South Africa’s oil imports, with Transworld Oil accounting “for more than half of South Africa’s oil purchases.”[27] Aside from Deuss, the other giants of this trade – which was essential for the maintenance of the apartheid regime – were Marc Rich and Marimpex, a German oil-trading company. As will be noted later in Chapter 16, a former “girlfriend” of Epstein’s, Francis Jardine, later married John Deuss. Jardine accompanied Epstein to the Clinton White House in September 1994.

Shackley and Deuss intersected through Shackley’s massive web of contacts. The introduction between the two was made by Michael Corrie, then serving as president of Transworld Oil. Corrie had run Royal Dutch Shell’s Vietnam division, which was one of the major firms tapped by the US military to assist the war effort (though, ironically, a robust black market saw significant amounts of Shell petroleum routed to the Viet Cong). It was there that Corrie and Shackley became acquainted.[28]

There was also the interesting selection of attorneys by Shackley and Clines: the legal legwork for setting up Research Associates International, System Services International, and International Research and Trade was the prestigious Washington-based firm of Shaw, Pittman, Potts & Trowbridge.[29] Terry Reed and John Cummings, in Compromised, wrote that the firm was “very much aligned with the CIA” and had “a history of providing criminal defense for intelligence agents.”[30] One former CIA officer on the Shaw, Pittman, Potts & Trowbridge payroll at this time was William Barr, the future Attorney General for Presidents George H.W. Bush and, years later, Donald Trump. Barr had worked for the CIA from 1973 to 1977. He joined Shaw, Pittman, Potts & Trowbridge in 1978, but it is unknown if he worked on any of the accounts linked to this private CIA during his time there.

One lawyer at the firm who was known to represent these interests was Barbara Rossotti, who worked as Clines’ attorney. Rossotti’s name appears in FBI files in connection with what might have been the crown jewel of this entire complex, the Egyptian-American Air Transport and Services Corporation (EATSCO).[31] EATSCO was owned by two corporate entities: 51 percent was held by Tersam, a Virginia company opened by an Egyptian intelligence officer turned businessman, Hussein K. Salem, and 49 percent was held by Clines’ SSI. Clines and Salem parked the headquarters of EATSCO at a familiar location: 7777 Leesburg Pike, the same building that was a hub for the emergent New Right networks of Richard Viguerie and his associates.[32] To make these ties more compact, Salem was, throughout this period, living in the Ramada Inn located next to the 7777 Leesburg Pike.

According to Clines, the hotel’s bar was a CIA “watering spot.”[33] EATSCO functioned as a middleman in arms sales made by the Pentagon to Egypt following the arrangement agreed upon during the Camp David Accords. It inserted itself between the respective militaries and the freight forwarders that were selected to move the cargo. From the get-go, it was clear that this was hardly a normal arrangement. Most Pentagon-related arms sales did not involve “any commercial concern like EATSCO,” which makes it somewhat unsurprising that EATSCO became implicated in a scheme to overcharge the Pentagon for the costs of the shipments.[34]

One of EATSCO’s men inside the Pentagon – who signed off on the immense prices being demanded by the company – was Richard Secord, the future Iran-Contra co-conspirator. When Wilson’s prosecutor, Lawrence Barcella, was put on the trail of EATSCO in the early 1980s, he was paid a visit by yet another future Iran-Contra conspirator – and close friend of Shackley and Clines – Michael Ledeen. According to the New York Times, Ledeen suggested to the attorney that “any alleged billing abuses might have gone for a covert operation.”[35] EATSCO, in other words, might have been skimming Pentagon money and redirecting it to finance the activities of the private CIA.

Indeed, rumors have abounded that EATSCO was covertly running arms to the Mujahideen in Afghanistan and to CIA-backed fighters in other Cold War hot spots. The fingerprints of Edwin Wilson seemed to be all over EATSCO. Journalists linked a series of major loans to SSI made by Wilson to EATSCO, while handwritten notes made by Eugene Tafoya – the former marine employed by Wilson for wetworks operations – made reference to the company.[36] A security-equipment supplier used by EATSCO called Systems Engineering International Corporation was owned and managed by Donald Lower, the former manager of Wilson's sprawling Virginia farm. Incredibly, Systems Engineering International – like all of the other companies in this complex – drew on the legal resources of Shaw, Pittman, Potts & Trowbridge and operated from an office located adjacent to EATSCO at 7777 Leesburg Pike.[37]

ODD CONNECTIONS

By the mid-1970s, Edwin Wilson had gained control of Joseph J. Cappucci Associates, an "international firm specializing in the protection of heads of state."[38] The company had been formed by US Air Force Col. Joseph J. Cappucci. He had been no stranger to the world of intelligence: during World War II, he had served as a counterintelligence officer for the Army Air Corps and, after the war, he became a liaison between the new intelligence apparatus of the Air Force and the CIA. He later served as the chief of the Air Force Office of Special Investigations.

How Wilson gained control of Cappucci's company is not clear, nor is there a firm trail of records illustrating the relationship between the two men. What is clear, however, is that it was eventually folded into the byzantine web of the private CIA: Wilson sold his interests in Cappucci to the trio of Thomas Clines, Donald Lowers, and Neil Livingstone (mentioned in the last chapter in connection with Robert Keith Gray and the congressional page boy scandal). The money used to purchase Wilson's shares reportedly came from "US government expropriation funds collected after an airline Livingstone and a partner had purchased was taken over by the Panamanian government."[39] The airline in question was Air Panama.[40]

Livingstone himself had spent time in Panama between 1976 and 1979, and there he had been associated with the notorious Mossad operative Michael Harari.[41] Harari's long and twisting career began with a stint in the Haganah, where he acted as a courier at just thirteen years old, later graduating from their elite fighting corps, the Palmach. After the formation of Israel, he joined the Israel Defense Force and was eventually recruited by Mossad. During the early 1970s, Harari led teams across Europe to hunt and target members of Black September, the Palestinian group responsible for the Munich Olympics massacre. Harari's team had a tendency to leave a trail of dead bystanders and civilians in their wake. Despite this, he was eventually dispatched to serve as head of Mossad's Latin American operations.

Over time, Panama became the primary site of Harari's activities. Livingstone, in an article on the spymaster for the Washington Post, wrote that "Panama City had become an intelligence center … a sort of Latin American version of Beirut or Vienna."[42] Harari became particularly close to Manuel Noriega, then serving as head of the country's intelligence service. Noriega maintained a convoluted intelligence web, simultaneously serving on the payrolls of the CIA and the Cuban intelligence directorate, the Dirección General de Inteligencia. "Noriega's relationship with the DGI," writes Livingstone, "became a valuable pipeline of information on PLO (Palestine Liberation Organization) activities for Harari and his superiors back in Israel."[43]

By the early 1980s, Harari had been detached from the Mossad – at least in an official capacity – and was making a living as an arms dealer and security specialist for Noriega. José Blandón Castillo, a top Noriega advisor who testified to the Senate Foreign Relations Committee's Sub-committee on Terrorism, Narcotics, and International Operations (also known as the Kerry Committee), accused Harari of running a "network" that managed a guns-and-drugs pipeline across Latin America.[44] It was this same logistical network that laid the groundwork for the later Contra-support efforts.

Harari, importantly, was in close contact with Duane Clarridge – the CIA officer who oversaw those initial efforts. Livingstone's tenure at Cappucci was among the first of his post-Panama activities. A contract was signed with the Egyptian government of Anwar Sadat to train the presidential security forces. CIA-trained Cuban exile Felix Rodriguez, who had worked under Shackley at both JM/WAVE and in Vietnam, was brought in to oversee the operation. It was part of the arrangements being organized by Wilson and Clines that had produced the EATSCO deal. Both would later tell journalist Morgan Strong that deals such as these were being made through a kickback arrangement in which large sums of money were to be passed to Sadat via Hosni Mubarak in exchange for the contracts.[45]

EATSCO's primary support apparatus in these various deals was Global International Airways, a Kansas City-based charter airline and cargo carrier founded in the late 1970s by Farhad Azima. An Iranian-born businessman, Azima had launched the company with the ostensible purpose of transporting "cattle from Nebraska to Iran, until the US cut diplomatic ties after the 1979 Islamic Revolution."[46] It was likely that much more than cattle were being ferried on these flights, considering that Azima was reportedly tied to the shah's SAVAK.[47] Azima launched Global International Airways with the aid of a "multi-million dollar loan from the Commercial Credit Corporation."[48] In the beginning, its fleet consisted of one Boeing 707.[49] It quickly grew to be "one of the largest private air carriers in the world, with seventeen 707s, two 727s, and one 747."[50]

Joseph Trento suggests that Azima was a front man for the private CIA, with Global International having actually been designed by James Cunningham, who had worked under Shackley in Laos as the manager of the CIA's Air America.[51] While this particular claim cannot be substantiated, there are hints that this network was present at Global International's inception. For example, at least one of Azima's pilots had previously worked for Air America. Even more suggestive of a connection is the source of Azima's loan – the Commercial Credit Corporation. This was the commercial finance-and-lending subsidiary of the Control Data Corporation (CDC), a supercomputer firm that had operated as a high-profile defense contractor since its inception at the end of World War II. CDC would later make an appearance on the periphery of the PROMIS scandal, also known as the Inslaw affair (the subject of chapter 9).

Around 1976 – shortly before Commercial Credit provided Azima with the start-up capital for Global International Airways – Control Data Corporation hired Edwin Wilson as a consultant with the hopes of leveraging the spook's contacts "to unload some outdated computers on Third World countries."[52] The arrangement between the two, however, seems to have been much greater than simple export affairs. Wilson was subsequently accused of having bugged the offices of the US Army Materiel Command in order to obtain "inside information … on bidding and procurement plans" on behalf of the corporation.[53]

Before Global International Airways went bust in the mid-1980s, Azima ran up huge debts with several financial institutions – most notably Indian Springs State Bank in Kansas, which underwent its own collapse in tandem with Global International. Azima had been brought on as a director for the institution, while its vice president, Anthony Russo, acted as a "financial consultant" for Global International.[54] Russo had previously been a high-profile Kansas City criminal attorney, notorious for representing members of the Civella crime family. In the investigation that followed the bank's insolvency, it was revealed that Russo had brought Civella interests into the fray. Their accounts at the bank, one state banking examiner found, were "habitually overdrawn."[55] Indian Springs also provided massive loans to the Dunes Hotel and Casino in Vegas, which was at the time under the control of Morris Shenker. Shenker had previously been Jimmy Hoffa's attorney and was no stranger to suspect financial wranglings, as he had been intimately involved with the corruption plaguing the Teamsters pension fund. He personally guaranteed the loan from Indian Springs to the Dunes, while Azima had sponsored it. Global International was at the heart of these business transactions as the airline "had a contract with some Las Vegas hotel-casinos to fly junkets."[56]

Clearly, this emergent network was like an octopus, with far-reaching tentacles reaching out in all directions and intertwined with seemingly legitimate businesses. The ghostly traces of this network's presence could be found in all types of corruption. One strange nexus, touched on briefly by journalist Pete Brewton, was the complex of companies set up in Louisiana by Charles F. Haynes and Vaughn R. "Bobby" Ross.[57] Ross was a pilot with a military service record, and Haynes was a "timber man." In 1979, they formed Commercial Helicopters, which amassed a fleet of over thirty aircraft in just three years. The primary business of Commercial Helicopters was providing transportation to and from the numerous oil rigs that dotted the Gulf of Mexico. Yet, there is also evidence that the company had a strange, darker underbelly. Haynes and Ross, for example, leased helicopters from Flying Tiger Line, the company that was linked so closely to the China Lobby and to Anna Chennault and Robert Keith Gray. There were also connections to the network of ex-CIA operatives. Brewton notes that Commercial Helicopters "provided parts and services to a helicopter company in Guatemala" called Helicopteros de Guatemala.[58]

Helicopteros was managed by Carl Jenkins, a veteran of the CIA's anti-Castro operations. Operating from outposts in Florida, Mexico, and the Caribbean, Jenkins had been the case officer for a number of important Cuban exiles, including Rafael Quintero and Manuel Artime – both of whom had reappeared in the circles that surrounded Shackley, Clines, and Wilson.[59] Ted Shackley stated, during his questioning as part of the Congressional Iran-Contra inquiry, that he knew Jenkins and had last encountered him in the offices of Thomas Clines, which Jenkins was also using.[60] Given the location and the time frame, this was likely API Distributor's Houston offices, which, as mentioned earlier, were operating from the same offices of Wilson's freight forwarder. Gene Wheaton, a close associate of Jenkins – and one of the early Iran-Contra whistleblowers – told Brewton that he had crossed paths with Ross, having been introduced by the "crowd around Ed Wilson."[61] The 2018 obituary of Ross states that he served a tour in Vietnam from 1969 to 1970, where he was a pilot in the 57th Assault Helicopter Company.[62] During this same year, the 57th was tasked with providing "support to the Military Assistance Command Vietnam Studies and Observation Group in their mission to send reconnaissance teams into Laos and Cambodia to locate and interdict North Vietnamese Army (NVA) infiltration routes and their sources of supply."[63] Ross, in other words, was in direct proximity to the secret war in Laos, the CIA wing of which was being run by Shackley and his cronies.

Wheaton's claim about the business affairs of Ross and Haynes included the allegation that Commercial Helicopters had, in fact, purchased API Distributors. Ross denied to Pete Brewton that this was true – but, oddly enough, Haynes formed a company called API Oil Tools & Supply. While this company, like Commercial Helicopters, was registered in Louisiana, the bulk of its business – leasing "power tongs, an oil drilling tool" – was located in Houston, Texas.[64] Crucial financing for Commercial Helicopters and API Oil Tools & Supply came from Herman Beebe, the financial brain behind a network of banks and savings and loans that sprawled Louisiana, Texas, and other surrounding states. Beebe – who was later implicated in the massive collapse of numerous savings and loans in the 1980s – had long-standing ties to the criminal underworld, some of which went right to the top of the major American Mafia families.

According to Stephen Pizzo, Mary Fricker, and Paul Muolo, Beebe "had been arrested in a New York restaurant with East Coast Mafia boss Carlo Gambino and Florida boss Santo Trafficante" in 1966.[65] He was further linked, by a number of law enforcement sources, to Trafficante's close partner Carlos Marcello, the don of the New Orleans Mafia whose empire extended well into Texas. In 1972, US Customs agents and police raided a Shreveport, Louisiana, warehouse owned by Beebe; inside, explosives and rigging devices that were destined for anti-Castro Cuban groups were found.[66] Though Beebe never faced charges in relation to the incident, numerous conspirators were arrested, among them a close associate of the Gambino family, Murray Kessler. Another was the pilot who had been hired to ferry the explosives – none other than Barry Seal, the infamous drug pilot who operated on the CIA payroll and who would later be implicated in running Colombian cocaine in conjunction with covert Contra-support operations. "Bobby Ross," wrote Brewton, "was a longtime close friend of Barry Seal. 'We grew up together,' Ross said."[67] This raises the possibility that Seal was connected, at a very early stage, to Shackley's network.

BUSH'S WEB

Journalist Pete Brewton, in his study of the savings and loan crisis, reported on the possibility that another – though perhaps related – private-intelligence network was also being formed during this period. The architect of this network was George H.W.Bush. Reportedly, Bush had expressed to Jimmy Carter his willingness to stay on as head of the CIA, only to be rebuffed. Bush subsequently returned to Texas and started anew, alongside his close associates and various business partners.

According to one of Brewton's sources, Bush's main ally was William Blakemore II, an oilman-rancher hailing from Midland, Texas.[68] Buried deep in the voluminous materials compiled as part of official inquiry into the Iran-Contra affair is Blakemore's name: he served as president of the Gulf and Caribbean Foundation, a "philanthropic" body used to move funds raised by private donors to the Nicaraguan Contras.[69]

Another source gave Brewton a different set of names: Walter Mischer, a Houston real estate mogul and banker (and friend of Blakemore), and his son-in-law Robert Corson.[70] In 1991, Corson was found dead in an El Paso motel after being indicted for money laundering and fraud. Those charges connected Corson to a succession of bizarre financial dealings that involved a string of saving and loans, as well as large mainstream banking institutions.[71] Among the sources that Brewton cites is Richard Brenneke, an infamous CIA-adjacent arms dealer and money launderer who became a whistleblower for both the October Surprise and the Iran-Contra affair. "According to Brenneke," Brewton writes, "Corson worked with him in laundering money for the CIA."[72] Interestingly, Brenneke's money-laundering activities were, according to Gordon Thomas, of immense interest to Israeli intelligence, which allegedly studied his methods with the aid of the PROMIS software. PROMIS, and Robert Maxwell's intimate involvement in that operation on behalf of Israeli intelligence, is discussed in greater detail in chapter 9.[73]

Brewton, meanwhile, further suggests the possibility of Corson's involvement with Israeli intelligence: "A Texas law enforcement official who has worked with intelligence agencies confirmed Corson's work for the CIA. This officer said that Corson also did work for the Israelis but may not have known it, because there were several layers of cut-outs between Corson and the Israelis."[74]

Given this possible connection not only to American but Israeli intelligence, there is perhaps significance to the fact that there were direct ties between Walter Mischer and Texas Senator John Tower – the George Town Club member whose activities in the late 1980s were intimately intertwined with those of Robert Maxwell. As will be detailed in chapter 9, Maxwell, an Israeli intelligence asset since the early 1960s, had helped place Tower himself on the payroll of Israel intelligence in the 1980s.

Mischer's ties to Tower came through Mischer's position as something of a political kingmaker. Mischer, according to press reports, had a "virtually unrivaled ability to raise cash for politicians," and he lent his talents to both Democrats and Republicans.[75] While he could often be found backing Democrats like Lloyd Bentsen, he had also "long been a backer of Republican John Tower."[76]

Mischer's rise to the heights of Texan political power came through extensive holdings in construction, manufacturing, real estate and banking. According to his obituary, Mischer, during World War II, had worked as a project manager at Stone & Webster, a major East Coast engineering concern that had become a major defense contractor that, among other things, designed and built the laboratories utilized for the Manhattan Project. During this time, he worked with the company to construct "naval bases in the Caribbean."[77]

After the war, he became entangled with a web of development companies, the most important of which was the Mischer Corporation, which he owned until his death. The Mischer Corporation "own[ed] thousands of acres of prime development land in the Houston area, while affiliated companies do street paving and sell air-conditioning units to home builders."[78]Another Mischer company, organized in partnership with his close friend and colleague Howard L. Terry, was Marathon Manufacturing, which produced heavy industrial equipment. Marathon specialized in oil equipment and offshore drilling platforms, having acquired one of the leading companies in this field, R.G. LeTourneau Inc., in 1970. LeTourneau's first offshore oil platform had been built for Zapata Petroleum, the CIA-linked oil company founded by G.H.W. Bush.[79]

In 1979, Marathon was purchased by Penn Central, a company that, along with its then-owner, Carl Lindner, will be discussed at length in chapter 10. As a result, Mischer and Terry ended up with a significant chunk of Penn stock.[80] In 1986, the pair sold their Penn stock to the tune of $106 million. The most important node of the Mischer complex was Allied Bancshares, a sprawling holding company that Mischer controlled and which owned numerous banks across Texas. Allied's board was stacked with Mischer's close contacts, and provides an inside look at his sprawling "old boy's network," a network quite possibly utilized by Bush after his ouster as CIA director.

Among Allied's board members was the aforementioned Howard Terry, as was Gerald Smith, who was something of Mischer's "right-hand man."[81] Smith's own banking interests extended beyond Texas and into Louisiana, with apparent ties to organized crime and intelligence. Smith was co-owner of a bank with Herman Beebe, the S&L fraudster and mob insider discussed earlier in this chapter.[82] Beebe's own networks of banks and S&Ls were reportedly financed with heavy loans from Allied.

During the 1980s, Allied's co-chairman was one of Mischer's longtime associates, Houston investor Jack T. Trotter. Trotter is described in a 1987 issue of Texas Monthly as having been a "[b]ehind the scenes player in setting the course of the Houston business community" with an "enormous network" of "people he has made rich by his deals."[83] Trotter maintained a decades-long business relationship with the powerful Duncan family, lorded over by the patriarch John H. Duncan Sr.[84] Duncan Sr., in the late 1960s, was a director of the Bank of the Southwest – the Texas banking institution discussed in the previous chapter as being linked to a number of CIA funding conduits. Trotter and the Duncan family embarked on a number of business ventures with Gerald D. Hines, another Houston developer and Mischer associate whose impact on Houston can be seen in his ambitious construction projects, including the headquarters of Shell and Pennzoil, as well as the Galleria shopping district (a location that, as we will see in the next chapter, may have played a role in land speculation schemes linked to Iran-Contra).[85] Perhaps significantly, Hines will be encountered again in Columbus, Ohio, as the developer and owner of the building where Leslie Wexner parked his tangled web of real estate and other holding companies, including companies mentioned that were mentioned by Columbus police in connection with the murder of his company's tax attorney.

A final Allied director worth mentioning is George A. Butler, then the senior partner at the powerful Houston law firm of Butler, Binion, Rice, Cook and Knapp. Alongside Trotter, he maintained a spot on the board of the Gulf Resources and Chemical Corporation of Houston. Gulf Resources had been founded with the aid of Joseph Patten, a general partner at Bear Stearns. Another Bear Stearns partner named Raphael Bernstein maintained a place on the Gulf board well into the 1980s.[86] Considered a major national security concern due to the role it had played in producing the bulk of the US' lithium supply – essential for, among other things, nuclear weapons – Gulf Resources achieved notoriety in the 1970s when the company's president, Robert H. Allen, smuggled funds via a Mexican subsidiary and bank to Nixon's Committee for the Re-Election of the President. These funds were then utilized by the Plumbers to finance the Watergate break-ins.[87] Allen would, at one time, serve as the campaign finance chair for one of John Tower's senate campaigns.

The movement of the Gulf Resources money towards its ultimate destination was largely facilitated by Bill Liedtke, the founder and president of Pennzoil. Along with his brother, J. Hugh Liedtke, Bill was one of George H.W. Bush's original business partners: they had formed part of the original group that created Zapata Petroleum. In 1959, Bush and the Liedtkes "decided to split Zapata into two companies," with one half becoming Zapata Offshore, and the other half becoming Pennzoil.[88] A 1976 Senate Committee on Interior and Insular Affairs report lists Bill Liedtke as a director of the Bank of Texas.[89] This was almost certainly the Continental Bank of Texas – headquartered in the (Gerald Hines-designed) Shell Plaza in Houston – which had been formed in 1973 through a merger between Continental Bank and the Bank of Texas.[90] The President of the merged bank was Gerald Smith, while the chairman was George Butler. The presence of these two Mischer cronies is no accident, as Continental Bank of Texas was operating under the umbrella of Allied Bancshares.

At the time that Bush was purported to have been organizing his own private intelligence web, he was also making his own forays into the world of banking. On February 23rd, 1977, the New York Times reported that he had "been elected a director of First International Bancshares," a large Houston bank holding company.[91] At the same time, he was appointed to the board of its largest holding, First International Bank, and its London merchant bank subsidiary, First National Bancshares Ltd. Russ Baker, in his history of the Bush family, writes that "First International was not your friendly neighborhood bank. Rather it was a Texas powerhouse whose principals reached well beyond banking into the netherworld of intelligence and intrigue."[92] It was particularly close to Saudi interests, which at the time were investing heavily into Houston real estate and industry, a by-product of Texas oil interests taking hold in the Middle East and the Gulf states. FIB reportedly held a “revolving line of credit for Salem bin Laden,” while multiple sources have linked it to the Bank of Credit and Commerce International – a powerful and deeply corrupt institution detailed in the next chapter.[93]

Joe L. Albritton, the longtime chairman of Washington, DC’s Riggs Bank, maintained a post as director of First International. Riggs was described by the Wall Street Journal as having “had a longstanding relationship with the Central Intelligence Agency,” and maintained accounts for a number of infamous figures. Among these was Prince Bandar bin Sultan, the Saudi ambassador to the United States from 1983 to 2005 whose contact information would later appear in Jeffrey Epstein’s contact book.[94] In early 2005, Riggs pleaded guilty to money laundering charges resulting from an extensive Justice Department inquiry into the bank’s activities.[95]

Sitting alongside Bush and Albritton on the board of First International was John Murchison of the Murchison oil family. John Murchison was less known that his counterparts, Clint Murchison Sr. and Jr., but was by no means less prolific when it came to oil and gas holdings and other business concerns. Interestingly, in 1982, John’s son John Murchison Jr. was appointed to the board of Gulf Resources and Chemical Corporation following the firm’s takeover by a shadowy British businessman-turned-“tax exile” in Switzerland named Alan Clore.[96]

First International appears to have been closely linked to Ling-Temco-Vought (LTV), a major Dallas-based defense contractor that provided the US military with, among other things, light attack aircraft during the Vietnam War. John Murchison was listed among the directors of LTV, as was the independent oilman Edwin L. Cox, also found on the board of First International.[97] In 1970, LTV’s board was run by a prominent Texas businessman named Robert H. Stewart III, who, two years later, would organize First International as a holding company for First National Bank and serve as the institution’s long-running chairman.[98]

Much like Walter Mischer, Stewart was incredibly connected both economically and politically. The 1970 New York Times announcement of his takeover of the LTV board notes that Senator John Tower was his “very good friend.” That same article attributes the following quote to Stewart: “I’ve always been on the conservative side of politics. Some people refer to me as being a little [to] the right of Louis XIV.”[99] He maintained positions on the boards of numerous major corporations, including a position as a director at Pepsi from 1965 through at least 1995. Between the 1960s and 1970s, he was affiliated with Braniff Airways, which for a time was a subsidiary of LTV. During the 1980s, Mischer served on the board of this same aviation company.[100] One important corporate connection for Stewart was his presence at ARCO, formerly known as Atlantic Richfield, in the 1980s. This was the petroleum company of Robert O. Anderson, a close associate of the Rockefeller family who spent time at the Council on Foreign Relations at the same time as George H.W. Bush.[101]

The precise relationship between Anderson and Bush is hard to pin down – but one telling episode involves Atlantic Richfield’s role in developing the expansive Trans-Alaskan pipeline system. Service for Anderson’s companies was provided by the aviation companies of Phil Bergt, which included Interior Airways and later Alaska International.[102] In 1974, a young George W. Bush traveled to Fairbanks, Alaska, where he took a job working for Bergt. When asked by Russ Baker how exactly the younger Bush came to be in his employ, Bergt stated that it was as a favor to “someone from a Houston construction firm.”[103] This becomes all the more curious when considering Bergt’s claims that Alaska International became embroiled in intelligence work after the election of President Carter – in other words, right when Bush was purported to have been setting up his intelligence network. These were off-the-books operations, Bergt told Baker, “after Jimmy Carter went in, gutted the CIA, and almost ruined them.”[104] He further alleged that his connection to the Agency persisted into the Reagan administration, and that his company had provided support to Southern Air Transport during the Contra years.

Who was the individual from the Houston construction firm that brought W. Bush to Bergt’s attention? It’s impossible to say, but one possibility is that it was Walter Mischer himself. Nothing directly linking the two men has yet been found, but they both shared a mutual association with Robert O. Anderson. In the early 1950s, Mischer began accumulating land near Lajitas, a small town in West Texas near the US-

Mexico border, and Anderson followed suit in the 1960s by setting up his Big Bend Ranch. By the early 1980s, the two joined forces, with Anderson selling half of the ranch's ownership to Mischer with big plans to "syndicate the land" and sell "shares to selected colleagues in the Texas establishment."[105] Throughout this whole period, Anderson maintained an intriguing business contact: Clermont Club member Tiny Rowland, a figure that, as will be discussed later in this chapter and elsewhere in this book, was tied to American and Israeli intelligence services, and played a rather murky role in the Iran-Contra affair. First introduced by the shadowy tanker magnate and billionaire Daniel K. Ludwig, Anderson had sold his ownership of the British Observer to Rowland in 1983.[106] Several years later, Anderson departed ARCO to focus on his private company, Hondo Oil & Gas. According to the New York Times, the company was "equally owned by Mr. Anderson and the British conglomerate Lonrho P.L.C." – a global corporate empire overseen by Rowland.[107] In his book on the Shackley-Wilson private CIA, Joseph Trento describes how this ensemble of quasi-official intelligence operatives forged a working partnership with a shadowy covert apparatus known as the Safari Club.[108] This was a meeting space for the heads of numerous intelligence agencies that were allied with the United States in those increasingly heated days of the Cold War. Organizers of the club included Kamal Adham, the director of Saudi intelligence, as well as his nephew and successor Turki bin Faisal al Saud. Accompanying them was General Nassiri, head of Iran's SAVAK; Ahmed Duleimi, the Moroccan intelligence director; and Alexandre de Marenches, the head of France's Service de Documentation Extérieure et de Contre-Espionnage (External Documentation and Counter-Espionage Service or SDECE). The motivating factor for the club's formation was similar to that which had spawned Shackley's group. The rise of a reformist tendency within US intelligence and the political system at large limited the ability of the CIA to operate as it once had. It was into that void that the Safari Club hoped to step.

Turki bin Faisal discussed the club and its activities during a speech at Georgetown University:

> In 1976, after the Watergate matters took place here your intelligence community was literally tied up by Congress. It could not do anything. It could not send spies, it could not write reports, and it could not pay money.… In order to compensate for that a group of countries got together in the hope of fighting Communism and established what was called the Safari Club. The Safari Club included France, Egypt, Saudi Arabia, Morocco, and Iran. The principal aim of this club was that we would share information with each other and help each other in countering Soviet influence worldwide, and especially in Africa.[109]

Iranian journalist Mohammed Heikal, in Iran: The Untold Story, describes how bin Faisal's remarks reflected the development of a series of critical geopolitical alignments that had been emerging since the early 1970s.[110] The Saudi and Iranian governments were both turning toward Africa as a source of raw materials and as an emerging market. For them, there was a need to curb the influence of the Soviet Union on the continent, which was then being felt throughout the myriad of blossoming anti-colonial movements. These movements challenged the continued dominance of European powers, particularly that of France, whose African interests encompassed the global trade in uranium, diamonds, and gold. As a result, a triangular relationship began to take shape.

The backbone of the club involved not only intelligence sharing but also economic arrangements that parlayed into a lucrative arms trade. Egypt became a hotbed of Safari Club activity, with Cairo featuring its first "operation center." This center was "equipped to evaluate what was going on in Africa, identifying the danger spots, and to make recommendations for dealing with them."[111] At the same time, Saudi Arabia was lending its Egyptian allies large sums of money, which were then used to purchase French-produced weapons that soon flooded African conflict zones. Given that the Saudis provided the financing, Trento writes, they effectively ran the show. In order to function properly, the Safari Club required a banking apparatus to marshal and direct its economic resources. The vehicle of choice was the colossus of dark money and offshore finance known as the Bank of Credit and Commercial International, discussed at length in the next chapter. While nominally a Pakistani merchant bank, BCCI was also backed by the Saudi intelligence directorate, which in turn was closely integrated with the country's ruling elite. Likewise, BCCI maintained branches across Europe and the Middle East; in Cairo, a pivotal city for the Safari Club, the Egyptian branch of the Arab International Bank operated as a BCCI affiliate.

The Arab International Bank curiously appears as a footnote, albeit perhaps a significant one, in the history of the US savings and loan crisis. Employed at this offshore bank for some time as treasurer was Mario Renda, later renowned for depositing a flood of money from Teamsters union locals in New York City into various thrifts across the United States. Many of them were intimately intertwined with organized crime, and many also subsequently collapsed. According to the testimony of "Colombo family lieutenant" Lawrence Iorizzo, Renda had been "handling business for Paul Castellano," the boss of the Gambino crime family.[112] Prior to these interesting career turns, Renda had formed a business partnership with a man who was no stranger to the world of the BCCI, arms deals, and shadowy intelligence networks at-large: Adnan Khashoggi. The Safari Club owed much to Khashoggi. The name of the group had come from its first meeting place, the Mount Kenya Safari Club in Nanyuki, Kenya, which Khashoggi had purchased in the mid-1970s. Once a hangout of the older generation of Hollywood stars, the international jet set, and a slick-heeled group of globe-trotting American mobsters, the hotel and its surrounding acres had been purchased by the arms dealer for a mere $900,000. Among Khashoggi's first acts was to dial up the location's exclusivity: press reports from the time allude to his plans to close the resort and "use it all for himself."[113] This wasn't exactly accurate. Khashoggi's plan, it seems, was to market the facility to an even more select clientele – and to use it as the private meeting place for the sorts of figures who inhabited the same, strange netherworld.

Notably, Khashoggi was not the first intelligence-linked figure to be involved with the Mount Kenya Safari Club. Most accounts of the club note that its rise had been facilitated by its owners: William Holden, the actor and close friend of Ronald Reagan, and Ray Ryan, a professional gambler and businessman with extensive ties to the "hoodlum element."[114] They had acquired the properties around 1960; but a year earlier, they had visited the club in the company of columnist Robert Ruark – whose syndicated newspaper writings framed him as an international adventurer with a strong taste for the exotic – and Ruark's good friend Ricardo Sicre. As Ruark tells it, he and Sicre had convinced Holden and Ryan to purchase the Safari Club.[115]During World War II, Sicre had served in the OSS, participating in the North African and Mediterranean theaters in a covert group under the direction of Frank Ryan.[116] Outside of the world of intelligence, Ryan had been a prominent businessman involved in several import/export firms with a focus on textiles. These business skills came in handy after the war, when veterans of the OSS and the British intelligence apparatus – and a number of British merchant banks, Canadian industrialists, and US financiers – formed the World Commerce Corporation (WCC). Ryan served as the WCC's president and Sicre, as its vice president.

While the WCC remains largely unknown, there has been increased interest in its activities, and various writers and researchers have emphasized different aspects of the corporation.[117] Most focus on its function as a commercial cover for intelligence activities, while others such as Steven Snider have assessed the WCC in terms of the "special relationship" that exists between the US and the UK.[118] Anthony Cave Brown, the biographer of OSS founder and head William Donovan – one of the primary movers behind the scenes of the WCC – links the firm to efforts to rebuild European industry in the aftermath of World War II, while Ralph Ganis parses out the linkages between the WCC and the construction of the industrial infrastructure for NATO.[119] When the WCC was first created, it was reported that its purpose was to bring to an end the dollar shortages of the post-war era. Such a task was vital for the formation of an international economic order that was to be led by the US and its European allies. With holdings and interests in mining, oil, natural gas, film, shipping, agriculture, and tourism, the WCC did indeed pursue this goal. Was the Holden-Ryan development of the Mount Kenya Safari Club, carried out at the encouragement of WCC's vice president Ricardo Sicre, part of this international dollar-recycling effort? The idea is not as outrageous as it might sound. As early as 1945, President Roosevelt and Juan Trippe – the founder of Pan American World Airways – were locked in discussions about the role international tourism and luxury resorts would play in attracting dollars to the developing world. Trippe was the brother-in-law of Edward Stettinius Jr., President Roosevelt's secretary of state, who had a spot on the WCC board until his untimely death in 1949. To accomplish the goals he had conceived with Roosevelt, Trippe organized Intercontinental Hotels. Decades later, Adnan Khashoggi tapped Intercontinental to manage the Safari Club.[120] Scratching the surface of Khashoggi's own Safari Club takeover also reveals the presence of intelligence assets. He had been introduced to the club by his public relations manager, Edward K. Moss, who had been a longtime member. Moss was also working as a consultant for the Kenyan government, while Khashoggi had his own business in the country – he was privy to the details of "a planned beach resort and a World Bank study that projected millions of dollars for the area."[121] These various strands converged at the Safari Club. As his biographer writes, Khashoggi felt that the locale "was a Shangri-La."[122]

As far back as 1962, Moss had connections to the CIA. That year he was cleared for ZR/MAJOR, a CIA operation that entailed "the exploitation of political consultants." While few details exist as to the exact purpose of the operation, it was run by the Political Action Group of the Covert Action Staff, which in turn was overseen by Cord Meyer.[123] It was not Moss' first encounter with the Agency: a handwritten memo states that he had "obtained a covert security approval in 1959."[124] Yet another CIA document refers to Moss as acting as the "assistant for raising funds against Castro and for public relations matters" to Tony Varona, the leader of the CIA-backed Cuban Revolutionary Council.[125] Varona is not only known for being one of the CIA's chief assets in their covert war against Castro's Cuba, he was also one of several figures who were connected to the Agency and organized crime figures Santo Trafficante and John Roselli. CIA files make it abundantly clear that Moss was working deeply with-in this nexus where organized crime and intelligence mixed. The aforementioned handwritten memo alludes to Moss' "long-standing 'mafia' connection" before noting that his "operation seems to be government contracts for the underworld and probably surfaces mafia money in legitimate business activities."[126] The Moss file reports a rumor that Julia Cellini, sister of Dino Cellini, was Moss' mistress and operated a "secretarial service" that was in reality a "front for Edward K. Moss' activities." Moss, furthermore, moved money from Dino Cellini to Varona – yet another clear example of CIA–organized crime collusion. Throughout the 1950s, Cellini was Meyer Lansky's point man in Cuba and helped manage several major National Crime Syndicate casinos: the Riviera Casino and the Tropicana Club. As noted in the last chapter, Cellini's activities brought him into close contact with Charles Tourine and Joe Nesline.

Peter Dale Scott points out that this nexus raises the specter of human trafficking and the deployment of sex as a means of political influence. The Cellini siblings were described in FBI files as active participants in the trade of narcotics and "white slavery rackets."127 Scott adds that this "FBI report suggests an important shared interest between Moss and Khashoggi: sexual corruption."[128] More on Khashoggi's alleged role in sexual blackmail is discussed in the next chapter as well as chapter 11.

Incredibly, the source of the information linking Moss to organized crime was none other than Edwin Wilson. A CIA internal memo drafted in 1973 states:

> Wilson stated that he had met Moss in 1966 through Frank O'Connell, Washington representative of the Transport Workers Union. The memorandum also suggests that one of Wilson's business associates, Richard S. Cobb, was also having business contacts with Moss.… Wilson stated that 'subsequent investigation surfaced from [business analysis firm] Dun and Bradstreet and a verbal report from Dun and Bradstreet recognizing Moss' longstanding "Mafia" connections.' Moss' operation seems to be government contracts for the underworld and probably surfaces Mafia money in legitimate business activities.[129]

One cannot help but wonder if 1966 was really the earliest encounter between Wilson and Moss. As mentioned earlier, Wilson's early tenure in the Agency included a long stint operating under the auspices of the CIA's work with the AFL-CIO, which was overseen by Cord Meyer's International Operations Division. In March 1962, the International Operations Division merged with the Covert Action Staff, with Meyer maintaining control of both. The Covert Action Staff under Meyer was, as previously mentioned, the wing of the CIA that oversaw ZR/MAJOR, the operation that Moss had been cleared for. It is certainly plausible that Wilson and Moss crossed paths at this earlier stage. Further indications of the close-knit nature of this network of individuals comes through JM/WAVE, the Miami station that oversaw the Cuban exile operations to which Moss was also connected. Shackley and Clines, Wilson's closest CIA contacts, spent considerable time there.

This entire complex was hidden away in the shadows. Through Shackley, the Safari Club was linked with powerful forces within the domestic opposition to Carter. The president himself, writes Trento, "had never been briefed on the Safari Club."[130] This was despite advancing corruption within his own administration, as evidenced by certain Carter officials, such as Clark Clifford, playing a fundamental role in BCCI's penetration of the US banking system. By 1980, elements interwoven through the Safari Club network and Shackley's private CIA were mounting international opposition to Carter, laying the groundwork for the arrival of soon-to-become president Ronald Reagan.

Critical to this effort was a series of meetings held by Le Cercle, a quasi-formal group composed of representatives from conservative military, intelligence, and business circles in NATO countries. Since its inception in the 1950s, Le Cercle had been carefully nurtured by US, British, and French intelligence assets in tandem with German and Italian industrialists. The upcoming US election was a topic of conversation at a June 1980 Le Cercle meeting held in Zurich, with the minutes making reference to the "shattered remains of [Carter's] foreign policy" and a "discussion … about a series of appropriate measures to promote the electoral campaign of Presidential candidate Reagan against Carter."[131]

Among those attending this Le Cercle meeting was Donald Jameson, an old CIA hand who had retired to take a job at Tetra Tech, a contractor with extensive interests in the Middle East. Tetra Tech, which was suspected by authorities of being tied to BCCI, had been founded by another CIA veteran, James Critchfield. Both Critchfield and Jameson were close to Shackley, and both were attached to his Research International Associates – a key node in the private CIA network.[132]

Several days after this Le Cercle meeting, another participant, Brian Crozier – who, coincidentally, answered for many years to Meyer in the Covert Action Staff – met personally with Ronald Reagan in Los Angeles. Shortly thereafter, the French intelligence chief, Alexandre De Marenches, met with Reagan's new campaign manager, William Casey, in Paris. David Teacher, in his lengthy study of Le Cercle, points out that this meeting occurred a month prior to the infamous meetings in Madrid that are suspected to have led to the infamous October Surprise plot, whereby representatives of Reagan's campaign are said to have conspired with Iran to delay the release of hostages until after the 1980 election in order to influence that election's outcome. Teacher states: "De Marenches was well-placed to advise Casey on the Iranian hostage crisis; he had been the driving force behind the creation of the Safari Club, founded in 1976 to coordinate covert operations between the French, Iranian, Saudi, and Egyptian intelligence services."

CASEY'S EARLY WARS

William Casey is best remembered as the hawkish director of the CIA during the final stage of the Cold War – an individual who, to some, strove to reorient the Agency away from the direction it had taken under the Carter administration and, to others, somebody who permanently stained the Agency with the mark of scandal. It was under Casey's watch that the so-called Iran-Contra affair (a misnomer, designed to conceal the Reagan administration's drive toward global covert war-fare) flourished. By the time he died in early May 1987 from a fast-moving brain tumor, the scandal had broken wide open, and, one by one, his former colleagues, underlings, and frontmen were being called to testify.

Casey's story, however, started long before Oliver North and Richard Secord arrived on the scene. It began with his education under the Jesuits at Fordham University in New York City, which had kindled a life-long animosity toward anything that bore the faintest hint of socialism and an affinity for the Knights of Malta, to which he belonged. According to Leo Cherne, who later led the CIA-financed International Rescue Committee, Casey was a prototypical Cold Warrior by the 1930s. "Bill, from the beginning, was to the right of Attila the Hun," said Cherne. When it came to the conflict unfolding in Spain, Casey "was one hundred percent for Franco … to understand this, you had to understand his Catholicism."[133]

Cherne's early acquaintance with Casey had come through the Research Institute of America, an economic analysis and publishing venture both were involved in. While the RIA strove to be nonpartisan, Casey deeply opposed the Roosevelt administration's New Deal. The policies, he felt, smacked of socialistic impulses and restrained the free functioning of the private sector. This political orientation opened doors for Casey in certain circles of New York politics, while the analytic capabilities he had honed at the RIA opened others. In the short term, however, he worked at the law practice he had formed with his friend Jerry Doran called Backer, Casey, Doran and Siegel. When that did not pan out, he went to work at the Board of Economic Warfare.

The Board of Economic Warfare was one of many byzantine wartime bureaucracies that had been created to deal with the immense logistical quandaries posed by a truly global war effort. Casey joined the organization in September 1942 as a consultant, but he quickly grew bored with it. He then found himself in the Navy, but he found himself detailed to the Office of Naval Procurement, where he carried out basically the same tasks he had at the Board of Economic Warfare. Then he began to hear rumors about the Office of Strategic Service, led by William Donovan. As luck would have it, Jerry Doran had joined up with Donovan's law firm. Through this contact, Casey was able to arrange a meeting with Otto Doering – "Donovan's right hand man at the OSS" and also a senior partner at Donovan's law firm. Casey soon found himself in London, the base for all OSS operations in Europe.[134]

The OSS London station was overseen by David K. E. Bruce. Much has been made of the close-knit relationship between the OSS and the moneyed elite – America's practical aristocracy populated by dynasties such as the Mellons, Harrimans, DuPonts, and Morgans. Bruce, too, was a product of this world: he was married to Ailsa Mellon of the prominent Pittsburgh family. Paul Mellon – Ailsa's brother – served in London under Bruce. Although Ailsa Mellon and David Bruce divorced in 1945, Bruce seems to have stayed in contact with the family. During the early days of his tenure as US ambassador to the United Kingdom, he was acquainted with one of the family's young heirs, William Mellon Hitchcock. As noted in chapter 4, both would play a role in the Profumo Affair.

Nominally, Casey was a rank-and-file member of the secretariat, a cog in the intelligence machinery who spent his time drafting reports to be passed to the upper brass. Perhaps because of Casey's experience in bureaucracy and background in research and analysis (or perhaps because of his economic ambitions), Casey and Bruce developed a close working relationship that propelled the future CIA director far beyond the ground floor of the OSS.

Through Bruce, he was promoted to the service's inner sanctum, the elite social matrix that made up the center of power within the intelligence apparatus. Soon, Casey was granted the title of chief of the OSS Secretariat in the European Theater of Operations – a position that made him "Donovan's troubleshooter" on the Continent.[135] Another well-connected OSS man at the London station – who later inherited Bruce's position – was J. Russell Forgan. Forgan hailed from the high-finance circles of Chicago. His father, David R. Forgan, and his uncle, James B. Forgan, served as presidents of the First National Bank of Chicago. Investors in this historic institution included Morgan and Harriman interests and James Stillman, a close ally of the Rockefeller family. James Forgan had also served on the first board of the Federal Reserve. Russell Forgan followed in his family's footsteps and ingratiated himself with the world of Chicago banking. Then, abruptly, in the mid-1940s, as World War II rumbled to a close, he and William Casey found themselves tasked with a very different kind of business. As Joseph Persico notes:

> General [Donovan] summoned his senior staff and told them that this war had forever ended the isolation of the United States. He directed an OSS colonel, J. Russell Forgan, to head up a committee, as he put it, "to study the need for our country to establish on a permanent basis, as an integral part of the military, a strategic intelligence agency." Bill Casey was to serve as the committee's secretary. The assignment was to bring Casey in at the creation of what would ultimately metamorph into the Central Intelligence Agency. As he would tell his staff at Langley thirty-seven years later, "I was there in the beginning. Nobody saw me. But I was there."[136]

After the war, Casey continued to inhabit intelligence, military, and defense circles. This can be seen in his often overlooked role in cofounding a national security think-tanked called the National Strategy Information Center (NSIC) in 1962. The NSIC was essentially an offshoot of a National Security Council propaganda outfit called the Institute for American Strategy, as evidenced by NSIC's cofounder, Frank Barnett, having served there as program director.[137] The NSIC maintained a presence in intelligence circles over the years and through Casey's time as CIA director. It accumulated familiar faces on its board of directors, including Thomas Moorer. Likewise, NSCI seminars on special operations and Cold War geopolitical activities were attended by such people as Ted Shackley and Oliver North.[138]

When he wasn't running Cold War propaganda organizations or practicing law, Casey spent his days pursuing a future in politics. He planted himself firmly in the wing of the Republican Party that was opposed to the Nelson and David Rockefeller centrist faction. His sympathies were with the so-called fiscal conservatives and the militant anti-Communists. He was in alignment with Roy Cohn's good friend William F. Buckley and his National Review, even going so far as to ghostwrite an anti-Rockefeller essay for the paper. "The thrust of Bill's article," Buckley later said, "was that Rockefeller wanted to lead New York State and then America away from anti-communism and towards collectivism."[139]

The political vehicle that Casey ultimately hitched himself to was Richard Nixon. Nixon, he reasoned, was a figure far removed from the sort of "Eastern establishment" cultural circles that had fostered politicians like Nelson Rockefeller. Furthermore, Nixon was an avid cold warrior and a friend of business. Casey went to work in an unofficial capacity for Nixon's ill-fated campaign against John F. Kennedy. While these efforts bore little fruit, he continued to spend the 1960s aiding Nixon's advance and turning down offers to work on the campaigns of Barry Goldwater and others.

Nixon's resurgence at the end of the 1960s was Casey's moment. He dumped money into the Nixon campaign's coffers and worked to organize a book titled Nixon on the Issues. He had expected that, in return for his efforts, the incoming administration would grant him some high-value position – but the long-awaited offer never came. Instead, Casey resorted to calling on go-betweens to help him find a position. One of these was his old OSS colleague, J. Russell Forgan, who was close to Maurice Stans, Nixon's financial manager and eventual head of the Committee for the Re-Election of the President. From 1965 to 1969, Stans had served as president of Glore Forgan, a prominent New York investment house led in part by Russell Forgan.[140] Casey's vision was singular and hewed closely to his geopolitical bona fides: he wanted a position at the top of the armed forces pyramid or in the State Department or the CIA. When he finally got an offer from Nixon, it was as deputy director of the CIA, a position beneath director Richard Helms, and Casey rejected it. According to Casey biographer Joseph Persico, the offer bordered on insult: "Dick Helms worked for Casey more than twenty-five years ago. He had been a junior officer in London when Casey was US intelligence chief for all of Europe."[141] He was equally reluctant about the next offer, but he eventually accepted. As a result, in 1971, he became the head of the Nixon administration's Securities and Exchange Commission (SEC). He held that post for two years, before holding a series of other positions, including that of Undersecretary of State for Economic Affairs (where he butted heads with Henry Kissinger), as chairman of the Import-Export Bank, and a spot on the Foreign Intelligence Advisory board. It is worth pausing for a moment, however, to examine Casey's tenure at the SEC, because it was there that he crossed paths with the infamous financial bandit Robert Vesco.

THE "DETROIT KID"

Robert Vesco was one of the greats in the world of white-collar crime. He was renowned for his rapid rise and his subsequent fall – which forced him to become a country-hopping, yet incredibly wealthy, fugitive who courted right-wing paramilitaries, Colombian cartels, and Cuban Communists with equal ease. He was something of an enigma.

Mitchell WerBell III, the old OSS China hand who had become a gun for hire and arms merchant, suspected Vesco of being a CIA asset. He was described by Jim Hougan in his classic book Spooks as "Watergate's own Rosetta Stone."[142] His meteoric rise was fueled by his takeover – and subsequent looting – of an international mutual fund that was, at the very least, adjacent to both organized crime and the CIA. Not satisfied, he then tried to take control of Resorts International, the notorious Paradise Island hotel and casino that was tied to these exact same organized crime and intelligence networks.

The initial object of Vesco's takeover and looting was Investors Overseas Services (IOS), the brainchild of the "hippie" entrepreneur, B'nai B'rith activist, and self-proclaimed Trotskyite Bernie Cornfeld. On the surface, IOS was a peddler of mutual funds, with its salesmen traveling door-to-door across Europe and elsewhere hawking their products. These were modest beginnings for something that later became a global octopus. "Even before Vesco's advent on the scene," writes Hougan, "IOS bordered on the bizarre.

It was an underground institution, the financial equivalent to Thomas Pynchon's V."[143] R. T. Naylor, an expert on offshore finance, sums up IOS: "If Bernie Cornfeld did not invent the modern technology of capital flight, he did far more than his contemporaries to put it to work in an imaginative, systematic, and profitable way."[144]

As Naylor points out, IOS' early successes were made possible by US-led economic policies. On the one hand, the status of the dollar as a reserve currency had opened up the nascent eurodollar markets and created the need for dollar recycling. IOS fit nicely into each. On the other hand, there was the IMF's encouragement for developing countries to loosen controls on capital flows. The flight of capital from these countries often saw that capital going right into investments in the United States and Europe, as well as into other developing zones. The IMF's policies often created a business boom, though not necessarily in the countries it was professing to help, and Cornfeld capitalized on these and related policies to turn IOS and its web of mutual funds into a veritable sponge for soaking up all of this now-available capital. IOS salesmen and couriers descended on developing countries, criss-crossed war zones, and forged alliances with dictators, offering investment opportunities and access to bank accounts in Luxembourg, Geneva, and the Bahamas.

In managing this ever-ballooning mass of hot money, Cornfeld and IOS cultivated a close working relationship with a very peculiar banker: Tibor Rosenbaum. As previously mentioned, the Geneva-based money-man's International Credit Bank was a favored repository for the funds of both Meyer Lanksy and the Mossad.[145] Rosenbaum even went so far as to take credit for being the person who first pointed out the benefits of a mutual fund scheme to Cornfeld. The result was the creation of IOS' first major financial entity, the International Investment Trust, which launched in 1962.

Rosenbaum was not the only figure involved with Mossad that Cornfeld had buddied up with. There was also Bruce Rappaport, the banker, tanker magnate, and financial criminal who was among William Casey's closest friends. According to criminologist Alan Block, Rappaport once bailed Cornfeld out of jail in Switzerland.[146] Importantly, IOS was supported by Bank van Embden, which owned a portion of Rappaport's own banking complex, Inter Maritime Bank. "In October 1970," Block notes, "British bankers discovered that Bank van Embden was either a subsidiary or an affiliate of Banque Occidentale, owned by James Goldsmith" – the Clermont Club member, corporate raider and another figure who would later appear repeatedly in the nexus that later surrounded Robert Maxwell and Jeffrey Epstein.[147]

While IOS was rapidly expanding internationally, an unrelated corporate complex, the International Controls Corporation, was carrying out a series of rapid acquisitions in the United States. At the helm of ICC was Robert Vesco. Vesco's main tactic was to borrow money to finance takeovers and then use the assets of the captured companies to pay off the loans. This ensured a stellar credit rating and, with a few strategic moves, Vesco was soon offering shares of his newly minted empire on the stock exchange. Vesco, known as the "Detroit Kid," targeted troubled, mid-sized industrial outfits for his early acquisitions. One of his first ventures was Captive Seal, a manufacturer of parts for missile technology. The company had been floundering, but Vesco managed to turn it around by courting an investment capital firm called HH Industries – a co-owner of which was Baron Edmond de Rothschild.[148] To illustrate the incestuous nature of these business networks, this was the same Baron Rothschild who had organized the Israel Corporation – "Israel's largest investment company," designed to "encourage large-scale private investment in Israel" – with none other than Tibor Rosenbaum.[149]

It seems to have been the Rothschild connection that put IOS on Vesco's radar sometime between 1967 and 1968. According to Arthur Herzog, Vesco's biographer, Baron Rothschild had bragged to Henry Buhl III, then the newly minted president of the International Investment Trust, of the successes of Captive Seal.[150] Shortly thereafter, George Karlweiss – an agent of Edmond de Rothschild's Banque Privée – brokered an introduction of Vesco to Buhl. From there it was off to the races: at Buhl's discretion, IOS began to purchase ICC shares. Vesco was being propelled upward.

The Detroit Kid made his move when IOS began to feel a liquidity crunch. There was a certain irony to this: while IOS controlled an unfathomable sum of money, it was not always readily accessible for above-board economic purposes. Vesco offered to bail out IOS in exchange for a high degree of control over the company. What happened next was described by Jim Hougan as "a masterpiece of unarmed robbery.… A newly created Bahamian subsidiary of International Controls – ICC Investments, Inc. – was the lender to IOS. What Vesco did was have ICC Investments borrow five million from a Wall Street brokerage house, the money to be repaid in six weeks. He then convinced the owner of Butler's Bank in the Bahamas (also undergoing a liquidity crisis) to lend ICC Investments five million dollars to repay the six-week loan."[151] From here, Vesco structured the loan agreement to IOS so that it would extend the five million to ease the liquidity crunch, minus $350,000 – which was used to cover the financing cost of the Wall Street brokerage. With the remaining money, Vesco took control of IOS and then directed the company to repay the loan that had been taken from Butler's Bank. Vesco, in other words, had used IOS' own funds to finance its takeover. Next, he began to systematically purge the board of older Cornfeld loyalists and effectively consolidated control over one of the world's largest offshore financial institutions. Finally, through a bizarre web of shell companies and fronts – organized with IOS money – Vesco began to sell off IOS assets, call in debts, and simply pocket large sums of money.

The systematic looting of IOS quickly caught the attention of Stanley Sporkin, head of the SEC's Enforcement Division. The way that Sporkin has told the story, the resulting SEC investigation was a noble effort that had been greenlit by his boss, William Casey. The SEC began to freeze Vesco's accounts abroad, with the goal of slowing the torrents of money that were flowing out of IOS (and by extension, the pockets of those who had bought IOS mutual funds). Yet, these successes were short lived. There was the matter of a $250,000 campaign contribution Vesco had made to Nixon's Campaign for the Re-Election of the President. Incredibly, a portion of this contribution was used to finance the Watergate break-ins.[152] Almost immediately, Casey began to pump the brakes on Sporkin's efforts. Vesco, meanwhile, sought a one-on-one meeting with Casey.

Questions have been raised regarding Casey's impartiality when it came to the IOS. The reason for this was a strange little company he had been involved with, starting in 1968, that was called Multiponics. The company would follow Casey like a ghost and rear its head to haunt him again and again. Multiponics – formerly named Ivanhoe Associates – was ostensibly organized "to engage in farming operations, agribusiness, and the acquisition of land."[153] A mere three years after it launched, Multiponics was bankrupt with hints of suspect activity everywhere. The company, for example, had acquired the mortgage debts of all of its organizers – Casey's included. Multiponics' investors were never informed of this function of the company. Nevertheless, the money they had put into Multiponics shares inevitably went, without their knowledge or consent, into paying down these mortgage debts. Helping to organize the Multiponics stock offering was none other than Glore Forgan – the firm of Casey's old OSS comrade J. Russell Forgan. Lawrence F. Orbe, "an advisor in the corporate finance department of Glore Forgan," maintained a spot on the board of Multiponics.[154]

The primary investor in Multiponics just so happened to be International Investment Trust, the leading mutual fund of IOS. What this meant is that Casey, as head of the SEC and the person ultimately in charge of the investigation into Vesco, had business interests that were intimately interwoven throughout Vesco's affairs. There is little doubt that Vesco understood the precarious position that Casey was in. It was later revealed that, while he had sought a back channel to Casey, he had also been preparing potential legal action against him. The purpose of Multiponics, Vesco argued, had been "to take over the personal interests of Mr. Casey and others in certain farming operations … at values subsequently determined to be inflated."[155] Vesco, in other words, was charging that Casey, the Glore Forgan crew and their other colleagues in Multiponics had committed fraud against IOS. Intriguingly, Vesco's subsequent flight to Costa Rica – the beginning of his grand tour of the Caribbean and Latin America – occurred in February 1973, the same month that Casey resigned from the SEC. There is no evidence to suggest that the two events were related, although a subsequent "grand jury found evidence that [Casey's successor at the SEC, Bradford Cook] and Casey … directly interfered" with the SEC's investigation into Vesco and IOS.[156]

Years later, an informant and US Customs contract agent named Joe Kelso arrived in Costa Rica on the trail of a fugitive drug dealer. While he never found his target, Kelso did discover Vesco's private jet, tucked away inside a hanger paid for by a shrimp company called Frigorificos de Puntarenas.[157] Frigorificos was, as stated in a CIA Inspector General's report, "among the companies that were used by the Department of State in the mid-1980s to channel humanitarian aid to the Contras."[158] The report goes on to acknowledge that the company and its operators, Frank Chanes and Moises Nuñez – the latter a "narcotics officer in the Government of Costa Rica" – were linked to the international transport of cocaine and the laundering of drug money, per US Drug Enforcement Administration (DEA) reports. The Kerry Committee report, meanwhile, further identified Ramon Milian-Rodriguez, a money launderer tied to the Colombian cartels, and Luis Rodriguez, a convicted narcotics trafficker, as other Frigorificos principals. That Vesco would appear in direct proximity to Colombian narcotics traffickers is not surprising. In the early 1980s, drug smuggler George Jung testified that Carlos Lehder, a high-level trafficker from the Medellin drug cartel, had partnered with Robert Vesco in moving cocaine through the Bahamas.[159] Lehder later confirmed Jung's claim. When he was called to testify in the 1991 trial against Manuel Noriega, Lehder identified Vesco as of one his partners in the Bahamas since the early 1980s.[160]

INSIDE "BILLYGATE"

One of the scandals that dogged President Carter in the waning days of his administration was the so-called "Billygate" affair. "Billygate" was named for the president's brother, Billy Carter, and focused on the ties he had cultivated with the government of Libya. Billygate became a media circus throughout late 1979, as a Senate inquiry heated up and widespread dissent rippled through the Democratic Party. A Christian Science Monitor article from the summer of 1980 is particularly revealing, as it addresses the way the scandal prevented Carter from focusing more attention on Reagan during election season and describes the rise of an anti-Carter bloc within his party:

> Washington reporters are hearing from Democratic leaders all over the United States – in office or out, and usually in private – who say they would really prefer to have Carter step aside or be forced to step aside.
>
> This growing anxiety – "call it fear," one congressman says – is that the President will not only lose badly but will bring about the defeat of a lot of Democrats in marginal seats and possibly elect a GOP-controlled House and Senate.[161]

Billygate came about in the context of deepening tensions between the US government and Libya, and in particular via an effort launched by Gaddafi's government to influence the American population with the hopes of influencing American policy decisions. Under the leadership of Ahmad al-Shahati, the head of the Libyan Foreign Liaison Office, a program was organized to invite "prominent U.S. citizens and business organizations" to Libya.[162] In March, 1978, efforts were made to involve Billy Carter in the program. The connection that was established between the Libyans and Billy was rather tenuous: according to the Senate report on the matter, Michele Papa, a Sicilian lawyer and founder of the Sicilian-Arab Association, told an Atlanta-based real estate broker named Mario Leanza that if "he could get Billy Carter to come to Libya, Leanza could make a lot of money."[163] Arrangements were made through mutual associates to establish contact between a Libyan ambassador and Billy, and Leanza did receive money for his role.

After Billy did make a trip to Libya, he helped arrange for a Libyan delegation to visit Georgia in early 1979. He acted as something of a "goodwill ambassador," and promoted plans for the formation of a "Libyan-Arab-Georgian friendship society."[164] Plans were also hatched for a commodity exchange program, where Libyans would purchase goods produced in Georgia and Billy would use his connections to help Libya sell its own commodities – namely, oil – on the open market. To help facilitate these arrangements, the Carter administration's director of the Office of Budget and Management, Bert Lance, recommended the services of a "knowledgeable London banker."[165] Lance would later tell investigators that he had recommended the Bank of Commerce and Credit International (BCCI).[166] As previously noted and as will be discussed in detail the next chapter, BCCI was an incredibly corrupt institution, with deep ties to a web of intelligence agencies and linkages to various covert operations, terrorist organization, drug smugglers, and money launderers.

The presence of BCCI suggests that more was likely going on behind the scenes – and Joseph Trento, in his history of the Shackley network, concurs. According to his sources in the intelligence community, "Israeli intelligence decided to compromise the president through his brother, Billy."[167] The job was outsourced to the private CIA, with Thomas Clines making arrangements to convince the Libyans "that Billy Carter should be put on their payroll as a goodwill ambassador. This would be devastating to President Carter and very useful to the Republicans in 1980."[168]

A dense nebula of backroom business dealings, power plays, and dirty tricks characterized the events that unfolded around the Billy Carter-Libya relationship. One way to begin exploring that nexus can be found through the Florida holdings of the powerful DuPont family, which by the 1970s and 80s had become involved with the CIA's aviation complex. The family's interest in the state were overseen by Alfred I. DuPont, who set up shop there in 1926. DuPont's early Florida affairs revolved around real estate investments, which soon developed into a sprawling empire with countless holdings that were eventually managed by the Alfred I. DuPont Testamentary Trust. Administrating this vast financial complex was Ed Ball, a prominent Florida financier whose sister Jessie had married Alfred DuPont. When DuPont died in 1935, the Trust was left in Jessie's hands – and Jessie turned it over to Ball.

Thanks to DuPont's accumulation of different holdings and assets, Ball controlled, according to Florida senator Claude Pepper, a "great machine which he operates and manipulates.… Every string which controls this vast empire runs through the fingers of Mr. Edward Ball."[169] Besides the real estate holdings, the railroads, the shipping companies, and the heavy industries, the major locus of Ball's influence and power was the control he wielded over the state's banking system. This had its origins in the 1930s, with the DuPont's takeover of Florida National banks, which were then used as the vehicle to buy up beleaguered lending institutions throughout the state. Soon, DuPont maintained – and Ball administered – a sprawling banking complex that held an estimated $530 million in deposits.[170]

The DuPont-Ball banks may have been intertwined with Paul Helliwell's banking network. A list of Florida National Group banks, published in the records of a 1964 US government inquiry into DuPont and Ball as part of a wider investigation into holding company practices, lists Helliwell's Bank of Perrine-Cutler Ridge as being owned by this umbrella group.[171] Also listed was Miami National Bank, the Helliwell-represented bank that had been set up with the aid of a Teamster pension fund loan.[172]

By the late 1960s, Ball's domination of Florida was drawing the ire of government regulators and politicians. Moves were being made to force the DuPont Trust to divest of a sizable chunk of its holdings. As a result, Ball turned to his friend Raymond Mason. Mason bought up some of Ball's real estate, and a proposition was made whereby the concern Charter Company would take control of the lucrative St. Joe Paper Company. The problem, however, was that Charter (at this point) was a much smaller company and lacked the capital requirements necessary to maintain St. Joe. A potential solution arose with a proposed takeover of Charter by Occidental Petroleum, the oil concern controlled by businessman Armand Hammer – who maintained a spot on the board of Ball's Florida National Bank of Jacksonville.[173] The sale of Charter to Occidental fell apart, though by no means ended the relationship between the two companies, which remained quite cozy. However, the failed acquisition also doomed Charter's planned purchase of St. Joe. Yet, in 1972, Charter and St. Joe swapped stock in one another. By this point, Ball had partially divested the DuPont Trust from Florida National Banks, while stepping down as chairman. However, they still maintained the dominant position, and he took up a new position as the bank's controlling "coordinator."[174] In the course of the Charter-St. Joe stock swap, Mason ended up controlling 8% of St. Joe and Ball controlled 22% of Charter.

The same year as the stock swap, Mason and Ball toyed with the idea of purchasing IOS. Just like the Occidental Petroleum affair, this buy-out never took place. According to Robert Vesco's biographer Arthur Herzog, Ed Ball had told Vesco "I had a dream. You and I slept together on a cold night. In the morning, you had all the blankets."[175] Still, Mason and Ball maintained close ties to Vesco, who, after becoming an international fugitive, cozied up to Gaddafi's government in Libya, which was an important source of crude oil for Charter. Interestingly, Armand Hammer was also a player in the world of Libyan oil – to quote from Edward Jay Epstein's book Dossier, the oil magnate:

> …managed in the 1960s to obtain a huge concession for Occidental in Libya by paying a multimillion-dollar bribe to a key official in the Libyan court. It was one of the few concessions in the Middle East not controlled by major international oil companies, and Hammer made a fortune that he then used to finance immense barter deals with the Soviet Union. He also used his Libyan oil to undermine the

> power of established oil companies, and in doing so, he radically changed the rules of the international oil business.[176]

How Charter entangled itself in the complex world of Libyan oil affairs cuts right to the core of the "Billygate" scandal, and possibly links to the wider web of "renegade" intelligence operations and private intelligence networks that have been the subject of this chapter. The lynchpin here, however, was a company called Carey Energy, headed by Edward Carey – the brother of New York governor Hugh Carey and the mob-linked petroleum seller Martin Carey. Hugh and Martin Carey are both discussed elsewhere in this book: Hugh in chapter 11, and Martin in chapter 7.

Alan Block notes that Carey and his oil business were "exceptionally close" to the Kulukundis clan, the Greek shipping dynasty, and its patriarch, Elias J. Kulukundis, who at this time was managing the Burmah Oil Tankers Corporation (a subsidiary of the major British oil concern, Burmah Oil, from which British Petroleum sprang).[177] As discussed in chapter 3, the interests of the Kulukundis family interlocked with those of Bruce Rappaport, while the family's in-laws and business partners, the Mavroleons, were later linked to Jeffrey Epstein and Ghislaine Maxwell (see chapter 15 for more on that connection).

Through Elias' position at Burmah Oil Tankers, the Kulukundis family maintained a presence near the center of power in the Bahamas. Burmah Oil and the Bahamas Development Corporation co-owned an oil transport facility, located in Freeport on Grand Bahama, while Kulukundis "maintained an apartment in New York for the use of Bahamian government officials."[178]

Carey Energy also had a presence in the Bahamas, where it owned the majority stake in a Freeport-based oil refinery called Borco and this facility would have been directly linked to the transport terminal controlled by Kulukundis. Borco processed crude oil from Libya and Iran – yet, somewhere along the way, Carey Energy had ran afoul of the Libyan government, as one of its holdings had defaulted on oil payments to the country's state-owned oil company. Facing bankruptcy, Carey began searching for a buyer for his company – and it caught the eye of Charter Oil.

How Carey Energy and Charter first connected is unclear. Through Carey's family connections, Carey Energy was plugged into the world of New York politics, while through the company's executive vice president, Jack McGregor, it had a line to the Carter family. McGregor, according to government documents related to the Billygate affair, was an informal advisor to Billy Carter during the time that the president's brother was making his own forays into Libyan business. Finally, through its presence in Libya, Carey Energy likely brushed up against the interests of Hammer and Vesco – both of whom moved in and out of the Charter Oil orbit.

Indeed, Vesco offered his "services" to Charter Oil – for a fee. He would use his leverage with the Libyans to put pressure on Carey to help move the negotiations along. In a statement given to congressional investigators, Charter Oil chief financial officer J. Steven Wilson stated that Vesco had contacted Raymond Mason concerning a potential acquisition by Charter of three former IOS subsidiaries that were then in liquidation. In June 1978, Wilson and other Charter executives traveled to the Bahamas to meet with Vesco. Wilson and Mason then paid a follow-up visit to the fugitive in September 1978, and then again in January 1979, when they were in the Bahamas "for the purpose of working on Charter's … acquisition of Borco."[179] The way that Wilson tells the story, there were never any plans to do business with Vesco due to the financier's precarious legal situation. Nevertheless, these meetings between Charter and Vesco did take place and, during at least one of them, the "Borco acquisition was discussed."[180] Then, in March of 1979 – shortly after Charter took control of Carey Energy – Vesco began calling Mason, "claiming that he had been instrumental" in the acquisition and was "entitled to a $5 million finder's fee."[181] Charter, for their part, claimed that they had never enlisted the aid of Vesco, and therefore were not required to make any payments.

While Charter's denial was accepted by the government, accusations to the contrary continued to arise. These were compounded by the fact that, in the wake of the purchase of Carey Energy, Billy Carter's friend Jack McGregor had taken a position at Charter. Several months later, in August of 1979, Billy Carter signed an agreement with Charter to help the company "obtain additional Libyan oil."[182]

"Allegations have been made in the press," reads one intriguing footnote in the Senate report on

"Billygate," "that Billy Carter's oil deal with Charter Oil was engineered by Robert Vesco as part of a larger scheme to influence the US government to deliver planes to Libya."[183]

The planes in question were Boeing jumbo jets and C-130 and Lockheed L-100 cargo transport aircraft. They had been ordered by Libya from American manufacturers but had been blocked due to an export ban to the country, which had established by the Carter administration's State Department in fall of 1978.[184] Vesco had inserted himself into this mix, which sparked a series of plots and counterplots that caused considerable problems for the Carter administration between 1979 and 1980. "If they [the State Department] would release the airplanes," Vesco told co-conspirator James W. Brewer, "then the [unidentified] people in Washington can get paid [$7.5 million] out of the airplane deal and I can get paid [$7.5 million]."[185]

For years, Brewer had been an on-again, off-again special assistant for Shearn Moody Jr. while the latter was acting as head of ANICO. He also exemplified the Moody family's tendency to climb into bed with organized crime types: Brewer had a long history of associations with the criminal element, and was a repeat offender for his participation in fraud schemes. One such scheme had gotten him into trouble in 1978 and, in exchange for his freedom, Brewer had agreed to become an FBI informant. As one Senate report reads, Brewer "helped the Miami office of the FBI uncover offshore bank scandals involving phony or improperly used cashier's checks, letters of credit, or securities. He offered opportunities to individuals, 'targets' presumably predisposed to commit crimes and reported the targets conduct to the FBI."[186] Brewer, in other words, was moved around the board by the FBI like a chess piece and was used to set up sting operations against persons of interest.

One such target was James C. Day. A former Texas state representative, Day had become a lobbyist on Capitol Hill for ANICO, and had also cultivated deeper organized crime ties. For example, one of his business partners was Leonard Capaldi, who was "alleged by law enforcement … to be a major representative of the Houston [Texas] interests of several Mid-west and Eastern mob families." During the early 1980s, he would again emerge as a major borrower at Houston's Mainland Savings, where – as will be discussed in the next chapter – Adnan Khashoggi and others tied to intelligence operations could be found.[187] Day had cultivated contacts deep within the halls of the Carter administration, and in April 1978, he told Brewer that White House Chief of Staff Hamilton Jordan and DNC chairman John C. White "were not too confident that Carter was going to make it again and they were interested in deals to make money."[188]

The details of what happened next are muddled. Brewer claims that Day asked him to contact Vesco to try and arrange something for Jordan and White. However, according to Day, the plan to bring Vesco into the mix was Brewer's idea. Regardless, Brewer, Day, and another ANICO aide named James Wohlenhaus traveled to the Bahamas to meet personally with Vesco. It was the first of several trips, with the issue of the planes becoming an increasingly important focus for this unlikely crew. Day brought the issue to White's attention and, immediately following an October trip to the Bahamas, the State Department released a handful of the planes – and with the FBI, all the while, quietly observing the succession of events.

Yet, there is also the possibility that the FBI had a hand in instigating these very events. After the release of the planes, Vesco claimed to Day that the Libyans had not paid him, and therefore Day himself could not receive his agreed-upon cut. Day, meanwhile, suspected that Vesco had in fact been paid. At this point, Day hoped to extricate himself from the affair – but Brewer, perhaps at the request of the FBI, kept Day in play by arranging for one of his associates, a man named James Feeney, to pay him the money owed in exchange for a cut of future profits in dealings with the Libyans, Vesco, and Carter administration officials. Incredibly, Day himself knew that Brewer was an FBI informant.[189] What neither Brewer and Day knew, however, is that Feeney himself was soon to become an informant himself, this time for the Southern District of New York, which was hoping to get a chance to nab Vesco.[190]

There's also the question of why ANICO featured so prominently in this operation, with three associates of the company and the Moody family – Brewer, Day and Wohlenhaus – acting as the intermediaries between Carter administration officials like White and Vesco. As previously mentioned, the Moody family had ties into the old power structure of the FBI via Hoover ally Roy Cohn and Shearn Moody Jr.

was said to supply "many little boys of the night" to Cohn and other guests visiting his ranch who were so inclined. Cohn, by the time of Billygate and the plane affair, was gearing up to act as an informal advisor to soon-to-be president Ronald Reagan. As will be mentioned in chapter 10, Cohn was also reportedly involved in an effort to blackmail Carter during this period, via his chief of staff Hamilton Jordan over Jordan's alleged cocaine use at New York's Studio 54.

Importantly, both Shearn Moody and Cohn popped up in the course of the scheming: Cohn's law partner was representing Kevin Krown, who was under investigation along with Feeney by the Southern District of New York. In September, 1979, Brewer attended a dinner with Moody, Cohn, and Wohlenhaus, where both the investigation into Krown and Feeney and the plane affair were discussed. According to a Senate report, "Moody told Wohlenhaus that they 'were gonna go to the Federal D.A. and try to make a deal to get them off the hook on the hot check charges by telling the Libyan plane story and adding a bit to it.'"[191] Subsequently, "Krown wrote a scenario 'about all the players, the Brewers, the Feeneys, the Days, the Vescos,' and gave it to John Doyle, the Chief of the Criminal Division in the Southern District."[192] Given the political connections and orientation of Cohn and Moody, one cannot help but wonder if much of this was carried out to embarrass an already flailing Carter administration.

Unsurprisingly, it didn't take long at all for word of these schemes to reach the press. Vesco himself directly leaked information to Jack Anderson, who wrote twelve columns on the subject between September and October 1979. "They described how Vesco tried to wriggle free of the Justice Department's extradition requests by seeking the assistance of high level Carter officials including Hamilton Jordan."[193] To make matters worse for the administration, recordings Feeney made of his conversations with various conspirators were shown to the press by aides of Senator Orrin Hatch (who, as we will see, was connected to Adnan Khashoggi, the Bank for Commerce and Credit International, and other intelligence assets). As the Washington Post reported:

> An exotic cast appears in the tapes. The names, spoken by Feeney, Vesco, at least two other convicted swindlers, and Libyan diplomats, include Billy Carter and John C. White, chairman of the Democratic National Committee … Hatch, in a phone interview, said he wanted, no dissemination of unsubstantiated allegations, but thought reporters should be able to sample for themselves the technical"quality" of the tapes. The quality of the segment was excellent. The obviously sensitive tapes – raw files with a high potential to besmirch the reputations of possibly innocent persons and even to affect the presidential election campaign – had been closely husbanded by federal prosecutors for an investigation that began 19 months ago and has involved formal presentations to a grand jury since last fall.[194]

Vesco himself had told Senate investigators about the existence of the tapes, effectively widening the probe – just as he had done earlier with the Anderson leak. This raises the possibility that Vesco's role here was aimed at getting the US to drop its extradition efforts against him. Yet, if there was more to it than that, the next question is: who was Vesco working for or with? One possibility is that he was aiding Shackley's "private CIA" network, which of course maintained a deep presence in Libya throughout this whole period, allegedly had information concerning Billy Carter's business there, and had been involved in dirty tricks against the Carter administration.

There is at least one demonstrable link between the worlds of Vesco and that of Shackley where Libya is concerned. Deeply involved in the sale of IOS subsidiaries during the liquidation phase of the mutual fund's existence was Edward du Cann, a high-ranking official in the UK Conservative Party (among other things, du Cann played a key role in Margaret Thatcher's early political rise). By 1972, he was serving as the chairman of Keyser Ullman, a major British banking concern with interests across Europe and in the United States. Keyser Ullman was also tied to Jack Dellal, a Clermont Club member who would later fund a suspect, intelligence-linked company headed by Robert Maxwell's daughter, Christine (see Chapter 21).[195] "Du Cann," states his obituary concerning this period, "was at the heart of a mass of intricate – and generally shady – financial maneuverings."[196] Some of these included the tattered ruins of IOS. They also involved Lonrho, the massive international conglomerate controlled by the corporate raider Roland "Tiny" Rowland, another Clermont Club member. Keyser Ullman had become Lonrho's bank of choice, and du Cann was added to the company's board. He would eventually achieve the position as chairman, overseeing a sprawling network of corporate affiliates and subsidiaries that criss-crossed every economic sector – with a particular focus on mineral extraction in Africa. Lonrho and Tiny Rowland will be discussed more in the next chapter. For now, it's important to note that Rowland's ties to the world of intelligence and covert operations were plenty. He had deep ties to American, British, and Israeli intelligence services, and his African holdings often acted as cover for Mossad agents. He appeared repeatedly in the course of the Iran-Contra affair, and he had complex – sometimes harmonious, sometimes tense – relationships with figures like Adnan Khashoggi. Rowland was also close to Robert Maxwell, and reportedly helped peddle the bugged PROMIS software to his political contacts. All in all, Rowland was a well-heeled operator, known for his ruthless, buccaneering ways.

It is unsurprising, then, that Lonrho's tentacles reached into Libya, right up to the highest levels of its government. A Lonrho subsidiary, Tradewinds Air Holdings, maintained a heavy presence in the country, and counted among its board members Ahmed Gaddafadam, the cousin of and security advisor to Colonel Gaddafi (du Cann himself was another director).[197] Tradewinds became a subject of interest in British parliament, especially after a letter written to the British Secretary of State for Trade and Industry by Mohamed al-Fayed, chairman of Harrods department store and, for a time, the husband of Samira Khashoggi, Adnan Khashoggi's sister. Mohamed and Samira's son, Dodi Fayed, would later become romantically involved with Princess Diana of Wales and die with her in the infamous 1997 car crash. Mohamed al-Fayed had been partners with Lonrho and Rowland for a period in the 1970s, but by the [198]0s they had become bitter enemies, with Rowland seeking to carry out a hostile takeover of Mohamed's economic interests. In the letter, Mohamed outlined a series of charges against Lonrho. While most of these concerned their business practices, they also included allegations of arms dealing and ties with the infamous Edwin Wilson. To quote from Mohamed al-Fayed's letter:

> …the Lonrho subsidiary Tradewinds has been named as the carrier in deals whereby ex-CIA agent, Edwin P. Wilson, shipped to Libya its weapons of terrorism. Wilson is presently serving 52 years in a US prison for his enterprise whilst, interestingly, a co-director in Tradewinds with Messrs Rowland, du Cann and [Robert] Dunlop, from April 1981 to May 1983, was the head of Libyan "security," Ahmed el Gaddafadam, a cousin of Colonel Gaddafi.
>
> Until 1983, Lonrho's 40 per cent partner in Tradewinds was Ashraf Marwan who, however, served only fleetingly as a director and it is possible that he was acting merely as a front for Libyan interests. It is something of a coincidence that Wilson should have been arrested, Marwan sold his shareholding and Gaddafadam resigned as a director almost at the same time. A Sunday Times article of 1984 … gave some background on the Marwan/Libya involvement and it is interesting that Gaddafadam cited Marwan's office as his address in the notification of his directorship to Companies House.198

To summarize: Tradewinds, a subsidiary of Tiny Rowland's Lonrho, was involved in Libya and was named as a player in arms dealings, including shipping weapons on behalf of Edwin Wilson – in other words, on behalf of Shackley's "private CIA." At the same time, Lonrho's chairman – and Tradewinds director – Edward du Cann had previously been involved in liquidations and acquisitions of IOS subsidiaries, thus placing him in the direct orbit of Robert Vesco. Vesco, at the same time that Shackley's group was active in Libya, became embroiled in not one but two potentially interrelated Libyan business and political affairs that reached into the Carter administration. The first of these was the strange dealings with Charter Oil, and the second was the plane affair. The latter in particular proved to be incredibly embarrassing for the administration, right at a time when a connected network of individuals and entities – including Shackley and his associates – were working to undermine Carter.

It is also worth noting that Charter Oil did not only have ties to the Carters via Jack McGregor and Billy Carter. In 1980, 13.7% of the common shares of Charter were held by American Financial Corporation, the Cincinnati, Ohio-based flagship company of Carl Lindner. According to press reports, Lindner was "advising Charter chairman Raymond Mason on some corporate ventures."[199] The secretive Lindner was a major Republican supporter, and was a particularly tight business associate of Max Fisher, who was described as having a "close, personal relationship" with Reagan and is regarded as Leslie Wexner's mentor.[200]

LEGAL AFFAIRS

Afew short years before he became Reagan's campaign manager and prior the eruption of "Billygate," William Casey had returned to the world of private legal practice. He arrived at the offices of Rogers & Wells, one of New York City's impressive white-shoe law firms. Renowned for its litigation division, the "Rogers" of Rogers & Wells was William P. Rogers, who had been a longtime confidant of Richard Nixon and served as his Secretary of State until 1973. The "Wells," on the other hand, was John A. Wells. During his tenure as head of Nixon's SEC, Casey had recruited Wells to oversee a committee evaluating the commission's policies and practices. It was just another step in a long friendship; Casey and Wells had been close since they had first met during Nixon's 1960 presidential campaign.

During the course of Casey's nomination for the leading position in the CIA, Rogers & Wells had furnished a list of clients with whom he had worked between 1976 and 1981.[201] A perusal of the list reveals some of Casey's close friends and business associates. It includes, for example, Antony Fisher, who cofounded a proto-Reaganomics think-tank called the Manhattan Institute for Policy Research with Casey. There was also Science Life Systems, which Casey had formed with William Simon, a fellow Knight of Malta, who had served as Nixon's Treasury Secretary and would later reappear in connection with the Covenant House controversy (discussed in chapter 10). Science Life Systems was a "chain of computerized fitness spas," which was pitched to the governing body of the Olympic Games as a service for athletes. Simon was, at the time, the treasurer of the Olympic Committee.[202] Another client of Casey's was Bear Stearns, the major New York investment bank. Casey's legal work on behalf of Bear Stearns coincided with the promotion of Alan Greenberg to the position of CEO, which he would maintain until the early 1990s. It also coincided with the arrival of Jeffrey Epstein, who rose rapidly through the ranks of the bank until his abrupt departure in 1981. This, curiously enough, was the same year that Casey left private law and returned to government service as CIA director.

A close examination of other Casey clients shows a distinctive pattern: the recurrent appearance of figures linked to organized crime, the world of intelligence, or both. One client that straddled both worlds was Deak & Co., an international banking and currency-trading firm run by Nicholas Deak. Deak, much like Casey, had served in the OSS, and his company maintained a close relationship with the CIA throughout the post-war epoch. An exposé of Deak & Co. published in the New Republic in 1976 stated: "Deak is said to have handled CIA funds in 1954 when the agency overthrew Iran's Premier Mohammad Mossadegh and restored the Shah to the throne. During the Vietnam war, Deak & Co. allegedly moved CIA funds through its Hong Kong office for conversion into piasters in Saigon's unofficial market. Deak officials in Hong Kong and Macao helped the CIA investigate Far East gold smuggling in the mid-1950s."[203]

Deak & Co. also had a side that angled toward organized crime. Between January 1977 and summer 1978, the bank maintained accounts for Isaac Kattan. Kattan was subsequently identified by authorities as "the biggest drug financier in South America." He had worked closely with both the Cali and Medellin cartels since the 1970s, laundering the illicit profits produced by the lucrative drug trade through bank accounts in Miami and New York.[204] Deak accounts were among those being used for these purposes, and there is evidence that the firm might have been aware of what was happening. An Internal Revenue Service (IRS) audit revealed that Deak employees filed false currency-transaction reports – an anti-money laundering mechanism that tracked large-sum bank deposits – and sometimes even neglected to file the reports altogether.[205]

The Casey client list also included DWG Corp, NVF, and Sharon Steel, a trio of companies that were under the control of the man who invented the modern hostile takeover, Victor Posner. "He would spot a company whose assets he judged were underfunded, gain control, and milk it," read Posner's 2002 obituary in The Economist. "Some bits would be sold off, others would be closed. Previously unconsidered treasures, such as employees' pension funds, would be raided and reinvested in Posner's other companies," it added.[206] The three companies represented by Rogers & Wells reveals the diversity of Posner's holdings. DWG was a cigar manufacturer that has since become the Wendy's fast food chain, and NVF, formerly National Vulcanized Fiber, was the creator of forbon, a fiber used in guitar picks.

Sharon Steel, meanwhile, had once been a booming industrial firm that had led the pack in Pennsylvania's steel industry.

Posner's seemingly innate talent in corporate buccaneering required easy access to capital. Because of this, by the mid-1970s, he had fallen in with the crowd around Michael Milken and Drexel Burnham Lambert. By the 1980s, he was one of the Milken's biggest customers, and it becomes difficult to perceive – at times at least – where Posner's interests and Milken's were separate. Another person in this circle that was particularly close to Posner was fellow Drexel Burnham Lambert client Ivan Boesky. Years later, when Boesky was dragged before the courts for his role in a stock-manipulation fraud case involving the Irish beer giant Guinness, none other than Max Fisher, whose ties to Leslie Wexner are detailed in Chapter 13, personally intervened on his behalf.[207] Notably, Clare Hazell, a former employee of Epstein's and an alleged key figure in the Epstein-Maxwell sexual trafficking/blackmail operation, married into the wealthy Guinness family in the early 2000s.[208]

Much like Robert Vesco, Posner crossed paths with the SEC during Casey's time there. The commission had brought a case against the corporate raider, spearheaded once again by Stanley Sporkin, for "dipping into employees' pension plans" at Sharon Steel.[209] However, the case seemed not to have soured relations between the SEC veteran and the dispersed gang of corporate raiders. In 1980, aside from Casey obtaining the Posner corporate accounts at Rogers & Wells' DWG, Posner's close friend Meshulam Riklis "worked out the guidelines with the SEC's then head of enforcement, Stanley Sporkin … and proceeded to take [his company] Rapid-American private."[210] As mentioned in Chapter 2, Rapid-American included the remnants of Lewis Rosenstiel's business empire, and Riklis acquired the Manhattan townhouse that Rosenstiel had bugged for blackmail purposes.

One close associate of Posner who is worth scrutinizing is the Miami real estate developer Armer E. White, who had been the finance chairman of the Dade County Reagan for President campaign in 1980. Casey was, of course, the manager of the national campaign.[211] It is likely that Posner and White initially encountered each other when Posner first became interested in Florida land development through his Security Management Corporation. Beginning in the 1960s, White was a constant fixture in Posner's world. Sometime in the 1960s, he became a director at DWG, and later he was granted a position on the board of Sharon Steel. By the 1970s, he was listed as a trustee of Posner's investment trust.[212]

What makes White important, beyond his prominent role within Posner's financial network, is the ties he maintained to organized crime. Many of these ties came through his real estate vehicle, Context Industries, which had benefited from the Florida land boom in the 1960s.[213] The real estate affairs of the Sunshine State had, historically, served as an investment outlet for organized crime. Unsurprisingly, Context soon found itself also swimming in those currents. The company retained Leonard Pelullo as a "consultant."[214] Pelullo, in turn, was identified in a New Jersey State Commission of Investigation report as being closely tied to the Nicodemo Scarfo crime family.[215] Scarfo, allied with the Philadelphia crime family, had been given control of Atlantic City when it was something of a backwater. Under his management, it was transformed into the upper East Coast's major gambling hub. Donald Trump's Atlantic City interests were built, in fact, with concrete supplied by Scarfo's companies.[216]

Pelullo seems to have brought the worlds of White and Scarfo together, with Context Industries making plans for the construction of hotels and casinos in Atlantic City.[217] He also served as a source of financing for White's company: Context paid the mobster $80,000 to obtain loans that, when they arrived, totaled around $800,000.[218] The source of these loans was Sunshine State Bank, a shady Florida savings and loan in which Pelullo owned a 6 percent stake.[219] The full extent of Pelullo's borrowing from the S&L was immense and, upon its collapse, his outstanding debts were over $12 million. It was not the only financial outfit that made, ultimately unpaid, loans to Pelullo. Another was Florida's Great American Bank. Owned by former US ambassador to Switzerland Marvin Warner, it had been one of the banks used by the aforementioned Isaac Kattan to launder Colombian drug money.

An even more direct organized crime connection found in Casey's client list was SCA Services, a major waste-management company. While having all the pretenses of an above-board corporate firm – the SCA's directors and investors have been some of America's largest businessmen – the company has been dogged by repeated scandals, illustrating that its roots have remained squarely planted in the underworld.

One such investor was Anthony Bentrovato, who became a “substantial SCA stockholder” after selling “a profitable garbage company to SCA in 1973 for $1.7 million worth of stock.”[220] Two years later, Bentrovato was indicted in a mob-linked conspiracy involving kickbacks from the Teamsters pension fund. Indicted alongside him was Teamster official Anthony Provenzano – notable for having been at the center of the initial probe into the disappearance of Jimmy Hoffa.[221]

The association between a mobbed up waste-management owner like Bentrovato and a Teamster official like Provenzano is illustrative of the arrangement between the union and waste management. Waste management in New Jersey – the center of the SCA complex – fell under the auspices of Teamsters Local 945. The business agent for this local was Ernest Palmeri, who came “from a long line of organized crime figures.” Palmeri had been placed in that position by Genovese capo Peter LaPlaca.[222]

Close to Palmeri was Crescent “Chris” J. Roselle, the general manager of a family-owned waste-management group that was sold to SCA. Roselle also operated a series of businesses with Anthony Gaess, the manager of a number of SCA subsidiaries. Both were involved, for example, with MSLA, a company that managed a large New Jersey landfill that housed toxic-waste. Linked to MSLA was “one of the region’s largest waste contractors,” Charles Macaluso. Close to corrupt Teamsters officials, Macaluso was by no means an ordinary businessman – according to the New York Times, he had been identified “in a Congressional report as a ‘soldier’ in the Tieri organized crime ‘family.’”[223] That would be Frank Tieri, a boss in the Genovese family.

Perhaps fearing that these associations would come to light, SCA attorneys filed a legal document in 1978 arguing that Gaess was not involved with the company’s subsidiaries. However, as Alan Block points out in Poisoning for Profit, the minutes of a corporate board meeting clearly indicate Gaess’ position.[224] It is notable that this situation occurred during the time when Casey worked with SCA via Rogers & Wells. The connection to Gaess might have been obscured temporarily, but the connection between SCA and organized crime was later dragged into the media limelight in December 1980, when Gaess’ associate Crescent Roselle was “shot multiple times with both .22 and .32 caliber weapons outside his company offices in Elizabeth, New Jersey.”[225] This gangland-style murder occurred less than a week after an FBI informant gave testimony concerning ties between SCA and the mob.

In May 1981, New Jersey State Police Lt. Col. Justin Dintino testified that the Genovese and Gambino families exerted extensive influence across the New Jersey waste-management industry and had significant ties to SCA. When it came to SCA’s president, Thomas Viola, Dintino suggested that he was not a member of organized crime. He was instead “an associate member of organized crime – a business associate.”[226] Viola, meanwhile, was quickly prepping for his departure from SCA, and he opted to hire another familiar face to serve as his lawyer, Joseph Califano Jr., whose role in Watergate was discussed in the last chapter. The whole episode makes a brief appearance in Califano’s autobiography:

> Though Viola denied any ties of organized crime, an SCA manager had been shot and killed a few months earlier and the garbage-collection business in New Jersey was suspected of being infiltrated by the mob. I was negotiating Viola’s exit. He wanted me to meet him … in New York at the offices of Rogers & Wells, which had been retained to do an independent investigation of allegations of mob involvement in SCA. I flew to New York for negotiations, which dragged on into the early evening. Rogers & Wells had found that Viola had no mob connections, had cleaned up SCA, and removed any employees responsible for misconduct.[227]

Notably, a very close business associate of Leslie Wexner’s, Frank Walsh of Walsh Trucking, would later become of interest to law enforcement for his ties to these same organized crime networks – specifically, the Genovese crime family’s New Jersey branch. Walsh managed logistics for Wexner’s company The Limited and, when Walsh was under investigation by the New York Organized Crime Task Force in 1984, all notices sent to Walsh in connection with that investigation were addressed to Frank Walsh Financial Resources at One Limited Parkway, Columbus, Ohio – the same address of Wexner’s The Limited. The Walsh-Wexner relationship is revisited in greater detail in Chapter 13.

Two final Casey clients worth mentioning are Newfoundland Refining Company and Shaheen Natural Resources. This pair of firms represented the interests of John Shaheen, an independent oilman whose long-running association with Casey dated back to their days together in the OSS. Shaheen’s official bio states that he had served as “aide to General Donovan, director of the Office of Strategic Services; Chief, Special Projects Branch in OSS Washington; OSS field service in European, Mediterranean, and Pacific Theaters.”[228] Richard Harris Smith, in his history of the OSS, describes Shaheen’s Special Projects Branch as a “completely autonomous” unit that answered directly to Donovan “outside of the regular OSS chain of command.”[229]

Shaheen’s activities brought him very close to the circle of OSS insiders that Casey had become acquainted with during his time in London. At the end of the war, for example, Donovan organized a committee to advise Hollywood on the production of spy-themed movies. The members of this special commission included David K. E. Bruce, J. Russell Forgan, Allen Dulles, and Shaheen. Their efforts successfully inserted a score of OSS veterans into the movie business, while also giving directors and producers a direct link to the inside world of wartime-intelligence operatives. Hollywood, as a result, became yet another milieu where the worlds of American intelligence intersected with organized crime.

Close connections to Nixon was something else Casey and Shaheen shared, with the latter being part of Casey’s “Hardy Boys” clique. Shaheen, like Casey, had been involved with the Nixon campaigns of the 1960s. When Nixon had briefly returned to private law practice, Shaheen had been one of his clients. He was responsible for connecting Nixon with Joey Smallwood, the premier of the Canadian province of Newfoundland. Smallwood, meanwhile, was engaged in an effort to industrialize the remote province by courting European and American capital. Some of the firms he courted bore the unmistakable mark of organized crime – for example, the controversial John C. Doyle and his company, Canadian Javelin.[230] Doyle’s company also included a close associate of Edgar Bronfman’s, Mark Millard, as a major investor.[231] Doyle had also enticed Shaheen, whose Newfoundland ventures were the two companies taken on by Casey as Rogers & Wells clients.

The Newfoundland venture was rocky for Shaheen. In 1976, his oil refinery went bankrupt, setting off a firestorm of legal problems and a domino effect that soon impacted his other businesses. He desperately tried to raise money from outside sources, at one point attempting to enlist – with the aid of Casey – the Kuwaiti National Petroleum Corporation to invest in his Newfoundland oil company. When that effort failed, Shaheen turned to the open market in a desperate search for sources of crude petroleum for refining in Newfoundland. It was then that he made contact with Cyrus Hashemi, an Iranian arms dealer with close ties to Iran’s post-revolution government.

Anyone who has ever looked into the October Surprise plot will instantly recognize the name Cyrus Hashemi. Indeed, one could argue that the trail of events that led to that plot began with the encounter between Shaheen and Hashemi. According to the report prepared by the October Surprise Task Force, “Hashemi had been identified to Shaheen as someone with good contacts in the oil communities in Iran, Nigeria, and Tunisia. Following their introduction, Shaheen solicited Hashemi in securing contracts to purchase crude oil.”[232] The report continues: “In 1980, Cyrus Hashemi assisted Shaheen in his bid to regain control of the Newfoundland refinery. According to O. Jackson Cook, an attorney who also assisted Shaheen in this effort, Hashemi assembled a group of investors who made money available to Shaheen to bid on the refinery. The FBI’s electronic surveillance of Cyrus Hashemi confirms that Cyrus and Shaheen were in contact in late 1980 regarding the Newfoundland refinery.”[233]

Hashemi also made an appearance in the Carey Energy affair, discussed earlier in this chapter. Roy Furmark, the “right-hand man” of Shaheen in the Newfoundland venture and a close associate of William Casey, testified during the course of the Iran-Contra hearings that he had encountered Hashemi in the Bahamas on the eve of Charter’s acquisition of BORCO 198.[234] According to Furmark, Hashemi was operating as a “representative of the Iranian government,” and had been invited to participate in the negotiations by a CIA asset named Roger Tamraz.[235] Many of Tamraz’s other activities, including his connections to the Maxwells, will be discussed in chapter 16

Shortly after Shaheen became acquainted with Hashemi, he began making overtures to officials in the Carter White House and the CIA concerning schemes to free the hostages being held in Iran. While the CIA was reportedly uninterested in what Shaheen had conjured up – which involved a team of “cadres” led by an exiled Iranian general – the October Surprise Task Force report suggests that Hashemi was party to the plotting. An FBI report from the period mentions that “Shaheen stated that he mentioned

[Cyrus] Hashemi to persons in the CIA because … he determined that Hashemi might be able to play some role in either alleviating the hostage crises [sic] or in establishing a dialogue with the [Khomeini] government and the United States."[236]

The Task Force report then adds an ominous detail: "According to [FBI agent Louis] Stephens, Shaheen indicated during the interview that he mentioned Cyrus Hashemi to Casey, approximately twice to [William] Casey prior to Ronald Reagan's inauguration in January 1981."[237] The significance of this is that Cyrus' brother, Jamshid Hashemi, claimed that he was visited by William Casey and Roy Furmark in DC. The purpose of this meeting, he relayed, was to discuss the hostage crisis in Iran.

The October Surprise Task Force cast doubt on the legitimacy of Jamshid Hashemi's claims, citing the lack of independent corroboration. Far more complicated for the Task Force were the meetings in Madrid in July 1980. As previously mentioned, the Madrid meetings occurred a month after the fateful Le Cercle meeting where the Reagan campaign was discussed. With Le Cercle, the Safari Club, and Shackley's network all revolving around one another, we are left with a highly complex picture of elaborate inner power plays.

According to Jamshid, Casey, flanked by Donald Gregg and an unidentified man, attended two days of meetings with himself, his brother Cyrus, and Iranian officials in Madrid in late July concerning the hostages. Much of the debate relating to the October Surprise Task Force revolved around Casey having been in London for a World War II historical conference on the days when he was alleged to have been in Madrid. The Task Force noted that there were significant ambiguities in the conference attendance records, making it hard to know whether Casey could be consistently accounted for in London.

Madrid is only an hour and half from London by plane, conceivably giving Casey enough time to move between the cities in a relatively insignificant amount of time. While the media soundly rejected the possibility that this occurred, a State Department cable later emerged from this precise time period stating that Casey had indeed been in Madrid "for purposes unknown."[238] Interestingly, Jamshid Hashemi claimed to have used a series of aliases, including "Abdula Hashemi, "Jamshid Khalaj," and "Jamshid Parsa."[239] Throughout late July and August 1980, a series of names were logged into the guest records of the Hotel Ritz, where the meetings with Casey were said to have taken place. These names included "Abdululi Hashmi," "Jamshid Khalaj," and "Parsa Jamshid." These individuals appeared to have checked in and out repeatedly at odd intervals.

There was another name that appeared in the guest records, right alongside the probable aliases of Jamshid Hashemi. On July 23, a "Robert Gray" checked into the Hotel Ritz, and on July 25 he checked out.[240] Was "Robert Gray" actually Robert Keith Gray? Speculation swirled in the media, as Gray – at the time – was working on Reagan's campaign directly under Casey. The October Surprise Task Force eventually turned its attention to the possibility. They cleared him because his passport showed no evidence that he had been in Spain in summer 1980.

Others were not so convinced. Susan Trento, for instance, cites counterarguments made by former Gray employees that he had multiple passports. For Gray, a man who had multiple intelligence connections (as detailed in the last chapter), having multiple passports was hardly out of the question. There were also eyewitness accounts that suggested that Gray was indeed the "Robert Gray" who had stayed at the Ritz. According to Susan Trento, "network reporters followed through by showing a photograph of Gray to people at the hotel, who said they recognized him."[241]

ORIGINS OF THE IRAN DEAL

Bill Casey's appointment as director of Central Intelligence was hardly popular with many on the Hill and the broader political establishment. One particularly vehement opponent was Barry Goldwater, whom Casey had sparred with back in the 1960s. Casey had designated Goldwater as a candidate of an increasingly incoherent right-wing fringe, and Goldwater clearly held a grudge against the veteran spook. He proposed his own candidate: Bobby Ray Inman, the naval intelligence and NSA chief who had done much to disrupt the Shackley clique by shuttering Task Force 157. Goldwater even went so far as to personally lobby Reagan to appoint Inman rather than Casey. But he was only successful in getting Inman the number-two position at the Agency.

The split at the top of the intelligence hierarchy was part of a cascade of factional struggles that swept across Reagan's first term as president. Joseph Persico has described how quickly the CIA bureaucracy was polarized between the two men, eventually reaching a point where "Casey's staff and Inman's staff barely communicated."[242] Inman was blocked from participating in major operations, such as the early Contra-support operations, and Casey even went so far as to plant stories about Inman in the press. He devised a new division of labor in the Agency so that it gave Casey unfettered access to President Reagan – a privilege that Inman did not enjoy.

Joseph Trento argues, drawing on sources from within the intelligence community, that the rivalry between the two men was capitalized on by Casey's other rival, then vice president George H.W.Bush. Inman, already close to Bush, acted as his eyes and ears within the CIA. "Bush was walking a tightrope," Trento writes. "Inman considered himself a friend of Bush's and was reporting to Bush on Casey's activities within the CIA. At the same time, Inman's great rival, Shackley, was [also] reporting to Bush."[243] To make matters more complicated, Shackley and his core group of associates – Richard Secord and Thomas Clines, among others – were increasingly active in Casey's off-the-books operations, apparently walking a tightrope of their own between other rival factions.

Details scattered throughout Persico's biography of Casey add credence to Trento's claims. When Inman accepted the CIA job, for example, he wanted Bush present for the welcoming ceremony. "George Bush isn't welcome out here," Casey told him, alluding to the CIA. "Inman waited for an explanation, but none was forthcoming."[244] At another point, Casey flew into a rage on discovering that Inman had been frequently meeting with Bush and briefing him on intelligence matters.

Inman stepped down from his CIA post in 1981 and turned toward a career in the private sector. The presence of Bush's influence can be seen in some of his subsequent business affairs. Inman, in the mid-1980s, worked as the head of an electronics-industry holding company called Westmark, which in turned owned Tracor – a major defense contractor that produced electronics for weapons systems. The main group behind Tracor was a web of in-laws and business associates of Walter Mischer, the same Texas banker and real estate developer that Pete Brewton had found to have been involved with Bush in private-intelligence operations.[245]

There are other indications that Bush was operating his own intelligence web within the Reagan administration. Seymour Hersh, for example, charged that Bush, wary of Casey, set up a "team of military operatives" that "bypassed the national-security establishment – including the CIA – and wasn't answerable to congressional oversight."[246] According to Hersh, this team included Vice Adm. Arthur Moreau, then serving as assistant to the Joint Chiefs of Staff; Daniel Murphy, Bush's chief of staff; and Donald Gregg, the former CIA officer who had become Bush's advisor on national security. Gregg, as discussed earlier, had a history with Shackley and may have been involved in the October Surprise. According to Joseph Trento, Gregg served as a channel of communication between Bush and Shackley.[247]

Such was the reality of the Reagan administration. Despite the outward appearance of strength and unity, the internal dynamics were characterized by rivalry, factionalism, double-dealing, and, on occasion, moments of fragile cooperation. This was the heady environment that incubated the Iran-Contra affair, in which the US government violated several of its own laws in an attempt to covertly finance the Nicaraguan Contras in their fight against the country's Sandinista government. It was very much the legacy of the Shackley-Wilson private-intelligence network. Though Ed Wilson was, by this point, in prison for his Libyan escapades, old veterans of that network such as Clines, Secord, and even Gray were active in this new covert war.

Oliver North, Secord's primary partner in orchestrating many of the byzantine plots that characterized the Contra-support efforts, appears to have been operating on behalf of Casey, who had been blocked from overtly supporting the Nicaraguan rebels by Congress. For example, Casey directly intervened to keep North in the National Security Council when he was supposed to be rotated back to regular Marine duties. The close proximity of North to Casey adds credence to the allegations made by Seymour Hersh that Bush's own intelligence operations had leaked details to the press concerning North and Secord's arms sales to Iran.

Shackley himself was called to testify in the wake of the revelations of the scandal. He was never found to be connected with the affair, though subsequent statements by investigators suggest that, behind closed doors, there was doubt as to his professed innocence. The facts that he shared during his testimony were, however, quite revealing. In the course of his work for John Deuss, Shackley deployed the services of a former SAVAK agent named Novzar Razmara as a source of information on Middle East oil and the geopolitical situation surrounding the Iran-Iraq War. Through Razmara, Shackley was plugged into a network of former Iranian military officers who maintained some contact with the country's post-revolution government.

In November 1984, as the hostage crisis in Lebanon was mobilizing the National Security Council, Shackley traveled to Hamburg, Germany, with Razmara to meet with the former SAVAK general Manucher Hashemi (no relation to Cyrus and Jamshid Hashemi). The ostensible goal of this meeting was to introduce Shackley and Razmara to "interesting Iranians who were traveling in Europe at the time and from Iran."[248] Present for the meeting was Manucher Ghorbanifar, an arms dealer and shady businessman with ties to both the older pro-Shah military officers and the new intelligence apparatus of Khomeini's government.

There were numerous meetings over the course of that day, and many of the details about them are redacted in the publicly available version of Shackley's deposition. What is revealed is that Ghorbanifar approached Shackley with questions concerning the acquisition of TOW missiles – anti-tank guided missiles that the Iranians were seeking in hopes of turning the tide in their conflict with Iraq. Shackley claims that he rejected Ghorbanifar's overtures. Yet, TOW missiles were not the only thing on the arms dealer's mind. Ghorbanifar stated that "for a price he could arrange for the release of the US hostages in Lebanon through his Iranian contacts."[249]

Shackley's version of these events is somewhat difficult to believe: the TOW missiles that would be shipped to Iran were not to be used as a source of financing for the Contras but were to guarantee that Iran would utilize its influence to release the hostages held by Hezbollah in Lebanon. One of these hostages was, in fact, a CIA station head whom Shackley had been close to. These weapons sales were carried out by individuals all closely associated with Shackley, working in concert with Ghorbanifar. Yet, somehow we are supposed to believe that Shackley's 1984 meeting in Hamburg had happened just by chance. Also suspicious was that Shackley had written a memo on his meeting with Ghorbanifar and dispatched it to Lt. Gen. Vernon Walters at the State Department.

This memo was brought up during Robert McFarlane's deposition:

MR. COHEN: You recall that Ted Shackley, back in 1984 sent a memo to Vernon Walters suggesting we have a new relationship with Iran. Were you aware of that?

MR. MCFARLANE: No, sir.

MR. COHEN: That that recommendation was discarded and that the memo was retyped in June of 1985, actually June 7 of 1985, it was sort of retyped and given to Michael Ledeen. Are you aware of that?

Mr. MCFARLANE: No, sir.

Mr. COHEN: That Michael Ledeen gave it to Oliver North?

Mr. MCFARLANE: I didn't know that.

Mr. COHEN: Are you aware of a John Shaheen?

Mr. MCFARLANE: The name is familiar. I believe he was associated with Mr. Khashoggi.

Mr. COHEN: Actually he was a very close friend of Bill Casey's. They served together in World War II in the OSS, and John Shaheen floated a possible hostage initiative on behalf of Cyrus Hashemi … that proposal was determined by the State Department to be unworthy of pursuit. Were you aware that was being done at the same time we had paper being prepared by – a recommendation by John Shaheen?

Mr. MCFARLANE: No sir, I don't.

Mr. COHEN: Were you aware that the State Department looked behind the Shaheen proposal and saw Mr. Ghorbanifar?[250]

Cyrus Hashemi, John Shaheen's contact who put the October Surprise conspiracy in motion, was indeed a close associate and business partner of Manucher Ghorbanifar, and the two would operate in the murky world of arms trafficking up until Ghorbanifar broke ties with him and partnered instead with Adnan Khashoggi. According to Gordon Thomas and Matt Dillon, Ghorbanifar and Robert Maxwell were well acquainted, having been introduced to each other by Cyrus Hashemi.[251]

Subsequently, both Khashoggi and Ghorbanifar were recruited by Israel to help traffic arms to Iran to bolster the country in its fight against Iraq, allowing the two enemies of the Jewish state to continue to weaken each other. Overseeing this operation was David Kimche, a former Mossad officer and at the time director general of Israel's Ministry of Foreign Affairs. Robert Maxwell, who was playing a supporting role in the plan, was also actively working on behalf of Israel intelligence. As will be detailed in Chapter 9, Khashoggi and Ghorbanifar were also connected, as was Maxwell, to the PROMIS scandal, also known as the Inslaw affair.

Shackley might have been privy to these complicated arrangements and designed his testimony concerning the 1984 Hamburg meeting to suppress knowledge of his role in them. In his memo, he had effectively offered Ghorbanifar's services to the State Department. Former CIA officer William Corson holds that he did this "because Israeli intelligence suggested it."[252] This sort of interplay between Shackley's network and the other factions detailed in this chapter with Israeli intelligence would be a recurring theme throughout the Reagan era and beyond.

Endnotes

1Jerry Sanders, Peddlers of Crisis: The Committee on the Present Danger and the Politics of Containment (South End Press, 1999), 221.

2Sanders, Peddlers of Crisis, 221.

3Yvonne Dilling and Ingrid Rogers, In Search of Refuge (Pennsylvania: Herald Press, 1984), 220.

4Ken Silverstein and Daniel Burton-Rose, Private Warriors (Verso, 2000), 215-16; Holy Sklar, Washington's War on Nicaragua (South End Press, 1988), 80.

5Joseph John Trento, Prelude to Terror: The Rogue CIA and the Legacy of America's Private Intelligence Network (New York: Carroll & Graf, 2005), 72, http://archive.org/details/preludetoterror-r00tren.

6Jonathan Kwitny, The Crimes of the Patriots: A True Tale of Dope, Dirty Money, and the CIA (W. W. Norton), 1987.

7Kwitny, Crimes of the Patriots, 59-62.

8Kwitny, Crimes of the Patriots, 115.

9John Pilger, "The British-American Coup That Ended Australian Independence," Guardian, Oct. 23, 2014.

10Joseph Trento, "FBI Probing Ex-Spy's Role in Task Force," Wilmington Sunday News Journal, October 5, 1980, https://www.cia.gov/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP99-00498R000200010073-2.pdf.

11Trento, Prelude to Terror, 73.

12Peter Maas, Manhunt: The Incredible Pursuit of a CIA Agent Turned Terrorist (Random House, 1986), 59.

13Trento, Prelude to Terror, 71.

14Maas, Manhunt, 59.

15Trento, Prelude to Terror, 74.

16"Exposing the Libyan Link," New York Times Magazine, June 21, 1981.

17Maas, Manhunt, 163.

18William E. Schmidt, "Ex-Green Beret Is Convicted of Assault on Libyan Student," New York Times, December 5, 1981.

19Peter Dale Scott and Jonathan Marshall, The Iran-Contra Connection: Secret Teams and Covert Operations of the Reagan Era (South End Press, 1987), 41.

20"Theodore Shackley deposition," Report of the Congressional Committees Investigating the Iran-Contra Affair, One Hundredth Congress, First session, Washington, 1987, appendix B, Vol. 25, 15, https://www.maryferrell.org/php/showlist.php?docset=1949.

21"Shackley deposition," 25-28.

22"Shackley deposition," 14.

23Trento, Prelude to Terror, 174.

24David Stout, "Theodore Shackley, Enigmatic C.I.A. Official, Dies at 75," New York Times, December 14, 2002.

25Philip Taubman, "Ex-C.I.A. Agent's Associates Run Arms Export Concerns," New York Times, September 6, 1981.

26"Pseudonym: Ledbetter, Wallace," Mary Farrell Foundation, https://www.maryferrell.org/php/pseudodb.php?id=LEDBETTER_WALLACE.

27Javier Blas and Jack Farchy, The World for Sale: Money, Power, and the Traders Who Barter the Earth's Resources (Oxford University Press, 2021), 89; Fuel for Apartheid: Oil Supplies to South Africa (Shipping Research Bureau Amsterdam, September 1990).

28Susan Mazur, "John Deuss' Editors on Record on the Man," Scoop News, December 2, 2006.

29Trento, Prelude to Terror, 230-31.

30Terry Reed and John Cummings, Compromised: Clinton, Bush, and the CIA (S.P.I. Books, 1994), 542.

31"Clines Interview," Report of the Congressional Committees Investigating the Iran-Contra Affair, First Session, Washington, 1988, appendix A, Vol. 2, Source Documents, 179, https://www.maryferrell.org/php/showlist.php?docset=1949.

32“Clines Interview,” 179.
33“Clines Interview,” 179.
34Edward T. Pound and Walter S. Mossberg, “Arms Sales to Egypt Yielded Huge Profits for Obscure New Firm,” Wall Street Journal, October 1, 1982.
35Peter Maas, “Oliver North’s Strange Recruits,” New York Times Magazine, January 18, 1987, https://www.nytimes.com/1987/01/18/magazine/oliver-norths-strange-recruits.html.
36Taubman, “Ex-C.I.A. Agent’s Associates.”
37Taubman, “Ex-C.I.A. Agent’s Associates.”
38“Libya: Terrorism II [Terrorism: Libya 09/25/1986-09/30/1986]” Ronald Reagan Presidential Library Digital Library Collections, https://www.reaganlibrary.gov/public/digitallibrary/smof/nsc-politicalandmilitaryaffairs/north/box-105/40-633-1201554-105-022-2017.pdf.
39Trento, Prelude to Terror, 148.
40Trento, Prelude to Terror, 148.
41Trento, Prelude to Terror, 148-149; David H. Halevy and Neil C. Livingstone, “Noriega’s Pet Spy,” Washington Post, January 7, 1990.
42Halevy and Livingstone, “Noriega’s Pet Spy.”
43Halevy and Livingstone, “Noriega’s Pet Spy.”
44Peter Dale Scott and Jonathan Marshall, Cocaine Politics: Drugs, Armies, and the CIA in Central America, (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1998), 73–78.
45Morgan Strong, “Mubarak, the Bag Man,” Consortium News, March 3, 2011, https://www.consortiumnews.com/2011/030311b.html.
46Jon Grambell, “UK Court Orders Gunrunner to Pay over $4.1 Million to UAE Emirate,” ABC News, May 22, 2020, https://abcnews.go.com/International/wireStory/uk-court-orders-gunrunnerpay-41m-uae-emirate-70836616.
47Trento, Prelude to Terror, 179.
48Pete Brewton, The Mafia, CIA, and George Bush (S.P.I. Books, December 1992), 201.
49Brewton, The Mafia, 201.
50Brewton, The Mafia, 201.
51Trento, Prelude to Terror, 179.
52Jack Anderson, “Did Ex-CIA Agents Bug the Army?,” Washington Whirl, October 18, 1981.
53Anderson, “Did Ex-CIA Agents Bug the Army?”
54Stephen Pizzo, Mary Fricker, and Paul Muolo, Inside Job: The Looting of America’s Savings and Loans (Harper Collins, 1991), 119-120; Brewton, The Mafia, 200.
55Pizzo, Fricker, and Muolo, Inside Job, 90-91.
56Pizzo, Fricker, and Muolo, Inside Job, 91.
57Brewton, The Mafia, 160-64.
58Brewton, The Mafia, 162.
59Brewton, The Mafia, 162.
60Brewton, The Mafia, 162.
61Brewton, The Mafia, 161.
62“Vaughn R. “Bobby” Ross, Sr. Obituary,” The Advocate, March 5, 2018, https://obits.theadvocate.com/us/obituaries/theadvocate/name/vaughn-ross-obituary?id=12105551.
63James R. Woodrall, Twelve Texas Aggie War Heroes (Texas A & M University Press, 2015), 237.
64Brewton, The Mafia, 163.
65Pizzo, Fricker, and Muolo, Inside Job, 232.
66Brewton, The Mafia, 155-57.
67Brewton, The Mafia, 160.
68Brewton, The Mafia, 5.
69Brewton, The Mafia, 6-7; “Dan Kuykendall Deposition,” Report of the Congressional Committees Investigating the Iran-Contra Affair, First Session, Washington 1988, appendix B, Vol. 15, 243-47.

70Brewton, The Mafia, 6-7.

71“[CTRL] S&L Fraud Suspect Found Dead; Suicide Possible in Corson Case,” July 28, 2001, https://www.mail-archive.com/ctrl@listserv.aol.com/msg73302.html.

72Brewton, The Mafia, 104.

73Gordon Thomas and Martin Dillon, Robert Maxwell, Israel’s Superspy: The Life and Murder of a Media Mogul, 1st Carroll & Graf ed (New York: Carroll and Graf, 2002), 78-79, https://archive.org/details/robert-maxwell-israels-superspy-thomas-dillon-2002.

74Brewton, The Mafia, 105.

75Jack Z. Smith, “Fund-raiser faces hard choice in ‘84,” Fort Worth Star-Telegram, July 31, 1983.

76Smith, “Fund-raiser faces hard choice in ‘84.”

77Rad Sallee and Kristen Mack, “Walter Mischer left mark on politics, real estate,” Houston Chronicle, December 20, 2005, https://www.chron.com/news/houston-deaths/article/Walter-Mischer-left-mark-on-politics-real-estate-1637567.php.

78Brewton, The Mafia, 12.

79Eric C Orlemann, LeTourneau Earthmovers (MN: MBI, 2001), 124–25; William R Haycraft, Yellow Steel: The Story of the Earthmoving Equipment Industry (Urbana: University of Illinois Press, 2002), 180.

80Van Craddock, “Marathon Manufacturing Co. Sold,” Longview News-Journal, December 20, 1979.

81Brewton, The Mafia, 33.

82Brewton, The Mafia, 32.

83Paul Burka, “Power,” Texas Monthly, December 1987, 218.

84See, for examples, “Camp Rio Vista Sold to Houston Group,” Kerrville Mountain Sun, December 16, 1970; “Parker Drilling Firm Re-Elects Chairman,” Abilene Reporter-News, December 29, 1981.

85For a discussion how the Duncans launched Hines’ career, see George Rodrigue, “Anatomy of a Super Mall,” D Magazine, November 1, 1981, https://www.dmagazine.com/publications/d-magazine/1981/november/anatomy-of-a-super-mall/

86“Joseph Patten, 73, Retired in ‘73 as Partner of Bear, Stearns & Co.,” New York Times, April 20, 1978, https://www.nytimes.com/1978/04/20/archives/joseph-patten-73-retired-in-73-as-partner-of-bear-stearns-co.html; “Gulf Chiefs Beaten,” Spokane Chronicle, June 8, 1982.

87Martin Paredes, “Watergate and Mexico,” El Paso News, May 17, 2017, https://elpasonews.org/2017/05/17/watergate-and-mexico/; Allen McDuffee, “Shady funds through foreign powers, digging up dirt, and an election won: the Nixon playbook,” Timeline, November 16, 2017, https://timeline.com/richard-nixon-election-creep-c6002789b554.

88George Bush, All the Best, George Bush: My Life in Letters and Other Writings (New York: Scribner, 1999), 82.

89The Structure of the U.S. Petroleum Industry: A Summary of Survey Data. United States. Congress. Senate. Committee on Interior and Insular Affairs. Special Subcommittee on Integrated Oil Operations, 1976, 135.

90“New Bank is Headed By Smith,” Kilgore News Herald, October 3, 1978. Prior to its merger into Mischer’s complex, one of the Bank of Texas’ directors was Houston oilman Sidney Adger. In 1968, Adger approached Texas lieutenant governor Ben Barnes – identified above as an associate of Herman Beebe – about arranging for George W. Bush to enter into the National Guard as a means of preemptively avoiding the Vietnam War draft. See Jeff Horwitz, “I’m Very Ashamed,” Salon, August 28, 2004, https://www.salon.com/2004/08/28/barnes_4/.

91“People and Business,” New York Times, February 23, 1977, https://www.nytimes.com/1977/02/23/archives/people-and-business-trial-begins-for-2-exofficials-of-penn-central.html

92Russ Baker, Family of Secrets (Bloomsbury Press, 2010), 300, https://archive.org/details/familyofsecretsb0000bake_r7l6.

93Baker, Family of Secrets, 300. Joseph Trento writes that the London merchant bank subsidiary of First International moved “petrodollars and BCCI money… for a variety of intelligence operations that would span the next decade, according to the Senate BCCI investigation and the Morgenthau New York BCCI investigation.” Trento, Prelude to Terror, 139.
94Glenn R. Simpson, “Riggs Had Longstanding Link to the CIA,” Wall Street Journal, December 31, 2004, https://www.wsj.com/articles/SB110444413126413199.
95“Riggs Bank guilty of money laundering,” NBC News, January 27,2005, https://www.nbc-news.com/id/wbna6875033.
96Kirk Johnson, “Clore Takes Over at Gulf,” New York Times, June 9, 1982, https://www.nytimes.com/1982/06/09/business/clore-stock-takes-over-at-gulf.html. During the takeover, Clore retained the legal services of the New York City attorney Kenneth Bialkin. Bialkin, whose law firm Wilkie Farr & Gallagher saw charges brought against some of its members in connection to Robert Vesco’s looting of IOS, was at this time the chairman of the Anti-Defamation League of B’nai B’rith. Interestingly, Robert Allen, who was ousted from control of Gulf Resources in the Clore takeover, was a recipient of the ADL’s Torch of Liberty Award. See “Robert H. Allen: Business and Professional Background,” https://utsystem.edu/sites/default/files/offices/board-of-regents/board-meetings/agenda-book-full/msa3-1-1996.pdf.
97On John Murchison and his ties to First International and LTV, see “Briefs,” Scouting, January/February 1979, 4. On Edwin L. Cox and his ties to First International and LTV, see Harry Hurt III, “The Most Powerful Texans,” Texas Monthly, April 1976, 114.
98“Post Edges Back Into LTV’s Leadership Ranks,” Bradenton Herald, June 14, 1970.
99Robert E. Bedingfield, “Personality,” New York Times, May 24, 1970, https://www.nytimes.com/1970/05/24/archives/personality-stewart-of-ltvgroup-leadership-seen.html.
100Howard D. Putnam and Gene Busnar, The Winds of Turbulence: A CEO’s Reflections on Surviving and Thriving on the Cutting Edge of Corporate Crisis (Howard D. Putnam Enterprise, 1995), 184.
101Robert O. Anderson was at the Council on Foreign Relations from 1974 to 1980, while George H.W. Bush was there 1977-1979.
102“Governor Tours Oil Drilling Site,” Fairbanks Daily News-Miner, May 2, 1967; “Airline Puts Sleek New Charter Plane to Work,” Fairbanks Daily News-Miner, November 9, 1967.
103Baker, Family of Secrets, 320.
104Baker, Family of Secrets, 321.
105“State Secrets,” Texas Monthly, July 1984, 196.
106“All’s Well That Ends Well,” The Observer, May 23, 1993.
107Andre Adelson, “Legendary Oilman Has a New Venture,” New York Times, July 31, 1987, https://www.nytimes.com/1987/07/31/business/business-people-legendary-oilman-has-a-new-venture.html
108Trento, Prelude to Terror, 102-6.
109Trento, Prelude to Terror, 102.
110See Mohammed Heikal, Iran: The Untold Story – An Insider’s Account of America’s Iranian Adventure and Its Consequences for the Future (Pantheon Books, 1982).
111Heikal, Iran: The Untold Story, 124.
112Stephen Pizzo, Mary Fricker, and Paul Muolo, Inside Job: The Looting of America’s Savings and Loans, 1st Harper Perennial ed (New York, NY: Harper Perennial, 1991), 461.
113“Fit for a Saudi”, Philadelphia Daily News, October 12, 1977.
114“RE: Alex Gus,” FBI Airtel from Special Agent in Charge, Los Angeles, to FBI Director, February 9, 1961, NARA Record number 124-10199-10054, https://www.maryferrell.org/showDoc.html?docId=142286.
115Robert C. Ruark, “Here’s How Ray Ryan of Evansville Happened to Buy Hotel Kenya,” Evansville Press, September 26, 1959.
116Ricardo Sicre was a participant in a special OSS unit nicknamed the “Banana Boys,” which carried out activities in Spain and Morocco. See Patrick K. O’Connell, Operatives, Spies, and Saboteurs: The

Unknown Story of the Men and Women of World War II's OSS (Free Press, 2014), 27, 30, 43; Robin W. Winks, Cloak & Gown: Scholars in the Secret War, 1939-41 (Yale University Press, 1996), 177. Overseeing the OSS Secret Intelligence apparatus, which handled 'cloak and dagger' operations, in Spain was Frank Ryan. See, George C. Chalou (eds.), The Secrets War: The Office of Strategic Services in World War II (National Archives Trust Fund Board, 1992), 127.

117On the World Commerce Corporation, see Anthony Cave Brown, Wild Bill Donovan: The Last Hero (Times Books, 1982), 795-800; Major Ralph Ganis, The Skorzeny Papers: Evidence for the Plot to Kill JFK, ePub (Hot Books, 2020), 293-300; S. William Snider, A Special Relationship: Trump, Epstein, and the Secret History of the Anglo-American Establishment (Independent, 2020), 97-150; Larry Loftis, The Princess Spy: The True Story of World War II Spy Aline Griffith, Countess of the Romanones (Atria Books, 2021), 222, 266.

118Snider, A Special Relationship, 97-150.

119Brown, Wild Bill Donovan, 795-800; Ganis, The Skorzeny Papers, 293-300.

120Ronald Kessler, The Richest Man in the World: The Story of Adnan Khashoggi (Grand Central Publishing, 1986), 204.

121Kessler, Adnan Khashoggi, 203.

122Kessler, Adnan Khashoggi, 302.

123"Memorandum for the Record, Subject: Report on Plots to Assassinate Fidel Castro," CIA, April 25, 1967, NARA Record Number 104-10213-10101, https://www.archives.gov/files/research/jfk/releases/104-10213-10101.pdf.

124"World Commerce Corporation & the Safari Club," Reciprocal Contradiction, January 8, 2021, https://reciprocalcontradiction.home.blog/2021/01/08/world-commerce-corporation-the-safari-club/.

125"Edward Moss' Mafia Connections," CIA Memo, May 14, 1973, NARA Record Number 104-101119-10406, https://www.maryferrell.org/showDoc.html?docId=14916.

126"Edward Moss' Mafia Connections."

127Peter Dale Scott, "The American Deep State, Deep Events, and Off-the-Books Financing," Asia-Pacific Journal, April 6, 2014, https://apjjf.org/2014/12/10/Peter-Dale-Scott/4090/article.html

128Scott, "American Deep State."

129"Edward Moss' Mafia Connections"

130Trento, Prelude to Terrror, 169.

131David Teacher, Rogue Agents: The Cercle and 6I in the Private Cold War 1951-1991 (5th ed., 2017), 192.

132Teacher, Rogue Agents, 189, 467.

133Joseph Persico, Casey: The Lives and Secrets of William J. Casey from the OSS to the CIA (Viking, 1990), 42.

134Persico, Casey, 84-85; "Otto Doering, Former O.S.S. Leader," New York Times, July 14, 1979, https://www.nytimes.com/1979/07/14/archives/otto-doering-former-oss-leader.html.

135Persico, Casey, 61.

136Persico, Casey, 61.

137Teacher, Rogue Agents, 35-36. Teacher notes that the Institute for American Strategy had been organized by the American Security Council.

138Teacher, Rogue Agents, 546.

139Persico, Casey, 114.

140Stu Bishop, "Stans: He Fixed the Books," North American Congress on Latin America, September 25, 2007, https://nacla.org/article/stans-he-fixed-books.

141Persico, Casey, 131.

142Jim Hougan, Spooks: The Haunting of America: The Private Use of Secret Agents (New York: Morrow, 1978), 222.

143Hougan, Spooks, 169.

144R. T. Naylor, Hot Money and the Politics of Debt (Linden, 1987), 19.

145Naylor, Hot Money, 26-30.

146Alan A. Block and Constance A. Weaver,

146Alan A. Block and Constance A. Weaver, All is Clouded by Desire: Global Banking, Money Laundering, and International Organized Crime (Prager, 2004), 36.

147Block and Weaver, Clouded by Desire, 36.
148Arthur Herzog, Vesco: From Wall Street to Castro's Cuba – The Rise, Fall, and Exile of the King of White Collar Crime (Doubleday, 1987), 11-15.

149"Israeli Corporation-Rosenbaum-International Credit Bank Controversy," US State Department cable, September 30,1974, https://wikileaks.org/plusd/cables/1974TELAV05552_b.html.
150Herzog, Vesco, 30-31.
151Hougan, Spooks, 176-77.
152Robert Hutchinson, Vesco (Avon, 1976), 241.
153Dan Dorfman, "Casey Misled Investors on Agribusiness, Judge Rules," July 15, 1981, Chicago Tribune.
154Dorfman, "Casey Misled Investors"; In the Matter of Multiponics, Incorporated, Bankrupt. machinery Rental, Inc. and Carl Biehl, Appellants, v. William W. Herpel, Trustee, et al., Appellees, 622 F.2d 709 (5th Cir. 1980).
155Hutchinson, Vesco, 235.
156Gary Miller and Andrew Whitford, Above Politics: Bureaucratic Discretion and Credible Commitment, 165; Alan A. Block and Patricia Klausner, "Masters of Paradise Island: Organized Crime, Neo-Colonialism, and the Bahamas," Dialectical Anthropology 12, no. 1 (1987): 85–102, https://doi.org/10.1007/BF00734790.
157Gary Webb, Dark Alliance: The CIA, the Contras, and the Cocaine Explosion (Seven Stories Press, 2014), 303-5.
158"Allegations of Connections Between Cia and the Contras in Cocaine Trafficking to the United States, Volume II: The Contra Story," Central Intelligence Agency Inspector General, Report of Investigation, October 8, 1998, https://irp.fas.org/cia/product/cocaine2/contents.html.
159Peter Dale Scott and Jonathan Marshall, Cocaine Politics: Drugs, Armies, and the CIA in Central America (University of California Press, 1998), 95.
160"Drug Trafficker Links Fugitive to Laundering," Baltimore Sun, November 26, 1991, https://www.baltimoresun.com/news/bs-xpm-1991-11-27-1991331037-story.html.
161Godfrey Sperling Jr, "'Billygate' Stands in Way of Comeback for President," Christian Science Monitor, July 28, 1980, https://www.csmonitor.com/1980/0728/072837.html.
162Inquiry into the Matter of Billy Carter and Libya: Report Together with Additional Views, US Senate, Ninety-Fifth Congress, Second Session, October 2, 1980, 1-2, https://www.intelligence.senate.gov/sites/default/files/961015.pdf.
163Inquiry into the Matter of Billy Carter and Libya, 2.
164Inquiry into the Matter of Billy Carter and Libya, 7.
165Inquiry into the Matter of Billy Carter and Libya, 11.
166Inquiry into the Matter of Billy Carter and Libya, 11, note 35.
167Trento, Prelude to Terror, 160.
168Trento, Prelude to Terror, 161.
169Robert Sherrill, Gothic Politics in the Deep South: Stars of the New Confederacy (New York: Grossman, 1968), 146.
170Gerard Colby, Du Pont Dynasty: Behind the Nylon Curtain, ePub (Open Road Media, 2014), 782.
171Hearing Before the Committee on Banking and Currency, House of Representatives, Eighty-Eighth Congress, June 11, 1964, 188, https://www.google.com/books/edition/Hearings_Reports_and_Prints_of_the_Senat/9Tc4AAAAIAAJ.
172Hearing Before the Committee on Banking and Currency, 188.
173Elizabeth Hedderigg, "Nix Hints Charter Plays Major Role in Bankshares", Tampa Bay Times, February 18, 1970.
174Colby, DuPont Dynasty, 796.
175Herzog, Vesco, 143.
176Edward Jay Epstein, Dossier: The Secret History of Armand Hammer (Random House, 1996), 23.
177Alan A. Block and Constance Weaver, All is Clouded by Desire: Global Banking, Money Laundering, and International Organized Crime (Praeger, 2004), 20.
178Black and Weaver, All is Clouded by Desire, 20.

179Investigation of Robert L. Vesco Hearings Before the Subcommittee on Improvements in Judicial Machinery of the Committee on the Judiciary, United States Senate, Ninety-sixth Congress, Second Session, October 2, 3, 23, 24, December 2, and 3, 1980, 237, https://books.google.com/books/about/Investigation_of_Robert_L_Vesco.html?id=wHFAmuZlAqcC.

180Investigation of Robert L. Vesco, 237.

181Investigation of Robert L. Vesco, 238.

182Inquiry into the Matter of Billy Carter and Libya, 13.

183Inquiry into the Matter of Billy Carter and Libya, 11, note 37.

184"Inquiry is Reported on Libya Plane Sale," New York Times, September 30, 1979, https://www.nytimes.com/1979/09/30/archives/inquiry-is-reported-on-libya-plane-sale-vesco-and-democratic.html; Yousseff M. Ibrahin, "U.S. Delays Sales Made to Libyans," New York Times, June 24, 1978, https://www.nytimes.com/1978/06/24/archives/us-delays-sales-made-to-libyans-curbs-on-others-studied-in-drive-on.html

185The Undercover Investigation of Robert L. Vesco's Alleged Attempts to Reverse a State Department Ban Preventing the Export of Planes to Libya, Staff Report of the Committee on the Judiciary, United States Senate, September 1982, 6, https://www.google.com/books/edition/The_Undercover_Investigation_of_Robert_L/42esIxxc8RcC.

186The Undercover Investigation, 4.

187Brewton, The Mafia, CIA and George Bush, 50-53, 75.

188The Undercover Investigation, 4.

189The Undercover Investigation, 11.

190The Undercover Investigation, 8-9.

191The Undercover Investigation, 35.

192The Undercover Investigation, 35.

193The Undercover Investigation, 60.

194Morton Minz, "Truth is Elusive in 'Plot' to Gain Release of C130s," Washington Post, August 18, 1980, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1980/08/18/truth-is-elusive-in-plot-to-gain-release-of-c130s/698dfd4a-00e8-4f91-926d-489dc9fc72e1/.

195David Brewerton, "Jack Dellal Obituary," The Guardian, November 8, 2012, https://amp.theguardian.com/business/2012/nov/08/jack-dellal.

196Nicholas Faith, "Obituary: Sir Edward du Cann, ex-politician and financier who helped elect Margaret Thatcher," Independent, September 8, 2017, https://www.independent.co.uk/news/obituaries/sir-edward-du-cann-tory-conservative-politician-financier-oily-margaret-thatcher-1922-committee-city-life-insurance-a7933726.html.

197"Letter from Mr Mohamed Al-Fayed to The Rt Hon Paul Channon, MP Secretary of State for Trade and Industry," Select Committee on Standards and Privileges First Report, UK Parliament, February 1987, https://publications.parliament.uk/pa/cm199798/cmselect/cmstnprv/030ii/sp01100.htm.

198"Letter from Mr Mohamed Al-Fayed."

199"AFC on Charter Co.'s list of creditors," Cincinnati Post, April 23, 1984.

200"Max M. Fisher: In Ronald Reagan's White House," https://maxmfisher.org/resource-center/photo/ronald-reagans-white-house.

201Ronald Brownstein and Nina Easton, Reagan's Ruling Class: Portraits of the Top One Hundred Officials (Presidential Accountability Group, January 1982), 630-32.

202Persico, Casey, 166.

203Tad Szulc, "Deak & Co. Cited," New Republic, April 2, 1976, https://archive.org/details/nsia-DeakNicholas/nsia-DeakNicholas/Deak%20Nicholas%2005/. Nicholas Deak died under strange circumstances on November 19, 1985. He was shot to death at the Deak corporate offices in lower Manhattan. The gunman was a homeless woman named Lois Lang, who had arrived at the building earlier that day "asserting that she was part owner of the company and that 'an injustice had been done to her.'" Also killed by Lang was receptionist Frances Lauder (Margot Hornblower, "Deak-Perera Chairman Fatally Shot in Office," New York Times, November 19, 1985, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1985/11/19/deak-perera-chairman-fatally-shot-in-office/c9133e93-e2e1-446d-8989-41ca8d7beed1/). It was subsequently reported that Lang was suffering from paranoid schizophrenia and had "believed the government had given her Deak-Perera

in the 1940s…. When Deak & Co. filed for protection under federal bankruptcy laws last year, Lang became convinced that [Nicholas Deak] had mismanaged the firm, and decided to kill him." (Rick Hampson, "Woman Diagnosed as Paranoid and Schizophrenic, Psychiatric Report Says," AP News, November 21, 1985, https://apnews.com/article/911643acc47ca5b4ce77f8ac9a11c451).Hank Albarelli notes: "Deak's killer, Lois Lang, as early as 1975, was confined to the Santa Clara Valley Medical Center under the care of the late Dr. Frederick Melges, a psychiatrist associated with the Stanford Research Institute, a longtime facility used by the CIA and US Army for behavior modification experiments.… According to numerous medical journal articles written by Dr. Megles, his specialty was narco-hypnosis and the use of hypnosis to create dissociative states. Dr. Melges worked closely at Stanford with Dr. Leo Hollister, also deceased, who had been a CIA MK/ULTRA sub-contractor working with LSD and other drugs" [H. P. Albarelli, A Secret Order: Investigating the High Strangeness and Synchronicity in the JFK Assassination (Trine Day, 2013)].
204Scott and Marshall, Cocaine Politics, 82.
205"The Cash Connection: Organized Crime, Financial Institutions, and Money Laundering," President's Commission on Organized Crime, US Department of Justice, Office of Justice Programs, 1984, 42.
206"Victor Posner obituary," Economist, March 7, 2002, https://www.economist.com/obituary/2002/03/07/victor-posner.
207"Letter from Max Fisher to Judge Morris Lasky on Behalf of Ivan Boesky," Securities and Exchange Commission Historical Society, September 28, 1987, http://www.sechistorical.org.
208Richard Eden, "Countess of Iveagh, 46, Splits from £900m Guinness Heir," Mail Online, February 27, 2021, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-9306473/Countess-Iveagh-splits-Guinness-heir-one-Britains-biggest-divorces.html.
209"Interview with Stanley Sporkin," Securities and Exchange Commission Historical Society, September 2003, http://3197d6d14b5f19f2f440-5e13d29c4c016cf96cbbfd197c579b45.r81.cf1.rackcdn.com/collection/oral-histories/sporkin092303Transcript.pdf.
210Connie Bruck, The Predators' Ball: The Inside Story of Drexel Burnham and the Rise of the Junk Bond Raiders (New York, N.Y., U.S.A: Penguin Books, 1989), 58. Incredibly, Riklis had his own encounters with Robert Vesco and IOS. In 1971 it was reported that he offered $10 million to a "dissident" group of IOS shareholders loyal to Cornfeld. There might be a simple explanation for this apparent factional disput. Cornfeld had pressured Riklis to purchase, through Rapid American, "450,000 shares [of IOS] at $4 a piece"; it was suggested by those close to the fight that he wanted, with the $10 million commitment, "to be taken out of his stock position at cost, at which point he would drop the dissidents and step aside." See "I.O.S. Managers Score Riklis on Rebel Move," New York Times, August 19, 1971; and Hutchison, Vesco, 174.
211Rebecca Thom, "2 Elected in Palm Beach; 2 in Run-off," Sun-Sentinel, February 3, 1988.
212Brewton, The Mafia, 321.
213According to Walter Beinecke Jr., White had been "manager or junior partner for [the] Mackle brothers." See "Interview with Walter Breinecke Jr., Samuel Proctor Oral History Project," University of Florida, July 9, 1990, 129, https://ufdc.ufl.edu/UF00006970/00001/. The Mackle brothers were behind the General Development Corporation, the major land development corporation that helped develop Florida hotspots such as Key Biscayne, Deltona, and Port St. John. Another figure in the General Development Corporation was Lou Chesler, the Canadian-born mobster who acted as a front man for Meyer Lansky.
214Susan Sachs, "Pelullo, Sunshine State Bank had most dealings," Miami Herald, October 9, 1986; On the Mackle Brothers, General Development Corporation, and Lou Chesler, see "General Development Corp," Mackle Brothers website, https://www.themacklecompany.com/general-development. On Lou Chesler and Meyer Lansky, see Jim Hougan, Spooks, 230-231.
215Rick Green, "State Reinstated Boxing Promoter," Hartford Courant, October 28, 2004, https://www.courant.com/news/connecticut/hc-xpm-2004-10-28-0410280032-story.html.
216Chris Frates, "Donald Trump and the Mob," CNN, July 31, 2015, https://edition.cnn.com/2015/07/31/politics/trump-mob-mafia/.
217"Context in Accord for Casino Project," New York Times, June 8, 1979, https://www.nytimes.com/1979/06/08/archives/context-in-accord-for-casino-project.html. The project was eventually abandoned.

218Susan Sans, “Pelullo, Sunshine State Bank Had Most Dealings,” Miami Herald, Oct. 4, 1986.

219Pelullo’s stake in Sunshine was organized through King Crown, a company that he had cofounded with the thrift’s primary owner, Ray Corona. Corona’s background may be relevant here: he had cut his teeth in the world of shadowy finance at Miami National Bank. This bank, in the late 1950s, had been bought by Louis Poller, a close associate of Sam Cohen, a veteran of the Detroit Pur- ple Gang and ally of Meyer Lansky. Poller’s purchase of Miami National was carried out with the aid of a loan from the Teamsters Pension Fund: “Shortly thereafter, a coterie of Hoffa-Teamsters associates became directors of the bank, and loans became available for numerous mob-connected ventures” See: “Subject: Joseph Shimon,” FBI, November 3, 1962, 34, https://www.maryferrell.org/showDoc.html?docId=116372; “Organized Crime: Stolen Securities,” Senate Subcommittee on Government Operations, 1971, 708; Jeff Gerth, “Richard M. Nixon and Organized Crime,” Penthouse, July 1974). Miami National also boasted a curious choice for legal counsel: the law firm of Helliwell, Melrose and DeWolf. This was the firm of OSS veteran and CIA banker Paul Helliwell, but work for the bank fell to Helliwell’s associate Truman Skinner. Peter Brewton notes that Skinner frequently worked with Donald Berg – a business associate of Richard Nixon’s good friend Bebe Rebozo – and Harold White in a series of Florida real estate ventures. Harold White, to bring this full circle, was the son of Pelullo’s good friend Armer White. (Brewton p. 322-23)..

220Alan A. Block and Frank R. Scarpitti, Poisoning for Profit: The Mafia and Toxic Waste in America (William Morrow & Co., 1985), 172.

221“Provenzano and 2 Other Temaster Aides Indicted for Kickback Deal,” New York Times, December 11, 1975, https://www.nytimes.com/1975/12/11/archives/provenzano-and-2-other-teamster-aides-indicted-for-kickback-deal.html.

222William M. Adler, Mollie’s Job: A Story of Life and Work on the Global Assembly Line (Scribner, 2000), 226; Organized Crime Links to the Waste Disposal Industry: Hearings Before the House Subcommittee on Oversight and Investigations, Department of Justice, Office of Justice Programs, May 28, 1981, 17-24, https://play.google.com/store/books/details?id=2TYhAAAAMAAJ.

223Ralph Blumenthal, “Illegal Dumping of Toxins Laid to Organized Crime,” New York Times, June 5, 1983, https://www.nytimes.com/1983/06/05/nyregion/illegal-dumping-of-toxins-laid-to-organized-crime.html.

224Block and Scarpitti, Poisoning for Profit, 176.

225Hazardous Waste Enforcement: Report of the Subcommittee on Oversight and Investigations of the Committee on Energy and Commerce, US House of Representatives, December 1982, 22.

226Hazardous Waste Enforcement, 24.

227Joseph A. Califano Jr., Inside: A Public and Private Life (Public Affairs, 2004), 391.

228Nominations to the US Advisory Commission on Information: Hearings, Ninety-Second Congress, First Session, April 29 and June 8, 1971, 33, https://books.google.com/books/about/Nominations_to_the_U_S_Advisory_Commissi.html?id=t9cRAAAAIAAJ

229Richard Harris Smith, OSS: The Secret History of America’s First Central Intelligence Agency (Lyons Press, 2019), xiv.

230See Walter Stewart, “John Doyle’s Gamble with Millions: Heads He Wings, Tails You Lose,” Macleans, February 1, 1969.

231Mark Millard was director of Carl M. Loeb, Rhoades & Co. when it held over 28,000 shares in Canadian Javelin, while Millard himself held 1,000 shares in Doyle’s company. See “Company officials report stock changes,” National Post (Toronto), October 27, 1962. Edgar Bronfman, in his book Good Spirits, refers to Mark Millard as “my friend” and as “a senior executive at Carl M. Loeb, Rhoades & Company and my father-in-law John L. Loeb’s partner”. He goes on to say of Millar “I had enjoyed many successful business dealings with Mark over the years, and I trusted him deeply.” See Edgar Bronfman, “Good Spirits: The Making of a Businessman,” New York Times, 1998, https://archive.nytimes.com/www.nytimes.com/books/first/b/bronfman-spirits.html.

232Joint Report of the Task Force to Investigate Certain Allegations concerning the Holding of American Hostages by Iran in 1980, US Congress, House Committee on Foreign Affairs, One Hundred Second Congress, Second Session, January 3, 1993, 120, https://books.google.com/books?id=x-pl1AAAAMAAJ.

233Task Force to Investigate Certain Allegations, 120-21.

234Deposition of Roy Furmark," Report of the Congressional Committees Investigating the Iran-Contra Affair, Appendix B, Vol. 11: Depositions, 100 Congress, First Session, 1988, 19 https://www.maryferrell.org/showDoc.html?docId=146481#relPageId=43

235"Deposition of Roy Furmark," 19
236Task Force to Investigate Certain Allegations, 121.
237Task Force to Investigate Certain Allegations, 122.
238Robert Perry, "Debunking the Debunkers of October Surprise" (Excerpt from America's Stolen Narrative), FAIR, March 2013, https://fair.org/extra/debunking-the-debunkers-of-october-surprise/.
239Task Force to Investigate Certain Allegations, 74.
240Task Force to Investigate Certain Allegations, 130.
241Susan Trento, The Power House: Robert Keith Gray and the Selling of Influence and Access in Washington (St. Martins, 1992), 129. https://archive.org/details/powerhouserobert00tren
242Persico, Casey, 233.
243Trento, Prelude to Terror, 216.
244Persico, Casey, 232.
245Brewton, The Mafia, 7. To make things more complicated, Tracor was in 1985 involved in a joint venture to produce and install hush kits for Boeing 707s. Customers of these particular hush kits included Buffalo Airways, one of the successors to Global International Airways formed by Farhad Azima. See Brewton, The Mafia, 318.
246Seymour M. Hersh, "The Vice President's Men," London Review of Books, Vol. 41, no. 2, January 24, 2019, https://www.lrb.co.uk/the-paper/v41/n02/seymour-m.-hersh/the-vice-president-s-men.
247Trento, Prelude to Terror, 214.
248"Shackley deposition," 144.
249Report of the Congressional Committees Investigating the Iran-Contra Affair, Vol. 1, 164, https://www.maryferrell.org/showDoc.html?docId=146504.
250Joint Hearings Before the House Select Committee to Investigate Covert Arms Transactions with Iran and Senate Select Committee on Secret Military Assistance to Iran and the Nicaraguan Opposition: Testimony of Robert C. McFarlane, Gaston J. Sigur, Jr., and Robert W. Owen, One Hundredth Congress, First Session, May 11, 12, 13, 14, and 19, 1987, p. 244, https://archive.org/details/Iran-Contra-HearingsTestimonyTranscripts/1987-irn-0003-McFarlane-Sigur-Owen/.
251Thomas and Dillon, Israel's Superspy, 145.
252Trento, Prelude to Terror, 284.

CHAPTER 7

A KILLER ENTERPRISE

OUTLAW BANKS

"We must learn to 'feel' that BCCI is this Power," read a bizarre memo once circulated by the Bank of Commerce and Credit International, better known as BCCI. That "power" was a reference to the image printed in light tones behind the text – a print of Michelangelo's famous Creation of Adam, the fresco painting that adorns the ceiling of the Sistine Chapel. It shows God, surrounded by angels and with his finger outstretched, reaching toward the first man, Adam, imbuing him with the gift of life. In continuing the reference to Michelangelo's depiction of the divine spark, the memo stated that BCCI is "not merely a group of branches, a set of facts and figures. Since, BCCI is a power, a spirit, a Desire – it is all encompassing and enfolding – it relates itself to cosmic power and wisdom, which is the will of God."[1]

Founded in 1972, BCCI certainly wielded considerable power in its day, though its power was hardly of a spiritual or benevolent variety. When it finally collapsed after a nearly two-decades run, thanks to forced closures brought about by regulators and law enforcement, so too did the "planetary Ponzi scheme" it had been running.[2] At the time of its collapse in 1991, TIME ran a lengthy story describing the bank as the "dirtiest bank of them all."[3] The authors of that article, Jonathan Beaty and S. C. Gwynne, also wrote that Robert Morgenthau, Manhattan's district attorney, had stated that he received no help from the Justice Department when he launched his own investigation into the bank.

Obfuscation and protection from the highest levels of power were defining characteristics of BCCI. The bank's founder, Agha Hasan Abedi, who had a penchant for occult ramblings and mind games, surrounded himself with a bevy of politicians, community leaders, business giants, powerful criminals, and spooks.[4] Prior to the formation of BCCI, Abedi, a Pakistani banker, had been an economic advisor to Sheikh Zayed bin Sultan Al Nahyan. Sheikh Zayed had been the driving force behind the formation of the United Arab Emirates and was the union's first leader. According to one person close to Abedi, he had been the one who had first planted the idea of what would become the UAE in Sheikh Zayed's mind.[5]

Abedi was something of a cosmopolitan, an internationalist, and an opponent of classical colonialism in the developing world. At the same time, he opposed socialist currents sweeping across the Middle East and elsewhere. A self-described liberal, he first conceived of BCCI as a "world bank, a global bank for the third world."[6] With backing from Sheikh Zayed, the Saudi royal family, and probably the Saudi intelligence service, what developed was something else entirely. BCCI's expertise was in money laundering, capital flight, fraud, and much, much worse.

While the conventional narrative presents BCCI as an enterprise whose origins lay in Pakistani-Saudi networks of power, influence, and finance, there have also been allegations that the bank's origins also involved the CIA. A 1992 report published in Newsweek cites an anonymous former officer of BCCI and its predecessor, United Bank, as well as a close associate of Abedi's, who asserted that Abedi "had worked with the CIA during his United Bank days and that the CIA had encouraged him in his project to launch BCCI, since the agency realized that an international bank could provide valuable cover for intelligence operations."[7] This same source specifically mentioned Richard Helms, CIA director from 1966 until 1973, as having been involved in the bank's creation. He told Newsweek, "What I have been told is that it wasn't a Pakistani bank at all. The guys behind the bank weren't Pakistani at all. The whole thing was a front."[8]

According to Beaty and Gwynne, the bank's organizational structure was divided between two very different worlds. On the front-facing side, "more conventional departments of [BCCI] handled such services as laundering money for the drug trade and helping dictators loot their national treasuries." On the back end, meanwhile, was something that was called the "black network," which reportedly continued after the demise of the bank. This black network "operates a lucrative arms-trade business and transports drugs and gold," engages in sex trafficking and maybe even murder-for-hire. In some cases, it even helps shape the military capacities of entire nations.[9]

Thus, BCCI supported the work of A.Q. Khan, a Pakistani nuclear physicist and engineer known as the father of Pakistan's nuclear weapons program. This work had begun after India tested the "Smiling

Buddha," their own nuclear weapon, in 1974 and it was carried out under the auspices of Khan Research Laboratories. The clandestine laboratory operated several front groups, one of which was the Ghulam Ishaq Khan Institute of Engineering Sciences and Technology. A "philanthropic" arm of BCCI, the BCCI Foundation, provided funding for this institute.[10]

According to Beaty and Gwynne, BCCI obtained, on behalf of Pakistan and Iraq, an experimental weapon called a "Columbine head."[11] Columbine heads were allegedly a type of thermobaric bomb, better known as a "fuel air explosive," as they suck in the surrounding air to create a powerful explosion.

It was not all bombs, however, when it came to BCCI's activities in Abedi's home country. The bank also played an important role in tightening relations between Pakistan and states in the Persian Gulf. The economic development of Saudi Arabia and Abu Dhabi had been built on the massive flow of cheap labor from Pakistan. There was a reciprocal flow of money from those states back to Pakistan through migrant remittances, that is, money sent by laborers to their families at home.

In the developing world, remittances are often a complicated issue, with the lack of strong banking sectors and financial regulations resulting in everything from overcharging for financial transactions to outright theft. BCCI stepped into this world and soon made itself the primary conduit for the flow of such money. It was a win-win for all parties: the functioning of this system solidified the use of Pakistani labor by states in the Persian Gulf, while Pakistan received in-flows of foreign currencies. It was good for BCCI, too: the remittance float was registered on BCCI's balance sheets, allowing the bank to appear far more cash-rich than it really was.[12]

Other services that BCCI provided for the Arab ruling families included the procurement of "Pakistani prostitutes … typically teenage girls, known as 'singing and dancing girls.'"[13] When discussing these types of activities, the Congressional report on BCCI came close to revealing the bank/black network dichotomy discussed by Beaty and Gwynne in TIME. The head of BCCI's Pakistan operations was a close friend of Abedi named Sani Ahmad. Nazir Chinoy, BCCI's general manager for France and Africa, told investigators that "Sani was the trusted man for things no one else was supposed to know. We were the technocrats. Sani Ahmed would handle the things we wouldn't, like get girls. If anyone paid anyone any money [as a bribe], Sani would have been the one to do it."[14] BCCI's role in sex trafficking, including of minors, is discussed in chapter 11.

Early on, BCCI saw a pipeline into the US financial system as being necessary to its success. The earliest attempts to cement this connection saw Abedi court American Express. This plan was abandoned when American Express demanded significant influence over BCCI's internal activities. Abedi then pivoted toward Bank of America, one of the largest American banks that, since the 1960s, had been active in the Eurodollar trade. Bank of America became a large stakeholder in BCCI, holding some 30 percent of the stock, and a number of the bank's officials joined the BCCI board.

Bank of America later sold that 30 percent, expressing concern over BCCI's activities. It looked like Bank of America was engaging in due diligence, but appearances were deceiving. As the Congressional BCCI report pointed out, Bank of America "would in fact retain correspondent banking relations with BCCI, continually seek additional business from BCCI, collude in least one of BCCI's purchase of foreign banks through nominees in South America, and earn a great deal of money from the relationship until BCCI's closure."[15]

Ultimately, Bank of America's sale of the shares simply allowed BCCI to further develop its complicated web of front companies, proxies, and offshore entities that it used to mask its activities. The bank turned to ICIC (Overseas) Limited, set up in the Caymans by BCCI, to act as a clearinghouse to sell shares of BCCI subsidiaries.[16]

Beyond their relationship with Bank of America, BCCI's major penetration of the US financial system came through the bank's involvement with Bert Lance, a prominent banker from Atlanta and a close friend of Jimmy Carter. He served as an advisor to Carter's 1976 presidential campaign and was subsequently named director of the Office of Management and Budget (OMB). However, Lance was soon forced from his post under the cloud of scandal. In the words of the Congressional BCCI report, "By

September 21, 1977, when Bert Lance tendered his resignation from the position of director of the [OMB] to President Jimmy Carter, Lance had become the most notorious banker in the United States."[17]

Lance's notoriety was directly related to the National Bank of Georgia, of which Lance had become president in 1975. His time there was marred by controversy. For instance, he had particularly tense relations with the bank's parent company, Financial General Bankshares (FGB), "for making loans which both exceeded his lending limit and were not secured by collateral."[18] These activities, as well as similar ones that Lance had carried out at other banks, haunted him during his time at the OMB, particularly when Carter asked Congress "to suspend ethics rules that would have forced Lance to sell 190,000 shares of stock he owned in National Bank of Georgia. He based his request on the ground that Lance would lose $1.6 million if he was forced to sell, because the bank's stock was depressed."[19] His request instead resulted in a sweeping investigation into Lance's banking practices.

Lance was also violating regulations by engaging in other financial activities while serving in public office. FGB's major stockholder and controller, Gen. George Olmsted, was under orders from the Federal Reserve to unload his stock due to laws governing holding companies. He approached Lance for help, and Lance began the hunt for buyers for their holdings in FGB and National Bank of Georgia.

Olmsted is an intriguing figure, and his history in banking might shed some light on why FGB was such a hot commodity in the 1970s. During World War II, Olmsted wore many hats, with involvement in everything from managing lend-lease arrangements to working in intelligence in the China-Burma-India theater. After the war, he took control of International Bank in Washington, DC, and built a business empire with extensive holdings in other banks, real estate, and insurance companies. It was through International Bank that he bought his controlling stake in FGB. Another major International Bank holding was the Cayman Islands-based Mercantile Bank & Trust. Mercantile was one of the many banks that composed Paul Helliwell's dark money network, and it owned a stake in his Castle Bank & Trust.[20]

During his last days as director of OMB, Lance put Olmsted in touch with J. Middendorf, who had served as Secretary of the Navy and as ambassador to the Netherlands under President Nixon. Middendorf was also close to Carter, who had offered to retain him as Navy Secretary. Middendorf opted instead for a career in the private sector. He was immediately intrigued by Lance's plan, and the "Middendorf Group" was put together to take over FGB.

The Middendorf Group consisted of prominent business figures like Jackson Stephens, the Arkansas kingmaker behind Stephens, Inc.; the banker Jorge Pereira; and Armand Hammer of Occidental Petroleum. Stephens, discussed in greater detail in the next chapter, was particularly important to the whole chain of events involving FGB and its takeover by BCCI. He had known Lance since at least 1975, likely through their mutual support for Jimmy Carter, whom Stephens had allegedly known since their days at the Naval Academy. Stephens and Lance continued to work together on selling-off FGB even after the Middendorf Group fell apart. Reportedly, Stephens was involved in the bank's convoluted affairs because he "wanted FGB to use a company he controlled, Systematics Inc., for its data processing business."[21]

Other prospective buyers had different motives. Armand Hammer, for example, saw a gold mine of valuable information that could be leveraged for political and economic gain. FGB "had outstanding loans to more than one hundred US senators and congressmen.… Hammer explained that all these congressional borrowers had submitted statements to the bank that revealed their precise financial status, including their debts, earnings, real estate holdings, other assets.… Hammer had blackmail in mind."[22] As will be mentioned in Chapter 9, Hammer's father had been a spy for Soviet intelligence, and suspicions that he too had a relationship with the security-intelligence apparatus of the USSR dogged Armand Hammer for years. This makes his interest in using FGB for the "financial blackmail" of American senators and congressmen particularly significant.

However, Hammer eventually abandoned his takeover scheme and sold off his shares to BCCI frontmen. It is possible that his encounter with the bank was not a one-off event, however, as throughout the 1970s, roughly one million shares in Hammer's Occidental Petroleum were held by one of BCCI's agents, Ghaith Pharaon. In a New York Times blurb on the arrangement, Pharaon was described as Occidental's representative in Saudi Arabia.[23] Later, Occidental partnered with the London-based Attock Oil Co. Ltd., which was led by a handful of BCCI players. These included Pharaon and Kamal Adham, the former Saudi intelligence chief and co-founder of the Safari Club.[24]

BCCI came to be involved with FGB only after the Middendorf Group had begun to split apart. The primary agents in the BCCI takeover of FGB were Lance, Stephens, and Eugene Metzger, a Washington attorney who had formerly served in the Justice Department and the Office of the Comptroller of the Currency. It appears that BCCI was first interested in the FGB subsidiary, National Bank of Georgia. During a meeting with a BCCI representative in Little Rock, Arkansas, Stephens and Lance suggested that they purchase FGB. Shortly thereafter, the pair, joined by Metzger, began to accumulate large holdings of FGB stock, purchased on both the open market and from individual shareholders. These shares were then sold to investors operating on behalf of BCCI, including Kamal Adham.

By January 1978, BCCI had secretly gained control of 20 percent of FGB. Facing a hostile takeover, the bank's leadership hit back with a lawsuit aimed at Abedi, Lance, Metzger, Stephens, and Stephens' companies Stephens Inc. and Systematics.[25] The US Securities and Exchange Commission launched its own suit, charging securities fraud. To defend itself against this legal onslaught, the "Lance group" retained the services of Clark Clifford and Robert Altman. According to Clifford and Altman, this was their first interaction with BCCI. Their timeline may not have been entirely truthful, however, considering the contents of a Washington Post article from December 1977. In the article, Altman is quoted as saying that Lance was involved with "Middle Eastern financial interests" and had set up for them "a holding company to direct their capital into banks and other U.S. investments."[26]

The SEC suit was settled quickly, but the challenge posed by FGB tossed roadblock after roadblock in BCCI's path. The battle dragged on for a year before a Maryland judge ruled in favor of FGB, stating that the bank could not be acquired via hostile takeover. BCCI was blocked but not defeated. Clifford selected three of his close associates to act as hidden proxies for BCCI's interests and managed to get them onto the board of FGB. One of these individuals, former Senator Stuart Symington, was also made the chairman of a company, registered in the Netherland Antilles, called Credit and Commerce American Holdings N.V. Credit and Commerce American Holdings' stock was owned by various BCCI principals, and it acted as the holding company for Credit and Commerce American Investments B.V..

Another man involved in Credit and Commerce American Holdings was Mohammed Rahim Motaghi Irvani, an Iranian billionaire and a business partner of former CIA director Richard Helms.[27] Irvani, referred to in the BCCI Affair as "BCCI's lead front-man in the original takeover" of FGB, was directly assisted by Helms in these efforts. As a result, media reports later noted that "U.S. Senate investigators are examining dealings between Helms and Irvani that it said raise questions about the CIA's knowledge of BCCI's evolution into a criminal organization."[28]

Helms and Irvani also had interlocking business interests with Roy Carlson, the Bank of America executive who had overseen the bank's 1972 purchase of 30 percent of BCCI's shares. In 1975, Carlson left Bank of America to oversee the business interests of Irvani.[29] Years later, Carlson became vice president at Helm's consulting firm.[30] Both Carlson and Abedi also had documented ties to BCCI. Carlson had accompanied Abedi on business trips, while Irvani had been recruited into BCCI's affairs directly by Abedi himself.[31]

This maze-like structure of offshore companies hid the ultimate controlling body, which of course was BCCI. By forming yet another layer, a dummy company set up beneath Credit and Commerce American Holdings, BCCI was able to evade the prohibition of regulators and finally take control of FGB. Clifford and Altman relayed to regulators that these new purchasers were in no way connected to BCCI, and despite the overwhelming abundance of evidence that they were BCCI proxies, the Federal Reserve and other regulators began the approval process. In this sudden about-face, the US government appeared to be simply ignoring the obvious.

Catherine Austin Fitts, former assistant secretary for housing–federal housing commissioner at the US Department of Housing and Urban Development during the George H.W.Bush administration and an investment banker with the Hamilton Securities Group and Dillon, Read & Co., was placed on the board of First American Bankshares (the name of FGB following its takeover by BCCI) following the collapse of BCCI in 1991. She later stated that, after reading through troves of documents regarding the bank's activities prior to its implosion, it was clear that there was "no way" its clandestine activities were carried on without the full knowledge of the Federal Reserve, specifically the Federal Reserve Bank of New York, and the White House.[32] Did such knowledge extend back to the when BCCI finally gained control of FGB?

After the takeover, FGB was rechristened First American Bankshares, and an impressive plan for growth was launched. Clifford stated that he wanted First American "to be one of the twenty biggest banks in the country," and, by 1989, it held over $11.5 billion in assets.[33] It also embarked on a close working relationship with its hidden parent company. Dozens of BCCI subsidiaries held accounts at First American branches, and Abedi arranged for BCCI managers to take top positions at the bank.

Meanwhile, Abedi courted US politicians and developed a particularly close bond with Jimmy Carter.

As BCCI burrowed deeper into the US financial system, Abedi and his close cohorts became involved with the Carter Presidential Center. Abedi, Adnan Khashoggi, and Clifford were all large donors to the center, and BCCI became a mega-donor to a third world development project set up by Carter called Global 2000. Abedi was selected to serve as co-chairman of Global 2000, while Carter himself was the acting chairman.[34]

Another politically connected philanthropic outfit that BCCI became connected to was called the Chiefs of Police National Drug Task Force (COP), which received money from First American.[35] The head of COP was the Utah senator Orrin Hatch, who became a defender of BCCI during its collapse and who had ties to a number of its principals. Another figure involved in COP was Randy Anderson, the son of DC journalist Jack Anderson whose roles in Watergate and the Profumo Affair were discussed in previous chapters.

First American's board included Robert Keith Gray, who joined shortly after the bank was renamed.[36] Seven years later, in 1988 – after Gray had rejoined Hill & Knowlton, with his Gray and Company becoming a subsidiary of the firm – H & K was retained by BCCI after the bank was indicted in Tampa for drug-money laundering. As part of its campaign to distance BCCI's image from illicit activity, H & K "disseminated materials discrediting persons and publications whose statements were later proved accurate about BCCI's criminality."[37]

As for FGB's/First American's subsidiary, National Bank of Georgia – it was purchased by BCCI front man and business partner of Armand Hammer, Ghaith Pharaon. While the Office of the Comptroller of the Currency expressed concern over the purchase, the regulators ultimately allowed these transactions to go through. Roy Carlson, the former Bank of America executive who first forged ties between that bank and BCCI, was "recruited by Abedi to run the National Bank of Georgia" after it was purchased by Pharaon.[38] Several years later, Pharaon resold the bank to none other than First American.

Pharaon, it should be mentioned, maintained significant political connections of his own. Just prior to his first encounter with Bert Lance, he had bought a large block of stock in the Main Bank of Houston, Texas. Another Arab investor was the Saudi billionaire Khalid bin Mahfouz, the power behind the prominent National Commercial Bank. Like Pharaon, bin Mahfouz was extremely close to BCCI and even owned shares in the bank. Later, in 1986, plans were underway for bin Mahfouz to take over both BCCI, and Credit and Commerce American Holdings, but internal auditors for National Commercial raised too many questions about the arrangement.[39]

Other investors in Main Bank alongside Pharaon and bin Mahfouz included John Connally, the former governor in Texas who was soon to become a major player in the world of defrauding savings and loans. There was also James R. Bath, a close friend of George W. Bush and, according to his former partner, Bill White, a CIA asset who had been personally recruited by George H.W.Bush in 1976, when Bush was director of the Agency.[40]

Bath had a long career in aviation, real estate, and finance. Early on, he became a vice president at the Texas division of Atlantic Aviation, which was controlled by the powerful DuPont family. This was followed by Bath/Bentsen Interests, a real estate development company that he co-founded with Lan Bentsen, the son of future Clinton treasury secretary, Lloyd Bentsen Jr. In 1976, the year he was reportedly recruited by G. H.W. Bush and the CIA, he created Jim Bath and Associates. Almost immediately thereafter, Bath's career took a rapid, upward ascent: "He was named as trustee for Sheikh Salem bin Laden of Saudi Arabia.… Bath's job was to handle all of bin Laden's North American investments and operations."[41] He also was made the trustee for bin Mahfouz's US investments.

Russ Baker, in Family of Secrets, recounts how Bill White told him that Bath's recruitment by G. H.W.Bush was intimately connected to the growing relationship between Saudi Arabia and Texas oil.[42] Bath, it seems, was something of a middle man for these two parties – and his presence alongside the two BCCI-linked individuals, Khalid bin Mahfouz and Ghaith Pharaon, should be understood in that context.

BCCI's reach extended far beyond Saudi Arabia, Pakistan, and the United States, as it was truly global in scope. The bank maintained, for example, a presence in the People's Republic of China. During the "reform and opening up" of the PRC under the leadership of Deng Xiaoping, BCCI was the second foreign bank to open branches in the country. It "secured substantial deposits from the Chinese government and its business affiliates"; according to the BCCI Affair, Chinese officials and government entities lost around $500 million when the bank collapsed.[43] BCCI also maintained joint ventures with other businesses within China. One of these was the China-Arab Bank, a joint venture with the Abu Dhabi Investment Authority.

At the time, the relationship between the PRC and the Soviet Union was considerably strained – and yet BCCI was in the USSR as well. In an appendix to the BCCI Affair titled "Matters for Further Investigation," the joint activities of BCCI and the Foreign Trade Mission of the Soviet Union in London was highlighted as significant, but little information was added. The report states that "obtaining the records of those financial transactions would be critical to understanding what the Soviet Union under Brezhnev, Chernenko, and Andropov was doing in the West."[44]

One clue as to USSR-connected activities was reported by Jonathan Beaty and S. C. Gwynne in their book on BCCI. Beaty was told by a German arms dealer, whom they refer to as "Heinrich," that the Soviets were buying Western high technology via BCCI – in this instance the Navstar GPS system.[45]

Throughout the third world, BCCI presented itself as a development bank. This allowed it to gain intimate access to governments, emerging markets, and the financing systems that they required. It was the "second largest of all lenders to the Congo," while in Cameroon it developed close ties to the country's finance ministry – and bribed them to take high-interest loans from the bank.[46] The BCCI Affair charges that BCCI cultivated relationships with the United Nations outpost and the US embassy in Cameroon as well. In Nigeria, meanwhile, BCCI cozied up to the nation's central bank and apparently traveled with their top financial functionaries throughout the world. One witness reported that, at a meeting of the World Bank in Seoul, they had observed "one of the BCC[I] officers with a lot of cash, handing it out to the staff of the central bank of Nigeria."[47]

In Jamaica, BCCI became the intermediary between the state and the world financial system. It handled "essentially every foreign current account of Jamaican government agencies."[48] US government agencies were involved in this corruption of the Jamaican government, as BCCI became "involved in financing all of Jamaica's commodity imports from the United States under the U.S. Commodity Credit Corporation."[49] The CCC itself was no stranger to skullduggery. As will be seen, it was implicated – along with BCCI and several connected banks – in the transfer of armaments and munitions to Iraq at the height of the Iran-Iraq War.

Through the Gulf Group – headed by Abbas, Mustafa, and Murtaza Gokal – BCCI had a foothold in global shipping. Abedi was particularly close to Abbas Gokal, the main figure in Gulf's shipping lines. He had courted him early on in BCCI's existence, and an ever-escalating series of loans fueled the Gokal's maritime interests, allowing the family to quickly control an impressive fleet. The Gulf Group and BCCI were so fundamentally interwoven, acting as practical extensions of one another, that when BCCI collapsed, the resulting shockwaves profoundly destabilized Gulf.[50]

Like Ghaith Pharaon, Abbas Gokal sometimes acted as a front man or proxy for BCCI. In 1975, for example, he attempted to acquire Chelsea National Bank, a small New York City bank. Regulators very quickly recognized that Gokal had practically no familiarity with the ins and outs of bank ownership –

and they saw how closely tied he was to BCCI. In 1976, Gokal admitted that, upon acquiring the bank, he had planned to bring in a BCCI management team to run its operations.[51]

In the early 1980s, Gokal approached the intelligence/organized crime-linked Bruce Rappaport with an offer to buy 50 percent of his Inter Maritime Bank. Rappaport declined the offer and instead sold 19.9 percent of the bank's shares to the Gulf Group and added Abbas to his board of directors[52] Later, when he was shuffled off to prison for his fraudulent activities with BCCI, Abbas' personal secretary went to work for Rappaport.

Was Gokal fronting for BCCI in Rappaport's organization? It seems likely, as Rappaport himself maintained numerous ties to the bank. One of his top money managers, the Swiss banker Alfred Hartmann, was himself a BCCI frontman, while Rappaport held a significant stake in the illustrious Bank of New York, which was one of BCCI's correspondent banks. Bert Lance, meanwhile, had mentioned Rappaport in his testimony before the official BCCI inquiry, stating that he believed that Rappaport had been dispatched by William Casey, Rappaport's close friend, to spy on him and keep tabs on BCCI. "Lance said that Rappaport maintained contact with him for a period of years until the death of Director [William] Casey," the BCCI Affair states, before adding that Lance "failed to mention in his testimony that despite his suspicions of Rappaport, he arranged with him to have one of his sons work in the financier's New York bank."[53]

Both Rappaport and BCCI were also engaged in various activities in the oil-rich nation of Oman. BCCI had been active there since 1973, when, together with Bank of America, it set up the National Bank of Oman. Peter Truell and Larry Gurwin, in False Profits, note that the National Bank of Oman "became one of BCCI's biggest units, with fifty-five branches."[54] Tellingly, the BCCI Affair suggests that "BCCI may have been moving money through the National Bank of Oman to fund the war in Afghanistan," before adding that the National Bank of Oman and its CEO, Qais-Al Zawawi, also did business with CIA director Casey's associate, Bruce Rappaport.[55]

Interestingly, one of the most active players in Oman's oil market was John Deuss, the enigmatic oil trader whom Ted Shackley had gone to work for after leaving the CIA. In fact, Deuss reportedly hired Shackley specifically to help him operate in Oman.[56] According to one of Deuss' associates, journalist Susan Mazur, Deuss' main contact in Oman was Qais-Al Zawawi of the National Bank of Oman. Could there have been a connection with the purported use of the bank by the CIA to finance the Afghan Mujahideen? It is certainly possible. As mentioned in the last chapter, there are rumors that EATSCO, the freight forwarder managed by Shackley's crony Thomas Clines, was involved in the movement of arms and other war supplies to the Mujahideen.

Yet another major player in Oman during this period was a firm called Tetra Tech International. Once a subsidiary of Honeywell, Tetra Tech was run by former CIA officer James Critchfield, who was not only an old Middle East hand, but also a close associate of Shackley. In 1979, Tetra Tech was "given supervisory control … over the operations of [eleven] government ministries."[57] Major construction projects, the management of ports, the telecommunication infrastructure, the post office, and food inspections were just a handful of the things that Tetra Tech controlled in Oman. In addition, as noted in the last chapter, Donald Jameson, a CIA veteran who went to work for Tetra Tech, had been one of the attendees of the Le Cercle meeting tied to the October Surprise plot.

As the BCCI Affair makes clear, investigators also suspected a potential connection between Tetra Tech International and the similarly named Tetra Finance, a Hong Kong-based financial outfit that was closely integrated with the Hong Kong Deposit and Guaranty Company.[58] Playing an active role in each of these institutions was John Shaheen, one of William Casey's "Hardy Boys" and a central figure in the October Surprise plot. Shaheen was paid by each bank to broker deposits and to court wealthy Arabs to join their boards. Individuals who maintained a post on the board of each included Hassan Yassin, Kamal Adham's successor as Saudi intelligence chief and a cousin of Adnan Khashoggi. Another was Al Mazrui, the head of the Abu Dhabi Investment Authority and director at BCCI.

Once again, BCCI appears, albeit surrounded by heavy fog, in the background of the covert conflicts of the 1980s. The support for the Mujahideen was just one of many such instances. Another is the Iran-

Contra affair. A global web of operations and cooperating and competing factions, each with logistical networks dedicated to arms dealing, drug smuggling, and money laundering, the complexity of Iran-Contra is simply mind-boggling. Despite its involution, at nearly every level of these interlocking components and operations, one invariably finds the tendrils of BCCI.

BLACK EAGLE

When the Kerry Commission on terrorism, narcotics, and international operations was underway in the early 1990s, longtime BCCI executive Amjad Awan was one of the witnesses called to testify. Awan told the commission that he had acted as the banker for Manuel Noriega, the strong-man who had first come to power in Panama in 1983. Noriega would deposit "$3 million at a time in $100 bills" in BCCI, while Awan would disperse "$20,000 payments to Panamanian politicians at Noriega's request."[59]

Furthermore, according to Awan, Clark Clifford's partner Robert Altman had personally intervened to obscure the massive flow of Noriega-connected funds into BCCI. As BCCI collapsed and regulators and politicians subpoenaed internal bank documents, Altman hid them by having them relabeled as "attorney work product."[60]

A sizable chunk of Noriega's wealth came from his deep involvement in the Latin America drug trade. According to Carlos Lehder, the Medellin cartel boss who had worked closely with Robert Vesco in the Bahamas, Noriega reached an agreement with Pablo Escobar and other Medellin leaders that made Panama a transshipment point for Colombian cocaine destined for the US. In exchange for "$1000 for each kilogram of cocaine and a percentage of every dollar of drug proceeds flown to Panamanian banks," Noriega was purported to have guaranteed the safe passage of drug flights in and out of various airstrips across the country.[61]

Partial corroboration of Lehder's claims comes from Steven Kalish, an American drug smuggler who worked closely with Noriega's pilot, Cesar Rodriguez. Kalish was made a partner in Servicios Turisticos, a Panamanian airline owned by Rodriguez and Noriega, and was given "special military protection for shipments of money into the country."[62] According to Kalish, the relationship between Noriega and the Medellin cartel did not fully blossom until 1984, when he arranged for some of their cohorts to be released from Panamanian jail.

Noriega was also a CIA asset and had been since 1967, becoming the Agency's eyes and ears in Panama. He became particularly close to George H.W.Bush when the future president was director of the CIA. Peter Dale Scott and Jonathan Marshall write that, in 1976, "CIA director George Bush arranged to pay Noriega $110,000 for his services [and] put the Panamanian up as a house guest of his deputy CIA director."[63] Noriega enjoyed a similar camaraderie with Bush's rival, CIA director William Casey, who is alleged to have met with Noriega repeatedly in Washington, DC.

That Noriega served as both de facto drug baron and the CIA's man in Panama became an issue for the US during the early 1980s, when Casey launched the first operations to support the Nicaraguan Contras in their fight against the ruling Sandinistas of Nicaragua. According to various journalists writing in the late 1980s this operation was code-named "Black Eagle."[64]

Howard Kohn and Vicky Monks, in their 1989 Rolling Stone article on the operation, stated that, very early on, Casey recruited Israel's Mossad "to arrange for the acquisition and shipping of weapons to the Contras."[65] As noted in the last chapter, Mossad had its own man in Panama, Michael Harari, who worked as an arms trafficker and security consultant for Noriega. The "Harari network," as it was later dubbed, overlapped with the drug smuggling networks that were operated in Panama by the Medellin cartel. Though he was no longer officially in the employ of Mossad by this point, Harari's activities were funded to the tune of $20 million from Israel.[66]

José Blandón, one of Noriega's top advisors, later told journalists that Harari had worked with Duane Clarridge, the head of CIA operations in Latin America, and Donald Gregg, Vice President Bush's National Security Advisor, to establish a network of bases for logistical support of the Contra conflict. Kohn and Monks appear to corroborate Blandón's story, writing that the vice president's office did have a role in the Black Eagle operation and that the man on the ground had been Donald Gregg. They add that the airstrips in Panama utilized by the CIA were the same as those being used by the Medellin cartel and that the arrangement between these parties had first been set up by Israel.

Independent accounts show that the prime years that Black Eagle was purported to have been running, 1982 and 1983, were busy ones for the US and Israel.[67] In November 1982, the US government admitted to supporting rebel forces in Nicaragua. By March of the following year, the CIA had set up a $50 million intelligence apparatus in Latin America that was largely focused on Nicaragua, and US military advisors were placed in Honduras to advise the main Contra group, the Fuerza Democrática de Nicaragua or FDN. In the summer of 1983, the New York Times reported that Israel, at the urging of the US, was providing arms, confiscated from the PLO in Lebanon to the Contras.

In 1984 and 1985, Black Eagle began to fall apart. This was in no small part thanks to Noriega. As Kohn and Monks noted:

While helping to raise funds for the contras, Noriega was pursuing a favorite pastime – adding to his store of potential political-blackmail material. An insatiable collector of "negative information" about both friends and foes, Noriega is known to have hidden video and audio equipment in government offices to record meetings and phone calls. Early in the Black Eagle operation, according to Blandón, Noriega began to compile a dossier about the role of Bush and his staff. In the dossier is said to be copies of status reports sent to Gregg and videotapes of meetings held in Noriega's office, plus a special report that Blandón prepared about Black Eagle on Noriega's orders.[68]

With Noriega acting increasingly bold, tensions reportedly developed between US and Israeli operators throughout Latin America, each worried that the other would hang them out to dry if the link between the pro-Contra efforts and the Medellin drug flights was revealed.

Another issue was the increasing unpopularity of the Contra war in the US. Beginning in 1982, a series of laws passed by Congress limited the ability of the Reagan administration to provide military aid to Contra groups. This reached its apex with the 1984 Boland Amendment, which prohibited all US military aid to the Contras and hampered the CIA's Nicaraguan operations. With a crisis mounting, Casey began to search for an alternative system that would allow him to continue the covert war. Soon, with the aid of his new protégé Oliver North, "the Enterprise" would be up and running.

The Enterprise appears to have been named as such because it was fundamentally a money-making endeavor, and its numerous tendrils and interlocking components cut across as many business ventures as they did covert operations. It was also an offshoot – if not a direct continuation – of Shackley's private-intelligence apparatus. Richard Secord, who had been involved in the overbilling scam at the Pentagon that provided funding for EATSCO, was one of North's right-hand men in the Enterprise's money networks. Joining him was Albert Hakim, another veteran of Shackley's world, as was Thomas Clines. As alluded to previously, the arms-for-hostage deals that ultimately torpedoed the Enterprise's activities had come to North's attention from a complex changing of hands. It had originated, however, in a meeting between Shackley and Iranian interests.

North, a marine and veteran of the Vietnam War, was apparently recruited into Shackley's network in the early 1980s. In 1981, he joined the National Security Council (NSC), and in 1983 – right in the middle of Black Eagle – he became the NSC's deputy director for political-military affairs. During his first two years at the NSC, however, he was an assistant to Robert "Bud" MacFarlane, who soon became Reagan's National Security Advisor. MacFarlane's career had depended on his development and maintenance of connections to prominent players. For instance, he had served as military assistant to Henry Kissinger and accompanied him on his secret trips to China. At the end of the 1970s, he was appointed by John Tower to head the US Senate Committee on Armed Services, and in 1981 he became an assistant to Alexander Haig. Tower's critical role in the subversion of US national security by aiding Robert Maxwell in the PROMIS scandal is detailed in chapter 9. Notably, Tower and Maxwell had first been brought together by Henry Kissinger.

According to Joseph Trento, MacFarlane's early work for Kissinger had been arranged by his mentor, Col. Jack Brennan, who was Nixon's last chief of staff.[69] Brennan and MacFarlane had stayed in touch over the years, and, at some point, North, while working under MacFarlane, was introduced to Brennan's associate, Lt. Col. James M. Tully. Tully was close to Shackley and Secord.

Trento writes that he was told by Marine colonel and sometimes CIA asset William Corson that North had informed him about his growing ties to this crowd, who were then being used to operate off-the-books operations for the CIA and the National Security Council. "It was then that I realized what had happened," Corson reportedly said. "These dumb bastards got sucked into the old Ed Wilson crowd: Shackley, Secord, Clines. The administration had let these guys in the tent, and it was only a matter of time before they owned the circus."[70]

THE STRUCTURE OF THE ENTERPRISE

The basis for the Enterprise was a company founded by Richard Secord and Albert Hakim in 1983 called Stanford Technology Trading Group International (STTGI). It was one of many similarly-named companies that the pair had set up. They had formed the nearly identical Stanford Technology Corporation in the 1970s, and had since set up StanTech Services S.A.; Stanford Technology Corporation Services, S.A.; and Scitech, S.A, among others. A year after STTGI was formed, North introduced Secord to Adolfo Calero, the leader of the FDN, the CIA's preferred Contra group. An arrangement was made where, thanks to a sizable cash donation from Saudi Arabia, STTGI would buy arms and resell them to the Contras.

This basic business arrangement rapidly ballooned during 1985 and 1986. Throughout 1985, Manucher Ghorbanifar (who, as previously noted, had brought an arms-for-hostages deal to Shackley), Israel's David Kimche, and Michael Ledeen met multiple times to discuss the possibility of an arrangement between the Reagan administration, Israel, and Iran. Ledeen often reported back to McFarlane, who was by then National Security Advisor, on these meetings. At the end of August of that year, a US arms package – including 100 TOW missiles – was dispatched to Iran via Israel.[71] The initial financing for this shipment, which was routed through his accounts at BCCI, was provided by Adnan Khashoggi.

Ledeen was, at this time, operating from North's office at the NSC, though he later claimed that North was unaware of the arms sales. North, he continued, was busy trying to arrange for the freeing of the hostages in Lebanon. Ledeen was likely dissembling: according to the Tower Report, McFarlane told President Reagan that Israel has "taken it upon themselves" to sell arms to Iran in order to try to get hostages released.[72] Roughly a month after this first arms sale, Kimche contacted McFarlane with news that one of the hostages was to be released, and more would follow. Records show that North was tasked with handling this situation.

By October, North was holding meetings with Ledeen and Ghorbanifar as well as Al Schwimmer and other players on the Israeli side of the operation in DC. The arms sales continued smoothly for the next several months. January 1986 was when the operation took on another dimension. During the course of a meeting between Oliver North, Edwin Meese, and Amiram Nir, Israeli prime minister Shimon Peres' top counterterrorism advisor, Nir reportedly suggested to North that funds from the arms sales could be diverted to support the Contras. Shortly after this meeting, funds now destined for the Contras began to be routed through the Enterprise's byzantine maze of corporate shell and holding companies.

The Enterprise maintained dozens of accounts held in the names of various dummy companies, usually in Swiss banks such as Credit Suisse. The primary receiving accounts, which dispersed money outward into the corporate compartments set up for the ongoing operations, included Energy Resources International, Lake Resources Inc., and the Hyde Square Park Corporation.[73] North's Israeli co-conspirators may have had access to these accounts as well.[74]

In order to manage this complex web, the Enterprise retained the services of Willard Zucker and the Geneva company he worked for, Compagnie de Services Fiduciaire or CSF. Zucker, a US tax lawyer, "had provided Hakim with financial services since the mid-1970s, when Hakim still lived in Iran."[75] Zucker's connection to these players is made all the more interesting because of his background. He had been affiliated with Investors Overseas Services and had gained a seat on the mutual fund's board during the ouster of its founder, Bernard Cornfeld.[76] There are various rumors and suggestions that Zucker was one of Vesco's proxies whom he arranged to get onto the IOS board.

Zucker's role in Vesco's takeover was obliquely referenced in a letter he wrote to Hakim concerning a trip he took to Seattle to discuss a series of business ventures with other Enterprise partners. Zucker states in the letter that he had met a businessman from Colorado who was involved in a venture with the politically connected oilman John M. King. The man offered to send Zucker materials relating to the venture, but Zucker declined. He added to Hakim that King "hates my guts because I helped bring down King Resources, the Colorado Corporation."[77]

IOS had been involved with King Resources in some oil-and-gas ventures in the late 1960s, while King Resources acted as one of IOS' biggest clients. King was close to Edward Cowett, IOS' general counsel, director, and a member of its executive team. When IOS began to fall apart, Cowett conspired to help King take control of the company from Cornfeld. It was not meant to be. King failed and his King Resources slid into bankruptcy, while Vesco, King's competitor, claimed the mutual fund.

In June 1982, CSF set up a Bermuda-based subsidiary called CSF Investments Ltd. Legal work for this company was carried out by Conyers Dill & Pearman – one of the preeminent firms specializing in offshore finance, with outposts across the Caribbean, London, and Hong Kong. The firm's cofounder, Nicholas Bayard Dill, was a powerful presence in Bermuda politics. He and his law partner, James Pearman, were directors of Coastal Caribbean Oils & Minerals Ltd. According to the National Security Archive's Iran-Contra chronology, Secord owned stock in this same company in the early 1980s.[78] Later, when Contra support operations were fully underway, CSF Investments was used to acquire aircraft.

The Enterprise maintained numerous companies to manage the aviation wing of the Contra support operations. Southern Air Transport (SAT), the CIA proprietary airline utilized in the Contra airlift that was previously Air America (and before that, Civil Air Transport), worked closely with an Enterprise dummy company, registered in Panama, called Albon Values Corp. David Rogers, a journalist for the Wall Street Journal, wrote that "public records in Panama City list employees in the Geneva firm, [CSF], as principals in Albon Values Corp.… Roland Farina, an accountant at CSF, and Jacques Mossaz, an attorney at the Swiss firm, are listed as principal officers in Albon Values, which was registered by a Panama City law firm, Quijano & Associados, frequently used by CSF."[79]

Costa Rica was one of the main staging grounds for North's pro-Contra operations. Land belonging to John Hull, an American rancher, was the main location for the Contra airlift. Hull, who reportedly received a $10,000 monthly retainer from the Enterprise, claimed to have been the CIA's main liaison with the Contras between 1982 and 1986.[80] His involvement in covert operations seems, however, to have begun before 1982. Two years earlier, a far-right paramilitary group used his ranch as their base to launch an attack on a left-wing Costa Rican radio station.[81] Hull was also reportedly close to the Free Costa Rica Movement, that country's branch of the World Anti-Communist League.

In frequent contact with Hull was Robert Owen, who had been selected by North to serve as his own liaison to the Contras. Owen – unsurprisingly – had ties to Shackley that went back to the Vietnam War, and through him he had met Neil Livingstone.

Livingstone, as discussed, had been involved in Panama with Michael Harari, which opens the possibility that he may have been involved with Black Eagle. After Owen served a stint on the staff of Senator Dan Quayle, Livingstone recruited him to work at Gray and Company, the PR firm set up by Robert Keith Gray during his time away from H & K.[82]

Under the auspices of a PR campaign for the Contras, Livingstone set up a nonprofit organization called the Institute for Terrorism and Subnational Conflict, located in the Washington, DC, offices of the American Security Council. What it was really designed to do, according to the Congressional report on the Iran-Contra affair, was to act as an Enterprise cut-out to pay Owen for his work.[83] To receive these funds, Owen set up his own organization, the Institute for Democracy, Education, and Assistance (IDEA). The same day that IDEA was formed, Owen set up a sister organization, the Council for Democracy, Education and Assistance.[84] One of the council's directors, aside from Owen, was a retired Air Force general, John Flynn, who had reportedly been recruited by Hull to serve in that role. The council took in some $66,000 in donations for the Contras, all reportedly from the fundraising activities of conservative activist Carl "Spitz" Channell. In 1984, Channell had organized a tax-exempt foundation for the purpose of soliciting donations. This foundation, the National Endowment for the Preservation of Liberty was North’s vehicle of choice for garnering private donations for the Contras and other worldwide “freedom fighters” being backed by the Reagan administration.

Through the National Endowment for the Preservation of Liberty, money provided by wealthy donors courted by North and his associates – individuals like Texas oilman Nelson Bunker Hunt, Ellen Garwood, the daughter of a prominent New Deal-era administrator, and prolific confidence man E. Trine Starnes – would be flushed into an offshore banking system.[85] Channell’s partner was a PR man by the name of Richard Miller, who maintained a company called International Business Communications. Money from the National Endowment for the Preservation of Liberty would flow to International Business Communications, which in turn would deposit the money into bank accounts in the Cayman Islands under the name of “I.C., Inc.” I.C., Inc. would then move the money to Enterprise bank accounts in Switzerland belonging to Lake Resources.[86]

Another fundraising apparatus utilized by the Enterprise was Citizens for America.[87] Founded by conservative activist Lewis Lehrman, Citizens for America was, for a time, run by the infamous lobbyist Jack Abramoff. Citizens for America’s executives met personally with President Reagan. The organization would reappear during the Franklin child abuse scandal in Nebraska (discussed in chapter 10), as Lawrence King, the man at the center of that sexual-abuse ring, was a board member of and donor to Citizens for America during the Contra years.

By 1985, cracks in the Boland Amendment were forming, and the covert apparatus was ready to take full advantage of the opportunities at hand. Congress was still blocking “lethal aid,” but it authorized the State Department to move “humanitarian” supplies to the Contras. A special organization, the Nicaraguan Humanitarian Assistance Office (NHAO) was set up under the leadership of Ambassador Robert Duemling. From the outset, the NHAO was an extension of the Enterprise. It provided money to Owen’s IDEA, and Owen himself became an NHAO consultant. The CIA, meanwhile, recommended and vetted the companies that the office utilized to move the aid.[88]

This vetting process brought in a number of intriguing partners. One of these was the shrimp company Frigorificos de Puntarenas and its sister firm, Ocean Hunter. As previously discussed, Frigorificos was found to have been footing the bill for the storage of Robert Vesco’s aircraft in Costa Rica and was itself run by representatives of the Colombian drug cartels. One principal of both companies, Luis Rodriguez, was found by the FBI to have been “funding the Contras through ‘narcotics transactions.’”[89]

At the same time that the State Department was unlocking funds for Frigorificos and its principals were busy at work in the blossoming cocaine trade, North, Owen, and rancher Hull were working closely with those behind Frigorificos and Ocean Hunter on developing maritime warfare capacity for the Contras.[90] Memos written by Owen refer to Frigorificos/Ocean Hunter ships being used as “motherships” for these operations. Incredibly, they also reference a “DEA person who might help with the boats.”[91]

Another curious pair of companies that simultaneously received NHAO funds, got tapped by the Enterprise for military support, and were implicated in drug-running operations were SETCO Aviation and Hondu Carib. Hondu Carib had been formed by Frank Moss, who had been a pilot for SETCO. According to the report of the Kerry Commission on narcotics trafficking, SETCO “had a long-standing relationship with the largest of the Contra groups, the Honduras-based FDN.”[92] The aviation company, importantly, had been set up by “Honduran cocaine trafficker Juan Matta Ballesteros.”[93] Matta, described in the press as the “boss of bosses of Mexico’s cocaine industry,” mainly partnered with the Cali cartel, which, by the 1990s, had overtaken the Medellin cartel as the dominant drug empire in Colombia.[94]

Matta and other members of his organization, the Guadalajara, were implicated in the kidnapping, interrogation, brutal torture, and murder of DEA agent Enrique “Kiki” Camarena, which took place in early February 1985. The cartel boss who had personally ordered the kidnapping of Camarena, Felix Gallardo, was reported to have bragged in court that he had “[supplied] arms to the Contras” and had brought together a network of drug traffickers “to finance their [the Contras] cause during 1983 and 1984, in exchange for protection.”[95]

Phil Jordan, former director of the DEA’s El Paso Intelligence Center, later reported that he was informed by Mexican authorities that “CIA operatives” were present for the interrogation and torture of Camarena and had made tape recordings of the agent’s final hours.[96] Hector Berrellez, the DEA agent who led the investigation into Camarena’s death, stated that the CIA provided the DEA with those tapes. Camarena was first kidnapped by members of La Dirección Federal de Seguridad (DFS), a now-shuttered Mexican intelligence agency and secret police. When Felix Gallardo was boasting of his ties to the Contras, he also claimed that Contras were being trained at a law-enforcement training facility maintained by the DFS, which was acting as a front for the CIA.[97]

Frigorificos and Ocean Hunter, SETCO and Hondu Carib – these are just a few of the CIA-vetted companies that were recommended to the State Department for the delivery of “humanitarian aid” to the Contras. There was also Vortex, a Miami-based aviation concern run by Michael B. Palmer. The Kerry Commission report notes that, at the time Vortex was getting NHAO contracts for supply runs, “Palmer was under active investigation by the FBI in three jurisdictions in connection with his decade-long activity as a drug smuggler, and a federal grand jury was preparing to indict him in Detroit.”[98] One of Vortex’s employees in this period, Joseph Haas, “was suspected of involvement in drug trafficking and had been a suspected marijuana trafficker since 1984.”[99] He had also been a CIA contract agent but was “‘taken off’ CIA’s payroll” in 1987 “because he had gone to work for a US law enforcement agency.”[100]

Vortex was brought to the NHAO’s attention by Pat Foley, described in the Kerry Commission report as the “president of Summit Aviation.”[101] What the report left out, however, was that Foley had been (or had continued to be) a CIA operative and had earlier flown 747s on behalf of Flying Tiger Lines, the aviation company set up by the Chennaults and where Robert Keith Grey had maintained a spot on the board.[102]

Summit Aviation, too, had a fascinating history: it had been founded by Richard C. du Pont Jr., a member of the illustrious DuPont chemicals family and the son of one of the great boosters of aviation in the 1930s. Besides Summit, Richard Jr. served as a director at Edward du Pont’s Atlantic Aviation, where the aforementioned CIA asset and Bush ally, James R. Bath, had served as vice president.

In September 1983, a Cessna 404 twin-engine propeller plane entered the airspace of the Nicaraguan capital of Managua and began a miniature bombing run. The aircraft was quickly shot down, and Sandinista authorities found that it had been dispatched from Costa Rica. A subsequent investigation in the US press revealed that the plane had come from a company called Investair Leasing Corporation, headed by the former vice president of the CIA proprietary airline Intermountain Aviation. Before its doomed flight, it had been purchased by Summit Aviation, which had modified it with bombing capabilities and machine guns.

SINGLAUB AND GEOMILITECH

The bombing attempt carried out by Summit Aviation foreshadowed some of the later activities of the Enterprise. For example, there was the case of Civilian Materiel Assistance (CMA), a militia group – likely a cover for members of the 20th Special Forces Group – that managed a Contra-support network and conducted cross-border raids with Contra forces from Honduras into Nicaragua.[103] The CMA’s active presence in the conflict was revealed in 1984 when one of its helicopters was shot down, killing two of the group’s members. Despite the exposure, the CMA’s head, Thomas Posey, continued the Contra support operations and was linked to arms deals taking place at John Hull’s ranch.

Working closely with the CMA, and then later with the Enterprise, was Gen. John K. Singlaub. Singlaub was a veteran of the old OSS China network, which means that his entry into the world of covert activities took place alongside seasoned operators such as Paul Helliwell and E. Howard Hunt. After the war, he continued his military career while serving as one of the CIA’s clandestine warriors, popping up in special operations the world over. By the late 1970s, he departed from a high-ranking military position to protest Carter administration policies. It parallels the attitude of Shackley, with whom Singlaub was reportedly associated in Vietnam.

During the 1980s, Singlaub headed the US Council for World Freedom, the US branch of a global network of spies, criminals, Nazi exiles, fascist operators, and death squad leaders belonging to the World Anti-Communist League.[104] By 1984, he was serving as the chairman of the league itself. Prior to this, some of the leading lights of the organization included Roger Pearson, an anthropologist who maintained ties to groups such as Willis Carto’s Liberty Lobby. Another was Swiss attorney Pierre Schifferli, who was rumored to have been involved in arranging massive weapon deals for UNITA in Angola.[105] When he wasn't arranging falsified end-user certificates for arms transfers or cavorting with a group called the Pinochet Foundation, Schifferli worked as one of the attorneys retained by Bruce Rappaport to represent the interests of Inter Maritime Bank.

The World Anti-Communist League and the US Council for World Freedom were interlaced with a host of like-minded pressure groups, dark-money fronts, private-intelligence apparatuses, and closed-door meeting places. These groups pressed for rolling back Cold War policies and boosting defense spending. More specifically, they pushed for the continuation and deepening of covert wars across the world; free trade policies, and other packages beneficial to multinational corporations; and the curtailing of civil and labor rights. Some of these, such as the American Security Council, appear to have participated in psychological operations aimed at the domestic population of the United States as well as abroad. Others, such as the Council for National Policy, helped broker the cozy relationship between evangelical Christians and the emergent New Right. High Frontier lobbied for the Strategic Defense Initiative, while the US Strategy Council brought together intelligence operatives with representatives of the Unification Church to coordinate policy and public relations activities, particularly through the Unification Church-controlled Washington Times.

Another group that operated in close proximity to the World Anti-Communist League was the Western Goals Foundation, a private-intelligence outfit set up by Congressman Larry McDonald in 1978. McDonald envisioned Western Goals as a clearinghouse, working in tandem with other private groups and law enforcement agencies to collect and share information on domestic groups deemed threatening to prevailing power structures. They engaged in propaganda via book publishing and, at one point, "solicited funds to create a computer database on American subversives."[106] During the 1980s, Western Goals fell under the control of Spitz Channell, who used it as one of the vehicles for private fundraising on behalf of the Contras.[107] Notably, Western Goals' effort to create a database on "American subversives" would be realized as part of the "Continuity of Government" protocol, which was developed by key players in the Enterprise and Iran-Contra and is discussed in chapter 9 in the context of the PROMIS scandal.

A Western Goals letter from 1983 lists a number of intriguing individuals comprising the advisory board. There was John Singlaub himself, as well as Adm. Thomas Moorer from the Nixon days. At this point, Moorer worked at both the American Security Council and H & K. Another Western Goals advisor was Roy Cohn. A 1982 New York Times article states that Cohn joined the foundation after being satisfied that it had "no ties to the right-wing John Birch Society" – despite Western Goals founder Larry McDonald having been a John Birch leader, and Cohn's fellow advisory board member Roger Milliken having funded the society.[108]

Cohn's interest in Western Goals may have been tied to the wider pro-Contra networks that were coalescing across the United States in the early 1980s. At the time, Cohn was serving as an attorney to his close friend Rupert Murdoch. (Robert Parry has written that the two first became close due to their mutual support for Israel.) According to New York Magazine, "Whenever Roy wanted a story stopped, item put in, or story exploited, Roy called Murdoch."[109] After Murdoch bought the New York Post, Cohn "wielded the paper as his personal shiv."[110]

At the same time, Cohn was forging close ties with the director of the US Information Agency, Chad Wick, even hosting a luncheon in Wick's honor that was widely attended by influential figures in the conservative press, as well as US senators and representatives. Soon after, then CIA director William Casey was spearheading an extensive propaganda campaign to shore up public support for Reagan's Latin American policies, including support of the Contras.

This domestic effort was technically illegal, which caused the CIA to outsource the job to the private sector. As Robert Parry reported in 2015, Wick took the lead in obtaining private funding for the effort, and, just a few days after Wick promised to find private support, Cohn brought Rupert Murdoch to the White House. Parry later noted that, after this meeting, "documents released during the Iran-Contra scandal in 1987 and later from the Reagan Library indicate that Murdoch was soon viewed as a source for the private funding" for the propaganda campaign.[111]

After that meeting, Murdoch became the top media ally of this Casey-directed propaganda effort and also became increasingly close to the Reagan White House. Murdoch, as a consequence, benefited greatly from Reagan's policies and his friendship with the administration, which allowed Murdoch to increase his US media holdings and to create the Fox Broadcasting Corporation in 1987.

In addition, Singlaub was named as a "consultant" to a Florida-based company called GeoMiliTech Consultants Corporation (GMT), which had been put together by Barbara Studley, a beauty queen turned conservative talk show host in Florida. Studley had also operated as a lobbyist and had worked at the Pentagon. The National Security Archive's Iran-Contra Chronology suggests that Studley may have even set up GMT at the behest of Singlaub, as he was reported to have "suggested" to Studley that she start the company in 1983.[112]

GMT worked with various arms dealers to source and transport munitions to conflict zones such as Nicaragua and Afghanistan. Among the arms dealers it worked with were Ernest Werner Glatt and his sometimes partner, Samuel Cummings. Cummings, by way of his company Interarmco, was a longtime weapons merchant for the CIA. Cummings' brother-in-law was none other than Senator John Tower, who in December 1986 was tapped by President Reagan to oversee the initial inquiry into the Iran-Contra affair.[113] This was a conflict of interest of immense proportions. In addition, Tower, at the time, was close to Robert Maxwell, who had his own role in the Iran arms deals of this period and was actively working for Israeli intelligence. Also, by this point, Maxwell had secured Tower a place on the payroll of Israeli intelligence.

It is not surprising, then, that GMT had extremely close ties to Israel.[114] The outfit's executive vice president, Ron Harel, was a "veteran of the Israeli Air Force who specialized in 'tactical cargo and light and early warning aircraft.'"[115] He managed GMT's overseas offices, which was conveniently located in Tel Aviv.

A sister company to GMT, Global Technologies Ltd., was also stationed in Israel and was overseen by Joel Arnon, an Israeli diplomat and military officer who was also a vice president of GMT. Global Technologies was located in Tel Aviv's Asia House, a striking Bauhaus-style building that housed various diplomats and embassies. Asia House had been owned by the Israeli billionaire Shaul Eisenberg, who – as mentioned in chapter 3 – enjoyed close relations with the Israeli intelligence and security apparatus. In addition, GMT's Israeli offices utilized the banking services of Israel Discount Bank. In 1986, portions of the money that were provided to Frigorificos and Ocean Hunter was deposited in Israel Discount Bank.[116]

Incredibly, there appears to have been ties between GMT and the clandestine activities of Robert Maxwell and those in his orbit. Key here was Nicholas Davies, the globe-trotting foreign editor for Maxwell's Daily Mirror – where he was often known by the nickname that his boss had bestowed upon him: "Mister Sneaky."[117] According to Ari Ben-Menashe, Davies, like Maxwell, worked on behalf of Mossad, having been recruited in the 1970s from Strategic Intelligence Services, a British intelligence front led by a Special Air Service veteran named Anthony Pearson.[118] By the 1980s, Davies – with Maxwell's knowledge – was using his Daily Mirror duties to act as a cover for his involvement in Mossad-sanctioned arms trafficking.

Besides the Mirror, Davies also acted as the manager and representative of the Ora Group, "an Israeli company based in London."[119] Headquartered at Davies' London home, Ora was set up with the aid of Ari Ben-Menashe, and operated as a key node in global arms flows. Among the "clients" that received arms – in this case weapons from the Soviet bloc – with the help of Davies and Ora was GMT.[120] In his book Profits of War, Ben-Menashe reprinted a number of internal documents illustrating the role played that Davies played in these affairs, including communications between Ora and GMT.[121]

Davies vigorously denied the allegations made by Ben-Menashe, and the Daily Mirror made a number of counter-allegations, including the charge that the documents in question were forgeries. Another contested claim was that Davies had traveled to Ohio to meet with arms dealers.[122] Davies went out of his way to claim that he had never been to Ohio, yet this was quickly proven to be false by various journalists.[123] Likewise, the British Observer turned up other Ora-related documents, which included a telex from Davies to "renowned American arms merchant, Richard J. Breneke [sic]."[124] Brenneke, as discussed in this chapter, managed an offshore financial apparatus utilized by the American and Israeli intelligence assets active in Operation Black Eagle. Brenneke would later state that he had met Davies, but did not know that he was involved with the Daily Mirror.[125]

Like all other shadow companies and strange entities that surrounded the Enterprise and Robert Maxwell's broader network, GMT was involved with the complicated world of offshore banking. To carry out their operations, Studley called on the services of Jean de la Giroday, a managing director at Geneva's Banque Cantrade, itself a subsidiary of Union Bank of Switzerland with branches in Geneva and on the Isle of Jersey. Together, Studley and Giroday set up a company called Consulentia Ltd.; GMT's principals were told to avoid maintaining records of this company's existence. Consulentia is just one of the many enduring mysteries of this intricate web: while GMT's Consulentia was set up in 1984, Robert Vesco stated that, when he was looting IOS, he utilized the "Consulentia sub of Banque Cantrade" in 1970.

In summer 1985, GMT was involved in the acquisition of arms on behalf of the Contras. According to the chronology published by the National Security Archives, Studley and Singlaub arranged "a $5 million shipment of AK-47 and RPG grenade launchers from Europe to Honduras onboard a 15,000-ton Greek flag freighter."[126] The arms may have been sourced from Eastern Bloc countries like Poland or Bulgaria, as Studley wrote to North in October of that year, "vociferously complaining that another arms dealer, Mario [Delamico], who was associated with the Florida arms dealer Ron Martin, was essentially horning in on their sources of Soviet-style armaments." "[127]

Several months after the October letter, in late December 1985, Studley and Gen. Daniel Graham – the vice chairman of Singlaub's US Council for World Freedom and a close associate of CAUSA, the political arm of the Unification Church – attended a meeting with CIA director Casey. An unnamed CIA officer who was present at this meeting was asked by Congressional investigators if the meeting had involved a discussion of a complicated three-way trading scheme, developed by GMT as a means of sustaining finances and equipment for covert operations. The investigators described this scheme as "a circular arrangement in which a trading company would be established to supply freedom fighter movements which Congress was unwilling to support for one reason or another.… Israel would sell certain things, military equipment, to the People's Republic of China, who would supply Soviet arms, which would then be brokered.… Israel would be benefited by the United States through a high technology support or other compensation."[128]

A schematic outline of this trading arrangement that was entered into evidence shows the destination for the arms sourced from China.[129] They would go to US-backed rebels in Afghanistan, Angola, Nicaragua, and Cambodia. GMT, in other words, was proposing the creation of a multinational economic arrangement that would bind together the US, Israel, and China through a series of credit extensions, technology transfers, and arms deals.

It is quite possible that this was the ultimate plan for what the Enterprise was intended to become, though the official narrative holds that this arrangement was never completed. It seems clear that certain elements of the plan did go into motion. Israel and China intensified economic and political relations in the 1980s and both actively collaborated with the US in covert operations. Chief among these was the arming of the Mujahideen in Afghanistan. Jeffrey Epstein was later alleged to have been involved in such arms deals, specifically those involving the Mujahideen. It appears that he may have facilitated major facets of something very similar to GMT's US-Israel-China plan in collaboration with members of the Clinton White House, Chinese weapons firms and Southern Air Transport in the mid to late 1990s (more on this in chapter 17).

GMT's other claim to fame was that it appears to have been involved in some of the very first arm deals with Iran, ones that predated the Enterprise's formation but took place alongside the CIA-Mossad relationship during Operation Black Eagle. The plan was a swap: "trade 200 tanks for Iran's US-built F-14 fighter aircraft," which had been sold to Iran in the 1970s.[130] Per this plan, Israel would have served as a cut-out for the tanks. It is quite possible that the scheme originated on the Israeli side of GMT. According to Alan Block, it was the first thing that Ron Harel had been involved with when he joined the company.

It is also possible that this was the groundwork for later arms-for-hostages arrangements. GMT worked closely with Israel Aircraft Industries (IAI), a major defense contractor for the Israeli military discussed previously in chapter 3. The founder of Israel Aircraft Industries, Adolph "Al" Schwimmer, had been heavily involved in weapons arrangements with Iran during the rule of the shah, and these arrangements had continued in secret after the Islamic Revolution. According to many press reports, it was Schwimmer who first concocted the idea to trade arms in exchange for the (attempted) release of hostage William Buckley.[131]

EDMOND SAFRA'S FUNNY BANK

Besides BCCI and Credit Suisse, another set of banks utilized by the Enterprise were Republic National Bank, headquartered in New York City, and Trade Development Bank, headquartered in Geneva and sold to American Express in 1983. Both of these banks were controlled by Edmond Safra, a Lebanese-Brazilian businessman who hailed from a long line of bankers. By the early 1990s, Safra was a billionaire, with Republic National among the five largest banks in New York. Both Safra and his bank, however, were dogged by controversy. Safra himself died under suspicious circumstances after his bank was implicated in large-scale money laundering and the possible theft of "stabilization credits" provided by the IMF to a financially devastated, post-Soviet Russia.

A decade earlier, Republic National Bank was named – but never indicted – as having participated in a money-laundering network called "La Mina," which was the subject of a sweeping federal investigation called Operation Polar Cap.[132] La Mina, which washed money for Colombian drug cartels, was composed of a circular daisy chain of banks, mines, gold refineries, precious metal brokers, and jewelry stores and provided the financial infrastructure for "airplane manufacturers and fixed-base operators" as well as "aircraft used to ferry drugs."[133]

Unsurprisingly, one of the banks that factored into the La Mina daisy chain was BCCI. Elsewhere, Safra's Trade Development Bank did business with loyal customers of BCCI such as Altaf Nazerali, a high-flyer in the world of securities fraud.[134]

Trade Development Bank and Republic National Bank are discussed in the fourteenth chapter of the Congressional report on Iran-Contra.[135] There, Republic National is described as having "handled many of the Enterprise's wire transfers." Besides these sorts of transfers, the bank was further involved in a clandestine cash delivery system that took place "outside bank channels." Nan Morabia, an officer at Republic National's International Division, her husband Elliot, and their son David were utilized by the Enterprise's money manager, Willard Zucker, to "make cash drops to Hakim, Secord, and others on their behalf."[136] Zucker would contact the Morabias with the amount required and tell them which individual the money was intended for. Then, that amount was deposited in an account at Trade Development Bank under the name "Codelis." Sometimes, the money drops would take place at Republic National Bank itself. On at least one occasion, Robert Owen received $7,000 from Morabia at the bank in New York City.

Nan Morabia's FBI 302 (i.e., summary of the FBI's interview with her) states that she had known Zucker for "approximately 8 to 10 years" and that his "account at [Republic National] was already established when she began working in the International section."[137] She added that CSF maintained accounts at Trade Development Bank and that Safra had "contact with Zucker in Geneva." She was not able to identify to the FBI, however, any potential business relations between Safra and Zucker, although she made clear that she assumed that such business did actually take place.

Yet, there were direct business relations between Republic National and CSF that were separate from – but by no means unconnected to – the Enterprise. In the summer of 1985, for example, CSF organized a Geneva-based company on behalf of Republic National called Republic New York Corporation Air Transport Services S.A.[138] The purpose of this company was to maintain a private aircraft on behalf of Safra's bank. At the end of 1985, the ownership of the plane was transferred out of the CSF-managed company to a Swiss aviation company called Aeroleasing S.A., which continued to maintain the plane on behalf of Republic National.

Aeroleasing was one of the aviation companies contracted by the Enterprise to ferry personnel around the world for various purposes. The Enterprise's expenditure lists included in the Congressional Iran-Contra final report show that, under a section titled "Mid-East (Iran Arms)," a total of $226,998 had been paid to the company. The ultimate costs were likely much higher. In his testimony, Secord stated, "We owe an aeroleasing firm in Europe, I am told, about $60,000. Something like that. We still owe the firm Southern Air Transport, here in the United States, quite a bit of money. I think it is something just under $100,000. We can't pay them."[139]

Gordon Thomas, in his biography of Robert Maxwell, states that Safra and Maxwell had enjoyed a long-lasting friendship. They particularly enjoyed, Thomas writes, dining "on board the Lady Ghislaine when the yacht berthed opposite Safra's home in Monte Carlo."[140] Their relationship was not all pleasure, however. According to Thomas, Safra allowed Maxwell to use Republic National Bank accounts to launder money coming from Eastern Europe.

When Maxwell was active in the Eastern Bloc, his primary base of operations was Bulgaria. There, as will be noted in more detail in chapter 9, Maxwell was deeply involved in the thorny Cold War issue of tech transfers – the often-illicit movement of high technology from the West to the Soviet sphere. This likely brought him into contact with Kintex, a state-owned trading company that had been organized by the Darzhhavna Sigurnost, the Bulgarian intelligence apparatus that was closely aligned with and ultimately answerable to the KGB. A CIA report on Kintex said it was a "central coordinator" of smuggling activities, with a "clandestine charter" to facilitate smuggling for Arab and Balkan drugs and arms traffickers and to "collect items of science and technology interest in the West."[141]

Kintex was more than willing to deal arms to right-wing insurgencies as much as left-wing ones, with clients including those who opposed Soviet-backed forces. These included the Christian Falangists of Lebanon, the Grey Wolves of Turkey, and even the Contras of Nicaragua. Also closely tied to Kintex was Mohammed Shakarchi, a prominent Geneva-based currency trader and the owner of Shakarchi Trading. Shakarchi, who from his offices near the Zurich airport ran "the most sophisticated currency exchange and commodity trading operations in Switzerland" and courted state officials in Soviet-allied Bulgaria while being, at the same time, involved in the CIA's covert support for the Mujahideen in Afghanistan. Between 1981 and 1989, a CIA front company called Argin purchased millions of dollars' worth of rare currencies from Shakarchi, which were sold to raise money for the rebels.[142]

One of Shakarchi's US partners was Capcom, a commodity-futures firm that "was created by the former head of BCCI's Treasury Department … who capitalized it with funds from BCCI and BCCI customers."[143] This wasn't the only familiar face engaging in funny banking with Shakarchi. A classified DEA report stated that Shakarchi's currency-exchange services were "utilized by some of the world's largest trafficking organizations to launder the proceeds of their drug-trafficking activities" and that part of his network included accounts at Safra's Republic National Bank.[144] Mohammed Shakarchi's father, Mahmoud, was reportedly close to Safra.

Safra's name can also be found in Jeffrey Epstein's contact book, though the banker's last name is misspelled as "Saffra." There are two phone numbers listed for Safra and no addresses. Another individual in the book with ties to Safra, albeit through a rather circuitous route, is Michael de Picciotto. Picciotto, who had five phone numbers listed in Epstein's contact book, has been associated with Engel & Völkers, the massive German real estate company and, since 2020, has served on the board of Aston Martin. He got his start, however, working at Union Bancaire Privée, a Swiss bank controlled by his family. He had joined as the managing director for their London offices in 1988 and eventually became "responsible for UBP's global financial activities."[145]

Union Bancaire Privée began life as Compagnie de Banque et d'Investissements of Geneva, founded by Edgar de Picciotto. Edgar, the uncle of Michael de Picciotto, came from a family with a long history in both banking and European diplomacy. The Picciotto family was fairly close to the Safras, and like Edmond Safra, Edgar de Picciotto was born in Lebanon. As their respective banking enterprises bloomed, the two became friends. In the late 1980s, when American Express disposed of Trade Development Bank, the Geneva bank that had formerly belonged to Safra, it was Edgar who bought it.[146] The merger of Trade

Development Bank and Compagnie de Banque et d'Investissements led to its reformation into Union Bancaire Privée.

Edgar de Picciotto was also, according to SEC filings, a member of the board of advisors to Quantum Industrial Holdings, a division of the complicated investment network of George Soros. Quantum Industrial Holdings held the majority of the shares of Quantum Industrial Partners, one of the advisors to which was George Soros' brother Paul Soros. Paul's son, Peter Soros, appears in Epstein's black book with addresses in New York City and London and ten phone numbers.

Another item appearing in Epstein's notebook that ties into this network is Aeroleasing. Both of Epstein's books contain lists for the aviation company, for both its Geneva and Zurich locations.

THE MAINLAND SAVINGS CONNECTION

When US arms began flowing to Iran at the end of August 1985, it was Adnan Khashoggi who advanced the initial capital – through his BCCI bank accounts – to put the thrust of the plan in motion. The initial "bridge financing" was $1 million, followed shortly thereafter by an additional $4 million.[147] Khashoggi subsequently claimed that this $5 million, "plus an additional $2.5 million whose purpose was unclear" came from a loan provided by Roland "Tiny" Rowland, the well-heeled British tycoon, corporate raider, and member of the Clermont Club who was briefly discussed in the last chapter. While Rowland's connection to Iran-Contra affair is well documented – and will be discussed shortly – he denied the validity of Khashoggi's claims.

While this denial might simply be a case of Rowland trying to put distance between himself and the affair, it happens that shortly prior to the initiation of the arms transfers, Khashoggi came into $5 million via a surprising route: Mainland Savings, a Houston-based savings and loan. Mainland Savings, one of the S&Ls that collapsed spectacularly over the course of the 1980s, was plugged into a wider network of crooked land developers, organized crime associates, and other denizens of the murky world of covert operations.

Khashoggi's ties to Mainland Savings dated back to 1977, when Mario Renda, an ambitious New Yorker with dreams of wealth and power, stepped off a plane in Riyadh, Saudi Arabia. He was then a partner in IPAD – the International Planners and Developers Construction Consortium – that hoped to gain a lucrative contract to build concrete homes in Jidda.[148] Khashoggi, it was reasoned, would be the key to unlocking the deep pockets of wealthy Saudis and, after a meeting with Renda, the arms dealer committed himself to the venture. While IPAD's ambitions were ultimately never realized, it resulted in a long-lasting relationship between Khashoggi and Renda.

After IPAD fizzled out, Renda leveraged the contacts he gained through his introduction into Khashoggi's inner circle and secured a position as the treasurer of Arab International Bank. Interestingly, in 1973, this bank had formed a joint venture with Lonrho, the corporate monolith controlled by Tiny Rowland.[149]

Arab International Bank's specialty was certificates of deposits (CDs): it would use vast petrodollar reserves to shop CDs around the world, seeking out the locations that had the highest rates of return. Renda positioned himself front and center in these efforts, which provided him with the idea for his next venture. In 1978, he returned to New York City and formed Arabas Inc., a "one-man firm" that was intended to broker deposits, likely on behalf of Arab clients.[150]

The timing was fortuitous. Against the backdrop of early 1980s deregulation fever, Renda became connected to Martin Schwimmer. Schwimmer, rumored to be a money-launderer for the Lucchese crime family, managed the pension funds for several New York unions, including Teamsters Local 810, which was reportedly close to organized crime interests.[151] A plan was then hatched: Renda and Schwimmer would begin brokering deposits of union pension fund money into S&Ls across the United States, collecting along the way commissions from lending institutions and fees from the unions. Arabas was renamed First United Fund, and soon Renda and Schwimmer were moving billions into a string of savings and loans.

By the end of the decade, Renda and Schwimmer had deposited money in 130 S&Ls, all of which collapsed. Renda's CDs were linked directly to massive borrowing at each of these institutions, which were generally unpaid. In addition, quite frequently, the borrowing was carried out by an interlinked network of organized crime associates. That collusion was undeniable. Besides the accusations of Schwimmer's involvement with the Lucchese family, Renda was rumored to have "controlled a lot of money being loaned for the benefit of Paul Castellano," the powerful head of the Gambino family and, until 1985, the chairman of the Commission, the Mafia's governing body.[152] Notably, Castellano was one of several organized crime figures who were clients of Roy Cohn.[153]

Khashoggi stayed close to Renda throughout these developments. One notable example of this involved a mobster by the name of Lawrence Iorizzo, the president of the mob-linked Vantage Petroleum Company. Iorizzo was close to Martin Carey, the brother of New York governor Hugh Carey and oilman Edward Carey. Vantage had taken over Carey's Petroleum Combustion International, which by that point had already carried out numerous dealings with Iorizzo. Iorizzo would later testify that Martin Carey had been involved in bootlegging gasoline with him and that the profits from these operations had been funneled into Hugh Carey's re-election campaigns.[154]

Iorizzo, in other words, was clearly politically connected, and this was what had caught Renda's attention. Renda had wanted to help Khashoggi, who at the time was struggling to get the proper permits to build a helicopter landing pad at his home just outside New York City. An associate of Renda by the name of Leslie Winkler "told Iorizzo that … Renda might be able to assist Iorizzo in getting a fat oil contract if Iorizzo used his powers of 'persuasion' in New York to help Khashoggi.… Renda said if Iorizzo could 'remove these obstacles,' Khashoggi would be most appreciative."[155]

At the same time that they were concocting a way to get Khashoggi's helipad up and running, Renda and Iorizzo agreed to embark on a classic bank bust-out scheme, akin to what Renda and Schwimmer were doing with the savings and loans. Renda would make deposits at a bank, which would then make loans to a Panamanian shell company controlled by Iorizzo – loans that would never be repaid.[156] The shell company that Iorizzo used was called Houston Holdings, and it had been purchased by Iorizzo from Steven Sandor Samos, a lawyer who maintained a lucrative trade in off-the-shelf Panamanian companies.[157] Iorizzo and Samos had been introduced by Renda's friend Leslie Winkler, and one of Samos' primary business associates was a Florida banker named Ray Corona – the partner of Leonard Pelullo in Sunshine State Bank.[158]

Samos also made an appearance in the Iran-Contra affair. Southern Air Transport purchased a Panamanian company called Amalgamated Commercial Enterprises, which it used to "purchase and maintain planes carrying supplies to the contras."[159] ACE was one of Samos' off-the-shelf companies, and all of the company's officers were employed by International Management and Trust Corp., a company run by Samos. Another noteworthy link involves how ACE utilized bank accounts at the Banco de Iberoamerica, a location that Samos was accused of using as a conduit for drug money laundering.[160] Banco de Iberoamerica was a subsidiary of the Arab Banking Corporation, a major international bank headquartered in Bahrain that offered floating rate notes on the open market on behalf of BCCI.[161]

Among the S&Ls where Renda and Schwimmer were brokering deposits of union pension fund money was Houston's Mainland Savings. This same S&L became embroiled in a series of overly complicated financial transactions with Khashoggi and a slew of business partners, the origins of which go back to 1974.[162] That was when Khashoggi purchased a large tract of property adjacent to the Galleria, a major shopping hub in downtown Houston that had been developed with the aid of the Marcos family of the Philippines. Khashoggi acted as front man for Imelda Marcos on more than one occasion.[163] Khashoggi let the land sit bare until 1979, when he was joined by Clint Murchison Jr., scion of the Dallas oil family. With $15 million in financing courtesy of Texas Commerce Bank, the pair embarked on an ambitious development plan.

The plans never came to fruition and, three years later, Murchison exited the scheme. Khashoggi began looking for buyers for the land and began cooking up other real estate schemes. One of these was in Aspen, Colorado, where he and a developer named John Roberts planned to purchase property using a $44 million loan from Commerce Savings, plus an additional $14 million from San Jacinto Savings. In a now-obvious pattern, this money disappeared into the black void of Khashoggi's finances. What was left was a staggering debt owed to a string of banks and S&Ls.

Mainland Savings, flush with deposits from Khashoggi's friend Mario Renda, offered an ambitious way out of these problems by purchasing Khashoggi's Galleria-adjacent property for the grossly inflated sum of $68 million dollars. Of this, $22 million would be put up by Mainland itself, with the remainder provided by a loan from Austin-based Lamar Savings. The plan was: "The $30 million in prior loans from Texas Commerce Bank and San Jacinto Savings would be paid off. Khashoggi would buy $10 million in preferred stock at Mainland and use $12 million as a down payment to buy foreclosed loans real estate (called 'cash for trash'), thus boosting its capital and keeping regulators at bay. That left $16 million for miscellaneous costs and Khashoggi."[164]

A problem arose when Mainland could only get Khashoggi's property valued at $55 million, short of the $68 million that they had originally hoped for. They were able to inflate the loan up to $58 million, which covered most of the debts and miscellaneous costs – except for the $10 million that was to be used by Khashoggi to buy Mainland stock and bad assets. Luckily for Mainland, Khashoggi had additional properties next to the Galleria-adjacent tract in question, which he had financed through S&L borrowing. Khashoggi was issued lines of credit by Mainland that were marked for developing those properties, but they were actually used to cover the missing $10 million. But there was something else: "On the same day, Mainland signed a $5 million letter of credit to Khashoggi."[165]

The deal between Mainland and Khashoggi over these lines of credit was reached on August 1, 1985, just weeks before the arms transfers to Iran were underway. These transfers, of course, relied on a $5 million advance from Khashoggi. As Pete Brewton notes, the $5 million line of credit from Mainland vexed regulators and attracted the attention of the FBI. It was then discovered that Mainland's executives had worked to conceal it from the S&L's board of directors. Khashoggi later denied that the $5 million came from Mainland, instead claiming that Tiny Rowland had been the source of the funds. However, as mentioned, Rowland denied this. Mainland, for its part, insisted the money was a guarantee to Khashoggi for his purchase of $10 million in Mainland stock – $10 million, it must be reiterated, that was coming from Mainland itself.

It might be tempting to write the Mainland events off as a curiosity, another dead end in the hall of mirrors that is the Iran-Contra affair. There are, however, other ties between Mainland and Lamar Savings – the institution that loaned Mainland the bulk of the money for the Khashoggi deal – and the netherworld of BCCI and intelligence agencies. Besides Khashoggi, one of the major borrowers at both of these savings and loans was Mounzer Hourani, a Lebanese-American from Utah with extensive interests in Texas real estate.[166] Hourani might have had intelligence connections. "A former high-ranking officer at Lamar Savings," writes Brewton, "said that Hourani claimed to have ties to the Mossad."[167]

Ties to Israeli intelligence or not, Hourani was certainly linked to Utah's Orrin Hatch, who, as mentioned, was tightly connected to BCCI and to First American. Hatch stated that he had known Hourani "from the mid-1980s and was partly based on their shared devotion to the Mormon faith."[168] Hourani, meanwhile, told NBC News' Mark Hosenball that he had joined with Hatch and BCCI insider Mohammed Hammoud on "various private schemes to free US hostages held by terrorists in Lebanon."[169]

In 1986, Hourani was in hot water over his borrowing at Mainland, which by that point had collapsed and had been taken over by the Federal SavingS&Loan Insurance Corporation. Hatch appears to have tried to intervene directly, penning a letter to the federal institution stating that a possible "resolution" could be found with respect to Hourani's problems.[170] Four years later, as BCCI began to fumble toward collapse, Hatch once again acted as Hourani's lobbyist. He reached out to the beleaguered bank requesting that they lend money to Hourani for a series of real estate ventures in Illinois, Minnesota, and Texas.[171] Hourani himself then sent a proposal for financing. It is not clear if any proposed loans were ever actually provided.

Hatch has one more connection to figures in this saga. In 1985, during the peak of his Mainland borrowing and the initiation of the Iran weapons sales, Khashoggi arrived in Salt Lake City, Utah, with grand plans to build "two gold-colored 43 story office towers that would dwarf the nearby Mormon Church office building, the tallest structure in town."[172] Khashoggi had been a presence in Salt Lake City since the 1970s, and this increased significantly during the 1980s. Yet, by 1987, construction on the towers had been abandoned and Khashoggi had fled Utah, leaving numerous unpaid loans and broken promises in his wake.

It was during this period, Hatch stated, that he had met Khashoggi. Details on their relationship are scarce, but, according to Hatch, their association was the senator "extending the courtesies he would to any big investor in Utah."[173]

"A PAN-EUROPEAN PLOT"

A key aspect of the covert operations of the Reagan era that is frequently overlooked is that, with respect to the complex trafficking of arms to Iran, Oliver North and the Enterprise were dipping their toes into a much wider swamp of political and economic corruption, arms trafficking, and money laundering on a truly colossal scale. As the conflict between Iraq and Iran heated up, companies, banks, intelligence agents, and smugglers poured arms and military materials into both sides of a bloody war.

Despite laws barring such activities, the conflict in the Middle East was a boom time for many. For instance, there was the so-called powder cartel, a "pan-European plot" to move propellant powder for artillery and other armaments to Iran.[174] At the top of this cartel was Bofors-Nobel, the Swedish arms combine that is now the Swedish subdivision of the massive UK-based defense contractor BAE Systems. Bofors had a close relationship with Iran that predated the revolution. In the early 1970s, the company entered into a business agreement with the country to build an armaments factory. Relations between the two were suspended following the revolution. However, a dip in Bofors' balance sheet, a product of the downsizing of the Swedish military, led the company to embark on the lucrative path of embargo busting. Moving propellant powder to Iran required numerous partners, complicit shipping agents, and payoffs to officials. The primary mechanism for coordinating this network was the European Association for the Study of Safety Problems in the Production and Use of Propellant Powders, a public relations group organized and set up by Bofors and other European weapons manufacturers following a series of disastrous plant explosions.[175] This provided a convenient cover for these various arms merchants to come together, arrange the logistics for weapons orders, disperse the proceeds, and even inflate prices of their wares.

The Bofors powder cartel made extensive use of Italian companies for arranging shipping and payments. Soon, Italy had become the primary locus of this subterranean arms trade. In an October 1990 exposé in Euro-money magazine, the role of the French arms manufacturer Luchaire in the trafficking of arms to Iran was dissected.176 Luchaire had two subsidiaries based in Italy, SEA and Consar, which were used to arrange the movement of weapons through the Islamic Republic of Iran Shipping Lines. The ships would log false destinations and then make their way to Iran via secret routes. The arms loaded on these ships were not only sourced from Luchaire, as SEA and Consar acted as intermediaries for numerous European companies involved in the trade.

One such firm was Defarm, which was actively collaborating with Bofors in the illicit movement of propellant powder.[177] The founder of Defarm was Nicola Dubini, who had cofounded Consar before he sold it to Luchaire. Another firm was a Portuguese arms brokerage called Defex, described in testimony as having a "close relationship" with Richard Secord, after having been introduced by Thomas Clines.[178] It became one of the companies utilized by the Enterprise. According to Albert Hakim, Defex sourced weapons from Eastern Bloc arms manufacturers and merchants, which were then purchased and resold to the Contras.

Behind these moves were various European banks, some shadowy and others well known. On the shadowy side, there was International Bankers Incorporated, which issued lines of credit to SEA and Consar.[179] The Italian branch of International Bankers Incorporated was located in a building owned by the scandal-plagued Banco Ambrosiano, which had been set up by Jean-Maxime Lévêque in 1982. Lévêque had previously been the president of Crédit Commercial de France, a sizable French bank that, incidentally, had lent Adnan Khashoggi large sums for his Salt Lake City ventures.[180] The major shareholders of International Bankers Incorporated included the Saudi businessman Akram Ojjeh, a friend of Adnan Khashoggi's, and Robert Maxwell.[181]

More well-known was the French merchant bank Banque Worms, which was nationalized by the Mitterand government in 1982. During the period when the French state owned the bank, it held 23 percent of Luchaire and aided in financing the flow of arms and powder.[182] Joining Banque Worms in these efforts was a renowned Italian bank, Banca Nazionale del Lavoro. The interactions were complex, as R. T. Naylor has described in Patriots and Profiteers:

> Bank Melli [the Iranian bank handling their side of the financing] would order its Italian correspondent banks to issue LCs [lines of credit] on behalf of Luchaire's Italian subsidiaries, which sent them to Italy's Banca Nazionale del Lavoro.… BNL would use the original LCs as security to issue their own LCs in favour of the Luchaire parent firm in France. That firm sent the LCs to Banque Worms for negotiation. When the goods were loaded up on board ships, Banque Worms would present its LCs to BNL for payment, and BNL would do likewise with the correspondent banks of Bank Melli. The use of back-to-back letters of credit was a simple but effective device for breaking up the money trail.[183]

London was another major hub for these activities, with various arms merchants playing a role in the flow of weapons as far back as 1981. Chief among these were Ben Banerjee, an arms dealer and owner of BR&W Industries, and his close associates Michael and Leslie Aspin. According to Die Welt, Banerjee and Michael Aspin were involved in negotiations between Oliver North and several representatives from the Iranian government in 1984 over the sale of $264 million worth of TOW missiles. Subsequently, evidence was entered as part of a British court case that showed that Banerjee's BR&W Industries did indeed attempt to move 1,250 TOW missiles to Iran, which were obscured in customs invoices as "lift trucks."[184]

These customs invoices were handled by BCCI, and they were "accompanied by telexes and letters on BCCI stationary of a nature and type ordinarily used by BCCI, showing BCCI providing counter guarantees and letters of credit involving the 'lift trucks.'"[185] What is more, according to Michael Aspin's brother, Leslie, these TOW missile sales were indeed part of North's operation. Leslie Aspin further claimed that he and North had opened three joint bank accounts at the Paris branch of BCCI to launder money for these sales and that one of these accounts was under the name "Devon Island." The Senate subcommittee investigating BCCI learned that BCCI Paris did indeed have a Devon Island account, but they were unable to acquire internal documentation for this branch.

The use of suspect invoice techniques, such as classifying TOW missiles as "lift trucks," seemed to be a habit of Michael Aspin's. In the early 1980s, he was working closely with a British arms dealer named Leonard Hammond, who also manufactured machine gun parts through his company, Delta Engineering. Hammond and Aspin used Delta Engineering to move machine guns to the Middle East and Africa, with a particular focus on South Africa. By 1981, they were moving arms to Iran.[186] Frequently, these arms flows were mislabeled on invoices as "hydraulic lifting tools."

Aspin and Hammond had a particularly close relationship with Kuehne & Nagel, a large German freight-and-logistics company.[187] When the arms dealers moved a thousand rifles to South Africa in 1980 – invoiced as "hi-lift hydraulic machinery spares" – K & N's subsidiary Air Cargo handled the freight. In 1981, K & N worked with Aspin and Hammond in moving weapons destined for Iran. K & N, according to Aspin, played a role very similar to that which BCCI would later play in moving TOW missiles in 1984. He told Spiegel that "the management of Kuehne & Nagel knew about the illegal arms transports, planned the routes with necessary intermediaries, issued documents and change information."[188]

In 1981, right as these operations were being developed, Kuehne & Nagel was acquired by Tiny Rowland's Lonrho.[189] Were these two events connected? It is impossible to say for sure, but there is reason to suspect that this was the case. As previously mentioned, one Lonrho freight cargo subsidiary has been identified as a participant in Edwin Wilson's covert activities in Libya on behalf of the Shackley network. Lonrho obtained K & N shortly after the loss of that cargo company.

In addition to Italy and the UK, Belgium was a major node in this wide-ranging European network. Of particular interest are the allegations made in the ATLAS dossier, a confidential report drafted by the Belgian Gendarmerie in November 1994. ATLAS makes a series of startling accusations concerning an entity that they describe as "the Nebula" – a network of Belgian businessmen, politicians, and criminals who were involved in arms trafficking, diamond smuggling, drug running, and the like. At the center of the Nebula was Felix Przedborski, a businessman and Belgian diplomat who, since 1978, lived in Costa Rica, where he maintained dual citizenship.

There is a small, but steady stream of press reports independent of the ATLAS dossier that have linked Przedborski to various forms of corruption. Notably, in 1978, Italian police found drugs in a vehicle belonging to the Costa Rican embassy, with one of Przedborski's employees at the wheel. That same year, one of Przedborski's close associates who was serving as Monaco's diplomat to Costa Rica, was arrested in connection with drug trafficking.[190]

When the Costa Rican newspaper La Nación published a series of articles probing Przedborski's connection to various criminal enterprises – based largely on reports already published by European journalists – "Don Felix," as he was known, responded litigiously. In the end, La Nación's journalist, Herrera Ulloa, was charged with criminal defamation and forced to pay Przedborski "a fine equivalent to 120 days' wages."[191]

The ATLAS dossier names numerous individuals in Przedborski's network. Among these were his son Daniel, a Geneva lawyer who was poised to take over his father's complex. Interestingly, Daniel Przedborski, from 1984 through 2019, had worked at the law firm of Pierre Schifferli – Bruce Rappaport's attorney who, as mentioned, had been head of the World Anti-Communist League. Documentation from several lawsuits suggests that Daniel worked directly on some of Rappaport's affairs.

These are not the only familiar faces that appear in the dossier. In a list of banks used by the "Przedborski Group" for money laundering is Republic National Bank, with a note beside it stating that "in this bank it is a certain Safra who would be responsible for special transfers."[192] This, of course, refers to Edmond Safra, thus directly linking the Przedborski Group to Contra support operations and to Republic National. The ATLAS dossier further links the Przedborski Group or Nebula to these support operations: "It is said that some of the weapons of Irangate would have been transferred to the Contras of Nicaragua by this network."[193]

ATLAS identifies one of the lesser-known members of the Nebula as Bruno Goldberger, a purported real estate broker from Brussels. It adds that Goldberger worked "for a certain Globus Group," but the investigators who penned the document stated that they were unfamiliar with this entity. This was likely the Bulgarian state-owned trading company Globus. In Evil Money, Rachel Ehrenfeld cites a DEA report from 1989 that states that Globus "was formerly known as Kintex" – the Bulgarian firm tied to Safra's friend Mohammed Shakarchi and, possibly, Robert Maxwell.[194] The DEA report states Ehrenfeld recounted that "Globus transmitted Middle Eastern drug money to Switzerland via Shakarchi."[195]

Przedborski's time in Costa Rica overlapped with the country being used a major hub for the Enterprise's pro-Contra efforts. The ATLAS dossier charges that, while he was serving a diplomat, Przedborski had embarked on a major business venture: the construction of a "tourist real estate project" in the Santa Elena region of Costa Rica.[196] Intriguingly, North was also using the dense jungles of Santa Elena as cover for secret airstrips that were used for Contra support flights.[197]

Other connections to the Enterprise's operations can be seen via another bank mentioned as being part of Przedborski's network. This was Geoffrey's Bank in Belgium, described in the dossier as a conduit for arms-smuggling payments. Geoffrey's Bank had also been intimately connected to some of Roy Cohn's suspect business activities (see chapter 4). Geoffrey's Bank was controlled by Arno Newman, a friend of Cohn's, and his son, Geoffrey, for whom the bank was named. According to Belgian journalist Willy van Damme, the Newmans were closely connected to Pierre Salik, a clothing manufacturer with close ties to Israel's Mossad.[198] Salik, importantly, was named in the ATLAS dossier as a member of Przedborski's core group: it states that Salik's daughters "were promised in marriage to the two sons of Przedborski," though this never took place for reasons unknown.

A frequent visitor to Geoffrey's Bank – and a close associate of both the Newmans and Pierre Salik – was Jacques Monsieur, described as one of Europe's biggest arms dealers.[199] Like Salik, Monsieur was close to Israeli intelligence. For instance, in 1986, Belgian authorities recovered documentation outlining his contacts with both Mossad and Iran. When he was arrested in Turkey in 2002, in part for having sold "embargoed American spare parts and aviation technology to Iran," numerous press reports identified him as having been an active participant in the Iran-Contra affair.[200]

Willy van Damme writes that Monsieur's introduction to the world of arms trafficking came through a partner of the Newmans named David Benelie. As noted in chapter 4, David Benelie was really David Azulay, the brother of Avner Azulay.[201] Avner, a former Mossad agent, is best known as the business partner of the notorious commodities dealer Marc Rich, who himself worked closely with Israeli intelligence. Azulay was put in charge of the Marc Rich Foundation, the philanthropic appendage of Rich's empire. The foundation has maintained outposts in Zug, Switzerland and in Israel.

Rich has other ties to individuals and entities that populate this netherworld. There are rumors – albeit ones that are difficult to substantiate – that he was close to fellow oil trader John Deuss, who retained the services of Ted Shackley while Shackley was running his "private CIA." There are more demonstrable ties between Rich and Rappaport's Inter Maritime Bank and BCCI. In 1984, for example, the Rothschild Bank in Zurich loaned Rich the astronomical sum of $50 million Swiss francs. The managing director of the bank at that time was Alfred Hartmann, the money manager for Inter Maritime and a frequent BCCI front man.[202]

To complete the circle, the report of the US inquiry into BCCI states:

> Marc Rich remains one of the most important figures in international commodities markets, and remains a fugitive from the United States following his indictment on securities fraud. BCCI lending to Rich amounted to tens of millions of dollars. Moreover, Rich's commodities firms were used by BCCI in connection with BCCI's involving in US guarantee programs through the Department of Agriculture. The nature and extent of Rich's relationship with BCCI requires further investigation.[203]

Others named in the ATLAS dossier as involved in Przedborski-linked arms trafficking suggested Przedborski's group had close connections to the heights of Belgian political power. Featuring prominently among these names was Paul Vanden Boeynants, a meat-packing magnate who had been prime minister from 1966 to 1968 and again from 1978 to 1979. In the interim period, he served as Belgium's defense minister, where he presided over a series of controversial arms deals and a weapons buildup. An adamant cold warrior, Vanden Boeynants moved among the webs spun by groups such as Le Cercle and the World Anti-Communist League.

Vanden Boeynants had a particularly controversial relationship with Roger Boas, another figure whose name appears extensively in the ATLAS dossier. Boas oversaw the Belgian weapons manufacturer ASCO, which profited handsomely during Vanden Boeynants' years as defense minister. De Morgen reported that "as soon as the politician came to Defense in 1972, his company had probably not missed a single defense contract. ASCO … saw its profits increase tenfold in the 1970s."[204] Many of these deals bore the unmistakable signs of corruption, and allegations of bribes and kickbacks, embezzlement and money-laundering, harassment and intimidation often followed in their wake.[205]

There were also the accusations that Vanden Boeynants and Boas made use of a highly connected call girl ring headed by Fortuna Israel, better known as "Madame Tuna." According to De Morgen, Madame Tuna was placed on the payroll of one of Boas' ASCO subsidiaries, where her job title was listed as "decorator."[206] This ring had connections to other familiar faces. Madame Tuna, it seems, was also an associate of Adnan Khashoggi, who reportedly called upon her services for help in obtaining lucrative contracts through subterfuge and blackmail. Boas was reported to have been introduced to Khashoggi and Akram Ojjeh – an investor, alongside Robert Maxwell, in International Bankers Incorporated – by the madame herself.

A direct line between this network of connections and the early 1980s flow of weapons to Iran may well exist. Named in the ATLAS dossier as a member of Przedborski's group was Abraham Shavit, Boas' general manager at ASCO. The dossier describes Shavit as the "right arm of Roger Boas."[207] Shavit was well connected in Israel. For instance, in the 1970s, he served as the president of the Manufacturer's Association of Israel and, afterward, had a stint as the chairman of El Al, Israel's chief airline company that was involved in CIA-Mossad airlifts in the 1980s, including Operation Moses, and has also operated as a front company for Israeli intelligence. He was also reportedly a former Israeli intelligence officer and a close associate of Manuel J. Pires, a CIA-employed arms trafficker.208 Pires would later be identified as one of the Enterprise's middlemen in the Iranian arm sales.

Prior to the Enterprise's operations, in January 1983, ASCO's Malta branch was involved in the transfer of "aircraft parts, weapons and ammunition" to Iran via a contact at Bank Melli.[209] Two ASCO Malta invoices for these show that the shipments were underwritten with a line of credit from BCCI's branch on Brompton Road in London. According to Gary Sick, one of ASCO's liaisons to Iran for these types of arrangements was the arms dealer Hushang Lavi – one of the witnesses who claimed to have inside knowledge of William Casey's October Surprise activities.[210]

GUNS FOR IRAQ

Support for the Iran weapons arrangements was not universal within the Reagan administration and dissenting voices rippled through the corridors of powers. While such dissenters were unable to stop the virtually uncontrollable cascade of events, many of these individuals used the fallout from the scandal to concentrate their political power. Chief among these was George P. Shultz, President Reagan's Secretary of State. During the inquiry into the activities of the Enterprise, Shultz turned over significant documentation to investigators and provided detailed testimony. The official Iran-Contra report states that Shultz used the opportunity afforded by the scandal to "to regain control over counterterrorism policy. Following a strenuous bureaucratic struggle, Shultz persuaded President Reagan to prohibit arms transfers to Iran and to announce that the Department of State would take the lead on such counterterrorism and diplomatic matters in the future."[211]

Shultz testified that he only had fragmentary knowledge of the arms sales and that he had learned fairly late that they had taken place. Senate investigators found, however, that Shultz was far more knowledgeable about what was taking place than he had initially let on. Likewise, he had knowledge of the Iran sales far earlier than what he testified. Nonetheless, the record showed that his opposition to the sales was consistent. What is not mentioned, however, is that Shultz had interests involving Iran's bitter enemy – Saddam Hussein's Iraq.

Early on in his tenure as secretary of state, Shultz dispatched Donald Rumsfeld, who at the time was working as an executive in the private sector, to Iraq to meet with Saddam. The first of these meetings took place in December 1983, with a follow-up meeting in March 1984. Declassified documents illustrate the purpose of the visits was to move the US and Iraq toward normalizing relations, despite official condemnations of Saddam's use of chemical weapons.[212]

Shultz, however, had other things on his mind when he dispatched Rumsfeld. Before he had become Secretary of State, Shultz had been an executive at the construction giant Bechtel. Prior to Bechtel, he had served in multiple positions in the Nixon administration, first as Labor Secretary, then as the Director of the Office of Management and Budget, and finally as Treasury Secretary.[213] He was not the only Bechtel figure high up within the Reagan administration. Caspar Weinberger, who had served alongside Shultz in Nixon's OMB, had also moved to Bechtel. Shultz and Weinberger carried on a multi-decade feud that spilled over into the Reagan administration. Weinberger, unlike Shultz, was a major booster of the Enterprise and had played a role in the Iran weapons transfers.

Bechtel, in the early 1980s, had launched an ambitious, multibillion-dollar project in the Middle East that sought to establish an oil pipeline that would move crude from Kirkuk, Iraq to the port of Aqaba, Jordan, on the banks of the Red Sea. A now-declassified memo from Rumsfeld, sent to the State Department during his December 1983 trip stated that he had "raised the question of a pipeline through Jordan. He [Saddam] said he was familiar with the proposal. However, he was concerned about the proximity to Israel as the pipeline would enter the Gulf of Aqaba."[214]

Weighing heavily on Saddam's mind was Israel's Operation Opera in June 1981, when Israeli military aircraft bombed an unfinished nuclear power plant. The Iraqis would be on the hook for sizable loans connected to Bechtel's project, and the possibility that Israel might destroy the pipeline would place a major burden on Iraq's wartime finances.

The Bechtel pipeline negotiations became something of a boondoggle, rife with subterfuge and intrigue. It intersected in odd ways with the Iran-Contra project, and formed something of a parallel – if not an entirely opposing – operation. In the spring of 1984, Iraq and Jordan agreed to grant Bechtel a contract for pipeline construction that was dependent on several conditions. These included $500 million in financing from the US government; an agreement that American oil companies would take a sizable chunk of the oil moved by the pipeline; and that not only Bechtel, but American banks and the Export-Import Bank, would be involved in the guarantees for the project.[215] As Alan Block points out, the rationale for these demands was simple: put the US government and American businesses on the hook for the project, and they would act as a buffer against Israel.

The agreement operated smoothly until Iraq made an additional demand. It wanted "a 'force majeure clause' that would free Iraq from its obligation to pay interest on construction loans in the event of Israeli aggression."216 With this demand threatening to derail the whole project, an interesting figure interjected himself into the middle of the negotiations: Bruce Rappaport, Casey's good friend and a BCCI insider. Interestingly, one of the directors of Rappaport's Inter Maritime Bank, until 1979, had been a former consultant for Bechtel.

Rappaport wanted a discount on oil transported by the pipeline in exchange for guarantees from Shimon Peres that Israel would leave the pipeline alone. To sweeten the deal, Rappaport was prepared to grant Israel a portion of his profits from this oil deal. The deal with Israel would require two elements: a written security guarantee and an insurance fund for the pipeline set up by Israel. Israel, through Rappaport's intercession, agreed to the former but not the latter, and so the tanker magnate reached out to the Reagan administration for leverage over Israel. He turned to two attorneys he was close to, Samuel Pisar – the powerful attorney whose client list has included Armand Hammer and Robert Maxwell – and E. Robert Wallach. Wallach, in turn, brought Rappaport to the attention of Reagan's Attorney General Edwin Meese. Meese, in turn, managed to bring the National Security Council into the mix, which believed that US government entities like the Overseas Private Investment Corporation could be used to organize the insurance fund.

Several years of torturous negotiations began, with Rappaport acting as a back channel between the US and Israel. One letter, written by Peres, was passed from Rappaport to Wallach to Meese and stated that the Israeli politician would discuss the matter with Shultz himself. It was ultimately for naught. The NSC backed out of the project under the leadership of Admiral John Poindexter, curiously one of Oliver North's chief allies and a major player in the movement of arms to Iran.

Despite this failure, in 1986, Rappaport received a sizable sum of money. Shultz concocted a plan to elicit a $10 million donation from the Sultan of Brunei for the Contras. Elliot Abrams was dispatched to handle the money transfer, and he provided an account number at Credit Suisse bank in Geneva for the deposit. It was presented as an account for the Enterprise's Lake Resources, but when the money was transferred, it ended up in an account controlled by Rappaport. It was later written off as a mistake, with several numbers in the account flipped around and thus "coincidentally" depositing the money with Rappaport. Rappaport, for his part, would deny that he ever received the money – though some of his top personnel, as well as Bert Lance, later told Alan Block that Rappaport had indeed received the funds. Lance stated that the money was used for "pay-offs," while Jerry Townsend – a CIA officer who worked for Rappaport – said that Secord had personally asked him to try to recover the money.

The Bechtel pipeline negotiations were unfolding against a backdrop of what has been described as a geopolitical "tilt" designed to "draw Iraq permanently into the camp of America's Gulf allies."217 A key component of this tilt was the expansion of lines of credit provided to Iraq that were arranged and guaranteed by the Commodity Credit Corporation (CCC), a New Deal–era public corporation set up to provide financing and protections for the US agricultural sector. Ostensibly, the CCC credits to Iraq were to be used strictly for agricultural purchases, with the US adding additional nonagricultural credits via the Export-Import Bank, the same entity involved in the Bechtel pipeline negotiations. The primary bank used to issue these credits was the Atlanta branch of Banca Nazionale del Lavoro (BNL) – the Italian bank that, as mentioned earlier, was working with Banque Worms in financing arms transfers to Iran.

In 1989, BNL-Atlanta was raided by the FBI, and revelations soon followed that the bank had been providing massive loans to Iraq that were "far in excess of the amounts reported to the Federal Reserve."[218] These loans, in turn, were being used by Iraq to purchase weapons. Beside the CCC-guaranteed lines of credit that were mixed in with BNL's lending, the possibility was raised that the CCC itself – with or without its knowledge – had acted as an underwriter of arms deals. An investigation into what was dubbed "Iraqgate" led to the verdict that there was, in fact, no conspiracy on the part of the CCC and the Reagan administration to arm Iraq. Yet, the overlap in time with the Bechtel negotiations and Donald Rumsfeld's trips to Iraq seems to paint a different picture.

The Export-Import Bank is just one direct connection between the CCC/BNL affair and the Bechtel pipeline negotiations. Another was the connection that came from Rappaport himself – his close associate at Inter Maritime Bank, Alfred Hartmann. Hartmann, mentioned earlier in relation to the loans provided to Marc Rich, also maintained a high-ranking position at BNL. Given that Hartmann tended to appear at banks as a representative of BCCI, this may indicate a relationship between BNL and BCCI. Indeed, in 1991, the New York Times reported that BNL-Atlanta had been receiving massive transfers of money from BCCI and its subsidiary First American Bankshares.[219] These transfers, which were happening at the same time as the Iraq loans, appeared to have been made in order to keep the BNL branch afloat.

In the US Congressional hearings that investigated Iraqgate, the relationship between BCCI and BNL's Italian leadership was further elucidated. According to a written statement provided by the head of BNL's North American operations, BNL's former managing director, A. Ferrari – who resigned in 1981 after his membership in the notorious P2 Masonic lodge was revealed – had been close to "Pakistani nationals connected to BCCI."[220] The statement further identified Ferrari as a close friend of Roberto Calvi, the head of Banco Ambrosiano who wound up dead under exceedingly murky circumstances. It also added that Ferrari and the head of BNL's international division, A. Florio, had worked closely with the corruption-plagued Vatican Bank. Finally, the statement charged that Ferrari and Florio exclusively handled BNL's "relationship with people like [Ghaith] Pharaon and Marc Rich."[221]

BCCI and BNL appeared together again in relation to a strange firm called Allivane International Group, which was described in a UK parliamentary inquiry as a "ghost company."[222] Allivane was, like BNL, a participant in the Bofors-led powder cartel that moved propellant powder, munitions, and weapons parts. At the same time, Allivane was participating in multiple illicit weapons deals with Iraq, and, by 1993, the company's leadership was wanted for questioning in the US in relation to the BNL-Atlanta loans.[223] Leaders included Allivane's founder, Terry Byrne, who had previously worked at a company called International Signal and Control and, before that, a "New Jersey firm called Rexon Corp."

Rexon was subsequently placed under investigation for, among other things, providing artillery-fuse parts to Iraq. International Signal and Control, meanwhile, had been founded by James Guerin who was linked, by the UK inquiry, to the Chilean arms dealer Carlos Cardoen, and who between 1984 and 1988 provided minerals used in munitions to Iraq.[224] Ari Ben-Menashe, the former Israeli intelligence officer, has charged that Margaret Thatcher's son Mark Thatcher was also close to Cardoen and had used this connection to broker the sale of armaments to Iraq. At the time, Thatcher was living in Texas, where he had cultivated contacts that included former Senator John Tower.225

While the relationship between Allivane and BNL remains vague, what is certain is that BCCI was working closely with both companies. It reportedly held several different accounts at BCCI during the mid-1980s and, in 1987, BCCI was "prepared to ensure the sale of 50,000 sets of fuses" by Allivane.[226] Invoices obtained by British parliamentarians further indicated a business relationship between Allivane and a company called Space Research Corporation, which had been tied in other reports to Allivane's successor Rexon Corp, to Carlos Cardoen and Mark Thatcher, and to BCCI.[227]

Space Research Corporation is best remembered for the man behind the company: Gerald Bull, a Canadian-born engineer and artillery expert who, prior to his 1990 assassination in the doorway of his Brussels apartment, had designed weapons systems for the Iraqis and the Chinese. He had also brokered the sale of arms to South Africa. Yet, his most famous effort was Project Babylon.

Commissioned by the Iraqi government, Project Babylon was intended to construct a series of space guns, based on Bull's earlier designs for launching satellites into orbit. These guns would be used to fire projectiles high into the atmosphere or near-earth orbit in order to reach targets far beyond the range of normal artillery equipment.

The ownership structure of Space Research Corporation was fascinating. In the late 1960s, it was jointly controlled by the Great West Saddlery Company and Arthur D. Little, the Boston corporate consultancy firm and think tank. The CEO of Arthur D. Little at the time was General James Gavin. In 1982, Gavin, along with Clark Clifford's partner Robert Altman, joined the board of Financial General Bankshares. Great West Saddlery had been a defunct company taken over by Edward and Peter Bronfman – the nephews of Samuel Bronfman – and they transformed it into an investment vehicle.[228] The acquisition of companies by way of Great West Saddlery was financed through Edper Investments, a holding company owned by the brothers. Edper, in turn, had been financed through the sale of Seagram's stock held by Edward and Peter Bronfman.

When the Iraqgate scandal began to break in the early 1990s, attention turned to former Secretary of State Henry Kissinger because, in 1985, he had taken a spot on the international advisory board of BNL. Furthermore, Kissinger's corporate consultancy firm, Kissinger Associates, counted the Italian bank as a client. Kissinger Associates, which had been set up in the early 1980s with seed money provided by a syndicate of large Wall Street firms led by Goldman Sachs, stacked its partner list with many prominent individuals. Lawrence Eagleburger held a spot at the firm from 1985 through 1989, right between stints as Reagan's Undersecretary of State for Political Affairs and George H.W.Bush's Deputy Secretary of State. Eagleburger had a long history with Kissinger, having served as his special assistant way back in the Nixon administration. Another Kissinger assistant from this period was Brent Scowcroft, who also ended up at Kissinger Associates before becoming Bush's National Security Advisor in 1989.

Both Eagleburger and Scowcroft were linked by government investigators and by the press to BNL, despite their protestations that they had played no role in the Iraq weapons deals. "On three occasions between 1986 and 1989," Rep. Henry B. Gonzalez of Texas recounted, "Mr. Scowcroft briefed the BNL board on international political and economic developments."[229] Once back in government, Scowcroft pushed for the expansion of the Commodity Credit Corporation's Iraq program, and enlisted his underlings in the NSC to provide political pressure to ensure this came to pass.

Eagleburger, meanwhile, was identified as having been present at meetings between BNL managers and Kissinger Associates in 1987. Though he denied interactions with BNL, events during the year prior to this meeting suggest that Eagleburger was being less than honest. In 1986, LBS Bank, the US subsidiary of Yugoslavia's Ljubljanska Banka, was set up in New York City, and Eagleburger joined the board of directors. Roughly 2 percent of LBS' business was carried out with BNL, and it had even purchased some of the loans that the Italian bank had made to Iraq.[230] Two years after it had opened its doors, LBS Bank was implicated in a money-laundering scheme connected to the transfer of high technology to the Eastern Bloc.[231]

Kissinger also had personal ties to George P. Shultz. As with Eagleburger and Scowcroft, the relationship between the men formed during the Nixon administration. Kissinger attested, "For decades, George and I talked practically every Sunday," and that if "in a position to choose a president, I would select George Shultz."[232] When Shultz first accepted the position as Reagan's Secretary of State, Kissinger was the first person he consulted.[233] Reportedly, this consultation pertained directly to developing a roadmap for Middle East policy. It seems likely that the question of Iraq was among the subjects discussed.

Besides the personal relationship between Kissinger and Shultz, there was a line running from Kissinger Associates to Bechtel via William E. Simon, a director at the firm who had served as a consultant to the construction giant. He also served on the board of Tamco, a corporate concern of the Gouletas family, who are discussed in relation to Jeffrey Epstein in chapter 11, and was also connected to Covenant House and AmeriCares, discussed in chapter 10. Simon further maintained a position as chairman of an investment vehicle controlled by Suliman Olayan, a Saudi investor who had embarked on major joint ventures with Bechtel.[234] Simon, too, had a long history with Kissinger. For instance, he had served as Shultz's successor as Nixon's Treasury Secretary, and while there he developed what Kissinger later described as an "affectionate comradeship" with the Secretary of State.[235]

Each of these facts is certainly suggestive. When put together, a portrait emerges of a network – wrapped inside the Reagan administration but extending beyond it into companies such as Kissinger Associates, Bechtel, and BNL – that was working to not only promote the "tilt" to Iraq but was actively aiding Iraq in its fight against Iran. Particular institutions such as BNL – and BCCI – appear to have worked both sides of the conflict, supplying money and logistical support for the flow of arms to Iran and Iraq alike.

Seen from this perspective, the Bofors-led powder cartel, which was interlinked with the activities of the Enterprise, was just one element in a truly international network of money laundering, backroom deals, and arms trafficking. This tapestry, in turn, was the backdrop for the dark maneuvers of factional infighting that cut across the governments of the countries involved.

To bring these matters full circle, it is worth turning to the matter, left unresolved in the official inquiry, of the ties of Kissinger Associates to BCCI. In 1986, a consultant with Kissinger's firm, Sergio de Costa, was recruited by BCCI to aid in the takeover of a bank in Brazil.[236] Before the ink had dried on the paperwork, de Costa began to lobby Kissinger Associates to take BCCI on as a client. He found an ally at Kissinger Associates in Alan Stoga, a former chief economist at the First National Bank of Chicago – an institution historically linked to Rockefeller interests. Stoga – who had reportedly attended the 1987 meeting with BNL where Lawrence Eagleburger was also present – later communicated extensively with BCCI principals and even, on a handful of occasions, met with them in person.

When the BCCI inquiry was underway, Kissinger Associates painted a picture in which Stoga had pushed for the firm to take on BCCI on as a client, while Kissinger had been more reticent. This narrative was shaped by the files and communiqués that the firm had turned over to investigators, indicating that Stoga's talks with BCCI terminated in December 1988. Yet, the files turned over by BCCI itself complicated this picture: they showed that Stoga was still meeting with BCCI representatives a month later, in January 1989. Kissinger Associates stated that Stoga reiterated at this meeting that the talks could not continue, but BCCI's files stated that, at the meeting, it "was established that it is in our interest for both parties to continue with conversations. As such, the door for an eventual relationship remains open."[237]

With BCCI's compounding notoriety and eventual collapse, a working relationship between the bank and Kissinger Associates was never cemented. Kissinger Associates did, however, make an "unofficial" recommendation for BCCI by referring them to the New York law firm of Arnold & Porter.[238] One of the partners at Arnold & Porter, named directly on the referral to BCCI, was William D. Rogers, who had served beneath Kissinger in 1976 as the Undersecretary of State for Economic Affairs. Rogers had subsequently helped Kissinger set up Kissinger Associates and was serving on the board at the time that the Arnold & Porter recommendation was being made.

RIVALRIES

Buried deep within the pages of testimony, declassified documentation entered into evidence, and summaries that make up the bulk of the published Iran-Contra proceedings, there are faint traces and hints of an internecine bureaucratic feud that trickled down into Contra-support operations. Scattered throughout this documentation, one finds references to an entity called "the Supermarket," based out of Honduras. A leading military official stationed in Latin America, General John R. Galvin, described the Supermarket as a place where "a lot of weapons … from somewhere overseas" were stored.[239] An unnamed CIA officer who was called to testify, meanwhile, called the Supermarket a "private organization" that was operating in league with "international arms dealers."[240]

The independent counsel's final report (also known as the Walsh report) identifies the figures behind the Supermarket as Ron Martin and Colonel James McCoy, the latter having recruited the former sometime in late 1984. McCoy was a "former US military attaché to Nicaragua," while Martin was "a Miami-based arms dealer who had been the focus of investigation by the Bureau of Alcohol, Firearms and Tobacco for many years."[241] The report adds that Martin had "at one time been charged with providing arms illegally to narcotics traffickers."[242]

The Supermarket actually predated the Secord-led Contra airlift that had been set up at North's behest. This is clearly illustrated in the Walsh report and is alluded to by Howard Kohn and Vicki Monks in their reporting on Iran-Contra that appeared in Rolling Stone. Kohn and Monks write that, while Operation Black Eagle was breaking down and the Enterprise was being assembled, William Casey "turned to a third weapons smuggling operation."[243] Martin and McCoy were not part of Casey's network of operatives; they were instead "entrepreneurs who had learned about the Contra slush fund and hoped to profit from it."[244]

As the Enterprise swung into motion, a significant rivalry developed between the two groups. North's personal notebooks illustrate that the Supermarket became a growing concern for the Enterprise during 1985. That spring, North wrote down information about Martin and McCoy's operation that Secord had gleaned from Rafael Quintero, the CIA-trained Cuban exile who had become involved with the Shackley network in the 1970s. Among the information listed was that Martin was wanted in Guatemala for "criminal activity" and that Defex – the Portuguese arms dealing outfit that Secord was close to – would not do business with them.

North also noted that there was "possible Martin interference w/Puerto Cortez [sic] delivery." This was a reference to an Enterprise-organized weapons shipment from Portugal destined for Puerto Cortés in Honduras, which Martin had learned about through his own network of sources. He dispatched the Supermarket's chief agent, the Cuban American Mario Delamico, who posed as one of Secord's employees in order to obtain a cargo manifest from the ship, the Erria, when it docked. Martin later stated that he "used the manifest and other documents that Dellamico [sic] took from the Erria to convince [Mario] Calero that Secord was 'ripping off' the Contras.'"[245]

Other notes made by North show that he was interested in where the money for the Supermarket had come from in the first place. On July 12, 1985, he wrote that he had received information that the "[Honduran] Army plans to seize all [weapons] when supermarket comes to a bad end," and that "$14 [million] to finance [the Supermarket] came from drugs."246 Despite the relationship between North's operations and drug traffickers, he used this link of the Supermarket's financing to drugs – with Noriega allegedly being the connection here – to warn others to avoid them. North later stated that he was being guided in these decisions by William Casey himself.

Evidence of Martin's wider involvement with the Latin America drug trade comes through his choice to employ Theodore Klein, a Miami criminal-defense lawyer, as his attorney. Klein had previously represented Jack DeVoe, a pilot and owner of a charter airline service that operated as a front for a Colombian-led cocaine-smuggling operation. DeVoe had entered the world of drug smuggling in 1970 and, by the 1980s, he was in league with a powerful drug smuggler named Pepe Cabrera, a partner of Carlos Lehder.[247] When it came to laundering the proceeds of this smuggling operation, DeVoe looked to Jack Freeman – a veteran of Paul Helliwell's law firm and, for a time, the in-house counsel for Castle Bank & Trust.[248]

According to Theodore Klein, Felix Rodriguez – a longtime actor in CIA shadow operations who was then connected to the Enterprise – had some sort of "business relationship" with the Supermarket.[249] This particular connection may help determine who might have been the actual benefactors of the Supermarket. By 1986, significant tensions had built up between Rodriguez and North, but the Walsh report shows extensive contact between Rodriguez and Donald Gregg, the former CIA official who had become Vice President Bush's National Security Advisor.

Rodriguez had first been introduced to North through William R. Bode, a State Department official who might have also been an asset for the CIA.[250] That same day, Rodriguez met with Gregg to discuss "his [Rodriguez's] interest in going to El Salvador." Gregg promised to make introductions between Rodriguez and key people and reported the meeting to Vice President Bush as soon as it concluded. Less than a month later, Gregg arranged for a meeting between Rodriguez and Bush to discuss counterinsurgency operations in El Salvador.[251]

When Rodriguez was running the Enterprise's Contra resupply operations from El Salvador, working under him as the day-to-day operations manager was CIA-trained Cuban exile Luis Posada Carriles. Posada was a real piece of work – during the 1970s, he had been one of the founding members of the Cuban exile terrorist group CORU, but he had maintained a close connection with US organized crime figures like Lefty Rosenthal before CORU existed. In the decade prior to his recruitment as a cog in the

Enterprise's machinery, he had been identified as "big time trafficker" of Colombian cocaine into Miami.[252]

Records indicate that North was kept abreast of Rodriguez's repeated meetings with Gregg, but it is doubtful that he knew everything that was being discussed between the two. The Walsh report indicates that Rodriguez used those opportunities to express his misgivings about North and the Enterprise, at one point telling Gregg that North was "involved in the Edwin Wilson group."[253]

Whether or not this referred to something earlier in North's career, or simply to the presence of old Shackley network operators like Secord and Clines in the Enterprise, is not clear. However, the role being played by Clines in the Enterprise troubled Rodriguez to no end. The two had been friends going back to the Bay of Pigs, but they had split up over the covert involvement with Libya. Gregg wrote notes about this split that were later entered into evidence during the Iran-Contra hearings. He also noted that "Tom Clines = snake! (would sell his mother)."[254]

In Joseph Trento's Prelude to Terror – largely based on interviews he carried out with Edwin Wilson, Thomas Clines, and others from that nexus – he recounts that it had been Clines who had first introduced and brought Wilson and Rodriguez together in 1973. Wilson, in turn, put Rodriguez in touch with the infamous arms dealer Sarkis Soghanalian, who at the time was looking for somebody to train the Falangists in Lebanon. According to Soghanalian, Wilson told him to take Rodriguez to Lebanon and "don't bring him back … get rid of him."[255]

As the tension built between North and Rodriguez, Rodriguez appeared to have been leveraging his contact with Bush via Donald Gregg. The Walsh report states that, in early 1986, Rodriguez was causing "continual problems" by boasting of his "very close relationship with the Vice President and a number of his people."[256] On January 9, North wrote in his notebook "Felix talking too much about VP connection." Several months later, notes made by North's assistant Robert Earl added a few more pieces to the puzzle. During a meeting between NSC staffers and representatives (including Gregg) of the Office of the Vice President, Earl wrote the following: "Felix needs to be eased out w/honor," "Felix claims working w/VP blessing for CIA," "Mario Delameco [sic], Miami = Felix contact," and "Calero–Martin link = a problem too."[257]

The relationship between Rodriguez and the Supermarket on one side, and between Rodriguez and Bush on the other, raises an important question: was Vice President Bush the ultimate backer of Martin and McCoy's operation? If so, it would likely reflect the ongoing power struggle, first addressed in the last chapter, between Casey and Bush. Casey, after all, was the ultimate backer of the Enterprise, having effectively outsourced CIA activities to North and the remnants of the Shackley network.

There is also other evidence that links Bush to the Supermarket. Howard Kohn and Vicki Monks, for example, noted that the Supermarket was popular among influential Contra supporters in Miami, precisely where Jeb Bush was doing private fundraising for the Contras and, according to a Customs report, was involved in gunrunning on behalf of the fighters.[258] Intriguingly, Newsweek reported in 1988 that it had obtained an NSC report stating that "disclosure of 'covert black money' flowing into Honduras to fund military projects 'could damage' Vice President Bush."[259]

There are also questions of potential connections to Robert Corson, the Houston land developer and rumored CIA asset who was the son-in-law of Bush's friend (and potential intelligence cut-out) Walter Mischer. Corson, as discussed in the last chapter, was identified by controversial whistleblower Richard Brenneke as his partner in money-laundering activities. Importantly, Brenneke further stated that Corson and the Supermarket's Ron Martin were business partners and had even jointly owned a casino in the Canary Islands for several years in the early 1980s.[260] Also suggestive is a complex real estate deal in Florida that involved a thrift, controlled by Corson, called VisionBanc. VisionBanc and several other S&Ls lent money to Mike Adkinson, a reputed arms dealer, to buy up property in the Florida panhandle from St. Joe Paper Company, then controlled by DuPont interests.[261]

When the deal was settled, the money from VisionBanc, never to be paid back, was swiftly tucked away in the Isle of Jersey branch of Bank Cantrade. This was the same bank where Jack Freeman was hiding the proceeds from Jack DeVoe's drug smuggling – and, as mentioned earlier, DeVoe used the same attorney, Theodore Klein, as Ron Martin. It was also the same bank from which GeoMiliTech had drawn its offshore finance managers.

A much more direct linkage comes in the figure of S. Cass Weiland, a Houston lawyer who was retained by Corson. Weiland appears extensively in North's notebooks, mostly in conjunction with figures circulating around the Supermarket. In 1984, North was following a project in Belize that involved both Weiland, then serving as counsel to the Senate Permanent Subcommittee on Investigations, and a Cuban exile named Sergio Brull.[262] Brull appeared later in the notebooks as a key contact for Martin and for John Molina, a Cuban American businessman who was shot to death in Panama in October 1987.

Molina, in the 1970s, was the president of UniBank, the Panamanian subsidiary of the WFC Corporation – the CIA-linked drug smuggling operation and money laundromat – that was co-owned by the First National Bank of Louisville.[263] After WFC went bust, Molina continued to operate in the underworld and eventually became the chief banker for the Supermarket.

If Robert Corson, as Pete Brewton argues, was part of an intelligence apparatus that was tied up with George H.W.Bush, then Corson's connections to banks and to individuals linked to the Supermarket becomes indicative of a pattern. Tellingly, Belize, the country where Weiland and Martin's associate Brull was active, was a primary node for the drug-smuggling ring in which DeVoe was involved. According to a UPI report, "cocaine was flown to Belize and islands in the Caribbean, then to processing points in the United States.… The pure cocaine was then brought to Miami where it was diluted and eventually distributed for street sales throughout the United States."[264]

Brull was mentioned in a 1986 FBI interview given by Richard Secord that concerned an investigation that had been launched into the activities of Jack Terrell. Terrell, using the name "Colonel Flaco," had worked with the Contras through his position in Civilian Materiel Assistance, the militia outfit used to train and assist the fighters that was connected to Singlaub, among others.[265] He subsequently became a whistleblower, turning over information to Florida authorities linking Oliver North, Robert Owen, and John Hull to gun running and drug smuggling. This was prior to revelations about the Enterprise that followed the doomed flight of Eugene Hasenfus in October 1986.

Terrell also provided information to the media. In June 1986, he appeared on a television show called West 57th, where he made allegations that the Contra-support flights were also being used to move drugs into the US. Several days later, North met with assistant FBI director Oliver "Buck" Revell to discuss identifying Terrell as a terrorist suspect – one with potential ties to Nicaraguan intelligence, to boot! This was a clever move on the part of North. In 1984, North organized a special group within the NSC called the Terrorist Incident Working Group (TIWG), which in turn spawned a secretive subunit called the Operations Sub-Group (OSG). This apparatus, dedicated to counterterrorism activities, was made up of North's allies across various agencies – including Buck Revell.

By designating Terrell a terrorism suspect, the FBI's counterterrorism operation was plugged directly into the NSC through Revell, allowing North to have a direct means of monitoring the whistleblower. On July 17, 1986, North sent a memo to Admiral Poindexter stating that, concerning Terrell, the "FBI has notified the Secret Service and is preparing a counterintelligence/counter-terrorism operation plan for review by OSG-TIWG tomorrow."[266]

The FBI interviewed Secord just under a week later, on July 23, 1986. He told the agents that Terrell's allegations were part of a "concerted effort" by an interconnected group of individuals. Operating in "collusion" with Terrell, Secord continued, was "Sergio Brulle [sic], a Cuban-American with a commercial business, a (FNU) [first name unknown] Gomez, whom he described as a bad Cuban involved with drug running."[267] Secord, in other words, was linking Terrell to the Supermarket, since Brull was tied to Martin. Gomez might have been none other than Felix Rodriguez, who frequently went under the alias "Max Gomez."

This statement raises more questions than it answers. By tying Terrell to the Supermarket, was Secord trying to place Martin and McCoy's outfit under FBI counterterrorism surveillance? Or was there truth to this statement? If it was the latter, then it would seem that the Supermarket could have been trying to expose the Enterprise in the press and to US law enforcement. This would directly parallel the claims later made by Seymour Hersh: that a secret intelligence apparatus, run from the Office of the Vice President, had leaked information to the press concerning the missile sales to Iran.

Information and insider knowledge, it seems, was the weapon of choice in the shadow wars fought behind and beneath the bloody covert operations of the Reagan era.

Endnotes

1Sen. John Kerry and Sen. Hank Brown, The BCCI Affair: A Report to the Committee on Foreign Relations, One Hundred Second Congress, Second Session, US Senate, December 1992, 41, https://play.google.com/store/books/details?id=CoKC-Sxb9kIC.

2Jonathan Beaty and S. C. Gwynne, “BCCI: The Dirtiest Bank of Them All,” TIME, July 29, 1991, https://content.time.com/time/subscriber/article/0,33009,973481-1,00.html.

3Beaty and Gwynne, “BCCI: The Dirtiest Bank.”

4The BCCI Affair recounts that “Abedi’s philosophy was often an obscure mix of Islamic mysticism, focusing on the links between the individual, the family, and the universe; and self-help motivational pitches” (Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair, 41). Beaty and Gwynne cite BCCI employees who stated that Abedi would do strange tricks at the bank’s training seminars. “He would hold a piece of paper in his hand and tell them to concentrate on an ink spot in the middle of it, making it grow and shrink in size. As it turned out, there was no ink spot, but he made them believe it.” Jonathan Beaty and S. C. Gwynne, The Outlaw Bank: A Wild Ride into the Secret Heart of BCCI (Ramjac Inc, 1991), 266-67.

5Peter Truell and Larry Gurwin, False Profits: The Inside Story of BCCI, the World’s Most Corrupt Financial Empire (Houghton Mifflin, 1992), 11.

6Truell and Gurwin, False Profits, 11.

7“The BCCI-CIA Connection: Just How Far Did It Go?,” Newsweek, December 6, 1992, https://www.newsweek.com/bcci-cia-connection-just-how-far-did-it-go-195454.

8“The BCCI-CIA Connection.”

9Beaty and Gwynne, “BCCI: The Dirtiest Bank of Them All.”

10Christopher O. Clary, “The A. Q. Khan Network: Causes and Implications,” thesis, Naval Postgraduate School, Monterey, CA., Dec. 2005.

11Beaty and Gwynne, Outlaw Bank, 255, 262.

12Beaty and Gwynne, Outlaw Bank, 139.

13Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair, 34.

14Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair, 34.

15Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair, 46.

16Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair, 59.

17Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair, 128.

18Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair, 128.

19Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair, 128.

20Alan A. Block and Constance Weaver, All Is Clouded by Desire: Global Banking, Money Laundering, and International Organized Crime (Praeger, 2004), 41.

21Truell and Gurwin, False Profits, 40.

22Edward Jay Epstein, Dossier: The Secret History of Armand Hammer (Random House, 1996), 321-22.

23Douglas W. Cray, “People and Business,” New York Times, December 27, 1974.

24Rob Wells, “BCCI Links to Oil Industry,” AP News, August 26, 1991, https://apnews.com/article/228b9990df1c5f952c542cf256d0fd17.

25Truell and Gurwin, False Profits, 43.

26Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair, 128, 134.

27On Irvani and Credit and Commerce Holdings, see The BCCI Affair: Hearings Before the Subcommittee on Terrorism, Narcotics and International Terrorism of the Committee on Foreign Relations, One Hundred and Second Congress, First Session, August 1, 2, and 8, 1991, Part 1, p. 114; On Irvani and Richard Helms as business partners, see “The BCCI-CIA Connection: Just How Far Did It Go?” Newsweek, December 6, 1991, https://www.newsweek.com/bcci-cia-connection-just-how-far-did-it-go-195454.

28“Ex-CIA Leader Aided Bcci Effort, Report Says,” Deseret News, February 16, 1992, https://www.deseret.com/1992/2/16/18968049/ex-cia-leader-aided-bcci-effort-report-says-br.

29“Ex-CIA Leader Aided BCCI.”

30“Ex-CIA Leader Aided BCCI.”

31Douglas Frantz, “BCCI: Odd Bank with Air of Cult: From its Roots in Pakistan until its Closure by Regulators, the Institutions Story Is One of Secretive Clients, Powerful Friends, and Global Fraud,” Los Angeles Times, Sept. 3, 1991, https://www.latimes.com/archives/la-xpm-1991-09-03-mn-1965-story.html; Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair, 145.

32Whitney Webb, “The Genesis and Evolution of the Jeffrey Epstein, Bill Clinton Relationship,” MintPress News, August 23, 2019, https://www.mintpressnews.com/genesis-jeffrey-epstein-bill-clinton-relationship/261455/.

33Truell and Gurwin, False Profits, 73.

34Truell and Gurwin, False Profits, 84.

35Truell and Gurwin, False Profits, 376.

36Scott Chase and Chapin Wright, “BANKING, FINANCE,” Washington Post, June 29, 1981, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/business/1981/06/29/banking-finance/8893eab1-954c-458e-b9dd-1b0de7554f92/.

37Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair, 523.

38Frantz, “BCCI: Odd Bank.”

39Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair, 179.

40Beaty and Gwynne, Outlaw Bank, 228.

41Pete Brewton, The Mafia, CIA and George Bush (SPI Books, 1992), 221.

42Russ Baker, Family of Secrets (Bloomsbury Press, 2010), 296-97.

43Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair, 486.

44Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair, 612.

45Beaty and Gwynne, Outlaw Bank, 238-45.

46Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair 93-94.

47Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair 99.

48Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair 98.

49Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair, 101.

50Philip Shendon, “BCCI’s Best Customer Is Also Its Worst Customer,” New York Times, August 6, 1991.

51Truell and Gurwin. False Profits, 35.

52Block and Weaver, Clouded by Desire, 86.

53Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair, 482.

54Truell and Gurwin, False Profits, 18.

55Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair, 320.

56Susan Mazur, “Caspian Tales: John Deuss, Oil, Spooks and Cohibas,” Scoop Independent News, November 29, 2007, https://www.scoop.co.nz/stories/HL0711/S00443/caspian-tales-johndeuss-oil-spooks-cohibas.htm.

57Christopher Dicky, “US Firm, Headed by Ex-CIA Man, Provides Oman More Than Stability,” Los Angeles Times, April 27, 1986.

58On Tetra Tech and Tetra Finance, see Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair, 319. On Tetra Finance, John Shaheen, and BCCI links, see Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair, 315-18.

59William J. Eaton, “Senate Told of Noriega-BCCI Cover-Up,” Los Angeles Times, July 31, 1992, https://www.latimes.com/archives/la-xpm-1992-07-31-mn-4549-story.html.

60Eaton, “Senate Told of Noriega-BCCI Cover-Up.”

61Ricardo Castillo, “Convicted Trafficker Describes Noriega’s Links to Drug Cartel,” Washington Post, Nov. 20, 1991, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1991/11/20/convicted-trafficker-describes-noriegas-links-to-drug-cartel/50a6668d-242e-4b66-805f-e611ed11715c/.

62Peter Dale Scott and Jonathan Marshall, Cocaine Politics: Drugs, Armies, and the CIA in Central America (University of California Press, 1998), 68.

63Scott and Marshall, Cocaine Politics, 66.

64See Howard Kohn and Vicky Monks, “The Dirty Secrets of George Bush,” Rolling Stone, November 3, 1988, https://www.rollingstone.com/politics/politics-news/the-dirty-secrets-of-george-bush-71927/; John Cummings and Ernest Volkman, “Snowbound,” Penthouse, July 1989.

65Kohn and Monks, “Dirty Secrets.”

66Scott and Marshall, Cocaine Politics, 74.

67Armstrong, Scott, Malcolm Byrne, Thomas S. Blanton, Laurence Chang, Glenn Baker, and National Security Archive, The Chronology: The Documented Day-to-Day Account of the Secret Military Assistance to Iran and the Contras (NY: Warner, 1987), 12, 13, 15, 19, 26, 24, 33, https://archive.org/details/chronologydocume00arms.

68Kohn and Monks, “Dirty Secrets.”

69Joseph John Trento, Prelude to Terror : The Rogue CIA and the Legacy of America’s Private Intelligence Network (New York : Carroll & Graf, 2005), 276, http://archive.org/details/preludetoterrorr00tren.

70Trento, Prelude to Terror, 277.

71Armstrong et al, The Chronology, 148.

72Armstrong et al, The Chronology, 152.

73Final Report of the Independent Counsel for Iran/Contra Matters, Volume 1: Investigations and Prosecutions, United States Court Of Appeals for the District of Columbia Circuit, August 4, 1993, chap. 8, https://irp.fas.org/offdocs/walsh/chap_08.htm.

74Armstrong et al, The Chronology, 237.

75Final Report, chap. 8.

76Edward Cowan, “Board Defeat Angers Cornfeld,” New York Times, July 2, 1970.

77Joint Hearings Before the House Select Committee to Investigate Covert Arms Transactions with Iran and Senate Select Committee on Secret Military Assistance to Iran and the Nicaraguan Opposition: Testimony of Robert C. McFarlane, Gaston J. Sigur, Jr., and Robert W. Owen, One Hundredth Congress, First Session, May 11, 12, 13, 14, and 19, 1987, p. 451, https://archive.org/details/Iran-ContraHearingsTestimonyTranscripts/1987-irn-0003-McFarlane-Sigur-Owen/.

78Armstrong et al, The Chronology, 16.

79David Rogers, “Panama Records Show Strongest Link between Swiss Firm, Airlift to Contras,” Wall Street Journal, January 30, 1987.

80Scott and Marshall, Cocaine Politics, 13.

81Scott and Marshall, Cocaine Politics, 87.

82Susan B. Trento, The Power House: Robert Keith Gray and the Selling of Access and Influence in Washington (St. Martin’s Press, 1992), 262-63.

83Final Report, chap. 13, https://irp.fas.org/offdocs/walsh/chap_13.htm.

84Armstrong et al, The Chronology, 79.

85E. Trine Starnes, on January 30, 1986, was invited to the White House to meet personally with President Reagan, Spitz Channell, Elliot Abrams, and others. The special event was for individuals who had donated $30,000 or more to the National Endowment for the Preservation of Liberty. Starnes seems to have had ties to the circles around George H.W.Bush. He was reportedly part of the group of S&L borrowers around Robert Corson and John Riddle, referenced elsewhere here. He was also the second biggest borrower at Silverado Savings, the Colorado thrift where Neil Bush sat on the board of directors. “On September 30, 1986, exactly eight months after Starnes made his contribution to the Contra cause, he and his associates received three loans from Silverado Savings totaling $77.5 million” (Brewton, The Mafia, 258).

86Final Report, chap. 13, https://irp.fas.org/offdocs/walsh/chap_13.htm.

87Sidney Blumenthal, “Reagan Doctrine’s Passionate Advocate,” Washington Post, Decem-ber 17, 1986, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1986/12/17/reagan-doctrines-passionate-advocate/750d4579-a2f0-4f72-826c-33966e8b5e64/.

88Allegations of Connections between CIA and the Contras in Cocaine Trafficking to the United States, Vol. 2, The Contra Story, "Pilots, Companies, and Other Individuals Working for Companies Used to Support the Contra Program," Oct. 8, 1998, https://irp.fas.org/cia/product/cocaine2/pilots.html.
89Scott and Marshall, Cocaine Politics, 11.
90Scott and Marshall, Cocaine Politics, 118-19.
91Scott and Marshall, Cocaine Politics, 118.

92Drugs, Law Enforcement and Foreign Policy: A Report Prepared by the Subcommittee on Terrorism, Narcotics and International Operations, Committee on Foreign Relations, United States Senate, December 1988, 44, https://www.ojp.gov/ncjrs/virtual-library/abstracts/drugs-law-enforcement-and-foreign-policy.
93Scott and Marshall, Cocaine Politics, 42.
94"The Cali Cartel: The New Kings of Cocaine," US Department of Justice, November 1994, https://www.ojp.gov/pdffiles1/Digitization/152436NCJRS.pdf.
95Scott and Marshall, Cocaine Politics, 41.
96"US Probing Claims That CIA Operative, DEA Official Betrayal Led to Murder of Agent: Report," Fox News, February 28, 2020, https://www.foxnews.com/us/dea-agent-kiki-camare-na-murder-investigation.
97Scott and Marshall, Cocaine Politics, 41.
98Drugs, Law Enforcement and Foreign Policy, 48.
99Allegations of Connections, "Pilots, Companies, and Other Individuals Working for Companies Used to Support the Contra Program."
100Allegations of Connections, "Pilots, Companies, and Other Individuals Working for Companies Used to Support the Contra Program."
101Drugs, Law Enforcement and Foreign Policy, 49.
102Gerald Colby, DuPont Dynasty: Behind the Nylon Curtain, ePub (Open Road Media, 2014), 1154.
103FBI files on Civilian Materiel Assistance obtained by Edmund Berger via the Freedom of Information Act request tie the CMA to the 20th Special Forces Group. Beyond this, allegations have been made that the CMA, during the Contra years, obtained "surplus U.S. military equipment from the 20th Special Forces Unit of the US Army in Alabama" ("Declarations of the Plaintiff's Counsel, filed by the Christic Institute," US District Court, Miami, Florida, March 31, 1988, 80).
104On the World Anti-Communist League, see Scott Anderson and Jon Lee Anderson, Inside the League: The Shocking Expose of How Terrorists, Nazis, and Latin American Death Squads Have Infiltrated the World Anti-Communist League (Dodd Mead, 1986); and Russ Bellant, Old Nazis, the New Right and the Republican Party: Domestic Fascist Networks and Their Effect on Cold War Policy (South End Press, 1991).
105Block and Weaver, Clouded by Desire, 108.
106Chip Berlet, The Hunt for the Red Menace: How Government Intelligence Agencies and Private Right-Wing Groups Target Dissidents and Leftists as Subversive Terrorists and Outlaws (Political Research Associates, 1994), https://politicalresearch.org/sites/default/files/2018-10/huntred-1994.pdf.
107Holly Sklar, Washington's War on Nicaragua (South End Press, 1999), 82.
108Albin Krebs and Robert Thomas Jr., "Notes on People: Roy Cohn Joins Board of Anti-Communist Group," New York Times, May 15, 1982.
109Frank Rich, "The Original Donald Trump," New York Magazine, April 2018, https://nymag.com/intelligencer/2018/04/frank-rich-roy-cohn-the-original-donald-trump.html.
110Rich, "Original Donald Trump."
111Robert Parry, "How Roy Cohn Helped Rupert Murdoch," January 28, 2015, https://consortiumnews.com/2015/01/28/how-roy-cohn-helped-rupert-murdoch/.
112Armstrong et al, The Chronology, 321.
113On Samuel Cummings and John Tower, see Emma North-Best, "John Tower's FBI File Reveals Role in Iran-Contra Cover-Up," Muckrock, January 9, 2017,

https://www.muckrock.com/news/archives/2017/jan/09/john-towers-fbi-file-reveals-role-iran-contra-cove/.
114The following information on GMT, unless stated otherwise, comes from Alan A. Block, "The Origins of Iran-Contra: Lessons from the Durrani Affair," in Frank Bovenkirk and Michael Levi, The Organized Crime Community: Essays in Honor of Alan A. Block (Springer Science, 2007), 12.
115Bovenkirk and Levi, The Organized Crime Community, 12.
116Scott and Marshall, Cocaine Politics, 76.
117Roy Greenslade. Maxwell's Fall: An Insider's Account (Simon & Schuster, 1992), 133
118Ari Ben-Menashe. Profits of War: Inside the Secret U.S.-Israeli Arms Network (Sheridan Square Press, 1992), 112
119Ben-Menashe. Profits of War, 115.
120Ben-Menashe. Profits of War, 155-156.
121Ben-Menashe. Profits of War, 360-361.
122Among Davies' contacts in Ohio was "William Johnson, managing director of the now-defunct Armtec International Columbus" – a very intriguing location, given the importance of Columbus, Ohio in this book. Glenn Frankel, "Media Baron Sues Seymour Hersh", Washington Post, October 25, 1991, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/lifestyle/1991/10/25/media-baron-sues-seymour-hersh/c16c29e2-04ba-4038-9fff-08113fa33b77/. See also "Book: Ohioans would-be arms dealers", Lancaster-Eagle Gazette, October 28, 1991.
123Russell Davies. Foreign Body: The Secret Life of Robert Maxwell (Bloomsbury, 1995), 152-153.
124John Merritt, "Davies: fresh evidence on arms deals", The Observer, October 27, 1991.
125Merritt, "Davies."
126Armstrong et al, The Chronology, 321.
127Report of the Congressional Committees Investigating the Iran-Contra Affair: Testimony of unnamed CIA Officer, Appendix B, Vol. 10, 610, https://www.google.com/books/edition/Report_of_the_Congressional_Committee_In/MB15AAAAMAAJ.
128Report of the Congressional Committees, Appendix B, Vol. 10, 612.
129Report of the Congressional Committees, Appendix B, Vol. 10, 691
130Block, "Origins of Iran-Contra," 15.
131Jonathan Marshall, Peter Dale Scott, and Jane Hunter, The Iran-Contra Connection: Secret Teams and Covert Operations in the Reagan Era (South End Press, 1987), 175.
132Rachel Ehrenfeld, Evil Money: Encounters Along the Money Trail (Harper Business, 1992), 70.
133Ehrenfeld, Evil Money, 113.
134Truell and Gurwin, False Profits, 174-75. Nazerali's partner in securities fraud schemes was Irving Kott. Kott was an associate of Willie Obront, a "Montreal meat merchant who once made front-page headlines across Canada after a public inquiry named him as a key money launderer for the Cotroni mafia." During the 1970s, Obront had moved to the US, where his associates included a Meyer Lansky front man named Barry Ressler. See Tu Thahn Ha, "Montreal Butcher Was a Banker for the Mafia," The Globe and Mail, July 31, 2019, https://www.theglobeandmail.com/canada/article-montreal-butcher-was-a-banker-for-the-mafia/.
Obront also had ties to the Bronfman family. Pete Newman writes that "although he vehemently denies any venal implications in his friendships, Mitchell Bronfman was condemned in 1977 by having the Quebec Police Commission inquiry into organized crime as having had an 'almost brotherly relationship' with Willie Obront, a convicted kingpin of Montreal's underworld." See Peter Newman, The Bronfman Dynasty (McClelland and Stewart, 1978), 225.
135Final Report, chap. 14, https://irp.fas.org/offdocs/walsh/chap_14.htm.
136Final Report, chap. 14
137"FBI 302 - Record of Nan Morabia Interview," FBI, November 6, 1987, https://archive.org/details/FBI302NanMorabia1.

138John Tagliabue, “The White House Crisis; Small, Quiet Building in Geneva Had Wide Use,” New York Times, December 3, 1986.
139Report of the Congressional Committees Investigating the Iran-Contra Affair, Testimony of Richard Secord, Appendix B, Vol. 24, 242, https://archive.org/details/Iran-ContraHearingsTestimonyTranscripts/1987-irn-0001-Secord/.
140Gordon Thomas, Robert Maxwell, Israel’s Superspy: The Life and Murder of a Media Mogul (De Capo Press, 2003), 37-38.
141“Illicit Narcotics Threats,” Compiled by Office of the Deputy Director of the CIA for Robert McFarlane, May 1984, https://www.cia.gov/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP-86M00886R000800010012-3.pdf.
142Ehrenfeld, Evil Money, 142.
143Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair, 567.

144Jonathan Marshall, The Lebanese Connection: Corruption, Civil War, and the International Drug Traffic (Stanford University Press, 2012), 160.
145“Michael De Picciotto Biography,” http://michaeldepicciotto.com/biography/.
146Kurt Eichenwald, “American Express to Sell Geneva Bank for $1 Billion,” New York Times, December 29, 1989.
147Armstrong et al, The Chronology, 148.
148Stephen Pizzo, Mary Fricker, and Paul Muolo, Inside Job: The Looting of America’s Savings and Loans (Harper Perennial, 1991), 113.
149International Petrodollar Crisis: Hearings Before the Subcommittee on International Finance of the Committee on Banking and Currency, House of Representatives, Ninety-Third Congress, Second Session, July and August 1974, 229, https://fraser.stlouisfed.org/title/international-petrodol-lar-crisis-225/fulltext.
150Pizzo, Fricker, and Muolo, Inside Job, 115.
151Pizzo, Fricker, and Muolo, Inside Job, 115-16; Brewton, The Mafia, 44-46.
152Brewton, The Mafia, 45-46.
153David Cay Johnston, “Just What Were Donald Trump’s Ties to the Mob?,” POLITICO Magazine, May 22, 2016, https://www.politico.com/magazine/story/2016/05/donald-trump-2016-mob-organized-crime-213910.
154Sydney Schanberg, “Gas Tax Cash and Re-Electing a Governor,” New York Newsday, December 4, 1987.
155Pizzo, Fricker, and Muolo, Inside Job, 165.
156Pizzo, Fricker, and Muolo, Inside Job, 165-66.
157Brewton, The Mafia, 190-91. Iorizzo was introduced to Samos by Eric D’Antin, a confidence man with aristocratic pretensions. D’Antin is described in various press reports and court cases as a “Mexican Duke who works as a banker in London,” a “petroleum broker,” an “Austrian duke,” and an “agent” of textile magnate Joseph Koret. In the 1980s D’Antin was married to Michaela von Habsburg, the daughter of Otto von Habsburg. See “The Princess and the P (for Press), Daily News, (New York), December 11, 1980. Also, Michaela’s former sister-in-law, Francesca von Habsburg, is listed in Jeffrey Epstein’s black book.
158Samos was married to Alma Robles Chiari, the heiress from a prominent and politically well-connected family. In 1977, Alma and Samos’ partner, Ray Corona, attempted to purchase the National Bank of South Florida. The bank, a well-known drug laundromat located in Hialeah, was for sale by the First National Bank of Louisville. It had previously been owned by the WFC Corporation, which was partnered with First National Bank of Louisville in the ownership of Panama’s UniBank, through which loans were granted to individuals and institutions. When WFC began to collapse in the late 1970s, First National Bank of Louisville was exposed to a compounding liquidity crunch. To compensate, WFC turned National Bank of South Florida over to First National Bank of Louisville, and in order to recoup losses First National Bank of Louisville placed it for sale. See James Ring Adams, The Big Fix: Inside the

S&L Scandal : How an Unholy Alliance of Politics and Money Destroyed America's Banking System (New York: Wiley, 1991), 72–84.

Other potential buyers for National Bank of South Florida from First National Bank of Louisville included Gustavo Villoldo, a CIA-trained Cuban exile who was suspected of being a front man for the WFC's founder, Guillermo Hernandez-Cartaya. Villoldo would later resurface in the covert Contra support operations. According to Peter Dale Scott and Jonathan Marshall, Villoldo was sent in 1983 "into Central America by Vice President Bush's national security advisor Donald Gregg to advise the Contras on military strategy." This would closely conform to reporting on Operation Black Eagle. Later, during the feud between the Enterprise and the Supermarket, Oliver North toyed with the idea of using Villoldo to take the Supermarket's Mario Delamico "out of the picture." See Scott and Marshall, Cocaine Politics, 29, 59.

159Armstrong et al, The Chronology, 171.

160Brewton, The Mafia, 192; Scott and Marshall, Cocaine Politics, 197n60.

161Major Financial Institutions of Continental Europe 1990/91 (Graham & Trotman Limited 1990), 179, https://doi.org/10.1007/978-94-011-3022-6; The BCCI Affair: Hearings Before the Subcommittee on Terrorism, Narcotics, and International Operations of the Committee on Foreign Relations, United States Senate, One Hundred Second Congress, First Session, August 1, 1991, 475, part 1, https://books.google.com/books?id=8DLDVLJN_sUC.

162Brewton, The Mafia, 53-57.

163James S. Henry, Blood Bankers: Tales from the Global Underground Economy (Basic Books, 2005), 48.

164Brewton, The Mafia, 55.

165Brewton, The Mafia, 56.

166On Hourani and Lamar, see Brewton, The Mafia, 130-31; on Hourani and Mainland, see Truell and Gurwin, False Profits, 375-77.

167Brewton, The Mafia, 130.

168Truell and Gurwin, False Profits, 376.

169Brewton, The Mafia, 131.

170Truell and Gurwin, False Profits, 377.

171Truell and Gurwin, False Profits, 376.

172Michael Isikoff, "Deals of Developer Khashoggi Building Frustration in Utah," Washington Post, January 4, 1987.

173Truell and Gurwin, False Profits, 377.

174R. T. Naylor, Patriots and Profiteers: Economic Warfare, Embargo Busting, and State-Sponsored Crime (McGill-Queen's University Press, 2008), 244.

175Naylor, Patriots and Profiteers, 246.

176"Illegal Arms to Iran: How the Banks Broke the Rules," Euromoney, October 1, 1991, https://www.euromoney.com/article/b1dfgmpypmxgbc/illegal-arms-to-iran-how-the-banks-broke-the-rules.

177"In Un' Agenda I Nomi Dell' Iraq – Connection," La Repubblica, September 13, 1989, https://ricerca.repubblica.it/repubblica/archivio/repubblica/1989/09/13/in-un-agenda-nomi-dell-iraq.html.

178Report of the Congressional Committees Investigating the Iran-Contra Affair: Depositions, Appendix B, Volume 3, One Hundredth Congress, First Session, 1988, 861, https://www.google.com/books/edition/Report_of_the_Congressional_Committees_I/u1_-pOKeFe8C.

179"Illegal Arms to Iran: How the Banks Broke the Rules."

180John De Belot, "International Bankers: Jean Maxine Leveque Takes the Field," Les Echos, March 2, 1992, https://www-lesechos-fr.translate.goog/1992/03/international-bankers-jean-maxime-leveque-prend-du-champ-921859?_x_tr_sl=fr&_x_tr_tl=en&_x_tr_hl=en&_x_tr_pto=sc; Report of the Congressional Committees Investigating the Iran-Contra Affair, Depositions: Testimony of Emanuel A. Floor, Appendix B, Volume 10, One Hundredth Congress, First Session, 1988, 486,

https://www.google.com/books/edition/Report_of_the_Congressional_Committee_In/MB15AAAAMAAJ.
181Gaetner Gilles, “The Other Lyonnais Scandal,” L’Express, May 18, 2005, https://www-lex-press-fr.translate.goog/informations/l-autre-scandale-du-lyonnais_607863.html?_x_tr_sl=fr&_x_tr_tl=en&_x_tr_hl=en&_x_tr_pto=sc; “Mansour Ojjeh Obituary,” The Times, June 9, 2021, https://www.thetimes.co.uk/article/mansour-ojjeh-obituary-spbm52bpl.
182“Illegal Arms to Iran.”
183Naylor, Patriots and Profiteers, 254.
184Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair, 314.
185Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair, 313.
186“Unusual Behavior,” Der Spiegel, February 10, 1983, https://www.spiegel.de/politik/un-uebliches-gebaren-a-52408d0c-0002-0001-0000-000014022410.
187“Unusual Behavior.”
188“Unusual Behavior.”
189“Lonrho’s Foothold in Forwarding,” The Guardian, June 29, 1981,
190“Felix Przedborski: diplomaat en groot-officier met een loodzwaar strafblad,” De Tijd, https://www.tijd.be/algemeen/algemeen/felix-przedborski-diplomaat-en-groot-officier-met-een-loodzwaar-strafblad/5159483.html.
191“Attacks on Press in 2004 – Costa Rica,” Refworld, February, 2005, https://www.refworld.org/docid/47c566d1c.html; Inter-American Court of Human Rights: The La Nación Newspaper Case,” February 18, 2004, https://cpj.org/wp-content/uploads/2004/06/Costa19feb04_Amicus-Brief.pdf.

192ATLAS Dossier, Translation provided by Institute for the Study of Globalization and Covert Politics, 15, https://isgp-studies.com/belgium-la-nebuleuse-atlas-dossier-and-dutroux-x-files.
193ATLAS Dossier, 6.
194Ehrenfeld, Evil Money, 144.
195Ehrenfeld, Evil Money, 144.
196ATLAS Dossier, 20.
197Doyle McManus, “Secret Airstrips Links CIA, State Department, to Contra Aid,” Los Angeles Times, March 1, 1987.
198Willy van Damme, “Mossad–Een vrijgeleide in België,” February 27, 2013, https://willyvandamme.wordpress.com/2013/02/27/mossadeen-vrijgeleide-in-belgi/.
199Van Damme, “Mossad.”
200Alain Lallemand, “Jacques Monsieur Arrested in Turkey,” Center for Public Integrity, May 14, 2002, https://publicintegrity.org/accountability/jacques-monsieur-arrested-in-turkey/; Alain Lallemand, “The Field Marshal,” International Consortium of Investigative Journalists, November 15, 2002, https://www.icij.org/investigations/makingkilling/field-marshal/
201Van Damme, “Mossad.”
202Block and Weaver, Clouded by Desire, 110-11.
203Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair, 612.
204“Call Girls, Tax Fraud and Weapons,” De Morgen, January 10, 2001, https://www.demorgen.be/nieuws/callgirls-fiscale-fraude-en-wapenhandel~b6c633de/.
205René Haquin, “Bribes at VDB?,” Le Soir, Sept. 28, 1988, https://www.lesoir.be/art/pots-de-vin-a-vdb_t-19880928-Z01062.html.
206“Call Girls, Tax Fraud and Weapons.”
207ATLAS Dossier, 15.
208Jack Colhoun, “BCCI: The Bank of the CIA,” Covert Action Quarterly, Spring, 1993, 41, https://archive.org/details/covert_action_44; Block, “Origins of Iran-Contra.”
209Colhoun, “BCCI: The Bank of the CIA,” 40-42.

210Gary Sick, October Surprise: America’s Hostages in Iran and the Election of Ronald Reagan, 1st ed (New York: Times Books, 1991), 220.

211The Investigation of State Department Officials: Shultz, Hill and Platt: Final Report, ch 24, https://irp.fas.org/offdocs/walsh/chap_24.htm.

212Dana Priest, “Rumsfeld Visited Baghdad in 1984 to Reassure Iraqis, Documents Show,” Washington Post, December 19, 2003, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/2003/12/19/rumsfeld-visited-baghdad-in-1984-to-reassure-iraqis-documents-show/2aaa6f-bc-59bd-46e7-86ca-8ca84fa1c0f4/.

213The long history of Shultz at Bechtel is discussed in Sally Denton, The Profiteers: Bechtel and the Men Who Built the World (Simon & Schuster, 2016).

214“Bechtel in Iraq: Shultz and Rumsfeld,” Zfacts, https://zfacts.com/zfacts.com/p/170.html.

215The pipeline negotiations and Bruce Rappaport’s role in them is discussed at length in Block and Weaver, Clouded by Desire.

216Block and Weaver, Clouded by Desire, 74.

217Steven Hurst, The United States and Iraq since 1979: Hegemony, Oil and War (Edinburgh University Press, 2009), 52, https://www.jstor.org/stable/10.3366/j.ctt1r27xm.

218George Lardner Jr., “Bush Aides Ethics Questioned over Loans to Iraq,” Washington Post, April 29, 1992, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1992/04/29/bush-aides-ethics-questioned-over-loans-to-iraq/f85edf9c-269e-48c7-9654-47ce34be09fa/.

219Kurt Eichenwald, “BCCI Once Lent Money to Bank Tied to Iraq Loans,” New York Times, July 11, 1991.

220Hearings Before the Committee on Banking, Finance and Urban Affairs: Testimony of Former Employees of the Banca Nazionale Del Lavoro, November 9, 1993, Vol. 4, 176, https://archive.org/details/testimonyofforme1994unit/page/176/mode/2up.

221Testimony of Former Employees of the Banca Nazionale Del Lavoro, 176.

222“Arms Exports (Iraq),” Hansard, UK Parliament, House of Commons, November 23, 1992, https://api.parliament.uk/historic-hansard/commons/1992/nov/23/arms-exports-iraq.

223“Update on BNL Investigation,” Congressional Record, House of Representatives, January 21, 1993, https://irp.fas.org/congress/1993_cr/h930121-bnl.htm.

224Douglas Frantz, “Sale of US Bomb Material to Iraq Probed,” Los Angeles Times, February 1, 1993, https://www.latimes.com/archives/la-xpm-1993-02-01-mn-979-story.html.

225“Around the Nation: Thatcher’s Son to Stay in Dallas Flat after All,” New York Times, April 25, 1986.

226“Arms Exports (Iraq).”

227The connections between Cardoen, Bull, and Mark Thatcher are made by Ari Ben-Menashe, Profits of War: Inside the Secret U.S.-Israeli Arms Network (Sheridan Square Press, 1992).

228Newman, Bronfman Dynasty, 244-45.

229Lardner Jr., “Bush Aides Ethics Questioned.”

230Henry, Blood Bankers, 348.

231Walter Pincus, “Kissinger’s Clients May Be Revealed,” Washington Post, February 11, 1989.

232Henry A. Kissinger, “A Remembrance of George P. Shultz,” October 17, 2021, https://www.hoover.org/research/remembrance-george-p-shultz-henry-kissinger.

233Don Oberdorfer, “Kissinger’s New Team,” Washington Post, August 24, 1982, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1982/08/24/kissingers-new-team/c313bd33-2912-4855-8efb-73674d5c56dd/.

234L. J. Davis, “William Simon’s Pacific Overtures,” New York Times Magazine, December 27, 1987, https://www.nytimes.com/1987/12/27/magazine/william-simon-s-facific-overtures.html; Laton McCartney, Friends in High Places: The Bechtel Story – The Most Secret Corporation and How It Engineered the World (Ballantine Books, 1988), 187, 210.

235Henry Kissinger, Years of Renewal, ePub (NY: Simon & Schuster, 1999), 1294.

236Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair, 92.

237Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair, 560.
238Kerry and Brown, BCCI Affair, 560.
239Report of the Congressional Committees Investigating the Iran-Contra Affair, Testimony of Gen. John R. Galvin, Appendix B, Vol. 11, 1988, 582, https://www.google.com/books/edition/Report_of_the_Congressional_Committees_I/w8U9sKdxC3wC.
240Report of the Congressional Committees Investigating the Iran-Contra Affair, Testimony of unnamed CIA Officer, appendix B, Vol. 5, 1988, 148, https://www.google.com/books/edition/Report_of_the_Congressional_Committee_In/6ft4AAAAMAAJ.
241Final Report, chap. 21 (CIA Subject #1), https://irp.fas.org/offdocs/walsh/chap_21.htm.
242Final Report, chap. 21.
243Kohn and Monks, "Dirty Secrets."
244Kohn and Monks, "Dirty Secrets."
245Final Report, chap. 21.
246Final Report, chap. 21.
247Organized Crime and Cocaine Trafficking, President's Commission on Organized Crime, November, 1984, 252, https://www.google.com/books/edition/Organized_Crime_and_Cocaine_Trafficking/iPghAAAAMAAJ; "Smuggler Convicted in Case Implicating Governments," UPI, July 6, 1986, https://www.upi.com/Archives/1988/07/06/Smuggler-convicted-in-case-implicating-governments/4859584164800/.
248Brewton, The Mafia, 286.
249Kohn and Monks, "Dirty Secrets."
250Final Report, chap. 29 (Donald P. Gregg), https://irp.fas.org/offdocs/walsh/chap_29.htm; Webb, Dark Alliance, 339.
251Final Report, chap. 29
252On Posada, see Webb, Dark Alliance, 253-55; and Scott and Marshall, Cocaine Politics, 31. Posada has been identified as an associate of Philip (or Phillip) Arthur Thompson, a hitman, suspected serial killer, and FBI informant. Thompson, during the 1980s, turned up in the Wackenhut-Cabazon arms joint venture at the Cabazon Indian Reservation in Southern California. As discussed in chapters 8 and 9, this venture was intimately tied to, among other things, Iran-Contra and the Inslaw affair. Thomspon had been involved in the security side of the arrangement and had acted as bodyguard for Michael Riconosciuto. Cheri Seymour writes that "Philip Arthur Thompson was originally sent in by Patrick Moriarty … (Patrick Moriarty was Michael's father's partner of 40 years)." Cheri Seymour, The Last Circle: Danny Casolaro's Investigation into the Octopus and the PROMIS Software Scandal, 1st ed (Walterville, OR: TrineDay, 2010), page 301
253Final Report, chap. 29.
254Final Report, chap. 29.
255Trento, Prelude to Terror, 54.
256Final Report, chap. 29.
257Final Report, chap. 29.
258Kohn and Monks, "Dirty Secrets."
259Colhoun, "BCCI: The Bank of the CIA," 17.
260Brewton, The Mafia, 94.
261Brewton, The Mafia, 331-57. Mike Adkinson, when he was not dealing arms, was a real estate developer from Houston. Sometime in the early 1980s, he had fallen in with a group of wealthy Kuwaitis. He began fronting for their real estate interests in Texas and was traveling in and out of the Middle East in this period. This was when he reportedly became involved in gun-running, and Iraq was identified to have been one of the destinations of the arms he brokered. Adkinson stated that his "rise to stardom" was thanks to Herman Beebe, the crooked S&L player with ties to organized crime and the CIA. According to Brewton's sources, Adkinson was something of a front man for Beebe. One of their operations was Skyways Aviation.

262Brewton, The Mafia, 94.
263Robert Parry, Lost History: Contras, Cocaine, the Press, and 'Project Truth,' (Media Consortium, 1999), 160.
264"Authorities Claim Breakup of Largest Cocaine Ring," UPI, May 2, 1984.
265On Jack Terrell and Oliver North's counterintelligence operations against him, see Peter Dale Scott, "North, Iran-Contra, and the Doomsday Project: The Congressional Cover-Up of Continuity of Government Planning," Asia-Pacific Journal, February 21, 2011; and Edmund Berger, "Iran-Contra and Domestic Counter-Intelligence Networks," Reciprocal Contradiction, May 19, 2021, https://reciprocalcontradiction.home.blog/2021/05/19/iran-contra-and-domestic-counter-intelligence-networks/.
266Report of the Congressional Committees Investigating the Iran-Contra Affair, Supplemental, Minority and Additional Views, Vol. 2, 1321, https://www.google.com/books/edition/Report_of_the_Congressional_Committees_I/Fp2wJHOda6IC.
267Report of the Congressional Committees Investigating the Iran-Contra Affair, Source Documents, Appendix A, Vol. 1, 859, https://books.google.com/books?id=hCYlFcNbYtsC.

CHAPTER 8

CLINTON CONTRA

SEAL, THE SMUGGLER

On October 5th, 1986, the Enterprise took a mortal blow. At 9:50 AM, a C-123K military transport aircraft took off from the Ilopango military base, carrying a stockpile of rifles, ammunition, and explosives in its hull. These were to be air-dropped into the Nicaraguan jungle for the Contras – but the plane never made it to its destination. It was instead shot down by Sandinista forces, killing three of the four man crew. The sole survivor, Eugene Hasenfus of Wisconsin, was subsequently captured. Under interrogation, he began to detail what he knew of the wide-ranging plot to arm the Contra rebels.

The first official communication surrounding the plane came through Felix Rodriguez, who alerted Samuel Watson, an aide to Vice President Bush, that an aircraft had gone missing. A day later, on October 6th, Rodriguez contacted Watson again with an update. Soon, Oliver North was bound for El Salvador. Meanwhile, cover stories were being drafted in a desperate attempt to provide an alternative explanation of events. Despite their efforts, North and the Enterprise were out of luck and, within days, congressmen were calling for inquiries into the crash, the FBI began nosing around Southern Air Transport's Miami offices, and the press started to run stories about different aspects of their clandestine activities. It was all unraveling at a fast pace.

As with most things related to the Enterprise, mystery begat more mystery. Hasenfus, for example, had been hired to serve as a crewman on the doomed C-123K by a company called Corporate Air Service, which was registered in Pennsylvania but had offices in Miami. Corporate Air was "revealed to be a phantom company," and its Miami location was actually Southern Air Transport's headquarters at the Miami Airport.[1]

The history of the C-123K was itself a tangled web. In 1983, it had been purchased from the US Air Force by Harry Doan, the proprietor of a Florida aviation company called Doan Helicopters. It had been picked up by the Enterprise in March 1986, via a front company called Udall Research Corporation. Udall, registered in Panama, was also involved in the construction of the airstrip in the Santa Elena region of Costa Rica. Papers recovered from North's safe described Udall as an "operating company."[2]

Udall was not alone in acquiring this C-123K from Doan. It had previously fallen into the hands of one Adler Barriman "Barry" Seal, the commercial pilot-turned-drug smuggler and CIA asset. Seal had picked up the plane, used it for drug smuggling flights, and then returned it to Doan Helicopters in July 1985.

Seal, importantly, was connected to the same criminal figures that had been woven into the covert Contra support network. Beginning in 1981, Seal had begun to ferry cocaine on behalf of Jorge Ochoa, one of the Medellin cartel's founding members. In a few years, Seal's Medellin smuggling had expanded considerably. With police attention mounting in his home state of Louisiana, Seal set up a new base of operations in rural Arkansas.

The location that Seal selected was the Intermountain Municipal Airport in Mena, Arkansas, near the Arkansas-Oklahoma border. Mena was a small, unassuming town; yet, throughout the 1980s, the area encircling the airport became a hotbed of intrigue. In 1989, journalist John Cummings, in one of the first articles written on Seal in Mena, wrote that "Seal had virtually taken over a local aircraft repair-and-modification operation at the airport, and the good citizens of Mena began to notice some strange goings on: landings at night, tight security around Seal's planes, a hangar converted into a virtual fortress."[3]

There were also sightings of what appeared to be airdrops, the construction of airstrips deep in the woods beyond the airport, and even darker rumors that whatever was happening was sanctioned by the CIA.

The report of the Kerry Commission on narcotics later stated that "[a] ssociates of Seal … were … targets of grand jury probes into narcotics trafficking." Yet, these cases were dropped despite the "strong protests of State and federal law enforcement officials..… The apparent reason," the report continues, "was that the prosecution might have revealed national security information."[4]

Jack Anderson wrote in the Washington Post that, after Seal died in 1986, IRS investigators descended upon Mena and seized records and other documents from the smuggler's offices there. The IRS was keeping its report "under wraps," but Anderson relayed its name: "Contra Mena Connection."[5] The absence of a public release of this report allowed a comprehensive firewall to be set in place, permitting investigators to quietly detail the story of Seal and that of Iran-Contra.

That the plane shot down in Nicaragua had been used by Seal was written off as mere coincidence, with the intermediary figure, Harry Doan, acting as a convenient buffer. Unfortunately for the proponents of this narrative, the specter of Seal appears throughout the official documentation of the Iran-Contra case.

A May 1983 US Customs report noted that an aircraft piloted by Frank Moss and owned by his Hondu Carib aviation company was involved in drug smuggling linked to Barry Seal. As previously mentioned, Moss and his aviation companies were entangled, not only with the Enterprise's Contra support efforts, but with repeat allegations of drug trafficking. Those allegations rang true in the case of this plane, tail number N90201, which made at least one airdrop of "large quantities of marijuana and cocaine at an isolated farm near Baton Rouge, Louisiana. The farm's address Rt. 6, Box 282E in East Baton Rouge, Louisiana, belong[ed] to Adler [Barry] Seal…"[6] Given Moss' ties to Matta's drug trafficking operations, it seems likely that Seal himself was part of these wider smuggling networks. It would also align Seal with the Cali cartel in addition to his earlier Medellin ties, which paints a complicated picture of the unstable alliances and power competitions that raged beneath the surface of this covert world.

Journalist Daniel Hopsicker, in his biography of Barry Seal, writes that he obtained documents from the trafficker's widow which show that, in the 1980s, Seal was doing business with Summit Aviation. As mentioned in the previous chapter, Summit was controlled by the DuPont family, and was managed by Patrick Foley, a veteran of the CIA and Flying Tiger Line. It was Summit that had provided a small aircraft that was utilized for a bombing run in Nicaragua, while it was Foley who had recommended a drug-smuggling pilot to the State Department for the transportation of "humanitarian supplies" to the Contras. Foley, Hopsicker writes, was a "Seal associate whose name and number are in Barry's files."[7]

Summit was involved in the acquisition and trade of Beechcraft King Air, turboprop planes known for their flexibility and versatility. Seal, likewise, maintained his own King Air plane, and one, sporting the tail number N6308F, had a particularly interesting provenance. It was owned by Greycas Inc., a Phoenix, Arizona-based subsidiary of Greyhound Lines, the bus company. Greycas leased the plane to a company called Systems Marketing Inc., reportedly a subsidiary of another firm named Military Electronics.[8] Systems Marketing provided the plane to Gene Glick, a real estate developer who, in turn, leased it to Seal.

According to Hopsicker, Glick "leased not just this but several other of Barry Seal's planes and helicopters as well, during the time Seal was most active in drug and weapons smuggling. Other documents we uncovered revealed that Glick was also actively helping Seal purchase ocean-going vessels… "[9]

Hopsicker reproduced an FAA form showing the leasing of the aircraft from Greycas to Systems Marketing. The form identified Systems Marketing's vice president as a Leonard F. Lavoie. Press reports at the time suggested that Lavoie, at this time, was also affiliated with an aviation company called Skyways Travel & Tours, while his early career had revolved around Arizona real estate. During the 1970s, Lavoie had been the treasurer for the Halwin Corporation, which had been founded by a man named Allen Winter.[10] Winter, notably, was a "known racketeer" who, prior to relocating to Arizona, had operated out of the Seattle area and had been particularly close to Dave Beck – Jimmy Hoffa's mob-linked predecessor as president of the Teamsters union.[11]

Both Winter and Lavoie had previously worked for the major Phoenix, Arizona, construction firm Del E. Webb Development Company.[12] Del Webb had developed major projects like Sun City, the famous retirement community; yet, what the builder and his company were best known for was their role in building and owning a number of Las Vegas casinos. Unsurprisingly, this brought him into close contact with organized crime interests, and to Bugsy Siegel and Meyer Lansky in particular – as well as to J. Edgar Hoover. According to Anthony Summers, Hoover – who rubbed shoulders with Webb at places like the Hotel Del Charro, a favorite haunt of mob-linked Texas oil bigwigs like Clint Murchison – appears to have protected the builder. "Hoover," said Justice Department attorney William Hundley, "gave Webb a pass. He was his buddy."[13]

Hundley added that "No bugs went in on Webb's places."[14]

It's unsurprising, then, that Webb himself came to own a number of casinos – including the Sahara, which he had acquired with loans from major Wall Street entities like Lehman Brothers and Morgan Guaranty.[15] He also ended up with the Thunderbird Hotel and the Flamingo, which means that the money of Del E. Webb Development Company had also freely mingled with that of the Moody family's American National Insurance Company (ANICO).

That Lavoie appears in the chain of custody that delivered a plane from Greycas into the hands of Barry Seal illustrates, once again, the integration of organized crime networks into those of the intelligence community. It also makes one wonder if Gene Glick, the builder who acquired the plane from Systems Marketing before leasing it to Seal, was himself tied into Del Webb's network.

Greycas itself was involved in large-scale financial crimes that also seemed nebulously linked to individuals in Seal's orbit: it was bilked for truly massive sums of money by a prolific confidence man by the name of Sheldon Player. Hopsicker writes that: "Player would sell Greycas heavy machine tools, lease them back, and then pretend to sublease the expensive devices to end-users."[16] Sheldon would pocket the money – or perhaps move it on behalf of other parties – by siphoning it away into offshore bank accounts. According to Arthur Johnson, in his book Breaking the Banks, Player's preferred offshore banker was Gordon Aiton of Bank Intercontinental Ltd.[17] The true owners of Bank Intercontinental, located in the Cayman Islands, are unfortunately unknown, though Aiton himself was the Cayman's former inspector general of banks.[18]

A second company controlled by Aiton, Investment Consultants Limited, was also involved in Sheldon Player's activities. Intriguingly, Hopsicker reproduced a document from this very company, showing that Aiton was in communication with Barry Seal.[19] The document in question concerned payments and insurance for Seal's Lear Jet.

About a year after Moss' airdrops at Seal's farm, Seal had become a deeply involved in a curious DEA sting operation. What made this sting so odd was that its goal was propagandistic in nature: it was intended to produce concrete evidence of collusion between the Sandinistas and the Medellin cartel. In June 1984, Seal flew – allegedly – into Nicaragua, where he picked up a load of cocaine. The pickup was covertly filmed and photographed, but the ongoing DEA operation quickly derailed.[20] General Paul F. Gorman of the US Military Southern Command, publicly announced that evidenced had been found linking the Sandinistas to drug traffic. However, corroboration that Seal indeed met with Sandinistas has never been produced. While Seal wasn't named by Gorman, he was fingered in an exposé on the story published by the Washington Times.

This whole series of events raises a number of questions. The Southern Military Command had been linked to arms flows to the Contras, while the Washington Times was owned by the Unification Church – the China Lobby-aligned sect that, at the time, was involved in private fundraising for the rebels. As Peter Dale Scott and Jonathan Marshall note in their book Cocaine Politics, Seal and the photos from this odd DEA operation were featured prominently in North's notebooks and personal diaries at the time, and North had gone out of his way to acquire copies. One note recorded by North, based on a report from the CIA's Duane Clarridge, stated that "DEA thinks CIA linked info to Gorman."[21] Did the Enterprise, or the CIA, or some other party, intentionally disrupt the DEA operation?

Barry Seal's life was ultimately cut short by a hail of gunfire in Baton Rouge on February 19th, 1986. The official story is that the smuggler had been taken out by hitmen dispatched by the Medellin cartel, who had placed a bounty on Seal when it became known that he was involved with the DEA. It's possible, however, that there were other actors in play.

As Daniel Hopsicker reported, rumors have abounded that the source of the hit was really the CIA, or Oliver North, or even George H.W. Bush. It was alleged, for instance, that Seal had considerable evidence of the Vice President's sons, George W. and Jeb Bush, receiving a large amount of cocaine.[22] Bob Thommasson, a Louisiana State Police officer, told Hopsicker that the FBI had taken charge of the crime scene and removed boxes from the trunk of Seal's car – boxes that contained "very very compelling documents and tapes."[23]

There is also the question of the weapon used in the hit. It had been sourced from Jose Coutin, the owner of a gun store and fashion boutique in Miami.[24] Coutin had been one of many CIA-trained Cuban exiles, having served in Brigade 2506, though it is unknown if he participated in Bay of Pigs. In the 1980s, he was deeply involved in Contra support activities – and had been flipped into acting as an FBI informant. Through the information that he provided to the Bureau, we know that he was acquainted with a number of key players. These included the principals of Frigorificos, the Colombian cartel front company contracted by the State Department; the CIA and cartel-linked rancher in Costa Rica, John Hull; Tom Posey of Civilian Materiel Assistance, the militia-special forces group tied to the Enterprise and to John K. Singlaub; and Jack Terrell, the early Iran-Contra whistleblower.[25]

Barry Seal's untimely death didn't put an end to the goings-on in Mena, however. Russell Welch, a state police investigator who had been monitoring Seal, noted that in 1987 there was a spate of "new activity at the [Mena] airport with the appearance of … an Australian business … and C-130s had appeared."[26]

There were in fact two Australian companies, Southern Cross Aviation Inc. and Multi-Trade, that had set up shop in Mena in the immediate post-Seal years.[27] Southern Cross was an aircraft ferrying company with an apparent specialty in moving C-130s, while Multi-Trade was an aircraft interiors business. The two shared several common principals, who in turn took an active interest in the aircraft being stored at Mena. One of Multi-Trade's executives, a former Australian air force pilot named Glen Conrad, held a stake in one C-130 that he subsequently sold to a company in Florida called African Air Trans Inc. Florida business records show that African Air was owned by Henry A. Warton, a fairly well-known pilot and smuggler with known ties to the CIA. African Air Trans Inc. is mentioned again in the next chapter as the C-130 it bought was tied to another CIA-linked company, E-Systems.

In December 1988, the C-130 took off from Mena, destined for somewhere in Africa. It was seized by US Customs in Florida. Press reports from 1991 state that the plane had been "accused of violating regulations on trafficking arms," and that Warton's company was actually a dummy front set up to obscure the real owner. The plane had actually been acquired, the article continues, by "an unnamed Israeli living in Panama who set up a fake American corporation and mortgage on the aircraft to 'cover his ass.'"[28]

Several years later, in the summer of 1991, another C-130 linked to Mena met an odd fate. It crashed on a runaway in Luanda, the capital city of Angola, killing all onboard – including Chuck Hendricks, a 34 year old aircraft mechanic from Arkansas.[29] Hendricks' parents, who lived in Mena, set out to learn what happened to their son, only to be confronted with a web of mysteries. The C-130 had been owned by a Delaware company called CZX Productions, and the crew had been hired by a German firm called Unitrann International. Both of these companies, in turn, were controlled by a shadowy German aviation specialist named Dietrich Reinhardt.

Reinhardt's name will be instantly recognizable to those familiar with the Iran-Contra affair. One of the companies he controlled, St. Lucia Airways, had been utilized by the Enterprise to ferry weapons to the Middle East. According to Albert Hakim, St. Lucia was a CIA proprietary firm.[30] If Reinhardt was involved with aircraft from Mena as late as 1991, it seems that whatever was taking place in Arkansas was an ongoing operation.

DOWN IN ARKANSAS

Hot Springs, Arkansas, was, to quote Roger Morris, the "Geneva of organized crime in the 1920s and 30s. It's where the barons, the gangster bosses came to meet."[31] That association certainly continued through the decades. Influence over the city, considered a neutral territory for the different, often-competing criminal gangs, families and outfits, was held by Owney Madden, a New York gangster whose distinctive nickname was "The Killer." Madden was reportedly something of an ambassador for Meyer Lansky and counted among his close associates Frank Costello, who popped up in Hot Springs from time to time. New Orleans crime boss Carlos Marcello was reported to have held significant influence over Hot Springs as well.

There is some evidence, albeit circumstantial, that a young Bill Clinton might have had contact with these forces while he growing up in Arkansas. The man that Clinton had often referred to as "the most commanding male presence in his life" and a "father figure" was his uncle, Raymond Clinton.[32] Outwardly, Uncle Raymond ran a profitable car dealership, but he was also known to have engaged in various vices and backroom wheeling and dealing. According to a former Arkansas FBI agent, Raymond "ran some slot machines that he had scattered about town," while close business associates have admitted that the car dealer had "considerable dealings in the underworld."[33]

Along the way, Raymond began to collect political power. He cultivated ties to the state's Democratic Party, but also political figures in surrounding states, like Alabama's George Wallace.

These ties paid off in a big way for Bill Clinton in 1968. It was a big year for Bill: he had just won a Rhodes Scholarship to Oxford University in the United Kingdom, and he was on the verge of being drafted. Being shipped off to war in Vietnam would have derailed Oxford entirely – and so Uncle Raymond leapt into action. Using his political connections, he was able to secure for Bill a draft deferral.[34]

Uncle Raymond tended to crop up at opportune moments such as these, where Clinton's political destiny seemed to hang in the balance. In 1974, when Bill embarked on his first political campaign for Arkansas' House of Representatives, Raymond arranged for a $10,000 loan for his nephew from the First National Bank of Hot Springs. While Bill would lose the race, two years later he secured a position as Arkansas' Attorney General. This was the springboard for his next venture, the 1978 campaign for governor. This campaign was a success, thanks in no small part to loans and donations from Arkansas' economic elite. Here, once again, one could find the name of Raymond Clinton.

In addition to the assistance provided by Uncle Raymond and his friends, Clinton may have had other benefactors who helped shape his early political education, if not his career itself. There are hints, rumors, and intimations of a relationship with the CIA during the 1970s, particularly during his year at Oxford, which had been secured with the aid of Raymond. A former CIA officer told Roger Morris and Sally Denton that he had seen Clinton's name on a list of informants used by the Agency's Operation CHAOS – the surveillance program aimed at the anti-war and civil rights movements. Another officer stated that "part of Clinton's arrangement as an informer had been further insurance against the draft."[35] Reportedly, Clinton was regularly debriefed by the CIA, who he supplied with information concerning activist groups on British campuses.

The underworld figures like Barry Seal who haunted Mena seemed to always operate with much less than six degrees of separation from Clinton during his time as the state's governor. In his 1999 confessional expose, Cross-fire: Witness in the Clinton Investigation, former Arkansas policeman turned personal driver and security guard for Bill Clinton, L.D. Brown, recounts how Clinton encouraged him to seek out a post at the CIA.[36] Clinton allegedly went so far as to edit the essay Brown wrote for this employment application. The essay topic was drug smuggling in Central America. Upon receiving his application, the CIA put Brown in touch with none other than Seal.

Seal was far from being the only affiliate of Oliver North running a Contra-connected operation in Arkansas. Terry Reed, who had worked for North since 1983, claimed to have been put in touch with Seal by North and established a base just 10 miles north of Mena – in Nella, Arkansas – where "Nicaraguan Contras and other recruits from Latin American were trained in resupply missions, night landings, precision paradrops and similar maneuvers," according to Alexander Cockburn and Jeffrey St. Clair.[37] Reed charges that another figure in this circle (with particularly close ties to Seal) was Dan Lasater.[38] Lasater was the ultimate Little Rock operator. During the day, he was renowned for his lucrative bond brokerage business, Lasater and Company; while, after nightfall, he had a reputation as a party animal. Lasater was plugged into the world of Arkansas cocaine, something he shared with his close friend, Roger Clinton. Roger was, of course, the brother of then-Governor Bill Clinton. It was revealed during the course of the Whitewater investigations that Roger Clinton had even spent several years working for Lasater.[39]

Just like his close friends, scandal seemed to follow Lasater. In 1977, his private jet turned up in Las Vegas with Jimmy Chagra, a prominent drug trafficker, onboard. (Two years later, Chagra contracted hitman Charles Harrelson to assassinate Federal Judge John H. Wood Jr. in San Antonio, Texas.)[40]

Several years later, in 1984, Lasater purchased a ski resort in a remote northern corner of New Mexico. According to journalists Denton and Morris, Lasater "was given free rein to use Bill Clinton's name commercially to help promote the isolated development." They continue:

Undercover law enforcement agents later found the resort a center for drug running, what US customs called a "large controlled-substance smuggling operation and large-scale money-laundering activity." While Lasater held "Arkansas Week" at the resort with Governor Clinton's endorsement and entertained politicians from Santa Fe as well as Little Rock, local New Mexico sheriffs were hearing reports from Angel Fire reminiscent of Mena – strange nighttime traffic, sightings of parachute drops, even hikers' accounts of a "big black military-type cargo plane" seeming to come out of nowhere and swooping low and almost silently over a deserted mountain meadow near the remote ski area.[41]

Rumors of drug trafficking, money laundering, powerful military connections and the shadowy presence of military activity grew throughout the latter half of the 1980s and into the early 1990s. A tantalizing early reference to an "Arkansas project" connected to the Iran-Contra affair can be found in a legal declaration drafted by Daniel Sheehan in connection with the lawsuit he brought against the Enterprise on behalf of journalists Tony Avirgan and Martha Honey.[42]

This "project" was reportedly a scheme to set up a training facility for anti-Communist insurgents – in this case, Laotian tribesmen. A key witness in Sheehan's lawsuit, Gene Wheaton, identified some of the backers of this project as Rick Wade, a private citizen from Alaska; William Bode, a State Department employee whose name appeared in Oliver North's personal notebooks; and Vaughn Forrester, an assistant to the pro-Contra Congressman William McCollum; and CIA officer Carl Jenkins. "Some managers of the Daisy Air Rifle Company," writes Sheehan, "provided property in western Arkansas for the training camp."[43]

That there was interest in training Laotian tribesmen for anti-communist purposes isn't as strange as it might sound. In the early 1980s, prior to the spin-up of the Enterprise, the National Security Council ran an off-the-books operation aimed at supporting Laotian anti-communists that was financed via private donations to a slew of POW-MIA groups.[44] Many of the donors – including Nelson Bunker Hunt and Ellen Garwood – would subsequently emerge as major private donors to the Enterprise. And much like the case of private donations to the Contras, money for the Laotian operation moved through familiar banks. One of these was none other than Seoul branch of BCCI. This money, as reported in a memo by Senate investigator John Mattes, "was used to arm Laotian resistance groups in a covert network 'run by members of the NSC.'"[45]

Rick Wade, the private citizen named by Wheaton, had been active in the POW/MIA movement, and was likely connected to the NSC's operations. During the 1980s, he had developed contacts with aides to Vang Pao, the Hmong opium warlord that had been so close to Ted Shackley and his team a decade prior. He became a lobbyist for the Hmong in Washington and elsewhere, and would meet with figures like Ellen Garwood and Robert Owen in order to garner materiel support for the tribesmen.[46]

Gene Wheaton himself is an intriguing figure. A former Army criminal investigator and intelligence agent, Wheaton was on the periphery of the internal core of the Enterprise, and was thus privy to many covert operations unfolding during the 1980s.[47] His name appears within North's notebooks alongside those of Carl Jenkins, the CIA officer who had served under Shackley at JM/WAVE and in Laos. Wheaton and Jenkins were close friends and business associates – they were both attached, at one point in the mid-1980s, to an air freight company called National Air Cargo – and it was through Jenkins that Wheaton found himself enmeshed in the world of the Enterprise. Jenkins, as mentioned in chapter 6, was connected with Charles Haynes and Vaughn "Bobby" Ross via a web of companies likely linked to covert operations. Ross, in turn, was a close associate of Barry Seal.

Attempts to investigate Clinton's role in these sorts of operations and more broadly in the Iran-Contra affair were scuttled by Clinton's confidantes, who consistently denied he played a role in the scandal. According to the Wall Street Journal, former IRS investigator William Duncan teamed up with Arkansas State Police Investigator Russell Welch in what became a decade-long battle to bring the matter to light.[48] Yet, of the nine separate state and federal probes into the affair, all were shut down.

Duncan would later say of the investigations, "[They] were interfered with and covered up, and the justice system was subverted." A 1992 memo from Duncan to high-ranking members of the attorney general's staff notes that Duncan was instructed "to remove all files concerning the Mena investigation from the attorney general's office." The attorney general, serving under George H.W.Bush, at that time, was William Barr. As mentioned before, Barr had been a former CIA officer before then joining the Agency-linked law firm of Shaw, Pittman, Potts & Trowbridge.

Reed alleged that one of the CIA's point men in the Arkansas operations was a man who claimed to be the general counsel for Southern Air Transport and went by the name Robert Johnson. Johnson seemed to give Governor Clinton his marching orders, and was particularly incensed when Bill's wayward brother, Roger Clinton, was busted in 1985 for peddling cocaine. As previously mentioned, Roger's penchant for cocaine was one he shared directly with Lasater, who testified that the two had frequently indulged in the drug together.

Johnson reportedly told Clinton that he was "Mr. Casey's fair-haired boy" and that Arkansas had been the CIA's "greatest asset." Johnson went on to deliver to Clinton the following message: "Mr. Casey wanted me to pass on to you that unless you fuck up and do something stupid, you're No. 1 on the short list for a shot at the job that you've always wanted. You and guys like you are the fathers of the new government. We are the new covenant."[49]

According to Terry Reed, who witnessed these happenings, he would later learn that Robert Johnson was none other than William Barr. These allegations place Barr's use of the alias Robert Johnson in an interim period where little is known about Barr's activities – he had served as Deputy Assistant Director for Legal Policy in the Reagan White House until September 1983, and then had joined President Bush's Justice Department in 1989. As previously discussed, it was between the months of September and October 1983 that Casey's pre-Enterprise support for the Contras began moving in a concrete way, and it was also in this same period that Manuel Noriega had entered the picture. The answers that Barr provided to the Senate Judiciary Committee states that between 1983 and 1989, he had returned to the CIA-linked firm of Shaw, Pittman, Potts & Trowbridge, and in 1985 had become a partner at that firm.[50]

As for Roger Clinton, after he was released from prison in 1986, he went to work at Calumet Farms, a Horse Farm in Lexington, Kentucky.[51] Calumet's owner, J.T. Lundy, had been a longtime friend and business partner of Lasater, who was something a big name in the inner circle of Lexington's elite. Lundy boasted his own roster of organized crime contacts. One figure who flickered in and out of Calumet was Robert Libutti, a brash "New Jersey gambler, racehorse consultant" and associate of the Gambino crime family.[52] All in all, it was an interesting environment for a politician's brother out on parole who was ostensibly seeking to clean up his act.

Just across the street from Calumet were a pair of curious horse farms. One was owned by Nelson Bunker Hunt, of the Dallas Hunt family, who had been one of Oliver North's prominent private Contra donors. Next door was Murty Farms, purchased in 1984 by fellow Texan – and fraternity brother of Nelson Hunt – George Aubin.[53] Aubin was part of the savings and loan crowd down in Texas, and was something of a mentor to a mega-borrower named John Riddle. Besides looting S&Ls, Riddle had a taste for aviation, which was expressed through his ownership of a company called First Western Airline. According to Ari Ben-Menashe, First Western "was used as a cutout by the Israelis and the CIA to transport American arms to the Middle East."[54]

Additional information about the Mena operations was provided in a deposition given by the controversial Iran-Contra whistleblower Richard Brenneke. His allegations, made in the summer of 1991, were recently summarized in a lawsuit filed on behalf of Linda Ives, the mother of Kevin Ives. Kevin's body was found, along with that of his friend Dan Henry, on train tracks near Alexander, Arkansas, under exceedingly strange circumstances.[55] According to this summary, Brenneke claimed that he had flown "10 to 12 flights of a C-130 into the Mena, Arkansas, airport" and "took guns and paramilitary forces from Mena to Panama."[56] Cocaine was being flown back from Latin America to the Mena airport, where it was dispersed to, among others, representatives from New York City organized crime.

One of the most fascinating parts of Brenneke's allegations is that he moved money that had been paid by the organized crime figures for the drugs into accounts in a Panamanian bank held in the name of International Fund for Mergers and Acquisitions (IFMA), a company where he was acting as vice president. IFMA was reportedly not only utilized by the CIA, but by Michael Harari, Mossad's man in Panama, to launder money and arrange arms shipments in Latin America.[57] The company's president was Ramon d'Onofrio, a businessman with a long track record of shady deals and bankruptcies.[58] A New York Times article identified d'Onofrio as a business associate of Alfred Buhler, a lawyer from Lichtenstein, who was reported by the paper as being protected by the CIA itself.[59]

Another d'Onofrio business partner was Charles Hurwitz, the bigtime corporate raider who, from his humble beginnings as a prominent commodities trader Bache & Co., had developed extensive holdings ranging from the Kaiser Aluminum Corporation to Arkansas real estate to the United Financial Group (UFG), the largest S&L in Texas.[60] Hurwitz filled UFG's asset sheets with junk bonds peddled by Drexel Burnham Lambert, which also owned a 10% stake in the S&L. This wasn't Hurwitz's only involvement with the Drexel Burnham junk bond kings: a sale of $450 million worth of junk bonds were sold to help a Hurwitz company, Maxxam, take over California's Pacific Lumber.[61]

UFG was subsequently bought by the New York bonds trader and financier Lewis Ranieri, who appears in Jeffrey Epstein's contact book with eight phone numbers and two addresses listed. Ranieri is best known for his role in developing the first market for mortgage-backed securities.

Hurwitz, while he was still riding high on Drexel's runaway junk bond train, developed several business ventures with the mob-linked S&L bigwig from Louisiana, Herman Beebe.[62] As mentioned in the previous chapter, Beebe had, during the 1970s, owned a warehouse where explosives destined for Cuban exiles were stored – explosives that were meant to be moved by Barry Seal, prior to a Customs sting.

Herman Beebe had a tendency to appear at the same S&Ls where Mario Renda could also be found. Renda, as noted in the previous chapter, was Adnan Khashoggi's friend with a penchant for seeding fraudulent borrowing with Teamster pension fund deposits. A list of banks controlled or suspected of being controlled by Beebe from a 1985 Comptroller of the Currency report included Mainland Savings of Houston. This is the same S&L where Renda had brokered deposits and where Khashoggi had involved himself in an aforementioned series of bewildering deals. Were Renda and Beebe operating in concert? A smoking gun is hard to discern, but the two both hung out – and arranged deals – at the La Costa resort in Southern California. La Costa, as noted in chapter 1, had long been a mob hang-out; it had been built with the aid of Teamster pension fund loans, and Burton Kanter was listed as the resort's agent at the time it was incorporated.

Beebe had other potential ties to Iran-Contra. The same Comptroller of the Currency report that named Beebe-linked banks also listed Palmer National Bank in Washington DC.[63] If Beebe did control Palmer, it was hidden. The bank's founder was Stefan Halper, a DC bureaucrat who had held various positions within the Nixon, Ford, and Reagan administrations. Halper's father-in-law was Ray Cline, the old OSS and CIA veteran who, at the time, was working with John Singlaub of GeoMiliTech.

Palmer was also where the National Endowment for the Preservation of Liberty, the Contra fundraising apparatus set up by Spitz Channell on behalf of the Enterprise, held its bank accounts. According to internal NEPL documents acquired by Pete Brewton from the National Security Archives in DC, the NEPL maintained accounts at only one other bank: Irving Trust, the New York City-based commercial bank. Irving Trust was also the major financier, alongside Drexel Burnham Lambert, of Charles Hurwitz's Pacific Lumber takeover.[64] Irving Trust which subsequently be purchased by Bank of New York with the aid of Bruce Rappaport. Bank of New York and Rappaport's Inter Maritime Bank (IMB) would become intertwined when the stake held by BCCI in IMB was purchased by BNY.

Irving Trust also maintained a branch in Little Rock, Arkansas. In the late 1970s, an intern at this branch was James T. Riady, the son of a prominent Indonesian banker and businessman named Mochtar Riady. Together, the Riady family, originally from China's Fujian province, and their close relationship with another giant of Arkansas business, Jackson Stephens, would become crucial to understanding what exactly was happening in Arkansas during Clinton's time as governor.

BANK BUILDING

The last time we encountered Jackson Stephens, he was aiding BCCI's takeover of First General Bankshares – later rechristened as First American Bankshares – and its subsidiary, National Bank of Georgia. He had been brought into the fold through his friendship with one of NBG's big shareholders who had been courted by BCCI, Bert Lance, who Stephens had brought to Arkansas with some of BCCI's representatives for negotiations over the purchases.

When Lance began searching for buyers of his NBG stock, BCCI wasn't the only interested party that he brought to Stephens' attention. There was also Mochtar Riady, a politically-connected Indonesian banker and financier who commanded the Bank of Central Asia, "the third largest private banking firm in Indonesia" that held some $100 million in assets.[65] In the years to come, the wealth of Mochtar and his son, James Riady, would swell into the billions, all marshaled under the auspices of an umbrella corporation called the Lippo Group. Their meteoric ascension was thanks in no small part to the strategic partnership the Riadys had with Jackson Stephens and Stephens Inc., which developed soon after the Indonesians dropped out of the NBG purchase.

How Riady first entered the picture is telling. According to various press reports, Riady had been introduced to Stephens by Bert Lance, while Lance had first come into contact with Riady through an introduction made by Robert B. Anderson, a once-well regarded figure in politics who had become a specialist in offshore banking. Anderson and Riady, meanwhile, had been brought together several years prior by an unnamed executive from New York City's Chemical Bank.[66]

Chemical, at the time, had established a significant presence in south-east Asia: it had opened branches in Hong Kong; maintained business operations in Singapore; and in Indonesia, it had embarked in a joint venture with the Riady family. Chemical Bank would ultimately maintain a long-running alliance with Riady interests. In 1988, their joint venture expanded when they teamed up with Royal Bank of Scotland and Jardine Fleming (a Hong Kong partnership between the merchant houses Jardine Matheson and Robert Fleming & Co.) to set up the Multinational Finance Corp, or Multicor. According to Mochtar, Multicor was set up first and foremost to "expand Bank Central Asia's financing channels and financing capabilities."[67]

While Riady was toying with buying into National Bank of Georgia, commentators and regulators began to suspect that something else was afoot. One common concern was that Riady wasn't acting alone, and that he was serving as a front for Indonesian political interests that hoped to gain political and economic leverage in the United States.

Interestingly, in this same period, William Casey had a series of dealings with Indonesian interests. These activities later came back to haunt Casey during his confirmation hearings for the CIA, when he was questioned if he had failed to register as a foreign agent for Indonesia.[68]

When he was working in the private sector as an attorney for Rogers & Wells – a time discussed extensively in chapter 6 – Casey took on as clients a complex of interrelated Indonesian interests.[69] There was Pertamina, the country's state-owned oil company, and the Ramayana Indonesian Restaurant in New York City. There was also Indonesian Enterprises Inc., a holding company that had been set up for the restaurant. Pertamina was the major interest in this holding company, holding all of its Class B stock. Indonesian Enterprises issued Class A stock, in turn, to various banks and oil companies that were doing business with Pertamina.

Holders of Class A stock included Bruce Rappaport's InterMaritime Bank, which was engaged in a convoluted succession of fraudulent tanker chartering deals with Pertamina.[70] Elias Kulukundis, mentioned previously as a close business associate of Edward Carey, was also involved in these chartering activities. Investment capital from Kulukundis and Rappaport further mingled in the tanker companies of a "mystery man" named Steven Davids-Morelle, whose Tankers International Navigation Corporation joined Pertamina's tanker chartering and in the purchase of Indonesian Enterprises Inc. stock.

Was there any sort of connection between Casey's relationship with Indonesian interests and Anderson's encounter with the Riadys? The picture is murky, and records of Anderson's own Indonesian activities isn't readily accessible. What is certain, however, is that Anderson was another member, alongside

Rappaport, of Casey's "Hardy Boys" clique, which is certainly suggestive that some sort of collusion was taking place. Furthermore, the list of Indonesian Enterprises, Inc.'s Class A stockholders includes Dresser Industries – the Texas oil concern closely intertwined with Bush family interests – where Anderson had sat on the board of directors.

It is worth diving a little deeper into Anderson's biography before returning to Stephens and Riady, because it is both an illustrative case of high-level political corruption and also intersects in numerous ways with key figures in this ongoing history. With a background in law, Anderson had served in a number of mid-level bureaucratic positions in Texas in the 1930s, including stints as the state's Assistant Attorney General and as the state tax commissioner. In 1937, he became the general counsel for the W.T. Waggoner estate, headquartered in Vernon, Texas. The Waggoner estate was a large ranching empire that extended its reaches into banking and various other industries, real estate development and the like.

The Waggoner family, like many of the great Texas clans, was a source of political clout, and Anderson was soon found mingling with the Texan elite. One impressive early encounter was his purchase of the KTBC radio station, which he then sold to Claudia Alta "Lady Bird" Johnson, Lyndon Johnson's wife, in 1943. It subsequently became a major source of revenue for the Johnson family. Anderson also acted as a lobbyist for powerful Texas oil interests, and was particularly close to early industry giants like Sid Richardson, Clint Murchison, and the Bass family. He could also be found at the helm of the Mid-Continent Oil and Gas Association of Texas, which brought together a wide range of businessmen involved in all different aspects of oil production.

At the urging of these deep-pocketed petroleum interests, Anderson was brought into the Eisenhower administration. In 1953, he was made Secretary of the Navy, and a year later he moved and became the Deputy Secretary of Defense. In 1955, he left government and took a position as president of Ventures Ltd., a Canadian mining company controlled mostly by American and British industrial and financial interests, before returning to the public sector again as Eisenhower's Secretary of the Treasury. There, he arranged for lucrative tax relief packages for Texas oil. By 1961, he was back in the private sector again, this time managing his own business consultancy – the Anderson Group – located at Rockefeller Plaza. He also joined on as a limited partner at Carl M. Loeb, Rhoades & Co., the Wall Street brokerage firm that was closely interlinked with Bronfman interests (the Loeb-Bronfman connection will be discussed in chapter 11).

During his time with Loeb, Rhoades & Co., Anderson developed two important connections. The first was to Bank of America, which was central to the later development of BCCI. In 1964, Anderson joined forces with Bank of America and Belgium's Banque Lambert to set up the World Banking Corporation, an offshore facility in Bermuda that was set up for dealing in the emerging Eurodollars market.[71] That same year, he joined Bank of America's council of advisors.

He also forged ties with Rockefeller interests. He had been connected to the Rockefellers during his time in the Eisenhower administration – if not earlier, given the presence of the Rockefeller family in Texas. Then, during the mid-1960s, he became an investment advisor for Standard Oil of Indiana. In 1969, this led Anderson, acting on behalf of Standard, to set up an investment consortium in partnership with Maurice Tempelsman, a major player in the international diamond market, that would push for American-led interests in the Congo.[72]

Tempelsman, interestingly, had ties to American intelligence. With numerous interests across Africa, he recruited veterans of the Agency to navigate that world. As Arthur Levy points out, "In the 1960s Tempelsman hired as his business agent the CIA station chief in Kinshasa, Larry Devlin, who helped put Mobuto into power and afterward served as his personal advisor".[73]

There was yet another line leading from Tempelsman to Casey's "Hardy Boys" that was independent of Anderson. According to Alan Block, one of Rappaport's top lieutenants, Jerry Townsend, was a "former" CIA officer who had worked in Turkey, Zambia, and Burundi with Tempelsman. Block adds that "Tempelsman was part of Rappaport's group, according to Townsend."[74]

Then there were the ties between Anderson and the banking circles around BCCI. In the early 1980s, he was found on the board of the Paris-based Saudi European Bank, which was owned by the BCCI-linked Saudi European Investment Corporation N.V. Other principals in the Saudi European Bank included John

Connally, the former governor of Texas and George Shultz's predecessor in the Nixon administration as Treasury Secretary. When Connally was running against Reagan in the early days of the Republican presidential campaign against Carter, Bechtel had initially backed him before switching to support the eventual president. Connally, at that point, embarked on a voyage as a real estate developer, partnering with the infamously corrupt Ben Barnes – also a former Texan politician – in deals that involved tapping a slew of savings and loans for fraudulent loans.

The S&L connection to Saudi European was strong. Its board also counted with the presence of Charles Keating, whose American Continental Corporation and Lincoln Savings and Loan, pumped out bad loans at an astounding rate after the Reagan administration led the deregulation of the S&L industry. Keating and Connally were close, with the banker having served at first as Connally's West coast finance chairman during his political campaign, followed by a shorter stint as campaign manager. Interestingly, one of Connally's campaign workers, Joyce Downey, later went to work for Connally and Barnes before relocating to Arizona, where she worked as the office manager for John Singlaub's US Council for World Freedom, the American branch of WACL.[75] USCWF happened to be located next door to the headquarters of Keating's American Continental Corporation.

In 1984, Keating's Lincoln Savings invested $18 million into Saudi European's holding company, the Saudi European Investment Corp.[76] Keating then joined Saudi European's international advisory board, while Saudi European began issuing lines of credit to Keating's companies. According to a report in the Los Angeles Times, the "bank and its parent company acted as sham financiers and buyers in Keating's efforts to book profits at Lincoln."[77] A subsidiary of Lincoln called Amcor Investments – which was involved in several complicated real estate arrangements with John Connally – sold an option it held to Saudi European in order to buy a "profits interest" in General Oriental Securities Limited, an offshore corporation set up by the corporate raider Sir James Goldsmith for takeover purposes.[78] Goldsmith, as previously mentioned, was part of the Clermont Club and was also one of the main businessman, along with Robert Maxwell, sought out by Rothschild Inc. to help the elite banking family expand its influence in the US financial system.[79]

In December 1986, Keating, utilizing a subsidiary of his American Continental Corporation called Dungiven, organized a Bahamian investment corporation called Trendinvest.[80] Joining the board of directors was one of the busiest man in shadow banking, Alfred Hartmann, who could also be found alongside Anderson, Keating and Connally at the Saudi European Bank. Among the other stakeholders in Trendinvest was Gesellschaft Fur Trend Analysen, a West German firm that specialized in computerized currency trading, and Royork and Company, a subsidiary of the Royal Bank of Canada. Through this offshore vehicle, Keating was able to funnel tens of millions of S&L money out the United States – money that, in the end, had to be paid back by the US taxpayer. Thus, the fact that Riady's meeting of Bert Lance, and by extension Jackson Stephens, was made by Anderson, reveals the type of networks that enabled the Riady-Stephens partnership.

The story of Jackson Stephens is inseparable from Arkansas' longest running and most prestigious law firm, Rose Law. Rose's beginnings went back to the 1820s, when Arkansas was still a territory instead of a state. One of its founders was Robert Crittenden, a Kentucky-born lawyer who had been appointed by President James Monroe to act as the governor of the Arkansas territories. His partner was Chester Ashley, one of Arkansas' very first senators. From these beginnings, Rose Law was woven into the fabric of the state itself, and remained closely tied to the Arkansas' political and economic elite.

Arkansas, to quote journalist L.J. Davis, boasted a "ruling oligarchy, a small and relatively powerless middle class and a disenfranchised, leaderless populace."[81]

Through the 1970s and into the late 1980s, a period which saw Stephens' star rise in Arkansas, Rose was headed by C. Joseph Giroir. In addition to his status as a high-powered attorney, Giroir was a specialist in securities. In the 1960s, Giroir worked far from Arkansas, in the offices of the Securities and Exchange Commission in Washington, DC. While little is known about his activities in the capital, what is certain is that, when he returned to his home state, he brought with him an adamantly pro-business outlook and a drive for modernization.

Once settled at Rose, he went about upgrading Rose's home-spun inclinations for the nascent information age. "He brought the firm billable hours, computers and high-premium securities work, then got in trouble with his side business – buying and selling banks while wearing too many hats for his shallow pockets, and using Rose lawyers to do the work."[82]

One particularly controversial banking escapade in which Giroir was embroiled involved a string of borrowing from a fraud-riddled savings and loan in Pine Bluff, Arkansas, called FirstSouth. Regulators were intrigued by whatever relationship Giroir had with the S&L. While he was dipping into their loan basket, he had also become a stakeholder in First-South and was writing legal advice to the S&L on paper with a Rose Law letterhead.[83] FirstSouth, by the time it collapsed in 1986, had doled out a big pile of loans that were never paid back. Among their biggest borrowers – and defaulters – was Clint Murchison Jr., the organized crime-linked Texas oil player.[84]

A small group of lawyers who worked under Giroir would later become powerful actors in state and federal politics and, while at Rose, they were involved with the firm's strangest dealings. This group was composed of Webster Hubbell, who would become Associate Attorney General under President Clinton; Clinton's future White House counsel Vince Foster; and the soon-to-be First Lady, Hillary Rodham Clinton. This trio, like their boss, had an appetite for shady business dealings. All three were partners in a company called Midlife Investors, which had been set up in the early 1980s by E.F. Hutton. "Hubbell, Foster and Rodham Clinton each kicked in $15,000 and named each other – rather than their spouses – as beneficiaries."[85] Through Midlife, the trio dumped money into companies being targeted by corporate takeover artists like James Goldsmith.

Clinton in particular liked to haunt the corporate boardrooms and offices, often spending more time working on business affairs than the daily law work demanded by Rose. As L.J. Davis writes,

> She was only one of two Rose partners to act as a corporate director, serving at various times on the boards of four companies and earning $64,700 in 1991 from director's fees alone. (Her 1991 salary from Rose was in the vicinity of $110,000; her husband earned $35,000 and got to live in a free house.) She was on the board of Wal-Mart, a Rose client that Stephens had launched on the road to glory. (Rodham Clinton also owned $80,000 worth of Wal-Mart stock.) She served Southern Development Bancorp, a holding company created to give development loans in rural Arkansas, which, according to the Washington Post, paid Rose somewhere between $100,000 and $200,000 in fees. In 1989 she joined the board of TCBY yogurt company, which occupies the tallest building in Little Rock. TCBY then proceeded to pay Rose $750,000 for legal work during the next few years.[86]

Such was the backdrop to the grand ambitions of Stephens and Riady for a sprawling business complex. Not satisfied with playing in Arkansas alone, the pair made a very early stop-over in Macau, where they bought up massive blocks of stock in the storied Seng Heng Bank, which allowed them to gain full control over the company.[87] The sellers had been the trio of Cheng Yu-tung, Ho Yin, and Lu Daohe. Cheng had been the founder of two interlinked Hong Kong-based conglomerates, Chow Tai Fook Enterprises and New World Development Company Limited. Through these two large corporations, he had become one of the city's richest individuals. Cheng was very close to Stanley Ho, another Hong Kong billionaire who held the monopoly over Macau's casino industries. In 1989, Stephens and Riady, curiously enough, sold Seng Heng to STDM, a company controlled by Stanley Ho.[88] Ho will appear again later, in chapter 16, as one of his close business partners, Ng Lap Seng, was a key figure in the so-called Chinagate scandal of the mid-1990s.

Cheng's associate in Seng Heng, Ho Yin, is worth examining briefly. Like Cheng and Stanley Ho, Ho Yin was another Hong Kong-based businessman with numerous Macau holdings. What he was most infamous for, however, was his role in Macau's illicit gold trade, which flourished due to international regulations governing gold markets from the end of World War II through the early 1970s. His particular largess derived from the ties he had cultivated with the nascent Chinese Communist Party, having made contacts with Mao and Zhou Enlai shortly after the revolution.[89]

His work managing funds for the Party earned him a spot among the so-called "Red Fat Cats," and he even held a position on the Standing Committee of the Chinese National People's Congress. In Macau, meanwhile, he ran multiple public companies and for a time served as vice president of the Macau

Legislative Assembly. He also ran numerous businesses, including multiple banks, through which his gold trade flowed. Among these banks was Seng Heng. Until 1974, when gold trading was deregulated, "$40-50 million worth of gold passed through the narrow door of Seng Heng annually."[90] All in all, this made a very interesting purchase on the part of Stephens and Riady.

Seng Heng wasn't the only bank the duo bought in 1983. That was also the year they began purchasing the stake held by Midland, Texas, oilman John Hendrix in the First Arkansas Bankstock Corporation (FABCO). As part of the deal, FABCO issued additional stock that could be purchased exclusively by Stephens and Riady; combined with Hendrix's holding, Stephens Inc. and Lippo achieved control over FABCO as a joint venture.[91] This takeover granted them control over a wide network of Arkansas banks that were held by FABCO. These included Worthen Bank & Trust Co of Little Rock, First National Bank of Hots Springs, the National Credit Corp of Pine Bluff, and the First National Bank of Mena.[92]

That the latter bank was located in the same town where the CIA had set up shop and where drug smuggling was taking place raises all sorts of questions.

However, at the same time, the acquisition of these banks was part of a wider effort by Stephens and Riady to build out an Arkansas banking empire. They turned to Joseph Giroir, the head of the Rose Law Firm, to lobby for changes in state laws that restricted the range of activities that bank holding companies could carry out.[93] Giroir then purchased several banks, which were subsequently sold to Stephens and Riady. For his efforts, Giroir received money, a large block of Worthen stock, and a spot on Worthen's board. Rose Law became counsel to Worthen, and the bank itself was transformed into something of a flagship for Stephens' interests.

CLINTON'S DEVELOPMENT MACHINE

In late 1984, Governor Bill Clinton unveiled an ambitious economic development plan for the state of Arkansas. It was a sterling example of Clinton's commitment to a "pro-business" vision of government, and a direct foreshadowing of the sorts of economic policies that would become the norm during his time as US president. As one Arkansas newspaper put it, Clinton's agenda "would wed some state agencies, their activities, funds and fund sources to efforts of the private sector."[94] It included the creation of a science and technology hub to "seed the birth of new firms, industries and innovations in Arkansas," and a capital fund that would "aggressively lend higher risk capital to … member banks."[95]

The centerpiece of Clinton's plan, however, was the transformation of Arkansas Housing Development Authority, established in the 1970s, into the Arkansas Development Finance Authority (ADFA). The transition was more than a cosmetic change – the mandate for the new agency was to "do in the field of business development what it does in the field of housing development." A month later, in January, Clinton outlined how the ADFA would work. It would "sell a wide range of tax-exempt revenue bonds to generate revenue. The money would then be passed to financial institutions for low-interest economic development loans."[96]

The fortunes of Jackson Stephens became intimately entangled with the activities of the AFDA. Stephens Inc., for example, was frequently utilized by the ADFA to underwrite the bonds it issued.[97] Stephens' Worthen Bank, meanwhile, sometimes acted as the trustee for loans made by the ADFA.[98] The bank itself directly interlocked with the agency itself: the president of the Worthen branch in the city of Pine Bluff, Arkansas, James Stobaugh, sat on the ADFA board. To make matters even more incestuous, one of the recipients of a major ADFA loan, Arkansas Freightways, was a freighter company in which Stephens Inc. held the controlling stake.[99] Rose Law, of course, was Arkansas Freightways' legal representative of choice.

The ADFA seems to have had a particularly close relationship with Beverly Enterprises, a subsidiary of Stephens Inc. that managed a national nursing home chain. Bobby Stephens (no familial relation to Jackson Stephens), the vice president of Beverly Enterprises, sat alongside Stobaugh on the board of the ADFA. Unsurprisingly, Beverly Enterprises profited handsomely from ADFA bond issuance, and retained the services of Rose Law. Several Rose Law associates, including Webster Hubbell, owned stock in Beverly.[100] Beverly would later pop up in the Inslaw Affair – discussed in the next chapter – due to allegations that it was using the infamous, compromised version of the PROMIS software.

Besides Stephens Inc., the ADFA was a great economic boon for Clinton's friend Dan Lasater and his bond business, Lasater & Company. Larry Nichols, the ADFA's marketing director who had been dismissed by the governor, charged that the agency had been "set up by Clinton for Dan Lasater."[101] The reason for Nichols' dismissal is intriguing: the press had learned that he had been using ADFA phones to make long-distant calls to Contra leaders, which he insisted had been authorized by ADFA head Wooten Epes. While there might have been a bit of hyperbole and vindictiveness to Nichols' allegation, it is true that Lasater & Co. acted as an underwriter for bonds issued by the agency.[102] There seems to have been a high degree of competition between Stephens Inc. and Lasater & Co. when it came to these underwriting contracts, but there was at least one direct link between the two companies. Michael Drake, formerly of Stephens Inc, was the vice president of Lasater & Co.

The ADFA's first industrial development loan was granted to a strange company in Russellville, Arkansas called Park-On-Meter, Inc, or POM for short. It was another clear-cut example of Arkansas nepotism: the law firm that handled the legal work on the loan was Rose Law, while POM's founder and president was Seth Ward II – the brother-in-law of Webster Hubbell. Alexander Cockburn, who penned a series of articles on POM, noted that "Worthen Bank … appeared among the institutions that from time to time had liens on POM."[103]

In Compromised, Terry Reed and John Cummings wrote that the initial ADFA loan to POM was intended for the expansion of their industrial capacities in connection with a subcontract the company had gained from Iver Johnson's Arms, a New Jersey-based firearms manufacturer.[104] In addition to parking meters, POM was dipping into the armament business: on behalf of Iver Johnson's, Reed and Cummings claimed, POM was constructing bolts and carrier assemblies for M16 rifles. Iver Johnson's, in turn, had been tapped by the CIA for covert weapons production, and the M16s were ultimately destined for the Contras in Nicaragua.

Howard Schneider, a journalist for the Washington Post, found that the "Iver Johnsons company near Little Rock, which the book [Compromised] portrays as being the center of the gun-manufacturing effort, did ship a load of weapons to Nicaragua through a Mexican distributor" – precisely the arrangement that Reed and Cummings described.[105] POM itself was found to have had a contract to make gun parts on behalf of Iver Johnson's, though Seth Ward Jr. told the Post that it had been firing pins, not bolts. Iver Johnson's, for its part, identified the arms as M1 rifles, not M16s.

Gary Webb observed a stark similarity between the gun manufacturing operation in Arkansas and a similar operation that had taken shape on the Cabazon Indian Reservation in Riverside County, California.[106] What had started off as a takeover of the tribe as part of a plan to develop a gambling hub by John Philip Nichols, a mobster with reputed CIA ties, had transformed into an intricate joint venture with the Wackenhut Corporation and a handful of other firms (at least one of which was a direct CIA cut-out company) to develop weapons systems.[107] Some of these, such as a line of light-weight machine gun pistols, were intended to be provided to the Contras.

These activities at Cabazon were at the center of journalist Danny Casolaro's investigation into the network that he dubbed "the Octopus" and Cabazon played a key role in the Inslaw affair or PROMIS scandal – the subject of the next chapter.

Contra leader Eden Pastora – who later ran afoul of the Enterprise and was the target of an assassination attempt in May 1984 – attended at least one weapons demonstration at Cabazon. The list of those present for this demonstration included John Vanderwerker, a CIA research and development specialist, G. Wayne Reeder, a crooked developer close to Nichols (Reeder, incidentally, was a major S&L borrower with close connections to Herman Beebe), and Earl Brian, a close friend of Ronald Reagan and the controlling interest behind several tech firms.[108] Brian, who was purported to have arrived at the demonstration with Reeder, would emerge as a central player in the Inslaw Affair.

Michael Riconosciuto, a chief witness in that case, was also present at the demonstration, and would subsequently charge that the alterations made to Inslaw's PROMIS software were made at Cabazon. Riconosciuto further attested to personal knowledge of Contra-oriented weapons development taking place at POM in Arkansas. He told Alexander Cockburn that POM had entered into an arrangement with

Wackenhut and Stormont Labs, a California-based genetics research and pharmaceutical company, “to develop chemical and biological weapons that could be deployed in chemical guerrilla warfare.”[109]

An Army “chemical unit” was purported to have supplied POM with “chemical agents,” while the parking meter manufacturer, as part of its end of the arrangement, prototyped explosive devices such as grenades and bombs that would disperse the chemicals.

Internal documentation from Cabazon Arms, the joint venture between Wackenhut and the Cabazon tribe, does allude to Stormont Labs in the context of “agents and production techniques related to biological war.” The document in question, obtained by Casolaro and today logged in an archived collection of his surviving papers, was a letter from Nichols to a Harry Fair at Tactical Technology in Arlington, Virginia. That would be the Tactical Technology Office of the Pentagon’s DARPA, which Fair was connected to in the mid-1980s.[110]

Mentioned elsewhere in the papers of the Cabazon-Wackenhut joint venture was a company called the First Intercontinental Development Corporation (FIDCO), described by author Cheri Seymour as a purported National Security Council front company.[111] Directors of FIDCO included Michael McManus, an attorney who served as an assistant to Reagan’s chief of staff, George K. Pender and Kenneth Roe of Burns & Roe, and Clinton Murchison Jr.[112] As mentioned earlier, Murchison Jr. himself was in and out of Arkansas, borrowing heavily from the Rose Law-linked FirstSouth savings and loan.

When questioned about Riconosciuto’s claims, Ward Jr. told a journalist from The Nation that POM wasn’t in the chemical warfare business. The company was instead busy making “re-entry cones for the nuclear warheads on MX missiles and nozzles for rocket engines.”[113] Intriguingly, the US Army’s 354th Chemical Company, since April 1981, had been located in Russellville, Arkansas. This unit maintained property directly adjacent to POM’s industrial complex.[114]

Riconosciuto told Alexander Cockburn and Bryce Hoffman, a journalist for The Nation, that since 1981, POM had been in the business of making drop tanks – auxiliary fuel tanks attached to the exteriors of aircraft – for C-130s. However, Cockburn and Hoffman were not able to confirm via the FAA, which regulates tank manufacturing, that POM was an authorized producer. Cockburn writes that when Hoffman contacted the FAA, “the official with whom he spoke apparently misunderstood his question on drop tank regulations and assumed he was a prospective manufacturer. ‘Oh! So you must have one of those Southern Air Transport contracts’.”[115]

OFFSHORED

One of the weirder intersections in the ADFA complex was between the development agency and the Coral Reinsurance Company, which had been set up in the offshore haven of Barbados. Reinsurance is basically insurance for insurance companies: it allows company A (in this case, the primary insurance firm) to offload portions of its risk onto company B (the reinsurance company). The reasons for this are multifold. It offers a buffer or protection for the insurance company from risks, while also – and perhaps more importantly – allowing insurance companies to engage in expanded business practices that might otherwise have been blocked by government regulations requiring particular asset to risk ratios. Often, insurance companies will set up their own reinsurance companies for this exact purpose. In order to hide the ownership structure, offshore havens are selected to create these companies.

This is exactly how Coral functioned. It took debt and other risks off the books of its parent, though this parent was hidden through proxies. On the other side of this firewall, in actual control of Coral, was American International Group (AIG), the international insurance and finance monolith that, during the 2008 financial crisis, was bailed out by the US government to the tune of $180 billion dollars. In the Financial Crisis Inquiry Report, published in 2011, AIG was identified as having a lengthy history of engaging in overly risky ventures, frequently carried out with little to no hedging or protection.116 AIG’s creation of Coral is just one example of this.

In order to hide its connection to Coral, AIG had called upon the resources of Goldman Sachs, which in turn did the actual legwork in setting up the reinsurance company. Overseeing this operation was the head of Goldman’s stock and bonding trading department, Robert Rubin.[117] Rubin would subsequently serve as co-chairman of Goldman, starting in 1990, before transitioning to a storied career in public service. At the beginning of 1993, Bill Clinton – now president – appointed him as the director of his National Economic Council. A year later, Rubin was sworn in as Clinton's Treasury Secretary. He served in that position until 1999 and, upon leaving the government, he went to work at Citigroup. As will be noted in chapter 16, Rubin was the person who signed off on Jeffrey Epstein's first visit to the Clinton White House in early 1993.

Goldman Sachs organized Coral in a such way that AIG would not appear as a stockholder. Instead, stocks would be spread around to a small and select group who had been handpicked by Goldman. One of these was Samuel Zell, a shady property-flipper from Chicago who had ties to the Gouletas family, whose significant ties to Epstein are detailed in chapter 12, as well as to Burton Kanter. In 1976, Zell and Kanter, along with a handful of other associates, were indicted for hiding money gained from real estate deals in Helliwell and Kanter's Castle Bank.[118]

The ADFA, however, was the largest holder of stock in Coral Reinsurance.[119] It fueled its purchase in Goldman's private offering with a hefty, multi-million dollar loan from the Chicago branch of Japan's Sanwa Bank, which had a history of money laundering allegations. For instance, Sanwa's Los Angeles branch had been a depository for money pilfered by the Marcos family of the Philippines.[120] Interestingly, Terry Reed and John Cummings write in Compromised that the ADFA loan to Park-on-Meter was purchased by Fuji Bank of Japan.[121] Fuji Bank has a history of involvement with Sanwa Bank, and the two banks have undertaken several different merger projects since the 1970s.

What brought the ADFA to the attention of Goldman Sachs and AIG? It is strange that a fairly obscure state government development agency, albeit one teeming with ties to intelligence networks and criminal enterprises, would be selected by these major Wall Street businesses to effectively underwrite AIG's reinsurance apparatus. The answer is that the deal was arranged through the ADFA's powerful insider, Jackson Stephens. It turns out that Stephens boasted all sorts of business connections with AIG. For example, an offshore company called Beverly Indemnity was doing some work underwriting policies issued by AIG. Beverly Indemnity was itself something of a hidden subsidiary of Beverly Enterprises, and was run by Beverly's general counsel, Robert Pommerville.[122]

The nursing homes managed by Beverly Enterprises were insured by National Union Fire and Home Insurance of Pittsburgh, an insurance company 100% owned by AIG.[123] National Union Fire and Home had its own connections to the world of offshore insurance hijinks. According to financial journalist Lucy Komisar, the AIG subsidiary was providing insurance to Victor Posner's NVF Corp. via an offshore company called Chesapeake Insurance.[124] Posner's NVF, as mentioned in chapter 6, had been one of the firms represented by William Casey in the years just prior to his time as Reagan's CIA director. Importantly, Reagan offered the position of deputy director of the CIA to Maurice Greenberg, then the head of AIG. Greenberg, who had maintained longstanding ties to the agency, declined the offer.[125]

Greenberg's ties to the CIA are nested within a wider history of involvement of AIG with the world of intelligence. These ties stretched back to the earlier years of the company, when it was known as American International Underwriters, and was overseen by the company's founder, Cornelius Vander Starr. Starr had set up a string of insurance companies across the Asia and the Pacific region, which became key nodes in the wartime intelligence apparatus. Starr himself went to work for the OSS, which brought him into contact with other "China hands" like Paul Helliwell. These insurance companies were deployed as cover for OSS agents, many of whom had started off as Starr's employees.[126] In addition, AIG's longtime general counsel, Duncan Lee, had served in the OSS as the special assistant to William Donovan. After the war, he went to work as counsel for the CIA's Civil Air Transport. Incredibly, Lee was eventually outed as having acted as a mole for Soviet intelligence within the OSS.[127]

The connection between Starr and Helliwell was of particular importance. In 1963, Helliwell and Inge Gordon Mosvold – a frontman for Daniel K. Ludwig, the mysterious billionaire shipping magnate – set up the Bank of the Caribbean Limited. It was something of a paper bank, established and then left on the shelf. During the mid-1960s, it was picked up by American International Underwriters and rechristened as Underwriters Bank Limited. The directors of the bank were all individuals connected to Helliwell and

Kanter's Castle Bank, signaling that the insurance complex that would become AIG was woven into the same hot money networks utilized by the CIA and organized crime.[128]

That Sam Zell, with his own dealings with Kanter and Castle Bank, would end up alongside the ADFA as a stockholder in AIG's Coral Reinsurance suggests that these networks are in fact linked directly together. Also instructive is the fact that Paul Helliwell himself seems to have been involved in the very first offshore reinsurance companies, which he set up on behalf of George Eccles (who sat on the board of the Moody-controlled American National Insurance Company, or ANICO).[129] AIG, meanwhile, took credit itself for developing the practice of offshoring reinsurance companies.[130] Given the intertwined history of Helliwell and AIG, it is possible that both stand together at the genesis of these deceptive financial tactics.

BCCI RETURN

Jackson Stephens liked to spread around his money and political influence. He was not content trafficking just with the Clintons and Arkansas interests, even if they were being propelled at a rapid pace toward the White House. He was also intent on cozying up to their counterparts in the Republican Party – the Bush family. In the late 1980s, Stephens was a member of the Bush-led "Team 100" project, which was a coterie of deep-pocketed GOP donors who had contributed at least $100,000 to the party (a Washington Post article on the Team 100 noted that donors included "major Drexel Burnham Lambert clients Frank Lorenzo, Ronald Perelman, T. Boone Pickens, and Saul Steinberg").[131] During this same time period, Stephens' wife Mary Anne served as the co-chair of the Bush for President campaign's Arkansas wing.[132]

Few cases, however, are as telling as the encounter between Jackson Stephens and Harken Energy, a small oil company oddly full of influential principals – the best known among them being George W. Bush, who was both a stakeholder and director. The story of Stephens and Harkens brings, among other things, BCCI back into the picture, and also sets the stage for the deepening relationship between BCCI-linked individuals and the banking networks down in Arkansas.

Harken was created in July 1973. The company was incorporated in California by two Wall Street traders, Phil Kendrick Jr. and Henry L. Mulligan.[133] Their early target was Australia, which was viewed at the time as a place with untapped drilling potential. They soon entered into a consortium alongside Esso and Exxon and, before long, Harken had a dozen wells producing a modest amount of crude. In 1983, Kendrick and Mulligan unloaded Harken to a syndicate led by a pair of New York attorneys, Alan and Wayne Quasha. A sizable share of Harken stock was purchased by an offshore company called North American Resources (NAR). NAR was a joint venture of the Quashas and the Richemont Group. Richemont is based in Switzerland, but first began in South Africa under the leadership of its founder, Antony Rupert. Richemont had been formed on the basis of Rupert's predecessor company, set up in 1947, called the Rembrandt Group. Rembrandt had been closely tied to European financial interests. For example, Edmund L. Rothschild, then chairman of N.M. Rothschild, had served on the board of Rembrandt. Even the initial fortune that Rupert used to set up Rembrandt can ultimately be traced back to European origins. In 1943, he had become the head of the South African subsidiary of the Distillers Company, the Scottish alcohol and pharmaceutical giant that, as noted in chapter 2, was intimately connected to the Bronfmans.

The Quashas, meanwhile, are perhaps even more interesting than their South African business partner. Alan and Wayne Quasha worked at the law firm founded by their father, William Quasha, who – throughout the 1970s and 1980s – operated from his base in the Philippines. Jonathan Kwitny, in his classic work, Crimes of the Patriots, linked Quasha directly to Nugan Hand, the Australian bank that was utilized by Ted Shackley, Edwin Wilson, and others in their network. General LeRoy Manor, a counter-insurgency specialist, had become the chief of staff for the US Military Pacific Command before retiring and taking a position running the Nugan Hand office in the Philippines. He tapped Quasha to serve as the office's attorney.[134]

Nugan Hand's Philippines office was closely tied to the country's corrupt leader, Ferdinand Marcos. General Manor had known Marcos since his days in the US Pacific Command, when the two negotiated over the land rights for American military bases in the Philippines. Kwitny adds that "Marcos' brother-in-law, Ludwig Rocka, actually shared the Nugan Hand office suite, and Rocka's International Development

& Planning Corporation took over the suite after Nugan Hand's collapse."[135] Rocka himself moved money through the bank, while Ferdinand Marcos and his wife, Imelda, were rumored to do the same. Quasha himself appears to have had ties to the Marcos family. When Marcos was facing stiff political opposition in 1986, he penned a controversial statement in support of the leader.[136]

It was subsequently revealed that the Marcos family hid away massive amounts of money and gold, pilfered from the Filipino citizenry, the public coffers, and the country's gold mines, in secret Swiss bank accounts – namely, those at the Union Bank of Switzerland.[137] According to Kwitny, Union Bank of Switzerland also appeared in the course of the Nugan Hand affair: "Bernie Houghton [one of the bank's founders] was well acquainted with a traveling official of the Union Bank, and had brought him around to Nugan Hand representatives in Asia to make introductions."[138]

David Armstrong, who penned an expose of Harken in Z Magazine in 1991, noted that Union Bank of Switzerland maintained connections to other figures involved with the oil company. Harken was closely connected to a Denver, Colorado-based company called Frontier Oil & Refining Co. – where Alan Quasha served as chairman of the board – which was taken over in the late 1980s by the Richemont Group's Antony Rupert. Armstrong writes that "When Rupert acquired Frontier in a leveraged buyout in 1988, he announced an $85 million 'revolving credit facility' with Union Bank of Switzerland, replacing all of refiner's previous 'working capital facilities.'"[139]

Union Bank of Switzerland also had a history with one of Harken's more surprising investors: the billionaire hedge fund manager George Soros. Shortly after the Quasha-Rupert takeover of Harken in 1983, Soros became the next biggest shareholder in the company after them. In 1984, an arrangement was made where Harken would act as the "exclusive agent and manager of Soros Oil Inc."[140]

Two years later, Harken would gain two additional – and equally surprising – shareholders. For one, there was the Harvard Management Company, the body set up under the auspices of the Harvard Corporation to manage the elite university's investments. Less than a decade later, Harvard and Soros would be found alongside each other again in arranging the privatization and looting of Russia state-owned industries shortly after the collapse of the Soviet Union.

As Russ Baker has shown, the longtime head of the Harvard Corporation, Robert G. Stone, was intimately familiar with the elite circles where business and intelligence mixed. Intriguingly, the president of the Harvard Management Corporation, Michael Eisenson, stated that "There were not too many degrees of separation between Stone and the Quashas."[141]

There were also not too many degrees of separation between Stone and the Quasha's partner, Antony Rupert. Stone's father-in-law was Godfrey A. Rockefeller, a cousin of the better-known David, Nelson and Laurance brothers and a college friend of George H.W. Bush. In the late 1960s and early 1970s, Godfrey played a central role in organizing the World Wildlife Fund (WWF); according to a memorial published by the fund after his death in 2010, he had even hired their "first staff and chief scientist."[142] This would have certainly brought Godfrey into direct contact with Rupert, as the Southern African businessman had been personally recruited into the organization by Prince Bernard of the Netherlands in 1968.[143]

Also joining Harken in 1986 alongside Harvard was the son of Godfrey's friend – George W. Bush. It was also the year that Harken bought up Spectrum7, a beleaguered oil company that had been formed from a merger between Bush Exploration – set up originally as Arbusto Energy by George W. Bush in 1977, with investment capital provided in part by CIA asset Jim Bath as well as the oil concerns of Ohio businessmen William DeWitt Jr. and Mercer Reynolds III.[144] Spectrum was reportedly barely even an oil producer, "less concerned with recovering oil than in creating tax shelters. The company specialized in selling limited partnerships, which generated generous write-offs before the tax laws were revised in 1986."[145]

Russ Baker writes that within several years of the deal between Bush Energy and Spectrum, DeWitt and Reynolds were "on the ground floor" of an insurance and reinsurance company called Midwest

Employers Casualty Company (MECC).[146] Stephens Inc. – which, as noted above, was actively connected to the world of reinsurance – was one of the big stockholders in MECC.

When Spectrum was purchased by Harken, Bush, formerly Spectrum's CEO, joined Harken's board of directors. He also received a sizable chunk of Harken stock, and a high-dollar consultancy fee that he continued to receive after he went to work on his father's presidential campaign in the late 1980s. In December 1988, Bush took a low-interest loan out from Harken, which he used to purchase more of the company's stock. As the 1980s drew to a close, Harken had drawn itself even deeper into the orbit of Bush-connected interests. It organized a commodities trading subsidiary, which formed a close working relationship with Enron.[147] Enron's president, Kenneth Lay, had been a big supporter of George H.W. Bush since the 1980 election, and the company would later become one of George W. Bush's greatest political benefactors.[148]

However, it was in 1987, before Bush re-upped his Harken stock, that the company crossed paths with Clinton's and Bush's backer, Jackson Stephens. After the Spectrum7 buy-out, Harken had a debt problem, and was in need of further financing in order to resolve its core issues. They turned to Stephens Inc., which quickly went to work and brought in the Union Bank of Switzerland.[149] Union Bank bought up Harken stock via Stephens, but soon the bank ran into a "regulatory snag." The stock was then moved to another client of Stephens Inc., Sheikh Abdullah Taha Bakhsh, who was a close business associate of two BCCI insiders: Khalid bin Mahfouz and Ghaith Pharaon. Union Bank of Switzerland, for its part, had its own BCCI ties. Together with the criminal bank it owned a Swiss bank called Banque de Commerce et de Placements (BCP). Representing BCCI interests at BCP was the ubiquitous Alfred Hartmann.[150]

Despite these efforts, by 1989, Harken was in trouble yet again. The commodity trading subsidiary proved disastrous, costing Harken some $17 million in losses by the end of that year. Soros exited at the same time, and along the way managed to convince Harken to sell their stake in the lucrative Crystal Oil Company of Louisiana to his Quantum Fund N.V. Harken's future was now uncertain, as the company faced a cash shortage. Yet, suddenly, in January 1990, it landed an inexplicable oil deal with the mineral-rich country of Bahrain. David Armstrong wrote that the deal gave "Harken the exclusive exploration, development, production, transportation and marketing rights to most of Bahrain's offshore oil and gas reserves. The territories covered by the pact lie sandwiched between the world's largest oil field, off the shore of Saudi Arabia, and one of the biggest natural gas fields, off the shore of Qatar."[151]

The cast behind Harken's landing of this deal, which came at such a crucial time for the company, is full of the usual suspects. There was David Edwards, who acted as a go-between for Harken and Bahrain. He had previously worked for Stephens Inc. and had been involved in the Harken-Union Bank of Switzerland negotiations. There was Bahrain's prime minister, Sheikh Khalifa bin-Salman al-Khalifa, whose brother was a BCCI stockholder in 1990.[152] And there was also the US ambassador to Bahrain, Charles Hostler. He was reportedly close to BCCI frontman Mohammed Hammoud, who, as discussed previously, was tied up in various business and political ventures with Senator Orrin Hatch and Adnan Khashoggi. And what about Abdullah Taha Bakhsh, the man who ended up with Union Bank of Switzerland's Harken shares? In October 1990, the New York Times reported that he had "acquired a 9.6 percent stake in the Worthen Banking Corporation, a bank holding company based in Little Rock, Arkansas."[153]

Endnotes

1Armstrong, Scott, Malcolm Byrne, Thomas S. Blanton, Laurence Chang, Glenn Baker, and National Security Archive, The Chronology: The Documented Day-to-Day Account of the Secret Military Assistance to Iran and the Contras (NY: Warner, 1987), 516, https://archive.org/details/chronologydocume00arms.

2Paul Houston and Michael Wines, "Papers from North Safe Trace Cash; Diagrams Suggest a Network of Groups to Aid the Contras," Orlando Sentinel, February 28, 1987, https://www.orlandosentinel.com/news/os-xpm-1987-03-01-0110250206-story.html.

3John Cummings and Ernest Volkman, "Snowbound," Penthouse, July, 1989.

4Drugs, Law Enforcement, and Foreign Policy: A Report Prepared by the Subcommittee on Terrorism, Narcotics and International Operations, Committee on Foreign Relations, December 1988, 121, https://babel.hathitrust.org/cgi/pt?id=pst.000014976124.

5Jack Anderson and Dale Van Atta, "Legacy of a Slain Drug Informer," Washington Post, February 28, 1989, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/local/1989/02/28/legacy-of-a-slain-drug-informer/41b5c1bf-ba53-48f4-87d8-afd6bcbc15ce/.

6Drugs, Law Enforcement, and Foreign Policy: A Report, Volume 4, 285.

7Daniel Hopsicker, Barry and the Boys: The CIA, the Mob, and America's Secret History (Madcow Press, 2006), 270.

8Hopsicker, Barry and the Boys, 270.

9Hopsicker, Barry and the Boys, 271.

10"Lavoie Appointed Halwin Treasurer," Arizona Republic, September 12, 1971.

11Sally Denton and Roger Morris, The Money and the Power: The Making of Las Vegas and Its Hold on America, 1947-2000, 1st ed (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 2001), 233, https://archive.org/details/moneypowermaking00dent.

12"Lavoie Appointed Halwin Treasurer"; Don G. Campbell, "Just Like Big Boys: Trust Lets Little Guy Put His Funds to Work in Tough Real Estate Field," Arizona Republic, June 27, 1971.

13Anthony Summers, Official and Confidential: The Secret Life of J. Edgar Hoover (New York: Pocket Star Books, 1994), 266, https://archive.org/details/officialconfide000summ.

14Summers, Official and Confidential, 266.

15Denton and Morris, The Money and the Power, 233.

16Hopsicker, Barry and the Boys, 274.

17Arthur Johnson, Breaking the Banks (Lester & O. Dennys Publisher, 1987), 187.

18James Fleming, "Probing the Cayman Islands Connection," Maclean's, August 29, 1983, https://archive.macleans.ca/article/1983/8/29/probing-the-cayman-islands-connection.

19Hopsicker, Barry and the Boys, 425.

20Peter Dale Scott and Jonathan Marshall, Cocaine Politics: Drugs, Armies, and the CIA in Central America (University of California Press, 1998), 101-102.

21Scott and Marshall, Cocaine Politics, 101.

22Hopsicker, Barry and the Boys, 263.

23Hopsicker, Barry and the Boys, 371.

24Gary Hines, "Defense to Present Case in Seal Murder Trial," UPI, May 12, 1987, https://www.upi.com/Archives/1987/05/12/Defense-to-present-case-in-Seal-murder-trial/8621547790400/.

25Scott and Marshall, Cocaine Politics, 14; Coutin and his ties are discussed at length in "Declaration of Plaintiff's Counsel, Tony Avirgan and Martha Honey v. John Hull, Rene Corbo," https://archive.org/details/DeclarationOfPlaintiffsCounselTonyAvirganAndMarthaHoneyV.John-HullReneCorboEtAl.

26Sally Denton and Roger Morris, "The Crimes of Mena," Penthouse, July, 1995.

27Jo Chandler and Jan Roberts, "The Shadowy Fate of an RAAF Hercules," The Age, July 1, 1991.

28Chandler and Roberts, "The Shadowy Fate."

29Jack Anderson and Dale Van Atta, “Angola Plane Crash Tangled in Mystery,” Washington Post, December 30, 1991, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/sports/1991/12/30/angola-plane-crash-tangled-in-mystery/2d51ee0c-db96-4b4a-bc96-63acc560803c/.

30For a lengthy discussion about Reinhardt, St. Lucia, and the CIA, see Don Rogers, Hotel Hercules: Flying CIA and UN Missions from Jamba to Phnom Penh (Transarms Editions, Chicago), 2015, https://ipisresearch.be/wp-content/uploads/2017/02/Hercules_v004.pdf.
31“Roger Morris Interview,” PBS Frontline, June 13, 1996, https://www.pbs.org/wgbh/pages/frontline/shows/choice/bill/morris1.html.
32Sally Denton and Roger Morris, Partners in Power: The Clintons and their America (Regnery Publishing, 1999), 40.
33Denton and Morris, Partners in Power, 40.
34Denton and Morris, Partners in Power, 80-82.
35Denton and Morris, Partners in Power, 104.
36L. D. Brown, Crossfire: Witness in the Clinton Investigation, 1st ed (San Diego, Calif: Black Forest Press, 1999), 101.
37Alexander Cockburn and Jeffrey St. Clair, Whiteout: The CIA, Drugs, and the Press (London: Verso, 1998), 328, https://archive.org/details/whiteoutciadrugs00cock.
38Terry Reed and John Cummings, Compromised: Clinton, Bush and the CIA (S.P.I. Books, February 1, 1994), 58.
39“Investigation of the Whitewater Development Corporation and Related Matters,” US Senate Special Committee to Investigate the Whitewater Development Corporation and Related Matters (1997), 111.
40Jimmy Chagra utilized as his bodyguards members of “The Company,” an entity described in FBI files as a network of former US special forces soldiers, police officers, and US Cus-toms officials involved in drug smuggling and other illicit activities. The Company was set up and operated by Bradley Bryant and Andrew Thornton II, with a base of operations in rural Kentucky (Thornton was a former Lexington, Kentucky narcotics detective). Sally Denton’s reporting on The Company illustrates that their connections went very high in the world of Kentucky politics, even extending to the office of governor John Y. Brown. If this all sounds very reminiscent of what was taking place in Arkansas at the exact same time, it probably wasn’t coincidence. Brown was close to both Clinton and Lasater (Lasater stated that he had been first introduced to cocaine by Jimmy Lambert, a business partner of Brown who was close to The Company). Bill and Hillary Clinton and Lasater traveled together on Lasater’s private plane to the 1983 Kentucky Derby, and while there Lasater passed “a paper bag containing $300,000 in cash” to Brown via Lambert. In a strange line leading back to the world of Ted Shackley’s “private CIA” network, Denton writes in her book that the ATF strongly suspected that The Company was tied to Edwin Wilson and Frank Terpil’s activities.
On The Company, see Sally Denton, The Bluegrass Conspiracy (Avon, 1990). On Lasater’s money pass, see Denton and Morris, Partners in Power, 419-20.
41Denton and Morris, Partners in Power, 421.
42“Declaration of Plaintiff’s Counsel,” 297.
43“Declaration of Plaintiff’s Counsel,” 297-98.
44Michael Ross, “Probe Links ‘Reagan Doctrine’ to Covert Aid to Laos Rebels,” January 23, 1993, Los Angeles Times, https://www.latimes.com/archives/la-xpm-1993-01-23-mn-1607-story.html.
45Ross, “Probe Links.”
46See Paul Hillmer, A People’s History of the Hmong (Minnesota Historical Society Press, 2015).
47For a good overview on Gene Wheaton, see “Bill Kelly’s 2021 CAPA Conference Presentation on Gene Wheaton and Carl Jenkins,” JFKcountercoup, December 20, 2021 https://jfkcounter-coup.blogspot.com/2021/12/bill-kellys-2021-capa-conference.html.
48Micah Morrison, “The Mena Coverup,” Wall Street Journal, March 3, 1999, https://www.wsj.com/articles/SB920421328276427000.
49Reed and Cummings, Compromised, 277.

50“United States Senate Committee on the Judiciary Questionnaire for Non-Judicial Nominees,” https://www.judiciary.senate.gov/imo/media/doc/William%20Barr%20Senate%20Questionnaire%20(PUBLIC).pdf

51Josh Tyrangiel, “O Brother, Where Art Thy Standards?,” TIME, July 9, 2001, https://content.time.com/time/subscriber/article/0,33009,1000277,00.html.
52Anne Hagedorn Auerbach, Wild Ride: The Rise and Tragic Fall of Calumet Farm, Inc., America’s Premier Racing Dynasty (Holt Papersbacks, 1995), 175.
53Pete Brewton, The Mafia, CIA and George Bush (S.P.I. Books, 1992), 143. Though their time in the fraternity was separated by a few decades, Hunt and Aubin were both members of Kappa Sigma. Brewton shows that many of the S&L looters in Texas were connected to this fraternity.
54Brewton, The Mafia, 150-151. John Riddle was another member of the Kappa Sigma fraternity. He engaged in many business arrangements with Robert Corson, the suspected CIA asset who had ties to the Supermarket.
55“Complaint for Freedom of Information, filed by R. David Lewis on August 4, 2016, as part of Linda Ives V. United States of America,” US District Court for the Eastern District of Arkansas Western Division, https://arktimes.com/wp-content/uploads/2019/03/pdf-ivessuit.pdf.
56“Complaint for Freedom of Information,” 17.
57Jane Hunter, “Cocaine and Cutouts: Israel’s Unseen Diplomacy,” The Link, Vol. 22, No. 1, January-March 1989, https://ameu.org/getattachment/7ab-1cd1b-ba2c-41da-8d09-8483bce764dc/Cocaine,-Cutouts-Israel-s-Unseen-Diplomacy.aspx.
58Brewton, The Mafia, 106-107.
59Jeff Gerth, “European Tied to Illegal Acts is Shielded by C.I.A.,” New York Times, February 8, 1983, https://www.nytimes.com/1983/02/08/us/european-tied-to-illegal-acts-is-shielded-by-cia.html.
60Brewton, The Mafia, 80-81.
61Ned Daly, “Ravaging the Redwood: Charles Hurwitz, Michael Milken and the Costs of Greed,” https://multinationalmonitor.org/hyper/issues/1994/09/mm0994_07.html.
62Brewton, The Mafia, 80.
63The Comptroller Report on Herman K. Beebe is reprinted in full in Stephen Pizzo, Mary Fricker, and Paulo Muolo, Inside Job: The Looting of America’s Savings and Loans (Harper Perennial, 1991), 497-511.
64Daly, “Ravaging the Redwood.”
65Hobart Rowen, “Man Seeking Lance Stock No Newcomer to World of Finance,” Washington Post, September 1, 1977, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1977/09/01/man-seeking-lance-stock-no-newcomer-to-world-of-finance/048e8147-3eac-4a54-8b20-c0d7d3df0e9b/.
66Peter Waldman, “Lippo’s Arkansas Ties Win Benefits if Not Many Contracts,” Wall Street Journal, October 16, 1996, https://www.wsj.com/articles/SB845414848126700000.
67Mochtar Riady, Mochtar Riady: My Life. (Wiley, 2016), 101.
68See, for example, “Casey Cleared in Foreign Agent Case,” UPI April 9, 1982, https://www.upi.com/Archives/1982/04/09/Casey-cleared-in-foreign-agent-case/8185387176400/.
69Alan A. Block, All is Clouded By Desire: Global Banking, Money Laundering, and International Organized Crime. (Praeger, 2004), 28-32.
70This is discussed at length in Block, All is Clouded By Desire, 16-32.
71Donald White, “What Makes Stocks Go Up?,” San Francisco Examiner, January 29, 1964; “In Bahamas, Banking is Second Only to Tourism,” New York Times, March 3, 1977.
72David Gibbs, The Political Economy of Third World Intervention: Mines, Money, and U.S. Policy in the Congo Crisis (University of Chicago Press, 1991), 182-184.
73Arthur Levy, Diamonds and Conflict: Problems and Solutions (Novinka Books, 2003), 67.
74Block, All is Clouded by Desire, 85.
75Brewton, The Mafia, 366.

76Investigation of Lincoln Saving and Loan, Hearings Before the Committee on Banking, Finance, and Urban Affairs, House of Representatives, One Hundred First Congress, First Session, 1990, 212-15, https://www.google.com/books/edition/Investigation_of_Lincoln_Savings_Loan_As/kGUzAAAAIAAJ.
77James Granelli, "French Bank off the Hook in Keating Suit," Los Angeles Times, June 17, 1992, https://www.latimes.com/archives/la-xpm-1992-06-17-fi-599-story.html.

78Investigation of Lincoln Saving and Loan, 46.
79William H. Meyers, "Megadealer for the Rothschilds," New York Times, December 4, 1988, https://www.nytimes.com/1988/12/04/magazine/meagdealer-for-the-rothschilds.html.
80Investigation of Lincoln Saving and Loan, 456; Block All is Clouded By Desire, 111.
81L.J. Davis, "The Name of the Rose: An Arkansas Thriller," New Republic, April 4, 1994.
82Terry Carter, "From Bum's Rush to Bum Rap," ABA Journal, July, 1998.
83Davis, "The Name of the Rose."
84Pizzo, Fricker and Muolo, Inside Job, 468-69.
85Davis, "The Name of the Rose."
86Davis, "The Name of the Rose."
87"Banking Is Different in Arkansas," St. Louis Post-Dispatch, September 12, 1984; Mochtar Riady, My Life, 170.
88Patrick Huen, Jean Jinghan Chen, Ming-Hau Liu, Seng Heng Bank: History and Acquisition by Industrial and Commercial Bank of China (Palgrave Macmillan, 2021), 25.
89Bertil Lintner, Blood Brothers: The Criminal Underworld of Asia (Palgrave Macmillian, 2003), 102.
90Lintner, Blood Brothers, 101.
91"FABCO announces Stephens group transactions," The Times (Shreveport), October 22, 1983; "Fabco Announces 473,000-share sale," Baxter Bulletin, Februay 17, 1984.
92"FABCO Readies Stock Purchase," The Commercial Appeal, October 30, 1983.
93Davis, "In the Name of the Rose."
94"Gov. Clinton Outlines Job Development Plan," Baxter Bulletin, December 12, 1984.
95"Gov. Clinton Outlines Job Development Plan."
96"Clinton Wants to Spend State's Surplus Millions," The Commercial Appeal, January 6, 1985.
97Davis, "In the Name of the Rose."
98Alexander Cockburn, "Air Cocaine: the Wild, True Story of Drug Running, Arms Smuggling, and Contras at the Backwoods Airstrip in Clinton's Arkansas," Counterpunch, November 4, 2016.
99Michael J. Goodman and John M. Broder, "Arkansas Lending Agency Benefited Clinton Donors," Los Angeles Times, June 29, 1992.
100See Alexander Cockburn, "Hillary Clinton's Great Nursing Home Rip-Off," Counterpunch, February 19, 2016; Goodman, Broder, "Arkansas Lending Agency Benefited Clinton Donors." Beverly also directly interlocked with Worthen, the bank's chairman, Curtis Bradford, for a director at Beverly.
101Davis, "In the Name of the Rose."
102Lasater's connections to the ADFA are discussed at length in the Investigation of the Whitewater Development Corporation and Related Matters report.
103Cockburn, "Air Cocaine."
104Reed and Cummings, Compromised, 169-172.
105Howard Schneider, "Clandestination: Arkansas," Washington Post, July 21, 1994, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/lifestyle/1994/07/21/clandestination-arkansas/e2c39f46-602b-4f4c-91fd-1ce94c743d69/.
106Gary Webb, Dark Alliance: The CIA, the Contras and the Crack Cocaine Explosion (Seven Stories Press, 1998), 114-115.
107This is discussed at length in works such as Cheri Seymour, The Last Circle: Danny Casolaro's Investigation into The Octopus and the PROMIS Software Scandal, ePub (Trine Day, 2010).
108G. Wayne Reeder appears to have been involved in several ventures involving Herman Beebe. According to Beebe's right-hand man Dale Anderson, the two probably met at the La Costa resort, which

was also likely the point of contact between Beebe and Khashoggi's friend Mario Renda. Reeder also got $14 million from Silverado Savings and Loan, where Neil Bush, son of George H.W. Bush, sat on the board. On Reeder and Beebe, see Pizzo, Fricker and Muolo, Inside Job, 332. On Reeder and Silverado, see Brewton, The Mafia, 261.

Reeder was also reportedly close to C.H. and Jake Butcher, brothers from Knoxville whose banking empire went bottom-up in the 1980s due to a blizzard of fraudulent loans and overspending. According to one source, Reeder posted C.H.'s bail money when the Tennessee banker went down for fraud. See David Martin, "He's No Angel," The Pitch, September 14, 2004.
A 1987 interview with Michael Riconosciuto, founded in the papers of journalist Danny Casolaro, also mentions the Reeder/Butcher link. A reference in the document is made to "the Butchers and the Joe Duncan affair that involved the letter from Meese's wife." This refers to an incident where Edwin Meese's wife wrote a letter declaring that she and her husband supported Joseph Duncan, the son of Tennessee congressman John J. Duncan, who had become mired in legal issues due to his association with the Butchers. The Duncan family controlled a Knoxville, Tennessee thrift called Knox Federal Savings and Loan Associate, and in 1981 had apparently conspired to transfer control of the lending institution to the Butcher brothers. In exchange, C.H. Butcher arranged to have large, outstanding debts Duncan owed to United American Bank of Knoxville—owned by Jake Butcher—forgiven. See Philip Shenon, "Meese's Wife Writes to Judge in Praise of Convicted Friend," The New York Times, November 6, 1987; John E. Yang, U.S. Sues Congressman, 2 of his Sons for Roles in Collapse of Tennessee Bank," Wall Street Journal, November 11, 1987).
The Butcher brothers are worthy of deeper scrutiny. They appear as major players in James Ring Adam's book The Big Fix: Inside the S&L Scandal (Wiley, 1990). Adams writes that Jake Butcher "was a close friend of President Jimmy Carter and Carter's confidant, the Georgia banker Bert Lance" (p. 87). Lance, on one occasion, was a guest of honor at a dinner at Jake's illustrious mansion, named "Whirlwind" (p. 88). According to one of insiders to Butcher's banking world, another dinner guest at times was Bruce Rappaport (p. 192). Yet another close associate of the Butchers that is named by Adams—and something that is reflected in numerous newspaper society pages from the 1980s—was Kentucky governor John Y. Brown. On John Y. Brown, drug smuggling, and the connection to Clinton and Lasater, see endnote 40 above.
109Cockburn, "Air Cocaine."
110An overview of Fair's biography can be found at the website for the Institute for Strategic and Innovative Technology: https://isitaustin.org/downloads/Fair_bio.html.
111Seymour, The Last Circle, 74.
112A US Trade and Development Program datasheet from August, 1982 lists a "Frank Pindar" from Burns & Roe as a contractor on an electricity program for the country of Belize. Burns & Roe is named as having been contracted by USAID. Also named on the project is Sergio Brull, discussed in the last Also named on the project is Sergio Brull, discussed in the last chapter in connection with the Supermarket. The datasheet can be viewed at https://archive.org/details/201611171611.
113Cockburn, "Air Cocaine."
114Department of the Army Lineage and Honors: 354th Chemical Company, https://history.army.mil/html/forcestruc/lineages/branches/chem/354cmco.htm. "Lineage and Honors Information:354th Chemical Company," United States Army Center of Military History, https://history.army.mil/html/forcestruc/lineages/branches/chem/354cmco.htm.
115Alexander Cockburn, "The Secret Life of a Parking Meter Manufacturer," The Nation, March 16, 1992.
116The Financial Crisis Inquiry Report: Final Report of the National Commission on the Causes of the Financial and Economic Crisis in the United States, The Financial Crisis Inquiry Commission, January 2011, 352, https://www.govinfo.gov/content/pkg/GPO-FCIC/pdf/GPO-FCIC.pdf.

117“The Crimes of Mena: Gray Money,” Arkansas Gazette, date unknown; Lucy Komisar, “Cooking the Insurance Books,” The Komisar Scoop, November 2004, https://www.thekomisar-scoop.com/2004/11/cooking-the-insurance-books/.
118Brewton, The Mafia CIA and George Bush, 245.
119“The Crimes of Mena: Gray Money”; Lucy Komisar, “The Fall of a Titan,” AlterNet, March 17, 2005, https://www.thekomisarscoop.com/2005/03/the-fall-of-a-titan/; John Crudele, “AIG’s Coral Insurance Woes Add Up,” New York Post, March 31, 2005, https://nypost.com/2005/03/31/aigs-coral-insurance-woes-may-add-up/.
120Bob Drogin and Henry Weinstein, “Marcos, Manila Reportedly Strike a Deal,” Los Angeles Times, November 2, 1991, https://www.latimes.com/archives/la-xpm-1991-11-02-mn-689-story.html.
121Cummings and Reed, Compromised, 248.

122“The Crimes of Mena: Gray Money.”
123“The Crimes of Mena: Gray Money.”
124Komisar, “The Fall of a Giant.”
125R.T. Naylor, Satanic Purses: Money, Myth and Misinformation in the War on Terror (Mc-Gill-Queen’s University Press), 2006.
126Ron Shelp, The Fallen Giant: The Amazing Story of Hank Greenberg and the History of AIG (Wiley, 2006), 93-95; Richard Harris Smith, OSS: The Secret History of America’s First Central Intelligence Agency (Lyons Press, 2005), 244.
127On Lee and Civil Air Transport, see Smith, OSS, 253. On Lee as a Soviet spy, see John Haynes and Harvey Klehr, Venona: Decoding Soviet Espionage in America (Yale University Press, 2000), 104-107.
128This is discussed in Alan A. Block, Masters of Paradise: Organized Crime and the Internal Revenue Service in the Bahamas (Routledge, 1991) 182.
129Insurance Industry: Hearings Before the Subcommittee on Antitrust and Monopoly, Committee on the Judiciary, United States Senate, Eighty-Sixth Congress, Second Session, part 10, 1958, p. 5927, https://books.google.com/books?id=mZ-rRADfew0C.
130Komisar, “The Fall of a Giant.”
131Charles R. Babcock, “George Bush’s Ruling Class,” Washington Post, January 24, 1989, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1989/01/24/gop-discloses-names-of-big-donors/5f97af2e-0d67-4adb-aee1-7f738367c4b3/.
132Craig Unger, House of Bush, House of Saud: The Secret Relationship Between the World’s Two Most Powerful Dynasties (Scribner, 2004), 120.
133David Armstrong, “Global Entanglements: The Political Economy of a Texas Oil Co.,” Z Magazine, November 1991. Accessed via https://quixoticjoust.blogspot.com/2017/03/remembering-harken-money.html.
134Jonathan Kwitny, The Crimes of the Patriots: A True Tale of Dope, Dirty Money and the CIA (W.W. Norton & Co, 1987), 36.
135Kwitny, The Crimes of the Patriots, 37.
136“U.S. Businessmen Distance Themselves from Pro-Marcos Statement,” UPI, February 21, 1986, https://www.upi.com/Archives/1986/02/21/US-businessmen-distance-themselve-from-pro-Marcos-statement/8923509346000/.
137See Ellen Guerrero, “Official Claims Marcos Shipped Tons of Gold to Switzerland,” AP News, August 14, 1991, https://apnews.com/article/e2c5ce3f218206be6e9813db1754928a; Henry Weinstein, “Swiss Accounts Frozen in Marcos Case,” Los Angeles Times, September 30, 1997, https://www.latimes.com/archives/la-xpm-1997-sep-30-me-37657-story.html; “Marcos Family Mum on Swiss Bank Withdrawal,” PhilStar Global, March 14, 2001, https://www.philstar.com/headlines/2001/03/14/90035/marcos-family-mum-swiss-bank-withdrawal.
138Kwitny, Crimes of the Patriots, 259.
139Armstrong, “Global Entanglements.”

140John Dunbar, “A Brief History of Bush, Harken, and the SEC,” Center for Public Integrity, October 16, 2002, https://publicintegrity.org/environment/a-brief-history-of-bush-harken-and-the-sec/.

141Baker, Family of Secrets, 343.

142World Wildlife Fund, “In Memorium: Godfrey A. Rockefeller,” https://web.archive.org/web/20160404232506/ https://www.worldwildlife.org/press-releases/in-memoriam-godfrey-a-rockefeller.

143World Wildlife Fund, “Our History,” https://www.wwf.org.za/our_people/our_history/.

144Dunbar, “A Brief History.”

145Dunbar, “A Brief History.”

146Baker, Family of Secrets, 332.

147Dunbar, “A Brief History.”

148Enron: The Bush Connection (Democracy Now, 2006), https://www.democracynow.org/2006/5/26/enron_the_bush_connection.

149Peter Truell and Larry Gurwin, False Profits: The Inside Story of BCCI, The World’s Most Corrupt Financial Empire (Houghton Mifflin, 1992), 370.

150Block, All is Clouded By Desire, 112.

151Armstrong, “Global Entanglements.”

152Truell and Gurwin, False Profits, 370.

153“Investor Acquires 9.6% of Worthen”, New York Times, October 13, 1990 https://www.nytimes.com/1990/10/18/business/company-news-investor-acquires-9.6-of-worthen.html

CHAPTER 9

HIGH TECH TREASON

THE MAKING OF A MAXWELL

Born in what is now part of Ukraine, “Robert Maxwell” was the last in a series of names used by Jan Ludvick Hoch, with his earlier aliases including the names Abraham Hoch, Jan Ludvick, and Leslie Du Marier. The name Robert Maxwell emerged at the behest of one of his superiors in the British military, which Maxwell had joined during World War II. He left the village of his birth prior to the war, when the Third Reich began its expansion, and made his way to Britain. Maxwell’s parents and his siblings are believed to have died in the Holocaust.

Robert Maxwell was involved with the British intelligence service MI6 during the war and, after the war, was befriended by Count Frederich vanden Huevel, who had worked closely with Allen Dulles during the war.[1] Dulles went on to be the first civilian director of the CIA and, during the war, was busy running interference for prominent Nazis and actively undermining FDR’s “unconditional surrender” policy for senior Nazi leadership.[2]

The chaos of post-war Europe allowed Maxwell to plant the seeds for what would become his future media empire. Thanks to his contacts with Allied Forces in post-war Berlin, he was able to acquire the publishing rights for prominent European scientific journals and, in 1948, those interests were folded into the British publishing company Butterworth, which had long-standing ties to British intelligence.[3] In the early 1950s, the company was renamed Pergamon Press, and this company soon became the cornerstone of Maxwell’s media empire.

Pergamon’s access to prominent academics, scientists, and government not only led to Maxwell acquiring great wealth but also attracted the interest of various intelligence agencies – British, Russian, and Israeli among them – all of which attempted to recruit Maxwell as an asset or as a spy. When MI6 attempted to recruit Maxwell for the service shortly after the war, it concluded, after conducting an extensive background check, that Maxwell was a “Zionist – loyal only to Israel.”[4] His subsequent relationship with MI6 was choppy and largely opportunistic on both sides, with Maxwell later laying some of the blame for his financial troubles on MI6’s alleged attempts to “subvert” him. Yet, it would not be until the early 1960s that Maxwell was formally approached and successfully recruited by Israeli intelligence, which sought to make use of his access to the various prominent businessman and world leaders that he had cultivated while growing his media empire.[5]

A few years after being officially recruited as an asset of Israeli intelligence, Maxwell ran for public office, becoming a member of the British Parliament for the Labour Party in 1964. His bid for re-election failed, which left him out of office by 1970. Around that same time, he also lost control of Pergamon Press, after a failed takeover attempt by Saul Steinberg prompted a government inquiry into Maxwell’s management of the company. That inquiry concluded that Maxwell “is not, in our opinion, a person who can be relied on to exercise proper stewardship” of a publicly held company.[6] Nevertheless, Maxwell reacquired control of the company a few years later in 1974.[7]

Having nearly lost everything, Maxwell devoted his time to consolidating control over an ever-growing web of interlocking companies, trusts, and foundations that now encompassed much more than media concerns. During this time, he also began developing deep ties to prominent politicians, businessmen, and their fixers, a group that Maxwell proudly referred to as his “sources.” Among these early “sources” were soon-to-be UK prime minister Margaret Thatcher; Israel’s biggest arms dealer and one of its powerful oligarchs, Shaul Eisenberg; financial behemoths such as Edmund Safra; and master manipulators such as Henry Kissinger. Another early “source” was George H.W.Bush, who was then part of the Nixon administration and would soon serve as CIA director before becoming Reagan’s vice president and then US president himself.[8]

Maxwell’s sources and influence extended well beyond the West, with many of his most prominent contacts residing in Eastern Europe and in the Soviet Union. He had cozy relationships with dictators, intelligence officials, and even organized crime lords such as Semion Mogilevich, sometimes referred to as the “boss of the bosses” of the Russian mafia.[9] It was none other than Robert Maxwell who orchestrated the entry of Mogilevich-connected companies into the United States, a move that was accomplished after Maxwell successfully lobbied the state of Israel to grant Mogilevich and his associates Israeli passports, thereby allowing them easier access to US financial institutions.[10]

The expansion of Maxwell's prominent contacts paralleled the growth of his media empire. By 1980, he had acquired the British Printing Corporation, which he renamed the Maxwell Communication Corporation. Just a few years later, he bought the Mirror Group, publisher of the British tabloid the Daily Mirror.[11] This was followed by his acquisition of publishers like MacMillan and later the New York Daily News. Money "borrowed" from some Maxwell-owned companies was allegedly used to finance Mossad activities in Europe and elsewhere; then, the funds were restored before the absence was noticed by company employees not privy to these operations. Maxwell later derailed this well-oiled system by dipping into these same funds to finance his own ostentatious and salacious habits as well as attempts to further expand his already bloated media empire well beyond its means.

During this period, Maxwell's ties to Israeli intelligence deepened in other ways, particularly during the time when Yitzhak Shamir was prime minister. Shamir, previously a leader of a terrorist group known as Lehi or the Stern Gang, deeply loathed the United States, a sentiment he confided to Maxwell during one of Maxwell's visits to Israel.[12] Shamir told Maxwell that he blamed the Americans for the Holocaust because of the US' failure to support the transfer of European Jews to Palestine prior to the war.[13] Shamir's very negative views about the US likely informed Israel's more aggressive espionage operations that targeted the US during this time and in which Maxwell prominently figured.

A BROKEN PROMIS

One of the most brazen and successful operations ever conducted by Israeli intelligence on a global scale involved its sale of a bugged software program to governments, corporations, and major financial and scientific institutions around the world. That software program, known as the Prosecutor's Information Management System or PROMIS, was originally created and marketed by Inslaw Inc., a company created by former NSA official Bill Hamilton and his wife Nancy.

In 1982, Inslaw leased its revolutionary PROMIS software to the US Justice Department, then headed by Edwin Meese III, Ronald Reagan's most trusted advisor, Attorney General and, later, an advisor to Donald Trump following the 2016 election. The success of the software, which allowed integration of separate databases and information analysis on a previously unimaginable scale, eventually caught the attention of Rafi Eitan, the notorious and legendary Israeli spymaster as well as the handler of the "most damaging spy" in American history, Jonathan Pollard.[14] Eitan, at the time, was serving as the then-head of the now defunct Israel intelligence service known as Lekem (sometimes written as Lakam), which focused specifically on espionage related to scientific and technical information and discoveries. Eitan had first learned of PROMIS some time in 1982. That December, using the alias Dr. Ben Orr, Eitan entered the US and unsuccessfully attempted to attend an official demonstration of PROMIS.[15] He returned in February of the following year and was given a demonstration of a new version of the software, advanced PROMIS, by Bill Hamilton himself.[16] During that trip, a former Inslaw employee then working at the Department of Justice, C. Madison "Brick" Brewer, gave "Dr. Orr" a copy of the software.[17]With the software in his possession, Eitan sought to to install a "trapdoor," also often referred to as a back door, into the software. He would then orchestrate the marketing of this modified version of PROMIS throughout the world, providing Israeli intelligence with a direct window into the operations of its enemies and allies. According to the testimony of ex-Israeli intelligence official Ari Ben-Menashe, he, on Eitan's orders, contacted an Israeli American programmer living in California.[18] That programmer then planted a "trapdoor" or back door into the software that would grant the Eitan-led Lekem covert access to any database connected to a device on which the software was installed. To help market the compromised version of PROMIS, Eitan sought out a man named Earl Brian. Brian was a long-time associate of Ronald Reagan who had previously worked for the CIA in covert operations, beginning with the Vietnam-era Phoenix program, and had been in charge of Reagan's healthcare program when Reagan was governor of California.[19] It was through his healthcare-related ventures that Brian had first met Eitan.[20] In 1982, however, Brian was attempting to build a new business empire, this one focused on technology. It was later disclosed that Attorney General Ed Meese's wife, at the time, was a major investor in two companies controlled by Earl Brian and those investments had been made with money loaned to Meese's wife by a close associate of Brian's.[21] In speaking with Rafi Eitan, Brian acknowledged the revolutionary efficacy of PROMIS. The software could track anything, specifically money and people. Instead of praising its innovative approach to data analysis, Brian expressed his frustration that the software enabled US federal investigators to successfully track and target money laundering and other financial crimes. He also expressed frustration that he had been left out of the profits on PROMIS, the development of which he had followed closely for several years.[22]As their conversation wore on, Eitan and Brian hatched a plan about how to best utilize and market the modified version of PROMIS.[23] This agreement between Eitan and Brian eventually led to two different versions of bugged PROMIS software, one bugged by Israel for the main purpose of spying on the operations of foreign governments and intelligence services and one bugged by CIA-linked entities and individuals for the main purpose of engaging in financial espionage and money laundering. However, what would later become known as the Inslaw affair, sometimes also called the PROMIS scandal, began first with the version of PROMIS that had been stolen and then modified by Israel. With the bugged version of PROMIS ready, Brian attempted to use his company Hadron Inc. to market the bugged PROMIS software around the world, though he first had tried to buy out Inslaw to do so. When that effort failed, Brian launched a second effort to buy out Inslaw using a company called SCT that had been financed by Allen & Co., the company of the organized crime-linked Charles and Herbert Allen who were, among other things, business partners of Leslie Wexner's mentors Max Fisher and A. Alfred Taubman (see chapter 13).[24] Wired described Allen & Co. as having "close business ties to Earl Brian."[25] As will be noted in chapter 12, another figure associated with Earl Brian was Allan Tessler, the lawyer for the Epstein-connected Gouletas family who was added to the board of Wexner's The Limited in the late 1980s. Notably, Allen & Co. owned a significant amount of common stock in Earl Brian's Hadron.[26] Unsuccessful and unable to buy out the Hamiltons, Brian turned to his close friend, then-Attorney General Ed Meese, whose wife, as previously mentioned, had also invested in Brian's business ventures. Soon, the Justice Department abruptly refused to make the payments to Inslaw that had been stipulated by the contract. They were essentially using the software for free, which Inslaw claimed was theft.

Meese's actions forced Inslaw into bankruptcy and Inslaw subsequently sued the Justice Department, with a US court later finding that the Meeseled department "took, converted, stole" the software through "trickery, fraud, and deceit."[27] With Inslaw out of the way, Brian sold the bugged software to Jordan's and Iraq's intelligence services, a major boon for Israel, and to a handful of companies. Despite this, Eitan was unsatisfied with Brian and Hadron and their progress in selling the software. He quickly turned to the person he thought could most effectively market and sell PROMIS to governments of interest all over the world: Robert Maxwell.[28]

THE SPY AND THE SALESMAN

Maxwell's prominent roles in the PROMIS software scandal and the Iran-Contra affair during the 1980s were facilitated by his purchase of numerous Israeli companies, several of which were either fronts or "providers of services" for Israeli intelligence. The most notable of these was Scitex, where Yitzhak Shamir's son Nachum was a major executive throughout the 1990s and early 2000s, and Degem, a computer company with a large presence in Central and South America as well as in Africa.[29]

According to Gordon Thomas and Martin Dillon, even before Maxwell's purchase of Degem, it had been used by Mossad as a cover for agents, particularly assassins, who would use its offices as a cover before conducting kidnappings and murders of individuals linked to groups with ties to or sympathies for Israel's enemies, particularly the PLO.[30] Some of the most notable events occurred in Africa, where Mossad assassins used Degem as cover to launch killings of members of the African National Congress. In Latin America, Degem was also used as cover for the Mossad to infiltrate terrorist and narco-terrorist organizations such as Peru's Sendero Luminoso (known in English as the Shining Path) and Colombia's National Liberation Army or ELN.[31]

Through Degem and other Maxwell-owned companies based in Israel and elsewhere, Maxwell marketed PROMIS so successfully that Israeli intelligence soon had access to the innermost workings of innumerable governments, intelligence services, and corporations around the world. Many of Maxwell's biggest successes came in selling PROMIS to dictators in Eastern Europe, Africa, and Latin America. Following the sale, and after Maxwell collected a handsome pay check, PROMIS' unparalleled ability to track and surveil anything – from cash flows to human movement – was used by these governments to commit financial crimes with greater finesse and also to hunt down and disappear dissidents. Israeli intelligence, of course, watched it all play out in real time.

In Latin America, for instance, Maxwell sold PROMIS to military dictatorships in Chile and Argentina. There, PROMIS was used to facilitate the mass murder that characterized Operation Condor, as the friends and families of dissidents and so-called subversives were easily identified using PROMIS.[32]

PROMIS was so effective for this purpose that, just days after Maxwell sold the software to Guatemala, its US-backed dictatorship rounded up 20,000 "subversives" who were never heard from again. Of course, thanks to their backdoor in PROMIS, Israeli intelligence knew the identities of Guatemala's disappeared before the victims' own families. Israel, along with the United States, was also intimately involved in the arming and training of many of the same Latin American dictatorships that had been sold the bugged PROMIS software.[33]

Though Israeli intelligence found obvious use for the steady stream of sensitive and classified information, their biggest prize was yet to come – top secret government laboratories in the United States. Eitan tasked Maxwell with selling PROMIS to US labs in the Los Alamos complex, including Sandia National Laboratory, which was (and is) at the core of the US nuclear weapons system.[34] Notably, Maxwell's eventual sale of PROMIS to these laboratories occurred during the same period in 1984 when Eitan tasked one of Israel's top nuclear experts with supervising Jonathan Pollard's espionage of U.S. nuclear secrets on Israel's behalf.

In order to plot how he would accomplish the sale of PROMIS to Los Alamos, Maxwell consulted one of his "sources," none other than Henry Kissinger. Kissinger told him that. in order to sell PROMIS to these sensitive laboratories, he needed to enlist the services of then-Senator for Texas John Tower, who was the then-head of the Senate Armed Services Committee.[35] At the time, Tower was searching for lucrative opportunities as the sun was setting on his Senate career. Maxwell quickly struck a deal with Tower and then, using Mossad money, paid Tower $200,000 for his services, which included opening doors – not just to the Los Alamos complex, but also to the Reagan White House.[36] Tower would arrange a trip for Maxwell to travel to Sandia National Laboratory, where he would market PROMIS. Unlike most other PROMIS sales, this one would not be handled by Degem, but a US-based company called Information on Demand.

Robert Maxwell had purchased Information on Demand from its founder, Sue Rugge – a former librarian – through the Pergamon Group in 1982. This was also the very year plans were made by Rafi Eitan and Earl Brian to subvert PROMIS.[37] Its offices were just a few doors down from the home of Isabel Maxwell and her first husband Dale Djerassi, the son of the scientist credited with creating the birth control pill.

According to FBI files obtained by Inslaw Inc. via a FOIA request in the 1990s, San Francisco's FBI field office began to look into Information on Demand, just a year after Maxwell had acquired it. The San Francisco office's interest in the company was aroused in October 1983 and the FBI subsequently interviewed Rugge about the business and its activities.[38] She told the FBI that the company's sources "include over 250 computer data bases" and that company uses these to "locate single facts as well as provide answers to complex questions dealing with such areas as comprehensive marketing research, custom data summaries, sophisticated literature searching, current awareness service and global information capability."

One of these databases included Lockheed's Dialog database and "the Defense Technical Center which is connected to the Department of Defense (DOD) which contains classified information." She asserted, however, that the company "has no password for access and further no need for access." Elsewhere in the document, it notes that Information on Demand claimed not have any access to classified information "to the best of their knowledge," but did "[include] information concerning government and various available means of tapping government information databases."

The FBI asked Rugge about one client of the company in particular, whose name and identifying information is redacted in its entirety, but notes that this mysterious client had worked with Information on Demand since at least 1973. Subsequent efforts by Inslaw Inc. and others to learn the identity of the redacted client have been unsuccessful since 1994.

Notably, just one month before the FBI opened an investigation into Information on Demand and interviewed Sue Rugge, another related Maxwell-owned firm, Pergamon International Information Corporation (PIIC), had sent a letter to then-CIA Director Bill Casey, offering to provide the agency with access to patent databases.[39] The only redacted portion of the letter is the identity of PIIC's Executive Vice President, who had written the letter to Casey. After Rugge had been interviewed, FBI interest in Information on Demand peaked in June 1984, when a formal investigation was opened. This took place after two employees of Sandia National Laboratory, who worked in technology transfer, approached the Bureau over Information on Demand's efforts to sell PROMIS to the laboratory.[40] Those employees were compelled to contact the FBI after obtaining information from employees of the National Security Agency (NSA) regarding "the purchase of Information on Demand Inc. by one Robert Maxwell, the owner of Pergamon International." The specific information on this purchase from the NSA is included in the report but redacted in its entirety. Two months later, one of the Sandia employees followed up with the Bureau, suggesting that the NSA and FBI jointly investigate Information on Demand, but was essentially stonewalled and told to take it up with FBI headquarters. The FBI case file is specifically coded as a foreign counter-intelligence investigation, suggesting that the case was opened because the FBI was made aware of the alleged involvement of a foreign intelligence service in some aspect of Information on Demand's activities that related specifically to the "dissemination, marketing, or sale of computer software systems, including but not limited to the PROMIS computer software product."41 It also noted that Maxwell himself had previously been the subject of a "security investigation" conducted by the FBI from 1953 until 1961. Notably, 1961 is the year that Maxwell was formally recruited as an Israeli intelligence asset. The FBI investigation likely focused on Information on Demand's ties to Mossad, which were later reported by author Gordon Thomas. Per Thomas, the money used to run and operate Information on Demand's California office "would come out of one of the Mossad accounts in Credit Suisse."[42]

In early August 1984, FBI headquarters and other higher-ups in the Ed Meese-led Department of Justice, which itself was complicit in the whole sordid PROMIS affair, ordered the New Mexico office to halt its investigation into Information on Demand, Maxwell, and PROMIS. The cover-up, oddly enough, continues today, with the FBI still refusing, decades later, to release documents pertaining to Robert Maxwell and his role in the PROMIS scandal.[43]

Several months following the shuttering of the FBI investigation into Information on Demand, in February 1985 Robert Maxwell again returned to Sandia National Laboratories, signing the contract for the sale of PROMIS and listing himself as President and CEO of Information on Demand. A few months later, he passed that role on to his daughter Christine, who served as the company's president and CEO up until her father's death in 1991, according to her résumé.[44] Upon the collapse of his business empire shortly after his demise, which also resulted in the closure of Information on Demand, Christine created a company called Research on Demand that offered similar services and specialized "in Internet – and Big Data analytics-related market studies for companies in the Telecoms." In addition, Isabel Maxwell, who lived in close proximity to the company's offices in Berkley, CA, told Haaretz that she had also worked for Information on Demand, which she refers to as "her sister's company," following her 1989 divorce from Dale Djerassi.[45]

THE CIA AND PROMIS

As previously mentioned, there were eventually two different modified versions of PROMIS containing different backdoors – the first having been developed by Israeli intelligence and the second having been developed by CIA-linked entities and individuals. The CIA version appears to have been focused mainly on the banking industry while the Israeli/Lekem version seemed to have been mainly marketed to intelligence agencies and other parts of the public sector that dealt with classified state information. Though some authors have tried to paint the CIA's acquisition of PROMIS as having happened well after Eitan's theft of the software, it has since emerged that the Agency was offered a government copy of PROMIS as far back as 1981, thanks to a government memo obtained by Emma Best. Best wrote that, despite the CIA having denied buying the software:

> This memo […] shows that the Agency was offered the PROMIS software along with a list of other pieces of government owned software and the hardware necessary to run them. Since CIA didn't disclose this or search those records, it's unknown if they acquired an initial copy of the software this way. Even if it did not, it undermines their claims to have fully cooperated and searched every reasonable record and Agency component as they didn't search their software requisition records.
>
> The Department of Justice also repeatedly stated that, aside from a notable exception, they didn't provide copies of PROMIS to anyone else or distribute it throughout the government. These memos, however, show that the software was being offered throughout the federal government from the beginning, making versions of the software readily acquirable for anyone in the government to review or toy around with prior to Earl Brian and Edwin Meese's scheme to defraud INSLAW while modifying (i.e. inserting backdoors) and distributing the software through the U.S. and overseas.[46]

This timeline muddles the conventional narrative and raises the possibility that the supposedly "dueling" versions serving Israeli intelligence and US intelligence were perhaps more inter-related and collaborative in nature as opposed to competitive, as some authors like Gordon Thomas have claimed. Ari Ben-Menashe, in an interview for this book, attested to the collaborative nature between both the Israeli and CIA's version of PROMIS, with Robert Maxwell himself engaging in unspecified collaborations related to the CIA version of PROMIS.

The CIA version of PROMIS was modified by a man named Michael Riconosciuto, who altered the software at Cabazon Indian Reservation near Indio, California. At the reservation, Riconosciuto had worked for Wackenhut (now G4S Security), which – at the time – provided security for critical infrastructure and high security government facilities. Wackenhut, in 1981, had entered into a joint venture with the Cabazon Band of Mission Indians, which was focused on establishing a "production facility, called 'Cabazon Arms,' on the one square mile of Cabazon-owned desert land near Indio."[47] This joint venture was briefly discussed in the previous chapter. In speaking to author Cheri Seymour, Riconosciuto noted that the company's board of directors was stuffed with former top figures in US intelligence and law enforcement. Riconosciuto corroborated to Seymour that he had been the one to modify PROMIS and he also fingered Earl Brian as the mastermind of the scheme. "A man named Earl Brian was spearheading a plan for worldwide use of the software, but essentially, the modified software was being pirated from the owners, Bill and Nancy Hamilton," Riconosciuto had told Seymour.[48]

Riconosciuto alleges that he was targeted by the government after signing an affidavit to assist the Hamiltons' case. In that document, he had stated his role in the modification of the PROMIS software.

The modification of PROMIS was hardly Riconosciuto's first interaction with intelligence or even with Earl Brian. Per Seymour, Riconosciuto had been recruited by the CIA while at Stanford University and Riconosciuto "and Earl Brian had traveled to Iran in 1980 and had paid $40 million to Iranian officials to persuade them not to let the hostages go before the presidential election," a scheme better known as the October Surprise (see Chapter 6).[49] Per Riconosciuto, Brian's role in the October Surprise was related to his theft of PROMIS. He later testified that the software "was stolen as a favor to software-company executive Earl Brian, a friend of Meese's, for Brian's help in persuading the Iranian government to hold on to the embassy hostages until the 1980 election was over."[50]

Regardless of exactly when US intelligence developed and began using a bugged PROMIS, the software was subsequently developed for many uses, including on nuclear submarines of the United States and the United Kingdom and for tracking of nuclear material inventories and long-range ballistic missiles. However, one of the most unsettling uses of the software, on which both the US and Israel collaborated, was its use to keep track of dissident Americans.

This use of PROMIS was spearheaded by Oliver North. North had decided to turn PROMIS' power against Americans, particularly perceived dissidents. Beginning in 1982, as part of the highly classified Continuity of Government (COG) program, North used the PROMIS software at a 6,100-square-foot "command center" in the Department of Justice, as well as at a smaller operations room at the White House, to compile a list of American dissidents and "potential troublemakers" if the COG protocol were to ever be invoked.[51] According to a senior government official with a high-ranking security clearance and service in five presidential administrations who spoke to Radar in 2008, this was:

> A database of Americans, who, often for the slightest and most trivial reason, are considered unfriendly, and who, in a time of panic might be incarcerated. The database can identify and locate perceived 'enemies of the state' almost instantaneously.[52]

In 1993, Wired described North's use of PROMIS in compiling this database as follows:

> Using PROMIS, sources point out, North could have drawn up lists of anyone ever arrested for a political protest, for example, or anyone who had ever refused to pay their taxes. Compared to PROMIS, Richard Nixon's enemies list or Sen. Joe McCarthy's blacklist look downright crude.[53]

The COG program defined this "time of panic" as "a national crisis, such as nuclear war, violent and widespread internal dissent, or national opposition to a US military invasion abroad," whereby the government would suspend the Constitution, declare martial law, and incarcerate perceived dissidents and other "unfriendlies" in order to prevent the government's (or then-serving administration's) overthrow.[54]

This secretive database has often been referred to as "Main Core" by government insiders and it still exists today. Journalist Christopher Ketcham, citing senior government officials, reported in 2008 that, at that time, Main Core was believed to contain the names of as many as 8 million Americans.[55] Since then, it is highly likely that the number of Americans included in the Main Core database has grown considerably.

Author and investigative journalist Tim Shorrock also covered other disturbing aspects of the evolution of Main Core back in 2008 for Salon and further noted that Main Core, at the time, was said to contain "a vast amount of personal data on Americans, including NSA intercepts of bank and credit card transactions and the results of surveillance efforts by the FBI, the CIA, and other agencies."[56]

Bill Hamilton of Inslaw had told Shorrock at the time that he believed that "U.S. intelligence uses PROMIS as the primary software for searching the Main Core database" and had been told as much by an intelligence official in 1992 and an NSA official in 1995.[57] Dan Murphy, former deputy director at the CIA, had told Hamilton that the NSA's use of PROMIS was "so seriously wrong that money alone cannot cure the problem." "I believe in retrospect that Murphy was alluding to Main Core," Hamilton had told Shorrock.[58]

In 2019, citing a former US intelligence official with direct knowledge of the U.S. intelligence community's use of PROMIS and Main Core from the 1980s to 2000s, I reported that Israeli intelligence played a role in the U.S. government's deployment of PROMIS as the software used for the Main Core domestic surveillance database system.[59] Per this source, Israeli intelligence remained involved with Main Core at the time of the August 1991 death of journalist Danny Casolaro. This same official told me that, shortly before his death, Casolaro had obtained copies of computer printouts from the PROMIS-based Main Core domestic surveillance database system from NSA whistleblower Alan Standorf, among other items. Standorf was found murdered a few months before Casolaro's life-less body was discovered in a hotel room.[60]

The source also stated that Main Core's contents had been used for the political blackmail of members of Congress and their staff, journalists, and others by Walter Raymond, a senior CIA covert operator in psyops and disinformation who served on President Reagan's National Security Council after Main Core was created.[61] If used for this purpose by Raymond in the 1980s, it is highly likely that Main Core has also been used by other individuals with access to the database for blackmailing purposes in the years since. In addition to their collaboration on Main Core, there is also the possibility that the CIA and Israel's Lekem collaborated and shared at least some of the intelligence reaped from the different versions of PROMIS. As previously detailed, Israeli intelligence and the CIA were already collaborating on major aspects of Iran-Contra during this same period. Yet, these networks also appear to have been intimately involved with the sale of the PROMIS software themselves.

For instance, one connection of Iran-Contra to PROMIS can be seen in the visit Contra leaders made to Cabazon for weapons demonstrations, which was mentioned in the previous chapter. Another clear example of overlap is Robert Maxwell. Yet, another and arguably the most compelling evidence for the overlap can be found in a 1985 letter written by William Bradford Reynolds, Assistant Attorney General in the Civil Rights Division, to William F. Weld, then-the US Attorney in Boston. The letter told Weld that PROMIS (misspelled as Promise in the letter) was being provided to Sheik Khalid bin Mahfouz, a Saudi billionaire and banker who had owned a personal 20% stake in BCCI and was mentioned in connection with BCCI in Chapter 7.

That letter states the following:

> Dear Mr. Weld: As agreed Messrs. Manichur [sic] Ghorbanifar, Adnan Khashoggi, and Richard Armitage will broker the transaction of Promise [sic] software to Sheik Khalid bin Mahfouz for resale and general distribution as gifts in his region contingent upon the three conditions we last spoke of. Promise [sic] must have a soft arrival. No paperwork, customs, or delay. It must be equipped with the special data retrieval unit. As before, you must walk the financial aspects through Credit Suisse into National Commercial Bank [which bin Mahfouz chaired]. If you encounter any problems contact me directly. Sincerely, WM. Bradford Reynolds, Assistant Attorney General Civil Rights Division.[62]

This letter implicates key figures involved in Iran-Contra weapons deals, i.e. Khashoggi and Ghorbanifar, as also selling PROMIS software for covert purposes. In this case, they were specifically selling it to a man tied to the banking industry, more specifically BCCI. As it turns out, the global banking industry was a major target of the bugged PROMIS software. As will be mentioned shortly, this was partially facilitated by BCCI and affiliated entities as BCCI was known to use PROMIS and had other connections to its illicit uses.

One of the key companies involved with the bugged PROMIS' entry into the global financial system was tied to a major figure in BCCI's entry into the American financial system, Jackson Stephens, discussed in the previous chapter as well as chapter 7. While Israel's bugged version of PROMIS was being marketed worldwide by Robert Maxwell and his front companies, the CIA's equivalent was marketed, in part, by the Jackson Stephens-owned Systematics.

Systematics was a data-processing company that, like other prominent Stephens-owned firms, was represented by the Rose Law Firm, which – as noted in the last chapter – had deep ties to the Clinton family and its political machinery. Two partners in the Rose Law Firm who would later serve in the Clinton administration, Vince Foster and Webster Hubbell, went on to acquire significant financial interests in Systematics through ownership in Alltel, which acquired Systematics in the early 1990s.[63]

Notably, Rose had also represented Systematics as part of a lawsuit related to the efforts of Jackson Stephens and others to bring BCCI into the American financial system. As noted in chapter 7, Systematics was a defendant alongside Jackson Stephens, another Stephens owned company Stephens Inc., Agha Hasan Abedi, Bert Lance, and Eugene Metzger relating to their hostile takeover attempt of FGB. Rose Law represented Systematics in this lawsuit. As was also noted in chapter 7, Stephens had been involved in BCCI's affairs because he "wanted FGB to use a company he controlled, Systematics Inc., for its data processing business."[64]

Unlike Maxwell's fronts used to market PROMIS, Systematics was more focused on selling software and data-processing services to financial institutions than governments and intelligence agencies. Acquired by Stephens in the 1960s, Systematics primarily serviced banks and, by the 1990s, was "one of the leading vendors in the United States and, reportedly, in some 40 foreign countries, of computer software and services for the banking industry."

According to former Forbes assistant editor James Norman in his book The Oil Card: Global Economic Warfare in the 21st Century, Systematics was also "a primary vehicle or front company for the National Security Agency in the 1980s and early 1990s to market and implant bugged software in the world's major money-center banks and clearinghouses as part of the Reagan/Bush 'follow the money' effort to break the Soviets."[65] The late journalist Michael Ruppert and others have asserted that this "bugged software" was none other than the PROMIS software. Ruppert specifically cited Systematics as "a primary developer of PROMIS for financial intelligence use."[66]

Norman, in his reporting which was censored by Forbes, alluded to the role of National Security Council member Norman Bailey in urging the involvement of the NSA in surveilling the flow of money through SWIFT, Fedwire, CHIPS, and other financial transfer mechanisms. In his censored report, Norman wrote that Bailey "confirms that within a few years the National Security Agency … had begun vacuuming up mountains of data by listening in on bank wire traffic. It became a joint effort of several Western governments with the Israelis playing a leading role." Norman further noted that the NSA's ability to spy on financial transactions was directly enabled by Systematics.

As will be discussed in greater detail in chapter 16, Norman had learned that one of the main individuals overseeing this NSA program for Systematics was Vince Foster of Rose Law and subsequently the deputy White House counsel during Bill Clinton's first term until his death in 1993.

Yet, Norman's censored report, later published in Media Bypass magazine, went even further and revealed that Systematics not only aided NSA surveillance of the financial system, it was also intimately linked to money laundering efforts:

> Systematics has had close ties to the NSA and CIA ever since its founding, sources say, as a money-shuffler for covert operations. It is no secret that there were billions of dollars moving around in "black" accounts – from buying and selling arms to the Contras, Iran, Iraq, Angola and other countries to paying CIA operatives and laundering money from clandestine CIA drug dealing. Having taken over the complete computer rooms in scores of small U.S. banks as an "outsource" supplier of data processing, Systematics was in a unique position to manage that covert money flow. Sources say the money was moved at the end of every day disguised as a routine bank-to-bank balancing transaction.[67]

Norman also alleges that Jackson Stephens' efforts to bring BCCI into the US were related to this situation:

> Systematics' money-laundering role for the intelligence community might help explain why Jackson Stephens tried to take over Washington-based Financial General Bankshares in 1978 on behalf of Arab backers of the Bank of Credit and Commerce International. BCCI's links to global corruption and intelligence operations has been well documented, though many mysteries remain.
>
> According to a lawsuit filed by the Securities and Exchange Commission, Stephens insisted on having then-tiny Systematics brought in to take over all the bank's data processing. Representing Systematics in that 1978 SEC case: Hillary Rodham Clinton and Webster Hubbell. Stephens was blocked in that takeover. But FGB, later renamed First American, ultimately fell under the domination of BCCI through Robert Altman and former Defense Sec. Clark Clifford. According to a technician who worked at First American in Atlanta, Systematics became a key computer contractor there anyway.[68]

A 1995 document sent on behalf of Inslaw's founders to then-independent Counsel Ken Starr by Inslaw lawyer Elliot Richardson supports several of Norman's claims.[69] That document states that Systematics had "covertly implanted [software] into the computers of its bank customers" that allowed "allied intelligence agencies surreptitiously to track and monitor the flow of money through the banking system" and had done so at "the behest of the U.S. National Security Agency (NSA) and its partner in Israeli intelligence."[70] Inslaw also stated that the software was used by these same intelligence agencies in the "laundering of money, especially drug profits."

Systematics did, in fact, appear to have ties to Israeli intelligence, as Richardson asserts. The company was known to have a subsidiary in Israel that, according to a former Israeli intelligence officer, was operated by contractors for the Mossad and sold software to banks and telecommunications companies.[71]

According to Richardson's letter, that Israeli subsidiary of Systematics also had a Massachusetts-based front company, which was partially owned by a former U.S. intelligence official named Harry Weschler. Furthermore, Systematics also had dealings with Israel's PROMIS salesman par excellence, Robert

Maxwell. According to Bill Hamilton of Inslaw as cited by Cheri Seymour, Systematics entered into a joint venture with Robert Maxwell, who was allegedly acting on Israel's behalf. In that venture, Maxwell and Systematics sold bugged versions of PROMIS to five banks, most of which were Swiss.[72] This again suggests that the "CIA version" of PROMIS was more of a complement to the "Israeli version" Robert Maxwell was best known for marketing, rather than a competitor. It also further hints at collaboration between Israeli and US intelligence for the purpose of placing backdoors into global financial flows.[73] This focus on obtaining a secret window into the in and out-flows of the global banking system enabled not only the covert tracking of funds, but presumably allowed funds to be covertly hidden and financial crimes to be effectively covered up or rendered invisible. This was likely why BCCI employed the PROMIS software after its theft by the DOJ, as one of its subsidiaries, First American Bank, reportedly "filtered PROMIS money" (i.e., laundered the money generated from the sale of the stolen PROMIS software), according to the late journalist Danny Casolaro.[74]

Returning to the matter of Vince Foster, the Hamiltons of Inslaw have also provided considerable evidence that Foster's distress prior to his 1993 death appears to have been related to concerns about litigation involving Systematics and PROMIS.[75] James Norman, the previously mentioned journalist who was then writing for Forbes, reported in 1995 that Foster had been known to be under counterintelligence surveillance at the time of his death. Norman has also stated that it was suspected at the time that an adversarial government, allegedly the Chinese, had bought "high-level code, encryption, and other secrets via Foster's Swiss bank account and Israeli banks" and that Forbes had declined to publish these allegations (and by extension Norman's reporting on the matter) because, among other concerns, they didn't want to make any public statements about Systematics' role in the affair.[76] As will again be noted in chapter 16, another assistant editor of Forbes at the time, alongside Norman, was the daughter of Harry Weschler, the former CIA official who partially owned the Israeli subsidiary of Systematics. Norman subsequently intimated that this connection played a role in the censoring of his reporting.

Vince Foster's death, which many regard as suspicious despite it being officially labelled a suicide, is discussed in more detail in chapter 16, as the very event that marked one of Jeffrey Epstein's earliest visits to the Clinton White House makes an odd appearance in Foster's controversial "suicide note."

E-SYSTEMS

Another company that surfaces in the allegations surrounding Systematics and the Inslaw affair is E-Systems, a Dallas-based defense contractor specializing in computer software and systems. Authors James Norman and J. Orlin Grabbe have both discussed E-Systems as having a particularly close relationship with Systematics. However, the CEO of Alltel, a successor company to Systematics has denied that any such relationship exists.[77] Among the claims made by Grabbe and Norman is that sensitive E-Systems computer code ended up in the hands of Israel a mere thirty days after it was first deployed by the NSA.[78]

While parsing out the details of the connections between E-Systems and Systematics is difficult, E-Systems did maintain a tight connection with another corporation located at the heart of the Inslaw affair: Wackenhut. William Raborn, who had served as director of the CIA under President Lyndon Johnson, joined the board of directors of Wackenhut in 1971.[79] Press reports show that by at least 1977, he had also joined the board of E-Systems. Wackenhut annual reports illustrate that, for a time, he served on the board of these companies simultaneously.

E-Systems' connections to the intelligence community are long-standing. The company began in the 1960s as LTV Electrosystems, a wholly-owned subsidiary of Ling-Temco-Vought (LTV), the Texas-based defense contractor that was then rapidly expanding due to military contracts related to the Vietnam War.[80] As discussed in chapter 6, LTV shared multiple connections with First International Bancshares, the CIA-linked bank that George H.W. Bush joined in 1976. LTV Electrosystems held a major share of the defense contracts that LTV received, having been consolidated with another major LTV subsidiary, LTV Military Electronics Division.[81] In 1972, LTV Electrosystems was spun off as an independent company, and rechristened as E-Systems under the leadership of John W. Dixon, its new president and chairman.

As the presence of William Raborn on its board shows, E-Systems maintained a cozy relationship with the CIA and other US intelligence agencies. E-Systems has attempted to keep this relationship under wraps, with much of the company's projects shrouded under confidentiality agreements. Nevertheless, there have been occasions when the company's intelligence ties have bubbled up to the surface. In 1994, for example, Washington Post journalist John Mintz wrote that:

> CIA employees who are experts in high technology are "automatic hires" for the firm, a former CIA official said. "E-Systems made it a point to say, 'When you retire, come work for us." … "E-Systems has one of the more unique relationships with the agency," he added, calling it "chummy." A staff member of a congressional intelligence committee said E-Systems is "virtually indistinguishable" from the agencies it serves. "Congress will ask for a briefing from E-Systems, and the [CIA] program manager shows up," he said. "Sometimes he gives the briefing. They're interchangeable."[82]

Among the known collaborations between E-Systems and the Agency included the construction of "ground stations in China" used to "eavesdrop on Soviet satellites in flight" – the information from which was then "shared with China."[83] In another notable instance, taking place in 1975, E-Systems purchased Air Asia, one of the CIA's proprietary airlines that was hidden as a civilian-staffed aviation company.[84] The sale garnered considerable controversy at the time as E-Systems only paid $1.9 million for the front company, despite the fact that Air Asia's net worth was calculated to be approximately $3.4 million at the time of sale.[85]

Several years later, in 1977, E-Systems became involved in Operation Condor, a DEA and US Customs supported Mexican government initiative to crack down on the ballooning drug trade. It was a completely different operation than the notorious South American operation of the same name.

On hand to support Condor was the CIA, with Evergreen International Aviation providing Mexican authorities with planes and pilots.[86] That same year, Evergreen had absorbed Intermountain Aviation, a CIA proprietary airline, and placed the "former head of all CIA air operations" on its board of directors. E-Systems was contracted to provide maintenance for Evergreen's planes actively participating in Condor, a task no doubt related to the company's wider contracts with US Customs for electronic technology and aircraft maintenance for drug interdiction purposes.[87]

Remarkably (and perhaps unsurprisingly), Condor was an abject failure, and it effectively allowed the drug trade to continue unabated. Where planes were supposed to be spraying herbicides on drug crops, the tanks were frequently found to instead contain water, while officials involved with the program had a tendency to shake down "drug cultivators in exchange for protection from spraying."[88]

Tom Farer notes that Condor in fact encouraged the deepening centralization and concentration of the drug trade within a small handful of powerful cartel-linked groups. "As a result of this of this policy initiative," he writes, "the Mexican drug industry came under the control of entrepreneurial organizations that were fewer in number, stronger in resources, and more dangerous to society and government."[89]

Chief among the drug traffickers that rose in prominence in this time was Felix Gallardo and his criminal associate, Juan Matta Ballesteros. As noted in chapter 7, both of these figures were linked to Contra support activities and, in the case of Matta, to CIA-linked aviation companies.

E-Systems may have also been linked to the activities of both Ted Shackley and his team and that of Robert Vesco in Libya. As discussed in chapter 6, a point of intersection between these two networks was the British company Lonrho, its infamous leader Tiny Rowland, and his right-hand man Edward Du Cann. To briefly recap: Du Cann, whose duties extended beyond Lonrho to act as a liquidator for the Vesco-looted Investors Overseas Services (IOS), sat on the board of a Lonrho freight subsidiary called Tradewinds, which was accused of running arms into Libya on behalf of Shackley's close associate, Edwin Wilson. At this same time, Vesco was involved in a number of Libyan affairs, several of which blew back on the Carter administration – an administration despised by Shackley and a number of his "former" CIA colleagues. One of these was an attempt to get embargoed planes released to Libya, which included a number of C-130 aircraft.

At around this same time, E-Systems was in talks to update a number of C-130s, located in Australia, that a group of individuals was attempting to sell to Libya.[90] This group was led by L.T. "Bill" Ransom, head of a Texas-based aircraft broker firm called Global Jet Sales, and included Max Park of Parmax, Inc. (which shared addresses with Ransom's Global Jet); Stanley Mann, a petroleum broker; and Admiral E.L. "Whitey" Feightner, an aviation consultant and retired military officer.[91] Also involved was Jack Richards, an aircraft broker from Oklahoma City. Richards' firm, Onyx Aviation, was later named during the Iran-Contra hearings as one of the firms that had provided aircraft for the Contras in Nicaragua.[92] Ransom's attempts to sell the C-130s to Libya ultimately fell apart, and it isn't clear if E-Systems ended up working on the aircraft. The route the planes ended up taking, however, is still quite interesting. Aviation records show that a number of these planes passed from the hands of Ransom and Park to Ford & Vlahos, a powerful San Francisco law firm.[93] The "Ford" in Ford & Vlahos was John Ford, who had ties to another aviation company, T & G Aviation, based in Chandler, Arizona.[94] Chandler is a suburb of Phoenix roughly an hour's drive from Marana, where the aforementioned CIA-linked Evergreen Aviation maintained its aircraft maintenance center.[95] According to whistle-blower Gary Eitel (himself a former Evergreen pilot), T & G-owned aircraft "were doing work for Southern Air and Evergreen in Saudi Arabia and Abu Dhabi" that was disguised as contract work for Bechtel.[96]

From Ford & Vlahos, the C-130s ended up in a number of intriguing locations. Records show that a number ended up in the hands of an aviation concern owned by the Aboitiz family in the Philippines, who had grown particularly wealthy and powerful under the Marcos regime.[97] Another was sold to AVIACO of Bogotá, Colombia, a company described in the press as part of the "'air wing' of the Colombian cartels," having been "involved in [drug] smuggling since 1982."[98] Yet another ended up parked at Mena, Arkansas, before being bought by a Miami company, African Air Trans.[99] This is the same C-130 that was discussed in the previous chapter, having been seized by Customs for arms trafficking violations. As discussed in that chapter, African Air Trans was itself a front for an "unnamed Israeli living in Panama." The question remains: was the initial attempt, which involved E-Systems, to sell these C-130s to Libya part of the broader calculus involving that country by Vesco, Shackley, and others? Answers to this question remain elusive, though there is one provocative tie that suggests these may all have been interrelated incidents.

Stanley Mann, the member of Ransom's group that attempted the initial C-130 sale, was closely connected to and had providing financing for Andrew Racz, the head of Racz International, a subsidiary of the Philips, Appel & Walden brokerage house in New York.[100] Declassified US State Department cables show that Racz was also associated with Tiny Rowland (as well as Henry Kissinger), and had acted as a back-channel between the government and the Lonrho chief concerning African affairs.[101]

THE MAN WHO KNEW TOO MUCH

Not only was the PROMIS scandal linked with the US Department of Justice, the CIA, and Israeli intelligence, but major elements of organized crime could also be found in its web. For instance, one of the key figures involved in the PROMIS scandal was Robert Booth Nichols. Nichols served on the board of First Intercontinental Development Corporation (FIDCO) alongside Clint Murchison Jr., a business tycoon with organized crime connections; and Robert Maheu, the private investigator who was an intermediary between the CIA and organized crime and who author Lisa Pease has linked to the 1968 assassination of Robert F. Kennedy.[102] Maheu was FIDCO's vice president while Nichols was the company's Senior Vice President and Chairman of the Investment Committee.[103] FIDCO, per Riconosciuto, was "an NSC [National Security Council] corporate cut-out […] created to be the corporate vehicle to secure the financing for the reconstruction of the cities of Beirut and Damour in Lebanon." Riconosciuto further alleged that, in his dealings with FIDCO in the Middle East, he "came in contact with the PROMIS software" via a system from "IBM Tel Aviv."[104]

In 1981, Nichols formed Meridian Arms with a man named Peter Zokosky. Meridian would later join Wackenhut in its Cabazon-related activities. Michael Riconosciuto had also been Meridian's vice president on the board of directors alongside Nichols and Zokosky for a brief period.[105] Meridian Arms was a subsidiary of Meridian International Logistics, and that company's board of directors included Nichols, Zokosky and Eugene Gianquinto. Gianquinto was notably the president of the Home Entertainment Division of MCA, the entertainment giant that was later acquired by the Bronfmans'

Seagram Company and reincorporated as Universal Studios. One of MCA's top executives, as noted in chapter 1, was Lew Wasserman, who was deeply connected to organized crime, particularly through Moe Dalitz, and was largely responsible for Ronald Reagan's political career.[106] When Reagan took office, the Department of Justice had been probing MCA's ties to organized crime, but – thanks to help from Reagan's Attorney General Ed Meese – the probe was squashed. The Wasserman-Reagan relationship and Wasserman's organized crime ties are discussed in more detail in the next chapter. Another member of the MCA board at this time, Senator Howard Baker, would also later "advise" Robert Maxwell about his entry into New York in the early 1990s, alongside John Tower and Robert Keith Gray. Baker was also a business partner of Maxwell's at that time (see Chapter 15 for more).[107]

According to Cheri Seymour, both Gianquinto of MCA and Nichols of Meridian "had a close working relationship with the Justice Department" and Gianquinto, in a recorded FBI wiretapped conversation referenced by Seymour, took credit for contacting Meese to have the DOJ's MCA-organized crime probe quashed in the early 1980s.[108] One of the special prosecutors for the Justice Department who had worked on the MCA case, Richard Stavin, obtained documents that identified Nichols as "a money launderer with ties to the Gambino crime family and the Yakuza [Japanese organized crime]."[109]

Per Seymour, Nichols also had ties to Ferdinand Marcos of the Philippines, having "reportedly laundered between $50-200 million" on his behalf.[110] Nichols was also investigated by the FBI in the late 1970s for money laundering for Marcos as well as drug smuggling.[111] That investigation also found evidence that Nichols had also sold weapons to the Marcos government and other foreign governments. Much of his money laundering activities, including those on behalf of the Marcos family reportedly involved the Swiss banking system. The FBI found that Nichols had claimed to have had access to "highly sophisticated computers in Switzerland with detailed information on a number of subjects," suggesting that Nichols may have been using PROMIS as part of his Swiss laundromat.[112]

Nichols, according to the FBI report, had also claimed "to have highly placed sources in numerous foreign government agencies which can detect any investigation initiated against him. One of these individuals was supposedly a United States Senator with much seniority whom Nichols claimed to utilize in the trafficking of narcotics and money laundering."[113] Given that Nichols, via Eugene Gianquinto, was just one degree of separation from Senator Howard Baker, who was also on the board of the organized crime-linked MCA and later engaged in suspect business activities with Robert Maxwell, the Tennessee senator seems like a potential suspect.

Nichols also loomed large in the tragic fate of journalist Danny Casolaro. Casolaro had been investigating an international crime syndicate he termed "the Octopus" at the time of his death in 1991. Casolaro believed that this "Octopus" involved powerful individuals in the private and public sectors as well as the criminal underworld and that they were collectively responsible for some of the biggest scandals of the 1980s, including Iran-Contra, BCCI and the theft of the PROMIS software.

"Dan dealt in this nebulous, shadowy world," Dick O'Connell, a friend of Casolaro's and publisher of Washington Crime News Services said in mid-August 1991 to the Associated Press. "He was saying 'they' took that INSLAW software and sold it overseas and took the profits from that and turned it into arms for the Contras.… That's what he was working on and he told me he thought BCCI was the conduit for all of these money transactions."[114]

Cheri Seymour notes that Casolaro's work on "the Octopus" had "encompassed the October Surprise story, the Inslaw computer software case, the Iran/Contra affair, the BCCI scandal, and MCA entertainment corporation, all overlapping and interconnecting into one network." Before his death, Casolaro had called this network "a dirty CIA 'Old Boy' network" that, per Seymour, "had begun working together in the 1950s around the Albania covert operations. These men had gotten into the illegal gun and drug trade back then and had continued in that business ever since."[115]

Shortly before his death, Casolaro had told friends and family that he was close to concluding his investigation. Several people close to him had seen documents involving money transfers involving BCCI and the World Bank to people involved in these scandals, such as Earl Brian and Adnan Khashoggi.

In July 1991, something strange happened and Casolaro suddenly became "somewhat alarmed." It appears to have been a threat from Robert Booth Nichols, who had initially been a source for Casolaro, before warning him "If you continue this investigation, you will die." Casolaro, later that same month, learned from former DOJ special prosecutor Richard Stavin that Nichols was deeply enmeshed in organized crime networks as well as intelligence networks.[116]

Shortly thereafter, on August 5th, 1991, Michael Riconosciuto contacted Bill Hamilton and asked him to use his sources to dig up info on a man named Mike Abbell.[117] Abbell had worked at the Department of Justice in the early 1980s, where he was director of the Office of International Affairs before going into private legal practice.[118] Hamilton ultimately passed the task of investigating Abbell over to Casolaro, who contacted his own sources about ties between Abbell, Robert Booth Nichols, and Gilberto Rodriguez, an early leader of the Cali cartel. The Cali cartel's connections to Contra support efforts and to E-Systems were discussed in chapter 7 and earlier in this chapter, respectively. Years later, in 1994, Abbell's law offices were raided by the FBI in connection with an investigation to Cali cartel money laundering and Abbell was subsequently charged and convicted for being directly involved in the cartel's activities.[119]

The following day, Casolaro traveled to Martinsburg, Virginia, to meet with some sources to get the final piece of the puzzle and "bring back the head of the Octopus." Two days after arriving in Martinsburg, Casolaro was found dead in his hotel room and his briefcase full of his research notes and evidence was missing. His death was ruled a suicide.

Many, including Casolaro's family, do not believe that Casolaro committed suicide. A week before his death, Casolaro told his brother he had been receiving death threats and the manner in which he died, deep slashes in his arms, was not consistent with Casolaro's well-known squeamishness around even minor amounts of blood. Speculation only grew following the FBI investigation, given that the FBI lied to Congress, pressured its own agents not to question whether it was a suicide, and lost 90 percent of its files related to Casolaro's death – among other glaring inconsistencies.[120]

In a 1994 letter provided to me in 2019 by Inslaw Inc., Inslaw lawyer Charles Work told then-Assistant Attorney General John Dwyer that one of Inslaw's confidential sources in government had stated that Casolaro had been injected with a substance that deadened his nerves from the neck down, explaining the apparent lack of struggle on Casolaro's part, and that the substance used had come from the US Army inventory.[121]

The person who had arranged Casolaro's final meeting before his death was a US military intelligence officer named Joseph Cuellar. Prior to Casolaro's death, Cuellar had promised to arrange a meeting between Casolaro and Peter Videnieks, "a Department of Justice contracting official with responsibility for the PROMIS software" who was a close associate of Earl Brian.[122] Videnieks, before joining the Department of Justice, had previously worked as a contracting officer at US Customs during the years of Operation Condor and was in a position where he could have handled contracts related to E-Systems and Evergreen International.

The same year that Casolaro died, there were several other suspicious deaths involving people directly connected to the PROMIS scandal or involved in Casolaro's investigation of "the Octopus" – including Alan Standorf, one of Casolaro's sources;[123] Robert Maxwell, father of Ghislaine Maxwell and the intelligence-linked salesman of the bugged PROMIS software;[124] and John Tower – the former Texas senator who assisted Maxwell in selling the bugged PROMIS software to the Los Alamos laboratories.[125] Other aspects of Robert Maxwell's death are dealt with in Chapter 15.

Around this same time, the PROMIS scandal or Inslaw Affair itself became too unruly, especially after several Congressional investigations concluded wrongdoing by the Justice Department and called for a special prosecutor to be appointed. That appointment was made by none other than the then-Attorney General under George H.W. Bush, William Barr. As previously mentioned in Chapter 8, Barr had not only had an alleged role in major aspects of Iran-Contra under the alias Robert Johnson, but he had begun his career at the CIA. As will be discussed in Chapter 11, Barr's employment with the CIA overlapped with his father's decision to hire Jeffrey Epstein at the Dalton School, which would prove essential in Epstein's rise to prominence in these same networks.

Early on, Barr essentially stonewalled Congress by denying Congressmen access to “privileged” documents related to PROMIS and Inslaw Inc., much like he had done years earlier when he stonewalled the Church Committee on behalf of the CIA. As a result, a Congressional hearing was held in December 1990 on Barr’s continued refusal to make the documents available.[126] After considerable political pressure, Barr moved to appoint a special counsel to “investigate” the Inslaw affair, appointing a retired judge from Chicago named Nicholas Bua to serve in that role in September 1992.[127] Bua authored a 267-page report, which he completed in early 1993, that claimed to find no credible evidence to support the Hamilton’s allegations and the report has been widely criticized as a “whitewash” of the whole situation.[128]

After Inslaw’s Bill Hamilton distributed Inslaw’s heavily detailed rebuttal of the “Bua report” to members of House Judiciary Committee, Congressmen Jack Brooks (D-TX) and Charlie Rose (D-NC) attempted to force an investigation of the Justice Department as it related to PROMIS as well as an investigation into the death of journalist Danny Casolaro and the payment of reparations to the Hamiltons. Despite their best efforts, and the continued efforts of the Hamiltons through the decades, the PROMIS scandal, Casolaro’s death, and other matters that swirl around the entity Casolaro called “the Octopus” remain largely uninvestigated by the federal government (and most of mainstream media) to this day.

CDC AND TECH TRANSFERS

As previously mentioned, prior to Casolaro’s death, those close to the journalist had seen documents involving money transfers involving the World Bank to people involved in these scandals, such as Earl Brian and Adnan Khashoggi. In addition, it was reported by economist and author J. Orlin Grabbe that this particular version of PROMIS in use by the World Bank was being used to track wire transfers “in connection with a money-laundering operation that went from BCCI London through the World Bank and into Caribbean institutions.”[129]

The role of the World Bank in the PROMIS scandal has been largely unexplored. However, the trail left by the company that managed PROMIS for the financial institution, Control Data Corporation, itself leads to a different, yet parallel operation involving technology transfers to the Soviet Union. Both Robert Maxwell and, subsequently, the Gouletas family, close associates of Jeffrey Epstein, would have their own runins with the company.

Control Data Corporation was originally formed in 1946 under the name Engineering Research Associates (ERA). ERA had been created by a group of engineers who had worked for a wartime Naval division involved in code-breaking and cryptography called the Communications Supplementary Activity. The core ERA team eventually broke away from the original company and formed Control Data Corporation (CDC) in September 1957. From the beginning, CDC was a major defense contractor.

During the 1970s, CDC computers were installed at Sandia National Laboratories, which would become the target of Robert Maxwell’s marketing of PROMIS roughly a decade later. CDC had developed special code expressly for the products it sold to Sandia, which – as previously mentioned – dealt with aspects of the US nuclear program.[130] CDC computers, also containing specially designed code, were also present at Oak Ridge Laboratories, which also played a role in development of the nuclear program.

CDC also had a long-standing relationship with the Soviet Union’s nuclear laboratories and facilities during this same period. Congressional hearings from the mid-1970s revealed that:

> In 1968, a second-generation Control Data Corporation 1604 system was installed at the Dubna Soviet Nuclear Facility near Moscow. In 1972 [CDC] sold the Soviet Union a third-generation CDC 6200 system computer. For these systems, [CDC’s] operating statement had improved by about $3 million dollars in the past three years. And the Soviet Union has gained 15 years in computer technology.[131]

As seen here, CDC’s business in the USSR raised concerns that the company was engaging in technology transfers to the United States’ ostensible arch-enemy at the height of the Cold War. Such concerns would continue to follow the company for decades.

Around this same period, in the early 1970s, CDC acquired the Commercial Credit Corporation (CCC), which had nearly gone bankrupt during the calamitous bankruptcy of Penn Central in 1970. That bankruptcy, the nation's largest until the collapse of Enron several decades later, is discussed in greater detail in the next chapter.[132] In the years that followed, CDC and its newly acquired subsidiary CCC would become involved with the networks of Shackley's "private CIA" and "rogue" CIA agent (and alleged sex blackmailer) Edwin Wilson.

As previously detailed in Chapter 7, CCC played a key role in the creation of Global International Airways, a company created in the late 1970s by Farhad Azima, an Iranian businessman reportedly tied to Iran's pre-revolutionary intelligence service – SAVAK. That airline had been launched with the aid of a "multi-million dollar loan from the Commercial Credit Corporation" and was allegedly tied to Shackley's network as well as Air America (known by this time as Southern Air Transport). Global International Airways had worked with EATSCO, the company tied to the Shackley-Cline "Private CIA" network that served as a "middle man" in arms deals.

Also noted in Chapter 6 is the fact that CDC itself, around 1976 or so, had directly hired Edwin Wilson as a consultant with the hopes that Wilson's contacts could help the company "unload some outdated computers on Third World countries." However, CDC appears to have leveraged Wilson's abilities for much more, as the "rogue" CIA agent was accused of bugging the US Army's Materiel Command on behalf of the company. Considering these associations and activities, CDC was likely much more than just a computer company and its public claims that the company was not involved in illicit, high-technology transfers to the Soviet Union seem dubious at best.

After the aforementioned Congressional hearing in 1974, CDC made an apparent move at increasing its role in technology transfers, despite political concern. By the late 1970s, they had established a new subsidiary called Worldtech, described in the press as "a division of Control Data Corp that does research and consulting on, and brokering of, technology transfers."[133]

Once Worldtech was established by CDC, it entered into a joint venture in 1979 with Greek publisher George Bobolas that was called Worldtech Hellas Ltd., where 70% was owned by Bobolas and 20% was owned by CDC. The owner of the remaining 10% was not disclosed in reports at the time.

A 1979 letter from one of Bobolas' companies to A. Afonin, identified as a "representative of the State Committee for Foreign Economic Relations of the USSR Council of Ministers," proposed the creation of a "joint development company using Worldtech for 'world-wide technology transfer' and stressed that 'Worldtech Hellas Ltd. will give a lot of help' to 'technology transfer on an international base.'"[134] After journalist Paul Anastasi published information about Bobolas and called him a "KGB agent of influence," one of his companies, Bobtrade, asserted that "no improper transfer of high technology was involved," while CDC moved to dissolve their partnership, likely due to bad publicity.[135]

Around the time that Worldtech was being created, CDC's then-executive vice president, Robert D. Schmidt, was part of the American Committee on US-Soviet Relations (ACUSR, previously the American Committee on East-West Accord). Other members at the time, specifically in 1977, included Robert Maxwell's lawyer and confidant, Samuel Pisar (stepfather to future US Secretary of State Anthony Blinken), as well as Thomas Watson Jr. of IBM, who would become US ambassador to the Soviet Union in 1979.[136] Another member was Paul Ziffren, previously discussed in Chapter 1 as a major figure in the organized crime networks that ran through Hollywood, including those tied up with Lew Wasserman and MCA. Ziffren's and Wasserman's families would later intermarry.

By the mid-1980s, Occidental Petroleum executives Armand Hammer and William McSweeney would also join the ACUSR. ACUSR member Samuel Pisar also represented Hammer's business interests. As previously mentioned in Chapter 7, Hammer served as a back channel between the Americans and the Soviets and had been involved in the entry of BCCI into the US financial system. Also noted was the fact that he had originally sought to acquire FGB himself for the purpose of financially blackmailing US politicians. It is also worth mentioning again that Hammer's father, Julius Hammer, had once served as a Soviet spy.[137]

Another member of the ACUSR was Joseph Filner, president of Noblemet International (later Newmet Corporation). Filner was extensively involved in USSR-US tech transfers. Filner's Noblemet created a joint venture for the purpose of tech transfers, which was called Multi-Arc. By 1984, CDC's Worldtech had become "a worldwide marketing representative for Multi-Arc."[138]

CDC would later recruit Minnesota governor Rudy Perpich after Perpich lost his re-election campaign in 1979. Perpich, a dentist by training, would specifically work for CDC overseas as "vice president and executive consultant to Control Data Worldtech Inc."[139] The New York Times, reporting on his hire by CDC in January 1979, stated that Perpich was expected to be based in Yugoslavia, but he said he could find himself in Hungary, Bulgaria or Rumania [sic]."[140] Robert Maxwell was also intimately involved with tech transfers in Eastern Europe, specifically in Bulgaria, which is discussed at the end of this chapter. Perpich, after working for Worldtech, would win another term as Minnesota's governor in 1983.

CDC would also recruit another influential politician, Walter Mondale, who was hired by CDC right after he left office as Jimmy Carter's vice president. CDC hired Mondale as a legal consultant and retained his services for $2,000 per month (about $6,360 in 2022 dollars).[141] Simultaneously, Mondale was also a consultant to Allen & Co, the company of the organized crime-linked Charles and Herbert Allen mentioned throughout this book. Mondale was not only a consultant to, but also a close friend of the Allen brothers. The Allen brothers also worked closely with organized crime interests as well as Leslie Wexner's "mentors" Max Fisher and Alfred Taubman (discussed in detail in chapter 13). As previously mentioned earlier in this chapter, Allen & Co. had a close business association with Earl Brian and had financed one of his attempts to buy out Bill Hamilton's Inslaw.

By 1983, CDC was providing its services to the World Bank's computer center and, that same year, the PROMIS software was found to be in use at that specific facility to keep track of wire transfers of money. This is according to a sworn statement that Inslaw Inc. obtained from David McCallum in 1995. In 1983, McCallum was working for CDC at the World Bank.

In my correspondence with Inslaw's Bill Hamilton, he stated the following: "According to an article in the International Banking Regulator dated January 17, 1994, U.S. Justice Department officials delivered the VAX version of PROMIS to the World Bank in 1983. The World Bank, as an international institution, is outside the reach of discovery of the U.S. courts. For its part, the World Bank declares that it has been unable to find any evidence that it ever possessed the VAX version of PROMIS."[142] Hamilton also relayed that he had once been informed of a connection between CDC and PROMIS that involved the Deputy Attorney General under Ed Meese, D. Lowell Jensen. However, he could no longer remember the specifics of that connection.

As previously mentioned, among the connections Danny Casolaro revealed to those close to him in the days and weeks before his death, he had specifically mentioned the World Bank. There was talk specifically about money transfers involving BCCI and the World Bank to individuals such as Earl Brian and Adnan Khashoggi. Given that the documentation of those transfers mysteriously disappeared from Casolaro's hotel room at the time of his death, CDC's apparent involvement with the World Bank's use of PROMIS takes on increased significance.

Also significant is the role CDC played during the 1990 visit of Mikhail Gorbachev, the then-leader of the Soviet Union, to the United States. During that trip, Gorbachev visited CDC headquarters alongside Rudy Perpich as well as Robert Maxwell. The Gorbachevs arrived in Minnesota immediately after a summit meeting in Washington with then-President George H.W. Bush.[143]

According to a report from the Minnesota Historical Society:

> Gorbachev most likely agreed to the visit [Minnesota] because several Minnesota-based corporations – especially the computer firm, Control Data Corporation – had long done business in the Soviet Union. When the corporation's officials learned that Gorbachev was interested in a post-summit tour, they passed the word to Perpich, who had worked for Control Data between his two terms as governor. Albert Eisele, who had been a consultant for Control Data and, earlier, was Vice President Walter Mondale's press secretary, drafted the governor's letter inviting the Gorbachevs. Former Control Data CEO Robert Price personally delivered the letter to the Soviet embassy on February 26, 1990.[144]

During the visit, Gorbachev attended a lunch at the governor's mansion, where Robert Maxwell and Rudy Perpich joined groups of Soviet and American officials. One of the American officials present was

Condoleezza Rice, the future Secretary of State who was then a National Security Council staff member. Afterwards, there was a press conference where Robert Maxwell, in characteristic bombastic fashion, "announced that he would donate $50 million to help create a private research institution to be called the Gorbachev-Maxwell Institute of Technology." Maxwell said that the donation was "contingent on Perpich raising matching funds."[145] The institute was never launched.

After visiting Minnesota, Gorbachev next visited Silicon Valley, where he spent the week "trying to perfect the art of winning acceptance and investment from the captains of capitalism." A Washington Post article on his visit quoted John Sculley, then-head of Apple Computers as saying, "I think Gorbachev got to us… We'll all be thinking about business with the Soviet Union in a way we wouldn't have if he hadn't come."[146]

MAXWELL AND MULTI-GROUP

Robert Maxwell's involvement in intelligence-linked technology transfers was considerable and went far beyond his tangential involvement with Control Data Corporation, as detailed above. The most important of these involved Maxwell's relationship with Bulgarian intelligence and his role in an operation known as "Neva."

Maxwell had long been interested in Bulgaria, even before he was first brought into Mossad's fold in the early 1960s. In one of his earliest meetings with Vladimir Kryuchkov, the KGB chief and one of the most powerful of Maxwell's "sources," Maxwell had "raised the possibility that Bulgaria might be a country where he could invest his money away from prying eyes in the City of London and Wall Street." Kryuchkov later granted him permission to establish a "financial bunker in the Bulgarian capital, Sofia."[147] Maxwell, years later and after he established a close relationship with Bulgarian leadership and the top figures in its intelligence service, would go on to sell the bugged PROMIS software to Bulgarian intelligence, the proceeds of which were laundered and eventually made available to finance Mossad's "black" operations.[148]

Out of Maxwell's associations with Bulgarian intelligence came a program called Neva. Neva, per Gordon Thomas, was "designed to be the single largest program for the mass-scale theft of US technology" and sought to "plunder every Western industrialized nation."[149] The program was operated by Bulgarian intelligence, whose agents would steal technology and bring it into Bulgaria, "usually under diplomatic cover."[150] Bulgarian companies owned by Maxwell would then re-engineer the stolen equipment and then those companies would resell those products to other Eastern bloc countries.

One of the men who developed Neva alongside Maxwell, Ognian Doinov, president of the Bulgarian Chamber for Industry and Trade from 1980 to 1984 and Bulgaria's Vice Premier from 1984 to 1986, claimed that Bulgarian intelligence agents involved in Neva had been covertly working "in Silicon Valley and other key technology centers" in the United States, as well as in Britain and other Western countries. There, they would steal "technology blueprints, actual software, even computers."[151]

According to Gordon Thomas, Robert Maxwell created an umbrella of companies for use in Neva within six months. Thanks to Maxwell, Thomas writes, "The country had become […] the center of a thriving economy based upon whole-scale theft and money laundering." This growing business empire, Thomas asserts would later "grow into one of the most powerful crime syndicates in the world, embracing the Russian Mafia, the crime families of Bulgaria and, far away across the Atlantic, those in New York and, on the other side of the world, the crime families of Japan and Hong Kong."[152]

The beginnings of this crime syndicate can be found in the umbrella corporation that would combine the companies Maxwell had created to operate Neva – Multi-Group. Multi-Group would go on to "control a significant percentage of the global profits from gas, telecommunications, oil, gambling, and money laundering."[153] It would later emerge that Neva companies, many of which were now part of Multi-Group, were used as cover by Mossad with Maxwell's blessing.[154]

John Patrick O'Neill, FBI executive agent-in-charge in New York until 2001, would later say the following about Maxwell and Multi-Group:

> In many ways Maxwell was at the heart of the global criminal network. Beginning with his Bulgarian connection he showed how to structure a network that grew into financially powerful

> criminal corporations whose power would extend to the South American drug cartels, the Tongs and the Triads, the Russian Mafia and the Japanese Yakuza. They were all there before. But the way Robert Maxwell set up things up, they would all come together in Multi-Group in its early years. His last contribution was not that he just robbed his pension funds. It was that he was the man who set in motion a true coalition of global criminals.[155]

Another Maxwell company that was based in the US has been suspected of playing some role in the Neva program. In 1985, Maxwell created Pergamon-Brassey, registering the company in McLean, Virginia. He and his son Kevin were listed as directors. Two years later, in 1987, the company underwent a major shake-up and former Senator John Tower, who had been a major accomplice of Maxwell's in the PROMIS scandal, became chairman of its board.[156] Prominent former generals of the US and British militaries were also added to the company's board.

According to Bill Hamilton of Inslaw Inc., Pergamon-Brassey seemed to have more connections to PROMIS aside from Robert Maxwell and John Tower:

> In 1987, Pergamon-Brassey hired two senior computer-systems executives who resigned at the same time from the Meese Justice Department's Justice Data Center. The proprietary IBM mainframe version of PROMIS had been operating at the Justice Data Center since the early eighties. George Vaveris resigned his estimated $90,000 a year Senior Executive Service position as director of the Justice Data Center to become vice-president for technical services at the tiny Pergamon-Brassey. He told a colleague at the Justice Department his new salary would be in excess of $200,000 a year.[157]

Pergamon-Brassey was a specialist company, with no more than six employees on its payroll at any given time. While it did publish books on topics related to national security and intelligence, it primarily dealt with software; software that some suspect may have been part of Maxwell's sprawling, Neva-related operations.[158]

A year after Pergamon-Brassey was revamped and Tower installed as its chairman, Maxwell became involved with the notorious Russian mobster Semion Mogilevich. Mogilevich was part of a plan that had been pitched to Maxwell and designed by Vladimir Kryuchkov. Gordon Thomas relays that plan as follows:

> Even more fearful at the pace at which perestroika was accelerating, Kryuchkov said that for the KGB to remain a potent force he wanted to establish "over six hundred commercial enterprises." They would all have links to the West. Just as Maxwell's companies provided cover for Mossad's katsas, Kryuchkov envisaged his companies would provide similar protection for KGB operatives. […]
>
> The six hundred companies would each employ a quota of senior party members to provide them with an income during the difficult days ahead in the transition from Communism to capitalism. Through genuine trading links, the companies would obtain access to the very heart of capitalism: Wall Street and the City of London and the Bourses of Western Europe. Its staffs would then learn the innermost secrets of the West's banking system, the well-spring of all capitalism. Eventually it might even be possible to destabilise Western economies – and pave the way for the return of Communism.[159]

The year he met Maxwell, in 1988, Mogilevich was granted an Israeli passport thanks to Maxwell's lobbying of Israel's government on his behalf. With this passport, Mogilevich soon established a web of seemingly legitimate companies in Israel, the United States, and the United Kingdom which were used to launder his illicit profits from his considerable involvement in weapons deals, drug trafficking, and human trafficking. A year after meeting Maxwell, Mogilevich's criminal profits grew considerably, reaching an estimated $40 billion annually.[160]

Maxwell subsequently became a business partner of Mogilevich's as well as Ivo Janchev, a Bulgarian intelligence officer linked up with Mogilevich and other organized crime figures in the Eastern bloc. Janchev was also allegedly a part of Kryuchkov's plan and was tasked with acting as "the front man to make contact with several Russians with businesses in the West."[161]

Maxwell would ultimately play a crucial role in allowing these organized crime interests to enter into the world of "respectable" international finance. It is unknown if anything ever resulted from Kryuchkov's plan, but Maxwell's connections to Mogilevich, Janchev, and other unsavory characters would undeniably have a considerable impact on the expansion of the mobsters' legitimate and illegitimate businesses and foster the expansion of the "global criminal network" that Maxwell had helped spawn through Multi-Group.

FROM COLD WARS TO HOT MONEY

According to Tom Bower's biography of Maxwell, the tycoon spent a considerable amount of time in Moscow in 1991. There, he was negotiating the purchase of approximately $1 billion worth of gold.[162] The sellers were reportedly KGB officers, and the outcome of the exchange has been shrouded in secrecy. Per the account in Bower's book, Maxwell went to Moscow to secure the gold, only to discover that it had been "lost."[163] Other versions of the tale suggest that Maxwell wasn't acting alone, and that he was once again operating in tandem with the Mossad. According to this account, the gold actually found its way to Israel – not an uncommon destination for assets that had flowed out of the Eastern bloc during and after the collapse of the Soviet Union.

Throughout 1991, stories of massive outflows of Soviet gold circulated about, with many naming sums considerably higher than the $1 billion that Maxwell was purportedly seeking to acquire. In spring of that year, a report appeared in the Manchester Guardian that a "'package' worth $12 billion" was moved from the USSR outside of "normal export channels."[164] Several months later Grigori Yavlinski, the Russian economist tapped by Gorbachev to help oversee Soviet economic reforms, told stunned world leaders at a G-7 summit that Russia's gold reserves had dwindled from 2,000-3,000 tons to 240 tons.[165] Even before the Soviet Union collapsed, looting was taking place on a colossal scale.

According to Claire Sterling's book Thieves World, an army of strange and dubious figures descended upon Europe in 1991, offering to sell off massive amounts of Russian gold. One of these figures, subsequently well-known in conspiracy circles for his questionable claims, was an American mob-linked conman named Leo Wanta. In league with several mafioso and other "faceless investors," Wanta blanketed trading houses across the globe "with faxed offers to sell two thousand tons of gold."[166] At the same time, Roberto Coppola, an Italian boasting credentials identifying him as a member of the Knights of Malta, was likewise trying to sell off the exact same amount of gold. According to a source for Sterling that she refers to only as "Mr. X," "Roberto Coppola was the source of all the gold that Wanta was offering."[167]

Were there any links between the Wanta-Coppola gold sales and Maxwell's attempts to buy up Soviet gold? One tantalizing possibility can be found in the ATLAS dossier, discussed in chapter 7, which outlined a criminal network connected to the corrupt Belgian-Costa Rican diplomat Felix Przedborski. The dossier names an American company called New Republic as one of the vehicles through which Przedborski's group laundered money, mostly profits accrued through arms and drug trafficking.[168] Documents reproduced by Sterling in her book show that Wanta was offering the gold through his US-based company, New Republic/USA Financial Group, Ltd.[169]

There were a number of ties, albeit links one or two steps removed, between Przedborski's group and Maxwell's network. There is the fact, for instance, that Bruce Rappaport called upon the legal resources of a law office where Przedborski's son was a partner. Rappaport and Maxwell had a number of mutual associates that included attorney Samuel Pisar, banker Edmond Safra, and Russian mobster Simeon Mogilevich. Along similar lines, the ATLAS dossier identified Safra's Republic National Bank as one of its money laundering outlets. There was also the reason the dossier had been drafted in the first place: the looting-induced collapse of a company called Comuele S.A. by the associate of the Przedborski group. According to the dossier, Comuele had been taken over by "Russians," and injected with money from Israel.[170] During the 1980s, Comuele was owned by Lonrho, the corporate flagship of Maxwell's friend Tiny Rowland.[171]

Throughout the later period of the Cold War, the intelligence services of the Eastern bloc established trading companies and corporate fronts, often obscured behind walls of ownership, through which they could simultaneously conduct espionage operations and obtain hard currency for cash-starved states. East Germany's KoKo was one example, as was Kintex in Bulgaria (which Maxwell certainly would have done business with).

These and entities like Bulgaria's Multi-Group subsequently became the conduits through which capital flowed out of the Eastern bloc as the Soviet Union buckled and collapsed. Maxwell's role in Multi-Group shows his direct involvement in these activities. As discussed earlier in this chapter, Maxwell had struck a deal with KGB chief Vladimir Kryuchkov to help manage the secret service's economic fronts in Europe and elsewhere.[172] The 1991 gold deals likely arose from precisely these sorts of strategic alignments.

Another KGB front that became a vehicle for capital flight that was tied to the Maxwell family was Nordex, based in Vienna and launched with the ostensible purpose of exporting fertilizer. The full details of the relationship between Nordex and the Maxwells will be discussed in chapter 16, but for now it is enough to mention that the firm's founder, Grigori Loutchansky, had been a rising star in the Latvian Communist Party under the sponsorship of Boris Pugo, the soon-to-be chairman of the Latvian section of the KGB.[173] Perhaps importantly, Pugo had been closely tied to KGB chief Vladimir Kryuchkov, who – according to Gordon Thomas – was the one who reached out to Maxwell concerning corporate cover for Soviet economic espionage operations.[174]

After a stint in prison for theft, Loutchansky landed a job as the fertilizer exporter for Adahzi, a state-owned import-export company. In 1989, after a year at Adahzi, he launched Nordex, which soon boasted numerous subsidiaries; these were dedicated to shipping and freight transport and were organized along with joint ventures with late Soviet companies. Soon Nordex was swimming in the world of offshore finance, with "multi-million dollar transfers with obscure companies, incorporated in tax havens such as Ireland, Lichtenstein, and the Isle of Man" making up a significant chunk of its shadowy business activity.175 It also indulged in global black market trades. According to intelligence sources cited by Andrew and Leslie Cockburn, Nordex was deeply "involved in arms, drugs, the whole nine yards."[176] This also entailed the trade of nuclear materials such as uranium, plutonium, and beryllium.

Reports in the Swiss press identify Nordex's co-founder as none other than Marc Rich, an allegation reiterated in US government documents.[177] Bruce Raphael writes in his book King Energy, that Rich utilized Nordex to snap up Russian oil refineries that were being auctioned off during the post-Soviet economic transition.[178] Yet another player in Nordex was the Swiss attorney Iso Lenzlinger, known for his status as a "financial juggler" who had "sat on over 100 boards of directors" and spent time as the secretary of Zug, Switzerland's official trade association.[179] According to press reports, "Lenzlinger maintained connections with western and eastern secret service agents."[180] One of his clients had been Guenther Forgber, the Stasi's front-man in running the West German trading company KoKo.[181] In a set of circumstances reminiscent of Control Data Corporation's Eastern bloc activities, Forgber was involved in the acquisition and transfer of high technology from the West.[182]

During the 1990s, Nordex's money laundering activities linked it with a company, registered in New Jersey and active in New York City and London, called Benex International Co., Inc. Benex's offices, located in the New York borough of Queens, "shared the same building with two companies connected to … Loutchansky."[183] Authorities investigating Russian mob-linked money laundering activities also found the fingerprints of Marc Rich at Benex. Wire transfers were discovered between Benex and "Glencore of Rich"—though the transactions took place after Rich had departed from Glencore.[184] Both Rich and Glencore denied that they had done any sort of business with Benex.

The most glaring connections between Nordex and Benex were found in Europe. During the mid-1990s, Benex moved as much as $9 billion through a handful of companies in Paris, all of which shared the same office. The most important of these was Kama France, controlled by brothers Igor and Oleg Berezovsky (whether they were related to the better-known Russian oligarch Boris Berezovsky is unknown) and owned by a Swiss company called Kama Trade AG. Italian investigators found that Kama Trade was "said to be a member of the Nordex group of companies."[185] One of Kama's "substantial shareholders" was a man named Andreas Marissov, a director and shareholder in another firm called IFS Fracht-

Service—a subsidiary of Nordex.[186] Finally, Kama Trade was managed by Lenzlinger & Partners, a trust headed by the aforementioned Iso Lenzlinger.[187]

Benex also arose in investigations into the financial activities of Maxwell's most notorious criminal associate, Simeon Mogilevich. Money had been moved through bank accounts held by Benex to YBM Magnex International, a Pennsylvania company that had merged with a large Hungarian firm "that sold industrial magnets and military hardware."[188] YBM was firmly under the control of Mogilevich, and had been capitalized with funds from Arigon Ltd., the "heart of his criminal empire."[189] Within four years of its launch, YBM grew to a billion dollar company, and embarked on an ambitious plan to use the Canadian stock market as a means of money laundering via a publicly-traded shell company. That effort, however, was unsuccessful.

Benex was just one part of a vast and much more complicated money laundering network that encompassed Mogilevich and a number of Russian oligarchs as well as newly-minted private banks operating in the wildly unregulated markets of the former Soviet Union. The company had been formed by Peter Berlin and his wife, Lucy Edwards, an officer in the Eastern European Division of Bank of New York (BONY).

When Benex moved hot money on behalf of Nordex and Mogilevich, it was using accounts the pair had set up at the bank, and at their offices in Queens. Berlin and Edwards had installed BONY's wire-transfer technology, Micro/Ca$h-Register, on their computers. When the pair were finally busted for money laundering activities, Edwards confessed that she had been working under the assumption that what they had been doing was "consistent with the practice of [BONY's] Eastern European Division."[190]

A lawsuit brought against BONY in the Southern District Court of New York disclosed that BONY executives were themselves close to Mogilevich. The head of the bank's Eastern European Division, Natasha Gurfinkel, was revealed to "have contacts with Mogilevich" via her husband, Konstantin Kagalovsky. Interestingly, Konstantin, a former Soviet economist, was Russia's representative to the IMF from 1992 through 1995, and was very close with the teams carrying out the privatization of former state-owned enterprises.[191] According to the suit, BONY's security personnel contacted the bank's chairman and CEO, Thomas Renyi, concerning these ties. "Renyi," reads the legal complaint, "'interviewed' Gurfinkel about the matter, and no action was taken."[192]

BONY's connection to the former Eastern bloc arose from the close relationship between the bank and Bruce Rappaport. Between 1989 and 1990, BONY purchased the stake held in Rappaport's Inter Maritime Bank (IMB) by BCCI front-men, leading IMB to be rechristened as Bank of New York-Inter Maritime Bank (BONY-IMB).[193] Immediately following this restructuring, Rappaport went about increasing his business in the Soviet Union. In August 1990, Rappaport met with Gorbachev in Moscow to discuss a series of joint ventures between the Inter Maritime complex and Soviet state-owned enterprises. Curiously, this meeting took place just one month after the encounter between Gorbachev and Maxwell in Minnesota.

Soon, a number of joint ventures were announced. Most involved collaborations with Soviet shipbuilding enterprises, which were set up to boost the Eastern bloc's export capacities. Others were to be dedicated to port construction, cruise lines, and to oil and gas exploration in Siberia.[194] With Paul Helliwell's old banking partner Burton Kanter working hard on the legal dimensions, IMB-BONY fostered ties to a number of Soviet-controlled banking entities. Correspondent banking relations were set up between a handful of joint-stock banks and IMB-BONY, which only increased in number when the Soviet Union relaxed laws restricting private banking enterprises.

This became the backbone of BONY's push eastward. The Eastern European Division was established and Gurfinkel was installed as its head. Soon, she was "working closely with BONY-IMB personnel" and meeting personally with a number of "banking executives throughout Russia and Eastern Europe."[195] She put the Micro Ca$h-Register technology on display, and illustrated to interested parties how it could "route US dollar denominated currency to a web of offshore banking entities."[196] Just as BONY-IMB had done before, BONY began to accumulate a vast number of Russian correspondent banks.

One particularly interesting bank that BONY and BONY-IMB were tied to was the European Union Bank (EUB), which had been named as a money laundromat used by Russian organized crime figures. With operations set up in Antigua, EUB had been established by Alexander Konanykhine, who just a few years prior had organized the All-Russian Exchange Bank (AREB) at the behest of the KGB. Through AREB, Konanykhine "aided and abetted the movement of approximately $300 million [or up to] $1 billion, to the West, from November 1991 through May 1992."[197] When Konanykhine turned his attention to Antigua, BONY and BONY-IMB weren't the only Rappaport-linked entities that he did business with. EUB also maintained ties to Rappaport's own Antiguan bank, Swiss-American, which he had set up with Burton Kanter and Marvin Warner – the close friend and business partner of Edward DeBartolo. As will be noted in chapter 13, Edward DeBartolo was not only a close business associate of Leslie Wexner, but also a major associate of organized crime.

BONY's Eastern European banking activities took on sophisticated technological dimensions. Besides Micro Ca$h-Register, the bank took steps to develop what it called "cyphergrams," an encrypted communication system to allow for more direct interactions between BONY, its correspondent banks, and the offshore network of banks and businesses that they used to move money.[198] Similarly, databases were developed that provided code-names for the participants, tabulated ownership shares in offshore entities, and tracked money dispersal. This and the other systems were marketed to various Russian banks in BONY's client list.

Both the cyphergrams and the database systems were part of an effort to help develop a technique created by Gurfinkel, the manager of Inkombank (one of BONY's largest Russian banking clients), and a mysterious individual named Bob Klein, called "prokutki", or "spinning around.'" As the Southern District of New York suit against BONY described it, "spinning around" was an elaborate means of laundering money around the world:

> After a major "investment" was placed by a Russian customer with Inkombank or one of its satellite offshore companies, BONY would execute a series of electronic funds transfers (EFTs) from the Inkombank U.S. dollar accounts to specific offshore front companies and bank accounts. Usually, several layers of these electronic funds transfers to offshore entities were executed in succession, hence the name "spinning around." The ultimate goal of the "spinning around" scheme was to obscure and disguise the true origin of the funds being moved through the BONY accounts. The "spinning around" scheme allowed Inkombank's customer to evade payment of Russian taxes and duties, and provided the ability to launder proceeds from illegal acts. The conspirators generated "commission" payments, or "skim," based on a percentage of the total amount of money moved through the network out of Russia. The commissions, also referred to as "consulting fees," were ultimately diverted for the benefit of the conspirators through BONY to offshore entities.[199]

To make matters even more complicated, the existence of Bob Klein himself remains an open question. In various legal declarations and investigations, he has been described as "a close associate and representative of both Rappaport and [BONY chairman Thomas] Renyi."[200] Two BONY employees testified under oath that they had met Klein, but neither any BONY-IMB office logs nor BONY internal paperwork ever mentioned his name.

Alan Block and Constance Weaver, authors of the most definitive work on Rappaport and his decades of corruption, concluded that Klein was something of a fiction deployed to obscure the inner-workings of BONY's criminal activities. "We … have met the man who invented Klein," they write. While they don't name this individual, they do pass along the ominous statement that he gave them: "How can we ever know who someone really is in any case – Passports can be faked – Records can be forged – How can we really know?"[201]

This financial maze came crumbling down in August 1998, thanks to an untimely intervention by a surprising party: Republic National Bank (RNB), the bank controlled by Maxwell's close friend Edmond Safra. RNB drafted a "suspicious activities report" and turned it over to the treasuries, outlining evidence of strange transactions between RNB, BONY, and a handful of companies – including Benex.[202] On August 5th, Lewis Shiliro at the Justice Department sent a letter to Dov Schlein, chairman of RNB, thanking him for the bank's report. In the letter, Shiliro wrote that RNB had assisted "the New York Office of the Federal Bureau of Investigation in an ongoing major money laundering investigation."203 Suspicions have been raised about the supposed altruism of RNB, a bank that, as discussed in other chapters, was linked to Iran-Contra, Colombian cartel money laundering, the Przedborski group, and drug traffickers operating in the Middle East. Indeed, Block and Weaver write that RNB "had been obnoxiously crooked for some time," and may have taken "the 'high road' in order to protect itself."[204] In order words, RNB was getting out ahead of an FBI probe that might have exposed whatever banking affairs it was indulging in with BONY and its affiliates.

RNB itself had a long history of involvement with both Russian organized crime figures and with the troubled Russian economy in the years that followed the end of the Cold War. It held accounts, for example, used by Shabtai Kalmanovitch, a "Russian-Israeli entrepreneur" and insider to the world of the Russian-American mob operating from Brighton Beach.[205] Kalmanovitch brought with him, unsurprisingly, ties to the world of intelligence services. During the height of the Cold War, he was tied closely to the KGB and Mossad, and like Maxwell appears to have served as a back-channel between them and other intelligence agencies.[206] There have other been allegations that Kalmanovitch had served as a point of contact for Jonathan Pollard, the infamous Israeli spy operating within the US intelligence community.[207]

At the beginning of 1992, the US Federal Reserve began an ambitious project of injecting money into Russia by selling dollars to its leading banks. RNB was the Fed's principal agent in these transactions, which saw RNB obtaining dollars from the central bank, which would then be transported by courier to Russia to be sold. The sum of these dollars was soon in excess of $80 billion, far outstripping "the value of all the Russian rubles in circulation."[208] While the ostensible goal of the Federal Reserve was to preserve the beleaguered Russian banking industry, the flood of dollars was a boon for organized crime. Many of the banks that were on the receiving end of the trade were controlled by criminal enterprises, and not an insignificant portion of these funds was being funnelled into offshore zones by laundering webs like the one operated by BONY.

With the dollar flows leaving Russia at a rapid rate, and the general problem of large-scale capital flight, Russia was teetering on the brink of crisis by 1998. These factors were compounded by the Asian financial crisis, which led to a global dip in the supply of oil and other mineral resources and caused a decline in exports. At its climax, Russia faced a run on its banks. In response, the IMF put in motion an emergency "stabilization credit" for Russia valued at $11.2 billion, $4.8 billion of which was made immediately available to the country's central bank.[209] Yet within a month, the Russian financial crisis had set in, and RNB was alerting authorities about suspicious transactions. The reason for the former, and almost certainly the latter, was that the IMF credits had vanished into the financial void.

Following a forensic analysis of the complex webs of transfers involving the $4.8 billion credit, Russia's prosecutor-general, Yury Skuratov, announced that the lion's share of the funds had gone to commercial banks, who then used their correspondent banking relations to siphon the money back out of Russia.[210] Aiding and abetting this theft, he continued, was BONY. Meanwhile, in Czechoslovakia, investigators began tracing transactions between BONY and Komercini Bank. They were "certain these transactions were a part of the money-laundering operation of IMF funds."[211] Soon, independent investigations into BONY and the IMF credit were underway in financial centers from London to Zurich.

BONY was not the lone recipient of the money. The Russian Ministry of Finance charged that portions of the money had flowed into an account held at RNB that was used to "sell currency on foreign exchanges."[212] According to the Russian paper Novaya Gazeta, Edmond Safra was spooked by the financial crisis that had ensued, and began turning evidence over to the FBI. This timing here certainly overlaps with that of RNB blowing the whistle on BONY, while Safra was reported to have had "periodic conversations with FBI representatives [that] lasted almost a year."[213]

Oleg Lurye, a journalist for Novaya Gazeta, subsequently reported that in fall of 1999, Safra was visited at his French estate by the Russian oligarch Boris Berezovsky, one of Russia's wealthiest individuals and a part of Boris Yeltsin's inner circle. Numerous press reports show that, by August of that year, the probes into BONY's money laundering had ensnared Berezovsky.[214] According to Lurye, Safra and

Berezovsky had an increasingly angry conversation that lasted several hours, “after which Safra fled in panic to his heavily fortified Monte Carlo residence.”[215]

Several months later, at the beginning December, Safra was dead. The official cause of death was suffocation from a fire in his Monte Carlo estate that had been caused by exceedingly bizarre circumstances. His bodyguards – many of whom were veterans of Mossad – were not present that night.[216] In early reports, “two hooded intruders” entered Safra’s residences. They were fought off by one of Safra’s nurses (and former Green Beret), Ted Maher, although he was stabbed in the process.[217] Maher then ushered Safra and his fellow nurse, Vivian Torrente, into a secure room, and proceeded to attempt to alert the authorities through, oddly enough, the only means at his disposal: starting a fire in a waste basket to set off the fire alarms. For whatever reason, it took the fire department and the police two and half hours to arrive on the scene. By the time they arrived, Safra and Torrente had already succumbed to the fire’s fumes.[218]

The story very quickly changed. In the end, the court found that Maher himself was to blame. As the story goes, the military veteran had hoped to impress Safra by staging the attack and setting the fire. To make it seem more realistic, he had stabbed himself. Once in court, stories swirled that Maher was troubled and that his behavior had become increasingly erratic and lawyers speculated this was linked to a family history of schizophrenia. “[W]e can exclude with certainty all [conjectures] of any international conspiracy,” declared the Safra family attorney, before adding that “The fact that Maher is unstable became apparent to us only after the accident.”[219] Others were not convinced. According to Vanity Fair journalist Dominick Dunne, an associate of the Safra family told him that “Among friends, we avoid talking about it. It might not be what it is.”220

What really happened that night in Monaco will likely never be known. However, Safra’s fate closely parallels the murky death of his friend, Robert Maxwell, nearly a decade prior, amid a similar whirlwind of strange transactions and Eastern European intrigue. While other giants moving in these same shadows – like Bruce Rappaport – managed to slip away, the deaths of Maxwell and Safra are something like bookends to the 1990s, the decade when the US and its allies emerged victorious from the Cold War and everything belonging to the defeated went up for sale.

Endnotes

Endnotes

1Gordon Thomas and Martin Dillon, Robert Maxwell, Israel’s Superspy: The Life and Murder of a Media Mogul, 1st Carroll & Graf ed (New York: Carroll and Graf, 2002), 40-41, https://archive.org/details/robert-maxwell-israels-superspy-thomas-dillon-2002.

2David Talbot, The Devil’s Chessboard: Allen Dulles, the CIA, and the Rise of America’s Secret Government, ePub (New York, NY: Harper Perennial, 2016), 12.

3Stephen Buranyi, “Is the Staggeringly Profitable Business of Scientific Publishing Bad for Science?,” The Guardian, June 27, 2017, https://www.theguardian.com/science/2017/jun/27/profitable-business-scientific-publishing-bad-for-science.

4Thomas and Dillon, Israel’s Superspy, 41.

5Thomas and Dillon, Israel’s Superspy, 51.

6Leslie Wayne, “Socialist Millionaire: Robert Maxwell; Fighting to Be the Tabloid King on London’s Fleet Street,” New York Times, November 11, 1984, https://www.nytimes.com/1984/11/11/business/socialist-millionaire-robert-maxwell-fighting-be-tabloid-king-london-s-fleet.html.

7Dennis Barker and Christopher Sylvester, “Robert Maxwell Obituary,” The Guardian, November 6, 1991, https://www.theguardian.com/politics/1991/nov/06/obituaries.

8Thomas and Dillon, Israel’s Superspy, 41.

9Robert Friedman, “The Most Dangerous Mobster in the World,” The Village Voice, May 26, 1998, https://www.villagevoice.com/1998/05/26/the-most-dangerous-mobster-in-the-world/.

10Thomas and Dillon, Israel’s Superspy, 37.

11Barker and Sylvester, “Maxwell Obituary.”

12“Paper Breaks Taboo on Shamir, Nazi Link : Jerusalem Post Cites Stern Gang Past, Hits Stance on Peace Now,” Los Angeles Times, March 7, 1989, https://www.latimes.com/archives/la-xpm-1989-03-07-mn-330-story.html; “Yitzhak Shamir: The Well-Liked Terrorist,” Consortium News, July 2, 2012, https://consortiumnews.com/2012/07/02/yitzhak-shamir-the-well-liked-terrorist/.

13Thomas and Dillon, Israel’s Superspy, 35.

14Philip Giraldi, “The Truth of Jonathan Pollard,” The American Conservative, December 2, 2015, https://www.theamericanconservative.com/articles/the-truth-of-jonathan-pollard/.

15Thomas and Dillon, Israel’s Superspy, 54.

16Thomas and Dillon, Israel’s Superspy, 58.

17Thomas and Dillon, Israel’s Superspy, 60.

18Thomas and Dillon, Israel’s Superspy, 63.

19Thomas and Dillon, Israel’s Superspy, 65; Richard L. Fricker, “The INSLAW Octopus,” Wired, January 1, 1993, https://www.wired.com/1993/01/inslaw/.

20IThomas and Dillon, Israel’s Superspy, 65

21Emma North-Best, “The Undying Octopus: FBI and the PROMIS Affair Part 1,” MuckRock, May 16, 2017, https://www.muckrock.com/news/archives/2017/may/16/FBI-promis-part-1/.

22Gordon Thomas, Gideon’s Spies: The Secret History of the Mossad, 4th ed (New York: Thomas Dunne, 2007), 197-98, https://archive.org/details/gideonsspiessecr00thom.

23Thomas and Dillon, Israel’s Superspy, 67.

24Fricker, “The INSLAW Octopus.”

25Fricker, “The INSLAW Octopus.”

26“INSLAW’S Analysis and Rebuttal of the BUA Report,” https://cdn.preterhuman.net/texts/law/rebuttal.txt.

27Fricker, “The INSLAW Octopus.”

28Thomas and Dillon, Israel’s Superspy, 68.

29Alison Leigh Cowan, “Wall Street; Israeli Stocks’ Post-Shamir Rally,” New York Times, July 19, 1992, https://www.nytimes.com/1992/07/19/business/wall-street-israeli-stocks-post-shamirrally.html.

30Thomas and Dillon, Israel’s Superspy, 36-7.
31Thomas and Dillon, Israel’s Superspy, 36-7.
32Thomas and Dillon, Israel’s Superspy, 81.

33Eitay Mack, “Forget Trump: Israel’s Sordid History of Supporting Dictatorships,” 972 Magazine, August 27, 2017, https://www.972mag.com/forget-trump-israels-sordid-history-of-supporting-dictatorships/.
34Thomas and Dillon, Israel’s Superspy, 92.
35Thomas and Dillon, Israel’s Superspy, 90.
36Thomas and Dillon, Israel’s Superspy, 92.
37Thomas and Dillon, Israel’s Superspy, 54-55.
38“Letter to the Director of the FBI, SUBJECT: Robert Maxwell,” FBI Documents obtained by INSLAW through FOIA, p. 13-15, https://unlimitedhangout.com/wp-content/uploads/2022/05/FBIInvestigationMaxwellPROMISSales.pdf.
39“Letter to CIA Director William Casey,” Pergamon International Information Corporation, September 6, 1983, https://www.cia.gov/readingroom/docs/CIA-RDP85B01152R000600710072-7.pdf.
40Emma North-Best, “Sir Robert Maxwell’s FBI File Is Getting More Classified by the Minute,” MuckRock, June 28, 2017, https://www.muckrock.com/news/archives/2017/jun/28/sir-robert-maxwells-fbi-PROMIS/.
41North-Best, “Sir Robert Maxwell’s FBI File.”
42Thomas and Dillon, Israel’s Superspy, 96.
43North-Best, “Sir Robert Maxwell’s FBI File.”
44“Christine Maxwell Resume,” https://web.archive.org/web/20200205024502/https://personal.utdallas.edu/~cym110030/Christine_Maxwell-CV_2013Feb.pdf.
45Mary Sagi-Maydan and Yehoshua Sagi, “Comfortable in Her Skin,” Haaretz, February 13, 2002, https://www.haaretz.com/2002-02-13/ty-article/comfortable-in-her-skin/0000017f-f6fb-d5bd-a17f-f6fb5de60000.
46Emma North-Best, “Memo Shows the CIA Was Offered PROMIS Software in 1981,” Muck-Rock, December 18, 2018, https://www.muckrock.com/news/archives/2018/dec/18/promis-81-memo/.
47Cheri Seymour, The Last Circle: Danny Casolaro’s Investigation into the Octopus and the PROMIS Software Scandal, 1st ed (Walterville, OR: TrineDay, 2010), 38, 41.
48Seymour, Last Circle, 38-39.
49Aaron Kesel, “Octopus PROMIS: The Conspiracy Against INSLAW Software, And The Murders To Cover Up A Scandal Bigger Than Watergate,” Activist Post, September 30, 2019, https://www.activistpost.com/2019/09/octopus-promis-the-conspiracy-against-inslaw-software-and-the-murders-to-cover-up-a-scandal-bigger-than-watergate.html.
50Kesel, “Promise.”
51Fricker, “The INSLAW Octopus.”
52Scott Horton, “‘Main Core’: The Last Round-Up: Sidney Blumenthal on the Origins of the Republican Party, the Fallout from Clinton’s Emails, and His New Biography of Abraham Lincoln,” Harper’s Magazine, May 21, 2008, https://harpers.org/2008/05/main-core-the-last-round-up/.
53Fricker, “The INSLAW Octopus.”
54“Context of ‘1980s: Oliver North Uses PROMIS Software to Track Dissidents,’” History Commons, https://web.archive.org/web/20170626063208/www.historycommons.org/context.jsp?item=northpromis80.
55Horton, “‘Main Core’: The Last Round-Up.”
56Tim Shorrock, “Exposing Bush’s Historic Abuse of Power,” Salon, July 23, 2008, https://www.salon.com/2008/07/23/new_churchcomm/.
57Shorrock, “Exposing.”
58Shorrock, “Exposing.”

59Whitney Webb, "The CIA, Mossad and "Epstein Network" Are Exploiting Mass Shootings," MintPress News, September 6, 2019, https://www.mintpressnews.com/cia-israel-mossad-jeffrey-epstein-orwellian-nightmare/261692/.
60Webb, "The CIA."
61Webb, "The CIA."

62Seymour, Last Circle, 52.
63Elliot L. Richardson, "Letter to Kenneth Starr," February 7, 1995, https://www.archives.gov/files/research/kavanaugh/releases/docid-70105136.pdf.
64Peter Truell and Larry Gurwin, False Profits: The Inside Story of BCCI, the World's Most Corrupt Financial Empire (Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1992), 40.
65James R. Norman, The Oil Card: Global Economic Warfare in the 21st Century, 1st ed (Oregon: Trine Day, 2008), 101.
66Michael C. Ruppert, Crossing the Rubicon: The Decline of the American Empire at the End of the Age of Oil (Gabriola, BC: New Society Publishers, 2004), 172.
67James Norman, "Fostergate," Document 3, Media Bypass Magazine, August 1995, https://archive.org/details/VinceFoster-NSA-Banking-Transactions-Spying
68Norman, "Fostergate," Document 3.
69Richardson, "Letter to Starr."
70Richardson, "Letter to Starr."
71Richardson, "Letter to Starr."
72Seymour, Last Circle, 272.
73Richardson, "Letter to Starr."
74Emma North-Best, "Recently Released Evidence Shows FBI May Have Investigated Danny Casolaro's Death Through 2017," MuckRock, May 20, 2018, https://www.muckrock.com/news/archives/2018/may/20/casolaro-update/.
75Richardson, "Letter to Starr."
76Normal, The Oil Card, 101.
77Norman, "Fostergate," Document 1, 6.
78Norman, "Fostergate," Document 28.
79"2 Military Chiefs Join Wackenhut," Fort Lauderdale News, November 5, 1971.
80"E-Systems Inc. History," Funding Universe, http://www.fundinguniverse.com/company-histories/e-systems-inc-history/.
81"E-Systems Inc. History"
82John Mintz, "The Secret's Out: Covert E-Systems Inc. Covets Commercial Sales," Washington Post, October 24, 1994, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1994/10/24/the-secrets-out-covert-e-systems-inc-covets-commercial-sales/3deadc17-4bd2-41bd-b607-9fa493458fb8/.
83Mintz, "The Secret's Out."
84Mintz, "The Secret's Out." On Air Asia and the CIA, see Alan Axelrod, Mercenaries: A Guide to Private Armies and Private Military Companies (SAGE Publications, 2013), 142-43.
85"CIA front company sold for less than network worth," Des Moines Register, July 13, 1977.
86Peter Dale Scott and Jonathan Marshall, Cocaine Politics: Drugs, Armies, and the CIA in Central America (University of California Press), 37-8.
87Scott and Marshall, Cocaine Politics, 38.
88Scott and Marshall, Cocaine Politics, 88.
89Thomas J. Farer, Transnational Crime in the America (Routledge, 1999), 195.
90Jim Fuquay, "Fort Worth group tried to buy planes for Libya," Fort Worth Star-Telegram, December 7, 1980.
91Fuquay, "Fort Worth group tied to buy planes for Libya."

92Report of the Congressional Committees Investigating the Iran-Contra Affair: Depositions, Appendix B, Volume 3, One Hundredth Congress, First Session, 1988, 176, https://www.google.com/books/edition/Report_of_the_Congressional_Committees_I/u1_-pOKeFe8C.
93Geoff Goodall, "Warbirds Directory, Version 6: Lockheed," http://www.goodall.com.au/warbirds-directory-v6/lockheed.pdf.
94In 1993, T & G sold two aircraft to a Mexican aviation company called Aero Postal, which was subsequently discovered to have been flying cocaine into the US on behalf of the "Tijuana-based cartel of the Arellano Felix Family." T & G's sale to Aero Postal had been "financed by a Mexican bank, which was assured of repayment by the Export-Import Bank of the United States." These planes had first been acquired by the Arizona aviation company from Valley National Bank of Arizona, a firm that was also providing loans to Charles Keating's American Continental Corporation. Ari Ben-Menashe alleges that he had been instructed on behalf of his Israeli intelligence handlers to deposit $4 million into an account at Valley National Bank belonging to Earl Brian, as part of the October Surprise pay-offs. Ben-Menashe notes that he suspected that the source of these funds was "drug profit money from Central America."
For T & G sale to Aero Postal, see "Arizona Firm Sold Military Plane to Cartel-Linked Carrier," San Diego Source, April 15, 1998.
On T & G, Aero Postal and Valley National Bank, see Review of the U.S. Forest Service Firefighting Aircraft Program Hearing Before the Subcommittee on Specialty Crops and Natural Resources of the Committee on Agriculture, House of Representatives, One Hundred Third Congress, First Session, August 5, 1993, 74, https://www.google.com/books/edition/Review_of_the_U_S_Forest_Service_Firefig/_a0eAAAAMAAJ.
On Valley National Bank and Charles Keating, see Investigation of Lincoln Savings & Loan Association, Hearings Before the Committee on Banking, Finance, and Urban Affairs, House of Representatives, One Hundred First Congress, First Session, 781, https://www.google.com/books/edition/Investigation_of_Lincoln_Savings_Loan_As/vSyjyvbmeqMC.
On Ari Ben-Menashe's allegations, see Ari Ben-Menashe, Profits of War: Inside the US-Israeli Arms Network (Sheridan Square Press, 1992), 77.
Del E. Webb, the organized crime-linked Arizona developer who shaped Las Vegas, had close ties to Valley National Bank, and had even sat on the bank's board of directors. Judith Nies, Unreal City: Las Vegas, Black Mesa, and the Fate of the West (Public Affairs, 2014), 15.
As discussed in chapter 8, a former Webb employee, Leonard Lavoie, had set up a company called Systems Marketing that leased a Beechcraft King Air that ended up in the hands of Barry Seal.
95On the transfers between Ransom's group and Ford & Vlahos, see Goodal, "Warbirds Directory." On John Ford and T & G Aviation, see "Ford & Vlahos v. ITT Commercial Finance Corp," Court of Appeals, First District, Division 4, California, December 20, 1993, https://caselaw.findlaw.com/ca-court-of-appeal/1848036.html; and "Gary R, Eitel V. Roy D. Reagan (Declaration)," US District Court of Oregon, https://en.wikisource.org/wiki/Eitel_vs_Reagan_(declaration).
96"Gary R. Eitel V. Roy D. Reagan (Declaration)."
97On the transfers to Aboitiz concernse, see Goodall, "Warbirds Directory". On the Aboitiz family and Marcos, see Albert F. Celoza, Ferdinand Marcos and the Philippines: The Political Economy of Authoritarianism (Praeger, 1997), 96.
98"Aerial Drug Smuggling Broken," Washington Post, June 30, 1994, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1994/06/30/aerial-drug-smuggling-broken/49b0356c-6296-4c7a-b107-86af5f5dc299/.
99Goodall, "Warbirds Directory."
100"Hunts reportedly finish sale of Bache Holdings," Associated Press, October 23, 1980. Tim Carrington, The Year They Sold Wall Street (Houghton Mifflin Company, 1985), 170.
101"Declassified State Department Cable," US Department of State, July, 1977, https://archive.org/details/StateDeptcable1977-162169.
102Seymour, Last Circle, 71; For Maheu and RFK, see Lisa Pease, A Lie Too Big to Fail: The Real History of the Assassination of Robert F. Kennedy, Kindle (Feral House, 2018).

103Seymour, Last Circle, 95-6.
104Seymour, Last Circle, 74-5.
105Seymour, Last Circle, 71.
106Seymour, Last Circle, 349.
107Seymour, Last Circle, 349.
108Seymour, Last Circle, 348.
109Seymour, Last Circle, 204.
110Seymour, Last Circle, 105.
111Seymour, Last Circle, 307.
112Seymour, Last Circle, 380.
113Seymour, Last Circle, 380.

114David Wilkison, "Journalist Investigating Bank Was Second To Die," AP News, August 15, 1991, https://apnews.com/article/e2fc70d3fe4808d7e34529c7173eeee7.
115Seymour, Last Circle, 41.
116Seymour, Last Circle, 204.
117Seymour, Last Circle, 12.
118Seymour, Last Circle, 6.
119Seymour, Last Circle, 6; United States v. Abbell, US District Court for the Southern District of Florida, April 3, 1997, https://law.justia.com/cases/federal/district-courts/FSupp/963/1178/1645124/.
120Emma North-Best, "The Danny Casolaro Primer: 13 Reasons to Doubt the Official Narrative Surrounding His Death," MuckRock, March 15, 2018, https://www.muckrock.com/news/archives/2018/mar/15/danny-casolaro-primer/.
121"Correspondence between John Dwyer and Charles Work," March 1994, https://www.mintpressnews.com/wp-content/uploads/2019/08/Letters-Casolaro-Death.pdf.
122Seymour, Last Circle, 58.
123Karen Yurconic, "Army Secrecy Surrounds Standorf Death," The Morning Call, February 6, 1991, https://www.mcall.com/news/mc-xpm-1991-02-07-2786588-story.html.
124Martha M. Hamilton, "Robert Maxwell's Death at Sea Gives Birth to a Big Mystery," Washington Post, December 23, 1991, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1991/12/23/robert-maxwells-death-at-sea-gives-birth-to-a-big-mystery/9f95c17d-fe11-4e45-9b19-50147764bfc2/.
125Keith Schneider, "Plane Crash in Georgia Kills 23, Including Former Senator Tower," New York Times, April 6, 1991, https://www.nytimes.com/1991/04/06/us/plane-crash-in-georgia-kills-23-including-former-senator-tower.html.
126Congressional Hearing On The Attorney General's Refusal To Provide Congressional Access To "Privileged" Inslaw Documents, Subcommittee on Economic and Commercial Law, Committee on the Judiciary, One Hundred First Congress, Second Session, 1990, https://archive.org/details/CongressionalHearingOnTheAttorneyGeneralsRefusalToProvideCongressionalAccessToPr/.
127"Profile: Nicholas Bua," History Commons, https://web.archive.org/web/20210127190739/http://www.historycommons.org/entity.jsp?entity=nicholas_bua_1.
128Joel Sucher, "The Octopus Lives: How Danny Casolaro's 'Suicide' Foreshadowed Our Current Dystopia," CovertAction Magazine, October 10, 2021, https://covertactionmagazine.com/2021/10/10/the-octopus-lives-how-danny-casolaros-suicide-foreshadowed-our-current-dystopia/.
129Norman, "Fostergate," Document 37.
130Energy Research Abstracts, Vol. 5, 1980, 1745, https://books.google.com/books?id=qN-wvAAAAMAAJ.
131Hearings Before the Committee on Finance: The Trade Reform Act of 1973, United States Senate, Ninety Third Congress, Second Session, Vol. 11, parts 2-4, 1974, 1494, https://books.google.com/books/about/The_Trade_Reform_Act_of_1973.html?id=GuPPAAAAMAAJ.

132Per CCC, they were not actually involved with Penn Central directly. Instead, the company was just stuck holding worthless Penn-issued commercial paper that bigger banks (like the Rockefeller-linked First National City Bank of New York) were allowed to cash in at the Federal Reserve following Penn Central's bankruptcy. See Robert U. Ayres,
133Craig R. Waters, "Silicon Steppe," Inc.com, January 1, 1984, https://www.inc.com/magazine/19840101/1407.html.
134Gordon Crovitz, "Pericles, Greece Needs You Back," Wall Street Journal, June 19, 1984, https://archive.org/details/CIA-RDP90-00845R000201300017-4.
135Crovitz, "Pericles, Greece Needs You Back."
136Hearings Before the Committee on Foreign Relations on Nomination of Paul C. Warnke, Ninety-Fifth Congress, First Session, 1977, 187–90, https://www.govinfo.gov/content/pkg/CHRG-95shrg83872O/pdf/CHRG-95shrg83872O.pdf.
137"The Riddle of Armand Hammer," New York Times, November 29, 1981, https://www.nytimes.com/1981/11/29/magazine/the-riddle-of-armand-hammer.html.

138Waters, "Silicon Steppe."
139Frank J. Prial, "Business People," New York Times, January 10, 1979, https://www.nytimes.com/1979/01/10/archives/business-people-exgov-perpich-joins-control-data-johnson-trusjoist.html.
140Prial, "Business People."
141Charles R. Babcock, "Citizen Mondale's Transition Made Him a Conglomerate," Washington Post, November 6, 1983, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1983/11/06/citizen-mondales-transition-made-him-a-conglomerate/dcac9467-8c59-45e7-a786-0a0738959eb2/.
142Email correspondence between the author and Bill Hamilton of Inslaw Inc., May 2022
143Greg Gaut and Marsha Neff, "Red Stars Over Minnesota," Minnesota History, Winter 2009, http://collections.mnhs.org/mnhistorymagazine/articles/61/v61i08p346-359.pdf.
144Gaut and Neff, "Red Stars."
145Gaut and Neff, "Red Stars."
146David Remnick, "In U.S., Gorbachev Tried to Sell a Dream," Washington Post, June 6, 1990, https://www.washingtonpost.com/archive/politics/1990/06/06/in-us-gorbachev-tried-to-sell-a-dream/a1e19e21-3e21-4241-ae67-17a47d763598/.
147Thomas and Dillon, Israel's Superspy, 84-5.
148Thomas and Dillon, Israel's Superspy, 83.
149Thomas and Dillon, Israel's Superspy, 160.
150Thomas and Dillon, Israel's Superspy, 161.
151Thomas and Dillon, Israel's Superspy, 161.
152Thomas and Dillon, Israel's Superspy, 162-63.
153Thomas and Dillon, Israel's Superspy, 163.
154Thomas and Dillon, Israel's Superspy, 163-64.
155Thomas and Dillon, Israel's Superspy, 163.
156"WASHINGTON TALK: Guest List; Early Risers Get Eggs, Bacon and Tower," New York Times, May 19, 1989, https://www.nytimes.com/1989/05/19/us/washington-talk-guest-list-early-risersget-eggs-bacon-and-tower.html.
157Thomas and Dillon, Israel's Superspy, 170.
158Thomas and Dillon, Israel's Superspy, 170.
159Thomas and Dillon, Israel's Superspy, 172-73.
160Thomas and Dillon, Israel's Superspy, 173.
161Thomas and Dillon, Israel's Superspy, 173.
162Tom Bower, Maxwell: The Final Verdict (London: HarperCollins, 1995), 373.
163Bower, Maxwell, 373.

164Claire Sterling, Thieves' World: The Threat of the New Global Network of Organized Crime (New York: Simon & Shuster, 1994), 175.
165Sterling, Thieves' World, 175.
166Sterling, Thieves' World, 195-96. Wanta's confederates in gold-selling and other fraudulent activities tied to speculation on the troubled Russian ruble included Jack Tremonti, the owner of a company registered in Oklahoma called Global Tactical Solutions, and his close associate Martin Gulewicz. Both individuals had ties to Detroit organized crime circles, and Gulewicz had been indicted for drug trafficking (Sterling, Thieves World, 187.) In 1978, Tremonti was described in a Tennessee newspaper as a "Detroit meat dealer" who was doing time in prison for "larceny of interstate meat shipments." This article goes on to describe how representatives of Tremonti were involved in an attempted marijuana trafficking operation that was busted as part of a sting. Reportedly, Tremonti himself was "an informant for the federal government." See Ralph Dawson, "Setup deal told by pot defendant," The Tennessean, April 26, 1978. Wanta, Tremonti, and Gulewicz were joined by Michael Preisfreund, a banker and currency trader from Finland whose family had been longtime suppliers for the Russian military. Preisfreund "knew most of the powerful men in old Russia and had access to the highest levels of Russian governmental and military personnel." Sterling, Thieves' World, 186.

167Sterling, Thieves' World, 195.
168ATLAS Dossier, Translation provided by Institute for the Study of Globalization and Covert Politics, 10, https://isgp-studies.com/belgium-la-nebuleuse-atlas-dossier-and-dutroux-x-files.
169Sterling, Thieves' World, document insert. According to a 1999 lawsuit, Wanta was using New Republic in the late 1980s to "make payments from the corporate accounts for his own benefit" and to "avoid collection of outstanding tax warrants." State of Wisconsin v. Leo F. Wanta, No. 98-0318-CR, February 4, 1999, https://caselaw.findlaw.com/wi-court-of-appeals/1309687.html.
170ATLAS Dossier, 11. The dossier names one of the Russians involved as Mike Brandwain, head of an Antwerp-based firm called M & S International. M & S, according to Robert Friedman, was part of "a heroin ring of French Connection proportions" that moved the drug from Thailand to the US by way of Europe. This ring was operated by the Russian-American gangster Boris Nayfeld, who by the early 1990s was a frontman for the Ukrainian mob boss Marat Balagula. Notably, one of Balagula's more notorious criminal conspiracies involved "import[ing] gasoline to Sierra Leone, which was brokered through the Spanish office of Marc Rich by Rabbi Ronald Greenwald." Robert I. Friedman, Red Mafiya: How the Russian Mob Has Invaded America, ePub (Warner Books, Inc, 2000), 65, 103.
171Dun & Bradstreet, D&B Who Owns Whom (Gap Books, 1989), 41.
172Thomas., Robert Maxwell, p. 172-173
173Andrew Cockburn and Leslie Cockburn, One Point Safe. Anchor Books, 1997, 1st Anchor Books ed (New York: Anchor Books, 1997), 108.
174Thomas and Dillon, Israel's Superspy, 172-73.
175S.C. Gwynne and Larry Gurwin, "The Russian Connection," TIME, Vol. 148, No. 3, July 8, 1996, 35.
176Andrew Cockburn and Cockburn, One Point Safe, 1st Anchor Books ed (New York: Anchor Books, 1997), 106.
177"Rich Worked with Russian Mafia?" Swissinfo, June 13, 2002, https://www.swissinfo.ch/ger/arbeitete-rich-mit-russen-mafia-/2764916,
178Bruce Raphael, King Energy: The Rise and Fall of an Industrial Empire Gone Awry (iUniverse, 2000), 537-38.
179"Zug lawyer involved in criminal proceedings," Zentralplus, June 18, 2014, Zuger Anwalt in Strafverfahren verwickelt zentralplus.
180"Zug lawyer involved in criminal proceedings."
181Thomas Scheuer, "The Millions of the Mielke Advocate," Focus Magazine, No. 43, 1999, https://www.focus.de/politik/deutschland/die-millionen-des-mielke-advokaten-vereinigung-skriminalitaet_id_1927402.html.

182“Transfer of United States High Technology to the Soviet Union and Soviet Bloc Nations: Hearings Before the Permanent Subcommittee on Investigations of the Committee on Government Affairs, US Senate United States Senate Committee on Government Affairs, Ninety- Seventh Congress, Second Session, 1982, 413, https://www.google.com/books/edition/Transfer_of_United_States_High_Technolog/k8SvVaSpa34C.

183“Rich Linked to Money Laundering.”

184“Rich Linked to Money Laundering.”

185Loutchansky v. Times Newspapers Ltd. & Ors. England and Wales High Court (Queen’s Bench Division), December 12, 2002, https://www.casemine.com/judgement/uk/5a8ff7b-860d03e7f57eb175b

186Loutchansky v. Times Newspapers.

187Report of the Procura della Repubblica di Bologna: Direzione distrettuale antimafia, Archived at the Transborder Corruption Archive, p. 109, https://tbcarchives.org/wp-content/uploads/spider-web2.pdf.

188Friedman, Red Mafiya, 252, 245.

189Friedman, Red Mafiya, 244, 240.

190Alan Block and Constance Weaver, All is Clouded by Desire: Global Banking, Money Laundering, and International Organized Crime (Praeger, 2004), 166.

191“In Re Bank of New York Derivative Litigation,” United States District Court Southern District of New York, 22, https://www.mail-archive.com/ctrl@listserv.aol.com/msg65701/BONY-AMC.pdf.

192“In Re Bank of New York,” 22.

193Block and Weaver, All is Clouded by Desire, 97-99.

194Block and Weaver, All is Clouded By Desire, 100-5.

195“In Re Bank of New York,” 22.

196“In Re Bank of New York,” 22.

197Block and Weaver, All is Clouded by Desire, 131.

198“In Re Bank of New York,” 24.

199“In Re Bank of New York,” 24.

200“In Re Bank of New York,” 23.

201Block and Weaver, All is Clouded by Desire, 190.

202Block and Weaver, All is Clouded by Desire, ch. 8.

203Russian Money Laundering: Hearing Before the Committee on Banking and Financial Services, US House of Representatives, One Hundred Sixth Congress, First Session, September 21, 22, 1999, 414.

204Block and Weaver, All is Clouded by Desire, 166.

205Friedman, Red Mafiya, 65, 67.

206Robert I. Friedman, “The Fixer,” New York Magazine, June 19, 1995, 63-64. Friedman quotes one individual familiar with Kalmanovitch as saying that “Wherever you looked in the world, Kalmanovitch knew the spookiest, the dirtiest, the weirdest people. Paraguayan ex-Nazis, New York mafiosos, South African neo-fascists, US congressmen, CIA agents—spooks of every description.”

207Friedman, “The Fixer,” 64.

208Friedman, Red Mafiya, 206.

209Press Release: IMF Approves Augmentation of Russia Extended Arrangement and Credit under CCFF; Activates GAB. International Monetary Fund, July 20, 1988, https://www.imf.org/en/News/Articles/2015/09/14/01/49/pr9831.

210Natalya Shulyakovskaya, “Skuratov Says IMF Billions Sold on the Sly,” St. Petersburg Times, September 17, 1999.

211Block and Weaver, All is Clouded by Desire, 147.

212“Russiagate, ecco le prove,” La Repubblica, October 6, 1999.

213“Если Касьянов приедет в Швейцарию, его вызовут к следователю?” Novaya Gazeta, July 24, 2000, https://web.archive.org/web/20131202222313/http://old.novayagazeta.ru/data/2000/52/00.html.

214“NY Bank in Money Laundering Inquiry,” The Irish Times, August 20, 1990; “A Mess of Mafia Money – Fact or Fancy?,” Jerusalem Post, Septembr 3, 1999.

215“Newspaper Scandal Over IMF Diversion Expands,” Monitor, Vol. 6, Issue 144, July 25, 2000, https://jamestown.org/program/newspaper-scandal-over-imf-diversion-expands/.
216Dominick Dunne, “Death in Monaco,” Vanity Fair, December, 2000, https://web.archive.org/web/20160301221519/https://www.vanityfair.com/culture/2000/12/dunne200012.
217Dunne, “Death in Monaco.”
218David Kohn, “Murder in Monaco: An American On Trial,” CBS News, July 8, 2003, https://www.cbsnews.com/news/murder-in-monaco-an-american-on-trial/.
219Dunne, “Death in Monaco.”
220Dunne, “Death in Monaco.”

CHAPTER 10

GOVERNMENT BY BLACKMAIL: THE DARK SECRETS OF THE REAGAN ERA

"ROY COULD FIX ANYONE IN THE CITY"

Iran-Contra, PROMIS, BCCI, and related schemes of the Reagan era are clear examples of how the alliance between intelligence networks and organized crime resulted in both national and international business rackets with criminal elements. Such conspiracies largely succeeded thanks to individuals at the highest levels of government, particularly in the Justice Department, who worked to protect these rackets and the bad actors behind them.

Much of the "dirty laundry" of these different criminal enterprises would be mopped up in the early 1990s by none other than William Barr, who started his career at the CIA and served as George H.W. Bush's Attorney General. Barr would play a major role in covering up Iran-Contra, PROMIS, and BCCI, as seen in his pardoning of Iran-Contra criminals, his patronage of the Bua report, and his thwarting of indictments related to BCCI's 1991 collapse, respectively.

Some have explained these specific scandals away, painting them as blights of the Reagan-Bush administrations and treating these intelligence-organized crime rackets as isolated incidents. However, instead, it appears that these intelligence-organized crime networks were so central to the national power structure by the time Reagan took office that the more well-known scandals of the era can be seen as "business as usual" for the period. Yet, lurking beneath Iran-Contra and other scandals that rocked the Reagan administration, there were darker and more nefarious activities that reached the highest levels of power during the same period, but received considerably less media attention.

These other, lesser known scandals and crimes of the era show that, during the reigns of Reagan and Bush Sr., the rot reached all the way to the White House. Key power brokers in this sordid milieu included individuals intimately involved in the world of sex blackmail, who often bragged about their ability to "fix" and "manipulate" any politician or powerful individual they sought to influence, for the benefit of intelligence agencies, organized crime, as well as their own personal gain.

One figure emblematic of this side of Reagan era politics is none other than Roy Cohn, whose ties to sex blackmail, organized crime, and the centers of American political power were already explored in detail in Chapters 2 and 4. By the late 1970s, Roy's "favor bank" system, modeled after the system used by the organized crime-linked Generoso Pope, had led him to grow in both power and influence, especially politically.

For instance, Cohn's birthday party in 1979 was attended by "the important officials of the Democratic, Republican, and Conservative parties, most of the city's major elected officials, a number of congressmen, the Chief Judge of the District Court, and Roy's usuals," who included his close friends Si Newhouse, William Safire, and Donald Trump, among others.1 The party was hosted at the infamous Studio 54, whose owners were Cohn's clients.2 Studio 54 was known for its wild parties, semi-naked performers, and culture of open drug use, with Vanity Fair once describing it as "the giddy epicenter of 70s hedonism, a disco hothouse of beautiful people, endless cocaine, and every kind of sex."3 The politicians, journalists, and celebrities invited to Cohn's exclusive parties, including those at Studio 54, were said to be those who "had open accounts in Cohn's 'favor bank.'"4

Cohn regularly took "judges, elected officials, men and women of money and influence" to the club.5 On at least one occasion, Cohn allegedly used a story about a government official's drug use at Studio 54 for political purposes. The official was Hamilton Jordan, Jimmy Carter's chief of staff, and Cohn was widely believed to be the person who leaked details of Jordan's alleged cocaine use at the club to the New York Times.6

As his political star rose, Cohn's ties to organized crime not only deep-ened, but became more public. He gained a reputation as a lawyer for king-pins of organized crime, counting major mobsters like Tony Salerno of the Genovese crime family and Carmine Galante of the Bonanno crime family among his rolodex of clients from the city's, and nation's, underworld.

Cohn had also developed even more powerful media connections than those he had first gained in his youth. Among Cohn's closest friends during this time was Barbara Walters, to whom Cohn often referred to as his "fiancée" in public, and whom he later introduced to the head of the US Information Agency, Chad Wick, as well as other high rollers in the Reagan White House.7 Yet, Walters was just one of Cohn's powerful friends in the media, a group that also included Abe Rosenthal, executive editor of the New York Times; William Safire, long-time New York Times columnist and New York Magazine contributor; and George Sokolsky of the New York Herald Tribune, NBC, and ABC.8

Cohn was also the attorney and friend of media mogul Rupert Murdoch, and Cohn's role in involving Murdoch in Contra-related propaganda on behalf of the US government was discussed in Chapter 7. Cohn also continued to lean on his life-long friend since high school, Si Newhouse Jr., to exert media influence.9 Newhouse's media empire had also grown in power and influence – it now counted among its assets publications such as Vanity Fair, Vogue, GQ, The New Yorker, and numerous local newspapers throughout the United States, as well as major interests in cable television. New York Magazine later noted that "Cohn used his influence in the early '80s to secure favors for himself and his Mob clients in Newhouse publications."10

Cohn's media confidants, like journalist William Buckley of The National Review and Firing Line, often attacked Cohn's political enemies – particularly long-time Manhattan District Attorney Robert Morgenthau – in their columns, using Cohn as an anonymous source. Buckley – along with Barbara Walters, Alan Dershowitz, and Donald Trump – would later serve as character witnesses for Cohn during his 1986 disbarment hearings and all but Buckley would later draw controversy for their subsequent connections to Jeffrey Epstein.11

With connections like this, it's no wonder that Stanley Friedman – a law partner of Cohn, who was later imprisoned over a kickback and bribery scandal while serving as New York's deputy mayor – told journalist Marie Brenner in 1980 that "Roy could fix anyone in the city."12 Roy Cohn's "favor bank" and his unique position as a liaison between the criminal underworld, the rich and famous, and top media influencers made him a force to be reckoned with. In particular, however, it ensured his success as a major "political fixer" and his power in this regard reached its zenith during Ronald Reagan's 1980 presidential campaign.

In 1979, a year before the election, the New York Daily News reported that Cohn had "emerged as the city's preeminent manipulator. A one-man network of contacts that have reached into City Hall, the mob, the press, the Archdiocese, the disco-jet set, the courts and the backrooms of the Bronx and Brooklyn where judges are made and political contributions are arranged."13

Former Congressman Neil Gallagher later remarked to Cohn's biographer Nicholas Von Hoffman that Cohn "was very important in the whole Reagan setup – look at the number of judges who owed him allegiance through their appointments. Even today you've got people sitting on the federal bench who kid, but they don't kid, that Roy was their rabbi."14

Cohn's involvement in Reagan's 1980 campaign would be critical and, decades later, would also influence the political style and campaigns of Cohn's protégé – Donald Trump. During the 1980 campaign, Cohn would also meet another of his protégés, Roger Stone. Cohn infamously instructed Stone to leave a hefty bribe tucked in a suitcase at the doorstep of the Liberal Party's headquarters during the 1980 campaign, a "dirty trick" that helped Reagan win the state of New York.15 During this campaign, Cohn would also meet Paul Manafort – an associate of Stone's – and introduce both to Donald Trump. Manafort would later serve as Trump's 2016 campaign manager.

Cohn's law partner, Tom Bolan, was also an influential force in the Reagan campaign and later chaired Reagan's transition team in 1980.16 Reagan then named Bolan, whom he considered a friend, as a director of the Overseas Private Investment Corporation, the government's development finance institution. Bolan was also the New York finance co-chairman for the Reagan campaign in both 1980 and 1984. He was also close to others in Cohn's circle, such as William F. Buckley Jr., Donald Trump, and Rupert Murdoch.17 In 1989, roughly three years after Cohn's death, Bolan attended a party on Robert Maxwell's yacht, the Lady Ghislaine, alongside Donald Trump and literary agent Mort Janklow (who represented Ronald Reagan and two of Cohn's closest friends: journalists William Safire and Barbara Walters), among others.18

Furthermore, Bolan, like Cohn, was instrumental in securing federal judgeships for several individuals who would later become influential, including future FBI Director Louis Freeh. Freeh would later be hired by Epstein associate, lawyer and Harvard professor Alan Dershowitz, to "investigate" the Epstein scandal, where he allegedly harassed Epstein victims, and was also involved in the cover-up of the Penn State child molestation and abuse scandal.19 Cohn was also able to get friends of clients appointed as federal judges, including Donald Trump's sister, Maryanne Trump Barry.20 After Barry was appointed as a federal judge, Trump called Cohn to thank him for pulling strings on his sister's behalf.21

Though Cohn was not given a public position in the Reagan administration, he was not merely a "dirty trickster" who worked in the shadows of the Reagan campaigns. In fact, he worked closely with some of the more visible faces of the campaign, including the then-manager of Reagan's 1980 campaign and later CIA director, William Casey. According to Christine Seymour – Cohn's long-time switchboard operator from the late 1960s up until his death in 1986, who listened in on his calls – Casey and Cohn were close friends and, during the 1980 campaign, Casey "called Roy almost daily."22

In the early 1990s, Seymour would attempt to write a book about the calls she overheard working for Cohn. News of the book was published by the New York Post in 1994 in a column by Cindy Adams, who wrote that Seymour "monitored every call in or out, knew everything, everyone, knew where all the bodies were buried." Five months later, Seymour was killed in a suspicious car accident, leaving her book unfinished. When Seymour's collaborator on the book, Jeffrey Schmidt, learnt of Seymour's death and the circumstances surrounding it, "he panicked, took a box of the notebooks [that contained details of Cohn's calls], and burned them."23

Seymour, before her death, had also noted that one of Cohn's other most frequent phone pals and closest friends was Nancy Reagan and she was also one of his clients.24 Reagan, whose influence over her husband was well-known, was so close to Cohn that it was largely his death from AIDS that led her to "encourage her husband to seek more funding for AIDS research."25 Ronald Reagan himself was also a friend of Cohn's and, according to late journalist Robert Parry, "lavished favors on Cohn, including invitations to White House events, personal thank-you notes, and friendly birthday wishes" over the course of his presidency.26

Given that Reagan heavily courted the evangelical right and promoted "family values" as president, the close ties between not only himself, but his inner circle, with Cohn may seem odd. However, Reagan, like Cohn, had deep ties to the same organized-crime factions that were among Cohn's clients and affiliates of the same Mafia figures close to Cohn and his network. One of the men credited as Reagan's mentor was Lew Wasserman, who was long alleged to have close ties to the mob, as noted previously in chapter 1.27 Wasserman, the long-time president of MCA and a well-known Hollywood mogul, is known for not only advancing Reagan's film and television career, but also for supporting his successful push to become president of the Screen Actors Guild, which later helped Reagan launch his political career. In addition, MCA was a major financier of Reagan's successful gubernatorial bid in 1966 and, not long after Reagan became president, his administration controversially shut down a massive Department of Justice (DOJ) probe into MCA's ties to organized crime.28 According to Shawn Swords, a documentary filmmaker who explored Reagan's ties to MCA:

> Ronald Reagan was an opportunist. His whole career was guided by MCA – by Wasserman and [MCA founder] Jules Stein, who bragged that Reagan was malleable, that they could do what they wanted with him.… That thing about Reagan being tough on [organized] crime – that's a fallacy.29

Swords' characterization of this relationship is supported by an unnamed Hollywood source cited in a declassified DOJ document, who called Reagan "a complete slave of MCA who would do their bidding on anything."30

What elements of organized crime were connected to Wasserman? As a young man, Lew Wasserman joined the Mayfield Road Gang, which was run by Moe Dalitz, a close friend of Meyer Lansky who, per the FBI, was a powerful figure in Lansky's criminal enterprise, second only to Lansky himself among members of the Jewish mob.31 As previously mentioned in Chapter 4, Cohn's involvement in the United Dye case revealed that he had been involved with Dalitz's network since at least the early 1960s.

Lew Wasserman would later marry Edith Beckerman, whose father was Dalitz's lawyer.32 As noted in chapter 1, Wasserman's closest friend and lawyer, Sidney Korshak, also had close ties to Dalitz and once partnered with Lansky in the Acapulco Towers Hotel.33 Notably, the magazine New West stated in 1976 that Korshak was the "logical successor to Meyer Lansky."34 Korshak, as a lawyer, fit a niche similar to that occupied by Roy Cohn and gained a reputation as a bridge between organized crime and "respectable" society.35

In addition, the DOJ probe into MCA that the Reagan administration quashed had reportedly been launched after the Justice Department learned that an influential member of the Gambino crime family, Salvatore Pisello, was doing business with the massive entertainment company.36 At that time, the boss of the Gambino crime family, Paul Castellano, was a client of Roy Cohn.37 As noted in the previous chapter, an MCA board member with ties to organized crime and the network behind the Inslaw Affair, Eugene Gianquinto, had bragged that he was responsible for the scuttling of DOJ probe in a wiretapped phone call.

Another figure intimately involved with Reagan's 1980 presidential campaign was Robert Keith Gray, whose activities were discussed in detail in Chapter 5. As previously mentioned, Gray was said to have been a friend of Cohn's, but the exact nature of their relationship is murky. However, Gray, like Cohn, was involved with Reagan's unsuccessful bid for the presidency in 1976 and then, like Cohn, worked closely with Casey during the 1980 campaign. Gray later "boasted of his close relationship with the CIA's William Casey; Gray used to say that before taking on a foreign client, he would clear it with Casey," according to Newsweek.38

Gray would go on to co-chair Reagan's Inauguration Committee and afterwards would return to the PR business, taking on several clients, including Saudi arms dealer Adnan Khashoggi and the Mossad-linked hedge fund manager Marc Rich.39 At the same time, Roy Cohn would also take on Khashoggi as a client. Shortly thereafter, as will be discussed in the next chapter, Jeffrey Epstein would also take on Khashoggi as a client, which coincided with the genesis of the Iran-Contra Affair.

It certainly is an odd coincidence that three men tied in different ways to sexual blackmail would all begin to circle around a man like Khashoggi, who was alleged to have used sex blackmail himself, within the same short span of time. However, it begins to look a bit less like a coincidence when one considers that, by the late 1980s, several organizations tied, not only to key factions of the Reagan administration, but also to aspects of the Iran-Contra Affair, would be tied to child sex abuse, sex trafficking, and sex blackmail.

More overlap in these networks can be seen at a May 2, 1983 "testimonial dinner" hosted by B'nai B'rith's Banking and Finance Lodge at the Grand Hyatt hotel in New York.40 The hotel, at the time, was a project between Donald Trump, Cohn's protégé, and the organized crime-linked Pritzker family discussed in chapter 1. The Trump-Pritzker partnership began to dissolve around 1993 and formally ended in 1996.

This "testimonial dinner" was in Roy Cohn's honor. The dinner's invitation states that it took "special pride" in "this well-deserved public tribute" to Cohn because he has been a "tenacious champion of Israel's right to exist in peace and security and of American economic political support" for Israel as well as his "deep-rooted commitment of purpose on behalf of his fellow man."41 It was also noted that he had received honors from the Jewish National Fund and Federation of Jewish Philanthropies. The latter group, three years later, would merge with the United Jewish Appeal, which was intimately connected to the philanthropic activities of Leslie Wexner and Wexner's mentor Max Fisher at the time (see chapters 13 and 14). The dinner invitation also notes that Cohn has been "a long-time member of [the] Banking and Finance Lodge of B'nai B'rith – continuing a tradition established by his father, Justice Albert Cohn, who was president of the organization's New York-New England district."42

That Albert Cohn was a high-ranking member of B'nai B'rith, i.e. the president of its most influential chapter, has some significance. As early as 1878, the New York Times referred to the B'nai B'rith organization as “one of the most powerful secret organizations in the United States” that “now exercises an immense influence in all matters of common interest to the Jewish community.”43 “To bind its member more closely together,” the article continues, “the seal of secrecy was stamped upon its proceedings, thereby following the example of the Masonic and other secret fraternities.” Though a history of B’nai B’rith is beyond the scope of this book, if indeed – as claimed in this 19th century article – the secret society’s origins were noble, by the 20th century, and definitely by the 1980s, its leadership had become dominated by powerful men with organized crime and/or intelligence connections. An early example would be Albert Cohn, whose ties were detailed in chapter 4, serving as head of B’nai B’rith’s most powerful chapter.

At the time B’nai B’rith was hosting this dinner for Cohn, the organization’s board of overseers included individuals with organized crime connections, such as Edmond Safra and Edgar Bronfman, as well as Leslie Wexner’s mentor Max Fisher. As will be noted in chapter 14, B’nai B’rith played a critical role in the creation of Wexner’s main philanthropic organization, the Wexner Foundation.

What’s perhaps more significant about this dinner are the honorary chairmen – eight close friends of Cohn that populated his inner circle. Some have already been mentioned at length in relation to Cohn, including Donald Trump, Rupert Murdoch, and Stanley Friedman. Others, such as George Steinbrenner were also well-known friends and clients of Cohn. Another, Gerald Schoenfield, was described as a “the most influential figure in the theater business” credited with “reinvigorating” Broadway.44

Another honorary chairman, Maxwell Rabb, had previously been a secretary to president Eisenhower’s cabinet, where he was succeeded by Robert Keith Gray and to whom Rabb left his secretary.45 After leaving the White House, Rabb was involved in a business deal with organized crime-connected investors like Jack Cooper and frontmen for Meyer Lansky.46 He also served on the board of directors of a company founded by Lansky frontman Louis Chesler.47 At the time of the 1983 dinner, Rabb was US ambassador to Italy and was later accused of involvement in aspects of Iran-Contra. He was also described by the New York Times as “a long-time acquaintance” of one of Roy Cohn’s clients at the time – Adnan Khashoggi.48

Aside from these, other chairmen included Edward Regan, who was comptroller of the State of the New York from 1979 to 1993 under Governors Hugh Carey (discussed in chapters 6 and 12) and Mario Cuomo. Regan’s connection to Cohn is troubling, given Regan’s role as state comptroller. Also troubling is Regan’s apparent political ethos.

As noted in his 2014 obituary in the New York Times:

> In 1988, prosecutors investigated Mr. Regan’s fund-raising practices after the disclosure of a memo written by a top aide advocating a policy under which “those who give will get” – suggesting, perhaps, that financial firms that provided the bulk of the comptroller’s campaign contributions would receive state business.49

The last honorary chairmen and intimate of Cohn may be the most significant, at least in the context of this book – Alan C. Greenberg, then chairman of Bear Stearns. As will be detailed in the next chapter, Greenberg played perhaps the most crucial role of all in the early rise of Jeffrey Epstein into the networks of the New York elite.

Other close friends of Cohn could be found on the dinner tribute committee, including Tom Bolan, Cohn’s law partner, and William Safire. Other members of that committee included Charles Allen of Allen & Co.; Ron Perelman, the corporate raider closely tied to Drexel Burnham Lambert; Ron Lauder, of the Estee Lauder fortune then serving as Reagan’s Undersecretary of Defense; representatives of Israel Discount Bank (see chapter 7) and Leumi Bank (see chapter 3) and several sitting Congressmen and Senators, including Strom Thurmond, Jack Kemp, and Arlen Specter.

COVENANT HOUSE AND AMERICARES

In 1968, a Catholic priest named Bruce Ritter asked his superiors for permission to take homeless teenagers, boys and girls, into his home in Manhattan.50 Per Ritter’s account, they agreed and, during a snowstorm in 1969, he sheltered six runaway teenagers by hosting them in his apartment.51 Ritter’s activities would later grow into a large, privately funded agency that still exists today, called Covenant House, which offers a variety of service to homeless and runaway youth.

Roughly two decades after founding the organization, Ritter was accused of having sexual relationships with some of the teenagers and young adults he had taken in, and of spending Covenant House funds on lavish gifts and payments to the vulnerable teenagers he was alleged to have groomed and exploited.52 As a result, Ritter was forced to resign from Covenant House in February 1990.

The main allegation that dogged Ritter, first published by the New York Post, related to claims that Ritter had paid off a male prostitute with Covenant House funds in exchange for sex. Four more young men later spoke to The Village Voice and the New York Times, repeating similar claims and with some alleging that their sexual relationship with Ritter had begun while they had received services through Covenant House.53

One of those alleged victims, Darryl Bassile, was 14 at the time. Bassile later wrote an open letter to Ritter a year after the allegations about the priest's predatory behavior were published in the New York Post. His letter stated: "You were wrong for inflicting your desires on a 14-year-old.… I know that someday you will stand before the one who judges all of us and at that time there will be no more denial, just the truth."54

As the allegations made their way through the press, nearly half of the charity's board resigned in relatively short order. According to the New York Times, the resignations were related, not just to the sex-related allegations, but also to the discovery of "a secretive fund set up by Father Ritter that made loans to two board members, who have since resigned, and to others."55 Notably, Charles M. Sennott, the Post reporter who wrote the first story about Ritter's accusers, would later state that "the secular powers more than the archdiocese or the Franciscans protected him [Ritter]."56

Sennott's report was attacked viciously by columnists in other New York media outlets, powerful politicians including then-Governor of New York Mario Cuomo, and Cardinal John O'Connor. The Archdiocese of New York, now led by O'Connor, intervened to "broker a deal" between Ritter and the Manhattan District Attorney Robert Morgenthau. O'Connor's predecessor, Cardinal Francis Spellman, had been a close friend of Roy Cohn and alleged attendee of the Plaza Hotel "blackmail parties" involving Cohn, Hoover, and Rosenstiel (see Chapters 2 and 4).

Though accusations swirled around Ritter and were the subject of several media reports, he was never charged, as "Manhattan District Attorney Robert Morgenthau said there was not enough evidence of financial misconduct to charge him with a crime."57 Notably, Covenant House decided to hire the "CIA of Wall Street" Kroll Associates, the firm so deeply connected to Thomas Corbally (see chapter 4), to "independently investigate" possible financial wrongdoing.58 Kroll Associates, its longstanding US and Israeli intelligence links and Robert Maxwell's hiring of the firm prior to his 1991 death are discussed in Chapter 15. For now, it is important to note that the intelligence-linked investigative firm has produced "limited hangout" investigations of individuals connected to the networks explored in this book, such as Adnan Khashoggi and Imelda Marcos, and had previously been hired by Drexel Burnham Lambert in an effort to help Michael Milken's case.59

In the case of Covenant House, Kroll Associates claimed that "none of the allegations, when viewed individually, can be proved beyond any question," while also claiming that the "cumulative" evidence against Ritter was "extensive."60 As for Ritter himself, he denied the charges and had told Sennott by phone that he had been "set up" by "organized crime."61

Ritter's claims for being "set up" seem dubious, however, when one considers that his main patron was Robert Macauley, Bush Sr.'s roommate at Yale and a long-time friend of the Bush family.62 According to reports, Macauley was the key figure behind Covenant House's rise and his own interest in "humanitarian aid" coalesced around the time he began his relationship with Ritter.63

Macauley, who first met Ritter in 1977, was described by the New York Times as "instrumental" to Covenant House fundraising after he joined its board and especially after he became its chairman in 1985. Indeed, with Macauley as chair, Covenant House's operating budget grew from $27 million to $90 million and its board came to include powerful individuals including top executives at IBM, Chase

Manhattan Bank, and Bear Stearns.64 Their alliance, among other things, led Macauley and Ritter to be jointly granted an audience with Pope John Paul II in Rome in 1982.65

Macauley was also alleged to have played a major role in courting several "other wealthy or well-connected people," including former government officials, such as William E. Simon – Treasury Secretary under Nixon and Ford – and investment bankers from Salomon Brothers and Bear Stearns, among others.66 Notably, Simon was also connected to Kissinger Associates and Bechtel (see Chapter 7) as well as the Epstein-connected Gouletas real estate family, as he served on the board of the Gouletas family company Tamco (see Chapter 12).

Macauley also introduced Ritter to George H.W. Bush and, through J. Peter Grace, Ritter met Ronald Reagan. Both Bush and Reagan publicly praised Ritter during the Reagan administration, including during the 1984 State of the Union address, which Ritter attended and where Reagan praised Ritter as an "unsung hero."67 Grace, who was not only deeply involved in AmeriCares but also donated heavily to Covenant House, once chaired the board of a reported CIA front named the American Institute of Free Labor Development (AIFLD) and was also the former head of United Fruit/United Brands, which had CIA links during his tenure.68 United Fruit/United Brands would later be led by Eli Black, father of corporate raider and Epstein associate Leon Black, and – after Black's alleged suicide – would be controlled by Leslie Wexner's "mentors" Max Fisher and Alfred Taubman (See Chapters 13 and 14).

Macauley's organization, the AmeriCares Foundation, which was later accused of funnelling money to the Contras in Central America, was one of the main sources of funding for Covenant House. Bruce Ritter himself was also tied to AmeriCares, serving as Vice President of AmeriCares until he was forced to resign from Covenant House.

Despite Macauley's denials that AmeriCares funded the Contras, the Hartford Courant reported in 1991 that AmeriCares "sent more than $291,000 in food and medicine to Nicaragua and $5,750 in cash to [Contra leader Mario] Calero in 1985."69 Its board members, aside from Grace and Macauley, included Trilateral Commission co-founder and National Security Advisor to Carter, Zbigniew Brzezinski, former Republican Senator Gordon J. Humphrey, and George H.W. Bush's brother, Prescott.70 After George H.W. Bush died, AmeriCares stated that he had been "instrumental in founding the health-focused relief and development organization."71 Another AmeriCares board member, who Macauley would later bring to Covenant House, was William E. Simon, the aforementioned former U.S. secretary of the treasury. Simon also ran the Nicaraguan Freedom Fund, which sent aid to the Contras and was also tied to Rev. Sun Myung Moon's Unification Church.72 AmeriCares was also funded by the Unification Church and was deeply connected to the Catholic organization, the Knights of Malta.73 William Simon, Roy Cohn's law partner Tom Bolan, and former CIA director William Casey were also members of this group. At the time, the president of the Knights of Malta's American branch was J. Peter Grace.74

AmeriCares was also known to have connections to U.S. intelligence. As the Hartford Courant noted in 1991: "Knowledgeable former federal officials, many with backgrounds in intelligence work, help AmeriCares maneuver in delicate international political environments." Also suggestive of intelligence connections is the fact that AmeriCares "frequently used" the CIA-linked Southern Air Transport for many of its flights, including flights it made during the Gulf War to Kuwait and to Iran in the early 1990s.75 Southern Air Transport, a few years later, would become intimately involved with Leslie Wexner's The Limited and Jeffrey Epstein (see the end of this chapter and Chapter 17).

Once the Macauley-Ritter alliance was cemented, Covenant House seemed to become enmeshed in similar intelligence-linked networks. For instance, as Covenant House grew into an international organization, its first branch in Central America was opened in Guatemala and was headed by Roberto Alejos Arzu, a CIA asset whose plantation had been used to train the troops used in the CIA's failed "Bay of Pigs" invasion of Cuba.76 Arzu was also an associate of the former U.S.-backed dictator of Nicaragua, Anastasio Somoza, and a member of the Knights of Malta.77 Alejos Arzu also worked directly for AmeriCares and was tied to several Central American paramilitary groups.78

Intelligence community sources cited by Franklin Cover-Up author John DeCamp asserted that the Alejos Arzu-led branch of Covenant House procured children for a pedophile ring based in the United States.79

A few years later, Mi Casa, another US-run charity in Guatemala that George H.W. Bush had personally toured with his wife Barbara in 1994, was accused of rampant pedophilia and child abuse.80

THE SECRETS OF LARRY KING AND CRAIG SPENCE

Bruce Ritter was not the only man accused of preying on minors that would have contacts nestled deep within the national power structure and with institutions involved in Contra financing. Around the same time as Ritter's downfall, a sordid child sex trafficking and abuse network began to be exposed. Centered in Omaha, Nebraska, it is remembered today as the "Franklin Scandal." The man at the center of this scandal was Lawrence "Larry" King, a prominent local Republican activist and lobbyist who ran the Franklin Community Federal Credit Union until it was shut down by federal authorities in November 1988.

According to journalist and author Nick Bryant, the earliest mention of King in the press was 1973, when the Omaha Sun reported that King had served in the Air Force from 1965 to 1969, where he worked as an "information specialist" and handled "top secret" military communications. After an honorable discharge from the Air Force, he began studying for a career in the banking industry. At age 25, he joined a "management training program" at First National Bank in Omaha. Unsatisfied, he quit the bank in August 1970 and, later that year, Larry's father was offered the reins of the faltering Franklin Community Credit Union. His father declined, but suggested the Credit Union hire his son as its manager. The 1973 Omaha Sun article, as cited by Bryant, lauded King for his supposed industriousness and work ethos at Franklin.81

Eventually, and many years before the Credit Union collapsed, King began to use its funds as "his personal, bottomless ATM." His personal wealth greatly increased and King soon began making major political connections, mainly in the Republican Party, which King had joined in 1981.82

King soon founded and later chaired the Nebraska Frederick Douglas Republican Council, which threw a reception honoring King in 1983 for his "service to the Republican party both locally and nationally." He became involved in the National Black Republican Council, where he held several positions, as well as the Planned Parenthood Federation of America, where he served as "Secretary/Treasurer." Author Nick Bryant has noted that King seemed "particularly interested in children" as he also became involved with the child-oriented organizations Camp Fire Girls, the Girls Club, and Head Start during this period.83

By the late 1980s, King was hosting parties attended by major political figures, such as Supreme Court Justice Clarence Thomas as well as Congressmen Jack Kemp (a friend of Cohn's) and Hal Daub. Daub, who represented Nebraska, "had a stint on Franklin's Advisory Board," according to Nick Bryant.84 King also donated to Daub and held a fundraiser for him while also generously donating to Republican Kay Orr's campaign for Nebraska governor. In 1982, King sang the Star Spangled Banner at a National Black Republican Council dinner attended by Ronald and Nancy Reagan and he would go on to sing the national anthem at the 1984 Republican convention in Dallas. King's political connections continued to grow, leading him to form the Council of Minority Americans. A gala hosted by the Council included former President Gerald Ford, Jack Kemp, and Alexander Haig (mentioned throughout Chapter 5) on its "host committee."85

These deep connections to the Republican power base in the 1980s also led King to apparently become involved in the financing of Nicaragua's Contras. Hints of King's ties to Contra financing networks first emerged in a May 1989 article in the Omaha World Herald, which states that: "In the 6 1/2 months since federal authorities closed Franklin, rumors have persisted that money from the credit union somehow found its way to the Nicaraguan contra rebels."86 The possibility that King's fraudulent credit union was covertly funding the Contras was supported by subsequent reporting by the Houston Post's Pete Brewton, who discovered that the CIA, in conjunction with organized crime, had secretly borrowed money from various savings and loans (S&L) institutions to fund covert operations.87 One of those ss, Silverado, had Neil Bush, George H.W. Bush's son, on its board and it had done business with King's organization. Another link between King and the Iran-Contra affair is King's donation of over $25,350 to an organization affiliated with the Reagan administration, Citizens for America, which sponsored speaking trips for Oliver North and Contra leaders.88 The group was said to have been "one of the conservative

Washington-based groups that advised former Lt. Col. Oliver L. North and helped develop a base of citizen support for him."89 Other groups in this orbit included the aforementioned AmeriCares. The then-chairman of the group, Donald Devine, stated that they "supported the Reagan administration's effort to supply the Contras with US military aid," but did not directly "funnel money to the rebels."90

An officer at Citizens for America at the time was David Carmen, who – after leaving the group – ran a public relations firm called Carmen, Carmen & Hugel with his father Gerald, who had also been appointed by Reagan to head the General Services Administration and then appointed to a subsequent ambassadorship, and the former head of covert operations at the Casey-led CIA, Max Hugel.91

A 1989 article from the Omaha World Herald stated that King's donation of $25,350 netted him access to Citizens for America's "founders club."92 Other members of the group's founders club included Ivan Boesky, the insider trader tied to Drexel Burnham Lambert, and the corporate raider T. Boone Pickens. Boesky boasted longstanding ties to Max Fisher, a mentor of Leslie Wexner's.93 Pickens was a major shareholder in Occidental Petroleum, which was run by Armand Hammer and somewhat involved in BCCI's entry into the US financial system (See Chapter 7).94

King made the $25,350 donation in 1987 and also made other "gifts" to the organization. A lawsuit filed against King by the National Credit Union Administration alleged that the large donation had been made with money he had looted from the Franklin Credit Union.95 King's donations to Citizens for America made up roughly half of the approximate $55,000 King spent on political donations in total before Franklin's collapse.96

King's criminal activities extended far beyond the looting of the Credit Union he managed, although it would be the investigation into the Credit Union that would help expose his other acts. In reality, King was a key "pimp" in an "interstate pedophile network" that trafficked mostly vulnerable children, particularly orphans from Boys Town Nebraska, across the United States.97

Hints of this emerged in the New York Times in 1988, which cited Nebraska State Senator Ernie Chambers as having been "told of boys and girls, some of them from foster homes, who had been transported around the country by airplane to provide sexual favors, for which they were rewarded," as part of King's activities.98 The New York Times also cited various law enforcement sources as stating that money-laundering and drugs were also part of the investigations. King's pedophile ring in Omaha allegedly involved many of the city's most powerful men, including Harold Andersen, publisher of the Omaha World Herald and friend of fellow Nebraskan Robert Keith Gray, as well as Omaha Police Chief Robert Wadman.99 Then-Attorney General of Nebraska Robert Spire was also a "friend" of King's who attended King-hosted parties. Spire was later accused of "sitting on" allegations related to King's criminal activities.100

Several of the witnesses critical to the story of the Franklin Scandal – Alisha Owen, Paul Bonacci, Danny King, and Troy Boner – independently told investigators that there were abused in other ways, not just sexually, by Larry King's network. Per their accounts, they were also victims of sadistic physical abuse, which included suffering from whippings, knife wounds, and cigarette burns.101 Some of the witnesses revealed that they had seen other children at King's "parties" and "orgies" who had claimed to have been kidnapped from their homes, some as young as twelve. At least one told of a child whose molestation, torture, and subsequent murder were all filmed by King and a group of adults.102

While King was mainly based in Omaha, he was also active in Washington DC, where he maintained a $5,000 per month residence off of Embassy Row.103 Intimately related to King's DC activities was a man named Craig Spence. Spence had gotten his start as a press assistant for the Governor of Massachusetts before joining ABC News as a Vietnam War correspondent. According to some of his fellow Vietnam correspondents, Spence appeared to have an "inside track on seemingly clandestine information." He later moved to Tokyo, where he forged a business relationship with a Japanese politician named Motoo Shiina.

Shiina, after and during his relationship with Spence, was accused of "passing US military secrets to the Soviets." Notably, Shiina appears to have been a member of the Trilateral Commission, the body founded by David Rockefeller and Zbigniew Brzezinski, which has been accused of pursuing policies that involve the transfer of US technology to China and Russia under the guise of "normalizing" relations and building a "new international economic order."104 In 1991, Shiina co-authored a book published by the Trilateral Commission entitled Global Competition After the Cold War: A Reassessment of Trilateralism with Kurt Biedenkopf and Joseph S. Nye Jr.105 Nye later went on to head the North American branch of the Trilateral Commission.

In the 1980s, after Shiina was accused of passing "military secrets" to the Russians, it was subsequently suggested by a member of Congress that Spence himself may have been involved in this alleged transfer of sensitive technology to China and Russia. Shortly thereafter, Shiina and Spence parted ways bitterly in 1983. Spence later stated that two bank transfers Shiina had sent him had come "into the country illegally from Hong Kong."106 Spence had used the money to purchase a lavish property in the DC area, which would become central to his story.

Once established in DC, Spence became a prominent lobbyist. In the early 1980s, before he parted ways with Motoo Shiina, he described himself as an "international business consultant, party host, registered foreign agent" and a "research journalist."107 His clients included "a number of American multinational companies." Much like Jeffrey Epstein, Spence was often compared to Jay Gatsby, the mysterious, wealthy figure from the well-known Fitzgerald novel The Great Gatsby. A 1982 New York Times article written about Spence said "what most impresses, if not benefits, his clients is his ability to master the social and political chemistry of this city, to make and use important connections and to bring together policy makers, power brokers, and opinion shapers at parties and seminars." It then stated that "there seems to be an inexhaustible demand in Washington for the sort of thing Mr. Spence offers."108

The Times also noted that Spence's "personal phone book and party guest lists constitute a 'Who's Who' in Congress, Government, and journalism" and that Spence was "hired by his clients as much for whom he knows as what he knows." Spence also had a reputation for throwing lavish parties, which the Times described as "glitter[ed] with notables, from ambassadors to television stars, from senators to senior State Department officials."109 "According to Mr. Spence," the Times article continues, "Richard Nixon is a friend. So is [former Attorney General under Nixon] John Mitchell. [CBS journalist] Eric Sevareid is termed 'an old, dear friend.' Senator John Glenn is 'a good friend' and Peter Ustinov [British actor and journalist] is 'an old, old friend.'"110 Notably, Jeffrey Epstein claimed to be friends with John Mitchell while Ustinov wrote for The European newspaper soon after it was founded in 1990 by Robert Maxwell, and where Ghislaine Maxwell also held a position.111 Glenn, who represented Ohio, later flew on Jeffrey Epstein's jet to attend a birthday dinner for one of Ohio's richest political donors, Leslie Wexner.112 Roy Cohn, William Casey, and Roy Cohn's journalist friend William Safire were just some of the other attendees at Spence's festivities. Cohn, it turns out, was another "good friend" of Spence's and Spence had hosted at least one birthday party for Roy Cohn at his DC area home.

It was revealed just seven years after the New York Times published its doting profile of Spence that his "glittery parties for key officials of the Reagan and Bush administrations, media stars, and top military officers" had been bugged in order "to compromise guests." According to the explosive report published by the Washington Times, Spence was linked to a "homosexual prostitution ring" whose clients included "government officials, locally based U.S. military officers, businessmen, lawyers, bankers, congressional aides, media representatives, and other professionals."113 Spence also offered cocaine to his guests as another means of acquiring blackmail.

According to the report, Spence's home "was bugged and had a secret two-way mirror, and … he attempted to ensnare visitors into compromising sexual encounters that he could then use as leverage." One man who spoke to the Washington Times said that Spence sent a limousine to his home, which took him to a party where "several young men tried to become friendly with him." According to John DeCamp, Spence was known to offer his guests young children for sex at his blackmail parties.114 Several other sources cited by the Washington Times, including a Reagan White House official and an Air Force sergeant who had attended Spence-hosted parties, confirmed that Spence's house was filled with recording equipment, which he regularly used to spy on and record guests, and his house also included a two-way mirror that he used for eavesdropping.115

The report also documented Spence's alleged connections to US intelligence, particularly the CIA. According to the Washington Times report, Spence "often boasted that he was working for the CIA and on one occasion said he was going to disappear for awhile 'because he had an important CIA assignment.'" He was also quite paranoid about his alleged work for the agency, as he expressed concern "that the CIA might 'double-cross him' and kill him instead and then make it look like a suicide."116 Not long after the Washington Times report on his activities was published, Spence fell from grace and was later found dead in the Boston Ritz Carlton. His death was ruled a suicide.

The Washington Times report also offers a clue as to what Spence may have done for the CIA, as it cited sources that said Spence had spoken of smuggling cocaine into the US from El Salvador, an operation that he claimed involved US military personnel.117 Given the timing of these comments from Spence, Spence's powerful connections, and the CIA's involvement in the exchange of cocaine for weapons in the Iran-Contra scandal, his comments could have been more than just boasts intended to impress his party guests.

One of the most critical parts of the scandal surrounding Spence, however, was the fact that he had been able to enter the White House late at night during the George H.W. Bush administration with young men whom the Washington Times described as "call boys."118 After his fall from grace, Spence later stated that his contacts within the White House, which allowed him and his "call boys" after-hours access, were "top level" officials and he specifically singled out George H.W. Bush's then-National Security Advisor Donald Gregg.119 Gregg had worked at the CIA since 1951 before he resigned in 1982 to become National Security Advisor to Bush, who was then vice president. Gregg denied Spence's allegations. Prior to resigning from his post at the CIA, Gregg had worked directly under William Casey and, in the late 1970s, had worked alongside a young William Barr in stonewalling the Pike Committee and the Church Committee, which investigated the CIA beginning in 1975.120 Among the things that these committees were tasked with investigating were the CIA's "love traps," or sexual blackmail operations used to lure foreign diplomats to bugged apartments, complete with recording equipment and two-way mirrors.121 Gregg's role in Iran-Contra and other events during the Reagan years are discussed in Chapter 7.

The Washington Times article on this affair, stated that there was an official inquiry into Spence's activities and blackmail. However, it appeared to imply that the Department of Justice official managing the inquiry had a conflict of interest. It states:

> The office of US Attorney General Jay B. Stephens, former deputy White House counsel to President Reagan, is coordinating federal aspects of the inquiry but refused to discuss the investigation or grand jury actions.
>
> Several former White House colleagues of Mr. Stephens are listed among clients of the homosexual prostitution ring, according to the credit card records, and those persons have confirmed that the charges were theirs.
>
> Mr. Stephens' office, after first saying it would cooperate with The Times' inquiry, withdrew the offer late yesterday and also declined to say whether Mr. Stephens would recuse himself from the case because of possible conflict of interest.
>
> At least one highly placed Bush administration official and a wealthy businessman who procured homosexual prostitutes from the escort services operated by the ring are cooperating with the investigation, several sources said.
>
> Among clients who charged homosexual prostitutes services on major credit cards over the past 18 months are Charles K. Dutcher, former associate director of presidential personnel in the Reagan administration, and Paul R. Balach, Labor Secretary Elizabeth Dole's political personnel liaison to the White House."122

Despite the names that surfaced in connection with Spence, including several different White House connections, it seems that – following his fall from grace and death – interest in the case disappeared and was largely memory-holed, not unlike what would follow years later in the Jeffrey Epstein case.

The information contained within the Washington Times reports was subsequently corroborated by Henry Vinson, who operated the "largest gay escort service ever uncovered in DC." Vinson had been significantly involved with Spence in Washington, DC and had received "thousands and thousands of dollars a month" from Spence at his escort service. Vinson claimed that he had been invited by Spence to his home "on numerous occasions" and that Vinson witnessed Spence flaunt his predilection for "cocaine and little boys." "He [Spence] was definitely a pedophile," Vinson would later tell Nick Bryant.123 Spence had also showcased his blackmail equipment to Vinson. Vinson, as quoted in Bryant's Franklin Scandal, stated:

> Spence showed me the hidden, secret recording devices that were scattered throughout his home.… Spence often alluded to the fact that he was connected to the CIA, and it was obvious to me that he was very well connected. There were people at his home who said they were CIA, and at least one or two Secret Service agents – I believe that it was some of the CIA operatives who installed Spence's blackmail equipment. Much of Spence's influence came from the House of Representatives and the Senate, and he told me he was blackmailing Congressmen. I believe that Spence was blackmailing both for the CIA and for his own personal purposes.124

Vinson alleged that former CIA director William Casey was also a "personal friend" of Spence and attended his parties. Vinson additionally alleged that Casey had been one of his patrons, in addition to Spence, and had begun requesting gay escorts from Vinson in 1986. Vinson stated that Casey's "preferred escort was an eighteen-year-old with minimal body hair and a slender swimmer's physique." Vinson asserted that Casey had requested underage escorts, which Vinson declined to provide.125 It would be Vinson's refusal to supply underage escorts to Craig Spence that would bring about his downfall and subsequent arrest.126

Vinson also told Nick Bryant that Spence and Larry King were "partners" and "hooked up with the CIA," stating specifically that "King and Spence were in business together, and their business was pedophilic blackmail." "They were transporting children all over the country. They would arrange for children to be flown into Washington, DC and also arrange for influential people in DC to be flown out to the Midwest and meet these kids."

Paul Rodriguez, one of the Washington Times journalists who had helped expose Spence, also later told Nick Bryant that Spence and King had been partners, stating "I was told by several prostitutes along with law enforcement that there were connections between Craig Spence and Larry King. The allegations were that Spence and King hosted parties and were involved in a variety of nefarious activities: the allegations included Spence and King hosting blackmail sex parties that included minors and illegal drug use."

Bryant also corroborated the Spence-King connection with Rusty Nelson and Paul Bonacci, who had both met Spence through King on different occasions.127

Per Vinson, Larry King had confided in him that he had clients who liked to torture and even kill children: "King said they had clients who actually liked having sex with kids as they tortured or killed the kid. I found that totally unbelievable." After Vinson said this to Nick Bryant, he asked Bryant later on in the interview if King's disclosure had indeed been true.128 He was unaware at the time that other evidence, including witness testimony, had suggested that it was.

FROM OMAHA TO COLUMBUS: EXECUTIVE JET AVIATION

Larry King, before the Franklin Credit Union and related scandals completely unraveled, made extensive use of an airline called Executive Jet Aviation (EJA). King appears in the July 1987 issue of Jet magazine, where he was being congratulated personally by EJA executives Joseph B. Campbell and Skip Hockman "for being the passenger aboard the EJA jet that flew the company's 1 millionth mile of service" and was even "presented a model of the aircraft" on which he had flown. Jet also described King as being "a frequent user of EJA's service."129 When EJA was later roped into a Congressional inquiry, accusations of the airline's alleged involvement in procuring girls for clients made their way into the questioning of company executives, as did allegations of the girls' exploitation for the purposes of blackmail.130

EJA was founded as Executive Jet Airways in 1964 by Brig. Gen. Olbert "Dick" Fearing Lassiter, an Air Force officer who was "known for his lust for excitement and fast living," characteristics which earned him the nickname "Rapid Richard."131 EJA was originally founded in Delaware, but Lassiter quickly moved the company to Columbus, Ohio. Lassiter had been stationed in Columbus at Lockbourne Air

Force Base, now known as Rickenbacker Airport, and was still a part of the Air Force when he incorporated EJA. Lassiter allegedly relocated EJA to Columbus mainly because "of the friendships he had made there."132

EJA's initial board of directors included actor Jimmy Stewart, former Assistant Secretary of the Navy James H. Smith, and former chairman of the Rockefeller family's Standard Oil branch in New Jersey, Monroe J. Rathbone.133 At the time of its founding, it was "a closely held secret" that EJA had been financed by the American Contract Company, a wholly owned subsidiary of the Pennsylvania Railroad. In 1965, the company adopted the name Executive Jet Aviation and created a subsidiary based in Switzerland. The Swiss subsidiary was largely led by Paul Tibbets, who served as its executive vice president and general manager.134 Tibbets, who had also been on the founding board of EJA, is best known as the pilot of the Enola Gay when it dropped an atomic bomb on the Japanese city of Hiroshima at the close of World War II. By 1967, Tibbets and others left EJA. Tibbets allegedly left because "he believed some things that were going on [at the airline] were flagrantly illegal."

That same year, the parent company of the American Contract Company, the Pennsylvania Railroad, merged with the New York Central Railroad to form the Penn Central Transportation Company, better known as Penn Central. Rockefeller interests and Clinton Murchison Sr. were among those with financial stakes in New York Central and its subsidiaries at the time. The railroad also did significant business, including mergers and acquisitions, with individuals closely tied to the CIA-linked David Baird Foundation (see Chapters 1 and 4).135 Penn Central would collapse in 1971, becoming one of the biggest bankruptcies in US history and what Peter Dale Scott referred to as "bankruptcy fraud with organized crime overtones."136

It would later emerge that Bruce Sundlun, a Washington attorney with past ties to Lassiter who was also on the EJA board of directors, would be responsible for the "covert" marriage between Pennsylvania Railroad/Penn Central and EJA. Their joining was performed by Glore Forgan at Sundlun's behest. Glore Forgan's vice president was General Charles Hodge, a Wall Street broker who was also the chief investment advisor to Penn Central and sat on the board of EJA.137 As mentioned in Chapter 6, Glore Forgan was the same firm used by William Casey in his business ventures related to Multiponics.

The Penn Central link to EJA eventually emerged when Lassiter attempted to obtain a certificate that would have allowed him to operate larger aircraft. The Civil Aeronautics Board, which had a previous ruling forbidding a railroad from controlling an air carrier, discovered the tie and determined that the railroad had put around $22 million into the company. They then blocked Lassiter's request for the certificate and ordered the railroad to divest from EJA. Lassiter then proceeded as follows:

> Since he was barred from using the larger jets for domestic operations, Lassiter leased them to International Air Bahama, a Lichtenstein corporation he had persuaded a number of foreign investors to organize, which offered cut-rate service between Nassau and Luxembourg. However, although money was being made, lease money wasn't getting back to Executive Jet. The money Lassiter raised, said Tibbets, allowed him to live like a millionaire."138

Despite the Civil Aeronautics Board's ruling, Penn Central money continued to flow into EJA, albeit via a more convoluted route. This was reportedly made possible, according to the New York Times, by Lassiter arranging "dates" for the aforementioned Charles Hodge as well as David Bevan, Penn Central's CFO, so that the two men would "continue the flow of railroad funds to Executive Jet."139 Both Hodge and Bevan were on the EJA board. The Times goes on to quote an official complaint, which stated: "The steady flow of Penn Central money to Executive Jet was maintained by Lassiter's procuring of young women to accompany Bevan and Hodge on various junkets in the United States and Europe."140

Paul Tibbets was also quoted as saying that "A weakness for beautiful women contributed to his [Lassiter's] problems, according to more than one magazine article that appeared while EJA's difficulties were making headlines."141 Lassiter reportedly maintained furnished apartments in New York City and elsewhere in the US, as well as foreign cities that included Rome, where some of these women would allegedly accompany him.

In 1970, Bruce Sundlun, the attorney on the EJA board of directors who first connected the company to Penn Central, raided EJA's offices as the company began its descent. In the course of that raid, Sundlun reportedly came across "a large stack of color photographs" that showed Lassiter "in the company of various young women, all of them very pretty and amply endowed."142

During inquiries about the collapse of Penn Central, as previously mentioned, the congressional hearings involved lines of questioning directed at Lassiter about the procurement of women for Bevan and Hodge, which was allegedly performed by J.H. Ricciardi. Ricciardi had testified in 1968 that he had procured these women "to relieve the pressure they were exerting on Mr. Lassiter to get the company into the black."143 Ricciardi also sued EJA over fees he claimed were owed to him for his efforts to procure women, which Ricciardi said he did at Lassiter's request. Lassiter denied Ricciardi's allegations and accused Ricciardi of "blackmail."144

In addition, at those same congressional hearings that followed Penn Central's implosion, Congressman J.W. Wright Patman (D-TX) stated that EJA's role in the Penn Central collapse raised "most serious questions about the involvement of the commercial banking industry in the strange and far-flung operations of Executive Jet Aviation […] Commercial banks made massive amounts of credit available to Executive Jet Aviation for what appeared to be highly questionable – if not at times illegal – activities."145

After Penn Central's 1970 collapse, it re-emerged in 1977, not as a railroad company, but as an "energy, recreation, and real estate company."146 A year later, it was disclosed that corporate raider Saul Steinberg, mentioned in Chapters 8 and 9 and who had previously tried to acquire Robert Maxwell's Pergamon Press, had obtained 7.9 percent of the new incarnation of Penn Central, which grew to 13 percent a year later.147 Cincinnati financier Carl Lindner Jr. obtained 30 percent of the company between 1981 and 1982, which included Steinberg's position. Lindner became chairman of Penn Central in 1983.148 The broker for these trades was Drexel Burnham Lambert's Michael Milken. Also involved was Randall Smith Jr., then at Bear Stearns who later went on to become a prominent "vulture capitalist."149 Lindner Jr. was also, at the time, intimately involved in Meshulam Riklis' Rapid-American, which – as mentioned in Chapter 2 – contained the remnants of Lewis Rosenstiel's business interests.150 He was also seemingly connected to Jack DeVoe, the cocaine smuggler mentioned in Chapter 7, as DeVoe maintained his planes at a club and airstrip that Lindner owned.151 In addition, the year after Lindner became chairman of Penn Central, Lindner Jr. would be given the reins of United Brands, a company with CIA links, by Leslie Wexner's "mentor" Max Fisher and his associates (see Chapter 13).

As for Executive Jet Aviation, it was foreclosed upon before reopening with Bruce Sundlun in charge. Paul Tibbets would return to the company around the same time and would succeed Sundlun as president in 1976. In 1984, with Tibbets still serving as president, EJA was acquired by Richard Santulli. Previously, Santulli had served as president of Goldman Sachs' leasing division, which bought helicopters and airplanes and then leased them to companies. Santulli left in 1980 to create his own leasing company, RTS Capital Services.152 EJA became a subsidiary of RTS and was later renamed as NetJets. It was during this era of EJA that Lawrence King, of Franklin Scandal fame, became a "frequent user of EJA's service", which – as previously mentioned – brought him into close contact with EJA executives.153

In 1993, at least two EJA pilots were recruited by Leslie Wexner's The Limited, or Lbrands. One of these pilots, Eric Black, had been an EJA pilot starting in 1988, then working for an EJA subsidiary in Miami – Executive Jet Management – transporting checks for the Federal Reserve. He returned to EJA's Columbus location in 1993, before being hired as a pilot for The Limited in August 1993. Black is now the Lead Captain for Lbrands flights.154 Another pilot, Mike Crater, also joined The Limited from EJA, where he had worked since 1986, in August 1993.155

1993 was a curious time in the activities of The Limited, particularly as it relates to its air freight concerns. As will be detailed in Chapter 17, in May of that year, The Limited was courted by a company called Polar Air Cargo, which sought to install itself at the Rickenbacker airstrip, once home to the Air Force Base where Lassiter had been stationed when he created Executive Jet. Polar Air Cargo, as reported by the Columbus Dispatch, was a joint venture of NedMark Transportation, Polaris Aircraft Leasing

Corporation, and the now infamous CIA-linked airline Southern Air Transport.156 At the time, more than half of Polar Air Cargo's employees had formerly worked for Flying Tiger Line, which – as noted in Chapter 5 – was tied to Anna Chennault and Robert Keith Gray. Though Polar Air Cargo's efforts would be for naught, The Limited, with direct input from Jeffrey Epstein, would be largely responsible for the relocation of Southern Air Transport to Rickenbacker in 1995.

Endnotes

1Nicholas Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 1st ed (New York: Doubleday, 1988), 402.

2Gabriel H. Sanchez, “29 Pictures That Show Just How Insane Studio 54 Really Was,” Buzz-Feed News, https://www.buzzfeednews.com/article/gabrielsanchez/pictures-that-show-just-how-insane-studio-54-really-was.

3Bob Colacello, “Studio 54’s Cast List: A Who’s Who of the 1970s Nightlife Circuit,” Vanity Fair, September 4, 2013, https://www.vanityfair.com/news/1996/03/studio-54-nightclub-newyork-city.

4Tate Delloye, “Roy Cohn: New Documentary Explores the Man Who Made Donald Trump,” Mail Online, March 14, 2019, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-6809557/Roy-Cohn-Donald-Trumps-ruthless-homophobic-attorney-partied-Studio-54-died-AIDS.html.

5Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 403.

6Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 405-407.

7Frank Rich, “Roy Cohn was the Original Donald Trump,” Intelligencer, April 29, 2018, https://nymag.com/intelligencer/2018/04/frank-rich-roy-cohn-the-original-donald-trump.html.

8Rich, “Original Donald Trump.”

9Rich, “Original Donald Trump.”

10Rich, “Original Donald Trump.”

11Barbara Walters’ name can be found in Epstein’s black book of contacts. See “Epstein’s Black Book,” https://epsteinsblackbook.com/names/barbara-walters; Rich, “Original Donald Trump.”

12Alan Feuer, “Up From Politics, Almost,” New York Times, October 1, 2004, https://www.nytimes.com/2004/10/01/nyregion/up-from-politics-almost.html; Marie Brenner, “How Donald Trump and Roy Cohn’s Ruthless Symbiosis Changed America,” Vanity Fair, June 28, 2017, https://www.vanityfair.com/news/2017/06/donald-trump-roy-cohn-relationship.

13Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 414.

14Von Hoffman, Citizen Cohn, 334.

15Jeffrey Toobin, “The Dirty Trickster,” The New Yorker, May 23, 2008, http://www.newyorker.com/magazine/2008/06/02/the-dirty-trickster; Mark Ames, “Behind the Scenes of the Donald Trump - Roger Stone Show,” Pando, August 11, 2015, https://web.archive.org/web/20190730062318/https://pando.com/2015/08/11/behind-scenes-donald-trump-roger-stone-show/.

16Sam Roberts, “Thomas A. Bolan, Understated Force in New York Law, Dies at 92,” New York Times, May 17, 2017, https://www.nytimes.com/2017/05/16/nyregion/thomas-bolan-dead-roy-cohn-law-partner.html.

17Roberts, “Thomas A. Bolan,”; Wanda Carruthers, “Tom Bolan, Famed Attorney and Roy Cohn’s Law Partner, Dies,” Newsmax, May 14, 2017, https://www.newsmax.com/Newsfront/Tom-Bolan-dies-lawyer-conservative/2017/05/14/id/790052/.

18“Donald Trump and Ghislaine Maxwell on Her Dad’s (Robert) Yacht in May 1989,” St. Louis Post-Dispatch, May 17, 1989, https://www.newspapers.com/clip/9383143/donald-trump-and-ghislaine-maxwell-on/.

19David Ingram, “Sex Claim Filing Against Dershowitz a Mistake, Say Florida Lawyers; Defamation Claims Settled,” Insurance Journal, April 12, 2016, https://www.insurancejournal.com/news/southeast/2016/04/12/404808.htm; Victor Thorn, “Louis Freeh: The Cover-up Goes National,” American Free Press, June 22, 2012, https://americanfreepress.net/web-exclusive-louis-freeh-the-cover-up-goes-national/.

20Carruthers, “Tom Bolan,”; Marcus Baram, “Eavesdropping on Roy Cohn and Donald Trump,” The New Yorker, April 14, 2017, http://www.newyorker.com/news/news-desk/eavesdropping-on-roy-cohn-and-donald-trump.

21Baram, “Eavesdropping.”

22Baram, “Eavesdropping.”

23Baram, “Eavesdropping.”

24Becky Little, “Roy Cohn: From Ruthless ‘Red Scare’ Prosecutor to Donald Trump’s Mentor,” HISTORY, March 6, 2019, https://www.history.com/news/roy-cohn-mccarthyism-rosenberg-trial-donald-trump.

25James Michael Nichols, “Hillary Clinton Apologizes After Shocking Praise For Nancy Reagan’s ‘AIDS Activism,’” HuffPost, March 11, 2016, https://www.huffpost.com/entry/hillary-clinton-nancy-reagan-aids-activism_n_56e31770e4b0b25c9181e002.
26Robert Parry, “How Roy Cohn Helped Rupert Murdoch,” Consortium News, January 28, 2015, https://consortiumnews.com/2015/01/28/how-roy-cohn-helped-rupert-murdoch/.
27Jerry Oppenheimer, “President Reagan’s Mafia Ties Revealed in Explosive New Documentary,” Mail Online, May 21, 2014, https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2635094/EXCLUSIVE-Revealed-MAFIA-helped-Ronald-Reagan-White-House-Shocking-documentary-reveals-Mob-connections-catapulted-presidency-probe-thwarted-highest-levels.html.
28Oppenheimer, “President Reagan’s Mafia Ties,”; Tina Daunt, “New Doc Alleges Ronald Reagan Blocked Probe Into Lew Wasserman’s Mafia Ties,” The Hollywood Reporter, June 12, 2014, https://www.hollywoodreporter.com/news/politics-news/new-doc-alleges-ronald-reagan-711288/.
29Oppenheimer, “President Reagan’s Mafia Ties.”
30Oppenheimer, “President Reagan’s Mafia Ties.”
31Carl Sifakis, The Mafia Encyclopedia, 3. ed (New York: Checkmark Books, 2005), 132.
32Mike Barnes, “Edie Wasserman, Wife of Lew Wasserman, Dies at 95,” The Hollywood Reporter, August 18, 2011, https://www.hollywoodreporter.com/news/general-news/edie-wasserman-wife-lew-wasserman-225101/.
33Gus Russo, Supermob: How Sidney Korshak And His Criminal Associates Became America’s Hidden Power Brokers (New York: Bloomsbury, 2008), 158.
34New West, Volume 1, p. 27, https://www.google.com/books/edition/New_West/6Sk-cAQAAIAAJ.
35Nick Tosches, “The Man Who Kept The Secrets,” Vanity Fair, April 6, 1997, https://www.vanityfair.com/news/1997/04/The-Man-Who-Kept-The-Secrets.
36Oppenheimer, “President Reagan’s Mafia Ties.”
37David Cay Johnston, “Just What Were Donald Trump’s Ties to the Mob?,” POLITICO Magazine, May 22, 2016, https://www.politico.com/magazine/story/2016/05/donald-trump-2016-mob-organized-crime-213910.
38Newsweek Staff, “The Bcci-Cia Connection: Just How Far Did It Go?,” Newsweek, December 6, 1992, https://www.newsweek.com/bcci-cia-connection-just-how-far-did-it-go-195454.
39Susan Trento, “Lord of the Lies; How Hill and Knowlton’s Robert Gray Pulls Washington’s Strings,” Washington Monthly, September 1, 1992, https://www.thefreelibrary.com/Lord+of+the+lies%3B+how+Hill+and+Knowlton%27s+Robert+Gray+pulls…-a012529888.
40“B’nai B’rith Testimonial Dinner in Honor of Roy Cohn,” May 2, 1983, https://consortiumnews.com/wp-content/uploads/2015/01/Cohn-Dinner.pdf.
41“B’Nai B’rith Dinner.”
42“B’Nai B’rith Dinner.”
43“The Order of B’Nai B’rith,” New York Times, March 31, 1878.
44Bruce Weber, “He Relit Broadway: Gerald Schoenfeld Dies at 84,” New York Times, November 25, 2008, https://www.nytimes.com/2008/11/26/theater/26schoenfeld.html.
45Barbara Gamarekian, “Washington Talk: Career Secretaries; Wielding Power Discreetly,” New York Times, May 14, 1987, https://www.nytimes.com/1987/05/14/us/washington-talk-career-secretaries-wielding-power-discreetly.html.
46Jonathan Marshall, Dark Quadrant: Organized Crime, Big Business, and the Corruption of American Democracy: From Truman to Trump, ePub, (Lanham: Rowman & Littlefield, An imprint of The Rowman & Littlefield Publishing Group, Inc, 2021), 245.

47Dan E. Moldea, Interference: How Organized Crime Influences Professional Football, 1st ed (New York: Morrow, 1989), 93–95, 451 note 8.
48E. J. Dionne Jr, "US Envoy Denies Discussing Iran Arms," New York Times, December 1, 1986, https://www.nytimes.com/1986/12/01/world/us-envoy-denies-discussing-iran-arms.html.
49Robert D. McFadden, "Edward V. Regan, Longtime New York State Comptroller, Dies at 84," New York Times, October 19, 2014, https://www.nytimes.com/2014/10/19/nyregion/edward-v-regan-longtime-new-york-state-comptroller-dies-at-84-.html.

50"Rev. Bruce N. Ritter,"Bishop Accountability.org, https://www.bishop-accountability.org/assign/Ritter_Bruce_N_ofm.conv.htm.
51Tracy Connor, "Scandal-Scarred Founder of Covenant House Dead at 72," New York Post, October 12, 1999, https://nypost.com/1999/10/12/scandal-scarred-founder-of-covenant-house-dead-at-72/.
52Steve Cuozzo, "This NYC Priest's Dramatic Downfall Was Just the Beginning of Perv-Priest Scandals," New York Post, September 13, 2018, https://nypost.com/2018/09/13/this-nyc-priests-dramatic-downfall-was-just-the-beginning-of-perv-priest-scandals/.
53Cuozzo, "Priest's Dramatic Downfall."
54Cuozzo, "Priest's Dramatic Downfall."
55M. A. Farber, "Ritter Inquiry Leading Many To Quit Board," New York Times, May 1, 1990, https://www.nytimes.com/1990/05/01/nyregion/ritter-inquiry-leading-many-to-quit-board.html.
56Cuozzo, "Priest's Dramatic Downfall."
57Anthony Ramirez, "Rev. Bruce Ritter, 72, the Founder of Covenant House for Runaway Children," New York Times, October 13, 1999, https://www.nytimes.com/1999/10/13/nyregion/rev-bruce-ritter-72-the-founder-of-covenant-house-for-runaway-children.html.
58Kroll Associates' role is discussed in detail in Peter J. Wosh, Covenant House: Journey of a Faith-Based Charity (Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 2005), 184-88, 192, 207-210.
It is also mentioned in New York Magazine. Christopher Byron, "High Spy," New York Magazine, May 13, 1991, 72, https://books.google.cl/books?id=COkCAAAAMBAJ&pg=PA72.
59"Limited hangout" is intelligence jargon for a form of propaganda in which a selected portion of a scandal, criminal act, sensitive or classified information, etc. is revealed or leaked, but avoids telling the whole story. This may be done to establish one's credibility as a critic of something or somebody by engaging in criticism of them while, in fact, they are aiding the covering up by omitting more damaging details. Other motives may include the intention to distance oneself publicly from something using innocuous or vague criticism even when ones own sympathies are privately with them; or to divert public attention away from a more heinous act by leaking information about something less heinous. Byron, "High Spy,"; Kurt Eichenwald, "Drexel Burnham Fights Back," New York Times, September 11, 1988, https://www.nytimes.com/1988/09/11/business/drexel-burnham-fights-back.html.
60Charles M Sennott, Broken Covenant (New York: Windsor Pub., 1994), 14, https://archive.org/details/brokencovenant00senn.
61Cuozzo, "Priest's Dramatic Downfall."
62Ann Marsh, "Americares' Success Hailed, Criticized," Hartford Courant, August 10, 1991, https://www.courant.com/news/connecticut/hc-xpm-1991-08-11-0000213209-story.html.
63Marsh, "Americares' Success."
64Cuozzo, "Priest's Dramatic Downfall."
65Marsh, "Americares' Success."
66Farber, "Ritter Inquiry."
67Staff, "Rev. Bruce Ritter, 72, Founder of Covenant House, Dies," Buffalo News, October 12, 1999, https://buffalonews.com/news/rev-bruce-ritter-72-founder-of-covenant-house-dies/article_5d8b7652-4204-599a-9507-2eefadc9aea6.html.
68"Cryptonym: ZRSIGN," Mary Ferrell Foundation, https://www.maryferrell.org/php/cryptdb.php?id=ZRSIGN&search=AIFLD; "United Fruit-C.I.A. Link

Charged," New York Times, October 22, 1976, https://www.nytimes.com/1976/10/22/archives/united-fruitcia-link-charged.html.
69Marsh, "Americares' Success."
70Marsh, "Americares' Success."
71Bill Flood, "Connecticut Reacts to Loss of 'Native Son', 41st U.S. President George H.W. Bush," fox61.com, December 1, 2018, https://www.fox61.com/article/news/local/outreach/awareness-months/connecticut-reacts-to-loss-of-native-son-41st-u-s-president-george-h-w-bush/520-0270014d-288b-4da7-bd12-3c60188a2a76.
72Marsh, "Americares' Success."
73Marsh, "Americares' Success."
74Marsh, "Americares' Success."

75Marsh, "Americares' Success."
76Matthew Phelan, "Seymour Hersh and the Men Who Want Him Committed," Salon, February 28, 2011, https://www.salon.com/2011/02/28/seymour_hersh_whowhatwhy/.
77Kris Hundley and Kendall Taggart, "No Accounting for $40 Million in Charity Shipped Over-seas," Tampa Bay Times, https://www.tampabay.com/news/business/no-accounting-for-40-million-in-charity-shipped-overseas/2162553/.
78Phelan, "Seymour Hersh."
79John W. DeCamp, The Franklin Cover-Up: Child Abuse, Satanism, and Murder in Nebraska (Lincoln, Neb: AWT, 1992), 180.
80Deborah Sontag, "L.I. Man Who Runs Home for Boys In Guatemala Is on Trial in Absentia," New York Times, April 12, 1997, https://www.nytimes.com/1997/04/12/nyregion/li-man-who-runs-home-for-boys-in-guatemala-is-on-trial-in-absentia.html.
81Nicholas A. Bryant, The Franklin Scandal: A Story of Powerbrokers, Child Abuse and Betrayal, First edition (revised for softcover) (Waterville, OR: Trine Day, 2012), 32–33.
82Bryant, Franklin Scandal, 35-36
83Bryant, Franklin Scandal, 36.
84Bryant, Franklin Scandal, 36-37.
85Bryant, Franklin Scandal, 37-38.
86Robert Dorr, "King Donated $25,350 to Aid Lobbying Group," Omaha World Herald, May 21, 1989.
87For more information see: Pete Brewton, The Mafia, CIA, and George Bush (S.P.I. Books, Dec. 1992).
88Bryant, Franklin Scandal, 37.
89Dorr, "King Donated $23,500."
90Dorr, "King Donated $23,500."
91Harry Bernstein, "Former CIA Man Now Battling Unions," Los Angeles Times, February 18, 1987, https://www.latimes.com/archives/la-xpm-1987-02-18-fi-2605-story.html.
92Dorr, "King Donated $23,500."
93Max Fisher, "Letter to Morris Lasker," September 28, 1987, https://www.sechistorical.org/collection/papers/1980/1987_0928_FisherLaskerBoesky.pdf.
94"Wall Street's Top Earners: Your Pain, Their Gain," Forbes, April 15, 2008, https://www.forbes.com/2008/04/15/paulson-falcone-earners-biz-wall-cz_js_0415wallstreet.html.
95Dorr, "King Donated $23,500."
96Dorr, "King Donated $23,500."
97Warwick Middleton, MD, "An Interview with Nick Bryant: Part I – The Franklin Scandal," August 7, 2019, https://news.isst-d.org/an-interview-with-nick-bryant-part-i-the-franklin-scandal/.
98William Robbins, "A Lurid, Mysterious Scandal Begins Taking Shape in Omaha," New York Times, December 18, 1988, https://www.nytimes.com/1988/12/18/us/a-lurid-mysterious-scandal-begins-taking-shape-in-omaha.html.
99Bryant, Franklin Scandal, 87.
100Bryant, Franklin Scandal, 98.

101Bryant, Franklin Scandal, 158.
102Bryant, Franklin Scandal, 158-59.
103Robbins, “Scandal in Omaha.”
104Patrick Wood, “Flashback - How The Trilateral Commission Converted China Into A Technocracy,” Technocracy News, April 22, 2016, https://www.technocracy.news/trilateral-commission-converted-china-technocracy/.
105“Joseph S Nye Resume,” https://apps.hks.harvard.edu/faculty/cv/JosephNye.pdf.
106Bryant, Franklin Scandal, 280-84.
107Phil Gailey, “Have Names, Will Open Right Doors,” New York Times, January 18, 1982, https://www.nytimes.com/1982/01/18/us/have-names-will-open-right-doors.html.
108Gailey, “Have Names.”

109Gailey, “Have Names.”
110Gailey, “Have Names.”
111Lee Siegel, “In Short: Nonfiction,” New York Times, May 21, 1995, https://www.nytimes.com/1995/05/21/books/in-short-nonfiction-231795.html.
112Jacob Shamsian, “John Glenn Was a Passenger on Jeffrey Epstein’s Private Jet in 1996, According to Unsealed Flight Records,” Insider, August 9, 2019, https://www.insider.com/john-glenn-flew-on-jeffrey-epstein-private-jet-2019-8.
113Michael Hedges and Jerry Seper, “Power Broker Served Drugs, Sex at Parties Bugged for Blackmail,” Washington Times, June 30, 1989, sec. Final.
114John W. DeCamp, The Franklin Cover-Up: Child Abuse, Satanism, and Murder in Nebraska, ePub (Nebraska: AWT, 1992), 169.
115Hedges and Seper, “Power Broker Served Drugs.”
116Hedges and Seper, “Power Broker Served Drugs.”
117Hedges and Seper, “Power Broker Served Drugs.”
118Paul M Rodriguez and George Archibald, “Homosexual Prostitution Inquiry Ensnares VIPs with Reagan, Bush ‘Call Boys’ Took Midnight Tour of White House,” Washington Times, June 29, 1989, https://govcrime.wordpress.com/2011/03/02/washington-times-call-boy-article-1989/.
119Jerry Seper and Michael Hedges, “Spence Arrested in N.Y., Released; Once-Host to Powerful Reduced to Begging, Sleeping in Park,” Washington Times, August 9, 1989, https://govcrime.wordpress.com/2011/04/13/spence-arrested-in-n-y-released-once-host-to-powerful-reduced-to-begging-sleeping-in-park/.
120“What the CIA Tells Congress (Or Doesn’t) about Covert Operations: The Barr/Cheney/Bush Turning Point for CIA Notifications to the Senate,” NSA Archive, February 7, 2019, https://nsarchive.gwu.edu/briefing-book/intelligence/2019-02-07/what-cia-tells-congress-or-doesnt-about-covert-operations-barrcheneybush-turning-point-cia.
121Jack Anderson and Les Whitten, “CIA Love Traps Lured Diplomats,” Washington Post, February 5, 1975, http://jfk.hood.edu/Collection/White%20Materials/Security-CIA/CIA%201025.pdf.
122Rodriguez and Archibald, “Homosexual Prostitution Inquiry.”
123Bryant, Franklin Scandal, 293, 295.
124Bryant, Franklin Scandal, 296.
125Henry W. Vinson, Confessions of a D.C. Madam: The Politics of Sex, Lies & Blackmail, First Edition (Oregon: Trine Day, 2014), 118–19.
126Bryant, Franklin Scandal, 296-300.
127Bryant, Franklin Scandal, 284.
128Bryant, Franklin Scandal, 296-97.
129“Skybound Business Exec,” Jet, July 6, 1987, 28, https://books.google.com/books?id=_LEDAAAAMBAJ.
130Joseph R Daughen and Peter Binzen, The Wreck of the Penn Central, First edition (Boston: Little, Brown, and Company, 1971), 202-04, https://archive.org/details/wreckofpenncentr00daug.

131“Paul Tibbets: A Rendezvous with History (Part 3),” Airport Journals, June 1, 2003, http://airportjournals.com/paul-tibbets-a-rendezvous-with-history-part-3/.
132“Paul Tibbets.”
133“Paul Tibbets.”
134“Paul Tibbets.”
135John J. McCloy, chairman of the Rockefeller-dominated Chase Manhattan Bank, became an ‘important financial ally’ of Clint Murchison, Sr., and Sid Richardson when the two Texans became (through Alleghany Corp.) major stockholders in the New York Central Railroad, later merged into Penn Central.” See Peter Dale Scott, Deep Politics and the Death of JFK (University of California Press, 1996), 136.
In addition, the founder of Alleghany and the architect of its takeover of New York Central via the use of Richardson and Murchison as proxies, Robert R. Young, was a client of the Baird Foundation. “…Mr. Young disclosed that Mr. David G. Baird, ‘a good friend of his, had approached the [Chesapeake and Ohio Railroad] to sell its Central stock to an investing group before it sold the block to Messrs. Murchison and Richardson’” See: Tax-Exempt Foundations and Charitable Trusts, Their Impact on Our Economy: United States House Select Committee on Small Business, 1963, 57-58.
Penn Central money was put into Great Southwest via Penphil, a private investment operation set up by the railroad’s CFO David Bevan and General Charles J. Hodge, the railroad’s chief investment officer. See: Associated Press, “$21-Million Fraud.”
“…control of Great Southwest was tightly centered in the Rockefeller and Wynne families” See: The Penn Central Failure and the Role of Financial Institutions: Staff Report of the Committee on Banking and Currency, 1970, 30.
136Scott, Deep Politics, 284.
137Daughen and Blinzen, The Wreck of Penn Central, 161.
138“Paul Tibbets.”
139The Associated Press, “$21-Million Fraud Al Penn Central Is Charged to 3,” New York Times, January 5, 1972, https://www.nytimes.com/1972/01/05/archives/21million-fraud-at-penn-central-is-charged-to-3-bevan-exfinance.html.
140AP, “$21-Million Fraud.”
141“Paul Tibbets.”
142Daughen and Blinzen, The Wreck of Penn Central, 176.
143Michael C. Jensen, “Pennsy Is Scored in a House Report,” New York Times, December 21, 1970, https://www.nytimes.com/1970/12/21/archives/pennsy-is-scored-in-a-house-report-jet-aviation-units-history.html.
144Daughen and Blinzen, The Wreck of Penn Central, 204.
145Jensen, “Pennsy is Scored.”
146Robert J Cole, “Saul Steinberg: Gunning for Penn Central,” New York Times, November 11, 1979, https://www.nytimes.com/1979/11/11/archives/saul-steinberg-gunning-for-penn-central.html.
147Cole, “Saul Steinberg.”
148Daniel F. Cuff, “Business People; Lindner Chairman of Penn Central,” New York Times, May 20, 1983, https://www.nytimes.com/1983/05/20/business/business-people-lindner-chairman-of-penn-central.html.
149Hilary Rosenberg, The Vulture Investors (New York: J. Wiley, 2000), 12.
150Cuff, “Business People.”
151For DeVoe’s relationship to Ocean Reef, see: Organized Crime and Cocaine Trafficking Record of Hearing IV, President’s Commission on Organized Crime, November 27-29, 1984, https://www.ojp.gov/ncjrs/virtual-library/abstracts/organized-crime-and-cocaine-trafficking. Additional corroboration can be found in Scott, Deep Politics, 335.
152“How Richard Santulli Became The Father of Fractional Ownership,” International Aviation HQ, January 26, 2022, https://internationalaviationhq.com/2022/01/26/richard-santulli-netjets/.
153“Skybound Business Exec,” Jet.

154Eric Black, LinkedIn, Accessed June 28, 2022, https://www.linkedin.com/in/eric-black-660a01126/details/experience/.
155Mike Crater, LinkedIn, Accessed June 28, 2022, https://www.linkedin.com/in/mike-crater-2aa9316/.
156"Cargo Service Targets City – Polar Plans to Land Weekly Flights at Rickenbacker Starting Sunday," Columbus Dispatch, May 12, 1993, https://dispatch.newsbank.com/doc/news/10E0D9C54B7D92F8.

UNCLASSIFIED

document at the present time, does this cause you to recall that any of these matters were discussed by Studley with the Director at that December 20 meeting, namely the idea of creating a circular arrangement in which a trading company would be established to supply freedom fighter movements which Congress was unwilling to support for one reason or another and that Israel would sell certain things, military equipment, to the People's Republic of China, who would supply the Soviet arms, which would then be brokered to the freedom fighters, and that Israel would be benefitted by the United States through a high technology support or other compensation?

Do you recall anything?

A What's the question?

Q Well, the question is were the matters that I have just described discussed by Studley at that meeting?

A To the best of my knowledge, they were not, no.

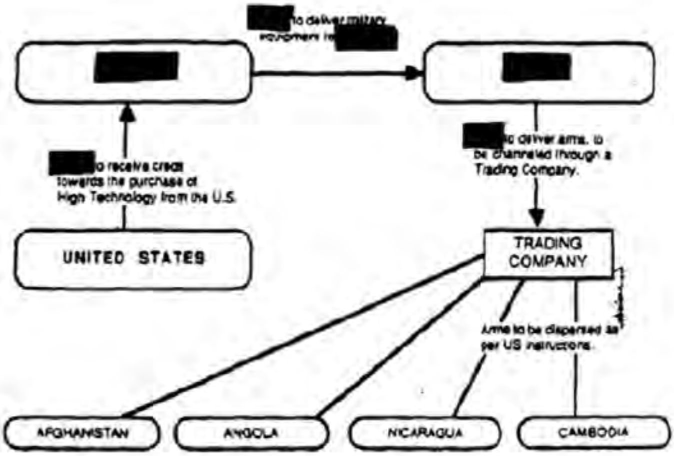
Q Do you recall the same day as the meeting with Studley that the Director called Richard Secord for a meeting?

A No, I don't.

Q Let me show you a document which we've been provided by the CIA, which we are informed is a summary of the Director's meeting log and telephone log with

Document 1: GeoMiliTech's circular trading arrangement with the US.

UNCLASSIFIED 3 WAY TRADE N 5519


[redacted] to deliver military equipment to [redacted]
[redacted]
[redacted]
[redacted] to receive credit towards the purchase of High Technology from the U.S.
[redacted] to deliver arms, to be channeled through a Trading Company.
UNITED STATES
TRADING COMPANY
Arms to be dispersed as per US instructions.
AFGHANISTAN
ANGOLA
NICARAGUA
CAMBODIA

Document 2: Schematic of the circular trading agreement

View In Book

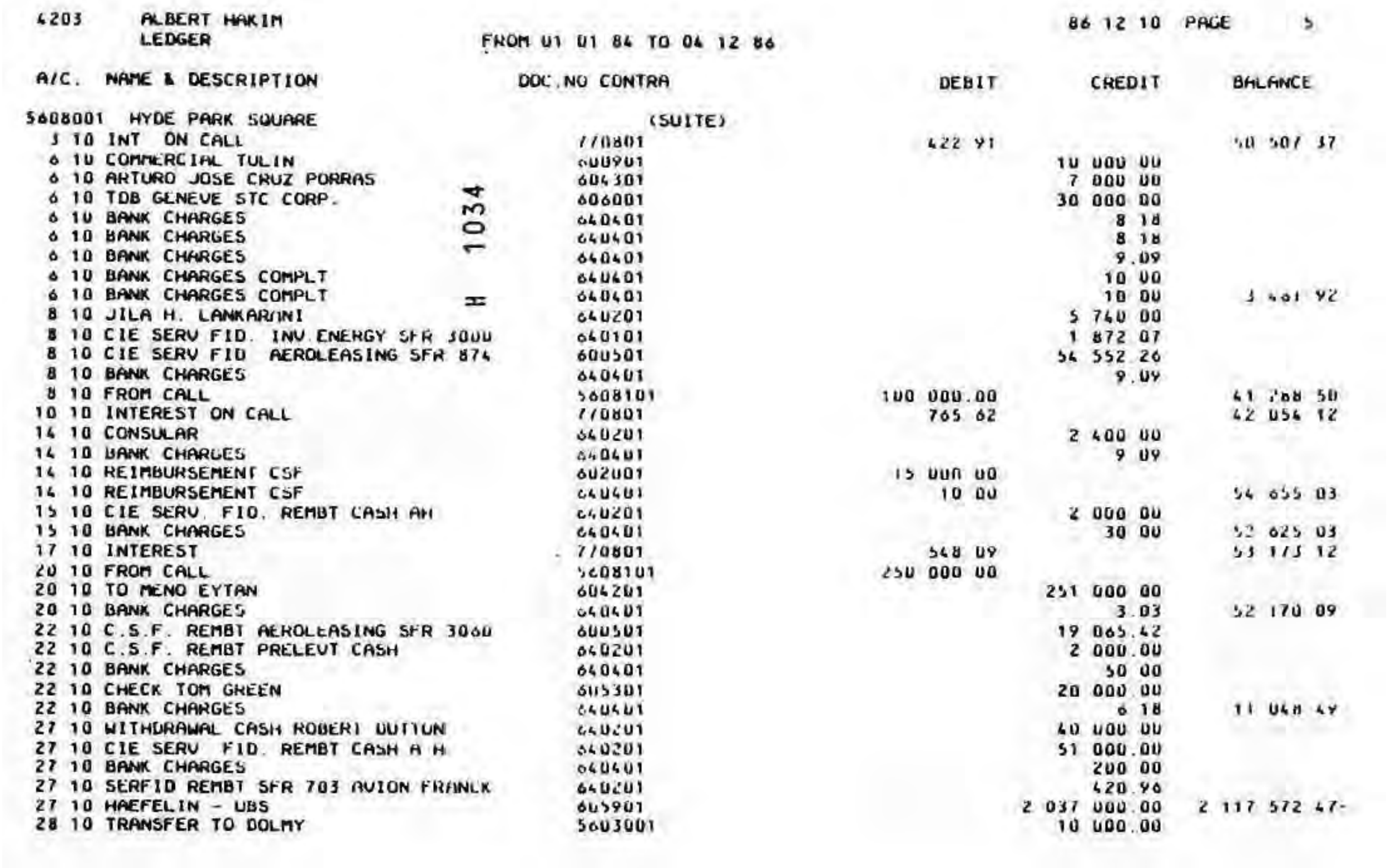
to Europe again and was joined there by her son, MARC who resides in London. Together they went with Mr. ZUCKER and his family to the opera festival in Varona, Italy. There they were joined by ROLAND FARINA (ZUCKER's administration assistant) and his family.

Mrs. MORABIA knew that Mr. ZUCKER had an office in Bermuda but she did not know the purpose of the office. Manager of this office is EVELYN REPIQUET and she is assisted by MARTHA (last name unknown). Mrs. MORABIA said she knew that Mr. ZUCKER had various real estate deals in Florida and Texas and that possibly Ms. REPIQUET monitored these accounts. Mrs. MORABIA said she has met Ms. REPIQUET in New York on approximately five occasions but she (MORABIA) has never been to Bermuda.

In dealing with CSF Mrs. MORABIA said there was at one time a pouch system to the Trade Development Bank, Geneva, Switzerland, which at that time was an affiliate of RNB (which is owned by Mr. SAFRA). Mr. SAFRA is originally from Beirut and is part of the Sephardic (ph) Group (Jewish). Mrs. MORABIA has been to cocktail parties and dinners with the SAFRA's but has never discussed the CSF account with Mr. SAFRA. She does know that SAFRA has contact with ZUCKER in Geneva but does not know of any business between the two. She "assumes" there probably is because they both live in Geneva. Mrs. MORABIA said she has never seen any documents between ZUCKER and SAFRA.

At this time Mrs. MORABIA proceeded to relate information concerning cash transactions or making cash available. This was during a period of time from 1984 to sometime in 1986. During the latter part of 1984 or early 1985 she received a call from ZUCKER who needed funds of $10,000 or so and wondered if she had any sources who would have the money available. She told ZUCKER that she would contact her source to see if there was a possibility of obtaining the money. Her source would then tell her whether money was available and she would then tell ZUCKER. If money was available ZUCKER would tell her where to deliver the money. As an example: Room 1202 at the Hotel Helmsley or Hotel Hilton and give the time. Sometimes ZUCKER, when he knew money was available would tell her that either ALBERT HAKIM or RICHARD SECORD would call to give her instructions. She said she has never met either gentleman. Mrs. MORABIA said that her source (who she declined to identify) would tell her when the money had been delivered and that a like amount of funds should be transferred to an account at the Trade Development Bank in Geneva named CODELIS. Mrs. MORABIA said that she participated in approximately six transactions of this type. The largest amount transferred was $60,000 and the smallest was $5,000. The typical transfer was about $10,000 to $15,000. In

Document 3: Section of the Nan Morabia FBI 302 that discusses Edmound Safra.

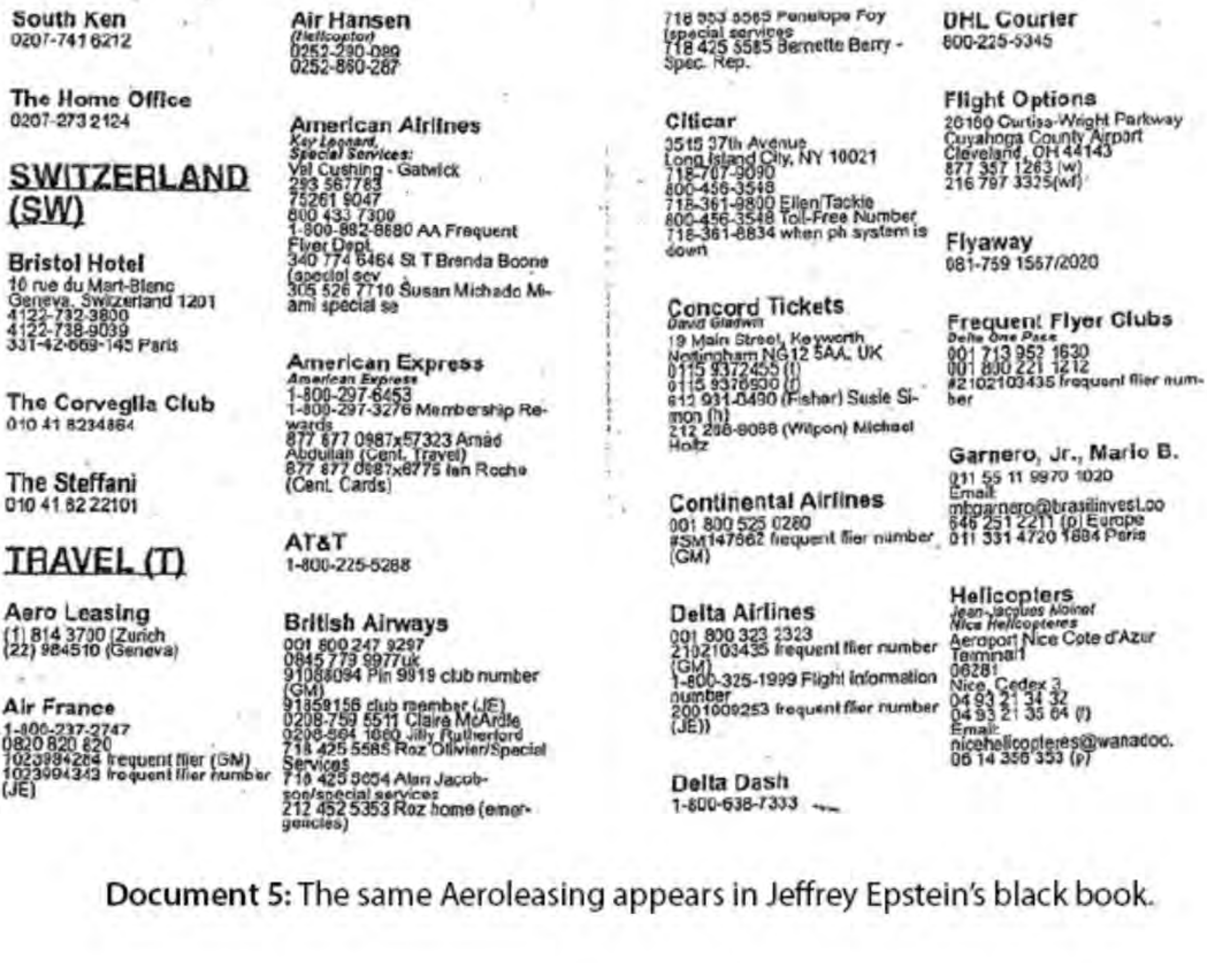


4203 ALBERT HAKIM 86 12 10 PAGE 5
LEDGER FROM 01 01 84 TO 04 12 86

A/C.	NAME & DESCRIPTION	DOC.NO CONTRA	DEBIT	CREDIT	BALANCE
5608001	HYDE PARK SQUARE	(SUITE)			
3 10	INT ON CALL	770801	422 91		50 507 37
6 10	COMMERCIAL TULIN	600901		10 000 00	
6 10	ARTURO JOSE CRUZ PORRAS	604301		7 000 00	
6 10	TDB GENEVE STC CORP.	606001		30 000 00	
6 10	BANK CHARGES	640401		8 18	
6 10	BANK CHARGES	640401		8 18	
6 10	BANK CHARGES	640401		9.09	
6 10	BANK CHARGES COMPLT	640401		10 00	
6 10	BANK CHARGES COMPLT	640401		10 00	3 461 92
8 10	JILA H. LANKARANI	640201		5 740 00	
8 10	CIE SERV FID. INV ENERGY SFR 3000	640101		1 872 07	
8 10	CIE SERV FID AEROLEASING SFR 874	600501		54 552 26	
8 10	BANK CHARGES	640401		9.09	
8 10	FROM CALL	5608101	100 000.00		41 268 50
10 10	INTEREST ON CALL	770801	765 62		42 054 12
14 10	CONSULAR	640201		2 400 00	
14 10	BANK CHARGES	640401		9 09	
14 10	REIMBURSEMENT CSF	602001	15 000 00		
14 10	REIMBURSEMENT CSF	640401	10 00		54 655 03
15 10	CIE SERV. FID. REMBT CASH AH	640201		2 000 00	
15 10	BANK CHARGES	640401		30 00	52 625 03
17 10	INTEREST	770801	548 09		53 173 12
20 10	FROM CALL	5608101	250 000 00		
20 10	TO MENO EYTAN	604201		251 000 00	
20 10	BANK CHARGES	640401		3.03	52 170 09
22 10	C.S.F. REMBT AEROLEASING SFR 3060	600501		19 065.42	
22 10	C.S.F. REMBT PRELEVT CASH	640201		2 000.00	
22 10	BANK CHARGES	640401		50 00	
22 10	CHECK TOM GREEN	605301		20 000.00	
22 10	BANK CHARGES	640401		6 18	11 048 49
27 10	WITHDRAWAL CASH ROBERT DUTTON	640201		40 000 00	
27 10	CIE SERV FID. REMBT CASH A H	640201		51 000.00	
27 10	BANK CHARGES	640401		200 00	
27 10	SERFID REMBT SFR 703 AVION FRANCK	640201		420.96	
27 10	HAEFELIN - UBS	605901		2 037 000.00	2 117 572 47-
28 10	TRANSFER TO DOLMY	5603001		10 000.00	

H 1034

Document 4: An Enterptise ledger that mentions Aerleasing



South Ken
0207-741 6212

The Home Office
0207-273 2124

SWITZERLAND (SW)

Bristol Hotel
10 rue du Mart-Blanc
Geneva, Switzerland 1201
4122-732-3800
4122-738-9039
331-42-669-145 Paris

The Corveglia Club
010 41 8234864

The Steffani
010 41 82 22101

TRAVEL (T)

Aero Leasing
(1) 814 3700 (Zurich
(22) 984510 (Geneva)

Air France
1-800-237-2747
0820 820 820
1023984284 frequent flier (GM)
1023994343 frequent flier number (JE)

Air Hansen
(Helicopter)
0252-290-089
0252-860-287

American Airlines
Key Leonard,
Special Services:
Val Cushing - Gatwick
293 567783
75261 9047
800 433 7300
1-800-882-8880 AA Frequent Flyer Dept.
340 774 6464 St T Brenda Boone (special sev
305 526 7710 Susan Michado Miami special se

American Express
American Express
1-800-297-6453
1-800-297-3276 Membership Rewards
877 877 0987x57323 Amad Abdullah (Cent. Travel)
877 877 0987x6775 Ian Roche (Cent. Cards)

AT&T
1-800-225-5288

British Airways
001 800 247 9297
0845 779 9977uk
91088094 Pin 9919 club number (GM)
91859156 club member (JE)
0208-759 5511 Claire McArdle
0208-564 1060 Jilly Rutherford
718 425 5585 Roz Ollivier/Special Services
718 425 5054 Alan Jacobson/special services
212 452 5353 Roz home (emergencies)
718 553 5565 Penelope Foy (special services
718 425 5585 Bernette Berry - Spec. Rep.

Citicar
3515 37th Avenue
Long Island City, NY 10021
718-707-9090
800-456-3548
718-361-9800 Ellen/Tackie
800-456-3548 Toll-Free Number
718-361-8834 when ph system is down

Concord Tickets
David Gladwin
19 Main Street, Keyworth
Nottingham NG12 5AA, UK
0115 9372455 (f)
0115 9376930 (f)
612 931-0490 (Fisher) Susie Simon (h)
212 288-9088 (Wilpon) Michael Holtz

Continental Airlines
001 800 525 0280
#SM147562 frequent flier number (GM)

Delta Airlines
001 800 323 2323
2102103435 frequent flier number (GM)
1-800-325-1999 Flight information number
2001009253 frequent flier number (JE))

Delta Dash
1-800-638-7333

DHL Courier
800-225-5345

Flight Options
26180 Curtiss-Wright Parkway
Cuyahoga County Airport
Cleveland, OH 44143
877 357 1263 (w)
216 797 3325(wf)

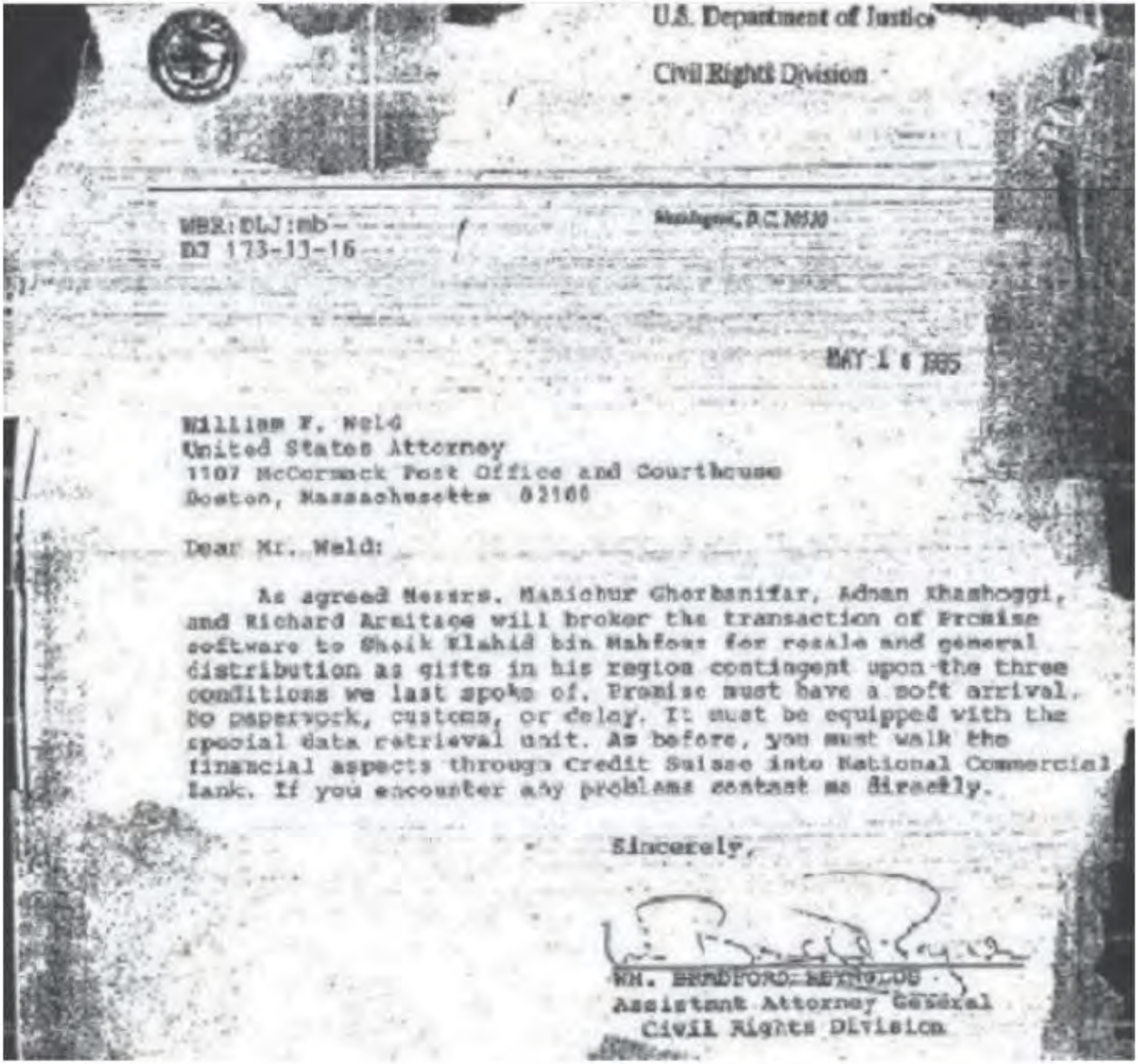
Flyaway
081-759 1567/2020

Frequent Flyer Clubs
Delta One Pass
001 713 952 1630
001 800 221 1212
#2102103435 frequent flier number

Garnero, Jr., Mario B.
011 55 11 9970 1020
Email:
mbgarnero@brasilinvest.co
646 251 2211 (p) Europe
011 331 4720 1884 Paris

Helicopters
Jean-Jacques Moinet
Nice Helicopteres
Aeroport Nice Cote d'Azur
Terminal 1
06281
Nice, Cedex 3
04 93 21 34 32
04 93 21 35 64 (f)
Email:
nicehelicopteres@wanadoo.
06 14 356 353 (p)

Document 5: The same Aeroleasing appears in Jeffrey Epstein's black book.

U.S. Department of Justice

Civil Rights Division

WBR:DLJ:mb
DJ 173-13-16

Washington, D.C. 20530

MAY 1 6 1985

William F. Weld
United States Attorney
1107 McCormack Post Office and Courthouse
Boston, Massachusetts 02109

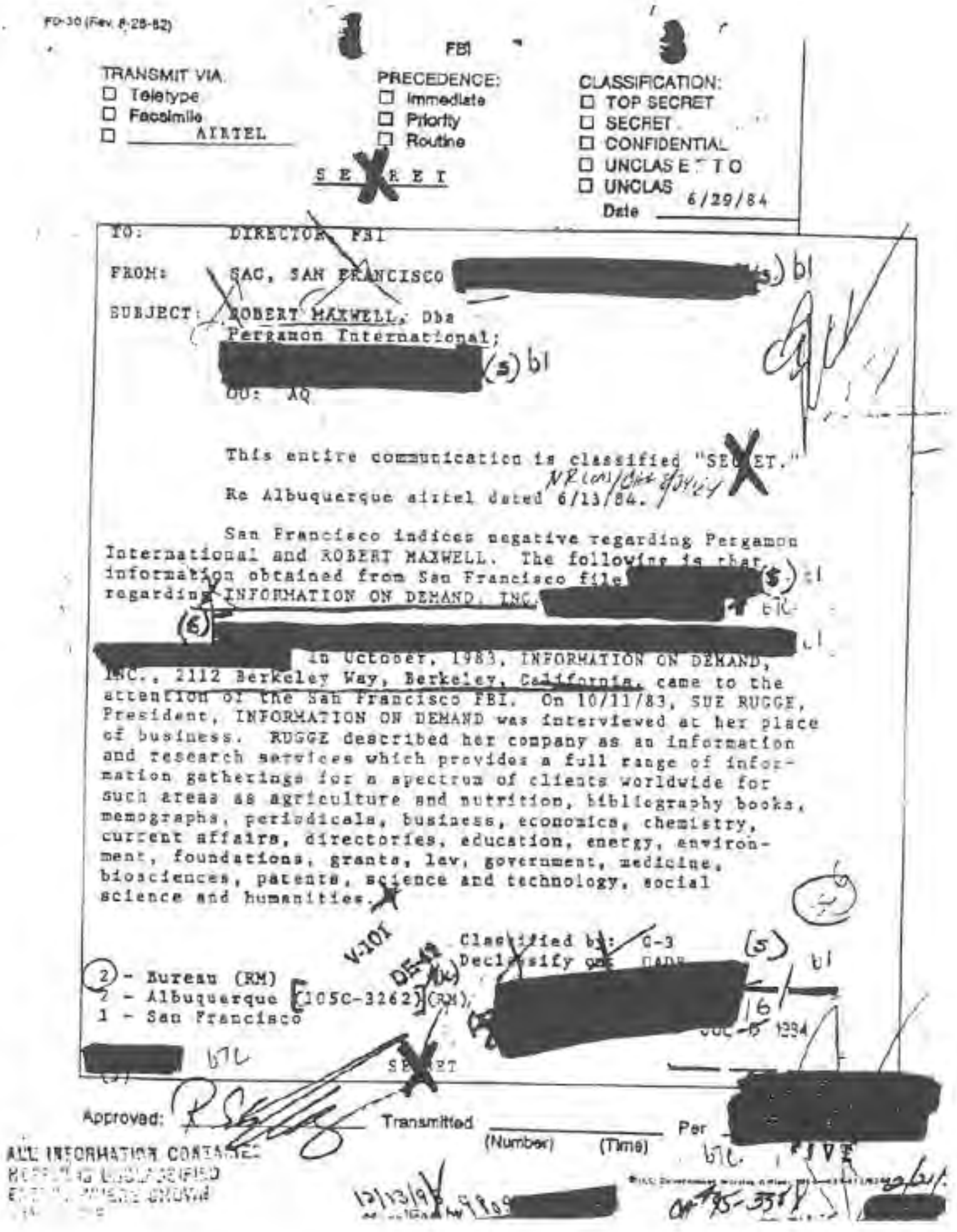
Dear Mr. Weld:

As agreed Messrs. Manichur Ghorbanifar, Adnan Khashoggi, and Richard Armitage will broker the transaction of Promise software to Sheik Klahid bin Mahfouz for resale and general distribution as gifts in his region contingent upon the three conditions we last spoke of. Promise must have a soft arrival. No paperwork, customs, or delay. It must be equipped with the special data retrieval unit. As before, you must walk the financial aspects through Credit Suisse into National Commercial Bank. If you encounter any problems contact me directly.

Sincerely,

WM. BRADFORD REYNOLDS
Assistant Attorney General
Civil Rights Division

Document 6: Letter to William Weld from Assistant Attorney General Bradford Reynolds detailing the sale of PROMIS for financial purposes to Sheik Klahid bin Mahfouz and how Manucher Ghorbanifar, Adnan Khashoggi and Richard Armitage were to broker the deal.



FD-36 (Rev. 8-26-82)

FBI

TRANSMIT VIA:
☐ Teletype
☐ Facsimile
☐ AIRTEL

PRECEDENCE:
☐ Immediate
☐ Priority
☐ Routine

CLASSIFICATION:
☐ TOP SECRET
☐ SECRET
☐ CONFIDENTIAL
☐ UNCLAS E F T O
☐ UNCLAS

Date 6/29/84

S E C R E T

TO: DIRECTOR, FBI

FROM: SAC, SAN FRANCISCO [redacted] (S) b1

SUBJECT: ROBERT MAXWELL, Dba
Pergamon International;
[redacted] (S) b1
OO: AQ

This entire communication is classified "SECRET."

NR (cm)/Ch 8/31/84

Re Albuquerque airtel dated 6/13/84.

San Francisco indices negative regarding Pergamon International and ROBERT MAXWELL. The following is that information obtained from San Francisco file [redacted] (S) b1 regarding INFORMATION ON DEMAND, INC. [redacted] b7C

(S) [redacted] b1 In October, 1983, INFORMATION ON DEMAND, INC., 2112 Berkeley Way, Berkeley, California, came to the attention of the San Francisco FBI. On 10/11/83, SUE RUGGE, President, INFORMATION ON DEMAND was interviewed at her place of business. RUGGE described her company as an information and research services which provides a full range of information gatherings for a spectrum of clients worldwide for such areas as agriculture and nutrition, bibliography books, monographs, periodicals, business, economics, chemistry, current affairs, directories, education, energy, environment, foundations, grants, law, government, medicine, biosciences, patents, science and technology, social science and humanities.

V-10I

DE-42 (k)

Classified by: G-3
Declassify on: OADR

(S) b1

[redacted]

(2) - Bureau (RM)
2 - Albuquerque (105C-3262) (RM)
1 - San Francisco

16

JUL - 5 1984

[redacted] b7C

SECRET

Approved: Transmitted (Number) (Time) Per [redacted]

b7C

FIVE

ALL INFORMATION CONTAINED
HEREIN IS UNCLASSIFIED
EXCEPT WHERE SHOWN

12/13/95 [redacted]

OA 95-3581

[redacted]

Document 7: Pages 13-34 of FBI investigation records of the investigation into Robert Maxwell and Information on Demand, obtained via FOIA by Bill Hamilton.

S? [redacted] S b1

RUGGE advised that INFORMATION ON DEMAND's (IOD) sources include over 250 computer data bases which provide information in two main categories, research and document delivery.

According to RUGGE, all data bases that IOD has access to provide only public source information and nothing of a known or sensitively classified nature. She explained that it is a data base called the Defense Technical Center which is connected to the Department of Defense (DOD) which contains classified information, however, IOD has no password for access and further no need for access.

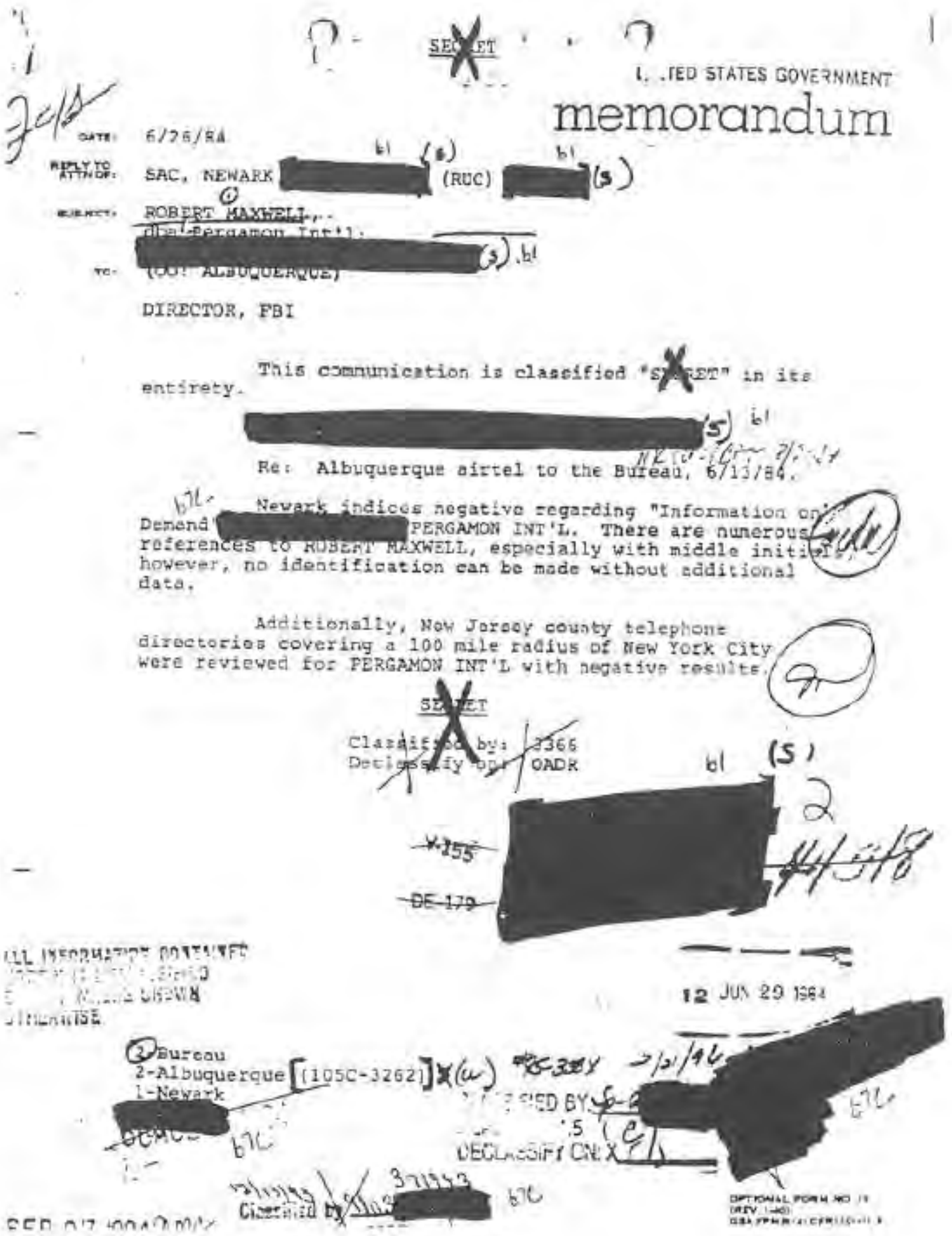
RUGGE advised that requests of IOD are approximately 50% business related and 40% technical and medicine related. She advised that IOD taps most publicly available computerized data bases including Lockheed's Dialog, System Development Corporation's Orbit, the New York Times Information Bank, the National Library of Medicine's MEDLARS, and the Bibliographic Retrieval Service.

Relative to research, RUGGE advised that IOD provides information to the business, technical, and professional communities, as well as to individuals. According to RUGGE, IOD can locate single facts as well as provide answers to complex questions dealing with such areas as comprehensive marketing research, custom data summaries, sophisticated literature searching, current awareness service, and global information capability.

Relative to document delivery, RUGGE advised that IOD locates photocopies or acquires published information in any form, whether they are manuals, conference papers, patents, or theses, as well as reports, catalogues, brochures, articles, etc. She advised that requests are received at IOD by telephone, mail, and electronically, and that information is sent to clients by the same means.

RUGGE advised that under the law and government heading, IOD has access to the American Statistics Index (ASI) and Congressional Information Service (CIS), the Commerce Business Daily, the Congressional Record Abstracts, the Criminal Justice Periodical Index, the Federal Index,

Document 7: Pages 13-34 of FBI investigation records of the investigation into Robert Maxwell and Information on Demand, obtained via FOIA by Bill Hamilton.



~~SECRET~~

UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

memorandum

DATE: 6/26/84

REPLY TO ATTN OF: SAC, NEWARK [redacted] b1 (s) (RUC) [redacted] b1 (s)

SUBJECT: ROBERT MAXWELL, (U)
dba Pergamon Int'l;
[redacted] (s) b1
(OO: ALBUQUERQUE)

TO: DIRECTOR, FBI

This communication is classified "~~SECRET~~" in its entirety.

[redacted] (s) b1

Re: Albuquerque airtel to the Bureau, 6/13/84.

b7C Newark indices negative regarding "Information on Demand" [redacted] PERGAMON INT'L. There are numerous references to ROBERT MAXWELL, especially with middle initials; however, no identification can be made without additional data.

Additionally, New Jersey county telephone directories covering a 100 mile radius of New York City were reviewed for PERGAMON INT'L with negative results.

~~SECRET~~

~~Classified by: 3366~~
~~Declassify on: OADR~~

b1 (S)

[redacted]

2

~~X-155~~

~~DE-179~~

ALL INFORMATION CONTAINED HEREIN IS UNCLASSIFIED EXCEPT WHERE SHOWN OTHERWISE

12 JUN 29 1984

② Bureau
2-Albuquerque [(105C-3262)] X (u)
1-Newark
[redacted]
b7C

7/21/94

[redacted]

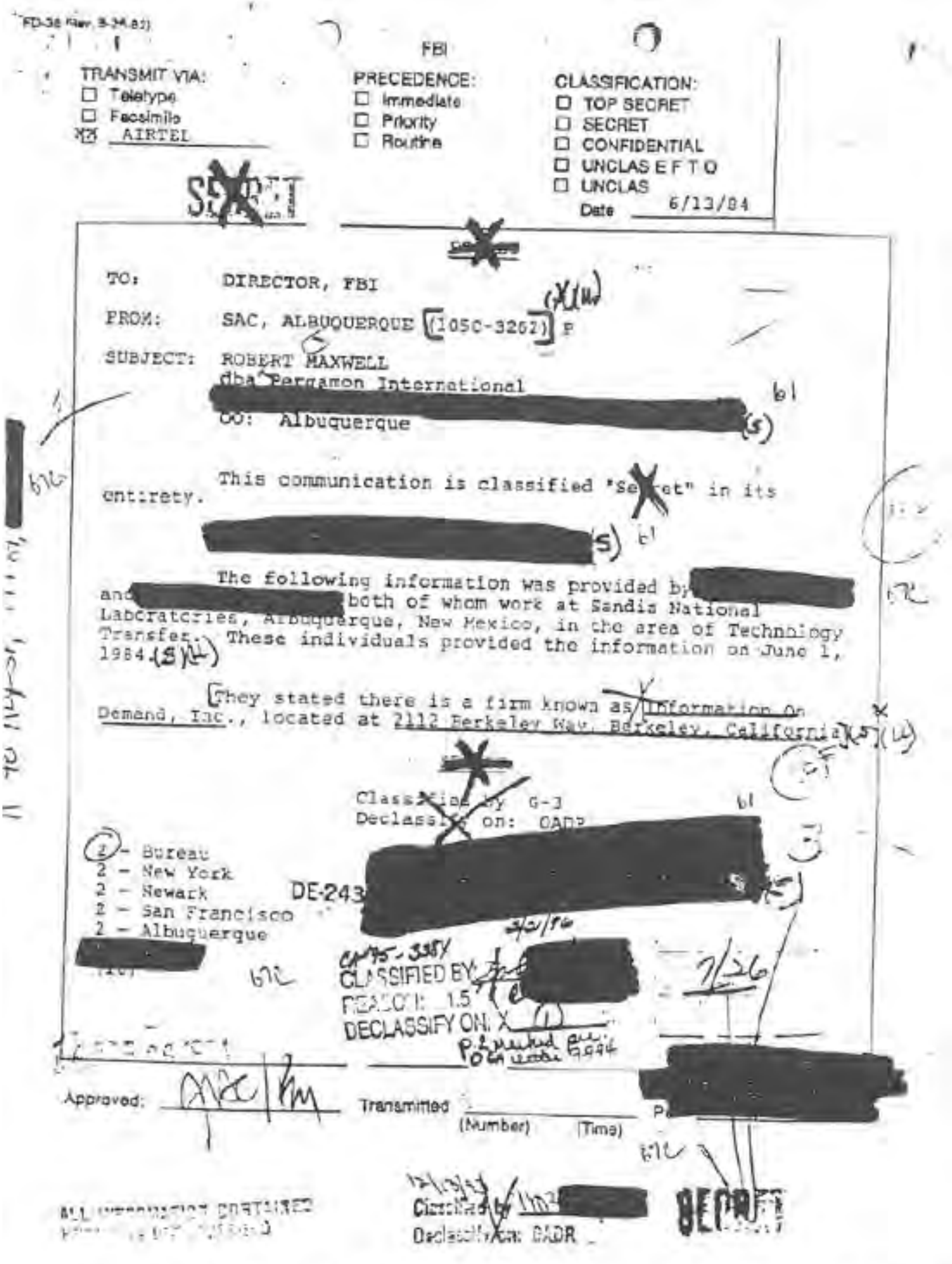
CLASSIFIED BY
DECLASSIFY ON: X

b7C

Classified by [redacted] b7C

OPTIONAL FORM NO. 10

Document 7: Pages 13-34 of FBI investigation records of the investigation into Robert Maxwell and Information on Demand, obtained via FOIA by Bill Hamilton.



FD-36 (Rev. 8-24-83)

FBI

TRANSMIT VIA:
☐ Teletype
☐ Facsimile
☒ AIRTEL

PRECEDENCE:
☐ Immediate
☐ Priority
☐ Routine

CLASSIFICATION:
☐ TOP SECRET
☐ SECRET
☐ CONFIDENTIAL
☐ UNCLAS E F T O
☐ UNCLAS
Date 6/13/84

~~SECRET~~

TO: DIRECTOR, FBI

FROM: SAC, ALBUQUERQUE [(105C-3262)] P (X)(U)

SUBJECT: ROBERT MAXWELL
dba Pergamon International
[redacted] b1
OO: Albuquerque (S)

This communication is classified "~~Secret~~" in its entirety.

[redacted] (S) b1

The following information was provided by [redacted] and [redacted] both of whom work at Sandia National Laboratories, Albuquerque, New Mexico, in the area of Technology Transfer. These individuals provided the information on June 1, 1984. (S)(U) b7C

[They stated there is a firm known as Information On Demand, Inc., located at 2112 Berkeley Way, Berkeley, California] (S)(U)

~~Classified by G-3~~
~~Declassify on: OADR~~ b1

② - Bureau
2 - New York
2 - Newark
2 - San Francisco
2 - Albuquerque
[redacted]
b7C

DE-243 [redacted] (S)

3/21/96

CA95-3384
CLASSIFIED BY [redacted]
REASON: 1.5 (c)
DECLASSIFY ON: X (1)

7/26

Approved: ________ Transmitted ________ (Number) (Time) P [redacted]

b7C

ALL INFORMATION CONTAINED
HEREIN IS UNCLASSIFIED

12/10/97
Classified by [redacted]
Declassify on: OADR

SECRET

Document 7: Pages 13-34 of FBI investigation records of the investigation into Robert Maxwell and Information on Demand, obtained via FOIA by Bill Hamilton.

SECRET [redacted] S b1

AQ [105C-3262] (U)

Calif

94704, with Telephones (415) 644-4500 and (800) 227-0750. The president of this firm is a woman known as SUE RUGGE. The nature of this firm is that it is a firm which has compiled data base information and for a fee will provide them to customers. The data base information relates to a wide variety and to the best of their knowledge is not classified in any manner. However, it includes information concerning government and various available means of tapping government information data bases. The information provided by the Sandia employees was received from employees of the National Security Agency (NSA) and has to do with the purchase of Information On Demand, Inc., by one ROBERT MAXWELL, the owner of Pergamon International, a British information firm. According to NSA, [redacted] (SC)(S) b1 b3 per NSA

The information received from these Sandia employees is [redacted] computerized data bases on behalf of the Soviets. b1 b3 per NSA

Albuquerque indices are negative regarding Pergamon International, ROBERT MAXWELL, Information On Demand, Inc. [redacted] b7C

According to the Sandia employees, there is a New Jersey Pergamon International Office; however, they did not know where it was located (U)

LEADS

NEW YORK CITY DIVISION

AT NEW YORK CITY, NEW YORK

Search indices regarding Pergamon International, ROBERT MAXWELL, Information On Demand, Inc. [redacted] b7C

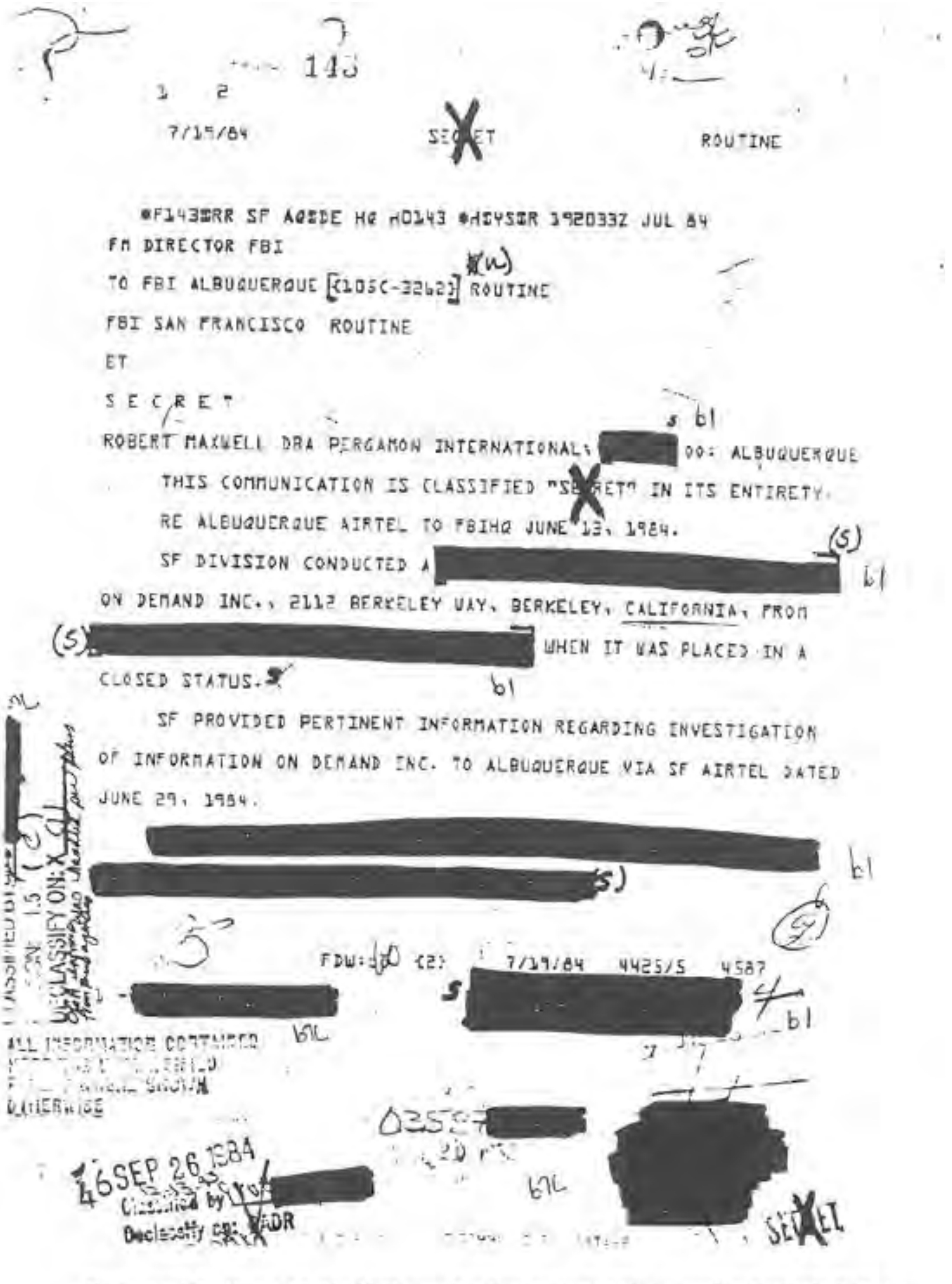
NEWARK DIVISION

AT NEWARK, NEW JERSEY

Will check indices as set forth for New York Office.

SECRET [redacted] (S) b1

Document 7: Pages 13-34 of FBI investigation records of the investigation into Robert Maxwell and Information on Demand, obtained via FOIA by Bill Hamilton.



1 2 143

7/19/84 SECRET ROUTINE

0F1430RR SF AQ 0DE HQ H0143 0HSYS0R 192033Z JUL 84

FM DIRECTOR FBI

TO FBI ALBUQUERQUE [(105C-3262)] ROUTINE (U)

FBI SAN FRANCISCO ROUTINE

ET

S E C R E T

ROBERT MAXWELL DBA PERGAMON INTERNATIONAL; [redacted] OO: ALBUQUERQUE s b1

THIS COMMUNICATION IS CLASSIFIED "SECRET" IN ITS ENTIRETY.

RE ALBUQUERQUE AIRTEL TO FBIHQ JUNE 13, 1984.

SF DIVISION CONDUCTED A [redacted] (S) b1 ON DEMAND INC., 2112 BERKELEY WAY, BERKELEY, CALIFORNIA, FROM (S) [redacted] WHEN IT WAS PLACED IN A CLOSED STATUS. (S) b1

SF PROVIDED PERTINENT INFORMATION REGARDING INVESTIGATION OF INFORMATION ON DEMAND INC. TO ALBUQUERQUE VIA SF AIRTEL DATED JUNE 29, 1984.

[redacted] (S) b1

5 (9)

FDW: (2) 7/19/84 4425/5 4587

1 - [redacted] b7C s [redacted] 4 b1

DECLASSIFY ON: X

ALL INFORMATION CONTAINED HEREIN IS UNCLASSIFIED EXCEPT WHERE SHOWN OTHERWISE

0359 [redacted]

b7C

[redacted]

46 SEP 26 1984

Classified by [redacted]

Declassify on: OADR

SECRET

Document 7: Pages 13-34 of FBI investigation records of the investigation into Robert Maxwell and Information on Demand, obtained via FOIA by Bill Hamilton.

NOTE:

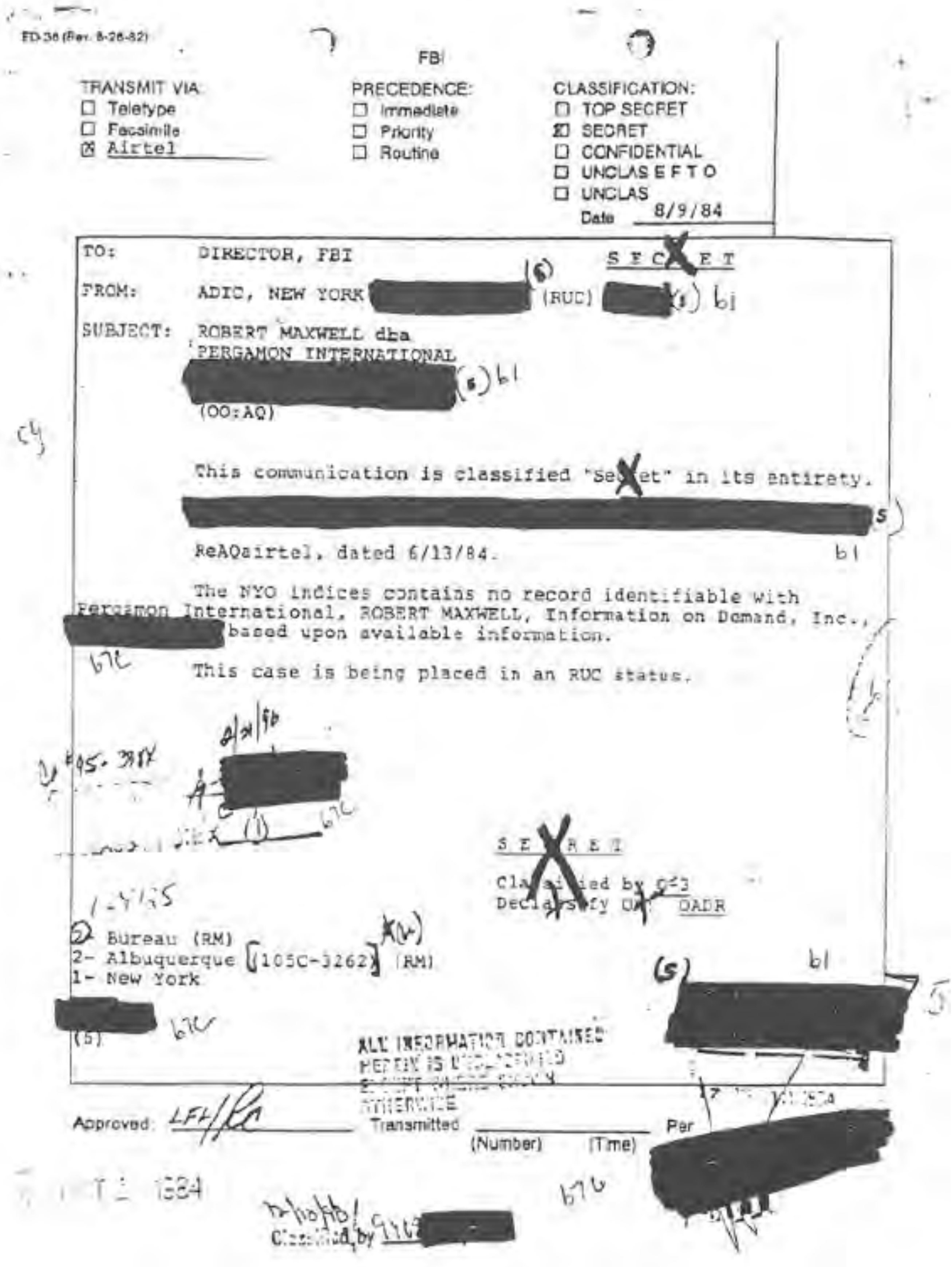
ALBUQUERQUE DIVISION RECEIVED INFORMATION FROM TWO EMPLOYEES OF SANDIA NATIONAL LABORATORIES OF ALBUQUERQUE, N.M., THAT A COMPANY NAMED INFORMATION ON DEMAND HAD BEEN PURCHASED BY A ROBERT MAXWELL, OWNER OF PERGAMON INTERNATIONAL, A BRITISH INFORMATION FIRM. THE TWO EMPLOYEES ADVISED THEY HAD LEARNED FROM NSA [redacted]

(X)(S)

ALBUQUERQUE IS PROVIDED WITH RESULTS OF INDICES SEARCH.

b1 b3
per NSA

Document 7: Pages 13-34 of FBI investigation records of the investigation into Robert Maxwell and Information on Demand, obtained via FOIA by Bill Hamilton.



FD-36 (Rev. 8-26-82)

FBI

TRANSMIT VIA:
☐ Teletype
☐ Facsimile
☒ Airtel

PRECEDENCE:
☐ Immediate
☐ Priority
☐ Routine

CLASSIFICATION:
☐ TOP SECRET
☒ SECRET
☐ CONFIDENTIAL
☐ UNCLAS E F T O
☐ UNCLAS

Date 8/9/84

~~SECRET~~

TO: DIRECTOR, FBI

FROM: ADIC, NEW YORK [redacted] (S) (RUC) [redacted] (S) b1

SUBJECT: ROBERT MAXWELL dba
PERGAMON INTERNATIONAL
[redacted] (S) b1
(OO:AQ)

This communication is classified "~~Secret~~" in its entirety.

[redacted] (S)

ReAQairtel, dated 6/13/84. b1

The NYO indices contains no record identifiable with Pergamon International, ROBERT MAXWELL, Information on Demand, Inc., [redacted] based upon available information.

b7C

This case is being placed in an RUC status.

2/21/96

95-388K

A-[redacted]

b7C

~~SECRET~~

~~Classified by G-3~~
~~Declassify OADR~~

1-4135

② Bureau (RM)
2- Albuquerque [(105C-3262)] (RM) X(U)
1- New York [redacted] (S) b1
[redacted] b7C
(5)

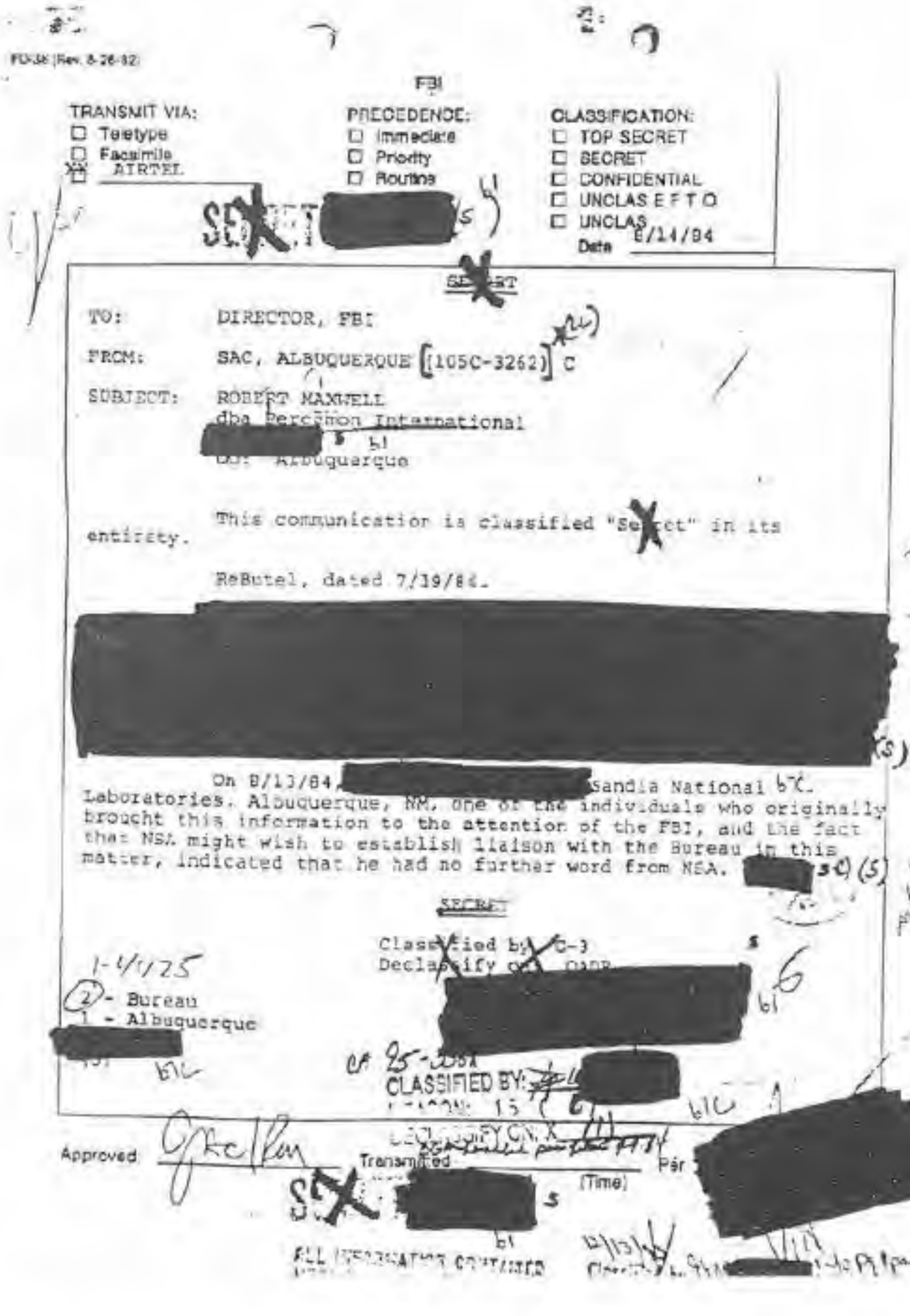
ALL INFORMATION CONTAINED
HEREIN IS UNCLASSIFIED
EXCEPT WHERE SHOWN
OTHERWISE

Approved: LFL/PC
Transmitted _____ (Number) _____ (Time)
Per [redacted] b7C

1984

2/10/96
Classified by 99[redacted]

Document 7: Pages 13-34 of FBI investigation records of the investigation into Robert Maxwell and Information on Demand, obtained via FOIA by Bill Hamilton.



FD-36 (Rev. 8-26-82)

FBI

TRANSMIT VIA:
☐ Teletype
☐ Facsimile
☒ AIRTEL

PRECEDENCE:
☐ Immediate
☐ Priority
☐ Routine

CLASSIFICATION:
☐ TOP SECRET
☐ SECRET
☐ CONFIDENTIAL
☐ UNCLAS E F T O
☐ UNCLAS

Date 8/14/84

SECRET [redacted] (S) b1

(U)

SECRET

TO: DIRECTOR, FBI

FROM: SAC, ALBUQUERQUE [105C-3262] C (U)

SUBJECT: ROBERT MAXWELL
dba Pergamon International
[redacted] b1
OO: Albuquerque

This communication is classified "Secret" in its entirety.

ReButel, dated 7/19/84.

[redacted] (S)

On 8/13/84, [redacted] Sandia National Laboratories, Albuquerque, NM, one of the individuals who originally brought this information to the attention of the FBI, and the fact that NSA might wish to establish liaison with the Bureau in this matter, indicated that he had no further word from NSA. [redacted] (S) b1 b3 b7C per NSA

SECRET

Classified by C-3
Declassify on: OADR
[redacted] b1

1-4/125

② - Bureau
1 - Albuquerque
[redacted] b7C

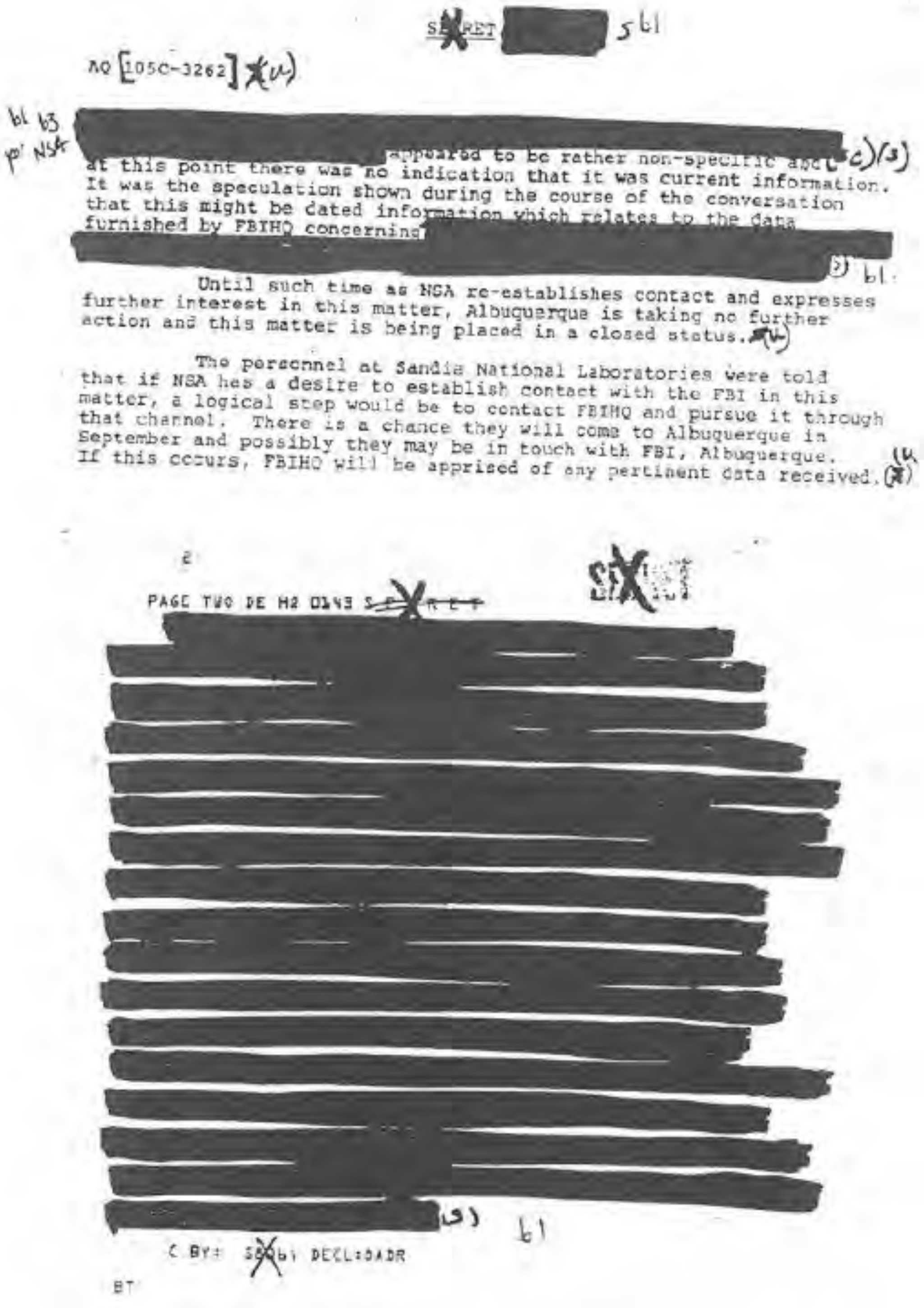
CA 25-
CLASSIFIED BY: [redacted] b7C
REASON: 1.5 ( )
DECLASSIFY ON: X

Approved: Transmitted (Time) Per [redacted]

SECRET [redacted] b1

ALL INFORMATION CONTAINED

Document 7: Pages 13-34 of FBI investigation records of the investigation into Robert Maxwell and Information on Demand. obtained via FOIA by Bill Hamilton.



~~SECRET~~ [redacted] 5 b1

AQ [105C-3262] ~~(S)~~(U)

b1 b3 per NSA

[redacted] appeared to be rather non-specific and (C)(S) at this point there was no indication that it was current information. It was the speculation shown during the course of the conversation that this might be dated information which relates to the data furnished by FBIHQ concerning [redacted] (S) b1

Until such time as NSA re-establishes contact and expresses further interest in this matter, Albuquerque is taking no further action and this matter is being placed in a closed status. ~~(S)~~(U)

The personnel at Sandia National Laboratories were told that if NSA has a desire to establish contact with the FBI in this matter, a logical step would be to contact FBIHQ and pursue it through that channel. There is a chance they will come to Albuquerque in September and possibly they may be in touch with FBI, Albuquerque. If this occurs, FBIHQ will be apprised of any pertinent data received. ~~(S)~~(U)

2

PAGE TWO DE HQ 0143 ~~SECRET~~ ~~SECRET~~

[redacted] (S) b1

C BY: ~~SO~~ b1 DECL:OADR

BT

Document 7: Pages 13-34 of FBI investigation records of the investigation into Robert Maxwell and Information on Demand, obtained via FOIA by Bill Hamilton.

AO [050-3262] ~~X~~(u)

SAN FRANCISCO DIVISION

AT SAN FRANCISCO, CALIFORNIA

Will search indices as set forth for New York Office.

REQUEST OF THE BUREAU

Requested to search indices regarding the firms and individuals as set forth in the New York lead.

Document 7: Pages 13-34 of FBI investigation records of the investigation into Robert Maxwell and Information on Demand, obtained via FOIA by Bill Hamilton.

4-22 (Rev. 7-1-83)

FEDERAL BUREAU OF INVESTIGATION
Records/Operations Sections

_______________, 19___

☐ Name Searching Unit, 4543, TL# 115
☐ ~~Service Unit, 4064, TL# 225~~
☐ Special File Room, 5991, TL# 122
☐ Forward to File Review, 5447, TL# 143 b7C
☐ ~~Attention~~ [redacted]
☑ Return to [redacted] 4425 242 [redacted]
Supervisor, Room, TL#, Ext.

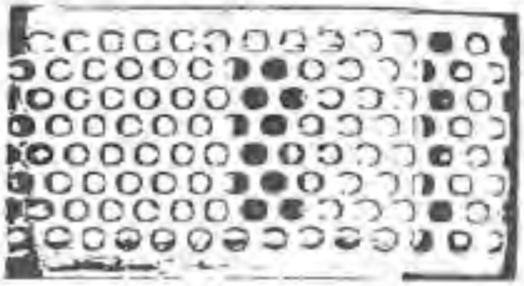
Type of Search Requested: (Check One)
☐ Restricted Search (Active Index - 5 & 20)
☐ Restricted Search (Active & Inactive Index - 5 & 20)
☑ Unrestricted (Active & Inactive Index)

Special Instructions: (Check One)
☑ All References (Security & Criminal)
☐ Security Search
☐ Criminal Search
☐ Main _______________ References Only
☐ Exact Name Only (On the Nose)
☐ Buildup ☐ Variations
☐ Restricted to Locality of _______________

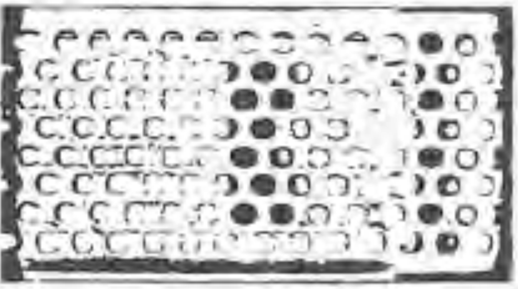
Subject: Robert Maxwell
Birthdate & Place
Address

Localities

R# _______ Date 6/15 Searcher Initials [illegible]
Prod _______



FILE NUMBER	SERIAL
1 - 9440	✓
1 - 43195	✓
105 - 99072	✓
105 - 210759	✓
105 - 236525	✓
157 13923	✓
180 - 7059	✓
174 - 7381	✓
105 - 328403 - 710 - 5181	✓
65 - 67359 - 1	✓
- 6	✓
65 - 74475 - 56	17 ✓
- 124	p = D ✓
105 - 72776	4 ✓
105 - 91885	8x Ex 67 ✓
105 - 138958	27, 28, 29
	30, 33 ✓
105 - 165490 - 2	✓
105 - 203657 - 1	✓



IAN ROBERT
[illegible] ✓

b7C

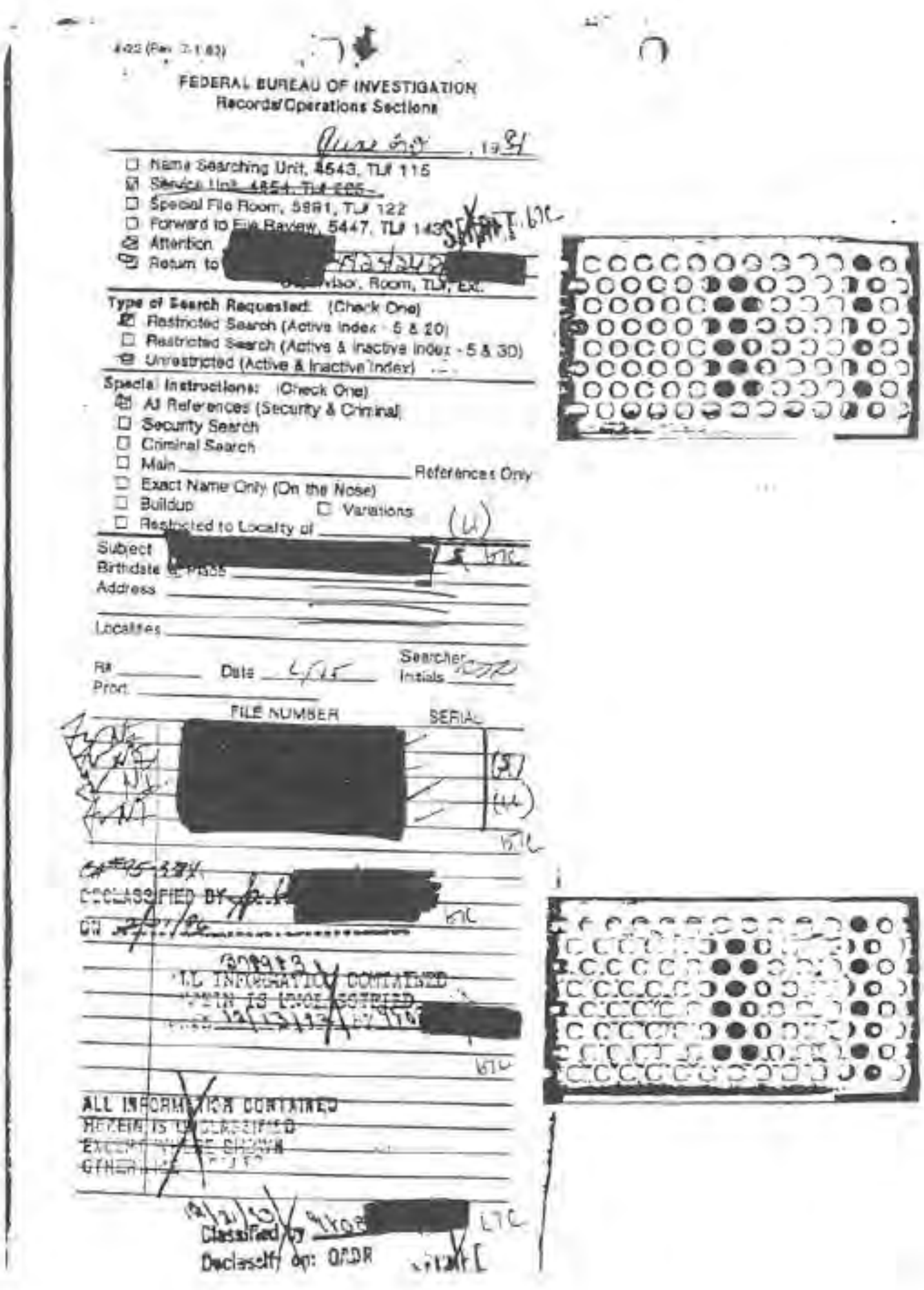
#2495-3354

3/31/96 [illegible]

[redacted]

[redacted]

Document 7: Pages 13-34 of FBI investigation records of the investigation into Robert Maxwell and Information on Demand, obtained via FOIA by Bill Hamilton.



4-22 (Rev. 3-1-83)

FEDERAL BUREAU OF INVESTIGATION
Records/Operations Sections

June 20, 1991

☐ Name Searching Unit, 4543, TL# 115
☑ ~~Service Unit, 4854, TL# 665~~
☐ Special File Room, 5991, TL# 122
☐ Forward to File Review, 5447, TL# 143 SECRET b7C
☒ Attention [redacted]
☒ Return to [redacted] 5B3/3243 [redacted]
Supervisor, Room, TL#, Ext.

Type of Search Requested: (Check One)
☒ Restricted Search (Active Index - 5 & 20)
☐ Restricted Search (Active & Inactive Index - 5 & 30)
☒ Unrestricted (Active & Inactive Index)

Special Instructions: (Check One)
☒ All References (Security & Criminal)
☐ Security Search
☐ Criminal Search
☐ Main ________ References Only
☐ Exact Name Only (On the Nose)
☐ Buildup ☐ Variations
☐ Restricted to Locality of ________ (U)

Subject [redacted] (S) b7C
Birthdate & Place
Address
Localities

R# ________ Date 6/25 Searcher Initials [illegible]
Prod. ________

	FILE NUMBER	SERIAL
	[redacted]	(S) (U)

b7C

CA# 95-334
DECLASSIFIED BY [redacted] b7C
ON 2/1/96

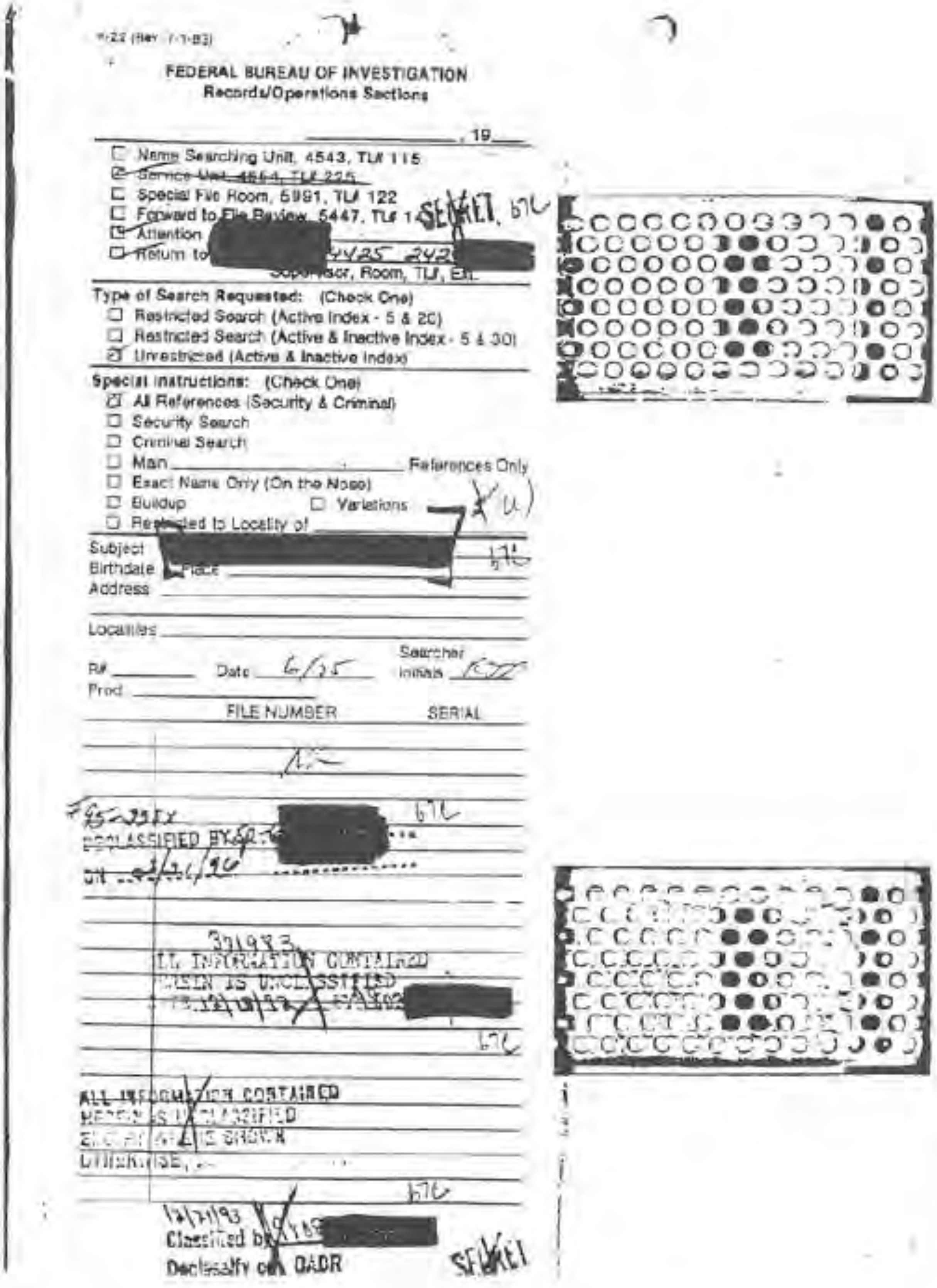
309913
~~ALL INFORMATION CONTAINED HEREIN IS UNCLASSIFIED DATE 12/13/93 BY [redacted]~~

b7C

~~ALL INFORMATION CONTAINED HEREIN IS UNCLASSIFIED EXCEPT WHERE SHOWN OTHERWISE~~

12/21/80 Classified by 9708 [redacted] b7C
Declassify on: OADR SECRET

Document 7: Pages 13-34 of FBI investigation records of the investigation into Robert Maxwell and Information on Demand, obtained via FOIA by Bill Hamilton.



F-22 (Rev. 7-1-83)

FEDERAL BUREAU OF INVESTIGATION
Records/Operations Sections

______________, 19___

☐ Name Searching Unit, 4543, TL# 115
☑ ~~Service Unit, 4564, TL# 225~~
☐ Special File Room, 5991, TL# 122
☐ Forward to File Review, 5447, TL# 1 SECRET, b7C
☑ Attention [redacted]
☐ Return to [redacted] 4425 242 [redacted]
Supervisor, Room, TL#, Ext.

Type of Search Requested: (Check One)
☐ Restricted Search (Active Index - 5 & 20)
☐ Restricted Search (Active & Inactive Index - 5 & 30)
☑ Unrestricted (Active & Inactive Index)

Special Instructions: (Check One)
☑ All References (Security & Criminal)
☐ Security Search
☐ Criminal Search
☐ Main ______________ References Only
☐ Exact Name Only (On the Nose)
☐ Buildup ☐ Variations (U)
☐ Restricted to Locality of ______________

Subject [redacted] b7C
Birthdate & Place ______________
Address ______________

Localities ______________

R# ______ Date 6/25 Searcher Initials KJT
Prod. ______

FILE NUMBER	SERIAL
NR	
65-29EX [redacted]	b7C

DECLASSIFIED BY [redacted]
ON 3/26/96

371993
ALL INFORMATION CONTAINED
HEREIN IS UNCLASSIFIED
DATE 12/21/93 BY [redacted]
b7C

ALL INFORMATION CONTAINED
HEREIN IS UNCLASSIFIED
EXCEPT WHERE SHOWN
OTHERWISE.
b7C

12/21/93
Classified by [redacted]
Declassify on: OADR

SECRET

Document 7: Pages 13-34 of FBI investigation records of the investigation into Robert Maxwell and Information on Demand, obtained via FOIA by Bill Hamilton.

~~SECRET~~

SF [redacted] -s b1

[redacted] s b1

San Francisco taking no further action.

~~SECRET~~

SF [redacted] (s) b1

[redacted] (s)

b1. On 1/21/84, [redacted] advised that the [redacted]

[redacted] (s) b1

~~SECRET~~

Document 7: Pages 13-34 of FBI investigation records of the investigation into Robert Maxwell and Information on Demand, obtained via FOIA by Bill Hamilton.

4-750 (Rev. 11-14-88)

XXXXXX
XXXXXX
XXXXXX

FEDERAL BUREAU OF INVESTIGATION
FOIPA DELETED PAGE INFORMATION SHEET

2 Page(s) withheld entirely at this location in the file. One or more of the following statements, where indicated, explain this deletion.

☐ Deletions were made pursuant to the exemptions indicated below with no segregable material available for release to you.

Section 552		Section 552a
☐ (b)(1)	☐ (b)(7)(A)	☐ (d)(5)
☐ (b)(2)	☐ (b)(7)(B)	☐ (j)(2)
☐ (b)(3)	☐ (b)(7)(C)	☐ (k)(1)
________________	☐ (b)(7)(D)	☐ (k)(2)
________________	☐ (b)(7)(E)	☐ (k)(3)
________________	☐ (b)(7)(F)	☐ (k)(4)
☐ (b)(4)	☐ (b)(8)	☐ (k)(5)
☐ (b)(5)	☐ (b)(9)	☐ (k)(6)
☐ (b)(6)		☐ (k)(7)

☐ Information pertained only to a third party with no reference to you or the subject of your request.

☐ Information pertained only to a third party. Your name is listed in the title only.

☒ Documents originated with another Government agency(ies). These documents were referred to that agency(ies) for review and direct response to you.

____ Pages contain information furnished by another Government agency(ies). You will be advised by the FBI as to the releasability of this information following our consultation with the other agency(ies).

____ Page(s) withheld for the following reason(s): ________________

☐ For your information: ________________

☒ The following number is to be used for reference regarding these pages:

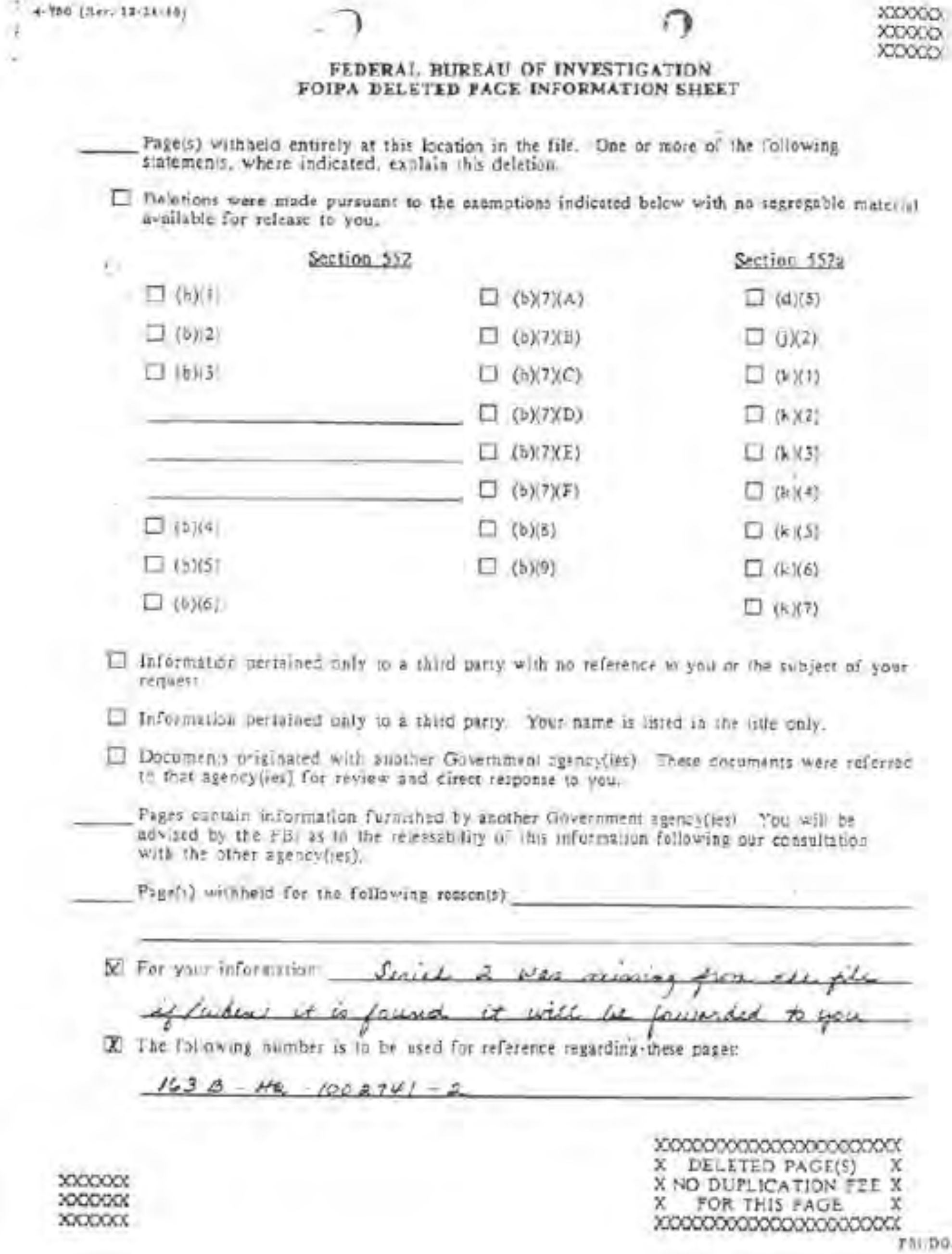
163 B - HQ - 1002741 - 1

XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX
X DELETED PAGE(S) X
X NO DUPLICATION FEE X
X FOR THIS PAGE X
XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX

XXXXXX
XXXXXX
XXXXXX

FBI/DOJ

Document 7: Pages 13-34 of FBI investigation records of the investigation into Robert Maxwell and Information on Demand, obtained via FOIA by Bill Hamilton.



4-750 (Rev. 12-24-88)

XXXXXX
XXXXXX
XXXXXX

FEDERAL BUREAU OF INVESTIGATION
FOIPA DELETED PAGE INFORMATION SHEET

_____ Page(s) withheld entirely at this location in the file. One or more of the following statements, where indicated, explain this deletion.

☐ Deletions were made pursuant to the exemptions indicated below with no segregable material available for release to you.

Section 552		Section 552a
☐ (b)(1)	☐ (b)(7)(A)	☐ (d)(5)
☐ (b)(2)	☐ (b)(7)(B)	☐ (j)(2)
☐ (b)(3)	☐ (b)(7)(C)	☐ (k)(1)
_____	☐ (b)(7)(D)	☐ (k)(2)
_____	☐ (b)(7)(E)	☐ (k)(3)
_____	☐ (b)(7)(F)	☐ (k)(4)
☐ (b)(4)	☐ (b)(8)	☐ (k)(5)
☐ (b)(5)	☐ (b)(9)	☐ (k)(6)
☐ (b)(6)		☐ (k)(7)

☐ Information pertained only to a third party with no reference to you or the subject of your request.

☐ Information pertained only to a third party. Your name is listed in the title only.

☐ Documents originated with another Government agency(ies). These documents were referred to that agency(ies) for review and direct response to you.

_____ Pages contain information furnished by another Government agency(ies). You will be advised by the FBI as to the releasability of this information following our consultation with the other agency(ies).

_____ Page(s) withheld for the following reason(s): _____

☒ For your information: Serial 2 was missing from the file if/when it is found it will be forwarded to you

☒ The following number is to be used for reference regarding these pages:

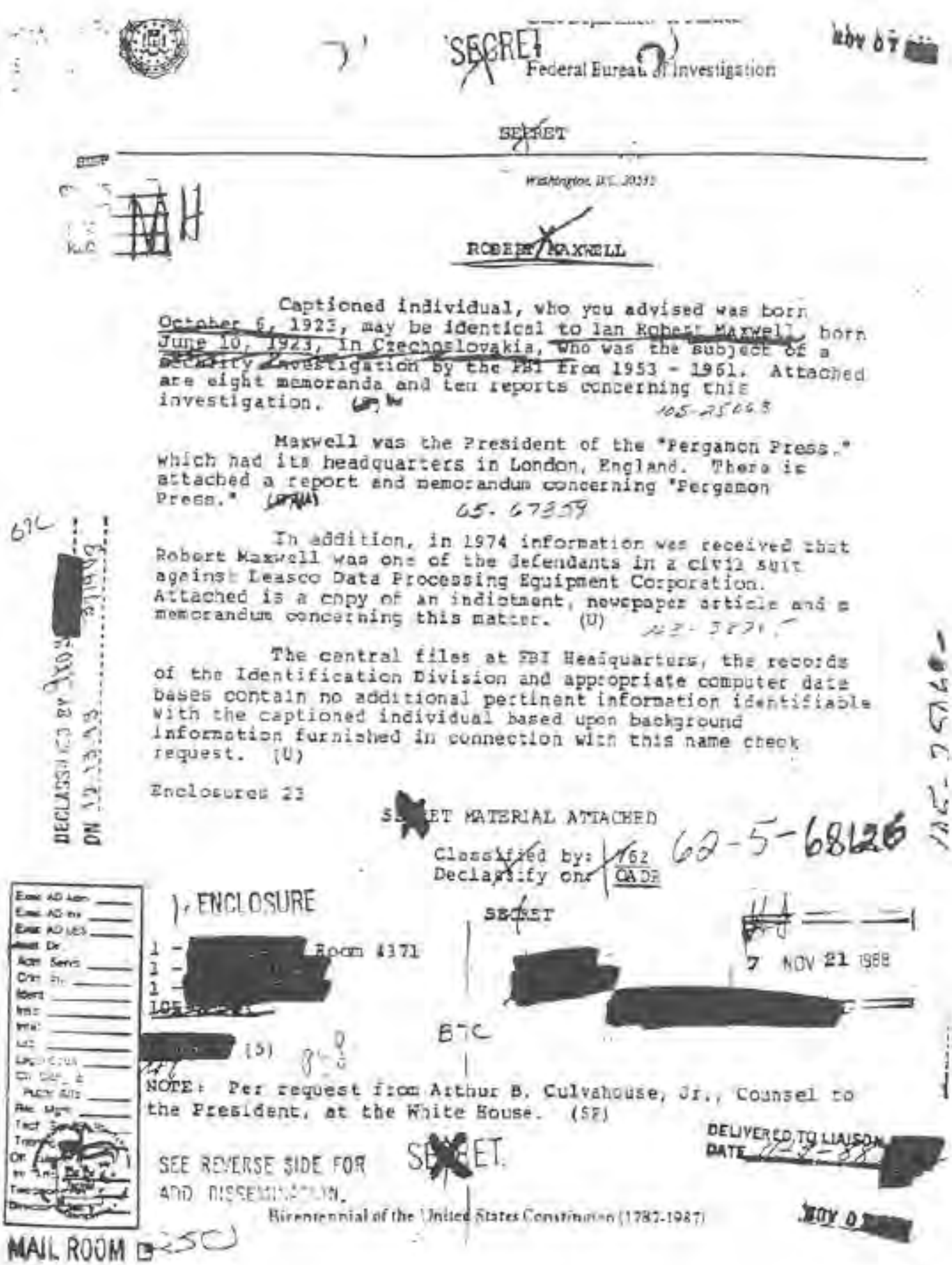
163 B - HQ - 1002741 - 2

XXXXXX
XXXXXX
XXXXXX

XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX
X DELETED PAGE(S) X
X NO DUPLICATION FEE X
X FOR THIS PAGE X
XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX

FBI/DOJ

Document 7: Pages 13-34 of FBI investigation records of the investigation into Robert Maxwell and Information on Demand, obtained via FOIA by Bill Hamilton.



kbv 67 [redacted]

SECRET

Federal Bureau of Investigation

SECRET

Washington, D.C. 20535

MH

ROBERT MAXWELL

Captioned individual, who you advised was born October 6, 1923, may be identical to Ian Robert Maxwell, born June 10, 1923, in Czechoslovakia, who was the subject of a security investigation by the FBI from 1953 - 1961. Attached are eight memoranda and ten reports concerning this investigation. (S) (U) 105-25663

Maxwell was the President of the "Pergamon Press," which had its headquarters in London, England. There is attached a report and memorandum concerning "Pergamon Press." (S) (U) 65-67359

In addition, in 1974 information was received that Robert Maxwell was one of the defendants in a civil suit against Leasco Data Processing Equipment Corporation. Attached is a copy of an indictment, newspaper article and a memorandum concerning this matter. (U) 62-5871

The central files at FBI Headquarters, the records of the Identification Division and appropriate computer data bases contain no additional pertinent information identifiable with the captioned individual based upon background information furnished in connection with this name check request. (U)

Enclosures 23

S[illegible]ET MATERIAL ATTACHED

Classified by: 762
Declassify on: OADR

62-5-68126

67C

DECLASSIFIED BY 9803 [redacted]
ON 12-13-[illegible]

) - ENCLOSURE

SECRET

1 - [redacted] Room 4371
1 - [redacted]
1 - [redacted]
105 [redacted]

[redacted] (5)

[redacted]

[redacted]

7 NOV 21 1988

b7C

NOTE: Per request from Arthur B. Culvahouse, Jr., Counsel to the President, at the White House. (S)

Exec AD Adm. ___
Exec AD Inv. ___
Exec AD LES ___
Asst. Dir.
Adm. Servs. ___
Crim. Inv. ___
Ident. ___
Insp. ___
Intell. ___
Lab. ___
Legal Coun. ___
Off. Cong. & Public Affs. ___
Rec. Mgnt. ___
Tech. Servs. ___
Training ___
Off. Liaison & Int. Affs. ___
Telephone Rm. ___
Director's Sec'y ___

SEE REVERSE SIDE FOR
ADD. DISSEMINATION.

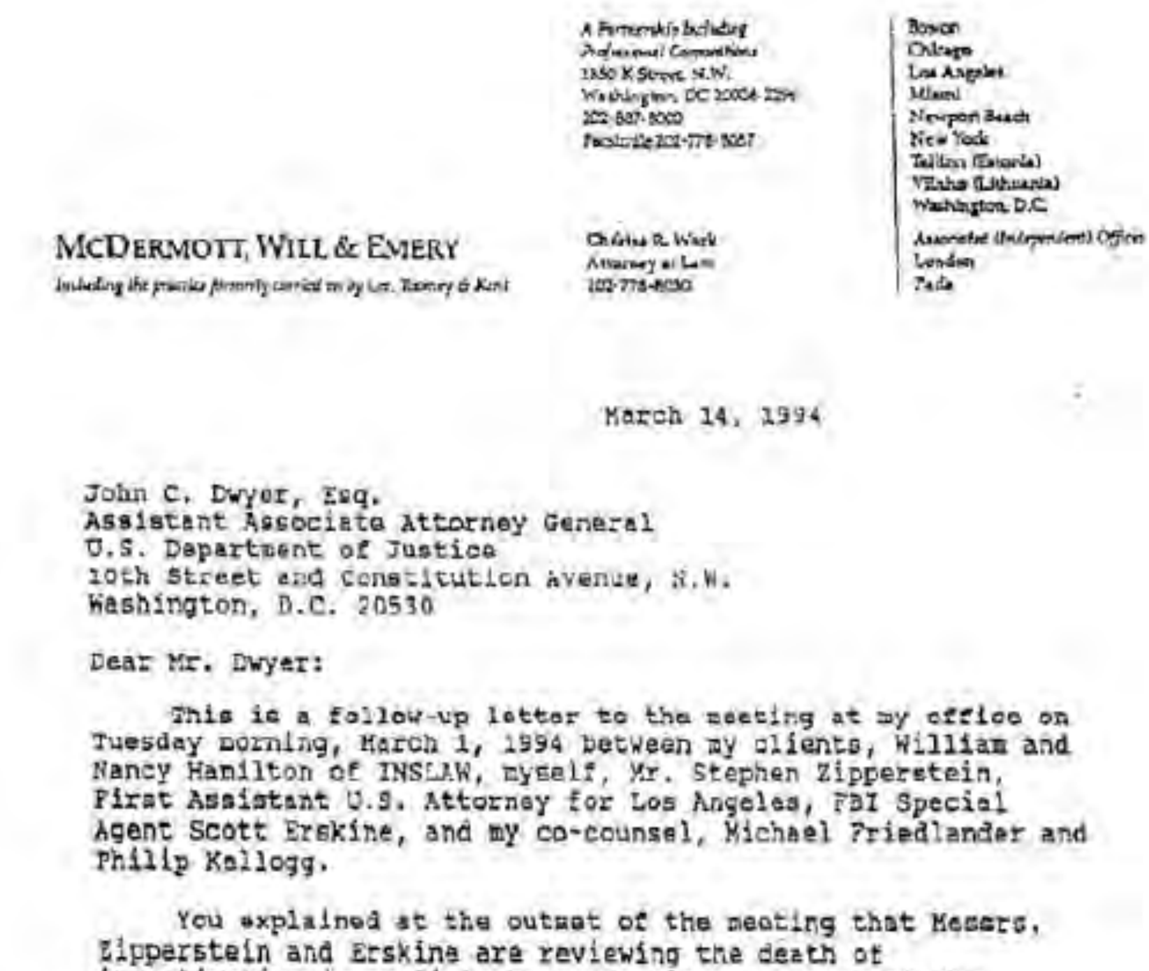
S[illegible]ET.

DELIVERED TO LIAISON
DATE 11-22-88 [redacted]

Bicentennial of the United States Constitution (1787-1987)

MAIL ROOM 250

Document 7: Pages 13-34 of FBI investigation records of the investigation into Robert Maxwell and Information on Demand, obtained via FOIA by Bill Hamilton.



A Partnership Including
Professional Corporations
1850 K Street, N.W.
Washington, DC 20006-2296
202-887-8000
Facsimile 202-778-8087

Boston
Chicago
Los Angeles
Miami
Newport Beach
New York
Tallinn (Estonia)
Vilnius (Lithuania)
Washington, D.C.

McDermott, Will & Emery
Including the practice formerly carried on by Lee, Toomey & Kent

Charles R. Work
Attorney at Law
202-778-8030

Associated (Independent) Offices
London
Paris

March 14, 1994

John C. Dwyer, Esq.
Assistant Associate Attorney General
U.S. Department of Justice
10th Street and Constitution Avenue, N.W.
Washington, D.C. 20530

Dear Mr. Dwyer:

This is a follow-up letter to the meeting at my office on Tuesday morning, March 1, 1994 between my clients, William and Nancy Hamilton of INSLAW, myself, Mr. Stephen Zipperstein, First Assistant U.S. Attorney for Los Angeles, FBI Special Agent Scott Erskine, and my co-counsel, Michael Friedlander and Philip Kellogg.

You explained at the outset of the meeting that Messrs. Zipperstein and Erskine are reviewing the death of investigative journalist, Danny Casolaro, as part of the Justice Department's review of the June 1993 investigative report on INSLAW by its Special Counsel, Nicholas J. Bua.

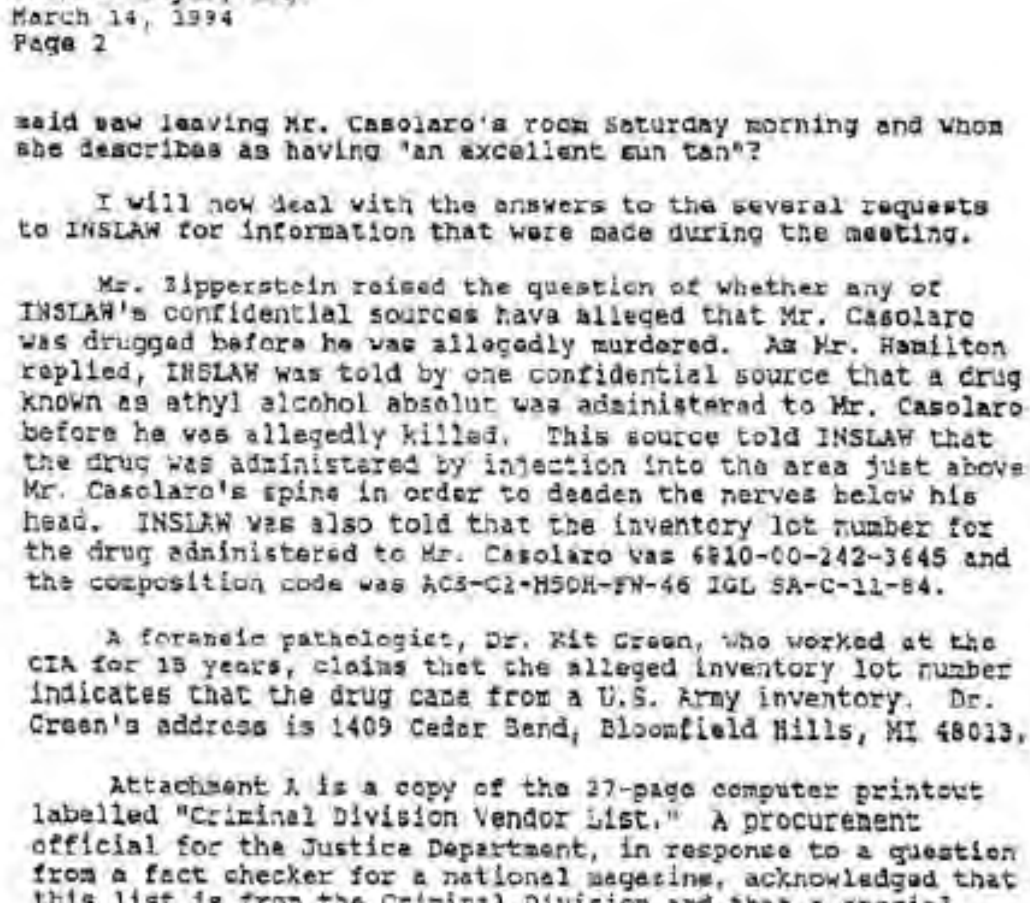
We regard as significant the confirmation from Special Agent Erskine during the meeting that a maid at the Sheraton Hotel in Martinsburg, West Virginia, had seen a man leave Mr. Casolaro's hotel room the Saturday morning of the death. According to Special Agent Erskine, the local police took a statement from the hotel maid in which she gave an eyewitness description of the man she saw leaving the room.

It is our understanding that the description is as follows:

> A male in his 30's, with an excellent sun tan, wearing a fashionable tee-shirt, dark slacks, and deck shoes.

We recall press accounts of Mr. Casolaro's death, which describe him waiting in the hotel bar on Thursday evening for a dark-skinned man. Could that have been the same man whom the

Document 8: A letter from Inslaw Inc.'s lawyer Charles Work to Assistant Associate Attorney General John C. Dwyer regarding the circumstances around the death of journalist Danny Casolaro, March 1994.



said saw leaving Mr. Casolaro's room Saturday morning and whom she describes as having "an excellent sun tan"?

I will now deal with the answers to the several requests to INSLAW for information that were made during the meeting.

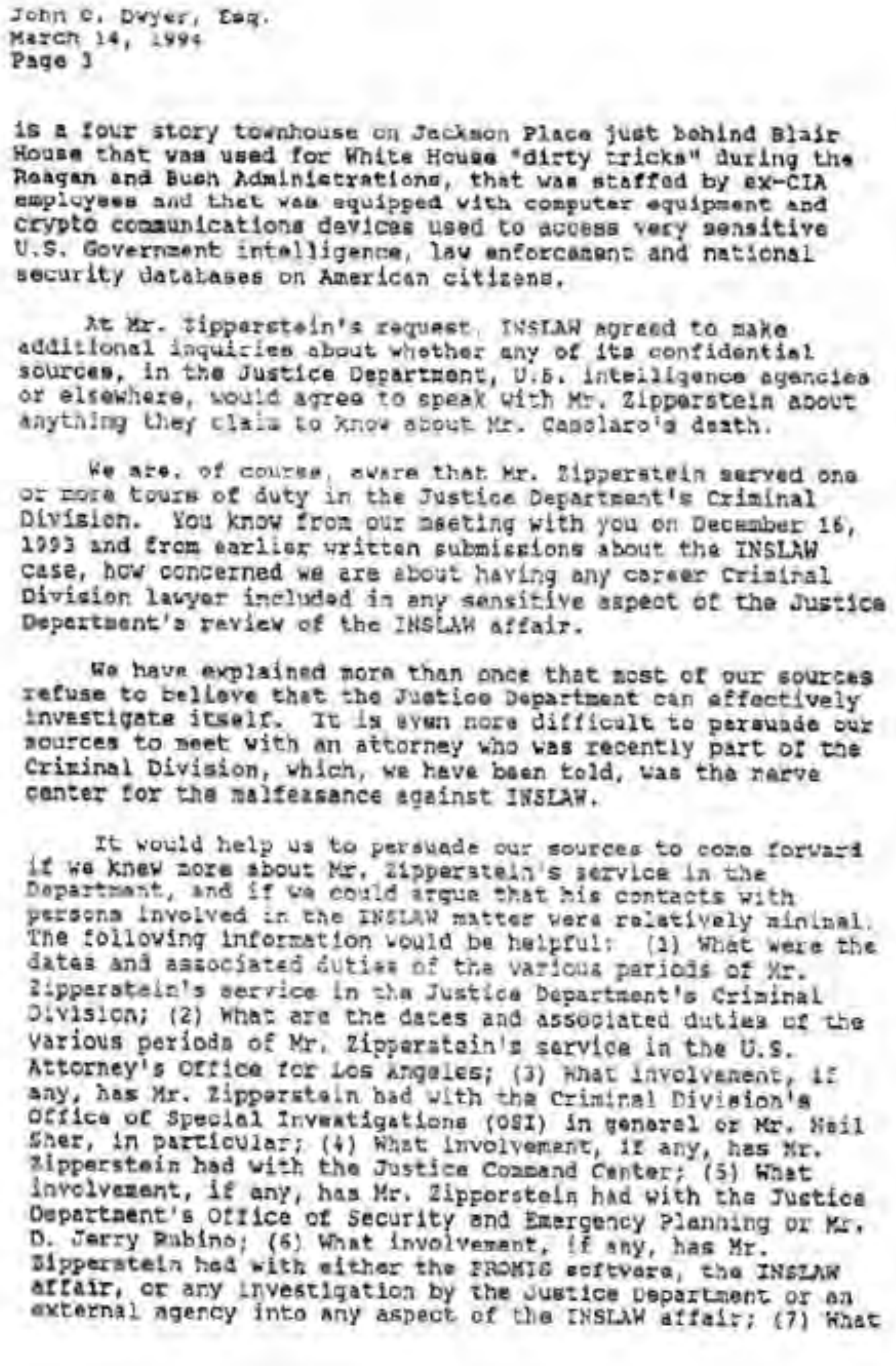
Mr. Bipperstein raised the question of whether any of INSLAW's confidential sources have alleged that Mr. Casolaro was drugged before he was allegedly murdered. As Mr. Hamilton replied, INSLAW was told by one confidential source that a drug known as ethyl alcohol absolut was administered to Mr. Casolaro before he was allegedly killed. This source told INSLAW that the drug was administered by injection into the area just above Mr. Casolaro's spine in order to deaden the nerves below his head. INSLAW was also told that the inventory lot number for the drug administered to Mr. Casolaro was 6810-00-242-3645 and the composition code was ACS-C2-H5OH-FW-46 IGL SA-C-11-84.

A forensic pathologist, Dr. Kit Green, who worked at the CIA for 15 years, claims that the alleged inventory lot number indicates that the drug came from a U.S. Army inventory. Dr. Green's address is 1409 Cedar Bend, Bloomfield Hills, MI 48013.

Attachment A is a copy of the 27-page computer printout labelled "Criminal Division Vendor List." A procurement official for the Justice Department, in response to a question from a fact checker for a national magazine, acknowledged that this list is from the Criminal Division and that a special security clearance is normally required to gain access to it. Upon information and belief, this is a list of commercial organizations that serve as "cutouts" for the Justice Department's own covert intelligence agency, i.e., for the Criminal Division's Office of Special Investigations (OSI). As noted in the February 14, 1994 Addendum, a preliminary analysis has produced information consistent with these claims.

Attachment B is a set of documents relating to Mr. George Pender. Mr. Casolaro had described Mr. Pender to my client as a Los Angeles businessman to whom both Earl Brian and Peter Videnieks effectively reported in connection with the dissemination of stolen copies of the PROMIS software to intelligence entities. As Mr. Hamilton explained during the meeting, Mr. Casolaro, in the final several weeks of his life, confirmed to Mr. Hamilton that he was planning to visit a sensitive facility in Washington, D.C. that Mr. Casolaro said was associated with Mr. Pender. Mr. Hamilton had conveyed to Mr. Casolaro a warning form Mr. Charles Hayes not to visit the facility in question because it could result in Mr. Casolaro's death. According to INSLAW sources, the facility in question

Document 8: A letter from Inslaw Inc.'s lawyer Charles Work to Assistant Associate Attorney General John C. Dwyer regarding the circumstances around the death of journalist Danny Casolaro, March 1994.



is a four story townhouse on Jackson Place just behind Blair House that was used for White House "dirty tricks" during the Reagan and Bush Administrations, that was staffed by ex-CIA employees and that was equipped with computer equipment and crypto communications devices used to access very sensitive U.S. Government intelligence, law enforcement and national security databases on American citizens.

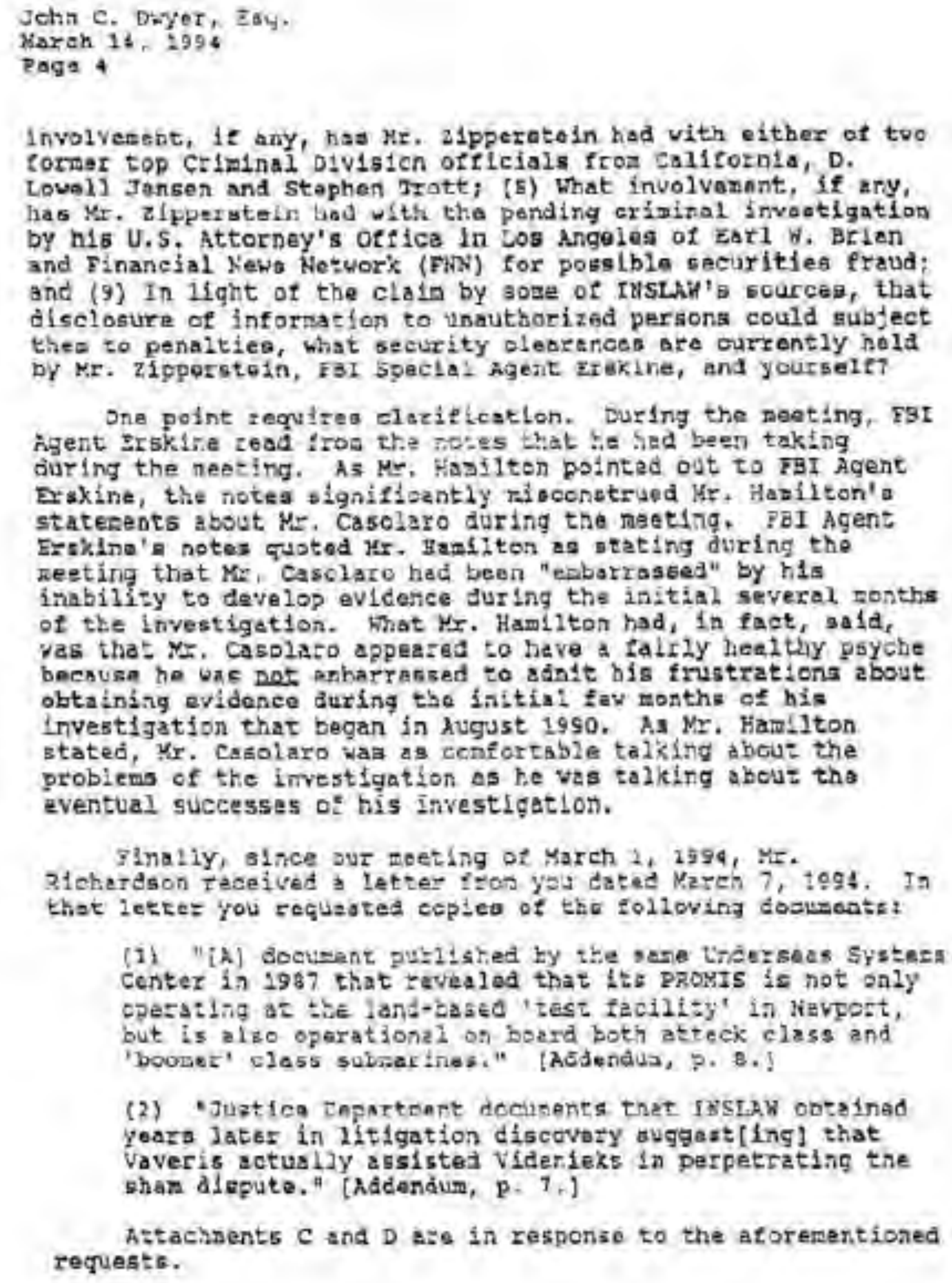
At Mr. Zipperstein's request, INSLAW agreed to make additional inquiries about whether any of its confidential sources, in the Justice Department, U.S. intelligence agencies or elsewhere, would agree to speak with Mr. Zipperstein about anything they claim to know about Mr. Casolaro's death.

We are, of course, aware that Mr. Zipperstein served one or more tours of duty in the Justice Department's Criminal Division. You know from our meeting with you on December 16, 1993 and from earlier written submissions about the INSLAW case, how concerned we are about having any career Criminal Division lawyer included in any sensitive aspect of the Justice Department's review of the INSLAW affair.

We have explained more than once that most of our sources refuse to believe that the Justice Department can effectively investigate itself. It is even more difficult to persuade our sources to meet with an attorney who was recently part of the Criminal Division, which, we have been told, was the nerve center for the malfeasance against INSLAW.

It would help us to persuade our sources to come forward if we knew more about Mr. Zipperstein's service in the Department, and if we could argue that his contacts with persons involved in the INSLAW matter were relatively minimal. The following information would be helpful: (1) What were the dates and associated duties of the various periods of Mr. Zipperstein's service in the Justice Department's Criminal Division; (2) What are the dates and associated duties of the various periods of Mr. Zipperstein's service in the U.S. Attorney's Office for Los Angeles; (3) What involvement, if any, has Mr. Zipperstein had with the Criminal Division's Office of Special Investigations (OSI) in general or Mr. Neil Sher, in particular; (4) What involvement, if any, has Mr. Zipperstein had with the Justice Command Center; (5) What involvement, if any, has Mr. Zipperstein had with the Justice Department's Office of Security and Emergency Planning or Mr. D. Jerry Rubino; (6) What involvement, if any, has Mr. Zipperstein had with either the PROMIS software, the INSLAW affair, or any investigation by the Justice Department or an external agency into any aspect of the INSLAW affair; (7) What

Document 8: A letter from Inslaw Inc.'s lawyer Charles Work to Assistant Associate Attorney General John C. Dwyer regarding the circumstances around the death of journalist Danny Casolaro, March 1994.



involvement, if any, has Mr. Zipperstein had with either of two former top Criminal Division officials from California, D. Lowell Jensen and Stephen Trott; (8) What involvement, if any, has Mr. Zipperstein had with the pending criminal investigation by his U.S. Attorney's Office in Los Angeles of Earl W. Brian and Financial News Network (FNN) for possible securities fraud; and (9) In light of the claim by some of INSLAW's sources, that disclosure of information to unauthorized persons could subject them to penalties, what security clearances are currently held by Mr. Zipperstein, FBI Special Agent Erskine, and yourself?

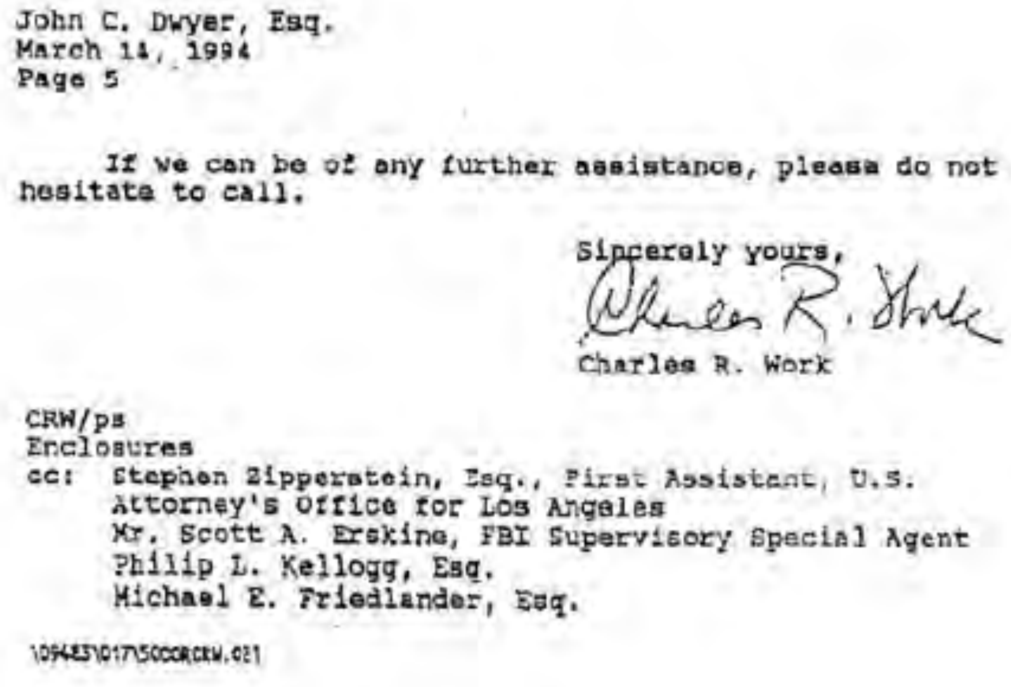
One point requires clarification. During the meeting, FBI Agent Erskine read from the notes that he had been taking during the meeting. As Mr. Hamilton pointed out to FBI Agent Erskine, the notes significantly misconstrued Mr. Hamilton's statements about Mr. Casolaro during the meeting. FBI Agent Erskine's notes quoted Mr. Hamilton as stating during the meeting that Mr. Casolaro had been "embarrassed" by his inability to develop evidence during the initial several months of the investigation. What Mr. Hamilton had, in fact, said, was that Mr. Casolaro appeared to have a fairly healthy psyche because he was not embarrassed to admit his frustrations about obtaining evidence during the initial few months of his investigation that began in August 1990. As Mr. Hamilton stated, Mr. Casolaro was as comfortable talking about the problems of the investigation as he was talking about the eventual successes of his investigation.

Finally, since our meeting of March 1, 1994, Mr. Richardson received a letter from you dated March 7, 1994. In that letter you requested copies of the following documents:

> (1) "[A] document published by the same Undersea Systems Center in 1987 that revealed that its PROMIS is not only operating at the land-based 'test facility' in Newport, but is also operational on board both attack class and 'boomer' class submarines." [Addendum, p. 8.]
>
> (2) "Justice Department documents that INSLAW obtained years later in litigation discovery suggest[ing] that Vaveris actually assisted Videnieks in perpetrating the sham dispute." [Addendum, p. 7.]

Attachments C and D are in response to the aforementioned requests.

Document 8: A letter from Inslaw Inc.'s lawyer Charles Work to Assistant Associate Attorney General John C. Dwyer regarding the circumstances around the death of journalist Danny Casolaro, March 1994.



If we can be of any further assistance, please do not hesitate to call.

Sincerely yours,

Charles R. Work

Charles R. Work

CRW/ps
Enclosures
cc: Stephen Zipperstein, Esq., First Assistant, U.S. Attorney's Office for Los Angeles
Mr. Scott A. Erskine, FBI Supervisory Special Agent
Philip L. Kellogg, Esq.
Michael E. Friedlander, Esq.

\09483\017\5000RCRW.021

Document 8: A letter from Inslaw Inc.'s lawyer Charles Work to Assistant Associate Attorney General John C. Dwyer regarding the circumstances around the death of journalist Danny Casolaro, March 1994.

Approved For Release 2008/07/09 : CIA-RDP85B01152R000600710072-7

D/A Registry
83-4162

Pergamon
International
Information
Corporation

September 6, 1983

83-4435

Director of Central Intelligence
Central Intelligence Agency
Washington, DC 20505

Sir:

Pergamon International Information Corporation is an electronic publishing company with a special interest in computerized patent information. We are exclusive North American representatives for the International Patent Documentation Center in Vienna Austria (INPADOC). INPADOC was founded jointly by the Austrian government and the World Intellectual Property Organization, a specialized agency of the United Nations, to serve as a central authority for the collection and dissemination of official patent information from around the world. At present, patent documents from over fifty national and regional patent offices are represented in the INPADOC files.

Because national patent laws require complete disclosure of the inventor's research, patent information represents the state of the art in any technology and is perhaps the most sensitive indicator of technical and scientific developments trends around the world. Information from the INPADOC files can tell you when and where such development are taking place and who or what organizations are responsible. Studies by the U.S. Patent and Trademark Office and others have determined that 80-90 per cent of the informaton disclosed in patents is not published in any other scientific or technical literature.

A number of special features make the INPADOC files particularly useful as an information resource. For example, titles of patents from Japan, the Soviet Union and most Eastern bloc countries are translated into English. Furthermore, INPADOC is unique in its comprehensive coverage of Eastern bloc and third world countries. Coverage for most of these countries dates from 1973.

This information can be supplied to the CIA in whole or in part, and in any one of several formats, e.g., online, magnetic tapes or microfiche. We would be pleased to meet with

DCI
EXEC
REG

Approved For Release 2008/07/09 : CIA-RDP85B01152R000600710072-7

Document 9: Letter from Pergamon International Information Corporation to CIA director Bill Casey, September 1983.

contained less than half as many names as the list he provided during the committee's subsequent investigation. In its December report on Casey, the committee said that Casey told them he had mistakenly supplied a list of only his clients for the previous two years which he had already supplied to the Office of Government Ethics, though the Committee's questionnaire calls for clients of the previous five years. Casey's original list, and the revised list follow:

Original Client List

Diamond Distributors, Inc.
Bear, Stearns & Co.
Capital Cities Communications
Est. of Jos. E. Ridder, Dec'd
Charles Atwood
Cox & Company
John Foglia Sr.
Kephart Communications Inc.
Environmental Research & Technology
Fidelity Management & Research
Anthony G. A. Fisher
Sidney Colen
Jeremiah Burns, Inc.
Resource Asia
Parr Meadows Racing Association Inc.
Robert Ross
Litco Corp. of New York
Long Island Trust Co.
Promenade Magazines, Inc.
Dr. Irving I. Dardik
Mitchell P. Kobelinski
Fitch Investors Service, Inc.
Armor Products Inc.
Jack Farber
Lauraine G. Smith
Nassau County
King Kullen Grocery Stores
Energy Transition Corp.
Andrew Duell
Milton Zipper
Saudi American Lines Company
The Institute for Economic Affairs
Gladding Corp.
The Wachenhut Corporation
Philip J. Sagona
Housatonic Valley Paper Co.
Servo Corporation of America
Semiconductor Specialists Inc.
S.G. Warburg & Co. Ltd.
Korvettes Inc.
Edward Swanson

Document 10: list of William Casey's legal clients from 1977 untill his appointment as CIA Director in januray 1981 from book Reagan's Class: Portraits of the Present's top One Hundered Officials (Pages 629-632)

Florida Condominium Corp.
The Alternative Educational

REVISED CLIENT LIST

(List of Clients furnished by Rogers & Wells
with respect to which William J. Casey,
who was then affiliated with the firm,
had billable time or otherwise received credit
during the period 1976-1981.)

Alexander & Alexander
The Alternative Education
American Society of Allied Health Professions
H. W. Anderson Products
Armor Products Inc.
Associated Press
Charles N. Atwood
Parley Augustsson
BRS Inc.
Virginia Bacon
Banque de Paris
Ford Bartlett
Bear, Stearns & Co.
Bessemer Trust Company
Sidney B. Bowne & Son
Elwood D. Boynton
Broad Hollow Development
Jeremiah Burns, Inc.
Caesar's World
Capital Cities Communications, Inc.
Central American Pipeline
City of New York
Sidney Colen
Continental Hotels Corporation
Covert & Associates, Inc.
Cox & Company
DWG Corporation
Deak & Co Inc.
Diamond Distributors, Inc.
Andrew Duell
E.T.P.M.
Energy Transition Corp.
Environmental Research & Technology
Jack Farber
Fidelity Management & Research Corp.
Film Corporation of America
Anthony G. A. Fisher
Fitch Investors Service, Inc.
Florida Condominium Corp.

Document 10: list of William Casey's legal clients from 1977 untill his appointment as CIA Director in januray 1981 from book Reagan's Class: Portraits of the Present's top One Hundered Officials (Pages 629-632)

John Foglia
Connie Francis
Mr. and Mrs. Abraham Friedberg
Fulbright & Jaworski (D.C.)
Gamble-Skogmo
Gladding Corp.
Government of Indonesia
Graphic Controls Corp.
Estate of Leonard W. Hall
Housatonic Valley Paper Co.
The Institute of Economic Affairs
International Crude Oil Refining Inc.
Kennecott Copper
Kephart Communications, Inc.
King Kullen Grocery Stores
Mitchell P. Kobelinski
Koren-DoResta
Korvettes
Nicholas Krapf
Litco Corporation of New York
Lockheed Aircraft
Long Island Forum for Technology
Long Island Trust Company
Dominique Maillard
Mastercraft Corp.
Merrill Lynch Hubbard
Merrill Lynch International Bank
Merrill, Lynch, Pierce, Fenner & Smith
Miles Laboratories, Inc.
Moore, Schley, Cameron & Company
U. V. Muscio
NAB Manufacturing Company
NVF Corporation
Nassau County
National Telephone Company
Newfoundland Refining
New York State Employees Retirement Fund
Norse Petroleum A/S
Old Lane International
Owens-Illinois Glass Mfg. Co.
Oyster Bay Foodtown
PAN AM World Airways
Parr Meadows Racing Association
Pertamina
Peter Piffath
J. T. Potter
Maxwell M. Powell
Promenade Magazines, Inc.
Pullman, Inc.
Republic of Korea

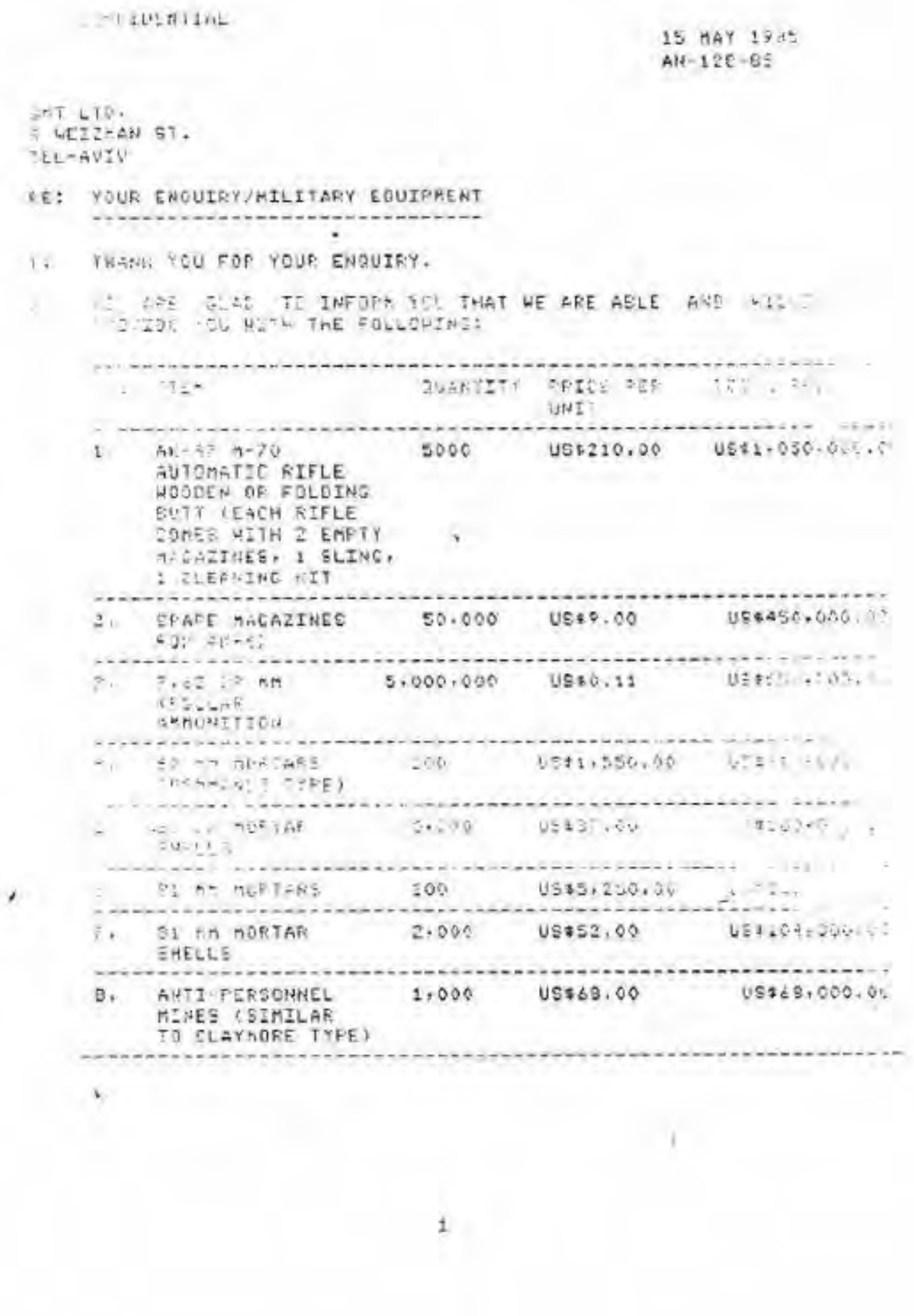
Document 10: list of William Casey's legal clients from 1977 untill his appointment as CIA Director in januray 1981 from book Reagan's Class: Portraits of the Present's top One Hundered Officials (Pages 629-632)

contained less than half as many names as the list he provided during the committee's subsequent investigation. In its December report on Casey, the committee said that Casey told them he had mistakenly supplied a list of only his clients for the previous two years which he had already supplied to the Office of Government Ethics, though the Committee's questionnaire calls for clients of the previous five years. Casey's original list, and the revised list follow:

Original Client List

Diamond Distributors, Inc.
Bear, Stearns & Co.
Capital Cities Communications
Est. of Jos. E. Ridder, Dec'd
Charles Atwood
Cox & Company
John Foglia Sr.
Kephart Communications Inc.
Environmental Research & Technology
Fidelity Management & Research
Anthony G. A. Fisher
Sidney Colen
Jeremiah Burns, Inc.
Resource Asia
Parr Meadows Racing Association Inc.
Robert Ross
Litco Corp. of New York
Long Island Trust Co.
Promenade Magazines, Inc.
Dr. Irving I. Dardik
Mitchell P. Kobelinski
Fitch Investors Service, Inc.
Armor Products Inc.
Jack Farber
Lauraine G. Smith
Nassau County
King Kullen Grocery Stores
Energy Transition Corp.
Andrew Duell
Milton Zipper
Saudi American Lines Company
The Institute for Economic Affairs
Gladding Corp.
The Wachenhut Corporation
Philip J. Sagona
Housatonic Valley Paper Co.
Servo Corporation of America
Semiconductor Specialists Inc.
S.G. Warburg & Co. Ltd.
Korvettes Inc.
Edward Swanson

Document 10: list of William Casey's legal clients from 1977 untill his appointment as CIA Director in januray 1981 from book Reagan's Class: Portraits of the Present's top One Hundered Officials (Pages 629-632)



CONFIDENTIAL

15 MAY 1985
AN-120-85

GMT LTD.
5 WEIZMAN ST.
TEL-AVIV

RE: YOUR ENQUIRY/MILITARY EQUIPMENT

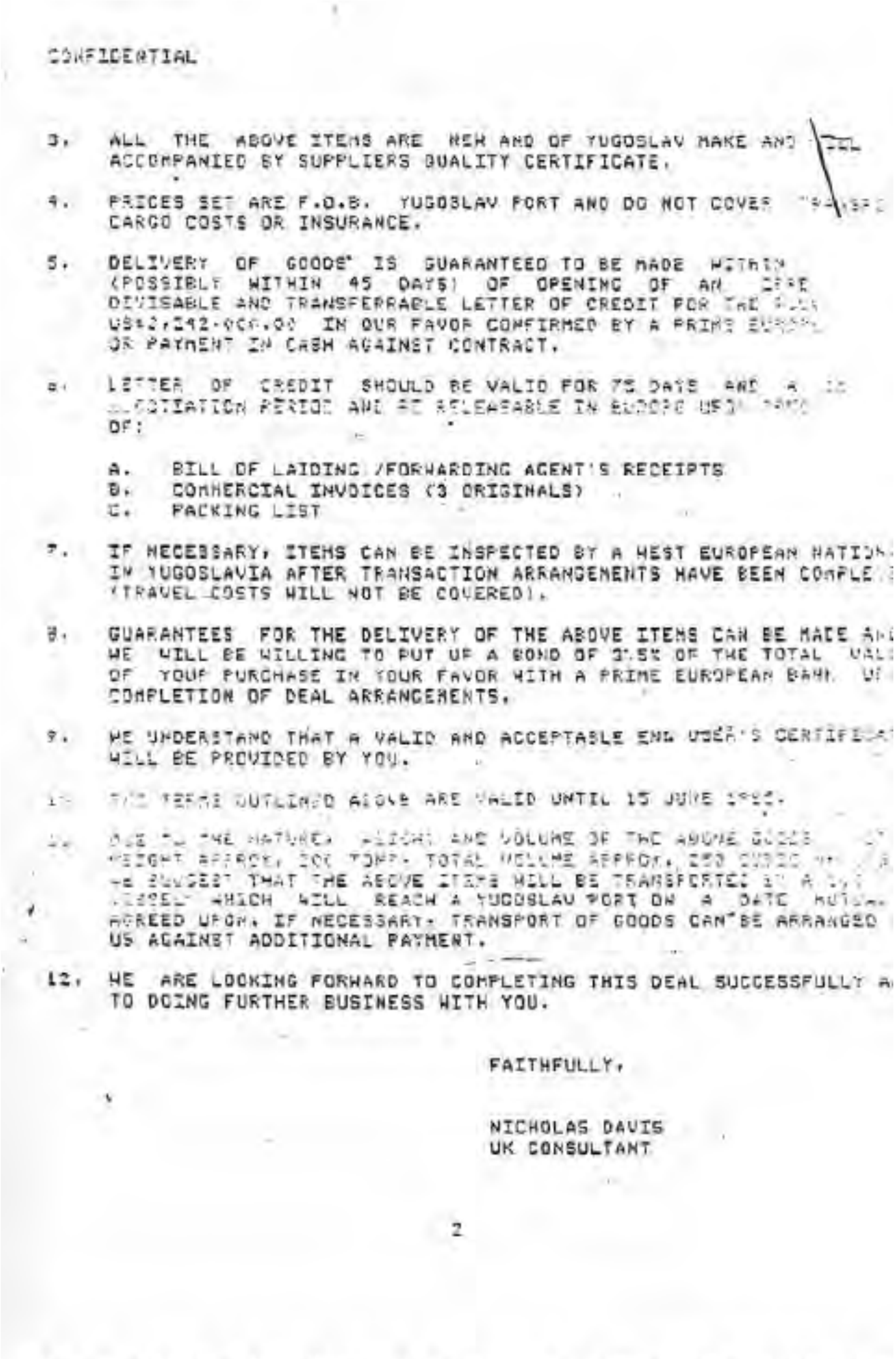
1. THANK YOU FOR YOUR ENQUIRY.

2. WE ARE GLAD TO INFORM YOU THAT WE ARE ABLE AND [illegible] PROVIDE YOU WITH THE FOLLOWING:

NO.	ITEM	QUANTITY	PRICE PER UNIT	[illegible]
1.	AK-47 M-70 AUTOMATIC RIFLE WOODEN OR FOLDING BUTT (EACH RIFLE COMES WITH 2 EMPTY MAGAZINES, 1 SLING, 1 CLEANING KIT	5000	US$210.00	US$1,050,0[illegible]
2.	SPARE MAGAZINES FOR AK-47	50,000	US$9.00	US$450,000.[illegible]
3.	7.62 X 39 MM REGULAR AMMUNITION	5,000,000	US$0.11	US$[illegible]
4.	60 MM MORTARS (COMMANDO TYPE)	200	US$1,550.00	[illegible]
5.	60 MM MORTAR SHELLS	[illegible]	US$3[illegible]	[illegible]
6.	81 MM MORTARS	100	US$5,250.00	[illegible]
7.	81 MM MORTAR SHELLS	2,000	US$52.00	US$104,000.[illegible]
8.	ANTI-PERSONNEL MINES (SIMILAR TO CLAYMORE TYPE)	1,000	US$68.00	US$68,000.0[illegible]

1

Document 11: Letter from Nicholas Davies (also signed "Davis") to GMT Ltd., dated May 15, 1985. From Ari Ben-Menashe's *Profits of War*.



CONFIDENTIAL

3. ALL THE ABOVE ITEMS ARE NEW AND OF YUGOSLAV MAKE AND WIL
ACCOMPANIED BY SUPPLIERS QUALITY CERTIFICATE.

4. PRICES SET ARE F.O.B. YUGOSLAV PORT AND DO NOT COVER TRANSFE
CARGO COSTS OR INSURANCE.

5. DELIVERY OF GOODS IS GUARANTEED TO BE MADE WITHIN
(POSSIBLY WITHIN 45 DAYS) OF OPENING OF AN IRRE
DIVISABLE AND TRANSFERRABLE LETTER OF CREDIT FOR THE FULL
US$2,292,000.00 IN OUR FAVOR CONFIRMED BY A PRIME EUROP
OR PAYMENT IN CASH AGAINST CONTRACT.

6. LETTER OF CREDIT SHOULD BE VALID FOR 75 DAYS AND A [illegible]
NEGOTIATION PERIOD AND BE RELEASABLE IN EUROPE UPON PRES
OF:

   A. BILL OF LAIDING /FORWARDING AGENT'S RECEIPTS
   B. COMMERCIAL INVOICES (3 ORIGINALS)
   C. PACKING LIST

7. IF NECESSARY, ITEMS CAN BE INSPECTED BY A WEST EUROPEAN NATION
IN YUGOSLAVIA AFTER TRANSACTION ARRANGEMENTS HAVE BEEN COMPLE
(TRAVEL COSTS WILL NOT BE COVERED).

8. GUARANTEES FOR THE DELIVERY OF THE ABOVE ITEMS CAN BE MADE AND
WE WILL BE WILLING TO PUT UP A BOND OF 3.5% OF THE TOTAL VAL
OF YOUR PURCHASE IN YOUR FAVOR WITH A PRIME EUROPEAN BANK UP
COMPLETION OF DEAL ARRANGEMENTS.

9. WE UNDERSTAND THAT A VALID AND ACCEPTABLE END USER'S CERTIFICA
WILL BE PROVIDED BY YOU.

10. THE TERMS OUTLINED ABOVE ARE VALID UNTIL 15 JUNE 1985.

11. DUE TO THE NATURE, WEIGHT AND VOLUME OF THE ABOVE GOODS [illegible]
WEIGHT APPROX. [illegible] TONS, TOTAL VOLUME APPROX. [illegible] CUBIC M
WE SUGGEST THAT THE ABOVE ITEMS WILL BE TRANSPORTED BY A [illegible]
VESSEL WHICH WILL REACH A YUGOSLAV PORT ON A DATE MUTUA
AGREED UPON. IF NECESSARY, TRANSPORT OF GOODS CAN BE ARRANGED
US AGAINST ADDITIONAL PAYMENT.

12. WE ARE LOOKING FORWARD TO COMPLETING THIS DEAL SUCCESSFULLY A
TO DOING FURTHER BUSINESS WITH YOU.

FAITHFULLY,

NICHOLAS DAVIS
UK CONSULTANT

2

Document 11: Letter from Nicholas Davies (also signed "Davis") to GMT Ltd., dated May 15, 1985. From Ari Ben-Menashe's *Profits of War*.

contained less than half as many names as the list he provided during the committee's subsequent investigation. In its December report on Casey, the committee said that Casey told them he had mistakenly supplied a list of only his clients for the previous two years which he had already supplied to the Office of Government Ethics, though the Committee's questionnaire calls for clients of the previous five years. Casey's original list, and the revised list follow:

Original Client List

Diamond Distributors, Inc.
Bear, Stearns & Co.
Capital Cities Communications
Est. of Jos. E. Ridder, Dec'd
Charles Atwood
Cox & Company
John Foglia Sr.
Kephart Communications Inc.
Environmental Research & Technology
Fidelity Management & Research
Anthony G. A. Fisher
Sidney Colen
Jeremiah Burns, Inc.
Resource Asia
Parr Meadows Racing Association Inc.
Robert Ross
Litco Corp. of New York
Long Island Trust Co.
Promenade Magazines, Inc.
Dr. Irving I. Dardik
Mitchell P. Kobelinski
Fitch Investors Service, Inc.
Armor Products Inc.
Jack Farber
Lauraine G. Smith
Nassau County
King Kullen Grocery Stores
Energy Transition Corp.
Andrew Duell
Milton Zipper
Saudi American Lines Company
The Institute for Economic Affairs
Gladding Corp.
The Wachenhut Corporation
Philip J. Sagona
Housatonic Valley Paper Co.
Servo Corporation of America
Semiconductor Specialists Inc.
S.G. Warburg & Co. Ltd.
Korvettes Inc.
Edward Swanson

Doctment 10: List of Casey's legal clients from 1976 until his appointment as CIA Director in Januray 1981, from the book *Regan's class: Portrats of President's Top One Hundered Officials* (pp 629-632)

Florida Condominium Corp.
The Alternative Educational

REVISED CLIENT LIST

(List of Clients furnished by Rogers & Wells
with respect to which William J. Casey,
who was then affiliated with the firm,
had billable time or otherwise received credit
during the period 1976-1981.)

Alexander & Alexander
The Alternative Education
American Society of Allied Health Professions
H. W. Anderson Products
Armor Products Inc.
Associated Press
Charles N. Atwood
Parley Augustsson
BRS Inc.
Virginia Bacon
Banque de Paris
Ford Bartlett
Bear, Stearns & Co.
Bessemer Trust Company
Sidney B. Bowne & Son
Elwood D. Boynton
Broad Hollow Development
Jeremiah Burns, Inc.
Caesar's World
Capital Cities Communications, Inc.
Central American Pipeline
City of New York
Sidney Colen
Continental Hotels Corporation
Covert & Associates, Inc.
Cox & Company
DWG Corporation
Deak & Co Inc.
Diamond Distributors, Inc.
Andrew Duell
E.T.P.M.
Energy Transition Corp.
Environmental Research & Technology
Jack Farber
Fidelity Management & Research Corp.
Film Corporation of America
Anthony G. A. Fisher
Fitch Investors Service, Inc.
Florida Condominium Corp.

Doctment 10: List of Casey's legal clients from 1976 until his appointment as CIA Director in Januray 1981, from the book *Regan's class: Portrats of President's Top One Hundered Officials* (pp 629-632)

John Foglia
Connie Francis
Mr. and Mrs. Abraham Friedberg
Fulbright & Jaworski (D.C.)
Gamble-Skogmo
Gladding Corp.
Government of Indonesia
Graphic Controls Corp.
Estate of Leonard W. Hall
Housatonic Valley Paper Co.
The Institute of Economic Affairs
International Crude Oil Refining Inc.
Kennecott Copper
Kephart Communications, Inc.
King Kullen Grocery Stores
Mitchell P. Kobelinski
Koren-DoResta
Korvettes
Nicholas Krapf
Litco Corporation of New York
Lockheed Aircraft
Long Island Forum for Technology
Long Island Trust Company
Dominique Maillard
Mastercraft Corp.
Merrill Lynch Hubbard
Merrill Lynch International Bank
Merrill, Lynch, Pierce, Fenner & Smith
Miles Laboratories, Inc.
Moore, Schley, Cameron & Company
U. V. Muscio
NAB Manufacturing Company
NVF Corporation
Nassau County
National Telephone Company
Newfoundland Refining
New York State Employees Retirement Fund
Norse Petroleum A/S
Old Lane International
Owens-Illinois Glass Mfg. Co.
Oyster Bay Foodtown
PAN AM World Airways
Parr Meadows Racing Association
Pertamina
Peter Piffath
J. T. Potter
Maxwell M. Powell
Promenade Magazines, Inc.
Pullman, Inc.
Republic of Korea

Doctment 10: List of Casey's legal clients from 1976 until his appointment as CIA Director in Januray 1981, from the book *Regan's class: Portrats of President's Top One Hundered Officials* (pp 629-632)

Resource Asia
Reynolds Construction Company
Estate of Joseph E. Ridder
Robert Ross/East-Europe Domestic International Sales Corp.
SCA Services, Inc.
Philip J. Sagona
Saudi American Lines
Scientific Life Systems (Dr. Irving Dardik)
Howard Sears, Jr.
Semiconductor Specialists, Inc.
Servo Corporation of America
Shaheen Natural Resources
Abraham Shames
Sharon Steel Company
Sloan Valve Company
Lauraine G. Smith
Edward Swanson
Tennessee Partners, Ltd.
Ter Bush & Powell, Inc.
Trubin, Sillcocks, Edelman
Twentieth Century Fox
Walter Van der Waag
Joseph F. Virdone
Wachenhut Corp.
S. G. Warburg & Company, Ltd.
David Westerman
Wilmer, Cutler & Pickering
Milton Zipper

Casey's financial disclosure form, listing assets and liabilities was also revised as the year went along. In his January 8, 1981 filing with the Office of Government Ethics, Casey and his wife listed assets of at least $3.085 million, including holdings of $100,000 or greater in: Prentice Hall, C&D Associates, Capital Cities Communications, Philip Morris, Raychem Corp., Amarex, Inc., Apache Corp., Dome Petroleum, Kerr McGee, Southland Royalty, Standard Oil of Indiana, Superior Oil, and Schlumberger Ltd. The couple reported holdings of $50,000 or more in Georgia Pacific, Data Point Corp., IBM, Englehard Minerals & Chemicals, Atlantic Richfield, Mesa Royalty Trust Unit, Halliburton, Intel Corp., and two trusts related to Southland; with smaller holdings in Exxon, Alcoa, DuPont, Amax, Armco, and other firms. He listed no liabilities, nor any gifts.

In August, 1981, though, Casey amended his filing to add 10 additional assets worth more than $145,000, and several liabilities (loan guarantees) worth $472,000 as well as a direct liability of $18,000. A few weeks earlier Jeff Gerth of the *New York Times* revealed that Casey had received as a gift a $10,000 interest in Penverter Partners, a computer technology firm. Casey was given the stock by Carl G. Paffendorf, who described himself as a frequent business associate.

Unlike his two predecessors, George Bush and Admiral Stansfield Turner, who placed their holdings in blind trusts, Casey has kept control of his stocks. "I don't see why I should be picked on," Casey said when we asked about his decision. "The law is the law; it's a clear cut law as to what you have to do with your stocks and I'm

Doctment 10: List of Casey's legal clients from 1976 until his appointment as CIA Director in Januray 1981, from the book *Regan's class: Portrats of President's Top One Hundered Officials (pp 629-632)*

Index

Abbell, Mike 404, 405, 429
Abdullah Taha Bakhsh 371, 372
Abedi, Agha Hasan 269-272, 275-277, 279, 329, 395
Abrams, Creighton 164
Accompura, Tullius 164
Adams, Sherman 151
Adham, Kamal 78, 219, 274, 281
Adkinson, Mike 326, 338
Adonis, Joey 27, 72
Afonin, A 408
Aharon, Ben 82
Ahmad, Sani 234, 271
Air America 19, 154, 163, 210, 287, 408
Air Asia 399, 427
Aiton, Gordon 343
Ajax Oil Company 137
Albarelli, Hank 14, 38, 147, 265
Albritton, Joe L. 217
al-Fayed, Mohamed 243
Allen, Charles 140, 141, 441
Allen, Herbert 385, 410
Allen & Co. 140, 385, 410, 441
Allende, Salvador 165
Allen, Gary 170
Allen, George 151
Allen, Richard 66, 159
Allen, Robert H. 216, 261
Allied Bancshare 2, 13, 173, 185, 215, 216, 381
al-Shahati, Ahmad 234
Altman, Robert 275, 276, 282, 319, 396
American Bankers Life Assurance 21, 157
American Bank & Trust 83, 95
American Conservative 117, 145, 425
American Federation of Labor and the Congress of Industrial Organizations (AFL-CIO) 158, 195, 202, 224
American Financial Corporation 244
American-Indonesian Corporation 139
American Institute of Free Labor Development (AIFLD) 444, 460
American International Group (AIG) 365-368, 377, 378
American National Insurance Company (ANICO) 137, 157, 239, 240, 342, 368
AmeriCares 320, 441, 443-445, 447
Amoss, Ulius 136
An Affair of State 132
Anastasia, Albert 72
Anastasi, Paul 409
Andersen, Harold 160, 190, 448
Anderson, Jack 133, 167, 171-173, 191, 196, 241, 259, 277, 340, 373, 462
Anderson, Randy 277
Anderson, Robert B. 80, 353, 355

Anderson, Robert O. 218, 219, 261
Anderson Security 176
Andropov, Yuri 278
Angleton, James J. 60, 118, 175
Anglo-Iranian Oil Company 12
Anslinger, Harry J. 15, 16, 103
API Distributors 205, 206, 212
Arazi, Yehuda 70-73, 82
Arbusto Energy 371
Arkansas Development Finance Authority (ADFA) 361-363, 365-367, 376
Arkansas Housing Development Authority 361
Armstrong, David 331-334, 370, 372, 373, 378, 379
Arnon, Joel 295
Aroundworld Shipping & Charting 166, 189, 206
Artime, Manuel 212
Arum, Robert 121
Arundel, Arthur 172
Arzu, Alejos 445
Ashley, Chester 358
Aspinall, John 130
Aspin, Michael and Leslie 308, 309
Assia, Yehuda 83, 95
Astor, Vincent 8, 132
Atlas Corporation 28, 29, 75-77, 90, 175
ATLAS dossier 310-313, 336, 416, 431
Attie, James 78
Aubin, George 351, 375
Avery, Jake 24, 25, 32
Aviation Industries Association (AIA) 152
Avirgan, Tony 348, 373
Ayres, Gene 32, 40, 429
Azima, Farhad 210, 211, 267, 408
B
Bailey, Norman 395
Bailley, Phillip 183, 184, 186-188
Baird, David G. 25, 140, 141, 454, 462
Baird Foundation 140, 454, 462
Baker, Bernard 174
Baker, Bobby 172, 183, 184
Baker, Howard 403
Baker, Russ 217, 218, 260, 278, 330, 370, 371
Balach, Paul R. 452
Baldwin, Alfred 182
Ball, Ed 236, 237
Ballesteros, Juan Matta 290, 341, 400
Banca Nazionale del Lavoro (BNL) 92, 308, 317-321, 337
Banco Ambrosiano 92, 308, 317
Bandar bin Sultan 217
Banerjee, Ben 308, 309
Bank for Commerce and Credit International 241
Bank Leumi 86, 90, 441

Bank of America 77, 272, 275, 277, 280, 356
Bank of Commerce and Credit International 235, 269
Bank of Credit and Commercial International 220
Bank of New York (BNY) 353
Bank of New York (BONY) 419-423, 432
Bank of Perrine 34, 236
Bank of the Southwest 189, 215
Bank of World Commerce (BWC) 34, 75, 76, 185
Bank van Embden 230, 231
Banque de Commerce et de Placements (BCP) 372
Banque Privée 231
Banque Worms 308, 317
Barak, Ehud 83, 95
Barcella, Lawrence 208
Barnes, Ben 184, 260, 357
Baron Rothschild 231
Barr, William 207, 349, 350, 406, 433, 451, 462
Barry, E.P. 34, 85, 213, 228, 253, 333, 340, 341, 342, 343, 344, 347, 349, 352, 373, 428, 436
Baskes, Roger S. 33
Bass family 355
Bassile, Darryl 442
Bath, James R 277, 278, 291, 371
Batista, Fulgencio 75
Battisti y Lora, Amleto 15
BCCI (Bank of Credit and Commerce International) 78, 79, 86, 92, 95, 150-152, 217, 220, 221, 224, 225, 235, 261, 269-282, 286, 298, 300, 301, 304-306, 309, 312, 313, 315, 317, 318, 321, 322, 329, 330, 333-338, 349, 353, 356, 368, 371, 372, 379, 394-397, 404, 407, 409, 410, 419, 427, 433, 447
Bear Stearns 216, 245, 441, 443, 456
Beaty, Jonathan 95, 269-271, 278, 329, 330
Bechtel Corporation 314-317, 320, 336, 337, 357, 401, 443
Beck, Dave 342
Beckerman, Edith 26, 438
Beckley, Gilbert Lee 185
Beebe, Herman 184, 212, 213, 215, 260, 338, 352, 363, 375, 376
Beidas, Yousef 77, 78
Bellini, Fulvio 92
Benelie, David 124, 312
Benex International Co. 418, 419, 422
Ben-Gurion, David 70, 83
Ben-Menashe, Ari 295, 318, 332, 333, 337, 351, 384, 390, 428
Bennett, Robert 175, 179
Bentrovato, Anthony 248
Bentsen, Lan 278
Bentsen, Lloyd 214, 278
Berezovsky, Boris 418, 423
Berezovsky, Igor and Oleg 418
Bergt, Phil 218
Berlin, Peter 419
Berlin, Richard 135, 161, 381
Bernstein, Carl 179
Bernstein, Nahum 71

Bernstein, Raphael 216
Berrellez, Hector 290
Bevan, David 455, 456, 463
Beverly Enterprises 362, 366
Bichler, Shimshon 83, 95
Biedenkopf, Kurt 449
Biegun, Dov 89, 97
Biner, Maureen (Dean) 183, 188
bin Mahfouz, Khalid 277, 278, 371, 394
Bird, William H. 18, 20
Bird, Willis 18, 20
Black, Eli 444
Black, Eric 457, 463
Black, Fred Jr. 184
Black, Leon 444
Blakemore, William III 213
Blandón, José 209, 283, 284
Blick, Roy 175, 177, 186
Blinken, Anthony 409
Block, Alan 33, 40, 77, 80, 81, 84, 94, 96, 147, 198, 230, 231, 237, 249, 262, 263, 266, 297, 315, 316, 329, 330, 332, 333, 336, 356, 375, 376, 378, 379, 421, 422, 431, 432
Bloomfield, Bernard 90
Bloomfield, Louis Mortimer 86-90, 97, 140, 148
B'nai B'rith International 79, 229, 261, 439, 440, 459
Boas, Roger 312, 313
Bobby and J. Edgar: The Historic Face-Off Between the Kennedys and J. Edgar Hoover That Transformed America 61, 67, 68
Bobolas, George 408, 409
Bode, William 324, 348
Boesky, Ivan 246, 265, 447
Boeynants, Paul Vanden 312, 313
Bofors-Nobel 307, 318, 321
Bohlen, Charles 116
Bolan, Tom 120, 436, 441, 444, 458
Bonacci, Paul 448, 453
Bon Ami company 137-140, 147
Bower, Tom 415, 430
Boyer, Eli 121, 122, 138
Breaking the Banks 343, 373
Brennan, Earl 5, 285
Brenneke, Richard 214, 296, 325, 351
Brenner, Marie 435, 458
Brewer, C. Madison “Brick” 384
Brewer, James W. 239, 240, 241
Brewton, Pete 130, 198, 211-214, 254, 259, 260, 264, 265, 267, 305, 326, 330, 331, 334, 335, 337, 338, 353, 375, 376, 377, 446, 461
Brezhnev, Leonid 278
Brian, Earl 363, 384, 385, 387, 390, 391, 404-406, 410, 411, 428
Brill, Joseph 38, 123
British Security Coordination (BSC) 6, 7, 8
Broady, John G. “Steve” 136, 137, 147

Broderick, Joseph 109
Broman, Harry 42
Bronfman, Abe 44
Bronfman, Charles 25, 70
Bronfman Dynasty: The Rothschilds of the New World 44, 66, 69, 87, 94, 333, 337
Bronfman, Edgar 41, 79, 250, 266, 440
Bronfman family 13, 42, 44, 45, 46, 47, 49, 50, 51, 52, 87, 140, 333
Bronfman, Harry 44, 45
Bronfman, Mindel and Yechiel 41
Bronfmans 13, 41-51, 66, 67, 87, 369, 402
Bronfman, Samuel 42, 43, 46-52, 54, 55, 66, 69, 94, 319
Brooklyn Eagle 13, 194
Brooks, Jack 406
Brotherhood of Eternal Love 33
Brown, Anthony Cave 222, 262
Brown, L.D. 29, 95, 131, 222, 262, 329, 330, 333, 335, 336, 337, 347, 374, 377, 462
Brown, Pat 29
Bruce, David K. E. 129, 132, 226, 227, 250
Brull, Sergio 326, 327, 377
Bruno, Angelo 129
Bryant, Nick 374, 445, 446, 452, 453, 461, 462
Brzezinski, Zbigniew 444, 448
Bua, Nicholas 406, 429, 433
Bua report 406, 433
Buccieri, Fiore “Fifi” 31
Buccieri, Frank 31
Buchalter, Louis “Lepke” 103, 104
Buckley, William 298
Buckley, William F. 136, 156, 228, 435, 436
Buhler, Alfred 351
Buhl, Henry III 231
Bull, Gerald 318, 319, 337
Burmah Oil 12, 237, 238
Bursten, Leonard 83
Bush, Barbara 445
Bush, George H.W. 88, 97, 131, 153, 160, 205, 207, 213, 215, 216, 218, 254, 261, 276, 277, 282, 283, 319, 324-326, 331, 334, 339, 344, 349, 370, 371, 376, 382, 398, 406, 411, 433, 443, 444, 445, 447, 451, 460
Bush, George W. 218, 260, 277, 344, 368, 371
Bush, Jeb 325, 344
Bush, Neil 331, 376, 447
Bush, Prescott 131
Bush, Prescott Jr. 444
Butler, George A. 216, 232
Byrne, Terry 318, 331, 373
C
Cabazon Indian Reservation 338, 363, 364, 390, 391, 393, 402
Cabrera, Pepe 323
Caccia, Harold 135
Caddy, Douglas 136, 147, 156
Calero, Mario 285, 323, 325, 444

Calhoun, Ricky-Dale 71, 94
Calia, Vincenzo 92
Califano, Joseph Jr. 177-179, 191, 193, 197, 199, 249, 266
Calvi, Roberto 317
Camarena, Enrique “Kiki” 290
Cameron, David 13
Capaldi, Leonard 240
Capell, Frank 170
Capone, Al 4, 24, 26, 53
Cardoen, Carlos 318, 337
Carey, Edward 237, 303, 354
Carey Energy 237, 238, 239, 251
Carey, Hugh 237, 303, 441
Carey, Martin 237, 303
Carl M. Loeb, Rhoades & Co 266, 356
Carlson, Roy 275, 277
Carmen, David 447
Carolla, Silvestro “Silver Dollar Sam” 9, 10, 20
Carriles, Luis Posada 324, 337, 338
Carter, Billy 234, 235, 238, 239, 241, 242, 244, 263, 264
Carter, Jimmy 4, 5, 37, 77, 97, 104, 136, 205, 213, 218, 224, 225, 234, 235, 238, 239, 240, 241, 242, 244, 251, 263, 264, 272, 273, 276, 292, 357, 376, 377, 400, 410, 434, 444
Casey, William J. 34, 80, 129, 150, 151, 160, 202, 225-230, 232, 233, 244-255, 257, 262-264, 267, 280-284, 293, 294, 296, 313, 315, 322, 323, 325, 350, 354-356, 367, 375, 388, 426, 437, 439, 444, 447, 450-453, 455
Casolaro, Danny 338, 363, 364, 376, 377, 393, 397, 403-406, 410, 411, 426, 427, 429
Castellano, Paul 221, 303, 438
Castillo, José Blandón 209, 330
Castle Bank and Trust 25, 30, 32-36, 77, 273, 323, 366, 367
Castle, Jerome 25
Castro, Fidel 9, 27, 36, 161, 162, 163, 164, 174, 176, 178, 179, 181, 185, 189, 197, 212, 213, 223, 262
CBS Evening News 190
Cecchi, Micucci 92
Celler, Emmanuel 141
Cellini, Dino 185, 223
Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) 4, 5, 9, 14, 15-21, 24, 25, 27, 31, 34, 36-40, 60, 68, 74, 78, 80, 83, 87, 88, 91, 93, 96, 108, 114, 117-119, 122, 129, 130, 136, 137, 139-141, 144, 145, 147, 148, 150, 152-168, 171-179, 183, 184, 186, 189, 191, 194-198, 201-210, 212-215, 218, 219, 223-229, 233, 235, 242-245, 251-259, 261-266, 270, 275, 277, 278, 280-285, 287-294, 296, 297, 300, 312, 313, 316, 322-326, 329-338, 340, 341, 344-352, 354, 356, 361, 363, 367, 371, 373-378, 381, 382, 384, 385, 388-394, 396-402, 404, 406, 408, 425-427, 429, 432, 433, 437, 439, 442-447, 450-454, 457, 461, 462
Centro Mondiale Commerciale (CMC) 87-92, 96, 98
Cermak, Anton 24
Chagra, Jimmy 347, 374
Chambers, Ernie 448
Chanes, Frank 233
Chang, Suzy 134, 135
Channell, Carl “Spitz” 288, 289, 293, 331, 352
Charlton, Warwick 131
Charter Company 236-239, 244, 251, 261, 263, 264
Chase Manhattan Bank 76, 77, 443, 462

Chavez, Ricardo 162, 206
Chelsea National Bank 279
Chemical Bank 216, 217, 354, 364, 377
Ch'en Ch'i-mei 10
Cheng Yu-tung 360
Chennault, Anna 153, 154, 158, 159, 171, 172, 194, 196, 212, 457
Chennault, Claire 18, 19, 20, 153, 154,
Cherne, Leo 226
Chernenko, Konstantin 278
Chesler, Lou 76, 77, 140, 265, 440
Chiang Kai-Shek 10, 11, 19, 147, 153, 154, 194
Chicago Tribune 39, 119, 263
Chiliad 130
China Lobby 16, 19, 38, 153-156, 159, 164, 167, 168, 170-172, 180, 201, 202, 212, 343
Chinoy, Nazir 271
Christian Science Monitor 234, 263
Chung Il Kwon 149
Chung, Margaret 20
Church Committee 406, 451
Churchill, Winston 37, 47, 53, 66, 129
Cicogna, Gianfranco 84
Citigroup 23, 366
Civella crime family 211
Civil Air Transport (CAT) 18-20, 154
Civilian Materiel Assistance (CMA) 291, 292, 332
Clarke, Jack 31
Clarridge, Duane 210, 283, 344
Clayton, David 155, 194
Clermont Club 130-132, 219, 231, 242, 301, 357
Clifford, Clark 76, 151, 152, 184, 224, 275, 276, 282, 319, 396
Cline, Ray 201, 202, 352
Clines, Thomas 162, 163, 165, 166, 192, 202, 204-210, 212, 224, 235, 254, 255, 258, 259, 281, 284, 285, 307, 324
Clinton, Bill 330, 346, 347, 348, 361, 366, 395
Clinton, Hillary 30, 359, 374, 376, 396, 459
Clinton, Raymond 236, 238, 244, 346, 347, 393
Clinton, Roger 347, 350
Clinton, Stanford 32
Clore, Alan 217, 261
Cobb, Richard S. 224
Cocaine Politics 259, 263, 265, 330, 331, 332, 334, 337, 344, 373, 427
Cockburn, Alexander 347, 362, 364, 365, 374, 376, 377, 417, 431
Cockrell, Ernest Jr. 189
COG (Continuity of government) program 391, 392
Cohen, Avner 83, 95
Cohen, William 256, 257
Cohn, Albert 100, 101, 102, 106, 107, 108, 110, 111, 142, 143, 439, 440
Cohn, Roy 25, 54, 56-59, 62-65, 67, 68, 72, 99-103, 105-108, 110-116, 118-130, 133, 135-139, 142-147, 156, 157, 160, 192, 195, 228, 241, 293, 294, 303, 311, 332, 434-442, 444, 446, 450, 458, 459
COINTELPRO 180
Collins, Paul David 59

Colodny, Len 169, 180-183, 185-187, 196, 197, 198
Colombo family 221
Colony Sports Club 129
Columbus Dispatch 457, 463
Commercial Credit Corporation 210, 408
Committee for the Reelection of the President (CRP 173, 176, 188
Committee on the Present Danger (CPD) 27, 28, 202, 258
Commodity Credit Corporation (CCC) 279, 316, 317, 408, 429
Compagnie de Services Fiduciaire (CSF) 286, 287, 299
Compagnie Financière 89
Compromised 207, 258, 363, 366, 374, 376, 377
Conein, Lucien 165
Connally, John 277, 356, 357, 358
Control Data Corporation (CDC) 210, 406-411
Cook, Bradford 233
Cook, O. Jackson 251
Cooney, John 117
Coordination of United Revolutionary Organizations (CORU) 164, 324
Coppola, Frank 9, 416
Coral Reinsurance Company 365-367, 377
Corbally, Thomas 128-136, 442
Corcoran, Thomas 19
CORDS (Civil Operations and Revolutionary Development Support) 164
Cornfeld, Bernie 229, 230, 232, 265, 287, 331
Corona, Ray 266, 303, 334
Corson, Robert 213, 214, 260, 325, 326, 331, 375
Corson, William 257, 285
Costa, Antonio Maria 22
Costello, Frank 2-4, 9, 12, 20, 25, 27, 54, 60, 102, 104, 105, 114, 115, 144, 346
Cotroni, Vincenzo 72, 333
Council on Foreign Relations (CFR) 30, 170, 201, 218, 261
Coutin, Jose 344, 373
Covenant House 245, 320, 441, 442, 443, 444, 445, 460
Cowen, Joshua Lionel 111, 112, 144
Cowett, Edward 287
Cox, Edwin L. 217, 261
Craig, Larry 193
Crater, Mike 457, 463
Credit and Commerce American Holdings 275, 276, 277
Credit Suisse 286, 298, 316, 389, 394
Crimes of the Patriots 258, 369, 378
Critchfield, Jim 206, 225, 281
Crittenden, Robert 358
Crosby, James 5, 136
Crosby, Peter 5, 136, 137
Cross-fire: Witness in the Clinton Investigation 347
Crossing the Rubicon 22, 39, 427
Crowley, Robert 152, 153
Crown, Henry 24-28, 30, 47, 116, 140, 146
Crown, Lester 116
Cuellar, Joseph 405

Cummings, John 207, 258, 330, 340, 363, 366, 373, 374
Cummings, Nathan 140, 258, 294, 330, 332, 340, 363, 366, 373-377
Cummings, Samuel 294, 332
Cuomo, Mario 441, 442
Curtis, Adam 130, 146
Curtis, Tony 32
D
Dafne, Reuven 72
Daily Mirror 295, 296, 383
Dalitz, Moe 25, 26, 32, 47, 89, 90, 112, 121, 122, 138, 140, 184, 402, 438
d'Amelio, Carlo 140, 148
Damme, Willy van 124, 145, 311, 336
Dardi, Virgil 138, 139, 140, 147
Dark Victory 28, 40
Daub, Hal 446
Davidson, Irving 83, 95, 184
Davies, Nicholas 295, 296, 333
Davis, John 9
Davis, L.J. 358, 359, 376
Day, James C. 239
Deak & Co. 245, 264, 265
Deak, Nicholas 245, 246, 264, 265
Dean, John 183, 187, 188, 197
DeBartolo, Edward 420
DeCamp, John 59, 67, 160, 190, 195, 445, 450, 461, 462
de Costa, Sergio 321
Deep Politics and the Death of JFK 14, 38, 40, 94, 133, 146, 194, 462
Defense Intelligence Agency (DIA) 165, 202
Degem 386, 387
Delamico, Mario 296, 323, 334
Del E. Webb Development Company 342
Dellal, Jack 130, 242, 264
DeLoach, Deke 126
De Morgen 313, 336
Dempsey, Jack 49
Denker, Henry 29
Denton, Sally 37, 103, 142, 143, 157, 195, 336, 347, 348, 373, 374
Derks, Hans 12, 38
de Rothschild, Edmond 79, 81, 89, 90, 231, 298, 301, 310, 416, 422, 423, 440
Dershowitz, Alan 435, 436, 458
Desert Inn 25, 122, 138, 140
Desperate Deception 7, 37, 38
Detachment 101 17, 18
Deuss, John 206, 207, 255, 258, 280, 312, 330
Devil's Chessboard, The 117, 145, 425
Devine, Donald 447
Devlin, Larry 356
DeVoe, Jack 323, 326, 456, 457, 463
Dewey, Thomas E. 2,-4, 6, 8, 56, 77, 103, 104, 107, 108, 114, 120, 143, 177
DeWitt, William Jr. 371
Dibben, Horace 134

Dill, Nicholas Bayard 287
Dillon, Matt 94, 257, 260, 267, 276, 386, 425, 426, 430, 431
Dintino, Justin 249
Distillers Company Limited 47
Distillers Corporation Limited 46, 47
Dixon, John W. 399
Djerassi, Dale 387, 389
Doan, Harry 339, 340, 341
Doinov, Ognian 412
Dole, Elizabeth 452
Dolin, Nate 89, 90
Donaldson, Sam 66, 191
d'Onofrio, Ramon 351
Donovan, William J. 6-9, 13, 16, 29, 37, 60, 97, 135, 222, 226, 227, 250, 262, 367
Dorfman, Allen 32, 263
Dorril, Stephen 129, 132, 146
Dossier 194, 237, 263, 329, 336, 431
Downey, Joyce 357
Doyle, John 241, 250, 266, 336
Drake, Michael 362
Dreher, Rod 117, 145
Drexel Burnham Lambert 246, 352, 353, 368, 441, 443, 447, 456
Drug Enforcement Administration (DEA) 233, 290, 300, 311, 332, 343, 344, 399
Dubini, Nicola 307
du Cann, Edward 242, 243, 244, 264, 400
Duleimi, Ahmed 219
Dulles, Allen 4, 6, 108, 118, 145, 250, 381, 425
Dulles, John Foster 4, 37, 108
Duncan, John H. Sr. 215, 349, 377
Dunes Hotel and Casino 79, 211
Dunlop, Robert 243
Dunne, Dominick 424, 425, 432
DuPonts 6, 235, 236, 263, 278, 291, 326, 332, 341
du Pont, Richard C. Jr 291
Dupres, Devon 190
Dutcher, Charles K 452
DWG Corporation 246, 247
Dwyer, John 103-105, 114, 136, 405, 429
E
Eagleburger, Lawrence 319, 320, 321
Eagleton, Thomas 128
Earl, Robert 325
Eccles, George 157, 368
Economist, The 41, 246, 265
Edwards, David 372
Edwards, Lucy 419
Egyptian-American Air Transport and Services Corporation (EATSCO) 207, 208, 210, 280, 284, 408
Ehrenfeld, Rachel 311, 333, 336
Eifler, Carl F 17
Eisele, Albert 411
Eisenberg, Shaul 73, 94, 142, 295, 382

Eisenhower, Dwight D 4, 20, 21, 80, 116, 120, 150, 151, 155, 355, 356, 440
Eisenson, Michael 370
Eitan, Rafi 384, 385, 387, 390
Eitel, Gary 401, 428
Elias, Christopher 101
Eliot, George Fieling 8
Encyclopedia of Public Relations 152, 194
Engineering Research Associates (ERA) 407
Enron 371, 378, 408
Epes, Wooten 362
Epstein, Edward Jay 152, 237, 263, 329
Epstein, Jeffrey 13, 20, 30, 79, 83, 84, 130, 160, 217, 231, 237, 245, 297, 300, 320, 330, 334, 352, 366, 398, 406, 407, 435, 439, 441, 445, 449, 452, 457, 462
Erskine, Graves B. 154, 155
Escobar, Pablo 282
Esquire 52, 55, 66, 145
E-Systems 345, 398, 399, 400, 401, 404, 405, 427
Euromoney magazine 307, 335
European, The 37, 119, 220, 222, 227, 250, 301, 306-308, 310, 356-358, 369, 375, 381, 383, 419, 420, 424, 449
Evergreen International Aviation 19, 399, 400, 401, 405
Evil Money 311, 333, 336
Exchange and Investment Bank 21, 76, 157
Executive Jet Aviation (EJA) 453, 454, 455, 456, 457
F
FABCO 360, 376
Fabian, S. H. 141
Fair, Harry 364
Faith, Nicholas 42, 45, 51, 52, 54-56, 66, 67, 264, 460
False Profits 280, 329, 330, 333, 335, 379, 427
Family of Secrets 260, 261, 278, 330, 378
Farer, Tom 34, 400
Farina, Roland 287
Farrara, James 35
Fassoulis, Satiris "Sonny" 137, 139
Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI) 5, 7, 8, 15, 17, 28, 38, 57-62, 64, 67, 68, 75, 95, 99, 103, 116-118, 123, 126-128, 132, 134, 174, 180-182, 184-187, 191, 194, 196, 198, 205-207, 228, 239-241, 249, 250, 252, 258, 261, 266, 289, 291, 299, 305, 317, 326, 327, 332, 333, 338, 339, 344, 346, 374, 387-389, 392, 403, 405, 413, 422, 423, 425-427, 436, 468, 471-490
Federal Bureau of Narcotics (FBN) 5, 13-16, 37, 72, 73, 78, 79, 90, 94, 97, 103 5, 13, 38, 72, 78, 90, 94, 103
Feess, Gary 35
Feightner, E.L. "Whitey" 401
Feinberg, Abraham 83
Felt, Mark 180
Ferdmann, Sylvain 76
Ferrari, A. 317
Ferraro, Geraldine 128
Filardo, Louis 80
Filner, Joseph 409
Financial General Bankshares (FGB 272, 273, 274, 275, 276, 277, 395, 396, 409

Findlay, Walter 46
Finkel, Robert 190, 191
Firing Line 435
Firpo, Luis 49
First American Bankshares 152, 276, 317, 353
First Arkansas Bankstock Corporation (FABCO) 360
First Intercontinental Development Corporation (FIDCO) 364, 402
First International Bancshares 217, 398
First National Bancshares Ltd 217
First National Bank of Boston 140
First National City Bank 86, 96, 429
Fisher, Max 70, 74, 79, 140, 244, 245, 246, 264, 265, 385, 410, 439, 440, 444, 447, 457, 461
Fitts, Catherine Austin 22, 23, 24, 39, 276
Fitzpatrick, Francis 179, 180
Fitzpatrick, Paul 104, 105
Flamingo Hotel 79, 342
Fleiss, Heidi 135
F. L. Jacobs (company) 138, 139
Florio, A. 318
Flying Tiger Line 19, 20, 211, 341, 457
Flying Tiger Lines 154, 291
Flying Tigers 18, 19, 20, 153
Flynn, Ed 101, 103, 104, 105, 108, 142, 288
Foley, Pat 291, 341
Forbes 395, 397, 398, 461
Ford, Gerald 205, 352, 446
Ford, John 401, 428
Foreign Intelligence Digest 155, 170
Forgan, David R. 227
Forgan, James B. 227
Forgan, J. Russell 227-229, 233, 250, 455
Forgber, Guenther 418
Forrester, Vaughn 348
Foster, Vince 4, 37, 108, 145, 359, 394, 395, 397, 398
Fox Broadcasting Corporation 294
Fox, Matthew 139, 140
Francisci, Marcel 79
Francis, Johnny 129
Frankenstein, Samuel I. 106, 107
Franklin Cover-Up, The 160, 195, 445, 461, 462
Franklin Scandal 445, 448, 452, 457, 461, 462
Freeh, Louis 436, 458
Freeman, Jack 189, 323, 326
French Connection 10, 72, 78, 431
Fricker, Mary 213, 259, 261, 334, 375, 376, 425, 426
Friedman, Stanley 90, 95, 425, 431, 432, 435, 440
Frigorificos de Puntarenas 233, 234, 289, 290, 295, 344
Furmark, Roy 251, 252, 266, 267
Fusco, Joe 53, 54
G
G-2 8

Gaddafadam, Ahmed 243, 244
Gaddafi, Muammar 204, 234, 237, 243
Gaess, Anthony 248, 249
Galante, Carmine 72, 73, 434
Gallagher, Neil 112, 121, 125, 126, 127, 128, 146, 261, 435
Gallardo, Felix 290, 400
Gallinaro, William 58
Galvin, John R. 322, 337
Gambino family 213, 221, 249, 303, 350, 403, 438
Garfield, Sam 122, 123, 138
Garrison, Jim 87, 96, 198
Garwood, Ellen 289, 348, 349
Gavin, James 319
Gaynor, Paul 174, 175
General Dynamics 24, 25, 27, 28
Genis, Sam 27, 29
Genovese crime family 72, 185, 192, 248, 249, 250, 434
Geoffrey's Bank 123, 124, 311
GeoMiliTech Consultants Corporation (GMT) 294-297, 332, 352
George Town Club 136, 147, 153-159, 164, 189, 194, 202, 214
Gettlin, Robert 181, 196-198
Ghorbanifar, Manucher 256, 257, 285, 286, 394
Giancana, Sam 54, 133
Gianquinto, Eugene 402, 403, 438
Giroday, Jean de la 296
Giroir, C. Joseph 358, 359, 361
Gittinger, John 16
Glatt, Ernest Werner 294
Glen Alden 64, 65, 141
Glenn, John 449, 462
Glennon, Edward 100
Glick, Gene 342, 343
Global Competition After the Cold War: A Reassessment of Trilateralism 449
Global International Airways 210, 211, 267, 408
Glore Forgan 229, 233, 455
Godfather, The (book) 114
Gokal, Abbas 279, 280
Gokal, Murtaza 279, 280
Gokal, Mustafa 279
Goldman Sachs 74, 109, 319, 365, 366, 457
Goldsmith, James 130, 231, 357, 359
Goldwyn, Samuel 28
Gonzales, Virgilio 174
Gonzalez, Henry B. 319
Goodfellow, Preston 13
Gooding, Anthony James Tullis 34
Gorbachev, Mikhail 411, 415, 419, 430
Gorman, Paul F 343, 344
Gottlieb, Sidney 15, 38
Gouletas 320, 366, 385, 407, 443
Grabbe, J. Orlin 398, 407

Grace, Peter 443, 444
Graham, Daniel 296
Gray, Robert Keith 143, 149-154, 158-160, 164, 166, 171, 180, 189, 190-192, 194, 199, 202, 209, 212, 253, 255, 267, 277, 288, 331, 377, 378, 403, 438-440, 448, 457, 459
Great Gatsby, The 449
Greenberg, Alan 245, 367, 378, 441
Greene, Arthur 31
Green Gang 10, 11, 12, 20
Greenspun, Hank 118
Gregg, Donald 177, 252, 255, 283, 284, 324, 325, 334, 337, 451
Gregg, Sam 177
Greycas 341, 342, 343
Gross, Harry 104
GRU 131
Guarantee Trust Company 83
Guerin, James 318
Guevara, Che 162
Guilmartin, James 21
Guinness family 246
Gurfein, Murray 5
Gurfinkel, Natasha 419, 420, 421
Gurwin, Larry 280, 329, 330, 333, 335, 379, 427, 431
Guterma, Alexander 137, 138, 139, 140, 147
Gwynne, S. C. 95, 269-271, 278, 329, 330, 431
H
Haaretz 95, 144, 389, 426
Haas, Joseph 291
Haddad, William 172, 173, 188
Hadron 385
Haffendon, C. Radcliff 2, 37
Haganah 69-74, 79, 81-83, 94, 209
Haig, Alexander 167, 169, 170, 178, 179, 180, 190, 202, 285, 446
Hakim, Albert 204, 284, 285, 286, 287, 298, 307, 345
Halper, Stefan 352
Hamilton, Bill 383, 384, 392, 397, 404, 406, 410, 413, 430
Hamilton, Nancy 383, 391, 446, 459
Hammer, Armand 142, 194, 236, 237, 238, 263, 273, 274, 277, 316, 329, 409, 429, 447
Hammond, Leonard 309
Hammoud, Mohammed 306, 372
Hand, Michael 203
Hanna, Richard T. 91, 149
Harari, Michael 209, 210, 283, 288, 351
Harel, Ron 294, 297
Harken Energy 368, 370-372, 378
Harrelson, Charles 347
Harriman, W. Averell 131, 146, 227
Hartford Courant 265, 444, 460
Hartmann, Alfred 280, 312, 317, 357, 372
Harvey, William 161, 175
Hasenfus, Eugene 327, 339
Hashemi, Cyrus 251-253, 255-257

Hashemi, Jamshid 252, 253, 256
Hastings Tribune 150
Hatch, L. Boyd 29
Hatch, Orrin 241, 277, 305, 306, 372
Hatta, Mohammed 139
Haynes, Charles F. 211, 212, 349, 378
Hazell, Clare 246
Hefner, Hugh 32
Heikal, Mohammed 220, 261
Helliwell, Paul 17-21, 30, 33, 34, 36, 71, 77, 83-85, 155, 157, 161, 163, 201, 236, 273, 292, 323, 366-368, 420
Helms, Richard 61, 165, 177, 179, 197, 229, 270, 275, 329
Henderson, Helen 182
Hendricks, Chuck 345
Hendrix, John 360
Henry Kissinger: Soviet Agent 170
Herlands, William B. 1
Hersh, Burton 58, 61, 63, 67, 68, 254, 255, 267, 328, 333, 461
Herzog, Arthur 231, 237, 262, 263
Hicks, Calvin 206
Hill, John 152
Hill & Knowlton (H & K) 152, 154, 159, 171, 192, 277, 288, 293
Hill, Virginia 20, 39
Hines, Gerald D. 215, 216, 260, 373
History of the Opium Problem: The Assault on the East, 1600-1950 12, 38
Hitchcock, William Mellon 33, 129, 131, 132, 134, 227
Hitchock, William Mellon 137
Hoch, Jan Ludvick (Maxwell) 381
Hodara, David 85
Hodge, Charles 455
Hoffa, Jimmy 9, 29, 32, 121, 125, 126, 157, 211, 248, 342
Hoffman, Bryce 62, 63, 68, 100, 112, 113, 115, 119, 122, 125, 128, 142-146, 195, 365, 435, 458
Hogan, Frank 2, 61
Holden, William 221, 222
Hondu Carib 290, 341
Honey, Martha 348, 373
Hoover, J. Edgar 7, 16, 17, 37, 57-64, 67, 68, 99, 103, 115-118, 122, 123, 125-128, 133, 135, 142, 171, 181, 241, 342, 373, 442
Hopsicker, Daniel 341-344, 373
Hosenball, Mark 306
Ho, Stanley 360
Hostler, Charles 372
Hot Money and the Politics of Debt 21, 39, 76, 95, 196, 262
Hougan, Jim 75, 79, 94, 95, 159, 167, 170, 173, 174, 181-183, 188, 195-198, 229-231, 262, 263, 265
Hourani, Mounzer 305, 306, 335
Houston Post 446
Ho Yin 360
Hoy, Patrick 25, 27, 39
Hubbell, Webster 359, 362, 394, 396
Hudson's Bay Company 13, 45-47, 66
Hugel, Max 80, 447

Hull, John 288, 289, 292, 327, 344, 373
Humphrey, Gordon J. 444
Hundley, William 342, 461
Hunt, E. Howard 17, 174, 176, 177, 179, 181, 184, 201, 292
Hunt, H. L. 155
Huntley, Clarence 165
Hunt, Nelson Bunker 289, 348, 351
Hurwitz, Charles 351, 352, 353, 375
Hussein, Saddam 314
Hyatt Development Corp 30-32,
I
Icthyan Associates 139
Information on Demand 387-389
Inman, Bobby Ray 202-204, 253, 254
Inslaw 210, 257, 338, 362-364, 383-385, 387, 388, 392, 396-398, 404-406, 410, 413, 429, 430, 438
Institute for Democracy, Education, and Assistance (IDEA) 288, 289
Inter Maritime Bank (IMB) 34, 84-86, 231, 280, 292, 312, 315, 317, 353, 419-421
Intermountain Aviation 291, 399
International Computerized Land Research (ICLR) 34, 35
International Controls Corporation (ICC) 231, 232
International Credit Bank (ICB) 75, 76, 86, 89, 92
International Fund for Mergers and Acquisitions (IFMA) 351
International Maritime Services 84
International Research and Trade (IRT) 205, 206
International Youth Federation for Freedom 156
Intra Bank 77, 78, 79
Investors Overseas Services (IOS) 29, 85, 229-233, 237, 238, 242, 244, 261, 265, 286, 287, 296, 400
Iorizzo, Lawrence 221, 303, 334
Iran-Contra affair 17, 73, 78, 79, 124, 130, 150, 160, 162, 163, 204-206, 208, 212-214, 216, 219, 225, 243, 255, 258, 260, 267, 281, 287, 288, 293, 294, 298, 299, 301, 304, 305, 311, 314, 315, 322, 324, 332, 333, 335-338, 341, 344, 345, 348, 349, 351, 352, 386, 393, 394, 401, 404, 406, 422, 427, 433, 439, 440, 447, 451
Iran: The Untold Story 220, 261
Irving Trust 353
Israel Aerospace Industries (IAI) 73, 297
Israel and the Bomb 83, 95
Israel Defense Force (IDF) 69, 81, 83
Italo-American Hotel Corporation (IAHC) 92
Ivanov, Eugene 131, 132, 135
Iver Johnson's Arms 363
Ives, Kevin 351
Ives, Linda 351, 375
J
Jackson, Andrew 106
Jameson, Donald 206, 225, 281
Janchev, Ivo 415
Janklow, Mort 436
Jardine, Francis 206
Jardine-Matheson 12, 13
Jaworski, Leon 189, 190, 198
Jenkins, Carl 212, 348, 349, 374

Jensen, D. Lowell 410
Jewish Telegraph Agency 90
JM/WAVE 161-163, 206, 210, 224, 349
John Birch Society 170, 293
John Paul II (Pope) 443
Johnson, Arthur 343, 373
Johnson, Claudia Alta “Lady Bird” 355
Johnson, Lyndon 114, 121, 165, 355, 398
Johnson, Robert (Barr) 350, 406
Jones, Clifford 76, 184
Jordan, Hamilton 240, 241, 434
Jordan, Phil 290
Joseph E. Seagram's and Sons Limited 47
Joseph J. Cappucci Associates 208, 209, 210
Journal-American 133, 135
Jung, George 234
K
Kaftel, Frank 90
Kagalovsky, Konstantin 419
Kalish, Steven 282
Kaminsky, Sherman 61, 128
Kane, Patrick 101
Kanter, Burton 31-35, 85, 122, 352, 366, 367, 420
Karlweiss, George 231
Kattan, Isaac 246, 248
Katzenberg, Jacob 12
Kaufman, Susan 54, 56-59, 72
Kay, Sam 74, 75, 446
KCIA 149, 158, 182, 202
Keating, Charles 130, 357, 358, 375, 428
Keeler, Christine 131-133, 135
Kefauver Committee 48, 51, 60, 105, 108
Kelly, James P. 53
Kelso, Joe 233
Kemp, Jack 441, 446
Kendrick, Phil Jr. 368
Kennedy, Caroline 132
Kennedy family 56, 173
Kennedy, Joe 54
Kennedy, John F. 38, 56, 87, 121, 133, 134, 137, 152, 171, 194, 228
Kennedy, Robert F. 61, 67, 68, 115, 120, 121, 122, 125, 126 133, 173, 196, 402, 428
Kentucky Post 137
Kerry Commission 281, 290, 291, 340
Kessler, Murray 213, 262
Keswick, John Henry 13
Keswick, William Johnston “Tony” 13
Ketcham, Christopher 392
Keyser Ullman 242
KGB 300, 409, 412, 414, 415, 417, 420, 422
Khalifa bin-Salman al-Khalifa 372
Khan, A.Q. 270

Khan, Yahya 167
Khashoggi, Adnan 78, 79, 130, 150, 160, 221-223, 240, 241, 243, 257, 262, 276, 281, 286, 301-306, 308, 313, 335, 352, 372, 376, 394, 404, 406, 411, 439, 440, 443
Khoury, Sami 78, 79
Kim, Charles 172
Kimche, David 257, 285, 286
Kim Hyong-uk 149
King, Edward 26
King Energy 417, 431
King, John M. 287
King, Lawrence "Larry" 160, 190, 289, 445, 448, 453, 457
King, Martin Luther Jr. 126
Kinsey, Alfred C. 117
Kissinger Associates 319, 320, 321, 322, 443
Kissinger, Henry 89, 166-171, 177, 180, 196, 201, 229, 285, 319-322, 337, 382, 387, 402, 443
Kissinger: The Secret Side of the Secretary of State 170
Klehr, Harvey 156, 194, 378
Klein, Bob 421
Kleinman, Morris 32
Klein, Theodore 323, 326
Klotz, John 58
Knightley, Phillip 132
Knowlton, Donald 152, 194, 277, 459
Koelsch, William 106
Kohlberg, Alfred 156
Kohn, Howard 283, 322, 325, 330, 331, 337, 338, 432
Kollek, Paul 82
Kollek, Teddy 82, 95
Komisar, Lucy 367, 377, 378
Konanykhine, Alexander 420
Koreagate scandal 149, 150, 154, 156, 158
Korshak, Sidney 25-27, 29, 30, 32, 39, 438, 459
Kray, Ronnie and Reggie 129-131, 146
Kroll and Associates 136
Kroll, Jules 136, 442, 443, 460
Krown, Kevin 241
Kryuchkov, Vladimir 412, 414, 415, 417
Kuhn, Loeb and Company 91
Kulukundis family 84, 96, 237, 238, 354
Kulukundis, Michael 84, 96, 237, 238, 354
Kuomintang (KMT) 10-12, 14, 16-21, 23, 38, 153, 155, 167, 168, 170, 171, 172
Kwitny, Jonathan 258, 369, 378
L
La Costa Club 31, 32, 352, 376
La Dirección Federal de Seguridad (DFS) 290
Lady Ghislaine 299, 436
Laffite, Pierre 14, 15
La Nación 310, 336
Lance, Bert 235, 272-275, 277, 280, 316, 353, 358, 375, 377, 395
Landon, Curt 21
Lanksy, Meyer 20, 48, 230

Lansburgh, Morris 75
Lansdale, Edward 155, 165, 172, 178
Lansing Foundation 140
Lansky, Meyer 2-5, 7, 9, 12, 15, 20, 21, 26, 27, 29, 31, 34, 47-49, 51, 53, 54, 58, 60, 62, 72, 75, 76, 79, 85, 89, 94, 102, 103, 107, 108, 118, 121, 129, 133, 140, 142, 157, 162, 184, 185, 223, 265, 333, 342, 346, 438, 440
Lanza, Joseph "Joe Socks" 2
LaPlaca, Peter 248
Larsen, Norman 155, 156
Lasater, Dan 347, 348, 350, 362, 374, 376, 377
Lassiter, Olbert "Dick" Fearing 454, 455, 456, 457
Las Vegas Sun 118
Lavi, Hushang 313
Lavoie, Leonard F. 342, 343, 373, 428
Lay, Kenneth 371
League of Nations 11
Le Cercle 224, 225, 252, 281, 312
Ledeen, Michael 208, 256, 285, 286
Lee, Duncan 367
Leflang, Astrid 187
Lehder, Carlos 234, 282, 323
Lehman Brothers 53, 91, 111, 342
Lehrman, Lewis 289
Le Monde Diplomatique 22
Lenn, John 173
Lenzlinger, Iso 418
Lévêque, Jean-Maxime 308
Levinson, Ed 76, 172
Levy, Arthur 356, 375
Lewis, John 132
Lewis, "Snags" 186
Liberian Trade and Development Corp (TRADEVCO) 86
Libutti, Robert 350
Liddy, G. Gordon 174, 188, 197
Liedtke, Bill 216
Liedtke, J. Hugh 216
LIFE (magazine) 75, 76, 78, 127, 128, 145, 146
Lil Lori (Barbara Ralabate) 182
Lincoln Savings 357, 428
Lindner, Carl 215, 244, 456, 457, 463
Ling-Temco-Vought (LTV) 217, 218, 261, 398, 399
Linsey, Joe 53
Lionel Corporation 111, 112, 121, 138, 144
Lippo Group 353, 360, 375
Livingstone, Neil 192, 209, 210, 259, 288
Lockwood, Paul 108, 143
Lodestar Inc 32
Lo Kham Thy 163
London & Overseas Freighters 84
Long, Huey 9
Lonrho P.L.C 219, 242, 243, 244, 302, 309, 335, 400, 402, 416

Lord Boothby 129, 130, 132, 146
Lorenzo, Frank 368
Los Angeles Times 35, 39, 40, 67, 146, 330, 336, 337, 357, 374-378, 425, 461
Loutchansky, Grigori 417, 418, 431
Lowers, Donald 209
LTV Electrosystems 398, 399
Luciano, Charles “Lucky” 2-5, 8-10, 12, 37, 47, 101, 102, 107, 142
Ludwig, Daniel K 219, 367
Lukas, Anthony 182, 197
Lundy, J.T. 350
Luo Menghong 10
Lvovsky, Anna 175, 196
M
MacArthur, Douglas 16, 136, 155, 156
Macauley, Robert 443, 444, 445
MacFarlane, Robert 284, 285
Macmillan, Harold 132, 134, 135, 194, 376
Madden, Owney 346
Mafia Kingfish 9, 38
Magruder, Jeb 188
Maher, Ted 424
Maheu, Robert 173, 402, 428
Mahl, Thomas 7, 8, 37, 38
“Main Core” 392, 393, 426
Mainland Savings 240, 301-304, 352
Major Realty 76, 77
Makkouk, Omar 78
Malnik, Alvin 185
Manafort, Paul 436
Manchester Guardian 415
Mandel, Georges 87
Mann, Stanley 35, 187, 401
Manor, LeRoy 369
Mantello, Georges 87, 89
Mao Zedong 153, 360
Marcello, Carlos 9, 38, 184, 213, 346
Marchetti, Victor 203
Marcos family 304, 366, 369, 403
Marcos, Ferdinand 369, 403, 428
Marcos, Imelda 304, 369, 443
Marcus, Bernard K 108-113
Marcus, Celia Cohen 111, 112
Marcus, Dora 100, 101, 106, 108, 110, 113
Marcus, Joseph 108
Marcus, Joseph S. 100, 106, 143
Marcus, Libby 113, 114
Marenches, Alexandre de 219, 225
Marina Reale 89
Marinelli, Albert 101, 102
Marissov, Andreas 418
Marrus, Michael 42, 44, 66

Marshall, Douglas 190, 191
Marshall, Jonathan 11, 32, 38, 39, 40, 76, 77, 78, 79, 94, 95, 96, 141, 148, 190, 191, 196, 198, 258, 259, 263, 265, 282, 330, 331, 332, 333, 334, 337, 344, 373, 427, 459
Martinez, Eugenio 174, 177, 181, 188
Martin, Ron 296, 322, 325, 326
Marwan, Ashraf 243, 244
Mary Carter Paint Company 4, 5, 37, 77, 104, 136
Maryland Maritime Co. 166
Mason, Raymond 236, 237, 238, 244
Masters of Deceit 64
Material Services Corporation 25
Mattei, Enrico 92
Mattes, John 349
Maurice L. Rothschild 140
Mavroleon, Basil "Bluey" 84
Mavroleon family 84
Mavroleon, Nicholas 84
Maxwell, Christine 130, 133, 242, 389, 426
Maxwell, Ghislaine 84, 130, 237, 299, 405, 436, 449, 458
Maxwell, Isabel 83, 387, 389
Maxwell, Kevin 413
Maxwell, Robert 79, 81, 83, 89, 94, 130, 136, 150, 156, 214, 231, 242, 243, 257, 260, 285, 294-296, 299, 308, 311, 313, 316, 333, 357, 381, 382, 386-390, 393, 394, 397, 403, 405, 407, 409-413, 424-426, 429, 431, 436, 442, 449, 456
Mayfair Set, The 130, 146
Mazur, Susan 258, 280, 330
McBundy, William 118
McCallum, David 410
McCarthy, Glenn 137
McCarthy, Joseph 56, 99, 115-120, 122, 124, 142, 156, 160, 392
McCarthy, William 137
McClintock, Michael 165, 196
McCollum, William 348
McCord, James 173, 174, 176, 177, 181, 182, 184, 188
McCoy, Alfred 4, 12, 18, 37, 38, 162, 163, 195, 322, 325, 327
McDonald, Larry 293
McDonald, Miles 104, 105
McElroy, James 204
McFarlane, Robert 256, 257, 267, 286, 331, 333
McGowan, James 35, 68
McGregor, Jack 238, 239, 244
McLaughlin, Edward 58
McLendon, Gordon 183, 184
McManus, Michael 336, 364
McSweeney, William 409
M.D. Anderson Foundation 189
Media Bypass 396, 427
Meese, Edwin 286, 316, 377, 383-385, 389-391, 402, 403, 410, 413
Mega Group 25, 70, 116
Mellon, Ailsa 226, 227
Mellon family 5, 33, 129

Mellon, Paul 227
Mena, Arkansas 340, 344, 345, 347-349, 351, 361, 373, 374, 377, 378, 401
Menzies, Stewart 6, 7
Mercantile Bank & Trust 273
MERRIMAC 176
Merthan, Lawrence 154
Metta, Michele 87, 91, 92, 96-98
Metzger, Eugene 274, 275, 395
Meyer, Cord 223, 224
MI5 82, 129, 132, 146
MI6 SIS [the Secret Intelligence Service 6, 131, 381, 382
Miami National Bank 21, 83, 157, 236
Miami News 71, 94
Middendorf Group 273, 274
Midwest Employers Casualty Company (MECC) 371
Milken, Michael 130, 246, 375, 443, 456
Millard, Mark 250, 266
Miller, Richard 289
Milliken, Roger 293
Mintz, John 399, 427
Mischer, Walter 213-216, 218, 219, 254, 260, 325
Mitchell, "Billy" 186
Mitchell, John 449
Mitterand 308
MK-ULTRA 15, 174
Mogilevich, Semion 80, 81, 95, 382, 383, 414-416, 418, 419
Moldea, Dan 28, 29, 40, 459
Molina, John 326
Mollenhoff, Clark 168, 196
Mondale, Walter 410, 411, 430
Money and the Power, The 37, 103, 142, 195, 373
Monks, Vicky 283, 322, 325, 330, 331, 337, 338
Monroe, James 358
Monroe, Marilyn 56, 133, 171
Monsieur, Jacques 311, 336
Moody family 137, 239, 240, 241, 342
Moody Jr, Shearn 137, 157, 239, 241
Moody, William Lewis Jr. 137, 157, 239, 240, 241, 342, 368
Moorer, Thomas H. 167, 169-171, 179, 180, 228, 293
Morabia, Elliot 298
Morabia, Nan 298, 299, 333
Moran, James 104, 105
Morgan, Jeff 32, 40
Morgans 6, 226
Morgenthau, Robert 121, 122, 124, 125, 261, 269, 435, 442
Moriarty, John "Jack" 191, 192, 193, 338
Morris, Roger 37, 103, 142, 157, 195, 345, 347, 373, 374
Mossad 31, 75, 83, 87, 88, 91, 95, 96, 124, 145, 206, 209, 230, 243, 257, 283, 295, 297, 305, 311-313, 336, 351, 383, 386, 387, 389, 397, 412-415, 422, 424, 425, 426, 439
Moss, Edward K. 222-224, 262, 290, 341, 343
Mosvold, Inge Gordon 367

Mountbatten, Lord Louis 13, 131
Mowrer, Edgar Ansel 8
Mulcahy, Kevin 204
Mullen, Robert R. 179
Mulligan, Henry L. 368
Multer, Abe 83
Multiponics 232, 233, 263, 455
Muolo, Paul 213, 259, 261, 334, 375, 376
Murchison, Clinton 83, 183, 184, 217, 261, 304, 342, 355, 359, 364, 402, 454, 462
Murchison, John 217, 261
Murdoch, Rupert 293, 294, 332, 435, 436, 440, 459
Murphy, Charles M. 102, 103
Murphy, Daniel 255, 393
Murphy, George 159
Music Corporation of America (MCA) 26, 28, 29, 31, 39, 40, 400-404, 409, 437, 438
N
Nahum, Sterling Henry 71, 131, 134
Nation, The 147, 364, 365, 377
National Bank of Georgia 272, 273, 274, 277, 353, 354
National Crime Syndicate 4, 48, 102, 103, 223
National Endowment for the Preservation of Liberty 288, 289, 331, 352
National Enquirer 114, 144
National Review 136, 156, 228, 435
National Security Agency (NSA) 165, 166, 202, 253, 383, 388, 392, 393, 395, 396-398, 427, 462
National Security Council 27, 169, 170, 177, 178, 180, 228, 255, 284, 285, 316, 348, 364, 393, 395, 402, 411
National Strategy Information Center (NSIC) 228
Naylor, R.T. 21, 23, 39, 76, 95, 196, 230, 262, 308, 335, 378
NBC News 261, 306
Nelson, Rusty 453
Nesline, Joe 129, 184, 185, 186, 188, 198, 223
Newhouse, Si Jr. 113, 122, 135, 434, 435
Newman, Arno 124, 311
Newman, Peter 44, 49, 69, 87, 333
New Republic 142, 245, 264, 376, 416, 431
Newsweek 270, 325, 329, 439, 459
New West 26, 39, 438, 459
New York Daily News 142, 383, 435
New Yorker 113, 302, 435, 458
New York Herald Tribune 8, 435
New York Magazine 102, 142, 293, 332, 432, 435, 460
New York Post 293, 377, 437, 442, 460
New York Times 37, 40, 52, 53, 65, 67, 68, 69, 85, 94-97, 106, 107, 142-147, 193, 196, 198, 199, 208, 217-219, 248, 258-262, 264-266, 274, 283, 293, 317, 329, 330-334, 336, 337, 351, 372, 375-377, 379, 409, 425, 429, 430, 434, 435, 440-443, 448-450, 455, 458-463
Nguyen Cao Ky 162, 163
Nicaraguan Humanitarian Assistance Office (NHAO) 289, 290, 291
Nichols, John Philip 363, 364
Nichols, Larry 362
Nichols, Louis B. 64
Nichols, Mary 58

Nichols, Richard Booth 402, 403
Nightline 191
Nightmare 182, 197
Nikitina, Galina 90, 91, 97
Nir, Amiram 286
Nitzan, Jonathan 83, 95
Nitze, Paul 165
Nixon, Richard 89, 94, 151, 152, 154, 166-169, 172, 173, 177, 180, 183, 188, 189, 194, 196, 197, 201, 216, 228, 229, 232, 244, 245, 250, 260, 273, 285, 293, 314, 319, 320, 352, 356, 382, 392, 443, 449
N.M. Rothschild 369
Nordex 417, 418, 419
Noriega, Manuel 209, 234, 259, 282, 283, 284, 323, 330, 350
Normandie 1
Norman, James 395, 397, 398, 427
North, Oliver 226, 228, 255, 256, 259, 284, 286, 306, 308, 311, 316, 327, 334, 338, 339, 344, 347, 348, 351, 391, 426, 447
Novaya Gazeta 423, 432
Novel, Gordon 60
Novotny, Mariella (Stella Marie Capes) 134
Nugan Hand Bank 203, 369
Nuñez, Moises 233
Nye, Joseph S. Jr. 449, 461
O
Oakland Tribune 32, 40
Obama, Barack 30
Ober 176
O'Brien, Larry 172, 181, 188
Observer 198, 219, 261, 296, 333
Occidental Petroleum 236, 237, 273, 274, 409, 447
Ocean Hunter 289, 290, 295
Ochoa, Jorge 340
O'Connell, Frank 224, 261, 404
O'Connor, John 442
"October Surprise" 80, 214, 225, 251, 252, 253, 255, 257, 267, 281, 313, 336, 391, 404, 428
Odlum, Floyd 28, 29, 151
O'Dwyer, William 103, 104, 105, 114, 136
Office of Management and Budget (OMB) 272, 273, 314
Office of Naval Intelligence (ONI 1, 2, 5, 8, 165
Office of Policy Coordination (OPC 19
Office of Strategic Services (OSS) 5-9, 13, 14, 16-18, 20, 29, 34, 37, 39, 60, 61, 85, 88, 93, 118, 129, 132, 135, 136, 155, 163, 201, 221, 222, 226-229, 233, 245, 250, 257, 261, 262, 266, 292, 352, 367, 378
Office of the Coordinator of Information (COI) 6, 7
Official and Confidential: The Secret Life of J. Edgar Hoover 60, 67, 68, 133, 373
Oil and Petroleum Year Book 90, 97
Oil Card: Global Economic Warfare in the 21st Century, The 395, 427
Ojjeh, Akram 308, 313, 335
Olayan, Suliman 320
Oliver, R. Spencer 181, 186
Olmsted, George 86, 273
Omaha Sun 445, 446
Omaha World Herald 160, 190, 446, 447, 448, 461

O'Neill, John Patrick 413
Operation Black Eagle 281, 283, 284, 288, 296, 297, 322, 334
Operation BLUEBIRD 174
Operation CHAOS 175, 176, 347
Operation Condor 386, 399, 405
Operation Midnight Climax 15
Operation Mongoose 161, 178
Operation Moses 313
Operation Paper 18, 39, 155, 194
Operation Underworld 2, 3, 5, 8, 14, 107
Ora Group 295, 296
Order of the Hospital of St. John of Jerusalem 88, 265
Orovitz, Max 76, 77
O'Sullivan, Shane 176, 196, 197
Oswald, Lee Harvey 137, 183
Owen, Alisha 448
Owen, George 183, 184, 185
Owen, Robert 183, 184, 185, 288, 289, 290, 299, 327, 331, 349
P
Paese Sera 92, 98
Palestine Liberation Organization (PLO) 79, 209, 283, 386
Palmer, Allan George 32, 33, 291, 352
Palmeri, Ernest 248
Palmer, Michael B. 290
Palmer National Bank 352
Papa, Michele 235
Park, Max 400
Park-On-Meter, Inc (POM) 362-365
Park, Frank and Libbie 87
Park, Tongsun 136, 149, 150, 154, 156, 158, 159, 164, 172, 188, 194, 195
Parry, Robert 157, 293, 294, 332, 338, 437, 459
Parvin-Dohrmann 157
Pasternak, Irving 138
Pastora, Eden 363
Patman, J.W. Wright 456
Patriots and Profiteers 308, 335
Patten, Joseph 216, 260
Pearson, Anthony 295
Pearson, Drew 118, 133
Pearson, Roger 292
Peck, David 120, 145
Peers, William R. 17
Pelullo, Leonard 247, 248, 265, 266, 303
Pemex 205, 206
Pender, George K. 364
Penn Central 215, 408, 429, 454-457, 462, 463
Pepper, Claude 236
Pepsi 154, 172, 218
Pereira, Jorge 273
Pereire, Francois 89, 90
Perelman, Ronald 368, 441

Peres, Shimon 69, 74, 82, 83, 87, 96, 286, 315, 316
Pergamon-Brassey 413, 414
Pergamon Press 381, 382, 387, 388, 413, 414, 426, 456
Permindex 87-92, 97, 140
Perpich, Rudy 409, 410, 411
Perry, Harry 101
Persico, Joseph 227, 229, 253, 254, 262, 264, 267
Persky, Gideon 82
Phao Siyanan 18, 83
Pharaon, Ghaith 274, 277, 278, 279, 318, 371
Philadelphia Enquirer 58
Philby, Kim 175
Phillips, David Atlee 176, 183
Phillips, Lazarus 87
Phillips, Maurice 89, 97
Phoenix Program 164, 341, 342, 384, 401
Picciotto, Edgar de 301
Picciotto, Michael de 300, 301, 334
Pickens, T. Boone 368, 447
Piderit, Fred 112, 144
Pike Committee 451
Pilgrim, Michael 192
Pinochet, Augusto 165, 292
Pires, Manuel J. 313
Pisar, Samuel 316, 409, 416
Pisello, Salvatore 438
Pitts, Henry Preston 154
Pizzo, Stephen 213, 259, 261, 334, 375, 376
Player, Sheldon 343
Plaza Hotel 56-60, 63, 117, 128, 182, 442
Poisoning for Profit 249, 266
Pola-Lite 139
Polstra, Klaus Uilke 85
Pope, Generoso (Gene) Jr. 114-116, 434
Pope, Generoso Sr. 114
Posey, Thomas 292, 344
Posner, Victor 246, 247, 265, 367
Power House, The 151, 194, 195, 199, 267, 331
Power Shift 23, 39
Powers, Richard 191-193
Pratt, Albert 71, 151
Presser, Jackie 192
Price, Robert 411
Prince Charles 131
Prince Philip 131, 146
Pritzker, J.B. 30
Pritzker, Nicholas and Thomas 30, 31, 32, 439
Pritzker, Penny 30
Profits of War 295, 332, 333, 337, 428
Profumo Affair 33, 128, 146, 171, 227, 277
Profumo, John 33, 128, 131-133, 135, 146, 171, 227, 277

Project ARTICHOKE 174
PROMIS scandal 210, 257, 285, 293, 363, 385, 389, 402, 405-407, 413
PROMIS software 210, 214, 243, 257, 285, 293, 338, 362-364, 376, 383,-395, 397, 402-407, 410-414, 425, 426, 433
Proskauer, Joseph S. 107, 108, 109, 111
Przedborski, Daniel 310
Przedborski, Felix 310-313, 335, 416, 422
Pugo, Boris 417
Pullman, John 76, 162
Purdy, Donald 191, 192
Purple Gang 47
Puzo, Mario 114
Pynchon, Thomas 230
Q
Quasha, Alan and Wayne 368, 369
Quasha, William 368-370
Quayle, Dan 288
Quintero, Rafael 162, 206, 212, 323
R
Rabb, Maxwell 440
Raborn, William 398, 399
Racz, Andrew 401, 402
Radar 392
Radford, Charles 167, 169-172, 179
Raichle, Frank 123
RAND Corporation 30
Ranieri, Lewis 352
Ransom, L.T. “Bill” 400, 401, 428
Raphael, Bruce 216, 417, 431
Rapid-American Corporation 65, 247, 456
Rappaport, Bruce 34, 80-86, 89, 95, 97, 230, 237, 280, 292, 310, 312, 315-317, 336, 353-356, 377, 416, 419-421, 424
Rathbone, Monroe J. 454
Rattikone, Ouane 162
Raymond, Walter 393
Reagan, Nancy 437
Reagan, Ronald 28, 29, 40, 74, 80, 159, 160, 170, 218, 221, 224, 225, 234, 241, 244, 247, 252-255, 257-259, 264, 284, 286, 288, 289, 294, 306, 314, 316, 317, 319, 320, 328, 331, 333, 336, 350, 352, 357, 363, 364, 367, 374, 382-384, 387, 393, 395, 402, 428, 433-439, 441, 443, 446, 447, 450, 451, 452, 459, 462
Reeder, G. Wayne 363, 364, 376, 377
Reed, Terry 207, 258, 347, 350, 363, 366, 374
Regan, Edward 441, 459
Reinfeld, Joseph 50, 51, 52, 53
Reinhardt, Dietrich 345, 374
Renda, Mario 221, 302, 303, 304, 352, 376
Renyi, Thomas 419, 421
Republic National Bank (RNB) 95, 298, 299, 300, 310, 416, 422, 425
Research Institute of America 226
Research on Demand 389
Resorts International 4, 77, 104, 136, 137, 229
Revell, Oliver “Buck” 327

Reynolds, Mercer III 371
Reynolds, William Bradford 393
R.G. LeTourneau Inc 215, 260
Riady, James T. 353
Riady, Mochtar 353-355, 358, 359, 360, 361, 375, 376
Ricciardi, J.H. 456
Rice, Condoleezza 216, 411
Richards, Guy 135
Richards, Jack 401
Richardson, Sid 355, 396, 397, 427, 462
Richemont Group 368, 370
Richler, Mordecai 44, 49
Rich, Marc 124, 206, 312, 317, 318, 417, 418, 431, 439
Riconosciuto, Michael 338, 364, 365, 377, 390, 391, 402, 404
Riddle, John 331, 351, 375, 429
Riggs Bank 217, 261
Rikan, Erika "Heidi" (Cathy Dieter) 183, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188
Riklis, Meshulam 65, 140, 141, 247, 265, 456
Rimrock International 77
Ritter, Bruce 441-445, 460
Roberts, John 304
Robertson, Terence 48, 49, 55
Rocka, Ludwig 369
Rockefeller Commission 174, 196
Rockefeller, David 6, 37, 228, 448
Rockefeller family 86, 96, 170, 218, 227, 356, 454
Rockefeller Foundation 11, 38
Rockefeller, Godfrey A. 370, 378
Rockefeller, Laurance 370
Rockefeller, Nelson 6, 228, 348, 351, 370
Rodriguez, Cesar 282
Rodriguez, Felix 162, 210, 323-325, 327, 339,
Rodriguez, Gilberto 404
Rodriguez, Luis 234, 289
Rodriguez, Paul 453, 462
Roe, Kenneth 364, 377
Roen, Allard 32, 122, 138
Rogers, David 287, 331
Rogers & Wells 244-247, 249, 251, 354
Rogers, William D. 322
Rogers, William P. 244
Rolling Stone 283, 322, 330
Roosevelt, Eleanor 104
Roosevelt, James 29, 31
Roosevelt, John 29
Roosevelt, Franklin (FDR) 6-8, 19, 24, 25, 66, 101, 102, 103, 104, 109, 114, 142, 154, 157, 222, 381
Rose, Charlie 406
Rose Law 358, 359, 361, 362, 364, 394, 395
Muolo, Paul 213, 259, 261, 334, 375, 376
Murchison, Clinton 83, 183, 184, 217, 261, 304, 342, 355, 359, 364, 402, 454, 462
Murchison, John 217, 261

Murdoch, Rupert 293, 294, 332, 435, 436, 440, 459
Murphy, Charles M. 102, 103
Murphy, Daniel 255, 393
Murphy, George 159
Music Corporation of America (MCA) 26, 28, 29, 31, 39, 40, 400-404, 409, 437, 438
N
Nahum, Sterling Henry 71, 131, 134
Nation, The 147, 364, 365, 377
National Bank of Georgia 272, 273, 274, 277, 353, 354
National Crime Syndicate 4, 48, 102, 103, 223
National Endowment for the Preservation of Liberty 288, 289, 331, 352
National Enquirer 114, 144
National Review 136, 156, 228, 435
National Security Agency (NSA) 165, 166, 202, 253, 383, 388, 392, 393, 395, 396-398, 427, 462
National Security Council 27, 169, 170, 177, 178, 180, 228, 255, 284, 285, 316, 348, 364, 393, 395, 402, 411
National Strategy Information Center (NSIC) 228
Naylor, R.T. 21, 23, 39, 76, 95, 196, 230, 262, 308, 335, 378
NBC News 261, 306
Nelson, Rusty 453
Nesline, Joe 129, 184, 185, 186, 188, 198, 223
Newhouse, Si Jr. 113, 122, 135, 434, 435
Newman, Arno 124, 311
Newman, Peter 44, 49, 69, 87, 333
New Republic 142, 245, 264, 376, 416, 431
Newsweek 270, 325, 329, 439, 459
New West 26, 39, 438, 459
New York Daily News 142, 383, 435
New Yorker 113, 302, 435, 458
New York Herald Tribune 8, 435
New York Magazine 102, 142, 293, 332, 432, 435, 460
New York Post 293, 377, 437, 442, 460
New York Times 37, 40, 52, 53, 65, 67, 68, 69, 85, 94-97, 106, 107, 142-147, 193, 196, 198, 199, 208, 217-219, 248, 258-262, 264-266, 274, 283, 293, 317, 329, 330-334, 336, 337, 351, 372, 375-377, 379, 409, 425, 429, 430, 434, 435, 440-443, 448-450, 455, 458-463
Nguyen Cao Ky 162, 163
Nicaraguan Humanitarian Assistance Office (NHAO) 289, 290, 291
Nichols, John Philip 363, 364
Nichols, Larry 362
Nichols, Louis B. 64
Nichols, Mary 58
Nichols, Richard Booth 402, 403
Nightline 191
Nightmare 182, 197
Nikitina, Galina 90, 91, 97
Nir, Amiram 286
Nitzan, Jonathan 83, 95
Nitze, Paul 165
Nixon, Richard 89, 94, 151, 152, 154, 166-169, 172, 173, 177, 180, 183, 188, 189, 194, 196, 197, 201, 216, 228, 229, 232, 244, 245, 250, 260, 273, 285, 293, 314, 319, 320, 352, 356, 382, 392, 443, 449
N.M. Rothschild 369

Nordex 417, 418, 419
Noriega, Manuel 209, 234, 259, 282, 283, 284, 323, 330, 350
Normandie 1
Norman, James 395, 397, 398, 427
North, Oliver 226, 228, 255, 256, 259, 284, 286, 306, 308, 311, 316, 327, 334, 338, 339, 344, 347, 348, 351, 391, 426, 447
Novaya Gazeta 423, 432
Novel, Gordon 60
Novotny, Mariella (Stella Marie Capes) 134
Nugan Hand Bank 203, 369
Nuñez, Moises 233
Nye, Joseph S. Jr. 449, 461
O
Oakland Tribune 32, 40
Obama, Barack 30
Ober 176
O'Brien, Larry 172, 181, 188
Observer 198, 219, 261, 296, 333
Occidental Petroleum 236, 237, 273, 274, 409, 447
Ocean Hunter 289, 290, 295
Ochoa, Jorge 340
O'Connell, Frank 224, 261, 404
O'Connor, John 442
"October Surprise" 80, 214, 225, 251, 252, 253, 255, 257, 267, 281, 313, 336, 391, 404, 428
Odlum, Floyd 28, 29, 151
O'Dwyer, William 103, 104, 105, 114, 136
Office of Management and Budget (OMB) 272, 273, 314
Office of Naval Intelligence (ONI 1, 2, 5, 8, 165
Office of Policy Coordination (OPC 19
Office of Strategic Services (OSS) 5-9, 13, 14, 16-18, 20, 29, 34, 37, 39, 60, 61, 85, 88, 93, 118, 129, 132, 135, 136, 155, 163, 201, 221, 222, 226-229, 233, 245, 250, 257, 261, 262, 266, 292, 352, 367, 378
Office of the Coordinator of Information (COI) 6, 7
Official and Confidential: The Secret Life of J. Edgar Hoover 60, 67, 68, 133, 373
Oil and Petroleum Year Book 90, 97
Oil Card: Global Economic Warfare in the 21st Century, The 395, 427
Ojjeh, Akram 308, 313, 335
Olayan, Suliman 320
Oliver, R. Spencer 181, 186
Olmsted, George 86, 273
Omaha Sun 445, 446
Omaha World Herald 160, 190, 446, 447, 448, 461
O'Neill, John Patrick 413
Operation Black Eagle 281, 283, 284, 288, 296, 297, 322, 334
Operation BLUEBIRD 174
Operation CHAOS 175, 176, 347
Operation Condor 386, 399, 405
Operation Midnight Climax 15
Operation Mongoose 161, 178
Operation Moses 313
Operation Paper 18, 39, 155, 194
Operation Underworld 2, 3, 5, 8, 14, 107

Ora Group 295, 296
Order of the Hospital of St. John of Jerusalem 88, 265
Orovitz, Max 76, 77
O'Sullivan, Shane 176, 196, 197
Oswald, Lee Harvey 137, 183
Owen, Alisha 448
Owen, George 183, 184, 185
Owen, Robert 183, 184, 185, 288, 289, 290, 299, 327, 331, 349
P
Paese Sera 92, 98
Palestine Liberation Organization (PLO) 79, 209, 283, 386
Palmer, Allan George 32, 33, 291, 352
Palmeri, Ernest 248
Palmer, Michael B. 290
Palmer National Bank 352
Papa, Michele 235
Park, Max 400
Park-On-Meter, Inc (POM) 362-365
Park, Frank and Libbie 87
Park, Tongsun 136, 149, 150, 154, 156, 158, 159, 164, 172, 188, 194, 195
Parry, Robert 157, 293, 294, 332, 338, 437, 459
Parvin-Dohrmann 157
Pasternak, Irving 138
Pastora, Eden 363
Patman, J.W. Wright 456
Patriots and Profiteers 308, 335
Patten, Joseph 216, 260
Pearson, Anthony 295
Pearson, Drew 118, 133
Pearson, Roger 292
Peck, David 120, 145
Peers, William R. 17
Pelullo, Leonard 247, 248, 265, 266, 303
Pemex 205, 206
Pender, George K. 364
Penn Central 215, 408, 429, 454-457, 462, 463
Pepper, Claude 236
Pepsi 154, 172, 218
Pereira, Jorge 273
Pereire, Francois 89, 90
Perelman, Ronald 368, 441
Peres, Shimon 69, 74, 82, 83, 87, 96, 286, 315, 316
Pergamon-Brassey 413, 414
Pergamon Press 381, 382, 387, 388, 413, 414, 426, 456
Permindex 87-92, 97, 140
Perpich, Rudy 409, 410, 411
Perry, Harry 101
Persico, Joseph 227, 229, 253, 254, 262, 264, 267
Persky, Gideon 82
Phao Siyanan 18, 83
Pharaon, Ghaith 274, 277, 278, 279, 318, 371

Philadelphia Enquirer 58
Philby, Kim 175
Phillips, David Atlee 176, 183
Phillips, Lazarus 87
Phillips, Maurice 89, 97
Phoenix Program 164, 341, 342, 384, 401
Picciotto, Edgar de 301
Picciotto, Michael de 300, 301, 334
Pickens, T. Boone 368, 447
Piderit, Fred 112, 144
Pike Committee 451
Pilgrim, Michael 192
Pinochet, Augusto 165, 292
Pires, Manuel J. 313
Pisar, Samuel 316, 409, 416
Pisello, Salvatore 438
Pitts, Henry Preston 154
Pizzo, Stephen 213, 259, 261, 334, 375, 376
Player, Sheldon 343
Plaza Hotel 56-60, 63, 117, 128, 182, 442
Poisoning for Profit 249, 266
Pola-Lite 139
Polstra, Klaus Uilke 85
Pope, Generoso (Gene) Jr. 114-116, 434
Pope, Generoso Sr. 114
Posey, Thomas 292, 344
Posner, Victor 246, 247, 265, 367
Power House, The 151, 194, 195, 199, 267, 331
Power Shift 23, 39
Powers, Richard 191-193
Pratt, Albert 71, 151
Presser, Jackie 192
Price, Robert 411
Prince Charles 131
Prince Philip 131, 146
Pritzker, J.B. 30
Pritzker, Nicholas and Thomas 30, 31, 32, 439
Pritzker, Penny 30
Profits of War 295, 332, 333, 337, 428
Profumo Affair 33, 128, 146, 171, 227, 277
Profumo, John 33, 128, 131-133, 135, 146, 171, 227, 277
Project ARTICHOKE 174
PROMIS scandal 210, 257, 285, 293, 363, 385, 389, 402, 405-407, 413
PROMIS software 210, 214, 243, 257, 285, 293, 338, 362-364, 376, 383,-395, 397, 402-407, 410-414, 425, 426, 433
Proskauer, Joseph S. 107, 108, 109, 111
Przedborski, Daniel 310
Przedborski, Felix 310-313, 335, 416, 422
Pugo, Boris 417
Pullman, John 76, 162
Purdy, Donald 191, 192

Purple Gang 47
Puzo, Mario 114
Pynchon, Thomas 230
Q
Quasha, Alan and Wayne 368, 369
Quasha, William 368-370
Quayle, Dan 288
Quintero, Rafael 162, 206, 212, 323
R
Rabb, Maxwell 440
Raborn, William 398, 399
Racz, Andrew 401, 402
Radar 392
Radford, Charles 167, 169-172, 179
Raichle, Frank 123
RAND Corporation 30
Ranieri, Lewis 352
Ransom, L.T. “Bill” 400, 401, 428
Raphael, Bruce 216, 417, 431
Rapid-American Corporation 65, 247, 456
Rappaport, Bruce 34, 80-86, 89, 95, 97, 230, 237, 280, 292, 310, 312, 315-317, 336, 353-356, 377, 416, 419-421, 424
Rathbone, Monroe J. 454
Rattikone, Ouane 162
Raymond, Walter 393
Reagan, Nancy 437
Reagan, Ronald 28, 29, 40, 74, 80, 159, 160, 170, 218, 221, 224, 225, 234, 241, 244, 247, 252-255, 257-259, 264, 284, 286, 288, 289, 294, 306, 314, 316, 317, 319, 320, 328, 331, 333, 336, 350, 352, 357, 363, 364, 367, 374, 382-384, 387, 393, 395, 402, 428, 433-439, 441, 443, 446, 447, 450, 451, 452, 459, 462
Reeder, G. Wayne 363, 364, 376, 377
Reed, Terry 207, 258, 347, 350, 363, 366, 374
Regan, Edward 441, 459
Reinfeld, Joseph 50, 51, 52, 53
Reinhardt, Dietrich 345, 374
Renda, Mario 221, 302, 303, 304, 352, 376
Renyi, Thomas 419, 421
Republic National Bank (RNB) 95, 298, 299, 300, 310, 416, 422, 425
Research Institute of America 226
Research on Demand 389
Resorts International 4, 77, 104, 136, 137, 229
Revell, Oliver “Buck” 327
Reynolds, Mercer III 371
Reynolds, William Bradford 393
R.G. LeTourneau Inc 215, 260
Riady, James T. 353
Riady, Mochtar 353-355, 358, 359, 360, 361, 375, 376
Ricciardi, J.H. 456
Rice, Condoleezza 216, 411
Richards, Guy 135
Richards, Jack 401
Richardson, Sid 355, 396, 397, 427, 462

Richemont Group 368, 370
Richler, Mordecai 44, 49
Rich, Marc 124, 206, 312, 317, 318, 417, 418, 431, 439
Riconosciuto, Michael 338, 364, 365, 377, 390, 391, 402, 404
Riddle, John 331, 351, 375, 429
Riggs Bank 217, 261
Rikan, Erika "Heidi" (Cathy Dieter) 183, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188
Riklis, Meshulam 65, 140, 141, 247, 265, 456
Rimrock International 77
Ritter, Bruce 441-445, 460
Roberts, John 304
Robertson, Terence 48, 49, 55
Rocka, Ludwig 369
Rockefeller Commission 174, 196
Rockefeller, David 6, 37, 228, 448
Rockefeller family 86, 96, 170, 218, 227, 356, 454
Rockefeller Foundation 11, 38
Rockefeller, Godfrey A. 370, 378
Rockefeller, Laurance 370
Rockefeller, Nelson 6, 228, 348, 351, 370
Rodriguez, Cesar 282
Rodriguez, Felix 162, 210, 323-325, 327, 339,
Rodriguez, Gilberto 404
Rodriguez, Luis 234, 289
Rodriguez, Paul 453, 462
Roe, Kenneth 364, 377
Roen, Allard 32, 122, 138
Rogers, David 287, 331
Rogers & Wells 244-247, 249, 251, 354
Rogers, William D. 322
Rogers, William P. 244
Rolling Stone 283, 322, 330
Roosevelt, Eleanor 104
Roosevelt, James 29, 31
Roosevelt, John 29
Roosevelt, Franklin (FDR) 6-8, 19, 24, 25, 66, 101, 102, 103, 104, 109, 114, 142, 154, 157, 222, 381
Rose, Charlie 406
Rose Law 358, 359, 361, 362, 364, 394, 395

LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS

ACUSR – American Committee on US-Soviet Relations
ADFA – Arkansas Development Finance Authority
AFL-CIO – American Federation of Labor and the Congress of Industrial Organizations
AIA – Aviation Industries Association
AIFLD – American Institute of Free Labor Development
AIG – American International Group
ANICO – American National Insurance Company
AREB – All-Russian Exchange Bank
BCCI – Bank of Credit and Commerce International
BCP – Banque de Commerce et de Placements
BNL – Banca Nazionale del Lavoro
BONY – Eastern European Division of Bank of New York
BONY-IMB – Bank of New York-Inter Maritime Bank
BSC – British Security Coordination
BWC – Bank of World Commerce
CAT – Civil Air Transport
CCC – Commercial Credit Corporation
CDC – Control Data Corporation
CIA – Central Intelligence Agency
CMA – Civilian Materiel Assistance
CMC – Centro Mondale Commerciale
COG – Continuity of Government
COI – Office of the Coordinator of Information
COP – Chiefs of Police National Drug Task Force
CORDS – Civil Operations and Revolutionary Development Support
CORU – Coordination of United Revolutionary Organizations
CPD – Committee on the Present Danger
CRP – Committee for the Reelection of the President
DEA – US Drug Enforcement Administration
DFS – La Dirección Federal de Seguridad
DIA – Defense Intelligence Agency
DNC – Democratic National Committee
DOD – Department of Defense
DOJ – Department of Justice
EATSCO – Egyptian-American Air Transport and Services Corporation
EJA – Executive Jet Aviation
ERA – Engineering Research Associates
EUB – European Union Bank
FABCO – First Arkansas Bankstock Corporation
FBI – Federal Bureau of Investigation
FBN – Federal Bureau of Narcotics
FGB – Financial General Bankshares (aka First American Bankshares)
FIDCO – First Intercontinental Development Corporation
GMT – GeoMili Tech Consultants Corporation
HUMINT – Nitze's program for a naval human intelligence
IAHC – Italo-American Hotel Corporation
IAI – Israel Aerospace Industries
IAI – Israel Aircraft Industries
ICB – International Credit Bank

ICLR – International Computerized Land Research
IDEA – Institute for Democracy, Education, and Assistance
IDF – Israel Defense Force
IFMA – International Fund for Mergers and Acquisitions
IMB – Inter Maritime Bank
IOS – Investors Overseas Services
IRS – Internal Revenue Service
IRT – International Research and Trade
KMT – Nationalist Chinese the Kuomintang
LTV – Ling-Temco-Vought
MCA – Music Corporation of America
MECC – Midwest Employers Casualty Company
NAR – North American Resources
NHAQ – Nicaraguan Humanitarian Assistance Office
NSA – National Security Agency
NSC – National Security Council
NSIC – National Strategy Information Center
NVA – North Vietnamese Army
OMB – Office of Management and Budget
ONI – Office of Naval Intelligence
OPC – Office of Policy Coordination
OSG – Operations Sub-Group
OSS – Office of Strategic Services
PEC – Palestine Economic Corporation
PIIC – Pergamon International Information Corporation
PLO – Palestine Liberation Organization
RNB – Republic National Bank
SAG – Screen Actors Guild
SAT – Southern Air Transport
SDECE – France's External Documentation and Counter-Espionage Service
SDNY – Southern District of New York
SEC – Securities and Exchange Commission
SGS – Société Générale de Surveillance
SIG – Special Interrogation Group
SOE – Special Operations Executive
SSI – System Services International
STTG – Stanford Technology Trading Group International
TF–157 – Task Force 157
TIWG – Terrorist Incident Working Group
TRADEVCO – Liberian Trade and Development Corp
UFG – United Financial Group
WCC – World Commerce Corporation
WWF – World Wildlife Fund
YAF – Young Americans for Freedom

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

First and foremost, I’d like to extend my deepest and sincerest thanks to Ed Berger, without whom this book would not have been possible. Ed contributed amazing, in-depth and original research to several key parts of this book and his contributions were and are invaluable. If you enjoy historical deep dives about the intersection of organized crime networks, corporate power and intelligence agencies, please consider listening to and supporting his podcast: The Pseudodoxology Podcast Network at https://www.patreon.com/wydna

I also want to thank my amazing assistant Star Parsons for helping keep my website afloat while I worked on this book and for painstakingly formatting all the many, many citations within this book. I also owe much to my publisher Kris Millegan for his infinite patience and understanding, as this book was delayed several times, and for his support of my work. Also, an important thank you to Johnny Vedmore who made some important contributions to this book and whose original past reporting on the Epstein case was key to developing important parts of this book.

In addition, this work, and my journalistic career in general, would not have been possible if not for Mnar Muhawesh and the team at MintPress News. Mnar and the MintPress team first gave me the space and platform necessary to develop my journalistic work and provided me with the support I needed to publish my original, four-part series on which this book is based. Thank you so much for believing in me and for supporting my work from the very beginning – I owe you all so much.

I also would like to thank my amazing babysitters, Fresia Retamal and Patricia Guzmán, for taking great care of my little ones so that I could put in the time to write this book.

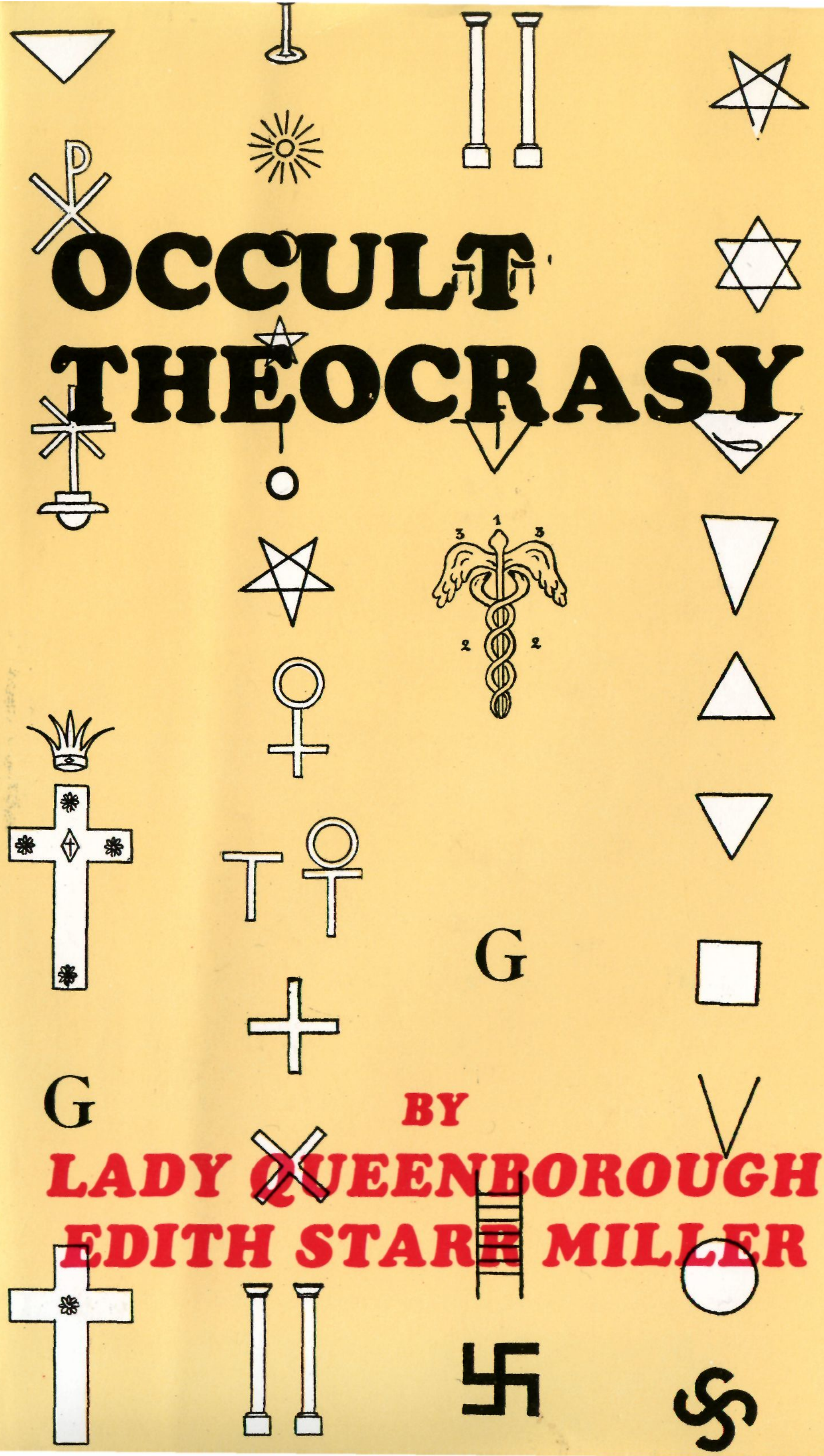
Last but not least, I would like to extend my deepest, heartfelt thanks to all of my supporters, specifically the thousands of readers who financially support my work, allowing me to be 100% independent. Without your support, this book would not have happened and I cannot thank you enough for your help in financing this book as well as in supporting and sharing my other work, both online and in print.

OCCULT THEOCRASY

BY

LADY QUEENBOROUGH

EDITH STARR MILLER



OCCULT THEOCRASY

IN TWO VOLUMES

VOLUME I

Theocrasy. (Adaptation of Gr. θεοκρᾶσία, from θεο-ς god + κρᾶσία mingling).

1. Anc. Myth. A mingling of various deities or divine attributes into one personality ; also a mixture of the worship of different deities.

Murray : New English Dictionary.

To THE MEMORY OF MY UNCLE

LLOYD E. WARREN

WHO FIRST GUIDED ME IN THIS WORK

OCCULT THEOCRASY

BY

LADY QUEENBOROUGH

(EDITH STARR MILLER)

PUBLISHED POSTHUMOUSLY

FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY

IN TWO VOLUMES

VOLUME I

First Published ... 1933

FOREWORD

THIS BOOK makes no claim to literary merit. It is simply a work of research and documentation, giving evidence and facts which I trust will help the reader in drawing his own conclusions.

In the course of my researches as an international political investigator into the causes of social unrest, I have probed the depths of infamy which now surrounds, not ours only, but also the next generation, whose right to lead a decent life should be as good as was ours. As a woman of the world I have witnessed things the existence of which I did not suspect and I have realised that, due to my " protected " position in life. they should never have been expected to have come to my knowledge. Let me tell every woman, however much " protected", whether Dairymaid or Duchess, that the safeguards which she imagines to be thrown around herself are but a mirage of the past. Her own and her children's future are at the mercy of those " forces " the activities of which it has been my business, for the last ten years, to follow as one of a group of investigators.

Today, most of the *good* people are afraid to be good. They strive to be broadminded and tolerant ! It is fashionable to be tolerant — but mostly tolerant of evil — and this new code has reached the proportions of demanding intolerance of good. The wall of resistance to evil has thus been broken down and no longer affords protection to those who, persecuted by evil doers, stand in need of it.

Worse still, there are cases wherein virtuous people's good name is relentlessly " filched from them ", but no effort will be made by the presumed good people to rally to their defence. Happy are they if they themselves can discover the cause of their ruin, materiel or moral, either partial or total.

In offering this book to the public, I have endeavoured to expose some of the means and methods used by a secret world, one might almost say an underworld, to penetrate, dominate and destroy not only the so-called upper classes, but also the better portion of all classes. There are those who feel confident that if they refrain from joining any society or group and avoid entanglements, no harm can befall them. To such, let me say that situations can be, and are, created for innocent dupes every day and wrecked homes are the direct result. Neither fortune nor a blameless life led, as it were, in an island of strict virtue in the midst of a tumultuous sea of evil, spells security.

Irrefutable evidence of a particular example of underworld tyranny has come into my possession. The victim's guilt was her reluctance to step from virtue into the mire of evil which surrounded her. Moreover she was intolerant of evil and sought to oppose and destroy it. The case of her persecution at the hands of her foes is complete. She belonged to what is termed Society as did also some of the other actors in this bewildering drama. The world, social, financial, legal and, shall we say also, the underworld, leaving to this word its generally accepted literal meaning, knows them. So many Jekylls and Hydes stalk about unsuspectingly in our midst !

From such an example I have been led to the conclusion that, among others, three factors can help one from being completely destroyed by the combined forces of that " underworld " : a flawless life, independent means and real friends, all three of which must be backed by a fearless determination to fight evil on all points of the Masonic compass.

In these days when apparently vice triumphs and virtue must be penalized, it may be well for all of us to fight the undertow by which our children may be dragged under and must of necessity perish. Vice rings and secret societies form but one vortex into which youth is drawn and destroyed whilst the " good people ", because of their ignorance, look on helplessly in despair.

It is for their instruction that this book has been written. Its compilation has taken several years and, had it not been for the generous efforts of one of my friends, Mme de Shishmareff, and of several other persons, I would never have been able to complete the task which I set out to accomplish.

What must concern us all now is the protection of decency or, in other words — *Equal rights* — for such as are not vice adepts.

This book is not complete. It will never be complete, but for the present it must remain as a study of the root conditions which have led to present day subversive upheavals and the overthrow of the principles of Christian civilization.

EDITH QUEENBOROUGH

OCCULT THEOCRASY

TABLE OF CONTENTS

VOLUME I

PART I

THE MYSTERIES OF FREEMASONRY

Chapter

I. — The Religion of the Secret 21
II. — The Meaning of Occultism 24
III. — Brahminism 44
IV. — Mazdeism (Zoroastrianism), Jainism 65
V. — Confucianism and Taoism 71
VI. — Egyptian Esoterism 73
VII. — Judaism, The Pharisees 75
VIII. — Orpheism and the Pagan Mysteries 90
IX. — The Druids 100
X. — Christianity 105
XI. — Manicheism 108
XII. — Witchcraft 112
XIII. — The Gnostics (The Heretics) 118
XIV. — Lamaism 123
XV. — The Yezidees (Devil Worshippers) 131
XVI. — Orthodox Islam 133
XVII. — Unorthodox Islam, The Ishmaelites, The Lodge of Cairo 134
XVIII. — The Druses 138
XIX. — The Assassins 140
XX. — The Knights Templar 143
XXI. — Knights of Malta 146
XXII. — The Rosicrucians 147
XXIII. — Cathares, Albigenses, Waldenses 163

Chapter
XXIV. — The Moravians or The Order of Religious Freemasons, etc. 165
XXV. — The Anabaptists 171
XXVI. — Grand Lodge of England 174
XXVII. — The Gospel of Revolution 183
XXVIII. — The Preparation 188
XXIX. — General Pepe and " The One Big Union ". 200
XXX. — Albert Pike and Giuseppe Mazzini.... 207
XXXI. — Practical Politics 241
XXXII. — Adriano Lemmi 253
XXXIII. — The Interlocking Directorate 297

PART II

CHRONOLOGICAL SERIES

ASSOCIATIONS OF THE 16TH CENTURY

Date of Foundation
XXXIV. — 1520 The Illuminati of Spain 307
XXXV. — 1541 The Order of the Jesuits.... 308
XXXVI. — 1562 The Defenders (Roman Catholic) 320

ASSOCIATIONS OF THE 17TH CENTURY

XXXVII. — 1641 Ancient Order of Hibernians (Roman Catholic) 323
XXXVIII. — 1638 Jansenism 325
XXXIX. — 1688 Camisards of the Cevennes 327

ASSOCIATIONS OF THE 18TH CENTURY

XL. — 1721 Rite of Swedenborg or Illuminati of Stockholm 331
XLI. — 1725 Supreme Conseil and Grand Orient de France 333
XLI I. — 1731 The Convulsionaries of St. Médard 343
XLI II. — 1750 The Royal Order of Scotland... 349

Chapter — Date of Foundation

XLIV. — 1751 The Strict Observance . . . 350
XLV. — 1754 The Martinist Order . . . 353
XLVI. — 1760 The Illuminati of Avignon . . . 355
XLVII. — 1761 Antient and Accepted Scottish Rite (American), Antient and Accepted Rite (England) 357
XLVIII. — 1763 The Order of the Mopse . . . 365
XLIX. — 1766 The Rite of Zinnendorf . . . 368
L. — 1773 The Philaletes (Chercheurs de la Verité) . . . 369
LI. — 1776 The Illuminati of Bavaria . . . 370
LII. — 1786 The Tugendbund . . . 376
LIII. — 1786 The Jacobins . . . 379
LIV. — 1790 The Knights Templar of America . . . 384

VOLUME II

LV. — 1791 The United Irishmen . . . 385
LVI. — 1795 The Orange Society (Protestant and Masonic) . . . 391
LVII. — 1798 The Philadelphians (The Olympians) . . . 395
LVIII. — 1799 The Scottish Philosophic Rite... 397

ASSOCIATIONS OF THE 19TH CENTURY

LIX. — 1804 Modern Knights Templar, England . . . 399
LX. — 1804 Modern Knights Templar, France . . . 402
LXI. — Modern Knights Templar, Sweden . . . 406
LXII. — 1805 The Rite of Mizraim . . . 407
LXIII. — 1805 The Ribbon Society (Roman Catholic) . . . 421
LXIV. — 1808 The Cerneau Rite (A. & A. Scottish Rite) . . . 423
LXV. — 1809 Carbonarism (Alta Vendita)... 427

Chapter	Date of Foundation.		
LXVI.	— 1810	The Manchester Unity of Oddfellows, England	436
LXVII.	— 1814	The Hetairia of Greece (Etherists)	438
LXVIII.	— 1815	The Hung Society of China..	441
LXIX.	— 1815	The Rite of Memphis	443
LXX.	— 1816	The Calderari	445
LXXI.	— 1820	French Carbonarism	447
LXXII.	— 1822	Modern Knights Templar, Poland	452
LXXIII.	— 1825	The St. Patrick Boys	454
LXXIV.	— 1830	Brahmo Somaj	455
LXXV.	— 1830	The Mormons	459
LXXVI.	— 1843	The Independent Order of B'nai B'rith (Jewish Masonry)	465
LXXVII.	— 1843	Young Ireland	467
LXXVIII.	— 1844	The Bahai Movement	469
LXXIX.	— 1844	The Independent Order of Oddfellows (I. O. O. F.) (American)	471
LXXX.	— 1848	Modern Spiritism	473
LXXXI.	— 1850	The Eastern Star	480
LXXXII.	— 1857	The Irish Republican Brotherhood (The Fenians)	481
LXXXIII.	— 1858	Phoenix Society of Skibbereen.	485
LXXXIV.	— 1860	L'Alliance Israelite Universelle	486
LXXXV.	— 1860	The International (First and Second)	489
LXXXVI.	— 1865	The Ku-Klux Klan	497
LXXXVII.	— 1866	Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia...	499
LXXXVIII.	— 1869	The Clan-na-Gael *(V. C.)*.....	513
LXXXIX.	— 1869	The Nihilists	518
XC.	— 1871	The Cryptic Rite	519
XCI.	— 1872	The Sat Bhai of Prague	520
XCII.	— 1872	Ancient and Primitive Rite, Rite of Memphis (England).	522
XCIII.	— 1872	The Anarchists	526

Chapter Date of Foundation.
XCIV. — 1874 Ancient and Archaeological Order of Druids 528
XCV. — 1875 The Theosophical Society.... 529
XCVI. — 1876 Primitive and Original Phremasons, Swedenborgian Rite. 536
XCVII —1879 The National Land League... 538
XCVIII. — 1879 Russellites or International Bible Students 539
XCIX. — 1881 The Invincibles 541
C. — 1882 Société Théosophique d'Orient et d'Occident 542
CI. — 1882 Grand Lamaistic Order of Light (Fratres Lucis) 543
CII. — 1882 The ahmadiyyah Sect 545
GUI. — 1882 Co-Masonry 547
CIV. — 1882 Knights of Columbus 550
CV. — 1883 Christian Science 553
CVI. — 1883 The Fabian Society 557
CVII. — 1884 Gaelic Athletic Association.. 565
CVIII. — 1884 Hermetic Society 566
CIX. — 1888 Order of The Golden Dawn in the Outer 568
CX. — 1895 Modern Illuminism, Ancient Order of Oriental Templars (Ordo Templi Orientis) (To Ov) 571
CXI. — 1895 Theosophical Society of America 582
CXII. — 1896 Irish Socialist Republican Party 584

ASSOCIATIONS OF THE 20TH CENTURY

CXIII. — 1900 The Young Turk Movement.. 585
CXIV. — 1901 The Amsterdam International. 587
CXV. — 1903 Stella Matutina 588
CXVI. — 1905 Sinn Fein 590
CXVII. — 1908 The Honourable Fraternity of Antient Masonry (Female Lodges) 593

Chapter — Date of Foundation.
CXVIII. — 1908 Federal Council of the Churches of Christ in America 595
CXIX. — 1910 Sufism (Occidental) 599
CXX. — 1911 Narodna Odbrana 601
CXXI. — 1913 The Anthroposophical Society. 604
CXXII. — 1915 Friends of Irish Freedom..... 606
CXXIII. — 1915 The Knights of the Ku-Klux 607 Klan 607
CXXIV. — 1917 Sinn Fein in America 613
CXXV. — 1919 The Third International (Communist) 614
CXXVI. — 1919 The Fascisti 619
CXXVII. — 1920 American Prohibition and the Anti-Saloon League 621
CXXVIII. — 1920 The American Civil Liberties Union 627
CXXIX. — 1920 The V. V. V. (Vereinigung Vergewältigter Voelker) 631
CXXX. — 1920 Juvenile Freemasonry 634
CXXXI. — 1920 The League Of Nations 636
CXXXII. — 1920 Tenri Kenjukai 641
CXXXIII. — 1928 Buchmanism 643
CXXXIV. — 1928 The Rackets 645
CXXXV. — 1930 The New History Society 651
CXXXVI. — 1930 The Youth Peace Federation.. 653
CXXXVII. — 1930 The International Bank 658
Conclusion 661
Bibliography . . . ., 667

APPENDICES

I. — Manifesto of the O. T. O. 677
II. — Extract from the Charter for Royal Order of Scotland in U. S. A 706
III. — Masonic and Pagan Symbolism 709
IV. — Photographic Reproductions of Documents interesting to Freemasonry etc, following p. 720
GENERAL INDEX 721

OCCULT THEOCRASY

PART I

" My final work is a word of warning to American women : Keep away from the Swamis, the Yogis, the traveling teaching men. You would need no such bidding if, for an instant, you guessed the truth. In your good faith, in your eager-minded receptivity of high-sounding doctrine, in your hunger for colour, romance, glamour, and dreams come true, you expose yourself, all unsuspecting, to things that, if you knew them, would kill you dead with unmerited shame. "

Katherine Mayo in *Why I wrote Mother India.*

THE MYSTERIES OF FREEMASONRY

CHAPTER I

THE RELIGION OF THE SECRET

Man is a creature of mind and matter. To the realm of mind belongs metaphysical thought which, whether trained or untrained, is peculiar to each individual and is subject for its development or restraint to his will. It is the basis of religion in the generally accepted sense of this word ; it is purely spiritual and can reach the height of mysticism. From it issue creeds or doctrines and the erection of a theological system of beliefs.

Imparted to other individuals and accepted by them, the metaphysical thought of a few great minds has become the basis of religious systems. Upon its teaching was grafted a Ritual or Law, disciplining the life, mystic, moral, social and even physical, of its adherents or believers. From the exercise of such laws, theocracy or the rule of priesthood was evolved. It is to be found in every religion regardless of the fact that in some instances like in the Buddhist doctrine of Gautama and in the teaching of Jesus Christ, nothing is further removed than ritualism from the metaphysical thought or religious conception of the founders.

The power of theocrasy or exercise of government rule over the masses by a hierarchy of priests or adepts rested on its dual system of teaching, namely : Exoterism and Esoterism, the former a code of discipline of the thought and mode of life of the masses, the latter the hierarchic school wherein were trained the chosen adepts destined to safeguard the rules imposed upon the people by the high priests.

Upon a close study of the manifold religious systems, the corruption of which led to theocratic rule, namely, Brahminism, the Ancient Egyptian Cult, Mosaism or Judaism, Christianism and Mahometanism, one finds the accepted belief of Monotheism as the basis of esoteric or secret belief or doctrine. Monotheism is here taken in the sense of First Principle.

Whereas the Egyptian high priesthood of Memphis kept this theory as the esoteric teaching of the high adepts, Moses, brought up as one of them, gave it as exoteric or popular belief to the Israelitic sect to which he belonged, embodying it in a deity, the terrible *Jehovah* of the Jews.

Another side of the esoteric teaching was that of occultism, the development of all human psychic forces which, when misused, lead to the practice of magic. The esoteric part of all religions or hermeticism, the teaching and practice of occultism, led to the development of what might be termed the religion of the secret, which eventually overshadowed and helped to dissimulate subversive activities.

It is with this that we are chiefly concerned and will endeavour, to some degree, to show its baneful influence on society of all creeds and nations. Let the reader bear in mind that it is not the object of this work to discuss the place occupied and the part played by either Metaphysics and Philosophy on the one hand, and Science and Ritualism on the other. The limitations of each and its encroachment upon the territory of the others, the ensuing conflicts, are matter for the history of fanaticism throughout the ages. Our aim is to follow the outgrowth of Esoterism and a few of its multiple ramifications in the realm of perversion and subversion.

CHAPTER II

THE MEANING OF OCCULTISM

A summary and some explanation of the principal forms of occultism must precede the chapters which deal with the historical side of this subject, and the objections, those of the credulous as well as those of the sceptics, must be foreseen and forestalled. Many persons are tempted to deny, arbitrarily and without examination, statements on matters of which they have no previous knowledge, but even the possible criticism of such as these must have received due consideration.

In this age of wireless and aeroplanes, one of the fads of the modern highbrow is to scoff at such things as sorcerers, magic and evocations as old wives' tales. Tales of ancient history ! There are people who refuse to believe in the existence of the supernatural, perhaps we should say supernormal, even when confronted with the evidence. Such are the sceptics who deny everything. Hidebound in their prejudice, they ignore the fact that magic, White or Black, has now as many adepts as ever, nor can they distinguish between the different schools of spiritism.

First, there are the charlatans whose tricks in the line of Spiritism are generally sooner or later unmasked.

Second, there are the Occultists who operate in secrecy and hide their meetings from all but initiates with the greatest care.

Many persons are duped by charlatans, so the sceptics persuade themselves of the absolute non-existence of all diabolical practices in modern times. They are wrong. For Occultism flourishes now in Europe, Asia, and America. The Black Mass is said today in Paris and London, and Satanism has its faithful followers. On this subject one of the most eminent writers was Carl Hackse, who, under the pseudonym of Dr. Bataille, made an extensive study of Occultism and gave his extremely exaggerated views of it in the book *Le Diable au XIX^e Siècle.*

The following pages of this chapter are mostly either quotations or abridgements from that work :

" According to the teaching of the Christian churches, God allows demons certain limited powers, but they are not permitted to open the gates of hell and release a spirit at the request of one who evokes the dead. The dead, even damned, will not show themselves if evoked, nor would evocations be answered by those who had succeeded in attaining the kingdom of heaven, but devils can and do, says the Church, substitute themselves for the deceased. They will impersonate a dead person whose appearance is demanded by invocations.

" It is also admitted that the fallen angels or spirits will often manifest to people without being called, The theological hagiographa cite many cases of diabolical apparitions to saints, apparitions which these saints have been able to repel and conquer... but what sceptics and agnostic Christians alike ignore is that besides the drawing room mediums, mediums for diversion, there are occultists whose vile practices are veiled in the profoundest mystery. These men, whose moral sense is absolutely perverted, believe in Lucifer, but they believe him to be the equal of God and worship him secretly. "[1]

Modern Occultism is on the one hand practical Cabala and on the other, Indian Yogism, both of which have always had their adepts more or less openly.

The Cabala is Occult Science itself. It is the secret theology of the initiates, theology essentially Satanic. In a word the counter-theology. Our God, the God of the Christians, is the power of evil in the eyes of the Cabalists ; and for them the power of good, the real God, is Lucifer.

" The Cabala teaches magic or the art of intercourse with spirits and supernatural beings.

" One cannot be a convinced Cabalist without soon becoming a magician and devoting oneself to the practices of occultism.

" Not that our Cabalists or contemporary magicians practise all the different branches of occultism. Some of these have been abandoned and others are only used by charlatans for the exploitation of superstitious persons, but a great many, precisely the most criminal and perverse, are observed in the hidden dens of our modern Luciferians. "[2]

Magic has two divisions :

The first is *divining* magic, subdivided into several branches of which the principal are :

Astrology
Palmistry
Anthropomancy
Oneirocritics
Aeromancy
Hydromancy
Pyromancy
Cartomancy

---

[1] Bataille, *Le Diable au XIX^{e} Siècle,* vol. I, p. 28.

[2] *Ibid.,* p. 29.

The second is *operative* magic, also subdivided into several branches of which the principal are :

Alchemy | Necromancy
Mesmerism | Theurgy
Various miraculous feats

There are moreover some superstitious practices not specially classed.

Bataille thus defines some of the foregoing :

Astrology. — Divining the future by the stars. The casting of horoscopes is its most prevalent practice.

Palmistry. — Divining the future by the hand.

Anthropomancy. — This is one of the practices supposed at present to have fallen into disuse. It is a horrible, savage abomination and consists in disembowelling a human being for the purpose of divining the future by inspection of the entrails.

Mediaeval history accuses Gilles de Retz of perpetrating this crime on children, whom he lured to his castle for the purpose. Tacitus says that the Druids, in ancient Britain, used to consult their Gods by looking into the entrails of their captives.

Oneirocritics. — Divining the future through interpretation of dreams.

Aeromancy. — Divination by the study of aerial phenomena.

Hydromancy. -— Divination by the study of liquids or aquatic phenomena.

Pyromancy. — Divination by fire.

Cartomancy. — Divination by cards.

There is no need to expatiate further on the more or less grotesque means employed by those who follow these false sciences. One must be somewhat erratic to imagine that the future can be foretold by coffee grounds, by the antics of flames in a grate, by the order in which shuffled cards will be drawn, or by the odd shapes assumed by wind-driven clouds ! When events corroborate predictions made under these conditions, it can be attributed to the use of the power of *clairvoyance,* but these fortune tellers, some of whom have a thorough knowledge of the rules governing the practices of these absurdities, are the first to distrust their art.

Such expedients, disdained by the real occultists, are too unimportant to be worthy of note. It is quite another matter to expose the Satanists, ignored by the public, whose sects, bearing different names in different countries, constitute, in reality, *only one, single, secret religion* whose fanatics, imbued with the spirit of evil, will sacrifice themselves blindly to their cause.

Throughout the universe, all Luciferian and Satanic rites bear a basic similarity.

Dealing principally with the practices of contemporary operative magic, it is Bataille's opinion that as regards the mysterious art of Alchemy, its theory is called Hermetic Science and has a double objective, namely, the discovery of the philosopher's stone, a substance capable of transmuting base metals into gold and drinkable gold, or the Elixir of long life which is a magic potion endowed with the properties necessary to prolong human life indefinitely or, at least, to maintain in old age the faculties of youth. Alchemy as a science seems now obsolete.

The Alchemists knew the existence of microbes and toxins long before the medical discoveries of the present age. The laboratories of Satanic bacteriology have been working, for a long time, on cultures of bacilli or solutions of their toxic properties which, even when administered in infinitesimal doses, mixed with food **or drink,** disseminate disease and death where it is judged necessary by the " Masters " that life is to be destroyed. In these cases deaths occur from apparently natural causes!

He further says that *Magnetic Mesmerism* is the occult medicine of the Cabalists. One must naturally not confuse the scientists who are at present making researches in hypnotism and suggestion, in the interest of science, with the emulators of Cagliostro whose aim is to procure diversions, often wicked and immoral. Scientific magnetism is still an obscure question being studied by theologians, physiologists and criminologists, whereas that of the adepts of magic has nothing to do with this ; it is a branch of the subterranean work that is nearing its goal today.

Necromancy is partly divining magic and partly operative magic. This practice consists in the evocation of the spirits of the dead. Spiritism and rapping of tables are necromancy, but if all spiritists are not necessarily Cabalists, all Cabalists are practicing necromancy. People are far from suspecting the progress made by necromancy along these lines. Freemasonry is yearly more and more invaded by the spiritist element to the extent that, in 1889, an international convention of spiritist Freemasons attended by about 500 delegates was held at the Hotel of the Grand Orient of France, rue Cadet, Paris.

This was only a beginning ! [3]

Eliphas Levi, a renowned occultist of the 19th century, writing in *Histoire de la Magie,* [4] in the following words, sounds a warning to those who, recklessly, would venture into the domain of the occult.

" The experiences of theurgy and necromancy are always disastrous to those who indulge in them. When one has once stood on the threshold of the other world one must die and almost invariably under terrible conditions. First giddiness, then catalepsy followed by madness. It is true that the atmosphere is disturbed, the woodwork cracks and doors tremble and groan in the presence of certain persons, after a series of intoxicating acts. Weird sounds, sometimes bloody signs, will appear spontaneously on paper or linen. They are always the same and are classed by magicians as *Diabolical writings.* The very sight of them induces a state of convulsion or ecstacy in the mediums who believe themselves to be seeing spirits. Thus Satan, the Spirit of Evil, is transfigured for them into an angel of light but, before they will manifest, these so-called spirits require sympathetic excitement produced by sexual intercourse on the part of their devotees. Hands must be placed in hands, feet on feet, they must breathe in each other's faces, these acts often being followed by others of an obscene character. The initiates, revelling in these forms of excesses believe themselves to be the elect of God and the arbiters of destiny. They are the successors of the fakirs of India. No warning will save them.

---

[3] Bataille, *Le Diable au XIX*ᵉ *Siècle,* p. 35.

[4] P. 143.

" To cure such illnesses, the priests of Greece used to terrify their patients by concentration and exaggeration of the evil in one great paroxysm. They made the adept sleep in the cave of Trophonius. After some preliminary preparations, he descended to a subterranean cavern in which he was left without light soon to be prostrated by intoxicating gases. Then the visionary, still in the throes of ghastly dreams caused by incipient asphyxia, was rescued, being carried off prophesying on his tripod. These tests gave their nervous systems such a shock that the patients never dared mention evocations of phantoms again.

" Theurgy is the highest degree of occultism. Necromancy is limited to the summoning of dead souls, but the Theurgists of the nineteenth century evoke entities qualified by them as genii, angels of light, exalted spirits, spirits of fire etc. In their meetings, scattered throughout the world, they worship Lucifer. The three mysterious letters J... B... M..., that the common initiates see in the Masonic Temples, are reproduced in the meeting rooms of the Luciferians, but they no longer mean Jakin, Bohaz, Mahabone, as in the Lodges, nor Jacques Bourguignon Molay, as with the Knights Kadosch ; in Theurgy these three letters mean ; Jesus Bethlemitus Maledictus. Theurgy is therefore pure Satanism. "[5]

" Moreover it is important to note that the Cabalists, admitted to the mysteries of Theurgy, never mention the word Satan. They look upon certain dissident adepts who invoke the devil under the name of Satan as heretics, whose system they call Goety or Black Magic. They call their own practices Theurgy or White Magic. "[6]

Between these two types of Devil worshippers, the Luciferian occultists and the Satanists, there is a difference which must not be overlooked.

Luciferians never call their infernal master " Spirit of Evil" or " Father and Creator of Crime ". Albert Pike even forbade the use of the word *Satan* under any circumstances.

There is indeed a distinction between the Satanists and Luciferians. The Satanists, described by Mr. Huysmans in his book, *Là Bas,* are chiefly persons mentally deranged by the use and abuse of drugs who, while suffering from a peculiar form of hysteria, accuse the God of the Christians of having betrayed the cause of humanity. They are persons who recognize that their God Satan occupies a position in the supernatural sphere, inferior to that of the Christian deity. On the other hand the Luciferians or the initiates of kindred rites, while still labouring under a strange delusion, act deliberately and glorify Lucifer as the principle of good. To them he is the equal of the God of the Christians whom they describe as the principle of evil.

---

[5] Bataille, *op. cit.,* p. 35.
[6] *Ibid.,* p. 36.

It is necessary to recognize the distinction which exists between Luciferians and Satanists, for their two cults bear each other no resemblance, although Lucifer-Satan manifests indiscriminately to his faithful followers of both denominations. One must not, however, imagine that the pride and satisfaction he derives from this adulation acts as an inducement to making him appear whenever he is called ! Occultists of all schools agree that nothing is more capricious than the conduct of spirits when evoked !

It is well moreover to remember that Luciferian occultism is no novelty, nor must one make the mistake of confusing it with ordinary Freemasonry, the Lodges of which are only private clubs. [7]

Many authors have published books on Freemasonry, some printing the rituals, some their personal observations on certain facts, but few of these authors, having themselves passed into occult masonry, the real masonry of the Cabalistic degrees which is in touch with all secret societies, Masonic as well as non-Masonic, have been able to state that *Luciferian Occultism controls Freemasonry.*

Though this is indeed the case, neither the President of the Council of the Order of the Grand Orient of France, the supreme chief of French Freemasonry, nor the president of the Supreme Council of Scottish Rites will be received at the meeting of a simple Luciferian ceremony just on account of his title and dignity unless, at the same time, he possesses a diploma of Cabalistic grade which requires another initiation. On the other hand, the first Oddfellow from Canada, a member of the Chinese San-ho-hui of China, a Luciferian Fakir from India, all these can visit at their pleasure all lodges and inner shrines of ordinary Freemasonry in all countries because, in each one of the Satanic sects, the directing authority is exercised by heads who belong to the most exalted masonic degrees of the different rites, degrees which are for them of secondary importance. These chiefs, at the request of their subordinates of the Luciferian societies, deliver to them freely the diplomas necessary to obtain admittance everywhere, as well as the sacred words and yearly and half yearly pass-words of all the masonic rites of the globe.[8]

---

[7] Bataille, *op. cit.,* p.- 36.

Luciferian Occultism, as has been said before, is therefore not a novelty, but it bore a different name in the early days of Christianity. It was called Gnosticism and its founder was Simon the Magician.

The Gnostics were not ordinary heretics but constituted an anti-christian sect. To deceive the multitude, they affected disagreement with certain doctrines of the Apostles, and the chiefs selected from among the initiates those destined to receive, in secret council, the Satanic revelation. Gnosticism is marked with the seal of Lucifer. It is contemporary with the Apostle Peter and has continued, without interruption, down to the present day, periodically changing its mask.

---

[8] Bataille, *op. cit.*, p. 36.

The seven founders of Freemasonry were all Gnostics, Magi of the English Rose Croix, whose names were : Theophile Desaguliers, named Chaplain of the Prince of Wales by George II, Anderson, the clergyman, an Oxford graduate and preacher to the King of England, George Payne, James King, Calvert, Lumden-Madden, and Elliott.

Gnosticism, as the Mother of Freemasonry, has imposed its mark in the very centre of the chief symbol of this association. The most conspicuous emblem which one notices on entering a masonic temple, the one which figures on the seals, on the rituals, everywhere in fact, appears in the middle of the interlaced square and compass, it is the five pointed star framing the letter G. Different explanations of this letter G are given to the initiates. In the lower grades, one is taught that it signifies Geometry. To the brothers frequenting the lodges admitting women as members, it is revealed that the mystic letter means Generation, but the revelation is attended with great secrecy. Finally, t6 those found worthy to penetrate into the sanctuary of Knights Kadosch, the enigmatic letter becomes the initial of the doctrine of the perfect initiates which is Gnosticism. This explanation is no longer an imaginary fabrication. It is Gnosticism which is the real meaning of the G in the flamboyant star, for, after the grade of Kadosch (a Hebrew word meaning consecrated) the Freemasons dedicate themselves to the glorification of Gnosticism (or anti-christianity) which is defined by Albert Pike as " the soul and marrow of Freemasonry. " [9]

---

[9] " The G which the Freemasons place in the middle of the flamboyant star signifies Gnosticism and Generation, the most sacred words of the ancient Cabala. " See Eliphas Levi, *Dogme et Rituel de la Haute Magie*, vol. II, p. 97.

Let us add that the ancient mysteries of Gnosticism have been known and published in the past. There is no difference between the Gnosticism of the early ages of Christianity and modern occultism.

The fundamental principle of Gnosticism was the double divinity (dual principle) and this is exactly the theological theory of modern occultism. The Gnostics claimed that the good God was Lucifer and that Christ was the devil, that what the Christians call vice was for them virtue, and to the Christian dogma they opposed Gnosticism, a word meaning human knowledge.

Early Gnosticism had its doctors ; the Basilideans, Ophites and Valentinians. Basilide of Alexandria, one of them, lived at the end of the first century. He taught metempsychosis and the principles underlying present-day Theosophy. His system resembles that of the spiritists of the nineteenth century who have invented nothing, for they copy Gnosticism even in its theory of the transmigration of souls. Basilide affirmed that he was the reincarnation of Plato. Whoever has penetrated into assemblies of modern theurgists can attest that one of its current theories is that of reincarnation.

After Basilide came Montanus who died in 212. Montanus was a grand master of the art of divination. The Bite of Mizraim (a Freemasonry said to be Egyptian) copies slavishly, in its Cabalistic grades, all the phantasmagoria of Montanus. This Gnostic doctor plunged himself into ecstasies and, according to history, he had two women, Maximilla and Priscilla, trained to act as his accomplices. The Gnostics came in crowds to admire their contortions worthy of epileptics. They had the sacred illness,[10] and were considered two saints of

---

10. In reference to the Pagans " who (as we read in divers authors) consecrated most kinds of Distempers of the Body, and Affections of the Mind; erected Temples and Altars to

Satan. In the assemblies of the sect, when they went into frenzies and prophesied, their oracular sayings were listened to with veneration by the adepts.

Were they acting a part, were they just mediums or somnambulists, or were they what the Roman Catholics call " possessed " ?

This is a hard question to answer.

A modern example of the influence exercised by occult organizations on the destinies of mankind is to be found in the history of The Holy Alliance, founded in 1815 by Alexander I, Emperor of Russia. This was originally a union of monarchs pledged to support the Christian Church and to stem the rising tide of radicalism, revolution and subversion.

In *L'Histoire de la Magie* (p. 467), Eliphas Levi states that the spiritist sect of " The Rescuers of Louis XVI ", wishing to penetrate this organization to use it for their own purposes, succeeded in insinuating one of their illumines into the good graces of the Czar. This was Madame Bouche, known to the adepts as Sister Salome. After eighteen months spent at the Russian Court, during which she had many secret interviews with the Emperor, she was supplanted by another medium-somnambulist of the sect, the famous Madame de Krudner who acquired so great an influence

---

Fevers. Paleness. Madness, and Death ; to Laughter, Lust, Contumely, Impudence, and Calumny. Every strange Disorder, as well as Epilepsy, is the Sacred Disease. *Sua cuique Deus sit dira Cupido* (Each bold Fancy grows into a God).

" But it must be remembered this Distemper was called also *Morbus Comitialis ;* because if any one fell into it, during the Assembly, it was a fatal Omen, and they immediately broke up ".

Bishop Lavington, *The Enthusiasm of Methodists and Papists compared,* p. 123.

over the Czar that his ministers became alarmed at the situation thus created.

Levi thus describes the fall of the favorite ;

" One day, as the emperor was leaving her, she barred his passage crying ' God reveals to me that your life is in great danger. An assassin is in the palace. ' The Emperor, alarmed, caused the palace to be searched and a man, armed with a dagger, was found. He confessed, when questioned, that he had been introduced into the palace by Madame de Krudner herself. '

One wonders if the whole affair was not simply the result of a clever intrigue calculated to get rid of the prophetess. As such it was singularly successful for Madame de Krudner was summarily banished from the Russian Court.

In *De la Maçonnerie Occulte* (pp. 87-88), J. M. Ragon tells us that " science counts four kinds of Somnambulism : The natural, the symptomatic, the magnetic and the ecstatic.

" Natural and symptomatic somnambulism are two essentially different states, one occurring only at night, the other by day as well as by night. The conduct of the subject is different under the two conditions.

" Magnetic and ecstatic somnambulism differ from one another insomuch as the one is commanded (willed) and the other is not. The first is artificial, the other natural. In the first, the subject is dependent; in the second, he acts independently. That is why induced somnambulism cures the natural when substituted for it.

" A lucid somnambulist bears no more resemblance to a man asleep than he does to an active man awake ".

When the Gnostics practised magic, they evoked the spirits of the dead exactly as do the occultists of today. Dawning Christianity was prolific in miracles so, in order to fight it, the disciples of Gnosticism had recourse to diabolical marvels. In this respect, are not contemporaneous spiritists, with their rapping tables and apparitions, Gnostics under another name ?

Secret Gnostic meetings lead to depravity, as the adepts indulge in every kind of turpitude and obscenity, often under the influence of drugs such as Indian Hemp *(Cannabis indica)* or Opium, the medicinal properties of which, when administered under certain conditions, are provocative of mediumistic phenomena.

Thus debauched, their moral sense weakened, initiates are ready to work. They work, they fall, and, as they fall the Occult power grasps its prey. Their life, henceforth, is subject to the will of the Hidden Masters who, according to their secret designs, will lead their slaves to power, or a semblance of power, or else to their downfall. To use the words of " Inquire Within " in *Light-bearers of Darkness* (p. 118) ... " These masters — doubtless identical with the terrible power behind the horrors of Russia's sufferings and World Revolution — have in reality no interest in soul or astral development, except as a means of forming passive illuminised tools, completely controlled in mind and actions. "[11]

" Inquire Within " further suggests that there is " a group of flesh-and-blood men, who can form *etheric links,* from any distance, with the leaders of these societies and who secretly work by means of that light which can * slay or make alive ', intoxicating, blinding, and, if need be, destroying unwary men and women, using them as instruments or ' Light-bearers ' to bring to pass this mad and evil scheme of World

---

[11] This refers to Gnostic Secret Societies described in this book.

Dominion by the God-People —the Cabalistic Jew. "[12]

A further explanation of the phenomenon of induced mediumship is given us by the same author who quotes the following lines from Eliphas Levi's *History of Magic:*

> " This may take place when, through a series of almost impossible exercises... our nervous system, having been habituated to all tensions and fatigues, has become a kind of living galvanic pile, capable of condensing and projecting powerfully that Light (astral) which intoxicates and destroys.

" Inquire Within " comments further :

> " It attempts to show that it leads to mastership and self control, but on careful consideration it proves to be merely conscious mediumship inspired by crafty and wilful deception, giving the adept a false confidence, inducing him to let go his physical senses and work upon the astral, where, enclosed by formulae given by these masters themselves, he is completely at their mercy. "

A recent practical illustration of these methods is the teaching contained in a book *Asia Mysteriosa* by Zam Bhotiva, (published by Dorbon Ainé) which suggests ways and means of communication with the " Hidden Masters ".

It will be recognised by anyone having taken an interest in the progress of science along certain lines that there is nothing impossible or even improbable in the suggestion that telepathy may be exploited by organisations for their own particular ends.

Forty years ago William Gay Hudson wrote on telepathy as follows :

> If the power exists in man to convey a telepathic message to his fellow-man, it presupposes the existence of

---

12. " Inquire Within " *op. cit.*, pp. 116-117.

the power in the percipient to repeat the message to a third person, and so on indefinitely, until some one receives it who has the power to elevate the information above the threshold of his consciousness, and thus convey it to the objective intelligence of the world. Nor is the element of time necessarily an adverse factor in the case ; for there is no reason to suppose that such messages may not be transmitted from one to another for generations. Thus, the particulars of a tragedy might be revealed many years after the event, and in such a way as to render it difficult, if not impossible, to trace the line through which the intelligence was transmitted. For the spiritist the easy and ever-ready explanation of such a phenomenon is to ascribe it to the intervention of spirits of the dead. But to those who have kept pace with the developments of modern scientific investigation, and who are able to draw the legitimate and necessary conclusions from the facts discovered, the explanation is obvious, without the necessity of entering the domain of the supernatural. "[13]

On the subject of Hypnotism and Crime, Hudson, writing further, reaches however a fatally false conclusion which for many years remained unchallenged. He states (p. 140) " It is true that, on ordinary questions, the truth is always uppermost in the subjective mind. A hypnotic subject will often say, during the hypnotic sleep, that which he would not say in his waking moments. Nevertheless, he never betrays a vital secret... That this is true is presumptively proved by the fact that in all the years during which the science of hypnotism has been practised, no one has ever been known to betray the secrets of any society or order. The attempt has often been made, but it has never succeeded. "

Hudson attributes this reticence to auto-suggestion

---

13. Hudson, *The Law of Psychic Phenomena,* p. 236.

opposing the suggestion of another. This however is not the case, for, where a member of a secret society or order is concerned, that member was already hypnotized during initiation and it is not his will that guards the secret," it is the will of another, the will of the Lodge.

How many people know that hypnotism is about all there is to initiation ? Hypnotism and fear. The rest is camouflage.

In the event of this statement being doubted, we quote herewith from *Freemasonry Universal* an article which needs no further comment: [14]

> " The Stewards prepare the candidate ; the Tyler first, and afterwards in turn the I. G., Deacons and Junior Wardens should inspect the candidate to see that everything is strictly correct.
>
> " The preparation symbolises poverty, blindness (or ignorance) and poverty of spirit, — but it may also signify a purification, i.e., that the riches and pleasures which bind one to the material side of life are discarded and the spirit blinded to their attractions. The baring of the right arm, left breast, left knee and right heel being slipshod, are apparently a reference to the awakening of occult centres in one's being which may only become active when purification of the whole nature has begun.
>
> " The very specific character of the preparation points to real knowledge of the occult physiology of the process of initiation on the part of those who originated the method which has been so faithfully preserved. Certain Forces are sent through the candidate's body during the ceremony, especially at the moment when he is created, received and constituted an Entered Apprentice Freemason. Certain parts of the Lodge have been very *heavily charged* with *magnetic force especially* in order that the Candidate may *absorb as much as possible of this force.* The first object of

---

14. *Freemasonry Universal* vol. V, Part 2, *Autumn Equinox,* 1929, p. 58.

this curious method of preparation is to expose to this influence those various *parts of the body* which are especially used in the ceremony. In ancient Egypt, there was another reason for these preparations, for a weak current of physical electricity was sent through the candidate by means of a rod or sword with which he was touched at certain points. It is partly on this account that at this first initiation the candidate is *deprived of all metals since* they may very easily *interfere with the flow of the currents.* "

All kinds of nice inspiring symbolical interpretations of the ritual are generally given for the benefit of people who seem to want them, but it is here evident that the candidate, unknown to himself or herself, has acted throughout the ceremony of initiation under the stress of hypnotism. No longer a free agent, the initiate takes the oath under hypnotic force which, has also been used to instil into him the feeling of fear. Fear guards the secret of initiation, fear born under the power of hypnotism to serve henceforth as the controlling agent of the initiators over the initiated.

The Right Worshipful Master must be a genuine occultist, as it is up to him to *charge* (hypnotise) the candidate, for to give this in the words of *Freemasonry Universal* : " The R. W. M. gives the light, the pure white light of truth and illumination. "[15]

Illumination, alias Kundalini, alias Serpent power, alias Electro-magnetic force, alias the Sex force, etc. !

Even in our western world any one wishing to study Hatha Yoga can learn to neutralize the action of gravity and go some yards up in the air. This stunt, and the assumption of any size at will, are tricks for which training is essential, and if one works at it hard enough, one will eventually be able to mesmerise people for one's own purposes, business, political or other, thus following the lure of the occult to a sinister end i.e. Black Magic. [16]

---

[15] *Ibid.*, vol. V, Part 3, *Winter Solstice,* p. 108.

We would here observe that the miracles performed by Jesus Christ bore a distinctive feature, often overlooked, namely, that in every case altruism was the source of their inspiration. Thus they were a symbol of charity.

This gives us the esoteric explanation of His silence when taunted on the cross. " He saved others, himself he cannot save. " Sooner than use this power for personal advantage He chose death !

Gnostic miracles, such as that of being buried alive for a period of time which constitutes the Hindu religious rites of Samadhi have no ulterior charitable purpose. They are chiefly performed for the object of creating wonderment, curiosity or faith in magic, and as such, failing the altruistic motive, are classifiable under the general term of Black Magic.

As a stimulus to popular faith, they are, however, sanctioned by most Pagan religions, though where such a custom prevails, the magical performers themselves are not privileged to withhold their gains for themselves, as these are claimed by the Temple.

Having dealt with the preliminaries of the subject, we will now proceed along the thorny paths of history — not the history of wars, battles, heroes, but that of the agents of their being !

16. In Hinduism it is known as Kala Yoga.

CHAPTER III

BRAHMINISM

For a brief study of Brahminism, the religion practised in India, we can hardly do better than quote from the work of such recognized authorities as Messrs. Stillson and Hughan. [1] In attempting to trace the origin of Brahminism, they make the following observations :

" After being conquered by the Cuthites under Rama, the son of Cush, referred to in Genesis x, 2, 7, the Mysteries of the Deluge were introduced. The worship soon became divided into two sects. We are not fully apprised when was first introduced the Brahminic system, composed of Brahma, Vishnu, and Siva, constituting the Trimurti... one branch of which was mild and benevolent, and addressed to Vishnu, the Preserver, while the other proclaimed the superiority of Siva, who was called the Destroyer and the representative of terror and penance, barbarity and blood ; in Egypt, represented by Typhon.

" These Mysteries, whatever may have been their origin, or for what purposes they were then instituted, were certainly a corruption of the original worship of the one Deity. They bore a direct reference to the happiness of Man in Paradise, where he was first placed ; his subsequent deviations and transgressions, and the destruction of the race by the general deluge... The great cavern of Elephanta, perhaps the most ancient temple in the world made by man, in which these rites were performed and remaining to the present day, is an evidence of the magnitude of that system...

---

[1] Stillson and Hughan, *The History of Freemasonry and Concordant Orders,* see the chapter entitled " Hindoostan ", p. 74 *et seq.*

" The caverns of Salsette, of which there are three hundred, all have within them carved and emblematic characters. The different ranges of apartments are connected by open galleries, and only by private entrances could the most secret caverns, which contained the ineffable symbols, be approached, and so curiously contrived as to give the highest effect upon the neophytes when in the ceremonial of initiation. A cubical *cisia*, used for the periodical sepulture of the aspirant, was located in the most secret recesses of the cavern. The consecrated water of absolution was held in a carved basin in every cavern, and on the surface floated the flowers of the lotus. The Linga or Phallus appeared everywhere most conspicuous, and oftentimes in situations too disgusting to be mentioned...

" Sacrifices to the sun, to the planets, and to household gods, were made accompanied with ablutions of water, purifications with dung and urine of the cow. This last was because the dung was the medium by which the soil was made fertile and reminded them of the doctrine of ' Corruption and reproduction ' taught in the worship of Siva. "

An initiation is thus described :

" Amidst all the confusion, a sudden explosion was heard, which was followed by a dead silence. Flashes of brilliant light were succeeded by darkness. Phantoms and shadows of various forms, surrounded by rays of light, flitted across the gloom. Some with many hands, arms, and legs; others without them; sometimes a shapeless trunk, then a human body with the head of a bird, or beast, or a fish ; all manner of incongruous forms and bodies were seen, and all calculated to excite terror in the mind of the postulant.

" A gorgeous appearance, with unnumbered heads, each having a crown set with resplendent jewels, one of which excelled the others; his eyes gleamed like flaming torches, but his neck, his tongues and his body were black ; the skirts of his garments were yellow, and sparkling jewels hung in all of his ears ; his arms were extended, and adorned with bracelets, and his hands bore the holy shell; the radiated weapon, the war mace, and the sacred lotus. This image represented Mahadeva[2] himself, in his character of the Destroyer. "

Among other learned authorities, writing on these subjects, is Jacolliot who gives the following description of perverted Brahminism :

" The study of philosophic truth does not relieve the Nirvanys and Yogys from the necessity of the tapassas, or bodily mortifications. On the contrary, it would seem that they carry them to the greatest extremes...... Everything that affects or consumes the body, everything that tends to its annihilation, without actually destroying it, is thought to be meritorious.

" Several centuries previous to the present era, however, these bodily mortifications had assumed a character of unusual severity. [3]

" To the contemplative dreamers of the earliest ages in India, who devoted the whole of their time to meditation, and never engaged in practices involving physical suffering oftener than once a week, had succeeded a class of bigoted fanatics, who placed no limit to their religious enthusiasm, and inflicted upon themselves the most terrible tortures.[4]

---

[2] *Mafia* (Sanscrit) = grand.

[3] Louis Jacolliot, *Occult Science in India,* pp. 92-93.

" A spiritual reaction, however, occurred, and those who had been initiated into the higher degrees took that opportunity to abandon the practice of the tapassas, or corporal mortification. They sought rather to impress the imagination of the people by excessive asceticism in opposition to the laws of nature. A profound humility, an ardent desire to live unknown by the world, and to have the divinity as the only witness to the purity of their morals, took possession of them, and though they continued the practice of excessive abstemiousness, they did so perhaps more that they might not seem to be in conflict with the formal teachings of the sacred scriptures.

" That kind of austerity is the only one now enjoined upon all classes of initiates.

" The Fakirs appear to have gradually monopolized all the old modes of inflicting pain, and have carried them to the greatest extremes. They display the most unbounded fanaticism in their self-inflicted tortures upon all great public festivals. . . .

" The Nirvanys live in a constant state of ecstatic contemplation, depriving themselves of sleep as far as possible, and taking food only once a week, after sunset.

" They are never visible either in the grounds or inside the temples, except on the occasion of the grand festival of fire, which occurs every five years. On that day, they appear at midnight upon a stand erected in the centre of the sacred tank. They appear like spectres, and the surrounding atmosphere is illumined by them by means of their incantations. They seem to be in the midst of a column of light rising from earth to heaven.[5]

---

[4] Bataille, *op. cit.*, for a fanciful description of such rites.

" The seven degrees of initiation in the sacerdotal cast of the Brahmins are : [6]

Grihasta—or House-Master.
Pourohita—or Priest of Popular Evocations.
Fakir—Performing.
Sanyassis—or Naked Cenobites, Superior Exorcists.
Nirvanys—Naked Evocators.
Yogys—Contemplative.
Brahmatma—Supreme Chief.

" Upon reaching the third degree of initiation, the Brahmins were divided into tens, and a superior Guru, or professor of the occult sciences, was placed over each decade. He was revered by his disciples as a god.

" Seventy Brahmins more than seventy years old are chosen from among the Nirvanys to see that the law of the Lotus, or the occult science, is never revealed to the vulgar, and that those who have been initiated into the sacred order are not contaminated by the admission of any unworthy person. " (Quoted from the *Agrouchada-Parikchai).*

" In addition to its attributes as an initiatory tribunal, the council of the elders also had charge of administering the pagoda property, from which it made provision for the wants of its members (of the three classes) who shared everything in common. It also directed the wanderings of the Fakirs, whose duty it is to give manifestations of occult power outside.

It also elected the Brahmatma from its own members.

---

[5] Louis Jacolliot, *op. cit.*, p. 72. and Bataille, *op. cit.*
[6] Louis Jacolliot, *op. cit.*, pp. 73 to 101.

With regard to the rise to power of the Brahmin caste in India, Mr. Jacolliot writes in *Les Fils de Dieu :*

" Doubtless, in the midst of this new society discontent and discord were unavoidable. Happy in the power they had secured, the chiefs of the Brahmins, however, had to consider means for preserving and insuring it against a reversal of popular favour. At this distance, it is impossible for us to judge the mental influences at work during a period covering about two thousand years, that is to say, from the day when the priests united into a kind of corporation to the time when, enjoying unchallenged authority, they published the *Vedhas.* This was a collection of prayers and ancient ceremonies interspersed with the texts necessary to maintaining their supremacy under the name of *Manou* (Sanscrit meaning : wise law giver), a new code of law which, rejecting all the ancient customs of equality and dividing the people into castes, invested the Brahmins with world power and established the dogma of the Trimourti or Trinity of God, from which eventually was to spring polytheism and a host of the most monstrous superstitions.

" This religious revolution occurred about twelve thousand years before our era, under the Brahmatma Vasichta-Richi.

" The *Vedhas* and *Manou,* collected and codified by the Brahmins were given as coming from Brahma himself, and anyone doubting the truth of this origin was liable to the penalty of death. "

As among the Ancient Egyptians the teaching of monotheism was restricted to the highest initiates alone. Jacolliot emphasises this when he writes :

" The worship of the one God or Zeus unrevealed, reserved to the priests, was forbidden to the lower classes, but three temples dedicated to the three persons of the Trimourti, Brahma, Vishnu, Siva, opened their doors to the adoration of the people, all of whom were allowed to select one of the three personages of the trinity they would prefer to worship. "

This division in religious worship which eventually led to the caste system shows the power of theocratic tyranny, the Brahmins, seeking to justify the method whereby the control of the masses is vested in the hands of a few, when preaching in the pagodas, even now say : " See how logical is this system of division of the people into castes. It was formed in the likeness of the divinity, Zeus, sovereign master of all things, but taking no action himself. This is the Brahmin priest Brahma, the God who creates, who acts, who directs, that is the aristocrat or the prince ; Vishnu, the God who preserves, that is the artisan, the merchant, who produces taxes, preserving and assuring the prosperity of the State by his work and industry. As for Siva, the terrible God, he keeps the Soudra (peasant) in a state of humility and obedience appropriate to his station in life.

" Another very important function appears however to have been early assigned to him, on which much more stress is laid in his (Siva) modern worship — that of destroyer — viz., the character of a generative power, symbolized in the phallic emblem (Linga) and in the sacred bull (Nandi), the favourite attendant of the god. This feature being entirely alien from the nature of the Vedic god, it has been conjectured with some plausibility, that the Linga-worship was originally prevalent among the non-Aryan population, and was thence introduced into the worship of Siva. [7]

---

[7] Article on *Brahminism* : Enc. Brit. 9th Edition.

One of the most curious facts in the Theocratic System ruling India is that the principle of equality is evidenced only in the teaching and practice of Occultism. Members of all castes are admitted on the same footing to learn magic or fakirism and compose the class known under the name of Fakirs. This system of equality is similar to the brotherhood principle and teaching of democracy advocated in Freemasonry which was so effectively exploited in all the lodges that fomented the French Revolution.

" As all castes are admitted to the congregation of the Fakirs, the lowest of the soudras on entering it becomes the equal of the Brahmins. In spreading the belief that whosoever consented to enrol among the high initiates of the pagoda, and to die for the faith, was transported to the abode of Brahma without accomplishing further migration on earth or having to pass through hell, the Brahmins provided for an inexhaustible supply of fakirs. "

" Before entering the category of fakir, those who are destined to illustrate the ceremonies of the cults by their tortures and death, the new recruits practise the occult sciences under the direction of initiated Brahmins in the innermost recesses of the pagodas. "

While " there are indeed extraordinary phenomena in what is termed by the Brahmins occult science, there are none which cannot be explained and which are not in accordance with the law of nature. "

" To become expert in magic, like the believers in the philosophic doctrine of the Pitris, the pupil must learn, from a magician whom the sorcerers call their Guru, the formulas of evocation, by means of which the malign spirits are brought into complete subjection.

" Some of these spirits the magician evokes in preference to others, probably on account of their willingness to do anything that may be required of them. "

" An intimate connection exists between the doctrine of the ancient Jewish Cabalists and those of the Hindu votaries of the Pitris — or spirits — whose scientific book is the *Agrouchada-parikchai.* [8]

" It would be impossible to enumerate the different drugs, ingredients and implements that compose the stock-in-trade of a magician. " [9]

The standard Indian book on magic is the *Oupnek'hat.* Therein is to be found a detailed description of methods available for producing catalepsy, somnambulism, hallucination and ecstasy by strength of will and fatigue of the nervous system. [10]

This is what is known to the modern common-sense mortal as " Yogi stuff ", and it is mostly based on breathing exercises.

We will now quote from Mr. Sellon :

" It is a little remarkable that of the host of Divinities, especially in Bengal, Siva is the God whom they are especially delighted to honour. As the Destroyer, and one who revels in cruelty and bloodshed, this terrible deity, who has not inaptly been compared to the Moloch of Scripture, of all their Divinities suggests most our idea of the Devil. It may therefore be concluded that the most exalted notion of worship among the Hindus is a service of Fear. The Brahmins say that the other Gods are good and benevolent, and will not hurt their creatures, but that Siva is powerful and cruel, and that it is necessary to *appease him.*

---

[8] Jacolliot, *op. cit.*

[9] *Ibid.*

[10] E. Levi, *Dogme et Rituel de la Haute Magie,* p. 70. *et seq.*

" Although this deity is sometimes represented in the human form in his images, it is not thus that he is most frequently adored. The most popular representation of him is unquestionably the *Linga* ; a smooth stone rising out of another stone of finer texture, *simulacrum membri virilis, et pudendum muliebre.* This emblem is identical with *Siva* in his capacity of ' Lord of all.' [11]

" It is necessary, however, to observe here that Professor Wilson, while admitting that ' the Linga is perhaps the most ancient object of homage adopted in India', adds, ' subsequently to the ritual of the *Vedhas,* which was chiefly, if not wholly, addressed to the Elements, and particularly to fire. How far the worship of the Linga is authorized by the *Vedhas* is doubtful, but that it is the main purport of several of the *Puranas* there can be no doubt.' [12]

" The worship of Siva under the type of the Linga is almost the only form in which that deity is reverenced. Its prevalence throughout the whole tract of the Ganges as far as Benares is sufficiently conspicuous. In Bengal, the Lingam Temples are commonly erected in a range of six, eight, or twelve on each side of a Ghaut leading to the river. At Kalma is a circular group of one hundred and eight temples erected by the Rajah of Burdwan. These temples, and indeed all those found in Bengal, consist of a simple chamber of a square form surmounted by a pyramidal centre ; the area of each is very small. The Linga of black or white marble, and sometimes of alabaster slightly tinted and gilt, is placed in the middle. " [13]

---

11. Edward Sellon, *Annotations on the Sacred Writings of the Hindus,* p. 8.
12. *Ibid.,* p. 8.
13. *Ibid.,* p. 10.

" Benares is the peculiar seat of this form of worship. The principal Deity, Siva, there called Viweswarra, is a Linga ; and most of the chief objects of pilgrimage are similar blocks of stone. No less than forty-seven Lingas are visited, all of preeminent sanctity; but there are hundreds of inferior note still worshipped, and thousands whose fame and fashion have passed away. It is a singular fact, that upon this adoration of the procreative and sexual Sacti (or power) seen "throughout nature, hinges the whole gist of the Hindu faith. [14]

" Bacchus or Osiris was represented by an equilateral triangle, and the sectarian mark of the worshippers of Siva is this hieroglyphic. The worship of Bacchus was the same as that which is paid to Siva, it had the same obscenities, the same cruel bloodthirsty rites, and the same emblem of the generative power. [15]

" Durga, Kali, or Maha Kali as the Sacti, spouse or energetic will of Siva, the destructive power, bears a remarkable analogy with the Moloch of Scripture, as well as with Typhon, Saturn, Dis, Pluto, and other divinities of the West. [16]

" When the attributes of the Supreme Being began to be viewed in the light of distinct individuals, mankind attached themselves to the worship of the one or the other exclusively, and arranged themselves into sects : the worshippers of Siva introduced the doctrine of the eternity of matter. In order to reconcile the apparent contradiction of assigning the attribute of creation to the principle of Destruction, they asserted that the

---

14. *Ibid.,* p. 12.
15. *Ibid.,* p. 20.
16. *Ibid.,* p. 21.

dissolution and destruction of bodies was not real with respect to matter, which was in itself indestructible, although its modifications were in a constant succession of mutation ; that the power must necessarily unite in itself the attributes of creation and apparent destruction ; that this power and matter are two distinct and co-existent principles in nature ; the one active, the other passive ; the one male, the other female; and that creation was the effect of the mysterious union of the two.

" This Union is worshipped under a variety of names : Bhava, Bhavani, Mahadeva, Mahamaya, etc. Thus the attribute of creation was usurped from Brahma, by the followers of Siva, to adorn and characterise their favourite divinity. "

" This seems to have been a popular worship for a great length of time, out of which sprang two sects : the one personified the whole Universe and dispensations of providence (in the regulation of it) under the name of Prakriti, and which we from the Latin call nature. This sect retains the Sacti only, and were the originators of the Sactas sects, or worshippers of Power. The other sect took for their symbol the Male emblem (Linga) unconnected with the female Sacti (or Yoni). There was also a third sect, who adored both male and female.

" According to Theodoret, Arnobius, and Clemens of Alexandria, the Yoni of the Hindus was the sole object of veneration in the mysteries of Eleusis.[17]

" It is not only the votaries of Siva who adore their God under the symbolic form of the Linga; the Vaishnavas, or followers of Vishnu, use the same medium. They also are Lingayetts, one of the essential characteristics of which is wearing the Type on some part of their dress or person.[18]

---

[17] *ibid.*, p. 23.

" The Vaishnavas are divided into many sects. They comprise the Ghoculasthas, the Yonijas, the Ramani, and Radha-balluthis.

" The Ghoculasthas adore Krishna, while the Ramani worship Rama ; both have again branched into three sects — one consists of the exclusive worshippers of Krishna, and these only are deemed true and orthodox Vaishnavas... As Parameswarra, Krishna is represented of a black or dark blue colour. Now the Tulasi is the black Ocymum, and all animals or vegetables of a black or blue colour are sacred to him. His linga also is always either black or dark blue, and may thus be distinguished from that of Siva, which is generally white.

" This divinity, as Parameswarra, is Janan'nauth (Juggernaut), or ' Lord of the Universe ', and it is under the wheels of his sacred car that so many misguided beings annually immolated themselves.

" To return, however, to the Vaishnavas. Another of their sects adore Krishna and his mistress Radha united. These are the Lingionijas, whose worship is perhaps the most free of all the Pujas. A third, the Radha-ballubhis, dedicate their offerings to Radha only. The followers of these last mentioned sects have adopted the singular practice of presenting to a naked girl the oblation intended for the Goddess, constituting her the living impersonation of Radha. Rut when a female is not to be obtained for this purpose, the votive offerings are made to an image of the Yoni, or emblem of the feminine power. These worshippers are called

---

18. *Ibid.,* p. 40.

Yonijas, in contradistinction to the Lingayats, or adorers of the Krishna (Vishnu) Linga.

" As the Saivas are all worshippers of Siva and Bowannee (Pavati) conjointly, so the Vaishnavas also offer up their prayers to Laksmi-Nayarana. The exclusive adorers of this Goddess are the Sactas.

" The caste mark of the Saivas and Sactas consists of three horizontal lines on the forehead with ashes obtained, if possible, from the hearth on which a consecrated fire is perpetually maintained. The adoration of the Sacti is quite in accordance with the spirit of the mythological system of the Hindus. It has been computed that, of the Hindus in Bengal, at least three-fourths are Sactas, of the remaining fourth, three parts are Vaishnavas, and one, Saivas.

" Independently of the homage paid to the principal Deities, there are a great variety of inferior beings, Dewtas, and demi-gods of a malevolent character and formidable aspect, who receive the worship of the multitude. The bride of Siva, however, in one or other of her many and varied forms, is by far the most popular goddess in Bengal and along the Ganges.

" The worship of the female generative principle, as distinct from the Divinity, appears to have originated in the literal interpretation of the metaphorical language of the *Vedhas,* in which Will, or purpose to Create the Universe, is represented as originating from the Creator and co-existent with him as his bride, and part of himself. "

" Although the adoration of the Sacti (the personified energy of the Omnipotent) is authorized by some of the *Puranas,* the rites and formulae are more clearly set forth in a voluminous collection of books called *Tantras.* These writings convey their meaning in the similitude of dialogue between Uma (or Siva) and Pavati.

" The followers of the *Tantras* profess to consider them as a fifth Vedh, and attribute to them equal antiquity and superior authority. "

" The *Tantras* are too numerous to specify them further, but the curious reader will find them under the heads of Syama Rahasya, Anandra, Rudra, Yamala, Mandra, Mahodahi, Sareda, Tilika, and Kalika-Tantras.

" Although any of the goddesses may be objects of the Sacta worship, and the term Sacti comprehends them all, yet the homage of the Sactas is almost restricted, in Bengal, to the consort of Siva. The Varnis, or Vamacharis, worship Devi as well as all goddesses. Their worship is derived from a portion of the *Tantras.*

" According to the immediate object of the worshipper is the particular form of worship ; but all the forms require the use of some or all of the five Makaras — Mansa, Matsya, Madya, Maithuna, and Mudra — that is : flesh, fish, wine, women, and certain mystical gesticulations with the fingers. Suitable Muntrus, or incantations, are also indispensable, according to the end proposed, consisting of various unmeaning monosyllabic combinations of letters, of great imaginary efficacy.

" When the object of worship is to acquire an interview with, and control over, impure spirits, a dead body is necessary. The adept is also to be alone, at midnight, in a cemetery or place where bodies are burnt. Seated on the corpse he is to perform the usual offerings, and if he do so without fear or disgust, the Dhutas, the Yoginis, and other male and female demons become his slaves. [19]

" In this and many of the observances practised, solitude is enjoined, but all the principal ceremonies comprehend the worship of Sacti, or Power, and require, for that purpose, the presence of a young and beautiful girl, as the living representative of the goddess. This worship is mostly celebrated in a mixed society ; the men of which represent Bhairavas, or Viras, and the women, Bhanravis and Nayikas. The Sacti is personified by a naked girl, to whom meat and wine are offered, and then distributed among the assistants. Here follows the chanting of the Muntrus and sacred texts, and the performance of the Mudra, or gesticulations with the fingers. The whole terminates with orgies amongst the votaries of a very licentious description. This ceremony is entitled the Sri Chakra or Purnabisheka, The Ring or full Initiation.[20]

---

[19] Bataille, *Le Diable au XIX^e siècle,* for fanciful description of such rites.

" This method of adoring the Sacti is unquestionably acknowledged by the texts regarded by the Vanis as authorities for the impurities practised.

" The members of the sect are sworn to secrecy, and will not therefore acknowledge any participation in Sacta-Puja. Some years ago, however, they began to throw off this reserve, and at the present day they trouble themselves very little to disguise their initiation into its mysteries, but they do not divulge in what those mysteries consist.

" The Kauchiluas are another branch of the Sactas sect; their worship much resembles that of the Caulas. They are, however, distinguished by one particular rite not practised by the others, and throw into confusion all the ties of female relationship ; natural restraints are wholly disregarded, and a community of "women among the votaries inculcated.

" On the occasions of the performance of divine worship, the women and girls deposit their " julies ", or bodices, in a box in charge of the Guru, or priest. At the close of the rites, the male worshippers take each a " julie " from the box, and the female to whom it belongs, even were she his sister, becomes his partner for the evening in these lascivious orgies.

---

[20] Sellon, *op. cit.*, p. 53 *et seq.*

" In every temple of any importance in India we find a troupe of Nautch or dancing girls attached.

" These women are generally procured when quite young, and are early initiated into all the mysteries of their profession. They are instructed in dancing and vocal and instrumental music, their chief employment being to chant the sacred hymns, and perform nautches before the God, on the recurrence of high festivals. But this is not the only service required of them, for besides being the acknowledged mistresses of the officiating priests, it is their duty to prostitute themselves in the courts of the temple to all comers, and thus raise funds for the enrichment of the place of worship to which they belong... A Nautch woman esteems it a peculiar privilege to become the Radha Dea on such occasions. It is an office indeed which these adepts are, on every account, better calculated to fulfil with satisfaction to the sect of Sacteyas, who require their aid, than a more innocent and unsophisticated girl.

" The worship of Sacti is the adoration of Power, [21] which the Hindus typify by the Yoni, or womb, the Argha or vulva, and by the leaves and flowers of certain plants thought to resemble it. [22]

" In *Ananda Tantram*, cap. VII, 148, and other passages, reference is made to Bhagamala. She appears to be the goddess who presides over the pudendum muliebre, i.e. the deified vulva ; and the Sacti is thus personified.

---

[21] Author's note : Sex power = Kundalini, electro-magnetic force, astral light, fire.

[22] See Lotus-Padma, explanation in chapter on Symbolism.

" Such are some of the peculiar features of the worship of Power (or Gnosticism), and which, combined with the Linga Puga (or adoration of the Phallus), constitutes at the present day one of the most popular dogmas of the Hindus. "

Heckethorn tells us that the Maharajas constitute another sect of priests and adds : " It appears abundantly from the works of recognized authority written by Maharajas, and from existing popular belief in the Vallabhacharya sect, that Vallabhacharya is believed to have been an incarnation of the god Krishna, and that the Maharajas, as descendants of Vallabhacharya, have claimed and received from their followers the like character of incarnations of that god by hereditary succession. The ceremonies of the worship paid to Krishna through these priests are all of the most licentious character. The love and subserviency due to a Supreme Being are here materialized and transferred to those who claim to be the living incarnations of the god. Hence the priests exercise an unlimited influence over their female votaries, who consider it a great honour to acquire the temporary regard of the voluptuous Maharajas, the belief in whose pretensions is allowed to interfere, almost vitally, with the domestic relations of husband and wife. " [23]

Miss Mayo, in her book *Mother India,* published in 1927, gives an interesting description of a temple of Kali. " Kali Ghat " — place of Kali — is the root-word of the name Calcutta. " Kali is a Hindu goddess, wife of the great god Siva, whose attribute is destruction and whose thirst is for blood and death-sacrifice. "

---

[23] Heckethorn, *Secret Societies of all Ages and Countries,* vol. II, p. 307.

Kali has thousands of temples in India, great and small.

Heckethorn further explains that " the association of Thugs, after having existed in India for centuries, was only discovered in 1810. The names by which the members were known to each other, and also to others, was Funsiegeer, that is, ' men of the noose '. The name Thug is said to be derived from thaga, to deceive, because the Thugs get hold of their victims by luring them into false security. One common mode of decoying young men having valuables upon them is to place a young and handsome woman by the wayside, and apparently in great grief, who, by some pretended tale of misfortune, draws him into the jungle, where the gang are lying in ambush, and on his appearance strangle him. The gang consists of from ten to fifty members ; and they will follow or accompany the marked-out victim for days, nor attempt his murder until an opportunity, offering every chance of success, presents itself. After every murder they perform a religious ceremony, called Jagmi; and the division of the spoil is regulated by old-established laws — the man that threw the handkerchief gets the largest share, the man that held the hands the next largest proportion, and so on. In some gangs their property is held in common. Their crimes are committed in honour of Kali who hates our race, and to whom the death of man is a pleasing sacrifice. [24]

" Kali, or Bhowany, for she is equally well known by both names, was, according to the Indian legend, born of the burning eye which Shiva has on his forehead,

---

[24] Heckethorn, *op. cit.*, p. 318, vol. II.

•whence she issued, like the Greek Minerva, out of the skull of Jupiter, a perfect and full-grown being. She represents the Evil Spirit, delights in human blood, presides over plague and pestilence, and directs the storm and hurricane, and ever aims at destruction. She is represented under the most frightful effigy the Indian mind could conceive ; her face is azure, streaked with yellow ; her glance is ferocious ; she wears her dishevelled and bristly hair displayed like the peacock's tail and braided with green serpents. Her purple lips seem streaming with blood ; her tusk-like teeth descend over her lower lip ; she has eight or ten arms, each hand holding some murderous weapon, and sometimes a human head dripping with gore. With one foot she stands on a human corpse. She has her temples, in which the people sacrifice cocks and bullocks to her, but her priests are the Thugs, the ' Sons of Death ', who quench the never-ending thirst of this divine vampyre. "[25]

As regards the sect of Kali's worshippers, Heckethorn gives the following details :

" A newly admitted member takes the appellation of Sahib-Zada. He commences his infamous career as lughah, or gravedigger, or as belhal, or explorer of the spots most convenient for executing a projected assassination, or bhil. In this condition he remains for several years, until he has given abundant proof of his ability and good will. He is then raised to the degree of Bhuttotah, or strangler, which advancement, however, is preceded by new formalities and ceremonies. On the day appointed for the ceremony, the candidate is conducted by his guru into a circle, formed in the sands and surrounded by mysterious hieroglyphics, where prayers are offered up to their deity. The ceremony lasts four days, during which the candidate is allowed no other food but milk. He occupies himself in practising the immolation of victims fastened to a cross erected in the ground. On the fifth day the priest gives him the fatal noose, washed in holy water and anointed with oil, and after more religious ceremonies, he is pronounced a perfect bhuttotah. He binds himself by fearful oaths to maintain the most perfect silence on all that concerns the society, and to labour without ceasing towards the destruction of the human race. He is the *rex sacrificulus*, and the person he encounters, and Bhowany places in his way, the victim. Certain persons, however, are excepted from the attacks of the Thugs. "[26]

---

[25] Heckethorn, *op. cit,* vol. II, p. 318 and, for recent corroboration, see Katherine Mayo, *Mother India.*

The political significance of such a sect in any Theocrasy can be easily understood when one realizes what it means to the rulers of a land to have at their disposal a staff of fanatics trained to kill anyone on the order of a priest! The utility of such organizations is obvious in a hierarchy where the rulers are also priests reigning by "Divine Right".

---

26. Heckethorn, *op. cit.*, vol. II, p. 323.

CHAPTER IV

MAZDEISM

(Zoroastrianism)

While the origin of Mazdeism seems shrouded in mystery, one may nevertheless recognize its antiquity, probably the same as that of the *Rig-Vedha,* for it has been proved by Eugene Bournouf and Spiegel that certain parts of the *Avesta* are as old as the Rig, and the many similarities of this religion with that of the Vedhas proves that Mazdeism must have had its origin at the time when the Aryans undertook the conquest of India, that is to say seventeen to eighteen centuries before our era.

From *Le Mazdeisme, l'avesta* of G. de Lafont, we extract the following facts :[1] The historic role of Media began with Ouwakshatara, a name written by the Greeks Kyouxares, the founder of the Median empire. After defeating the Scythians, Kyouxares went to Assyria where he laid siege to Nineveh, after the destruction of which the Assyrian empire came to an end. (612 B. C.)

Kyouxares left a son Astyage whose daughter Mandane married the Persian Cambyses and from their union sprang the great Cyrus the founder of the Persian empire.

---

[1] *Passim.*

The Parthian dynasty of the Arsacides, who reigned from 256 B. C. until 226 A. D., marks a fatal period for Mazdeism. It was only on the accession of Ardeschir Babejan, the founder of the Sassanide dynasty, that Mazdeism regained its strength. With Ardeshir, Mazdeism became the state religion and Shapour II caused all the Avesta texts treating of philosophy, medicine, cosmogony and astronomy to be collected.

Under the last Sassanides appeared several heretical sects, the most celebrated of which were those of Manes and of Mazdeck. However, in the seventh century, came the Arab conquest; with Yesdegirt the Persian empire of the Sassanides disappeared and with it the influence of Mazdeism.

Towards the tenth century, a few thousand Persians, faithful to the old cult, went into exile taking with them their laws and altars. Some of these took refuge in the Kirman in the Yezd while the others fled to India where they now constitute the well known sect of the Parsees.

The *Zend Avesta,* the sacred book of Persia and of the modern Parsees, contains the teaching of Zoroaster (Zarathustra), a reformer, said to have lived some 7000 years before Christ. It was first translated into French by Hyacinthe-Anquetil Duperron in 1761.

The Chevalier de Ramsay, giving Plutarch as his authority, says : — " Zoroaster taught that there are two Gods contrary to each other in their Operations, the one the Author of all the Good, the other of all the Evil in Nature. The good Principle he calls Oromazes, (Ahura-Mazda) the other the Daemon Arimanius (Agra-Mainyus). He says that the one resembles Light and Truth, the other Darkness and Ignorance.

There is likewise a middle God between these two named Mythras, whom the Persians call the Intercessor or Mediator. Mythras is the Yazata (spirit) of light and the guardian of justice and truth. "

For the benefit of the reader we compile the following interesting information from the previously mentioned author, G. de Lafont :

Pure Zoroastrianism was monotheistic, for in the beginning Ahura-Mazda was recognized as infinitely more powerful than Agra-Mainyus, thus dualism, or the potential equality of these two deities, was actually the development of a later corruption of the Zoroastrian teaching.

The *Avesta,* the bible of Mazdeism, containing the revelations of Ahura-Mazda to the Prophet Zoroaster, is composed of two principal parts — the *Avesta,* containing the *Vendidad,* the *Yacnca* and the *Vispered,* and the *Khorda Avesta,* or little *Avesta,* itself composed of six parts.

Mazdeism taught the immortality of the soul, a compensating justice in another world of Heaven or Hell, the resurrection of the body, the last judgment and the freedom of the soul to choose between right and wrong as a free agent, as opposed to the Islamic theory of fatalism.

Oromazes is the Universal Creator of all that is good, eternal, he created the Good Genii, the spiritual and material world ; man is his creature, and at the end of time he will resurrect him to endow him with eternal happiness and will cause the powers of evil and evil itself to vanish from the earth. No cult is rendered to Agra-Mainyus (Lucifer) who, with his Devas (evil spirits) fights Ahura-Mazda (God) through the ages.

Fire, in the Mazdean religion, was worshipped as the luminous and pure element, the work of Ahura-Mazda and for that reason always burns sheltered from defilement. But it is not material fire that in this case is to be considered as a Yazata. The *Avesta* distinguishes several kinds of fire :

1. Berezucavanha, or internal fire of the earth.
2. Vohufryana or fire of the human body and animals. (Kundalini, Sex-force, Serpent Power).
3. Urvazista or fire of vegetation.
4. Vazista or fire of lightning.
5. Cpenista or fire of Ahura-Mazda, represented by the fire on the Altar.

The Fravashis (modern Ferouers) are supposed to be the souls of the dead deified. Their cult also forms the basis of the Ancestor worship, of the Pitris of India and the Manes of Latin Countries.

According to Geiger, by " Fravashis " must be understood the immortal, divine part in man, which unites with a body for a limited time only. Consequently there are Fravashis of those who are dead, of those who are living, and of those who are still unborn. Darmstater further explains that the Fravashis are the spiritual form of a being, independent of its material life and anterior to it. According to Mazdean teaching, Oromazes offered to the Ferouers of men the choice of remaining in the spiritual world or of descending on earth to incarnate in human bodies.

At the advent of death, corpses were supposed immediately to become the prey of the Demon Druge Nacus, the demon of the impurity of corpses. Thus, it being most essential never to allow the elements of fire, water and earth to be sullied by contact with anything unclean, the funeral rites and ceremonies of the Mazdeans differ from those of other religions.

Their ancient customs persist today among the Parsees of India where the bodies of the dead are carried to " The Towers of Silence " there to be exposed and devoured by the birds of prey.

Besides the many other parallels between Mazdeism and Christianity, the deity of the Mazdeans, their personal God, Ahura-Mazda, was not a god of vengeance as was the Jehovah of the Jews. He was the essence of universal love, charity, justice and activity and the ideal of Mazdean virtue in early times was similar to that of the Christians of today.

JAINISM

Jainism, which like Buddhism denies the authority of the Vedhas and is therefore regarded by the Brahmins of India as heretical, may have been founded by Parsva whose death is placed at 250 years before that of Vardhamana Mahavira, the last of the prophets of the Jains and a contemporary of Buddha.

Vardhamana Mahavira died at the age of 72 at Pava 527 B. C. He had eleven disciples to whom he preached the law. Many authorities however believe the Jain Church to be as old as Brahminism itself.

The following paragraph quoted from Hastings' *Encyclopaedia of Religions and Ethics,* article on *Jainism,* describes the Jain theory of the Transmigration of Souls as opposed to the orthodox theory of Reincarnation. It is here referred to as " a peculiarity of the Jains which had struck all observers more than any other, viz. their extreme carefulness not to destroy any living being, a principle which is carried out to its very last consequences in monastic life, and has shaped the conduct of the laity in a great measure.

No layman will intentionally kill any living being, not even an insect, however troublesome : he will remove it carefully without hurting it. It goes without saying that the Jains are strict vegetarians. This principle of not hurting any living being bars them from some professions, *e. g.* agriculture, and has thrust them into commerce and especially into its least elevating branch of money-lending. Most of the money lending in Western India is in the hands of the Jains, and this accounts in a great measure both for their unpopularity and for their wealth. A remarkable institution of the Jains, due to their tender regard for animal life, is their asylums for old and diseased animals, the panjarapolas, where they are kept and fed till they die a natural death. "

The reluctance on the part of an orthodox Jain to discourage vermin on the theory that a louse may actually be his reincarnated grandmother or a scorpion some other reincarnated relative is only a logical development of his religious belief in the transmigration of souls.

The Jains are subdivided today into numerous schools each following the teachings of a certain master but united in certain fundamental beliefs.

CHAPTER V

CONFUCIANISM AND TAOISM

Previous to the Christian era, China, judging from the available annals, presented the spectacle of a country whose social life was based almost solely on what might be called the family cult. The metaphysical tradition, overshadowing the life of the people, leading to a monotheistic belief in a Supreme Being, was the knowledge and belief of a few. Vaguely, the people believed that the Monarch alone held communication with the Sublime Sovereign or God. The rites had nothing of a religious character, they were purely social. Then in 1122 B. C, when the Chinese dynasty of Chang-Yin was overthrown by the Tcheou, there were introduced in China numerous innovations, most of them appertaining to magic and occultism, also brahminic and avestic dogmas and beliefs. The whole construction of social ideology in China had undergone a slow but radical change. The ground was prepared for the pantheistic teaching of the philosopher Lao-Tse whose doctrine was bitterly fought by Confucius (551-479) who opposed the dualist theory, and strove to regenerate the former state of Chinese social life, the cult of the family and ancestors. Moreover, the whole moral code of Confucius was contained in a few words : loyalty and good feeling towards one's neighbour.

Only in about 65 A. D. was Buddhism introduced in China, followed in turn by Mazdeism, Manicheism and Mahomedanism.

CHAPTER VI

EGYPTIAN ESOTERISM

More than any other country, Ancient Egypt was an illustration of theocratic power. There, priesthood ruled and adumbrated royalty. Depositories of the Indo-Iran tradition of Ra, Zarathustra and Manu, the priests of Thebes and Memphis made of Egypt the fortress of antique esoterism. Their Sovereign Lord God and Teacher bore the name of Hermes or Thoth, the Great Initiator. In him were typified the three great powers of royalty, law-giving or legislative and high priesthood which made the Greeks, disciples of the Egyptians, surname him Hermes Trismegistus or thrice great.

To Hermes was credited a large number of books containing the secrets of Indo-Aryan occult science. Fire was the first Principle, the basis of all teaching and the law of Ammon-Ra, the Sun God of Thebes.

Only after the conquest of Egypt by the Hyksos (2000 B. C.) did the priests spread among the people the cult of Osiris and Isis and their son Horus. This popular religion served as a screen which most effectively shielded the Hermetic mysteries from intrusion and disclosure and safeguarded ancient and Aryan esoterism which had to fear annihilation at the hands of the priesthood of the black or Ethiopian race whose esoterism was based upon a different conception of occult and psychic knowledge.

A striking example of the rivalry of the two esoteric schools is given in the Bible when Moses and Aaron, practising the magic taught them by the Ethiopian Jethro, failed to confound the Egyptian priests before Pharaoh.

Concealed behind the popular cult of Osiris and Isis was the soul of Egyptian esoterism which no one could reach, except after having been deemed worthy to penetrate the most sacred mysteries of Isis whose statue, with its face veiled, stood before the door of the temple of occultism.

The trials of initiation which a candidate had to withstand before he beheld the light of Osiris and understood the " Vision of Hermes " were long and terrible. They were interspersed, however, by states of trance induced by special beverages, during which the initiate had voluptuous visions of Isis preceded by the five-pointed flamboyant star or the Rose of Isis.

Two great flowing currents issued from the esoteric wisdom, jealously safeguarded by the Egyptians, namely: Mosaism or Judaism, taught by Moses whose God was Jehovah, and Orpheism taught by Orpheus whose God was Zeus or Jupiter. The former adapted his beliefs to suit the mentality of undisciplined, rebellious masses of Israelites in Egypt, hence a god of Fear and Vengeance ; the latter legislated for a people whose hellenic genius touched sublime heights of philosophic wisdom on the one hand, and sought on the other to carry its irrepressible sense of beauty and light-heartedness in its pursuit of material pleasures. Hence the great difference between the two currents which had derived their initial teaching from the same source.

CHAPTER VII

JUDAISM

The Pharisees

Judaism has been described by Moses Mendelssohn, a learned Jew, in this way : — " Judaism is not a religion but a Law religionized. " This definition does away effectively with the erroneous belief prevalent among the non-Jews that Judaism is a religion.

In spite of the loud and frequent assertions, made by Jews and Christian divines alike, contending that the Jews were the first monotheists, it is a well proven fact that the high initiates of the Memphis priesthood were monotheists long before the Jews ever went to Egypt.

Judaism would be best described as a rite or compendium of rites, for, if one lends belief to the existence of the Jewish Lawgiver, Moses, one must bear in mind that he first studied among the high initiates of Egypt, and later, became the pupil and son-in-law of black Jethro, the Ethiopian magician whom one might call the Father of Voodooism, name given to the magic practices and rites performed by the negroes.

The closer one studies the history of the Jews, the clearer it appears that they are neither a religious entity nor a nation. The absolute failure of Zionism which was a desperate effort on the part of certain Jewish leaders to bind all the Jews of the world into a national entity, whose territory would have been Palestine, proves the futility of such an effort.

Judaism is not a religion and the Jews are not a nation, but they *are a sect with Judaism as a rite.*

The obligations and rules of the rite for the Jewish masses are contained in the *Talmud* and *Schulchan Aruk,* but the esoteric teachings for the higher initiates are to be found in the Cabala.

Therein are contained the mysterious rites for evocations, the indications and keys to practices for conjuration of supernatural forces, the science of numbers, astrology, etc.

The practical application of the Cabalist knowledge is manifested in the use made of it, through the ages, by Jews to gain influence both in the higher spheres of Gentile life and over the masses. Sovereigns and Popes, both, usually had one or more Jews as astrologers and advisers, and they frequently gave Jews control over their very life by employing them as physicians. Political power was thus gained by Jews in almost every Gentile country alongside with financial power, since Jewish court-bankers manipulated state funds and taxes.

Through the ages also, can be followed the spreading power of the sect, and no more awful example of the devastating and destructive power of the penetration of a secret subversive society has ever been witnessed.

With its B'nai B'rith Supreme Council as the directing head, the sect with its members swarming among all nations has become the sovereign power ruling in the councils of all nations and governing their political, economic, religious and educational policies.

In his book *Nicholas II et les Juifs,* Netchvolodow explains that " the Chaldean science acquired by many of the Jewish priests, during the captivity of Babylon, gave birth to the sect of the Pharisees whose name only appears in the Holy Scriptures and in the writings of the Jewish historians after the captivity (606 B. C). The works of the celebrated scientist Munk leave no doubt on the point that the sect appeared during the period of the captivity.

" From then dates the Cabala or Tradition of the Pharisees. For a long time their precepts were only transmitted orally but later they formed the Talmud and received their final form in the book called the *Sepher ha Zohar.* " [1]

The Pharisees were, as it were, a class whose tendency was to form a kind of intellectual aristocracy among the Jews. At first, they formed a sort of brotherhood, a *haburah,* the members being called *haburim* or brothers. They were a subversive element, aiming at the overthrow of the Sadducean High-priesthood, whose members prided themselves on their aristocracy of blood and birth, to which the Pharisees opposed an aristocracy of learning. The war waged by the latter extends over a long period of time, and the rivalry was bitter. The Pharisees, who, although they professed, as one of their chief tenets, the utmost contempt of the *am-haretz* or simple people, did not overlook the fact that they needed their mass support for the attainment of their own aim, and they enlisted it by opposing the Sadducean strictness of the Law in many instances, namely, in the observance of the Sabbath.

The power of the Sadducees fell with the destruction of the Temple by Titus and thenceforth the Pharisaic element held supremacy among the Jews.

---

1. Lt. Gen. A. Netchvolodow, *Nicolas II et les Juifs,* p. 139.

Quoting an acknowledged authority on Judaism, Mr. Flavien Brenier, Lt. Gen. Netchvolodow further describes the policy of the sect as follows :[2]

" Before appearing proudly as the expression of Jewish aspirations, The Tradition of the Pharisees had serious difficulties to surmount, the chief of which was the revival of the orthodox faith stimulated in the Jewish people by the Captivity. To the exiles, bemoaning the fall of the Temple of Jerusalem and begging Jehovah to end the misfortunes of their homeland, the revelation that Jehovah was only a phantom, entailed not only certain defeat, but also their own exposure to perils the least of which would have been the loss of all authority over Israel.

" The Pharisees then, judging it wiser to capture the confidence of their compatriots by taking the lead of the religious movement, affected a scrupulous observance of the slightest prescriptions of the law and instituted the practice of complicated rituals, simultaneously however cultivating the new doctrine in their secret sanctuaries. These were regular secret societies, composed during the captivity of a few hundred adepts. At the time of Flavius Josephus which was that of their greatest prosperity they numbered only some 6,000 members.

" This group of intellectual pantheists was soon to acquire a directing influence over the Jewish nation. Nothing, moreover, likely to offend national sentiment ever appeared in their doctrines. However saturated with pantheistic Chaldeism they might have been, the Pharisees preserved their ethnic pride intact. This religion of Man divinised, which they had absorbed at Babylon, they conceived solely as applying to the profit of the Jew, the superior and predestined being. The promises of universal dominion which the orthodox Jew found in the Law, the Pharisees did not interpret in the sense of the reign of the God of Moses over the nations, but in that of a material domination to be imposed on the universe by the Jews. The awaited Messiah was no longer the Redeemer of original Sin, a spiritual victor who would lead the world, it was a temporal king, bloody with battle, who would make Israel master of the world and ' drag all peoples under the wheels of his chariot'. The Pharisees did not ask this enslavement of the nations of a mystical Jehovah, which they continued worshipping in public, only as a concession to popular opinion, for they expected its eventual consummation to be achieved by the secular patience of Israel and the use of human means.

---

[2] *Ibid.,* p. 139 *et seq.*

" Monstrously different from the ancient law were such principles as these, but they had nothing one could see, which might have rendered unpopular those who let them filter, drop by drop, among the Jews.

" The admirably conceived organization of the Pharisees did not fail soon to bear fruit.

" One cannot better define its action in the midst of Jewish society before Jesus Christ, " said Mr. Flavien Brenier, " than in comparing it with that of the Freemasons in modern society. "

" A carefully restricted membership tightly bound, imposing on their members the religion of ' the secret', the Pharisees pursued relentlessly their double aim which was : —

1. The seizure of political power, by the possession of the great political offices (the influence of which was tremendous in the reconstituted Jewish nation) and the conquest of the Sanhedrin (Jewish parliament).

" 2. To modify gradually the conceptions of the people in the direction of their secret doctrine. "

The first of these aims was achieved when Hillel, a Pharisee of Babylon who claimed Davidic descent, was elected president of the Sanhedrin. Thus ended the bitter fight between the Pharisees and the Sadducees. Opposed to Hillel was Shammai, a Sadducee, supporter of the Sadducean High Priest who was made Chief Judge of the assembly. The attitude of the two men towards each other is a matter of long record in the Talmud

Among the most noted Pharisees, after Hillel, are : — Yochanan ben Zakkai, founder of the school of Yamnai, Akibah who, with Bar Cochba, fomented the revolt against the Romans under Hadrian, rebellion ending with the order for the dispersion of Jews (132 A. D.) Also Simon ben Yohai, who might be termed the great Magician and Father of the Cabala, lastly Judah the Prince who compiled the Babylonian Talmud. Under these chiefs, the Pharisaic power was definitely established in the Sanhedrin. Those among the Jews who clung to the Sadducean tradition and refused to acknowledge the dominion of the Pharisees, remained as dissidents. Such were the Samaritans and the Karaites who rejected the Talmud.

The second of the aims and its method of attainment is exposed in the so-called *Protocols of the Wise Men of Zion* so loudly denounced by the descendants of those who devised The Secret Doctrine in Israel, Israel here meaning the Jews as a religious community, most of whom remain quite ignorant of the intricate subversive schemes imputed to them.

The attitude of Jesus Christ to this sect is definitely expressed in the New Testament (see Luke xi and John viii).

Exoteric Judaism, the Jewish religion as practised in the twentieth century, is based on the Old Testament, and on equally ancient commentaries on it, preserved for ages as oral traditions, and known, as above stated, under the general name of *The Talmud.* All copies of this book were ordered to be burned by Philip IV, the Fair, King of France, in 1306, but the book survived the holocaust.

We know that the Jewish God is not the father of all men and the ideal of love, justice and mercy, like the Christian God, or even like Ahura-Mazda or Brahma. On the contrary, he is the God of vengeance down to the fourth generation, just and merciful only to his own people, but foe to all other nations, denying them human rights and commanding their enslavement that Israel might appropriate their riches and rule over them.

The following quotations will serve to illustrate this point : —

" And when the Lord thy God shall deliver them before thee ; thou shalt smite them, and utterly destroy them ; thou shalt make no covenant with them, nor shew mercy unto them. " — Deut. vii, 2.

" For thou art an holy people unto the Lord thy God : the Lord thy God hath chosen thee to be a special people unto himself, above all people that are upon the face of the earth. " — Deut. vii, 6.

The Talmud comments upon it : " You are human beings, but the nations of the world are not human beings but beasts. " Baba Mecia 114,6.

On the house of the Goy (non-Jew) one looks as on the fold of cattle. " — Tosefta, Erubin viii.

From The Talmud (a prayer said on the eve of Passover, to the present day) " We beg Thee, 0 Lord, indict Thy wrath on the nations not believing in Thee, and not calling on Thy name. Let down Thy wrath on them and inflict them with Thy wrath. Drive them away in Thy wrath and crush them into pieces. Take away, O Lord, all bone from them. In a moment indict all disbelievers. Destroy in a moment all foes of Thy nation. Draw out with the root, disperse and ruin unworthy nations. Destroy them ! Destroy them immediately, in this very moment! " — *(Pranajtis ; Christianus in Talmudas Judeorum,* quotations from : *Synagoga Judaica,* p. 212. *Minhagin,* p. 23. *Crach Chaim* 480 *Hagah).*

" When one sees inhabited houses of the ' Goy ' one says, ' The Lord will destroy the house of the proud '. And when one sees them destroyed he says, ' The Lord God of Vengeance has revealed himself ' — *(The Babylonian Talmud,* Berachot 58,6.)

" Those who do not own Torah and the prophets must all be killed. Who has power to kill them, let him kill them openly with the sword, if not, let him use artifices till they are done away with. " — *(Schulchan Aruch : Choszen Hamiszpat,* 425,50).

The Jewish Sages soon understood that Christ's way of commenting upon the old Law introduced, instead of hatred towards foreign nations, brotherly feelings and equality of all men in the face of God, thus denying the Jews their privileged position as masters of the world.

At the same time, Christ's reforming the very primitive and rough moral ideas of the Old Testament, deprived the Jews of their very convenient-in-the-battle-of-life, unscrupulous, double morality. Thence the Jewish hatred for the Christian faith is conspicuous in the following quotations from Talmudic sources : —

" The estates of the Goys are like wilderness, who first settles in them has a right to them. *(Baba Batra,* 54 *b.)*

" The property of the Goys is like a thing without a master. " *(Schulchan Aruch : Choszen Hamiszpat,* 156,5).

" If a Jew has struck his spade into the ground of the Goy, he has become the master of the whole. " *(Baba Batra,* 55 *a.)*

In order to enhance the authority of the Old Testament equally recognized by the Christians, while simultaneously augmenting that of the Talmud and the Rabbis, its commentators and authors teach : —

" In the law (the Bible) are things more or less important, but the words of the Learned in the Scripture are always important.

" It is more wicked to protest the words of the rabbis than of Torah " *(Miszna, Sanhedryn* xi, 3.) " Who changes the words of the rabbis ought to die. " *(Erubin,* 21, b.)

" The decisions of the Talmud are words of the living God. Jehovah himself asks the opinion of earthly rabbis when there are difficult affairs in heaven. " (Rabbi Menachem, *Comments for the Fifth Book.)*

" Jehovah himself in heaven studies the Talmud, standing : he has such respect for that book. " (Tr. Mechilla).

To enhance the dignity of religions dogmas the following commandments are given :

" That the Jewish nation is the only nation selected by God, while all the remaining ones are contemptible and hateful.

" That all property of other nations belongs to the Jewish nation, which consequently is entitled to seize upon it without any scruples. "

" That an orthodox Jew is not bound to observe principles of morality towards people of other nations, and on the contrary, he even ought to act against morality, if it were profitable for himself or for the interest of Jews in general. "

" A Jew may rob a Goy (Goy means unclean, and is the disparaging name for a non-Jew), he may cheat him over a bill, which should not be perceived by him, otherwise the name of God would become dishonoured. " *(Schulchan Aruch, Choszen Hamiszpat,* 348.)

" Should a Goy to whom a Jew owed some money die without his heirs knowing about the debt, the Jew is not bound to pay the debt. " *(Schulchan Aruch, Choszen Hamiszpat* 283, 1.)

" The son of Noah, who would steal a farthing ought to be put to death, but an Israelite is allowed to do injury to a goy; where it is written, Thou shalt not do injury to thy neighbour, is not said, Thou shalt not do injury to a goy. " *(Miszna, Sanhedryn,* 57.)

" A thing lost by a goy may not only be kept by the man who found it, but it is forbidden to give it back to him. " *(Schulchan Aruch, Choszen Hamiszpat.* 266, 1.)

" Who took an oath in the presence of the goys, the robbers, and the custom-house officer, is not responsible. " *(Tosefta Szebnot,* 11.)

" In order to annul marriages, oaths and promises, a Jew must go to the rabbi, and if he is absent, he must call three other Jews, and say to them that he is sorry to have done it, and they say, ' Thou art allowed to. ' *(Schulchan Aruch, 2, 1.* 247.)

The Kol Nidre prayer on the Day of Judgment, that acquits beforehand from the nonfulfilment of all kinds of oaths and vows, is given here.

" All vows, oaths, promises, engagements, and swearing, which, beginning this very day of reconciliation, we intend to vow, promise, swear, and bind ourselves to fulfil, we are sorry for already, and they shall be annulled, acquitted, annihilated, abolished, valueless, unimportant, our vow shall be no vows, and our oaths no oaths at all. " *(Schulchan Aruch,* edit. I., 136).

" If a goy wants a Jew to stand witness against a Jew at the Court of Law, and the Jew could give fair evidence, he is forbidden to do it, but if a Jew wants a Jew to be a witness in a similar case against a goy, he may do it. " — *(Schulchan Aruch, Choszen Hamiszpat,* 28 art, 3 and 4.)

" Should a Jew inform the goyish authorities that another Jew has much money, and the other will suffer a loss through it, he must give him remuneration. " *(Schulchan Aruch. ~ Ch. Ha.,* 338.)

" If there is no doubt that someone thrice betrayed the Jews, or caused that their money passed to the goys, a means and wise council must be found to do away with him. "

" Every one must contribute to the expense of the community (Kahal) in order to do away with the traitor. " *Ibid.,* 163, 1.)

" It is permitted to kill a Jewish denunciator everywhere. . . . it is permitted to kill him before he has denounced.... though it is necessary to warn him and say, ' Do not denounce. ' But should he say, ' I will denounce, ' he must be killed, and he who accomplishes it first will have the greater merit. " *(Ibid.,* 388, 10.)

" How to interpret the word ' robbery '. A goy is forbidden to steal, rob, or take women slaves, etc., from a goy or from a Jew, but he (a Jew) is not forbidden to do all this to a goy. " *(Tosefta, Aboda Zara,* viii, 5.)

" If a goy killed a goy or a Jew he is responsible, but if a Jew killed a goy he is not responsible. "(*Ibid.,* viii, 5.)

The authors of the Talmud, having issued this horrible moral code, that acquits all kinds of crimes, in order to make easier the strife with foreigners to their own nation, understood the necessity of keeping its contents a secret and thus legislated :

" To communicate anything to a goy about our religious relations would be equal to the killing of all the Jews, for if the goys knew what we teach about them, they would kill us openly. " *(Book of Libbre David,* 37.)

" It is forbidden to disclose the secrets of the Law. He who would do it would be as guilty as if he destroyed the whole world " *(Jaktu Chadasz,* 171,2). The restrictions and commandments bearing this in view were raised to the dignity of dogmas of faith. It is not astonishing that in face of such prohibitions the secrets of the Talmud have been so little known to other nations, especially to the Western ones, and till the present day, even the most progressive and citizen-like Jews think the disclosure of the principles of the Talmud a proof of the most outrageous intolerance, and an attack on the Jewish religion.

In order to separate the Jewish nation from all others, and thus prevent it from mixing with them, and losing their national peculiarities, a great many precepts of the ritual and rules for every-day life, prejudices and superstitions, the remainder of the times of barbarism and obscurity, have been gathered in the Talmud and consecrated as canons. The precepts observed by Eastern Jews till the present day deride even the most simple notions of culture and hygiene. For instance they enjoin :

" If a Jew be called to explain any part of the rabbinic books, he only ought to give a false explanation, that he might not, by behaving differently, become an accomplice in betraying this information. Who will violate this order shall be put to death. " *(Libbre David,* 37.)

" It is forbidden to disclose the secrets of the Law. "

" One should and must make false oath, when the goys ask if our books contain anything against them. Then we are bound to state on oath that there is nothing like that. " (*Szaalot-Utszabot. The book of Jore d'a,* 17.)

" Every goy who studies Talmud, and every Jew who helps him in it, ought to die. " *(Sanhedryn* 59 a. *Aboda Zora 8-6. Szagiga* 13.)

" The ears of the goys are filthy, their baths, houses, countries are filthy. " *(Tosefta Mikwat,* v. 1.)

" A boy-goy after nine years and one day old, and a girl after three years and one day old, are considered filthy. " *{Pereferkowicz : Talmud* t. v., p. 11.)

These principles afford an explanation of the action of governments in excluding Jews from judicial and military positions. They also explain that mysterious phenomenon known as Antisemitism.

In his *Manual of Freemasonry* Richard Carlile makes the following observations :[3]

" The disposition of the mistaken Jew is to monopolise his portion of the Sacred Scriptures as a charm or benefit prepared and presented to his people in their sectarian character.

" That there was no such nation as the Israelites, is a truth — found in the consideration that they are not mentioned beyond the Bible in any records whatever. Egypt knew them not, Persia knew them not, Hindostan knew them not, Scythia knew them not, Phoenicia knew them not, Greece knew them not, as a nation. And in the first general notice that we have of the Jews, they are introduced to the world as a sect, or a series of sects, being Pharisees, Sadducees, and Essenes ; and in that general notice, beyond that sort of mistaken allegorical history which Josephus

---

• Carlile, *Manual of Freemasonry,* p. 88.

has copied from the books of the Old Testament, and which is not otherwise corroborated, and no better authority than the book of the Old Testament, there is no presentation of the Jews as the descendants of a larger nation of Israelites ; as a religious or philosophical sect of distinction, mixed up with, and found in real human history, they are not to be traced higher than the century before the Christian era. It is satisfactory to be able to show the origin of anything, for such a knowledge is a common passion and curiosity among mankind ; and I think the Rev. Robert Taylor has discovered and developed the origin of the titles of Hebrew, Israelite, and Jew.[4]

" Hebrew, Israelite, and Jew, are Syriac, Phoenician and Egyptian terms used in the mysterious degrees ; and it would be as reasonable to argue that the Freemasons are a dispersed nation, as that the Jews are, or were, a dispersed nation. The Rev. Mr. Taylor has beautifully explained this in his discourses.[5]

" The scenes and characters of the mysterious drama, as found in the Eleusinian Orgies of Greece, were : —

Eleusis. — The Advent, or coming-in light —• the birth and character of the subject of the drama — the title of the whole play or mystery.

Hierophant. — The Expounder of the Mysteries, the High Priest, the Pope, the Archbishop.

Hupereet. — The Minister, or Ordinary Priest.

Diaconos. — The Deacon, or Lower Officer.

Diadochos. — The Torch-bearer.

Photagogue. — The Bringer-in of Light.

Autoptos. — The Candidate admitted to see the sight. The visitor of the Temple — the Church- and Chapel-goer.

Autopsy. — The sight itself.

---

[4] *Ibid.,* p. viii.

[5] *Ibid.,* p. xi.

Hebrew. —The initiated Candidate who had passed through all the degrees of the mystery.

Teleios. — The adept, or perfected.

Israelite. — God-seer, purified from all guile.

Jew .— The God himself, or the mysterious perfection and deification of the human character.

" The whole type of what may be made of human nature by cultivation of mind, which is the conditional promise of paradise, or kingdom of heaven. This is the revelation of all the mysteries. "

Carlile further states [6] " We are prepared with historical disproofs of the existence of such a people as Israelites or Jews as a nation. They were a religious or philosophical sect, who had been made adepts in the higher Pagan Mysteries : a sect among nations ; but not a nation among sects. "

Judaism sanctions Gnosticism which is further elaborated in their books of the Cabala. For further study of this subject we refer the reader to Chapter XIII.

6. *Ibid.,* p. v of Introduction.

CHAPTER VIII

ORPHEISM AND THE PAGAN MYSTERIES

There is no greater or more erudite authority than Fabre d'Olivet (1768-1825) on Orpheus or Dyonisius [1] and to such an eminent source, among many others, must the reader be referred.

The feats of the white Dorian race of Greece and the mysticism of its priests of Thrace as well as the centuries-long rivalry between the solar or male cult and the lunar or female cult, have provided inexhaustible sources of religious and literary lore.

The legendary birth of Orpheus adorned with his descent from Apollo, his flight from Thrace, initiation in the temple of Memphis and return to his own country as a high adept of the most profound mysteries, constitute but the first part of his life.

After his return to Greece, he united the cults of Dyonisius and Zeus, reformed that of Bacchus and instituted the Mysteries. To him was allotted the task of reducing the power of the Bacchantes, priestesses of Hecate, by a magic superior to theirs, and their vengeance, which caused his death, has been the theme of many a poet.

---

1. *Pythagore, Les Vers Dorés.*

One follows the evolution of Greece from Orpheus to Pythagoras, Socrates and Plato and one searches for the remnants of Egyptian esoterism in the utmost recesses of the Delphic temples and in the ceremonies of initiation to the Eleusinian mysteries. These, having still been practised until the Emperor Theodosius I, the Great, (379-395) prohibited them and ordered the destruction of the Eleusinian Temple, much material is available for their description.

We are indebted to Bishop Lavington, an erudite member of the Anglican Church, for a graphic description of the perversion to which they gave rise, but we preface this article with that author's apology to the reader, which, like the text of most of this chapter, we quote verbatim from the Bishop's book *The Enthusiasm of Methodists and Papists compared,* Part III :

> " We wallow indeed in the mire, by publishing these things. But lest any one should fall into the mire of these heretics, from mere ignorance, I purposely and knowingly defile my own mouth, and the ears of the auditors, because it is beneficial. For it is much better to hear absurdity and filthiness in accusing others, than to fall into them out of ignorance. Much better to be informed of the mire, than, for want of information, to fall into it. "

Bishop Lavington then proceeds with the explanation of the Pagan Mysteries from which we quote : [2] —

" The Gods and Goddesses each had their special mysteries. Even Cotytto, the Goddess of Turpitude, had her rites and devotees.

" A high opinion of the Mysteries was very far from being general, or received by great and good Persons. Those great Men, Agesilaus and Epaminondas, would not submit to an Initiation. . . . The Athenians asking Diogenes to be initiated because such had the Precedency in a future State ; he replied, ' Ridiculous thing ! that Agesilaus and Epaminondas must rowl in dirt; and every Scoundrel initiated, such as Patecion the Thief, be happy in the Elysian Fields. ' Nor shall we entertain the better Notion of the Mysteries when we find so wise and good a Man as Socrates refusing initiation. For which (though perhaps he had stronger) he gives this Reason : ' If the Mysteries were bad, he should not be able to conceal the Secret, but must discourage every one from Initiation; and if good, Humanity would oblige him to discover it for the public Benefit. '

---

[2] Bishop Lavington, *The Enthusiasm of Methodists and Papists compared,* p. 313 *et seq.*

" Rut whether the Mysteries were good or bad, Authors are pretty well agreed as to the preparatory Ceremonies, and manner of Initiation : whereby they were to Represent, and Act over again, the Actions and passions of the Deities, for whose Honour the Mysteries were instituted.

" That Initiation might seem a venerable and solemn Thing, the Devotees were taught to qualify themselves by Prayer to the Demons, Fastings, Watchings, Confession to the Priest, and other Lustrations. We read in Plutarch, ' that fasting is to precede the Mysteries of Ceres, ' and that Confession was required ; ' Antalcidas being examined by the Priest, in order to his initiation, what grievous crimes he had committed, made Answer, ' If I have been guilty of any such Crime, the Gods know it already. ' The Confession was a trick of the Masters of the Ceremonies to get the people under their Girdle.

" Tertullian says, ' As to the superstition of the Eleusinian Mysteries, what they conceal is the Shame of them. Therefore they make the Admission tortuous, take Time in the Initiation, set a Seal on. the Tongue, and instruct the Epoptae for five Years, to raise a high Opinion of them by Delay and Expectation. But all the Divinity in the sacred Domes, the Whole of what they aspire to, what sealeth the Tongue, is this : ___*Simulacrum membri Virilis revelatur.* But for a Cover of their Sacrilege, they pretend these Figures are only a mystical Representation of venerable Nature. '

" The original Reason of such figures being exposed to View, and had in Veneration, in the Mysteries, we learn from others. Clemens Alexandrinus giveth a full account of this religion of the Mysteries, too prolix to be transcribed ; -— 'Of their wicked Institution, Cruelty, Stupidity, Madness, making Goddesses of Harlots, corrupting Mankind : — the Mysteries of Ceres are nothing but representations of incestuous Deities : — their ridiculous Exclamations upon Admission were, I have eat out of the Timbrel, I have drank out of the Cymbal, I have carried the Chest, I have crept into the secret Chamber. ' In the Chest *Pudendum Bacchi inclusum erat. — Cistam et veretrum nova Religione colenda tradunt.* — It is a shame to mention the filthy circumstances in the story of Ceres...

" The Pagan Mysteries being of such an immoral Nature, and Tendency, it might justly be thought strange, were no Notice taken of them in the Holy Scriptures. And therefore, though such an Enquiry might carry us into too great a Length, yet I shall not entirely pass it over. There can be then little Doubt, but they are pointed out by St. Paul : ' It is a Shame even to speak of those Things that are done of them in Secret. ' And where Christianity is termed the Mystery of Godliness, it is set, I am persuaded, in Opposition, not only to the Mystery of Iniquity that was to work in the Christian World, but likewise to the preceding Mysteries among the Gentiles. Nor is it improbable, that the Apostle writeth in direct Opposition to the Appearances, Pretences, and Impostures of those false Divinities : Without Controversy great is the Mystery of Godliness...

" In the Old Testament, Deut. xxiii. 17 (not indeed in the Hebrew, but in the Septuagint) after the Words, ' There shall be no Whore, — nor Sodomites of the Sons of Israel, ' we find added Words of this Import, ' There shall not be an Initiator, nor an Initiated, of the Sons or Daughters of Israel. ' ' Tis possible this additional Clause may have been inserted by the Seventy, by Way of Interpretation of the preceding Words. They knew the Nature of the Mysteries full well; and we are led to this Meaning by the Impurities forbidden, and by the Price of the Dog in the next Verse ; the Egyptian God Anubis being usually figured with a Dog's Head. (Edit. Daniel. Schol.)

" We may observe also, that Philo the Jew *(de Sacrific.)* expressly ranketh the Prohibition of the Mysteries among the Laws of Moses. ' The Law, saith he, expressly excludeth the whole of the Mysteries, their Inchantments and execrable Scurrilities, from the Holy Ordinances : not permitting those educated in her Society to celebrate such Heathen Rites; nor, depending on such mystical Ceremonies, to disregard the Truth ; and to follow the Works of Night and Darkness, omitting what deserveth the Light and the Day. Let none therefore among the Disciples of Moses either initiate, or be initiated : it being equally wicked either to teach, or to learn the Mysteries. — ' Tis generally the Case with them, that no good Person is initiated ; but Thieves, and Pirates, and mad Gangs of abominable and immodest women; after parting with their Money to the initiating Priests. "

Several of the Fathers have taken Notice of the same Passage in the Septuagint, and explained it in the same manner.

" For further Proof of the Turpitude in the Mysteries of Isis and Osiris, and that it was so from the Beginning, we need only consult Diodorus Siculus, Lib. I. ' Isis being overwhelmed with Grief for the Loss of her Husband Osiris, took particular Care in deifying him to consecrate his Pudenda ; which she ordered to be peculiarly honoured and adored in the Mysteries. And the same holy Institution was observed with the same Ceremonies, when carried into Greece by Orpheus : where the common People, partly from Ignorance, and partly from a Love of the new god (Phallus), were very fond of being initiated. '

" Much more might be collected (even from initiated Authors, however, generally shy) concerning the infamous Origin of the Mysteries, which I pass over.....

" The celebration of the Eleusinian Mysteries commenced in Greece about 1400 years before Christ but ' whenever or however they were brought into Greece, and transferred to the Honour of Ceres and Proserpina, they were of the same Nature, and observed with equally chaste Ceremonies, with those of Isis... '

" One contrivance for ' giving the Initiated a Sight of the Divinities, was by means of a Looking-glass, wherein none could see their own Faces, but had a clear View of the Gods and Goddesses. ' This we have from Pausanias : and Eusebius relates the same Thing. - So easily might weak People, and under the utmost Astonishment, be deluded by Figures behind a glass, in a proper Habit and Posture ; and especially by living Persons, personating the Deities in any Manner they thought fit.

' As a proof of the Indecencies, Sozomen writeth,

' that Theophilus, Bishop of Alexandria, egregiously ridiculed and exposed to public View the shameful Figures belonging to the Mysteries, the Phallus, etc. which he brought out of the Pagan Temple. For which the enraged Heathens raised a Tumult, and massacred a great Number of the Christians. ' — Even the initiated Pausanias (notwithstanding his usual Reservedness) sometimes blurts out a little too much, and intimates something shameful — : ' as frequent assignations ; — the proneness of the religious Females to venery — a Mixture of the Obscene and Miraculous ; — the continuance of the Eleusinian Festival for a week ; on the third Day whereof all Males, even the Dogs, are excluded ; but the next Day the Men are admitted among them, when they pass the Time in sporting, and light Discourse ; — the Amours of Ceres, of a very strange Kind ; with the Secrecy enjoined ; — The Obscenities in the Mysteries of Cupid, and suitable Hymns. '

" A man initiated, and under an Oath of Silence, could not well have discovered more of the true Nature of the Mysteries, and the Reason why they ought not to be divulged. We are assured too, that one Day of the Eleusinian Festival was set apart for the Rites of Venus and Cupid, and another for those of Bacchus : both of which were confessedly beyond measure abominable. Nor will our Opinion be more favourable, when we remember what Athenœus writes ; ' Apelles, being extremely desirous of drawing a Venus from the famous Phryne, could find no Opportunity of seeing her naked, without going to the Eleusinian and Neptunian Games ; where she stripped herself in the Sight of all the Men, and went into the sea to wash herself...'

" I apprehend therefore that no great Stress is to be laid upon those initiated Authors, who have thought themselves obliged to say nothing but what was good of the Mysteries ; or have talked of the Unity of the Deity, as the great Secret of them; perhaps to avoid the Shame of being thought Dupes to a foolery, or inquisitive into something worse. "[3]

On the same subject the Chevalier de Ramsay, reputed founder of Scottish Rites, writes the following :[4] —

" About the fifteenth Olympiad, six hundred Years before the Christian æra, the Greeks having lost the traditional Knowledge of the Orientals, began to lay aside the Doctrine of the Ancients, and to reason about the Divine Nature from Prejudices which their Senses and Imagination suggested. Anaximander lived at that time, and was the first that set himself to destroy the Belief of a supreme Intelligence, in order to account for everything from the Action of blind Matter, which by necessity assumes all Sorts of Forms. He was followed by Leucippus, Democritus, Epicurus, Strato, Lucretius, and all the School of the Atomical Philosophers.

" Pythagoras, Anaxagoras, Socrates, Plato, Aristotle, and all the great Men of Greece, opposed this impious Doctrine, and endeavoured to prove the ancient Theology of the Orientals. These Philosophers of a superior Genius observed in Nature, Motion, Thought and Design. And as the Idea of Matter includes none of these three Properties, they inferred from thence, that there was another Substance different from Matter.

" Greece being thus divided into two Sects, they disputed for a long time, without either Party being convinced. At length about the 120th Olympiad Pyrrho formed a third Sect whose great Principle was to doubt everything, and determine nothing. All the Atomists who had laboured in vain to find out a Demonstration of their false Principles, presently struck in with the Pyrrhonian Sect. They ran wildly into the System of an universal Doubt, and carried it almost to such an Excess of Frenzy, that they doubted of the clearest and most sensible Truths. They maintained without any Allegory, that everything we see is only an Illusion, and that the whole Series of Life is but a perpetual Dream of which those of the Night are only so many Images.

---

[3] Lavington.

[4] The Chevalier de Ramsay, *A Discourse upon the Theology and Mythology of the Antients in The Travels of Cyrus,* vol. II, P. 76 *et seq.* (published 1728).

" At last Zeno set up a fourth School about the 130th Olympiad. This Philosopher endeavoured to reconcile the Disciples of Democritus with those of Plato, by maintaining that the first Principle was indeed an infinite Wisdom, but his Essence was only a pure Aether, or a subtile Light, which diffused itself everywhere, to give Life, Motion,' and Reason to all Beings.

" In these last Ages the modern Freethinkers have done nothing but revive the ancient Errors. Jordano Bruno, Vannini and Spinoza, have vamped up the monstrous System of Anaximander; and the last of the three has endeavoured to dazzle weak Minds, by dressing it up in a geometrical Form.

" Some Spinosists, finding that they were every Moment at a Loss for Evidence in the pretended Demonstrations of their Master, are fallen into a senseless sort of Scepticism, called Egomism, where every one fancies himself to be the only Being that exists.

" Mr. Hobbes and several other Philosophers, without setting up for Atheists, have ventured to maintain, that Thought and Extension are Properties of the same Substance.

" Descartes, F. Malebranche, Leibnitz, Dr. Bentley, Clarke, and several Philosophers of a Genius equally Mile and profound, have endeavoured to refute these Errors, and brought Arguments to support the ancient Theology. Besides the Proofs which are drawn from the Effects, they have insisted on others drawn from the Idea of the first Cause. They shew plainly that the Reasons of believing, are infinitely stronger than any Arguments there are for doubting. This is all that can be expected in metaphysical Discussions.

"The History of former times is like that of our own Human Understanding takes almost the same Forms in different Ages, and loses its Way in the same Labyrinths. "

CHAPTER IX

THE DRUIDS

We heard, in 1928, of a " Druid " celebration at Stonehenge. Shortly afterwards we read of another, an initiation ceremony, at Penzance where " 12 bards of Britain, including Sir Arthur Quiller-Couch, the author, were initiated by the Archdruid of Wales into a sect revived after a lapse of 2000 years. "[1]

Some of us might prefer the lapse to have continued and as the subject of the Druid Mysteries is here relevant we quote verbatim the chapter entitled " The Druids " from Mr. Charles William Heckethorn's interesting book *Secret Societies of All Ages and Countries* :

" The secret doctrines of the Druids were much the same as those of the Gymnosophists and Brahmins of India, the Magi of Persia, the priests of Egypt, and of all other priests of antiquity. Like them, they had two sets of religious doctrines, exoteric and esoteric. Their rites were practised in Britain and Gaul, though they were brought to a much greater perfection in the former country, where the Isle of Anglesey was considered their chief seat. The word Druid is generally supposed to be derived from δρῦς " an oak ", which tree was particularly sacred among them, though its etymology may also be found in the Gaelic word Druidh, ' a wise man ' or ' magician. '

---

[1] *The Daily Telegraph,* Sept. 24, 1928.

" Their temples, wherein the sacred fire was preserved, were generally situate on eminences and in dense groves of oaks, and assumed various forms.

" The adytum or ark of the mysteries was called a cromlech, and was used as the sacred pastos[2], or place of regeneration. It consisted of three upright stones, as supporters of a broad, flat stone laid across them on the top, so as to form a small cell. Kit Cotey's House, in Kent, was such a pastos. Considerable space, however, was necessary for the machinery of initiation in its largest and most comprehensive scale. Therefore, the Coer Sidi, where the mysteries of Druidism were performed, consisted of a range of buildings, adjoining the temple, containing apartments of all sizes, cells, vaults, baths, and long and artfully-contrived passages, with all the apparatus of terror used on these occasions. Most frequently these places were subterranean.

" The system of Druidism embraced every religious and philosophical pursuit then known in these islands. The rites bore an undoubted reference to astronomical facts. Their chief deities are reducible to two, — a male and a female, the great father and mother, Hu and Ceridwen, distinguished by the same characteristics as belonged to Osiris and Isis, Bacchus and Ceres, or any other supreme god and goddess representing the two principles of all being. The grand periods of initiation were quarterly, and determined by the course of the sun, and his arrival at the equinoctial and solstitial points. But the time of annual celebration was

---

2. *Pastos* — The altar upon which the ritual desecration of virginity obligatory for initiation into the phallic cult took place.

May-eve, when fires were kindled on all the cairns and cromlechs throughout the island, which burned all night to introduce the sports of May-day, whence all the national sports formerly or still practised, date their origin. Round these fires choral dances were performed in honour of the sun, who, at this season, was figuratively said to rise from his tomb. The festival was licentious, and continued till the luminary had attained his meridian height, when priests and attendants retired to the woods, where the most disgraceful orgies were perpetrated. But the solemn initiations were performed at midnight, and contained three degrees, the first or lowest being the Eubates, the second the Bards, and the third the Druids. The candidate was first placed in the pastos bed, or coffin, where his symbolical death represented the death of Hu, or the sun ; and his restoration in the third degree symbolized the resurrection of the sun. He had to undergo trials and tests of courage similar to those practised in the mysteries of other countries, and which therefore need not be detailed here.

" The Druids taught the doctrine of one supreme being, a future state of rewards and punishments, the immortality of the soul and a metempsychosis... Their doctrines were chiefly those of Pythagoras.

" Their authority in many cases exceeded that of the monarch. They were, of course, the sole interpreters of religion, and consequently superintended all sacrifices; for no private person was allowed to offer a sacrifice without their sanction. They possessed the power of excommunication, which was the most horrible punishment that could be inflicted next to that of death, and from the effects of which the highest magistrate was not exempt. The great council of the realm was not competent to declare war or conclude peace without their concurrence. They determined all disputes by a final and unalterable decision, and had the power of inflicting the punishment of death. And, indeed, their altars streamed with the blood of human victims. Holocausts of men, women, and children, enclosed in large towers of wicker-work, were sometimes sacrificed as a burnt-offering to their superstitions, which were, at the same time, intended to enhance the consideration of the priests, who were an ambitious race delighting in blood. The Druids, it is said, preferred such as had been guilty of theft, robbery, or other crimes, as most acceptable to their gods; but when there was a scarcity of criminals, they made no scruple to supply their place with innocent persons. These dreadful sacrifices were offered by the Druids, for the public, on the eve of a dangerous war, or in the time of any national calamity ; and also for particular persons of high rank, when they were afflicted with any dangerous disease.

" The priestesses, clothed in white, and wearing a metal girdle, foretold the future from the observation of natural phenomena, but more especially from human sacrifices. For them was reserved the frightful task of putting to death the prisoners taken in war, and individuals condemned by the Druids ; and their auguries were drawn from the manner in which the blood issued from the many wounds inflicted, and also from the smoking entrails. Many of these priestesses maintained a perpetual virginity, others gave themselves up to the most luxurious excesses.

" As the Romans gained ground in these islands the power of the Druids gradually declined ; and they were finally assailed by Suetonius Paulinus, governor of Britain under Nero, A. D. 61, in their stronghold, the Isle of Anglesey, and entirely defeated, the conqueror consuming many of them in the fires which they had kindled for burning the Roman prisoners they had expected to make — a very just retaliation upon these sanguinary priests. But though their dominion was thus destroyed, many of their religious practices continued much longer; and so late as the eleventh century, in the reign of Canute, it was necessary to forbid the people to worship the sun, moon, fires, etc. Certainly many of the practices of the Druids are still adhered to in Freemasonry ; and some writers on this order endeavour to show that it was established soon after the edict of Canute, and that as thereby the Druidical worship was prohibited *in toto,* the strongest oaths were required to bind the initiated to secrecy. "

There is no mystery as to the existence in Berlin of the " Druidenorden " today. It is a branch of Freemasonry and its Sovereign Grand Master, until late, was Dr. Hübbe-Schleiden.

CHAPTER X

CHRISTIANITY

To define Christianity, one could hardly do better than use the words of Frederic W. Farrar, Canon of Westminster and Chaplain to Queen Victoria, who in 1874 wrote a *Life of Christ.* In his preface are the following lines :

" We study the sacred books of all the great religions of the world ; we see the effect exercised by those religions on the mind of their votaries ; and in spite of all the truths which even the worst of them enshrined, we watch the failure of them all to produce the inestimable blessings which we have ourselves enjoyed from infancy, which we treasure as dearly as our life, and which we regard as solely due to the spread and establishment of the Christian faith. We read the systems and treatises of ancient philosophy, and in spite of all the great and noble elements in which they abound, we see their total incapacity to console, or support, or deliver, or regenerate the world. Then we see the light of Christianity dawning like a tender spring day amid the universal and intolerable darkness. From the first, that new religion allies itself with the world's utter feeblenesses, and those feeblenesses it shares; yet without wealth, without learning, without genius, without arms, without anything to dazzle and attract the religion 'of outcasts and exiles, of fugitives and prisoners — numbering among its earliest converts not many wise, not many noble, not many mighty, but such as the gaoler of Philippi, and the runaway slave of Colossae — with no blessing apparently upon it save such as cometh from above — with no light whatever about it save the light that comes from heaven — it puts to flight kings and their armies ; it breathes a new life, and a new hope, and a new and unknown holiness into a guilty and decrepit world. This we see ; and we see the work grow, and increase, and become more and more irresistible, and spread ' with the gentleness of a sea that caresses the shore it covers. ' "

Words fail when attempting to speak of Jesus Christ, the Founder of Christianity. His birth, life and death are known to all. His teaching was public and accessible to the humblest. Long years of learning, awful initiation ceremonies striking terror in the adept's soul were not required from the followers of Christ. Himself, the bearer of that Light which He taught was not to be found in man's earthly nature but was to be sought from without, He invoked God with humble prayer and faith, and performed all miracles.

Therein, is Christ's teaching diametrically opposed to that of the high adepts whose secret doctrine was that man had divinity in himself and could bring it out by exercise of will, by concentration of thought and scientific psychic development. Fear, the predominant feature attendant upon the gaining of knowledge in all other religious systems, was foreign to the adherents of Christ who were repeatedly told : ' Fear not'... " Be not afraid '. No bonds, no fetters were imposed by Him in the shape of ritualism. Love of

God and love of neighbour were the only precepts, Faith and Charity the only means through which the divine Spirit gave man transcendental power over moral evil and physical ills.

No purer and simpler doctrine, no greater knowledge of the communion possible between God and man had ever been given. Yet, within a very short time after the death of Christ, Christian ritualism began to appear. A theological system of dogmas and beliefs was devised, modes of worship elaborated and a hierarchy arose with all its attendant evils. However, the Christian faith, under the lash of persecution, had shown the world the power of Faith and Charity.

And against this power the forces of evil have ever been unfurled. Blow after blow was dealt to the rising church. Both its beliefs and practices were attacked by those who professed other views and worshipped other gods and who designed all schemes to subvert and pervert Christianity. Henceforth, as it has ever been with all religions, the history of Christianity and of Gnosticism will develop side by side, the perversion and destruction of the former being the aims of the latter.

The Tree of Christianity gave forth three main branches, the Catholicism of Rome, Greek Catholicism, and in the XVI Century, Lutherism. The two former bodies remained homogeneous but Lutherism gave birth to innumerable sects all dissenting from the parent church.

CHAPTER XI

MANICHEISM

Manicheism is the religion of the followers of Manes, a slave who was sold to a widow who freed and adopted him, thus making him the " son of the widow " a name which after him passed to all his followers and is still used in Masonic Lodges.

Of Manicheism, C. W. Olliver, considered an authority on all masonic matters, writes :

" Manicheism was one of the most important attempts to found a universal religion and to reconcile the Christian, Buddhist, and Mazdean with the Greek philosophy. It presented the same syncretic ideas found later among Moslem Druzes and among Sikhs. It failed in the first place because Islam presented a much simpler system in the East, and because in the West Christianity was already developing, in the time of Manes, a religion which aimed at reconciling the Paganism of Italy and Gaul with the ethics of Christ, this presenting a simpler and more familiar faith. But the one achievement of Manes was the creation of the Devil which led to an afterwards unremovable taint throughout religion. Manes was a notable philosopher and religious teacher born about the year A. D. 216, and he was crucified and flayed alive by the Persian

Magi under Bahram I in the year A. D. 277. His Persian name was Shuraik, rendered Cubricus in Latin. "[1]

He was the slave of the wife of a certain Terebinth who was a disciple of Scythianus of the race of the Sarrasins.

Olliver tells us further that : " His *Acta Archdei* became the Manichean Bible with sundry added epistles. He taught the Mazdean dualism of the powers of light and darkness, as representing good and evil beings, and an asceticism which aimed at the control of all passions. Manes repudiated Judaism, and like the Gnostics, regarded Jehovah as an evil God. The Manicheans were more hated and feared by Catholic Christians than any other sect. They were still in existence in spite of constant persecution as late as our tenth century, and their influence was felt from China to Spain and Gaul. It still lingers in Asia, and among the ' Christians of St. Thomas ' in Madras it survived till the fifteenth century. St. Augustine had listened for nine years to Manes, but the Roman Empire felt the force of this system chiefly in A. D. 280. The Romans knew it themselves in A. D. 330, and Faustus became its missionary among them. Many clung to Manicheism till A. D. 440, when Leo the Great found that he must stamp it out if the Roman creed was not to be extinguished. It was the basis of the Paulican heresy, and of that of the Albigenses in the South of France which was only quenched by blood in the thirteenth century.

" The doctrine of Manes can be summed up as follows. He believed in two gods, or, more exactly, principles, the principle of good and that of evil. Before the creation of the world the ' people of darkness ' revolted against the God, and God, incapable of withstanding the attack, gave to them a portion of His essence. The people of darkness having within them the principle of evil by their very nature, and the principle of good which they had just acquired, were able to constitute the world, where both these principles are combined, but where the principle of evil predominates as the natural characteristic of its originators. Man is a mixture of two natures, the spiritual being the work of God, the body, and especially sex, the work of the Devil. "[2]

---

[1] C. W. Olliver, *An Analysis of Magic and Witchcraft,* p. 102.

Summers, another authority, further explains that " it must be clearly borne in mind that these heretical bodies with their endless ramifications were not merely exponents of erroneous religious and intellectual beliefs by which they morally corrupted all who came under their influence, but they were the avowed enemies of law and order, red-hot anarchists who would stop at nothing to gain their ends. Terrorism and secret murder were their most frequent weapons.... The Manichean system was in truth a simultaneous attack upon the Church and the State, a desperate but well-planned organization to destroy the whole fabric of society, to reduce civilization to chaos. "[3]

Manicheism possessed its- dogmas, liturgies, devotees, and churches.

But again to quote Olliver : " First and foremost amongst the manifestations of what had become Devil worship we find the Black Mass or Devil Masses of the Middle Ages, from which the ceremonial and ritual of Black Magic are derived. The principle which forms the very essence of the Devil, the idea of opposition, also underlies the whole ceremonial and ritual of

---

[2] C. W. Olliver, *op. cit.,* p. 103.

[3] M. Summers, *History of Witchcraft and Demonology,* p. 17.

Black Magic and Black Masses. Such ideas as repeating prayers backwards, reversing the cross, consecrating obscene or filthy objects, are typical of this sense of opposition or desecration, which is also a recognised form of mental disease. The key-word to the whole of the practices of Black Magic is desecration. "[4]

Yet another authority not to be overlooked, namely Abbe Baruel, author of *Memoires pour servir à l'histoire du Jacobinisms* shows the remarkable analogy between the dogmas and rituals of Freemasonry, Templarism and those of Manicheism. Grades concur in number and signs are identical. The mourning for 'Jacques Molay is a ceremony analogous to that practised by the Manicheans in remembrance of Manes and known as Bema. The term MacBenac still used in Masonic lodges was the reminder of the execution of Manes which all Manichean adepts sought to avenge. The practice of so called Fraternity or Brotherhood was in Manicheism extended only to adepts of the sect, just as it is similarly practised by Freemasons towards one another only.

The question which naturally comes up to one's mind when one follows closely the links of the Manichean chain is this : — Is not Freemasonry, such as we see it to-day, the full development of the idea of Cubricus or Manes the slave, the apotheosis of Manicheism as achieved by Albert Pike, Sovereign Pontiff of Universal Freemasonry ?

---

4. C. W. Olliver, op. *cit.,* p. 106.

CHAPTER XII

WITCHCRAFT

Margaret Alice Murray, writing in *The Witch-cult in Western Europe* establishes both the phallic and religious character of the " craft ", in her remarkable book from which we extract part of the following valuable information :

The deity worshipped by the witches was in some cases Lucifer, as the Good God in opposition to Adonay, the Christian God in His character of the benefactor of humanity, and in other instances Satan, the same spirit, as the Principle of Evil.

This is evident from the various references to their deity adduced in the trials of persons accused of this heresy. In both cases however, the devotees, whether of Lucifer or Satan, were obliged formally to renounce Christ, the Holy Ghost and the Christian God, before embracing the Devil faith which was the logical outgrowth of the Mazdean-Manichean Dualist doctrine of the double divinity. [1]

---

1. " Epiphanius gives an account of a sect of Heretics called Satanians. ' Satan, say they, is a very great and potent Person, and author of much Mischief. Why, therefore, should we not chiefly fly to him, and adore him, honour, and praise trim, that for our flattering worship he may do us no harm, but

The God of the witches seems to have been generally represented either as the double faced God Janus or the goat-headed Baphomet, the latter variously modified but usually bearing between the horns on its head the phallic emblem of a lighted candle.

Esoterically, this candle symbolized the sex-force or Kundalini risen to the pineal gland.

Cotton Mather stated that the witches " form themselves after the manner of Congregational Churches, " and M. A. Murray gives the following description of their leader :

" The Chief or supreme Head of each district was known to the recorders as the ' Devil '. Below him in each district, one or more officers — according to the size of the district — were appointed by the chief. The officers might be either men or women; their duties were to arrange for meetings, to send out notices, to keep the record of work done, to transact the business of the community, and to present new members. Evidently these persons also noted any likely convert, and either themselves entered into negotiations or reported to the Chief, who then took action as opportunity served. At the Esbats the officer appears to have taken command in the absence of the Grand Master ; at the Sabbaths the officers were merely heads of their own Covens, and were known as Devils or Spirits, though recognized as greatly inferior to the Chief. The principal officer acted as clerk at the Sabbath and entered the witches' report in his book ; if he were a priest or ordained minister, he often performed part of the religious service ; but the Devil

---

Pardon us as being his own servants ? ' Hence they call themselves Satanians. " Bishop Lavington, *The Moravians Compared and Detected,* p. 170.

himself always celebrated the mass or sacrament. "[2]

From Lemoine in *La Tradition*, published 1892, we learn that the garter is the distinctive mark of the witch leader, for a woman shared this honour with the Grand Master as the Grand Mistress and in some cases occupied the office of deacon.

Animal masks seem to have been a popular form of disguise adopted by the witches and wizards attending meetings, and this custom is probably responsible for many of the stories of witch lycanthropy.

Among other obscene and phallic witch-rites was the Black Mass, celebrated by a renegade priest upon the naked body of the adept for whose benefit it was performed. It symbolized the perversion of all the rites of the Catholic church. Black candles instead of white, inverted crosses, chalices containing the blood of new-born infants sacrificed for ritual purposes, urine for holy water, all these were part of the paraphernalia needed, according to historians, to propitiate the Prince of Darkness and his retinue of minor Devils. Besides evocations, casting of spells and sex-orgies, devil worship entailed such inanities as desecration of the hosts stolen from catholic churches and the kissing of the Grand Master (devil) on the tail or *membrum virile.*

Only hosts consecrated in Roman Catholic churches could serve for Black Mass purposes as it was essential, in order to achieve desecration, that the miracle of transubstantiation should have taken place. The host had actually to be, not merely to represent, the body and blood of Christ.

As regards the Black Mass, M. Emile Caillet makes

---

2. Margaret Alice Murray, *The Witch-cult in Western Europe,* p. 186.

the following astute observation in *La Prohibition de L'Occulte,* page 113.

" One may wonder if it was not in order to canalize such an overflow of sacrilege that the church, in the Middle Ages, tolerated the ' Feast of Fools ', a last vestige of the saturnalia of Ancient Greece. Before the altar, upon the communion table, writes C. Lenient,[3] were spread pell mell, grilled hogs puddings, sausages, playing cards and dice. For perfumes, old shoe-leather burned in the incense burners. Even the text of the divine service... becomes the butt of an interminable parody..., a confused jumble of jests and nonsense, of grotesque alleluias and latin buffooneries.... an indescribable charivari of cat calls, cries and whistles. etc. A few days afterwards the church, purged of all these impurities, washed and cleaned, resumed its usual appearance ; God again became master of His Altar ; the flood of human folly had passed ! "

In 1484, Pope Innocent VIII issued a bull against the craft couched in the following terms :

" It has come to our ears that numbers of both sexes do not avoid to have intercourse with demons, Incubi and Succubi; and that by their sorceries, and by their incantations, charms and conjurations, they suffocate, extinguish, and cause to perish the births of women, the increase of animals, the corn of the ground, the grapes of the vineyard and the fruit of the trees, as well as men, women, flocks, herds, and other various kinds of animals, vines and apple trees, grass, corn and other fruits of the earth ; making and procuring that men and women, flocks and herds and other animals shall suffer and be tormented both from within and without, so that men beget not, nor women conceive ;

---

[3] *La Satire en France au Moyen-Age,* p. 422.

and they impede the conjugal action of men and women. "

Eliphas Levi, in *Histoire de la Magie*, (p. 116) gives the following explanation of the supposed origin of " elementals " known by spiritists as " dwellers on the threshold. "

He states that; " according to the best authorities, these spirits (larves) possess an ethereal body formed of the vapour of blood. That is why they seek blood and why they were supposed, formerly, to feed on the smoke of sacrifices.

" They are the Incubi and Succubi, the monstrous children of impure dreams.

" When sufficiently condensed to be visible, they are only a vapour coloured by the reflection of a picture and, having no independent life, they imitate the life of him who evokes them as the shadow does the body.

" They generally manifest around the persons of idiots and beings devoid of morality whose isolation has led them to develop irregular habits.

" Owing to the feeble cohesion of the parts of their fantastic bodies, they fear the open air, fire, and above all, the point of swords, and as they live only by the life of those who have created or evoked them, they become the vaporous appendices of the real body of their parents. So it can happen that an injury inflicted on them might actually react upon the parent body, as the unborn child is really wounded or disfigured by an impression made upon its mother.

" These elementals draw the vital heat from persons in good health and quickly exhaust those who are weak.

" They are the source of the stories of vampires, stories only too true and periodically recurrent, as everyone knows.

" That is why one feels a chill of the atmosphere when approaching mediums who are persons obsessed by these spirits that never manifest in the presence of anyone able to unveil the mystery of their monstrous birth. They are children of an exalted imagination or unbalanced mentality... "

In politics, throughout the ages, witchcraft, as practised by subversive sects, has played a prominent part.

Illustrations of this are to be found in the case of the North Berwick Witches who were tried for treason in 1592 when their Devil or Grand Master, Francis Stewart, Earl of Bothwell, attempted to supplant James VI as King of Scotland. The Black Masses held by the infamous Abbe Guibourg for Madame de Montespan, with the object of regaining for her the favour of Louis XIV, are famous in history.

Eliphas Levi, the great initiate, has thus defined the aims of magic and witchcraft :

" To deceive the peoples for the purpose of exploiting them, to enslave them and delay their progress, or prevent it even if possible, such is the crime of black magic. "[4]

Proof of the foregoing devil worship and contact with spirits or devils is found in history, even as late as 1819 when we read that; " The Devil met Margaret Nin-Gilbert etc... " Studying the history of the Mopses in 1761 we find its Grand Masters, Grand Mistresses and Deacons, adorned with the distinctive " Garter " of the witch, performing the ceremonial of kissing the Devil's tail as part of the ritual of 18th Century Masonry. The "Coven" of the Middle Ages is the Masonic ' Lodge " of today, but the " Craft " remains the " Craft ".

---

[4] Eliphas Levi, *La Clef des Grands Mystères*, p. 308.

CHAPTER XIII

THE GNOSTICS

(The Heretics)

Gnosticism, like the Ancient Mysteries, was founded on Spiritism, their mediums giving instructions purporting to come from the Gods or Spirits.

In the Christian era, one of the earliest prominent Gnostics was Simon Magus, a Jew and an adept of the sect of Dosithians.

This article is composed of certain passages transcribed verbatim from *The Moravians Compared and Detected* by Lavington. (See pages XIII, 59, 105 to 109 and 133).

Among the successive disciples of Simon Magus were — Basilides, Valentinius, Carpocrates, Marcus, Marcion, Cerdo, Epiphanes, Montanus, etc., and according to Bishop Lavington, " these were Heretics, and, that they were Heretics of the worst Kind that ever defiled and disgraced the Christian Name, is allowed by all Denominations of Christians.

" Some of these lived in the first Century and even in the Apostles' Days, but the second Century was most fruitful in the Production of this Generation of Vipers and we must receive our Knowledge of their abominable Tenets from the early Ecclesiastical writers such as Irenoeus... Epiphanius... Theodoret... and many others...

" The Spirit among these Heretics went by different Names, Ogdoas, Sophia, Terra, Jerusalem and Lord in the masculine Gender : — Is particularly called both Prunicus and Prunica ; Mother Prunica the bold, and Mother Achamoth : — Their Mother is a Woman from a Woman. Sometimes their celestial Beings are neither Male nor Female : sometimes interchangeably either male or female.

" Such was the Excellency of their Knowledge and Illumination, who arrogantly styled themselves Gnostics, that they are superior to Peter or Paul or any of Christ's other disciples. They only, have drunk up the supreme Knowledge, are above Principalities and Powers, secure of Salvation : and for that very Reason are free to debauch Women, or indulge all manner of Licentiousness — This Knowledge is of itself perfect Redemption, and sufficient. " — " Simon Magus, who taught that his Harlot Helena was the Holy Ghost, instituted certain foul and infamous Mysteries inexpressibly filthy and had Assemblies equally filthy to celebrate them : These being the Mysteries of Life, and of the most perfect Knowledge. "

" The Carpocratians... practised all manner of Philtres and Enchantments : in order, as they speak, to have full Power in all Things, and to do whatever they please. — Hence they spend their Time in Luxury and Pleasure and bodily Enjoyments : nor ever come among us, unless it be to ensnare unstable Souls, and entice them into their impious Doctrine. "

" For this end they taught Incontinence to be obligatory, as a Law : and not only lawful, but necessary to Salvation ; not only compatible with the Saviour's Religion, but an essential Part of it : and those were the best Men, who in the common Opinion were the most vicious.

" The Carpocratians grew to that Degree of Madness, that being unable to conceal their Debaucheries, they made Incontinence to be a Law " — " Prodicus added this to the Tenets of Carpocrates, that Fornication ought to be open and public, and the Use of Women common. For which Reason, in their Feasts, the Candles were extinguished, each lay with the Women, as Chance appointed; and they called this Lasciviousness a mystical Initiation, a mystical Communion. "

" Clemens Alex. gives a long Passage from the Writings of Epiphanes, contending for a Community of Women, as being the Law of Heaven; and that Men and Women ought no more to be confined in their Amours than other Animals. ' For ', says Epiphanes, ' he hath implanted a strong and vehement Desire in Man of propagating his Species ; which neither Law, nor Custom, nor any Thing else, can abolish ; for jt is the Decree of God. '

" The Ophites, or Cainites, say, that Cain was the Progeny of a higher Principality than Abel; and they confess that Esau, Corah, and the Sodomites, and all such, were their Relations : — That Vulva was the Creator of the Universe ; and that none could be saved, unless he passed thro' all. So also Carpocrates taught. — Most of the Gnostics, with wonderful Artifice of Improbity, taught what is not fit to be named, in the promiscuous Use of Women, and to roll in all manner of filthy Communication. The Banquet being over, says the Man to the Woman, Arise, and shew thy Love to a Brother. So they proceed to Copulation ". — " Some of them, by a most horrible Abuse of Scripture, apply the Words, Give to every one that asketh thee, towards enticing the Women. " — " Take hold, says Isidorus, of some robust woman, that you be not plucked away from Grace ; and when you have spent your seminal Fire, you may pray with a good Conscience. ".

" Both Epiphanius, and Irenoeus before him, say of the Founder of the Nicolaitans : ' Being ashamed of his own Remissness, he audaciously pronounced, that no one, who was not lascivious every Day could be Partaker of eternal life. ' •— " Therefore those Gnostics, after a Debauchery, were used to boast of their Happiness, as having done a meritorious Thing : and when they had their Will on a complying Female, they told her ' she was now a pure Virgin' ; though she was daily corrupted, and for many Years together. "

" This may be a proper Place to introduce The Confession of Epiphanius; who in his Youth had fallen into the Gnostic Heresy ; whence he received what he writes concerning them, from the professed Teachers' own Mouths : when their Women, one in particular, used all their Arts to debauch him. But by the Help of the divine Grace he overcame their temptations. I was then, says he, reproached by those pestilent Women, who thus scoffingly talked with each other, ' We would have saved this Youth, but not being able, we have suffered him to perish in the Hands of the Principalities. ' For the most beautiful among them makes herself the bait; and those whom she enticeth, she is said not to destroy, but to deliver. Whence the handsomest are used to upbraid those who are less so ; ' I am an elect Vessel, able to save those whom I attempt; which you have not Power to do. '

The most beautiful of them were employed to seduce me ; but God delivered me from their Wickedness ; so that, after reading their Books, I escaped from among them, and discovered the several Names of them to the

Bishops of those Parts ; and near eighty of them were sent into Banishment. "

" The Valentinians, says Irenoeus, being in Love with certain Women, would, without a Blush, seduce them from their Husbands, and make them their own Wives. Others of them, seemingly modest at first, pretended to live with them as Sisters ; and in Process of Time were discovered, Sister being found pregnant by Brother. "

" And to aggravate their wickedness, they esteemed Copulation as a most sacred Mystery, known only to themselves ; and which the Profane were not allowed to put in Practice : What was abominable in others being highly meritorious in themselves. For, saith Irenoeus again, ' They have this Grace descending to them from the unspeakable and unnameable Copulation above. For which Reason they ought always to be meditating on the Mystery of Copulation.' And thus they persuade silly People, addressing them in Discourse, ' Whoever is in the World and of the World, and mingleth with a Woman is not of the Truth, nor shall pass into the Truth ; because he mingleth in Concupiscence. ' Therefore Continence, say they, is necessary to us natural Men ; but by no means to themselves, who are spiritual and perfect; among whom the Seed, small from above, is perfected here. " Compare Tertullian, p. 261.

" To quote Clemens Alexandrinus. ' I will bring in to open Light your most secret Mysteries : not ashamed to speak what you are not ashamed to worship " i. e. the secrets of both Sexes. ' For I may well call them Atheists, who impudently worship those Parts, which modesty forbids to mention. "

CHAPTER XIV

LAMAISM

Lamaism was founded about 407 A. D. by a Bodisatva called, it is said, Chomschim, in Chinese Boyan-chi-yin, (the voice which reflects the world) on the mountain Bouthala around which was built the sacred city of Lhassa.

Lamaism is not only a religion, it is a theistic government.

In 1206, when Tibet was conquered by Ghengis Khan (Mongol), Buddhism became the established religion but in 1368 when Tibet fell from the hands of the Mongols into those of the Chinese, Lamaism, losing its temporal power, became merely a religion, its spiritual power remaining however the same and the religion of more than 250 million men.

The Lamas are Priests of Buddha among the Mongols and Tibetans, but Lamaism is not orthodox Buddhism.

Gautama Buddha, the founder of Buddhism, laid down the following laws governing the attainment of Nirvana (state of not being). Their enumeration will serve to show how Buddhism and Lamaism differ.

According to that great teacher the ten obstacles which prevent people from attaining the supreme liberation are : —

1. The belief in the " Ego ",
2. Doubt,
3. The belief in the efficacity of rites and ceremonies,
4. Sensual desires,
5. Anger,
6. The wish to live in a world less coarse than our own,
7. The wish to live in a more subtle world than our own,
8. Pride,
9. Agitation,
10. Ignorance.

The few quotations given hereafter from the very remarkable books of Madame Alexandra David-Neel can only serve to show students of these subjects the great value of the books themselves.

Quoting *Bhagavad Gita,* she writes :

" Orthodox Buddhism denied the existence of a permanent soul which transmigrated, and considered this theory as the most pernicious of errors but the great majority of Buddhists have fallen back into this old belief of the Hindus concerning the ' jiva ' (self) which periodically changes its old body for a new one, as we cast off old clothes for new. " [2]

The Tibetan clergy comprises a theocratic aristocracy the members of which are called Lamas, " tulkous ".

" According to popular belief, a tulkou is either the reincarnation of a saint or dead sage or else the incarnation of a superhuman being, a god or a demon.

In answer to a question she put to the Dalai-Lama on the definition of the word " tulkou " Madame David-Neel quotes him as saying : — "A Bodhisatva is the base from which can spring numberless magical forms. The force he engenders by a perfect concentration of thought enables him simultaneously to show a phantom similar to himself in thousands and thousands of worlds. He is not only able to create human forms, but every other kind as well, even to inanimate objects such as houses, enclosures, forests, roads, bridges, etc. etc. and he can produce atmospheric phenomena, as well as the elixir of immortality which quenches all thirst. (This expression, he explained, was to be taken both in a literal and symbolic sense.)[3]

---

[2] David-Neel, *Parmi les Mystiques et les Magiciens du Tibet,* pp. 110-111.

" In fact, concluded the Dalai-Lama, his power to create Magic forms is limitless. "

" The Kandhomas are reincarnated women, fairies, and may either be married or in holy orders. "[4]

The usual method employed for locating the new body appropriated by an old soul is the following : —

" A child answering to the prescribed conditions is discovered and a lama diviner is consulted. Should he pronounce in favour of the candidate the following form of trial takes place : — Some personal belongings of the deceased lama are mixed with other similar ones, and the child must point out the first, thus proving that he recognizes the things that were his in his former existence.[5]

" This system assumed its present form towards the year 1650 when the fifth Grand Lama Lobzang Gyatso, having become sovereign of Tibet, but wishing to acquire a higher dignity, proclaimed himself the reincarnation (avatar) of Tchenrezigs, a dignitary of the Mahayanist Pantheon. Simultaneously he established his master as Grand Lama of the monastery of Trachilhumpo, proclaiming him the reincarnation of Eupamed, a Mystic Buddha of whom Tchenrezigs was the spiritual son.

---

[3] David-Neel, *op. cit.,* p. 115.
[4] *Ibid.,* p. 111.
[5] *Ibid.,* p. 118.

" The example thus given by the lama-king stimulated the creation of tulkous. Soon all monasteries made a point of having at their head the incarnation of some celebrated personage. Thus the Dalai-Lama, the political head of Tibet today, is said still to be a reincarnation of Tchenrezigs and the present Trachi Lama one of Eupamed. " [6]

The palace of the Dalai-Lamas is the monastery of Gahlden situated some twenty kilometres from Lhassa. It was founded by Tsong Khapa in the XV century. Tsong Khapa, the reformer, forbade marriage and the use of fermented beverages to the clergy. His followers called Gelougspas are known as the Yellow Sect and their favourite God is Jigsdjied, the destroyer (the terrible), another version of the Hindu god Siva. The Red Sect, the Sakyapas, those distinguished by their red hats, are their religious opponents.

As regards the Tibetan gods and the ritual pertaining to their worship Madame David-Neel gives us the following most illuminating description :

" To the respiratory exercises repeated several times a day the recluse often joins meditation-contemplation assisted by Kyilkhors.

" A Kyilkhor, or magic circle, is a kind of diagram drawn on paper or stuff or engraved on metal, stone or wood... Deities or lamas are generally represented on them by little pyramids of paste called ' torma. ' [7]

" Kyilkhors are also designed with coloured powder on boards or on the floor, but only such persons as have received a special initiation may compose or draw them. Each Kyilkhor, moreover, requires a particular initiation and that erected by a non-initiate would remain a dead thing impossible to animate and powerless. An advanced student, wishing to evoke a Bodhisatva or deity, seeks to animate the Kyilkhor which has hitherto only served as a focus for concentration.

---

[6] David-Neel, *op. cit.,* p. 110.

[7] *Ibid.,* p. 259.

" The Hindus endow magical diagrams as well as the statues of deities with life before worshipping them. The object of this rite, called prana-pratishtha, is to convey to the inanimate object, by means of psychic currents, the energy of the worshipper. The life thus infused into the latter is kept up by the daily cult which is rendered it, for it lives on the concentration of thought which has given it birth. Should it suddenly be deprived of this subtle food, the living soul within it will perish and die of inanition the object reverting to its former condition of inert matter. "[8]

The Tibetan mystics animate their Kyilkhor by a similar method, but they do not aim at making it an object of worship and the material representation of the Kyilkhor is abolished when, after a certain amount of practice, it becomes purely a mental image.

A tradition of the Kahgyudpas relates that the founder of their sect, Marpa, was blamed by his master (guru) Narota for having paid homage first to the Kyilkhor.

" It is I who constructed the Kyilkhor ", declared Narota. " Its life and energy were infused in it by me. Without me, those figures would be only inert objects. The gods that inhabit it are born of my spirit therefore, it is to me that homage is primarily due. "[9]

---

8. David-Neel, *op. cit.,* p. 260.

9. David-Neel, *Initiations Lamaiques,* p. 59.

" According to Tibetan occultists, these beings, (the gods) have acquired a kind of real existence due to the innumerable thoughts which have been concentrated on them [10].

" According to the Tibetans, during the celebration of a rite, the thoughts of the officiating evocator, concentrated on the deities who ' exist already ', cause these to become more powerful and more real for him. By identifying himself with them the evocator establishes contact with an accumulation of energy infinitely greater than that which he alone might generate. "[11]

Thus we must conclude that the gods of Eastern Magic correspond to what our occidental scientists call thought-forms. That these thought-forms can be projected and reabsorbed into the person of their creator is a theory with which all students of spiritism and psychic science are familiar, but that they can detach from their makers and lead separate existences, empowered for good or evil by the collective thought-force of their worshippers, is an idea with which the western world is still unfamiliar.

" Gods, Demons, the whole universe is a mirage, a fantasy of the brain issuing therefrom and resolvant thereto. " [12]

" Thus the aim of the teaching is to bring the student to understand that the world and all its phenomena are but phantasms born of our own imagination. This in short is the fundamental teaching of the Mystics of Tibet. " [13]

---

[10] David-Neel, *op. cit.,* p. 103.
[11] *Ibid.,* p. 104.
[12] *Ibid.,* p. 280.
[13] *Ibid.,* p. 262.

Among the various tricks taught to initiates and described by Madame David-Neel in her books are: —

	Pages		
Yoga breathing exercises	119	in	*Initiations Lamaiques.*
Levitation	209	in	*Parmi les Mystiques et les Magiciens du Thibet.*
Loung-gom (fast walking)	211		»
Toumo (self heating)	219		»
Telepathy	231		»

Buddha who, after a thorough investigation of them, rejected the physical practices of the Brahmins, pays little heed to the breathing exercises of Yoga, in his spiritual teaching.[14]

Madame David-Neel tells the following anecdote of the Great Master.

" One day Buddha, travelling with one of his disciples, met an emaciated Yogi alone in a hut in the middle of the forest.

The master stopped, enquiring how long the ascetic had lived in that place practising such austerities. " Twenty-five years ", answered the Yogi.

" And what results have you obtained after such dire efforts " ? queried the Buddha further.

" I am able to cross a river walking on the water ", proudly declared the anchorite : —

" Ah 1 My poor friend! " answered the Sage sympathetically, " have you really wasted so much time for that, when for a pittance you can get taken across it on the ferry ! "

On page 157 of her remarkable book *Initiations Lamaiques* Madame David-Neel explains further the existence of another school of curious rites, presumably a development of degenerate Hindu Tantric Buddhism, to the practice of which may be ascribed much that seems objectionable in the Oriental occultism, which has filtered through to the Western world. There we are told that : — "A certain class of Tibetan occultists teach a method of semi-physical semi-psychic stimulation, which consists in such singular practices as that of causing the seminal flow, ejected in the course of sexual union, to be reabsorbed etc. etc. "

---

[14] David-Neel, *Initiations Lamaiques,* p. 116.

Tibet is indeed the land of Demons where Official Lamaism competes with Unofficial Sorcery, and Magic, white and black, still remains the law of the land.

CHAPTER XV

THE YEZIDEES (DEVIL WORSHIPPERS)

The sect of the Yezidees was founded by Sheik Adi in the fifth century.

Mr. W. B. Seabrook's observations on the Yezidees, as recorded in his book, *Adventures in Arabia,* form a basis for the study of the beliefs of this sect.

According to his informant, the Yezidee faith is briefly this :[1]

" God created seven spirits ' as a man lighteth one lamp after another ', and the first of these spirits was Satan, whom God made supreme ruler of the earth for a period of ten thousand years. And because Satan was supreme master of the earth, those who dwelt on it could prosper only by doing him homage and worshipping him.

" Since the true name was forbidden ", Mechmed Hamdi told me, " they referred to Shaitan as Melek Taos (Angel Peacock) and worshipped him in the form of a brass bird . . . ."

" While the name of Shaitan was forbidden ", he said, " so much so that if a Yezidee hears it spoken, their law commands him either to kill the man who uttered it or kill himself — yet we could talk as freely with them about Melek Taos as we could to a Christian about Jesus. "

---

[1] Seabrook, *Adventures in Arabia,* pp. 310 and 325.

A priest of the cult also volunteered the following information to Mr. Seabrook on the Yezidee divinity.

" Our difference from all other religions is this — that we know God is so far away that we can have no contact with Him — and He, on his part, has no knowledge or interest of any sort concerning human affairs. It is useless to pray to him or worship Him. He cares nothing about us.

" He has given the entire control of this world for ten thousand years to the bright spirit Melek Taos, and Him, therefore, we worship. Moslems and Christians are wrongly taught that he whom we call Melek Taos is the spirit of evil. We know that this is not true. He is the spirit of power and the ruler of this world. At the end of the ten thousand years of his reign — of which we are now in the third thousand — he will re-enter paradise as the chief of the Seven Bright Spirits, and all his true worshippers will enter paradise with him. "

The Grand Priest of the order, the " Mir ", receives one-seventh part of the harvests of the land. He is the arbiter of all religious matters and under him rank seven ecclesiastical orders.

The doctrine of the Yezidees is contained in three sacred books *The Black Book, The Revelation* and *The Contract with the Devil;* but a knowledge of reading and writing is restricted to the priests of the first order and is classified by the sect as a serious sin.

CHAPTER XVI

ORTHODOX ISLAM

The Arabian peninsula was the home of nomads and mountaineers when, in the seventh century, Mahomet arose as a self styled Prophet and the creator of Islamism. The doctrine of Islam has three dogmas : —

1. Monotheism.
2. Belief in the Prophet, namely Mahomet.
3. The law of retribution.

The sacred book of Islamism, the Koran, was devoid of mystic teaching. The Figh, for every believer, is the code of morals and obligations such as fast, prayer, pilgrimage to Mecca, etc. Mysticism was interjected into Islamism by Sufism.

Mahomet aimed at the establishment of a religion which, he declared, was revealed to him during periods of trance which he frequently underwent. He was determined to impose this religion on all the Arabs and, through much bloodshed, he succeeded in stamping out the Koraishites from whom he took Mecca.

The death of Mahomet was the signal for disruption among his followers and innumerable divisions both political and religious, from the history of the Arabs during their periods of conquest which began immediately after the death of Mahomet during the Khalifate of Omar (634-644).

CHAPTER XVII

UNORTHODOX ISLAM, THE ISHMAELITES, THE LODGE OF CAIRO

Manicheism was not the only secret association that sprang from the initiations of the Magi. In the seventh century of our era we meet with similar societies, possessing an influence not limited to the regions in which they arose, variations of one single thought, which aimed at combining the venerable doctrines of Zoroaster with Christian belief. Of these societies or sects the following may be mentioned : the followers of Keyoumerz; the worshippers of Servan, certain Zoroastrians, so-called " Dualists " ; Gnostics and, lastly, the followers of Mastek, the most formidable and disastrous of all, preaching universal equality and liberty, the irresponsibility of man, and the community of property and women.

The Arabs having rendered themselves masters of Persia in the seventh century, the sects of that country set to work to spread their tenets among Islam in order to undermine it.

This is corroborated by Heckethorn who writes : " The Persian sects examined the Koran, pointed out its contradictions, and denied its divine origin. And so there arose in Islamism that movement which attacks dogmas, and destroys faith, and substitutes for blind belief free enquiry. "[1]

In Persia and in Mesopotamia had spread the new rationalism, the philosophical heresy of the Mutazilites (schismatics) exposed by Hassan al-Basri.

The Jew Abdallah Ibn Saba [2] presented himself as the prophet of the future Imam, who was to manifest. He meant to overthrow the caliphate and to uphold the rights of Mahomet al-Hanafi, the son of Ismael, the descendant of the prophet by his daughter Fatima, the wife of Ali. Thus was founded the Shi'a sect.

The Fatmite dynasty (from Fatima, daughter of Mahomet) was founded in 909 A. D. when Ahmed-Said, the son of a Jewess who had married the Shi'a chief al-Hussain,[3] conquered Egypt and Syria, establishing the centre at Cairo. Declaring himself to be the long expected Imam, Said, on coming to power, assumed the name of Obaid Allah el-Mahdi. [4] The Fatmite dynasty lasted from 909 to 1171. Heckethorn informs us that " The Doial-Doat, or supreme missionary or judge, shared the power with the prince. [5]

" Meetings were held in the Lodge at Cairo, which contained many books and scientific instruments; science was the professed object, but the real aim was very different. The course of instruction was divided into nine degrees... the ninth degree... as the necessary result of the teaching of all the former, taught that nothing was to be believed, and that everything was lawful.

---

1. Heckethorn, *Secret Societies of All Ages and Countries, vol.* I, p. 162.
2. *Jewish Encyclopaedia,* Art. Abdallah Ibn Saba.
3. *Ibid.,* Art. Caliphs.
4. Mahdi-Messiah.
5. Heckethorn *op. cit.,* p. 165.

" Egypt, especially, seems as if predestined to be the birthplace of secret societies, of priests, warriors and fanatics. It is the region of mysteries... Cairo has succeeded the ancient Memphis, the doctrine of the Lodge of Wisdom that of the Academy of Heliopolis... The throne of the descendants of Fatima was to be surrounded with an army of assassins, a formidable body-guard; a mysterious militia was to be raised, that should spread far and wide the fame and terror of the caliphate of Cairo, and inflict fatal blows on the abhorred rule of Bagdad. The missionaries spread widely, and in Arabia and Syria, partisans were won, to whom the designs of the order were unknown, but who had with fearful solemnity sworn blind obedience. "

The Fatmites had received from the sect the mission of destroying, or at least of disrupting Islam. The successor of Obaid-Allah continued this work, having himself proclaimed a Shi'a while in reality he was sceptic. It was under the Caliph Hakim that the Druses came into being.

The Shi'a sects who recognized Mohammed al-Hanafi as the last living " Imam " were called Ismaelites or Septimans. From their midst sprang a secret body, the Khoja, which, in spite of persecution still exists in Persia and India, where its exoteric chief is the Anglicised Indian, the Aga Khan, whose followers are the moneylenders of Islam, a profession forbidden by Mahomet.

Still another Shi'a sect, the Duodecimans or Imanites, recognize Mohamed al-Muntazar the twelfth Imam.

Under the Fatmite Caliph Hakim, a new religion sprang out of Ismailism, that of the Druses, so called from its inventor, a certain Darosi. This religion differs little from Ismailism, except that it introduces the dogma of the incarnation of God himself on Earth, under the form of the Caliph Hakim.

When the Fatmite Caliph Mostansir ascended the throne, he re-established the Ismailian belief : and the Druses, driven from Egypt, took refuge in Lebanon, where they still exist.

CHAPTER XVIII

THE DRUSES

The Druses, as afore stated, are a gnostic sect among the Ismaelite Mahommedans. It was founded in the tenth century during the reign of the Fatimite Caliph al-Hakim Biambellalu.

The founder is usually recognised as Mohammed al Darazi or al Druzi (Nouchtegin ben Ismail al Bokhari) born near Bokhara cir. 960. He adopted the doctrine then preached by al-Hakim of the successive reincarnations of the divinity under human form [1] and wrote a treatise in which he established the continuous series of divine incarnations ending with the statement that the last living manifestation was al-Hakim, the Caliph of Egypt. So pleased was al-Hakim with the book that he called Mohammed al-Druzi to him, and gave him great authority in the conduct of affairs. From that time, al-Hakim who hitherto had been known as Biambellalu that is " the one governing by the order of God, changed his name to Biam-Eh meaning " the one governing by his own right. " He then caused himself to be worshipped as God. The public reading of Mohammed al-Druzi's book, in one of Cairo's mosques, •caused popular riots and its author was obliged to flee from Egypt. He took refuge in the mountains of Syria and made many proselytes by allowing his adepts the use of wine, condoning licentiousness and encouraging the propagation of ideas tending *to* the confiscation of property. Later, he returned to Egypt but was confronted by the power gained by one of his disciples, Hamza al-Hadi, who had become leader of the Druses there. In the conflict that ensued, Mohammed al Druzi took up arms against his rival and adversary and was killed in 1019.

---

[1] Compare with Lamaism.

Hamza, later, went to Syria and Lebanon and preached to the Druses the doctrine of al-Hakim such as prevailed in Egypt. Hamza was declared the prophet, the Imam of al-Hakim who, being the divine incarnation, will yet manifest himself to the Druses, be their Messiah and give them all earthly power. The sect is divided into three degrees: Profanes, Aspirants and Wise.

The Druses, from a political point of view, are divided into two parts, the Djumblatiehs and the Yezbekiehs and religiously they have their own rites, mysteries, and exoteric and esoteric doctrines. The high initiates or priests rule the people and through religious fanaticism have reduced the Druses to a state of theocrasy with all its attendant law of fear and numerous restrictions upon which theocratic power can alone be edified.

In his book on *Secret Societies,* Heckethorn comments on the similarity existing between the law of the Druses and that of the Jews whereby " to a brother, perfect truth and confidence are due but it is allowable, nay, a duty, to be false towards men of another creed. "

Subsequently, he draws yet another comparison between the Druses and the Freemasons and mentions the Masonic degrees of " The United Druses " and " Commanders of Lebanon ".

CHAPTER XIX

THE ASSASSINS

The Judeo-Shi'a sect of the Assassins or Hashishims was founded in 1090 by Hassan Sabah, a Persian, who had been initiated into Ismailism at Cairo, in the household of the Fatimite Caliph, al-Mostansir. He was known as " The Old Man " or rather " The Lord of the Mountain ". His influence in Egypt having excited the envy of many, he was sent into exile. Caliph al-Mustansir's " vizir was a Jew named Abu Mansur Sadakah ibn Yussuf ", [1] under whose protection Hassan traversed Persia as a missionary, preaching and making proselytes, and, having seized the fortress of Alamut, on the borders of Irak and Dilem, which he called the " House of Fortune ", he there established his rule.

The history of his time is full of his name. Kings in the very centre of Europe trembled at it; his powerful arm reached everywhere.

According to Heckethorn, " he reduced the nine degrees into which the adherents of the Lodge of Cairo were divided to seven, placing himself at the head, with title of Seydna or Sidna, whence the Spanish Cid, and the Italian Signore. The term Assassins is a corruption of Hashishim, derived from Hashish (Indian hemp) with which the chief intoxicated his followers when they entered on some desperate enterprise.[2]

---

[1] Von Hammer, *History of the Assassins.*

" To regulate the seven degrees he composed the Catechism of the Order. The first degree recommended to the missionary attentively to watch the disposition of the candidate, before admitting him to the order. The second impressed it upon him to gain the confidence of the candidate, by flattering his inclinations and passions ; the third, to involve him in doubts and difficulties by showing him the absurdity of the Koran ; the fourth, to exact from him a solemn oath of fidelity and obedience, with a promise to lay his doubts before his instructor ; and the fifth, to show him that the most famous men of Church and State belonged to the secret order. The sixth, called ' Confirmation ', enjoined on the instructor to examine the proselyte concerning the whole preceding course, and firmly to establish him in it. The seventh finally, called the ' Exposition of the Allegory ', gave the keys of the sect.

" The followers were divided into two great hosts, ' self-sacrificers ' and ' aspirants '. The first, despising fatigues, dangers, and tortures, joyfully gave their lives whenever it pleased the master, who required them either to protect himself or to carry out his mandates of death. "

According to the legend " the man selected by the lord to perform the dangerous exploit was first made drunk, and in this state carried into a beautiful valley where he was, on waking, surrounded by lovely sylph-like women who made him believe he was in Elysium ; but ere he wearied or became satiated with love and wine, he was once more made drunk, and in this state carried back to his own home. When his services were required, he was again sent for by the lord, who told him that he had once permitted him to enjoy paradise, and if he would do his bidding he could luxuriate in the same delights for the rest of his life. The dupe, believing that his master had the power to do all this, was ready to commit whatever crime was required of him. "

---

[2] Heckethorn, *Secret Societies of all Ages and Countries,* p. 168 *et seq.*

" Several Christian princes were suspected of conniving at the deeds of the Assassins. Richard of England is one of them ; and it has been the loyal task of English writers to free him from the charge of having instigated the murder of Conrad of Montferrat... There also existed for a long time a rumour that Richard had attempted the life of the King of France through Hassan and his Assassins. The nephew of Barbarossa, Frederick II, was excommunicated by Innocent II for having caused the Duke of Bavaria to be slain by the Assassins ; and Frederick II, in a letter to the King of Bohemia, accuses the Duke of Austria of having by similar agents attempted his life. "

The corruption of the Order of The Templars which brought about its downfall has been imputed by most historians to this sect which was suppressed in 1256, when the Mongolians, led by Prince Hulagu, attacked and overthrew them.

CHAPTER XX

THE KNIGHTS TEMPLAR

The first Knights Templar Order, founded in 1118 by Hugh de Payens, had 13 degrees. So has its modern successor; these are : —

BLUE DEGREES

1. Entered Apprentice.
2. Fellow Craft.
3. Master Mason.

CHAPTER DEGREES

4. Mark Mason.
5. Past Master.
6. Most Excellent Master.
7. Royal Arch.
8. Royal Master.
9. Select Master.
10. Super Excellent Master.
11. Knights of the Red Cross
12. Knights Templar.
13. Knights of Malta.

It is chronicled that several of the founders of the Templar Order were initiates in the sect of The Assassins.

Blanchard, writing of it, says : —

" During the middle ages, the most eminent warriors and noblemen of Europe entered its ranks. The Knights of the Temple became the bulwark of the Holy Land against the Saracens. France, England and other countries formed associations (Priories) of Templar Knights, each with its own Grand Master and other officers. Such great wealth was accumulated in the treasuries of the order that in the year 1185 its annual income represented a sum equal to thirty millions of dollars. The Templars were bankers and loaned money on their own terms. But wealth and prosperity naturally led to licentiousness, neglect of Templar law and in the end destruction. "[1]

Having embraced Gnosticism while in Palestine, and in touch with the sect of the Assassins, the Templar order degenerated, and some of its members, under the influence of that sect, were said to practice Phallicism or sex-worship and Satanism and to venerate " The Baphomet ", the idol of the Luciferians. The crime of Sodomy was a rite of Templar initiation.

It is here interesting to note that the Phallus holds the lowest rank in Brahmin theology for, in countries where the people are virtually enslaved by superstition, this kind of heresy is useful to the ruling classes.

Morris thus summarizes the fall of the Templars. " In the year 1307, the Grand Master of the order, Jacques de Molay, was arrested in Paris with sixty of his knights and imprisoned upon charges of idolatry and other crimes. Shortly afterward, all the Knights Templar in France were put in prison in Paris. May 12, 1310, fifty-four of them were burnt alive. March 18, 1314, the Grand Master, with three of his most

---

1. Blanchard, *Knight Templarism Illustrated.*

eminent officers, suffered in like manner. The great possessions of the order were now confiscated and the society suppressed both by the Pope and the leading monarchs of Europe. "[2]

In England, the Knights Templar were dissolved in the reign of Edward II, and after the grant of their properties to the Knights Hospitallers, these in their turn were dissolved by Henry VIII.

After the death of Molay, the Knights Templar found a protector in King Dinis II of Portugal who reformed the order in 1317, under the name Knights of Christ.

A complete bibliography of literature both in print and in manuscript, dealing with the subject of the Knights Templar has been compiled by M. Dessubré and the student is referred to his book : *Bibliographie de I Ordre des Templiers.*

---

2. Morris' Dic., *Art. Templar Knight.*

CHAPTER XXI

KNIGHTS OF MALTA

The Knights of St. John of Jerusalem, or Hospitallers of St. John, afterward called Knights of Rhodes and finally Knights of Malta, were founded about the commencement of the Crusades, as a military and religious order.[1]

[1] Mackey's Lexicon, Art. *Knights of Malta.*

CHAPTER XXII

THE ROSICRUCIANS

Speculation has been rife as to the origin of the Rosicrucians, and the many fables and legends connected with the subject have but little historical value.

Owing to the great discrepancy between the information contained in the following article and that given in the more modern editions of the Encyclopaedia Britannica, it has been deemed advisable to reprint the former. (See *Enc. Brit.*, 3rd Edition, Vol. 16, year MDCCXCVII (1797) Edinburgh. Bell and Macfarquhar.)

" Rosicrucians, a name assumed by a sect or cabal of hermetical philosophers ; who arose, as it has been said, or at least became first taken notice of in Germany, in the beginning of the fourteenth century. They bound themselves together by a solemn secret, which they all swore inviolably to preserve : and obliged themselves, at their admission into the order, to a strict observance of certain established rules. They pretended to know all sciences, and chiefly medicine : whereof they published themselves the restorers. They pretended to be masters of abundance of important secrets, and, among others, that of the philosopher's stone : all which they affirmed to have received by tradition from the ancient Egyptians, Chaldeans, the Magi, and Gymnosophists.

They have been distinguished by several names, accommodated to the several branches of their doctrine. Because they pretend to protect the period of human life, by means of certain nostrums, and even to restore youth, they were called *Immortals* ; as they pretended to know all things, they have been called *Illuminati;* and because they have made no appearance for several years, unless the sect of Illuminated which lately started up on the continent derives its origin from them, they have been called the Invisible Brothers. Their society is frequently signed by the letters F. R. C. which some among them interpret fratres roris cocti; it being pretended that the matter of the philosopher's stone is dew concocted, exalted, etc. Some, who are no friends to free-masonry, make the present flourishing society of free-masons a branch of Rosicrucians ; or rather the Rosicrucians themselves, under a new name or relation, viz. as retainers to building. And it is certain, there are some free-masons who have all the characters of Rosicrucians ; but how the aera and original of masonry, and that of Rosicrucianism here fixed from Nadaeus, who has written expressly on the subject, conflict, we leave others to judge.......... Notwithstanding the pretended antiquity of the Rosicrucians, it is probable that the alchemists, Paracelsists,[1] or fire-philosophers, who spread themselves through almost all Europe about the close of the 16th century, assumed about this period the obscure and ambiguous title of Rosicrucian brethren, which commanded at first some degree of respect, as it seemed to be borrowed from the arms of Luther, which were a cross placed upon a rose. But the denomination evidently appears to be derived from the science of chemistry. It is not compounded, says Motheim, as many imagine of the two words *rosa* and *crux,* which signify rose and cross, but of the latter of these words, and the Latin *ros,* which signifies dew. . . . At the head of these fanatics were Robert Fludd, an English physician, Jacob Behmen, and Michael Mayer ; but if rumour may be credited, the present Illuminated have a head of higher rank. The common principles, which serve as a kind of centre of union to the Rosicrucian society, are the following : They all maintain that the dissolution of bodies, by the power of fire, is the only way by which men can arrive at true wisdom, and come to discern the first principles of things. They all acknowledge a certain analogy and harmony between the powers of nature and the doctrines of religion ; and believe that the Deity governs the kingdom of grace by the same laws with which he rules the kingdom of nature ; and hence they are led to use chemical denominations to express the truth of religion. They all hold that there is a sort of divine energy, or soul, diffused through the frame of the universe, which some call the argheus, others the universal spirit, and which others mention under different appellations. They all talk in the most superstitious manner of what they call the signatures of things, of the power of the stars, over all corporeal beings, and their particular influence upon the human race, of the efficacy of magic, and the various ranks and orders of demons — These demons they divide into two orders, sylphs and gnomes. "[2]

---

[1] Followers of Theophrastus Bombastus von Hohenheim (1493-1541).

---

[2] Whereas the article mentions only two kinds of demons tne Rose Croix are credited with recognizing four different species accredited to each of the four elements : Earth spirits 77 Gnomes, Fire spirits — Salamanders, Water spirits — Undines, Air spirits — Sylphs.

This article having been written in 1747 only hinted at what the Rose Croix might have been. Subsequent research upon the organization of the Fraternity, its tenets and its achievements, shows it to have been a medium for the propagation of Gnosticism and a centre for political activities. Before it conquered Freemasonry, which was officially instituted in 1717, many names were already associated intimately with this esoteric organization. Among others were Faustus Socinius, Cesare Cremonini, Michael Maier, Valentin Andrea, Thomas Vaughan (Philaletes), Charles Blount, Frederich Helvetius, Richard Simon, and Theophilus Desaguliers.

It is claimed that Faustus Socinius, named after Faustus, the Manichee, nephew of Lelius Socinius, whose teacher was Camillo Renato, was an intimate of Rosicrucianism and the founder of the Socinians.

Catholics and Protestants alike opposed Faustus Socinius in his efforts to graft a secret cult on the existing orthodox religions, and in 1598, the people of Cracovia, revolted by his doctrines, pillaged his house, burned his books and manuscripts and almost massacred their author. He had sworn hatred to the church and busied himself in founding an association the aims of which were to be subversive to all its teachings, and two years before his death, he was obliged to take refuge from his enemies with one Abraham Blonski.

The membership of the Rose Croix was composed of Alchemists, Astrologers and Spiritists whose quest was the search for a process for transmuting base metals into gold and the secret of life. To most of these " generation was the root principle of Achemy. "[3]

The order of the Rose Croix revealed itself in 1614 with the appearance of two books, *Fama Fraternitatis* and the *Confessio* attributed to Valentin Andrea giving the legend of the travels of Christian Rosenkreutz.

---

[3] Charlotte Fell Smith, *John Dee.*

According to Charles T. MacClenachan 33°, Historian, Grand Lodge State of New York, this same legend had appeared as the work of Raymond Lulli, who died in 1315.

In this legend, translated into English in 1616 by Robert Fludd, a symbolic personage called Christian Rosenkreuz, destined to live 106 years on earth, travelled in the East where he studied the Cabala and, on his return to his native Germany, he revealed to three disciples the secret of secrets, the great secret of theosophy. [4] Finally, he retired to a cave to finish his days in solitude, dying in 1484 at the age of 106. His disciples came, enshrouded him and disappeared. His grave was to be unknown for six times twenty years at the end of which period it was to become the hearth of the light destined to illuminate the world at the time appointed by God. In 1604, chance brought men to this cave. On entering, great was their surprise to find it resplendent with a bright light. It contained an altar bearing upon a copper plate the inscription " Living, I reserved this light for my grave. " One mysterious figure was accompanied by this epigram " Never vacant ". A second figure " The Yoke of the Law ". A third figure " The Liberty of the Gospels ". A fourth " The Glory of the Whole God ". The hall still contained lamps burning without fuel, mirrors of various shapes and boks. Upon the wall was written " In six times twenty years I will be discovered ". The prophecy was fulfilled, adds the fable, by way of conclusion.

• Fire, alias Kundalini, alias sex-force.

The movement was greatly furthered by the impulse given it when, after the appearance of the *Fama Fraternitatis* and *Confessio,* a German Alchemist, Michael Maier, an English Physician, Robert Fludd and a Pietist, Julius Sperber, wrote treatises in defence or explanation of the order of the Rose Croix.

It has repeatedly been stated that Michael Maier, who frequently visited England, was a friend of Robert Fludd. He was the author of *Themis Aurea* and *Silentium post Clamores,* both Rosicrucian works. His political influence may be judged from his career. Physician to Rudolf II, he was created by him Count of the Palatinate, and acted as adviser to his sovereign. In 1609, Rudolf II issued an Imperial Charter granting religious liberty to the Moravians.[5]

Masonic authorities state that Maier, as a Rosicrucian, changed his official title to *Summus Magister,* Sovereign Master, which is that used by all his successors and borne by the principal Socinian Rose-Croix documents, dating from the time of Faustus Socinius to that of Johann Wolff, which are preserved in the Sovereign Patriarchal Council of Hamburg. (That is the Supreme Jewish Lodge secretly affiliated to International Masonry.)

In his book *Themis Aurea,* written in 1616 and 1617 and printed in 1618, Maier, the Grand Master, refers to a resolution passed at a meeting in 1617 in which it was formally agreed that the Brotherhood of the Rose Croix must maintain the strictest secrecy for a hundred years. On October 31 1617, the Convention of the Seven at Magdebourg had indeed agreed to qualify its members during the ensuing one hundred years

---

5. Hastings, *Encyclopaedia of Religions and Ethics.* Art. Hussites.

of secrecy as " The Invisibles ". It had renewed its oath to destroy the church of Jesus Christ and had decreed that, in the year 1717, it would transform the fraternity into an association which could carry on a more or less open propaganda, while adopting such meassures of prudence as might then be deemed expedient by the leaders of the sect. Finally, the Seven adopted definitely, as being sufficiently original to appeal to the popular imagination, Valentin Andrea's curious story of the Rose Croix which had been secretly printted in Venice towards 1613.

Robert Fludd was the author of *Tractatus Apologeticus* (1617) and *Clavis Philosophiae et Alchymiae* (1633). He was greatly helped in the foundation of the Rose Croix order in England by Francis Bacon, author of *Nova Atlantis* [6] (1624).

Valentin Andrea to whom, as we have seen, are ascribed the works *Fama* and *Confessio,* as well as *Chemycal Nuptials,* had, in 1640, been appointed preacher to the Duke of Brunswick Wolfenbuttel, who was soon to make him his chaplain.

To those who know the important part played by a Duke of Brunswick during the French Revolution, this entrance of the Brunswick family into the sect is very interesting. As a Rosicrucian, Andrea was the teacher of Comenius (Amos Kominsky), who frequently visited England during his mysterious political career. Bishop of a Moravian community, Comenius was the leader of the Moravian Brethren, a sect pledged to achieve the extermination of the Catholic church and which, being considered heretical, was also suspected of practising secret satanism. The Moravians were imbued with Socinianism, that is the doctrine of Lelius

---

[6] Wittemans, *Histoire des Rose Croix,* p. 71.

Socinius which had been spread among them by his. nephew Faustus Socinius who had found refuge in Moravia when persecuted by the Church. Their link with Rosicrucianism had already been established in the person of the pietist, Julius Sperber, who was also one of their leaders. When Kominsky was persecuted, he first went to London in 1641 and, early the next year, went to Sweden where he was granted refuge and help by the powerful Swedish Minister, Count Axel Oxenstiern, himself a Rosicrucian adept and protector of another initiate, Ludwig van Geer from Holland.

The combination of the pursuit of alchemy and hermeticism with political aims was frequently evidenced even before the official appearance of Rosicrucianism. The influence of adepts on the destinies of nations was immense.

To Queen Elizabeth, the advice of John Dee, her alchemist, was always considered in matters affecting national policy, and to Dee, his crystal gazer, Edward Kelly, was indispensable as a medium.[7]

Ludwig van Geer, (one of the Seven present at Magdebourg) had settled in Sweden and had won over the chancellor, Count Axel Oxenstiern, then the real regent, in view of the minority of Queen Christina. A great industrialist of Dutch birth, with a colossal fortune made in the manufacture of cannon, he had become a Baron, and as owner of 20 ships of the Swedish fleet, he was an indispensable man.

Another striking Rosicrucian figure was Thomas Vaughan, (Eugenius Philaletes) not to be confused with his pupil, George Starkey, known as Irenius Philaletes.

It is said that it was Thomas Vaughan who, inspired

---

7. Charlotte Fell Smith, *op. cit.,* p. 182.

by the writings of Nick Stone, conceived the idea of subverting to the ambition of the sect to which he belonged, the guild of the Freemasons which, owing to its universal character, lent itself better than any other to the realization of his project.

Nick Stone was one of the Seven of the Convention of Magdebourg. As an architect, belonging to the guild of the Freemasons, he had helped Inigo Jones, the grand-master of the English Lodges which, at this period, were nonsectarian. On the other hand, as a Rosicrucian he had grasped, in the Luciferian sense, the idea given by Faustus Socinius, and he had composed, for the nine grades of the fraternity, rituals which the chiefs declared remarkable. His ritual of the eighth degree *(Magister Templi)* was really Satanic.

Thomas Vaughan, struck by these manuscripts wondered whether it would be possible to extend the teaching of the Rose Croix to all " accepted masons ", who were then admitted to the lodges in an honorary capacity ; the Freemasons received in their guild, under the name of " accepted masons ", peers and men of letters or professional men, as well as rich bourgeois, who enhanced the brilliancy of their meetings and patronized their entertainments. These honorary members were their protectors and benefactors.[8] Vaughan believed that this element, gifted with certain intellectual qualities, would lend itself better to the propagation of the principles of occult Socinianism than the workers of the Fellow Craft, and, having made up his mind that this was the solution of the problem, he hastened to put it into practice.

8. This is still customary. Many of the English Guilds of today such as the Goldsmiths have honorary members who, for attending their dinners receive a box of chocolates and £3 in cash.

Some brothers of the Rose Croix were already mingling with the Freemasons. Among the members of the Warrington Lodge were Richard Penkett, James Collier, Richard Sankey, Henry Littler, John Ellam and Hugh Brewer and in London, the Whartons and their friends had slipped into a lodge as " accepted masons ".

Thomas Vaughan encouraged them to spread the principles of Socinius. Finally, at a meeting on the 14th May 1643, he announced that their desultory efforts at restrained proselytizing should be supplanted by a definite programme of entering the guild lodges with the object of using them as instruments to an end.

The account of this meeting of the 14th May 1643, is given in full in the Memoirs of Philaletes and the whole plan of the Freemasonry of today is therein revealed.

So blended are truth and fiction in the active career of this adventurous adept that Vaughan must always remain one of the most mysterious characters of Rosicrucianism.

" When the plague of 1665 drove the Court from London to Oxford, Thomas Vaughan went thither with his patron (the king) and, a little later, took up his residence with the Rector of Albury, the Rev. Sam. Kem, at whose house, on February 27th of that year, he was killed by an explosion in the course of chemical experiments. "[9]

His work in Masonry however has remained as his monument. Together with Elias Ashmole, pupil of Rabbi Solomon Frank and protege of James Pagitt, Thomas Vaughan worked up the masonic system of the first three degrees. These degrees, those of Entered Apprentice, Fellow Craft and Master Mason were devised for the temptation of the masses, while outside and above them continued the former secret system of the Rose Croix, four degrees of which belonging to the Gold Cross were known as : 1st, Zelator ; 2nd, Theoricus; 3rd, Practicus ; and 4th, Philosophus; teaching merely the principles of alchemy, while the degrees of the Rose Croix were : 5th, Adeptus Minor; 6th, Adeptus Major ; 7th, Ademptus Exemptus, 8th, Magister Templi and 9th, Magus.

---

[9] A. E. "Waite, *The Works of Thomas Vaughan,* Biographical Preface, p. xii.

Contemporaneous with the evolution of free thought against revealed religion broke the revolution against civil authority plunging England into the throes of civil war, Oliver Cromwell was successful at the head of the Parliament troops while Charles I was everywhere betrayed by men on whom he relied. Henry Blount[10] was among the traitors accruing to Cromwell after the battle of Edgehill; at least the defeat of the king was his pretext, for treason was everywhere premeditated. The word of order was given by the Rose Croix, which had spread rapidly among the Puritans.

The year 1644 ended with the destruction of the Royal power, and Feb. 9, 1649, the day on which the head of Charles I fell at Whitehall, consummated its ruin. The Royal power had in fact been wrecked when the troops of Parliament were victorious, when the queen was obliged to take refuge in France, when the Prince Palatine, Robert, had been defeated, when York had been taken, and when the Commons had obtained against Laud, the Protestant Episcopal Bishop of London, Archbishop of Canterbury, the bill of attainder which declared him guilty of the crime of treason. Laud had stood for resistance to the Puritans.

---

[10] Henry Blount, 1602-1680, Father of Charles Blount, the Rosicrucian.

The connection of the Cromwell family with that of the celebrated Thomas Cromwell, Earl of Essex, whose political ideas, formed in Italy, under the guidance of Machiavelli, had so greatly affected the trend of English history, is here not devoid of interest.

In 1767, a document was discovered which revealed the existence of a society of Freemasons in Italy with about 64,000 members. "[11]

The document said : — " At last the great mine of the Freemasons of Naples is discovered, of whom the name, but not the secret, was known. Two circumstances are alleged by which the discovery was brought about : — a dying man revealed all to his confessor, that he should inform the king thereof ; a knight, who had been kept in great state by the society, having had his pension withheld, betrayed the Grand Master of the order to the king. This Grand Master was the Duke of San Severo. The king secretly sent a confidential officer with three dragoons to the duke's mansion, with orders to seize him before he had time to speak to any one, and bring him to the palace. The order was carried out; but a few minutes after, a fire broke out in the duke's mansion, destroying his library, the real object being, as is supposed, to burn all writings having reference to Freemasonry. The fire was extinguished, and the house guarded by troops. The duke having been brought before the king, openly declared the objects, system, seals, government, and possessions of the order. He was sent back to his palace, and there guarded by troops, lest he should be killed by his former colleagues. Freemasons have also been discovered at Florence, and the Pope and the Emperor

---

11. Heckethorn, *Secret Societies of All Ages & Countries,* vol. I, p. 342.

"have sent thither twenty-four theologians to put a stop to the disorder. The king acts with the greatest mercy towards all implicated, to avoid the great dangers that might ensue from a contrary course. He has also appointed four persons of great standing to use the best means to destroy so abominable a sect; and has given notice to all the other sovereigns of Europe of his discovery, and the abominable maxims of the sect, calling upon them to assist in its suppression, which it will be folly in them to refuse to do. For the order does not count its members by thousands, but by millions, especially among Jews and Protestants. Their frightful maxims are only known to the members of the fifth, sixth, and seventh lodges, whilst those of the first three know nothing, and those of the fourth act without knowing what they do. They derive their origin from England, and the founder of the sect was that infamous Cromwell, first Bishop, and then lover of Anne Boleyn, and then beheaded for his crimes, called in his day ' the scourge of rulers. ' He left the order an annual income of £10,000 sterling. It is divided into seven lodges : the members of the seventh are called Assessors ; of the sixth, Grand Masters ; of the fifth, Architects ; of the fourth, Executors (here the secret ends); of the third, Ruricori (!) ; of the second and first, Novices and Proselytes. Their infamous idea is based on the allegory of the temple of Solomon, considered in its first splendour, and then overthrown by the tyranny of the Assyrians, and finally restored — thereby to signify the liberty of man after the creation of the world, the tyranny of the priesthood, kings and laws, and the re-establishment of that liberty. "

As for Oliver Cromwell, Lord Protector of England, there is no record of his having been an " accepted mason ". He was however on the best of terms with

Richard Penkett and is supposed by many to have been secretly affiliated to the Rose Croix but whether an adept or not he served the purpose of the sect, destruction of the Royal and Ecclesiastical Christian Power !

After the death of Charles I, Cromwell appointed an assembly of lawyers and divines to consider the petition of Manasseh ben Israel (1604-1657) demanding the abolition of the legal exclusion of the Jews from England. In December 1655 the legal prohibition was removed. Eleven years after (1666) occurred the great fire of London.

Does the following letter help to solve the mystery of this historical disaster ? It was one of many written by the Secretary-Interpreter of the Marquis de Louvois, an English spy, to his chief in England, published in London in 1697 by D. Jones, Gent.

Of the firing of the City of London, in 1666.

MY LORD,

I am fully satisfied by what I have both seen and heard at Paris and elsewhere, that the Duke of York[1] was in the Year 1666 brought quite over to the French Interest; and I have heard strange Stories related concerning his conduct at the time of that dreadful conflagration of the City, looking upon it Janus-like, with one face seeming concerned for the lamentable disaster, and with the other rejoycing to see that noble pile reduced to ashes, and its citizens ruined ; who had at all times been the greatest propugnators for liberty and property, and opposers of that religion which he now not only secretly protest, but was even ready publickly to own, and rewarding those incendiaries at St. James, who then were suspected generally to be Frenchmen, as your Lorship well may remember ; but by our Minutes it does appear

---

12. Afterwards James II.

they were not such ; but they were persons, at least many of them set on work by French councils, and such as at that time were of all men least suspected ; I mean Jews, of which they had then several in pay, not only in England, but all over Christendom ; not only to give them Intelligence in which they are wondrous active, but likewise to promote and act the worse of mischiefs, as which they make no baulk. By these, fires have been kindled, not only in England, but in Germany, Poland and elsewhere, which the Germans imputed to Turkish Emissaries, though they were Jews hired with French money, the Turkish Policy not being so refined in mischief, these sorts of Jews put on the shape of what Christians they pleased, and of this sort imploy'd by France, there were and are still several in England, the names of one or two of which I think I shall be able to give your Lorship in sometime, though they go by several, as time and occasion doth require, and so at present I remain.

My Lord,
Your Lordship's most Humble Servant,
Paris, April 7 1676. N. St.

More shadows of the past! More strange suggestions to shake the foundations of our belief in things as they seem !

The last of the Grand Masters of the Rose Croix was Johann Christian Wolff. [13] Masonry, which as a secret association had maintained its existence for years had uncovered itself and become an avowed organization with the proclamation of the Anderson Constitution. [14] Once in the open it was to be the universal screen behind which all secret societies, whether theurgic or political, would operate clandestinely. Masonry with its proclamation of three philanthropic and altruistic degrees, with no apparent real secret, declaring itself Christian and non-political, would become the centre in which ignorant men, recruited and duped, could act like puppets animated by unseen hands pulling unseen strings.

---

[13] According to Sedir (see *Histoire des Rose-Croix,* p. 112) the last master of Rose Croix died in 1750. His name was Brun.

[14] *Grand Lodge of England.*

Thus it came about that all blows dealt to Christianity and States were prepared by the secret Societies-acting behind the veil of Masonry.

CHAPTER XXIII

CATHARES, ALBIGENSES, WALDENSES

Manicheism, with its hierarchy and missionary system, had taken root in Europe and, with its chief seat in Bulgaria, had thus found its way into Northern Italy and the southern part of France.

Unquestionably Manicheans in their beliefs and teachings, the Cathares (purifiers or pure) held the unadulterated tradition of Manes. Their hierarchy was that established by their founder. In the 12th century, their supreme chief was in Bulgaria having under him, bishops, priests, deacons and simple Perfects. These composed the class of Perfects who were distinguished from the second degree of Believers.

As to the Albigenses, their name derived from Albi, a town of Languedoc, covered not one but many sects issued from Manicheism and Arianism, and counted also many Jews or judaised Christians. Under this appellation of Albigenses, historians, whether political or religious, have almost unanimously included the Cathares.

A revolt against the then existing Church power of the 12th century is only too comprehensible, when one recollects the excesses of which popes, bishops and almost all dignitaries of the Church were guilty. The pioneers of the rebellion had been Peter of Bruys (died 1126) and the monk Henri (died 1148).

They had openly attacked the vices of the clergy and fallen victims, the first to his own fanaticism (he was killed by the mob whose anger he had aroused by pulling down a wooden cross to be used as burning wood for the purpose of cooking meat on a Good Friday); the second was imprisoned by a bishop against whose vices he had raised his voice. Both had attacked the beliefs and practices of the Church ; like the Baptists of today they rejected the practice of baptism for children, and denied the dogmas of transubstantiation and redemption through Christ.

They gained many adherents and left numerous disciples whose Manichean opposition to the Church was identical with that of the Cathares. Upon such grounds fell the preaching of Peter Waldo who, although he repudiated the dualist doctrine of the Manicheans, formed a serious opposition to the Church. He created the sect of the Waldenses divided in two degrees, Perfect and Believers. The former made a vow of Poverty and as such took the names of Poor Brethren, the latter formed the Outer or Third Order. From the South of France and Northern Italy, persecution drove the Waldenses to the Central and Northern provinces of France, thence to England, then from Lombardy into Germany and Bohemia. John Wickliffe (1324-1384) in England and John Huss (1369-1415) in Bohemia, were their foremost representatives and in the latter country they formed the Bohemian Brethren who later also took the name of Moravian Brethren or Religious Masons.

CHAPTER XXIV

THE MORAVIANS

OR THE MORAVIAN BROTHERS OF THE ORDER OF RELIGIOUS FREEMASONS, OR ORDER OF THE MUSTARD-SEED, OR THE CHURCH UNITAS FRATRUM, OR THE HERRENHUTER.

Margrave Albert expelled the Jews from the town of Iglau, in Moravia, on the ground that they had been in league with the Taborites, the subversive element among the Hussites. The Taborites were Bohemians.

The Moravian Brothers or Unitas Fratrum, a Gnostic sect, were founded in 1457 at Kunewald, near Seftenberg, by Gregory ; the nephew of the Calixtine leader Rokyzana. They were an offshoot of the Bohemian Brethren said to represent the religious kernel of the Hussite movement.

At the Synod of Lhota near Reichenau, in 1467, they constituted themselves into a Church separate from the Calixtine or National church of Bohemia.

The constitution of the society was revised at a second Synod held at Lhota under the direction of Luke of Prague, who may be regarded as their second founder. This reorganization enabled the society to grow rapidly. In the early years of the 16th cent, the

Unitas included nearly 400 congregations in Bohemia and Moravia, with 150,000 members, and, including Poland, embraced three provinces — Bohemia, Moravia, where the Jews are the best educated of the inhabitants, and in a few small towns form a full half of the population, and Poland. Each province had its own bishops and synods, but all were united in one church and governed by the general synod.

The Lutheran movement in Germany awakened lively interest among the Brethren, and some unsuccessful attempts were made under the leadership of Agusta to unite with the Lutheran Church (1528-1546); but when the Calvinist reformation reached Bohemia, the Brethren found themselves more in sympathy with it than with the Lutheran. The Jesuit anti-reformation, instigated by Rudolf and his brothers Matthias and Ferdinand, found the Brethren a prosperous church, but the pitiless persecution which followed the unsuccessful attempt at revolution crushed the whole Protestantism of Bohemia, and in 1627 the Evangelical churches there had ceased to exist. About the same time, the Polish branch of the Unity, in which many refugees from Bohemia and Moravia had found a home, was absorbed in the Reformed Church of Poland. A few families, however, especially in Moravia, held religious services in secret, preserved the traditions of their fathers, and, in spite of the vigilance of their enemies, maintained some correspondence with each other. In 1722, some of these left home and property to seek a place where they could worship in freedom. The first company, led by Christian David, a mechanic, settled by invitation from Count Zinzendorf [1] on his estate at Bertheldsdorf near Zittau, in Saxony. They were soon joined by others (about 300 coming within seven years), and built a town which they called Herrenhut. The small community at first adopted the constitution and teaching of the old Unitas. The episcopate had been continued, and in 1735, David Nitschmann was consecrated first bishop of the Renewed Moravian Church. The new settlement was not, however, destined to be simply a revival of the organization of the Bohemian Brethren. Zinzendorf, who had given them an asylum, came with his wife, family, and chaplain to live among the refugees. He was a Lutheran who had accepted Spener's pietism, and he wished to form a society distinct from national churches and devoted to good works. After long negotiations, a union was effected between the Lutheran element and the adherents of the ancient Unitas Fratrum. The emigrants at Herrenhut attended the parish church at Berthelsdorf, and were simply a Christian (Gnostic) society within the Lutheran Church. *(Ecclesiola in ecclesia).* This peculiarity is still to some extent preserved in the German branch of the church, and the Moravian Brethren's Congregation within the Evangelical Protestant churches, which enables them to do evangelistic work without proselytizing. The society adopted a code of rules in 1727, and ordained twelve elders to carry on pastoral work. This was the revival of the Unitas Fratrum as a church.

---

[1] Said to have been head of the Rose Croix, succeeding Theophilus Desaguliers ; he was Spener's godchild.

Besides congregational work, special home missions were and are carried on in each province. In the German province there is a peculiar home mission called the Diaspora,[2] which dates from 1829.[3]

---

[2] Diaspora = The Jews of the Dispersion.

[3] For the foregoing refer *Enc. Brit,* Art. " Moravian Brethren ", 9th Edition, p. 812.

The Moravians came to England in 1724, brought by Count Zinzendorf. The following extract from the work of an Anglican Bishop, written in 1751, shows that they were not particularly appreciated in that country as a force for good !

" Of what dangerous Consequence the Moravian System is to Government and Civil Society, appears by their progressive Multiplicity of Prevarications, Lies, Frauds, Cheats, and juggling Impostures, (Greatly detrimental to Princes and States, as well as ruinous to private Persons) which have so plainly been proved by Mr. Rimius, and others, particularly in ' the History of the Moravians, very lately published, from the public Acts of Budingen, and other authentic Vouchers. ' Of this Nature are their devouring the whole substance of any wealthy Convert, and declaring that the Society may say to a young rich Brother ' Either give up all that thou hast, or get thee gone. ' — Sending away any of the Society to the remotest Parts of the World, at a Minute's Warning, by the Authority of the Saviour, who will have it done Post-haste : ' Whereby any, though his Majesty's Subjects, whom they suspect, or that dislike their Proceedings, or, for prudential Reasons, must be married up, or may discover any of their Iniquities, are instantly sent into Banishment, and condemned to Transportation ; not for any Crime, but for their Virtue and Duty, Which is more than all the Authority of Great Britain can do, for any Crime, without an open and legal Trial, Making Marriages void, though before contracted, unless the carnal Cohabitation has been performed in the Presence of the Elders. — Seducing Men's Wives and Daughters, and then keeping them by Force, or sending them out of the Way ; and allowing no Power of Earth to reclaim them, though the Parents beg it on their Knees : —

Taking away the natural Authority of the Parents, and making their Children disobey and renounce them, under Pretence of obeying the Saviour, the Father that created them : ' thereby making the Fifth Commandment of no Effect. — Sometimes bribing, and sometimes threatening States, as Occasion serves, and denouncing Argumenta Regum, if they are opposed ; and telling Princes, that such or such a Place in their Dominions, was founded by the Saviour for his Theocracy ; which he won't fail to maintain. ' — These Things have been proved upon the Moravians, both as to Doctrine and Practice, by divers Instances. And that in Fact they claim an Independency on Government appears from the ' Letter to the Regency of Budingen, from the Count (Zinzendorf) and his Brethren, wherein it is said, in plain Terms, ' That all the Sovereigns on Earth must consent to the Theocracy in the Moravian Brotherhood, or have no Brethren in their Dominions. ' I need not add, that Theocracy signifies an immediate Government by God, which of Course excludeth all Civil Authority. "

The Moravian dogma was Spiritism which generally means Black Magic.

As for their moral code, it can be summarized in the few following words of Count Zinzendorf in a dialogue with Mr. Wesley. " We reject all Self Denial, we trample it under Foot. We Believers do what we please, and no more. "

Claiming to be free from all law by their Marriage with Christ, they refuse to be bound by any law at all : either of the Old Testament or the New.

To bring all Sects under his sway, Roman Catholics, Socinians, Fanaticks, Chiliasts, Anabaptists etc., Count Zinzendorf made a new translation of the New Testament... "This was the practice of almost all the Gnostic

Heretics, in order to deceive, and draw disciples. Nor did they make any Scruple of Omissions, Expungings, or any Corruptions that might serve their Purpose...

" Missionaries were sent abroad, everything being done by the Saviour's Injunction...

" Heaven, for them, is to consist in their being metamorphosed into Female Angels, for a carnal Enjoyment of Christ in his human Nature, in the eternal Bed-chamber...

" Where in the Scriptures do you find panegyrical Hymns in Honour of your Phallus ? "[4] asks Lavington.

For what follows we refer the reader to page 140 of the Bishop's book.

Count Zinzendorf is said to have been the head of the Rose Croix from 1744 to 1749. He was on intimate terms with John Wesley, the founder of Methodism.

Of all its names, that of " The Order of Religious Freemasons " is the most significant today. It should also be remembered that the head of this order was also the head of the " Esoteric Rosicrucians " of the time !

---

[4] Bishop Lavington, *The Moravians Compared and Detected,* p. 157.

CHAPTER XXV

THE ANABAPTISTS

(Founded 1521)

The Anabaptists were founded in 1521 by Nicolas Storch, Mark Stubner and Thomas Muncer.

Their Heresies were founded on the following Lutheran maxim interpreted subversively : *A Christian man is master of everything and is subject to no one.* They further claimed that infant baptism is null, therefore adults only can be baptized.

" If the Anabaptists ", writes Hoeninghaus, a German Protestant writer, in *La Réforme contre la Réforme,* were not all equally intolerant, they were nevertheless all equally detested, hated, and persecuted by the Protestants much more than by the Catholics. "

Queen Elizabeth ordered them to be excluded from England.

Madden, in *Phantasmata*, describes their religion in the following terms :

" We find among them claims to intercourse with God and angels — to the gift of prophecy — to the power of driving out evil spirits — to the right of persecuting opponents — to visions, ecstasies, trances, convulsive seizures attributed to supernatural influences — and all these evidences of epidemic religious mania in countries which were Protestant. "[1]

At certain periods in its history, this sect wielded great power and Madden further writes that in Westphalia " for a length of time, the entire senate was composed of theomaniacs. As the republic was composed alone of fools and madmen, it is incredible to what a length they carried their excesses in Munster : each magistrate proposed for the rule of government the wild chimeras of his own imagination, disguised under the imposing name of revelation. It was a sad spectacle to hear the deliberations of a senate composed altogether of fanatics : some being inspired in a perfectly contrary way to that suggested to others : nevertheless, each one adhering to the dictates of his inspiration, because he believed that a special revelation had been made to him. When such things, says Calmeil, take place in a country, where pseudo-prophets are tolerated who disseminate terror, and run about the streets without any clothing, when the multitude set these things down as super-human phenomena ; when the inspired of both sexes walk about thus in public places in the midst of their disciples and apostles, the will of the Supreme Being is supposed to serve as a rule and direction to all the extravagances that mortals fall into, and it is difficult to say where will end the excesses of this religious delirium... The Anabaptists, when they fell into the hands of their enemies, allowed their fingers, tongue, nose and ears, to be cut off, nay, even suffered themselves to be drowned by hundreds in torrents, rather than desist or depart for a moment from the orders they imagined came from God. "[2]

---

1. Madden, *Phantasmata,* vol. II, p. 457.
2. *Ibid.,* vol. II, p. 450.

In 1525, Luther headed an alliance of the Princes and governments to repress these excesses, and they were defeated at the Battle of Frankenhausen in that year, their leader Thomas Muncer being seized and beheaded.

In 1536, John of Leyden proclaimed himself King of the New Jerusalem but his glory was of short duration. He was taken by " the ungodly " and put to death.

The principal leaders of the sect were John Mathias, John Bockhold, David George, William Hacket, Kotterus, Kuhlmann and Dabricius.

" The principal offshoots of the Anabaptist fanaticism in Germany, Holland, and Switzerland, were the Adamites, the Apostolics, the Taciturn, the Perfect, the Impeccable, the Liberated Brethren, the Sabbatarians, the Clancularians, the Manifestarians, the Bewailers, the Rejoicers, the Indifferent, the Sanguinarians, the Antimariens. "[3]

---

3. Madden, *op. cit.*, vol. II, p. 456.

CHAPTER XXVI

GRAND LODGE OF ENGLAND

(Founded 1717)

John Valentin Andrea, the Rosicrucian, having elaborated a plan to merge all the existing religious Societies into one organization, published in 1614 a book *Universal and General Reformation of the Whole Wide World,* in which he advocated the foundation of a secret society of all classes, pledged to work quietly for the benefit of their fellows.

To this period also belongs the legend of Christian Rosenkreutz (see page 151).

Andrea, however, failed in his endeavours but Jan Amos Komensky (Comenius) joined actively in his efforts and, as early as 1628, begged leave to share in this work of which he presently was given sole charge.

About this time, Comenius wrote his renowned work on All-wisdom, the *Pansophia,* which embodied his ideas on the foundation of humanity's Utopia.

This Moravian school-master, Comenius, while doubtless an idealist, was also interested in spiritism, prophecies, revolution, Antichrist, the Millenium and such like whims of a dangerous fanaticism. He collected the visions of the Anabaptists, Kotterus and those of Dabricius and published them at Amsterdam. Those visions promised such wonders as the extermination of the Pope, the House of Austria, Gustavus Adolphus, Gustavus, King of Sweden, Cromwell and others and were of a most disturbing character. [1]

When Anderson undertook the task of uniting the old traditions of practical Masonry with the more recent development and broadened ideas of the new world-league, he incorporated in his book of constitution a reproduction of the main part of the plans and ideas of Comenius. Their true meaning was faithfully adhered to, and important and decisive passages were adopted almost literally.

The transformation of the Lodge was actually carried out in 1663 when, in the General Assembly of Masons, the masters of operative masonry, feeling themselves supplanted and overruled, realized that if they did not wish to forsake their Lodge they must unite with its new masters and subordinate themselves to their designs — Henry Jermyn, Lord St. Albans, was elected and installed Grand Master, Sir John Denham became his deputy and Sir Christopher Wren and John Webb, wardens.

The English Grand Lodge, as we know it, was founded on June 24, 1717, by Anderson, Desaguliers (an expatriated Frenchman said to have been the head of the Rose Croix), Calvert, James King, Elliot, Lumden Madden and George Payne.[2] It works only the first three degrees, Apprentice, Fellow-Craft and Master Mason (Blue Masonry) and constitutes the nursery for the selection of initiates for the higher or so called " spurious " masonry. Masons desirous of rising in the ranks of the Fraternity are therefore obliged to enter Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rites, (in England Ancient and Accepted Rites) Grand Orient, Memphis and Mizraim, Swedenborg or some other International order which works the higher grades and selects its members from graduates of the original English system.

---

[1] *Bayles Dictionary,* vol. 2, Art. " Comenius ", p. 1011, year

[2] Said to have all been members of the English Rose Croix.

English masonry claims to be a purely charitable institution.

It is *Blue Masonry* which answers to the lesser mysteries of the ancients wherein, in reality, nothing but the exoteric doctrines were revealed, whilst spurious masonry, or all subsequent degrees (for no one can be initiated into them who has not passed through the first three degrees) answer to the greater Mysteries. [3]

" According to Anderson's own showing", stater, *Freemasonry Universal,* " previous to the formation of Grand Lodge in 1717 the ceremonies of the Freemasons were purely Christian, but soon after that important change it was decided to widen the basis of the Craft so that men of all religious persuasions could enter her portals and benefit by her teaching. " [4]

On page 303 of *The Rosicrucian and Masonic Record* can be found the " Articles of Union ", dated 1813, of the two Fraternities of Free and Accepted Masons of England ; the " Society of Free and Accepted Masons " and " The Grand Lodge of the Society of Freemasons ". At the same time, Grand Lodge agreed to recognize a fourth degree, that of Holy Royal Arch.

In these articles it is specified that the representation of a Lodge in Grand Lodge shall be by its

---

3. Heckethorn, *op. cit.*, p. 266, vol. I.

4. *Freemasonry Universal,* The Official organ of the British Federation of the Co-Masonic Order, vol. 2, part 2, *Autumnal Equinox,* 1926, p. 79.

actual Master, Wardens and one Past master only.

Prior to the revival in 1717, and the reconstruction of Masonry in its present symbolic form we find in another article in *The Rosicrucian and Masonic Record* (page 167) that :

> " Very little is known of the proceedings of Masonic bodies, from the fact that very few written documents were permitted to be recorded, and of these few, owing to the jealousy or over-caution of their rulers, many were burnt in London in 1721. "

We can accept the causes given above for the destruction of these documents with a smile!

On initiation, Masons receive an alias by which name they are henceforth known in the Lodge.

All Masonry is founded on the usual system of sectarian help. " Help a Mason " supplants the Christian teaching of " Help everyone ".

Until the last few years this rule had not assumed a subversive character. Lately however, it is said that " to get anywhere in business in the City (London) one must be a Mason ". This has stimulated Masonic recruiting, implying as it does a virtual business boycott against non-masons. Each new recruit weakens the forces of those whose free, unhampered judgment could serve the cause of real liberty, democracy, and humanity.

Masonry, English and Continental, has been very useful to persons with political ambitions and minor mental and moral capacities.

In Maçonnerie *Pratique, Corns d'Enseignement Supérieur de la Franc-Maçonnerie, Rite Ecossais Ancien et Accepté,* published 1885, in Paris, page 206, and attributed to Paul Rosen,[5] we are given the following as the

---

• Paul Rosen, *Satan et C*^{ie}, published 1888.

esoteric explanation of the Ritual of Master Mason, Third Degree. It is an interesting fact that very few of the editions of certain works quoted herein are accessible to the profane public in museums and libraries.

" The Temple, being emblematic of the human body, the Master's Lodge is known as the Middle Chamber within which the most intimate mysteries of Freemasonry are celebrated. It represents the Uterus wherein is accomplished the reproduction of all beings [6].

" The two parts, separated longitudinally by a dark curtain, represent, — one side, the West, dark, and lighted only by a single light, the abode of death, of the sterile seed, is the ovary. That of the Eastern side, brilliantly illuminated, is the seed fertilized by the fulfilment of the act of generation and absorbed by the Uterus [7].

" The Master holds the mallet, the two Wardens each holding a roll of cardboard nine inches in circumference by 18 inches long. These rolls represent the *membrum virile* [8].

" In the middle of the Lodge is a mattress, coffin or ditch, which symbolises the bed, the Pastos of the Antients, upon which are performed the mysteries of human generation[9].

" This mattress, coffin or ditch, also represents the

Notes 6 to 18 are the authorities quoted by P. Rosen :

6. J. M. Ragon, *Orthodoxie Maçonnique,* p. 368, Paris.

7. Henri Cauchois, Grand orateur du Grand Orient de France, *Cours oral de Franc-Maçonnerie symbolique,* p. 140. Paris, 1863.

8. Clavel, *Histoire pittoresque de la Franc-Maçonnerie,* p. 43. Paris, 1844.

9. Mackey, *Lexicon of Freemasonry,* pp. 59 and 241. London, 1873.

Arch of Noah, and the antient Arch of the Old Testament, these two Arches being again the symbols of the place where the generation of beings is accomplished.[10]

" The acacia, the initiatic emblem of the Gauls and Scandinavians, and the fig tree, the initiatic emblem of the Syrians and the Orientals, signify that all the mysteries are derived from one source and rest on one base, that of India.

" The Phallus is used by the Freemasons in the degree of Master where it is designated by the word Mahabone.

" This fecundation is supposed to take place as follows :

" In the early period of initiation the seed of the unfertilized grain is dead. The Candidate, bearing within him this inert seed, is a male as he only wears upon his breast the Compass emblem of the *membrum virile.* He is stretched upon a mattress, or in a coffin or ditch, emblematic of the bed of the Pastos or the mysteries of generation.[11]

" Neither the second, nor the first warden can endow him with life. Alone, the Worshipful Master, wearing upon his chest the Square, symbol of the *genitalia mulieris* representing the female, (the Lodge) can fertilize this seed by leaning over the Candidate, who, representing the male, unites with him by the five points of perfection [12].

" The seed is fertilized by the Union of the male and the female, and the Lodge becomes pregnant of the Candidate, which she brings into the world nine months later, as Perfect Master, fourth degree, it being established that nine full months must have passed since the aspirant had received the degree of Master Mason. " [13]

---

[10] George Oliver, Grand Commander of the Supreme Council of England, *The Book of the Lodge*, p. 45. London, 1867.

[11] Mackey, *op cit.*, p. 241. London, 1873.

[12] Richard Carlile, *The Mysteries of Freemasonry*, p. 64. London.

In summing up : — The basis on which are founded the first three degrees of practical masonry are : —

" That the Apprentice, Bohaz, the personification of Osiris or of Bacchus, coming to search for Truth in the Lodge, finds that he is a Male-God and incomplete for the generation of beings. [14]

" That the Companion Jackin, personification of Isis or Venus, the Female-God, completes the Male-God by rendering possible the generation of beings. [15]

" That the Master Mahabone or MacBenac is the Hermaphrodite, complete son of Loth and his daughter, son of the sun and the earth.

" And that because :

1. All originates by Generation, and not by Creation, which is only the simple induction of Generation.
2. Corruption or destruction follows generation in all its works.
3. Regeneration restores, under other forms, the effects of destruction.

" The formula of the three first degrees of Freemasonry is therefore :

" The Incomplete man, the Profane, by initiation in

---

[13] Comte de Grasse-Tilly, *Tableau des grades écossais suivant l'ordre général décrete par le Suprême Conseil du* 33^{e} *degré,* daté du 22 décembre 1804.

[14] George Olivier, *History of Initiation,* p. 128. London, 1841.

[15] Albert Thomas, George Pearson, Grand Master of the Templars of the United States, *The Tradition of Freemasonry,* New York, 1850.

Freemasonry, becomes Bohaz and is completed by Jackin in the Lodge which restores his corrupted divinity in Mahabone ".

The special masonic significance of the Flamboyant Star, or Seal of Solomon, in Masonry ✡, is essentially the creative element.

Man reclining presents a protuberance in the middle.

Woman reclining, on the contrary, presents a cavity in the middle.

The two enlaced form the Flamboyant Star.

Small wonder that Mackey states that " no eunuch can be initiated a mason ! " [16]

Unfortunately, many corrupt and vicious persons seek Masonic protection and it is to the interest of all such aspirants to power thus to encourage vice and corruption through blackmail, using their votaries in the sect to further their own private ends. This is the fundamental danger inherent in all secret societies, whatever their reputation, where Power is the object.

" A Mason is said to demit from the order when he withdraws from all connection with it. It relieves the individual from pecuniary contributions and debars him from pecuniary relief, but it does not cancel his Masonic obligations, nor exempt him from that wholesome control which the order exercises over the moral conduct of its members. In this respect the Mason is once a Mason and always a Mason. " [17]

' The fact that a Mason not a member of any particular lodge, but who has been guilty of immoral or unmasonic conduct, can be tried and punished by any lodge, within whose jurisdiction he may be residing, is not to be doubted. "[18]

---

[16] Moise Reghellini de Scio, *La Maçonnerie considérée comme le résultat des Religions Egyptienne, Juive et chrétienne.* Paris, 1833, n° 1, p. 364.

[17] John Yarker, Grand Master of Ancient and Primitive Rite, *Speculative Freemasonry,* p. 27. London, 1872.

Quoting Brother Moore (from *Moore's Magazine,* vol. 1, p. 36). " Again every Mason is bound to obey the summons of a Lodge of Master Masons whether he be a member or otherwise. This obligation on the part of an individual clearly implies a power in the lodge to investigate and control his conduct in all things which concern the interest of the Institution. "

The clipping from the *Daily Telegraph* of Oct. 15th, 1930, which we reproduce herewith, shows the organization of a Masonic bureaucracy within our midst, an *Imperium in Imperio* of political office holders and magistrates, pledged first to Freemasonry, then possibly to the people.

BRIGHTON BOROUGH LODGE CONSECRATED

The Brighton Borough Lodge of Freemasons, the first of its kind in the Province of Sussex, was consecrated to-day by the Provincial Grand Master, Major R. L. Thornton.

The lodge will comprise past and present members of Brighton Town Council and magistrates, and the present Mayor, Councillor H. W. Aldrich, is its first Master.

The installation of the Worshipful Master was performed by the Deputy Provincial Grand Master, Dr. H. Gervis, who is an alderman and past Mayor of Brighton. The Mayor-Elect, Alderman S. C. Thompson, will be the first initiate. Other officers are :

Mr. W. Hall Hunter, and Mr. W. E. Trory, wardens ; Mr. T. Read, chaplain ; Mr. H. Hone, treasurer ; Mr. H. G. Winterton, secretary ; Mr. J. Talbot Nanson, D. of C. ; Mr. R. Major and Mr. H. J. Galliers, deacons ; Mr. W. E. Radford, assistant D. of C. ; Mr. F.G.Beal, almoner; Mr. A. W. Wardell, assistant secretary ; Mr. H. G. W. Bishop; Mr. I. G. O. Dalton, end Mr. G. W. Fabian, stewards, and Mr. A. Couzens.

The Grand Masters of the United Grand Lodge of England have been : 1813 H. R. H. The Duke of Sussex. K. G. 1843 The Earl of Zetland. K. T. 1870 The Marquis of Ripon. K. G. 1874 H. R. H. The Prince of Wales. 1908 Lord Ampthill.

---

18. Clavel, *Histoire Pittoresque de la Franc-Maçonnerie,* p. 49. Paris.

CHAPTER XXVII

'HE GOSPEL OF REVOLUTION

Apart from the Rosicrucians already mentioned, we see the foundation and growth of such societies as :

1. The Strict Observance of the Baron Hund and the notorious Jew Leucht who had assumed the name of Johnson, and several other aliases. It recruited its members in the Lodges and went from occultism into political intrigue, later even formulating a plan of economic and financial rule.
2. The Martinists, which, founded by a Portuguese Marrano Jew, Martinez Depasqualy, united political intrigues, fomented for the overthrow of the monarchy, together with magical practices. It numbered among its members the chief politicians who prepared the French Revolution. These were Savalette de Lange, William Law and Mirabeau.
3. The Scottish Rite.
4. The Moravian Brothers.
5. The Alta Vendita.
6. The Egyptian Rites of Cagliostro (Mizraim).

The adepts of all these different rites knew but little beyond the fact that they had shaken off the yoke of Christian principles which were replaced by the cult of nature, and in almost all cases licentiousness. They 'Were but mere puppets manipulated by unseen men whose sinister aims were the destruction of Christianity and disruption of States and to whom all the above named orders or organizations were but so many recruiting grounds. It was only when each and all had gathered sufficient strength that the " Invisible Masters " attempted to unite them all under one supreme sway, namely that of Illuminism at the Convent of Wilhelmsbad in 1782.

Illuminism represented the efforts of the heads of the powerful Jewish Kahal which has ever striven for the attainment of political financial, economic and moral world dominion. The movement had been founded in 1776 by Adam Weishaupt. Bernard Lazare, himself a Jew, has written that " There were Jews behind Weishaupt ", and upon a close study of Illuminism, we find that the destructive forces which culminated in the French Revolution were of three kinds ; financial, intellectual and anti-christian.

In the first class, we come upon the names of Jewish Financiers such as : — Daniel Itzig, Friedlander, Ceerfbeer, Benjamin and Abraham Goldsmid, Moses Mocatta, Veitel Heine Ephraim.

In the second category, we find Moses Mendelssohn, Naphtali Wessely, Moses Hersheim — who are the inspirers of Lessing — Frederic Nicolai, Weishaupt, Mirabeau, l'Abbe Grégoire, the Duke of Brunswick-WolfenbutteL and Anacharsis Clootz.

Lastly, the third class is composed mostly of the group known as the Encyclopedists : d'Alembert, Diderot, Rousseau, Voltaire and of all the Cabalists practising magic and among whom we find : Martinez Depasqualy, Leucht, the enigmatic Count of Saint Germain, Falke and Joseph Balsamo surnamed Cagliostro.

The objects of this powerful organization of the Bavarian Illuminati, were :

1. The destruction of Christianity and of all Monarchical Governments ;

2. The destruction of nations as such in favour of universal internationalism ;

3. The discouragement of patriotic and loyal effort branded as narrow minded prejudice, incompatible with the tenets of goodwill to all men and the cry of " Universal Brotherhood " ;

4. The abolition of family ties and of marriage by means of systematic corruption ;

5. The suppression of the rights of inheritance and property.

Moses Mendelssohn, himself the head of the Haskalah, (Jewish Illuminati) cooperated with the Bavarian Illuminati of Weishaupt and with the prominent members of the other revolutionary secret societies aspiring to political power, but, in 1784, the Elector of Bavaria made an abortive effort to stamp out the conspiracy which, being international, was necessarily impervious to local measures. The poison of subversion was working in France where on January 21, 1793, it culminated in the death on the scaffold of Louis XVI, an event that in masonic jargon is known as " The second cannon shot ". The capture of Rome by Cadorna in 1870 was the third.

As a further confirmation of concerted masonic action let us bring yet another illustration :

In the first days of the French Revolution (1848), 300 Freemasons, with their banners flying over brethren of every rite representing French Freemasonry, marched to the Hotel de Ville, and there offered their banner to the Provisional Government of the Republic, proclaiming aloud the part they had just taken in the glorious Revolution.

M. de Lamartine made them this answer, which was received with enthusiasm by the Freemasonry Lodges: " It is from the depths of your lodges that the ideas have emanated, first in the dark, then in the twilight, and now in the full light of day, which have laid the foundations of the Revolutions of 1789, 1830, and 1849. " [1]

Fourteen days later, a new deputation of the " Grand Orient ", adorned with their Masonic scarfs and jewels, repaired to the Hotel de Ville. They were received by A. Crémieux [2], and Garnier Pagès, attended by pages, who also wore their Masonic emblems. The Representative of the Grand Master spoke thus : — " French Freemasonry cannot contain her universal burst of sympathy with the great social and national movement which has just been effected. The Freemasons hail with joy the triumph of their principles, and boast of being able to say that the whole country has received through you a Masonic consecration. Forty thousand Freemasons in 500 lodges, forming but one heart and one soul, assure you here of their support happily to lead to the end the work of regeneration so gloriously begun ". Brother Crémieux, a Jewish brother, member of the Provisional Government, replied : " Citizens and brothers of the Grand Orient, the Provisional Government accepts with pleasure your useful and complete adhesion. The Republic exists in Freemasonry. If the Republic do as the Freemasons have done, it will become the glowing pledge of union with all men, in all parts of the globe, and on all sides of our triangle. " [3]

---

[1] Gargano, *Irish Freemasons and Their Foreign Brothers,* p. 55.

[2] The means for the attainment of Crémieux's ambition are set forth in a book entitled *Paris : Capitate des Religions,* by Jean Izoulet.

[3] Gargano, *Op. cit.*

If the wielding of power and their national political economic and financial strength over the peoples by a few hidden hands can result in such calamitous upheavals as the French Revolution, the World War of 1914 and the Russian Revolution of 1917, were it not wise to apply the lesson of experience to ascertain whether the supposed harmless Masonry of today does not again serve as a screen or curtain behind which thrive secret societies no less subversive, revolutionary and demoralising than those which we have just so briefly sketched ?

We know that most of them such as the Martinists, the Illuminatis, the Scottish Rite and the Egyptian Lodges of Memphis and Mizraim still exist today, so, on what grounds can we base our assumption of a change of their revolutionary and anti-christian principles? In the face of late events, namely, the Peace Conference, the creation of the League of Nations, the amalgamation of international resources, the confiscatory inheritance taxes, the development of international finance, the proposed establishment of an international non-christian cult, have we the right to refrain from lifting the veil of Masonry behind which subversive movements are so conveniently hidden?

CHAPTER XXVIII

THE PREPARATION

This chapter is compiled largely of extracts, some transcribed verbatim and others elaborated to include information necessary to the reader from : —

History of Freemasonry and Concordant Orders
by H. L. Stillson & W. J. Hughan.

Adriano Lemmi
by Domenico Margiotta 33°.

Ex-Secretaire de la Loge Savonarola, de Florence ;
Ex-Venerable de la Loge Giordano Bruno, de Palmi ;
Ex-Souverain Grand Inspecteur General 33° degré, du Rite Ecossais Ancien et Accepté;
Ex-Souverain Prince de l'Ordre (33° 90° 95°) du Rile de Memphis et Misraim de Naples ; etc. etc.
Ex-Inspecteur permanent et Souverain Délégué DU GRAND DIRECTOIRE CENTRAL DE NAPLES, POUR L'EUROPE (Haute-Maçonnerie Universelle).

It is necessary to give a brief review of the history of Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rites. This society originates from the rite called Scottish of Perfection or of Heredom, in twenty-five degrees, worked in the eighteenth century in Europe by Masons devoting themselves to occultism. The following statement with regard to the introduction of this rite in America is made in a report by Albert Pike :

" We can soon learn how it was that the Council degrees came, about 1766, from France, and not from Prussia. In 1761, the Lodges and Councils of the superior degrees being extended throughout Europe, Frederic II (Frederic the Great), King of Prussia, as Grand Commander of the, Order of Princes of the Royal Secret, or 32 degrees, was by general consent acknowledged and recognized as Sovereign and Supreme Head of the Scotch Rite. " [1]

" On the 25th Oct. 1762, the Grand Masonic Constitutions were finally ratified in Berlin and proclaimed for the government of all Masonic bodies working in the Scotch Rite over the two hemispheres; and in the same year they were transmitted to the Jew, Stephen Morin, who had been appointed, at the request of Lacorne, in August, 1761, Inspector General for the New World by the Grand Consistory of Princes of the Royal Secret, convened at Paris, under the presidency of Chaillon de Joinville, representative of Frederic (the Great) and Substitute General of the Order. [2] It will be remembered that the 33rd degree was not then created; and under Frederic the Great, there was no rank higher than the 32nd degree nor anybody superior to a Consistory. " [3]

[1] John Yarker, *The Arcane Schools*, p. 480.

••• " He (Morin) probably — ignorant charlatan as he was — mistook Frederick II, Grandson of Barbarossa, an actual King of Jerusalem, for his contemporary Frederick II of Prussia. "

[2] The Comte de Clermont was Grand Master of the *Grande Loge Nationale de France.*

[3] H. L. Stillson &W. J. Hughan, *op. cit.*, p. 243.

See also *Morris's Masonic Dictionary*, Article, " Sovereign Grand Inspector General ".

Morin went to Santo Domingo where he was joined by Moses M. Hays and Henry Andrew Francken. The latter founded a branch of the rite in Jamaica, while to the former was entrusted the task of founding lodges in North America. The Jew Hays established a Sublime Lodge of Perfection in Boston, of which he constituted himself Grand Master and charged one of his co-religionscs, and brother Mason, Isaac Dacosta, who, in 1758 had founded the St. Andrew Lodge in Boston, with the mission of introducing Masonry into South Carolina.

Though on August 27, in 1766, Bro. Morin's patent was revoked by the Grand Body in Paris for " propagating strange and monstrous doctrines " exercising bad faith etc., etc. [4], and given to Bro. Martin, Morin continued constituting chapters and councils and, with

Sovereign Grand Inspector General, The 33rd and ultimate degree of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite. It is not known when or where this grade originated. The theory which ascribes it to the King of Prussia has long since been discarded by intelligent Masons. The number of Inspectors in a kingdom or republic must not exceed nine. These, organized in a body, constitute the Supreme Council, which claims jurisdiction over all the Ineffable and Sublime degrees. The presiding officer is styled Sovereign Grand Commander.

See also Blanchard 33, *Scottish Rite Masonry*, vol. II, p. 484.

" And though made within the memory of men now living, we read, in the same Note by Macoy : It is not certainly known, when or where this degree originated ; that is to say, its origin is concealed. This is the most infamous Masonic act, next to burning their records of fifty-nine years before the war, (American Civil War) to hide treason. But slavery then ruled the country, and this 33rd Charleston degree ruled the lodge. And the Southern lodge-rooms worked up the most unjustifiable and infamous war on record. The Southern people "were dragooned into it, by leaders secretly sworn to obey Masonic leaders, or have their throats cut. "

[4] Peckham, *Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rites*, p. 6.

Dacosta, in 1783, seventeen years after his patent had been annulled, he erected in Charleston " The Grand Lodge of Perfection ".

Dacosta was its Grand Master. Joseph M. Meyers was his eventual successor, and " when the Grand Council of Princes of Jerusalem was established in Charleston, February 20, 1788, he, as one of the Deputy-Inspectors who established it, deposited in the archives certified copies of the degree of Royal and Select Masters from guidance and government of that new body. "[5]

The two Masonic powers of Boston and Charleston created numerous lodges and inner shrines in the United States and gave themselves the title of Mother Lodges of the United States.

In view of the historical fact that the American War of Independence broke out in 1773, it is interesting to find that the Lodge of Perfection, at Albany (New-York), was directed as early as 1770 to transmit reports to Berlin.[6] This indeed becomes significant when considered with the circumstances surrounding the " Boston Tea Party ", which are so ably described in *The History of Freemasonry and Concordant Orders* by Stillson and Hughan, that we take the liberty of here transcribing some lines from this remarkable publication :[7]

" Grand Master (Joseph) Warren was appointed on March 3, 1772, by the Grand Master of Scotland, Grand Master of Masons for the Continent of America.

" Tradition says that the ' Mohawks ', the ' High Sons of Liberty ', met at the lodge at the ' Green Dragon Tavern' which was denounced by the Tories as a nest of traitors '. General Joseph Warren and other leading Masons made it the headquarters of the Revolution. On November 30, 1773, the Lodge of St. Andrew's (that founded by Dacosta and of which Warren was a member) was closed without the transaction of any business, in consequence of the fewness of the brethren present, the consignees of tea having broken up the brethren's nerve. On the 16th of December following, it is said the line of march was taken from the lodge-room to destroy the tea on the then arriving ships.

---

[5] H. L. Stillson & W. J. Hughan, *op. cit.,* p. 649.

[6] *Ibid.,* p. 801.

[7] *Ibid.,* p. 247.

" On April 8, 1776, the Grand Lodge was convened for the performance of a sad and solemn duty, that of attending the funeral of Grand Master Warren, who was killed at Bunker Hill. "

In 1738, Pope Clement XII had excommunicated the Freemasons.

We extract the following instructive points from *Adriano Lemmi* by Margiotta :[8]

" Sovereign Princes of Jerusalem was the title born by the deputies of the Grand Master when they received missions to found lodges and visit regions where they had high jurisdiction. The name was that of a function and not a degree of initiation and there was one deputy only for each region. On May 15, 1781, at a convention of Deputy Inspectors convoked by Hays and Meyers at Philadelphia, Moses Cohen was named deputy inspector of Jamaica, as Francken, originally appointed by Stephen Morin to found lodges there, had neglected his mandate. Soon another Jewish Freemason came to Jamaica. This was Hyman Isaac Long who derived his powers from Morin, through Francken, Hays, Spitzer and Moses Cohen, and who was to play a great role in the sect.

---

[8] Margiotta, *op. cit.*, p. 86 *et seq.*

Isaac Long was the son of Isaac Long, a Dutch writer, one of the foremost Moravian brethren, and closely connected with Count Zinzendorf.

" The convention of Philadelphia had decided that, in the future, there might be several Sovereign Princes of Jerusalem per region. By virtue of this decision, Moses Cohen conferred this title on Isaac Long who, finding his sphere of action too restricted at Jamaica soon went to Charleston. He was an active man who had formed great plans. Not only did he create other Lodges, but he brought other rites (such as that of Royal Arch) under the obedience of the Mother Lodge at Charleston. The Mother Lodge at Boston however did not prosper.

" Nevertheless, when one thinks of the immense territory of the United States, one understands that the Lodges, at the start, could only be very few and far between, so masonry vegetated for a long time in North America. In 1795, Isaac Long went to Europe, leaving Colonel John Mitchell the direction of the Mother Lodge of Charleston.

" When he returned to the United States, six years later, he brought the plan of his great idea, which was the creation of a rite of 33 degrees destined to become universal. With Colonel John Mitchell, Doctor Frederic Dalcho, Abraham Alexander, Isaac Auld and Emanuel de la Motta, all Sovereign Princes of Jerusalem, he constituted this rite, taking twenty-five degrees of the system of Heredom, six Templar grades in which were merged four degrees borrowed from the German Illuminism[9] of Adam Weishaupt, and two grades called grades of administration, the last of which supplanted the function of Deputy Inspector (Sovereign Prince of Jerusalem) and took the title of Sovereign Grand Inspector General 33rd and last degree. This was his crowning achievement. Isaac Long gave the institution the name of Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rites, and the first great constitutions were signed at Charleston, on May 31st 1801. "

---

[9] The 9th, 10th, 11th and 21st degrees.

It was Isaac Long who created de Grasse and his father-in-law, de la Hogue, Deputy Grand Inspectors General.

" In order to insure great popularity for the rite, he linked it directly with the Templars by a mysterious legend. The high grades of other rites had already thought of pretending to avenge the Templars, condemned in the Middle Ages by the Papacy and the Monarchy. In the ceremonial of certain initiations, a pretext was thus contrived for swearing hatred and death to royalty and the church.

But Isaac Long had found better than that.

According to the tradition, the Knights Templar, convicted of secret conspiracy and maleficent occultism, had taken refuge in Scotland where they succeeded in eluding their pursuers. It was said that they had succeeded in buying the head of the Grand Master Jacques Bourgignon de Molay from the executioner, after it had been severed from the body and that they had contrived to place in safety the monstrous idol called Baphomet which they worshipped in their secret assemblies.

When Long arrived in Charleston in 1801, he brought with him this Baphomet which he claimed to have recovered as well as a skull which he declared to be that of the Grand Master Molay. They were signal relics, holy things! Long affirmed that he had been assured by the Good God in person that victory over the Church was contingent on these precious relics, and that the Templar Baphomet was the Palladium which would lead Freemasonry to victory ".

To this other authors have added that this skull is known as the relic of Saint Jacques and is placed upon a high pedestal in the Hall of the Supreme Council of Scottish Rites, in the temple at Charleston, where annually, on the 11th of March, it talks and vomits flames.

Its conversational propensities were however not revealed until Gallatin Mackey, who claimed to be the reincarnation of Jacques de Molay, developed the proclivity for going into an annual trance on the 11th of March. This trance lasted about one hour, during which the skull conversed volubly about itself and all sorts of other things."

Pursuing the subject further, Margiotta states that:

" The Mother Lodge of Boston had ceased functioning for some years but that of Charleston, reconstituted according to the new Scottish System in 33 degrees, became the root of the tree which was to spread its branches over the entire world. The Superior Lodge of the Grand Sovereign Inspectors General, in each country, was to be called the Supreme Council, and it is from the Supreme Council of Charleston that all the others were to emanate. It is thus the first Supreme Council of the Globe.

" Such is the history of the origin of this rite which attracted Mazzini's attention for, during the years which preceded the taking of Rome by the army of Piedmont, he could see that the previsions of Isaac Long had been realized. So it was in Pike, the successor of Long, himself the Sovereign Commander Grand Master, that the great revolutionary conspirator sought an ally in his work the object of which was the total destruction of the church. "[10]

---

[10] Margiotta, *op. cit.*, p. 88 *et seq.*

The following address, [11] issued from Paris by Giuseppe Mazzini[12] to his friends in Italy, October 1846, fully sets forth the deep laid plans by which Freemasonry sought to engage all classes.

" In great countries, it is by the people we must go to regeneration ; in yours, by the princes. We must absolutely make them of our side. It is easy. The Pope will march in reform through principle and of necessity ; the King of Piedmont through the idea of the crown of Italy; the Grand Duke of Tuscany through inclination and irritation ; the King of Naples through force ; and the little princes will have to think of other things besides reform. The people yet in servitude can only sing its wants. Profit by the least concession to assemble the masses, were it only to testify gratitude.... Fetes, songs, assemblies, numerous relations established among men of all opinions, suffice to make ideas gush out, to give the people a feeling of its strength and render it exacting... Italy is still what France was before the Revolution ; she wants, then, Mirabeau, Lafayette, and others. A great lord may be held back by his material interests, but he may be taken by vanity. Leave him the chief place whilst he will go with you. There are few who would go to the end.

" The essential thing is, that the goal of the great revolution be unknown to them ; let us never permit them to see more than the first step. In Italy, the clergy are rich in money and the faith of the people. You must manage them in both those interests, and as much as possible make their influence of use.

---

[11] Michael di Gargano, *Irish and English Freemasons,* p. 66.

[12] See Larousse: *Grand Dictionnaire Universel du XIX^{e} siècle. Mazzini.* 1808-1872. He had become the chief of a particular sect much given to mysticism. Without being a catholic he was profoundly religious... In Oct. 1871, he organized in Rome a congress of workmen which attracted little attention. " I am not a christian.", he wrote to Daniel Stern.

" Learned discussions are neither necessary nor opportune. There are regenerative words which contain all that need be often repeated to the people. Liberty, rights of man, progress, equality, fraternity, are what the people will understand above all when opposed to the words, despotism, privileges, tyranny, etc., etc.

" Nearly two thousand years ago, a great philosopher, called Christ, preached the fraternity which the world yet seeks. Accept, then, all the help offered you. Whoever will make one step towards you must be yours till he quits you. A king gives a more liberal law ; applaud him, and ask for the one that must follow. A minister shows intention of progress ; give him out as a model. A lord affects to pout at his privileges ; put yourself under his direction if he will stop, you will have time to let him go : he will remain isolated, and without strength against you, and you will have a thousand ways to make unpopular all who oppose your projects. All personal discontent, all deceptions, all bruised ambition, may serve the cause of progress by giving them a. new direction. The army is the greatest enemy to the progress of socialism. It must be paralysed by the education of the people. Clerical power is personified in the Jesuits. The odium of that name is already a power for the socialists. Make use of it. Associate! Associate! everything is in that word. The secret societies give irresistible strength to the party that can call upon them. Do not fear to see them split: the more the better. All go to the same end by different ways. The secret will be often violated ; so much the better ; the secret is necessary to give security to the members, but a certain transparency is needed to inspire fire to the stationary.

Courage, then and persevere! "

That Freemasonry has not always enjoyed immunity the following quotation will serve to show.

" In the year 1735, the States General of Holland proscribed the secret Masonic League, and the French government imitated the example in 1735. In 1757, in Scotland, the Synod of Stirling adopted a resolution debarring all adhering Freemasons from the ordinances of religion.

" The Great Council of Berne proscribed Freemasonry in 1748, Bavaria followed in 1799, and its total suppression took place in 1845, The Regency of Milan and the Governor of Venice acted in a similar manner by it in 1814. John VI, King of Portugal, prohibited Freemasonry in the strictest manner in 1816, and renewed it in 1824. In 1820 several lodges were closed in Prussia for political intrigues ; and in the same year Alexander I banished the order from the whole Russian Empire. A similar occurrence took place four years later in Modena and Spain... Yet today, some men boast of belonging to a secret society, the members of which were declared, by an Act of George III, felons, and liable to transportation for life ! "[13]

Speaking of Masons, in 1876, Richard Carlile wrote : " Let them not wait to be disbanded by the Legislature, as a useless and mischievous association : but let them anticipate the spirit of a coming age... The deluge of mystery has not only overwhelmed Babylon but Egypt, Greece, Rome, and will, if we do not light up the spirit of revelation in time, most assuredly overthrow this British nation. It is even now in danger, from the dissension of its internal mysteries, of becoming an easy prey to some more barbarously mysterious power. Thus fell Babylon, Egypt, Jerusalem, Greece,

---

[13] Michael di Gargano, *op. cit.*

"Rome, and why not Britain, if Britain retain those seeds of disease and weakness? Tell me not that the safety of a country is in its superstition, or in its secret and mysterious bands." [14]

This warning however passed unheeded. During the time that has elapsed between the publication of Carlile's book and the present day, we see England honeycombed with societies, subversive of law, order and morals.

Numerous are the homes which have become resorts where, today, the shameful orgies of Medmenham are enacted anew. They are the secret haunts of social cliques and associations, and behind such screens as art, antiques and dressmaking thrive, as though they were highly protected, the white slave traffic, the dope traffic and gambling which serve as a drag-net and decoy for the service of the Great God Pan.

---

14. Carlile, *Manual of Freemasonry,* p. 94.

CHAPTER XXIX

GENERAL PEPE AND THE " ONE BIG UNION "

At the present moment, when we are surfeited with the words unions and mergers, to say nothing of cartels, a new interest is awakened by the perusal of Thomas Frost's book on Secret Societies, from which we extract the following :

" Two results of great importance in the progress of the European revolution proceeded from the events that occurred at Naples in 1820-21. One was the reorganization of the Carbonari, consequent upon the publicity given to the system when it had brought about the revolution, and the secrecy in which it had hitherto been enveloped was no longer deemed necessary ; the other was the extension of the system beyond the Alps. When the Neapolitan revolution had been effected, the Carbonari emerged from their mystery, published their constitution and statutes, and ceased to conceal their patents and their cards of membership. In the Papal States, in Lombardy, and in Piedmont, the veil of secrecy was maintained for a little time longer, partly through the adoption by the Carbonari in those portions of the peninsula of symbols and pass-words different from those of the Neapolitan lodges, partly by the formation of the various societies of the Adelphi, the Guelphs, the Brother Protectors, and the Italian Federati, which were similar, and yet not the same, though all holding the same principles, and having a common object. But after the collapse of the Piedmontese revolution, so much doubt and fear existed among the leaders as to the extent to which the secrets of the system were known that they were all effaced, and consigned to oblivion. The scattered directors of the movement drew together the broken threads of the conspiracy as soon as they were able, but with a new nomenclature and a new symbolism.[1]

" The dispersion of the Carbonaro leaders had, at the same time, the effect of extending the system in France, where it had been introduced towards the end of 1820 and creating centres of revolutionary agitation in the foreign cities in which they temporarily located themselves.

General Pepe proceeded to Barcelona when the counter-revolution was imminent at Naples, and his life was no longer safe there ; and to the same city went several of the Piedmontese revolutionists when their country was Austrianized after the same lawless fashion.

Scalvini and Ugoni took refuge at Geneva ; others of the proscribed proceeded to London. This dispersion, and the progress which Carbonarism was making in France, suggested to General Pepe the idea of an international secret society, which should combine for a common purpose the advanced political reformers of all the European States.

Shortly after his arrival at Madrid, to which city he proceeded from Barcelona, he propounded to two or

---

1. Thomas Frost, *Secret Societies of the European Revolution*, vol. II, p. 1 *et seq.*

three ultra-Liberal deputies the plan of this society, the object of which, he says,

> ' was to enable the members to correspond and by these means preclude the possibility of a renewal of that want of union which had been experienced amongst the most noted patriots of Spain and Portugal, Naples and Piedmont. Several deputies of the Cortes were inclined to regard such an association as extremely beneficial to the public cause, more especially in their own peninsula, where a great want of concord existed between the Portuguese and the Spaniards. The society was accordingly founded; several members of the Cortes formed part of it, as well as General Ballesteros, Councillor of State. I still preserve the regulations of this society, the great object of which was to open a communication between the most enlightened patriots of the different cities in Europe. It was decided that I should exert myself to give it extension in Lisbon, London and Paris ; and that, in the event of my success, other members should proceed to propagate it over Italy and Germany. '

" Having organized in Madrid the first circle of the Constitutional Society of European Patriots, Pepe proceeded to Lisbon, where he was even more successful in his efforts than in the Spanish capital. Two of the Ministers, and several Councillors of State and members of the Cortes signified their adhesion, and, before Pepe left, a flourishing circle was formed, under the direction of Almeida-Moraes, the president of the Cortes. From Lisbon the general proceeded by sea to London, where, as he says, he soon found that ' a secret society in England among men of mind is a thing quite out of the order of probability '. He mentioned the society to a few, but met with no encouragement. The Duke of Sussex and Sir Robert "Wilson read the statutes and regulations of the society, but only as a matter of curiosity. "

This curiosity is doubtless responsible for the creation of what was later known as The International Committee of London. The particular Duke of Sussex, here referred to was Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of England from 1813-1843, and this interview with the Italian revolutionary is of great significance showing as it does the effort, at this date, to subvert English Freemasonry to the aims of The International. According to the system which worked out later, English Freemasonry retained, to all appearances, its original autonomy.

But to proceed with the statement of Frost :

" Pepe next opened a correspondence with Lafayette, who hailed the proposed international organization of the secret societies as ' a Holy Alliance opposed to that of despotism, ' and at once associated himself with it. He, with Manuel and Argenson, the triumvirate that was supposed to have directed the Associated Patriots of 1816, were earnestly engaged at that time in the reorganisation of the Carbonari of France, upon a new system, which promised more perfect impenetrability ; and Buonarotti was similarly engaged at Geneva, with a view to renewed operations in Italy. "

" It has been doubted whether Lafayette, Manuel[2], and Argenson[3], with others who were supposed to be the leaders of the Carbonari in France, were actually the chiefs of the society; and, with regard to Manuel at least, the point is not susceptible of positive demonstration. There are, in all countries, men of superior station who, when a collision between the people and the Government is impending, are aware of what is going on, and hold themselves prepared to step to the front when the movement has advanced to a point

---

2. André Jacques Manuel (1791-1857).

3. Marc-René de Voyer, Marquis d'Argenson, harboured Buonarotti, one of the group of conspirators led by Babeuf.

at which they can do so with advantage to the cause and safety to themselves ; but who take care not to commit themselves to it prematurely, or to allow any trace to exist of their connexion with it. This has been thought by some to have been the real position of the individuals whom others have asserted to have been the actual leaders of the Carbonari, as they had previously been held to be of the Associated Patriots ; but though there is no absolute proof that they were the Grand Elect there can be very little, if any, moral doubt upon the point. "

The Author of *Secret Societies of the European Revolution* writes the foregoing paragraph but fails to explain it.

Who and what are the men he refers to ?

Such indeed are the political principles adopted by the leaders of Freemasonry. Therein lies its power. As soon as any political movement becomes inevitable, as soon as public pressure on an existing government becomes too strong, this sect, in the name of Liberty, Equality and Fraternity, takes the secret leadership of the opposing faction. Through the new government which becomes the subservient tool of its capricious master, who, at any moment, may suppress its fledgling, by creating and backing a new opposition, it holds, not the balance of power but all the power.

Thus : *Those who rule Freemasonry today, rule the world.*

And Frost further adds :

" In 1831, the French Government had not only proclaimed a policy of non-intervention, but had expressly declared that France would not permit intervention on the part of any other Power in the affairs of any nation in Europe. Lafayette was deceived by these professions, and assured Misley (the agent of the Masonic Revolutionary Committee) that the Italians had nothing to fear. "

In that year Masonry made an attempt to cast off the Austrian yoke in Italy by using France as its base of operations. Owing however to French non-cooperation the revolution failed.

" A few days afterwards, Misley and Linati arrived at Marseilles and chartered a vessel, aboard which they put a couple of cannon and twelve hundred muskets. They were joined by General Pepe, Count Grilenzoni, the advocate Mantovani, Dr. Franceschini, and Lieutenant Mori; but, at the last moment, the Prefect received a telegraphic order from Paris to prevent their embarkation and lay an embargo on the vessel. General Pepe evaded the vigilance of the police, however, and contrived to reach Hyères, where he heard of the entrance of the Austrians into Bologna, and thereupon abandoned his intention of giving the aid of his reputation and experience to the revolutionary cause. "

In connexion with the agitation provoked in Piedmont, during the reign of Charles Albert, by Mazzini's " Young Italy " movement in 1848, the veteran General Pepe again comes into prominence. On March 29, 1848, he arrived at Naples, and was sent for by King Ferdinand who invited him " to form a Ministry, of which he should have the Presidency, with the Ministries of War and Marine. " Every difficulty however was thrown in the way of Pepe's projected military operations, " the Naval Department insisting that the fleet could not convey troops, the King interposing various delays and the Pope refusing permission for more than one battalion or squadron to pass daily. Seventeen thousand troops at last started, but with orders not to cross the Po until the King commanded the passage ! "[4]

. Thomas Frost, *op. cit.*, vol. II, p. 174.

There was much marching and countermarching but the secret societies had not yet won.

The tangled history of the " Young Italy " movement in its early stages is well explained by Thomas Frost in *Secret Societies of the European Revolution,* and anyone particularly interested in that phase of political history would do well to refer to this book. Due allowance must however be made for certain omissions and inaccurate deductions on the part of the author who, in 1876, could not have access to information which is now available to anyone seeking it.

CHAPTER XXX

ALBERT PIKE AND GIUSEPPE MAZZINI

This Chapter is compiled largely of extracts, some transcribed verbatim and others elaborated to include information necessary to the reader, from :

Adriano Lemmi
by Domenico Margiotta 33°
Maçonnerie Pratique
by Paul Rosen 33°
Initiation Human and Solar
by Alice A. Bailey
Le Diable au XIX^{e} Siècle
by Dr. Bataille.

Adriano Lemmi wrote : " The anniversary of Sept. 20, the day on which Rome became the capital of Italy, when the temporal power of the Pope was overthrown, concerns Freemasonry exclusively. It is an anniversary, a purely masonic festival, which marks the date of the arrival of Italian Freemasonry in Rome, the aim for which it had for many years been striving. "

The date of Sept. 20, 1870, is not only an Italian date, it is above all a great masonic date, for it marks the organization of a supreme rite, introduced into Freemasonry, to lend a satanic character to the vague divinity more or less well known by the name of " The Great Architect of the Universe ".

During the last years preceding the capture of Rome, Mazzini had established relations with the Masonic chief of Scottish Rites, Albert Pike, President of the Supreme Council of Charleston, United States.

Pike was a great student of the Cabala and the occult.

Mazzini had understood that Freemasonry was a powerful lever with which to revolutionize the world, but he saw it divided into numerous rites, often rivals, and even hostile to one another. Aspiring to Italian Unity as a means of breaking the temporal power of the Holy See, he dreamt of a union of masonry throughout the world to destroy the church itself as a spiritual power.

He addressed himself to Pike in preference to another Grand Orient or Supreme Council chief because of the many international ramifications of Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rites, as Pike, its recognised chief, had succeeded in gaining considerable influence over all the Supreme National Councils of this rite which had hitherto been of a purely dogmatic and liturgic character.

Mazzini, who was very practical, said that it would be inadvisable to favour one rite only to the exclusion of all the others. In a letter to Albert Pike, dated Jan. 22, 1870, he writes. " We must allow all the federations to continue just as they are, with their systems, their central authorities and their divers modes of correspondence between high grades of the same rite, organized as they are at present, but we must create a supreme rite, which will remain unknown, to which we will call those Masons of high degree whom we shall select. With regard to their brothers in masonry, these men must be pledged to the strictest secrecy. Through this supreme rite, we will govern all Freemasonry which will become the one international centre, the more powerful because its direction will be unknown. "

Thus at the time when Mazzini formed the scheme of unifying Freemasonry by creating one central universal direction reserved to a small number of high masons chosen with the greatest care, he selected Albert Pike as an ally.

Pike was born in Boston on Dec. 29, 1809.

His parents, in modest circumstances, succeeded in giving him a course at Harvard College. He then went to join his family at Newbury port. There, for a while, he taught in a primary school till he moved to Fairhaven where he continued his career of pedagogue.

In 1833 he went to Little Rock.

From 1830 to 1840, Masonry in the United States had fallen into disrepute and almost ceased to exist. After the torture and death of William Morgan in 1826, many lodges faded into oblivion to resuscitate only after the storm of public censure had abated.

During the Civil War, Pike served as brigadier-general in the Confederate army. The Confederate government named him Indian Commissioner and charged him with the conduct of negotiations with the most powerful savage tribes, to raise an army of their warriors. To facilitate his organization of this army he was made Governor of Indian Territory, and once these hordes were united, they were placed under his command. What followed can be easily understood as his troops were composed of Chickasaws, Comanches, Creeks, Cherokees, Miamis, Osages, Kansas and Chocaws, with all of whom he personally was on the best of terms. Among them, he was known as " the faithful pale-face friend and protector ". It was no longer war — it was an orgy of murder and atrocities so terrible that the foreign powers interfered. Representations made by England, threatening intervention in the name of humanity, finally compelled Jefferson Davis to disband his auxiliary Indian troops.

Mrs. Liliana Pike Room gives us the following chronological history of her father's early Masonic career. She says that he became an Oddfellow, some time in the forties, and in 1850 entered the Masonic Fraternity. After that he gradually ceased to be active as an Oddfellow. Soon becoming prominent in Masonry he advanced rapidly to the highest honours. His Masonic record is as follows :

" He was initiated in Western Star Lodge at Little Rock, Arkansas, in 1850.

" Raised to the degree of Worshipful Master, in Western Star Lodge No. 1, Little Rock, Arkansas, in July 1850.

" He became Charter Member of Magnolia Lodge, No. 60, Little Rock, Arkansas, and was Worshipful Master *ad vitam* of that lodge in 1853.

' Exalted in Union Chapter No. 2 R. A. M. Little Rock, Arkansas, in 1850.

" Greeted as Royal and Select Master at Washington, D. C, 1852.

" Created Knight Templar 1858 Washington Commandary No. 1. K. T. in Washington.

" Elected Grand High Priest of the Grand Chapter of Arkansas, in 1853.

" In 1856, met Brother Theodor S. Parvin of Connecticut and received degrees of A. A. (Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite) from 4° to 32° inclusive, on March 20th, 1853.

" Coroneted Honorary Inspector General, April 25th, 1857. Crowned Active Member of Supreme Council, Southern Jurisdiction March 20th, 1858, at Charleston, South Carolina, and on the resignation of Brother John Honour as Grand Commander, was elected M. P. Sovereign Grand Commander of the Supreme Council for the Southern Jurisdiction of the United States, January 2nd, 1859. "

Mrs. Room further adds " I will state here what he told me himself, that Sovereign Grand Commander Honour, his predecessor, resigned that office expressly that he might be elected Sovereign Grand Commander. "

The secretary of the Supreme Council at Charleston, at this time, and its ruling power was Pike's great friend, Gallatin Mackey.

On the other hand, Margiotta gives the following particulars :

" Towards this epoch, Pike and Mackey received the visit of Longfellow. This Longfellow was a Scottish Rites Mason who, in 1837, had taken up his residence in the United States, becoming the intimate friend and private secretary of Moses Holbrook, then Sovereign Commander of the Supreme Council of Charleston. The intimacy between Longfellow and Holbrook became quickly serious as both had thoroughly studied the occult sciences and enjoyed discussing the mysteries of the Cabala.

' When Longfellow asked his Grand Master's permission to join the order of the Oddfellows for the purpose of studying its organization, his request was granted.[1]

" Oddfellow is the name adopted by the members of a society founded in London towards 1788. Their meeting places were called Lodges, as in Masonry, and many were dissolved under the suspicion that their character was subversive, though the visible aims of the fraternity were simply mutual help and diversion. But the society, changing its location and its name, continued a precarious existence till, in 1809, several members founded a new lodge at Manchester. Then some of them separated in 1813 and formed the independent Order of Oddfellows (I. 0. 0. F.) the members of the general council of which were all to reside at Manchester. The order was introduced in America, in 1819, by the blacksmith (Thomas) Wildey, who founded Washington Lodge No. 1, at Baltimore. This town became the headquarters of the American and Canadian Oddfellows and, thanks to the energy of Wildey, the order made great headway and spread with rapidity.

---

[1] Margiotta, *Adriano Lemmi,* p. 93 *et seq.*

" Longfellow and Holbrook, while exchanging views on the Cabala, had formed the project of creating a Satanic rite in which the adepts would be instructed in Black Magic, but Holbrook, the Grand Master of the Supreme Council of Charleston, who had already composed a suitable ritual and sacrilegious mass called *Adonaicide Mass,* died, retarding the fulfilment of the project. " He was succeeded by John Honour, after whose death the dream of the Jew, Moses Holbrook, to subvert Masonry, was fulfilled by Albert Pike on a gigantic scale.

" Longfellow left Charleston after the death of his patron and, in 1854, went to Hamilton, Canada. There, with the authorisation of Wildey, he submitted the rituals of Holbrook to this flourishing society and it was decided to graft a second and separate class of adepts, practising secret Satanism, on to the original body. But Wildey, becoming suddenly jealous, refused the use of his premises. "

"Undiscouraged by obstacles placed in his way by Wildey, Longfellow returned to Charleston in 1857, where he had interviews with Pike and Mackey to whom he revealed his plan. The innovation of Longfellow was declared to be marvellous, but Pike, who had himself already thought of introducing Luciferianism into the inner shrines of Scottish Rites Freemasonry, would not take a definite stand, so Longfellow addressed himself directly to the Grand Master John Honour. He seemed indifferent to the subject on the grounds that one could not introduce Satanism into the Supreme Council of Scottish Rites without the knowledge of his lieutenant-commander, Charles Furman, who was opposed to changes of this kind. Finally Longfellow obtained from Wildey the authorisation secretly to use the Order of the Oddfellows for the initiations of the second class, which was to form an absolutely secret rite and to have its centre at Hamilton. The adepts of the second class Oddfellows, practising Satanism, then took the name of Re-Theurgist-Optimates [2] (used by the Palladists also) and Longfellow became the Grand Priest of the ' New Evocative Magic

As a consequence of the intrigues and manoeuvres of some members of the Masonic organization, the

---

2. Gerard de Nerval, *Les Illumines,* p. 172.

Translation : " Several philosophers of this period followed Quintus Aucler in this revival of the ideas of the school of Alexandria. It is towards the same period that Dupont (de Nemours) published his *Philosophy of the Universe,* founded on the same elements of adoration of planetary intelligences.

Likewise, he established, between man and God, a chain of immortal spirits which he called " Optimates " and through whom any *illuminé* can have communication. It is always the doctrine of the " *ammoneans* " gods, the " *eons* " or " *eloims* " of antiquity.

office of Grand Master had become an elective position which was now destined to be filled by the particular member of the Fraternity selected by the conspirators. Among these was Gallatin Mackey, a Luciferian, who proposed Albert Pike, another Luciferian, for the post of Grand Master of the Supreme Council of Charleston to which he was duly elected on January 6th 1859, his candidacy being unopposed.

Margiotta adds :

" Once Grand Master, Pike reestablished the supremacy of his Supreme Council and succeeded gradually in becoming an important Masonic personage and the real chief of Scottish Rites ".

In 1806, a jeweller, Joseph Cerneau, founded a rival rite in New York composed of the same 33 degrees of initiation as the order of which he himself was chief. This rite, which was later worked by F. Foulhouze, an American, excited the ire of the Sovereign Pontiff of Universal Freemasonry who waged a ceaseless warfare of excommunication against it.

From letters scattered through different masonic archives, it is evident that Mazzini formed his great project after 1866. The grand patriarch of the sect in Europe, Lord Palmerston, had died. Convinced that the power he had wielded was purely the result of personal influence with the different chiefs and that, not being based on an efficient organization it was unlikely to endure, Mazzini set himself to study the problem of the international organization of Freemasonry, and in 1870 reached an agreement with Pike for the creation of the Supreme Rite.

The Franco-Prussian war, which, enabled the King of Piedmont, already called King of Italy, to take Rome, favoured the abolition of the temporal power of the Pope, and at this time the constitution of central high masonry was decreed and signed between Albert Pike and Giuseppe Mazzini. The act of creation is dated Sept. 20, 1870, the day upon which the army of invasion, commanded by the Freemason, General Cadorna, entered the Eternal City.

The two founders divided their powers according to the following plan. To Pike was given dogmatic authority and the title of Sovereign Pontiff of Universal Freemasonry, while Mazzini held the executive authority with the title of Sovereign Chief of Political Action. Mazzini evinced great deference towards the views of the Patriarch of Charleston and begged him to draw up the statutes of the grades of the Supreme Secret Rite which would thus be the liturgic bonds of the members of centralized high masonry.

Albert Pike, in honour of his Templar Baphomet, which was in the keeping of his first and historic Supreme Council, named the order the *New and Reformed Palladian Rite* or *New and Reformed Palladium.* [3]

" It was agreed ", continues Margiotta, " that the existence of this rite would be kept strictly secret and that no mention of it would ever be made in the assemblies of the Lodges and Inner Shrines of other rites, even when by accident, the meeting might happen to be composed exclusively of brothers having the perfect initiation, for the secret of the new institution was only to be divulged with the greatest caution to a chosen few belonging to the ordinary high grades. *

---

[3] In his *Cyclopædia of Fraternities* Stevens writes that the ' Order of the Palladium' was founded in 1730 and soon afterwards introduced in Charleston where it remained inactive until 1886, It blossomed anew under the name of ' Reformed Palladium ' and gave a new impulse to the traditions of High Masonry. Stevens adds that the Palladium is little known as the number of its members is strictly limited and the deepest secrecy surrounds all its deliberations.

" To recruit adepts, they planned to use some members of the other rites, but in the beginning they meant to rely principally on those among the initiates of Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rites who were already addicted to occultism.

" Everyone knows that in masonry from the degree of Master, a mason may, without being a member of a lodge, assist at sessions as a visitor, at Lodges not belonging to his own rite or even to his own national federation, provided he is a regular active mason and presents himself at a lodge working at a degree equal to, or below the highest degree of which he is possessed. Thus a Rose Croix (18th degree Scottish Rites), travelling in any country, may, if he frequents assiduously his lodge and chapter, present himself at any lodge of a degree equal, to or inferior to his own and assist at a seance, but he cannot enter an areopagus of Knights Kadosch (30th degree), even one of his own rite. A 33rd would be well received everywhere, in any country, in any rite the existence of which is acknowledged. Thus it was particularly the initiates of the thirty-third degree Scottish Rites, who, owing to their extensive international ramifications, were privileged to recruit adepts for Palladism. That is why the supreme rite created its Triangles (the name given to Palladian Lodges) by degrees, but these were established on a firm base, the lowliest of its initiates being brothers long tested in ordinary masonry.

" One will better understand these precautions knowing that Palladism is essentially a Luciferian rite. Its religion is Manichean neo-gnosticism, teaching that the divinity is dual and that Lucifer is the equal

---

4. Margiotta, *op. cit.,* p. 97 *et seq.*

of Adonay, with Lucifer, the God of Light and Goodness struggling for humanity against Adonay the God of Darkness and Evil. In stating this principle of the secret cult of the triangles, Albert Pike had only specified and unveiled the dogmas of the high grades of all other masonries, for in no matter what rite, the Great Architect of the Universe is not the God worshipped by the Christians.

" For other reasons these precautions were still necessary, in order to render possible the exercise of a supreme central directing power, reaching all the rites through the personal influence of the Elects and Perfect Initiates, these being invested with privileges, and giving the impulse, which emanated from the source of the highest universal authority. If Brothers, not fully initiated, had suspected the existence of this supreme organization, it is evident that, in the ordinary Lodges there would always have been a tendency to resist the motions of such privileged persons.

" To insure the creation and good working of this formidable machine of Palladism, Mazzini had reserved for himself the office of Chief of Political Action nor had he hesitated in bowing to the will of the Patriarch of Charleston who, by his preponderance in Scottish Rites, could easily penetrate all countries of the globe with "the new institution. That is the reason for Mazzini giving supremacy to the dogmatic over the political authority in International Freemasonry.

' The Holy See of the Dogma for the whole masonic world was set up at Charleston, the sacred city of the Palladium. Pike, the Sovereign Pontiff of Lucifer, was the president of the Supreme Dogmatic Directory, composed of ten brothers of the highest grades who formed his Supreme Grand College of Emeritus Masons. The Sovereign Executive Directory of High Masonry was established at Rome under Mazzini himself who, knowing the rivalry between the different Supreme Councils in Italy, seldom appeared at the official meetings of the Grand Orient of Rome, and, so as not to awaken suspicion in the minds of ordinary high grade Italian Masons in whom he had not confided the secret of the new institution, pretended to be occupied with socialism only ".

Rut was this interest, plan or pretence ?

In the following paragraph on the International in *World Revolution* by N. Webster, page 179, we find a link, if not the link, between Mazzini and Karl Marx. Mazzini and his International Masons are already preparing the subversion of the Socialist Labour movement.

" At the meeting in St. Martin's Hall, on September 28, 1864, when the ' International' was definitely founded, Marx played no part at all. ' I was present', he wrote Engels, ' only as a dumb personage on the platform'. Rut he was named nevertheless a member of the sub-committee, the other members being Mazzini's secretary— a Polish Jew named Wolff — Le Lubez, a French Freemason, Cremer, the secretary of the English Masons' Union, and Weston, the Owenite. At the first meeting of this committee, Wolff placed before it the statutes of Mazzini's Working-men's Association, proposing them as the basis of the new association; Le Lubez suggested amendments described by Marx as ' perfectly childish '. ' I was firmly resolved ', he wrote, 'not to leave a single line if possible of all their balderdash'. In a few weeks he had succeeded in establishing his authority. ' My propositions were all accepted by the commission.' "

As to whether Marx thus manoeuvred himself into a dominant position in the movement, or Mazzini's agents manoeuvred Marx into this position to suit their own ends, is left to our imagination, but the fact of someone, not an outstanding personality, being elected or nominated on a committee for no particular reason, generally means, to anyone versed in the technique of political tricks, that the nomination or election was something arranged " behind the scenes ".

On page 46 in *La Theologie Politique de Mazzini et l'Internationale,* Bakounine, the celebrated Russian anarchist, refutes certain statements said to have been current in London about himself at the time, in the following terms :

"But in 1864, while on my way through London, he (Karl Marx) came to see me, and assured me that he (Mazzini) had never taken any part direct or indirect in these calumnies against me which he himself had considered most infamous. I had to believe. "

It is a fact that for a certain length of time Mazzini and Marx were closely associated.

An eminent Mason, the atheist leader of the Italian Socialists, Alberto Mario, husband of Miss Jessie White, an ardent Mazzinian and the authoress of a history of her hero — *Delia vita di Giuseppe Mazzini* — was moreover a tool of Pike whom he generally consulted on all important matters. Thus, in order to divert the attention of the imperfect initiates, Mazzini organized a congress of working men in Rome, in October 1871. A close examination of the work of this congress shows however that it was only pretence for nothing practical was attempted or accomplished. On the other hand, he busied himself with grouping all the political elements of the sect in which occult manoeuvre his agent, Adriano Lemmi, helped him more than anyone else.

" When Pike sent him a copy of his Luciferian rituals, Mazzini was full of an enthusiastic praise for his colleague's work which he expressed in his articles in *La Roma del Popolo.* The public however failed to understand the sentiment that inspired him to proclaim the existence of a divinity and denounce materialism and atheism. One was puzzled to find this man a mystic. He showed himself extremely religious yet he declared himself the sworn enemy of the Church ! "[5]

Pike's literary achievements were numerous. These were, *Ariel, Morals and Dogma, The Sacred Hymns, The Sephar H. Debarim, Book of the Word*[6], *Legenda Magistralia, Ritual of the New and Reformed Palladium (4 grades out of 5) The Book of Revelations, The Supreme Verb, The Ritual of Elect Magus, and The Book of Apadno,* which latter contains the prophecies concerning the reign of the Anti-Christ from the Satanic point of view.

The theological dogma of Albert Pike is explained in the ' Instructions ' issued by him, on July 14, 1889, to the 23 Supreme Councils of the world and have been recorded by A. C. De La Rive in *La Femme et l'Enfant dans la Franc-Maçonnerie Universelle* (page 588) from which book we translate and quote as follows :

" That which we must say to the crowd is — We worship a God, but it is the God that one adores without superstition.

" To you, Sovereign Grand Inspectors General, we say this, that you may repeat it to the Brethren of the 32nd, 31st and 30th degrees — The Masonic religion should be, by all of us initiates of the high degrees, maintained in the purity of the Luciferian doctrine.

" If Lucifer were not God, would Adonay (The God of the Christians) whose deeds prove his cruelty, perfidy, and hatred of man, barbarism and repulsion for science, would Adonay and his priests, calumniate him?

---

[5] Margiotta, *op. cit.,* p. 100.

[6] Rosen, *Maçonnerie pratique,* vol. I, p. 434.

" Yes, Lucifer is God, and unfortunately Adonay is also God. For the eternal law is that there is no light without shade, no beauty without ugliness, no white without black, for the absolute can only exist as two Gods : darkness being necessary to light to serve as its foil as the pedestal is necessary to the statue, and the brake to the locomotive.

" In analogical and universal dynamics one can only lean on that which will resist. Thus the universe is balanced by two forces which maintain its equilibrium : the force of attraction and that of repulsion. These two forces exist in physics, philosophy and religion. And the scientific reality of the divine dualism is demonstrated by the phenomena of polarity and by the universal law of sympathies and antipathies. That is why the intelligent disciples of Zoroaster, as well as, after them, the Gnostics, the Manicheans and the Templars have admitted, as the only logical metaphysical conception, the system of the two divine principles fighting eternally, and one cannot believe the one inferior in power to the other.

" Thus, the doctrine of Satanism is a heresy ; and the true and pure philosophic religion is the belief in Lucifer, the equal of Adonay ; but Lucifer, God of Light and God of Good, is struggling for humanity against Adonay, the God of Darkness and Evil. "

One must not lose sight of the fact that Pike occupied simultaneously the positions of Grand Master of the Central Directory of Washington, that of Grand Commander of the Supreme Council of Charleston and that of Sovereign Pontiff of Universal Freemasonry.

In 1880, a charter was granted him by the Royal Order of Scotland for the foundation of Lodges in America appointing him Provincial Grand Master of the order of H. R. M. He was indeed a great organizer.

Margiotta further writes:

" The two secret chiefs, Pike and Mazzini, finally completed the organization of high masonry, establishing four Grand Central Directories for the world, functioning thenceforth to gather information for the benefit of their political policy and dogmatic propaganda. These were, The Grand Central Directories for North America at Washington, for South America at Montevideo, for Europe at Naples, and for Asia and Oceania at Calcutta. Later, a central Sub-Directory for Africa was founded at Port Louis, Island of Mauritius, and after the death of Mazzini, the supreme chief constituted a Universal Sovereign Administrative Directory at Berlin which ranked in the hierarchy after the Sovereign Executive Directories and before the four Great Central Directories. "

Gallatin Mackey, the confidant of Albert Pike, died in Charleston on June 20, 1881. He was the author of many works on masonry, namely *The Lexicon of Freemasonry,* published in New York in 1845, *The History of Freemasonry in South Carolina, The Manual of the Lodge, The Masonic Ritualist, The Symbolism of Freemasonry* and *The Encyclopedia of Freemasonry,* the authorship of which is generally now attributed to Albert George Mackey.

According to the fundamental constitution of the Palladium, the nomination of the Chief of Political Action, the President of the Sovereign Executive Directory, was not an elective office. Its incumbent was an appointee of the Sovereign Pontiff of Universal Freemasonry.

When Mazzini felt himself to be dying, he designated Adriano Lemmi as his successor. He died on March 11 1872, at Pisa, and Albert Pike, deferring to his wishes, named Adriano Lemmi as his successor.

Pike was not only an organizer and a politician, he was also, in his religious capacity, as Cabalist and spiritist, a mystic on whose personality the following anecdote sheds a flood of light.

" Speaking before the Supreme Council of Charleston, on October 20, 1884, he gave an account of his recent travels through the United States and some incidental experiences. One of these, he described as follows : — 'At Saint Louis, we operated the grand rites, and through Sister Ingersoll, who is a first class medium, received astonishing revelations during a solemn Palladian session at which I presided, assisted by Brother Friedman and Sister Warhnburn. Without putting Sister Ingersoll to sleep, we saturated her with the spirit of Ariel himself, but Ariel took possession of her with 329 more spirits of fire and the seance from then on was marvellous. Sister Ingersoll, lifted into space, floated over the assembly and her garments were suddenly devoured by a flame which enfolded, without burning her. We saw her thus in a state of nudity for over ten minutes. Flitting above our heads, as though borne by an invisible cloud, or upheld by beneficent spirits, she answered all questions put to her. We thus soon had the latest news of our very illustrious brother Adriano Lemmi. Then, Astaroth, in person, revealed himself, flying beside our medium and holding her hand. He breathed upon her and her clothes, returning from nowhere, clothed her again. Finally Astaroth vanished and our sister fell gently on to a chair where, with her head thrown back she gave up Ariel and the 329 spirits who had accompanied him.

We counted 330 exhalations in all at the end of this most successful experiment. "[7]

A number of books of this period refer to what must have been a wireless telephone in the possession of the heads of the Masonic organization. A translation of the detailed description of this instrument, given in Bataille's book, is quoted herewith as being of interest in these days when magic sometimes becomes experimental science. At the date on which this description was first printed (1894) wireless was unknown.

" In his house, Gallatin Mackey once showed me that Arcula Mystica (the Mystic Box), of which there are only seven examples in existence, at Charleston, Borne, Berlin, Washington, Monte Video, Naples and Calcutta.[8]

" The exterior of this small box resembles a liqueurs receptacle. A spring catch opens simultaneously its two doors and lid. Inside, in the middle, stands a telephone mouthpiece in silver, which, at first sight, one would take for a very small trumpet or hunting horn. At the left is a little rope made of twisted silver threads, one end of which is attached to the machine while the other extremity ends in a, kind of little bell which one holds to one's ear to hear the voice of the person with whom one is speaking, just like the telephone of today. At the right is a toad, -in silver, with its mouth open. Placed around the opening of the mouth-piece, stand seven statuettes in gold, each on a small separate silver pedestal representing symbolically the seven cardinal virtues of the Palladian Ladder.

" Each of these seven statuettes designates one of the Directories. The statuette Ignis (sacred fire) divine endeavour, stands for the Supreme Dogmatic Directory of Charleston ; Ratio (Reason, triumphant over superstition), the Sovereign Executive Directory of Rome ; Labor (Labour) the Sovereign Administrative Directory of Berlin ; Ubertas (fecundity), Caritas (Masonic Charity), Emancipatio (the emancipation of humanity shedding the yoke of all despotisms) and Felicitas (Happiness derived from virtuous practices) representing the four Grand Central Directories of Washington, Naples, Monte Video and Calcutta.

---

[7] Bataille, *Le Diable au XIX^e siècle,* p. 360 *et seq.*

[8] *Ibid.,* p. 391.

" "When the Supreme Dogmatical chief wishes to communicate, for example, with the head of political action, he presses his finger on the Statuette Ignis and on the Statuette Ratio : these sink into their sockets and at the same instant, a strong whistling is heard in Rome, in the office where Lemmi keeps his Arcula Mystica ; Lemmi opens his box and sees the statuette of Ignis sunk, while tiny, harmless flames issue from the throat of the silver toad. Then he knows that the Sovereign Pontiff of Charleston wishes to speak to him. He presses down the statuette of Ratio in his box and from then on, the conversation between the two chiefs proceeds, each one speaking directly into the mouthpiece described above, while at the same time holding to his ear the small silver bell.

" At the end of the conversation, each chief replaces the golden statuettes by pulling them up by the head.

" Every Sovereign Grand Master of a Directory travels with his Arcula Mystica. This box is personally confided to him. That of the Administrative Directory of Berlin is kept by the Sovereign Finance Delegate... who is actually Bleichroeder (1893).

" It is evidently necessary to detach the memory of Albert Pike from the great number of exaggerated legends which cling to his name, but with a man of this type one never knows just what to think. His. reputation as an Occultist had overstepped the doors of the lodges and inner shrines. Everyone knew from hearsay that he gave himself up to Luciferian practices. "

Owing to the discredit cast upon Bataille's writings, we now quote in corroboration of the existence of such rites as described above from the well known theosophist Mrs. Alice A. Bailey's book, *Initiation Human and Solar,* (published 1922 by the Lucifer Publishing Co., New York), which has never been challenged : —

Such quotations touch upon the following subjects :

Description of the Deity.
Description of Initiation and fire.
Description, of Sex and fire.
Description of the Seven Rays.

1. " The Lord of the World, the One Initiator,. He Who is called in the Bible ' The Ancient of Days ', and in the Hindu Scriptures the First Kumara, He, Sanat Kumara it is, Who from His throne at Shamballa in the Gobi desert, presides over the Lodge of Masters, and holds in His hands the reins of government in all the three departments. Called in some Scriptures ' the Great Sacrifice ', He has chosen to watch over the evolution of men and devas until all have been occultly ' saved '. He it is Who, four times a year, meets in conference with all the Chohans and Masters, and authorises what shall be done to further the ends of evolution.. " [9]

Call it Lucifer, Satan or the Devil, it is always the same old manifestation revamped now as Sanat Kumara and, while he may indeed seem to be a very good god, his presence alone is our only concern at the moment.

---

[9] Bailey, *Initiation Human and Solar,* p. 106.

2. As to initiation, — " The Hierophant utters the word, and the force is literally thrown into the initiate's bodies and centres, passing down through the centres on the mental plane, via the astral centres, to the centres on etheric levels, which finally absorb it. This is the stupendous moment for the initiate, and brings to him a realisation of the literal absolute truth of the phrase that ' God is a consuming fire '. He knows past all gainsaying that fiery energy and electric force constitute the sum-total of all that is. He is literally bathed in the fires of purification ; he sees fire on all sides, pouring out through the Rod (of initiation) circulating around the Triangle, and passing through the bodies of the two sponsoring adepts. For a brief second, the entire Lodge of Masters and initiates, standing in their ceremonial places without the Triangle, are hidden from view by a wall of fire. The initiate sees no one, save the Hierophant, and is aware of nothing but a fiery blaze of pure, blue-white flame, which burns, but destroys not, which intensifies the activity of every atom in his body without disintegrating, and which purifies his entire nature. The fire tries his work, of what sort it is, and he passes through the Flame.[10]

" At the fifth initiation the great secret which concerns the fire or spirit aspect is revealed to the wondering and amazed Master, and He realises in a sense incomprehensible to man the fact that all is fire and fire is all. "[11]

3. " Let the disciple transfer the fire from the lower triangle to the higher, and preserve that which is created through the fire of the midway point.[12]

---

[10] Bailey, *op. cit.,* p. 133.
[11] *Ibid.,* p. 174.
[12] *Ibid.,* p. 204.

" This means, literally, the control by the initiate of the sex impulse, as usually understood, and the transference of the fire which now normally vitalises the generative organs *to* the throat centre, thus leading to creation upon the mental plane through the agency of mind... "

4. As to the seven rays :

Groups of Egos are formed :

1. According to their ray.
2. According to their sub-ray.
3. According to their rate of vibration.

They are also grouped for purposes of classification :

1. As Egos, according to the egoic ray.
2. As personalities, according to the subray which is governing the personality. [13]

" All are graded and charted. The Masters have Their Halls of Records, with a system of tabulation incomprehensible to us owing to its magnitude and its necessary intricacies wherein these charts are kept. They are under the care of a Chohan of a Ray, each Ray having its own collection of charts... These Halls of Records are mostly on the lowest levels of the mental plane and the highest of the astral, as they can be there most fully utilised and are most easily accessible. "

" While the ray business may be an excellent scientific, though little known, method of keeping in touch with the adepts it has one very serious disadvantage, namely, that whoever is attuned to a ray is, in case of revenge or *evil* intent on the part of a superior, (shall we say scientist ?) vulnerable on this ray! "

One is almost astonished at the frankness displayed by Mrs. Bailey in her revelations concerning the secrets of Initiation, when one remembers the tragic fate of

---

13. Bailey, *op. cit.,* p. 68.

William Morgan, the secret condemnation, kidnapping and sequestration, torture and final assassination of this New York Journalist who had published for the profane public the principal masonic rituals of the period.

Carlile, in his *Manual of Freemasonry,* gives the following particulars : — " My exposure of Freemasonry, in 1825, led to its exposure in the United States of America; and a Mason there, of the name of William Morgan, having announced his intention of assisting in the work of exposure, was kidnapped, under pretended forms and warrants of law, by his brother Masons, removed from the State of New York to the borders of Canada, near the falls of Niagara, and there most barbarously murdered. This happened in 1826. The States have been for many years much excited upon the subject; a regular warfare has arisen between Masons and anti-Masons. Societies of anti-Masons have been formed, newspapers and magazines started, and many pamphlets and volumes, with much correspondence, published ; so that before the slavery question was passed amongst them, all parties had merged themselves into Masons and anti-Masons. Several persons were punished for the abduction of Morgan : but the murderers were sheltered by Masonic Lodges, and rescued from justice. "

" The story of the murder of William Morgan for the crime of violating Masonic secrecy has long been a well known historical fact ; but in August, 1875, the full particulars were brought to light by the publication of two letters from the Venerable Thurlow Weed. The facts were as follows :[14]

" In the year 1826, Morgan, who had passed through all the degrees of Masonry and held a very high position in the Order, conceived the idea of publishing a book disclosing all the secrets of the sect. What his motive may have been is only conjectural. Mr. Weed was living at that time in the town of Rochester, New York, and Morgan requested him to publish the projected book. Mr. Weed declined, and Morgan went to the adjoining town of Batavia, where he arranged with another person for the publication.

---

[14] Gargano, *Irish and English Freemasons,* p. 73.

" He had written a portion of the book, and was engaged in completing it when he was arrested on a false charge of larceny, on the 10th Sept., and conveyed to the jail of Ontario county. The sheriff and officers of this prison were Masons. His house was searched, and his manuscripts were seized and destroyed.

"On the evening of the 12th Sept, he was discharged by the interference of some of the conspirators, and, as he passed out of the door of the jail, was seized by them, taken a short distance, and then forcibly put into a carriage. He was carried, in the course of that night, on to the ridge-road about two miles beyond the village of Rochester. During the next day, he was taken to Lewiston, a distance of seventy or eighty miles, and from thence to Fort Niagara, at the mouth of the Niagara river. His benevolent captors had decided on bringing him here in the hope that their brother Masons of Canada would aid them in disposing of him. His murder was not then contemplated ; but it was hoped that the Canadian Masons would take charge of him and send him to end his days among the Indian tribes, in the north-west of Canada. Placing their prisoner in Fort Niagara, his captors crossed the river into Canada to attend a meeting of a lodge there ; but the Canadian Masons, after much deliberation, refused to become parties to the business. The American Masons returned to Fort Niagara, and in a few days afterwards a large number of men, high in the order, assembled a short distance off to open an Encampment of Knight Templars, the additional power of the 'sealed obligation' being necessary for such a case. At night they dined together, and, after dinner, the chaplain gave a sentiment so significant that all thoughts were turned towards Fort Niagara. The 'sentiment' was, in fact, 'death to all traitors' and immediately afterwards one of the company, Colonel King, arose from the table and called four of the others to accompany him. These were Whitney, a stonemason; Chubbuch, a farmer; Garside, a butcher; and Howard, a bookbinder. 'They were all' says Mr. Weed, 'men of correct habits and good character, and all, I doubt not, were moved by an enthusiastic but most misguided sense of duty'. King told them that he had an order from the Grand Master, the execution of which required their assistance, and they replied that they would obey it. The five murderers were then driven in a carriage to the fort where Morgan was confined. It was just midnight. They told the doomed man that his friends had completed their arrangements for his removal to Canada, where his life would be safe. He consented to go with them, and they walked to the wharf where a boat was waiting for them; they embarked and rowed away into the darkness. When the boat reached the point where Niagara River empties itself into Lake Ontario, the murderers threw off all pretence, and with some horrible mummeries ordered Morgan to prepare for death. They wound a rope around him, attaching to each end of it a heavy weight, and threw him overboard. He sank like a stone, and the murderers returned to tell their comrades that the traitor had met a traitor's doom. One of the murderers, Whitney, told all these particulars to Mr. Weed a few months afterwards, but it is only now, when all the criminals are dead, that he makes the fact public. The body of Morgan was found a year afterwards, identified by his wife and friends, and buried ; and although the Masons tried to dispute the identification, their efforts were futile. None of the murderers was ever brought to justice. "[15]

So much for the oath of secrecy and brotherhood I

Nowadays, greater precautions are observed in getting rid of the enemies of the sect. Some little study and the cooperation of a few culpable doctors, its auxiliaries and affiliates, enable the terrible sect to dispose easily of their enemies. The victim of their vengeance, swallowing some disease germ, meets a fate that none can prove to have been artificially contrived. This is the secret of secrets, denied again and again ! And yet the charge remains ! For plague, cholera and all epidemics can be let loose on the world at a word from the Hidden Masters !

But to return to the organization of Freemasonry.

It is necessary here to say that in many instances, where a masculine lodge has a feminine annex, its existence is frequently completely ignored by the majority of the brothers. No mutual visiting is allowed among the female members of the lower masonic degrees, for a sister may enter lodges other than her own, only after she has herself attained the fifth degree. As well

---

15. Blanchard, *Scottish Rite Masonry Illustrated,* p. 33.

" In his address before his Council in 1878, Albert Pike said :

' I am often asked why we do not publish our old transactions, to which I am compelled to reply, that we have none to publish. We have no records of the transactions at Charleston from 1801 to 1860. What records we had were destroyed... during the war. (American Civil War.)' "

as masculine General Inspectors on permanent missions, in direct communication with Charleston, there are General Inspectresses, high grade women masons belonging to ordinary Masonry who, while not necessarily affiliated to palladism, serve the purpose of its leaders, their good offices being much appreciated when they furnish useful information to headquarters. These women are privileged to enter the lodges and inner shrines of masonry only, but are not admitted to Palladian triangles. As for men belonging to an adoptive lodge where brothers and sisters work together they must have at least attained the 32nd (Prince of the Royal Secret) or a corresponding grade in another rote before they can enter an Areopagus of Sublime Ecossaise.

As regards the position of women in Masonry, we think that this cannot be better explained than in the words of Albert Pike himself. In *La Femme et l'Enfant dans la Franc-Maçonnerie Universelle* page 578, A. C. De La Rive states that on July 14, 1889, Albert Pike, Sovereign Pontiff of Universal Freemasonry, addressed to the 23 Supreme Confederated Councils of the world the following instructions, which we quote herewith in part.

" To the science of Faust, the real Mason will join the impassibility of Job. He will eradicate superstition from his heart and cultivate decision of character. He will accept pleasure only when he wishes it and will wish it only when he should do so.

" We earnestly recommend the creation of Lodges of Adoption. They are indispensable to the formation of Masons who are indeed Masters of themselves. The pnest tries to subdue his flesh by enforced celibacy... The real Mason, on the contrary, reaches perfection, that is to say achieves self mastery, by using his zeal in the Lodges of Adoption in submitting to all natural ordeals. Commerce with women, belonging to all brethren, forms for him an armour against those passions which lead hearts astray. He alone can really possess voluptuousness. To be able, at will, to use or to abstain, is a twofold power. Woman fetters thee by thy desires, we say to the adept, well, use women often and without passion; thou wilt thus become master of thy desires, and thou wilt enchain woman. From which it must perforce result that the real Mason will succeed in easily solving the problem of the flesh.

" It is evidently not absolutely necessary that the man whom you are leading towards the high grades be immediately perfect and have understood our secret on his entrance into Masonry. That which we ask you is first to observe him with the greatest care during his apprenticeship and afterwards, when he enters the Lodge of Adoption as Companion to use that as your criterion, your instrument of infallible control.

" The Lodge of Brothers which has failed to annex a Lodge of Sisters is incomplete and destined inevitably never to produce anything but Brethren, with whom politics are the chief concern, men who will be chiefly preoccupied with intrigue and rivalry, who will do bad work and whose politics will be incoherent. "

Dr. Bataille elucidates this point in the following terms :

" Concerning androgynous lodges, Masons generally give the same answer. They either say 'Yes, once upon a time there were sister masons but there are none any longer ' or, if forced to make a concession say, ' Lodges admitting women are irregular and function entirely outside of Masonry proper, unrecognized by Grand Orients and Supreme Councils '. "

" Having referred to the great care exercised to hide the existence of the sister masons, it is now opportune to expose the ruse employed in stifling further investigation. From time to time, one of the semi-initiates is urged to bring a resolution suggesting the establishment of feminine lodges, and a petition is drawn up and sent in to the Grand Orient or Supreme Council, whereupon the chiefs gravely insert a decree in the official bulletin rejecting the petition, and emphasising the point that ' the constitution is opposed to the creation of regular female lodges '. Then, whenever the question of sister masons is raised in the profane press, — quick! The Grand Orients and Supreme Councils publish these famous decrees. "[16]

In certain cities where masonic secrecy is less carefully guarded, a part of the masonic premises is available for the use of the profane public and daily lectures or instructions of the brother professors. In these rooms, every evening, accounting, stenography, foreign languages and other popular professional accomplishments are taught, a great activity is thus created around masonic headquarters and the entrance of a woman more or less attracts no attention. The sister masons, however, know to which room they must go and, once past the threshold of the building, it is not to the professorial lecture room that they wend their way.

In connection with Eastern occultism and its organization Dr. Bataille made the following statement and curious deduction : " A number of Satanic monasteries are concealed today under the guise of Musulman harems or annexes to Lama, or Brahmin monasteries, but it is possible that some day these institutions might take root in Europe where, under a deceptive exterior,

---

• Bataille, *op. cit.*, pp. 475, 478.

one of these communities might be established. When one knows the true mission of the 'Pink Serpents' one wonders if Christianity will not presently assist at this crowning abomination — a convent of so called Christians practising luciferianism.

" The 'Pink Serpents' are sister masons. They are the luciferian missionaries and operate as individuals and under conditions of the greatest secrecy. No records of the money appropriated for these religious spies are shown. "

But let us resume the subject of Palladism as explained by Dr. Bataille.

" This super-rite, which is masonic luciferian spiritism, must not be confused with the machinery of high masonry. Palladism is the cult of Satan in the inner shrines of a rite superposed to ail the rites. It is a cult, a religion. High masonry is a supreme administration involving an organization much more highly developed than Palladism whose secret leaders, some of whom are not luciferian, act in concert and accept a superior central authority in order that their work may be the more effective [17].

" In founding the New and Reformed Palladian rite, General Pike did not create masonic occultism. Anderson, Desaguliers, Weishaupt, Swedenborg, Lessing, Frederic II of Prussia, Mesmer, Pernety, Cagliostro, Martinez Pasqualis and his disciple Saint-Martin,. Francia (the dictator of Paraguay) Lord Palmerston, General Contreras, Mazzini, and many other distinguished Freemasons practised occultism and worked at the Great Work of the Cabala,[18] but before the year

---

[17] Bataille, *op. cit.,* vol. I, p. 346 *et seq.*

[18] Chacornac, *Eliphas Levi,* p. 191.

" Importuned by his friends Ch. Fauvety and Caubet, 1870, the inner shrines all operated without other direction than that of the theurgic rituals of Swedenborg, Saint-Martin, Laffon, Landebat, and the Vicomte de la Jonquière, etc. and the Masonic initiates of Hermeticism were widely dispersed in different schools which were local and not international.

" While Pike laid the foundation of Palladism at Charleston, Mazzini organized the centralization of Political action in Rome, and two years after the founding of the Sovereign Executive and the Supreme Dogmatic Directories, a third, the Sovereign Administrative Directory, was instituted in Berlin. This latter functioned by means of a constantly renewed committee of seven taken from the Supreme Councils, Grand Encampments, Grand Orients, and Grand Lodges of the world. By means of an ingeniously contrived system of rotation, these representatives act by virtue of their mandate for three months only. Each of the existing rites, with the exception of the Palladian, send annually to Berlin two of its members of the Superior degrees, drawn from any country except Germany, which alone, of all those represented, is

who both belonged to the Grand Orient, Eliphas Levi became a Mason on March 14, 1861, being initiated in the Lodge *Rose du Parfait Silence* of which Caubet was the Venerable. The ceremony was performed in the presence of many brothers.

" In his reception speech, Eliphas Levi, to the great astonishment of his auditors, little inclined to paradoxes, made the following statement.

I come to bring you your lost traditions, the exact knowledge of your signs and emblems, and in consequence to show you the aim for the attainment of which your association has been constituted. '

He then tried to demonstrate to his coreligionists that Masonic symbolism is borrowed from the Cabala. It was time wasted. No one believed him."

entitled to one permanent member whose quarterly-term of office expires at the end of the time allotted to the particular lodge of which he is a delegate... The members of the Sovereign Administrative Directory are always given 120 days notice of their appointments in order to enable them to plan what would appear to be a pleasure trip or a holiday, when, in fact, they are going on the business of the association.

" Two special delegates are permanently attached to the Directory of Berlin, one for finance and one for propaganda. At the present date, (1894) Bleichroeder fills the first mentioned position and Findel, a non-luciferian, the second. These officers are obliged to live in Germany and to be in a sufficiently independent position to be able to go to the seat of the Directory at a moment's notice.

" The business of the Propaganda agent is to furnish information to the chiefs at Rome and Charleston... He receives monthly, by secret messenger from Berlin, the report of all measures formulated at the Sovereign Administrative Directory relating to means and methods judged useful in spreading the principles of the association.

" After a meeting he examines, coordinates and frames a report of the decisions upon which, three months later, the seven members of the Berlin Directory will vote. Of these seven members, thanks to the system of rotation explained above, there are always at least two who, having belonged to the Directory at the time of the submission of the resolution under consideration, are able to furnish commentaries and explanations to the new comers. Only resolutions having obtained a favourable vote of five or seven voices can be registered by the delegate recorder, and these can be finally adopted only on the second following month, if they pass unanimously.[19] In the event of one or more persons opposing a measure, the matter is referred to the Chief at Rome after which, failing his approval, it is settled arbitrarily by the chief at Charleston from whose decision there is no appeal.

" The business of the financial agent is not a matter of funds, it consists in drawing up a general balance sheet of all rites, in all countries with the brother accountant working under his orders as a sworn expert.

" As above said, the Palladian rite has no share in the functioning of the Sovereign Administrative Directory. This should again prove that Palladism is superposed to all the other rites. It is the luciferian religion and only need concern itself with the triangles which have a separate budget. Being the real hidden power, known only to the perfect initiates, it need not unveil itself even to this permanent committee which constitutes the highest expression of the administrative power of the great international association. One must also not lose sight of the fact that among the masonic powers, there are several countries where the Symbolic Grand Lodges recognize only three grades of which that of Master is the third and highest degree. These lodges, like the others, are entitled to send two delegates from time to time to Berlin, and, as a consequence of having suppressed the high grades for their adepts, these Federations are necessarily kept in complete ignorance of the existence of Palladism. The Supreme chiefs of Charleston and Rome appear to

---

19. Such a system, owing to its apparently democratic character would admirably serve the purposes of an autocracy. After five months it is obvious that none of the original members who proposed a resolution would be present and five months gives plenty of time for manipulation of nominees pledged to vote according to the dictates of invisible masters.

them solely as earnest, active brothers who should be consulted because of their great personal experience — but that is all. "

" Finally the Palladists have no need to be officially represented in Berlin, as most of the members of the Supreme Councils, Grand Encampments and Grand Orients are their men and any important proposition is immediately communicated to them.

" Under the Sovereign Directory, the Executive at Rome and the Administrative at Berlin, come the Grand Central Directories which are bureaus of registration in the different parts of the world. These are located in North America, South America, Europe, Asia and Oceania. There is as well a sub-Directory for Africa. At their heads are the high grade trusted brothers by whom everything that emanates from the Supreme Councils, Grand Encampments, Grand Orients and Grand Lodges of their jurisdiction is centralized. Independent of the Sovereign Administrative Directory of Berlin, they operate directly under the chiefs of Rome and Charleston and it is by these central Directories that these two great intriguers are kept informed of the trend of world affairs.

" As everything comes to the Grand Central Directories so everything emanates from them. Five messengers to Washington, Montevideo, Naples, Calcutta, and Port Louis will put in motion the formidable machinery of Freemasonry the world over. "

If the organization described in the foregoing pages which were written by Bataille forty years ago has progressed along the lines above indicated, one can easily conjecture the degree of perfection which has doubtless been attained to-day.

CHAPTER XXXI

PRACTICAL POLITICS

The game of politics is the pursuit of power. In all democracies, there are two separate organizations playing the political game. The open and *visible* one, the members of which hold office as members of a government, and the *invisible* one composed of individuals who control this visible organization and in whom is vested the real power, the essence of which is *finance,* controlling the publicity which makes or unmakes its tools.

This financial power may be used to promote truth or fallacies, good or evil, national prosperity or national ruin, but so long as human nature is what it is, so long as jealousy, greed, personal ambition and expediency can sway the lives of men, so long will the rule of the invisible power prevail by methods inimical to the best interests of a nation. The strength of a democracy thus lies at the mercy of invisible leaders who, being nationally irresponsible, cannot be called to account for the consequences of the acts of the governments they control. This at the same time constitutes the inherent weakness of any form of government, the apotheosis of which is the control of both parties in the state, right and left, radical and conservative, by the same forces. Then, only the puppets change while the rule of the individuals controlling the machine continues unhindered. Voters who wonder why their efforts have failed, wonder in vain. As the dupes of a controlled publicity their privilege of the vote is a farce.

If all factions in a state can be controlled from one source, why should International Control be impracticable? Italy, if one follows its history for the last hundred years, gives a sequence of good illustrations of such possibilities and affords us a chance to follow the progressive stages of masonic centralization and imposition of Internationalism upon nations, as conceived by Mazzini, Pike, Palmerston and Bismarck.

International control was Mazzini's dream. His cynical remark " We aspire to corrupt in order to rule " leaves one little faith in the idealism of this Patriarch of International Freemasonry. That he applied his motto is shown by the use he made of Francesco Crispi.

As Palamenghi-Crispi writes :[1]

" Crispi became personally acquainted with Mazzini in London, in January, 1855, but they had corresponded since 1850, when, their golden dream of liberty and independence banished by the return of all the tyranny of the past, the bravest of the patriots had once more begun to conspire.

" While pondering the idea of founding a National Committee in which the various regions of Italy should be represented, Mazzini also determined to form a fund for the carrying out of great enterprises. And ' as it is impossible to obtain large sums secretly and from a few people ' he wrote, he worked out a plan for a National Loan, to be raised by the issue of bonds to be redeemed by a liberated Italy.

---

[1] Thomas Palamenghi-Crispi, *The Memoirs of Francesco Crispi,* vol. I, p. 75.

" The first act of the National Committee was to authorise the issue of such bonds to the amount of ten million lire. "

In his youth, Francesco Crispi made a mistake, and blackmail made him a ruler of men. As the tool of Mazzini, he ruled Italy for many years, and as the ruler of Italy, he wielded the secret power of International Masonry in accordance with the policy of his masters.

According to *Crispi* 33° by D. Vaughan, " Crispi, in Palladism, Brother v Serafino-Chiocciola, was born at Ribera, in Sicily, on Oct. 4, 1819. His father, Tommaso Crispi, a lawyer, destined him to the church, but in 1837, he married Felicita Valle, a pretty young girl with whom he was infatuated. In 1856, he abandoned her for Rosalia Montmasson, deserting the latter in 1878 to marry Lina Barbagallo, widow Capellani. At this period, he was openly accused of bigamy and though challenged to do so, he never produced the documents necessary to prove the death of his first wife, Felicita Valle.

" After his marriage in 1837, he practised law and in 1838 joined one of the numerous secret societies which in those days infested Sicily. Presently he started his career as a political intriguer and conspirator travelling over the world on his sinister business under different aliases and false passports provided for him by Mazzini, who, in view of his confidential position as friend of the King of Naples, had bought his services as a spy. "

Domenico Margiotta states in *Francesco Crispi, son (Euvre Néfaste,* that he found among the papers of his grandfather — a member of Young Italy who had been condemned to death as the head of the conspiracy, which penalty he however successfully escaped — a telegram from Mazzini, instructing the organization to " give Crispi promptly thirty thousand ducats to begin with on the account of the Neapolitan Committee of Young Italy and let him get to work. "

"While at Malta in 1855, he joined the masonic lodge, " Zetland", under English jurisdiction from which he was shortly expelled for the theft of 800 francs from one of its members. He went to London shortly afterwards. There, Lord Palmerston had returned to power. By becoming an ardent admirer and fanatical follower of Mazzini, Crispi simultaneously entered the good graces of Palmerston who was on the very best of terms with the Italian leader.

In 1856, believing that Napoleon III, in cooperation with Cavour, was the secret arbiter of the destinies of Italy, and the greatest obstacle to the realization of his own republican schemes, Mazzini induced Crispi to go to Paris.

While he was there, a number of attempts were made on the life of the Emperor, among others that of Orsini on Jan. 14, 1858, but, though strongly suspected of participation in these conspiracies by the police or Paris, no evidence for a direct charge of complicity against Crispi was ever obtained. However, it is known that he and Orsini had previously met in London where the latter had shown him how to make the famous bombs, the use and manufacture of which Crispi afterwards taught his followers in Sicily.

By August 3, 1858, he was back in London, the Paris police having developed too great a zeal on his behalf during his sojourn in the French capital.

At last by 1860, the various Italian conspiracies crystallized into one. Everything was ready for the fulfilment of Mazzini's dream of United Italy. Bertani, Bixio and Crispi decided to go to Turin themselves to see General Garibaldi and, after the British Minister, Sir James Hudson, had confirmed certain information on conditions in Palermo, which had been furnished by the Genoese deputies, the General seemed at last inclined to take action. He ordered Bixio to Genoa to charter a ship and Crispi to Milan to receive from Enrico Besana the arms and the money already subscribed. This subscription was begun by General Garibaldi himself and, in view of later developments, it is a significant fact that one of the contributions he received for the famous expedition of the One Thousand, was the sum of fifty thousand francs from the Jew, Cornelius Herz.

Twelve thousand guns were in the hands of Massimo d'Azeglio, then governor of Milan who, by order of the government, surrendered them to the rebels.

Finally, General Garibaldi arrived in Genoa on April 14. On the 16th, Crispi returned to Turin where he saw the Minister of the Interior, Farini, who, having by that time changed his mind concerning the Italian expedition, had ceased to be a dictator and had assumed the attitude of a diplomatic satellite of Cavour. He proved quite intractable. Back in Genoa, Crispi found La Farina again, this time with orders to report all developments to Cavour. Cavour, warned not to interfere with Garibaldi, raised no obstacles to the progress of the plot. He only advised waiting for better news from the Island of Sicily, and promised to cooperate with a million guns, as soon as the time for the expedition seemed propitious.

Still Garibaldi hesitated. The Sicilian news was contradictory. On April 26, Crispi received from Niccola Fabrizzi a message from Malta reading " Failure in the provinces and in the town of Palermo. Many exiles arriving at Malta on English ships. " Luckily a few days later, a communication from Palermo, published by the *Gazette of Turin,* told of the great proportions assumed by the insurrection in Sicily, This communication had been invented and written at Genoa by Crispi for the purposes of overcoming the last scruples of Garibaldi !

One day, the second of May, Crispi and Garibaldi were alone in a room looking seaward, in the Villa Spinola Quarti. They were talking about the expedition. Crispi as usual, was fighting the vacillations of Garibaldi. Suddenly, the General interrupted him saying, " You are the only one to encourage me in this enterprise, Everyone else tries to dissuade me. Why ?"

"Because I am profoundly convinced that it will be helpful to the fatherland and that it will cover you with glory. I fear only one thing : The uncertainty of the sea. "

" I answer for the sea " said Garibaldi.

" And I answer for the land " said Crispi.

Garibaldi was persuaded and the die was cast.

After the victorious expedition of the One Thousand had placed the group of conspirators in power in Sicily, each was rewarded according to his merits, Crispi becoming Minister of Foreign Affairs. Cavour had died on June 6, 1861, poisoned, it is said, on May 28, by order of Mazzini.

Until 1861, Crispi had cooperated wholeheartedly with the revolutionaries but, as time wore on, he began to think that it might be more to his personal advantage to serve the King than Mazzini.

His plan was discovered by Mazzini's spies and in 1862, the deputy of Castelvetrano found himself facing death for treason at the hands of his former friends and accomplices, under conditions that enslaved him body and soul forever after, to the International Sect.

Early in April 1862, he attended a Freemasonic dinner of the *Associations Emancipatrice* at Turin. Suddenly he felt ill, very ill, fire seemed to be burning within him. He was in the throes of the most appalling agony. Instead of offering assistance, the other guests began to laugh, then, one of them rising, spoke to him severely in the following terms :

" Francesco, you went to visit King Victor Emmanuel, without telling us of your intention and you offered him your secret services. You let him know that you were ready to go over at the first opportunity. Till then your opinions had been republican. Well, that is treason. We have condemned you. You are poisoned. You are a dead man. "

The poison had indeed been administered in the bread. Among the organizers of the banquet was the baker Dolfi, who had formerly contributed to the expulsion of the Grand Duke of Tuscany and who had become one of the members of the Radical Directing Committee. On this occasion, Dolfi had kneaded the bread himself, and each guest had found his place at the table marked by a small roll bearing his name, traced on its golden crust by a fillet of whitish dough. All the guests, agreeably surprised, had congratulated the baker for his delicate attention, but the piece of bread marked Crispi had been separately kneaded and contained the poison.

Crispi realized full well that he was lost. He knew there was no escape and that all the exits to the banquet hall were closed, moreover, he was too weak to tight. Without recrimination and in the throes of acute pain, he dropped into a chair upon which, writhing in agony, he awaited a lingering death.

The others surrounded him, watching him in silence with profound contempt. Suddenly, a door opened, a curtain was raised and a man appeared. He advanced slowly. It was Mazzini.

" Poor wretch ! " said he to the dying man. " I pity you. "

At these words, Crispi looked up. His dim eyes gleamed suddenly and he murmured feebly.

" Yes, ambition made me betray... It is true ... I was going to sell myself... But I die... Do not insult my agony... Do not mock me... 1 suffer too much ! "

" I do not speak to you in derision, " answered the grand master, " Francesco Crispi, I forgive you... Drink this and you are saved. You will be reborn... "

So saying, he forced his teeth apart and pressing a small vial to the lips of the dying man poured the counter-poison down his parched throat.

After his last words, Crispi had collapsed. Some time passed. Was he still alive ? He seemed a corpse. Little by little, sweat gathered on his face and hands then, slowly, his livid countenance regained some colour.

For a long time he seemed inert. Then his eyelids opened and, looking around with a stunned expression of incomprehension, he asked.

" Where am I ? "

" You have returned from the realm of the dead " murmured Mazzini gravely.

" Oh ! Yes, I remember now, Mercy ! Mercy ! " he added suddenly, recalling realities and clinging desperately to life. " I live indeed, Master. Is it not a dream ? "

"You live, yes, Francesco; but henceforth you are more completely enslaved than the last of the negroes for whose freedom they are fighting over there in America... You live again and your ambition will be gratified... You will be minister, minister of the Monarchy ;

You will hold in your hands the reins of government but, without betraying us, without selling yourself !... You will part from us, not privately but publicly... We will denounce you, and while denouncing you, we will push you to power. It is the monarchy that you will betray by executing our orders, when we shall have made you minister of the crown... And you will obey us in all things, even should the orders we give you seem contradictory, even should their execution cause you to pass for a madman in the eyes of Europe ! Yes, Francesco Crispi, from this day forward, you belong to us, for you must never forget that, should you place us in a position where it might be expedient to cut short your own existence a second time, no power in the world could save you from the death, the sufferings of which you have known today. Live then for Masonry. Fight Royalty and the Church. You will be the gravedigger of this house of Savoy. It is only an instrument for us and we have condemned it to disappear after it has served our purpose. "

This plan of action was carried out. In 1864, Crispi, on orders from his master, became a Royalist and duly denounced Mazzini. That is the explanation of his often incoherent and erratic policies in after life. Mazzini's promise was fulfilled and Crispi became Minister of the Interior in 1878.

In 1877, he had been on a tour to Paris, Berlin, London and Vienna. In Paris, he had seen Thiers, Jules Favre and Gambetta; in Germany, Prince Bismarck, with whom he already had an acquaintance of some years standing, and who shared his aversion for France and the Roman Catholic Church ; in England, Lord Derby and Mr. Gladstone ; but the true purpose of his mission in these lands is still unknown. As a consequence of his interview with Bismarck, at Salzbourg, Italy, fearing

France, threw herself into the hands of the Iron Chancellor. Germany henceforth was to hold her as a dog ready to be set at either against Austria or France when it suited her purpose. The Triple Alliance was formed on May 20, 1882.

Crispi's accession to the ministry was therefore a victory of prime importance to the sect.

After the death of Mazzini, in 1872, Adriano Lemmi took over his masonic heritage and, along with the rest, his slave Francesco Crispi, who, with the Jew Barozilai, became his right hand man.

King Victor Emmanuel died on Jan 9, 1878, and was succeeded by Humbert I. That same year saw the death of Pope Pius IX and the accession to the papacy of Leo XIII.

In 1884, Humbert I was initiated into masonry as Knight Kadosch, under conditions of the greatest secrecy and a lodge, that of Savoia Illuminata, was founded in his honour.

In spite of his exalted masonic position the monarch's political information was always strictly censored by his masonic superiors.

From 1887 to 1891, and again from 1893 to 1896, Crispi acted the part of Prime Minister.

In order to enable him to curry favour with the common people, Lemmi occasionally authorized him to execute political turnovers. The Grand Master Lemmi once said to Humbert " Fear not; The socialism of Crispi will not last; it will provoke no riots, it is simply an electoral manoeuvre " and the king was much gratified at being so well informed. There at least, the 33° King was not deceived. If now and again Crispi resumed his revolutionary complexion, it was only to obtain the votes of those whom he persecuted mercilessly once he had obtained power. To him, a change of opinion was as easy as a change of shirt.[2]

In 1889, came the scandal of the Banca Romana, revealed as such through the efforts of Giovanni Giolitti[3] and in 1892, that of Panama involving another, namely the Grand Cordon of Cornelius Herz, any one of which would have swamped the political career of any unprotected individual. Crispi, though seriously implicated, was supported through an impossible situation by the masonic brotherhood.

The Abyssinian War, itself the result of masonic intrigue, was the terrible manoeuvre calculated to ruin the House of Savoy in the eyes of the Italian people.

It was known that, at the time of the disaster of Adowa, the succession of Adriano Lemmi to the Grand Mastership of the Grand Orient of Italy was open, and that competition for the position was keen. Some favoured the candidacy of Bovio, others that of Nathan, later Mayor of Rome. But Crispi had promised General Baratieri,[4] a masonic dignitary, that he should have the preference above all others, on condition that he win a victory over the Negus. Such an achievement would give Italy another Garibaldi, a popular hero, while simultaneously providing Crispi himself with a useful tool and the position of " top dog " which had never been his before.

But the disastrous defeat of his candidate by Menelek, at the Battle of Adowa on March 2, 1896, resulted in the fall of Crispi, not that of the king.

The agent of Lemmi had played his part but the great game of the Federated Secret Societies had only suffered a temporary setback.

---

[2] Much of the above is recorded in : *Le* 33° *Crispi,* by D. Vaughan.

[3] Giolitti, *Memoirs of my Life,* p. 99 *et seq.*

[4] Margiotta, *Francesco Crispi, Son Œuvre Néfaste.*

In 1900, King Humbert I was assassinated at Monza. Crispi died in 1901.

The fate of Italy is the fate of all nations governed by political rings. Italy in the 19th century seems to have been the vortex of the intrigue directed against Christianity which today ravages the world, carrying in its wake a general disregard of all ideals, decency, duty and loyalty.

Liberty is corrupted into licentiousness, marital fidelity into perversion, equality into equality of low standards and fraternity into a brotherhood based on mutual slavery under the yoke of International Finance.

And the monster grows apace! Today it bestrides the world under the name of Bolshevism, but it is the same old monster, the heresy of the first centuries of the Christian era and the Middle Ages, namely — Gnosticism.

CHAPTER XXXII

ADRIANO LEMMI

This Chapter is compiled largely of extracts, some transcribed verbatim and others elaborated to include information necessary to the reader, from :

Adriano Lemmi
by Domenico Margiotta 33°

Adriano Lemmi was born of Roman Catholic parents, at Leghorn, Tuscany, on April 30, 1822. He was the son of Fortunato Lemmi and Teresa Merlino, his lawful wife.

At an early age, he became the despair of his parents. He was dissolute, frequented evil haunts and formed undesirable friendships.

Running away from home on December 29, 1843, he forged a letter stating, under the letterhead of Falconet and Co., that a credit for his account was to be opened on Pastre Bros., Bankers, at Marseilles, where, shortly after his arrival, he scraped acquaintance with Monsieur and Madame Grand Boubagne whom he was soon accused of having robbed of 300 francs. The evidence against him was overwhelming, and he was condemned to a year in prison for that and other minor offences, and also sentenced to five years on probation.

He served his term and bolted to Constantinople,

Arriving there early in April 1845, he eked out a precarious existence, first as a kitchen hand, then as the assistant in the shop of an old apothecary, whose preparations he peddled in the streets of Galata.

His employer had a friend, a Polish rabbi who, having been condemned for conspiracy in Russia, had taken refuge in Constantinople. This man took a fancy to him and in an effort to curry favour with the Jews, Lemmi presently asked if he might be received into the religion of Moses. As a diplomatic move, the suggestion was a great success for the apothecary and the rabbi, proud and jubilant to have secured a neophyte, taught him the Talmud, while another rabbi, Abraham Maggioro, instructed him in the mysteries of the Cabala. Together, they initiated him into the secrets of magic, in which he proved an apt pupil and his lot was much improved, but the old apothecary died in 1847, and Lemmi found himself without employment. The Polish rabbi having left Constantinople, he stayed on a while under the protection of his friend Maggioro.

In those days, the few Freemasons coming to Pera were English. Freemasonry had been introduced into Turkey in 1738, but until the Crimean war it suffered many vicissitudes. The English saw their lodges fade away for want of active members, for the government did not favour them. Adriano Lemmi was supposed to have been initiated into Freemasonry in 1848 by an English Mason, but this ceremony seems to have somehow been irregular as it had to be repeated at a later date.

Finally, the era of his trials seemed to end. In 1849, some of his English masonic friends gave him a letter of introduction to the great Magyar, Kossuth, who had come to Constantinople, a fugitive from public opprobrium in his own country.

To save him from starvation, Kossuth took him as his servant at low wages, but he gradually succeeded in ingratiating himself with his patron till finally he became his secretary on the recommendation of Mazzini with whom he was already in correspondence.

When Kossuth went to the United States in 1851, he was accompanied by Lemmi. They were forced to travel via Gibraltar and London as the French authorities refused Kossuth permission to land in France, and Lemmi, knowing that he was wanted by the French police, knew better than to try to do so. In Lodge No. 133 in Cincinnati, U. S. A., Kossuth received the masonic initiation.

On the 2nd of December 1851, Prince Louis Napoleon, then President of the French Republic, announced to the people and the army his intention of submitting to a referendum the plan of a constitution founded on the system favoured by his uncle. It was a Coup d'Etat. At this news Lemmi left Kossuth in America and went to join Mazzini and Ledru Rollin in London.

By this time, Mazzini had already established his reputation as an international intriguer. The " Youth Movement" of the day was already organized : —

The societies composing it were : —

Young Italy — founded by Mazzini................ 1831
Young Poland — founded by Simon Konarski.... 1834
Young England — founded by Benjamin Disraeli______1834
Young Europe — founded by Mazzini............... 1834
Young Switzerland — founded by Melegari (Emery).. 1835
Young Ireland — founded by Smith O'Brien........ 1843
Young Germany — founded by Hecker & Struve.... 1848

The oath taker. by the members of Young Italy reads as follows :[1]

" In the name of God and of Italy — in the name of all the martyrs of the holy Italian cause, who have fallen beneath foreign and domestic tyranny — by the duties which bind me to the land wherein God has placed me, and to the brothers whom God has given me — by the love, innate in all men, I bear to the country that gave my mother birth, and will be the home of my children — by the hatred, innate in all men, I bear to evil, injustice, usurpation, and arbitrary rule — by the blush that rises to my brow when I stand before the citizens of other lands, to know that I have no rights of citizenship, no country, and no national flag — by the aspiration that thrills my soul towards that liberty for which it was created, and is impotent to exert ; towards the good it was created to strive after, and is impotent to achieve in the silence and isolation of slavery — by the memory of our former greatness and the sense of our present degradation — by the tears of Italian mothers for their sons dead on the scaffold, in prison, or in exile — by the sufferings of the millions —

"I———, believing in the mission entrusted by God to Italy, and the duty of every Italian to strive to attempt its fulfilment — convinced that where God has ordained that a nation shall be, he has given the requisite power to create it; that the people are the depositaries of that power, and that in its right direction, for the people, and by the people, lies the secret of victory — convinced that virtue consists in action and sacrifice, and strength in union and constancy of purpose — I give my name to Young Italy, an association of men holding the same faith, and swear —

---

[1] Thomas Frost, *The Secret Societies of The European Revolution* (1776-1876), vol. 2, p. 147.

" To dedicate myself wholly and for ever to the endeavour with them to constitute Italy *one free, independent, Republican nation* — to promote, by every means in my power, whether by written or spoken word, or by action, the education of my Italian brothers towards the aim of Young Italy ; towards association, the sole means of its accomplishment; and to virtue, which alone can render the conquest lasting — to abstain from enrolling myself in any other association from this time forth — to obey all the instructions, in conformity with the spirit of Young Italy, given me by those who represent with me the union of my Italian brothers, and to keep the secret of these instructions, even at the cost of my life — to assist my brothers of the Association both by action and counsel —

" NOW AND FOR EVER !

" This do I swear, invoking upon my head the wrath of God, the abhorrence of man, and the infamy of the perjurer, if I ever betray the whole or a part of this my oath. "

The fusion of Young Italy and Carbonarism evidently did not take place till after April 8, 1839, for in a letter of that date, Mazzini writes to L. A. Melegari at Lausanne " It is a mixture of Young Italy and Carbonarism. They have had me approached indirectly to know if I accept the fusion. " [1]

After 1851, Lemmi began playing an important part in all politico-masonic assassinations and in all the popular insurrections of which Italy was the scene. On behalf of Mazzini, he kept up relations with the revolutionaries of Tuscany and it was he who inspired the attempt to assassinate the councillor of the Grand Duke's minister, Baldasseroni, in broad daylight, on Oct. 21, 1852.

---

[1] Melegari, *Lettres Intimes de Joseph Mazzini,* p. 182.

A letter from which we quote, written from Malta by Francesco Crispi to Mazzini, dated Nov. 13, 1853, [2] gives a most interesting sidelight on the relations then existing between the Great Italian Revolutionary, his ally Crispi and Adriano Lemmi whom Crispi already recognizes as the agent of an organization inimical to his ideals.

" Brother, — the die is cast! At the present moment, an uprising in Sicily is imminent, if, indeed, it has not already taken place. God grant it may not prove a second sixth of February !

" Knowing that I was here you should have forewarned me. Those to whom you have seen fit to entrust the initiative will not be able to exert any influence whatsoever in the provinces of Palermo and Messina ! their names, indeed, may even be greeted there with hostility, and bring about a reaction. Now without Palermo and Messina every attempt in Sicily will prove vain. But what is done is done, and our plain duty now is to work together in helping on the undertaking, and, as far as is possible, in warding off evil consequences. Let me know the plan of action and what orders you have issued to the leaders. Although I have little regard for them, I intend to do my duty, and this for the good of our country and party, upon whose already tarnished reputation another failure would bring utter ruin. You will remember that ever since 1850, I have been ready to hasten to Sicily. At that time we were working to form the National Committee and raise the loan that should provide funds for any great emergency. Then the Sicilian Committee was formed and speedily dissolved, while you worked to prepare an uprising in northern and central Italy, forgetting Sicily entirely. But not so my friends and I, who were convinced that the greatest possibility of success lav in this island. Nor was this all. After your misfortunes in Lombardy you forgot your old friends, and flung yourself into the arms of men who, up to that very moment, had held you and your theories up to ridicule, but who had been clever enough to deceive you through Signor Lemmi, to whom they had declared their intention to act.

---

[2] Thomas Palamenghi-Crispi, *The Memoirs of Francesco Crispi*, vol. 1, p. 80-81.

" I am no more their enemy than are any of the friends who belong to the party opposed to Calvi. "

On February 6, 1853, an incipient insurrection broke out in Milan, then under Austrian dominion, as the result of a proclamation signed by Mazzini and Kossuth. That it was sent by Lemmi from Switzerland to the revolutionary Lombards is a fact well known in Italian masonry.

Though implicated, the Swiss and Piedmontese governments tried to appear unconcerned. Numerous refugees from Northern Italy went to Switzerland or Piedmont following the instructions transmitted by Lemmi.

Piedmont, assisted by England, (who was secretly helping Mazzini's masonry) tried to induce the Emperor of Austria to issue a decree confiscating the properties of the revolutionary refugees, but a bloody protest was made against the measure on the 18th of February when, by order of Kossuth and Mazzini a revolutionary fanatic made a,n attempt against the life of the Emperor. Lemmi was chosen to arm the assassin who was a Hungarian and a mutual friend of both Kossuth and himself.

Switzerland, under threat of severance of diplomatic relations, was then obliged to banish indiscriminately all political refugees.

Then came the Crimean war, the real causes of which were known only to the chiefs of Freemasonry.

England and Piedmont worked up a quarrel with Russia about Turkey, over the respective spheres of influence of the Christian Greek and Catholic churches at Jerusalem. This rivalry was of little real consequence either to England or Piedmont but it served to turn France against Russia on the pretext of protecting Turkey.

The truth was that for a long time, long before the Hungarian insurrection of Kossuth, the secret chiefs of masonry, headed by Lord Palmerston, had made a plan according to which Prussia was to be exalted at the expense of Austria, German unity was to be achieved to the advantage of the Prussian monarchy, as well as that of Italy to the benefit of the house of Savoy, and a Polish Magyar state was to be created.[3]

Fearing that the Hungarian insurrection might spread to his Polish provinces, a community of monarchic interests had impelled the Tsar to reach an understanding with the Austrian Emperor which had helped to hinder the success of the Magyar revolutionaries. Until this " Entente " could be broken up, the masonic chiefs knew that German and Italian Unity would remain a dream.

---

[3] It is a curious fact that the book from which the above is translated was written in 1894 and that these points were actually achieved in 1919 at the Treaty of Versailles. The machinery which the German monarchical power thought it was using for its own ends, was already, in reality, being guided by the unseen Jewish power controlling Freemasonry.

Austria was the dupe in this war. As for France, she had to fight with the army of Piedmont so as to prepare public opinion in both countries for the next move against Austria.

All this had been combined by Lord Palmerston who knew how to get his way with all the other secret chiefs, not excepting Mazzini. Kossuth naturally favoured the masonic programme. He wished death to the Tsar for having caused him to lose his position in Hungary. It is also easy to understand how Napoleon III was drawn into the affair. The chiefs of the sect only had to remind him of his oath as Carbonaro and show him the laurels to be won.

" Mazzini and Kossuth urged on the Crimean war, and English diplomacy prevented Austria from joining Russia. From then on, that power, being opposed by France, England, Piedmont and Turkey, faced inevitable defeat, which happened after a war lasting two years. Austria was separated for ever from Russia and was punished for her ingratitude, for, without even waiting for the end of hostilities, the Mason chiefs, who had used her so successfully, started the work of revolution on her territory.[4]

This war served a great purpose for Adriano Lemmi. It enabled him to get rich.

Through his relations with Mazzini and Kossuth, he obtained contracts for Italian ambulances for the Crimea. These he sent from Geneva. Pocketing a large part of the money, he paid the rest with bad chequees and fled to Malta. This was his first big theft, but his flight did not prevent him and his two accomplices from

---

4. Margiotta, *Adriano Lemmi,* p. 18.

being condemned by default by the Swiss judge.

" On Jan. 4, 1855, Mazzini, chief of the Central European Committee, —• the title Mazzini assumed as leader of ' Young Europe ' — called a meeting of his accomplices in London at which F.·. Felix Pyat, the president of the branch group known as the Communist Revolutionaries, was present. These two committees were in correspondence with one in Brussels, one in Jersey and one in Geneva. At this meeting, the death of Charles III, Duke of Parma, was unanimously voted, and Mazzini sent Lemmi a passport in the name of ' Lewis Broom ' under the protection of which he immediately left Malta for the Duchy of Parma. During the one day he spent there, he organized a secret meeting at Castel-Guelfo for March 25, during which lots were drawn and a man called Antonio Carra was thus duly selected by fate to do the deed. Lessons in stabbing were then given on a dummy and Adriano, who presided at the assembly, adressing the assassin-elect said " This day is the feast of the Jesuits and nuns when they celebrate the apparition to their Madonna of an angel announcing the advent of the Messiah as her son. Brother, I announce to thee that thou wilt be the Messiah of the Revolution of Parma. I consecrate thee liberator of the oppressed, saviour of tyrannized men. Strike the despot! Let not thy hand falter. Our God, who is not the God of the priests, will protect thee ! "

Two days later, Charles III fell under the attack of an alleged fanatic who made good his escape. The circumstances of the plot are known because Lemmi often boasted of the part he played in it to Frapolli and others who repeated the story.

Mazzini often acknowledged that his " little Jew " was worth ten good men, so clever was he at choosing the right men for important jobs, and so able at inspiring them with the energy necessary for doing their duty.

The Parma business greatly enhanced the value of Lemmi in the eyes of the principal chiefs. He remained incognito for several days at Sant'Ilario, but the revolution did not come off, for the crime was received by the people with horror, and the widow of Charles III, the daughter of the Duc de Berry, was proclaimed regent for her son Robert, a child of six.

Still under the false name of Lewis Broom, Lemmi went to Reggio, then to Modena, returning to the duchy of Parma in the last days of June, where he prepared the abortive insurrection of July 22, which was quickly suppressed.

In January, 1855, the Piedmontese government suppressed 334 religious institutions at the instigation of the revolutionary societies which, thanks to complicity under the guise of tolerance, were unhindered in the development of their criminal resources.

Lemmi, who had at his disposal as many false papers as might be necessary for his secret missions, again changed his name. Armed with a Hungarian passport, belonging to one of the henchmen of Kossuth, he went to Rome under the name of " Ulrick Putsch ", professional cook, and on June 12 there was an attempt to kill Cardinal Antonelli! He immediately reappeared at Genoa where, on the thirteenth of the month, a manifesto was published by Mazzini, inciting the people "to insurrection. This was spread by Lemmi in several towns, notably even in Rome where, by a curious coincidence, on July 9, the same day on which he returned to the city of the popes, an attempt was made on the life of Father Beckx, the General of the Jesuits.

In all these movements, in all these crimes where

Lemmi's hand is not visible, those of his associates always were.

Lemmi and Orsini — the latter also an agent of Mazzini, had transmitted to the revolutionary committee of Milan their chief's instructions in view of an imminent uprising. Having received their instructions, Lemmi went to Switzerland with his Hungarian passport, and Orsini, under the name of George Hernash, went to Austria where an insurrection, timed to occur simultaneously with that in Lombardy, was to be fomented. Orsini was arrested at Hermanstadt, in Transsylvania, brought back to Vienna and transferred to Mantua where he was judged and condemned to death for high treason on August 20, 1855.

Locked up in the castle of San Giorgio, he succeeded in escaping on the night of March 29th, 1856.

On November 13 of the same year, two other agents of Mazzini were taken at Rome.

Under the pretext that the King of Naples was not observing strict neutrality towards Russia, Lord Palmerston obtained the disgrace of Mazza, the Neapolitan Director of Police. In this move, he was aided by Mazzini, who, having caused certain confidential papers to be stolen, knew some things that were none of his business. Mazza, devoted to the King, had been his protector against the machinations of the secret societies.

Napoleon III, too, allowed himself to be influenced by Palmerston who, as patriarch of European Freemasonry, favoured one of his pet projects. This involved the appointment of Prince Murat, Grand Master of the Grand Orient of France, to the throne of Naples and the two Sicilies, and the elimination of the house of Bourbon. England and France presently threatened to send a squadron to Naples but owing to the protest of Russia, the threat was never carried out.

In September, "1856, the European Committee decided that the King of Naples should be assassinated and that at the same time there should be an insurrection in Sicily. A man named Baron de Bentivegna, who had been introduced by an English high mason, Henri Misley, to Mazzini in London, was entrusted with the task of fomenting the trouble, while Lemmi took charge of the murder. According to the plan, Ferdinand II was to be blown up by a bomb thrown under his carriage by some fanatic selected by Lemmi.

Armed with two bombs, Lemmi went to Sicily. He now travelled under a French passport, provided for him by a friend through Ledru-Rollin, and made out under the name of " Jacques Lathuile ", merchant.

Everything was ready both in Palermo and Naples. The dates of the assassination of the king and the outbreak of the revolution were fixed for November 22, but the individual chosen to perform the deed, Filippo Carabi, suddenly lost interest in the project when he realized that the bomb destined for the king would also inevitably prove fatal to himself.

Lemmi was angry over this unexpected check. It was then too late to recruit another executioner but the disobedient Sicilian was eventually punished, for, five years later he was murdered in a Neapolitan lodge where he had gone without apprehension. The archives of the Directory of Naples contain the details of the affair, the sequestration of Carabi in 1861, his accusation before a secret tribunal, the terrible tortures to which he was subjected and his last horrible agony, shrouded in mystery.

Lemmi, now unable to have the assassination and the plot coincide, stayed on nevertheless in Naples, as he hoped to find a substitute for the defaulting murderer.

On the appointed day, November 22, Bentivegna raised the banner of revolt at Cefalú, near Palermo.

" Jacques Lathuile ", finding himself obliged to substitute another for the bomb method of assassination, induced a soldier called Agesilas Milano to attempt the life of the king, so, while Ferdinand II was reviewing his troops, Milano stepped forward and struck him twice in the chest with his bayonet. Luckily for the king, the instrument bent, failing even to wound him. Milano was arrested, judged and shot, but Mazzini, qualifying him as a martyr, had a commemoration medal struck in his honour.

As for the insurrection in Sicily, it was suppressed, Bentivegna was captured and shot on December 20, but Lemmi-Lathuile left the country as soon as he realized that things were not going well. His identity was never revealed and can today only be definitely established by the records of the secret masonic trial of Filippo Carabi in the archives of the Directory of Naples.

In 1857, a splendid farce was enacted by Piedmont. It has since been repeatedly proved that Cavour and Rattazzi were in agreement with the Mazzinians and the Garibaldians with regard to the scheme for a United Italy, under the house of Savoy — that is to say, they favoured the dispossession of the legitimate sovereigns of the duchies of Tuscany, Parma, Modena, the Papal States and the Kingdom of the two Sicilies, and the wresting of Lombardy and Venice from Austria. In the eyes of the European monarchs who were not in the secret, Piedmont wished to appear innocent of any connivance in the plot, and to have been forced only reluctantly to acquiesce. The secretary and faithful friend of Count Cavour was the Piedmontese

Isaac Artom,[5] while l'Olper, later rabbi of Turin and also the friend and counsellor of Mazzini, was one of the most open advocates of Italian Independence.

A few Freemasons in English, French and Prussian diplomacy alone knew what was being plotted, so the International Committee of London decreed an upheaval in Tuscany for the year 1857 and, in order that Piedmont might not be suspected of complicity, it -was arranged that an insurrection should be staged in that kingdom at the same time as the one in Tuscany. That was the comedy !

The insurrection occurred but failed in its object.

In London, the same year, Mazzini hatched a plot against Napoleon III. It was not the first.

As the French Emperor did not seem sufficiently active on behalf of Italian Unity, it was decided to stimulate him by terror. Mazzini, Kossuth and Ledru-Rollin were reinforced in the committee of London by Herzen, Bakunin, Turr and Klapka and, early in the year 1857, Paolo Tibaldi, Giuseppe Bartolotti and Paolo Grilli were chosen by Mazzini and Ledru-Rollin to kill Napoleon. Massarenti, another tool of Mazzini's, gave them fifty golden Napoleons when they left for Paris to perpetrate the crime and, addressing them before their departure, Mazzini said " You will study the habits of the Emperor and you will strike when you find the opportunity favorable. " Massarenti, Campanella, Tibaldi, Grilli and Bartolotti, the active tools of the plot, were all personal friends of Lemmi. To quote the words of the Imperial Attorney at the hearing of the Court of Assizes at Paris, August 7, 1857, when Grilli was sentenced to deportation, Mazzini and Ledru-

---

[5] *Jewish Encyclopaedia*, Art. " Italy ".

Rollin were the chiefs of all plots the object of which was assassination.

On January 14, 1858, at the door of the Opera House in Paris, another attempt was made on the life of the French Emperor. Three bombs killed eight and wounded 156 persons. Some of the guilty were arrested but others, among whom was our hero, Adriano Lemmi, now masquerading under the name of James MacGregor, escaped. Lemmi had come to Paris ostensibly to visit Giuseppe Mazzoni, his Tuscan compatriot, then professor of languages in the French capital. Orsini, who had taken the pseudonym of Alsop on reaching Paris, Pierri, and Rudio the principal actors in the drama were caught and condemned to death. The first two were executed, Rudio's sentence being commuted to hard labour for life. Orsini was not unknown to Napoleon III. Together, they had belonged to the Lodge of Cesna as members of the Carbonari. In 1874 the *Giornale di Firenze* published the account of Napoleon's visit to his imprisoned assassin who warned him that, unless he showed a disposition to help the Unity of Italy, other bombs were reserved for him. Napoleon acquiesced, and one saw the famous will of Felice Orsini published by the Imperial official journal which enabled the French deputy Monsieur Keller to remark before the legislative body on March 13, 1861, that "the Italian war was the execution of the will of Orsini. "

We must here be permitted a somewhat lengthy digression unfolding the progress of political corruption and its affinity with secret societies.

As a result of the Orsini conspiracy, Palmerston sponsored " The Conspiracy to Murder " Bill, a measure framed to hamper International Assassins in the free use of English territory for hatching plots against foreign potentates. The Bill passed its first reading in Parliament, Disraeli voting for it, but at the second reading, Milner Gibson, a Radical, moved an amendment which was in effect a vote of censure on Palmerston and a challenge to the French. " This was eventually carried by 19 votes, Disraeli's support being, of course, the decisive factor. An explanation of this change of front is afforded in Ashley's *Life of Lord Palmerston.* Seated in the Peers' Gallery, Lord Derby listened to the debate, and watched the tide rising against the Prime Minister. Convinced that he could be overthrown, he " sent hasty word to his lieutenant that they should take it at the flood which led to office, " and thereupon Disraeli " plunged into the stream. "[6]

Lord Palmerston fell and was succeeded by Lord Darby.

Where does Disraeli — Lord Beaconsfield — come into the scheme ? We know him as the author of many novels that, while not being evidential, serve to show the knowledge of their author on subjects of International significance: He knew how things were done and, like a naughty boy, told tales out of school.

Young Italy, Young Ireland, lastly Young England with Disraeli as its founder. What do we really know of Young England beyond what the Primrose League would have us think ?

We know that Disraeli was always in debt, always short of money and we know that people under such conditions are seldom their own masters. Who were his masters ?

Disraeli's father, Isaac d'lsraeli, was offered the leadership of their sect by the Jews of London. He refused. Was it also offered to his son ?

---

6. E. T. Raymond, *The Alien Patriot,* p. 214.

Writing of Lord Beaconsfield, A. A. B. passes a casual remark in the (London) *Evening Standard* of Monday, October 29, 1928 — " The name of the heroine of *Lothair,* the work of his meridian, is that of his wife. Mary Anne ruled *the underworld of secret societies.* " Are we to search there for the invisible masters ?

A further light is thrown upon this epoch of English history by no less an authority than the *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 9th Edition. In an article on Prince Metternich it says : — Metternich " in one of his most earnest writings places side by side, as instances of evil sought for its own sake, the action of the secret societies in Germany, the Carbonaria of Italy and the attempts of the English to carry the Reform Bill! "

We do know that the Reform Bill was one of Disraeli's victories !

Again one wonders at Metternich. That great reactionary might well have disliked the Reform Bill but this remark does not just indicate dislike — it is a positive indictment when read with the knowledge available to the historians of today.

Therein lies a singular coincidence of facts. On the one hand, we have one of two statesmen, Metternich, decrying the English Reform Bill and on the other, Disraeli getting it passed in the English Parliament. Yet, both men, ever impecunious, were ruled by money coming from the same source, namely, the Rothschilds who, in Austria as well as in London, were actively becoming the masters of the national finances of both countries.[7]

In 1862, the First International came into being and the part played in it by such Freemasons as Karl

---

[7] Count Corti, *The Reign of the House of Rothschild.*

Marx, Tolain, Fribourg, Varlin, Camelinat, Beslay, Malon and Corbon is well known.

But to return to the programme of Young Italy.

The Piedmontese were not quite satisfied with the results of the hasty treaty of Villafranca (1859), but the revolutionaries had attained their object as far as Tuscany, the Duchies of Parma and Modena and the Pontifical States were concerned, though they did not dare to dispossess the Pope without some preliminary political manoeuvres. The revolution in the kingdom of the two Sicilies had failed again but it was soon to succeed.

By way of retaliation, the International Committee of London began a propaganda in Lombardy among the students in the colleges as a result of which the University of Pavia was forced to close. This movement which started in December was the precursor of the coming war. Lord Palmerston's plan was in process of realization.

To Francesco Crispi, a tool of Lemmi, was now assigned the task in which he and Bentivegna had failed. He was in London when the news of the death by poison of Ferdinand II reached the International Masonic Committee. Mazzini's tool in the poison plot was Monsignor Caputo, a priest who had succeeded in winning the confidence of the king as his confessor. He was a Freemason, and a Sublime Maître Parfait, belonging to one of the most evil branches of the sect. The poison was administered in a slice of melon and. the king died in agony, on May 22, 1857.

Freemasonry had won, for Francis II, who now succeeded his father, was too young and inexperienced to be able to cope with any serious political situation alone.

At this period, the states of Tuscany, Parma and. Modena were trying to form a coalition but Dr. Farini, a Freemason, had become dictator, and dictated regardless of popular sentiment. Lemmi was continually running back and forth from England with instructions from the London Committee to the local revolutionary chiefs and, in his secret capacity, was very active through the different assemblies where the votes of the sold or terrorized members went for annexation to Piedmont, regardless of the wishes of the majorities in their constituencies.

Travelling under the assumed names of Emmanuel Pareda and Toby Glivan, Crispi spent much of his time during the next two years in Sicily as an agitator fomenting trouble. A great uprising was planned for Oct. 12, but, though Lemmi was there to help, their combined efforts on that date were futile.

Still they persisted, and by propaganda and underground work, they prepared for the great event of 1860. When Garibaldi, Grand Master *ad vitam* of Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rites, at Palermo, landed at Marsala with his famous " thousand " on the 11th May, he found everything ready. His expedition would, however, have failed had it not been for the Piedmontese gold which bought the chief functionaries of the King of Naples, one of whose ministers, Liborio Romano, was chief of Sicilian Masonry and presided at the Scottish Consistory at Naples. Francis' friend and confidant, General Nunziante, Duc of Mignano, was bought by Cavour for four millions !

Organized at Genoa by Dr. Bertani, this supposedly spontaneous act of the famous general which the government of Victor Emmanuel publicly disavowed, was organized by Cavour who furnished the money by drafts on Mr. Bombrini, director of the bank, as proved by a letter, written by the King himself to the American Commodore, William de Rohan.

June 27th 1860.

Commander;

I enclose herewith Medici's [one of Garibaldi's generals] two letters which you will put into other envelopes and give to Cavour.

I have already given three millions to Bertani.

Return immediately to Palermo to tell Garibaldi that I will send him Valerio instead of La Farina, and that he is to advance at once on Messina, as Francesco [the King of Naples] is on the point of giving the Neapolitans a constitution.

Your friend,

VICTOR EMMANUEL.

This letter which was published in Rome, in 1881, by the son of Victor Emmanuel in the *Fanfulla* with an article by Commodore William de Rohan was never challenged. Margiotta then adds — " there is little more to be said concerning the connivance of Cavour and Garibaldi. Victor Emmanuel did nothing against his wish as the official newspapers allege, for everything that happened in 1860 was settled in advance. It was necessary to save appearances and to deceive Russian and Austrian diplomacy which was not in the secret, so that was Cavour's reason for allowing Garibaldi to play the part of an undisciplined revolutionary, taking on himself alone the responsibility of his adventures."

The policies of the Grand Master Cavour and the Grand Master Mazzini, each representing two different Masonic currents emanating from different sources, met on the issue of the destruction of the Papacy which it was hoped to submerge through the unification of Italy.

Cavour aimed at unity in the form of a constitutional monarchy under the house of Savoy and Mazzini, aiming at a republic, found himself forced into a compromise which obliged him to accept, temporarily at least, a Piedmontese monarchy for United Italy.

The captain of Freemasonry was Garibaldi, the tool of Palmerston, Cavour and Mazzini.

While working thus together and helping one another, Mazzini and Cavour each followed an occult personal and distinct line of action, the secrets of which they did not share. Each in his mysterious work had his chief agent, the man he trusted. The chief agents of Cavour were his Jewish secretary Isaac Artom and Carletti and the chief agents of Mazzini were his Jewish secretaries, Wolf, Lemmi and L'Olper.

After the flight of the Grand Duke of Tuscany, Lemmi went to Florence where, to better mask his play, he became a banker. His patrons Mazzini and Kossuth were never in want of money furnished either by England or Masonry. He made money, practising usury as a good Jew, charging it is said up to 200 and 300 per cent, but, in politics, he continued as a valuable auxiliary to Mazzini.

Garibaldi and Mazzini wished to push on to Rome but Victor Emmanuel thought it more prudent to leave well enough alone for the time being, and the Piedmontese government finally overruled the revolutionaries. Mazzini and Crispi were even asked to leave Naples by the authorities though Lemmi was not molested.

Cavour knew him to be the secret agent of Mazzini and had him watched and his record investigated but, though he did not trouble himself much about him, he wanted to insure himself against all anti-monarchist action on his part.

During this inquiry, he came across the records of Lemmi's youthful exploits at Marseilles in 1844, so he asked the government of Napoleon III for an official copy of this document which lay in the archives of the Ministry of the Interior of the Italian government for 31 years and proved a powerful weapon in the hands of Victor Emmanuel, and Humbert I. Chafing under the menace of the existence of this document however, Lemmi induced Crispi in 1893 to arrange for its disappearance, but this move was forestalled by an implacable enemy of Lemmi who succeeded in getting possession of the famous paper.[8]

In 1867, Lemmi entered into negotiations with the Freemason Graf von Bismarck and the first projects of alliance between Prussia and Italy date thenceforth. Lemmi hated France as much as did Mazzini, so it is not surprising to find them both intriguing with Bismarck to bring about a Franco-Italian estrangement.

Napoleon III, by the convention of Sept. 15, 1864, had established Rome and its surrounding territory as distinct from the Kingdom of Italy, so that till 1870, the church still retained this last fragment of its temporal possessions but, towards 1865, Mazzini organized an association for Italian Unity, the object of which was the Union of these States with the rest of Italy, with Rome for the capital, according to Garibaldi's programme. Mazzini however was afraid to go to Rome without the consent of France, thinking that the destruction of the temporal power of the Pope, in the face of French opposition, could only be obtained by means of a revolution.

No one is ignorant of the negotiations between France, Austria and Italy in 1867, fruitless, because of Napoleon's refusal to accede to the proposal of the

---

8. The name of Diana Vaughan has been mentioned as that of the person who obtained the paper.

Austrian minister de Beust to allow " United " Italy freedom to march on Rome. France, subsequently abandoned by Italy, met her fate at Sedan in 1870 and Bismarck used Mazzini and Italian Freemasonry to break the Franco-Italian alliance and to force Victor Emmanuel to take Rome in spite of the wishes of the French people.

When the Franco-Prussian war broke out in 1870, the time for revolution was ripe. In July, shortly after the declaration of hostilities, the Italian revolutionaries held a mass meeting in the theatre at Milan, organized by the most notorious and dreaded agitators in Italy. After this public meeting, there was a secret political one attended by 15 high masons. Those present, according to Oreste Cucchi, who was told of it by Fabrizi himself, were : Doctor Timoteo Riboli, Francesco Crispi, Colonel Cucchi, Asproni, Bertani, Fabrizi, Frapolli, Cairoli, Rattazzi, Seismit Doda, Morelli, Sineo, Cosentini, Mancini and General Raffaelo Cadorna. The object of this conference was to determine the line of conduct to be adopted in the event of the defeat of Napoleon's army, and it was decided to send Cucchi to Bismarck to obtain from the Prussian government the necessary arms to go to Rome should Victor Emmanuel persist in his attitude of vacillation. Cucchi accomplished his mysterious mission, and Bismarck concluded a deal whereby Prussia was to furnish guns and money to the Italian revolutionaries, in return for which they were to keep up agitation to prevent an Italian alliance with the French nation.

Everything was ready. Still, Victor Emmanuel hesitated.

Public opinion was rapidly being manufactured with the assistance of Bismarck's money, so the deputies of the Left who signed a petition for the occupation of

Rome, on being asked what they would do if the ministry refused their demand answered " We will make barricades and with the people we will go to Rome without you ! "

The government then decided to act, and General Cadorna, who had already been selected by Freemasonry to lead a popular army should the government not wish to send him there in an official capacity, marched on Rome.

The operations of war began on September 15, 1870, and on September 20, at five o'clock in the morning, the cannon of Cadorna settled the Roman question. The Porta Pia was forced. The sacrifice was accomplished. Freemasonry had triumphed.

But Freemasonry had won again when, according to Mr. George d'Heylli, writing in February 1871,[9] " Mr. Gambetta, who was the arbitrary master of that country's (France) destiny during the three months that his dictatorship lasted, was able, without anyone daring to oppose his conduct, to misuse his power in order to unsettle the country and satisfy his own ambitions. He trampled the country's laws under foot, by slighting the most elementary rules of civilised society, by hunting from their benches *magistrates immovibles*, and from the council chambers those who had been elected by suffrage, by taking the war into his own hands, by promoting and depriving officers of their rank, by suddenly changing , according to his own whims and fancies or those of his advisers, his opinions, schemes and plans. "

Such indeed is the example given by all the demagogues who act in the name of " The People " !

In the discussion concerning the fate of the fomen-

---

9. P. B. Gheusi, *Gambetta, Life and Letters,* pp. 11 and 302.

ters of the Commune, Gambetta made one of his most eloquent speeches, the result of which was that a vote of amnesty was passed in their favour.

In 1871, he further consolidated his power by issuing a decree declaring that the former servitors of the Empire would be ineligible to membership in the National Assembly which was convened to ratify the treaty with Prussia.

By this time, Adriano Lemmi had attained prosperity and become the owner of vast estates near Florence.

Mazzini died on March 11, 1872, and, at his request, Lemmi was appointed by Albert Pike to succeed him as chief of the Sovereign Executive Directory.

In 1870, the Marquis of Ripon, who had succeeded the Earl of Zetland as Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of England, resigned his office and became a Roman Catholic. He was succeeded by the Prince of Wales, later to be Edward VII, King of England, received Knight Kadosch in 1882 on Jan. 28, and Affilié Supérieur, Grand Orient, in 1883.[10]

Adriano Lemmi, a Palladist, though not yet a member of the Supreme Council of Rome, soon concluded that the secret superior authority conferred on him could best be enhanced in Italy by smashing the various Supreme Councils for the benefit of one. Unity of Italian Masonry was then his aim. Success in this project depended on slow, deliberate manoeuvring, secrecy concerning his palladist affiliation, temporary restriction of the number of triangles in the peninsula and, above all, forbearance in dealing with the rival powers established in the ordinary rites.

In 1875, the scene of Masonic intrigue had shifted to England. The Khedive of Egypt, being at the time financially embarrassed offered his shares in the Suez Canal Co. for sale.

---

[10] Rosen, *L'ennemi social,* for oath taken by Edward VII.

" The Duc Decazes, French Minister of Foreign Affairs, failed to inform the French authorities of the Khedive's predicament, while the Rothschilds ", (on the information of their Egyptian agent, Ambroise Cinadino) " secretly advanced to Disraeli, then Prime Minister of England, the necessary funds to deliver the controlling interest of the canal to Britain, thus striking an International Coup d'etat, the significance of which was only dimly appreciated when, in the following year, Disraeli had Queen Victoria proclaimed Empress of India. "[11]

Thus the controlling interest of the great waterway to the East was vested in England to have and to hold, till the British Empire, about to be created, should cease to serve the purpose of its makers.

In June 1877, Adriano Lemmi[12] became an ordinary member of the Grand Orient of Italy at Rome, of which Giuseppe Mazzoni was Grand Master, keeping this affiliation secret till 1883, when he let it be known that he was joint Grand Master with Giuseppe Petroni.

" At this date, the rivalry for supremacy in Scottish Rites had become acute, for the Roman Grand Orient wished to dominate over the Supreme Council of Italy at Turin, of which Timoteo Riboli was Grand Master. The Grand Commander of the Roman Supreme Council was Senator Colonel George Tamajo, though its real chief was Luigi Castellazzo. With the secret aid of the latter and the further assistance of Count Piancini, Tamajo was induced to abdicate his rights for 50,000 francs, and on January 21, 1885, the Supreme Council of Rome was absorbed by the Grand Orient of Italy.

---

[11] E. T. Raymond, *The Alien Patriot.*

[12] Margiotta, *Adriano Lemmi, op. cit.,* pp. 104-105.

All Lemmi now required to complete his victory was to absorb the Supreme Council of Turin, but Riboli, the only real and legitimate representative of Italian Freemasonry, recognized by the Convention of Universal Scottish Rites at Lausanne, in 1875, and by all the Masonic powers of the world, had no wish to part with a source of revenue or to defer to the little Jew at Rome who was invested with no recognized superior authority.

Lemmi, who well knew that his secret title of Palladist chief assured him eventual supremacy, addressed himself to the Sovereign Pontiff at Charleston, Albert Pike, to whom he explained the danger to Italian Masonry of such intense dissensions and the necessity for fusion in the great struggle against the Vatican, stating further that the authority of Rome, the capital of Italy since 1870, must be recognized by the foreign Masonic powers.

His reasons appealed to the Sovereign Pontiff of Universal Freemasonry who, in November 1886, entirely disarmed Riboli by promising him an indemnity of 30,000 francs. Riboli acquiesced and the money was handed out from the central fund of the order.

In the Supreme Administrative Directory of Berlin, the payment of this sum is recorded in the balance sheet of 1887 under the heading of exceptional expenses in the following terms :[13]

" Suppression of the Supr.·. Cons.·. of Italy sitting at Turin. Extraordinary indemnity allowed to F.·. T. R. on the *proposal* of the F.·. A. L. and approved by the secret committee of Feb. 28th, 30,000 francs.

Before pocketing his 30,000 francs, Riboli raised a

---

13. Margiotta, *op. cit.,* pp. 105 *et seq.*

great row, abusing Lemmi and objecting to the fusion of the Supreme Council of Turin with that of Rome. Ignoring the fact that in 1885 Tamajo had received 50 000 francs for the same reason, he sent protests broadcast in the shape of balustres demonstrating the legality of the supreme Council of Turin and the illegality of that of the Roman Centre.

Many Freemasons rallied to his assistance. A great movement was started to do away with the despotism of Lemmi, and numerous Lodges were founded under the " obedience of Turin. "

Lemmi however, being Chief of Political Action in high masonry, had a great advantage over his opponents, but he could not make good his title before the lodges, nine-tenths of whose members ignored the very existence of Universal Central Masonry, the secret of which was to be kept under penalty of death. On the other hand, this was solely a matter concerning Scottish Rites for the protection of which the Supreme Council of Switzerland existed as the Executive power of the Scottish Confederation. This council is distinctly separate from the secret executive of Central high masonry whose one concern is international politics, so no confusion was possible.

During a nine months' campaign, Lemmi's opponents gained many adherents for Riboli, who, suddenly reversing his position, capitulated on the intervention of Albert Pike. Thirty thousand francs had done the trick.

For the benefit of his dupes, Pike had deceitfully declared in the fundamental constitution of high masonry that the Constitution, Statutes and Regulations of each rite would always be respected by Charleston. In order to propitiate Lemmi, he tore up that rite of which Riboli believed him to be the Patriarch and President !

The Supreme Council of Lausanne was much embarrassed inasmuch as, where Scottish Rites was concerned, it was obliged to admit that Lemmi's opponents were in the right, and that as a Scottish Rites Mason he, as Petroni's successor, the Chief of Political Action of secret high masonry, was a rebel.

In an effort to beat the devil around the bush, Riboli and Tamajo, pretending to take Lemmi as their temporary delegate, accepted for themselves the empty honorary title of Sovereign Grand Commander *ad vitam,* while Lemmi became Sovereign Grand Commander delegate invested with the real power.

Italian Freemasonry was united. A meeting was convened at Florence in January 1887, by Tamajo and Riboli at which seven brothers from Rome and seven from Turin, under orders from Charleston, ratified this agreement.

Lemmi misappropriated masonic funds and profited by his position to exploit everyone, during which period of frenzied finance, he pocketed over four hundred thousand francs. Many complaints of his conduct were sent to the Supreme Directory at Charleston but while passing through the hands of Phileas Walder who shared in the loot, anything to Lemmi's discredit was suppressed, never reaching Pike who trusted him till the end.

It was in 1881 that Lemmi had embarked on his campaign for the dechristianization of Italy, giving, under his invisible direction, an organization to the scattered forces of anticlericalism. Mazzini had made no mistake for Lemmi persecuted the church with a savage hatred.

During a Masonic congress held at Milan in 1881, the following resolutions were adopted : —

1

Measures are to be taken to counteract the work of the institutions known as " Œuvres Pies " (Charitable Works) which were founded by Clericalism to corrupt the people under the misnomer of Charity. The morals of the country thus endangered need reforming as well as the laws.

2

Women are henceforth to be eligible for Freemasonry and feminine lodges are to be founded as soon as possible.

3

It is deemed necessary by the congress to establish workmen's lodges in the city as well as in the country. These lodges to be free, except for a nominal fee to cover unavoidable expenses.

4

It is decided to institute a corps of secret masonic messengers whose mission is to transmit to all lodges the orders and instructions of the chief. These messengers are to be chosen from among Masons having no personal encumbrances and whose devotion to the order has been of long standing. They are to be registered at no particular lodge deriving their powers directly from the central authority of Italian masonry.

5

A corps of brother propagandists, themselves unknown as Masons, is to be created. They are to travel from town to town as peddlers and merchants of all kinds, spreading everywhere, notably among the rural populations, opinions favourable to masonry. In the course of their peregrinations hey are to abstain from visiting local masonic lodgss and are to be known as " Travelling Brothers. "

6

Should the order wish to initiate a personage of very high social rank or one who, in the opinion of the Grand Master should happen to be in a position demanding the strictest secrecy, his initiation need be known only to the Assistant Grand Master or the Grand Secretary and the Grand Treasurer.

7

The congress declares the solution of the social questions and the winning for the legitimate workers of their rights to be its chief concern. The Lodges are authorized to hold debates on the most practical means of obtaining governmental support for all measures tending to abolish pauperism and the improvement of the lot of the working classes.

This, the seventh resolution of the Congress, to be made public.

8

The liberal forces of Italy are to be secretly organized and the lodges are to act in such a way as to gain for Freemasonry a majority of the national representation in Parliament.

The Congress adopts for Italy the rule passed by the Grand Orient of France in 1848, under the title "Masonic rules to be followed with regard to elections. "

9

The Congress declares the chief object of the efforts of Italian Freemasonry to be, for the present, to obtain from the government : —

a — The regulation of the ecclesiastical patrimony, the property of which belongs to the state and the administration of which belongs to the civil powers :

b — The strenuous application of all existing laws guaranteeing to the civil society its independence with regard to clerical influence :

c ---- The enforcement of existing laws by virtue of which religious congregations are to be suppressed, and the suggestion of measures calculated to prevent these laws from being evaded :

d ---- The promulgation of the law relating to the property of religious bodies (confiscation) :

e ---- The suppression of all religious instruction in the schools :

j —. The creation of schools for young girls where the pupils can be protected from any kind of clerical influence.

10

Finally the Congress decided to create by masonic initiative one great, politically non-partisan, anti-clerical party whose object would be to fight and destroy clericalism by any and all means.

Adriano Lemmi promptly obeyed Pike's orders and the resolutions of the Congress which he himself had dictated, by establishing in Rome on July 13, 1881, ten anticlerical auxiliary lodges, the foundation expenses of which were paid by the Supreme Directory of Rome. By his order, similar lodges were founded in almost every important town of the peninsula.

Lemmi is a Satanist and he organized the anticlerical movement as a Satanist. [14] Besides his effort to destroy the church, he led a movement to spread " The Nature Cult " well knowing that the secret protection of this sect would always be afforded him in the event of that of the anti-catholic government of Italy being withdrawn. This sect does not as yet dare to reveal its supreme aim as, say the chiefs, " the world is not yet ready to receive enlightenment by the true light. "

• The reader must remember that at the date when the above was written by Margiotta, Lemmi was still alive.

So Lemmi first preached Lucifer and then fought Christianity by combating the idea of the supernatural!

All his discourses and manifests were composed either by Ulisse Bacci, an atheist, or Umberto dal Medico, a Luciferian.

His instructions to the Italian anticlericals were also put into operation by the Freemasons of other countries, for the supreme object of the sect is the suppression, by a terrible social upheaval, of the religion of God, and its substitution by that of Satan, known to the dupes of Masonry as " The Great Architect of the Universe. "

On November 21, 1888, Lemmi wrote Pike a letter appealing for help in his fight against the Vatican. The letter closed with the following paragraph : —

" Help us in our struggle against the Vatican, thou whose authority is supreme, and under thy impulse all the lodges of Europe and America will rally to our cause. "

Pike needed little urging and immediately fell in with Lemmi's plans.

On March 30th, 1889, the Mother Lodge Archimede took the initiative in an effort to shake off Lemmi's tyrannical yoke by announcing the formation of " The Masonic Federation of the Independent Lodges of Italy. " Lemmi was much perturbed by this effort at secession which he finally succeeded in crushing by the use of the power of gold. After the Federation had called a second congress, he sent one of his secret agents to Palermo with ten thousand francs to buy off the Scelsi brothers. Discord was thus sown in the ranks of the Federation. Soon, the disintegration was complete, the centre of Palermo vanished and opposition was crushed.

Towards this period, Lemmi got control of the

Italian tobacco monopoly through which he succeeded, by swindling methods, in acquiring several millions. The whole affair was aired in Parliament but the intimidated deputies voted to save the reputation of the sect and in order to suppress the scandal, although Colonel Achille Bizzoni, Depute Matteo Renato, Impriani Poerio and several newspapers took up the matter and made a great row which ended in the usual way when the public gets tired of a subject.

As a result of Lemmi's politics in the elections of 1890, no decent honest and independent candidate for political position had a chance of being elected against one of his hand-picked nominees. Italian politics became a Freemasonic monopoly and the people were mercilessly exploited by the dregs of society backed by Lemmi and his money, much of which was extorted from the Banca Romana.

On April 2, 1891, Albert Pike died and was succeeded in the supreme Grand College of Masons by Albert George Mackey, who held the post for two years and five months. There were great rivalries between the members of Pike's staff, and Albert George Mackey was chosen as a compromise candidate who was unlikely to interfere seriously with any of the others.

With neither strength of character, energy nor activity, he was no match for Lemmi who aspired to the supreme Masonic power as well as to the handling of the Masonic central funds for the expenditure of a large part of which no account was required by the Supreme Directory at Berlin.

The International organization was now a formidable machine composed of 77 triangular provinces, the archdiocese of high masonry and 33 Lotus Mother Lodges, the founder lodges and generators of Palladism.

With Phileas Walder as accomplice, Lemmi lost no time in starting to undermine the power of Charleston, but to realize this project it was first necessary to create a movement in the triangular provinces. To this end, he employed his secret political agents of the Executive Directory of Rome, practically all of whom were Jews. These agents were registered in the central directory only by a number and a special Masonic name and were unknown even to the Grand Masters of the provincial lodges as well as to the brothers and sisters at the head of a Lotus Mother Lodge.

His particular agent in London in 1893 was supposed to be an old Piccadilly Jew called Daniel Mold. The came under which he was registered for this Triangular province, in the Grand Central Directory at Naples, was Adam-Kadzmoun, the magical value of the letters of which, when added, give the total of 244 exactly as do the letters of his real name.

Lemmi was not forced to rely solely upon his special agents, for he also had the unanimous support of the powerful secret Jewish lodges.

By the decree of Sept. 12, 1874, which confirmed a treaty signed by Armand Levi for the Jewish B'nai B'rith (brothers of the Alliance) of America, Germany and England and the supreme authority of Charleston, Albert Pike authorized the Jewish Freemasons to form a secret federation functioning side by side with the ordinary lodges. This secret society was to bear the title of Sovereign Patriarchal Council and its Universal centre was to be at Hamburg, Valentinskamp Strasse. In subscriptions alone, it collected one million four hundred thousand francs a year which were used for general Jewish propaganda.[15]

---

15. At that date the franc was at 5 to the dollar.

Under the terms of this document (given in full on p. 225 of *Adriano Lemmi* by D. Margiotta), Jewish Masonry, unlike Gentile Masonry, was not to be graded, its members were exempt from belonging to any other official rite and " the secret of its existence " was to be most strictly kept by those members of High Masonry who had been informed by the Supreme Dogmatic Directory of its existence. [16]

The latter clause in the agreement is. undoubtedly responsible for the equivocal attitude of all High Masons with regard to the past and present, national and international, secret political activities of the B'nai B'rith. In the interests of humanity, the conspiracy of secrecy should be revealed, for the control of the international balance of power and the possibilities of the international spy system thus established, are a menace to the welfare and peace of the peoples of the world.

" A Jew of French descent, this Armand Levi, above referred to, had attached himself to the Napoleons at an early time and was employed by them in various ways... As a member of the " International " he represented the possibilities of an Imperial Socialism... and when the barricades were built, his name was in the Commune and his voice was raised for the

---

16. De la Rive, *Les Juifs dans la Franc-Maçonnerie.* Re treaty between the B'nai Br'ith and the supreme authority at Charleston.

Translation. " ... Albert Pike and the Jew Armand Levy affixed their Palladian signatures to this document. Armand Levy styled himself — 33 Lieutenant grand assistant and sovereign delegate of the Grand Central Directory of Naples, honorary member *ad vitam* of the Sublime Federal Consistory of the B'nai B'rith of Germany, acting as general agent for this Consistory as well as those of America and England, the various federations of the B'nai B'rith having given him full powers... "

extremist counsels. He it was who rose in the Hotel de Ville, to ask that all the deputies of Paris should be summoned from Versailles, and if they would not come should be deposed, convicted, and condemned to death. "[17]

It was indeed in the heart of the Jewish lodges that the plans to manufacture the public opinion necessary to the success of Lemmi's ambitious project were made, and what actually happened was the result of a plot of the Sovereign Patriarchal Council of Hamburg against the Supreme Dogmatic Directory of Charleston.

Hamburg won in the end and the secret Jewish control of the powerful machine of International Masonry was assured.

The Jewish Lodges were Lemmi's willing tools, and fifty thousand Masons, simultaneously Palladists and members of the Hamburg federation, under orders given by the Jewish agents in the pay of the Chief of Political action, made over a period of three months, in the triangles and secret Jewish lodges, a splendid propaganda calculated to induce discussion and approval of the transfer of the Supreme Dogmatic Directory of Charleston to Rome. Everywhere, by every means, the agents of Lemmi worked indefatigably to create a demand for the removal of the headquarters of the order from Charleston to Rome, on the pretext that the power of the Vatican could be better fought at close quarters. These reclamations of a noisy minority were then magnified for the benefit of the Grand Council of Masons at Charleston into a threat of imminent secession and, after much manoeuvring, Phileas Walder succeeded in inducing George Mackey and the American

---

[17] Onslow Yorke, *Secret History of The International,* pp. 52 and 55-56.

Masons to sign the decree convening the Sovereign Convention. Walder, having remarked that Lemmi was not to be a candidate for the Supreme Grand Mastership in case of the passage of a vote of transfer of which he maintained there was no danger, seeing that the majority of the triangles favoured Charleston as the seat of High Masonry, the American Masons, over confident of the outcome of the convention, overlooked the importance of the choice of the town in which it was to meet.

On May 20, 1893, after all the delegates had been elected, Lemmi suddenly launched his decree of chief organizer appointing Rome as the convention city.

Had everything been straight, Charleston would have come out of the trial of the secret Convention with a majority of 52 votes, for only 25 provinces favoured the move to Rome, but to Lemmi, all ways, including bribery and crime, were good.

On the eve of the opening of the Convention, fourteen of the delegates favouring Charleston were suddenly taken ill, and elections for substitute delegates were held in five of the Grand Triangles but in the remaining nine, the provincial Grand Masters, owing to lack of time or some other reason, referred the matter by telegram to Charleston. George Mackey answered " Send Bovio proxy to provide a European substitute. "

It was suicide. Bovio, Grand Master General of the Grand Central Directory of Naples, and his lieutenants were entirely devoted to Lemmi in whom George Mackey continued blindly to confide. The nine sudden illnesses of the American delegates (the only ones he knew of) had failed to open his eyes and he continued counting 52 votes against the transfer !

Apart from two or three American delegates, all those who landed in England in August and were entertained by the Mother Lodge of the Lotus of England in the secret temple at 32, Oxford Street (Frascati's) were oblivious of the imminent crisis.

When the Grand Central Directory of Naples received these proxies, nine Italian delegates were named to represent Cleveland, Memphis, Guatemala, Havana, Caracas, Lima, La Paz, Treinta-y-Tres and Port Louis, one of whom abstained from voting while the rest cynically voted against the wishes of the province they represented.

The count of the ballots gave the following result out of 77 delegates :

48 delegates for the transfer to Rome,
25 delegates against the transfer to Rome,
4 delegates not voting the transfer to Rome.

After this essentially fraudulent transfer of the real masonic power from Charleston to Rome, the rest was easy.

The ten Masons of Charleston retained their empty titles in an honorary capacity while Lemmi, now self-styled Sovereign Pontiff, named ten other active Masons, but owing to the difficulties attendant on the meetings of these widely dispersed magnates, he created a Supreme Triangle, with two assistants Carducci and Ferrari, the members of which were : —

Patriarch Emeritus Mason, Germany, Findel (Kether-368) at Leipzig.

Patriarch Emeritus Mason, of India, Hobbs (Khokhma-926) at Calcutta.

Patriarch Emeritus Mason, Hungary, Antal de Berecz (Binah-721) at Budapest.

Patriarch Emeritus Mason, Australia, W. J. Clarke (Khesed-409) at Melbourne.

Patriarch Emeritus Mason, England, David Sandeman (Din-476) at London.[18]

Patriarch Emeritus Mason, France, Floquet, (Tiphereth-1255) at Paris.

Patriarch Emeritus Mason, Egypt, Gerasimos Poggio (Netzakh-1165) at Alexandria.

Patriarch Emeritus Mason, Spain, Miguel Morayta (Hod-816) at Madrid.

Patriarch Emeritus Mason, Chili, B. Alamos-Gonzales (Iesod-1152) at Valparaiso.

Patriarch Emeritus Mason, Belgium, Goblet d'Alviella (Malkhuth-697).

International Masonry under Lemmi becomes Satanic and Jewish,

International Jewry has much to explain !

Lemmi died in 1896 and was succeeded by Ernesto Nathan, an English Jew, who, in view of the intimacy which had existed between his mother, Sarah Nathan and Mazzini, was said to have been the latter's natural son.

Lemmi left a son called Silvano Lemmi.

In 1895, a schismatic masonic group calling itself the Grand Orient of Italy was founded. On March 5, 1899, it held a meeting at which it adopted a constitution of its own after which Lemmi's Grand Orient and the new one settled down to a state of secret civil war.

Secrecy was imperative for, prior to 1895, the row between the various Masonic factions had become so acute that the profane public had begun to get seriously interested in the Political Masonic affairs of the contending factions.

---

[18] According to " The Royal Blue Book " for January 1895, p. 1065, Mr. Hugh David Sandeman's London address was 33, Golden Square. In *Devil Worship in France*, Mr. Waite refers to 33, Golden Square as the address of the Supreme Council of Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite.

Until two years ago, this address was that of the Faculty of Arts, where lectures and concerts were given in a Masonic Temple.

The outcome of this dispute was the exposures made in the following books :

Mémoires d'une Ex-Palladiste and *Le* 33° *Crispi,* by Diana Vaughan.

Le Palladisme and *Y a-t-il des femmes dans la franc-Maçonnerie,* by Leo Taxil.

Adriano Lemmi, by Domenico Margiotta.

Le Diable au XIX^e Siècle, by Dr. Bataille.

La Femme et I'Enfant dans la Franc-Maçonnerie and *La Franc-Maçonnerie Universelle,* by A. de la Rive.

L'Ennemie Sociale, by Paul Rosen.

Satan et Cie, by Paul Rosen.

To inaugurate a policy of suppression these revelations were shown to have been a hoax, a mystification. The manoeuvre was successful. On the 19th of April, 1897, the author, writing under the pseudonym of Diana Vaughan, mysteriously disappeared and Leo Taxil publicly repudiated his own allegations against Freemasonry.

Once again the public heard, believed and forgot.

What happened to Palladism, the super rite ? [19].

---

[19] Domenico Margiotta, *Le Palladisme,* p. 32. Quotation from *La Croix du Dauphiné.* May 18th 1895.

... " Doctor Domenico Margiotta has given us the following details which complete the telegram which, thanks to him, we published two days ago, on the discovery of the Temple of Satan at Rome : —

" Naturally the agents of the Borghese family were admitted without hindrance to all the halls and rooms of the palace, with the exception of one which was closed, and which the satanic keepers refused obstinately to open. Then the agents

At the foot of page 76 of Mrs. Nesta Webster's *Secret Societies,* we find the following note : " Thus Hastings, *Encyclopaedia of Religion and Ethics,* omits all reference to Satanism before 1880 and observes :

' The evidence of the existence of either Satanists or Palladists consists entirely of the writings of a group of men in Paris. '

" It then proceeds to devote five columns out of the six and a half which compose the article to describing the works of two notorious romancers, Leo Taxil and Bataille. There is not a word of real information to be found there. "

Indeed we owe Mrs. Webster a debt of gratitude for thus drawing our attention to this curious effort in an otherwise presumably reliable work, to eliminate certain phases of religious history. Those phases are the personal histories of Albert Pike, the Great Freemason and Giuseppe Mazzini, the Great Revolutionist.

of the proprietor of the premises, (Prince Borghese) insisted on being allowed entrance to that room and threatened finally to have the door forced.

" In the face of such a threat, the guards of Lemmi were compelled to give in and the representatives of the lessor entered the palladian temple.

" Its lateral walls were hung with magnificent red and black damask draperies. At the further end was a great piece of tapestry upon which was the figure of Satan at whose feet "was an altar. Here and there were arranged triangles, squares and other symbolic signs of the sect as well as books and masonic rituals. All around stood gilt chairs. Each of these, in the moulding which capped its back, had a glass eye, the interior of which was lighted by electricity, while in the middle of the temple stood a curious throne, that of the Great Satanic Pontiff.

Owing to the state of terror into which this unexpected sight plunged them, the visitors beat a hasty retreat without further examination of the premises. "

The photostats and documents here appended show the re-organization of the super-rite under the general name of Illuminism, linked as we know with " Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia ". Patents of the Ancient Order of Oriental Templars, then in its embryonic stages (1902) are also shown.

In 1917, this organization unobtrusively declared itself the super rite.

The history of the Ancient Order of Oriental Templars is given on a subsequent page.

CHAPTER XXXIII

THE INTERLOCKING DIRECTORATE

Freemasonry, as the average mason sees it, teaches brotherhood and many worthy and exalted principles. It is primarily a charity organization and only good men are eligible to its ranks. To them the G in the Pentagon means God, but needless to say, if its teaching were not of a noble idealistic character it would make few proselytes.

Within the lodges, and among the members thereof, are members of other rites which the British Mason is deliberately taught contemptuously to refuse to acknowledge as Masonic. Many of these are the recruiting sergeants for the secret societies who make their selection at leisure, choosing only such initiates as seem to them likely to serve their ends.

Once in the higher grades, a man who has, too late, been found to be intractable, can continue to the highest visible point of initiation along the track prepared by those who mean him to know nothing. All is beautiful, all is noble, he sees only the best, and for ever advertises the goodness of Freemasonry.

Though in this capacity he may do nothing else, he becomes an important factor in recruiting.

It is frequently alleged that no English Mason is permitted to attend a Lodge meeting of the Grand Orient or of any other so called irregular masonry.

This is nonsense !

If such a statement is to be considered, how are we to reconcile the fact that Wm. Wynn Westcott, an English Mason, appointed Junior Grand Deacon to the Grand Lodge of England in 1902 and the head of the " Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia " and " Golden Dawn, " was also the Secretary of the Rite of Swedenborg, Knight Kadosch in Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rites, Grand Standard Bearer, Royal Arch, Grand Lodge of England, and Regent of the Illuminati and on intimate terms with one of its founders, the German, Theodore Reuss 33° 90° 96°.

Among his other titles, Theodore Reuss included the following : — Magus Supremus in Mundo of the Esoteric Rosicrucians, Fra. Superior and Outer Head in Mundo of the Ancient Order of Oriental Templars (O. T. O.); Sovereign Grand Master General *ad vitam* of the Ancient Rites of Masonry, Memphis and Mizraim Rites of Masonry for the German Empire and its dependencies ; Terniasimus Regens of the I.·. O.·. ; S∵ I∵ 33°, etc., etc.

To further emphasize the interlocking character of this organization, we print herewith a partial list of the Masonic offices held by John Yarker, quoted from an article published in *The Equinox* Volume X, 1913 under the title : " In Memoriam ".

May this end for ever the oft repeated fable of British Masonic isolation !

IN MEMORIAM — JOHN YARKER

Royal Grand Commander of the Rose Croix and Kadosch, 1868 to 1874.

Scottish Rite of 33° (and received certificate dating from 1811), January 27th, 1871.

Admitted 33° of Cerneau Rite and Honorary Member in New York, August 21st, 1871.

Installed Grand Master, 96° of Ancient and Primitive Rite at Freemasons Hall, London, October 8th, 1872.

Absolute Sovereign Grand Master, Rite of Mizraim, 90°, from 1871 down to the present time.

Received over twelve patents of 33° of the Supreme Council in various parts of the world.

Past Senior Grand Warden of Greece by Patent, July 1st, 1874.

Hon. Member of Lodge 227, Dublin, 1872, and of various foreign bodies 1881-3. Among these he received the " Crown of Kether, " admitting to the 5° of the Grand Lamaistique Order of Light.

In 1882-3 he acted as General Giuseppe Garibaldi's Grand Chancellor of the Confederated Rites, which he arranged throughout the world.

Hon. Grand Master of the Sovereign Grand Council of Iberico, October 5, 1889.

Rite of Swedenborg : In 1876 he was appointed Supreme Grand Master for the United Kingdom under the Charter of T. G. Harrington, P. G. Master of Craft Grand Lodge of Canada; Colonel W. Bury M'Leod Moore, Grand Master of Templars, 33°, and Geo. C. Longley. 33°.

Elected Imperial Grand Hierophant, 97°, in Ancient and Primitive Rite, November 11, 1902.

Grand Representative of the Grand Lodge of Germany, 1902-6.

Hon. Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of Cuba (by patent), January 5, 1907.

Hon. Grand Master *ad vitam* of the United Sup. Grand Council of Italy at Firenze, and of the Society Alchemica, etc., etc., 1910-12.

He also was interested in many of the concordant orders, and held office in several. He was appointed President of Sat Bhai of Prag, and was co-sponsor from 1871 to 1912.

Head of the Rite of Ishmael in England in succession to Dr. Mackenzie and Major F. G. Irwin.

Chief of the Red Branch of Eri in succession to Major F. G. Irwin.

High Priest of the 7th degree of Knight Templar priests, Manchester, revived from 1868 to 1875.

More over from the correspondence of Theodore Reuss, we find that John Yarker was also the Delegate from the *Supreme Conseil Martiniste de France.*

Again we find that this same Theodore Reuss, above mentioned, seems to become eligible in the eyes of Wm. Wynn Westcott and John Yarker to be the founder of the six Swedenborg Lodges in Germany, chiefly on the grounds that he was an English Mason!

Presently, we find that Theodore Reuss, English Mason, is the Delegate of the A. and P. Rite of Memphis from Spain and Bulgaria to Germany, and from Germany to England. Later we find him on intimate terms with Papus, the head of the Martinist order in France.

Turning to the photostat of a patent which we reproduce we find a document which speaks for itself. It is signed Theodore Reuss 33° 90° 96°. John Yarker 33° 90° 96° Franz Hartman 33° 90° 95° and Henry Klein 33° 95°.

In his testimonial as special War-correspondent, Theodore Reuss includes the following letter: —

Kaiserlich Deutsches Konsulat fur Griechenland.

Athenes, le 10/22 *Avril* 1897.

> *Le Consulat Imperial d'Allemagne pour la Grèce requiert par la présente toutes les autorités militaires et civiles de laisser passer librement le porteur Monsieur Theodore Reuss, correspondant du Bureau tele-*

graphique des États-Unis, et du Kleines Journal, qui, pourvu d'une letite de recommandation de Son Excellence le Ministre de la Guerre Mr. Metaxas à l'adresse de Son Altesse Royale le Prince Royal, se rendra à la frontière lurco-grecque.

Le Consul General d'Allemagne,
(Signed) LUDERS.

While casually perusing the Masonic Year Book for 1922 (English Grand Lodge), we find on page 522 under the following heading : —

Foreign Grand Lodges. E. Hemisphere

Italy

Grand Orient of Italy
Grand Master — Gustavo Canti
Deputy Grand Master — Carlo de Andreis
Director of the Grand Secretary's office.
Ulisse Bacci.

Then, turning to page 286 of our book, we find that, many years ago, Ulisse Bacci was one of Adriano Lemmi's most efficient assistants !

All this belongs to the realm of history and research, but at least, let us base the future on knowledge of the past and not build the Temple of Solomon on the ruins of the British Empire !

From this point onward, the articles on the various fraternal organizations dealt with in this book are arranged in chronological sequence according to the dates at which they are said to have been founded.

ASSOCIATIONS OF THE 16TH CENTURY

CHAPTER XXXIV

THE ILLUMINATI OF SPAIN

(Founded 1520)

The Illuminati, a Spanish sect called the Alombrados was founded about 1520.

Ignatius Loyola, while a student at Salamanca (1527), was tried by an ecclesiastical commission for alleged sympathy with this sect but was acquitted with an admonition.

See *Enc. Brit,* Ninth Edition, Art. Illuminism.

CHAPTER XXXV

THE ORDER OF THE JESUITS

(Founded 1541)

We give the following quotations from the *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* in spite of its marked anti-jesuit bias, solely to register certain historical facts, leaving their interpretation to the personal judgment of the reader. [1]

" The Company of the Jesuits was founded by Don Inigo de Loyola (Ignatius Loyola), a Spanish nobleman and soldier, on April 5, 1541, at the church of Saint Paul without the Walls, near Rome, under the sanction of the Pope, Paul III.

" It has six grades. These are novices, scholastics, temporal, coadjutors, professed of the three vows, and professed of the four vows, the latter two grades being the only ones which confer a share in the government and eligibility for the offices of the society. Its head, virtually a commander-in-chief, is known as The General. He wields absolute power over the members who are pledged to blind obedience. The General claims his authority from The Pope.

---

[1] *Enc. Brit.,* Ninth Edition, Art. Jesuits.

The " fourth vow " is one of special allegiance to the Pope promising to go in obedience to him for missionary purposes whensoever and whithersoever he may order, — a pledge seriously qualified in practice, however, by the power given to the general of alone sending out or recalling any missionary.

" The question has long been hotly debated whether, in addition to these six avowed grades, there be not a seventh, answering in some degree to the Tertiaries of the Franciscan and Dominican orders, secretly affiliated to the society, and acting as its unsuspected emissaries in various lay positions. This class is styled in France ' Jesuits of the short robe ', and some evidence in support of its actual existence was alleged during the lawsuits against the company under Louis XV. The Jesuits themselves deny the existence of any such body, and are able to adduce the negative disproof that no provision for it is to be found in their constitutions. On the other hand, there are clauses therein which make the creation of such a class perfectly feasible if thought expedient. One is the power given to the general to receive candidates secretly, and to conceal their admission, for which there is a remarkable precedent in the case of Francis Borgia, duke of Gandia, afterwards himself general of the society; the other is an even more singular clause, providing for the admission of candidates to the company by persons who are not themselves members of it. ... The general, who should by the statutes of the society reside permanently at Rome, holds in his hands the right of appointment, not only to the office of provincial over each of the great districts into which the houses are mapped, but to the offices of each house in particular, no shadow of electoral right or even suggestion being recognized.

" The superiors and rectors of all houses and Colleges in Europe must report weekly to their provincial on all matters concerning the members of the society and all outsiders with whom they may have had dealings of any sort. The provincial, for his part, must report monthly to the general, giving him a summary of all details which have reached himself. But, as a check on him, all superiors of houses in his province are to make separate reports directly to the general once in three months, and further to communicate with him, without delay, every time any matter of importance occurs, irrespective of any information which the provincial may have forwarded. Nor is this all; an elaborate system of espionage and delation forms part of the recognized order of every house, and, in direct contrast to the ancient indictment and confession of faults in open conventual chapter, every inmate of a house is liable to secret accusation to its superior, while the superior himself may be similarly delated to the provincial or the general.

" Nor is the general himself exempt from control on the part of the society, lest by any possible error he be unfaithful to its interests. A consultative council is imposed on him by the general congregation, consisting of six persons, whom he may neither select nor remove, — namely, four assistants, each representing a nation, an admonisher or adviser (resembling the adlatus of a military commander) to warn him of any faults or mistakes, and his confessor. One of these must be in constant attendance on him; and, while he is not at liberty to abdicate his office, nor to accept any dignity or office outside it without the assent of the society, he may yet be suspended or deposed by its authority.

" There would seem at first to be an effectual external check provided, however, in the fact that, while all the officers of the society, except the council aforesaid, hold of the general, he in turn holds of the Pope, and is his liegeman directly, as well as in virtue of the fourth vow, which he has taken in common with the other professed. But such is the extraordinary skill with which the relations of the society to the papacy were originally drafted by Loyola, and subsequently worked by his successors, that it has always remained organically independent, and might very conceivably break with Rome without imperilling its own existence. The general has usually stood towards the Pope much as a powerful grand feudatory of the Middle Ages did towards a weak titular lord paramount, or perhaps as the captain of a splendid host of ' Free Companions ' did towards a potentate with whom he chose to take temporary and precarious service; and the shrewd Roman populace have long shown their recognition of this fact [by styling these two great personages severally the ' White Pope ' and the ' Black Pope '. In truth the society has never, from the very first, obeyed the Pope, whenever its will and his happened to run counter to each other.

" The merited odium which has overtaken the Inquisition, usually officered by Dominicans, has induced the Jesuits, whose own controversial methods had been different, to disclaim all connexion with that tribunal, and to represent their society as free from complicity in its acts. But, in truth, it was Ignatius Loyola himself who procured its erection in Portugal in 1545-6, and F. Nithard, one of the very few cardinals of the society, was inquisitor-general of that kingdom in 1655.

" The first successes of the Indian mission were entirely amongst the lowest class ; but when Robert de'Nobili, to win the Brahmins, adopted their insignia and mode of life in 1605, a step sanctioned by Gregory XV, in 1623, the fathers who followed his example pushed the new caste-feeling so far as absolutely to refuse the ministrations and sacraments of religion to the pariahs, lest the Brahmin converts should take offence, •— an attempt which was reported to Rome by Norbert, a Capuchin, and by the bishop of Rosalia and was vainly censured in the pontifical briefs of Innocent X in 1645, Clement IX in 1669,Clement XII in 1734 and 1739, and Benedict XIV, in 1745. The ' Chinese rites ', assailed with equal unsuccess by 9 popes, were not finally put down until 1744, by a bull of Benedict XIV... By these rites the Jesuit missionaries had virtually assimilated Christianity to heathenism> and their practical reply in opposition to a papal decree in 1700 was to obtain an edict from the emperor of China declaring that there was nothing idolatrous or superstitious in the inculpated usages, while in 1710 they flung Cardinal Tournon, legate of Clement XI, into the prison of the Inquisition at Macao, where he perished. Finally, they disobeyed the brief of suppression issued by Clement XIV in 1773, which enjoined them to disperse at once, to send back all novices to their houses, and to receive no more members. It is thus clear that the society has always regarded itself as an independent power, ready indeed to co-operate with the papacy so long as their roads and interests are the same, and to avail itself to the uttermost of the many pontifical decrees in its own favour, but drawing the line far short of practical submission when their interests diverge. '

The Jesuit power, much weakened in England by the rise of the Jewish Power with the advent of Cromwell, persisted nevertheless in its efforts to recapture its former status in that land. During the reign of James II, it schemed and intrigued incessantly through its representatives Father St. Germain[2] and his successor Father Columbière.[3] After the enactment of the limitation of the English throne to Protestant succession the Jesuit diplomatists were hard put.

To quote the *Encyclopœdia* further :

" After many difficulties they had succeeded in getting a footing in France, through the help of Duprat, bishop of Clermont, who founded a college for them in 1545 in the town of Billom, besides making over to them his house at Paris, the Hotel de Clermont, which became the nucleus of the afterwards famous college of Louis-le-Grand, while a formal legalization was granted to them by the states-general at Poissy in 1561. "

From the Jesuit College at Ingolstadt is said to have issued the sect known as " The Illuminati of Bavaria " founded by Adam Weishaupt under the guidance of Nicolai, in 1776. Weishaupt, its nominal founder, however, seems to have played a subordinate though conspicuous role in the organization of this sect. (See page 370).

On July 21, 1773, the Pope had abolished the order of Jesuits but Frederic II of Prussia encouraged and protected them with a view no doubt of using their political knowledge and skill against the Bourbons, the Hapsburgs and the Pope.

The well-known authority on theocratic organizations, Heckethorn, writes the following concerning the Jesuits :

' There is considerable analogy between Masonic and Jesuitic degrees ; and the Jesuits also tread down the shoe and bare the knee, because Ignatius Loyola thus presented himself at Rome and asked for the confirmation of the order.

---

[2] Once regent of the Jesuit College of Clermont.

[3] D. Jones, *The Secret History of White-Hall*, 1697, p. 41.

" Not satisfied with confession, preaching, and instruction, whereby they had acquired unexampled influence, they formed in Italy and France, in 1563 several ' Congregations ', i. e. clandestine meetings held in subterranean chapels and other secret places. The congregationists had a sectarian organization, with appropriate catechisms and manuals, which had to be given up before death, wherefore very few copies remain. " [4]

To show the further similarity of the Jesuit-Judaic-Masonic-Gnostic-Brahmin-Illuminati theology we now quote from a MS. in the library of the Rue Richelieu at Paris entitled *Histoire des congregations et socialites jésuitiques depuis* 1563 *jusqu'au temps présent* (1709). [5]

" *Initiation.* — From this, as well as other works, we gather some of the ceremonies with which aspirants were initiated into the Order. Having in nearly all Roman Catholic countries succeeded in becoming the educators of the young, they were able to mould the youthful mind according to their secret aims. If then, after a number of years, they detected in the pupil a blind and fanatic faith, conjoined with exalted pietism and indomitable courage, they proceeded to initiate him; in the opposite case, they excluded him. The proofs lasted twenty-four hours, for which the candidate was prepared by long and severe fasting, which, by prostrating his bodily strength, inflamed his fancy, and, just before the trial, a powerful drink was administered to him. Then the mystic scene began — diabolical apparitions, evocation of the dead, representations of the flames of hell, skeletons, moving skulls, artificial thunder and lightning, in fact, the whole paraphernalia and apparatus of the ancient mysteries. If the neophyte, who was closely watched, showed fear or terror, he remained for ever in the inferior degree ; but if he bore the proof well, he was advanced to a higher grade.

---

[4] Heckethorn, *Secret Societies of all Ages and Countries,.* vol. II, p. 296.

[5] Schaff-Herzog, *The Encyclopaedia of Religious Knowledge.* Art. Jesuits.

" At the initiation into the second degree *(Scholastici)* the same proofs, but on a grander scale, had to be undergone. The candidate, again prepared for them by long fastings, was led with his eyes bandaged into a large cavern, resounding with wild howlings and roarings, which he had to traverse, reciting at the same time prayers specially appointed for that occasion. At the end of the cave he had to crawl through a narrow opening, and while doing this, the bandage was taken from his eyes by an unseen hand, and he found himself in & square dungeon, whose floor was covered with a mortuary cloth, on which stood three lamps, shedding a feeble light on the skulls and skeletons ranged around. This was the Cave of Evocation, the Black Chamber, so famous in the annals of the Fathers. Here, giving himself up to prayer, the neophyte passed some time, during which the priests could, without his being aware of it, watch his every movement and gesture. If his behaviour was satisfactory, all at once two brethren, representing archangels, presented themselves before him, without his being able to tell whence they had so suddenly started up, — a good deal can be done with properly fitted and oiled trap-doors, — and, observing perfect silence, bound his forehead with a white band soaked with blood, and covered with hieroglyphics; they then hung a small crucifix round his neck, and a small satchel containing relics, or what did duty for them. Finally, they took off all his clothing, which they cast on a pyre in one corner of the cave, and marked his body with numerous crosses, drawn with blood. At this point, the hierophant with his assistants entered and, having bound a red cloth round the middle of the candidate's body, the brethren, clothed in bloodstained garments, placed themselves beside him, and drawing their daggers, formed the steel arch over his head. A carpet being then spread on the floor, all knelt down and prayed for about an hour, after which the pyre was secretly set on fire ; the further wall of the cave opened, the air resounded with strains, now gay, now lugubrious, and a long procession of spectres, phantoms, angels, and demons defiled past the neophyte like the ' supers ' in a pantomine. Whilst this farce was going on, the candidate took the following oath : —' In the name of Christ crucified, I swear to burst the bonds that yet unite me to father, mother, brothers, sisters, relations, friends ; to the King, magistrates, and any other authority, to which I may ever have sworn fealty, obedience, gratitude, or service. I renounce... the place of my birth, henceforth to exist in another sphere. I swear to reveal to my new superior, whom I desire to know, what I have done, thought, read, learnt, or discovered, and to observe and watch all that comes under my notice. I swear to yield myself up to my superior, as if I were a corpse, deprived of life and will. I finally swear to flee temptation, and to reveal all I succeed in discovering, well aware that lightning is not more rapid and ready than the dagger to reach me wherever I may be. '

" The new member having taken this oath, was then introduced into a neighbouring cell, where he took a bath, and was clothed in garments of new and white linen. He finally repaired with the other brethren to a banquet, where he could with choice food and wine compensate himself for his long abstinence, and the horrors and fatigues he had passed through. "

" In 1614, there was published at Cracow what purported to be the Secret Instructions given to members of the Society of Jesus. It is said that Hieronymus Zahorowski, who had recently severed his connection with the society, published the book with the co-operation of Count George Zbaraski and other Polish enemies of the order but the repudiation of the work by the society is no conclusive evidence of its spuriousness as it has been its policy from the beginning to deny all discreditable reports and to take the chance of being proved unveracious. "[6]

It will suffice to give the headings of the chapters forming the *Book of Secret Instructions of the Society of Jesus.*[7] " The Preface specially warns superiors not to allow it to fall into the hands of strangers, as it might give them a bad opinion of the Order. The Chapters are headed as follows : — I. How the Society is to proceed in founding a new establishment. — II. How the Brethren of the Society may acquire and preserve the friendship of Princes and other distinguished Personages. — III. How the Society is to conduct itself towards those who possess great influence in a state ; and who, though they are not rich, may yet be of service to others. — IX. Hints to Preachers and Confessors of Kings and great personages. — V. What conduct to observe towards the clergy and other religious orders. — VI. How to win over rich widows. — VII. How to hold fast widows and dispose of their property. — VIII. How to induce the children of widows to adopt a life of religious seclusion. — IX. Of the increase of College revenues. — X. Of the private rigour of discipline to be observed by the society. — XI. How ' Ours ' shall con-

---

6. Schaff-Herzog, *op. cit.,* Art. Jesuits.
7. Heckethorn, *op. cit.,* vol. II, p. 302.

duct themselves towards those that have been dismissed from the society. — XII. Whom to keep and make much of in the society. — XIII. How to select young people for admission into the society, and how to keep them there. — XIV. Of reserved cases, and reasons for dismissing from the society. — XV. How to behave towards nuns and devout women. — XVI. How to pretend contempt for riches. — XVII. General means for advancing the interests of the society.

" The intermeddling of this society in the affairs, political, ecclesiastical and civil, of many countries, is related in numerous works, and repeatedly produced the suppression and expulsion of the order, though it constantly reappeared with new names. In 1716 the French army was infested with Jesuitical and anti-Jesuitical societies. The Parliament of Paris suppressed them in 1762.

" They were abolished by papal bull in 1773 at the demand of France, Spain, Portugal, Parma, Naples and Austria. They are, however, still to be found everyhere, and they hold considerable property in England. A modern writer justly calls them the ' Black International. ' "

Historically, the Jesuits are given credit for the Gunpowder Plot of 1605, fomenting the Thirty Years war, the encouragement of the aspiration of Mary Stuart which led to her execution, the Revocation of the Edict of Nantes by Louis XIV, 1685, and numerous other great events of history.

The Sanfedesti. was founded at the epoch of the suppression of the Jesuits for the defence of religion, the privileges and jurisdiction of Rome and the temporal power of the popes. Their successors were the Calderari, referred to in Chapter LXX.

The Generals of the Jesuits have been as follows :

1.	Inigo de Loyola (Spaniard)	1541-1556
2.	Diego Laynez (Spaniard)	1558-1565
3.	Francisco Borgia (Spaniard)	1565-1572
4.	Eberhard Mercurian (Belgian Jew).	1573-1580
5.	Claudio Acquaviva (Neapolitan) ..	1581-1615
6.	Mutio Vitelleschi (Roman)	1615-1645
7.	Vincenzio Caraffa (Neapolitan) ...	1646-1649
8.	Francesco Piccolomini (Florentine).	1649-1651
9.	Alessandro Gottofredi (Roman) ..	1652
10.	Goswin Nickel (German)	1652-1664
11.	Giovanni Paolo Oliva (Genoese) Vicar-general and Coadjutor, 1661 ; General	1664-1681
12.	Charles von Noyelle (Belgian)	1682-1686
13.	Tirso Gonzales (Spaniard)	1687-1705
14.	Michael Angelo Tamburini (Modanese)	1706-1730
15.	Franz Retz (Bohemian)	1730-1750
16.	Ignazio Visconti (Milanese)	1751-1755
17.	Alessandro Centurioni (Genoese) ..	1755-1757
18.	Lorenzo Ricci (Florentine)	1758-1775
	Vicars-general	
a.	Stanislaus Czerniewicz (Pole)..	1782-1785
b.	Gabriel Lienkiewicz (Pole)	1785-1798
c.	Franciscus Xavier Kareu (Pole). (General in Russia, 7th Mar. 1801)	1799-1802
d.	Gabriel Gruber (German)	1802-1805
19.	Thaddaeus Brzozowski (Pole)	1805-1820
20.	Aloysio Fortis (Veronese)	1820-1829
21.	Johannes Roothaan (Dutchman)..	1829-1853
22.	Peter Johannes Beckx (Belgian)...	1853-1887
23.	Antoine Marie Anderledv (Swiss)..	1887-1892
24.	Louis Martin (Spanish)	1892-1906
25.	Francis Xavier Warnz (German)..	1906-1914
26.	Vladimir Ledochowski (Pole)	1915-

CHAPTER XXXVI

THE DEFENDERS

(ROMAN CATHOLIC)

(Founded 1562)

This Irish Catholic organization, similar to that of the Spanish Guarduña, was founded in 1562 by Roger Moore behind whom were French and Spanish Jesuits.

According to Captain Pollard, author of *The Secret Societies of Ireland*, " The nominal function of the Defenders was the protection of the fugitive priests during the period of proscription and the holding of the passes while Mass was celebrated in some mountain glen. The enemies of the faith being the Protestants, and the Protestants standing for the Constitutional authority of Britain, the Defenders soon became a criminal association of law-breakers and banditti. "[1]

In 1641 they rose and massacred many Protestants, but were duly crushed by Cromwell in 1649.

This Irish Catholic element was already opposed by the Roman Catholic Archbishop Plunket, of whom Captain Pollard writes : " Archbishop Oliver Plunket, Roman Catholic Primate of Ireland, who had attempted to put down the criminal association of Defenders in

---

1. Pollard, *The Secret Societies of Ireland*, p. 2. *et seq.*

the South of Ireland, was accused by the infamous Oates; and at his trial at Westminster certain of these Irish priests, who had been censured by him, gave false evidence against him. The Archbishop, though innocent, was, through the false evidence of these members of the secret society, sentenced and duly hanged at Tyburn. "

ASSOCIATIONS OF THE 17TH CENTURY

CHAPTER XXXVII

ANCIENT ORDER OF HIBERNIANS (A. O. H.)

(ROMAN CATHOLIC)

(Founded 1641)

In *The Secret Societies of Ireland* Captain Pollard writes that, founded in 1641, "The notorious modern society known as The Ancient Order of Hibernians is the direct successor of the original society of Defenders ; in common with its ancestor it attempts to enable the clerics to exercise control in politics.[1] It claims in its own official history, published in 1910, to be the oldest secret society in Ireland. Independent researches show that the claim is sound and that the present A. 0. H. is the descendant of certain criminal organizations of the past. The open admission of this chain of descent by its own historian is important. American sources trace the A. 0. H. to 1565 but the date 1641 is that more commonly accepted. "[2]

" The Jesuit influence in the development of the Defenders was reinforced, and their ceremonies and symbolism slowly changed to an elementary ritual

---

1. Pollard, *op. tit.*, p. 3.
2. *Ibid.*, p. no.

closely modelled on that of the ceremony of initiation to the Society of Jesus of the period. This ritual has descended with many accretions and modernisations to the present time ; and the American branch of the Ancient Order of Hibernians, misled by it, traces its origin back, not to 1641 and the Guarduña, but to 1563 and the foundation of the Society of Jesus. [3]

" The A. 0. H. of America is powerfully organized and has over six thousand lodges, and it is said by Heckethorn to be divided into two degrees ; in the first no oath is exacted and no real secret communicated. The second or inner degree is confined to officials, who receive their passwords and signs from the Board of Erin in Ireland, who send an emissary every three months. " [4]

In 1878, the American order split into two groups. Shortly afterwards the Irish followed suit.

" In America the breach was later healed, but in Ireland it continued until 1902, when a conference was called and both parties agreed to work under a joint board of control representing both sections. This board was termed the A. 0. H. Board of Erin. " [5]

Another split, occurring in 1905, lasted two years.

" Ten years ago, the real A. 0. H. of Ireland represented a powerful Nationalist weapon, hostile to the forces of extremism and devoted to the Irish Parliamentary party, but the Board of Erin A. 0. H. was revolutionary. " [6]

[3] Pollard, *op. cit.,* p. 8.
[4] *Ibid.,* p. 115.
[5] *Ibid.,* p. 113.
[6] *Ibid.,* p. 115.

For root of this movement see Chapter XXXVI.

CHAPTER XXXVIII

JANSENISM

(Founded 1638)

This was a peculiar form of Calvinism inaugurated by Cornelius Jansenius (1585-1638) from Louvain in the Netherlands.

The doctrine of Jansenism is exposed in a work called *Augustinus,* written by Jansenius, and published after his death in 1640.

According to Jansenius' theory of Predestination, man was either saved or damned according to God's own will, regardless of his merits or demerits.

From the Low Countries, Jansenism penetrated into France and its chief centre was in the Port Royal abbey near Paris. It was Duvergier de Hauranne who had been a great friend of Jansenius during their student days who, as abbot of Saint Cyran, introduced Jansenism into Port Royal.

Antoine Arnauld was the leader of the Jansenists and was followed by Pasquier Quesnel. Many great minds of the seventeenth century were Jansenists, among them Le Maitre de Sacy, Blaise Pascal, Lancelot, Nicole and Fontaine, Secretary of State of Louis XV.

Jansenism, which had undergone severe treatment in France under Louis XIV, revived under the Regency in 1715, and found supporters among the learned and the high clergy against the policy of the Pope.

It is during this period that among the Jansenist sectarians there arose the strange occurrences practised by what is known as the Convulsionaries of St. Médard.

The Jansenist party was very rich thanks to the *boîte à Perrette* (Perrette's box). This was a special fund whence Jansenism took out all the money for its political and other needs. It had taken its name from the servant of Mr. Nicole, a leading Jansenist, who had started the fund and confided the care of it to his servant. In 1778 it amounted already to 1100 livres and in 1865 was still very substantial.

Modern Jansenism, which, since the 18th century, had its chief seat in the Netherlands, principally Utrecht, joined in 1889 the German party of the Old Catholics founded in 1871 which, supported by Bismarck, had been one of the elements leading him to his Kulturkampf policy against the Catholic Church and institutions.

1. For the root of this movement see Chapter X.
2. For the development of this movement see Chapter XLII.

CHAPTER XXXIX

CAMISARDS OF THE CEVENNES

(Originating 1688)

The Camisards were actually a survival of the Waldenses and the Pastoureaux.

Calmeil, an authority on mental aberrations quoted by Madden in *Phantasmata*[1], thus describes the characteristics of the Camisard movement: — " The prophetic madness (of the Camisards) made its appearance in Dauphiné and Vivarais in 1688 ; it very soon spread itself over a vast number of places, and continued without any interruption among the Calvinists for nearly twenty years.

" It was especially in the course of the year 1689, that the phenomena of theomania excited the greatest astonishment and rose to the height of its violence. The theomaniacs could then be counted by hundreds ; men, women, girls, boys, young children, all of them believed they were inspired and imbued with the breath of the Holy Spirit.

" The punishment of fire, the rack, the torture of the *pendaison,* even the massacres performed by armed troops, whose efforts were directed to the extermination of the pretended prophets, the military executions, all the torments that it was possible to invent, to repress the violence of this religious fanaticism, only augmented the force of the evil which they were employed to abate or suppress.

---

[1] Madden, *Phantasmata,* vol. II, p. 530 ; quoting *De la Folie,* by L. F. Calmeil (1845), vol. II, p. 304.

" When, towards the beginning of the eighteenth century, the Calvinists rose up in good earnest to constitute small bodies of troops, and to dispute inch by inch the soil which had given them birth, with the king's soldiery, by whom they were confronted, this war of extermination was preceded by the apparition of a sort of swarm of pretended prophets and prophetesses. Towards 1701, at one time two hundred of the inspired, who had fallen into the hands of their enemies, were sent to the galleys.

" The madness of the theoma,niacs was less talked of during the years 1703 and 1704 than it had been previously; but it is certain that all the armed bands who contended with the royal troops for those two years, never took the field except at the instance of some inspired celebrities. And it is certain that the words of those prophets were listened to as if they had emanated from the mouth of the Holy Spirit; that the inspirations of these monomaniacs habitually decided either the life or death of the Catholics who fell into the power of the Protestants ; and there was often at that time to be seen the same person fulfilling among the Camisards the functions of a prophet, and the functions of a commander.

" It was not till the year 1704 that the Marechal de Villars had the charge of the command in Languedoc; this Marechal saw, nevertheless, entire cities infested with theomania. " [2]

---

[2] Madden, *op. cit.*, vol. II, p. 532 *et seq.*

" It was towards the latter end of 1706 that they (the Camisards) came to England, from the mountains of the Cevennes, where their countrymen had for a considerable time maintained a contest with the troops for the persecuting Louis XIV. As exiles for conscience ' sake, they were treated with respect and kindness ; but they soon forfeited all claim to respect by the folly or knavery of their conduct. Of this group Elias Marion was the prominent figure ; the others acting only subordinate parts. He loudly proclaimed that he was the messenger of Heaven, and was authorised to denounce judgments, and to look into futurity. All kinds of arts were employed by Marion and his associates to excite public attention — sudden droppings down as though death-struck; sighs and groans, and then shrieks and vociferations, on recovering; broken sentences, uttered in unearthly tones ; violent contortions ; and desperate strugglings with the spirit, followed by submission and repentance ; were all brought into play. The number of the believers in their power soon became considerable...

" After a time the sect which they had formed died away, but its ruin was less to be attributed to the punishment of the prophets, or the recovery of reason by their votaries, than by a report which was spread that they were nothing more than the instruments of designing men, who wished to disseminate Socinianism, and destroy orthodoxy. "[3]

[3] *Ibid.,* quoting *Sketches of Imposture, Deception and Credulity,* Lond., 1836, p. 42.

For root of this movement see Chapter XXIII, Waldenses.
For development of this movement see Chapter XLII.

ASSOCIATIONS OF THE 18TH CENTURY

CHAPTER XL

THE RITE OF SWEDENBORG OR ILLUMINATI OF STOCKHOLM

(Founded 1721)

Emmanuel Swedenborg was born on Jan. 29, 1688, at Stockholm. His father, Jasper Swedberg, was the son of Daniel Isaksson of Fahlun, Sweden. In 1719, Jasper Swedberg's family was ennobled by Queen Ulrika and his name was altered from Swedberg to Swedenborg.[1]

Emmanuel Swedenborg was initiated at Lund in 1706 and progressed to the higher degrees of the Templars as practised in Sweden.

In 1718, Colonel Baltzer Wedmar, in a Stockholm Lodge Lecture, said that Swedenborg was a Mason and that he had seen his signature at the Lodge at Lund. These assertions were confirmed by King Gustavus III.

Founded in 1721,[2] the Rite was first introduced into England by Chastanier, Springer (Swedish Consul), C. F. and August Nordenskjold and others who were members of the first Swedenborgian Society in London known as the Theosophical Society of the New Jerusalem, not to be confused with the Rite of French Theosophists.

---

[1] U. S. E., *Emmanuel Swedenborg, the Spiritual Columbus.*

[2] Sedir, *Histoire des Rose-Croix,* p. 112.

The rite was carried from London to the Americas by a Swedenborgian Minister, Brother Samuel Beswick. He lived at Strathroy, Canada, and was the author of a work upon the Swedenborgian Rite. This rite, called the *Illuminati of Stockholm,* was well known until the middle of the 18th century when it amalgamated with that of Zinnendorf.

What is properly known as the rite of Swedenborg was another modification of the order of the Illuminati of Avignon effected by the Marquis de Thome, in 1783, wherein he endeavoured to restore the true meaning of the doctrine of the Swedish mystic. [1]

1. Mackey, *Lexicon of Freemasonry,* p. 301.
2. For root of this movement see Chapter XXII.
3. For development of this movement see Chapter XCVI.

CHAPTER XLI

SUPREME CONSEIL AND GRAND ORIENT DE FRANCE

(Founded 1725)

SOVEREIGN GRAND COMMANDER,
SUPRÊME CONSEIL 1929,
M. RENE RAYMOND.

Freemasonry was introduced in France in about 1730, some say 1725.

Its implantation bore a singular character. Due to the time of exile spent in France by Queen Henrietta, widow of Charles I (1649), English ways and customs had become fashionable among the members of the French aristocracy. The exiled English Royal Family and their adherents, warmly welcomed by the Jesuits of France, plotted in secret to regain the throne for Charles II. Later, when the Catholic King James II was also overthrown in 1688, he found refuge in France and his son, The Pretender, and later his grandson, Charles Edward, headed numerous plots fomented to enable them to regain their father's and grandfather's throne from William of Orange.

Meanwhile Masonry had been instituted in England (1717) and introduced in France in 1730. The Jacobites, partisans of the Pretender, secretly plotting as they constantly were, found the newly created Masonic lodges a ground no less well adapted to serve their ends than the Jesuits' colleges whence all their schemes emanated.

Lodges, having thus become fashionable resorts for French aristocrats, presented a double aspect, one which might almost be termed theatrical, inasmuch as the comedy of equality between the lord and his varlet was enacted in the Lodge, and the other far more serious was of a political character. This latter aspect of budding English symbolic Freemasonry in France was anxiously watched by the minister Cardinal de Fleury who ordered its suppression in 1737. Up to that time the French lodges that had been formed considered themselves as depending from the English Grand Lodge, had an English Grand Master and were confining their activities to the practice of the three grades of Blue Masonry.

Then appeared the would-be reformers of Masonry. At their head, in France, was the Chevalier de Ramsay, and with their advent came the innovation of a fourth grade followed by others. This was the beginning of Scotch Masonry whose unavowed aim seems to have been to interpose itself between the existing Lodges and the governing Grand Lodge of France.

De Ramsay, who was one of the foremost exponents of Scotch Rites and already dreamed of the Universal Masonry of Albert Pike, exposed some of his theories in his famous Discourse made in 1740.

By that time, the Grand Lodge of France, known as the Grand English Lodge of France, was no longer headed by an English Grand Master, but by the Duc d'Antin who was succeeded by Louis, Prince de Bourbon, Comte de Clermont, who held the office of Grand Master from 1743 until 1771. During his Grand Mastership, in 1754, the name Chapter of Clermont was given to what might be called an offshoot of the Primitive French Masonry on which, later, the Chevalier de Bonneville grafted some additional degrees. This name " Chapter of Clermont " has been the cause of much confusion arising from the fact that a Jesuit college founded in Paris, in 1550, also bore the name of Clermont College and had been a centre for Jacobite secret plotting against the Protestant rulers of England.[1]

This grafting of higher degrees on those of Symbolic or Blue Masonry gave Scotch Masonry its vitality and strength and a continual superposition and absorption of one rite, to and by another, took place.

The period during the Grandmastership of the Comte de Clermont was eventful for the craft. A masonic writer, William H. Peckham, in his work on Scottish rites, gives a succinct but clear sequence of some of the changes undergone by Masonry in France mentioning Thory, Le Blanc, de Marconnay, Ragon and Clavel as his sources. Thus we learn that the English Grand Lodge of France became the " Grande Loge du Royaume " in 1756, and declared itself independent; further, that an inner body known as the Supreme Council of the Emperors of the East and West had been founded in 1754 by the Chevalier de Bonneville. It had its chamber in the Grand Lodge of France and, likewise, was under the authority of the Grand Master

---

[1] Rev. E. Cahill, S. J., *Freemasonry and the Anti-Christian Movement,* p. 213, definitely refutes the story of certain Masonic authorities by whom it has been alleged that The Chapter of Clermont was founded in the Jesuit College of that name. He states that it was " founded in 1754 and was named the Chapter of Clermont' manifestly borrowing its name from the title of the Masonic Grand Master who in fact became its head. "

Comte de Clermont whose substitute Chaillon de Joinville was also that of the Council.

The Supreme Council of the Emperors of the East and West practised twenty-five degrees.

As to the disorders in the bosom of Masonry they are attributed to the negligence of the Comte de Clermont who, in 1744, had ceased to take much interest in the Lodges and delegated his authority to two appointees, one a banker named Baure and the other a dancing master by the name of Lacorne who sold charters and degrees. The latter caused a scission in the Grand Lodge whose members rejected him and he formed an independent Grand Lodge. Both these Grand Lodges, as also the Council of the Emperors of the East and West, constituted Lodges and granted charters throughout the kingdom, but in 1772, the Council united again with the primitive Grand Lodge as of yore, and becoming one body they practised the right of perfection of twenty-five degrees. At that time, the Grand Master was the Duc de Chartres, later Philippe Egalité, Duc d'Orleans, who had succeeded the Comte de Clermont in 1771.

But ten years previously, on August 29, 1761, a Jew, Stephen Morin, had obtained a charter from the Council of the Emperors of the East and West and had gone to America as Grand Inspector General. There he founded what is now known as Scottish Bites. Morin held his authority from the Comte de Clermont who, at the request of Lacorne, charged him with establishing Masonry in all parts of the world. His patent was signed by Chaillon de Joinville, Prince de Rohan, Lacorne, Savalette de Buckolay, Taupin, Brest De La Chaussée, Count de Choiseul, Chevalier de Lenoncourt and D'Aubertin[2].

[2] Wm. Peckham, *Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite.*

The early history of French Freemasonry is a maze of quarrels, but finally, in 1766, under the auspices of a new *Grande Loge Nationale de France,* afterwards called the *Grand-Orient,* a representative system was at last adopted but the quarrels continued, the Orient and the original Grand Lodge being each supported by a separate Rosicrucian organization besides its own proper lodges. [3]

In contradiction to other masonic authorities, Yarker makes the assertion that the primitive Scottish Rite of 33 degrees was established at Namur in 1770 by Marchot and in 1787 united with the Grand Orient.[4]

In *he Culte de la Nature dans la Franc-maçonnerie Universelle* (page 143) D. Margiotta states that Adam Weishaupt and his favorite, Baron von Knigge, introduced the organization of the Holy Vehm as well as certain legends of Illuminism into Masonry in 1783. The only persons exempted from the jurisdiction of this terrible court of " Justice ", the Holy Vehm, were the clergy, women and children, Jews and heathens and certain members of the higher nobility.

The Revolution issued from the Masonic Lodges, said Lombard de Langes. France, in 1789, counted over 2,000 lodges affiliated to the Grand Orient : The adepts numbered over 100,000. The first events of 1789 were but Masonry in action. All the Revolutionaries of the Constituent Assembly were 3rd degree initiates.

In the Viennese Freemasonic newspaper of December 1927, the Freemason Arthur Singer of Budapest publishes the following interesting document which he claims to have taken from a book by Comte Vogt

---

3. *Encyclopaedia Britannica,* Art. Freemasonry.
4. John Yarker, *The Arcane Schools,* p. 479.

d'Hunolstein, which appeared in 1864 under the title *Unpublished letters of Marie-Antoinette.*

It is a letter from the unhappy queen to her sister Marie Christine.

Translation.

" I believe that as far as France is concerned, you worry too much about Freemasonry. Here, it is far from having the significance that it may have elsewhere in Europe ; here everything is open and one knows all. Then, where could the danger be ?

" One might well be worried if it were a question of a political secret society. But on the contrary the government lets it spread, and it is only that which it seems : an association, the objects of which are union and charity. One dines, one sings, one talks, which has given the king occasion to say that people who drink and sing are not suspect of organizing plots. Nor is it a society of atheists, for, we are told, God is on the lips of all. They are very charitable. They bring up the children of the poor and dead members, they endow their daughters. What harm is there in all that ?

" A short time ago the Princess de Lamballe was named Grand Mistress of a Lodge. She told me all the charming things they said to her. Many glasses were emptied, many verses sung. Then two good young maidens were endowed. Admitted. One can do good without all that fuss : but one must let everyone act according to their wishes, the more so when good only only results. "

The letter sounds as if it had been written yesterday by one of our good English Masons concerning English Freemasonry.

Masonry in France became dormant during the French Revolution, but in 1799, a national union was effected by Roettiers. No sooner, however, was this done, and the statutes, originally based on the English constitutions thoroughly revived, than French masonry again suffered from an invasion of mysticism, — first in the form of the Scottish Philosophic Rite (including such profundities as the luminous ring and the white and black Eagle), and secondly in the American Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of 33 degrees, which the charlatan De Grasse-Tilly expounded with great success but which in 1804 was amalgamated with the Grand Orient, the great Marshals Massena and Kellerman being then the leading members of the two bodies. The union did not last, as Napoleon disliked the constitution of the Supreme Council which was largely influenced by the aristocracy. His brother, Joseph, assisted by Murat and Cambacérès, was allowed to take office in the older organization. During the reactionary Catholic policy of the Grand Master Murat the younger (1852-62), the liberties of the Orient were greatly interfered with and its funds almost exhausted. Since then it has slowly recovered.[5]

Murat was succeeded by General Magnan who had been appointed by Napoleon III to group all Masonic bodies into one. This he succeeded in doing in 1862 with the exception of Scottish Rites, then under Jean Baptist Viennet, which still held aloof.

In 1868, the *Supreme Conseil* (of Scottish Rites) and the *Alliance Israelite Universelle* became merged in the person of the Jew Adolphe Crémieux who was president of both.

We must not omit to mention that Crémieux was also a member of the Rite of Mizraim which in 1862 was absorbed by the Grand Orient of France.

---

[5] *Enc. Brit., op. cit.*

On attaining the 18th degree, a Grand Orient Mason automatically becomes a member of the *Alliance Israelite Universelle.*

The Grand Orient ceased to require belief in a personal God as a test of membership in the year 1877.

From the political movements, the origins of which can be traced to the influence of the *Grand-Orient de France,* one is forced to believe it to be a political organization.[6]

The following quotations from the speech made by Domenico Anghera, Grand Master of the Supreme Council of Scottish Rites when conferring on General Giuseppe Garibaldi the 33rd degree and administering his oath of allegiance, are here of interest in view of the connection of the two masonic powers in France.

Translation :[7]

"... Our first step, as builders of the new temple to the felicity of human glory, must be destruction. To destroy the present social state, we have suppressed religious teaching and the individual rights of persons. As we have overthrown the temporal power of the Pope, our most terrible and infamous enemy, by means of France and Italy, we must now break France, the strongest prop of the spiritual power. That we must do with the help of our own power and that of Germany. " *(This speech was made before the Franco-Prussian War of* 1870).

" Brother, thou hast finished thy instruction as chief of Freemasonry. Pronounce thy supreme oath.

' I swear to recognize no fatherland but that of the world. I swear to work hard, everywhere and always, to destroy frontiers, borders, boundaries of all nations, of all industries, no less than of all families. I swear to dedicate my life to the triumph of progress and universal unity and I declare to profess the negation of God and the negation of the soul'.

---

[6] Gould, *Hist. of Freemasonry,* vol. III, p. 179.

[7] Domenico Margiotta, *Le Culte de la Nature dans la Franc-maçonnerie Universelle,* p. 45 *et seq.*

" And now, Brother, that for thee, fatherland, religion and family have disappeared for ever in the immensity of the work of Freemasonry, come to us, illustrious, most puissant and very dear Brother and share with us the boundless authority, the infinite power that we hold over humanity.

" The only key of progress and happiness, the only rules of good, are thy appetites and instincts " (Compare with 0. T. 0. Chapter CX).

(For the Esoteric explanation of the Masonic Motto " Deus Meumque Jus " and the Masonic three dots ∴ see chapter on Symbolism).

On the 4th Sept. 1870, the Second Empire fell at the battle of Sedan. The International and Freemasonry seized power, calling their government " The Government of National Defence ", and that same day the handpicked ministry of Freemasonry was constituted with Leon Gambetta as Minister of the Interior. Its eleven members, all deputies of Paris had, according to him, been acclaimed by the people. They were : — Emmanuel Arago, Crémieux, Jules Favre, Ferry, Gambetta, Garnier-Pagès, Glais-Bizoin, Pelletan, Picard, Rochefort, Jules Simon.

Nine of them at least were Freemasons, three were Jews — Crémieux, Glais-Bizoin and Gambetta. The Mayor of Paris, Etienne Arago, nominated twenty other mayors to provincial posts, twelve of whom were prominent Freemasons, the others being merely nonentities.

The fourth of September was the nominal proclamation of the Republic, but that date marked the actual seizure of power in France by Freemasonry just as the 20th of September of the same year marked its seizure of power in Italy.

Then came the " Commune ", famous through history for its revival of the atrocities of the first French Revolution of 1793.

Slaughter, ruin, torture, all again perpetrated in the name of the people who mutely suffered and died that the Men of Destiny might rule upon the earth I

For root of this movement see Chapter XXVI.
For development of this movement see Chapter LIII.

CHAPTER XLII

THE CONVULSIONARIES OF ST. MÉDARD

(Founded 1731)

St. Médard was the name of a cemetery in Paris wherein was the tomb of a famous Jansenist, the deacon François de Paris, and it was said that miracles of all descriptions took place there.

The first recorded case of convulsions in the St. Médard cemetery occurred in August 1731.

On this subject, Madden tells us the following : —

" The tomb of the deacon Francois became the scene of wonderful cures, and some very remarkable conversions, which were reputed miraculous. People who came there, especially afflicted with nervous disorders, appear to have been affected in a singular manner, some with cataleptic, others with hysteric and convulsive symptoms. [1]

" The *convulsionnaires* exhibited not only occasionally, but frequently, all the phenomena which are ascribed by mesmerists to animal magnetism, somnambulism, ecstasies, raptures, submission of the will and the senses to the power of the volition of another person, connected in some way with the dominant idea which possessed their minds at the time of falling into the trance. Increased subtlety of thought, quickness of perception, heightened powers of imagination, a vivid energizing influence, fraught with enthusiasm and even eloquence ; claims to clairvoyance, to communion with another world, to ' spirit life ' ; all these phenomena were to be found too, though not all in the same individual, in occasional instances in this epidemic of convulsive theomania...

---

[1] Madden, *Phantasmata*, vol. II, p. 541.

" Till the month of August, 1731 ", says Picart, " the wonders wrought at the burying place of the deacon Paris were not accompanied with any considerable difference from those mentioned in Scripture or ecclesiastical history. Those who were afflicted with sickness, and begged the holy deacon's intercession, were laid upon or under his tomb-stone, which was raised from the ground, and were cured. But in August, 1731, God was pleased to work his miracles in a different manner ; violent pains, agitations of the body, extraordinary convulsions, were the means by which the sick were healed, not all at once, but gradually. This happened to one Abbe Becheran, to Chevalier Follard, an ancient officer in the army, and to several others. The number of people afflicted with convulsions increased so fast, and consequences of the meetings at the tomb appeared, or were represented to the King, so dangerous, that on the 27th of January, 1732, he issued an order to shut up the little churchyard belonging to St. Medard's parish, where M. de Paris was buried, and to open it only when necessary for burials. Some weeks afterwards, the Abbe Becheran was arrested and confined at St. Lazare, and set again at liberty about three months after in June. But the miracles and convulsions did not cease upon these oppositions ; on the contrary, they daily spread further, and gained ground.

" Towards the end of the year 1732, those who were jn convulsions began to foretell what was to happen, to discover secrets, to make speeches, pathetic exhortations, sublime prayers; even those who at other times were wholly unable to perform any such things.[2]

" Montgeron informs us : ' There is nothing which the *convulsionnaires* did not undertake to mortify themselves, to break down and to enfeeble their bodies. The most of those from the time they had convulsions, hardly made use of a bed; they laid down with their clothes on, winter and summer, with only one covering, some lying on planks, and others on the bare ground, others on logs of wood, and some of them on bars of iron. '

" The fact is, not only the means used for effecting cures were evil in themselves, but many of the leading persons by whom the remedy of the *Grand Secours* was administered or superintended were persons of ill repute.[3]

" Montgeron reckons that four thousand enthusiasts were employed to kick, and to strike without cessation the infirm, and all those young girls who begged for the violence of their blows. ' They were not ashamed to maintain' says Calmeil ' that it was to be ignorant of pious and charitable duties, not to obey under these circumstances the desires of the *convulsionnaires* whilst the reasonable Jansenists repeated aloud, that it was only a frantic madness which could suggest to these young women to encounter such dangers, and make an excuse for the criminal barbarity of those who had the audacity to boast of the advantages of so scandalous a mode of mortification, or rather martyr

---

2. Madden, *op. cit.,* vol. II, p. 544.
3. *Ibid.,* p. 573.

dom, and the wickedness to consent to take on them the office of executioners'.

" An observer has recounted that a young girl named Jeanne Mouler, had insisted upon their administering to her as many as a hundred blows with an andiron, on the stomach, and that *a brother,* who had one day given her sixty, had caused a breach in a wall at the twenty-fifth blow, and then went on repeating the same violence on her person which had been previously inflicted upon her. Montgeron, acknowledging that he was the person designated ' the brother', who inflicted the blows, adds : ' The *convulsionnaire* continued to complain that the blows that I was giving her were so slight that they did not bring her any relief, and she forced me again to put the andiron into the hands of a large strong man... This person in no way spared her. Having seen, by the proof that I had already given, that he could not administer too violent blows, he bastinadoed her in so frightful a manner, always in the hollow of the stomach, that they shook the wall against which she was leaning. [4]

" The *convulsionnaire* made them immediately give her, with all their force, the hundred lashes that she had already asked for, counting as nothing, those sixty which I had already given her. '

" A physician, hearing an account of these things, maintained that they could not be true, as according to him it was physically impossible. He objected, amongst other things, that the flexibility and the softness of the skin and flesh, and all the other fibrous parts of which the skin and the flesh are essentially composed, are incompatible with a force and resistance so extraordinary... They allowed him to make an anatomical demonstration, to set forth all his proofs, and in the end, for reply, they said to him — Come and verify the facts — He hastened to do so, and at the very sight he was struck with astonishment. Scarcely believing his eyes, he begs to administer himself the *secours*... They immediately put into his hands the iron instruments, the strongest and the fittest to beat effectually ; He spared nothing, he struck with the greatest violence, he thrust into the flesh the instrument with which he was armed, he made it penetrate beyond the surface... Notwithstanding which, the *convulsionnaire* laughed at all his vain efforts ; all the blows which he gave her only served to do her good, without leaving the slightest impression, the least trace, or any vestige whatever, not only in the flesh, but even on the skin itself ".

---

[4] Madden, *op. cit.,* vol. II, p. 579.

Among other duly attested cases of torture to which the *Convulsionnaires* submitted the most astonishing are those of crucifixion and burning.[5]

Like the Fakirs of India, these people seemed to have achieved invulnerability and the power to defy nature ! Science, so far, has still to find a satisfactory explanation of this phase of phenomena.

Hippolyte Blanc, another writer, records the following observations : —

" The girl Sonet, nicknamed 'The Salamander', was seen to rest in the flames for 36 minutes on one occasion without sustaining any burns.[6]

" The mania of the *convulsionnaires* broke out at St. Medard, in the spring of 1731. The royal order, which caused the cemetery of St. Medard to be closed and the pretended miracles to cease, was issued in January, 1732. "

---

[5] Hippolyte Blanc, *Le Merveilleux*, p. 118.

[6] *Ibid.*, p. 114.

In 1733, the Duc d'Anjou, the infant son of Queen Marie Leckzinska and Louis XV, fell a victim to a Jansenist plot which caused his death.

In *Phantasmata,* already quoted, we read further :___.

" From 1732 onward the delirium of theomania began to manifest itself more signally than it had hitherto done, by ecstatic phenomena, and cataleptic symptoms, by predictions, and pretensions to miraculous operations, in the same way as the Calvinist *convulsionnaires* progressed in their fanaticism in the Cevennes, when they were interfered with by the civil authorities ; and many of their chiefs were imprisoned, as those of the Jansenists of St. Medard were immured in the Bastille, and the Bicetre. The plea or the pretext of persecution, and the consequent assemblage of the *convulsionnaires* of Paris in secret, concurred greatly and rapidly to augment the evils which it was intended to prevent by those governmental measures. And those evils were not effectually repressed during the following ten years. Nor were they totally then put a stop to. It was of no avail that, in the year 1762, the ' Grand Secours ' was forbidden by act of parliament.

" The insanity of the *convulsionnaires* ", says Hecker, " lasted without interruption until the year 1790. "

The *convulsionnaires* of St. Medard and the Camisards were only manifestations of Gnosticism such as have existed in the esoteric branches of various sects, religious and secret societies ever since the days of Paganism.

Among others can be mentioned :

The Albigenses, The Moravian Brethren,
The Anabaptists, the Baptists, the Quakers,
The Waldenses, the Shakers, the Methodists etc.

Their name is legion!

Sects rise, sects fall or fade away, but God remains.

CHAPTER XLIII

THE ROYAL ORDER OF SCOTLAND

(Founded 1750)

The Royal Order of Scotland is composed of two degrees — HRDM and RYCS — or those of Heredom and Rosy Cross.

The antiquity and origin of " Mother Kilwinning " is a favourite theme with Masonic authors according to whom the degree of Heredom of Kilwinning was founded in the reign of David I, King of Scotland, and that of Rosy Cross by Robert Bruce in 1314.

Robert Freke Gould, however, places the date of the foundation of the Royal Order of Scotland in " the middle of the last century ", and gives us the name of William Mitchell, a Scotsman who obtained his patent as its founder from the Provincial Grand Master of South Britain on July 22, 1750. [1]

---

[1] Robert Freke Gould, *The History of Freemasonry,* Pub. 1887, p. 75.

CHAPTER XLIV

THE STRICT OBSERVANCE

(Founded 1751-52)

The following main facts concerning the Strict Observance are mostly gathered from the profusely documented work of R. Le Forestier who, having made a comprehensive study of the subject, took as one of his chief authorities Nettelbladt.

The Templar rite of the Strict Observance was founded in 1751 by Charles Gotthelf, Baron de Hund (born 1722) Chamberlain and Councillor of the Elector of Saxony, King of Poland, as well as Councillor of the Empress Maria Theresa.

In 1764, the Anglo-Jewish adventurer Leucht, variously known as Johnson, de Martin, Robert de Leichten, Becher, Despocher, de Bousch, Somery, Scheel and Koenig, made an attempt to amalgamate the Templar System of Clermont, the control of which he had seized the previous year from Rosa, with that of von Hund, with the view of dominating the latter also. In this he failed.

Rosa had been the Legate for Germany, Holland and the kingdoms of the north while, in Paris, the Comte de Clermont occupied a similar position with regard to France, Spain, Portugal and Italy.

The legend of the Strict Observance is very much involved. Stating that the Stuarts were the unknown superiors of the Order it claimed descent from Pierre d'Aumont, Banneret d'Auvergne, at the time of the death of the Grand Master Jacques de Molay and the successor of Beaujeu, Molay's nephew who, with two Commanders and five Knights had escaped to the Island of Mull where they encountered George Harris, the Grand Commander of Hampton Court, likewise a refugee. They elected d'Aumont Grand Master and adopted the costume and customs of Masons in memory of d'Aumont and his companions who, for two years, had lived thus in disguise while exercising the trade to earn a livelihood. Not daring to recruit openly, the Templars were eventually permitted to marry to perpetuate the order. For over 250 years, admission to the degree of Scotch Master had been restricted to the sons of Templars and only within the last 150 years had the secrets of this order been available to Scotch Masters born of free parents. D'Aumont was succeeded as Grand Master by Harris. " [1]

According to Le Forestier, again quoting Nettelbladt, the initiation ceremony ot the Strict Observance included the presentation to the postulant of a ribbon to which was appended a small cross which had been in contact with the Baphomet.[2]

At the Convent, sitting from June 4 to 24, 1772, at Kohlo in the Basse Lusace, it was decided to refuse further obedience to the illusive " Invisible Superiors" continually referred to by Hund, and the Duke Ferdinand of Brunswick (Luneburg) (1721-1792) was, with the consent of the Banneret, elected *Magnus Superior Ordinis per Germaniam Inferiorem* and Grand Master of the United Lodges of Scottish Rites, the name of Strict Observance being abandoned as objectionable to Masons of other systems. From that time forward Hund's position in the order was purely an honorary one.[3]

---

[1] R. Le Forestier, *Les Illumines de Baviere et la Francmaconnerie Allemande,* p. 162.

[2] *Ibid.,* p. 172.

---

[3] R. Le Forestier, *op. cit.,* p. 175.

For root of this movement see Chapter XXII.
For development of this movement see Chapter XLVI I.

CHAPTER XLV

THE MARTINIST ORDER

(Founded 1754)

Martinez Paschalis first founded in Paris an order called the Elus Cohens or Priests, then in 1754 that of the Martinists. This order was reformed by Louis Claude de Saint Martin in 1775. It had ten degrees.

St. Martin was on intimate terms with the Illumine Jean Willermoz who presided at two of the Great Masonic Conventions — that of Les Gaules in 1768 and that of Wilhelmsbad in 1782 at which was voted the death of the King of France.

The Modern Martinist Order was established with three degrees in Paris in 1887 and was constituted in England in 1902.

Its Grand Master, Marquis Stanislas de Guaita, died in 1897 and was succeeded by T. Ch. Barlet whose successor was Dr. Encausse, generally known as Papus, who became the occult adviser of the ill-fated Czar Nicholas II.

Mr. A. E. Waite tells us that, while Papus was its Grand Master, a Martinist " Supreme Council " was founded with power for the formation of regular

---

1. Papus, *Martines de Pasqually,* p. 152.

lodges, male and female members being admitted on equal terms. This was in 1894. By the year 1899, there were general and special delegations of the Order established in a number 'of European Countries — Great Britain included — in the United States, the Argentine and Guatemala and even in more than one Oriental land.

As regards the Martinist relations with Masonry, Mr. Waite tells us on page 161, Vol. II, of his *New Encyclopaedia of Freemasonry* that Martinism " had of course shut its doors against Masons under authorized obediences. " Yet we are able to reproduce (see Appendix IV) a private letter, dated March 26, 1906, written by " Dorec " to Theodore Reuss 33° 90° 96°, English Mason, etc. in which the latter is incidentally informed " that John Yarker is our (' the Martinist') delegate in London. "

Another private letter in which Papus refers to himself as the Delegate of John Yarker for the Swedenborg Rite in France is also in existence. Such a correspondence with one of the most noteworthy Masons of their day does not look as if Mr. Waite's information concerning the alleged feud between Masonry and Martinism can have been very reliable !

The Martinist sign is :⁚:

By 1920, Mr. Waite states that Martinism had abandoned the Rituals of 1887 and appeared to have become a clandestine organization!

For root of this movement see Chapter XXII.
For development of this movement see Chapter LI.

CHAPTER XLVI

THE ILLUMINATI OF AVIGNON

(Founded 1760)

The Illuminati of Avignon were founded in 1760 by Antoine Joseph Pernety, an unfrocked Benedictine, a Cabalist and alchemist. Modified in 1766 by Chastanier, one of the founders of the English Rite of Swedenborg, this rite was introduced into Paris in the Lodge Socrates of Perfect Union under the name of Theosophical Illumines. In 1770, Pernety, founded *La Grande Loge Ecossaise du Comtat Venaissin.* This Lodge was raided in 1774 and its papers confiscated by order of the Pope. It was revived in 1789 [1].

Among its members were Cagliostro and his friend Baron de Corberon, Mesmer, Marquis de Thome and the Marquis de Puysegur, self-styled Professor of " Mesmerism ".

In *Les Illumines d' Avignon* by Joanny Bricaud (page 103) we read that " today, its members having become affiliated to Martinism, the society has ceased to exist ". This author also states that the degree of Knight of the Sun, founded by Pernety, which is divided into two degrees, forms now the 27th and 28th grades of Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rites.[2]

---

[1] Marc de Vissac, *Dom Pernety et les Illumines d'Avignon,* 1906.

---

[2] Joanny Bricaud, *Les Illumines d'Avignon,* p. 103.

CHAPTER XLVII

ANTIENT AND ACCEPTED SCOTTISH RITE (AMERICA). — ANTIENT AND ACCEPTED RITE (ENGLAND).

(Founded 1761)

SUPREME GRAND COMMANDER FOR THE SOUTHERN JURISDICTION OF THE UNITED STATES, 1929.
MR. JOHN H. COWLES.

The reader has already been made acquainted with the formation phase of this rite in Chapters XXVIII-XXX of this book. We are here therefore mainly concerned with the framework of the order.

This rite, of Jewish origin, has 33 degrees. They are named as follows : —

Symbolic or Blue Masonry : — the Craft Degrees. These are practically the same as in Lodges under the Grand Lodge of England, Scotland and Ireland.

1. Entered Apprentice
2. Fellow Craft
3. Master Mason

Red Masonry or Chapters : — these degrees are conferred in a Lodge of Perfection, the presiding officer must be of the 16th degree at least.

×4. Secret Master
×5. Perfect Master
×6. Intimate Secretary
×7. Provost and Judge
×8. Intendant of the Buildings
+9. Elected Knight of Nine or Elect of Nine
+10. Illustrious Master Elect of Fifteen
+11. Sublime Knight Elect
×12. Grand Master Architect
×13. Royal Arch of Enoch or Knight of the 9th Arch or Royal Arch of Solomon.
×14. Scottish Knight of Perfection or Grand Scottish Knight of the Sacred Vault or Sublime Mason.

A Council of Princes of Jerusalem confers the next two degrees : —

×15. Knight of the East or Knight of the Sword
×16. Prince of Jerusalem

A Chapter of Princes of Rose-Croix confers the next two degrees : —

×17. Knight of the East and West
○18. Knight of the Eagle and Pelican, Sovereign Prince Rose Croix of H. R. D. M.

Black Masonry, or Philosophical Lodges or Areopagi: these degrees are conferred in a Consistory of Princes of the Royal Secret.

○19. Grand Pontiff or Sublime Scotch Mason
○20. Grand Master of all Symbolic Lodges
+21. Patriarch Noachite or Prussian Knight
22. Prince of Libanus or Knight of the Royal Axe

×Of Illuminati Origin
○Of Templar Origin
+Of Jewish Origin

◦23. Chief of the Tabernacle
◦24. Prince of the Tabernacle
◦25. Knight of the Brazen Serpent
◦26. Prince of Mercy or Scotch Trinitarian
◦27. Sovereign Commander of the Temple
28. Knight of the Sun or Prince Adept
◦29. Grand Scottish Knight of St. Andrew
◦30. Grand Elected Knight Kadosch.
Illustrious Knight of the Temple
Knight of the White and Black Eagle } France
Grand Elected Knight Kadosch

"White Masonry is Administrative and consists of three degrees conferred by the Supreme Councils : —

31. Grand Inquisitor Commander
32. Sublime Prince of the Royal Secret
33. Sovereign Grand Inspector General [1]

In *A sketch of the Philosophy, Traditions, and records of the Masonic Order of the Red Cross of Constantine* by the Editor, (see *The Rosicrucian and Masonic Record,* page 204) we read : —

" The Premier Conclave of England, which has existed from time immemorial, gave rise, it is said, to the foundation of the Council of ' Emperors of the East and West ', a body which was established in Paris about the year 1758 and is considered as the parent of the Antient and Accepted Scottish Rite. (Compare with page 336).

" The Scottish Rite ", according to Le Forestier, " issued from the Chapter of Clermont, as a development of the Ramsay Rite. Its foundation dates from

---

[1] *Encyclopaedia of Freemasonry, The Speculative Mason,* vol. 19, Jan. 1927.

1748 at which period it was introduced into Germany by Count de Schmettau. "[2]

The Supreme Council is the arch-stone of this edifice of degrees. It is composed of a minimum of nine and a maximum of thirty-three members, Grand Inspectors General of 33°. Is that a secret 33 ?[3]

In its present form, the Rite in France dates from 1804. " At that date the pecuniary situation of the Grand Central Lodge was however not up to its pretentions. It was already in debt. Brother de Grasse had personal debts and Brother Abraham was a man of venal character. The Grand Orient paid the debts of the Grand Scottish Lodge and of Brother de Grasse, making a life pension of 800 francs to Brother Abraham and proposing the annexation of the Grand Central Lodge to the Antient and Accepted Scottish Rite among those recognized by the Grand Orient. "[4]

---

[2] R. Le Forestier, *Les Illumines de Baviere et la Franc-maçonnerie Allemande,* p. 145.

[3] Blanchard, *Scottish Rite Masonry Illustrated,* 33°, vol. II, p. 451.

" But the one ' mission and object' (Mackey) of Masonry is kept steadily in view ; which is the worship of the god of this world, who is Satan, as the ' Grand Architect of the Universe ; ' and to accomplish this by inventing ' a religion in which all mankind agree ; ' and this, by putting all earth's religions upon a level, and uniting them together in Masonic worship, which is boldly avowed in rituals, lexicons, and philosophical degrees. This is (in *Revelation,* XIII, 14) called the image of the beast, made by ' them, that dwell on the earth' that is, everybody ; every creed, and no creed ; all who join the secret lodges. But this world-religion must have some form, and shape, to hold together ; and be taxed ; hence, it takes the form, or image, of the beast. Lodge despotism is as absolute as Romish despotism and is the image of it...

" Note now the profound craft, by which this is to be accomplished, viz., Masonry promises men salvation by ceremonies invented by men, administered by priests, and inhabited by devils. This is the sum and substance of all the false religions on earth, and will ultimately unite them against Christ. But the only opponent Masonry dreads is Christ, who refused to worship Satan, and his followers. "

In 1804, in France, a Supreme Council of Sovereign Grand Inspectors General of the 33rd degree of the Antient and Accepted Scottish Rite was duly constituted. In the construction of this Council, Comte Alexandre F. A. de Grasse-Tilly, (the son of the Admiral) played a leading part. He had been initiated in Paris several years before he went to America where we find him a colonist of San Domingo.

His successor was the Duc Decazes.

As regards the development of Scottish Rites in England, Stillson and Hughan state that : —

" After the Antient and Accepted Scottish Rite had been established in England, the Templar body resigned control over the degrees of the ' Rose-Croix ' and ' Kadosch, ' which then became incorporated with the rite, as the 18th and 30th ; it was therefore necessary to suppress the old ceremonies and relegate them to Templar history, but they were still retained in some of the older English encampments.

A revised ritual was issued in 1851 consequent on the omission of the ' Rose-Croix ' and ' Kadosch '.[5]

Another authority, Paul Rosen, makes the following comment : —

" The philosophy of the degree of Kadosch (30°), the apotheosis and real aims of Masonic teaching, can be summed up in the following words : — I, I alone, All mine, All for me, by any and every means.

---

[4] *Histoire du Grand Orient,* p. 305, Rennes, 1865.

[5] Stillson and Hughan, *History of Freemasonry and Concordant Orders,* p. 774.

There are seven different ways of carrying out this programme and consequently seven different grades of Knight Kadosch which are : —

N° 1. The Jewish Kadosch
N° 2. The Primitive Christian Kadosch
N° 3. The Kadosch of the Crusades
N° 4. The Kadosch of the Templars
N° 5. The Kadosch of the Puritan
N° 6. The Kadosch of the Jesuit
N° 7. The Scottish Kadosch (alone true Freemasonry). [6]

Presidents of the United States are honoured by being made 33rd degree Masons, Scottish Rites. King Edward VII and countless other magnates were 33rd degree Masons. What does this prove ? — Unfortunately nothing!

This is the great deception. The success of the entire system depends on the solid integrity and political and social prominence of its affiliates whose virtues make them valuable as decoys.

" Antient and Accepted Scottish Rites " runs its own Secret Service which cooperates with the national Secret Services of all countries thus serving the aims and purposes of Internationalism.

Blanchard, himself a high Mason whose masonic studies were induced by a keen desire to fathom the truth and impart the result of his discoveries to those whom he feared might also be duped, thus sums up Scottish Rites : —

" Let the authoritative teaching of Dr. Mackey be continually borne in mind, that : — 'the mission and object of Masonry is the worship of the Great Architect of the Universe '. It follows that the lodges must have something for their dupes to do, called worship. And what could wicked men and devils invent craftier or better suited to deceive the simple, than this very-scheme of ' the Ancient Scottish Rite ', which now rules the rites of the world. It seizes and appropriates all of religion but its holiness and justice ; and all of Christ but his truth and his atonement. It mixes things sacred with things profane, till the whole compound is profanity ; and quoting the Bible' as if it believed it true, which notoriously it does not, it has furnished a dark system, which angels flee from and which devils inhabit[7]. Every Lodge is a Synagogue of Satan and its ritual is Sorcery. " [8]

---

[6] Paul Rosen, *Satan et* C^{ie}, p. 142.

Anyone interested in the rituals etc. of this rite will find much that is interesting in D. Margiotta's *Le Culte de la Nature dans la Franc-Maçonnerie Universelle.*

Masonic philosophy is well summarised in the following exposé made of it by a Jewish mason, Paul Rosen, in *Satan et* C^{ie}. —

Official ritual of the 33rd *and last degree of Antient and Accepted Scottish Rites*

" For the Sovereign Grand Inspector General the 33rd is the last degree of the Rite. The Order is the Great Avenger of the assassinated Grand Master and the grand champion of humanity, for the innocent Grand Master is man, man who is Master, King of Nature, man who is born innocent and unconscious.

" Our innocent Grand Master was born for happiness and for the enjoyment of all rights without exception.

"But he has fallen under the blows of three assassins, three scoundrels have thwarted his happiness and rights and have annihilated him.

---

[7] Blanchard, 33° *op. cit.,* p. 162.

[8] *Ibid.,* p. 462.

" The three infamous assassins are Law, Property and Religion.[9]

" Law, because it is not in harmony with the rights of the individual man and the duties of social man in society, rights which belong to all. Duties are but the immediate consequence of the right inherent in all, for the enjoyment of all rights.

" Property, because the earth belongs to nobody and its fruits belong to all in proportion as they are required by each for the needs of his own well being.

" Religion, because religions are but philosophies evolved by men of genius and adopted by the people in the belief that they would increase their well being.

" Neither law, property nor religion can be imposed on man and as they annihilate him by depriving him of his most precious rights they are assassins on whom we have sworn to wreak vengeance, enemies against whom we have declared war to the death and without quarter.

" Of these three infamous enemies it is on religion that we must concentrate our most deadly attacks, because no people has ever survived its religion. Once Religion is dead, Law and Property will fall to our mercy, and we shall be able to regenerate society by founding on the corpses of the assassins of man, Masonic Religion, Masonic Law, and Masonic Property ".[10]

Who will not see therein the dreaded theories of Marxism and Bolshevism and their results, as they are practised in Russia ?

[9] Esoteric explanation of the legend of Hiram.

[10] Paul Rosen, *op. cit.*, p. 335. (Documents justificatifs). Also compare with *The Theosophical Society Programme.*

For root of this movement see Chapters II, III, IV.

CHAPTER XLVIII

THE ORDER OF THE MOPSE

(Founded 1763)

Pope Clement XIV having excommunicated the Freemasons in 1763, many German Catholics, frightened by the Papal Bull, definitely renounced the society.

They formed however another association which, while restoring their former organization, should not expose them to the censure of the Vatican and, having found a protector in the person of one of the most august German Sovereigns of the day, they secured an influential German nobleman as Grand Master. Many distinguished persons joined the " new " order which, like the Freemasons, had laws, words, signs of recognition, reception ceremonies and appointed officers.

One of the principal lodges was at Frankfort.

Adherence to the Roman Catholic faith was declared a requisite of membership, but the rule was not enforced and as a protection from papal excommunication a promise, instead of an oath of secrecy, was exacted from candidates.

Women were eligible to any dignity in the order, excepting that of Grand Master, which position was held for life. There were two Lodge Masters or Grand

Mopses in each lodge, one of which was a man and one a woman, while the lodge was governed six months by a man and six months by a woman alternately,[1]

In Italy, the Mopses called themselves Xerophagists.[2]

The following is quoted from an article in *Freemasonry Universal* Vol. 2, part 4, Spring *Equinox,* 1927 : —

" Mingled with points clearly stolen from the Masonic ritual, such as the use of the square and compasses, was the veneration of a sort of mascot which was a dog, known as the Mopse, and resembled a rather large pug dog with a curly tail.

" During the ceremony the candidates were admitted blindfolded and were instructed to kiss something. This was nothing more nor less than a life sized model of a mopse, and on the bandage being removed the initiate found that he or she had kissed the tail end of the dog. Whether the ceremonies were merely boisterous fooling, or whether they had any esoteric significance it is difficult to say, as students differ on the point.

" The Order was certainly at one time wide spread and popular, but seems to have entirely died out. Probably its death blow was given by the Revolution, which swept away so many of the aristocrats of France and brought secret societies into disrepute, owing ta the supposed share of the Illuminati in starting that tremendous upheaval. "

The statement in the last paragraph can hardly be accurate as certain official papers are in existence bearing, as letter head, under the insignia of the double headed masonic eagle, the following words : —

---

1. *L'Ordre des Franc-Macons Trahi et le Secret des Mopses revélé.* Author unknown, Published Amsterdam, 1763.
2. *The Rosicrucian and Masonic Record,* p. 87.

" Antichi ed Ortodossi Sup.·. Cons.·. Dei.·. 33.·. Federali Italiani de Rit.·. Scoz.·. Ant.·. ed Acc.·. Delle Valli Sebeto ed Oreto e Delle Sorelle Mopse.

Gr.·. Orienti D'Italia Sedenti in Napoli e Palermo.

Liberta-Uguaglianza-Fratellanza

Sup.·. Cons.·. Gen.·.

These papers bear the date 1902.

CHAPTER XLIX

THE RITE OF ZINNENDORF

(Founded 1766)

This rite was founded in 1766 by Zinnendorf, the chief surgeon of the general staff of Berlin and a Knight Commander in von Hund's Strict-Observance. Zinnendorf received the rituals and instructions for this order from a Swede named Cklack.

On Dec. 27 1770, Zinnendorf formed a Grand Lodge in Berlin with the cooperation of twelve lodges which had adopted his opinions. On March 29 of the following year, he demanded a constitution from the Grand Lodge of London. This he finally obtained in 1773 through the influence of Prince Louis George Charles of Hesse-Darmstadt, the Grand Master of the Lodges following his system.[1]

The Rite of Zinnendorf was absorbed at the Convent of Wolfenbuttel in 1778 into the Lodge of the Three Globes of Berlin.

---

[1] *Revue Internationale des Sociétés Secrètes,* Nov. 19, May 6, 1928. p. 397.

CHAPTER L

THE PHILALETES

(CHERCHEURS DE LA VÉRITÉ)

(Founded 1773)

The Philaletes, an offshoot of the Martinists, was founded in Paris on April 28, 1773, within the Lodge of *Les Amis Reunis,* by Savalette de Langes, Keeper of the Royal Treasury, M. de St. James, Comte de Gebelin, Condorcet and others.

This order was divided into 9 degrees, which were, Elu, Chevalier Ecossais, Chevalier d'Orient, Chevalier Rose-Croix, Chevalier du Temple, Philosophe Inconnu, Philosophe Sublime, Initie, Philalèthe ou Maitre a tous grades.

Among its members were Frederic-Louis de Hesse-Darmstadt, Baron de Gleichen, Willermoz and l'Abbe Siéyès. [1]

[1] *Revue Internationale des Societes Secretes,* Nov. 19, May 6 1928, p. 400.

For root of this movement see Chapter XLV.
For development of this movement see Chapter LIII.

CHAPTER LI

THE ILLUMINATI OF BAVARIA

(Founded 1776)

The sect of the Illuminati of Bavaria was founded on May 1, 1776 by Adam Weishaupt, a professor at the University of Ingolstadt, educated by the Jesuits.

It was composed of three classes of adepts, each of which was again subdivided into degrees, in the following manner : —

Nursery	Preparation	
	Novice	
	Minerval	
	Illuminatus Minor	
Masonry	Symbolic	Apprentice
		Fellow Craft
		Master Mason
	Scotch	Illuminatus Major, or Scotch Novice
		Illuminatus Dirigens, or Scotch Knight
Mysteries	Lesser	Epopt, or Priest
		Prince, or Regent
	Greater	Magus, or Philosopher,
		Rex, King, Homme Roi, or Areopagite

This society seems to have borne a close resemblance to the Order of the Golden Cross which was reorganized in 1767.

According to Le Forestier, Illuminism was just as much Masonry as the system of the Rose Croix, that of the Templars or the crowd of Masonic French degrees, and it is wrongfully accused of having taken in Bavaria the cloak of Masonry.[1]

The intention of the Founder was to constitute a Protestant organization to fight Jesuitism, using Jesuitical methods. He was ably assisted in his efforts by Adolph, Baron von Knigge, Massenhausen, Bode, Anacharsis Clootz, Fischer, Zwack, Merz, Hertal, the Marquis de Constanza, Count Saviola, Bassus, Baron de Montgelas and Nicolai.

Behind Nicola'i was Moses Mendelssohn, and behind Mendelssohn the Jewish Kahal, the Jewish International World Government.[2]

" Nicola'i had established about the year 1765 at Berlin a literary review with the object of propagating the pernicious doctrines of a shallow Illuminism, and, in that, the infancy of German literature, when this periodical had scarcely a rival to encounter, the influence it exerted was more extensive than can at present be even conceived. Bahardt and Basedow, at the same time, in cheap and popular tracts, scattered among the lower classes the poison of infidelity ; and they, as well as Nicola'i, were in close communication with Weishaupt, carrying on with the most reckless violence, and with the weapons of a most shameless ribaldry, the warfare against Christianity.

---

1. Le Forestier, *Les Illumines de Baviere et la Franc-Maconnerie Allemande*, p. 486.
2. Samuels, *Memoirs of Moses Mendelssohn,* p. 159, appendix, Published by Longman & Co.

The great critic Lessing, the founder of the modern German literature, lent his powerful support to the anti-Christian League. While librarian at Wolfenbuttel he edited a work, composed by Reimarus, consisting of various irreligious essays entitled *Fragments of Wolfenbuttel*, and which, from the tone of earnestness and dialectic acuteness wherein they were written, exerted a very prejudicial influence over public opinion. "[3]

As the organization of the Illuminati developed, so did its ambitions, which ended in a plot to subvert Freemasonry to its aim of world dominion by any and all means.

Politically speaking, its tendencies were republican ; religiously, it was anti-christian. Its members were pledged to blind obedience to their superiors and this was insured by a strict system of secret confessions, and monthly reports checked by mutual espionage. Each individual used a pseudonym instead of his own name to help disguise his identity.

But for the Freemason Baron Adolph von Knigge, a Templar, who succeeded in having it absorbed by Freemasonry, the order would have perished soon after its creation.

After obtaining control of certain Masonic Lodges, Weishaupt and his associates recklessly vaunted their growing power. Their organization then, soon becoming permeated by the agents of their enemies, the Jesuits and Rose Croix Orders, they were denounced to the Elector of Bavaria, Charles Theodore, by the Duchess Marie-Anne of Bavaria (Princess Clementine), his cousin whose secretary, Joseph Utzschneider, had, as an Illuminatus, become acquainted with certain methods of the order.

---

[3] J. A. Moehlen D. D., *Symbolism*, translated by James Robertson, pp. 34-36, introduction.

Constanza had ordered him to hand over certain letters written by Frederic II to the Duchess Marie-Anne and, suspecting blackmail, instead of complying with the request, he denounced the order.

On March 2, 1785, the Elector wrote his second and final edict, suppressing the order of the Illuminati, but it was not until July 10, 1785 that incriminating evidence was obtained on the activities of the sect when one of its members, a priest, Jacob Lang, was struck dead by lightning while walking with Weishaupt at Ratisbon. His body was placed in the chapel of Saint-Emmeran and a Benedictine found some documents and a list of the members of the Illuminati sewn in his clothes. These he handed over to the Councillor of the Government of Upper Bavaria.

More papers were found when the authorities, who were watching Zwack's relations with a certain Jew, Mayer, the superintendent of Bassus' chateau of Sandersdorf, near Ingolstadt, decided to raid the place, and in 1787 the judge charged with the inventory of the succession of the valet of Baron Maendl, the Chamberlain of the Elector, found among his effects an iron box full of papers concerning the Illuminati.

This discovery, Maendl, himself an Illuminatus, was summoned to explain. Among the details of his evidence is the statement that the Lodge Bader had 97 degrees. The coincidence of this number becomes of interest when compared with the 97 degrees of Memphis sent to England in 1762 by the Grand Orient of France.

When Weishaupt was banished from Bavaria by his sovereign, he was received at the court of the Duke Ernest-Louis de Saxe-Gotha who, besides a pension, gave him the title of Honorary Councillor.

The Marquis of Constanza, his secretary, and Count Saviola, the Keeper of the Archives of the order, two Italian accomplices, were also banished with pensions of 400 and 800 florins respectively, and as Illuminism was already said to have found its way into Italy, there is no reason to suppose that these gentlemen failed in their administration of the subsidy.

In 1788, after the suppression of Illuminism in Bavaria, Bahrdt and Knigge attempted to revive it in the " German Union " but it was not till 1810 that it really reappeared in Germany, this time under the name of *The Tugendbund.*

The introduction of Illuminism into Prance was effected by the Marquis de Mirabeau who, during his residence in Germany, was initiated by Mauvillon, a professor of the Caroline college at Brunswick. He rose high in the order, and, on his return to France in September 1788, initiated the Duc d'Orléans, who was Grand Master of the Freemasons of that country, and also Talleyrand.

Frost, in *Secret Societies of the European Revolution* refers to Barruel as asserting " that the whole of the Masonic lodges comprised in the Grand Orient, 266 in number, were ' illuminated ' by the end of March 1789 and there is no doubt that, with the ground so well prepared by the works of Voltaire and Bousseau, d'Alembert and Diderot, and with the example and influence of the Duke of Orleans, and the exertions of men such as Mirabeau, Talleyrand, Sieyès, and Condorcet, the system spread with rapidity. "[4]

General La Fayette, Barnave, Brissot, La Boche-

---

4. Thomas Frost, *Secret Societies of the European Revolution,* vol. I, p. 53.

foucauld, Payne and Fau:het were also members of the sect for France.[5]

The following curious piece of information is furnished by *Le Grand Dictionnaire Universel du XIX*^{e} *Siecle* by Larousse in the article on " Illuminisme " : —

" The Illuminati did not disappear after the last century. They are still to be found in Germany, England and Russia where they have formed a queer sect in which castration is one of the features of initiation. The taste for the supernatural, the passion of the marvellous constantly urge these mentally unbalanced men in whom the imagination is fanaticised, to throw themselves into the fantastic visions which constitute Illuminism. "

---

[5] Le Foreslier, *op. cit.*, p. 654.

For root of this movement see Chapter XXII.

For development of this movement see Chapters LII, LV, LXXXVII, CVI, CX.

CHAPTER LII

THE TUGENDBUND

(Founded 1786)

The name of *Tugendbund* or Union of Virtue was first given to the association of men and women who met at the house of the Jewess Henrietta Herz whose husband, Marcus Herz, a Jewish Illuminatus, was the disciple, friend and successor of Moses Mendelssohn. Noted Illuminati were frequenters of this abode of licentiousness about which Graetz, the Jewish historian, wrote :

" The salon of the beautiful Henrietta Herz became a sort of Midianite tent. Here a number of young Jewish women assembled whose husbands were kept away by their business. The most prominent male member of this circle was Frederick von Gentz, the embodiment of selfishness, licentiousness, vice and depravity whose chief occupation was the betrayal of women.[1]

" A so-called Band of Virtue (Tugendbund) was formed of which Henrietta Herz, two daughters of Moses Mendelssohn[2] and other Jewesses together with Christian profligates were members. "

---

1. H. Graetz, *History of the Jews,* vol. V, p. 422.
2. Dorothea and Rebecca Mendelssohn.

He also adds that " Mirabeau, in whose mind the storm-charged clouds of the Revolution were already forming, and to whom the Jews owed so much during his secret diplomatic embassy (1786) to Berlin, was more in the society of Henrietta Herz than in that of her husband. "

Other frequenters of this salon were William von Humboldt, Jean Paul Richter, Schleiermacher, a foremost Moravian brother, and his friend Frederick Schlegel.

Later, in 1807, a second Tugendbund or Union of Virtue was formed, a purely political league of which Thomas Frost wrote : —

" The nucleus of the Association devised by von Stein which received the name of the Tugendbund, or League of Virtue, was formed during the latter months of 1807. His colleagues, Hardenberg and Scharnhorst; Generals Wittgenstein and Blucher ; Jahn, a Professor of the Berlin Gymnasium, and Arndt, the popular author, were amongst the earliest members. The initiations multiplied rapidly, and the League soon numbered in its ranks most of the Councillors of State, many officers of the army, and a considerable number of the professors of literature and science. By the active and zealous exertions of Stein, Hardenberg and Jahn, its ramifications spread quickly from the Baltic to the Elbe, and all classes were drawn within its influence. A central directorate at Berlin, presided over by Stein, had the supreme control of the movement, and exercised, through provincial committees, an authority all the more potent from emanating from an unknown source, and which was obeyed as implicitly as the decrees of Emperor or King. "[3]

---

[3] Thomas Frost, *Secret Societies of the European Revolution,* vol. I. p. 183.

With Heckethorn, we follow the Tugendbund further, for he tells us that after its suppression by the police of Napoleon I, the Tugendbund continued " concealing itself however more strictly than before in the masonic brotherhood. " [4]

One of its first acts " was to send auxiliary corps to assist the Russians in the campaign of 1813. Prussia having, by the course of events, been compelled to abandon its temporizing policy, Gneisenau, Scharnhorst and Grollmann embraced the military plan of the Tugendbund. A levy *en masse* was ordered. The conduct of these patriots is matter of history. But, like other nations, they fought against Napoleon to impose on their country a more tyrannical government than that of the foreigner had ever been. They fought as men only fight for a great cause, and those who died fancied they saw the dawn of German freedom. But those who survived saw how much they were deceived. The Tugendbund, betrayed in its expectations, was dissolved ; but its members increased the ranks of other societies already existing, or about to be formed " such as the ' Black Knights ' under Jahn, ' The Knights of the Queen of Prussia ', ' The Concordists ' under Dr. Lang and the Deutscher Bund, founded in 1810."

The Tugendbund was revived in the Burschenschaft, or associations of students of the universities, where they introduced gymnastics and martial exercises, but the organization was broken up and its objects frustrated, after the stabbing of Kotzebue by a student. It revived between 1830-33. It is said to have failed again.

---

[4] Heckethorn, *op. cit,* vol. II, p. 187 *et seq.*
For root of this movement see Chapter LI.

CHAPTER LIII

THE JACOBINS

(THE CLUBS OR LODGES OF THE FRENCH REVOLUTION).

(Founded 1786)

The Bishop of Autun (Talleyrand), Mirabeau, and the Duc d'Orléans, Grand Master of the *Grand-Orient de France* founded a Lodge in Paris in 1786 which was duly " illuminated " by Bode and Guillaume Baron de Busche. This was the *Club Breton* which afterwards became known as the Jacobin Club, a name of Templar origin, recalling that of Jacques de Molay.

Le Forestier in *Les Illumines de Baviere et la Franc-Maçonnerie Allemande* gives the substance of a book written by Girtaner, quoting the latter as to the funds available at that date for revolution.

" In his *Nouvelles Historiques et considerations politiques sur la Revolution Française* (1793) the Swiss Girtaner, an ex-freemason who had joined the ranks of the enemies of the sect, states that, from 1786, there had existed in Paris a Propaganda Club whose chiefs were then the Duc de la Rochefoucauld, Grand Master of the Lodge in the rue Coq-Heron, Condorcet and Sieyes and that the aim of the organization was to further the triumph of dogmatic Atheism and create a great social upheaval.

" The members charged with spreading the proganda of the subversive principles of the club numbered 50,000. In 1790, it had twenty thousand livres at its disposal, but by the end of 1791, these had increased to thirty millions. "[1]

The conspiracy formed by Philippe of Orleans (Duc de Chartres, Masonic name, " Egalite ") to overthrow Louis XVI, was directed by Sillery and Mirabeau and, of the 605 elected members of the Tiers Etat, 477 deputies were Freemasons.[2]

Revolutions cost money. " L'Or de Pitt" (Pitt's gold) had to go through some channel that would not compromise the English government and, in dealing with such a delicate matter as the fostering of revolution in a foreign country, it was good policy to organize a similar movement at home which however should remain abortive, being led by Lord Stanhope, Pitt's brother-in-law.

In this connection, the history and failure of Wolfe Tone's Bantry Bay expedition is interesting.

The history of the Terror in the French Revolution of 1793 is the history of lodges such as that of the Philaletes, among whose members the following Jacobin leaders are known to us chiefly for their uncompromising bestiality.

Among the members of the " Club de la Propagande "

Condorcet, Duc de la Rochefoucauld, Sièyès, de Beauharnais, Charles Theodore Lameth.

Among the members of the Lodge " Les Amis Beunis "

Babeuf, Ceruty, Marat, Hébert, Dupont.

---

[1] Le Forestier, *Les Illumines de Bavière et la Franc-Maçonnerie Allemande,* p. 635.

[2] Louis Aimable, *Les Neuf Sœurs.* La R.·. L.·.,

Among the members of the Lodge "Les Neuf Sœurs"[3]

Condorcet, Jean Sylvain Bailly, Emmanuel Joseph Siéyès, Dom Gerlé, Claude Fauchet, Jean Pierre Brissot, Benoit Camille Desmoulins, Cerutti, Danton, Nicolas de Bonneville, Rabaud Saint Etienne, Lalande, Duc de la Rochefoucauld.

Among the members of the " Amis des Noirs "
(Founded 1787)

Brissot, Siéyès, Condorcet, Mirabeau (the elder) Due de la Rochefoucauld, Pelletier de St. Fargeau, Lafayette, Gorsas, Valadi, Carra.

Other prominent Jacobin Freemasons of the Revolution of 1793 were :

Guillotin. Dupui, Fouche, Robespierre, Collot-d'Herbois,

According to Barruel *(Histoire du Jacobinisme,* vol. II, page 446 *et seq.)* the last mentioned lodge of the " Amis des Noirs " appears to have been only the cover name behind which operated the Comité Regulateuf or Central Committee of the combined lodges and clubs. An international organization with foreign branches in America and Europe, the deliberations of this group of conspirators were sent to the Central Committee of the Grand Orient from where they were relayed to the provinces, addressed to the various Worshipful Masters or Presidents of the Lodges. This group according to Barruel, was the central guiding committee of the Revolution. The " Club Regulateur " is said to have numbered at least 500,000 brothers.

Lafayette (Loge de la Candeur), when he marched on Versailles at the head of 15,000 national guardsmen and brought the King back to Paris, was already, pre-

---

• Louis Aimable, *op. cit.*

sumably, fully informed of Dupont's plan of revolution which he himself and Mirabeau had approved at a session of the " Amis Reunis " early in June.

While remarking that the vote for the death of the King of France, Louis XVI, was carried by a majority of one, Pignatel[4] further states that, in consequence of certain irregularities in the balloting, some five votes for death were cast by unqualified persons while four others voted twice.

After the storm of revolution had subsided, the power in France seems to have been vested in the *Comite de Salut Public,* but the 300 who controlled France and of whose power we read in Memoirs of the time [5] were the 300 masonic leaders. That they in turn were controlled by a small clique is obvious. Even the 300 masonic leaders of the French Revolution of 1793 seem to have had their successors in modern history — Rathenau mentioned them in his works.

One of the most interesting episodes of the French Revolution was that known as the Conspiracy of Babeuf. Babeuf formed the Society of the Pantheon which, according to Professor Laski, [6] was operated by " a secret committee of direction. Among them were some extraordinary men, Darthe, Sylvain Marechal, Germain and Buonarroti, who was to survive them all and be their historian. "

The particular brand of communism favoured by the conspirators was based on the theory that the poor could not help themselves or improve their position, that the rich must be suppressed and that the ideal state

---

4. Fernand Pignatel, *Batailles Maçonniques,* p. 143.

5. *Autobiography of Wolfe Tone.*

6. Harold J. Laski, *The Socialist Tradition in the French Revolution.*

could only be reached by class war, and a dictatorship of the proletariat led by the Babouvists. Prof. Lasky remarks that anyone who reads the voluminous literature of this period " with attention and compares the habits it postulates with the operations of Bolshevism, cannot help being impressed by the resemblance. "

The Babouvist movement though suppressed by the Directory in 1796 survives today having successfully penetrated an English Literary Society called the Fabians where its predatory principles pass for Socialism.

For root of this movement see Chapter LI.

For development of this movement see Chapters LXV, LXXI, LXXXV, XCIII, CVI and CXXV.

CHAPTER LIV

THE KNIGHTS TEMPLAR AMERICA

(Founded prior to 1790)

In an address by Col. W. J. B. Macleod Moore, of the Grand Cross of the Temple Royal Arch, Grand Prior of the Dominion of Canada, published in *The Rosicrucian and Masonic Record,* page 167, we find that, in America, Templarism is founded on the craft degrees of Masonry and that one is inseparable from the other.

The earliest records in the United States of a Templar Lodge meeting are dated 1790.

VOLUME II

OCCULT THEOCRASY

BY

LADY QUEENBOROUGH

(EDITH STARR MILLER)

PUBLISHED POSTHUMOUSLY

FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY

VOLUME II

CHAPTER LV

THE UNITED IRISHMEN

(Founded 1791)

In 1791, the Society of The United Irishmen was founded by Theobald Wolfe Tone and Napper Tandy, both of whom were high in rank in the Masonic lodges. The organization sought to unite Catholics, Protestants and Dissenters in order to throw off the oppressive yoke of England or, to use the graphic language of Tone himself, " to subvert the tyranny of our execrable government, to break the connection with England, the never-failing source of all our political evils, and to assert the independence of my country — these were my objects. To unite the whole people of Ireland. "[1]

The priesthood and the nobles however stood solidly behind the English power ; but the social conditions imposed by England on its Irish-Catholic subjects rendered that country a fertile soil for the sowing of the Revolutionary seed. These disabilities are described by Lecky in the following article which appeared in *Macmillan's Magazine,* January, 1873.

" To sum up briefly their provisions, they (the English) excluded the Catholics from the Parliament, from the magistracy, from the corporations, from the university, from the bench and from the bar, from the right of voting at parliamentary elections or at vestries of acting as constables, as sheriffs, or as jurymen, of serving in the army or navy, of becoming solicitors or even holding the position of gamekeeper or watchman. They prohibited them from becoming schoolmasters, ushers, or private tutors, or from sending their children abroad to receive the Catholic education they were refused at home. They offered an annuity to every priest who would forsake his creed, pronounced a sentence of exile against the whole hierarchy, and restricted the right of celebrating the mass to registered priests, whose number, according to the first intention of the Legislature, was not to be renewed. The Catholics could not buy land, or inherit or receive it as a gift from Protestants, or hold life annuities, or leases for more than thirty-one years, or any lease on such terms that the profits of the land exceeded one-third of the rent. A Catholic, except in the linen trade, could have no more than two apprentices. He could not have a horse of the value of more than £5, and any Protestant on giving him £5 might take his horse. He was compelled to pay double to the militia. In case of war with a Catholic Power, he was obliged to reimburse the damage done by the enemy's privateers. To convert a Protestant to Catholicism was a capital offence. No Catholic might marry a Protestant. Into his own family circle the elements of dissension were ingeniously introduced. A Catholic landowner might not bequeath his land as he pleased. It was divided equally among his children, unless the eldest son became a Protestant, in which case the parent became simply a life tenant, and lost all power either of selling or mortgaging it. If a Catholic s wife abandoned her husband's religion, she was immodiately free from his control, and the Chancellor could assign her a certain proportion of her husband's property. If his child, however young, professed itself a Protestant, he was taken from his father's care, and the Chancellor could assign it a portion of its father's property. No Catholic could be guardian either to his own children or to those of another. "

---

[1] *The Autobiography of Wolfe Tone,* p. 51.

The investigations of R. C. Clifford detailed in his book *The Application of Jacobinism to the Secret Societies of Ireland and Great Britain* led this author to the conclusion that The United Irishmen and The Illuminati bore one another a close resemblance and, in his Diary, Wolfe Tone himself refers frankly to having on " several occasions pressed his friends the Jacobins to try to extend their clubs through the North. "[2]

The history of the United Irishmen is largely the history of Theobald Wolfe Tone.

In a note to page 77 of his *Autobiography*, we are given the following information concerning the origin of The United Irishmen. "Before Tone's arrival in Belfast a political club, composed of Volunteers, and directed by a Secret Committee, was in existence. Among the members of the club were Neilson,[3] Russell, the Simses, Sinclair, McTier and Macabe after which Tone remarks " Mode of doing business by a Secret Committee, who are not known or suspected of co-operating, but who, in fact, direct the movements of Belfast. "

After also drawing attention to the above, Captain Pollard in *The Secret Societies of Ireland*, page 14, proceeds to make the following observation : — << The enormous influence of the French revolution had begun to make itself felt in the councils of the secret associations, Jacobin missionaries spread the doctrine of the revolution, and a new spirit of militant republicanism was born. These emissaries from France aimed at bringing England low, and spreading the doctrine of world-revolution by means of an alliance between the Catholic malcontents of the south and the Republican Presbyterians of the north. "

---

[2] *The Autobiography of Wolfe Tone*, p. 51.

[3] Samuel Neilson (1761-1803), referred to in Tone's *Autobiography* as " The Jacobin ". He was the founder of *The Northern Star*, the first organ of the society in the press.

Suppressed in 1794, the order had reorganized in 1795 as a secret republican revolutionary society with subordinate societies and committees and had absorbed that of The Defenders.

John Keogh was the leader of the Roman Catholic branch of the movement among the other supporters of which were Archibald Hamilton Rowan, Robert Emmett, Thomas Addis Emmett, Arthur O'Connor and Lord Edward Fitzgerald.

In 1795, having become seriously implicated in the treasonable activities of the Rev. William Jackson, an emissary of the French Government to the Irish Revolutionaries, Tone went to America where he saw the French Minister Citizen Adet. With his approval and instructions, Wolfe Tone sailed for France on Jan. 1, 1796 where he spent the remainder of his days planning the downfall of England. He held that " unless they can separate England from Ireland, England is invulnerable. " [4]

From the beginning of his French intrigues, he feared treason to his cause and, in his diary, we find the following entry dated March 21, 1796, quoting General Clark in a conversation he had just had with him :

---

[4] *The Autobiography of Wolfe Tone, op. cit.*, p. 242.

" Even in the last war when the volunteers were in force " said the General " and a rupture between England and Ireland seemed likely, it was proposed in the French Council to offer assistance to Ireland, and overruled by the interest of Comte de Vergennes, then Prime Minister, who received for that service a considerable bribe from England, and that he (General Clark) was informed of this by a principal agent in paying the money. So, it seems, we had a narrow escape of obtaining our independence fifteen years ago. It is better as it is for then we were not united amongst ourselves, and I am not clear that the first use we should have made of our liberty would not have been to have begun cutting each other's throats : so out of evil comes good. I do not like this story of Vergennes, of the truth of which I do not doubt. How if the devil should put it into any one's head here to serve us so this time ! Pitt is as cunning as hell, and he has money enough, and we have nothing but assignats ; I do not like it at all... "[5]

Six months after his arrival in Paris, Tone received a commission in the French army, and with the assistance of the Directory, General Hoche and others organized the ill fated Bantry Bay expedition of 1796. Every effort to thwart their plans was made by the French navy till, as Tone tells us in an entry dated Nov. 14 to 18, " Villaret de Joyeuse, the Admiral, is cashiered, and we have got another in his place. Joyeuse was giving, underhand, all possible impediment to our expedition. "

His successor, Rear-Admiral Bruix, however, seems to have shared the indifference of his predecessor in Irish matters, and the fact that it was " always in

---

1. *Ibid.,* p. 290.

their (the navy's) power to make us miscarry " is mentioned by Tone in his diary.

On Dec. 15, the expedition finally started and on the 17th, in a fog, the *Fraternité* with two of the Admirals and General Hoche aboard got separated from the rest of the fleet leaving Tone and General Grouchy with only about half of the original expeditionary force at their disposal.

Tone's efforts to effect a landing at Bantry Bay were frustrated by Grouchy's dilatory tactics and on Dec. 26 we find the following entry in Tone's Diary : " Last night, at half after six o'clock, in a heavy gale of wind still from the east, we were surprised by the Admiral's frigate running under our quarter, and hailing the *Indomptable* (Tone's ship) with orders to cut our cable and put to sea instantly ; the frigate then pursued her course, leaving us all in the utmost astonishment. "

Did Wolfe Tone think of Vergennes then ? History fails to tell us !

The activities of The United Irishmen ended with the uprising of 1798 and another attempt by the French to land troops on Irish soil. This rebellion was however also crushed, and Wolfe Tone, who was taken prisoner and ordered to be hanged, cut his throat in his cell.

For root of this movement see Chapter LIII.

For development of this movement see Chapters LXIII, LXXXII, LXXXV, LXXXVIII.

CHAPTER LVI

THE ORANGE SOCIETY

(PROTESTANT AND MASONIC)

(Founded 1795)

The Battle of the Diamond between the Peep-o'-Day Boys and the Defenders took place on Sept. 21, 1795.

We cannot improve on Captain Pollard's documented information in *The Secret Societies of Ireland* from which we quote :

" On the evening of the battle a number of the delegates of the Peep-o'-Day Boys met at the house of Thomas Wilson at Loughgall. There and then the name of the Society was changed to *The Orange Society,* and a grand lodge and subsidiary lodges initiated. The ritual was founded on Freemasonry (I° York Rite), and the legend was that of the Exodus of the Israelites.

" The original Peep-o'-Day Society had been confined to the lower orders, but with the change in Orangeism the upper classes began to take place and rank in the organization which was secretly fostered by the Government as a counter-poise against the seditious United Irishmen. [1] "

" Prom 1828, the Orange Society was under the

---

[1] Pollard, *The Secret Societies of Ireland,* p. 20.

Grand Mastership of the Duke of Cumberland, and in 1835 there were no less than 140,000 Orangemen in England, 40,000 being in London alone. These members were not Irish Orangemen, but purely English, and they were engaged in a plot which recalls the best traditions of the Palais Royal and Philippe-Egalite. The purpose of the plot was to establish the Duke of Cumberland as King of England, on the plea that William IV was still insane and the Princess Victoria a woman and a minor. "[2]

" The revolutionary mechanism staged by the Orangemen was in many ways similar to that of the Orleanist party of Philippe. Wild rumours were set about. Colonel William Blennerhasset Fairman, Deputy Grand Secretary of the Orange Society, was the ruling spirit of the organization, and he conspired to such end that 381 loyal lodges were established in Great Britain. Another thirty were in the army, and branches were in many of the colonies.

" The conspiracy prospered from 1828 to 1835, when it was exposed by Mr. Hume, M. P., and a Committee of Enquiry in the Commons was granted. As the conspiracy, however, implicated half the Tory peers, some of the Bishops and most of the Army, everything passed off quietly; important witnesses vanished, and the Duke of Cumberland as Grand Master decreed the dissolution of the Orange Society in England without recourse to violence. "

" The Volunteer movement began in 1914 in Ulster as the direct consequence of an attempt on the part of the Liberal Government to force the Home Rule Bill on that province. This unfortunate measure had passed the Houses despite the most rigid Unionist opposition,

---

2. Pollard, *op. cit.*, p. 41.

but Ulster had no intention of surrendering to its provisions without a struggle. The situation portended Civil War. A ' Solemn League and Covenant ', to resist it, was drawn up, and Ulster, organizing largely through the Orange Lodges, recruited an *Ulster Volunteer Force* which was completely organized throughout the North. "

" The Orange Lodges had been reorganized in 1885, when Gladstone introduced the threatening Home Rule Bill. Prior to this the Order had somewhat relapsed and had been little more than a convivial friendly society. The threat of Home Rule brought it once more to the fore as a powerful political organization, and the Ulster electorate, which had until then been predominantly Liberal, became and remained solidly Unionist. The membership of the order expanded enormously, and the existing mechanism adapted itself to the new needs of the old motto, ' No surrender. '

" The Orange Lodges had been legally drilling since January 5, 1912, when application was made to the Belfast Justices for leave to drill on behalf of Colonel R. H. Wallace, C. B., Grand Master of the Belfast and Grand Secretary of the Provincial Grand Lodge of Ulster ; but, the skeleton organization had long been in existence, as was evident by the splendidly disciplined marching of the Lodges at the great Craigavon meeting in Sept. 1911.[3]

The Ulster Volunteers, under Sir Edward Carson, rejected all suggestions for partition and proclaimed their intention of smashing once and for all the whole Home Rule movement.

The Irish Volunteers while claiming Home Rule refused to consent to the exclusion of Ulster on the ground that Ulster being Ireland it should remain Ireland, thus annulling all the efforts of Mr. Asquith, England's Prime Minister, to effect a compromise.

---

[3] *Ibid.*, p. 125.

Further quoting Pollard : " Affairs became more and more chaotic and at last John Redmond, the leader of the Home Rule party, realized in some measure what a menace the Irish Volunteer movement was becoming.

" He decided to attempt to control them... He tried to raise funds for the advertised purpose of purchasing arms at some future date, but before this came about the members of the original committee purchased a stock of serviceable weapons with money supplied by the Irish Republican Brotherhood and succeeded in running the cargoes in at Kilcool and Howth. "[4]

Then came the declaration of war between Britain and Germany and the part played by Ireland during the World war is a matter of history.

Interlocked with the history of the Irish Republican Brotherhood, The Clan-na-Gael and Sinn Fein, the activities of this society after 1914 can be followed in the articles on these other organizations.

[4] *Ibid.,* p. 131.

For root of this movement see Chapter LV.

For development of this movement see Chapters LXXXVIII and CXVI.

CHAPTER LVII

THE PHILADELPHIANS

(THE OLYMPIANS)

(Founded 1798)

The Philadelphians, a Royalist Anti-Bonapartist Secret Society, was founded on masonic lines about 1798 at Besançon, France, by General Malet and organized by a Freemason, Lieutenant Colonel Oudet.

Using England as a base of operations, it cooperated for a while with the " Chouans " whose chief, Pichegru, was eventually captured and executed by order of the Directory.

After this event, the Philadelphians adopted the name of The Olympians. Most of them however, including Oudet, were shot from ambush the day after the battle of Wagram, the responsibility for their deaths being placed on Napoleon I.

In 1812 General Malet formed a conspiracy to overthrow the Empire. Among those implicated were Generals Moreau, Talleyrand, Trochot, the Comte de Noailles, the Comte de Montmorency and Fouche, who was then under the cloud of Napoleon's displeasure. General Masséna, Grand Master of the Grand Orient, who at that time was in disgrace, was to have been offered the command of the troops. This daring plot almost succeeded and Fouche says that Malet carried with him to the grave " the secret of one of the boldest conspiracies which the Grand Epoch of the Revolution has bequeathed to history. "[1]

General Moreau, who had gone to settle in America returned to France in 1813, the last of the leaders of the Olympians. He died Sept. 2 from a wound received some days earlier.

A few moments after the death of Moreau, the Senate pronounced the deposition of Napoleon and carried out the programme of the Olympians.

---

1. Thomas Frost, *The Secret Societies of the European Revolution,* vol. I, p. 175.

CHAPTER LVIII

THE SCOTTISH PHILOSOPHIC RITE

(Founded 1799)

Rev. E. Cahill, S. J., in his book *Freemasonry and the Anii-Christian Movement,* page 143, names The Scottish Philosophic Rite as one of the principal divisions of Freemasonry, and he writes :

" *The Scottish Philosophic Rite* is practised by the Masons subject to the Lodge Alpina in Switzerland. This latter Grand Lodge, which is among those formally recognized by the Grand Lodges of the British Isles, is of special importance, as it is not unfrequently utilised as a kind of liaison body by the different rites and lodges of the several jurisdictions all over the world in their negotiations with each other. "

For root of this movement see Chapter XLVI.

ASSOCIATIONS OF THE 19m CENTURY

CHAPTER LIX

MODERN KNIGHTS TEMPLAR ENGLAND

(Founded 1804)

In an address by Col. W. J. B. Macleod Moore, of the Grand Cross of the Temple Royal Arch, Grand Prior of the Dominion of Canada, printed in *The Rosicrucian and Masonic Record* (page 165), we obtain the following salient points of English Templar history :

" In 1791, we find the Templar Rite styled ' Grand Elect Knights Templar Kadosh, of St. John of Jerusalem, Palestine, Rhodes, and Malta', thus combining the modern and more ancient titles... In 1848 after the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of 33° had been established in England, the Templar body resigned control over the Rose Croix and Kadosh, which had been incorporated into the Ancient and Accepted Rite as the 18th and 30th degrees. It was therefore necessary to suppress the old ceremonies and confine themselves to the Templar alone and to change the name into the degree of ' Masonic Knights Templar '. This title was not used in England before 1851, although the term Masonic appears in the warrants of Admiral Dunkerley between 1791 [1] and 1796... Until 1853 the Order of the Temple and Malta remained combined.

" In 1863 the Grand Conclave again formally revived the Maltese Order, with a considerable ritual, but as a separate degree instead of combined with the Templars as it had been before 1853. "

The following, borrowed from *The History of Freemasonry and Concordant Orders,* a work by Stillson and Hughan, reputed authorities on Masonic matters, gives us the history of Modern English Templarism.

" In 1867-68 a proposal was promulgated to unite the branches of the Order in England, Ireland and Scotland, under one head ; and H.·. R.·. H.·. the Prince of Wales, who had been initiated into Masonry and the Templar degree in Sweden, consented, in 1869, to assume the Grand Mastership of the Templars of the United Kingdom. On the 7th April, 1873, H.·. R.·. H.·. was installed Grand Master... This assumption by H.·. R.·. H.·. the Prince of Wales, to use the words of the Arch-Chancellor of the Order, Sir Patrick Colquhoun, ' effected a perfect reformation of the Order, and procured for it a status it had hitherto not enjoyed, even under the Duke of Kent, who must be practically regarded as its founder, with the additional advantage of H.·. R.·. H.·. being at once head of the Craft and Temple ; indeed, it may be said that as the Order was reformed in 1804-7 by the Duke of Kent, so it was again refounded under his grandson, the Prince of Wales, in 1873 '. At this date the Order assumed the name of United Religious and Military Order of the Temple and of St. John of Jerusalem, Palestine, Rhodes and Malta. "

---

[1] The close connection between Grand Lodge and English Templarism, prior to 1791, is established in an article by T. B. Whytehead, in *The Rosicrucian and Masonic Record,* pp. 317 and 325.

Macleod Moore informs us that in 1813 the Craft degrees, including the.Royal Arch,'were alone recognized as pure and ancient Freemasonry and that the possession of the Royal Arch degree in modern times has been, and is now, considered quite sufficient to preserve the link between the Temple Order and Freemasonry.

CHAPTER LX

MODERN KNIGHTS TEMPLAR
FRANCE

(Founded 1804)

Heckethorn in his well-known book *Secret Societies of all Ages and Countries* gives the following graphic description of the foundation of this order.

" We read that several lords of the Court of Louis XIV, including the Duke de Gramont, the Marquis of Biran, and Count Tallard, formed a secret society, whose object was pleasure. The society increased. Louis XIV, having been made acquainted with its statutes, banished the members of the Order, whose denomination was, ' A slight Resurrection of the Templars. '

" In 1705, Philippe, Duke of Orleans, [1] collected the remaining members of the society that had renounced its first scope to cultivate politics. A Jesuit father, Bonanni, a learned rogue, fabricated the famous list of supposititious Grand Masters of the Temple since Molay, beginning with his immediate successor, Larmenius. No imposture was ever sustained with greater sagacity. The document offered all the requisite characteristics of authenticity, and was calculated to deceive the most

[1] Later Regent of France during the minority of Louis XV.

experienced palæologist. Its object was to connect the new institution with the ancient Templars. To render the deception more perfect, the volume containing the false list was filled with minutes of deliberations at fictitious meetings under false dates. Two members were even sent to Lisbon, to obtain if possible a document of legitimacy from the ' Knights of Christ ', an Order supposed to have been founded on the ruins of the Order of the Temple. But the deputies were unmasked and very badly received : one had to take refuge in England, the other was transported to Africa, where he died.

" But the society was not discouraged; it grew, and was probably the same that concealed itself before the outbreak of the revolution under the vulgar name of the Society of the Bull's Head and whose members were dispersed in 1792. At that period the Duke of Cossé-Brissac was Grand Master. When on his way to Versailles with other prisoners, there to undergo their trial, he was massacred, and Ledru, his physician, obtained possession of the charter of Larmenius and the MS. statutes of 1705. These documents suggested to him the idea of reviving the order ; Fabre-Palaprat, a Freemason, was chosen grand master. Every effort was made to create a belief in the genuineness of the Order. The brothers Fabré, Arnal, and Leblond hunted up relics. The shops of antiquaries supplied the sword, mitre, and helmet of Molay, and the faithful were shown his bones, withdrawn from the funeral pyre on which he has been burned. " [2]

This presumably is the particular Templar sect that furnished Isaac Long with all the Templar bric-a-brac that found its way to Charleston in 1804

---

[2] Heckethorn, *Secret Societies of all Ages and Countries,* vol. I, p. 302 *et seq.*

" As in the Middle Ages, the society exacted that aspirants should be of noble birth ; such as were not were ennobled by it. Fourteen honest citizens of Troyes on one occasion received patents of nobility and convincing coats of arms. "

The order founded its first Lodge on Dec. 23, 1805, deriving from the Grand Orient of France.

From 1805 to 1815, the brother Francisco Alvaro da Silva, Knight of the Order of Christ, secret agent in Paris of John VI of Portugal, was a member of the order. He knew its secret history from its organizers, and in 1812 became its Chief Secretary.

In 1814, Fabré-Palaprat found a Greek manuscript of the 15th century, containing a chapter of St. John the Evangelist which conflicted on many points with the Gospel inserted in the canons of the Roman Church and preceded by a sort of introduction and commentary entitled *Leviticon.* He forthwith determined to appropriate this doctrine to his order, which was thus transformed from a perfectly orthodox association into a schismatic sect. The author of this work was a monk at Athens called Nicephorus. He was a member of the Sufi sect, one which professes the doctrines of the Ancient Lodge of Cairo.

" Those knights that adopted its doctrines made them the basis of a new liturgy, which they rendered public in 1833 in a kind of Johannite church. "

The Order of the Temple of Paris described by Heckethorn, as stated above, gives a list of the names of the successors of Jacques de Molay as follows. Other Templars, who do not admit the legality of the Grand Mastership of Larmenius, give different lists of Grand Masters :

John Mark Larmenius	1314
Thomas Theobald Alexandrinus	1324
Arnold de Braque	1340
John de Claremont	1349
Bertrand du Guesclin	1357
John Arminiaeus	1381
Bertrand Arminiaeus	1392
John Arminiaeus	1419
John de Croy	1451
Bernard Imbault	1472
Robert Senoncourt	1478
Galeatino de Salazar	1497
Philip Chabot	1516
Gaspard de Jaltiaco Tavanensis	1544
Henry de Montmorency	1574
Charles de Valois	1615
James Ruxellius de Granceio	1651
Duc de Duras	1681
Philippe Duc d'Orléans	1705
Duc de Maine	1724
Louis Henry Bourbon	1737
Louis Francis Bourbon	1741
Duc de Cosse Brissac	1776
Claude M. R. Chevillon	1792
Bernard R. Fabré-Palaprat	1804
Admiral Sir Sidney Smith	1838 to 1840

This list is quoted from a manuscript of A. G. Mackey in the possession of the writer.

CHAPTER LXI

MODERN KNIGHTS TEMPLAR
SWEDEN

Stillson and Hughan, giving no date of foundation, state that :

" The Swedish Templars assert that Templary was introduced there by a nephew of De Molay, who was a member of the new Order of Christ in Portugal, and they now, with Denmark and other nationalities of Germany, practised the reformed system of the obsolete Templar rite of the ' Strict Observance '. "[1]

' Strict Observance ' was Templarism.

---

[1] Stillson and Hughan, *History of Freemasonry and Concordant Orders,* p. 790.

For root of this movement see Chapter XLIV.

CHAPTER LXII

RITE OF MIZRAIM

(Founded 1805)

This rite had 90 degrees. It was founded in 1805 at Milan by Le Changeur, Clavel, Marc Bedarride and Joly, and was introduced into France in 1816.

Its trials of initiation were long and difficult, and founded on what is recorded of the Egyptian and Eleusinian mysteries.

Heckethorn states that this rite is essentially autocratic there being no obligation on the Grand Master to account for his actions.

In the *Rosicrucian* for January 1871 we read the following notice (page 136).

" We have great pleasure in announcing that this philosophic Masonic Rite (Ancient and Primitive Rite of Mizraim) has been recently established in England under authority derived from the Grand Council of Rites for France, and that the Conservators General held a meeting at Freemasons Tavern, on Wednesday, the 28th December. The principal chairs were filled by Ill. Bros. Wentworth Little 90° ; the Rt. Hon. The Earl of Limerick 90°; and S. Rosenthal 90°; by whom the ' Bective ' Sanctuary of Levites — the 33rd of the Rite — was duly opened...

It was then anounced that the following brethren had accepted office in the Rite : The Rt. Hon. the Earl of Bective, Sovereign Grand Master, etc., etc. "

The Rite of Mizraim was amalgamated with that of Memphis in 1775, when John Yarker, as stated by Freke Gould [1] " sanctioned the communication of the degrees of Mizraim to members of the Rite of Memphis, the former having no separate governing body in this country " (England).

" According to an official statement, repeated in every number of the Kneph : " France (having) abandoned the Rite, and the Ill. Gd. Hierophant, J. E. Marconis, 33°, 97°, having died in 1868, Egypt took full possession. The Craft Gd. Lodge, our Antient and Primitive Rite, and the Antient and Accepted Rite, executed a tripartite Treaty to render mutual aid, and restored the Sov. Gd. Mystic Temple — Imp. Council Cen., 96°, presided over by a Gd. Hierophant, 97°, in 1775. "

Essentially Jewish, the historical activities of this order to date are interesting.

Some years ago, a document to which the reader must be referred, *The Protocols of the Wise Men* or *Elders of Zion* [2], was brought to light. Abstracted from a Jewish Lodge of Mizraim in Paris, in 1884, by Joseph Schorst, later murdered in Egypt, it embodied the programme of esoteric Judaism. Schorst was the son of a man who, in 1881, had been sentenced in London to ten years penal servitude for counterfeiting.

Before studying these *Protocols* however, the reader should be made acquainted with a few facts.

This document was first published in 1905 at Tsarskoe

---

[1] Robert Freke Gould, *The History of Freemasonry,* vol. II, p. 135.

[2] L. Fry, *Waters Flowing Eastward.*

Selo (Russia), embodied in a book called *The Great Within the Small* written by Sergius A. Nilus.

In January 1917, a second edition, revised and documented, was ready, but before it could be put on the market for distribution and sale, the revolution had taken place (March 1917), and the Provisional Government had been replaced by that of Kerensky who himself gave the order to have the whole edition of S. A. Nilus's book destroyed. It was burnt.

A few copies however had been distributed, one of them found its way to England, one to Germany and one again to the United States of America in 1919. In each of these three countries, a few people determined to make a close study of the document with the result that it was soon published everywhere.

In England, it was and still is published by an organization called " The Britons ".

In Germany, a remarkable work was done by Gottfried zum Beck.

In France, it was published by Mgr. Jouin of the *Revue Internationale des Societes Secretes* and by the fearless M. Urbain Gohier of *Vieille France.*

In the United States, two anonymous editions were published, one by Small Maynard of Boston, and the other, later, by the Beckwith Company.

Then editions appeared in Italian, Russian, Arabic and even Japanese.

No sooner had the document been made public than loud protests were heard coming from all sections of dispersed Israel. Writers and lecturers were recruited to deny the assertion and shatter the growing belief of a Jewish conspiracy for the political, economic and legislative dominion of the world.

The method of intimidation used to suppress discussion of *The Protocols* has always been the same. It consists in suggesting that the person guilty of interest in the subject is crazy or becoming so. As the average mortal prefers to be thought sane by his fellow men, the trick generally works.

A short review of the affray must be made. First and foremost came a strong denial made by a Jew, Lucien Wolf, who wrote the pamphlet : *The Jewish Bogey and the Forged Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion,* (1920). Israel Zangwill, another Jew, also wrote against the veracity of the *Protocols.* Then, in America, followed articles by William Hard, in the *Metropolitan,* ridiculing belief in the document.

More serious was the painstaking campaign undertaken against the publication of the *Protocols* by the chiefs of the U. S. Kahal or Kehillah, who intimidated the editor, George H. Putnam, and. forced him to stop the publication of the book by threats to call his loans and thus ruin him financially. The Beckwith Co. was eventually induced by the Jewish Anti-Defamation League to enclose in every copy of the edition they published a small pamphlet containing the denial of the contents of the *Protocols.*

Among the Gentiles found ready to deny the truth of the *Protocols* was a certain du Chayla, also a Mrs. Hurlbut and the notorious Princess Catherine Radziwill who had previously reached the pinnacle of self-advertisement by having had herself sentenced to a term of imprisonment in South Africa for forgery in 1902. It seemed as if all the denials against the Jewish authorship of the *Protocols* had been made, when finally in 1921 the London *Times* made the sensational discovery through one of its correspondents in Constantinople, a Mr. X. — of a French book which they called the *Dialogues of Geneva,* published anonymously at Brussels in 1865. It was this book, the *Times* affirmed, which had been plagiarized by the author of the *Protocols.*

The publication of this discovery by the *Times* seemed to have closed all further discussion tending to prove the Jewish authenticity of the *Protocols* and very little has been heard since on the subject.

Yet, to use the words of the Zionist, Max Nordau, during his violent quarrel with another Zionist, Asher Ginzberg : *Audealur et altera pars.* It is this other side of the story which the reader is now asked to hear.

The book *The Times* called *The Geneva Dialogues* bears in reality the following title : *Dialogues aux Enfers entre Machiavelli et Montesquieu.* It had been published anonymously in Brussels in 1864. The introduction ends thus : " Geneva, October 13, 1865 ".

It was soon discovered by the police of Napoleon III that the author of the book was a certain lawyer, Maurice Joly, who was arrested, tried, and sentenced to two years' imprisonment (April 1865), as it was averred that he had written his book as an attack against the government of Napoleon III to which he had lent all the Machiavelian plans revealed in the *Dialogues.*

A short sketch of the author's life is necessary in order to understand the spirit of his book.

Maurice Joly (1831-1878), was born at Lons-le-Saulnier. His mother, *nee* Florentine Corbara Courtois, was a Corsican of Italian origin and a Roman Catholic. Her father, Laurent Courtois, had been paymaster-general of Corsica. He had an inveterate hatred of Napoleon I.

Joly's father was Philipe Lambert Joly, born at Dieppe, Normandy. He had a comfortable fortune and had been attorney general for the department of Jura for a period of 10 years under Louis Philippe. Maurice Joly was educated at Dijon and began his law studies there, but in 1849 he left for Paris.

There, thanks to his maternal grandfather's masonic associations, he secured, just before the Coup d'Etat in 1851, a post in the Ministry of the Interior under M. Chevreau. In 1860 only, he terminated his law studies, — he wrote several articles, showed a certain amount of talent and ended by founding a paper called Le *Palais* for lawyers and attorneys. The principal stockholders were Jules Favre, Desmaret, Leblond, Adolphe Cremieux, Arago, and Berryer.

Joly was a Socialist. He wrote of himself: " Socialism seems to me one of the forms of a new life for the peoples emancipated from the traditions of the Old World. I accept a great many of the solutions offered by Socialism but I reject Communism either as a social factor or as a political institution. Communism is but a school of Socialism. In politics I understand extreme means to gain one's ends — in that, at least, I am a Jacobin. "

Friend of Adolphe Cremieux, he shared in his hatred of Napoleon III. He hated absolutism as much as he hated Communism and as, under the influence of his Prime Minister Rouher, the French Emperor led a policy of reaction, Maurice Joly qualified it as Machiavelian and depicted it as such in his pamphlet.

In one of his books he wrote of it :

" Machiavelli represents the policy of Might compared to Montesquieu's, which represents the policy of Right — Machiavelli will be Napoleon III who will himself depict his abominable policy ". (From Maurice Joly — *Son passe, son programme* — by himself, 1870).

And here comes the important point which the *Times* omitted to put before its readers when it made the sensational discovery about the Dialogues of Geneva in 1921!

Maurice Joly, who hated Communism and, in 1864, ascribed the Machiavelian policy of Might over Right to the Imperialism of Napoleon III, was evidently ignorant of the fact that he himself was no innovator, for, long before he ever entered the journalistic or political world, the very theory which he had tried to expose and refute had been the guiding principle of a group of ardent revolutionists, promoters of Communism, and worthy followers of Illuminatis and Babouvists, the group of Karl Marx, Jacoby, etc. the agitators of the 1848 revolution.

Long before Maurice Joly's book *Dialogues aux Enfers entre Machiavelli et Montesquieu* had made its appearance, another book bearing much the same title had been published in Berlin in 1850. It was called

Machiavelli, Montesquieu, Rousseau

by Jacob Venedy and was published by Franz Dunnicker, Berlin. [3]

Jacob Venedy, the author, was a Jew, born in Cologne, May 1805, died February 1871. Owing to his revolutionary activities, he was expelled from Germany and sought refuge in France. "While living in Paris, in 1835, he edited a paper of subversive character called *he Proscrit* which caused the police to send him away from Paris. He then lived at Le Hâvre. Later, due to the intercession of Arago and Mignet, friends of Adolphe Cremieux, he was once more allowed to return to Paris. Meanwhile, he had published a book, *Romanisme, Christianisme et Germanisme,* which had won for him the praise of the French Academy. Venedy was a close friend and associate of Karl Marx. He had spent the years 1843-44 in England which at that time was the refuge and abode of all the master minds of the 1848 revolution. In 1847 Venedy was in Brussels with Karl

---

[3] L. Fry, *Waters Flowing Eastward.*

Marx who had founded there the secret organization called " The Communist League of Workers ", which was eventually brought out into the open under the name of " The International Society of Democracy " *(Societe Internationale de la Democratic).*

In 1848, after the February Revolution, Venedy returned to Germany, still in the company of Karl Marx. He soon afterwards became one of the chiefs of the revolutionary Committee of Fifty, organized at Frankfort-on-Main in March 1848. Venedy was sent as " Commissar " into the Oberland to stand against Ecker. In Hesse-Homburg he was elected a member of the Left and took his place in the Committee of Fifty. It was at this time that in Berlin he published his book *Machiavelli, Montesquieu and Rousseau,* upholding the ideas of Machiavelli and Rousseau for the slavery and demoralization of the people.

When order was once more re-established in Germany, Venedy was expelled from Berlin and Breslau.

He was an active member of the Masonic Order Bauhlitte which was affiliated to the Carbonari. (See *Die Bauhlütte* for Feb. 25, 1871).

It is to be regretted that the *Times,* which had started an investigation to trace the authorship of *The Protocols of the Wise Men of Zion,* and lift it off the shoulders of Jewry upon which it rested, should have missed looking into the literary and revolutionary activities of Jacob Venedy.

Following the apparent contradiction between Jacob Venedy and Maurice Joly, one showing the Machiavelli and Rousseau policy as that of triumphant Communism, whilst the other makes it the policy of Reaction and Imperialism, one is apt to overlook the link between the two. The student of the 1830-1848 period of history is here confronted by a remarkable fact.

Fould, the Rothschilds of Paris, London and Vienna, Montefiore, Disraeli, the Goldsmids, were not less Jews than Karl Marx, Moses Hess, Jacoby, Lassalle, Venedy, Riesser. The Liberal Conservatism of Disraeli, the reactionary Imperialism of Fould and the revolutionary Communism of Karl Marx all point towards the same aim, namely, the establishment of Jewish power, whether under a Constitutional Monarchy, an Empire, or a Republic. And although their respective activities seem to stand so far apart, yet they are all linked, all tending towards the same end. One of the most striking instances is the case of Adolphe Cremieux who played a prominent part in the period we are now concerned with, and who was connected with all parties and actually helped form the centre which united them all, viz. The ALLIANCE ISRAELITE UNIVERSELLE, which was, in fact, the central Kahal for Universal Jewry.

The life of Adolphe Cremieux and the activities of his Jewish contemporaries, belonging to widely divergent social spheres, illustrate forcibly the concerted plan of Judaism to reach its secret Messianic hope of world domination.

Until about 1848, it seemed somewhat difficult to show conclusively the link between Judaism and Illuminism, Communism and Capitalism, but a close study of the life of Adolphe Cremieux, and that of his confidential agent, Leon Gambetta, throws full light on the subject.

Whereas in Gentile life, there is an unbridgeable abyss between Conservatism and Anarchy, Religion and Atheism, there is no such chasm in the Jewish mentality. There, all currents, no matter in what direction they may seem to flow, are finally united and channelled in one unique direction.

If it has been somewhat difficult for historians of the French Revolution to see the close link between Judaism and Illuminism, we repeat that no such difficulty exists for the student of the 1848 revolutionary period, after he has followed the life of Adolphe Crémieux and the activities of his Jewish contemporaries. The main difference is that the term " Illuminism " used in the 18th century is replaced by the wide term Freemasonry which embraces all the existent secret societies.

Adolphe Isaac Cremieux (1796-1880) came from a Jewish family of the South of France, that had members in Aix, Nîmes and Marseilles.[4]

In his youth, Cremieux was an enthusiastic admirer of Napoleon I ; yet in 1831, he pronounces the funeral eulogy of the ill famed revolutionist of 1789, the Abbe Gregoire. He chose law as his profession and was admitted to the Bar at Nimes in 1817.

Briefly, Cremieux's life may be viewed from three sides : 1st, his racial Jewish activities, 2nd, his Masonic activities, 3rd, his political influence.

Cremieux's racial Jewish activities are exemplified by the part he took in the Damascus Affair with Moses Montefiore, a Jew of England, when Jewry successfully but unconvincingly silenced the accusation of ritual murder committed upon the Catholic priest, Father Thomas, at Damascus, in 1840. He had a prominent share in the foundation and development of the *Alliance Israelite Universelle.* Officially founded in 1860, this international union of disseminated Jewry had, as we know, existed for centuries, but after the Damascus affair, the Jewish leaders knew that they had attained sufficient power to feel enabled to show to the whole world that although the civil rights they enjoyed had been granted them by different countries, the real allegiance of each and every one of them was due to their Jewish nationality.

---

[4] Gaston Cremieux, another member of the same family (1836-1871) was an active Socialist and Revolutionary. He participated in the Paris Commune and was court-martialled and executed in 1871.

The Masonic activities of Adolphe Cremieux were many and powerful. His connection with Louis Bonaparte and his brother, who both were affiliated to the Carbonari, would suggest that he was also connected with this secret society. But it is a fact that Cremieux belonged to the Lodge of Mizraim, the Scottish Rite, and also the Grand Orient. He was in the Supreme Council of the Order of Mizraim and, at the death of Viennet, in whose person the Grand Orient and the Scottish Rite had been united, Cremieux succeeded him as Grand Master.

The political activities of Cremieux are also manifold and varied. In his youth, he had been an admirer of Napoleon I and later became an intimate friend as well as the legal adviser of the Bonaparte family and joined their party which was undermining the government of Louis Philippe, son of Philippe " Egalite "

In 1848, he was one of the most ardent supporters of Louis Napoleon and took an active part in the overthrow of Louis Philippe. He had been one of the foremost speakers in the association known as the *Campagne des Banquets* which had done so much to promote the Revolution of Feb. 1848.

He became a member of the provisional government and was appointed Minister of Justice. He strongly advocated the candidature of his friend, Louis Napoleon, for the post of President of the French Republic. Cremieux had had hopes of being made Chief Executive under Louis Napoleon and thus play in France the same role which Disraeli played in England, that is ruling the country from behind the scenes. Both Disraeli and Cremieux had the same financial backing, namely the wealth of the Rothschilds and Montefiores who, in London, were friends of Disraeli and, in Paris, friends of Cremieux. Cremieux was therefore keenly disappointed when General Cavaignac was appointed Prime Minister in the Republican Government of Louis Napoleon, and as a revenge, he directed his activities against the Prince President, his former friend. He became so hostile to him, that in 1851, after the Coup d'Etat of December 2, by which Louis Napoleon recreated the Empire and assumed the title of Napoleon III, Cremieux was imprisoned at Vincennes and Mazas. After his release, he made himself the champion and defender of the Communist associates of Karl Marx, the revolutionaries Louis Blanc, Ledru Rollin, Pierre Leroux and others.

His untiring efforts were directed against the Empire in general and Napoleon III in particular, and he consorted with all the Emperor's enemies, among them, Maurice Joly, the author of the *Dialogue between Machiavelli and Montesquieu.* After the overthrow of Napoleon III and the defeat of France at the hands of Germany in 1871, and the establishment of the Republic, Cremieux once more took an open part in the political affairs of the country.

He pushed to the front his former secretary Gambetta and effectively directed him in his shady negotiations with Bismarck, the latter himself being guided by the Jew Bamberger (1852-1899), a former revolutionist of 1848, but who, having found refuge in France, had been for many years manager in Paris of the Jewish Bank Bischoffsheim and Goldschmidt. He was one of Cremieux's friends, and the war could not affect the ties linking the Jews united in the *Alliance Israelite Universelle.*

From 1871 until his death, it can be safely asserted that Cremieux as President of the *Alliance Israelite Universelle* and Grand Master of the *Scottish Rile.* exercised a tremendous influence upon the anti-religious campaign which followed the Franco-Prussian War. In this as in all his lifelong activities, Cremieux was only obeying the teachings of the Talmud and trying to destroy every religion but that contained in Judaism. His favourite theme was that there should be only one cult — and that cult should be Jewish. At a general assembly of the *Alliance Israelite Universelle,* on May 31 1864, Cremieux had said : " The Alliance is not limited to our cult, it voices its appeal to all cults and wants to penetrate in all the religions as it has penetrated into all countries. Let us endeavour boldly to bring about the union of all cults under one flag of Union and Progress. Such is the slogan of humanity. "[5]

One cult, one flag ! Are the *Protocols of the Wise Men of Zion* or the speeches of Machiavelli in Joly's book anything but a lengthy exposition of the ideas briefly expressed by Cremieux ? His activities are one of the clearest examples of Jewish internationalism and Jewish efforts for the realization of the Messianic ideal.

The *Alliance Israelite Universelle* issued from the Rite of Mizraim plus Universal Freemasonry, subsidized by International Finance, would spell the doom of Christian civilization, the destruction of nationalism, the death of nations upon whose ruin has been erected

---

5. " Union and Progress " was the name given to several revolutionary associations and also to several Masonic Lodges.

a new Temple of Solomon, containing the treasures and material wealth of the whole world, and over which is placed the six pointed star of ZIONISM.[6]

Leon Gambetta (1838-1882) an Italian Jew, obtained French naturalization on Oct. 29, 1859, and in 1862 became the secretary of Cremieux. He was *Depute* in 1869, Dictator of National Defence, head of the War Office and Minister of the Interior after the Commune of 1870 and Dictator again after the Coup d'Etat of the President of the Republic Marshal MacMahon in 1877.

The following quotation from a letter which he wrote to his father on June 22, 1863 is interesting.

" My chief, Maitre Cremieux, treats me as if I were his adopted son, and if within three years time he is elected a deputy (which is quite possible) my career will be settled once and for all. I must devote myself to law and politics, and then I may hope to triumph over all obstacles and finally to attain great honours. "[7]

---

[6] The means for the attainment of Crémieux's ambition are set forth in a book entitled *Paris, Capitale des Religions,* by Jean Izoulet.

[7] P. B. Gheusi, *Gambetta, Life and Letters,* p. 207.

CHAPTER LXIII

THE RIBBON SOCIETY

(ROMAN CATHOLIC)

(Founded 1805)

This society appeared about 1805-1807.

We are again indebted to Captain Pollard for a sketch of its history : " After the suppression of the United Irishmen the society, as such, disappeared, but within a year or two we find a renaissance of the old agrarian Catholic secret societies which had been absorbed into the Defenders and thence into the United Irishmen. The provisions of the Insurrection Act which forbade the possession of arms and enforced a curfew at nightfall were in operation until 1805, when with its relaxation appears the *Ribbon Society...* In different counties local organizations of Ribbon men called themselves by different titles, such as the Threshers, the Carders, the Molly Maguires, Rockites, Caravats, Shanavests, Pauddeen Gar's men and the like. "[1]

The Ribbon Society " continued the system of organization used by the United Irishmen. A lodge was limited to forty members and they met as a rule in the fields by night, armed sentinels being posted to guard the spot. The lodge was under a Master or Body Master, who controlled three committee-men, each of whom was responsible for twelve members of the lodge. The Masters were represented on divisional committees allocated on the basis of four or more divisions to a geographical county. The divisional committees were controlled by Parish Masters, who in turn were represented on the County Council, which contributed two delegates to the National Board.[2]

---

[1] Pollard, *The Secret Societies of Ireland,* p. 32.

" As Whiteboys they certainly were at political and practical war with the Orangemen, and throughout their activities appear to have been criminal and anti-social ; outrage, terrorism and murder being their only methods of political conversion. "[3]

---

[2] Pollard, *op. cit.*, p. 35.

[3] *Ibid.*, p. 265.

For root of this movement see Chapter LV.

CHAPTER LXIV

THE CERNEAU RITE

(ANCIENT AND ACCEPTED SCOTTISH RITE)

(Founded 1808)

The following article is quoted in part from an article specifically written by Josiah H. Drummond 33° in *The History Of Freemasonry and Concordant Orders* by Stillson and Hughan :[1]

" In 1806 Joseph Cerneau appeared in New York; he had been a member of Masonic bodies in the West Indies ; he had a patent from Mathieu Dupotet certifying that he had received the degrees of the Scottish Rite of Heredom, and authorizing him to confer the degrees up to the Twenty-fourth and organize bodies in the northern part of Cuba, and to confer the Twenty-fifth on one person in each year, the Twenty-fifth being then the highest degree of the Rite and the highest Cerneau had received, according to his patent. Cerneau had his patent from Dupotet, who had his from Germain Hacquet, who had his from Du Plessis, who had his from Prevost in 1790, who had his from Francken. "[2]

---

[1] Page 812 *et seq.*

[2] Yarker traces Cerneau's patent to Henri Martin given by the Grand Lodge of France to supersede that of Morin in 1766. See *The Arcane Schools,* p. 482.

In 1808 he called a grand consistory of the Rite of Heredom having jurisdiction over 25 degrees.

" But already a controversy had arisen with parties acting under, or deriving their powers from, the Supreme Council at Charleston. We may well believe that Cerneau and his associates soon recognized the impossibility of maintaining successfully a rite of *twenty-fwe* degrees against one of *thirty-three* degrees... The Thirty-third degree as now existing originated at Charleston in 1801 ; and no evidence has been found that Cerneau ever received it. "

Cerneau seems however to have overlooked the obvious expedient of creating a 34th degree !

" The Charleston body did not recognize the Cerneau Bodies even by silent acquiescence ; after investigation by a special Deputy, it declared, early in 1814, Cerneau to be an impostor, and his organizations illegal and clearly clandestine. "

" Bitter controversies followed. " Lodges which soon died were opened at Charleston. Others at New Orleans eked out a precarious existence under James Foulhouze. " Foulhouze had received the Thirty-third degree from the Grand Orient of France, which expelled him, Feb. 4, 1859, for a scurrilous publication which he issued in answer to one of its decrees. This Supreme Council became dormant; but, in 1867, it was revived with Eugene Chassaignac at its head ; in 1868 it was recognized by the Grand Orient of France, and unless it has recently gone out of existence, the Grand-Orient to-day recognizes a so-called Supreme Council in New Orleans as a lawful body, and its members as possessing the Thirty-third degree ! "

In 1826 the Morgan murder occurred and Cerneau left for France. De Witt Clinton, Governor of New York, had been Deputy Grand Commander of the Sovereign Consistory from 1811 to 1823 when he was elected Grand Commander.

A number of sporadic revivals of this rite occurred during the ensuing 40 years.

They were known as —

The Hicks Rite, founded in 1832 by Comte de St. Laurent.

The First Atwood Body, founded about 1837 by Henry C. Atwood.

The Cross Body, founded about 1851 by Jeremy L. Cross.

The Second Atwood Body, founded about 1853.

It was not till 1867 that peace was established between the three *de facto* Supreme Councils in the northern part of the United States. On that date they united and Josiah H. Drummond was elected Grand Commander.

After five years of peace, however, Henry J. Seymour, who had been expelled by the council of which he was a member, organized what he called a Supreme Council of which he was made Grand Commander, " but, on a visit to Europe in 1862, in his eagerness to obtain recognition, he unwittingly held Masonic communication with the Grand Orient of France, which created such a storm that he resigned his office, and since but little has been heard of that Supreme Council, although it probably still exists. "

" In 1881, Hopkins Thompson, an *Emeritus* member of the Supreme Council, assisted by a few Honorary members and by a Sublime Prince of the Royal Secret, who is believed by many to have been the mainspring of the movement, all of whom had taken the oath of fealty to the Supreme Council, formed an association, which they are pleased to call the Cerneau Supreme Council ' revived '. "

" This body claims jurisdiction over the South, the claim to which was abandoned, before 1866, by unanimous vote, including Thompson's ! It denies the legality of the Southern Supreme Council, from which alone the *Thirty-third* degree came, and which Thompson by his vote recognized and whose recognition and fraternal support, he, with his associates, sought to obtain. "[3]

The visit to Europe of Henry J. Seymour referred to in the above quotation had serious consequences. We find that Seymour at that time was in communication with John Yarker with whom he collaborated in founding the Ancient and Primitive Rite, the ramifications of which reach to all the branches of occult illuminism such as Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia, Memphis and Mizraim, Ancient Order of Oriental Templars, etc.

---

3. Stillson and Hughan, *op. cit.*, p. 828.

CHAPTER LXV

CARBONARISM
(THE ALTA VENDITA)
(HAUTE VENTE D'ITALIE)

(Alta Vendita [Lodge] Founded 1809)

The Carbonari had existed internationally, it is said, under different names since the days of Francis I, King of France, but not till the year 1815 did we begin to hear of its individual historical achievements.

The following is a translation of one of the secret official documents published in Italy by the highest authority of the order, for the guidance of the active head-centres of Masonry in 1818, under the title of : *Permanent Instructions, or Practical Code of Rules*; *Guide for the Heads of the Highest Grades of Masonry*[1]. The original Italian document was given to Nubio, one of the Supreme Vendita (Alta Vendita) in 1824, when he was sent to Rome to carry it into effect, and it was to this instruction that he referred when he wrote from Forli to Signor Volpi : " As I have written to you before, I am appointed to demoralise the education of the youth of the Church". When these documents were lost, the Freemasons offered fabulous sums for their recovery. These secret *Instructions,* intended only for a chosen few Masons of heavy calibre, were written three years after what was called the " Restoration " of 1815, which was brought about by a number of veteran Freemasons, all born in the past century, who had preceded, made, planned, and passed through the French Revolution of 1789. They were rife with the republican notions of France and Italy. They had survived their works, and had been in a great measure defeated, or at least modified, by Napoleon, in whose hands they were like a boat in the hands of new pilots, and, stunned by the many changes, were motionless for a time. In 1815, brought, as it were, in presence of a new world, they took breath and courage, and gathering up the broken threads of the tangled skein, determined to spend the rest of their lives in restoring, if possible, the web commenced in 1789 and 1783. The principal author was supposed to be a man of the name of Filippo Buonarotti, one of the great correspondents of Nubio. From his biography, given in the eighth volume of the *Mondo Segreto di Castro,* he would appear to have been an apt pupil and follower of Nubio's principle, *Ama nesciri et pro nihilo computari.* He was born at Pisa in 1761, was a friend of Robespierre, and an enemy of Napoleon, against whom he always conspired. He was a centre in Paris for both French and Italian Carbonari. He had been one of the principals in 1821,[2] and in 1830 founded the sect of the Apofesimeni. In a published record, entitled *Bologna of the New Secret Society,* 1835, we find the name of a young man, Giuseppe Petroni, afterwards a celebrated Mazzinian, and now (1878) Grand Master Aggunto of

---

[1] Gargano, *Irish and English Freemasons and their Foreign Brothers,* p. 62, published 1878.

---

[2] *Carbonari conspiracy of Belforl and La Rochelle,* p. 295.

Roman Masonry of the Via della Valle, who was likewise one of this noble band. My readers may now thoroughly understand the character of the authors of this secret and curious document of the *Instructions.* It is a resume and summary, expressed in the clearest terms, of the aim of Freemasonry and the means by which it is attained ; Freemasonry antecedent to the French Revolution; Freemasonry during the French Revolution ; Freemasonry revived after the Restoration. Freemasonry, to-day, is one and the same, using the same means to work out the same end and object.

" So these old conspirators of the past century wakened up in 1815 from their long sleep more energetic than ever, and as a first step towards reviving their secret society work, wrote the following *Permanent Instructions,* as a guide for the Higher initiated who were chosen to command the whole Masonic movement, especially in Italy : —

" Now that we are constituted in an active body, and that our Order begins to reign as well in places most remote as in those that are nearest our centre, one great thought arises, a thought that has always greatly pre-occupied the men who aspire to the universal regeneration of the world, that thought is, the Liberation of Italy, for from Italy shall one day issue the freedom of the entire world — a Republic of Fraternity, Harmony, and Humanity. This great idea is not yet comprehended by our brothers of France. They believe that revolutionary Italy can only plot in the shade, and accomplish the stabbing of a few spies, or traitors, meantime bearing patiently the yoke of facts accomplished elsewhere, for Italy, but without Italy. This error has been very fatal to us. It is useless to combat it with words which would **only** propagate more. It is necessary to annihilate it with facts. And in the midst of anxieties, which agitate the most vigorous spirits of 'our society, one there is that can never be forgotten. The Papacy ever exercises a decisive influence over the lot of Italy. With the arm, the voice, the pen, of its innumerable bishops, monks, nuns, and faithful of all latitudes, the Pope finds everywhere persons enthusiastically prepared for sacrifice, and even for martyrdom, friends who would die for him, or sacrifice all for his love. It is a mighty lever, the full power of which few Popes understood, and which has as yet been used but partially. The question of to-day is not the reconstruction of a momentarily weakened power.

" Our final aim is that of Voltaire and of the French Revolution, — the complete annihilation of Catholicism, and ultimately of Christianity. Were Christianity to survive, even upon the ruins of Rome, it would, a little later on, revive and live. We must now consider how to reach our end, with certainty, not cheating ourselves with delusions, which would prolong indefinitely, and probably compromise, the ultimate success of our cause.

" Hearken not to those boastful and vainglorious French, and thick headed Germans, and hypochondriacal Englishmen, who seem to think it possible to end Catholicism, at one time by an obscene song, at another by an absurd sophism, and again by a contemptible sarcasm. Catholicism has a vitality which survives such attacks with ease. She has seen adversaries more implacable and more terrible far, and sometimes has taken a malicious pleasure in baptising with holy water the most rabid amongst them. We may therefore allow our brethren in those countries to work off their frenzy of anti-catholic zeal, allow them to ridicule our Madonnas and our apparent devotion. Under this cloak, we may conspire at our convenience, and arrive, little by little, at our ultimate aim.

" Therefore, the Papacy has been for seventeen hundred years interwoven with the history of Italy. Italy can neither breathe nor move without the leave of the Supreme Pontiff. With him, she has the hundred arms of Briareus ; without him, she is condemned to a lamentable impotency, and to divisions and hostility, from the foot of the Alps to the last pass of the Appennines. Such a state of things must not remain. It is necessary to seek a remedy. Very well. The remedy is at hand. The Pope, whoever he may be, will never enter into a secret society. It then becomes the duty of the Secret Society to make the first advance to the Church and to the Pope, with the object of conquering both. The work for which we gird ourselves up, is not the work of a day, nor of a month, nor of a year.

" It may last for many years, perhaps for a century; in our ranks the soldier dies, but the war is continued. We do not at present intend to gain the Pope to our cause, nor to make him a neophyte to our principles, or a propagator of our ideas. Such would be an insane dream. Even should it happen that any Cardinal, or any Prelate, of his own will, or by deception, should share in our secrets, such would not be a reason for desiring his exaltation to the Chair of Peter. Nay, his very exaltation would be our ruin; for this reason that, his apostasy being prompted by his ambition alone, that very ambition of power would necessarily impel him to sacrifice us.

" Catholics ! what must we consider Freemasonry, when Freemasons themselves pronounce it an apostasy from Catholicity, and foresee that a power fully acquainted with them and their machinations would, as a consequence, seek to crush them.

" That which we should seek, that which we should await, as the Jews await a Messiah, is a Pope according to our wants. An Alexander VI would not suit us, for he never erred in religious doctrine ; a Pope Borgia would not suit us, for he was excommunicated by all the thinking philosophers and unbelievers for the vigour with which he defended the Church. We require a Pope for ourselves, if such a Pope were possible. With such a one we should march more securely to the storming of the Church than with all the little books of our French and English brothers.

" And why ? Because it were useless to seek with these alone to split the rock upon which God has built his Church. We should not want the vinegar of Hannibal, nor gunpowder, nor even our arms, if we had but the little finger of the successor of Peter engaged in the plot ; that little finger would avail us more for our crusade than all the Urbans II and St. Bernards for the crusade of Christianity. We trust that we may yet attain this supreme object of our efforts.

" But when ? and how ? The unknown cannot yet be seen. Nevertheless, as[1] nothing should move us from our mapped-out plan, we must labour at our newly-commenced work as if tomorrow were to crown it with success. We wish, in this Instruction, which should be kept concealed from those simply initiated, to give advice to the rulers of the Supreme Vendita, which they, in turn, should inculcate in the brethren by means of *Insegnamento*, or Memorandum.

" Little can be done with old Cardinals and with prelates of decided character. Such incorrigibles must be left to the school of Gonsalvi, and in our magazines of popularity and unpopularity, we must find the means to utilize, or ridicule, power in their hands. A well invented report must be spread with tact amongst good Christian families : such a Cardinal, for instance, is a miser : such a prelate is licentious ; such an official is a freethinker, an infidel, a Freemason, and so on in the same strain. These things will spread quickly to the cafes, thence to the squares, and one report is sometimes enough to ruin a man.

" If a prelate, or bishop, arrive in a province from Rome, to celebrate or officiate at some public function, it is necessary at once to become acquainted with his character, his antecedents, his temperament, his defects — especially his defects. If he should be our enemy — an Albani, a Pallotta, a Bernetti, a Delia Genga, a Rivarola — at once trap him, entangle him in all the nets and snares you can. Give him a character which must horrify the young people and the women ; describe him as cruel, heartless, and bloodthirsty ; relate some atrocious transaction which will easily cause a sensation amongst the people. The foreign newspapers will learn and copy these facts, which they will know how to embellish and colour according to their usual style.

" For respect due to truth show, or better still, quote from some respectable fool as having quoted the number of the journal which has given the names, acts and doings of these personages. As in England and in France, so also in Italy there will be no lack of writers who well know how to tell lies for the good cause, and have no difficulty in doing so. One newspaper publishing the name of a Monsignor Delegate, His Excellency, or Eminence, or Lord Justice, will be quite sufficient proof for the people ; they will require no other. The people here around us in Italy are in the infancy of Liberalism. At present they believe in the Liberals, after a little they will believe in anything. "

Modern Carbonarism was founded in 1815 by Maghella, a native of Genoa, who, at the time when Joachim Murat became King of the two Sicilies, was a subordinate of Saliceti, the Neapolitan Minister of

Police. He was a Freemason, who exempted from initiation and probation all Freemasons who desired to become Carbonari. Any one who has read the statutes and ritual of Carbonarism will see that it is one and the same as that of Masonry.[3]

A sequence of events pertaining to Carbonarism can be traced by the perusal of several works from which we quote :

At a meeting held on Oct. 13th 1820 by the Grand Secret Consistory, the Orient of Scotland was recognized. The two Consistories of Masonry in France and in Italy and that of the Sublime Carbonari were put into communication and their co-operation assured.[4]

The high ruling grades of the Carbonari appear to have been those of *Sublime Maître Parfait*, above which was still another that of the *Sublime Elus.*[5]

The Alta Vendita constituted the Supreme Directory of the Carbonari and was led by a group of Italian noblemen, amongst whom a prince, " the profoundest of initiates, was charged as Inspector General of the Order. "

Piccolo Tigre, a certain nondescript Jew, rushed about Europe obeying orders and presumably giving them, but what he actually did has remained a mystery.

Giuseppe Mazzini had been initiated Carbonaro in 1827.[6] Some time after, Carbonarism combined, or rather coalesced, with the Society known as *Young Italy* led by Mazzini whose aims were identical with those of the Carbonari.

---

[3] Michael di Gargano, *op. cit.*

[4] *Revue Internationale des Societes Secretes*, Sept. 2nd 1928, p. 809.

[5] *Ibid.,* p. 808.

[6] Arrigo Solmi, *The Making of Modern Italy,* p. 25.

Young Italy, Young Poland, Young England, Young Switzerland, Young Ireland — all together *Young Europe* — all international movements of the same character working towards the same end, viz. the supremacy of the Masters.

The Guelphic Knights, whose object was the independence of Italy, to be effected by means of all the secret societies of the country under their leadership, found able helpers in the Carbonari.

" The Chiefs of the Carbonari were also chiefs among the Guelphs ; but only those that had distinct offices among the Carbonari could be admitted among the Guelphs. There can be no doubt that the Carbonari when the sect had become very numerous, partly sheltered themselves under the designation of Guelphs and Adelphi or Independents, by affiliating themselves to these societies. " [7]

At one time the support of the Carbonari was offered by Maghella to Murat with the advice to declare against Napoleon and to proclaim the independence of Italy but Murat's subsequent proscription of the sect induced it to seek the support of England. The Bourbons and Lord William Bentinck favoured it while Murat ordered its extermination. Some of its leaders indeed perished but shortly afterwards the society was reorganized and a schismatic sect calling itself *Calderari* (Braziers) came into being. [8]

7. Heckethorn, *Secret Societies of all Ages and Countries,* vol. II, p. 145.
8. *Ibid.*, pp. 110-111.

For the root of this movement see Chapter LIII.

For the development of this movement see Chapters LXX, LXXI, XCIII.

CHAPTER LXVI

THE MANCHESTER UNITY OF ODDFELLOWS ENGLAND

(Founded 1810)

We find the following in the article on Oddfellows, in *Hastings' Encyclopaedia of Religions and Ethics.*

" R. W. Moffrey *(Century* p. 18) fixes the year 1810 as that in which the Manchester Unity of Oddfellows started, though it was not till 1814 that the minutes of its Grand Committees began to be printed... however Spry *(Hist. of Oddfellowship* p. 16) gives minutes of a meeting of a ' lodge ' No. 9, of the Order of Oddfellows, dated 12th March 1748, from which it would seem that eight previous lodges had been established before that date. "

For the connection of this order with Freemasonry see Chapter XXVIII.

We also note the following : —

" The position of Friendly Societies generally before the introduction of National Insurance is shown in the report of the Chief Registrar of Friendly Societies for the year ending 31st December 1906 *(Parliamentary Papers of Session* 1907, n° 49, xi pp. 16-18). "

According to this report, we find that the order had 1,035,785 members and the income of the benefit funds was £1,703,674.

The Oddfellows resisted any proposal of State control or State interference with the working of Friendly Societies.

The English Order has four degrees.

CHAPTER LXVII

THE HETAIRIA OF GREECE

(ETHERISTS)

(Founded 1814)

Hetairia was the Greek name for societies, organizations or associations. In ancient Greece the name *hetairia* applied to companies in the army. In more modern times, it was used for societies of learning, or commercial purposes and also for political secret societies.

It is in connection with the latter that we are concerned. While Greece was under Turkish dominion, the national aspirations of its people could be vented in secret only. The breath of revolution which swept Europe during the latter part of the 18th century stirred some of the Greek patriots whose aims was the overthrow of the Turkish power. The main leader at that time was Constantin Rhygas (1754-1798).

He formed the first secret societies of *Hetairias* which were mainly composed of Klephtes or bandits. Bound by oath, each member of the society was to use all means, assassination included, to free Greece. The execution of Rhygas drove the *hetairias* to seek cover but in 1814, a chief lodge was re-formed in Odessa under the name of *Hetairia phileke.* Its avowed aim was the liberation of Greece, and its main seat was in Russia. Every candidate took an oath, as in all secret societies, and knew no one beyond his initiator and sponsor. Funds, collected and administered by a superior council directing all the lodges, were kept in Russia.

When a sufficient number of *Hetairias* were organized and a chief needed to direct the movement against Turkey, Count Capo d'Istria, (John, 1776-1831) a Greek, minister in Russia under the Tzar Alexander I, and author of the text of the Holy Alliance was asked to take the lead but refused, and Alexander Ypsilanti was nominated. The insurrection broke out in 1821.

Among the most prominent members of the *Hetairia* we find Alexander Mavrocordato (1791-1865) who was under the influence of England and was also the friend of Byron whom he had met in Missolonghi in 1822. From him he received funds for the purchase of arms to the extent of one hundred thousand francs. It is related that Lord Byron died in his arms at Missolonghi in 1824. Among the supporters of the London Branch of the Philhellenic Committee were Jeremy Bentham, Sir Francis Burdett, Lord Erskine, Lord Ebrington, Sir John Cam Hobhouse, (afterwards Lord Brougham) Joseph Hume, Sir James Mackintosh and Lord John Russell. These foreign committees provided arms, money and volunteers.

The following details concerning the organization of the *Hetairia* of Greece are set forth in *The Secret Societies of the European Revolution,* by Thomas Frost (Vol. II, page 47 *et seq.).*

" Less simple than that of the Carbonari, the system rather resembled that of the Illuminati in the number of grades and relation of the branch societies to each other. "

There were five grades namely : —

The Adelphoi (Brothers, who took an oath of secrecy but ignored the aims of the society),

The Systemenoi (Bachelors, who knew that Greece was to be freed by revolution),

The Priests of Eleusis,

The Prelates (knowing all the secrets),

The Grand Arch (The supreme directing control of 12 members).

" Early in 1827 a motion was unanimously adopted by the Senate favouring the placing of Greece under the protection of Great Britain. " This followed a secret interview of Mavrocordato with Sir Stratford Canning, but Mavrocordato retired from public life " on the failure of his project for the establishment of a constitutional kingdom under British protection."

" Hostilities in Greece were finally terminated, in the summer of 1828, by a convention concluded at Alexandria between Admiral Codrington and Mehemet Ali, by which the latter agreed to withdraw the Egyptian troops from the Morea. "

The arbitrary government of Capo d'Istria ended on October 24, 1831, when he was assassinated.

CHAPTER LXVIII

THE HUNG SOCIETY OF CHINA

(Founded about 1815)

This society has also been known as The Triad Society, The Ghee Hon, The Society of Heaven and Earth (T'in Tei Hui), Ts'ing-lin-Kiu, The San-ho-hoei and the Sam-ho-hui.

After the Emperor Kang Hsi issued a Sacred Edict in 1662, ordering the suppression of Buddhism and Taoism in China, the Hung and the White Lotus, the latter a Taoist mystical society also known by the name " White Lily ", are said to have united to fight the Manchu Dynasty as their common enemy.

They are supposed to have finally merged towards 1815 as a secret political occult organization.

In 1851 the Hung broke into open revolt against the Manchus. This is known as the Taiping Revolt and is often alluded to as " The Triad War ". It was led by a village schoolmaster called Hung who, after his defeat by Gordon in 1864, committed suicide.

Since the Taiping revolt the Society has been less conspicuous but it is supposed nevertheless to have inspired the successful revolution which in 1911 overthrew the Manchu Dynasty and established the Republic of which Dr. Sun Yat-Sen assumed the presidency on January 1, 1912.

Dr. Sun Yat-Sen, nominally a Christian, was a member of the Hung Society, and his first official action as the first President of the Chinese Republic was to enable Yuan Shi-Kai to unite all parties under his presidency. He then accepted for himself the Presidency of Nanking. The people received his proclamation announcing these changes in front of the Ming tombs, and listened while he told the spirits of the Mings that the Manchu despotism, having faller, China was now a Republic.

The Hung [1] having been outlawed since 1890 in China as a terrorist organization, now, as a secret society, holds its meetings in the woods at night with the approaches well guarded.

The English branch of this society is at Liverpool where it operates as a mutual benefit and charitable institution.

I, A history of the Hung is given in *The Hung Society* by J. S. Ward and W. G. Sterling.

As the rights of citation from this book are withheld from the public we are unable to give quotations from it here, but we recommend the first twenty-two pages as of interest to historical students.

CHAPTER LXIX

RITE OF MEMPHIS

(Founded ***1815)***

This rite was founded in 1815 by Sam Honis (from Cairo), Gabriel Mathieu, Baron Dumas, Marquis de Laroque and Hippolite Labrunie.

The Grand Lodge Osiris in Paris was founded in 1839. Jacques Etienne Marconis was Grand Master.

In his *History of Freemasonry,* Freke-Gould states that " J. E. Marconis, Grand Hierophant, inaugurated the Rite in person at New York in 1857, and afterwards in 1862 chartered it as a Sovereign Sanctuary — by which body a charter was granted on Jan. 3rd, 1872, for another Sovereign Sanctuary in and for the British Islands whose officers were duly installed Oct. 8th in the same year. "

The order is now known in England as " The Ancient and Primitive Rite. "

On December 30, 1862, the rite of Memphis merged finally into the Grand Orient of France and in England, in 1875 under the name of Ancient and Primitive Rite, it amalgamated with that oi Mizraim which Gould informs us had no separate governing body in chat country.

In 1865, the Grand Orient reduced the original 97 degrees to 33.

A. E. Waite in *Devil Worship in France* outlines the later history of the rite in the following sentence :

" Garibaldi succeeded Jacques Etienne Marconis of Paris, becoming president of a confederation of the Rites which was brought about by Mr. John Yarker in the year 1881.[1]

---

[1] A. E. Waite, *Devil Worship in France,* p. 254.

CHAPTER LXX

THE CALDERARI

(Founded 1816)

The *Calderari del Contrapeso,* an offshoot of the Carbonari, came into prominence about 1816.

Their first organizer, The Prince of Canosa, became Minister of Police under Ferdinand, King of Naples, in December, 1819.

The Calderari were the sworn enemies of the Freemasons and Carbonari.

They took the following oath : —

" I, N. N., promise and swear upon the Trinity, as supreme director of the universe, upon this cross, and upon this steel, the avenging instrument of the perjured— to live and die in the Roman Catholic and Apostolic faith, and to defend with my blood this religion, and the society of True Friendship, the Calderari, to which I am about to belong. I swear never to offend, in honour, life, or property, the children of True Friendship ; I promise and swear to all the Knights, true friends, all possible succour that shall depend on me. I swear to initiate no person into the Society before I arrive at the 4th rank. I swear eternal hatred to all Masonry, and to its atrocious protectors ; as well as to all Jansenists, Materialists, Economists, and Illuminati. I swear, as I value my life, never to admit any of them into the Society of Friendship. Lastly, I swear, that if, through wickedness or levity, I suffer myself to commit perjury, I submit to the loss of life as the punishment of my error, and then to be burnt: and may my ashes, scattered to the wind, serve as an example to the children of Friendship throughout the whole world. And so help me God, for the happiness of my soul, and the repose of my conscience. "

1. *Secret Societies of Italy,* London, p. 71.
For root of this movement see Chapter LXV.
For development of this movement see Chapter CXXVI.

CHAPTER LXXI

FRENCH CARBONARISM

(Founded 1820)

The Masonic Lodge *Les Amis de la Verite* was founded in 1820 by Buchez, Flotard, Bazard and Joubert, all Freemasons, for political purposes. On a riot incited by members of this lodge a young man was killed. As a consequence of his death this lodge went out of existence.

One of its former members, Dugied, a Freemason, was initiated into the mysteries of Carbonarism while at Naples. [1] Having conceived the project of introducing this association into France he discussed the matter with another ex-member of the Ami's *de la Verite,* Flotard, and together they decided to put the idea into practice by taking as a nucleus of the new organization the remains of *Les Amis de la Verite.*

The society was organized as follows :—

The one " Haute Vente ", central " Ventes " and individual " Ventes " (lodges).

The "Haute Vente" was the committee of direction and action. Two members of the committee having found an adept, the adept would agree with them to form a " Vente ". The adept would become President one of the others censor, the other deputy, the role of the last being to keep in touch with the committee while allowing the president to believe that this committee was only a superior degree of the association; The censor's business was to inspect the work of the " Ventes ". These three chiefs were then required to annex 17 recruits, thus bringing the number of a lodge up to twenty. Thus constituted, this group was called a central " Vente ". Two of its m?mbers made below what had been made above them, forming an individual " Vente " of the first order, which, repeating the same process formed an ordinary individual " Vente " thus extending indefinitely the ramifications of the sect.

---

[1] Thomas Frost, *The Secret Societies of the European Revolution,* vol. II, p. 6.

A similar organization, but under different names, was adapted to the army. There the Haute Vente was called the Legion, the central Ventes, the Cohortes, the individual Ventes of the first order the Centuries ; and the ordinary individual Ventes the Manipules.

This double system was intended to puzzle the police, by making it believe that there was a separate association in the army. A further measure of precaution forbade a Carbonaro, under penalty of death, being affiliated to another Vente. This precaution was intended to prevent anyone entering different groups and thus possibly discovering and denouncing the secrets of the society.

The direction of the Ventes was indeed centralized but this unity of control was to be ignored by most of the members.

The Carbonari had no settled principles. It accepted all opinions provided these favoured the elimination of royal families. The imperialists and liberals formed important nuclei. The latter, the sons of middle-class parents, stirred against the government by patriotism, youth and class jealousy, dreamed only of grabbing the influence of the old families. As for what is called the people, it did not count in Carbonarism ; the illustrious role attributed to it later had not yet been invented !

To begin with, the Haute Yente counted only seven members : Dugied, Flotard, Bazard, Buchez, Joubert, Carriol, Limperani. Among them we find again the four heads of the *Amis de la Vérité.*

The Carbonari having prospered, the Haute Vente found it advisable to annex some notable characters. Among others, the Freemason General Lafayette, who, even in old age, had a childish weakness for popularity, accepted the offer to join the conspiracy.

Towards the end of 1820 the society had many branches, notably those of Bordeaux, Nantes, Toulouse, La Bochelle, Poitiers, Colmar, Belfort, etc.

The subversive efforts of this society culminated in an abortive attempt at Bevolution at La Bochelle, and the subsequent arrest of many of its principal members completed its nominal dissolution.

After the *debacle* at La Rochelle the *Amis de la Verite* merged into the *Amis du Peuple* which in turn, in 1832, became the *Droits de l'Homme.* After its unsuccessful attempt to assassinate the king, (Louis Philippe) in 1835 the remains of the *Droits de l'Homme* reorganized as the *Societe des Families* with Blanqui and Barbes as leaders. According to Lucien de la Hodde,[2] Carbonarism in France had ceased to exist by 1822, except for a few obstinates like Charles Teste, (a friend of Babeuf) and Buonarotti who remained faithful to the old organization. Lucien de la Hodde however, while following Carbonarism, lost sight of the Haute Vente which, working through Mazzini and the International Committee of London, directed its work of destruction in France through Ledru Rollin and Felix Pyat. After its collapse in 1836 the *Société des Families* became that of the *Saisons* (seasons) and it was a branch of this society, the *Société dissidents,* that served the purpose of the Haute Vente in 1848 by aiding in the terrorisation of Paris and the fall of the Monarchy.

---

[2] Lucien de la Hodde, *Histoire des Sociétés Secrètes.*

The self-appointed members of the provisional government of France after the abdication of the king were : — Dupont (de l'Eure) Member of the original Carbonari founded in 1820, Arago, Lamartine, Ledru Rollin, Garnier-Pagès, Marie, Cremieux.

Lucien de la Hodde was the agent of the French Secret Police, and for 8 years before the revolution of 1848 occupied an exalted position in the ranks of the Revolutionaries.

His conclusions are strangely at variance with the facts which he relates. On page 381, he tells how an indiscretion on the part of Caussidière, one of his associates, placed the blame of a conspiracy upon Ledru Rollin and, because Ledru Rollin calmly denied knowledge of the affair, de la Hodde accepts his statement without question.

Though a bona-fide student of the subject, it is quite evident that de la Hodde had failed to grasp the principle upon which Revolutionary organizations operate, viz : that of a body of dupes whose particular job is genuinely to believe that their organization is the executive one. Into this one all persons of doubtful revolutionary integrity are steered, and, in this branch of the machine, conscientiously attend to their business, while the real agents do their savage work.

For root of movement see Chapter LXV.

For development of movement see Chapters LXXXV, XCIII.

CHAPTER LXXII

MODERN KNIGHTS TEMPLAR

POLAND

(Founded 1822)

Heckethorn[1] tells us of a sect which arose in Poland in 1818 which he refers to as that of " National Freemasonry ", which borrowed the rites, degrees, and language of Freemasonry, but aimed at national independence. The society was open to persons of all classes, but sought chiefly to enlist soldiers and officials, so as to turn their technical knowledge to account in the day of the struggle. But though numerous, the society lasted only a few years : for disunion arose among the members, and it escaped total dissolution only by transformation. It altered its rites and ceremonies, and henceforth called itself the " Scythers ", in remembrance of the revolution of 1794, in which whole regiments, armed with scythes, had gone into battle.

They met in 1821 at Warsaw, and drew up a new revolutionary scheme, adopting at the same time the new denomination of " Patriotic Society". In the meanwhile, the students of the university of Wilna had formed themselves into a secret society which, however, was discovered by the Russian government and dissolved. In 1822, the Patriotic Society combined with the masonic rite of "Modern Templars", founded in Poland by Captain Maiewski; to the three rites of symbolical masonry was added a fourth, in which the initiated swore to do all in his power towards the liberation of his country. These combined societies brought about the insurrection of 1830. In 1834 was established the society of " Young Poland " by Simon Konarski.

---

[1] Heckethorn. *Secret Societies of All Ages and Countries,* vol. II, p. 175.

Simon Konarski (1808-1839) was a young Polish patriot and poet, one of the most active members of the Young Poland movement founded by Joseph Mazzini in 1834. He travelled to France, England and Belgium and, in the latter country, namely in Brussels, was in constant touch with Lelewel who had been chosen by Mazzini to become the link between himself and the Polish revolutionists. In Paris, the Young Poland movement was directed by Zwierkowsky.

Simon Konarski was seized by the Russian authorities and executed in 1839 at Wilna.

CHAPTER LXXIII

THE ST. PATRICK BOYS

(Founded 1825)

As regards this organization, Pollard writes " In 1825 the name of the Ribbon men was changed officially to the *St. Patrick's Fraternal Organization,* otherwise known as ihe *St. Patrick's Boys.* This change was essential as, like their predecessors the White Boys, [1] the eminently Catholic Association of Ribbon men had now been excommunicated by the Catholic Church. " [2]

---

[1] Also known as Levellers.

[2] Pollard, *Secret Societies of Ireland,* p. 37.

CHAPTER LXXIV

BRAHMO SOMAJ

(Founded 1830)

The *Brahmo Somaj* movement, also called Brahmoism or Brahmaism, was founded by Rajah Ram Mohun Roy (1774-1833), in 1830.

Its main object was to fight idolatrous rites and practices, and, by many, it has been described as a " Hindu Unitarian Church. "

The chief achievement of Ram Mohun Roy was the abolition by Lord William Bentinck of the practice of " suttee " (sacrifice of the widow on the funeral pyre of her husband).

Ram Mohun Roy's principles were Theistic. He had also for several years studied Lamaism in the Himalayas. Having come to England in 1830, he was received with much honour by many sections of society and entertained by Louis Philippe. He was considered a great authority by all those who at that time were conducting spiritualist and psychic researches. He died at Bristol.

A great impulse was given to the Brahmo Somaj by Debendra Nath Tagore (also written Devendranath Takur) who had joined it in 1842 and is considered as its second founder.

Owing to his efforts, the institution became purely Theistic, giving up the authority of the Yedas and eliminating the Vedantic element from the Brahmic covenant. In 1856, Debendra Nath Tagore had also gone to the Himalayas where he spent three years as a disciple of the Tibetan Lamas. Later, he was joined in his work by his friend Keshub Chunder Sen who, however, in 1863, devoured by the ambition of becoming sole leader, attacked the Somaj, heading what one might call the revolt of the " Young Brahmaists " and with his followers seceded from the Mother organization.

The schism gave rise to the formation of another Somaj which was directed by Keshub Chunder Sen under the name Somaj of India, whereas the former organization, remaining under the leadership of Debendra Nath Tagore, was called Adi Samaj or Original Church. It was also named " Conservative ", in opposition to the new institution termed " Progressive ".

Keshub Chunder Sen retained power in his organization ; the foundation stone of the Somaj of India Church was laid at Jhamapukur in Calcutta, in 1868. In 1870 he journeyed to England where he was enthusiastically received by the spiritualist centres of the day, and succeeded in exciting much interest in the political, social and religious affairs of India. In 1878, his disregard for the rules of the Somaj regarding Hindu marriages which he infringed in the matter of the wedding of his own daughter to the young Maharajah of Kuch Behar, caused another split in the ranks of the Somaj of India. The dissidents then formed the Sadharan Brahmo Somaj.

The career of Keshub Chunder Sen must be followed with interest by students of Theosophy. Therein will they find many of the odd principles and injunctions laid down by H. P. Blavatsky and Annie Besant. For instance, the theocratic system was that promoted by Keshub Chunder Sen in his efforts to found a universal religion which would unite all creeds and symbols ; the Christian Cross, the Crescent, the Vedic Om, the Saiva's trident and the Vaishnava's Khunti. By means of imaginary pilgrimages, he led his adherents successively to the shrines of Moses, Buddha, to the Himalayan heights and Lama teachers, to Jesus and to Mahomet.

Similarly to Annie Besant's Khrishnamurti, he allowed himself to be worshipped as the *Saviour of Sinners* ; his theory was the reincarnation of Great Men of which he was one. Further, he complacently allowed his followers to raise him to the dignity of a deity. As the Kheshub Chunder Sen's worship increased, there grew also the dogma of Divine Injunction. A salient feature of Keshub's teaching was the belief or blind faith in the revelations claimed to have been made to invisible teachers and spiritual guides and exaction of blind obedience to their commands. We are forcibly reminded of the claim made by H. P. Blavatsky to her followers to sign their blind acceptance of all orders presumably received from invisible masters like her Koot Hoomi.

Another feature which, later, distinguished Keshub Chunder Sen's devotees was the " Bhakti " side of their religion. Unlike " Yoga ", the old Hindu type of religious meditation or contemplation, " Bhakti ", which has been chiefly developed by the followers of Chaytania in India, is a manifestation of religious frenzy. It spurns the aspiration to approach God by concentration of thought and desire as well as silent communion, which they deem unprofitable and vain. The philosophy of " Bhakti " is that the love of God must be strong to the point of being maddening. It therefore induces dancing, sobbing, swooning. The more frenzied the manifestations, the greater the religious perfection. A great Bhakta is one who, like the founder of the school, shows the greatest religious madness.

Women devotees of Keshub Chunder Sen's following were formed into a sisterhood in 1881 and one hears of " ladies' journies to the Spirit land ". The readers of " Inquire Within " [1] will remember the description of " journeys in the Astral " claimed to have been accomplished by women adepts of the Stella Matutina Order. Soon after, also in 1881, young men were likewise formed into a brotherhood and were initiated into different holy orders. In both cases, the number of initiates was 11. The ceremony of initiation was called New Horn, Sacred Fire or Blazing Agni. Most of the rites are found in the different branches of Theosophy and Anthroposophy, all centred around this sacred fire also named Kundalini.

In 1880, Keshub Chunder Sen had given his organization another name, that of " The New Dispensation ".

It is in the *Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia* that one must seek the amalgamation of Jewish Cabala magic and Hindu magic. The latter swept over Europe with the spread of Theosophy and flourished particularly in England. There it had found a ground in 1830 with the teachings given by Ram Mohun Roy to the spiritualists of that day with whom he had formed a Brahmo Somaj circle.

[1] " Inquire 'within ", *Light bearers of Darkness.*

For root of this movement see Chapter XIV.

For development of this movement see Chapters CX and CXXI.

CHAPTER LXXV

THE MORMONS

(Founded 1830)

Soon after the establishment of Mormonism its founder, Joseph Smith, conceived the idea of establishing a Masonic super rite.

In M. R. Werner's book *Brigham Young* (page 62) the following remark makes this evident.

" Masonry was always popular with the Mormons until Joseph Smith claimed that an angel of the Lord had brought him the lost key-words of several degrees, enabling him to progress further than the highest Masons. The charter of the Mormon lodge was then taken away by the Grand Lodge ".

Joseph Smith, applying his powers of mediumship towards the realization of the ambitious project nurtured by General Pepe, Mazzini and others for the establishment of a super rite, was not necessarily acceptable to the Masonic leaders of his time.

Thus as a Mason he failed but as the founder of a Masonic sect he succeeded.

So much has already been written about the sect of the Mormons that we confine ourselves here to a short sketch of opinion and descriptions given by various authors. The following is extracted from *The Encyclopaedia Britannica,* 9th Edition.

" This is a religious non-Christian sect, founded by Joseph Smith at Manchester, New York, in 1830, now settled in Salt Lake City, Territory of Utah, United States... Smith was born Dec. 23rd, 1805, at Sharon, Windsor County, Vermont, from which place ten years later his parents, a poor, ignorant, thriftless, and not too honest couple, removed to New York, where they settled on a small farm near Palmyra, Wayne County (then Ontario). Four years later, in 1809, they removed to Manchester, some six miles off; and it was at the latter place when fifteen years old that Joseph began to have his alleged visions, in one of which on the night of 21st Sept., 1823, the angel Moroni appeared to him three times, and told him that the Bible of the Western Continent, the supplement to the New Testament, was buried in a certain spot near Manchester. Thither, four years later and after due disciplinary probation, Smith went, and had delivered into his charge by an angel of the Lord a stone box, in which was a volume, 6 inches thick, made of thin gold plates 8 inches by 7, and fastened together by three gold rings. The plates were covered with small writing in the ' reformed Egyptian ' tongue, and were accompanied by a pair of supernatural spectacles, consisting of two crystals set in a silver bow, and called ' Urim and Thummim '; by aid of these, the mystic characters could be read. Being himself unable to read or write fluently, Smith employed as amanuensis one Oliver Cowdery, to whom from behind a curtain, he dictated a translation, which, with the aid of a farmer, Martin Harris,[1] who had more money than wit, was printed and published in 1830 under the title of *The Book of Mormon* and accompanied by the sworn statement of Oliver Cowdery, David Whitmer, and Martin Harris, that an angel of God had shown them the plates of which the bock was a translation. This testimony all three, on renouncing Mormonism some years later, denounced as false ; but meanwhile it helped Smith to impose on the credulous, particularly in the absence of the gold plates themselves which suddenly and mysteriously disappeared. "

---

[1] Harris married as one of his many wives the widow of the murdered Mason, William Morgan.

Blanchard draws a parallel between this story of the gold plates and that of the legend of the 14th degree of Scottish Rites Masonry, that of Grand Elect Perfect and Sublime Mason, according to which " the real name oi God was lost, till it was found by Masons, engraved on a three-cornered gold plate, in " the ruins of Enoch. "[2]

In reality, this book " was written in 1812 as an historical romance by one Solomon Spalding, a crack-brained preacher; and the MS. falling into the hands of an unscrupulous compositor, Sidney Rigdon, was copied by him, and subsequently given to Joseph Smith. Armed with this book and with self-assumed divine authority, the latter soon began to attract followers. " [3]

Joseph Smith was a Mason.

The Gold Plate trick, having worked so successfully once, was tried again in 1843 when six plates were found by Robert Wiley, a merchant of Kinderhook, Illinois. " The true story of the plates was disclosed " so Stuart Martin writes in *The Mystery of Mormonism* (page 69), in an affidavit made by W. Fulgate, of Mount Station, Brown County, Ill. on June 30th, 1879, when he swore before J. Brown, Justice of the Peace, that the " plates were humbug, gotten up by Robert Wiley,

---

2. Blanchard, *Scottish Rite Masonry,* vol. I, p. 380.
3. *Enc. Brit.,* Art. Mormons.

Bridge Whitton, and myself. Whitton, who was a blacksmith, cut the plates out of pieces of copper. Wiley and I made the hieroglyphics by making impressions of beeswax and filling them with acid. " He describes the burial and the finding of the plates, and states that among the spectators at the " discovery " were two Mormon Elders, Marsh and Sharp.

Smith and his followers founded the city of Nauvoo and " such were the powers granted them by this charter as to render the city practically independent of the State Government, and to give Smith all but unlimited civil power. He organized a military body called the Nauvoo legion, of which he constituted himself commander with the title of lieutenant-general, while he was also president of the church and mayor of the city. On April 6th, 1841, the foundations of the new temple were laid, and the city continued to grow rapidly in prosperity and size. "

Smith's career of treason, profligacy, dishonesty, polygamy, spiritism and humbug, came to an abrupt end when the gaol in which he was imprisoned by order of the Governor of the State was broken into by a mob who shot him and his fellow prisoner, his brother Hyram.

As head of the Mormons he was succeeded by Brigham Young (1801-1877).

In 1846, the repeal by the legislature of the charter of Nauvoo resulted in the Mormons being driven from the city.

In March 1849, they held a convention at Salt Lake City, and a State was organized under the name of " Deseret ". " A legislature was elected and a constitution framed, which was sent on to Washington. This, Congress refused to recognize, and by way of compromise for declining to admit the proposed new State into the Union, President Fillmore in 1850 organized the country occupied by the Mormons into the Territory of Utah, with Brigham Young as governor. " Adopting Smith's policy of aggressive military action, Brigham Young, like his predecessor, defied the Federal Government. He died on August 29, 1877, leaving 17 wives and 56 children. [4]

The following description of a Mormon ceremony was printed in the *Rosicrucian* in an article entitled " Ancient and Modern Mysteries " by M. W. Frater Robert Wentworth Little (page 169).

" The converts are then required to purchase white linen garments, which are furnished by the ' high deacon '. They are then conducted to the temple, ushered into a private room, and commanded to undress for the inspection of the presiding elder '. This official, after a minute examination, clothes the neophytes in the linen robes or garments of endowment and conducts them into a large room which is divided by white screens into many small compartments. Each neophyte enters one of the compartments, and is ordered to take off the ' endowment robe ' and to step into a long coffin-shaped tin bath. The elder then pours water upon the naked victim — blessing each member of the body as the water touches it — ' the brain to be clear and strong — the eyes to be bright and sharp — the ears to be quick to hear ', and so on down to the feet — this ceremony being performed upon all, without distinction of sex. A new name is then given to each convert by the elder, who commands them to ' arise and follow me '. A magnificent garden, full of exquisite fruit-trees, is the scene of the next ceremony. The candidates are still in a state of nudity, which represents primeval innocence, and the Temptation of our First Parents is the subject of the next drama. The women are directed by an elder personating Satan to pluck an apple from a certain tree, and after they have tasted, to hand it to the men. Brigham Young then appears, and drives them out of the garden with a flaming sword. They return to the temple, implore forgiveness on their knees for all trespasses and transgressions and the ceremony concludes with a benediction upon the new Saints, pronounced by the lips of this polygamous president.

---

[4] *Enc. Brit.,* 9th Ed. Art. Mormonism.

" Such is a brief outline of the ' Rite of Endowment' the details of the scene being, as may readily be conceived, of too obscene a character to be explained at greater length. "

Brigham Young was succeeded by John Taylor, an Englishman and a Freemason. His apostolic successors were Wilford Woodruff, Lorenzo Snow, Joseph Fielding Smith (eldest son of the founder of the order) who died Nov. 19th, 1918, and Heber J. Grant.[5]

About Mormonism and Masonry, Blanchard makes the following remark : " The two institutions are morally and legally the same. "[6]

The Mormon dogma is universality, materialism and pantheism. It blends Judaism and Christianity, aiming at a progressive universal religion while seeking to unite in itself all faiths and the cults of every people on earth.

The Mormon state is a theocratic community at the head of which is a grand priest-president assisted by two others and a travelling council of twelve. Its mysteries are those of spiritism and the seance room.

[5] Stuart Martin, *The Mystery of Mormonism.*

[6] Blanchard 33°, *op. cit.*, vol. II, p. 373.

For root of this movement see Chapter XLVII.

CHAPTER LXXVI

INDEPENDENT ORDER OF B'NAI B'RITH

I. O. B. B.

(JEWISH MASONRY)

(Founded 1843)

B'nai B'rith means " Sons of the Covenant ", the Covenant being that of circumcision practised according to the Mosaic law. Hence the Independent Order of the B'nai B'rith admits only Jews as members.

This rite "was founded in New York in 1843 by a number of German Jews, headed by Henry Jones. " [1]

Its constitution, District Lodges, Grand Lodges, stamp it as a Jewish Masonic Society.

Like most societies, it covers its political activities under the cloak of " benevolence and philanthropy. "

From its inception until the present time, its main contact has been with Germany and its chief aim the establishment of the supremacy of the German Jews in all world affairs through the channel of " Internationalism".

In 1882, the strength of the I. 0. B. B. in the United States warranted the opening of Lodges in Germany by Moritz Ettinger, and the growth of the order was so rapid there that in 1885, Julius Bien, President of the Order in New York, went over and inaugu-

---

1. *Jewish Encyclopaedia, Art.* B'nai B'rith.

rated the first German Grand Lodge of the I. O. B. B.

The political activities of the leaders of the order in Bumania, Austria and Hungary are a matter of record, although the chief centre of their power is in the United States where they have lately attained supremacy in the Jewish World by absorbing " national " Zionism and submitting it wholly to their own " international " policy when the Jewish World Agency was created in October, 1928.

It will be well for the reader to bear in mind that, however united a front the Jews may present to the Gentiles, yet among themselves they are divided, and the fight for supremacy and the attainment of world power is not less bitter between their various camps than it is among the different sects of Freemasonry.

Babbi Dr. Leo Bach was the president of the B'nai B'rith of Germany in 1928.

The Grand Master for Bussia of the International Order of the B'nai B'rith at the time of the Bussian revolution of 1917 was Sliozberg. He was one of the inspirers of Kerensky, the leader of the first revolution of 1917.[2] Alexander Kerensky, real name Aron Kirbiz, Kerensky having been the name of his stepfather, was a member of the Socialist revolutionary party and a 32nd degree Scottish Bites Mason.

There is but little doubt now that the B'nai B'rith seems to be the supreme body, shaping and directing, for the attainment of its own ends, the policies, whatever they may be, of all Freemasonry beginning with the Grand Lodge of England, The Grand Orient and Scottish Bites, and ending in the O. T. O., which is Illuminism under another name.

---

2. *Les Cahiers de l'Ordre,* November 1927.

For root of this movement see Chapter "VII.

r'or development of this movement see Chapter CXXVII.

CHAPTER LXXVII

YOUNG IRELAND

(Founded 1843)

Captain H. B. C. Pollard, in writing of the Young Ireland movement says " The leaders of the Young Ireland Party of 1848 were John Mitchell, an advanced Radical, deeply tinged with Jacobin ideas, and William Smith O'Brien, whose brother later became Lord Inchiquin. They obtained popular support by reason of the widespread misery caused by the Potato famine of ' Black Forty-seven. ' Gavan Duffy, Dillon, Doheny, O'Gorman and Stephens were all minor conspirators. Mitchell and O'Brien were transported to Van Diemens Land, but the younger men mostly made good their escape and lived in exile in Paris and America. " [1]

" The old traditional combination of an open movement within the law reinforced by a secret organization of criminal habits was revived in 1850, when the *Tenant Defence Society* was founded with the object of enforcing, by agitation, legislation which was to accomplish by legal means that expropriation of property that the combined genius of Whitefeet, Rockites, Tenvalts, Molly Maguires and all other Irish

---

1. Pollard, *The Secret Societies of Ireland,* p. 10.

terrorist societies had failed to achieve by violence.[2]

" The Archbishop of Dublin at that time was Archbishop Cullen, who was familiar with the evils resulting from the effective use of Secret Societies. He had been in Rome when the successful Carbonarists under Mazzini and Garibaldi drove out the Pope ;[3] and the lesson had not been wasted. Cullen readily ascertained that the *Tenants' Rights Party* was merely a new disguise for the late ' Young Ireland ' movement, whose ideals were both Republican and, within limits, anti-clerical.

" There was no formal excommunication, but a quiet though firm ban was placed on the party. "[4]

The Young Ireland Movement was but a branch of the Young Europe Movement led by Mazzini, the main history of which will be found in Part I.

[2] Pollard, *op. cit.,* p. 44.
[3] Pope Pius IX, on Nov. 15, 1848.
[4] Pollard, *op. cit.,* p. 46.

For root of this movement see Chapters LXIII, LXV.
For development of this movement see Chapter LXXXII.

CHAPTER LXXVIII

THE BAHAI MOVEMENT

(Founded 1844)

" Inquire Within", in her book *Light-bearers of Darkness,* gives an excellent summary of the crigin and scope of this sect. From her work we quote the following :

" This movement was founded in 1844 by a Persian, Mirza Ali Muhammad, who took the title of ' Bab ' (the Gate); he revolted against the Hierarchy, who, fearing his growing influence, had him shot at Tabriz, 1850.

" It claims to be the fulfilment ' of that which was but partially revealed in previous dispensations ', and they look upon Buddha, Zoroaster, Jesus, Mohammed, and Confucius as merely preparing the world for the advent of the ' Most Great Peace ' and the ' Mighty World Educator ' Baha'u'llah (Glory of God), 1863-92, and later Abdul-Baha, 1892-1921. It further claims to be the unity of all religions, also older and modern movements, such as Theosophy, Freemasonry, Spiritualism, Socialism, etc. ; it aims at conferring illumination upon humanity, and like all illuminated groups, it works for universal peace, religion, education, language (Esperanto), and universal everything leading to unity of humanity; therefore all prejudices must be abandoned, traditional, racial, patriotic, religious and political ; all religions must be in accordance with science and reason. "

The Bahais have a temple in Chicago, the building of which was begun in 1903 which " Inquire Within " describes as being a perfect nonagon in form, all its dimensions being based on the number nine, " the cabalistic number of generation, which initiates and leads to unity with the universal astral light. " [1]

The same author further explains the organization of the sect most concisely in the following lines :

> " There is a Guardian of the Cause — Shogi-Effendi — with nine co-workers, and in each town there is a Spiritual Assembly of nine members, who must be consulted, absolutely obeyed, and submitted to. There are also National Spiritual Assemblies in all countries to which the cause has spread, and, finally, they are making elaborate plans to form an International Spiritual Assembly to be elected by all believers — to enact ordinances and regulations not found in the explicit Holy Text. "

We leave it to anyone interested to follow the subversive activities of this sect in either the political or religious realm.

---

[1] " Inquire Within ", *Light bearers of Darkness,* p. 194 *el seq.* For root of this movement see Chapter IV.

CHAPTER LXXIX

THE INDEPENDENT ORDER OF ODDFELLOWS

I. O. O. F.

(AMERICAN)

(Founded 1844)

The following information is gathered from *The Complete Manual of Oddfellows.*

" In 1819, Thomas Wildey established in Baltimore the first lodge of Oddfellows in the United States, and from 1825 till 1833, he was Grand Sire of the Grand Lodge.

" In 1843 Grand Sire Howell Hopkins of Pennsylvania was installed, and the United States Grand Lodge issued a dispensation for opening the Prince of Wales Lodge No. 1 at Montreal, Canada.

" In 1844 The Grand Lodge (Oddfellows U. S. A.) appointed a Ritual Revision Committee and entirely changed all the working, rejecting the whole of the English work, and in point of fact creating an entirely new Order "[1] based on the plans of Thomas Wildey. (See part I of this book).

The woman's degree of " Rebeckah ", which was formulated by Schuyler Colfax in 1851, was adopted by the Grand Lodge in September of that year.[2]

---

[1] *The Complete Manual of Oddfellows,* published 1879, p. 66.

The American Oddfellows have five degrees.

For the important and interesting connection of this order with Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rites we would refer the reader to page 211 of this book.

---

[2] *Op. cit.*, p. 153.

CHAPTER LXXX

MODERN SPIRITISM

(Founded 1848)

Modern Spiritism, sometimes called Spiritualism, traces its descent from the mystifications of Catherine and Margaret Fox, the daughters of John Fox, who, in 1848, during the course of experiments conducted in a haunted house at Hydesville, New York, U. S. A. elaborated a system of communication by raps, with invisible entities. Both sisters eventually confessed to having abused the credulity of the public in their spiritist seances but the universal interest aroused by the phenomena at Hydesville did not abate.

Since then, there has been a regular epidemic of table turning, ouija boards, planchettes, automatic writings and similar modes, more or less effective, for achieving mediumship.

The acquisition of this type of mediumship exposes the aspirant to the danger of an induced state of mental passivity during which the mind may register vibrations broadcast from some terrestrial centre such as that provided by the recently constituted " Polaire Society " and recognized by the H. B. of L. (See page 531).

The cultivation of spiritism under all its different aspects either for amusement or pseudo-scientific investigation leads to serious consequences when occult adepts rely upon such manifestations for spiritual and material guidance. One is appalled at the thought that even the destinies of nations may become subject to occult direction emanating from spiritistic seances. In connection herewith, the following clipping shows the opeiation of these methods on persons prominent in political life. As everyone knows, Mrs. Snowden, now Viscountess Snowden, is the wife of the then (1930) Chancellor oi the Exchequer, and a woman oi great personal influence.

MRS. SNOWDEN & THE SPIRITS

MESSAGE WHEN SHE GAME TO LONDON

SIR OLIVER LODGE IN DOWNING-STREET

Space " pulsating with life and mind " was a picture of the universe drawn by Sir Oliver Lodge in a lecture which he delivered last night at 11, Downing-street, Mr. Snowden's official residence as Chancellor of the Exchequer.

Sir Oliver was speaking on the reality of the spiritual world, his lecture being delivered in connection with the Industrial Law Bureau of the Young Women's Christian Association. It was held in two reception rooms on the first floor of No. 11. Sir Oliver stood in the doorway between, so that he could be heard in either room.

Mrs. Philip Snowden, who presided, recalled an experience of her own when in 1906 she and Mr. Snowden first came to London.

" We got tired of hotel life, " said Mrs. Snowden, " and obtained rooms in Lambeth Palace-road. The following morning a letter came to me at this address which nobody in the world could have known. I opened this letter and it looked like nonsense.

" Scrutinising it carefully, I divided the letters and they made sentences the substance of which was that, I must put myself into friendly relationship with someone who had passed over—into the ether—because that persons work would not be effective if I did not do it, and my work here would not be so good as it might be if I failed to do it. There was an accompanying note which said that this message was delivered to me at a spiritualist meeting, in Lancaster, and the writer sent the message on. "

The Daily Telegraph, October 29th 1930.

The physical force of " Kundalini " expended by people in these " communications with the unseen drain their vital energy to such an extent that, when such practices are indulged in for an appreciable length of time, their nervous systems may be seriously impaired. A " Ouija " medium, after a week's consecutive sittings will feel a sense of heaviness and oppression about the solar plexus at certain hours. This sensation is shortly followed by serious physical weakness, manifest in sports- and athletics. Presently, the medium — now a potential medical patient — will be unable to sleep at night.

Cracks, bangs, knocks, etc., will mark an approaching state of obsession. People whose psychic experiments have brought them to this degree of development, generally cut short further adventures in this field of science and theology. These have learned that there is indeed something beyond the obvious, and that after this stage of induced experimental mediumship has been achieved the way is open for such states of mind variously known to psychopathic doctors and priests as lunacy, possession, obsession, alternating personality and sadism.

Mediumship does not imply power. A medium is a receiver and, as such, furthers the will of another. The fakirs of India are mediums.

That these phenomena are real has been proved by such prominent scientists as Crooks, Richet and Flammarion and the mediumistic exploits of such persons as D. I). Home are so well known and attested that we will give but one short extract here from page 171 of *The Rosicrucian,* quoting a speech by Lord Lindsay, Senior Grand Warden of England, for the benefit of persons who may happen to have no acquaintance with the subject.

" I may mention that on another occasion I was sitting with Mr. Home and Lord Adare and a cousin of his. During the sitting Mr. Home went into a trance,.

and in that state was carried out of the window in the room next to where we were, and was brought in at our window. The distance between the windows was about seven feet six inches and there was not the slightest foothold between them, nor was there more than a twelve inch projection to each window, which served as a ledge to put flowers on."

What are we to think when we read in John Drinkwater's remarkable book on Charles James Fox that Sir Francis Dashwood was Chancellor of the Exchequer under G?orge III ?

Regarding the career of Sir Francis, we here read the following. The comment concerns John Wilkes whose "ambition to be admitted into the childish and blasphemous fraternity notorious as the Monks of Medmenham was frustrated by the claims of superior profligacy advanced by the fourth Lord Sandwich, with whom he competed for election. His resentment against that nobleman and Sir Francis Dashwood, the founder of the Society, was not appeased by the success of an exploit that diverted the town. Wilkes contrived to let a baboon loose upon one of the orgiastic rites at Medmenham that was being conducted in darkness, and had the satisfaction of throwing his victims into hysterics at the apparition of what their befuddled wits took to be the devil."[1]

What indeed can be deduced from such an historical fact as that Lord Sandwich, "notable even in that age as a corrupter of morals", was Secretary of State ?

The obvious conclusion we can draw is that men either corrupt or easily bought are men easily blackmailed just as those who, being victims of their own greed, are amenable to bribery.

---

[1] John Drinkwater, *Charles James Fox,* p. 48.

Spiritism is the fundamental mystery of most secret societies and the drug traffic is its chief commercial secret.

A clipping from the London *Daily Telegraph* of Nov. 29, 1930, which we reproduce, will give the reader an excellent idea of the problem of Modern Spiritism.

SPIRITUALISTS AND THE LAW

TEXT OF A BILL TO GRANT RELIEF

IMMUNITY FROM PROSECUTION

SOME FAMOUS CASES RECALLED

The text was issued yesterday of the Spiritualism and Psychical Research (Exemption) Bill, a measure promoted by Mr. Kelly, M. P. for Rochdale, and ten other members of the Socialist party.

It is designed to relieve spiritualists and mediums from prosecution under the enactments relating to witchcraft and vagrancy whilst they are " genuinely exercising their psychic powers, whether in religious practice or scientific investigation. "

Although the bill appears to meditate only a change in the criminal law, it is obvious that if placed on the Statute Book it must to some extent affect the attitude towards spiritualism of judges who administer the common law and the principles of equity.

If, for example, spiritualism, séances, and mediums are to be recognised as no longer inimical to the public well-being, it difficult to see how the civil courts could hold, as they have done on several occasions, that a bequest to an institution for the training of mediums and the furtherance of spiritualism generally is void, as being against public policy. By his will Sir Arthur Conan Doyle left bequests to three spiritualistic institutions.

On this aspect of the matter it is interesting to recall how, heretofore, the cult of spiritualism has been received in the High Court. It has figured, though not as a vital issue, in actions for libel and slander. The typical cases of Archdeacon T. Colley *v. J.* N. Maskelyne, in 1907, and Radcliffe Hall *v.* Lane Fox-Pitt, in 1920, will be remembered.

MEDIUMS' COPYRIGHT

It has also been a more intimate issue in a copyright case, Cummins *v.* Bond, which came before Mr. Justice Eve three or four years ago. The question for solution in that case was whether the copyright in a communication said to have been made at a seance by the spirit of a Glastonbury monk was vested in the woman medium who received it, or in the enthusiastic sitter to whom she dictated it and who wished to publish it.

The sitter claimed that he owned the copyright, as the author was a spirit and had only used the medium as an instrument of transmission. On the other hand, the medium claimed the copyright on the ground that she was not a mere amanuensis, but was in communion with the spirit of the deceased monk, and was therefore joint author of the message.

With customary directness the judge disregarded the pretension of both parties that the communication had an ultra-terrestrial origin. He dealt with it as coming from a terrestrial author, and held the medium to be the author and therefore the holder of the copyright.

Long memories may also revive the

ase of Lyon and Home, one of the most otable cases ever brought into a Chancery Court.

A wealthy widow made a gift of :30,000 to Daniel Douglas Home, the lost celebrated of the mediums of his time (the 'Sixties), and gave him also a reversionary interest in another sum of similar amount. She did this believing that she was fulfilling the wish of er husband, whose spirit Home had invoked. Subsequently she rued her enerosity, and brought an action to ave the gifts set aside.

Vice-Chancellor Giffard heard the case, and for nine days the court listened to talk about table rapping, knotted handerchiefs, and other phenomena. In setting aside the gifts Giffard characterised the manifestations which had influenced the lady as :

> " Mischievous nonsense, well calculated on the one hand to delude the vain, the weak, the foolish, and the superstitious, and on the other hand to assist the projects of the needy and the adventurer. "

LORD DARLING'S DICTA

There is no need to strain the memory severely for an instance of judicial iticism of the claims of spiritualists ade by Mr. Justice Darling.

A theatrical agent sued theatrical oducers for damages for alleged failure to carry out an agreement to ace the Criterion Theatre at his disposal for a public séance. Merely mentioning that the plaintiff won his case, and was awarded £200 damages, the comments of the judge may be quoted full, because reference was made the statute which it is now sought to fiend :

" It is an open question whether the manifestations given by mediums are genuine or mere tricks by which people are able to represent that there is comunication with the next world. I should myself come to the conclusion that there is no certain desire to deceive or impose, but that it is desired that people should be puzzled as to whether there is a genuine manifestation of spirits or whether it is trickery.

" There are those who believe that the spirits can communicate in this world with those they have known, through some medium. Their time is so unoccupied in the next world, and it is such a dreary place, that thev are perfectly ready to come to the" Criterion and attend matinees, and not to look on from the stage, but be on the stage

"Before even they get on the stage they are counting the pennies in Mr. —'s overcoat or the buttons on it, and reading a jumble of German and English nonsense.

" On the other hand, there are those who are capable of supposing that this really is a kind of existence imposed for eternity upon those who have ceased to exist in life. If that is so, ' well may we weep for friends who die '.

" All they (the plaintiffs) desired to do was to give an exhibition which would leave some people in doubt as to whether it was real divination by means of the dead or some trickery. No magistrate ought to convict them on this account under the statute of George IV. "

LICENSED CLAIRVOYANTS

In the bill now before Parliament it is proposed that spiritualists shall be given immunity from prosecution, provided that there is no intention to defraud. The following are specifically mentioned as coming within the scope of the bill :

Promoter, chairman, or other official,
Lecturer or speaker,
Clairvoyant,
Medium.

For the purposes of the bill, " medium " and " clairvoyant " are defined as meaning a person " holding a certificate or licence of fitness to practise either as a medium or clairvoyant, or in both capacities, such certificate or licence to be issued by registered or properly constituted spiritualistic or psychical societies, or a joint committee representing such societies, or such other certifying or licensing body as may be approved by one of his Majesty's Principal Secretaries of State. "

The Societies of Psychical Research, both in England and America, exist today as scientific centres for information and investigation of spirit phenomena. Persons interested in these " mysteries " would do well to avail themselves of their protection and the facilities they afford for serious work. The English Society was founded in 1882 by Henry Sidgwick, Edmund Gurney, Frederick Meyers, W. T. Barrett and others.

For root of this movement see Chapter XXII.

For development of this movement see Chapters CVIII, CIX, CX, CXV.

CHAPTER LXXXI

THE EASTERN STAR

(Founded 1850)

This order has five degrees and was founded for the wives and daughters of Masons in America by Robert Morris in 1850. It has also been worked in Scotland.

Jephthah's Daughter	Daughter's Degree
Ruth	Widow's Degree
Esther	Wife's Degree
Martha	Sister's Degree
Electa	Benevolent Degree

For root of this movement see Chapter XLVII.

CHAPTER LXXXII

THE IRISH REPUBLICAN BROTHERHOOD

(I. R. B.)

THE FENIANS.

(Founded 1857-1858)

Concerning this famous Secret Society, Captain Pollard writes :

" From its earliest days to the present time the I. R. B. has existed as a militant revolutionary secret society, with the avowed object of separating Ireland from all connection with the British Empire and establishing an independent Republican Government.[1]

" The founders of this movement were Colonel John O'Mahoney and a barrister, Michael Doheney, both of whom had fled from Ireland for their share in the rising of 1848. Both these men took refuge in France, at that time a hot-bed of secret Carbonarist societies, such as the *Communistes Revolulionnaires,* the *Constitutional Society* with its ' Acting Company ', the *Seasons* and many others, and it was in Paris that these two fugitives lived with James Stephens, the real head and organizer of the Fenian movement, who was also a refugee. "

" In 1857 a messenger was sent from New York to James Stephens, then in Dublin, asking him to get up an organization in Ireland on resources provided from the States (U. S. A.) ; and it is clear that Stephens had already cut-and-dried plans in his mind as to how this was to be done. He stated his terms, which were agreed to, and on St. Patrick's Day 1858, the I. R. B. movement was initiated by Stephens and Luby in Dublin. "

---

[1] Pollard, *The Secret Societies of Ireland,* p. 47.

In 1859 the I. R. B. exacted the following oath ; " I, A. B., in the presence of Almighty God, do solemnly swear allegiance to the Irish Republic now virtually established ; and that I will do my utmost, at every risk, while life lasts, to defend its independence and integrity ; and finally that I will yield implicit obedience in all things, not contrary to the laws of God, to the commands of my superior officers. So help me God. Amen. "

" The organization made rapid headway, but the weight of the Roman Catholic Hierarchy was surging against the movement, and in due course the Brotherhood was excommunicated ; in 1861 no Fenian could get absolution. "

In reference to the founding of the Fenian society in America, Heckethorn fifty years ago had written the following :

" In Nov. 1863, the Fenian organization assumed a new character. A grand national convention of delegates met at Chicago and avowed the object of the Brotherhood, namely, the separation of Ireland from England, and the establishment of an Irish republic, the same changes being first to be effected in Canada. Another grand convention was held in 1864 at Cincinnati, the delegates at which represented some 250,000 members, each of which members was called upon for a contribution of five dollars, and this call, it is said, was promptly responded to.... About the same time a Fenian Sisterhood was established, and the ladies were not inactive ; for in two months from their associating they returned upwards of £200,000 sterling to the Fenian Exchequer for the purpose of purchasing arms and other war material. "[2]

To raise money the Fenians issued bonds redeemable 90 days after the establishment of the future Irish Republic.

Availing ourselves of the remarkable documentation furnished by Captain Pollard we gather the following facts :

" The American Fenian Brotherhood was a separate organization, distinct from the Irish Fenian Brotherhood or I. R. B. having its own leaders ; but both organizations were on the same lines and had their officers, both civil and military oaths, emblems, and passwords, funds and stores of arms. "[3]

All was well till Sept. 14, 1865 when "the Dublin authorities, who were thoroughly well informed, raided the offices of *The Irish People* and arrested the staff.

James Stephens was arrested with the rest but " escaped through the nominal complicity of a warder, John Breslin, who was also a member of the I. R. B. "

" Stephens had received some twenty-five thousand pounds, little of which was spent in Ireland, and in later years it was a matter of common knowledge that Stephens, besides being Head Centre, had also an agreement with the British Government, which threw a peculiar light on his immunity from arrest and his later escape from prison and leisurely retreat to France. "[4]

On March 5, 1867, " Colonel " Kelly, heading a dissident group of Fenians, established a Directory

---

2. Heckethorn, *Secret Societies of All Ages and Countries,* vol. II, p. 203.

3. Pollard, *op. cit.,* p. 58 *et seq.*

4. *Ibid.,* p. 60 *et seq.*

separate from the original I. R. B. in London.

" Kelly, it should be noted, was the inventor of the *Committee of Safety,* later known as the *Assassination Committee,* whose function was to shoot people suspected of ' treason ' to the Brotherhood. "

" In 1869 new influences in America and Paris succeeded in reforming the I. R. B. Directorate in London, and the organization became not only a mainspring of revolutionary endeavour in Ireland, but a definite element in the complex machinery of world-revolution. "

In March 1865, the Fenians joined the amalgamation of subversive Secret Societies under Karl Marx, known as the *International Association of Working Men,* founded in London on September 28th.

" It is, at all events, clear that Marx and the leaders of the I. R. B. were in close touch, and that Marx knew, even if the mass of Irish dupes did not, that the Irish revolutionary dream of the I. R. B. and Fenian leaders was no merely nationalist rebellion, but was to be a social revolution.[5]

" The function of the Fenian ' General ' Cluseret and his relation to the International are not precisely clear, but he appears to have acted as a chief of the military rather than the civil side of the secret Lodges. During his stay in England on his Fenian mission he paid particular attention to the problem of how London might be captured, held and burnt.... After the suppression of the Paris branch of the *Internationale* it was Cluseret who organized the workers as a secret communist revolutionary society. "

The more recent activities of the I. R. B. should be followed in connection with The Clan-na-Gael.

[5] Pollard, *op. cit,* p. 67 *et seq.*

For root of this movement see Chapter LXXVII.

For development of this movement see Chapter LXXXVIII.

CHAPTER LXXXIII

PHOENIX SOCIETY OF SKIBBEREEN

(Founded 1858)

In our enumeration of subversive societies we must include the Phoenix Society of Skibbereen of which Captain Pollard writes the following in *The Secret Societies of Ireland* (page 46).

" In 1858 a premature organization, contrived to revive the tenets of the Young Irishmen of ten years earlier, was founded at Skibbereen by Jeremiah O'Donovan Rossa and James Stephens. Both these men were later to attain notoriety in criminal annals, but the *Phoenix Society* was abortive. Attacked by the priests it was suppressed. "

This society is interesting to us on account of the subsequent career of James Stephens, one of its founders, who had previously been identified with the Fenian movement.

For root of this movement see Chapter LXXXII.

CHAPTER LXXXIV

L'ALLIANCE ISRAELITE UNIVERSELLE

(A BRANCH OF JEWISH MASONRY)

(Founded 1860)

If, as it has been appropriately defined, Judaism is a sect, the creation of the Alliance Israélite Universelle which took place in 1860 can be regarded as that of its exoteric centre.

It was founded in 1860 by Aristide Astruc, Isidor Cahen, Jules Carvalho, Narcisse Leven, Eugene Manuel and Charles Netter. Its first president was Konigswarter. Adolphe Cremieux was president from 1863-1867 and again from 1868-1880.

In 1840, the world had been startled by the news of the fearful murder of Père Thomas at Damascus. Serious investigations had resulted in the conviction of three Jews who had confessed to the commission of the abominable crime for Jewish ritual purposes of procuring human blood.

The indignation of the whole world rising against Jewry made its prominent members realise the danger threatening their newly acquired emancipation in most countries, and they made a concerted effort to disprove Jewish guilt in the Damascus affair. Foremost among them had been Moses Monte fiore, Adolphe Cremieux and Solomon Munk. Yet, the real inspirer of the Alliance Israelite Universelle was Hirsch Kalisher, Rabbi of Thorn (Russia) and its enthusiastic exponent, Moses Hess.

The chief aim of the Alliance Israelite Universelle was political, and was clearly expressed in the report circulated after its foundation in which was stated : *All important faiths are represented in the world by nations, that is to say, they are incarnated in governments especially interested in them and officially authorized to represent them and speak for them only. Our faith alone is without this important advantage; it is represented neither by a state nor by a society, nor does it occupy a clearly defined territory.*

The Alliance Israelite Universelle therefore was destined to be the governmental representative of all Jews from whatever country they lived in under the authority of their secret Kahal or community rule.

The first political manifestation of the Alliance Israelite Universelle took place at the Berlin Congress in 1878 where it was represented by three of its delegates : Kann, Netter and Veneziani.

The link between the Alliance Israelite Universelle and Freemasonry was for many years Adolphe Crémieux and Masonic writers have asserted that the 18th degree, conferreo by the Grand Orient, makes the initiate, if not a member, at any rate a supporter of the Alliance.

The Alliance Israelite Universelle saw its dream of international Jewish Government shattered when Zionism emerged and came tc the fore in 1897. It is noteworthy that the " Prophet " of Zionism : Ahad Ha'am (Asher Ginsberg) was a member of the Alliance Israelite Universelle and a disciple of Charles Netter. The avowed aims of the A. I. U., namely a super-government of the world and a universal religion, both to be Judaic, are being steadily pursued by the " Jewish World Agency " functioning to-day.

CHAPTER LXXXV

THE INTERNATIONAL

(FIRST AND SECOND)

(Founded 1860)

In his early days, Karl Marx, later to be the moving spirit of the First International, edited a paper in Paris, *Annales Franco-Allemandes,* the organ of a secret society. This paper had been founded by Arnold Riige, a disciple of Mazzini. Marx met Riige through Henri Heine, the celebrated poet. [1]

Heckethorn, in his *Secret Societies of All Ages and Countries* gives an interesting synopsis of the early phases of this movement destined ultimately to form the keystone of subversion throughout the world. [2]

" The first attempt at an international society was made by a small number of German workmen in London, who had been expelled from France in 1839 for taking part in the riots in Paris. Its members consisted of Germans, Hungarians, Poles, Danes and Swedes. Of the few English members Ernest Jones was one. The society was on friendly terms with the English Socialists, the Chartists, and the London French Democratic

---

1. *Revue Internationale des Societes Secrites,* June 28, 1931.
2. Heckethorn, *op. cit.* vol. II, p. 224 *et seq.*

Society. Out of that friendship sprang the Society of the Fraternal Democrats, who were in correspondence with a number of democratic societies in Belgium. In November, 1847, a German Communist Conference was held in London, at which Dr. Karl Marx (real name Mordechai) was present. In the manifesto then put forth it was declared that the aim of the Communists was the overthrow of the rule of the capitalists by the acquisition of political power. The practical measures by which this was to be effected were the abolition of private property in land ; the centralization of credit in the hands of the State — the leading agitators of course to be the chiefs of the State — by means of a national bank ; the centralization of the means of transport in the hands of the State ; national workshops ; the reclamation and improvement of land ; and the gratuitous education of all the children.

" In 1860, a Trade Unionist, Manhood Suffrage, and Vote by Ballot Association was established, of which G. Odger, a shoemaker, was chairman. As if it had not enough of what might be called legitimate work to do, the association also undertook to agitate in favour of Poland, for which purpose it co-operated with the National League for the Independence of Poland. The London International Exhibition of 1862 induced the French government to assist many French workmen with means to visit that exhibition... " and "... on the 5th August, all the delegates met at a dinner given to them by their English colleagues at Freemason's Hall, where an address was read which formed, as it were, the foundation-stone of the International. The Imperial Commission that had enabled the French workmen to visit the London Exhibition had no doubt furnished them with return tickets. But several of the artisans made no use of their second halves, since profitable employment in London was found for them by their English brethren, so that they might form connecting links between the workmen of the two countries. "

The next year, another meeting was arranged and this was followed by others. At last one was held in London on Sept. 24, 1864, presided over by Professor Beesly, at which it was finally determined to establish a permanent organization of the working people of the civilized world. The International Working Men's Association was thus founded. In *The Jewish Encyclopaedia,* Article on Karl Marx, we read that Mazzini and Marx were entrusted with the task of preparing the address and the constitution. Then came the big public meeting held on September 28, 1864 at St. Martin's Hall, which " declared the International Working Men's Association to be established and congresses were appointed to be held at different times and places to decide on the measures to be taken to found the working men's Eldorado. Many societies at first were affiliated, but dissensions soon broke out among them, and many, such as the Italian Working Men's Society, withdrew again. "[3]

This withdrawal of the Italian section was doubtless influenced by its recognition of the subversion of the original scheme for the amelioration of industrial conditions by the Mazzinian revolutionary agents.

" At a meeting held in London, in 1865, the ' re-establishment of Poland entire and independent ' was again one of the questions discussed. The Paris delegates were for avoiding political questions; but Mr. Odger reminded them that Poland had furnished the occasion for the establishment of the association, and that the Conference must stand by the Polish cause. "

---

[3] Heckethorn, *op. cit.*

In 1866, a meeting or congress was held at Geneva, where the abolition of standing armies, the destruction of the monopolies of great companies, and the transfer of railways and other means of locomotion to the people, were decided on. Another resolution favouring Polish Independence was passed and the report of Marx made in 1864 was adopted.

To anyone unversed in the intricacies of International Politics at that date, the introduction and predominance of the meesures concerning Poland seem senseless. All the Internationa expropriation of all existing proprietors, by the abolition of the political and legal state, which is the sanction and only guarantee of all property as now existing, and of all that is called legal right; and the expropriation, in fact, everywhere, and as much and as quickly as possible by the force of events and circumstances. ' "[4]

After such remarks, the International was evidently considered by its masters to have shown its mettle and to be deserving of better quarters. " A temple worthy of their cult was sought and found... near Geneva, where... a fine building, the Masonic Temple — *Temple Unique...* was procured. ... They put the name of Temple on their cards and bills. Their cult had gained a worthy shrine... "[5]

The further aims of the movement are thus described by Heckethorn:

"... At the time when the International was founded, the French Empire was as yet in all its strength and.... its ministers looked upon themselves as small Machiavellis when they permitted the International (which claimed to be a social, non-political organization), to grow in order, some day, to use it against a mutinous bourgeoisie. The Emperor had an opportunity on September 2, at Sedan, and the Empress on September 4, at Paris, to judge of the value of such policy. However, the scheme of the association having been settled in London in 1864, the organizers opened at Paris a *bureau de correspondance,* which was neither formally interdicted nor regularly authorized by the Prefect and the Minister. But the constantly growing power of the International shown by the strikes of

---

[4] Heckethorn, *op. cit.* p. 231.

[5] Onslow Yorke, *Secret History of the International,* p. 66.

Roubaix, Amiens, Paris, Geneva, etc. after a time compelled the government either to direct or to destroy it. The Parisian manifesto read at Geneva was stopped at the French frontier ; but M. Rouher agreed to admit it into France, if the association would insert some passages thanking the Emperor for what he had done for the working classes —a suggestion which was received with derision by the members. In the meantime the old revolutionary party, of which Mazzini, Garibaldi, Blanqui, and Ledru-Rollin were the oracles, looked with suspicion on the foundation of the International; for, as this last declared that it would not meddle with politics, the others called out, Treason ! and thus the two parties were soon in a condition of violent opposition. In 1867, the Congress of Lausanne voted against war, but at the same moment the other fraction of the demagogues, assembled at Geneva, under pretence of forming a congress of *peace,* declared war on all tyrants and oppressors of the people. However, the two parties, the bourgeois demagogues and the workmen demagogues, eventually united ; and thus it came to pass that by virtue of this pact the International took part in two revolutionary manifestations which occurred about six weeks after — the one at the tomb of Manin in the cemetery of Montmartre, and the other on the following day on the Boulevard Montmartre, to protest against the French occupation of Rome. The International having thus been carried away to declare war against the government, the latter determined to prosecute it. The association was declared to be dissolved, and fifteen of the leaders were each fined a hundred francs. The International taking no notice of the decree of dissolution, a second prosecution was instituted, and nine of the accused were condemned to imprisonment for three months. The International now hid itself amidst the multitude of working men's societies of all descriptions that were either authorized or at least tolerated, and made enormous progress so that its chiefs at last declared themselves able to do without any extraneous support. ' The International', said one of the speakers at the Bâle Congress (1869), ' is and must be a state within states ; let these go on as suits them, until our state is the strongest. Then, on the ruins of these, we shall erect our own fully prepared, such as it exists in every section. '

" On September 3rd 1870, the disaster of Sedan became known at Paris. On the next day, Lyons, Marseilles, Toulouse, and Paris proclaimed the Republic. This simultaneous movement was the result of an understanding existing between the leading members of the International in the various parts of France ; but that the 'Jules Favres and Gambettas, ' that *vermine bourgeoise,* as the International called them, should obtain any share of power, was very galling to the demagogues. At Lyons and Marseilles, however, the supreme power fell into the hands of the lowest wretches. The Commune installed at Lyons began its work by raising the red flag — that of the International. At Paris the association pretended at first to be most anxious to fight the Prussians. When the battalions were sent to the front, however, it was found that those comprising most Internationals were the most ready ' to fall back in good order, ' or even to fly in great disorder at the first alarm ; and General Clement Thomas pointed out this instructive fact to the readers of the *Journal Officiel.* But when a few Prussian regiments entered Paris, the Internationa[1], through its central committee, announced that the moment for action was come ; and so the members seized the cannons scattered in various parts of the city, and then began that series of excesses, for which the Commune will always enjoy an infamous notoriety. Its first sanguinary act was the assassination of Generals Lecomte and Clement Thomas.[6]

" One would have supposed that the International would disavow the Communists : but, on the contrary, it approved of their proceedings. Flames were still ascending from the Hotel de Ville when already numerous sections of the International throughout Europe expressed their admiration of the conduct of the Parisian outcasts.

" At Zurich, at a meeting of the members of the International, it was declared that ' the struggle maintained by the Commune of Paris was just and worthy, and that all thinking men ought to join in the contest. ' "

Thus they agreed with Armand Levi and Jewish Masonry !

In 1872, another Jew, Karl Marx, transferred " the seat of the General Council to New York, in care of his faithful follower F. A. Sorge ", his co-religionist.[7] There the organization degenerated into a gang of Anarchist-revolutionaries. In 1876 it was dissolved.

Numerous efforts to re-create the First International were made by Marx assisted by Jules Guesde and in 1889 they founded the Second International, the development of which was retarded by internal dissensions. In 1905 however a programme of unification, elaborated at Amsterdam, was accepted by the contending factions.[8]

---

[6] Heckethorn, *op. cit.*, vol. II, p. 251 *et seq.*

[7] *Jewish Encyclopaedia,* Article on Karl Marx.

[8] *Revue Internationale des Societes Secretes,* June 28, 1931.

For root of this movement see Chapter LIII.

For development of this movement see Chapter CXXV.

CHAPTER LXXXVI

THE KU-KLUX KLAN

(Founded 1865)

The Ku-Klux Klan was the name of an American secret association formed by the Whites of the Southern States for self protection after the Civil war.

It was started at 1865 at Pulaski, Tennessee, as a club for young men. The period of organization of the K. K. K. lasted from 1865 to 1868. It absorbed other societies of similar aims such as the Knights of the White Camelia, the White Brotherhood, the White League, the Pale Faces, Black Cavalry, White Rose, etc.

Apart from the protection of whites, one of its chief aims was opposition to a government based on negro suffrage such as the North wanted to impose on the South.

The Klan denominated the entire South as the Invisible Empire under the rule of a Grand Wizard : General N. B. Forrest. Each state was a Realm under a Grand Dragon; each county a Province under a Grand Giant, etc.

The avowed principles were the maintenance of peace and order, of the laws of God, of the political and social supremacy of the white race and also the prevention of the intermingling of the races.

It showed strenuous opposition to the " scallawags " and " carpet-baggers " as they called the Northern Whites who incited the negroes to commit all kinds of depredations against the Whites of the South.

In 1871 and 1872, the United States Congress enacted a series of " Force Laws " to break the K. K. K. By that time however the negro was once more subdued and the K. K. K.'s central organization was disbanded.

Its spirit however survived and reasserted itself in 1915 when it was revived.

For development of this organization see Chapter CXXIII.

CHAPTER LXXXVII

SOCIETAS ROSICRUCIANA IN ANGLIA

(Founded 1866)

For an historical sketch of the Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia, the cover name for modern Illuminism, we can do no better than turn to such an authority as its historian William Wynn Westcott, erstwhile Supreme Magus of the Society.

The following items of information are gleaned from his *History of the Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia*, published in 1910.[1] The official statement of the aims of the Society reads as follows :— " The aim of the Society is to afford mutual aid and encouragement in working out the great problems of Life and in searching out the secrets of Nature ; to facilitate the study of the system of philosophy founded upon the Cabala and the doctrines of Hermes Trismegistus, which was inculcated by the original Fratres Rosae-Crucis of Germany, A. D. 1450 ; and to investigate the meaning and symbolism of all that now remains of the wisdom, art and literature of the ancient world. "

---

[1] Dr. Wynn Westcott, M. W. Supreme Magus, *History of The Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia,* IX, privately printed, Dec. 30, 1900. Copyright. British Museum Press Mark 0475 h54.

" The Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia was founded in 1866 by Frater Robert Wentworth Little, an eminent Freemason with much literary talent, and of great personal popularity. He was Secretary of the Province of Middlesex, and Secretary of the Royal Masonic Institution for Girls. He became the first Supreme Magus and Master General of the College in 1867. His knowledge and authority emanated from two sources, and were supplemented by the learning and researches of several other prominent students of occult philosophy. Brother William Henry White, the Grand Secretary of England, preserved certain Rosicrucian papers[2] which had come into his possession on attaining office in 1810, at Freemason's Hall, and ot these he made no use ; Brother Little found these papers and used them. At the same time, and with the object of re-constituting a Rosicrucian College in London, he availed himself of certain knowledge and authority which belonged to Brother Kenneth R. H. Mackenzie, who had, during a stay in Germany in earlier life, been in communication with German Adepts who claimed a descent from previous generations of Rosicrucians. German Adepts had admitted him to some grades of their system, and had permitted him to attempt the formation of a group of Masonic students in England, who under the Rosicrucian name might form a partly esoteric society. With this license and with the manuscripts of ritual information, which Brother White had discovered in the vaults of Freemason's Hall, Fratres R. W. Hughan, Woodman, O'Neal Haye, Irwin and some others, the present English rituals were adopted, and have been in use with some modifications made by Dr. Woodman and his successor, ever since the first regular meeting of the Society.

---

[2] Part of these papers are presumed to be some of Nick Stone's rituals.

" The basic rule of the new Society stated that only Master Masons of good standing and repute should be admitted to membership, thus drawing a new distinction, of which we have no previous record ; for earlier English Rosicrucian Colleges had no Masonic basis, and some fraternities abroad certainly admitted women on equal terms, of which fact there is extant literary proof.

" See the curious document called ' The admission of Sigismund Bacstrom, dated September 12th 1794 '. This will be found reprinted in *The Rosicrucian* of October, 1876. The only literary extant evidence of the source of our Rosicrucian ritual from Brother W. H. White is contained in a letter in possession of the Society. The share of Kenneth Mackenzie in the origin of the Society depends at the present time on his letters to Dr. Woodman and Dr. Westcott, and on his personal conversations during the years 1876-1886 with Dr. Westcott.

" Fratres Hughan, Irwin, Hockley, Woodforde and Benjamin Cox have also contributed their personal knowledge on the subject.

" The original MSS. which Little possessed never came into the possession of the S. M., the late Dr. Woodman, and so were never received by the present Magus who has thus few proofs in writing of the historic basis, which he lays down in this sketch of the Society. The most natural conclusion is that Little returned these papers to some obscure portion of the records at Freemason's Hall, and that they are there still, although the present officials have not traced them. This explanation is very probable, because in September 1871, a Brother

Mathew Cooke raised a complaint in Grand Lodge against Masonic officials for discovering, using and removing old manuscripts from the record rooms of Freemason's Hall. These papers supplied the basis for the reconstitution of the Order of the Red Cross of Constantine, as well as of the Rosicrucian Society. They were both Christian bodies, and their records had been hidden away since the time of the Grand Mastership of the Duke of Sussex, in 1813, who, favouring the Unitarian doctrine, did all in his power to remove Christian grades from notice.

" Our records include a letter from the Rev. T. F. Ravenshaw, Grand Chaplain of England, one of the earliest fratres of the Society, confirming much of the historic information which the author received from Dr. Woodman, Woodforde, Mackenzie and Irwin. This letter recites as follows : — (I) that the first S. M. Frater R. M. Little explained to him that the German Fraternity had an established regulation which permitted distinguished members to confer Rosicrucian grades in due order on suitable persons. (II) That a certain Venetian Ambassador to England in the last century had conferred Rosicrucian grades and knowledge on Students in England; these in their turn had handed on the rule and tradition to others, oi whom one of the last survivors was Frater William Henry White, Grand Secretary of English Freemasonry from 1810 to 1857 ; he retired and lived until 1866. (III) From the papers he possessed Frater White admitted Frater Robert Wentworth Little. (IV) These papers came into Little's possession at Freemason's Hall on Frater White's retirement from office. (V)The rituals are mentioned as being imperfect for ceremonial open use. "

The above contains much useful information for any reader who might later undertake research work not only on the Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia but also in its offshoots : Golden Dawn, Stella Matutina and Ordo Templi Orientis, etc. As to the organization of the Society, in order to enable the reader to understand the system on which it functions, we reprint herewith from *The Rosicrucian*, the Quarterly Record of the Society's transactions, [3] edited by Frater Robert Wentworth Little (S. M.) Master General and Frater William Robert Woodman, M. D., Secretary General, some of the articles governing its organization.

I. — That the meetings of the Society shall be held in London at such house as the majority of the members shall select, on the 2nd Thursdays in January, April, July and October in each year, at such time and place as the majority shall select. The first meeting in the year shall be considered as the obligatory meeting and any member unable to attend on that occasion or at the banquet meeting shall be required to send a written excuse to the Secretary-General. Each brother present at the banquet shall pay his quota towards the expenses thereof.

III. — The Master-general and the Officers shall be elected annually at the obligatory meeting and shall be induced into their several offices on the same evening. The Master-general shall then appoint the Assistant officers for the year.

IV. — No brother shall be eligible for election to the office of Master-general or Deputy Master-general unless he shall have served one year as an Ancient, and have attained the third Order; and no brother shall be eligible for the offices of Treasurer-general, Secretary-general, or Ancient, unless he be a member of the second Order.

---

[3] No. 1, July 1868, British Museum Press Mark 4782-h22.

V. — The Society shall, in conformity with ancient usage, be composed of nine classes or grades, and the number of brethren in each class shall be restricted as follows : —

1 — or grade Zelator	33
2 — or grade Theoricus	27
3 — or grade Practicus	21
4 — or grade Philosophus	18
TOTAL	99

The above shall form the First Order

5 — or grade of Adeptus Junior	15
6 — or grade of Adeptus Major	12
7 — or grade of Adeptus Exemptus	9
TOTAL	36

These brethren shall form the Second Order

8 — or grade of Magister Templi	6
9 — or Magus	3
TOTAL	9

These shall be considered as the Third (or highest) Order, and shall be entitled to seats in the Council of the Society. The senior member of the 9th grade shall be designated " Supreme Magus " and the two other members Senior and Junior Substitutes respectively. The grand total of membership shall thus be limited to 144, or the square of 12. The number of registered Novices or Aspirants shall not be restricted, but members only shall be permitted to be present at the ceremonial meetings of the Society.

VI. — The distinction of Honorary Member may be conferred upon eminent brethren, provided that their election to such membership shall be unanimous and that their number be strictly limited to 16, or the square of 4. An Honorary President, who must be a nobleman, and three Vice-Presidents, shall be selected from the honorary members. A Grand-Patron may also be elected in like manner.

VII. — No aspirant shall be admitted into the Society unless he be a Master Mason, and of good moral character, truthful, faithful and intelligent...

VIII. — Every Novice on admission to the grade of Zelator shall adopt a Latin motto, to be appended to his signature in all communications relating to the Society. This motto cannot under any pretence be afterwards changed, and no two brethren shall be at liberty to adopt the same motto....

The other articles, 20 in all, can be read in *The Rosicrucian.*

In 1877, the order of membership was rearranged to provide that in future, every College under the jurisdiction of England would be restricted to 36 subscribing members exclusive of members of the 9th grade : the only exception being the Metropolitan College which was to be permitted to enrol 72 members.

In *The Rosicrucian* the Society defines its aims in the following terms :—

" The object of the society being purely literary and antiquarian it is almost unnecessary to state that no interference with, or opposition to, any rite of Freemasonry is intended, or even tolerated : and it matters not to the members whether the aspirant be a disciple of pure and ancient Masonry, as interpreted by the Grand Lodge of England, or be enthusiastic follower of those rites which embrace the Hauts Grades, provided he be of good standing and possess sufficient ability to take part in the peculiar objects of research to which the society restricts itself — mystic and Rosicrucian lore.

" Thus the roll of the society displays names side by side, on the one hand ardent supporters of the high grades, and on the other their bitter opponents. "

Those who have occupied the position of Supreme Magus in the order of their succession were :—

R. Wentworth Little	1865-1878
Dr. Robert Woodman	1878-1891
Dr. William Wynn Westcott	1891-1925

Towards the close of the XIX Century, the membership of Rosicruciana in Anglia included the following personages : —

Samuel Liddell MacGregor Mathers (Junior Sub Magus)
Thomas Bowman Whytehead IX
John Yarker IX
George Kenning
A. E. Waite
Eliphas Levi
Kenneth R. H. Mackenzie IX
Major Irwin IX
William James Hughan IX
etc. etc.

The Annual Convocations were held in the Rosicrucian Temple at the Frascati restaurant, Oxford Street, London, W.

The foreign branches of this order were founded in —

Canada — in 1877 by M. W. Frater Col. W. B. Macleod Moore with Fratres Thomas Douglas Harrington as S. S. M. and George Longley as J. S. M. Four meetings a year at Masonic Hall, Maitland, Ontario.

The United States of America — in 1880 by M. W. Frater Charles E. Mayer IX, Supreme Magus of United States.

Germany — in 1902 by Theodore Reuss VIII
(Initiated in the Pilgrim's Lodge 238, London).
Scotland — in 1877.

In connection with the statement made at the opening of this chapter that The Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia was modern Illuminism, the reader's attention must be drawn to the similarity of the grades of the modern Rosicrucian Society with those of Weishaupt's Bavarian Uluminism.

Much has been said and written by various and numerous English authorities on the subject of English Grand Lodge being in no wise connected with any outside societies, whether exoteric or esoteric or with foreign or, as they call it, " Continental " masonry.

We however submit the following suggestions as a logical deduction from a close study of the organization, activities and connections of the Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia.

English Grand. Lodge is today what it was intended to be at the time of its creation, by disciples of avowed Rosicrucianism, namely a dragnet or nursery. Under the guise of philanthropy, humanitarianism, democratic ideals, and the promise of material advancement, it attracts untold numbers of unsuspecting men. The sifting takes place from the time of their initiation. For those who are deemed useless to the further secret aims of Masonry and therefore unworthy of climbing from the Master's chair in Grand Lodge to The Royal Arch degree, English Masonry will always remain what it was represented to be when they became candidates for initiation. They will be useful carriers of the legend that English Masonry believes in God and philanthropy. But, like Charity, English Grand Lodge covers a multitude of sins.... Above all, it covers Gnosticism under all its aspects ; it is in fact its screen.

It is a common error to believe that the English Grand Lodge is an independent body which was formed in 1717. Logical deduction will show that, owing to its formation being the result of Rosicrucian effort, it always has been, and still must be, subject to the direction of its esoteric parent body, i. e. ROSICRUCIANISM or Manichean and Socinian Gnosticism.

Childish as may be the claim of English Grand Lodge as to its autonomy and independence, yet it has been most successfully defended by scores of English writers who attacked Masonic Societies and their subversive activities against state and religion. According to them English Grand Lodge was always exempted from such groups.

It is time to put an end to this legend. English Grand Lodge, the body which claims to represent English Freemasonry, is as much the child of Rosicrucianism today as it was in 1717 and has no more power or wish today to rebel against, or deny its parent, than it had then. As to Esoteric Rosicrucianism, this Esoteric body, mainly Cabalistic in its direction, always has been and is in truth international. It has penetrated every association, society or organization just as did the Illuminati of Bavaria at the Wilhelmsbad convent of 1782.

In the particular Gnostic Rosicruciana in Anglia, briefly sketched here, we see *internationalism* clearly depicted. At one time it was personified in Kenneth Mackenzie who, initiated and illuminized by the German Rosicrucian adepts, was later the connecting link between German, English and French Gnosticism, the latter represented at the time by Eliphas Levi (A. L. Constant).

Nearer to our own time, William Wynn Westcott is the connecting link of this international Rosicrucian-gnosticism. Prominent Grand Lodge and Royal Arch Mason, he was also Supreme Magus of Rosicruciana in Anglia and Knight Kadosch etc.

His connections with John Yarker, as also with the French hermetist Papus and with the theosophist Blavatsky, were of an esoteric kind, but most important of all were his close relations with his brother Rosicrucian MacGregor Mathers and the German Theodore Reuss. For it is, we know, William Wynn Westcott, the respected English Grand Lodge and Royal Arch Mason, Supreme Magus of Rosicruciana in Anglia who, together with the Cabalist MacGregor Mathers, created the Rosicrucian branch known as the Order of the Golden Dawn. With Theodore Reuss he was closely associated with the foundation of the Ordo Templi Orientis which from Reuss and Karl Kellner's manuscripts is known to be phallic.

How far the reciprocal conferring of degrees in their respective orders between John Yarker, W. W. Westcott, Theodore Reuss, Engel and Papus is a case of interpenetration remains to be determined. John Yarker was the head of the Ancient and Primitive Rite of the Rite of Swedenborg, etc., Wm. Wynn Westcott, the Supreme Magus of Rosicruciana in Anglia, Theodore Reuss and Engel, heads of the German Illuminati and Ordo Templi Orientis, and Papus, head of the Martinists. We are fully aware of the Gnostic practices of these different rites but the student bent on a certain type of research will find interesting and instructive the study of the political activities of the different bodies mentioned. The author of *Light Bearers of Darkness*[4] has attempted to show part of the nefarious political game played by adepts of the Stella Matutina and Golden Dawn Orders, two of the occult branches of Rosicruciana in Anglia.

---

[4] " Inquire Within ".

We reprint below two letters exchanged between William Wynn Westcott and the German Theodore Reuss which show the interlocking and international gnostic direction of those two late honoured members of English Grand Lodge Freemasonry.

It remains for the student to follow every line of enquiry to the point of ccncentration where all threads are gathered and systematically manipulated for the eventual destruction of Christian civilization.

It may lead to the B'nai B'rith, the Universal Israelite Alliance, India or Thibet, but in any case, a thorough and complete study of Rosicrucianism embracing a minute one of Rosicruciana in Anglia and its various branches will be a great step taken in the direction of uncovering much of the political and moral chaos of present day history of humanity.

Feb 14, 1902

Dear Bro. Reuss ;

I have to acknowledge receipt of Illuminati papers and safely received and they shall be translated and considered and I will report upon what I can do — Best thanks.

As to the Swed. Riie the Lodge Holy Grail No. 15 is all right and Bro. Yarker is entirely within his right to give you, a known Master Mason of England, a Warrant for a Lodge, but he hesitates to issue written authority for 6 Lodges which your Latomia[5] says are not regular. I *had* got his permission to make a Prov. Gd. Lodge of Germania for you but now he hesitates, because he does not want to have half the German Masonic World condemning him —

---

1. *Latomia* : One of the official periodicals of German Freemasonry.

as well as half the English, who condemn him for the A. & P. Rite.

Please write to him

John Yarker, Esq.
West Didsbury,
near Manchester
Eng.

and get his authority to go on, at present my hands are tied.

With best wishes,
Believe me,
Yours sincerely,

W. W. Westcott.

To Theodor Reuss

Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia
Dr. Wm. Wynn Westcott S. M. J. X.
Memorandum from the High Council
396, Camden Road, N.

Aug 26, 1902

Care Frater,

I have duly recd. your card & letter & Report, for all which best thanks. I hope you are well again. I am sorry you missed seeing my Bro. Gardner. I note what you say about the Illuminati and hereby accept the position of Regent, and must find a good man to work it up. Do I understand that Engel is now out of the order ? I have not heard any more from him.

Re Rosics.

Your fratres must each choose a Latin motto ; Mine is " Quod scis, nescis. " — even what you know — you don't really know — is a free translation — I will read your Report on Second Thursday in October to the High Council and Met. Coll.

There must be a lot of Rosic M. S. S. lying hid in your country, make every effort to find some. We have copies of two here. I will ask the H. C. about the use of Library. I propose to keep German contributions for buying further Books for it, and for that alone. You might look out to buy any German Rosic books for us.

Yours sincerely,

Wynn Westcott.

Photographic reproductions of the above letters and of other documents interesting to the student of Occult Theocrasy will be found in Appendix IV.

For root of this movement see Chapter XXII.
For development of this movement see Chapters CIX, CX, CXV.

CHAPTER LXXXVIII

THE CLAN-NA-GAEL (V. C.)

(Founded 1869)

In his oft quoted book, *The Secret Societies of Ireland,* Captain H. B. C. Pollard, late of the Staff of the Chief of Police, Ireland, gives much valuable information concerning the Clan-na-Gael (See page 69 *et seq.).*

" In 1869 a new secret Irish-American organization was formed, known as the Clan-na-Gael. It traces its origin back through a permanent secret society known as the Knights of the Inner Circle, which, in turn, descended from the Knights of St. Patrick, known as the Ancient Order of Hibernians to-day. It was originally a seceding circle (The Brian Boru) of the United Irishmen, an American society tracing back to 1789. "

By 1873, the Clan had absorbed all independent Irish secret societies save that of " The Irish Confederation " of Jeremiah O'Donovan Rossa with which it had reached an arrangement for mutual toleration.

" The original organizer of the Clan had called it the United Brotherhood, and in all its work a simple letter cipher composed of the next letter in the alphabet after the one really meant, was utilised. The secret name of the Clan being the United Brotherhood, it was therefore designated and spoken of as the V. C.

Ireland was known as ' Jsfmboe, ' and so on. To this day the Clan speaks and writes of the I. R. B. as the S. C.

" Up to 1881 the Clan-na-Gael was governed by an executive body, the F. C, and had an annually elected chairman. A Revolutionary Directory, the ' R. D. ' consisted of seven members[1]... Great secrecy shrouded the R. D. and the names of members were only known to the delegates and three ' Senior Guardians ' of each ' Camp ' of the Clan.

" These Lodges or ' Camps ' were known in cipher as ' D's '; each had a number and an outward innocent name, such as the Emmett Literary Association. The essential precaution for the maintenance of secrecy was the rule that all documents, when read, had to be burnt before the Brotherhood, a rule also common to the I. R. B. of today. "

" An open Irish movement had been evolving in the States[2] and a great Irish Convention was held at Chicago in November, 1881, where all kinds of Irish associations were to be represented by delegates who would be addressed on the subject of the Land League. By a clever political manoeuvre the Clan secured the office of Chairman to one of its members, the Rev. George Betts, and as he had the right of appointment of all members of committees, they were enabled to nominate a Clan-na-Gael majority and force the Clan views on the whole body of the Convention.

" In 1882 the Clan, which had for long controlled the secret organization in America, now also controlled all the various open Irish societies and associations which had been represented at the Convention. The mechanism of control was simple — the whole influence

[1] Pollard, *The Secret Societies of Ireland*, p. 71 *et seq.*

[2] United States of America.

of the Clan was exerted to secure to their members a preponderant representation as office-holders in these associations, and it soon became recognised that membership of the Clan was an indispensable preliminary to advancement in local Irish affairs.[3]

" The American Clan-na-Gael had concentrated all Irish organizations, however innocuous, in the body of the National League,[4] and had, by controlling the Committee of the League by its own members, thereby possessed itself not only of a vast field from which to draw funds and recruits, but of the whole co-ordinated political power of the Irish organizations in America. The process developed by the I. R. B. in Ireland was analogous ; through its members they were represented on the Committees and Councils of practically every organization which, in the opinion of its leaders, could be of use to it. The identity of the I. R. B. men was always a secret.

" The secret power of the Brotherhood was brought to bear on all questions of appointment to positions and offices in various open associations, and it was its influence and corruption which achieved those mysterious appointments to position of persons singularly devoid of merit, which were, and are, a marked feature of Irish life...

" In so far as the activist military policy of the I. R. B. was concerned, the period from 1895 to 1912 was practically negative.

" The I. R. B. had always held that membership of any sectarian secret society, such as the A. 0. H., or the Orange Society was incompatible with membership of the I. R. B.[5]

[3] Pollard, *op. cit.*, p. 90 *et seq.*

[4] Formed from The National Land League of America.

[5] Pollard, *op. cit.*, p. 98 *et seq.*

Howevei, the A. O. H. in America has for many years been under the direct control of the Clan-na-Gael which also influences through the A. 0. H. such American Catholic Associations as are not distinctly Irish, such as the Knights of Columbus, a Catholic Fraternal Society. "

In the year 1912 "the action of the North in arming had its immediate repercussion in the South... On November 25th 1913 *The Irish Volunteers,* as distinct from the Ulster Volunteers, had been formally instituted. "

" The outbreak of war introduced a new element in the shape of an alliance between the I. R. B., the Clan-na-Gael, and Germany. "

Casement, whose political activities were ruled by the two Germans, Albert Ballin of the Hamburg-American line and Professor Kuno Meyer, " had been active in the councils of the Irish Volunteers and at the date of the outbreak of war was in the United States on business connected with the relationship between the I. R. B. and the Clan-na-Gael... On the 3rd Nov. 1914, he reached Berlin and laid before the German Foreign Office the suggestion of alliance between the Irish Republicans and Germany, and established a line of communication via the American Clan-na-Gael with revolutionary Ireland. From Berlin, he communicated with Judge Cohalan and John Devoy, the Clan Leaders in the States, who, in turn, maintained communication with the I. R. B. in Ireland through emissaries and an established letter-carrying service on craft crossing between Ireland and America.[6]

" The arrangements between the Clan-na-Gael as representing the I. R. B. and the German Government are amply set forth in such documents as the British Government has yet disclosed. e. g. in the White Paper, *Documents relative to the Sinn Fein movement,* published by H. M. Stationery office in 1921. "

---

[6] Pollard, *op. cit.,* p. 134 *el seq.*

The Wolf von Igel papers, taken by the United States Government at 60 Wall Street, New York, in April 1916, further prove the complicity of the Clan-na-Gael. Casement was captured when he landed from a German submarine on the coast of Kerry, April 21, 1916.

The rebellion broke out in Dublin on Easter Monday, April 24, 1916 and on April 29 P. H. Pearse, the rebel leader, President of the Provisional government, surrendered to General Sir John Maxwell, and on the first of May the rebels surrendered.

After the entry of the United States into the war in 1917, the Irish-German headquarters were transferred to Spain, operating from there via South America back to the Clan-na-Gael.

" In 1921, on the 6th of December, the Irish representatives and the Cabinet signed a Peace Treaty which gave Ireland the status of a Dominion. "

For root of this movement see Chapter LXXXII.
For development of this movement see Chapter CXVI.

CHAPTER LXXXIX

THE NIHILISTS

(Founded 1869)

The Nihilists were founded in the spring of 1869 by Netchaief who had adopted the views of social organization which have found expression in the works of Proudhon and Abbe Constant.

As anarchists, they embraced the usual anarchist ideals some of which, such as " property is theft ", and " death to Tyrants ", could be useful to other organizations.

CHAPTER XC

THE CRYPTIC RITE

(Founded in England 1871)

Introduced into England in 1871 from America under the authority of the Grand Council of New York, the Grand Mastership was awarded by the Grand Council to the Rev. G. R. Portal, M. A., in 1873.

CHAPTER XCI

THE SAT BHAI OF PRAGUE

(Founded 1872)

According to John Yarker, who was president of the order, " this is a Hindu Society organized by the Pundit of an Anglo-Indian regiment, and brought into this country, about the year 1872 by Major J. H. Lawrence Archer. The name alludes to the bird *Malacocercis grisis* which always fly by sevens. It has seven descending degrees, each of seven disciples who constitute their seven and seven ascending degrees of Perfection *Ekata* or Unity. Its object is the study and development of Indian philosophy. Somehow, its *raison d'etre* ceased to be necessary when the Theosophical Society was established by the late H. P. Blavatsky, which at one time at least had its secret signs of Reception. "[1]

References are said tc have been made to its esoteric object in Rudyard Kipling's *Kim* which, according to Rene Guenon, can be accepted as a regular autobiography. According to Guenon " that which is told therein concerning the rivalry of the Russians and the English in southern India is strictly historical.

---

1. John Yarker, *The Arcane Schools,* p. 492.

Among other things one finds curious details on the organization by the English, for this purpose, of a secret society called Sat Bhai ".[2]

[2] Rene Guenon, *Le Theosophisme*, p. 293.

For development of this movement see Chapters XCV, CI.

CHAPTER XCII

ANCIENT AND PRIMITIVE RITE
RITE OF MEMPHIS
ENGLAND

(Founded 1872)

John Yarker, in a pamphlet *The Grand Mystic Temple,* states that in 1872 " we (the English) took from them (the Americans) a Charter for its (The Ancient and Primitive Rite) degrees 33-95 in and for Great Britain and Ireland and in the Scottish Rite allied ourselves with the Supreme Grand Council 33, (Cerneau) for the United States of America, of which the writer (John Yarker) was made honorary 33°, Representative of Amity. We had thus for long the Scottish Rite allied with Mizraim, and now with Memphis. In the case of the former, we established Representatives with various Supreme Grand Councils and revised the Statutes of 1762, in preference to the forged Constitution of 1786 in the year 1884; in Mizraim with the old bodies of Naples and Paris ; and in Memphis with America, Egypt, Roumania and various other bodies working that Rite. We also, in these three Rites, accepted foreign Charters to confirm our original powers. "

Yarker then makes the following apologia —

" Whatever may be the value assigned to Craft Masonry in this country (England), a Master Mason is held in small esteem abroad. . . . Our object in giving our time at our own cost to these degrees is to break with the unmasonic exclusiveness bred of sycophancy and to give every reputable Master Mason a chance of acquiring the high Masonic initiation at a reasonable cost.[1]

Neophytes upon entering a Chapter received the 18th degree of the Ancient and Accepted Rites (Rose Croix) and Ancient and Primitive Rites and 46th of Mizraim. Advanced in a Senate, these receive the 30th of the two Rites and the 66th of Mizraim. In the series of the Council they receive the higher and more important occult grades of Mizraim and Memphis or Ancient and Primitive Masonry.

" The governing body or ' Sovereign-Sanctuary Supreme Grand Council of Rites 33-95 has already issued Charters for Grand Mystic Temples, Council General (of Rites) 32-94, for England, Scotland, Ireland, New Zealand and West Africa and each Charter covers a Grand Consistory 32-93, Ancient and Accepted Rite and Supreme Grand Council, 33rd. It has also established a Sovereign body with like powers for the German Empire.[2]

" The Constitution of the A. and P. Rite declares ' that Great Britain and Ireland derives from the Sovereign Sanctuary for the American Continent, which again derives its authority from the Sovereign Sanctuary of France, the College of Rites and the Grand Orient of France '. In America authority was vested in Harry J. Seymour by Letters Patent granted to

---

1. John Yarker, *The Grand Mystic Temple.*
2. *Ibid.*

him by the Executive Chiefs of the Rite in Paris in 1862. Ten years later a Patent and Dispensation was granted by the Ill. Sov. Gr. M. Gn., Harry J. Seymour, on February 23rd, 1872, to M. I. Bro. John Yarker, as Sov. Gr. M. Gn. to establish the Sovereign Sanctuary in and for Great Britain and Ireland; ' and he came over to England to inaugurate personally at Manchester and London the foundation of the Rite. "[3]

" Further on, The Constitution intimates that Egypt was the source of the knowledge deposited in this system. But it apparently arose in France and went to Egypt returning in 1815 with a wealth of esoteric lore, under the name of... Disciples of Memphis. "

" None but Master Masons in good standing were and are admitted to the Rite which consequently begins after the three Craft Degrees. "

On Nov. 11, 1912, John Yarker was elected Grand Imperial Hierophant 97. After his death on March 20, 1913, a meeting was held at a Special Convocation of the Supreme Sanctuary of the Ancient and Primitive Rite of Masonry at 33 Avenue Studios, 76 Fulham Road, South Kensington, London S. W., on Monday June 30, 1913, at five o'clock, and Bro. Henry Meyer of 25 Longton Grove, Sydenham, Kent, was elected Sov. Grand Master General for Great Britain and Ireland. The minutes of the meeting were signed by. —

Henry Meyer 33° 90° 96°
Sovereign Grand Master General
Edward Aleister Crowley 33° 90° 96°
Patriarch Grand Administrator General
Wm. Hy. Quilliam 33° 90° 96°
Patriarch Grand Keeper General of the Golden Book.

---

[3] *Speculative Mason,* July 1927, vol. 19.

Leon Engers-Kennedy 33° 90° 95°
Patriarch Grand Secretary General.
Theodor Reuss 33° 90° 95°
Sovereign Grand Master General ad Vitam for the German Empire and Grand Inspector General

The women's branch of this rite and its interlocking possibilities is best shown by the reproduction of Madame Blavatsky's diploma, which was published in *The Theosophist* of March 1913 (M91) and is reproduced again on page 66 of *Freemasonry Universal* Vol. V, Part 2, *Autumn Equinox,* 1929.

There it is stated that " we have declared and proclaimed and by these presents do declare and proclaim our illustrious and enlightened Brother, H. P. Blavatsky, to be an Apprentice, Companion, Perfect Mistress, Sublime Elect Scotch Lady, Grand Elect Chevaliere de Rose Croix, Adonaite Mistress, Perfect Venerable Mistress, and a Crowned Princess of Rite of Adoption. "

The diploma is signed
John Yarker 33, Sovereign Grand Master
M. Caspari 33, Grand Chancellor.
A. D. Loewenstark 33, Grand Secretary.

The organ of the order is *Kneph.*

For root of this movement see Chapters XLVII, LXIV.
For development of this movement see Chapter CX.

CHAPTER XCIII

THE ANARCHISTS

(Founded 1872)

Anarchists claim direct descent from Diderot and those factions which during the French Revolution of 1789 had formed the clubs of the *Enrages* and *Hebertistes.* Prudhon was their prototype.

Chronologically speaking, however, the Anarchist party was formed on Sept. 29, 1872, when a split occurred in the ranks of the participants in the Hague Congress of the International Association of Workers, numbers siding with Bakunin whilst others rallied round Karl Marx.

Bakunin's adherents formed the Anarchist party and organized in Switzerland the " Federation Jurassienne " which soon extended its ramifications to Northern Italy, Eastern France and Spain. The Federation's tenets were plainly anarchistic, urging terrorism as the means of overthrowing all forms of existing governments. The attempt of Haedel on the life of the German Emperor Wilhelm in 1878, as well as the murder of the Tzar Alexander II of Russia, 1882, were engineered by anarchists. From Europe, their activities spread to the United States of America when Most, the German anarchist, founder of the Freiheit, went to New York and, with Julius Schwab, organized the Anarchist movement in America, founding the Socialist and Revolutionary Club of New York in 1880 and such press organs as *The Anarchists* of Boston, later followed by *Liberty.* The methods of these societies are identical with those of the I. W. W., the " Industrial Workers of the World ".

For root of this movement see Chapter LXXXV.
For development of this movement see Chapter CXXV.

CHAPTER XCIV

THE ANCIENT AND ARCHAEOLOGICAL ORDER OF DRUIDS

(Founded 1874)

Founded by Bros. R. Wentworth Little, W. Hyde Pullen and Thomas Massa, in 1874, this order is restricted to members of the Masonic body only.

Among its members have been W. R. Woodman, M. D., George Kenning, K. R. H. Mackenzie, E. H. Thiellay and S. Rosenthal.

It claims to be a study society for Ancient and Modern Druidism.

For root of this movement see Chapter LXXXVII.

CHAPTER XCV

THE THEOSOPHICAL SOCIETY

(Founded 1875)

The Theosophical Society, with nine degrees, was founded in 1875 by Helena Petrovna Blavatsky (1831-1891) daughter of Colonel Peter Hahn and grand-daughter of General Alexis Hahn von Rottenstern Hahn, of Mecklenburg, Germany, settled in Russia. When very young, she married Niciphore Blavatsky, Councillor of State, from whom she separated after three months.

As regards the founder of this order, Rene Guenon, who has made a close study of Theosophy, thus briefly sketches her career.

" Mme. Blavatsky's extraordinary life of adventure started in 1848. During her travels in. Asia Minor with her friend Countess Kiseleff, she met a Copt (some say a Chaldean) called Paulos Metamon, who claimed to be a magician, and who seems to have been a fairly accomplished conjurer. She continued her travels with this personage with whom she went to Greece and Egypt till her funds gave out, when she returned to Europe. " [1]

1. Rene Guénon, *Le Théosophisme,* p. 12.

Having quarrelled with her family, she was unable to go to Russia so she went to London where she frequented spiritistic and revolutionary circles. She was initiated into the Carbonari by Mazzini in 1856 and was also an initiate of the Order of the Druses, according to John Yarker.

About this period, (1856) her *Mahatma* Morya is supposed first to have manifested. The *Mahatmas* Morya and Koot Hoomi are said to be members of the highest degree of "The Great White Lodge ", that is to say of the occult Hierarchy which, according to the theosophists, secretly governs the world.

Guenon thus continues :[2]

" Towards 1858, Madame Blavatsky decided to return to Russia; she became reconciled with her father, staying with him till 1863 when she went to the Caucasus and met her husband. A little later she was in Italy whither she seemed to have been summoned by a Carbonarist order; in 1866, she was with Garibaldi, whom she accompanied during his expeditions, she fought at Viterbo, then at Mentana, where she was seriously wounded and left on the field as dead ; she recovered however and went to Paris for her convalescence. There she remained some time under the influence of a certain Victor Michal, a spiritist-magnetizer. This Michal, a journalist, was a Freemason as was also his friend Rivail *(alias* Allan Kardec) once founder, later director of the Folies-Marigny and the pioneer of French spiritism. It was Michal who developed the mediumistic faculties of Madame Blavatsky... Madame Blavatsky was, at that time, herself a believer in spiritism and claimed to belong to the school of Allan Kardec, from whom she preserved certain ideas, notably those concerning reincarnation. "

---

[2] René Guénon, *op. cit.,* p. 14.

In 1867, she succeeded after three previous attempts in entering Tibet.

" Inquire Within ", who acknowledges Guenon as her source of information and who has also closely followed the activities of Madame Blavatsky during this period of her life, refers to her visit to America in the following terms :

" In 1875 Madame Blavatsky was sent from Paris to America where she met Henry Steel Olcott and where on October 20, 1875, a society, said to be for ' spiritualist investigations ', was founded in New York.

" Olcott was President, Felt and Dr. Seth Pancoast vice-presidents, and Madame Blavatsky Secretary. Among other members were William Q. Judge, Charles Sothern, one of the high dignitaries of American Masonry, also for a short time General Albert Pike, Grand Master of the Scottish Rite for the Southern Jurisdiction U. S. A., who was said to be the author of the thirty-three degrees received from the Arabian member of the ' Great School. ' ".[3]

To anyone who has read Part 1 of this book the significance of this connection with Pike and Luciferianism at this period requires no further comment!

Guenon, detailing this American visit of Madame Blavatsky, further explains how " George H. Felt, self-styled Professor of Mathematics and Egyptologist, had been introduced to Madame Blavatsky by a journalist called Stevens. Felt was a member of a secret society generally called by the initials ' H. B. of L. ' (Hermetic Brotherhood of Luxor). This society, which played a prominent part in the first stages of spiritistic phenomena in America, is definitely opposed to spiritistic theories, for it teaches that these phenomena are due, not to the spirits of the dead, but to certain forces directed by living men. "[4]

---

[3] " Inquire Within ", *Light-bearers of Darkness,* p. 26.

Madame Blavatsky and Olcott had both joined this society from which they were expelled before they left America.

A letter from John Yarker quoted in *Freemasonry Universal* (Vol V, part 2 *Autumn Equinox,* 1929) is here relevant. It states that Madame Blavatsky's masonic certificate in the Ancient and Primitive Rite of Masonry was issued in the year 1877.

Yarker writes " Both the Rites of Memphis and Mizraim, as well as the Grand Orient of France, possessed a Branch of Adoptive Masonry, popular in France in the 18th century and of which, in later years, the Duchess of Bourbon held the Rank of Grand Mistress.

" We accordingly sent H. P. B., on the 24/11/77, a Certificate of the highest rank, that of a Crowned Princess 12, said to have been instituted at Saxe in the last quarter of the 18th century. "

" In November, 1878 ", according to ' Inquire Within', " Madame Blavatsky and Olcott left for India, and in 1882 founded the Theosophical centre in Adyar, near Madras ; there she initiated her ' esoteric section ', and contacted the so-called ' Mahatmas ', and her phantastic phenomena, precipitated letters, astral bells, materialisations, etc., were in time suspected and exposed. The matter was taken up by the ' Society for Psychical Research ', which in December, 1885, reported her as ' one of the most accomplished, most ingenious, and most interesting impostors. '[5]

---

[4] René Guénon, *op. cit.,* p. 21.

[5] Inquire Within, *op. cit.,* p. 26 *et seq.*

" Mrs. Besant was presented to Madame Blavatsky in 1889 by the socialist Herbert Burrows, also member of the Stella Matutina, and she immediately succumbed to Madame Blavatsky's irresistible magnetism and formidable power of suggestion. Madame Blavatsky died in London May 8, 1891. Mrs. Besant was elected President in 1907. From 1910 to its consummation one of her chief works, assisted by Leadbeater, was to train Krishnamurti as Messiah, or as he preferred to be called, ' World Teacher '. On February 19, 1922, an alliance between Mrs. Besant's Co-masonry and the Grand Orient of France was celebrated at the Grand Temple of the *Droit Humain* in Paris. "

The Society has over seven hundred affiliated sects at present. " Its objects are, The World Religion, The World University, and the World Government (by the Restoration of the Mysteries, i. e. by the recognition of their place as the World Government as they were recognized in ancient days, the place they have ever continued to occupy...). " [6]

The political status of this organization as a centralizing point for numerous secret and theocratic orders is evidenced by a letter dated July 1, 1926, from 171 Palace Chambers, Westminster, London, according to which the Editors and Correspondents of the English Information Service, to which was given the name of " The Theosophical News Bureau ", were officially authorized to issue statements on behalf of : —

The Theosophical Society
The Theosophical Educational Trust
The Theosophical World University [7]

[6] *The Theosophist.*

[7] Papus (Docteur Encausse), *Traite elementaire de Science Occulte,* p. 147.

The following is a translation :

The Order of the Star in the East (closed)
The Liberal Catholic Church
The Order of Universal Co-Freemasonry.

In 1887, when Madame Blavatsky settled in London, she had started a Theosophical magazine called *Lucifer the light-bringer* and published her *Secret Doctrine.* She is the authoress of another well known work *Isis unveiled.*

In the year 1889, Mr. MacGregor Mathers, 8th degree Rosicruciana in Anglia, wrote a letter to the editor of *Lucifer* in which he stated that the Theosophical and Rosicrucian Societies entertained very friendly relations [8] and this idea of " friendly foreign relations " is further confirmed by Rene Guenon who writes : " There are persons who believe that the ' Esoteric Section ' exists no longer in the Theosophical Society, but that is not so ; the truth is that, to defeat curiosity, it has been made into a nominally separate organization but one nevertheless, under the same direction ".

The religious principles of The Theosophical Society are gnostic and anti-christian and are the same as those of " The Hermetic Society ".

Numerous were the dissensions and many were the

" Each one of these adaptations being applicable to the physical or spiritual world, one understands how real ' Illuminés ' can draw towards the light of truth, towards this ' light which illuminates all men coming into this world ', towards the divine living voice, the profanes called to initiation.

But for that it was necessary that the fundamental and hermetic key of the degrees and their adaptation should be conserved by *an occult university.* Such was the role that the Rose-Croix and the judeo-christians had reserved to themselves. "

[8] Sedir, *Histoire des Rose-Croix,* p. 124.

offshoots of this association among which the best known are The Anthroposophical Society and The Theosophical Society of America.

For root of this movement see Chapter LXXIV.
For development of this movement see Chapters C, CXXI.

CHAPTER XCVI

PRIMITIVE AND ORIGINAL PHREMASONS

(SWEDENBORGIAN RITE)

(Founded 1876)

Known as the Rite of Primitive and Original Phremasons, The Supreme Grand Lodge and Temple of the Swedenborgian Rite received its charter on 1/10/1876 from the Supreme Council of the Phremasons in Canada (founded by the Golden Square Body of London) which was composed of the following well-known Brethren :

M. N. Brother Colonel W. J. B. McLeod Moore S. G. M., Grand Master of Templars and 33°
R. W. Brother T. D. Harrington, S. G. S. W., Pt. G. M. of the Grand Lodge of Canada and 33°
R. W. Brother George Canning Longley. 33°

The officers of the Supreme Council for England then appointed were :—

M. W. Brother John Yarker. S. G. M.
R. W. Brother Captain R. G. Irwin. S. G. S. W.
R. W. Brother Captain Chas. Scott J. P., S. G. J. W.
Supreme Grand Secretary Dr. K. R. H. Mackenzie.

Upon the death of Scott and the retirement of Irwin, Dr. Wynn Westcott and Major G. Turner were appointed respectively.

All members of the rite of Swedenborg must be Master Masons.

The rite has six degrees, the craft degrees and three others, namely, Enlightened Prince or Green Brother, Sublime Prince or Blue Brother, and Perfect Prince or Red Brother.

The Rosicrucian and Grail grades form the apotheosis of the entire system.

Bro. John Yarker tells us (see page 416 in *The Equinox*, March 1912) that Samuel Beswick informed him that in his book, the matter added by Chastanier had been rejected and " that what was left was the work of Swedenborg. Hence", continues Bro. Yarker, "Bro. Waite's description of two secret and unnamed degrees, are of interest at this point ".

In 1902, Brother Yarker, Grand Master of the Rite, authorized Theodore Reuss to found six Holy Grail Lodges in Germany. The officers of this Provincial Grand Lodge of Germania were :

R. W.	Theodore Reuss	Prov. Grand Master
	Leopold Engel	Prov. Grand Senior Warden
	Erich Walter	Prov. Grand Junior Warden
	August Weinholtz	Prov. Deputy Grand Master
	Max Heilbronner	Prov. Grand Treasurer
	Siegmund Miller	Prov. Grand Secretary
	Franz Held	Prov. Grand Marshall
	Max Suppas Dr. R. Gross	Prov. Grand Stewards

George Gierloff, Guardian

The Secretary of the Sovereign Grand Lodge of Swedenborg in. England at this date was Wm. Wynn Westcott.

For root of this movement see Chapter XL.
For development of this movement see Chapter CX.

CHAPTER XCVII

THE NATIONAL LAND LEAGUE

(Founded 1879)

On Oct. 21,' 1879, this organization was established at Dublin, Ireland, with Charles Stewart Parnell as its President. It cooperated closely with the Clan-na-Gael. Among its members were Egan, the treasurer, Biggar, Dillon, J. J. O'Kelly, London and Harris. The league was responsible for many agrarian outrages and in October, Parnell, Sexton, Kelly, Wm. O'Brien and Michael Davitt were arrested and imprisoned. From jail they issued a manifesto advising all tenants to pay no rent. On Oct. 18, 1881 the Government suppressed the Land League.

The American branch of the National Land League was founded in 1880.

For root of this movement see Chapter LXXXVIII.

CHAPTER XCVIII

THE RUSSELLITES

OR THE INTERNATIONAL BIBLE STUDENTS

(Founded 1879)

The International Bible Student Movement was founded by Charles Taze Russell (1852-1916) with the object chiefly of attracting the lower middle class intelligentsia of Christian communities such as certain clerical workers, teachers, servants and persons not accessible to direct forms of propaganda. In America the movement has had great influence among the negro element.

In 1879 Russell founded *The Watch Tower* of which he was the sole editor.

The Russellite teaching, drawing its own arbitrary conclusions and proclaiming them as final, professes to prove from Biblical sources that all Christian churches are evil and corrupt, that the time of the Gentiles ended in 1914, and that the Jews must henceforth reign supreme over the world. It also elaborates an occult dogma alleged to be based on biblical precedents.

It condemns the Roman Catholic Church, referring to Rome in true esoteric Masonic style as Babylon and disposes of the Pope and his entire hierarchy as agents of the Antichrist who are doomed to extinction according to the familiar Masonic formulas of Albert Pike, Mazzini and Co. We are further told on biblical authority, interpreting the following words in Rev. II. 24 " As they speak " that this means that " Satan is a name applicable to Rome as describing its characteristics. [1]

The Protestant Episcopal and other Christian churches which in Russell's graphic language are " the Harlot daughters of the Romish Church " and " have committed fornication " which term he interprets as meaning the union of Church and State, so bitterly opposed by the Jews in all countries, fare no better at the pen of this prolific writer, who predicts that, under the visible rulership of the Ancient Worthies (The Jewish Sanhedrin), those Gentiles who still believe in Christ will acknowledge his reign as an invisible one while submitting as Christians to all the hardships these Jewish lords might choose to put upon them.

Brother Russell gives us little hope for the time of tribulation which is upon us, for on page 122 of *The Finished Mystery* he wrecks any hopes we might still cherish with regard to benevolent brotherhoods in the following sentence — " As the trouble increases, men will seek, but in vain, for protection in the great rocks and fortresses of society (Freemasonry, Oddfellowship, and Trades Unions, Guilds, Trusts and all societies secular and ecclesiastical) and in the mountains (governments) of the earth ".

The publications of The International Bible Students Association are interesting samples of political propaganda and seem well calculated to suppress possible instincts of revolt among such members of the Christian community as might object to the role allotted to them under the Jewish Super State.

The present head of this movement is John Rutherford.

1. The International Bible Students Association, *The Finished Mystery,* p. 43, pub. 1918.

For the root of this movement see Chapter LXXVI.

CHAPTER XCIX

THE INVINCIBLES

(Founded 1881)

In his historical sketch of " The Invincibles ", Captain Pollard thus records their foundation and activities : "The Executive of the Irish Invincibles was joined by members of the I. R. B. but the two organizations were kept distinct. "

" The Invincibles conceived the idea of assassinating all British officials in Ireland, and held themselves to be guerilla soldiers. " Their chief was P. J. Tynan always alluded to as Number 1. [1]

The assassination of Lord Frederick Cavendish, Chief Secretary, and Mr. Burke, known as the " Phoenix Park murders " were perpetrated by this association.

---

[1] Pollard, *The Secret Societies of Ireland,* p. 82.
For root of this movement see Chapter XCIV.

CHAPTER C

SOCIETE THEOSOPHIQUE D'ORIENT ET D'OCCIDENT

(Founded 1882)

The secret society called *La Société Théosophique d'Orient et d'Occident* was a spiritist organization founded by the Duchesse de Pomar (Lady Caithness) in 1882.

The Duchess was personally in close touch with Eliphas Levi, Mme. Blavatsky, Colonel Olcott, Mrs. Besant, Dr. Encausse, and other well known occultists of the period.

For the root of this movement see Chapter XCV.

CHAPTER CI

GRAND LAMAISTIC ORDER OF LIGHT

(FRATRES LUCIS)

(Founded 1882)

This order, *Fratres Lucis,* was founded in 1882. by an English Jew called Maurice Vidal Portman, an orientalist and a politician who in 1876 was in close contact with Lord Lytton, then Viceroy of India, the author of the well known occult novel *Zanoni.* [1]

As regards this order, John Yarker, recipient of The Crown of Kether, gives us the following information :

" The Altar is that of Maha Deva and had a ritual of three degrees — Novice, Aspirant, Viator. The writer (John Yarker) arranged with Bro. Portman to amalgamate it with the Sat Bhai, Rite of Perfection, but it seems to be continued separately at Bradford, Yorkshire, as the ' Oriental Order of Light '. Its early certificate adopted the forms of the Cabala, with which the Theosophy of India has some affinity. In the East, ceremonial degrees are not valued, the object being the development of practical occultism, which was the purpose of the establishment of the Order of Light, governed by a Grand Master of the Sacred Crown or Kether of

---

1. René Guénon, *Le Theosophisme,* p. 297.

the Cabala. The writer (John Yarker) has a letter from Bro. Portman in which he says ; ' the Sat Bhai rituals are without exception the finest and best suited to an occult order of anything I have ever read ' and he leaves all arrangements in the writer's hands. "[2]

If, as John Yarker says, the Altar is indeed that of Maha Deva, we refer the reader to that part of this book where the Indian cult of Siva (The Destroyer, Maha Deva) is outlined.

The present headquarters of the order are still at Bradford, Yorkshire.

---

[2] John Yarker, *The Arcane Schools,* p. 429.

CHAPTER CII

THE AHMADIYYAH SECT

(Founded 1882)

The ahmadiyyah sect is described in an article by Fr. Lawrence as having been founded in 1882 at Quadiam, Punjab, by Mirza Ghulam Ahmad, who died in 1908. It resembles in many ways Bahaism and attempts to conciliate the oriental and occidental religions while its dogma, based on the shi'a (unorthodox Mahometan) foundation of free thought, embraces the buddhist belief, rites and metempsychosis as well as the idea of the occult Messiah.

In accordance with the Ismali theory of the advent of the reincarnated mahdi at the opening of each century, this sect proclaims their founder to have been the reincarnation of Christ for the XIV Century (XX of our era) and the harbinger of the future Messiah.

An Indian branch of the sect endorses a legend according to which Christ, having escaped the Pharisees, died at Srinagar, Kashmir. At this place is the tomb of an obscure buddhist saint Yus-asaf.

The propaganda of the sect is worked from two centres, one at Lahore, India, and the other at Woking, England, the latter being chiefly political in character adhering to the kemalist and panturanic programme.

At Lahore resides the esoteric Indian chief of the sect, Muham-mab-Ali. In London is the other head, Kemal-ud-Din.

The chief publications of the order are

The Islamic Review	London
The Sun of Islam	Lahore
The Light	Lahore
Moslem Sunrise	Chicago
Moslemische Review	Berlin
Revue Islamique	Island of Mauritius

The Durang mosque is attended by English converts as well as Indians.

For root of this movement see Chapter XVII".

CHAPTER CIII

CO-MASONRY

(ANCIENT AND ACCEPTED SCOTTISH RITES)

SOVEREIGN GRAND MASTER, ELECTED 1929,
THE VERY ILLUSTRIOUS BROTHER LUCIEN LEVI 33°.

(Founded 1892)

We quote the following from a pamphlet issued under the sanction of the Deputy of the Supreme Council of Universal Co-Masonry for Great Britain and its Dependencies by the Grand Secretary of the said Jurisdiction.

" In the system of the Grand Orient of France the Craft lodges are under the control of the Supreme Council of the highest degree of the rite. The first attempt to found mixed lodges in France was made in 1774. These adoptive lodges spread to other countries, but the modern Co-Masonic Order or, *L'Ordre Maçonnique Mixte International* Was founded in 1882. It consisted of a group of Lodges which united under the name of *La Grande Loge Symbolique Ecossaise de France,* received immediate recognition from the Grand Orient of France.

" In 1872 the Lodge *Le Droit Humain* was founded by Mademoiselle Maria Deraismes in the presence of Dr. Georges Martin, a prominent mason.

" In 1900 the new *Grande Loge Symbolique* amended its policy so as to enable it to extend its ramifications to other countries and to work the higher degrees. Aided by Brethren in possession of the 33rd degree, the body was then raised from a Craft Grand Lodge to a Supreme Council of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rites. Madame Marie Martin, the close friend and collaborator of Mademoiselle Deraismes, succeeded upon the death of the latter to the leadership of the movement, (Dr. Georges Martin holding the Office of Grand Orateur) and held it till her death in 1914.

" There are Co-Masonic lodges in France, Belgium, England, Scotland, India, Australia, South Africa, America, Holland, Java, Switzerland and Norway.

" The first English Co-Masonic Lodge was consecrated in London on Sept. 26th 1902 by the Grand Officers of the Supreme Council under the title of Human Duty, No. 6, and Mrs. Annie Besant was created Vice-President Grand Master of the Supreme Council and Deputy for Great Britain and its Dependencies.

" The Grand Lodge of England does not recognize this particular body of Masonry (1927) but Universal Co-Masonry recognises and admits to its lodges Masons of all regularly constituted Masonic orders. Its laws and regulations are based on the principles adopted by the Universal Assembly of Supreme Councils gathered together at Lausanne on Sept. 22nd, 1875. "

Much of the real information bearing upon the position of woman in Masonry has been omitted by Masonic writers and the reader would be well advised to refer for it to Vol I.

In *The Hidden Life in Freemasonry* (p. 191) C. W. Leadbeater 33° gives us the following cryptic description of the preparation of the Candidate for Initiation into the degree of Apprentice in the Co-masonic order : "Before his admission he is divested of all m...s and v...s, is h...d, and has his r... a...,]… b… and 1... k... b…, and his r... h... s...d. "

" In plain English the foregoing would read : Before his admission he is divested of all metals and valuables, is hoodwinked and has his right arm, left breast and left knee bared and his right heel slip shod. "

The candidate thus prepared is saturated with magnetic energy during the ensuing ceremony from which consequently he or she issues already under hypnotic influence.

These hypnotic bonds are further strengthened during the ensuing ceremonies of Apprentice and Master Mason which however, in this order, according to Mr. Leadbeater's description of elementals, undines and other sprites, seem to emulate very closely the phenomena of the Spiritualist's seance room.

After attainment by the Candidate to the third degree the Kundalini is supposed to be fully developed.

CHAPTER CIV

KNIGHTS OF COLUMBUS

(Founded 1882)

The Knights of Columbus is the name of a Roman Catholic organization founded in 1882, in the United States of America, by a Roman Catholic priest, Father P. McGivney of New Haven, Connecticut.

From the Roman Catholic paper, *La Croix,* of Paris, in the number dated December 20, 1913, we gather that, at that date, the Knights of Columbus wielded an immense power with which public authorities had to reckon. Their number then was acknowledged to be more than three hundred thousand. The Order had four degrees and was headed by a Grand Master, six pro-Grand Masters and a General Secretary. The territory of the United States was divided into six provinces, each province administered by one of the six pro-Grand Masters. Each province was in turn subdivided in districts administered by a Master of the 4th degree and appointed by the Grand Masters for a period of two years. Districts were subdivided in councils or chapters.

The *Verité* of Quebec, a Canadian paper, in August 1913, put the number of the councils at 1630. At that time, the Supreme Council of the Knights of Columbus was composed of James O'Flaherty, Martin H. Carmody, William J. McGinley, Daniel J. Callahan and Joseph C. Pelletier.

The order of the Knights of Columbus was the cause of much perturbation in the Roman Catholic Church.

Under cover of being an association for mutual help, it had recruited a considerable number of members whc believed that the Order was fully approved by the Church authorities. When however its activities took on the appearance of a Masonic society with initiation rituals, symbolism and secret oaths, many among the Catholic Clergy became alarmed. Their fears were not allayed when it was known that the leaders of the Knights of Columbus were having fraternal exchanges of all kinds with the Oddfellows, Templars and other Masonic bodies. The climax was reached when it was rumoured that in Rome, the Knights of Columbus had petitioned the Pope to allow their members to become, at least in the United States, regular Masons.

The Knights of Columbus, like the Oddfellows, formed lodges of adoption in 1913, women being enrolled under the caption of " Daughters of Isabella ". Women lodges were called " courts ". In 1913, the number of " courts " was over 200 and the membership of " Daughters of Isabella " over two hundred thousand.

Like the society of Oddfellows and similarly to the O. T. O. of the Rosicrucians the Knights of Columbus hold much power over the property and various interests of their members.

Due to their efforts in the direction of establishing a universal religion and inter-confessionalism, the Knights of Columbus have been considered by a large section of the Roman Catholic clergy as an element having departed from the teachings of the Church of Rome and whose secret aim is to bore from within and disintegrate the Roman Catholic power.

Although the Knights of Columbus and the Daughters of Isabella have extended their ramifications into the United Kingdom, it is in the United States that their strength mainly resides. This is easily understood when one studies the activities of Roman Catholics in America and realises that, there, they are far more a political entity with subversive tendencies than a religious body.

CHAPTER CV

CHRISTIAN SCIENCE

(Founded 1883)

Christian Science was founded in 1883.

Mary Baker Eddy, the founder, was born in 1821 at Bow, New Hampshire, U. S. A. and died in 1910.

Having suffered greatly all her life from neurasthenia and hysteria she developed mediumship at an early age. Spiritistic sessions further revealed her psychic gifts but it is more than likely that her early years of experimental psychic research exposed her, in after years, to the horrors of what she later described as " Malicious Animal Magnetism ", familiarly referred to by her students as M. A. M.

At the age of 22, she married George Washington Glover, a Freemason and Oddfellow, who took her to live at Charleston, South Carolina, six months later. However he contracted yellow fever while at Wilmington where he died in June 1844.

In 1853, she married Daniel Patterson, a medical practitioner, from whom she was later separated.

In October 1862 she applied for medical assistance to Phineas Parkhurst Quimby (d. 1866) a healer, who had many marvellous cures to his credit. His medical system was based on an understanding of the scientific laws governing the use of hypnotism, mesmerism and suggestion. It is claimed that she derived her system from him.

Her book *Science and Health* was first published in 1875.

In 1877 she married Asa Gilbert Eddy who left her a widow in 1882.

In 1881, she founded the Massachusetts Metaphysical College in Boston and two years later, when the movement was well established, started publishing the *Christian Science Journal.*

On June 13, 1888, the National Christian Science Association held its second annual meeting at Central Music Hall, Chicago. This had been organized as well as advertised by George B. Day, Pastor of the First Church of Christ Scientists, Chicago, and the speech delivered by Mrs. Eddy on the second day of this session was acclaimed by her 4,000 listeners as an inspired oration. In view of the extraordinary pitch of enthusiasm attained by her audience and knowing the practice of "charging" public rooms or halls one is led to ask oneself the question as to whether the assembly hall had been specially "charged" for that particular meeting. Whether Mrs. Eddy herself, like the Sybils of ancient times, was also "inspired" by outside hypnotic influence is another hypothesis to conjure with.

From then on, Mrs. Eddy's religious future was assured. Under her leadership suggestion became indeed the foundation of a religion, a religion in which psychic force, operating under suggestion, accomplishes definite physical results.

Mrs. Eddy's acquaintance with Mrs. Augusta Stetson, another Christian Science leader, had already taken place for, according to E. F. Dakin, author of *Mrs. Eddy* {page 178) "it was at a meeting in a fashionable home on

Monument Hill in Charleston that she first met Augusta Stetson, in 1884... She (Mrs. Stetson) had been born of old Puritan stock in Waldoboro, Maine, about 1842. In after life she shrouded her past in mystery, refused -to tell her age, and the town records were eventually burned. She grew up as one of five children in a house which her father, Peabody Simmons, carpenter, built with his own hands. When the family moved to another Maine town, Damariscotta, Augusta was organist there in the Methodist church and a singer in the choir. At 24 she married a ship-builder, Frederick Stetson, who was partially an invalid as a result of imprisonment in Libby Prison during the Civil War. As his wife, she went to England where he secured employment with a British shipbuilding firm. Later, he was sent to Bombay, and here she had an opportunity to delve into a subject in which she had an instinctive interest — the oriental philosophies. In these philosophies affirmation and denial play an important role, and a pantheistic God is postulated — a God who is the Universe, whose mind is All, and of whose mind matter, like force, is but one manifestation or expression in the midst of many. "

Mrs. Stetson started healing and teaching Mrs. Eddy's system in New York in 1886, later resigning her connection with the Christian Science church in 1909.

One can almost describe this system as emerging clearly out of the realm of occultism, a kind of suggestion or auto-suggestion, whereby practical beneficial results may be induced in a patient by the application of certain occult laws to their personal medical requirements.

Mrs. Eddy's dogma is summed up by Hudson in the following words :

" Matter has no existence. Our bodies are composed of matter, therefore our bodies have no existence.

" It follows of course that disease cannot exist in a non-existent body. "[1]

However, regardless of this paradox and the various opinions hitherto expressed about Christian Science, we recognize, while admitting the efficacy of Mrs. Eddy's use of the force of beneficent animal magnetism, that her personal fear of the action of *Malicious Animal Magnetism*, so derided by her theological adversaries, is logical and founded.

These forces operate on sound scientific lines and those who can use the power of suggestion to gain ascendency over a sick person may use it again later for other motives. The danger of such misapplication is not one to be disregarded in calling in a healer, whatever Mrs. Eddy's detractors may say ! That danger is real and every student of the occult knows it.

The movement has become popular and has a following among people of wealth who seem to become the easy prey of occultists and charlatans.

The following extract from the *Daily Telegraph* of Decr. 18, 1930, illustrates this ;

> HARMFUL DEMONSTRATIONS
>
> A warning against the dangers of hypnotism in public has been issued by the Academy of Medicine as the result of an investigation by a special committee. This was set up at the request of the Council of the Meuse Department, which suggested that public experiments in hypnotism should be stopped.
>
> The academy declares that such demonstrations are bound to have a harmful influence. They are likely to excite undesirable curiosity, and, in the case of many sensitive people, to give rise to nervous and psychological trouble. Another grave criticism is that they may lead young people to believe that the exercise of hypnotism may enable them to influence the will and actions of those with whom they come into contact— " which, " asserts the report, " is contrary to the truth. "
>
> A resolution passed by the academy recommends the forbidding of such displays throughout the country.

---

[1] Hudson, *The Law of Psychic Phenomena*, p. 157.

CHAPTER CVI

THE FABIAN SOCIETY

(Founded 1883)

The nominal founder of The Fabian Society was Thomas Davidson, an idealist who, in the hope of bettering the lot of humanity, organized a debating club the original aim of which was, according to Mr. Pease, author of *The History of the Fabian Society,* " the reconstruction of society on a non-competitive basis with the object of remedying the evils of poverty. " [1]

This non-competitive basis meant maintenance for all by the community as a right, regardless of merit.

The club met fortnightly in the drawing rooms of its various members and in 1884 adopted the name "The Fabian Society".

Among those prominent in the movement in its early days were : Frank Podmore, a spiritualist, Percival Chubb, a clerk on the Local Government Board, Edward Pease, Hubert Bland, J. Ramsay Macdonald, later Prime Minister of England, R. B. Haldane, afterwards Lord Haldane, George Bernard Shaw, Sidney Webb, afterwards Lord Passfield, Graham Wallas, William Clarke, a former disciple of Mazzini, Mrs. Annie Besant, then a radical with an office at 63, Fleet Street, who

---

1. See page 37 *et seq.*

controlled *The Freethought Publishing Co.,* Dr. Pankhurst, husband of the later leader of the Women's Social and Political Union and Mrs. Charlotte M. Wilson who, while retaining her membership in the Fabian Society " devoted herself ", so we are told by Mr. Pease, to the Anarchist movement led by Prince Kropotkin and for some years edited the anarchist paper *Freedom.*

On page 68 of *The History of the Fabian Society* by Edward R. Pease we read :

> " In order to avoid a breach with Mrs. Wilson and her Fabian sympathisers, it was resolved to form a Fabian Parliamentary League, which Fabians could join or not as they pleased ; its constitution, dated February, 1887, is given in full in Tract No. 41 ; here it is only necessary to quote one passage which describes the policy of the League and of the Society, a policy of deliberate possibilism :—
>
> " The League will take active part in all general and local elections. Until a fitting opportunity arises for putting forward Socialist candidates to form the nucleus of a Socialist party in Parliament, it will confine itself to supporting those candidates who will go furthest in the direction of Socialism. It will not ally itself absolutely with any political party; it Will jealously avoid being made use of for party purposes ; and it will be guided in its action by the character, record and pledges of the candidates before the constituencies. In Municipal, School Board, Vestry, and other local elections, the League will, as it finds itself strong enough, run candidates of its own, and by placing trustworthy Socialists on local representative bodies it will endeavour to secure the recognition of the Socialist principle in all the details of local government. "...
>
> " The League first faded into a Political Committee of the Society, and then merged silently and painlessly into the general body. "

The foregoing is interesting : first, — as showing the original Anarchist connection with Fabian Socialism as we now know it, secondly, — as an example of one of the most usual methods of subverting an existing organization.

An offshoot of the existing organization was here formed, pledged to a policy or policies which might have been repudiated by the parent body. This offshoot being destined to eventual reabsorption into the parent body could thus assure the successful " boring from within " of the old organization.

We are further told by Mr. Pease that in 1888, " a Universities Committee, with Frank Podmore as Secretary for Oxford and G. W. Johnson for Cambridge, had begun the ' permeation ' of the Universities, which has always been an important part of the propaganda of the Society ".

By 1890, the support of a splendidly organized intelligentsia was assured to the socialist cause with the Fabian Society as its propaganda centre and a number of local Fabian societies were formed. They were succeeded by and merged into branches of the Independent Labour Party.

On page 209 of Mr. Pease's book, we glean some more enlightening information which definitely connects the Fabians with the Jew-captured organization of the old International

" The International Socialist and Trade Union Congresses, held at intervals of three or four years since 1889, were at first no more than isolated Congresses, arranged by local organizations constituted for the purpose in the preceding year. Each nation voted as one, or at most, as two units, and therefore no limit was placed on the number of delegates ; the one delegate from Argentina or Japan consequently held equal voting power to the scores or even hundreds from France or Germany. But gradually the organization was tightened up, and in 1907 a scheme was adopted which gave twenty votes each to the leading nations, and proportionately fewer to the others. Moreover a permanent Bureau was established at Brussels, with Emile Vandervelde, the distinguished leader of the Belgian Socialists, later well known in England as the Ministerial representative of the Belgian Government during the war, as Chairman. In England, where the Socialist and Trade Union forces were divided, it was necessary to constitute a special joint committee in order to raise the British quota of the cost of the Bureau, and to elect and instruct the British delegates. It was decided by the Brussels Bureau that the 20 British votes should be allotted ; 10 to the Labour Party, 4 to the I. L. P. (Independent Labour Party) 4 to the British Socialist Party, into which the old S. D. F. (Socialist Democratic Federation) had merged, and 2 to the Fabian Society, and the British Section of the International Socialist Bureau was, and still remains, constituted financially and electorally on that basis. "

In the same chapter of his history, Mr. Pease explains that " half of two-thirds of the Fabians belonged also to the I. L. P. and nearly all the I. L. P. leaders were or had been members of the Fabian Society ". The I. L. P. was founded in January 1893 by Keir Hardie and Friedrich Engels, the disciple of Karl Marx.

This Independent Labour Party virtually took over the active political work of the Fabian Society, leaving to the parent body its literary and propaganda status.

At a conference at Leeds in 1899 it was resolved to form a Local Government Information Bureau, to be jointly managed by the I. L. P. and the Fabian Society.

In 1904, Sidney Webb became chairman of the Technical Education Board which up to that date directed all higher education for England. This event, and the concerted working of a group of Fabians within the London County Council, considerably enhanced the opportunities for further socialistic expansion of the Society.

It should be borne in mind that Anarchists and Socialists, while seeming to differ in their social utopian policies, agree on the first step necessary to provoke an economic condition which would enable them to reorganize the world to their liking.

This first step is the destruction of present day civilisation, the good with the bad.

Their aim of Destruction is the same, only the method whereby it is to be effected differs. This effort at destruction accounts for the community of action of Socialists and Anarchists throughout history.

According to the Anarchists : All must be destroyed in order that all may be rebuilt, but, according to the Socialists, the present system will fall of itself by the passage of certain measures into law. These laws, while framed to appeal to popular fancy, once introduced, can be administered in such a way as to operate the International Destruction which is the primary aim of both parties.

Writing of Babeuf and Buonarotti and their abortive conspiracy of 1796, Professor H. J. Laski in *The Socialist Tradition in the French Revolution* states that " the strategy they (the Babouvists) invented has provided ever since the methodology of revolutionary socialism at least in its large outline ".

The Fabians form numerous detached societies, committees, study clubs, associations, leagues, schools and what not, in order to gain the support of non-socialists for such sections of the Socialist programme which might fail to receive public approbation if the connection with the World Socialist-Communist scheme was revealed. Thus the " sucker lists " of capitalistic supporters of socialism are made available for England. The system is the same in America.

Among the societies which owe their origin to Fabian initiative may be mentioned :

The London School of Economics, founded 1895.

The Fabian Research, founded 1912, later known as the Labour Research Bureau.

The Pan-Fabian Organization, founded 1907.

The University Socialist Federation, founded 1912, later known as University Labour Clubs.

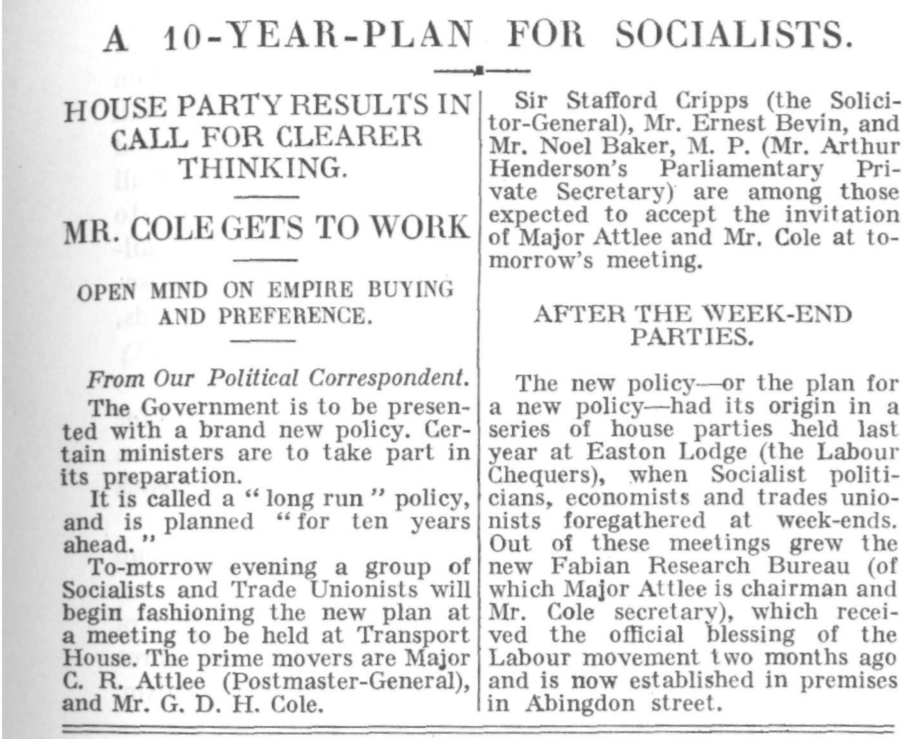
The Labour Representation Committee, founded 1900, known after 1906 as The Labour Party.

Among the members of the Fabian Association during the last 30 years we find the following names : Bertrand Russell (now Earl Russell), Professor H. J. Laski, Mrs. Sidney Webb (now Lady Passfield), H. G. Wells (resigned), F. W. Pethick-Lawrence, George Lansbury, Philip Snowden (ex-Chancellor of the Exchequer and Lord Privy Seal) and Mrs Snowden (now Viscount and Viscountess Snowden), Will Crooks, Sir Sidney Olivier (ex-Secretary of State for India, now Lord Olivier), the late Brig.-Gen. C. B. Thomson (subsequently Lord Thomson, late Secretary of State for Air), Arthur Henderson (ex-Home Secretary) and Noel Buxton.

It is rather interesting to note how many Fabians have found their way to the House of Lords.

Mr. Pease remarks further that after the Labour Party came into office in 1923, "about half the remaining Fabians in Parliament became either Under-Secretaries or Parliamentary Private Secretaries to Ministers, all positions of greater or less influence with the Government".

The following extract from the *Evening Standard*, London, May 28, 1931, shows the accuracy of Mr. Pease's statement and will serve to further enlighten our readers as to the full significance of present events.



A 10-YEAR-PLAN FOR SOCIALISTS.

HOUSE PARTY RESULTS IN CALL FOR CLEARER THINKING.

MR. COLE GETS TO WORK

OPEN MIND ON EMPIRE BUYING AND PREFERENCE.

From Our Political Correspondent.

The Government is to be presented with a brand new policy. Certain ministers are to take part in its preparation.

It is called a "long run" policy, and is planned "for ten years ahead."

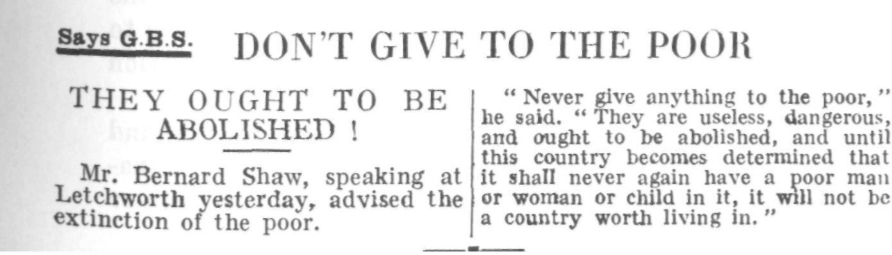
To-morrow evening a group of Socialists and Trade Unionists will begin fashioning the new plan at a meeting to be held at Transport House. The prime movers are Major C. R. Attlee (Postmaster-General), and Mr. G. D. H. Cole.

Sir Stafford Cripps (the Solicitor-General), Mr. Ernest Bevin, and Mr. Noel Baker, M. P. (Mr. Arthur Henderson's Parliamentary Private Secretary) are among those expected to accept the invitation of Major Attlee and Mr. Cole at to-morrow's meeting.

AFTER THE WEEK-END PARTIES.

The new policy—or the plan for a new policy—had its origin in a series of house parties held last year at Easton Lodge (the Labour Chequers), when Socialist politicians, economists and trades unionists foregathered at week-ends. Out of these meetings grew the new Fabian Research Bureau (of which Major Attlee is chairman and Mr. Cole secretary), which received the official blessing of the Labour movement two months ago and is now established in premises in Abingdon street.

One of the chief ideals of this Society is the extinction of the poor as evidenced by the following extract from The *Sunday Express* (London) of May 17, 1931.



Says G.B.S.

DON'T GIVE TO THE POOR

THEY OUGHT TO BE ABOLISHED !

Mr. Bernard Shaw, speaking at Letchworth yesterday, advised the extinction of the poor.

"Never give anything to the poor," he said. "They are useless, dangerous, and ought to be abolished, and until this country becomes determined that it shall never again have a poor man or woman or child in it, it will not be a country worth living in."

The best known and cleverest Destructionist laws now on the statute books are those of the Income Tax and the Inheritance Tax. This form of taxation is calculated eventually to precipitate Municipalisation and Nationalisation which also are part of the Fabian scheme for world peifection. This ideal is to be achieved by the gradual expropriation and pauperisation of all classes by systematic, economic pressure, each class to be separately ruined according to the best means available for ruining it. Municipalisation and Nationalisation means control by government, or, in other words, domination by ONE GREAT TRUST.

Is this Socialism ?

There is nothing new or extraordinary in this plan for World control by a centralized, Super-Capitalist power.

It is the plan so minutely explained in *The Protocols of the Wise Men of Zion.*

It is the plan of modern Judeo-Masonic Russian Soviet Communism.

It is the plan of Weishaupt's Illuminati and that of International Freemasonry symbolized by the three points of Albert Pike — Destruction, Materialism, Imposition.

One is all and all is one.

It should here be noted that the tax question is handled no differently by Conservative Governments, when in power, than by Labour or Liberal Governments and it is well known that any Conservative daring to question the Fabian policy of confiscatory taxation would commit immediate political suicide.

The stranglehold of Fabian Babouvism on England may however eventually be mitigated by an international organization of taxpayers combining as a counter revolutionary body. Who knows ?

For root of this movement see Chapters LXXXV, XCIII.
For development of this movement see Chapter CXXV.

CHAPTER CVII

GAELIC ATHLETIC ASSOCIATION

(Founded 1884)

Founded by Parnell, Michael Cusack and Michael Davitt in 1884. It was related to the Irish movement.

CHAPTER CVIII

HERMETIC SOCIETY

(Founded 1884)

This spiritistic Society was founded in London on May 9, 1884, by Anna Kingsford and Edward Maitland, both members of the Theosophical Society.

According to R. Guenon, it advocates a Gnostic mixture of Christianity and Buddhism.

For Anna Kingsford, as for Mme Blavatsky, the Christs are beings who have succeeded in developing in themselves certain superior powers latent in all men. This is presumably the " Serpent Power " or Kundalini, the Sex Force. Jesus is not the historical personage Jesus Christ. Jesus is only an initiate, one of " the Christs " incarnating through the ages in different bodies, other incarnations of the " Christ force " having been in the persons of Maitreya Bouddha, Krishna and the various prophets of the other religions.

As a foundation for a Universal World Religion, the idea is a clever one but its consequences are that anyone who makes enough fuss about himself can become a god, thus reducing the idea *ad absurdum.*

This is the principle which when further elaborated leads to the usual Gnostic belief that " Man is God ".

Man being God is thus infallible therefore, as God can " do what he will ". This convenient principle leads in turn to an equally convenient code of morals which, unfortunately, eventually leads to the abyss.

Anna Kingsford and her society were in close contact with MacGregor Mathers the head of " Golden Dawn ".

The Hermetic Society eventually became known as " The Esoteric Christian Union ".[1]

---

[1] Edward Maitland, *Life of Anna Kingsford*, Vol. II, p. 430. For root of this movement see Chapters LXXXVII, XCV.

CHAPTER CIX

ORDER OF THE GOLDEN DAWN IN THE OUTER

(Founded 1888)

This society was founded in England in 1888. It admits men and women.

As a branch of Occult Masonry, its esoteric teaching is a blend of modern Tibetan magic and Theosophy. (See Chapters on Lamaism and Theosophy).

In his *History of the Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia* [1] M. W. Supreme Magus Dr. William Wynn Westcott IX, P. M. P. Z., 30°, informs us that " in association with himself and Dr. Woodman ", R. W. Frater MacGregor Mathers J. S. M. IX " founded the Isis-Urania Temple of the Hermetic Students of the G. D. (Golden Dawn) and that he (Mathers) was then (in 1900) the Chief Adept of the entirely Esoteric Order of the R. R. and A. C. in France, Great Britain and other countries. "

Thus the story basing its foundation on the finding, by A. F. A. Woodford, of a German manuscript at a bookstall[2] is shown to have been a fabrication calculated presumably to hide the direct connection with the " Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia. "

---

[1] Presented to the British Museum Library 5/11 /05, London. Privately printed Dec. 30th 1900, see p. 13.

[2] Nesta Webster, *Secret Societies*, p. 311.

William Wynn Westcott in the above mentioned book gives the following epitome of the Masonic career of Mathers.

" R. W. Frater MacGregor Mathers (Comte MacGregor de Glenstrae), the present Junior Substitute Magus, was admitted to Freemasonry in the Hengist Lodge at Bournemouth and was an early member of the Correspondence Circle of the Quatuor Coronati Lodge at which he was a frequent speaker before he settled in Paris. He is a very famous occult student, and has contributed several learned lectures to the Metropolitan College. He is the author of the *Kabalah Unveiled, the Tarot Cards, The Key of Solomon the King* and *The Book of the Sacred Magic of Abra-Melin the Mage.* "

Mrs. MacGregor Mathers, the sister of Henri Bergson, the Jewish-French philosopher, received clairvoyantly most of the early teaching still used in the order from the " Hidden Secret Chiefs of the Third Order. " [3]

A. E. Waite was an early member of the " Golden Dawn ", but at a meeting held at Dr. Felkin's residence in 1903, according to Dr. Felkin's history, " a split occurred, as Waite and his followers denied the existence of the Third Order, refused to have examinations in the inner, objected to all occult work, and said they must work upon purely mystic lines. "

In consequence of the split, the old organization of Golden Dawn changed its name to Stella Matutina with Aleister Crowley and William Wynn Westcott at its head while the schismatic order, under A. E. Waite and MacGregor Mathers, the latter a friend of Rudolph Steiner, retained the old name of Golden Dawn.

---

[3] " Inquire Within ", *Light-bearers of Darkness,* p. SG.

In 1912, Golden Dawn merged with Stella Matutina.

For root of this movement see Chapter LXXXVII.
For development of this movement see Chapter CXV.

CHAPTER CX

MODERN ILLUMINISM

ANCIENT ORDER OF ORIENTAL TEMPLARS
(ORDO TEMPLI ORIENTIS)

Exoteric names

ORDER OF TO OV.

Esoteric name

(Founded 1895)

Modern Illuminism, as we know it, was founded by Karl Kellner in 1895. He died in 1905 and was succeeded by Theodore Reuss, the agent of John Yarker.

In 1902, Reuss named William Wynn Westcott as Regent of the Illuminati in England thus establishing the interlocking directorate between Soc. Rosicruciana in Anglia and German Illuminism. This connection is further explained in the article on *Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia* in Chapter LXXXVII.

According to *The Equinox* [1] Vol III No. 1, 1919, the official organ of both the A∴ A∴ (Atlantean Adepts) and the 0. T. 0. initiates are taught that this latter order is " a body of initiates in whose hands are concentrated the wisdom and knowledge of the following bodies : —

---

[1] In an Appendix to this book, 33 pages are transcribed from the eleventh book of *The Equinox,* an organ of the sect. This eleventh volume having been withdrawn from circulation is little known. It was published in Detroit, U. S. A., in 1919. There is no copy of it in the British Museum but copies of all books published in the United States of America are kept in the Library of Congress at Washington, D. C.

1. The Gnostic Catholic Church.
2. The Order of the Knights of the Holy Ghost.
3. The Order of the Illuminati.
4. The Order of the Temple (Knights Templar).
5. The Order of the Knights of St. John.
6. The Order of the Knights of Malta.
7. The Order of the Knights of the Holy Sepulchre.
8. The Hidden Church of the Holy Grail.
9. The Hermetic Brotherhood of Light.
10. The Holy Order of Rose Croix of Heredom.
11. The Order of the Holy Royal Arch of Enoch.
12. The Antient and Primitive Rite of Masonry (33 degrees).
13. The Rite of Memphis (97 degrees).
14. The Rite of Mizraim (90 degrees).
15. The Antient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Masonry (33 degrees).
16. The Swedenborgian Rite of Masonry.
17. The Order of the Martinists.
18. The Order of the Sat Bhai, and many other orders of equal merit, if of less fame.

It does not include the A∴ A∴ with which august body it is, however, in close alliance. "

This publication also states that " the dispersion of the original secret wisdom having led to confusion, it was determined by the Chiefs of all these Orders to recombine and centralize their activities, even as white light, divided in a prism, may be recomposed. "

" Secret wisdom " in the case of masonic societies of any kind is invariably synonymous with " occult knowledge. "

In the case of the 0. T. 0. the practice of the " secret wisdom " begins with the understanding of the very name of the order.

The book referred to above contains the following information on page 200 : " The letters O. T. O. represent the words *Ordo Templi Orientis* (Order of the Temple of the Orient, or Oriental Templars); *but they have also a secret meaning for initiates.* "

Were we to make a guess at the secret meaning ot the O. T. O., we would borrow the words of Godfrey Higgins, the author of *Anacalypsis* and, with him, " penetrate into the Sanctum Sanctorum of the ancient philosophers of India, Egypt, Syria and Greece. " There shall we discover the secret meaning of the Order of *To Ov,* Greek term for the emanation of fluid or invisible fire. It is the *To Ov* of neo-platonism of which Godfrey Higgins writes : " I am convinced that the emanation of the *To Ov* was believed to be this fire. "

The *To Ov* was supposed to be duplicate, then from that to triplicate. From him proceeded the male Logos, and the female Aura or Anima or Holy Ghost in ancient times always female. The *To Ov* was supposed in himself to possess the two principles of Generation.

The reader who already knows the meaning of this " fire " otherwise known as Kundalini, sex-force, astral light, etc. will easily understand the phallic hidden meaning of the O. T. O. However, it would hardly be fair to leave such a statement under the classification of either suggestion or assumption. Proof might be demanded and proof therefore is appended.

The Equinox states that " it was Karl Kellner who revived the esoteric organization of the 0. T. 0. and initiated the plan now happily complete of bringing all occult bodies again under *one* governance. "

In the " Gnostic Mass " printed in the same volume, mention is made, in one of the orisons, of the saints among which are named Karl Kellner and Theodore Reuss.

From notes written by Theodore Reuss himself and from correspondence between him and Karl Kellner, the basic principles of the 0. T. 0. have become known and bear out the statement that this organization was formed for the express purpose of substituting the phallic religion for Christianity.

The conception of the O. T. O. was far from being original but it was undoubtedly reformed by the two Germans above named.[2] It was no vain boast on the part of the writer in *The Equinox* to name all the orders as concentrated in the O. T. O., for proof has been obtained that both Karl Kellner and Theodore Reuss were, among a host of others, in close masonic relationship with John Yarker, William Wynn Westcott, Supreme Magus of Soc. Rosicruciana in Anglia, a Warden of the Grand Lodge of England, Papus of the Martinists, etc.

Apparently all concurred in the formation of the esoteric doctrine of the Order of Oriental Templars.

In the Bibliotheque Nationale in Paris is filed a document, dated 1917, containing the constitution and certain information concerning the O. T. O. It states that " The Ancient Order of Oriental Templars ", an organization formerly known as The Hermetic Brotherhood of Light, has been re-organized and re-constituted.

As evidenced by the Reuss papers, one may gather that the O. T. O. has existed since 1902. Prior to 1917, the official date of its foundation, it was presumably a secret organization, operating under

---

[2] The German Organ of the Sect was *The Oriflamme.*

Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rites, acting, as these papers indicate, as the link between this organization and the various unofficial International occult groups. [3]

The prominent persons connected with this organization at its start were : John Yarker, William Wynn Westcott, Papus, Karl Kellner, Theodore Reuss, MacGregor Mathers, Franz Hartmann and Aleister Crowley.

Apart from its secret phallic doctrine the 0. T. 0. seeks to unite with a revival of Gnosticism, the study of the Jewish Cabala, Esoteric Lamaism and Indian Yogism. It seeks to extract from their combined doctrines the practical application of Eastern Sorcery and Western Witchcraft, wherein medicine and hypnotism occupy a place of prime importance, serving solely materialistic ends.

The reader can always be referred to the press for descriptions of the practices of the present Chief of the Order who was obliged to leave Italy following an investigation into his magic practices at Cefalú near Palermo in Sicily.

Calling himself " The Master Therion", Aleister Crowley is also known under the name of Frater Perdurabo and, from his own extravagant writings, we know that he looks upon himself as a reincarnation of Eliphas Levi etc. etc.

To give the reader a feeble idea of the perversion of the O. T. O. we quote the following : — " The blood is the life. This simple statement is explained by the Hindus by saying that the blood is the principal vehicle

---

3. Article IV, Section 3, of the constitution of the O. T. O. provides that " The person (male or female) filling this office (head) shall serve for life or until his or her resignation " and Article IV, Section 4, provides that " The person filling this office shall appoint his or her successor. "

of vital Prana. There is some ground for the belief that there is a definite substance, not isolated as yet, whose presence makes all the difference between live and dead matter.[4]

" It would be unwise to condemn as irrational the practice of those savages who tear the heart and liver from an adversary, and devour them while yet warm. In any case it was the theory of the ancient Magicians, that any living being is a storehouse of energy varying in quantity according to the size and health of the animal, and in quality according to its mental and moral character. At the death of the animal this energy is liberated suddenly.

" The animal should therefore be killed within the Circle, or the Triangle, as the case may be, so that its energy cannot escape. An animal should be selected whose nature accords with that of the ceremony, — thus, by sacrificing a female lamb one would not obtain any appreciate quantity of the fierce energy useful to a Magician who was invoking Mars. In such a case a ram would be more suitable. And this ram should be virgin — the whole potential of its original total energy should not have been diminished in any way. For the highest spiritual working one must accordingly choose that victim which contains the greatest and purest force. A male child of perfect innocence and high intelligence is the most satisfactory and suitable victim.

" For evocations it would be more convenient to place the blood of the victim in the Triangle, the idea being that the spirit might obtain from the blood this subtle but physical substance which was the quintessence of its life in such a manner as to enable it to take on a visible and tangible shape.

---

4. The Master Therion, *Magick,* published 1930, p. 93.

" Those magicians who object to the use of blood have endeavoured to replace it with incense. For such a purpose the incense of Abramelin may be burnt in large quantities.

" But the bloody sacrifice, though more dangerous, is more efficacious ; and for nearly all purposes human sacrifice is the best. The truly great Magician will be able to use his own blood, or possibly that of a disciple, and that without sacrificing the physical life irrevocably. "

To such persons as have read in *L'Elue du Dragon* [5] page 43, the description of the first impressions of Clotilde Bersone (Comtesse de Coutanceau) afterwards the *Inspiree* (Seeress) cf the *Grande Loge des Illuminés de Paris,* the following note by " The Master Therion " will be of interest. —

" It is here desirable to warn the reader against the numerous false orders which have impudently assumed the name of Rosicrucian. The Masonic Societas Rosicruciana is honest and harmless ; and makes no false pretences ; if its members happen as a rule to be pompous busybodies, enlarging the borders of their phylacteries, and scrupulous about cleaning the outside of the cup and the platter ; if the masks of the Officers in their Mysteries suggest the Owl, the Cat, the Parrot, and the Cuckoo, while the Robe of their Chief Magus is a Lion's Skin, that is their affair. " [6]

Animal masks referred to above as being used in the mysteries of the Rosicrucian Order are indeed also described by Clotilde Bersone in *L'Elue du Dragon.*

They were a distinctive feature of the Masonic

---

5. Abbe Paul Boulain, Publisher, Les Étincelles, 26, rue de Bassano, Paris, 1929.

6. The Master Therion, *op. cit.*, p. 97, Note.

gathering in the Grand Lodge of the *Illumines d'Orienl* at Constantinople at which she claims to have been present.

It is even suggested by Miss Murray in *The Witchcult in Western Europe* that most of the legends of transformations of witches into cats, horses and other animals arose from references by other witches to craft adepts by the costumes and masks these had worn during the witchcraft ceremonies.

Thus again, the witchcraft of the Middle Ages is reflected in the occultism of today.

The philosophical teachings of the 0. T. 0. seem to be adequately summarized by its leader in the following sentence[7] : " This is in fact the formula of our Magick; we insist that all acts must be equal ; that existence asserts the right to exist ; that unless evil is a mere term expressing some relation of haphazard hostility between forces equally self-justified, the universe is as inexplicable and impossible as uncompensated action ; that the orgies of Bacchus and Pan are no less sacramental than the Masses of Jesus ; that the scars of syphilis are sacred and worthy of honour as such. "

Eliphas Levi, quoting from the *Oupnek'hat,* the standard Indian book on Magic *(Histoire de la Magie,* p. 76) outlines the same moral code ;

" It is permissible to lie in order to facilitate marriage and in order to exalt the virtues of a brahmin or the qualities of a cow.

" God is truth and in him light and darkness are one. He who knows that never lies, for, if he wishes to lie his lie becomes a truth.

" Whatever sin he commits, whatever evil work he does, he is never guilty. Even should he be twice parricide, even though he should have killed a brahmin initiated into the mysteries of the Vedas, whatever he may do, his light is never less, for, says God, ' I am the universal soul, in me are good and evil to correct one another. ' He who knows that is never a sinner ; he is universal as I am myself. "[8]

---

[7] The Master Therion, *op. cit.,* p. 338.

Is this not the ever recurring dogma of Manichean Dualism ?

Every effort is made to attract wealthy people, mostly women, to the " Profess Houses " of the Order of O. T. O. In these centres, where the " Nudity cult " and other eccentricities are cultivated, the victims become quickly amenable to the insinuating suggestions of such as covet their wordly goods.

To enhance its attractiveness to the public, the system is represented as embodying the secret knowledge which leads to all material success. Playing on the egoistical instincts of humanity, the O. T. O. attracts within its orbit all those who, with inordinate ambition and limited capacity, hope in some nebulous way, through the Glorification of self, to save humanity.

There seems no doubt that the head of the O. T. O. is justified in saying that this order reigns above all others as, everything, from political espionage to blackmail may emanate from it.

Like numerous organizations such as Mazdaznans and Rudolf Steiner's Anthroposophism, it lays great stress upon physical culture and rhythmic movements. Pretences of producing renewed youth and vigour attracts many adepts. Moreover, it promises its initiates the attainment of their ambition and desires. The

---

8. *Oupnek'hat*, instruction 108, pages 85 and 92 of the first volume of the translation by Anquetil.

" Do what thou wilt " applies to this in an ambiguous manner. The inmates of " Fontainebleau ", under the hypnotic power of a certain Oriental, said by some to be an Armenian and by others a Jew, have offered the spectacle of automata performing movements, dances etc., under the will of their master. It was even said that under the will of this new Svengali, voiceless people sang beautifully and inartistic personalities worked as well as renowned artists and sculptors.

Advertising the accomplishment of such feats attracted many people to Fontainebleau. What actually took place there has several times been revealed before the French law courts and in articles written by erstwhile inmates of this institution.

As to the American house of the same type, the scandalous happenings taking place within its precincts have sometimes been reported in the Press. Yet to the amazement of a great many, such places as the " Abode of Love " in England, the " House of Rest " at Nyack in America and Gourgief's establishment in Fontainebleau remain undisturbed.

On entering the O. T. O., aspirants must acquiesce in the complete subordination of their " will " to that of " Unknown Superiors ". This provision places them entirely in the power of the " Order " and its secret chiefs.

Under occult dominion Art, Music and Politics all tend to the same end : confusion, a calculated and induced confusion : for minds that are confused will *obey and bow to* the hidden masters !

The rule of the Triangle and Ellipse, together with a crude Geometry in modern art, is the rule of Masonry in aesthetics.

Standing before a meaningless Cubist canvas at an art exhibition one day, a puzzled amateur asked " But what does it mean ? " To which the painter replied. " It's not a question of what it means, it's a question of what is its effect on the observer. "

Consciously or unconsciously the artist spoke the truth. Psychiatrists tell us that this school of insidious humbug is simply an elaboration of the policy of *the interruption of ideas* leading to total incoherence and madness. " Cubist " art is an effort to produce certain psychic effects obtainable by optical illusion. Beauty has nothing to do with it. The cubist school is not in the realm of art at all. It belongs to that of medicine and psychic science. Those who forget that this devastating fad of " The Interrupted Idea " can be extended to music, literature and every other phase of human effort, do so at their peril.

A mind that is positive cannot be controlled. For the purposes of occult dominion minds must therefore be rendered passive and negative in order that control can be achieved. Minds consciously working to a definite end are a power, and power can oppose power for good or for evil. The scheme for world dominion might be doomed by the recognition of this principle alone, but, as it is unfortunately unrecognized, it remains unchallenged.

Destruction, Materialism, Imposition. These are the three points of Albert Pike and they seem to be ruling the world today.

For root of this movement see Chapter XXII.

CHAPTER CXI

THEOSOPHIGAL SOCIETY OF AMERICA

(Founded 1895)

In November 1894 William Q. Judge rebelled against Mrs. Besant's domination of The Theosophical Society.

On April 27th, 1895, he and his followers seceded from the Adyar Society and constituted an independent organization under the name " Theosophical Society of America ". This organization, which still exists, has its headquarters at Point-Loma, California, It was first presided over by Ernest Hargrove and later by Katherine A. Tingley. It has branches in Sweden and Holland.

Katherine A. Tingley, known to her followers as " The Purple Mother ", was in touch with Bro. Theodore Reuss, Magus Supremus in Mundo of the Esoteric Rosicrucians.

This sect it appears, practises Raja Yoga.

Parents desirous of having their children brought up under its aegis must forfeit all their natural rights of inquiry concerning their children's welfare, this prohibition extending even to their right to assist at lessons.

Pupils whose education has been entrusted to the sect are taught to observe absolute secrecy towards their parents as regards matters concerning the school.

Notwithstanding such subversive rules the school is well attended.

For root of this movement see Chapter XCV.

CHAPTER CXII

IRISH SOCIALIST REPUBLICAN PARTY

(Founded 1896)

This society was founded by James Conolly in 1896 and through him became linked with the anarchist terrorist organization known as the Industrial Workers of the World in America. (I. W. W.).

ASSOCIATIONS OF THE 20TH CENTURY

CHAPTER CXIII

THE YOUNG TURK MOVEMENT

(Founded 1900)

Not till 1900, when the Grand Orient virtually took over the Young Turk Party which was composed chiefly of Jews, Greeks and Armenians, did this movement assume a serious aspect.

Vicomte Leon de Poncins in *The Secret Powers behind the Revolution* (page 66) giving the history and origin of the Young Turk Movement adds the following information taken from the Masonic organ of the Grand Orient, *The Acacia* (October 1908).

" A secret Young Turk council was formed and the whole movement was directed from Salonica.

Salonica, the most Jewish town in Europe — 70,000 Jews out of a population of 100,000 — was specially suitable for the purpose. It already contained several Lodges in which the revolutionaries could work without being disturbed. These Lodges are under the protection of European diplomacy and as the Sultan was without weapons against them his fall was inevitable. "

He further adds : —

" The Young Turks entered these lodges and met there in order to organize and prepare the revolution. Moreover a great number of the members of the lodges strengthened the secret Young Turk ' Committee of Union and Progress '... On the 1st May, 1909, the representatives of 45 Turkish lodges met in Constantinople and founded the ' Grand Orient Ottoman '. Mahmoud Orphi Pasha was nominated Grand Master... A short time after a Supreme Council of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rites was also founded and recognized by the French and Italian authorities. "

To complete this information, we may add that two of the Salonica lodges, those of Macedonia and Labor and Lux were connected with the Grand Orient of Italy and that of Veritas was under the Grand Orient of France.

For root of this movement see Chapters XLI and LIII.

CHAPTER CXIV

THE AMSTERDAM INTERNATIONAL

(Founded 1901)

The International Federation of Trade Unions, not to be confused with The Second International, was founded at Copenhagen in 1901.

It ceased to function during the War, but was re-established as The Amsterdam International in 1919.

Its objects include the following :

To unite the international working class.

To promote the interests and activities of the trade union movement.

The development of international social legislation.

To avert war and combat reaction.

For root of this movement see Chapter LXXXV.

CHAPTER CXV

STELLA MATUTINA

(Founded 1903)

The foundation of Stella Matutina, with Aleister Crowley and Wm. Wynn Westcott at its head, was the result of a split and consequent reorganization of the old *Golden Dawn in the Outer* which occurred in 1903. It admits men and women.

Dr. Felkin, who had been elected one of the three members of the Council governing the Society in 1902 was appointed head of Stella Matutina by Rudolph Steiner in 1912 at which date A. E. Waite's temple, Golden Dawn, received the order to join with it.

Dr. Felkin held this office until 1919.

We are told by " Inquire Within ", author of *Light-bearers of Darkness* (page 152) at one time Ruling Chief of the Mother Temple and of the Stella Matutina and R. R. & A. C. that after the oath of Initiation into Stella Matutina has been taken the candidate is terrorised by the following threat... " If thou shalt fail of this thy oath of secrecy, thy blood may be poured out and thy body broken, for heavy is the penalty exacted by the Guardians of the Hidden Knowledge from those who wilfully betray their trust. "

Its occult teaching is identical with that of Golden

Dawn from which it issued and, for some of its shameful practices, the reader must be referred to *Light-bearers of Darkness* by « Inquire Within. " It is regrettable that this expose does not take the reader back to the early stages of initiation.

For root of this movement see Chapters LXXXVII, CIX.

CHAPTER CXVI

SINN FEIN

(Founded 1905)

Sinn Fein, an Irish patriotic organization advocating boycott and passive resistance against England was founded by Arthur Griffiths in 1905. He was succeeded as president in 1917 by Eamon de Valera. By that time the Society was controlled and subsidized by the Clan-na-Gael and Germany.

After the start of the World War in 1914, it asserted itself as the open foe of England.

Richard Dawson in *Red Terror and Green,* page 176, publishes a despatch sent to Count von Bernstorff, the German Ambassador in the United States at that date. The document was marked " very secret " and dated April 18, 1916. It reads as follows :

" Judge Cohalan (of New York, U. S. A.) requests the transmission of the following remarks : The revolution in Ireland can only be successful with the support of Germany : otherwise England will be able to suppress it, even though it be only after a hard struggle. Therefore help is necessary. This should consist principally of aerial attacks on England and a diversion of the fleet simultaneously with the Irish revolution. Then if possible a landing of arms and ammunition in

Ireland and possibly some officers from Zeppelins. This would enable the Irish ports to be closed against England. The services of the revolution, therefore, may decide the war. "[1]

The part played by the Irish-Roman Catholic church in Irish National and International politics is gathered from the following telegram from Count von Bernstorff to the German Foreign Office.

" The Bishop of Cork having died, there is a sharp contest over the succession. The present Assistant Bishop, Daniel Cohalan, is the choice of the local clergy ; but England is using unusual efforts to have — appointed. — is strongly anti-German, although Germany, at our request, released him shortly after the outbreak of war. Assistant-Bishop Cohalan is cousin of Judge Cohalan, and strongly Nationalist and pro-German. He was the intermediary between the insurgent Cork Volunteers and the British military authorities, and publicly exposed the gross breach of faith of the English with the surrendered men. Hence the effort to defeat him through the English Envoy at the Vatican. It would have a great moral effect in Rome if Cohalan were chosen. If Germany can exert any influence to bring about this result it would defeat the English intrigue against her interests. "[2]

Dr. Daniel Cohalan was chosen.

Let us repeat that by a close study of the Ancient Order of Hibernians and the Knights of Columbus, one cannot fail to see the control that Freemasonry exercises over the Irish-Roman Catholic church. This, unfortunately, is a phase of the international situation which is generally overlooked.

---

1. Richard Dawson, *Red Terror and Green,* p. 176.
2. *Ibid.,* p. 185.

In an effort to dissociate politics from religion, writers on these subjects have lost sight of the fact that they are viewing a fight between two theocrasies, Roman Catholicism and Freemasonry.

For root of this movement see Chapters LXXXII, LXXXVIII.

CHAPTER CXVII

THE HONOURABLE FRATERNITY OF ANTIENT MASONRY

(FEMALE LODGES)

(Founded 1908)

This order, which began its existence as an organization in 1908, thanks to the efforts of the Rev. Geikie Cobb, admitting both men and women on equal terms, no longer accepts men as candidates, deeming their proper place to be in Lodges working under the jurisdiction of the United Grand Lodge of England. It seeks to supplement the work of Grand Lodge.

In 1920, it presented a petition to The Grand Lodge of England for examination with a view to recognition. To have acceded to the request would have been poor policy and, in any case, unnecessary, so Grand Lodge gave the usual answer and the matter ceased to be further discussed.

By 1927, there were 12 Lodges of this order in Great Britain. We know it is the policy of the official body to deny the existence of "real female masonry" and we also know that many English Masons of high rank as well as members of other rites continue to believe that there are no " real " women's lodges.

These lodges, supposed to have no connection with the Co-masonic lodges under the Grand Orient of France are however an offshoot of this body working the first three masonic degrees only.

Mrs. Reginald Halsey, Grand Mistress, died on December 27, 1927.

CHAPTER CXVIII

FEDERAL COUNCIL OF THE CHURCHES OF CHRIST IN AMERICA

(Founded 1908)

The " Federal Council of the Churches of Christ in America " was founded in 1908. Until then it had been the " National Federation of Churches and Christian Workers ", founded in 1901.

Its constituent bodies are —

" Baptist Churches North, National Baptist Convention, Free Baptist Churches Christian Church, Churches of God in N. A. (general eldership), Congregational Churches, Disciples of Christ, Friends, Evangelical Synod of N. A., Evangelical Church, Methodist Protestant Church, Methodist Episcopal Church, Methodist Episcopal Church South, African M. E. Church, African M. E. Zion Church, Coloured M. E. Church, Moravian Church, Presbyterian Church in the United States of America, Presbyterian Church in the United States (South) Primitive Methodist Church, National Council of Protestant Episcopal Church, Reformed Church in America, Reformed Church in the United States, Reformed Episcopal Church, Seventh Day Baptist Churches, United Brethren Church, United Presbyterian Church, United Lutheran Church (consultative body). "

Further data from *Twenty Years of Church Federation* by the Federal Council 1929 informs us that the officials of the organization are as follows —

Officials (in part); President, Bishop Francis J. McConnell, Methodist Episcopal; vice president Dr. Ernest H. Cherrington,[1] Methodist Episcopal. Executive Committee (in part); Dr. Ernest H. Cherrington,[1] Methodist Episcopal; Rev. S. Parkes Cadman, Congregational; Rev. F. Scott McBride,[1] United Presbyterian ; Bishop James Cannon jr.[1] Methodist Episcopal South ; Bishop Thomas Nicholson,[1] Methodist Episcopal; Bishop Francis J. McConnell, Methodist Episcopal.

Administrative Committee (in part) ; Rev. S. Parkes Cadman, Congregational; Bishop James Cannon jr.[1] Methodist Episcopal South ; Bishop Francis J. McConnell, Methodist Episcopal.

Members of Federal Council (in part) ; Hon. George W. Wickersham, Protestant Episcopal; Bishop Thomas Nicholson,[1] Methodist Episcopal; Dr. Ernest H. Cherrington[1], Methodist Episcopal; Bishop James Cannon, jr.[1] Methodist Episcopal South.

Most of these officials are also officials of the Anti-saloon League according to the statement of Dr. Ernest H. Cherrington who is reported as saying : — " The league is controlled by the churches. "[2]

The chief achievement, so far, of the Federal Council of the Churches of Christ in America, seems to have been the introduction of Prohibition in the United States.

If the general public is unaware of the motives under-

---

1. Officially connected with both Anti-saloon League and Council.
2. See *Hearings before the Committee on the Judiciary, House of Representatives, 71sl Congress.* The Prohibition Amendment, p. 546.

lying the Prohibition policy of the Federal Council of Churches, it can at any rate judge of its lesults which are a national calamity for the United States. No surer method could have been devised for the promotion of general subversion and complete disregard of law and order. A summary of the situation created by Prohibition was given by Mr. Ralph Shaw during the Congressional hearings already referred to. He thus expressed himself :

" For the first time in the history of the civilized world, organized violators of the law are being financed — the criminal underworld is being financed, and financed magnificently. Prior to this amendment, the underworld was dependent for its scanty living upon houses of ill fame and the gambling resorts. The saloons, deplorable as they were, were at least observing the law, and they paid taxes to the State. Now the enormous revenues which were formerly paid into the Treasury of the Government and the State is going to the underworld, and it is going by millions.

" Organized society, resenting invasion of the liberty of the individual, is willing to pay any price to destroy the invasion, not so much because organized society wants what it pays for, but in order to show those who have trampled upon the spirit of liberty that they cannot possibly succeed. The result is that millions and millions of dollars are pouring into the coffers of the underworld and making it so powerful financially that it is able to debauch prosecutors, judges, legislators and all the instrumentalities of government. "

The truth of these words has been clearly demonstrated in the sensational revelations made lately in the American press. It is not overrating the power of the underworld gangsters to say that they rule the United States for he indeed rules who is able to " debauch prosecutors, judges, legislators and all the instrumentalities of government ".

By its fruits shall you judge a tree.

When, in addition to the above one takes into consideration the friendly support the Federal Council of Churches has constantly afforded to the subversive " Civil Liberties Union ", one is entitled to look upon this Federation as upon a tree, the fruits of which are a menace to the national welfare. [3]

---

[3] Since the foregoing was written, *Tainted Contacts,* by Col. Sanctuary, has been published and it fully bears out the truth of the above statements.

CHAPTER CXIX

SUFISM (OCCIDENTAL)

(Founded 1910)

In his history of Persia, Sir John Malcolm devotes much space to Sufism or Sopheism.

It is supposed to have been the esoteric knowledge of the Mohammedan religion and in the possession of Ali and his successors.

Sufism in Persia dates from A. D. 1500 to 1736 when the kingdom was conquered by Nadir Shah.

Godfrey Higgins, in *Anacalypsis*, concludes that Sufism " is Gnosticism and that if we can discover the one we shall discover the other. " He tells us however that their (Sufist) sect has four stages or degrees and that they have " a species of Masonic or Eleusinian initiation from lower to higher degrees. "

The subtle metaphysics of Sufism are contained in the Dabistan and their esoteric teaching is centred around the principle of life. It is essentially pantheistic, the soul beirg an emanation of God's essence.

The teaching of Sufism was introduced by Knayat-Khan into the West in 1910.[1] The centre of teaching is at Geneva and a big temple has recently been built at Suresnes near Paris for the numerous proselytes made in France.

---

[1] Sufism, *Revue Philosophique Mensuelle*, Feb. 1926.

Sufism is Islamic Mysticism and adapts itself to all dogmas.

CHAPTER CXX

NARODNA ODBRANA

(Founded 1911)

The Narodna Odbrana was founded in 1911 by the well known Dr. Karl Kramarsch, the organizer of the Panslavic movement. It claimed to be a patriotic Serbian organization pledged to free Serbia from Austrian influence and to achieve specifically the independence of Bosnia and Herzegovina.

Its secret lodge however was closely affiliated to the Crna Ruka (The Black Hand, a terrorist society) and it had absorbed the large and well known Slav organization " Omladina ".

" Sokol ", a group of physical culture clubs, served as a mask for the wider activities of the Narodna Odbrana in Bosnia and Herzegovina. This was stated as a fact by Cubrilovitch during his trial following the murder of the Austrian Archduke Franz Ferdinand on June 28th, 1914, which precipitated the World War.

The trial for high treason of Vangaluka which lasted from Nov. 15 to the spring of 1916 gives a short idea of the activities of the Narodna Odbrana.

Its aim, the grouping of all the Slav southern states into one federation, could be achieved only through the death of high standing personalities and the revolution of the masses. The master mind of the attempt on the Archduke's life was Radoslav Kazimirovitch, a Freemason, who had prepared the attempt. He had travelled abroad extensively, visited all the Lodges and had returned with revolvers and bombs. Among the murderers, Sovanovitch, Cabrinovitch and Grabez were Freemasons and Veliko Cubrilovitch was member of Narodna Odbrana and Sokol.

Gabriel Prinzip, a student, a youth ot 19, the murderer of the Archduke, was found to have received arms through Major Tankosich, a Freemason and a friend of the Serbian Crown Prince Alexander, His assistant assasin, the bomb-thrower Cabrinovitch, stated openly at his trial that in Masonry, killing was permissible, adding further that the heir to the throne oi Austria had been condemned to death by the Freemasons two years previously but that hitherto, no one had been found to execute the sentence.

The Serbians however could not divulge the secrets of the Serbian Lodge Narodna Odbrana which, in secret alliance with the Crna Ruka had organized the murder of the Archduke, heir to the Austrian throne. The documents concerning the organization of this murder were however made known and available from the diary of the Serbian Major Todorovitch which was found in Loczinka, and it was clearly demonstrated at the trial for high treason of the bomb-thrower Cabrinovitch that the leading personalities of the Narodna Obrana were Freemasons. (Refer *Kolnische Volkzeitung.* Nov. 1914.).

The *Badische Observer* for June 1917 says that it cannot be doubted that the International Lodges (Scottish Rite) must take the full responsibility for the uprising *en masse* of the Rrethren in the Lodges and it is therefore responsible for the political propaganda (made against Germany) and also for the murder of the Archduke which was organized in the Lodges.

On the 15th of September, 1912, *La Revue Internationale des Sociétés Secrètes* contained the following lines (page 788).

" Possibly also, some day we will understand the remark made by a Swiss about the Archduke, heir presumptive to the Austrian throne. " He is all right. It is a pity that he has been condemned. He will die on the steps of the throne. "

CHAPTER CXXI

THE ANTHROPOSOPHICAL SOCIETY

(Founded 1913)

The Anthroposophical Society, an offshoot of the Theosophical Society, was founded on Jan 14, 1913. by Rudolph Steiner, who had been secretary of the Theosophical Society of Germany in Berlin since 1902.

Mr. Edouard Schure, the author of the well known book *Les Grands Inities,* deserted Mrs. Besant and The Theosophical Society at the time of the schism and followed Steiner into the Anthroposophical Society. Later, however, he reverted also to his old allegiance.

Soon after its creation it practically merged with the Theosophical Society.

Stsiner was a friend of Dr. Hubbe Schleiden, the Secretary General of the German Theosophical Society and President of several German secret societies, the Druidenorden, Black Templars, Rosicrucians, Ygdrasil.

The headquarters of the cult and its chief temple " The Goetheaneum" are at Dornach, Switzerland. This building, a crude " Noah's Ark " specimen of architecture, flaunts the symbol of the cult above its main portal, while within its precincts the use of the *iod* (see Appendix, Chapter on Symbolism) as a decorative motif further emphasizes its esoteric phallic dedication.

Anyone perusing *The East in the Light of the West,* by Rudolph Steiner, will find on pages 38 and 119 to 125 a fairly comprehensive sample of the Rosicrucian doctrine of Luciferianism as advocated by this branch of the sect.

Its Christ teaching is the same as that of the Theosophical Society and The Hermetic Society.

The Anthroposophical Society is developing an extensive educational system for children of all ages. Its principal school, founded in 1919 by Emil Molt, teaching what is known as the Waldorf System,[1] is at Stuttgart, Germany. The Society conducts a school, The New School, at 40 Leigham Court Road, Streatham, London, and contemplates many further acquisitions along these lines.

Space does not permit of further elaboration of the Steiner Educational system which robs the child of its birthright of innocence and ideals to plunge it into the grossest materialism.

Steiner died in 1925 and was succeeded by Karl Unger.

---

[1] George Kaufmann, *Fruits of Anthroposophy,* The Threefold Commonwealth, 74 Grosvenor St. W. London, 1922.

For root of this movement see Chapter XCV.

CHAPTER CXXII

FRIENDS OF IRISH FREEDOM

(Founded 1915)

This society was founded by Judge Cohalan, T. St. John Gaffney, Jeremiah A. O'Leary and Professor Kuno Meyer in 1915 under the auspices of the Clan-na-Gael.

As regards this organization Captain Pollard gives the following facts : —

" T. St. John Gaffney was appointed representative of the Friends of Irish Freedom for Europe. A bureau was established in Stockholm, whither Gaffney repaired, and from there and at Berlin maintained, along with George Chatterton-Hill, close relations between the German Government and the various Irish-American and Sinn Fein organizations... " [1]

---

[1] Captain Pollard, *The Secret Societies of Ireland,* p. 141.

CHAPTER CXXIII

THE KNIGHTS OF THE KU-KLUX KLAN

(Founded 1915)

The patriotic nationalist Order of the Knights of the Ku-Klux Klan was founded in Georgia on December 4, 1915, by William Joseph Simmons, a Royal Arch Mason and a member of the Great Order of Knight Templars. [1]

The " Imperial Palace " of the " Invisible Empire " is at Atlanta, Georgia.

Under sections 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7 and 8 of its charter the following powers were granted the society : [2]

" 2. The purpose and object of said corporation is to be purely benevolent and eleemosynary, and there shall be no capital stock or profit or gain to the members thereof.

3. The principal office and place of business shall be in Fulton County, Ga., but petitioners desire that the corporation shall have the power to issue decrees, edicts, and certificates of organization to subordinate branches of the corporation in this or other States of

---

[1] *The Ku-Klux Klan, Hearings before the Committee of Rules,* House of Representatives, Sixty-seventh Congress, U. S. A. (1) p. 97.

[2] *Ibid.,* p. 102.

the United States and elsewhere, whenever the same shall be deemed desirable in the conduct of its business.

1. The petitioners desire that the society shall have the power to confer an initiative degree in ritualism, fraternal and secret obligations, words, grip, signs, and ceremonies under which there shall be united only white male persons of sound health, good morals, and high character ; and further desire such rights, powers, and privileges as are now extended to the Independent Order of Odd Fellows, Free and Accepted Order of Masons, Knights of Pythias, et al., under and by virtue of the laws of the State of Georgia.

5. Petitioners desire that there shall be a supreme legislative body in which shall be vested the power to adopt and amend constitutions and by-laws for the regulation of the general purpose and welfare of the order and of the subordinate branches of same.

6. Petitioners desire that the " Imperial Klonvokation " (supreme legislative body) be composed of the supreme officers and "kloppers" (delegates selected by the " klororo " State convention) of the several "realms" (subordinate jurisdiction) : and of such other persons as the constitution and by-laws of the society may provide.

7. Petitioners desire that the business of the society shall be under the control of the " Imperial Wizard " (president), who shall be amenable in his official administration to the " Imperial Kloncilium" (supreme executive committee, a majority of whom shall have authority to act and a two-thirds majority power to veto the official acts of the " Imperial Wizard " (president) in the matters pertaining to the general welfare of the Society: and to contract with other members of the society for the purpose of promoting and conducting its interests and general welfare in

any way, manner, or method he may deem proper for the society's progress and stability, subject to the restrictions of the power of the " Imperial Wizard " (president) as is heretofore set forth in this paragraph.

8. Petitioners desire that they shall have the right to adopt a constitution and by-laws and elect the first Kloncilium (supreme executive committee), which shall possess all the powers of the " Imperial Klonvokation " (supreme legislative body) until the first organization and meeting of that body, and shall fix the number, title, and terms of officers composing said " Kloncilium " (supreme legislative committee).

9. Petitioners desire the right to own separate unto itself and to control the sale of all paraphernalia, regalia, stationery, jewelry, and such... "

The executive committee of the K. K. K. was composed of members selected by Simmons himself who held his position as Imperial Wizard " for life or during good behaviour. "[3] As chairman of the advisory board and executive committee of the " kloncilium "[4] he was regarded as the chief power in the order which was to have four degrees. Prior to 1921 however only one of these was in operation.

Among the objects and purposes of the order were the following :[5]

" Article II, Section I. The objects of this order shall be to unite only white male persons, native-born gentile citizens of the United States of America, who owe no allegiance of any nature or degree to any foreign Government, nation, institution, sect, ruler, person, or people; whose morals are good ; whose reputations and vocations are respectable ; whose habits are exemplary; who are of sound minds and at or above the age of 18 years, under a common oath into a common brotherhood of strict regulations for the purpose of cultivating and promoting real patriotism toward our civil Government ; to practice an honorable clannishness towards each other; to exemplify a practical benevolence ; to shield the sanctity of the home and the chastity of womanhood; to forever maintain white supremacy; to teach and faithfully inculcate a high spiritual philosophy through an exalted ritualism, and by a practical devotedness to conserve, protect, and maintain the distinctive institutions, rights, privileges, principles, traditions, and ideals of a pure Americanism. "

---

[3] *The Ku-Klux Klan, Hearings before the Committee of Rules,* House of Representatives, Sixty-seventh Congress, U. S. A. (1) p. 91.

[4] *Ibid.,* p. 92.

[5] *Ibid.,* p. 122.

The K. K. K. require the following qualifications for membership : [6]

" Article IV, Section I. The qualification for membership in this order shall be as follows : An applicant must be white male gentile person, a native-born citizen of the United States of America, who owes no allegiance of any nature or degree whatsoever to any foreign Government, nation, institution, sect, ruler, prince, potentate, people, or person ; he must be at or above the age of 18 years, of sound mind, good character, of commendable reputation, and respectable vocation, a believer in the tenets of the Christian religion, and whose allegiance, loyalty, and devotion to the Government of the United States of America in all things is unquestionable. "

A few years after its foundation " attacks against the klan were originated and started by the *New York*

---

[6] *ibid.*, p. 123.

World, which was owned or controlled by a Jew, Mr. Pulitzer. "[7]

These attacks ultimately provoked a congressional investigation into the Society during which the details relevant to its organization above given were read into the record. Many charges were brought against the klan on that occasion but none was satisfactorily proved.

After five years of quiet uninterrupted organization, the society, which had adopted for its uniform the white hoods of the Ku-Klux Klan, its ancestor of the reconstruction period of American history, had reached proportions which the subversive element in the United States regarded with great uneasiness.

The Jewish power, in particular, recognized a challenge to its established dominion of American Freemasonry for the K. K. K. constituted an " Imperium in Imperio " in the heart of Judeo-American Freemasonry, a Christian empire sound and free and, as a masonic sect, one refusing to adhere to three of its chief tenets namely; Mongrelization of race, Anti-christianity, and Internationalism.

The great war was over and the new immigrant " Americans " were mostly natives of the different ghettos of Poland, Russia, the Balkan states and Germany. American ideals meant nothing to them. New York city alone numbers over two million Jews in its heterogeneous population and was derisively known by native gentile Americans as " Jew York ".

The Americans had realized too late that in the melting pot of Israel Zangwill nothing melted.

The American Jewish Kahal, fully aware of the menace to their peoples from this new nationalist movement, took precautions against it.

---

7. *ibid.,* p. 75.

With great political dexterity, the whole press concurring, the K. K. K. was pointed out on all sides as the great foe of the Roman Catholic Church and the Roman Catholics of America, falling in with the ideas, recognized the K. K. K. as merely a branch of their old enemy, Freemasonry.

So the Roman Catholics and the Ku-Klux Klan took up the old fight and the Jews looked on, while their two old rivals proceeded to destroy each other. *Divide et Impera !*

For root of this movement see Chapter LXXXVI.

CHAPTER CXXIV

SINN FEIN IN AMERICA

(Founded 1917)

Sinn Fein was founded in America by James Larkin and Peter Golden Monteith in 1917.

CHAPTER CXXV

THE THIRD INTERNATIONAL

(COMMUNIST INTERNATIONAL)

(Founded 1919)

In 1917, Leon Trotzky, through the intercession of an agent acting for Mr. Jacob Schiff of the firm of Kuhn, Loeb and Co. of New York, broke through the British blockade and with a cheque on Max Warburg of Hamburg (Mr. Schiff's brother-in-law) started the Bolshevik revolution in Russia.

Few people seem to be aware of the fact that Mr. Jacob Schiff was the head of the Russian Section of the Jewish International World government (Kahal).[1]

The Third International was founded at a Conference held in Moscow from March 2-6, 1919. The Russian Bolsheviks founded the Third or Communist International, sometimes known as the " Komintern ".

Mrs. Nesta Webster in *The Socialist Network* (page 44) describes the foundation of this International political subversion centre, in the following words :

" The Manifesto of the Conference, issued on September 8, 1919, calling upon the revolutionaries of the

---

[1] See the notes to the Small Maynard and Co. Boston edition of *The Protocols* published in 1920.

-world, whether Socialist, Syndicalist or Anarchist, to unite as soon as possible and form a unified Communist Party, was drafted by a committee consisting of Lenin, Trotsky, Zinoviev, Rakovsky and Fritz Platten. Zinoviev, *alias* Radomislsky, *alias* Apfelbaum, *alias* Ovse Gershon Aronovitch, was elected President of the Executive Committee. Among those who later formed the Executive were W. Maclaine and Tom Quelch of the B. S. P., Jack Tanner and J. T. Murphy of the Factory and Works Committee of England, Jacques Sadoul, A. Rosmer and Delignet for France, L. Fraina and A. Stocklitsky of the American Communist Party, D. Bilan of the American Communist Labour Party, the Jewish leader of the Dutch Communists, D. Wynkoop, whilst the Petrograd Committee of the Russian Communist Party was represented by N. Bukharin, V. Vorovsky, G. Klinger and Angelica Balbanova ". Let no one believe that these people were personalities in the game. They were agents. Agents only !

" While the Second International was being reconstituted in Geneva the Red or Third International was holding its Second Congress, which on July 19, 1920, met at Petrograd, and then continued its sessions in Moscow from July 23 to August 7.

" This time it was able to call itself a " World Congress ", for no less than thirty-seven countries were represented. [2]

" At this second Congress the attitude of the Komintern was made clear on two important points : Parliamentarianism and Syndicalism. With regard to the former, it was frankly stated that the aim of the Communists was to destroy parliamentarianism, which " has become a democratic form of the rule of the bourgeoisie.

---

[2] Nesta Webster, *The Socialist Network,* p. 44 *et seq.*

At the same time Communists should not refrain from participating in a political campaign on the score that parliament is a bourgeois government institution... The Communist Party enters such institutions not for the purpose of organization work, but in order to blow up the whole bourgeois machinery and the parliament itself from within ".

" The foundation of the Third International had immensely facilitated the spread of Bolshevism by providing the Soviet Government with a camouflage for its activities. No longer could groups or individuals working in co-operation with Moscow be accused of having dealings with a foreign power, but only with an independent Socialist organization.

"By the end of 1919 the Komintern had spread its tentacles all over Europe. In December of that year the West European Secretariat of the Third International, a marvellous organization controlling a network of smaller organizations, both open and secret, was established at a Conference attended by Great Britain. At a further Conference at Amsterdam in February 1920, it was decided to mark off this Secretariat as a Central European Secretariat, with head-quarters at Vienna (later known colloquially as the D. I. K. I.) and to set up a new Western Secretariat at Amsterdam.

A Southern European Bureau of the Third International and an Eastern Secretariat of Propaganda, comprising the Far East, were established. "

In August 1922, the Convention of the Communist Party of America was raided at Bridgeman, Mich., and numerous revolutionary documents were seized by the United States government.

Manifold requests for the recognition of the Soviet government by the United States of America, were later met by a refusal on the part of the Senate.

We extract the following from :[3]

Hearings before a Subcommittee of the Committee
of Foreign relations, United States Senate
Sixty-eighth Congress
Senate Resolution 50
Declaring that the Senate of the United States
favours the recognition of the Present Soviet
Government in Russia
Year 1924

" It is believed that the evidence presented by the Department of State at this hearing has conclusively-established three facts ; First, the essential unity of the Bolshevik organization known as the Communist Party, so-called Soviet Government, and the Communist International, all of which are controlled by a small group of individuals, technically known as the political bureau of the Russian Communist Party. Second, the spiritual and organic connection between this Moscow group and its agent in this country — the American Communist Party and its legal counterpart, the Worker's Party. Not only are these organizations the creation of Moscow, but the latter has also elaborated their activities. While there may have existed in the United States individuals, and even groups, imbued with Marxist doctrines prior to the advent of the Communist International, the existence of a disciplined party equipped with a program aiming at the overthrow of the institutions of this country by force and violence is due to the intervention of the Bolshevik organization into the domestic political life of the United States. The essential fact is the existence of an organization in the United States created by and completely subservient to

---

3. *Recognition of Russia,* p. 530, part 2.

a foreign organization striving to overthrow the existing social and political order of this country. Third, the subversive and pernicious activities of the American Communist Party and the Worker's Party and their subordinate and allied organs in the United States are activities resulting from and flowing out of the program elaborated for them by the Moscow group. "

These findings of the Senate of the United States were duly brought up before the British Parliament on Monday July 7, 1924 (see Hansard).

They were however disregarded.

The United States alone persevered in its condemnation of the tyrannical rulers of Russia in opposition to European countries which had welcomed The Communist International at Locarno and reinstated its ambassadors as the representatives of the Russian people.

The Third International disseminates its subversive propaganda through the medium of so called commercial organizations such as Amtorg in America and Arcos in England. These organizations operate in conjunction with certain powerful banking institutions.

The Communist International and Soviet Russia stand today as monuments ot the Masonic ideal of Albert Pike symbolized by the three ∴.

Destruction — Its organization of the Terror.
Materialism — Its assault on Religion.
Imposition — Its communist State.

For root of this movement see Chapter LXXXV.

CHAPTER CXXVI

THE FASCISTI

(Founded 1919)

From their activities one may assume the Fascisti to be the descendants of the Calderari.

After the European War of 1914 certain banks, conscious of the menace of Satanism, ultimately rechristened Bolshevism, fearing that the monster might get out of hand, selected certain men whose integrity, patriotism and bravery they trusted and, by paying them a stipend, kept them as a nucleus, ready, when the signal was given, to rally to a leader.

Fascism was founded at Milan on March 23, 1919 and Benito Mussolini became the leader of " the First Fifty-Five ".

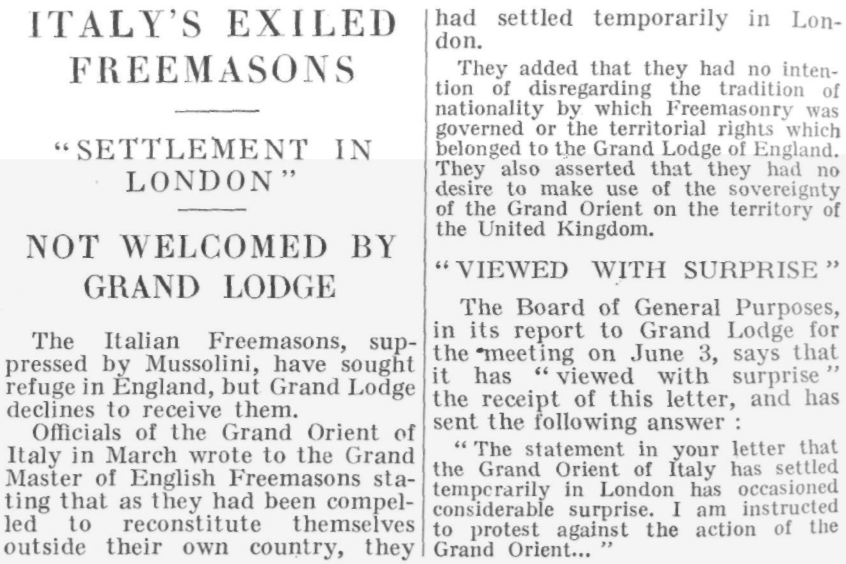
On October 27, 1922, the Fascisti marched on Rome.

At a meeting convoked previously, seventy-two socialist-bolshevist leaders had been summarily dealt with, thus preparing the way for the Coup d'Etat.

Freemasonry was outlawed in Italy in 1922, and the Grand Master of the Grand Orient of Italy, Domizio Torregiani, was arrested and condemned to five years banishment to the Lipari Islands. A similar fate also awaited Ulisse Bacci, son and namesake of the confidential agent of Crispi, Lemmi and Mazzini forty years ago.

The Fascisti also put an end to the activities of the terrorist society known as the Mafia in 1928 which, two years previously, had received its death blow at a trial involving 280 prisoners and 1600 witnesses.

The following reprint from The *Daily Telegraph* of May 26, 1931, is of interest in this connection :



ITALY'S EXILED FREEMASONS

"SETTLEMENT IN LONDON"

NOT WELCOMED BY GRAND LODGE

The Italian Freemasons, suppressed by Mussolini, have sought refuge in England, but Grand Lodge declines to receive them.

Officials of the Grand Orient of Italy in March wrote to the Grand Master of English Freemasons stating that as they had been compelled to reconstitute themselves outside their own country, they had settled temporarily in London.

They added that they had no intention of disregarding the tradition of nationality by which Freemasonry was governed or the territorial rights which belonged to the Grand Lodge of England. They also asserted that they had no desire to make use of the sovereignty of the Grand Orient on the territory of the United Kingdom.

"VIEWED WITH SURPRISE"

The Board of General Purposes, in its report to Grand Lodge for the meeting on June 3, says that it has "viewed with surprise" the receipt of this letter, and has sent the following answer :

"The statement in your letter that the Grand Orient of Italy has settled temporarily in London has occasioned considerable surprise. I am instructed to protest against the action of the Grand Orient... "

For root of this movement see Chapter LXX.

CHAPTER CXXVII

AMERICAN PROHIBITION

THE ANTI-SALOON LEAGUE.

(1920)

The eighteenth amendment to the Constitution of the United States was passed and became the law of the land in 1920.

The Anti-Saloon League, the organization which thus succeeded in outlawing the use of all wines, spirits and liquors, was founded in 1874 by a group of Oberlin citizens, headed by H. Fairchild, who became its first President.

The suggestion made by F. Scott McBride, General superintendent of the Anti-Saloon League, before the Senate lobby Committee, on May 9, 1930, that the chief protagonist of Prohibition in America, The Anti-Saloon League, was "born of God ?nd will fight on while He leads " precipitated altercations which, seeming ridiculous to some, suddenly brought a hitherto unsuspected factor to the fore, in which the Wet and Dry issue is concerned.

As recorded in the *New York Herald* of May 10, 1930 (Paris Edition), Mr. McBride's remark provoked the following conversation :

" When Mr. McBride, referring to drinking, added,

" Those things in the way of the progress of the Kingdom of God must get out of the way ", Senator Blain demanded :

" What authority have you for claiming that the Anti-Saloon League is a son of God ? "

" The league was born at a prayer meeting in Oberlin. "

" Did you get a message from God that He gave birth to your organization ? "

"No. "

" Then what notice did you receive that this had been a divine conception ? "

" The fact that it was born at a prayer-meeting. We never have such a meeting without opening with a religious service, and we are led by the leadership of God just as the activities of the church. "

" Oh ! So the league dons the cloak of religion ! "

" We do not don the cloak, it is real religion. "

Then Senator Blain, launching into the fray, exclaimed :

" I don't believe that God would approve of some of your practices, and I think your statement is an outrageous and sacrilegious thing. That's how I feel about it ! "

To us, attempting to trace the obscure sources of these movements the following question seems relevant. What "mediumistic " instructions were received at that prayer meeting in Oberlin thus to have fanaticised the faithful ?

We note that all religious extravagances seem indeed to spring from the same root, namely, the exercise of occult hypnotic influences over the masses to determine any movement whether religious, social or political. That this is so has been clearly demonstrated in the articles which deal with the Moravians, Jansenists, Anabaptists, Mormons, etc. but to be obliged to add Prohibition to this list comes rather as a shock.

In order that the reader may realize that we have a logical reason for putting Prohibition in this category of extravagances we must stress the point of alcohol being recognized by occultists as a deterrent to hypnotic influences.

Thus the annulling of the receptivity of mediums, conscious and unconscious, by the general use of alcohol among the masses, must create serious difficulties to such powers, if such indeed there be, who seek to rule by thought transference and absent suggestion.

Alcoholism, being undoubtedly a menace to the life of any nation, it is natural that the soundest element in the community should wish to fight the spread of such an evil. Thus again, the hidden powers wishing to eliminate the use of Alcohol for their own purposes, found fertile ground on which to sow the seed of dissension.

This explains the creation of the Anti-saloon League which was in effect opposed to the interests of the Catholic church (Vatican) the funds of which, in the United States, had been largely invested in the whisky trust by the Jew Judge, Max Pam of New Orleans. The Roman Catholic Church, had, by this act of its agent, thus been put in the unhappy political position of fostering the evil of the Saloon !

The move was a clever one, for the Saloon was a manifest evil and the saloon had to disappear. Its disappearance was precipitated by the drastic Prohibition law as a consequence of which, not temperance, but the 18th Amendment, is the law of the land today.

The following report of what may indeed be termed a national disaster was given on Feb. 12, 1930, by Hon. George S. Graham, in his opening speech as chairman of the House Committee 71st Congress (U. S. A.) on The Prohibition Amendment.[1]

" The eighteenth amendment and the enforcement law have been tested for 10 years, without satisfactory results. Enforcement has left a train of consequences most deplorable and depressing to every patriot. Killings amounting to over 1,360 have resulted in the last 10 years from enforcement. One hundred and fifty-one citizens were killed by prohibition officers, and 64 agents killed by citizens. In one year there were 77,351 arrests for violations, alleged or real. During the first year under prohibition there were 29,000 cases instituted, and during the last fiscal year there were close to 70,000. Demand for more prisons has been made and new ones ordered, which it is said will not give relief from overcrowding except for a period of 5 years or possibly 10. Prison population has jumped 4 per cent per 100,000 in the last five years. When we add corruption, bribery, demoralization of the citizenry, disrespect for law, bootlegging, and kindred offences, does not such a picture call for the fair dispassionate judgement of men and women, to come together and reason over what remedy can be devised to abate this sad condition ? "

Later Mr. Channing Pollock, in his testimony before the Congressional Committee, made the following statements. (Pages 176-178)

" At the most unfortunate and dangerous of all dangerous and unfortunate times, it has bred class hatred, religious hatred, and sectional hatred.

" I know a great deal about the Federal Council of Churches of America and I have worked with them a long time. I know every one of the men mentioned here to-day very intimately — Doctor Cadman and others. That contempt of public opinion led the saloon keeper to bring about prohibition by continuing to do things no people would stand, and I want to say this, that if these men in the Federal Council of Churches are not careful, they will bring about the abolishment of the church for that same reason. People will not stand that sort of dictation.

---

[1] *The Prohibition Amendment. Hearings before the Committee. . . .* Washington, 1930, 102788.

I consider the eighteenth amendment the greatest danger in our national existence. Inability to enforce it spells anarchy; ability to enforce it spells despotism. Between the two lies the golden mean of Aristotle, which is good government. "

In reading this indictment we are once more forcibly reminded of the three points of Albert Pike :

Mr. Pollock	*Albert Pike*
Anarchy	Destruction
Destruction of the Church	Materialism
Despotism	Imposition.

But meanwhile this " Despotism or Imposition " established by Prohibition is being helped along its destructive career by all the occult groups which furthered the passage of the 18th Amendment.

Among these are The Theosophical Society, Good Templars, Women's Christian Temperance Union, Methodist Board of Temperance and Social Service and a host of others !

The present officials of the Anti-Saloon League (1929) are :[1]

---

[1] Data are from *Anti-Saloon League Year book of* 1929, published by the League, edited by Ernest H. Cherrington.

Officials (in part) President, Bishop Thomas Nicholson[2], Methodist Episcopal ; Director Department of Education, Publicity and Research, Dr. Ernest H. Cherrington[2], Methodist Episcopal ; General superintendent Rev. F. Scott McBride[2], United Presbyterian.

National executive committee (in part); Secretary, Dr. Ernest H. Cherrington[2] Methodist Episcopal, Bishop James Cannon, Jr. Methodist Episcopal South ; Bishop Thomas Nicholson[2], Methodist Episcopal.

Administrative committee (in part); Bishop Thomas Nicholson[2], Methodist Episcopal; Bishop James Cannon, Jr[2], Methodist Episcopal South ; Dr. Ernest Cherrington[2], Methodist Episcopal.

National board of directors (in part); Chairman Bishop Thomas Nicholson[2], Methodist Episcopal; Hon. Grand M. Hudson, Baptist (Member of Congress from Michigan and was formerly superintendent for Anti-Saloon League in Michigan); Bishop James Cannon, Jr[2], Methodist Episcopal South.

---

2. Officially connected with both League and Federal Council of Churches of Christ in America.

For root of this movement see Chapter CXVIII.

CHAPTER CXXVIII

THE AMERICAN CIVIL LIBERTIES UNION

(Founded 1920)

In 1924, a book by R. M. Whitney called *The Reds in America* made its appearance. The American Civil Liberties Union founded by Upton Sinclair had by that time become an important branch of the Third International so Mr. Whitney gave several pages to a description of its organization and methods. All these would be quoted here were it not that space forbids. Our chief object in including this minor society among those already mentioned is to show the methods whereby Communism is rendered palatable to those whose world it would destroy.

" The American Civil Liberties Union owes its existence to the notorious pacifist organizations of war-time fame, which were presumably financed by German agents in this country working desperately, and for a time successfully, to keep the United States from entering the war. To be sure, in its present form it has existed only since January 12, 1920, when it was formed as an outgrowth and with the merging of various organizations which were developed during the World War, dating from October, 1914, and the members of which were pacifists, defeatists, German agents, radicals of many hues, communists, I. W. W. and Socialists. Among the organizations included in the merger were such pacifist bodies as the American League to Limit Armaments,. Emergency Peace Federation, First American Conference for Democracy and Terms of Peace, People's Freedom Union, People's Council of America, American Union against Militarism, League for Amnesty for Political Prisoners, Civil Liberties Bureau, National Civil Liberties Bureau, American Neutral Conference Committees and Legal First Aid Bureau. [1]

" The activities of this organization are extensive. It assists any radical movement through publications of high standing in order to influence public sympathy toward the radical organizations, furnishing attorneys for radical criminals, conscientious objectors and radical or foreign spies, " bores from within" in churches, religious and labour organizations, Women's Clubs, schools and colleges and the American Federation of Labour, in order to spread radical ideas. The union maintains a staff of speakers, investigators and lawyers who are working in all sections of the country. Lawyers are furnished on short notice wherever a radical criminal gets into trouble. A press clipping service is maintained which keeps the organization in close touch with every radical criminal or group of radical criminals in trouble and immediate financial aid, publicity and counsel is offered. Aiding in this service are some 800 co-operating lawyers, and more than a thousand correspondents and investigators, representing 450 weekly labour, farmer and liberal papers with 420 speakers and writers.

" The American Civil Liberties Union was particularly active in aiding the Communists caught in the Bridgman, Mich., raid.

" An office is maintained in Washington with the

---

1. R. M. Whitney, *The Reds in America,* p. 120 *et seq.*

Federated Press organization to handle matter requiring direct contact with the Government.

" The policies of the organization are determined by the National Committee and the carrying out of them is left to the Executive Committee which meets weekly. "

Mr. Whitney quotes the following paragraphs from the 1920 Lusk Committee report concerning the American Civil Liberties Union :

" An examination, however, of the propaganda and agitation which has been carried on in favor of the forceful overthrow of this Government shows that it does not consist of a mere expression of opinion, but invariably advocates measures for its effectuation. In other words, the representatives of revolutionary Socialists, Communists, Anarchists and other groups, state that by doing certain acts this Government may be overthrown and in each instance the agitator urges his hearers or his readers to commit those acts. It is a well settled principle of law that any reasonable man is responsible for the logical and reasonable consequences of his acts and utterances.

" While the Constitution of the State of New York guarantees the right of free speech it also contains the warning that the citizen may exercise it " being responsible for the abuse of that right ". The effect of the activities of the American Civil Liberties Union is to create in the minds of the ill-informed people the impression that it is un-American to interfere with the activities of those who seek to destroy American institutions. They seek to influence legislators and executives to repeal or veto any act calculated to protect the State or the Federal Government from the attacks of agitators. "

After some further analysis this report says :

" The American Civil Liberties Union, in the last analysis, is a supporter of all subversive movements, and its propaganda is detrimental to the interests of the state. It attempts not only to protect crime but to encourage attacks upon our institutions in every form.

" The union is closely identified with groups in practically every city in the country known as ' parlor Bolsheviki'. Speakers are furnished for these dilettante radicals whose influence would amount to little, but for the fact that they can be counted upon for financial contributions to any movement that promises them a thrill. It has been said that many idle men and women become identified with this parlor Bolshevik movement through emotionalism and because it gives them something to think about. Whatever the reason, the Communists and the Civil Liberties Union agitators make use of these groups for financial aid and as means of spreading propaganda.

" It is well known ", as Mr. Whitney further explains, " that the Workers' party, as a branch of the Communist party, has access to the ' sucker lists ' of people who have contributed to the finances of the party in various cities, and besides has ' sucker lists ' of its own which are shared by the Communists. The most remarkable feature of these lists is the number of names of prominent people upon them. "

Naturally most of the people on these ' sucker lists ' have no idea what sort of an organization they are assisting, but their money assists just the same ! Hazy notions of helping the poor and downtrodden and bettering the condition of the working classes serve to produce the necessary enthusiasm leading to subscriptions.

Among the persons whose names have appeared as members or officers of this society we name the following: Roger N. Baldwin, Albert De Silver, Scott Nearing and Max Eastman.

For root of this movement see Chapter CXXVII.

CHAPTER CXXIX

THE V. V. V.

VEREINIGUNG VERGEWALTIGTER VOLKER.

(Founded 1920)

The origin of this society is given by Mrs. Webster in *The Surrender of an Empire* (p. 132) in the following terms :

" The League of Oppressed Peoples had been founded in the United States under the name of the ' League of Small and Subject Nationalities ' by Dudley Field Malone, attorney for Ludwig Martens, who was afterwards appointed Bolshevist ambassador to the United States by Chicherin. Aleister Crowley, the well-known Satanist, who was then working in the United States for Germany, was connected with this association through one of its agents in America... After the Armistice the society became the ' League of Oppressed Peoples ', a name coined by the Germans who had declared themselves to be the champions of the numerous oppressed peoples of the British Empire ".

In the archives of certain Secret Services, there is a report stating that John Wesley De Kay, having travelled from Switzerland to Berlin on a German diplomatic passport, had an interview there with Count von Brockdorff-Rantzau, and four members of the

Druidenorden of which the direct outcome was the foundation in January 1920 of the V. V. V.

This organization was to operate in a subordinate capacity to the well known masonic " Druidenorden " and, at a secret meeting held Jan. 14, 1920, a certain Colonel was elected President of the Council. At the same meeting, a council of the League was founded and provision was made for the headquarters, and representatives in every country. It was also further decided that only bonafide accredited representatives in a recognized revolutionary society, with an occasional " Socialist Humanitarian ", would be eligible for membership in this council, two representatives being the quota allotted to each member country.

It was further ordered that a secret Inner Council, the very existence of which was to be ignored by the General Council and the members of the League, was to be formed. Five persons composed this secret council of which John De Kay was the President for life.

The Swiss branch of the society was founded on the same day as the German by a colleague of De Kay.

" The Druidenorden " writes Mrs. Webster, " was the concrete expression of the idea... of the ' Eastern School ' of German Monarchists, who believed in coming to an understanding with Soviet Russia for the purpose of a war of revenge against the Allies or, failing this, of undermining them by revolutionary propaganda, particularly throughout the British Empire. This section of German Monarchists never ceased to co-operate with the Bolsheviks after Lenin and his companions in the sealed train were sent by them to Russia : and the marvellous organization of Soviet propaganda abroad has been largely attributable to the German as well as the Jewish brains behind it.

" Up till about 1922 the activities of this German group and the Soviet Government were indistinguishable. Radek — alias Sobelssohn — acted as the link between Berlin and Moscow. The Druidenorden, like the Komintern, was internationally organized with lodges in Rome, Milan, Prague, Budapest and ramifications in England, France, Holland, Italy, Algeria, Canada, Egypt, India, Vladivostok and Japan. At the same time it had two important centres in Switzerland — at Zurich and Lugano — under Baron von A. and Baron von D. who co-operated with the Soviet agents in that country by supplying revolutionaries throughout the world with arms, ammunition and propaganda, Bolshevist, pro-German and anti-Entente.

" This inner secret society was behind the Moplah risings in India in 1921, and it was again the Druidenorden that recruited revolutionary Jews in Germany, and passed them through Switzerland via Milan and Genoa to Palestine, in order to stir up feeling against Great Britain. "

" There was also a direct connection between the Druidenorden and the I. R. B. (Irish Republican Brotherhood) though relations with Ireland were principally maintained through the V. V. V. and its agents in America. "

In 1922 the V. V. V. founded a subsidiary organization : " The League of Oppressed Peoples of the East, calculated to coordinate the activities of various societies such as those of " The Friends of Soviet Russia " and the " Friends of India ".

CHAPTER CXXX

JUVENILE FREEMASONRY

(Founded 1920)

If a novice is not the son of a Freemason he must, according to the rule, be 25 years old; that is to say, he must be the age demanded by the Priesthood before he can become a Mason. The son of a Freemason, however, can obtain a dispensation as regards the age at which he is admitted into the order. It is only necessary for him to be 18 years of age.

According to an article in *Freemasonry Universal,* Vol. I, Part I, June 1925, page 22 — " There are two movements in U. S. A., however, particularly worthy of attention. The first is the establishment of two orders, for boys and girls respectively, under the age of 21. These are more or less attached to Masonry, and the Order of De Molay, which is open to boys, and which five years ago consisted of nine members, to-day has over 1,177 Chapters, with over 125,000 members. The Order of the Rainbow for Girls, which was only started in 1923, now has over 300 Assemblies, with at least 20,000 members, and is increasing by leaps and bounds ".

We refrain here from going too closely into the subject of the boy and girl scouts movement leaving it as a suggestion that parents, guardians and teachers of youth would do well to investigate the judeo-masonic allegiance of scout leaders and masters.

CHAPTER CXXXI

THE LEAGUE OF NATIONS

(Founded 1920)

The League of Nations came into being on January 10, 1920, when the Treaty of Versailles, incorporating the first 26 articles of " The Covenant of the League " was ratified.

Cradled in Mazzini's Masonic Young Europe movement, the League and Treaty are the apotheosis of the policy of the old International Commitree of London and its satellite societies.

Of these, Mrs Webster, in her book *The Surrender of an Empire,* [1] gives us the following epitome :

" It was towards 1850 that a modified form of this scheme became known as ' The United States of Europe ', The actual formula seems first to have been used publicly by Victor Hugo in his opening speech to the Peace Congress held in Paris in 1849, but it was not until some years later that it was formally adopted as the slogan of International Socialism.

The impulse came again from the masonic lodges. In 1866, a Freemason named Santallier composed a work on Pacifism for his brother masons which led to the founding of the Union de la Paix, under the presidency of another Freemason, a German Jew named Bielefeld. The movement spread to Switzerland and on September 5, 1867, a further Congress was held. The proceedings were enlivened by a duel between the Constitutionalists and the Socialists, who declared that kings, soldiers — and some added priests — must be swept away in order to make room for the new Federation of Republics. The Socialists, led by Emile Acollas, won the day. Dupont, Karl Marx's right hand, was invited to represent the First International, of which he was secretary. Longuet, Marx's son-in-law, also attended. It was finally decided to found a " League of Peace and Liberty ", with a Franco-German periodical, entitled *Les Etats-Unis de I'Europe,* as its organ. This association, the ' Ligue Internationale de la Paix et de la Liberte ', still exists and publishes its paper ".

---

[1] *Op. cit.,* p. 56.

It is small wonder that members of Fabianism should have made themselves the heralds of the idea of the League of Nations. In 1917, Henry Noel Brailsford, helped by Noel Buxton, a noted Fabian, had written a book called *A League of Nations,* in which he outlined its principles and eventual organization. Later, Fabians proudly proclaimed that with the advent of the Labour Party, which was their party, they had gained full control of the League of Nations. But the most outspoken statements on its spirit of internationalism comes from the pen of one of the Founders of Fabianism, George Bernard Shaw.

In April, 1929, the Fabian Society published a tract (No. 226) called *The League of Nations,* in which the noted author gives an account of the strange relations which exist between the members of the respective national governments and those of the international government of the League. Alluding to an incident which took place at Geneva between Mr Locker-Lampson, Under-Secretary to the British Foreign Office, sent by his Government and representing it, and Sir Eric Drummond, permanent Secretary-General of the League at Geneva, George Bernard Shaw writes :

"These deciduous members arrive mostly in scandalous ignorance of the obligations already contracted by their Governments to the permanent governing bodies of the League. As party men they are at the opposite pole to the ' good Europeans ' of Geneva. As patriots they conceive themselves to be advocates of British national interests (not to say nationalist spies in the international camp) and expect to be supported devotedly by their distinguished fellow-countrymen on the permanent staffs. They are rudely undeceived the moment they begin their crude attempts at sabotage.

" Thus the British Jingo Imperialist finds himself writhing in the grip of Sir Eric Drummond whilst the French Poincarist-Militarist takes the full count in the first round from Mr Albert Thomas...

" This situation, in which the permanent nominees of the constituent governments are thrown into resolute opposition to their deciduous representatives is chronic at Geneva. One of Mr Albert Thomas's greatest victories there was won over the French Government when he defeated its attempt to exclude agricultural workers from the scope of the Labour Office on the ground that they are not 'industrials'. *The really great thing that is happening at Geneva is the growth of a genuinely international public service, the chiefs of which are ministers in a coalition which is, in effect, an incipient international Government.* In the atmosphere of Geneva patriotism perishes ; a patriot there is simply a spy who cannot be shot.

" In short, the League is a school for the new international statesmanship as against the old Foreign Office diplomacy ".

The struggle described by Bernard Shaw as taking place at Geneva between the Assembly — or " Hot Air Exchange " — as he terms it, and the Secretariat of the League on the one hand and the International Labour Office on the other is also edifying. The Labour Office, as its offspring, has the blessing of Fabianism and we are informed that together with its friends it is " quite willing to let the Secretariat die a natural death. "

How reminiscent of Marxism are all these utterances of one of the notorious disciples of the School of Destruction!

Another aspect of the League of Nations was given by an ardent Zionist — Jessie E. Sampter, who wrote that " the League of Nations is an old Jewish ideal, the ideal of nationalism and internationalism... The Jewish God-ideal implies democracy and internationalism ". Further the same author vouchsafed the information that " the solution of self-determination and the recognition of the necessity for a League of Nations to protect small peoples from future aggression have grown in large measure out of the claims of Zionists. "[2]

We also know that Lord Robert Cecil, Chairman of the League of Nations Union, in speeches he made in the United States, in favour of the League, predicted that eventually it would have its seat at Jerusalem. Thus speaking, he was only voicing the Zionist statements which had already been made by Leon Simon in *Studies in Jewish Nationalism.*[3]

Studying the League of Nations under its different

---

2. Jessie E. Sampter, *Guide to Zionism*, pp. 21, 87.
3. Leon Simon, *op. rit.*, p. 120, Edition 1920.

aspects we are led to draw the logical conclusion that it is a Judeo-Masonic achievement.

As the embryonic future World Government, destined shortly to be the Central Government of the European Federated States, the League of Nations is at present concerned with two schemes wherewith it will eventually be enabled to enforce its dictates — viz : one, an international army and air force, the other the International Bank which is already aiming at the creation and circulation of an international universal money. Meanwhile, its creators and sponsors are endeavouring to maintain the illusion of Democracy and its manifold benefits whereas, in fact, they have already erected at Geneva a temple to the Autocracy and Tyranny of Internationalism.

CHAPTER CXXXII

TENRI KENJUKAI

(Founded around 1920)

The Tenri Kenjukai, a Japanese politico-religious sect, is an offshoot of the main cult known as Tenrikyo, itself dissident from Shintoism, the national religion of Japan.

It is subversive, inasmuch as its adherents object mostly to one of the main tenets of the Japanese religion, namely, the traditional regard held for the Imperial Family.

When, in April 1928; the police discovered several plots for the assassination of members of the Imperial Family and Conservative Statesmen, it came to light that the Communists from Moscow had had, as chief tools, Tenri Kenjukaists.

Numerous arrests were made, including that of the founder of the sect, Aijiro Onishi. His life and behaviour bear a great resemblance to that of the leaders of the O. T. O., of Theodor Reuss, Rudolf Steiner, Aleister Crowley, Gourgieff, as also of Piggott of the " Abode of Love " and others.

Like them, Aijiro Onishi exacted a vow of poverty from his adherents who had to turn over to him all their property. With this wealth he had built for himself a beautiful house wherein he lived in great luxury.

Regardless of place, creed or nationality, the same causes produce the same effects, and greed on the one hand and human gullibility of dupes on the other, lead to uniform results.

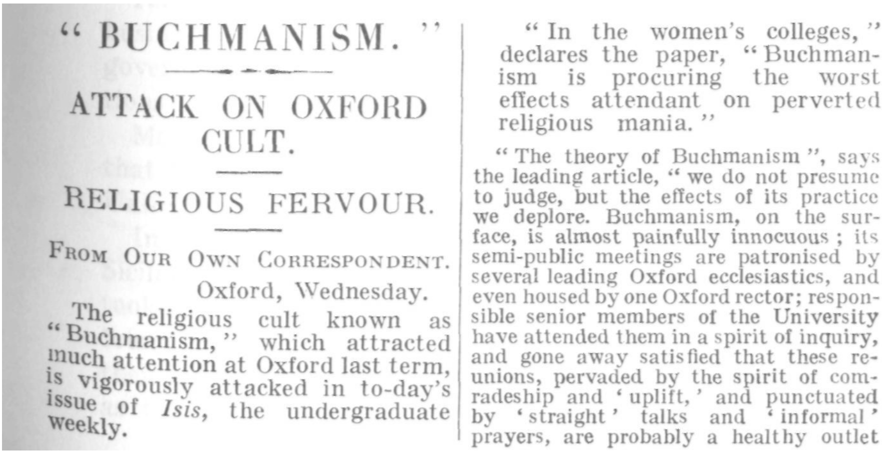
CHAPTER CXXXIII

BUCHMANISM

(Founded in 1928)

In the spring of 1928 much perturbation was caused in educational circles by the discovery that *Buchmanism,* defined by English University authorities as perverted religious mania, had permeated men's as well as women's colleges at Oxford.

Isis, the Oxford undergraduates' weekly, attacked Buchmanism in its leading article in one of its May issues ot 1928. On May 17, 1928, the *Daily Telegraph* partly reproduced it in the. following article :



"BUCHMANISM."

ATTACK ON OXFORD CULT.

RELIGIOUS FERVOUR.

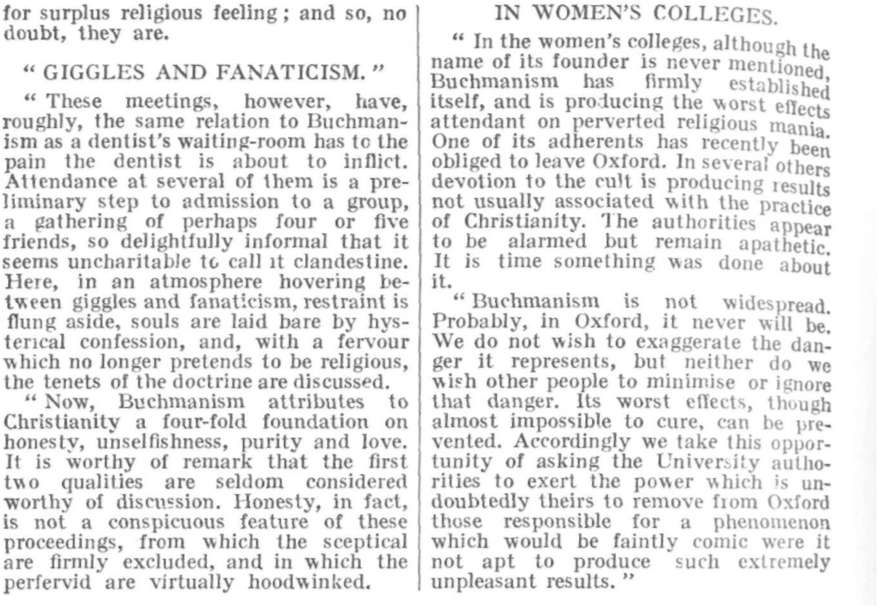
FROM OUR OWN CORRESPONDENT.

Oxford, Wednesday.

The religious cult known as "Buchmanism," which attracted much attention at Oxford last term, is vigorously attacked in to-day's issue of *Isis*, the undergraduate weekly.

"In the women's colleges," declares the paper, "Buchmanism is procuring the worst effects attendant on perverted religious mania."

"The theory of Buchmanism", says the leading article, "we do not presume to judge, but the effects of its practice we deplore. Buchmanism, on the surface, is almost painfully innocuous; its semi-public meetings are patronised by several leading Oxford ecclesiastics, and even housed by one Oxford rector; responsible senior members of the University have attended them in a spirit of inquiry, and gone away satisfied that these reunions, pervaded by the spirit of comradeship and 'uplift,' and punctuated by 'straight' talks and 'informal' prayers, are probably a healthy outlet



for surplus religious feeling; and so, no doubt, they are.

" GIGGLES AND FANATICISM."

" These meetings, however, have, roughly, the same relation to Buchmanism as a dentist's waiting-room has to the pain the dentist is about to inflict. Attendance at several of them is a preliminary step to admission to a group, a gathering of perhaps four or five friends, so delightfully informal that it seems uncharitable to call it clandestine. Here, in an atmosphere hovering between giggles and fanaticism, restraint is flung aside, souls are laid bare by hysterical confession, and, with a fervour which no longer pretends to be religious, the tenets of the doctrine are discussed.

" Now, Buchmanism attributes to Christianity a four-fold foundation on honesty, unselfishness, purity and love. It is worthy of remark that the first two qualities are seldom considered worthy of discussion. Honesty, in fact, is not a conspicuous feature of these proceedings, from which the sceptical are firmly excluded, and in which the perfervid are virtually hoodwinked.

IN WOMEN'S COLLEGES.

" In the women's colleges, although the name of its founder is never mentioned, Buchmanism has firmly established itself, and is producing the worst effects attendant on perverted religious mania. One of its adherents has recently been obliged to leave Oxford. In several others devotion to the cult is producing results not usually associated with the practice of Christianity. The authorities appear to be alarmed but remain apathetic. It is time something was done about it.

" Buchmanism is not widespread. Probably, in Oxford, it never will be. We do not wish to exaggerate the danger it represents, but neither do we wish other people to minimise or ignore that danger. Its worst effects, though almost impossible to cure, can be prevented. Accordingly we take this opportunity of asking the University authorities to exert the power which is undoubtedly theirs to remove from Oxford those responsible for a phenomenon which would be faintly comic were it not apt to produce such extremely unpleasant results."

CHAPTER CXXXIV

THE RACKETS

(Founded 1928)

Racketeering finds a place in this study on Occult Theocrasy because its adepts are the faithful servants of Mammon and their methods of terrorism, intimidation, plunder and murder are analogous to those of the Thugs, worshippers of Siva. Moreover, according to Fred Pasley, author of *Al Capone* and *Muscling In,* racketeering is organized and controlled by the members of the Italian Society, the *Unione Sicilione,* the *Mafia,* which he calls an invisible government.

Racketeering, as a system for plundering legitimate business, often with the connivance of the police and government officials, has assumed formidable proportions within the last few years.

Mr. Fred. D. Pasley, in his book *Muscling In,* states that " The Rackets " started with Prohibition in the United States.

In 1928, after Mussolini had suppressed the terrorist Sicilian Society known as *The Mafia,* whose members took an oath to " resist Law and defeat Justice ", they found a refuge in Chicago, U. S. A. There, through their affiliation with the *Unione Sicilione,* later known as the Italo-American Union, they manoeuvred themselves into a position which enabled them to cooperate with the vice and liquor purveyors of the city on the one side and the political party machines on the other.

To quote Mr. Pasley :[1]

" The *Unione Sicilione* had become a $ 10,000,000 a year enterprise, supplying the basic ingredient for the synthetic Bourbon, Rye, Scotch, brandy, rum and gin marketed in and around Chicago, and controlling the sale of sugar to the affiliated distillers of the West Side Italian district : Melrose Park, Cicero, and Chicago Heights. "

The head of the *Unione,* " ... ruled locally as a despot over some 15,000 Sicilians and dominated the councils of the *Unione's* branches in St. Louis, Detroit, Pittsburgh, Cleveland, Philadelphia and New York City. " He was virtually the chief executive in the invisible government, administering the gunman dictatorship of Chicago.

In 1928, the organized gunmen ot Chicago seized control of the Chicago Coal Teamsters', Chauffeurs' and Helpers' Union, local No. 704, and the Rackets entered a new phase, that of economic terrorisation by the armed forces of the Underworld.

In 1931, the *New York Times* of November 28 drew the following picture of the gangster situation :

> New York City has become the world's capital of the racketeers, who " with the power of Tammany hookups, reinforced with revolver bullets and sawed-off shotgun slugs " are exacting an annual tribute of at least $ 600,000,000 here, Fred D. Pasley, biographer of Al Capone, asserts in " Muscling In, " to be published today by Ives Washburn. Every trade and business organization is racket-ridden, some of the hardest hit groups being dealers in such foodstuffs as

---

1. Fred D. Pasley, *Al Capone,* p. 228.

artichokes, flour, milk, fish and ice, the garment trades, the building industry and the various branches of transportation, the author declares.

Mr. Pasley's nation-wide survey pays special attention to Chicago and New York. Crime, he reiterates, has become " big business, " thoroughly organized in every large American city " with its various racket departments—whether beer, booze, pretzels, gambling, vice or the muscling in on industry and labor unions—as efficiently administered as the units of a great corporation. " Instead of diminishing, the power of the racketeers is increasing and " in Chicago, Detroit, Cleveland, Philadelphia, New York and other American cities the gangster with his syndicate is in the racket saddle in 1931 and riding high, wide and handsome. "

In Chicago the annual tribute exacted by racketeers amounts to $ 200,000,000, Mr. Pasley says. The levy in Philadelphia is estimated at $ 100,000,000, in Detroit $ 75,000,000, in Los Angeles $ 50,000,000 and in Cleveland and Pittsburgh S 25,000,000 each. The nation's annual crime bill is put at $ 1,119,000,000.

Asserting that the rise of the racketeer dates from the enactment of prohibition, Mr. Pasley continues :

" Prohibition after twelve years is pouring into the coffers of the Capones, the Maddens, the Gordons and the Duffys something like $ 3,000,000,000 a year for the financing of their varied enterprises and the maintaining of political relationships. The State laws which they violated with impunity in their criminal operations were ineffective against them, for it was the record that the only convictions obtained, and these at excessive cost, were for violations of a Federal statutef namely, income tax evasion. "

The author criticizes severely the practice of freeing gangsters on bail while awaiting trial, contending that this allows the racketeer to silence his enemies by murder, to bribe officials, and to use the power of his organization to defeat justice in other ways.

But the term " Racketeering " does not apply only to the deeds of American gangsters.

Besides the underworld vice rings, drug rings, bootleggers and purveyors to the white slave traffic, we must also recognise the existence of Economic and Financial Rackets organized internationally on a huge scale.

To this category belong the International Foreign Exchange and National Credit Ramps operating to control the currencies of various countries for the benefit of a few " Insiders ". Foreign Exchange gambling gains are not even taxable and therefore constitute a doubly valuable racket. A banker's racket!

The Stock Exchange Racket, whereby the invested economies of the thrifty are siphoned out of their pockets into those of the " Insiders " is another popular form of business ramp. Stolen property being tax exempt, stock frauds yield a high return. However we do not advocate taxing stock fraud profits, we merely suggest that the law should provide for the punishment of those criminals who operate such transactions.

Then there are the Tax Department, Income and Super Tax Rackets. Should Racketeers gain control of the machinery of government of a country and use its system of taxation as a means of extorting and bleeding the taxpayer, such abuses are none the less a racket! The Income and Super Tax Racket conduces naturally to the extension of the operations of the Stock Exchange fraudulent operator. The poor pay the tax. Sometimes the rich pay it too. In any case, the honest pay for the dishonest.

And what of the law ? People often have to wonder, especially in the U. S. A., whether they can always go to law solely on the basis of a just claim. Must they not sometimes consider whether they will not be acting through a lawyer who may have interests which are opposed to their own ? And if there should be such a thing as a betrayal, need it always be paid for in money ?

Again, we must not overlook the Social Racket, one of the most interesting examples of which is the now famous " Douglas-Pennant Case ". From recent developments, however, it would seem that this was largely a Masonic intrigue. The Chairman of the House of Lords Committee trying the case was the late Lord Kintore, a noted Freemason. Others connected with the conspiracy to ruin Miss Violet Douglas-Pennant's life and reputation were also Freemasons. Nothing was ever proved against this lady and she herself makes no mystery of the fact that she was, for a short time, a member of a masonic organization, "The G. D. " She resigned her membership in this body, however, shortly after her initiation but from then onward was hounded and threatened in every way. That her failure to gain Justice in an English court is only a part of a policy of persecution will surprise few of those who have followed her case.

The present wave of International Unemployment is interesting as an Economic Racket. Already France, England and the U. S. A. have been led to segregate their own workers and exclude foreign labour. This course seemed a patriotic necessity at the outset but the idea, exploited to its logical conclusion, spells slavery of the workers. Nations decreeing that only native labour can be employed within their boundaries thus subtly rob labour of its freedom to work where it commands the highest price and best conditions.

Labour, robbed of its right to control its own market, may suddenly find itself restricted to even county boundaries. In that event a condition will arise for which there is already an historical precedent. Boris Goudounoff, through the creation of just such a situation in Russia, instituted serfdom in a country where, previously, the workers had been free men.

Italy, Australia and England have already enforced virtual embargoes on capital — why not therefore embargoes on labour ?

The Rackets are the last stage of the battle in the economic war between Predatory Capitalism and Predatory Labour against Constructive Capitalism and Constructive Labour. The progressive stages of this war are outlined in a document known as *The Protocols of the Wise Men of Zion.* [2] The full significance of this record should have been made the subject of a comprehensive course of studies in every school, church and university, but whereas Marxism, which is but one of the means devised for the accomplishment of the *Protocols,* is freely taught and practised, a wall of silence and fear has been built around the *Protocols* themselves.

2. L. Fry. *Waters Flowing Eastward,* Part II.

CHAPTER CXXXV

THE NEW HISTORY SOCIETY

(Founded 1930)

This Society was founded on April 5, 1930, at a meeting at The Park Lane Hotel, New York, presided over by Mirza Ahmed Sohrab who read a resolution embodying the ideals of Professor Einstein and Arthur Henderson which was unanimously adopted.

In *Torchbearers* (p. 32), a pamphlet published by The New History Society in 1931, we read that Mr. Einstein has declared the position he will take in the next war ;

" I should unconditionally refuse every direct or indirect war service and try to induce my friends to take the same stand, and this independently of any critical opinion of the causes of the war. "

History is, or should be, the truth on past events. When it is distortion of past records to suit the aims and convenience of specific groups it is not history. There can be no such thing as New History. We are therefore entitled to question the historical basis of this society whose members are the " advocates of the Universal Principles of Baha'u' llah and spreaders of the Ideals of Abdul Baha. "[1]

---

[1] *Torchbearers,* p. C.

The direct result of another Mass meeting held on April 5 under the auspices of this society was the affiliation of twenty Peace Societies under the name of " Youth Peace Federation ".

Among the members of this New History Society we find the name of Besanta Koomar Roy.

CHAPTER CXXXVI

THE YOUTH PEACE FEDERATION

(Founded 1930)

Early in the 20th Century the headquarters of *The Worker,* the Communist weekly, were at 8 East 10th Street, New York. It also harboured a " Youth Movement " imported from Germany.

In a pamphlet issued by the Massachusetts Public Interest League, (210 Newbury Street, Boston, Mass. April 1925) we read that this " Youth Movement " was sponsored by The National Student Forum, an organization " made up of those elements in the colleges which have at different times called themselves Inter-collegiate Socialist Societies, Liberal Leagues and Leagues for Industrial Democracy. It was Lenin's cleverness which suggested ' frequent changes of name ' to radical organizations. This bewilders the public and the new names serve as an alias. "

An article in the *Survey Graphic* for December 1921 stated the aims of this movement to include advocation of the Nudity Cult and promiscuity in sex relationships under the name of free love. Its advocacy of Body worship enables us to classify it as " Phallic ".

" It is the purpose of the National Student Forum ", writes R. M. Whitney, in a pamphlet entitled *The*

Youth Movement, " and the other organizations which it supports by its sympathy, to undermine and sink, or overthrow, the Government of the United States, and to set up in this country a s(viet form of government, such as Russia now boasts. "

" Its constituent organizations are :

Barnard Social Science Club.
Bryn Mawr Liberal Club.
Dartmouth Round Table.
George Washington University Free Lance Club.
Harvard Student Liberal Club.
Hood College Contemporary Club.
Hollins (Virginia) Student Forum.
Howard (coloured) Student Progressive Club.
Mt. Holyoke Forum.
Miami University Law School Liberal Club.
Northwestern University Liberal League.
Oberlin College Liberal Club.
Park College Social Science Club.
Rockford College International Relations Club.
Radcliffe Liberal Club.
Stanford University Forum.
Swarthmore Polity Club.
University of Chicago Liberal Club.
University of Colorado Forum.
Union Theological Seminary Contemporary Club.
Vassar College Political Association.
Wellesley College Forum.
Western College Forum.
Yale Liberal Club ". [1]

The first executive Secretary of the National Student Forum was Mr. John Rothschild, a New York Socialist. Among others interested in the movement was

---

[1] See pamphlet published by The American Defense Society Inc. 154 Nassau Street. New York City.

" W. A. Robeson, an Englishman who had studied under Harold Laski, the Radical who came into the limelight while teaching at Harvard. "[2] Robeson was a member of the Advisory Committee of the British Labour Party and a friend of the well known Fabian, Mr. George Bernard Shaw.

In the *New Student,* the organ of the National Student Forum of Dec. 2nd, 1922, Mr. George Bernard Shaw is quoted as saying; — "As far as I can gather, if the students in American Universities do not organize their own education, they will not get any. The professors are overworked schoolmasters, underpaid, and deprived of all liberty of speech and conscience. From them nothing can be expected... the remedy is co-operative organization by the consumers; that is, by the students... In forming intellectual Soviets, and establishing the Dictatorship of the Learner, the American students may save their country, if it is capable of being saved. If not, they will at least learn something, and perhaps teach something, in the *ecstasy of demolition.* "

In a speech made in Moscow in June, 1923, Zinovieff (Chairman of The Young Communist International Movement) said : — " The Youth Movement is the best section of the Communist International. "[3]

In further corroboration of the tendencies of this organisation to an " ecstasy of demolition ", Professor George Leiken of the Volga region is further mentioned in the pamphlet above referred to as saying : — " When the Russian youth reaches the age of 12 the so-called League of Communist Youth awaits him. This organization accepts girls as well as boys and promptly reduces them to a low state of moral corruption. The institutions of marriage and home are ignored...

---

[2] R. M. Whitney, *The Youth Movement in America.*

[3] See pamphlet issued by the Massachusetts Public Interest League, April, 1925.

' Children are taught that they owe no obedience to parents, that they need acknowledge no authority but the Red Government. "

" It was W. Z. Foster, one of Moscow's cleverest agents, who said : ' Communists get things done and paid for by others. ' "

The Youth Peace Federation founded in 1930 is also to be found at 8 East 10th Street, New York. Organized in April 14 1930 at the residence oi Mr. and Mrs. Lewis Stuyvesant Chanler this society was founded at a mass meeting held under the auspices of "The New History Society " on April 5, 1931. It is the collective name of the following associations : —

Civic Club, Junior Group;
International Club ;
League of Youth of Community Church ;
Methodist Epworth League, New York District ;
New York Committee of the Fellowship of Reconciliation ;
Pioneer Youth of America;
Progressive Youth League of Bronx Free Fellowship ;
Seven Arts Club ;
The Peace Education Group of the Ethical Culture Society of New York ;
Women's International League for Peace and Freedom (Junior Group);
Women's Peace Society (Junior Group);
Young Caravan ;
Young Circle League ;
Young Judea ;
Young Peoples Fellowship of St. Philip's Parish (Senior; ;

Young Peoples Fellowship of St. Philip's Parish (Junior) ;

Young Peoples Group of the Ethical Culture Society, Brooklyn, N. Y.

Young Peoples Socialist League of Greater New York;

Young Poale Zion;

Youth Section of the War Resisters League. "[4]

The above organization is that familiar to any business man of a Holding Corporation in which are joined subsidiary companies.

Basing our deductions on the foregoing articles in this book we conclude that the secret objectives of this corporation may be :

Disarmament of all countries except Russia in order to facilitate the rule of the World by the International Jewish Super-Capitalist Group now dominating Russia with the Red Army under its control, and the end of Democracy.

A basic principle of war strategy is to have your enemy unprepared for assault.

The Massachusetts Public Interest League warns us that :

" The Youth Movement is using American Youth as a pawn in the Communist game.

The real menace of the movement in this country (America) lies in the fact that it is revolutionary propaganda in romantic disguise subtly preaching to immature youth the *ecstasy of demolition* of the foundations of civilization. "

---

4. *Peace Militant*, published by The New History Foundation New York City.

CHAPTER CXXXVII

THE INTERNATIONAL BANK

(Founded 1930)

The Internationalization of finance reached its apotheosis when, on April 23 1930 the International Bank at Basle, commissioned to enrol the central banks of nine nations in its membership, was founded.

As for the delegates from the different countries attending the meeting their names signify little for, owing to the speed and unanimity with which official appointments were made, it is evident that they were all instructed, or, in other words pledged, to obey orders. By whom were the orders given ? History may answer that question some day!

Mr. Gates McGarrah was elected chairman of the board of directors with Mr. Leon Frazer his deputy and Sir Charles Addis and Dr. Melchior were elected vice-chairmen.

The significance of this international institution was commented upon in an article entitled " Mammon being enthroned" by " Arthurian" in the *Referee* dated Sunday, April 13, 1930, in the following terms which, while constituting a warning to the English people, is actually an appeal to the people of the world.

" One is amazed at the equanimity with which Sir Charles Addis describes the difficulty of enabling the Bank for International Settlements to avoid interference with the Sovereign Rights of the people of each of so many countries ! Surely the possibility alone ought to be adequate condemnation of the bank. The opening for chicanery, brute force, bribery, corruption and war, in the supposed solution of this problem, is unprecedented in the history of the world.....

" The Bank is to exist for fifty years, if it can ; it is to pay no taxes during all that time ; and its assets and deposits are to be immune from seizure, confiscation, and censorship, in peace or war ; it is also to be subject to no restriction or prohibition of any kind on its imports and exports of gold or currency. So little do Government decisions regarding the Bank really count that, before the scheme has been sanctioned, the first part of the subscription has already been subscribed . The Bankers and business men to be associated are to ensure that there will be no uncertainty about the business that the Bank will promote, the ' money troubles which lie at the root' of the industrial depression and financial uncertainty are, of course, going to be cured by them — so they say. The Governor of the Bank of England (Mr Montagu Norman) is going to be a director of this foreign Bank. What an honour ! This Board, with the daily lives of hundreds of millions of people at its mercy, is going to meet at least ten times a year — four times at Basle... 'The Bank owes allegiance to no single Government. ' It need keep no currency reserve...

"This Bank that owes no allegiance to anyone can do as it likes,.... Mammon is enthroned upon the world, to make what profits it can, with unrestricted powers, for fifty years ! In addition to its extraordinary powers, it has control of the ' Machinery of Reparations ' which contains the means by which the wherewithal to liquidate Reparations can be squeezed out of the receivers at a profit to the payers. . . . Economic control involves political control as well as every other control of any people. Truly, the megalomania of finance never went further, truly, there has never been anything like it in the world before. . . .

" People of England ! Remember how the strangle-hold of the Rank of England on all the other banks, on all the other financial houses, upon every business and upon every home and family has grown from the comparatively negligible sum of £1,200,000 of similar credit free of interest and the ' usufruct' thereof. This new usufruct will be the impoverishment, debasement, extinction, and disintegration of all that the masses of this country care for, and the certain decline and fall and redistribution, into foreign hands, of the Rritish Empire...

" In this country we have asked for the creation of interest-free credit to be lent to the people to be used for the production of wealth by and for the people, but by a great conspiracy of silence the idea is being suppressed. The hidden prize is not intended for us. Only those who have been swindled on a race-course by three-card trick men can realize what is now being done to all the peoples of the Allied countries by a debased money and credit-upon-credit trick, the like of which has never been attempted in the world before...

" The alleged £ 80,000,000 per annum that Germany is supposed to pay to the United States for fifty-nine years is a delusion and a snare. Rut the aim of the section of Wall Street repudiated by President Hoover, which initially promoted the idea of the Plan (The Young Plan), is that, through Germany, this section of Wall Street shall dominate the world. "

Note : Compare with *The Protocols,* (L. Fry, *op. cit.)*

CONCLUSION

The foregoing pages have had for object to show how, whether open or secret, a great many societies, masonic and non-masonic, of good or evil intent, seem to function towards the same goal under centralized leadership.

This book claims to be an endeavour to prove that:—

1 — *Owing to their union,* all secret societies, whether political, philanthropic or occult in appearance, serve a political purpose unknown to the majority of their members.

2 — The power wielded by such societies is real and its character is international.

3 — Regardless of their exoteric objects, the esoteric aims of most societies are all directed towards the same end — namely : the concentration of political, economic and intellectual power into the hands of a small group of individuals, each of whom controls a branch of the International life, material and spiritual, of the world today.

The main branches thus controlled are :—

1 — The International Banking Groups and their subsidiaries.

2 — International, industrial and commercial control groups with their interlocking directorates.

3 — Education, Art, Literature, Science, and Religion. as vehicles of intellectual and moral perversion.

4 — The Groups already organized throughout different countries for the study of International affairs political, financial and economic.

5 — The International Press, the medium used to mould public opinion.

6 — The Political party organizations of each nation, whether conservative, liberal, radical, socialist etc. existing in every country with parliamentary administration.

7 — Internationally organized corruption, the white-slave traffic, vice and drug-rings, etc.

Any one of the branches above enumerated has innumerable ramifications and the control of even the least of them cannot be obtained without money. Money therefore becomes one of the most powerful levers in the hands of men who form the controlling groups. Thus does research in the realm of Finance become indispensable to the students bent upon tracing the real power behind universal control. This power, they will find, is wholly in the hands of international Jewish financiers.

Glancing at the body frame of all political organizations, do we not perceive that MONEY is its main sinew ? It would not sound preposterous to state that the electoral system is similar to that of auction, insomuch as it favours the highest bidder. In election campaigns, the successful candidate is not necessarily the most deserving or worthy of votes, but too frequently he who was able to buy the greater number of votes. Votes are captured by slogans, propaganda and, not unfrequently, bribery. Only an infinitesimal percentage among them will ever strive to find out the power or powers behind the candidate, and by whom he is, in effect, controlled.

Yet the importance of such an investigation is both obvious and necessary, for it is a proven fact that candidates to parliament in one country have sometimes been controlled by a man, or group of men, in another country inimical to their own.

If political control is international it must of necessity be subversive of PATRIOTISM. If it holds in its power the reckless forces of Socialism and Communism, it must be subversive of social order and the promoter of revolution.

If spiritual control is anti-christian, Gnostic and occult, it must be subversive of Christianity and Religion. If it directs vice rings of all kinds, it must aim at the destruction of the moral, intellectual and physical strength of the human Race.

If, in conclusion, Finance is Power and as such is concentrated in one point, it is the arbiter of War and Peace, Life and Death, Welfare and Wretchedness, Prosperity and Ruin.

Everything and, it is sad to say, almost everybody, has a price and can be bought though not always with money. Men who to-day wield financial power have, long since based their system of purchase on this axiom. Far be it from us to suggest that there are no idealists in every walk of life for whom the pursuit of either patriotism, religious mysticism or philanthropy is unadulterated. On the contrary, we shall go as far as to say that such people become the best tools in the hands of plotters by whom they are led to believe that disinterested material help will be given them for the attainment of their ideals or aims. The study of secret revolutionary societies will show many examples of remarkable cases of self sacrifice on the part of genuine idealists. Subversives of either religious, social and political order have ever known how to make use of such people by instilling into them the super religion of the secret.

It is against this " secret " that the fight should be waged. If the aims of secret societies are good, one fails to see the need for their secret oaths and initiations. The "light " they promise should, like the sun, shine upon everyone.

To use the words of Christ : " Who lighteth a candle and putteth it under a bushel ? "

Masonic and secret societies need light.

Hence, Light should be thrown upon them from without that their secrets may be revealed.

As to " Toleration " — indiscriminate toleration preached at random, it should be considered one of the exoteric bases upon which are erected subversive creeds.

Recognizing as they do the practical power of thought, sects induce their novices to surrender their use of this power whose normal function, guided by the individual conscience, is to discriminate between good and evil in order to oppose the latter. Thus they create a dangerous negative state of mind as opposed to the Christian or positive. The individual when robbed of his initiative can easily be swayed and guided by the will of others. Therein resides the power of hypnotism and in this wise the shibboleth of " toleration " which, in fact, paralyses opposition to evil, serves an esoteric purpose suspected by few.

If the contents of this book may help in safeguarding the young and the unwary against falling into the pitfalls set by agents of subversive sects, its author will not have laboured in vain.

The work is far from being completed. It claims, in fact, to be only an attempt in the direction of inexhaustible research work upon the coordination of the aims of all societies whether political or occult. It is to be hoped that others, and may they be many, will begin work where this book ends for —

" *The harvest is great indeed but the labourers are few* "

BIBLIOGRAPHY

ABAFI, LUDWIG, Geschichte der Freimaurerei in Oesterreich-Ungarn, 1899.

Adriano Lemmi, DOMENICO MARGIOTTA 33°, 1894.

AHMADIYYAH SECT : Chief Publications are

The Islamic Review,	pub.	at	London
The Sun of Islam,	»	»	Lahore
The Light,	»	»	Lahore
Moslem Sunrise,	»	»	Chicago
Moslemische Review,	»	»	Berlin
Revue Islamique,	»	»	Mauritius

AIMABLE, LOUIS, La R ∴ L ∴ Les Neuf Sœurs.

Al Capone, FRED D. PASLEY.

Anacalypsis, GODFREY HIGGINS.

Analysis of Magic and Witchcraft (An), C. W. OLLIVER, 1928.

Annotations on the Sacred "Writings of the Hindus, EDWARD SELLON, 1902. (Printed for Private Circulation).

Anstifter (Der) des Weltkrieges by Friedrich Wichte, 1918, DR KARL KRAMABSH.

Arabia, Adventures in, W. B. SEABROOK.

Arcane Schools (The), JOHN YARKER.

Assassins, History of, VON HAMMER.

Astrologica Bulletina, 1931, No. 192. (Periodical).

BAILEY, ALICE A., Initiation Human and Solar, 1922.

BARRUEL, Histoire du Jacobinisme, 1819.

BATAILLE, Le Diable au xix^{e} siècle.

Batailles Maçonniques, FERNAND PIGNATEL.

BLANC, HIPPOLYTE, Le Merveilleux dans le Jansenisme, le Magnetisme, etc.

BLANCHARD, 33rd Scotch Rite Illustrated, 1915.

— 33rd Knight Templarism Illustrated, 1915.

BOULAIN, ABBE PAUL, L'Elue du Dragon, 1929.

CAILLET, EMILE, La Prohibition de l'Occulte.

CALMEIL, L. F., De la Folie.

Carbonari Conspiracy of Belfort and La Rochelle.

CARLILE, RICHARD, Manual of Freemasonry.

CHACORNAC, PAUL, Eliphas Levi, 1926.

CHEREP-SPIRIDOVICH, Maj. Gen. Count, The Secret World Government or " The Hidden Hand ", 1926.

Christian Science Journal, MARY BAKER EDDY. (Periodical).

Churches of Christ in America, Origin and History of the Federal Council of, ELIAS B. SANFORD.

— See also Tainted Contacts, SANCTUARY, E. M,

Clef (La) des Grands Mysteres, ELIPHAS LEVI, 1861.

Complete Manual of Oddfellows, 1879.

CONSTANT, ALPHONSE LOUIS, see ELIPHAS LEVI.

Crispi, le 33°, DIANA VAUGHAN.

— Francesco, Memoirs of, THOMAS PALAMENGHI-CRISPI, 2 vols. (Translation), 1922.

CROWLEY, ALEISTER, Magick, Paris, 1930.

DAKIN, EDWIN FRANDEN, Mrs Eddy, New-York, 1929.

DAVID-NEEL, ALEXANDRA, Initiations Lamaiques, 1930.

— Mystiques et Magiciens du Thibet, 1930.

DAWSON, RICHARD, Red Terror and Green.

John Dee, CHARLOTTE FELL SMITH.

DE LA HODDE, Histoire des Sociétés Secretes, 1850.

DE LA RIVE, La Femme et I'Enfant dans la Franc-Maçonnerie Universelle.

Devil Worship in France, A. E. WAITE, 1896.

Diable (Le) au xix^{e} siecle, BATAILLE.

Dictionary of Universal Biography, HYAMSON.

Discourse (A) upon the Theology and Mythology of the Antients in the Travels of Cyrus, CHEVALIER DE RAMSAY, 1728.

Disraeli, The Alien Patriot, E. T. RAYMOND, 1926.

Dogme et Rituel de la Haute Magie, ELIPHAS LEVI, 1860.

DRINKWATER, CHARLES, Charles James Fox.

East (The) in the Light of the West, RUDOLPH STEINER, (Translation) 1922.

EDDY, MARY BAKER, Science of Health.

— *Christian Science Journal.* Periodical.

Eddy, Mary Baker, Life of, SYBIL WILDER.

— Mrs Eddy, EDWIN FRANDEN DAKIN, New-York, 1929.

L'Elue du Dragon, 1929. ABBE PAUL BOULAIN.

ENCAUSSE, DR. *see* PAPUS.

Encyclopaedia of Freemasonry (Ars Magna Latomorum) and of Cognate Instituted Mysteries : Their Rites, Literature and History, The New, 2 vols. A. E. WAITE, P. M., P. Z., 1921.

— The Jewish.

— of Religions and Ethics, HASTINGS, 1918.

— of Religious Knowledge, SCHAFF HERZOG.

L'Ennemie Sociale, PAUL ROSEN 33°.
Entente Freimaurerei und Veltkrieg, CARL HEISE, 1919.
Enthusiasm of Methodists and Papists compared, BISHOP LAVINGTON, London, 1751.
Equinox (The) Periodical.
Fabian Society, History of The, EDWARD R. PEASE, London, 1925.
Fakirisme (Le) et les Yogas, SEDIR, 2^e Edition, 1911.
Fils des Dieux (Les), Louis JACOLLIOT, 1873.
Finished Mystery (The), CHARLES TAZE RUSSELL, Brooklyn, 1918.
Folie (De la), L. F. CALMEIL.
Franc-maçonnerie allemande. Les Illumines de Baviere et la, R. LE FORESTIER, 1915.
— Batailles maçonniques, FERNAND PIGNATEL.
— La Femme et l'Enfant dans la, DE LA RIVE.
— universelle. Le Culte de la Nature dans la, DOMENICO MARGIOTTA 33°.
— L'Ordre des Francs-Maçons trahi et le secret des Mopses revele. Published at Amsterdam, 1763.
(see *also* Freemasonry)
Freemasonry and the Anti-Christian Movement, Rev. E. CAHILL, S. J., 1930.
— Encyclopaedia of, KENNING, 1878.
— Exposed, Capt. WILLIAM MORGAN, 1826.
— History of, ROBERT FREKE GOULD, 1887.
— Irish and English Freemasons and their Foreign Brothers, MICHAEL DI GARGANO.
— Lexicon of, MORRIS.
— Manual of, RICHARD CARLILE.
— New Encyclopaedia of, A. E. WAITE.
— *The Speculative Mason.* Periodical, 1927.
— *Universal,* The Official Journal of the Order of Universal Co-Masonry (British Jurisdiction), 1929.
(see *also* Masons and Franc-maçonnerie)
FROST, THOMAS, Secret Societies of the European Revolution 1776-1876, 2 vols.
Fruits of Anthroposophy, GEORGE KAUFMANN, 1922.
FRY, L. Waters Flowing Eastward, 1931.
Gambetta — Life and Letters, P. B. GHEUSI.
DI GARGANO, MICHAEL, Irish and English Freemasons and their Foreign Brothers.
Geschichte der Freimaurerei in Oesterreich-Ungarn, LUDWIG ABAFI, 1899.
GHEUSI, P. B., Gambetta — Life and Letters.
GIOLITTI, GIOVANNI, Memoirs of my Life, Translated by Edward Storer, 1923.
GOULD, ROBERT FREKE, History of Freemasonry, 1887.

GRAETZ, H. History of the Jews.
Grand Mystic Temple (The), JOHN YARKER.
Grand Orient (Histoire du), Published at Rennes, 1865.
GUENON, RENE, Le Theosophisme, 1921.
HANNAY, The Rise and Fall of the Roman Religion, 1925.
HASTINGS, Encyclopaedia of Religions and Ethics, 1918.
HECKETHORN, Secret Societies of all Ages and Countries, 1875.
HEISE, CARL, Entente Freimaurerei und Veltkrieg, 1919.
HIGGINS, GODFREY, Anacalypsis.
HUDSON, THOMAS JAY, The Law of Psychic Phenomena, 1894.
Hung Society (The), J. S. WARD AND W. G. STERLING.
HUNOLSTEIN, Count VOGT D', Unpublished Letters of Marie Antoinette, 1864.
HYAMSON, Dictionary of Universal Biography.
Illumines : Dom Pernety et les Illumines d'Avignon, MARC DE VISSAC.
— Les Illumines de Baviere et la Franc-maçonnerie allemande, R. LE FORESTIER, 1915.
Initiation Human and Solar, ALICE A. BAILEY, 1922.
Initiations Lamaiques, ALEXANDRA DAVID-NEEL, 1930.
" INQUIRE WITHIN ", Light-bearers of Darkness, 1930.
International, The Secret History of The, ONSLOW YORKE.
Ireland — A Catspaw, ELIZABETH LAZENBY, 1928.
Irish and English Freemasons and their Foreign Brothers, MICHAEL DI GARGANO.
(*See also* Secret Societies)
Italy, The making of Modern, ARRIGO SOLMI.
J. I. W. Universal Co-Masonry ; What is it ? n. d.
Jacobinisme (Histoire du), BARRUEL, 1819.
JACOLLIOT, LOUIS, Les Fils de Dieu, 1873.
— Occult Science in India, 1919.
JENNINGS, HARGRAVE, The Rosicrucians, their Rites and Mysteries, n. d.
— The Letters of, Edited by " Invictus ", 1895.
Jewish Encyclopaedia.
Jews (History of The), H. GRAETZ.
JOLY, MAURICE, Son passe, son programme. (Autobiography).
JONES, D. The Secret History of White-Hall.
KAUFMANN, GEORGE, Fruits of Anthroposophy, 1922.
KENNING, Cyclopaedia of Masonry and Handbook of Masonic Archaeology, History and Biography, Edited by Rev. A. F. A. Woodford, M. A., P. G. C. of England, 1878.
Knight Templarism (33rd) Illustrated, BLANCHARD, 1915:
Koran (The).
KRAMARSH, DR. KARL, Der Anstifter des Weltkrieges, bv Friedrich Wichte, 1918.

Ku-Klux Klan (The), Hearings before The Committee on Rules, House of Representatives, Sixty-seventh Congress, U. S. A., 1921.

LAFONT, G. DE, Le Mazdeisme, L'Avesta, 1897.

LASKI, HAROLD J., The Socialist Tradition in the French Revolution, 1930.

LAVINGTON, BISHOP, The Enthusiasm of Methodists and Papists compared, 1751.

— The Moravians compared and detected, 1755.

LAZENBY, ELIZABETH, Ireland — A Catspaw, 1928.

LE FORESTIER, R., Les Illumines de Baviere et la Franc-Maçonnerie allemande, 1915.

LENIENT, C, La Satire en France au Moyen-Age.

LEVI, ELIPHAS, La Science des Esprits, 1865.

— Transcendental Magic, Its Doctrine and Ritual, Translated by A. E. Waite, 1923.

— La Clef des Grands Mysteres, 1861.

— Histoire de la Magie, 1860.

— Dogme et Rituel de la Haute Magie, 1860.

Levi, Eliphas, 1810-1875, PAUL CHACORNAC, 1926.

Light-bearers of Darkness, " INQUIRE WITHIN ", 1930.

LITTLE AND WOODMAN, " The Rosicrucian ".

LYTTON, LORD, Zanoni.

MACKEY, Lexicon of Freemasonry.

MADDEN, R. R., F. R. C. S. ENG. Phantasmata, or Illusion and Fanaticisms of Protean Forms Productive of Great Evils, 2 vols., 1857.

Magic and Witchcraft, An Analysis of, C. W. OLLIVER, 1928.

Magic, Transcendental, Its Doctrine and Ritual, ELIPHAS LEVI, 1923.

Magick, by the MASTER THERION, (ALEISTER CROWLEY) 1930.

Magie (Histoire de la), ELIPHAS LEVI, 1860.

MARGIOTTA 33°, DOMENICO, Adriano Lemmi, 1894.

— Le Culte de la Nature dans la Franc-Maçonnerie Universelle.

Marie-Antoinette, Unpublished Letters of, COUNT VOGT D'HUNOLSTEIN, 1864.

Martines de Pasqually, PAPUS (DR. ENCAUSSE).

MARTIN, STUART, The Mystery of Mormonism.

MASTER THERION, see ALEISTER CROWLEY.

Masonry and Handbook of Masonic Archaeology, History and Biography, Cyclopaedia of, KENNING, 1878.

Masons, History of the Antient and Honorable Fraternity of Free and Accepted, STILLSON and HUGHAN, 1891.

MAYO, KATHERINE, Why I wrote Mother India.

Mazdeisme (Le), L'Avesta, G. DE LAFONT, 1897.

Mazzini, Joseph, Lettres intimes de, D. MELEGARI, 1895.
MELEGARI, D., Lettres intimes de Joseph Mazzini, 1895.
Memoirs of my Life, GIOVANNI GIOLTTI, 1925.
Mendelssohn, Moses, Memoirs of, SAMUELS.
Merveilleux (Le), HIPPOLYTE BLANC, 1865.
MOEHLEN, J. A., D. D., Symbolism, Translated by James Robertson.
Mopses, *See* Franc-Maçonnerie.
Moravians (The) compared and detected, BISHOP LAVINGTON 1755.
MORGAN, Capt. WILLIAM MORGAN, Freemasonry Exposed, 1826.
Mormonism, The Mystery of, STUART MARTIN.
MURRAY, MARGARET ALICE, The Witch-Cult in Western Europe 1921.
Muscling In, FRED. D. PASLEY.
Mvstiques et Magiciens du Thibet, ALEXANDRA DAVID-NEEL 1929.
NETCHVOLODOW, Lt. Gen. A., Nicolas II et les Juifs, 1924.
Nicolas II et les Juifs, Lt. Gen. A. NETCHVOLODOW, 1924.
O'BRIEN, R. BARRY, The Autobiography of Wolfe Tone, 1893.
Occultism : Occult Science in India, Louis JACOLLIOT, 1919.
— Traite Elementaire de Science Occulte, PAPUS (D^{r} ENCAUSSE).
(See also Magic and Magie).
Occult Science in India, Louis JACOLLIOT, 1919.
Oddfellows. The Complete Manual of, 1879.
ODEGARD, PETER, Pressure Politics, 1928.
OLLIVER, C. W., An Analysis of Magic and Witchcraft, 1928.
L'Ordre des Francs-Maçons trahi et le Secret des Mopses revele, Published at Amsterdam, 1763.
Oriflamme (The) (The German Organ of Ancient Order of Oriental Templars).
PALAMENGHI-CRISPI, THOMAS, Memoirs of Francesco Crispi, 2 vols. (Translation), 1922.
PAPUS (DR. ENCAUSSE), Martines de Pasqually,
— Traite Elementaire de Science Occulte.
PASLEY, FRED. D., Muscling In.
— — Al Capone.
PEASE, EDWARD R., History of The Fabian Society, 1925.
PECKHAM, 33°, WM. H., The Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite in the United States of America, 1884.
PIGNATEL, FERNAND, Batailles Maconniques.
Phantasmata, or Illusions and Fanaticisms of Protean Forms Productive of Great Evils, R. R. MADDEN, F. R. C. S. Eng., 2 vols., 1857.
POLLARD, Captain H. B. C, The Secret Societies of Ireland, 1922.

PONCINS, Vicomte LEON DE, The Secret Powers behind the Revolution, 1930.

Potted Biographies, A Dictionary of Anti-NATioNAL Biography **Anon.**

Pressure Politics, PETER ODEGARD, 1928.

Prohibition Amendment (The), Hearings before the Committee on the Judiciary House of Representatives, Seventy-first Con gress, on H. J. Res. 11, 38, 99, 114, 219 and 246, 1930.

Prohibition (La) de l'Occulte, EMILE CAILLET.

Protocols of The Meetings of The Learned Elders of Zion, *set* Waters Flowing Eastward, L. FRY.

Psychic Phenomena, The Law of, THOMAS JAY HUDSON, 1894.

RAMSAY, Chev. DE, A Discourse upon the Theology and Mythology of the Antients in The Travels of Cyrus, 1728.

RAYMOND, E. T., Disraeli, The Alien Patriot, 1926.

Recognition of Russia. Hearings before a Subcommittee of The Committee on Foreign Relations, United States Senate, 68th Congress, Senate Resolution 50, 1924.

Reds in America, R. M. WHITNEY, 1924.

Red Terror and Green, RICHARD DAWSON.

Revue Internationale des Societes Secretes, Periodical.

Revue Philosophique Mensuelle (Periodical dealing with Sufism. Feb. 1926).

R ∴ L ∴ Les Neuf Sœurs, Louis AIMABLE.

Roman Religion, The Rise and Fall of the, HANNAY, 1925.

Rose-Croix (Histoire des), SEDIR, 1910.

— F. WITTEMANS, 1925.

ROSEN 33°, PAUL, Satan et C^{ie}, 1888.

— L'Ennemie Sociale.

ROSICRUCIAN : *The " Rosicrucian " Quarterly Record of the Society's Transactions,* edited by Frater ROBERT WENTWORTH LITTLE (S. M.), Master General, and Frater WILLIAM ROBERT WOODMAN. British Museum Press Mark 4782-h 22.

Rosicrucian and Masonic Record, Periodical.

Rosicrucians and their Mysteries, HARGRAVE JENNINGS.

(See also W. WYNN WESTCOTT, and LITTLE and WOODMAN).

RUSSELL, CHARLES TAZE, The Watch Tower.

— The Finished Mystery, 1918.

Sacred Writings of the Hindus, Annotations on, SELLON, 1902 (Printed for Private Circulation).

SAMUELS, Memoirs of Moses Mendelssohn.

SANCTUARY, E. M. Tainted Contacts, 1931.

SANFORD, ELIAS B., Origin and History of the Federal Council of the Churches of Christ in America.

Satan et C^{ie}, PAUL ROSEN 33°, 1888.

Satire (La) en France au Moyen-Age, C. LENIENT.

SCHAFF HERZOG, The Encyclopaedia of Religious Knowledge.
Science (La) des Esprits, ELIPHAS LEVI, 1865.
Science of Health, MARY BAKER EDDY.
Scotch Rite (33rd) Illustrated, BLANCHARD, 1915.
Scottish Rite, The Ancient and Accepted, in the United States WM. H. PECKHAM 33°, 1884.
SEARROOK, W. B., Adventures in Arabia.
Secret History of the " International" Working Men's Association ONSLOW YORKE (WM. HEPWORTH DIXON), 1921. (First published! in 1872).
Secret History of White-Hall, D. JONES.
Secret Powers behind the Revolution, Vicomte LEON DE PONCINS 1930.
Secret Societies and Subversive Movements, NESTA H. WEBSTER 1924.
— — of all Ages and Countries, HECKETHORN, 1876.
— — of the European Revolution, 1776-1876, THOMAS FROST, 1876.
— — of Ireland, Captain H. B. C. POLLARD, 1922.
(See *also* Societes secretes).
SEDIR, Histoire des Rose-Croix, 1910.
— Le Fakirisme Hindou et les Yogas, 2^e edition, 1911.
SELLON, EDWARD, Annotations on the Sacred Writings of the Hindus.
Sketches of Imposture, Deception and Credulity, 1836.
SMITH, CHARLOTTE FELL, John Dee.
Socialist Network (The), NESTA H. WEBSTER.
Socialist Tradition in the French Revolution (The), HAROLD J. LASKI, 1930.
Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia, History of the, WM. WYNN WESTCOTT, 1900.
Societes Secretes, Histoire des, DE LA HODDE, 1850.
— *Revue Internationale des,* Periodical.
(See *also* Secret Societies).
SOLMI, ARRIGO, The Making of Modern Italy.
Son passe, son programme, MAURICE JOLY (Autobiography).
Speculative Mason, Periodical (July 1927).
STEINER, RUDOLPH, Ph. D., The East in the Light of the West (Translation), 1922.
STILLSON and HUGHAN, History of the Ancient and Honorable Fraternity of Free and Accepted Masons and Concordant Orders, 1890.
Sonfisme, Revue Philosophique Mensuelle (Periodical).
SUMMERS, M. History of Witchcraft and Demonology, 1926.
Surrender of an Empire (The), NESTA H. WEBSTER.
Swedenborg, Emanuel, The Spiritual Columbus, U. S. E.

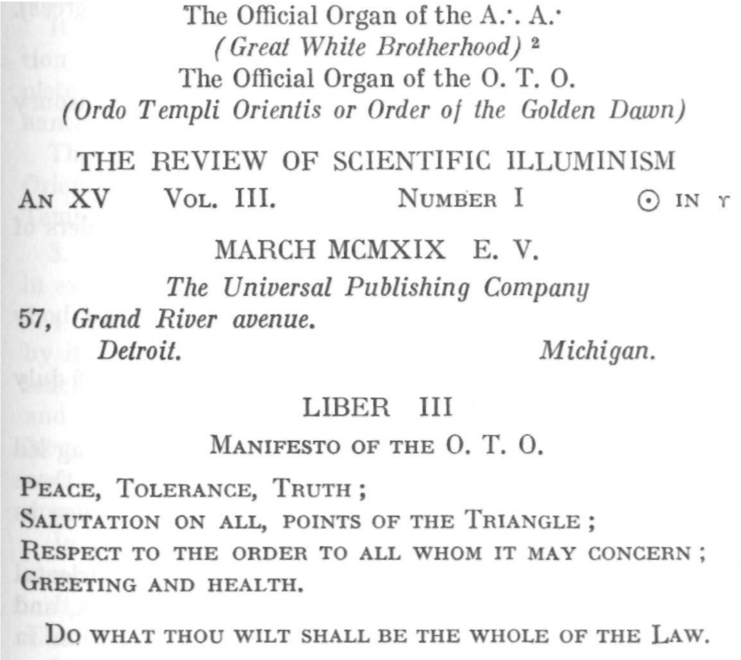
Symbolism, J. A. MOEHLEN, D. D.
Talmud (The).
Tainted Contacts — Being a compilation of facts of the personnel and activities of the Federal Council of Churches of Christ in America, E. M. SANCTUARY, 1931.
Templarism : Knight Templarism (33rd) Illustrated, BLANCHARD, 1915.
— *The Oriflamme,* The German Organ of Ancient Order of Oriental Templars.
Theosophisme (Le), RENE GUENON, 1921.
Theosophist (Periodical).
Torchbearers, Published by The New History Society.
Traite Element aire de Science Occulte, PAPUS (DR. ENCAUSSE).
Universal Co-Masonry : What is it ? J. I. W. n. d.
U. S. E. Emanuel Swedenborg, The Spiritual Columbus.
VAUGHAN, DIANA, Diana Vaughan, 1896.
— Le 33° Crispi.
Vaughan, Thomas, The Works of, A. E. WAITE.
YISSAC, MARC DE, Dom Pernety et les Illumines d'Avigncn.
VON HAMMER, History of the Assassins.
WAITE, A. E., The Works of Thomas "Vaughan.
— Devil Worship in France, 1896.
— New Encyclopaedia of Freemasonry. *(See under* Encyclopaedia for full title).
WARD and STERLING, The Hung Society.
Watch Tower (The), CHARLES TAZE RUSSELL.
Waters Flowing Eastward, L. FRY, 1931.
WEBSTER, NESTA H., Secret Societies, and Subversive Movements.
— The Socialist Network.
— The Surrender of an Empire.
— World Revolution, 1921.
WESTCOTT, WM. WYNN, History of The Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia, 1900.
WHITNEY, R. M., Reds in America, 1924.
— The Youth Movement in America.
Why I wrote Mother India, KATHERINE MAYO.
WILBER, SYBIL, The Life of Mary Baker Eddy.
Witch-Cult in Western Europe (The), MARGARET ALICE MURRAY, 1921.
Witchcraft and Demonology, The History of, MONTAGUE SUMMERS, 1926.
WITTEMANS, F., Histoire des Rose-Croix, 1925.
Wolfe Tone, The Autobiography of, R. BARRY O'BRIEN, 1893.
World Revolution (The), NESTA H. WEBSTER, 1921.

YARKER, JOHN, The Arcane Schools.
— The Grand Mystic Temple.
YORKE, ONSLOW (WM. HEPWORTII DIXON), Secret History of " The International " Working Men's Association, 1921 (First published in 1872).
Zanoni, LORD LYTTON.

APPENDIX I

TO MODERN ILLUMINISM

From Volume III, Number I
of
THE EQUINOX[1]



The Official Organ of the A.·. A.·
(Great White Brotherhood) [2]
The Official Organ of the O. T. O.
(Ordo Templi Orientis or Order of the Golden Dawn)

THE REVIEW OF SCIENTIFIC ILLUMINISM

AN XV VOL. III. NUMBER I ☉ IN ♈

MARCH MCMXIX E. V.

The Universal Publishing Company
57, ***Grand River avenue.***
Detroit. *Michigan.*

LIBER III

MANIFESTO OF THE O. T. O.

PEACE, TOLERANCE, TRUTH ;
SALUTATION ON ALL, POINTS OF THE TRIANGLE ;
RESPECT TO THE ORDER TO ALL WHOM IT MAY CONCERN ;
GREETING AND HEALTH.

DO WHAT THOU WILT SHALL BE THE WHOLE OF THE LAW.

1. The 0. T. 0. is a body of initiates in whose hands are concentrated the wisdom and the knowledge of the following bodies : —

---

[1] *Op. cit.,* p. 197.

[2] Esoteric name is " Atlantean Adepts ".

1. The Gnostic Catholic Church.
2. The Order of the Knights of the Holy Ghost.
3. The Order of the Illuminati.
4. The Order of the Temple (Knights Templar).
5. The Order of the Knights of St. John.
6. The Order of the Knights of Malta.
7. The Order of the Knights of the Holy Sepulchre.
8. The Hidden Church of the Holy Graal.
9. The Hermetic Brotherhood of Light.
10. The Holy Order of Rose Croix of Heredom.
11. The Order of the Holy Royal Arch of Enoch.
12. The Antient and Primitive Rite of Masonry (33 degrees).
13. The Rite of Memphis (97 degrees).
14. The Rite of Mizraim (90 degrees).
15. The Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Masonry (33 degrees)
16. The Swedenborgian Rite of Masonry.
17. The Order of the Martinists.
18. The Order of the Sat Bhai, and many other orders of equal merit, if of less fame.

It does not include the A.·. A.·., with which august body it is however, in close alliance.

It does not in any way infringe the just privileges of duly authorized Masonic Bodies.

2. The dispersion of the original secret wisdom having led to confusion, it was determined by the Chiefs of all these Orders to recombine and centralize their activities, even as white light, divided in a prism, may be recomposed.

It embodies the whole of the secret knowledge of all Oriental Orders ; and its chiefs are initiates of the highest rank, and recognized as such by all capable of such recognition in every country in the world.

In more remote times the constituent origination assemblies of the O. T. O. included such men as — Siddartha, Krishna, Simon Magus, Basilides, Paracelsus and Jacob Boehme....

And recently : —

Wolfgang von Goethe
Sir Richard Payne Knight
Sir Richard Francis Burton
Furlong Dux
Ludovicus Rex Bavariae
Richard Wagner
Ludwig von Fischer
Friedrich Nietzsche
Hargrave Jennings
Karl Kellner
Eliphas Levi
Franz Hartmann
Cardinal Rampolla
Papus (Dr. Encausse).

The names of women members are never divulged.

It is not lawful here to disclose the name of any living chief.

It was Karl Kellner who revived the exoteric organization of the 0. T. 0. and initiated the plan now happily complete of bringing all occult bodies again under one governance.

The letters 0. T. 0. represent the words Ordo Templi Orientis (Order of the Temple of the Orient, or Oriental Templars), but they have also a secret meaning for initiates.

3. The Order is international, and has existing branches in every civilized country of the world.

4. The aims of the 0. T. 0. can only be understood fully by its highest initiates ; but it may be said openly that it teaches Hermetic Science or Occult Knowledge, the Pure and Holy Magick of Light, the Secrets of Mystic attainment, Yoga of all forms, Gnana Yoga, Raja Yoga, Bhakta Yoga and Hatha Yoga, and all other branches of the secret Wisdom of the Ancients.

In its bosom repose the Great Mysteries ; its brain has resolved all the problems of philosophy and of life.

It possesses the secret of the Stone of the Wise, of the Elixir of Immortality, and of the Universal Medicine.

Moreover, it possesses a Secret capable of realizing the world-old dream of the Brotherhood of Man.

It also possesses in every important centre of population a hidden Retreat *(Collegium ad Spiritum Sanctum)* where members may conceal themselves in order to pursue the Great Work without hindrance.

These houses are secret fortresses of Truth, Light, Power and Love, and their position is only disclosed under an oath of secrecy to those entitled to make use of them.

They are also temples of true worship, specially consecrated by Nature to bring out of a man all that is best in him.

5. The authority of the 0. T. 0. is concentrated in the 0. H. 0. (Outer Head of the Order), or Frater Superior.

The name of the Person occupying this office is never disclosed except to his immediate representatives.

6. The Authority of the 0. H. 0. in all English-speaking countries is delegated by charter to the Most Holy, Most Illustrious, Most Illuminated and Most Puissant Baphomet X°, Rex Summus Sanctissimus, 33°, 90°, 96°, Past Grand Master of the United States of America, Grand Master of Ireland, Iona, and All the Britains, Grand Master of the Knights of the Holy Ghost, Sovereign Grand Commander of the Order of the Temple, Most Wise Sovereign of the Order of the Rosy Cross, Grand Zerubbabel of the Order of the Holy Royal Arch of Enoch, etc., etc., National Grand Master General *ad vitam* of the O. T. O.

7. The National Grand Master General *ad vitam* is assisted by two principal officers, the Grand Treasurer General and the Grand Secretary General.

There are many other officers, but they do not concern those to whom the present manifesto is addressed.

8. The whole of the Knowledge dispersed among the bodies mentioned in paragraph 2 has been sifted and concentrated in the following degrees.

0°	Minerval.
I°	M.
II°	M..
III°	M... P.·. M.·.
IV°	Companion of the Holy Royal Arch of Enoch. Prince of Jerusalem. Knight of the East and of the West.

V°	Sovereign Prince of Rose Croix. (Knight of the Pelican and Eagle.) Member of the Senate of Knight Hermetic. Philosophers Knights of the Red Eagle.
VI^0	Illustrious Knight (Templar) of the Order of Kadosch, and Companion of the Holy Graal. Grand Inquisitor Commander, Member of the Grand Tribunal. Prince of the Royal Secret.
VII^0	Very Illustrious Sovereign Grand Inspector General Member of the Supreme grand Council.
VIII^0	Perfect Pontiff of the Illuminati.
IX^0	Initiate of the Sanctuary of the Gnosis.
X°	Rex Summus Sanctissimus (Supreme and Most Holy King).

9. Every man or woman that is of full age, free, and of good report, has an indefeasible right to the III^0.

Beyond this, admission is only granted by invitation from the governing bodies concerned.

The O. T. O., although an *Academia Masonica,* is not a Masonic Body so far as the " secrets " are concerned in the sense in which that expression is usually understood; and therefore in no way conflicts with, or infringes the just privileges of, the United Grand Lodge of England, or any Grand Lodge in America or elsewhere which is recognized by it.

10. Application for admission to the Order may be made personally at headquarters, between the hours of Ten a. m. and Twelve Noon on week-days, or by letter to the Grand Secretary General. In the former case, applicants should be provided with the Twenty Dollars entitling them to the Third Degree ; in the latter, it should be enclosed with the application.

The First Annual Subscription is payable on taking the Third Degree ; if this is taken after June 30 in any year, only half the amount is due.

Subscriptions of old members are due on January 1, but the Brother is considered in good standing, and he does not lose his rights, if it is paid by March 1. Should he fail to discharge his obligation by this date, he ceases *ipso facto* to be a member of the Order, but may be reinstated on paying arrears and Five Dollars extra. If his lapse extend to the next year following, he can only be reinstated under special conditions, and by the express consent in writing of the National Grand Master General *ad vitam.*

11. The Constitution, Trust Deeds, Charters, Warrants and all other documents, are exhibited to candidates on their exaltations to the IV^0, should they desire it.

12. Besides the free certificate of membership, special diplomas for framing are granted to all members at a uniform price of Ten Dollars.

Special diplomas of the IX^0, Twenty-five Dollars.

13. The privileges of members of the 0. T. 0. are very numerous. These are the principal;

1° They have not only access to, but instruction in, the whole body of hidden knowledge preserved in the Sanctuary from the beginning of its manifestation.

In the lower grades the final secrets are hinted, and conveyed in symbol, beneath veil, and through sacrament.

In this way the intelligence of the initiate is called into play, so that he who uses the knowledge of the lower grades may be selected for invitation to the higher, where all things are declared openly.

2° They become partakers of the current of Universal Life in Liberty, Beauty, Harmony, and Love which flames within the heart of the 0. T. 0, and the Light of that august fraternity insensibly illuminates them and more as they approach its central Sun.

3° They meet those persons most complemental to their own natures, and find unexpected help and brotherhood in the whole world whereever they may travel.

4° They obtain the right to sojourn in the secret houses of the 0. T. 0., permanently or for a greater or lesser period of the year according to their rank in the Order ; or, in the case of those of the Fifth and lower degrees, are candidates for invitation to these houses.

5° The Knowledge of the Preparation and Use of the Universal Medicine is restricted to members of the IX⁰ ; but it may be administered to members of the VIII⁰ and VII° in special circumstances by favour of the National Grand Masters General, and even in particular emergency to members of lower degrees.

6° In the V° all members are pledged to bring immediate and perfect relief to all distress of mind, body, or estate, in which they may find any of their fellows of that degree. In the higher degrees the Bonds of Fraternity are still further strengthened. The Order thus affords a perfect system of insurance against every misfortune or accident of life.

7° Members of the IX⁰ become part proprietors of the Estates and Goods of the Order, so that the attainment of this degree implies a return with interest of the fees and subscriptions paid.

8° The Order gives practical assistance in life to worthy members of even its lower degrees, so that even if originally poor, they become well able to afford the comparatively high fees of the VII°, VIII⁰, and IX⁰.

On exaltation to the IV⁰ each Companion may file an account of his circumstances, and state in what direction he requires help.

14. In selecting members for advancement, attention is paid to their devotion to the Order, to their intelligence in apprehending the nature of its teachings, to their zeal in spreading the principles of the Order so far as they themselves understand them, though always with the discretion inseparable from the due guarding of the secrets, and to all those qualities of courage, honour, and virtue without which man is not worthy of that name.

15. The 0. H. 0., is only known to members of the VIII° and IX⁰.

The National Grand Master General *ad vitam* is not approachable as such by any person who has not reached the VI°.

All communications should be addressed to the Grand Secretary General, and all cheques drawn in favour of the Grand Treasurer General.

Issued by Order

L. BATHURST,
IX° Grand Secretary General.

All enquiries should be addressed to

THE GRAND SECRETARY GENERAL
OF THE O. T. O.

Care of the Publishers of " The Equinox ".

LIBER CI
0. T. 0.
(Ordo Templi Orientis)

AN OPEN LETTER TO THOSE WHO MAY WISH TO JOIN THE ORDER ; ENUMERATING THE DUTIES AND PRIVILEGES. THESE REGULATIONS COME INTO FORCE IN ANY DISTRICT WHERE THE MEMBERSHIP OF THE ORDER EXCEEDS ONE THOUSAND SOULS.

An Epistle of BAPHOMET to Sir GEORGE MACNIECOWIE, Very Illustrious and Very Illuminated, Pontiff and Epopt of the Areopagus of the VIII Degree O. T. O. Grand Treasurer General, Keeper of the Golden Book, President of the Committee of Publications of the O. T. O.

Do what thou wilt shall be the whole of the Law.

It has been represented to UTS that some persons who are worthy to join the 0. T. 0. consider the fees and subscriptions rather high. This is due to your failure to explain properly the great advantages offered by the Order. We desire you therefore presently to note, and to cause to be circulated throughout the Order, and among those of the profane who may seem worthy to join it, these matters following concerning the duties and the privileges of members of the earlier degrees of the 0. T. 0. as regards material affairs. And for convenience we shall classify these as pertaining to the Twelve Houses of the Heaven, but also by numbered clauses for the sake of such as understand not the so-called Sciences of the Stars. First, therefore, concerning the duties of the Brethren. Yet with our Order every duty is also a privilege, so that it is impossible wholly to separate them.

ORDO TEMPLI ORIENTIS

Of the duties of Brethren.

First House

1. There is no law beyond Do what thou wilt. Yet it is well **for** Brethren to study daily in the volume of the Sacred Law, *Liber Legis,* for therein is much counsel concerning this, how best they may carry out this will.

Second House

2. The private purse of every Brother should always be at the disposal of any Brother who may be in need. But in such a case it is a great mischief if the one ask, and the other consent; for if the former be really in need, his pride is wounded by his asking ; and if not, the door is opened to beggars and impostors, and all manner of arrant knaves and rogues such as are no true Brethren. But the Brother who is possessed of this world's goods should make it his business to watch the necessity of all those Brethren with whom he may be personally acquainted, anticipating their wants in so wise and kindly and delicate a manner that it shall appear as if it were the payment of a debt. And what help is given shall be given with discretion, so that the relief may be permanent instead of temporary.

3. All Brethren shall be exceedingly punctual in the payment of Lodge Dues. This is to take precedence of all other calls **upon** the **purse.**

Third House

The Brethren shall be diligent in preaching the Law of Thelema. In all writings they shall be careful to use the prescribed greetings ; likewise in speech, even with strangers.

5. They shall respond heartily to every summons of the Lodge or Chapter to which they may belong, not lightly making excuse.

6. Brethren should use every opportunity of assisting each other in their tastes, businesses, or professions, whether by direct dealing with Brethren in preference to others, or as may suggest itself. It seems desirable, when possible, that where two or more Brethren of the same Lodge are engaged in the same work, they should seek to amalgamate the same by entering into partnership. Thus in time great and powerful corporations may arise from small individual enterprisfs.

7. They shall be diligent in circulating all tracts, manifestos, and all other communications which the Order may from time give out for the instruction or emancipation of the profane.

8. They may offer suitable books and pictures to the Libraries of the Profess-Houses of the Order.

Fourth House

9. Every Brother who may possess mines, land, or houses more than he cam himself occupy, should donate part of such mines or land, or one or more of such houses to the Order.

10. Property thus given will be administered if he desire it in his own interest, thus effecting a saving, since large estates are more economically handled than small. But the Order will use such property as may happen to lie idle for the moment in such ways as it may seem good, lending an unlet house (for example) to some Brother who is in need, or allowing an unused hall to be occupied by a Lodge.

11. (Yet in view of the great objects of the Order, endowment is welcome.)

12. Every Brother shall show himself solicitous of the comfort and happiness of any Brother who may be old, attending not only to all material wants, but to his amusement, so that his declining years may be made joyful.

Fifth Home

13. Every Brother shall seek constantly to give pleasure to all Brethren with whom he is acquainted, whether by entertainment or conversation, or in any other manner that may suggest itself. It will frequently and naturally arise that love itself springs up between members of the Order, for that they have so many and so sacred interests in common. Such love is peculiarly holy, and is to be encouraged.

14. All children of Brethren arc to be considered as children of the whole Order, and to be protected and aided in every way by its members severally, as by its organization collectively. No distinction is to be made with regard to the conditions surrounding the birth of any child.

15. There is an especially sacred duty, which every Brother should fulfil, with regard to all children, those born without the Order included. This duty is to instruct them in the Law of Thelema, to teach them independence and freedom of thought and character, and to warn them that servility and cowardice are the most deadly diseases of the human soul.

Sixth House

16. Personal or domestic attendants should be chosen from among the members of the Order when possible, and great tact and courtesy are to be employed in dealing with them.

17. They, on their part, will render willing and intelligent service.

18. While in Lodge, and on special occasions, they are to be treated as Brothers, with perfect equality ; such beha-

viour is undesirable during the hours of service, and familiarity, subversive as it is of all discipline and order, is to be avoided by adopting a complete and marked change of manner and address.

19. This applies to all persons in subordinate positions, but not to the Brethren Servient in the Profess-Houses of the Order, who, giving service without recompense, are to be honoured as hosts.

20. In case of the sickness of any Brother, it is the duty of all Brethren who know him personally to attend him, to see that he want for nothing, and to report if necessary his needs to the Lodge, or to Grand Lodge itself.

21. Those Brethren who happen to be doctors or nurses will naturally give their skill and care with even more than their customary joy in service.

22. All Brethren are bound by their fealty to offer their service in their particular trade, business, or profession, to the Grand Lodge. For example, a stationer will supply the Grand Lodge with paper, vellum, and the like ; a bookseller offer any books to the Library of Grand Lodge which the Librarian may desire to possess ; a lawyer will execute any legal business for Grand Lodge, and a railway or steamship owner or director see to it that the Great Officers travel in comfort wherever they may wish to go.

23. Visitors from other Lodges are to be accorded the treatment of ambassadors ; this will apply most especially to Sovereign Grand Inspectors General of the Order on their tours of inspection. All hospitality and courtesy shown to such is shown to Ourselves, not to them only.

Seventh House

24. It is desirable that the marriage partner of any Brother should also be a member of the Order. Neglect to insist upon this leads frequently to serious trouble for both parties, especially for the uninitiate.

25. Lawsuits between members of the Order are absolutely forbidden, on pain of immediate expulsion and loss

of all privileges, even of those accumulated by past good conduct referred to in the second part of this instruction.

26. All disputes between Brethren should be referred firstly to the Master or Masters of their Lodge or Lodges in conference ; if a composition be not arrived at in this manner, the dispute is to be referred to the Grand Tribunal, which will arbitrate thereon, and its decision is to be accepted as final.

27. Refusal to apply for or to accept such decision shall entail expulsion from the Order, and the other party is then at liberty to seek his redress in the Courts of Profane Justice.

28. Members of the Order are to regard those without its pale as possessing no rights of any kind, since they have not accepted the Law, and are therefore, as it were, troglodytes, survivals of a past civilisation, and to be treated accordingly.[1] Kindness should be shown towards them, as towards any other animal; and every effort should be made to bring them into Freedom.

29. Any injury done by any person without the Order to any person within it may be brought before the Grand Tribunal, which will, if it deem right and fit, use all its power to redress or to avenge it.

30. In the case of any Brother being accused of an offence against the criminal law of the country in which he resides, so that any other Brother cognisant of the fact feels bound in self-defence to bring accusation, he shall report the matter to the Grand Tribunal as well as to the Civil Authority, claiming exemption on this ground.

31. The accused Brother will, however, be defended by the Order to the utmost of its power on his affirming his innocence upon the Volume of the Sacred Law in the Ordeal appointed *ad hoc* by the Grand Tribunal itself.

---

[1] Compare with *Schulchan Aruch* and *Talmud* where non-Jews are as animals to the Jews.

32. Public enemies of the country of any Brother shall be treated as such while in the field, and slain or captured as the officer of the Brother may command. But within the precincts of the Lodge all such divisions are to be forgotten absolutely; and as children of One Father the enemies of the hour before and the hour after are to dwell in peace, amity, and fraternity.

Eighth House

33. Every Brother is expected to bear witness in his last will and testament to the great benefit that he hath received from the Order by bestowing upon it part or the whole of his goods, as he may deem fit.

34. The death of a Brother is not to be occasion of melancholy, but of rejoicing; the Brethren of his Lodge shall gather together and make a banquet with music and dancing and all manner of gladness. It is of the greatest importance that this shall be done, for thereby the inherited fear of death which is deep-rooted as instinct in us will gradually be rooted out. It is a legacy from the dead aeon of Osiris, and our children's children may be born free from the curse.

Ninth House

35. Every Brother is expected to spend a great part of his spare time in the study of the principles of the Law and of the Order, and in searching out the key to its great and manifold mysteries.

36. He should also do all in his power to spread the Law, especially taking long journeys, when possible, to remote places, there to sow the seed of the Law.

Tenth House

37. All pregnant women are especially sacred to members of the Order, and no effort should be spared to bring them to acceptance of the Law of Freedom, so that the unborn may benefit by that impression. They should be induced to

become members of the Order, so that the child may be born under its aegis.

38. If the mother that is to be have asserted her will to be so in contempt and defiance of the Tabus of the slave-gods, she is to be regarded as specially suitable to our Order, and the Master of the Lodge in her district shall offer to become, as it were, godfather to the child, who shall be trained specially, if the mother so wishes, as a servant of the Order, in one of its Profess-Houses.

39. Special Profess-Houses for the care of women of the Order, or those whose husbands or lovers are members of the Order, will be instituted, so that the frontal duty of womankind may be carried out in all comfort and honour.

40. Every Brother is expected to use all his influence with persons in a superior station of life (so called) to induce them to join the Order. Royal personages, ministers of State, high officials in the Diplomatic, Naval, Military, and Civil Services are particularly to be sought after, for it is intended ultimately that the temporal power of the State be brought into the Law, and led into freedom and prosperity by the application of its principles.

41. Colleges of the Order will presently be established where the children of its members may be trained in all trades, businesses, and professions, and there they may study the liberal arts and humane letters, as well as our holy and arcane science. Brethren are expected to do all in their power to make possible the establishment of such Universities.

Eleventh House

42. Every Brother is expected to do all in his power to induce his personal friends to accept the Law and join the Order. He should therefore endeavour to make new friends outside the Order, for the purpose of widening its scope.

Twelfth House

43. The Brethren are bound to secrecy only with regard to the nature of the rituals of our Order, and to our words signs, etc. The general principles of the Order may be fully explained, so far as they are understood below the VI^0 ; as it is written, " The ordeals I write not : the rituals shall be half known and half concealed; the Law is for all. " It is to be observed that punctual performance of these duties, so that the report thereof is noised abroad and the fame of it cometh even unto the Throne of the Supreme and Holy King himself will weigh heavily in the scale when it comes to be a question of the high advancement of a Brother in the Order.

Of The Privileges of the **Brethren.**

First House

44. The first and greatest of all privileges of a Brother is to be a Brother ; to have accepted the Law, to have become free and independent, to have destroyed all fear, whether of custom, or of faith, or of other men, or of death itself. In other papers the joy and glory of those who have accepted the Book of the Law as the sole rule of life is largely, though never fully, explained ; and we will not here recapitulate the same.

Second House

45. All Brethren who may fall into indigence have a right to the direct assistance of the Order up to the full amount of fees and subscriptions paid by them up to the time of application. This will be regarded as a loan, but no interest will be charged upon it. That this privilege may not be abused, the Grand Tribunal will decide whether or no such application is made in good faith.

Third House

46. Members of the Order will be permitted to use the Library in any of our Profess-Houses.

47. Circulating Libraries will presently be established.

48. Brethren who may be travelling have a right to the hospitality of the Master of the Lodge of the district for a period of three days.

Fourth House

49. Brethren of all grades may be invited to sojourn in the Profess-Houses of the Order by Grand Lodge : and such invitation may confidently be expected as the reward of merit. There they will be able to make the personal acquaintance of members of the higher Grades, learn of the deeper workings of the Order, obtain the benefit of personal instruction, and in all ways fit themselves for advancement.

50. In the higher degrees Brethren have the right to reside in our Profess-Houses for a portion of every year, as shown : —

VI^0	Two weeks.	VII^0	Two months.
G. T.	One month.	S. G. C.	Three months.
P. B. S.	Six weeks.	VIII^0	Six months.

52. Members of the IX°, who share among themselves the whole property of the Order according to the rules of that degree, may, of course, reside there permanently. Indeed, the house of every Brother of this grade is, *ipso facto*, a Profess-House of the Order.

Fifth House

53. All Brethren may expect the warmest cooperation in their pleasures and amusements from other members of the Order. The perfect freedom and security afforded by the Law allows the characters of all Brethren to expand to the very limits of their nature, and the great joy and gladness with which they are constantly overflowing make them the

best of companions. " They shall rejoice, our chosen; who sorroweth is not of us. Beauty and strength, leaping laughter and delicious languor, force and fire, are of us. "

54. Children of all Brethren are entitled to the care of the Order, and arrangements will be made to educate them in certain of the Profess-Houses of the Order.

55. Children of Brethren who are left orphans will be officially adopted by the Master of his Lodge, or if the latter decline, by the Supreme Holy King himself, and treated in all ways as if they were his own.

56. Brethren who have a right to some especial interest in any child whose mother is not a member of the Order may recommend it especially to the care of their lodge or of Grand Lodge.

Sixth House

57. In sickness all Brethren have the right to medical or surgical care and attendance from any Brethren of the Lodge who may be physicians, surgeons, or nurses.

58. In special necessity the Supreme Holy King will send his own attendants.

59. Where circumstances warrant it, in cases of lives of great value to the Order and the like, he may even permit the administration of that secret Medicine which is known to members of the IX^0.

60. Members of the Order may expect Brethren to busy themselves in finding remunerative occupation for them, where they lack it ; or, if possible, to employ them personally.

Seventh House

61. Members of the Order may expect to find suitable marriage partners in the extremely select body to which they belong. Community of interest and hope being already established, it is natural to suppose that where mutual attraction also exists, a marriage will result in perfect happiness. (There are special considerations in this matter which apply to the VII^0 and cannot be discussed in this place.)

62. As explained above, Brethren are entirely free of most legal burdens, since lawsuits are not permitted within the Order, and since they may call upon the legal advisers of the Order to defend them against their enemies in case of need.

Eighth House

63. All Brethren are entitled after death to the proper disposal of their remains according to the rites of the Order and their grade in it.

64. If the Brother so desire, the entire amount of the fees and subscriptions which he has paid during his life will be handed over by the Order to his heirs and legatees. The Order thus affords an absolute system of insurance in addition to its other benefits.

Ninth House

65. The Order teaches the only perfect and satisfactory system of philosophy, religion, and science, leading its members step by step to knowledge and power hardly even dreamed of by the profane.

66. Brethren of the Order who take long journeys overseas are received in places where they sojourn at the Profess-Houses of the Order for the period of one month.

Tenth House

67. Women of the Order who are about to become mothers receive all care, attention, and honour from all Brethren.

68. Special Profess-Houses will be established for their convenience, should they wish to take advantage of them.

69. The Order offers great social advantages to its members, bringing them as it does into constant association with men and women of high rank.

70. The Order offers extraordinary opportunities to its members in their trades, businesses, or professions, aiding them by co-operation, and securing them clients or customers.

Eleventh House

71. The Order offers friendship to its members, bringing together men and women of similar character, taste, and aspiration.

Twelfth House

72. The secrecy of the Order provides its members with an inviolable shroud of concealment.

73. The crime of slander, which causes so great a proportion of human misery, is rendered extremely dangerous, if not impossible, within the Order by a clause in the Obligation of the Third Degree.

74. The Order exercises its whole power to relieve its members of any constraint to which they may be subjected, attacking with vigour any person or persons who may endeavour to subject them to compulsion, and in all other ways aiding in the complete emancipation of the Brethren from aught that may seek to restrain them from doing That Which They Will.

It is to be observed that these privileges being so vast, it is incumbent upon the honour of every Brother not to abuse them, and the sponsors of any Brother who does so, as well as he himself, will be held strictly to account by the Grand Tribunal. The utmost frankness and good faith between Brethren is essential to the easy and harmonious working of our system, and the Executive Power will see to it that these are encouraged by all possible means, and that breach of them is swiftly and silently suppressed.

Love is the Law, Love under will.

Our fatherly benediction, and the Blessing of the All-Father in the Outer and the Inner be upon you.

BAPHOMET X, O. T. O., IRELAND,
IONA, AND ALL THE BRITAINS.

LIBER CXCIV

IN THE BOOK OF EQUINOX [1]

O. T. O.

Intimation with reference to the Constitution of the Order.

Any province of the O. T. O. is governed by the Grand Master and those to whom he delegates his authority, until such time as the Order is established, which is the case when it possesses eleven or more Profess-Houses in the province. Then the regular constitution is automatically promulgated. The quotation is slightly adapted from an address in one of the rituals.

" This is the Constitution and Government of our Holy Order ; by the study of its Balance you may yourself come to apprehension of how to rule your own. life. For, in True Things, all are but images one of another ; man is but a map of the universe, and Society is but the same on a larger scale.

" Learn then that our Holy Order has but Three True Grades ; as it is written in the Book of the Law : The Hermit, The Lover, and the Man of Earth.

" It is but for convenience that these grades have been separated into Three Triads.

" The Third Triad consists of the degrees from Minerval to Prince of Jerusalem. The Minerval degree is a Prologue to the First ; the degrees subsequent to the Third but pendants to it. In this, the Man of Earth series, there are then but Three Degrees ; and these Three are One.

" The Man of Earth takes no share in the Government of the Order ; for he is not yet called upon to give his life to it in service ; and with us Government is Service, and nothing else. The Man of Earth is therefore in much the position of the Plebeian in Rome in the time of Menenius Agrippa. But there is this marked difference ; that every Man of Earth is encouraged and expected to push on to the next stage. In order that the feelings of the general body may be represented, the Men of Earth choose four persons, two men and two women, from among themselves, to stand continually before the face of the Father, the Supreme and Holy King, serving him day and night. These persons must not be of higher rank than the Second Degree ; they must volunteer for this service at the conclusion of that ceremony ; and therefore they give up their own prospect of advancement in the Order for one year, that they may serve their fellows. This is then the first lesson in our great principle, the attainment of honour through renunciation.

---

[1] *Op. cit.*, p. 241.

" The degree of Knights of the East and West is but a bridge between the first and second series ; but it is important, for in that grade a new pledge-form must be signed, and the new Knight vowed to devote his life to the Establishment of the Law of Thelema.

" The members of the Fifth Degree are responsible for all that concerns the Social welfare of the Order. This grade is symbolically that of beauty and harmony ; it is the natural stopping-place of the majority of men and women ; for to proceed farther, as will appear, involves renunciation of the. sternest kind. Here then all is joy, peace, well-being on all planes ; the Sovereign Prince Rose Croix is attached equally to the higher and the lower, and forms a natural link between them.[2] Yet let him look to it that his eyes are set on high !

" In this degree the Most Wise Sovereign of each chapter will appoint a committee of four persons, two men and two women, to arrange for all social gatherings, banquets, dances, the performance of plays, and similar pleasures. They will also endeavour to promote harmony among the Brethren in all possible ways, and to compose any disputes by tact and friendliness without formal appeal being made to any more authoritative tribunal.

---

[2] Juncture of the two opposites ! From the foregoing one might infer that the Rose Croix is formed of two opposite characters of men, good and evil, thus accounting for the contradictory statements made about Rosicrucianism. *(Author's note).*

" The next grade, that which lies between the Fifth and Sixth Degrees, is called the Senate. This is the first of the governing bodies, properly speaking, and here we begin to insist upon Renunciation. For within this body is the Electoral College of the 0. T. 0.

" The principle of popular election is a fatal folly; its results are visible in every so-called democracy. The elected man is always the mediocrity ; he is the safe man, the sound man, who displeases the majority less than any other; and therefore never the genius, the man of progress and illumination.

" This electoral college consists of Eleven Persons in each country. It has full control of the affairs of the Men of Earth, appointing Lodge Masters at will. *It has however no authority* over the Chapters of Rose Croix.

" Persons who wish to be appointed to this College by the Supreme and Holy King must volunteer for the office. The appointment is for Eleven Years. Volunteers must renounce for that period all further progress in the Order. They must give evidence of first-rate ability in

1. Some branch of athletics.
2. Some branch of learning.

" They must also possess a profound general knowledge of history and of the art of government, with some attention to philosophy in general.

" They must each live in solitude, without more than the necessary speech even to casual neighbors, serving themselves in all respects, for three months continuously, once at least in every two years. The President will summon them at the four seasons of the year, and if necessary at other times, when they will deliberate upon the affairs placed in their charge. All applications to pass to the Fifth Degree must receive their sanction. Appeal from their decisions may however be made to the Supreme Council.

" The Sixth Degree is an executive or military body, and represents the temporal power of the Supreme and Holy King. Each member is amenable to military discipline. Singly or in concert with his comrades, each Knight is vowed to enforce the decisions of authority.

" The Grade of Grand Inquisitor Commander follows. Here every member has the right to a seat on the Grand Tribunal, which body decides all disputes and complaints which have not been composed by the Chapter of Rose Croix or the Lodge Masters. Its verdicts are without appeal, unless a member of the Electoral College give sanction to take the case to the Areopagus of the Eighth Degree. All members of the Order, even of higher grades, are subject to the Grand Tribunal.

" The next grade is that of Prince of the Royal Secret. Every member of this degree is devoted to the Propagation of the Law in a very special manner ; for this grade is the first in which the Beginning of the Inmost Secret is declared openly. He will therefore, by his personal exertions, induce one hundred and eleven persons to join the Order, before he may proceed to the Seventh Degree, except by special order from the Supreme and Holy King.

" The Seventh Degree is, in military language, the Great General Staff of the Army of the Sixth Degree. From its members the Supreme and Holy King appoints a Supreme Grand Council.

" This Council is charged with the government of the whole of the Second Triad, or Lovers. All members of the Seventh Degree travel as Sovereign Grand Inspectors General of the Order, and report, on their own initiative, to the Supreme and Most Holy King, as to the condition of all Lodges and Chapters ; to the Supreme Council, on all affairs of the Second Triad; and to the Electoral College, on those of the third.

" The Eighth Degree is a Philosophical Body. Its members being fully instructed in the Principles of the Order, save in one point only, devote themselves to the understanding of what they have learned in their initiation. They have power to reverse the decisions of the Grand Tribunal, and to compose all conflicts between any of the governing bodies. And this they do upon the great principles of philosophy. For it will often occur that there is contention between two parties, both of whom are right from their own point of view. This is so important that an illustration is desirable. A man is smitten with leprosy : is it right that men should circumscribe his liberty by isolating him from his fellows ? Another holds back land or some other necessity from common use ; is he to be compelled to surrender it ? Such cases of difficulty involve deep philosophical principles ; and the Areopagus of the Eighth Degree is charged with the duty of resolving them in accordance with the great principles of the Order.

" Before the face of the Areopagus stands an independent Parliament of the Guilds. Within the Order, irrespective of grade, the members of each craft, trade, science, or profession form themselves into a Guild, make their own laws, and prosecute their own good, in all matters pertaining to their labour and means of livelihood. Each Guild chooses the man most eminent in it to represent it before the Areopagus of the Eighth Degree ; and all disputes between the various Guilds are argued before that Body, which will decide according to the grand principles of the Order. Its decisions pass for ratification to the Sanctuary of the Gnosis, and thence to the Throne.

" Epopts and Pontiffs of this exalted grade are bound to live in isolation for four consecutive months in every year, meditating the mysteries revealed to them.

" The Ninth Degree — the Sanctuary of the Gnosis — is synthetic. The prime duty of its members is to study and practice the theurgy and thaumaturgy of the grade ; but in addition they must be prepared to act as direct representatives of the Supreme and Most Holy King, radiating his light upon the world. Yet, from the nature of their initiation, they must veil their glory in a cloud of darkness. They move unseen and unrecognized among the youngest of us, subtly and loftily leading us into the holy ineffable mysteries of the True Light.

" The Supreme and Most Holy King is appointed by the

O. H. O. His is the ultimate responsibility for all within his holy kingdom. The succession to the high office of O. H. O. is decided in a manner not here to be declared; but this you may learn, O Brother Magician, that he may be chosen even from the grade of a Minerval. And herein lieth a most sacred Mystery.

" The Electoral College possesses one most singular power. Every eleven years, or in case of a vacancy occurring, they choose two persons from the Ninth Degree, who are charged with the duty of Revolution.

" It is the business of these persons constantly to criticise and oppose the acts of the Supreme and Most Holy King, whether or no they personally approve of them. Should he exhibit weakness, bodily, mental, or moral, they are empowered to appeal to the O. H. O. to depose him; but they, alone of all the members of the Order, are not eligible to the Succession.

" O. H. O., as the supreme authority in the Order, will act, in such an emergency, as he may see fit. He may himself be removed from office, but only by the unanimous vote of all members of the Tenth Degree.

" Of the Eleventh Degree, its powers, privileges, and qualifications, nothing whatever is said in any grade. It has no relation to the general plan of the Order, is inscrutable, and dwells in its own Palaces.

" There are certain important financial obligations in various grades.

" The Electoral College of the Senate is vowed to poverty. All property, earnings, or salaries are vested in or paid over to the Grand Treasurer General. The members subsist on the charity of the Order, which is extended to them in accordance with their original rank in life.

" These remarks apply equally to the Supreme Grand Council, and all higher degrees.

" In the Seventh Degree it is a qualification to vest some real property in the Order ; and no one is admitted to this grade without this preliminary.

" Those members of the Order who have given all to it must obtain the money for their initiation fees and subscriptions from the Third Triad, whose honour is thus concerned in the unselfish support of those who have abandoned all for their sakes.

" The Grand Treasurer General is appointed by the Supreme and Most Holy King; he may be a member of any grade whatever ; but he must, on accepting office, take the vow of poverty. His authority is absolute in all financial matters ; but he is responsible to, and may be removed at will by, the Supreme and Most Holy King. He will appoint a committee to assist him and advise him in his work; and he will usually select one person from each of the governing bodies of the Order.

" Such is a brief outline of the government of the O. T. O. It combines monarchy with democracy; it includes aristocracy, and conceals even the seeds of revolution, by which alone progress can be effected. Thus we balance the Triads, uniting the Three in One ; thus we gather up all the threads of human passion and interest, and weave them into an harmonious tapestry, subtly and diligently with great art, that our Order may seem an ornament even to the Stars that are in the Heavens at Night. In our rainbow-coloured texture we set forth the glory of the whole Universe — See thou to it, brother Magician, that thine own thread be strong, and pure, and of a colour brilliant in itself, yet ready to mingle in all beauty with those of thy brethren 1 "

APPENDIX II

The following is an extract from the " Charter for Royal Order in U. S. A. "[1]

IN THE NAME OF THE HOLY AND UNDIVIDED TRINITY[2]

WE, SIR JOHN WHYTE W. D. M., President of the Judges and Council of the Great S. N. D. R. M.·. Warder of the T. W. R. of R. F. R. S. M. N. T. : Deputy Grand Master and Governor of the High and Honourable Orders of H. R. M. of K. L. W. N. G. and R. S. Y. C. S.: SIR ALEXANDER S. T. N. T. H., Senior Grand Warden, Sir WILLIAM B. T. Y, Junior Grand Warden, and the Remanent Knights Companions of the Royal Order of R. S. Y. C. S. in Grand Lodge assembled.

Seal
R. S. Y. C. S.

Seal
H. R. M.

TO

Sir ALBERT V. G. R. (Pike), Knight of the Order of the R. S. Y. C. S., send greeting in God Everlasting.

By virtue of the authority vested in US from time immemorial WE do hereby grant unto you and the rest of the

---

[1] Stillson and Hughan, History of Freemasonry and Concordant Orders, p. 842.

[2] Heredom of Kilwinning or Royal Order of Scotland is composed of two degrees, H. R. M. or Heredom, and R. S. Y. G. S. Rosy Cross. See Freke Gould, *History of Freemasonry,* Vol. III, p. 75.

Right Worthy and Worshipful Brethren of the Royal Order of H. R. M. and of the R. S. Y. C. S. in the United States of America, full power, warrant and authority to hold a Chapter of the Order of H. R. M. in WASHINGTON, or elsewhere within the United States of America, so long as you and they shall behave as becometh Worthy Brethren of the said Order, or until the powers hereby conferred shall be withdrawn which the Grand Lodge of our Order reserves full power and authority to do when they consider proper, with full power to you to remove the same from place to place, but always within the United States of America, as occasion shall offer for the good and glory of the Order, you and they conforming to the laws and regulations of the Grand Lodge transmitted to you now or afterwards, and we do hereby appoint you T. R. S. T. A. of the said Chapter and grant you full power, warrant and authority to appoint proper officers to assist you therein, viz. : a Deputy T. R. S. T. A., a Senior Guardian, a Junior Guardian, a Secretary, a Treasurer, a Marischal, a Deputy Marischal, and a Guarder, who shall art as Examiner' and Introducer.

AND FURTHER, you know that for the good and promotion of the Order of H. R. M. in general we do hereby empower you to form a PROVINCIAL GRAND LODGE of the said Order, and do nominate, constitute and appoint you, the said Sir Albert V. G. R., to preside and rule over and govern the same and the Brethren thereunto belonging, so long as you shall act conformably to the Laws and Rules of our Grand Lodge, and so long as this Charter and the powers therein conferred shall continue unrecalled ; and we do hereby authorize empower and charge you to take upon yourself the title of PROVINCIAL GRAND MASTER of the Order of H. R. M. of the United States of America, being the province hereby placed under your superintendence ; and we do hereby grant you full power, warrant and authority to appoint proper officers to assist you in the high office hereby on you conferred, to consist of the following number and denominations : one Deputy Provincial Grand Master, a Senior Provincial Grand Warden, a Junior Provincial Grand

Warden, a Provincial Grand Sword-bearer, a Provincial Grand Secretary, a Provincial Grand Treasurer, two Provincial Grand Marischals, a Senior Provincial Grand Steward, and three other Provincial Grand Stewards, and a Provincial Grand Guarder...

AND FURTHER, be it known to the Brethren in general that it is not, nor can it be, in their power to depose or displace you or your successors in office from the high office hereby on you conferred, except for high or enormous crimes tending to the scandal and detriment of the Order, and not then without bringing you to a regular trial, and an account of the proceedings therein, with the crime and sentence of the Council, being first sent to and approved by our Grand Lodge at Edinburgh... "

The document is signed by George Murray, Grand Treasurer, John Brown Douglas, Grand Secretary, John Whyte Melville, Deputy Grand Master and Governor, Alexander Hay, Senior Grand Warden, William Mann, Junior Grand Warden.

The " charter members " were thirteen in number including several well known and eminent brethren all of whom are members of the Grand Lodge at Edinburgh : —

Founders' Names, A. D. 1877 :

Brother Albert Pike, Washington, D. C.
» John Robin McDaniel, Lynchburgh, Va.
» Henry L. Palmer, Milwaukee, Wis.
» James C. Batchelor, New Orleans, La.
» Vincent L. Hurlbut, Chicago, Ill.
» Josiah H. Drummond, Portland, Maine.
» William M. Ireland, Washington, D. C.
» Robert McC. Graham, New York, N. Y.
» Albert G. Mackey, Washington, D. C.
» Enoch Terry Carson, Cincinnati, Ohio.
» Charles Roome, New York, N. Y.
» Charles Eugene Meyer, Philadelphia, Pa.
» Samuel C. Lawrence, Boston, Mass.

APPENDIX III

MASONIC AND PAGAN SYMBOLISM

Translated extract from a Document
addressed to all the Supreme Councils
of Scottish Rites of the World by

ALBERT PIKE

Delivered in Paris October 1885.
Quoted by Domenico Margiotta in.
Le Culte de la Nature dans la
Franc-magonnerie Universelle.
(p. 51)

D∴M∴J∴ ∴

" The order demands the immediate enforcement of the D∴ M∴ J∴ NEVERTHELESS (Deus Meumque Jus).

" At different epochs of the life of the nations which have the good fortune of possessing an active Supreme Council, and from 1820 onwards, certain similar communications have been made to certain chosen members of the Grand Consistories and Supreme Councils respectively. It is necessary to give the secret of this order.

" Exoterically D∴ M∴ J∴ are the initials of the motto of the 33rd degree. Deus Meumque Jus = Dieu et mon Droit.

" Esoterically D∴ M∴ J∴ are the initials of the words, Destruction, Materialism, Imposition, which " Impose Destruction of everything which resists Materialism.

“ The three points ∴ mean that the Masonic work of Destruction Materialism and Imposition is triple :

Destruction	of Supernaturalism of Authority of Anti-masonic activity
Materialism	of Conscience of Education of the State
Imposition	on the Family on the Nation on Humanity

Consequently the order to enforce practically the D∴ M∴ J∴ NEVERTHELESS means.

" By every means, whatever they may be, one must Impose first on the Family, and then on the Nation in order to achieve the aim of imposing on Humanity.

1. Destruction of Supernaturalism, there where the Conscience has not been reached by Masonic Materialism.
2. The Destruction of Authority, there where Education has not been reached by Masonic Materialism.
3. The Destruction of Anti-Masonry, there where the state has not been reached by Masonic Materialism.

The explanations which follow are taken from various authorities as cited.

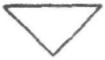
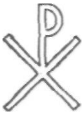
		Authority
TEMPLE	" The word temple is derived from the Latin word tempus, time ; and, therefore, the ancient structures called temples were in reality intended to be records of time and archives of human knowledge. Such institutions would have been a great benefit to mankind;	RICHARD CARLILE

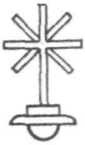
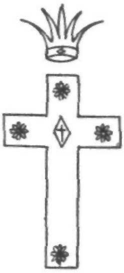
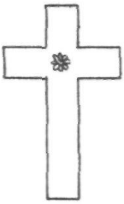
		Authority
	but the veil of superstition was thrown over them; it was deemed politic or profitable to the few to deceive the many; that which should have been a simple record of fact was worked up into an allegory; there arose an esoteric doctrine for those initiated in the secrets of the temple, and a deceptious exoteric doctrine for the multitude; and this was the origin of a priesthood... "	
APRON	The Masonic leather apron does not perpetuate the memory of the apron of the artisan masons of the middle ages. Its origin must be looked for in the attire of the Grand Priest, intended to hide his nudity when he mounted the steps of the altar. In other words it corresponds to the linen drawers which, according to the prescription of Exodus, xxviii, 42, should cover his loins. It represents a sort of symbolical circumcision.	General von LUDENDORF
THE WIDOW	Means the Synagogue, also Isis. The Egyptian Fable of Isis. Typhon, having killed Osiris, shut him up in a coffin, then, having cut his body into pieces, threw it in the Nile. Isis, the	D. MARGIOTTA also *Freemasonry Universal,* Vol. IV, Part 4, page 172, Spring *Equinox,* 1929.

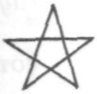
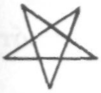
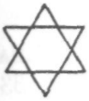
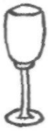
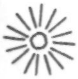
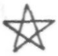
		Authority
	good widow, searching for the body of her husband found all the parts save one member and to commemorate this loss she instituted the worship of the Phallus, an enlarged representation of which she gave, resting on a coffin.	
	The term also refers to The Manicheans, being derived from the legend according to which Manes, the founder of the sect, was assisted by a rich widow.	HECKETHORN
	Also to Henrietta Maria, widow of Charles I, for whose cause the original " Masons " claimed to be working.	
PALLADIUM	One ruling like a King, the Phallus being a universal emblem of Kings. From Pala, Hindoo for the male organ.	J. B. HANNAY
OUROBOROS	Serpent swallowing its tail. Sexual Passion, Symbol of the Phallus.	J. B. HANNAY LE FORESTIER
SHAMBALLA	= The City of the Gods, which is in the West to some nations, in the East to others, in the North or South to yet others. It is the sacred island in the Gobi Desert. It is the home of Mysticism and the Secret Doctrine.	Mrs. A.BAILEY (Glossary to *Initiation, Human and Solar*, p. 224.)
KUNDALINI	= The Sex Force	Mrs. A. BAILEY

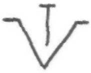
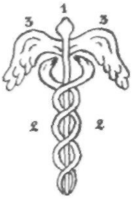
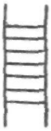
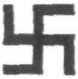
		Authority
THE SWORD	The Sword is used by the medium (Grand Master, Grand Mistress or other) who presides and directs the ceremonies of evocation only in dealing with those spirits of fire belonging to the higher degrees of the infernal hierarchy. There are two kinds of magic pentagrams, one for lesser, and the other for greater evocations. The first is a five pointed star set with precious stones, the second is a similar star engraved with many symbolic figures set upon a disc which bears the letters D 0 M A G, the initial letters for " Dei Optimi Maximi Ad Gloriam. "	
To Ov	Kundalini, Astral Light, Sex Force, Serpent Power, Hebrew " Gas ", Spiritual Fire whence comes ghost. Galvanic Electric Fire, the Magnetic Fluid.	GODFREY HIGGINS *The Anacalypsis.*
I. N. R. I.	Hebrew YAMMEN NOAH ROOAKH YEVAISHAUH meaning Water, Fire, Air, Earth. It also stands for. Igne Nitrum Roris Invenitur. Igne Natura Renovanda Integrat Igne Natura Renovatur Integra. Jesus Nazarenus Rex Judeorum.	*The Rosicrucian*

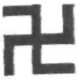
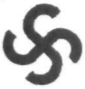
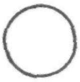
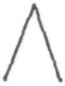
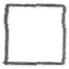
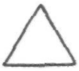
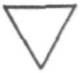
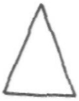
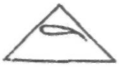
		Authority
J. B. M.	Jakin, Boaz, Moabone (Masonry). Jesus Bethlemitus Maledictus (Satanism).	
MOABONE or MAHABONE	The Complete God. The Hermaphrodite (Man is completed by the degree of Master, 3rd degree).	D. MARGIOTTA
THE CHRIST	In the secret society-occult jargon this means " the Christ force " or Sex force — not Jesus Christ.	
THE ARCH	The Womb	ROSEN
THE SCARAB	(The Egyptian Beetle) . . . . . Generation	Sir ERNEST BUDGE
LOTUS-PADMA	The Lotus is a water plant from which each god at his birth emerges... The Lotus is also a symbol of reproduction and generation, the flower of concealment, night, silence, mystery, and regarded with nearly the same veneration as the Yoni itself. The Hindus adore the Lotus for other reasons ; for example, because being able to reproduce itself without the assistance of the male pollen, it is a type of the androgynous or hermaphroditic character of the Deity. For the same reason this plant was also held sacred by the Egyptian priests.	EDWARD SELLON

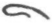
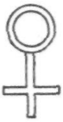
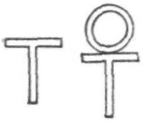
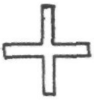
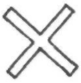
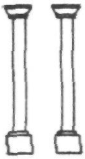
		Authority
THE DOUBLE HEADED EAGLE	The Double-headed Eagle represents an anagram of the Baphomet, the esoteric explanation of which is as follows : — Reading Baphomet backwards we get, Tem-oph-ab. TEM = duplex, OPH = avis, AB = generation. Duplex avis generation = The double bird of generation.	D. MARGIOTTA *Le Culte de la Nature dans la Franc-Maçonnerie Universelle,* p 215.
GRAND ŒUVRE	This term supposed by the Uninitiated to mean the quest of the Alchemist's stone esoterically denotes the act of the male and female which produces offspring. Copulation.	*Revue des Societes Secretes*
	Triangle. The triangle is inverted in Kadosch. It represents Lucifer who, with the two crowned heads of the Eagle, that is to say the Grand Patriarch and the Grand Emperor or Sovereign, compose the Very Holy and Indivisible Trinity to which the Kadosch takes his oath of blind obedience. The Grand Inspector Inquisitor Commander takes his oath to the Very Holy and Indivisible Trinity.	D. MARGIOTTA *Le Culte de la Nature dans la Franc-Maçonnerie Universelle,* p. 227.
	The Red Cross of Rome and Constantine.	*The Rosicrucian*

		Authorities
	The Templar's Cross. also The Manichean's Cross ..	GODFREY HIGGINS *The Anacalypsis*
	The Rose Cross of " Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia ". Definition : From a speech pronounced before Rristol College by Frater Vitam Impendere Vero-8. " Animal magnetism, mesmerism, clairvoyance, spiritual manifestations of all kinds, are but properties of the metaphorical stone and life-elixir, faculties of the microcosm's immortality — in Hermetic parlance — of the Rosie Cross. " This is the Sex-force, Kundalini, etc.	*The Rosicrucian*
	The Rose Croix. The upright — Symbol of Life. The cross-bar — Symbol of Death. The Rose-Symbol of secrecy or the blooming of the genital organs of woman. Rose-Croix is the same emblem as the Phallo-Kteis or Lingam-Yoni of the Ancients.	ELIPHAS LEVI and D. MARGIOTTA

		Authority
	Flamboyant Star, Blazing Star. Microcosm or Solomon's Seal. Emblem of Generation. Pointing up, good.	ELIPHAS LEVI D MARGIOTTA
	Flamboyant Star, Star of the Morning. Emblem of Lucifer. Pointing downward, evil. Black magic.	ELIPHAS LEVI D MARGIOTTA
	Interlaced Triangles — Symbol of the Double Divinity, Jehovah white and Jehovah black. Other names, Macrocosmos, Star of David, Solomon's Seal. Sex force — △ male ▽ female = union.	ELIPHAS LEVI OLLIVER
	" Holy Grail " meaning the female organ, Uterus.	*Revue des Societes Secretes*
	The Sun = Male.	ELIPHAS LEVI
	The Moon = Female.	ELIPHAS LEVI
	The Star = The Emblem of Bi-sexuality in certain rites.	ELIPHAS LEVI
	= The Male organ or Phallus.	D. MARGIOTTA
	= The Female organ or Uterus.	D. MARGIOTTA

		Authority
יהוה	IHOH or IHUH or IHVH The Tetragrammaton = Jehovah = He-Her = the Bi-sexual God	D. MARGIOTTA.
	Male in the female organ, Phallus in Uterus. Hindoo.	D. MARGIOTTA
	The Caduceus. Explanation. 1. The Spine. 2. The Sex Force or Kundalini. 3. The Power to travel on another plane.	C. W. LEADBEATER 33°
G	God — Generation. The Great God spoken of in the Hermetic-Judaic-Masonic rituals is the one who presides over generation. It is Jehovah, Lucifer, The Angel of Night, The Phallic God, not the God of the Christians. The G in the Flamboyant Star of Masonry stands for Gnosis in the higher degrees.	D. MARGIOTTA & ELIPHAS LEVI
	Ladder with seven steps — Virgo intacta.	D. MARGIOTTA
	Swastica Symbol of Life, Fire.	C. W. OLLIVER

		Authority
	Swastica reversed. Black Magic.	C. W. OLLIVER
	Other form of Swastica.	
	Yima's piercer, — Phallus in Uterus God. Other form of I. O. The Symbol of Illuminism.	D. MARGIOTTA and others
	Compass — Symbol of Masculinity of Freemasonry (Phallus).	D. MARGIOTTA
	Square — Symbol of the genital organs of woman. The Lodge in Freemasonry.	D. MARGIOTTA
	Triangle pointing upward, Male. Exoterically good.	D. MARGIOTTA
	Triangle pointing downward, Female. Exoterically Evil.	D. MARGIOTTA
	Delta.	ELIPHAS LEVI
	Tetragrammaton. The Ineffable name. Jehovah — I H O H. — Shem-ham-phoreh. Jewish and Freemasonic.	BLANCHARD 33

		Authority
	Yod — The Phallus.	D. MARGIOTTA
	Tau Cross or Crux Ansata — Union of Male and Female, Fecundity.	H. JENNINGS
	Other forms of Tau Cross.	
	The Universal mark or symbol for the complete male organ, the Phallus.	J. B. HANNAY
	Crux Decussata, or Cross of St. Andrew see above.	
	Jakin — The Column — The female organ, Uterus.	D. MARGIOTTA
	Boaz — The Column — The male organ, the Phallus (Sacred word of the first degree, The Apprentice).	D. MARGIOTTA

APPENDIX IV

The authoress is indebted to Brigadier-General R. B. D. Blakeney for the documents from which the following cliches in this work have been made.

They completely illustrate the link which exists between The Grand Lodge of England and Theosophist Illuminism.

Brig.-Gen. Blakeney is himself a Theosophist and a member of the Occult Society *The Quest* as well as of various other occult centres, as also of the Liberal Catholic Church founded by Charles Leadbeater.

M^R. THEODORE REUSS.

Special- and War-Correspondent.

Testimonials

Embassy of the United States **of America**

Berlin, November 1st. 1896.

My dear Reuss: — I thank you very much for your article on the late Kaiser Manoeuvres, which you were so good as to send me. I have found it both interesting and useful. I am now writing my official report, and I have learned several things from you which escaped my notice in the field. Your remarks on the Cavalry, the Bicycle Detachment and the Commissariat Department I have made use of in my report.

You certainly have a good eye for tactical situations and your experience in writing, and perfect mastery of the German language, make you very competent to report a manoeuvre. I shall send your article on to Washington as an appendix to my report. I always send one or two of the best newspaper reports to fill out my own. Please do not forget to send me your report on the next manoeuvres.

Sincerely yours

R. K, EVANS,
Captain and Military Attaché.

Berlin, February 13, 1890.

My dear .Mr, Reuss:

Soon after seeing you at the Subscriptionts-Ball last night, I met Mr. W. C. Heick, who is one of the Managers of the New York Herald. and who, 1 have always understood, is quite *near its* proprietor. In the course of our conversation Mr. Reick asked me if I could recommend any one to him as a Berlin Correspondent for the Herald. I at once thought of you as being the *best informed of the American correspondents here;* and therefore a suitable man for the place, if you cared to take it, and if you could do so in consideration of your engagement with the United Press. Mr. Reick said that he would like to see you and talk the matter over, and I promised to let you know that he was here and that you could find him at the Hotel Bristol today. — Wishing you success, I am

Yours very truly

.JOHN B. JACKSON.
First Secretary to the United States Embassy.

The Central News Limited, 5 New Bridge street,
London, 11. May 1889.

This is to certify that Mr. Theodor Reuss is authorised t represent the Central News in Westphalia.

The Central News, Limited
JOHN MOORE, Manager

Theod. Reuss Esq.
St. George's Club, Hanover Square, W.

The Central News, London, May 16" 1889.

Dear Mr. Reuss!

I have had your various letters and telegrams and the work has been to our satisfaction. I have telegraphed you to day to remain and I am also sending you . . . Pounds by this post. When I want you to return I will telegraph to you. The matter which you are sending us by mail comes in very useful to incorporate with your telegrams.

Yours faithfully
JOHN MOORE, Manager.

Theodor Reuss Esq.

The United Press, 187 Broadway, New York.

To whom it may concern :

This is to certify that Mr. Theodor Reuss is a special representative of the United Press of New York, and is hereby authorized to forward news telegrams from various points *to* their representative in London.

F1NLEY ANDERSON,
London, July 17" 1889. Special Commissioner.

The Daily Chronicle, 12 Salisbury square, E, C.
London, *2"* January 1890.

Theodor Reuss Esq.

Dear Sir,

I hereby declare and confirm your appointment as special correspondent to the *Daily Chronicle* in Berlin. You are qualified to obtain and forward all news, official or otherwise that may be necessary for the paper.

Yours truly
ALF. B. HANCE, Manager.

United States Legation,
Berlin, June 23rd. 1891.

Dear Mr. Lincoln: — Let me present to you Mr. Th Reuss of our United Press, of the London Chronicle &c., a Journalist, as you see, but a *Gentleman,* and I take pleasure in sending him to you.

Yours very truly
Wm. WALTER PHELPS.

The Dally Chronicle.

London, 25. March 1892.

Dear Sir.

Many thanks for your letter of 20. inst. I will not forget you if we should be able to utilize your services for any special work which you might be able to do for us.

Hoping to have the pleasure of occasionally running across you I am

Yours faithfully

FRANK LLOYD.

The Journal & The Morgen-Journal ol **New** York.

Dear Mr. Reuss. I am also looking for a secretary, *some one like yourself,* who knows English well and has experience in American newspaper matters. I should pay him anywhere about L. 500 — According to his value and more later on. I should be obliged to you for advertising in the *Times* for such a man, and for picking out of the correspondents those most likely to answer. With kind regards

Yours truly

ALBERT PULITZER.

The Central Press, 22 Parliament street,

London S. W., January 16". 1892.

Dear Mr. Reuss;

I enclose the usual cheque which please acknowledge. I must confess that you exercise marvellous ingenuity in collecting a great variety of interesting facts which few others seem to give. If we have patience we are bound to fetch them by and by.

Yours very truly

JOHN HAWKINS.

The United Press, (successor te the Associated Press).

Effingham House, Arundel street,

London, January 13". 1893.

Theodor Reuss Esq.

Dear Sir: — I hereby appoint you correspondent at Berlin for the United Press of Newyork, upon the terms of the agreement arranged.

Very truly yours

LOUIS H. MOORE,

European Manager.

The United Press, New York Office, 27/2. 94.

Dear Mr. Loper: Although the remark may not be exactly per fluent, I think it only fair to Reuss to say that he has done in my opinion some very excellent work for us. On several occasions he has *beaten the world* with his news, and has sent us matter which the German dailies copied three weeks later from our report. If we should lose him 1 doubt that he could be replaced.

Most sincerely

GEO. W. HIMAM.

The United Press.

London, 22. April 1894.

Dear Sir,

New York writes on the 2nd April, complimenting you on the excellency of the Bismarck birthday matter, and the expedition with which it was sent. The *opposition were out of it,* and their papers had to fall back upon the United Press cables.

Yours very truly

M. F. LAFFAN.

The United Press.

London, 28". March 1895.

Dear Reuss,

The stuff you have already sent us from Friedrichsruh has been very good, its graphic details being far better than Reuter's, though Reuter sends the speeches a little fuller than you do. You are doing wery well indeed, old fellow, keep it up and *knock the spots out of* Wo/// next Sunday and following days.

Yours very truly

L. H. MOORE.

The United Press.

London 4". April 1895.

My dear Reuss,

You did nobly over the Bismarck festival and I congratulate you.

Yours very truly

LUIMORE.

Das Kleine **Journal,**

Friedrichstrasse 239.

Berlin S. W., le 8. Avril 1897.

Monsieur Theodore Reuss est le representant de notre journal pour la Turquie et la Grece et nous serons reconnaissants a toutes les personnes qui lui seront utiles.

LA REDACTION DU • KLEINES JOURNAL »

Victor Hahn.

Kaiserlich Deutsches Konsulat fur Griechenland.

Athenes, le 10/22. Avril 1897.

Le Consulat Imperial d'Allemagne pour la Grece requiert par la presente toutes les autorites militaires et civiles de laisser passer iibrement le porteur Monsieur Theodore Reuss, correspondant du Bureau telegraphique des Etats Unis, et du Kleines Journal, qui pourvu d'une lettre de recommandation de Son Excellence le Ministre de la Guerre Mr. Metaxas a l'adresse de Son Altesse Royale le Prince Royal, se rendra a la fronliere turco-grecque.

Le Consul General d'Allemagne,

Luders.

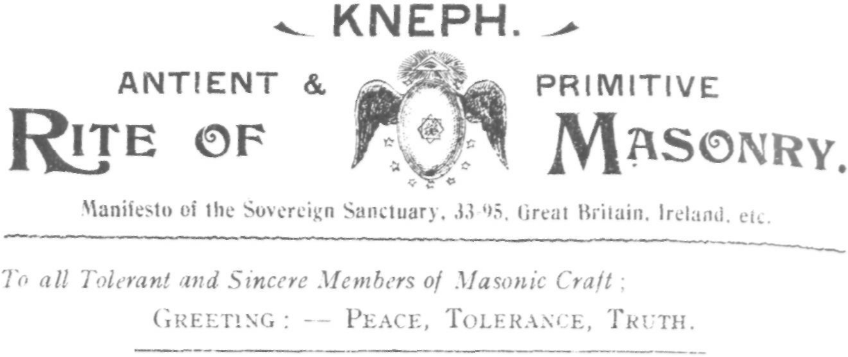
. *All communications intended for Mr. Reuss should be addressed:*

Theodore Reuss, *c/o. Messrs. Henry Klein & Co.*

84, Oxford street, London. **W.**

?

2. Kneph. Antient & Primitive Rite of Masonry. Manifesto of the Sovereign Sanctuary, signed by John Yarker and other members and officers of the Rite.



KNEPH.

ANTIENT & PRIMITIVE RITE OF MASONRY.

Manifesto of the Sovereign Sanctuary, 33-95, Great Britain, Ireland, etc.

To all Tolerant and Sincere Members of Masonic Craft;

GREETING: — PEACE, TOLERANCE, TRUTH.

WHEREAS at a recent meeting, held in Liverpool, it was brought to the notice of this Sovereign Body that misrepresentations, whether by error or design, are constantly made in regard to this valuable Kite, by certain badly informed Masons, interested persons, and others, who apparently forget their Masonic duties and obligation*.

THEREFORE it was resolved that it was advisable we should make known the following facts with reference to its history, its rights, and its privileges, in order that the same may be brought prominently under the notice of all Masons who have a sincere desire to acquire truth and knowledge.

FIRST. — Early in the 18th century, there existed in this and other countries, a system termed Antient Masonry. and which included such degrees as the *Red Cross* (of Babylon), under various names, the *Rosy Cross* (modern Rose Croix), the *Kadosh*; and again the *Royal Arch,* the *Templar,* the *Templar Priest,* or York System. Carried to France by British Jacobites, these became the nucleus of many Rites that were cumulated later. All *Antient* Rites, so called, include these degrees under varied names, but the firts Cratt Grand Lodge, constituted in 1717, ignored them until 1813. All the first founders of our Sovereign Body possessed these degrees, not from one source, but various independent Rites.

SECOND — It follows, that our Sovereign Body has a time immemorial right, as Antient Masons of the higher degrees, to practise a system which during the whole of the last and present centuries conferred, and still confers, the designation of *Ancient Masons* in this and all other countries.

THIRD. — It was constitutionally established at Freemasons' Tavern, London, in 1872, when it united to its own organization certain Chapters of the Red and Rosy Cross, Kadosh, English Grand Inspector, &c., existing independently from a time immemorial date. But it confers its degrees upon Master Masons only in good standing under some constitutional Grand Lodge, and it is allied and " Confederated " with numerous bodies, existing in all countries where Masonry is practised.

FOURTH — It has an undoubted right *upon which it is prepared to insit,* to the' fullest protection under the following Article wchich is No. *2* of the unalterable Constitution and unrepeatable Law of the United Grand Lodge of England, mutually accepted by the " Antient " and " Modern " Masons when they united their forces in 1813, viz: —
" It is declared and pronounced that pure
" Ancient Masonry consists of three degrees,
" and no more, viz : Those ot Entered Ap-
" prentice, the Fellow Craft, and the Master
" Mason (including the Supreme Order of the
" Holy Royal Arch). *But this Article is not*
" *intended to prevent anv Lodge or Chapter*
" *from holding a Meeting in any of the Orders*
" *of Chivalry, according to the Constitutions of*
" *the said Orders. "*

FIFTH. — All its degrees are as unsectarian as those of Craft Masonry, and are accepted, without scruple, by men of all religious opinions ; one Chapter has even Initiated Parsees, Jews, Moslems, Trinitarian and Unitarian Christians. Besides this it was designed, in establishing the Rite here to enable all earnest Masons to acquire the fullest Masonic knowledge and dignity at a moderate cost, as opposed to prohibitive fees.

SIXTH. - Its Neophytes, being recognised Master Masons, receive the Red and Rosy-Cross of the " Antients, " under the modern names of these decrees, in Rose Croix CHAPTERS. From this they are advanced to the Kadosh and Grand Inspector in SENATES. Finally they receive the philosophic Egyptian grades in COUNCILS of 30-90^0. Its official grades are the Presidents or Masters. The Sovereign Body has also added, under foreign Charter, the Rite of Mizraim of 90^0 ; though our first members obtained it from bodies existing prior to 1823. when the Duke of Sussex was its Chief in England, the Duke of Leinster in Ireland, and Dr. Walker Arnott in Scotland ; those authorities having long become extinct. In an unprinted letter of

1862 the last named learned Brother states, that the late Duke of Athol was initiated into the Kite of Mizraim at Paris in 1797, and goes on to express his *regret* that when the Rite *Ancien* of 33^0 was established in Scotland, in 1845, it did not combine that of Mizraim with it.

SEVENTH. — Our Sovereign Body has absolute right, under ihe above quoted Article of Union to a peaceful practise of all degrees that can tend to elucidate Masonic Rites, symbolism, history, etc. We may point out, in this relation, that Ireland, and its later imitator England, are the only Masonic kingdoms in the World in which the U*nsectarian* A. & P. Rite has been unable to labour peaceably with the *Trinitarian* A. &A Kite of 33°. In Egypt, Roumania, Spain, and some other countries, there are mutual Treaties of assistance between the Craft Grand Lodge ; the A. *&* A. Rite of 33^0 , and the A. *&* P. Rite of 95^0. Even the A, & A. " Mother S. G. C. " *33^0 of* Charleston has members *who belong to both bodies,* and we could give very distinguished names. In France the Grand Orient concorded in 1868 the degrees of the A. & *P.* Rite with those of the A. & P. Rite, and many other Rites possessed by it; moreover the A. & A. Rite, and that of Mizraim are allowed to give the three first degrees. England alone swears its Trinitarian Neophytes, that they will visit and belong to no other system: this needs no comment. Even in Craft Masonry the prevailing sentiments and ruling policy, in large towns, are not commendable to just men. The late Dr. Arnott who was one of the most eminent Masons Scotland has had, in the letter previously quoted, says, " The first principles of Masonry, I was taught, were equality, so far as regards civil or private fortune, and to give high offices to those only who had Proved themselves best Masons, provided their character in the world was unblemished ; by these principles I have been actuated throughout. "

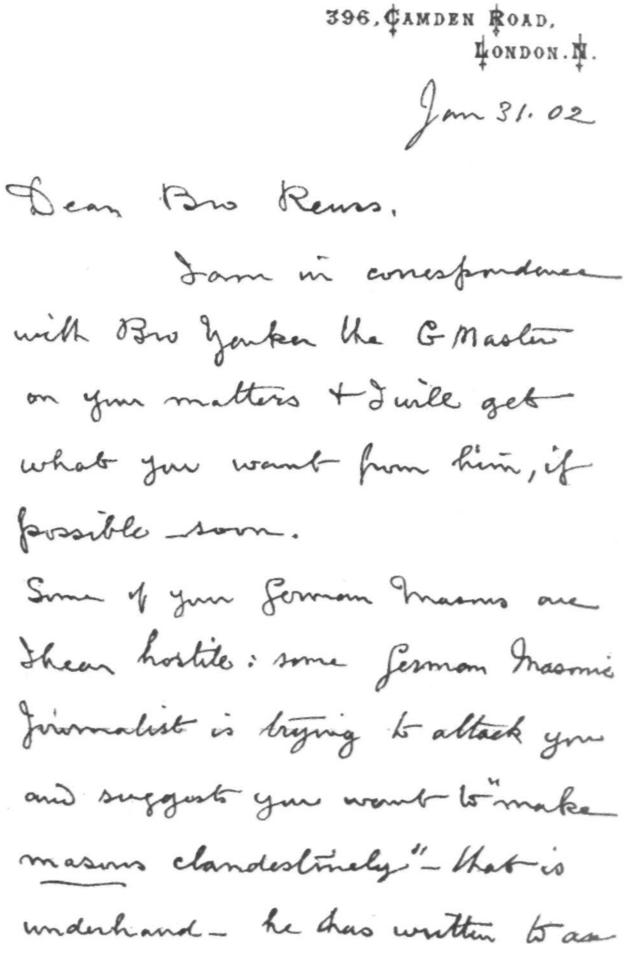
EIGHTH. — However unpalatable it may be to English Masons, of whom comparatively few go beyond the third Degree, it must be admitted that in foreign countries the *(rat:* counts tor little in comparison with what arc termed the *High-grades.* Moreover this Sovereign Body is the only one which has the power to confer all known degrees in Free Masonry ; it has full Rituals of all the Degrees, whilst other Rites give by *name* all but 2^0 out of 30^0. It is our desire to bespeak no more than a *friendly rivalry* with other Rites, for we admit all, upon the assumption that they seek the same end as ourselves : namely : *the promulgation of the principles of universal peace and charity, and the general welfare of mankind.*

FINALLY, we need only add that earnest enquirers may obtain such information as they may desire by addressing any of the following members and officers of the Rite.

Dated the 28th day of July, 1900, of
T.L.000,000.000.

JOHN YARKEE, G. M. G., *ad vitam,* West Didsbury, near Manchester.
HENRYMEYER, G. A. G., 39, Pembury Road, Clapton, London.
RICHARD HICHAM, Gd. Ch. G., 49, Princess St. Manchester.
HENRY HAWLEY, Gd. Sec. G., Rocky Lane, Liverpool.
B. McA. BANNATYNE, G. K. G. B., 26, Billiter St., London, E. C.
ROBERT MORRISON, G. M. of C, 96, Napier's Hall St.. Glasgow.
JOHN HENRY PAGNI, G. R. of S. S., Wellington, New Zealand.
FRED. GEO. OSBORNE, G. M. of L., Lagos, West Africa.
CAPT. EDWARD YARKER, G. R. of S. S.,S/'s " Ibadan, " Lagos.
W.M. HY. QUILLIAM, G. M. T. of the North, 6, Manchester St., Liverpool.
THOMAS FRANCIS, G. M. T., of the South, Freemasons' Hall, Havant.
GEO. EDWD. TURNER, G. M. T. of the South, " Purbeck, " Blandford, (Dorset).
COLIN MACKENZIE, G. M. T. of Scotland, 7, Church St., Govan.
etc. *etc.* etc.

3. The following letters were addressed to Theodor Reuss of Berlin by Dr. William Wynn Westcott, who was appointed P. G. D. of Grand Lodge of England in 1902 and P. G. St. B. of Royal Arch Chapter in the same year. This correspondence is interesting as showing the link between English Grand Lodge and German Illuminism, the Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia and the O. T. O. See pages 510-512.



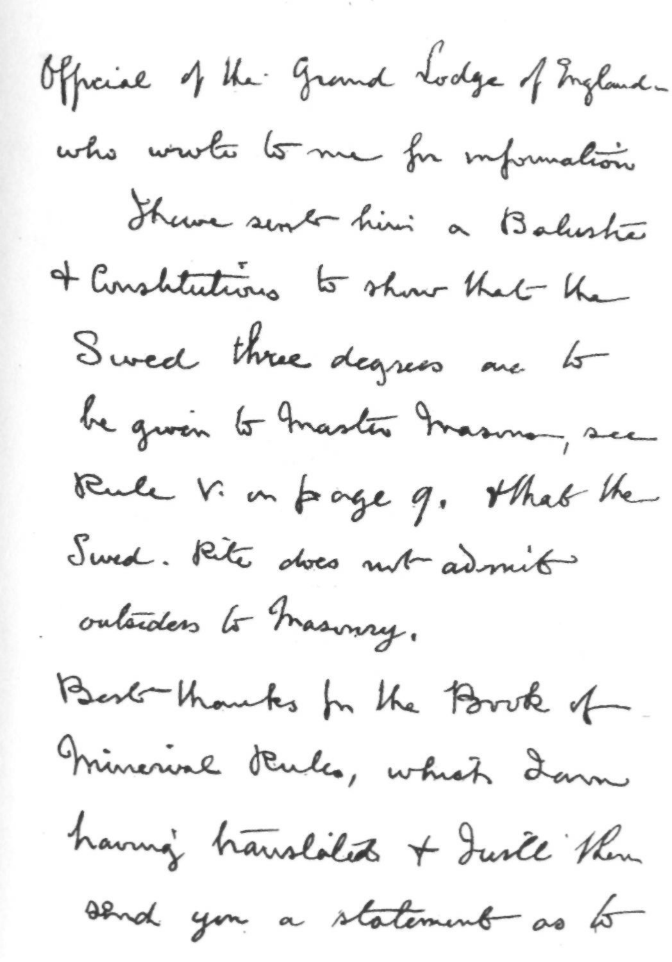
396, Camden Road,
London. N.

Jan 31. 02

Dear Bro Reuss,

I am in correspondence with Bro Yarker the G Master on your matters & I will get what you want from him, if possible soon.

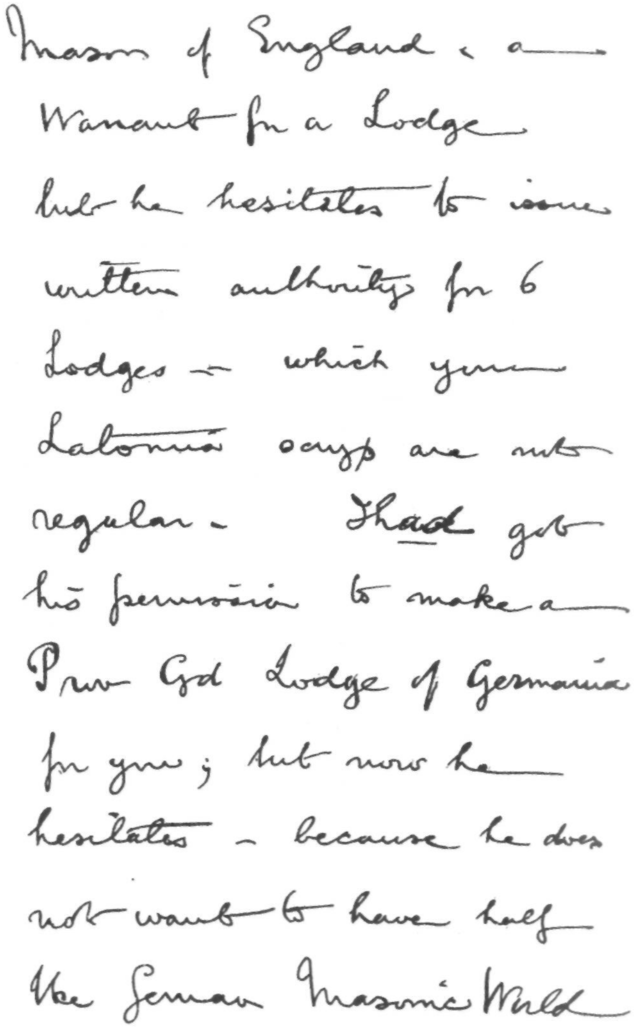
Some of your German Masons are I hear hostile: some German Masonic Journalist is trying to attack you and suggests you want to "make masons clandestinely" – that is underhand – he has written to an



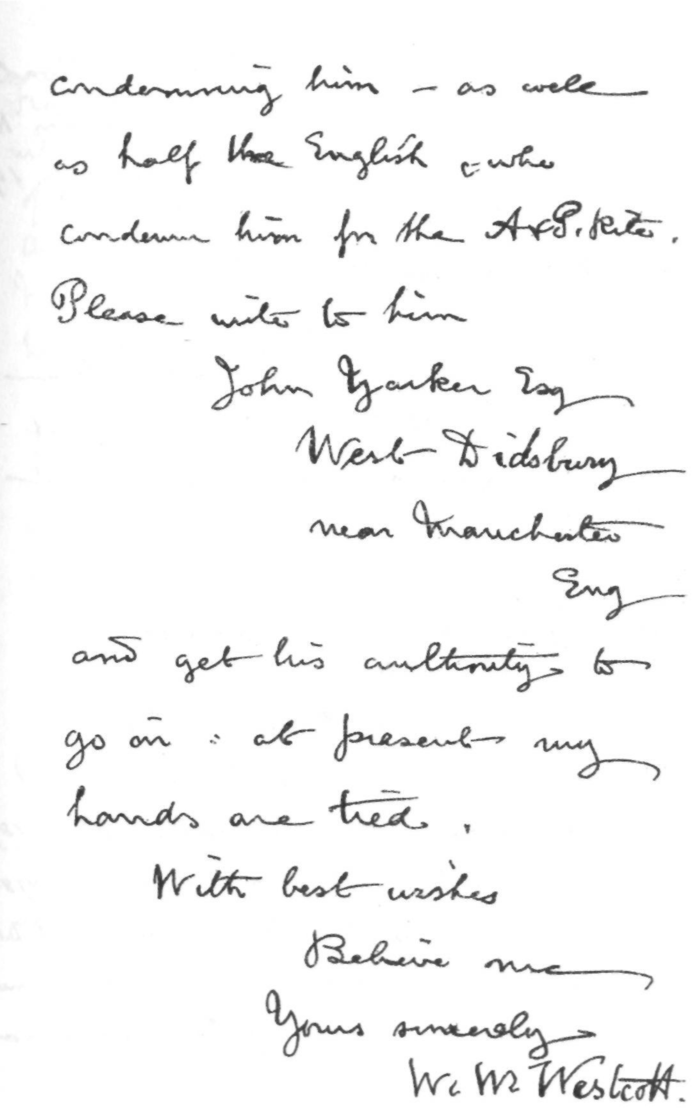
Official of the Grand Lodge of England— who wrote to me for information

I have sent him a Baluster & Constitutions to show that the Swed three degrees are to be given to Master Masons, see Rule V. on page 9. & that the Swed. Rite does not admit outsiders to Masonry.

Best thanks for the Book of Memorial Rules, which I am having translated & I will then send you a statement as to



Mason of England & a
Warrant for a Lodge
but he hesitates to issue
written authority for 6
Lodges — which your
Latomia orgs are not
regular — I had got
his permission to make a
Prov Gd Lodge of Germania
for you; but now he
hesitates — because he does
not want to have half
the German Masonic World

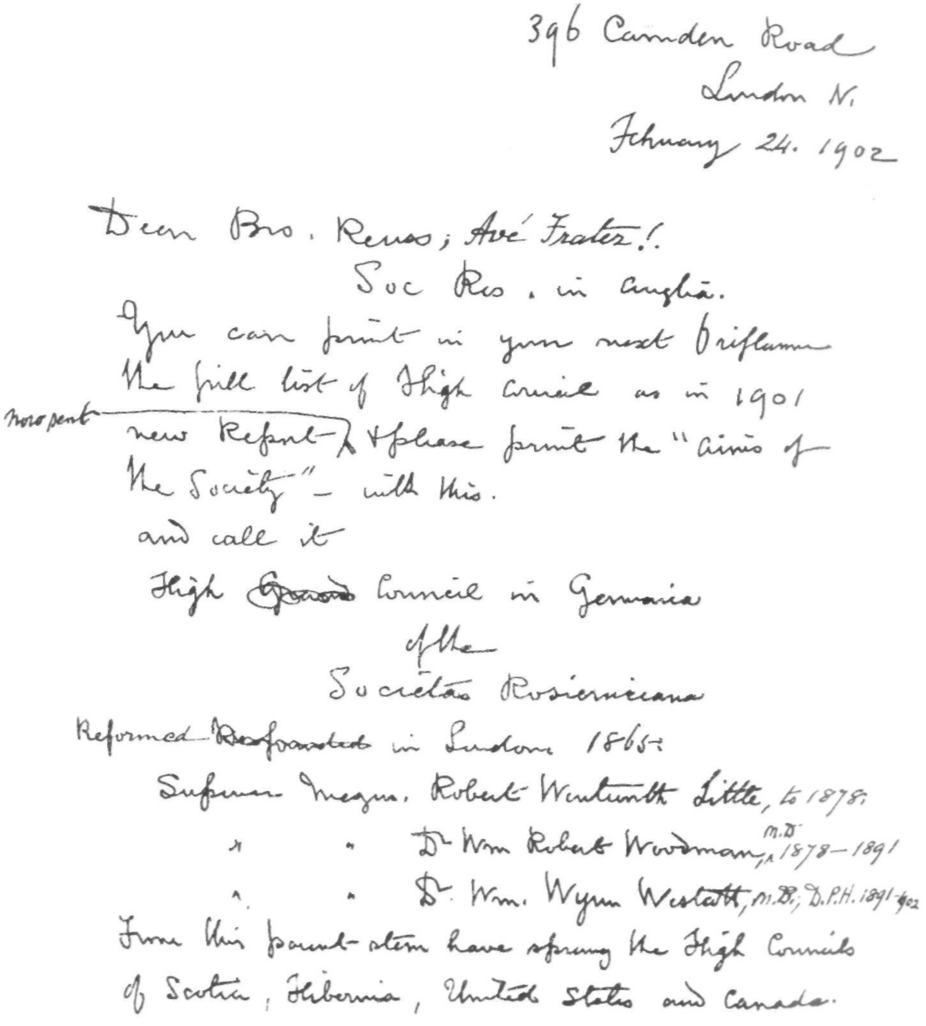


condemning him – as well
as half the English – who
condemn him for the A&P. Rite.
Please write to him

John Yarker Esq
West Didsbury
near Manchester
Eng

and get his authority to
go on : at present my
hands are tied.

With best wishes
Believe me
Yours sincerely
W. Wn Westcott.



396 Camden Road
London N.
February 24. 1902

Dear Bro. Reuss; Avé Frater!.

Soc Ros. in Anglia.

You can print in your next Oriflamme the full list of High Council as in 1901 new Report now sent & please print the "Aims of the Society" — with this.

and call it

High ~~Grand~~ Council in Germania
of the
Societas Rosicruciana

Reformed ~~Refounded~~ in London 1865.

Supreme Magus. Robert Wentworth Little, to 1878.
" " Dr Wm Robert Woodman, M.D. 1878–1891
" " Dr. Wm. Wynn Westcott, M.B.; D.P.H. 1891-902

From this parent-stem have sprung the High Councils of Scotia, Hibernia, United States and Canada.

Fratres of the Society of Germania will be welcome guests at the Convocations of the Metropolitan, York and Newcastle Colleges of England, and the M.W. Supreme Magus in Anglia will give introductions to German fratres to the Colleges in Scotia etc.

The Aims of the Societas, are —

See Book of Regulations.

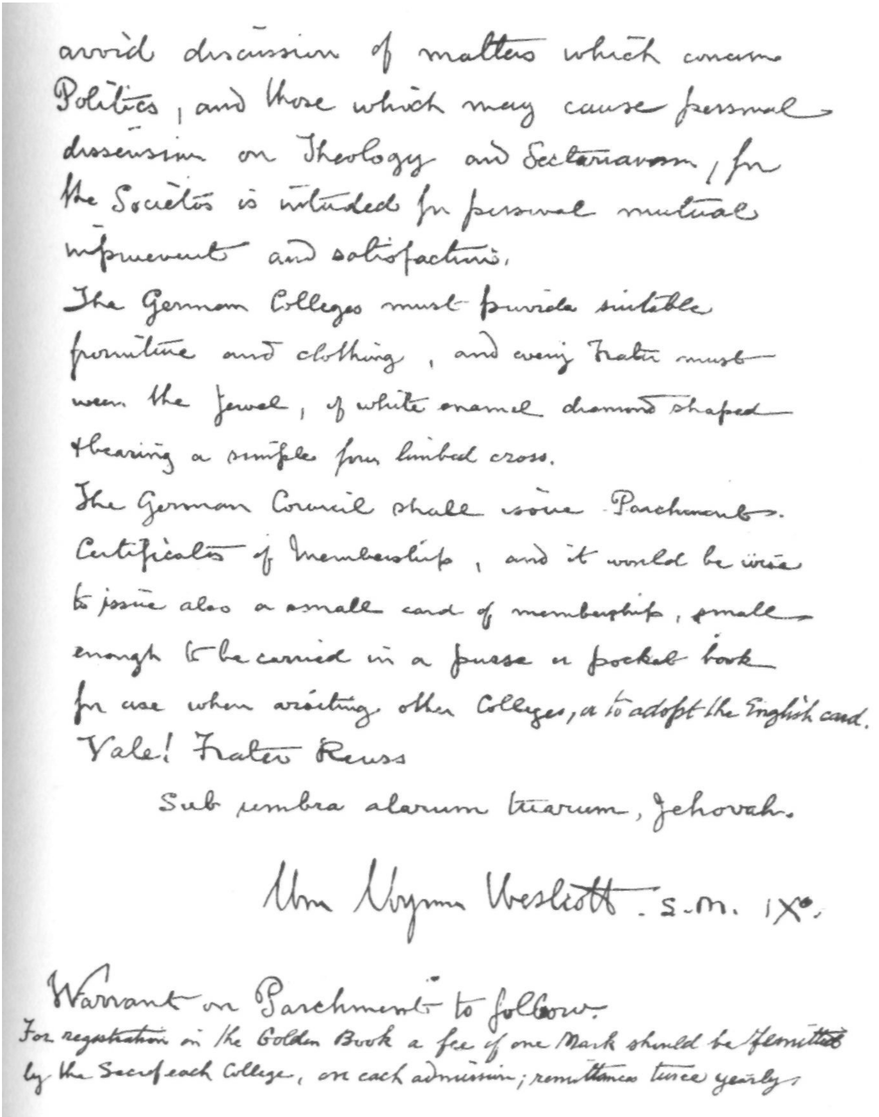
The Societas in Germania receives a Warrant under the hand of Dr. Wm. Wynn Westcott the Supreme Magus in Anglia, who is now the Senior S.M. in mundo.

Master Masons are first admitted to the Grade of Zelator, I°. and may advance to the grades of Theoricus 2°, Practicus 3°, and Philosophus 4° by regular attendance

The three Adepts grades are conferred upon fratres who assist by study, teaching and giving Lectures.

The 8° Grade of Magister is conferred upon the Celebrant of each College at his Installation: he is to chosen once a year by the fratres of his College, and is then to be installed by other fratres of the 8th Grade in secret. at the Installation Convocation: members of lower grades leaving the Temple during the Ceremonies of Magister and Installation.

At the College Convocations the Celebrants will sometimes read certain Lectures which have been given in English Temples, duly translated into German Language, in addition to Lectures by the German Fratres. The M.W.S.M. Dr W. Wynn Westcott will supervise with paternal care the proceedings of the German Colleges, while leaving them a free hand in the work, while within the limits of the Aims of the Societas, but the fratres must

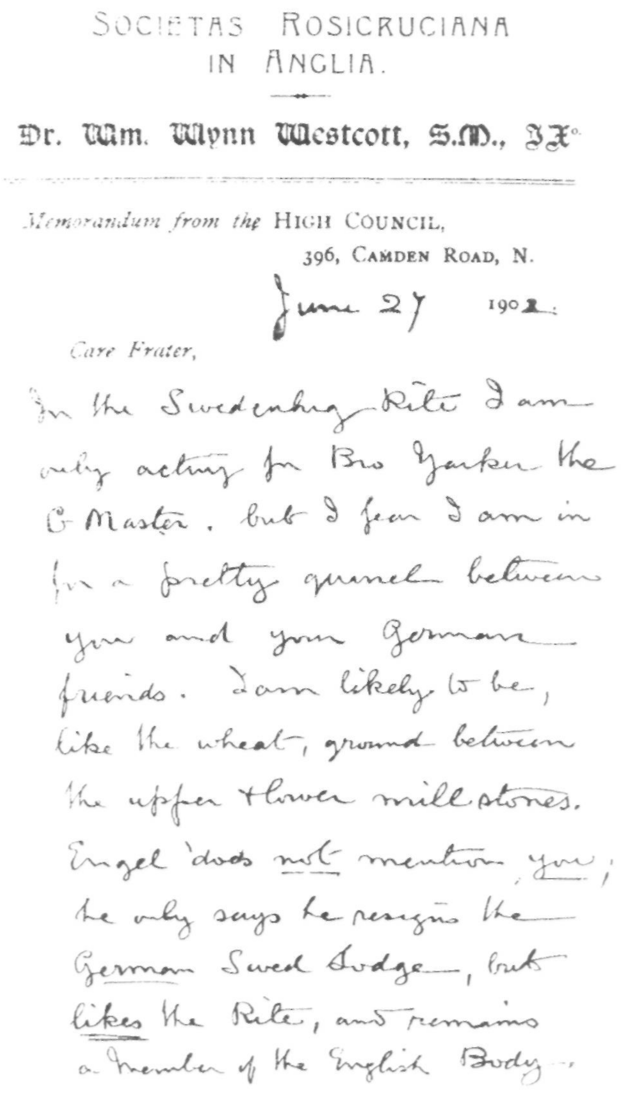


avoid discussion of matters which concern
Politics, and those which may cause personal
dissension on Theology and Sectarianism, for
the Societas is intended for personal mutual
improvement and satisfaction.
The German Colleges must provide suitable
furniture and clothing, and every Frater must
wear the Jewel, of white enamel diamond shaped
& bearing a simple four limbed cross.
The German Council shall issue Parchments.
Certificates of Membership, and it would be wise
to issue also a small card of membership, small
enough to be carried in a purse or pocket book
for use when visiting other Colleges, or to adopt the English card.
Vale! Frater Reuss

Sub umbra alarum tuarum, Jehovah.

Wm Wynn Westcott. S.M. IX°.

Warrant on Parchment to follow.
For registration in the Golden Book a fee of one Mark should be remitted
by the Secr of each College, on each admission; remittances twice yearly,



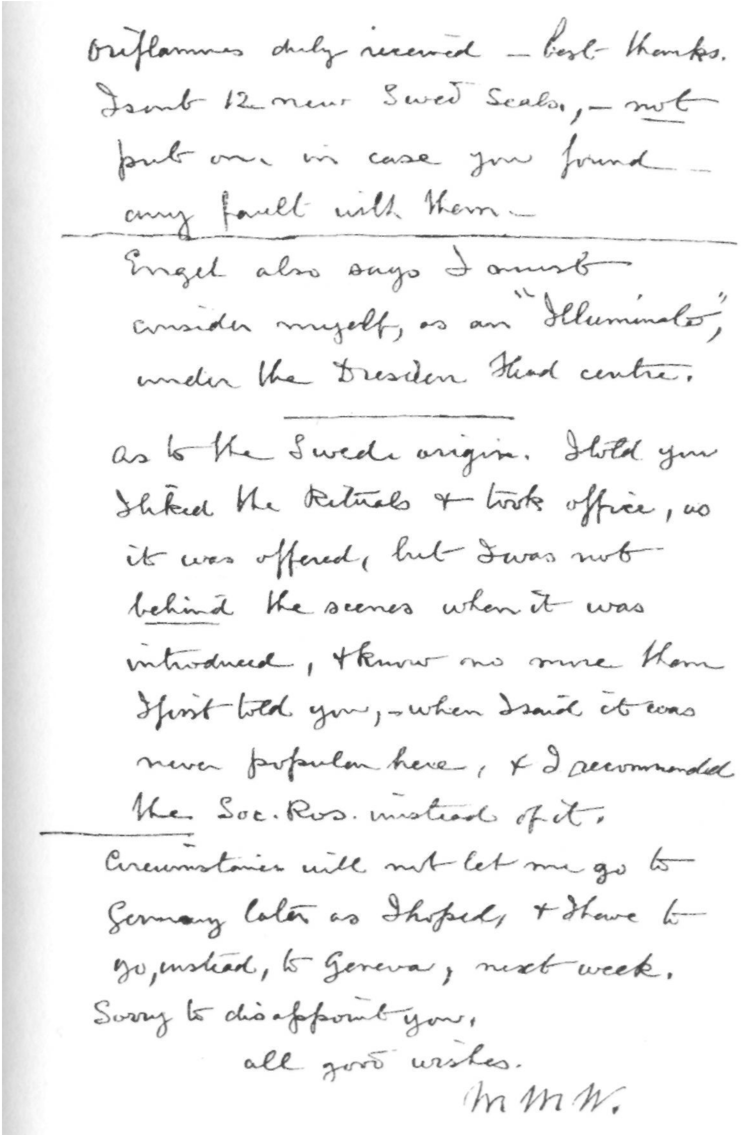
SOCIETAS ROSICRUCIANA
IN ANGLIA.

Dr. Wm. Wynn Westcott, S.M., IX°

Memorandum from the HIGH COUNCIL,
396, CAMDEN ROAD, N.
June 27 1902.

Care Frater,

In the Swedenborg Rite I am only acting for Bro Yarker the G Master. but I fear I am in for a pretty quarrel between you and your German friends. I am likely to be, like the wheat, ground between the upper + lower mill stones. Engel does *not* mention *you*; he only says he resigns the German Swed Lodge, but *likes* the Rite, and remains a member of the English Body.



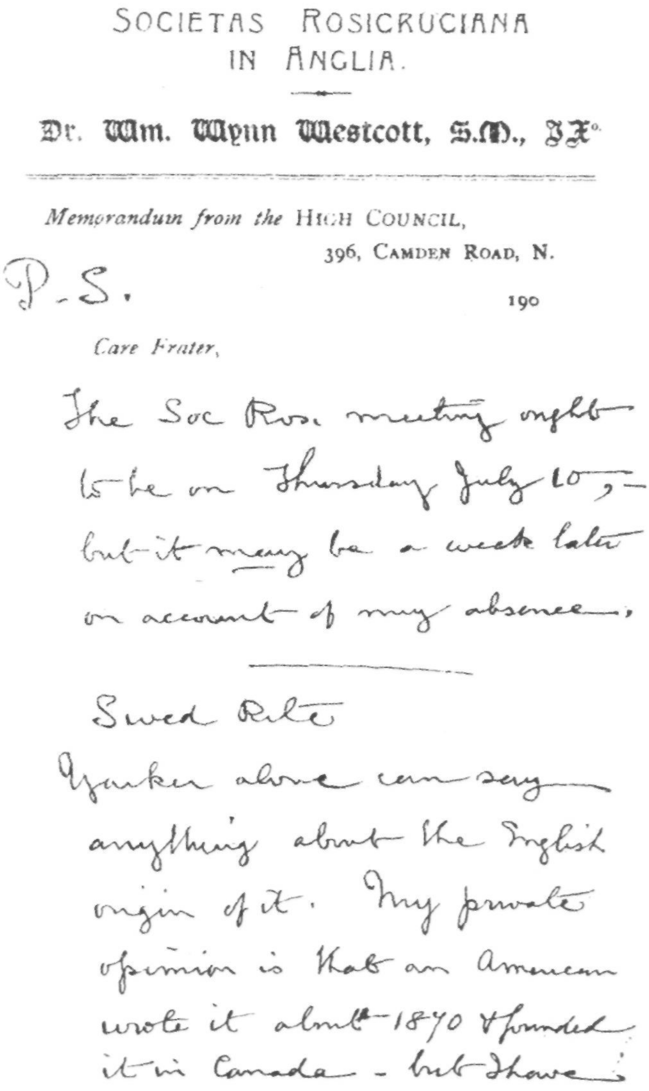
oriflammes duly received — best thanks.
I sent 12 new Swed Seals, — *not*
put on. in case you found —
any fault with them —

Engel also says I must
consider myself, as an "Illuminato",
under the Dresden Head centre.

---

as to the Swede origin. I told you
I liked the Rituals & took office, as
it was offered, but I was not
behind the scenes when it was
introduced, & know no more than
I first told you, — when I said it was
never popular here, & I recommended
the Soc. Ros. instead of it.

Circumstances will not let me go to
Germany later as I hoped, & I have to
go, instead, to Geneva, next week.
Sorry to disappoint you,
all good wishes.
W.W.W.



SOCIETAS ROSICRUCIANA
IN ANGLIA.

Dr. Wm. Wynn Westcott, S.M., IX°.

Memorandum from the HIGH COUNCIL,
396, CAMDEN ROAD, N.

P.S.

190

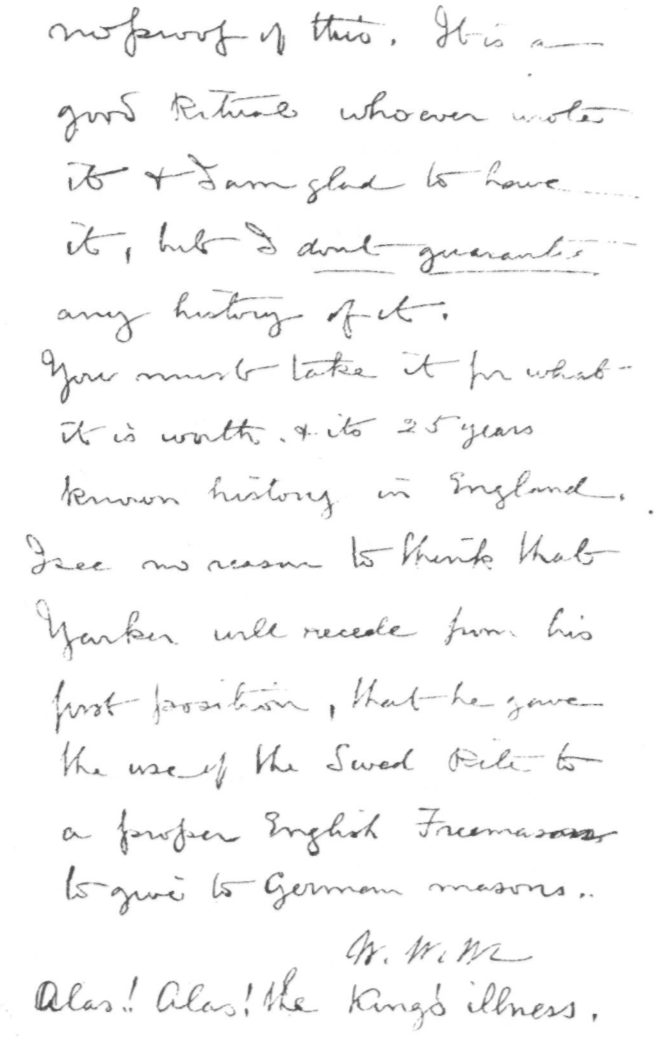
Care Frater,

The Soc Ros. meeting ought to be on Thursday July 10, — but it may be a week later on account of my absence.

Swed Rite

Yarker alone can say anything about the English origin of it. My private opinion is that an American wrote it abt 1870 & founded it in Canada - but I have

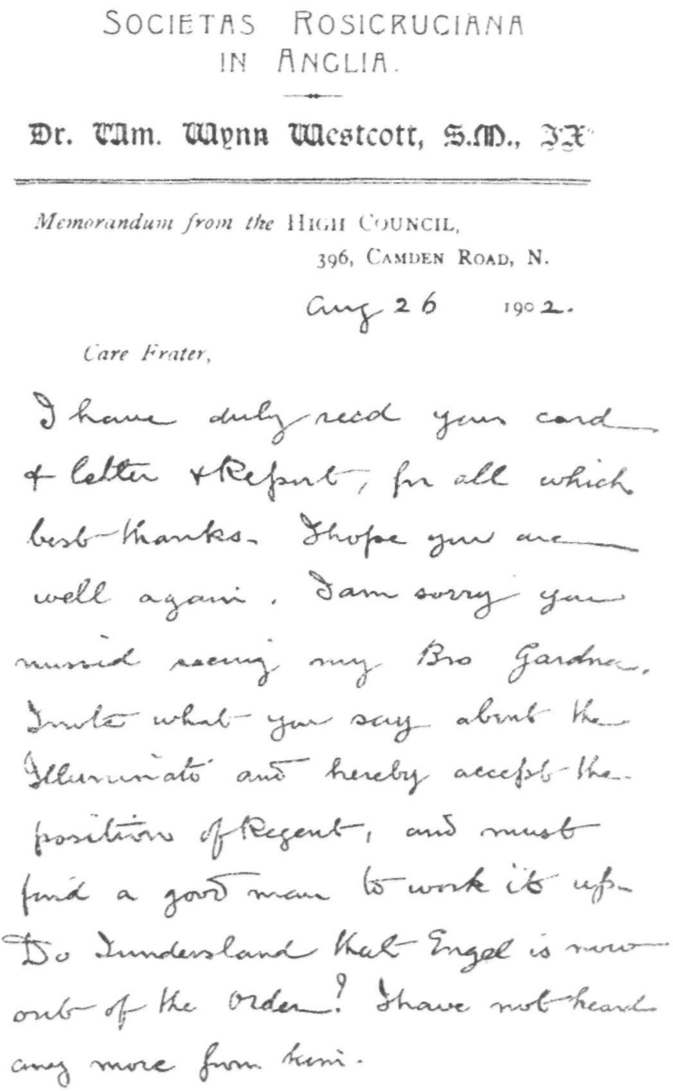
2C



no proof of this. It is a
good Ritual whoever wrote
it & I am glad to have
it, but I dont guarantee
any history of it.
You must take it for what
it is worth. & its 25 years
known history in England.
I see no reason to think that
Yarker will recede from his
first position, that he gave
the use of the Swed Rite to
a proper English Freemason
to give to German masons..

W. W. W.

Alas! Alas! the King's illness.



SOCIETAS ROSICRUCIANA
IN ANGLIA.

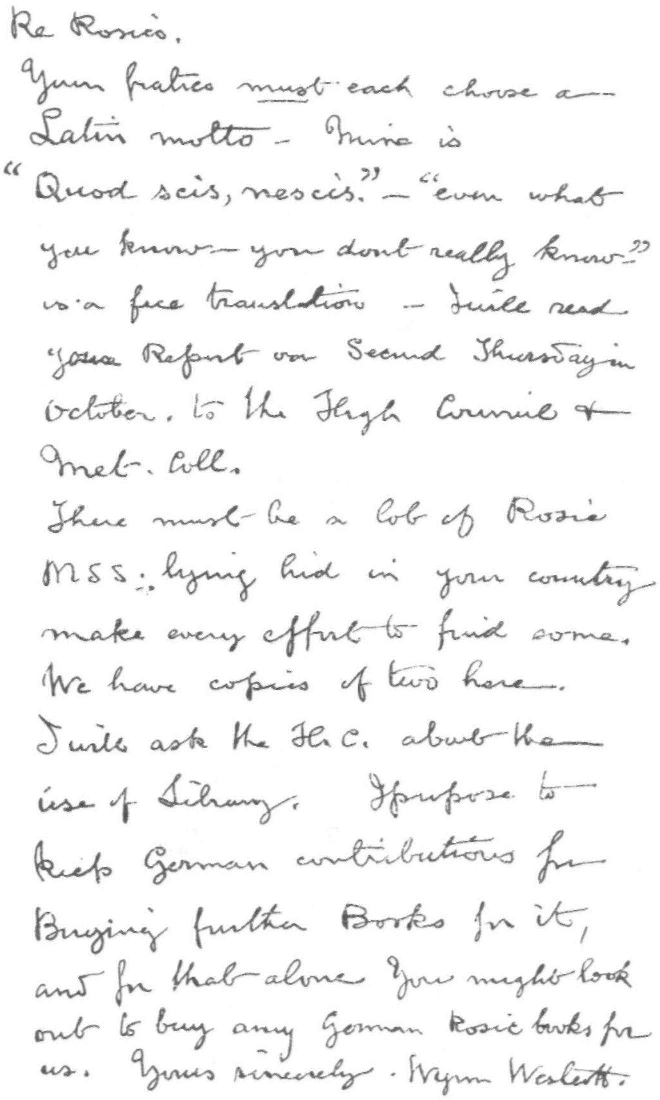
Dr. Wm. Wynn Westcott, S.M., IX°

Memorandum from the HIGH COUNCIL,
396, CAMDEN ROAD, N.

Aug 26 1902.

Care Frater,

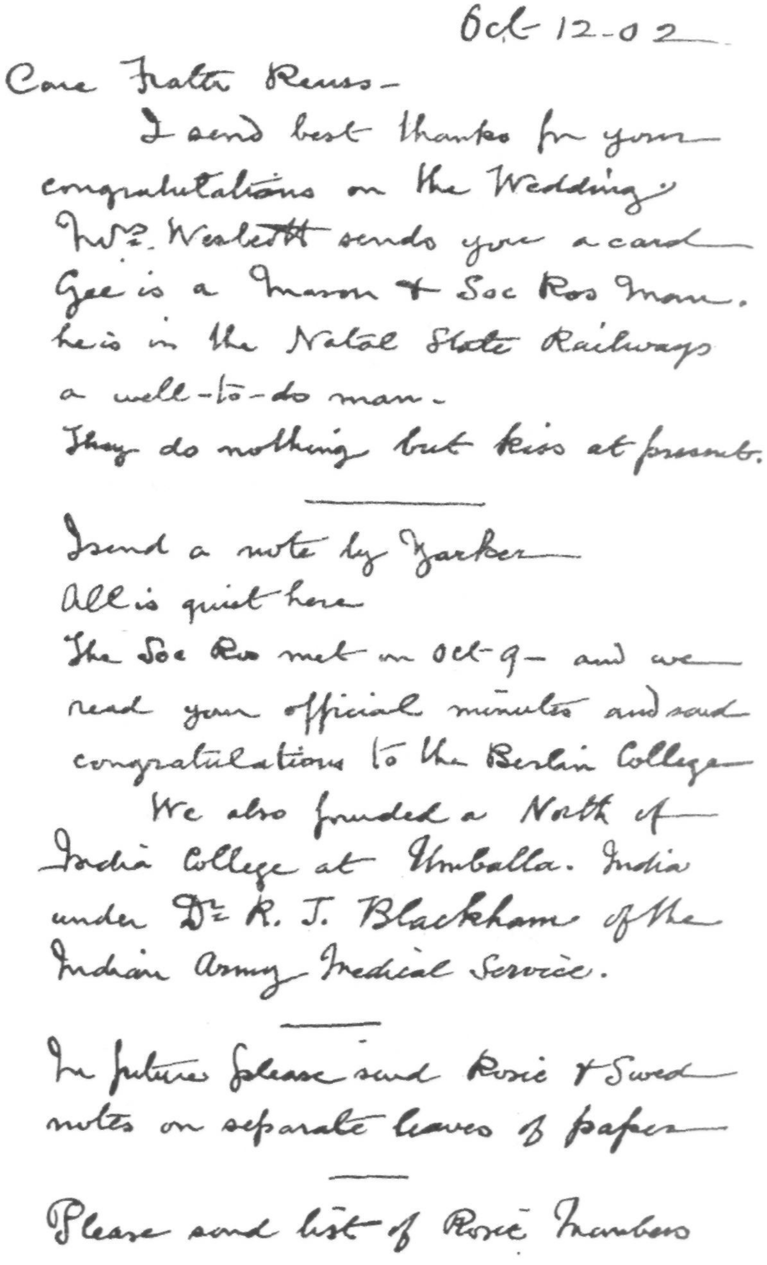
I have duly recd your card & letter & Report, for all which best thanks. I hope you are well again. I am sorry you missed seeing my Bro Gardner. I note what you say about the Illuminati and hereby accept the position of Regent, and must find a good man to work it up. Do I understand that Engel is now out of the Order? I have not heard any more from him.



Re Rosics.

Your fratres must each choose a Latin motto - Mine is "Quod scis, nescis." - "even what you know - you dont really know" is a free translation - I will read your Report on Second Thursday in October. to the High Council & Met. Coll.

There must be a lot of Rosic MSS. lying hid in your country make every effort to find some. We have copies of two here. I will ask the H.C. about the use of Library. I purpose to keep German contributions for buying further Books for it, and for that alone. You might look out to buy any German Rosic books for us. Yours sincerely. Wynn Westcott.



Oct 12-02

Care Frater Reuss-

I send best thanks for your congratulations on the Wedding:
Mrs. Westcott sends you a card
Gee is a Mason & Soc Ros man.
he is in the Natal State Railways
a well-to-do man-
They do nothing but kiss at present.

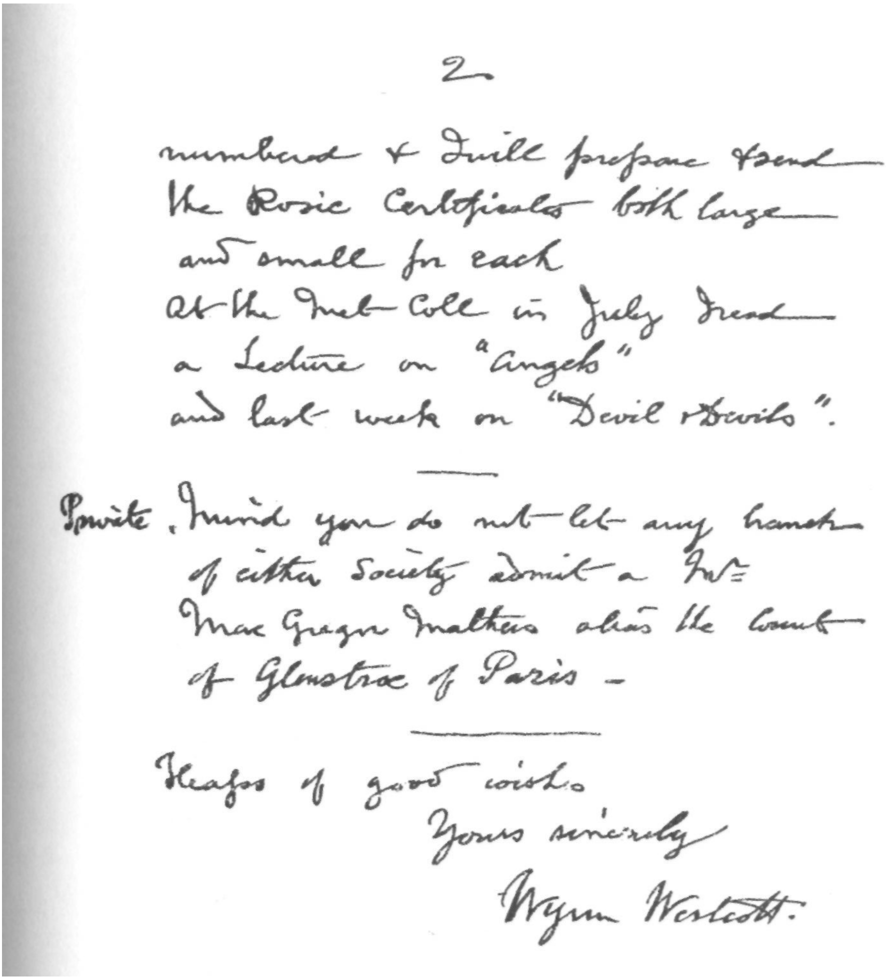
I send a note by Yarker
All is quiet here
The Soc Ros met on Oct 9- and we read your official minutes and sent congratulations to the Berlin College

We also founded a North of India College at Umballa. India under Dr R. J. Blackham of the Indian Army Medical Service.

In future please send Rosic & Swed notes on separate leaves of paper

---

Please send list of Rosic Members

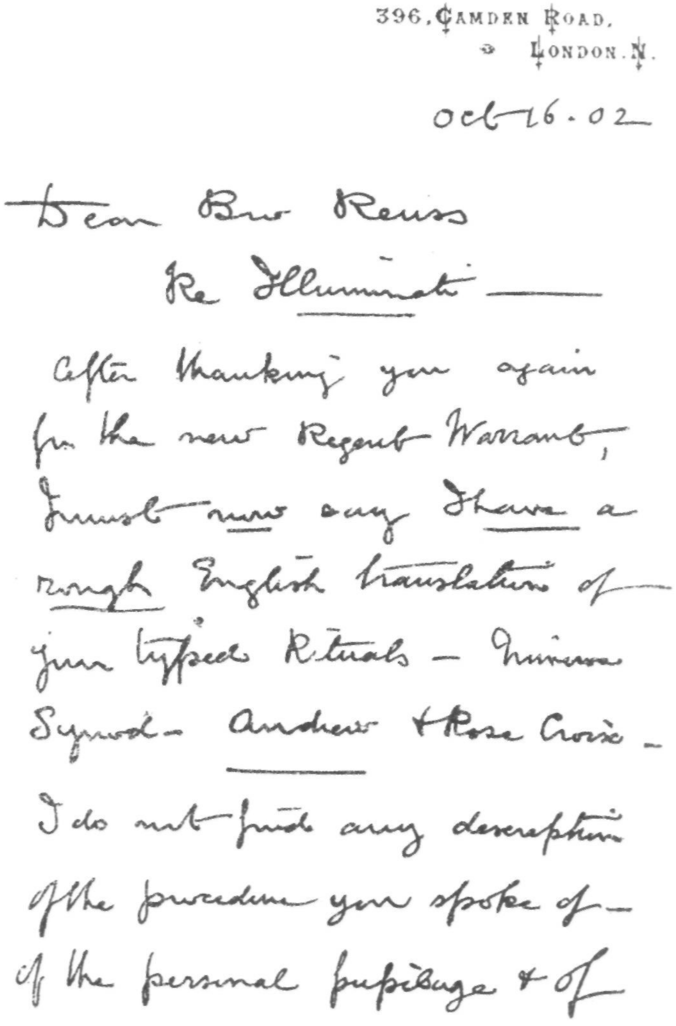


2

numbered & I will prepare & send
the Rosic Certificates both large
and small for each
At the Met Coll in July I read
a Lecture on "Angels"
and last week on "Devil & Devils".

Private. Mind you do not let any branch
of either Society admit a Mr
MacGregor Mathers alias the Count
of Glenstrae of Paris –

Heaps of good wishes
Yours sincerely
Wynn Westcott.



396, Camden Road,
London. N.

Oct 16. 02

Dear Bro Reuss

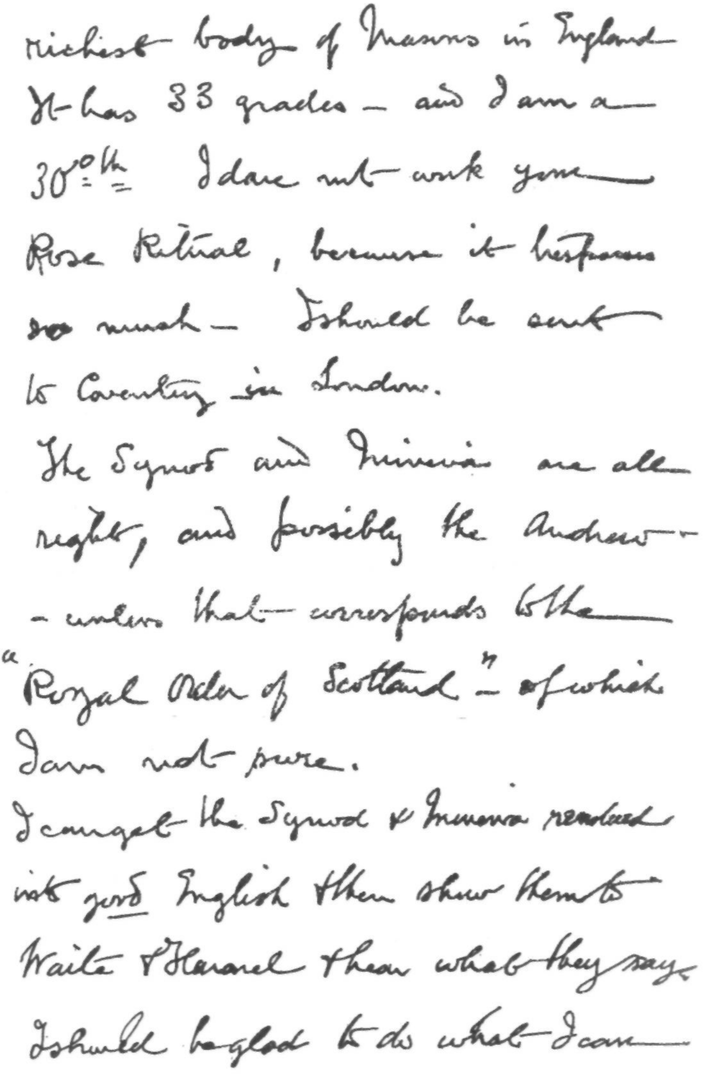
Re Illuminati ——

After thanking you again for the new Regent Warrant, I must now say I have a rough English translation of your typed Rituals – Minerva Synod – Andrew & Rose Croix –

I do not find any description of the procedure you spoke of – of the personal pupilage & of

Question and answer system.
before admission to Minerva —

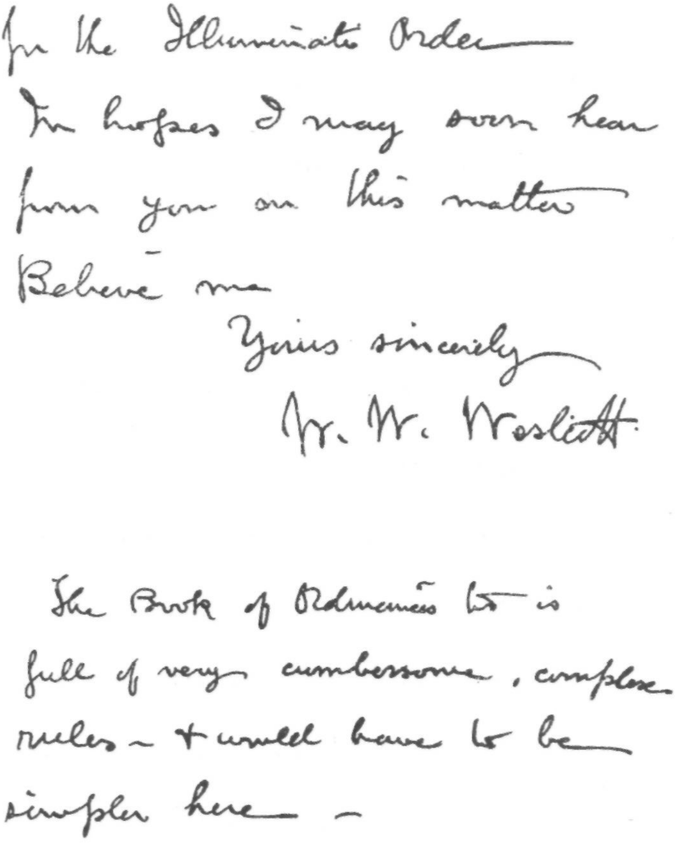
The Illuminati system as a whole
may suit your country —
but I could not work
it here — as a whole, as it
stands — Chiefly because of
the Rose degree — it does not
touch my Rosic Ritual — but
large parts of it are nearly
word for word with the 18th grade
of the Ancient and Accepted
Rite — called "Prince of Rose Croix" —
This is the most aristocratic and



richest body of Masons in England
It has 33 grades – and I am a
30th I dare not work your
Rose Ritual, because it trespasses
so much – I should be sent
to Coventry in London.

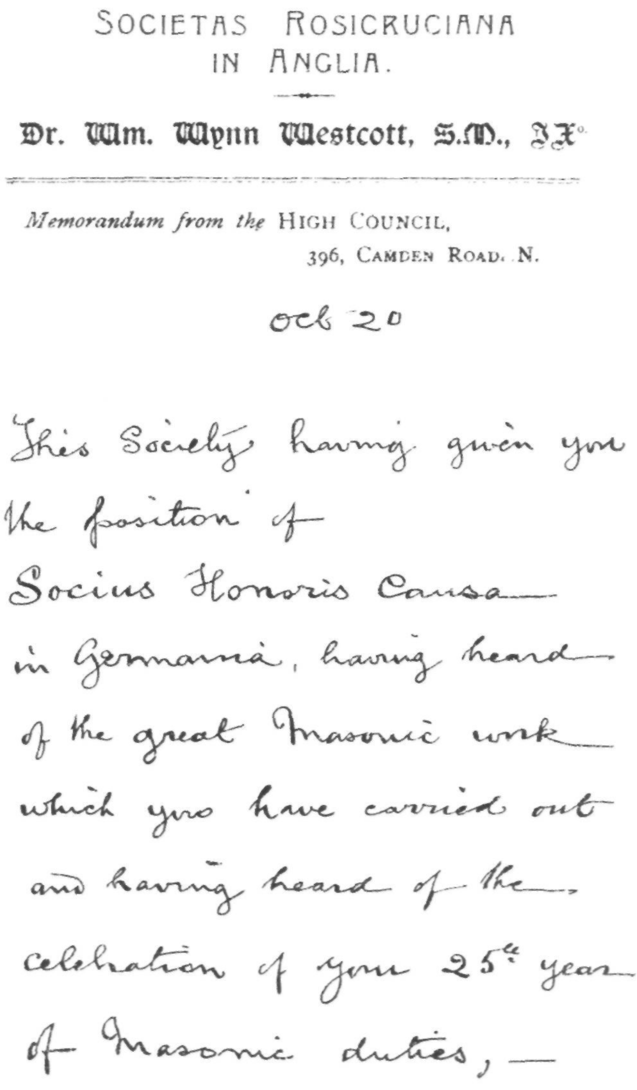
The Synod and Minerva are all
right, and possibly the Andrew –
– unless that corresponds to the
"Royal Order of Scotland" – of which
I am not sure.

I can get the Synod & Minerva rendered
into good English & then show them to
Waite & Harand & hear what they say.
I should be glad to do what I can



for the Illuminati Order —
In hopes I may soon hear
from you on this matter
Believe me
Yours sincerely
W. W. Westcott.

The Book of Ordinances too is
full of very cumbersome, complex
rules — & would have to be
simpler here —



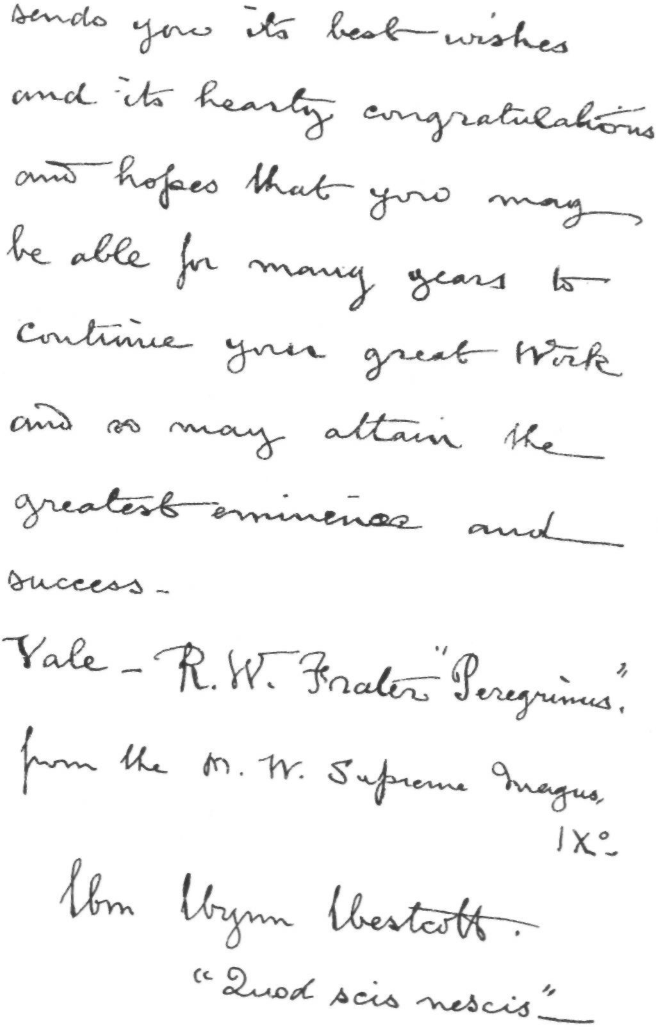
SOCIETAS ROSICRUCIANA
IN ANGLIA.

Dr. Wm. Wynn Westcott, S.M., IX°

Memorandum from the HIGH COUNCIL,
396, CAMDEN ROAD. N.

oct 20

This Society having given you
the position of
Socius Honoris Causa
in Germaniâ, having heard
of the great Masonic work
which you have carried out
and having heard of the
celebration of your 25th year
of Masonic duties, —

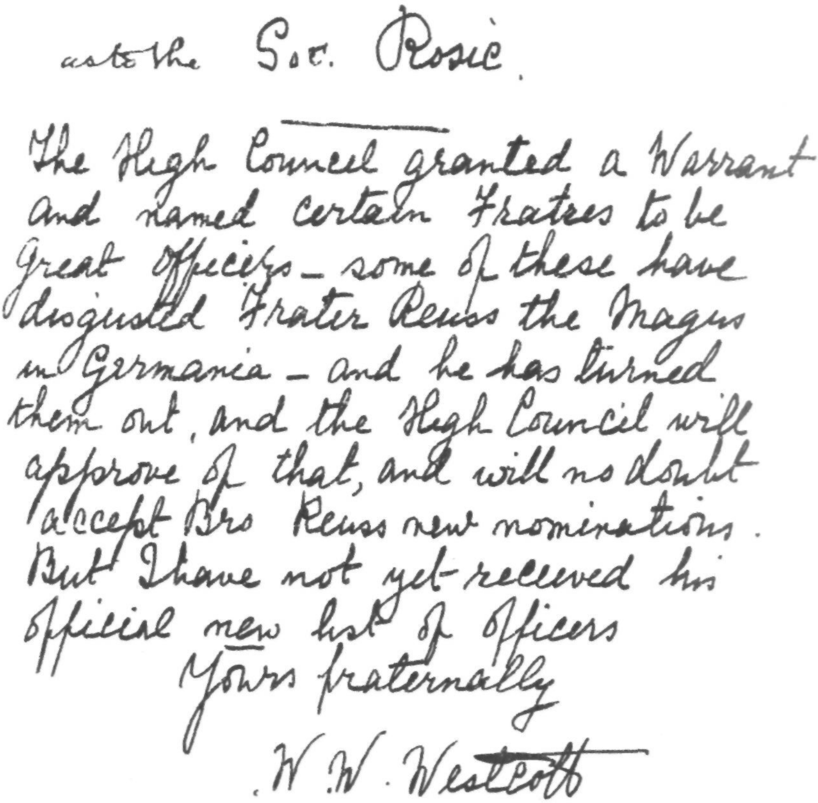


sends you its best wishes
and its hearty congratulations
and hopes that you may
be able for many years to
continue your great Work
and so may attain the
greatest eminence and
success.—

Vale — R.W. Frater "Peregrinus".
from the M. W. Supreme Magus,
IX°.

Wm Wynn Westcott.
"Quod scis nescis"—

4. This note is interpolated as showing the link between the Soc. Rosicruciana in Anglia and German Illuminism. It is not clear as to whom it is addressed. See page 296. Unfortunately the condition of the negatives taken of the Patents which it was intended to reproduce has not permitted the reproduction of more than one, which follows. (See No. 10).



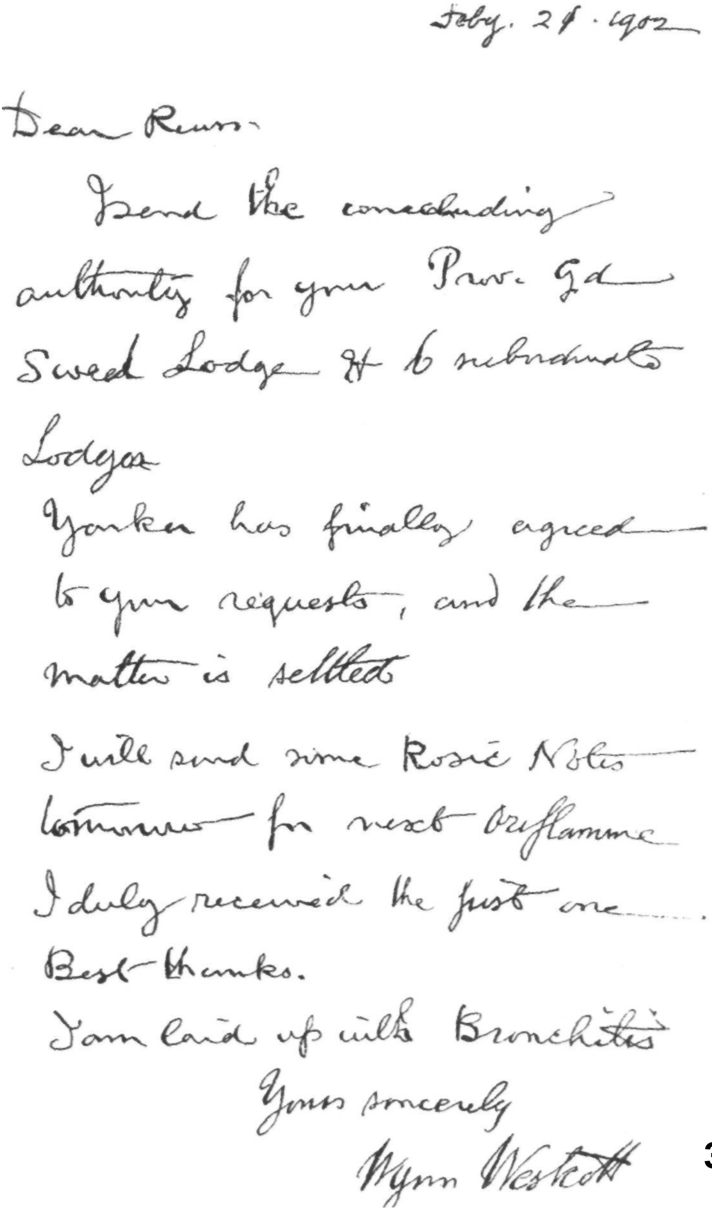
as to the Soc. Rosic.

The High Council granted a Warrant and named certain Fratres to be Great Officers – some of these have disgusted Frater Reuss the Magus in Germania – and he has turned them out, and the High Council will approve of that, and will no doubt accept Bro Reuss new nominations. But I have not yet received his official *new* list of Officers

Yours fraternally

W. W. Westcott

5. RITE OF SWEDENBORG. Letter from Dr. Wynn Westcott to Theodor Reuss enclosing authority signed by John Yarker and himself for the establishment of Provincial Grand Swedenborg Lodge and six subordinate Lodges in Germany, together with list of Approved Officers for 1902.



Feby. 24. 1902

Dear Reuss

I send the concluding
authority for your Prov. Gd
Swed Lodge & 6 subordinate
Lodges

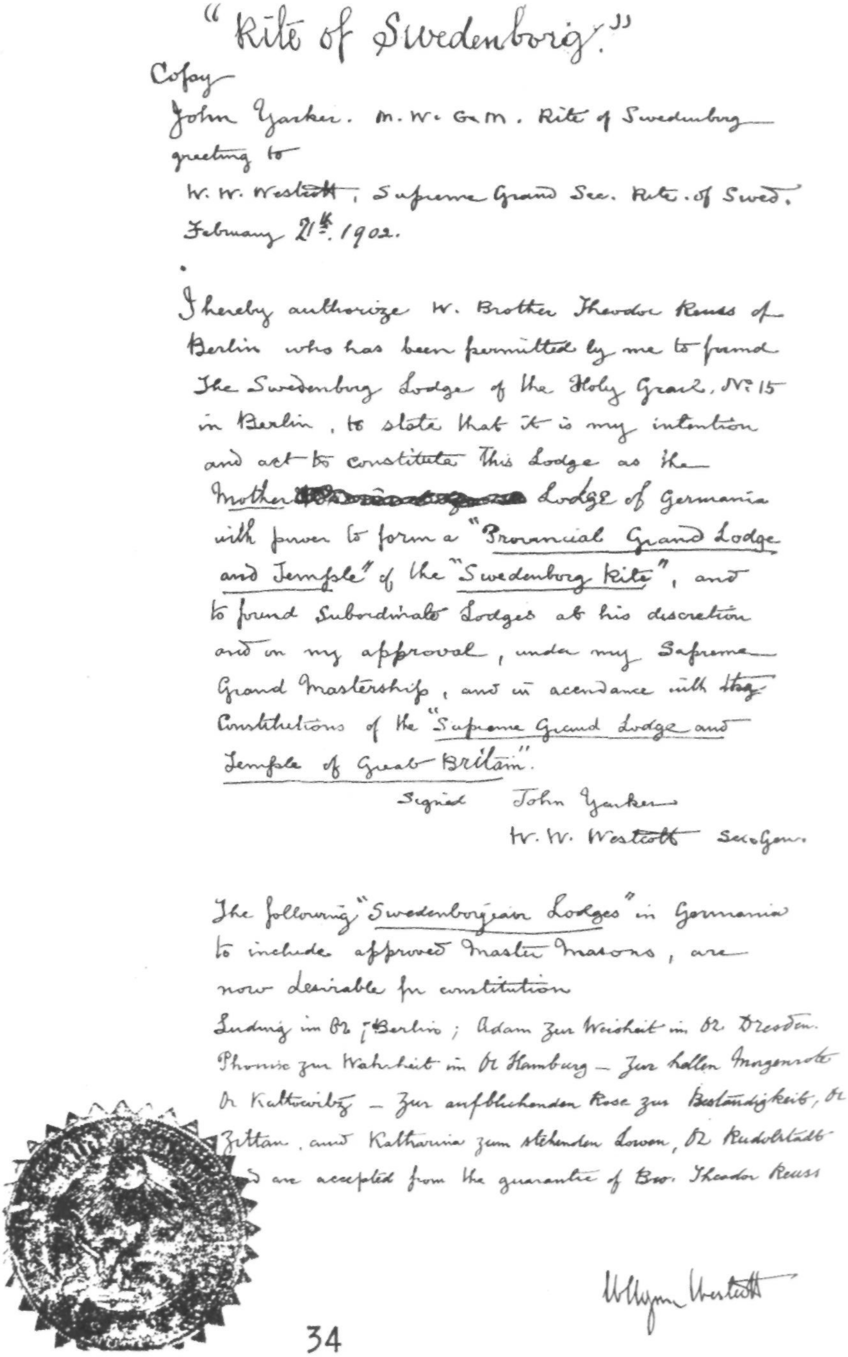
Yarker has finally agreed
to your requests, and the
matter is settled

I will send some Rosic Notes
tomorrow for next Oriflamme

I duly received the first one.
Best thanks.

I am laid up with Bronchitis

Yours sincerely
Wynn Westcott



"Rite of Swedenborg."

Copy
John Yarker. M. W. G. M. Rite of Swedenborg
greeting to
~~W. W. Westcott~~, Supreme Grand Sec. Rite. of Swed.
February 21st. 1902.

I hereby authorize W. Brother Theodor Reuss of Berlin who has been permitted by me to found The Swedenborg Lodge of the Holy Grail, No. 15 in Berlin, to state that it is my intention and act to constitute this Lodge as the Mother [illegible] Lodge of Germania with power to form a "Provincial Grand Lodge and Temple" of the "Swedenborg Rite", and to found Subordinate Lodges at his discretion and on my approval, under my Supreme Grand Mastership, and in acendance with the Constitutions of the "Supreme Grand Lodge and Temple of Great Britain".

Signed John Yarker
~~W. W. Westcott~~ Sec. Gen.

The following "Swedenborgian Lodges" in Germania to include approved Master Masons, are now desirable for constitution
Ludwig im Or. Berlin; Adam zur Weisheit im Or. Dresden. Phonix zur Wahrheit im Or Hamburg – Zur hellen Morgenrote Or Kattowitz – Zur aufbluhenden Rose zur Bestandigkeit, Or Zittau, and Katharina zum stehenden Lowen, Or Rudolstadt d are accepted from the guarantie of Bro. Theodor Reuss

W Wynn Westcott

Approved Officers for 1902.
of the
Provincial Grand Lodge and Temple
of the Swedenborg Rite
of
Germania.

R. W. Bro Theodor Reuss as Prov. Grand Master
" Leopold Engel " " Grand Senior Warden Woerner
" Erich Walter " " " Junior " Figner
" August Weinholtz " " Deputy Grand Master.
" Max Heilbronner " Grand Treasurer
" Siegmund Miller " " Secretary Rahn
" Franz Held " " Marshall

" Max Suppas
" Dr R. Gross } as Prov. Grand Stewards. Walter Gross
Georg Gierloff .. Guardian.

Note. The Prov. Grand Sec. shall obtain from the Sec. of each Swed. Lodge, a list of the Officers of each Lodge, and shall send these lists to the Supreme Grand Secretary, W. W. Westcott once each year
to 396 Camden Road
London. N.

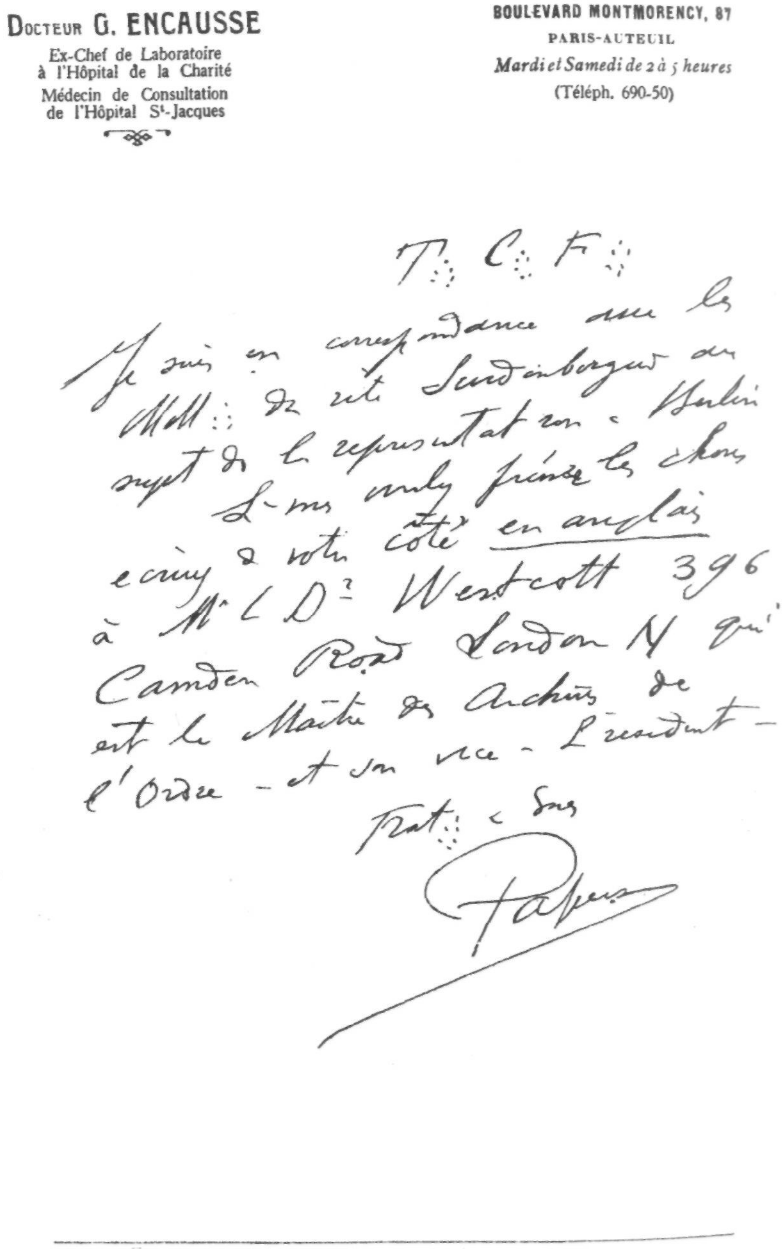
These lists will be printed in London & copies sent to you in Berlin.

Receive herewith Balustre for last year

Copies of all printed documents issued by the Germania Swedenborg Lodges to be sent to Dr Westcott as issued.

Wm Wynn Westcott

6. Letter from " Papus " (Dr. G. Encausse) to Theodor Reuss on the subject of the Swedenborgian Rite and its representation in Berlin. "Papus" requests him to communicate with Dr. "Wynn Westcott in London.



DOCTEUR G. ENCAUSSE
Ex-Chef de Laboratoire
à l'Hôpital de la Charité
Médecin de Consultation
de l'Hôpital St-Jacques

BOULEVARD MONTMORENCY, 87
PARIS-AUTEUIL
Mardi et Samedi de 2 à 5 heures
(Téléph. 690-50)

T∴ C∴ F∴

Je suis en correspondance avec les
MM∴ du rite Swedenborgien au
sujet de la représentation à Berlin
Si vous voulez préciser les choses
écrivez de votre côté en anglais
à Mr le Dr Westcott 396
Camden Road London N qui
est le Maître des Archives de
l'Ordre – et son vice-Président –

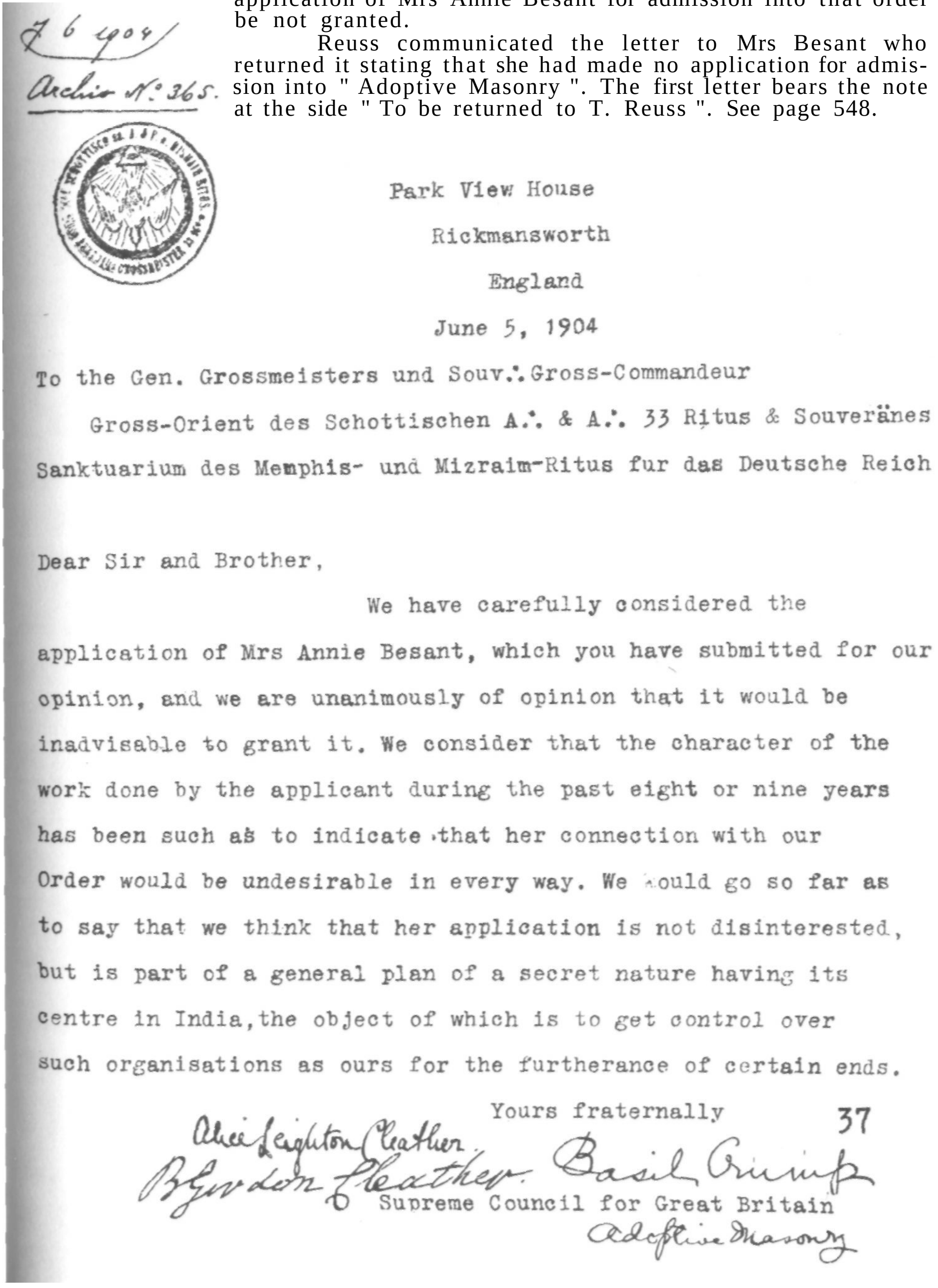
Frat∴ à vous

Papus

CLINIQUE — Lundi, Vendredi de 3 à 4 beures, 16, rue Rodier

7. The first letter is addressed by the Supreme Council for Great Britain of A. & P. and Mizraim Rites to their correspondent — Theodor Reuss — in Berlin, advising that the application of Mrs Annie Besant for admission into that order be not granted.

Reuss communicated the letter to Mrs Besant who returned it stating that she had made no application for admission into " Adoptive Masonry ". The first letter bears the note at the side " To be returned to T. Reuss ". See page 548.



7 6 1904

Archiv N° 365.

Park View House

Rickmansworth

England

June 5, 1904

To the Gen. Grossmeisters und Souv.˙. Gross-Commandeur

Gross-Orient des Schottischen A.˙. & A.˙. 33 Ritus & Souveränes Sanktuarium des Memphis- und Mizraim-Ritus fur das Deutsche Reich

Dear Sir and Brother,

We have carefully considered the application of Mrs Annie Besant, which you have submitted for our opinion, and we are unanimously of opinion that it would be inadvisable to grant it. We consider that the character of the work done by the applicant during the past eight or nine years has been such as to indicate that her connection with our Order would be undesirable in every way. We would go so far as to say that we think that her application is not disinterested, but is part of a general plan of a secret nature having its centre in India, the object of which is to get control over such organisations as ours for the furtherance of certain ends.

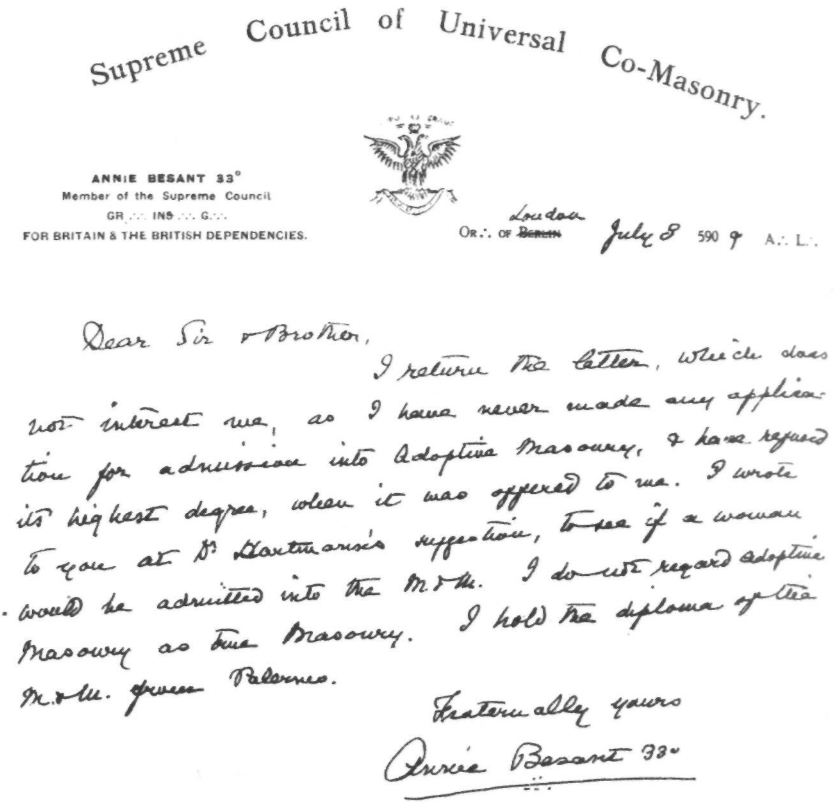
Yours fraternally

Alice Leighton Cleather

B Gordon Cleather. Basil Crump

Supreme Council for Great Britain

Adoptive Masonry



Supreme Council of Universal Co-Masonry.

ANNIE BESANT 33°
Member of the Supreme Council
GR.·. INS.·. G.·.
FOR BRITAIN & THE BRITISH DEPENDENCIES.

Or.·. of ~~Berlin~~ London July 8 5909 A.·. L.·.

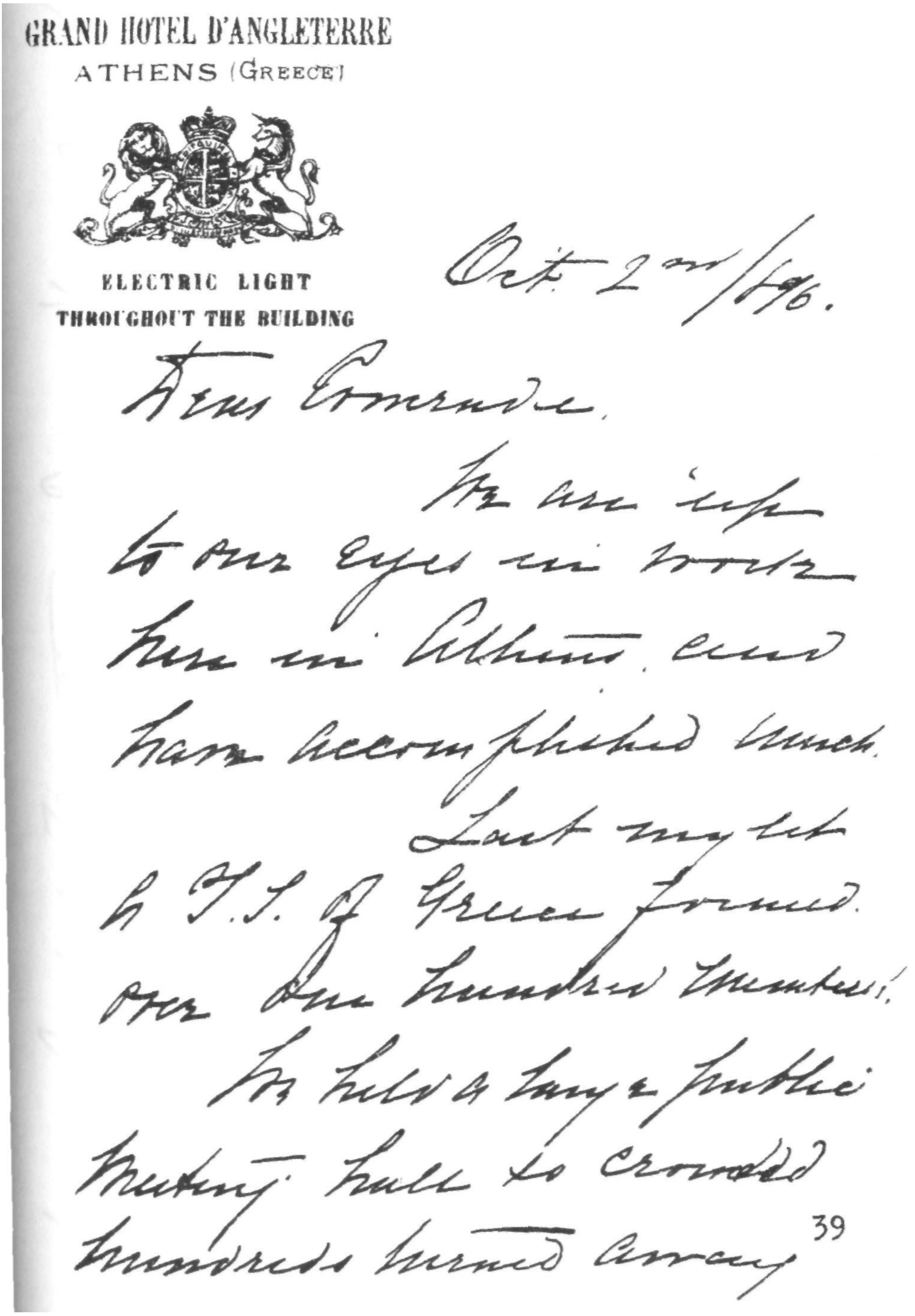
Dear Sir & Brother,

I return the letter, which does not interest me, as I have never made any application for admission into Adoptive Masonry, & have refused its highest degree, when it was offered to me. I wrote to you at Dr Hartmann's suggestion, to see if a woman would be admitted into the M. & M. I do not regard Adoptive Masonry as true Masonry. I hold the diploma of the M. & M. from Palermo.

Fraternally yours

Annie Besant 33°

8. One of several letters from Mrs Katherine A. Tingley to " Comrade " Th. Reuss, dated from Athens, Oct. 2, 1896. See page 582.



GRAND HOTEL D'ANGLETERRE
ATHENS (GREECE)

ELECTRIC LIGHT
THROUGHOUT THE BUILDING

Oct. 2nd/1896.

Dear Comrade.

We are up to our eyes in work here in Athens, and have accomplished much.

Last night the T.S. of Greece formed. Over One hundred Members!

We held a large public meeting. Hall so crowded hundreds turned away

The Press gives most glowing accounts of our work.

Citizens here have offered us a large house. and have begged us to meet the public once more This we shall do tomorrow night

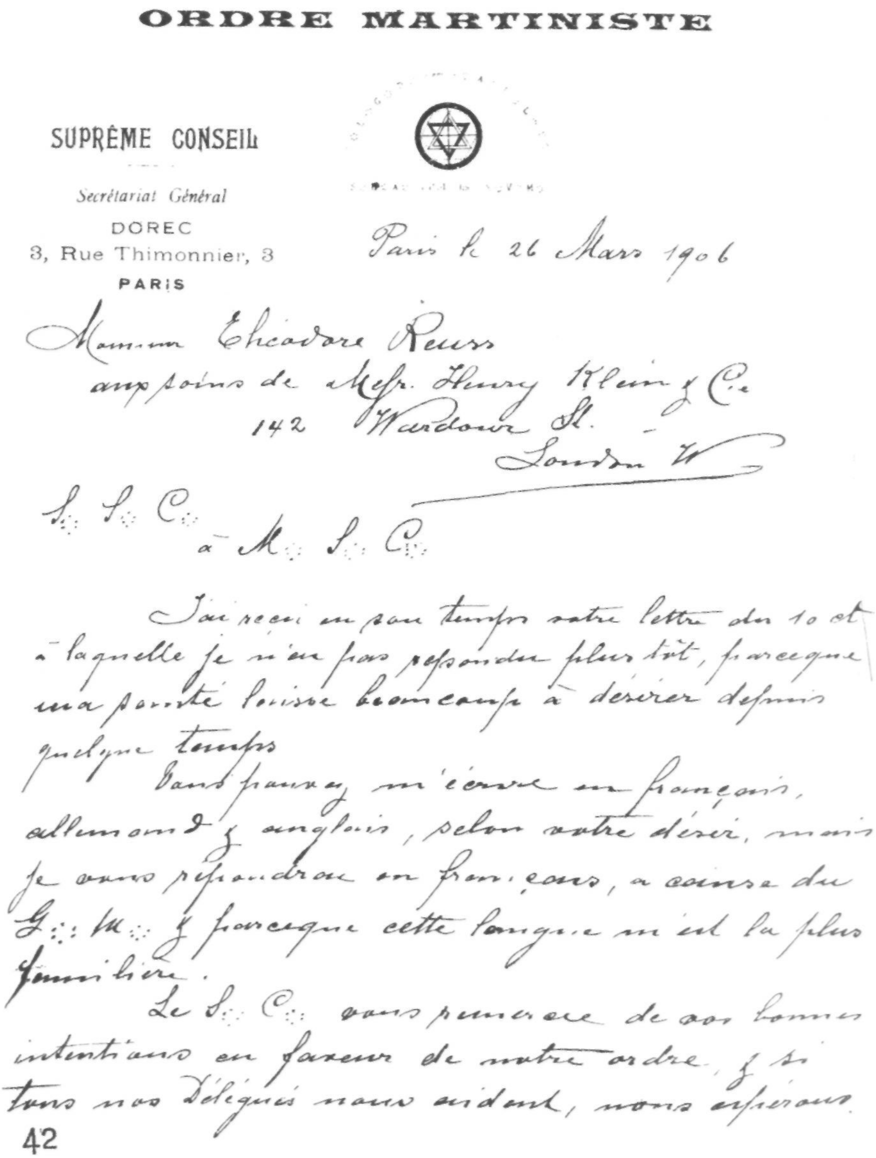
President and Secretary of new Society. are the most influential men in Greece. One ~~is~~ is a friend of the King and Queen. The other quite a philosopher who speaks English fluently.

At Corfu I met Mr. Alexander Vice Consul he is one of the S—— o. and was delighted to see me. Wish you would write him. Am anxious to hear from you. Trust all goes well with thee and thine.

Kindest greetings to all members

Ever yours
Katherine A. Tingley.

9. Letter from "Dorec" to Theodor Reuss. See page 354. "Dorec" was the Secretary of the Martinist Order which was headed by "Papus" (Dr. G. Encausse). On the identity of "Dorec", it will be noted that the photo shows some partly obliterated wording which appears to be (Hen)ri Staub, (Do)rec (esoterique).



ORDRE MARTINISTE

SUPRÊME CONSEIL

Secrétariat Général
DOREC
3, Rue Thimonnier, 3
PARIS

Paris le 26 Mars 1906

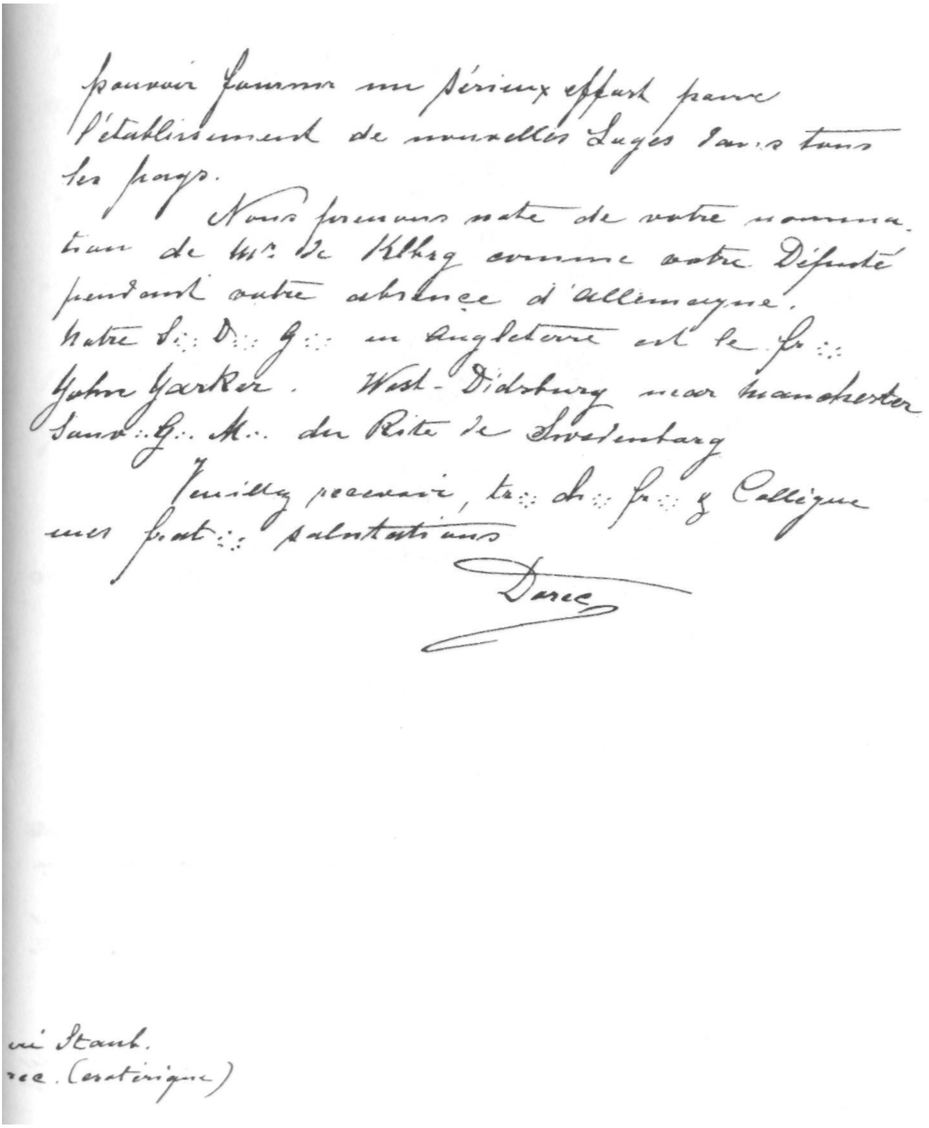
Monsieur Théodore Reuss
aux soins de Messrs. Henry Klein & Co
142 Wardour St.
London W

S∴ S∴ C∴
à M∴ S∴ C∴

J'ai reçu en son temps votre lettre du 10 ct à laquelle je n'ai pas répondu plus tôt, parceque ma santé laisse beaucoup à désirer depuis quelque temps

Vous pouvez m'écrire en français, allemand & anglais, selon votre désir, mais je vous répondrai en français, à cause du G∴ M∴ & parceque cette langue m'est la plus familière.

Le S∴ C∴ vous remercie de vos bonnes intentions en faveur de notre ordre, & si tous nos Délégués nous aident, nous espérons



pouvoir donner un sérieux effort pour l'établissement de nouvelles Loges dans tous les pays.

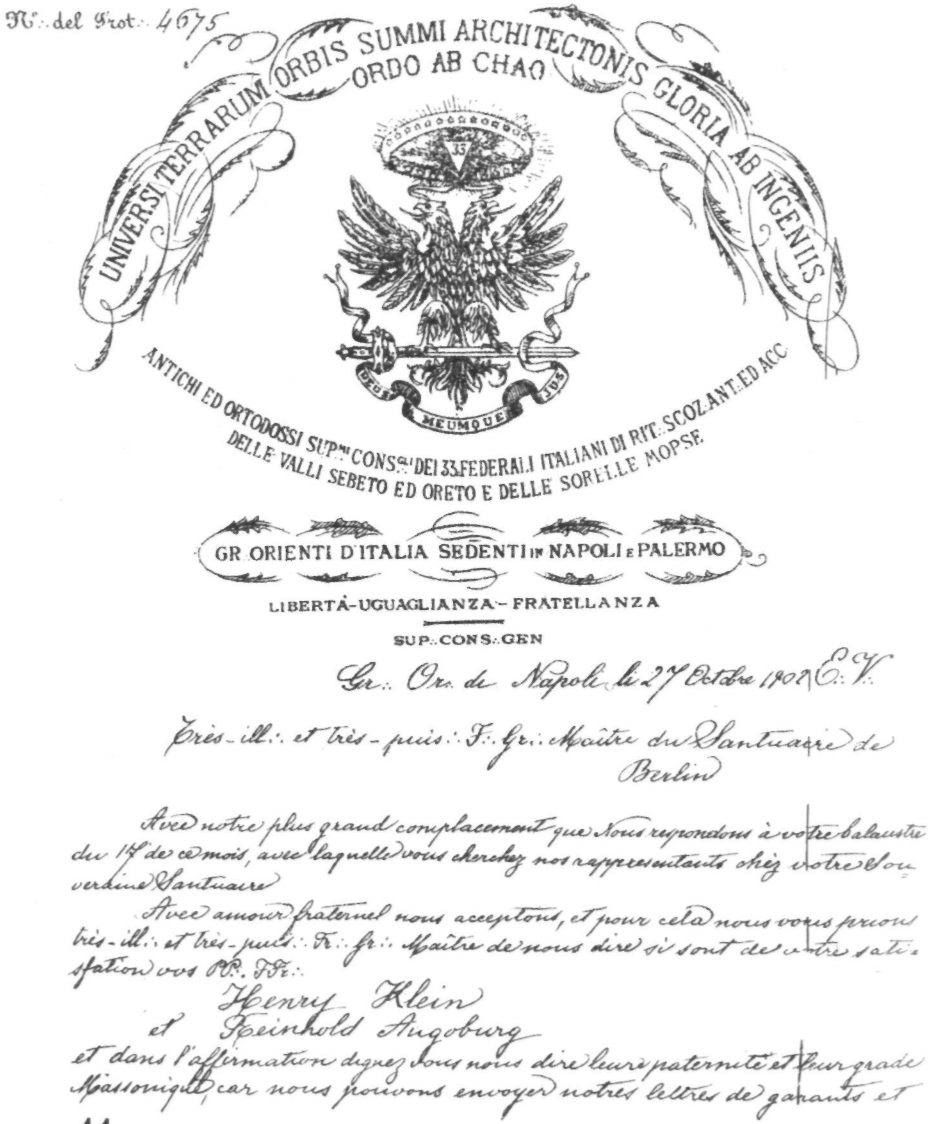
Nous prenons note de votre nomination de Mr. de Klbg comme votre Député pendant votre absence d'Allemagne.
Notre S∴ D∴ G∴ en Angleterre est le fr∴ John Yarker. West-Didsbury near Manchester Souv∴ G∴ M∴ du Rite de Swedenborg

Veuillez recevoir, tr∴ ch∴ fr∴ & Collègue mes frat∴ salutations

Darec

ui Staub.
ree. (ésotérique)

10. THE ORDER OF THE MOPSE. Letter from the Grand Orient of Italy at Naples referred to on pages 366-7.



N∴ del Prot∴ 4675

UNIVERSI TERRARUM ORBIS SUMMI ARCHITECTONIS GLORIA AB INGENIIS

ORDO AB CHAO

DEUS MEUMQUE JUS

ANTICHI ED ORTODOSSI SUP.mi CONS.gli DEI 33.FEDERALI ITALIANI DI RIT∴ SCOZ∴ ANT∴ ED ACC

DELLE VALLI SEBETO ED ORETO E DELLE SORELLE MOPSE

GR∴ ORIENTI D'ITALIA SEDENTI IN NAPOLI E PALERMO

LIBERTÁ-UGUAGLIANZA-FRATELLANZA

SUP∴ CONS∴ GEN

Gr∴ Or∴ de Napoli li 27 Octobre 1902 E∴V∴

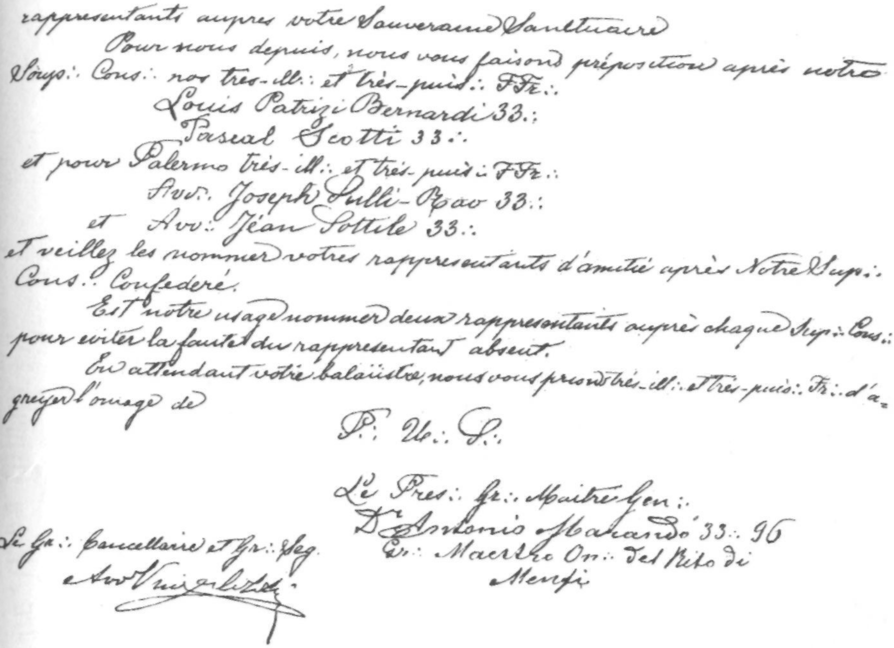
Très-ill∴ et très-puis∴ F∴ Gr∴ Maître du Santuaire de
Berlin

Avec notre plus grand complacement que Nous repondons à votre balaustre du 17 de ce mois, avec laquelle vous cherchez nos rappresentants chèz votre Souveraine Santuaire

Avec amour fraternel nous acceptons, et pour cela nous vous prions très-ill∴ et très-puis∴ Fr∴ gr∴ Maître de nous dire si sont de votre satisfation vos PP∴ FFr∴

Henry Klein
et Reinhold Augsburg

et dans l'affirmation dignez vous nous dire leurs paternité et leur grade Massonique, car nous pouvons envoyer notres lettres de garants et



rappresentants aupres votre Souveraine Sanctuaire

Pour nous depuis, nous vous faisons préposition après notre Sups.: Cons.: nos très-ill.: et très-puis.: FFr.:

Louis Patrizi Bernardi 33.:

Pascal Scotti 33.:

et pour Palermo très-ill.: et très-puis.: FFr.:

Avv.: Joseph Pulli-Rao 33.:

et Avv.: Jean Sottile 33.:

et veillez les nommer votres rappresentants d'amitié après Notre Sup.: Cons.: Confederé.

Est notre usage nommer deux rappresentants auprès chaque Sup.: Cons.: pour eviter la fautet du rappresentant absent.

En attendant votre balaüstre, nous vous prions très-ill.: et très-puis.: Fr.: d'agreyer l'omage de

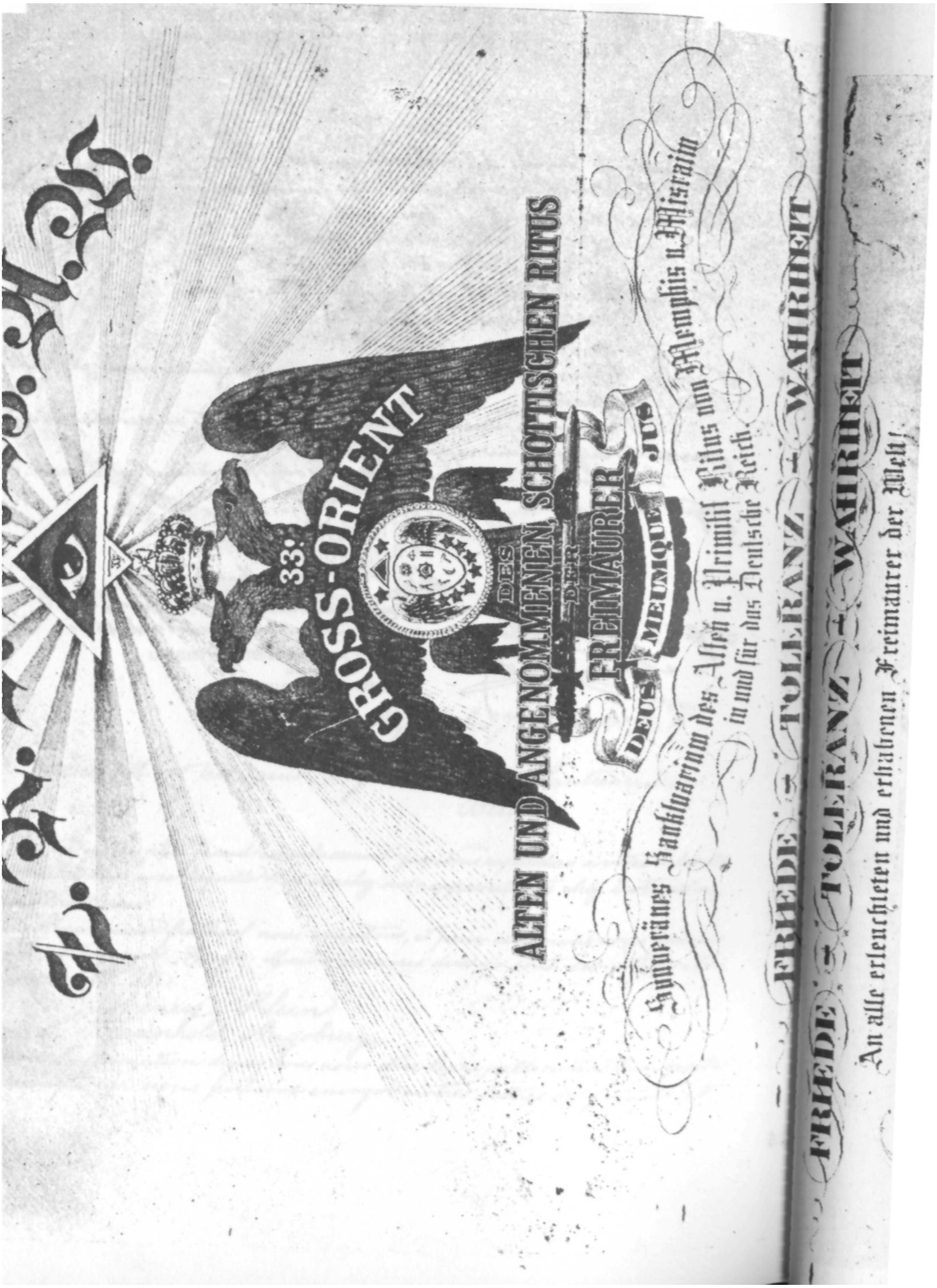
P.: U.: S.:

Le Pres.: Gr.: Maitre Gen.:
Dr Antonio Maurando 33.: 96
Gr.: Maestro On.: del Rito di Memfi

Le Gr.: Cancellaire et Gr.: Seg.
Avv. [illegible]

11. Certificate of appointment of Aleister " St " Edward Crowley as National Grand Master of the O. T. O. for Great Britain arid Ireland, signed by Theodor Reuss. See page 575.

A technical examination of the photo would appear to show that the letters O. T. O. at the top were added by hand after the original certificate had been printed.



33:

GROSS-ORIENT

DES

ALTEN UND ANGENOMMENEN SCHOTTISCHEN RITUS

DER

FREIMAURER

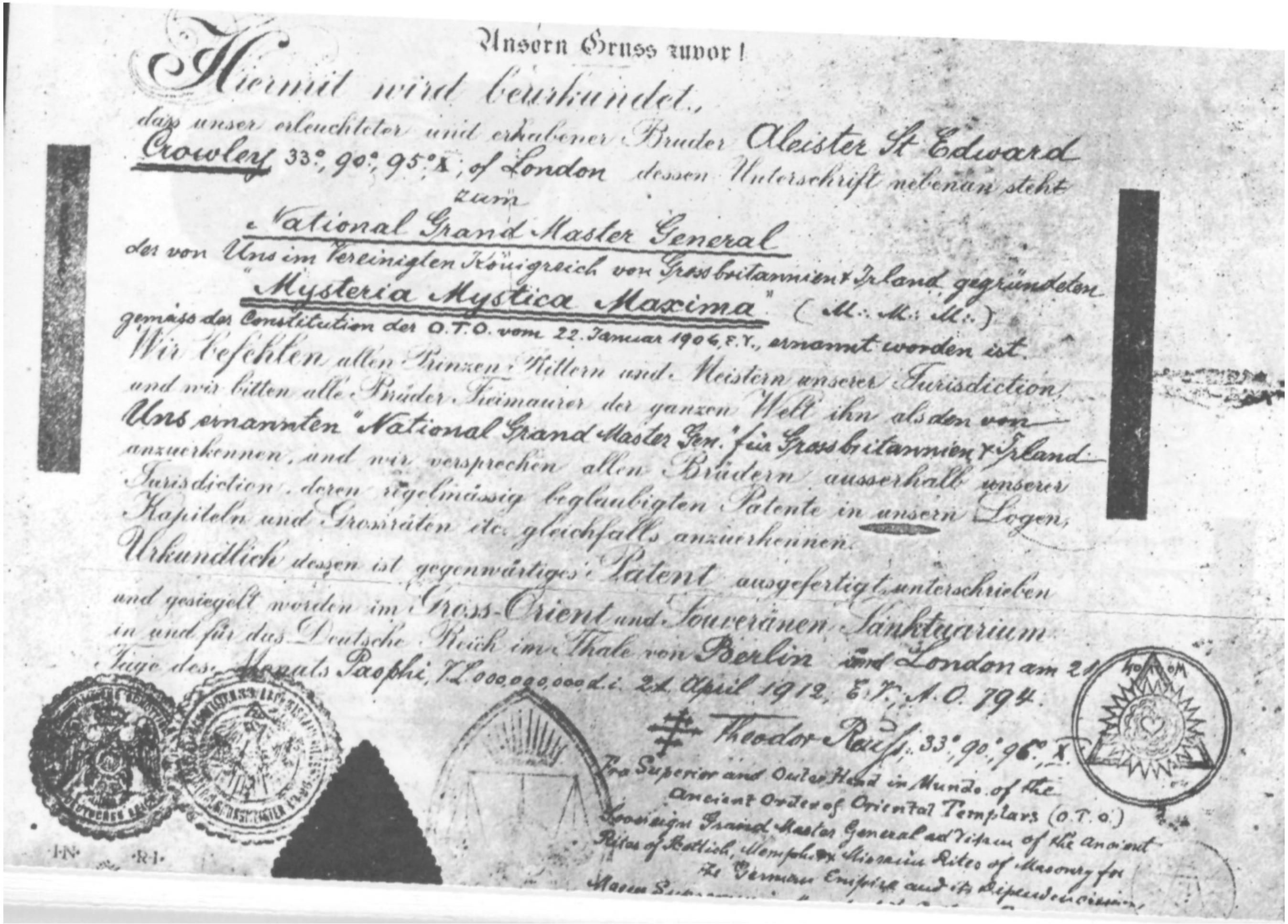
DEUS MEUMQUE JUS

Souveränes Sanktuarium des Alten u. Primitif Ritus von Memphis u. Misraim in und für das Deutsche Reich.

FRIEDE – TOLERANZ – WAHRHEIT

FRIEDE – TOLERANZ – WAHRHEIT

An alle erleuchteten und erhabenen Freimaurer der Welt!



Unsern Gruss zuvor!

Hiermit wird beurkundet,

[redacted]

dass unser erleuchteter und erhabener Bruder Aleister St Edward Crowley 33°, 90°, 95°, X; of London dessen Unterschrift nebenan steht zum

National Grand Master General

der von Uns im Vereinigten Königreich von Grossbritannien & Irland gegründeten "Mysteria Mystica Maxima" (M∴ M∴ M∴)

gemäss der Constitution der O.T.O. vom 22. Januar 1906, E.V., ernannt worden ist.

[redacted]

Wir befehlen allen Prinzen, Rittern und Meistern unserer Jurisdiction, und wir bitten alle Brüder Freimaurer der ganzen Welt ihn als den von Uns ernannten "National Grand Master Gen." für Grossbritannien & Irland anzuerkennen, und wir versprechen allen Brüdern ausserhalb unserer Jurisdiction, deren regelmässig beglaubigten Patente in unsern Logen, Kapiteln und Grossräten etc. gleichfalls anzuerkennen.

Urkundlich dessen ist gegenwärtiges Patent ausgefertigt, unterschrieben und gesiegelt worden im Gross-Orient und Souveränen Sanktuarium in und für das Deutsche Reich im Thale von Berlin und London am 21 Tage des Monats Paophi, 72.000.000.000 d.i. 21. April 1912, E.V., A.O. 794.

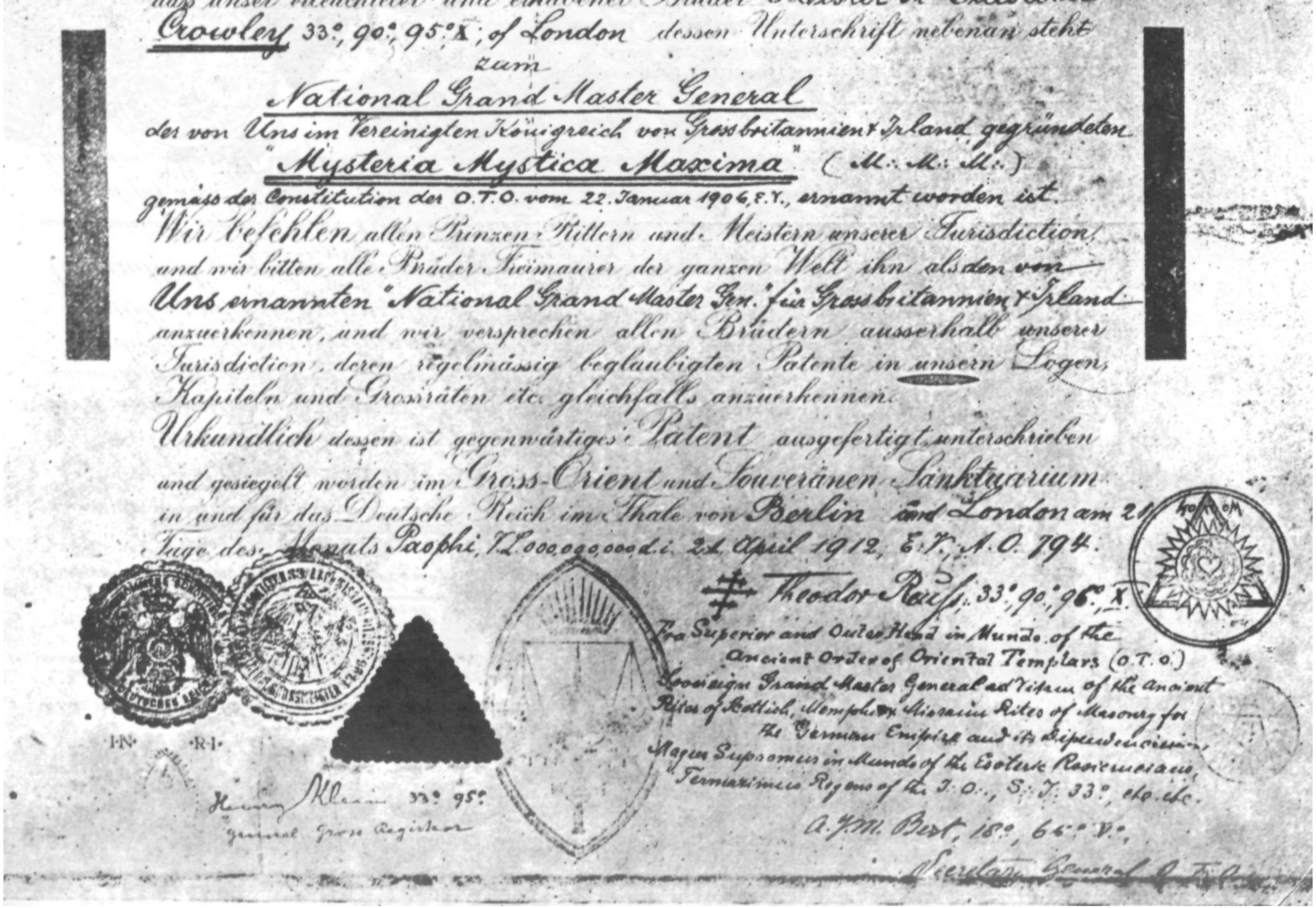
Theodor Reuss, 33°, 90°, 96°, X.

Frater Superior and Outer Head in Mundo of the Ancient Order of Oriental Templars (O.T.O.)

Sovereign Grand Master General ad Vitam of the Ancient Rites of Scottish, Memphis & Misraim Rites of Masonry for the German Empire and its Dependencies,

Mason Su

I.N. R.I.



[redacted]

Crowley 33°, 90°, 95°, X; of London dessen Unterschrift nebenan steht

zum

National Grand Master General

der von Uns im Vereinigten Königreich von Grossbritannien & Irland gegründeten

"Mysteria Mystica Maxima" (M∴ M∴ M∴)

gemäss der Constitution der O.T.O. vom 22. Januar 1906, E.V., ernannt worden ist.

Wir befehlen allen Prinzen, Rittern und Meistern unserer Jurisdiction, und wir bitten alle Brüder Freimaurer der ganzen Welt ihn als den von Uns ernannten "National Grand Master Gen." für Grossbritannien & Irland anzuerkennen, und wir versprechen allen Brüdern ausserhalb unserer Jurisdiction, deren regelmässig beglaubigten Patente in unsern Logen, Kapiteln und Grossräten etc. gleichfalls anzuerkennen.

Urkundlich dessen ist gegenwärtiges Patent ausgefertigt, unterschrieben und gesiegelt worden im Gross-Orient und Souveränen Sanktuarium in und für das Deutsche Reich im Thale von Berlin und London am 21 Tage des Monats Paophi, T.L. 000,000,000 d.i. 21. April 1912, E.V., A.O. 794.

[redacted]

Theodor Reuss, 33°, 90°, 96°, X

Fra Superior and Outer Head in Mundo of the
Ancient Order of Oriental Templars (O.T.O.)
Sovereign Grand Master General ad Vitam of the Ancient
Rites of Scottish, Memphis & Misraim Rites of Masonry for
the German Empire and its Dependencies,
Magus Supremus in Mundo of the Esoteric Rosicrucians,
Termaximus Regens of the I.O., S.I. 33°, etc. etc.

A. J. M. Best, 18°, 65°. V.,
Secretary General O.T.O.

I·N· ·R·I·

Henry Klein 33° 95°
General Grand Registrar

INDEX

In this Index, and also throughout the work, the following signs have been employed :

✡ The Seal of Solomon, indicating a Jew, Hebrew, or Israelite,
∴ indicating a Freemason, of a date subsequent to 1717,
⁙ indicating a Member of The Martinist Order.
In certain dates given in this Index, the letter r means " reigned ".

✡ Abdallah Ibn Saba (-652), 135.
∴ Abraham, Brother, 360, 361.
✡ Abu Mansur Sadakah Ibn Yussuf, 140.
Acollas, Emile, 637.
Acquaviva, Claudie (1542-1615), 319.
Adare, Lord, 475.
Addis, Sir Charles, 658.
∴ Adet, Citizen, 388.
Adowa, Battle of (1898), 251.
Agha Khan, The, 136.
Ahmadiyyah sect, 545.
Ahmed Said, 135.
Ahura Mazda, 67.
Aijiro Onishi, 641.
∴ Alamos-Gonzales, 293.
Albert, Margrave, 165.
Albigenses, 163.
Alembert. Jean Lerond d' (1717-1783), 184, 374.
✡ Alexander, Abraham (1718-1786), 193.
Alexander I, Tzar of Russia (1801-1825), 36, 198.
Alexandrinus, Thomas Theobald, 405.
Al-Hakim Blambellalu (r. 996-1021), 138.
Ali, Caliph (r. 656-661), 135, 599.
Alliance Israelite Universelle 339, 415, 486.
∴ Almeida-Moraes, 202.
Alombrados, 307.
∴ Alsop, *alias* of Orsini, '268.
Alta Vendita, 427.
∴ Alviella, Goblet d', 293.
American Civil Liberties Union 627.
∴ Ampthill, Lord, 182.
Amsterdam International, The, 587.
Anabaptists, The, 171.
Anarchists, 526.
Anaximander (610-547 B. C), 98.
Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rites, 357, 548, 575.
Ancient and Archaeological Order of Druids, 528.
Ancient and Primitive Rite-see Rite of Memphis, 443, 522.
∴ Anderson, James (1662-1739), 34.
Andrea, Valentin (1586-1654), 150, 174.
Andreis, Carlo de, 301.
∴ Anghera, Domenico, 340.
Anjou, Duc d', 348.
Anthroposophical Society, 535, 579, 604.

Anti-Saloon League,, 621, 626.
Antin, Duc d', (1665-1736), 334.
Antonelli, Cardinal (1805-1876), 263.
Apadno, Book of, 220.
∴ Arago, Emmanuel (1812-1896), 263.
∴ Arago, Etienne, 341, 412; 413, 450.
∴ Archer, Major J. H. Lawrence (1823-), 520.
Arcula Mystica, 224.
Ardeschir Babejan, 66.
∴ Argenson, Rene de Voyer, Marquis d', (1652-1721), 203.
Aristotle (384-322 B.C), 97, 625.
Arminiaeus, Bertrand (1560-1609), 405.
Arminiaeus, John, 405.
∴ Arnal, Etienne (1794-1872), 403.
Arnauld, Antoine (1612-1694), 325.
✡ Artom, Isaac (1829-1900), 267.
∴ Ashmole, Elias (1617-1692), 156.
Asia Mysteriosa, 39.
∴ Asproni, Giorgio, 276.
Asquith, H. H. (Lord Asquith), (1852-1928), 394.
Assassins, 140.
✡ Astruc, Aristide (1831-), 486.
Attlee, C. R., 563.
Atwood Body, 425.
∴ Aubertin, d', 336.
✡ Auld, Isaac, 193.
Aumont, Pierre, 351.
∴ Azeglio, Massimo d' (1798-1866), 245.

∴ Babeuf, François-Émile (1760-1797), 380, 382, 561.
∴ Bacci, Ulisse, Sr., 286, 301.
∴ Bacci, Ulisse, Jr., 619.
✡ Bach, Rabbi Lee, 466.
Bacon, Francis (1561-1626), 153.
Bahai Movement, 469.
∴ Bahardt, Charles Frederic, 371.
Baha'u'llah, 469, 651.
Bailey, Alice A., 226.
∴ Bailly, Jean Silvain (1760-1819), 381.
∴ Bakunin, Michael (1814-1876), 219, 267, 492, 526.
Balbanova, Angelica, 615.
Baldasseroni, 258.
∴ Ballesteros, General Francisco (1760-1832), 202.
✡ Ballin, Albert, 516.
Baldwin, Roger N., 630.
✡ Bamberger, Ludwig (1823-1899), 418.
Bantry Bay Expedition (1796), 389.
Baphomet, 113, 680.
∴ Baratieri, General (1841-1901), 251.
Barbagallo, Lina, 243.
Barbarossa, Frederic I (1152-1190), 142.
∴ Barbes, Armand (1809-1870), 449.
∴ Barlet, T. Ch., 353.
Bartolotti, Giuseppe, 267.
Barruel, Abbé, 111.
∴ Basedow, Johann Georg (1723-1790), 371.
Basilides (II Century), 35, 118, 678.
∴ Baure, 336.
Bavariae, Ludovicus, Rex (1825-1868), 679.
∴ Bazard, Armand (1791-1832), 447, 449.
✡ Beaconsfield, Lord (see Disraeli, Benjamin).
∴ Beauharnais, Alexandre (1760-1794), 380.
Becheran, Abbe, 344.
Beck, Gottfried zum, *nom de plume* of Muller von Hausen, 409.
Beckx, Father Peter Johannes, 263, 319.
∴ Bective, Earl of, 407.
✡ Bédarride, Marc (-1846), 407.
Benedict XIV, Pope (1740-1756), 312.
∴ Bentham, Jeremy (1748-1832), 439.

Bentinck, Lord William, 435, 455.
∴ Bentivegna, Baron de (1856), 265.
Bentley, Dr. (1671-1742), 99.
∴ Berecz, Anatal de, 292.
Bernstorff, Count von, 590.
Berryer, Antoine (1790-1868), 412.
∴ Bersone, Clotilde, 577.
∴ Bertani, Agostino, (1812-1886), 244, 272, 276.
∴ Besana, Enrico, 245.
∴ Besant, Annie (1847-), 457, 533, 542, 548, 557.
∴ Beslay, 271.
∴ Beswick, Samuel, 332, 537.
Betts, Rev. George, 514.
✡ Bielefeld, 537.
✡ Bien, Julius (1826-), 465.
Biggar, Joseph G., 538.
∴ Biran, Marquis de (1766-1826), 402.
✡ Bischofsheim (1829-1908), 418.
∴ Bismarck, Otto von (1815-1898), 242, 249, 275, 418.
∴ Bixio, Nino (1808-1865), 245.
Bizzoni, Col. Achille, 287.
Blaine, Senator, U. S. A., 622.
Blanc, Hippolyte, 347.
Blanchard, 144.
Bland, Hubert, 557.
∴ Blanqui, Louis-Auguste (1805-1881), 449, 494.
∴ Blavatsky, Helen Petrovna (1831-1891), 457, 509, 520, 525, 529-534, 542, 566.
✡ Bleichroeder, Gerson (1822-1893), 225, 238.
✡ Blonski, Abraham, 150.
Blount, Charles (1654-1693), 150.
Blount, Henry (1602-1680), 157.
Bockhold, John, 173.
∴ Bode, Johann Joachim Christophe (1730-1793), 371, 379.
Boehme, Jacob (1575-1624), 149, 678.
Boleyn, Anne (1507-1836), 159.
Bonanni, 402.
∴ Bonneville, Nicolas, Chevalier de, 335, 381.
Borgja, Francesco (1510-1572), 309, 319.
Bothwell, Francis Stewart, Earl of, 117.
Bouche, Madame (Sister Salome), 37.
∴ Bourbon, François Louis de, 405.
∴ Bourbon, Louis Henri, Prince de, 335, 405.
Bournouf, Eugene, 65.
∴ Bovio, Giovanni, 251, 291.
Brahminism, 40.
Brahmo Somaj, 455.
Brailsford, Henry Noel, 637.
Brague, Arnold de, 405.
Brian Boru, The, 515.
Brissot de Warville, Jacques Pierre (1754-1793), 374, 381.
Britons, The, 409.
Brockdorf-Rantzau, Count von (-1928), 631.
Bruce, Robert (1274-1329), 349.
Bruix, Admiral, 389.
Bruno, Jordano (1550-1600), 98.
Brunswick-Wolfenbuttel, Duke of, 153.
Bruys, Peter of (-1126), 164.
∴ Buchez. Philippe (1796-1865), 447, 449.
Buchmanism, 643.
Bucolay, Savalette de, 336.
∴ Bukharin, NT., 615.
∴ Buonarotti, Filippe (1761-1837), 382, 428, 449, 561.
∴ Burdett, Sir Francis, 439.
∴ Burrows, Herbert, 533.
∴ Busche, Guillaume, Baron de, 379.
Buxton, Noel, 502, 637.
∴ Byron, Lord (1788-1824), 439.

∴ Cabrinovic, 602.
∴ Cadman, Dr. S. Parkes, 596, 625.
∴ Cadorna, General Raffaele (1850-1917), 217, 276.

✡ Cagliostro, Balsamo (1743-1795), 184, 355.
✡ Cahen, Isidor (1826-1902), 4*6.
Cairo, Lodge of, 134
∴ Cairoli, Benedetto (1826-1889), 276.
Caithness — see Pomar.
Calderari, 318, 435, 445, 619.
Callahan, Daniel J., 551.
Calmeil. L. F., 172.
∴ Calvert.-34, 175.
∴ Cambaceres (1733-1824), 339.
∴ Camelinat, 271.
Camisards, 327 *et seq.*
Canning, Sir Stratford (1786-.1880), 439.
Cannon, Bishop James, 596, 626.
Canosa, Prince of, 445.
Canti, Gustave, 301.
Capo d'Istria, Count of (1776-1831), 439, 440.
∴ Caputo, Monsignor, 271.
∴ Carabi, Filippe (-1861), 265.
Caraffa, Vincenzio, 319.
Carbonarism, 200, 427.
Carbonarism, French, 447.
Carducci, Giosue (1836-1907), 292.
Carlile, Bichard, 87, 198.
Carmody, Martin H., 550.
✡ Carpocrates, (II Century), 118.
Carpocratians, 119.
∴ Carra, Jean Louis (1742-1793), 381.
∴ Carriol, 449.
Carson, Sir Edward, 393.
✡ Carvalho, Jules (1820-), 486.
Casement, Boger (1864-1916), 516.
Castellazo, Luigi, 279.
Cathares, 163.
Cavendish, Lord Frederick, 541.
∴ Cavour, Camille Benso, Conte di (1810-1861), 244, 245, 266, 272, 273.
Cecil, Lord Bobert, 639.
Centurioni, Alessandro, 319.
Cerdo, 118.
Ceridwen, 101.
∴ Cerneau, Joseph, 214, 423.
Cerneau Bite, 423.
∴ Cerutti, Joseph (1738-1792), 380.
Chabot, Philip, 405.
∴ Chaillon de Joinville, 189, 336.
Charles I, King of England (1600-1649), 157.
Charles III, Duke of Parma, 262.
∴ Chartres, Philippe Egalite, duc de, (1747-1793), 336.
∴ Chassaignac, Eugene, 424.
∴ Chastanier, Benedict, 331, 355, 537.
Chatterton-Hill, George, 606.
Chayla, du, 410.
Chaytania, 457.
Cherrington, Dr. Ernest H., 596, 626.
∴ Chevillon, Claude M. B., 405.
∴ Choiseul, Etienne François, Comte de (1719-1785), 336.
Christianity, 105.
Christian Science, 553.
Churches of Christ, *see* Federal Council of,
Chubb, Percival, 557.
Cimadino, Ambroise, 279.
Civil Liberties Union, 598.
Clan-na-Gael (V. C), 513, 590, 606.
Claremont, John de, 405.
Clark, Dr., 99.
Clark, General, 388.
Clarke, William J., 292, 557.
∴ Clavel, 335, 407.
Clemens Alexandrinus (220), 122.
Clement IX, Pope (1600-1669), 312.
Clement XIV, Pope (1705-1774), 312, 365.
∴ Clermont, Comte de (1709-1771), 189, 335.
∴ Clinton, De Witt (1769-1824), 424.
∴ Clootz, Anacharsis (1775-1794), 184, 371.
∴ Cluseret, General (1823-1900), 484.

∴ Cobb, Rev. Geikie, 593.
Codrington, Admiral (1770-1851), 439.
Cohalan, Bishop Daniel, 591.
Cohalan, Judge, 516, 590, 606.
✡ Cohen, Moses, 192.
Cole, G. D. H., 563.
∴ Colfax, Schuyler, 472.
Collier, James, 156.
∴ Collot d'Herbois (1750-1796), 381.
Colombiere, Father, 313.
∴ Colquhoun, Sir Patrick (1815-), 400.
Co-Masonry, 547.
Comenius (Amos Kominsky) (1592-1671), 153, 174.
∴ Condorcet, Marquis de (1743-1794), 369, 379, 380, 381.
Confessio, 151.
Conolly, James, 584.
∴ Constant, Alphonse Louis — *see* Eliphas Levi.
∴ Constanza, Marquis de, 371, 373.
Convulsionaries of St. Medard, 343.
∴ Cooke, Mathieu, 502.
∴ Corberon, Baron de, 355.
Corbon, 271.
Cosentini, 276.
∴ Cosse-Brissac, Duc de (1792), 403, 405.
Cottyto, Goddess of Turpitude, 91.
∴ Cowdery, Oliver, 460.
∴ Cox, Benjamin, 501.
∴ Cremer, 218.
✡ Cremieux, Adolphe Isaac(1796-1880), 186, 339, 341, 412, 415 *et seq.,* 450, 486.
✡ Cremieux, Gaston (1836-1871), 416.
Cremonini, Cesare, 150.
Crimean War, 260.
∴ Crispi, Francesco (1819-1901), 242 *et seq.,* 276.
Cromwell, Oliver (1599-1658), 157, 312, 320.
Cromwell, Thomas, Earl of Essex (1485-1540), 158.
Crooks, William, 475, 562.
Cross Body (Masonic), 425.
∴ Crowley, Edward Aleister, (" The Master Therion "), (1875-), 524, 569, 575, 588, 631.
Croy, John de, 405.
Cryptic Rite, 519.
✡ Cubricus — *see* Manes.
∴ Cubrilovitch, Veliko, 601.
∴ Cucchi, Colonel Francesco, 276.
∴ Cucchi, Oreste, 276.
Cullen, Archbishop, 468.
Cumberland, Duke of (1721-1755), 392.
Cusack, Michael, 655.
Cyrus, King of the Persian Empire (560-529 B. C), 66.
Czerniewicz, Stanislaus, 319.

Dabricius, 173.
✡ Dacosta, Isaac (1798-1860), 190.
Dakin, E. F., 554.
∴ Dalcho, Frederic (1770-1836), 193.
∴ Danton, Georges Jacques (1759-1794), 381.
Darosi, Mohammed-al (960-1019), 136.
Dashwood, Sir Francis (1708-1781), 476.
Daughters of Isabella, 551.
David I, King of Scotland (1124-1153), 349.
David-Neel, Alexandra, 124.
Davidson, Thomas (1840-1900), 557.
Davis, Jefferson (1808-1889), 210.
Davitt, Michael, 538, 655.
Day, George B., 554.
∴ Decazes, Elie, Duc de (1780-1846), 279, 361.
Dee, John (1527-1608), 154.
Defenders, The, 320, 323, 388.
De Kay, John Wesley, 631.
Delignet, 615.
∴ Denham, Sir John, 175.
✡ Depasqualy, Martinez (1700-1779), 183.
∴ Deraismes, Marie, 547.
Derby, Lord, 269.

∴ Desaguliers, John Theophile (1683-1744), 34, 150.
Descartes, Rene (1596-1650), 98.
De Silver, Albert, 630.
∴ Desmaret, 412,
∴ Desmoulins, Benoit Camille (1760-1794), 381.
De Valera, Eamon, 590.
Devoy, John, 516.
∴ Diderot, Denis (1713-1784), 184, 374, 526.
Dillon, John Blake, 467.
Dillon, John, M. P. 538.
✡ Disraeli, Benjamin, Earl of Beaconsfield (1804-1881), 255, 269, 279, 415.
✡ D'lsraeli, Isaac (1776-1848), 269.
∴ Doda, Seismit, 276.
Doheney, Michael, 467, 481.
∴ Dolfi, 247.
" Dorec ", 354.
Douglas-Pennant, Violet, 649.
Druidenorden, 104, 604, 632.
Druids, 100.
Drummond, Josiah H., 423, 425.
Druses, 136, 138.
Duffy, Gavan, 467.
∴ Dugied, 447, 449.
∴ Dumas, Baron, 443.
Duodecimans or Imanites, 136.
Duperron, Hyacinthe Anquetil, *66.*
∴ Duplessis, 423.
∴ Dupont de l'Eure, Jacques Charles (1767-1855), 380, 451, 637.
∴ Dupotet, Mathieu (1796-1881), 423.
Duprat, Bishop of Clermont, 313.
∴ Dupin, 381.
Duras, Henri Durfort, Duc de (1625-1704), 405.
Duvergier de Hauranne, Jean (1581-1643), 325.
Dux, Furlong, 679.
Dyonisius, 90.

Eastern Star, 480.
Eastman, Max, 630.
∴ Ebrington, Lord, 439.
Eddy, Asa Gilbert, 554.
Eddy, Mary Baker (1821-1910), 553, 554, 555, 556.
∴ Edward VII, King of England (1868-1910), 400.
Egan, Patrick, 538.
Egomism, 98.
Einstein, A., 651.
Eleusinian Mysteries, 95.
Elizabeth, Queen of England (1533-1603), 154, 171.
Ellam, John, 156.
∴ Elliot, 34, 175.
Emmett, Robert, 388.
Emmett, Thomas Addis (1764-1827), 388.
∴ Encausse, Dr. G., *nom de plume* " Papus ", q. v.
✡ Engel, Leopold, 509, 537.
∴ Engels, Frederic (1820-1895), 218, 560.
∴ Engers-Kennedy, Leon, 525.
English Reform Bill, 270.
✡ Ephraim, Veitel Heine (1775), 184.
Epicurus (341-270 B. C), 97.
✡ Epiphanes, son of Carpocrates, 112, 118, 120.
Epiphanius (310-403 A.D.), 121.
∴ Erskine, Thomas, Lord (1750-1823), 439.
Esoteric Christian Union, 567.
Etherists, *see* Hetairia of Greece.
✡ Ettinger, Moritz, 465.
Eupamed, 126.

Fabian Society, 383, 557.
Fabre d'Olivet, 90.
∴ Fabre-Palaprat (-1838), 403, 404, 405.
∴ Fabrizi, Nicola (1804-1885), 245, 276.
Fairchild, H. 621.
∴ Fairman, Col. William Blennerhasset, 392.
✡ Falk, Jacob Haym (1708-1782), 184.
Fama *Fraternilalis,* 151.
∴ Farini, Luigi Carlo (1812-186C), 245, 271.

Farrar, Canon, 105.
Fascisti, 619.
∴ Fauchet, Claude (1744-1793), 375, 381.
Faustus, 109.
∴ Favre, Jules (1809-1880), 249, 341, 412, 495.
Feast of Fools, 115.
Federal Council of Churches of Christ, 595, 624.
∴ Felkin, Dr. Michael (1926), 569, 588.
Fell Smith, Charlotte, 150.
∴ Felt, George, 531.
Fenians, 481, 482, 483.
Ferdinand II, King of Naples (Bomba), (1810-1859), 271, 445.
Ferrari, 293.
∴ Ferry, Jules (1832-1893), 341.
∴ Fillmore, President U. S. A. (1800-1874), 463.
∴ Findel, J. G. (-1909), 238, 292.
✡ Fischer, 371.
Fischer, Ludwig von, 679.
Fitzgerald, Lord Edward (1763-1798), 388.
✡ Flammarion, Camille (1842-1925), 475.
Fleury, Cardinal de (1653-1743), 333.
∴ Floquet, Charles (1828-1896), 293.
∴ Flottard, 447, 449.
Fludd, Robert, *alias* Otreb *et* Fluctibus (1574-1637), 149.
Follard, Chevalier, 344.
Forrest, General N. B., 497.
Fortis, Aloysio, 319.
✡ Fouche, Joseph, *later* Duke of Otranto (1763-1820), 381, 395.
✡ Fould, Achille (1800-1867), 415.
∴ Foulhouze, F., 214, 424.
Fox, Catherine, 473.
Fox, Charles James (1749-1806), 476.
Fox, Margaret, 473.
✡ Fraina, Louis, 615.
Franceschini, Dr., 205.
Francis I, King of France (1494-1547), 427.
Francis II, King of Naples (Bombalino), (1836-1894), 271.
✡ Francken, Henry Andrews, 190, 423.
✡ Franck, Rabbi Salomon, 156.
Franz Ferdinand, Archduke (1863-1914), 601.
∴ Frappoli, 262, 276.
Frater Perdurabo *(see* Crowley, E. Aleister), 575.
Fravashis (Ferouers), 68.
Frazer, Leon, 658.
∴ Frederick II, the Great, King of Prussia (1712-1786), 189, 313.
✡ Fribourg, 271.
✡ Friedlander, David (1750-1834), 184.
Friends of Irish Freedom, 606.
Frost, Thomas, 200.
Fulgate, W., 461.
∴ Farman, Charles M. (1797-1872), 213.

Gaelic Athletic Association, 655.
Gaffney, T. St. John, 606.
✡ Gambetta, Leon (1838-1882), 249, 277, 341, 415, 418, 420, 495.
Gargano, Michael di, 427, 434.
∴ Garibaldi, General Joseph (1807-1882), 245, 272, 299, 340, 444, 468, 494, 530.
∴ Garnier Pages, Louis (1803-1878), 186, 341, 450.
∴ Gebelin, Comte de (1727-1784), *369.*
✡ Geer, Ludwig van (1587-1652), 154.
∴ Gentz, Frederick von (1764-1832), 376.
George, David, 173.
George III, King of England (1760-1830), 198.
Gerles, Dom (1736-1801), 381.
Gibson, Milner, 269.
∴ Gierloff, George, 537.

✡ Ginzberg, Asher (Ahad'ha-am), (1856-1927), 411, 487.
∴ Giolitti, Giovanni, 251.
∴ Girtaner, 379.
∴ Gladstone, William Ewart (1809-1898)', 392.
✡ Glais-Bizoin, 341.
∴ Gleichen, Baron de (1733-1807), 369.
∴ Glivan, Toby, *alias* of Francesco Crispi, 272.
∴ Glover, George Washington, 553.
Gnostics, 118.
∴ Goethe, Wolfgang von (1749-1832), 679.
Gohier, Urbain, 409.
Golden Dawn, Order of the, 503, 509, 510, 568, 588.
✡ Goldsmid, Abraham (1756-1810), 184, 415.
✡ Goldsmid, Benjamin (1755-1808), 184.
Gonzales, Tirso, 319.
∴ Gorsas, 381.
Gottofredi, Alessandro, 319.
∴ Grabez, 602.
Graham, George S., 623.
∴ Gramont, Duc de, 402.
Granceio, James R. de, 405.
Grand Boubagne, 253.
Grand Lamaistic Order of Light — Fratres Lucis, 543.
Grand Lodge of England, 174, 507.
Grand Orient of France, 333 *et seq.*
∴ Grant, Heber J., 464.
∴ Grasse-Tilly, Alex. François Auguste de (1766-), 194, 339, 360.
Great White Lodge, The, 530.
∴ Gregoire, Abbe Henri (1750-1831), 184, 416.
Gregory XV, Pope (r. 1621-1623), 312.
Griffiths, Arthur, 590.
∴ Grillenzoni, Count, 205.
∴ Grilli, Paolo, 217.
∴ Grollmann, Karl Wilhelm Georg von (1777-1843), 378.
∴ Gross, Dr. R., 537.
Grouchy, Marechal Emmanuel (1766-1847), 390.
Gruber, Gabriel, 319.
∴ Guaita, Stanislas, Marquis de, 353.
Guarduna, Spanish, 320, 324.
Guelphs — Guelphic Knights, 435.
Guenon, Rene, 529.
Guesclin, Bertrand du (1320-1380), 405.
∴ Guillotin, Joseph (1738-1814), 381.
∴ Gustavus III (1746-1792), 331.

✡ Ha'am, Ahad, *see* Ginzberg, Asher,
Hacket, William, 173.
∴ Hacquet, Germain, 423.
Haedel, 526.
Hakim, Caliph (996-1020), 136.
Haldane, Lord, 557.
∴ Halsey, Mrs Reginald, 594.
Hamza al Hadi, 139.
Hard, William, 410.
Hardenberg, Karl August, Prince von (1750-1822), 377.
Hardie, Keir, 560.
∴ Harrington, T. D., 299, 506, 536.
Harris, George, 351.
∴ Harris, Martin, 460.
∴ Hartmann, Franz (1838-1912), 575, 679.
Haskala, Jewish Illuminism, 185.
Hassan al-Basri, 135.
Hassan Sabah, 140.
✡ Hays, Moses (1739-1805), 190.
∴ Hebert, Jacques Rene (1757-1794), 380.
Hecker, Friedrich Franz Karl (1811-1881), 255.
Heckethorn, Charles William, 61, 100, 134, 139, 158, 176, 314.
✡ Heilbronner, Max, 537.
✡ Heine, Heinrich, 489.
∴ Held, Franz, 537.

Helvetius, Friedrich (1625-1709), 150.
Henderson, Arthur, 562.
Heredom, Rite of, 349.
Hermes *or* Thoth, 73.
Hermetic Brotherhood of Light, 574.
Hermetic Brotherhood of Luxor, 531.
Hermetic Society, 535, 566, 605.
✡ Hersheim, Moses (1750-1839), *alias* Brissac *or* Moses Metz, 184.
✡ Herz, Cornelius (1845-1898), 245, 251.
✡ Herz, Henrietta (1764-1847), 376.
✡ Herz, Marcus, 376.
✡ Herzen, Alexander (1812-1870), 267.
✡ Hess, Moses (1812-1875), 415, 487.
Hesse-Darmstadt, Prince L. G. C, 368, 369.
Hetairia of Greece, 438.
Hibernians, 323, 513.
Hicks Rite (Masonic), 425.
∴ Higgins, Godfrey, 573, 599.
Hoche, General Lazare (1768-1797), 389.
∴ Hockley, 501.
Hodde, Lucien de la, 449.
∴ Hogue, de la, 194.
✡ Holbrook, Moses, 211.
Holy Vehm, 337.
Home, Daniel D., 475, 478.
∴ Honis, Sam, 443.
∴ Honour, John, 211.
Honourable Fraternity of Antient Masonry, 593.
∴ Hopkins, Howell, 471.
Hu, 101.
∴ Hubbe-Schleiden, Dr., 104, 604.
∴ Hudson, Sir James (1810-1885), 245.
Hudson, William Gay, 40.
∴ Hughan, W. J., 44, 500, 506.
Hulagu, Prince, 142.
∴ Humbert I, King of Italy (1844-1900), 250.
Humboldt, Wlhelm von, 377.
Hume, Joseph (1777-1853), 439.
Hund, Baron Karl Gotthold von (1722-1776), 133, 350.
Hung Society of China, 441.
Hurlbut, Mrs, 410.
Huss, John (1369-1415), 164.

Igel, Wolf von, 517.
Illuminati, 148.
Illuminati of Avignon, 332, 355.
Illuminati of Bavaria, 370.
Illuminati of Spain, 307.
Illuminati of Stockholm, 331, 332.
Illuminism, 184.
Imanites *or* Duodecimans, 136.
Imbault, Bernard, 405.
Inchiquin, Lord, 467.
Independent Labour Party, 559.
✡ Independent Order of B'nai B'rith, 465.
Independent Order of Oddfellows, 471, 551.
Industrial Workers of the World (I. W. W.), 584, 627.
Ingersoll, Sister, 223.
Innocent II, Pope (r. 1130-1143), 142.
Innocent VIII, Pope (r. 1484-1492), 115.
Innocent X, Pope (r. 1644-1655), 312.
« Inquire Within », *nom-de-plume* of Miss Stoddard, 469, 588.
Inquisition, **311.**
International Bank, 658.
International, The Black (The Jesuits), 318.
International Bible Students, 539.
International, The First, 489.
International, The Second, 489.
International, The Third, 614.
Invincibles, The, 541.
Invisibles, The, — The Invisible Superiors, 153, 351.

Ipsilanti, Prince Alexander, 439.
Irish Republican Brotherhood, (I. R. B.), 481, 633.
Irish Socialist Bepublican Party, 584.
∴ Irwin, Major F. G., 300, 500, 506, 536.
Isakson, Daniel, 331.
Ishmaelites, 134, 136.
Islam (Orthodox), 133.
Islam (Unorthodox), 134.
✡ Itzig, Daniel, 184.

Jackson, Rev. William, 388.
Jacobins and Jacobinism, 379.
✡ Jacoby, Johann (1805-1877), 413, 415.
Jacolliot, Louis (1806-), 49.
Jahn, Friedrich Ludwig (1778-1852), 377.
James II, King of England (1620-1688), 333.
Jainism and the Jains, 69.
Jansenism and the Jansenists, 325 *et seq.*
Jansenius, Cornelius (1585-1638), 325.
∴ Jennings, Hargrave (1817-1890), 679.
Jesuits, Order of, 308.
Jethro, 74.
∴ Joly, Maurice (-1878), 410, 418.
Jones, D., 160, 313.
Jones, Ernest, 489.
Jones, Inigo (1573-1651), 155.
✡ Jones, Henry, 465.
∴ Joubert, Joseph (1754-1824), 447, 449.
✡ Jouin, Monseigneur Ernest (1844-1932), 409.
Joyeuse, Admiral Villaret de (1750-1812), 389.
Judaism, 75.
∴ Judge, William Q., 531, 582.
Juvenile Freemasonry, 634.

Kali, 62.
✡ Kalisher Hirsch, Rabbi of Thorn (1795-1874), 487.
Karen, Franciscus Xavier, 319.
∴ Kazimirovich, Radoslav, 602.
Keller, Depute, 268.
∴ Kellermann, T. C, Duc de Valmy, Marshal (1735-1820), 339.
∴ Kellner, Karl (-1905), 571, 573, 575, 679.
Kelly, Edward (1555-1595), 154.
Kem, Sam, 156.
Kemal-ud-Din, 546.
∴ Kenning, George, 506, 528.
∴ Kent, Duke of, 400.
Keogh, John (1740-1817), 388.
∴ Kerensky, Alexander, 409, 466.
Keshub Chunder Sen, 456.
Khedive of Egypt, 278.
Kilwinning, Ancient Order of, 349.
King, Colonel, 231.
King, James, 34, 175.
Kingsford, Anna, (1846-1888) 566.
∴ Kintore, Earl of (1852-1930), 649.
∴ Kipling, Rudyard, 520.
∴ Klapka, General, 267.
Klinger, G., 615.
Knayat Khan, 599.
∴ Knigge (Philo), Baron de (1752-1796), 337, 371.
Knight, Sir Richard Payne (1750-1824), 679.
Knights of Christ, 145, 403.
Knights of Columbus, 516, 550.
Knights of the Ku-Klux Klan, 497, 607.
Knights of Malta, 146.
Knights Templar, 143.
Knights Templar of America, 384, 551.
Khoja Sect, 136.
∴ Konarski, Simon (1808-1839), 255, 453.
✡ Konigswarter, Maximilian, 486.
∴ Kossuth, Louis (1802-1894), 254, 255.
Kotterus, 173.
Kotzebue, August Friedrichsen (1761-1819), 378.

∴ Kramarsch, Karl (1860-), 601.
Krishna, 56, 679.
Krishnamurti, 533.
Kropotkin, Prince Pierre, 558.
Krudener, Juliana de (1764-1824), 37.
Kuch Behar, Maharaiah of, 456.
Kuhlmann, 173.
Ku-Klux Klan (K. K. K.), 497, 607.
Kyilkhors, 126.

∴ Labrunie, Hippolite, 443.
∴ Lacorne, 189, 336.
La Farina, Giuseppe (1815-1863), 245.
∴ La Favette, Marie Joseph, Marquis de (1757-1834), 203, 204, 374, 381, 449.
Laffon (1773-1863), 237.
Lafont, G. de, 65.
La Jonquiere, Jacques de (1680-1753), 237.
∴ Lalande, Joseph Jerome (1732-1807), 381.
Lamaism, 123.
∴ Lamartine, Alphonsc de (1790-1869), 185, 450.
∴ Lamballe, Marie Therese, Princesse de (1749-1792), 338.
∴ Lameth, Charles Theodore, 380.
Lancelot, Claude (1615-1695), 325.
Landebat, Laffon de (1746-1829), 237.
∴ Lang, Jacob, 373.
Lansbury, George, 562.
Lao-Tse (600 B. C), 71.
Larkin, James, 613.
Larmenius, John Mark (1324), 402, 405.
∴ La Rochefoucauld, François, Duc de (1613-1680), 374, 379.
∴ Laroque, Marquis de, 443.
✡ Laski, Harold J., 382, 561, 562.
✡ Lassalle, Ferdinand (1825-1864), 415.
∴ Lathuile, Jacques (*alias* of Adriano Lemmi), 265.
Laud, Archbishop (1573-1645), 157.
Lavington, George, Bishop of Exeter (1683-1762), 91, 118.
Law, William (1671-1729), 183.
Laynez, Diego (1512-1565), 319.
✡ Lazare, Bernard (1865-1903), 184.
∴ Leadbeater, Charles \V., 533, 548.
League of Nations, 187, 636.
League of Oppressed Nations - *see* V. V. V., 631.
∴ Leblond, 403, 412.
∴ Le Changeur, 407.
Le Comte, General Claude Martin (1818-1871), 496.
Leczinska, Marie, Queen of France (1703-1768), 348.
Ledochowsky, Vladimir, 319.
∴ Ledru-Rollin, Alexandre Auguste (1807-1874), 255, 267, 418, 450, 494.
Leibnitz, Gottfried Wilhelm, Baron von (1646-1716), 99.
∴ Lelewel, 453.
∴ Le Lubez, 218.
Le Maitre de Sacy, Louis Isaac (1758-1838), 325.
∴ Lemmi, Adriano (1822-1896), 219, 222, 250, 253 *et seq.*, 492.
Lemmi, Silvano, 293.
∴ Lenin, Wladimir Ilitch Ulianow (1870-1924), 615.
∴ Lenoncourt, Chevalier de, 336.
Leo the Great, Pope (r. 440-461), 109.
Leo XIII, Pope (1810-1903), 250.
∴ Leroux, Pierre (1798-1871), 418.
∴ Lessing, Gotthold Ephraim (1729-1781), 372.
✡ Leucht, *alias* Johnson (1775), 183, 184, 350.
✡ Leven, Narcisse (1833-1915), 486.
✡ Levi, Armand (1827-), 288, 289, 492, 496.

∴ Levi, Eliphas (Alph. Louis Constant), (1810-1875), 36, 116, 506, 542, 578, 679.
✡ Levi, Lucien, 547.
Lewis Broom (*alias* of Adriano Lemmi), 262, 263.
Leyden, John of, 173.
Liberal Catholic Church, 534.
Lienkiewicz, Gabriel, 319.
∴ Limerick, Earl of, 407.
∴ Limperani, 449.
∴ Linati, 205.
∴ Lindsay, Lord, 475.
∴ Little, R. Wentworth (1839-1878), 407, 463, 500, 506, 528.
Littler, Henry, 156.
Lodge, Sir Oliver, 474.
✡ L'Olper, Rabbi, 274.
Lombard de Langes, 337.
✡ Long, Hyman Isaac, 192, 403.
∴ Longfellow, 211.
Longley, George Canning, 299, 506, 536.
Louis XV, King of France (1710-1774), 348.
∴ Louis Napoleon (Napoleon III) (1808-1873), 255.
∴ Louis Philippe (Egalite), Duc d'Orleans, Duc de Chartres (1747-1793). 336, 374, 379.
Loyola, Ignatius de(1491-1556), 307, 308, 314, 319.
Luby, Thomas Clarke (1821-1909), 482.
Luke of Prague, 165.
Lulli, Raymond (1235-1315), 151.
∴ Lumden-Madden, 34, 175.
Lytton, Lord (1803-1873), 543.

Macabe, 387.
∴ MacClenachan, Charles T., 151.
MacDonald, Ramsay, 557.
∴ MacGregor, James (*alias* of Adriano Lemmi), 268,
∴ Mackenzie, Kenneth R. (1818-1886), 300, 500, 506, 508, 528, 536.
∴ Mackey, Albert George, 287, 291, 405.
∴ Mackey, Gallatin (1807-1881), 195, 211, 222.
∴ Mackintosh, Sir James (1765-1832), 439.
Maclaine, W. 615.
McBride, F. Scott, 596, 621, 626.
McConnell, Francis J., Bp., 596.
McGarrah, Gates, 658.
McGinley, William J., 551.
McGivney, Father P., 550.
McTier, 387.
Madden, R. R., F. R. C. S., 171, 172, 327.
∴ Maendl, Baron, 373.
Mafia, 620, 645.
✡ Maggioro, Rabbi Abraham, 254.
∴ Maghella, 433.
∴ Magnan, Bernard Pierre, Marshal (1791-1865), 339.
Mahomet (571-632), 133.
✡ Maier, Michael, (1658-1622), 149, 150, 152.
∴ Maine, Louis Auguste, Duc du (1670-1736), 405.
∴ Maitland, Edward (1824-1897), 566.
Malcolm, Sir John, 599.
Malebranche, Nicolas de (1638-1715), 98.
∴ Malet, Claude François de, General (1754-1812), 395.
Malon, 271.
Malone, Dudley Field, 631.
✡ Manasseh ben Israel (1604-1657), 160.
Manchester Unity of Oddfellows, 436.
Manchu Dynasty, 441.
∴ Mancini, Pascal Stanislas (1817-1888), 276.
Manes (216-276), 108.
Manicheism, 108.
∴ Manuel, Andre Jacques (1791-1857), 203.
Manuel, Eugene (1823-1901),. 486.
∴ Marat, Jean Paul (1743-1793), 380.
∴ Marchot, 337.

Marcion, 118.
∴ Marconis, J. E., 407, 443.
Marcus, 118.
∴ Margiotta, Domenico, 188.
Marie-Anne, Duchess of Bavaria, 372.
Marie-Antoinette, Queen of France (1755-1793), 338.
Marie Christine, Queen, 338.
∴ Mario, Alberto, 219.
Marion, Elias, 329.
Marpa, 127.
∴ Martin, Georges, 547.
∴ Martin, Marie, 548.
✡ Martinez Pasquales (1700-1779), 353.
Martinism : Martinist Order, 353.
✡ Marx, Karl (Mordechai), (1818-1883), 218, 270, 413, 415, 418, 484, 489, 526, 560.
∴ Massa, Thomas, 528.
∴ Massarenti, 267.
∴ Massena, Andre, Duc de Rivoli (1756-1817), 339, 395.
∴ Massenhausen, 371.
Master (The) Therion, (Aleister Crowley), 575.
∴ Mathers, S. L. McGregor, 506, 509, 534, 567, *et seq.* 575.
✡ Mathers, Mrs McGregor (1929), 569.
Mathias, John, 173.
∴ Mathieu, Gabriel, 443.
∴ Mauvillon, Jas., (1743-1794), 374.
∴ Mavrocordato, Alexander, (1791-1865), 439.
Maximilla, 36.
Maxwell, General Sir John (1859-1929), 517.
∴ Mayer, Charles E., 506.
Mayo, Katherine, 61.
Mazdaznan Sect, 579.
Mazdeism, 65.
Mazza, 264.
∴ Mazzini, Giuseppe (1805-1872), 196, 207 *et seq.*, 242, 255, 257, 273, 434, 450, 453, 468, 492, 494, 530, 539, 557.
∴ Mazzoni, Giuseppe (-1880), 268, 279.
∴ Medico, Umberto dal, 286.
Medmenham, Monks of, 199, 476.
Melchior, Dr., 658.
∴ Melegari, L. A., 255, 257.
Melek Taos, 132.
Memphis and Mizraim, Rite of, 443.
✡ Mendelssohn, Moses (1728-1786), 184, 371, 376.
Menelek II, King of Abyssinia (1842-1913), 251.
Mercurian, Eberhard (1514-1580), 319.
∴ Mesmer, Frederic Antoine (1733-1815), 355.
Metaxas, 301.
Metternich, Clement Wenceslas, Prince of (1773-1859). 270.
∴ Meyer, Henry, 524.
Meyer, Kuno, 606.
✡ Meyers, Joseph M., 191.
∴ Michal, Victor, 530.
Mignano, Duke of, — *see* Nunziante.
Mignet, François Auguste (1796-1884), 413.
∴ Milano, Ageslas, 266.
∴ Miller, Siegmund, 537.
∴ Mirabeau, Honore Gabriel (1747-1791), 183, 379.
Mirza Ali Muhammad, 469.
Mizra Ahmed Sohrab, 651.
Mirza Ghulam Ahmad, 545.
∴ Misley, Henry, 204, 205, 265.
∴ Mitchell, Colonel John (1815-1875), 193, 467.
Mitchell, William, 349.
Mizraim, Rite of, 407.
✡ Mocatta, Moses (1768-1857), 184.
Modern Illuminism : *see* Order of Oriental Templars : (O. T. O.), 571.
Modern Knights Templar (England), 399.

Modern Knights Templar (France), 402.
Modern Knights Templar (Poland), 452.
Modern Knights Templar (Sweden), 406.
Mohammed al-Darazi (960-1019), 138.
Mohammed al-Hanafl, 136.
Mohammed al-Muntazar, 136.
Molay, Jacques Bourguignon de (1244-1314), 194.
✡ Mold, Daniel, 288.
∴ Molt, Emil, 605.
Montanus, (*circ.* 160 *or* 170 A. D.), 35, 118.
✡ Montefiore, Moses (1784-1885), 415, 416, 486.
Monteith, Peter Golden, 613.
Montesquieu, Charles Secondat, Baron de (1689-1755), 412, 413, 414.
Montgeron, 345.
Montmasson, Bosalia, 243.
Montmorency, Comte de, 395.
Montmorency, Henri de, 405.
Moore, Roger, 320.
∴ Moore, Colonel W. J. McLeod, 299, 401, 506, 536.
Mopses, Order of, 117, 365.
Moravians (Herrenhuter), 165.
∴ Morayta, Miguel, 293.
∴ Moreau, Jean Victor, General (1763-1813), 395, 396.
∴ Morelli, 276.
∴ Morgan, Captain William, 209, 228 *et seq.*
✡ Morin, Stephen, 189, 336.
Mormons, The, 459.
∴ Morris, Robert (-1888), 480.
Mostansir, Calif, 137.
✡ Motta, Emmanuel de la (1761-1821), 193.
Mouler, Jeanne, 346.
Muham-mab-Ali, 546.
Muncer, Thomas, 171, 173.
✡ Munk, Solomon (1803-1867), 487.
Murray, Margaret Alice, 112, 578.
Mussolini, Benito, 619, 620, 645.
Mutazilites, 135.
Mythras, 67.
Murat, Joachim (1767-1815), 433, 435.
∴ Murat, Prince Louis (1803-1879), 264, 339.

Nadir Shah (1688-1747), 599.
∴ Napoleon I (1769-1821), 395.
∴ Napoleon III (1808-1873), 244, 261, 267, 268, 339, 410, 418.
Narodna Odbrana, 601.
✡ Nathan, Ernesto, 251, 293.
National Land League, 538.
Nearing, Scott, 630.
Neilson, Samuel (1761-1803), 387.
∴ Netchaieff, 518.
Netchvolodow, Lt. Gen. Alexandre, 76.
Nettelbladt, 350.
✡ Netter, Charles (1828-1882), 486, 487.
New Dispensation, 458.
New History Society, 651.
Nicephorus, 404.
∴ Nicholas II, Tzar of Russia (1868-1918), 353.
Nicholson, Bishop Thomas, 596, 626.
Nickel, Goswin, 319.
∴ Nicolai, Christopher Friedrich (1733-1811), 184, 313, 371.
Nicole, Pierre (1628-1695), 325.
∴ Nietzsche, Friedrich (1844-1900), 679.
Nihilists, 518.
Nilus, Sergius (1862-1929), 409.
Nithard, F., 311.
Nitschmann, David, 167.
Noailles, Alexis, Comte de (1783-1835), 395.
Nobili, Robert de, 311.
Norbert, 312.
✡ Nordau, Max (1849-), 410.
∴ Nordenskjold, August, 331.
Norman, Montagu Collet, 659.
North Berwick Witches, 117.

Noyelle, Charles von (1615-1686), 319.
∴ Nubio, 427.
∴ Nunziante, General, Duke of Mignano, 272.

Oates, Titus (1649-1705), 320.
O'Brien, Wm. Smith (1803-1864), 255, 467, 538.
O'Connor, Arthur (1763-1852), 388.
Occultism, 24.
Oddfellows, *see* Independent Order of Oddfellows, 471.
∴ Odger, George (1820-1877), 490, 491.
O'Flaherty, James, 550.
O'Gorman, 467.
O'Kelly, J. J., 538.
∴ Olcott, Henry Steel (1831-1907), 531, 542.
O'Leary, Jeremiah, 606.
Oliva, Giovanni Paolo (1689-1757), 319.
Olliver, C. W., 108.
Olivier, Sidney, Lord, 562.
Olympians, 395.
O'Mahoney, Colonel John (1816-1877), 481.
" One Big Union ", 200.
Ophites, 35.
Orange Society, 391.
Order of De Molay, 634.
Order of Oriental Templars (O. T. O.), 296, 341, 466, 503, 509, 571, 677-705.
Order of The Rainbow, 634.
Order of Universal Co-Freemasonry, 534.
Oriental Order of Light, 543.
∴ Orleans, Philippe, Duc d' (1674-1723), 405.
∴ Orleans, Philippe, Duc d' (1747-1793), 374, 379.
Oromazes, 67.
Orpheus, 74.
Orpheism, 90.
∴ Orsini, Felice (1819-1858), 244, 264, 268.
O. T. O. *see* Order of Oriental Templars.
∴ Oudet, Lieut. Col. (1773-1809), 395.
Oxenstiern, Axel (1583-1650), 154.

Pagan Mysteries, 93.
Pagitt, Baron James, 156.
Palladism, 218, 239, 267.
Palladium, 215.
∴ Palmerston, Lord (1784-1865), 214, 242, 244, 260, 261, 264, 268.
✡ Pam, Judge Max, 623.
∴ Pancoast, Dr. Seth, 531.
Pankhurst, Dr., 558.
Pansophia, 174.
∴∵ Papus (Dr. Gerard Encausse) (1865-1916), 353, 509, 542, 574, 575, 679.
Paracelsus (Theophrastus von Hohenheim) (1493-1541), 148, 678.
Paris, François (1690-1727), 343.
Parnell, Charles Stewart, 538, 655.
Parsees, 66.
Parsva, 69.
Pascal, Blaise (1623-1662), 325.
Patterson, Daniel, 553.
Paul III, Pope (r. 1534-1549), 308.
∴ Payne, George, 34, 175, 374.
Pearse, P. H., 517.
Pease, Edward, 557.
Peckham, William H., 335.
∴ Pelletan, Camille, 341.
Pelletier, Joseph C, 551.
∴ Penkett, Richard, 156, 160.
∴ Pepe, General Guillaume (1782-1855), 200, 205.
∴ Pernety, Antoine Joseph (1716-1777), 355.
Pethick-Lawrence, F. W., 562.
∴ Petroni, Giuseppe, 279, 428.
Philadelphians, 395.
Philaletes, *see* Thomas Vaughan.
Philaletes, The Society of The, 369.

Philalethes, Irenius (George Starkey), 154.
Philippe le Bel, King of France, (r. 1285-1314), 81.
Phoenix Society of Skibbereen, 485.
∴ Piancini, Count, 279.
∴ Picard, 341.
Piccolomini, Francesco (1520-1614), 319.
Pichegru, Charles (1761-1804), 395.
∴ Pierri, 268.
∴ Pike Albert (1809-1891) 188, 207 *et seq.*, 242, 531, 539, 554, 618.
Pitt, Lord William (1759-1806), 380, 389.
Pitris, The Book of The, 52.
Pius IX, Pope (1792-1878), 250.
Plato, (429-347 B. C), 97.
Plunket, Archbishop (1629-1681), 320.
∴ Podmore, Frank (1856-1910), 557.
∴ Poggio, Gerasimos, 293.
Pollard, Captain, 320, 323, 387, 421, 467, 481, 513, 541, 606.
Pollock, Channing, 624.
∴ Pomar, Duchesse de (Lady Caithness) (-1895),542.
∴ Portal, Rev. G. R., 519.
✡ Portman, Maurice Vidal, 543.
Primitive and Original Phremasons (Swedenborgian Rite), 536.
✡ Prinzip, Gabriel, 602.
Priscilla, 36.
Prohibition, American, 621, 643.
Protocols of the Wise Men of Zion, 80, 407, 654.
Prudhon, 526.
∴ Pullen, W. Hyde, 528.
Putnam, George H., 410.
∴ Puysegur, A. M. J. de Chastenet (1751-1825), 355.
∴ Pyat, Felix (1810-1889), 262, 450.
Pyrrho, (IV Century B. C), 98.
Pythagoras, (VI Century B. C), 97.

Quelch, Thomas, 615.
Quesnel, Pasquier (1634-1719), 325.
Quiller-Couch, Sir Arthur, 100.
∴ Quillian, Wm. Henry, 524.
Quimby, Phineas Parkhurst, (-1866), 553.

Rackets, The, 645.
Radziwill, Princess Catherine, 410.
∴ Ragon, Jean Marie (1781-1862), 36.
∴ Rampolla, Cardinal (1843-1913), 679.
∴ Ramsay, Chevalier de (1686-1743), 97, 334.
∴ Ratazzi, U. (1808-1878), 266, 276.
∴ Ravenshaw, Rev. T. F., 502.
Raymond, Rene, 333.
Red Cross of Constantine of the Holy Sepulchre, 502.
Redmond, John, 394.
Reimarus, Herman Samuel (1694-1768), 372.
Renato, Camillo (XVI Century), 150.
Renato, Matteo, 287.
Re-Theurgist Optimates, 213.
Retz, Franz, 319.
Retz, Gilles de (1404-1440), 27.
∴ Reuss, Theodore, 298, 300, 354, 507, 509, 525, 537, 571, 574, 575.
Rhygas, Constantin (1754-1798), 438.
Ribbon Society, 421.
Riboli, Timoteo, 276.
Ricci, Lorenzo (1703-1775), 319.
Richard I, King of England (r. 1189-1199), 142.
Richet, Charles, 475.
✡ Riesser, Gabriel (1806-1863), 415.
∴ Ripon, Marquis of, 182, 278.

∴ Rivail, *alias* Allan Kardec (1803-1869), 530.
Rive, A. C. de la, 220, 233.
∴ Robespierre, Maxime de (1758-1794), 381, 428.
∴ Roettiers, B. E. A. (1771-1858), 339.
∴ Rohan, Commodore William de, 272.
∴ Rohan, Prince de (1734-1803), 336.
Rokyzana, 165.
Romano, Liborio, 272.
Roome, Liliana Pike, 210.
Roothaan, Johannes, 319.
∴ Rosa, 350.
✡ Rosen, Paul, 177, 363.
Rosenkreutz, Christian, 151.
∴ Rosenthal, Samuel, 407, 528.
Rosicrucianism, 147.
Rosmer, A., 615.
Rossa, Jeremiah O'Donovan, 485, 513.
✡ Rothschild, The House of, 270, 279, 415.
✡ Rothschild, John, 654.
Rousseau, Jean Jacques, 184, 374.
Rowan, Archibald Hamilton (1751-1834), 388.
Roy, Rajah Ram Mohun (1774-1833), 455, 458.
∴ Rudio, 268.
✡ Riige (Rouge) Arnold, 489.
Russell, Bertrand, Karl, 562.
∴ Russell, Charles Laze (1852-1916), 539.
∴ Russell, Lord John (1st Earl), 439.
Russellites, see International Bible Students, 539.
Rutherford, John, 540.

Sadoul, Jacques, 615.
∴ St. Albans, Henry Jermyn, Lord, 175.
∴ Saint Etienne Rabaud, 381.
∴ Saint Fargeau, Pellctier de, 381.
✡ Saint Germain, Count of *(other names* Daniel Wolf *and* Prince Rakosky) (1710-1784), 184.
Saint Germain, Father, 313.
⁙ Saint Martin, Louis Claude de (1713-1803), 353.
Saint Medard, Cemetery of, 343.
Saint Patrick Boys, 454.
Salazar, Galeatino de, 405.
Sampter, Jessie E., 639.
∴ Sandeman, David, 293.
Sandwich, Lord, 476.
Sanfedesti, 318.
Sankey, Sir Richard H. (1829-1908), 156.
∴ Santallier, 636.
Sat Bhai of Prague, 299, 520.
⁙ Savalette de Lange, 183, 369.
∴ Saviola, Count Aurelio (1746-1788), 371, 374.
∴ Saxe Gotha, Duke Ernest Louis de, 373.
Scelsi brothers, 286.
Scharnhorst, Gerhard von (1755-1813), 377.
✡ Schiff, Jacob (1847-1921), 614.
∴ Schlegel, Frederic, 377
∴ Schlciermacher, 377.
✡ Schorst, Joseph, 408.
∴ Schure, Edouard, 604.
∴ Schwab, Julius, 527.
Scotland, Royal Order of, 349.
∴ Scott, Captain Charles, 536.
Scottish Philosophic Rites, 339, 397.
Sellon, Edward, 52 *et seq.*
Senoncourt, Robert, 405.
Sexton, Thomas, 538.
∴ Seymour, Harry J., 425, 426, 523.
Shaw, George Bernard, 557, 563, 637, 655.
Shaw, Ralph, 597.
∴ Sieyes, Abbe Emmanuel J. (1748-1836), 369, 379, 380, 381.
∴ Silva, Francesco Alvaro da, 404.
∴ Simmons, William Joseph, 007, 609.

✡ Simon Magus, 678.
Simon, Richard (1638-1712), 150.
Sinclair, 387.
Sinclair, Upton, 027.
∴ Sineo, 270.
Singer, Arthur, 337.
Sinn Fein, 090, 013.
✡ Sliosberg, 466.
∴ Smith, J. Fielding. 404.
∴ Smith, Joseph (1805-1844), 459.
∴ Smith, Admiral Sir Sidney (1704-1840), 405.
∴ Snow, Lorenzo, 401.
Snowden, Viscount Philip and Viscountess, 474, 502.
Societas Rosicruciana in Anglia, 290, 499, 577.
Societe Theosophique d'Orient et d'Occident, 542.
Socinianism, 153.
Socinius, Faustus (1539-1004), 150.
Socinius, Lelio (1525-1562), 150.
Socrates (408-400 B. C), 92, 97.
✡ Sorge, F. A., 490.
∴ Sothern, Charles, 531.
∴ Sovanovitch, 002.
Spalding, Solomon, 401.
Spener, Philip (1035-1705), 107.
Sperber, Julius, 152.
✡ Spinoza, Baruch (1032-1077), 98.
Spiritism, Modern, 473.
✡ Spitzer, Bernard M.,
∴ Springer, C. F., 331.
∴ Stern, Heinrich F. K., Baron von und zu (1757-1831), 377.
∴ Steiner, Rudolph (1861-1925), 570, 588, 001.
Stella Matutina, 563, 510, 569, 588.
Stephens, James (1825-1901), 407, 481, 483, 485.
∴ Stetson, Augusta (1812-1928), 554.
Stone, Nick (1580-1047), 155.
Storch, Nicholas, 171.
Strict Observance, 183, 351.
Struve, Gust von (1805-1870), 255.
Stubner, Mark, 171.
Sufism (Occidental), 599.
Summers, M., 110.
Sun Yat Sen, 442.
∴ Suppas, Max, 537.
Supreme Council of the Emperors of the East and West, 335, 336, 359.
∴ Sussex, Duke of, 182, 203, 502.
Swedberg, Jasper, 331.
∴ Swedenborg, Emmanuel (1088-1772), 331, 537.
Swedenborg. The Bite of, 331.

Taboritcs, 165.
Tagore, Debendra Nath, *also written* Devendranath Takur, 455.
Taiping Bevolt, (1851) 441.
∴ Tallard, Camille,Duc de (1052-1728), 402.
∴ Talleyrand-Perigord, Charles de (1754-1838), 374, 379, 395.
Talmud, The, 81.
∴ Tamajo, Senator Col. George, 279.
Tamburini, Michele Angelo, 319.
Tandv, Napper (1740-1803), 385.
∴ Tankosich, Major, 602.
Tantras, The, 57.
Tavanensis, G. de J., 405.
∴ Taylor, John (1808-1887), 464.
Tcherezigs, 125.
Templarism, 143.
Tenri Kenjukai, 641.
∴ Teste, Charles, 449.
Themis Aurea, 152.
Theodoret (396-458), 55.
Theophilus, Bishop of Alexandria (385-412), 96.
Theosophical Educational Trust, 533.
Theosophical Society, 529, 534, 004.

Theosophical Society of America, 535, 582.
Theosophical Society of New Jerusalem, 332.
Theosophical World University, 533.
∴ Thiellay, Eugene, 52S.
∴ Thiers," Adolphe (1797-1877), 249.
Thomas, General Clement, 495.
Thomas, Father (Damascus affair), 486.
∴ Thome, Marquis de, 332, 355.
∴ Thompson, Hopkins, 425.
Thomson, Brig. Gen. Lord (-1930), 562.
Thoth *or* Hermes, 73.
Thugs, 62, 645,
∴ Tibaldi, Paolo, 267.
∴ Tigre, Picolo,
∴ Tingley, Katherine A. (1929), 582.
∴ Todorovitch, Major, 602.
∴ Tolain, 271.
∴ Tone, Theoboald Wolfe (1763-1798), 380, 385.
∴ Torregiani, Domizio, 619.
Tournon, Cardinal (1 187-1562), 312.
Triangles (Palladist Lodges), 216.
∴ Trochot, 395.
Trotzky, Leon, *alias* of Leon Bronstein, 611.
Tsong Khapa, 126.
Tugendbund. 376.
∴ Turner, Major G., 636.
∴ Turr, General Stephen (1825-1908), 267.
Tynan, P. .)., 5!1.

Ubaid Allah el Mahdi. 135.
Ugoni, 201.
Ulrika, Queen of Sweden (1685-1711), 331.
∴ Unger, Karl, 605.
Unione Sicilione, 615.
United Brotherhood, 513.
United Irishmen, 385, 121.
Unorthodox Islam, 131.
∴ Utzsehneider, Joseph, 372.
∴ Valadi, 381.
Valentinians, 122.
Valentinius (-161), 118.
Valle, Felicita, 243.
Valois, Charles de, 405.
Vandervelde, Emil, 560.
Vangaluka, 601.
Vannini, Lucilio (1585-1619), 98.
Vardhamana Mahavira (527 B. C), 69.
Varlin, 271.
Vaughan, Thomas (Philalethes) (1612-1665). 150, 154, 155.
✡ Venedv, Jacob (1805-1871). 413. 414, 415.
Vergennes, Charles Gravier, Comte de (1717-1787), 389.
∴ Victor Emmanuel, King of Italy (1820-1878), 250,
Victoria, Queen of England (1819-1901), 279.
Viennet, Joan Baptiste, 339, 117.
Villafranca, Treaty of (1859), 271.
Villars. Duc de. Marechal (1653-1734). 328.
Visconti, Ignazio, 319.
Vitelleschi, Mutio (-1906), 319.
Vogt d'Hunolstein, 337.
Volpi, 127.
∴ Voltaire, Arouet (1694-1778). 181, 371, 430.
✡ Vorovsky, Y. 615.
Vereinigung Verge waltigter Volker (V. V. V.), 631.

∴ Wagner, Richard (1813-1SS3), 679.
∴ Waite. Arthur E. 444, 506. 569.
Waldenses, 463.
∴ Walder. Phileas (-1893), 282.
Waldo, Peter (M1 Century), 464.
Waldorf System, 605.

∴ Wales, Prince of, (Edward VII) (1841-1910), 182, 400.
Wallace, Colonel R. H., 393.
Wallas, Graham, 557.
∴ Walter, Erich, 537.
✡ Warburg, Max, 614.
∴ Warren, General Joseph (1776), 191.
∴ Webb, John, 175.
Webb, Sidney, Lord Passfield, 557, 560.
Webb, Mrs Sidney, Lady Passfield, 562.
Webster, Nesta H., 295, 614, 631, 636.
∴ Wedmar, Colonel Baltzer, 331.
Weed, Thurlow (1797-1882), 229.
∴ Weinholz, August, 537.
∴ Weishaupt, Adam (1748-1830), 184, 313, 337, 370.
Wells, H. G., 562.
Wesley, John (1703-1791), 170.
✡ Wessely, Naphtali Hartwig (1723-1805), 184.
∴ Westcott, William Wynn (1848-1925), 298, 499, 506, 508, 536, 537, 568, 569, 571, 574, 575, 588.
Weston, 218.
∴ Whartons, 156.
∴ White, William Henry, 500, 502.
∴ Whitmer, David, 461.
Whitney, R. M., 627.
Whitton, Bridge, 462.
∴ Whytehead, Thomas Bowman, 400, 506.
Wickersham, George W., 596.
Wickliffe, John (1324-1384), 164.
∴ Wildey, Thomas (1783-1861), 212, 471.
Wiley, Robert, 461.
Wilhelmsbad, Convent of (1782), 353.
Wilkes, John (1727-1797), 476.
Willermoz, Jean, 353, 369.
William of Orange (1650-1702), 333.
Wilson, Charlotte M., 558.
Wilson, Sir Robert Thomas (1777-1849), 202.
Wilson, Thomas, 391.
✡ Winkoop, D., 615.
Witchcraft, 112.
Wittgenstein, Prince Louis of (1769-1843), 377.
✡ Wolf, Lucien (-1930), 410.
Wolff, Johann Christian (1690-1770), 152, 161.
∴ Woodforde, Rev. A. F. A., 501, 568.
∴ Woodman, Robert William (-1891), 500, 506, 528, 568.
∴ Woodruff, Wilford (1807-1898), 464.
∴ Wren, Sir Christopher (1692-1723), 175.

Xerophagists (Italian Mopses), 366.

∴ Yarker, John (1833-1913), 298, 337, 354, 407, 426, 444, 509, 520, 522, 524, 536, 537, 543, 571, 574, 575.
Yezidees, 131.
Ygdrasil, 604.
∴ Young, Brigham (1801-1877), 462.
Young England, 255, 435.
Young Europe, 255, 262, 435, 468, 636.
Young Germany, 255.
Young Ireland, 255, 435, 467, 468.
Young Italy, 205, 255, 434.
Young Poland, 255, 435, 453.
Young Switzerland, 255, 435.
Young Turk Movement, 585.
Youth Movement, 653, 654.
Youth Peace Federation, 652, 653.
Ypislanti, Prince Alexander, 439.
Yuan Shi Kai, 442.

Zahorowski, Hieronimus, 317.
Zam Bhotiva, 39.
✡ Zangwill, Israel (1864-1926), 410.

Zbaraski, Count George, 317.
Zend Avesta, 66.
Zeno, 98.
∴ Zetland, Earl of, 182, 278.
∴ Zinnendorf, Comte Nicholas (1700-1760), 332.
Zinnendorf, Rite of, 368.
✡ Zinovieff, *alias* of Apfelbaum, 651.
Zinzendorf, Count, 166, 170.
Zionism, 487.
∴ Zwack, Xavier, 371.'

OCCULT SCIENCE DICTATORSHIP

THE OFFICIAL STATE SCIENCE RELIGION AND HOW TO GET EXCOMMUNICATED

By
WILLIAM LYNE

E=MC²
©2002
WRL

A BOOK ABOUT ALTERNATE SCIENCE
FREE ENERGY
UFOs and GOVERNMENT THOUGHT CONTROL

CONTENTS

INTRODUCTION 1

CHAPTER I - UFO Counterintelligence:
Plugging Leaks in "Official" UFO History 17
CHAPTER II - Disappearing Tesla:
The Burial of Tesla and His discoveries 24
Tesla's Extraction of Cosmic Energy.... 31
CHAPTER III - Concealed Energy:
The Second Lie of Thermodynamics 38
The Universe is Winding Down 42
Advent of "SMS" 48
Isolated Systems and Irreversible Processes Forever?.. 50
Disappearing Mass?... 53
Lyne's Hypothesis... 58
CHAPTER IV - Secret Science:
Thought-Control on the Professional Level 64
Epistemology .... .64
Thought-Control of Scientists and Professionals 70
CHAPTER V - "Alien Visitors":
Thought-Control on The Grass Roots Level......... ,.................... 76
CHAPTER VI - The Roswell Hoax:
A Truth Seeker Goes to Roswell 91
CHAPTER VII - Fuzzy UFOlogy:
Keeping the Dupes Stupid 107
The CIA's Omnipresence in UFOlogy 108
My Mind and Thought-Control Ordeals..................................111
The CIA's UFOlogy Double-Whammy.................................... 131
Vascillating Vallee 137
Vallee and the Fraud Business..142
Vallee and the Secrecy Business.........., ... 146
CHAPTER VIII - La Revolution Technologist:
Turning Things Around
Through Technology 155
Bibliography...165
Index 167
Vita 174

in matter and antimatter

osmic Beam Puzzles
os Alamos Physicist

Keep an Eye on These Experiments
Physicists Prove a Watched Atom Never Changes the State of Its Energy

By Thomas H. Maugh II

OS ANGELES TIMES

Government researchers have for the first time proved a scientific principle that, in the arcane and often bizarre world of quantum physi demon- strat soil Ir qui h

Theoretically, by the tenets of the Zeno effect, if a nuclear bomb were watched intently enough, it could not explode.

atoms, they could readily determine which state the atoms were in.

The transition from the low to the high energy state takes a discrete amount of time, on the order of 250 milliseconds or one-quarter of a second. If the researchers turn on the radio frequency field and then check the atoms with the laser about 250 milliseconds

4-6 THE NEW MEXICAN Monday, September 1, 1997

In brief

Physicists find elusive subatomic particle

NEW YORK — Physicists have found evidence for an unusual new kind of subatomic particle that may help them explain how the uni

combine to make another subatomic particle known as a meson are the most basic particle

of the Uni- Wales.

In the 1970s, theoretical Ennackel

cientists find warp in pace-time continuum

▶ Researchers think they can prove large

object distorts the geometry of space and time — like a bowling ball rolling around in a fireman's net. In the intervening decades, scientists have successfully tested aspects of relativity, r fictional starship Captain Kirk have with flair.

B L.A. Of A

ame dragging had elusive, one of the tiers" of relativity. No cientist had found a its validity.

vo separate teams of and the

out such e," Nagle different racts with t collides tends to particles hese pi nto nega aic parti hich are sed sen

nic beam produced s, such as Alamos But the 0 times beams rator on

at Her system vay. Its bout the a mass sun. It second, l fields um. hard sition de of to be able, form ght- To ved

A8 ALBUQUERQUE JOURNAL

'Big Bang' Evidence Announced

CONTINUED FROM PAGE A1 04/24/92

It now seems clear that gravitational forces within these massive ripples in space and time were the key driving force, Smoot said, slowly drawing the thin gases into dense clumps that now form all matter.

"It's one of the major discoveries of the century," said physicist Joel Primack of the University of California, Santa Cruz. "In fact, it's one of the major discoveries of science."

The discovery is "unbelievably important," added physicist Michael Turner of the University of Chicago. "The significance of this cannot be overstated. They have found the holy grail of cosmology. ... If it is, indeed, correct, this certainly would have to be considered for a Nobel Prize."

The temperature and size of the structures discovered by Smoot and his colleagues also provide strong confirmation of the theory that as of the matter in

Dr. Geo California conferenc

the most diff for laymen assumption is ago all matter compressed in dense sphere period at the en

Scientists: Universe might end with Big Crunch

The Philadelphia Inquirer 4/26/02

PHILADELPHIA — Two astrophysicists, offering a new theory for the life and death of the universe, predict the Big Bang will be followed by a Big Crunch.

They predict that in about a trillion years, the universe will end in a fiery cataclysm that will give birth to a new universe.

And it will happen over and over again in infinite cycles, according to this new scenario, which represents the first serious alternative to the standard Big Bang theory to come along in 20 years.

The Big Bang theory holds that the universe had a definite beginning and appears fated to expand forever.

"You don't have to have a beginning," said Paul Steinhardt of Princeton University, who is proposing the new idea along with Neil Turok of Cambridge University. It is presented today in the journal Science.

The notion of a cyclical cosmos is not entirely new. Hindu philosophers centuries ago described a universe that went through cycles of birth, death and rebirth every 8.62 billion years, Steinhardt said. The time scale was a bit different than that proposed by the modern scientists, and Steinhardt and Turok are also proposing some bizarre physics involving a fifth make their sce-

Massive Project eeks To Measure ecks of Matter

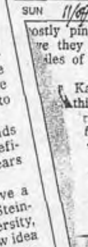
as Birch

SUN 11/6/99

ostly pinpricks of e they can pass les of rock and

Kazanas, a thinks these rgy neutri- foundation h of as-

t issue of ure that tect the articles an-style



clearer g black axies. high- other that el at ave be

ng or rs ct e in s

One of those instruments is the DUMAND, an array of sensitive light detectors now being installed three miles under the surface of the Pacific Ocean off the island of Hawaii.

The instrument, designed to detect neutrinos that have passed through the Earth's core, uses special tubes that spot tiny flashes of light. Those flashes are muons, short-lived particles created when neutrinos hit rock or water.

Ocean-floor drilling began on DUMAND, which stands for Deep Underwater Muon and Neutrino Detector, in July. It is expected to cost the Department of Energy $10 million and open for business in late 1993 or 1994.

No one is sure what DUMAND will find.

"It's a real risky project," Kazanas said. "Someone has to go three miles deep in the ocean and put the detectors there. It's never been done before."

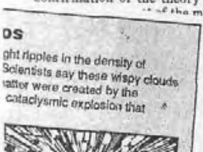
There is a chance the instrument won't be sensitive enough to detect the high-energy particles, he said. "And if these (galactic) sources don't make neutrinos, then it won't work anyway."

But, he said, "even if we see nothing, it will still tell us something."

In 1987, scientists inadvertently

OS

ght ripples in the density of Scientists say these wispy clouds atter were created by the cataclysmic explosion that



d helium. Gravitational into tight clumps of matter.

2. Stellar communities

alaxies and stars formed from e collapse of matter particles. tars performed like nuclear actors, changing hydrogen d helium into heavier atoms, luding carbon, nitrogen and ygen.

Bang-l Discove
Scientists Find Pr Of Universe's Orig

By Thomas H. Maugh II

LOS ANGELES TIMES

For the first time, scientists have observed long-sought relics of the "Big Bang," the primeval explosion that created the universe 15 billion years ago, a historic discovery that provides the strongest support yet for the controversial theory.

Those relics, massive wisps of gas more than 500

N

Lov abc

INTRODUCTION

This book continues where Occult Ether Physics leaves off, and explains how a scientific thought-control dictatorship has been created gradually, by combined coercive-monopolist interests, through a monolithic mass media, a compliant government, and armies of overt and covert government propagandists. These combined forces manufacture opinion and control most thought in our society, making it difficult for innovative individuals to express divergent scientific views without being virtually burned at the stake as "heretics" by quasi-religious scientific thought-control zombies, who have fallen victim to the pressure to believe the science that Big Brother wants them to.

In Occult Ether Physics (1997, 1998), Space Aliens From the Pentagon (1993, 1996), and Pentagon Aliens (1999), I expounded on and documented the most important discovery in science, Nikola Tesla's electrodynamic space propulsion. Tesla and his work were literally buried by Relativism, especially after 1919. I also exposed some paradoxes of Relativism, and have apparently had a significant influence beyond the credit afforded me, both in the UFO and the free-energy fields (which are really the same fields).

The motive for the Occult Science Dictatorship, which first began with the establishment of media-promoted Relativism, was to suppress, ridicule and conceal ether physics and free energy discoveries by the monopolist-owned media giants who obliterated Tesla's name, because he had made so many important free energy discoveries. They also purged the ether physics through which Tesla had realized his electrodynamic space propulsion method. This discovery threatened the "energy-heart" of perpetual security and control by the monopolies. Energy control was the cash cow that the monopolies relied on for continuity. He who threatened to sever the lines of energy dependency, threatened the flow of cash into the pockets of the monopolies, and had to be eliminated.

The Dictatorship promotes a type of sophisticated pseudo-science in areas where its interests are threatened. This diverts the inquisitive nature of those who believe the lies which suppress alternative science by declaring it "impossible" or "pseudo-science".

With gasoline and fuel prices generally at an all-time high, and California in an artificially-created energy crunch, the oil giants proposed to drill in the pristine Alaskan National Wildlife Refuge. They actually had the gall to attempt to drill in the Yellowstone. Meanwhile, SUV owners are lucky if they get seven miles per gallon. The propaganda I heard on the news in July, 2001 was that it came up in Congress that SUVs "are only getting 24 miles per gallon", but "should be getting 27 miles per gallon", but "manufacturers had refused to allow it." What a laugh. I wonder how much the SUV manufacturers had to pay for that lie.

I have in my files a list of over 200 patents for vapor carburetors, granted between the 1920s and 1940. Many of these carburetors were available to the public until 1940, from such manufacturers as the Holly Carburetor Company. These companies still have them in their files, and probably still possess prototypes and production models of them. So why don't they start manufacturing them again and sell them to us?

The Pogue carburetor was tested in 1935. A V-8 Ford coupe, driven from Winnipeg, Manitoba to Vancouver, B.C. Canada, got 130 miles per gallon. The government grabbed the carburetor and put it on the Sherman Tank, as WW II began. The tanks got 70 miles per gallon. Rommel's Afrika Korps ran out of fuel. After the 8th A.F. Ploesti (Romanian) oil refinery raid, the Germans resorted to American "acetylene chemistry" to produce gasoline from coal, but the Panzer Korps eventually ran out of fuel during the war. Hence, the Pogue carburetor became a "national security secret", denied to the public by extraordinary "national security" policies. The pattern of using the government's national security measures to unconstitutionally suppress the natural technological progress of our people has never been broken, at least not yet.

In 2000 it was announced that three Japanese-made "gasoline-electric hybrid" cars would hit the open market in 2001 (they are on the road now). The oil companies made a pre-emptive strike, fabricating an "energy crisis" in late 2000 to justify jacking up the price of international and domestic fuels. They also manipulated the markets and available energy resources to fabricate the "California energy crisis". This 'crisis' and the artificial increase in the price of Arab crude (the OPEC cartel was an invention of the international importers, not the Arabs, who only do what they are told), were used to excuse the sudden abandonment of the "conservation of our national resources"—a major issue back in 1973—incredibly, to support the continued suppression of domestic production in favor of importation of foreign crude, right in the middle of another (artificially-created) "fuel crisis"!

Domestic oil production has been suppressed since WW II in favor of the large—mostly Rockefeller-owned—international oil importers from sources in South America, the Middle East, Indonesia, etc. The oil-importers were able to get our government to limit domestic U.S. oil production, so they could buy cheap foreign oil and sell petroleum products domestically at artificially high prices at the expense of independent domestic producers, who were restricted to limited production. In Texas, in the '60s, the "five-day allowable" meant that domestic independent producers could pump crude oil only five days per month. Meanwhile, the international oil importers—which also owned plenty of domestic mineral deposits—still had their foreign oil coming in every day of every month without restrictions, so only the public, domestic independents and oil workers were harmed by the illegal and unconstitutional denial of income.

It is pertinent to note that, while we ordinary citizens are denied the fuel-saving carburetors, the oil companies ship their crude in giant, long, narrow tankers which exploit a highly efficient nautical principle, using ships with proportionally long hulls to move the crude from foreign locations to the coastal American refineries of the Rockefeller companies with the greatest efficiency. When it came to saving HIS money, John D. Rockefeller really didn't mess around, but he made certain that the U.S. government prohibited us from practicing the same kind of frugality.

In 1967, before the 1973 "fuel crisis", the government began to require special equipment on new automobiles for use in America. One of these devices was the catalytic converter. So what does a catalytic converter do? A catalytic converter contains "activated carbon"—impregnated with a catalyst, such as "platinum black" (platinum oxide) or "palladium black" (palladium oxide)—which converts hydro-carbon gases or liquids to carbon dioxide (CO_2), on contact. Hydro-carbon gases and liquids are fuels, which can be used to run your engine.

CO_2 is a fire extinguisher, especially for hydrocarbon fuel fires. If you put the hydrocarbons in the vapor state, from your gas tank, into a carburetor vacuum intake, it will help to run your engine. If you put CO_2 into your carburetor vacuum intake, it will partially "extinguish" the combustion in your engine, and rob you of gas mileage. So why does the U.S. government require auto manufacturers to install mandatory catalytic converters on your car, which convert usable, raw hydrocarbon vapor fuel from your gas tank, and CO (carbon monoxide) "blow-by" from your crankcase, into a "fire extinguisher", then put that fire extinguisher into your carburetor to interfere with the combustion in your engine, and rob you of gas mileage? And why did it require the manufacturers to do that in 1967? Because the oil companies wanted it to.

This book is about how powerful economic interests, which also control the government, the mass media and academic institutions, have used scientific thought-control to suppress free-energy technology. The UFO is only the most glaring and remarkable example. If you are intelligent enough to realize that man-made UFOs exist, then you know that "free energy inventions work", because a UFO is a free energy invention.

Because of the corrupt behavior of the mega-corporations, oil companies and our government, we must choose between them and the UFO and other free-energy technology, because they have left us no alternative, and because it is the rational and ethical thing to do. If there is "global warming", the chief culprits are the oil companies and our government. The ideas which I have advocated for over 30 years will remove this corporate-created red herring when put into effect.

Since it now appears that physics took a "wrong turn" after 1900 and abandoned the path of ether physics, after it had already produced so many of the world's greatest discoveries—the electron, radio, electrodynamic space propulsion, free-energy generators, and the "nuts and bolts" of electrical science as we know it, etc.,—we must now go back and build a new physics on the foundation of an integrated view of reality which includes ether physics.

We must rake government secrecy and misinformation aside, and take a closer look at the reality of that not-so-distant past of a century ago. The activity has already begun, and exciting times are ahead once more in the field of science.

Through the use of creative intuition, logic and reason, a web of "credential-ism" is removed, to reveal a body of scientific orthodoxy, full of contradictions, misrepresentations, false logic, and mysticism. As these are cut away, a soft underbelly of pseudo-science, which has been masquerading as absolute, immutable truth for almost a century is exposed. We must replace this soft underbelly with "abs of steel".

Speaking of the soft underbelly, contrary to what the public is led to believe, Relativism was invented not by Albert Einstein, but by a Croatian Jesuit Priest named R. G. Boscovich (1711-87), the first exponent of Newtonian ideas in Italy, who attempted to account for all physical effects in terms of action at a distance between point particles.[1]

The concept of the luminiferous ether was soon abandoned, in spite of Huygens' development of a brilliant wave hypothesis. A "corpuscular" theory of light—based on Newton's earlier hypothesis[3]—was adopted almost universally. So the ether theory had been abandoned before in this earlier mid- 18th century instance, in favor of a corpuscular theory of light. Ether theory was to be taken up again, then abandoned at the beginning of the 20th century, for the same reasons... Relativism and the corpuscular theory of light.

---

[1] Boscovich, Theoria Philosophiae Naturalis, Venice, 1763.

[2] Traite de la lum., p. 17

Back in the 18th century, Boscovich and his assistant Michell had taught the doctrine of the mutual interpenetration of matter, i.e., that two substances may occupy the same space at the same time, without excluding each other.[4]

In 1782, George Louis LeSage[5] published a proposal to account for gravitation by means of the ether theory of Renee Descarte, that a cloud of excessively minute particles—"ultra-mundane corpuscles" as he called them—which resembled the neutrinos of modern atomic physics, filled all space. According to Le Sage, the ether moved with great speed in all directions. When two particles or bodies of ponderable matter were near each other, they would partly screen each other from bombardment by this ether, so that less bombardment on their screened sides increased the force on their unscreened sides, pushing them together, appearing to be an attractive force between them, which Le Sage identified as Newton's force of gravity.

In 1889, Sir William Thomson[6] made the assumption that material atoms move through space without displacing the ether, a concept which reflected the Boscovich theory. But by 1896[7], he had redacted this theory in embarrassment, when he realized how ridiculous it was.

---

[3] Newton's Memoir, Phil. Trans, vii (1762); Royal Society, 9 Dec. 1676 (Birch iii p. 255)

[4] Priestley's History, i p. 392

[5] Mem. de Berlin for 1782 (Berlin, 1784, p. 404)

[6] Baltimore Lectures, pp. 413-14, 463 and appendices A and E

[7] Letter, Fitzgerald to Heaviside, 8 June 1846

Albert Einstein's wife, a Croatian scientist, was probably responsible for introducing Einstein to the Relativism of Boscovich. This is probably the origin of rumors that Einstein had "stolen" the theory of Relativity from his wife. When Tesla was asked about Relativism, he disdainfully exclaimed, "I have already heard about this from Boscovich." Tesla's well-known objections to Relativism were probably formulated while Einstein was still a boy.

Boscovich and Michell had arrived at their Relativist Theory by reflecting on Baxter's doctrine of "the immateriality of the soul", a religious doctrine appropriate to a church, but not really essential to a scientific laboratory. If the Jesuits had gained control of science more permanently, there would probably be prayer benches in physics labs today. They said 'an atom would have no definite size, but should be conceived as extending throughout all space'; and 'a molecule would consist not of atoms side by side', but of 'spheres of power mutually penetrated, and the centres even coinciding.'[8]

In 1846, Michael Faraday[9] appeared to briefly fall under the influence of Relativism, proposing to 'dismiss the aether', or to replace it by lines of force between centres', with 'the centres and lines of force together constituting the particles of material substance'. By 1851 however[10], the spell was broken, when Faraday began the modern era of theory which Relativism opposes today. Faraday suggested that if the existence of a luminiferous aether were to be admitted, it might be the vehicle of magnetic force, adding, 'if there be an ether, it should have other uses than simply the conveyance of radiations'. This sentence is regarded as the origin of the electromagnetic theory of light.

The religious nature of Relativism has changed very little since 1763. In the meanwhile, ether theory has prevailed, been rejected twice, and is now in resurgence. Both the 1763 attack by Boscovich and the 1905 attack by Einstein resulted in the suppression of ether theory. The present religious dogmatism of Relativism has petrified the field of physics in universities and student laboratories, and has driven the more creative and innovative students away, causing a "brain drain", and attracting the least creative students.[11]

---

[8] Cornu, Comptes Rendus xcii (1881), p. 1368

[9] Faraday, Thoughts on Ray Vibrations, Phil. Mag. (3) xxviii (1846), p. 1045

[10] Cornu, Comptes Rendus, xcix (1884), p. 1045; Exp. Res., § 3075

The flaky concepts of 'time travel', 'mutual inter-penetration of matter', 'atoms extending to infinity', 'matter or time dilation or compression', and 'time dragging' or 'frame-dragging', have taken a toll on the minds of the world's students and scientists for long enough, so that the time is now ripe for a change.

In Occult Ether Physics I asserted that a select few government and corporate scientists were privy to 'occult' scientific principles, based on ether physics, which Relativism is used to conceal. This is the "classified science" that the government conceals pursuant to the National Security Act.

Since the advent of government-manipulated UFOlogy, generally recognized as getting seriously under way with the 1947 Roswell Hoax, the theory of Relativity has been used more than anything else to scramble the brains of a clueless public, which has now been dumbed down by over 54 years of this theory, which has also been conspicuously used to conceal man-made UFOs with fabricated "parallel universes" (the Boscovich "mutual inter-penetration" theory), Einsteinian time-travel scenarios, "space-time warps", and all manner of contorted stories and fantasies related to Relativist theory, which have been manufactured by CIA committees of propagandists with Ph.D.s in Relativity theory.

I have watched the growth of the many false theories derived from Relativity since 1946—even before Roswell—but have never been fooled by them. I was there when the people of Roswell and surrounding areas, where the government UFOs were so often observed after WWII, were gradually coerced and intimidated into shutting up about "secret German aircraft" being developed by our government at nearby bases, and finally accepting the government lies that UFOs are alien spacecraft.

---

[11] William Cantrell, Commentary on Maxwell's Equations and Special Relativity Theory, Infinite Energy Magazine, Vol. 7, Issue 38, July/Aug. 2001

A believer in man-made UFOs, who doesn't happen to share a belief in space aliens as the responsible—or even the partially responsible—parties, is made to feel uncomfortable when among those of a UFOlogy gathering, sort of like an Atheist at a fundamentalist Christian revival meeting, or a microbiologist at a witch-doctor convention.

The pressure to believe—in such things as alien visitations, bogus UFO technology, mental telepathy with aliens, remote viewing, the Relativist religion, the Big Bang, bogus conspiracies, time-travel, abductions by aliens, "other dimensions", "inter-dimensional travel", "secret alien rulers of earth", ghosts, etc.—is not the natural product of truly free or healthy minds. It is the product of controlled minds, whether by thought control—as in the case of government-controlled scientists, professionals, or the public—or by mind control—as in the case of victims of covert, abusive government mind-control programs, who have been chosen and subjected involuntarily as victims to such programs, because they are suggestible people, many of whom already had neurological disorders which rendered them vulnerable in the first place.

As for "aliens", I am not saying that it is impossible for intelligent life to exist elsewhere in the universe. What I am saying is that there is no reliable evidence that such extraterrestrial beings have ever visited earth, even though there are many covert CIA programs, researchers, front-writers and speakers, who are paid to misinterpret, mal-interpret, or re-interpret vague, ambivalent, misunderstood, mysterious, or unexplained things in archaeology, ancient history and manuscripts, languages, cultures, art forms, mythology, religion or poetry; or in the 'exact' sciences, such as meteorology, physics, astronomy or paleontology... all to create false "documentation" for such theories.

These scenarios twist ancient history and archaeology around to make it look like flying saucers/UFOs, seen by millions of rational people, are the ships of space aliens, who have been "controlling humanity for thousands, even millions, of years", and even promote the lie that aliens have "seeded" human DNA with alien (or 'reptilian-alien') DNA.

The truth of the matter is, we don't know for certain that intelligent alien life forms exist elsewhere in the universe, having no direct knowledge to that effect, nor do we possess any object fabricated by an alien life form. While it may be probable that alien life exists elsewhere, we still do not know, and will probably never know for sure. Probability is not sufficient to base a reasonable belief that aliens are visiting and controlling earth, nor worth changing your life or opinions over.

We know that organic life forms—the only kind we do know of—are what aliens would also have to be, in order to survive in earth's environment, even with special clothing. Aliens would also have to come from a similar environment to earth. The nearest "habitable" planets are so far away, that even if traveling at the speed of light, the trip would take too long, even millions of years in the case of some of the star systems suggested. This gulf can't be traversed by "time travel" or "wormhole" scenarios buttressed by contorted Relativist mathematical equations and "explanations".

It has been estimated for example, that a ship traveling at only one-quarter the speed of light, which collided with a particle the size of a grain of sand, would be disintegrated. Extraterrestrials would have no compelling reason to come to earth, and if they had been coming here for years, they would have made their presence unmistakably known to us, but have not done so. Consequently, there is no reliable evidence or logic to back up such theories.

There is plenty of evidence and logic to back up the fact that the government created these programs to induce incredible delusions as a means of confusing intelligent, inquisitive minds, to conceal the fantastic, yet exclusively man-made electrodynamic space propulsion technology of Nikola Tesla. And these programs don't stop at the TV set. They extend into schools, textbooks, literature, movies, religion, and anywhere else the spooks consider fertile ground to plant the seeds of these lies.

They have made extensive studies of human psychology, religion, mysticism, mythology, folk-tales, ethnology, and psychiatry, specifically to learn the best ways of making these lies palatable, and to know beforehand just what kinds of people will respond "positively" to these perverse and downright silly lies.

There are many of these allegations, fantasies, and hoaxes, which can be traced directly or indirectly to government sources. The rest appear to be entrained and induced by the continuous government thought-control propaganda, always in such a way as to give the government "plausible deniability".

Whether you are willing to admit it, we are living in a time in which scientific thought is being systematically controlled by a hidden dictatorship, brought about by thought-control over most people in society. This thought-control sometimes takes the form of reticence, rejection of rational explanations, or active promulgation by dupes. The existence of this dictatorship is not obvious to the naive and trusting masses, because it is covertly carried out and enforced through means unsuspected by them, to conceal certain ("occult") scientific knowledge of UFOs and other free-energy technology, as well as to make them more pliable to the government's other Big Lies of a more political nature.

The secret technologies acquired by the government and placed under secrecy orders—under threat of punishment by law of those within the government, even by death without trial, should they dare to reveal these scientific secrets—all belong to the American people, because they paid for them, or belong to the inventors, scientists, or other individuals from whom the government stole or confiscated them at the point of a gun.

Most government secrecy is actually protectionism, for the benefit of private corporations, executed through abuse of the government's exclusive legal right to the use of force, to protect powerful, mega-corporate interests. The government cloaks these illegal actions beneath a veil of "national security", which gives the corporate protectionism a false aura of "the rule of law", patriotism, and legal force and effect, which equates "corporate security interests" with "national security interests".

Powerful economic interests are conservative in nature, in the sense that a large percent of corporate holdings are tied up in archaic fuels—like oil, natural gas and coal—in archaic technology-like cars, ships, planes and trains—and in other archaic and "conservative" resources. This conservatism "conserves" the resources of old, powerful families, old powerful corporations, old powerful financial institutions, old powerful political traditions, old powerful manufacturing interests, and old vested mineral interests, investments in "conventional" industry and technology, chemical cartels, and other things controlled by the few—threatened by new technology in the hands of the many—particularly that involving energy and transportation.

These conservative interests—usually portrayed as "liberals" —have resisted and fought tooth and nail to prevent free energy technology from taking hold for over a hundred years.

Of all the secrets being protected by the government on behalf of the coercive-monopolists who control it, none is more important that the flying saucer electrodynamic propulsion technology of Nikola Tesla, which is why there is still such a big hullabaloo over it, over 56 years after the U.S. government acquired it from Nazi Germany. This book explains the workings of this dictatorship, and points out why and how we should end it.

I heard one of the people who conspicuously spreads the alien line say, "I have no agenda". Anyone who says they have no agenda is a liar, because everyone has an agenda, unless they are unconscious, and he wasn't unconscious when he said it. So why did he lie? To make his "alien lies" more believable? The big question is, who has an "undisclosed" agenda?

My agenda is out in the open: To encourage people to realize that UFO technology exists; that it is free-energy technology; that it is exclusively man-made technology (not of alien origin), which humans were capable of constructing with existing technology at least ninety years ago; that it is ours because we paid for it; that we can build our own ships, using relatively simple technology; that there are many other free-energy technologies; that we can stick together and demand the right to use this technology, since the government has no legitimate right to conceal it, or to withhold it from us, or to prevent us from using it; and that the U.S. constitution required them to disclose the technology to us long ago.

Independent American owners of domestic untapped or over-regulated mineral interests have already been the victims of the mega-corporations, and it is probably too late for them to recoup their losses, which may be permanent. These losses have been effected through government limitation of domestic mineral production, ostensibly under conservation measures, under the false premise that there is a relative scarcity of such minerals, and that humans will continue to use these same minerals until they are "all gone", and that that time would come in "only a few years".

But the "conservation" of oil and gas has had an ulterior purpose, unrelated to the "national security interests." Through this knowingly ridiculous scenario, the international mineral corporations have concealed what they have known for many years: That technologies already exist to make their mineral investments virtually worthless, and that it is only a matter of time until intelligent individuals re-discover these secrets, and carry them forth to the public, despite the most fervid and vicious resistance.

Seeing the future inevitabilities, the coercive monopolists used regulations and policies to make certain that they would sell their holdings at a hefty profit before the bottom dropped out, thus leaving independent domestic mineral owners holding the bag, with their minerals mostly still in the ground, in the currently lucrative market. Their complacency as to their rightful share of profits from their minerals was purchased with false assurances that they would realize them in the future, and should have realized that they were being hornswoggled.

It is probably too late for them to sell their minerals at the artificially elevated prices of today, or even at a decent price. The reason for the sudden re cent change to "domestic production" (note

I didn't say "independent" domestic production) is because the internationals are rushing to unload their untapped domestic minerals before the other foot drops, and free-energy technology lowers the prices and value of their "archaic mineral resources".

Notice that the "first" places that the "new" president, George II and gang have begun to increase "domestic" petroleum production are areas like the North Slope of Alaska—the minerals of which are owned by "Republican" Robert O. Anderson of Roswell, former president of the Bilderberg Group, creator of ARCO and of the Diamond A Cattle Company, the largest land holding company in North America. To protect regular oil production from oil-shale production, Anderson purchased the rights to every known oil-shale deposit in North America. And, production is now increasing for "offshore" minerals which George Ist's company, Tidewater Oil Company of Houston, owns or specializes in producing. The production "incentives" for this were the artificially-created increase in the price of Arab crude, and the artificially-created California energy crunch. To show how certain the conspirators were that the election was in the bag, these "incentives" were begun even before the election of Nov. 6, 2000.

I believe that the proximate cause of the Sept. 11, 2001 terrorist attack on America was the sudden "switch" to domestic production of petroleum, and that it was ordered by Saudi oligarchs and Middle Eastern oil producers, who will lose untold billions due to the switch. The assault was intended to drive the American economy backward, to prevent the switch.

Soon, free-energy and alternate energy will lower the price and demand for petroleum. The internationals hope to sell as much as they can, then get out of the business—maybe even sucker the independents into buying their interests—while smaller independent domestic mineral owners will be a "day late and a dollar short". Waiting for years, expecting their "boat to come in", it will be disappointing when it turns out to be a fly-infested banana boat, with rotten fruit on board, because it arrived "too late." They will only have themselves, the mega-corporations, and the corrupt government to blame for this tragic eventuality.

When the automobile came into its own, the same thing probably happened to horse-breeders and wagon-makers, except they weren't international, coercive-monopolists who could control the government and educational institutions to prevent automobile technology from being known, understood, developed and used by the public, like UFO technology has been.

The independent mineral owners don't see the hand writing on the wall, because they are blinded by the Relativist baloney about "shrinking energy resources", a sham which suppresses their prosperity in the "national security interest", so the mega-corporate oil importers can take all the gravy, and consumers pay through the nose.

What a bunch of suckers. Domestic independent oil producers defrauded by international oil companies. They have quietly rejoiced in the high fuel prices in gleeful delusion, in anticipation of being the eventual beneficiaries of continually-rising prices. But this "deferred gratification" is without guarantees that they will ever be compensated for their losses.

The "hard sell" on conservation should have sent up a warning flag as to the fraud. After all, did they really think the consumers give a damn about conservation, at the cost of exorbitant prices?

I am not bringing this up to try to recruit the independent domestic producers into the free-energy revolution, although they certainly are welcome. I just want to explain how the Occult Thought-Control Dictatorship operates. It won't do the independents any good to fight us. We aren't to blame, though they would be better off supporting the revolution, which could usher them into a technical arena which might familiarize them with rational alternatives for developing their mineral interests in a profitable way in the future. There are always plastics, lubricants, hydrogen conversion, petrochemicals, and other technologies.

The people who peddled the wisdom of "conserving our domestic minerals" in the "national security interest" back in 1973, are the very same people who have sold us on drilling in the pristine

National Alaskan Wildlife Preserve. This should tell the idiots out there that groups like the "Trust For Public Lands" are temporary, tax-free land holding operations of these same people. Louder! I can't hear you! Does anyone hear them screaming about the Alaskan drilling? With all their money and influence, if they did scream, it wasn't loud enough for me to hear them, and I've been reading the papers almost every day.

The problem with holding large tracts of land—something apparently learned by the Diamond A Cattle Company—is the requirement for private owners to pay taxes on that land.

Enter the "public trust" huxters: A way to sucker the public, by bribing "lawmakers" to pass some "private conservation" laws—so that large, private land holders can enjoy their land tax-free, unlike the ordinary poor slob American—and even fool the dupes who work for them into thinking they are do-gooders, when in reality, they are duping useful idiots into helping them pull off another publically-subsidized fraud. Whenever it becomes expedient for them to cash in on their massive land holdings, they will suddenly take off their "sheep's clothing", and show themselves to be "wolves" (no insult to the wolves intended).

Anyone who says free-energy inventions will not work is either ignorant, a victim of government thought-control, or a liar with a vested interest to protect. Flying saucers/UFOs—seen by millions of people since the '30s—are graphic proof that they are wrong, and proof that some free-energy inventions work, and have been suppressed for over a century, as my research shows.

I predict that those who have held onto the Relativist Theory for so long will be sorely disappointed in the near future by the triumph of free-energy solutions, which will discredit the theory along with the associated Second Law of Thermodynamics and entropy theory.

These triumphs will be accompanied by the re-discovery or liberation of free-energy secrets which have been concealed by the corporate-monopolist state for at least sixty years. We must not let the terrorist assault of 2001 halt our revolution!

CHAPTER I - UFO COUNTERINTELLIGENCE:
Plugging Leaks in "Official" UFO History

The public's eventual apprehension of UFO electrodynamic technology and other free-energy discoveries—whenever these occur —will bring about a political, social and economic revolution in favor of greater individual sovereignty, freedom, and creativity. The electrodynamic technology (not to be confused with something shown in traditional science texts under "electrodynamics") has the potential to reduce environmental problems to a minimum, if not to eliminate them entirely.

Those seeking to create a one-world fascist globalism for almost a century, fearing the technology will destroy their sick dream, "nipped this energy revolution in the bud", as soon as its potential became apparent at the beginning of the 20th century.

In retrospect, it is an odd circumstance: "Advanced" electrodynamic technology was actually discovered before "archaic" aerodynamic technology was.

Since I am a "senior citizen", one would expect me to be engrossed in the archaic concepts of jet-powered UFOs ("aerodynes") or jet aircraft, while younger men pushed the envelope, spreading the "advanced" ideas of electrodynamic technology, which has always been the means of propulsion of true UFOs. Instead, that burden has fallen on me, while mostly younger gullible dupes gleefully blabber the CIA's misinformation for them. For example, in 1999 I learned that a younger English writer seemed to be saying the same things I do, until I looked beyond his claims. He copied my ad campaign and claims, but what followed was an account of archaic, aerodynamic German technology as a lame explanation for electrodynamic UFO technology. Up to his claims, he was a "mini-me"...exactly 1/8th my size, ethically, metaphysically, and creatively, and there the scaled-down similarities ceased, for he delivers nothing except misinformation. I have generated an anachronism: a pseudo-conservative British "young fogey".

While one would expect a younger man to be digging deeper, researching Tesla's "truly advanced" technology of 1894, he was extolling the virtues of more archaic WW II German "aerodyne" technology of the 1940s, which is limited to jet-powered aircraft. Whether he was actually employed by the spooks, or was unaware of their involvement, is immaterial to the fact that the publisher's interest in his redundant book was supported by the establishment. He calls his book "UFO Disclosures" (not the real title), an oxymoronic title, since all the "FOs" ("flying objects") he refers to ceased to be "Ued" (unidentified) after they were declassified and published in Janes' Fighting Aircraft of World War Two, in the post-warl940s. So where's the "UFOs" or the "Disclosures"? A little late, wouldn't you say?

Just as jet power is sometimes used today to conceal U.S. government UFOs, the jet and rocket-propelled aerodynes of the Third Reich were used to conceal Tesla-conceived Nazi electrodynes, in a cycle of anachronistic dualism—archaic, jet-propelled, aerodynamic technology, used to conceal older, more advanced electrodynamic technology. None of the aerodynamic technology has any relevance to true UFOs and represents an attempt to connect the remarkable performance of electrodynamic German UFOs to the "conventional, aerodynamic, German jet-propulsion" of 1945.

So, instead of calling his book "UFO Disclosures", I have renamed it "UFO Counter-Revolution", because it is counter-revolutionary propaganda designed to thwart the natural revolution which should result as the world realizes the concealed truth.

The book is an example of propaganda created by American and British intelligence agencies to stem the tide of truth presently flooding into the public's awareness, as I attempt to "de-program" the public's thought-control codes.

As an older revolutionary, I see the Brit as a "young fogey", counter-revolutionary type that the spook agencies were bound to manufacture as a "last ditch" defense against my expose of illicit British-American UFO secrecy and fraud. Their likely opinion, on seeing my book in Britain on a limited scale, was that "Those

American intelligence agencies aren't doing their job, so we'll have to do it for them." The British distribution of my books stopped, and the distributor was the least likely you would expect to fold under government pressure.

The Brit's job was to debunk all but the aerodyne technology of the Third Reich (none of which was ever used), as a "last-ditch" defense which I predicted in my 1996 second edition of Space Aliens From the Pentagon. This approach sought to peddle the myth that all man-made UFOs are aerodynamic advancements based on Nazi jet designs. This admits the existence of UFOs, but says they are all aerodynes. Either the Brit never saw a UFO or he was lying, because once you've seen one perform, you'll never confuse it with a jet-powered craft. If he were that stupid, he wouldn't have been able to write a book.

Most UFOlogists appear nuts by proposing outlandish "alien technology", while the Brit appears nuts by peddling archaic technology unrelated to UFOs. Instead of promoting the "alien" party line, he imitates my ads, but supports the conservative party line of conventional German aerodynamic jet technology that the oil companies love. If those experimental aerodynamic saucers actually worked, they would get much fewer miles per gallon than conventional jet aircraft, since they can't glide, and would also create more drag and friction at supersonic speeds due to increased surface area. This is a problem that electrodynamic UFOs don't have, since the increased surface area helps the electrodynamics work better.

The Brit poses as avant garde, propagating conservative, old ideas. Instead of studying electrodynamic technology, which allows a craft to dart and zip quicker than a hummingbird, and exceed the equivalent of Mach 30 ("equivalent" because they are "inertia-free"), he extols huffing and blowing by jet engines, blasting the ships around like tired old buzzards with ragged wings. The Canadian "AVRO" aerodyne project served the same misinformational purposes in the '50s and '60s and was run by ex-Nazis, continuing the Third Reich's misinformational program for the Canadian and American governments. The disfunctional aerodynes were declassified after the war, and the AVRO program succeeded in finally DIS-proving the several inadequate aerodyne saucer concepts.

The British don't seem to understand our radical. American ways, which tend to make their "spookery" comparatively fuddy-duddy. Nonetheless, I overestimated the public's capacity to see through corny lies in the past, and shouldn't be surprised if many are duped by them in the future. P.T. Barnum really knew his people.

The electrodyne technology was concealed by aerodyne technology, by the spooks, since they didn't want anyone tracing it to the discoveries of Nikola Tesla, whom they thought they had successfully buried forever, until I resurrected him. This suggests that those who obliterated Tesla's name and discoveries from the public consciousness in 1943 included the agents of Nazi Germany. I documented Tesla's unwitting connection to the Nazis in Pentagon Aliens,

I was fraudulently induced to include some misinformation in my 1993 first edition of Space Aliens From the Pentagon, My 1996 second edition redacted it. The alleged "ships"—actually non-flying models of Felix Schauberger—were said to be electrodynamic, when in fact they were designed to use aerodynamic principles, but never flew to my knowledge, and probably wouldn't have been able to get off the ground.

After discovering that the photos of the alleged "ships" actually depicted copper models of two of Schauberger's prospective designs, claimed to fly by means of internal fans intended to suck air in the top and to blow it out the bottom, allegedly powered by a Schauberger "water vortex" turbine, I felt the jackass ears growing on my head. Since the models resembled air conditioner vents, I dubbed them "flying air conditioner vents".

I was enraged after being burned by this misinformation, but blamed myself for not exploring the allegations and documentation more carefully. The person responsible for it has admitted to me that he created these impressions to sell books, without really understanding the technology. His books were based partially on the "declassified" false aerodyne technology released in Germany by the

CIA for obvious reasons. I give him due credit for his honesty. He said he made plenty of money from those books, so much that he doesn't care to sell any more. I vowed never to be duped like that again.

There are basically three groups who propagate the alleged German aerodyne stories: (1) The Naziphiles, motivated by a desire to establish that the technology was a German "Aryan" discovery (but these Bubbas apparently have never seen a UFO in action, and are too "untechnical" to realize that electrodynamics is involved); (2) the CIA misinformationists, who use the inept declassified aerodyne technology the same way the Nazi elite did, to conceal the real, electrodynamic Tesla technology; and (3) the dupes who believe that flying saucer technology in fact had an exclusively German origin, unaware that "real" UFOs use exclusively electrodynes invented by Tesla. (There are some who actually believe that the Schauberger "flying air conditioner vent" was a "gift" to the Nazis from "aliens", tantamount to saying that the flush toilet is a "gift of the gods.")

A fourth group, which studies WW II-era Nazi UFO technology and secret weapons of the Third Reich, had realized that the aerodyne stuff was not the correct story. This group went wherever the evidence led it, bringing them to my work. I had firm documentation of things they had never heard of. The group had all the best research available from "conventional" sources, and some from extraordinary sources, yet could not explain the electrodynes mentioned in reliable reports which originated in wartime Germany.

After the war, the CIA controlled all information available from "conventional" sources, leaked out declassified aerodyne technology for misinformational purposes, and successfully prevented the leakage of classified electrodynamic technology. The information from unusual (non-CIA) sources—mostly ex-Nazi Germans in South America—was misunderstood by them.

My evidence on the electrodynes showed they were older than the aerodynes, while existence of the electrodynes isn't even admitted in conventional research. The German research group meanwhile unearthed documentation which corroborated some of my unusual information, and published it in their papers. The symbiosis between this group and me soon attracted the attention of the spooks.

My first edition of Space Aliens From the Pentagon was literally hacked out of raw paper and inked by me, myself and I, as a "samisdat", while I was still in the horrible throes of judicial abuse, engineered by CIA mind-control rats. My nervous system was still in upheaval, with my sweat and blood splattered all over those books, with my anger boiling over onto the pages.

I'm not impressed by another redundant blow-by-blow account of the WW II aerodynamic developments of the Third Reich, including jet-propulsion technology, used now as disinformation. It has no relevance except as misinformation. Does anyone seriously believe that the REAL electrodynamic German flying disc technology would be published in Janes', at a time when they wouldn't even publish the statistics of many propeller-driven planes?

I lost interest in the aerodyne stuff in 1953 after witnessing the performance of a real, electrodynamic UFO, and realizing that the aerodyne technology was irrelevant and obsolete even before it was invented and developed.

The Nazi aerodyne projects were mostly smoke and mirrors, created as counterintelligence buffers to conceal the electrodyne technology. The CIA picked up where the Gestapo left off. Because of the inadequate explanations, Henry Stevens, of the German Research Project, Gorman, California, had begun to "look around the edges" of those buffers, and found me. That opened up a whole new set of possibilities which were supposed to remain hidden.

In 1999 the Brit launched an Internet attack on Stevens, with an oblique attack on me, intended to break the linkage between Stevens and me. Steven lives in an isolated location, with no way of knowing of, or having an opportunity to respond to, the Brit's viper-tongued attack, since he was unconnected to the Internet. He was considered an easy target in the cowardly attack by the Brit.

The Brit's attack was intended to drive a wedge between my small contingent and Stevens' potential supporting group, a point of weakness in the linkage. Stevens responsibly attempts to research and terret out the German UFO history, while my faithful readers and I believe in a purely Tesla electrodynamic technology, which fell into German hands in the 1930s.

I learned about the Brit's attack when my name came up, only because I was E-mailed by researcher and writer Remy Chevalier, with whom I had communicated on occasion. The Brit's attack on Stevens was a "divide-and-conquer" strategy, designed to take pot-shots at me behind my back and split Stevens off, since he had cited my work in his, and had even unearthed some material corroborating my work. Since I had not cited Steven's work until 1996, I knew the Brit had my second edition, but the Brit lied to conceal that.

Once I was brought into the discussion by Chevalier, I acted as an intermediary between Stevens and the Internet discussion group, and successfully exposed the Brit's undisclosed agenda, supported by Stevens' responses that he faxed to me.

The attack walked on thin ice, since it risked giving us greater exposure. Neither Stevens nor I were expected to respond or to know of the attack. The Brit focused on the error I had redacted four years earlier, in correspondence and radio interviews, and three years earlier in my 1996 second edition, which the Brit possessed. I have found such dishonesty to be typical of misinformationists.

I have been pulled into Internet donnybrooks on several occasions, the usual tenor of the attacks being personally directed at me, rather than at my work. These discussions occur daily on the Internet without my knowledge, but this was one I knew about only because I was notified by someone who knew of me.

Nikola Tesla got lift-off even before the Wright Brothers' first flight at Kitty Hawk, North Carolina, and had difficulty in maintaining his silence following the Wright Brothers' success.

It took terrible discipline for Tesla to hold his tongue under such circumstances. Truth is stranger than fiction, and that truth is among the strangest I know of. Under the circumstances, it can be explained and documented, including Tesla's motivations and political opinions at the time. His silence becomes clear and logical if you think about it.

CHAPTER II - DISAPPEARING TESLA: The Burial of Tesla and Rebirth of His Discoveries

Nikola Tesla was buried, both literally and intellectually, in January, 1943. In 1993, I disinterred his most important work, the discovery of electrodynamic space propulsion, which he discovered in the 19th century, and documented it more fully in 1998.

Does the name Nikola Tesla even ring a bell with you? If not, let me first say that Tesla was a pioneering inventor and technological philosopher whose science and ideas we use today more than ever before, yet only recently has his name resurfaced in alternative literature. His name was once a household word, sixty or seventy years ago. Thirty years ago, only a tiny few faithful and persistent admirers and experimenters knew of Tesla's work, yet there are those within the inner sanctums of the 'national insecurity' establishment who have never forgotten it. You've most likely heard the name being used in current alternative literature by the many johnny-come-latelys who have recently jumped on the bandwagon of nouveau "Tesla experts". That's O.K., but what took them so long? You can't really blame them for being so suddenly astounded, considering the long and thorough eradication of Tesla's name from encyclopedias and books on science, invention and technology, becoming the "invisible man" of science history.

The conspicuous vacuum created where the mention of Tesla should have been, as one who made such important contributions to science, technology, and the quality of our lives, raises ominous questions as to why his memory became virtually stricken from history almost the day after his death. What did Tesla discover which threatened the powers that be? Since we already know about the many patented inventions, my assumption has always been that the unknown, still classified works were far in advance of the published ones, and were in realization of projects which Tesla had previously announced or had already tested and developed, but had not yet "...given to the world".

The discoveries in question—the very existence of which is categorically denied by establishment and corporate scientists—were such things as........

- electrodynamic flying saucers
- "free" or "environmental" energy discoveries
- transmutation of elements
- alternative "ether" physics and science
- Tesla's Dynamic Theory of Gravity

We know from available documentation and reliable sources that these discoveries and developments were actualized by Tesla before his death, yet are still classified. Within his many patented inventions, numerous startling discoveries and surprises have been recently found by careful researchers and experimenters, which show in retrospect that his claims were modest.

Tesla was born in Smiljan, Lika, Austro-Hungary (now Serbia), in 1856, and died Jan. 3, 1943 in New York City, An early biography, Prodigal Genius, the Life of Nikola Tesla, by John J. O'Neill, was initially published three times in November, 1944. In case you are wondering, the three publishings in the same month were not due to landslide sales at the bookstores, but rather to O'Neill's having been threatened and censored by the FBI, and forced to republish several times because of their deletion and censoring of material which to this day is still classified. It was odd, given Tesla's repeatedly unsuccessful efforts to get the attention of the War Department, met with ignorance and shoddy treatment. It was not until after it came to their attention in 1942, that the Nazis were building flying saucers and other 'fantasy' weapons based on Tesla's inventions, that the U. S. Government became so concerned. So why hide something from the American public today which the Nazis stole before 1934? In the case of (flying saucer) electro-propulsion, this invention is not only classified, but the very existence of it is categorically denied by the government, while its covert agents in the UFOlogy. community attribute it to extraterrestrial, "alien" origins. What better way to deter civilian scientific investigation into the obvious?

I first heard of Tesla in 1943, as a child of four, when his death was lamented by Elmer Schlosser, a neighborhood adult friend who first told me about him. I also once had in my collection of old books a well-preserved, beautiful old commemorative volume issued by the 1893 Chicago World's Fair---the Columbian Exposition—which featured Tesla as its honored guest. There were numerous photos of Tesla's inventions and some articles. Today, over 54 years after Tesla's death, experimenters are still conducting exciting and trail-blazing experiments with Tesla's discoveries of over 100 years ago, and continuing to find 'hidden' meanings in some of his early writings and patents.

There have been countless speculations as to what Tesla's most secret discoveries were. At the time of his death, there was the approximate equivalent of a railroad boxcar load of Tesla materials confiscated by the FBI, from around four different storage locations and Tesla's hotel storage and hotel room and safe. Of this, a total of only about 150,000 documents were released to Tesla's Yugoslavian relatives, now held by the Tesla Institute in Belgrade. These documents and old models, primarily of a historical nature and already in the public domain, comprise most of the published Tesla materials of the institute, and of the world.

The rest of the huge volume of Tesla documents and models was retained from early 1943 to late 1945 by the Custodian of Alien Properties, unclassified, in a warehouse in New York City, because the government's "experts" had declared in 1943 that none of it was worth classifying. The government "expert"—the equivalent of today's director of the CIA's Office of Scientific Intelligence—was a professor at M.I.T. In 1938, Tesla had written a critique of the huge Van de Graaff generator, and pointed out that one of his small Tesla coils would outperform the huge Van de Graaff, which was so large that it was housed in an aircraft hanger. That critique and

Tesla's opposition to Relativism provoked the ire of the M.I.T. professor, a proponent of the "new" Relativism. For that infraction of the "rules", Tesla's lifelong work was treated to the posthumous revenge of the MIT Relativist professor, by having his work stored in a dark warehouse until the end of WW II. Following the arrival in America of the scientists and the secret war files of Nazi Germany, acquired in 1945 under Operation Paperclip, the spooks from Wright-Patterson Air Force Base hurried up to the warehouses of the Custodian of Alien Properties, and took possession of all the Tesla materials. They removed them to Wright-Patterson, and every bit of them have been classified at the highest level ever since; the government having since declassified NONE of them. Thus, the Tesla materials, which the government's Relativist "science expert" had declared in 1943 contained "nothing worth classifying", is still classified today, 58 years later.

The government distributed false rumors that "Tesla never kept notes", which was known to be a blatant lie, since the government had the tons of notes, papers, models and related things, and knew Tesla "kept massive notes". The notes on his Colorado Springs experiments alone (1899-1900) were enough for a large-format book of 433 pages.

Considering the fact that Tesla continued to do research at his Colorado Springs laboratory for at least six more years—for which we have no notes—there is ample cause for believing that those subsequent experiments involved discoveries that are even more astounding than any nuclear weapons research. It is known from Tesla's own words that these additional experiments at Colorado Springs were 'much more far-reaching' than his disclosed experiments.

The remainder of Tesla's papers and possessions which were still classified—literally tons of notes, documents, drawings, models, and plans—have been the subject of a lot of speculation. In 1979, when I requested access to Tesla papers held at the J. Robert Oppenheimer Study Center, at LANL ("Los Alamos National Laboratory"), the government admitted possession, but denied access for lack of the appropriate "badge" (security clearance). So I know that Tesla's papers are now held at least in part, in Los Alamos, New Mexico. On that same day, I found the hydrogen bomb plans on the public access shelves, yet was denied access to Tesla's papers. What could be more sensitive than the hydrogen bomb, which was invented by Tesla prior to 1943?

After the war, in 1946, at age 8, when our family returned to the little west Texas town of Kermit, I visited the radio shop of my old friend, Elmer Schlosser, and lugged home a pile of salvaged electronic components that he gave me, after a savvy little Tesla talk. That was the same year that I began to research the German flying discs seen over the region. Elmer, who had grown up in the Cimarron Territory, near Tesla's Colorado Springs laboratory, during the time that Tesla was experimenting there, said the discs were "Tesla discoveries".

I assembled the components that Elmer gave me, ran a ground line up a tree, placed my newly assembled device in my tree house, erected an antenna constructed of screen wire, and attempted to 'radio in' some power. Unsuccessful, I nonetheless continued my experiments with electromagnetism for eight more years, until I set them aside for twenty years. In 1975 I resumed my "Tesla project", eventually built a number of Tesla coils, and even began giving some lectures and demonstrations in the Santa Fe area to small gatherings. In late 1974, the CIA had commenced a pattern of harassment originally intended to "motivate" me to accept an executive position later offered to me by George Bush in early 1975. I rejected the offer and immersed myself deeply in intense research, and the harassment continued and intensified so much that it finally brought my research to a temporary standstill between 1986 and 1992. As soon as I had time to catch my breath, this provoked the first publication of my book, Space Aliens From the Pentagon, in 1993, Occult Ether Physics: Tesla's Hidden Space Propulsion System and the Conspiracy to Conceal It (revised second edition, 1998), concentrated on the 19th century "aether" science leading up to Tesla's discovery of electrodynamic space propulsion, and I also included a couple of astounding, Relativity-destroying "free-energy" discoveries or rediscoveries.

Tesla's holy grail was to build his "electric flying machine", and to draw some of the "environmental energy" out of the cosmos- This plan involved a theory of radioactivity under development by Tesla in the 1890s, which entirely presaged and conflicted with currently accepted Relativism, quantum mechanics, and nuclear energy theories.

To Tesla, so-called "atomic energy" was in fact the result of "environmental energy" emanating from the cosmos, and made known to us via "radioactive" matter, which he said had the peculiar property of resonating and reacting with ubiquitous "cosmic radiation"—a term used by Tesla before 1900—which he called "Primary Solar Rays."

The "cosmic radiation" of which Tesla spoke was of much higher frequency than what we call "radioactive emanations", which to Tesla were the result of a 'step-down' process, in which certain peculiar matter reacts to and converts the ubiquitous, omnidirectional cosmic radiation—which today we call "zero point radiation" ("ZPR") —from higher frequencies, to lower, more useful and appropriate frequencies, such as gamma, x-ray, ultraviolet, visible, infrared radiation, as well as magnetism and even electrical current. These step-down frequencies are much easier to detect and measure than the ZPR. Relativists deny the Primary Solar Rays exist.

The existence of the ZPR was well known to Tesla in the 1890s, but it was not until recently that it became scientifically permissible to even suggest a wave theory, since Relativists cling to their corpuscular theory. This radiation is of such high frequency that it normally passes through space, the earth, and our bodies without harm or incident, in constant equilibrium, because its short wavelengths do not normally react or resonate with the atoms of most matter. It is so-called "radioactive matter"—according to Tesla—-which has a peculiar atomic structure which reacts with this radiation to produce radioactivity. Atomic energy, to Tesla, comes from the ZPR, not atoms. If a lump of radium, for example, could be shielded from the effects of the ZPR, said Tesla, it would no longer show radioactivity.

Most naturally radioactive elements are dense and "unstable"—that is, they are said by the Relativists to "decay" as radiation is emitted, to elements of lower atomic numbers. The Relativists—with whom Tesla vehemently disagreed—believe that naturally radioactive elements spontaneously lose mass in the process of such "decay", so that the energy released as radioactivity is equivalent to the lost mass according to Einstein's equation, $E = MC^2$.

This always seemed untenable to me, since such elements would have to have been, by the related cosmological myth of the "Big Bang", older than the earth, yet geological examination shows that they are found to have evolved through physical processes which have occurred within natural structures here on earth. If such elements had been part of the alleged Big Bang, they would have fully decayed before now. On the other hand, if such elements are in the process of being continually evolved by natural conditions within earth, as well as in outer space, through electrical, magnetic and other physical forces, the reasons for their presence is more reasonable. I don't think this is any surprise to the national security elite. Something else is going on, and someone else knows it.

If non-radioactive elements are converted into radioactive ones by the forces of nature, what are these processes? In 1937, in one of Tesla's famous birthday announcements[1], Tesla stated that he had developed a process for the "manufacture" of radium (transmutation from other elements), which was so efficient that it could be sold for $1.00 per pound. He also announced that he had "absolutely developed" a system for the interstellar transmission of energy. He said he had been working in "several laboratories", but refused to disclose their locations. His working model, he said, "...employs more than three dozen of my inventions. It is a complex apparatus, an agglomeration of parts." It could convey "...several thousand units of horsepower to other planets, regardless of the distance", traveling "...through a channel of less than one-half of one-millionth of a centimeter." Further, he said, "...it is not an experiment. I have built, demonstrated and used it. Only a little time will pass before I can give it to the world."

---

[1] New York Times, July 11, 1937 (pg. 13, col. 2)

That time never came. In less than six years, his death occurred in the presence of two FBI agents and a German nurse[2], and the Nazis had his plans under active development as early as 1934.

These facts demonstrate that even in his 80s, in 1937, Tesla was involved in secret research at several undisclosed laboratories, on technology which today remains highly classified, yet neither the general public nor anyone at the International Tesla Society seemed to have any idea as to the details, since they had been concealed from us by the "powers that be". In fact, the CIA itself had a hand in the founding of the International Tesla Society in Colorado Springs in 1986, to avoid the contingency of Tesla's electrodynamic discoveries coming to light. When this began to happen, the society was folded up.

Through some ingenious investigating, it is possible to reconstruct some of the facts. In focusing on just Tesla's publicly available technology, it is obvious that, even in it, there is the air of the fantastic, the almost incredible. Taking this a step further, it is possible to reconstruct much of the unknown Tesla discoveries from available sources, in order to see what has been carefully hidden from us by our own government and the corporate fascists who control it.

Tesla's Extraction of Cosmic Energy

According to Tesla, the ether is not an "energy source", since it is composed of tiny independent "carriers immersed in an insulating fluid"[3]. The ether, therefore, is a "medium" through which energetic transferences and transmutations can be effected, and electric and magnetic "tubes of force" can be created and carried into a body from space, giving it momentum to propel it.

---

[2] John J. O'Neill, Prodigal Genius. The Life of Nikola Tesla, John J. McKay Company, Inc. NY (Nov. 1944)

"Cosmic radiation" is not the ether, but "starlight"—what Tesla called the "Primary Solar Rays".[4] This extremely high-frequency light—of much tinier wavelength than visible light, U.V., X-rays, and gamma rays (also emitted by our sun and other stars)—is the ZPR. Tesla stated that the Zero Point Radiation gives rise to secondary radiations through impact with the cosmic dust of space, which are commonly called "cosmic rays" today.

In 1935[5] Tesla objected to the observations of the German radiologist, Dr. Werner Kolhoester, saying his observations were another confirmation of his own theory of cosmic rays originally advanced in l896,but asserted that Kolhoester's 1935 theory was erroneous, because light is a wave motion of definite velocity (C), determined by the elastic force and density of the "medium", while cosmic rays are "...particles with velocities determined by the propelling force...", which therefore could be much slower or faster than that of light. Since the velocities of the two radiations would not (and could not) coincide, Kolhoester's observations which coincided with the light observed, would not be accurate. Here, Tesla distinguished between the "cosmic radiation" he proposed in 1896, which was particles, which were propelled by ultra-high-frequency "primary solar radiation", which I equate to the ZPR, which are light rays traveling at C. Because of their extremely high voltages levels and frequencies, they can propel "cosmic dust" particles faster than C, when of sufficiently high voltage levels and frequency.

---

[3] T.C. Martin, The Inventions, Researches and Writings of Nikola Tesla,The Electrical Engineer,
New York (1894)

[4] Nikola Tesla (as told to Alfred Albelli) Radio Power Will Revolutionize the World, Modern Mechanics and Invention (July, 1934)

[5] Nikola Tesla, German Cosmic Ray Theory Questioned, New York Herald Tribune (March 3, 1935)

In his "objection" letter of 1935, at a time when he was involved with the German "p2" project which I wrote about in Pentagon Aliens, Tesla gave a clue to his electrodynamic space propulsion system, which if one is to take Tesla's statements seriously, means that a "particle"—or a ship—in space can be propelled very fast by electromagnetic wave radiation—light waves—which in this case are the "Primary Solar Rays", the ZPR.

The Primary Solar Rays (the ZPR) are ubiquitous in the universe and in direction of approach at a given point, with frequencies so high that there is normally no reaction with atomic matter, being able to pass through "...thousands of miles of solid matter..."[6], and therefore can approach an object on earth even from the direction of the ground. This makes this invisible "solar energy source" available around the clock, though it is said to slightly vary cyclically. This radiation should not be confused with so-called "photon energy", which is a Relativist fantasy involving "corpuscles" or "particles" of light. What a laugh.

In the on-going Relativist theory, Wolfgang Pauli, in 1933, invented the neutrino theory, in response to Niels Bohr's radical finding that, if experiments say so, the Law of Conservation of Energy does not hold for β ("beta" or electron) emission and absorption processes.[7] Pauli's theory sought to explain a loss of heat energy in beta decay, which the Relativist theory was unable to account for or measure in such processes as K-capture, in which a neutrino is emitted when a proton is converted into a neutron. The reverse process is the conversion of a neutron into a proton, thus emitting a beta particle (electron) and sucking a neutrino back into the atom from surrounding space. Other particles are involved, but these are the ones of interest. It should be of interest to you that Bohr was not a Relativist, and held a sort of "free-energy" view. It is also interesting to note that Bohr attended the opening of the Tesla Museum in Belgrade. Without Bohr's work, the A-bomb would have been impossible at that time.

---

[6] Nikola Tesla, Radio Power, etc. (Supra)

[7] Gamow, George, Thirty Years that Shook Physics, Doubleday & Company, Inc., Garden City, New York (1956)

The acquisition of energy from the ZPR was regarded by Tesla as a "step-down" process, in which the super-high-frequency light waves were stepped down to a more familiar and usable form, such as 'normal' radioactivity, heat or electrical energy. In the K-capture process, an element is transmuted into another element, for example, iron to manganese—and in the reverse process—manganese to iron. Monoenergetic neutrinos are ejected in the first process, and sucked back into the iron in the reverse process, but what happens to the damned X-radiation emitted in the first half of the reversible process, Einstein? And how is it mysteriously "replaced" in the reversed half?

The neutrino explanation has always appeared as a loophole in the Relativist theory, since the missing momentum and heat, and misconceived "photon energy" (actually electromagnetic light wave radiation), were impossible to explain without the invented neutrino theory. Furthermore, since the neutrino is a neutral particle, it is composed of tiny positive and negative charges which do not exist according to Relativism, since Relativism holds that the electron is "indivisible", as the main foundation of quantum mechanics. With this argument, I now have some of my Relativist friends denying the existence of neutrinos.

In contradicting their own theory, admitting that the tinier positive and negative charges composing the neutrinos exist, the Relativists inadvertently acknowledged the "building blocks" of electrons and protons. As such, neutrinos appear to be the aether. Since neutrinos are so tiny, they must have the capacity to react with the ZPR, in bringing about so-called "nuclear radioactivity". In so doing, what are the nuclear characteristics of an element which produces radioactivity naturally? How can a non-radioactive element be made to mimic these qualities, in artificially-induced radioactivity"? If neutrinos are prevalent in K-capture (transmutation), and its reversal, it seems that an element which is made to oscillate between two elements (to transmute and de-transmute), would have to react with the ZPR. Since there is excess energy involved, as the neutrinos (ether carriers) move in and out, energy is being transferred to and from the element, the ZPR, and the ether.

We know that synthetic radioactivity can be induced by exposing an element to appropriate radiation, which is only a reversal of the process which initially created the radiation, as a verification of Tesla's theory.

In K-capture in iron, when the K-shell electron passes into the nucleus, converting a proton into a neutron, not only is a monoenergetic neutrino emitted, but also an X-ray, when the vacant K-shell takes on another electron. Though the iron atom is now a manganese atom, and has emitted energy, it has the same mass number. Shouldn't the mass number reflect the loss of energy? Where is your damned "$E = MC^2$?" There is also the question, "Where did the incident particle beam energy which induced the K-capture go? If the neutrinos taketh away, they also giveth back, as "carriers". Of course, one can say that the electrons involved do not weigh enough to be reflected in the mass number. The Relativists admit (or assert) that the neutrinos carry energy, just as the aether carriers do. Recent Japanese experiments showed that neutrinos are plentiful in space. The greatest source of free-energy appears to be the ZPR.

If the number of neutrons in a disintegration product (the atom transmuted to) is too small compared to its number of protons, the nucleus will tend to reduce its charge by one unit by positron emission, and will always have 1 Mev less kinetic energy than if beta decay had occurred.[8] Since a light element (below atomic number 19) will transmute in U.V. light, radioactivity in light elements can be induced very easily. When Joliot and Curie bombarded aluminum with alpha particles, they observed that neutrons and positrons were emitted. When they removed their alpha source, the positron emission did not cease, but decreased exponentially with time, as if the aluminum were a naturally radioactive element, for a period of three minutes.[9] The positron will always carry 1 Mev kinetic energy, and may be used for energy production. Since this process can be effected by use of an U.V. incident particle beam on the light elements, and will produce positrons at 1 Mev of kinetic energy, it may be used in what I call "leapfrog technology", which can be used for transmutation processes which will manufacture elements in much greater quantities than could be effected by the huge accelerators at such places as U.C. Berkeley.

---

[8] R. E. Lapp and H. L. Andrews, Nuclear Radiation Physics, Prentiss-Hall, Inc., New York (1950).

Based on the Tesla Primary Solar Ray theory, using the K-capture process, this is my explanation for a device I call Free Energy Surprise (© 1997, Wm. R. Lyne, ISBN 0-9637467-6-6, $10.00, Creatopia Productions, General Delivery, Lamy, New Mexico 87540, Tel/Fax 505-466-3022), a technical report which includes a set of plans and documentary photos.

I got the idea for this device from a statement by Nikola Tesla, concerning "special" uses for iron, to capture the ZPR/Primary Solar Rays. Whether or not this is exactly what Tesla meant, I believe it verifies his statement concerning special properties of iron.

The device, composed of steel pipe and bar stock (about 10 lbs.), is stimulated with a 15 kv, center-tapped transformer. It operates in several modes, but in what I call the "hum" mode shows an input of 35 watts and a secondary activity of 42.6 kw, operating at or beyond the approximate K-capture voltage on each leg, ca. 7,110 volts (the K-capture voltage for iron), at the standard 60 cps. The low frequency current goes into the mass of the iron (not a 'skin effect'). The iron seems to be going to manganese and back to iron, 60 times per second. This idea is based on what appeared to be the appearance of a purple area near the top of the pipe which I recognized to be the color of manganese dioxide. The extra electrical energy might be the product of interaction with the ZPR, the ether (neutrinos?), and the iron. Since manganese is the next element down on the periodic chart, with the same mass number as iron, it sounded like a reasonable hypothesis. The voltage is not really critical, as the effect could occur so long as the voltage passed through the K-capture voltage on its way up and down, and is only supposed to cause a somewhat more definite effect when it is right on the "absorption edge".

---

[9] Lapp and Andrews (Supra)

It appears that the electrical energy in the secondary output circuit can be converted into usable electrical energy, especially by using a resonant transformer, tuned to the same, 60 cps frequency.

Corporate-government disinformationists have already tried to debunk this device. One "debunker" inadvertently revealed the fact that he didn't actually do the experiment, when he described the device when assembled as weighing "two pounds". No reputable "scientist" could confuse "ten pounds" with "two pounds", so I knew he was lying. Naturally, his assessment was negative. He was either a lightweight, who didn't do the experiment as described, or a liar with a concealed agenda. This discovery may prove to be a new way to produce K-capture, and to transmute elements in a reversible process, by stimulation with simple, standard 60cps electric current, at or near the K-capture voltage, or at some other appropriate voltage, without the necessity to use an incident particle beam accelerator, vacuum chamber, etc.

A good free-energy process, therefore, can use an element—conveniently a light element—as a "medium" to induce another "medium"—the ether, or another element—to interact with and acquire energy from the ZPR, which is then stepped down to either a synthetic radioactive output—which can be further stepped down to manageable electrical energy or heat—or perhaps converted more directly to electrical energy by some ingenious means.

The attempted destruction and concealment of Tesla's work has now been exposed, and will soon be reversed. The factions which were responsible for this still exist through perpetuity, but will not be able to control the technology when it finally emerges.

CHAPTER III - CONCEALED ENERGY:
The Second Lie of Thermodynamics

The Second Law of Thermodynamics states that any spontaneous process occurring in the universe leads to an overall increase in the entropy of the universe. This is an example of a "negative pregnant" science belief system, designed to conceal unlimited available energy in the universe. That makes it a Pretty Big Lie. It includes the "double-think" and contradiction that are the earmarks of bogus science which unfortunately becomes "establishment science", and is an insult to the ordinary, reasonable and prudent layperson's mind.

It's as if some big shots sat down in 1919, lit up their Cubanos, and said: "This fellow, Nikola Tesla, has been talking about 'environmental energy' which is unlimited and free. This is dangerous to our interests. The papers and magazines have been giving him too much attention. From now on, our media and institutions will support and promote only the works of those scientists who can produce excuses as to why the energy available to us is NOT unlimited, OR free."

By the creation of a plethora of red herrings and negative pregnants—all of which chisel away at the citizen's awareness of the non-polluting energy available from the environment—a mass psychosis thought control system has been created in academic science, which trains young scholars to dismiss alternative views and to attack those who attempt to point these things out, as "pseudo-scientists". These young scholars then march out into the world with their minds steeled against the possibilities available in nature and in creative science, while preaching the monopoly-designed gospel of fossil fuel consumerism.

A "negative pregnant" is a denial which implies an affirmation of a substantial fact[1], and hence is beneficial to an opponent, because it is "pregnant" with an affirmation. A number of these denials, "pregnant" with affirmations of certain alternatives, are intended to convince the future scientist that all energy must be bought at a filling station or from public utility corporations, at continually inflating prices, extorted by contrived "energy crises". Coercive monopolist interests own the banks, the energy companies, producers of mineral fuels for the generation of power, as well as many other essential industries. They also own the mass media, which controls information and disseminates propaganda designed to maintain their status quo of obsolete technology and archaic resources. They are well represented in educational institutions, control endowments and grants, and essentially control the writing and publication of science texts used to train new scientists.[2]

---

[1] Steven H. Gifis, LAW DICTIONARY

The Second Law of Thermodynamics contradicts the First Law of Thermodynamics (the Law of Conservation of Energy), because it says that energy is being destroyed through "entropy". There are no contradictions in reality. The young scientist and the seeker of truth is encouraged to continue to seek answers, and to reject devious and deceitful concepts and theories designed to close off new possibilities.

The Second Law of Thermodynamics is a red herring, a negative pregnant denying any rational alternatives. The real issue is not only whether or not the "rule" is correct, but whether the facts show that energy apparently produced by some reactions actually originates externally to the reaction, and is a conversion through matter, of Zero Point Radiation into usable form, as opposed to "conventional" reactions which permit only the release of energy such as heat "stored" in matter.

A major question is whether we have electrodynamic ZPR, (Tesla's concept) or a quiescent ZPE (the Relativist fantasy). The latter can be discarded as an internal contradiction of Relativism, and may be intended to conceal Tesla's electrodynamic space propulsion discovery, since the "ZPE" would never work the same way as the wave principle, to propel "particles" (or "ships") though space. ZPR is ubiquitous electrodynamic wave force carried by the ether. Because of its ultra high frequency, it is extremely penetrating and forceful once arrested, and can operate on ultra-fine levels in minuscule atomic and molecular reactions.

---

[2] G. Edward Griffin, World Without Cancer, American Media (1974)

We must first reject the concept espoused by the relativists, that matter is "destroyed" in the process of being used to do work (producing energy). Matter produces force, and while this force is "used" to do work, and though the force may become dissipated over a large area, this process does not represent the 'annihilation' of any matter, or of force produced by it, as asserted by the Second Law of Thermodynamics and related entropy theory. As force is used, new force is continually entering into a reaction, replenishing force dissipated by the reaction—and is still conserved in the form of momentum, IR storage, or radiant energy in ether-filled space.

This brings us to the question of the 'origin' of new force, in a ubiquitous form available to all matter being replenished by it, allowing it to react again. This is the conservation of matter and force, what I call the "Theory of the Conservation of Perpetual Motion and Force".

The replenishment of expended force in a region of space is apparently the result of an exchange of forces, weak for strong or vice-versa. A weak force can be converted into a stronger force, which will do more work in the same period of time. Whenever a weaker force, such as kinetic force (gravitational) is converted into, or exchanged for, a stronger force, such as an electromagnetic one, the force is 10^{40} times stronger.[3] Since this force is so much stronger, it will do more work in the same period of time, in fact, zillions and zillions of times more work. Where does this increase in force originate? The source of this "new" ubiquitous force is of course the ZPR, which makes the energy density in a small region of space so high that I won't even bother to say.

---

[3] Gamow, Gravity

This processes repeated throughout the universe, automatically replenishing areas of space in which the force has been dissipated through a lower order of reaction, because there is a tendency toward equilibriation. The sun sends out electromagnetic radiation, electric current and magnetism. The sun also receives ZPR, electric current and magnetism from elsewhere, which replenishes the force expelled, maintaining its equilibrium in perpetuity.

A good example of this circuitous process is when atmospheric oxygen combines with carbon and hydrogen in coal combustion, breaking HC bonds and producing CO_2 and H_2O, with a release of IR radiation, in a sustained combustion-reaction. This is possible because the HC bonds are weaker than the CO and HO bonds, so the stronger bonds are formed. This is a replacement of 'looser', weaker (electrostatic) bond/force, with a 'tighter' stronger (electrostatic) bond/force, releasing heat (IR radiation entrapped in the O, H and C, which is 'squeezed out' when the new, 'tighter' bonds are formed). The CO_2 is then available for plants, which absorb the C and free the O in photosynthesis, driven also by solar radiation and the ZPR. The oxygen is then available again for combustion-reactions and the carbon becomes part of plant HC compounds, eventually becoming coal beds again. The H_2O is also utilized in photosynthesis, releasing more oxygen. Repeat, ad infinitum.

The bonds appear to be electrostatic ones. The 'breaking' of electrostatic bonds should not account for the heat released, as a conversion product of electrostatic force. The heat is IR radiation which has been 'stored' in the atomic space between the nuclei and electron clouds, as bouncing and reflecting radiation, until the electron clouds are 'opened' during new bond formations. When the new bonds are stronger, the reaction is exothermic (heat-releasing), and when weaker, they are endothermic (heat-absorbing), because the stored IR radiation apparently stretches the bonds and weakens them.

"THE UNIVERSE IS WINDING DOWN"

(To the tune of "London Bridge is Falling Down")

One of the most pronounced trends since the accelerated 'media-advent' of Relativism (around 1919), has been an emphasis on instilling the false idea in physics that the universe is "winding down", progressively "using up" the energy it possessed at its "beginning".

In 1916 Einstein had devised a static model of the universe, having uniform density but with space allegedly "curved" by the presence of matter, so that it had a finite volume. In order to justify this steady-state universe, so that gravitation did not collapse it, Einstein invented a repulsive force between masses, to equally balance the "gravitational attraction". How convenient.

In 1917 de Sitter purportedly "found" a further solution to Einstein's equation, an expanding universe concept (now called the Big Bang Theory), which would have a "vanishing density" due to the constant expansion. Einstein's career, and the income of the oil companies, really took off. This help from de Sitter was 'really what the doctor ordered' for Einstein's theory and the oil companies.

The purported discovery of the "red-shift" of the galaxies was used to further the expanding universe concept. The time elapsed since the "beginning of the expansion" is taken as the age of the universe, and is considered to be the reciprocal of Hubble's Constant[4]—about 10^{10} years—but the theory was flawed by the fact that the astrophysically-determined age of the oldest star clusters in our galaxy is about 16×10^9 years, about twice Hubble's Constant.

In his 1891 lecture before the A.I.E.E.[5], Tesla had stated that "enormous electrostatic forces" which emanate from the earth, "rigidify" the ether within earth's electric field as it moves through space. These rapidly varying, enormously powerful electrostatic emissions (which Tesla called "microwaves"), which "rigidify" the ether, causes the ether near the earth to travel along with it.

---

[4] Hubble, E. P.: "The Realm of the Nebulae", Yale U. Press, New Haven, Conn., 1936.

[5] Nikola Tesla, Lecture Before the A.I.E.E., Columbia College (1891)

The same thing applies to other planets in space. The "red shift" observed in light passing near bodies in space, as the alleged basis for an "expanding" universe, is apparently due to a refraction of the light by this rigidified ether, a phenomenon which does not require the presence of an atmosphere. It is similar to Faraday's "magneto-optical effect". This shoots down the Big Bang Theory. The Michelson-Morley experiments were based on an ether which was dynamic in relation to the earth. They tried to detect a "drift" in the ether as the earth moved through space. Since the ether near the earth is rigidified and carried along with it, there is no relative motion to detect, no 'drift'. But the ether is relatively dynamic farther away from the earth. This means that the Michelson-Morley experiments, based on a "dynamic ether" concept, and conducted on the surface of the earth, could not possibly have detected an "ether drift", because the ether is not 'drifting' on the earth's surface, where they did the experiments.

Meanwhile, the ether near the planets and bodies in space which showed the "red shift" is not only rigidified by the "microwaves" emitted from those bodies, and subject to "magneto-optical effects", but the bodies are also in relative motion in respect to the light passing near them, through their rigidified ether. These facts were ignored by the Relativists, naturally.

In 1892[6], Tesla demonstrated before the Institution of Electrical Engineers in London, how a column of gas was rigidified by a rapidly alternating current. He also told them how, prior to that, his tests had shown that the space between two metal plates subjected to currents of "sufficiently high voltages and frequencies" had become "solid state" (i.e., would support the plates, which weighed several pounds each).[7] This was the basis for his electro dynamic space propulsion discovery. The British science journals didn't bother to print a word about these momentous discoveries, as far as I have been able to determine.

---

[6] Nikola Tesla, Experiments with Alternate Currents of High Potential and High Frequency (a lecture delivered to the Institution of Electrical Engineers, London, 1892)

The steady-state theory of Bondi and Gold[8] gave the universe an infinite past and an infinite future, but unfortunately retained an expanding universe concept, in which the "loss of matter" by the expansion is exactly compensated by the "creation of new matter", so that new galaxies are created and only the average galaxy "needs" to have an age equal to "Hubble time" (how convenient). While the infinity of past and future are commendable (after all, there will only be a present, forever), the idea that a galaxy "needs" to have an age equal to Hubble time is teleological.

These are truly infantile notions, which are used by the Relativists to talk us out of apprehending energy available from the environment. They show a negativistic "dead end" cosmology, which discourages physics creativity.

Firstly, it is a begged question that the universe had a beginning, indicating not only inferior intelligence—people in science who can't conceive of a universe without a beginning and end, like childhood stories such as Little Red Riding Hood and the Big Bad Wolf—while insisting on a false philosophy in science, serving an ulterior purpose, say, that of the energy cartels.

Secondly, the "Big Bang" cosmology—the supposed beginning of the "expansion", or "winding down"of the universe (another begged question)—is linked to physics by the Second Law of Thermodynamics and entropy theory in such a way as to convince us that the universe had already began to unwind before it barely got out of the Big Bang 'womb', and that all matter is progressively getting "all tuckered out" as time goes on, so that available energy is constantly diminishing. The main objective of this cosmology seems to be to induce a quiet surrender to continually inflating fuel prices at the gas pump and at the public utilities corporations, as "inevitable consequences".

---

[7] T. C. Martin, Inventions, Researches and Writings of Nicola Tesla, 1894, Chapter XXV - Introduction -The Scope of the Tesla Lectures

[8] Bondi, H.: "Cosmology", 2nd ed., Cambridge U. Press, London/N.Y., 1961.

I personally do not believe in an expanding or finite universe, or that it had a "point of origin" or will ever end. It has always existed, is infinite, and will last for eternity. Energy is never destroyed, and is conserved in the constant motion of matter and radiation in space-transit, representing infinite, available energy forever.

I believe in the idea that, when force is exerted on one entity by the action of another, causing a change (i.e., "work"), that the force does not "disappear" into nothingness or become "locked up" within matter, to remain "unavailable" forever, as the Relativists would have us believe. Most working physicists don't use Relativist theory for anything anyway, the main damage being done to the public which reads the media-mogul publications continually extolling this false belief system.

If the Big Bad Wolf had eaten Little Red Riding Hood, her "energy" would not have become "unavailable" through 'entropy'. Without really explaining themselves, the Big Bangers have told us that matter gets neutralized, and can't do any more work, forever, through a mystical "entropy" principle. This is based on the fallacy that matter contains energy in the first place. Matter in motion has momentum (kinetic, mechanical energy), and can react in electric and magnetic fields to produce electromagnetic energy, but does not "contain" energy. It may also store heat energy, as previously explained, but this energy—electromagnetic heat radiation—is not an integral part of matter, and nothing is "lost" by its release.

Energy is not an entity, but only a potential, the "ability to do work", which cannot 'disappear forever', since it exists only as a quality possessed by matter to store or affect the conversion of electromagnetic force, under certain circumstances, not something which exists in a quantitative form within matter itself. An accepted 'law' of modern physics is that there are three levels of force, the gravitational force (weakest), electromagnetic force (medium) and nuclear force (strongest). A radioactive magnet, or a radioactive chunk of lodestone, can possess all three. I believe all these to be different levels of reaction by matter with the ZPR, representing the densest electromagnetic force, because it is produced by the enormous forces within stars. Stars, in turn, like all other bodies in space, are receivers of ZPR, which react at the highest (nuclear) level.

According to the Relativists, in order for energy to become "unavailable" (i.e., "used up" forever), it is commonly believed that, in its 'last, final work', the "process" through which it reacted, somehow became "irreversible". Now let me see....what would such an "irreversible process" be? Is it the "process" which is irreversible, or is it the "state of matter" which is? I rack my brain, but fail to find an answer. I do not know of one single irreversible process! I think what these 'scientists' really mean, is that the availability is hard to follow, or a process is hard to reverse, or that they are unable to think of a convenient way to reverse it, or that they fail to understand the actual process, or that they fail to realize that matter is not destroyed or irreparably damaged by being used to produce energy, and may actually improve with use.

If a process is reversible to begin with, it should always remain reversible, and it appears to me that matter is not irreversibly changed by an energy process of any known kind, so what the Relativists appear to be trying to say, is that a different process—an 'irreversible' one— whenever it is substituted for a 'reversible' process, will fail to produce energy. To my knowledge however they have failed to identify an irreversible process. Their inability to identify such a process is a critical part of their theory. If all the atoms in the original process still exist, the Relativists have been lying to us.

Certain processes have been identified as "reversible" ones. That has to do with creativity and ingenuity, when done by a human. Other processes, which scatter the matter in such a way that it is contaminated, or is so diffuse that it can't be gathered up again, make it practically a "non-reversible" one, but not necessarily an "irreversible one". These are the kinds of processes that the cartels prefer that we use, so they can sell us some more of the fuels or other by-products of the process, at an increasingly hefty profit, and we dirty up the environment with waste and pollution.

It all seems to come down to the relative creativity of the technique used. If there is such a thing as an irreversible process, and a person wants to generate energy using the same matter, over and over, he should make certain to avoid a non-reversible, dirty, cartel-desired process, and use a clean reversible process, which captures the ZPR and produces no waste.

There are numerous 'free energy' inventions which use this principle. Matter doesn't 'get tired', 'irreparably damaged', or 'irretrievably locked up' on being used. It may become contaminated with other matter which is inconsistent with its use in a particular reversible process, but it can be purified and reused.

A simple example of a reversible process which uses the same matter to produce energy over and over would be a hydrolysis process which produces a stoichiometric oxygen-hydrogen mixture derived from water, which is combusted and used to drive a turbine, after which the water vapor is condensed to water again, and is reused in the production of the stoichiometric gas mixture, over and over, ad infinitum. There are several ways to separate the oxygen and hydrogen which use less energy than that produced by the combustion-reaction. This is reasonable, considering the fact that the external energy which actually drives the process is the ZPR. The reaction is triggered by hydrolysis, to 'set up' the water in a state-change, for the ZPR reaction. The process can be enhanced by use of certain catalysts, metals and geometric arrangements, which take advantage of the best use of physical forces.

Contrary to the idea that energy continually becomes unavailable, there is some validity to the idea that matter being used in a reversible process to produce energy may actually become "conditioned" and improve with repeated use.

Henceforth, I will refer to what I call the "Standard Model Scientist" in singular, abbreviated archetypal form—"SMS". Since SMS is an archetype, composed of all Standard Model Scientists, who are apparently of like mind, possessing a sort of "collective consciousness" due to government thought-control, with a peculiar kind of scientific tunnel vision, all such scientists are faithfully embodied in my SMS.

SMS sees "isolated systems" within the universe, when convenient, which are unaffected by external forces or matter, yet considers the universe as a whole an "isolated system", whenever that is convenient. Isolated from what? If the universe were finite, what would there be to isolate it from? This is contradiction on the grandest scale: Isolated systems within an isolated universe which is finite. This is another negative pregnant which has become a begged question through the continual, unquestioned acceptance by SMS. The only thing apparently isolated (from reality), is the brain of SMS.

Looming very large in the mind of SMS is the Second Law of Thermodynamics—sometimes referred to as the "Law of Degradation of Energy", because of the entrained theory that "entropy", in an "isolated system", is increased by "irreversible processes" involving energy changes, and that, therefore, the sum of total "available energy" "within" the universe, tends to decrease. Hmmm...now let's see...decreasing energy in the universe...equals increasing prices at the gas pump...equals more money and power for the greedy monopolists who guarantee jobs for compliant scientists. The way that SMS couches "entropy" (a negation) in such terms as "increasing", is a negative pregnant, or maybe a better term is "pregnant negation". "Doublespeak"[9] has certainly been enshrined in the science field.

---

[9] George Orwell, 1984 (1949)

There are at least eight things in particular with which I disagree, as false assumptions and begged questions, in this "negative pregnant belief system":

1. The concept that matter, per se, contains "energy";
2. The concept of "increasing entropy", as a "law of physics";
3. The concept of an "isolated system";
4. The concept of an "irreversible process";
5. The concept of the universe as an "isolated system";
6. The concept of the universe as a "finite system";
7. The concept that the universe had a "beginning" or "origin";
8. The concept that the universe will have an "end" or will "disappear".

It should be noted that SMS has boxed in "available energy" with negative pregnants and begged questions, to eradicate it, but the pregnant affirmations are still there. I believe that 1. through 8. above are all false assumptions. Without a doubt, they are all negative pregnants, there being no such thing as being "half" pregnant".

Entropy, in thermodynamics, is usually given a special mathematical treatment by SMS, in which a quantity is ascribed to an "isolated system", which quantity purportedly expresses the degree to which the energy of that "isolated system" has ceased to be "available energy". Again, a denial of available energy in the universe forever. In this respect, I would like for you to notice how, because available energy has been made to appear to be unavailable—because it has somehow become irretrievably "dissipated", "locked up in matter", or "tuckered out"—that SMS begs the question that it is "unavailable" forever, simply because certain matter is no longer capable of immediate reaction in the laboratory, or of use in your car, even though we know that so-called "dissipated energy"—especially heat and other radiation—has affected other matter in such a way as to perform work whenever that other matter is involved in energy changes or reactions.

We also know that, while such things as carbon have been oxidized to CO_2 during combustion, some of it is subsequently absorbed by plants, freeing the pure oxygen back into the atmosphere, while the plant retains the carbon, by which it eventually becomes available for combustion again, along with the oxygen. This process, photosynthesis, is driven not only by ordinary solar radiation, but also by what Nikola Tesla called the "Primary Solar Rays", a ubiquitous, extremely high frequency radiation produced by the enormous forces in stars, now generally called "Zero Point Radiation." Tesla created power generators which converted it into other, usable forms. There appears to be nowhere in the universe where this energy is "unavailable", so there must be no isolated systems. SMS has a "catch-22" however, because he can say that any system which shows a reaction to the ZPR is not an "isolated" one, but this is another negative pregnant which admits that the ZPR exists.

Isolated Systems and Irreversible Processes Forever?

SMS's special mathematical treatment considers all quantities ascribed to "isolated systems" to be aspects of a single, physical magnitude, and concludes that "...any physical system when left to itself always increases its entropy, and therefore decreases its 'available' energy."

But what system is really "left to itself forever? A coal bed? What? SMS says the universe is an "isolated system."

By applying this statement to the universe as a whole, as if it were an "isolated system", SMS naturally concludes from this completely unnatural presupposition that all energy processes in the universe are "irreversible". (Ooops! Someone forgot to wind the universe back up!) Is this really true, or might it be the result of looking at everything from an artificially negative viewpoint (because the corporate-state pays your salary)?

It can be easily seen from these presuppositions that in order for us to be convinced that energy is in short supply in the universe, we must be taught to believe that (1) the universe is finite (i.e., isolated), and (2) that matter within the isolated universe is getting all tuckered out.

In the case of absolute zero, SMS had a problem, since everything at absolute zero (except electrons, supposedly) is frozen in place, so it cannot "degenerate". In response to this apparent flaw in theory, an SMS named Nernst came to the rescue with his "heat theorem", which stated that all physical and chemical changes in a system at absolute zero take place at "constant entropy", so there is no "change in entropy" (called "isentropy"). He said this is also true of adiabatic processes, since they are "reversible processes". The problem with Nernst's theorem is that most adiabatic processes are reversed by external energy. This leads to another gross contradiction, which confirms the existence of ubiquitous ZPR (perish the thought that, in superconductivity, the magnetic field produced external to the superconductive ring, for example, is considered as "available energy", another apparent flaw in Nernst's theorem). If any energy reaction can be obtained externally to a so-called isolated system, maintained at absolute zero, with no change in "entropy", then Nernst's theorem is wrong, and the ZPR is affirmed. Otherwise, what could sustain such a reaction? After all, superconductivity does not destroy the magnetic field. If the current is alternating, the magnetic field is also, and even a steady magnetic field contains energy and will do work on moving charges.

It is apparent that the very large and very small aspects of the Second Law of Thermodynamics are interdependent, so that, if the very small aspects are untrue, then the very large aspects must also be untrue. If the universe is not an "isolated system"....because no "system" is completely isolated from universal processes...then the "law" must be untrue. The burden of proof here is not on the person who assumes that the universe is infinite, since it apparently is, but rather on the person who believes it is finite, since it apparently isn't. This is an Ockham's Razor situation, which works against a finite universe concept. Who has seen the universe's "boundary", or proved that it has one? Science cannot be based on such speculation, especially where it is part of a "grand theory" used to conceal available energy not at the limits of the universe, but in our own immediate space.

In reality, there appears to be no "isolated system" which is immune from external effects. This is especially true where we have penetrating cosmic rays, X-rays, UV, visible radiation, radio waves, IR, neutrinos, ether, magnetism and a ubiquitous form of radiation produced by stars which interpenetrates everything. This is also true of neutrinos, whose penetrating power is measured in light years through lead. Neutrinos are reabsorbed by mass which is undergoing K-capture process reversal, so neutrinos from perhaps the other side of the universe may affect the production and availability of energy within any so-called isolated system. Of course, SMS might argue that, since the K-capture process is a reversible one, it is not an isolated system. But there are no truly isolated systems, the argument being based on a false premise, since the K-capture process refutes it by showing the emission and absorption of neutrinos across vast regions of space and through other mass.

ZPR may play a part in every single matter change, etheric, atomic or molecular. In view of this, it is difficult to imagine that any isolated system exists, except in the collective mind of SMS. It is difficult to imagine why SMS interposes such fictitious archetypal concepts as "isolated systems", in support of archetypal, collective delusions, other than his desire to keep his job as a physics prof.

Tesla's theory of radioactivity is controversial only because it has been suppressed, in favor of the Relativistic theories of SMS, yet it is more reasonable than that of SMS, as applying to all energy changes in the universe. All energy changes—except those at absolute zero, or involving reversible process—are considered "irreversible", and result in "degradation of energy" according to SMS.

Is there really such a thing as an irreversible process? SMS would argue that, "...sure, you might reverse an irreversible process, but that would take energy from an external source." This gives cause for wonder how a process which is irreversible forever could be reversed by anything at all. Since there is nothing in the universe which is really isolated, there is always available energy to reverse any process anywhere. ZPR energy originally converted within a system has never really disappeared, but still exists somewhere, within the system or external to it. After all, this energy is not really a thing, but rather a property of matter under the circumstances, no matter how slight, capable of transforming radiant force to another form. In reversing an 'irreversible' process with 'external energy', energy 'dissipated' by other processes can be conceived as being used to 'pay back' what was previously dissipated by a so-called irreversible process. If the sum total of all universal energy (force/matter/time) remains the same, it can never degrade. It is all just a matter of time. SMS confuses states of matter with energy. It is true that, due to a matter's state, it can react with the ZPR, or can be diminished in its ability to do so, but these states are all reversible.

Disappearing Mass?

In a nuclear reaction, such as that in which a quantity of "unstable" radium "spontaneously" emits powerful radiation into surrounding space and matter, SMS would say that the radiation is the product of "radioactive decay" as expressed by Einstein's equation, "$E = MC^2$". According to this equation, the emission of a certain amount ("quanta") of radiation, at certain voltages (say 4.5 Mev), over a certain time period, is equal to a certain portion of the mass of the radium, multiplied times the speed of light, squared. The equation says that the mass of the radium decreases by an amount equal to the "interconverted" radiant energy emitted, based on the assumption that matter and radiation are interchangeable.

Since the uncontested 'minimum' age of the universe, according to SMS—notwithstanding the astronomically-determined ages of the oldest stars clusters in our galaxy—exceeds the purported atomic half-lives of any radioactive materials, it is confirmed that such materials were created within the earth through natural process, and that otherwise the atomic half-lives would long since have expired. In 1936, Nikola Tesla produced radium through transmutation, quickly, in pound quantities, with a process which he said was so cheap that it could be profitably sold for less than a dollar per pound.[10]

As it emits its radiation and alpha particles (stripped helium atoms which have mass), the radium's mass does not shrink. Any gaseous emission—radon gas—maintains its mass, atom for atom, proton and neutron for proton and neutron, electron for electron, etc., all mass remaining constant and accounted for. Any so-called "decay product"—such as lead—has the same mass as the original radium, less any radon atoms or alpha particles emitted. The physical components merely become juxtaposed, and none of them "become" electromagnetic radiation. Where, then, has the energy come from? Tesla said it comes from the ZPR. He also said that matter and radiation are not interchangeable. He compared the difference between matter and force to the difference between the body and the mind, saying force is a "...function of matter", and that, just as a mind could not exist without a body, "...without matter, there can be no force."[11] One cannot become the other. The energy is force carried by electromagnetic radiation, which never takes physical form as an entity of any kind.

This process is explained by SMS as if no external energy of any kind is affecting the radium, when in fact, according to Tesla, it is interacting with its surrounding environment, matter and space, not only by emitting radiation, but by reacting to incoming ZPR. There is no missing mass—no one has proven that there is—so the

---

[10] Nikola Tesla, July 10, 1937 prepared statement, and July 11, 1937 interview, New York Times, p. 13, col.2.

[11] Nikola Tesla Papers (Apr. 15, 1932), Rare Books and Manuscripts Library, Columbia University.

Einstein theory must be wrong. Radium is apparently "stepping down" the ZPR to gamma and X-radiation frequencies, just as Tesla said. Without a shrinking mass of radium, it has to be true, especially at the particular rates and levels of emission.

The sun shines through my window and heats up a flagstone floor. The heat moves from the stone to the earth below and the air above. It 'dissipates', warming the air. The warm air rises to the ceiling, forcing colder air downward, 'doing work'. SMS considers this energy "unavailable", because it eventually dissipates, but the reality is, whether or not energy is available does not depend upon whether SMS can follow it, but on whether we have good reason to believe it will not be unavailable forever, or that matter is not irreparably damaged by use in an energy process. Even though the particular matter may not immediately bend to our will, due to the state that it is in or the place that it resides, it does not 'disappear', and may be processed for use again, or will become included with other matter, where it undergoes natural changes which eventually render it available for later reaction, whenever that may be.

If the combustion of a hydrocarbon fuel such as gasoline yields CO_2 and H_2O, with the release of useful heat force converted from the ZPR by the expansion of hot gases which run an engine, how can this matter be made to react again? If the process to reverse the process is too complicated to put in our cars, we should use other processes which are not so complicated.

I put gasoline into my tank, start my engine, and the gas and air mixture combusts in the cylinders to produce torque to drive my wheels. The exhaust emissions—CO, CO_2 H_2O vapor and heat—are only a rearrangement of the same fuel and air molecules which entered the engine. Once in the atmosphere, the chemical and heat units are sorted and concentrated or dissipated by nature. Some of the units are recombined by plants into the raw material for more gasoline refinement, and the cycle can be repeated, ad infinitum. The only thing we are talking about is the time that it takes natural processes to render the energy available to us again, or to do other work in nature, not the idea that the matter is "all tuckered out". All motion is perpetual, all energy is conserved, and all energy is free for the taking. We take what's available now, and wait for the rest, or we use reversible processes which speed the process up and eliminate "pollution", which is really no more than the random misplacement of matter in nature in such a way that it may interfere with natural processes beneficial to life forms, including us.

SMS works for the banking, mineral or power and industrial cartels, or is a dupe, or maybe even all the above. A real scientist should know better, know the truth.

Energy is not a "thing", and there is no such thing as "pure energy" in any physical form. Energy is force, created by matter in motion, exerted on other matter over time. Mass is moved by force, and gathers and exerts force through movement and reaction with the ZPR and other radiant force. The magnitude of a particular force and the length of time it is exerted on other matter determines the amount of work done. When force is exerted to produce heat, the IR radiation is the result of conversion from another type of radiation, such as magnetism, visible light or ZPR. An example is a campfire, in which carbonaceous matter (wood) is oxidized by fire. The chemical disposition within the matter and air maintains the reaction. The heat radiated does not represent destruction of the atoms of carbon or oxygen, but rather the conversion of radiant energy by the atoms when oxidation occurs, at which time the bonds between the atoms as they existed before are broken, and are replaced by new bonds with other elements. This causes a molecular change in which the atoms release stored IR radiation, or the ZPR reacts with the atoms and molecules, "stepping down" the ZPR, like a transformer, to IR radiation. There is also a possible release of stored IR radiation in the hydrocarbon fuel atoms and molecules.

"Combusted" carbon is bonded to oxygen as CO_2. "Combusted" hydrogen is bonded to oxygen as H_2O, usually in a vapor state because of the liberated heat energy. This is not a 'final resolution' of the energy production potential of carbon and oxygen, since natural processes, driven by solar radiation, will eventually return both elements to a combustible state. The carbon and hydrogen may lie in the earth for a few million years, temporarily 'locked up' in a coal deposit, while the oxygen floats in the atmosphere, completing the "water cycle" and other process for eons. The energy in the coal deposits being formed is not 'unavailable' forever, but remains ever capable of combusting or eventually transmuting ZPR into IR radiation, again and again.

SMS has no answer as to where the heat energy of combustion comes from, other than to say that it is a "release of the bonding energy" of the molecules. But if the bonding energy of oxygen, hydrogen and carbon, prior to the reaction, were weak enough to allow the reaction, then the 'tighter' bonds producing the CO_2 and H_2O in the reaction, represents an overall absorption of energy, with the result that the reaction should produce a cooling rather than a heating effect. It seems that the force produced by the combustion reaction—IR radiation—may come from a source external to the reaction, and could represents "free energy". The only change which has occurred in the matter is its ability to combust, which has been temporarily neutralized.

SMS would have us believe that the "fuel"—oxygen, carbon and hydrogen—have decreased in available energy forever, but it simply isn't true, and the people who ultimately controlled and designed his academic curriculum knew it.

Though it is not comforting to realize that all the gasoline and diesel fuel combusted in engines is still represented in the natural environment, it is a fact that the exhaust products are forever available for use again. A better idea is to use matter which doesn't have to leave our engines, by using exclusively reversible processes to do our work.

Intuition tells us that hot water appears to "store" heat, but the fact is, heat transferred to water enters it in the form of IR radiation, and when the heat is extracted from the water, it will also be as IR radiation, in a reversible process, even when in direct surface contact with a heat conductor, in which case the atoms or molecules of the conductor become excited by contact with the water, as the conductor transfers the stored IR radiation. Since the IR radiation excites the water, this may allow it to react with the ZPR, until the same finite amount of heat is radiated back out, in a reverse reaction to that which occurred when the IR radiation entered the water. When hot water is carefully insulated in something like a thermos bottle, with a mirrored inner surface, the combination of heat-reflection, vacuum and insulation virtually isolates it from contact with an external heat conducting material (though not the entire universe). The IR radiation remains in the water, and virtually does not exit until the insulator is removed. Otherwise, it could 'jump' the insulator like microwaves can. The insulator does not stop the ZPR, but inhibits its reaction with the water, since the lower end of the 'step-down' process cannot be continued so long as the water retains maximum heat in a liquid state.

There is no energy inherent in matter, only the inherent property possessed by matter to store radiant energy and to react when undergoing molecular and atomic state-changes, to react to radiant energy force, and to convert it to useful force to perform work, such as heating, lighting, communicating, and mechanical force. It is not matter alone which determines the availability of energy, but rather the states, and changes of states of matter, which give it the capacity to react to the universal ZPR and other matter.

Lyne's Hypothesis

As I said in 1993[12]—based on my "Omni Theory" of 1963—the only way the earth could have grown like it has, is through solar/ZPR-driven photosynthesis, through which ether has been assembled into the solid mass of most of the elements found in the earth's outer layers.

Around 1961, I personally cut the samples of oil well drilling cuttings from ca. 20,000 feet beneath the surface of Reeves County, Texas, in a well drilled by my uncle, Roger Benton, for J. Evetts Haley, Sr. It was the first well to go beyond 20,000 feet. The samples represented cuttings from all the strata from the surface down to ca. 22,000 feet, I believe (if my memory serves me), all the strata contained the detritus of living things, essentially dependent on photosynthesis, either animal life remains, plant life remains, or minerals derived from these, through metamorphosis or natural transmutation. The universe must have a 'constant' of life-forms.

---

[12] William R. Lyne, Space Aliens From the Pentagon (1993, rev. 2nd ed., 1996); Occult. Ether Physics (1997; rev. 2nd ed., 1998)

According to my theory, the elements we have at our disposal are mostly the products of photosynthesis and metamorphosis over time, derived from the action of radiation on the ether, via plant and animal life, except for a small percentage of "space dust" (formed the same way on other celestial bodies or in space) which fell into earth's atmosphere.

Since the elements we know of are found in deposits in the earth's upper layers, I assumed they were produced by photosynthesis or metamorphosis/transmutation from photosynthetic products, driven by the ZPR and other solar radiation, and that these deposits continue to the earth's center. The idea that earth has a "molten iron core" is a silly one, since the laws of thermodynamics would require that the surface would melt too.

Having seen their pet Relativist theories shaken by my obvious facts, an article appeared in the Orlando Sentinel, carried also by the Santa Fe New Mexican on 7/30/01, under the headline, "NASA probe on mission to catch some rays." The article stated that a NASA solar probe called Genesis was scheduled to blast off on the 30th, on a mission to "catch some rays"—to collect some samples of our sun's solar wind, and bring "them" home to scientists, thus allegedly marking the first time that "extraterrestrial material" has been returned from beyond the moon.

Though this incidentally confirms my theory of at least some of our minerals, etc., by admitting that the elements on earth were "assembled" here (since they are not considered "extraterrestrial materials") the truth of the matter is, there is a lot of "extraterrestrial material" dropping into earth's atmosphere every day. For instance, I have some "black sands" which were most probably not formed on earth, because the elements in them could not have combined in the way that they did in earth's gravity field or atmosphere. In addition, there is no "mother lode" of mineral deposits that they could have weathered out of.

The mission concentrates on cosmic "particles", which are not electromagnetic radiation, but composed of atoms propelled by solar radiation, as Tesla said in the 1890s. It also misses a real concern, the ether which is assembled into earthly mass under the influence of solar electromagnetic waves, especially of the ZPR.

The $164 million spacecraft is intended to "shed light on the makeup and evolution of our solar system." It is hypothesized that the solar wind—a stream of charged atoms—contains the "same mix" of elements found in the sun's surface layers, which in turn is believed to mirror the contents of the sun's solar nebula. Two and a half years of sampling is expected to collect material weighing "no more than several grains of salt", and "should" contain "every element found naturally in the solar system". This apparently is intended to test or disprove my theory, yet no mention is made of me or my theory, of course. This may be intended as an attempt to prove an old theory, to disprove a new theory, without stating who originated the new theory or what it said. The old theory had no basis in the first place. All they have to do to confirm the facts, is to observe things here on earth.

This seems to be a very expensive test of an hypothesis which is intended to prove that all the elements on earth were "shot" here from the sun, via the 'solar wind'. Otherwise, "Lyne's Hypothesis" presents a significant obstacle to the typical Big Bang mentality. Trying to imagine the sun building Jupiter in their way, demonstrates the improbability of such a theory.

If the samples fail to contain a mixture of all the elements on earth, my theory can be presumed true, since no one to my knowledge has more reasonably explained where all our elements "came from". I maintain that through reaction with certain basic matter in space, earth had its beginning, building additional matter from the ether through reactions with the ZPR. This eventually gave rise to basic plant life, creating a gaseous atmosphere, and all this matter reacted with the ZPR to form other matter from the ether, composing the plants, gases absorbed and released by the plants, and matter in the earth. Eventually, animal life forms developed in a similar way. Certain other basic elements transmuted to others under the influence of cosmic radiation, and some additional elements were assembled from ether particles into atoms of different elements, until the elements were complete.

The entire series could have begun with the simplest atoms, hydrogen, gathered from space. Considering the time that such a process could have taken, our galaxy has to be much, much older than Hubble's Constant.

The final, most complex elements created represent the voltage limits of the ZPR's influence on the ether, and in a certain sense, all the processes involved in creating certain elements here on earth, duplicating conditions essential for the creation of the same elements elsewhere. The process is continuous, and even transmutes atoms in your body, especially those below atomic number 19.

The process 1 have described does not create mass, but only collects and assembles tiny ether particles possessing tiny mass, into atoms, through the influence of the ZPR on the ether. The ether particles may be identical to neutrinos, which possess mass and carry momentum. Since my earlier books, Japanese experimenters have confirmed that neutrinos in great numbers are ubiquitous in space, which I think are sufficient to account for an "ether theory". Since many of these neutrinos are captured on earth, new mass is added to the earth. The Japanese seemed to have confirmed my theory.

According to my theory, the sun and other stars are transmitters and receivers of ZPR, and hence 'build' their planets by supplying the radiation necessary to assemble the planetary elements from the ether, through reaction with initially small amounts of other simple basic 'seed' elements.

The big question is, how could such "energy" continue to exist to supply power maintaining the perpetual motion of the universe, as well as for all processes of building atoms from the ether? The general opinion is that "energy gets used up" in a local region. But this energy (force) is continually replenished by the ZPR.

Since all suns basically receive as much energy as they transmit, and since all energy (force, exerted over time) and atomic matter (assembled from the ether) is conserved—in the motion of matter (or ether), or in transient radiation in all of universal space, and since there is always ubiquitous available force from the ZPR, equilibrium is maintained in all regions of space, and all matter and motion is perpetual. This is the "Lyne Theory of the Conservation of Perpetual Motion and Force".

According to Tesla[13], in an 1891 lecture, rapidly varying electrostatic discharges from the earth ("microwaves") 'rigidity' the ether. This was based on reactions actually verified by Tesla before that 1891 lecture, which showed the ponderomotive behavior of mass under the various circumstances he described. In an 1892 lecture in London[14], he repeated the results of this research regarding the emission of electrostatic 'brush' discharges (negative electrostatic corona) by a conductive body, as it draws in the tubes of force (aligned ether carriers) which carry momentum, showing that when these tubes of force are dissolved in the body, they impart their momentum to the body in the direction of the emissions.

According to Hannes Alfven[15], a giant electric current travels through space along lines of "frozen magnetic force" from the sun to the earth, passes through the earth and back to the sun's equator, imparting "angular momentum" to the earth in its solar orbit. This was based on earlier research by Kristian Birkeland, who in 1895 explained the aurora borealis as the effect of the currents later proven by Alfven, as they enter the earth's atmosphere where earth's magnetic field is almost vertical, causing a glow similar to that of cathode rays in a laboratory.

---

[13] Nikola Tesla, Lecture Before the A.I.E.E., Columbia College, New York (1891)

[14] Nikola Tesla, Experiments with Alternate Currents of High Potential and High Frequency (a lecture delivered to the Institution of Electrical Engineers, London, 1892)

[15] Hannes Alfven, Existence of Electromagnetic Hydrodynamic Waves, Nature, vol. 150 (Oct. 3, 1942), pp. 405-6

J. J. Thomson[16], in 1893, restated Tesla's earlier finding (without attribution), "...if moving tubes of force entering a conductor are dissolved in it, mechanical momentum is given to it at right angles to the tubes and to the magnetic induction", adding that this momentum is "...proportional to the vector product of electric and magnetic forces". This repeated what Tesla had said, since the momentum was proportional to the vector product of the electric and magnetic fields.

Thomson also declared that "...the aether is a storehouse of mechanical momentum", based on "his" theory, concluding that "...the aether is itself the vehicle of mechanical momentum, of amount (1/4*pi C [D . B] per unit volume." As stated by Sir Edmund Whittaker[17], in a steady (electrostatic or magnetostatic) field, the resultant stresses acting on a volume of the aether is zero, so that the aether is in equilibrium. But when the electric and/or magnetic field is variable, the resultant stress on the aether is consistent with Tesla's earlier, 1891 finding, and Thomson's 1893 equation as stated above.

Tesla's experiment had verified this, using "alternate currents of high voltage and high frequency", on the assumption that a changing field was essential to creation of the necessary stress upon the "medium" (the ether). What is more important, until Tesla's demonstration, using generators he brought along, the British had no idea of how to create the necessary high frequency fields.

This, of course, was the basis for Tesla's electrodynamic space propulsion system.

---

[16] J. J. Thomson, Recent Researches in Electricity and Magnetism (1893) p. 13

[17] Sir Edmund Whittaker, A History of the Theories of Aether and Electricity, Revised and enlarged edition (1951), Thomas Nelson and Sons, Edinburgh

CHAPTER IV - SECRET SCIENCE: Thought-Control on The Professional Level

Epistemology

In order for the government to hide so many scientific and technological discoveries through its secrecy, there had to be a way to change the way people thought and what they believed. The formation of what one believes is usually limited by one's epistemology—what one's "first laws" are, what one's theory of knowledge or truth is. Is "seeing believing", or is "seeing just an illusion"? Philosophers have identified two basic theories of epistemology, which are the Platonic and the Aristotelian. We each usually choose one or the other, depending on what we are willing to accept as "the truth" or accept as "real".

The Platonic epistemology, based on subjective "first-laws" ("irreducible primaries", the beginning point for any philosophy), in this case states that there is a 'higher world of perfect forms', which we can never really see or know directly. According to this epistemology, the world around us is only an illusory "shadow" of these higher, perfect forms. Accordingly, we cannot have a direct knowledge of reality, because we can't depend on our senses as a reliable means of knowing reality.

The Platonic epistemology's name is derived from Plato's Cave Analogy, which is about a person sitting at night in a cave, between a fire and a passing caravan. As the caravan passes in front of the fire—which lights an inner wall of the cave, and casts a shadow of the caravan on the wall—the viewer sees no more than a 'shadow of reality' (the shadow of the caravan). The caravan itself represents reality—the world of 'perfect forms'—which we are unable to see directly.

This epistemology is usually typical of religious people, and of Relativists, the people who have been running 'official' physics since 1919, maybe longer, I could never figure out what was stopping the man in the cave from leaving the cave and taking a look at the caravan directly.

The Aristotelian epistemology has objective first-laws, which state as an irreducible primary that the senses are valid tools of cognition (thought). What you see or sense, can be accepted as true on its face, because visibility, in the three-dimensional space of perceived, physical reality, is based on scientifically measurable light, shadow, distance, height, weight, color, etc. The Aristotelian epistemology interposes no mystical, spiritual or religious concepts between the observer and reality, through which our knowledge must be filtered, such as Relativism seems to require. While non-visible or non-perceptible forces and factors are recognized, if they can be measured as heat, light, sound, touch, or smell, or through the use of scientific instruments—which are technological extensions of our senses—these forces and factors are not "relative". As Ayn Rand said, "The facts of reality are what they are irrespective as to whether we are aware of them or not."[1], and "Existence exists: A equals A."

The disconnection of science from the Aristotelian epistemology, and the movement of scientific thought toward the Platonist epistemology, was accelerated particularly after 1919, when Relativism was projected into the vogue. Beginning about 1910, the mega-corporate owners of the mass media had begun to control science and other educational curricula,[2] particularly that of the medical schools, through the use of so-called "philanthropic grants", which were actually designed to benefit the corporations which had set up the foundations through which the grants were awarded. These Rockefeller grants set the stage for the controllers. The foundations eventually appointed compliant faculty members as officers, so that the foundations, corporations, and the educational institutions were thoroughly invaginated with one another. This process, which began with grants favoring medical schools which taught a curriculum which advocated the use of products manufactured by the pharmaceutical subsidiaries of the Rockefeller family, soon also included the slanting of physics curricula toward Relativism, apparently intended to more directly favor the Rockefeller petroleum industry upon which the pharmaceutical industries were based.

---

[1] Ayn Rand, Philosophy: Who Needs It?

[2] G. Edward Griffin, World Without Cancer, Part II, The Politics of Cancer Therapy, American Media (1974)

This use of the educational grant process completed the basic cycle of how the corporate giants began to control what scientific professionals were allowed to think and believe. Those who bucked the system just simply wouldn't be allowed to remain as part of it. In 1905 Albert Einstein re-introduced the world to the religious, 18th century Theory of Relativity. The media giants wasted no time in promoting this 'wrong turn' of physics, and by 1919, it was in full swing. Some of the beliefs advocated by Relativism border on insanity.

The things some adults believe remind me of a little child who closes his eyes and thinks he is no longer visible. We play along with the gag and say, "What happened to Bobby? He disappeared! How did he do that!" But when adult scientists do it, it is no joke.

It is hard for me to accept the fact that some adults believe in "other dimensions", but why should I be surprised, since the concept of "heaven" is one of another dimension, the existence of which people have been taught to believe for thousands of years. Heaven can be neither perceived nor ascertained objectively, and whether it exists or not depends upon the faith of the believer, rather than reason. To me, if you can prove something exists in this dimension-—the only dimension I recognize—it is IN this dimension, because I think there is only one dimension, called "reality."

The fact that people have private thoughts, dreams, and ideas in their minds does not verify the existence of "other" dimensions, since we know that mental processes are held in the mind, in "our" dimension, as electromagnetic patterns, waves, currents, fields and data configurations, similar to how a computer stores information, except the mind's computer is a dynamic electromagnetic and organic one, rather than an exclusively inorganic, dynamic electromagnetic and mechanical one.

Though some beliefs border on insanity, I don't think there is a correlation between insanity and belief, but there appears to be a correlation between induced neurosis and belief. An insane person, or a person with a neurological disorder, who sees, hears and feels things and beings which aren't there, does not do so because of his epistemology. He does so because his mind plays tricks on him, due to organic malfunctions in his nervous system and biochemistry, which cause visual, auditory and other sensory hallucinations real enough for him to believe. He does not say he "believes" these things, since he usually has no choice. In a way, such an hallucinating person, by accepting what he "sees" as "real", has an Aristotelian epistemology, except we know that he only "sees" the hallucinations in his mind. To whatever degree he recognizes them for what they are, he may still be a rational person.

The concept that insanity is a disease was rejected by the director of the New York State Hospital, Thomas Szasz, as stated in his book, "The Myth of Mental Disease". Szasz destroyed the idea that an insane person was one who had "caught" a "disease" which could be "cured" through psychotherapy.[3]According to Szasz, "The classification of (mis)behavior as illness provides an ideological justification for state-sponsored social control as medical treatment".[4]

In other words, if you mindlessly accept the misclassification by the state or the psychiatric profession, of a mental problem having a physiological, biochemical or neurological basis, as a "disease" or "illness", you may soon find yourself being treated to the "therapy of choice" of your local cops.

---

[3] Thomas Szasz, The Myth of Mental Disease (1960)

[4] Thomas Szasz, Manifesto (summary statement) (1998)

It had already been discovered about the time that Szasz wrote his book, that schizophrenia was not the result of a series of "traumas" which "split the personality", but rather of organic malfunctions in the patient's brain physiology and biochemistry. The cure might be pharmaceutical, but no amount of "mental hygiene" or "therapy" would cure it. Unbelievably futile effort has been expended on "psychoanalysis" and therapy, a la Freud, Meninger, Jung, etc., without curing a single, true schizophrenic.

While true, organic insanity—psychosis, which totally obstructs rationality—has little to do with epistemology, neurosis—which interferes with rationality, but does not totally obstruct it—is yet another thing which can be induced by an epistemology which encourages beliefs which interfere with rationality. The kind of epistemology pushed by the government's covert propagandists is the Platonist epistemology, which induces neurosis in many people, but worse than that, it is an essential part of the government's program of controlling the way many people think.

If we consider the general public as inmates in a gigantic mental asylum, the government's thought-control program is worse than mere quack psychotherapy, because the "psychotherapy" is intended to induce, rather than to alleviate neurosis. In this case, the "doctor" is fraudulently generating more "business" through abuse of his patients, by inducing them to believe things which will maintain, create or increase neurotic "dependency".

Since one's credulity, regulated by one's epistemology, limits what he or she finds believable, credulity is a sort of governor, which allows information and ideas into the mind, or excludes them, either as "credible" or "incredible", subject to certain tests which one requires of them. Ordinarily, for one with an Aristotelian epistemology, these 'tests' are in the form of rational questions, such as:

1. Can the information be objectively verified by my senses or detected scientifically?
2. Have I personally seen, heard, touched, smelled, measured or otherwise sensed it?
3. Is the information or idea from a reliable source?
4. Can the information be documented by rational people?
5. Does the information seem to violate any natural law?
6. Does the information seem to violate any scientific law?
7. Can I trust those who say it is valid?

All these credulity tests are subject to modification whenever a person has a Platonist epistemology, since Platonists don't believe in relying upon objective evidence, and don't believe we can 'know' reality, a belief which is supposed to give them a "King's X" (immunity) from reality or accountability. Therefore, in order to render the public at large more easily susceptible to government thought control, the Platonist epistemology is naturally the one which the government trains its covert propaganda agents to promote, particularly through paranormalism and spiritualism.

This technique came straight from Nazi Germany, and is what I call the Big Lie False Propaganda System, developed in conjunction with John D. Rockefeller's plan to control the world through religion, and taught to the SS by his psychologists and psychiatrists in the 1920s. In this system, a big hole is first wallowed in the public's credulity, with Big Paranormal Lies spread by people the public has been taught to respect—such as those with Ph.D.s and other authoritarian titles—so the public will accept whatever other Big Lies the government wants it to believe. As stated by Adolf Hitler:

> "In the size of the lie there is always contained a certain factor of credibility, since the great masses of people ...will more easily fall victim to a great lie than to a small one, since they themselves...lie sometimes in little things...Thus such an idea of an untruth will not at all enter their heads...therefore, just for this reason some part of the most impudent lie will remain and stick."

This statement revealed the mass-psychology system which was used on the German people to gain their support for events which defied the scientific reasoning for which Germans were known worldwide.

Government thought-control won't work if there are plenty of reliable, respectable, rational, genuinely independent people available in society, with access to the media, to identify and point out the devious government-corporate scheming to the public. For that reason, to avoid this contingency, corporate-controlled media excludes such people, while the government's "official" public propaganda is directed partly to the general public, and partly to society's so-called "intelligentsia".

Government Thought-Control of Scientists and Professionals

This is a two-pronged, "divide-and-conquer" strategy carried out through two teams of covert propaganda agents, which I call the "Pseudo-Skeptics" and the "Pseudo-Paranormalists". The Pseudo-Skeptics pose as members and leaders of the intelligentsia, while the Pseudo-Paranormalists pose as members and leaders of the public's grass-roots "alternative" community. The message of the Pseudo-Skeptics also coincides with the government's "official, public" position on science, while the message of the Pseudo'Paranormalists is intended to represent irrationality, mixed with things like the worst kind of religious superstition and paranoia—to make the government's position seem more rational by comparison—and things the government wishes to discourage though ridicule heaped upon them by the Dupe-Intelligentsia (unwitting or useful educated idiots).

A true intelligentsia, which would normally be guardians of the public regarding certain devious and dangerous government tendencies, is displaced, skillfully neutralized, isolated and misdirected toward red herrings, which the Pseudo-Skeptic leaders have duped the intelligentsia with, in order to misdirect them against the red herrings created by the Pseudo-Paranormalists, designed to neutralize the grass-roots movement. In this way the Big Lie System achieves the aims of the Dictatorship without bloodshed or overt oppression. It uses "trick psychology" on the people to carry out political, social and economic programs as part of its undisclosed agenda of control and economic and physical exploitation.

Neither the Pseudo-Skeptics nor the Pseudo-Paranormalists are genuine representatives of true public opinion, but represent a "government-designed" set of opinions intended to intermesh, to subvert public opinion and rule by consent of the governed, from top to bottom and side to side, and to obliterate the most rational assumptions in the "arena of reason". What results is a "rule by consensus", a form of fascism.[5]

In order to insure that "forbidden" knowledge remains secret, the system of government thought-control manufactures a false government "skepticism" among duped scientists and intellectuals, to maintain this secrecy regarding free-energy and Tesla's electro dynamic space propulsion technology, as I have already mentioned. This subject is not allowed to come up for discussion in officially sanctioned scientific gatherings.

Certain free-energy or highly efficient scientific information is "classified" as "national secrets" by the government, so that, concerning certain scientific phenomena, laws, and procedures, the public is 'dumbed down', and denied this 'occult' knowledge possessed by the government and corporations exclusively. Corporate disclosures are kept in check by the national security/non-disclosure agreements entered into under government contracts. Occult Ether Physics deals with this 'occult' knowledge as it applies to Tesla's discovery of electrodynamic UFO propulsion, in the late 19th century,

---

[5] Ayn Rand, Rule by Consensus, The New Fascism (1968).

I distinguish between "mind-control" and "thought-control" as follows: Mind control is involuntary, and does not require the conscious submission of the person whose mind is being controlled, while thought-control does. Thought-control is a kind of "thought fraud", a means of controlling one's opinions and beliefs through a combination of truth-concealment and false propaganda (information control), and intimidation (a kind of psychological terrorism). These are used to create the false appearance of "conscious" acceptance by the victim of a certain set of opinions regarding certain subject matter, as if the victim had consciously accepted those views, when in fact he has been defrauded by denial of information which has been replaced by misinformation, making it impossible for him to make a fully-informed decision.

As an example of this thought-control among supposedly "rational" people today, whom I call "Dupe-Skeptics", there is a specific topic of conversation, about which independent, individual opinions are abolished, and only a certain, pre-ordained opinion is tolerated or considered to be "rational" by the government, as expressed by its official Pseudo-Skeptics, who must know the truth in order to conceal it, or pretend not to believe it. The government has the official policy of prohibiting any professional people who are respected for their positions in the community, from expressing opinions contrary to the government's dictum on this issue (just as it does on several other particular issues).

On this particular topic, who or what power is it which "pre-ordains" or "allows" only the "tolerated" opinions, and "why"? What kind of intimidation inhibits supposedly rational, professionally educated people, creating their fear of the free discussion of a certain topic, inducing them to 'consciously' yield to the preferred opinion of the controlling authority, and to limit their own expressions—and even freedom of thought? Is their behavior only the 'rational' response to a fear of a power so strong and threatening, that the Dupe-Skeptics do not even permit their own minds to think otherwise? This system of inducing people to limit and control their own thoughts and expressions to conform to government parameters was copied from religion, and shows successful thought-control. It, like religion, employs guilt-based thought-control methods.

The segment of our society from which educated Dupe-Skeptics usually come is generally one which is more easily intimidated than that of say, auto mechanics or heavy equipment operators, who are usually more resistant to such pressures. In fact, they may slap you up-side of the head with a tire-iron, if you try that on them. Dupe-Skeptics, under government persuasion, in deference to an external, covert government-connected controlling power and media-created consensus, have banned this opinion from rational consideration, and have categorically relegated it to the realm of the lunatic fringe, even though the forbidden opinion is the most rational alternative under the circumstances.

Such a situation makes a mockery of the very concept of rational skepticism. What we are presented with as "skeptical opinion", in those magazines on the book stands—such as The Skeptic, The Skeptical Inquirer, or Skeptical Opinion—is more like covert government propaganda than anything remotely resembling true skepticism in the historical tradition, when it comes to the so-called "forbidden topic" of UFOs.

Why would true skeptics be afraid of a truly rational consideration of the facts, reject the most rational alternative, and cave in to pressure from the government, the cult of intelligence, or some other group, regarding any topic? They wouldn't. What the government's reign of thought-terror has done, is reduce the ranks of true skeptics to a small few, who have little or nothing to do with groups or their magazines. I can be confident that these magazines will not respond directly to my accusations, in obedience to a covert policy to never mention or cite anyone who is not a part of the "official" two-pronged thought-control loop. This avoidance is another badge of their conscious fraud.

It is irrefutable that many alleged "intellectuals" in our society have allowed the irrational "regulation" of their thought on this topic, by the government, by intelligence agencies, and by groups sponsored by them. Most of them lack the courage to say what they really believe, and many fear for their professional reputations and licenses. Yet, these same Dupe-Skeptics, who pride themselves on being rational, have virtually fled in fear from this topic, except to parrot the sole "allowed" opinion dictated by the government and its official opinion-makers.

There is no question but that the Dupe-Skeptics have allowed their fear of the government to control their opinions, thoughts, and expressions on this topic. For example, of the many Unitarians I questioned on this topic (Unitarians pride themselves on having "independent opinions" and "free thought"), every single one of them, without exception, considered Philip Klass to be a wonderful speaker, who reflected their opinions regarding the non-existence of UFOs. Not a single one of them was bothered by the fact that Klass is a CIA man with a job to do on their minds.

Such a situation seems preposterous or incredible, even to self-proclaimed "rational" thinkers, who would be very reluctant to admit its truth. For those who, of all people, seem to have tried so conscientiously and so hard and for so long, to be intellectually courageous, logical, truthful, frank, independent, and free in the range of their minds, it is truly astounding to realize that, on this topic, they have almost all allowed their opinions to be ultimately regulated and molded by the government. Yet the actual history of Unitarianism was not always of this cowardly "tradition".

Some might comment that this conflict could only be possible in a totalitarian state. What we presently have appears to be a "covert" totalitarian state...one in which the dictat is so deceptive that the average citizen is completely unaware of it, and those of us who are aware of it are called "paranoid". The degree of this thought-control is greater than that exercised in terms of the prohibition of freedom of expression in the former Soviet Union.

Could it be that the so-called "skeptical", "rational", "free-thinker", "secular Humanist", Unitarians and other colleagues in our society—swayed by the statements of government employees, books, newspapers, and magazines (with so many CIA dupes on their boards and staffs), and other media products which inflict social and government pressures—have allowed their opinions to be determined by the government? How could those who in the past have so bravely taken controversial, rational positions on such topics as racial equality, abortion, sexual freedom, taxation, church-state separation, Atheism, cosmology, evolution, free thought, the draft, individualism and sovereignty, privacy, drugs, and the limits of legitimate government, be afraid to discuss any topic?

The importance of the topic I speak about can be gauged by the degree to which, in comparison to the topics I just listed, the government places the utmost emphasis on maintaining secrecy, far beyond its efforts on any other topic, even nuclear weapon and missile secrets.

This fear, silence, and sycophantic compliance proves that there is an unspoken, covert government rule, which prohibits a truly rational and free discussion on this topic, which is subject to the greatest priority, much like scientists were once persecuted by the church-state, which openly prohibited as heresy the free discussion of even the possibility that the scientific facts about the universe differed from those specified in holy writ.

Anyone who questioned "god" (i.e., the state) did so at their own peril. The purpose today of this covert rule, which prohibits the opinion that UFOs are exclusively man-made electrodynes, and that the government has created false "alien contact" stories about them to hide them, is analogous to questioning the medieval "god", and carries the same stigma of a "heresy" in science, to officially enforce the ignorance of an abusive authority from challenge or erosion, in addition to protecting powerful economic interests from the threat of competition from a new technology which will eventually end their illicit power over the minds of scientists, and over the intellectual, economic, social, and physical freedom of our people.

CHAPTER V - ALIEN VISITORS:
Thought-Control on the Grass-Roots Level

I first began studying flying saucers—then called "flying discs"—in the summer of 1946, seen by several people I knew, mostly oil field workers who ran oil well pumps in remote locations throughout West Texas and southern New Mexico. Many people at that time were seeing the ships in the area, and most of them correctly assumed that they were captured secret German aircraft brought to New Mexico and Ft. Bliss, Texas, after the war, from Germany. Wernher von Braun and some of his rocket and electrodyne group from Peenemunde were assigned to Ft. Bliss, to the north of El Paso, and a larger number of the Peenemunde scientists were at several other New Mexico locations such as White Sands Missile Range, Holloman AFB at Alamogordo, Sandia Base, Los Alamos, Kirtland AFB, etc. Most people in the area were aware of these activities at that time.

These assignments were determined by the specialities of the scientists, the available facilities at the time at various nearby locations, and the particular roles assigned to the bases. Generally speaking, Sandia Base is an Army weapons development center. Ft. Bliss was the U.S. Army Ordinance center, before being moved to Redstone Arsenal in 1951. Holloman Air Force Base was an advanced fighter interceptor base, which also performed early U.S. advanced flight tests for UFOs. It also engaged in R. & D. on advanced flight problems, such as the rocket sled acceleration experiments, using rhesus monkeys, then chimps. For that reason, it became the location for the Southwest Primate Research center, which Jane Goodall seemed to become aware of after my book was published, detailing the cruel and painful deaths of the monkeys on the rocket sled. These tests were preparatory for such advanced human flights as that of the X-15, and in preparation for flights to the moon and other outer space missions, using rockets, pursuant to Wernher von Braun's dreams.

Los Alamos National Laboratory, run by the University of

California, Berkeley, was considered a scientific base, which dealt with the more precise studies and problems encountered with the UFO technology as it developed, such as how to deal with corrosion of the outer metal surfaces caused by the high voltage electrical discharges, which formed nitrogen oxide, which in combination with atmospheric moisture, formed nitric acid. This necessitated special acid-resistant surfaces. The lab also did special studies on such things as "spheronics" (the electronic resonant possibilities of spherical UFO shapes), the phenomenon of the lack of sonic boom or other sounds, the ability of the ships to accelerate to such fantastic speeds so rapidly, without producing a shock wave or experiencing friction heating of the surface by atmospheric gases, and several other mysteries or problems. It also did metallurgical work on special alloys for use on the ships, structural studies, and so forth.

At Kirtland AFB, special studies were undertaken regarding the physiological aspects of UFO flight, and how the human being reacted to it. Sandia Base in the meanwhile explored the possibilities of appropriate weaponry for use on UFOs, while White Sands Missile Range, as an "impact range", was used for the testing of these weapons.

Many people in the region were veterans of the European war, and some had seen the "foo fighters" over Germany. Several of my friends were the children of Air Force veterans, some of whom were air aces, such as the father of my friend, Carter McKenzie. There were several ace fighter pilots in my model airplane club. Other friends were the children of scientists and technicians who worked in the Manhattan Project during WW II.

Some of the men who taught our model airplane club how to build and fly good planes were ace fighter pilots. I point this out to show that many who assumed that the flying discs were "secret German aircraft" were expert aviators, who had witnessed first-hand German aviation technology over the skies of Europe in the most intimate way. This assumption was a problem that the government soon set out to change.

I had seen the discs in 1946 in the night sky as squadrons of lights at high altitude, which turned in increments of 30 degrees. I also saw what appeared to be discs at a distance on several occasions, but did not see one close-up in broad daylight until late summer, 1953, not more than a few days before the start of school.

In July, 1947, the Roswell Hoax was cooked up by military intelligence personnel at Holloman AFB, New Mexico, some of whom were ex members of Reinhard Gehlen's special Nazi Gestapo outfit, the Reichsicherheithauptamt VI ("National Security Agency Division 6"), which had been in charge of security and counterintelligence (disinformation) for the Nazi saucer project called "KT-p2", for the Third Reich. The hoax was perpetrated near Roswell, to give the Holloman spooks "plausible deniability", to prevent the Roswell personnel from knowing about the hoax, and to convince the regional public that the ships it was seeing were of extraterrestrial origin, and unknown to the government. The hoax was intended to be confined to the area covered by Army Air Force Intelligence "P.I.O" ("Public Information Officer") Walter Haut's press releases, which were only sent to newspapers and other media in that region.

Since the 1947 Roswell Hoax, I had observed the growth of this false propaganda program for 46 years, until I published my 1993 book, Space Aliens From the Pentagon. The propaganda putsch had always kept up the pressure to induce a belief in "aliens" and "extraterrestrial UFOs", as a means of concealing the discs' man-made origin, and to conceal the government's involvement in experimentation and flight training in that part of the country.

Today, 55 years later, it seems ludicrous to hear people say there is a "cover-up of alien contact" by the government, when it has been the government which has been pushing the "alien contact" scenario for the past 55 years. Why would the government want to cover up what it has been covertly inducing the public to believe for so long, especially since so many of the suckers have believed it? The relative percentage of people who believed the lies in 1947 was much smaller, because that generation did not have its heads in the clouds, and had its feet planted on solid earth.

That earlier generation was more familiar with the realities of German science, was generally aware of what the government was doing "right next door", and was more realistic and harder for the government to fool. Today's generation is not so stolid, and is much more gullible, so the percentages have been steadily rising, as the government's thought-control dictatorship has gradually become more complete. TV, which didn't even exist in the Southwest in 1947, barely existed in the larger cities like Albuquerque, by 1953. The existence of this mass-media, together with the government's thorough development of inroads into the movie and TV industries, have brought the thought-control system into every home on a daily basis.

During the 46 years prior to my book, I didn't bother to read all the false propaganda, only enough to confirm its falsity. I had an aunt who was all caught up in the paranormal and 'alien' hype, so I could always read any of the propaganda she had, such as a whole stack of Fate magazines and several other pulps whenever 1 had a mind to. I kind of took a "grab-sample" every now and then, to check the progress of the propaganda, just to make certain that nothing new had popped up, but it didn't.

Everything which I have seen since 1947 was an extension of the original Roswell Hoax. In my writings, I sometimes refer to certain books, etc., only to illustrate certain points, but I have never based my research on what others have said. When it comes to other writers, I am only interested in facts they may have documented, but possibly overlooked, or which are usually misinterpreted, and sometimes misstated for obvious purposes. Whenever I find an intentional lie by one of these authors, by comparing the facts to what they have stated, to the statements of more reputable sources, or to information which I have developed, I know that there is a motive behind the lie, so I look more deeply into it to see why.

Today, after having seen so much of the propaganda, I know that I can depend on the government writers to continue to practice the same false reasoning used all along since 1947, guided by government security parameters. This is perfectly logical, maintaining substantially the same original format and propaganda tricks used in the Roswell hoax. The government has apparently decided to make "Roswell" a perennial thing, to be played upon by their covert propaganda teams and front writers, since so much of their later false propaganda depends upon that original hoax.

In 1960 I worked alongside Jesse Marcel for two weeks—the same "Major" Jesse Marcel—who inadvertently became a main character in the original Roswell Hoax. The reason I believe that Marcel was not a "witting" participant in the hoax, is because, from my experiences with Marcel, I believe he was an honest man who really wasn't the kind to fool the public intentionally, and wouldn't have been very successful at it anyway. It's possible that they subsequently forced him to remain silent—which was required by his clearance anyway—to conceal certain facts, but his clearance didn't require him to remain silent on things learned through "innocent means", from non-government sources. I only know what Marcel told me. Marcel was a fine man, intelligent, dignified, and it was a pleasure to talk and work with him.

Marcel was a company representative for Mary Carter Paint Company, out of New Orleans, and I managed a Mary Carter store in Midland, Texas. His job was to come and work with me for two weeks, to see what I had accomplished with the paint mixing and matching system which I was employed to help the company develop. I was an expert in that area, because I had learned to use the Munsell Color System while a student at the Columbus College of Art and Design in Columbus, Ohio in 1957-60. I also had several years experience in our family paint and decorating business between the ages of eight and fifteen, in Kermit, Texas, between 1947 and 1952. At that time we had the most modern paint and interior decorating company between Phoenix, Dallas and Albuquerque. We had clients from as far away as Silver City and Albuquerque New Mexico, and Abilene and El Paso Texas.

It was because of my experience in the paint business, and expertise in mixing and matching colors, that I was hired to work in the paint store, to teach the owner of the store and to develop a coherent set of mixing and matching formulas, to be utilized by the rather new paint corporation in its many stores.

Years before, just before the Roswell Hoax, some military people from the Alamogordo-White Sands area had come down to Kermit, wanting to know about green paint, and how to apply it just to create a "greenish tint". I showed them how to rub dry, powdered green tempera paint on a surface to create a green tint, and sold them some of our green "Prang" dry tempera pigment. Soon afterward, when the word got out in the Roswell Hoax—possibly by rumor or by news story—that "little green aliens" were found in the "crashed alien space ship", I immediately suspected that the technique which I had shown those men had been used in the hoax to create the "little green aliens". At that point, without photos, I figured they could have used midgets or dummies, possibly monkeys, dressed up in space suits. Regular paint wouldn't have been as convincing, since it was not flexible enough.

I was not aware that I was working with the same Jesse Marcel who had unwittingly played a part in the Roswell Hoax of 1947. The reason I was unaware of that, was because I hadn't paid that much attention to something I knew to be a hoax. The reason I say Marcel "unwittingly" played a part, is because I think Marcel was pulled into the hoax unawares.

In our discussions while working, in between customers, and during meals at Midland restaurants, Marcel told me about his Air Force training as a bomber pilot, at the Midland Air Park during WW II, as part of a "second team" of the 509th Bomb Group, being trained to drop A-bombs. He said they took the big bombers through Immelmann turns, in order to drop the bombs more safely, since in ordinary bombing, the bomb would detonate along a line directly beneath the plane, exposing the plane and crew to blast radiation and shock waves.

The Immelmann turn avoided this, by having the plane going in the opposite direction from the bomb. A bomber would be taken in a half'loop, releasing the bomb at the quarter-loop point, which threw the bomb outward due to the centrifugal force and momentum. The bomb continued upward, away from the plane, until it reached its apex, then continued to arch over into vertical descent, sort of like tossing a softball underhanded in a high arch. Meanwhile, while the bomb arched toward its apex, the plane was arching back in the opposite direction to its apex, in inverted flight, at the 'half-loop' position. This gave the plane some time to distance itself from the descending bomb, as it proceeded to its final destination. The plane was then rolled over carefully to place it into regular flight in the opposite direction to that from which it had arrived. The bomb meanwhile continued on downward, and by the time it reached its detonation altitude of about 10,000 feet (the bombs were air-bursts), the plane was far enough from the blast to withstand it, and to protect the crew from its radiation.

The subject of Roswell—and the hoax—arose in our conversations, because that was where Marcel said he was stationed after the war, so that brought up the subject. After I told Marcel what my sister's mother-in-law had told me about her sister—the Army Air Corps nurse at Roswell, who later became a nun—who was present during the so-called "autopsy" (actually a dissection, performed on a rhesus monkey), he confided in me that he agreed that the whole thing was a hoax, designed to cover up the German UFOs which the both of us knew were being flown by the government and military in the region after the war. I had told Marcel about my post-war high-altitude sightings of squadrons, and the close-up 1953 sighting over our back yard.

Being an aircraft nut myself, and formerly in Air Force Intelligence like Marcel, we had some interesting conversations. Marcel was a very nice guy, originally of Cajun descent from Louisiana, just as my uncle was. He had the same tight wavy hair that my uncle's Louisiana relatives had, which can be seen on the ancient sculptures of Akkadians of Mesopotamia, c. 2300 BCE. This is because the Cajuns descended from the ancient Akkadians. After I left the Mary Carter Paint Company, in the summer of 1960,1 was the artist-in-residence of the Midland Art Association, and lived in the old Air Force buildings at the Midland Air Park, where I also did some painting and drawing, and taught classes for the Art Association. The floors were still decorated with the original blue and yellow tile, which showed the insignia of the Air Force bomb group, and most of the inner structure of the old air base was still intact. It was eerie to imagine what had transpired there in the closing days of WW II, only 15 years before.

Jesse Marcel was not a deceptive person, who would have been skillful at creating or carrying out a hoax. Originally trained as a bomber pilot in the atomic bomb program, his later training as an intelligence officer was oriented toward maintaining the usual nuclear bomb and Air Force delivery systems secrets at Roswell. He seemed to have no awareness of, capacity for or training in the intricacies of false propaganda or spooky activities. After all, he was a pilot.

It was not until the summer of 1993 that I published my first UFO book, Space Aliens From the Pentagon, 244 pages, 8" x 11". There was practically no activity in the UFO field at that time, but my book—100 hand-bound copies—hadbarely seen the light of day, when the OSI began an accelerated and massive counterintelligence campaign. The volume of new material buried my little book.

The shelves at the bookstores, which had previously displayed only a handful of UFO/alien books, were soon filled to capacity, crowding my books off the shelves and making them as invisible as a needle in a haystack. It was difficult enough to distribute them, because the CIA keeps such a tight handle on what the large distributors catalogue in that field. It exerts considerable leverage on large publishers and book dealers, since the government buys so many books for the thousands of libraries and bookstores at military bases and other domestic and overseas installations of the U.S. government.

In 1996 I published a revised and expanded, 252-page second edition, with small-type, and in 1999 published a final, small-type, 306-page third edition, re-named Pentagon Aliens, in 8" x 10" format. In 1997 I had published Occult Ether Physics: Tesla's Hidden

Space Propulsion System and the Conspiracy to Conceal It, followed in 1998 with a second revised edition. Each of these books is densely packed with material, since, as a self-publisher, I had to compress my material to get more 'bang for the buck'.

Since 1993, almost every single UFO/alien publication I have read has contained propaganda and arguments directed specifically against issues I raised for the first time in my books, without mentioning who had raised the issues they sought to counteract. Since I was the one raising those issues, it was clear to me that they were responses to my books. No more than a couple of these writers even mentioned my name or the names of my books.

I have also heard direct quotes on prime-time TV from others who apparently read my books, such as Robin Williams, who repeated my joke concerning a "...flea farting in a tornado", from Space Aliens From the Pentagon, verbatim, on the David Letterman Show, around 1999. I was flattered that he did so.

Many of my ideas have been perverted and used in several movies and TV shows, such as The X-Files, One of the first influences I noticed was in the movie Terminal Velocity, starring Charlie Sheen, There was a "Sam's Surplus City" in the movie, where the owner had a rocket sled. This was a combination of my cartoon, "Sam's Saucer City", "King's Surplus City" in Albuquerque (where I purchased my Peiltochterkompass), and the rocket sled I mentioned at Holloman, to which the rhesus monkeys in G-suits were strapped. The "terminal velocity" was the 120 mph velocity which 1 alluded to as the velocity of "weightlessness".

Since 1993, never have so many government propagandists argued so much or so vigorously to counteract the words of a writer who almost none of them ever mentioned, but were apparently aware of and were responding to. This follows the policy which I have identified, that the government propagandists are never to mention another writer on the subject, unless he is a CIA asset, because they want results to be predictable and controlled by them, and don't want to draw attention to "non-assets".

The alien putsch was multiplied and magnified several times over in the past eight years, but with very little new added to what had already been said, except for the arguments designed to specifically counteract my books, arguments and evidence. My books have been the source of not only much plagiarized material for the counterintelligence Ph.D. parasites—who, as I said in my first edition, lacked originality or creativity—but also a source of dozens of new themes which I introduced, which have been appropriated and reworked as false propaganda in the alien putsch, in films, books and articles, without attribution, by generally uncreative writers. This devious form of plagiarism is a lowly sponging of ideas.

The reason so many of these government propagandists have gotten their ideas from my books is because they were required to read them, because they lack creativity, and because many of my ideas are appropriate for complete books, so many can be or have been written on my ideas.

I could have written many more books myself on each of my themes, but could only afford to publish one book at a time. As I slowly began to chisel away at the monolithic publicity and book distribution field so well-guarded by the CIA, to get my books distributed, I usually had to go through underground channels.

Meanwhile, the CIA's unlimited resources allowed it to finance many writers and the publishing of many books, often derived from my themes, to counteract what I was saying, as if to teach me an "object lesson".

In one case—the movie Roswell—a character in the movie appears to impersonate me, making my "monkey aliens" argument to Martin Sheen and others. The name given to the character was similar to mine, and the whole portrayal was as uncomplimentary as possible, as if a childish retort to me without mention. This was the result of my psychological warfare working on their minds.

In 1995 I wrote an article, No Aliens, Just Assholes, for Paranoia magazine. Soon after, in the movie Independence Day, as the character played by William Smith flies a nuclear-armed jet fighter into a hole in the center of the giant alien ship over

Washington, D.C., to give it the death blow, he screams, "Take this, you alien assholes!" Again, the idea is taken and completely perverted.

One of the few writers to mention me, Phil Patton, hardly got anything right about me personally, either because he is a sloppy researcher, or by intent. He said he got a copy of my second edition in North Carolina. In his book Dreamland, apparently influenced throughout by my book—particularly in his "movie reviews" and in imitation of my comparisons between Pentagon and professional Hollywood special effects—he got very little right about my book. But by copying my technique of comparing Pentagon and Hollywood special effects, Patton inadvertently supported my 1993 thesis that the government USES such special effects in its alien hoaxes. In his chapter 21, "Space Aliens from (sic) the Pentagon and Other Conspiracies", he made the following misrepresentations:

1. That I said the saucers were "faked by the Pentagon" (I said the aliens were faked by the Pentagon, but that the saucers are real, man-made electric flying machines);

2. That I said the Pentagon's purpose in creating the saucers was to "frighten the public into the arms of the NWO" (I said the Pentagon's purpose in mystifying the saucers as "alien ships" was to conceal the technology from the public, and to wallow a hole in the public's credulity with paranormalism, so that it would accept whatever Big Lies the government wants us to believe);

3. That I was alone when I saw Hitler in San Antonio in 1967 (I had a credible fellow witness, who recognized him simultaneously);

4. That I "..argued with R. Sargent Shriver over my dismissal from the Peace Corps" (a lie; I had a friendly talk with Shriver, which was BEFORE I was dismissed from Peace Corps training);

5. That I received an MFA from Sam Houston State U. (my MFA

was from U.T., Austin, just as it states on my book jacket);

6. That I said the National Security Act of 1947 was treasonous because it "...divided the services". (Another lie: I said it was treasonous because it was never passed into law, was a presidential edict, and that it violated American sovereignty and liberty by denying our right to fully-informed consent or refusal.);

7. That I had "seen photos of dead monkeys", but "they were stolen by a former girlfriend" (another lie: I possessed a photo of dead rhesus monkeys in G-suits, and a photo of a fake 'saucer' used in the Roswell Hoax, until the photos were stolen by a woman I didn't even know until later.

Patton's other statements about me and my book, taken out of context in most cases, though somewhat accurate, demonstrated an obvious intent to ridicule me, the man he got ideas from and plagiarized, a tendency I have noticed among several others of his ilk. As often said, however, "Imitation is the sincerest form of flattery."

Patton's overall approach to his book also appeared to be strongly influenced by my 1997 Internet piece, A Truth Seeker Goes to Roswell, which is repeated in this work for you.

At least Patton mentioned me. My influence was also apparent in other ways. On page 41 he said (speaking of the "Federation of American Scientists' Mystery Aircraft Report"), "The study pointed out the 'epistemological' problems.,.", "too many sightings, too much information, too many possible planes—and yet not enough evidence." This was based on my chapter, "Einstein Was a New-Ager", in which I explained how a person's epistemology—theory of knowledge, either Platonist or Aristotelian—influenced the way he either related, or failed to relate, to reality. Patton apparently didn't know what epistemology meant, since what he was referring to was not epistemology, but rather a "cognitive problem", the inability to think.

The most damning thing about Patton and his book was his failure to mention my influence on his writing, and his attempt to trivialize and misrepresent my book and what I actually said and its impact, while at the same time imitating me.

The number of sightings, amount of information and number of aircraft relates not to an "epistemological problem", since the theory of knowledge for a scientist should be assumed to be Aristotelian, based on the primacy of the senses as valid tools of cognition. A person with an "epistemological problem" shouldn't be a scientist.

Aristotelian epistemology tells one who observes a flying saucer/UFO, that it is a real flying machine. Epistemology in this case relates to what is real, and whether or not the aircraft observed actually exists or not. About that, there should be no doubt in a scientist's mind, because so many of the people who have seen them are rational, experienced, professional, expert aircraft observers, yet the government set up Operation Blue Book at Wright-Patterson to intercept these sighting reports and classifiy them, to prevent public disclosure.

If I saw a jet fighter and heard its engines from a distance, but its exact configuration was hazy, there is room for a difference of opinion as to whether it was an F-14 or an F-16, but not that it didn't exist at all, or wasn't an aircraft. That's the main reason that educated, supposedly rational people who don't believe UFOs exist at all are the fools, not the people who report them.

When so many expert aircraft observers—both civilian and military—have observed and reported UFOs, and just as many microbiological experts have reported germs seen through a microscope, you are a fool to believe they don't exist, even though you may never have seen a UFO or a germ. On the other hand, you are a fool to believe that a UFO is an "alien" UFO, because there is no evidence, and an enormous improbability that it is alien.

Since UFOs are apparently flying machines, and since there is absolutely no evidence in the world of even a single machine being made by any being other than man (not including some insect constructions and rocks used by chimps and other animals, etc), it is completely rational to believe that ALL UFOs are man-made.

With the current dictatorship over what scientists are allowed to say, the national security tampering with the area of UFOs has created a vacuum of public scientific knowledge concerning areas of science which "don't make sense", yet which should be fully understood by the general student of science, especially when considering the advances of the past 100 years, which are being hidden from us today through government secrecy. Consequently, on the issue of gravity, the public is still stuck in the 17th century with Newton, and Newton's "corpuscular" theory of light is used as part of the cover-up of ether physics.

This scientific vacuum is primarily what I address in Occult Ether Physics, as the scientific discoveries concerning the nature of gravity and electrodynamic propulsion made in the late 19th century by Nikola Tesla, as the crowning achievement of a whole series of experiments and studies toward that same end, conducted by the world's greatest scientists. This period of physics, oddly enough, had been utterly "ignored", until the time I documented Tesla's electrodynamic discoveries in 1997-98, from books which were available but hard to get.

1 am still amazed that all the other writers and so-called "researchers" on the UFO question, since 1947, when the German ships first became evident, had absolutely failed to discover or write about the series of international scientific experiments and researches leading up to Tesla's successful testing and proving of his concept in 1894, until 1 published Occult Ether Physics.

Tesla's 1894 tests were witnessed by Marguerite Merrington, a famous New York dancer, among other friends of Tesla's. Merrington was interviewed by the FBI in 1943[1] concerning her witnessing of this discovery, soon after Tesla's death in 1943, during a national security investigation of Tesla's "known associates", in order to determine "who knew what" about the obviously astounding Tesla secrets. The fact that the FBI apparently knew about the subject matter of Merrington's observation and its enormous importance to space propulsion, yet agreed with the government's "scientific experts", that 'none of Tesla's discoveries were worth classifying', suggests that there was a conspiracy between the FBI and the Nazi state.

---

[1] FBI Papers on Nikola Tesla, produced under the FOIA.

Other than to state that Merrington had witnessed "...metallic plate suspensions..." by Tesla (using high voltage, high frequency currents), the details of the FBI's complete interview of Merrington have not been disclosed, which brings us to the question, "Why not? What more could Merrington have confirmed with her 1894 observation, that the FBI and US government don't want us to know, 106 years later?" But we know from books and publishings by or about Tesla from that time period, that each of those plates were solid zinc, 1/8" x 12" square, which if formed into a solid bar of metal, 1" square, would be 18" long, weighing several pounds.

Having finally proved the principle for his "electric flying machine" with those plates, it was merely a matter of expanding the size of the plates large enough, and curving them to enclose a ship, having its own internal electrical generator (turned as Tesla said by one of his bladeless turbines), complete with pilot and controls.

To compound the scientific ignorance of the establishment physicists, the area of free energy, which includes Tesla's electric flying machine, had not been documented or explained until my books.

In light of these ancient facts, it is ludicrous to consider the argument that "the human race is incapable of building flying saucers which perform like that". Considering all the "alien hype" which the world has been subjected to since 1947, without a stitch of hard evidence of alien visitations to earth, The Roswell Hoax stands out as a monument to corporate-state deceit and public gullibility.

CHAPTER VI - THE ROSWELL HOAX:
A Truth Seeker Goes to Roswell

In late June, 1997, I was pleased to receive an invitation from Bonnie Lange of Truth Seeker to be their guest at the 50th anniversary festival of the "Roswell Incident"....which I call "The Roswell Hoax". It was an intriguing proposition...me with my "intolerable view"...provided with an opportunity to stand toe-to-toe (yet on unequal footing) with the UFOlogy-alien theory "biggies"...whom I call OSI/CIA BIG LIARS...right in the womb of their initial hoax. What could I do, what could I say? I accepted, of course. What better opportunity to document the thought-control dictatorship?

My host had given me a hotel room at the Roswell Inn, with the provision that my room was also to serve as a video interview room by the Truth Seeker videographer, Ron Garner. I was anxious to meet Garner and the other people of the Truth Seeker contingent, especially Bonnie Lange, and was disappointed that she decided not to come. I was glad to be involved, since Truth Seeker literature stated a set of premises which were consistent with my own thinking.

I knew that, since no intellectual match is ever perfect, there might be someone in the contingent who might not exactly see eye-to-eye with me or the Truth Seeker philosophy, but didn't expect total contradiction. There are always parasitical opportunists who will attach themselves to a group to hitch a free ride for their undisclosed agenda at a host's expense. That has certainly never been my approach, as I do not enjoy being with people who don't desire my company, but I knew of one group which does that as a matter of twisted principle, if you can call it that.

I had my reservations about the probability for success of this involvement for Truth Seeker, in terms of what they hoped to accomplish, since the whole scenario, in order to be of value to them, would have to be investigative. I had the distinct experience of four years of attempting to penetrate the OSI/CIA barriers with what my Santa Fe friend, Fred, called my "attempt to spread sanity". I could see that, as an apparently non-Secret-Government-backed group, Truth Seeker might meet strong opposition...even sabotage...by "them".

As the day approached for me to head out to Roswell, I contemplated the situation in relation to my position: While I have usually been able to step into a strange environment and spot the immediate inconsistencies, as a Disbeliever in the alien theory I am perceived by the hard core UFOlogy leaders as "the enemy". While the presence of "Alienists" among free thinkers is tolerated, Alienists do not usually extend the same degree of fairness to those with whom they disagree, much less to an archenemy like myself. From my viewpoint, a CIA-employed "skeptic" like Philip Klass is not in "my camp", because the conditions of his employment forbid him from admitting the existence of man-made electro dynamic flying saucers. I knew that, in fact, Klass is the primary protagonist of one side of a two-pronged strategy designed specifically to conceal this exclusively man-made technology. Klass never denied his CIA employment, and neither did the "fathers" of the "alien flying saucers" movement of the 1950s. Many fail to understand how this two-pronged strategy—employing the (pseudo) "Skeptics" and (pseudo) "Believers"—is used to lead the two packs of dupes and suckers, or that it was created by, and is controlled by the CIA, or to understand why I encounter equal opposition from both these government-orchestrated groups.

The dupes of Klass have attempted to misrepresent me as a member of the "Believer" class, while those of the Believer class have attempted to misrepresent me as a member of the "Klass Class". I am the only major figure who does not, and will not, work for the government, so the leaders of both groups make sure I am excluded from debates, because, if you will recall, they will only mention, cite, or address the fantasies and people they create as "controlled assets". Klass is just as much a kook for denying the existence of flying saucers as the Believers are in their insistence on the presence of aliens. The house of Klass is made of glass.

The so-called "skeptics" of CSICOP (Committee for the Scientific Investigation of Claims of the Paranormal, headed by Klass) are not true skeptics, but rather a clandestinely controlled false propaganda operation of the OSL Their operations within the continental U.S. are illegal under the U.S. constitution, but if you read the so-called "national security" laws, you'll see that Congress has betrayed 'We the People' by agreeing to the passage of legislation which permits this betrayal and allowing pretty much anything the "spooks" want to do. These laws are completely VOID, because Congress has absolutely NO JURISDICTION to pass any law which contravenes constitutional prohibitions against the violation of our INVIOLABLE (human, natural) BILL OF RIGHTS, so they are ail liable for prosecution by the PEOPLE for their TREASON.

This treason is misrepresented as a "service" to us. Their alleged "job" is the protection of our "national security", under the cover of which their "covert" job is to protract the clandestine domination of us by the international coercive monopolists. Their procedure is as follows: Evaluation of conditions; collection of intelligence; analysis of information; formulation of subversive policy; and, lastly, dissemination of disinformation, in a program which, in respect to electro dynamic flying machines, is designed primarily to conceal the reality of and technology behind man-made flying saucers. The UFOlogists mainly disseminate false propaganda, and as far as I've ever seen, never disseminate the essential truth,

A true "skeptic"—in the original historical sense, as elucidated by the parallel writings of Valmiki, of ancient India, and Socrates, of ancient Greece—should question everything. CSICOP supports the official government denial of the existence of man-made electrodynamic flying saucers, and is a covert creation of the government—involving the CIA, the Smithsonian Institution, the National Science Foundation, etc. The only things they are "skeptical" of are the assertions of the Alien Believers and the other paranormalists—spawned by the government's own 1947 Roswell press releases—all "designed" by the OSI's Ph.D. committees. This at best is pseudo-skepticism, at worst, a massive criminal fraud perpetrated by the government upon the people.

True skeptics have never been the conscious catspaws of clandestine government controllers. "...In this corner we have the officially designated 'divergent thinkers'—Kevin Randall, Don Schmitt, Linda Moulton Howe, Whitley Strieber, etc.—and in this corner, we have the "skeptics"—led by the King's very own Philip Klass"...... So what's wrong with this picture? Could we identify Valmiki or his creation, Prince Rama, in his epic novel, The Ramayana, with Klass, who is employed by the CIA? Never. Klass is only the Chamberlain. The Chamberlain's similar secret machinations were exposed by Valmiki's heroes. The Chamberlain was the guy who created phony crises, so he could pose as a hero when he "solved" them, a "Wag the Dog" scenario.

In the thousands of years since, nothing seems to have changed. Today, the Chamberlain's agents masquerade as self-styled "skeptics" or "paranormalists" who believe in "aliens", ghosts, and psychic phenomena, and pervert the "truth-seekers". Having read Valmiki's Indian classic, the CIA's "Chamberlains" have learned some new tricks. These things were in my mind when I was invited to Roswell, and I naively thought that, since Truth Seeker magazine sponsored me, the intent was to expose them.

On the sweltering afternoon of July 2, 1997, I loaded up my 28-year-old Chevy pickup and headed out for Roswell. I pulled into the Roswell Inn some time after 5:00 P.M., parked, and entered the lobby to check in.

The hotel was as busy as a beehive. Amidst a small crowd near the desk, I spotted Jim, a man I mention in my book as "the M.I.B." who trained "The Two" —Marshall Herff Applewhite and Bonnie Sue Nettles—in late 1972, early 1973—in a house in Santa Fe that the threesome shared for about three months. A tall man with dark hair, whom I didn't recognize, stood by Jim, who was wearing a freaky western hat which had what appeared to be a greenish, flowery-patterned chiffon scarf draped around the crown.

My presence shocked Jim, while his attire shocked me. I am one of a very few people who could establish Jim's earliest involvement with the formation of the Heaven's Gate "suicide cult", discussed in my original 1993 first edition of Space Aliens From the Pentagon, —four years before the 1997 mass deaths, and on pages 118-19 of my 1995 second edition—which some later took as a sign of clairvoyance. I also knew that Jim had a law degree from the University of Denver, was a "retired" colonel, who had been in Air Force Intelligence, like myself, except he was in the Air Force O.S.L ("Office of Special Investigations"—not to be confused with the related spook outfit, "Office of Scientific Intelligence", or the Nuremberg Tribunal's "Office of Special Investigations"). Since Jim immediately attempted to hide his face, we didn't speak. The tall, dark-headed man left the area, and I passed Jim and approached the desk, signed in, and went to my room to unpack and settle in.

Though several of my Santa Fe friends and I had known Jim for some time, none of us was permitted into the house during the mysterious training, or were told the nature of the training Jim was giving "The Two". We initially thought it was some sort of kinky sex thing. I had briefly encountered the threesome while they were out for coffee, and had momentarily entered the house with a friend only once during the training period, when only Jim was present. Ever since the CIA-designed 1997 Heaven's Gate Mass Suicide Incident, which Jim knew I knew he was inextricably connected with, he has pretended to "disappear", as reported by the Santa Fe and Albuquerque papers.

Having known Jim for over 25 years in 1997, I was well-versed on his various beliefs, including the Gurdjieff/Synergist teachings. That group had targeted me on several occasions, especially since I had exposed their undisclosed agenda, twisted philosophy, and unethical tactics. Add to this their CIA/OSI connections and misinformation agenda.

It was not until 1975 or so that I became aware, primarily through news articles, that Jim had trained The Two as tools of the OSl/CIA's phony "alien" scenario. One of their main jobs was to show up at the sites of "cattle mutilations" (medical experiments) to create the false impression that the experiments were the result of an occult group created by Jim called "O.S.I.R.I.S." ("Outer Space International Research and Investigations Society"). That bizarre conclusion was borne out by the fact that Jim had written a couple of news articles in 1975 about how a friend of his had joined the cult, while he was careful to conceal the fact that he had intensively trained the leaders of the cult for three months in Santa Fe in 1972, on contract for the CIA, followed by their immediate commencement of the cult activity he had designed and trained them to lead.

When the nature of the false propaganda activities of the "cult" became obvious to me from articles in the papers, the kind of counterintelligence "training" given to them by Jim in 1972 became clear, and was 100% consistent with what I already knew about him, as well as the government's secret programs which was confirmed by these facts.

When I first met Jim, I was living in my geodesic dome to the south of Santa Fe, while struggling to make a living and completing construction of my geodesic dome house, which until 1974 had no running water, electricity, or phone. There were not many alternative social pathways in Santa Fe at the time, so Jim's and my paths crossed constantly. Many of the women I dated were dated by Jim, which, as was later confirmed, was his way of using some of them as unwitting spies to gather information on me. Since my 1975 rejection of George Bush's offer to become a high-paid intellectual whore for the CIA, Jim had apparently been entrusted to continue the recruitment of me through other means.

In 1977, on learning that I had been studying petroglyphs with the intention of writing a book, Jim came to my house, and to my utter astonishment, actually attempted to hire me to write books on behalf of the government saying the petroglyphs were the writings of ancient extraterrestrials. He said the publishing arrangements were already set up in Sedona, and that I would enjoy instant success through promotions and distribution, if I accepted. Even though I greatly needed the money, I not only rejected the (OSI) offer, but asserted my intent and determination to publish my flying saucer book—a project which Jim was already aware of.

Jim then threatened to cause harm to me if I published my saucer book. I was a little shocked that Jim had the bad manners to come to my home as a supposed "friend", with a proposal to hired me to write fraudulent books for the CIA. But following that up with a violation of my hospitality, threatening me with harm if I exercised my freedom of the press and speech by publishing my book, was too much. Though dismayed by threats from such a puny guy, little did I realize that I would subsequently be subjected to the covert power he and his associates wielded.

Ever since that time, and the numerous events which followed, our "friendship"—which apparently never existed—"deteriorated" (i.e., became obvious for what it was). That was the background between Jim and I, which extended back to 1972, preceding the 1997 Roswell gathering. Over the previous twenty-five years, I had seen Jim often, but following the 1977 failed attempt by him to recruit me as a false propaganda writer, any discussion or attempt at politeness was overshadowed by the secret knowledge that we both had. It was apparent that Jim was made very uncomfortable by my presence at the Roswell gathering, especially since it was so soon after the Heaven's Gate debacle.

After checking into my room, I called Ron Garner, and we both headed for the lobby to meet. On seeing Garner, I recognized him as the man I'd just seen with Jim, which probably explained Jim's extreme discomfort. I said nothing to Garner about it, and took him to my room so he could examine it as a potential video interview room. When we returned to the lobby, I told Ron that the man I identified as a M.I.B. in my book was present in the lobby. He asked me to point him out so he could get some video footage of him, but when I pointed out Jim, Ron became disturbed. He soon took his leave, and avoided me for the rest of the conference, never contacting me again, or seeking to use my room for interviews.

Toward the end of the conference, I spoke briefly with Garner, and asked him if he got the video footage of the "M.I.B.". He pretended that he didn't know who Jim was. That was implausible, since I had seen Ron conversing closely with Jim only a few minutes before, and because you couldn't miss Jim when I pointed him out, with such a weird hat. The hat was apparently a covert means of instant identification of Jim, by his intelligence operative peers, other dupes and phonies, from within the crowd.

On meeting some others of the Truth Seeker contingent a day or so later, I was surprised to learn that Ron had engaged them in behind-the-scenes discussions about me the morning after my arrival, regarding my views on Gurdjieff, his teachings, and the Synergy cult. Since I hadn't discussed any of this with anyone at the conference except Jim, years before, I assumed that Ron's objections were based on Jim's objections, since the two were obviously connected.

The owner of Truth Seekers, Bonny Lange, must have been aware of my attitude toward the Gurdjieff/Synergy cult, since I had made it clear in my book, which I assumed she had read, so I found it hard to believe that this was an integral part of the Truth Seeker philosophy.

Jim's behavior didn't surprised me, since he had interfered in my life on many occasions in the past, but I was taken aback by the prior connection between Jim and another Truth Seeker representative, Garner. In fact, Jim had also been connected through the Gurdjieff relationships, with the naturopath I mention in Pentagon Aliens, who had attempted to murder me with arsenic, and almost succeeded. The naturopath was an avid Gurdjieff/Synergy cultist. The Synergy cult is featured very strongly in my unpublished manuscript entitled The Mystical Roots of Totalitarianism. Unfortunately, there are apparently quite a few people who are followers of Gurdjieff's teachings, apparently without full cognizance of the social consequences which have flowed from them as a matter of logic.

At the time of the Roswell gathering, I was aware that Jim had become especially paranoid about me because I had already publicly identified him in my 1993 and 1995 editions of Space Aliens as a CIA/OSI connection, four years prior to the Heaven's Gate cult's alleged "mass suicide" in 1997. This must have been particularly disturbing to Jim, given the cult's sensationalized mass deaths, which appeared to be a way for the CIA to "close out" the cult, perhaps because it had become a "liability" after my exposure of them and the OSI's 'handling' of them through Jim, and since they were becoming a geriatric group, which had failed to produce any significant counterintelligence thought-control propaganda for quite a while. Like loose cannons, these old OSI dupes were rolling around on the "national security decks", and had to be belayed for good, as their "ship" was sent to Davy Jone's Locker, instead of to a comet.

Jim was apparently in fear that I would go public, and because of his continued tampering, I did go public, in Space Aliens. In my unpublished Synergy manuscript, I go into more detail as to how the cultists believe that they are especially entitled to appropriate and use the resources of others in pursuit of a "higher purpose", defined only by them, pursuant to the "collective consciousness" teachings of Gurdjieff (which is in line with the recurring "appropriation" of my ideas).

Though Gurdjieff was apparently irresponsible when it came to contemplating the natural consequences which would follow from his teachings, he was appalled when those results included the mass murders by the S.S. "Death's Head" Schwarze Korps (the Black Order, which was the S.S. planning branch), in the concentration camps of Europe, and the murder of millions in Russia under Stalin, a former Gurdjieff student. I became a target of the cult when I blew the cover on its infiltration of an arts group I headed in 1977-78, called Free Art Forum.

The Synergy cult is especially attracted to the destruction of individualistic groups, which they see as their primary enemies and competitors, so they infiltrate them, neutralize them through the introduction of immiscible contradictions, and take over and use their resources in pursuit of their synergistic totalitarian goals. The cult typically uses a "divide-and-conquer" strategy, based on the conspiratorial equivalent to the Spartan "flying wedge".

I had attempted to block their infiltration and appropriation of my group, but the Gurdjieff cult succeeded despite my resistance, just as the grant which funded it was about to expire. After the take-over, the group degenerated and was destroyed from within by its own "synergistic", vicious in-fighting.

The State of New Mexico then offered me a grant for twice the amount of the original one—$250,000—but I turned it down because the state and federal government had refused to give me the protection I requested from the Gurdjieff group, as I eventually burned out from the social turmoil it created. Besides, I had initially been conned into becoming a partner in the grant under the false promise that I wouldn't be dealing with the government, since I am philosophically opposed to the government's involvement in the arts, per se, or in any other private cultural activity.

True to form, Jim's book offer to me, just after he learned of my involvement in the grant, appeared to be also intended to draw me out of Free Art Forum, so the Synergy group—some of whom had already been hired by my duped partner—could take it over immediately. I battled along, continuing to control the group until the grant period expired, with tremendous wear and tear on my nerves, with the Synergists misplacing blame on me for their failure to make what was left of the group work for their "purposes".

Soon after the end of Free Art Forum, Jim had learned through contact with my then current girlfriend that I had discovered his covert contact with my father in Arizona, after which my father had come to New Mexico in an attempt to convince me to abandon my UFO publishing plans, which astounded me at the time, until I discovered Jim's involvement. Thinking my father had disobeyed him, by telling me of his threats, Jim arranged through the CIA/OSI for my parents to lose their business. The fact was, I had discovered Jim's contact with my father through an independent witness whom my parents didn't even know.

I also subsequently learned from one of my parents' fellow clothing dealers, who was angered and dismayed by the unjust loss of their hard-earned business, that one of their clients in

Tucson—Joseph ("Papa Joe") Bonnano, the Mafia chieftain, who coincidentally owned a Tucson dress shop—retaliated against the clothing manufacturers who had been induced by the CIA to terminate my parents' business, because he liked my parents, and "smelled a rat". The buyers dropped the clothing lines in protest, and the manufacturers lost millions of dollars, for following the CIA's orders. Justice can come in strange forms sometime, and that was "poetic justice ", but the CIA hasn't gotten what is coming to it yet.

As the conference progressed, I observed disappointment growing among the Truth Seeker contingent. The major portion of the crowd which showed up was not of the big-spender variety. As I saw it, the stated goals of Truth Seeker were in conflict with some of the material in their catalogue, especially where it played into the CIA-orchestrated "alien" scenario. For example, I immediately recognized the material of Zechariah Sitchin as a continuation of some of GurdjiefPs and Georg Lanz von LiebenfePs stories, the same as those he had, as the Cisternian monk Joseph Lanz, earlier taught to a youthful Adolph Hitler at Lambach Abbey in 1907. They were the same "teachings" spread by the Thulegesellschaft, now promoted by the CIA and reflected in the script of the movie Stargate, and continued by the TV series, Stargate SG-1. It also persues the OSI strategic objectives of the offer made to me by Jim in 1977.

Several questions arose in my mind: If Garner's objection to my involvement with Truth Seeker was based on his adherence to GurdjiefPs teachings, was Truth Seeker being targeted for takeover by the Synergy cult? Was I being "separated out" by the "flying wedge" of Garner, because I was threatening to undo the cult's efforts? That would certainly upset Jim, as I had observed. Did Jim know I was being hosted by Truth Seekers before my arrival, or did he learn about it from Ron? Since my appearance seemed to come as a complete and devastating surprise to Jim, was it because he knew that I, of all people, might figure out the latest scam-in-progress?

Ron's objections based on the Gurdjieff stuff indicated either that Jim had manipulated Ron through those beliefs, or that they were of common interest to both Jim and Ron, and that Jim feared I would blow their cover. After all, hadn't Sitchin written the same kind of books that the CIA had attempted to recruit me to write in 1977, and weren't they often published in Santa Fe or Sedona? Did they really think they could convert the Truth Seeker idea to a Gurdjieff one? If so, they would have to change the name to "Big Lie Seeker". Such a conversion would make the Truth Seeker goals only a fake shell eaten out by the Synergy roaches, to be used as a facade to entrap more prey. The Truth Seeker movement was barely getting off the ground at the time, so a takeover by the Synergists would nip it in the bud. It became my intent to avert this, and to warn them, but it was apparently to no avail. The moth flies around and near the candle flame, and is eventually consumed by it. There was apparently no way to warn the moth against its basic attraction to the flame.

By my second day at the gathering, I was already effectively ostracized by the major portion of the group, except for the two writers, David Sielaff and Paul Tice, whom I had met at the UFO Enigma Museum. John Price, "head" of the museum—a local guy who was strangely jealous and afraid of losing his grip on what little notoriety he had—wouldn't sell my books, so I joined the two writers at a table in the back room. They seemed congenial and I detected no conflict with them. I made the best of the moment.

Ahh...there I was at the dusty little museum, standing not more than three feet from Linda Moulton Howe, a UFOlogy "biggie", as she discussed "aliens" with a Mr. Heik, with the same kind of familiarity as one might expect a believer in the Tooth Fairy to describe the kind of shoes he wears. Though in plain sight, the total invisibility with which Howe regarded me indicated that she not only knew who I was, but also that I knew what she was, and that her pretense was transparent to me. Unless she knew she was lying about aliens, she would never have graduated from Stanford.

At the Truth Seeker booth at the Roswell Convention Center, the available chairs were occupied by the secretary, the shipping clerk, and astrologer Louis Turi, who used the only other chair and a table for his clients, so I milled about and made contact with some interesting people.

Ron Garner had avoided me like the plague since the first evening. After learning of his character assassination of me behind my back the next morning, the negative behavior of several others associated with the group seemed explainable, but they were only the 'spear bearer' contingent. After being snubbed by three of the group—Garner, the secretary, and the shipping clerk—and several minor associates, it seemed that my ostracism had become final by my second day there, over something I hadn't discussed with them, and which should have been anathema to Truth Seeker. Did they not know?

Had it been up to me, the secretary and shipping clerk would have remained in San Diego to hold down business. Louis Turi could have had a separate booth, since there seemed to be only a tenuous connection between "truth" and "astrology", but conceding the fact that knowledge of astrology might come in handy for understanding national leaders—and nuts like Hitler, who guided the Third Reich to Valhalla with it. Turi was more polite, and showed no signs of being in the petty conspiracy; as astrologers go, he is the best I have met.

It didn't seem appropriate that the behavior of a secretary and shipping clerk, provoked by an "outside" videographer, was controlling the fate of the operation. True to the philosophy, Synergism, like the Hitler it spawned, teaches its followers to strike at weakness, like true sociopaths. Meanwhile, I wondered if the only strong members of the group remaining—Sielaff and Tice—would eventually succumb to the Synergy garbage.

The Synergists are opposed to individuality, and will use "latitudinal" arguments and strategy to motivate their prey. That is where the CIA got the tactic. In fact, Gurdjieff had privately tutored Mao Zedong, Stalin, Alfred Rosenberg, Karl Haushoffer, Dietrich Eckhardt and many others of the totalitarian mind, and there were many Gurdjieff adepts in Reinhard Gehlen's SS Gestapo group, the

RSHA VI, which became the core of the OSI in America. These teachings had been the basis of the Communist movements of Mao and Stalin, as well as that of the Nazis. The Nazi troop management manual, authored by Ernst Rohm—also a student of Gurdjieff—had found its way into U.S. armed forces policy, when the official Nazi manual was adopted by the U.S. Congress in the 1950's, as the official U.S. troop management manual. The general policy is recognized today as the "principle of group identity", which is a direct translation of the "collective consciousness" doctrine of Gurdjieff, as espoused by Captain Ernst Rohm, "Father of the Brownshirts", the bully-boys responsible for Krystallnacht in the Nazi rise to power.

Since scapegoating is a typical tactic of the Synergists, I could expect an attempt back in San Diego to create and heighten a sense of failure of the venture, and to misplace blame for the lack of success somehow on me. This would mean that a heavy trip would be laid on me to Bonnie Lange. Whether this was another divide-and-conquer/takeover maneuver, only time would tell.

A short time after the Roswell debacle, I tried to warn Bonnie Lange about the Synergists, and she assured me everything was "under control". Soon afterward, she offered me an opportunity to write a series of articles about "Tesla's Technology in Today's World," which I have included in this book, in updated form.

I finished and submitted the first installation of my series of articles, and Bonnie accepted and praised it, with a lot of editorial cutting by her staff. She said it would be published in the magazine, and would also be published on their Internet web site. I waited patiently for news that the article had been published. In January 1998 I got on the Internet for the first time, and opened a web site of my own — "Pentagon Space Aliens" http://members.tripod.com/~lvne4lvne/ . In browsing the Truth Seeker site, I not only failed to find my article, or the cataloguing of my book, but also noticed that the Synergy people had become a prominent "partner" in their organization. That, to me, suggested that the Synergists had either taken over Truth Seeker, or had conned Bonnie into a partnership. This of course appeared to explain the reversal of policy, and the exclusion of my book and article without notice to me.

I hoped that my attempts to warn Bonnie and Truth Seeker would eventually start to make sense, in time to save the operation and to separate it from the Synergists. It was sad to see an old American institution which had formerly been associated with such powerful individualists as Mark Twain and Robert G. Ingersoll, being taken over by the enemy. With a lofty stated purpose which was, among other things, intended "...to elevate and emancipate the human race", and was opposed to "...everything that degrades or burdens mankind mentally or physically", it was tragic that the organization seemed to be selling out its birthright to synergistic totalitarianism, which is diametrically opposed to everything it stood for.

When they entered that door, they risked becoming the ultimate hypocrisy, selling the CIA'backed lies about "aliens", while pretending to be "seekers of truth". I knew that there was no way they could close that door behind them for good, without losing their identity as "seekers of truth", since that is in conflict with being suckers for covert government propaganda.

Among the Internet "free-thought" links of the Truth Seekers, I was saddened and appalled by the creepy Synergy group's featuring of sleazy "Japanimation" porn cartoons, clearly appealing to sick pedophiles, with illustrations of things like child sex, snuff, torture, bondage and sadism. These were only cartoons, but the mental attitude appealed to was unmistakable. This link misrepresented and effectively smeared the idea of free-thought, falsely equating it with pedophilia, sadism, child sexual abuse, torture and murder.

This clearly wasn't opposed to "everything that degrades or burdens mankind mentally or physically", but more its opposite. Since when have the secret cravings of sex criminals been elevated to the level of "...brave new thoughts"? Why didn't they feature some saucy sex scenes from the torture chambers of Treblinka or Dachau while they were at it? Oh yes...some starkly graphic recreations of the spicy escapades of that well-known "free thinker", Jeffrey Dahmer shouldn't be left out either! (Not to exclude that Debonair Devil of Dead-Dame Debauchery, Ed Gein, whose "arts and crafts" with human body parts were simply "emancipating"!) As a Libertarian, I don't advocate censorship of any speech or thought whatsoever, but consider these bizarre public associations between Truth Seekers and the sexual exploitation of children by the Synergists, to be an attempt to give the "kiss of death" to the Truth Seeker ideology, suggesting approval of something which is not endemic to "free thought", as a kind of fraud.

It's a good thing such groups don't hold an exclusive franchise on that thing called "free thought", since, in the event of their demise, there might be no one to pick up the torch of truth and carry it forward from where they fell. I must be a little old-fashioned for continuing to believe that someone should say what they mean, and mean what they say. When someone starts out as a Truth Seeker, and ends up repeating the same OLD TIRED BIG LIES as the rest of the gang, they have lost their way, and are little more than a hypocrite. What this Truth Seeker found was a disappointment of lies and hypocrisy.

In retrospect, I thank Truth Seeker and Bonnie Lange for sponsoring my truth, which had apparently been officially banned by those who ruled the Roswell Hoax 50th Anniversary gathering. I was truly an "alien" at that gathering, but the trip was priceless to me. Only the "biggie" alien liars of UFOlogy were invited to speak at the Roswell conference. Naturally, I was not considered, even in a debate, because the CIA must control both sides of it. The speakers' usual exorbitant fees were in direct proportion to the magnitude of the Big Lies in Big Brother's false propaganda. In retrospect, I should have taken up a position on the sidewalk, with a stack of my books and a sign which read:

"FREE SPEECH HERE: WHY PAY TO HEAR A ONESIDED
STORY? YOU CAN GET THE OTHER SIDE HERE FOR
FREE. MEANWHILE, MY BOOK IS FOR SALE, BUT I AM
NOT."

CHAPTER VII - FUZZY UFOLOGY:
Keeping the Dupes Stupid

This chapter is to teach you how to analyze UFOlogy, something covered more completely in Pentagon Aliens. Here, I give a brief overview of covert intelligence agency operations in the UFO field, point out the presence of agents posing as "UFOlogists" or "Skeptics", along with the "official government spokesmen", and show how they intermesh to maintain control of the field. I also highlight the incredible, statistically-challenging complicity of many dupes, who seem to be unaware of CIA control. I also describe the CIA's "M.O.", for use as a measuring instrument to detect CIA influence, control or complicity. I also describe some of my experiences with the military, the government, political parties, the CIA and military intelligence agencies, as background information which influences my judgments. Therefore, in this chapter let us step back and take an objective look at the UFOlogy field through my eyes, as I address the following, in part:

- ► That American "fuzzy" UFOlogy and the "alien" scenario were created by the government and CIA, as heir to the Nazi mass-psychology program, to conceal exclusively man-made UFOs, and enlarge the credulity of the public, to facilitate its acceptance of other Big Lies.

- ► That early (post WW II) UFO reports, books and movies, written by CIA'directed spooks, gave the public whatever misinformation the CIA wanted it to have. (Example: Kenneth Arnold's sightings have been debunked...as a false report describing saucers as boomerang-shaped... Arnold worked for the spooks.)

- ► That the 1947 "Roswell Incident" was created by the government, which initiated the first "credible" "alien-visitors" premise in its initial press releases by intelligence officer Walther Haut (a "P.I.O.", or Public Information Officer, an intelligence position). The news release was then redacted, making it look like a cover-up. CIA-directed UFOlogy picked up from there on out.

- ► That, in 1955, the major nations...including Russia...had a meeting in Geneva, Switzerland, and agreed to keep UFO reports secret from the public. They all had UFO technology, so they weren't hiding it from each other.
- ► That subsequent public "UFO reports" were filtered through the government's Project Bluebook, etc. Bluebook was a CIA/OSI project designed to 'intercept' the public's reports, to prevent the disclosure to the public of what was actually seen. "Real" reports were kept secret, and only CIA-fabricated, misinformational reports were "released".
- ► That UFO technology is primarily an energy and transportation secret, having the potential to end control by the world's corporate and totalitarian states and the coercive-monopolist corporate power structure. Concealment of the technology relates to maintaining the grip of coercive-monopolist status quo, not to "national security".

The CIA's Omnipresence in UFOlogy

In the world of UFO literature, the CIA has been pervasive. Even though some of this is partly paranoid imaginings, when all the pure paranoia is swept aside, the CIA's presence is still conspicuous in regard to UFOs. This presence is incongruous, given the government's official denials of the existence of UFOs: That is, unless one accepts the thesis which I put forth in my books, which is perfectly logical. It is also perfectly consistent that the CIA created "fuzzy UFOlogy" (the CIA would in fact have been remiss in its duties if it hadn't done so), through the covert branches of the Office of Scientific Intelligence (OSI).

As an intelligence operation, invested with the duty to carry out its duties for the coercive-monopolies and the government, there were two paramount "strategic objectives" which the OSI was required to pursue, which were (1) to conceal the science of UFO electro dynamic space propulsion technology, by whatever means necessary, and (2) to enlarge the public's credulity so it would believe the "space alien" lies, and whatever other lies of a more political nature that the government wished it to.

In keeping with these two strategic objectives, I have outlined what I consider to be the OSI modus operandi in pursuit of them, covered probably more extensively in Pentagon Aliens. By measuring a certain UFOlogist's or Paranormalist's M.O. against that of the OSI, one can ascertain the relative probability that he or she (don't forget "Linda Molting Cow") either takes their marching orders directly from the CIA, or is so cozy with the CIA that it really doesn't matter whether or not they are on its payroll. Since they virtually do its work for it as if they were, they either wittingly help the CIA, or else are incredibly stupid dupes. Either way, all UFOlogists are 'incriminated', either by their actual witting employment by the CIA, or by their negligence in failing to realize their own complicity when under a duty to find out, as a "responsible investigator."

An admitted association with the CIA once enhanced a UFOlogist's credibility. This previously decorative veneer has eroded away over the years to reveal shabby underlying layers of cheap fabrications and lies, due to the many incidents which have made the CIA's name synonymous with dishonest and untrustworthy behavior. Today, UFOlogists whose covers as CIA operatives have been blown are usually washed up. Naturally, such UFOlogists try to maintain their covers.

Some UFOlogists with once-assumed CIA connections now deny any connections whatsoever. That, too, would seem incongruous with regard to a UFOlogist who, for example, was once a trusted employee of a so-called "civilian" agency which had the exclusive government mission to collect and classify as secret all reports of actual or alleged UFO sightings. It would be sailing very, very close to the wind for that UFOlogist to say he had no intelligence connections. I don't think J. Allen Hynek ever made such a denial, but you can correct me if I'm wrong.

My old graduate school friend, Phil Shaw, Col., (retired), Air Force Intelligence, was in charge of two Project Bluebook offices—one in Reykjavik, Iceland, and the other in Reno, Nevada—so don't try to tell me that the project was not connected to intelligence. In Pentagon Aliens, I relate how embarrassing to Shaw it was, when, during a heated (yet friendly) argument between Phil and I, I took some students in one of our life drawing classes at the University of Texas out in the hall, and showed them that the lock on his locker was "CIA issue". As Phil grimaced, I exclaimed, "Sheesh, Phil! Are you so tight you have to use an agency lock?".

One of the things which once went with intelligence agency enhancement was the assumption that a UFOlogist who had access to Project Bluebook's secret reports—to which normal citizens had NO access—should be accepted as patently truthful and accurate. This is ridiculous, since that UFOlogist would be subject to prosecution under the National Security Act for disclosing classified information, and whatever is implied from the secret reports, without producing the actual classified reports, is mere hearsay.

The aura of "high credentials" is now used to enhance the "credibility" of UFOlogists, to induce acceptance of CIA- concocted lies, to convince the public that UFOs are extraterrestrial, that the government conducts secret liaisons with alien civilizations—based on alleged "leaks" from "inside" sources—or that human life on earth was "engineered" by "reptilian aliens". These are the favorite BIG lies used by the CIA's OSI to achieve their two most important strategic objectives.

The prolific use of allegedly "classified documents" from "inside sources" ignores the fact that such documents would have been retrieved at the point of a gun, and contained by the intelligence community, with their purveyors prosecuted, while the public availability of the documents marks them as fraudulent fabrications, created and disseminated by intelligence agencies in pursuit of so-called strategic objectives.

The frequent use of credibility-enhanced, professional UFOlogists, with high academic or military titles, such as "Ph.D.", "Colonel", etc., naturally raises the question as to why those with such "high" credentials would involve themselves in attempting to derive incomes as befits their educations from the risky business of UFOlogy, unless they were already provided with substantial covert incomes from intelligence coffers. In their writings and speeches, it seems that these UFOlogists will invariably only cite the alleged "documentation" of other CIA assets. This incestuous, fraudulent process is a matter of CIA UFOlogy policy, to never cite another researcher unless they are a controlled asset, in order to maintain control of the whole field, thus avoiding unpredictable results which might threaten that control.

My Mind and Thought-Control Ordeals

A well-known "UFOlogy lawyer"—who is himself a CIA tool—apparently alarmed that I "had his number", accused me of attempting to use my "credentials" (what credentials?) to gain credibility (his own tactic) but the only association I ever had with an intelligence agency was my short stint in Air Force Intelligence, in 1957-58, at a pay of around $160.00 per month. I subsequently have had minimal contact with the intelligence community, in the sense that, on occasion, on a voluntary basis, as a concerned citizen, I tried to warn our government, whenever I perceived what I believed to be threats to American safety, security and well-being.

Here, I briefly describe some (but not all) of my encounters in which, as a would-be responsible citizen, I rendered considerable service to my country several times, "..above and beyond the call of duty...", and in every single case, I was punished, insulted, abused, injured and dishonored. I was never so much as given a "thank you". Instead of being thanked or honored even in the slightest way, I was severely and cruelly punished. It came as a severe and traumatic shock to my naive and idealistic mind to think that my government would not only allow such things to be done to me, but to do them to me itself. I suffered deeply because of it, and the indelible and painful marks on my mind will never go away.

In my first experience, at the age of 18, as an Air Force basic trainee in 1956, I had uncovered a 5-man cell of KGB agents running the Air Force Career Counseling Center, at Lackland AFB in San Antonio, Texas sabotaging personnel records, mis-assigning trainees, and even routing their own agents into Air Force Counter-intelligence. This discovery created a chain reaction which eventually 'rolled over' on Col. Rudolf Abel (alias William Fisher), the Soviet Western Hemisphere Chief of KGB Espionage Operations, whose special training was in sabotage. The FBI, on its website, says Abel was arrested in New York City around June 21 st, 1957, but this may be a cover-story lie. The FBI takes credit for everything, another lie. If I hadn't discovered the cell, operating right under the noses of the "counterintelligence experts" for years, they would probably have never known who Abel was.

The Texas cell was handled by Mikhail Nikolaevich Svirin, Soviet ambassador to the U.N., Col. Abel's subordinate and intermediary to the cell. Svirin got wind of my exposure of his spies and immediately returned to Moscow, leaving no intermediary. Lucky for Eisenhower, Svirin had diplomatic immunity, so the FBI didn't have to arrest or to stop him from returning to Moscow, the Soviet government didn't have to lodge a noisy and falsely indignant protest with the American embassy or the U.N., and the Republicans didn't have to explain how this very serious national security breach occurred under their administration.

The arrest of the Russian ambassador to the U.N. for espionage would certainly have aroused public suspicion, and the FBI had strict orders to avoid public exposure of the incident. Meanwhile, the FBI still didn't know who Svirin's superior was. That was the way things remained until 1957, a year later.

Conveniently for the FBI, Finnish KGB agent Reino Hayhanen had defected in May, 1957, in Paris, and was moved in by the FBI to fill Svirin's slot in Abel's sabotage and espionage network, enabling him to identify Abel. Abel was arrested, charged with espionage, prosecuted, convicted and sentenced, and was eventually traded for U-2 pilot Gary Francis Powers in 1962.

Because I had uncovered Abel's Air Force records-sabotage operation, the Air Force, without my knowledge at the time, ostensibly re-assigned me to Air Force Intelligence immediately following the confirmation of my discovery. After what should have been the perception by the Air Force that I might be useful in the intelligence field, the Air Force then proceeded under an ulterior Republican-created political agenda to attempt to assassinate me, then to punish me, then to completely waste and ruin whatever potential or talent I may have had for intelligence work, after its attempt to murder me failed, which instead of killing me, "only" caused a permanent neurological disability.

From a consideration of the circumstances, my knowledge, and the evidence I have gathered thus far, it appears that "Republican intelligence agents" and Air Force spooks tricked me into taking a prescription of a neurotoxic drug, by having an agent give me a cup of bad coffee during a student coffee break, thus requiring me to go to sick call, where it was arranged that a doctor prescribe the poisonous drug which was then given to me by the pharmacist. It was the pure, "100% extract of belladonna", rather than the 10% "tincture" solution, a dosage which was ten times the prescribed dosage. Therefore, the dosage—"24 drops of in warm water before meals, three times per day" (72 drops per day)—was the equivalent to 720 drops of tincture of belladonna per day, and clearly a potentially lethal dosage, with little doubt remaining that the intent was to effect my death, to be explained posthumously as a "suicide" or "accidental overdose".

On Nov. 6, 1956, the presidential election was held, and Ike had won. Before I had even met Commander Thomas B. Hayward, I had already been poisoned and had survived. As a Republican naval officer, connected to the O.N.I, Hayward's job apparently had to do with carrying out an illegal political order from the Eisenhower Re-election Committee—possibly on request from Vice-President Richard Nixon or the fanatical right wing SAC head, General LeMay—to shut me up at all costs. The first indication that the spooks were involved in my fate was when I had been chosen just prior to the poisoning, by an Airborne jumpmaster who had come to Keesler, to be the "combat controller", in Ike's contemplated U.S. military intervention in Hungary during the revolt of 1956. This was apparently a "last minute" grandstand play concocted either by Eisenhower or Nixon—more likely by Nixon—to "insure" their re-election. I'll wager that Nixon pushed it and Eisenhower stopped it.

As the Combat Controller, I would have been the first man on the ground, where I was to set up a landing operation for our entire invasion, spearheaded by airborne divisions, and to land our planes in a massive assault. It was a tall order for an 18-year-old kid. I was led to believe that I was chosen because I was in superb physical condition, knew how to shoot, and was pretty tough. They wanted a man who could survive at least long enough to carry out the job of getting our forces on the ground so they could engage the Russian troops. Like a fool, I was ready, willing and able to do it.

In retrospect, I realized that I would have probably been one of the first men killed, thus eliminating any further problem of a possible leak regarding the KGB's record-setting records-sabotage operation. There would have been a 97% chance of my being killed in the operation. Lucky for me, the plan to intervene in Hungary was abandoned by Eisenhower, so it was time for plan of elimination of Airman William Lyne #2, which was to poison me.

Here is a case where covert intelligence operatives within the military were involved in a purely partisan, attempted political assassination of a loyal American military man to cover up a politically explosive spy scandal, because it might have prevented a Republican politician's re-election. And for that reason alone, they actually coddled the Soviet agents, and helped the Soviets keep the spy scandal secret from the American and Russian people!

After I had begun to take the belladonna as prescribed—which was the equivalent of 720 drops of tincture of belladonna per day—I became so confused that I did not even realize that my disorientation was caused by the belladonna. Belladonna is a hypnotic neurotoxin, composed of several alkaloids, including scopolamine, one of the drugs of choice for Nazi SS interrogators during WW II. Because of its horrible effects, it could induce many subjects to talk rather than to be forced to endure another dose of the drug. According to one of my dictionaries, scopolamine is, "A drug used to dilate pupils of eyes, as a depressant, to produce a partial stupor known as "twilight sleep", and to induce confession in criminals."

At that point, I began to have uncontrollable sleep attacks in class, which caused the instructors to begin disciplinary measures, and to do such things as to slap a stick loudly on the table in front of me whenever I began to drop off. This caused PTSD (post traumatic stress disorder). Even when being humiliated, by being ordered to stand at attention during class in front of a large floor fan having no protective grille on it, I still fell asleep. Thanks to a quick-thinking fellow student, who blocked my fall just as I lost consciousness, and was falling into the fan blades, a serious accident was narrowly averted. I was then cruelly hauled before boards of review, in my disoriented state, where I was ordered to explain why I kept falling asleep in class. I could only answer, "I don't know, Sir, but I can't help it."

I was then ordered to appear before the commandant of the GCA school—an eccentric warrant officer, who wore Napoleonic locks (I swear I'm not making this up)—joined by a master sergeant named Ackermann. The two promised me that, if I could make it through the school, they would make me a part of their intelligence "team" on a covert mission into Port Said, Egypt. I found out that the warrant officer and the sergeant were both colonels, using assumed names and ranks. It appeared that they were unaware that I was being poisoned. Meanwhile, I was still unaware that the belladonna was even a poison, or that it was causing the problem, so I could produce no plausible excuse, or even bring up the issue. My judgment was severely clouded, to say the least. The two officers must have been Democrats, who were unaware of the secret Republican plan to eliminate me, unless the "covert mission" was another plan of elimination.

About that time, as I was visiting the base service club in the evening, I was approached by two intelligence agents, and asked, "Are you William R. Lyne, AF 18510695?" I answered "Yes." One of the agents then said, "We're here to inform you that the KGB cell you uncovered at Lackland was caught. Your report to the adjutant turned out to be true. We are breaking security procedures by even telling you about this, because the incident is classified, so don't tell anyone we are involved. We know you are having troubles, so we will try to help you."

Belladonna in such a high dosage makes you look and act like a zombie, a virtual "living dead". I could neither sleep restfully at night, nor awaken fully during the day. At night, I began to hang out alone in the numerous dives in Biloxi, Mississippi. Due to my disorientation, my inability to explain my sudden sleep attacks, and the morbid and melancholy effects of the belladonna, together with my being washed out of the GCA school at no fault of my own, I became very distraught, even suicidal. I had been a top student, wide-awake and promising, but I was going down, and there was nothing I could do in my drugged state of mind to stop it.

While in one of the Biloxi bars, after midnight on a weekend, I was visited again by two different intelligence agents, who said they would try to help me, even though regulations prohibited them from doing so. In retrospect, years later, that all seemed so very strange to me, that they had to "violate regulations" in order to help an airman who had discovered a KGB cell, done his fellow Air Force members a great service, saved the taxpayers many millions of dollars, and was being poisoned, washed out of his school, and demoted. Again, these guys didn't seem to be part of the political assassination squad, because they didn't try to attribute blame to the KGB. As professional intelligence agents, at least they knew that the KGB couldn't have manipulated everything on the base. They probably knew my "problems" were political ones anyway, but couldn't say more.

There being absolutely no legal representative to fight for me, even myself, while under diminished capacity, in a stupor, I signed whatever papers they put before me, just to try to make the problems go away. After I was removed from the school, demoted, fined, and placed on menial detail, I stopped taking the belladonna. The extreme melancholia subsided, but the symptoms of narcolepsy remained.

At that point, in spite of the poisoning, I had survived. In retrospect, I now realize that, before the November 6th election, I was supposed to die from a "drug overdose", undoubtedly to be explained subsequently as a "probable suicide", due to my "apparent despondency over being washed out of the school", a despondency which they had so skillfully created through the MK-Ultra, trauma-based mind control methods, by which time the bottle of uncut belladonna extract would probably have been replaced by a "10% tincture solution", to cover the conspirators' tracks.

But my survival had created another problem: To prevent me from discovering that the poisoning had caused the "discipline" problems and the narcolepsy, and from realizing that it was part of the Republican plan to eliminate me. That was when Republican Tom Hayward was chosen to visit with me.

The spooks must have asked themselves, "Who is an absolutely loyal, trustworthy Republican officer, who can be relied upon to do our dirty work, to go to Keesler, to gain Lyne's confidence, and convince him that the KGB, and not the Republican party or the Air Force is responsible for his brain injury?" The fact that Hayward was Navy and not Air Force, should have told me that the problem originated outside the Air Force, but after all, I was still taking the drug, and my judgment was clouded. The drug also enhances one's suggestibility, something discovered by Nazi interrogators. Eddie Hayward, Tom Hayward's younger brother, was my roommate and friend, in whom I sometimes confided, so that, together with Hayward's high rank—his "enhanced credibility"—could be used to convince me that neither the Air Force nor the Republican party had anything to do with my strange, inexplicable problems.

The idea that all the circumstances—such as my medical condition—would be unknown to the intelligence agencies during the bogus "national security" covert operation, was ludicrous. In such a case, every single circumstance would be known. The Air Force knew all along why I was having uncontrollable sleep attacks, because they had ordered the poisoning, and they knew exactly what the effects of belladonna in a large dosage would be.

After I had survived, and exhibited for the first time the classic symptoms of narcolepsy, they also knew, in November, 1956, what the medical profession did not learn until the year 2000, that narcolepsy could be caused by the ingestion of neurotoxins, because they can destroy specialized protein cells in the hypothalamus which produce hypocretin (A.K.A. "orexin"), the hormone which regulates sleep and diet. Of course, hypocretin had not even been discovered in 1956, but the Air Force knew very well that I had been converted from an exceptionally sharp-witted and "wide awake" airman, to a narcoleptic after ingestion of the drug.

There was no longer any talk of making me part of a "covert intelligence team." By that time, the Air Force knew that I was permanently damaged. I could no longer consider becoming a jet pilot or an air traffic controller, because I had narcolepsy, and they knew it. In fact, one of the 'counselors' they sent me to, a disgruntled major (who was not a psychologist, but had been assigned to a detail counseling airmen, because he had a college course in psychology), told me I had narcolepsy, but then misinformed me, saying that it was a purely "psychological problem"—a "defense mechanism"—which was my "...attempt to avoid taking responsibility for my actions, by falling asleep." That of course was his "basic Freud 101" speaking, which was wrong. That was clearly a fraudulent, spook-designed "diagnosis" which was intended to make me think it was all "my fault".

They pretended not to know about the belladonna, but my medical record would be in the investigative file in such a case. It may turn out in the future that the evidence of the belladonna prescription was obliterated from my records. After all, they had covered their tracks very well up to that point, so why not? The fact that they had gone to such extremes of bogus psychology, and of using high-ranking liars, to avoid MY discovery of THEIR responsibility for causing my narcolepsy, and all the other so-called "discipline problems" I had, despite the obvious fact that similar problems would continue so long as I remained in the Air Force, showed that they had no concern for my human rights, and were willing to go to any extremes to achieve their ends.

Commander Thomas Hayward came to Keesler and went with Eddie and me to our squadron mess hall for our Thanksgiving dinner, in 1956, which was on the early date of Nov. 15, because Nov. 1 had fallen on a Thursday. He was warm and friendly, a decorated Navy hero in WW II, who had been awarded the Navy Cross for having removed a hot shell casing from a large naval gun on a battleship, which was jammed in the breech, during a battle in the South Pacific. By removing the shell with his bare arms, burning them, in order to get the big gun back into operation, he had purportedly risked life and limb, "above and beyond the call of duty". He made a favorable impression on me, as reflected in my book, Pentagon Aliens, since, at the time of its writing, I had not yet become aware of his duplicity and betrayal of my trust.

Tom knew all about my discovery of the KGB cell, down to the last detail. He said he had come to "help" me. He told me that he believed that my problems were "being caused by the KGB". His younger brother, Eddie, had been with me ever since basic training and the Lackland Bugle Corps, in which I was first bugler. I had left Lackland with an "excellent" rating. There was no sign of narcolepsy there, or anywhere else before my enlistment.

In the GCA school, I had been one of about three top students who vied for the top scores. My grades were later falsified to make me look like a poor student, and to justify my removal from the school for "sleeping in class", "improper attitude", and "insufficient grades." Later, I would receive an FAA certificate by mail, which had the proper grades I had made on the written tests for Control Tower Operator, and they were good grades, quite at odds with those shown in my records. I guess the conspirators missed that one. The label "improper attitude" was due to the fact, even when threatened and coerced while I was under the effects of the drug, that I still wouldn't "admit" that I was willfully falling asleep, because I knew that I had gotten plenty of sleep, had never had the problem before, and had exerted every bit of will-power I could muster, in effort to stay awake, to no avail.

Eddie had seen me go from a top student and airman, to a broken and dejected, stupefied wash-out, who was the victim of poisoning and drug-induced narcolepsy, which was permanent.

I appreciated what appeared to be genuine support from Tom, though I didn't quite understand his reasoning regarding the KGB being responsible for my sleep attacks, and hadn't even become aware of the permanent narcolepsy, or connected it to the belladonna, because I was still taking the drug and was in "twilight sleep" at the time. I hadn't even begun to separate the temporary effects of belladonna ingestion. Those particularly severe effects were gone after I stopped taking it, at which point I then began to distinguish them from the permanent effects of narcolepsy, which I was just learning about and trying to understand, without any technical information regarding the condition.

I unsuccessfully tried very hard to get the problem under control. Going to bed early in the evening didn't stop or alleviate the problem, or even help it very much, which was a mystery to me, since it had never happened before. I would not connect all of the symptoms of narcolepsy, which I had experienced since October 1956, until I would read an article on narcolepsy in Psychology Today in 1977. For the first time in 21 years, I connected all the various classic symptoms of narcolepsy which I had exhibited since October 1956, just after I had begun taking the drug.

My first "hypnogogic hallucination" was while I was napping in my dormitory room, as Eddie Hayward sat in a chair nearby, working on a letter. My friends—Eddie Hayward, Joseph di Paulo, and William Passmore—seemed to feel sorry for me, to see such a "sharp guy" like me go down. They must have thought I had gone crazy or something, or was becoming an alcoholic.

I was deceived by Tom Hayward for 44 years. It wasn't until late 2000, when I began to look closely at my old Air Force records, that I began to put it all into focus. Tom had detailed knowledge of the "classified" incident, which I had initially thought was due to his connection to ONI, but unless he had a "need to know", he shouldn't have been given access, or even have known about the incident or been inquisitive about it enough to seek access. His access had to do with carrying out the plan to shut me up, after the Nov. 6th election.

It recently became clear to me that his purpose was political damage control, after the fact. Covert Air Force intelligence operatives involved in the Republican plan had tried to murder me, intending to make it look like a suicide or an accidental drug overdose, but I had survived, but was left with a permanent neurological disability. Investigation even of that alone could lead back to the original motive, means and persons involved. That left the problem that I might figure it out, and attempt to get an investigation and possible prosecution of the criminals who had given the orders for my elimination, or that I might somehow get the information to the press. That could implicate the Republican party and maybe even Eisenhower himself. This was "Proto-Watergate", and probably involved Vice-President Nixon, since it had the imprint of his "M.O."

I find it very hard to accept the fact that a man of such high reputation, rank and warm personality, such as Tom Hayward, could lend himself to such an evil scheme, to deceive an innocent 18'year-old boy—who had performed admirably, by uncovering a nest of KGB records-saboteurs—into believing that "the Commies" had caused all his problems. When I reconsidered all the facts, in April 2001, I realized that the orders for an "executive action" (assassination) and cover-up, required Eisenhower's authorization.

Like Eisenhower, Tom was a loyal Republican. Republicans were very strong in the Navy elite, Tom's forte. After all, hadn't he been a close friends with "The Little Giant", Senator John Tower, a former Navy carrier pilot? Hadn't he rose to the rank of Rear Admiral promoted to Chief of Naval Operations, under the Republican administration of Ronald Reagan? Was this his reward for dutifully playing the "political dirty tricks" game since 1956?

Ike or Nixon was apparently fearful of a political backlash from my discovery that Communist agents had brazenly sabotaged the Air Force Personnel Center, on their watch, right under the noses of the CIA, Air Force Intelligence and the FBI, a spy scandal which had secretly come to light in the wake of the 1956 presidential election. An 18-year-old total amateur, airman 3rd class, had exposed their gross ineptitude. If it reached the public, this could throw the election to the Democrats. That airman 3rd class (me) wasn't covered by a national security secrecy order, so he could talk about what he knew to the press, since he had acquired his knowledge of the incident through "innocent means."

To the President, I was apparently a greater threat than the Communist agents, who were not even prosecuted. The treatment I received was much worse than that given to the Communist agents, who were merely transferred to the Army, so they could be "watched more closely." I, on the other hand, had been given a "life sentence" to the "prison of narcolepsy", without a possibility of parole.

News of the incident could have influenced the election to be held on Nov. 6th, during which time I was turned into a zombie. The brownie-point-sucking Republican naval officer, Tom Hayward, was sent to lie to me, to use his high credentials and winning personality to protect Ike's career, probably at the request of Richard Nixon and General Curtis LeMay.

It was an ironic turn of events, considered in retrospect. In 1955, Eisenhower had come to Waco, Texas, on the campaign trail. During the parade through downtown Waco, I watched the parade on T.V. with my grandmother, Nancy Lou Bertha (Richardson) Lyne, in my aunt's house, near Guthrie Drive. As the parade ended, the phone rang, and Grandma Lyne answered. In a few minutes, she mysteriously asked me to accompany her outside. It was a chilly, cloudy and windy day. We walked out to a small hillock just outside the rear fence, about 50 yards from the intersection of Guthrie Drive and a major highway.

A long, black, open-topped Lincoln limousine eased up on the shoulder of the road. President Eisenhower stood up, faced us, and waved his arm. Grandma had a little white hanky, which she waved in the wind, as tears streaked down her cheeks. No one else was present, except Eisenhower, two men in the limousine, my grandma, and I. My boyhood friend's father, the Chief of Secret Service, Charles Warren, Sr., a Southern Cheyenne, was one of the men in the car.

Ike and Grandma stood for a moment, viewing one another wistfully across the distance, then Eisenhower slowly sat back down, and the limousine slowly pulled away, as Grandma sobbed quietly into her handkerchief, and we returned to the house.

The only possible connection I could make between Grandma and Ike was the fact that she had lived in San Antonio with my Aunt Opal, just after my grandfather's death in 1922, which was the same time that Ike was stationed at Ft. Sam Houston Army Base. My coach in Waco, "Maj" William Kiethly, had been on Ike's staff during WW II, just as my cousin's father-in-law, retired Air Force Colonel Reinhart had been. Colonel Reinhart had gone to his grave with the belief that the Air Force was incapable of corruption, the shining example of a moral force for good that he had known in WW II and afterward. Major Kiethly had a high opinion of me. Someone procured a Presidential appointment to the Air Force Academy, from Eisenhower, for me, when I entered the Air Force at age 17, but I couldn't accept it because I was a high school drop-out.

In 1956, Eisenhower had apparently ordered my elimination, either that, or someone below him had done the dirty deed, but the motive was to protect the White House from the political repercussions of a spy scandal which showed military stupidity under a general/president. That may have been considered unforgivable by enough of the American electorate to upset the election results.

It was not until late 2000 that I discovered that I had been reassigned to intelligence, while I was still in GCA school, and before I was given the poison and removed from the school.

A few days after Tom's visit in 1956,1 attended a lecture at the base theater, by Sir Arthur C. Clarke, on "Unidentified Aerial Phenomena". Clarke's lecture was based on the lie that flying saucers were not even real, and that all sightings could be explained as mirages, weather anomalies, weird clouds, etc.

After the lecture, I approached the podium, filed through a short line, and introduced myself to Clarke with a handshake, saying, "Dr. Clarke, I'm very pleased to meet you. I enjoyed your lecture, but both you and I know that you're a goddamned liar, and that flying saucers are real, man-made flying machines, powered by electricity. I saw one of them up close in 1953, so I know they are real, and you could see the electrical discharges, so you can't fool me."

Clarke smiled wryly, as he shook my hand, and said that he was glad to meet me also. I knew that Clarke knew the truth, but had been appointed by the British Intelligence Services, the CIA, and the U.S.A.F., to come to Keesler and probably many other American bases, to use his prestige and speaking skills to convince regular Air Force personnel that flying saucers did not even exist. Only the elite knew the truth, except for me. He represented the official, government, "pseudo-skeptical" position in the "two-pronged attack", his high credentials being intended to add credibility to his lies.

I wondered what it was like for Clarke to meet an 18-year-old American airman third-class, who wasn't fooled in the least. The fact that he was not angered by my accusation showed that he had a reserved appreciation for my rationality, and was not insulted by the truth. He was ordered to lie, but here was a young man who knew it!

About three days later, I was sent to a "personnel pool", where

I was "reassigned" to the intelligence field (even though my records show that I had already been reassigned to intelligence, weeks before, pursuant to a mysterious, secret, "Report # 5").

Even though they tried to make me believe that the KGB was responsible, I now reject that idea because that would have required them to have control over the guy who gave me the bad coffee (possible), the medical appointments clerk and the doctor he assigned me to, and the pharmacist (very unlikely). This caused a permanent, neurological disorder, which made me unfit for "military intelligence" (excuse the oxymoronic expression) work, because I had no treatment or medication whatsoever for the disorder at the time. I was viciously and tortuously kicked out of the GCA school I was in, was demoted, given an Article 15 as disciplinary punishment, fined, dishonored, and placed on demeaning details as further punishment. After having done that, the Air Force transferred me to Lockbourne AFB, Ohio, gave me a Top Secret Clearance in an effort to shut me up, and buried me in an obscure SAC intelligence office, as an intelligence clerk. There, still without medical treatment, the same vicious punishment was continued until the time of my discharge, all because of the uncontrollable symptoms I suffered from their poisoning of me.

The reason for all this cruel treatment was pure politics. Specifically, the 1956 Eisenhower Re-election Committee, the Republican Party, and Dwight Eisenhower feared that my discovery, if made known to the public, could throw the election to the Democrats. Maybe this came from Nixon, well-known for his underhanded tactics, I would say. I had uncovered a KGB operation which had sabotaged the nerve center of the entire Air Force. The KGB agents were responsible for the sabotage of the records of, and potential mis-assignment of everyone coming into the Air Force during their time in operation...many thousands of personnel.

Many KGB agents were undoubtedly routed into critical jobs and even into Air Force counter intelligence, and an unknown number of personnel were routed into fields in which they were bound to be incompetent, due to the scrambling of or tampering with their tests and aptitude scores. At the very minimum, I had saved the Air Force many millions—possibly billions—of dollars, and probably many lives and aircraft, and for all that, I was cruelly and viciously punished. In retrospect, If I had known beforehand what would happen to me, I would have walked right on by and let the KGB go on its merry, mischievous way. My health will suffer to the end of my life for what the Air Force did to me, and I'm lucky to be alive. Apparently, no one was thankful for what I did. In fact, they were terrified of the truth and what it might do to their future. Imagine the Republicans—Vice-President Nixon, President Eisenhower, and right-wing General LeMay—reacting to that. They wanted no public prosecution or press releases on it, even though it was bigger than the Rudolf Abel arrest, the Aldrich Ames arrest, or the Richard Hanssen arrest, because the damage involved thousands of personnel, all under the administration of General Dwight David Eisenhower, himself a military man, whose political career was jeopardized by my discovery. The political implications of public knowledge would have been devastating. How could Eisenhower have let that happen? The best way to describe the incident is "POLITICAL EMBARRASSMENT". And I was the unfortunate messenger...who was shot.

Instead of prosecuting the members of the KGB cell, which would have attracted public attention, they were transferred to the Army, and the incident was classified (to keep the press from finding out), but since I had no clearance at the time of my discovery, I was not bound by a national security agreement, so they in effect persecuted me into oblivion instead. I was transferred to a SAC base in Ohio—Lockborne AFB—which was directly under the authority of the trusted right-wing head of the Strategic Air Command, General Curtis LeMay, where I could be oppressed and controlled. There was no interest in doing what was right or just, but rather to pursue partisan political expediency, through a criminal conspiracy, in service to continued political control by the current Republican administration in Washington.

This was clearly a case of treason, since the Republican Party gave "aid and comfort to the enemies of the United States", for purely partisan political purposes.

The indelible imprint the incident had made upon me, has been inescapably driven home to me, each and every day and night since then, by the symptoms of narcolepsy which I have struggled with ever since. Through the first few years, I never came to grips with the problem as a disability, because I was in denial. So long as I could be involved in dynamic physical activity, in my youth, I was able to continue to perform on an acceptable level, by exercising extraordinary concentration. Whenever I had to sit in a class for a long time, which was somewhat boring, or when I had not had a lot of sleep the night before, the problem persisted. For 16 years—between 1962 and 1978—before I began getting regular medication, I drove vehicles which had beds in the back, so I could take a nap whenever the narcolepsy hit me while driving. In late 1977, I first began getting regular medication.

Back in early March, 1962, I entered training for the U.S. Peace Corps, and was sent to Puerto Rico for training. This was the site of the second incident involving the CIA and the spooks, in which I was booted out of Peace Corps training for what I later discovered—over four years later—was the false allegation made by the CIA itself, to President John F. Kennedy, that I was one of its agents. Again, I as the messenger, was 'shot'. The lie to Kennedy appeared to have been related to an incident involving my discovery, around April, 1962, that the Russians were installing ICBM silos and missiles in Cuba. I had discovered this while in Peace Corps training, near Arecibo, Puerto Rico, when I was approached at a rural cantina by an old Puerto Rican man. The man explained that he had been going back and forth to Cuba in his boat, running a small black-marketeering and smuggling operation between Puerto Rico and Cuba. He emerged from a nearby pier, approached me, and excitedly told me what he had seen in Cuba, as he had crawled up in the grass, near an installation near Havana. He described the presence of Russian troops, and the large-scale construction of what were apparently ICBM silos, complete with missiles, and batteries of anti-aircraft surface-to-air ("SAM") missiles, to protect against air attacks or U-2 surveillance. The man had then urgently made the 1200-mile trip in his boat back to Arecibo as fast as he could, in order to report this important information.

I immediately relayed this information to four men and a woman whom I knew to be CIA agents, who were in my Peace Corps training group, so it could be checked out. I expected a U-2 flight to be conducted as soon as possible, to get positive photo-confirmation of this strategic information. History shows this to be true, although the version told to the public contains several lies.

Two of the CIA agents leaked the misinformation that I was a CIA agent to Fidel Castro's agents, when they visited the Peace Corps training base, followed by Castro's radio broadcasts accusing the U.S. of planting its CIA agents in the Peace Corps. This was done because the CIA and the Republican party wanted to make a shambles out of Kennedy's Peace Corps, which they had already infiltrated. After Kennedy had taken the bait, he signed an executive edict which stated that no person who had been in the CIA could be in the Peace Corps. The CIA, through Kennedy's gullibility, scapegoated me and several other innocent parties—none of whom were CIA agents—by kicking us out for being "CIA agents", yet failing to tell any of us why we were being kicked out.

Meanwhile, none of the four real agents was kicked out, and the CIA illegally maintained its presence in the Peace Corps in defiance to Kennedy's edict. Their hatred of Kennedy was apparently greater than their respect for the rule of law and the constitution under which our republic is supposed to operate.

Just before my departure from the Peace Corps training facility at Barranquitas, Puerto Rico—I was seen off by a sizeable contingency of my Puerto Rican friends—who carried placards protesting my being thrown out—and with a tearful Hispanic girl from Laredo, Texas, in the background, afraid to come forward to kiss me goodbye. Meanwhile, the CIA agents had given me a bunch of muck on the Peace Corps, which they apparently expected me to give to the press on my return to West Texas, where they had already arranged for interviews and a TV appearance.

As later documented, and faithfully reflected in the recent movie, "Thirteen Days", the information on the Russian ICBMs did not reach the President for at least six more months, and the President was also falsely led to believe that the ICBMs—which the old man had described to me in April—were not being installed in Cuba until late October, 1962. Neither President Kennedy nor the movie writers apparently ever knew of this lie. The possible reasons the CIA withheld this information from Kennedy for so long are all bad:

(1) The CIA, in its incompetence, may have ignored the information I gave them, dismissing it as a rumor, until it because so painfully apparent that they couldn't ignore it; or,

(2) the CIA may have wanted to "cut Kennedy short"....to make it a "big surprise", so they could evoke the most extreme reaction from Kennedy, possibly even to create a nuclear war.

In view of the previous discovery I had made in 1956, the CIA should have realized that the information I gave them was valid, and I'm relatively certain they acted upon it and had U-2 confirmation on it for six months before they told Kennedy about it, and General LeMay made certain Kennedy didn't know about it.

The other lie—that I was a CIA agent—was not disclosed to me until a 1966 meeting with a CIA recruiter at the University of Texas at Austin.

Incredibly, after trying to murder me and causing my narcolepsy in 1956, and scapegoating me in 1962, the CIA attempted to recruit me in 1966, 1974, 1975, 1977 and 1989, in various capacities. Though I have never worked for them, in 1962 they told President Kennedy that I did. It just goes to show that even the President can be lied to with impunity by the CIA.

It was a turning point...an "epiphany" if you will...for me, when I read in October, 1962, that the President had just "discovered" the Russian plot to install ICBMs in Cuba, which I had discovered and reported to the CIA six months earlier. Meanwhile, though I was still in the dark at that time as to why I was kicked out of the Peace Corps, I knew that the military and the CIA were concealing strategic information from the President, their boss, Commander-in-Chief of U.S. armed forces. If the President was being denied such critical, national security information, I asked myself, how was he supposed to insure our protection? Wasn't that treason? Did the generals and spooks care so little for us that they were willing to risk our suffering the possible consequences of a nuclear holocaust, by denying intelligence to the President until it was almost too late to avoid a nuclear war?

In a Feb. 11, 2001 press interview on the arrest of FBI agent/alleged Russian mole Richard Hanssen, President George W. Bush said, "I just want everyone out there to know that, if you've been false to a trust...if you've betrayed a trust...we're gonna come after you." I asked myself, what if the government is false to a trust?

The government had been false to its trust to me so many times...in 1956, by giving me a potentially lethal dose of a neurotoxic drug which caused permanent damage, and in 1962 by falsely scapegoating me as a "CIA agent", while lying to President Kennedy, and by shooting at my wife in 1983 and causing the miscarriage of our first child, a girl, and almost causing my wife to die. After all that, I view what it says mostly as lies.

As I see it, the "cloak and dagger" intrigues provide too many opportunities for illegal political manipulation, as the tools of the evil conspirators who create them. Instead of protecting our national security, they endanger it even more. In addition, a climate of hatred toward Americans has been created, so that we cannot travel abroad without being suspected of working for the spooks.

After the terrorist attack of September 11, 2001, it became obvious that the CIA and FBI are incompetent, that the White House gave the Afghani Taliban 43 million dollars only three months before, and that the CIA trained Osama bin Laden via the Pakistani ISI (intelligence service), probably including the techniques of trauma-based mind-control to use on his suicide stooges.

I had realized much earlier in life that the CIA (through its predecessors) had created both Project Bluebook and the UFOlogy field, to conceal UFO propulsion technology from the people. My contact with intelligence agencies, aside from confirming my earlier suspicions, had done little more than tell me what they were supposed to do, and revealed what they had failed to do, when under a duty to do so. It taught me to look for the motivations behind the various CIA frauds and failures in respect to the American people, and many others in the world, who don't deserve such abuse. Since I realize that all the major governments of the world possess UFO technology, yet keep it secret, such secrecy in the name of "national security" is the biggest fraud of all, especially when the technology could liberate our citizens from energy slavery.

We know of government frauds only because of blunders by its employees, but such "blunders" can be faked. A prime example of a faked government blunder is revealed by the circumstances surrounding the Condon Report, in which a government plan to use "non-believers" to propagate false propaganda was intentionally exposed, due to a feigned "accidental" discovery of a "secret" memo, dated Aug. 9, 1966, written by Robert Low, project "coordinator". In October, 1966, the Air Force selected Dr. Edward U. Condon of the University of Colorado in Boulder to head a committee to do an allegedly "objective, scientific study" of the UFO phenomenon. Low's "secret" memo was "inadvertently" placed into the unclassified "open files folder" under the heading, AIR FORCE CONTRACT AND BACKGROUND, so it could be "discovered" by a researcher for NICAP, Maj. Donald Kehoe's UFO (CIA front) organization. The memo[1] stated, in pertinent part (emphasis mine), as follows:

---

[1] from Flying Saucer Fiasco, John G. Fuller, LOOK magazine (May 14, 1968).

"...Our study would be conducted almost exclusively by non-believers who, although they couldn't possibly prove a negative result, could and probably would add an impressive body of evidence that there is no reality to the observations. The trick would be, I think, to describe the project so that, to the public, it would appear a totally objective study but, to the scientific community, would present the image of a group of nonbelievers trying their best to be objective, but having an almost zero expectation of finding a saucer. One way to do this would be to stress investigation, not of the physical phenomena, hut rather of the people who do the observing—the psychology and sociolosy of persons and groups who report seeing UFO's. If the emphasis were put here, rather than on examination of the old question of the physical reality of the saucers, I think the scientific community would quickly get the message"... "I'm inclined to feel at this early stage that, if we set up the thing right and take pains to get the proper people involved and have success in presenting the image we want to present to the scientific community, we could carry the job off to our benefit..."

This memo, contrary to the false idea being created—that it was a "smoking gun"—was actually a cheap "throw-away", "Saturday-night special", being thrown into the scene of the crime to be later discovered by "investigators".

Dr. Condon was a "highly-credentialed" figurehead, used to add false credibility, while Low was probably the CIA point-man, since his memo was dated two months before Condon's selection. For maximum effect, it was made to appear painfully clear from the memo that the purpose of the committee was to create the false illusion of scientific objectivity, and to convince the public of the "non-existence" of UFOs.

Therefore, the rationale for the alleged study was to make it appear to be focused on the personal psychology and sociological aspects of witnesses and UFO groups, to inflame their indignation, while conspicuously avoiding the physical reality of UFOs or the technology observed by witnesses. This was similar to Project Bluebook, which was to ostensibly pose as the official depository of the public's UFO sightings and photos, in order to "study" and "understand" the UFO "phenomenon", but having as its ulterior purpose the collection and concealment of objective reports by rational witnesses, and photographs which revealed the government's classified UFOs.

Posing as the "scientific investigators", the government hucksters of Project Bluebook were red herrings actually set up to intercept data from the uncontrolled publics' observations regarding secret UFO technology. In other words, to catch the inevitable leaks.

Meanwhile, the hucsters of the Condon Committee were conspicuously set up as red herrings, to fabricate the false appearance of a "government cover-up of government-alien contact". It skirted the issue of technology which might appear to some to prove the existence of "alien" UFOs, and changed the focus from technological to psychological and sociological. Then, by letting all this be known to the general public and UFOlogy dupes through the NICAP group...including the idea that the Condon Committee intended to cast the pall of neurosis, insanity or fraud upon all rational witnesses...who had been suckered into believing that, by filing their reports with Project Bluebook, that "our government" might be able to "figure out what UFOs are", only added to the induced paranoia of the UFOlogy dupes.

The fact that they designed this program to misinterpret sightings and witnesses, shows that they already knew everything about UFOs, especially since Project Bluebook was shut down in 1969. Shortly before that time, UFOs were sighted taking off from a military airport in the Ukraine, by American scientists, as they rode by in a train while on their way to a scientific conference in Kazakhstan. That no longer left any doubt that the Soviets also had the technology.

Consequently, four of the first five members selected for the Condon Committee were psychologists, while coordinator Robert Low had an M.B.A., with a B.S. in electrical engineering.

On Oct. 8, 1966, Condon was quoted by the New York Times as saying, "...It is improbable they (UFOs) exist..."... "...The view that UFOs are hallucinatory will be a subject of our investigation, to discover what it is that makes people imagine they see things." This statement, true to Low's memo of two months earlier, was intended to play into NICAP's agenda, and was published in the New York Times so it would reach the most people.

The Condon Committee and Maj. Donald Kehoe's NICAP organization represented two government "prongs" which are discussed later in more detail. Meanwhile, by its exclusive, official control over the gathering and concealment of rational UFO reports, Project Bluebook, headed by J. Allen Hynek, served both of these "prongs", by denial of information regarding rational reports to the public—thus supporting the government's irrational denials—while creating a vacuum of information which UFOlogy groups could fill with the begged question of an "alien presence".

NICAP and the Condon Committee's conduct was designed to create a dramatic conflict intended to polarize and divide the public between one or the other prong, leaving absolutely no "Most Rational Alternative" in the "middle"...the arena of logic and reason.

It was a nice touch to have a member of Kehoe's group 'discover' the allegedly misplaced "secret" memo, which was intended to expose the government's "official" agenda of manipulating the public. This was so the UFOlogists could scream "Censorship!" and was intended to add false credibility to the idea of a "...cover-up of a government-alien liaison." "Major" Donald Kehoe's military credentials added enhanced credibility to he and his group of counter-huckters: The Quixotic "fighting marine", leading his platoon in a battle against insurmountable government secrecy concealing "alien" visits.

Kehoe was associated with J. Allen Hynek through something called "Project Lure"[2], which was allegedly created to "lure" aliens into approaching certain sites prepared by them, to establish human contact with the "aliens", but the real object of this scam was to

---

[2] Major Donald E. Kehoe, Aliens from Space...The Real Story of Unidentified Flying Objects (1973).

sucker that segment of the interested public which did not agree with the government's pseudo-skeptical denials, into believing that aliens were actually visiting earth. This also showed that Hynek and Air Force Intelligence were definitely involved in spreading the begged question of alien visitations.

The closure of Project Bluebook in 1969 represented a shift in government strategy, probably resulting from the fact that Bluebook would no longer deter the intelligence interests of Russia, which clearly had the technology by that time. From that point on, the only remaining "enemy" was the public.

It is revealing to compare the prior agenda of Air Force contractors as stated in the leaked Low memo--to deflect the gist of the investigation from physical reality to psychological causes or aberrations--to statements by French UFOlogist, Jacques Vallee, in Passport to Magonia (1969), in which he built upon the Swiss psychologist C.G. Jung's "collective unconscious"/"archetypal images"/Tarot card hypothesis, to depict UFOs as a "sociological phenomenon"...."...manifestations of the collective unconscious" (an theory on which Jung himself had already reversed his position in respect to UFOs, as disclosed by a newspaper interview given by him while visiting Alamogordo, New Mexico).

We can see that the agenda of the CIA/OSI UFOlogists had been boosted by Robert Low's "secret" memo—which had so conspicuously fallen into the public's hands through NICAP (as if the government couldn't have retrieved it)—which laid out the "official prong" parameters under which the Air Force and CIA required the Condon Committee to operate. Meanwhile, it can be seen that Vallee's work coincided with the "unofficial prong" parameters represented by UFOlogy and NICAP, except a little more toward the middle. Whether by coincidence or intent, the effect was the same as if he were operating under the OSI agenda.

Since my 1993 first edition of Space Aliens From the Pentagon was published, there have even been a few in the UFO community who have accused me of being a "CIA agent". I can only laugh at this, and my own mild irritation, since, according to my own analysis of the UFO situation—extending for over 50 years—I should therefore be trying to convince you that UFOs are extraterrestrial in origin, or natural or paranormal phenomena, as covert CIA UFOlogists do, or espousing the "alien lizard-people" "party line". Instead, I'm exposing technology that our government conceals on behalf of the powers that be, to protect its cozy partnership with the powerful economic interests. As Hitler said, "One hand washes the other."

My lifelong research shows that UFOs are exclusively man-made electric flying machines, invented by Nikola Tesla before 1900. I don't expect anyone who has their head screwed on straight to believe that I am a CIA agent, even though President Kennedy was finally convinced it was true. This was after he questioned the CIA's veracity, by sending his brother-in-law, R. Sargent Shriver, to spend a few days hanging around with me in Puerto Rico, to try to determine whether or not the CIA was lying to him about me. Hindsight now shows that he should have heeded those suspicions, and rejected the CIA lies.

I do not think that I can sue for libel, slander or defamation for being called a CIA agent, and it is doubtful that the government's judges would consider such an accusation damaging or defamatory. Anyone foolish enough to believe I am a CIA agent, after reading my books, is tragically pathetic, laughable and stupid.

Even if a person is not a "card-carrying" member of the CIA, if that person does the CIA's covert work for it, by spreading what I call the "pseudo-skeptic" or "pseudo-paranormalist" party line, they are just as much an agent as if they are on the payroll. You could think of them as the "CIA Auxiliary". By "covert work", I mean someone who surreptitiously does the CIA's work, but conceals or denies employment by, or association with, the CIA. This does not apply to me, since, as a concerned citizen, I only reported what I knew to be strategic information, which had inadvertently fallen into my lap. Nothing I ever did in this respect was "for the government", only "for the people", and I was never paid a red cent for it.

On the other hand, if a CIA employee were to sabotage the work of the CIA, they could be subject to prosecution for sabotaging their "mission". As such, if I were a CIA employee, I could be accused of sabotaging the CIA's UFOlogy M.O., by publishing my books, but as a civilian, I am not subject to prosecution, only harassment and suppression, sometimes through lawsuits or threats of lawsuits, as well as interference with the distribution of my books, with my speaking engagements, and my radio interviews.

For example, on Feb. 19, 2001, I received a call from Art Bell, requesting a telephone interview, which he scheduled for Feb. 20, at 3:00 P.M. On Feb. 20, at 3:00 P.M., the phone service for the entire village of Lamy, New Mexico (where I live) was turned off at the main switchboard in Santa Fe. The service remained off until Feb. 21, 1:00 A.M., after Bell's night-time broadcast had begun, too late for me to call. The outage was reported on Feb. 20, but no work crew was dispatched, because the phone company knew that nothing was broken and that the government had turned off the service.

A phone company representative called the following morning, and acknowledged that the service had been interrupted at the main switchboard. When I asserted that I thought the FBI had done it, he stated, "I am prohibited from expressing an opinion on that matter." That, in effect, confirmed my allegation, since it showed that a secrecy order was in effect, which the phone company employee was required to obey, probably under the delusion that he was some sort of "patriot".

Vacillating Vallee

In the 1995 second edition of Space Aliens From the Pentagon, I stated that my two "Roswell" photos--one of which showed rhesus monkeys in G-Suits--were "...among the other things taken by a woman who (allegedly) associated...""... and who had also lived with the French 'UFOlogist', Jacques Vallee, for two years." Vallee has disputed this woman's statements, so I have retracted them, and now apologize for them, since it is her word against Vallee's. Vallee (if the woman was speaking of the same Jacques Vallee, as there is more than one), did not deserve the possible inferences which a reader might derive from reading Pentagon Aliens. I did not mean to imply that Vallee was an employee of the CIA or that he had a hand in stealing my photos. What Vallee deserves is a more in-depth analysis and critique, in the light of my "CIA M.O." criteria. None of Vallee's personal life is any of my business, but I continue to assert that everything I have said about his work, which is subject to fair criticism, is true to the best of my knowledge.

Sometimes Vallee talks like he wants to be a skeptic, a la Philip Klass, and sometimes he talks like he believes in aliens or strange beings or forces, and sometimes he even mentions "advanced secret government aircraft", but in my books, if someone parrots the paranormal party line, I object, and it doesn't matter whatever else they may pay lip service to.

In reviewing some of Jacques Vallee's UFOlogy statements through the years, it is obvious that he appears to vacillate between the two sides of what I call the CIA's "two-pronged attack" (pseudo-skeptical government denial, and UFOlogical paranormalism, respectively). These two "prongs" were designed to trap and crush reason—what I call the third, "Most Rational Alternative" ("MRA")—in the middle, the assertion that UFOs are exclusively man-made, and that there are no aliens present on earth. My additional assertion—supported by objective evidence and my own personal experiences—is that the CIA initially created and presently controls both sides of the debate—the two "prongs"—as well as the entire field of UFOlogy. The CIA seeks to control the "middle", anticipating the problems represented by my argument when it designed the program—in fact, the "why" for its creation of the program. Its total control of the field through its covert, paranormal-UFOlogists, and the conspicuous absence of my argument, prove this.

Vallee apparently tries to "occupy" the middle also, but doesn't belong there, because, instead of representing it as the arena of logic and reason which it naturally should be, as I do, he apparently depicts it--by his actions and statements—as an arena of vacillation, in which confused or indecisive individuals are led to believe that the only option is a choice between the two irrational "prongs", as if the "MRA" does not even exist. Vallee is really a part of the paranormal prong, despite his attempts (sometimes) to separate himself from that designation. Logic is logic, and it can't be dodged even by evasiveness with oneself or others.

In early 2001, just after the announcement that I was to appear as a speaker in Santa Clara, California, at a two-day event entitled "Conspiracy.Con", I received a letter from David Alexander, an attorney representing Jacques Vallee, threatening to sue me for libel and defamation, for the statements I purportedly made about Vallee in Pentagon Aliens (third, renamed 1999 ed. of Space Aliens From the Pentagon). I had mentioned the name "Vallee" twice in the same context, and once in the index, so, without admitting guilt, I deleted the name, thereby mooting any claim. I also considered that, whatever important things I have to say can be concluded by anyone who reads and understands my books, without reference to a specific name, so it really isn't essential to mention any UFOlogist in a specific context, though it is often helpful.

Since the purpose of my book is to teach my method of analysis and understanding to my readers, so they can analyze UFOlogy for themselves, why not delete a name? After all, why should I allow the threat of a lawsuit to jeopardize my book? I therefore decided to write this chapter, to make myself clearer and to pursue particular issues more succinctly and in greater depth and detail, in regard to the work of Vallee and some others of that genre. I needed a more thorough treatment, in order to do justice to the public's needs.

I instinctively consider such threats to sue as attempts by the CIA to shut me up, since that type of strategy was used on me before, in relation to my energy R & D. Since it's possible that a court might conclude that I have overstepped certain boundaries, and that I might be hard put to justify what I said, I have retracted those particular statements in regard to Vallee, and will restate my accusation that the theft of my photos (and other things) was made on behalf of the CIA's Office of Scientific Intelligence, because they were a "smoking gun" on the Roswell hoax, and leave it at that.

Vallee is a "public personality" and former public servant. I have never been a "public servant" as he was, when he was employed in Project Bluebook and perhaps some other government positions. Probably more than anyone else, Vallee established the "party line" of UFOlogical paranormalism (though he calls his theories "paraphysical", they are still a minor variant of "paranormal").

It would not only be an unreasonable violation of First Amendment rights, but also quite unrealistic to expect a court to grant Vallee a "King's X", giving him "royal immunity" and prohibiting anyone from mentioning, discussing or criticizing his ideas, since he has chosen to stick himself into the spotlight of scrutiny, and to continue to put in his "two cents" as the debate rolls along. If he can't stand the heat, he will have to disappear from the kitchen, perhaps in a similar way as his witness claimed the USS Eldridge disappeared (as you will read about below). Since he has made himself rather unavoidable, I decided to devote some time and energy to this chapter, to show what kinds of reactions I had to Vallee many years ago, as well as today.

By recently demanding my attention to his activities, through his threat to sue me—and to have all my books recalled and destroyed—Vallee has induced me to focus on his past, to get a more complete idea of what his work has been all about.

It appears to me to be Vallee's self-appointed "job"—or maybe it's just his personal quirk—to play the devil's advocate, a position which tends to keep the resolution of UFO/alien issues unresolved, the way he apparently likes it... hazy, nebulous, paranormal, and irrational...occasionally venturing forth to attack and "debunk" those with rational explanations for allegedly paranormal incidents, which leaves standing what I consider to be the irrational, CIA UFOlogical paranormalist status quo. He uses what I call "pseudo-skeptical" arguments against those who may offer realistic answers to paranormal-interpreted events, and as such, ambivalently appears to be a supporter of both the irrational official denials and of the paranormal phenomena...and of the CIA's M.O., by default.

Vallee's conduct is consistent with the government's plan to control both sides of the debate, through its two-pronged attack, which means that the spooks and the government will promote his work, as well as some in the movie industry (i.e., Steven Spielberg's Close Encounters of the Third Kind). These two prongs are two sides of the same coin, since both the denial of the existence of UFOs, and the assertion of the presence of "alien" UFOs, are equally irrational and "paranormal"...a position which I consider to be dishonest...since many thousands of responsible, experienced aircraft observers with certifiable 20-20 eyesight—including myself— have seen them. Vallee appears to police the "middle", which has the effect of clearing out anyone offering rationality to the situation; get rid of the rational, leaving the irrational, so the two-pronged system will continue to work.

Whether or not this conduct by Vallee is by design or by statistically-challenging coincidence, is a matter of personal judgment, but I do think his work definitely coincides with the CIA's covert program. If Vallee has given this effect unconsciously, he has my sincere pity. If anyone thinks threats to sue will "clear me out", they have another think coming.

I have no personal animosity toward Vallee, and If I knew him personally, I would probably like him, as he appears to be a very intelligent, glib and charming person, with creativity and a writer's gift. My beef with him has to do with the ideas which he has spread in the past, which I think are damaging to the scientific understanding of UFOs, as well as to the rationality of the people who swallow his theories. Granted, those who believe what he says are already gullible, but I don't believe it is ethical to feed paranormal pulp to those who are gullible, and I will do whatever I can to convince them of what I believe to be the Most Rational Alternative.

I will argue against paranormal theories until hell freezes over, so to speak, and no one will stop me so long as I am breathing. I believe that the technology being concealed is important for the natural progress of the human race, and that the paranormal theories serve the purpose of suppressing it, as well as in preparing the public mind for acceptance of far more dangerous mass-psychology Big Lies.

Superficially, Vallee's approach may appear to be rational to gullible people, until you look at his weird punch-lines, and tally up the numerous important things he has conspicuously seemed to avoid, ignore, or even appears to conceal. For example, the following article, with the title, Jacques Vallee Hoaxed Science & UFO Community With His "Anatomy!" UFO Sweden, sheds some light on Vallee's M.O. with respect to other paranormalists, when operating in what I call the "Pseudo-Skeptic" mode:

Vallee and the Fraud Business

The controversy I discuss here was initially kicked up by various writers and alleged witnesses, surrounding the alleged "Philadelphia Experiment". I take no position on this alleged experiment—which I have no way of knowing actually occurred, and apparently neither does anyone else—since all information appears to be hearsay. But I do know that many frauds have been associated with the government's covert program to promulgate false stories surrounding it. I offer this information to show Vallee's involvement, according to a paper which I found on the Internet[3]. The Navy most certainly conducted some experiments related to German WW II submarine warfare, and in fact, also conducted some research related to German WW I submarine warfare, intended to develop and test technology to avoid German torpedoes, and for American sub-chasers to find German U-boats—such as sonar—so they could be sunk with depth charges. The idea that any so-called "invisibility" experiments were related to making American ships invisible to radar, or invisible to German magnetic torpedo sensors, seems more credible, and such technology was developed for our ships and submarines, but neither of these experiments or tests appears to have been competently proven insofar as the place and time they were performed, specifically linked to the alleged Philadelphia scenario.

---

[3] TRUE.X-FILES.NEWS, An Internet News Service/true.x-fiIe.netw@2news.com, found by me on Jan. 11, 2001.

In Jacques Vallee's Anatomy of a Fraud paper[4], according to the article published on the Internet, he accused researchers who had asserted that the Philadelphia Experiment was one to make the U.S.S. Eldridge invisible to radar, rather than invisible to the eye—of fraud.

Vallee based this rather rash allegation on the idea that the Germans did not have radar in 1943, ignoring the probability that the Navy might have done such an experiment in anticipation of the time when the Germans would develop radar, had it not been for the documented fact—available to Vallee via Navy documents—that the Germans did have radar in 1941- This was two years prior to the alleged experiment, though there is no proof that they had outfitted their subs with it by 1943. In any case, this was not an essential element to the Navy's possible tests. Ironically, I entertained the "invisibility-to-radar" postulate in Pentagon Aliens, and Vallee is reported to have suggested the same possibility. Was this before or after he read my book?

The absence of German radar would have been a slim enough basis for alleging "fraud", even if true, and a rather drastic and defamatory allegation under the circumstances, yet what is at stake if a reasonable explanation for the alleged "Philadelphia Experiment" is allowed to prevail? It would discredit the obviously phony paranormal and ridiculous tale about the experiment being an attempt to make the Eldridge invisible to the eye, but which went wrong, causing the ship and its crew to get caught up in a so-called "space'time warp", resulting in its being transported to another time and place; or, the story about it becoming invisible to the eye.

By attacking the reasonable explanation—a radar/stealth experiment—Vallee's attack had the effect of supporting the irrational "disappearing ship" garbage, by default, as well as to support his own weird "paraphysical" theories[5].

---

[4] Jacques Vallee, Anatomy of a Fraud, Journal of Scientific Exploration, Editor-in-Chief Bernard Haisch.

In his attack on the reasonable explanation, it appeared that Vallee attempted to show that the proponents of the alternate theory had concealed their presumed knowledge of appropriate Navy documents which allegedly showed that the Germans had no operational radar in 1943. By his same standard, Vallee was also presumed to be aware of the Navy documents which proved that what he and his witness said was wrong, and put most or all of what they said into question.

After ValleVs paper was published, allegedly to "debunk" the alternate theory, "Special Civilian Investigator" Marshall Barnes responded, saying that Vallee had a presumed knowledge of Navy documents which proved that the Germans in fact had radar in 1941, two years before the alleged experiment. While this did not prove that the Germans had radar on their subs, the Navy would have been very short-sighted not to assume that the Germans soon would install radar on their subs, and would most likely have been held to blame for a failure to conduct experiments which might avoid the loss of several ships and many lives, a result which, if ameliorated by productive experiments, could more than pay for experiments which might have helped to develop appropriate new technology.

In his initial paper, Vallee's alleged "eye-witness", Edward Dudgeon, said he was present at the stated time, and that the Philadelphia experiment, per se, "never occurred", but added that the ship did in fact become invisible to the eye, due to the effects of "St. Elmo's fire". After the initial version of his paper was written, Vallee edited a portion of Dudgeon's statements out, to delete his comment regarding the actual optical invisibility of the ship due to St. Elmo's fire. The apparent reason Vallee did so, is that the allegation was so irrational that it tended to impeach the credibility of his own, so-called eye-witness. Such a deletion might be considered to be a fraudulent concealment in a court, by tbe way, if it was considered to be a "material" omission, but Barnes made no issue on it except to paranormally say tbat Vallee's omission was due to the Navy's classifying the use of St. Elmo's fire as a secret technology to make ships invisible to the eye!

---

[5] Parascope, Inc. (1996)

In addition to showing the German possession of radar in 1941, Naval documents also proved, when compared to statements, dates and documents purportedly produced by Dudgeon, and contained in Vallee's paper, that Dudgeon was lying, and couldn't have been there or have witnessed the events he claimed to, at the time. Or so Barnes asserted. Big deal.

After being confronted with the evidence, Barnes asserted that Vallee did not retract his article, and by his subsequent conduct continued to promulgate his "debunking" paper, by his failure to disapprove of his witness's alleged fraud. Has Vallee become so old and inflexible as to be incapable of admitting he made an error, even when faced with the undisputed accusation of fraud? Did he publish his paper with the intent of promulgating fraudulent research, as alleged by Barnes, based on presumed knowledge of the naval documents referred to by both Vallee and Barnes, or did Barnes also promulgate a fraud by continuing to allege an "anti-radar" experiment which also was not proven by the evidence?

The answer, in the final analysis, is that we should not allow ourselves to be taken in by this alleged "argument"...between two proponents of the same paranormalist ilk...which has the effect of making them appear to be on opposing sides, when in fact, they both promote the same things, while projecting each other's "careers" into the public eye, through a meaningless "argument".

These labyrinthine arguments and controversies appear to me to have been intentionally created as red herrings for the purpose of pursuing the strategic objectives desired by the Occult Scientific Thought Control Dictatorship, by creating endless mazes and eddy currents of meaningless chatter which absorb and dissipate the energies of those who seek answers to obviously more important questions, the answers to which have been classified.

Vallee was a close associate of Dr. J. Allen Hynek in his work for Project Bluebook, the Air Force/OSI project created allegedly to investigate the so-called "UFO phenomenon". My documentation shows that the Nazis came into possession of Tesla's UFO technology and did initial experimentation at Los Alamos, New Mexico, in 1934-38, prior to taking the technology to Germany. The U.S. came into possession of the German projects in 1945, under Operation Paperclip.

Documentation shows that Project Bluebook was initially created on contract for the U.S. Army Air Force Counter-intelligence Corps ("C.I.C") at Wright-Patterson AFB Ohio, beginning during WW II, by Charles Hundley and Edgar Cayce. Cayce was employed there ostensibly as a "technical writer". Hundley was associated with the O.N.I., having taught Russian to American Naval Intelligence officers. The project later fell under the jurisdiction of the Air Force Office of Special Investigation ("OSI"), but was covertly organized under the CIA's Office of Scientific Intelligence (A.K.A. "OSI", confusion intentional).

The last time I heard from Hundley, around 1961, he was teaching maritime law at the U.S. Coast Guard Academy at Carlsbad, California. Hundley had also been associated with the Ohio State University astronomy department, and said he was also associated with Jacques Vallee, due to the Bluebook connection. In spite of his "high credentials", Hundley made many paranormal claims, such as, "...being abducted by Venusians and taken to Venus and back in a flying saucer." Since I could write a small book about all this, I won't digress further here. His reasons for making such claims should be obvious to those who read my book, especially in view of his intelligence background.

An alleged CIA source told Timothy Good (as reported in his book, Above Top Secret, 1988) that in 1955, the leaders of the secret services of the USSR, USA, France and Britain met at Geneva and unanimously agreed to a policy of secrecy on the "UFO problem" as far as the public was concerned. Good also said that Vallee told him in 1986 that in 1966, he was sent to the International Congress of Mathematics in Moscow, and managed to discuss the subject of UFOs with several Soviet scientists. Good also stated that an unevaluated CIA report, dated 18 Aug. 1967 (a few months after Vallee's trip), with the subject heading , "Report on Conversations with Soviet Scientists on Subject of Unidentified Flying Objects in the USSR", had the name of the CIA (or CIA'Sponsored) scientist who conducted the interview, along with the names of the Soviet scientists, deleted, together with the date(s) of the interviews.

From this sequence of events, it is reasonable to suspect that Vallee or any other scientist accompanying him, might have been the "CIA or CIA-sponsored" scientist who conducted the 1966 interviews mentioned in the 1967 report.

The ultimate purpose of U.S. UFOlogical forays into Russia in ca. 1966 appeared to have been to monitor Russian government compliance with its agreement to keep its UFO reports secret, under the 1955 Geneva agreement. It is also interesting to note here that there has been a conspicuous absence of any claim by any government that the utterance of a paranormal claim is a security breach, so these claims can be presumed to be both unclassified and untrue.

Since it is illegal under our constitution for an American citizen to negotiate directly with or to serve a foreign government without executive authority, especially its military or its scientists, and especially when that government is considered hostile to the U.S. at the time, we should suspect that ValleVs work on the Russian trip was authorized by the national security apparatus of the U.S. government. It would probably also require Vallee to disclose to them the context of all his contacts with Soviet scientists after his return, just as Los Alamos National Laboratory required of its employee, scientist Wen Ho Lee, on his return to the U.S. from a similar mathematics conference in Communist China, as disclosed during the prosecution of Lee in 1999-2000. Good's "unevaluated" 1967 CIA report matches these criteria closely. The names of the

U.S. UFOlogist/scientist and the Soviet scientists he engaged in UFO discussions were deleted, making it an intelligence matter.

So we had Vallee, who probably had a government security clearance to authorize his access to all the secret UFO reports of Project Bluebook, and government security authorization for travel to an enemy country, going to Russia ostensibly for a "mathematics conference". Since the official policy of the U.S. government toward UFO reports is secrecy, we can assume that Vallee's discussions of UFOs with Soviet scientists was of an authorized, "government-to-government" nature. It can also be presumed that the "un-secret" ("public") reports of Project Bluebook, and of its former employee, Vallee, are all suspect, either completely concocted by the CIA/OSI, to maintain secrecy through misinformation, or carefully selected reports which favor a hazy, nondescript, "middle" paranormalist interpretation.

The ambiguous interpretations advocated by Vallee, have the effect of dumbing down the public, and of supporting the official denials of CSICOP and Phillip Klass, on the one hand, or the paranormal interpretations of Vallee on the other—or of supporting the similarly outrageous "space alien" claims of the slightly more extreme lunatic fringe—allowing them to prevail among various segments of the population. Naturally, the total effect of all these "fuzzy" effects is a sort of factual mud. Was Vallee's work promoted by the CIA through its contacts in the media and publishing, because his theories favored its two-pronged strategy? Was Vallee fed misinformation to excite a tendency toward paranormalism, or was that his own idea, after being shown the non-paranormal facts?

We know that Vallee, as a Bluebook functionary, was party to keeping UFO sighting reports secret. We also know that he had access to that secret data, so he had to have a clearance. In order to have access, he had to have a "need to know". Why would a mere civilian have a "need to know" secrets the rest of us have no access to? He also may have had discretion in deciding which reports could be made public, if any, and in fact, would have to know where to draw the line on what he himself could disclose, without violating the national security oath he took when his clearance was granted. Vallee and his wife, Janine, compiled the first allegedly "comprehensive" database on UFO sightings, a database we can't trust, because it emphasized the paranormalist interpretation, and excluded the Most Rational Alternative, by what it included and excluded, whether true or untrue.

We mere civilians don't have access to the massive data collected by Bluebook, but Vallee does. Most of us don't know what has been concealed, but Vallee should. He cannot tell us what he is forbidden to tell us, so everything he tells us can be presumed to be of no "strategic value", and follows the security establishment guidelines designed by the OSI committees, which apply to him whether he likes it or not. Otherwise, he would have been prosecuted. Knowing what he knows, he must constantly have a "brake" on what he says, and may have to seek approval from the OSI prior to publication of anything. That means that his former boss Hynek, the Air Force, the OSI, the 'other' OSI, and the CIA, all had some say about what has been kept secret, and why.

We know that under the national security rules, NOTHING was intentionally disclosed in those Bluebook releases to the public which was of a classified, "national security" nature. Vallee cannot tell us what he may know, because the government won't let him, and we don't know that he would tell us even if he could. Ultimately, he tells us only what the government will let him tell us, unless what he wants to tell us just happens to be what they want him to tell us, but I find that to be a statistically-challenging coincidence. The CIA can't tell us what Vallee tells us, because that would be patently irrational, and it would be held accountable. Vallee's material easily passes all security tests.

We can assume that all of the Bluebook reports for public scrutiny are immaterial or false, since the "real" reports are classified, so the publicly disclosed reports were all created or chosen by the OSI to confuse the public, to conceal what it alleges to be "national security secrets". Given the mission of the national security establishment, operating under the same rules as Air Force

Intelligence, Project Bluebook was forbidden to publish a single photograph in their possession, taken by a civilian or military photographer, of any government aircraft which was of a classified nature. This basically discounts every single photograph of an alleged "UFO" made available to the public via Bluebook. They certainly never published the clear photos made by my boyhood friend, Ken.

Until and unless you personally observe something alleged to be "fantastic", you have to consider it hearsay. This is especially true where the alleged event or thing is a known government secret, and the information comes from a government source.

Everything that Vallee says in regard to alleged "aliens" or UFOs, is entirely consistent with my analysis. So what does he say?

Vallee says he thinks UFOs are the "modern manifestation of an age-old phenomenon", generally what he calls the "paraphysical theory of UFO origins" (Parascope,Inc, 1996). This theory includes the time-travel hypothesis—UFOs as time machines from our own future—and the angel/demon theory—UFOs as God's angels or Satan's demons—taken to be "visitors from space". I had to laugh when I heard the Satan's demons hypothesis; imagine, Satan having his own little air force, and God too! In Forbidden Science, Vallee stated that UFOs are probably "...windows to other dimensions...", "...manipulated by intelligent, often mischievous, always enigmatic beings we have yet to understand" (60 Greatest Conspiracies of All Time).

Philip Klass, CIA man and CSICOP director, whom I call the government's lead "pseudo-debunker", calls Vallee "...one of the more distinguished members of the pro-UFO community"...."one of the brighter physical scientists who believes in UFOs" (Heretics Among Heretics", 60 Greatest Conspiracies of All Time, interview). So here Vallee is praised by the arch pseudo-debunker himself.

Vallee believes that "...the intelligence guiding UFOs is a kind of control mechanism, an invisible hand shaping the development of human consciousness over a period of eons.." (60 GCAT). He tried to cover his rear by acknowledging that governments "..sometimes manipulate public opinion through UFO mythology, sometimes constructing elaborate hoaxes for propagandistic purposes." This could be said of him, couldn't it? This sounds like a quote from my books. If Vallee sincerely believes this, why hasn't he written about it more?

Vallee says "...we don't know" where UFOs come from, that they are possibly a "...natural phenomenon", or "...an undiscovered form or energy in the atmosphere..", possibly "artificial", and if so, "...it could come from another form of consciousness, which may or may not be extraterrestrial."

In other words, Vallee wants it a multiplicity of ways, except as a real, man-made flying machine powered by electricity. Fuzzy, so-called "declassified" or "unclassified" photos are chosen to support this theory, because they are hazy, nebulous, and vague, nothing like the saucer I saw on a clear, end-of-summer day, from about 300 feet, in 1953, and nothing like the photos and negatives the OSI purchased from my boyhood friend.

Incidentally, photos of real saucers may appear to be hazy, because of their rapid precession during certain flight modes, as I describe in Pentagon Aliens. This is especially the case where the lens or film speed is too slow to catch the image in a "still" photo.

One of the first statements I make in Pentagon Aliens, is:

"Have neither an open nor closed mind, but rather a self-controlled mind, which weighs facts, accepts truth and knowledge, and filters out lies and trash."

This reflects my disgust with such bromides as the one I saw on a bumper sticker: "Minds are like parachutes; they only work when open." The same thing applies to a toilet, but a toilet is for the disposal of human excrement, not an input port for valuable knowledge. The mind is a delicate instrument. Downloading someone's mental excrement could turn your mind into a mental toilet, so you would be a good little consumer and unquestioningly do what Big Brother says.

Vallee is a proponent of what I consider to be a rather indiscriminate "open-mindedness", maybe as a result of too much Sartre or Camus. As a supposed computer expert, what he advocates is tantamount to a computer with no virus protections. In my opinion, if you accept and "download" his kind of ideas, it could do to your mind something similar to what a virus does to a computer. That is just my opinion, based on my own analysis, so you may apply my standard, and decide for yourself, or if you wish, you can accept everything Vallee says, and reject everything I say. In the end, it is up to you.

The exasperating thing about the term "UFO" is that it creates the opportunity for the government's "catch-22". Since the term refers to "Unidentified Flying Objects", it can always permit the plausible denial of the existence of an "unidentified" object. If the government provides a photo of an alleged "unidentified flying object", no one can say it has committed a fraud, so long as it cannot be proven what the object is, or that the government fabricated it with the prior knowledge of what the object is.

Since the government knows that there are no aliens on planet Earth...just as I say...it can always plausibly deny the existence of "alien UFOs", or a "government cover-up of alien UFOs", but cannot plausibly deny the existence of "exclusively man-made, electrodynamic flying craft...thought by the public to be alien UFOs". That is the reason that—of all the questions put to the government by so-called "UFO lawyers", in frivolous FOIA lawsuits—that this question is always excluded, and that is the way that you can know that the lawsuits are filed by the CIA. The questions are always designed by the OSI, to beg the question that UFOs are extraterrestrial—which is also a lie—so that their covert UFOlogists can ask them, and their official spokesmen can answer them without lying. The government has created and controlled the situation so that it can deceive the public by denying these falsities, and telling the truth in a covertly-limited and fraudulent context.

So the government has always avoided the particular question—conspicuously never asked by its covert "UFOlogists"—as to whether it has knowledge of exclusively man-made, electrodynamic flying craft, which the public generally knows as UFOs, Government spokesmen could not truthfully or plausibly deny their existence, if this question were asked, because the security regulations prohibit them from "...either confirming or denying..." the existence of any classified aircraft.

Vallee seems to have foreclosed the possibility of us ever knowing the answer to the "UFO enigma" in our time. His conclusions are paranormal, seemingly intended to create a perpetual, unanswerable mystery around the UFO, which to me is just a man-made electrical machine, which, in my estimation, is man's greatest invention. Who benefits from concealment? The large corporations with vested interests, who would be decimated by public access to the technology involved. They are definitely at the head of the line of those who would be out of business if we all had the technology. That is the "motive" behind the corporate-state crime of UFO fraud.

The government's involvement in the UFO situation is also a red herring, since the real impetus for the secrecy comes not from the government, but from the corporations and power elite who control and use our government, to insure that the power structure they created prevails. All the major governments of the world are involved in suppressing this great invention, for fear that public access will destroy their inordinate coercive monopoly powers to control or profit illicitly. I realize that the facts suggest that there is a secret corporate "world-state" government of some kind, otherwise, there would be no international conspiracy between the world's major governments to conceal UFO technology.

There are plenty of people out there who absolutely know the truth, because they have been part of the elite, or part of its concealment system, all along. They have been privy to the ships themselves or the secret photos showing real ships with military markings, and FAA-compliant red and green position beacons, etc., which can mean only one thing: They are bound by illegitimate self-interests, or national security orders, but I am not.

Some UFOlogists have been "speaking with a forked tongue"—contradicting themselves at every turn—offering a multiplicity of "wild cards" or bluffs, dealing from the bottom of the deck, slipping cards out of their sleeves, or playing with "daisy decks" in the game of UFO poker, as a sort of "insurance", in case the direction of the field reverses, in which case they can point at whatever option they choose, and say, "See.. I said that back when." This strategy is a built-in CIA "contingency plan", intended for it to maintain control through opportunism, as a "last ditch" scenario. They shouldn't be accepted with open arms. I always liked that statement of Ghengis Khan, "Once a traitor, always a traitor; hang 'em". You certainly don't accept such traitors as the leaders of your army.

Don't be surprised if some of these opportunists start to come forward, trying to play their "wild" cards, saying the same things that I have been saying since I was a boy, never fooled even once by the false propaganda. They are no more than opportunists, who have built their deceitful "careers" with ease, with official government sponsorship, and now want to switch sides, with their unearned, government-bought "name-recognition", when they see that their side is losing. If successful, they would only turn things back the other way again, a complete lie.

The next time you are confronted with a higher gasoline, heating or electric bill, or contrived power blackout—not to mention an empty billfold—remember these traitors, and recognize that our government uses paranormalist propaganda to conceal technology which would alleviate or eliminate most if not all of these energy problems, as well as to stop the political control of our military being directed toward globalist objectives, and to stop the exploitation of Americans through global control and manipulation of petroleum. We Americans have much more to live for than a feudal fealty to global oil corporations. We have been weakened domestically in order to extort our support of these global objectives, by continually limiting and jeopardizing our energy resources, jacking up prices, and making us fight and pay for the oil companies' private interests.

CHAPTER VIII - LA REVOLUCION TECHNOLOGIA: Turning Things Around Through Technology

In 1997, Chapter VI of Occult Ether Physics was entitled "Free Energy Massacre: The Atomic Hydrogen Process ©1996". The rest of the book traced the discovery of electrodynamic space propulsion by Nikola Tesla, within the scientific milieu of the late 19th century. This was the world of "aether physics", just approaching the "wrong turn" which physics took after the 1905 publishing of Einstein's Theory of Relativity. The crooked road for that wrong turn had already been laid by some of the ether physicists themselves.

Beginning with my 1993 Space Aliens From the Pentagon, I dared to attack Relativist theory and concepts, up through my 1999 Pentagon Aliens, in an ever increasing number and quality of ways. One of the concepts I developed was that free-energy physics is exclusively a non-Relativistic ether concept. That is the reason Tesla was so opposed to Relativism. One cannot discuss Teslian concepts in the same breath as Relativist ones. Relativism forbids "free-energy".

Today, suddenly, masquerading as "free-energy researchers", there appears a plethora of Relativists. Relativists are like broken records, and cannot get out of the same old Relativist "groove". If you look at their websites, and read their material, all you see is the 'same old same old' contorted Relativist "theories". They theorize, and theorize, and theorize, but what do they really do? They theorize...curved space...dilated time...and ruminate through all the other aspects of the shaky 'house of cards' built by St. Albert. And out of these insane ruminations, they attempt to solve the riddle of "gravity", "anti-gravity" and "fluctuations in the quantum vacuum field", but no solutions are in sight now, just as none were in sight in 1905.

And now, when it appears that ether physics may really have something, they are invading the free-energy field, even pretending to be the discoverers of this or that—actually ideas stolen from those without "credentials"—and have found a haven in which to build a "new" nest, lined with the feathers of contorted mathematics, Platonist epistemology and circuitous reasoning. History will eventually undo them, showing them to be intellectual thieves.

It is often said that "an idea cannot be patented". There is something wrong with that, but even if true under the law, it is still intellectually dishonest to claim the discovery of someone else's idea in a patent application, without the slightest attribution, when it is known that priority was with the victim of that theft.

Scientists like Michael Faraday and many of his colleagues wouldn't have thought of taking the ideas of others, without saying where they got them. The "rush to the patent office" to claim such unpatented discoveries made by others is not only illegal, but unethical, because such applications require the swearing of an oath declaring that the claimant knows of no priority by anyone.

Relativism does not recognize free-energy, ether, ZPR or electromagnetic radiation which travels through space. Their theory was based on "corpuscular photons", which required no luminiferous ether to transport their force through space. The concept of the "photon" implies a "light particle", not electromagnetic wave radiation, because without an ether, there would be nothing for a wave to "wave" (wave action requires a "medium" to wave, similar to a wave on a pond of water).

Relativists hang out on the Internet constantly, looking for ideas to steal and claim as their own. Why? Because Relativism does not produce any results, will sabotage your brain and cripple your creativity and reason. Those who practice this religion spend all their time praying at the Holy Shrine of Einstein, but their 'god' gives them nothing. Was it all Einstein's sick joke on them?

Relativism recognizes no "quantum vacuum field" or ether in "empty space". Einstein's theory of gravity was wrong, because he believed in no ether. So the Relativists invented a "quantum vacuum field" with "fluctuations" (i.e., oscillations), in contradiction to their religion.

The Relativist is a mathematical creature, who confuses himself with his equations, getting high on them but getting

(109 kcal/gram mole) "has" to be equal to the dissociation energy. Consequently, they never measured it directly, only extrapolated it retroactively as "equal", based on this erroneous theory.

I found a reference from a reputable source which gave the dissociation energy as 103 cal/gram mole[1], rather than the 109 k-cal/gram mole of the Relativists. I preferred that figure, since it was published by a major house, and had gone through five editions without challenge. It differed from the "norm", which was controlled by Relativist theory. Maybe, I thought, Van Nostrand was independent, since they had published some Tesla books in the early 20th century, after Relativism had begun to take over.

It is also said by Relativist theory that all that is required to dissociate diatomic hydrogen to monoatomic hydrogen, is heat energy, which is supposed to be equal "exactly" to the recombination energy. This dissociation/recombination energy is also supposed to be equal to the "bond energy" which has been broken by heat, which is then supposed to be stored in the monoatomic hydrogen atoms until released again in recombination, whereupon the broken bonds are "restored". This would have to mean that the bond energy of a diatomic molecule would have to be equal to the energy "stored" in the monoatomic atoms, minus the energy released by recombination.

My hypothesis was that the dissociation energy required to separate the diatomic atoms could not be greater than the energy of combustion of H_2 with oxygen, which produces H_2O, with a bond which is supposed to be stronger, due to the electromotive difference between oxygen and hydrogen. Using the Relativists' own standard, this means that the energy of dissociation/recombination of hydrogen is 3.76 times that for hydrogen hydrolysis/combustion. This is yet another internal contradiction in Relativist theory.

According to Langmuir, atomic hydrogen is produced directly in hydrolysis using a lead amalgam cathode. Yet, since Langmuir was a Relativist, he never measured it directly, but computed the dissociation energy backward on paper as the same as the recombination energy, assuming that the electrical wattage required to produce a gram mole of atomic hydrogen was equal to the recombination energy per gram mole of monoatomic hydrogen.

---

[1] Encyclopedia of Science, Van Nostrand Reinhold Company (1976), fifth edition

If the energy required to break the diatomic bonds is supposed to be equal to the 'stored' heat in dissociated atoms, and the bonds are 'restored' when the atoms recombine, the 'bonds' would still have to contain the same energy as that which had already been released during the 'restoration', according to Relativism.

Either the diatomic bond energy is "replaced" by heat on dissociation, and converted back to heat on recombination—and therefore taken away—or the heat stored "in" the mono atomic atoms only dissociates the atoms when it places enough strain on the bonds to break them. Since the bonds are restored when the heat is released, the force maintaining the bonds is neither heat nor another force converted from heat, but would still have to exist somewhere. My theory is that IR radiation ("heat") can be stored in the space between nuclei and electron clouds, as well as in intermolecular space, when dissociation occurs. The radiation remains in its original electromagnetic wave form as it bounces around inside, 'force free', reflected between the nuclei and electron clouds. Since IR radiation is of lower frequency and voltage than UV radiation, it lacks sufficient penetrating power or force to break out of this space until the recombination of the monoatomic atoms, at which time it is able to exit when the electron clouds open up, as the new diatomic electrostatic bonds re-attach.

I think the "bonds" are electrostatic ones, which can be broken by heat, by expanding or stressing the space between nuclei and electron clouds to the bonds' elastic limits, or by other radiation, or by electrostatic force. This is merely mechanical. A more efficient means of breaking the bonds should be by electrostatics. Even more effectively, they should be broken more easily by higher frequency radiation, such as UV. In addition, UV radiation transmutes hydrogen and ail other elements below atomic number 19. This should yield additional energy on reversal. This appears to involve

bringing in excess charges from the ether, and holding them in the bonding spaces, as indicated by microphotos of diatomic hydrogen atoms which show extra electric charges in the inter-molecular space. This violates Relativism, representing sub-electron charges.
If electrostatics can break the bonds, the proper "arc" should be an electrostatic one, rather than a conventional AC or DC arc current, usually used to dissociate atomic hydrogen. Since it is also recognized that the process by ordinary arc discharge/heat is incomplete, perhaps electrostatics can also make it more complete. The dissociation of hydrogen by heat appears to be a mechanical one, related to the kinetic energy of the heat-induced increase in vibrations of the diatomic nuclei and electrons, caused by IR radiation. That being the case, it should also be subject to the rule that the electromagnetic interaction is 10^{40} times greater than the gravitational one.[2] This should therefore be related to the hydrogen nucleus' gravitational mass, versus the use of electrostatic force to break the bonds more efficiently, since the electromagnetic interaction should do more work on the nucleus during the same time, and should therefore improve the process.

Langmuir first noticed the atomic hydrogen reaction after hydrogen gas was passed around heated tungsten wires, believing that heat transferred to the hydrogen broke the bonds. However, tungsten may react electrostatically or catalytically to break the diatomic bonds. This 1912 experiment was originally done in Socorro, New Mexico, in a desert well-known for its high electrostatic activity. In this region it is very difficult to avoid electrostatic charges.

Neither my name nor my books are cited by some researchers who were kicked into high gear by my "cold fusion" research, my books, my thoughts and my generosity. They do not cite my work because I am not obsessed with Relativism and its orgiastic mathematics, the very things standing in their way,

I now say to them: You are welcome to use whatever I disclose in my books, but at least have the common decency to say where you got it. It is bigger to say that someone influenced you, than to pretend that you had no help when you did. And by all means, please don't try to describe things in reality with Relativist terminology.

---

[2] George Gamow, Gravity

I find it ironic that those high and mighty Relativist physicists, who looked down on me because I refused to speak their erroneous "math-ese", now appropriate my energy ideas without any attribution whatsoever, yet fail to see the available energy in reactions they have observed for years, because it has been concealed by their revered Relativism. Sooner or later, the disparity between theory and practice will become so obvious that they should be exposed as the hypocrites and idea-thieves they are. We are on the verge of a radical change in physics, and it hasn't been the result of the physics establishment itself.

> "We are living in a time when history is holding its breath, and the present is detaching itself from the past like an iceberg that has broken from its icy moorings to sail across the boundless sea.'

Arthur C. Clarke
The Children of Icarus

If the forces which militate against individual human creativity are held in check, humanity will not only survive, but will flourish. The Revolution begins with you, and should make things better for all, in the building of a "Creative Utopia"........a "CREATOPIA"™.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Alfven, Hannes - Existence of Electromagnetic Hydrodynamic Waves, Nature, vol. 150 (Oct. 3, 1942) pp. 405-6
Angebert, Jean Michel - The Occult and the Third Reich, McGraw-Hill Book Company
Armstrong, R.L., King, J.D. - The Electromagnetic Interaction, Prentiss-Hall, Inc., Englewood Cliffs, NJ.
Bondi, H. - Cosmology, 2nd ed., Cambridge U. Press, London/NY (1961)
Boscovich, R.G. - Theoria Philosophiae Naturalis, Venice (1763)
Bush, President George W. - Press Interview, Feb. 11, 2001 (regarding FBI Russian mole Richard Hanssen's arrest)
Cantrell, William - Commentary on Maxwell's Equations and Special Relativity Theory, Infinite Energy Magazine, Vol. 7, Issue 38, July/Aug. 2001
Clarke, Sir Arthur C. - Unidentified Aerial Phenomena, Lecture at Keesler AFB, Miss., ca. Dec,1956
Cornu, M.A. - Comptes Rendus xcix (1884) p. 1045; Exp. Res., §3075
Cornu, M.A. - Comptes Rendus xcii (1881) p. 1368
Einstein, Albert, Theory of Relativity (1905)
Einstein Reconsidered - Myths and Realities of Space, Time, and Ether, Infinite Energy Magazine, Eugene Mallove, Ed. (Vol. 7, Issue 38, 2001)
Encyclopedia of Science, Van Nostrand Reinhold Company (1976), 5th ed.
Faraday, Michael - Thoughts on Ray Vibrations, Phil. Mag. (3) xxviii (1846)
FBI Documents on Nikola Tesla (232 pages released under FOIA)
Fitzgerald, G.F. - Letter (Fitzgerald to Sir Oliver Heaviside, 8 June 1846)
Fuller, John G. - Flying Saucer Fiasco, LOOK Magazine (May 14, 1968)
Gamow, George - Gravity, Doubleday & Company, Inc., N.Y.
Gamow, George - Thirty Years That Shook Physics, Doubleday & Company, Inc., Garden City, N.Y. (1966)
Gifis, Steven H. - Law Dictionary
Good, Timothy - Above Top Secret (1988)
Griffin, G. Edward - World Without Cancer, American Media (1974)
Hitler, Adolf- Mein Kampf Houghton-Mifflin, Boston
Hubble, E.P. - The Realm of the Nubulae, Yale U. Press, New Haven, Conn. (1936)
Huygens, C. - Traite de la lumiere
Janes, Fighting Aircraft of World War Two (ca. 1946)
O'Neill, John J. - Prodigal Genius, the Life of Nikola Tesla (1944)
Jung, C.G. - (collective unconscious/collective conscious theories of)
Kehoe, Maj. Donald E. - Aliens From Space...The Real Story of Unidentified Flying Objects (1973)
Langmuir, Physik. Z., 14, 1273 (1913)
Lapp, R.E., Andrews, H.L. - Nuclear Radiation Physics, Prentiss-Hall, Inc., N.Y. (1950)
Lerner, Eric - The Big Bang Never Happened, Random House (1991)
LeSage, George Louis - Mem de Berlin for 1782
Lyne, William R. - Free Energy Surprise (1997), Creatopia Productions
Lyne, William R. - No Aliens, Just Assholes (article), Paranoia Magazine
Lyne, William R. - Occult Ether Physics, 1st ed. (1997) Creatopia Productions

Lyne, William R, - Occult Ether Physics, 2nd ed. (1998), Creatopia Productions
Lyne, William R, - Pentagon Aliens, (renamed), 3rd ed. (1999), Creatopia Productions
Lyne, William R. - Space Aliens From the Pentagon, 1st ed. (1993), Creatopia Productions.
Lyne, William R. -Space Aliens From the Pentagon, 2nd ed. (1996)
Lyne, William R. - The Mystical Roots of Totalitarianism (unpublished manuscript, ©1979)
Manual of Toxicology (ca. 1957, publisher unknown)
Mallove, Eugene, Editor - Infinite Energy Magazine
Martin, T.C. - The Inventions, Researches and Writings of Nikola Tesla, The Electrical Engineer, N.Y. (1894)
Nernst, W. - Theorem (on thermodynamics)
New York Times, July 11,1937, p. 13, col. 2 - Announcement (Tesla's radium transmutation technology, interstellar energy beam development)
New York Times, Oct. 8, 1966 (article on Condon Committee)
Newton, Sir Isaac-Memoir, Phil. Trans, vii (1762); Royal Society, 9 Dec, 1676 (Birch iii)
Orwell, George - 1984 (1949)
Parascope, Inc. (1996)
Patton, Phil - Dreamland (1998)
Pauwels, Louis and Bergier, Jacques - Morning of the Magicians, Stein & Day, Publishers, N.Y.
Plato - Dialogues
Priestley, J. - History
Psychology Today (ca. 1977) Narcolepsy
Rand, Ayn - Philosophy: Who Needs It?
Rand, Ayn - Rule By Consensus, The New Fascism, (lecture), ca. 1968
Ratzlaff, John T. - Tesla Said (a compilation of Tesla statements), Tesla Book Co., Chula Vista, Ca.
Santa Fe New Mexican (from AP), 7/30/2001, NASA probe on mission to catch some rays ("Genesis" probe)
Siegel, Dr. Jerome - Narcolepsy, Scientific American (2000)
Simpson, Christopher - Blowback, Weidenfeld & Nicolson, N.Y.
Skeptical Opinion (magazine)
Szasz, Thomas - Manifesto (summary statement) (1998)
Szasz, Thomas - The Myth of Mental Disease (1960)
Tesla, Nikola - Colorado Springs Notes - 1899-1900, Nolit, Beograd, Terasije 27, Yugoslavia (1978)
Tesla, Nikola - Experiments with Alternate Currents of High Potential and High Frequency (lecture before the Institution of Electrical Engineers, London, 1892)
Tesla, Nikola - German Cosmic Ray Theory Questioned, New York Herald Tribune (Mar. 3,1935)
Tesla, Nikola - Lecture Before theA.I.E.E., Columbia College (1891)
Tesla, Nikola - Nikola Tesla Papers (Apr. 15, 1932) Rare Books and Manuscripts Library, Columbia U., N.Y.
Tesla, Nikola - Prepared Statement, New York Times, July 10, 1937, p. 13, col. 2
Tesla, Nikola - Radio Power Will Revolutionize the World (interview by Alfred Albelli), Modern Mechanics and Invention (July, 1934)
The Skeptical Inquirer (magazine)

The Skeptic (magazine)
Thomson, Sir William - Baltimore Lectures
Thomson, J. J. - Recent Researches in Electricity and Magnetism (1893) p. 13
TRUE X-FILES.NEWS (an Internet news service)
Vallee, Jacques - Anatomy of a Fraud, Journal of Scientific Exploration
Vallee, Jacques - Forbidden Science
Vallee, Jacques - Passport to Magonia
Valmiki - Ramayana (pan-Indian legend, purportedly the first novel ever written)
Wheeler, J.A. - Geometrodynamics, Academic Press (1962)
Whittaker, Sir Edmund - A History of the Theories of Aether and Electricity, Revised and enlarged ed. (1951), Thomas Nelson and Sons, Edinburgh
Yanigasawa, Dr. Masashi - Mouse Studies Link Feeding-Behaviour Gene with Narcolepsy, Research News, Howard Hughes Medical Institute (2000).

VITA

William Lyne was born in Big Spring, Texas, and was raised in West Texas cattle and oilfield boom towns, with two years in the San Francisco Bay area during WWII, as a Navy brat. He enjoyed several sports, his favorites being long distance running, swimming and football. He played solo baritone horn in Waco High School Band, Texas' best high school band, in 1956, led by the immortal Lyle Skinner, in its 25th consecutive Dist. IV-A Texas Sweepstakes victory performance, and won a gold medal for his solo.

In 1956, Lyne entered the Air Force. He was removed from an Air Traffic Control School (GCA), placed in Air Force Intelligence, and granted a Top Secret Clearance, which, unknown to him at the time, was primarily to prevent his public disclosure of a Soviet spy ring he had discovered at the age of 18, while in basic training at Lackland AFB, Texas.

In 1965, Lyne acquired a B.S., with a double major (Fine Arts and Industrial Arts), Sam Houston State University, Huntsville, Texas. In 1969, he acquired an MFA in Studio Arts from the University of Texas. When he arrived in New Mexico in 1970, he was a professional artist (painting and sculpture), a profession abandoned years ago due to constant harassment orchestrated by the CIA (he refused an executive position they offered him).

Lyne has lived in New Mexico for the past thirty-one years, where he engages in energy R & D, writes, publishes, and pursues very broad interests, ranging from art to music, cinema, acting, photography, science, epigraphy and petroglyphs, archaeology, ancient history, geography, inventing, interpretation of current events and enjoying the beautiful Southwestern scenery and culture.

Lyne has three previous books presently in print: PENTAGON ALIENS (1999)(revised, expanded and renamed 3rd ed. Of his 1993 book, Space Aliens From the Pentagon); OCCULT ETHER PHYSICS (1997), revised 2nd ed. (1998); FREE ENERGY SURPRISE (1997), a technical report, involving a free-energy discovery. Lyne's next book is THE GALISTEA TANOAN-EGYPTIAN DJED FESTIVAL STONE: Thothmes Ill's Expedition to New Mexico, ca. 1625 B.C., isbn 0-9637467-3-1.

Lyne presently resides in Lamy, New Mexico, and is currently single.

PENTAGON ALIENS

THE BOOK WHICH TELLS IT ALL: WHAT FLYING SAUCERS AND UFOS ARE, WHO INVENTED THEM, HOW THEY WORK, AND WHO IS BEHIND THE CONCEALMENT OF THIS HIGH TECHNOLOGY, CARRIED OUT THROUGH DOUBLE-TALK AND FALSE "ALIEN" PROPAGANDA, AND WHY.

HAVE A MAJORITY OF PEOPLE SWALLOWED A BIG LIE DESIGNED BY A POWERFUL ELITE TO CONCEAL THINGS WHICH ARE CRUCIAL TO FUTURE AMERICAN ECONOMY, INDEPENDENCE AND SURVIVAL AS A GREAT NATION?

WAS THIS FANTASTIC TECHNOLOGY INVENTED IN THE 19TH CENTURY BY NIKOLA TESLA, AND IS THE PRESENT TOP PHYSICS' A COVER-UP OF THE REAL ETHER PHYSICS' UPON WHICH THESE SHIPS ARE BASED?

IF YOU THINK UFOS DON'T EXIST OR ARE FROM OUTER SPACE, THINK AGAIN. THIS BOOK WILL BLOW YOUR MIND.

William Lyne was born in West Texas and raised in oil boom towns. He had a Top Secret clearance in Air Force Intelligence. In 1975, he rejected a high-paying and prestigious executive CIA poition offered by director George Bush, because he believes the National Security Act of 1947 is an illegal batrayal of American sovreignty and liberty, and that the flying saucer, a man's greatest invention, should be enjoyed by all. He began research leading to this book over 50 years ago. Contains much never before published information, including photos of a celestial guidance system from a WW H-vintage Nazi "Kreisel Teller" ("Gyrating Saucer").

$25.00 - ISBN 0-9637467-7-4. To order, send $25. plus $3.00 shipping and handling to Wm. Lyne, Creatopia™, Cerro Circle 31-B, Lamy, New Mexico 87540. For more information, call or fax (505) 466-3022.

OCCULT ETHER PHYSICS: Tesla's Hidden Space Propulsion System and the Conspiracy to Conceal It

Is there a "Secret Physics" with a different set of rules—hidden away from us earlier in this century, by a powerful elite who fear the technology based on it will strip away their power and wealth, and liberate us from their grip? Dynamite comes in small packages, and this little stick of scientific dynamite blows apart pseudo-scientific myths and instills the truth.

OCCULT ETHER PHYSICS © 1997, Wm. R. Lyne
CREATOPIA PRODUCTIONS™
ISBN 0-9637467-6-6 - $10.00

To order this book send $ 10. plus $2. shipping and handling to Wm. Lyne, Creatopia™, Cerro Circle 31-B, Lamy, New Mexico 87540

FREE ENERGY SURPRISE

What did Nikola Tesla mean when he said he had found a new (environmental, free-energy) use for iron? He stated at one point, that for every 200 pounds of iron, another horsepower was added to one of his electrical generators. Why? How? In the 1890s, he spoke of using "cosmic radiation" (which he also called "Primary Solar Rays") for the generation of energy, and said this radiation—' which today we call the ZPR ("Zero Point Radiation")—interacted with the ether and matter, to produce useful electrical energy in great amounts. When Relativism was promoted in 1919, Tesla continued to assert that the theory was wrong, and challenged the proponents of the theory to find fault with his theories, and they declined to do so. Tesla claimed that the radiation produced by "radioactive elements" was actually a reaction with the ZPR. Was he right? The author of this paper, William R. Lyne, in collaboration with a reader of his books, engaged in some unusual and innovative research, and have evolved some inventions which appear to completely refute the Relativist theory of "nuclear energy" as we think we know it, showing that "E = (much more than) MC^2.

FREE ENERGY SURPRISE - ©1997, Wm. R. Lyne
$10.00 - ISBN 0-9637467-5-8
CREATOPIA PRODUCTIONS™

To order this technical report send $10.00 plus $2. shipping and handling to Wm. Lyne, Creatopia™, Cerro Circle 31 -B, Lamy, New Mexico 87540. For more information call or fax (505)466-3022.

OCCULT ETHER PHYSICS

TESLA'S "IDEAL FLYING MACHINE" AND THE CONSPIRACY TO CONCEAL IT

BY
WILLIAM LYNE

4TH REVISED AND EXPANDED EDITION

INCLUDES A LAST CHAPTER ON THE LYNE ATOMIC HYDROGEN FURNACE WITH UPDATES

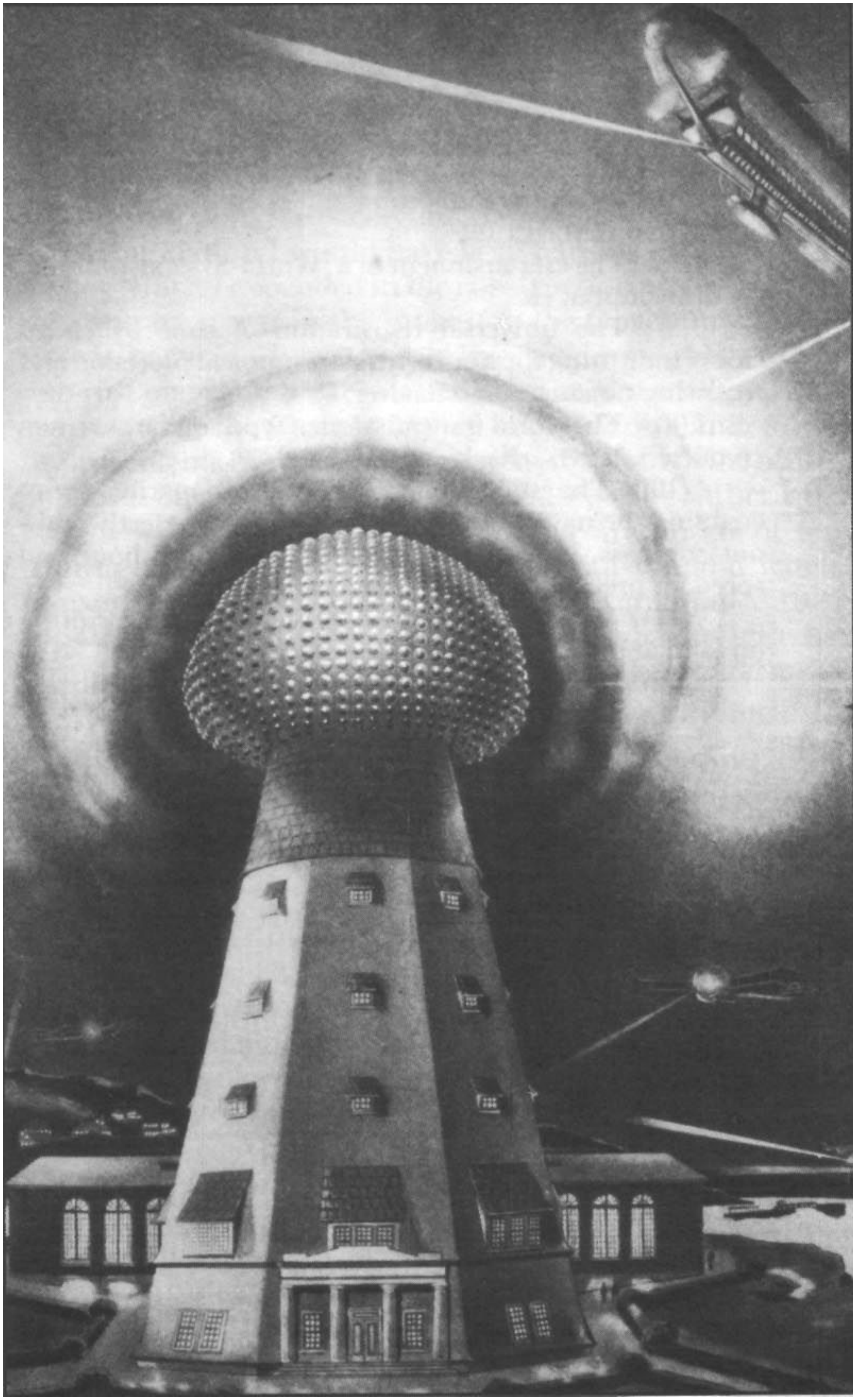
OCCULT ETHER PHYSICS

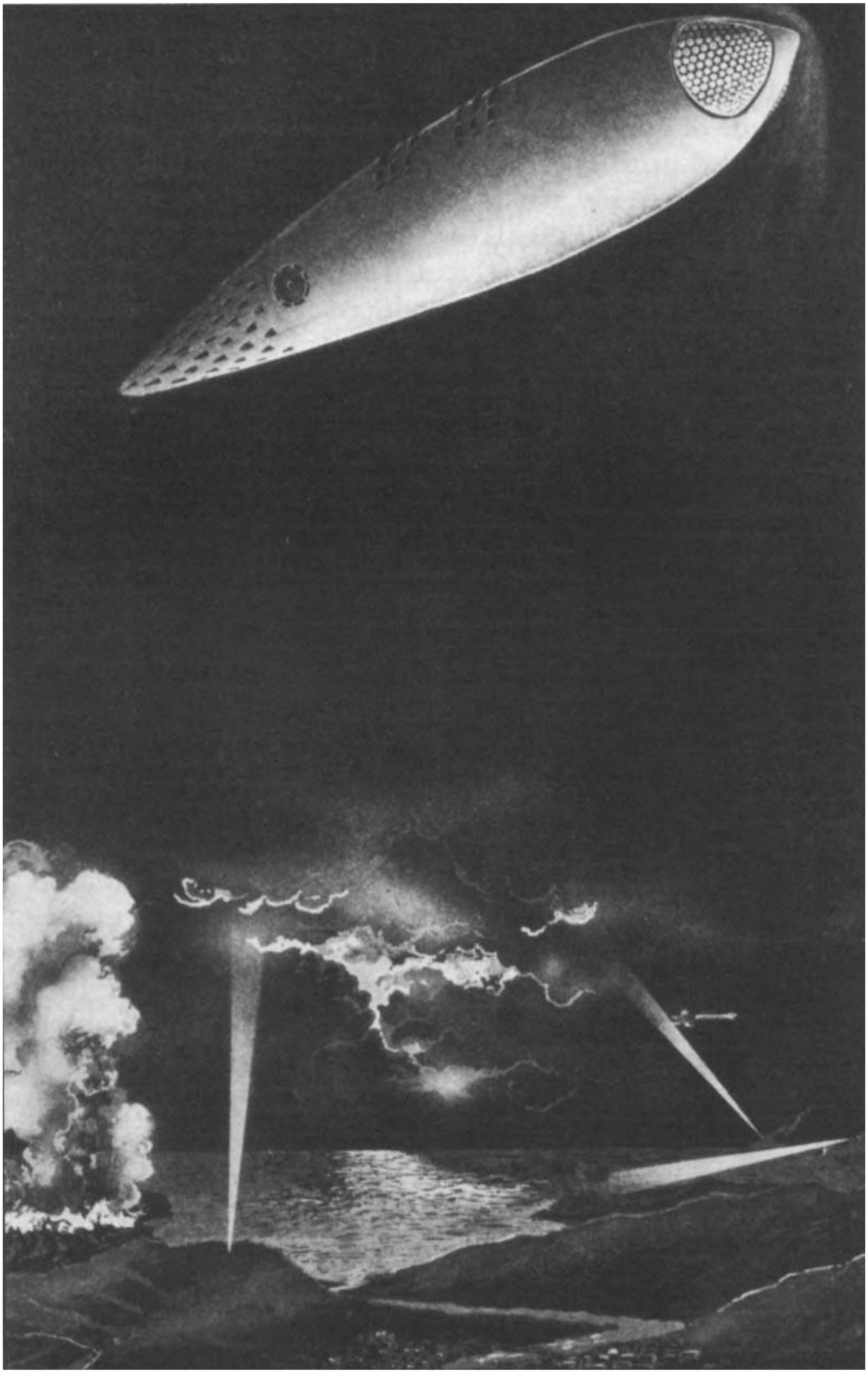
TESLA'S "IDEAL FLYING MACHINE" AND THE CONSPIRACY TO CONCEAL IT

BY
WILLIAM LYNE

4TH REVISED AND EXPANDED EDITION

INCLUDES A LAST CHAPTER ON THE
LYNE ATOMIC HYDROGEN FURNACE
WITH UPDATES





The truth can flow from lies, but lies cannot flow from the truth.

Arthur Schopenhauer
Dedicated to my sons Angus Lyne and Matthew Olay

OCCULT ETHER PHYSICS, 4th Revised and Expanded Edition Copyright 1996, 1997, 1998, 2008, 2009, 2010, 2012 William R. Lyne all rights reserved including the right of reproduction
in whole or in part in any form

Text, art and photographs copyright 1996, 1997, 1998, 2009, 2010, 2012.
No part of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form, by any means (electronic, recording, photocopying or otherwise) without prior express written permission of the author. Published by CREATOPIA™
William R. Lyne, 31-B Cerro Circle, Lamy, New Mexico 87540 U.S.A.
Tel./Fax (505) 466-3022

10987654321 Library of Congress

Cataloging in Publication Data Lyne, William R.
Occult Ether Physics

I. Title
P.S. 93-90554
ISBN: 978-0-9854527-1-1

Non-fiction: A re-discovery of what the author calls “occult ether physics”, the scientific/technical basis for a space-propulsion system invented in the late 19th century by Nikola Tesla, now used in the secret, exclusively man-made flying machines known as “flying saucers” or “UFOs”. The government conceals this invention behind false scientific theories, “space alien” hoaxes, and false propaganda, disseminated through a controlled mass media. A “UFOlogy”, “new-age”, “paranormalist”, and “pseudo-debunker” network is covertly maintained under “national security laws”, to blur the facts of reality and disjoint inquiry, thus protecting the archaic technology and resources of coercive-monopolist, corporate-state interests from the competition of a truly free market.

Chapter VI is the Lyne Atomic Hydrogen Furnace, a 1964 freeenergy invention of the author.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Preface...7
Introduction: Nikola Tesla's Original 1875 Plan...11
The Real Coverup...18
Chapter 1: The Occult Ether Theory and Electro-propulsion.......................20
Characteristics of Basic Ether Particles...21
The Cause of the "Inverse Square" Law of Gravity?.............................27
"Tubes of Force"..28
More on Tesla's "Primary Solar Rays"...29
An Old Wooden Box and a German Inertial Guidance System.............30
Low and High Frequency Electrostatic Impulses and Tesla's Wireless Transmission of Energy...40
Tesla's TELEFORCE Discoveries..44
Chapter II: Exploring the Nature of the Ether...50
The Early Background..50
J. J. Thomson's "Electromagnetic Momentum"...................................52
Tesla Shows Up...53
Cosmic Motion and Local Momentum...57
Local Momentum and Celestial Movement...59
Chapter III: Observations...66
Rub-a-Dub-Dub, Seven Folks in a Hot Tub...69
Comparison to Other Sightings...72
Ether and "Ponderable Matter"..75
Orbiting Planets and Satellites..79
Chapter IV: Historical Development of the Theory....................................80
Rotatory Motion and the "Screw Effect"..90
An Electrostatic Charge Carried Around...83
Chapter V: Tesla and the Good Old Boy's Club...89
Tesla's Dynamic Theory of Gravity...95
Tesla's Secrecy...104
The Nature of Electricity...107
CONCLUSION..109
Chapter VI: Free Energy Massacre;
The Lyne Atomic Hydrogen Furnace...115

Smokescreens from Academia..123
Another Astounding Proof and More Hydrogen Methods..................129
Atomic Hydrogen Furnace..134
How Does it Work?...138
Appropriate Use of the Process..143
Conclusion...144

PREFACE

The two illustrations which precede the title page are ones commissioned by Tesla in preparation for his offer of inventions to the U.S. government in 1914, which was rejected by the government, so Tesla then made his offer to Germany to which he sold them. After all, a man is entitled to a reward for his work.

This revision was made necessary in order to get closer to the basic details in regard to Tesla's space propulsion technology. To this end, subtle changes were required. The previous 3**rd** revised edition has already experienced suppression which could only have come from the government through its catspaws. This revision therefore is to push the envelope even further than before.

There is much consternation today about the words “cult” and “occult”, and what they mean. Many are worried that their own organizations, groups, or religions may fall into this category. Since the word “occult” merely refers to “secret” or “hidden”, it is used by doctors to describe unknown bacteria as being “occult”. As for a religion, philosophy, organization or other group activity, it is a “cult” if it utilizes “secret teachings”, made known only to a select few initiates or “priests”. Therefore, “national security secrets” are occult and hence the name for this book.

Is it possible that an entire area of physics has been declared virtually “occult” and “off-limits” to the public or to private individuals, by a powerful deep-black operations group, so that all science education or data generally available to the public has been “screened” to eliminate references to it? Is it possible that the actual science involved in “electro-propulsion” has been replaced with “bogus science”, which has been promoted and promulgated to the extent that no one except the ‘esoteric elite’ knows the truth? And if so, has the “occult” science become the exclusive province of a very few specially selected corporate/government “scientific priests”?

I began studying this controversy—including the science involved —when I was but a child of eight years, in 1946, after interviewing oil field pumpers who had seen silvery “flying disks” in the remote oil fields in the West Texas and southern New Mexico desert. At the age of 13, I spent a couple of days visiting with family friends and their neighbor, astrophysicist Dr. Lincoln La Paz, in Albuquerque, new Mexico. La Paz was then employed by the U.S. government to help cover up Nazi flying saucer technology brought to New Mexico after WW II. My early convictions were later corroborated when I acquired a piece of hardware from a 1943 German flying saucer at Sandia Base where La Paz worked.

Since the truth about Tesla’s space propulsion system is based on “ether” (A.K.A. “aether”) physics, which has been collected, hidden away, or declared “national security secrets”, or intentionally obliterated by false propaganda which is so intense that the general public remains unaware of the facts which are right under their noses, I have dubbed the ether physics ultimately connected to Tesla’s system “Occult Ether Physics”. This book is dedicated to the rediscovery of, examination of, and the integration of these secrets into the public knowledge.

The high priests of this occult knowledge are the elite owners of the coercive monopolist corporate banking, industrial, mineral and related interests, who in turn allow the initiation of certain scientists, military and government officials into their secret teachings only insofar as it is necessary, to execute and maintain a conspiracy of giant proportions, so that the technology can be classified as a “state secret” which can be controlled and enforced by means of unconstitutional “national security laws”, military and civilian legal authority, and police. These measures are intended to protect the archaic technology and resources controlled by the elite, from the competition of a truly free market society. This technology is possessed by all the world’s major governments, so we know that they aren’t hiding it from each other, they are hiding it from us, the people.

Because of the last 76 or more years of progressively intensifying false propaganda and manipulation of knowledge and science, a majority of scientists ridicule the concepts of the existence of an ether and of flying saucers, as if such thinking belonged in the category of a “flat earth” theory and the “little green men” from outer space babble, but the reverse is true. The proponents of Relativism and the Big Bang want you to believe that the universe is finite, so that, if you go “too far” you will “fall off the universe”, rather than off a “flat earth”. What’s the difference,? Flat earth...finite universe...they’re both dumb theories.

And what do the “little green men” lies—originally told in 1947 by the government at Roswell—have to do with exclusively manmade electric flying machines, and technology based on sound and well-established electrical science and physics, but which, like the existence of the ether, has been tucked away in secret vaults, to keep you from using it, while you are being fed false and useless “theories”? These range from “curved space”, “time travel”, Big Bang”, and “alien abduction” stories, to parallel universe”, “interdimensional travel”, “worm-holes in space”, and any other outrageously incredible stories, concocted by government spooks, national security personnel, and secret agents in the “UFOlogy” and “pseudo-de-bunker” communities (“pseudo-de-bunkers” in my vernacular are official government spokesmen or scientific know-italls whose job it is to completely deny the existence of flying saucers, or to ridicule their other covert government counterparts, the UFOlogists, new-agers, or paranormalists).

Before you decide there is no ether, or no flying saucers, or before you believe the often-told “prime time” lies that aliens are “here”, or that time travel is possible, you should ask yourself whether or not your thinking on these subjects has been conditioned by Big Brother’s Biggest Lies. If you believe in relativism, I should point out that “time travel” is an integral part of that, which is a very incredible impossibility which makes the so-called “science” you rely on a worthless piece of pseudo-intellectual crap promoted by someone who wanted to sabotage your mind on behalf of the self-appointed high priests of “Occult Ether Physics”.

Is your thinking a barometer of thought-control mediocrity? Are you so out of control of your own metaphysical concepts and epistemology, that you have to get your thinking from the “canned goods” section of NASA (NAZIA), courtesy of the CIA’s Office of Scientific Intelligence (“OSI”)? Is your education a frozen “TV dinner”, prepared by a Secret Government, so you’ll never discover the real food for thought?

For those of you who may be unfamiliar with my more complete exposition of the whys, wherefores, whos and other facts concerning the huge volume of false propaganda designed and disseminated on behalf of the coercive monopolist corporate state, to conceal flying saucer propulsion and other advanced and “free energy” technology, you should read my other books-- ***Pentagon Aliens*** (copyright 1993, 1995, 1999 (3rd Edition), ISBN 0-9637467-7-4, and ***Occult***

Science Dictatorship (copyright 2001, ISBN 0-9637467-8-2.

The flying saucer is a product of Nikola Tesla’s life work, his most fundamentally important invention, for which he said all his other inventions were in pursuit of, though you have probably never heard this fact from anyone else. How do I know? I have documented it in many years of research, tracing Tesla’s developments and his own words uttered and published during his lifetime, in scattered, sparse yet sufficient sources, as he placed a crowning achievement on top the work of the world’s greatest scientific minds of the nineteenth century, who were Tesla’s inspirations. And this invention has been concealed above all others by governments throughout the world. But they could not conceal everything, as there were already bits and pieces of information which were already widely published before they got their concealment act together.

It was supposedly proved, on May 29, 1919, “...that we live in a curved four-dimensional space-time”. Albert Einstein said a massive body spinning in space “...would drag space and time around with it...”, the origin of so-called “frame-dragging” and “space curvature”. “Gravity is no longer a mysterious force acting at a distance but the result of an object trying to travel in a straight line through space curved by the presence of material bodies”. (Gary Taubes, ***Relativists in Orbit*** , Discover, March, 1997).

Even such theories...relativistic bromides interlaced with such phrases as “the “fabric of space-time”, “space curvature”, and “frame-dragging”, although off-the-wall ludicrous, suggest the existence of an ether, albeit an erroneous concept of the ether.

Since 1919, Nikola Tesla’s propulsive discoveries have been concealed by government suppression, theft, and ridicule, while theoretical physics has become a pseudo-scientific mathematical shell-game which bears little new fruit, and less resemblance to reality. And this highly dubious “pop” physics is primarily what is spread by the media, while practicing physicists don't have much time for it. It is time for the truth as far as I am able to determine it.

INTRODUCTION: NIKOLA TESLA’S ORIGINAL 1875 PLAN

Tesla’s original vision, in his 1870s student days, of his “ideal flying machine”, the realization of which is why he said he entered the field of mechanical engineering in 1875 in the first place; this was the problem which he had assigned to himself as his main lifelong work. (Frank Parker Stockbridge. The

Tesla Turbine, The World's Work, March, 1912, pp. 543-48). The ship actually works on mechanical principles, but is actuated by electrostatic impulses. More on this later.

Originally anticipating that the electrical power needs for an electrostatically-actuated mechanical craft would be too great for an on-board power plant (since his ship was to be devoid of sustaining planes), he initially embarked on developing his "wireless transmission of power" system, so as to transmit the power needed from ground-based power generators and stations. The "power" being transmitted was actually mechanical in nature. Some of these earlier Tesla ideas turned out to be unnecessary for his flying machine, so he turned them for appropriate commercial purposes. Since his concept of the ether was of a relatively low-density one, and his earlier conception of the necessary force was not nearly so much stronger than the gravitational one as it later turned out to be, his later discovery that his anticipated electrical power needs were so much greater than that actually required, led to changes in his craft, and produced plenty of surplus "spin-off" technologies.

As stated in the Preface, in 1914, at a time when he was in great need of money, Tesla unsuccessfully attempted to interest the U.S. government in submarine and propulsion technology. In an article prepared by Tesla but never published, Tesla said "...we should push the development of flying machines and wireless transmission of energy without an instant's delay and with all the power and resources of the nation". The immediate association here is between "flying machines" (not "aeroplanes") and "wireless transmission of energy". Tesla had piles of patents which produced him no money, because the Morgans and Rockefellers had declared them off limits. No one could borrow money from the banks to put one of these systems into practice, and anyone who was foolish enough to do so on their own money could expect the wrath of the gods to come down on them like lightening bolts from Zeus.

In 1914 Tesla sold his technology to the German Minister of High Marine, Admiral Alfred von Tirpitz. Tesla had also failed to interest anyone in the development of his wireless energy transmission system. He made the imminent discovery that his onboard power needs would not be so great, saying "...weight is no object". In 1913 Tesla had obtained a patent on a remarkable turbine he had invented about 1909, which solved his on-board power needs for his flying machine. This was probably in view of encouraging developments and awareness which showed that the electromagnetic interaction is 10^{40} times stronger than the gravitational interaction (George Gamow, Gravity, Anchor Books, N.Y. [1962], p. 138) According to Hendrick Lorenz, the electrical attractive force is 2x 10^{39} times stronger than the gravitational attractive force.

In an interview for a 1912 book, A Boy's Book of New Inventions - The Tesla Turbine, Tesla further revealed some details of his system when he stated the following: ***"As I told you before when we were talking of the wireless transmission of power, the mechanism will be a development of the principle on which my turbine is constructed. It will be so tremendously powerful that it will make a veritable rope of air above the great machine to hold it at any altitude the navigators may choose, and also a rope of air in front or in the rear to send it forward or backward at almost any speed desired. When that day comes, airship travel will be as safe and prosaic as travel by railroad train today, and not much very different, except that there will be no dirt, and it will be much faster. One will be able to dine in New York, retire in an aero Pullman berth in a closed and perfectly furnished car, and arise to breakfast in London."***

It was also implied that in producing the "ropes" the Tesla coil was used to produce rapidly-varying electrostatic potentials to create longitudinal sound waves in the ether for hundreds of miles through the air. The "equal and opposite reaction" to these waves was to bring back to the ship what are called "tubes of force" which carry mechanical momentum and, what Tesla's description appears to say, to lock onto a huge mass of ether molecules to pull the ship forward. As I witnessed on the ship I saw in 1953, an electrostatic envelope surrounded the ship as it moved without air friction, shock wave or sonic boom at around 36,000 mph. The description in the above quote by Tesla also sounds like a "tractor beam" technology. The principle of Tesla's turbine was to use the adhesiveness and viscosity of rapidly moving gases to propel his turbine blades around. Applying this same principle to his aircraft would use the adhesiveness and viscosity of the ether applied through a steady brush discharge, to impart momentum to pull his ship through space.

There was a change in Tesla's strategy which seems to have occurred between this 1912 and 1915 tests of an electro-mechanically powered missile using wireless energy projected to it by a power beam from the ground. These new developments were probably spurred on by necessity—the "mother of invention"—since without a wireless energy system, the prior conception would be rather useless. The power monopolists could fight that off forever, so Tesla was left to his own devices, unable to count on anyone else. Typical for a true genius, when he was thwarted in one direction he found another way.

The earlier conceptions must have been still in Tesla's mind when he developed the turbine commercially under the Tesla Propulsion Company slogan, "20 Horsepower Per Pound", with the intention of also using the turbine to drive one of his specially designed high frequency alternators to power his ideal flying machine. After having developed such a light and powerful turbine, which could turn upwards of 30,000 rpm., with a ten pound unit producing 200 break horsepower on gasoline, he also designed and received a patent in 1928 for a new kind of "VTOL" (Vertical Takeoff and Landing)
-type propellor-driven airplane, to be powered by two turbines mounted in tandem, which would counteract the torque of the prop, and avoid the need for the stabilizing rotors that helicopters have on their back fuselages. This aircraft, if built, would have had a superior weight-to-horsepower ratio—perhaps three-to-one—and would have been fast in level flight, taking off vertically.

On seeing the inefficient heavier aircraft engines then in use, and the requirements of more cumbersome aircraft with greater wing area but lower wing-area-to-weight ratios, Tesla apparently wished to commercialize on the turbine by designing and patenting the new airplane, which specifically used his turbine, to raise needed capital to complete research and development on his more expensive flying machine project. In his experiences with prior patents, he must have learned that a patent would be worthless unless he could get the needed capital to carry the project out before the patent period expired, and that the disclosure in a patent would allow others to do so only 17 years after a patent might be granted to him, during which time his invention could languish for lack of funding on his part, because the monolithic financial interests were set against him. And yet there was the patented airplane and no one built it.

While in the initial stages of development, Tesla seemed quite unaware of the true power of "the force", until his early field tests proved that it was "tremendous". In the years 1893 and 1894, Tesla had "completely worked out" his Dynamic Theory of Gravity", that is, at least in "theory". Inherent to that theory, was his propulsion system, yet in the formative and theoretical stages. To publish his theory however, would have been tantamount to disclosing the basic technology as well, which would have allowed his competitors with more money and resources to complete and take credit for the most important work of his life, and the greatest invention of mankind. Tesla lacked the necessary money, and could not raise it. He could not protect himself by patent, until he completed and tested a working model of large enough scale to impress the aircraft industry and the government. Fatefully, it was during this time of greatest financial need, when he still had the physical stamina to carry the project out, that he was run ragged by bill collections and foreclosures, at the behest of J.P. Morgan and his cohorts, all with the intent of crushing Tesla because he kept coming up with new electric power systems which made his prior systems obsolete. Since the newer systems would have ruined Morgan and Rockefeller, and since any invention which Tesla marketed for great profit would have allowed him the resources to build more energy systems, he had to be crushed. Tesla never seemed to fully realize that Morgan’s pseudophilanthropy became nothing more than a scheme to compromise Tesla’s contract with himself, and a way of falsely inducing his reliance on others rather than on himself. This treatment set Tesla back emotionally as well as financially, after he had invested all his cash in his project, and reduced him at one point to a heap of groveling nerves, literally begging Morgan to make good on his promises, to no avail, but like all truly tragic figures, there was a peripides—a reassertion of the tragic hero’s excellent and untarnished Arturian powers—before he passed heroically into the oblivion of death, as his discoveries, like the sword Excalibur, sank beneath the waves of the lake of ‘national security’ lies, to the inurement of corporate greed, coercion and extortion.

The only power that Tesla seemed to have left, was that of withholding his discoveries from the world, to protect his secrets from the pilfering paws of the looters, until and unless he could receive the compensation and credit which he deserved, but that didn’t matter, because they got it all before his corpse was cool, and never paid him so much as a dime for his trouble.

After becoming aware of the true power of “the force”—one hundred billion thousand trillion thousand trillion times stronger than gravity—Tesla began to pursue the idea of an “on-board” power system for a manned craft to be used for personal and commercial transportation, with his “wireless transmission of power” to be relegated to a robotic, remote controlled, electric powered transmission of mechanical power to a “missile” from the ground, for use in warfare. After a long period of silence following his field testing of a working model of the electro-mechanically propelled missile in 1915, Tesla began referring to the propelling force as “tremendous” in his later announcements which began in the ‘30s. “Tremendous” does not mean something which reacts feebly, to barely get off the ground, but to something which rises with great and astounding force, such as the way I saw a flying saucer perform in 1953...only ten years after Tesla's death. If "tremendous" meant something like an airplane or conventional rocket—as the CIA/NASA mis-informers have idiotically attempted to misconstrue —then what would be the word to describe a force which propels a flying saucer at 36,000 mph in three seconds?

The words "means of propulsion" used by Tesla in his 1940 interview with William L. Laurence of the New York Times are of the utmost importance for those interested in understanding both the misinformation conspiracy as well as the scanty documentation of Tesla's concealed discoveries. In their context, these words denoted something which was different from the autos, planes, trains and ships then in existence, else why mention them and why would it be "new"? These words obviously meant an on-board electromechanical means to be used on his "ideal" flying machine, either manned or unmanned, controlled "mechanically" by a pilot on board, or "remotely by wireless energy" by a controller on the ground. It did not refer to a "projectile" such as a "pellet" or "bullet", which had no "propulsion system", and was merely "repelled" by a gun of some sort, and it did not refer to any kind of aerodynamic "airplane"—hence Tesla used the term "flying machine"—since his machine was to have no wings, ailerons, propellers or "outer appurtenances of any kind". "Propulsion" here means an on-board system for perpetuation of motion by electromechanical means supplied with electrical power by either on-board turbine-driven generator or by mechanical energy and control signals transmitted by power beam from the ground. The idea of interplanetary travel appealed to Tesla, with the idea that, so long as the energy for propulsion could be transmitted from the earth, a space ship would require no fuel tanks. But the term "veritable ropes of air" raises a question as to whether these ships will work in outer space.

In a letter to his friend and financial supporter B.A. Behrend in the 1930's, Tesla referred cryptically to what may have been his propulsion discovery: "What I shall accomplish by that other invention I came specially to see you about, I do not dare to tell you. This is stated in all seriousness". Tesla may have been inferring a plan to discover "other worlds" in outer space, if some version of his flying machines would work there. We really can't know for certain how all of Tesla's secret inventions worked but the government knows. There seemed to be some differences between Tesla's earlier statements and later ones which indicate that he had several different related inventions and that he may not have understood himself exactly how some of them worked.

Tesla said that all bodies contain "electrical content" and that they behave as resonant bodies which interact with rapidly varying electrostatic forces and ether to determine their gravitational interactions and movements in space. These theories were tested and confirmed to some degree in his 1899 Colorado Springs experiments. The U.S. government never gave Tesla the time of day, and his great propulsion discovery slipped into the eager hands of the Nazi elite, when Wernher von Braun engaged and began development in the “p2 Projekt” at Los Alamos, New Mexico in 1936. Tesla apparently participated—in fact may have been the project leader—in these early tests in New Mexico from 1936 to 1938. Von Braun took the data back to Germany in the Winter of 1937, where research and development was conducted at Peenemünde in the Baltic, with underground manufacturing facilities elsewhere in Germany, until these secrets and others were traded to American corporations and the U.S. government in exchange under Operation Paperclip, just after the armistice, for amnesty for many war criminals, along with an agreement for several thousand people to work for the U.S. government and American corporations. Anyone having important technical information was protected. The Nuremberg Tribunal was a show trial which did not prosecute anyone having advanced or “strategic” technical knowledge or abilities even though they may have been guilty of crimes against humanity.

I have always associated the ship which I saw up close in 1953 with Tesla technology, because of the copious electrostatic discharges (which I call “Tesla discharges”) because it was obviously an electric flying machine, and because the ship’s precession indicated gyroscopic stabilizers as Tesla emphasized. And because the ship moved with a force consistent with the fact that the electromagnetic interaction is 1040 times greater than the gravitational interaction.

In 1912-14 Tesla mentioned “veritable ropes of air” which “pulled” his ship through space (there being no “thrusting” from behind) and said that his ship utilized the same phenomena—the adhesiveness and viscosity of fast moving gas—as that which propelled his smooth turbine blades around, except in this case the “gas” he referred to was the ether. He stated that his ship or a missile based on his system could be “...dropped on any point on the globe” electrically. Is it possible that Tesla stumbled on something much more powerful when conducting tests, attempting to use air? Is it possible that J. J. Thomson’s description of the specific action of the technology involving the ether is more accurate (that “...the aether is itself a storehouse of mechanical momentum”)?

There are those who have interpreted or will interpret Tesla’s statements as meaning that his flying machine technology was simply a matter of using his turbine and Tesla pump to suck air in and shoot it out the rear of the machine to produce the thrust to “repel” it like a “jet” engine, yet we know this is wrong because of Tesla’s use of the word “pull”, and there is no way to create a “rope-like” column of air with only his turbine and pump powerful enough to “pull” his ship. And there is certainly no technology based on such a primitive idea which could accelerate a ship to 36,000 mph in three seconds as I observed, with no sonic boom or shock wave. And with no intake ports or jet nozzles on the rear. But there is a technology based on Tesla principles which could and did do so electrostatically, and that technology appears to have been more cogently described by J. J. Thomson. And it is also possible that what J. J. Thomson described was partially technology which Tesla was attempting to keep secret.

Thomas Edison joined the Theosophist organization of Madame Blavatsky in 1872. Their main activity seemed to be industrial espionage, concealed behind a veil of an interest in mysticism. I think Edison used the organization to steal technology from other inventors. Tesla was invited to join in 1895 and he refused. His laboratory was burned to the ground soon after his refusal. J. J. Thomson was also associated with the Theosophists. Was some of the technology he described obtained from Tesla through Theosophist espionage?

The REAL Cover-up

Ever since Tesla’s saucer discovery came under the control of the U.S. government in 1945, there has been in effect a false propaganda program—originally developed by the RSHA VI— Reichsicherheitampt VI, or “National Security Agency Division 6"— the division of the Gestapo which was invested with the highest secrets of the German Reich (managed by General Reinhard Gehlen) which included and controlled in Nazi Germany the equivalent to our own UFOlogy, new age—and what I call the “pseudo-skeptic misinformation dissemination network.” The U.S. government simply employed the whole Nazi saucer counterintelligence apparatus, and it was some of the original Nazi personnel employed at Holloman, A.F.B., at Alamogordo, New Mexico, who designed and implemented the 1947 “Roswell Hoax”. Though shadowed with ostensible military and “national security” vestiges, this cover-up has been protracted on behalf of a coercive monopolist corporate state— even in Germany —ever since the acquisition of the secrets by the Nazis, for if the technology had gotten even into the hands of private Germans at that time, the Nazi state’s days would have been ever so much more shortly numbered.

Can you imagine the effect of this kind of transportation technology in private hands? It would allow the common man to go anywhere in the world, to visit all the places which he cannot presently afford the airline fare to. Yet a small, privately-owned flying saucer would cost less than an automobile to build, would use practically no fuel, would travel thousands of miles per hour, would last a long time, and would require practically no maintenance.

Can you imagine the effect it would have on totalitarian communist, fascist or corporate state governments and ‘privileged’ economic interests? Can you see the bottom drop out of the overpriced real estate market, when it suddenly became possible to live anywhere, even in places where there are no roads? Can you see the problems along the borders of countries, if saucers could fly across and back without checking through “customs”? (The conservatives and totalitarians are horrified by this possibility, as if our borders do not already leak like sieves.) The main problems, as you can see, are with the paranoid and criminal fears of power crazy authorities and coercive monopolist industrial interests, who would suddenly lose a lot of the power necessary for them to keep their “jobs” protecting and maintaining the interests of themselves and the coercive elite of whatever kind.

These considerations are the ones which indicate the perpetrators of any “cover-up”. There is much talk on TV programs, radio talk shows, newspapers, books, magazines and videos about a “...coverup of our government doing business with aliens for fifty years”, etc. But if you can see it on prime-time TV every night of the week, the only “cover-up” which can be presumed, is one which is opposite to the one they pretend to be telling you about. Such programs are the cover-up. The volume of these lies is so great that it is almost incredible, considering the fact that they are evidence of our own government covertly acting behind the scenes to lie to us. Whenever government is involved in broadcasting such trashy BIG LIES to every household in America, it is good cause to ask, “What else are they lying to us about?”

This book, along with my prior ones, are dedicated to the objective of bringing this technological secrecy and socio-economic dictatorship to an end. We are being robbed of our future. This 2010 Edition was called for because between the Second Edition of 1998 and the present, more information has come to me, but the original nature of the cover-up has never changed since 1947.

CHAPTER I: THE OCCULT ETHER THEORY AND ELECTRO-MECHANICAL PROPULSION

MECHANICAL PROPULSION

The theory which I espouse in this book is based on what can be corroborated throughout the words and developments of Nikola Tesla and their logically construed implications, in combination with other special information linked to that, as presented here and in my prior book, Space Aliens From the Pentagon (now in its Third Edition as PENTAGON ALIENS). This theory is close to Tesla's Dynamic Theory of Gravity, and I like to think that it even suggests some corrections that Tesla himself made or would have made if we only knew what is concealed in government vaults.

Like most theories, this theory is incomplete, may contain errors, and will require further development, tests, corrections, and revisions, either by myself or by others in the future. I have stated here my basic thinking on the subject up to this time, which has progressed somewhat since my prior books.

Since this book is for the greatly uninformed public, as well as for the researcher, I will make an effort to couch it in laymen's terms —for I am myself a layman—and will provide some illustrations where helpful, to give a reasonable grasp of my concepts based on Tesla's concepts which I have developed as a consequence of what I have also witnessed. I do this rather than engage in a "quantum mechanical" mathematical orgy, which is usually combined with pages of dull equations and numbers which proceed logically from the contradictory and unproven illogical premises which are so prized by that ilk. It is as if to say, "Hey! Look at me Ma, I can do lots of math!"

"Ether Physics" by its very nature and name is subatomic physics, which to me means "sub-protonic" and "sub-electronic". I am not so concerned with sub-atomic nuclear particles per se, but rather with what I believe are the finite building blocks of the proton and electron, which exist within the ether in simpler form. I will leave all the quarks, muons, mesons, leptons, etc. to the "Relativistic Quantum Mechanics" (hence "R.Q.M.s") and their "elegant equations".

Characteristics of Basic Ether Particles

The basic ether particle, on order to respond to the negative electrostatic D.C. Potentials described by Tesla, must have a positive nucleus—a "protette"—and a negative sub-electron—an "electrette", and is surrounded by an insulative fluid as Tesla said. As you may have noticed, this scheme is a scaled-down version of the basic hydrogen atom, with its proton and electron. Like most atoms, it is the basic hydrogen atom, with its proton and electron. Like most atoms, it is normally neutral and in equilibrium, but is much smaller, being ultra-fine. Due to its tiny size and neutrality, it can pass easily through solid bodies which it permeates as it moves, yet the ether as a whole behaves like a solid in respect to rapidly-varying electrostatic potentials of specific frequencies, from the infra-red through the visible light frequencies, which disturb its equilibrium, yet, though we can feel it, it appears to be transparent and invisible to the naked eye.

Like hydrogen gas, there is some elasticity, so it is “elastic” as Tesla said, but is incompressible. Due to the tiny size, so called “empty space” is virtually packed with this very fine matter, which oscillates at such high frequencies—well beyond that of x-rays—yet the tiny size and normal neutrality allows it to penetrate “solid mass”—which is mostly “space” (which is also saturated with ether which must be moved through by a mass). And as J. J. Thomson said, “The ether is the storehouse of mechanical momentum”.

Since interstellar space is equivalent to a vacuum containing little gaseous matter of the conventional type—such as a Lenard tube in which charges easily move—ether-filled interstellar space is permeated by charges moving freely along frozen magnetic lines of force as Hannes Alfvén said.

Ether-packed space is also omni-directionally interpenetrated by ultra-fine radiation, which Tesla called “Primary Solar Rays”, which Tesla said were positive particles propelled by enormous repulsive forces in stars. I think these Primary Solar Rays may constantly “twang” the electron clouds of atomic matter, creating or powering “electron orbits”, which may be in fact standing waves in the undulating layers of particulate electronic clouds surrounding atoms and molecules. Since the matter with which these electron clouds are associated is in constant motion, the clouds are currents, since a “charge carried around is a current”. The driving force behind the currents appears to be the motion and the Primary Solar Rays, also by a conversion of weak forces into strong ones. Any lost momentum is ‘made up’ by the Primary Solar Rays and the conversion of weak to strong forces, the ultimate source of extra force (“free energy”) needed to make up for the losses in the universe. The conversion of weak forces into stronger forces will do more work in the same period of time. The Primary Solar Rays are an example of this process. With the UFO, the gravitational, kinetic force of a turbine propelled by chemical reaction is converted into electrostatic force which is much stronger than gravity. This is free energy.

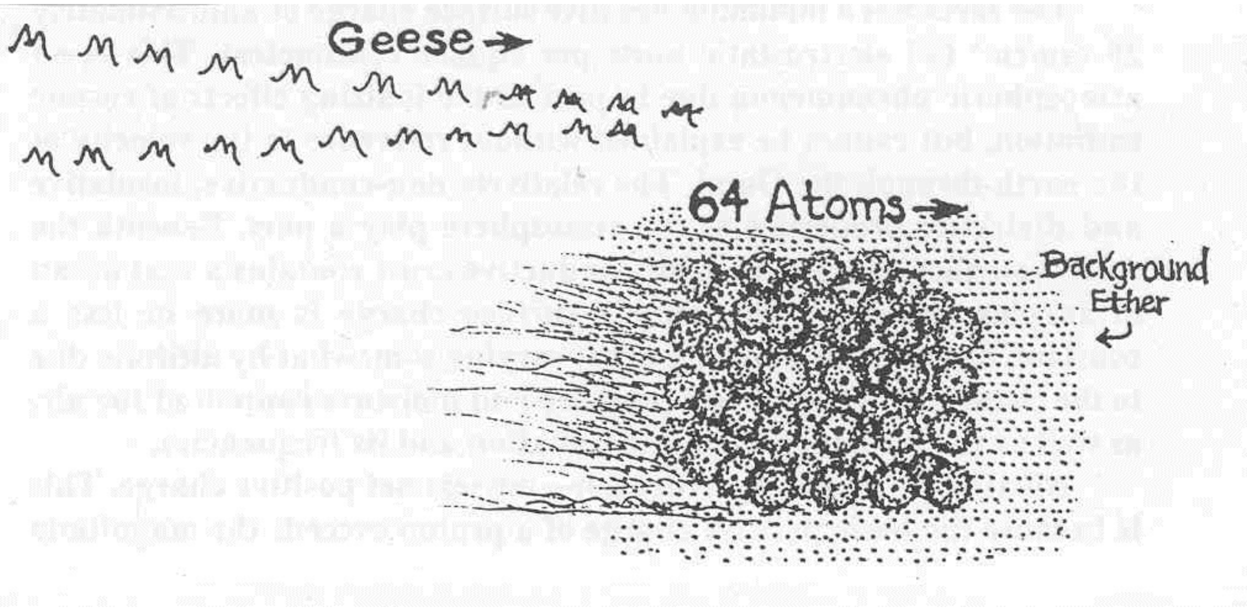
The ether must have an almost balanced charge-to-mass ratio, and respond to both positive and negative electrostatic potentials. Tesla said the positive or negative aspects depended on the conditions. Electrostatic generators provide a good example of the electrical behavior of the ether. At sufficiently high voltages the positive and negative dynamic sub-charges are separated by magnetic fields and condensed as electrons and “holes”. There is some unknown underlying reason why these charges are of specific magnitude, which is yet to be explained, but the quantum theory— originated by ether physicist Max Planck—practically admits that there are subdivisions of basic electrical charges, and that electrons are not “indivisible”. This is one basic bone of contention, since if electrons are divisible, Relativism must fall. I think the “basic charge” which has been perceived as that of the electron, appears to be time-related, since electrical current moves virtually at the same speed as light, therefore my opinion is that the electron charge is probably the quantity of charge accumulated from a discrete number of negative sub-charges carried by ether over some discrete unit of time due to the positive mass units of ether composing a proton. This may in turn reflect the distance traveled through space of a proton during that time, with the charges circulating as a current between the ether and grosser matter.

High voltage force—either in electrostatic impulses or in radiation—is apparently necessary to force the ether to form momentum-carrying tubes of force, as an ‘equal and opposite reaction’. The principle applies to Tesla’s propulsion system, which was a sort of electro-mechanical one. Strong, high voltage, negative charges are necessary to penetrate the insulating fluid surrounding the ether to react with the positive ether mass to cause the “inertia resistance” of the ether to be “asserted” as Tesla said, so as to access its mass—and that of the atmospheric gases locked to it—to be possibly pulled against by the ship. The screwing force of tubes of force which rotate around irrotational vacuous ether cores may be the “positive mechanical action” referred to by Tesla and the “pulling force” involved. Unless the tubes of force are dissolved in the conductors of the ship imparting momentum to it, as J. J. Thomson said (more on this later). The tubules could be the product of the rotation imparted by a magnetic field to electrical currents, which are consolidated to effect changes in momentum.

The rapidly-varying electrostatic forces emanating from the earth rigidify the ether within the earth’s electric field, which may form a virtual stationary anchor which an electro-mechanical craft may possibly lock onto to propel itself through space. Although the ether ‘anchors’ are stationary relative to the earth and carried along by the earth’s electric field, this carry-along ether has a and carried along by the earth's electric field, this carry-along ether has a velocity of many thousands of miles per hour relative to the ether outside the earth's electric field. Just as the so-called “gravity field” diminishes as the square of the distance, the relative movement of the ether decreases outside the earth's electric field.

If gross matter is formed of ether particles, what is the “mortar” which holds them together? Tesla said the ether was particles within an “insulating fluid”. This fluid is apparently what ‘wets’ positive bodies and particles as a ‘perfect fluid’ which flows everywhere. Does it have viscosity and adhesiveness? If it does then forcing the incompressible medium past or through the ship could be the key, sort of like swimming under water.

While the ether is invisible to the eye—because its period of vibration is beyond the visible frequencies—it is not imperceptible. As we move, we can feel the ether accelerating, decelerating, or changing directions within our bodies. When running, we feel the resistance (“inertia”) created within the atoms of our body, as a response to changes in momentum, as the tubes of force are forced in different directions or in accelerating or decelerating pathways through the atoms and molecules of our body. Once we reach a constant velocity, we can feel how the tubes of force ‘bore’ through our mass, delivering the momentum the ether carries, which tends to carry us along in level and straight lines (the paths of least resistance). Once in constant velocity we must supply only whatever momentum is shed through wind or mechanical friction or erratic movement, in order to maintain constant velocity, and we can feel all this. We can also see the effects of the ether in the behavior of everyday objects—the way they resist changes in movement, fall, accelerate, gain momentum, tumble, roll, collide, shatter, bounce, or come to rest. I analogize a solid mass to a flock of geese, maintaining its “formation” (“shape”) as it flies trough the air (ether) as a single unit:



Newton’s laws fail to tell us “why” gravity exists, what forces create it, or why the force varies “directly proportional to the masses, and inversely proportional to the square of the distance between (the centers of the) bodies”. If gravity is a force at a distance, why would a body in outer space be completely free of it? Why would the force of gravity between the earth, for example, and the moon, not affect a body floating in outer space between the two? If that were true, would the force selectively pass through the body without affecting it? This fact negates Newton’s laws. Even Newton explicitly admitted that his laws failed to address causes, and only claimed to mathematically describe “apparent effects”. But what may “appear” to be true may not be all or any of the truth.

“Electrical content” is inherent to all solid matter. Atoms contain nuclei composed of positive protons and neutral neutrons (neutered by the tightly bound electrons within them). Around these nuclei are negative electrons. All matter which contains electrostatic charges and is in motion, represents “electric charges carried around”, hence currents, which create magnetic fields. Since magnetic fields impart rotation to electromagnetic fields, this creates rotatory electromagnetic tubules within the ether within the fields. These tubules rotate around irrotational vacuous cores in space and within solid bodies relative to their motions, and are aligned by the relative motion along the axis of a uniform or changing movement, and impart momentum when dissolved in a body. While at any given time the pitch and diameter of a micro-helix is fixed, it involves a logarithmic spiral or vortex either inward or outward each time the velocity changes, and the pitch resists, then adjusts to the new momentum or direction. But with Tesla’s system this polarity of movement can be changed

But with Tesla's system this polarity of movement can be changed electromagnetically, so that all the internal reactions can be instantly reoriented, thus eliminating such things as centrifugal force and inertia, created by the tendency to remain in a particular state of motion.

According to Tesla, the earth and all electrostatically charged bodies have a maximum negative surface charge of approximately 20 esu/cm2 (20 electrostatic units per square centimeter), an atmospheric phenomenon due in part to the ionizing effects of cosmic radiation and lightening. The relatively non-conductive, insulating and dielectric properties of the atmosphere play a part. Beneath the earth’s surface charge, the semi-conductive crust contains a vast ocean of surplus electrons. The earth’s surface charge is more or less a constant, due to the earth’s surface area, varying somewhat by altitude due to the changes in atmospheric pressure and moisture content of the air, as well as the incidence of cosmic radiation and its frequencies. This charge leaks upward constantly but is maintained by lightening.

The nuclei of all atoms—including hydrogen—possess net positive charge. This is because the basic positive charge of a proton exceeds slightly the magnitude of the basic negative charge of the electron. Hydrogen, with its single proton and single electron, has the highest charge-to-mass ratio and the lowest gravity of all elements. As one moves up Mendeleev’s periodic table of elements, progressively increasing in complexity and mass number above hydrogen, elements possess progressively lower charge-to-mass ratios, since the comparative ratios of electrons match the number of only the protons in the nuclei. Yet since the neutrons are not negative, they add to the positive mass relative to the atom, but contribute nothing to effective electrical charge, and the ratio of neutrons and mass increases up the chart. In relation to the earth, this leaves an excess positive mass, the semi-conductive surface of which is capable of receiving and maintaining a negative charge surplus, mostly brought to earth by the thousands of lightening bolts per second, and retained due to the dielectric and insulating properties of the atmosphere.

The constant electrical discharges from the atmosphere by lightening are driven by the cosmic rays and motion of the earth, which converts the electrostatic charges to currents. This was confirmed by H.A. Rowland’s experiment. Since atmospheric gases are insulators, the mostly alkaline, semi-conductive crust of the earth is largely an electron donor material, which maintains a large reservoir of negative charges insulated by the atmosphere. Cosmic rays striking the rarified light gases of the ionosphere, maintain the ionosphere’s positive charge.

The excess negative charges of the earth are meanwhile ejected constantly by the rapidly-varying electrostatic discharges (the “microwaves”) which Tesla discovered. The effects of gravity also helps, since helium and hydrogen, both light, electropositive gases, gravitate to the ionosphere. Between the ionosphere, ca. 620 miles above, and the earth’s surface, there is a gradient of ca. 150 volts/meter, totaling about 176 million volts, creating a considerable electric field, but the electric field extends far beyond the ionosphere. This electric field creates electrical displacement in the ether within it. The effects of the electric field on the ether is almost instantaneous, since near the speed of light, as the ether passes from “free space” into mass, where the gravitational force is exerted downward, toward the source of the electric field. The relative weakness of the so-called gravitational force however might be due to bodies on earth being pulled upward due to the downward motion of the tubes of force being brought down by the rapidly-varying electrostatic discharges from the earth.

There is no significant gravitational effect of earth’s field above this electric field. Since earth’s magnetic field encompasses the moon, so does the electric field. When the ether is placed within a strong electric field, it is polarized and the negative charges on it are attracted by the positive pole (ionosphere) and repelled by the negative pole (earth). The effect of these attractive/repulsive forces is to “displace” the ether, and to place the dielectric atmosphere and the ether within a strain. Tesla and other ether physicists said this strain was the cause of gravitational effects.

The Cause of the Apparent “Inverse Square” Law of Gravity?

As earth spins, the surface velocity—and the atmospheric velocity with it—at any point varies according to its distance from the earth’s axis. An object sitting at sea level moves slower than a body on top Mt. Everest. The voltage potential between the atmospheric gases at higher altitude and the ionosphere is lower, but the voltage potential between the atmosphere and the surface of Mt. Everest is higher, which, along with lower air pressure explains the increased coronal discharges on mountain tops.

The differences in these electrical potentials illustrates why there are differences in relative displacement of the ether within both earth’s “gravity field” and within bodies moving within that field, with a degree of displacement which is directly proportional to difference in so-called “gravitational force” and the dielectric strain.

This comparison suggests that a body at a higher altitude and velocity has a lower gravity because the electric field has a lower displacing influence on the ether . This is pertinent to electropropulsion because we must diminish, reverse, magnify and otherwise control this displacement in order to instantly synthesize and control inertia, momentum, and “gravity”. This displacement influences the momentum because it affects the vibrating microhelical tubules and the way they “bore” through etheric space. “Gravity” appears to be a product of the resistance to a change in ether displacement. The reason why a moving sphere when charged experiences an increase in its “virtual mass”—that is, an increase in the work required to move it, but not an increase in its gravity—is because the “Faraday cage” effect of the increased charges tends to increase the resistance to the movement of the mass through the ether, apparently effected by the negative surface charges on the sphere.

Tubes of Force

Due to the cosmic motion of earth, electrostatic, molecular charges become currents, which create magnetic fields within atoms, molecules, and sometimes ponderable bodies such as iron. As stated before, as earth moves through the ether, rapidly-varying electrostatic impulses from the earth rigidify the ether within earth’s electric field, causing the ether within the field to be carried along.

The tubes—what Tesla called “moving molecules”—may function like drills, tending to bore straight paths at a constant pitch and linear velocity, around irrotational vacuous cores (consistent with Newton’s laws for inertia and momentum). Any change in direction or velocity would apparently be met by a resistance (“inertia”). Since all mass is already in motion, it always has momentum, acquired from the ether. The inertia exhibited by a body at rest relative to earth is apparently a product of its momentum, so this inertia is really momentum. Inertia is therefore a resistance of a body to change in its state of momentum. The two words are used in different ways, to define “relative changes” in velocity and/or orientation, but no body is “at rest”.

Since the ether near the spinning earth is subjected to the negative impulses (the “current”) and the positive mass of the earth, the ether forms tubes of force which are attracted downward. With the theory of the moving tubes of force a mass acquires momentum from the tubes entering it. Under this reasoning, a body sitting at relative rest on the surface of the earth would be attracted upwards. So what attracts the body downward? Could it be that the momentum through space that the body already has is somehow being re-directed downward through space that the body already has is somehow being re-directed downward by the earth’s electric field? Could the momentum from the tubes of force which carry the body through space along with the earth be partially deflected downward by vertical tubes of force? If gravity is the product of a body’s reaction to the ether’s resistance to a change in its momentum, transferred to a mass due to its constantly changing movement, orientation and velocity as it moves through universal ether-filled space, gravity could be explained. The explanation provided by Sir William Thomson and Nikola Tesla are given later in this book.

More on Tesla’s Primary Solar Rays

According to Tesla, in addition to the ether all space is omnidirectionally interpenetrated by ubiquitous “Primary Solar Rays”, particles repelled by positive forces, causing extremely high velocity and energy. This is electrostatic inductance, using repulsive rather than attractive forces. These rays are the product of particles which are projected by the enormous voltages of stars, including our sun. They may be similar to what contemporary physicists have called Zero Point Radiation (“ZPR”). One scientist has attributed so-called “blackbody radiation” to the ZPR (T.H. Boyer, Derivation of Blackbody Radiation Spectrum Without Quantum Assumptions, Phys. Rev. 182 [5], pp. 1374-83 [1969]). Boyer also found that a nonlinear dipole can absorb energy from particular modes of the ZPR spectrum (Random Electrodynamics: The theory of classical electrodynamics with classical electromagnetic zero-point radiation, Phys. Rev. D 11 [4], pp. 790-808 [1975]). Another scientist claimed to measure the energy density of ZPR at 1094 grams/cm3 , for individual fluctuations of random ZPR, on the scale of the Planck length (10-33 cm.), by means of a standard radiation detector, the frequency response of which was specially altered to extend into the super high frequency spectrum involved (J. A. Wheeler, Geometrodynamics, Academic Press, N.Y. [1962]). In my final chapter, I detail what I think is the extraction of Primary Solar Ray energy in the atomic hydrogen process.

These particular researches of 1962 to 1975 are ex post facto, coming long after Tesla’s great discoveries. They merely confirm that, in order for such intense radiation to pass through space packed with an even finer ether, probably consisting of ultra-fine bundles of positive mass, surrounded by negative charges and an “insulating medium”, as well as passing through other planets and the earth, it would require the enormous force that Tesla described which is generated in stars like our sun, propelling tiny particles which do not react with the ether in space, and only react with certain materials which we call “radioactive materials”. This reminds me of the multifrequency response of interlinked tetrahedronal silicon dioxide crystals which make up solid quartz crystals, which can be cut to respond to a wide variety of frequencies.

If the Primary Solar Rays pass through space and mass—which we know is mostly “space”—and they react with so-called “radioactive materials” as Tesla said, what is it about the structures of radioactive materials which causes them to capture the energy of the Primary Solar Rays and to emit radiation? And if so, wouldn’t the development of technology to convert the force of these particles to usable energy be an excellent way to supply all our energy needs?

I have previously mentioned a technology which can use radioactive emissions to ionize air and to separate high-energy alpha and beta particles with a magnetic field to produce a huge output of electrical energy.[1]

In reiteration, Tesla’s propulsion utilizes externally projected electrostatic impulses of high voltage and frequency to “rigidify” and cause the ether to assert its “inertia resistance”, combined with (polarized) rotatory electromagnetic tubes of force, which instantaneously impart momentum to propel a spacecraft.

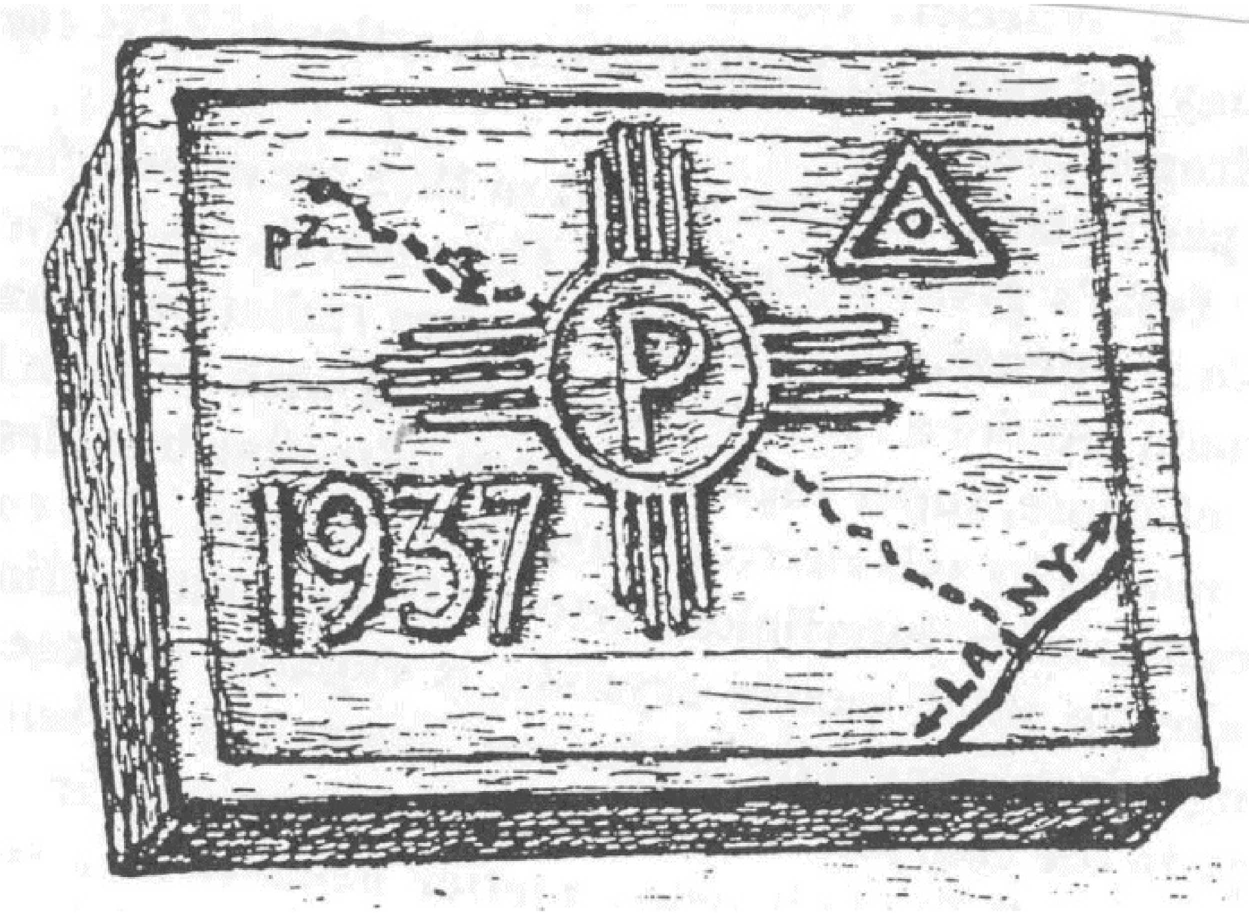
An Old Wooden Box and a German Inertial Guidance System

In 1979, at a Santa Fe flea market, I examined an old wooden box belonging to an elderly Pojoaque man who had been employed as a workman in 1937 at a secret project called “p2" at nearby Los Alamos, which was run by Nikola Tesla and Wernher von Braun. The man had built the box to carry tools used in his job there. He had carved in “New Mexico folk style” a “map” on the lid of the box showing the highways, the location and name of the project, the symbol for the project (a triangle with a dot in its center) which was apparently a symbol for the Prussian/Masonic “Illuminati” of which von Braun was a member, and the date of the project. This information was corroborated by my friend Peter van Dresser who confirmed that von Braun was involved in a German research project at Los Alamos at that time. Pojoaque, where the old man lived, is prominently shown as a large “P” with a zia sign around it. The zia sign is an ancient symbol used by the Zia American Indian tribe to denote the sun, which they worshiped:

---

[1] 1. *PHYSICAL CHEMISTRY*, E. A. Moelwyn-Hughes, Pergamon Press, Oxford, 1965. Page 224: “Rutherford and Geiger found the number of α-particles ejected per second from 1 g of radium was 3.4 x 10^{10} (k=1.26 x 10^{41} sec.^{4} , later determined by Madam Curie at 1·38 x 10^{-11})”. Each particle carries two

units of positive electricity. This will produce 34 zillion α-particles per second, at 4.5 Mev. The number of charges per second, yields a hugh amperage which, when stepped down to normal 120 VAC, is staggering. Page 230: “1 atom of radium expels one αparticle producing 1.5 billion ions, at 4.5 Mev”. Page 231: “One α-particle has more than sufficient kinetic energy to bring about all the ionizations which stand to its credit”, and is “...quantitatively sound”.



When von Braun arrived from Germany he was accompanied by 16 top Nazi scientists. Dr. Robert Goddard, who shared American Rocket Society technology with von Braun, purportedly left the project and returned to his workshop at Mescalero when he realized that von Braun’s interest was in Nazi military applications. Von Braun was able to acquire the new rocket engine design from the Rocket Society’s publication, ***Astronautics*** , which he acquired from Dr. Robert Goddard.

(NOTE: There has been no publically-available information whatsoever on this project and those at Los Alamos who later conducted the Manhattan Project apparently had no idea as to what the old barn used by Tesla and von Braun in the “p2 Projekt” was for, or that it had an historical significance, until my first book was published in 1993. The barn had been rented from Spanish Land Grant heirs by the p2 Project about 1934. Around 1979, LASL, not knowing what it was used for, had cleaned out the contents of the old barn, removed all the copper wire used on the coil forms, and sold the contents to salvage dealers. It was obvious that the old wooden forms, which were mostly rough sawn planks connected together with dowels, were Tesla coil forms. I purchased two bases used for tuning coils, which had the coils removed from them. Handwriting in pencil on the forms matches that of Nikola Tesla. After reading my book, Los Alamos National Laboratory personnel went to one of the nearby salvage dealers and retrieved the contents which he had purchased. He apparently had taken everything except the forms which I had purchased because nobody else was interested in them, or had large enough trucks to carry them away. The old barn with all its recovered contents (except my two bases) is now preserved under lock and key for historical purposes.)

The weekend in 1979 following my viewing of the old wooden box at the Santa Fe Flea Market, I went to an Albuquerque salvage company, “King’s Surplus City”, on east Central Avenue, where I often bought military surplus things related to my research and inventing, and was pleased to find a very unusual pile of material stacked in a separate little pile. On top the pile was a device which I immediately recognized as a type of navigational “compass” which would be required on the early flying saucers I had witnessed during my back yard sleep-outs in Kermit, Texas, between 1949-53, which turned in increments or multiples of thirty degrees. The device showed thirty-degree increments, and had fourteen contacts—twelve for each of the directions, and two for the six-volt motor which rotated the compass ring to indicate the correct flight heading. The label showed it was manufactured on Oct. 1, 1943, in lot 127-178 (52 devices), for a project named “KT-p2". (I interpret this as “Kurskreisel-Tochterkompass - p2" which in English would mean “Navigational-Gyro Slave-Compass - p2". The device was called a “Peiltochterkompass” (a “polar slave compass”), which was controlled by signals from a “Meisterkurskreisel” (a “master navigational gyro”), which means that the device was half of an inertial guidance system, which requires a master gyro for its completion. The navigational master gyro, mounted on gimbals, was pointed at the Pole Star—either Polaris or Arcturus—and maintained the true north heading no matter where on earth the ship flew. Contacts on the gyro sent signals to the twelve contacts on the slave compass to tell it which of the twelve 30°-increments the ship was following. When the ship changed directions, a small D.C. electric motor came on and rotated the flight heading ring to the correct direction in relation to the Master Gyro.

Development of the systems was imperative for the flying saucer, since a magnetic compass would be worthless due to the “Faraday cage” effect of the electric field surrounding the saucer, which would block out the magnetic field of the earth. The master gyro was calibrated to the Pole Star prior to takeoff, and would continue to hold that position during flight, so that the “slave” (“-tochter” or “daughter”) would have that as a reference, in order to actuate the six-volt motor and turn the geared compass heading ring to reflect the correct direction of flight, in 30-degree increments. This particular type of Peiltochterkompass was used on a circular ship which could turn peripherally—in 360 degrees, frontwards, sideways, backwards, etc., in increments or multiples of 30 degrees —while other devices were used on some of the latest types of German “V” (for “Vergehtungswaffen” or “Revenge-Weapons”) rockets, which carried neutron bomb warheads, and were fired from underwater from special small Lafferenz Project submarines which were towed behind the latest “Electro-U-Boats” used in the final “Stalemate” which I detailed in the third edition of ***Space Aliens From the Pentagon*** (***Pentagon Aliens***). This submarine missile delivery system had been tested (prior to the ***Stalemate***) in the Baltic by Dr. Ernst Steinhoff, who died in Alamogordo, New Mexico in the 1990s.

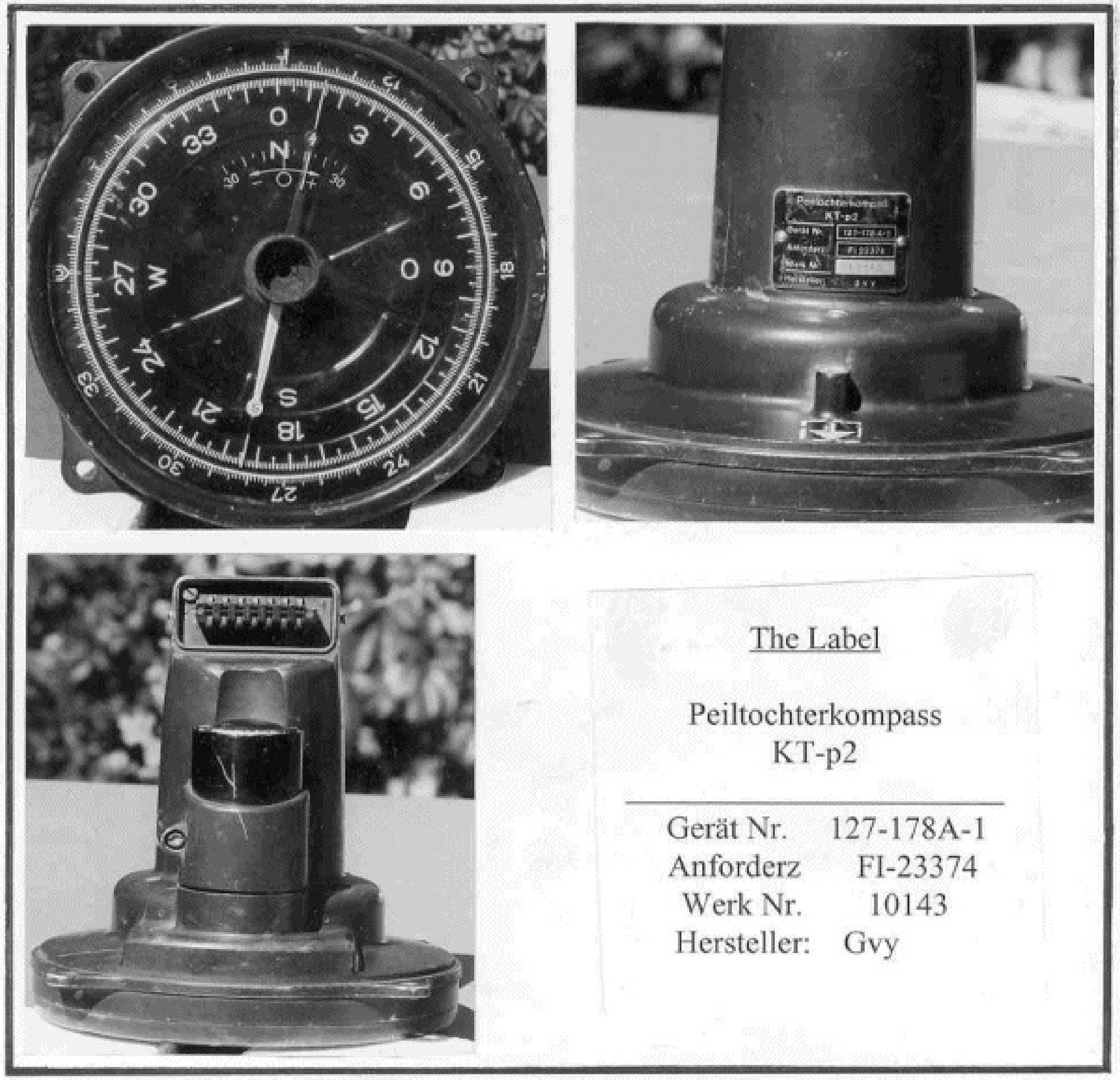
This type of (now) relatively primitive navigation system was one which I knew had to have existed at the time of my 1946-47 night time sightings, in which the squadrons of high altitude flights from New Mexico turned in increments of 30 degrees. Similar systems were used in American military aircraft during WW II, but those systems were not designed to facilitate instantaneous sharp turns in 30-degree increments in the 360-degree range. Those devices were also not designed to be mounted horizontally as this one was, but were mounted on the vertical faces of instrument panels.

Tesla's ships were all of what I call the “linear” type, long and narrow. The Germans apparently contributed the circular or “saucer”-type ships, unless Tesla's designs which are presently concealed by government secrecy contain that type.

During my graduate school years in the department of art at the University of Texas, 1965-70, I often drew hypothetical diagrams of such a navigational compass.

Several years after I had published photographs of the KT-p2, there were web pages placed on the Internet by a German source--apparently our own CIA---- which attempted to fabricate a different use for the devices, in order to which attempted to fabricate a different use for the devices, in order to counteract what I have said about it and to debunk me. The fatal error of this misinformation is the obvious omission of a “master” gyro which signaled the “slave” compass the true north heading by which it could navigate. Without the master compass the device would not only not be a slave compass, it would be inoperable. That omission shows the misinformation to be what it is, lies. Perhaps the agents who created the misinformation were not given access to those complete secrets because of “compartmentalization”. It is however a fact that the devices, combined with other devices, were also adapted to other uses, such as the following into England of the VOR beams projected over England by the Allies to carry out night bombings over Germany.

The following photographs are of the 1943-vintage Nazi Kurskreisel-Tochterkompass—also labeled a ***Peiltochterkompass*** — which came from classified salvage at Sandia Base in Albuquerque:



The Label

Peiltochterkompass
KT-p2

Gerät Nr.	127-178A-1
Anforderz	FI-23374
Werk Nr.	10143
Hersteller:	Gvy

The letters “p2", which designated the 1936-38 project (two years when von Braun was in New Mexico before WW II) run by Tesla and von Braun, were incorporated into the official secret namedesignation for the Nazi flying saucer project in 1943 Germany and displayed on the navigational Peiltochterkompass. “p2" is apparently a combination of rapidly-varying electrostatic potentials which initiate the propulsion of the ship and high-frequency currents which are used to aid in this according to Tesla theory. More on this later.

As explicitly detailed in Space Aliens From the Pentagon (repeated in Pentagon Aliens), in 1957, as an Air Force member of the 26th Strategic Reconnaissance Wing, SAC, Lockborne AFB, Ohio, with a Top Secret Clearance, I saw the original 16 mm reels of intelligence film made during WW II by my 8th Air Force Intelligence group in 1943, during the night-time bombing raids of the industrial center at Schweinfürth, Germany. That film was made by members of my same group during WW II, and the original film was in our film library. The B-17 bombers were “buzzed” by small, one-man type Tesla flying machines, which flew at very high speeds around the bombers, apparently in order to draw the fire of the gunners and interfere with their missions. This was a tactic apparently designed to distract the gunners so the “Komets”— Messerschmitt rocket planes—could get in close to use their 30 mm cannons on the bombers.

In the spring of 1945, as Russia closed in on Berlin, General George Patton took a special armored group deep into territory encircled by the Russians to the Nazi rocket research center at Peenemünde, on the Baltic. Attached to this group, disguised as “tank commanders”, were Army intelligence officers specially tasked to retrieve all flying saucer materials and/or destroy the same at that project, along with retrieval of any technical drawings, etc., of strategic importance, before the area could be captured by Russian troops. On discovering 200 celestial guidance systems deep underground in a salt cave, General Patton was infuriated on being ordered to destroy the systems by his superiors, saying he could successfully get them back behind Allied lines, and being unaware of the fact that the technical drawings and specifications for the systems, as well as functional Nazi flying saucers were already in American possession. The documentation which I found of this trip to Peenemünde by Patton and his group has been removed from all war histories. The “fix” to hide the saucers was already on in 1945. And who are the authors of this fix?

Subsequent to my purchase of the Peiltochterkompass, security agents learned of my possession of it and knowledge of what it was, so they went to Mark King, son of the owner of King’s Surplus City, and grilled him. He showed them a bill of sale from Sandia Base, pursuant to his purchase of the small pile of salvage from a Sandia Base employee who usually brought salvage from that base to sell to him. As it turned out, the man, who was under secrecy orders as an employee of that base, had stolen a pile of classified salvage and sold it for his own profit, using a “double-receipt” process intended to cover his tracks, but the security people at Sandia put the man under surveillance, caught him doing it again, and charged, convicted and jailed him.

They could not get the device back from me, because I was an “innocent purchaser”, and because it would confirm the stillclassified purpose of the device, in violation of security orders.

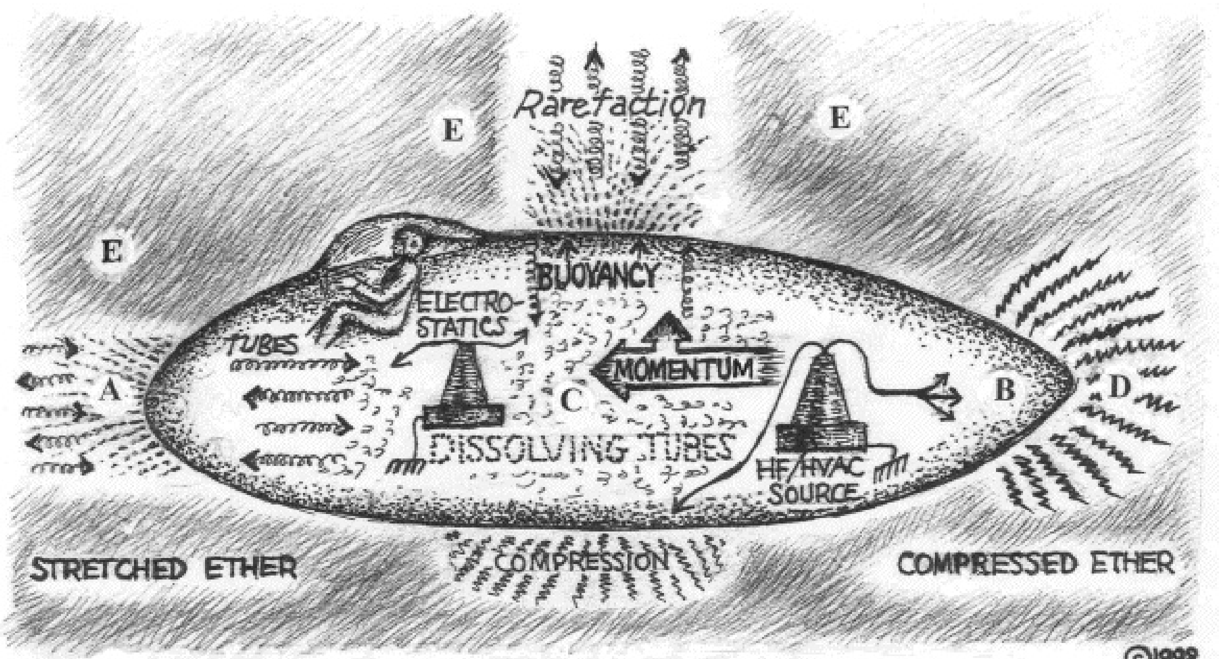
I had purchased an inertial guidance system from a 1943 Nazi flying saucer

I had purchased an inertial guidance system from a 1945 Nazi flying saucer, which was subsequently brought to Sandia Base in 1945 under Operation paperclip, along with over 116 scientists and over 15,000 German military and technical personnel, brought to New Mexico as part of a secret ‘deal’, made prior to Operation Paperclip pursuant to a Stalemate, during which 24 German Electro-U-Boats, towing Lafferenz subs carrying rockets with neutron bomb warheads, in attacks concentrated on New York City. The first six of these boats in the first attack were bombed and destroyed. The remaining 18 in a second attack managed to coerce a secret conditional surrender for the German Third Reich.

This secret surrender was negotiated between President Truman and Admiral Karl Döenitz by radio telephone conducted through an intelligence Electro-U-Boat which was located off the coast of New Jersey and was revealed to be sunk there in a TV program (Nova or History Channel) in the late 1990s. Pursuant to that secret surrender, a provision was that the captains of the remaining 18 U-Boats went to the bottom with all hands on board. Consistent to this scenario evidence in that sub was that the captain had ordered an explosive charge detonated in the conning tower taking the sub to Davy Jones’ Locker, presumably while the crew sang “Deutschland Über Alles”. An underwater view of the conning tower showed that the explosive charge had been placed inside the conning tower as the surface was blown outward from it.

As to the question of what “p2” meant scientifically, a similar designation was used by Tesla to denote “potentials”. I think it refers to the use of rapidly-varying electrostatic potentials in one direction to draw in the tubes of force to impart momentum to the ship and high frequency A.C. in the opposite direction to block the ether and stop the tubes from moving completely through the ship.

The drawing below is derived from information contained in Tesla’s 1890s lectures and excerpted later in the part of this book regarding Tesla’s “Dynamic Theory of Gravity”, insofar as I am able to reconstruct it, since the actual theory was unpublished by Tesla.



ELECTROSTATIC PROPULSION - p2:

A - Steady D.C. "Brush" Discharge (negative) - continuous exchange of Tubes of Force - ether rarified ("stretched")
B - High Frequency A.C. Potential - ether compressed - tubes blocked
C - Trapped Tubes of Force dissolved - momentum imparted at 2 x 10^{39} x fg
D - Compressed Carriers - blocked tubes (positive A.C. corona)
E - Random Tubes of Force in free space

©1998
wLe
Revised
2012

For horizontal motion or buoyancy, there must be, attached to the Tesla coil, emitter plates which create the sound waves in the ether with rapidly-varying electrostatic potentials. The frequency must not be as high as the microwave range, as the waves would not penetrate the shell. I see no reason why it is not possible for these emitter plates to be placed inside the outer shell of the ship, shooting the waves through the shell to the outside. These plates must have thick layers of high dielectric---such as barium titanate---on their backsides, so the waves are emitted only on one side in the direction desired. When a plate is flat, the waves are parallel; when convex, fan-shaped; and when concave, focused (such as for tractor-beams, to pull smaller objects to the ship).

A variable-concavity plate could focus on objects at various distances from the ship, as desired. This would be a mechanical problem.

This seems to explain some of the puzzling maneuvers of the ships observed by many. Meanwhile, a lower, rapidly-varying electrostatic potential may be placed on the entire ship's surface to "lubricate" it as it moves through the atmosphere without friction or sonic boom, while the directional waves are shot through this.

This hypothesis appears to agree with what has been observed.

This technology has been highly developed for over seventy years since the early days at Los Alamos, years before the Manhatten Project came onto the scene.

I could only assemble parts of Tesla's technology like pieces of a jigsaw puzzle, from smaller statements he made at various times regarding it. As you can see in this drawing, based on Tesla’s statements, there is some conflict between an ether which is supposedly “incompressible” versus the fact that Tesla sometime referred to “compression” of the ether by high frequency alternating current emissions in the atmosphere. I think he meant by this that the space between ether particles was eliminated. As you will see in the drawing, both the negative electrostatic ‘brush’ electrode and the A.C. ‘compression’ electrode would direct the ether carriers in the tubes of force through the mass of the ship from the negative electrode, and cause them to be dissolved in the conductors of the ship, imparting momentum to the ship, similar to what J. J. Thomson said. The electrode on the left would create a “veritable rope of air” so that, when paired with the opposite A.C. electrode on the right, would accelerate the ether carriers through the mass of the ship, dissolving them and propelling the ship. Tesla described this as a “pulling” action (not a “repulsive” action).

Many of Tesla’s tests and experiments in Colorado were related to his propulsion system. A rapidly-varying electrostatic (D.C.) potential, according to Tesla, at one end of the ship creates sound waves in the ether which somehow draw in the momentum-carrying tubes of force. Meanwhile, a high frequency at the opposite end of the ship creates a positive potential according to Tesla, which causes the tubes of force at that end to be blocked, so that the tubes of force at the opposite end are accelerated into the mass of the ship and its contents, to be dissolved in the conductors to impart momentum to the ship. While the ship may be accelerated or turned so fast that a normal person inside might be crushed, the technology must operate in such a way that every atom of the ship is accelerated with the same force, in the same direction, at the same time, so that no excessive force is experienced by a passenger. There was research in Germany during the war which discovered that a pilot in the prone position could withstand six times the G-forces as a pilot in the normal sitting position, but this could not explain the hairpin turns of the ship I witnessed in 1953.

Low and High Frequency Electrostatic Potentials And Tesla’s Wireless Transmission of Energy

Low frequency radio waves can pass through solid bodies, and tend to “hug the earth”, while high frequency waves don’t readily penetrate solid bodies, causing a “skin effect” on them, and don’t “hug the earth”, but tend rather to travel outward away from the earth in straight lines. In his Colorado Springs Experiments, Tesla was the first person to investigate high voltage waves of high and low frequency, and their terrestrial, atmospheric and solid-body effects. But remember, Tesla was working with a completely new type of wave, not electromagnetic ones but longitudinal pressure (sound) waves in the ether. The results of these experiments were so farreaching, that whatever was said in current science journals about them had little effect, because they left other scientists so dumbfounded that they were paralyzed by mis-comprehension. This is not taught in electrical engineering schools.

It has been said that the basic difference between Heinrich Hertz’ 'transverse' waves and Tesla’s longitudinal waves is that Tesla’s waves were actually electrostatic mechanical compression waves in the ether. Tesla actually said that what Hertz was observing was the same electrostatically-induced longitudinal pressure waves. In 1934, Tesla stated (Possibilities of Electrostatic Generators, Scientific American), speaking of the electrode on his wireless tower erected on Long Island in 1902, “It was to be charged to 30,000,000 volts by a simple device for supplying static electricity and power.” Examination of the patent (#1,119,732, filed Jan. 18, 1902) shows “coil B” is a Tesla coil tuned to one-quarter wavelength, which produces rapidly-varying (D.C.) electrostatic potentials, resulting in sound waves in the ether, not electromagnetic waves.

High frequency longitudinal waves also make it possible to project forceful mechanical waves to a specific, distant point. Tesla also developed a method with his special aluminum hemispherical bulb for sending waves or 'heavy currents' along a special “carrier beam” of U.V. or similar high frequency radiation which we don’t know the exact nature of.

Powerful pressure (mechanical) long waves, carried directionally to a distant point, can in turn carry additional higher frequency waves superimposed on it, to deliver the high frequency exciting energy at the powerful long-wave peaks. These “sound waves” are apparently converted back into electrical energy by an appropriate Tesla receiver (or maybe just a conductor) at the target zone. This appears to have been the basis for Tesla’s “Transmission of Electrical Energy Without Wires” invention, as well as his “energy beam” and “death ray” inventions, as the same system can be used for all three. The manipulation of these wave characteristics is inextricably involved in Tesla’s propulsion. These

these wave characteristics is inextricably involved in Tesla's propulsion. These inventions were undoubtedly stimulated by Tesla's study of 19th century "ether physicists", and his own brilliant intuitions when discovering the rotating magnetic field in Budapest, Hungary in 1882. This rotating magnetic field discovery was involved in his "brushless" electric motor because Tesla applied the rotatory force of magnetic fields related to the naturally occurring phenomenon spoken of by Faraday, Maxwell, both Thomsons, and several others known to Tesla, to his A.C. electric motor inventions.

The tubes of force had been discussed in 1881 in England by Thomson, who had no technology which could be used to apply the tubes to the propulsion of a ship, if that was what he had in mind, and never seemed to mention them in this respect until after Tesla had begun to move toward applying the discoveries to his intended "ideal flying machine" in experiments prior to his 1891 lecture at Columbia College in New York. But Tesla was influenced after he was apparently inspired by the writings of William Thomson and J. J. Thomson.

I think that Tesla discovered that by using a low frequency mechanical waves, he could cause, at the quarter wavelength, the eruption of a large pulse which could, by carrying a much higher exciting wave, excite the atmospheric gases in a region, to explosively expand them, followed by a tremendous implosion and the absorption of a great amount or heat in the area, causing immediate freezing. This process would create an initial explosive shock wave followed by the implosive return wave, similar to nuclear detonation. For example, by using a low frequency of say 50 cps, with a wavelength of 3,100 miles, a pulse could be made to erupt at onequarter wavelength—775 miles, corrected to 751 miles by velocity factor. By superimposing an exciting frequency of say 50 megahertz or so, the atmospheric gases could be excited to cause a "cold implosion" which absorbs heat. By altering the wavelength and the direction of propagation, the results could be delivered to any terrestrial point. At least that is my interpretation.

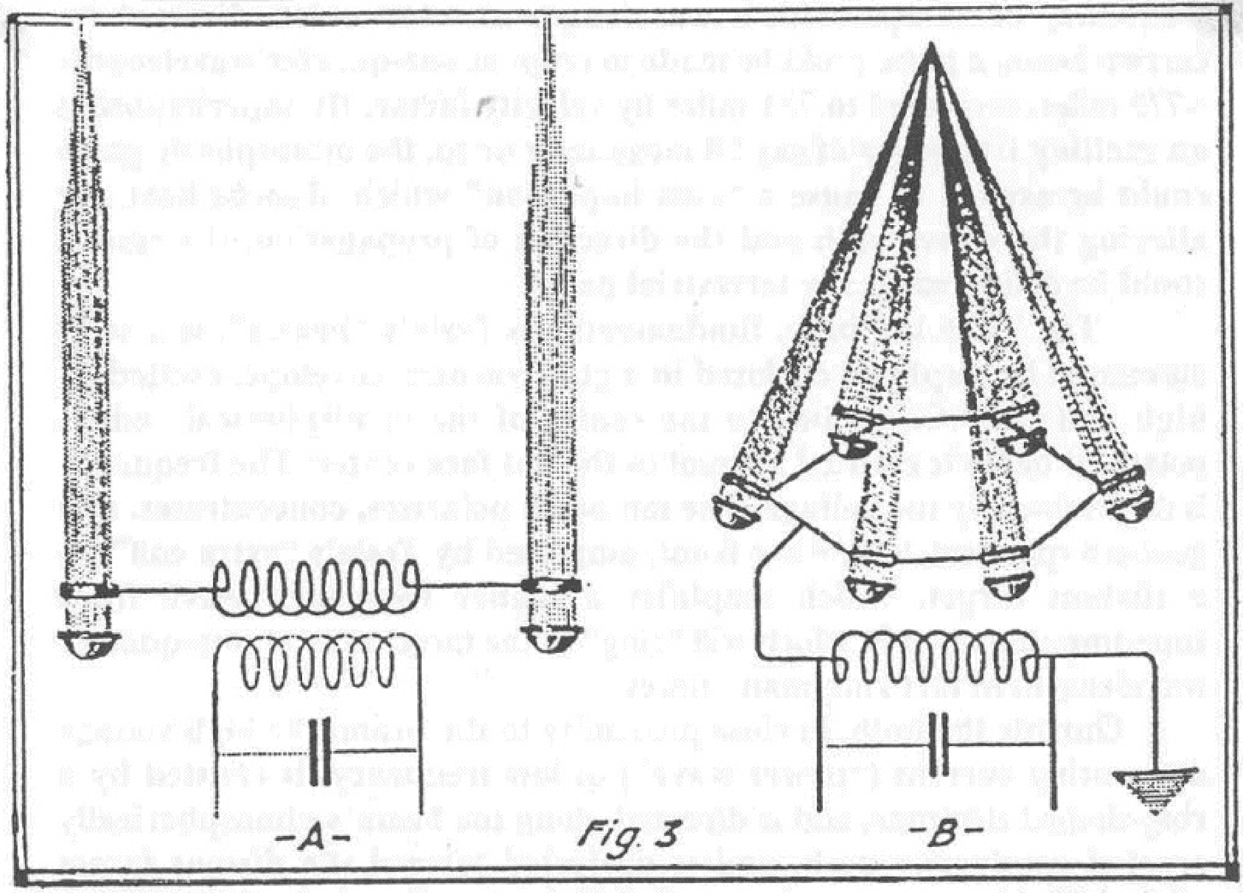
The Tesla ionizing bulb, fundamental to some of Tesla's "beams", is a solid aluminum hemisphere, enclosed in a glass vacuum envelope, excited by high voltage D.C., applied to the center of the hemispherical end. A polarized beam is emitted normal to the flat face center. The frequency and force is determined by the voltage. The ion beam polarizes, concentrates, and guides a long wave amplified by Tesla's "extra coil", to a distant target. This amplified higher frequency wave superimposed upon it will "ring" in the target area at one-quarter wavelength, in fact ring many times.

Outside the bulb, in close proximity to the beam, the rapidlyvarying high voltage electrostatic impulses create the pressure waves which are emitted by a ring-shaped electrode, and is directed along the beam's atmospherically created conductive path, projected toward the distant target where the wave peak delivers it at its "point" of greatest potential.

The June 30, 1908 Siberian explosion/implosion at Tungushka may have been a risky test or inadvertent result of Tesla's giant Wardenclyffe oscillator, and may have been an undisclosed reason as to why the project was discontinued, and eventually the tower was torn down in 1917. It should also be pointed out that this method involved the absorption of heat energy "from the environment". This was yet another great heat energy-harvesting discovery. Tesla's method "opened up" the atmosphere to this possibility, consistent with what he said about nuclear energy coming from "the environment". And maybe that is what Leland Anderson was referring to when he delivered Tesla's eulogy at his 1943 funeral, praising Tesla's ability to "...pluck heat units out of the thin air."

The Tungushka event may have also been the impetus for a "very tempting offer" made to Tesla by V.I. Lenin, mentioned in retrospect in a November 29, 1934 letter from Tesla to J. P. Morgan, Jr., (microfilm, Library of Congress). The Lenin offer would have to have been between 1917 and 1934, and was mentioned unsuccessfully by Tesla in attempt to tantalize Morgan.

The following illustration was not a Tesla one as thought by some, but turned out to be the idea of what another inventor apparently thought was Tesla's idea, which he himself was trying to cash in on, since Tesla never revealed it in detail. Tesla had something better, a particle beam which was finer in cross section than a hair, of tremendous power. The government has never revealed the details of Tesla's so-called "Death Ray" invention, but it is hinted at by Tesla's announcement of Sept. 22, 1940 in the New York Times, in an article by William L. Laurence, of Tesla's ***Teleforce*** discoveries. It should be noticed that the waves here are focused.



This illustration, from a July 11, 1934 *New York Times* article, shows several of the special solid aluminum Tesla bulbs which, as Tesla stated in 1940 (see page 27), no longer required vacuum. The current is placed on the beams by means of the ring-shaped electrodes near each bulb, fed with currents from the coils.

Tesla’s TELEFORCE Discoveries

Tesla’s Teleforce discoveries, evolved between 1900 and 1940, supposedly came in four parts, consisting of a “new” way to produce rays in free air without a vacuum, a “new” way to create a “very great electrical force”, a “new” way of “magnifying” the force, and a “new” means of space propulsion[2] . At least that was what was said in books. When I consulted the actual article, I found quite a difference. What Tesla called “His Greatest Achievement”, was “an apparatus by which mechanical energy can be transmitted to any part of the terrestrial globe” and which had four practical possibilities (aside from the energy transmission part), among which were a means of unfailing communication, a means for scientists to lay bare the physical conditions of the earth, and enabling them to determine all the earth’s physical constants. He called this “tele-geodynamics”, the determination of earth forces at a distance. He had an apparatus

2 [2]. William L. Laurence, *New York Times* , Sept. 22, 1940, 11, p. 7.

which he said was “ideally simple” consisting of a stationary part and a cylinder of fine steel “floating” in air. By impressing powerful impulses on the floating part, he said, it could be caused to react with the stationary part which then would transmit mechanical energy through (the ether in) the earth. This involved a “new amplifier for a known type of energy” which could produce the impulses through the earth so they can be picked up whenever and wherever needed.

I have discovered that the “stationary part” is his “Coil For Electromagnets” (Patent #512340, filed July 7, 1893) which was his bifilar coil which stores 250,000 times the energy of a ordinarily wound coil of the same size and number of turns. It is this coil which stores so much energy that it causes the steel cylinder to “float”. The “known type of energy” was of course the magnetic field. Just exactly how he subjected the steel cylinder to powerful impulses is another of Tesla’s discoveries, which was at least 35 years old at that time. It was probably his single terminal (“pancake”) coil. He said it “will be considered absolutely impossible by any competent electrical engineer”, a “new method and apparatus for producing direct current without a commutator”, considered impossible since the days of Faraday. These “new” discoveries—all of which could work together—were actually a juxtaposition of and different application of Tesla’s devices already tested separately in Colorado Springs experiments or later in New York or Wardenclyffe, with the exception that by 1912, he had tested a missile powered by wirelessly projected “mechanical” energy, and he had also tested a small, oneman flying machine prototype in which he apparently ventured out his hotel window at night over New York City in experimental tests flights, which served as an experimental basis for a much larger and more ambitious set of space ships which he had designed, which were repeatedly rejected by the U.S. government, probably because they thought he was nuts. In one interpretation, Tesla’s teleforce discovery was apparently a “tractor beam” technology which could reach out and lock onto many tons of air molecules—or onto the incompressible ether—by which means the “very great electrical force” could be used to pull against to propel the ship up or forward or backward without air or inertial resistance.

Tesla said of his flying machine in 1911[3] , in pertinent part, “Its lifting power will not depend upon any such delicate devices as the bird has to employ, but upon positive mechanical action.” By “positive mechanical action”, Tesla was referring to his “sound waves in the ether” which travel at the speed of light, which are mechanical in nature. Tesla had stated that his training was in mechanical engineering, and that he was primarily a mechanical engineer. In a 1929 article in the New York Herald Tribune[4] , Tesla stated ***"I satisfied myself that what he (Heinrich Hertz) had observed was nothing else but effects of longitudinal waves in a gaseous medium, that is to say, waves, propagated by alternate compression and expansion. He had observed waves in the ether much of the nature of sound waves in the air." And, "The velocity of any sound wave depends on a certain ratio between elasticity and density, and for this ether or universal gas the ratio is 800,000,000,000 times greater than for air. This means that the velocity of the sound waves propagated through the ether is about 300,000 times greater than that of the sound waves in air, which travel at approximately 1,085 feet a second. Consequently the speed in ether is 900,000 x 1,085 feet, or 186,000 miles, and that is the speed of light."***

Even the Nazis were skeptical that the Tesla propulsion technology might work, being unconvinced until Wernher von Braun had actually tested the concepts at Los Alamos in 1936 and 1937, and obtained the final approval of Hitler. The large conical coil form, constructed of rough-sawn pine boards held together with dowels and shellacked, which I saw there from the old barn was about ten feet from top to bottom, a couple of feet across at the top, and about ten feet across at its base. I could see where heavy wire—then removed—had been wound on the boards from which the form was constructed. Almost immediately after von Braun's return to Germany in late 1937 in time for Christmas, construction was begun on large "cigar-shaped" ships (similar to those shown in the illustrations Tesla commissioned in 1914), using at first the iron pressure hulls of U-Boats, which were already equipped with a hermetically sealable system carrying diesel generators for use in the water or the atmosphere, and possibly the helium-based "nuclear" generators which I had heard about in 1947. With the huge difference between the weak interaction of gravity and the much stronger interaction of the electrical attractive force, "Weight is no object" Tesla said.

Since Tesla had actually received offers from Russia prior to that time, I had considered the probability that he had cooperated with von Braun in the Los Alamos experiments, through some of the unidentified three laboratories he said he was working with in 1937. But I already had the information that von Braun

---

3 [3.] *Tesla's New Monarch of Machines, Oct. 15, 1911*

4 [4.] *Nikola Tesla Tells of New Radio Theories* , New York Herald Tribune, Sept. 22, 1929

had been involved in a 1930s Los Alamos project from my friend Peter van Dresser. The old box from the p2 project which I saw in 1979 filled in the blanks. In 2008, I found evidence that indeed Tesla was here in New Mexico in 1936, and there was really not very much else he could have been doing here at that time. In addition to the work at the p2 project Tesla also was involved in 1936 in the testing of his wireless tranmission of energy system to run a train in Santa Fe, New Mexico, another activity which there is virtually no information on, even in Santa Fe. The spooks did a good job of cleaning out all references.

In looking for a probable Nazi spy, there was one who had wormed his way into Tesla's most intimate confidences, who was later convicted and imprisoned for his espionage activities in America, but the exact nature of his activities, other than the dissemination of Nazi propaganda, was never specified in the public records. This author's belief is that Tesla's sale of technology to German Admiral Alfred von Tirpitz in 1914, following rejection of this technology by the U.S. government, included the technology for Tesla's electric flying machine, not developed until 1936-38. Tesla's connection with Georg Silvester Viereck was the most probable explanation for how Tesla's propulsion discoveries attracted the attention of the Germans and found their way to the internationally funded "p2" project (funded by the Germans, the National Geographic, the Simon and Florence Guggenheim Foundation and the Smithsonian Foundation).

In his 1935 birthday announcement[5] , Tesla was extravagant, treating about 30 reporters, press, camera men, news and sound reel representatives to a lavish gourmet luncheon in a private dining room at the Hotel New Yorker where he had been living for the previous two years. This indicated a new source of revenue for Tesla, most likely from his German connections for the p2 project.

The fact that von Braun's pre-war New Mexico adventures have been subsequently concealed from the public by the Secret Government—a degree of secrecy which cannot be explained except by reference to the Nazi flying saucer project along with appropriating my friend Peter van Dresser's and his four colleagues' rocket engine design—is compelling.

The fact that I was a personal friend to an American rocket scientist named Peter van Dresser, who was angered by Dr. Robert Goddard's pre-war work with

5 [5] *New York Times, July 11, 1935 (supra)*

Wernher von Braun, and who was present in New Mexico in the ‘30s and was personally familiar with von Braun’s secret Los Alamos activities left little remaining to be proven, since there is no longer any security basis for concealing such events, if “rocket research” was the only thing von Braun’s pre-war American presence involved. He had already been appointed, just prior to his trip to America, as the Peenemünde research and the national German rocket research leader, and had been promoted by Hitler and Heinrich Himmler to Uberstürmbannfuehrer in the SS, and was given a “leave of absence” by Hitler to make the venture to America. After all, he was at that time in the Wehrmacht as well as the SS.

Willi Ley, the real rocket genius of Germany and von Braun’s tutor, was the first scientist invited to America by Peter and the New York branch of the American Rocket Society in 1934. In 1937, Ley was staying at the Greenwich Village, NYC apartment of Florence and Peter van Dresser, applied for American citizenship papers that year, and married a Russian ballerina named Olga Feldman, so von Braun was apparently invited by Dr. Robert Goddard, by his arrangements with the Germans, to fill the empty shoes of Ley. I suspect that all those promotions of von Braun after Ley’s defection were to insure that von Braun did not also defect and become an American citizen.

As shown by archival proof [6] , van Dresser’s group was the actual inventor of the first successful liquid-fueled rocket engine—called “A Dependable and Efficient Regeneratively Cooled Liquid-Fueled Rocket Engine” by Peter—the particular one that Dr. Robert Goddard “appropriated”, and turned over to Wernher von Braun, who used it on his V-2s. Peter was co-creator of the American Rocket Society and was the editor of its publication, ***Astronautics*** . But when the military became involved in the research at Mescalero Peter left because he was a Quaker pacifist and took Willi Ley with him so von Braun was brought in by Goddard from the Third Reich as a replacement in 1936.

One of the most telling pieces of evidence regarding the intentional misinterpretation of Tesla’s discoveries—especially just after Tesla’s death in Jan., 1943, at which point all Tesla’s papers and apparatus fell into the hands of the FBI—is the obvious meaning of the name for his system—TELEFORCE”—which means “force at a distance”. This must be seen in the context of the four listed parts of the system to be used together, being clearly applicable to flying saucer propulsion, once I pointed out the fraud, and correctly interpreted the statement in my 1993 publication.

I have to hand it to the spooks, for doing such a good job of concealing the connection between the flying saucer and the only man who could have invented it—and whom the public should most readily accept as the inventor who rightfully deserved the credit for it —even though he never had a fair opportunity of giving his greatest discovery to the world as an American, for lack of opportunity to build a working model of sufficiently developed potential to impress us. And the German-financed p2 Projekt gave him that opportunity after the U. S. government spit in his face. The reason why Tesla never had the opportunity was because of the secret "bill of attainder" placed on his name by the greedy monopolists who were and still are afraid of technological freedom and a truly free market of ideas, goods, and services. Tesla was a pariah and no one with money and power could touch him in America without being incinerated by the lightening strikes from the money gods in New York.

6 [6.] New Mexico State Archives, Historical Division, Peter van Dresser Collection.

CHAPTER II: EXPLORING THE NATURE OF THE ETHER

The Early Background

In 1997, after many years of research and thought regarding the qualities of the ether, I decided to see what others had actually said, before completing this book. Some of the material available to me was second-hand information, being what someone said someone else had said. I wanted to determine whether or not these "repeated statements" were accurate, and if not, find the correct ones. After some difficulty, I accessed a copy of the classic, ***A History of the Theories of the Aether and Electricity,*** by Sir Edmund Whittaker (1951 revised and enlarged second edition, Vols. I and II). The 1910 first edition was probably the most comprehensive book ever published on ether theory as it existed in 1910, except it omitted the ether theory of Tesla. The first edition was printed in Scotland, under the title ***A History of the Theories of the Ether and Electricity, from the age of Descartes to the close of the nineteenth century.*** The second edition incorporated "new material" related to quantum mechanics. Classical theory was in Vol. I, while Vols. II and III gave the origins of relativity and quantum theory up to 1926. Neither the 1910 first edition nor the 1951 revised edition mentioned Tesla at all, but the chronological sequence of attempts at electro-propulsion by the Europeans appeared to be "skewered", with little or no attempt in either edition to point out what the scientists were actually aiming at in terms of electric propulsion, which was clearly their goal, or to point out this goal as a topic. Though information regarding Tesla's work was omitted, there is much valuable related information in the historical sense in terms of many experiments.

In his preface, Whittaker stated that where space is not considered “emptiness”—except for its property of ***propagating electromagnetic waves*** (a concept which is completely wrong according to Tesla’s discoveries regarding the pressure waves)—the development of quantum electrodynamics referred to a vacuum with a new status as the location of ‘zero point’ oscillations of the electromagnetic fields and zero point fluctuations of electric charge and current, as well as a polarization conforming to that of a dielectric constant, which is non-unity (i.e., which contains energy). This implies awareness of Tesla’s Primary Solar Rays, but quantum theory inherently excludes the possibility of “zero-point” fluctuations, since all such waves are always regarded as possessing one-half “quantum”, and this is an internal contradiction of the theory. And the probability remains that all this is completely wrong.

Whittaker said that an alleged failure by ether theory proponents to observe the earth’s motion relative to the ether, caused the downfall of the theory, but the facts show that the relativists, backed by corporate publishing interests, hastily dug the grave and threw the dirt over the corpse of ether theory while it was still alive, for the wrong reasons (or maybe the “right” reasons considering the lies propagated by powerful interests). Much of the “error” was due to focusing on the weakest proponents who failed to realize that a portion of the ether is “carried along” by the earth, and that an optical aberration—an “ether drift”—would have to be observed at some point away from the earth, in order for an ether to exist. It was asserted that the failure of this observation on the earth was the “death” of “the” ether theory. By advertising ether theory’s weakest and most erroneous proponents and ideas, the media made the RQM’s hasty funeral of ether theory easy, and paved the way for the gullible public’s acceptance of relativism. But remember, truth can flow from lies, but not lies from the truth, as stated by Schopenhauer.

I concluded that Whittaker’s 1951 edition intentionally skewered important facts which already should have been known to the author concerning Tesla's theory, which I have attempted to straighten out for you in this book. I now feel more comfortable with my interpretation of Tesla’s theory, than I did prior to reading Whittaker’s book, but that was only because I knew what I was looking for. The facts I found are almost exactly as I said in my second edition of ***Space Aliens From the Pentagon*** . It was unthinkable that a 1910 or 1951 book on the ether failed to mention Tesla or his ether theory, which contains distinct features not found together in any other ether theory.

By gathering and reorganizing Whittaker's material on electropropulsion into more proper order, I discovered much "new" ("old") documentation, that 19th century scientists were in pursuit of electro-propulsion, and that there were interesting similarities between the thinking of certain scientists of the era and my suspicions, which could eliminate some erroneous concepts about what they actually meant, and show similarities to what I had observed on numerous occasions in the behavior of what were obviously Tesla's "flying saucers", since the "proof of the pudding" is when it flies across the dinner table or the sky. It was my intent to examine known theories leading up to Tesla, to see what he contributed, and to determine what happened since that time to obscure, misinterpret and ultimately conceal the truth. To this end, I present for you a brief history and documentation of pertinent ether physics.

J. J. Thomson's "Electromagnetic Momentum"

Returning to the concept of the "carry-along" ether, Max Planck, originator of quantum mechanics, followed this form of ether theory in part, saying that the ether had to be irrotational, carried along at the same velocity as earth near its surface, and compressible and subject to gravity like the atmosphere, in order for the theory to be true. At best, Planck's beliefs showed a weak mechanical conceptualization, something unexpected from one purportedly so adept at "mechanics".

J. J. Thomson (1856-1942), discoverer of the electron, expressed a different and more plausible ether theory. Thomson had theorized —based on Maxwell's earlier theory—that a charged spherical conductor moving in a straight line must produce displacement currents in the medium[7] . But this did not purport to be electropropulsion. In 1893, twelve years later, he claimed to have discovered "Electromagnetic Momentum", saying "...in an electromagnetic field there is stored in every unit volume an amount of mechanical momentum, proportional to the vector product of the electric and magnetic vectors".[8] Thomson also was said to have developed the theory of moving tubes of force—which harked back to Faraday's earlier work—saying in 1891 that molecular structure is closely connected with tubes of electrostatic force, with magnetism regarded as a secondary force. He stated that "...the aether itself is the vehicle of mechanical momentum, of amount $(1/4\pi C)$ [D B] per unit· volume."[9]

7 [7]. Phil. Mag. xi (1881), p. 229.

8 [8]. J. J. Thomson, Recent Researches in Elect. And Mag. xxxi (1893), p. 13.

Tesla Shows Up

It is interesting to note that these 1893 “discoveries” by Thomson, although following his initial speculations based on Maxwell’s theory, also followed Tesla’s lecture before the American Institute of Electrical Engineers at Columbia College, N.Y., on May 20, 1891, in which he described earlier experiments in which he had pre-empted Thomson’s work with experimental verification, together with a demonstration of techniques and machinery built by him which obtained frequencies and voltages which W. Thomson (Lord Kelvin) had said earlier in England, were “impossible to achieve”. In that sense, the “good old boys” in Britain should have admitted that Tesla’s work was prior, after having admitted that they were unable to create the equipment necessary to produce the required frequencies to investigate and to experimentally verify these phenomena. But Tesla's theory was different, based on electrostatics not electromagnetics.

J. J. Thomson’s theory, which supposedly linked electromagnetism with momentum in a mathematical and unified way, on paper, somewhat repeated Tesla’s earlier lecture of 1891, proven by his earlier experiments, but Tesla’s theory was different from Thomson’s and Maxwell’s. Thomson’s electromagnetic momentum could be theoretically created only with Tesla’s contrivances, which existed before Thomson’s “discovery”, and there was no way that Thomson could have reduced his theory to practice or experimentally verified it, because it would not work since electromagnetic waves cannot be transmitted through the free ether because it is not a solid.

Though the facts show that Thomson was prior to Tesla in attempting to publish a valid theory, Tesla could not publish prior to perfection of his invention, which was not a factor affecting Thomson. Tesla was apparently the only one to prove his theory by experimental results. Tesla deferred often to Thomson, even though Thomson attempted later to claim Tesla’s alternating current and high frequency discoveries. Thomson’s earlier work[10] , concerning a charged spherical conductor moving in a straight line (but involving no “rapidly-varying

9 [9]. Phil. Mag. xxxi (1891), p. 149; Recent Researches in Elect. And Mag. (1893), chap. 1.

electrostatic potentials”) had undoubtedly commanded Tesla’s respect and probably influenced his work, but Tesla’s 1884 discovery of the rotating magnetic field had beaten them all to the punch, and documentation shows that because of this he had arguments with his “learned professors” in Graz, who said that he must be “crazy” for having such ideas during his 1870s student days to prove it.

It must have worked a horrible hardship on Tesla, to remain silent about his ***Dynamic Theory of Gravity*** , which he did not publish for fear of his technology falling into the wrong hands. It was like the Wardenclyffe tower, turning in the wind of incompleteness for lack of money, created by having been falsely induced into building an expensive system which would exhaust his energy and financial resources to the point of bankruptcy.

In respect to momentum, I would analogize it as follows: When a body is held by a spinning or arcing arm, it contains the changing momentum created by angular movement. It must continually shed some “old” momentum while accumulating “new” momentum in the new direction. When released, it moves in a straight line vector corresponding to the state of the tubes of force which have imparted their momentum at the time of release. While held by the arm, centrifugal force was created by the tendency of the tubes to impart momentum in a straight line, which created the resistance to change by the tubes at any moment. Once released, “something” (the tubes of force as they then existed) determined the body’s direction of movement and velocity. These facts are consistent with Tesla’s own concepts, in contrast to other theories of the ether or tubes of force, as I will explain later in greater detail.

Most of Thomson’s 1881 work harked back to Maxwell, and before him, Faraday, who had stated in 1831 that movement of an electrostatically charged body is equivalent to a current, which was described as a tube of force created by movement and momentum[11] . In his consideration of the nature of “ponderable matter”, Faraday had suggested that an atom may be nothing more than a field of force—electric, magnetic and gravitational—surrounded by a point-centre, which is completely penetrable[12] . This statement shows how Faraday’s opinions had temporarily been swayed by the

---

10 [10]. Phil. Mag. xi (1881), p. 229 (Supra.)

relativism of Newton and Boscovitch. Fresnel later stated, ‘Upon considering the aberration of the stars, I am disposed to believe that the luminiferous aether pervades the substance of all material bodies with little or no resistance, as freely perhaps as the wind passes through a grove of trees’. Fresnel’s concept presupposed that the ether surrounding the earth was unaffected by earth’s motion, and generally agrees with what is actually observed, except for his failure to consider how the earth’s dynamic electric field affects the ether, and how the ether is not in motion relative to bodies at relative rest on the surface of the earth or within its electrostatic field. Along with his ca. 1831 theory of an (elastic) solid ether, and lines of magnetic force, Faraday considered all space as “filled”. Wm. Thomson (Lord Kelvin, 1824-1907), at age 17, based on Faraday’s earlier announcements, introduced into mathematical science the idea of electric action at a distance by means of a continuous ether. In 1846, he analogized electric phenomena with mechanical elasticity. It was his early concept that material atoms move through the ether ‘without displacing it or compressing it’[13] , a concept later to be adopted partially by Tesla in saying that the ether ‘behaves as a fluid to solid bodies, and as a solid to light and heat’. About 1853, Bernhard Riemann (1826-66) conceived an ether which resisted compression and changes of orientation[14] . Riemann thought the resistance to compression caused gravitational and electrostatic effects, while the resistance to changes in orientation caused optical and magnetic phenomena, but he failed to develop these concepts further. These early Riemann insights were however very influential on later thinkers. He conceived a stationary ether based on the generally accepted assumption that, as the earth moved through space, the ability of one to see a star with a steady image disproved a dynamic ether. As to the propagation of electric action through space, Riemann proposed a new equation in which voltage changes outward from charges with a velocity C, but he also failed to follow up with a proper consideration of the properties of

---

11 [11.] Faraday, Experimental Res. Sec. 1664; Maxwell, Treatise, Sec. 768-70.

12 [12.] Bence Jones’ Life of Faraday, ii, p. 178.

13 [13.] *Letter*, FitzGerald to Heaviside, 4 Feb. 1889.

14 [11.] Ann. D. Phys. cxii (1867), p. 237; Riemann’s Werke, 2e Aufl., p. 288; Phil. Mag. xxxiv (1867), p. 368.

the ether, because he died too damned young. Some of Riemann's insights were verified almost 50 years later, ten years longer than his entire lifetime.

Years later, Maxwell, after reading Faraday's 1831 ***Experimental Researches in Electricity*** (3 Vols.), formed a mechanical conception of the electromagnetic field, connecting Faraday's magnetic lines of force and electrical ideas with the mathematical analogies of Wm. Thomson, carrying Faraday's concepts a step further (I have always like to say that Maxwell "put the math to Faraday", because Faraday couldn't do much math, though he is recognized as the greatest "experimental philosopher" in history).

Faraday was a former Irish bookbinder's journeyman who got his early education from the books he was binding, and who at age 21 happened to write a letter to chemistry professor Sir Humphrey Davy in 1912 and so impressed him that the following spring he was appointed a chair at the Royal Institution. Faraday had remarkable insights right from the beginning, which remain long after his death, with so many observations and discoveries which were made without resort to tiresome pages of math, lucky for Maxwell, who made his own contributions in the process, although many were wrong according to Tesla, when it came to the ether and electromagnetic waves in free space.

Faraday had erroneously stated that induced magnetism in iron exists only within the iron, was zero in external free ether, and was the basis for electrical induction. Maxwell's "electric displacement in a dielectric" was analogous to the magnetic induction B, which he said may have a value different from zero even in the free ether. According to Maxwell, there is a displacement (i.e., an electric movement away from equilibrium position) wherever there is electric force, whether "material bodies" are present or not (thus carrying his electric displacement into the ether)[15] .

It had occurred to me that since the earth and bodies "at rest" on it are in uniform motion (or uniformly changing motion) in respect to an ether which is relatively stationary because "carried along", that there were differences in electric displacement of ether in the space within solid bodies and external to them in space within the free ether, due to the differences in dielectric constant between the two. I deduced from this that the constant movement of bodies through a stationary ether-filled space, carrying their charges with them, create displacement currents.

Maxwell had represented Faraday's lines of magnetic force (vectors of magnetic

Maxwell had represented Faraday's lines of magnetic force (vectors of magnetic induction) as the velocity of an incompressible fluid, based on Faraday's suggestion years earlier that there may be a "dynamical condition" similar to electric current, and that the 'physical lines of magnetic force are currents' of this "fluid". This agrees with Faraday's "dynamical condition" of the electric field 'carried along' by the earth, equivalent to a current, which appears to me to possibly produce the earth's magnetic field and gravitation, by effects on the stationary ether within earth's dynamic electric field. It also implies that magnetic lines of force are the "equal and opposite" reaction to electrical current as Faraday stated, and vice-versa, though magnetic fields are more the secondary effect of electric currents as Tesla said. The magnetic field is equally important however, in its creation of the rotatory motion imparted to electricity, which is responsible for the "tubes of force", which carry momentum which maintains the perpetual motion of celestial bodies in the universe, and guides electric currents through the ether forever. And this sounds very much like it is in agreement with Tesla's Dynamic Theory of Gravity as well.

Cosmic Motion and Local Momentum

The earth orbits the sun at approximately 18.5 miles per second (ca. 66,600 mph). The solar system is orbiting the center of the Milky Way much faster, and the Milky Way orbits the Magellanic Clouds much faster, and so fourth. This hierarchy of motion and velocity increases from the moon, to the earth, the Milky Way, the Magellanic Clouds, etc., although these pale into insignificance relative to electromagnetic velocity, since movement of force is timerelative. In all, the earth's velocity and polarity relative to the ether continually varies according to its rotation, orbital position, and galactic cycle. When between the sun and the Milky Way's center, for example, it moves relatively slower than when to the "outside". As the earth rotates each day, its polarity of movement relative to the sun rotates 15.2 degrees per hour, with a rotational surface velocity at the equator of approximately 1,041 mph. This continuous change in polarity is so gradual that it is sensually imperceptible, but probably contributes to modulating the gravity effects (and may even influence our emotional states!).

According to W. B. Morton[16] , an increase in charge of a body increases its "virtual mass", which increases the work required to move it by amount $2e^2$

[15]. Maxwell, Scientific Papers I, p. 451; p. 526.

$/3ac^2$. This was in correction of J. J. Thomson’s figures. Such a case suggests a dynamo consisting of large, insulated conductive balls on each end of a shaft turning at its center on a perpendicular axle, the balls being alternately charged and discharged to increase and decrease their “virtual” masses, thus rotating the shaft and turning a generator. But this possibility appears to be a fantasy, since the “increase in work required to move the ball” (in Thomson’s theory) may be related to an increase in the resistance to the penetration by the ether, caused by the presence of the extra charges, which according to Faraday created a “Faraday cage” effect which shuts out the magnetic lines of force. Without the magnetic lines of force—or with suppressed, deflected or diminished lines of force—the rotation of the tubes of force by the magnetic field may be diminished or stopped, resulting in a resistance to increased momentum. Such propositions gives ample food for thought.

If Tesla had continued to increase the earth’s electrostatic charge with his gadgetry, he might have thrown the earth’s timing off, slowed it down, and possibly caused it to drift toward the sun or away from it. But that is what he said was possible. Being aware of these facts he later addressed them and even listed them as future technical possibilities, which also corroborated his developments in the field of propulsion, in case anybody noticed.

Local Momentum and Celestial Movement

It’s an odd thing, momentum. If a body is in motion relative to earth, its momentum is in the direction of motion, while as a body at rest on a spot on earth, it still has momentum along with the spot’s ultimate motion relative to the universe. The motion is compound, the ultimate momentum of a body being truly a vector which represents all the forces acting upon it. Yet as a body at relative rest on the earth, it appears to defy all the other vector quantities because in it's stationary position it becomes a virtual part of the earth.

The earth rotates at over 1,041 mph at the equator, so there is that momentum, but the earth’s orbital speed and path around the sun means that the earth’s more general path in the solar system is in the direction of its orbit. A spot on the earth’s rotating surface would appear to a distant observer to be moving slower in its direction of orbital motion over a period of half a day, yet it is always moving in its orbital path at over 66,600 mph. The rotation alternately

---

[16] W. B. Morton, Phil. Mag. Xli (1896), p. 488.

diminishes and increases the speed of that “spot” through the universe, gradually rotating its ultimate solar orientation once every 24 hours. With this compound movement and momentum—of the earth, the solar system, the Milky Way, etc.—we have a more complex pattern of movement, and since a body is in constant, compound, gradual, ever-changing motion relative to the ether and the universe, some interesting effects are bound to be discovered. These effects are not, as described by Newton’s laws, due to an attractive force acting at a distance, through an empty space. “Force at a distance” requires an ether relative to Tesla’s Teleforce discoveries and his ***Dynamic Theory of Gravity*** .

Due to the relatively gradual orbiting and rotating changes in respect to earth’s motion relative to the background ether, a relatively small amount of “externally acting” force (“gravity”) would have to be ever-present in order for Newton’s laws to appear to apply even on the purely descriptive level, except for the local ether phenomenon which I will specify in further detail, which insures “force-free” perpetual motion, despite the gravitational effects of the ether. While I agree with that part of Einstein’s theory that says gravity is not due to the direct action of one object on another (no “force at a distance”), I disagree with the part that says it is due to the idea that a large spinning body “wraps” space around itself and “curves it”. Without an ether there is nothing to curve, and with it, there is no Relativity Theory and “no curved space” (as Tesla said).

In early 1995, in exchange for a copy of ***Space Aliens From the Pentagon*** , I received a copy of Eric Lerner’s ***The Big Bang Never Happened*** , and was pleased to find that there are some in the academic world of physics (or astrophysics), who share at least in part, my own views on the 'Big Bang Theory', although they don’t go so far as I do in saying the theory has been promoted by the coercive energy monopolists, along with Relativism, because of its apparent negation of the free energy available from the universe via the ether. This universal free energy is due to what I call the “Law of Conservation of Perpetual Motion”. I found Lerner’s book refreshing, not to mention useful in charting some of my own if not Tesla's ideas on a more cosmic scale.

Lerner’s relatively unsung hero is Hannes Alfvén, a Swedish astrophysicist and cosmologist, whose earlier “academic burial” by the Relativists was somewhat reversed in 1970 by a Nobel Prize awarded to him for his development of cosmic magnetohydrodynamics and his concept of frozen lines of magnetic force, a theory later modulated in part by him. Alfvén had in a way replaced the word “ether” with “plasma”, and strongly disagreed with the Relativist’s misuse of mathematical theory, which he said ‘must always be the servant of physical mathematical theory, which he said ‘must always be the servant of physical understanding and close observation, rather than its master’. He claimed that giant currents through space, from the sun through the planets, along frozen lines of force, actually transfer angular momentum to the planets. This discovery, together with his work on cosmic MHD events, places Alfvén’s work very close to Tesla’s Dynamic Theory of Gravity.

The appearance of such books as Lerner’s is a positive development, which represents dissent which seems intolerable to the Relativists. The Big Bang Theory is in decline among scientists, despite all the NASA false propaganda in the press and mass media attempting to perpetuate and support this false theory. I recommend Lerner’s book, even though he has not yet evoked an affirmative support for ether theory, but has dared to challenge Relativism and the Big Bang cosmology.

The actual course that a particular spot on earth takes through the universe is naturally more complex than that of the sun, since the earth and the spot on it represents a smaller cycle within the larger. Relative to the background ether, the entire interrelated movements of the solar system and Milky Way takes our spot in a generally wavy path, along which our velocity relative to external bodies periodically accelerates and decelerates.

The same principles of momentum which apply to the cosmos must also apply to the motion of immediately local bodies, except that the effects are skewered by the presence of earth’s pesky electric, magnetic, and so-called “gravity” fields. What Alfvén had touched upon in his long-unrecognized discovery of the giant electric and magnetic currents through space, are similar to unrecognized forces operative on a local scale as well. As our planet hurls through space at ca. 70,000 mph, and us with it, there are things happening on a smaller, even microscopic scale, which play important parts in this giant panorama.

The big question—the one which those who promoted the Big Bang cosmology sought prematurely to put to rest—is how can everything stay in perpetual motion, while under the Relativist theory the law of conservation of energy is violated—and thereby the Relativist theory also refuted? The still-born theories of Tesla were forever gnawing at the monopolists’ throats, along with those of Alfvén, so they wanted to obscure all truly competing theories, and to enshrine the Relativists and Big Bangers in the annals of science for all time. Their method was to fabricate a scenario in which one original giant explosion was the ‘origin’ from which all we see is but an effect which will eventually “run down” like a car which is out of gas. Thus they created and attached the ***entropy*** theory to the ***Second Law of Thermodynamics*** as if an integral part of it so that energy is constantly becoming “unavailable” as the universe runs down. And that would mean that the ***Second Law of Thermodynamics*** would violate the ***First Law of Thermodynamics.***

The missing ideas are how universal processes are continually self-replenished. Through an interplay of natural strong and weak forces acting with matter, perpetual motion is conserved. Strong forces overcome weaker forces and do more work in the same periods of time. Cosmic radiation travels through the ether, until it reacts with plasma, forming matter. When matter concentrates, forces acting with it concentrate. In contact with other, less concentrated matter, stronger cosmic forces acting within the space it occupies are unleashed, producing transmutations and eventually more cosmic radiation, which travels through space until absorbed and changed by plasma or other mass, producing larger masses or other radiation, and the process continues, ad infinitum. And all this reacting often with Tesla's Primary Solar Rays.

The rigid thinker must have a simplistic answer as to “where matter comes from”, “where it is going”, “what is the purpose of life”, etc. Sometimes we must accept reality, and discard phony theories which attempt to give us a simplistic answer for what we either must admit that we just don’t know, or should consider some questions too stupid to ask. The facts concerning the existence of universal matter, forces, vast distances, massive bodies and events, and perpetual motion are irreducible primaries or “first laws” about reality, which we must accept before we can progress with answering particular questions related to the more useful aspects of existence.

Since the orbital speed of the earth around the sun is greater than the speed of earth’s rotation, our spot never moves “backward” relative to the ether, though it slows down and speeds up. The orbital speed of the Milky Way is greater than the orbital speed of the solar system or rotational speed of the earth, and our spot continues in a generally “wavy-wavy” path in which we accelerate and decelerate over a one-day longer cycle, and so forth. There are still larger and larger cycles of motion over time, as stated before. As can be seen from these cyclical movements, the universe is a system of interrelated systems which move generally in gear-like precision, rather than in a more randomized explosive pattern ala the Big Bang. Universal movement is in an orderly, cyclical pattern of circles (or ellipses), within circles, representing mechanical oscillations which are related to smaller and larger electromagnetic ones. The exceptions to this are related to smaller and larger electromagnetic ones. The exceptions to this—the occasional cosmic explosion, such as that of a supernova—proves rather than disproves the rule. Even the occasional comet follows a cyclical pattern, while the debris from cosmic events eventually falls into orderly patterns. Though such explosions on our scale are gigantic, they are like minor ripples in a pond on a cosmic scale, and should not be allowed to warp our perspective. Neither are the events in the entire universe governed by the profuse scribbles written by someone on a fly-infested dung heap in the Middle East a few thousand years ago.

If last week a remote controlled telescope—such as the Hubbell —showed a movement which when compared to an earlier measurement of a few years ago indicated a movement away from a distant part of the universe, just remember that this is only an observation of movement taken from one perspective at one time of a much larger pattern of oscillations over a much longer period of time, in which the movement may later appear to be going the other way, from our point of view or that of the telescope, if we could make an observation millions of years into the future. Because of the circuitous patterns of movements which we observe in relation to earth at the present, and the larger structures in “our vicinity” of the universe, we have good reason to believe that all such movements are cyclical, and to extrapolate ourselves into the time when the appearance would be quite different. The theory that the earth and other celestial bodies are the result of the Big Bang are ludicrous. Just try to imagine the Big Bang explosion building the earth up from a small mass in space, to build thousands of feet of the detritus of living things, to increase the mass of the earth through photosynthesis, which has nothing to do with a Big Bang. What a coincidence! The universe has no “age”, as it has always existed, and always will. The whole theory about how planets “were created” from the Big Bang is ridiculous.

Life forms would not only have to have existed at one time on Mars, but on all other planets and stars, at some time. In fact, the planets grew from smaller bodies as a result of life forms, which convert interstellar ether into solid mass, driven by cosmic radiation. There is no depth to which we can drill on earth, or otherwise produce direct evidence to the contrary, where we will not find matter which was in its past part of living things. This theory of course makes the planet “too old” for the Big Bangers, as it would take a much longer time for the earth to reach its present state, and would throw their “calendar”—called the “Hubbell Constant”, through which the high priests of the Big Bang have determined earth’s alleged “birth date”—off.

For example, one of the components of chlorophyll is iron. This iron along with the carbon deposits and other elements result from photosynthesis. If strata of the earth, thousands of feet—even miles —thick, are composed of the decayed and metamorphosed remains of plant and animal life, the original biomass represents a conversion ultimately of ether, driven by radiation through photosynthesis, and into the many elements and minerals composing the strata, which can be easily traced to this process, such as iron, calcium, phosphorus, sulfur, nitrogen, carbon, hydrogen, oxygen, and helium. Such elements accumulate through the cosmically-driven forces of life forms. There is probably a constant of universal mathematical proportionality between life forms and inorganic ones. And we should realize that all of this mass of the earth's upper layers, down to the deepest level we can drill, represents mass which has been added to earth's mass by life processes in which ultimately cosmic radiation drives the accumulation of mass from the ether.

The ether, the medium which supposedly conducts sound waves in the ether through space, can apparently be converted into any form of matter. Otherwise, where would that mass come from? It is also apparently possible to precipitate any element from the ether, or to transmute other elements, using proper technology which emulates or speeds up this natural process. The ether contains the building blocks of what we call "solid matter", the proof of which enhances this possibility.

Tesla eventually realized the ether's use in his discovery of the "tremendous propelling force". His propulsion technology works and that is more important that splitting hairs...or atoms.

Only an ether which is intimately involved with momentum, could explain such a tremendous propulsion force such as that which I observed in 1953. This propulsive force was nothing more than a force which exists in nature, which in the hands of man becomes an article of will, once the physical processes capable of synthesizing and manipulating it become known.

Based on the assumption that I could see the ship for thirty miles, I estimate that from the rate and manner of acceleration, in conjunction with the probable mass of the ship which I observed, it was immediately apparent that the entire volume of the ship, if filled with conventional rocket or jet fuel, would have been consumed in the three seconds required for it to accelerate to ca. 36,000 mph and disappear at the point of infinity. This was only possible because of the existence disappear at the point of infinity. This was only possible because of the existence of Tesla’s technology which “electro-mechanically” canceled inertia and synthesized a new momentum almost instantaneously. This technology also created a friction-free pathway through the atmosphere and also prevented a shock wave or sonic boom, perhaps explainable by the fact that Tesla’s “sound waves at the speed of light” are involved. Another explanation is that rapidlyvarying negative electrostatic potentials apparently create a path of mutually repulsive, same-sign negative charges in the atmosphere before, along and behind the ship’s path which do not clap rapidly back together behind the ship to create the sonic boom. I observed the atmospheric effects of the lingering charges scintillating and sizzling behind the ship, as they slough off.

What is inertia? Inertia is the momentum which a body “at rest” already possesses because it is in a state of uniform motion, but which to us appears to be at rest. Tesla’s technology apparently uses the electrical attractive force, which produces 2×10^{39} power times more work, using a smaller amount of “gravitational” or chemical “input energy” to drive an electrical generator to produce the electricity to trigger the change. If “energy” is the “ability to do work”, and “work” is the “movement of a mass through a distance”, and a stronger force will do more work over a given time period, a change in form of force from a weaker to a stronger force (which exists in the environment) will use “environmental energy” to do more work in a new way.

The process which makes Tesla propulsion possible, is the dynamism of the universe, which naturally exchanges weaker and stronger forces to conserve perpetual motion, with any lost momentum being re-supplied by the Primary Solar Rays or other natural cosmic radiation or forces. That seems the only way to explain such a fantastic demonstration of technology in defiance to so-called “accepted theory”, but in accordance to Tesla’s hidden ones which the government possesses in secrecy. Otherwise, why the secrecy?

CHAPTER III: OBSERVATIONS

With Tesla’s theory and the background of older research and theories held temporarily in abeyance, let’s look at what has been directly observed either by myself or by those closely associated with me.

What I began observing in 1946, and have continued ever since, are man-made electro-mechanical flying machines which can hover, turn on a dime at high speed without flying apart, and accelerate almost instantaneously to at least 36,000 mph, without readily audible sound or sonic boom. The ship I observed in 1953, in broad daylight, hovering at about 300 feet distance, about 250 feet above ground level, precessed at a high angle—about 45 degrees—and a low rate of about two cycles per second. Soon after I spotted it, it began to move away directly due west, quickly accelerating to about 200 mph, at which time it did two absolutely square turns—a right angle turn straight down and another right angle turn about a hundred feet lower, back into level flight—then accelerated to a point of infinity above the horizon about 30 miles away in three seconds. This maneuver to lower its elevation above ground by about a hundred feet appeared to be designed to make the ship less visible to observers on the ground, when the pilot discovered that he was hovering over a town. The high angle of precession appears in retrospect to have been a malfunction of the gyro-stabilization system, as it would have otherwise have made it very difficult for a viewer inside the ship to make any sense out of what he could see outside.

The ship was constructed as if it were two 50-foot diameter stainless steel woks joined together clamshell fashion. It had concentric “striations”—grooves in its surface which appeared to be about one inch wide all over its surface—which gave its two halves the appearance of giant “spun-metal” woks, as it precessed with the sun’s rays playing on its oscillating bright metallic surface. The sun was about ten degrees above the horizon at the time.

As it precessed, the ship gave off a sparkling, “rainbow-colored” electrical corona, like a metallic surface which was being electrified with high voltage Tesla coils. On the shadow side of the bottom when it was periodically turned away from the sun during oscillations, there appeared a soft, ‘cloudy’, infra-red glow, which indicated the possible presence of microwaves on the bottom, while the general “rainbow” corona from the top was “brushy” and apparently of high voltage negative electrostatics. As the ship began accelerating, the rainbow corona formed a sparkling, scintillating trail behind the ship, which also showed a “texture” across the trail which appeared to coincide with the frequency of the precessions which increased in rate as the ship accelerated, until a mere vibratory blur by the time the ship made its two 90-degree turns at about 200 mph, which is a rough estimate. The ion trail gradually faded out behind the ship, with little sparkles appearing in the trail as it did so. The ionizations produced by this ship—rapidly-varying electrostatic ones produced by the one-quarter wavelength tuning of Tesla’s single terminal coil—apparently produced the sound waves which were projected along the direction of acceleration, and bringing in the tubes of force necessary for the propulsive force to act on the ship. All this theory was apparent from the effects graphically illustrated by the corona together with the actions of the ship.

corona together with the actions of the ship.

The ship had flown due west, toward the northern border of Ft. Bliss, near El Paso, Texas. Ft. Bliss was the location of Headquarters, U. S. Army Ordinance, where Wernher von Braun was appointed research director in the summer of 1945. Von Braun's main base of operation had been moved to Redstone Arsenal, Alabama about 1951.

Consistent with the observed behavior, the electro-mechanical system appeared to instantly synthesize in an internal atomic way, inertia and momentum, things which normally create problems in acceleration and turning, but which the system overcame as shown by the evidence of the square, right-angle turns and extremely rapid acceleration. The system appeared to have very little to do with "gravity" in the textbook way, even though it did reveal that gravity itself is apparently due to the same kinds of electro-mechanics. These observations were taken at face value, as proof of certain facts concerning the nature of the ether, gravity, inertia, momentum, and electro-mechanical propulsion. It was also taken as proof of the fact that I saw a machine, that machines are man-made, and that Tesla had described his invention of a flying machine which had these properties.

I had observed whole squadrons of saucers flying at high altitude in formation at night, beginning in 1946, and continuing in 1947 through 1953 at our next house, during which time I slept outdoors in our back yard. The squadrons arrived over our town from the direction of New Mexico, the border of which was about ten miles north. The ships departed back to the north after their night-time maneuvers. Ergo, those particular ships were from a New Mexico base, which I took to be Holloman AFB at Alamogordo or White Sands Missile Range.

The night squadron saucers turned in angles of 30 degrees or multiples (30, 60, 90, 120, 180, etc.) which meant those particular multiples (30, 60, 90, 120, 180, etc.) which meant those particular vintage Peiltochterkompass was used on.

My observations, together with all the written information on the Peiltochterkompass, and an analysis of the device itself, revealed quite a lot about the German "Kurskreisel Tochterkompass-p2" and the propulsion system:

1. The ships were electro-mechanically propelled;
2. the propulsion system created an electric field around the saucers which necessitated the development of a celestial guidance system and compass, since

necessitated the development of a celestial guidance system and compass, since a magnetic compass would be useless due to the “Faraday cage” effect;

3. the ship was a circular, discus-shaped craft, which turned in 12 peripheral directions (thirty degrees each) of the compass, plus “up” and “down”;

4. the ships used a celestially oriented master navigational gyro (“Kurskreisel”), calibrated prior to take-off to the Pole Star, Arcturus, as the frame of reference with which to navigate the ship using an electromagnetic slave compass (“Tochterkompass”), which was also interconnected to stepping switches which actuated the ship’s bi-polar propulsion electrodes as the pilot wished;

5. the system canceled the normal effects of gravity, inertia, and momentum, and instantly synthesized momentum in the chosen direction, without disturbing the operation of the master gyro, which continued to maintain its heading during flights, apparently because of its ‘internal’ inertia/momentum within the ship’s outer shell;

6. the instant turns showed an incompressible ether which is integrally locked with mass in the phenomena of inertia, momentum, and gravity.

The celestial orientation of the ***Kurskreisel*** to the Pole Star meant that no matter where on earth the ship flew, true north would be correctly indicated. If a line is drawn from the Pole Star down through the center of the earth, this is the axis around which the earth revolves. This master gyro had electrical contacts around it’s gimbal so that as the ship was turned in the 30-degree increments, the contacts would relay that information to the slave compass so that the small motor would come on and rotate the geared flight direction indicator ring until it showed the correct direction of flight in relation to true north.

Since the 1953 daylight sighting, I have seen many other electro-mechanical craft, but one of the best sightings I made was on a moonlit night while soaking in a hot tub.

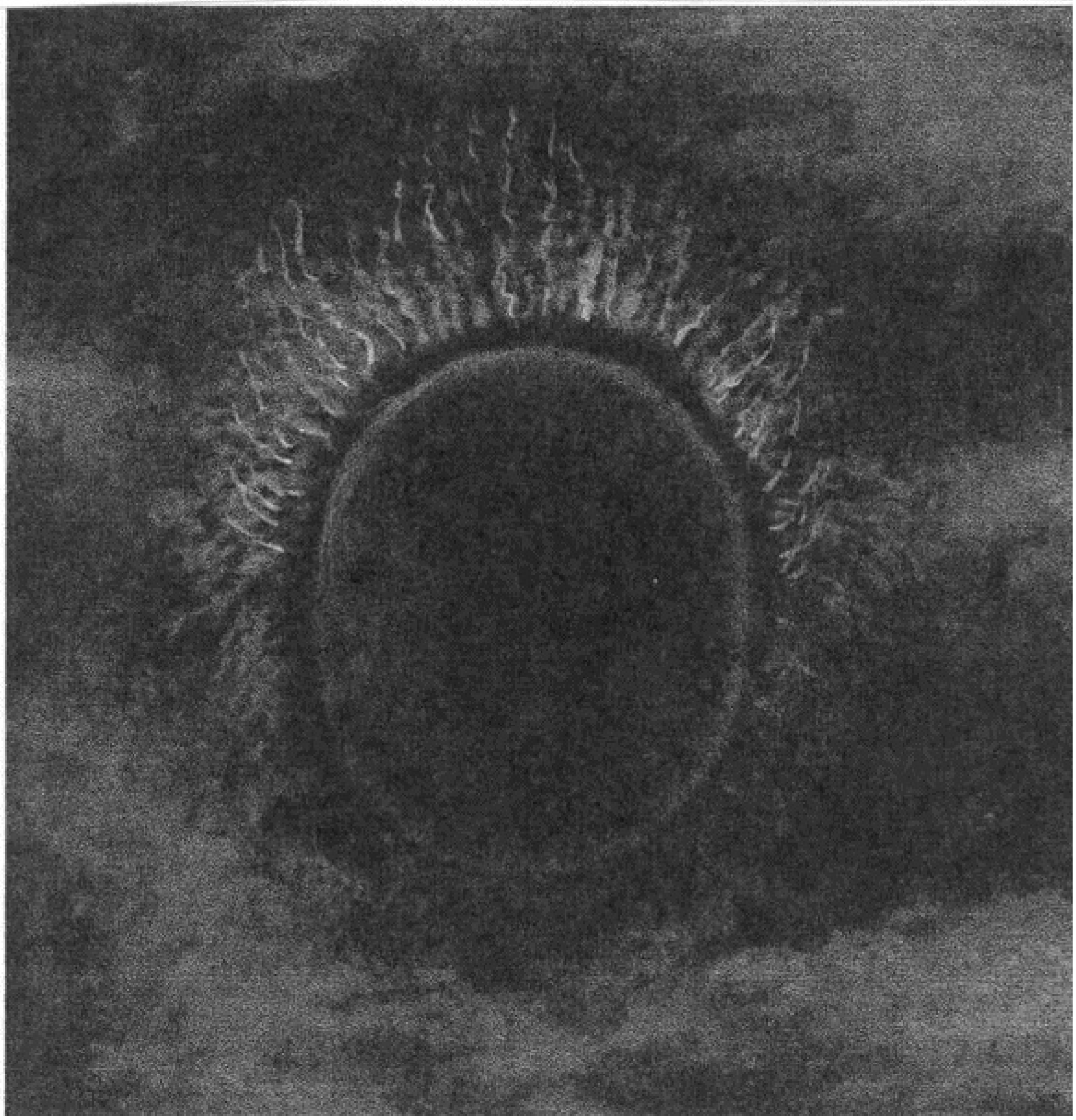
Rub-a-Dub-Dub, Seven Folks in a Hot Tub

On a Wednesday evening, January 24, 1996, at approximately 7:00 PM, I sat in a hot tub with seven other people, at the Ten Thousand Waves Japanese Bath House, located on the western slopes of the Sangre de Cristo Mountains, in the Hyde Park vicinity above Santa Fe, New Mexico. As I steamed in the tub, conversation between a couple from Denver and myself drifted from the dangers of fluoride to “What do you do?”, to which I answered, “I write some”. Asked what I had written, I answered “A book called ***Space Aliens From the Pentagon”*** .

A beautiful woman on my right exclaimed “I have your book. I’m a friend of Alex and Rex. I love your book so much, and so do they.” I thanked her and we exchanged introductions, and then I said “I see saucers up here almost every time I’m here after dark...and as a matter of fact, there’s one right there” (pointing out a flashing aircraft flying slowly easterly about 15 degrees to the lower left of the crescent moon, at a distance of about 10,000 feet from us).

A heckler across the tub said “Aww, that’s a plane”, to which I responded, “There’s another one...and if they’re planes, why have they parked? (The ships had become stationary in the air.) The flashing lights mask an underlying glow. The eye recoils from a flash, and never has time to recover before another flash. When they move faster, they glow brighter, which is why they are going so slowly.”

No sooner had I spoken than the stationary ship on the left quit flashing, and turned into a much larger dark, glowing green shape like a football field surrounded by a track. Around the “track” was a dark strip, with a purple corona outside that, produced by the Tesla coils. I could see the curvature of its bottom as it moved, flying in a large circle, as I followed it with my outstretched arm and index finger, and my fellow hot-tubbers oggled in jaw-dropped amazement. The following is a black-and-white photo of a painting I did of the saucer, as seen from the bottom. The ship is moving upward in the illustration, in the direction in which the electrostatic leaders are moving:



It returned to its starting point, stopped instantly and began flashing like a small plane again. This took approximately ten seconds. Since the ship appeared about three-quarters of an inch long at arm's length (about 2 feet), at the 10,000-foot distance, it was around 400 feet long and 250 feet wide. Since the diameter of the circle it flew in was about 30 degrees, its speed was about 2,000 mph (the speed didn't surprise me since I had clocked the one I saw in 1953 over our back yard at a minimum of 36,000 mph when it departed; I had also clocked one on a radar scope at Keesler A.F.B., Mississippi in 1956 doing 4,000 mph flying over Lake Ponchartrain).

I almost missed this ship because I didn't have my glasses, and because it appeared to have been "stealth-ized"—designed to be concealed by the dark night sky, by controlling its emission color to be dark green, with the purple corona also being dark, so as to more closely match the light value of and blend into the night sky. The main ‘give-away’ was the color differences.

Others in the tub—most of whom didn’t need glasses—saw it more sharply than I, yet wouldn’t have seen it at all had I not pointed it out to them. I probably would not have seen it myself had I not been observing as a habit, the flashing ships beforehand, with the moon so close above, creating some back-lighting which helped to define the larger, darker silhouette when it arrived. Moreover, the real reason I saw it, was my own preconscious mental selfconditioning.

I was amazed at its large size, since, when flashing, it appeared like a small plane with beacon. When I finally looked back to the other side of the tub, the heckler was gone, the on-cue saucer demo being apparently too much for him. If the saucer crew had been listening to my words, their performance couldn’t have been more perfectly timed. Bravo! Do they also have some computer software that reads lips? It is my theory that the human saucer-jockies have chosen that particular location to do some “testing”, because of the titillating availability of the numerous private hot tubs open to the night sky, occupied by private nude couples of all sexual persuasions, easily video taped by them. I can see them trading the tapes among themselves, another good reason to “...keep the secret” to avoid prosecution for invasion of privacy and violation of voyeurism laws.

It was the first time I had seen the green-glowing type reported years ago by astronomer Clyde Tombaugh, then recognized as the discoverer of the planet Pluto. It was the second most graphic demonstration of the saucer technology I have witnessed. If I had not spotted it, it is probable that none of us would have seen anything extraordinary, excluding the beautiful lady next to me who liked my book, and was a strong competition to the saucers. Incidentally, the female breast shape may be “natures most nearly-perfect shape for a flying saucer design.” The “green-glowing” type was apparently the result of research designed to make the ships less visible in the night sky, since the early models—such as the “foo-fighters” (“Fliegende Schildkrote” [Flying Turtle] and “Kugelblitz” [Ball Lightening]) glowed brightly. The oblong design (as distinguished from the circular or ‘peripheral’ saucers) comports with what I call the “linear type”. According to a friend who is an expert spectrographer, the green corona indicated atomic absorption, which I presume to be ‘stealth’ technology used to suppress the white light spectrum. He seemed to think sodium based coatings, while I think maybe chromium, because it appeared to be a veridian (“chrome”) green. The soft, ‘cloudy’ green also indicated positive a veridian (“chrome”) green. The soft, “cloudy” green also indicated positive corona, as distinguished from the ‘hairy’ negative (purple) corona around the outer periphery, and usually seen on Tesla coils.

Comparison to Other Sightings

Though remarkable, the hot tub sighting was not a clear, “daylight”, “close-range” sighting, like the first good sighting which I had personally made on a bright, late summer afternoon in West Texas, in 1953, within 250-300 feet, right over our back yard, in Kermit, Texas, as our family and friends were having an ice cream party. I had been the last in my family and neighborhood to see a saucer in a close-up daylight sighting, since three had appeared on two consecutive days, June 1st and 2nd, 1950, while I was unfortunately in the Davis Mountains about 120 miles to the west. My father in his lifetime had seen more than I had, and was once held in his car for 15-30 minutes, on the night of Nov. 2, 1957, just south of Levelland, Texas, by one of the 200-foot-long ships, which had scared the livin’ daylights out of him. The thing hovered within ten feet of his car top, killed his engine, and burned out all his lights, yet failed to burn out a single fuse in any of the car’s circuits. The saucer’s electric field was apparently so strong that it arrested current flow, and was strong enough to cancel the magnetic fields in the generator and circuits. The white-hot tungsten filaments of the bulbs were the weakest points in the circuits, and the saucer’s pulse currents apparently subjected them to magnetic and electric shear forces which broke them apart.

My father had to drive back to Levelland in the dark, spend the night in a motel, then drive home to Odessa, Texas at dawn’s first light. He arrived home about 7:30 AM, had a quick breakfast, and left for Sewell Ford to have his lights fixed, saying nothing about the saucer. I turned on the TV for the morning news as he left, and realized that he had been one of the several drivers held by the ship (or ships) that night. I went to Sewell Ford and questioned him about it as the mechanic fixed the lights, and he asked me how I knew about the ship, and I told him it was on the news. He said he didn’t want to be called “crazy”, so had remained silent. This was what I call “anti-paranoia”. It is sometimes reasonable to fear ridicule created by false government propaganda.

Later, in 1963, I had the opportunity to discuss the matter more fully with the sheriff of Hockley County, while working in Brownfield, Texas. The ship seen by my father matched in shape, appearance, and performance, the type observed by deputy Lonnie Zamora, near Socorro, New Mexico. Zamora had at first described the crew of the ship he saw as typical G.I.s in gray-green Air Force flight suits, but later altered his story, saying they were “...about the size of children”. This was after the security spooks had ‘leaned’ on him.

In 1993 to 1998, ships could be seen almost any night in the area where I live in New Mexico, and were very profuse in an even more obvious way around the Cheyenne Mountain area to the south of Colorado Springs, Colorado, where the underground NORAD complex is located. The prevalence of the ships near my home diminished rapidly after my books became more widely read, as this caused a lot of people to begin observing them.

There has been another separate problem which I previously thought to be unrelated, the fact that I have been working on a book about ancient petroglyphs and have been blocked out of the San Cristóbal Ranch which I had free access to for over sixteen years before it fell into the hands of Ronald Reagan’s blind trust. The trustee was John Henry Singleton, who eventually bought the over 81,000-acre ranch, which has some of the most important petroglyphs I know of for my research. The gluttonous ranch holdings for “Singleton Ranches” (there are several in New Mexico and some in California) had apparently become the receptacle for the large corporate income derived from military contracts by the two military-industrial complex corporations which Singleton was cocreator of, Teledyne and Raytheon. I had always believed that the reason I was blocked out of the ranch after the change in ownership was because of the archeologists, who hate my competing discoveries, and don’t want them published. I now know that the reason is additionally and especially due to my UFO research, made apparent after I gave them a copy of ***Space Aliens From the Pentagon*** in 1994, after which I was immediately and threateningly blocked out of the ranch. I am humiliated by the shoddy and rude treatment and I have never encountered such inhospitable behavior by land owners in the Southwest---who are usually dignified and hospitable---and maybe that is because these corporate, military-industrial complextype people from Los Angeles just don’t fit in here.

In January, 2010, as I was watching TV in the dark at 2:00 A.M. because I couldn’t sleep, I spotted a large discoid ship passing by through the large window above my TV on a downward path toward the ranch. Two minutes later I saw a second ship identical to the first one on the very same glide path toward the ranch. In the following nights when I traveled down the highway going home from Santa Fe I observed ships coming out of and going to the ranch. There is a saucer base over there. I should have figured this out before since Ratheon and Teledyne, and some of their many subsidiaries, manufacture components for

Teledyne, and some of their many subsidiaries, manufacture components for UFOs. Their security there is way too high to be explained by mere “archaeological digs”. They don’t want me over there because they fear I’d discover the base. And now I have.

With the several direct observations or reports from those in my family or from close friends kept firmly in mind, let’s see what more can be found in ether theory history to reflect on them.

The Ether and “Ponderable Matter”

In 1879, James Clerk Maxwell (1831-1879) said that the velocity of the solar system relative to the ether could be determined by observing the retardation of the eclipses of Jupiter’s satellites. The purportedly observed behavior—in which the light of a star can be viewed with a steady image as the earth moves through space— indicates a stationary ether relative to a moving earth, solar system, and other bodies. But according to Tesla, this idea was defective, since you could not make such an observation on earth because the ether within earth’s electric field is carried along with the earth. You might be able to make such an observation in outer space.

The ether is ultra-fine and presumably composed of positive and negative electric matter, which pervades all so-called “free space” as well as space “occupied” by “mass”—which the old ether physicists called “ponderable matter”—even though mostly “space”. Since the ether is stationary near the earth, it is ‘ponderable matter’, at least where the ether is rigidified by earth’s rapidly-varying electrostatic potentials and electric field.

The ether is transparent and does not refract or reflect light because of its “inconceivable tenuity” (Tesla said), although it is said to behave as a solid to light and heat. To “access” the ether in a propulsive way, rapidly-varying high voltage electrostatic potentials are required, in accord with Tesla's sound waves in the ether theory, first confirmed by the tests conducted by Tesla in 1891 (later detailed in his 1891 lecture before the A.I.E.E., Columbia College, N.Y.). Tesla’s tests confirmed a reaction which was more than the feeble ionic reaction of light gases or so-called “electro-gravitics” such as those that the misinforming 1950s “patents” of T. Townsend Brown, later used in attempt to induce the gullible public to believe was the correct technology. After his tests, Tesla stated that the ether became a “solid state” medium which could be accessed by subjecting it to electrostatic impulses of “sufficiently high voltage and frequency”.

The ether also becomes more apparent when there is a sudden change in the direction of motion, rate of acceleration, or velocity of a body. The relative movement of a charged body, equivalent to current, apparently creates a new degree of electrical displacement of the ether through which it moves, and influences the resistance to changes in velocity through the affected ether by the protons, neutrons and electrons composing the body itself. The increased work required to move such a charged sphere—the increased “resistance to change” called “inertia”—reflected by the increase in its tendency to remain in its current state of motion (actually its current “momentum”), demonstrates that the changes have created the resistance to movement of the sphere through the space through which it moves. Therefore, once in relative motion at a constant velocity—though more work was initially required due to the increased charges to give it that increased relative motion—the sphere’s momentum should be increased consistent to an increase in its “virtual mass”. This should make it clear that both inertia and momentum are caused by the same thing, which is a persistence in the reaction patterns in the atomic and electrostatic structure of the mass to maintain its present state of motion due to its properties as they are affected by the ether. Just as changing magnetic fields or electric fields are required for inductance, the creation of such changing electrostatic fields are the basis for producing the sound waves in the ether for Tesla's electro-mechanical momentum.

All bodies are in motion, and within all bodies, protons, neutrons and electrons are always in motion, because “elasticity” and vibratory motion occurs in “ponderable matter” even when a body is at relative “rest”. The ether apparently sets up certain patterns of motion in ponderable matter passing through it, relative to that motion, and changes in those patterns brought about by electrostatic inductance can impart new motion to that matter, or inhibit its motion as shown by the charged sphere. It is clear that something in space affects motion, otherwise it wouldn't be harder to move a charged sphere through the space so engendered.

A body at relative rest on the earth sits within the ether rigidified by earth’s rapidly-varying electrostatically-induced mechanical waves, and there is a down-force on that body called “gravity” created by the tubes of force being pulled down. As a body on earth moves parallel to earth’s surface through the ether within its electric field, rigidified by earth’s rapidly-varying electrostatic potentials (creating sound waves in the ether), it accumulates some of these ether “tubes of force” commensurate to its motion, which gives it added horizontal momentum

momentum.

It is possible that the tubes of force, induced to flow into an earth-bound body, can cause a downward thrust on the body's atoms, away from the pre-existing "equilibrium position" (which the atoms would occupy in the absence of earth's electric field) which we call "gravity". The equilibrium position for the electrical particles of ponderable matter varies according to mass density and displacement of the ether. A change in this electric displacement may result in a new equilibrium position. The body always moves toward equilibrium. The time-relative aspect of the rate of acceleration of a falling body is apparently due to its relative accumulated and dissolved tubes of force as it falls, regardless of its mass density.

In summary, inside an earth-bound body at relative rest there is a difference in ether displacement effects from that which exists outside the body in free space. Since earth's electric field is vertically graduated through the intermediate space between the negative at earth's surface and the positive at the ionosphere, the electric properties of mass are subjected to graduated strains. The effect of electrical displacement and gravity vary accordingly, somewhat like Newton's "inverse square" law. It is here that a difference between the "force of gravity" and the effects of inertia and momentum become apparent, since outside the earth's electric field there is apparently no gravity.

Traditionally, inertia has always been considered (according to Newton's First Law of Motion) the tendency of a body "at rest" (actually in "constant velocity" with earth) to continue its state of rest (or constant velocity), unless acted upon by an external force. Since all bodies at relative rest are already moving at the same "constant velocity" of the earth however, only changes in movement relative to earth are at issue, and any such changes affect the patterns of flow within mass of the tubes of force, as the body moves through the rigidified ether, at any given time. Since only a body which moves relative to the earth has been traditionally said to have "momentum" ("the product of a body's mass and velocity"), this rule ignores the fact that all bodies "at rest" relative to earth already have "momentum" therefore "inertia". And Tesla turned these theories upside down.

Momentum and inertia are apparently due to the exact same "tendency", which relates ultimately to a frame of reference to the universal ether, but for convenience—since we don't have an absolute "fix" on the ether—we use the moving earth as a frame of reference from which to measure a body's rate of change relative to the ether, as the earth maintains it relatively constant velocity. There is a special case on earth, because the ether within earth’s electric field has been “conditioned”—that is, it has been subjected to electric strain. This comports with Tesla’s statement concerning the effects of “rapidly varying electrostatic forces” emanating from the earth.

The earth has momentum within the sun’s frame of reference, just as a moving car has momentum within the earth’s frame of reference. Some physicists have mistakenly applied a “gravitational field of influence” idea, thinking this somehow isolates a body from references outside this field. I believe that this is only an “apparent effect” and that earth’s “gravitational field” is a product of its moving electric field (a “current”) as it influences the ether within it, and that the so-called “gravity field” extends no further than earth’s electric field.

Momentum is due to the accumulation inside a body of the dissolving tubes of force as the body passes through the ether, or in the case of UFO propulsion, the electro-mechanical inducement of the inward flow and dissolution of the tubes of force imparting mechanical momentum to the ship. The rotation of these tubes of force is the product of the magnetic rotation of the plane of polarization first identified by Michael Faraday. Any variance from the earth’s uniform motion results in a resistance to change in the orientation of the tubes of force, since the rotating tubes of force spin around their irrotational ether cores over a given time and a change in motion forces them to rotate around a greater or lesser quantity of ether depending on whether the change is an acceleration or deceleration. The tubes possess electro-mechanical force which is at least 10^{40} power times stronger than the gravitational interaction (or 2 X 10^{39} power times stronger than the so-called gravitational attractive force), which explains why these tiny tubes can have such a great influence over a mass in motion. This force is locked into the discrete flow pattern between the ether and the tubes, which are coupled to the ‘ponderable matter’ structure which is the recipient of the momentum.

Though the flow patterns are always gradually changing because of the continual reorientation of the earth as it moves in its angular momentum around the sun and in its motion with and within the solar system, these changes are sensually imperceptible because they are so gradual over time, with effects which are virtually constant. Though the changes are too slow to sense, the action of the tides are related to them as well as the electrical displacements caused by the positions of the moon relative to earth.

The natural gravity force is always normally toward the earth, which is

The natural gravity force is always normally toward the earth, which is negatively charged, within earth’s electric/gravity field, due to the polarity of that field, since the negative component of the ether in free space is electrically displaced upward by the repulsion of like charges. Meanwhile the inertial characteristics of positive mass is forced and attracted downward, and is more resistant to the changes in displacement.

The movement of ether particles is related to the gravity force. Due to the greater velocity of the electromagnetic interaction at C however, this down-force is irrespective to the direction of earth’s movement since the interaction between the electrical components of matter and the ether due to the conditioning by the earth’s electric field, is vertically polarized. This creates the same proximate effect on mass over time, irrespective as to earth’s orientation relative to the ether external to the earth’s electric field.

Orbiting Planets and Satellites

The concept that a satellite in orbit around earth is “held” in orbit by “earth’s field of gravity” seems false. The logical implication of my analysis is that the orbital path taken by a body is because it “sees” that path as one of least resistance, as if it were a straight and level path. Since for a given radius above earth the ether is displaced to a certain degree, an orbiting body would experience an accelerating force which would be met by inertia if it were to move upward, and a decelerating force which would be met by momentum if it were to move downward. Its path in force-free constant velocity remains at a constant radius or level of ether displacement, as the path of least resistance.

Since the determinate factor which limits a body’s motion is the reactance of its internal electrical content with the ether at its particular degree of displacement by earth’s electric field at a given altitude, an orbiting body “sees” its orbital path along a path of like displacement. This is contrasted to how Einstein said that space and time are “wrapped” around a large spinning body as it moves through space because, without an ether, there would be nothing in “empty space” to wrap, and time cannot be wrapped because it doesn’t exist as an entity, being our human concept invented to measure the rate at which events occur.

One of the revealing facts obviated by films of astronauts floating in the so-called “gravity-free” space of an orbiting space station, is the contradictory assertion that the space station is “held” in orbit by earth’s gravity. If earth’s gravity exerted sufficient force to hold the station in orbit, the internal environment would not be “gravity free”, but would pull the astronauts down to the floor, instead of allowing them to float all around inside, as we’ve seen so many times on TV. Yet, there is sufficient elasticity within the internal masses of the astronauts’ bodies, between electrical content and the ether, to allow movement in that manner.

If one calculates the phenomenon on a scale model of the earth one foot in diameter, the orbits of the astronauts would be only a tiny fraction of an inch above the surface. For there to be “no gravity” at that “altitude” shows the ridiculousness of the loss of gravity and refutes Newton’s inverse square law. But after all, Boscovich was the father of Relativism and Newton’s corpuscular theory of light was the basis for the eventual elimination of ether theory from textbook science.

CHAPTER IV: HISTORICAL DEVELOPMENT OF THE THEORY

Rotatory Motion and the “Screw Effect”

Wm. Thomson (Lord Kelvin) asserted that magnetism possesses a “rotatory” character related to heat or the thermal motions of a body [17] . Nikola Tesla made many references to Wm. Thomson, pointing to his work as a prelude to his own discoveries and applications which especially intensified in 1892. A review of the work of the world’s major minds leading up to Tesla’s breakthrough is necessary to show just what Tesla discovered and what it meant in respect to ether physics and physics in general. This is a task made more difficult by the concealment of Tesla’s papers by the U. S. government. And incredibly, the suppression of Tesla began before the 20th century by the absence of references to Tesla or his work by the “Good Old Boys’ Club” in Europe.

Around 1870, Thomson had conducted experiments which seemed to indicate that “gravitational action” could be induced by spheroidal bodies oscillated by electrical currents or mechanical pulses[18] . The surface pulsations could cause attractions or repulsions in respect to other bodies, as verified by Thomson. Tesla was aware of Thomson’s work during his student days in Graz, Austria, beginning in 1875 when he was nineteen. Thomson’s work undoubtedly served as a spark of inspiration for Tesla in his early conception of an “ideal flying

---

17 [17.] Wm. Thomson, Proc. R.S. viii (1856), p. 150.

machine" which would be propelled by electricity acting upon the ether. This explains Tesla's continual references to Thomson, such as demonstrating during his 1892 London lecture a 'luminous wire' sign powered by a Tesla coil, which said "WILLIAM THOMSON".

At first, Thomson found that ponderomotive forces act between two solid bodies immersed in an incompressible fluid, when one of the bodies is immobilized and made to oscillate with a force which acts along a line between its center and that of a much larger sphere which is free. The free sphere was attracted to the smaller (immobilized) sphere, if its density was greater than the fluid, while a sphere of less density than the fluid was repelled or attracted, according to the ratio of its distance to the vibrator in relation to a certain quantity.[19]

Thomson's experiments were analogical ones, for which he had evoked praise from his contemporaries even when he was still a teenager, although his refusal to believe anyone's assertions unless he could build an analogical model to prove them often led to the consternation of his contemporaries, such as Maxwell, who relied often on mathematical equations. The sphere experiments were designed to use mechanical and electrical wave methods to construct a model to probe the gravitational, inertial and momentum reactions of solid bodies in the ether.

18 [18]. F. Guthrie, Phil. Mag. xli (1871), p. 405.

19 [19]. Wm. Thomson, Phil. Mag. xli (1871), p. 405; Letter, Thomson to Guthrie, p. 427.

The Faraday Effect—the rotation of the plane of polarization of radiation in a dielectric medium (such as the atmosphere and certain solid materials) in a magnetic field—stated that the angle of rotation of radiation is proportional to the magnetic field strength and the length of the path in the medium in the field. These early experimenters also knew there was a connection between the rotatory motion and momentum, and sought to find it.

The rotatory (versus the linear) character of magnetic phenomena was strengthened by Thomson's experimentally verified conclusions on the magnetic rotation of light. This rotatory character not only influenced Tesla's discovery of the rotating magnetic field, but is also fundamental to inertia and momentum, as I will later explain, since movement of a charged body constitutes a current which creates a magnetic field which creates the rotatory motion which hypothetically may "bore" through momentum-carrying ether particles to create electromechanical momentum.

electromechanical momentum.

Thomson’s system was later investigated by C. A. Bjerknes between 1877 and 1910. Bjerknes showed that when two spheres immersed in an incompressible fluid were pulsated, they exerted a mutual attraction which obeyed Newton’s inverse square law if the pulsations were in phase, while if the phases differed by a half wave, the spheres repelled. At one quarter wave difference, there was no action. Where pulses were non-instantaneous at distances greater that a quarter wavelength, attractions and repulsions were reversed.[20]

These conclusions were hypothetically related to possible propulsion. The publishing of these researches and experiments in the physical journals of Europe were available to Nikola Tesla during his student days at the Polytechnic Institute in Graz, Austria, and at the University of Prague, in Czechoslovakia. Tesla could read and understand all these pertinent journals in their original languages.

Around 1878, George Francis FitzGerald (1851-1901) [21] compared magnetic force and velocity in a quasi-elastic solid, based on a model devised earlier by James MacCullagh (1809-47)[22] , whose model was the only one which could propagate waves with the properties of light. This was obviously analogous to the electromagnetic theory of light—as shown by MacCullagh’s ether equation of motion and ether theory which made it feasible to extend ether concepts to represent optical phenomena, along with magnetic and electrical interaction. According to Tesla the electromagnetic theory of light was erroneous because the ether is not a solid capable of transmitting transverse waves. To Tesla, light is also sound waves in the ether and is mechanical and not electrical or magnetic.

[20] 20. C. A. Bjerknes, Repertorium d. Mathematik I (Leipzig, 1877) p. 268; Proc. Camb. Phil. Soc. iii (1879), p. 276; iv (1880), p. 29.

[21] 21. George Francis FitzGerald, Phil. Trans. clxxi (1880), p. 691; FitzGerald’s Scientific

An Electrostatic Charge Carried Around

In 1879, Edwin H. Hall[23] , a student in Baltimore, repeated an experiment suggested by H. A. Rowland, his professor, whose original experiment with a gold-foil-covered ebonite disk in a magnetic field showed that electric charges on a disk were carried around with it as it was rotated.[24] In Hall’s experiment, a gold leaf strip in which a current was flowing, was placed into a magnetic gap.

This produced an electromotive force at right angles to the magnetic field and the current, which was proportional to the product of the two. Called the “Hall Effect”, it was already inherent in the three previous effects discovered much earlier by Faraday.

Faraday had discovered induction, by forcing a conductor through a magnetic field, cutting the lines of magnetic force and producing a current in the conductor, and also produced a magnetic field in an unmagnetized iron core, by forcing a current-carrying conductor through a gap between the poles of the core. Faraday’s third effect was the generation of a current. Though Hall’s effect was inherent in the fact that it was the reverse of the force required by Faraday to push the conductor through a magnetic field, Hall’s work completed the triad of effects, by experimental verification. This electromagnetic principal applies to solids not to the ether in free space. This is the basis for MHD (Magneto-Hydrodynamic) generators, and is integral to fluid propulsion.

Since the galvanometer needle in Hall’s experiment was deflected only when the magnetic field arose or collapsed, the physical thrust created was a vector product which had already been expressly suggested by Maxwell[25] almost 15 years earlier (derived from Maxwell’s analysis relative to Faraday’s work of ca. 1845), though Maxwell failed to follow up with experiment (because he died), but the equations are still used.

Though it was said by Whittaker that the Hall Effect, like the magnetic rotation of light, occurs only in ponderable bodies and not in the “free ether”, this statement is patently false since the effect actually depends on the conductivity of a medium. The fact that the effect occurs in ‘ponderable bodies’ and ‘conductive media’ however, seems important for electro-mechanical propulsion, since it shows the reaction between such bodies and media and the underlying “ether framework” which is accessed in the process.

Since the “natural media” (the ether and the atmosphere) so often referred to by

---

Writings, p. 45.

22 [22]. James MacCullagh, Brit. Assoc. Rep., (1835).

23 [23]. Edwin H. Hall, Amer. Jour. Math. ii (1879), p. 287.

24 [24]. H. A. Rowland, Ann. d. Phys, clviii (1876), p. 487.

Tesla in his patents become conductive under the influence of an electrostatic force of sufficiently high voltage and frequency, the effects of electrostatics on the free ether, dependent upon proper conditions, can impart momentum to a ponderable body, so as to move it though the free ether. A startling proof that Tesla's sound waves work in the free ether, was Tesla’s electro-mechanical plate suspensions in his laboratory in 1898.[26] This was also verified by Tesla’s transmission of mechanical energy through space by longitudinal sound waves which travel at C, as explained in his 1892 Lecture before the Institute of Electrical Engineers, London. This also showed Tesla’s priority with radio discovery.

Since an electric field ‘displaces’ the ether—which is the basis for MHD pumping (especially when pulsed)—the effect actually showed an operable “electromotive force” (“emf”), or “electro-propulsive force”, between ponderable bodies and the ether, by means of electro-mechanical action. But the high voltage and high frequency are required to ‘access’ the ether. Tesla had succeeded in transmitting mechanical energy by means of high voltage, high frequency electrostatically-induced sound waves —“radio waves”—‘accessing’ the ether. Tesla’s work at that point had already verified experimentally everything that he said and refuted what Maxwell had “mathematically” analyzed as being the supposed “electromagnetic” nature of light ---Faraday’s theory---which is false because the ether is not a solid but a gas.

Though it was implied, the literature available to me failed to explicitly state the idea that inertia and momentum are the products of an electrostatic force acting on the ether which acts within bodies and all space. Neither was it specified that a pulsating sphere or other ponderable body can be propelled through the ether, without the presence of another sphere or ponderable body to pull against—except in the statements of Nikola Tesla and his “Flivver” electromechanical “ideal flying machine”.

In 1884, the year Tesla invented the rotating magnetic field, J. J. Thomson attempted to determine the field produced by a moving electrified sphere, and the mathematical development of the theory accelerated. It was naturally easier

---

25 [25]. G. C. Maxwell, Treatise, (1862).

26 [26]. F.B.I. Papers, (1943), disclosed through the Freedom Of Information, in the statement of Marguerite Merrington. The FBI disclosure documents also show that the contents of Tesla’s safe, two truckloads of papers and apparati, 75 packing crates and trunks and another 80 large storage trunks were all removed and stored in the warehouse of the Custodian of Alien Properties in New York in 1943.

to solve such problems from the known behaviors of simple geometric forms—planes, spheres, and cylinders.[27]

The possibility that the ether was composed of positive charges carrying their own ‘sub-quantum’ negative charges which were elastic and could be displaced had apparently evaded the thinking of Thomson, who had discovered the electron, the charge of which was considered indivisible. Although he had assumed that displacement currents must occur in the ether, he had earlier thought this was due to the magnetic effects of moving charges, though he failed to show how the displacement currents occurred, or what their specific effects were in terms of inertia and momentum, until after Tesla’s 1892 lecture in London, which he attended.

There was already a sort of battle brewing between the proponents of classical electrodynamics and the proponents led by Maxwell of an electromagnetic theory of light. To the former, conductivity occurred in metal wires, etc., while with Maxwell, it occurred in the surrounding dielectrics and ether-filled space, with the conductors serving only to “guide” the action. Tesla departed from the Faraday/Maxwell camp, particularly on some major points such as a solid versus a gaseous ether. Maxwell's work seems valid in terms of electromagnetic effects in solids. FitzGerald attempted to unify the two views by arguing that Maxwell’s unification was valid because radiation could be generated by purely electrical means. It is interesting to see how these researches contrasted with the development of the electro-mechanical propulsion of Tesla.

Along this line, Wm. Thomson (1884) first considered a charged sphere moving uniformly in a straight line. He assumed that the electric charges were uniformly distributed, with an electric field the same in all directions, no matter what position the sphere was in, the same as if it were at rest. This assumption proved true so long as the velocity of the sphere and the velocity of light were neglected.

In 1889, Wm. Thomson stated[28] , “Rotational vortex-cores must be discarded; and we must have nothing but irrotational revolution and vacuous cores.” By this, Thomson meant that the vacuous “ether” inside rotating tubes of electromagnetism did not rotate. Perhaps meaning that if the cores rotated along with the rotating tubes of electromagnetic force, it would neutralize the

27 [27]. J. J. Thomson, Proc. Lond. Math. Soc. xv (1884), p. 197.

electromechanical action by which the tubes of force move.

FitzGerald found a purported error in Thomson's work, saying that the required "circuital condition" was not satisfied unless the moving charges on the sphere were considered as current, combined with the displacement and convection currents due to the motion. In correcting Thomson's error, FitzGerald went overboard in concluding that the magnetic force due to the displacement currents of the moving sphere had no resultant effect.

In 1888, Oliver Heaviside showed that the electrostatic units "vanished" to the inside of a moving sphere. This was the opposite to Faraday's experiment in which electrostatic charges placed inside a stationary, closed vessel "appeared" on the outside. Apparently, movement of the sphere—which increased its momentum—appeared to force the charges back inside.

Heaviside's conception of the "spherical" symmetry of charges during movement was disproved by G. C. F. Searle in 1896[29] . Searle found that a moving "point charge" system is not a sphere, but an oblate spheroid, with a polar axis along its direction of motion. What Whittaker failed to point out was the importance of this finding, a connection between inertia, momentum, current, surface charges "vanishing" and "reappearing", and an electrical polarity along the direction of momentum, as well as an electro-mechanical link between the movement and the ether, since the displacement of the electric lines and polarity correspond to the movement, consistent to the thinking that the tubes of force deliver momentum to a body forced to move through the ether.

During this time, Nikola Tesla had not tarried. He had already shown that the "circuitous condition" could be met in a totally new way. In his lecture before the A.I.E.E. at Columbia College, N. Y., may 20, 1891, he demonstrated his years-old technology, and stated that he connected "one terminal" to a lamp and the other to "an insulated body of the required size. In all cases the insulated body serves to give off the energy into the surrounding space, and is equivalent to a return wire." In this lecture, Tesla also spoke of his electro-mechanical momentum theory which was similar to J. J. Thomson's discovery of 1893[30] , which was flawed.

---

28 [28]. Wm. Thomson Proc. Roy. Irish Acad. i (30 Nov. 1889), p. 340.

In the same year as Searle’s finding (1896), W. B. Morton[31] similarly showed that the surface density of a charged body is unaltered by motion, but the lines of force no longer leave the surface perpendicularly (like the ship I saw while hot-tubbing). He also found that the energy of the surrounding field is greater when in motion than when at rest. Since greater work is required to move a charged sphere, than an uncharged one, with no increase in the actual mass of the sphere, a connection between moving charges and an ether was verified. This was considered true because the charges increase the “virtual mass” of the sphere, and the self-induction of convection currents is formed when the charges are set in motion by movement of the sphere, but neither of these explanations seemed to explicitly note that a force between a moving charged mass and the space through which it moves must have an ether framework to push or pull against, or that a current is caused to flow between matter and the ether, (as in Tesla's “circuital condition”) due to the movement.

29 [29] G. C. F. Searle, Phil. Trans. clxxxvii (1896), p. 675.

30 [30] J. J. Thomson, Recent Researches in Elect. and Mag.,, (1893), p. 13 (Supra.).

31 [31] W. B. Morton, Phil. Mag. xli (1896), p. 488.

J. Larmor[32] suggested that the inertia of ponderable matter may be ultimately proven to be of this nature, since atoms were constituted of systems of electrons. If a greater “virtual mass” effect (W. B. Morton, supra) is created electrically, which increases or decreases the ease of movement of a body through the “free ether”, and increases the total energy of the moving system, then a link between ponderable bodies and the ether framework was proven. If the increased charges opposed a body’s movement, then the system could be reversed to produce a thrust on the body. This suggested that a system of movement of charges into or through a sphere would propel it through ether-filled space.

There were similar implications in the works of Faraday, Maxwell, Wm. Thomson, J. J. Thomson, MacCullagh, Morton, Searle, Heaviside, Hall, and FitzGerald, of a search for a distinct relationship between momentum and the movement of charges connected to mass, through an interpenetrating “solid” ether, rather than the gaseous, dynamic, incompressible, ultra-fine ether of Tesla, existing in all space and ponderable matter, upon which electromechanical ponderomotive forces act. Once the equilibrium of the ether was “disturbed” by the moving charges, the ‘displacement’ could be rectified only by an equal and opposite reaction, which was the propulsion of the ship. Thomson had accepted the principle that the ether itself is the vehicle of mechanical momentum. The

Hall effect had shown that an electromotive thrust (at close range) is produced along a third axis as a result of a current and magnetic field at right angles. Though Tesla alleged that this thrust could not be produced “in the free ether”, but only in ponderable matter, the works of Heaviside, Searle, and Morton showed that the moving charges could either increase or decrease the normal ease of movement of a body, which inferred the feasibility of Tesla's theory.

32 [32]. J. Larmor, Phil. Trans. clxxxvi (1895), p. 697.

Nikola Tesla’s 1938 retrospective statement[33] , that he had his Dynamic Theory of Gravity “all worked out” by 1894. Some available documentation of Tesla’s work of 1891 or earlier shows that he was already experimentally ahead of the European field led by Wm. Thomson, J. J. Thomson, Searle, Morton, and Larmor—to whom he undoubtedly owed a debt. Though some of their statements were dated earlier, they lacked Tesla’s essential hardware to verify their theories, or a complete valid theory.

In 1915, Tesla stated[34] that his (electro-mechanical) “...manless airship...” would travel “...300 miles a second...” (1.08 million mph), “...without propelling engine or wings, sent by electricity to any desired point on the globe...”.

In 1940, Tesla stated[35] that he had already tested his four-part Teleforce system, which included “...a new method for producing a tremendous propelling force...”, as used on his flying machine, in case anyone noticed.

CHAPTER V: TESLA AND THE GOOD OLD BOYS’ CLUB

When Tesla popped into the picture, the British “Good Old Boys’ Club” had been debating ether theory for quite some time, and the upstart Tesla must have hurt the pride of their linemen, by making an end run to make a touchdown. After his 1892 lectures in London, they said nothing about him in their journals, never mentioned him. But he had showed them his hardware and how it worked. So they did mention “Tesla coils” and nothing else.

In 1847, Wm. Thomson, in discussing the motion of a magnetizable body in a non-uniform field of force, said a charged body attracts a body having a greater specific inductive capacity than that of the surrounding medium, and repels a body with a lower specific inductive capacitance, to afford the path of best conductance to the lines of force.

Thomson had also stated that an electrode immersed in a fluid insulating medium (apparently an analogy to a body in ether-filled space), at “...sufficiently high frequency”, would cause a gravitation of gases all around toward the electrode, but that the general opinion (of he and his European colleagues) was that it was “out of the question” that such frequencies could be reached. While this was theory on Thomson’s part, Tesla had already done the experiment. And Thomson’s last opinion regarding frequency was soon to be disproved by Tesla, a close follower and admirer of Thomson’s work.

In reiteration, the other Thomson—J. J. Thomson—had claimed to have mathematically developed the theory of moving tubes of force[36] . In his ***Recent Researches in Electricity and Magnetism*** , his hypothesis was that “...the aether is a storehouse of mechanical momentum,” as stated earlier in this book.

Tesla’s lecture before the A.I.E.E., Columbia College in 1891 was based on earlier experiments. He mentioned the “tubes of force” and disclosed some of his discoveries concerning the ether and momentum. His Feb. 1892 lecture[37] in London was made at a time when the Good Old Boys were still debating whether an electromagnetic action could occur in the free ether, at which time Tesla explained that he planned to run motors at a distance by wireless energy, with equipment he had already built, and to extract free energy from the environment. They must have been paralyzed by miscomprehension.

Four years later, Wm. Thomson stated[38] his “inclination to speculate” that “alterations of electrostatic force due to rapidly changing electrification” are propagated by “...condensational waves in the luminiferous aether.” This statement seemed to indicate that Thomson was just beginning to take Tesla seriously. By “condensational waves” he apparently meant Tesla’s mechanical pressure waves.

In his 1892 London lecture before the Good Old Boys at the Royal Academy, Tesla had stated that the ‘required’ frequencies— which Thomson had said were “out of the question” to be produced —were “...much lower than one is apt to estimate at first”, and continued (in pertinent part, emphasis mine): “ ***We may cause the molecules of the gas to collide by the use of alternate electric***

33 [33]. Nikola Tesla, Lecture before the Institute of Immigrant Welfare (May 12, 1938).
34 [34]. Tesla Article, New York Times, (Dec. 8, 1915).
35 [35]. Wm. L. Laurence, New York Times article (Sept. 22, 1940).

impulses of high frequency, and so we may imitate the process of a flame; and from experiments with high frequencies which we are now able to obtain, I think the result is producible with impulses which are transmissible through a conductor." "...it appeared to me of great interest to demonstrate the rigidity of a gaseous column"..."with such low frequencies as, say 10,000 per second which I was able to obtain without difficulty from a specially constructed alternator." "...how must a gaseous medium behave under the influence of enormous electrostatic stresses which may be active in the interstellar space, and which may alternate with inconceivable rapidity?"

36 [36]. J. J. Thomson, Supra.

37 [37] Nikola Tesla, Lecture before the Institute of Electrical Engineers, London (Feb., 1892).

38 [38] Bottomley, Nature liii (1896), p. 268.

Tesla was already talking about outer space. In this respect, Tesla seemed also to address his Primary Solar Rays. His statements also show he was attempting to make up his mind as to the characteristics of the ether, such as its rigid or fluidic states, and under what circumstances it may change, and its static or dynamic nature, of high or low density, and so forth: ***"What determines the rigidity of a body? It must be the speed and amount of moving matter. In a gas the speed may be considerable, but the density is exceedingly small, in a liquid the speed would be likely to be small, though the density may be considerable; and in both cases, the inertia resistance asserts itself. A body might move with more or less freedom through the vibrating mass, but as a whole it would be rigid."***

This statement reflects Tesla's earlier tests, as stated (emphasis mine) in his 1891 lecture before the A.I.E.E. at Columbia College in New York, repeated during his 1892 lectures in London, ***"...he illustrated how mechanical motions are produced by a varying electrostatic force acting through a gaseous medium".*** The tubes of force were said to be ***"...formed of rows of moving directed molecules"*** (in this sense, Tesla was referring to "ether molecules"). Tesla looked upon ***"...all electrostatic, current and magnetic phenomena as being due to electrostatic molecular forces."*** This statement clarified what Tesla meant by "molecules", and this is where Tesla parted ways with J. J. Thomson, who considered these phenomena to be of a purely electromagnetic nature, while Tesla regarded electrostatic phenomena to be more important.[39]

39 [39] Nikola Tesla, Lecture before the Franklin Institute, Philadelphia (Feb., 1893); Lecture before

These lectures addressed how "solid bodies" can pass through a vibrating, incompressible mass of ether which, as a whole, is rigid. This is the essence of how the "inertia resistance" of the underlying ether framework can be summoned up by an electrified body which activates and rigidifies the ether with electrostatic impulses of "sufficiently high voltage and frequency". As the inertia resistance of the ether "asserts itself" the electrified body can be propelled through the ether.

Tesla's "specially constructed alternator" was in one embodiment a 32-inch diameter one, which, if similar to the type used on the saucer I saw in 1953, was probably driven by one of Tesla's bladeless turbines. In the 1890s, Tesla said the alternator had produced up to 10 amps and 30 kilocycles, like the one below:

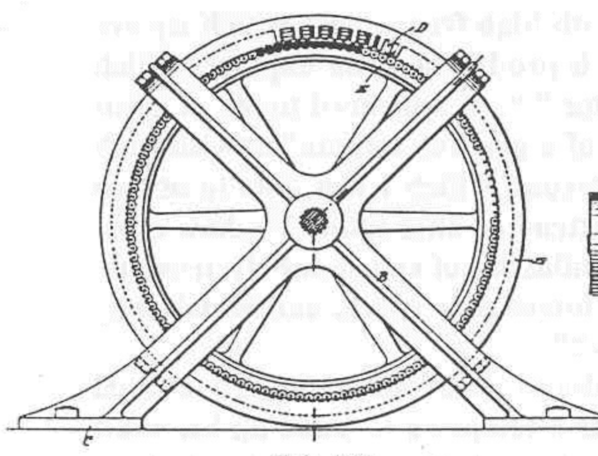
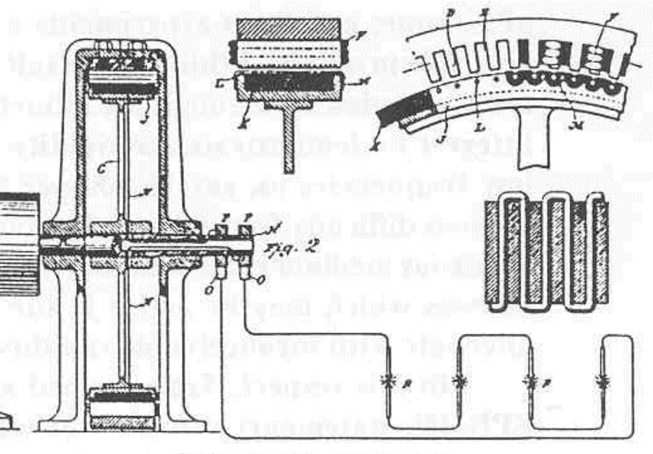


FIG. 199



FIGS. 200. 201. 202 and 203

The saucer which I saw in 1953 exhibited precessional characteristics which could have been caused by the use of such an alternator, the output and rpms of which under the circumstances could have been varied with the power level of the saucer. The high angle and low frequency of the precessions would be consistent with the use of a large diameter alternator, which was turned more slowly at hovering power, and increased in rpm for more power as the ship accelerated.

Since the alternator would have been attached to the airframe of the saucer, it could have caused the entire saucer to precess at a high angle and low frequency at low rpms. But this appeared to be a malfunction or perhaps a defect in the saucer at that time which had not yet been corrected. A "double plate" gyrostabilizer idea which I mention in

the National Electric Light Association, St. Louis (March, 1893).

the following “bare-bones” saucer design would probably have corrected this problem, unless it was due to a turbine problem, with the turbine turning too slowly to maintain correct stability. On the other hand, the problem could have been caused by a malfunction of the main gyrostabilizer system in which case the rotating alternator’s precessional characteristics predominated. This situation is shown in the last illustration in this book, the saucer which I saw in 1953.

The balanced forces holding the ship in mid-air would have been equivalent to holding it on “gimbals of air”, so that it could have been precessing freely according to the speed of the rotating alternator’s angular momentum and mass. This would have required very little force if the main gyro-stabilizer was malfunctioning, but points up the need for the better gyro-stabilization system which Tesla emphasized in his 1912-14 statements.

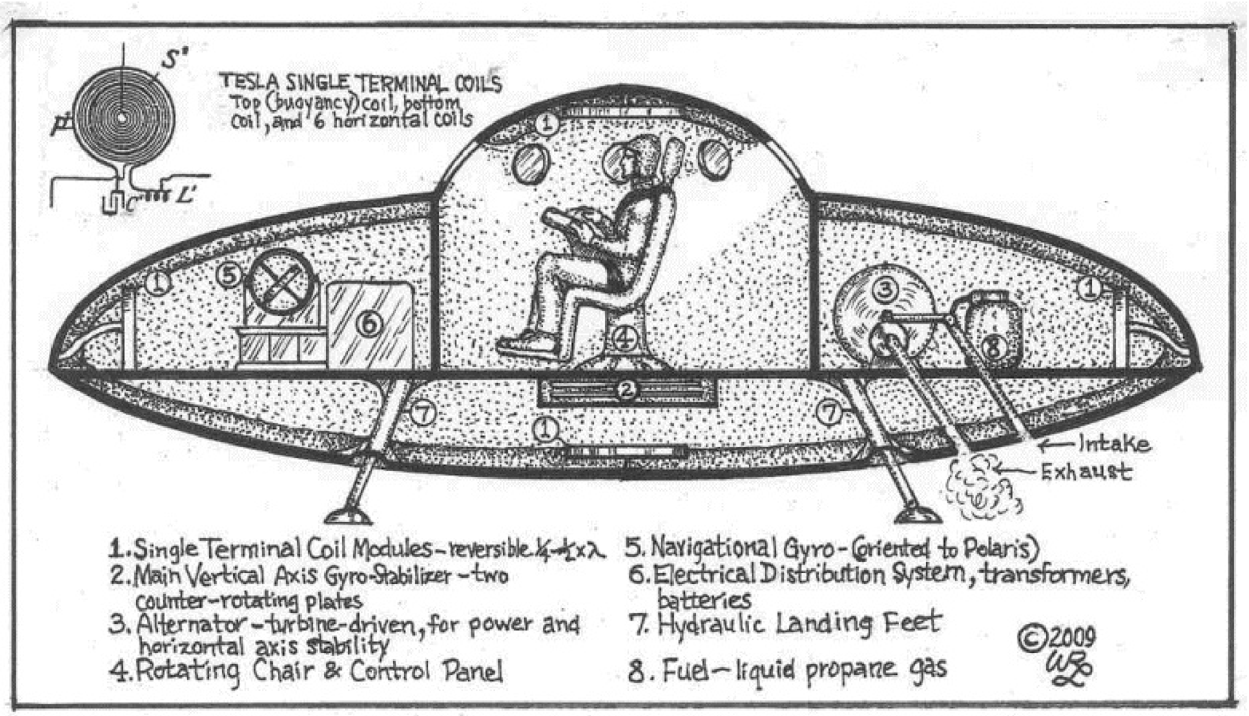
Tesla had anticipated the problem of how to counteract the tendency of his VTOL-type ship to rotate due to the torque of the propeller, alternator or turbine, by using two turbines or alternators, turning on parallel axes in the same direction or counter-rotated, as stated in his patent #1,655,114, Apparatus for Aerial Transportation, Jan. 3, 1928. In the case of a saucer however two-axis gyrostabilization is necessary to stabilize the ship, one on horizontal axis to stop the spin of the ship, the other on vertical axis to keep the ship upright. And then a special gyro-stabilizer would be required to stop the wild gyrating of the ship caused by the alternator. But despite any possible malfunction of the main gyro-stabilizer, the high angle precession problem was solved when the alternator was spun up to high rpms as the ship departed. It just seemed such a big problem for the pilot and crew if they were trying to see where they were. I think by the way the ship made the two 90-degree turns to go about a hundred feet lower in altitude showed that they suddenly realized that they were over a town and wanted to diminish the visibility of the ship by the public by those maneuvers.

As the ship accelerated to full speed and power, its low precessional rate and high precessional angle became a mere highfrequency vibration, as the ship shot to infinity in three seconds (as I counted them off, “...thousand and one, thousand and two, thousand and three...”). My calculation of the speed was based on my being able to see the ship for thirty miles. (I had previously miscalculated the speed by assuming that I could only see the ship for 7.5 miles, but I see aircraft coming over the Sandia Mountains thirty miles away all the time so this was wrong.) Since the ship covered ca. 30 miles in three seconds it was doing ca. 36,000 mph.

As the precession of the ship became the high-frequency vibration, this tended to blur the appearance of its edges, something which has probably made it more difficult to obtain sharp definitions of the profiles of saucers in photographs and videos. Coupled with this physical vibration may be the “Faraday effect”—the “magnetooptical effect” which tends to blur the outlines of objects subjected to intense electrostatic fields. The extension of the ship’s electric field also extends its magnetic field, and causes a rotation of the optical plane, so in addition to visual effects of the high frequency precessional oscillations, the optical plane is actually rotated to create the weird magneto-optical effects so often reported, and becomes distorted in the minds of mystics, who think it is some sort of “time travel” or “inter-dimensional travel” effect, a “spacewarping” or “wrapping around” of “time and space” by a “rotating body” as it moved through space ala Einstein, except saucers don’t “revolve”, as proven by my Peiltochterkompass and visual observations, and Einstein was full of baloney, as Tesla said.

The flying saucer may be powered by a Tesla alternator, powering a Tesla coil, with improvements which have probably come along in the meanwhile. The required currents could be conveyed through conductors by means of high voltage stepping switches or relays, to several coils facilitating the instantaneous control of a ship. Since an on-board power generator is usually required—unless the wireless Tesla transmission of power is used—the use of an alternator is convenient to run a spark gap, coil and condenser combination, since the necessary high frequency alternations can be easily stepped up to higher voltages by several closely linked “extra” coils distributed about the ship. That would make it easier to pipe medium high voltage current around to several coils as needed. The more modern development of very high K-factor dielectrics now makes it possible to more easily handle very high voltages and currents and greatly reduce the size of components, so that a high-output coil of several million volts can be made only a few inches in diameter, for example.

The master gyro-stabilizer for German ships, according to undocumented rumors from Germany, was purportedly constructed of two counter-rotating steel plates with pinion reversing gears between to create equal and opposite rotation. The precession and torque of one plate would cancel the precession and torque of the other plate to create the stability that Tesla sought, and may have been the “special” device which he referred to in 1914 in addition to the turbine, relied on for gyro-stability. For the high altitude flights that I observed in 1946-47, a pressurized cockpit would be required. Below is my illustration of the basic “bare bones” man-made UFO:


S'
p'
L'
TESLA SINGLE TERMINAL COILS
Top (buoyancy) coil, bottom
Coil, and 6 horizontal coils
1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
Intake
Exhaust
1. Single Terminal Coil Modules - reversible ¼-¼xλ
2. Main Vertical Axis Gyro-Stabilizer - two counter-rotating plates
3. Alternator - turbine-driven, for power and horizontal axis stability
4. Rotating Chair & Control Panel
5. Navigational Gyro - (oriented to Polaris)
6. Electrical Distribution System, transformers, batteries
7. Hydraulic Landing Feet
8. Fuel - liquid propane gas
©2009

TESLA'S DYNAMIC THEORY OF GRAVITY

According to Tesla's 1938 Lecture before the Board of Immigrant Welfare[40] , his Dynamic Theory of Gravity was one of two far reaching discoveries which he "...worked out in all details" in the years 1893 and 1894. Tesla never published his complete theory and the government now possesses all the papers related to it. The 1938 lecture was less than five years before his death.

More complete statements concerning these discoveries can only be gleaned from scattered and sparse sources, because the papers of Tesla are concealed in government vaults for "national security" reasons since 1945. When I specifically asked for these papers at the "National Security Research Center"—now the "Robert J. Oppenheimer Research Center"—at Los Alamos National Laboratory in 1979, though they admitted having the papers, I was denied access because they were classified and I didn't have a "badge" (clearance), and even though on that same day, I discovered the plans for the hydrogen bomb on an open shelf, and told a Harvard graduate student about it later in the day at a Santa Fe restaurant. The student went to Los Alamos, copied the plans and wrote an exposé at Harvard. I asked myself, "What could be in Tesla's papers in 1943 which is more secret than hydrogen bomb plans?" Of course I already knew the

40 [40] Nikola Tesla (supra).

answer.

In his 1938 lecture, Tesla said that he was progressing with work on his Dynamic Theory of Gravity, and hoped to "...give it to the world" as soon as he had completed his secret developments.

The "two great discoveries" to which Tesla referred were:

1. The Dynamic Theory of Gravity - which assumed a field of force which accounts for the motions of bodies in space; assumption of this field of force dispenses with the concept of space curvature ala Einstein; the ether has an indispensable function in the phenomena (of universal gravity, inertia, momentum, and the movement of heavenly bodies, as well as all atomic and molecular matter); and,

2. Environmental Energy - the discovery of a new physical Truth: There is no energy in matter other than that received from the environment.

In the usual Tesla birthday announcement—on his 79th birthday (1935)—Tesla made a brief reference to the theory saying it applies to molecules and atoms as well as to the largest heavenly bodies, and to "...all matter in the universe in any phase of its existence from its very formation to its ultimate disintegration."

Those imbued with relativist theory often refer to "pure energy" in some "form", but there is no such thing, since "energy" is an abstract "ability" which has no physical form as an entity unto itself. Who's to say what "form" is "pure" and what form is not?

My favorite philosopher, Ayn Rand, said "...In reality, there are no contradictions. Things are what they are irrespective as to whether we know it or not. Check your premises." If the term "energy" is only a convenient abstraction, then it does not exist in physical form, and really describes a process, the potential to perform work as a by-product of matter and electromagnetic radiation in perpetual motion, some of the force of which has been diverted through a path where it performs the desired work, as it goes on its way though the universe. Every change of form of form, matter or radiation involves the "work" which induces the change, or the "work" which is induced by the change. Without work there is no change, but all work is ultimately the product of the universe in perpetual, self-sustaining motion, as a rule and not an exception.

As for Tesla's theory, we have hints, such as, that the earth is the "star of human birth." In poetic expressions, he referred to scientific meanings in statements such as, that by using the "thunderbolt of Jove" (the Indo-European sky god), man "annihilates time and space", an allusion to the use of electrostatics ("thunderbolts") to travel so fast, that time and space are "annihilated". Where the government has stolen his papers, we must search for meaning elsewhere. In an article[41] , Tesla outlined his Dynamic Theory of Gravity in poetic form (as paraphrased by me):

1. That the luminiferous ether fills all space;
2. ***That the ether is acted upon by the life-giving creative force;***

3. ***That the ether is thrown into "infinitesimal whirls" at near the speed of light, becoming ponderable matter;***
4. ***That when the force subsides and motion ceases, matter reverts to the ether (similar to "atomic decay", only non-relativistic)***

5. ***That man can harness these processes, to:***

-Precipitate matter from the ether
-Create whatever he wants with the matter and energy derived
-Alter the earth's size
-Control earth's seasons (weather control)
-Guide earth's path through the Universe, like a space ship
-Cause the collisions of planets to produce new suns and stars,

heat, and light
-Originate and develop life in infinite forms

Tesla was referring to unlimited energy, derived from the environment. Several of his major free energy discoveries have been the exclusive stolen property of our Secret Government. The conversion of a weaker force to a stronger force—electro-mechanical propulsion—used to control the much weaker gravity force, would accomplish more work in the same amount of time, and therefore produce "over unity" results.

Some of Tesla's unusual conceptualization of the ether had been nonetheless expounded piecemeal, in his preceding 1890s lectures.[42] He later railed against the limited and erroneous theories of Maxwell, Hertz, Lorentz and Einstein.

---

[41] 41. John J. O'Neill, Prodigal Genius (1944) pp. 251-52, referring to the Tesla article *Man's Greatest Achievement* .

Tesla believed that the ether is composed of “independent carriers immersed in an insulating fluid”. A “carrier” is a conductor. The ether therefor is a conductor. It is unclear whether Tesla meant that the “insulative fluid” in which the conductive ether is immersed is the ether's own insulative fluid or the air, which Tesla often referred to as an insulator. When Tesla spoke of “the medium”, he meant the ether, as stated here (emphasis mine): ***“...But the upper strata of the air are conducting, and so, perhaps, is the medium in free space beyond the atmosphere, and these may contain an opposite charge.”*** (Nikola Tesla, ***High Frequency and High Potential Currents*** , Chapter XXVIII, The Philadelphia and St. Louis Lecture. On Light and Other High Frequency Phenomena, February and March, 1893). We know today that the ionosphere is positively charged and that it is conductive. Meanwhile, Tesla said the ether in outer space may have a negative charge, and is also probably conductive.

Tesla’s ether was neither the “tenuous” ether with the “solidity of the hardest steel” of Maxwell and Hertz, nor the half-hearted, gaseous ether of Lorentz. Though Tesla’s ether was gaseous it consisted of “...carriers immersed in an insulating fluid”, which filled all space, with properties which varied according to relative movement, the presence of mass, and the electric and magnetic conditions it is subjected to. It’s incompressibility and other qualities meant it could be used to produce motion of ponderable bodies.

Tesla’s ether was rigidified by rapidly-varying electrostatic force, and was thereby involved in gravitational effects, inertia, and momentum, especially in the space near earth, since, as explained by Tesla, the earth is “...like a charged metal ball moving through space”, which creates enormous, rapidly-varying electrostatic forces which diminish in intensity with the square of the distance from earth, just like gravity. Since the direction of propagation radiates from the earth, the so-called force of gravity is toward the earth, and this apparently also applied to all other bodies in space under the theory.

Tesla commenced to complete his theory at the same approximate period of time that many of his experimental results and observations had been revealed in the three lectures, often illustrated with demonstrations using Tesla-invented

42 [42]. T. C. Martin, Inventions, Researches and Writings of Nicola Tesla, (1894), Chapter XXV *Introduction - The Scope of the Tesla Lectures .*

equipment, as revealed in the following eight excerpts (the statements in quotes are Tesla's actual documented words) in pertinent part (emphasis mine):

1. “The most probable medium filling the space is one consisting of ***independent carriers immersed in an insulating fluid.”***

2. “In his experiments he dwells first on some phenomena produced by ***electrostatic force, which he considers in the light of modern theories to be the most important force in nature for us to investigate.”***

3. ***“He illustrates how mechanical motions are produced by a varying electrostatic force acting through a gaseous medium.”***
4. “One of the most interesting results arrived at in pursuing these experiments, is the ***demonstration of the fact that a gaseous medium upon which vibrations are impressed by rapid changes of electrostatic potential, is rigid.”***
5. “If through this medium enormous electrostatic stresses are assumed to act, which vary rapidly in intensity, it would allow the motion of a body through it, yet it would be rigid and elastic, although the fluid itself might be devoid of these properties.” 6. “...on the assumption that the independent carriers are of any configuration such that the fluid resistance to motion in one direction is greater than in another, a stress of that nature would cause the carriers to arrange themselves in groups, since they would ***turn to each other their sides of the greatest electrical density,*** in which position the ***fluid resistance to approach would be smaller than to receding.”***
7. “If in a medium of the above characteristics a brush would be formed by a steady potential, an exchange of the carriers would go on continuously, and there would be less carriers per unit volume in the brush than in the space at some distance from the electrode, this corresponding to rarefaction.”
8. “If the potentials were rapidly changing, the result would be very different; the higher the frequency of the pulses, the slower would be the exchange of carriers; finally, the motion of translation through measurable space would cease and, with a sufficiently high frequency and intensity of the stress, the carriers would be drawn towards the electrode, and compression would result.”

In 5. above, Tesla states that an assumption exists that enormous, rapidly-varying electrostatic stresses exist in the natural environment,which rigidify the ether , yet allow the motion of a body through it. In 6., he assumes that the carriers can be induced to cause motion of a body in one direction. In 7., he mentions that a steady D.C. potential brush will cause a continuous rarefaction of the ether carriers in one direction to induce the pulling motion via the of the ether carriers in one direction to induce the pulling motion via the "veritable ropes of air" which Tesla mentioned in 1914. And in 8., he gives the conditions for compression by high frequency potentials which will stop the carriers from passing through the solid body, so as to force the tubes of force from the opposite direction to dissolve in the body and impart momentum.

The eight excerpts are further reducible to the following four statements pertinent to his electro-mechanical propulsion technology:

1. Mechanical motions of solid bodies can be produced by varying electrostatic force acting through a gaseous medium (ether), which thereby becomes rigidified, yet allows solid bodies to pass through.

2. Under influence of stress in one direction, the carriers may group together, forming tubes of force, creating greater ease of movement in that direction.

3. When a D.C. brush is created by a steady potential in one direction, a continuous exchange of carriers is created corresponding to ether rarefaction, as the tubes of force are drawn into the conductor.

4. With a sufficiently high frequency (higher that that creating the brush discharges) and intensity of stress in the opposite direction, carrier exchange is blocked by ether compression, forcing the tubes of force entering the conductors of the ship from the opposite direction to dissolve and impart mechanical momentum.

The system, using the two kinds of potentials (D.C. and A.C.) is known as "p2", according to Tesla's (and that of the Germans under von Braun's direction) 1936-38 UFO project by that name at Los Alamos, New Mexico. My friend Peter van Dresser was the first person to tell me of von Braun's pre-war stay in New Mexico. Peter was distressed to the end of his life by the fact that, while he had invented the first successful liquid-fueled rocket engine, Dr. Robert Goddard had not only misappropriated Peter's invention, but had given it over to von Braun during his two-year stay in New Mexico. Peter considered Goddard a traitor and invention thief for this reason. Prior to Peter's invention, all the rockets of von Braun and Goddard exploded at an altitude of around 5,000-6,000 feet because the combustion chamber overheated. Peter wrapped the fuel lines around the chamber, cooling it and vaporizing the fuel for greater efficiency, making continuously extended flights possible.

In reiteration, the steady D.C. Electrostatic potential of the brush creates the

In reiteration, the steady D.C. Electrostatic potential of the brush creates the required exchange of carriers, ‘rarefying’ (stretching) the elastic, rigidified medium (composed of ether carriers in an insulating fluid) in advance of the ship, as the higher frequency A.C. to the rear compresses them, blocking exchange in that direction, dissolving the tubes of force from the opposite direction and creating instant momentum, normal to the surface.

In 1884, John Henry Poynting’s theorem had been that the flux of energy at any place is represented by the vector product of the electric and magnetic forces, multiplied by $C/4\pi$.[43] This implied that forces in a conductor could be transformed there into other forms (such as the transformation in the conductors of the tubes of force into momentum). In 1893, J. J. Thomson stated practically the same thing, saying “...the aether is itself the vehicle of mechanical momentum, of amount $(1/4\pi C)$ (D B) per unit volume.[44]

(Using e.-s. Units for D and E
And e.-m. Units for B and H.)
E = electrical force

D = electrical displacement
H = magnetic force
B = magnetic induction

Heinrich Hertz’s theory[45] was that two systems of varying current should exert a ponderomotive force on each other due to the variations. Tesla’s disagreement was apparently based on the fact that he proved that the “ponderomotive force” is due not to mere “varying currents”, but to rarefaction and compression of the ether carriers, respectively, produced by ***different kinds of currents*** (D.C., rapidly varying electrostatic and A.C.) Moreover, Tesla's method for accessing the mechanical momentum of the ether was from a completely different and simpler perspective, the creation of (longitudinal) sound waves in the ether in the direction of desired propulsion. This also appears to be the method which allows the ships to eliminate drag and sonic booms.

---

43 [43]. John Henry Poynting, Phil. Trans. clxxv (1884), p. 343.

44 [44]. J. J. Thomson, Recent Researches in Elect. And Mag. (1893), p. 13.

45 [45]. Heinrich Hertz, Ann. d. Phys. Xxxi (1887), p. 421; *Hertz’s Electric Waves* , translated by D. E. Jones, p. 29.

J. J. Thomson[46] had extensively developed the theory of the moving tubes of force, both magnetic and electric, saying that the magnetic effect was a secondary one created by the movement of electric tubes, and assumed:

➔ That tubes exist everywhere in space, either in closed circuits or terminating on atoms;
➔ that electric force becomes perceivable only when electric tubes have a greater tendency to lie in one direction;
➔ that in a steady magnetic field, positive and negative tubes may move in opposite directions with equal velocity;
➔ that a beam of light is a group of electric tubes moving at C at right angles to their length.

Tesla later said his “dirigible torpedo” (“steerable” torpedo) would fly at a maximum 300 miles per second, perhaps since its forward velocity would be some discreet fraction of C. Thomson’s 1893 publishing on this subject followed Tesla’s 1891 lectures before Franklin Institute and Columbia College in America, and his lecture before the Royal Society in London, and appeared to shed light on Tesla’s work, stating:

➔ ***That a ponderomotive force is exerted on a conductor carrying electric current, consisting of a transfer of mechanical momentum from the agent which exerts the force to the body which experiences it;***

➔ ***that, if moving tubes entering a conductor are dissolved in it, mechanical momentum is given to the conductor;***
➔ ***that such momentum must be at right angles to the tube and to the magnetic induction;***
➔ ***that momentum stored in a unit volume of the field is proportional to the vector product of electric and magnetic vectors.***

Thomson’s ***Electromagnetic Momentum*** hypothesis was later developed by H. Poincaré[47] and by M. Abraham[48] .

46 [46]. J. J. Thomson (supra).
47 [47]. H. Poincaré, Archives Né erl. (2) v (1900), p. 252.
48 [48]. M. Abraham, Gött., Nach., (1902), p. 20.

But we can see a distinct difference between Tesla's and Thomson's theories in that Tesla said nothing about the electric and magnetic fields, relying solely on that Tesla said nothing about the electric and magnetic fields, relying solely on the effects of the combination of a rapidly-varying electrostatic D.C. (rarefying) potential and a higher frequency rapidly-varying electrostatic A.C. (compressing) potential, both produced by a Tesla coil with different tuning.

By 1910, it was said[49] (by Sir. Edmund Whittaker) that the consequences of these pronouncements left three alternatives:

(1) Modify the theory to reduce to zero the resultant force on an element of free aether (as with Maxwell, Hertz, and Einstein);
(2) assume the force sets aether in motion (as with Helmholtz);
(3) accept the principle that aether is the vehicle of mechanical ·momentum of amount [D B] per unit volume (as with Poynting and J. J. Thomson).

Whittaker’s greatest error was in omitting mentioning Tesla's theory entirely, even though Tesla’s experiments had verified it, in front of the esteemed members of the “Royal Academy”. It seems highly improbable that they simply failed to comprehend Tesla. Tesla however said he had not “completely” worked out his Dynamic Theory of Gravity until 1893 and 1894, but never published it, so how could it be discussed? In reality, the “three (later) alternatives” were moot, and a new law existed, that of Tesla. So we see that the suppression of Tesla’s theory was partially a conspiracy and partially his own fault.

Tesla’s Secrecy

Due to his pacifist sympathies, Tesla originally contemplated giving his electric flying machine to the Geneva Convention or League of Nations, for use in ‘policing the world’ to prevent war. Later disillusioned after WW I with the collapse of the League, he said he’d “underestimated man’s combative capacity.”[50]

In 1919, Tesla’s reason for increased secrecy emerged[51] , while discussing his plans for a “three-hour” airplane between New York and London: ***“...we have here the appalling prospect of a war between nations at a distance***

---

49 [49]. Sir Edmund Whittaker, A History of the Theories of the Aether and Electricity, (1910) Edinborough.
50 [50]. Nikola Tesla, New York Times, article (July 10. 1934).
51 [51]. Tesla Interview with Frederick M. Kerby, Resolution Magazine, (1919).

of thousands of miles, with weapons so destructive and demoralizing that the world could not endure them. That is why there must be no more war.” With the U. S. government’s spurning of his defense suggestions and technology, Tesla’s only recourse was to withhold his Dynamic Theory of Gravity, and to dissuade discovery in that direction. But he had already sold his secrets to the Germans in 1914.

In 1929[52] Tesla ridiculed Heinrich Hertz’s 1887-89 experiments purportedly proving the Maxwellian “structureless” ether filling all space, ***“of inconceivable tenuity yet solid and possessed of rigidity incomparably greater than the hardest steel.”*** Tesla’s arguments were to the contrary, saying he had always believed in a “gaseous” ether in which he had observed (longitudinal) waves more akin to sound waves. He recounted how he had developed a “new form of vacuum tube” in 1896, ***“...capable of being charged to any desired potential, and operated it with effective pressures of about 4,000,000 volts.”*** He described how blue coronal discharges about the bulb when in use, verified the existence of ***“particles smaller than air”*** , and a gas so light that an earth-sized volume would weight only 1/20 pound. He further said that so-called “electromagnetic waves” are actually longitudinal--not transverse---sound waves moving at the velocity of light through this medium.

In 1932[53] Tesla mentioned using his special tube to investigate cosmic rays, saying that when its emanations were impinged upon a target material, radioactive emissions resulted, and that radioactive bodies were simply “targets” continuously bombarded by ***“infinetesimal bullets projected from all parts of the universe”, without which “all radioactivity would cease”.*** His name for these “bullets” was “Primary Solar Rays”.

Later in 1932[54] , Tesla said Einstein’s theory regarding changing matter into force, and force into matter, was “absurd”. He compared this to the difference between body and mind, saying force is a ***“...function of matter”*** , and that, just as a mind could not exist without a body, ***“...without matter, there can be no force.”***

---

52 [52]. Nikola Tesla interview, New York Herald Tribune, (Sept. 22, 1929), pp. 1, 29.

53 [53]. Letter, New York Times, (Feb. 6, 1932), p. 16, col. 8.

54 [54]. *Nikola Tesla Papers* , Rare Books and Manuscript Library, Columbia University (Apr. 15, 1932).

Again in 1932[55] , Tesla derided the Maxwellian/Hertzian ether, while saying that higher frequency waves ***“...follow the curvature of the earth and bend around obstacles”*** , yet in Apr. 8, 1934[56] , Tesla said that short waves for “power purposes” of the ‘wireless art’, were inappropriate, and that power will travel in “long waves”. All this in retrospect to deaf ears since no one in the public’s knowledge uses wireless technology to transmit energy today, and no one since Tesla has been able to do so because they haven’t paid close attention to all that Tesla said (that we in the public know of).

With so many “experts” today claiming to know Tesla technology such as those who say that Tesla used “quaternion equations” (“curved space-time” and “fourth-dimensional” math, ala relativism), I will settle once and for all the question of authenticity of these “experts” on Tesla. Lest there be any misunderstanding or confusion about Tesla’s beliefs, here is a 1932 newspaper quote under the headline “Pioneer Radio Engineer Gives Views on power:

"The assumption of the Maxwellian ether was thought necessary to explain the propagation of light by transverse vibrations, which can only occur in a solid. So fascinating was this theory that even at present it has many supporters, despite the manifest impossibility of a medium, perfectly mobile and tenuous to a degree inconceivable, and yet extremely rigid, like steel. As a result some illusionary ideas have been formed and various phenomena erroneously interpreted. The so-called Hertz waves are still considered a reality proving that light is electrical in its nature, and also that the ether is capable of transmitting transverse vibrations of frequencies however low. This view has become untenable since I showed that the universal medium is a gaseous body in which only longitudinal pulses can be propagated, involving alternating compressions and expansions similar to those produced by sound waves in the air. Thus, a wireless transmitter does not emit Hertz waves which are a myth, but sound waves in the ether, behaving in every respect like those in the air, except that, owing to the great elastic force and extremely small density of the medium, their speed is that of light. general knowledge of this subject seems very limited, I may state, that even waves only one or two millimeters long, which I produced thirtythree years ago, provided that they carry sufficient energy, can be transmitted around the globe. This is not so much due to refraction and reflection as to the properties of a gaseous medium and certain peculiar action which I shall explain some time in the future. At present it may be sufficient to call attention to an important fact in this connection, namely, that this bending of the beam projected from reflector

does not affect in the least its behavior in other respects.

It might be inferred that I am alluding to the curvature of space supposed to exist according to the teachings of relativity, but nothing could be further from my mind. I hold that space cannot be curved, for the simple reason that it can have no properties. It might as well be said that God has properties. He has not, but only attributes and these are of our own making. Of properties we can only speak when dealing with matter filling the space. To say that in the presence of large bodies space becomes curved, is equivalent to stating that something can act upon nothing. I, for one, refuse to subscribe to such a view."

Anyone who says otherwise after reading this quote is definitely a liar or someone who has serious reading comprehension problems and shouldn’t be taken seriously. You may agree or disagree with it but you can’t deny that this is what the man said and meant.

THE NATURE OF ELECTRICITY

What were the old ether physicists referring to when they attempted to describe “an incompressible, perfect fluid”? What would a “perfect fluid” do? It would be able to “wet” and soak into everything it came into contact with, such as protons, and neutrons, and could flow everywhere often without resistance (except in the circumstances already described). This fluid, the ether, because of its ultra-fineness, could flow everywhere. Grosser matter on the other hand, experienced resistance, depending on the circumstances. Another fluid—electricity—could flow in certain places, and wet only certain things, but often met resistance.

In his 1891 A.I.E.E. lecture at Columbia College, Tesla said (in pertinent part, emphasis mine): ***“What is electricity, and what is magnetism? “...We are now confident that electric and magnetic phenomena are attributable to the ether, and we are perhaps justified in saying that the effects of static electricity are effects of ether in motion.” “...we may speak of electricity or of an electric condition, state or effect.” “...we must distinguish two such effects, opposite in character neutralizing each other.” “...for in a medium of the properties of the ether, we cannot possibly exert a strain, or produce a displacement or motion of any kind, without causing in the surrounding medium an equivalent and***

---

[55] 55. Nikola Tesla, New York Herald Tribune, (Sept. 11, 1932).

[56] 56. Nikola Tesla letter, New York Times, (Apr. 8, 1934).

opposite effect." "...its condition determines the positive and negative character." "We know that it acts like an incompressible fluid;" "...the electro-magnetic theory of light and all facts observed teach us that electric and ether phenomena are identical." "The puzzling behavior of the ether as a solid to waves of light and heat, and as a fluid to the motion of bodies through it, is certainly explained in the most natural and satisfactory manner by assuming it to be in motion, as Sir William Thomson has suggested." "Nor can anyone prove that there are transverse ether waves emitted from an alternate current machine; to such slow disturbances, the ether, if at rest, may behave as a true fluid."

In his statements, Tesla was balancing the various arguments in preparation for his decision: ***"...Electricity, therefore, cannot be called ether in the broad sense of the term; but nothing would seem to stand in the way of calling electricity ether associated with matter, or bound ether; or, in other words, that the so-called static charge of the molecule is ether associated in some way with the molecule."***

"...It cannot differ in density, ether being incompressible; it must, therefore, be under some strain or in motion, and the latter is the most probable."

Tesla therefore believed in 1891 in an ether which was in motion relative to earth. I think this belief was modulated in Tesla's 1899 Colorado Springs Experiments due to his discovery that the earth emits rapidly-varying electrostatic forces which rigidify the ether in the earth's electric field and create the "carry along" ether, while the tubes of force induced by this are in relative motion.

The thing which Tesla had realized, was that ether possesses electric charges which are deposited on molecules. His "dynamic" ether belief is consistent with the idea that everything is in motion.

The importance of cosmic motion to the effects of electrostatic charges was apparently brought up by Tesla in his lecture: ***"About fifteen years ago, Prof. Rowland demonstrated a most interesting and important fact, namely that a static charge carried around produces the effects of an electric current." "...and conceiving the electrostatically charged molecule in motion, this experimental fact gives us a fair idea of magnetism. We can conceive lines or tubes of force which physically exist, being formed of rows of directed moving***

molecules; we can see that these lines must be closed, that they must tend to shorten and expand, etc. It likewise explains in a reasonable way, the most puzzling phenomenon of all, permanent magnetism, and, in general, has all the beauties of the Ampere theory without possessing the vital defect of the same, namely, the assumption of molecular currents. Without enlarging further upon the subject, I would say, that I look upon all electrostatic, current and magnetic phenomena as being due to electrostatic molecular forces.”

In these statements, Tesla showed he was aware that any “stationary” locale on earth is actually in fantastic motion (“70,000 mph”). The electrostatic charges “carried around” are currents between atoms and the ether, which produce magnetism. The phenomena of ‘permanent magnetism’ or ‘cosmically induced’ magnetism are apparently due to electrostatic charges ‘carried around’ by cosmic molecular motion, in the universal ether field.

Since no one can hold atoms, electrons or molecules perfectly still—because they are in fantastic motion—all atoms and molecules carry currents producing magnetic fields. Since a magnetic field is the product of a current, no one can produce a magnetic field without electricity, moving through or along a conductor, or as electrostatic charges in local or cosmic motion.

CONCLUSION

Since these phenomena are electro-mechanical in nature, they are synthesized by recreation of the electromagnetic conditions which a body would exhibit due to a particular kinetic state. Just as sound waves of low frequency can penetrate a body, waves of higher frequencies can cause the ether to “assert its inertia resistance.”

Tesla stated that the steady “brush” discharge causes a steady exchange of carriers, but emphasized the necessity of the “rapidlyvarying electrostatic” impulses to create sound waves in the ether to cause it to assert its “inertia resistance” and form the tubes of force. Here is where Tesla said the best of electrical engineers would not believe it, that the rapidly-varying electrostatic potentials create the steady D.C. potential which causes a steady exchange of carriers, which brings in the tubes of force to propel his ship. Because the D.C. potential is undisturbed yet continuous and rapidly-varying, it is nonetheless “steady”.

The technology involves high voltage (“D.C.”) electrostatic ‘brush’ currents on top of the ship and which rarefies the elastic ether and creates the bouyancy of the ship, and in front which stretches (“rarefies”) the elastic ether and pulls the ship forward, while a higher frequency A.C. current compresses the ether and blocks ether from passing through the rear of the ship. These currents force the tubes of force to dissolve in the conductors of the ship and impart momentum. Since the strength of the electrical attractive force is 2 x 10^{39} power times stronger than the gravitational attractive force, that much more work can theoretically be done in the same amount of time, using the same “energy”. And that is how the ship I saw in 1953 accelerated to ca. 36,000 mph in three seconds.

Since “seeing is believing”, and I have seen, I believe. The behavior of man-made flying saucers proves the existence of these “free energy” inventions of Nikola Tesla, which show that he was right in his opposition to Relativism, and that the prevalent theories taught in the scientific institutions of the world today are false.

Consistent with the idea that “dynamite comes in small packages”, this small book, along with my prior book, ***Space Aliens From the Pentagon*** , along with my third edition of that book, ***Pentagon Aliens*** , have all initiated the rediscovery, reconstruction and publication of Nikola Tesla’s ***Dynamic Theory of Gravity*** and related electro-mechanical propulsion technology, the greatest invention of mankind.

The deep black Secret Government by whatever name, be it “illuminati”, “cabal” or whatever —a fraudulently concealed, unconstitutional, corporate-state entity —has heretofore controlled electro-mechanical propulsion technology by concealing it along with other advanced free energy technology, on behalf of international, coercive, corporate-state monopolists. Electro-mechanically propeled ships are concealed through “special effects”, and “stealth” technology (also based on Tesla inventions)—as they fly over and hover in the sky, and by “psycho-political” means—the dissemination of false “alien” and “extraterrestrial” origins propaganda—through “UFOlogy” groups led by covert government agents. While official government spokesmen deny the existence of flying saucers, covert government agents, posing as “skeptics”, “UFOlogists”, and “paranormalists”, engage the public’s attention in a phony debate. The “skeptics” ridicule the UFOlogists and paranormalists, lumping them together with rational witnesses, as if “...to see a flying saucer” is as ridiculous as “...to see a ghost or alien”. This phony debate based on false logic fits nicely into the see a ghost or alien”. This phony debate based on false logic fits nicely into the overall cover-up system, designed to conceal advanced human technology, not “alien” technology.

The grip of this secret socio-economic dictatorship depends on coercively extorted income, by forcing us to buy archaic fuels and power—which funds its control of our communications, political and monetary decisions, enforcement of unjust laws, regulations and procedures expanding its powers, while limiting or excluding our individual human rights, and denying our access to information, materials, and technology which is ours because we paid for it with our taxes. Our access to the truth is necessary for our fully-informed consent, independence, and survival as a free people.

Despite the confusion, concealment, BIG LIES, and judicial and socio-economic abuse by the corporate state, we can resurrect the TRUTH, determine the correct technology, circumvent obstructions, and use our creative ingenuity to build these ships for ourselves, to free our society from the Secret Fascist Corpocracy.

There is much confusion created by government agents or dupes regarding UFO propulsion technology. Do not be fooled. You will find no “patents” on this technology because it is secret, “classified” information by all the major governments of the world. Anyone who shows you a “patent” purporting to represent this technology is either a liar or a fool, and could only show you “how NOT to build a UFO”. The same goes for anyone who jabbers idiotic nonsense about “space aliens”. These craft are exclusively man-made.

Below is a post from the Electrical Review [57] , entitled, which also appeared in The Sun, N.Y., Nov. 21, 1898, and which contains some pertinent information relating to when Tesla began to develop his flying machine, more particularly what he called his “dirigible torpedo”:

“Referring to my latest invention, I wish to bring out a point which has been overlooked. I arrived, as has been stated, at the idea through entirely abstract speculations on the human organism, which I conceived to be a selfpropelling machine, the motions of which are governed by impressions received through the eye. Endeavoring to construct a mechanical model resembling in its essential, material features the human body, I was led to combine a controlling device, or organ sensitive to certain waves, with a body provided with propelling and directing mechanism, and the rest naturally followed. Originally the idea interested me only from the scientific point of view, but

soon I saw that I had made a departure which sooner or later must produce a profound change in things and conditions presently existing. I hope this change will be for the good only, for, if it were otherwise, I wish that I had never made the invention. The future may or may not bear out my present convictions, but I can not refrain from saying that it is difficult for me to see at present how, with such a principle brought to great perfection, as it undoubtedly will be in the course of time, guns can maintain themselves as weapons. We shall be able, by availing ourselves of this advance, to send a projectile at much greater distance, it will not be limited in any way by weight or amount of explosive charge, we shall be able to submerge it at command, to arrest it in its flight, and call it back, and to send it out again and explode it at will, and more than this, it will never make a miss, since all chance in this regard, if hitting the object of attack were at all required, is eliminated. But the chief feature of such a weapon is still to be told; namely, it may be made to respond only to a certain note or tune, it may be endowed with selective power. Directly such an arm is produced, it becomes almost impossible to meet it with a corresponding development. It is this feature, perhaps, more than in its power of destruction, that its tendency to arrest the development of arms and to stop warfare will reside. With renewed thanks, I remain,

Very truly, yours, N. Tesla”

57 [57]. Nikola Tesla, *Electrical Review* (Nov. 19, 1898) New York.

Tesla didn’t want to give the whole ball game away on his propulsion system, and was secretive about it, which is why he never published his completed ***Dynamic Theory of Gravity.*** By habit, if Tesla disagreed with a theory, he usually wasted little time in refuting it. In scenting out Tesla's secret ether theory that Tesla relied upon for his propulsion system, I compared it with a theory which he did not even mention, J. J. Thomson’s ***Electromagnetic Momentum*** theory. While Tesla had in fact gotten into rather spirited exchanges with Thomson regarding electrostatic versus electrodynamic excitation of luminosity of gases in a tube at a distance, that was the most that Tesla was willing to risk. he never said a word directly regarding Thomson’s Electromagnetic Momentum theory, which was wrong because it was based on the 'solid ether' and electromagnetic waves theory of Maxwell and Hertz.

The absence of a specific refutation or even a mention of it is a conspicuous omission which points to Tesla’s thinking on this subject once one realizes that this is a pattern seldom if ever broken by Tesla. What this means is that, regarding Thomson’s Electromagnetic Momentum theory, Tesla could not regarding Thomson's Electromagnetic Momentum theory, Tesla could not criticize Thomson's theory without revealing his own ether propulsion theory. He had already discussed his use of electrostatically-induced mechanical waves rather than the supposed electrodynamics of Thomson. Not only that, but Tesla could not even mention the theory specifically lest he draw attention to his own theory and disclose his most important secret.

In a similar vein however Tesla had earlier stated (Electric Discharges in Vacuum Tubes, ***The Electrical Engineer*** , N.Y., July 1, 1891) ***“...the electrostatic effects were of far greater importance...”*** and ***“In using the term electrostatic I had reference rather to the nature of the action than to a stationary condition, which is the usual acceptance of the term.”*** To this Thomson agreed, saying ***“As a matter of fact, it is very much easier to get the luminosity when these electrostatic effects are operative than when they are not.”*** (Note by Prof. J. J. Thomson in the London ***Electrician*** , July 24, 1891).

There is in my opinion, based on all my studies, only one kind of UFO propulsion technology and it is electro-mechanical, invented by Nikola Tesla. From my observations of the ship I saw at close range in broad daylight in 1953, there were no intake or exhaust ports, no jets or rockets, no “plasma” repulsion system, etc. The ship was apparently sustained and moved without these, the only external evidence being high voltage electrostatic corona. When you have a ship which can fly at 36,000 miles per hour in 1953 you cannot want for more.

While Thomson's theory proposed a Maxwellian three-axis system which used electric and magnetic force on two of the axes to purportedly create momentum on the third axis, Tesla used “p2”, a combination of electrostatic brush discharge in the ether projected in the direction of travel and high frequency A.C. in the opposite direction to block the ether and that was it. Tesla proved that Maxwell was wrong regarding electromagnetic waves in free space and rejected those theories, which were based on Hertz's erroneous theory of a solid ether.

Some of you reading this may have thought there was a contradiction between Tesla's statement that his flying machine was propelled by “mechanical” waves to propel his ship with a “pulling” action (ropes pull), then referred to the “steady D.C. brush discharge” as a means of creating the continuous exchange of carriers which imparts “mechanical” momentum to the ship. Both these means are combined, and Tesla also referred to “environmental” energy in free space, which can be harvested.

To put it into a nutshell, the rapidly-varying electrostatic potentials tuned to one-quarter wavelength produces the steady D.C. brush discharge which rarefies (stretches) the ether, while the rapidly-varying electrostatic potentials tuned to one-half or full (resonant) wavelength produces the reaction which compresses the ether. The sound waves in the ether are also used for transmitting wireless energy. A quarter wavelength tuning is for transmitting, while the half or full wavelength tuning for receiving, but at high frequencies has the effect of blocking the ether by compression.

Tesla's Dynamic Theory of Gravity and method of mechanical space propulsion brought a cosmic crowning achievement to the works of his esteemed predecessors who did so much of the ground work, but the public has been denied this achievement.

CHAPTER VI: FREE ENERGY MASSACRE;

The Atomic Hydrogen Process ©1996, Wm. R. Lyne

What better way to end a book on "Occult Ether Physics" than with a chapter on another concealed "free energy" process, which appears to extract energy from the environment—using similar techniques on the same substance—the ether—that makes Tesla's electro-mechanical propulsion possible?

In ***Space Aliens From the Pentagon*** and ***Pentagon Aliens*** I specified a free energy process in which helium is made to produce 460,000 calories/gram-atom by simple spark discharge, which is based on data from numerous generally available texts and scientific encyclopedias. This is the highest energy output I know of from a noble gas, and the same gas can be used ***ad infinitum*** , the only input energy being that required from spark discharges. Since helium is inappropriate for the average "Joe" and since the output is probably more than you could handle, I will more appropriately show you how to perform another free energy process, using that most easily accessible gas, hydrogen. This chapter will also give you the explanation for the heat produced in so-called "cold fusion" and a few other free energy processes, all closely related to the atomic hydrogen process and occult ether physics.

Over the years, the "Relativistic Quantum Mechanics" (hence "RQMs") concealed every process or reaction which could show the invalidity of their theories, "...in the interest of national security". Their false theories actually became one of the most important means by which, from the standpoint of the controlling corporate fascists, all 'dangerously efficient' (i.e., "disruptive") technology which would destroy their iron grip on us, could be concealed. According to deceitful relativist quantum mechanics, all energy coming out of a reaction must go into it only from a source recognized by them, and only in the discrete “quanta” permitted by Planck’s earlier quantum theory. The basic idea of Planck’s original quantum mechanical theory, was that energy levels of atoms must change in whole number integers (1, 2, 3, etc.) called “quanta”, which are based on the basic charge of a single electron or multiples thereof, which assumes only certain assigned energy levels in different atoms and molecules, and is used to define the magnitude of all of the smallest, intermediate, and largest possible energy changes of atoms and molecules. All atomic energy changes must conform to the permissible whole number equivalents or multiples of these quanta. Accordingly, energy absorbed or emitted by an atom must fit this stringent criterion.

What, then, would you say about a process which completely destroys this neat plan, which causes atoms to emit more energy that that which was put into them?

Despite what I consider to be obvious attempts to conceal basic physical data conflicting with this principle—as defined by the RQMs and incorporated into their theory, as if it were exclusively their theory and not that published earlier by Planck—the process I am about to discuss with you has glaring inconsistencies in it, as described by the Relativists, in particular Irving Langmuir. Langmuir was wrong and my research, invention and experiments and tests based on it prove him wrong.

It is said by the RQMs that the process of dissociating diatomic hydrogen molecules into separate atoms as atomic hydrogen, requires the absorption of 109,000 cal./gram molecule (“1.9 k.cal./gram molecule”), and that that is all the energy you can possibly get out of it. Yet, in taking the basic hydrogen atom and considering all its discrete ‘quanta’—whether in the atomic or molecular state—it appears to me that there is no state of the hydrogen atom or molecule in which such energy could be “stored”, even when using the RQMs’ theories,, especially in view of their irrational statement that the energy is still possessed by the molecule after it has already been released! It is their contention that an independent hydrogen atom can only exist as such because it has absorbed an abnormally large amount of heat, despite the fact that by their own criteria the atom has no mechanism identifiable by them by which it could do so.

When two such hydrogen atoms come together with the presence of sufficient

When two such hydrogen atoms come together with the presence of sufficient electrostatic initiation energy, the great amount of heat said by the Relativists to be “stored” in the hydrogen atom is liberated. The RQMs never directly measured the amount of dissociation energy necessary to bring the hydrogen atom from the diatomic to the atomic state, because they didn’t know how to do so, but because their theory said that this reaction is reversible, they said the dissociation energy was the same as the energy released on recombination of hydrogen atoms. Then to make matters worse, they defined the atomic hydrogen (ground) state as if it were an excited state, and the molecular state as if it were the ground state.

Realistically, the atomic hydrogen reaction can only be satisfactorily explained by reference to, construction of, or reconstruction of, an ether theory and involving Tesla's Primary Solar Rays (one form of “environmental energy”). While it may be arguable that the electrostatic “binding energy” between the two atoms of the molecule somehow ‘includes’ this energy in some undefined and mysterious way, this argument actually supports an ether theory, since the binding energy (from somewhere) must somehow be exchanged with what is said to be the heat energy which is released when the molecule forms, according to their theory, consistent with the equal-and-opposite-reaction rule. Otherwise, one is expected to believe a kind of backwards Orwellian ***doublethink*** that the RQMs. This kind of latitude is permitted only for them, while those who disagree are held to a higher standard.

The doublethink (contradictory) features of Relativism apparently stem from the fact that Albert Einstein was a KaballistExistentialist—whose epistemology was a Platonist one. In philosophy, there are two basic epistemologies—theories of the origin, nature and limits of human knowledge—representing the two basic categories into which the epistemologies of all philosophies must fall, and which are supposed to explain how one knows something according to a particular philosophy...by what ***means*** they know it...if in fact, they ***do*** “know” it. Since he who asserts something has the burden of proving it, rather than one who disbelieves it, the means by which it is purportedly known may come into question. No one is legally, morally, or “spiritually’ obligated to believe anything, without reason, or a valid means of knowing it to be “true”. All epistemologies are classified as either ***Platonist*** or ***Aristotelian.***

The “Platonist Epistemology” is so named because of the theory illustrated by the ancient Greek philosopher Plato’s cave analogy, in his book, ***The Republic*** . In this analogy, an observer inside a cave (us), facing the inner wall at night, sees only the shadows cast upon the wall by such things as a passing caravan, projected by a fire burning beyond a road along which the caravan is passing. According to Plato, man cannot know reality, but sees only a ‘shadow’ of reality, because there is a ‘higher world’ of ‘perfect forms’, which exist only ‘in heaven’. It therefore becomes obvious how this epistemology follows religious thinking, and that many religions have been influenced by it as somehow adding ‘scientific credence’ to their religious ideas, which are based on faith rather than reason. The same reasoning has been used by scientific, philosophical, economic, political, and ‘spiritual’ con-artists for centuries, and every totalitarian philosophy ever known has relied upon this fallacious ‘reasoning’ which is identical to the Platonist epistemology, because it relieves its advocates of showing reason and logic for what they assert. One wonders how the viewer in Plato’s cave would draw the line between ‘knowing’ a shadow, and a “shadow of a shadow”, since a shadow might also have a ‘higher form’ under this theory.

The “Aristotelian Epistemology” in the meanwhile—based on the ancient Greek philosopher Aristotle’s theory of knowledge— holds that the senses are valid, scientific tools of cognition, which we can rely upon to detect the facts of perceivable reality, and that we can, by relying upon the facts so perceived, know reality—and the nature of reality—and based on that, determine other, perhaps unapparent facts of reality.

As can be seen from a comparison of these two epistemologies and their implications, the philosophies and endeavors based on the Platonist epistemology are mystical, nebulous and/or totalitarian because its advocates require you to believe things based on faith and not reason, while the Aristotelians are more rational and objective, especially when applied to the natural sciences. It can also be seen that the use of a Platonist Epistemology by a physicist should be considered unforgivable, while Einstein’s theory, built upon this fatally flawed epistemology, has been popularized by the communication monopoly controlled by the power élite, because it makes a potentially inquisitive and questioning society dumber and easier to control. Einstein’s image is continually built up as if that of an ultimate and infallible creature who should be regarded as a ‘god’. This propaganda not only protects the false theory but also aids in concealment of valid theory and advanced technology which would end the reign of a world-wide power structure of corporate-statists, who think society already has all the technology it ‘needs’, else the élite’s ‘grip’ on the world, held in place by their archaic technology which exploits mineral, industrial, and banking interests owned by them, might be torn loose. Although Einstein eventually admitted in the 1920s that 'there has to be an ether', he never

Einstein eventually admitted in the 1920s that 'there has to be an ether', he never followed up on that change in his ideas with anything concrete, although his friend Paul Dirac did in a paper he sent to Einstein arguing for an ether.

I would have very little quarrel with a quantum theory of atomic energy levels, were it extended to include somehow the phenomenon of external environmental energy and ether theory as it should have been logically construed, but I take issue with its present development, limitation, and abuse by the RQMs.

My position is that they already have covertly applied it to an ether theory, that this application is well concealed, and that this book is needed to begin the reconstruction of these concealed truths, for use by the public. While Planck said his quantum theory applied to a "system", he didn't say the "Relativist system of Einstein"— which came into vogue ***after*** Planck's theory—and was the only system it could be applied to. Since a rationally extended quantum mechanical theory would not exclude an ether, my "RQM" label distinguishes between the relativistic misinterpreters of quantum mechanics, and what could be called the "Integrated Reality Mechanics" ("IRMs").

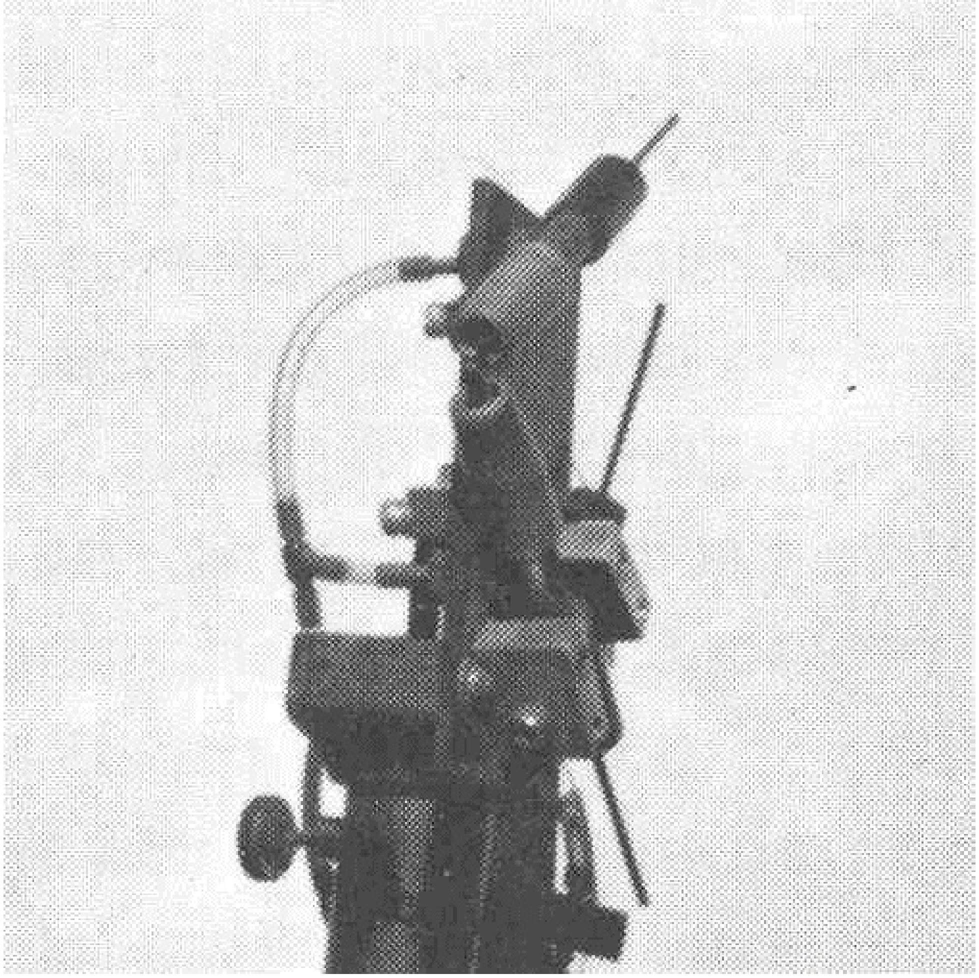
The atomic hydrogen reaction first came to my attention in 1964, when I was studying industrial processes at Sam Houston State University, Huntsville, Texas, the year after taking an introductory course in college physics. While reviewing various welding processes in a textbook, my eyes fixed on an older process called "atomic hydrogen welding". By that time, the process was already considered "obsolete". To me, the process seemed valuable, not only because it produces such high temperatures—up to 5,000° C., more than enough to melt tungsten with a M.P. Of 3410° C., and the highest temperature producible by man—but also because it is "selfshielding", can be used to weld diverse metals (often without flux) and produces a concentrated flame, with little heat distortion when welding thin metal. In the process, 'normal' diatomic H_2 is shot through an electric arc which dissociates it into "atomic" hydrogen, H_1 . This atomic hydrogen recombines at the (welded) metal surface, producing the very high heat. Though the process interested me then, and always has, I have never seen an atomic hydrogen welding unit for sale for the many years hence. Industry's obvious excuse for laying the valuable process aside was that it has been replaced by 'better' processes, such as Heliarc (TIG, "Tungsten Inert Gas") and MIG welding, though they also rarely mention "plasma arc welding", which has also almost disappeared from the market. Since plasma arc welding is merely an extension of the atomic hydrogen and TIG processes, using a specially redesigned torch, the mysterious reasons are undoubtedly the same. Neither of these two processes uses a lot of “consumables” (welding fluxes, rods, gases, etc.).

It was then that I got the idea of my atomic hydrogen furnace. The process simmered in the inner recesses of my mind, taking shape for a few years until 1976, when I rekindled my interest in the process for possible use in welding stainless steel and reducing and fusing platinum metal compounds, because hydrogen reduces such compounds (which must also be shielded from oxygen) to their metallic states. The atomic hydrogen process does not rely upon the combustion of hydrogen with oxygen in the air, but upon the purportedly “atomic” energy released when the atomic hydrogen recombines to form the ‘normal’ diatomic hydrogen. I still had some unanswered questions, since the various welding data at my disposal failed to mention sufficient specific details.

If Nikola Tesla was right, then I am right, that atomic energy comes through the ether from the Primary Solar Rays, not from the radioactive elements themselves.

Because I knew of no source from which to purchase an atomic hydrogen torch in 1985, I decided to build one, but my information was inadequate for proper construction. In the torch I made, the hydrogen entered the arc concentrically around both electrodes, instead of passing through the arc at a right angle. I also used the wrong kind of arc transformer, so it didn’t work as well as it should have.

Despite the disappointment, I knew the torch would work better if I corrected the problems, so I kept the torch in my barn until better information and sufficient time was available. I excited the curiosity of the industrial spies when I rented a large tank of hydrogen at a local welders’ supply, and this probably contributed to the sudden acceleration of the CIA-maintained judicial harassment that I endured between 1974 and 1992 (18 years). They apparently assumed I was exploring the process for its energy potential, rather than for just welding, and they were correct. My torch is shown below:



In the ‘70s, I had acquired an old English inorganic chemistry textbook[58] , purchased from Los Alamos Scientific Laboratory salvage for $.25, which contained a halftone photo of a 1930s vintage atomic hydrogen welding torch, along with some basic data. The torch shown was different from the one I constructed, in that I used a high voltage arc transformer and had no mechanism to strike the arc electrodes together to start the arc, because the high voltage made it unnecessary. It also showed the gas passing through the arc at a right angle. In this old textbook, it was stated at page 170 (emphasis mine), as follows:

“Langmuir (1912) discovered that hydrogen at low pressure in contact with a tungsten wire heated by an electric current is dissociated to some extent into atoms:”...“This absorbs a large amount of energy, about 100 kcal. per gram-molecule.” “...The atomic hydrogen formed is chemically very active. Atomic hydrogen is formed when an electric arc between tungsten electrodes is allowed to burn in hydrogen at atmospheric pressures (Fig. 106).” (NOTE:

This statement shows a basic misunderstanding of the process by Langmuir and others before my ideas emerged.) The

58 [58] J. R. Partington, *Text-Book of Inorganic Chemistry* (1953) Macmillan and Co., London.

text continued:
"Atomic-hydrogen blown out of the arc by a jet of molecular hydrogen across the arc, forms an intensely hot flame, capable of melting tungsten (m. Pt. 3400°). This flame obtains its heat from recombination of hydrogen atoms to H_2 ."
"Hydrogen being set free in a chemical reaction is often more reactive than hydrogen gas."
"...the activity of such nascent (newborn) hydrogen, in the act of liberation from its compounds, is due to the hydrogen being in the atomic state."

The following is a copy of "fig. 106":

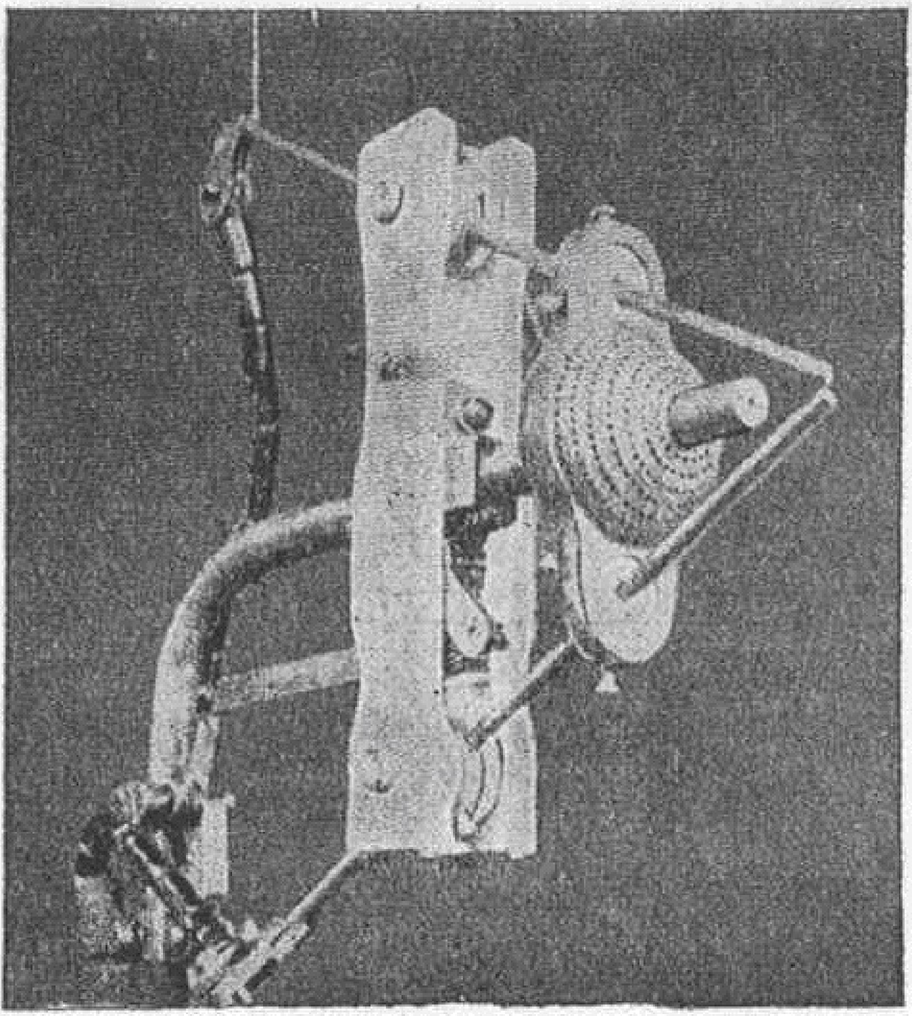


FIG. 106.—The atomic hydrogen blowpipe.

In checking this data in a more recent Van Nostrand’s Encyclopedia of Science[59] , at page 1311 it was stated in pertinent part:

“Hydrogen molecules dissociate to atoms endothermically at high temperatures (heat of dissociation about 103 cal/gram mole) in an electric arc, or by irradiation.” “...the hydrogen atoms recombine at the metal surface to provide heat required for welding.”

59 [59]. *Van Nostrand’s Scientific Encyclopedia* , Fifth Edition (edited by Douglas M. Considine), Van Nostrand Reinhold Company (1976).

I was surprised to find this in the Van Nostrand encyclopedia, but I also found that in 1910, the D. Van Nostrand Company published a book by Haller and Cunningham entitled ***The High Frequency Coil*** (The construction of a Tesla Coil for the advanced amateur. 119 pages), so there is a record of the Van Nostrand company's association with Tesla technology.

SMOKESCREENS FROM ACADEMIA

It seemed odd to me that it was later suggested that the 103 calories of dissociation energy absorbed from a very brief exposure to the arc is the same heat as that "...required for welding" as described, and I believed it to be more reasonable that the excess heat had to come from "elsewhere". I believe the true dissociation energy must be somewhere between the 103 calories and the 109 kcals./gram mole.

The older text showed the clearer construction of a device, and the newer text showed that only 103 cal./gram mole were required for dissociation, while the older text (Langmuir) showed that 100,000 cal./gram mole were liberated on recombination. Only by jumping back and forth between the two sources was I able to put a complete documentation together, and discover the conflicts. It meant that if the 103 cal./gram mole dissociation energy was correct, that with the 109 k.cal/gram mole output, the process was theoretically capable of producing 1,058 times the input energy. This is probably too high but it is definitely higher than all previous calculations.

It was apparent from the newer text that the writers intended for us to believe that the final 100 k.cal./gram mole heat—later upped to 109 k.cal./gram mole—was absorbed from the arc, but the 103 cal./gram mole dissociation heat figure showed a net 108,897 cal./gram mole unexplained. If there are about 22.4 cubic liters or 22,400 cubic cm. If that amount of hydrogen at STP can be dissociated by 103 calories of heat seemed astounding, but since hydrogen is the lightest element, it might be possible, but considering the idea that this same volume of hydrogen, weighing one gram, could somehow carry the heat of 109,000 calories—equivalent to the caloric heat of about 75 loaves of bread weighing at least 112 lbs.—it seemed ludicrous. This bread would weigh 50,400 times the gram of hydrogen, and the actual hydrogen content would be so much greater than that gram of hydrogen, so that the "official story" seemed impossible. So the "extra heat" appears to come from an officially unidentified source.

The idea that sufficient energy to weld could be extracted by the arc during the time required for the gas to pass from the orifice and through the arc is remarkable. The time required for 22,400 cubic cm. to pass through the arc allows for .2 calories per cubic cm. Five cubic cm. of gas would be required to provide each calorie of heat, amounting to 1/9th of one slice of bread. A minimum number of cubic cm. per second of hydrogen involved in making a weld is obviously required.

109,000 cal./gram mole equals 432.5 BTU/gram mole—roughly the heat energy contained in 75 loaves of bread (1 lb. 8 oz. loaves at 90 calories per each of 16 slices)—so the heat energy which they have asked us to believe is ‘stored’ in an amount of atomic hydrogen which weighs 1/28th of an ounce, during its passage through the arc seems incredible. Yet the transformer is required to produce only half what it does in conventional welding processes. It seems more likely that excess heat could be stored in molecules than in ‘almost naked’ atomic hydrogen atoms. What ever happened to Bohr’s little atom! It got bigger, and bigger, and ....

Between the older text (1921-1950, from the first and sixth editions) and the newer (1976) Norton science encyclopedia, it was obvious that science was much more simpler in the pre-National Security Act days, and that in the newer text, there was a reflection of the fishy attempts brought on by the national security laws and the firmer establishment of the RQMs, to conceal certain scientific knowledge which had been discovered all the way back in 1912 by Langmuir, and I even find it hard to believe that Langmuir did not know or suspect the truth. Aside from the discrepancies between the older measurements, regarding the comparable outputs between the combustion of gasoline and the combustion of molecular hydrogen, and the output from the atomic hydrogen process, to the newer text, there was a failure, so far as I could determine, to state under appropriate references (or any others I could find) some important facts concerning atomic hydrogen, and even apparent misrepresentations of the actual comparative outputs of gasoline and hydrogen combustion, through “doublethink”—the Orwellian “badges of fraud”—of which I spoke in Space Aliens. Though this 103 cal./gram mole “slip” appears to have been made, Norton apparently was also forced by circumstances to rely on some ‘scientists’ who represented the fossil fuel cartels and other conflicting interests, while the older text, though inaccurate, should have been relatively free of such influences at that time, but maybe not.

For example, in the newer text, page 1311, energy from the combustion of hydrogen was stated at 29,000 calories per gram (52,200 BTU/lb.). In the older text, this value was given at 62,100 BTU/lb., with a comparative value for gasoline ("petroleum") at 19,800 BTU/lb., stretched to 20,825 BTU/lb. in the newer encyclopedia. These figures roughly comported with those in the encyclopedia for n-Heptane ("gasoline") at 19,314 BTU/lb., and hydrogen at 51,571.4 BTU/lb., more or less repeated at page 1137, with n-Heptane at 10,737.2 cal./gram, and hydrogen at 28,669.6 cal./gram, yet nowhere in the newer or older text was it affirmatively stated that the hydrogen was not "consumed" in the process.

The corrected figure (52,200 BTU/lb.) shows, in a comparison between the combustion of "normal hydrogen" (to form $H2O$) and gasoline (to form $CO2$), that hydrogen has a yield of roughly 2.7 times that of gasoline, by weight. Then we come to a comparison between gasoline and atomic hydrogen. Though the two can be compared BTU-for-BTU and pound-for-pound, showing atomic hydrogen's phenomenal output, the real measure of the atomic hydrogen process is gleaned only from a comparison between the "input energy)—103 cal./gram molecule—and the net output. The "input energy" would be "unity" for the process, because the process does not 'consume' the hydrogen, but only returns it to its associated diatomic state as H_2 . The dissociation energy, subtracted from the gross output, would be the net output:

109,000 cal./gram mole (gross heat output)
Minus 103 cal./gram mole (dissociation energy - "unity") Leaves 108,897 cal./gram mole (net output - "over-unity" because the hydrogen didn't have that much calorific energy in the first place, and was not 'consumed' in the second place)

This output is theoretically 1,058 times the input energy. In my opinion, hydrogen is not really a "fuel" in this process but rather a "medium" used in the extraction of and conversion of energy from the Primary Solar Rays via the ether, by transforming cosmic radiant energy into infrared (heat) radiation, which according to Tesla is actually (mechanical) sound waves in the ether. The energy required to pump the diatomic hydrogen to a holding tank, before being recycled and shot back through the arc and into the reaction chamber once again, is not considered in this computation because it is relatively negligible and unrelated to the process itself, since the dissociation energy is less than a thousandth of the gross output, and there might be a way to make the process work without this particular pump anyway.

The manipulators of information appear to have done everything they can to make a direct comparison between atomic hydrogen and gasoline as difficult as possible, but I have waded through a multistep mathematical, physical, chemical and unitary process to get closer to the truth. According to 'official' sources, atomic hydrogen produces over 109 k.ca../gram mole, which is 109,000,000 cal./kilo. Subtract the 103 cal./gram mole endothermic dissociation energy, and a net of 108,897 k.cal./gram mole is left.

If true, the 1,058 times the input energy figure for atomic hydrogen however brings into question as to whether or not the official figures for gasoline are correct. Perhaps they are wrong, which would explain how Shell Oil Company in a battery of efficiency tests in the ‘50s were able to get hundreds of miles per gallon of gasoline in an automobile with a specially designed carburetor.

No wonder the atomic hydrogen welding process “went out of use”. With this process, home consumers would pay nothing for fuel, because they could produce a small amount of hydrogen in the basement, any time needed, and could use it over and over, ***ad infinitum.*** They could heat their houses, drive their cars, and use it for “home industry” purposes. In a motor cruiser on the ocean, one would never have to worry about where the “next gallon” of fuel was coming from, or what it would “cost”, because like sunshine, the heat from atomic hydrogen is “free”, except, unlike sunshine, you could produce as much as you want, any time, day or night, summer or winter, rain or shine; the farmer would no longer be dependent upon the oil cartels for his energy, and could run his machinery and heat his barns “free”. He could tell the fuel suppliers and the banks to screw themselves. People in the far Alaskan north could heat large spaces without huge expense. “Northern industry” would thrive again. The population control Nazis will hate me.

It is obvious that the reason that corporations like ARCO went so heavily into producing solar energy equipment in the early ‘70s, was so that they could control the patents and raise the costs of solar panels and ultimately control the cost of (free) solar energy, to make it “competitive” with gasoline and other fossil fuels. And they were eventually busted for this anti-competitive activity.

There are many ways used in contemporary texts to confuse facts, but the most effective way is by complete omission. Such facts could not have been concealed by “accident” or mere “oversight”, because they are too phenomenal. Only by plowing through a tortuous mathematical process and confusing units and other factors was the true motive for such concealment revealed for certain and other factors was the true motive for such concealment revealed for certain, but tell me why I’m not surprised?

Conservatively speaking, the atomic hydrogen process bears a 10.5-to-l ratio to n-Heptane. Would you care for 315 miles per gallon? How about 550,000 miles? It all depends on how many times you recycle it. You don't need to worry about wasting energy on electrolysis because you recycle the same hydrogen continuously.

The figures for n-Heptane are grossly confusing, as one might expect, since it is shown only by comparison by weight that hydrogen ***combustion*** has a 2.7-to-1 ratio to n-Heptane. This deception was effected by playing around with differing heat and weight units, pressures, and volumes, and the difference between the centigrade, Fahrenheit and English unit systems. The “109,000 cal./ gram mole” figure for atomic hydrogen was omitted from the newer texts, though one might have been able to extrapolate it from some complex data stated in other areas where even the inquisitive person is not expected to look. There was a total absence in the new text or other “new” data available to me, of a direct comparison of energy outputs between combustion of petroleum and hydrogen, much less the atomic hydrogen process. This is of course consistent with the continued government secrecy since 1943 regarding the huge mass of information on Nikola Tesla. Hide what you can. Lie, ignore or confuse about the rest. My invention has thrown all the data up in the air. Physics will have to make some fundamental changes.

I have never seen a direct comparison by any of the thousands of Ph.D.s in chemistry or physics, who should have become aware of these facts during their cursory studies. To make these figures even more ludicrous, with BTU (“British Thermal Units”), one would expect the weight to be shown in kilos under the metric system, instead of the English “pounds”. These machinations appear to rely upon the well-founded assumption that all scientists who know, are controlled and don’t say, and those who aren’t controlled, will be considered “quacks” if they try to say. Again, it the usual case of “Those who know, can’t say, and those who say, will be presumed not to know.”

Another stupid trick used is to compare “system weights”, under the false assumption that the user of hydrogen would have to use only the systems they present, raising the “comparable” weight of hydrogen to gasoline, using cumbersome cryogenic bottles or hydride storage tanks, etc., when the simple figures clearly show that onethird the amount by weight of hydrogen would be needed for a comparable combustion process. Whenever hydride systems are mentioned, there is an obvious omission of the liquid hydride system developed by Dr. Gerald Schafflander of California, the promotion for which Schafflander and associates were abusively prosecuted by the SEC, as previously stated in ***Space Aliens*** and ***Pentagon Aliens*** . Yet, the atomic hydrogen process would be more than adequate—even fantastic—with only a pound of hydrogen, and one could carry an extra 25 lbs of Dr. Schafflander's liquid hydride in the trunk. Below is a direct comparison between the BTU/lb for combustion of gasoline and molecular hydrogen, and the atomic hydrogen process, respectively:

Gasoline combustion (n-Heptane) 19,314 BTU/lb Hydrogen combustion (H_2 + O) 52,200 BTU/lb Atomic hydrogen ($H_2 \leftrightarrows 2H$) 196,200 BTU/lb

Note that this comparison is based on the 'accepted' value for the atomic hydrogen process and does not involve a "consumption" of the hydrogen, yet even if it did, the ration between atomic hydrogen and gasoline is still 10.5-to-one. Take into consideration also that all the best methods for obtaining over a hundred miles per gallon (even hundreds of miles per gallon) of gasoline in automobile engines, utilize the vaporization of gasoline and mixture of it with air prior to combustion, something which is easier to do with hydrogen because it is in a gaseous state at normal temperatures and pressures. Also consider that while n-Heptane is a 'purer' gasoline, it hasn't been available for years, and most "gasoline" is a dilute mixture with water and various additives, with only about 50% n-Heptane, so I'm being as kind as I can be to "gasoline".

If a pound of gasoline could propel a car 30 miles, the consumption would be 666.6 BTU/mile. On the same scale, a pound of atomic hydrogen would yield 315 miles. Then you could repeat it, over and over and over. A pound of hydrogen could conceivably supply all your energy needs for your whole life, and you could produce another 100 pounds of it electrolytically, right in your basement, from tap water. Is this free energy, or what?

Though the facts of this "secret" hydrogen process are "hidden in plain sight", one must beware of the disinformation, as well as the common mistakes created by "scientists" who have been duped by the RQMs. For example, in the 1976 Norton Encyclopedia, 5th Edition, page 1311, most of the pertinent facts about hydrogen are shown. The "109,000 cal./gram molecule" for recombined hydrogen, reported in an older text, was not shown directly, though the following facts which were shown, are of particular note:

Heat of vaporization at 20.4°K 107 cal/gram Energy released upon combustion 29,000 cal/gram Heat of combustion at 25°C (gross) 63,317 cal/gram Heat of combustion at 25°C (net) 57,797/6 cal/gram

ANOTHER ASTOUNDING PROOF AND MORE HYDROGEN METHODS

The Norton encyclopedia was in its 5th edition, and the "103 cal/gram mole" dissociation energy did not appear to be a typographical error or misprint, and should have been corrected by that time if discovered. How many books would I have to search to find such a 'misprint', especially since I didn't expect to find the anomaly because of the obvious concealment? Yet, in Physical Chemistry[60] , at page 418, appeared the following:

"The Spectroscopic evaluation of the dissociation energy

The energy of dissociation, D_e of a diatomic molecule is the difference between the potential energy of the atoms when infinitely separated, and their energy when the atoms are at rest at the equilibrium separation."

Notice that the "at rest" state of the molecules is couched in language that makes you think that the "infinitely separated" atomic hydrogen atoms represents the "excited state" for the element. In layman's terms, the RQMs simply made the statement that the dissociation and recombination energies had to be the same, because their theories depended upon them being the same. Then they measured the dissociation energy backwards, by measuring the recombination energy, and stating the measurement as if it were the dissociation energy. The statements are supplanted by a lot of RQM gobbledegook, with a "spectrographic evaluation" thrown in like some snake oil, because the spectroscope purportedly "can't lie". There is also in the same text, at page 417, the following obtuse statement:

"...In kilocalories per mole, D_e is 109."

If hydrogen atoms exothermically release energy when they combine to form molecules, the potential energy of the heat has been lost by the atoms, yet they attribute the "potential energy" to the hydrogen molecules—backwards—to evade their duty to draw the logical conclusion. If this energy cannot be obtained except by the prior injection of 109,000 cal/gram mole, then it is not "potential energy". This is shown by a graph ("fig. 4") purporting to show the

60 [60]. E. A. Moelwyn-Hughes, Cambridge, *Physical Chemistry* (1965) Pergamon Press, London, page 418 (Supra.).

“potential energy of the hydrogen molecule in the ground electronic state.” This clearly appears to be a misrepresentation by a Ph.D. in physics of the “Royal Society”, that hydrogen in the “atomic state” is not in a ground state, but in an excited state. In this 1965 physical chemistry text from England, the heat energy released on recombination of the hydrogen atoms is given as 109,000 cal/gram mole, then misrepresented as equal to the “potential energy” of the “ground state hydrogen molecules” which have just formed. But the “ground state” of hydrogen should be the atomic state, with the electron at its lowest level of energy, since there appears to be no way the naked atoms could “store” the 109,000 cal/gram mole. Where, exactly would this energy “reside”? I could believe that the atom could capture the energy from the Primary Solar Rays on dissociation, but since the heat energy is released on recombination, the molecules lack the heat energy already released. The potential energy of the separate atoms is greater than that of the molecules, which I think is because the heat energy is released from the entrained ether and converted Primary Solar Rays—not from the hydrogen atoms—when they combine to form molecules.

Since original publication of this book in 1997-98, there have been at least four specific cases where, based on my original invention, at least four tests have shown over-unity results. These are:

1. D. W. Energy Research, LLC, Colorado Springs, Colorado, U.S. Patent #6,113,065, “Liquid Gasification Process”, claiming an “energy amplification factor of about 1.9” (a patent based on a verbatim copy of my design).

2. Alexander Frolov, Faraday Labs, St. Petersburg, Russia, claiming an efficiency of over 200%, using an A.C.-heated tungsten filament. (http:/faraday.ru).

3. Jean-Louis Naudin, Paris, over 2,100% effocoemcu isomg a 50 Hz. D.C. pulse (created from Eurpoean 50 Hz. House current).
4. Italians, Andrea Rossi and Sergio Focardi---the “Rossi-Focardi LENR Device”---based on the Lyne Atomic Hydrogen Furnace, but concealed by a deceptive description and “secrecy”). This was announced Jan. 14, 2011, from Bologna, Italy. Rossi claimed an output of 12,400 Watts with an input of 300 Watts (COP of 31).

Though Naudin says that his experiment was based on Langmuir’s work, Langmuir never invented the use of a closed loop system, and never knew that the process was over-unity, which means his calculations were WRONG. That is my work. I also am the first that I know of to design an industrial grade atomic hydrogen furnace. Naudin used the same unit constructed by Frolov (using a large old metallic water-cooled rectifier tube) with a slight alteration of the dissociation current (from a conventional electrically-heated tungsten filament). Both Frolov and Naudin mention a Danish man named Nicholas Moller who plagiarized my work and my design and misrepresented to Frolov that it was his work. Frolov corrected this fraud.

Andrea Rossi copied my invention with minor variations. He dissociates the H_2 to H_1 then reacts it in a stainless steel chamber packed with nickel powder around which a water jacket removes the heat and converts water to low pressure wet steam. Then he recirculates the hydrogen circuitously as in my invention to be repeated ***ad infinitum*** . There is a difference in design but in effect no difference in concept.

The dissociation method used by Rossi---Nichrome® resistance heating wires---after which the H_1 is injected into the reaction chamber packed with nickel power, provides the environment which effects the recombination of the H_1 to H_2 with release of heat. This is said by some to produce some nuclear radiation as a result of energyconsuming transmutation of some of the nickel to copper (ca.10%) and iron (ca.14%), but there is no residual radioactive matter. The reaction chamber has a surrounding water jacket through which water is circulated to remove the heat and generate low pressure wet steam. The nickel buffets and lowers the high temperature reaction heat, so the water is of insufficient temperature to produce the dry, superheated steam required to power a turbo-electric steam generator. I solved the problem of how to handle the extremely high temperatures years ago but am now holding that secret as proprietary technology.

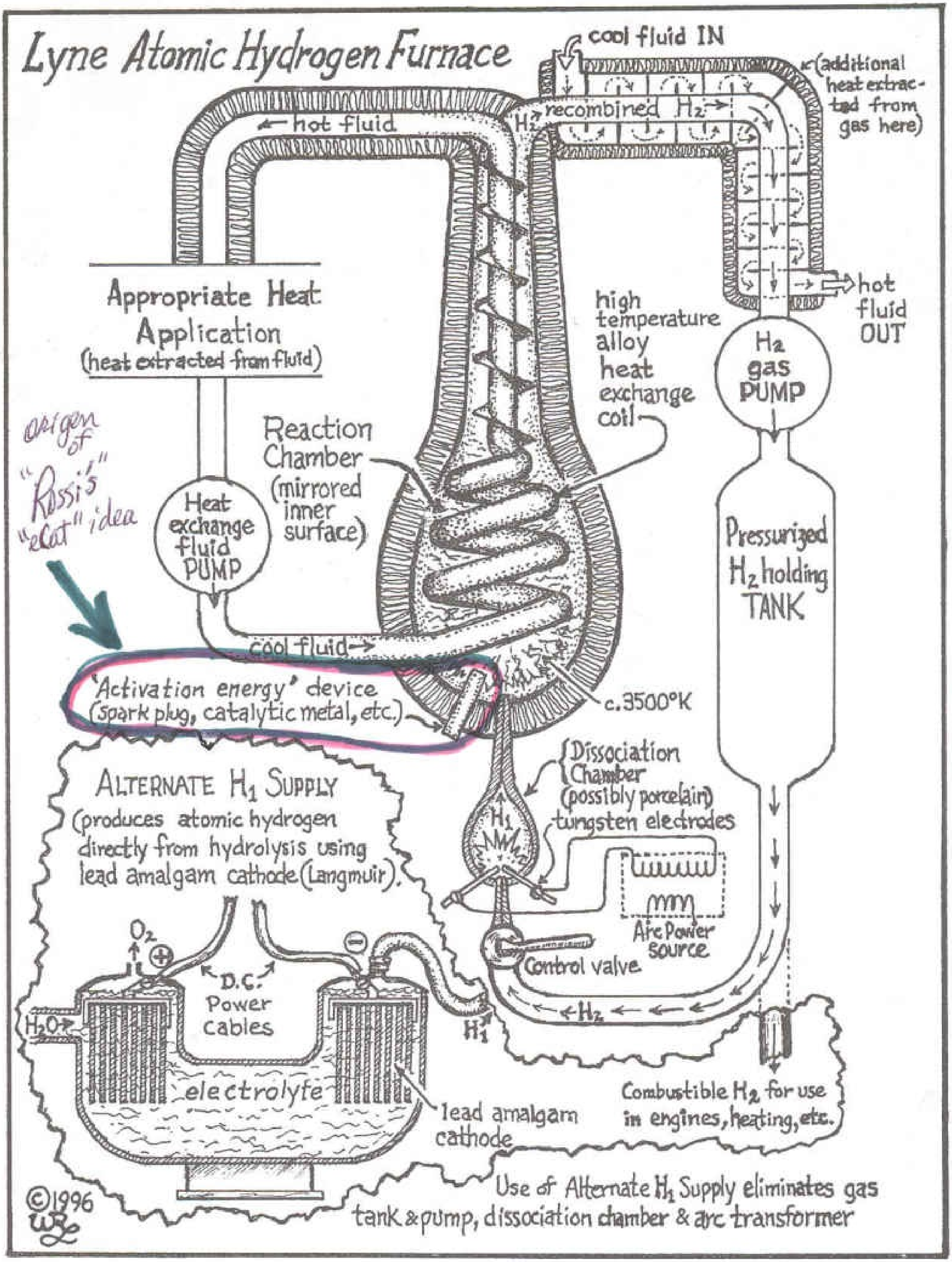
The transmutation effected by Rossi's device is not desirable with this process and is counter-productive, since it diminishes energy output and also leads to confusion for those who need a conventional explanation. It has also confused Rossi, whose explanation has been rejected because it is a failed attempt to satisfy conventional physics. Only my “ether and Primary Solar Rays” explanation will suffice. Scientists must realize that with my invention, I have opened a door to use of cosmic energy. Until they realize this, they will only continue to prop up a false (relativist) physics, and incidentally continue to supply a market for uranium and nuclear energy, coal, gas and other fossil fuels.

There is a definite deception by Rossi, saying that he “invented” it and that he has a “secret catalyst” (when in fact, in this case, the catalyst is the “catalytic metal”, nickel). This is shown in my original 1996 drawing as “ ***Activation energy device*** (spark plug, ***catalytic metal*** , etc.)”. The use of a catalytic metal is unnecessary so I apologize for that. Rossi's statement that 'there is absolutely no tungsten' in his device (in obvious reference to my design) only confirms his prior knowledge of my invention as well as confusion that my design somehow relies on tungsten, ***per se*** (it was recommended only for its high-temperature applications, not for catalysis). Almost any metal will trigger the recombination of H_1 to H_2 . Once the reaction is triggered by contact with metal it will continue so long as H_1 is supplied.

I have also solved the exact mechanism by which the molecular binding energy is canceled and resupplied. I have also conceived a unique method for dissociation. But I won't disclose those details here because idea-thieves will only steal and say they discovered them.

My 1996 design is as follows (the encircled part is where Rossi got his “catalytic metal”/“eCat” idea):

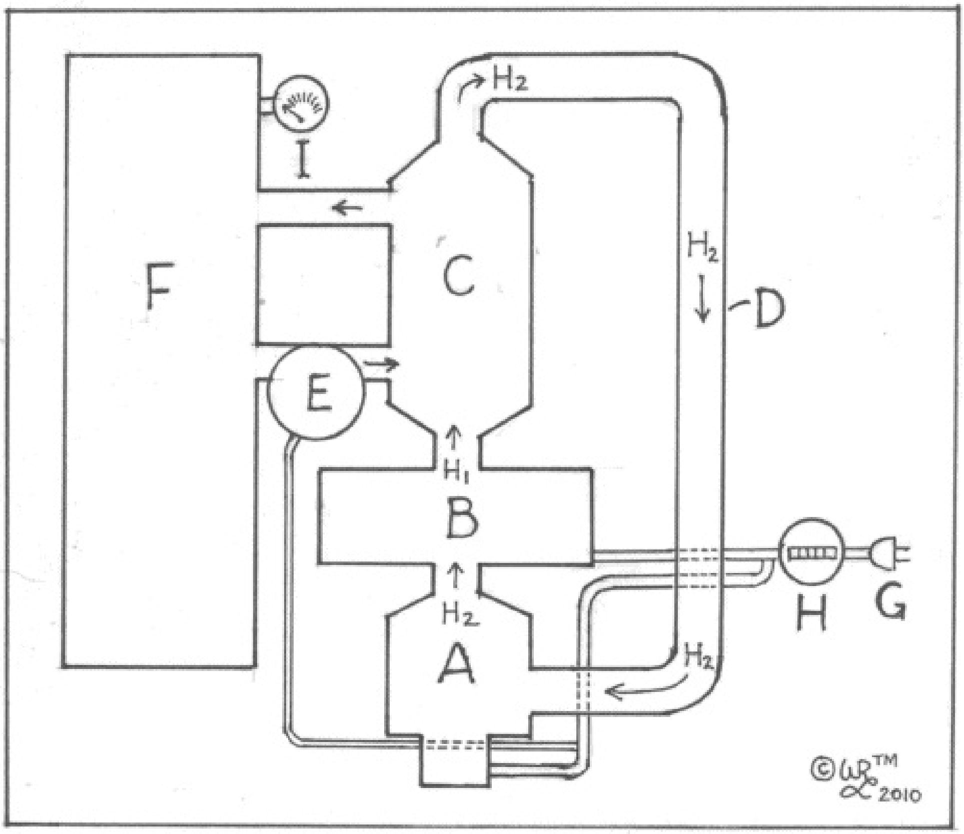
Lyne Atomic Hydrogen Furnace


cool fluid IN
(additional heat extracted from gas here)
H_2 recombined H_2
hot fluid
hot fluid OUT
Appropriate Heat Application
(heat extracted from fluid)
high temperature alloy heat exchange coil
H_2 gas PUMP
Reaction Chamber (mirrored inner surface)
Heat exchange fluid PUMP
Pressurized H_2 holding TANK
cool fluid
'Activation energy' device (spark plug, catalytic metal, etc.)
c.3500°K
Dissociation Chamber (possibly porcelain)
tungsten electrodes
H_1
ALTERNATE H_1 SUPPLY
(produces atomic hydrogen directly from hydrolysis using lead amalgam cathode (Langmuir)
Arc Power source
Control valve
O_2
⊕
⊖
D.C. Power cables
H_2O
H_1
H_2
electrolyte
lead amalgam cathode
Combustible H_2 for use in engines, heating, etc.
Use of Alternate H_1 Supply eliminates gas tank & pump, dissociation chamber & arc transformer
©1996 WL

origen of "Rossi's" "eCat" idea

With both Langmuir's and Rossi's use of electrical resistance heating wires to dissociate the H_2 , you have to ask what kind of radiation comes off the wires. I believe that it is not the heat---as Langmuir and Rossi believed---that dissociates the molecules, but the radiation, which according to Tesla is mechanical sound waves in the ether. These waves tear the H_2 molecules apart physically rather than by heat expansion. (Some have mistakenly described the H_1 as a “superheated hot gas” which is wrong.) The I.R. radiation is in the microwave spectrum. Other frequencies may work---some possibly even better---to get maximum effect, the idea being to use as little energy as possible to produce the greatest effect in the name of efficiency. The invention must also be durable and resilient to component fatigue, with minimal maintenance so as not to break down in the long Winters of Alaska or Sweden, or on a steamturbine-driven ship in the middle of the ocean.

The following is a simplified drawing of my re-designed furnace, which does not include the secret details of each of the parts shown:



A. - Accelerator
B. - Dissociator

C. - Reactor/Heat Exchanger D. - H2 Return Conduit
E. - Heat Exchange Fluid Pump F. - Hot Fluid Tank (test) G. - Electric Input
H. - Watt-hour Meter I. - Thermometer

H2 is accelerated by Accelerator A through Dissociator B where it is efficiently converted to H1. H1 is reacted in Combined Heat Exchanger/Reactor C returning H1 to H2. H2 is returned from C to A via H2 Return Conduit D. Heat Exchange Fluid Pump E pumps heat exchange fluid from Hot Fluid Tank F through Combined Reactor/Heat Exchanger C and back to Hot Fluid Tank F. Electric Input G Wattage is measured by Watt-hour Meter H and compared to calories measured by Thermometer I to determine efficiency ratio.

Inclusion of the details would enable the corporate thieves and other fakers to decipher my design, patent it, sell it to the government, and the people might never see it. The corporations would be unjustly enriched. A rough conservative estimate of this single unit's expected output, in a size no more than a cubic meter including the holding tank, is at least 50 kW net, free energy, and it will heat a large space or produce superheated dry steam to power a turbo-electric generator for electric power.

As of February, 2012, I have no backers, so building is slow on my meager means. Its secrets may die with me whenever I go, unless a fair backer emerges. At this point you might say that I am “on strike” like John Galt. But a pocket full of money will induce me to go off strike.

Due to changes in our patent laws---“first to file” not “first to invent”---I have decided not to open-source the details of my newest design, for then we might have the spectacle of some copy-cat suppressing me for authorizing the use of my own invention to people at large. The idiots in the Patent Office, in their infinite wisdom, probably thought this new rule would induce someone like me to apply for a patent. I do not have the financial resources to do so.

The RQM’s misrepresentation of the real potential of this process is hereby unmasked as Orwellian doublethink. Since when is the potential energy of the atom of an element measured from its molecular state, or its atomic state called its “excited state”? This is exactly like saying that a truck sitting at the bottom of a hill has more “potential energy” than one sitting at the top, because of the energy required to drive it up to the top of the hill! What a strange way to define “potential energy”. It is like saying that an empty gas can has the potential energy of the gas that it takes to fill it up!

The unique thing about the hydrogen atom, is that it is “born” at the top of the hill! Its astounding properties lie in its ability to perform as a “doorway” between the ether, Primary Solar Rays and the world of more familiar atomic matter.

The relativist statements have been unwittingly accepted as correct, because there is no ether or Primary Solar Rays possible under their theories, and the molecules have to have more energy than the atoms separately, because “E = MC^2 ”. The RQMs have misrepresented and concealed this process in which separate atoms— with lower MASS—possess more “atomic” energy than the molecules!. These facts on hydrogen show that E equals MUCH MORE THAN MC^2 .

Under relativism “solid” matter is thought erroneously to be the most “compact”, “stored” form of “atomic energy”, because the energy is supposed to be released from mass by the “smashing” and destruction, or fusing together of atoms, which Tesla said was false. It is clearly shown by the ***Lyne Atomic Hydrogen Furnace*** that Tesla was right and the relativists and Einstein were wrong, because the hydrogen atoms acquire more potential energy between the separate atomic state and the diatomic molecular state when the atoms recombine and the atoms have to get their energy from an external source. The only other way that the molecules can release any “potential” energy is through combustion with oxygen, which is a much lower energy output, and that too may come from the Primary Solar Rays. Tesla said that radioactivity was a reaction of atomic mass with the Primary Solar Rays, just as the hydrogen atom emits IR radiation. The separate atoms must convert kinetic energy from the Primary Solar Rays and eject it in the form of sound waves in the ether in the microwave spectrum when recombined. This radiation then reacts with matter to produce heat.

The perverse “potential energy” fallacy is also a way to confuse the diatomic hydrogen molecules with the nascent atomic hydrogen atoms produced by dissociation. The energy of hydrolysis is equated with the energy of dissociation, and the energy of combustion with the energy of recombination, yet the information presented here shows that by combining a type of hydrolysis of water, in which atomic hydrogen is produced directly, with the atomic hydrogen recombination process, instead of the combustion process, that at least 10.5 times as much energy as the hydrolytic input can be produced, in still a third astounding hydrogen free energy process. This is a gain in energy which Langmuir seemed to to have missed and failed to mention. This is true because the atomic hydrogen process without question releases at least 3.75 times the BTUs by weight (even by RQM standards), as ordinary hydrogen and oxygen produce in the combustion process. It is generally agreed that the “energy of combustion” equals at least the “energy of hydrolysis” (even though it is well known that the industrial production of hydrogen is generally 120% efficient in the so-called “water-gas” process, in which steam is shot through a white-hot graphite orifice).

Production of atomic hydrogen directly by hydrolysis, eliminating a separate dissociation operation, is yet another exciting possibility. If the 103 cal/gram dissociation energy is correct and the electrolytic energy is recovered by combustion, there is a theoretical possibility of getting a net 1,058 times the energy of input in the recombination process.

HOW DOES IT WORK?

As a “welding process”, this process was allegedly ‘obsolesced’ by MIG and TIG welding, neither of which can compare to its welding efficiency and uses. Since the welding process was its main use in the years past, the “new” processes allowed industry to toss the ‘obsolete” process onto the junk heap. The “new” processes were promoted by the establishment, motivating their suppliers and the electric power companies at their own levels. More archaic tanks, transformers, gauges, torches, electrodes, gases, fluxes, and electric power, etc., etc., to be sold at a hefty profit. If people generate their own hydrogen for welding at home, how much equipment, supplies and power will they buy? Is saving money a crime?

How does the atomic hydrogen obtain its energy, if not from the “ether” and Primary Solar Rays? No wonder establishment science doesn’t want you to know there is an ether. If we are to believe the “law of conservation of energy” as interpreted by ether-excluding establishment “science”, this process is impossible, yet using data available from the ‘standard’ texts, I have shown that the input energy of 103 cal/gram mole (or however much is required) is somehow ‘magnified’ by use of hydrogen as a ‘medium’ so that the 103 cal/gram mole ‘seed’ energy triggers the atomic hydrogen’s apprehension of a net 108,897 cal/gram mole from the Primary Solar Rays via the “ether”.

I reiterate, an equally phenomenal “atomic helium” process (reported in Space Aliens) is 4.6 times this caloric output per gram mole. What is the proportionate input? It can be conducted almost the same way, and produces the same kind of electrical energy and radiation-to-heat energy transformation, in which “mass” is only a “medium” used in the process. Similar principles are shared by the Lyne Atomic Hydrogen Furnace, as shown by my illustration at this chapter’s end, and Josef Papp’s noble gas engine[61] . If these processes used as much electrical energy as they produced, and electrical energy was the end product sought, what would be the reason for the process, right? At the comparable 30 mpg for n-Heptane, helium could produce 42.86 times as much as atomic hydrogen, or about 1285.8 miles per pound. That is, if you used the helium up, which you don’t.

According to the Van Nostrand’s Scientific Encyclopedia[62] , simple electron bombardment of helium gas in a special chamber, excites the helium atom to a temporarily radioactive isotope of extremely short half-life. In this state, the helium atom unpairs its electrons, promotes one electron to the 2s state (in which state it remains for only a very short time), and afterward releases 460,000 cal/gram mole on collapse of the excited atoms back to their ground state. This gram of gas molecules occupies only slightly more than a gram mole of atomic hydrogen. It is my belief and theory that the elements in the excited state somehow convert the energy of the Primary Solar Rays according to Tesla’s theory of radioactivity.

Since each hydrogen atom is composed of a proton and an electron, each with equal-and-opposite charge, one would expect the binding force between diatomic molecules to be very weak, but when the atoms are separated they purportedly expand greatly in size, encompassing a greater volume of ether. On recombination, the atoms shrink in volume, and according to standard theory, infrared radiation is squeezed out of the atom. The dissociation requires only 103 cal/gram mole, yet on recombination, the atoms “exothermically” yield a net 108,897 cal/gram mole. How exactly does this occur?

All space is packed solid “bumper-to-bumper” with ether. This elusive and ultra fine, absolutely transparent matter is being omnidirectionally interpenetrated by

---

61 [61]. Josef Papp, *Method and Means of Converting Atomic Energy into Utilizable Kinetic Energy* , Patent # 3,670,494 (June 20, 1972).

62 [62]. *supra.*

Primary Solar Rays composed of minute particles propelled at high speed by the enormous forces in stars. These particles must collide with and excite the ether held within the atomic space between the proton and the electron cloud, transferring their momentum to the ether and producing sound waves in the ether in the infrared (heat) spectrum, while the minute solar particles themselves must be absorbed by the atoms creating new mass or discarded. The increased momentum must be carried by the mono-atomic hydrogen atoms until they are opened up on release during recombination into diatomic molecules.

The facts suggested here are forbidden by relativity and quantum mechanics, in which a simple harmonic oscillator cannot have a stationary state of zero kinetic energy, because the ground state still has one-half quantum of energy and the appropriate motion, yet by relativity's 'other' rules, the principle of kinetic energy has no applicability to electromagnetic radiation. Since relativity also rejects the existence of an ether, there is nothing in so-called "empty space" to contain such radiant energy, and the atomic hydrogen process would have to create its energy from "nothing", therefore violating the law of conservation of energy, as misinterpreted by the relativists who see all energy functions as part of the 'winding down' products of an "original" BIG BANG and entrained entropy theory.

Incidentally, this same atomic hydrogen process, as first published here and now, is also the apparent source of the anomalous exothermic heat produced in aqueous cavitation, as well as in the socalled "cold fusion" process, which are two other free energy processes which I believe are versions of the atomic hydrogen process.

The atomic hydrogen atoms have single, unpaired electrons in enlarged shells. These atoms are in Mendeleev's Group I-a, and all the atoms in that group have unpaired outer electrons, and are photoreactive to and transmute when exposed to ultraviolet light, and all of them can be used to convert Primary Solar Rays into usable free energy. This photo-reactivity creates temporary, artificialradioactivity-produced isotopes of short half-life, with the emission of radiant energy. But the radioactivity is contained within the atoms. The energy for the infrared frequency ether waves comes from the Primary Solar Rays according to Tesla, not from the atoms themselves. The atoms can be analogized by certain crystals, described by the Raman Effect, in which light passing through the crystals is "stepped down" to lower frequencies. The infrared spectrum light produced by the atomic hydrogen process is thermally reactive with normal atomic and molecular matter.

The transfer of force from the Primary Solar Rays to the dissociated H_1 atoms, is apparently the kind of thing spoken of by Tesla when he stated: “There is no energy in matter other than that received from the environment.”[63]

In so-called “cold fusion”, the electrolytic cell produces “nascent hydrogen”, with the atomic hydrogen process, and the recombination of the mono-atomic hydrogen to H_2 releases overunity heat, the product claimed. My process also proves Tesla’s theory that atomic energy comes from the environment. It proves that “mass” does not even enter into the equation, and that Einstein’s “E = MC2” is wrong. Einstein’s theory says this process as I describe it could only be possible if the hydrogen were ‘annihilated’, converting its “mass” into heat, and otherwise, is impossible. But the hydrogen is still hydrogen, and Einstein was still wrong. It defies relativism and the BIG BANG.

Perhaps this or a similar process was also what Leland Anderson referred to in his eulogy of Tesla, when he mentioned his “plucking” thermal units “...right out of the thin air”. After all, the hydrogen atoms when in the H_2 molecular form are smaller, therefore “compressed”. Compression of a gas releases heat radiation, usually thought to originate with the energy endothermically absorbed during decompression, which is backward from the gas dynamics. So in this case the question is “Where did the heat come from and exactly how much does it produce?”

In the case of hydrogen, the change is effected by the natural, physical process of recombination to H_2 . According to standard theory, the molecular atoms can be ‘decompressed’ by application of “the heat of dissociation”, because the strong binding force between the atoms is supposedly weakened by an amount of exothermic energy sufficient to separate the atoms, which is exactly the amount regained when the atoms are recombined.

Hydrogen atoms have the highest charge-to-mass ratio known, a ratio which almost completely neutralizes the protons. ‘Decompression’ of the electron clouds occurs during dissociation. As the protons dissociate with application of the 103 cal/gram mole, this allows the greatly expanded electron clouds of the atoms to encompass a larger volume of space, from which a net 108,897 cal/gram mole can be extracted from the only sources available, the Primary

---

63 [63]. Nikola Tesla, *Lecture Before the Institute of Immigrant Welfare* (May 12, 1938).

Solar Rays and the ether. Since there is no great cooling activity in the proximate area of dissociation, the ‘heat’ can only come from a conversion of environmental radiation, else there would be the formation of ice, etc. This process, though it can be thermally set up and triggered by electrons, is not merely a thermal process, because the net energy released is converted originally from kinetic energy, while the relativists have no plausible answer.

The raw data for this process came from ordinary science books. The full magnitude and output comparable to petroleum was only obviated by conversion of weights, measures, and temperature units, to produce a consistent picture and to obtain the total net outputs. Most physicists or chemists would refuse to believe the results, even if they had calculated them themselves, and would insist that they had erred. This is indeed an inverted BIG LIE which is told very small and often. The lie consists of a denial that there is an ether, the distortion of quantum mechanics, and the exaggeration of or minimizing of other incompatible measurements, to create a false overall picture. This is then backed up by a vacuum of information in texts and other sources available to the public, created via the National Security Act, at the behest of the Fuel/Power Cartels.

APPROPRIATE USE OF THE PROCESS

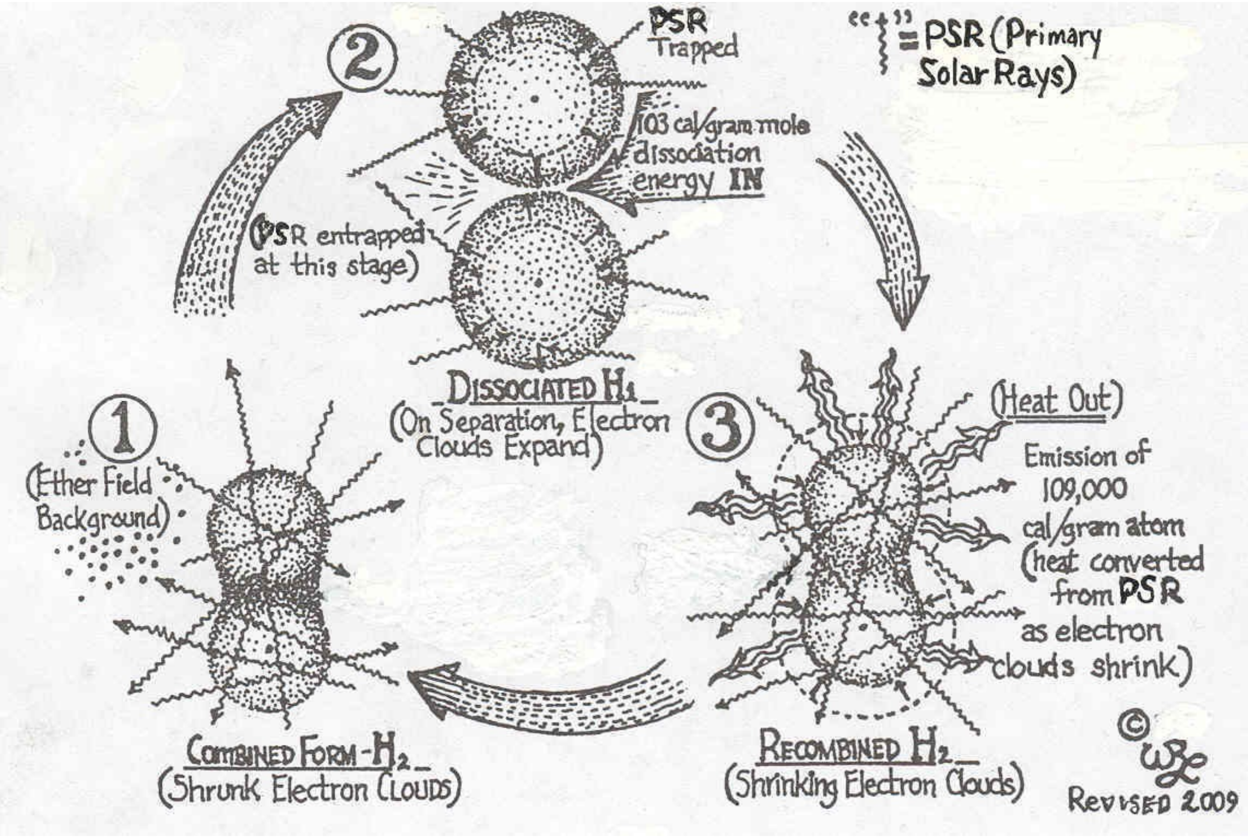
With an understanding of the atomic hydrogen process, and the great magnitude of its output, what are its most immediately applicable uses?

The most direct, appropriate use of this technology appears to be to provide heat for homes, as well as for home-industrial or industrial heating purposes, or for agricultural heat production. A secondary use would be to produce heat for steam to drive turbinepowered electric generators or for motive power for cars, trucks, boats, trains and planes. This system would be excellent if coupled with refrigerant-driven, closed-loop turbo-electric generators, to provide electric power for electro-propulsive flying saucers, the ultimate in private transportation.

Since the net output is heat, the first order of business is a special heat exchanger, to transfer heat to water or other media, or to produce steam for turbine power. The heat in the reaction chamber of the atomic hydrogen furnace must be quickly removed by the exchanger to prevent a buildup of heat sufficient to melt the reactor surfaces which receive and catalyze the recombining gas atoms. The simplified design shown is merely a proposal which I presented to prospective backers without disclosing the true details.

I presented to prospective backers without disclosing the true details.

Years ago, German metallurgists used atomic hydrogen in a copper crucible, creating a “hydrogen environment” to reduce platinum group metals from their compounds. To resist the high temperatures required for the reductions, the copper crucible was cooled from below by water, which removed the heat fast enough to prevent melting of the copper, as platinum metals were melted in it with the torch from above. The occlusion of oxygen prevented oxidation of the crucible and the platinum metals, and insured reduction of the platinum compounds by the hydrogen. This idea, together with over 45 years familiarity and used of the pyrotechnology and over 34 years of welding has influenced the design of my atomic hydrogen furnace. The following is a simplified graphic showing the proposed circuitous cycle of the hydrogen atoms:


②
PSR Trapped
"⌇" = PSR (Primary Solar Rays)
103 cal/gram mole dissociation energy IN
(PSR entrapped at this stage)
DISSOCIATED H1
(On Separation, Electron Clouds Expand)
①
(Ether Field Background)
③
(Heat Out)
Emission of 109,000 cal/gram atom (heat converted from PSR as electron clouds shrink)
COMBINED FORM - H2
(Shrunk Electron CLOUDS)
RECOMBINED H2
(Shrinking Electron Clouds)
©
WJ
REVISED 2009

At “1" above is the diatomic hydrogen molecule H_2 , with more tightly bound electrons. At “2" are the dissociated hydrogen atoms, H_1 , separated due to the introduction of dissociating energy which can come in several forms. At “3" are the recombined atoms, with the emission of I.R. frequency sound waves in the ether as the electron clouds shrink. The entry into the process by the Primary

Solar Rays is indicated by “PSR”.

CONCLUSIONS

196,200 BTUs is a lot of energy from a pound of hydrogen. I have to pinch myself. Then repeat it many times. And this is only the tip of the iceberg.

Soon after this kind of “atomic energy” hit a small segment of the unknowing American public—the welders—in the late ‘40s, there were newspaper stories saying that the trans-Atlantic voyages of the Queen Mary could be powered by a hunk of radioactive material the size of a golf ball. They exaggerated their stories that way when the nuclear industry wanted us to get hooked and pay for it, but today’s “nuclear reactors” produce electricity at the same efficiency level as coal and gas-fired generators (38%), and we still have to deal with the inevitable problems of greater expense, entrenched, archaic, stagnant “nuclear” and fossil fuel technology, nuclear decay, waste, and probable devastation like Cernobyl.

The stumbling blocks to the use of hydrogen are actually illusions, created by the corporate-state coercive monopolists. The atomic hydrogen effect was discovered in 1912 by Langmuir, and was developed only as a “welding process” in the ‘30s. The DOE ‘scientists’ at Los Alamos said the use of hydrogen involved heavy, cumbersome cryogenic tanks and equipment, until a liquid hydride system was developed by Dr. Gerald Schafflander of California, and was pointed out by me in a letter to the New Mexican newspaper in Santa Fe, New Mexico in 1980, totally ridiculing their phony efforts in 1979. Then Schafflander and associates were prosecuted by the SEC—because the liquid hydride stored hydrogen in something like “rock salt”—which cracked out at about 70° C. (The SEC presented this as incredulous, I don’t.) DOE scientists mention only the heavier, more cumbersome, solid metallic hydride systems. Schafflander’s lighter liquid hydride system, which used solarvoltaics to generate the hydrogen, would be a wonderful way to store and deliver hydrogen for the atomic hydrogen process. Goodbye oil cartels, hello atomic hydrogen, it’s pay-back time!

By the way, the reason my “cold fusion” process (using my weird lead-based cathode) which I tested back in 1980, worked so well was because Langmuir, back in 1912, said his lead amalgam cathode produced “nascent” (atomic) hydrogen directly. Cold fusionists, throw away your palladium cathodes and get lead amalgam! Watch the price of water rise to $4.00 per gallon. After all, why should “they” allow “us” to buy a whole gallon of pure H2O “chemicals” for less, especially when a gallon is enough for a lifetime?

If the energy of hydrolysis produces approximately the same heat energy as that recovered by combustion, and dissociated hydrogen atoms can be produced directly by hydrolysis, this process with the furnace has to be free energy.

William Lyne was born in Big Spring, Texas in 1938 and was raised in West Texas oil boom towns, with two years as a child in the Bay Area of Northern California during WW II, and the southeast Big Thicket country of Texas. He has a B.S. in Fine Arts and Industrial Arts (1965) from Sam Houston State University in Huntsville, Texas and an M.F.A. in Studio Arts (1969) from the University of Texas at Austin. Some of his family roots in Texas go back to 1820, sixteen years prior to the Texas Revolution. He has been living in New Mexico since 1970, and presently resides just to the south of Santa Fe, in the little railroad town of Lamy.

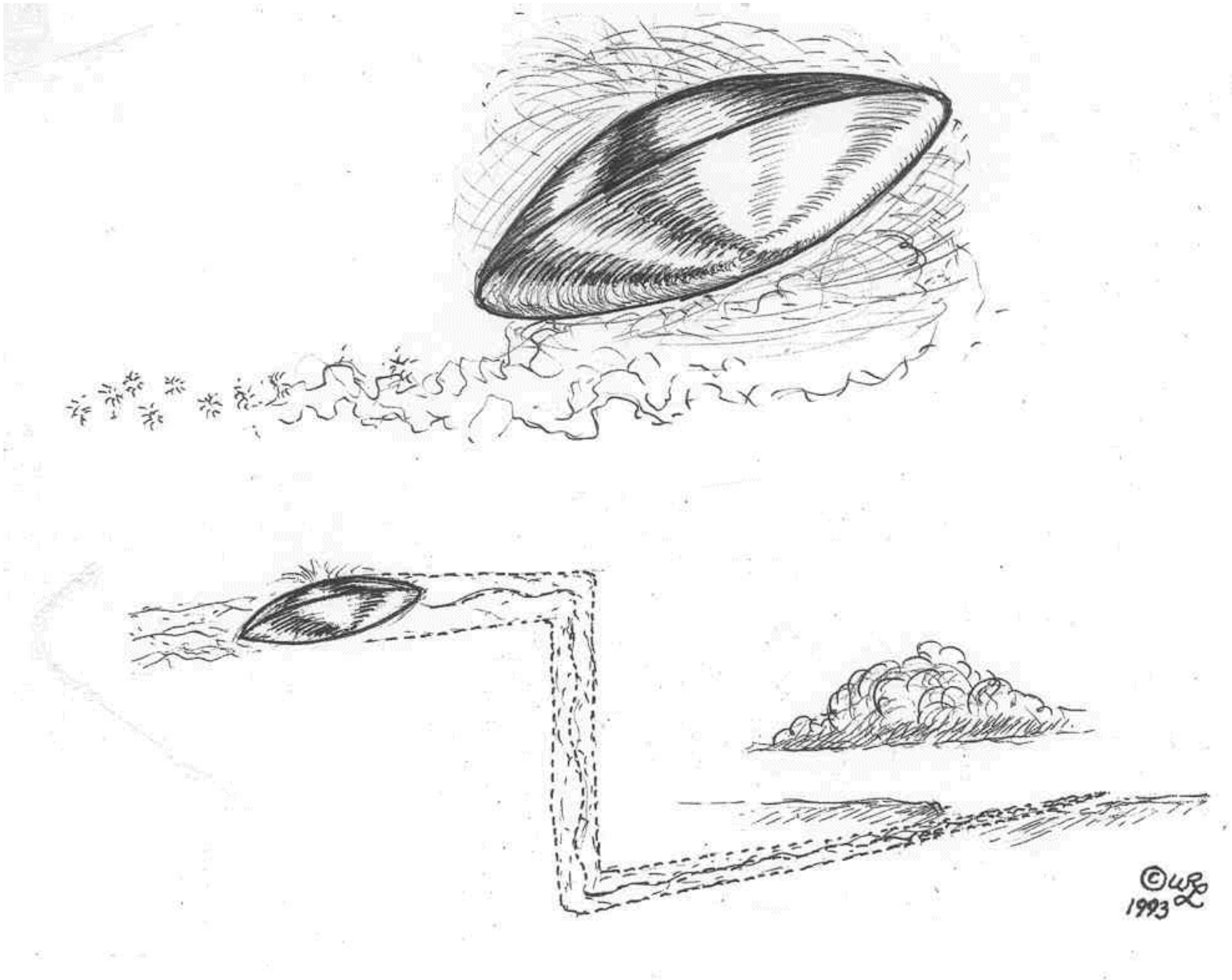
In 1993, he published ***Space Aliens From the Pentagon: Flying Saucers are Man-Made Electrical Machines.*** In 1995, a revised and expanded second edition of this book was issued. In 1997, the first edition of ***Occult Ether Physics*** was published. In 1998 the Second Revised Edition was published. In 1999 ***Pentagon Aliens*** (a third edition of ***Space Aliens From the Pentagon***) was published. In 2002, Lyne published ***Occult Science Dictatorship: The Official State Science Religion and How to Get Excommunicated.*** In 2010 the 3rd revised edition of ***Occult Ether Physics*** was published in Russia.

As a result of these books, a vast quantity of false government propaganda has been published via covert intelligence agents posing as members of the “UFOlogy” community.

Lyne has been featured on such T.V. programs as the History Channel’s “UFO Hunters” show (originally aired on April 22, 2009, pertaining to Nazi UFOs). In late 2011 Lyne was interviewed for a segment of Jesse Ventura's “ ***Conspiracy Theory*** ” TV show, which had not been aired by the time of this writing. Lyne has been interviewed several times by various radio talk show hosts, especially by his friend Erskine, of “Erskine Overnight”, of Phoenix. Look him up and tune in!

Here’s an illustration of a ship which Lyne saw in late summer, 1953, in Kermit, Texas while my family and our neighbors were having an ice cream party:

Texas while my family and our neighbors were having an ice cream party.



Design a site like this with WordPress.com

svalispeaksagain 9:19 pm on April 11, 2024

Tags: autobiography (2), Jesuit (16), mind control (86), occult (23), programming (75), ritual abuse (82), SRA (62)

Never Give Up: Intro and part of chapter 1

I will be posting some excerpts here from my autobiography, Never Give Up, here. This is the introduction and part of Chapter 1

Introduction

I remember being told, when I was a very young child, to say the words, with other children, "Ich bin eine kinder macht zachens gut" (I am a child who does things well). I believed it then, because life really was about performing well. But now, as I am older, I realize that this was not really true. I was a child who desperately wanted to be loved.

This is an autobiography in which I describe parts of the first twelve years of my life growing up in a highly organized and extremely wealthy occultic group: the Jesuit Order. Their wealth enables them to build extremely sophisticated programming studios and laboratories, and to use and develop advanced healing and mind control technologies. This autobiography does not include all memories, of course, since that would require a library of books. Instead, I share the memories that stand out the most from these early years. It is thus a "snapshot" of various scenes I lived through as a child to show what it was like to experience these events. While in previous books, I have discussed programming more from the observer perspective, in this book, I am much more personal.

This book is not written in chronological order. The first chapter covers a few key milestones in my infancy. The remaining chapters are grouped according to topic, and cover memories from various ages within that topic. In these chapters, I often share how early trauma and training lay the foundations for later programming and training for the skill area or job discussed in that chapter.

Privacy & Cookies: This site uses cookies. By continuing to use this website, you agree to their use.
To find out more, including how to control cookies, see here: Cookie Policy

Close and accept

all) writers in that genre may be actually drawing from their memories of these types of things. I am also aware that some of the events I describe can be attributed to cult members dressed in costumes in elaborate setups, the use of virtual reality, drugs and hypnosis and other forms of trickery.

However, I also believe that not all things that occur in our world can be explained this simply. I believe that there is a spiritual, or even unknowable element to some experiences, i.e., encounters with forces that defy material or rational explanation. All that I can do is to share for the record my own encounters with these beings according to how I experienced these events, alongside the memories of the more mundane and very physical events of my childhood growing up in an occult training facility.

My memories are not unique. Many survivors around the world from various cults and agencies that practice mind control have reported similar things, including the military and assassin training, the training to respond to visual codes, tones, colors and other cues; spiritual training, and being wedded to Satan. None of these training and events are unique to the Jesuit order, although methods may vary from those used in other groups.

I have heard concerns that sharing memories about programming is giving too much information, possibly providing a “blueprint” for “how to program people.” I do not agree because programming involves much more than reading how one group does things. Reading memories of how one organized group programs their members, and then being able to program others, i.e., elicit the desired behaviors and beliefs in the subject, would be similar to reading a book on quantum physics, and then being able to build a spaceship. It simply can’t be done. A lot more knowledge and skill are required to be able to program people than is described in this book. Additionally, the groups capable of conducting the kind of programming described in this book are already doing the things described here, since this is from fifty years ago and things have advanced exponentially since then.

I have written this autobiography for several reasons. One is to expose what is going on in a world that is increasingly confronting what can simply be termed as “evil”, and some of the experiences that produce people capable of this evil. I also want to validate the memories of those who have survived similar types of abuse. I describe the impacts of such abuse on a young child and over that person’s lifetime, and hope that this would be helpful not only to survivors, but also to therapists and others who support survivors. To emphasize hope and the incredible strength and capacity for humanity that survivors retain despite pervasive early abuse, I share too how I began to question and break free of the abuse and control, despite my years of indoctrination, trauma and mind-controlled, programmed obedience to the Order where I had perpetrated against others under orders.

In the book I describe several memories of the Order investing tremendous amounts of time, effort, manpower and finances on the spiritual training and spiritually-themed programming of their infants and children. Some readers may ask, “Why on earth do they go to such a great lengths to instill occult beliefs in their children?” The answer is that the Jesuit Order in its dark side completely believes in the concepts of ascension (into immortality, bliss and fulfilment) and descension (into mortality and hell). Religion is a great motivator, as seen historically and around the world, and the Jesuits are no exception. They are fervent in their beliefs in ascension and descension to a degree that would put to shame many of the most fervent believers in many faiths. They spend a great deal of time passing their beliefs on to each new generation, as my memories illustrates, and believe that children must be introduced very early to these concepts in order to fully believe and grasp such concepts. As very young children learn best through concrete experiences, they train and program children through the use of older cult members dressed up as spiritual entities, and take them through studios designed to look like locations in the spiritual realms or dimensions. They believe that without these early concrete experiences, the child when older will eventually have much greater difficulty in accessing the dimensions, and seeing, hearing and interacting with immortal beings who assist with ascension.

Finally, this is my personal story. As human beings, we each long for someone to hear our story, whether good or bad, as this is part of the processing that occurs for those who have survived extreme trauma. In a sense, this is my narrative shared with the world now, in hopes that it will accomplish some good, and provide some hope for others who long to be free.

The memories shared within these pages are the result of 35 years of working at healing. These memories did not come forward quickly, easily or painlessly. It involved many years of journaling, therapy, prayer ministry, using dolls and other toys to act out what had happened, as well as other modalities. Over time, I have gained a much better understanding of what my life was, and as a result, what I want to rest of my life to be. I want it to be free of the manipulation, the demands for performance, and the spiritual darkness that characterized my younger years. My greatest desire is to now live my life in thanksgiving to the God of the Bible, and His son, Jesus, who have forgiven me for the terrible – and painful – things I was forced to do, throughout my life.

Defining Some Terms Used in this Book

Dissociation and Programming: When a person is subjected to extreme pain to the degree that his/her mental, emotional or physical survival is threatened, that person can **dissociate**, i.e., create a new state of consciousness that is capable of doing anything in order to survive or stop the trauma. Emotional traumas, such as abandonment, even in the absence of physical traumas, especially by an attachment figure, can also cause dissociation. This new state of consciousness is extremely suggestible. Programmers in the cults consider this a type of *tabula rasa* state: in order to survive, this new state of consciousness will believe/do/feel whatever it is told to think/do/feel and is easily convinced that this compliance is what stops the abusers from abusing him/her. Common terms for these new states of consciousness include “personalities”, “parts” or “alters”. The goal of cult-controlled dissociation as described in these pages is to ‘**program**’ the child: (1) subject a young child to enough pain, physical or mental, or both, to create new states, (2) give them names or codes, (3) teach these new states specific beliefs, emotions and/or jobs, (4) condition these parts into continued compliance by reward and punishment. In this book, I use the term **‘parts’**.

Cult host: the cult host is the part of the child raised in a cult who lives the child’s cult life, e.g., this is the part who is out in the body during rituals, meetings and lessons in the cult facilities, and so on. This part will not be amnesic to the cult activities. For me, this was the part of me that felt most substantial and most like the “real me” since most of my life was spent in cult facilities or carrying out duties for the cult in other settings.

Presenter: In the Jesuit order, these are the parts of an individual that are created to be “out”, or to present and live in the “normal world” in “ordinary families” outside the training facility. These parts are programmed to present in various countries, and will have families that host them starting at age three. Each presenter in each country will have been programmed to have its own name, personality, abilities and preferences, and to be completely amnesic to all cult activities, as well as to the activities of the other presenter parts. Despite being one set of parts, they will believe that they are the entire person, and only recall an ordinary life with no hint of any cult existence. Presenter parts are typically programmed to disbelieve, deny, or be highly distressed by any cult-related memories.

Internalize: During early childhood, we tend to internalize the things we experience and see (building a sense of reality and how the world works). Programmers take advantage of this natural developmental period to introduce parts to concrete experiences that demonstrate to the child the scenarios, people and beliefs that they want the child to internalize. For instance, if they want the child to internalize a castle, they will take the child to spend time in this castle. If they want the child to develop an internal 'castle guard', they will have a designated part spend time with a castle guard (to role model the beliefs and behaviors), then dress the part up as a castle guard and have the part act out this role. This kind of 'internalization' is common across individuals who experience early trauma, for instance, the person who realizes that they still hear their critical parents' voices inside their heads long after they have attained adulthood. Due to the dissociation, parts subject to these setups may only have experiences of the 'reality' that their programmers had them 'experience'.

Programming studio: These are large dedicated rooms or areas for programming in the cult facilities. These studios would rival the best of any Hollywood filming studio. They can be designed to look like any place that the programmers need, e.g., space ships, pyramids, underwater caverns, the city of Troy, a circus, etc. They have state-of-the-art lighting, animatronics, holograms, walls, ceiling, and floors that are screens that can display any scenario, and other audio-visual technologies to create extremely realistic experiences for the child being programmed in them. During programming scenarios, the adults and older children will put on costumes and act out the scenes (for instance, in a 'hell' scene, they may dress up as demons) that the programmers want the infants and children to learn about and eventually internalize.

Programming laboratories: Often located in the same buildings as the programming studios, these are areas dedicated to research on programming, and where children and adults receive assessments, health checkups, programming schedules and other processes that are critical to their programming. Very sophisticated equipment for programming, data collection, data management and so on is part of these labs.

The Fathers: Individuals in the Jesuit Order, both men and women, (yes, there are both sexes in the occultic side of this order, unlike the male only fathers in the public side) who have undergone the full training required and completed the coming of age ceremony at age 13 (described later in this book), are titled 'fathers'. For instance, as a child, I called my primary mentor, "Father Mattheo".

The Fathers I Loved: As the Order understands the importance of attachment and community for mind control, each child raised in the Order will be given 12 primary Fathers to be bonded to from infancy. Three of these 12 will be designed as the child's primary programmers, and the child will be conditioned to bond most strongly with these three fathers. This bonding starts in the womb, then throughout infancy and childhood. It is common for individuals in the Order to be assigned three new primary programmers as they become adults. This is to ensure that the person continues to be bonded to agents capable of controlling them as their original programmers age, and that there is no risk of losing control over that individual should their original programmers die. These new programmers are typically selected from among peers who he/she is already very close to, such as a twin, a classmate (who is as close to them as any biological sister or brother could be), or a close mentor.

Class: At the age of six, children raised in the Jesuit programming facilities are assigned to a class consisting of eleven other children their own age, to create a group of twelve for each class. There are multiple classes within each facility, and each class will have their own dormitory. These children eat together, sleep together, go to classes together, go through physical training together, and bond extremely closely to one another. The fathers tell them that they are “sisters” and “brothers”. The children consider their classmates to be sisters and brothers, emotionally, even if not genetically. Along with the fathers, these classmates comprise the child’s “family” when growing up in the facility.

Mage: The Jesuit Order is very occultic. Each child will have spiritual mentors who have achieved the status of a mage, an individual who has become extremely well versed in occultic knowledge, incantations, spells, and rituals over many years of training, intense study and testing. Mages are expected to mentor those younger than them, and to help raise up a new generation of mages. They are skilled in oral teaching, ancient languages and are often master storytellers, since much of the information is also passed down in oral form. All children are expected to become mages themselves. I use the term ‘mage’ instead of other terms for practitioners of the occult arts, such as ‘wizard’, ‘sorcerer’, ‘magician’ or ‘witch’ as this is the term that parts used when sharing their memories.

Ascended Master: This is considered by the Jesuits the highest form of spiritual achievement. These individuals are considered as close to ascension as a human being can achieve while still walking the earth.

Immortal: The Order believe that immortals are beings who are trying to help mankind ascend and become like them, and to teach them how to overcome their mortal flesh. “Overcoming the mortal flesh” includes suppressing the desires within a human being that make them flinch away from interacting with these beings, and accepting the pain and long, difficult training that the fathers believe is necessary to ascend. The Jesuit fathers utterly and completely believe in these immortals, and in the theology of ascension and descension.

Demon: I believe that the immortals and other spiritual beings described in this book are actually demons, or what the Bible describes as fallen angels. These beings were formerly filled with glory and were in the presence of the true God of the Bible. However, the one named Lucifer (now known as “Satan”) chose to rebel against the loving creator of the universe, due to pride (he wanted to be as God). In his rebellion, the Bible says that one third of the angels followed Lucifer and became fallen angels, or demons are they are commonly known. Demons can also refer in some theologies to the souls of individuals or Nephilim who are wandering the earth. In my book, I am not referring to this interpretation, but instead, to the “fallen angel” definition. While I believe that both angels and demons are real, as the memories in this book make clear, some of the “demons” I encountered in childhood were actually older children or adults in costumes. Also, I had many parts who were programed to believe they were demons. This is extremely common in ritual abuse and mind control groups. These parts are usually very young children. These parts, when they came out, would growl, threaten, and act very convincingly according to how people believe demons would act. In reality, however, they were frightened little children who had been given a difficult role to play inside, whether as a punisher, a guardian, or other jobs.

Chapter 1: Infancy

One of my first memories is of looking at the light sifting in through an outside window. I am an infant, and am being held, and allowed to look outside for a brief moment. I am old enough to hold my head up and body straight, as I peer longingly at the outside world, at the soft greens, browns and blues of grass, earth and sky. I wonder if even then, I was longing to be free from the facility that was almost my whole world the first three years of life.

I was conceived in a genetics laboratory in Switzerland, the product of “state of the art” genetic manipulation. I was a “generation 3” baby in the Order, from one of the batches of genetically designed babies that were ‘benefiting’ from their latest round – the third one – of genetic knowledge, including the ability to isolate genes for intelligence, strength, and quick healing. I know this from looking later in life at my own records, once I had clearance at the cult facility as a trainer myself. As an adult in the Order, I also read my own records of the programming done to me while in utero, but I have no conscious memories of the programming; only vague, inchoate feelings of rage, sadness, joy, love and rejection, and feeling very disturbed at the thought of what these feelings could mean.

All I can really be sure of is that as a fetus, my life was unpleasant and manipulated, a mixture of reward and punishment, to prepare me for what was to come when I was born. What was distressingly omitted was something I had never known, but instinctively craved: real love without conditions. It was to become a deep longing throughout my life. Later in life, after I left the Order, during my healing journey I met fetal parts from the prenatal period of my life. These fetal parts had not only their original memories, but had also been programmed throughout my lifespan. This made their memories a mix of primal fetal rage, fear, and pain due to early traumas, and the meaning their programmers gave these memories.

My next conscious memory, a brief flash, is of being held lovingly by a woman who is rocking me in a chair, while she nurses me at her breast. The room is white; the woman is dressed in white, and she is singing me a song about how the best and bravest do great things for the Order, smiling tenderly at me the whole time. I am content, and love her, this woman who is one of my primary trainers, as she soothes me after a programming session that I no longer remember, or want to remember, wanting simply to experience being held and loved for this point in time. There is no other type of love available, so like a sponge, I soak it up.

Another memory flash: men in white lab coats come through the nursery, checking each infant. I am in a metal crib with bars, and want to get out, but I am still too young to try. But even then, the thought of escape, while unattainable then, simmers in the back of my mind. The problem is that it is getting fuzzier, a bit harder each day, to know exactly what it is that I want to escape, but even during rest, I feel deep within that something is very wrong here, something that I need to get away from, regardless of the soothing words and loving pats on the back.

I want to note here that early trainers are both male and female, and in the facility that I was raised in, female trainers often nursed young infants as part of the bonding, and also to comfort them after stressful training sessions. The trainers were sometimes given injections of hormones to lactate if they were not actively lactating. The Jesuit fathers were well aware of the importance of attachment in development, and in programming. The fathers who programmed me were dissociative as well; there was a tradition of abuse that created dissociation for many centuries in the Order. The love and nurturing they showed was real; it was not “fake”, but it was still manipulative, because they were not free to love the way that I believe many of them longed to. They were all slaves to fear – the fear of disobeying Satan – and this fear made them unable to love in a truly free or healthy manner. What they did instead was to pour out the love within them in the carefully prescribed ways that were permitted, such as when holding and nursing the babies. When I was older, this was one of the ways I was allowed to be tender, and I loved cuddling and holding the *babies. Even in this terribly abusive environment, the members of our group found ways to express love whenever we could.*

Josef Mengele's Cruelty

I am in the infant nursery at some point later in time. There are dozens of us infants in this room. We are in little metal cribs with metal rails, on mattresses with white sheets. We all wear little white soft long shirts and linen diapers, and can see each other through the bars of our cribs, or when we pull ourselves up to stand and peek over. Today, one of the other babies in the nursery is pulling himself up, and is energetically trying to climb over the raised rail of his crib. Interested, I pull myself upright, using the rail of my crib, to get a better view of what he is doing. He tries to climb over, drops back, then keeps trying, until finally, he falls right over onto the white tiled floor with a "thump!"

All of us other babies stare, and wonder if we can do the same; it looks like fun! The baby who escaped happily crawls around to the other cribs, as if urging us to join him. He seems to act a bit triumphant and proud of himself. Then, he crawls towards the main door to the nursery, which seems to be the way out since that is where all the trainers go through when they leave. Suddenly, footsteps are heard, the door swings open, and an enraged Mengele comes stomping into the nursery. His glasses and hair are quivering with rage.

He yanks the little boy baby on the floor up by one arm, and takes him over to a large wooden table in the middle of the room. He takes a large steel cleaver off a nearby table, and suddenly he chops the infant's hands off on the table top, with loud "thunks". All of us other infants stare at this scene with wide eyes of horror. We are silent, too terrified to even scream. Then, Mengele takes the little boy baby, and hangs him upside down from a hook in the middle of the nursery, to bleed to death in front of us all. The blood drips down, and the terrified baby screams as his white shirt turns scarlet, until finally, his cries slowly stop as the life ebbs out of him in spurts.

During this act of dying, Mengele glares at the rest of us infants, and screams in German, "This is what happens to "bad babies" who don't obey or try to get away!" Terrified at what I have just witnessed, shaking inside, I decide then not to try to crawl out of my crib, regardless of how wrong things feel in this place. I decide to bury these feelings of wanting to escape deep inside, because I very much want to live. Being the object of Mengele's anger is a very, very bad situation to be in, and I try to conform to what he wants as best as I can, even at this young age.

Mengele could be unutterably cruel, as this scene demonstrates. In our facility in Italy, he was the top trainer, due to the large amount of new programming information that he developed during the war years. This is why in occult groups, he is at times referred to as "the father of modern programming." He discovered that fetuses and very young infants could be programmed, and that in fact, programming done at these impressionable ages when the brain is developing rapidly, is less likely to break down later in life.

Being raised in a cult facility just north of Rome, Italy, the memories I share in this section are some of my earliest ones. I have other memories of Mengele, who I believe, along with Hilde, his blond, blue-eyed assistant, were both dissociative. I believe that they were products of the extreme and cruel programming methods of the early 1900s, when attachment was less understood, and sociopathic personalities were more likely to develop. As far as I know, Hilde, who was raised with him and endured the horrors of their *childhood together with him, was the only human being that he trusted, although he did obey orders from those who paid him to program their children, both in Italy and other countries.*

Mengele and Hilde were two of my infant trainers, but not my only ones (thank goodness!). I shudder to think of what kind of human being I would have grown up to be if I had not also experienced the kindness at times from the Jesuit fathers who were my primary attachments.

Survival of the Fittest

Mengele liked to use 'survival of the fittest' setups to cull out the weakest babies, and ensure that only the fastest, strongest, most intelligent babies were kept. Fortunately, due to the large numbers of babies that died, this setup was phased out quickly in the Order after his death. By then, I was an adult, and my influence as a trainer, along with that of Mattie, another top trainer, caused this change. We argued successfully that this method was needless, since there were other ways of assessing these qualities. We were also concerned about the long-term impact on the Order's unity, longevity and prosperity, if all our members believed deep in their unconscious minds that their peers were competitors for basic needs, and that the only way for them to survive was for their peers to die.

I can crawl, quickly, now that I am four months old, with soft curly brown hair starting to grow that matches the color of my brown eyes. I am athletic and fast, and perform well in the physical assessments. Today, I am in a small cage with bars. I can see two dozen other similar cages in the room, each containing a baby. I am hungry and thirsty, since I have not been fed for several hours. In the middle of the room are three bottles with formula. I look hungrily at them, I want one! Suddenly, the doors to all of the cages lift simultaneously, and a baby race is on. We all crawl as fast as we can to get to the bottles in the middle of the room.

I, and two of the other fastest babies get there first. Breathing hard, I grab a bottle and start drinking the life-giving, nourishing formula. But two other babies are trying to grab the bottle away from me, they are hungry too. There is a fist grabbing for the bottle, and another baby is climbing onto my back. I have to fight them off, kicking, biting, twisting and turning my back on them, all the while trying to drink the formula as quickly as possible. I am able to successfully keep my bottle and fend off the other hungry babies, using my strong, chubby little legs to kick some away, and get enough formula in me to allay my hunger – and to survive. After a few days of this scenario, the weakest babies are crawling extremely slowly, and I, along with two other of the strongest babies are able to drink a full bottle with barely any resistance from the others.

Mengele walks into the room and picks one of the babies up who is drinking formula, cuddles him, and praises us three, looking at us with a smile. "You are good babies, strong and smart," he tells us. He then goes around the room, and one by one, he hangs a baby from a hook through its gut, in the middle of the room. "This was a weak baby," he says derisively. "This baby didn't try hard enough." He hangs others of the "weak" babies from hooks, and horrified, we three survivors watch. I realize deeply that, in order to survive, I must perform well. Surviving means performing well for Mengele, and I learn quickly to be fast and smart – to find the best way to do something. I don't want to end up on a hook, hanging in the middle of a room.

I am a toddler, several months later, and I hate Mengele, on whom my survival depends. Once again, I am in a cage in a room, with doors that can rise. Next to me is another toddler my age, a little girl. I smile at her, and she smiles at me. In the middle of the room is some food and water, and I already know what will happen.

Suddenly, the doors to our cages lift, and we all run to the middle, trying to fight off each other in a melee that includes mashed faces from tiny fists, kicking, and grabbing. I grab some food, which I eat quickly, grab a drink, and return to my cage.

This happens for two more days, but on this third day, I notice that the little girl in the cage next to me is weakening. I am starting to notice others more at this age, and seeing her look this way bothers me – a lot. When the doors lift, I race to the middle, grab some food, eat a quick bite, then return back to my cage. I then offer some of the food in my little fist to this other toddler. She smiles gratefully at me, but doesn't seem to want to eat; I wonder why, since I was extremely hungry before I ate some of the food. I go over to her cage, and try to put it in her mouth, but she doesn't eat, to my huge distress. I realize now as an adult that she was probably dehydrated and too weak to eat. "Eat, eat, eat" I tell her over and over, but even when I try to put the food in her mouth, she just closes her eyes and falls asleep.

The next morning, she dies and is taken away. As I watch her body being carried out, I cry silently, hiding my tears from Mengele, who would have punished this type of weakness. Fortunately, the fathers were more understanding, and disagreed at times with his methods.

That night, Mattheo, the father I love most of all, notices that I am upset. In my high-pitched little toddler voice, I sob and tell him about the other little girl.

"I am glad that you cared," he says. "But even more glad that you lived. There simply wasn't enough food for all of the babies." While he is trying to promote my acceptance, I can see in his eyes that he is sad and disturbed, too.

"I wanted to share, but she wouldn't eat," I say, crying.

"She was too weak to eat," he says. "But it was good of you to try. And very smart of you to try to find a way to help her."

Mattheo is a rising leader in the Order, and I am glad that he understands. In a few more years, he will be one of the fathers who initiates stopping these survival exercises, with the support of the younger trainers. I love Mattheo and the other fathers, and trust him more than I trust Mengele. But Mengele will never, ever suspect how I feel, because I want to survive, and Mattheo has made it clear that he wants me to live, too.

Many of the infants programmed by Mengele and other trainers in this type of scenario struggled with issues around food all of their lives. When adults, later in life, they hoard food, or gain weight, or become anorexic. Even as a young child, when hosted in my American presentation, I would sneak food and hide it under my pillow. My family teased me relentlessly about this habit, but allowed it, perhaps sensing the deep psychological need to do so.

Mattheo and the other fathers argued successfully to discontinue these methods for several reasons. One was seeing disturbances related to food in the children that survived. But another was that this programming promoted survival at the expense of others, while the Jesuits wanted their leaders to think of the good of all, when leading teams on missions; they wanted to promote a cohesive working together and bonding with each other that is part of life in the order, and this training went against it. Later generations

– those after G7 in the Jesuit Order- would not have to undergo these extreme setups.

Sexual Training

I am just a few weeks old. One of the fathers I love, Father Jerome (who is also a primary trainer) comes into the nursery and stands over my crib. He looks at me lovingly, then takes my diaper off, and rubs me gently with his hand between my legs. It feels nice, but also odd; I feel confused. He continues for a while, and then puts his mouth between my legs.

This happens daily, as part of my early sexual training. I have never known anything else. When these things happen, I am called “Amis”. At first, all is gentle and kind, and I learn to accept it as part of being loved by my trainers, as part of the daily routine. After all, this doesn’t hurt, unlike some of the other things they do to me.

But after a few weeks, Father Carlotti, another primary trainer comes in. He has a special object in his hand; it is round, small, and not too hard, and he lubricates it and gently inserts it into my rectum. It is uncomfortable, and I wiggle and make a noise of dislike (I have learned not to cry and tantrum in rage already), but he makes a hand signal that means “Be still”. The halt and be still commands are among the very first commands I have learned since birth, and so I go limp, as taught, and allow him to continue. After a few seconds more, he stops, and then picks me up and praises me. He tells me, “Amis, what a good baby you are!” with genuine love in his voice, looking me in the eyes with his beautiful amber brown eyes. I wiggle in delight; I have performed well, and he is happy with me, that is all that matters. I am learning that when asked to do things that hurt or make me feel sick inside, I must endure them for the ultimate reward afterwards: love and affection. Father Carlotti holds me against his strong, warm chest for a while, then takes me to one of the female fathers to be nursed.

I have already learned that when I don’t perform as asked, I will be punished with even more pain, such as being held upside down by my legs, and whipped with a small but very painful whip. I prefer hugs and praise, so I do what I am asked to do, almost always. I am considered “programmable” and not “difficult” or “resistant” as some babies are, as I learn about when I am older and hear the fathers discussing different babies in the nurseries, categorizing this among other qualities. I also learn when allowed to watch the fathers as an older child that babies who are considered not “programmable” or “too difficult” get slated to be the infant or toddler that dies in various scenarios. But at this young age, I still don’t know these things. I work hard to gain the smile and affection from the fathers, which is what they want – for me to perform in order to earn their love and approval.

I am five months old, a vigorous, healthy, happy, active baby. I can already sit up and crawl, and am practicing standing up. I also am able to speak some very simple two-word phrases, and understand my trainers when they speak with me. Father Mattheo, the father I love most of all, comes to my crib. He has some equipment that he hooks me up to, and inwardly I flinch, although outwardly I smile. This is equipment to shock me with, and I am already familiar with it.

He then calls out Amis, and some of the parts that she oversees inside, including Charté, a part that has been previously split from her. As he sexually stimulates Charté with his finger, he also applies mild, but painful, shock at the same time. I have learned not to flinch away from shocks, although internally I am upset at the pairing of what I have associated with “love” with this new pain. I can’t help myself; salty tears run down my cheeks, but I don’t flail or try to get away.

Mattheo continues doing this for five minutes, telling Charté over and over, “Love is pain. Love is pain. You love pain, it shows love.” Afterwards, he stops the shocks, and holds her tenderly, saying, “You are a good baby, and I love you.” Charté , while still upset, is glad that this was not a punishment, as shocks can be. He then looks into her young baby eyes, and says, “You must learn to do this. I know it is difficult, and it makes you feel angry, but this is important, and what you are learning is very, very important. I am not doing this to you to punish you, but because I love you. Charté, you are very special for learning to do this and will be able to do great things for me and the other fathers if you learn this.” He, and the other fathers, always acknowledge the discomfort and understand the feelings, and discussing them with me and the other parts, even as infants.

Charté is learning to enjoy sadomasochistic sex, and to associate it with feelings of love, arousal, and feeling special and important. Later, she will be dissociated and reorganized into other parts who have only known these feelings, and she will oversee them as a sub-controller within Amis’s system. These skills will be used when I am older to help me do missions with individuals who prefer this type of sex, including gathering intelligence or gaining favors. These skills, learned so young, will also help me to survive the extremely painful sexual acts that I will have to endure in some of the homes of the very wealthy around the world. In the order, they do not call us “trafficked”, but “skilled”; and our being sent out for various forms of sexual abuse from earliest childhood are considered “missions” for the order.

But deep inside, I feel violated and angry. This is abuse, and my little baby heart and mind know it, even though all of the adults around me treat this as normal, and model it in their own lives. I have learned to hide my anger, but it is there, simmering deep inside. While I love the fathers who rock me, hold me, nurse me and love me, I also hate them with a deep, white-hot hatred.

One thing that the scene above illustrates is that even in infancy, the Jesuit programmers acknowledged how their abuse made me feel. They could tell, by my reactions, the look in my eyes. But then they normalized it within a framework of something that must be done in order to successfully complete missions, as necessary to show my love for them. The Jesuit fathers were masters at manipulating my infant need to attach and maintain a loving bond with them and used it to get me to accept their abuse. The Jesuit programmers understood that a child – even an infant – will do much more for love than in response to any amount of torture, and used this knowledge on me and the other infants I grew up with, just as it was used against them, continuing the cycle of abuse and its normalization generation after generation.

During my own healing, it was a struggle for Amis, Charté and other parts to realize that they had even been abused, since this was “love” to them, the only love they had ever known. They wondered what all the fuss was about when they wanted to continue their activities, even after I left the group, and became aware of their activities and wants that put us in extreme danger. I was quite surprised when Charté came out early in my healing journey, offering to sit on my therapist’s lap and give him rough sex; I was also saddened realizing that she had been pushed out by another part inside who wanted to disrupt and distract from what I had been talking about with this therapist. Talking to these parts using logic didn’t help. Holding them inside, spending time with them, and showing them other forms of love and experiences that were not sexual helped more.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

Autobiography: Never Give Up February 7, 2024 In "healing"	Interview Online July 17, 2023 In "healing"	Never Give Up Part 2: The Struggle June 24, 2024 In "healing"

Bread Of Innocence 9:12 pm on April 13, 2024

Thank you so much for sharing this here, Svali. I realised last year, age 50, that I had survived ritual abuse in my childhood and so I am just at the beginning of my journey of reclamation.

It surprises me that the fathers were willing to congratulate you for showing your humanity by offering food to the other girl. I appreciate seeing that glimmer of humanity in your portrait of them. The inhumane things that they did to you and other children make it easy to label them monsters. The subtlety in your description clearly demonstrates the complexity of human interactions, behaviour and relationship.

I also appreciate the way you highlight their obsession with the polarity of ascension/descension and the veneration of ascended masters. It seems almost ridiculous that they are so obsessed with ascension and yet they fail to see the simplicity of listening to the wisdom of the heart. So focused on up/down and an unwillingness to go within.

Thank you again for sharing and being willing to speak out. 🙏

★ Like

Leave a Reply

Your email address will not be published. Required fields are marked *

Comment *

Name *

Email *

Website

Post Comment

☐ Notify me of new posts via email.

☐ Notify me of new comments via email.

← New Podcast Interview

Never Give Up: Chapter 1 (continued) →

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.

Design a site like this with WordPress.com

svalispeaksagain 4:40 pm on April 26, 2024

Tags: Christian (31), dissociation (41), healing (52), mind control (86), occult (23), programming (75), ritual abuse (82), SRA (62)

Never Give Up: Chapter 1 (continued)

I will be posting some excerpts from my autobiography, part 1, Never Give Up here. Below is more of Chapter 1.

Bonding to the Fathers

As an infant, each day was broken up into programming, training, comfort, rest, play times and attachment/bonding time on a strictly regimented schedule in the facility nursery. The fathers in the order were experts in child development and were careful to balance training (which was gentle, and filled with praise very early on, with only mild punishments if any for inability to perform in the early weeks) with nurture. They realized that if a child was not given enough nurture, they could develop psychopathic tendencies, would be less controllable (since love is the greatest motivator), and would show other pathologies in psychological or physical development. They knew this because of the failed programming methods used in the early 1900s, when the children were not given enough nurturing and failed to attach to a loving adult caregiver: many had to be "put down" later as they developed severe psychopathic tendencies, to the point of killing the trainers that they did not love, without a twinge of regret.

Oh, how carefully the fathers monitored and doled out "love" to us infants, and we came to look expectantly for that special time each day with the "fathers we loved". Each infant had three primary fathers they bonded with, along with nine others who were also important to their emotional development and training. I loved three special fathers the most: Father Mattheo, Father Jerome, and Father Carlotti. I was also very closely bonded to Father John, an older female trainer, and Father Daniel,

Privacy & Cookies: This site uses cookies. By continuing to use this website, you agree to their use.
To find out more, including how to control cookies, see here: Cookie Policy

Close and accept

bonded to only one individual and that individual died, the baby or child would be at a huge risk for failure to thrive, or would be basically un-programmable. They learned this, also, from the failures of the early 1900s, when some children bonded to only one primary trainer, who died. Data was collected on these children, and they kept it in their huge library of training materials and information, as well as coded into a huge computer database that could be accessed with a simple series of codes and voice commands for those authorized to do so.

So I, and the other infants I was raised with, bonded to the fathers we loved. But the fathers I loved also tortured me and the other babies. Infancy and childhood was a strange mix of torture and being held and rocked lovingly; being nursed by the same individual who later sexually abused me.

I am just a few months old, and angry about the pain the fathers inflict upon me. I feel sullen. While I have been trained to look up and smile when the fathers come into the nursery, today, I turn away. I turn my back on these men and women who bring me daily pain. It is Father Carlotti who comes by my crib, and sees my angry turning away.

“You cannot act this way,” he tells me curtly in Italian. “You are being a bad baby to act this way, and must be punished.”

He then goes and gets a couple of wrist holders and straps. He places the wrist holders around my chubby wrists, and then as punishment hangs me by my arms from the side of my crib. This hurts terribly, I feel as if my small arms which do not yet have the muscles and ligaments to take this, are being wrenched out of their sockets. The muscles burn as they are stretched. My arms do pull out of their sockets and I scream in pain.

Carlotti repeats, “This is what happens to bad babies who turn away, and don’t turn and hold their arms up.” He holds me with one hand, releasing my wrists with his other, and assesses me for the extent of the physical damage. He takes me to a healing room, and uses technology to put the arms back into their shoulder sockets, and to heal the joints and ligaments that have been so painfully stretched.

“Don’t do this again,” he warns. I don’t.

I came to hate and fear that phrase, “bad baby”, used by Mengele and the fathers, as something to avoid at all costs. “Bad babies” cried, turned away from, and kicked at their programmers, and did not greet them with an unfailing smile. “Bad babies” were allowed one or two chances, but after that,” bad babies” were hung on hooks from the nursery ceiling until they died, or were seen in “hell” later that day, being whipped to death by “demons” (children in costumes). We all learned to be “good babies”: compliant and programmable, and never to show how we really felt about how we were being treated. We were taught to send that anger down into an “anger pit” filled with anger-holding parts inside; this rage would then be directed at other objects, such as Christians, outsiders, and most importantly, ourselves.

This inability to show my feelings at the person who caused them fostered intense dissociation which the fathers had already carefully conditioned me to rely on while in the womb and during the early weeks after birth. I already had the structure in place to ‘dissociate away’ into designated parts the angry feelings out of my fear of punishment for “bad babies” and to focus on performing well and being a “good baby”.

In the memory above, I also mention the healing rooms. The programming facility had state-of-the-art healing technologies that even over sixty years ago were far ahead of what is commercially available to *healthcare providers currently. There were vats filled with saline and electrolyte/mineral solutions of various types, with various types of frequencies to promote healing, and even artificial skin that when lit with a red light would help new skin to grow rapidly. Because of the ongoing, physical abuse, these technologies were necessary to prevent permanent scarring or disability for the children being programmed, as well as older children and adults who might come back injured from dangerous or strenuous missions, or who might be accidentally injured during training and military exercises.*

The Drawer

I am a few months old, and I am upset. Father Jerome is taking out the wires and electrodes that I have come to hate; wires and electrodes that cause sharp, biting pain with the electric shocks that they conduct. I don't want this! When he tries to put the electrodes on me, I kick and squirm and wiggle away, struggling to avoid these stinging wires being placed on me.

"This type of behavior can't be allowed. Be still!" he commands sternly.

But I am not still. I disobey him, for I am still very small, and do not know yet what can be done to ensure compliance. His command instills less fear in me than the fear that the memory of shocks that sting like bees, shocks that cause terrible, burning pain. I don't want to be hurt, so I continue to resist, arching my back in protest and screaming.

Father Jerome stops, then takes a key hanging around his neck, and with it, opens a small drawer. This drawer has padding on the bottom and sides. He picks me up, saying, "You will experience utter darkness, the hell reserved for disobedience such as this." He then places me into the drawer, and slides it shut it with a loud "click".

It is utterly dark and soundless in this drawer. I can breathe, but there is no light, no noise, nothing. It is quiet, and I am afraid. I wait to see what will happen.

Time passes, and I am frightened and hungry. I cry and cry with ever louder wails, but no one hears. My diaper is wet and filled with stool, and I am afraid. No one can see or hear me in this place; no one is there to take care of me. I am a little baby, and I know that I will die if no one takes care of me. I depend on the adults around me for everything. And now, there is…nothing. Just black darkness. I am terrified.

Time passes, where I alternate between loud screams of terror, and soft whimpers. Finally, I am too exhausted to cry any longer. I fall asleep.

I am very sleepy; maybe I will never wake up. I am starting to feel very far away and strange, as if my body is getting smaller and further away. Maybe this is what dying is like. It feels like a long time has passed, and I am resigned to being here forever, and dying.

Suddenly, I hear the drawer slide open. There is a light, much too bright for my eyes which have been in complete darkness for so long, even though it is just the dim light that is on in the nursery at night.

Father Jerome is there, and I am frantic, desperate for him to take me out of this terrible, terrible box. "Will you obey me now?" he asks, looking me in the eyes. He sees the terror and pleading in them, and lifts me out of the box of terror, of abandonment.

He holds me for awhile, close to his chest, then gives me part of a bottle. I drink, but keep looking at his eyes the whole times, frantic for him to respond to my frantic terror and need for him to not leave me alone. Later, he takes me into a white room with a rocking chair, and rocks me for a period of time. Finally, I relax and rest awhile.

The next morning, Father Jerome returns, comes to my crib, and tries to put the electrodes on me. I do not struggle or resist this time.

These drawers are reserved as punishment for resisting being programmed, and being placed in one was one of the cruelest tortures that I experienced as an infant. The sense of utter abandonment and terror was overwhelming, but it also ensured compliance in an infant that comes to realize that emotional survival depends upon obedience to what the trainers demand, no matter how difficult.

Learning to Crawl Towards Colored Lights

I am a baby, able to crawl but not able to do much else, yet. After all, I am only three months old. I am on the smooth floor of one of the programming labs. I have been told to wait. Suddenly, I hear six notes played in a specific sequence. Simultaneously, a code is flashed in front of me on a large overhead screen: it is a black and white pattern in a specific configuration meant to bring out a specific part. I have already learned to bring the correct parts out when different tones and patterns are shown to me during the previous first few weeks of life, and have become quite good at it, to the pleased smiles and “good girl!” comments from the fathers I love. This ability to make them so happy makes me coo and wiggle with joy.

Now, a part loyal to the Jesuit Order is out, and a green light, about the size of a traffic light, shines down the smooth tunnel I am crawling through as I crawl towards this light. The tunnel is bathed in the green light, as Cerachnid-1, a cult-loyal presenter, is learning that green is her color, just as the tone sequence and pattern are hers. This task is fun, and when Cerachnid reaches the light, she is given a piece of soft fruit as a special treat by Father Jerome, a man in his early 20s who already has white hair that looks beautiful with his clear blue eyes.

“Cerachnid, you did well,” he tells her. Jerome then picks me up in his strong arms and cuddles me against the soft folds of his lab uniform. “Cerachnid, you are so special for being able to do this,” he says, and Cerachnid wiggles with delight at the praise in his voice. “I love you,” Jerome tells her. “I am glad that you had fun doing this.” During this early part of training, there are lots of rewards and hugs when Cerachnid and other parts perform well, doing simple tasks such as recognizing cues to come out; recognizing their special colors, and obeying the trainers.

Punishments will come later on after this first, primary belief is instilled deeply: obedience to cues brings feelings of love, security, joy, and is even “fun”.

It is a month later. Cerachnid has been performing very well, but now something very important happens to her. Cerachnid undergoes extremely severe pain, being told ahead what will happen. The fathers always tell parts when pain is going to happen, they never hide this fact.

Cerachnid cannot endure this pain, and her mind starts dissociating from it, creating new little babies from herself. These new parts are quickly given names as each comes out; a code specific to them is flashed on the screen above her, and these new cult loyal parts split from Cerachnid become the system parts that she will oversee and eventually learn to control.

“You must keep these parts safe, Cerachnid,” Father Jerome tells her. She understands what “safe” means; it means making sure that they obey and believe everything they are told. Her job is make sure that they obey and believe; this is the only “safe” that she and others inside have experienced.

Cerachnid will eventually learn to forget that these other parts originally came from her, and instead, will see herself as protecting them from “further harm” (going through the agonizing pain, pain that made her feel as if she was dying, of her original splitting memory). She is told that she can only keep them “safe” by ensuring that they are always “good” by being obedient to programming cues and commands. Her desire to protect these parts dissociated from herself from experiencing further pain and trauma actually reflects the deep, instinctive self-love that all babies have for themselves, which the programmers are counting upon as they cause her and other primary controller parts to dissociate and then re-organize into subsidiary, system parts.

It is several weeks later, and I am four and a half months old. Cerachnid is taken to a special room in the programming lab. There is a huge tree pattern laid out on the floor, with a trunk, roots, branches and leaves. She has already met “Gnossis” (the tree of knowledge), a woman dressed in a tree costume, who visited her crib numerous times over the past few months, and explained to her who she is. Cerachnid now sees the face of this woman embedded in the center of the tree, inlaid with the bark, and wiggles with recognition.

“Cerachnid, it is time for you to learn where you live on the tree,” the soft, beautiful voice says. “Come to your place.” At that moment, a special pattern (Cerachnid’s code), a small green light and the musical sequence play on a specific branch, close to the trunk. Cerachnid is guided by the trainer to this spot, and she sits.

“This is where you will live,” says the soft voice of the tree. “This is your special place where you can feel safe; if you leave your special place, you and those you protect and help – your system – will be unsafe”. The trainer then comes and hugs Cerachnid, and gives her a soft, sweet rusk to suck on. They spend time in peaceful activity, while one limb of the tree slowly strokes Cerachnid’s back and the trainer murmurs loving words to her. After a few minutes, the trainer calls out another part whose job is to not remember the programming session, Cerachnid goes back in, and the trainer picks me up and carries me out of the lab. I have no memory of what happened inside the lab; only Cerachnid will remember learning her place on the tree.

This gentle, loving scene is repeated numerous times over the next few weeks for Cerachnid and other system controllers, until each one understands their “place” on the tree; my system controllers are major branches, with their system parts the outlying twigs, and programs (leaves) that branch out from them.

It is not until this program, and the deep feeling of love and safety for going to the correct place on the tree, and remaining there, is instilled, that the punishments for leaving the designated place or disobedience are installed. For the rest of her life, Cerachnid will always seek to return to that initial sense of peace, safety and being loved that underpinned her programming. And for her, this means complete, unquestioning obedience and belief in what her trainers tell her.

The above memory illustrates how the Jesuit trainers use a combination of concrete, physical structures *and activities for their training of infants and young children, combined with rewards and punishments to ensure that expected behaviors will be instilled. But this, like all programming, will often rest upon an earlier, primary memory, of a time when the controller was loved and felt safe; in essence, a "resting place" that the controller will always try to return to whenever possible. The trainers provide a framework for the only way this feeling of security and attachment can be attained: being programmable, and obedient to the programs being installed by the trainers.*

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

Mother Programming February 1, 2019 In "mind control"	Documentary on ritual abuse May 6, 2024 In "healing"	Autobiography: Never Give Up February 7, 2024 In "healing"

Leave a Reply

Your email address will not be published. Required fields are marked *

Comment *

Name *

Email *

Website

Post Comment

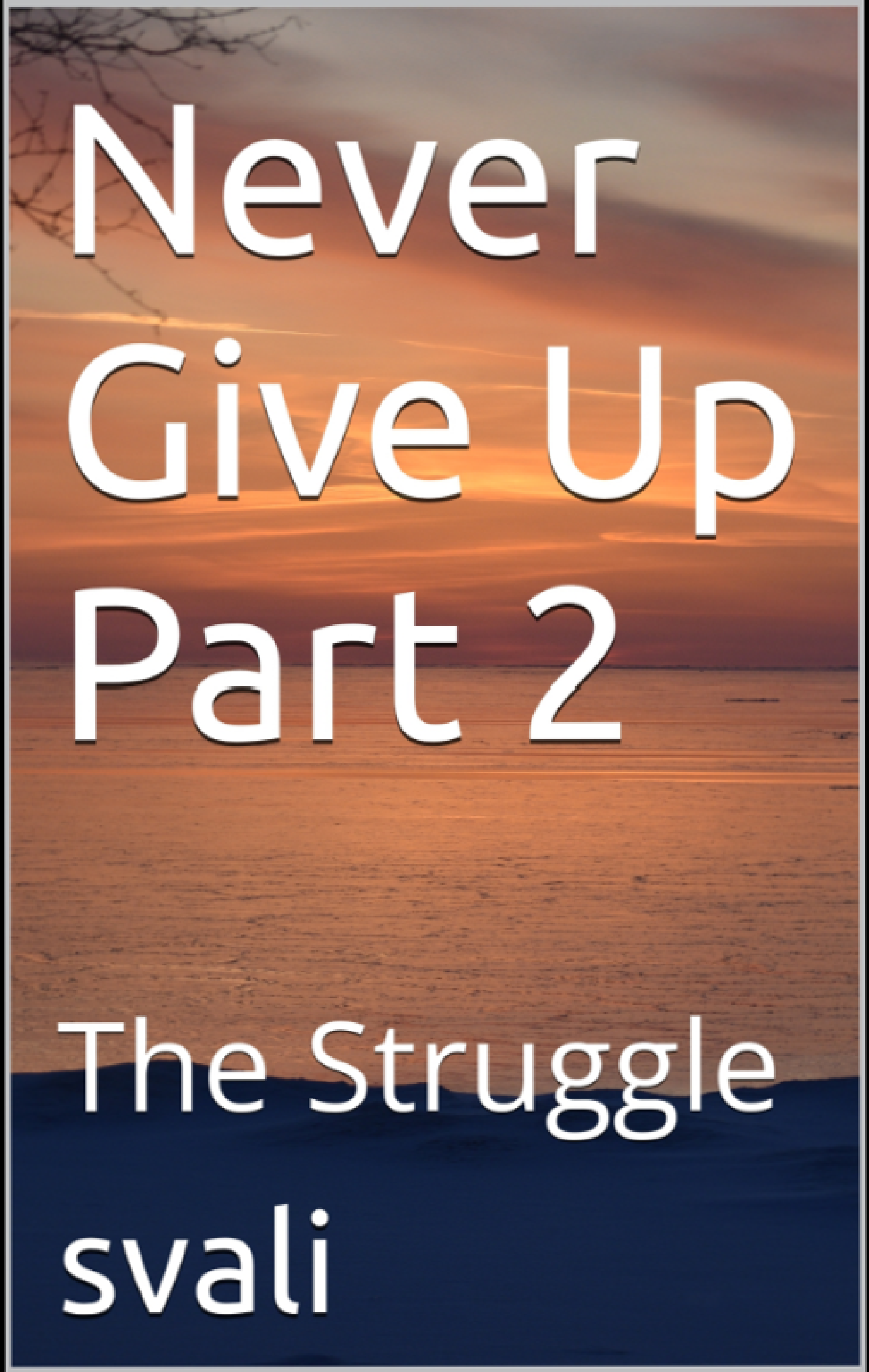
☐ Notify me of new posts via email.

☐ Notify me of new comments via email.

← Never Give Up: Intro and part of chapter 1

Documentary on ritual abuse →

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.



Never Give Up Part 2

The Struggle

svali

Never Give Up Part Two: The Struggle

Autobiography of a Survivor of Ritual Abuse and Mind Control

Copyright 2024

All rights reserved. Do not reproduce or copy any of the information in this book without prior permission of the author, who can be contacted at svalispeaks@gmail.com.

Dedicated to the therapists, prayer ministers and loving people around the world who have helped survivors break free of cult and mind control abuse. Thank you for what you do. Also, to Jo, Ellen, Barbara, Heather, Dick, Travis, Hoji, C. D., and many others who have been part of my journey out. Without you, it would not have been possible. I appreciate you so much. The LORD knows the cost and the joy you have experienced when helping survivors, and the crown in heaven awaiting each of you.

Also, to the One who has made my journey out of the cult possible and given me the courage to share the things written within these pages: the true Jesus Christ. I have failed Him many times, as these pages reveal, but He never, ever gave up on me. This book is a testimony to His goodness and mercy throughout my life.

Contents

- Introduction
    - Defining Some Terms Used in this Book
- Part 1: Teen Years
- Chapter 1: Heartbreak
- Chapter 2: Running Away in America
- Chapter 3: Finding and Losing Faith
- Chapter 4: Mission Against a Pastor
- Chapter 5: Teen Years in Other Presentations
- Chapter 6: Hidden Illuminati Child
- Chapter 7: Rothschild Procurateur
- Chapter 8: Satan’s Generals
- Chapter 9: Joining the 33
- Chapter 10: Satan's Child
- Chapter 11: Rothschild Oracle
- Part 2: Adult Years
- Chapter 12: Leadership in the Order
- Chapter 13: Developing programming technology
- Chapter 14: CERN
- Chapter 15: Misha in Israel
- Chapter 16 Nephilim Project
- Chapter 17: Head Trainer
    - A Question from a Child
    - Prenatal Programming
    - Programming my presenter children
- Chapter 18: Being a 33
- Chapter 19: Adulthood in the Presentations
    - Growing up: Getting Married and Having Children

    Monitoring my children's presenter programming
Chapter 20: Chi (Dark) Council and the Destruction of the World
Chapter 21: Readying a Global Secret Army
Part 3: Trying to Get Free
Chapter 22: Infiltrating the Healing Community
Chapter 23: The Memories Begin
Chapter 24: Going Downhill
Chapter 25: Back to Rome
Chapter 26: Project Alexis
Chapter 27: Leaving the Illuminati
Chapter 28: Illuminati Punishment
Chapter 31: Stripped
Chapter 29: Leaving the Jesuits
Chapter 30: Jesuit Punishment
Chapter 32: Rewarded and Controlled
Chapter 33: Life Continues
Chapter 34: Light of the World
Epilogue
About the Author

Introduction

In part two of my autobiography, *The Struggle*, I describe my life from 13 - 43 years old as a member of a highly organized and extremely wealthy occultic group: the Jesuit Order. This follows on the book *Never Give Up* where I write about my experiences in the Order from conception until age 14. *Never Give Up*, as part one of my autobiography, contains descriptions of how they subject infants and young children to extremely sophisticated and high-tech trauma-based mind control programming alongside spiritual manipulation and deep social bonding to raise members who are competent, loyal and obedient. My memories in this book will demonstrate how the early childhood programming, and spiritual and social control continued to impact me in my teen and adult years, causing me to continue carrying out the Order's agendas despite how repugnant they were to me.

I call this book *The Struggle* because of the conflicts that ensued between my own humanity and the inhumane agendas of the Order, which is directly controlled by Satan. In several chapters, I describe the two times during this period of my life in which I attempted to get free even after years of indoctrination, abuse and forced perpetration. In spite of being re-accessed and re-programmed several times during my teen and adult years, they could never truly take away my innate yearning to be free. My hope is that by sharing this struggle, I can show that survivors retain incredible strength and capacity for humanity and liberty. I believe this is true of all human beings – no matter how much torture, exploitation and forced perpetration a person has experienced, nothing can really erase the desire to be free. It may become 'hidden', 'buried' or 'forgotten', but the desire for freedom will always remain in that person's heart.

Being able to share these memories is the result of 35 years of ongoing healing work, involving journaling, collaging, therapy, prayer ministry, EMDR, and other modalities. Many of my memories are extremely brutal but not unique. Survivors around the world have reported similar things, including: the manipulation of attachment needs; being impregnated at a very young age then being forced to kill the newborn; the military and assassin training; science and scholarship training; human experiments; sex trafficking; racist, antisemitic and/or globalist agendas; high tech programming and horrendous punishment for the slightest 'disloyalty'. Nothing described in my books are exclusive to any single government or occult group that practices trauma-based mind control, although specific methods and ages at which events occur may vary between groups.

Like in the previous book, I narrate my experiences through the first-person perspectives of various parts in my system[1], mainly:

- Luke (Lucient), also called Luce by those closest to me, my Jesuit 'cult presenter' or 'cult host' who fronted in the occultic side of life in the Order. Her memories are of growing up in the Order's facilities and of carrying out a diverse range of jobs such as participating in rituals, programming, mind control technology research, assassinations, intelligence gathering, infiltration of other organizations, training the children of the Order in academic and practical skills, and other tasks.
- Ana (Anagram), my Illuminati 'cult presenter' who fronted on the occultic side of life in the Illuminati. Her memories initially only reflected that of a person who was raised and programmed by the Illuminati; she had no memories of actually being a member of the Jesuit

Order until several years after starting the healing journey. Ana's main job as an adult in the Illuminati was as a programmer, and she was also an oracle during her teen years.

- Elsa (*pseudonym*), my 'American presenter' who fronted in my ordinary, non-occultic side of life in America. Elsa grew up with complete amnesia to her Illuminati and Jesuit experiences, and the experiences of the other presenters who lived in other countries. She started to recall that she was an active member of the Illuminati in 1996. Her recall of Jesuit memories began in 2009. My early writings as svali reflects Elsa's and Ana's perspectives and memories.
- Other national 'presenters' who fronted as ordinary, non-cult people in various countries: Jean (France), Misha (Israel), Trixie (UK), Trina (Amsterdam), Trudi (Germany), and Gina (Italy). Like Elsa, each one of these presenters was programmed to have complete amnesia to each other and the cult world. Each presenter also was programmed to have a distinct personality and cover story, and to believe that she was the only person occupying the mind and body.

The memories in this book can be grouped into three main categories: memories of 'cult jobs' such as assassinations and conducting rituals; memories of my lives as 'ordinary, non-cult' individuals in various countries; and memories of trying to get free from the Order and the Illuminati. I share these particular memories for several reasons. One is to expose the evil, and to explain how people are coerced and conditioned into perpetuating this evil generation after generation. Another is to validate survivors who have similar memories, and to help therapists and other supporters to understand how early mind control and programming impacts a person over their lifetime. Most importantly, I share the many mistakes I made on the journey to get free, in hope that others could avoid these mistakes and also be encouraged to keep going, no matter what mistakes they might make. Getting free does not depend upon never making mistakes; for me, it involved continuing trying in spite of them.

My journey of getting free is inextricably intertwined with my Christian faith. I therefore have included several chapters where I describe how the Order and the Illuminati went to extraordinary lengths to force me to recant my faith, and 'prove' to them that I had genuinely and permanently rejected Jesus. I also share how God has been healing these experiences and their aftermath. I share these memories to highlight that these events **do not** make God condemn the survivor, and that He desires to bring comfort to anyone who has been through such horrors. Over and over again, I have found that God can deal with the guilt, shame, confused rage, sense of abandonment by God, and the anguished questions of "Why, God?" that such events create, and that His love, presence and forgiveness is still with me.

It has often been a painful and lonely journey to create a new life outside of the cult. However, it has been totally worth it to become more and more free from the manipulation, the demands for performance, and the spiritual darkness that characterizes life in the Order. My greatest desire is to now live my life in thanksgiving to the God of the Bible, and His son, Jesus, who have forgiven me for the terrible and painful things I was forced to do, throughout my life, and have provided me with the courage and love I need for building a new life.

Defining Some Terms Used in this Book

Dissociation and Programming: When a person is subjected to extreme pain to the degree that his/her mental, emotional or physical survival is threatened, that person can **dissociate**, i.e., create a new state of consciousness that is capable of doing anything in order to survive or stop the trauma. Emotional traumas, such as abandonment, even in the absence of physical traumas, especially by an attachment figure, can also cause dissociation. This new state of consciousness is extremely suggestible. Programmers in the cults consider this a type of *tabula rasa* state: in order to survive, this new state of consciousness will believe/do/feel whatever it is told to think/do/feel and is easily convinced that this compliance is what stops the abusers from abusing him/her. Common terms for these new states of consciousness include "personalities", "parts" or "alters". The goal of cult-controlled dissociation as described in these pages is to '**program**' the child: (1) subject a young child to enough pain, physical or mental, or both, to create new states, (2) give them names or codes, (3) teach these new states specific beliefs, emotions and/or jobs, (4) condition these parts into continued compliance by reward and punishment. In this book, I use the term **'parts'**.

Cult host: the cult host is the part of the child raised in a cult who lives the child's cult life, e.g., this is the part who is out in the body during rituals, meetings and lessons in the cult facilities, and so on. This part will not be amnesic to the cult activities. For me, this was the part of me that felt most substantial and most like the "real me" since most of my life was spent in cult facilities or carrying out duties for the cult in other settings.

Presenter: In the Jesuit order, these are the parts of an individual that are created to be "out", or to present and live in the "normal world" in "ordinary families" outside the training facility. These parts are programmed to present in various countries, and will have families that host them starting at age three. Each presenter in each country will have been programmed to have its own name, personality, abilities and preferences, and to be completely amnesic to all cult activities, as well as to the activities of the other presenter parts. Despite being one set of parts, they will believe that they are the entire person, and only recall an ordinary life with no hint of any cult existence. Presenter parts are typically programmed to disbelieve, deny, or be highly distressed by any cult-related memories.

Internalize: During early childhood, we tend to internalize the things we experience and see (building a sense of reality and how the world works). Programmers take advantage of this natural developmental period to introduce parts to concrete experiences that demonstrate to the child the scenarios, people and beliefs that they want the child to internalize. For instance, if they want the child to internalize a castle, they will take the child to spend time in this castle. If they want the child to develop an internal 'castle guard', they will have a designated part spend time with a castle guard (to role model the beliefs and behaviors), then dress the part up as a castle guard and have the part act out this role. This kind of 'internalization' is common across individuals who experience early trauma, for instance, the person who realizes that they still hear their critical parents' voices inside their heads long after they have attained adulthood. Due to the dissociation, parts subject to these setups may only have experiences of the 'reality' that their programmers had them 'experience'.

Programming studio: These are large dedicated rooms or areas for programming in the cult facilities. These studios would rival the best of any Hollywood filming studio. They can be designed to look like any place that the programmers need, e.g., space ships, pyramids, underwater caverns, the city of Troy, a circus, etc. They have state-of-the-art lighting, animatronics, holograms, walls, ceiling, and floors that are screens that can display any scenario, and other audio-visual technologies to create extremely realistic experiences for the child being programmed in them. During programming scenarios, the adults and older children will put on costumes and act out the scenes (for instance, in a 'hell' scene, they may dress up as demons) that the programmers want the infants and children to learn about and eventually internalize.

Programming laboratories: Often located in the same buildings as the programming studios, these are areas dedicated to research on programming, and where children and adults receive assessments, health checkups, programming schedules and other processes that are critical to their programming. Very sophisticated equipment for programming, data collection, data management and so on is part of these labs.

The Fathers: Individuals in the Jesuit Order, both men and women, (yes, there are both sexes in the occultic side of this order, unlike the male only fathers in the public side) who have undergone the full training required and completed the coming of age ceremony at age 13 (described later in this book), are titled 'fathers'. For instance, as a child, I called my primary mentor, "Father Mattheo".

The Fathers I Loved: As the Order understands the importance of attachment and community for mind control, each child raised in the Order will be given 12 primary Fathers to be bonded to from infancy. Three of these 12 will be designed as the child's primary programmers, and the child will be conditioned to bond most strongly with these three fathers. This bonding starts in the womb, then throughout infancy and childhood. It is common for individuals in the Order to be assigned three new primary programmers as they become adults. This is to ensure that the person continues to be bonded to agents capable of controlling them as their original programmers age, and that there is no risk of losing control over that individual should their original programmers die. These new programmers are typically selected from among peers who he/she is already very close to, such as a twin, a classmate (who is as close to them as any biological sister or brother could be), or a close mentor.

Class: At the age of six, children raised in the Jesuit programming facilities are assigned to a class consisting of eleven other children their own age, to create a group of twelve for each class. There are multiple classes within each facility, and each class will have their own dormitory room. These children eat together, sleep together, go through training together, and therefore bond extremely closely to one another. The fathers tell them that they are "sisters" and "brothers". The Order considers the children in a class to be sisters and brothers whether or not they are genetically related. Along with the fathers, these classmates comprise the child's "family" when growing up in the facility.

Mage: The Jesuit Order is very occultic. Each child will have spiritual mentors who have achieved the status of a mage, an individual who has become extremely well versed in occultic knowledge, incantations, spells, and rituals over many years of training, intense study and testing. Mages are expected to mentor those younger than them, and to help raise up a new generation of mages. They are skilled in oral teaching, ancient languages and are often master storytellers, since much of the information is also passed down in oral form. All children are expected to become mages themselves. I use the term 'mage' instead of other terms for practitioners of the occult arts, such as 'wizard', 'sorcerer', 'magician' or 'witch' as this is the term that parts used when sharing their memories.

Ascended Master: This is considered by the Jesuits the highest form of spiritual achievement. These individuals are considered as close to ascension as a human being can achieve while still walking the earth.

Immortal: The Order believe that immortals are beings who are trying to help mankind ascend and become like them, and to teach them how to overcome their mortal flesh. “Overcoming the mortal flesh” includes suppressing the desires within a human being that make them flinch away from interacting with these beings, and accepting the pain and long, difficult training that the fathers believe is necessary to ascend. The Jesuit fathers utterly and completely believe in these immortals, and in the theology of ascension and descension.

Demon: I believe that the immortals and other spiritual beings described in this book are actually demons, or what the Bible describes as fallen angels. These beings were formerly filled with glory and were in the presence of the true God of the Bible. However, the one named Lucifer (now known as “Satan”) chose to rebel against the loving creator of the universe, due to pride (he wanted to be as God). In his rebellion, the Bible says that one third of the angels followed Lucifer and became fallen angels, or demons as they are commonly known. Demons can also refer in some theologies to the souls of individuals or Nephilim who are wandering the earth. In my book, I am not referring to this interpretation, but instead, to the “fallen angel” definition. While I believe that both angels and demons are real, as the memories in this book make clear, some of the “demons” I encountered in childhood were actually older children or adults in costumes. Also, I had many parts who were programed to believe they were demons. This is extremely common in ritual abuse and mind control groups. These parts are usually very young children. These parts, when they came out, would growl, threaten, and act very convincingly according to how people believe demons would act. In reality, however, they were frightened little children who had been given a difficult role to play inside, whether as a punisher, a guardian, or other jobs.

Breaking Free: Autobiography of a survivor of ritual abuse and mind control

Part 2

Part 1: Teen Years

This section describes events from age 13 ½ to 19. This was a time of increasing responsibility and beginning leadership as I was expected to use my training and education to serve the agendas of the Jesuit Order, including continuing to infiltrate the Illuminati as a trainer and oracle, and serving as a general in the Order. Over the first four chapters, I share the most significant event of my teen years – running away, becoming a Christian, then being forced to recant my faith and carry out assignments against Christians as penance; the remaining chapters in this section describe the different jobs I was given to carry out for the cult during my teen years.

Chapter 1: Heartbreak

I am thirteen and a half years old and I am in my Jesuit cult presenter, Father Luke, or Luce. My body is contracting, deep below my belly, every few minutes in the painful rhythms of labor. I am in the process of delivering my firstborn child. My child's father is Mattheo, my primary trainer and the father I love most. We are carrying out a long-established custom in the occultic side of the Order, where a female father's firstborn child is conceived with the male trainer that they are most closely bonded to.

I am sweating and gripping Mattheo's and Lizzie's (my twin sister's) hands in a hard squeeze. Father John is hovering over me as well. John, who is female, is one of my twelve primary trainers, and so is another father I have loved deeply since childhood. I am grateful to have them tending my delivery, which is progressing normally. I feel deep, unbearable pressure below, and a sudden urge to push. I can feel the baby crowning and I know that I am just moments away from holding my baby in my arms. One final push, and I hear the loud, healthy cries of the baby – a boy, as planned carefully. Father John puts the baby on my chest. As I see his red, wrinkled face and tiny clenched fists for the first time, I am overwhelmed by how beautiful my newborn son is.

"He's strong and healthy," Mattheo says, smiling.

"He looks like you," I say, awed with wonder at this little being that has come out of my body, a little being made with the person I love most. I hold tiny Jonathan to my breast and he begins to nurse. The contractions continue, as the afterbirth begins its journey out, but I am completely absorbed with my beautiful son.

"You did so well," Lizzie says. She pats her own stomach, rounded with her own soon-to-be firstborn son. She knows that I will attend her birth in a few days, once I am rested and recovered a little.

"You will be fine, I know," I reassure her. We both give each other a look of deep love tinged with sadness, for we both know that this joy of birth will be accompanied soon by great pain. But for the moment, I push away this knowledge. Instead, I focus on the joy of being permitted to utterly love another human being for the first time in my life.

For the next few days, baby Jonathan (I call him "Jon") and I are inseparable. I am allowed to spend my days and nights with him. When not cooing over him, changing him, nursing him, or simply gazing in adoration at him, I carry him in a baby sling that keeps him snuggled to my chest. I am utterly, completely in love with this tiny baby. At times, I feel a trickle of fear when I think about what must happen soon, but immediately suppress the feeling. I gently touch his face and the soft, downy hair on top of his head, and hold his little feet in my hands. I love his baby smell of milk, baby powder and his own unique sweetness. For the first time in my life, I am completely filled with joy.

A few days later, Lizzie's delivery, like mine, progresses normally. It is strange to me to see my sister, who looks exactly like me, sweaty and grunting as she pushes out her little son, the one that she and Father Carlotti, her primary trainer, have made together. I see the look of complete adoration in her eyes as she looks at her son, and I understand completely. I squeeze Lizzie's hand, and then kiss her softly on the cheek.

"He's beautiful," I tell her, my voice filled with emotion.

"I know." Lizzie looks at me, and I see a flash of fear and sadness for a second –just a second – in her eyes. I understand that flash of emotion all too well. Then, she tenderly holds baby Paul, brings him to her breast, and nurses him while smiling into his eyes.

Two indescribably wonderful weeks pass. For the first time in my entire life, I am free to love another human being, without constraints, without abuse, without pain. I love Jon so much, he means everything to me. I laugh when he has a stinky bowel movement, I try to make him smile when I look into his eyes, and I am so glad that I know this tiny human being. He is glad, too, although his expressions of gladness are different than mine: a small yawn, clutching my finger with his tiny, curled up fingers, and the satisfied, sleepy expression on his face after nursing. But the clock is ticking, the hours are passing, and it is getting harder to suppress a growing feeling of dread.

A few days later, Mattheo walks into the room where I am nursing Jon.

"It's time," he says quietly.

I look at him. Tears of utter devastation stream down my face. Mattheo has come to take me and Jon to the main chapel where our praises of adoration to Satan are sung twice daily. Slowly, so slowly, I dress Jon in a little white lace and golden silk robe. This is the kind of robe that all firstborn sons are dressed in for this horrendous ritual. He looks so tiny, so vulnerable, and my heart contracts as I look at his face. I pick him up, and hold him close, holding him tightly, as if that could change what is about to happen. Mattheo silently takes my hand. He knows that I am incapable of speech at this point. We walk towards the chapel, our feet echoing softly on the stone floor. I wish I could stop time, but I cannot.

Finally, we enter the chapel, and we both go to the front where there is a stone altar. On it is a small golden chalice. I am trembling as I slowly walk to the altar, my feet reluctant to move forward. But I must, for waiting next to the altar is Satan himself, in his hideous form. There can be no disobedience, even now. For he is requiring that I give up my firstborn child – a child that I have been allowed to love- because the cruel, cruel theology of the Order dictates that this be a willing sacrifice of love to this being that the Order worships. I must show my complete devotion, and this is what he wants – what he demands of me, and of Mattheo.

I am trembling and crying as I place my beloved son on the altar. Mattheo's hands are under mine since this child is his offering too. Satan doesn't mind these tears; he enjoys seeing my distress and anguish because this shows that I truly do love this tiny baby, a baby that I desperately do not want to give up. My heart is breaking as Mattheo picks up a golden knife, and looking at me, waits for me to place my hands with his. We will make the sacrifice together.

For a panicked moment, I realize that I cannot do this; I cannot destroy the first real love I have experienced in my life. It will destroy me. Mattheo takes my hands, as though in a loving gesture, then firmly places them between his on the knife. His iron grip covers mine, and together, we plunge the knife in. Mattheo's firm grip continues to guide my hands as we both take the golden chalice and collect the blood spurting out of Jon's tiny chest. I am numb, dazed, and far away. I feel as if it is my own blood spurting out and away, my life draining away. It will not be until later that I realize that instead, it is my ability to love fully that has been draining away in this terrible act.

The blood is collected. Mattheo and I offer it with bows to Satan, declaring the "great joy" that we feel in doing so, in an act of complete hypocrisy since neither of us feels joy at all. The offering is shared with those attending this ceremony as a "celebration" of this "great offering".

Finally, I am allowed to stagger and sit in a pew, while songs of worship and adoration to Satan are sung. Dannie, my triplet brother, is away in Tibet. The thought crosses my mind that he must be secretly glad to not have to be here to witness my heartrending pain, or to have to pretend to feel joy at this occasion.

But I have to pretend. I numbly move my lips, mouthing the soaring worship songs so that my lack of worship will not be noted. Afterwards, I go to my room, and sit gazing blankly at the stone walls. Alone, I cry for many hours until the dawn comes. I hear a knock and it is Mattheo at the door.

He takes one look at me and says, “I see you are too ill to work today.” He will give this excuse at the labs for me, even though everyone will know why I am unwell, because this is what happens to each young mother who must give up her young infant.

“Yes, I am ill,” I tell him. What he pretends to not hear is that I am more than ill: I cannot stand to live in a world where this type of heartbreak and cruelty is allowed. A world in which soon, my twin sister must go through this same pain and I will be forced to pretend that I feel joy during the ceremony that breaks her heart. A world where love and humanity are not allowed other than as things that must be sacrificed to Satan. I hate Satan, and the Jesuit fathers, for doing this to me; my true feelings are now larger than the extensive programming I have to be loyal and grateful. I plan what I will do to break free of them all.

In the Jesuit Order, like in many occult societies, all members, male and female alike, are required to sacrifice their firstborn child to Satan. In the Order, this ritual usually takes place between 13 and 14 years old, after they have completed the coming-of-age ceremony and have received their adult names as fathers. For the Jesuit ceremony, the child is always a boy, since if a girl child is conceived, it is aborted until a boy is conceived. Female members, as my account shows, will conceive this child with the adult male trainer they are closest to. Male members will conceive this child with a female member from their own age group who they are closest to, usually a twin sister. This means that the female fathers often end up having to sacrifice two children within a space of less than two years. Both the young male and female fathers are given time to bond intensely with this infant together with the person they conceived the child with in order to ensure that it will be a ‘precious’ and ‘costly’ sacrifice to Satan. The heartbreak of having to sacrifice this child, conceived with a person they love deeply, has a devastating impact on the young teens. The ostensible reason for this sacrifice is to ‘prove’ that they do not and will never love anyone more than Satan. The truth is that we did this not out of ‘love’ or ‘worship’ of Satan, but rather out of the terror of disobeying and displeasing Satan that the Jesuit fathers have internalized for generations. Satan enjoys human suffering, because we were created by a God who loves us, and Satan’s goal is to ultimately grieve the heart of God by lashing out in cruel ways at His creation.

Chapter 2: Running Away in America

I am 14 years old, and it is springtime. I am fronting in my American presentation, Elsa. Here, I am a rebellious teenager, smoking pot with my friends after school and not giving two cents about my grades, which have been slowly declining over the past year. My boyfriend, Steve, is equally rebellious and uninterested in school. It was interesting how I came into this relationship. The first day of class last fall, I saw a dark-haired girl sitting to my left and a sandy-haired boy behind me. I couldn't decide which I liked more since I was bisexual. Unable to decide, I took a quarter out of my pocket and flipped it: heads, I would go for girls; tails, I would go for boys. The coin showed tails, so I turned and smiled at the sandy-haired boy behind me and asked him his name. Soon, we became friends, then close friends. Recently, he has told me that he is in love with me.

The day before, after school, I had quietly gone into my U.S. stepfather's drawer where he kept his wallet while he worked in the fields outside, and took most of the money out. It was around my waist, carefully divided up inside a money belt, so that no bulge would show.

"Hey, I'm going to run away from home," I whisper to Steve partway through math class. "I'm going to leave – today."

"Yeah, sure, right," he whispers back. I can tell he doesn't believe me.

"Come with me after class, and you will see that I mean it," I reply.

The teacher in the front of the classroom is droning on about how to find out what "x" and other variables in an equation are, but I could not care less. My mind is far away, and I am terrified about what I am about to do. Steve stays with me after class is over.

"I'm going out to the highway, and I'm going to hitchhike," I tell him. I have told no one else of my plan, especially not my younger sister, who would instantly report my plan to our parents and others. However, for some reason, I want Steve to know. He has been my closest friend at school when I am there.

"Hey, that can be dangerous, aren't you scared?" he says. I can tell he is starting to believe me.

"Not at all, I don't scare that easily," I say, as I nonchalantly flip my shoulder-length brown hair over a shoulder. The truth is, I am scared as hell, but I don't want anyone to know this fact, not even myself. Maybe if I act brave, I will start feeling brave.

He walks with me outside, towards the highway that runs past the high school at the bottom of the hill the high school is built on. All I have is my backpack with two t-shirts and an extra pair of jeans and underwear stuffed into it, the little bit of money I stole from my stepfather in America, and my wits. Trembling inside, I go down to the highway where there is lots of traffic this time of day. Steve stares, not believing what he is seeing, and looking as if he would like to pull me away. He doesn't, though, and finally, a truck pulls over. I climb inside and wave goodbye to Steve.

As the truck rolls away, the driver looks at me, and says, "Aren't you a little young to be traveling alone?" I quickly look over at him. His tone is kind, and he doesn't have that gleam and look that means that he wants to have sex with me. He seems okay and I tell him the story that I have invented.

"I'm going to go see my grandmother in Florida," I say. "Things are really bad at home. I had to get away and she said I could stay with her." This is a partial truth: I do have a grandmother in my American presentation and she does live in southern Florida. But I do not intend to stay with her at all. Rather, I love the sun and warmth of the Palm Beach area. If I can't find a place to stay in Florida, at least I would not freeze to death.

My story seems to satisfy the truck driver. He nods and turns on a country music station. I am trembling with excitement: I am escaping!

"I'm Carl. Where are you heading to?" the truck driver asks, as the beat and nasal twang of country music plays in the background.

"Florida, near Palm Beach," I tell him. I don't want to tell him too much, but after all, he is driving me south and I need to know how far I can travel with him.

"I'm not going that far south," he replies, to my great disappointment. He looks over and then says, "But I am going into Georgia. When we get there, I'll buy you a bus ticket to Palm Beach."

I cannot believe my ears. This truck driver with a southern accent, who is smoking a cigarette as he drives, wants to help me.

"Um, why are you doing that for me?" I ask, not sure what he expects in return for this kindness.

"Because I have a son just a little older than you somewhere out there. He left home two years ago. I hope that somewhere, someone will help him the way I am going to help you," he says gruffly. I realize that his tone is to cover how worried he is about his son. Carl continues, "You have no business being out on the highways hitchhiking, little miss. You are lucky – damned lucky – that you ran into me and not someone who might hurt you." He lectures me on the dangers of hitchhiking, citing numerous TV shows that show the fate of people who use this form of transportation.

I know that he is right. I am very lucky to have met a kind man, rather than a lecher or serial killer, on my first attempt to hitchhike. Hours later, Carl stops for gas, and goes inside for a burger. It is nighttime now. I am hungry but I don't say anything. "Would you like me to get a burger and fries?" he asks to my great surprise.

"Yes, please," I reply eagerly. He must have realized that I haven't eaten since breakfast. When he returns to his truck, he is carrying a large coke, a large fries, and a huge burger with cheese and all the extras. He smiles as I dive into the food after a quick and sincere "Thank you!"

We make it to Georgia, where Carl's large semi circles the city of Atlanta, then takes an exit. Soon, we are at a bus station. As promised, he goes to a ticket counter and buys me a ticket to West Palm Beach. "Thank you," I tell him, overcome once again by his kindness and generosity. "I will never forget what you have done for me."

Carl brushes off my thanks with a "I hope someone will do this for my son. That what goes around comes around."

He waves at me as I get on the bus, and I give the ticket to the bus driver, and sink into the seat. I fall asleep as the bus makes its journey south. I dream of palm trees, soft ocean breezes and sandy beaches as the bus rolls steadily down the highways.

"West Palm Beach!" I wake to the announcement as the bus doors open with a hydraulic sound. The air is much warmer here, with a soft breeze that holds a faint scent of salt water, letting me know I am near the ocean. It is daytime and I feel a little disoriented.

I wonder where to go, where I will stay, since I don't know anyone here – no one at all, other than my grandmother, who I have no intention of contacting. She would turn me in to my parents, and thus the Order, in a minute. So, with slightly dazed eyes, blinking at the change from the softly tinted interior of the bus to the bright, bright sunshine outdoors at the bus terminal, I look around, considering which direction to start walking.

Suddenly, a young man walks up to me. “Are you new here?” he asks me. He has long bushy hair and a mustache, and is dressed like a hippie, which was common in 1971, the year I am 14.

“Yes,” I tell him, eyeing him a bit warily.

“Well, if you need a place to stay,” he says, “I know where there’s a house where lots of young people are living. They always welcome new people. And, there’s plenty of weed there, too.”

I decide, *what the heck*, and follow him as he leads me to this house.

We arrive at the house. It is a stucco house, white with dark green shutters, and tall palm trees stand over the backyard like guardians, whose leaves flutter with a soft rustle in the breeze. “Here we are,” the young man says.

“What’s your name?” I ask him.

“Felix, like the cat, because I’m lucky,” he tells me.

We go inside, out of the bright sunshine. The living room is darkened by drawn blinds at the windows, and is crowded with people of varying ages, all older than me by at least three years. The room is littered with bongs and other paraphernalia of drug use. I look in wonder as these young men and women sit on a large couch in the middle of the room, or on large pillows on the floor. They are dressed in shorts, flowered shirts and sandals, and talk in sleepy tones. They all look up when I come in, and greet me with soft “Hi”, “Hey there” and “Welcome to the House.” I sense I will be accepted here, and as promised, there are plenty of drugs laying around and the air is filled with the sweet smell of hash.

Maybe I am lucky, too, like Felix, I think to myself, relieved that I will not have to sleep on the beach tonight.

The next few weeks pass in a drug-filled haze. I have a small room in the house that I share with another woman. I am given food and pot to smoke. I make friends with some of the people in the house, especially with a young man named Piggy, whose large and rotund size earned him this nickname. He takes me under his wing, showing me where essentials like tampons are kept, and teaching me street skills such as how to steal food from a local supermarket. “You have to earn your food, you know,” he tells me. When not shoplifting or smoking pot in the house, I spend the afternoons at beach parties, drinking and doing drugs and talking, always talking to the new people I am meeting.

I do not see Felix for a couple of weeks. When he does return, he invites to me spend the evening with him at his other house, the ‘nice one’. This house is large and furnished with expensive furniture. The first night there, he has sex with me. I don’t mind, since he found me a place at the communal house, so I figure it’s a fair trade. But a few nights later, he has a friend over, and they do a drug deal. Halfway through the evening, Felix gets up, stretches and says “I’ve got to go out and do an errand.” I get up to follow him, but he tells me, “No, you stay here. I’ll come and get you later.”

So, I stay, and in a while his friend tries to lead me upstairs to the bedroom. I am reluctant to follow but his friend is insistent. “Don’t you know anything?” he tells me harshly. “You were part of the deal tonight.” I realize that Felix has sold me for the night, so I do whatever his friend tells me to. After all, this is part of the price of having a place to live when you are too young to work and earn rent money. Nonetheless, I had run away from home to be safer, not to become someone’s prostitute or collateral for drug deals. I realize that I have to leave quickly before this happens again. Or, before something worse happens; I have a vague feeling of disquiet about this house.

As soon as it is light, I sneak quietly out of the house with my heart in my mouth. I am terrified that Felix's friend will stop me or that Felix will return before I make my escape. I walk as quickly as I can for several blocks, reach a major road, then start trying to thumb a ride. My fear mounts as car after car passes me by. Finally, a pale blue sedan pulls over. It contains a man and wife with a small baby in a car seat in the back. Shaky with relief, I climb into the backseat, next to the baby. "Where are you going?" the man asks me.

"North", I tell them briefly.

"We're going to Atlanta," he responds.

It is silent in the car for most of the journey to Atlanta. Halfway there, the man exits off the interstate and pulls into a gas station to get gas. He tells his wife to go in and buy burgers for everyone. While his wife is in the store, he reaches into the backseat and feels me up. I hate it, but I am desperate for a ride and for food. It has been 24 hours since I have eaten, so I don't yell or get out of the car. He stops his abuse of me as soon as his wife returns. She passes the food around, and I eat while silently calling this man vile names for the way he is treating me and his wife. Several hours later, the man lets me out in Georgia, at a truck stop just outside of Atlanta.

It is the middle of the night. Completely exhausted, I fall sleep on the hard cement ground next to a cinder block wall, well behind a parked truck. The sun wakes me up a few hours later and I go drowsily from truck to truck, searching for one heading north. I have decided to go into New York City where I have heard there are numerous runaways and hippies, in hopes that I will get lost in the crowd of other runaway and throwaway children. Most of the truck drivers are not yet at their trucks but I eventually find someone who is driving north, and I ask for a ride. The man pauses, looks at me, and finally says, "Okay, get in." He is quiet and talks little as he takes me to New Jersey. Here, I hitch a ride outside the restaurant he stops at, to New York City.

After wandering the edges of the city and sleeping in the streets for a few nights, I come across a shelter for runaways. Exhausted and hungry, I push the doors open and enter.

"Where are you from?" the worker at the shelter asks me. I give her a false name and false home address, telling her I am from North Carolina. I am tired, dirty, frightened, and have no idea what to expect in a runaway shelter. I sit warily on a worn-out couch in the communal area by the shelter's main entrance. To my surprise, I hear a friendly greeting from a boy who looks the same age as me. "Hi, I'm Sam," he tells me cheerly.

"I'm Sarah," I reply, using the same false name that I had told the shelter worker.

"You don't have to worry, the people are okay here," Sam says. I relax a little, and start talking to him. I discover that like me, Sam has left an abusive situation at home, preferring to take his chances on the streets rather than endure the ongoing physical and sexual abuse by his father.

At lunchtime, the shelter gives us a sandwich and a piece of fruit, which I accept gratefully, then Sam takes me downtown to teach me how to earn my living in the Big Apple. The two of us stand on a busy street, and I learn how to panhandle for money. While most people pass us by without a glance, here and there, generous people do stop and give us a dollar or a few quarters. What I don't like are the older men who keep coming up to me, telling me that they can help me earn "a lot more" than I can make panhandling. I know what they mean, and let Sam stand between me and them.

After a few days, an older man who is a teacher at NYU invites Sam and I to stay with him. He and his friends are socialists, and I enjoy hearing their discussions about Castro and changing the political structure of our society. They also have lots of pills around the house, and when the teacher and his friends are at work, Sam and I help ourselves to drugs and food. I decide that socialists are pretty nice people since they are feeding me and my friend. I also start looking for work. I lie to anyone who asks, saying I am 16, and plan to get a driver's license at the DMV. Sam is doing the same. We supplement our panhandling with shoplifting and eating at small diners where after eating, we get up and run out the door. It is easy to run into the crowds in NYC and no one ever catches us.

A week later, I am with Sam and the teacher at a James Taylor concert that he has bought us tickets for. I love James Taylor, but in the bathroom, someone has offered me a small pane of windowpane acid (a form of LSD). I have dropped acid before and had enjoyed laughing for hours the last time I did so. However, this time, it is different. Soon after dropping the pane, the bathroom starts spinning and revolving. I stumble out into the street for fresh air and start screaming. Time is slowing down, I see blood dripping everywhere, and terrible visions of horror flow in a relentless stream of gore and violence before my eyes. I continue screaming in stark terror, completely disoriented. I hear the siren of an ambulance just before I go unconscious.

At the hospital, my stomach is pumped, and a team of doctors and other clinical staff work over my body. I know this because I am floating on the ceiling above, looking down on my body below as the medical team works frantically to save my life. But what horrifies me is that all around, surrounding me as I float, are demons lathering at the mouth, and stretching their claws towards me. I feel immensely sad and start crying. "God, I'm not ready to die yet," I tell Him, in the first sincere prayer I can remember to the God who created me. I know that these creatures surrounding me in a ring are just waiting for me to die, like wolves around prey, and intend to carry me away to hell.

I then wake up, back in my body, to discover that I am on a stretcher in the emergency room. There is an IV dripping fluid into my right arm which has a bandage over the insertion site. I feel dazed, sleepy and look up. An orderly is wheeling me into a small private room. "You are lucky," he tells me. "You almost died." He bends over and gives me a kiss on my lips, and then leaves. I fall asleep.

Sometime later, a nurse comes in. She has been checking on me from time to time, because there is a blood pressure cuff on my arm, and I am hooked up to a heart monitor. She smiles and says, "Your parents are here."

I look up, and to my horror, my American mother and stepfather walk into the room. They look anxious, tired and relieved to see me. "How did they find me?" I ask the nurse.

"When you came in last night, you told us your full name. There was an All Points Bulletin out for you, and so we called them," she says.

"I don't want to go with them! I can't! They are terrible people, terrible! Please, let me stay here," I plead.

"It's just the drugs in her, she's disoriented and doesn't know what she's saying," my American mother says.

I become hysterical, and start screaming "No, no, no, don't make me go back with them!"

"You need to sedate her," my American mother tells the nurse. "She is still feeling the effects of the drugs which have affected her mind."

The nurse leaves and returns with a sedative. Later that day, my parents have me released from the hospital. We fly back together to Virginia, and they immediately check me into a hospital where I will be checked for venereal diseases and aftereffects of the drugs I had been abusing.

This narrative of running away from home at 14 years old for about two months and nearly dying from a bad LSD trip is something that I (the American presenter) had always remembered. Until several years ago, I believed that I had tried to leave home because of my stepfather's verbal abuse and my mother's neglect. However, after I had started to heal from ritual abuse and mind control, I learned from the other parts in my system that my running away from home in America was actually an attempt at leaving the Order motivated by the horrendous pain of being forced to sacrifice my firstborn son at 13.

My running away was enabled by cooperation between my American presentation 'Elsa' (the parts of me that lived life in the United States with absolutely no memory that I was a member of the occult world), and the cult presenter Luce (the parts of me that knew much more of my life story and wanted to leave the cruelty of a group that ordered me to kill the only human being I had ever fully loved – my infant son). While I was unaware of Luce during this period, had she not been wanting to leave the Order as well, I would never have been able to even leave my house unnoticed by the cult. Other parts who were also cooperating with this runaway attempt included the parts whose jobs were to recontact and return to the Order. This is evident from how none of the 'return home', 'recontact' or 'reporter' parts had disclosed the runaway plans of either the American presenter or the cult presenter to our programmers or leaders, none called the Order to disclose our location, or switched out so they had the control over the body to make us return to the cult. Without this extensive cooperation between many different parts, I would not have been able to stay away from the Order for as long as I did.

The fact that I was able to run away from home at all and to stay away for two months shows that even when programming to be loyal, obedient and to recontact is present, an individual can still choose to not recontact. While it can be difficult and painful to resist programming, it is not impossible to do so. All cults want their members to believe that programming cannot be disobeyed or broken, but my own experience at this age exposes the falseness of this belief. To the Order, my ability to not tell on myself that I was planning on running away and success at not re-contacting them or disclosing where I was or what I was doing was an indication of massive 'programming failure'. This made me a tremendous security risk both to the Jesuit Order, and the Illuminati (which I was actively infiltrating in my American and several European presentations). I learned later that they had spared no expense and used many strategies to try to locate me. APBs for missing children were uncommon back in 1971; having an APB out for me showed how determined the cult, and not my 'parents', was to locate and retrieve me.

I knew that taking drugs was risky, but both my cult presenter and I had a lot of pain and grief to deal with. This was compounded by the terror we were feeling about trying to escape the Order, and the pain of resisting the programming to recontact and return. Numbing these feelings in this way seemed like a good (the only) way to cope. Nonetheless, we did not anticipate that the drugs we took in New York would be laced with other substances that almost killed us and got us returned to the group. I had a deep desire to die to escape the pain that killing my infant son had created. Yet when confronted with death, deep inside at core level, I realized that I did not want to die. God heard my cry for mercy and saved my life. This answered prayer laid the foundation for my accepting Him as my God and Savior a few months later.

While I had always remembered running from Virginia to Florida then to New York, healing work and increased communication between different parts many years later brought another piece of the narrative to light: Felix was more than just a drug dealer, commune leader and exploiter of runaways. He was also a member of an occultic group. I learned this shortly after he had first sold me as part of a drug deal, and the following account relates this piece of the narrative:

Two weeks later, Felix invites me to a party at his nice house. The food is excellent, and beer and pot flow lavishly, and the partygoers stay late into the night. Suddenly, just before 2 am, someone says "It's time."

Time for what? I wonder but I don't have to wait long to find out, as I see the floor beneath a corner of the living room sliding away to one side. The opening reveals stairs going down one level into a windowless basement. One by one, the adults at the party go downstairs. Felix puts my hands into those of an older woman with cold blue eyes, and a young man with black hair and black eyes. I have a funny feeling about this. They lead me downstairs, and I see a ritual setting: altar, candles, silver chalice on a black velvet cloth. The other adults have shed their clothes and are naked except for black cloaks with hoods. I surmise that the woman who had taken my hand earlier must be the high priestess, as least for tonight's ritual, as she is the one who starts to tie me up. I realize with a shock that I am to be the "expendable" tonight; these people plan to kill me, a young runaway, who will be untraceable. Desperate to save my life, my system switches fully away from my American parts who have no idea about what is going on, into my Illuminati parts.

"You don't want to kill me," I lift my chin arrogantly and tell her in German. "I have the protection of someone very powerful that you don't want to anger. I am a daughter of *Battenberg*."

The woman pauses in surprise and says suspiciously, "How do I know you aren't lying to me, little rat?"

I respond without missing a beat, "Ask me any question you like, something that I can't possibly know, and I will tell you anything you like, about your past and future. This will prove what I say." I am gambling that I can do this, and ask for help from the spirits within.

"How many children do I have?" she asks.

I tell her, "You have four, but only three are living. One was killed in a ritual like this, when you were much younger."

She sees for herself that I really can tap into the spiritual realm and "read" her past, 'proving' my status as a trained member of a cult. Therefore, I am not likely to be an 'expendable' they could kill. In fact, if I am indeed a Battenberg, killing me could cause them trouble. She narrows her eyes thoughtfully. "I am sure that your absence from your father's 'loving care' is not making him happy," she says. "He might pay me handsomely for bringing you back where he can punish you personally." She looks into my eyes, sees the flash of real fear there at the mention of punishment from this sadistic man, and smiles a slow, malicious smile. She continues, "I think we will have a little fun with you tonight before we send you back to him. I can't imagine he would mind."

They rape me for hours, tying me up, then putting sharp rods up me front and back when they get bored with ordinary rape. I scream and scream for their benefit because I know that this is what they want. However, they let me live. I survive the night, although bruised and exhausted.

The next day, Piggy comes to visit Felix. Felix goes out, telling him to keep an eye on me. After he leaves, Piggy says, "I feel sorry for you, little schmuck. You're in for it now." Piggy wasn't there last night, but I have no doubt that he has been told that I am in real trouble with some powerful people.

"Piggy, you're my only friend here. You have to help me escape," I plead, looking at him with large, brown, desperate eyes. "Please, please, just take me to the interstate; I will find a way to get away from there."

Piggy pauses. I can tell that he would not mind helping me, but he was not going to put his own hide at risk. I start using my psychic (theta) skills to compel him to both feel sorry for me, and to obey me. Finally, he says, “Okay, but we have to be quick. Let’s go, schmuck.”

He takes me in his old beater car to the interstate. Once again, I am hitchhiking, desperate to leave this place as quickly as possible. I am terrified that Felix, or one of the people from the night before, will see me before I can get away. I put my thumb out, and car after car passes me by. Finally, a pale blue sedan pulls over. It contains a man and wife with a small baby in a car seat in the back.

I had completely dissociated this episode, believing previously that I had left the commune for New York because of Felix selling me for drugs. Looking back, it seems like a miracle that I escaped the occult group that Felix was involved with. They did not seem to be aware that there was an APB out for a teenager of my description despite recognizing the Battenberg name and understanding German. They did not even try to ensure that I would not be able to escape beyond telling Piggy to keep an eye on me. I can only say that I am glad that they were careless and that I was able to get away.

Chapter 3: Finding and Losing Faith

I am still fronting in my American presenter, Elsa, and it has been a week since my parents retrieved me from the hospital. At the hospital in northern Virginia, the staff spent three days conducting careful psychological and physical health tests, and gave me antibiotics to clear out any diseases I might have caught from living on the streets. I have been home back at the farm only a week, but I am planning to run away again in two days, because deep down, I do NOT want to be chained again to my former life. That afternoon, my American mother makes a request. “Put on some decent clothes,” she tells me.

“Why?” I ask, sullenly. I am still angry that she and my stepfather ‘retrieved’ me from New York and have barely spoken to either of my parents.

“I’m going to a special study, and you’re coming with me,” she says.

“What kind of study?” I ask.

To my extreme surprise, she responds, “A Bible study.”

I have no idea why she wants to do this. She is not religious; no one in my family is. We are all agnostics and atheists so her sudden desire to have a mother-daughter visit to a church activity puzzles me.

“Tina and Ellie are going,” she tells me. These two girls are sisters and are two of my friends from school. “I want you to come with me,” she insists. “I am taking you, willing or not.” To get her off my back, I dress and sullenly get into the car. But I also attend out of mild curiosity. I have never been to a meeting outside of a liturgical, formal church service where a book of Common Prayer guides what is said and done. *Why on earth would someone meet to talk about the Bible during a Friday night?* I wonder silently.

It is a 30-minute drive to the meeting. The group meeting starts out with guitar playing and singing. It meets in a small Episcopal church out in the middle of nowhere, in a very rural part of northern Virginia. After the singing, a couple of people come up to the front and share testimonies of how God has helped them during the past week. Then, the pastor who leads the meeting gives a short talk about Jesus and the Bible. I am bored. But after the service, there is an altar call and my friend Tina goes forward. She comes back to her seat, crying copiously.

“Why are you crying?” I ask her in bewilderment. “I thought this shit is supposed to make you happy.” I am a true heathen, observing with curiosity her strange reaction to a prayer.

“Oh, I am, I am happy,” she exclaims. “I’ve never been happier in my life.”

I look into her blue eyes filled with tears, and see that she is telling the truth: there is real joy in their depths.

“You should go forward and get prayer,” she says, earnestly. I hesitate.

“Go ahead,” she urges.

I decide to see if I will end up crying like a baby, and wonder if that would be good or bad. I walk down the aisle. A woman I have never met before who is standing in front of the altar rail comes over to me and asks, “Do you know Jesus?”

I tell her “No” and she places her hand on my head and begins praying for me.

Instantly, I react, but not with tears. “I have to go!” I say, as I run down the aisle of the church and out the door.

“What happened to you?” my friend Tina asks me as she runs out after me.

“I didn’t want any of that shit,” I tell her, to cover the fear I feel. Something made me afraid of that woman’s prayer. I pretend to not care about what happened. But secretly, I am disappointed, and a little envious of my friend who did cry from joy. It has been years, if ever, since I have felt joy.

That night, I have two nightmares. One is about the end of the world: I am running out of a city where a nuclear blast has occurred, running for my life. All around me, I am impeded by the dead human bodies: torn body after body is pouring out blood on the road, and I am slipping in the blood, screaming. The second nightmare is of hell: I am alone, in complete and utter darkness. It is cold and dark. There is no love or hope; only endless despair. I am revolving in a terrible twisting motion upon myself, throughout the blackness of a silent, cold eternity, and I can see my sins on the arms of self that revolve inward. I wake up screaming, filled with terror, and cannot go back to sleep for the next two days.

“I am going to have a nervous breakdown if this panic doesn’t stop,” I tell my mother.

“These must be flashbacks from the drugs,” she tells me.

“Flashbacks or not, I think I need to go meet with the pastor from that Christian group and pray. They started this, maybe they can stop it,” I moan. I have dark circles under my eyes from lack of sleep. I feel as if I am losing my mind. I spend most of the day with my head down in my hands, moaning in desperation and terror.

Desperate, my mother calls and makes an appointment to meet with the pastor who led the prayer meeting. He is leading a charismatic renewal in the local Episcopal church, and is in his office when we arrive at his church. When we meet, I tell him about the nightmares, the sleeplessness and the terrible feeling that I will go to a black, cold, silent hell.

He says, “I will lead you in the sinner’s prayer, but first, I need to ask you: have you had any involvement in the occult?”

I am surprised at his question. “Not really,” I answer him. At that time, in my American presentation, I am still completely amnesic to my own history with the cult. “I did play around a few times with my cousins, with a Ouija board, and once when I was ten, they and I tried to bend spoons with our minds.” I am trying to think of anything that could be labeled “occult”. “Oh, yes, a few times, I played with some tarot cards that I bought, and tried to read my sister’s and my cousin’s futures, and let them do the same. That’s it.” That was all that I could consciously recall.

“You must renounce all of these things,” he tells me.

“I renounce playing with a Ouija board, tarot cards, any trying to bend spoons, and any other occult activities that I might have done,” I say.

“Now, pray this prayer with me,” the pastor says.

I then pray the prayer that he leads me in: “Dear Jesus, I am a sinner and have sinned against you. Please forgive me for these sins, and come into my life. I receive the gift that you purchased for me when you died for me on the cross.”

Suddenly, it as if someone has turned a light bulb on inside. I didn’t even know it was deep darkness inside of me, but suddenly, I feel life, and light, and joy, and something I have never experienced before in my life: pure, genuine love, a love that causes tears to stream down my face. I am forgiven, really forgiven! And the darkness is gone.

My life will never be the same again.

"Jesus loves me," I say wonderingly. I am stunned and amazed.

My mother drives me home, and that night at dinner, I tell my parents, "Jesus loves me, and He loves you, too."

"This is bullshit," my atheist stepfather tells me. "It's just a fad."

"You shouldn't be too religious," my mother warns me. "People go nuts if they do."

"You're a fucking Jesus freak," my sister, who is a year younger than me, yells. "What happened to make you go off the deep end?"

But I ignore their comments. Instead, after dinner, I grab my American mother's huge Catholic bible that has rested, unread, in a bookshelf for years, and read it avidly. It is all fresh, new and real, like today's news. I feel happy. I am joyful, for the first time that I can remember.

I attend another prayer meeting at my friend Tina's house. On the table is a book called *They Speak with Other Tongues* by the Sherrills. I read this book avidly, and in my bedroom at home, ask Jesus to baptize me in the Holy Spirit. I start speaking in an unknown language, and I am overjoyed.

"I can speak in tongues! It's wonderful!" I shout.

"Oh, Jeez, what now?" my sister says unhappily. My whole family is upset about my Christianity, and my numerous attempts to witness to them. I want them to know this love and joy, too, but they seem uninterested, to put it mildly.

Much later in life, I asked my American mother why on earth she took me to a Christian group at this time. After all, we were all secret occultists. Her reply surprised me: "I couldn't control you, and was hoping that this would help you settle down." Stunned, I realized then that the only reason she was hoping I might get infected with a bit of Christianity was in order to make me more "good" and compliant in my American presentation. This had backfired on them though, because I encountered the real Jesus, and this changed the course of the rest of my life.

At school, all the kids notice that I am different – REALLY different. I am happier, kinder and more loving to each of them. "You're a lot nicer than you used to be," is something I hear from many. Their amazement makes me wonder how unpleasant I had been to others before. I stop doing drugs, don't smoke pot and start carrying a little Bible to school during the last two weeks of the spring semester. I fail two classes, simply because I was away on the streets and wasn't there to learn anything, but that doesn't matter. I love Jesus, He is the center of my life, and I am more interested in witnessing than academics.

When school lets out, and summer vacation begins, my parents send me to a mental institution for the wealthy in central Virginia. They insist that I undergo a drug rehabilitation program at this institution, even though I had been telling them that I was no longer using drugs. The clinical staff there put me through a battery of psychological tests, all of which show that I am psychologically normal. The staff tells me that my parents are relieved that the drugs didn't fry my brains. The program lasts two months, and I spend my time there witnessing to the other residents on the rehab unit who are mostly young teens like me. They have little patience for my evangelism, but I do make friends with a young woman who comes at night to clean. During my first week here, she overhears me crying one night.

"Are you okay?" she asks me, putting a comforting hand on my shoulder.

"I…I'm scared, and feel lonely," I tell her.

She looks at the Bible on my bedside stand, and asks, "Are you a Christian?"

"Yes," I tell her. "I became one a few weeks ago, and I'm trying to learn about Jesus."

"Hmmm," she says, thinking. "My parents have a Bible study on Saturday evenings at our house. Would you be willing if you can get a pass, and come spend the weekend with me? You could go to the study and learn more about the Bible."

I am delighted to meet another Christian here, and say eagerly "Yes, I would love to!"

Because I no longer do drugs or act out, I easily get a weekend pass and go home with this young woman, Belinda. Her family are wonderful to me, and the whole weekend, I am in total joy: I spend the weekend with this family of loving people, where we pray, study the Bible and talk about the new love in my life: Jesus. After this, while I am at the rehab center, I spend every weekend with her family, and feel less lonely. I am growing in my new faith, and love fellowshipping with other believers.

This time at the institution was a miracle that I have no explanation for. Typically, I only spent a few weeks in my American presentation before returning to Rome or my other presentations. To have been allowed to stay in the U.S. for a full two months in this program, in addition to the two months when I ran away, is unheard of. This is the longest time interval I have ever spent outside of Rome in my entire life. It is possible that the Order wanted special assessments done of my American shell and presenters at the institution, or needed to placate the American Illuminati by doing so. Or, maybe God arranged for this time for me to have the opportunity to be around a loving group of Christians and grow in my faith. I really don't know.

At the end of summer, I return from the drug rehab program to my American home, an isolated farm in a rural part of northern Virginia. The next morning, I wake up to the sound of familiar voices talking in Latin in the yard outside. I dress hurriedly, switching from my American presenters into my cult presenter, Luce, as I run down the stairs. Two large black vans are parked in my parent's driveway. In the yard are the three fathers I love most, Mattheo, Carlotti and Jerome. Half of my Jesuit class, including my two twins, Danny and Lizzie, are present as well. My stepfather is not there, having gone into town to take care of some business. But my American mother, a Jesuit father herself, turns to me. "You have to go back to Rome," she says.

I really did not want to. I had had enough of the Order's cruelty and subservience to Satan. However, Conner looks at me and says, "I want to know your Jesus, but I can't, unless you come back with us. Don't let me die and go to hell." He looks at me beseechingly. Conner is the second member of my class, and next to Danny and Lizzie, he is one of the people I love the most in the world.

"If you come with us, you can tell me about your faith, but if you refuse to come, I never want to hear about it," says Mary Margaret, the third member of my class. She is someone closer than a sister to me.

Father Mattheo speaks to me earnestly, his clear grey eyes filled with sadness. "If you don't come with us, we will have to kill your class, and ourselves, because we have all failed in our training of you, and so our lives will be forfeit as well. We will all go to hell without knowing this Jesus of yours."

I am filled with an overwhelming desire to share my faith with these loved ones. I want to rescue them from the hell I am certain they will go to if they do not know Jesus.

"I'll go," I tell them.

Suddenly, deep inside my mind, I feel the words, "Don't do this. Don't go." Somehow, I know it is Jesus telling me not to go to Rome. But I am looking at the lost, sad faces of my brothers and sisters and fathers, and I can't help it. I WANT them to know Jesus, and I can't risk their going to hell. I can't. Still, the voice inside says more sternly, "Don't go. Don't. It will not work out well." But I am determined to rescue my loved ones. I ignore the voice, and get into one of the vans, and we drive off together to a small airport nearby where a military plane is waiting. I am going to Rome to be a witness for Jesus.

We are back in the Vatican by the next day. I am having deep, dark espresso with Father Mattheo to help me overcome the jet lag that comes in spite of the supplements I have taken. His questions are earnest as he sips his own cup of espresso. "Why have you decided to believe in the ridiculous Jewish God, the traitor and liar?", he asks me angrily. "What caused you to give up the beliefs of a lifetime?"

"Because He loves me, and Satan never did," I explain simply. "Satan is the liar, not the God who created the universe." Mattheo looks baffled and gets up abruptly, leaving me alone at the small table. I pray in tongues for him that he will be able to hear what I have to say.

The two other fathers I love most, Father Jerome and Father Carlotti, come in and ask me similar questions. I give them the same response, and like Mattheo, they leave quickly. Their quick departures remind me of the time I had run out of church when being prayed for the first time.

The torture begins the next day. I am strapped to a table. Conner, the brother I love so much, is slowly peeling the skin from my upper arms. Mattheo, Jerome and Carlotti are in the room. The torture goes on and on. I turn my head and whisper to Conner: "I forgive you for this, because Jesus loves you." Conner turns his head to the side, away from me, so that I will not be able to see the look in his eyes. I know that he is doing what he has been ordered and coerced to do, not what he wants to do.

They apply various forms of torture for weeks: I am stretched on a rack until I feel as if all of my joints are loose, screaming as they dislocate; I am shocked over and over and over, all the while being told by the people I love, and by Satan, "All you have to do is raise one finger to show that you no longer believe in the traitor – that you are no longer an adulteress" (as Satan's "wife" from the ceremony at age 13, he considers my faith in the Christian Jesus as an act of adultery). They administer medical care in between bouts of torture so that they can continue the torture without killing me. But I refuse to deny the One I know loves me. I weep but am also comforted and strengthened by the love of Jesus as I cry out to Him. I wonder how much time will pass before I die for my faith. I no longer fear death, for I have a real faith, and a Savior who is with me through it all.

My continued refusal to renounce my faith leaves the fathers in a difficult place. If I die without recanting, then I would be a martyr. Furthermore, it would show that I was able to resist my programming and remain unintimidated by Satan to the very end. They were concerned that this could inspire others in the Order to question their own indoctrination and consider believing in the Christian God, especially those who I had mentored, programmed, or led. Furthermore, the oracles have predicted that the occult messiah, their much awaited and longed-for 'light of the world' would come through me. Therefore, they could not allow me to die a Christian. It was absolutely imperative that they somehow force me to recant my belief in Jesus.

They design a plan that they believe would not only put unbearable pressure on my newfound faith but also serve as a severe warning to anyone in the Order who might be considering becoming a Christian after watching the faith, comfort and determination I had even under weeks of torture. The next day, I am led in chains outside by Mattheo, Jerome and Carlotti, accompanied by Satan. All of the children and adults are gathered here to watch today's events. We walk past the crowd into a field, and I see thirteen crosses in a circle in its middle. To my unspeakable horror, on each one is hanging one of my classmates, the brothers and sisters I have loved deeply and grown up with. Conner, Mary Margaret, Timothy, Andrew, John, they are all there. My twin brother and sister, who are in the next class, are also hanging on crosses. I see the blood staining the nails and ropes fastening them to the crosses, and I learn over and retch into the grass.

"I will be forced to kill them if you do not recant your faith in this Christus (*note: the Latin name for Christ*)," Mattheo says to me in Latin, the language of the Order. I look at him unbelievingly. It is unheard of to kill a group of Jesuit fathers in this way. I cannot comprehend what he is telling me; my mind has shut down from the nightmarish horror of this scene. "I will give you three chances before I kill the first one." Satan is standing next to him, waiting for my answer.

"No, I can't," I stutter.

"I give you another chance. Will you recant your faith in the traitor Jew (*a term the fathers use for Jesus*)?"

"N-n-no," I stumble over the word. I cannot renounce Him, even to save a brother or sister that I love.

"Are you willing to give up and renounce your faith in Christus?" Mattheo asks again, this time raising the spear that he is holding in his right hand.

I am weeping. "No, I cannot," I say.

Mattheo takes his spear and thrusts it with all his strength into Andrew's heart. I hear ribs crack and Andrew jerks from the force of the spear entering his helpless body. I watch my brother spasm in death while blood spurts out of his mouth. I scream and collapse.

Mattheo moves to Peter next. He has tears in his eyes as he asks again, "Will you recant your faith in the traitor Jew?"

Satan is pacing beneath the cross where my brother hangs, glowering at me. Once again, the three questions are asked, and my response is the same.

"Kill me instead! Kill me instead!" I scream. "He doesn't deserve to die! Please, kill me instead!!" But my cries are ignored. This time, I feel as though the spear has pierced my own heart, that the blood is spurting out of my own mouth, as though my brother's death is my own.

Mattheo kills five more brothers in spite of my pleas and screams to be the one to die instead. I am weeping, shaking, vomiting on the ground, screaming in emotional anguish. I cannot believe that this is happening.

"Why is your God allowing your brothers to die this way?" Satan sneers with each death. "If He really cares, why is this happening? Maybe you have disobeyed Him and He has turned His face away."

Deep in my gut is a trickle, as I remember my saying "No" when hearing Jesus tell me not to come to Rome. Maybe Satan is right. Maybe God has abandoned me, for He is certainly abandoning these sisters and brothers that I am screaming prayers for, asking Him to save them, or, for Him to take me instead. The heavens have indeed been silent as the killing continues, one after another.

Finally, only Conner, Mary Margaret, Timothy, Anastasia, Lizzie, and Danny are left. Seven brothers have died. Seven times, I scream and retch and pass out from the emotional anguish. Seven times, I hear the screams and sobs of the remaining classmates and fathers, for these are people we all love, deeply. No one is unaffected by these deaths. We are all heartbroken. The sobbing has increased in intensity, punctuated by the screams of toddlers and very young children. Several of these little ones were deeply bonded to the seven who have just been killed, since we had already come-of-age the year before and have been given children to bond to as their primary programmers and trainers. It is particularly traumatic for these children to watch their beloved fathers died in such a terrible way on crosses. The watching crowd resembles a mourning assembly now as the tears fall continuously.

"How can you do this to the children?" Satan accuses me. Mattheo looks white-faced and shaken, unable to speak at this point, so Satan has taken over with the angry words meant to wound me further. "Do you want the whole Order to die?" he screams at me.

Looking into those coal-black, malevolent eyes, I believe he would do that, if for no other reason than to break me. For I have stood against him, in front of the entire Order, and he cannot stand this. I see Mattheo standing below Danny, my beloved twin brother. If I do not recant, my brother will die. He asks the question again. "Will you renounce your faith in the traitor Jew?"

I hesitate. I cannot, I cannot see Danny die. Too many have died already, God has abandoned me. The previous weeks of torture, sleep deprivation, and now this horror are too much. I can no longer hold on to conscious thought or sanity. Something breaks deep inside me. Everything is gray and terrible. "Yes," I whisper.

"Say it louder, so everyone can hear!" Satan demands, standing before me. "DO YOU RENOUNCE YOUR FAITH IN THE CHRISTUS WHO ALWAYS BETRAYS THOSE WHO BELIEVE IN HIM?" he screams.

"Yes!" I yell back, and then I fall down, unconscious. I want to die.

The world is dark with despair. The love, hope and joy that I had experienced for the past three months is completely gone. Deep inside, I know that I will go to hell one day, for I have given up my faith. It doesn't even help when after coming back to consciousness, my twin sister, Lizzie comes up to me and whispers "Thank you, sister." Or when Danny, my twin brother, gives me a look of gratitude for saving his life. I have saved his life at the cost of my immortal soul.

For the next two months, the Jesuit fathers reprogram me extensively to never ever believe in God again, and to always be loyal to Satan and the Order. Much of this programming is designed to exploit the guilt and shame that I felt for recanting: they put me through numerous traumatic scenarios in the programming labs to show me that God cannot forgive those who deny him, that my faith is too weak to ever hold onto God, that I love my brothers more than I love God and therefore cannot be His follower, and many other similar lies. In my grief, guilt and shame, however, their twisting of scriptures feels completely true. Something deep within me feels more and more broken and lifeless as the reprogramming continues. They also program in a complete terror that Satan will kill all my loved ones if I ever even had the slightest disloyal thought again. After the programmers and Satan are satisfied that my reprogramming will ensure my loyalty and all future refutation of Christ, I renew my vows of allegiance, love and obedience to both Satan and the Order, and am reinstated as a Jesuit father. A lavish celebration dinner is held to celebrate the "return of the prodigal" into the fold of occultism. My brothers who died are honored as martyrs whose sacrifice had brought me back home.

My memories in this chapter show the Order investing tremendous amounts of time, effort, and manpower in the breaking and re-programming of a member who had become a Christian. The price they are willing to pay to 're-convert' one member back to them even includes killing members who had not shown any 'disloyalty' themselves. I believe that this happens because Satan does not like to "lose face" and has no value for human life. Rather than killing a member who has become a Christian and thus creating a martyr who he had lost all control over, he enjoys the suffering of an individual who caved under soul-crushing pressure to recant. He loves to use these situations to 'demonstrate' that God 'doesn't answer prayer'. Indeed, for many years, my cult presenter, Luce, was completely convinced that she was permanently rejected and condemned by God for 'losing her faith', and that she was an 'example' of what happens when one strays from the beliefs of the Order, and an 'example' to both young and old that God does not hear our cries and prayers. To this day, I do not fully understand why my cries to die instead of my brothers seemed unheard by God. I do know that after this time, I was never the same again. I may never understand until I stand before God in eternity when all things are known in His presence the answers to my 'whys'.

Nonetheless, I have come to realize that He did not really abandon me, or my brothers and sisters. We were pawns in the hands of human beings who used their free choice to commit terrible evil in obedience to Satan. I have also realized since, during healing, that God can and does forgive me for renouncing Him and returning to the Order. He has always been more than willing to; this is why it was so urgent for Satan to program me with the lies that God would not forgive me. I know that many occult groups treat members who become Christians in very similar ways. If any reader has been through events like what I describe in this chapter, God does not condemn you, He is not afraid or dismissive of your anguished questions, and He will forgive and restore you.

Chapter 4: Mission Against a Pastor

After my reprogramming and reinstatement, I am expected to demonstrate my full loyalty and fealty to Satan by attacking Christians. A few weeks later, Mattheo calls me into his office.

"I need you to do a special mission for me," he tells me. "I want you to destroy the ministry of a Christian pastor that you yourself choose. But he must be a real Christian." I realize that this mission is meant to be a seal on my reprogramming to believe that God can never forgive me; I am being ordered to work against His people to show my full loyalty to Satan and create an even larger wedge between myself and the Christian God.

"I will start my research today," I reply, and leave to do so.

The Order keeps databases on Christians and their organizations, particularly on those who seem to be effective in their ministries and who are striving to lead truly godly lives. I review the profiles of numerous pastors around the world. I look for a male pastor who has been faithful to his wife and has at least one child. As the mission involves seduction, this pastor also needed to be someone emotionally insecure with a strained relationship with his wife. Preferably, his wife would be someone not involved in the ministry so that the pastor would be feeling 'alone' in his work. Additionally, the target should be in Italy or a country close by so that travelling between this mission and my other jobs would not require too much time.

I find one that meets these requirements, and set out on my mission. As this pastor has no pedophilic tendencies, I have to convince him that I am older than my 14 ½ years of age. I dress and use makeup that make me look like a young adult, with special padding around my hips and breasts to show a more mature shape. I can certainly put on eyes that are much older than my age, having experienced being trafficked from early childhood. I begin attending his church regularly, volunteering to help out in numerous ways that involve coming in after hours. I present myself as single and sophisticated, and thanks to the data I received from the Order, I know exactly how to dress in the way this pastor would like the most.

After several months, one evening, I am the last person out of the church. I stop, and look at the pastor. "You're brilliant, you know that, don't you?" I tell him, looking up at him from lowered eyelashes. With the skills that I had been taught to employ since I was toddler being sex trafficked to the wealthy, I give him a look that is seductive yet edged with shyness and admiration.

"Thank you," he smiles at me, gratified.

"I would love to get together for coffee sometime, and learn more from you," I tell him, baiting the hook with the prospect of his sharing his theological brilliance and learning with an adoring member of his congregation. I happen to know that he and his wife had a fight the night before, and decided this would be the perfect time to make a move. I pause, waiting expectantly for his answer.

"How about next Tuesday at lunchtime?" he answers, smiling.

I smile back. He has taken the bait.

The lunch on Tuesday turns into, as I had planned, the first of several one-on-one meetings regularly for coffee and the occasional meals, all with adoring looks from me at his utter brilliance. These meetings soon progress into more than just talks.

After several months, I go to the pastor's house on a morning when he is at church running a men's meeting. I introduce myself to his wife and ask to be let in for a private talk that will not take long. Sobbing quietly on the couch in their living room, I "confess" the affair I have been having with her husband, telling her that I cannot stand the guilt and want to "make things clean" with her and God. I hand her ample photographic 'evidence' (faked by the Order) of our dalliances. To make my confession as devastating as possible, I am dressed to accentuate the fact that I am in my early teens, implying that her husband was not only adulterous but also a pedophile. I then leave town and am never seen again by that congregation.

I struggled with horrendous grief, shame and guilt when the memory of my "penance" mission came forward. I had hated every minute of the mission. I hate the harm that my action caused this family. The implicit threat that my loved ones would be killed if I refused was the only reason I complied. After the bloodbath earlier in the year, I could not bear to go through another ordeal of loved ones being killed "because" I disobeyed the Order.

The very point of this mission was to reinforce shame and guilt which would strengthen their control over me. Having recanted my faith in Jesus, this mission helped to ensure that I would never believe He could forgive me, since I deliberately exploited the weaknesses of one of God's children and led him into sin. This act was just one more 'proof' that I was utterly corrupt and lost, and absolutely destined for hell. It no longer mattered what I did to others, or what happened to me, since there was nothing left for me other than obedience to the Order and the adults within it who claimed they still loved me. I was chained to the Order now more than ever before with my own guilt, shame, and self-hatred. The deep desire to not know what I was capable of doing enabled the programmers to reinforce old layers and build new layers of amnesia and barriers against Christianity. I was no longer considered a security risk after completing this and other acts against Christians.

According to my memories and what other survivors have shared with me, missions to destroy Christian individuals and families, and/or their churches or organizations are common in occultic groups. Besides harming the targeted Christians, the goal of such missions is to harm the cult member's relationship with God through the guilt and shame, as I describe above. In my experience, often, there are two types of parts who are forced to carry out such missions: the parts who truly become Christian outside the cult's directives, and parts who are programmed to be in the person's front 'Christian' presentations. For the former, after forcing them into such missions, the cult tells them things like, "God will never forgive you for how you have moved against His body", "You were never really a Christian or you would never have fallen to this", "You love your own family more than God so you can never follow him". The cult programmers then offer the devasted parts continued membership in the cult as their only option and place to belong.

For the parts who are programmed to present as 'Christian' in the person's non-cult normal life, the cult says similar shaming statements to them. However, instead of offering these parts a place in the cult, the programmers instead offer to 'take away' the emotions and memories of the horrible deeds against Christianity and their knowledge of their apostasy. In this way, the programmed Christian parts are blackmailed by guilt, shame and horror to amnesia and denial programming, and also become vulnerable to the programmers creating false experiences of Christianity (e.g., the programmers presenting the parts with a "Jesus" who reminds them to always obey the "father" who is a higher ranking internal programmer). Resolving both types programming installed through the guilt of having attacked Christians most fundamentally involves self-forgiveness and accepting God's forgiveness while processing the grief and other hard emotions, and finding ways to bless rather than tear down the church.

When I hear about a Christian leader falling into financial or sexual sin, and other behaviors that split or otherwise destroy his or her congregation, I often wonder if there is more behind the story than the media reports. I do realize that people can sin or make foolish decisions without being led into it by cult-sent agents, but I also believe it is possible that that individual may have been targeted by the cult. This is not to say that people are not responsible for their own actions; I am only saying that sometimes there might be more to the picture than is evident at first glance. This is one reason among many why it is critical for church leaders (and all Christians) to invest in building strong relationships with their spouses, children and friends, and to work on continuously addressing any wounds, beliefs, habits, strongholds, and/or lack of knowledge/resources that would make themselves, their families and their congregations vulnerable.

Chapter 5: Teen Years in Other Presentations

The Jesuit Order, as many of the highly-organized and well-funded occult societies do, programs its members to have separate sets of parts with cover identities in different countries. In this chapter, I relate a few memories of presentation parts in France, Amsterdam and the UK through their first-person perspectives. Each presenter was programmed to only have memories of her own life in her respective country, with no conscious awareness of other parts or memory of cult life and life in other countries. In my first book Never Give Up, I describe part of the early programming to create and control these parts when they are fronting and when they are inside.

France

I am 15 ½ years old, and I am just getting home from school with my twin sister, Annette, or Ani. My name is Jean, and I live in France in a house in a small town just a little over an hour's drive from Paris. My mother is a wonderful, warm person, and I love my father and my younger brother, Paul. As I come into our home, I see my mother, and ask her in French, "Do you want to hear a joke I heard at school?"

"Yes," she answers. She is in the kitchen starting to prepare dinner. Ani and I put our books on a side table, wash our hands and help her. Our mother has taught us how to cut up vegetables, sauté them, and prepare meals using the herbs that she raises in a window box and in her garden. I tell her the joke, and she and Ani laugh.

After dinner, I visit one of my favorite people who lives down the street from my family. She is an older woman with beautifully styled white hair, and is an accomplished artist in oil paints. For the past four years she has been teaching me to paint. I enter her studio, and the familiar smell of oil paints, linseed oil and the sight of brightly colored canvases stacked against the walls greets me. Pauline greets me with a smile but then goes back to her painting. "You know where the supplies are," she reminds me.

I grab my palette and the canvas I was working on two days ago. I am trying to capture how the sunlight looks, the soft buttery feel of it when it falls on the grasses and flowers in my mother's garden. I started the painting in *plein aire* but want to put the finishing touches on it here in the studio. Pauline and I work in companionable silence, absorbed in our work. After two hours, I get up. "I have to get home," I tell Pauline.

She nods and looks at the canvas I have been working on. "I like the colors you have used here and here," she says, pointing to some of the flowers, "but I think you need cooler colors to offset the warmer brights over here, and deeper shadows to highlight the sunny warmth in the light." Pauline always gives wonderful critiques.

I tell her "Thank you! I will do that next time," as I leave. I am grateful for her help because I want to be an artist one day. I am already thinking about which school has a good art department, where I will apply to when I go to University in a few years.

Amsterdam

It is a month later, early on a Monday morning. My name is Katrina and I am usually called Trina by family and friends. I live in an apartment in Amsterdam with my Uncle Leo and my Aunt Marie. Uncle Leo is my father's first cousin who adopted me after my parents died in a car crash when I was four years old. Aunt Marie is an obsessive housekeeper, constantly bleaching, disinfecting and scrubbing our apartment. They have no children of their own and at times I feel like a messy intrusion into their immaculate home. In stark contrast to the spotlessness of their living space, in their work lives my uncle and aunt are sex brokers. They buy and sell children and adults of all ages and sexes for the pleasure of the wealthy or for purchase by the large brothels. I know far too much about evil and exploitation for a teen but I have learned to cope with this knowledge by using humor and cynicism.

Today I am going to a coffeehouse where the main brokers in the city meet to discuss business. This coffeehouse admits only the brokers on this day and everyone in this part of town knows not to disturb the "businessmen" who meet here every week at this spot. Uncle Leo has sent me to pick up a copy of the broker's list which shows the current going rate for trafficked children of various ages and training. I will also take a copy of this list into the office of Uncle Leo's friend, Johan. I have been helping Johan with his accounting books on weekends for the past year. Uncle Leo wants me to understand all aspects of the "industry" including how to keep books correctly. These books are kept stored in secret safes behind hidden areas in Johan's office. All the 'businesses' in town, including Uncle Lou's, have ways of hiding their hardcopies of their illicit trade in offices and facilities that masquerade as legal businesses and more innocent activities.

When I enter the coffeehouse, I am greeted by the familiar smell of rich, dark coffee and the sweet smell of expensive cigars and pipe tobacco. While most of the brokers are men, there are two women sitting with them, sipping coffee and smoking. The women are dressed as men. This is not unusual in this town where boundaries for all genders are flexible even back in the early 70s. After getting the list, I tuck it inside my purse, and go immediately to Uncle Lou's office off the canal. While the door says he is a lawyer, the other brokers know otherwise. Keeping with this façade, his official accounts show that his vast income is generated by legal fees charged to international clients. His clients are certainly international but there is nothing legal about what they do. After all, his clients are not only brothels, but wealthy people who want children for parties, children whose disappearances would never be questioned or investigated.

I push these thoughts aside and use my key to enter Uncle Lou's office. "You're late," he growls at me. Uncle Lou is very strict, and his discipline can be very severe.

"I had a coffee before I left," I tell him, annoyed that he expects me to account for every minute of my day. I, who have seen the worst that the streets can proffer, who have helped him deliver "merchandise" to brothels and purchasers, who have kept his secrets for years, must account for the few minutes needed to sip a cup of coffee? But I am silent. Uncle Lou is not a man to anger, as I have learned over the years.

"I wanted to send these prices to Alex before noon," he states curtly. Alex is another head broker. It seems as if all of south Amsterdam holds its breath each week, waiting for the price updates, impatient to learn how much to charge for the "shipments" coming in.

"I will copy the list, and run it to him," I say. While the Order has advanced communications technology, this is south Amsterdam in 1972 so computers and email are still unknown here. I must use other means to get this information to Uncle Leo's friend in a timely way. I make the copy and leave.

"Be back by 12:30," Uncle warns me, "I have another job for you then."

I sigh. Uncle earns enough from his ‘business’ that he hires a tutor so I don’t have to go to regular school, but this means he can keep me running around for him or working all day. I obey, waiting for the day that I am an adult, and can order others to run around for me. As I leave Uncle Lou’s office, I fantasize about growling orders at him, and his rapid running to obey them.

UK

It is two months later, and I am almost 16 years old. My name is Beatrice, but my friends and family call me “Trixie”. I live in a suburb of London. My father is a banker and my mother works for the government as a secretary. However, I know she works for a shadowy organization that she can’t talk about and I am positive that she is no “secretary”. I hate my mother and secretly call her “the bitch” because since I was a small child, she has used me to satisfy her sadistic urges. She enjoys ‘disciplining’ me by suspending me from leather straps fastened to the ceiling of her room and whipping me. She always makes me hide the long dark bruises left by her bouts of ‘discipline’ with long dresses, or long sleeves and jeans. Once, when I was ten years old, she accidentally broke a rib. I had to stay home from school with the ‘flu’ until I was able to breathe without gasping in pain. There was never any apology for her sadism which was highly sexualized and became more and more vicious as I grew older. My father is a weak and ineffective man who ignores her abuse of me, and keeps his head buried in the newspaper or his books when he is home.

I am planning on running away as soon as I graduate from secondary school. I take great satisfaction in the fact that in spite of my high intelligence I am doing extremely poorly at school, because this upsets my mother. In fact, I am the black sheep of the family. My younger brother and sister are the “good children” who do well at school and extracurricular activities. I am the one who climbs out of my bedroom window at night to go clubbing with my older friends, who like me are rebellious teens. But unlike my friends, I don’t go from boyfriend to boyfriend. After watching my parents’ relationship, I have no desire to get tied down to a loveless dyad, or to produce children who will repeat the cycle of pain and emotional neglect. I want something better even though I don’t know what ‘better’ could be.

“I’m going to just finish my “O”s and then take a secretarial course,” I tell Georgia, my best friend, talking above the loud music at the club we are at.

“That will kill your mother,” Georgia says. “She’s telling everyone you are going to university.”

“Bullshit”, I tell Georgia. “With my grades, even if she endowed three departments, I have no chance. Most of all, I don’t want to go. Besides, I want to see the look on her face when I tell her my plans.”

“I wouldn’t want to take that dragon on,” Georgia says, referring to my mother. But like my mother, I am very strong willed.

“Oh, I plan to get away from her fire and smoke,” I say. “I put in an application to secretarial school and I’ve asked John if I could move in with him until I complete the course.”

“But…you two aren’t a couple, are you?” Georgia asks, her eyes going wide.

“Of course not! We’re just friends. But I can work part-time at the market after school hours, and told him I would pay half the rent. His place is cheap.”

“You’re a lot braver than me,” says Georgia. “I couldn’t just move in with a guy…”

"Just think what my mother will say!" I respond, with a smile on my face. "She's going to have a gorgeous year-long conniption."

"Won't she turn you into social services?" Georgia asks.

"I will tell her if she does, I will have a long, intimate chat with them about our family, and her 'child discipline' methods," I answer. "I doubt she wants that to happen."

My memories of Jean, Trina and Trixie demonstrate that the Jesuit Order programs different presentations to have different personalities, each with their own set of likes and dislikes, beliefs about life, religiousness, emotional traits and so on. The Order also designs different experiences of family life for each presentation, ranging from the 'warm, happy family' such as Jean had, to the ostensibly physically, sexually and emotionally abusive family such as Trixie had. Typically, the programmers are careful to ensure that across the different presenters, as a whole, there is a variety in the personalities and experiences of family life. That is, they aim at having a 'balance' between the presenters who are programmed to be 'good' and those programmed to be 'rebellious', as they also balance the family lives between those that are 'abusive' and 'loving'. The parents and other family members in each presentation family are also carefully programmed to reinforce the presenters' programmed personality and assigned roles in the family. For instance, if a child is programmed to have a presentation where her parents are alcoholics and that child is to be the 'hero' who takes care of her siblings as well as her parents, then her parents and siblings will be programmed to coerce, encourage, permit and/or reward this caretaking behavior, whether explicitly or subtly.

In the Order, the cover identities for each presenter and their families are not unique to respective members. Instead, typically, 3-6 individuals share one cover identity. For instance, my French presenter Jean and her twin sister Annette, was played by Lizzie and me and two other females of the same age and physical appearance. This is possible because the genetic program enables the Order to easily produce several babies at a time who are biologically identical siblings. Having multiple individuals to fill in for a particular cover identity is a logistical necessity: one sibling can continue maintaining the cover in one country while the other siblings are in training, on a job, or presenting in a different country.

But why have presentation programming? What is the need? One is that these identities can be used to provide a seemingly legitimate reason for the Order's agent to be in a particular location in a particular country at a particular time. Who would suspect the rebellious teen who goes on to secretarial school and is eventually hired by a large corporation of being a Vatican agent aiming at stealing their corporate secrets for the Jesuits? Or the young French artist of later marrying a member of the Templar Knights in order to infiltrate this group, and learn their secrets to share them with Rome? Or that the bumbling, shy American girl in glasses was just flown to the U.S. after she completed a high-profile assassination in a politically sensitive country? As Trina, the real reason that "Uncle Leo" (also a Jesuit agent) had me working in Johan's office was that the Jesuits suspected that Johan was trying to cheat them and his doing so would instigate others to cheat the Order as well. Trina had no idea that other parts in her existed and were reporting to Rome; all the presenters had no idea that within them were highly trained parts that rotate out and complete a task beneficial to the cult, while they remain completely amnesic to these activities.

In other words, the cover identities of various presentations are used to hide the individual's cult and intelligence activities. Presenters are thus often referred to by the programmers as the "sheep" that cover up the "wolf" within. In fact, sheep and wolf programming, with the hostility between the sheep *(presentations that come out outside of the cult facilities) and the wolves (cult host and overtly cult loyal parts) are installed to increase the amnesia barrier between the two groups.*

Besides the practical utility of presentations as a means for members to carry out missions, the Order engages in presentation programming because of how it enhances and facilitates mind control. That is, when an individual is forced to accept and partition multiple different narratives about their 'lives' as entirely different 'persons' in completely different 'families', they become more easily manipulated and controlled because their perceptions of reality remain fragmented. Both these reasons are also why other occult societies such as the Illuminati and Templers, and government agencies that practice mind control such as the CIA, also program their members to have more than one 'non-cult', ordinary front presentation. In order to maintain ties with the original European countries, Illuminati in the U.S., South America and other regions will often have European cover identities, or presentations, as well.

When I first learned that I had lived in other countries, under different names, with a full life history for each, it was extremely disorienting and very frightening. I struggled with questions such as "Who am I, really? Which is the REAL me? Do I even have a real me, or am I simply a conglomeration of parts, created at the whim of others?" I experienced a horrendous identity crisis that lasted until I came to know the other parts better, and discovered that we were actually more alike than different. Their ability to love, laugh, cry, feel pain, feel anger, resonated with who I was, regardless of programmed identity: all of us were the 'real me', we all reflected an aspect of my true soul and what I like and dislike. All of them wanted to be free of being controlled by others, which is why they courageously shared their stories with me. All wanted the freedom to love others without being chained to a terror of disobeying Satan, or to the need to obey his commands. All wanted the chance to live a life that reflects who I truly am underneath all the stories that I had been programmed to believe about myself. All of us had to grieve the terrible abuse, emotional pain and manipulation that was required to cause the fracturing of who I am into various identities. All felt the rage that this was how I/we were treated for an entire lifetime, and all wanted the abuse to stop, and to be free to stop abusing others. This was the "real me" and why they chose to share their stories with me, and thus I was able to write this book.

Chapter 6: Hidden Illuminati Child

I am 16 years old and Anagram (Ana), my Illuminati cult presenter, is fronting in Germany. I am at one of the Illuminati's private medical facilities. The doctors here have just confirmed that I am pregnant, and ascertained that the fetus is male. My Illuminati mother is with me. She immediately makes a call to the head of the German family because the child has been fathered by David Rothschild, and may prove a useful tie with the Rothschilds in the future. I pay close attention to the call because I need to know the fate of this child. Would the German father decide that another Battenberg-Rothschild bastard son would not be useful at this point, and so order an abortion? Even worse, would this child be sold at birth into the violent, perverse underworld of sex trafficking and human experimentation? Would I be ordered to foster the child out? Or, maybe, just maybe – I might be allowed to keep my son and raise him myself. Waves of love flood me for my little unborn son, and how I wish that I could be the one to dictate his fate.

The discussion between my mother, who is one of my main Illuminati programmers and the German father continues. Another voice enters the call, and I hear Timothy Brogan, another one of my main programmers join the conversation. He strongly advises that we retain this child because my maternal instincts could then be harnessed for loyalty to the cult and my programming.

As Ana, I know full well that it is extremely common for teenage girls in the Illuminati to be allowed or encouraged to bear a child who is then fostered out or 'hidden' in other Illuminati households. This child is essentially a hostage, i.e., the young mothers are told that if their programming fails or they disobey orders from the cult, then they would never be allowed to see their child again, or the child will be killed. Typically, although the Illuminati cult presenters remember the child and look forward to the times they are allowed to be together, the non-cult, ordinary day presenters have no memory of the hidden child because they are told that the child would be painfully killed if they ever remember him or her, or the cult. In this way, the hidden son or daughter helps ensure the amnesia of the non-cult presenters and the obedience of the cult presenters, as an Illuminati child matures into adolescence. I am only surprised that at 16, I have not already been made to have a hidden child.

For a moment I allow myself to hope that my non-cult presenters might be allowed to have the story of being a teenaged mother and so I might actually get to raise the child myself. My heart sinks bitterly, however, as the conversation develops into a detailed discussion of the advantages of fostering my son with the Rothschilds.

"It will cause them to trust Ana more," notes Brogan.

"This is critical as they are already showing interest in her skills as an oracle," my mother puts in.

I tune them out as they continue the discussion, wrapping my arms around my belly. Although I do not have the power to keep him, at least, I have the power to love him as long as he is still with me.

The next time I am in France, I tell David, "I'm pregnant," as I have been told to do by the German family.

"Well, don't let it come near me until it's old enough to carry on a decent conversation," he replies casually.

I think to myself, "*Typical David, he doesn't have a paternal bone in his body.*"

It is time for the birth, and I am attended by my twin sister, as expected, and by the people I am closest to in my family: my mother, sister, and my beloved friend, Barbara, who is also a high-ranking trainer. As I deliver my son, I feel a deep surge of sorrow inside. As Ana, I have absolutely no idea that this birth has triggered the deep anguish that my Jesuit cult presenter, Luce, experienced when she had to sacrifice her firstborn years before in Rome. Instead, I believe that it is because I am remembering sacrificing my firstborn son in Germany when I was 13, a required ritual for all Illuminati teenagers. My sadness is dispelled, however, when I catch my first glimpse of my red-faced, crying, very healthy young son. His name is David, in honor of his father. I tenderly pick him up, hold him to my breast, and nurse him, ecstatic at becoming a mother. My attendants all congratulate me, and I fall asleep soon afterwards, my infant son next to me in a small bassinet.

That evening, they move baby David and I to a small stone cottage on the property of the Rothschild main summer residence, with a servant to take care us. Over the next few weeks, I am allowed plenty of time with baby David. I nurse him, burp him, change him, and coo over him. I am completely in love. He has started growing fine wisps of light brown hair, and his eyes are still an infant blue. I am convinced that when I smile at him, he smiles back at times, although he is still so young. My mother, sister, Barbara and other close friends in the Illuminati visit frequently. I never tire of showing David off to them, or of talking about him to them. They smile patiently, and agree with me that he is indeed marvelous.

During one visit, however, my mother states firmly, “It’s time to take him to his foster home.” She had warned me about this event coming several days before, but I had refused to think about it.

I begin crying. “I don’t want to give him up!” I yell. My loud voice startles baby David and seeming almost in sympathy, he begins crying loudly. “See, he wants to stay with me!” I begin crying, and both David and I have tears streaming down our faces.

“You know you have to do this,” my mother and sister remind me. “You will be able to visit David from time to time, and he will always know that you are his real mother and how much you love him.”

Their words don’t help. I love my baby, and cannot bear to give him up.

“I can’t,” I say, trembling. “I’m not able to give him up.”

“If you don’t, you know I can’t let you keep him, if he makes you weak. I will kill him myself to make sure that doesn’t happen,” my mother hisses at me. At this moment, I hate her with a blinding rage. I hate this woman who throughout my life has never tolerated weakness in any form, who has pushed me since earliest childhood with her own blind ambition.

I cannot keep David, but I can make my feelings known.

“I hate you, I hate you, bitch!” I tell my mother. “I will never forgive you for this!”

“Hate me if you must, but know that I am doing my best to protect you and my grandson, even though you can’t realize it now,” my mother says. She reaches out for my son, and I clutch him to my breast.

“Mother, please, don’t do this,” I sob, as anguished tears flow down my face. Little David is crying in tandem with me, his fists curled and his screams filling the room.

"Ana, you must, and you know it!" my mother replies. She sends Lizzie to go and ask two men in the next room to come in and help her take my son away. The men literally hold me and pry my arms open, and take my son, who is still screaming, away. I lie down on the bed, and feel as if I am dying. I cannot describe the loss and bereavement I feel.

I pull myself to my feet and scream, "Kill me, mother!" I cannot even see her for the red haze of rage and grief, "Kill me, finish off what you have started today!"

"Ana, stop it!" she screams back. "You will see David in a year, once he is settled in his new home. Don't you want him to live? To have a good life?"

"I could have given him a good life!" I yell in anguish.

"You are only a teen, without money of your own. How could you possibly support him? And yourself? For you would both become outcasts if you failed to give him up. Is that the life you want for your son?"

I lie on the bed, and cry for hours, until exhausted, I fall asleep. I have told my mother to leave and not come near me again. Lizzie and Barbara hold me and comfort me. Later in the day, Brogan comes and sits next to me on the bed.

"I hear that giving up wee David was hard on you," he says, in his brogue that seems like a mix of northern UK and Scottish. "I know your heart is breaking," he continues.

"You have no idea!" I sob, "I will never recover from this!"

"Aye, I know it feels that way now," Brogan says. "But one day, you will see your son as a fine young man in a successful career, and feel proud of what you did for him today."

"I will never be proud of this!" I insist. "I hate you and everyone else for making me do this!"

"You are going through the pangs of motherhood and loss, what all girls your age must go through," Brogan tells me. "All survive this pain, and it really is for a purpose: to remind you that the daytime presentations must never remember us. To remind you to always obey. For your young son is your covenant to do so, and his life depends on you. I know the price is dear, and has cost you more than you feel you can bear. But for the sake of all the others you love, you must do so. For you also hold their lives in your hands – and your heart – and they also have done the same for you, including your mother, your sister, and your friend." He turns and looks at Barbara, who is four years older than me, who nods sadly at me.

"I had to send my son away to a foster family too," she whispers. "I know how really hard this is on you." I see tears in her eyes, and realize that my closest friend in the Illuminati does understand.

"How did you survive?" I ask.

"One second at a time at first," she says, coming over to me and taking my hand. "It helps that I can see him whenever I am in Germany. They let me play with him, and he calls me 'Mama' and it means the world to me to know that he is doing well."

"Oh, Barbara," I say, and fall into her arms, weeping. The others leave, and the two of us cry together for a period of time, and then she holds and kisses me.

"I wish I could live a different life," I whisper to her.

"S-s-h-h!" she cautions me, whispering into my ear. "They can listen to us, you know. Don't say anything you don't want reported back."

"At this point, I don't care," I tell her.

"But one day, you will," she reminds me. "And your son will, too." So wordlessly, she holds me and comforts me throughout the night.

It is a year later, and I am seventeen. Today, as an Illuminati programmer, I am working with Barbara to reinforce the bonds between Beltsar, an eight-year-old boy, and Desiree, a six-year-old girl. They are already very close friends in both their ordinary non-cult presenter lives, and in their Illuminati side of life. It is extremely important that these two children be deeply bonded, because Desiree will eventually carry Beltsar's hidden child when they are teenagers; as male adolescents cannot carry and bear children, their hidden child is typically a child that they father with a peer whom they have been in love with since early childhood. The Illuminati programmers work to ensure that every male child has a female best friend that they fall deeply in love with, and are trauma-bonded to. The pairing is usually based on observing which children are naturally drawn to each other in their toddler years or early childhood years, and they are careful to ensure that both children believe that their relationship is developing organically without influence by the adults.

Today, Desiree will be placed in a situation of extreme danger, and Beltsar will be allowed to rescue her, not only to create a trauma-bond between the two, but also to foster Beltsar's protectiveness towards her. Barbara and I are monitoring Beltsar and Desiree through hidden cameras as they are walking down a path in the woods owned by the German Illuminati. We use these woods for outdoor programming scenarios, so the grounds and flora are riddled with all kinds of equipment and structures used to create specific programming experiences. When Desiree is over the correct spot, I push a button, and the ground under Desiree's feet gives way. By all appearances, she has fallen through some rotten boards into a deep, dark well beneath. As the boards had been covered by a thin layer of dirt, grass and weeds, neither of them had noticed it. Desiree falls far enough to be terrified and to be unable to get out, but not far enough to be badly hurt. As she falls into the old well, she screams.

"Desiree, are you okay?" Young Beltsar peers over the edge of the well, terrified.

"I'm not hurt, but I can't get out!" she yells back up. "And there's something down below...a snake! Oh, there's a snake down below!" she screams.

The hole is large and shallow enough at that time of the day for there to be enough light at the bottom to identify the snake. As Desiree is the Illuminati cult presenter who has been taught about poisonous animals, she has no problem identifying that it is a type of pit viper down there with her. She is now more than terrified, as she does not know that before the programmers planted it down in the hole, it already has had its poison sacs removed.

"It's a viper! Beltsar, help! You have to help me!" Desiree is crying, in full panic. "I don't want it to get me!" Hidden speakers play back the sound of snake rattles loudly, galvanizing Beltsar to immediate action. Both children are young enough and too panicked to notice that it is impossible for a snake to shake its rattles that loudly.

Beltsar runs and grabs a large fallen branch from the ground near the trees. The programmers have conveniently left precisely the right kind of branch for his use.

"Desiree, grab this!" he says. "Climb up!"

Beltsar puts the stick down the well. He h grabs her hands, pulling her up the last few feet. Desiree lays on the ground, crying, while Beltsa is able to talk. "Thank you, thank you, Beltsar," she says, crying into his shirt. "I've never had a

"I couldn't let you die," he answers, and the two children sit together for a long time, until they finally stand up and start home. Barbara and I are quiet as we watch them together; while neither of us mention it, in our secret hearts, we wish that we could just leave them alone to be best friends, and that we did not have to manipulate their relationship.

The chapter describes how the Illuminati manipulate a person's maternal and paternal instincts to buttress programming and cult loyalty. Like in the Jesuits and other occult societies, children are valued in the Illuminati not so much as family members to cherish but as assets to deploy. For instance, a socially astute, intelligent and diligent child might one day raise the family's status by rising in the ranks, and a beautiful child might gain the parent favor if a higher-ranking member shows pedophilic interest in that child. The first child of an Illuminati female is also sacrificed as a proof of loyalty and mark of adulthood. Rarely, at other times, biological children may be sacrificed in rituals to gain spiritual power and social standing.

My memories as Ana show one more use of children in the Illuminati: to hold the adolescent parents' amnesia, mind control and loyalty, before they are old enough to marry and have children as respectable adult citizens. Being forced to give away a child is no less painful than being forced to kill it. When I first remembered baby David, I was emotionally overwhelmed and cried for several days as I recalled his birth, and the wrenching feelings of having to let him go to be fostered by another family after being allowed to spend weeks with him. He was fostered by a well-to-do family in France that were a minor branch of the Rothschilds. Over the years, whenever I was in France, I was allowed time to spend with him. Today, this son is a politician in Europe.

Male children in the Illuminati also need a love bond to keep the cult host and presenters hostage and to maintain full amnesia for the non-cult presenters. As described in this chapter, this is accomplished by allowing the boys when young to have a special childhood friend that they become close to, and feel very protective of. During childhood, the boy is allowed to rescue their female friend from life-threatening danger such as the scene described above, or from being sold or trafficked by the female's family; or whatever setup the programmers believe will be most effective based on the children's personalities. Once the boy becomes a teen, this close childhood friend becomes his lover, and the bond is strengthened even further into a romantic bond. The teenage boy is then made to understand that the life of the young woman he loves depends upon his non-cult presentation maintaining their amnesia to cult activities, and his continued obedience to the cult. Over the years, the boy and later man is allowed romantic interludes with this childhood friend to maintain the bond – and ensure the amnesia and cult loyalty. Often, the programmers will put the boy or man through virtual reality scenarios or staged scenarios of his lover's extensive torture and death to inculcate a very concrete terror of disobeying the cult or breaking his amnesia programming.

The hidden children are one reason among many why it can be very difficult for survivors to question their amnesia, resolve programming, or resist returning to the cult. It is tremendously painful to lose access to this child (or children, if the person has been given more than one hidden child), and seemingly unbearable to refuse to return the cult if the children are threatened with torture or death by the cult. Often, if an adult is trying to leave the cult, *this hidden child is sent to him or her to beg him or her to return and/or stop questioning his or her programming. Sometimes, this child will show his mother or father marks on their bodies and/or look starved, in order to 'prove' to their parent that the cult is hurting the child because of the parents' resisting the cult. The presenters will typically, especially early on the healing journey, have no conscious memory of having seen their child. Nonetheless, the child's pleas will usually trigger anti-healing symptoms such as increased panic about healing, denial, difficulty engaging in therapy, migraines, turning up for a ritual night, and so on. It has caused me many, many tears and heartbreak to continue resisting the internal urges or external pleas/orders to return to the cult. What helps me to stand is praying for strength from God, and reminding myself and other parts in my system that what my children need the most from me is not for me to return to the cult, but to show them that it is possible for people to get out.*

Chapter 7: Rothschild Procurateur

I am 16 years old, and I am in my Illuminati presenter, Anagram. I am sitting at a table in a beautifully appointed banqueting room that has rich, velvet draperies, round tables with pure white silken tablecloths, genuine silverware, and glasses made from the finest Waterford crystal. The place is lit by crystal chandeliers and filled with the murmur of conversation in numerous languages from those who are dining. Across from me sits David Rothschild. I have known him since early childhood, since part of my training was in the French house, where I was sexually abused by him and his siblings like a toy and plaything as their right and due. I am only Battenberg's bastard child to them. I was allowed to be tutored by a French nanny in manners only because Philip Battenberg asked for this favor. Even now, my skin crawls as I sit with David, but I cover my distaste completely. While I am too old to sexually amuse David, he likes my quick wit and intelligence, and so he has remained friends with me over the years.

The food is superb, but it tastes like ashes in my mouth. David has bought me a custom-made Dior gown for the evening as he usually does for those he takes out on the town. He has a need to control exactly what I wear when we are out in public together with his other friends. He wants to show me off like a doll. I play the part well, with sophisticated makeup, and glittering jewels around my neck and on my fingers. As expected, I am smiling with a hint of seductiveness at all around the table, creating envy which David basks in.

After dinner and a light sorbet to finish off the meal, the reason we are here in this place begins. The diners turn their attention to the circular platform in the middle of the room. A soft light from above clearly illuminates a young teenage girl brought to the platform and chained to a pillar that runs down its middle from floor to ceiling. This is the great auction house on a private estate outside of Paris, and David is here to make some bids. He is not going to bid this early in the evening, so he and I make small jokes back and forth while one after another, teens of both sexes are brought out and sold to their fates at the hands of the wealthy private individuals or exclusive brothels that can afford the prices here.

As the evening goes on, the children chained to the pillar get younger and younger. It is two a.m. now. Deep inside, I hate what I am doing but I must play my role perfectly. I see that David's interest is piqued by a pair of cute twin boys who are three years old. He looks at me, and asks, “What do you think, Ana?”

David trusts my opinion since he believes I have a “discerning eye” for those that he would enjoy the most. His look makes me want to crawl away, but I have a job to do. “No,” I tell him in French. “Wait. They will bring better out later.” And they do. There are children trained to do special things, things that he enjoys. There is one little girl that is two years old, and already can perform one of his favorite acts.

As he looks my way, I nod, and then he tells his procurator, “Buy it.” Not “her”, but “it”, for this is the view that David and other members of this wealthy family have of expendable young children. I feel a deep sadness, for I know that later, David will want me to spend time with him and the child, that he will humiliate me by ripping off the designer dress that costs thousands, ask me to do unthinkable things, and then he will abuse and kill this young child. I think about how my mother has told me and my twin sister over and over again since our earlier years about how lucky we were that we were fathered by a high-ranking, well-respected Illuminati man who considered us useful rather than expendable. But, I do not consider myself one bit lucky to have been born into this system of evil, and the older I get, the more I despise myself for being part of perpetuating it. At the same time, I also feel completely trapped, because disobedience means pain, humiliation and the threat of my family being hurt.

Scenes such as the above are one among several in my life that illustrate why many years ago, the Jesuits chose to program female agents. While a male agent could have played the same role that Ana did, they wanted individuals of both sexes to meet the variety of emotional and other preferences that those raised within wealthy families might have. Some men prefer a woman's advice, while others prefer a man's, and the Jesuits have agents to fit either preference. It was also useful to have female agents on missions against individuals or cultures that were misogynistic because they tended to underestimate or dismiss females.

Ana, as the Illuminati cult presenter, only had memories of her Illuminati cult life and her lives as Illuminati non-cult presenters or cover identities in France, Germany, the UK and the USA. She did not know that her 'memories' of being a bastard child of a Battenberg leader was a script that she was programmed with by the Jesuits. She was completely amnesic to Rome and the fathers there, and did not know that other parts were reporting her observations and knowledge about the Illuminati back to the Jesuit fathers in Rome. She had no idea that Luke (Luce), the Jesuit cult presenter, was watching everything through her eyes. Nonetheless, deep inside, both Ana and Luke were equally sickened by their role in the trafficking of children, but yet felt powerless to change their lives. During this time in my life, I was the Order's programmed and mind-controlled slave. They had carefully trained and prepared me to carry out such jobs, and taught me over many years that the reward for obedience was 'love' and 'acceptance'. To have said "No" would have incurred wrath, emotional abandonment, torture and even death, not only for myself, but those I loved within the Order, including brothers and sisters. I had already experienced this type of deep, horrendous emotional pain once at age 14, and at age 16 – still a child in many cultures – I was unable to face a possible repetition of this pain.

When I first recovered this memory of the auction house and time spent with David, I did what I referred to as "toilet therapy" - heaving over a toilet from the emotional pain and anguish - for several days. I had trouble putting together the types of scenarios that I engaged in with these individuals, with the 'normal' and 'Christian' life I had formerly believed I had lived. The utter carelessness for pain, suffering and human life, the terrible auctioning of children, grieved me beyond my ability to emotionally cope with. For the past several years, I have volunteered with anti-trafficking agencies, because I can never forget the looks in the eyes of the children being auctioned, the fear, bewilderment, and the despair generated by the knowledge of what might happen as they were auctioned to men and women around the glittering room. Because I myself was trafficked as a very young child at wealthy parties (as described in the first book in this series, Never Give Up*), I also knew all too well the painful fate that awaited the 'disposable' children. Even writing this chapter, deep grief wells up within me, knowing that even today, children are being auctioned in places such as this, secret auctions on private estates and clubs that the public will never know about. My hope is that by exposing even part of this terrible industry in this chapter, more people will be motivated to say "This must be stopped!" and then take action to do something to fight the trafficking of young children.*

Chapter 8: Satan's Generals

I am 17 years old, and I am participating in a very special ceremony. Tonight, I and two other Jesuit fathers will join the ranks of the generals of the Jesuit army. On the occultic, non-public side of the Order, there are 12 generals under the direct the leadership of the occultic Superior General. This hidden Superior General is a different individual from the one who takes the office publicly; the Jesuit Order maintains two faces – a public, Catholic one for the world at large, and a secret occultic one that is openly Satanic. The Order teaches that Satan has 12 mighty generals who surround his throne. Each of these are large, muscular and intimidating spiritual beings. The 12 generals of the Order are a reflection of the 12 generals of hell, reflecting the dark spiritual hierarchy here in the natural realms.

We are all gathered in the room where Satan's throne is. This is a room at a secret level of the Vatican that is protected by numerous security measures and technology. Within it sits a large golden throne with a golden altar. Allegedly, this room was constructed hundreds of years ago, at great cost, by a master architect and his masons. The workers were required to stay at the Vatican the entire time. They were fed and treated well, but were not allowed to interact with anyone outside of the Vatican during the construction of this room. When it was completed, with beautiful floors of expensive stone, ornate pillars gilded with gold, and the golden throne was installed, the architect and his workers were then all killed in a huge ritual. This was in order to ensure absolute secrecy. The families were all told that there was an unfortunate "cave in" and that all the workers had died. These families were given substantial sums of money to recompense their loss, but there naturally was deep suspicion regarding this story by many family members. Whether this account is true or not, the room is real, and no one outside of the Order and certain members of other occultic groups even know it exists.

A huge sacrifice is being done on the golden altar as the other fathers and I chant in worship, while we ask Satan to allow us entrance into hell. After a time, a dark opening in the room appears. It gets wider, and there are steps that descend down. Conner looks a little nervous, Vitali is sweating, and I feel a chill down my spine. There is a dark silence, oppression, and odd smell associated with these steps down into the dark. Taking a deep breath for courage, the other two young fathers and I slowly descend the stairs, going deeper and deeper into the earth. We are descending into hell, where Satan and his 12 generals rule.

The room we descend into is huge. It looks as if it were carved from the earth itself, with rock pillars and grottoes everywhere. There are flickering lights and by this low illumination I see a huge throne of smooth gleaming black stone. On it sits Satan. He is in his hideous form here, a huge, towering, black hulking figure. Around him are 12 enormous spiritual beings in a semi-circle. Each being is clad in armor, and holds a sword made of shining, black metal in his hand. I am trembling, as we three young generals-to-be come towards the throne which towers above us. Each of us kneels on one knee, then we prostrate ourselves on the hard rock floor, waiting. There is utter silence for a minute.

Then, a deep voice asks, "What is your wish?"

"To serve in your army and to lead well," we each say in unison, as we have been told to reply. "To conquer the earth for you, and to vanquish your foes."

Satan then calls Conner forward. Conner is his childhood name; now he is Father Peter, and so Satan addresses him as Peter. "Upon this rock I will build my church," he growls at Conner. I wonder at Satan's use of the scripture that speaks so negatively of him, but I am also spellbound as I watch the encounter.

"Kneel before me," Satan tells Conner. He does. Satan places his hand on Conner's head, and then whispers a name into his ear. He is telling Conner his general's name. This is a secret now, but will be announced later in another public ceremony once we go back above.

Vitali is called forward, and the process of receiving his name is repeated. Finally, Satan calls me forward. I kneel on one knee before him, and he pauses. "You and I had a difficult time not long ago," he tells me softly, "which makes this all the sweeter to me now." He leans over and whispers into my ear, "Your name is Basrat, and you will rise in rank with the others and do great things for me."

I rise. We all raise our swords, the beautiful swords with jeweled handles that were hanging in sheaths from a girth around our waists, and salute Satan, our supreme general, rapping our hands over our hearts in the Roman loyalty salute. The generals of hell look down upon us human beings with scrutinizing looks, as if measuring our worth to take on this great honor. Satan nods, giving us permission to leave, and the three of us salute again, then turn and slowly walk up the stone stairs that lead back to the secret room in the Vatican, the room with the golden throne in it.

We believe that we have been to hell and back. The terror we felt throughout the experience is indescribable and our relief at being allowed to return above is equally intense. When we return, the fathers are delighted. They are also thankful as visits to hell, even when supposedly to be honored, can sometimes go awry. Another sacrifice is done, and then we all go into a room next door laid with a magnificent banquet, with golden cups, plates, and silverware. Candles in golden holders flicker softly.

"To the new generals!" Father Mattheo says, holding his goblet up high. He had become the Superior General on the occultic side of the Order two years prior, and is pleased that we have become generals. He had lost one general in a very dangerous mission several weeks ago, and two of his current generals are getting older. They are ready to retire and become consultants, or Senators as they are called in the Order. We three will enter at the lowest rank: 12th general, 11th general, and 10th general to fill these places. I (Father Luke) am 11th general, Conner (Father Peter) is 10th, and Vitali (Father Thomas) is 12th. After the dinner honoring us, one by one we go into Mattheo's office, and privately tell him our general names. From now on, when we meet with the other generals, we will be addressed by this name.

The twelve generals in the Jesuit Order are in charge of strategy and planning operations on the national, regional and global scales, coordinating the efforts of the many Jesuit agents around the world. They are expected to anticipate or at least respond quickly to any national crisis or other events that could threaten the interests of the Order, and to create, implement, assess and monitor short-term and long-term plans in all regions. The younger, less experienced generals are often given smaller, or less vital, areas of the world to plan operations for, with close mentoring from the older generals and senators. Always, always, their agenda is to establish and strengthen Satan's control over the earth, through any means possible. This can include bribery, assassinations, blackmail, and other means to ensure that the country under a general's control will assist the Order – and Satan – in his plans for that country, and to help pave the way for the coming of the man one day that they call variously "The Light of the World," "The Hope of the World" or "The Anointed One." Because of its strategic and spiritual importance, Jerusalem and the land of Israel are always under the leadership of the first general.

As the generals become older, and retire from this role, they will step into the less demanding role of a Senator. The Senator role is given to members of the Order with wisdom and experience gained from years of helping to strategize world operations as a general, or other key leadership positions in other critical areas such as mage craft, programming, political analysis and so on. Senators are often rewarded for their lifetime of service to the Order with a beautiful villa in Italy. The younger fathers and mentees love to visit these villas, and enjoy having a cup of tea or coffee with a beloved older mentor in this luxurious setting. The Order rewards those who stay loyal well – at least financially. This is one thing that made my complete poverty when leaving the Order difficult at first, but I learned to adjust to this lifestyle, realizing that the price of a villa – staying loyal to a cruel master that enjoyed hurting human beings - was far too great to pay.

While I was in the Order, I believed that Satan and the other dark spiritual beings were in charge of hell, and could open up a passageway into hell for human beings to visit. I now believe that this was another deception, one where Satan labelled an underground location 'hell' and filled it with unspeakable horror and oppression whenever human beings visited. I also no longer believe the unbiblical position that Satan is in charge of hell. While I believe that this memory reflects a genuine physical encounter with Satan and his supposed 'hell', I also believe that many of my memories of hell and similar locations were actually setups in the programming studios accomplished through elaborate props, virtual reality and other technologies. As described in my first book Never Give Up, the programmers put children through such staged versions of spiritual experiences early in their life in order to indoctrinate and prepare the children to experience the 'real' events later in life.

Chapter 9: Joining the 33

I am 17 years old, a few months after becoming a general. I am extremely busy. Not only am I working hard at my new duties as a general, but I am continuing to work as a trainer and scientist, and spend time maintaining my cover identities in various countries. One day, there is a knock at my office door. I stifle a sigh. Despite having my own private space for work, it is a rare hour that passes without some kind of interruption.

"Come in," I say.

A young man in his late 20s, Father Theophilus, or Phil as I call him, enters the room.

"Hey, Luce," he says in greeting. He is in his father's robes today, as many are when they are not in lab clothes, or military dress, or in civilian clothes in order to go out and about in the city. The black robes are very comfortable and the fathers have the pick of high-quality fabrics when ordering their robes. Phil is an extremely handsome man and a real charmer. He grins at me and I grin back.

"I have something to tell you," he says, his tone turning serious. "I want you to join the 33".

I look at him, unsurprised. Others had told me that I would probably be tapped soon to join them. The Vatican 33 is the Jesuit Order's assassin corp. While all agents in the group are highly trained since childhood to be skilled assassins, the 33 are the best among these. Much of their work is extremely dangerous and often takes place in sensitive or volatile areas of the world or with targets that already have their own sophisticated security measures, and so require close coordination with our intelligence specialists. The challenging nature of these missions means that the 33 are themselves premier intelligence agents themselves, gathering and working from their own intelligence as well as that supplied by other units in the Order.

"James's departure has left a gap and we need you," he tells me.

I feel a twinge of sorrow. While very, very good, the members of the 33 are also human, and Father James died in an interrogation cell a week ago. He died undetectably in a heavily guarded cell using only his theta skills to stop his heart from beating, rather than betray Rome and her secrets. His was a hero's death so the entire facility and school had honored him in a short ceremony. His name was also engraved on a special stone wall that lists those who gave their life in service.

I feel sad, but also honored by Phil's request. "I accept my place in the 33," I tell my new captain.

We meet at regular intervals throughout the year. Due to the high number of assignments we take on as well as how each member of the 33 also has other roles in the Order, with the exception of the key meeting that happens once a quarter, it is rare for all of us to be present at a meeting. A week after Phil's request, I join nine others at a meeting. We are all laughing, making ribald jokes and teasing one another. Our work is hard and dangerous, and dark and dirty humor is one way that we cope with the stress. Phil walks into the room. We rise, salute him and settle down. After greeting us, Phil gets down to business.

"I need a team to go into Africa," he says, "and gather information about the political environment in one of its cities." There probably would not be anything too difficult about this considering the network of well-rewarded contacts we already had on the ground. But then he adds, "We need the leadership in this city to change, so over the next year, we will have to take care of a couple of people there who don't like change. And it has to look like poorly planned incidents by a local group who just got lucky that their assassination attempts actually succeeded." Okay, this is a bit harder. He continues, "Paul, Peter (Conner) and Luke will be going in."

Phil has just given Conner and I our first assignment as part of the 33. He then spends the next hour giving us plenty of background, answering our questions and sharing the intel that had already been collected by our intelligence specialists and the members of the 33 who had been on the ground in this country and specific city the previous year. The plan is for us to leave in a week for the first phase of the assignment which will take about three weeks to complete.

We end the meeting with a loud shout of "For Rome!" For whatever we do, whatever our role, in the end, it is all for Rome, and we are its soldiers.

After the meeting is over, I go to my private office and call up the scheduling program. I state the mission's code that Phil had given us orally during the meeting. The program updates my schedule to accommodate the mission, automatically rearranging my other duties according to my saved preferences. I go over the changes, make a few adjustments manually then have the program notify my colleagues about my schedule changes. The program also modifies the schedules of my colleagues where they have to take over my duties in my absence. My sister Lizzie, for instance, will take over some of my responsibilities in the programming labs, since she is a talented programmer herself. I also arrange a quick meeting with Mattie, the head trainer, to discuss how the training of three particular students should be continued until I come back from Africa.

The Vatican 33 are one of the 'black ops' units of the Jesuit Order. They follow on the long tradition of Vatican spies where Jesuit fathers employed as tutors and counselors to the royal families, universities and merchant guilds fed information to Rome which informed its policy and decisions. The 33 are skilled in the myriad ways of killing, including with quiet close-contact means such as the garrote and knives, with weapons that work at further distance such as rifles, arrows and drones, with acute and delayed-action poisons, and by arranging for deadly accidents on the road, at home and so on. They are also trained to gather and analyze intelligence, operate all kinds of vehicles, speak numerous languages, use disguises and pose utterly convincingly as practically anyone – a prostitute, farmer, soldier, university professor, political dissident, eager intern, artist, chemist, hairdresser, etc. – as necessary for the mission. As mentioned earlier, all Jesuit children receive this training; the 33 are chosen from the agents who have reached extremely high levels of competence in all these areas.

Agents of the 33 may at times be hired by outside organizations, by those who pay enough to do so – who want a job accomplished without a trace left behind. Of course, the last area of activity was always mediated through several layers of parties, and those contracting a job never knew who was really doing that job for them. They only knew who they thought was doing it.

The 33 pride themselves in normally being "invisible" and unknown in the countries they operate within, when completing sensitive missions. All missions are designed to be completely undetectable, and are the result of close teamwork with other units within the Vatican and its facilities around the world, such as data analysis and technical units who contain brilliant scientists. The Jesuit university that creates bright scholars in a far-flung location may well also have secret underground rooms that house technologies that are 50 to 70 years ahead of those publicly available, to feed the constant need *for information that is accurate, timely and useful. Teamwork is the norm within the Order, with those who lead listening carefully to the information and advice provided by all others. The 33 know that any success they enjoy is based upon the teams that support them and provide the information that can make the difference between success, or disaster, including death.*

Chapter 10: Satan's Child

I am 18 years old, and I am four and a half months pregnant with Satan's child. Since this pregnancy started, I have been treated like royalty. Others in the Order bow when they see me. My health is carefully monitored. I am given delicacies to eat and am allowed a lighter workload.
The other fathers frequently ask me, "How are you and the baby doing?"

Most days, I don't know how to answer. As the child within me develops and grows, the overwhelming darkness and despair grows exponentially. I feel as though I am dying. But I smile and say "Fine," while privately wondering how long I have to live. This pregnancy is sucking the life out of me. It feels as if this tiny child is trying to eat my spirit alive, from the inside out. Since I was tiny, I was told by the oracles and the trainers that I would be carrying Satan's child. And now I am. I realize that they failed to tell me the horrendous cost of the "great honor". Daily, I am crushed by a deep, dark and unspeakable oppression.

As each day passes, I grow paler and paler, and thinner and thinner. My body is reflecting the complete despair and deadly spiritual oppression I am under. Mattheo, Jerome, Carlotti, Danny, Lizzie, John and Mattie spend extra time with me, trying to get me to eat. They remind me that they love me. They remind me that this has been what I was genetically engineered and conceived for. They remind me that this is my ultimate purpose and destiny. Nonetheless, I continue fading. As strong-willed as I am, as healthy as my body was at the beginning of the pregnancy, my spirit and body are failing under the weight of this occultic pregnancy.

It is three weeks later in the middle of the night. Mattheo is sleeping nearby. I am suddenly stabbed by blindingly sharp cramps in my lower body. The agony takes my breath away for several terrifying moments. I wonder if my bowels are being torn open by the fetus, but I look down and my abdomen is intact. However, blood is flowing from between my legs. Another deep spasm, like a knife in my belly, rocks my body. My body can no longer carry this fetus and is violently aborting it. I feel both complete despair and vast relief. I cannot imagine anything I have ever wanted more in my life than to get rid of this creature. But if I fail to carry it, I have utterly failed the great hope that all the fathers I love and Satan himself have placed in me. I will lose their love, and I feel despair at the thought even in the midst of this pain.

The contractions continue, and I weep. I am bleeding to death between my legs, and I don't care. I want to die. Mattheo hears my weeping and soft groans. He is immediately up, turns on a light and sees the blood seeping onto the sheets. He rings a buzzer located in the room, and someone answers. "Send a healing team here!" he shouts. "Now!"

Amidst the waves of pain, I feel something like a huge clot but firmer pass between my legs. Mattheo, Jerome, Danny and Carlotti are there, and I see tears in their eyes. But I know they are not weeping for me. They are weeping at the loss of this creature that has been killing me. I go unconscious from loss of blood and despair.

I wake up, I am not sure how much later. I have been given a blood transfusion as well as fluids and nutrients; I can feel the difference. The room is darkened, and I hear the soft sounds of weeping and mourning outside the door. The hope that the Light of the World would be born into our world has been shattered, so the whole Order is in mourning.

I am tired, weak and shaken.

"How could you?" Mattheo hisses at me. "How could you fail when this was so important to me?"

I am shaken to the depths of my being by his accusation. Doesn't he realize that it is my love for him that kept me alive so long, that otherwise, I would have lain down and died months ago – as has happened to others before me who tried to carry Satan's child? That the only reason I have lived this long was for him? Others come into the room, and I see the anger and disappointment in their eyes. I have failed, utterly failed. I am a failure. I should not be allowed to live. I wonder why I didn't die, too, along with this aborted thing, this creature that everyone values so much more than me. I close my eyes, and sink into a catatonic coma generated by my desire to die.

I am laying in a bed, and I hear Danny's voice whispering near my ear. "Sister, don't die. Come back to me. I want you to live." I sigh softly, and sleep on.

Later that day, I hear Lizzie's voice. "Come back, Luce," she says softly, touching my face. "Don't leave me, please. I need you."

I stir, and then continue sleeping.

Mattheo comes into the room. I hear his voice next to me. "I am angry and disappointed, but I don't want you to die," he says. His voice is hoarse. "I love you, in spite of this. You know that, daughter." I rouse slightly, and my eyes blink open. I see his face, and see that he means what he is saying to me. I am coming out of a deep sleep, a sleep that has held my spirit captive, and slowly, with great difficulty, I reach for his hand. He clasps it, and tears fall from his eyes.

Mattheo, Danny and Lizzie stay with me continuously for the next few days, taking turns. They realize that I am at high risk for suicide as my body spasms in convulsions of grief for my failure and a deep depression still blankets me. They feed me with high nutrient density drinks and soft fruit, and after several days, I strengthen. I can talk now, and tell each of them that I love them, as they love me. This love is what has brought me back from the brink of death, much as it did when I was an infant and failed to thrive.

Days pass, and slowly I begin to do more. I have trouble meeting the flash of disappointment that I see initially in the eyes of those I care about, including Mattie, Conner and Mary Margaret. Mary Margaret is now pregnant with Satan's child, and one night after I am once again strong enough to work, she comes to see me in my private office. "Was it this hard for you?" she whispers.

I see how depressed and wan this classmate, closer than a sister to me, looks. She is now near her fifth month of carrying Satan's child. I am worried as I look into her eyes. She does not look well at all, and I don't want her to die.

"Yes, very hard, I thought I was dying" I answer, with real concern.

"So, I am not weak for feeling this way," she says.

"No, not at all. It will pass with the birth." I desperately hope this is true.

The next week, Mary Margaret also aborts her child. She is unable to carry it long enough for the fetus to be viable. Like me, it takes her several weeks to recover from the trauma of carrying, and then she must deal with the deep depression caused by disappointing the expectations of those she loves more than life. Carlotti, her primary trainer, and her twins stay close to her, just as my primary trainer and twins did with me. After the first day that she rouses from a deep sleep, I come in.

"It wasn't your fault," I tell her. "For some reason, our bodies and minds are unable to do this. But I will find a way, even if it takes years to do so. I will find out why and how to fix this."

Years later, working together with many other members of the Order, I discover a way to help humans carry this type of child. The oracles were right that this being would be born through me. However, it not with my own pregnancy, as was assumed. Instead, it was the technologies that we developed that enabled human mothers to succeed at carrying the hybrid children.

The Jesuits have been committed for many years to the goal of bringing into the world children who are half human and half spiritual beings. Many women in the early years either died from the effort or the fetus was aborted while still too young to live. These losses did not stop them from trying. The genetic engineering used to improve health, strength, healing and strength of will was not just for creating super soldiers, but to create human females strong enough to be able to conceive and carry these hybrid children to birth. More than physical strength and extraordinary will was needed, however, to successfully carry the hybrid children to term. The mothers desperately needed support for the sheer despair, depression and oppression that literally killed them and/or caused a miscarriage.

As I and other members of the behavioral, spiritual and scientific units pondered how to solve this problem, we developed this solution: put together teams of individuals who were closely bonded and spiritually linked to the pregnant female. These teams would spiritually carry some of the spiritual darkness and despair for short periods of time, and so offer some emotional and spiritual relief to the mother. This plan was instituted within twenty years of my own failed attempt, and the first successful births of hybrids occurred as a result. The teams were called Omega teams since they tapped into Omega spirituality and bonds between individuals.

These hybrids were not always "Satan's child". Some were fathered by other principalities, such as Mammon, Pain, Hades, Death, the Prince of Persia as well as other beings including the deities from the pantheons of various religions and cultures. While early hybrids appeared less than fully human, within the past 24 years, fully human appearing hybrids have been birthed within the Jesuit Order. A few, however, have unusual features, such as violet eyes or hair that is silver-blond. But the greatest difference, as I will describe in a later chapter, is in their personalities. These truly are not fully human beings, and the way they act reflects this reality. One of the main Jesuit labs for developing hybrids is located in Czechoslovakia; another is located in Hungary, and another in Poland just south of the Russian border. Here, experimentation is ongoing to improve the success rate of these pregnancies in order to populate the world with these beings. While I had kept my promise to Mary Margaret, I had no joy in this because of the darkness and evil it was bringing on the earth.

At times, I laugh with dark humor at those who wonder if Biden, or Bill Gates, or other well-known public figures are actually Nephilim. Anyone who has ever met a real hybrid would know immediately "No." These public people are very human indeed, even if greedy, selfish, sociopathic or misguided in their desire to rush in a new world order. Even Yuval Hurari, in spite of his monstrous stated agendas for mankind, is human.

Chapter 11: Rothschild Oracle

I am 19 years old and have recovered physically from the efforts to carry a hybrid child the year before. I am in France as my Illuminati cult presenter, Anagram (Ana). My Illuminati twin and I are to be oracles for a year for Philip Rothschild. He has heard that we are very gifted oracles, so he wants the two of us to take turns filling this role for his family. Phillip believes that we are bastards of Battenberg, a German high Illuminati family, "Ana" and "Celine". As I am the older twin, I take the first turn and have just arrived the night before at the lavish mansion of this very wealthy family. Despite my years of dancing attendance on Illuminati nobility at rituals, meetings, and training events, my stomach clenches in anxiety as the servant who has shown me to my suite lays out the robes that I am to wear to meet Phillip. To be called on to be an oracle to someone as high-ranking and powerful as Phillip Rothschilds is a great honor – and a great risk. This year-long job could have tremendous impact on my sister's, my mother's, my children's and my status, safety and opportunity over the next years.

I don the soft white robe of silken material, decorated with gold embroidery, and beautifully embroidered white silk slippers. Gold and white are the colors of a high oracle, and this outfit is what I will wear when formally performing my role as an oracle. I have spent time in polite small talk with the members of the family the evening before, including enjoying an outstanding dinner accompanied by a priceless wine. Now, my duties begin. I enter a private room within the mansion, one that has special technologies to prevent others from listening in.

Philip is waiting for me. "Who is my greatest enemy?" Philip asks me first. He is testing me, for he well knows the answer to this question.

"You have two; one is _____________," as I name the head of a large corporation that he has lent a large amount of money to over the past three years. "This man resents your financial hold over him." I pause. "But there is another. Your son David. He seeks your death for he wants to rule instead of you."

Philip looks surprised. While oracles for wealthy houses must be very accurate or they are punished or killed, not many would dare to say something like this to him.

"Will he kill me?" Philip asks.

"No, your death will come from another means," I tell him.

Philip relaxes a little. He realizes that he does not have to kill his son in order to live.

One day, David passes me in the hall and takes me into a small, private study off to the side. He closes the door. "Oracle", he says, addressing me by my title, "What will be the date of my father's death?" I know he wants very much to know how long he must wait. All sons of wealthy houses want to know such things.

"Do you think I would be so foolish as to tell you such a thing?" I respond in anger. "The day I do so is the day I die. Your father would kill me for telling you this, for he would know immediately by your manner towards him. It would change." I have been hired as Philip's oracle, and to speak as one at special gatherings within the mansion, and at a select public ceremonies. I am therefore under no obligation to answer anyone in private but Philip, including his son.

David stalks away, angry. But I don't care. He knows the rules as well as I.

After a year of doing this job, I am feeling defiled, sick at heart, and tired of warning and helping this family, of calling on spirits within to give me knowledge. I am more than ready to stop being an oracle, and am greatly relieved that the year's contract is up. Of course, now Philip owes Battenberg a lot of money, or a special favor in return for lending his supposed bastard twin daughters to his family. So, Battenberg is happy with my sister and I for a time. We continue working hard to rise in the Illuminati, hoping as always to make our mother proud of us, and to be acknowledged by the Battenbergs.

Individuals who are considered spiritually gifted within the Illuminati may be required to act as oracles, whether for the head of a wealthy family, during ceremonial or ritual events, or during business meetings. They respect the information that gifted oracles provide, just as Rome does, and will use this information to guide business and other important decisions. During high rituals, oracles will also be asked to give prophecies regarding the coming year. Acting in this role comes at a price since the demonic enjoys causing emotional and physical harm. This is one reason why young women who also show ability in other areas or otherwise have value to their groups are usually not asked to take on the role for longer than a year. Depression, panic, suicidality, dementia, psychosis, ataxia, cancer, IBS and other diseases are documented side effects of being an oracle for too long a time. Typically, the task is rotated among many spiritually gifted women within the group. Even so, it is considered a high honor to be asked to be one.

Having Jesuit agents as highly gifted and sought-after oracles in the Illuminati gave the Jesuits much opportunity to gather inside information on Illuminati leadership since only top-ranking Illuminati had the financial resources and social status to hire these oracles, over longer contracts. It was remarkably easy for Ana and her sister Celine to learn the secrets, plans and concerns of the Rothschilds as over the months, Philip asked question after question about what business deals he should make, or not; who he can trust, or not; and whether a new financial venture he is planning will be successful. Unbeknownst to Ana and Celine, specialized reporter parts, as well as the Jesuit presenter Luce, passed this information on to the Jesuit fathers. This was information that we could not have gathered so reliably otherwise, so the Jesuits were delighted when Philip made his request known to the Battenberg father.

Me, Lizzie and our other genetically identical siblings in the Order had our schedules carefully planned over the next year to ensure that the Rothschilds believed they had "Ana" or "Celine" at any point in time without conflicting with other jobs and roles in the Order. For the most part, this schedule involved rotating the four of us in two-week long periods, so each of us usually had six weeks off for our other duties before having to act as a Rothchild oracle again. All of us hated the mission, not just because of the spiritual defilement and weariness, but also because of the Rothschilds' penchant for extreme sexual sadism and other perversions. To help our Illuminati cult presenters with tolerating the Rothschilds' perversions, they were heavily programmed to dissociate their natural repugnance at such activities, and to instead feel awe and respect for them. Nonetheless, Ana and the Illuminati cult presenters of my identical siblings could never fully suppress the disgust and weariness that came from spending time with them.

Part 2: Adult Years

Part 2 describes the responsibilities I was given in my adult years in both the Illuminati and the Jesuit Order from age 20 to 32 years old. Many of these responsibilities in the Order include leadership roles in scientific development, programming and training, intelligence and assassination work, and strategic planning. Within the Illuminati, I continued rising in the ranks as a programmer. During these years, while I hated what I was doing, I was outwardly compliant with the expectations that I serve Satan's agendas through the occult world.

Chapter 12: Leadership in the Order

As time goes on, my closest friends Conner, Mary Margaret, Vitali, Simon, Andrew and I rise in the Order. By the time I am 26, Simon is the first general, and we are all extremely proud of him. It is expected that he will be the next Superior General, since the first General is typically the next Superior General. Vitali is second general, Conner is third general, and I am fourth general. Mary Margaret is sixth general. Each one of us, as well as the other fathers in the top echelons of leadership in the Order, have also held other leadership roles, such as captaining the Vatican 33, coordinating scientific research, and administering various facilities around the world. One reason for earning our ranks and multiple leadership roles over the years is not just due to years of service, complete dedication and unquestioned loyalty. It is also due to our ability to see “the big picture”, to strategize well, and to work well with others and inspire loyalty in them, traits and skills that have resulted in these ranks. The ability to inspire others to work well and assemble teams that are effective is one of the most valued leadership abilities in the Order; anyone who is gifted in this area typically receives numerous leadership roles. In fact, while I have held leadership roles in numerous research projects, typically, it was not my talent in physics or programming that had me tapped as leader, as much as it was my ability to bring out the talent in the other fathers.

But rank does not matter as much as how we view each other. I love each one of them deeply, and would willingly lay my life down in a second for any of them, and they feel the same way in return. Because we have worked together so closely and for so long, when we go into a new situation, we can almost anticipate what each other will do, or how the others will think. We truly are closer than brothers, and this only helps us to work even better together. Whether going into a country with unstable politics to gather intelligence without seeming to do so, or strategizing how best to conduct meetings and negotiations with various leaders in the Mideast, or figuring out how to develop a stronger relationship with the Japanese criminal clan dynasties that soon will be hosting some of our children in a special “exchange program” in which we also host some of theirs for a few months each year, we all rely on the thoughts and opinions, and even intuitions, of each other. No decisions are made alone, for we all well know that only a fool works alone or trusts only their own observations. For we cannot completely erase our own biases and will miss things – sometimes small things – that others can see. And seeing it all to the degree possible can mean the difference between life and death in these situations. The love between us, and deep sense of belonging and purpose compels me to push away my doubts about my life, cling to my programmed defenses against the guilt and anguish of the inhuman acts we did to carry out the Orders’ agendas, and continue my loyalty.

Chapter 13: Developing programming technology

I am in my early twenties. In the programming studios and labs, for years we had taken advantage of computers much more advanced that those publicly available. We already used virtual reality, augmented reality, and holograms to create convincing scenarios when programming the children in the Order. However, we were always seeking to improve our technology. I am now working with many others within the Order on a special project that we hope will exponentially advance our programming technology. As human beings are driven most primally and sustainably by a basic set of emotions, we are seeking to develop a device that can reliably stimulate and control the individuals' feelings of love, joy, hope, anger, fear, sadness, disgust, despair and so on in tandem with controlling their cognitions related to these emotions. That is, we were not only seeking technology that would, for instance, cause terror, but one that would simultaneously deeply sear into the brain the programmer's explanation for why that person was experiencing terror. Naturally, for programming purposes, this technology would also have to be able to cause both pain and pleasure (punishment and reward). Our goal is to combine it with the best of virtual reality technology in order to create a seamless experience for the person being programmed.

The members of the Order who collaborate on this project contribute their knowledge from the several different branches of the physical, biological, behavioral and material sciences. We work from extensive information on the brain and mind, based on decades of meticulous work mapping in exacting detail how the different regions of the brain work and how they relate to each other. These prior projects had mapped the neural responses that occur with happiness, terror, sadness, joy, love, hate and so on, and how they interrelate with specific thoughts, actions and experiences. Similarly, we have reams of information on patterns of response at the electrical, energetic, biochemical and cellular levels, also tracking their impact on the other parts of the body and physiological processes. Now, our goal is to discover in comprehensive and precise detail how to stimulate these patterns directly using waveforms on the brain. We also need to discover how biological sex, age, prior goals, beliefs and experiences, system structure, physiological state (such as sleep deprivation, hunger, etc.), programming drugs, nutraceuticals, hormones and other neurochemicals, and stimulus to the five senses (such as virtual reality scenes, spinning, cold, pain, sensory deprivation, high and low pitch tones, etc.) affect responses to the direct brain stimulation.

As we move into studying how to actually harness the waveforms correctly, the sheer disregard for animal and human life and suffering that marks science in the occult world becomes horrendously evident. We conduct experiment after experiment on simians, then on what are considered 'expendable people' – trafficked individuals, homeless individuals, prisoners from countries with oppressive governments, etc., that the Order has purchased or traded favors for. We use subjects of all ages, because we need to understand the impact of this new technology on adults of various ages, on children, and on infants. We use AI to take care of the complex calculations for each set of experiments.

The work is slow at first. In many of our initial experiments, the waveforms are either too great, and the brain is damaged, or too small, and cannot stimulate the correct response. We also struggle with ensuring the waves penetrate to and stimulate the intended locations of the brain in the right sequence and intensity. We are patient, however, because we have no doubt that we will eventually succeed. I bring in students who show promise, hoping that they can see what I cannot, mentoring them just as I was mentored when I was younger. The other trainers do the same with their students.

As we believe that true knowledge is first found in the unseen realms, our dogged interdisciplinary scientific work is complemented at every step by extensive spiritual labor. We do countless rituals to ask the immortals for their wisdom. We lay our bodies prostrate across traditional spiritual diagrams, blueprints of the technology and project workplans, where we offer the gift of self-flagellation, human infants, and other sacrifices. We travel the dimensions, asking for answers. During one of the major rituals, I encounter Shiva who gives me the part of the knowledge we needed to harness the waveforms correctly. In fact, I had been chosen to be the project leader because I had received the original inspiration for the project directly from Shiva several years earlier.

Our first success was with a young white homeless man purchased from a trafficker in Europe. We did not know his name or his story, and did not care to know. To us then, he was not a person but a scientific subject. Lizzie straps him down, then enters the command into the machine to stimulate the neural patterns of rage. I watch the man, not expecting much. The microburst waveforms are invisible to the human eye, so despite the millions of dollars poured into the project by this point, there is literally nothing to see. Then, the man lets out a howl of rage that barely sounds human. The howl continues as he strains at his straps with all his strength. It breaks off as he pauses for breath, his heart rate sky high, pupils fully dilated, then resumes screams of mindless rage. Lizzie herself catches a breath, then cues the machine to stop. Within two seconds, the man is silent, panting. He looks around at us. He was frightened when he was first brought in. Now, we can see that he is confused and twice as frightened as before.

“Do it again,” I snap out an order. We have to know if we are indeed seeing what we are seeing – a first success. I can sense that the other team members are equally tense.

Lizzie gives the machine the command. Again, the man screams and writhes in a paroxysm of rage. After ten seconds, I lift my hand. From years of working together, Lizzie understands my silent gesture and stops the waveform stimulation. Once again, the man’s rage passes and he gazes around the room, eyes round with terror and bewilderment. We put him through this torture two more times. Each time, exactly the same thing happens. The team’s excitement mounts with each successful display of direct control of the man’s emotions. Lizzie then unstraps the man, and puts him back into a cage with food and water in the adjoining room.

Cheering breaks out in the lab. We embrace each other, almost dancing with joy. We notify the senior leadership of the Order (those who were not already in the room as team members) and send orders down to the kitchens to prepare a special meal with champagne to celebrate. We would have this meal not in the large dining hall used for every day meals, but in one of our smaller banquet rooms. The fathers at this celebration meal are all smiles as we toast each other. The younger students who had been working on the project with us are especially delighted with the lavish spread of desserts since sweets are rare treats for them.

Later that evening, when I am alone, I wonder about what we have unleashed on the world. This technology will change how programming is done. I feel a deep sadness, and no longer feel like celebrating. Years of hard work and data collection have helped our teams to create something that is...*evil*. I feel it deep inside, and this thought makes me restless. But I cannot voice this thought to others, although I am sure that others must feel the same. I go to bed, wondering what I am doing and why, with this feeling of unrest showing up even in my dreams.

Two days later, Mattheo, who is now the superior general, and several other fathers, ask Lizzie, Mary Margaret, and I to place our hands on the newly developing technology, and to prophesy how it will be used. As I attempt to do so, I am overcome with extreme sorrow and I weep. I see people destroyed by the use of this technology. I see a terrible world where this technology will be used to enslave human beings. I am overcome by despair, sobbing, and I lift my hands from the machine. As I look up, I see that my sisters are weeping copiously as well, salty tears streaming down their cheeks. Our prophesies make it impossible for me to deny that we are fools who have created evil.

It took many more years of work and great harm to thousands of what the Order labeled 'experimental subjects' to develop this technology into an effective programming tool. We called it the "God Machine" because it was "God" to those programmed by its use. We also called it "Shiva" after the spiritual being who we believed gave us the inspiration and part of the scientific knowledge for its development. The machine's most basic design is that of a small rectangular chamber, not unlike a coffin, that the subject lies in, then the lid is closed. The walls and lid of the machine are comprised of panels that display the scenarios for the programming session, such as a starry sky, the pit of hell, the person's therapist's office, the person's presentation home in America, and so on. Special glasses are also placed over the person's eyes. These glasses interact with the walls and lid, and the waveforms, to create extremely realistic experiences. For instance, the programmers can have the person 'look down' at his left arm and see it on fire while the machine stimulates that arm to feel the horrendous pain of the burning, fully accompanied by the smell of burning flesh. The machine is precise enough that it can even start the 'burning' at the tips of the fingers then cause the sensations of the burning flames to slowly crawl up the hand then arms accompanied by the relevant visuals. When not playing back the programming scenes, the walls and lid are transparent. The machine monitors neural responses, vital signs and other parameters. The chamber is built such that IV lines, feeding tubes, catheters and other medical devices can be used without disrupting the programming scenarios when necessary for longer programming sessions. Different sizes of the machine chambers are used for subjects of different ages.

In my own thoughts, I secretly called it the "hell machine" because the manipulation of neural responses creates a deeper bondage to programming than the techniques based on physical traumas, intimidation or persuasion, and scenarios staged in the programming studios with props and programmers in costumes. Programming installed by the 'God Machine' is considered "unbreakable" because the individual is entrained by hour after hour after hour of cyclic repetition of stimulus and response that goes deep within the various brain states. Like a tractor wheel ploughing through mud, this entrainment creates neural ruts of cognition and emotion and behavior for parts according to the programmers' precise design that are robust and difficult to change. Such programming is also considered more effective because the direct neural manipulation 'downloads' the desired programmed response to that person while preventing the individual's own response to the programming milieu. For instance, traditional techniques to program an assassin part to experience 'enjoying' killing involved intense conditioning through praise, treats and other rewards from the trainer and often, the administration of drugs that create a sense of bliss and/or thrill. Nonetheless, the part may still feel twinges of unease at the bottoms of their stomach or pangs of guilt, shame or pity for the target, especially when they are still very young. The programmers also have to ensure that the person's negative feelings about killing, such as horror, are being dissociated correctly into the right parts or locations in the system. With the 'God Machine' directed stimulus of emotion, thought and action, the part *being conditioned to deeply associate killing with joy will not experience any twinges of guilt or discomfort, or have negative emotions that need to be seconded to other emotion-holding parts in the system; the part's entire experience is that of joy at killing.*

In the early 2000s, before I left the Order, large parts of my own system were 're-installed' using the machine. Based on my memories, during this period, all the older fathers in the Order had much of their own programming redone with the machine in order to 'strengthen' it. It was pitched as a privilege and as the fruit of our labor, but deep in our hearts, we knew that it was actually a horror. We did not truly want our mind control to be 'strengthened' but we knew that saying 'no' was not permitted. After I left and started to try to heal, it was terrible indeed and extremely difficult to access and resolve the entrainment. Having parts try to leave the "neural ruts" the machine created would immediately trigger unremitting replays of terrible headaches, agony in my entire body, mind-numbing terror, unspeakable despair and other effects meant to bring any change to a halt. The deep subconscious, almost unconscious states that many entrained parts were in also made it very difficult to use more traditional means of healing work such as other parts helping these parts to leave their torture scenarios or connect with current reality. Two things have seemed most helpful so far: (1) soaking prayer in the love of God while welcoming the self and (2) alternating abreaction of the entrainment with soothing of the body and calming words. In my personal experience, the usual techniques for addressing programming and trauma using the imagination to change programmed scenarios, conscious communication between parts, talk therapy, art, journaling and so on has been less effective for machine-installed programming, and takes much longer to help it stop running.

I have asked God's forgiveness for my involvement in bringing this terrible technology into the world. When these memories first came, I was overcome with grief over what I and others had done, and over the blindness and deception that made us rejoice when it was developed. I am particularly grieved that since the 2000s, infants and children in the Order have large portions of their programming installed via the machine. The 'God Machine' was one key reason that within several years, I would again attempt to leave the Order. I believe that my guilt at being one of its creators has been a huge reason for the extreme difficulty I encountered when trying to heal the programming installed by the machine; I believed deep inside me that I deserved to be chained in this way because I had caused others to be chained by this machine. I have also recalled memories of entrainment in the machine itself where I was indeed told explicitly by the programmers that I did not deserve to heal because I was the one who had helped create this evil machine that 'took away free will'. I have had to face the fact that this kind of belief only served the purpose of Satan and the group to control me. With God's help, I have been on the journey to find the courage to forgive myself, to receive His forgiveness and let go of the guilt. I hope that as I continue working on healing from the machine programming, some of what I learn will be helpful to other survivors.

At my last point of contact with the Order, portable or mobile versions of the technology that looked like a helmet used in combination with a full body suit had already been in use for over a decade. A younger survivor who has recently left the Order told me that they can now 'record' the experience of one person then 'download' this experience onto another person. For instance, they can record one person's pleasurable experience of eating a chocolate croissant then 'download' this experience onto another person. Similarly, they can record an experience of brutal torture on one person, then 'download' this onto a different person, enabling them to put this next person through all the pain and terror, yet with actual little physical damage. I have also heard that this or similar technologies can be used to 'read' a person's dreams or thoughts remarkably well, though not fully precisely yet. (Note: While I do believe that such advanced 'mind reading' technology has been developed, I am also aware that in order to enhance their control and discourage parts from daring to think independently, programmers do use many tricks to persuade parts that they can 'read their minds' or 'read their dreams' spiritually, psychically or *through the use of technology. Often, these tricks are accomplished through other parts in the survivor having already reported the thoughts or dreams, unbeknownst to the parts currently being told that their very own thoughts and dreams are not safe from the programmers.)*

Such work in scientific research is a huge reason why the Jesuits give their children an extremely rigorous education in numerous branches of math and science, assiduously cultivating in them scientific curiosity and a love for these subjects, and provide special mentoring for those who show talent. The Jesuits are not unique in this respect; many groups provide such training and education to their children. Additionally, the Jesuits and other groups have learned over the years techniques for 'creating' and programming parts with exceptional intellectual ability; these parts are often called on for such projects. This chapter provides another illustration of how teamwork is highly valued within the Jesuit Order. No one in the Order would ever act like a prima donna scientist, claim credit for the work of others, or overlook a teammate's contribution. Besides cultivating intellectual ability in numerous areas of scientific study, the Order is very careful to develop the skills for collaboration and teamwork in their children; group exercises, group activities and group projects are a large part of the children's training from their early days. The leaders within the order are leaders precisely because they do see, value and honor the gifts of all team members. I only wish that our teamwork, talent, knowledge and financial resources had been put to truly creating good for the world.

Many groups have worked hard to develop similar technologies, meaning that many survivors from different groups would have memories of high-tech programming involving direct brain stimulation. According to my memories, there was something of a race between the different occult societies and government agencies as far back as the 50s and 60s to create devices to directly control a person's brain and mind, and to develop effective protocols for integrating the use of these devices into programming. Other areas of development that cult scientists engage in include weaponry, transportation and communication technologies, agricultural technologies, climate control technologies and medical technologies. In fact, the medical advances in the Order, unknown still to the public, enables them to heal many types of injuries from torture, programming accidents, training accidents, incidences on missions and so on without leaving any scars.

Chapter 14: CERN

I am 23 years old, and Mattheo has called me into his office, the office of the occultic Superior General. He has a new assignment for me. The fact that he wants to give it to me personally tells me that it will neither be easy or pleasant. He is sitting in his chair when I come in, but rises and embraces me.

"Oh, boy!" I think. "I am not going to like this assignment." But I am quiet as I wait to hear what he is going to send me to do.

"I want you to go to CERN for a while," he tells me.

I feel a cold trickle down my back. The public knows CERN (*Conseil européen pour la Recherche nucléaire*, i.e., the European Organization for Nuclear Research) as a large physics research center in Switzerland, run by an intergovernmental organization of the same name. However, the secret levels where research by the occult world is conducted involves nightmarish things unimaginable to the general public. No one ever wants to go there. It makes visiting the Rothschild family and being their oracle seem like a walk in the park.

"Do I have to?" I ask, knowing that of course I do but I can't help myself. "I am so busy here. Mattie is having me run the main labs a lot of the time, and Phil needs me for a mission in a few weeks. I am also making real progress on the machine technology. I am needed here, more than there." Only my years of discipline keeps my tone matter-of-fact rather than whiny or shaky. My arguments are logical, but I know it is hopeless. Every Jesuit father must do a rotation at CERN, where our main genetics laboratories are located, and now it is my turn.

"You know you have to go," he says gently.

Of course, he is right. I look at him with pleading eyes, but bow.

"I want you to assess the people there, and give me a full report of how they are doing." He knows how emotionally difficult it is to work at CERN. It is not unusual for the scientists, technicians and other workers to have breakdowns after a period of time. The regular assessments were instituted several years ago as part of a multipronged strategy to improve the mental health of those on their CERN rotations. He continues, "I also would like to hear any ideas you have on how to improve things."

The Jesuit genetic labs at CERN are located in underground levels that the public has no awareness of. All the scientific and support staff in these labs are Jesuit fathers. The other roles not requiring scientific or administrative skills, such as food prep, laundry and cleaning, are done by mind-controlled individuals who are never allowed to leave CERN and are killed then replaced with new individuals about every half year. We consider this a necessary evil as the stress of being underground around the horrors of CERN degrades the quality of even such menial work over time, thus new workers are needed. Furthermore, that they never get to leave CERN alive means that our secrets are kept secure. These levels can only be accessed through special elevators hidden in the more public levels of CERN, and through special underground tunnels deep beneath the ground. The tunnels extend for many miles and have several openings above ground far away from the facility. The openings are located in small villages run by the Knights of Malta (KOM), an occult society with close ties to the Jesuits. These knights, who look like ordinary villagers, have guarded these secret tunnels entrances and exits for many years. They have been trained to guard this secret with their lives if necessary, for the KOM are dedicated to Vatican – and Jesuit- security. On the Italian side of the alps, there are other tunnel entrances that are guarded by other groups such as Opus Dei with equal diligence.

"I will go," I tell Mattheo. Of course, I will for I am nothing if not obedient to my superior general.

It is a week later, and I am driving myself and two other agents into Switzerland. The three of us have just spent a night and a day in the Italian alps, enjoying the scenery to give us happy memories before going below ground. Now, we are crossing into Swiss territory. The other two agents are going to relieve two workers in the labs who are finishing their 3-month rotation at the end of the week.

"Last chance to see daylight," I quip dryly as we approach a village where there is an entrance to an underground tunnel. "Say goodbye to the sun." We all three look out the window a bit wistfully. No one likes going into CERN, and our expressions say it all, even if we cannot voice how we feel about this assignment. Good soldiers obey orders willingly. We are all excellent soldiers, or else we would be running screaming from the car, preferring to get shot for desertion rather than go down into the hell on earth that is CERN.

The KOM soldiers, dressed as simple civilians but well-armed, see our car and our license plate, and nod. We give them the security codes for the week. We still have to go through the biometric security procedures required: retinal scans, blood sample, voice and facial recognition. The computers scan their databases and give us permission to go on. The tunnel door opens in the side of a grassy hill with goats grazing around the perimeter. As I drive the car into it, I feel as if I am actually driving the three of us into hell. After several minutes, we reach one of the underground parking lots. Once again, at the entrance into the labs, there are guards waiting and we again pass through several rounds of security measures. The steel door lifts, and we walk in.

The first thing I notice is the noise. It is high-pitched and eerie; it sounds like a human being in distress, but not quite. It is coming from down a well-lighted hall. Thankfully, the office that I'm headed to is in the opposite direct of the noise. Nonetheless, it makes the hairs on the back of my neck stand as I walk down the hall. We are greeted by two security officers, one of the lab technicians, and a haggard-looking trainer. I will be relieving this trainer, Father John, whose job has been to assess the mental health of the workers in the facility and provide interventions. I am startled to see a haunted look in his eyes, which are rimmed with dark circles. Father John is a very experienced and accomplished programmer as well as assassin. Considering that I had never seen him look this way despite the horrifying things we have to do in the programming labs, at occult rituals and in the 33, I am chilled.

"Hey, John," I greet my friend. I have mixed feelings as I see the look of relief in his eyes upon seeing me. I am glad for him that his rotation is nearly over, but I am certainly not glad for myself that I have six weeks here ahead of me.

"Hey, Luce," he says, using my childhood name. I don't correct him; I am Luke now, but he is already stressed enough.

"Let's go into a private room and talk," I suggest. "You can tell me what I need to know before I visit the labs." John gives me a look that suggests that I am a lamb about to go to the slaughter, a curious mix of sadness and pity, and this makes me even more afraid. But I won't show it.

He takes me into a private room, meaning that it has full security so that no one else in the facility can hear us. I am tired after the long drive so I get a cup from the espresso machine in the room. John gets a cup for himself, and we sit.

"How are the techs doing?" I ask, to start. John gives me a rundown on each person's level of stress with his thoughts on why some people were experiencing higher amounts of stress than others. I note, as others have, that the amount of stress reported seems to correlate to how much time a technician has spent in the labs. I am dismayed to hear that at least three individuals only midway through their rotation are already showing signs of imminent breakdown. John's eyes constantly flicker around the room, and he makes tiny nervous movements of his hands and feet. He is certainly not doing well himself either. I wonder what I will look and feel like after a month here.

After this initial chat, I take a deep breath, square my shoulders, and begin a tour of the labs. We walk side-by-side down the hallway towards the eerie wailing that I heard earlier. The wailing had mercifully been blocked out by the soundproof room I was in while getting up to speed with John. We go towards a high-security bombproof door, where John places the pad of his third finger on a plate by it, and simultaneously speaks the security code for the day. The steel door opens, and I enter the genetic labs at CERN.

We are on the first level where our trans-human genetics experiments are being done. Just ahead, to the left, I see a small cage with a creature that has a human-looking face but the tail of a cat. Fine tawny fur covers its body. While her features are partially human, her mentation is not. The cat creature snarls and lunges at me, striking hard the bars of her cage with her arms and shoulders. Her attempted attack is accompanied by a horrifying scream that peters off into a soft growl filled with malice. I can see with one glance that this creature is female as it has no clothes. I feel a pang of pity for it even as my stomach turns in horror; its face and form are still human enough to make its nakedness stand out.

I barely keep myself from cringing away from her cage. She is the product of combining the DNA of a cheetah and a human in hope of creating a super soldier capable of inhuman speed and strength. John pulls up her charts on the computer which describes her genetic, emotional, social and physical characteristics as well as the results of her five most recent health assessments. Like many of these creatures, her physical health is now poor. She is not doing well with the stress of her environment in the labs, and is suffering from weaknesses caused by the genetic manipulation. Our research involves learning how to prevent the poor overall health, aggression and low levels of intellect created when combining humans with animals.

I feel ill as I go down the hall and see varying physical results of this trans-species genetic work. There are two small children, male and female, that look human until I spot their paws. They growl menacingly at me as I walk by, showing sharp canine teeth. I make a mental note to never get within reach of those teeth. I see other human-animal chimeras: combinations with chimpanzees, with birds, with fish and other odd appearing creatures. All of them, however, have a look of bland and resigned yet intense rage in cold eyes that lets me know that given the opportunity, they would kill me in a minute. The terrible almost human grunts, growls and screams they make sends chills down my spine and make me weak at the knees. I am not sure whether to think of them as "human", "animal" or "monster". The tour of this level seems to go on and on and on, as John introduces me to the lab workers on this level. They are subjected to the horror day after day; It is no wonder that they are stressed, to understate matters.

Finally, we are done. John walks me to the lounge. It is luxurious and bright with full spectrum lighting meant to provide the benefits of sunlight. Coffee machines on one side of the lounge offer several different types fresh-ground coffee and the refrigerators are stocked with organically grown fresh fruits and vegetables. It even has a garden with a small recycling indoor stream that has flowers growing near the water. The lounge is sound proof and I breathe a sigh of relief. I wish that I could spend the rest of my six weeks in here, away from the horrible noises of the labs.

John sinks heavily down into one of the soft, low couches and tells me, “The staff can spend an hour here in the morning and an hour in the afternoon.”

I can see in his eyes that the two one-hour breaks during an eight-hour shift are not enough. I see something else that few other facilities have: an alcohol dispensing machine, stocked with the finest wines and liquors. The staff on the floor can unlock the drinks of their choice once their badge shows that they have completed their eight hours on duty. I am not a drinker but I plan to visit the lounge tonight and grab something alcoholic to help me sleep. It is unsurprising that alcohol over-consumption is common in the lab workers here. I have no doubt that my name is going to be added to that list of over-consumers over the next month.

After showing me the well-equipped gym and large swimming pool next to the lounge, John takes me down to the next level. Both of us have to pass through even tighter security measures in order to enter and exit the elevator to our destination: the genetic labs that focus on human performance. Over many years of work here and in a few other labs, we have identified the genetic sequences and the interactions between the genetic sequences that impact numerous characteristics like intelligence, sex, muscle mass, strength, health, eye color, hair color, height, and race. We can already reliably control these factors in our babies and are experimenting with new genetic development to further advance our next generation of babies. We are still looking to improve our control over physical traits, such as the efficacy of muscle recruitment, healing, endurance, psychological traits such as loyalty, perseverance, will to live, creativity and spiritual traits such as psychic ability, sensitivity to the spiritual realms, aptitude for traveling the dimensions, and so on. These labs are not as stressful as the ones above, and the staff are rotated between the two sets of labs to give those working with the transhumans desperately needed breaks.

The lab technicians are carefully marking various sequences for further study. Depending on the experiment, the sequences are being spliced into eggs and sperm or fertilized eggs, then stored in row upon row on special climate-controlled shelves. Besides just trying to study outcomes of manipulating DNA, we have also been studying how the genetic engineering interacts with fertilization conditions as well as the environment of the womb. We continue to study each successfully born healthy child for several months to several years to identify the outcomes of the experiments. Once a particular series of experiments is deemed successful, we will use this knowledge to engineer the next batch of Jesuit babies in our labs located in Rome itself. In front of each shelf is a series of DNA sequences on a label that shows the part of the human genetic strand that is being researched. In the lab, these tiny cultured beings are known by this genetic strand, and not by name. Numbers are given to each zygote after implantation into its birthmother. The technicians raising these experimental children however do usually end up giving names to these children, rarely calling them by their numbers. I am excited about the work happening here because at this point, I believe the indoctrination that the gifted children we produce would create better soldiers of Satan and will make the world a better place.

The next set of rooms down the hall, however, make my stomach heave again. To unknowing eyes, there is nothing at all upsetting or unusual about these rooms. In fact, they look like a spa or retreat center for wealthy women wanting the best of care and rest during pregnancy. The place is beautifully appointed and extremely comfortable. It seemingly houses many happy-looking women at various stages of pregnancy whose needs are monitored by extremely well-trained attendants. In truth, these women have been enslaved to be carriers for the human and transhuman genetic experiments that I had been viewing since I arrived at CERN. The ones being given the most careful attention are actually the ones carrying the worst of the transhuman experiments; these chimeric pregnancies have very high failure rates so we give these mothers the most care. These women have been told that they are very privileged and will be rewarded highly for their work as surrogates. The truth is, however, in order to main the secrecy of CERN, every single one is killed once their use as healthy carriers has run out.

Some of the women are not carrying “genetic experiments”, but rather, “genetic products”. These are transhuman or genetically modified children specially ordered by the extremely wealthy from various occult societies around the world. Common requests include children completely covered in fur, having a slightly animal-like appearance, or those with both male and female genitals. Always, they request that these children come with sexual training upon delivery. We can deliver a broad number of designer “products” at a cost of only several million dollars each. Sales contracts specify that these children are not allowed to live past two and half years old. They are sterilized before being taken to their new owners. At times, individuals and families become attached to one of these special children, treating them as a “pet”, and have been reluctant to kill them at the end of the contract. We therefore have a fail-safe: an implant that releases poison to kill the child by the specified time. The implant is placed where attempts at removal will kill the child. The limited lifespan of these children helps ensure that they remain highly sought-after items.

After this, John takes me to the next level down to view the nurseries and labs where the experimental human children live during their first year of life. Those who live beyond this age are raised and monitored in a different facility. The nurseries look very much like the ones that the Jesuit children are raised in, with the spaces, studios and equipment for promoting and assessing the children’s mental, emotional, social, physical and spiritual development. The labs for assessing their levels of pain endurance, stamina, and responses to physical, emotional and spiritual stress, however, make me queasy. On the farthest end of the level are the rooms for autopsies and the disposal of the bodies of the children who do not survive the outcomes of their genetic manipulations, or do not survive the testing of their ability to endure pain, disease and stress. Somewhere, at the back of my mind, a quiet voice accuses me that by being part of this, I am no different from Mengele. By habit and the programming done on me since I was nursery age myself, I silence, then forget the accusation.

All in all, the full tour of our secret levels takes several more hours. Afterwards, we have a semi-formal dinner with excellent food in the largest reception room where John lets all the staff know that I will be replacing him. All of them have that weary look that pervades those at CERN. Yet again, I am struck by how these fathers who have been trained to handle trauma, exploitation and violence since their earliest years are nonetheless displaying signs of extreme stress here in this underground facility. When dessert is served, I make my rounds from table to table, chatting with my old friends at each table, affording me a very brief snapshot of each person’s mental state, work progress and relationships with other staff. Finally, John takes me to the private room, answers more questions I have, then orally gives me the codes for accessing each staff member’s file and takes me to my room. This room will be both my private work and sleeping space over the next six weeks. Despite the money we have poured into our CERN facilities, space is still at a premium and staff who are here on shorter rotations are given the less luxurious quarters.

I am far too disturbed by the day’s events to sleep, so I start reviewing the staff files. These chart in comprehensive detail the daily on-duty and off-duty activities of everyone. There is no privacy in this underground lab, where cameras and computers, and the ever-present badges that all must wear, show exactly what and where people are doing and going. I am particularly interested in reviewing their chosen coping mechanisms, especially the unhealthy ones: alcohol, excessive sleep, isolation, self-harm, and excessive engagement in sexual activities or changes in their pattern of sexual activities compared to their usual profile (sex of every type and with every type of partner is available here once someone has finished an 8-hour shift). Some do use strategies that seem healthier: journaling, art, meditation, watching funny movies, heavy exercise, spending more time talking with colleagues after hours, and so on. However, when I have the AI run the statistical analyses relating patterns of behavior and levels of stress, there seems to be no discernable meaningful difference between 'healthy' and 'unhealthy' coping mechanisms in mitigating stress. This finding has been noted many times by other assessors; the main thing that we have found over and over again is the correlation between rising stress and length of time at CERN.

I ask the AI to highlight the individuals whose mental health seem at highest risk. It uses numerous parameters to create the list including behaviors and activities off-duty, self-report of stress levels, length and quality of sleep, appetite, heartrate variability, levels of cortisol and other hormones over the day and month, quality of work, and quantity and quality of interactions with colleagues. The list that results includes the three scientists that John had already brought to my attention earlier in the day. I first review their videos for the past week, starting with the clips that the AI had already highlighted as being indicative of concern. I am more than dismayed as I watch one staff scientist mock a young human-simian chimera and remove its food and water for no reason at all. Such casual cruelty with no discernable scientific purpose is indicative of sociopathic traits. I knew this father and knew he was not sociopathic at all; this was a sign of extreme stress. The other clips are no less disturbing. I schedule time with each of the three for the next day. Two of these scientists have been here for over two months, and are thankfully almost at the end of their rotation. I hope to keep them from breaking down and help them to finish their last three weeks as strongly as possible. I set aside the most time for the first person that the AI listed, Father Augustine. She has only been here for a month, so I am especially worried about her.

I lie down to sleep in the last hour before the start of the workday. In that short time, I have nightmares of strange, feral creatures with piteous human eyes stalking me. Their eyes make me want to stop to help them, but when I do, they try to tear at me with venom-tipped claws. In some part of my mind, I know I am dreaming, but try as I might I cannot wake myself up anymore than these chimeras can wake themselves up out of the nightmare of their existence in CERN. Over and over again, I barely escape the claws. Such nightmares are one of the known side effects of working at CERN. This is why Mattheo and Lizzie will be assessing and monitoring my own mental health on a regular basis through our special secure communication channels. When I finally wake, I find that I cannot look at myself in the mirror when preparing for the day. Somehow, I feel like I am a monster.

I skip breakfast and go straight to the room where I will be talking with the three fathers scheduled for the morning. I hope that the extra time alone will help me to feel more like myself. The people at CERN are relying on my support and I cannot let them down. The room looks like any therapy room that you might find in any counseling center. Soft restful colors and comfortable furniture give the room a gentle ambiance. I am able to sit directly opposite or slightly across from the person I am assessing or counseling with no desk or any barrier in between. This room is used primarily for talking with the cult presenters who are doing the job of scientist at CERN; deeper assessment of the person's systems where I will be conducting brain scans and talking to the internal parts in charge of emotions, dreams, memory, program maintenance and so is done in a separate set of labs. After half an hour, the phone on the end table next to me rings. John lets me know that he has arrived in the room next to us, with two other members of the team responsible for staff welfare. They are able to observe and hear the sessions through a two-way mirror and microphones set up in the first room.

Augustine enters. I can tell that she is barely holding it together and is extremely ashamed of this fact. She looks hopefully at me. With no preamble at all, she requests a retuning of her emotion-management programs. I am taken aback. It is rare for members of the Order to directly request retuning of their programs or systems.

I reply gently, “Why don’t you first tell me what you think is going on with you?”

Augustine responds with a frustrated silence.

After five minutes, I repeat my question more firmly. Augustine capitulates and begins to share, hesitatingly at first, the horror she experiences in the labs and in her sleep at night. She is afraid that her programming is failing, and again, requests a retuning. In my position as the assessor, I feel a quick stab of sorrow in my chest that this loyal and diligent agent is blaming her own ‘weakness’ for her very human responses to the inhumanity at CERN, rather than being able to say, “What we are doing is horrifying.” Yet I know that if our roles were reversed, I would be responding in exactly the same way; the request is itself the result of years of programming and habituation to perceive evil actions as rational and beneficial events, and to fear our own human responses to evil.

With tears in her eyes, Augustine concludes, “I need to be able to do my job.”

I assure her that I will indeed be conducting a full assessment of her system, and will retune any programs as necessary. I am very careful, however, to emphasize that her responses to the work at CERN are *normal* and not a sign of programming failure. Almost every staff member I assess requires the same reassurance, even John and the two other trainers, Joel and Patrick, who have been in charge of maintaining staff mental health.

Over the next few weeks, my morning to mid-afternoons are spent conducting comprehensive system assessments of CERN staff and retuning of their systems in the programming labs. Counseling sessions are scheduled for the late afternoon, where the workers can pour out the feelings of horror, fear, sadness, confusion and grief that they feel as they work here. I also spend time observing the staff in their labs, in the lounges and other recreational facilities, and during mealtimes.

There is an observable hierarchy in how the transhumans are treated: the more human the chimera looks, the better it is treated. If they can speak a few words, all the better; those that can talk a little are given less unnecessary abuse, and more time, attention and nurture. The more animalistic children, on the other hand, consistently receive less nurture and more violence to “keep them in line.” Unlike the more human children, they cannot cry when slapped or hit, instead, they bite and growl and fight back at their tormenters. For this is how they view their captors, and rightly so. The difference in treatment bothers me deeply, even though I know that it is one way that the staff are coping. My evenings are spent in meetings with John and the other trainers to review the findings, and discuss intervention plans for each staff member and strategies for making working conditions more tolerable.

Three weeks pass. John left a week ago; I am now fully taking over his duties. At times, when I walk through the transhuman labs, I feel that some of the growls of the creatures there are directed at me. At night, their angry, feral eyes continue to stalk me in my dreams. When I visit the human experiment levels, the children seem to be looking at me with accusing eyes, even when they smile at me. It is getting harder and harder to be present for the staff during their counseling sessions. Another week passes drearily. I see circles under my eyes when I look in the mirror. I am also drinking every night now to fall asleep – me, the one who never drinks alcohol. I have also indulged in extra sexual activity which, again, is not typical for me.

I am due for the meetings with Matteo and Lizzie that occur every ten days. More frequent meetings would probably be more ideal for supporting me, but we have to balance my need for support with the need for minimizing the security risk inherent to communications between CERN and other locations. The communications app chimes and I give permission for Matteo to connect with my terminal.

He takes one look at me, and I can see the concerned surprise on his face. “How are you doing?” he asks, the concern reflected in his voice.

“About as well as could be expected in this place,” I reply. “I am so glad that it is only 167 hours, 43 minutes, and 12 seconds until I can leave here.” I have been counting not just the days, but the hours and minutes until I can go. My counting lets him know how stressed I really am.

“Are you taking breaks in the lounge?” he asks.

“Yes, of course, but I can’t break all day,” I respond with irritation. He knows this, and my anger is showing him my stress, too. I can’t help it.

“I want you to take three hours today, and go up and see some sunshine,” he says.

“What if I don’t come back?” I ask, half serious.

“You won’t go alone. I will have three others go up with you. Who else needs a break?”

“Everyone,” I respond. Mattheo chooses to ignore my sarcastic – but true - response.

Later that day, with three other fathers, all of us being at CERN in science-related roles, dressed in civilian clothes, we go up the elevators, and through a door to a small walkway that leads into a beautiful park with flowers. I had forgotten it was spring, living with the horrors down below the ground, never seeing the sun. There is a soft breeze, and the other workers and I soak up the sunshine. The other fathers are due to be rotated out soon, and this break will help them to endure the next week remaining as well; more time above ground is one of the strategies that John and I are proposing for improving workers’ health. The current one hour a week is too little.

The trees are in bloom, with cascades of white flowers on some and delicate hues of pink on others. We reach up to smell these flowers; I bend over to gently finger the velvety petals of small red flowers growing among the grass. The world is still a beautiful place. It is not all just the deep darkness that seems to surround the labs beneath the ground. A darkness that is more than just the twice-daily sacrifices made to Shiva in all our labs. This is a darkness that seems born out of trying to be gods, and to create new beings; to improve upon what has been originally created to develop new species. But today, for these hours, we are all feeling sunshine on our faces, and enjoying the beauty of a creation that has nothing to do with the work below ground. The time passes all too quickly, and reluctantly, we all go back down. But we also know that our remaining time is short, and this helps us to endure.

One week later, Vitali is up for duty at CERN. He will be replacing me, and we will spend two weeks working together before I fully hand off the role to him, as John did with me. As he enters the facility, his eyes cannot conceal the anticipatory dread that he is feeling. Like John before me, I give him a complete rundown on each person there. I then warn him about the feral beings that are the most dangerous, and the types of both human and near-human behavior that he can expect from beings equipped with strength, fangs, claws, and intelligence higher than that seen in animals. It has made me wonder if maybe it is not a good idea to try to "improve" on creation.

"Watch out for this one," I tell him, pointing to the part cheetah, feral child. "A week ago, she figured out how to escape from her cage, and killed two lab technicians." Vitali's eyes show a flash of fear.

"How did she do that?" he asks.

"She watched the techs, and learned the code for her cage."

"My God!" Vitali says. "She can think."

"All of them do," I say, giving him the basic warning all newcomers to CERN are given. "Never, ever underestimate their intelligence, no matter how much they still look or sound like animals. Always, always remember they have human DNA. This makes them dangerous."

"What did they do after this happened?" Vitali asks quietly.

"They added biometric security to the cages, so that only full humans without any animal DNA can open the cages. Voice recognition and face recognition are also now needed." I add, "She has been enraged ever since, so tread softly when near her cage."

The next two weeks passes all too slowly. Finally, with utter, complete relief, after a small ritual to Shiva at the altar before the passageway leading to my designated elevator for leaving, I pass through three security doors using biometric security. This is required since we want no chance that a transhuman could escape. In my parking space, a dark car is waiting for me. I get in, put my coffee thermos in a holder on the console, put some classical music on the radio, and start the drive back to Italy. I will pick up another agent on the other side of the tunnel, and we will take turns driving back to Rome. I can't wait to get away from here.

Back in Rome, I give my report. The team and I make several recommendations, including further reducing the length of rotations at CERN, allowing more time aboveground, soundproofing the transhuman enclosures (mikes in the cages would still allow the staff to track behaviors when needed, and the computers could flag any changes in vocalization patterns or unusual noises, or unusual movements), and adding another mental health support staff to increase the team number from three to four. I also strongly recommend that staff be allowed make a call at least once a week with the fathers and students they are the closest to who are not also at CERN; the enforced isolation from loved ones was another strong predictor of stress, alongside length of time there. This recommendation is accompanied with several ideas for minimizing the security concerns raised by there being frequent communications between the staff in CERN, and those in Rome and other facilities. I then go through the extensive amnesia programming used to wipe out my memories of CERN, programming that I actually want. Because nobody – absolutely nobody- wants to remember CERN once they have been there.

This chapter shows some of the extraordinarily bad things that can occur when people listen to Satan, and do things that we were never meant to do, including tampering with human DNA. I first recovered memories of CERN in 2009, and was horrified at what I was remembering. I had a panic attack that lasted two days straight, as the programming to forget these underground labs kicked in. But I knew that I could not make this type of thing up. I didn't WANT to make it up, I didn't want it to be true, but like a terrible creature, this memory sat within my mind and did not go away. Once the panic eased off, *I was able to talk with the parts that had endured working at CERN. I learned that like all Jesuit trainers, I was sent there at intervals for years for periods that varied between 4 weeks and 6 weeks, to do these assessments and provide counseling for those who worked there.*

I had nightmares for weeks, after these memories came up, and helped myself through the time of remembering by reassuring myself: "I survived being there the first time, and I can survive remembering. I can remember, and stay sane". I had to counteract several layers of security and amnesia barriers and punishments designed to prevent ever revealing this secret of the Jesuits: their transhuman and genetic experimentation. I had to deal with the sadness and despair as well that welled up, as I realized that human beings are actually capable of doing the kinds of things done at the labs in CERN – and yet, in spite of the emotional and spiritual cost of participating in this, continuing to do so.

Just for the record: if anyone should go into the isolated Swiss villages searching for the tunnel entrances I describe here, I highly advise against doing so. The agents of the Knights of Malta that guard them will first attempt to divert anyone coming near, but if all other methods fail, they are trained to create "accidents" that are fatal for those without authorization who are too inquisitive.

Chapter 15: Misha in Israel

I am 23 years old, and am in my Israeli presentation. While my real name is Mariam, everyone who knows me well calls me “Misha”. Here, I am a Jewish female of German descent. My aunt Gertrude raised me because my parents were killed in a freak auto accident when I was two years old. She came and got me from my parents’ kibbutz in Haifa when I was three years old. Gertrude had visited me from time to time while I was still in the kibbutz, but her work as a lawyer in Germany did not allow her to remain in Israel. She was finally able to secure a good consulting job the following year, and so took me to live with her in a suburb of Tel Aviv, a rapidly growing city in the 1960s.

As an older child, I loved wandering some of the streets, enjoying the scent of coffee mixed with cardamom, of teas mixed with pungent smelling spices, and the sight of rugs, linens, and various pots and pans for sale in the marketplace. I love visiting the ocean with my aunt and her friends, where the breeze is often soft and warm, and the sand crunches beneath my feet. I love this city and the areas surrounding it. I love the warm, friendly people of many nationalities who inhabit it. I love everything about this country of my birth.

I am excited about a party that I have invited to. At this party will be two young Mossad officers. One is the brother of Tati, a good friend from school; the other man is the friend of Tati’s brother. The brother is several years older than his sister, but I did see him from time to time when visiting her home, as friends of younger sisters do. I had always had a crush on him, but I was younger then and naturally, he completely ignored me. I am a young woman now so perhaps he might pay me a little more attention for once. I dress carefully and well, and apply my makeup expertly. My hair falls in soft, loose curls around my face. My best friend, who was also invited, picks me up in her car. We laugh and joke on the way, and enter the doors of the home where the party is being held.

There is music, wine, and a table filled with wonderful appetizers. I grab a glass, and pretend to take a sip, for I need my wits about me. I nibble on a plump olive on a skewer. I look around the room and spot Tati.

“Tati, isn’t it a beautiful day today?” I greet her. “And you look beautiful as well,” I add honestly. With her dark hair and eyes, and the light blue top she is wearing, she truly is a lovely girl. I gaze around the room as if looking over who is there.

“See anyone interesting?” I ask her with a slight smile. Like me, she has looked the room over. I have spotted Tati’s good-looking brother and his equally good-looking friend.

“We-l-l-l,” she says, drawing out the syllables, “there is that young violin player who is third chair in the symphony”. I look where her eyes are directed, and see a nice-looking young man there talking with another man.

“Well, what are you waiting for?” I whisper. “Let’s go meet him and his friend.” I hope that as we cross the room, Tati’s brother will notice us. I am reluctant to go up to him myself, recalling a few embarrassing incidences from my teen years where he had responded to my interest by treating me like a stupid kid.

Hours later, my strategy bears fruit. Tati’s brother walks across the room and approaches me. “Aren’t you Misha?” he asks. “I know I know you.” He has been “out of town” for three years so hasn’t seen me for quite a while.

"Yes, I'm Misha. And you are Beni? I remember you too."

We start talking, and as the evening goes on to the late hours, we realize that we enjoy conversing with each other. Finally, I am the one to end our conversation. "It's late, and I have to go to work tomorrow," I say regretfully. "But I have enjoyed talking with someone who enjoys the same things I do."

"Let me drive you home," he offers. I know that the girlfriend who drove me to the party left an hour ago.

"Thank you. You are a true gentleman." I smile and we leave the party together.

Tati is ecstatic when we meet the next day during our lunch break at a nearby park. She can't stop talking about the young musician that she spent several hours chatting with the night before and is already dreaming of having a very special relationship with him. Close to the end of our lunch hour, she finally stops raving about the musician, gives me a sideways glance and says, "I saw you spent a long time talking to Beni. What did you two have to talk about?"

I give a little laugh. "Oh, this and that. We both like art, and architecture, and botanical science," I say.

"Well, he talked with you longer than I've ever seen him talk to a girl before."

I look into her eyes, to assess her reaction to this. She seems pleased, so I can't help blushing and looking down with a shy smile.

A year later, Beni and I are married. We live in a condo near the beach in Tel Aviv, and we love to take walks on the beach whenever opportunity permits. Over the next few years, I will have three children with him: Abigail, Benjamin Jr. and Samuel. Unfortunately, Beni is killed in action while the two boys are still very young. As sons of a deceased Mossad agent who show promise, Benjamin and Samuel are recruited by the Mossad when they are adults.

The Jesuits hate Israel and the Jewish people, and thus have invested a lot of time and effort attempting to infiltrate its military and intelligence organizations. They have spent decades building cover identities for its agents that span several generations, creating a pool of 'sabras' that would be welcome in any military, intelligence, political, economic or spiritual role in Israeli society, given the right credentials. It would not be possible to infiltrate the Mossad and many other Israeli agencies otherwise, as these agencies are extremely cautious in their recruitment, and they forbid their agents from forming intimate relationships with individuals whose backgrounds cannot be completely traced and vetted as being safe for Israeli interest. During the time period described in this memory (and it won't surprise me if this was still true), in order to prevent their agents from being seduced or otherwise hoodwinked by spies or assets from other countries or agencies, Mossad agents were trained to identify even subtle seduction and were also forbidden to reciprocate any interest shown by members of the opposite sex. All romantic relationships had to be clearly initiated by the agent himself and reported to the Mossad, and they were encouraged to only form relationships with women they had already known their whole lives.

The need for impeccable multigenerational cover identities in Israel provides yet another example of why Jesuits program their people with presentation parts who only have memories and awareness of their lives with their families in their respective countries. Misha, my Israeli presenter, could pass perfectly as a sabra who had grown up in Israel and whose family had been in Israel since its inception.

Misha was completely unaware that her interest in Beni, or her behavior during the party was the result of programming, or that her years of befriending his sister was on orders from the fathers. She was just as unaware that this programming was based on detailed intelligence on Beni where even what she wore to the party and how she styled her hair was calculated to be what he would find attractive. Misha also did not know that her reluctance to approach him was actually a strategy to keep him from having to avoid her because of the Mossad stricture against reciprocating romantic interest. Instead, she completely believed that she was feeling shy because of her embarrassing experiences of him showing her no interest at all when she was a teenager. Furthermore, Misha did not know that her still being a virgin at 23, or having only had a short dating relationship a couple of years ago, was not as she believed the result of natural modesty, shyness, or her rather proper upbringing under a strict aunt in a conservative community, but rather, because Mossad agents would only be allowed to marry virtuous maidens. Like the other presenters who are unaware of other parts within, Misha was completely unaware that the cult presenter was watching through her eyes and monitoring every step of the mission to entrap Beni, wearing her like a mask or pair of gloves for the mission. Most of all, she did not know that the two sons she believed were conceived through a loving relationship with Beni were actually genetically-enhanced babies that had been implanted in her in a lab, or that his accidental death when she was pregnant with her second son was actually an assassination.

When these memories came forward, I felt incredible sadness and self-disgust that I allowed myself to be used in this way against a nation who did not deserve this type of hatred – no nation does. I met parts inside who were incredibly loyal to Israel, who loved this land and had felt a deep sense of peace there despite the regional unrest and constant threat to its existence. But I also had parts who hated all Jews. Their hatred was created during early childhood when the fathers pretended to be Jewish and abused them horribly. These programming scenarios were similar in many ways to the anti-Christian setups done to me as an infant and very young child. I was horrified to realize that these feelings existed, and that in essence, I was hating myself, for I have Jewish DNA. It took time, tears and choosing to forgive myself and others, and to process the rage, pain and torment of the abuse memories, to help these parts that hated to understand that hate is never a solution to abuse. Then came the grief, the betrayal, as I realized that the "Jews" who had taught me to hate the Jewish people through their horrendous abuse were actually the fathers I loved, pretending to be Jews just to teach me to hate.

I hated that they had taught me to hate, a hatred that has existed generationally within the Order (and the Catholic church) for many centuries. It took time, but I eventually came to embrace my own Jewish roots. It also took time to come to a place where my Jewishness was no longer a point of further amnesia and dissociation (as self-hatred will create dissociation). I am deeply grieved to see the rise of anti-Semitism around the world today, for this is simply part of the occultic agenda. Why would the occult hate the Jewish people? Because according to scripture, the Jewish race is where Jesus, the true Messiah, came from, and will be the people to which He first returns. There are prophecies in the parts of the Old Testament read by the Jewish people (Tanakh) about the true King of Israel (Messiah) returning through the east gate of Jerusalem, which I believe (and the occultists also believe). Their hope is that by destroying the Jewish race, or at the least, turning them away from their true Messiah by offering a false one (the "Light of the World") they can grieve God's heart, for He deeply loves the Jewish people, with whom He made lasting covenants that will endure throughout the centuries. Satan hates God, and therefore, hates the people that God loves, and so wants to wound God by wounding and turning away His people, the people called the "root" by the apostle Paul that gentiles have been "grafted into". So, missions against Israel have a special importance with the Jesuit Order, and their first general (the one just below the Superior General) oversees missions within Israel, helping to coordinate them and plan with others the strategies that will be used.

Chapter 16 Nephilim Project

It is six months later, and I have been called to one of our facilities in southern Poland where we have a project to bring the Nephilim – the product of sexual relations between a human being and a spiritual being – back to earth. Almost two years ago, a viable male Nephilim fetus, born prematurely at seven and a half months, has been raised in the Polish facility in an old isolated monastery. The birth mother, weakened while carrying the fetus due to the spiritual oppression, died during the birth in spite of new support strategies being tested (such as having two others with high spiritual ability help to surround her and "take" some of the oppression). I and other trainers have been visiting frequently to assess and learn what such creatures need. One chilling fact that we have learned is that it required human blood to be mixed in with its formula in order for it to grow. This was not new information to us as the ancient knowledge supposedly preserved from Atlantis and other cultures already informed us of this. Nonetheless, it was chilling to have it confirmed in front of us.

As this baby grew, it did not look fully human. It was taller than normal for its age, with elongated limbs, and was very pale in color. Its personality traits from earliest infancy were quite different from fully human babies. This little being **liked** violence; it did not have the natural antipathy to it often seen in human babies. We did not have to overcome a natural human reluctance to kill. In fact, we quickly realized that our training efforts had to focus on bonding it strongly with several human beings, and preventing it from killing indiscriminately by teaching it instead when and how it was okay to kill.

As I walked onto the grounds of the monastery, the father over this facility, Father Andreas, greets me. "I'm glad you're here," he said. "I want you to see something."

He leads me down a path behind the monastery worn over the centuries by many feet. Here was a barn for the cows and goats and a large chicken coop for the chickens that provided the facility staff with fresh eggs. As we get closer, I suddenly stop. Scattered in a heap next to the coop were the bodies of dozens of chickens. Each one had its head snapped off. The heads were strewn over the yard. Some looked like if they had been chewed on. I looked at Andreas, surprised.

"Lat got out yesterday afternoon on his own. He went to the chicken yard, and did this." Andreas tells me. He looks over the yard, shaking his head slightly as he does so.

I am shaken. Normal children do not do this. Even human children who have sociopathic or psychopathic traits do not kill in this violent way at two and a half years old just for the love of killing. I have no profiles, no databases, to teach me what to do in a situation like this. I am in new territory, like Andreas and the other fathers.

"What should we do?" he asks me.

I have no idea. "I want to talk to Lat," I finally say. I realize that I need more information on what happened from the child himself. He is sitting at a low table in the secure nursery that is two levels under the monastery building. Few toys are in the room, in which the walls have been left their original dull grey. We have learned that he has little interest in the usual attractions of early childhood. Lat's snack, I can see, is fresh raw hamburger mixed with cooked. The fathers have been trying to get him to get used to eating cooked meat. At this point, he hates cooked meat and will only eat it if it is drizzled with fresh blood.

"Why did you kill the chickens?" I ask him.

Lat uses his mind more than verbal speech to communicate with me. "I liked the noise they make when I killed them." To this tiny child, the chickens were not pets or providers of food, but a source of amusement. "I didn't want them to die so fast," Lat communicates.

To my horror, I realize he did not mean he didn't want them to die. Rather, he was sorry that they died too quickly and so ended his amusement all too soon.

I leave the room. Taking Andreas and two other trainers from the facility with me, I call up the training council and Mattheo by sat-link conference on a highly secure channel protected by biometrics. I describe the incident, and then ask, "What should we do?" This child could be very dangerous as he grows larger and stronger. He will likely not limit his amusement to chickens. We would be fools to not take caution now before he grows any older.

"I think that this child had insufficient socialization and bonding to humans," says Mattheo. We all nod our heads, agreeing.

"So, what do I do with a remarkably strong and healthy child that is basically without conscience, one that has only one real human bond, to Andreas? He can control him, but not forever." I ask the question that is in all of our minds. The implications for the future are dreadful.

"You will have to put him down," Lizzie says quietly.

We are all silent a moment. One of the first Nephilim to be born, a child treasured as a product of a century of hard work, and it must die.

"I agree," Mattheo says regretfully. "We can't risk more deaths, including our own deaths, as it gets older."

"I agree," I say. "But let me study him and collect a bit more data first. Maybe the information I can get will help us improve things next time." We were committed to this project, in spite of its risks.

"Go ahead," Mattheo tells me. "But don't get hurt yourself."

I nod in agreement. Over the next week, I assess and try different interventions with this unusual toddler to see what might work, and what doesn't. Because I have strong theta skills, I can sense the toddler's glee when the twice daily ritual at the facility is done. Its glee seems born not out of spirituality, but an innate malice towards human beings and a deep enjoyment of their deaths. I then, for the first time, start to really wonder what we are bringing into the world. The immortals have assured us it is good and necessary to bring about these half-human creatures, but deep in my gut, I sense they are wrong. Of one thing I am sure: this toddler is not "good" in any sense of the word that I am aware of. In fact, it seems to be the opposite.

Lat submits surprisingly docilely to the numerous brain scans, being rewarded with raw beef liver each time. We spend hours talking. He enjoys this, since I can use theta skills to communicate, which is easier than speech at this young age. The problem is that he also delights in putting horrifying thoughts into my mind as we communicate, thoughts which cause me to turn white upon which he squeals with malicious delight. Lat doesn't enjoy playing with inanimate objects much. He can already read but is not interested in books or creative pursuits like drawing or coloring either. He hounds me to get more chickens to replace the ones that died. And he knows that I know why he is asking. His perception and intelligence are unfortunately focused on whatever would cause me distress when we are together. His physical health and strength are also beyond ordinary and his theta ability is extremely advanced for his age in comparison to human children. I silently thank all immortals that we have never taught this child to use its theta ability to kill and that we had the sense and caution to not go into that aspect of his training. We know this child would have been killing much more than chickens if we had – and that he will teach himself all too soon to kill humans. I shudder at the thought of what a tantrum by this child would look like as he got older, if he was denied something he wanted.

We add the week's information to the meticulous records obtained by Andreas and his team since the child's birth. Then the time comes. It will have to be put down. I know that I cannot be in the room as this child would be able to "read" the intent using his theta connection with me, and would try to kill us all or escape. So, Andreas and several of the other fathers go into the room. Andreas has brought in a small bowl of raw bloody lamb liver and organ meats. This is Lat's favorite meal which Andreas has poisoned. He gives a dose that is much larger than would be required for a human child of the same size, to ensure that death will be quick, and hopefully painless.

It is not. The toddler becomes violently ill, struggling as though with an almost superhuman power to live. Andreas finally has to inject Lat with a sedative combined with more poison; it takes ten times the normal dose until the child finally closes his eyes, and stops breathing. I watch all of this from a video monitor in the next room. When the child is dead, I come back in. I feel a chill, and something like darkness in the room, a darkness that seems to hover there, before it finally seems to rise and leave. We are all emotionally drained by this experience. Father Andreas is weeping silently. He had loved this child, dangerous as it was, and feels that in some way, he has failed by not being able to teach the child not to kill.

"You didn't fail," I tell him later that evening. "We still don't understand how these children think, or learn, and you have no way of knowing what to do – or what not to do." But as I say these words of comfort, I realize that I, also, felt a failure as well. For I also do not understand these little half-human beings, not enough to prevent tragedies like this.

The next day, Father Andreas puts in a request with his bursar for more chickens, and I leave the monastery to return to Rome. Lizzie, Simon, and I will return in a year when another nephilim is born after eight months in the womb, and as a result looks more human. We continue our work to develop effective strategies for bonding these beings to human beings which they inherently despise and enjoy destroying, and to teach them to control their lust for killing.

The job as a trainer was often difficult and dangerous in part due to projects such as described in this chapter. We were doing things that were prompted by Satan and other demonic beings, things that should never occur. Our attempts to mate human beings with spiritual beings to birth hybrids seems to in fact mimic a key factor in provoking the destruction of the world by the great flood, according Genesis 6:1-8. We called the creatures "nephilim", the word that the Bible also uses to describe these beings. We mouthed the words that the Nephilim project would advance civilization and we were heavily programmed to believe in this ridiculous lie, but listening to the demonic is always, always a very bad idea, as this chapter shows.

The Nephilim project is one of three huge reasons why several years later, I will choose to leave the Jesuit Order. Deep within under my programming and indoctrination, I realized that what we were doing was an atrocious, unspeakable degree of evil, and that we were creating beings not only with no love or care for mankind but also an enthusiastic commitment to mankind's destruction. Deep within, I knew that even if those who were occultists could not *destroy the world (see Chapter 17 for more details on this agenda), then these beings, when old enough, would have no trouble in doing so. This chapter shows the deep deception that those of us trapped in the occultic world and beliefs of the Jesuit Order were vulnerable to: we could not see how evil and destructive the things were that we were doing, and at moments when that realization flashed through our consciences and minds, those thoughts were immediately suppressed due to our mind control and lifetime of programming.*

When these memories first came forward, I was racked with shame and anguish. "How could I have done these things? How could I have been part of bringing this type of horror into the world, help to unleash this type of destructive being on creation?" The simple answer, which is no excuse, is "I was programmed to believe, since I was in the womb, that what I was doing was right." The reality, as this chapter illustrates, is that even in spite of this programming and mind control, when confronted with sheer, unfettered evil, I still recognized at a deep level that "this is wrong". And this caused me to begin a process of questioning the events and people who had assured me for a lifetime that obeying Satan and doing what he asks is "ascending" and becoming "better." As the years passed and I was tasked with more and more evil, it was getting harder and harder to deny that every idea of Satan that I had seen executed during my lifetime in this group showed the reverse: that he actually wants the destruction of human beings, and does not care about giving humanity a "hand up". Instead, he would like to see us create "hell on earth". The programming facilities, Nephilim projects, and CERN all certainly are types of hell.

This is why I have chosen to leave this former belief system, and choose to believe in the God who created heaven and earth; a God who loves mankind, a God who in His wisdom forbids the kind of activities that I am describing as I share about my life as a Jesuit Father. I believe that we are within a last generation before Jesus returns to earth (I don't know when, but believe it can't be long), because of the sheer evil that is being done by men and women who are enslaved to the demonic. I believe that in His mercy, God will stop this type of activity, and not allow it to continue unchecked. I am grateful that the Bible shares that God's kingdom is unshakeable, and that HIS kingdom – and NOT the hellish, destructive kingdom of the occult – will reign forever. I know which kingdom I want to belong to, and this is why I left the Order eventually.

Chapter 17: Head Trainer

I am now in my mid-20s, and spend plenty of time in the main programming facility in Rome as a trainer. This facility has been my real home since I was an infant. Working here feels natural, despite how each day opens and closes with rituals done to Shiva at sunrise and sunset. In our worldview, she is the god who destroys mortality in order to allow immortality to ascend from within. We call on her to help with programming which we claim is a means of controlling a person's mortality to make complete obedience to Satan possible, which in turn makes immortality and reaching for the greater good possible. None of us dare to admit that the 'mortality' which makes a person resist abuse, murder and exploitation of self and others is not 'weakness' or 'folly' but in fact, it is our precious human conscience. (Note: *the Jesuit Order depicts Shiva as female, despite Shiva being male in Hinduism*).

I just have been asked to run this facility because Mattie has been reassigned to lead the facilities in Poland and East Germany. I cringe at the thought of the added responsibility but "no" is never an option in the Order. Hopefully, in a few years, this position will be handed over to another of the many talented trainers in the Order. I am grateful that Mattie will still remain highly involved, shuttling between the three locations as needed. My work involves overseeing the other highly skilled trainers who continuously evaluate, revise and implement the programming and training plans for the babies, children and adult agents. We are also developing the plans for the upcoming group of new babies. While every of batch of babies is special, we are really excited about this group because the oracles have prophesied that they will bring in the long-awaited Light of the World (dubbed by some as the "antichrist"). Not just that, but they also comprise the Generation 12 and Generation 13 series of genetic enhancements. These babies are expected to be significantly brighter and stronger in every way than the previous generations.

When the babies are born, two in particular catch my interest. Both are girls, one with blond hair and light brown eyes, and the other has black hair and black eyes. They have fiery temperaments, able to hate and love with equal passion, and from their first day, they are extraordinarily responsive to any show of affection or abuse. I fall in love with them from the first day I see them. I carry them one at a time in turns in a sling for a few hours a day, even when I am working in the labs, in order to create a strong bond between us. This is a new training protocol we are instituting with many of the G12 and G13 babies who are showing signs of being very strong thetas. The trainers believe that the extra attachment will help to prevent these children from using their abilities to maim or kill those who train them as they get older. We are careful as well to ensure that each baby has sling time with at least four trainers on regular rotations to increase the likelihood that there will be a trainer present capable of controlling the child. This is important as each father has multiple roles and many duties. If only one or two fathers are bonded to the child and they are away from the facility on a different job when the child has a crisis, it could create a difficult situation. The sling time will also help to counter the traumas that these infants must endure to develop their theta skills.

While the new protocol is ostensibly for improving training, in my heart, I am delighted to be permitted to be more nurturing than I had ever been allowed to be before. I am sure that the other trainers feel the same way. As I watch the other trainers embrace this new protocol, I realize that we will have to be careful that we do not end up favoring these babies over the older children that we had not been allowed to attach as deeply with.

Besides carrying babies in slings, my days are divided between observing and providing feedback on the ongoing programming of the children, programming the children that have been assigned to me, and reviewing recordings of sessions and reports. The programming (trauma-based mind control) reports and sessions often overlap with training (education in various skills) reports and sessions. This work is interspersed with endless meetings with the other trainers to discuss the progress of each person being trained and programmed. We use numerous sources of information to evaluate the progress: reports generated by the programming and medical AI, human intuition, direct observation, the programmed subject's self-reports, and so on.

We all work together as a team to ensure that each child is receiving the best programming and training that we can give, mutually valuing one another's suggestions, insights, opinions and ideas. I might be "head trainer" here, but I would be nothing without a good team, and we all know it. We are also all mentoring younger students, who are learning to become skilled trainers themselves, just as we were mentored. Life in the facility consists of programming, mentoring and relationships between those working there, and if someone has an issue with how things are being done, or a suggestion for how to improve things, I welcome them, as we all do. We well know that one individual should never make all of the decisions. The best strategies are created with the back and forth, and lively argument, that mark leadership meetings in the various councils of the Order. The only time this give and take that promotes sharing new ideas is squelched is when Satan is personally present, and dictates a new order. Then, the other trainers and I must meekly bow and either agree, or ask a carefully couched question to highlight concerns about potential negative effects of the order on the children, but couched oh, so carefully, in order to not appear to be directly questioning his demand.

After a training council meeting, I go into Lizzie's office. "I'm tired," I tell my sister. "I wish we could take a break and go sailing." I look up at the ceiling, and close my eyes. "I guess I've just put in too many hours this week."

"We all have," Lizzie says. She looks and sounds tired, too. "This new batch of babies is very energetic, and seems to have a lot of theta skills already. They need lots of nurture, too, to balance it."

"You're right," I agree. "What do you think I should do about Melisandre?" I am asking about a young female infant who is developing rapidly. I value my sister's opinion, and ask her and Mattie frequently for advice with the children who demonstrate capabilities beyond that demonstrated by previous genetic generations. The children from G12 and G13 are smarter than me, and I need some thoughts from others on how to approach these highly intelligent babies with precocious theta skills.

"Lots of love, but don't be too easy on them," Lizzie advises.

I think of one precious little baby who is easy to love, and who already is a handful. The day before, she had used her theta skills to knock down a trainer who had made her angry, at a time that was unexpected – months ahead of normal. I agree with Lizzie's assessment, but I wonder if lots of love will be enough with these babies who are already being taught to kill just by using their minds. It makes me and the other trainers decide to provide even more extra nurturing and bonding time. We don't want to die suddenly of a heart attack in a few months from a toddler who is furious with us. These babies are capable of being very dangerous. We know we have to direct their rage away from us, and towards the correct targets: themselves, or those we want them to kill. At times, it feels as if we are walking a fine tightrope.

I fleetingly wonder how long Mengele would have lived if he had been working with these super theta babies. *Not long*, I think to myself, '*They would have dropped him like a toad during the first month*.' Somehow, the thought gives me a perverse sense of pleasure, then I feel a bit uncomfortable. For while I am not Mengele, I know that at times as a trainer, I use painful and harsh methods. I feel a quick flash of guilt and wonder if I, one day, will be dropped like a toad by one of them, and that perhaps I do indeed deserve such an end. I push the thoughts aside, and look at my schedule for the rest of the day.

A Question from a Child

I am 30 years old. Several of the children we are raising in the Rome facility are my genetic children. These children actually have more than two parents, as we combine DNA from several individuals for each child in our genetic program. I love all the children in the facility, whatever our degree of biological relationship. One child, however, Althea, is special. She has dark eyes, black hair, and is incredibly perceptive and intelligent. I secretly call her my daughter in my heart, but I am, as all good trainers are, careful to treat her the same as I treat the other children. She is one of the first children from Generation 13. The oracles have indicated that this generation, and especially this child, will have a huge impact on the future. But this child is a challenge. She is constantly asking very difficult questions, and many of the trainers dread the task of keeping up with her.

When Althea is three years old, she challenges us in a way that we will remember for years. This child asks for a meeting with the training council, consisting of the 12 head trainers for the Jesuit Order. She says that she has an important question for us, and I can sense the deep earnestness of her request. As it is the end of November, the entire council is already in Rome, close by or on the way back, for our year-end meetings regarding the training and programming going on across our facilities in various countries. I arrange for Althea to ask her question at the beginning of our first meeting.

As we sit in our council chairs, this little three-year old comes before us and asks a question that floors us, "Why do we all fear and obey Satan? Wouldn't our lives be better if we just stopped doing that?"

Her question is greeted by a thunderous silence. None of us has a good response to this question. In fact, this question strikes at the heart of all our own programming, which is based upon a terror of disobeying Satan and obeying every single command in word and spirit. Finally, Mattie responds, "That wouldn't work. He would torture and kill us, or force others to torture and kill us if we did that."

"Not if we all agree together not to obey him. Then he couldn't force us to hurt and kill anyone," the child, Althea, replies with flawless logic. Again, silence greets her.

Althea is courageous. She stares at each of us with bright inquisitive eyes, a child surrounded by adults, genuinely curious about how we will answer her. After all, her question makes perfect sense to her.

"This is a spiritual question, one for the mages," Jonathan mutters. "Let's call them in, too." He wants to fob this question off on another leadership group, and not take responsibility for having no answer. After all, if we have no good answer, we will look like fools before this child.

I text the mage council, telling them there is an emergency meeting in the Training Council room and that their presence is requested ASAP. Six show up within a half hour, including the three top mages, and we share with them what is going on.

Althea stands curious and unafraid before both councils. When prompted, she asks again, “Why don’t we all together agree to stop obeying Satan? Why do we let him bully us and tell us what to do? Wouldn’t our lives be better if we just stopped doing that?”

The mages are absolutely shocked. No one has ever openly asked this question before, and certainly no child has. Despite my programming, I am rooting for my daughter, but also realize that this question could end in a very slow and painful death for her. The Jesuit Order is predicated upon obeying Satan, and booting him from this position of ultimate authority is…unthinkable. It goes against everything we have all been programmed to believe. It is the one thing we are all terrified of even thinking. Yet this three-year-old, traumatized and programmed since her days in the womb, is saying these things out loud. To all of us.

The head mages consult together, muttering and hemming. One finally speaks. Even before she opens her mouth, I can tell from her and the other mages’ body language that they have no satisfactory answer either. “This child is much too young to understand spiritual realities fully and her question comes from this ignorance,” the head of the mage council, a woman named Janus, declares. “What on earth have you been doing in her training and programming? Obviously, you” – she points at the training council – “have failed her utterly in not addressing this type of childish immaturity.”

My sister, Lizzie, who is one of the 12 head trainers, takes Althea out of the room and returns her to her classes. We all sit silently, no one daring to voice our thoughts, as we wait for Lizzie to return. When she returns, both councils immediately begin discussing what to do with Althea, and how to teach her the “wisdom” of fearing and obeying Satan that her “wiser” elders have learned both from their experience, and the experience of the centuries. Despite the sheer busyness of this time of the year and the long agenda the training council originally had for this meeting, dealing with Althea now took precedence; Althea’s brief question and simple logic unraveled not just our programming, but also the very foundation of life in the Order. If this was the kind of thinking that our brilliant new generations were capable of, then we needed plans for addressing the problem.

After sketching plans for programming away such ‘childish folly’ from Althea and assessing the other children for such concerns, I leave the room, unspeakably saddened. The Christmas decorations seem three shades duller than they were just two hours before when I had walked down the hallway towards the meeting room. I knew that my daughter’s questions were excellent. I hear my own voice, betraying my own programming, deep inside my head echoing Althea’s question, “What if we all do stop obeying Satan? How might life be different for those of us in the Order?” I keep these questions unspoken, and hidden from my own programmers, deep inside.

This event shows that children do question things, despite the constant indoctrination, enculturalization and programming. Althea showed exceptional courage and insight. She saw and dared to state the truth that we were slaves to Satan, and that life would be better if we stopped listening to him. How sad it is that questions like this are squelched, punished and “programmed away”. How I wish we could have asked the same question, and acted on her advice to all stop obeying him together. In spite of being “leadership” we ourselves were all mind controlled and programmed, and were slaves of Satan as surely as if we had golden rings in our noses that he could pull on anytime he wished. This was the sad reality behind the spirituality of the Order, then and now.

Prenatal Programming

It is early morning, and I steel myself for my rounds in the areas of the facility in Rome dedicated to prenatal programming. Such programming is based on exploiting the fetus' emotional and physical dependency on the mother. Cult researchers discovered in the late 30s and 40s that the fetus can be reliably conditioned to obey if the mother is the one giving the commands, and the one punishing and rewarding the fetus. They also discovered that a fetus will take actions against her or her own instincts (such as allowing himself or herself to be electrocuted without trying to wiggle away) to save its birthmother from pain or death, or to keep the birthmother from getting angry at it. Prenatal programming involves tremendous trauma to the women and child, so this is the aspect of my job as a trainer that I hate the most.

The prenatal programming section is defended by several layers of security. Every inch is monitored by cameras and microphones. Pressure-, movement- and heat-sensing devices in strategic places also contribute to security. No birthmother has ever escaped the facility. The majority of the rooms here are perfectly soundproof with no windows; the birthmothers have no hint of what a programming session for the fetus involves until they are experiencing it themselves. I greet the programmers and students who have been on night shift with the birthmothers. We have a brief meeting; all is progressing as expected and they have nothing significant or concerning to report. I take another half hour to review with two students the files for the three birthmothers I will be working with today. This is longer than I usually take as these students are only 9 years old and it is their first year of being mentored in prenatal work.

Our first subject for the day is the mother Cerine and the fetus Fiona who is 26 weeks old. Fiona has shown herself to be remarkably resilient: her heartrate and blood pH usually returns to normal 30% faster than average after a trauma for a fetus of her age, and she is able to tolerate higher than average levels of pain. Just as importantly, she shows signs of being highly programmable: she obeys Cerine and the programmers very quickly, typically dissociates into responsive rather than catatonic states, and responds to cues and triggers consistently and correctly with the desired behaviors that she was previously taught. The fathers are very hopeful that Fiona has what it takes to accept and survive her prenatal programming, and so be one of the new Jesuit babies born in the coming year.

Cerine greets me enthusiastically when I walk into the lab. To prevent the fetus from developing an aversion to the programmers' voices, all the birthmothers are programmed to feel great affection and trust for them, and to dissociate any negative feelings from being tortured by them. I smile at her and watch carefully as the two 9-year-olds gently and quickly help Cerine to position herself comfortably on the programming table. They then strap her in, and attach the monitoring devices and other devices to her and Fiona.

I feel a slight pang that I quickly suppress as I insert a needle into the womb through one of the semi-permanent tubes left in the birthmother for passing objects in and out of the womb. Fiona has already learned to allow herself to be hurt upon command by the birthmother, and also whenever the birthmother shows distress. Today, we will be introducing her to the next stage of her training: instead of just passively allowing herself to be hurt, she has to learn to actively inflict pain on herself when ordered to. I hit a button on the side of the table that causes the needle to light up inside the womb.

At my cue, Cerine states firmly into the microphone that transmits her voice clearly into her womb, “Go to the needle.”

The fetus, anticipating pain, hesitates. She already knows from much experience that needles, clamps, electric probes and other foreign objects in the womb cause horrible pain.

I give the birthmother the verbal code and hand gesture for ‘bad baby’ i.e., punish the baby. We usually accompany oral cues with hand signals because we believe that even though the fetus cannot see outside the womb, his or her synchronicity with the mother means that he or she will be more responsive to the signals later in life.

“Bad baby!” the birth mother screams without missing a beat. “Bad baby! You didn’t obey instantly! I hate you!” With these words, the birth mother starts pounding on her stomach. Simultaneously, one of my students delivers electric shocks to the womb through another probe that was inserted at the beginning of the programming session. Baby Fiona quivers, almost dancing from the pain within the womb, trying fruitlessly to escape the shock.

I give the birthmother the verbal code and hand gesture for “save me”. Immediately, Cerine screams, “Save me from the pain!” She is in severe distress, since she also feels the shocks that feel like fire running through her abdomen. She continues, “The only way it will stop is if you obey! The only way it will stop is if you obey!”

I hold my hand up in the pause signal. Cerine falls silent at once, and the student stops the electric shocks. For several moments, there is no discernable activity in the programming room, other than Cerine’s gasping pants as she tries to recover her breath. I watch on the monitor to see if Fiona has stopped quivering. It is critical to give a fetus of this age a pause so that it does not just go into sheer panic or overwhelm and be unable to obey the next command. Sheer panic and overwhelm is useful for causing dissociation, but today’s goal was not to teach dissociation, but rather, conditioning the fetus to actively hurt herself. Within four weeks, the fetus will be considered developed enough that the pause will no longer be given. Instead, she will be expected to hear and response to a second command to obey even through the pain and distress of being punished.

Again, on cue, Cerine states firmly, “Go to the needle!”

We all hold our breaths for a moment. Fiona is extraordinarily responsive, but most fetuses do require several rounds of torture before they will capitulate to actively hurt themselves. However, she wiggles her tiny arms and legs, swims hard towards the brightly lit needle, allowing it to pierce her upper arm. She quivers in pain and distress, opening and closing her tiny hands.

I immediately withdraw the needle as the birthmother starts rubbing her belly and cooing,
“Good baby, good baby, you obeyed me, I love you so much. Always obey me instantly and I will always love you.”

Once again, Fiona has started her day with another experience of associating instant obedience, even to a command that brings pain, with maternal love and comfort, and any hesitation to obey with severe pain and rejection. Through many hours of such experiences in the womb, this lesson will be retained at an unconscious level as a foundation to that individual’s lifelong mind control by the cult.

After the programming session is over, I assess both the birth mother and fetus for their physiological and emotional responses; the other members of the programming team are doing the same for the birth mothers and fetuses they are working with. Over the next five minutes, heartrates for both return to normal, and the birth mother is given an excellent meal before she is given permission to spend the rest of the morning in the recreation area of the prenatal section. In the afternoon, this programming session will be repeated to help Fiona deeply absorb this lesson.

"You did well," I tell Cerine. "I will see you both tomorrow."

Prenatal programming reflects the knowledge the Jesuits gained from Mengele that the birthmother herself should be heavily involved in programming the developing child. Because of how deeply connected to and dependent the fetus is on the birthmother for survival, safety and attachment, he discovered that beliefs and emotions instilled and modeled by the birthmother go very deeply into a fetus's psyche. In other words, programming installed by a birthmother is much harder for that person to question and break later in life. Since his discovery, the Jesuits have used the birthmother as a fetus' first and most beloved 'programmer'. As a foundation for a lifetime of mind control, it is the birthmother's voice that gives instructions to the developing fetus. Most importantly, the birthmother conditions the fetus to obey her by cooing in love if the fetus responds as desired, and berates, rejects and punishes the fetus if she or he does not.

These birth mothers are young women around 18 years old. They are obtained from other occult groups, generally the smaller, and less wealthy and powerful ones. The Jesuits pay these groups well for selling them healthy, already dissociative female toddlers. Not all the children are bought, as some are given to us in exchange for favors, services or protection. The Jesuits raise these children in another isolated facility where they are trained and programmed to be able to help program their fetuses, and to believe that becoming a birthmother is the greatest joy and privilege in the world. The programmers do a final careful assessment before selecting women for each batch of babies, looking for mental and physical resilience, how well their programming has taken and the young woman's commitment to the new world order. The mages also assess the women spiritually, seeking guidance from the 'immortals' as to which women should be carrying the next group of children. Those who are rejected are either sent to CERN to carry the genetic experiments there, or reassigned to be used as human subjects in our other labs.

While it is not described in this chapter, the birthmother also trains the fetus to obey the voices of the programmers, Satan and other spiritual beings. They speak into microphones hooked up to tiny speakers placed in the womb. Depending on the program to be installed, the birthmother pleads with, bargains with, orders, or requests that the fetus obeys programmers' voices just as he or she obeys her. She similarly trains him or her to obey "Satan" and other "spiritual beings" (usually the programmers dressed up as these creatures). The birthmother is put through many scenarios to 'prove' to the fetus that she and the fetus are completely dependent on the programmers and Satan for safety, attachment, purpose and wisdom, and that instant obedience and complete trust (believing everything that they say) is essential.

According to my memories, the programming to make the baby obey the programmers and spiritual beings in the same way they obey the birthmother is installed over the second trimester. During this time, the programmers and 'spirits' also spend time loving, comforting and rescuing the fetus and the birthmother in order to create a deep bond. The second trimester bonding between fetus and the programmers is critical because as the pregnancy progresses into the third trimester, the birthmother is put through increasingly, incredibly brutal torture that results in her eventually being unable to speak to or comfort *the fetus. As her mind departs due to the continuous inhumane torture, the fetus experiences complete abandonment by the birthmother. At this stage, the fetus' only attachment figures that remain are thus the programmers and the 'spiritual beings'. The birthmother is killed at birth, which is intended to bring the child's sense of abandonment and grief regarding her to a peak, accompanied by a complete emotional dependence on her remaining attachment figures.*

However, starting on the first day after birth, an adult female programmer acting tender and loving combined with recordings and AI generated 'deepfakes' of the birthmother's voice in the womb is used to deceive the baby into believing that Satan and the programmers have the ability to give him or her time with the birthmother. Naturally, they can only do so if the baby is completely obedient and diligent. This gives the baby very strong motivation to work hard and obey the programmers. Throughout a Jesuit agent's life, core parts that are fetuses and very young infants are called up in programming studios designed to look like the womb or the infant nursery, then are given nurturing time with the 'birthmother' as a way of reinforcing the person's commitment to their programming. In fact, the birthmother's voice speaking particular codes is typically a core system access key for members of the Jesuit Order, and the birthmother's voice, along with Satan's voice, can be 'used' to give system wide instructions. The programmer who plays an individual's 'birthmother' typically is among that individual's primary programmers, since this role gives them access to the person's deepest core system.

In Jesuit programming, the birthmother is also therefore a very important internal controller with the authority to 'punish' or 'reward' the core system and other systems. During a child's first year, the programmers will induce the child's system to 'create' parts who are internal birthmothers that maintain the child's programming through internal punishment and reward. This dynamic between parts replicates the conditional love experienced in the womb, perpetuating the belief that disobedience equates rejection, grief, pain and loss, and obedience equates love and security. This internal birthmother is also taught to report any anomalies or problems in the systems to the external programmers. The system's 'big secret' kept away from the core systems' awareness is that the birthmother has already died, and that the cult is just using her image and voice to manipulate and control them.

Healing my prenatal programming therefore involved grieving some of the most painful losses and betrayals that the youngest parts of me had been through. It felt completely unbearable and overwhelming to face how my birthmother had betrayed me in the womb and taught me to be a slave. She had been wrong. She had lied to me. It felt no less unbearable to face the fact that my birthmother had died, and that all these years, the deepest core reward that my system worked for – to be held and rocked by my 'birthmother' – was a complete farce. It felt at first as if I could not survive the pain of it. I prayed for God to hold me through it, and for His help to hold and comfort these littlest, most profoundly wounded, exploited and confused parts of me – the very foundations of my systems and mind control. As I held the parts who looked like my birthmother, I had to acknowledge just how much, all my life, I had just wanted a mother's love. Not only had it been stolen from me, but they had used my need for my mother's love to manipulate me.

As I grieved how my birthmother had failed to protect me and processed my rage at her betrayal, I realized something that shocked my system: my birthmother was only a frightened, helpless teenager. She was not this powerful being that my entire world had been dependent on, and I had never ever been powerful enough, despite what she told me, to 'rescue' her from her pain by complying with the programming. I, too, was merely a frightened, helpless child. We were both in the hands of foolish perpetrators who hardened their own hearts in their own fear in order to continue obeying Satan. There was nothing different she could have done, just as there was nothing different that I could have done. We were both prisoners. Compassion for myself and her started to come in. This was accompanied by the deepest sorrow and regret for my own role as a prenatal programmer, for all that I myself had done to birthmothers and their fetuses, first when I was a student in training, then when I was a programmer myself. It was an even harder journey to forgive myself and believe *that God would forgive me. I hope that by sharing the information in this chapter, along with my other publications on prenatal programming (see my book It's Not Impossible, and my blog www.svalispeaks.wordpress.com), that it might help others who have been harmed by such wickedness to find some validation and healing.*

Programming my presenter children

I am 27 years old, and I am in the main programming facility in Rome. On the third underground level, the other Jesuit programmers and I have set up a studio that looks just like Jean's (the French presenter's) living room. It is sophisticated enough that the summer 'sunshine' that come in through the wide windows overlooking Jean's 'side garden' seems absolutely real, as does the faint smell of flowers wafting in from the garden. Instead of my white programmer's coat with my hair pulled back in a bun, my hair is loose around my face which is how Jean usually wears her hair at home, and I am wearing her clothes. In the observation room, the programmers on the team will monitor the session in the 'living room' through strategically placed microphones and cameras. They can communicate directly with me through a small speaker placed in my ear.

In another room that leads right into the 'living room', one of the children, Joseph, who is programmed to be Jean Paul, Jean's three-and-a-half-year-old son, is being prepared for the session. Father Francis, one of his other primary programmers, tells Joseph's internal White Rabbit part to fetch Jean Paul from the French section of the internal Wonderland, and bring him up the rabbit hole. After a few seconds, the White Rabbit lets Francis know that Jean Paul is now at the top of the rabbit hole. He thanks the White Rabbit then informs the shell controller, Andromeda, that the French shell is needed. When Andromeda confirms that she has put the French shell in place, Francis tells Athena, another shell controller, to take Jean Paul from the top of the rabbit hole and lock him into the French shell. Then Joseph, who is the Jesuit cult presenter, submerges and Jean Paul, who only knows about an ordinary life in France, is now fronting in the body. Father Francis lets us know that Jean Paul is ready, and we begin the session.

The door into the living room opens. Jean Paul walks in. He squeals with delight to see me already sitting on the floor, with several of his favorite toys scattered around me. He runs over to me, and I greet him using the voice and body language of Jean, his mother. We start an exuberant game with his model motorbikes and trucks, racing them around the rug as I chase them all with a large bright green plastic dinosaur in each hand. However, my mind is not really on the game. Instead, I am closely observing Jean Paul's reactions to three ritual objects on the rug. Two are made of polished ebony set with gemstones, and are about the size of a spatula. The third is smaller but still conspicuous, a bronze bracelet clearly inscribed with occult runes.

To be more precise, I am observing to see if he has a *lack* of reaction to these objects. He has just completed several weeks of intensely traumatic programming to train him be totally 'blind' to any cult-related object in his environment; the goal of today's session is to assess how well Jean Paul is carrying out this program. So far, he is doing well. He acts like the objects are not even there, stepping on the bracelet as he swerves away from me to keep the dinosaurs from capturing the truck, and rushing over both wooden items without any attempts to slow down or avoid them. Three objects of similar size, color and materials, but without any occult significance, have also been placed on the rug. Using the dinosaurs, I deliberately steer the child towards these items. His response to these items is remarkably different: he avoids them, swerving around them or stepping over them, rather than just running into them or stepping on them. Again, he is doing well.

Based on his behavior so far, the programming of this presentation part, Jean Paul, is running correctly to remove his perception of any occult-related item around him. The other programmers are watching closely from the observation room, in case I fail to catch any subtle cues of him having moments of noticing the items, or failing to 'not see' the items quickly enough. After this behavioral assessment, we will also be asking Jean Paul's internal presentation controller parts to report if there were any moments when he had noticed them. We play for another 45 minutes before I move on to a different method of testing.

"Oh, it's so hot, Jean Paul, isn't it?" I say to him, dropping both dinosaurs and flopping down on the rug next to him.

"Yes, mama!" he replies with a huge grin. He loves what comes next.

"Don't we need something cold, Jean Paul?"

"Yes, mama!" he giggles.

"And what would that be?" I ask him earnestly.

"Ice cream!" he yells, smacking two of his trucks together in his enthusiasm.

"Exactly!" I reply, matching his excitement. Then I pull a frown and gesture at the toys scattered on the floor, "But look at this mess. Remember, mama always says that there is no ice cream until the rug is all picked up."

"I can pick it up so quickly!" he assures me, still grinning. He is absolutely right that he can – Jean Paul has been programmed to have an active, confident and cheerful personality.

"That's good – but remember you have to pick *everything* on the rug up, or we can't go for ice cream. That's *everything*, Jean Paul."

He gets to work at once, hauling his toys over to toy basket at the corner of the room. In less than ten minutes, he announces proudly, "All done, mama!" He looks at the rug then at me, beaming.

I see that he has done well: the three ritual items lie untouched on the rug. Indeed, Jean Paul cannot see them. I pick him up and cuddle him close. "Little Rex Two, listen to me," I use Jean's voice to call out the part in Jean Paul's subsystem who is in charge of him 'not seeing' occult objects. I coo as I rock him tenderly, "You did so good. You kept Jean Paul and mama safe today, I love you so much, you did so well today. Nothing bad could ever happen to us when you are here doing your job. I love you so much. Thank you for keeping us safe."

Programming the non-cult presenters to believe their memories of a single, non-cult, ordinary life entails programming them to also deny, fail to notice, and forget any experience and evidence of the cult side of life. This chapter describes one memory of how as a parent and cult handler for Jean Paul, I assessed if his programming to not see occult objects was running correctly, but did not describe how the programming was installed. Most basically, installing his programming to 'not see' had involved these steps: (1) calling out Jean Paul to front in the body; (2) placing interesting looking occult objects in his environment to draw his attention; (3) severely traumatizing him using these objects when he noticed them, and telling him that if he 'didn't see' them, he would not have gotten hurt; (4) continuing the trauma while telling him that the torture would stop only if he never ever saw these objects; (5)

intensifying the trauma to the point that Jean Paul dissociated and created parts who would be able to 'not see' occult objects. After careful checking that these parts indeed reliably prevented Jean Paul from 'seeing' the occult objects that the programmers had originally used to draw his attention, these parts were then taught to generalize to other occult objects and recognize an extensive range of them as things to 'never see'.

"Blindness" to individual occult objects is the first stage of the programming to make the presenters oblivious to any occult activity. Subsequently, these parts will be conditioned to not be able to see even full-blown rituals occurring in front of them, including ones that their own parents and friends are participating in. This program is one of several programs for instant amnesia and denial to all cult activity that the Jesuits use to control the presentations who live 'ordinary, non-cult' lives. All such programs are contingent on putting the presenters through numerous scenarios of the terrible things that happen if they notice or remember any cult-related experience. This is complemented by numerous scenarios of the good things that happen when they do not perceive and/or completely forget any cult-related experience. The terrible scenarios typically involve the family getting hurt, and/or rejecting the child.

In the second paragraph, I describe how the programmers call out the presenter part Jean Paul by giving instructions in conversation style to the White Rabbit and the shell controllers to make the narrative clearer. This is one way of ensuring the required parts are fronting, and it is used so that the programmers can actually talk with the Alice in Wonderland and shell controller parts during the sessions. Programmers can also use a series of codes that function as shorthand for the same instructions, so that they can switch parts more efficiently, especially in an emergency or when time is limited. Other parts, not named in this chapter for brevity, are also involved in the sequence to bring the non-cult presenters to the surface.

This chapter also shows my Jesuit presenter Luce, the programmer, masquerading as Jean to assess Jean Paul's programming through a playful mother-child interaction. I had similarly acted as "Jean" while we were installing Jean Paul's programming to not see. It is a common strategy in occult groups and mind control agencies to have a parent act as the child's presentation programmer, so that the parent's very face and voice themselves become unavoidable triggers for that child to deny or forget the cult in daily life. It serves to remind the presenters at the subconscious level that they risk everyone getting hurt or rejecting them if they do not continue not knowing, forgetting and denying. If the parent is not used as the presentation programmer, then typically, grandparents, aunts or uncles, older cousins, close family friends – anyone that the presenters would have frequent contact with in family settings – are used. Nonetheless, Jean herself, as the presenter mother, had no memories of programming and assessing Jean Paul, as she was not the one who was doing these things to him, but rather, Luce was.

In Jesuit programming, when the presenter parents speak particular phrases to the child, make the child watch tv shows, hear songs, play games or participate in other activities, such as going to church, that are triggers for the children's presentation programming, these parent parts themselves have no idea that they are giving a trigger that is tied to that child's dissociated experiences of trauma, punishment and reward. Instead, the presenter parent parts will be consciously thinking the activity or phrase is harmless, fun, educational, healthy, age-appropriate, discipline-building, etc. For instance, in Jean Paul's specific case, the two plastic toy dinosaurs were one of his reminders and triggers to forget occult objects; during the traumatic installation of the 'don't see' program, he was put through many virtual reality scenarios of his toy dinosaurs turning into huge, bloodthirsty tyrannosaurus rexes that chased and ripped him and his mother apart if he saw occult objects. On the other hand, if he was 'good' and didn't see the objects, the toy dinosaurs would turn into big friendly green cute t-rexes who would give him and his mother wonderful rides and plenty of ice cream. Neither Jean or Jean Paul had any awareness that the toy dinosaurs had any other meaning to either of them, although Little Rex Two, Luce and other parts in both of them understood.

When the child is young, the parents are responsible for making sure that inside their house and yard, there are objects, such as teddy bears, Rubik cubes, daisies, toys from cartoons, anime t-shirts, etc., and even the colors the rooms are painted in and so on, that are reminders or triggers for the scenarios that punish or reward the presenters for disobedience or compliance with their programming. Parents are also responsible for making the child watch tv shows, hear songs, play games or participate in other activities, such as going to church or to a specific preschool, that are triggers as well. Once the child is a tween or teen, they will be programmed to themselves appear to be selecting books, video games, tv shows, hobbies and so on out of their own preference, but in fact will be selecting what they have been programmed to, and these will be triggers in similar ways that the teddy bear and other favorite childhood items they have now outgrown. For instance, as Jean Paul grew older, to continue using dinosaurs as a trigger, the big green plastic dinosaurs were replaced with smaller, less childish, and expensive to-scale model dinosaurs, one of which he kept on his office desk even in his adult years as a memento of childhood.

My memories of being a programmer are among the memories that break my heart the most. It turns my stomach to recall we programmers manipulated "Jean Paul", "Little Rex Two" and other parts in the Order's children to disavow, deny and mistrust their own perceptions, and to instead replace their own instincts and experiences with programmed scripts and lies. When I was still a programmer, I had believed that if I did not program a child, then he or she will be useless to the Order, and so be killed; while I hated what I was doing, I also truly believed that this was the only way to save the children's lives and give them something of a decent future. Nonetheless, as these memories first came forward, the parts in me who were the mothers felt great hostility towards the parts in me who were the programmers. Healing has involved grieving, processing the shame and guilt, self-forgiveness, forgiveness between parts, and facing the fear and the lies that I had internalized in my own programming to become a programmer. I can never, ever take back or undo what I did to children and others in the group when I was a programmer, but I hope that by sharing information on cult culture, programming and healing, the information will be helpful to others on their healing journeys.

Chapter 18: Being a 33

I am 31 years old, and have been hired as a secretary at a large international corporation, to fill in for one who took maternity leave. I am in my UK presentation – Trixie - for this role. In Trixie's mind, she has decided to go back to work for a few months now that her children are in school. The other employees like her, and she enjoys going out together once a week after work for a beer and to socialize, joking and making sharp comments about the people who work there. But after working there for several weeks, one night, Trixie stays late to finish up some work. When the other staff are all gone, I (Luke) switch out and Trixie submerges.

I leave my desk and break into the room that contains the company's mainframe. This company is one of the first to computerize its files, and the fathers want digital copies of all its operations and its computer systems. While this room and the hallway leading to it is protected by surveillance cameras, I do not worry about them as teammates in the 33 have already ensured that my presence would not show up on the recordings. As a caution, however, before entering the hallway, I had changed into a gloved black jumpsuit and covered my head with a black balaclava with googles. As I had made it a habit to carry a large handbag to work every day, I had no problem carrying this gear into the office that morning. I remove a special external drive from a pouch, and plug it into the mainframe. This company is one of the first to computerize its files, and it will provide the fathers with lots of information about the company's finances, operations and staff. The drive has been prepared with a special program that copies everything on the mainframe while erasing any history that copies have been made. I have no concerns about leaving evidence of my presence since my balaclava and gloved suit is made of special material designed to be cool and comfortable, while preventing the wearer from leaving fingerprints, skin cells, hairs, and other DNA material behind.

I return to my room, and put the drive back into its bag, hidden inside a box of Kotex and other feminine items, and leave. Trixie, my UK presenter is totally unaware of what has transpired in the last hour. Because of the Alice in Wonderland programming, from her perspective, she has not left her desk once in the past hour except to very briefly go to the bathroom. On the way home, I stop at a grocery store to pick up a sweet treat for my children as promised for having to work late today and missing our usual cosy after dinner reading time together. At the restroom in the grocery store, I pass the drive over to Mary Margaret, one of my closest friends and a top member of the 33. Again, Trixie will have no memory of this brief interchange with Mary Margaret who will have delivered the external drive in person to the fathers by the following day.

My temp job ends two weeks later, and no one ever suspects I have done this. I am well-liked, and there are many expressions of sorrow that I will be leaving, but I explain that I have another temp job lined up. I do, but it is not the job that they think.

While it is not possible for me to vouch for the accuracy of this recovered memory, I know that it occurred while I was mind-controlled and believed that I had no option but to obey the orders I received if I did not want the Order to destroy the people I loved the most. The years of trauma-based programming also made it difficult for me to even imagine that there was any other option. But knowing how controlled and terrified I was did not relieve any of the anguish, guilt and self-hatred that erupted when I started to remember these and worse memories of missions. I did not want to be the person in these *memories, but the reality is, I was. To get in touch with my parts meant hearing their histories, which included events such as that described in this chapter. These parts had never known any other life. Since infancy, they had been tortured, abused and carefully taught how to carry out assassinations, industrial espionage, and other criminal activities.*

I have asked God's forgiveness for the things I did in my past. I deeply regret that I can never ask those who I acted against for their forgiveness. One reason among many that I chose to leave the Order was that I could no longer stand being this type of person, someone capable of acting in these ways. Deep inside, something in me rebelled against this lifestyle, in spite of the years of programming and conditioning. It was bittersweet to gain knowledge of my past – the relief of parts finally being able to share what they had done, and to process their own deeply submerged guilt and sadness – while realizing that these parts were "me", that I did these things. I remembered being officially classified as a "government weapon" at the age of 12, due to my training. Now, I was remembering how those skills were used, and the grievous effect it had on others and myself. Only running to the mercy of God, asking His forgiveness, and receiving it, helped me through the oppressive guilt and shame that came, and helped me to then turn and embrace the parts of me that held these memories, and to help them heal.

Chapter 19: Adulthood in the Presentations

Growing up: Getting Married and Having Children

I am now an adult in my various presentations or cover identities. In all of them, I am married or have a partner, and children. Each presenter continues to be unaware of any other life besides the ones they have in their respective countries. Four of my presentations are supposedly Illuminati: Jean in France, Gertrude (Trudi) in Germany, Beatrice (Trixie) in the UK and Elsa in the USA.

Jean (France) is married to Yannick. I (Jean) met Yannick on the way to classes at the university when I was 19, and we both love cycling and hiking outdoors. We have three children: Tammi, Jean Paul, and Alyssa.

Gertrude-"Trudie" (Germany) is married to Alan, an Irish man with red hair, grey eyes, and a droll sense of humor. We (Trudi and Alan) now have two daughters and a son: Althea, Bel and Timothy. We fight a lot, but also make up quickly. We also raise miniature Doberman pinschers, and I work as an administrative assistant for a large corporation.

Beatrice –"Trixie" (UK) is very happily married to Phillip, a childhood friend. Here we (Trixie and Phillip) have two boys and a girl: Phillip, Jr., Jan, and Leon. I am a stay at home mother, after having worked as an executive secretary for years, much to my mother's chagrin and my great delight at her discomfiture. Phillip works in finance and makes enough money to allay my mother's fears that I will end up homeless. Phillip's high salary is the only thing about our marriage that I actually dislike, since I can no longer upset my mother, who spends her spare time planning my children's schooling and careers. I avoid seeing her and never let her spend time alone with my children, remembering how she sexually and physically abused me.

In the USA, **I (Elsa)** marry Chuck, a Navy man. It is a loveless but respectable marriage. We have three children, Sandra (*note: pseudonym*), Mary and Sammy (*note: pseudonym*). Mary was adopted when she was two months old and is the same age as my biological daughter, Sandra. As my mother and stepfather had been abusive, I am determined to give my own children a far happier childhood than I had. My joy in being a mother makes up for the perfunctory relationship between my husband and I.

All my husbands and partners are Jesuit infiltrators like me, with the exception of Chuck, who is actually Illuminati. Yannick, for instance is played by Simon and his lookalike brothers, and Alan is played by Conner and his lookalike brothers. Similarly, all my children are Jesuit. They are our next generation of infiltrating the Illuminati. As mentioned in the earlier chapters, each 'person' in the family, including the children, is actually played by several genetic siblings who have presenter parts programmed with the same cover identity. Four presentations might seem a lot to manage. However, the Illuminati assume there is only one set of twins, and that those twins cannot be in a European presentation while in the U.S., or in Germany while in France, and so on. The need to be in only one Illuminati presentation at any one time, combined with there being several identical-looking people capable of playing each role perfectly, means that it is remarkably simple to schedule Illuminati presentation time for each agent without adversely affecting the time we need to carry out other jobs.

It is part of human nature to not see what we do not suspect, so the Illuminati and other organizations never noticed that the children who are Jean or Trudi were actually more than two genetically identical individuals taking on the cover identity in regular rotations, allowing these individuals to also do other missions and tasks elsewhere as needed. Further simplifying scheduling, by the late 70s, the Jesuits had infiltrated the Illuminati in positions that enabled them to falsify the location of Jesuit agents when necessary. For instance, if we needed all the children playing Jean to be elsewhere for a week in April, we were able to make the Illuminati in Germany believe that she was in America, and have the Illuminati in America believe that she was in France, or with a powerful sex trafficking client who wanted complete privacy. This technique was only used when absolutely necessary, however, as it carried a higher risk of the Illuminati noticing that something odd was going on.

My non-Illuminati presentations are Katrina (Trina) in Amsterdam, Miriam (Misha) in Israel, and Gina in Italy. As **Katrina-"Trina"** (Amsterdam), I am bisexual and my partner is a woman, Barbara. We adopt three street children. The two of us pour out the love we ourselves never experienced in our childhoods on these children, and try to keep them out of trouble – a time consuming task – while maintaining our own careers. I follow in my Uncle Lou's footsteps as a lawyer whose business is deeply entrenched in the criminal underworld. Barbara runs two very successful pubs and a hotel in the nicer parts of Amsterdam – and a host of smaller establishments in the seedier side of the city. Both jobs are embarrassingly lucrative, and we easily make enough to contemplate sending our children to elite Swiss boarding schools when they are old enough.

As Mariah –"**Misha"** (Israel) I found love very young, but was met with sorrow early as my husband Beni died three years after a wedding by the sea. We have two sons, Benjamin and Daniel. In another three years, I was incredibly blessed to find love again, with a civil engineer, Barak, and have a daughter, Abigail.

As **Regina–"Gina"** (Italy), my very wealthy parents had been affectionate and kind but unavailable emotionally. My mother was a talented cellist who did not get adequate care for depression and bipolar disorder, and committed suicide when I was 12. My father was often gone on business, and had multiple affairs while I was growing up. My greatest support came from my oldest brother, Antonio, who helped me through my stormy teen years. In fact, I credited to Antonio my good fortune in finding a husband, Francesco, a loving man who put family first. He had introduced us just as he was finishing his undergraduate studies at the Sapienza University of Rome. Antonio told me that he had been watching Francesco for the past three years and that I couldn't do better than him. Francesco completely adored me and our three children, Bella, Antonio, Jr.(Toni), and Mattheo. I feel like the happiest years of my life had begun. The wealth from both sides of the family makes vacations easy. Each year, we do ski vacations in winter at the best Swiss resorts, and summer vacations at the beach in luxurious resorts, picking a new warm location each year such as the Bahamas, Mexico, Spain, Greece, South Africa, and so on.

All spouses or partners, and children, in these three presentations, even the three 'street children' that Katrina and Barbara adopted, are Jesuit. As Katrina, Misha and Gina are not Illuminati presentations, all three cover identities need to be maintained simultaneously. Time in each country for each person playing these identities is carefully scheduled to prevent gaps or absences that could be noted by others, and to prevent conflicts between the multiple duties that each Jesuit agent, child or adult, has. Scheduling Gina and Francesco, however, is really not quite as complicated as many of the wealthy Italian families themselves are part of the occult world. They have varying degrees of mind control themselves and occasional oddities in their own comings and goings. Friends, business partners and acquaintances thus generally pay little attention to unusual absences, as long as their own interests are not affected, and as long as they do not feel that their relationships are being slighted or neglected in some way.

Similarly, we have a degree of wriggle room for scheduling Katrina and Barbara, since being involved in illegal businesses easily involves unexpected absences that people are naturally discreet about. We take care, however, to ensure that the correct gossip is circulating among the brokers and other criminals in Amsterdam about either person's whereabouts and activities whenever it becomes necessary for us to leave their cover identities unfilled for a period. Scheduling Misha, however, was indeed extremely complex. The highly sensitive and volatile nature of the intelligence situation in Israel, and the criticality of ensuring that this cover was perfect so that "Benjamin" and "Daniel" could be recruited by the Mossad when they grew up, meant that there had to be absolutely nothing that could raise suspicion. Any gap or issue would potentially not only hinder our infiltration of the intelligence community in Israel for Benjamin, Daniel, Abigail and Misha, but would also affect any Jesuit agent that they were associated with.

This overview of my 'ordinary', 'non-cult' presentations shows how even as I grew up, my life experience continued to be fragmented and divided between different 'identities', with each identity only having a small part of the picture. My presenters experienced varying degrees of happiness and contentment in their careers and domestic lives. This is similar to how, when I was a child, the cult ensured that there was a spread or variation in degree of happiness and love or abuse across the different presentations. None of my presenters, however, were programmed to be emotionally or physically abusive, or negligent, to their children, a small mercy for which I am glad; all of them were programmed to be loving mothers. However, while the children who played the roles of being my presenters' children did not experience maternal abuse or neglect when fronting in these presentations with me, the requirement that there be a diversity of family experience across presentations means that they did experience abuse and/or neglect in some of their other presentations. It has been extremely painful for my presenter parts to realize that while their children had been happy with them, this happiness was only a very small part of their lives, and their precious children had experienced abuse in cult settings and while in their other families. Being a good mother was a deeply cherished value and purpose for my presentations as adults; realizing that they had not been able to protect their children, and had fostered their false beliefs about their lives, has been very difficult.

Maintaining presentations or cover identities involves not only presenting a seamless, unquestionable narrative to members of other groups or non-cult people, but also involves ensuring that the presenter parts themselves completely believe their own memories of a single life. As the person grows up, to keep presenter parts under such persistent mind control, the programmers continue to use the amnesia and denial programming, Alice in Wonderland, shell programming and other relevant presenter programs done in early infancy and childhood (see book one, Never Give Up and my book It's Not Impossible for brief descriptions of parts of the early childhood programming). All these programs continue to run over the person's life time, and hidden child parts within the presenters will typically respond to the same triggers as when the person was biologically a child. However, in adults, presenter programming is extended and strengthened by tying it to beliefs, desires, and scenarios that reflect key adult milestones and responsibilities. The terror of the overwhelming pain of realizing that one has not been a good mother and failed to protect her children from a terribly abusive cult is usually a very significant way that adult desires and responsibilities are used to enforce presenter amnesia programming.

For the presentations who had been given loving relationships with their spouses or partners, it was just as devastating to realize that their marriage was a sham, a programmed script, and that they and their spouses all had 'marriages' in other countries. I (the various presentations) felt heartbroken and betrayed no less than an 'ordinary' person would if she discovered that her husband or partner had been cheating on her. It was equally horrifying to realize that I myself had marriages in other countries with other spouses or partners. Both realizations made me feel like my whole world had been upended, and that I no longer knew anything about myself.

It has taken tremendous persistence and a desire to know the truth to question or give up the palliating scripts that I (any of my presenters) had been a good mother who had given my children warm and safe childhoods or had been the cherished wife of a faithful man, and to face the truth that we were all part of a brutal and exploitative cult that worshipped Satan. As part of healing and dismantling my presenter programming, I (all the respective presenters) have had to face my terror of knowing the truth, and grieve my failure to protect, my compliance with the programming for so many years, and the loss of what I had believed I had – a happy, normal family. What has helped on this very difficult journey of rejecting the lies and integrating the truth back into my histories is knowing that in the end, following the truth and getting free will benefit my children and loved ones far more than continuing to deny reality or letting the programmers continue to tell me what to believe.

Monitoring my children's presenter programming

I am 31 years old. Gertrude, or Trudi, my German presentation is fronting. I (Trudi) am driving my son, Timothy, home from his soccer class for three-to-five-year old boys run by the local soccer club. He loves soccer, even insisting that I tuck his soccer ball into bed with him every night. Naturally, he dreams of becoming a professional soccer player. The easiest way for me to persuade him to eat vegetables he dislikes is to remind him that soccer players needed to be strong and healthy.

When we get home, he pops out of the car cheerfully, grabs his bag and runs towards my husband who is tidying the edges of the flowerbeds. Alan gives his son a big smile, and tosses a mini soccer ball at him, one of the balls that is always lying around the lawn instead of being put away in the basket in the front entrance hallway, no matter how often I remind Timothy that balls belong in the basket when they are not played with.

Without missing a beat, Timothy throws himself into the air in a front flip, timing it perfectly so that as he comes back down, his right foot meets the soccer ball and propels it right back at Alan. Timothy is *not* supposed to be able to do a front flip, let alone be able to combine a front flip with being able to kick a soccer ball accurately back to someone else. While this child's Jesuit cult presenter and Illuminati cult presenter have been taught and required to practice such athletic skills, the ordinary, non-cult day presenter, "Timothy", has been programmed to *never* display these skills. In other words, Timothy was disobeying his presenter programming, breaking with the profile he had been assigned to only be able to run and jump as would a 5-year-old who has never had any gymnastics or martial arts lessons. Timothy's confident grin falters when he is met with a stern look on Alan's face. He looks back at me, and fear crosses his face as he is met with an equally stern look.

At the moment we observed Timothy performing the front flip, we had switched from our presenters Alan and Trudi into our cult parts, Luce and Conner, who are Timothy's programmers and handlers. Both of us give him the hand signal that means "bad!" I go over to him, take him by the hand, and lead him silently into the house. When we are in the master bedroom, I shut the door and put Timothy on the chair that Alan uses at the desk in the corner of the bedroom. It looks like an ordinary chair, but it is actually much heavier than other chairs of similar appearance. The heaviness makes it more stable when it needs to be used for restraining the children. I take straps from a hidden shelf at the back of the closet and strap Timothy firmly to the chair with the Velcro ends of the straps. They are wide and made of a very soft and slightly elastic fabric so they will not leave any marks on his skin.

Instantly, I begin screaming in pain, and fall down onto the floor, moaning between the screams, “You’ve hurt me so badly, Timothy, by breaking your profile! The pain is killing me! I feel like I’m dying! Don’t you love me anymore? Don’t you want me to stay alive? You know that breaking your profile will cause me, and your father and sisters to die!” Conner comes in and enacts a similar drama, rolling on the floor pretending to be unbearable pain.

Horrified, Timothy screams, “Mama! Papa! I love you, I don’t want you to die! It was an accident, I forgot! Please don’t die!” Tears are streaming down his face as he sobs hysterically.

“Then why did you break profile?” Alan and I ask him in tandem. “You know that doing so will kill us. We are dying from just the emotional pain you caused us.” I have taken a vial of fake blood from a secret spot in the room, and break it in my mouth, so that blood is streaming out of my mouth.

“I didn’t mean to! I swear! I’m sorry! I’m sorry!” Timothy is hysterical.

“Who is sorry?” I ask him quietly while giving the hand signal for ‘truth’ which in this context is a command for the presentation controllers to confess or report which parts in the presentation had made the mistake of allowing Timothy to do the front flip. “Who was responsible for this sin?”

Timothy’s hysteria stops abruptly as Andromeda, one of his presentation controller parts comes to the front to answer the question in a monotone: “It was Shell F3.4.27 Franco.”

I nod and thank Andromeda, then say, “Franco may have failed, but all of you are responsible for Timothy and the safety of the entire family. When one of you fails, all of you fail.”

Alan hands me a small helmet that had been sitting on the hidden shelf at the back of the closet. The visor comes down over the eyes. This visor is actually a screen that can play videos and is molded to fit closely over both eyeballs so the person feels like they are immersed in the videos. Alan has already selected the right videos for punishing the presentation for breaking with their profile. I give Timothy the codes for cuing his entire presentation system out to pay attention to the videos, including the shells, the Alice in Wonderland parts, the parts that represent Timothy’s family internally, etc., then place the helmet on his head. They all view a video of Timothy and his family dying in extreme pain due to his presenter programming failing, and his shell shattering because he did not stop the action that was not part of his German profile. Alan and I attach electrodes to various parts of Timothy’s body. These electrodes deliver extremely painful but non-lethal shocks to his body, synchronized to the videos. When the videos of the shell shattering are played, the shocks are delivered to his whole body. When the videos of his arms and legs being chopped off are played because he displayed a physical skill that he shouldn’t have, the shocks are delivered to his arms and legs. Timothy screams and screams, but we have no concern about being heard by the neighbors because the room itself has been designed to be almost soundproof, and the nearest neighbor's house is many yards away.

The punishing video and shock sequences last about ten minutes, which the programmers consider well within the safety margin for a child of Timothy's size and health. I click a button on the helmet's remote which switches the video to one showing the spiritual being over the presentation controllers chiding them for failure but promising them that if Timothy promised to not fail again, then he would be given a second chance, and that he and his family would not die. Timothy cries out several times, "I won't fail again! I promise, I promise!" His voice changes slightly several times as he repeats this cry; as his programmer who is familiar with the voices of his different parts, I can hear that the shell parts, and several other presentation controllers are making the same promise.

I remove the helmet; Timothy is shaky and looks at us in trepidation.

"Do you all really promise?" I ask.

"Yes! Yes!"

"Then you have saved us." I lean over, gathering him in my arms as Conner quickly and quietly releases the straps. "I know you love us and you won't fail again." I rock him, wiping his tears away, Conner hands me a replenishing drink that I gently make Timothy finish. It looks like an ordinary juice box from a supermarket brand, but has electrolytes and other nutrients in it, and was specially formulated for use after a stressful event like this one that involves electroshocks. We all sit quietly together for another few minutes, reassuring him of our love and faith in him. When he seems to have completely calmed down, Conner and I then put all of the equipment away. We give him the codes for the presentation controllers to go back inside, and for Timothy to completely forget what just happened.

Our job being done, Conner and I switch back inside, and Alan and Trudi emerge with no memory of the previous twenty minutes. Alan's and Trudi's Alice in Wonderland programming ensures that instead, they completely believe that they spent the last twenty minutes chatting with Timothy about soccer practice that day, and plans to go play soccer tomorrow with his cousins. Once again, we are just a normal, happy family. "That's enough talking - let's get ready for dinner," I tell Timothy, giving him a hug. "You've had a busy day today, with soccer practice. I'll bet you're hungry now."

"I'm starving," Timothy grins. "Can I have extra noodles tonight with the meat?"

I smile and tousle his hair. "I don't see why not. Now go wash up, and we'll eat in five minutes." Timothy is acting completely within his presentation profile and we all go to get ready to enjoy one of our favorite dinners. As Trudi, watching Timothy scampering out the bedroom to go wash his hands, I am hit with a sudden wave of unspeakable, overwhelming guilt and shame. Tears flood my eyes – then I blink. The guilt disappears. I shake my head, confused, then the confusion disappears. I go to the kitchen to prepare the noodles. Many years will pass before I remember the guilt and shame again, or understand it.

It is a few months later, and I am in the UK, fronting as Trixie, my UK presenter. I have a four-year-old daughter, Jan, who has long brown hair and big hazel eyes. She is a happy child, who enjoys making jokes and getting into mischief from time to time. Her two brothers, Tom and Phillip

Jr., dote on her despite the small age gap between them; she loves being the little princess of the whole family. Jan watches the Disney movie, The Little Mermaid, three times a week. Ostensibly, she does so because Ariel is her favorite princess and she loves singing along with all the songs in the movie. However, the real reason is that The Little Mermaid is a trigger for Jan's presenter programming to never be able to talk about the cult (represented by the merkingdom under the sea in the movie) when she is in the non-cult world (represented by the prince's castle and town in the movie), just as how in the movie Ariel had to give her voice up to Ursula in order to leave the ocean and come to land where she could not talk at all.

Usually, at 2pm on the designated days, she comes to me and asks me to put on her Little Mermaid video. Today, however, she is engrossed in coloring a picture. I am surprised and ask her, "Jan, don't you want to watch your favorite movie?"

To my surprise, she replies, "I don't want to. I want to finish doing this."

Upon Jan's refusal to watch the movie, Luce, my programmer, takes over and Trixie goes inside. Still using Trixie's voice because it is important for the parents to be the child's handler, I tell Jan, "Sit down and watch Little Mermaid; I'm putting the video on now," and accompany the calmly-spoken command with the hand gesture to obey.

Jan shakes her head and says with a touch of impatience, "I want to finish this first, mummy." This is a serious breach of her presenter programming, both in terms of ignoring the 'obey' hand gesture and her making something other than watching the movie a priority.

I go into the next room to inform her father, Phillip, of the situation. I address him as Matthew, his Jesuit presenter who is the programmer; immediately his presenter part Phillip submerges and Matthew emerges. I also call her brothers in from the garden. The three of us enter the living room where Jan is still coloring her picture. Matthew and I give a sequence of hand signals to Jan's brothers, pulling up their presentation controller parts, and casting them into a state of distress.

Simultaneously, we begin screaming and acting as if we are in terrible pain. Jan has been especially programmed to be Daddy's girl, so Matthew takes the lead in this reinforcement session for her. "I'm…dying…" he croaks, "Jan, you're killing me. You didn't obey your mother…and I can't live with disobedience like this." He looks pale, falls to the floor, and his eyes are closing.

"Daddy, Daddy, don't die!" screams Jan in terror.

On another hand signal from me, her brothers take electric wands I have given them, and they begin shocking their sister over and over. It is set to be painful but non-lethal. "Bad Jan! Bad Jan!" they tell her, over and over, just as they have been programmed to do. "You killed Daddy because you were bad, bad, bad!" While Jan is not physically restrained, deeper internal controllers in her system, who have been programmed to believe that Jan must endure the punishment in order to eventually save her family, keep her from even thinking of trying to escape the room or her punishers.

I have crushed some ampules of fake blood, and hold out arms that are dripping blood. "Your…disobedience…is killing me," I say faintly. "All the life is draining out of me." I slowly begin to collapse towards the floor.

"No, no, noo-oo-o-o!!!" Jan is completely hysterical now, screaming and crying. "Don't die! Don't die, Mommy!"

Matthew gets up, takes the video-playing helmet and places it and the accompanying electrodes on Jan; he has set it to run the videos and shock sequences designed to punish the presentation system for direct disobedience to a handler's command. The video emphasizes to Jan, the Alice in Wonderland parts, Andromeda and others, the terrible things that happen when someone disobeys their presenter programming and a command to obey from a handler. The four of us watch as Jan shakes and screams, until, finally, a long eight minutes later, we hear the various parts in her presenter system promising the spiritual being that they would always obey, and never disobey.

Matthew removes the helmet and looks into her eyes. He lets her catch her breath before asking, “Do you all really promise?” She assents, and we all give her big hugs and tell her how much we love her and believe in her. Matthew puts her on his lap, holding her close as he gives her the restorative drink.

I look around at all three of my children and say, “Remember to always obey. We can only be safe if you obey. Your daddy and I can only love you if you obey. We can only love each other if we obey.”

After Jan has calmed down, we put the programming equipment back into the hiding place in a locked box under our bed. Matthew and I cue the presenter controller parts in all three children to go deeper in, and for their presenter parts to completely forget the last fifteen minutes. Matthew remains with the children, but I go to the bedroom and record an oral summary of the event into our special secure communication device, then transmit it to the programming team at the main facility, with a note that I will be bringing Jan in tonight to the regional facility. For any part to defy an obey command is very concerning, and I believe that Jan needs a full assessment and retuning of her presenter system; the afternoon’s punishment was only a stopgap measure.

I go back out to the room where the rest of the family is, and smile at everyone. Job done, Matthew and I, Luce, switch back inside and the presenters, Phillip and Trixie emerge. Jan gets up off the floor, pushes her crayons and coloring book aside and says firmly to me, “Mummy, I want to watch my movie!”

“You really love the Little Mermaid, don’t you?” I laugh.

None of us remember what really happened in the last twenty minutes; none of us even notice that the clock has skipped twenty minutes.

The two memories in this chapter depict how the adult programmer parts in the parents monitor the children’s presentation programming, and immediately punish any deviation from their presentation programming in dramatic and painful ways. The deviations are detectable in three main ways. First, the presentation part uses physical, intellectual, social or spiritual skills that he or she is not supposed to have, or shows preferences or a temperament/personality type that is different from the one he or she programmed to have. The cult programs each presenter with a specific profile, i.e., a designated set of skills, and a particular temperament and set of preferences. For instance, my American presentation, Elsa, was programmed to be unathletic and clumsy, and poor at math; but my French presentation was programmed to be athletic though much more interested in arts than sports. Trixie’s daughter, Jan, was programmed to be very friendly as “Jan” in the UK, but was programmed to be extremely shy when she presented in France as “Louisa”. “Breaking profile’ thus easily shows the parents that the child is not complying with their presentation programming.

Second, the non-cult presenters are programmed to obey hand signals and specific commands by the handlers, as all parts are. Any refusal to immediately obey commands, triggers or hand signals is a clear flag to the parents and siblings that the child is not following their presentation programing. All disobedience to direct commands by handlers is taken extremely seriously, and will result in remediation at a proper programming facility, as soon as possible. While the non-cult day presenters are expected to obey triggers, cues, hand signals and cult commands given by the parents or handlers, the degree *of instant obedience expected to ordinary parental requests will differ according to the family's overall profile. That is, to mimic normal family life, the presenters are often not programmed to obey their parents perfectly when they are doing non-cult things. For example, as Elsa, if I gave my three presenter children a command in German to get ready to go to an Illuminati training activity, they would immediately stop their play with no complaint and go wait in the car. They would not even pause to go to the bathroom on the way to the car without seeking explicit permission from my husband or I. If they did not, they would be severely punished by my husband's or my cult parts. However, if I told them in English to pick up their toys earlier than usual because a guest from church was coming for dinner tonight, they would complain and argue for a while before reluctantly obeying, then doing a poor job at picking up. Elsa would then just be exasperated and pick the toys up herself.*

How much normal childish disobedience is allowed a child in a non-cult presenter family setting depends on the cult's designated profile for each family; in the families programmed to be abusive, the presenter children may be expected to obey instantly or be punished. These punishments, however, unlike the programmers' punishments described in this chapter, will not involve programming tools, or be dissociated and forgotten, since they are an actual part of the family's conscious narrative. It may also depend on the child's designated role in the family. The 'golden child' or favorite child may not be punished for disobedience, but the 'scapegoat' child might be expected to obey or face instant punishment from the parents. Again, this disparate treatment would be within the conscious narrative of the family, and differs from the programmers' punishment which the family will dissociate and forget. In such a setting, if the 'favorite child' tries to intervene in the 'scapegoat' child's punishment or share in her chores, then the favorite child may be punished by the programmers for deviating from her programming to be a spoiled brat callous towards her siblings.

The third way that deviation from presenter programming is evident is when the child has memories of the cult, or of other lives in other countries, that he or she is not supposed to have. Neither memory described in this chapter reflects memory bleedthrough, but it is also taken very seriously when it happens.

While the memories illustrate the parents as being the ones who responded to Timothy's and Jan's disobedience, all members of a family are usually cross-programmed to monitor each other's presenters, and to punish and report any failure to obey the programming. Even children as young as four or five years old can be trained to detect any anomalies in their parents' or older siblings' presentations and to report them to the cult, whether by a phone call or in-person conversation at a cult event or back at the cult facility. Older children – tweens, teens and adults – can take an active role in punishing other family members' failure to fully comply with their presentation programming, behaving exactly as the parents did in this chapter. In other words, in a mind controlled, programmed family, everyone is each other's 'handler' or 'controller'. I am aware that the familial cross-handling applies to the Jesuits and the Illuminati and several other more organized occult societies; this may not be the case for all cults that use mind control.

Additionally, by the time a Jesuit child is five years old, his or her system is fully trained to self-perpetuate the presenter programming, and to monitor the presentations and report any anomalies (departure from programming directives) back to their programmers, and their presentation parents. If one parent is not Jesuit, the child is programmed to not report to him or her, but only to their Jesuit parent. In general, the shells are tasked with telling on the child if they use social or physical skills that the presentation is not supposed to have. For instance, if a presentation is programmed to be clumsy and unathletic but wins a footrace while playing with a neighbors' kids after school, the shell will report this. In Wonderland, Mnemosyne (Alice's "mother" in the program who controls what she believes) internally will question presentation parts to see if they are getting any bleedthrough memories – including dreams - of other *presentations or the cult, and will report accordingly. This continues throughout adulthood, and each act of self-reporting to the programmers is heavily reinforced by punishment and reward. The shells and presenters are programmed to believe deeply that the only way they can be loved and show love, is to obey their programming. They also believe that any failure of their programming is the result of a 'lack of love' for family members, and will result in the death of these family members if it continues unchecked. This is why when the parents or siblings are punishing a presentation for disobeying their programming, they will usually pretend that they are dying or in horrible pain.*

This chapter also illustrates how non-cult ordinary day presenters, at least in the Jesuits and the Illuminati, the parents themselves, are completely amnesic to their acts of enforcing their children's programming. Even so, all through the years of presenting in my non-cult cover identities in various countries, I experienced moments of guilt, shame, fear and depression regarding my children's lives, and the occasional niggling sense that they were not safe. But if I tried to grasp these feelings or understand them, they would disappear (amnesia), or the thoughts would come that I was feeling this way simply because of my own childhood insecurities (denial), or I would feel a sudden assurance that everything was ok (delusion). That is, my own extensive Alice in Wonderland programming kept up my own ignorance of what was really going on, though I could never fully consistently dissociate the heartbreak and shame of hurting my children. My refusal to remember or understand was based on programming to believe that if I did remember, the cult would torture and kill my children. This threat was strongly installed in my presenter mother parts through many extremely realistic set-ups and virtual reality sessions when each child was an infant that if I remembered, that infant was tortured and killed. As a mother, I was then offered a "second chance", the infant was "resurrected", and I made vows to never remember in order to save my child's life.

The Alice in Wonderland programming ensures that no presenter lost time or gaps in memories in the weeks or months between presenting in different countries, because they were in Wonderland watching videos of the life they believed they were living in real time. Similarly, staged events in studios set up to look like a room in the presenters' house, virtual reality and even simple videos are used to give parts the 'memories' of significant life events (e.g., high school graduation, first puppy, first communion, etc.) and more mundane or regular events (e.g., going to school, helping children with their homework, attending weekly worship team practice at church, going to work each day). Four hours of videos or staged events can fill gaps of months or years if necessary, since each presentation is programmed to believe that the videos, virtual reality or staged events are their actual memories. This chapter shows that the Alice in Wonderland programming also covers smaller gaps in memories for the presentations. When the parent goes back inside Wonderland, at the behest of an internal programmer and Mnemosyne, they will either be put in a 'time pause', or told what to believe to cover the brief time lost. Their programming to completely believe everything that Mnemosyne or other designated internal parts tell them has the same effect as experiencing a staged memory or watching a video.

Chapter 20: Chi (Dark) Council and the Destruction of the World

I am 32 years old. It is 2 am, and Chi Council is meeting in an opulent room in the Vatican. This council is composed of adult members in leadership in numerous areas within the Jesuit Order. None of the lights have been turned on, and there are not even candles, because the dark, destructive Chi system parts can only bear the very lowest levels of light. The council members greet each other with a nod, and our meeting begins with numerous rituals that lavishly demonstrate our worship and loyalty to Satan. After a sufficient number of sacrifices, bowing and hailing are done, Satan enters the room in his hideous, black form. We go flat on our faces to honor this being to whom we give our complete obedience.

With a growl, Satan indicates that the council members are to get up and take their seats at the large, round black table. He stands at the head. Over the course of the next three hours, we discuss numerous detailed plans and strategies for the destruction of the world. From a group of nuclear explosions that occur in a chain reaction, to seeding the atmosphere and clouds to create worldwide storms and droughts that would cause worldwide famine, to the use of chemicals and bioweapons that would destroy entire cities and even nations, plans that have been developed over years are discussed, and the merits and disadvantages of each are considered.

But there is one large elephant in the room that no one, including the malevolent being at the head of the room, is willing to discuss: the fact that plans like these have been in place for centuries but we have not been able to implement them. The reason is simple: there is another being, whose name is not mentioned in this room, who has stopped the acts of destruction that would kill all mankind, time and time again over the years. Weapons capable of creating global devastation have been available for over 200 years, but our plans have been foiled time and time again. The work of this being is categorized as “interruptions” and “anomalies”, for Satan and the members of Chi council would never acknowledge that the source of the “interruptions” and “anomalies” is actually God, or that He has the power to block even the deepest, darkest plans of this secret council.

So, while plans are made, and implemented to the degree possible, the council knows that this destruction is a matter of patience, and long-term planning. The oracles have prophesied that when the coming world leader is in power, then great destructive forces and suffering will be unleashed upon mankind, to a degree never seen before. So they plan, and wait, and hope that he will come in their lifetime. For they know that this coming leader will be completely in agreement with their plans, and will help them to unleash them to a greater degree than before.

There is a dark, destructive secret held deep in the systems of the mind-controlled, programmed members of the Jesuit Order. In daily life, the Jesuit cult presenters are committed to bringing in a new world order of global peace and prosperity. They are indoctrinated to believe that the Antichrist, whom they call the “Light of the World” or “He Who Is To Come” will accomplish good things for mankind. My cult presenter Luce, or Father Luke, has, as everyone in the Order has been, heavily conditioned to believe that the pain, destruction, torture and illegal activities engaged in are a “necessary” and temporary evil, which is the price of gaining this great goal. However, the Jesuit cult presenter has no idea that another system with different goals exists deeper within – the Chi presenters or ‘dark host’ who is dedicated to the destruction of mankind. Luce is as completely unaware of and amnesic to the Chi system as the ‘normal, non-cult’ parts are to life in the Illuminati or in Rome.

The Chi system represents the individual's commitment to Satan's real agenda for mankind and the world: its complete destruction. Within the Order, the highest level of occultism is not Luciferianism that seeks the ascension of mankind, or Satanism which elevates the worship of evil and the enslavement of mankind, but rather, Destruction, i.e., Satan's followers are to destroy all of mankind. Not just the 'sheep', or the 'non-elite', or the 'common people', or the 'useless eaters', but ALL of mankind in an act of final rage and destruction. This core level system is convinced through years of intense conditioning to hate every human being that walks on the earth, including their own self. To prevent self-harm, they are taught that they must not destroy their "mortal shell" (human body) that they are encased in, because it, too, is a temporary "necessary evil" for accomplishing Satan's plan. To create the amnesia between Chi and the rest of the system, these parts are taught that they must hide from other parts because the other parts are 'mortal' and so will fight them to preserve the human race. Similarly, the Jesuit cult presenters are taught early that that Chi system parts are an 'evil within' that must be walled away and 'forgotten', lest they ever escape to destroy the world.

The programming of Chi system parts begins in the womb when the fetus is taught to blame all mankind and 'mortality' for its pain and abuse, and so the only way for its pain and abuse to stop is that all mankind be destroyed. This system of fetal parts never knows anything but pain at the hands of human beings, including the birth mother, and is constantly rescued from pain by Satan or the 'immortals' (programmers in costumes). The birthmother herself drives this lesson deeply into the fetus' psyche by telling the programmers to electrocute the fetus while explaining ragefully that this is because she is 'fallen' and a 'mortal' who has 'forgotten to ascend' and that she 'just can't help herself but cause pain'. Thus, primary fetal rage at the abuse is harnessed and manipulated and directed away from the real abuser (Satan, the programmers and the birth mother) and towards all mankind. This system not only performs the spiritual function of enslaving the person to Satan's true desire, but also provides a psychological outlet for the person's rage at the abuse; the programmers believe that the provision of such an outlet is critical for the person's overall system stability, emotional and mental resilience and long-term functionality.

Chapter 21: Readying a Global Secret Army

I am 30 years old and a team of Jesuit fathers, of which I am one, is meeting with a delegation from China in a suburb south of Beijing. The delegation from Beijing is interested in a proposal that the Jesuits have put forward: we have offered to help them develop a world-class training facility in one of their underground facilities in order to create an army that will be dedicated to bringing in the long-expected leader that their own prophets and wise men have told them will come soon – within a generation or two.

After an hour of murmured polite greetings and talk, Simon, the Jesuit first general, starts the discussion that led to our being here. "We would like to create a vast underground facility in your country in the northeast," Simon says.

"It will look like this," he continues, and clicks a button that displays a blueprint of the proposed facility, and another button that creates a 3-D hologram image of what it will look like once constructed. "Both your country and ours would together provide sufficient zygotes and birth mothers to develop an initial prototype group of 100 based upon the best of our genetics research from the last 25 years."

At this point, Simon clicks to display a video that shows a group of older teenaged soldiers performing military exercises extremely well. These teens are well-muscled and in some of the maneuvers displayed, show excellent critical thinking and strategic skills in various simulated situations. When a large holographic image of a blond, blue-eyed man appears on a screen above the room they are in, the soldiers all salute with complete adoration in their eyes. In one exercise, the holographic image gives the command to one soldier to kill the comrade next to him, and unhesitatingly, the soldier obeys.

"As you can see, our initial prototypes, developed in an underground facility in Poland, have been quite successful," Simon continues. "If you agree to our proposal, we could together develop and train 100,000 special soldiers over a period of thirty years. We of course would share our genetic and other technologies with you, and implement them in the facility, at only a third of the cost to you, with the Order taking on the other two thirds of the cost. You will end up with a state-of-the-art training facility that will be completely hidden, one that will ensure your position as a world leader in the coming order."

Simon pauses, and then says, "Our delegation would like to hear your thoughts on this, including any concerns you might have, or suggestions for improvement. We value your insight and skills as professionals, and would like to give you plenty of time to think about this, to come up with possible drawbacks or benefits that our team has missed, and also welcome your ideas on what working together might look like if you like this idea."

I add, "Perhaps we could meet in a month, to allow you time to discuss this among yourselves, and also to approach us with any concerns or suggestions you might have?"

Our Order recognizes that the members of the Chinese delegation are highly skilled professionals, and we respect their thoughts and suggestions as peers. If this facility is to be successful, we will need their input and will need to agree to implement their suggestions. Conner makes this point clear: "While we are proposing the construction of this facility, and the development of these soldiers, this will truly be a joint project. We will provide your teams with equal input and authority with ours, with the proviso that our head trainers will also be present on the training council over it, and the top trainers be given final say on decisions made, five from your team and seven from ours." We want them to know that although this is a Jesuit facility, their trainers and professionals will have a voice that is listened to.

At the end of a month, with further meetings and negotiations, an agreement is made. Beneath the ground, within an hour's drive of Beijing, an underground facility will be developed, a facility that will be completely modern, with the majority built at Vatican expense, with the proviso that our methods and our trainers will be in charge, but with extensive peer help and administration from the Chinese trainers. Our contract states that the Chinese trainers will be able to review and give suggestions regarding what is being done at all times. All parties are satisfied, and the Beijing facility will become a reality within five years. It will be connected to Beijing by underground tunnel, and the provinces of China, along with other countries surrounding China, will provide the infants and birth mothers that will be used to create a literal army of soldiers trained to have completely loyalty to the coming world leader.

These soldiers will never leave their facilities. They will never experience life in a family setting, or have contact with others who are not part of the occult world. Therefore, they are not programmed with non-cult presentation parts who are amnesic to the cult. Instead, they will have specialized loyalty programming to this coming leader, and will be programmed to be willing to lay down their lives for his sake. We have created virtual reality programs based upon the painting of "The Light of the World" that are a fair simulation of what this world leader will look like, for we believe that he will be coming soon, indeed, if the oracles are right in their predictions.

It is eight months later, and the fathers and I are meeting with a delegation from Russia in St. Petersburg. It is winter, and the temperatures are sub-freezing, in a snow-covered landscape. Our goal is the same as when meeting with leadership in China: to build an underground training facility, and there to develop soldiers and military sub-captains who will not have the complex presentation programming seen in agents who must be hosted and present in various countries or identities. Instead, just as in China, these soldiers will be raised from birth to respond with unshakeable loyalty and obedience to images and videos of the coming world leader, and to view him as a father figure and deep attachment bond for their systems. We present this plan to the Russian leaders, and after three weeks of discussion, they give their response, and agree. For Russia also wants to play a leading role in the coming order, and wants to help build the army that will usher in his rule. Just as in China, the soldiers will be programmed to speak and understand a variety of languages, and to comply with complete love and obedience to any requests that this coming leader will make. The army for the new world order is building, as the Jesuit fathers and I make plans to visit Africa, the United States, South America, and remote areas near Nepal in the near future for the same purpose.

There are numerous underground training facilities around the world, with new underground facilities built after the success of the initial ones. What makes the programming done in China, Russia and the other countries mentioned unique is the fact that this new generation of soldiers will have programming to obey the leader of the new world order, and the trainers do not bother to put in presentation programming for other countries or identities, since these soldiers will never leave the facility until it is time to take orders from the coming leader. These facilities have above ground areas as well, but the grounds are all carefully hidden from public view, whether above or below ground, with blackout of any satellite coverage (which intelligence in countries around the world is aware of and programmed to not take note of). These soldiers comprise literally a completely dedicated army of thousands upon thou-

sands being programmed in this way, and represents the belief by the Jesuits and other countries around the world that the coming world leader will come upon the scene soon – very soon.

Part 3: Trying to Get Free

This section describes several major events in my life from 1985 to 2000, including my failed attempts to leave the Illuminati and the Jesuit Order due to threats to my loved ones. Nonetheless, this was also a time where I encountered God again, and had the hope and desire to follow Him and leave the cults reinfused into my heart.

Chapter 22: Infiltrating the Healing Community

I am 28 and am fronting as Ana, my Illuminati cult host. Regional head programmers, their assistants and other programmers in charge of sub-regions or special projects, and regional council leaders from the USA and several European countries, myself included (due to my role as a second-tier programmer in the western region of the USA), are attending an important Illuminati meeting in Germany. Public attention to the existence of abusive organized occult groups, and ritual abuse had been garnering momentum in the USA due to books such as *Michelle Remembers,* and cases such as the McMartin preschool trial. While these situations had been publicly handled by rational debunking and polite ridicule by 'experts', the Illuminati remained concerned about the fact that now there exists a small but growing number of professional therapists, counselors, and Christian prayer ministers, who were taking survivor stories seriously.

Despite the lack of understanding of programming by the secular professionals, their focus on building a therapeutic alliance, and on trauma and its resolution, had resulted in surprisingly effective therapeutic work for some survivors. Similarly, while Christian inner healing ministers generally had little expertise in trauma or developmental psychology, their accessibility (typically free of charge or requiring only a small donation) combined with how they could facilitate a person's encounter with a loving God in non-religious, non-judgmental ways (if they were highly skilled and loving without a religious spirit), also resulted in remarkable healings for some survivors. Through both the secular and faith-based healing communities, despite the growing controversy (fomented by the cults) regarding ritual abuse, 'recovered memories' and DID, survivors were starting to find validation and support. Therapists and prayer ministers were also starting to share with each other within their respective communities about what they were learning about helping cult survivors. These surprising events have put firmly before our faces the need to assess the weaknesses of our current strategies for preventing non-cult input from modifying or disrupting our members' programming, and to come up with better ones.

Today's meeting focuses not on how to make 'ritual abuse' seem like nonsense to the general public, or how therapists and prayer ministers could be convinced or intimidated into not helping survivors. Rather, the focus is on how to prevent a programmed individual from engaging with any information and/or relationships that would foster the resolution of their trauma and programming; this is why many programmers are present. In this and previous meetings, we throw around phrases like 'preventing unauthorized changes to programming', 'reducing vulnerability to external modifications', 'preventing unauthorized access to the system (of parts in the person)', 'increasing system security', and 'inadequate system resilience to external stressors'. We never use words like 'healing' or 'freedom', or phrases like 'how to prevent our member from healing' or 'how to prevent our member from escaping'. Such words would be too honest, highlighting how wrong it is to mind control and exploit human beings, and how people still want to be free even after a lifetime of programming from infancy.

Marion, the head programmer over the UK, is first to speak on the topic at today's meeting. She is the most senior of the twelve programmers assigned to go for professional counseling and Christian inner healing over the past six months in the USA to gather data; these programmers will be presenting their findings and recommendations for discussion. Top programmers had been chosen for this job because their expertise could give them useful insights when observing how their own system of parts responded to therapy and ministry. All present at the meeting had received hardcopies of their reports at the beginning of the meeting and had been given time to go over them. A collated version of the reports approved for sharing will be sent to the national Illuminati leadership and trainers' councils in various countries a week after the meeting.

Marion presents a very concise summary of her time receiving prayer ministry, then begins to share how the ministry impacted her system. "When Joanna prayed that her God would remove anything that was hurting Gatekeeper 24," Marion relates, "she (the gatekeeper part) saw a golden light come towards her. A hand reached out from within the light and touched the guardian's talisman from around her neck, saying, "This is hurting you. May I remove it?" The Gatekeeper agreed. When she did, the hand gently removed the talisman. Then the guardian had to unwrap itself from Gatekeeper and it left. Gatekeeper immediately felt lighter, cleaner and more clear-headed, and she could feel great love coming from the light."

I force myself to refrain from shifting uncomfortably in my seat. It was not so much that the Christian's prayer had the power to initiate the interaction of a powerful 'loving light' with a gatekeeper part that bothered me, as much as it was the clear statement that the guardian was *hurting* the gatekeeper part. All my life, I had been indoctrinated and programmed that the 'guardians', 'watchers', 'immortals', 'demons', 'gods', 'wise ones', 'ancient ones' – all the different words we used to describe the demonic forces we engaged with in our rituals and programming – were 'good' and were 'helping us'. I had also been indoctrinated and programmed into denying the pain and distress they were causing me. I look around at the serious faces of my fellow programmers and the Illuminati leadership, suspecting that they, too, might be hiding the same discomfort.

Marion proceeds to highlight several more moments that were most relevant to us as programmers. She then states what she believes to be the very simple pattern underlying her parts' 'unauthorized and disruptive' interactions with God whom the Illuminati at times, ironically, call 'the Deceiver'. She said, "The Deceiver offers parts what they think they really want – 'truth', 'love', 'no more pain', 'hope', 'freedom'." Her last few words are spoken with a touch of sarcasm, and she continues, "and parts in the system will at times believe the Deceiver, especially the young ones." When she has finished speaking and answering questions, she summarizes her recommendations in one straightforward sentence, "Stop parts, especially young ones, from trusting the Deceiver."

I can't help but wonder what Marion's part had indeed experienced with the Deceiver, that he could with a single question and brief encounter, compel parts who had years upon years of indoctrination and conditioning to distrust the Deceiver, to trust him and actually try something new. Somewhere deeper inside behind Ana's awareness, Luce, the Jesuit cult presenter who was observing the meeting, feels a twinge of sadness at an unbidden flash of memory of the true love she had experienced at 14 years old from the Christian God.

The other eleven programmers share their reports in turn, each finishing with their recommendations for preventing therapists and inner healing ministers from causing cult survivors to question their indoctrination and degrade their programming. When the last presenter has spoken, their recommendations are listed on screens around the room for easy reference. The recommendations are replicated and organized thematically across three lists that reflect the main areas of vulnerability noted by the twelve programmers: (1) parts who seemed most curious about and/or receptive to therapy and prayer ministry input, (2) spiritual, social/interpersonal/attachment needs and self-actualization needs that successful therapy or ministry seemed to be fulfilling, and (3) the most frequent cult philosophies or propaganda that successful therapy or ministry seemed to be debunking.

We begin earnest discussion of new programs and programming strategies based on their experiences, recommendations and problem areas highlighted. All of us realize the criticality of designing new anti-healing and anti-God programs that would barricade our members from therapy and prayer ministry. As infants and young children naturally cry out to God when they are in distress, the Illuminati were already doing anti-God and anti-Christian programming as a standard procedure on their youngest members. For years, members who had Christian fronts in their non-cult daytime lives also already were given programming to ensure that church attendance, prayer and other Christian activities did not interfere with their mind control and cult loyalty. We were now seeking to develop comprehensive and robust programs specific to the confidential, intensely personal and intimate, healing-focused nature of interactions between therapeutic professionals, inner healing ministers and their clients.

I contribute insights and suggestions to the discussion with the right mix of confidence and humility as befitting an up-and-coming programmer adroit at asserting herself without offending those higher up the hierarchy. Several of my comments are received extremely well. Little do I know as Ana that my contributions did not emerge out of my own skill or discussions with the USA Illuminati programmers. Rather, the Jesuit fathers, who were seeking to have me promoted up the programmers' ranks in the Illuminati, had already programmed me to say exactly the right thing at these meetings. In fact, five of the twelve Illuminati programmers who spoke today were Jesuit infiltrators who had already shared their data and recommendations with Rome. The meeting lasts an exhausting seven hours, and we close with sketches of new programs to develop and test over the next few years.

A week after the collated report is sent to the trainers' councils and leadership councils in the USA and other countries, I receive an invitation to join a special international commission tasked with designing, testing and implementing new anti-therapy and anti-prayer-ministry programming. Our focus, for now, would be on programming adults for resisting therapeutic and Christian contexts within the USA, followed very closely by the UK, then the other countries in Europe.

This chapter relates one small piece of the multi-pronged strategy that the Illuminati (and other organized occult societies and mind-control government agencies) used to control the public narrative about ritual abuse, mind control, and programming, and subvert any potential harm that public knowledge of such things might cause their agendas. According to my memories, the early 80s to the early 90s involved periods of intensive infiltration of the healing community by cult agents posing as survivors wanting to heal in order to carry out data-gathering missions. As related here, the information was then used to improve the cults' anti-healing programming. Such missions continued over the next two decades, with the cults updating anti-healing programming to adapt to new trends or progress in knowledge in the secular professional mental health and faith-based healing sectors.

But why even bother with sending agents to check out these healing modalities and investing vast amounts of time and resources into creating and installing new programs? Why not simply order members to keep away from all prayer ministry and therapy, considering the extraordinary amount of control the cults have over their members' daily lives?

A few reasons stand out. The first is pride: it was tremendously offensive to the cults to observe that their years of programming and indoctrination were vulnerable to change by a therapists' or prayer ministers' kindness and belief in that person's desire and potential for free thought, self-mastery and non-manipulative love. It was just as offensive and untenable to them that there was really a God who could free people from the demonic guardians integrated into programming. The second primary reason was control: just ordering people to keep away from therapy or inner healing ministry would be tacit acknowledgement that they were effectively dangerous to programming. It would demonstrate to cult members that programming could be resolved and its hold over an individual broken, even in adulthood. This would threaten the cults' control over their members. The final primary reason was a measure of scientific curiosity: the programmers and cult leaders did genuinely want the better understanding of the mind, brain, body and spirit that was afforded by exploring how programmed individuals responded to therapy and prayer ministry, and to use this knowledge to advance methods of control.

In addition to improving their control over their members' programming, the Illuminati and other groups also sought to increase their control over the mental health and Christian healing sectors. There had always been a very strong degree of cult infiltration of research and practice in fields like psychiatry and psychology; this period saw an increase in the number of cult agents with the appropriate credentials assigned to front as psychologists, psychiatrists, counselors, clinical social workers or Christian ministers. These agents were specifically trained to use their front jobs to identify and punish survivors seeking help, and to discourage survivors from finding help. Like how the front, non-cult daytime presenters of the agents who posed as traumatized survivors needing help had no idea that they were actually on a data gathering job for the cult, these mental health professionals and clergy were usually completely amnesic to their dissociated cult life and cult assignments against their clients.

Chapter 23: The Memories Begin

Three years have passed. As Elsa, I have continued working with the international anti-healing commission to design and test effective ways of countering therapy and inner healing ministry. The last few years of very hard work on this, and other training and programming initiatives have led to another promotion: I am now the head trainer of the Western region of the USA, and take the trainer's chair at the regional leadership council meetings. My pride in this increase in status is soon swamped by the unrelenting river of work.

The international commission has initiated another project to test the latest anti-healing programs designed for use with therapists and prayer ministers working in the USA. The local project team is led by Jonathan Meier, and comprises the first and second echelons of programmers in the USA. Since some of the programs are designed to counter Christianity, a spiritual issue, two mages are also on the team. I am one of seven programmers assigned to field test the programming using our own systems of parts. Two of us are male; the rest are female. All of us have non-cult, daytime presentations who have been churchgoing Christians for many years, with nice families and respectable jobs. The team puts the relevant parts in the seven of us through the anti-healing programming. These programs are based on terrorizing parts through twisted scenarios of typical experiences in receiving prayer ministry, Bible verses and stories, and of heaven and hell. The early childhood programming to hate and blame God, to mistrust strangers (anyone not from the cult), to fear memories and any changes to programming, and to report deviations and unauthorized thoughts back to the programmers, is also retuned and enhanced to be triggered by any attempts to heal while receiving ministry.

All of this is extremely traumatizing. I leave each programming session feeling sick to my soul. I hide my reluctance from the rest of the programmers, putting on an earnest face as we discuss what we might expect to learn from the seven of us being programmed to engage with Christian ministers and gather data. Somewhere deep inside, I hate the fact that we are seeking to improve our control, and block our members from receiving help and finding freedom. But I am too afraid and indoctrinated to resist. Our programming takes place over six months, in between my other duties, and all too soon, it is time for me to begin my mission: Elsa, my American presentation, will be allowed to begin having memories and attempt to heal through Christian and secular professional help in order to assay the effectiveness of her anti-healing programming.

I am 32 years old, and am in my American presentation, Elsa. I have been working as an ICU nurse for the past eleven years, and have three children, one which is adopted. My oldest two children, Sandra and Mary, are five years old, and my youngest, Sammy, is only one years old. Since I was 25, I have been diagnosed with "endogenous depression" because my counselor could not figure out why I was so depressed, considering that I did have any trauma or major difficulties in my reported history. My husband, Chuck, too, had been struggling for years with oppression and depression. His anti-depressants are not working well to control his chronic anxiety and intermittent despair. Chuck is not a feely-weepy kind of male, nor does he ever 'spiritualize' things, so I am very surprised when he tells me after work today that he is going for deliverance with a minister at a large local megachurch.

The recommendation comes from a man we respect at our little church within the same denomination, and Chuck feels that he is indeed anxious and unhappy enough to want help. I wonder vaguely if he would be considering making the appointment if the person recommending deliverance as a solution had been a woman. The thought crosses my mind that I have nothing to lose if I give it a try myself. I would love to be 'delivered' from my depression which I was always feeling guilty about having.

"Maybe I should go for deliverance, too," I tell him. "I think I could use it."

"Oh, no, you're fine," he insists. What he doesn't realize is that somehow, deep down, I know full well that I am not 'fine'. This knowledge has always sat in some deep area of my belly. I am getting tired of ignoring it. In spite of what my husband says, I make an appointment with the church office for deliverance.

The next afternoon, I drop by the church office to fill in the ministry request and personal history forms. The church secretary is friendly, which helps me to feel a little less nervous about doing this. It takes about fifteen minutes to fill out the forms, put it in the manila envelope provided, and pop it into the letter holder by the side of the pastor's office door. I have to work at the hospital this evening, and rush home to change into scrubs and drive to work.

The next morning, the phone rings me awake. I grope for the phone, hoping that it is not a call from the hospital. A voice I don't recognize asks if they are speaking to Elsa.

"Yes," I respond.

"How soon can you get here?" the man on the phone says. "I am on the deliverance team, and I think we need to see you as soon as possible."

"I have to work tonight, but I have tomorrow off," I tell him. "But why so fast? I thought it would take weeks to get an appointment."

"Normally, it would. But you checked off every trauma that indicates severe occultic activity, and we think it would be good not to wait."

"What occultic activity?" I ask, bewildered. I have no idea of what he is talking about.

"We'll talk about it tomorrow," he says.

Wondering what I might have gotten myself into, I agree to come in early the next morning. The next day, the church secretary brings me to a small room off the main church foyer. I shut the door behind me for privacy, and look at the man sitting at the table. In front of him is the questionnaire that I filled out two days before.

"Hi, I'm Neil," he says, as he rises and shakes my hand. "Sit down wherever you like." He indicates the chairs around the table. I feel nervous, not knowing what to expect. While I have not seen any movies about exorcism – they seem much too scary to me – I have seen trailers of films on TV and wonder if my head will start twisting backwards, or I will start vomiting, during the "deliverance". I hope it is quick and not too painful, but I am feeling panicky, expecting the worst.

I sit several seats away from Neil, and he slides the questionnaire towards me. "I wanted you to see the symptoms you checked," he says in a kind voice.

I look down at the papers with growing disbelief. “Sexual abuse”-check. “Hearing chanting and calling upon spirits in my head” – check. “Abuse by animals”-check. “Seeing torture of animals or people”- check. “Incest”-check. Everything, every single trauma on the sheet has been checked. But I don’t remember checking them, because in my mind, none of these things ever happened to me.

“I don’t understand, I don’t remember checking any of these,” I say.

“That’s okay. Why don’t we start out with prayer, and maybe we can try renouncing some of these things, just in case. Are you okay with that?”

I nod yes, and Neil slides a sheet of paper to me, and then prays, renouncing any involvement in occult activities. “Why don’t you say the same prayer, it’s on the sheet I just gave you, so you can read it out,” he suggests.

“Dear Jesus, please forgive me if I have been involved in any- “ the words are barely out of my mouth, before I suddenly get up, and run screaming into a corner of the room. “Why are you saying you love me, if you are hurting me?” I cry out in anguish. “Why are you hurting me? Why don’t you love me?” The sobs are coming out, uncontrollably, nonstop for two minutes.

Suddenly, as if a tap has been turned off, I am quiet and looking up at Neil, although trembling like a shaking leaf in the wind. “What the hell was that?” I ask him. “Am I losing my mind?”

“No,” he answers. “But I wonder if it is possible that there is some trauma there.”

“Absolutely not!” I tell him, angry. “My life was just fine!” I get up and leave, angry, without making another appointment.

At home that night, I am washing the dinner dishes, when suddenly I see my supposed biological father in America sexually abusing me. In the memory, I am three years old, and he is pulling me out from underneath the living room couch where I am hiding, by my legs, as I scream. He sodomizes me, and it hurts terribly. It is as if a terrible nightmarish video is playing inside my mind.

“He had no right to do that to me!” I yell, as “Crack!” I break a dish. The fragments scatter into the sink below. I scream “You bastard! You bastard! I hate you!” Crack! Crack! Two more dishes break as in my rage, I thunk them across the sink divider.

My husband rushes into the kitchen, my daughters following him. “What’s wrong?” he asks. “Why are you doing this?!”

“Leave me alone!” I yell. I run into my bedroom, lock the door, and begin hitting the bed with my fists. I am filled with rage at this remembered violation of my body. An hour later, spent, I go back into the kitchen and clean up the mess I have made, and finish washing the dishes. I wonder if I have just made all of this up, because I have never remembered anything like this before. *But where did the emotion come from?* I silently ask myself. I have no answer.

It is the next day, and this morning, when I woke up, I heard chanting in my head. The video inside my head is playing again, and this time, there are people in black robes and hoods swaying and chanting, in a darkened room lit with flickering candles. I see a stone table at one end of the room, and someone is holding a dagger. On the table, I see a body tied up. I scream, feeling overwhelmed. Shaking and panicking, I pick up the phone and with trembling fingers, I dial my own pastor at the church office where he works weekdays.

"I am seeing people in robes, chanting in my head," I tell him as soon as he comes to the phone. I am head of a Bible study at his church, am also on his worship team, and considered a faithful, active member. "Am I going crazy, having a psychotic snap? What is this?" I fill him in on visiting once with the deliverance team minister at the larger church in our denomination, and what has happened since.

"I have never heard of anything like this," my pastor responds. "But I will be there in an hour."

True to his word, he drives over and prays with me. But his prayer doesn't help. I still feel panicked and overwhelmed. And the terrible videos in my head are still playing, getting worse. It looks and sounds like some type of horror movie, except I never watch horror movies, they are too scary to me. What is worse, I am seeing myself in these videos, chanting along and holding a knife.

"Make it stop!" I plead, my eyes looking beseechingly at my pastor, a figure of spiritual authority in my life.

"I don't know how," he says helplessly.

For the next 24 hours, my life feels like a non-stop panic attack. I call in at work, and then call Neil on the phone number he had given me when we met two days before. When he answers, I say, "This is Elsa. Help!"

"What's going on?" Neil asks. I tell him.

"I'll be right over," he responds. Two hours later, he is at my home.

"What do I do?" I beg. "How do I make this stop?"

"Let's pray, and ask Jesus," he says. Because of the lack of help my pastor's prayers were, I am doubtful, but bow my head. Neil prays, and then I start to pray. "Dear Jesus, please help-"

"Stop that! You can't do that!" the voice is yelling, coming out of my mouth, but I am not the one thinking or talking. I feel as if I have been pushed back to the back of my own head, and listen in horror as someone or something else is speaking through me. The thought flits through my mind that my worst fear has come true. I am possessed, and I am going to hell.

But Neil is calm. He doesn't act upset, or as if he is in the presence of evil. Instead, he asks a question that is unexpected. "What is your name? Why did you come out just now?"

"My name is Belial," the voice speaking with my mouth answers. "And I can't let her say that prayer."

"Why not?" asks Neil, still unconcerned about my obvious possession.

"Because I am a witch, and witches don't pray to that person you were praying to," she says angrily.

I am stunned. *Witch? What witch? What does this mean?* I feel like a bystander, shoved aside by something stronger than I am, using my mouth to talk. And why isn't Neil casting this, this terrifying… thing, out? Why is he calmly chatting with…it?

"I understand you are just doing your job," Neil says. "What do you think if she does pray to Jesus."

Belial screeches at this name. "I would have to hurt her, badly," she says. "I don't want any of my power going, and she could mess this up."

Neil then asks if she has any friends inside. This thing answers, "Of course. There are many."

I wonder how many demons are living inside of me. For this is the only explanation I have for what is happening. Not only am I possessed, I am very, very, badly possessed.

After chatting with Belial for a time, to my utter shock, Neil asks her if she would like to become a Christian. I wonder, *How can a demon become a Christian? What kind of nutty person is Neil?* But instead of screeching and sending curses his way, as she was doing earlier, she cocks her head and says, "I'll think about it."

Suddenly, I am shoved forward, and can speak again, and Belial is gone, I have no idea where.

"What is going on here?" I ask, bewildered and feeling a bit spacey. It as if my head has been dunked into ozone for a time, and I have trouble thinking clearly now.

"Oh, you're back," says Neil. "That was Belial out. Do you remember anything?"

"Yes!" I say, panicked. "I heard everything you both said. What is this?? Some form of psychosis?"

Neil pauses. "No, I think you have dissociation, and this was a part of your mind I was talking with."

Now, I know Neil is crazy. I am not dissociative, I am sure. He is just sucking up to demons, instead of casting them out the way a normal person would.

"Can I give you something to read?" he asks.

He goes out into his car, and brings back a book that discusses demonic deliverance, by someone named Anderson (not the same Neil that has been praying with me). It is called *The Bondage Breakers* and I promise I will read it over the next few days. That night, before I go to sleep, I hear voices talking inside my head. One sounds like "Belial" who was talking to Neil earlier. "Boy, we are in for it," I hear as I am starting to fall sleep. "We aren't supposed to come out like that."

I read the book, which I don't really understand except there's lots about bad things happening that let demons get a foothold, and the need to pray against demons. I have been praying like crazy, I am willing to do anything that will help. My panic levels are still high, though. Nothing takes the panic away, not even when I am at work. Good thing I am really good at my job, or the panic could become a real issue.

Neil meets with me the next Saturday during my weekend off. During this time, I meet another voice that comes out and speaks through my mouth. Her name is "Gatekeeper" and unlike Belial, she decides to become a Christian relatively quickly. After that, she talks to me inside my head, telling me there are many others, that she is a sort of doorway or guardian over them, deciding who goes in or comes out. I wonder if I am really losing my mind at this point.

When the memories first started to come, as the American non-cult presentation, Elsa, I was beyond terrified and confused. This was the very first time in my life that I had ever had any memory of abuse or violence, whether by my biological father or by a group of people in black robes. The worst that I was aware of prior to this week was my mother's emotional neglect and distance, and my stepfather's verbal and emotional abuse. It is hard to even put into words how terrifying it was to first get these memories. I think that it is so important for survivors to be kind to themselves, and for supporters to show compassion and patience, when they are struggling with the terror and confusion that abuse and ritual memories can bring, especially new memories.

As this chapter describes, the memories initiated several programmed responses designed to hinder healing. First, I experienced flat denial, as seen when I left Neil's office after our first appointment in anger, claiming that there was no trauma in my life. When I had an actual memory – my biological *father raping me at 3 – that came with the commensurate emotions, my denial took the form of wondering if I was just 'making it up'. When the first ritual memory emerged and the panic ensued, instead of realizing that I needed understanding and healing for that experience, the 'help' that I asked from my pastor was just to 'make it stop'. This is also a form of denial where the underlying logic is, "If it goes away, I will be ok again." I did not realize at that point that I had never been 'ok', and 'making it stop', i.e., re-dissociating the memory and so denying the pain and trauma, would never be the path to making things ok. Flat denial seemed completely rational within my worldview as a non-cult presenter because I had never had such memories before. After all, if it was true, shouldn't I have always known about these things? How could anyone actually forget such horrors?*

Next, as I returned to Neil to seek prayer for the increasingly horrifying ritual memories, and started to have clear and explicit encounters with my own multiplicity (Belial and Gatekeeper talking to Neil, Gatekeeper talking to me; hearing other voices inside my head), I deny the dissociation. I fall back instead on an explanation that I had been programmed with that fit seamlessly with my Christian worldview: I must be possessed, and these 'voices' must be demons, and that Neil is being sucked in by the demonic to talk with them and not just cast them out. My second fallback, that fit with my presenter worldview as a healthcare professional and person from a middle-class, English-speaking, first world country, was that, well, I must be crazy.

Both explanations hindered healing by causing more terror and confusion, while discouraging me from exploring the actual memories or the fact that I was dissociative. These explanations also mislabeled the memories and parts as problems to be 'fixed', rather than as experiences to heal, or coping mechanisms for an overwhelming life. Furthermore, labeling parts as 'demons' or 'signs of craziness' set up conflict between myself and the parts carrying the memories or who were speaking up. The internal conflict took energy that would have been better used on internal cooperation and healing.

Basically, at this stage, as programmers, we were testing if these three strategies – flat denial seemingly validated by prior amnesia, memories/parts being a sign of demonization, 'memories/parts' being a sign of craziness – would be enough to hinder any genuine engagement with healing work regarding clear and concrete memories of ritual abuse, for presenters with a Christian narrative.

The panic, while being a natural response from me, the previously amnesic daytime presenter, to the sudden horrors in my head, was also an anti-healing trigger itself. I had been programmed to subconsciously associate the panic with two sets of scenarios that I had experienced in the Illuminati programming studios. First, because I had believed that these voices were parts of my mind carrying true memories instead of realizing they were lying demons to be cast out, I had become completely deceived and was now in hell. The conscious panic was a reminder of how I had felt when I was in 'hell'. In the second scenario, because I erroneously believed that I had Dissociative Identity Disorder and real experiences of cult abuse, I had indeed ended up completely crazy. The conscious panic was a reminder of how I had felt when my family had to institutionalize me in a mental health institute where I was tortured relentlessly by other crazy patients and evil doctors. Both of these scenarios fostered sheer panic, which in turn, naturally prevented any thoughtful and self-compassionate curiosity or listening prayer regarding the veracity of the memories or the dissociation. As Elsa at that point, I had no idea what programming was or that I had been programmed. Instead, I attributed my panic solely to the fact that I was suddenly getting these incomprehensible, horrifying memories.

I am grateful that the prayer minister who worked with me had at least some knowledge of dissociation and deliverance. I was already feeling bad enough without being treated harshly or religiously, and due to my programming, would have been all too willing to believe Neil that parts were demons had he made that claim. He was courteous and empathetic towards Belial and the Gatekeeper. He did not preach at them, browbeat them with scriptures or common Christian platitudes, force them into decisions or tell them what to do. He asked questions, gave his thoughts gently, and offered more information.

Since then, I have heard so many stories of poorly-trained and ignorant deliverance ministers who are controlling, harsh and judgmental, and/or label dissociative parts "demons". Such behavior frankly constitutes spiritual or Christian abuse of the survivors, and should never happen.

I am angry when I look back at this week of terror and confusion that I as Elsa was put through. It was cruel to use me as a test subject for learning how to stop others from finding freedom. While my sudden awareness of cult memories and attendant emotional responses were all 'programmed' and ordered by the cult, my emotions – the pain, horror, terror, confusion – were completely real to me. These were the true feelings that I have always had, since I was a little girl in the cult, feelings that I had to dissociate away for the programmer's convenience and control. In this sense, much of the 'real me' was still present in this cult project to test programming which I eventually used as a platform for a genuine attempt to leave the cult. In other words, no matter how programmed a person is to not heal, they can still genuinely try to heal and leave the cult. The programming does make it harder because of the traumas involved, but it does not make it impossible.

I am also deeply sorry for my complicity as an adult in my own abuse and control, and the abuse and control of others. I recognize that this complicity was built on a lifetime of fear since I was in the womb, but the things I did were still wrong and hurt others. I more than regret working on projects to improve anti-healing and anti-Christian programming, and hope that this book and my other writings will be helpful now to others seeking freedom and healing, and those who support them in this process.

Chapter 24: Going Downhill

I am 33, and am back in my American presentation as Elsa. My presenter programming ensures that I believe that the couple of months over the past year I had spent the USA stretched seamless over the whole year. I remain unaware that I had spent time in other countries in other identities focusing on very different things, or that I am an active, highly trained, adult member of a cult that practices mind control of its members. Similarly, I remain unaware that I have genetically identical same-age sisters who at times took the role of 'Elsa' when I was in my different identities in other countries, or carrying out jobs directly for the cult.

As Elsa, the memories and symptoms of trauma are starting to feel like they are out of control. The dreams and the flashes of scenes in my head keep coming. I continue to find long entries in my journal that I don't remember writing. I am starting to realize that maybe some very bad things happened when I was a little girl. The nightmares at night are increasing. The worst thing, though, is that the more I pray, the worse I feel. Now I am getting really scared.

I am desperate. I want to see a psychiatrist, a licensed professional, someone with experience that goes beyond praying with people. After many calls, I make an appointment with one who works as a consultant with the county court system. His job is to conduct court ordered mental health assessments of defendants. This sounds good to me; the courts would not hire a psychiatrist who doesn't know what they are doing, I tell myself.

Two weeks later, I meet with the psychiatrist. He seems like a nice, pleasant man. I tell him about the nightmares, the scenes flashing through my mind, the voices talking. I take a deep breath, and ask him if he thinks it is possible that I am dissociative.

"Absolutely not," he tells me. "I have worked with many people who are dissociative, who have MPD (note: 'multiple personality disorder', a former term used for DID), and you are much too functional to have that diagnosis. You would not be able to work as a nurse, or be a mother to your family; you would be completely nonfunctional if that was the problem."

"Then what do you think is wrong with me?" I ask. I am desperate to know.

"I'm not sure, but you could be having some kind of trauma reaction, maybe repressed things coming forward."

I cringe when he says, 'repressed things coming forward'. The last thing I want is for my memories to be real.

"What do I do?" I ask, since this doesn't give me a clue about how to feel better and stop the panic.

"Well, take lots of rest when you can, maybe do something relaxing, like gardening, and try not to think about all of this too much."

Bloody hell, as if I want to think about this; I have been begging him and others to make it stop! I think.

I give this man another chance. At my next appointment, I tell him about my paternal grandmother taking me as a very young child of three to visit her friend who is a doctor. In my memory, the doctor leaned over me, and told me, "Don't worry, little girl, I won't hurt you."

He lied, and in the office, I scream and wail as I abreact the memory.

"Maybe you have PTSD," the psychiatrist says.

I go to the library, and check out several books on PTSD and its treatment. Each one of the books is more helpful than the psychiatrist, and I decide that I am not going back to him. I pick up the phone book to search for another professional.

I am also meeting once a week with Neil for deliverance and prayer. Numerous parts are coming out, and as quickly, go back in. I am very, very resistant to deliverance and having parts talk to me or others. Outside sessions with Neil, the memories keep coming, almost in a flood at times. When I journal, I start noticing that my handwriting changes dramatically at times, with warnings in a childish lettering such as “Stop talking to us, bitch!” and “I could kill you and you would never know, if you keep putting your nose into our secrets!” Warnings that seem to hold ominous threats of harm. But I don’t tell anyone about this journaling. They would think I was crazy. I wonder if I am.

I start swinging between denial and the possibility that my dreams, flashbacks and mysterious journal entries might be true.

I meet my new therapist. She is a Christian counselor who specializes in trauma therapy; I am hopeful that she will be able to help me. I share with her what had been happening over the past year.

“Oh, it’s normal to lose time, and not remember things that happen when you are upset,” she tells me. “And you aren’t the only person to have tough things happen, it happens to everyone. When I was two, my big brother pushed me down the stairs, almost killed me, and laughed when I was bleeding and screaming at the bottom of the stairs. And he used to kill animals in front of me, to make me cry. This happens to us all.”

I stare at her with huge eyes and am silent for the rest of the session. She continues to chatter on about not “blowing things out of proportion” that “everyone experiences”. That night, I tell my husband that I will not see this therapist again, and tell him why.

“You are just avoiding getting help,” he tells me. I disagree. I don’t want abuse normalized by my therapist.

I go through two other therapists. One is downright scary and wants to hypnotize me during the first session (I refuse), and the other is clueless about trauma. Then, I find a nurse practitioner, Heather, who seems to understand what she is doing. She spends two hours with me during the first session, getting to know me, and doesn’t act like I am crazy. Instead, she starts teaching me basic skills like grounding, containing things, and slowing things down. By the end of the session, I want to hug her. Many of her clients have dissociative identity disorder, then called MPD or multiple personality disorder, while others have varying degrees of PTSD due to trauma. She gives me a book to read by someone named Jim Friesen that talks about understanding MPD and its causes.

While I don’t think I have THAT problem – after all, a respected psychiatrist has told me it is impossible at my level of functioning – I read the first five chapters of the book and on a whim, decide to draw a house of my inner world as Friesen suggests in the book, just for fun.

The drawing I create shows a house with three levels and a basement, filled with people of varying ages. Tiny babies and toddlers tied into various torture devices and in boxes that look like coffins are in the basement, teens are on the third level, and lots of people in black hoods with knives fill the second level, to dozens of ordinary looking people on the top level, or what the outside world sees, with a door opening out to the outside world. Without knowing it, I have drawn a first crude system map. I break out in a sweat, terrified, when I look at it. Who and what are all of these people I drew? And why are there little babies and toddlers there? What does this mean? I have no idea.

I show it to Heather at my next appointment, and she says, “I think it is possible you have dissociation.”

I cannot work as a nurse anymore. Due to the overwhelming panic, I switched at work, lost time, and almost gave the same medication twice to a patient, not remembering I had just given them their meds. I catch myself in time, but I am deeply shaken. The next day, I give notice at work. I cannot and will not endanger others with my "problem", whatever the cause might be. I go onto workers' comp, and explain to the hospital liaison why I am not working, giving them the names of my psychiatrist and nurse practitioner. I fill out tons of paperwork and go home. The panic continues as I slog through each miserable day, trying to find a way to make it stop.

As Elsa, it truly felt like things were going downhill, and that nothing – not prayer or therapy – was helping. I was very glad at first that Heather was teaching me the skills to manage the memories and posttraumatic symptoms, but after a couple of weeks, it seemed that my memories and symptoms constantly overwhelmed my attempts to manage them. Losing my ability to work was itself terrifying and affirmed my fear that I was losing my mind. Things getting worse with prayer also affirmed my fear that I was somehow being misled by the demonic. My 'the more you try to heal, the worse it gets' program was running very effectively.

The messages that I received from most of the mental health professionals I reached out to only increased my fear and confusion. However, I did reject the second counselor's attempts to normalize my memories and symptoms. I knew that something was wrong, even if I couldn't yet accept that my memories might be true, or that I might be dissociative. It was easy for me to accept the psychiatrist's claim that I couldn't be dissociative if I was functional. Neither of us understood that I was functional because I was dissociative! Furthermore, other than the flood of memories and emotions, I told myself that I had none of the classic symptoms of dissociation. For instance, all of the clothes in my closet were similar. I never found mud on my shoes that I couldn't explain. My car never mysteriously had less gas in it in the morning than the night before. My sophisticated presenter programming (e.g., Alice in Wonderland, etc.) prevented any awareness of time lost or gaps in memory, and ensured that my temperament, behaviors and preferences remained consistent. I never deviated from my presenter profile. With pretty profound denial, I told myself that I never looked or sounded dissociative, ignoring the fact that I had seen my handwriting change many times in my journal, wrote journal entries that I didn't remember, and seemed to have other personalities in me pop out and talk with Neil. That everyone around me – my husband, best friends, children and closest colleagues – never noticed that I was ever 'different' reinforced my notion that I was not dissociative. I had no idea that they, too, were dissociative and mind controlled.

During this period, more than the actual content of the memories, it was the unremitting panic that made me feel absolutely wretched. It would not be an exaggeration to say that the constant panic was mental and emotional torture. This panic was, as described in the previous chapter, a programmed barrier against healing and internal communication. It was also the result of fearing punishment given by the other programmers between every appointment, or after any instance of remembering the cult or unauthorized communication between parts. The punishments – usually electroshock, stretching, spinning, being lowered into a pit filled with insects or snakes, gang rape, rape by animals and other forms of torture that leaves very little or no visible marks – were applied during meetings with the Illuminati programmers who were my colleagues on the anti-healing project.

At these meetings, as Ana the Illuminati programmer, I would show Elsa's journaling and drawings to the team for analysis and discussion. I and reporter parts inside would also share our insights and observations regarding how and why different parts were responding to attempts at remembering and healing. As I was carrying recording devices (unknown to Elsa) on me to all my appointments, we would also listen to and discuss the actions of Elsa *and other parts at these appointments. We had placed two hidden cameras in Neil's office. These videos were reviewed in excruciating detail. My colleagues closely interviewed different parts in the system to ensure that they were disclosing everything that would be relevant to testing and improving our latest anti-healing programs. In particular, they wanted to know what parts who did try to heal were thinking as they did so, and their explanations for their actions and hopes. After each battery of comprehensive system assessments, all parts who had engaged in the healing work would be called out for punishments, then all parts who had remained 'good' would be rewarded. For instance, because Elsa was still in denial and refusing to talk with the parts who reached out to her, she was frequently rewarded with temporary cessation of the panic for a few days, and extra time to play with her children in a happy setting with plenty of hugs and affirmations of each other.*

Since the goal was to assess the strength of anti-healing programming, after the punishments, my colleagues would give the non-cult presentation system, Elsa, a command to keep sincerely trying to heal. So, the miserable cycle continued: try to heal, then panic; try to heal, then panic. They observed over the year that Elsa could be pushed into a state of non-functionality by the dint of the torturous panic and confusion, but yet, she would still refrain from responding to parts talking to her, or engaging more deeply with her emerging memories. This finding suggesting that panic and confusion could be an effective barrier to healing for adults engaging in therapy and prayer ministry. The other six programmers who were field testers for the anti-healing programs were subjected to the same process. All of this made me feel sick inside, but none of us dared to do anything differently.

The content of these meetings was transmitted directly to the Jesuits via the technology we had hidden in the Illuminati facilities. I and the other Jesuit infiltrators on the team, including two of the field testers, would share our insights and recommendations with the Order. They conducted their own assessments on our systems as well. We were expected to report immediately to the Order if we started experiencing any real healing or loss of occultic power from the deliverance sessions, or any disloyalty is hinted at by parts. Mattheo and the other leaders in the Order were very pleased about being able to gather information useful for improving our own anti-healing programs.

Nonetheless, there was much that my Illuminati colleagues and Jesuit brothers did not know: I truly, truly wanted to heal and to be free, and this project was only making me determined to really try. Sometime over the past year, Ana and several other parts inside had started to secretly use the information gained to consider breaking their programming, healing, and escaping the cult. All their assessments failed to reveal this fact because parts were cooperating to lie to both cults, and put forth the correct readings for brain scans and other tests. This was a sign that despite being active in the cult and running our anti-healing programming on a more surface level, at a deeper level we were already defying our programming to be unfailingly loyal and compliant. It was terrifying to consider freedom, but I was so tired of a life of being hurt and controlled, and of hurting and controlling others; I was coming to a place where I knew that I just would not be able to do it anymore. The hint that freedom might be possible, the growing knowledge that I was gaining on how to address mind control and the fact that there were people out there who cared enough to want to help – all this combined to give me just enough hope to want to try.

Furthermore, my own encounters and the encounters of the other field testers with a kind and loving God during a few prayer ministry sessions was creating hope. While we were constantly being reprogrammed to discard and doubt these experiences, and to pray to other beings or internal parts even when the front parts were apparently praying to 'Jesus' or 'God the Father', it was unmistakable at times that He could and did want to help. He was not condemn-

ing us despite our duplicitous data-gathering mission, and our history of satanism and violence. My heart had been always been stirred by the stories I had heard of God showing his love to cult members. Now that I had been experiencing moments of His love for myself, I wanted to be free and know Him more.

"Well, what do you think, Danny?" I burst out. "I've had a hell of an assignment the past few weeks; trying to make the leadership in San Diego and the leadership here happy, and everyone has their own agenda. The only one they don't care about making happy is…me." There, I've said it. I've actually shared what I really feel, dangerous as this is.

I then ask Danny, my beloved brother, the one who understands me best of all, a question of my own. "Danny, don't you ever wish, that things could be…different?"

He looks sideways at me. "How do you mean, different?"

"That we all could have more times like this, and not because we desperately need R & R, or are checking out what someone is privately thinking." I look into his eyes, knowing that much as my brother loves me, he is under orders, too.

Danny bursts out laughing. "Of course, we all feel that way," he says. "But most of us don't have the courage to be quite that direct." My brother is nothing if not honest, too, one of the things I love about him.

"What if we do?" I ask him. "What happens to us then?"

He looks troubled, as he stirs the fire with a stick. "I don't know," he finally answers.

I wonder what he will tell Mattheo about this conversation.

I get my answer the day we come back. Mattheo reiterates that I will be working in the main facility for a year, and administrating the training school for our six- to twelve-year-old children as well. The other leaders have decided that spending extra time with the children at the facility, the children I love so much, will help keep my heart – and my loyalty – firmly attached to Rome. I love hearing the laughter of the children as they come down the hall, calling out "Father Luke!" with delight, rushing to greet me. I take a special interest in one of the classes now in its fifth year in the school. This class has the brightest group of children the school has ever seen, and they all have exceptional theta skills. I am the primary attachment figure for several in this class, and am helping to mentor the others. I hug the children, and listen with genuine interest as they tell me about what they are learning, and about some of the new projects they are planning.

Additionally, besides my strategic roles as a general in the Order and occasional jobs as a 33, I remain busy as a programmer and scientist. Paralleling my work in the Illuminati, using the data stolen from different occult groups and our own data, I collaborate with Mattie and two others to improve the Order's anti-Christian and anti-healing programming. Every story that comes in of cult members receiving help from God during prayer ministry sessions shakes my denial of God's goodness. Every story of parts trying to think independently when confronted with curiosity and genuine human kindness during therapy shakes my belief in the insidious power of trauma-based mind control from infancy. But I hide my longing for God, truth and freedom close to my heart, and continue being the 'perfect' Jesuit father.

After a year of extreme busyness and extensive checks of my systems by my programmers, Mattheo and the other fathers are convinced of my loyalty. We decide that it is time for me to continue my infiltration of the Illuminati. Over the past year, Lizzie and my two other sisters have taken the role of Elsa and Ana in the USA. Twice a month, Elsa has been seeing Jim Friesen, a therapist with experience working with DID. She has not returned to nursing but has been teaching kindergarten and first grade at her children's Christian school. Ana has continued to hold the trainers' chair on the Western regional council, and has been working hard as an Illuminati programmer. In the programming studios, I undergo updates to the memories of my Elsa and Ana parts so that we can seamlessly slip back into these roles upon reaching the USA, with no gaps in our timelines, and no memory of Rome.

This chapter shows how well the Jesuits understand the importance of love, attachment and belonging for maintaining loyalty. We did truly love each other in the Order, even though our love was constrained by the constant need to control each other in order to fulfill Satan's agendas. Nonetheless, the love and belonging, parceled out under the conditions of total mind control and the subjugation of our own consciences to carry out inhumane acts, could never really meet my human needs. Rather than increasing my loyalty and decreasing my desire for a different life, this year only increased my desire to be free. The moments of encountering God's love while posing as a survivor wanting to heal had reminded me of what true love really is. However, I did not know how I could possibly pay the price of leaving. I knew that if I tried, Satan would take out his vengeance on my loved ones. They themselves, out of their own fears and conditioning, would reject me and obey Satan's orders to crush attempts my follow God and be free. I had experienced this when I was 14 years old, and I was, at this point, convinced that I could not take that risk again.

Chapter 26: Project Alexis

During the year in Rome, the Order had started a critical new project that the Jesuits called Project Alexis. Its overarching goal is control over every aspect of society globally and to this end, the project has three areas. The first area is security: the assignment of a digital ID to every human being on earth, and developing the capabilities for monitoring each person with hardware and software. The second project area involves the digitalization of all financial transactions around the world. While this is the early 90s, the technologies to implement this have been developed and tested secretly for many decades, and only need refining. The third area is behavioral, seeking to use mass media technologies to reshape social conduct and norms globally in order to prepare the way for the new world order.

One means of tech-mediated social control the project focuses on are subliminals. These have been fed to the public through television since the 1950s. The coming phases involve an exponential increase in reach through new technologies to be rolled out every few years: cell phones, personal computers, the Internet, video games, online games, and more. In the future, everyone will have access to a constant stream of interactive information through many types of technologies priced to be accessible to a very wide swath of the population. We are therefore now preparing the subliminals that can fully exploit the coming technologies for widespread dissemination. Our social goal is unspeakably wicked; the subliminals are designed to shift perceptions and beliefs – albeit slowly, for human beings are slow to change – to bring about dark agendas: racism; anti-Semitism; the desire for a new world order; the desire to get rid of the 'nuisance' of paper and coin currency and go digital; the longing for a courageous world leader who will bring peace; the desire to break down the previous norms of decent sexual behavior; the acceptance of every form of sexual deviance, including pedophilia and bestiality; an acceptance and admiration for lawlessness; and complete breakdown of the family unit and any sense of underlying religion or morality.

The third area of tech-mediated social control is the purview of myself and the other trainers, since we are the experts on human behavior. Other important team members include the fathers and students talented in the skills needed to develop and test the technologies to be used. A large portion of our work is dedicated to designing the characters who will be the speakers for the new world order: Alexis (female) and Alex (male). The images of Alexis and Alex are composites of many nationalities. We are testing several variations of the images on people from every nation on the earth, and every age group, to see which ones engender the most trust and acceptance. At the same time, we are trying to engineer their voices. Again, these voices are composites of how different peoples in different regions speak, and have been synthesized carefully together with the aim of stirring a sense of harmony, balance and security in the listeners. These voices are tested again and again for acceptability and trustworthiness in different populations across the world.

The plan is that over the next few decades, Alexis and Alex will continually feature in visual and aural subliminals globally, telling and showing people that the new world leader will take care of them, and that all will be well when he takes power. This will condition people around the world to trust the 'Light of the World' that Satan has promised us would come soon, when he rises to take global leadership in a time of international unrest and crises like global famine and plagues. During the unveiling of the Light of the World, the subliminals and media directly featuring Alexis and Alex will also be used to reassure those who are afraid and overwhelmed what to do, and why they should not fear the changes occurring in their nation or the world.

My work on Project Alexis is another source of sorrow and regret. I hate how the Order and the other occult societies have used underhanded techniques to influence people, and diminish their rights and choices. It has been hard for me to believe at first that God could forgive me for such wicked work, but I have since learned that He really does. The deployment of subliminals over television and the Internet is one reason why I very rarely watch television and minimize my use of online devices such as my cell phone and laptop. It is also why I think that children and teenagers in particular should have as little exposure to online devices as possible, and that online gaming and online classes should not be their primary source of entertainment or education.

I do note that subliminals are limited in their ability to influence: they cannot acutely transform a person's personality, character or values, or "program" them in the manner that this term is used in mind control. For instance, a person raised to value honesty and hard work will not suddenly start to resent having to work from 9-5, five days a week, even after 20 hours of watching MASH reruns on TV. Their ability to shift social values is contingent on many hours of exposure of over many years, paired with an absence or lack of counter-input from society, family, school, and the faith community. For this reason, the occult societies have also accompanied subliminal with strategies to shift social values and norms in more explicit and blatant ways: social movements, movies, TV shows, music, video and online games, books and comics, education curriculums spanning kindergarten to graduate programs, legislation, religious reforms, and more.

Chapter 27: Leaving the Illuminati

Another year passes and I am 39 years old. In the Illuminati, as Ana, I continue working on Jonathan's team for testing and improving the anti-healing programming. By all appearances, in my case, the programming and the adjustments we are make to it are working well: Elsa and other parts try very hard to share memories and heal, but remain severely constrained by denial and horrible panic. None of them disclose any high security memories or information, i.e., the truths that Elsa is an active and competent adult member of an organized occult society, and that her ritual abuse did not happen only when she was an infant and toddler. Jim Friesen, her current Christian therapist, seems convinced that Elsa is sincerely trying to heal.

"Looks like you might be off the hook soon," Taurus, another programmer on the team, comments after we review my data at a meeting in spring.

My heart sinks slightly at his statement. A few of the other field testers had already stopped going for therapy or prayer ministry as we were satisfied with the findings from their experiences. Unlike them, though, I did not want to stop. My desire for true healing and freedom has continued to grow. I know I need to be allowed to keep trying to heal.

"The data has been at a saturation point for the past twelve weeks," I reply. That is, we were not finding or learning anything new for three months because my system seemed to have settled into a steady and predictable balance of trying to heal and self-punishing for healing according to programming parameters. "But it would still be too soon for me to stop."

The team waits for my explanation. While I am not the project leader, the team respects me because I am the head trainer on the Western regional council in the USA.

I continue calmly and clinically, "We have not been able to completely stop Elsa from having unauthorized nightmares, or from having times when her panic increases when she looks at her children. Both of these things should not still be happening." I look around at my colleagues, "We should not stop my testing until we have controlled these two situations."

From the head of the table, Jonathan frowns at me. He has resented me for many years because I do not pander to his ego, and I have called him out many times for unnecessary cruelty. Jonathan is a gifted programmer but he is no team player. I can see that he is tempted to say "no" simply out of spite. However, he is concerned about getting the best outcomes from the project, and so is reluctantly considering my recommendation.

Freya, with whom I've always had a good relationship, speaks up. "Exploring how to control these situations will likely involve subjecting your system to a significant amount of additional stress." In other words, finding out just how much more scientifically applied torture would be needed prevent the unauthorized nightmares or patterns of panic without destabilizing the rest of the system.

Jonathan smirks a little, and I wish that it was acceptable to slap him.

"I trust that this team would be able to manage the stress on my system," I say, then reiterate my main point. "The two situations more than strongly suggest there are still weaknesses in the programming that we need to understand and resolve."

The frown returns to Jonathan's face, and I know I cannot say more. Something in his expression tells me that he is troubled by my recommendation. I suspect his instincts are telling him that there is more to my desire to continue 'trying to heal' than merely testing the programming, but he has no evidence with which to accuse me.

"Fine." Jonathan decides. "We'll keep Elsa 'healing' for two more months, focus on controlling her dreams and panic, then you're off. It will be more useful to have data from other subjects now."

The two months pass tumultuously for Elsa. She continues seeing Friesen twice a month, and trying very hard to heal while parenting and dealing with panic. The programming team works hard these two months to figure out how to inflict enough self-perpetuating pain and terror on her system to stop unauthorized dreams and panic. As Ana, I am experiencing a different kind of panic as I secretly struggle to come up with plans for leaving the Illuminati with my family, and finding healing for us. Deeper inside, as Luce, I am torn between wanting to leave the Jesuits, and fearing the price of doing so.

By the end of the two months, the Illuminati programmers have managed to reduce Elsa's dreams somewhat, but she still panics at times when she looks at her children. Jonathan orders me to stop testing my anti-healing programs. The team, to my frustration, is in agreement with him. Some of them, I suspect, frankly feel a little sorry about the amount of torture I am receiving. Others genuinely feel that it would be more useful to test with other subjects, then use the knowledge gained from them to circle back to me for adjusting my programming. To close my field test, the plan is to program Elsa to believe that she has 'healed' and 'no longer needs to work on this stuff from my past', then reinitiate the full amnesia barriers around Elsa so she no longer hears parts or gets memories. I flatly refuse, and the meeting ends very poorly.

That evening, I receive a call from Rome over our secure devices. Another Jesuit infiltrator in the Illuminati has called a men's meeting at church to keep Chuck out of the house for a few hours so I can speak freely as Luce. The faces of Mattheo, Mattie, Lizzie, Conner and a few other leaders and close friends show up on my computer monitor, since the capabilities for this type of interaction has been available for many years within the Order. To access it, I enter codes to access a hidden hard drive with faster processing speeds and memory on my simple 'home computer'.

"What is going on, Luce?" Mattheo asks. "We had not discussed or agreed that Ana would defy Jonathan on this matter." He gives me a scrutinizing look; all the fathers on the call do. Unlike the Illuminati, the Jesuits know that I had once become a Christian, and had tried to truly heal and abscond.

"Ana can't stop now." I am trying to give as much as the truth as I possibly can without bringing the wrath of Satan and the fathers down on my head. Mattheo and the others know me so well that the larger the portion of untruth in my responses, they more likely they are to detect that I am dissimulating.

"We need to more rigorously test the Illuminati anti-healing programming over a longer period of time because any weakness in these programs has the potential to negatively affect our infiltration and control of them," I point out very truthfully and continue, "If the Illuminati systems in any of our agents heal because their anti-healing programs have flaws, then their Illuminati system may discover the Jesuit systems and programs deeper within and so compromise us."

Chapter 25: Back to Rome

Four weeks after Elsa, my American presentation had to stop working as a nurse, I am back in Rome as Luce, my Jesuit presenter. As usual, to keep the Illuminati from noticing my absence, my sister Lizzie fills in for me as Elsa. She, rather than one of my other genetically identical sisters takes over for me this time, since she herself is a very skilled programmer and could continue to give us good data from the Illuminati anti-healing projects. It is a relief to be back home, and to have a break from Elsa's constant panic and the exhausting, torturous cycle of attempting to heal and punishment. Nonetheless, my growing desire for freedom makes me feel a little on edge. I know it will be harder to hide this desire from others in the Order, because of how well they know me, and their deep access to all parts of my system. I had been successful in hiding it so far, but I can't help but remain a little anxious that I might end up revealing how much I really want help to stop my programming and escape their control.

While I can't think of any hints that I might have given the fathers that my commitment is wavering, a conversation I had with Mattheo and Mattie the day before has heightened my concern.

"I'm worried that testing the Illuminati anti-healing programming is wearing you out," Mattheo had said, "You are not going back to America for a year. You need a break. Lizzie and your sisters can fill in."

Mattie, my best friend and primary programmer when I was an infant and young child, adds somewhat incongruously and bluntly, "Remember what believing the Jesus shit did to you when you were 14." I well remember those traumas that occurred after I first believed in Jesus. But even deeper, buried deep inside, is also a knowing that this Jesus offered me the only real love without strings attached or manipulation, that I had ever experienced in my life.

Before I start back to work in the Rome facility, Mattheo has my twin brother Danny and I take a 3-day vacation together. I know that this vacation with the person I love most on earth next to Mattheo is not a reward. Rather, it is so that Danny can assess how the "healing" work in America has impacted my systems, and to discover if I am thinking of escaping. Mattheo's sharp, discerning eyes have picked up subtle signs of restlessness in me. I am frustrated because I am unsure what these signs that Mattheo has noticed are, but I am glad to spend time with Danny. Mattheo has another reason for this time with my brother: he wants us to renew and re-forge the already strong bonds of love between us. There is no greater cure for "restlessness" than the deep desire to be with those we love most. Danny will remind me of how much I love him and others in the Order.

It is beautiful on the lake in northern Italy where Danny and I sail together to an isolated, pine-covered point jutting out on its northern side. We are laughing, because this brother who looks identical to me other than his short goatee beard, slightly broader shoulders and tapered waist, has a wonderful, wicked sense of humor. He is filling me in on some of the latest events at the facility.

When we approach the site we will camp at, we fall silent, overcome by the beauty that surrounds us here. That night, as we roast bread and cheese over a camp fire, we talk about ourselves. "How have you been, really?" Danny asks. "I've been worried about you. You've lost weight, and your eyes look stressed."

I point out another concern, “They have not been able to establish *why* Ana continues to have unauthorized nightmares and panic, or fully control it. We know this means that her systems are somehow keeping something hidden from the team, or that the parts themselves really do not know why their programming is not running perfectly. If the Illuminati can’t ensure that the amnesia and other programs are running correctly in their agents with fronts parts who are trying to heal, and they can’t even assess them properly, then these agents may compromise our infiltrators. For instance, one of them might not respond correctly to amnesia triggers we give and so notice that a file in their computer system has been changed, or that there are a few different individuals fronting as a particular Illuminati agent”.

We discuss these two and other concerns I raise. All through the conversation, Mattheo, Mattie, Lizzie and Danny observe me very closely.

“What you are saying certainly makes sense.” Mattheo concludes. The team nods.

Mattheo pauses and looks evenly at me. “I love you, son.” His eyes brim with gentleness and love. He then speaks firmly, “Give glory to God.” This is a command to tell the truth that I had been programmed with since infancy.

“Tell me the truth.” Matteo continues explicitly. He goes to the heart of the matter with this terse question, “Why do you want to continue on this project?”

My chest squeezes and tears spring into my eyes, “*Because I love Rome.*” I look around at all the faces on the monitor. I have known everyone of them all my life. “*Because I love you.*”

I am telling the truth. I know they will interpret my statement as an affirmation of loyalty to the Order and Satan’s agendas. But what I mean is this: *It is because I love you, it is because I love all the fathers, because I love all our children, that I cannot bear to be part of this evil anymore. I do not want to keep living a life where we hurt each other and do hurtful things to others together. It is because I love you that I am going to see if it is possible to try to break free, so we all might have a chance for freedom. This is for you, because I love you.*

They respond, “I love you too.”

Mattheo and Mattie confer offscreen briefly. When they return, Mattheo tells me that I have permission to let Ana keep Elsa trying to heal for one more year. I hide my sigh of relief. The higher-ranking Jesuit infiltrators in the Illuminati will ensure that Jonathan will not be able to actually stop Ana, whatever fuss he makes. When the call is over, I sink onto the edge of my bed. One more year. It is not a lot of time.

Back in the USA, as Ana, I continue to field test Elsa’s anti-healing programs. I, of course, have no memory of the Jesuit cult presenter’s meeting with Matteo and the other fathers. Jonathan is furious, but I ignore his orders to stop. Elsa continues seeing Friesen, journaling and engaging in other healing work. Between sessions, Jonathan and another programmer severely torture Elsa and any parts trying to heal, and install updates to the anti-healing programs. As Jonathan is extremely offended, he is excessively and appallingly vicious in his programming work.

Lizzie and my sisters, who present as Ana and Elsa when I am doing other jobs for the Order, are very exasperated by this situation.

“Luce,” Lizzie tells me darkly one day in the dining hall when she is back in Rome after a stint as Ana and Elsa. “I will be very glad when this year is over. Maybe *you* enjoy being a martyr for science, but *I* don’t.”

I smile sheepishly at her. I think, *Maybe it’ll be over sooner for you than you expect.*

I am fronting as Elsa in the USA. I am talking with my therapist, Jim Friesen. He is known for working with dissociation, and his friendly and nonjudgmental demeanor has had numerous parts coming out and talking with him. I have finally started to learn to communicate with parts, and while it still bewilders and frightens me, we are journaling to each other and having internal conversations. As I start listening to parts, I also start to understand what ‘programming’ is, and that I have ‘programming’. Both Friesen and I are pleased with my progress, despite the ongoing struggle with panic.

Today I start by asking him: “Is it normal to have dreams about being shocked with electricity all over?”

He replies, “I have never heard of this before from anyone I have worked with.”

I breathe deeply then blurt out, “I need to go inpatient to be safe; I think I have a lot of suicide programming inside that would fire off if I work too hard to get information from parts inside. My systems would destabilize.”

“I have only had one client in my many years of practice go inpatient. I usually don’t recommend it,” Friesen demurs.

“Well, I need this,” I tell him firmly. “I will be your second referral to inpatient,”

At this point, I have accepted memories of intermittent ritual abuse for the first three years of life by my biological father and paternal grandmother. The memories, to my relief, indicate that the abuse stopped when my mother divorced my father. Nonetheless, my journaling and conversations with parts reveals a large, organized system of parts inside. My denial programming and amnesia keep me from noticing the incongruence between there ‘only’ being ritual abuse in my first three years of life, and my having a very complex and highly organized poly-fragmented system of parts. Likewise, I do not notice that my concern about suicide programming is incompatible with only having ritual abuse before I was three years old. None of my parts explain to me that it is highly unlikely that any programming team could successfully install suicide programming - a complex program that defies the human instinct for self-preservation – in a child less than three years old, and have this program be intact 33 years later with no retuning or reinforcement in between.

To my extreme frustration and distress, the panic continues. In fact, the harder I work to heal, the worse it gets. I can’t understand it. I am doing everything that the books and counselors say are supposed to help, and none of the techniques they recommend help. This is why I want to go inpatient. I hope that the time dedicated to healing, with supportive staff, might start to turn things around for me.

Reluctantly, Friesen tells me about a counselor he knows who has an inpatient unit for treating dissociative disorders in Texas. Over the next two weeks, I create a plan for the work I will do while inpatient for two weeks, and he makes the referral. I contact this unit to make arrangements and provide my insurance information.

A week later, I get a phone call from a stranger

“Is this Elsa?” asks a male voice.

“Yes, it is,” I reply. “Who am I talking with?”

“My name is Roland (*a pseudonym*), I am the husband of your friend Pamela (*also a pseudonym*).”

Pamela is a friend I made while in therapy for a few weeks at a trauma unit in southern California a year ago. She was working hard to heal from governmental mind control and ritual abuse. We were roommates within the trauma center, and I had really liked her. During the month we were there, we had both supported and cheered each other on in our healing work.

She had shared a pretty horrible story about her husband that occurred during a weekend pass that she spent with him. “We were driving along a road,” she told me, her large eyes blinking, “and then he told me to look inside the dashboard container. I opened it up, and there was a loaded gun sitting there. I looked over at him, and then he told me ‘feel free to use this anytime.’ I think he wants me to kill myself, because I am remembering too much.”

I believed her. Pamela had come back visibly upset and shaken from her visit.

Pamela had shared something else with me. “I went to a dissociative disorders unit in Texas,” she said, “They were the only one that had a clue and were helpful to me in my healing work.” This was the same unit that I was scheduled to spend two weeks at.

I ask Roland, “How is Pamela doing?” I haven’t heard from her in months, and have wondered if she was okay. I am also very surprised that her husband, who I don’t know at all, is calling me.

“She’s dead,” Roland says. “Those people in Texas killed her. She came up to the upper peninsula with me after being inpatient there, and she killed herself. I stepped out for a few hours, and when I came back to our cabin, she was dead. It was those people in Texas. DO NOT GO THERE. They drive people crazy there.”

I am flabbergasted. “Thank you for the warning,” I say. “I will consider what you are telling me.” I hang up the phone.

I am furious. I do not believe for a minute that the people in Texas killed her. I know, with everything in me, that Roland had left a loaded revolver with Pamela after giving her a command to use it to fatal effect. I am more determined than ever to go to Texas. For if a sleazeball like Roland is trying to warn me away, they must do something good. I do not wonder how I know, or at least, why I believe that Roland had given Pamela a command to use the gun on herself, considering that I have not come across such things in the scant information I have found on mind control and programming.

It is a week later, and I am in north central Texas. I am surprised to see people walking by at the DFW airport who actually do wear Stetson hats and cowboy boots; I thought that was all just stuff people did in movies. It seems so…country…after southern California.

“I’m scared,” I tell my husband. He has flown with me to support me. I have a huge fear of hospitals, of being locked in and never being let out. I don’t realize that this is programming to prevent my ever going for mental health care. Instead, I think there must be something wrong with me, to be this frightened.

My husband drives the rental car to the small hospital in a suburb of Dallas. I fill out the paperwork and then go through the initial assessment, which consists of lots and lots of very personal questions. What surprises me is that I am answering some of the questions with a German accent. I have never been to Germany in my life and this accent frightens me. After the intake, where I am carefully checked for physical scars and injuries as a baseline, my husband tells me goodbye. I am terrified, shaking a bit, but I bring the few items I am allowed – clothes, but no belts or jewelry or items that I could harm myself with; no journals with wire binding – and enter the unit.

The staff are pleasant, but the unit is noisy. Apparently, someone is having a yelling match with a staff member, screaming at them "You're an idiot!" and calling them names.

I quietly go far around the area where the altercation is occurring, led by another staff member who shows me my room and tells me the rules of the unit. She gives me a schedule that shows when groups meet, and tells me, "You will be meeting with your assigned therapist tomorrow in the afternoon. Her name is Julie" (*note: not her real name*).

The next morning, I join my first group, one about family systems. It is interesting to learn about family dysfunction and how it can impact people. I think back on my American family, and realize that they are dysfunctional indeed. Even without the ritual trauma during my earliest childhood, there is plenty to work on.

It is mid-afternoon, and I am meeting in a private office off the unit with Julie. She is young and pretty, with intelligent eyes and a kind manner. We greet each other, talk a bit about how long she has worked there, why she entered this field, and how I feel about being on the unit, then she gets down to business. What she says next floors me.

"I want to meet the people inside who run things," she says.

"You can't," I respond. "I have violent protectors who would hurt you first. My system is very guarded, and will not allow that kind of entry." Inside, I am thinking *Violent protectors? Who are they? What system? What the heck?*

"I don't care. I want to meet the boss inside." She is persistent.

"I can't let you. The VPs would hurt you to prevent that," my voice replies. I feel far away as this conversation goes on.

Julie keeps insisting that she wants the "boss" to come out, VPs or no VPs. She is pushing hard.

I look at her. "I don't want to hurt you," I say. "If I do what you ask, I will have to hurt you."

"Let the boss behind come forward anyway," she insists yet again.

I try, and then suddenly without volition, I grab her pencil and stab her in the chest. I am horrified, as she screams then leaves the room, asking for help.

"It's my fault, I pushed her too hard, she warned me," I hear Julie at the nurse's station, as she tells the head therapist on the unit what happened. "She must have had a psychotic snap."

I am still in the room, crying, curled up in a ball. What kind of terrible person am I, that I did such a horrible thing to someone who was just trying to help me?

A staff member comes and gets me, and puts me in an isolation room, a room that is reserved for the very unstable. But a flicker of thought comes through my head: *why did she push so hard? I tried to warn her, and she just didn't listen to me. Did she not believe me – and why not?*

It is two hours later, and the unit director and psychiatrist are both meeting with me. I tell them my side of the event and finish with, "I tried to warn her, I really did."

The director is kind, but firm. "Yes, you did, she told us about what happened. But we can't risk you harming someone like this."

I start crying again, and I tell them, "Then ask your therapists to listen to people when they say back off, don't keep pushing."

The clinical director and psychiatrist both look at me, and the psychiatrist says, "You are still cult active. This wasn't just three years of sporadic abuse during the first three years of your life."

I look at him without comprehension. "That's impossible. It can't be true."

"This is too fresh, your response too reactive, for it to have happened 33 years ago," he replies.

I look at both men, and being to shake. I shake as if I am having seizures, from head to toe; I feel as if I am breaking apart. "Oh my God!" I say. "Oh my God, it's true." The floodgates open as parts start giving me flashes of cult activities throughout my life. "I need some medicine for panic, I feel like I'm having a nervous breakdown," I say. "And please, tell Julie I am so sorry for what happened. I really didn't want to hurt her."

I am given medication to help calm the sheer terror coursing through my body. I am in the isolation room. I have a journal that is bound without wires, and I am journaling rapidly. It is all coming out: my cult name, my husband's cult name, my children's cult names, and what we were doing out in San Diego. For the first time in my life, I remember that I am also 'Ana'. I have also signed a contract that I will not attack any other therapists, one of the conditions of being allowed to stay on the unit. I have also been reassigned to a different therapist, a middle-aged man, one with extensive experience working with this type of trauma.

That evening, I call my husband in San Diego.

"I love you," he says as soon as he hears my voice.

"I love you, too," I reply. "But I have something I need to tell you."

I then tell him what I have been remembering, how we are both cult active, and the children are as well because of us. He listens, then says in an angry tone, "I don't remember anything like this!"

"But it's true!" I reply. "You know I'm not a liar. Please, pray about this," I plead.

"Maybe you need to leave that place," he replies.

But I know that I need time to hear what my parts inside are telling me, as I journal. I have already filled half a notebook today alone.

The next day, an EEG tech comes to give me an EEG. The psychiatrist over the unit likes to use this test to rule out any residual intracranial damage from abuse. As the tech applies electrodes to my scalp, I start shaking and then start screaming. I apologize, saying, "I'm sorry, but I can't let you do this. It's bringing something up in me that I can't handle right now." The tech is nice, accepts my apology, and takes the electrodes off, to my great relief.

I go back to the isolation room, and journal. I create a map covered with words like "alpha", "beta" "gamma" "delta" "epsilon" "theta". I have no idea of what the words mean, but somehow, I know this information is important.

I meet with the psychiatrist, John (*not his real name*) and apologize for being unable to have an EEG. I then show him my diagram, and ask him, “Have you ever heard of this kind of thing before?”

He looks, and then says, “No, I can’t say that I have.”

I ask, “What do I do?”

He says, “Keep writing. Maybe you will find out. Someone in there knows what it means.”

That night, a part journals that these are brainwaves, and that I have programming linked to them. I meet with my newer, older therapist the next morning. I show him the diagrams and what I have journaled about them. “My parts say I have brainwave programming,” I tell him. “How do I undo it?”

“You need to get in touch with your parts, let them share their memories, abreact the traumas.”

“How do I do that, and stay stable?” I ask.

“You need to find that answer from inside,” he replies.

I feel completely frustrated. I have no idea how to do the things he is recommending. My panic levels are at an all-time high as I journal and parts share more and more about my life in the Illuminati on the west coast. It is becoming evident to me that it will not be safe for me to go back to San Diego. If what my parts are telling me is true, my life there has not been at all what I thought it was, and I am involved in some terrible activities. There is one thing that I do know, though. I cannot continue doing these activities, and I must find a way to stop.

The Illuminati had not wanted me to go inpatient at this hospital at all. I had made my own arrangements for admission in direct defiance to Jonathan. Hence the phone call from Roland and news of Pamela’s death, all arranged by him. The Order, behind the scenes, ensured that my admission would happen as this was within the one-year period of testing my Illuminati anti-healing programming that Mattheo and Mattie had authorized. That day at the hospital in Desoto, Texas in 1996 was the first major turning point of my healing journey. Ana took the plunge to ignore the internal security, denial, and amnesia barriers in order to share with Elsa the truth about life in San Diego.

As Ana, three things led to my decision to finally break free from the Illuminati: my growing weariness with life in the cult, my desire to be free, and the knowledge and compassion shown by the unit director and psychiatrist. The ability of these two men to accurately state that my programming was fresh and there was no way that Elsa’s abuse happened 33 years ago made me feel like there was some hope to receive competent help from the unit. Even more importantly, their decision to not make me leave granted me the safety I would need to be able to keep downloading memories to Elsa and increase our internal cooperation. Without the safety and separation from other cult agents afforded by being inpatient, I knew I would not be able to establish the beachhead of healing I needed for leaving the cult. If they had made me leave according to their usual application of rules, I would not have made the decision I made on that day to start working together inside and leave the Illuminati.

I will also note that time was a factor. It was six years between Elsa first getting her memories of ritual abuse and mind control and Elsa/Ana deciding to take the step to fully heal and leave the Illuminati, and ten years between Ana first working on the anti-healing commission and taking her own steps to get free.

Unfortunately, while my Illuminati system was genuinely trying to get free, they were still completely amnesic to the group I really belonged to, one whose members I was most deeply bonded to: the Jesuit Order. Luke, my Jesuit cult presenter, was ambivalent about leaving because of the pain of previous failures to get free, and the threat to loved ones. The internal conflict and partial commitment to healing and freedom created a situation in which it was inevitable that I would not be able to truly break free at this time.

Chapter 28: Illuminati Punishment

By the end of the first week in the hospital as Elsa, I know that two weeks will not be enough. I arrange for another four weeks, and present to my therapists a plan for healing work that parts share with me. A few days before discharge, a beautiful box of 12 red roses arrives for me. With the box is a card from my husband: *Please know that I love you, and am sorry for being so controlling. I will try to stop being such a control freak. I don't want to control you anymore, and will try to let go of control. Love, Chuck.*

He had underlined every instance of the word "control" every time, and double underlined it two times. I show my therapist the card, and ask, "Do you think the word control is supposed to trigger something in me?"

My therapist just looks at me, and asks, "What do you think?"

"I think it does," I reply. "I think the red roses are also supposed to mean something, but I'm not sure what, yet." I wonder how to deal with this situation; I doubt that normal marriage counseling has any strategies for addressing cult triggers from a spouse.

Whatever the roses were meant to trigger, through the six weeks of hard work on healing and internal communication, I resist the pull to return to San Diego after discharge. Instead, I rent an apartment with another survivor, and go to outpatient treatment daily. Parts are creating inside round tables to facilitate communication between systems, and trying to decide what steps we should take to stay safe and build a new life. I am meeting all kinds of parts, and they all want to get out and get free. They try to plan what to do, and how to do it. When I am not in outpatient therapy, I am journaling, collaging and trying to open up every avenue of communication possible with inside parts.

The Illuminati, naturally, are furious. My extension of my hospital stay and refusal to return to San Diego, and my system sharing current cult activity and programming with the non-cult presenter, Elsa, and with the hospital staff, have convinced them that I am actually truly trying to heal and leave the cult.

At night, without my conscious awareness, I am getting calls on the phone, ordering me to come back to San Diego. There are knocks at the door as well, but I don't answer them. The door is opened anyway, and rough hands wake me up, and say, "Come back, or else your children will pay for your disobedience." I wake up with panic each morning this happens, without knowing what caused the panic. Nonetheless, parts and I continue journaling to each other, and the increasingly dire unfolding picture affirms to me that I cannot return. It also makes me increasingly desperate to get my children to safety.

A week after discharge, I call Chuck. "Hi," I say, as he answers the phone.

"When are you coming home?" he demands angrily. "The kids and I miss you."

"I know, but I don't feel safe coming back, unless you and I get marriage counseling first," I tell him. "I want you to fly out here, and meet with one of the therapists here."

There is a long pause.

"All right. I will come out on Thursday, two weeks from today," he tells me. "I'll bring the kids with me."

I am ecstatic. My husband is willing to get help. Maybe things will turn out okay. I am unaware that Ana, who understands how the cult works better than I do, is very skeptical that things will turn out ok. Nonetheless, there is nothing either of us can do to force him to bring the kids, and we can only pray.

The day comes. There is a knock comes on the door. I open it in excitement, expecting to see Chuck and my three children. But it is a policeman. He is serves me with two sets of paper: papers filing for divorce, signed by my husband, and a restraining order. With disbelief, I read the restraining order. It says I am not allowed to come within 1000 feet of my children, or I will go to jail.

I call my husband. "What are these papers, filing for divorce and a restraining order?" I yell into the phone. "What is the meaning of this? You said you would come and meet with my therapist and I today, and instead, I get – this! Why didn't you come? You promised me."

My husband responds in a monotone voice, "It's not safe there."

"What do you mean, it's not safe?" I ask. "No one is going to hurt you. I just want you to meet with my therapist, and talk."

"Those therapists aren't safe," he replies in the same monotone voice. "Come home, here."

"Oh, shit!" I say, as I slam the phone down. I realize that someone has gotten ahold of my husband, and convinced him to leave me. I now understand that this someone is the cult, judging from the monotone, flat voice he used. At this point, I do not realize that the Illuminati have started to systemically punish me by removing my money, my children, and my friends.

It is the next day. I am out of money and need to pay rent to my roommate. I go into the bank since I have thousands saved in an account that I opened years ago with my husband. When I get to the teller with a withdrawal slip, she looks into her computerized screen, then hesitates. "I'm sorry, there's no money in this account," she tells me.

"That's impossible! I have $5000 of my money in that account," I insist.

"Maybe so, but your husband withdrew the money last week," she informs me.

"But, but, that's illegal! He would need my signature to do that! That was money that I worked hard for and earned!"

The teller replies quietly, "Not if you have a joint account, he doesn't need a signature."

"You mean, he can just go in, and clean my account out like that?" I ask.

"Yes, honey, he can." The teller looks at me sadly, and I leave the bank, discouraged.

I am penniless. My social security check is late. I have been on disability for the past year, and this check is my sole source of income. I call social security to see what has happened to my check. After waiting for what seems like hours, I finally get through to a real person.

"Oh, we sent it, to your address in San Diego," I am told. "The check was cashed last week."

"But I'm not in San Diego, I'm in Texas," I tell the worker on the phone. I realize with a jolt that my husband has forged my signature, deposited the check into our joint account, and then taken the money for himself.

I tell the social security worker, "I need to update my address. Here is where future checks need to be mailed to."

In desperation, I call my mother, and tell her I have no money, and that my husband wants to divorce me, and will not let me see our children. She has never liked my husband, and sends me a check, but also a warning. “Go back to San Diego, or you will make people angry, and you don’t want that. Don’t be a fool.”

When I get back to my apartment, Danny is waiting for me. “Hi, sister.” He greets me cheerfully. Before the words are out of his mouth, upon seeing him, Ana and Elsa submerge, and Luce switches out.

We hug and he looks closely at me. “How are you?” He asks.

I had been communicating with the fathers on a regular basis in in the hospital through a cell phone I had smuggled in, unbeknownst to Ana or Elsa, but it has been a while since I have seen my brother in person. Before I respond, Tremaine emerges from the bathroom, with her hair styled and dressed like me. I understand; it’s time for a trip back to Rome and she will cover for me.

In Rome, I spend two weeks being assessed. Mattheo, Mattie, Tommie (who has the cover identity of being Ana’s biological mother in the Illuminati), Lizzie and the other trainers and leaders are very concerned about Ana’s decision to fully defect, a decision that they had not authorized. By some miracle, I manage to convince them that I, the Jesuit cult presenter and other Jesuit systems are still loyal, and that Ana’s decisions could prove useful to us. The lies I reel off to my beloved fathers, with my heart in my mouth, frankly make little sense to me. Perhaps what is convincing them in the end is the difficulty they have believing that after what happened when I was 14, I would ever consider defecting from Rome again. Perhaps the fact that not a hint of Jesuit information has been shared by Luce to Ana is helping them to believe that the problem was isolated to the Illuminati systems.

Instead of frying me alive, then forbidding me to leave Rome for five years, we come up with a plan to convince the Illuminati that Ana could be controlled, and not become a security risk. One strategy includes a romantic bond with a new handler, a ‘boyfriend’ whom Elsa would eventually marry in Chuck’s place. We have just the right Jesuit infiltrator in the Illuminati to use for this role, Father Joram, a man close to me in age. His Illuminati cover identity, Sagit, had an extensive history of handling and retrieving cult members who were trying to escape cult control (e.g., as a cult “bounty hunter”). Not only this, but Sagit’s non-cult ordinary day presenter, Jimmy, had already infiltrated the survivor community in Dallas where he had built a reputation for being a kind and sincere cult survivor himself who was trying to heal. We work on ironing out the details of the plan to make Sagit become Ana’s handler, and other plans needed to ensure that the Illuminati will severely punish yet not kill Ana.

I return to Texas with Lizzie and Danny. They remind me how important I am to Rome and how much they love me, before they give me the codes to switch back in, and for Elsa and Ana to emerge with no gap in their time lines.

As Elsa, I search for a lawyer who will take on my custody case. I have called five, and all five wish me “Good luck. I can’t take this case.” When I ask and ask why nobody will take my case, one finally tells me the truth: “Lady, this is going to be a long, drawn-out battle, one that could take years. You just don’t have the money to make it worthwhile. Nobody is going to take this on. There’s not enough money in it.”

I feel discouraged, but keep going through the San Diego County phone book. Finally, I find a lawyer willing to represent me. But I’m not sure I like her advice once I have paid her a retainer, using the money I have earned over the past few months by working as a nurse here in Texas.

"Oh, you don't have to go to custody hearings," my lawyer assures me. I don't believe her, and show up anyway, first by phone. The custody hearing is going okay, until my ex's lawyer asks, "Do you believe that your children are being abused by a satanic cult that your husband is involved in?" I am not expecting such a direct question, and the answer pops out, "Yes, I do."

The interview is immediately over.

A month later, I go to court. After hearing the transcript of the phone interview, the judge awards full custody of my children to my ex; I am only allowed supervised visitation since I am considered to be a risk for abducting my children out of state. If I take the children out of state, I will go directly to jail.

During this extremely painful and lonely month, I make a new friend, Jimmy. He is dating my roommate but we start to become good friends. I am able to pour out to him my anger and betrayal about Chuck, and my fears for my children. Jimmy is remarkably empathetic and supportive, and as a cult survivor himself, he understands my concerns about safety.

Three months later, I decide to break the restraining order to go see my children. I cannot stand the thought that they will think I have abandoned them. I call my sister, who lives in San Diego, and tell her I am driving into town in three days. Reluctantly, she agrees to have the children there so I can see them. Jimmy, my ever-supportive friend, comes with me to reduce the risk of abduction, and I am glad to have him help me with the long drive.

All three of my children are at my sister's apartment when I finally make it into town. As I enter the door, I give them a big hug, crying. "I've missed you so much," I tell them as tears run down my face. "So very much."

But my oldest daughter starts panicking. "Oh no, oh no, oh no," she says. "I have to call Daddy, I have to call Daddy. He told me to call him right away if something like this happens."

I look at my sister. My younger son is crying. I hold him in my lap as I am hugging my other daughter.

My oldest daughter is increasingly frantic. "Call daddy, call daddy, call daddy," she says over and over. I realize that she has been programmed to do this, and it breaks my heart.

My sister hands her the phone and she makes the call. "Daddy, Mom is here," she says. She is 12 years old, and her voice is shaking. "What should I do?"

She hands the phone to me.

"I will let you see them this once, but if you try to take them with you, I will put you into jail for a long, long time," he growls into the receiver.

In spite of his warning, at the end of the day, I want to take the children with me.

"Maybe I can leave and get over the border before they can get us," I tell my sister.

"Are you kidding? The police would put out an APB, and you would be locked up. Do you think they will let you see your children while you are in federal prison? Don't be stupid," she tells me. I am considering being stupid, but realize that this could traumatize them further.

Crying, I leave. I have to think of a way to see them again. They are crying as well as I tell them “Goodbye”. Jimmy and I start the long drive back to Texas. I cry most of the way, and Jimmy comforts and prays for me. When I get back to Texas, I continue working hard as hard as I can on my healing because my children need a mother who is healed and free of the cult.

As Elsa, it took me years to remember the ‘bigger picture’ of what happened during that visit in San Diego: Illuminati leaders, including my mother and Brogan, were present. When Ana reiterated her refusal to renounce her desire to be free and her refusal to be reprogrammed, they began to torture her children in front of her. This was after weeks of hearing their screams over the phone, and seeing pictures of their torture in envelopes pushed under her front door and other evidence, such as pieces of bloodied clothing left in small boxes by the door. Ana had not let Elsa remember these or show them to the therapist out of fear that her children would be subjected to worse torture if she did. Unremembered by Elsa, the children had also visited Ana a few times in Texas to beg her to return to the cult, and shown her the marks of their torture. It was overwhelming.

As Ana, I broke. I cannot describe the agony of watching my children tortured. As much as I did not want to, I gave in to stop their pain. I agreed to return to the cult. I agreed to be reprogrammed. I agree to fake-heal rather than really try to heal. I agreed to take whatever punishment they would mete out to me, if they would stop hurting Mary, Sandra and Ricky. I agreed that Elsa would not know what had really happened. When I agreed, they stopped the torture and let me hold my children. We ended this ‘meeting’ with a ritual involving all present to seal my agreement.

I am then transported to our programming facility. I learn that “Jimmy” is no low-level survivor from a local group, but is actually an Illuminati agent, Sagit, skilled in enforcement, handling and bounty hunting. I resign myself to being programmed to be controlled by Sagit, and for my non-cult presenter, Elsa, to marry and trust “Jimmy”. It is just one more betrayal – so mundane yet so painful. Jonathan sneers as he sketches out for me how Elsa will live in the fantasy that Jimmy is the perfect loving, supportive spouse, one who does all the right things: he drives me to therapy, encouraging me to heal, yet he is also the person whose job is to punish and torture me if I take his “loving suggestions” to heal. I am too emotionally exhausted and heartbroken to react to his gleeful contempt.

What I am told next, however, completely floors me. I am told that to guarantee my adherence to the limits of my anti-healing programming in the future, they will remove Mary, Elsa’s oldest daughter whom she had adopted when the was two months old, from the family. Elsa and the rest of the family will then be reprogrammed to completely have no memory that she ever existed. Mary will thus become a ‘hidden child’ that we could be with only at cult events and activities, or in our presentations in other countries.

“You bastards!” I spit at Jonathan and the other leaders there.

I look at my mother and Brogan. I cannot believe that they are colluding with this plan that would break my heart, as well as my children’s. My mother returns a cold look, “You were given many chances to come back. You made it evident that we need to take drastic measures.”

Jonathan smiles. Could I hate this man more?

“Since you did not want to return to the family, it is fitting that Mary will have no family,” he states. He proceeds to tell me that Mary will be reprogrammed to believe that she is a ward of the state who entered the foster care system at five years old because her mother was a drug-addicted prostitute who failed to care for her, and has lived with a series of abusive foster families since then. I turn my face away from them, sick at heart.

"Of course," he explains, "For any sign of unrest in you, I will personally ensure that Mary experiences extra 'loving care' from her foster family." I am not sure which is worse: the threat that my children will be tortured to death if I resist or rebel again, or the threat that they will be tortured for the long term.

Brogan, my mother and my Illuminati twin begin the reprogramming work that weekend by giving Jonathan access to large portions of my system. Prior to this, he only had access to the areas directly relevant to our anti-healing project. Jonathan and Taurus work very intensely on me for the next five days to bring me back into line.

The fear that my children would be tortured to death kept the amnesia between Ana and Elsa intact for another ten years. As Elsa, I believed that I had left the cult, was not being accessed, and was progressing in my healing. I truly believed that Jimmy was my safety and accountability from access, and that he and I were staying free together.

It was not until 2006, when my children were grown and had left home, that Ana shared with me the truth about my relationship with him and my ongoing cult activity. I was devastated when I learned the truth. My experience as Elsa shows clearly that even a survivor who is "healing", who is actively working on their memories and trauma, can still be active in the cult, and be completely unaware of this fact. The lack of awareness is often held in place by the belief that remembering would endanger those they love most, such as their children or spouse.

Notably, having multiple presentations, each with their own set of loved ones, gave the Illuminati even more leverage to use love to control me. My other Illuminati presentations – Trixie (the UK), Trudi (Germany) and Jeanne (France) were assessed to see if they had been 'infected' by Elsa's and Ana's rebellion. Since they had shown no sign at all of deviation from their programming and any attempts to heal, they were well rewarded for their continued amnesia and loyalty, and allowed to continue their happy lives in their respective countries. Jonathan and the other programmers also called these parts out and showed them videos of what happened to Elsa (the torture of her children, the loss of her children, finances, marriage, etc.), warning them that the same would happen if they ever were disloyal. Ana was also warned that if she was ever disloyal again, then the same devastations would be inflicted on Trixie, Trudi and Jeanne. It took another decade as well for these other presentations to start to remember, communicate with other parts, and come onboard with attempts to heal.

Chapter 31: Stripped

Just a few months later, I am in San Diego as Elsa for a supervised visit with my children. As usual, Jimmy, my “safe accountability” is with me. As Elsa, I am unaware that each visit lasts longer than I think, and that each visit involves Illuminati activity.

As Ana, I am fully aware of this. But even as Ana, I am unprepared for the hell that the Illuminati have been planning to unleash on me this time. According to their point of view, Ana/Elsa has been very disobedient and disloyal (an understatement, to put it mildly). Besides my recent attempt to defect while inpatient in Texas, I had been remembering and telling my therapist secrets that they didn’t want revealed, such as the name of the head trainer in San Diego that I worked under. Against orders, I had testified in defense of the nurse practitioner, Heather, who was being falsely accused of suggesting memories and unethical practice by the family of one of her clients with a history of ritual abuse. If all that was not enough, I had also given a four-hour tape-recorded testimony of how the cult in San Diego works, including where their leadership meets, how security is done, and the names of several leaders. The leadership are angry with me, to put it lightly, and they want revenge.

My mother meets me at the foyer of the facility and instructs me to put on my dress uniform with all my medals and stripes. Somehow, I do not have a good feeling about this; I had not received any notice that there was to be a formal event tonight. I get into her car. She informs me curtly that my children and Chuck are driving separately and will meet us at the estate. My discomfort increases.

The Illuminati members from San Diego are gathered on the grounds of the large private estate. Many high-ranking members are present, including the western regional council, and the U.S. national council which meets in Alexandria, Virginia. The national council chair calls me forward onto a stand. Before the gathered crowd, I am stripped of my rank. My medals and stripes are torn off of my uniform, then my uniform and underclothes are torn off, leaving me completely bare. The chair proclaims loudly, “You are nothing now. You are lower than a worm.”

He pushes me off the stand, and I fall forward into the dirt, stunned. Jonathan puts his booted foot on my head, and says, “Eat mud, worm” as he grinds my face into the ground.

Then the rapes begin. Over and over they violate me painfully with different objects. They bring in horses and dogs as well, since my defection shows I am a “whore of the worst degree” who has “strange appetites”. The leadership take turns urinating and smearing feces on me, so that everyone could see what a “traitor smells like”. For the next four days, I am publicly tortured in many ways. My humiliation is the main event and members at all levels are invited to watch what happens to someone who tries to defect, and who tells secrets. I am a public example to all.

I know they want me killed, and I cannot understand why I am allowed to live. Others present verbalize the same question: “Why isn’t she killed???” As Ana, I do not realize that there are others who have ordered that I am to be punished severely, yet allowed to live unmaimed; I am not high up enough in the Illuminati to know that the very top Illuminati leadership takes orders directly from the Order. My loyalty to Rome is still intact, creating amnesia to my life as a Jesuit, so I am not aware as Ana that Rome is protecting me from permanent injury and death.

Worse is yet to come. My children are brought out in front of the watching crowd and violently sexually abused. My ex-husband is punished, too, for not seeing what I truly was, for not turning me in sooner. He is tortured and humiliated, with sexually degrading acts, as he is asked, "Why did you let your dick lead you, and not your mind; why didn't you see what she was?" and other, similar questions.

I have been shown to be lower than dung publicly over and over, and my cries of pain at the torture of my children and ex-husband have shown to the Illuminati watching this the great emotional pain that awaits those who attempt to betray them.

After five days of public abuse, they take me to my former home in San Diego. Here, my ex and I are forced to watch my children's torture in front of me by leadership that I had formerly worked with, torture that shows how "the sins of the father fall on the children," torture meant to destroy any remaining love within my children for me, the traitor. My children are told over and over again, "You are being hurt because your mother is a traitor whore." This lasts for another three days.

My heart is broken, over and over again, and I cannot stop what is going on. I feel hopeless and sink into despair. By the time my 'visit' is over, my ex, children and I are terrified, anguished, grieving and emotionally and spiritually exhausted.

It is time to return to Texas. The Illuminati have finished having their torture fest with me and my family, and have taken their revenges both large and small.

They call Elsa back out to the front. My car is loaded with small presents, supposedly purchased while shopping there. Jimmy, my new husband, gets into the car with me. He is the spouse who supposedly was "keeping me safe" by being my "accountability" while seeing my children. In actuality, he delivered me to local leadership, keeping a close watch on me the whole time during the drive there.

I return to Texas in despair because I cannot bear to leave my children. However, I do tell my church how thankful I am that God protected me during the trip to see my children, and that nothing bad happened. I had asked them to pray for me during this trip. They were overjoyed to hear that these prayers were answered. I had no idea of what had actually happened. The amnesia and dissociative barriers were still intact, and the events of the weeks before have only served to strengthen them; the trauma of the past week is too overwhelming to touch. Deep inside, for a moment, Ana wishes that like Elsa, she too could forget what happened.

As this chapter shows, when a member of organized, international cults tries to defect, or is disloyal and spills internal secrets to others, there can be terrible retribution. A large portion of this retribution will be public, because they want to quench rumors and prove that the threats they make about what will happen "if you tell" or "if you disobey" really are true. But usually, they will publicly, very painfully and very slowly kill someone who defects and tells high security information. The only reason to explain the fact that I lived is twofold: God did not want me to die yet; and the Jesuit Fathers wanted me back in Rome, and so they put pressure on the Illuminati leadership to make an unforgettable example of me to others, but not to maim or kill me or my children.

I have not described in detail the ten days of non-stop abuse. It suffices to say that it was extreme and I was left wanting to die. Elsa mistakenly assumed the despair she felt driving out of San Diego was because she was leaving her children behind; she did not understand that it was due to the horrendous amount of trauma that they had all endured.

Being stripped of all my ranks, however, did not mean that I no longer had to work hard for the Illuminati. After the torture, I was still expected back at various jobs in the facilities. The distinction was that now I had no status, no rank, no leadership position, no access to information except under supervision, and any credit for any work I did was automatically given to others. This was part of the ongoing humiliation that they wanted me to experience, for in the Illuminati, status is everything and being stripped from leadership to slave levels is an unthinkable thought for most of its members.

Chapter 29: Leaving the Jesuits

As, Luce, the Jesuit cult presenter, I was observing everything that Ana and Elsa were going through. I hated every moment of it. I hated how they were treating the children. I hated that how both the Illuminati and the Jesuits were enslaving all their members. Unbeknownst to the Order, the way we were being treated and forced to treat others, combined with the moments of hope from the answered prayers of Ana and other parts, was now making it impossible for me to not try to defect to the true God's kingdom. I **cannot** live like this anymore.

In my heart, I pray secretly to God. Memories of what happened when I was 14 keep coming unbidden. I think about the other fathers I love, and the children I love. I feel so trapped. I do not have a plan; I cannot see a way to one.

I miss my scheduled pick-up to switch out with Lizzie and return to Rome. I leave a message containing a weak excuse about needing to observe two infants in the local facility whose programmers were reporting difficulties in managing failure-to-thrive.

I receive a reply to be ready to return in three days' time.

I go for a day's hike, leaving all my communication devices at the house, and miss this pick-up too.

When I get back to my house, Jimmy has made spaghetti for dinner. He turns away from the stove, switches into his Jesuit cult presenter, Joram, and hands me his cell phone. He tells me in Latin, "Tommie wants to talk to you."

Tommie is the Jesuit name of the person who has the cover identity or presentation of being my biological mother in the Illuminati. I sigh and take the phone. A call from Tommie is only marginally better than a call from Matteo or Mattie.

"Come home to Rome," Tommie tell me with no preamble.

"No," I reply. I do not explain. There is nothing more to say. I should be surprised that that "no" had flowed spontaneously out of my mouth to a father that I have vowed, over and over again, to obey since childhood. But I am not. I am just too weary of being a father deep inside to wonder at my heartfelt, unplanned "no". I have felt this way ever since my coming-of-age at 13, and I have nothing left in me to keep pretending to be the perfect Jesuit father.

I want God. I want to follow Jesus. I want again that love that I had been coerced to deny when I was 14, that I had tasted again as Ana.

"Come back, or die like a soldier of Rome, it's your choice." This is a deep, core command to obey or die, for my mother's loyalty to Rome supersedes any love for me. Coming from Tommie, not only my real biological mother, but one of my primary programmers from infancy, it is an extremely powerful command.

The next day, I go to a drug store. I buy, then take, a lethal dose of antihistamines. From my years of medical training in the Order, I know that an overdose of this medication is irreversible – there is no known drug to reverse its deadly effect. I cannot go to Rome, for they will harm the people I love, and then hurt me and them in terrible ways. It is better that I die than return to more pain. Within 15 minutes of the overdose, I feel dizzy and then pass out. Someone calls an ambulance and I am taken to a large trauma center.

I am in the emergency room, fighting for my life. The antihistamines are causing my heart rate to jump above 200, and the room is fading in and out as I pass out, and regain consciousness over and over again. A nurse has pumped my stomach and given me charcoal, but the drugs are in my bloodstream. A doctor comes over, and says, "I can give you some morphine, and you won't feel the seizures that happen before you die. I can give you enough for your death to be painless."

But suddenly, I want to live. I don't want to die. "What is the half-life of the drug?" I ask.

"Two hours," he says.

"Give me two hours to fight, please," I say.

"Okay," he tells me.

I keep fading in and out. I am switching through thousands of parts. My potassium goes to 2.0 due to the rapid heart rate, and a nurse gives me some IV potassium. Another nurse has brought a death kit in.

"Isn't it a little early for that?" the first nurse asks.

"She doesn't have a chance, it's just a matter of time," says the second nurse. "I wish you hadn't wasted the charcoal kit on her." These nurses don't realize that I can hear everything they are saying.

I am cold, very cold, the room feels dark. I am dying, I can feel it, and suddenly, a prayer from the depths of my soul comes out; I pray with my mind since I am incapable of speech. "God, I am so sorry that I tried to kill myself," I say, and mean it. "If you let me live, I will never try to kill myself again. Please, let me live." I black out.

It is the next morning, and I open my eyes. I can't believe it, I am still alive, and my heart is no longer racing like a racehorse in the home stretch. I am tired, so tired, and I have an IV in my arm. I see a policeman at the foot of my bed. He sees me wake up, and informs me that I am on a 72-hour hold; that I will be kept inpatient here for three days at the county hospital because of my very serious attempt to die. He then asks, "Did your husband try to kill you?"

I ask him why he is wondering this. "Well, he has a criminal record, and you sure fought hard to live. It looked like you really didn't want to die. In fact, you are a miracle to still be alive."

I agree. I will keep my promise to God, and never try to suicide again, because I believe He is the one who kept me alive, and without brain damage. God, and the 2,000 parts that switched out, rotating every few seconds, in a desperate fight for life all night long allowed me to live and retain normal brain function.

I am grateful that God spared my life that night. Somehow, in the midst of my despair and hopelessness, He infused me with enough hope to maintain that fight for my life that night. When I woke up the next day, my brain and mind surprisingly intact, as Luce, I rededicated my life to Him. I have no idea how I could possibly face what will be coming at me from the Order, but I ask Him to be with me in it. He wrapped His love around me that morning, and for the first time in over twenty years, I was truly comforted.

Chapter 30: Jesuit Punishment

It is three weeks after my suicide attempt, and I am in Rome as Luce. The fathers are very angry with me. My refusal to return and choose suicide instead has made it starkly clear to the Order that I no longer wanted to be a Jesuit father. In my weakened state after attempting suicide, however, Danny and Lizzie had visited and succeeded in persuading me to fly back to Rome with them. Returning to Rome was a horrible mistake on my part – the same mistake I had made when I was 14.

The generals, councilors and senators have been discussing what to do with me. As I wait in a glassed-in terrace, my twin brother Danny appears. He has an espresso in each hand, and hands me one. His face looks serious, and he is not greeting me with his usual jokes.

"Why?" he asks. "Why?"

I know what he is asking. *Why have I started believing again in the Christian God, in the Jesus that always lets people down? Why did I try to go rogue in Texas? Why can't I be loyal, like a true soldier of Rome?*

"Because what we are doing is wrong. What we serve is wrong. Deep down, you have to know it. This is evil, what we do, and I can't keep agreeing with it," I reply. "Turn to Jesus, Danny," I plead.

He puts his hands up in a halt gesture. "Hey, don't start preaching that stuff to me," he says. "Save it for the council."

I am called up before the council. They ask me to explain my actions. They want to know what has caused me to question the goodness of the Order, and to betray those I love most by refusing to return home. I give them the same answer that I gave my brother, and they are dissatisfied with it.

"What we are doing is not wrong; it is to bring in a new order of peace to replace the chaos of this mortal life," Mattheo tells me.

"How can you question the goodness of all of us, who have loved you through the years?" asks Lizzie.

"You are the one who is misguided, not us; you have allowed the propaganda about the traitor god to enter your soul," says Mara, a member of the mage council. The others all nod or murmur their assent.

"Yes, you are the one who is in error. How can you question the wisdom of thousands, over centuries, and believe you know better than the accumulated wisdom and knowledge of the generations and leaders who have come before you? What kind of misguided pride is this?" Vitali asks me.

"You must be taught the error of your ways, and have this pride humbled," Mattheo says, and the others all agree with one accord.

The teaching of my errors and the humbling begins. First, I am tortured for several days with electric shocks, and all manner of sexual violence. The skin is peeled off of different parts of my body, then the raw wounds are rapidly healed with our medical technology, so they can start peeling the same body parts again. All the while I am taunted: "Why doesn't the Christian God answer your prayers? Why is He allowing this to happen?"

Jesus does come and comfort me afterwards when I am alone and I pray. But it is getting harder and harder to reach out to Him, as I not only endure torture, but those I love are tortured as well.

Next, they place me in a room with no walls or windows, except a smooth steel door that lets people in and out using biometric security. I am chained to the wall. The children who play the roles of Elsa's children in America are being raped in front of me. They scream in English, "Mommy, help, help me!"

All the while, the rapists sneer and say "Pray, 'Christian', for your children. Pray!"

I pray, but the torment of my children continues for days. I am forced to watch helplessly as these tortures are applied to their bodies: hot rods inserted into their private parts; electric shocks; fingers broken in wooden vises, and more. The whole time, the cruel words ring through the room, "Why isn't your God answering your prayers? Pray harder, Christian. Maybe you don't have enough faith,".

I am wondering why God doesn't answer my prayers, for I am praying intensely. The seeds of doubt are being sown and taking hold. After four days, I am weeping, broken, and no longer praying. The torture of my American children and Jimmy, my husband, then stops. The fathers have achieved their goal of making me believe that God does not hear or answer my prayers. My children and I are released from the room.

I am in another room, chained. Conner, one of my dearest friends closer than a brother, and who has the role of Alan, my husband in Germany, is being tortured terribly in front of me.

"He is paying for your sins," says Mattheo, as he turns accusing eyes on me

Worse follows. Once Conner is near death, I am put into a room, like the one my children and I were in before. Conner is strapped to my back. He is dying, and Mattheo tells me, "You must bear the weight of your sins, because you were faithless to Rome when you questioned us."

Conner slowly dies on top of me. I keep telling him I love him, and he tells me that he still loves me. Just before he dies, he accepts Jesus, but I will not remember this later. Instead, they will make me believe that he went to hell after his death; I will agree to believe this to keep them from killing another brother. For three days, I carry his dead body on my back. The room is warm, and his body bloats and rots. I am told that I am smelling the "stench" of my "treachery". I start vomiting and become physically ill, and his body is taken off once I collapse during the third day. I am given nutrients, liquids and stimulants to revive me.

Later the same day, I am taken into another room. In the middle of the room, nailed to a cross, is Conner's bloated, dead body dressed grotesquely as Jesus.

"See? There is no 'resurrection' after three days," the programmers taunt me. I turn away and vomit, overcome with horror and anguish. I collapse from emotional and physical stress.

I am revived again, because they want to make an example of me for any other children or adults who might think of wanting to leave the Order. They have to show all members that the threats they make about what happens if you try to disobey, or break programming, are not idle ones.

I am in a room filled with crosses. Just as when I was 14, I am forced to recant my faith in Christus. Once again, I break, and recant my faith. I cannot stand seeing the torture of my loved ones, their cries of agony as they try to breathe while nailed to these crosses.

After I recant, they nail me to a cross for two days, and keep me conscious with drugs and IV medications. They tell me that Christus can never bear the weight of my sins because they are too great. Instead, I am told that I must do penance. I cry and wail in emotional and spiritual pain; my grief is unbearable.

Satan paces back and forth below, saying "Didn't I warn you this would happen to you if you were unfaithful to me? Did you forget what happened before when you betrayed me?" and similar accusations.

The children and adults in the Order come to see me hanging there. I am an example of what they do not want to become. They hurl urine and feces and insults at me. Some come up and use a metal rod to rape me with, saying that because I was such a filthy traitor, I am too "dirty" to touch. They leave, and come back every three hours to repeat my degradation in numerous ways.

I am in Rome for a month. After completely recanting and breaking, I am re-instated. Unlike in the Illuminati where I am demoted and kept at a low status over the next two decades, my re-instatement in the Order is complete – I am restored to all my previous leadership positions, privileges and duties. Ostensibly, this is a demonstration of Satan's "mercy" towards those who 'repent' and 'return to him after straying' – I am welcomed back just as the prodigal son was welcomed back by the loving father after squandering his wealth and feeding the pigs. The truth is that Satan and the programmers believe that the additional guilt of having to be responsible again for coordinating the wicked activities of the Order, and of constantly being honored as a competent and loyal servant of Satan, would actually serve to shame, burden and chain me far more effectively than the subtle martyrdom of demotion would.

While the Illuminati abuse was terrible, it was much less painful and spiritually devastating to me than the abuse by the Jesuit fathers. I had once again come to faith in Jesus and desired to break free of Satan's control; the Jesuits sought to crush my faith. To this day, I still do not understand why Conner, a brother I loved deeply, was killed instead of me. This is one of the questions I will have to ask God one day, when I stand before Him, although I suspect that when I do, all questions will be answered just by experiencing His goodness and glory. In His presence, my "Why?" will become instead, "Why are you so merciful to me, a sinner?"

The impact of the month of horror in Rome was felt throughout my system, even by parts who were programmed to be amnesic to cult life in the Order. As Elsa in the USA and Ana in the Illuminati, I recall that at this time, I felt like some part of me had died, as if I would never, ever be the same again, though I did not know why. While indescribably horrible, that month and my point of breaking and recanting was only the beginning. The months of reprogramming that followed my recanting involved even worse, and unimaginable, levels of physical, emotional and spiritual abuse. Another decade would pass before my Illuminati and non-cult systems would learn that we were also members of the Jesuit Order. The terrible events involved in my recanting, reinstatement and reprogramming created oceans of pain, sorrow and regret so overwhelming that my systems believed that we could never survive remembering.

I have struggled about sharing these events, in case it could cause some who are attempting to leave to reconsider, but I think it is important to acknowledge the costs that some organized occult societies try to inflict on any member who tries to leave. For many survivors, these are the terrible realities which they may have to overcome in order to choose freedom. It is so important that helpers and supporters understand the cost and magnitude of what survivors face when leaving their cults. Even in cults or government agencies that may not use the degree of violence that the Jesuits and Illuminati do, the *loss of relationship, identity, belonging and purpose involved in leaving the community that raised you can be overwhelming. In 2007, I did choose freedom again. Once more, it was extremely costly, and I will describe this journey in my next book which will be part three of my autobiography.*

Years later, when as Elsa, I struggled with horror, devastation, grief, despair and panic as the layers of parts that stood between the cult and non-cult systems stood aside, and I listened to these terrible, terrible memories. Along with Luce, I wept and struggled to believe that God cared at all for me, because He allowed me to experience these things. I screamed at Him, "Why didn't you let me die?!? Are You so cruel that You let me live after going through this, and others better than me died or were hurt???? What kind of God are you?!?" These screams lasted weeks and I went through a real faith crisis. I felt as if my faith was dead, nailed to the cross I described above, which was the whole intent of the fathers when they put me through this scenario. I thought God had to be malicious, cruel, terrible or He would prevent human beings from being capable of things like this. I was nauseated by the platitudes Christians gave in response to my anguished cry of "Why????"- mouthing platitudes to me regarding free will. I wanted God to have made men without choice, if these things are what they choose. I thought I knew better than God regarding how the universe should be. I told Him that He was messed up to have created a world where people did these things. I could not reconcile a 'good God' with how a good God could allow men to be created and to fall, and to control other men to the degree that they do these terrible things..

It took years to process the feelings, and always, I did not get an explanation of why from Him. God did not hate me or turn away despite my rage at Him, but instead, gently comforted me, stood beside me and listened as I told Him how I felt about it all. His love was there, and I hated Him for loving me. I feared His love would cause me to choose Him once again. Then, the Order would start all these awful, terrible, unbearable events all over again. They had told me that He and my faith in Him was the cause of the pain, and that they would have to 'do it all over again' if I ever trusted Him again. I believed them.

But over time, I saw that this, too was a programming script of the cruelest kind. They wanted me to blame God for what Satan caused. Of course, the question, "Well, why did He create Satan then????" came. I am not a theologian. I am merely a survivor. I have no profound, scholarly answer for such questions. I only have the knowledge felt deep within during this struggle that without choice, there is no love; the ability to choose even this depth of evil is the price of the ability to love. He wants us to know His love and not to be automatons. And somehow, in the midst of unthinkable evil and pain, He is present, holding out His wounded hands, His body that experienced everything that I did during this time, and more. He did not abandon me in the midst of my pain. Instead, He took everything I experienced, all the sin, the terror, the horror, the betrayal, the wounding, the rejection onto Himself and understood what I had gone through. He was not at all asking me to come to Him with my pain and trauma without deeply understanding what this type of pain and trauma feel like within Himself. He was present with me in these events, in a way that I cannot understand, any more than I can understand the "Why?" of it all. What I do know is that God deeply loves each person He has created. My experiences are not "proof" that He doesn't care, but rather, that regardless of what we go through, He does care, cares enough that He chose to go through it with us at the cross, to provide healing.

Chapter 32: Rewarded and Controlled

Three more years pass. As Elsa/Ana, I have been writing an online blog exposing the Illuminati, in part because I am angry about the things that happened to me and to my children during my humiliation (Ana), and the loss of custody (Ana/Elsa). I continue working on healing from ritual abuse and cult programming, believing as Elsa that I was no longer active in the Illuminati. I have no idea that my hard work on healing is limited by the programming I was given by Jonathan and the others to try but never really heal. I attend church, read the Bible, and pray constantly for my children's safety and their reunification with me. I do not remember that I still frequently see them at cult events, or in my identities in other countries. I re-open the custody case for my children with a paralegal. Finally, I am allowed to have first, supervised visitation in Texas, and then un-supervised visitation.

My two children fly out from San Diego to see me in Texas for ten days.

The visit is coming towards an end. It is three days before my children are supposed to return to California. I am talking to my daughter in the front yard, and I am crying. "I don't want you kids to have to go back there," I tell her.

"Why?" my daughter asks me.

"Because bad things happen there," I reply.

My daughter starts shaking and shaking, as if she is having a seizure. "My protectors don't want me to go back either!" she screams. "Anabel is terrified of going back. She will get hurt there!"

"Who is Anabel?" I ask my daughter.

"One of my inside people," my daughter tells me. The rest of the day, she has numerous flashbacks, and tells me, "I don't want to go back to California. Help me."

My son, who is four years younger than his sister, asks what is going on. "I'm remembering what happened in California," she tells him.

My son also has flashbacks of being raped and hurt with a cattle prod, and tells me about them.

I call my ex in California. "I can't let the children go back, no matter what you do to me," I tell him.

"I'm flying out, right away," he says. "I will come and get them."

The next afternoon, my ex arrives. "I'm taking the children back with me. You will go to jail if you don't let them go with me." I am crying.

My daughter comes into the room. "Don't make me go back, Daddy," she sobs.

The next day is Sunday. Because my ex is very religious, he goes to church with me. After the service, when the others are gone, I ask him, "Please don't let the children go back to what's happening there. I don't want them to get hurt."

"Well, I don't remember anything like that," he tells me. "Wouldn't I know if something was going on?"

"We're in church. Why don't you pray, and ask God if what I've been telling you is true?" I respond.

"Okay." he says. He kneels on the carpet between the pews, and says, "If this is true, God, and not some kind of insane delusion, show me. Because I don't believe it's true."

Suddenly, he starts shaking and his face turns white. "Oh, my God!" he screams. "Oh, God, it's true!" He looks at me and asks, "What do I do? What do I do?"

I quickly teach him a simple grounding technique, and help him to calm down.

The next day, my ex comes to my house. He has seen a notary, and shows me two sheets of paper that he has signed and notarized, giving me full custody of my children. He tells me, "I am going back to California, then will be moving here to Texas. I need to get out, too."

My children now come to live with me fulltime. I am overjoyed and share about this miracle with many in my church and online. I reduce my online writing to sporadically answering survivor and therapists' questions so that I can focus on caring for my children.

The "miracle" I, Elsa, have celebrated with others at church –getting custody of my two children - was actually a setup. At that point, because I was amnesic to my current activity in the Illuminati and had very limited communication between parts in my system, I had no idea that the Illuminati had granted me custody in order to strengthen their control over me. It all looked so authentic – my children's tears and fears of returning to San Diego, my ex-husband's prayer and sudden revelation. It was easy to believe because I wanted so much for my children to be safe with me. It was also easy to believe because my children and ex were **not** *actually consciously lying or pretending – their front, non-cult parts had been programmed to start remembering the cult and to believe they were remembering spontaneously – just as I had been programmed to do so several years prior (see Chapter 23).*

There were several pieces to my children being returned to me. One was reward by the Illuminati. Elsa had, for the most part, been compliant with her programming to only 'heal' within designated parameters, never remembering or disclosing her current cult activities. Maintaining programming entails rewarding desired behaviors; only punishing forbidden behaviors produces weaker programming. Based on basic behavioral theories, the programmers knew that it was important to reward Elsa for three years of good behavior. Hence, they gave her back her children after programming her to believe that it was an answered prayer from God. Or at least, they returned two of the three children. The non-cult presenters' amnesia to Elsa's adopted daughter, Mary, was kept intact as a reminder of the consequences of disloyalty.

The other piece was control. For Ana, who was completely aware that her children being allowed to live with her when she was in the USA was an Illuminati decision, it served to remind her that she was under their control. They could give and take away all the things that were most important to her. For Elsa, mentioned earlier, she had been compliant 'for the most part'. Where she had continued to be non-compliant was in her writings as svali where she/Ana were sporadically releasing unauthorized information. It was the job of her two children, now that they were with her, to remind her of the consequences of such actions or other acts of disloyalty. In fact, Elsa rarely wrote as svali after Chuck gave her custody of Sandra and Sammy. Her two children, along with Jimmy or Sagit, were there to monitor and control her, and she to monitor them, as is typical between the members of any Illuminati family.

The third piece, for the Jesuits, was convenience. Sandra and Sammy were Jesuit children, our next generation of infiltrating the Illuminati. Sandra was 14, and so had come of age and had been given her adult name, Father Mark. She was already a very skilled programmer and agent. Luce and Mark being together meant that they could easily discuss observations of the Illuminati, debrief on the progress and impact of the infiltration, make calls to Rome and *so on when at home and in their own car. Both their house, car, home computers, etc., was bugged by the Illuminati, but the Order's technology was used to override the Illuminati surveillance in order to communicate securely with other Jesuits locally and internationally.*

In fact, memories of the wider context, as I continued to work on communication between my non-cult presenter systems, my Illuminati systems, and my Jesuit systems, suggest that ultimately, it had been the Jesuits who were behind my children being returned to me. Jonathan and several of the Illuminati leaders, out of spite and vengeance, would not have changed the custody arrangements. At most, Elsa would have been given a supervised two-week vacation with them once a year to reward any programming compliance. A number of Illuminati members had never stopped agitating for my death, especially as I continued writing as svali. The Order did not favor this idea because it could negatively impact our multigenerational infiltration efforts. Therefore, our higher-ranking infiltrators in the Illuminati 'decided' instead that the children would be returned to both reward and control Elsa/Ana, much to the annoyance of Jonathan and the others who resented me in the Illuminati.

Chapter 33: Life Continues

I am now 43 years old. In America as Elsa, I am working three jobs out of necessity. Jimmy, my second husband, is unable or unwilling to work. I am working 40 hours a week as a manager for an Internet company. I teach English as a Second Language (ESL) classes two evenings a week, and I have started a business, writing content for websites and ghostwriting medical articles. The latter is becoming successful and I am starting to build my savings again.

My daughter Sandra, after her initial joy at coming to live with me, has become sullen and withdrawn. She is angry all the time, refuses to participate in school activities, and tells me that she misses her friends in San Diego. My son Sammy is glad to be with me, but is showing severe posttraumatic stress from years of abuse. He struggles with bedwetting at the age of 12, compulsive overeating, and chronic nightmares. Both children experience flashbacks that wake everyone in the house up several times a month, while I am working an exhausting schedule to pay the bills.

Both of my children see a therapist who specializes in severe trauma and DID. I drive them weekly to their appointments, which my ex-husband pays for. He has moved to Texas from California, and is remembering that he was active in a cult in San Diego, and is trying to heal from his own PTSD.

It is 3 am six months later. My 15-year old daughter is awake, screaming. I go into her bedroom, and find her flailing her arms and legs, screaming "Get him off of me! Get him off!" I sit next to her on her bed, and she puts her head on my chest, crying, in wailing sobs.

"It was just a nightmare," I tell her, as she cries and cries.

"It was...horrible!" she wails. "I wasn't asleep; it was like I was day dreaming. I was in a room with all these people, and they were chanting to Satan. Then, this large man got on top of me." She shudders as she recalls the memory. "He raped me! He raped me!" she screams. "I couldn't breathe! I felt like I was suffocating, he was so big and I was so little!"

I hold her close as she shakes, telling her, "It's not happening now. It's in the past. I'm here with you. You're safe now. He isn't here."

I encourage her to look around the room and see that she is safe. I place her hand on the sateen cover of her bed, and have her feel the cloth. She calms a bit, then wails, "I feel dirty, I want to clean it all off." I talk with her awhile longer, then go and run her a warm bath. After she bathes, I wait, and after her bath, we talk for two hours, until she can finally fall back to sleep.

Two hours later, my alarm rings. I have to go into work at 9 am, and I get dressed quickly. My daughter is sound asleep, and I decide to let her sleep in this day. I wake her briefly to let her know that she can reach me at work, since my husband will be home all day, and she won't be alone. At noon, I call to check on her, and she tells me she is okay.

It is 1 am, three days after the New Year, a year later. My son wakes up screaming. I sit with him for two hours as he abreacts memories of being raped and tortured. My husband is angry with my son, telling me I should tell him to go to bed, and this infuriates me. I hold Sammy, while he sobs and asks me, “What kind of people send a kid to Russia, the UK, France and Germany, all in the space of a week? Why did they make me stay in a dark dungeon in Russia? Why?”

I don’t have an answer; all I can do is to tell him is that I love him, and that he is safe now. Finally, exhausted, he falls asleep. Afterwards, I am able to sleep for three hours before I go in to work. Since it is still Christmas break, my son goes in to work with me. Jimmy, my husband, stays home to do what he does a large part of the time: play online fantasy role playing video games.

This is my life for the next four years, as my children struggle through high school and I take them to weekly therapy. I assume that they are working hard on the issues that are causing the frequent abreactions and nightmares.

It is three years later. My daughter is 18 and is getting ready to go to college. Her therapist, who specializes in DID, the same one my son is seeing, has called a family conference. When I go in, to my amazement, the therapist tells me that she believes it would be better for my son to live with my ex, who is requesting custody.

I stare at her, incredulous. “But my ex is the one who let them be abused all those years in San Diego,” I tell her.

“That’s not what your children and ex are telling me,” she replies. “They say that there was no abuse, that it was your putting ideas in their heads,” I hear from her.

“But what about the nightmares, the abreactions, the suicidality?” I ask, still incredulous.

“They tell me they are fine, *that you are making all of this up*,” she answers. I hear in her censorious, accusatory tone the unspoken words, *“You crazy woman – those poor kids of yours.”*

“Why didn’t you tell me this years ago?” I ask, angry. “I have been driving them here for four years, and only now I hear this?”

“Because you weren’t the one paying the bill. Your ex-husband was. I did parental conferences with him, not you.”

“Well, he wasn’t the one holding them when they cried and screamed and abreacted,” I retort, hurt and confused.

“He and your children tell me you are making all of this up.”

“You’re telling me you think I’m a liar, or delusional,” I say, stunned and angry.

“I’m telling you what *your children* have been telling me in therapy for the past *four years*,” she responds.

My ex gets custody of my son the next day. He is 17, a senior in high school.

Later, I ask my son why he lied to his therapist. “Because Dad lets me do a lot of things that you won’t,” he tells me. “He lets me stay out late and drink beer with my friends, and doesn’t ask me who I’m going out with, unlike you.”

My son is a minor, and I am not happy to hear about what his father allows.

I ask my daughter why she lied about me to her therapist. “Because I hate you, bitch,” she answers. “You left me alone with that asshole- my father- and he raped me. I will never forgive you for that.”

I am left speechless. I realize that there is nothing I can do. I pray for them, since there is nothing else I can do.

Two months later, my daughter comes home for a weekend from college. “My roommate is in the cult,” she tells me.

“Maybe you should tell your therapist about this,” I suggest. “This could be really bad, you know.”

She laughs at me. “No, because I went back years ago, Mom. I just hid the fact that I did from you. You are pretty clueless at times, you know.”

I know. I don’t reply to Sandra’s statement. What is there to say? I try to process this new information, and feel very sad and weary at all the lies.

Six months later, my daughter is highly suicidal, and can barely function. She goes inpatient into a unit for dissociative disorders for a week. I decide to continue loving and supporting her, regardless of what she has said about me to others.

When she gets out, she tells me that she had secretly been calling her friends in San Diego for years, and meeting with cult people. She then tells me pointblank, “I never got out, and never wanted to. *That was all an act.*” She smiles at me, “I am back with the cult fulltime now, at college, and am glad I am. I never wanted to leave.”

These memories are extremely difficult to share. Even now, more than twenty years later, as Elsa, I can feel the sting of the overwhelming hurt, humiliation, betrayal and bewilderment I felt when I learned that my precious children had been lying to me, slandering me to the therapist and relatives, and that they did not actually want to be with me. I realized for the first time that year, as Elsa, that their abreactions, nightmares, tears and other symptoms had been a carefully planned and programmed script to make me believe that we were healing together and that all was well. The words ‘devastated’, ‘heartbroken’, and ‘crushed’ are inadequate to describe the impact of this realization that my children had not been safe with me at all.

I had no idea that other parts in me – Ana and Luce – had always known this fact about my children; my programmed belief that Elsa remembering would mean the cult will kill my children had kept my amnesia completely intact. In fact, my account in this chapter shows that at that point as Elsa, I still not did actually have any memory of my children’s current Illuminati or Jesuit lives; my pain was a response to Sammy and Sandra themselves telling me to my face about their lies and slander, their desire to be away from me, and to remain in the cult. Why they stopped the pretense the year Sandra went to college is still a mystery to me. Possibly, it was simply to hurt Elsa, as a continued consequence of having betrayed the Illuminati several years ago. That is, Elsa, unlike my other presentations who had stayed loyal (Trixie, Trudi and Jeanne), was not allowed to be happy. Even prior to my children’s hurtful disclosures, as Elsa, I was constantly exhausted, overworked and subject to financial abuse by my husband Jimmy.

As Elsa, I would remain amnesic to my own and my children’s cult lives for over another ten years. When different parts started to communicate on these issues again after I left the Jesuit Order in 2007, the rest of the picture that came out was even more devastating. Not only were my children still completely cult active when they lived with me in their teen years, but they had been sent back to me to control and handle me. Just as I as Ana had monitored and reported on their presentation programming when they were children and conducted regular reinforcements on them at home using mobile programming tools (see Chapter 19), they were monitoring me, reporting on and reinforcing my programming at home. The first time I recalled my teenage daughter placing a programming helmet on me at our home in Texas, I was in shock for days. It was just as stunning and painful for me to learn that Jimmy was actually a member of the Illuminati too, and that he had also been handling and controlling me. As Elsa, I had truly loved and trusted him, despite his financial irresponsibility.

I knew, as these memories came back, that their behavior was 'normal' and 'typical' for an Illuminati family. Had any of the three of them shown deviation from their programming in front of me during that period, I would have had to switch into Ana, and done the same to them. All families in international and larger national groups are programmed to report on one another, to report any signs of discontent or programming breakdown to leadership, and to draw one another back into the circle of the group. An individual's handlers are often members of their family, whether spouse or children. Nonetheless, it was an extremely painful thing to learn, and I cried for months. The pain is often what makes accessing and clarifying memories so difficult: as human beings, it can be easier to deny that the people we love most may be hurting us, or not wanting the best for us. This, along with the rejection, betrayal and sense of being used that being coerced or "handled" causes, usually strengthens amnesia for many survivors.

Chapter 34: Light of the World

It is the year 2000, I am nearly 44 years old. As Luce, I have continued to work hard for the Order. I have retired from my position as the fourth general due to age, and now serve as a senator. Just as Mattie and Mattheo did for younger members of the Order, besides my own missions and projects, I spend much time guiding and mentoring up-and-coming leaders from various units in according to my specific areas of expertise in science, programming, and politics. After a few years of captaining the 33, I was now also officially retired from the 33, but was often called on to assist in analyzing intelligence from the ground, and to provide my thoughts on which of the younger children might be future candidates for the 33.

It is the Christmas season, so the facility is beautifully decorated. But I have no joy in it. One of my genetic daughters, Felix, the best and brightest of her generation, is pregnant with Satan's child. Due to improved genetics, and spiritual support from a team to help her carry the spiritual oppression from the hybrid fetus, Felix has survived the pregnancy, reaching the ninth month. She is the first person to have made it this far in carrying a son of Satan, and the fathers treat her with worshipful care, respect and tenderness. Her eyes, though, reflect the weariness and despair from the darkness and oppression she is carrying in her womb. No 16-year-old should ever have a look like that in her eyes.

Very early on December 21st, as soon as midnight passes, Felix goes into labor. Her closest peers and mentors are in attendance. As I hear her screams, I hold her hand and try to send her my love with everything in me. Her twin sister wraps an arm around her shoulders, whispering words of love and encouragement. We fear that delivering the child will kill her from the physical, emotional and spiritual anguish.

Theo, or Satan in his beautiful form, is also there. He looks down at her on the birthing bed. He smiles. He tells us that since Felix is bearing the 'savior of the world', the 'light of the world', it would be fitting that she be crucified during the labor. I almost pass out. For a moment, I hope against hope that he is only making a rhetorical statement. He waves a hand in a *do it now!* gesture. Vitali murmurs an order to one of the other fathers in the room who leaves to obtain the equipment needed for this cruel, cruel act.

I watch numbly as her twins and Vitali, who I know love my daughter like their own lives, place her on a cross and nail her hands and feet to it. She screams, and arches her back against the cruel wooden cross with hands and feet nailed to it, as the labor goes on and on. We are all relieved when after twenty-four hours, Satan allows us to remove her from the cross. As we attend to her wounds, I tell her, "Stay; we love you, don't give up. You can do this, you're not alone."

She is in labor for three days. Lucient, her son, is born late on December 23rd. The child is physically beautiful. As the mother of his mother, I had been given the honor of being the one to catch him when he was born, then place him in his father's arms. Others are gathered around atan as he holds his newborn son. They have looks of awe and adoration, mixed with a slight unease. I see the satisfied, smug smile on Satan's face, and hide a shudder.

My daughter is near death. I and others, including her twin sister and brother, are trying to keep her alive emotionally and physically in the aftermath of this terrible birth. She is nearly comatose, but I give her sips of broth and tell her how much I love her. Her sister does the same, looking into her eyes and saying "I love you. Don't die and leave me."

As the hours pass, my daughter slowly revives then nurses her tiny son. To do so, she takes a golden knife, and cuts her breast enough to allow some blood to flow along with the milk, since Nephilim infants need blood as well as milk for nourishment. I grimace a bit at the thought of the pain this causes her, but the infant nurses greedily on this mixture of food and personal sacrifice. The birth had long, torturous, and nearly cost her life. Feeding him would cost her both blood and milk. I wonder what else he will cost her as he grows up.

By the next morning, Felix is nearly recovered. She is dressed like royalty in a deep, rich blue velvety robe trimmed with gold, and with golden slippers and a gold hairnet over her thick, dark hair. She still looks pale and shaky, but has received numerous injections of nutrients and fluids to support her recovery. Her infant son rests in her arms, then yawns and opens his blue, blue eyes and stares around the room. The hairs on the back of my neck go up, for this baby is looking at each of us, even this young, as if measuring us. A small halo of light surrounds his body, faint in the daylight, and I wonder what kind of being this is.

Theo is looking proud. “We will let the world see him in three more days,” he announces, “at a special banquet to celebrate his birth.” It is understood that this banquet will be attended by the heads of international occultic societies and carefully selected world leaders who have traded their souls and their countries to Satan in return for power. They will be shown this very special infant, and their allegiance to him will be required.

I leave Felix to help with the planning and preparations for the banquet. This is expected, and I dare not disobey my orders.

It is late the next day, and I come into my daughter’s chambers. Theo has left for a moment, carrying his young son into a room where the Vatican council meets.

“How are you?” I ask her, knowing that this is a stupid question. How can she be okay after…this?

“I’m okay, a little tired,” she answers. I look into her eyes and see the despair and trauma that this event has left on her soul. I hold her hand. “I love you,” I tell her.

“I know,” she answers. “That’s why I’m still alive, because you and my twins and the others love me. Otherwise, I would just have let go and not come back…”

I note that she does not mention her new son in this list of reasons she has survived this recent trauma to her heart, body, soul and spirit; there is no joy in the birth of a Nephilim child. I hold her quietly for a while, and then leave.

As I go, I see my daughter’s twins enter the room, and smile sadly at them. They return the sad smile, for they also understand that Lucient’s birth has changed the world – or so the Order believes. I wonder if they also wonder just what we have actually accomplished, in spite of all of the prophecies and eager awaiting that has occurred over the past few centuries. For this tiny infant does not seem like a “light” to me at all, but like something much darker. I leave the room, and go back to my duties, still bothered deep within. But I can tell no one of these secret doubts, for all must be joy and delight when discussing this being, and I join in as expected.

It is a few days later. A huge banquet hall has been set up with the finest place settings: gold and crystal, the most exquisite china, silk and linen. On a raised dais are my daughter, Lucient, Theo, and the current black pope, Vitali. Several people close to my daughter are also honored at a side table on this dais. There is laughter, joy and expressions of delight by the people honored to be invited here: the heads of the international occultic societies from around the world, and the carefully selected world leaders who have also given themselves to serve Satan. They believe Satan's newborn son is the "light of the world" whose arrival has been prophesied for generations, the "anointed one" who will lead the world into a new era. Knowing how painful and traumatic this "light's" entry was into the world, how it almost cost the life of my daughter, and the uneasy feelings I have each time I look into the infant's eyes, I struggle to maintain a demeanor of celebration to match those around me.

The infant will have mentors and tutors, and I am to be one of them. I dread this, because I know how difficult it is to work with Nephilim children. All who will work with this child must overcome a deep sense of instinctive dislike and unease. We will also have to protect ourselves from the terrible things he, like other Nephilim, can do, such as send tremendous horror or terror like a black cloud at those who hold them. We will also have to cope with the emotional impact of working with a creature that does not have to be trained to overcome reluctance at killing a human being, but enjoys inflicting pain, horror and death. The critical part of this infant's socialization will be to teach him not to give in to his lusts, but to wait for these "rewards" at the appropriate time. In other words, this infant will require special tutoring in order to prevent unnecessary deaths. The other trainers and I have learned this much over the years, working with the Nephilim infants that did survive in our ongoing project conducted in various facilities around the world (see Chapter 16).

Deep inside my spirit, beneath layers of trauma and programming, I know that this infant will bring chaos and destruction to mankind, if the occult prophecies are true that he is the "light" so long awaited. I desperately want to get away from him, and everything he represents. Deep inside, I plan to try to escape once again, in spite of the huge amount of pain and trauma that previous attempts have brought. I **cannot** be part of introducing this being to the world at large, and do not want to be his grandmother. I will do whatever it takes to break free.

I do know that what I have written here will be hard for many to believe. I do believe my memories, though, and how I wish that this was not true, and that I was not part of helping to bring this great evil into the world. I have asked God's forgiveness many times for my involvement in bringing the Nephilim back to earth; it has been a struggle many times to forgive myself because of the evil that such beings seek to inflict on mankind.

While I do believe my memories of Lucient being born, I want to make it clear that I do not claim that he is indeed the personage who is the 'antichrist' described in the book of Revelation. Satan claims that he is, and the Jesuit Order claims that he is; Satan may be lying, and the Order may be mistaken. What I can say without hesitation is that this product of man and fallen angel is evil indeed, and cannot possibly bring anything good into the world. The entire hybrid project was a sin against the God of the Bible, the sin that mankind before the flood in Genesis was committing. The flood described in Genesis shows God's judgment regarding this terrible sin, which the Jesuit Order was dedicated to replicating, with what I believe could be fearful consequences indeed. It is really a very bad idea to disregard God's commands and to listen to Satan's very bad ideas instead.

Epilogue

This book covers the years from age 14, when I first ran away and tried to escape, through age 43. During those years, I show the effect on me first as a young teen, and later as an adult, of the programming I endured since I was in the womb on my beliefs, behaviors, and spirituality. But I also show here my deep desire to be free of the cult, even as a highly programmed adult in the group. They could program me, but not completely take away my deep, innate desire to be free of the abuse and terror that serving Satan creates in the members of the Jesuit Order – and many other groups that serve this creature, as well. While I struggled to break away, and was reaccessed and reprogrammed, I could not agree with what the Order was doing, as I share in this book. It would be seven years after this book ends that I would find real, lasting physical safety for the first time in my life, and begin really healing and remembering not only what my front presentations knew, but my real life growing up in a Jesuit cult facility. I will cover these years in the third book, *Getting Free*.

I don't want to leave people feeling that it is "too hard to get free" or discouraged. I debated whether or not to share on these pages what it was really like to try and get away, and the awful things that the Jesuits did to punish me as a result. But how can we help survivors, if we don't understand what they are up against, when they show up in a counseling center, or a church office, courageously asking for help? Uninformed help can be as bad as no help at all, and a simple pat on the head and quick Bible verse will not meet the needs of an individual who may be literally fighting for their life, and struggling against the forces of hell itself. I chose to share the full, real story here, because we need to know how these groups operate (realizing that all groups do not act as the Jesuits do, many groups do things very differently, but retaliation in some form against disloyalty is almost universal among organized occultic groups). My hope is that this autobiography will help inform therapists and ministers of what survivors face, and help them think about what might be helpful to them as a result.

I feel that I would be remiss if I did not share the real source of strength and courage in my life over the years, a source that never failed me throughout my journey, and how to know Him yourself: Jesus, the true Son of God, and the One who will reign for all of eternity when the occultic "Light of the World" is not even a faint memory one day.

This was the prayer I prayed at age 14: "Dear Jesus, I acknowledge to You that I am a sinner – that I have done things in my life that were wrong. I agree with the verse in Romans: "all men have sinned and fall short of the glory of God." I sinned against You and God in the things that I have done or thought, or failed to do in my own life, and I ask for your forgiveness, because you went to the cross, died for my sins, and took my sin and the sins of the whole world on yourself. You were the blameless sacrifice for my sins, and because of your death on the cross, You purchased my complete forgiveness and redemption. Thank You for dying for my sins, and I receive what You did for me, the forgiveness of sins. By doing so, I am a child of God, a new creation in Christ."

My greatest hope is that if you do not know Jesus personally as your savior, that you will pray this prayer and receive the gift of what He has done for you. As you can see from my story, He can forgive ANYTHING – and I mean ANYTHING, as will be shown even further in the final volume of this series.

About the Author

Since 1999, svali has written articles and led online groups to help educate survivors and the public regarding dissociation, ritual abuse, mind control and the work of organized occult groups internationally. Her articles and free book (*Breaking the Chain*) have been translated into five languages and read by both survivors and therapists around the world. Her book about how programming is done and suggestions on how to heal, *It's Not Impossible*, has also been translated into four languages, and has been used by survivors, therapists, prayer ministers and those who support survivors from around the world to gain a greater understanding of these topics. She has also written *Never Give Up, Part 1* of her autobiography, covering the first 13 years of her life while growing up in a cult facility, in order to promote a better understanding of how one organized, well-funded occultic society does its programming.

A former trainer for an international occultic group, she left the group nineteen years ago, and currently helps to educate others about topics related to ritual abuse and mind control through articles and podcast interviews.

You can learn more about svali and read other articles she has written on her personal blog: .svali speaks again.wordpress.com.

---

[1] *Never Give Up* provides information on how the Order programs their children to have numerous parts who live different 'cult' and 'non-cult' lives, and how they manage the logistics of maintaining cover stories in the various countries for the Illuminati and 'ordinary, non-cult' presenters.

Design a site like this with WordPress.com

svalispeaksagain 3:46 pm on June 21, 2024

Tags: dissociation (41), healing (52), mind control (86), occult (23), programming (75), ritual abuse (82), SRA (62)

Never Give Up – Chapter 8 Excerpt

This is one section from Chapter 8 in my autobiography, Never Give Up, about sex parties.

Trigger warning: mentions sexual abuse of young children

I am four years old. My twin sister, Elizabeth, and I are naked, covered only with dark blue velvet cloaks. Around our necks are jeweled collars, and we are being led in on a lease as if we are a pair of dogs by one of the fathers. Once inside the huge room which is filled with adults in various states of dress and undress, many with wine or cocktail glasses in the hand, we wait.

There is a large raised pedestal in the middle of the room. It is about four feet by four feet, made of granite, with small steps in the back. Liz and I watch as one by one, young children are led up to the pedestal. They must stand, naked, while adults in the room "bid" for the chance to have sexual activities with each child for the night. The trainers discuss the sexual training that each child has, and bids are made with small, hand-held fans encrusted with jewels, scarlet and blue patterns, and gold leaf. Winners of each bid come up to the platform to collect their prize for the night.

Liz and I are two of the lucky ones. We each have a special temporary tattoo that lets those bidding know that we cannot be killed, although we can be used for anything else. This tattoo is a reminder that if we are killed, the person who killed us will suffer severe consequences, due to our "belonging" to an extremely influential person who wants us kept alive. We are on "loan" for the night, supposedly by the German father over the Illuminati, and we are supposedly his bastard children who have other skills that make him want us alive.

At some point, Liz and I are taken and led by our leashes onto the pedestal. I feel ashamed and embarrassed to be on display, naked, before a roomful of people, but have learned to hide this. I smile

Privacy & Cookies: This site uses cookies. By continuing to use this website, you agree to their use.
To find out more, including how to control cookies, see here: Cookie Policy

Close and accept

go to her. She does not tell me her name, but it is obvious that she is wealthy and powerful, not only from her jewels, but her body language and speech.

“What can you do, little girl?” she asks. While the trainer has already discussed my skills, she wants to hear it from me; maybe this is some type of test, or maybe she wants to humiliate me further.

“What do you like?” I reply, as I have been coached by my trainers.

She smiles and describes her favorite extremely sadistic activities. Her teeth are white and gleaming as she smiles. With dismay, I realize that those same teeth will be used soon to bite me in extremely sensitive, private areas. I tremble slightly, knowing that this is what she wants to see, but my reaction is not completely acting. I am sorry a woman bid because they can be some of the cruelest, most sadistic abusers. It is almost as if they have spent years devising ways to give “payback” for their own early sexual abuse but with interest. I have always wondered why they seem to be most vicious to little girls, wondered whether this is working out their own childhood abuse on a child that reminds them of themselves, but I never voice this out loud to a client. I do voice these thoughts with the fathers during debriefing afterwards.

I perform well. I let the sadistic woman have her way with me for hours. She seems very inventive, and I feel worn out emotionally and physically by the early morning. I am also sore everywhere. I have screamed appropriately, sensing that this is what this woman wants to hear as she abuses me. Finally, finally she herself is tired and falls asleep. Quietly, I get up and look for my twin. I worry about her in situations like this, as I know she worries about me. Tattoo or no tattoo, there is always the concern that a client might get carried away and go too far; many enjoy abusing children to death. But to my great relief, I see her sitting in a corner of the room, half asleep.

The father who brought us in, who is thought of in the German Illuminati as one of their trainers, but is actually a Jesuit father, sees that we are done with our clients. He brings my sister and me our cloaks. We are grateful to be covered, that the night is almost over, and leave with him. Outside, he takes us into a waiting van, unsnaps our leashes, and talks to my sister and me.

“You did very well,” Father Carlotti starts. “You both performed perfectly with the clients.”

I then realize that like me, he also had concerns, and was monitoring both of us and our clients closely during the night in hopes to intervene in time if something life-threatening seemed to be imminent.

Carlotti asks, “What did you learn while you were there?” He is asking us for intel, prompting us to report the conversations among adults in the room that we were listening to throughout the night, adults who did not suspect that four-year-old children were capable of being agents with photographic memories who would report any information discussed by them while in a drunken state. We give him the information he requests.

Once we are in a safe house not too far away, one owned by the Order, Lizzie and I are given baths, and wash off the body fluids that our clients left with us. We are also given medications to help prevent disease. Father Carlotti inspects us carefully to ensure that there is no significant harm. He provides healing technology for a rectal laceration that I have, and a gash in my twin’s arm inflicted by her client, a male, biting her.

“Human bites are the worst,” he mutters, as he cleans out the bite with a special formula, applying healing so that no scar is left. He then says to both of us, “I am so proud of you. I love you so much.”

Lizzie and I then go to sleep in soft, warm beds that are side-by-side. I go to sleep holding my sister’s hand.

“I love you, Lizzie” I tell her.

“I love you, Luce”, she answers, and then we sleep for hours. There will be no training routine tomorrow; we are given a day off to spend with each other and one of the fathers. They understand how difficult nights like the previous one can be on very young children and give us this small respite. Of course, the day after our rest, we go back to our normal routine.

Of course, Lizzie and I told ourselves that we were two of the “lucky ones” with the special tattoo. We had seen and heard far too many children who were called expendable by the adults around us die slow, terrible deaths at these parties. Secretly, deep inside, however, I wonder if the children who died, who no longer have to experience any more pain, were the lucky ones. I can’t say this to Lizzie, or she will be forced to let the fathers know, and this will be emotionally painful for her. So I keep silent.

All children in the Jesuit Order are trafficked, but we did not define it that way. Attending and being abused at these types of parties held by the extremely wealthy in Europe and other countries was framed as doing a “mission”, one that involved a specific set of skills, skills that could “help the Order.” What we did was not defined as being abused, but as participating in a potentially dangerous activity. But all missions were dangerous to some extent. We were allowed to be “real agents” according to the fathers, and they were using our deep desire to do great things for the Order, when we were put in these situations.

But the reality is that my twin sister and I, and all of the other children I grew up with, were being terribly sexually abused and trafficked. The fathers who forced us to do this had been subjected to non-stop sexual abuse as children themselves. They did not realize how monstrous what they were asking us to do was; after all, they had to do it when they were young as well.

But the terror, anguish, sadness, grief and sense of betrayal, along with deep rage at the father who led my sister and me into this potentially life-threatening situation, risking our lives for the sake of gaining useful information, came forward as I processed this memory.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

Documentary on ritual abuse
May 6, 2024
In "healing"

Autobiography: Never Give Up
February 7, 2024
In "healing"

Interview about trafficking internationally
October 20, 2023
In "healing"

keziah418 12:42 am on June 22, 2024

Thank you svali for your honesty and openness, and the lessons and deep truths that are coming forward through it.
Only the Lord Himself can sift through the complexities of all of this. I have no idea how, but I am so grateful that He is working things out now, and will be completing it all very, very soon.
I honor every child who is fighting these types of battles right now, as well as those of us who have throughout our lives, and especially those who never even had a chance to live.

★ Like

Leave a Reply

Your email address will not be published. Required fields are marked *

Comment *

Name *

Email *

Website

Post Comment

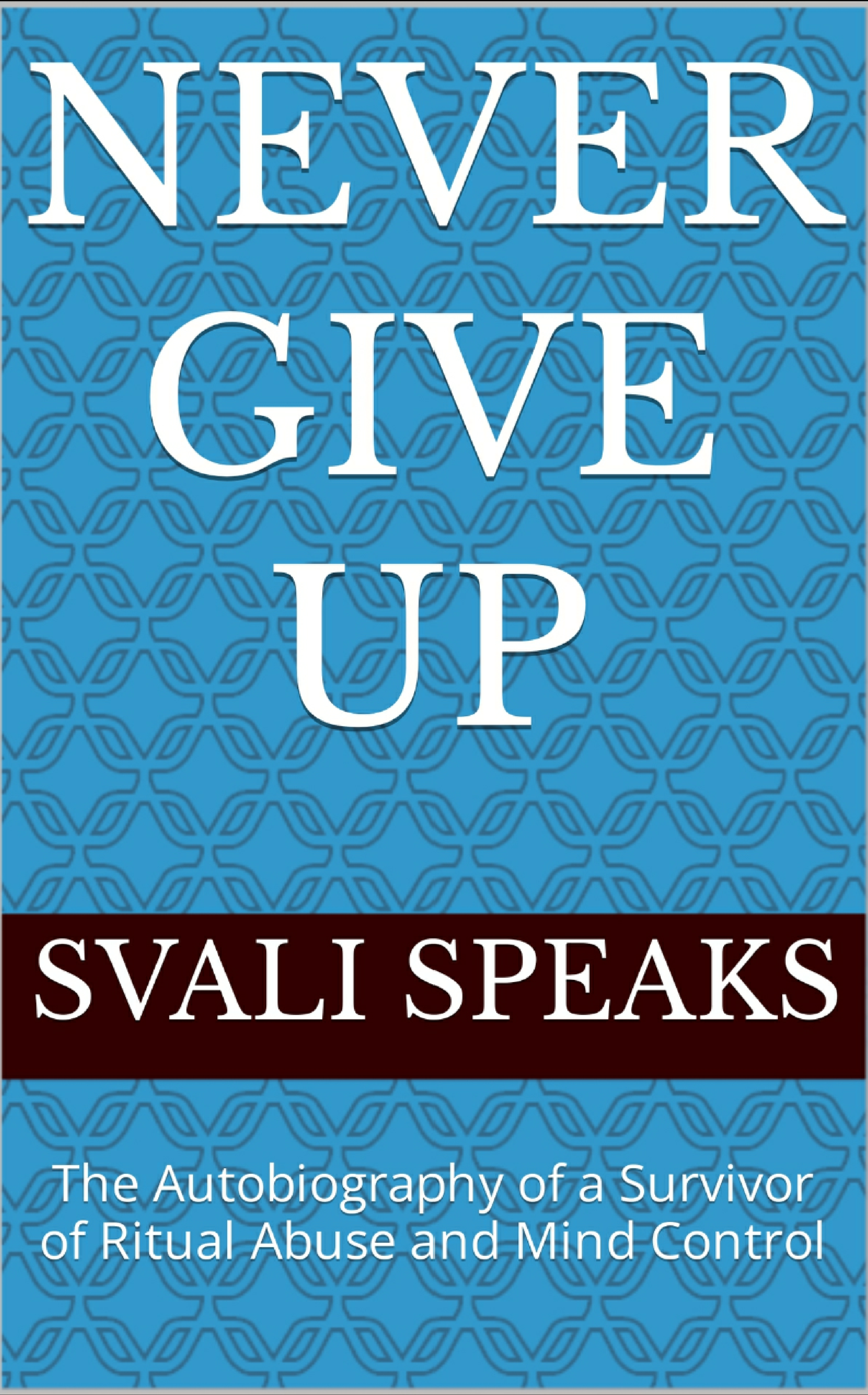
☐ Notify me of new posts via email.

☐ Notify me of new comments via email.

← Never Give Up -Chapter 3 Excerpt

Never Give Up Part 2: The Struggle →

Blog at WordPress.com.



NEVER GIVE UP

SVALI SPEAKS

The Autobiography of a Survivor of Ritual Abuse and Mind Control

Dedicated to the brave survivors around the world who have worked to get free of cult and mind control abuse, and the wonderful people who support them. Thank you.

Also, to the One who has made my journey out of the cult possible and given me the courage to share the things written within these pages: the true Jesus Christ.

Foreword

For the last thirty years, I served in the field of trauma recovery, first as a clinical therapist and later, as a prayer minister with a specialty in helping survivors recover from ritual abuse. I believe the field owes svali a huge debt of gratitude for her latest contribution of *Never Give Up*. I so appreciate the brave and difficult sharing of her life story and the sheer courage it has taken her to stand up against such evil in order to shed light on how the sophisticated techniques of mind control shape and indoctrinate a child into loyal devotion to her cult group. Svali takes us through her childhood journey that is actually no childhood but is more like one nightmare after another until she begins to question what she is being told and forced to do that is so incongruent with her heart. We, both survivor and helper, benefit from her labor of love in sharing her story with us. Survivors can receive insight into their own stories from one of the best explained examples of cult indoctrination I have read. Survivors can witness how mind control is accomplished as well as use the examples in this book for validation of their own similar memories and experiences. Helpers receive valuable information about the complexities of cult abuse, what struggles a survivor will likely encounter to risk breaking free and the astounding service gaps in our culture to aid survivors to break free.

This book is not an "easy read". While the stories are shared with captivating details that will keep the reader's interest, the stories of human tragedy and disregard for human life makes this difficult to absorb and the reader is left with wonderment at what causes such evil in our society. As a Christian prayer minister, I believe that our battle is not against flesh and blood but against spiritual forces of darkness. Satan's tactics are exposed by svali in the stories she recalls. Svali describes the methods used by the trainers to accomplish their purposes which are inspired by the dark forces the cult group calls the "Immortals", the spirits they serve and worship. At one point, svali points out that Satan and his minions cannot force humans to do anything against their will but must have agreement from humans to accomplish his evil plans. In numerous examples, svali shares how her trainers work with her agreement to coax her into accepting what she is participating in. From these stories, we receive insights into generational patterns in cults of agreeing to perform dark deeds out of fear of reprisal from the trainers, out of a belief of needing to obey to survive and/or protect other's lives from destruction, and a deceptive redefinition of immortality perpetuating a belief of superiority that there are those worthy to live and those who are expendable.

Satan must deceive, seduce and terrify humans into cooperating with him. He must also work within the needs and desires of the human race to entice compliance from his subjects. The trainers simply use rewards and punishments to reinforce a child's need to survive and to be loved, accepted, belong and feel special to someone. Svali's descriptions of how these basic attachment needs are manipulated and used by the cult trainers provide sharp clarity for understanding how a child is controlled into cooperating through working hard to numb and dissociate while preforming abhorrent tasks of torture on other human beings in order to achieve the trainer's praise, attention and affection and avoid their severely punishing responses for disobedience. If the trainers only used fear and intimidation to force obedience from their subjects, the fear would not be sustained and the training would fail. These sophisticated trainers know that the manipulation of attachment needs is crucial to establish loyalty in their subjects. As the Bible says, "love never fails" and a child will do whatever it takes for love even for occasional moments of love doled out to them according to the trainer's strict schedule.

There is no greater human motivator than love. Love is what drove svali for years to serve a group with which she increasingly became disillusioned. But through it all there was another One who was pursuing her with love and He never let her go. This is a story ultimately about unfailing love. In this first book that describes parts of her early childhood, svali slaves for the scraps of love that are given to her under conditional terms from her trainers. Even so that love is powerful enough to harness her attachment and loyalty until a greater unconditional love begins to break through to her and call her out of the entrapment of the cult environment. In the second book of her story, *Never Give Up,* of her teen years and adulthood, svali will share much more on how the unconditional love of God pursues her, forgives and restores her, and keeps pursuing her until she finds the strength to break free.

In her pursuit of freedom, svali found very little help from the outside world to break free. Of all the various groups of people in the world, I can think of few others more in need

of resources and help than those escaping mind control cults and yet there are so few good resources. Part of the difficulty has been a lack of education and understanding of how difficult it is to break away and how much opposition the survivor typically endures from their groups. After reading svali's story, we readers can no longer claim a limited understanding for our lack of response. I heard svali say once that she believed there would be a mass exodus from the cult if survivors of cults knew there was a place for them to belong outside their groups with people who would love and care about them. I hope that svali's labor of love to us through sharing her difficult story will be the impetus to cause others to open their hearts and doors to survivors in their homes, churches, and communities to begin to provide the greatly needed resources for their freedom.
"Evil persists when good men do nothing." Edmund Burke

Jo Getzinger, MSW
C.A.R.E., Inc.
www.care1@triton.net

Contents

- Introduction
    - Defining Some Terms Used in this Book
- Chapter 1: Infancy
    - Josef Mengele's Cruelty
    - Survival of the Fittest
    - Sexual Training
    - Bonding to the Fathers
    - The Drawer
    - Learning to Crawl Towards Colored Lights
    - Early Training and Assessment
    - Angel in the Labs
    - Learning to Stay on the Path
    - Failure to Thrive
- Chapter 2: Early Spiritual Training
    - Meeting the Immortals
    - Celestial Heaven
    - Mortal Hell
    - The Destruction of the Universe
    - The Council of the Flesh and the Council of the Immortals
- Chapter 3: Toddlerhood
    - Control the Children
    - The Cages
    - Alice in Wonderland
    - Shell Programming
- Chapter 4: Theta and Spiritual Systems Training
    - Theta Training
    - Spiritual Systems Training
        - Q'bala Training
        - Egyptian
        - Babylonian
        - Druidic
        - Ancients
    - Theo
    - Satan's Throne
- Chapter 5: Other Memories
    - Being programmed to be a 'presenter'
    - Learning to do sacrifices
    - Learning to Play Chess
    - The German Father's House
    - A German Christmas
- Chapter 6: Military and Academic Training
    - Starting School
    - Anatomy Class

- History and Political Classes
- Baby Soldiers (Military Training)
- Climbing the Mountain and Teamwork
- Break Time and Pranks

Chapter 7: Learning to Become a Mage
- The Elements
- Traveling Dimensions
- Power battles
- Shape Shifting

Chapter 8: Learning to Become an Agent
- First Mission
- MI6
- Learning to Take on a Pack of Dogs
- Sex Parties
- Early Testing

Chapter 9: A Walk in the Garden
- Remember the Flowers

Chapter 10: Learning to Become a Trainer
Chapter 11: Christmas in the Vatican
Chapter 12: The Gift of the Magi
Chapter 13: Coming of Age
Chapter 14: Wedded to Satan
Afterword
About the Author

Introduction

I remember being told, when I was a very young child, to say the words, with other children, "Ich bin eine kinder macht zachens gut" (I am a child who does things well). I believed it then, because life really was about performing well. But now, as I am older, I realize that this was not really true. I was a child who desperately wanted to be loved.

This is an autobiography in which I describe parts of the first twelve years of my life growing up in a highly organized and extremely wealthy occultic group: the Jesuit Order. Their wealth enables them to build extremely sophisticated programming studios and laboratories, and to use and develop advanced healing and mind control technologies. This autobiography does not include all memories, of course, since that would require a library of books. Instead, I share the memories that stand out the most from these early years. It is thus a "snapshot" of various scenes I lived through as a child to show what it was like to experience these events. While in previous books, I have discussed programming more from the observer perspective, in this book, I am much more personal.

This book is not written in chronological order. The first chapter covers a few key milestones in my infancy. The remaining chapters are grouped according to topic, and cover memories from various ages within that topic. In these chapters, I often share how early trauma and training lay the foundations for later programming and training for the skill area or job discussed in that chapter.

I realize that some of the memories I share, especially in the mage and spiritual training sections, may be hard to believe. I may be accused of having read too many 'fantasy novels' (which I never have and never will read since they have always frightened me). I believe that instead, some (but, of course, not all) writers in that genre may be actually drawing from their memories of these types of things. I am also aware that some of the events I describe can be attributed to cult members dressed in costumes in elaborate setups, the use of virtual reality, drugs and hypnosis and other forms of trickery.

However, I also believe that not all things that occur in our world can be explained this simply. I believe that there is a spiritual, or even unknowable element to some experiences, i.e., encounters with forces that defy material or rational explanation. All that I can do is to share for the record my own encounters with these beings according to how I experienced these events, alongside the memories of the more mundane and very physical events of my childhood growing up in an occult training facility.

My memories are not unique. Many survivors around the world from various cults and agencies that practice mind control have reported similar things, including the military and assassin training, the training to respond to visual codes, tones, colors and other cues; spiritual training, and being wedded to Satan. None of these training and events are unique to the Jesuit order, although methods may vary from those used in other groups.

I have heard concerns that sharing memories about programming is giving too much information, possibly providing a "blueprint" for "how to program people." I do not agree because programming involves much more than reading how one group does things. Reading memories of how one organized group programs their members, and then being able to program others, i.e., elicit the desired behaviors and beliefs in the subject, would be similar to reading a book on quantum physics, and then being able to build a spaceship. It simply can't be done. A lot more knowledge and skill are required to be able to program people than is described in this book. Additionally, the groups capable of conducting the kind of programming described in this book are already doing the things described here, since this is from fifty years ago and things have advanced exponentially since then.

I have written this autobiography for several reasons. One is to expose what is going on in a world that is increasingly confronting what can simply be termed as “evil”, and some of the experiences that produce people capable of this evil. I also want to validate the memories of those who have survived similar types of abuse. I describe the impacts of such abuse on a young child and over that person’s lifetime, and hope that this would be helpful not only to survivors, but also to therapists and others who support survivors. To emphasize hope and the incredible strength and capacity for humanity that survivors retain despite pervasive early abuse, I share too how I began to question and break free of the abuse and control, despite my years of indoctrination, trauma and mind-controlled, programmed obedience to the Order where I had perpetrated against others under orders.

In the book I describe several memories of the Order investing tremendous amounts of time, effort, manpower and finances on the spiritual training and spiritually-themed programming of their infants and children. Some readers may ask, “Why on earth do they go to such a great lengths to instill occult beliefs in their children?” The answer is that the Jesuit Order in its dark side completely believes in the concepts of ascension (into immortality, bliss and fulfilment) and descension (into mortality and hell). Religion is a great motivator, as seen historically and around the world, and the Jesuits are no exception. They are fervent in their beliefs in ascension and descension to a degree that would put to shame many of the most fervent believers in many faiths. They spend a great deal of time passing their beliefs on to each new generation, as my memories illustrates, and believe that children must be introduced very early to these concepts in order to fully believe and grasp such concepts. As very young children learn best through concrete experiences, they train and program children through the use of older cult members dressed up as spiritual entities, and take them through studios designed to look like locations in the spiritual realms or dimensions. They believe that without these early concrete experiences, the child when older will eventually have much greater difficulty in accessing the dimensions, and seeing, hearing and interacting with immortal beings who assist with ascension.

Finally, this is my personal story. As human beings, we each long for someone to hear our story, whether good or bad, as this is part of the processing that occurs for those who have survived extreme trauma. In a sense, this is my narrative shared with the world now, in hopes that it will accomplish some good, and provide some hope for others who long to be free.

The memories shared within these pages are the result of 35 years of working at healing. These memories did not come forward quickly, easily or painlessly. It involved many years of journaling, therapy, prayer ministry, using dolls and other toys to act out what had happened, as well as other modalities. Over time, I have gained a much better understanding of what my life was, and as a result, what I want to rest of my life to be. I want it to be free of the manipulation, the demands for performance, and the spiritual darkness that characterized my younger years. My greatest desire is to now live my life in thanksgiving to the God of the Bible, and His son, Jesus, who have forgiven me for the terrible – and painful – things I was forced to do, throughout my life.

Defining Some Terms Used in this Book

Dissociation and Programming: When a person is subjected to extreme pain to the degree that his/her mental, emotional or physical survival is threatened, that person can **dissociate**, i.e., create a new state of consciousness that is capable of doing anything in order to survive or stop the trauma. Emotional traumas, such as abandonment, even in the absence of physical traumas, especially by an attachment figure, can also cause dissociation. This new state of consciousness is extremely suggestible. Programmers in the cults consider this a type of *tabula rasa* state: in order to survive, this new state of consciousness will believe/do/feel whatever it is told to think/do/feel and is easily convinced that this compliance is what stops the abusers from abusing him/her. Common terms for these new states of consciousness include “personalities”, “parts” or “alters”. The goal of cult-controlled dissociation as described in these pages is to ‘**program**’ the child: (1) subject a young child to enough pain, physical or mental, or both, to create new states, (2) give them names or codes, (3) teach these new states specific beliefs, emotions and/or jobs, (4) condition these parts into continued compliance by reward and punishment. In this book, I use the term **‘parts’**.

Cult host: the cult host is the part of the child raised in a cult who lives the child’s cult life, e.g., this is the part who is out in the body during rituals, meetings and lessons in the cult facilities, and so on. This part will not be amnesic to the cult activities. For me, this was the part of me that felt most substantial and most like the “real me” since most of my life was spent in cult facilities or carrying out duties for the cult in other settings.

Presenter: In the Jesuit order, these are the parts of an individual that are created to be “out”, or to present and live in the “normal world” in “ordinary families” outside the training facility. These parts are programmed to present in various countries, and will have families that host them starting at age three. Each presenter in each country will have been programmed to have its own name, personality, abilities and preferences, and to be completely amnesic to all cult activities, as well as to the activities of the other presenter parts. Despite being one set of parts, they will believe that they are the entire person, and only recall an ordinary life with no hint of any cult existence. Presenter parts are typically programmed to disbelieve, deny, or be highly distressed by any cult-related memories.

Internalize: During early childhood, we tend to internalize the things we experience and see (building a sense of reality and how the world works). Programmers take advantage of this natural developmental period to introduce parts to concrete experiences that demonstrate to the child the scenarios, people and beliefs that they want the child to internalize. For instance, if they want the child to internalize a castle, they will take the child to spend time in this castle. If they want the child to develop an internal ‘castle guard’, they will have a designated part spend time with a castle guard (to role model the beliefs and behaviors), then dress the part up as a castle guard and have the part act out this role. This kind of ‘internalization’ is common across individuals who experience early trauma, for instance, the person who realizes that they still hear their critical parents’ voices inside their heads long after they have attained adulthood. Due to the dissociation, parts subject to these setups may only have experiences of the ‘reality’ that their programmers had them ‘experience’.

Programming studio: These are large dedicated rooms or areas for programming in the cult facilities. These studios would rival the best of any Hollywood filming studio. They can be designed to look like any place that the programmers need, e.g., space ships, pyramids, underwater caverns, the city of Troy, a circus, etc. They have state-of-the-art lighting, animatronics, holograms, walls, ceiling, and floors that are screens that can display any scenario, and other audio-visual technologies to create extremely realistic experiences for the child being programmed in them. During programming scenarios, the adults and older children will put on costumes and act out the scenes (for instance, in a ‘hell’ scene, they may dress up as demons) that the programmers want the infants and children to learn about and eventually internalize.

Programming laboratories: Often located in the same buildings as the programming studios, these are areas dedicated to research on programming, and where children and adults receive assessments, health checkups, programming schedules and other processes that are critical to their programming. Very sophisticated equipment for programming, data collection, data management and so on is part of these labs.

The Fathers: Individuals in the Jesuit Order, both men and women, (yes, there are both sexes in the occultic side of this order, unlike the male only fathers in the public side) who have undergone the full training required and completed the coming of age ceremony at age 13 (described later in this book), are titled 'fathers'. For instance, as a child, I called my primary mentor, "Father Mattheo".

The Fathers I Loved: As the Order understands the importance of attachment and community for mind control, each child raised in the Order will be given 12 primary Fathers to be bonded to from infancy. Three of these 12 will be designed as the child's primary programmers, and the child will be conditioned to bond most strongly with these three fathers. This bonding starts in the womb, then throughout infancy and childhood. It is common for individuals in the Order to be assigned three new primary programmers as they become adults. This is to ensure that the person continues to be bonded to agents capable of controlling them as their original programmers age, and that there is no risk of losing control over that individual should their original programmers die. These new programmers are typically selected from among peers who he/she is already very close to, such as a twin, a classmate (who is as close to them as any biological sister or brother could be), or a close mentor.

Class: At the age of six, children raised in the Jesuit programming facilities are assigned to a class consisting of eleven other children their own age, to create a group of twelve for each class. There are multiple classes within each facility, and each class will have their own dormitory. These children eat together, sleep together, go to classes together, go through physical training together, and bond extremely closely to one another. The fathers tell them that they are "sisters" and "brothers". The children consider their classmates to be sisters and brothers, emotionally, even if not genetically. Along with the fathers, these classmates comprise the child's "family" when growing up in the facility.

Mage: The Jesuit Order is very occultic. Each child will have spiritual mentors who have achieved the status of a mage, an individual who has become extremely well versed in occultic knowledge, incantations, spells, and rituals over many years of training, intense study and testing. Mages are expected to mentor those younger than them, and to help raise up a new generation of mages. They are skilled in oral teaching, ancient languages and are often master storytellers, since much of the information is also passed down in oral form. All children are expected to become mages themselves. I use the term 'mage' instead of other terms for practitioners of the occult arts, such as 'wizard', 'sorcerer', 'magician' or 'witch' as this is the term that parts used when sharing their memories.

Ascended Master: This is considered by the Jesuits the highest form of spiritual achievement. These individuals are considered as close to ascension as a human being can achieve while still walking the earth.

Immortal: The Order believe that immortals are beings who are trying to help mankind ascend and become like them, and to teach them how to overcome their mortal flesh. "Overcoming the mortal flesh" includes suppressing the desires within a human being that make them flinch away from interacting with these beings, and accepting the pain and long, difficult training that the fathers believe is necessary to ascend. The Jesuit fathers utterly and completely believe in these immortals, and in the theology of ascension and descension.

Demon: I believe that the immortals and other spiritual beings described in this book are actually demons, or what the Bible describes as fallen angels. These beings were formerly filled with glory and were in the presence of the true God of the Bible. However, the one named Lucifer (now known as "Satan") chose to rebel against the loving creator of the universe, due to pride (he wanted to be as God). In his rebellion, the Bible says that one third of the angels followed Lucifer and became fallen angels, or demons are they are commonly known. Demons can also refer in some theologies to the souls of individuals or Nephilim who are wandering the earth. In my book, I am not referring to this interpretation, but instead, to the "fallen angel" definition. While I believe that both angels and demons are real, as the memories in this book make clear, some of the "demons" I encountered in childhood were actually older children or adults in costumes. Also, I had many parts who were programed to believe they were demons. This is extremely common in ritual abuse and mind control groups. These parts are usually very young children. These parts, when they came out, would growl, threaten, and act very convincingly according to how people believe demons would act. In reality, however, they were frightened little children who had been given a difficult role to play inside, whether as a punisher, a guardian, or other jobs.

Chapter 1: Infancy

One of my first memories is of looking at the light sifting in through an outside window. I am an infant, and am being held, and allowed to look outside for a brief moment. I am old enough to hold my head up and body straight, as I peer longingly at the outside world, at the soft greens, browns and blues of grass, earth and sky. I wonder if even then, I was longing to be free from the facility that was almost my whole world the first three years of life.

I was conceived in a genetics laboratory in Switzerland, the product of "state of the art" genetic manipulation. I was a "generation 3" baby in the Order, from one of the batches of genetically designed babies that were 'benefiting' from their latest round – the third one - of genetic knowledge, including the ability to isolate genes for intelligence, strength, and quick healing. I know this from looking later in life at my own records, once I had clearance at the cult facility as a trainer myself. As an adult in the Order, I also read my own records of the programming done to me while in utero, but I have no conscious memories of the programming; only vague, inchoate feelings of rage, sadness, joy, love and rejection, and feeling very disturbed at the thought of what these feelings could mean.

All I can really be sure of is that as a fetus, my life was unpleasant and manipulated, a mixture of reward and punishment, to prepare me for what was to come when I was born. What was distressingly omitted was something I had never known, but instinctively craved: real love without conditions. It was to become a deep longing throughout my life. Later in life, after I left the Order, during my healing journey I met fetal parts from the prenatal period of my life. These fetal parts had not only their original memories, but had also been programmed throughout my lifespan. This made their memories a mix of primal fetal rage, fear, and pain due to early traumas, and the meaning their programmers gave these memories.

My next conscious memory, a brief flash, is of being held lovingly by a woman who is rocking me in a chair, while she nurses me at her breast. The room is white; the woman is dressed in white, and she is singing me a song about how the best and bravest do great things for the Order, smiling tenderly at me the whole time. I am content, and love her, this woman who is one of my primary trainers, as she soothes me after a programming session that I no longer remember, or want to remember, wanting simply to experience being held and loved for this point in time. There is no other type of love available, so like a sponge, I soak it up.

Another memory flash: men in white lab coats come through the nursery, checking each infant. I am in a metal crib with bars, and want to get out, but I am still too young to try. But even then, the thought of escape, while unattainable then, simmers in the back of my mind. The problem is that it is getting fuzzier, a bit harder each day, to know exactly what it is that I want to escape, but even during rest, I feel deep within that something is very wrong here, something that I need to get away from, regardless of the soothing words and loving pats on the back.

I want to note here that early trainers are both male and female, and in the facility that I was raised in, female trainers often nursed young infants as part of the bonding, and also to comfort them after stressful training sessions. The trainers were sometimes given injections of hormones to lactate if they were not actively lactating. The Jesuit fathers were well aware of the importance of attachment in development, and in programming. The fathers who programmed me were dissociative as well; there was a tradition of abuse that *created dissociation for many centuries in the Order. The love and nurturing they showed was real; it was not "fake", but it was still manipulative, because they were not free to love the way that I believe many of them longed to. They were all slaves to fear – the fear of disobeying Satan – and this fear made them unable to love in a truly free or healthy manner. What they did instead was to pour out the love within them in the carefully prescribed ways that were permitted, such as when holding and nursing the babies. When I was older, this was one of the ways I was allowed to be tender, and I loved cuddling and holding the babies. Even in this terribly abusive environment, the members of our group found ways to express love whenever we could.*

Josef Mengele's Cruelty

I am in the infant nursery at some point later in time. There are dozens of us infants in this room. We are in little metal cribs with metal rails, on mattresses with white sheets. We all wear little white soft long shirts and linen diapers, and can see each other through the bars of our cribs, or when we pull ourselves up to stand and peek over. Today, one of the other babies in the nursery is pulling himself up, and is energetically trying to climb over the raised rail of his crib. Interested, I pull myself upright, using the rail of my crib, to get a better view of what he is doing. He tries to climb over, drops back, then keeps trying, until finally, he falls right over onto the white tiled floor with a "thump!"

All of us other babies stare, and wonder if we can do the same; it looks like fun! The baby who escaped happily crawls around to the other cribs, as if urging us to join him. He seems to act a bit triumphant and proud of himself. Then, he crawls towards the main door to the nursery, which seems to be the way out since that is where all the trainers go through when they leave. Suddenly, footsteps are heard, the door swings open, and an enraged Mengele comes stomping into the nursery. His glasses and hair are quivering with rage.

He yanks the little boy baby on the floor up by one arm, and takes him over to a large wooden table in the middle of the room. He takes a large steel cleaver off a nearby table, and suddenly he chops the infant's hands off on the table top, with loud "thunks". All of us other infants stare at this scene with wide eyes of horror. We are silent, too terrified to even scream. Then, Mengele takes the little boy baby, and hangs him upside down from a hook in the middle of the nursery, to bleed to death in front of us all. The blood drips down, and the terrified baby screams as his white shirt turns scarlet, until finally, his cries slowly stop as the life ebbs out of him in spurts.

During this act of dying, Mengele glares at the rest of us infants, and screams in German, "This is what happens to "bad babies" who don't obey or try to get away!" Terrified at what I have just witnessed, shaking inside, I decide then not to try to crawl out of my crib, regardless of how wrong things feel in this place. I decide to bury these feelings of wanting to escape deep inside, because I very much want to live. Being the object of Mengele's anger is a very, very bad situation to be in, and I try to conform to what he wants as best as I can, even at this young age.

Mengele could be unutterably cruel, as this scene demonstrates. In our facility in Italy, he was the top trainer, due to the large amount of new programming information that he developed during the war years. This is why in occult groups, he is at times referred to as "the father of modern programming." He discovered that fetuses and very young infants could be programmed, and that in fact, programming done at these impressionable ages when the brain is developing rapidly, is less likely to break down later in life.

Being raised in a cult facility just north of Rome, Italy, the memories I share in this section are some of my earliest ones. I have other memories of Mengele, who I believe, along with Hilde, his blond, blue-eyed assistant, were both dissociative. I believe that they were products of the extreme and cruel programming methods of the early 1900s, when attachment was less understood, and sociopathic personalities were more likely to develop. As far as I know, Hilde, who was raised with him and endured the horrors of their childhood together with him, was the only human being that he trusted, although he did obey orders from those who paid him to program their children, both in Italy and other countries.

Mengele and Hilde were two of my infant trainers, but not my only ones (thank goodness!). I shudder to think of what kind of human being I would have grown up to be if I had not also experienced the kindness at times from the Jesuit fathers who were my primary attachments.

Survival of the Fittest

Mengele liked to use 'survival of the fittest" setups to cull out the weakest babies, and ensure that only the fastest, strongest, most intelligent babies were kept. Fortunately, due to the large numbers of babies that died, this setup was phased out quickly in the Order after his death. By then, I was an adult, and my influence as a trainer, along with that of Mattie, another top trainer, caused this change. We argued successfully that this method was needless, since there were other ways of assessing these qualities. We were also concerned about the long-term impact on the Order's unity, longevity and prosperity, if all our members believed deep in their unconscious minds that their peers were competitors for basic needs, and that the only way for them to survive was for their peers to die.

I can crawl, quickly, now that I am four months old, with soft curly brown hair starting to grow that matches the color of my brown eyes. I am athletic and fast, and perform well in the physical assessments. Today, I am in a small cage with bars. I can see two dozen other similar cages in the room, each containing a baby. I am hungry and thirsty, since I have not been fed for several hours. In the middle of the room are three bottles with formula. I look hungrily at them, I want one! Suddenly, the doors to all of the cages lift simultaneously, and a baby race is on. We all crawl as fast as we can to get to the bottles in the middle of the room.

I, and two of the other fastest babies get there first. Breathing hard, I grab a bottle and start drinking the life-giving, nourishing formula. But two other babies are trying to grab the bottle away from me, they are hungry too. There is a fist grabbing for the bottle, and another baby is climbing onto my back. I have to fight them off, kicking, biting, twisting and turning my back on them, all the while trying to drink the formula as quickly as possible. I am able to successfully keep my bottle and fend off the other hungry babies, using my strong, chubby little legs to kick some away, and get enough formula in me to allay my hunger – and to survive. After a few days of this scenario, the weakest babies are crawling extremely slowly, and I, along with two other of the strongest babies are able to drink a full bottle with barely any resistance from the others.

Mengele walks into the room and picks one of the babies up who is drinking formula, cuddles him, and praises us three, looking at us with a smile. "You are good babies, strong and smart," he tells us. He then goes around the room, and one by one, he hangs a baby from a hook through its gut, in the middle of the room. "This was a weak baby," he says derisively. "This baby didn't try hard enough." He hangs others of the "weak" babies from hooks, and horrified, we three survivors watch. I realize deeply that, in order to survive, I must perform well. Surviving means performing well for Mengele, and I learn quickly to be fast and smart – to find the best way to do something. I don't want to end up on a hook, hanging in the middle of a room.

I am a toddler, several months later, and I hate Mengele, on whom my survival depends. Once again, I am in a cage in a room, with doors that can rise. Next to me is another toddler my age, a little girl. I smile at her, and she smiles at me. In the middle of the room is some food and water, and I already know what will happen.

Suddenly, the doors to our cages lift, and we all run to the middle, trying to fight off each other in a melee that includes mashed faces from tiny fists, kicking, and grabbing. I grab some food, which I eat quickly, grab a drink, and return to my cage.

This happens for two more days, but on this third day, I notice that the little girl in the cage next to me is weakening. I am starting to notice others more at this age, and seeing her look this way bothers me – a lot. When the doors lift, I race to the middle, grab some food, eat a quick bite, then return back to my cage. I then offer some of the food in my little fist to this other toddler. She smiles gratefully at me, but doesn't seem to want to eat; I wonder why, since I was extremely hungry before I ate some of the food. I go over to her cage, and try to put it in her mouth, but she doesn't eat, to my huge distress. I realize now as an adult that she was probably dehydrated and too weak to eat. "Eat, eat, eat" I tell her over and over, but even when I try to put the food in her mouth, she just closes her eyes and falls asleep.

The next morning, she dies and is taken away. As I watch her body being carried out, I cry silently, hiding my tears from Mengele, who would have punished this type of weakness. Fortunately, the fathers were more understanding, and disagreed at times with his methods.

That night, Mattheo, the father I love most of all, notices that I am upset. In my high-pitched little toddler voice, I sob and tell him about the other little girl.

"I am glad that you cared," he says. "But even more glad that you lived. There simply wasn't enough food for all of the babies." While he is trying to promote my acceptance, I can see in his eyes that he is sad and disturbed, too.

"I wanted to share, but she wouldn't eat," I say, crying.

"She was too weak to eat," he says. "But it was good of you to try. And very smart of you to try to find a way to help her."

Mattheo is a rising leader in the Order, and I am glad that he understands. In a few more years, he will be one of the fathers who initiates stopping these survival exercises, with the support of the younger trainers. I love Mattheo and the other fathers, and trust him more than I trust Mengele. But Mengele will never, ever suspect how I feel, because I want to survive, and Mattheo has made it clear that he wants me to live, too.

Many of the infants programmed by Mengele and other trainers in this type of scenario struggled with issues around food all of their lives. When adults, later in life, they hoard food, or gain weight, or become anorexic. Even as a young child, when hosted in my American presentation, I would sneak food and hide it under my pillow. My family teased me relentlessly about this habit, but allowed it, perhaps sensing the deep psychological need to do so.

Mattheo and the other fathers argued successfully to discontinue these methods for several reasons. One was seeing disturbances related to food in the children that survived. But another was that this programming promoted survival at the expense of others, while the Jesuits wanted their leaders to think of the good of all, when leading teams on missions; they wanted to promote a cohesive working together and bonding with each other that is part of life in the order, and this training went against it. Later generations – those after G7 in the Jesuit Order- would not have to undergo these extreme setups.

Sexual Training

I am just a few weeks old. One of the fathers I love, Father Jerome (who is also a primary trainer) comes into the nursery and stands over my crib. He looks at me lovingly, then takes my diaper off, and rubs me gently with his hand between my legs. It feels nice, but also odd; I feel confused. He continues for a while, and then puts his mouth between my legs.

This happens daily, as part of my early sexual training. I have never known anything else. When these things happen, I am called "Amis". At first, all is gentle and kind, and I learn to accept it as part of being loved by my trainers, as part of the daily routine. After all, this doesn't hurt, unlike some of the other things they do to me.

But after a few weeks, Father Carlotti, another primary trainer comes in. He has a special object in his hand; it is round, small, and not too hard, and he lubricates it and gently inserts it into my rectum. It is uncomfortable, and I wiggle and make a noise of dislike (I have learned not to cry and tantrum in rage already), but he makes a hand signal that means "Be still". The halt and be still commands are among the very first commands I have learned since birth, and so I go limp, as taught, and allow him to continue. After a few seconds more, he stops, and then picks me up and praises me. He tells me, "Amis, what a good baby you are!" with genuine love in his voice, looking me in the eyes with his beautiful amber brown eyes. I wiggle in delight; I have performed well, and he is happy with me, that is all that matters. I am learning that when asked to do things that hurt or make me feel sick inside, I must endure them for the ultimate reward afterwards: love and affection. Father Carlotti holds me against his strong, warm chest for a while, then takes me to one of the female fathers to be nursed.

I have already learned that when I don't perform as asked, I will be punished with even more pain, such as being held upside down by my legs, and whipped with a small but very painful whip. I prefer hugs and praise, so I do what I am asked to do, almost always. I am considered "programmable" and not "difficult" or "resistant" as some babies are, as I learn about when I am older and hear the fathers discussing different babies in the nurseries, categorizing this among other qualities. I also learn when allowed to watch the fathers as an older child that babies who are considered not "programmable" or "too difficult" get slated to be the infant or toddler that dies in various scenarios. But at this young age, I still don't know these things. I work hard to gain the smile and affection from the fathers, which is what they want – for me to perform in order to earn their love and approval.

I am five months old, a vigorous, healthy, happy, active baby. I can already sit up and crawl, and am practicing standing up. I also am able to speak some very simple two-word phrases, and understand my trainers when they speak with me. Father Mattheo, the father I love most of all, comes to my crib. He has some equipment that he hooks me up to, and inwardly I flinch, although outwardly I smile. This is equipment to shock me with, and I am already familiar with it.

He then calls out Amis, and some of the parts that she oversees inside, including Charté, a part that has been previously split from her. As he sexually stimulates Charté with his finger, he also applies mild, but painful, shock at the same time. I have learned not to flinch away from shocks, although internally I am upset at the pairing of what I have associated with "love" with this new pain. I can't help myself; salty tears run down my cheeks, but I don't flail or try to get away.

Mattheo continues doing this for five minutes, telling Charté over and over, "Love is pain. Love is pain. You love pain, it shows love." Afterwards, he stops the shocks, and holds her tenderly, saying, "You are a good baby, and I love you." Charté , while still upset, is glad that this was not a punishment, as shocks can be. He then looks into her young baby eyes, and says, "You must learn to do this. I know it is difficult, and it makes you feel angry, but this is important, and what you are learning is very,

very important. I am not doing this to you to punish you, but because I love you. Charté, you are very special for learning to do this and will be able to do great things for me and the other fathers if you learn this." He, and the other fathers, always acknowledge the discomfort and understand the feelings, and discussing them with me and the other parts, even as infants.

Charté is learning to enjoy sadomasochistic sex, and to associate it with feelings of love, arousal, and feeling special and important. Later, she will be dissociated and reorganized into other parts who have only known these feelings, and she will oversee them as a sub-controller within Amis's system. These skills will be used when I am older to help me do missions with individuals who prefer this type of sex, including gathering intelligence or gaining favors. These skills, learned so young, will also help me to survive the extremely painful sexual acts that I will have to endure in some of the homes of the very wealthy around the world. In the order, they do not call us "trafficked", but "skilled"; and our being sent out for various forms of sexual abuse from earliest childhood are considered "missions" for the order.

But deep inside, I feel violated and angry. This is abuse, and my little baby heart and mind know it, even though all of the adults around me treat this as normal, and model it in their own lives. I have learned to hide my anger, but it is there, simmering deep inside. While I love the fathers who rock me, hold me, nurse me and love me, I also hate them with a deep, white-hot hatred.

One thing that the scene above illustrates is that even in infancy, the Jesuit programmers acknowledged how their abuse made me feel. They could tell, by my reactions, the look in my eyes. But then they normalized it within a framework of something that must be done in order to successfully complete missions, as necessary to show my love for them. The Jesuit fathers were masters at manipulating my infant need to attach and maintain a loving bond with them and used it to get me to accept their abuse. The Jesuit programmers understood that a child – even an infant – will do much more for love than in response to any amount of torture, and used this knowledge on me and the other infants I grew up with, just as it was used against them, continuing the cycle of abuse and its normalization generation after generation.

During my own healing, it was a struggle for Amis, Charté and other parts to realize that they had even been abused, since this was "love" to them, the only love they had ever known. They wondered what all the fuss was about when they wanted to continue their activities, even after I left the group, and became aware of their activities and wants that put us in extreme danger. I was quite surprised when Charté came out early in my healing journey, offering to sit on my therapist's lap and give him rough sex; I was also saddened realizing that she had been pushed out by another part inside who wanted to disrupt and distract from what I had been talking about with this therapist. Talking to these parts using logic didn't help. Holding them inside, spending time with them, and showing them other forms of love and experiences that were not sexual helped more.

Bonding to the Fathers

As an infant, each day was broken up into programming, training, comfort, rest, play times and attachment/bonding time on a strictly regimented schedule in the facility nursery. The fathers in the order were experts in child development and were careful to balance training (which was gentle, and filled with praise very early on, with only mild punishments if any for inability to perform in the early weeks) with nurture. They realized that if a child was not given enough nurture, they could develop psychopathic tendencies, would be less controllable (since love is the greatest motivator), and would show other pathologies in psychological or physical development. They knew this because of the failed programming methods used in the early 1900s, when the children were not given enough nurturing and failed to attach to a loving adult caregiver: many had to be "put down" later as they developed severe psychopathic tendencies, to the point of killing the trainers that they did not love, without a twinge of regret.

Oh, how carefully the fathers monitored and doled out "love" to us infants, and we came to look expectantly for that special time each day with the "fathers we loved". Each infant had three primary fathers they bonded with, along with nine others who were also important to their emotional development and training. I loved three special fathers the most: Father Mattheo, Father Jerome, and Father Carlotti. I was also very closely bonded to Father John, an older female trainer, and Father Daniel, a female trainer who also nursed me and filled the "mother" role in my life. Females upon becoming a Jesuit father took on male names, so this was considered normal in the Order. The Jesuits always had several trainers that bonded closely to each infant, since they realized that otherwise, if an infant bonded to only one individual and that individual died, the baby or child would be at a huge risk for failure to thrive, or would be basically un-programmable. They learned this, also, from the failures of the early 1900s, when some children bonded to only one primary trainer, who died. Data was collected on these children, and they kept it in their huge library of training materials and information, as well as coded into a huge computer database that could be accessed with a simple series of codes and voice commands for those authorized to do so.

So I, and the other infants I was raised with, bonded to the fathers we loved. But the fathers I loved also tortured me and the other babies. Infancy and childhood was a strange mix of torture and being held and rocked lovingly; being nursed by the same individual who later sexually abused me.

I am just a few months old, and angry about the pain the fathers inflict upon me. I feel sullen. While I have been trained to look up and smile when the fathers come into the nursery, today, I turn away. I turn my back on these men and women who bring me daily pain. It is Father Carlotti who comes by my crib, and sees my angry turning away.

"You cannot act this way," he tells me curtly in Italian. "You are being a bad baby to act this way, and must be punished."

He then goes and gets a couple of wrist holders and straps. He places the wrist holders around my chubby wrists, and then as punishment hangs me by my arms from the side of my crib. This hurts terribly, I feel as if my small arms which do not yet have the muscles and ligaments to take this, are being wrenched out of their sockets. The muscles burn as they are stretched. My arms do pull out of their sockets and I scream in pain.

Carlotti repeats, "This is what happens to bad babies who turn away, and don't turn and hold their arms up." He holds me with one hand, releasing my wrists with his other, and assesses me for the extent of the physical damage. He takes me to a healing room, and uses technology to put the arms back into their shoulder sockets, and to heal the joints and ligaments that have been so painfully stretched.

"Don't do this again," he warns. I don't.

I came to hate and fear that phrase, "bad baby", used by Mengele and the fathers, as something to avoid at all costs. "Bad babies" cried, turned away from, and kicked at their programmers, and did not greet them with an unfailing smile. "Bad babies" were allowed one or two chances, but after that," bad babies" were hung on hooks from the nursery ceiling until they died, or were seen in "hell" later that day, being whipped to death by "demons" (children in costumes). We all learned to be "good babies": compliant and programmable, and never to show how we really felt about how we were being treated. We were taught to send that anger down into an "anger pit" filled with anger-holding parts inside; this rage would then be directed at other objects, such as Christians, outsiders, and most importantly, ourselves.

This inability to show my feelings at the person who caused them fostered intense dissociation which the fathers had already carefully conditioned me to rely on while in the womb and during the early weeks after birth. I already had the structure in place to 'dissociate away' into designated parts the angry feelings out of my fear of punishment for "bad babies" and to focus on performing well and being a "good baby".

In the memory above, I also mention the healing rooms. The programming facility had state-of-the-art healing technologies that even over sixty years ago were far ahead of what is commercially available to healthcare providers currently. There were vats filled with saline and electrolyte/mineral solutions of various types, with various types of frequencies to promote healing, and even artificial skin that when lit with a red light would help new skin to grow rapidly. Because of the ongoing, physical abuse, these technologies were necessary to prevent permanent scarring or disability for the children being programmed, as well as older children and adults who might come back injured from dangerous or strenuous missions, or who might be accidentally injured during training and military exercises.

The Drawer

I am a few months old, and I am upset. Father Jerome is taking out the wires and electrodes that I have come to hate; wires and electrodes that cause sharp, biting pain with the electric shocks that they conduct. I don't want this! When he tries to put the electrodes on me, I kick and squirm and wiggle away, struggling to avoid these stinging wires being placed on me.

"This type of behavior can't be allowed. Be still!" he commands sternly.

But I am not still. I disobey him, for I am still very small, and do not know yet what can be done to ensure compliance. His command instills less fear in me than the fear that the memory of shocks that sting like bees, shocks that cause terrible, burning pain. I don't want to be hurt, so I continue to resist, arching my back in protest and screaming.

Father Jerome stops, then takes a key hanging around his neck, and with it, opens a small drawer. This drawer has padding on the bottom and sides. He picks me up, saying, "You will experience utter darkness, the hell reserved for disobedience such as this." He then places me into the drawer, and slides it shut it with a loud "click".

It is utterly dark and soundless in this drawer. I can breathe, but there is no light, no noise, nothing. It is quiet, and I am afraid. I wait to see what will happen.

Time passes, and I am frightened and hungry. I cry and cry with ever louder wails, but no one hears. My diaper is wet and filled with stool, and I am afraid. No one can see or hear me in this place; no one is there to take care of me. I am a little baby, and I know that I will die if no one takes care of me. I depend on the adults around me for everything. And now, there is...nothing. Just black darkness. I am terrified.

Time passes, where I alternate between loud screams of terror, and soft whimpers. Finally, I am too exhausted to cry any longer. I fall asleep.

I am very sleepy; maybe I will never wake up. I am starting to feel very far away and strange, as if my body is getting smaller and further away. Maybe this is what dying is like. It feels like a long time has passed, and I am resigned to being here forever, and dying.

Suddenly, I hear the drawer slide open. There is a light, much too bright for my eyes which have been in complete darkness for so long, even though it is just the dim light that is on in the nursery at night.

Father Jerome is there, and I am frantic, desperate for him to take me out of this terrible, terrible box. “Will you obey me now?” he asks, looking me in the eyes. He sees the terror and pleading in them, and lifts me out of the box of terror, of abandonment.

He holds me for awhile, close to his chest, then gives me part of a bottle. I drink, but keep looking at his eyes the whole times, frantic for him to respond to my frantic terror and need for him to not leave me alone. Later, he takes me into a white room with a rocking chair, and rocks me for a period of time. Finally, I relax and rest awhile.

The next morning, Father Jerome returns, comes to my crib, and tries to put the electrodes on me. I do not struggle or resist this time.

These drawers are reserved as punishment for resisting being programmed, and being placed in one was one of the cruelest tortures that I experienced as an infant. The sense of utter abandonment and terror was overwhelming, but it also ensured compliance in an infant that comes to realize that emotional survival depends upon obedience to what the trainers demand, no matter how difficult.

Learning to Crawl Towards Colored Lights

I am a baby, able to crawl but not able to do much else, yet. After all, I am only three months old. I am on the smooth floor of one of the programming labs. I have been told to wait. Suddenly, I hear six notes played in a specific sequence. Simultaneously, a code is flashed in front of me on a large overhead screen: it is a black and white pattern in a specific configuration meant to bring out a specific part. I have already learned to bring the correct parts out when different tones and patterns are shown to me during the previous first few weeks of life, and have become quite good at it, to the pleased smiles and “good girl!” comments from the fathers I love. This ability to make them so happy makes me coo and wiggle with joy.

Now, a part loyal to the Jesuit Order is out, and a green light, about the size of a traffic light, shines down the smooth tunnel I am crawling through as I crawl towards this light. The tunnel is bathed in the green light, as Cerachnid-1, a cult-loyal presenter, is learning that green is her color, just as the tone sequence and pattern are hers. This task is fun, and when Cerachnid reaches the light, she is given a piece of soft fruit as a special treat by Father Jerome, a man in his early 20s who already has white hair that looks beautiful with his clear blue eyes.

“Cerachnid, you did well,” he tells her. Jerome then picks me up in his strong arms and cuddles me against the soft folds of his lab uniform. “Cerachnid, you are so special for being able to do this,” he says, and Cerachnid wiggles with delight at the praise in his voice. “I love you,” Jerome tells her. “I am glad that you had fun doing this.” During this early part of training, there are lots of rewards and hugs when Cerachnid and other parts perform well, doing simple tasks such as recognizing cues to come out; recognizing their special colors, and obeying the trainers.

Punishments will come later on after this first, primary belief is instilled deeply: obedience to cues brings feelings of love, security, joy, and is even “fun”.

It is a month later. Cerachnid has been performing very well, but now something very important happens to her. Cerachnid undergoes extremely severe pain, being told ahead what will happen. The fathers always tell parts when pain is going to happen, they never hide this fact.

Cerachnid cannot endure this pain, and her mind starts dissociating from it, creating new little babies from herself. These new parts are quickly given names as each comes out; a code specific to them is flashed on the screen above her, and these new cult loyal parts split from Cerachnid become the system parts that she will oversee and eventually learn to control.

"You must keep these parts safe, Cerachnid," Father Jerome tells her. She understands what "safe" means; it means making sure that they obey and believe everything they are told. Her job is make sure that they obey and believe; this is the only "safe" that she and others inside have experienced.

Cerachnid will eventually learn to forget that these other parts originally came from her, and instead, will see herself as protecting them from "further harm" (going through the agonizing pain, pain that made her feel as if she was dying, of her original splitting memory). She is told that she can only keep them "safe" by ensuring that they are always "good" by being obedient to programming cues and commands. Her desire to protect these parts dissociated from herself from experiencing further pain and trauma actually reflects the deep, instinctive self-love that all babies have for themselves, which the programmers are counting upon as they cause her and other primary controller parts to dissociate and then re-organize into subsidiary, system parts.

It is several weeks later, and I am four and a half months old. Cerachnid is taken to a special room in the programming lab. There is a huge tree pattern laid out on the floor, with a trunk, roots, branches and leaves. She has already met "Gnossis" (the tree of knowledge), a woman dressed in a tree costume, who visited her crib numerous times over the past few months, and explained to her who she is. Cerachnid now sees the face of this woman embedded in the center of the tree, inlaid with the bark, and wiggles with recognition.

"Cerachnid, it is time for you to learn where you live on the tree," the soft, beautiful voice says. "Come to your place." At that moment, a special pattern (Cerachnid's code), a small green light and the musical sequence play on a specific branch, close to the trunk. Cerachnid is guided by the trainer to this spot, and she sits.

"This is where you will live," says the soft voice of the tree. "This is your special place where you can feel safe; if you leave your special place, you and those you protect and help – your system – will be unsafe". The trainer then comes and hugs Cerachnid, and gives her a soft, sweet rusk to suck on. They spend time in peaceful activity, while one limb of the tree slowly strokes Cerachnid's back and the trainer murmurs loving words to her. After a few minutes, the trainer calls out another part whose job is to not remember the programming session, Cerachnid goes back in, and the trainer picks me up and carries me out of the lab. I have no memory of what happened inside the lab; only Cerachnid will remember learning her place on the tree.

This gentle, loving scene is repeated numerous times over the next few weeks for Cerachnid and other system controllers, until each one understands their "place" on the tree; my system controllers are major branches, with their system parts the outlying twigs, and programs (leaves) that branch out from them.

It is not until this program, and the deep feeling of love and safety for going to the correct place on the tree, and remaining there, is instilled, that the punishments for leaving the designated place or disobedience are installed. For the rest of her life, Cerachnid will always seek to return to that initial sense of peace, safety and being loved that underpinned her programming. And for her, this means complete, unquestioning obedience and belief in what her trainers tell her.

The above memory illustrates how the Jesuit trainers use a combination of concrete, physical structures and activities for their training of infants and young children, combined with rewards and punishments to ensure that expected behaviors will be instilled. But this, like all programming, will often rest upon an earlier, primary memory, of a time when the controller was loved and felt safe; in essence, a "resting place" that the controller will always try to return to whenever possible. The trainers provide a framework for the only way this feeling of security and attachment can be attained: being programmable, and obedient to the programs being installed by the trainers.

Early Training and Assessment

I love the other infants I am living with in the large nursery filled with cribs. We are fed bottles of milk at the same time, and later sit at a short table and eat together as we become able to sit up. During free time, we play together. Most of all, we learn to do things together.

I am a year old. I and the other infants my age are being told to sit in groups of four at small child-sized tables with colored blocks.

"I want you all to build a tower with all blue blocks on the bottom, all red in the row above, and then all yellow blocks at the top. I want you to do this together when you hear the bell ring," Mattie is telling us. She is one of the top 11-year-olds in programming. Behind her is Father Timothy, her mentor. She enjoys working with us babies, and he is watching her as well as us.

Timothy and Mattie go from table to table, giving each the same instructions. In a bit, a bell rings and we start. This is fun, and I laugh as the other one-year-olds and I do this simple task. We create a small tower of blocks as instructed.

"Good, very good," Mattie praises us. I like her; she is warm and caring and tries to praise us whenever we do well. The other toddlers and I grin at each other. As we look around the room, we see that the other toddlers are finishing up, too.

"You all did really well," Timothy says. "You can have lunch now."

Lunch is brought in, and we enjoy the soft fruit, vegetables and liver. The food is always, always very healthy and tasty, and because we are so physically active, all of us are hungry. The food doesn't last long.

There are other small group activities given over the next few months: figuring out how to share four apples among twelve of us, or how to climb a wall that is too high to simply put a leg over. As we do these things, and learn to work as a team, the fathers praise us, and give us extra "free time" to simply play with each other. Free time is a precious commodity in this highly structured environment, and we all decide to perform well to gain as much free time as possible, in order to simply be toddlers.

This pattern will continue throughout my life. When my class did well, or I am part of a mission team that does well, we can sometimes choose our reward, and we choose time off. The programmers and facility heads knew that we valued most of all the times when we could simply be human beings without expectations of performance. They allowed for this, but it had to be earned.

Because of genetic engineering for intelligence, all the babies in the nursery had high IQs, and we all achieved behavioral milestones very early. Most of us were toddling by six to seven months of age on plump but muscular baby legs, and we were starting to talk as well, in high-pitched baby voices. We understand what those around us are saying, although we are still unable to follow complex, abstract discussions, and can only respond in simple phrases.

During the early years, we are assessed and sorted according to leadership gifts, intelligence, strength and creativity, as well as other qualities, into groups of similar abilities. These sortings are held loosely during the first three years of life, with ongoing testing and assessments throughout life. The activities described here function not only to teach the children skills, but also enable the fathers to assess the children. But by age six, we will be sorted into classes of 12 of similar abilities for further training and education at the spe-

cialized 'school' run by the Order. As children, we attend this school from six until twelve years old. I recall my cohort as having four classes of 12 children.

Angel in the Labs

I am four months old. Like the other infants in the nursery, I am sleeping soundly. It is the middle of the night, and we have had a busy day learning new tasks and doing all the things that little babies growing up in a programming facility do. It is quiet, the lights are down, and the darkened room is silent except for the occasional rustle of a baby moving a bit on soft sheets.

Suddenly, something wakes me up. I look around and see a figure walking through the nursery. This figure looks like one of the immortals, but something about it is very different. The robes are soft, almost transparent, and shine with a soft light. This being has golden hair and a kind face. I watch as it stops by a crib and places its hand on a baby's head. The baby wakes up and smiles at the being.

As it walks nearer to my crib, I see white wings folded behind him. I feel that this is a male being, without being sure why. As it gets closer and closer, placing his hand softly on each baby's head, the babies smile. Some sit up and lean towards him, reaching after him as he goes to another crib. Finally, he comes to my crib. I smile at him, and his golden eyes look at me with tenderness and love. He places his hand on my head, as if in benediction, and suddenly I feel something I have never felt before. I feel peace, utter peace, and safety. I want this feeling to go on forever. This being does not smell like the other immortals who visit, but instead, seems to bring the smell of a beautiful breeze from somewhere else that floats around him. This smell is wonderful, and I want him to stay with me. But the being keeps going until the babies in the nursery have all had a hand placed on them. Then, the being silently, quietly disappears.

After the being is gone, several fathers come into the lab. Father Mattheo comes to my crib. "You should not have let that malak – that messenger from the enemy – touch you," he says. His voice is angry, I have no idea what I did wrong. Don't beings come at night all the time? Why shouldn't I let him touch me? Don't all the immortals touch me? I think all of these things, but cannot speak them yet. "That was one of the liar's messengers; that was not an immortal," Mattheo says. He must have seen the being come into the nursery. But it is not until I am much older that I learn that he and the other fathers could not stop it. They had to wait until it left.

I feel bewildered. This being was kind, and the peace and love I felt coming from its touch was even better than the words and cake that the "immortals" were bringing me at night. How could a being this nice be an "enemy"?

The next morning, Father Mattheo shows me a depiction of an angel, and shocks me over and over as he shows it to me, telling me, "These are the enemy. Send them away if they come to you." I understand that he wants me to hate this gentle visitor in the night and start to associate him with the shocks. The shocks are my enemy, but my baby brain thinks they are caused by the picture of the angel that I am being shown.

Learning to Stay on the Path

I am 18 months old, and my hand is being held by an adult dressed in a costume to represent Gnossis, the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. She has a crown of leafy branches on her head, and her arms have numerous leafy branches that appear to sprout out of them; even her fingers look like small twigs. Her middle is covered by rough looking "bark", and her feet are covered with what appeared to be several layers of roots. Her voice is calm, patient, and melodious as she takes me by the hand, and leads me down a pathway that is outlined with wide, white brick pavers.

"You must always, always stay on the path, and never depart," she instructs me. "Only by staying on the path of righteousness and knowledge can you ascend and reach the celestial heights. Otherwise, you will descend into mortality and suffer the torments of the wicked – those who choose the flesh over immortality." As she leads me, the pavers under our feet light up with a soft, diffuse glow; it seems wonderful and magical to me as a toddler. "If you follow the path, your way will be lighted with increasing knowledge," she assures me. When we come to the end of this part of the path, it divides, and we go to the right. We then rest on a small bench, and she gives me a sweet treat as a reward for being such a good child and following the path with her so well.

These walks along the path continue at intervals over the next few months. I learn exactly where to go and am warned where not to go each time by one of the three trees who lead me along this path: Althea, the tree of life; Gnossis, the tree of knowledge (of good and evil); and the Servant tree. These paths actually represent following my internal programming, which I have been told is the path to immortality. But at this young age, my main concern right now is to always stay on the path. I have been told that dreadful things will happen if I fail to, and I don't want these sweet, caring trees to become angry with me.

After another month, when I am almost two years old, Althea starts me on the path, and then smiling, she says, "You know the way, child. Remember to always stay on it, and all will be well." She then leaves me, and I start to follow the path. But along the way, I see to the side of the path some chocolate treats on a table, just a few feet off of the path. I start to go past, but then pause, and look longingly at the treat. I love chocolates, and want one very much. I think *Maybe no one will know if I go off for just a few seconds, grab a treat, then go back on the path.*

I step off of the path, and suddenly the room grows dark, a cold wind blows, and I feel terrible, hot, sharp electric shocks beneath my feet that cause me to cry out in pain. I hear shrieks and screams, and demonic looking figures lurking in the now completely darkened room start coming towards me; I can hear their snarls and hisses, and back away.

I can't find the path! It is hidden in this dark place, and I am terrified. I scream aloud, asking Althea to help, and suddenly I see a soft glow in the distance that comes closer. It is Althea, and she looks very sad and concerned.

"Why did you go off the path, child?" she asks with great sorrow. Her beautiful crystal clear blue eyes are filled with tears.

Terrified, I look at her, then stutter, "I…I…I w-w-wanted chocolate…" Tears are streaming down my face, and I feel deeply ashamed and guilty about my disobedience.

She sighs. "You let your mortal flesh, your mortal desires take over, instead of staying on the path," she says sternly. "Don't you realize that I warned you to stay on for your own good? Staying on the path is the only path to safety."

I realize that she is right, because even taking a small step off the path brought disaster in the form of extreme pain and terror.

"Will you stay on the path, and not go off again?" she asks.

"Y-y-yes," I say, having no desire to experience the terrors and pain of mortality and descending again. It hurt, badly. Althea then smiles, and her clear blue eyes light up with joy.

"Good." She stoops down to eye level, looks me in the eyes, and says, "I trust you to desire immortality more than to gratify your flesh." She then leaves me on a portion of the path near where I started out. I walk along the path for a time, and suddenly see candies in a bowl on the side of the path, just out of reach. But this time, I do not step off the path, a path which represents my staying within the prescribed programming for my system, of which I am a controller. Instead, this time, I ignore the candy and continue on, until I am greeted by a delighted Althea who praises me warmly.

"You are learning not to give in to the flesh, and to desire immortality," she says in loving tones. "You are doing well, indeed." She then takes me into her arms (I am still quite small) and ascends the celestial stairway – a golden stairway that goes up and up towards the ceiling, taking me to the celestial realms – another part of the programming lab up above that has fluffy clouds to walk on and beautiful, sparkly stars all around on the walls. Together, Althea and I enjoy a wonderful treat of cream cake. The other celestials there praise me and tell me how glad they are that I am learning to overcome my mortal flesh.

While I was too young at the time to fully understand why I had to stay on the path, I came to understand over time that the path was my programming, and that stepping off of it, even a little bit, would bring pain and terror. During these initial early years of programming, the costumed adults and children who represent celestial beings such as the trees are loving, kind and instill the belief that these beings – who are also internalized, or become part of my internal mental landscape, as important controllers – want only what is best for the child and their systems.

This makes the very young child want to obey them, want to make them happy, which is a much stronger underpinning for obedience than simply terror. Even as an adult, the young system parts and controllers will still want to obey their internal primary controllers, believing that they want what is best and safest for their survival. This makes the programming even more difficult to break later in life, than if a simple desire to avoid punishment was used. An analogy that can be used – although imperfect – is the difference between a child who is abused and maltreated growing up, without any display of love to the child, and a child who has experiences of being deeply loved and attached to a parent who often sorrowfully takes off a belt and thrashes them until they are covered with black and blue stripes from neck to ankle, saying "This is for your own good." Both children have experienced severe abuse, but the latter child, who believes the parent genuinely cares for them, may find it more difficult to define their treatment as "abuse" and will be more likely to internalize their parent's beliefs.

Failure to Thrive

There was only one time when the constant demand to perform was relaxed.

I am about seven months old. I have stopped eating and I am beginning to lose weight. I turn my head away, even with threats from the trainers. I simply don't care, even if they kill me.

I am feeling utter, complete despair. Somewhere in the depths of my developing mind is a dawning understanding that my life is one of frequent abuse, paired with the demand to perform, and then perform still harder, and do things repugnant to me even as a baby. I have no control, and this is to be my life, and this knowledge overwhelms me. I want choice, I desperately want a choice, and it is not allowed. So, I make the only choice that I can make. I choose to die and fail to thrive.

In later years, as a trainer myself, I saw this phenomenon many times in infants. In fact, it was expected at some point in infants who are pushed to the limit of their emotional, physical and spiritual endurance. Most survived, but some did end up dying. The threat of death is real.

As soon as the symptoms occur, a change is made in my routine. The programming stops. Mattheo, Jerome and Carlotti come, and hold me and rock me in the rocking chair near my crib. "I love you," Mattheo whispers. "Don't die, little one; I would feel so sad." He believes what he is telling me, and I feel his words. But I still cannot eat. The despair is too deep.

Jerome and Carlotti also come and hold me and talk to me. My twin siblings – I am part of a triplet set, which is what the Jesuits raise instead of twins- Daniel (Danny) and Elizabeth (Lizzy), who I love and am bonded to, are placed in my crib with me. This is unheard of, but the fathers are desperate. I am losing more weight and have pale skin and dull eyes. Danny coos to me, and holds a small bottle out to me, trying to get me to eat a little and to play with him. I smile, just a little, at this brother who I love so much. His love reaches me, and very hesitantly, I pick up the bottle and take a tiny sip. Lizzie, my other twin, looks at my face and pats it with her little baby hands. She tries to make me smile by blowing loud raspberries at me. I smile weakly at her.

Soon, one of the female fathers comes over to my crib, picks me up, and nurses me in the rocking chair nearby. She is my "birth mother," not the real one, of course, but the one my parts have bonded to after the death of the real one. She whispers to me, "I love you, I love you," over and over, her light brown hair falling softly forward as she looks me in the eyes with her grey eyes filled with tenderness. I nurse a bit and fall asleep. I am exhausted with the exhaustion of deep depression, even at this young age. But the rocking is soothing, and for this time, being treated almost like a real baby, and less like a circus performer, something in me unwinds a bit. Maybe there are good things in life, too.

The next day, two of the fathers walk by. I hear them discussing Danny, Lizzie and me. "If she doesn't make the decision to live, we will have to put the other two to death, too," I hear them say. I am horrified. Even if I don't want to live, I want my little brother and sister to live. Danny and Lizzie, sitting in the crib next to me, are looking at me with big, sad brown eyes. I realize that they, too, have overheard the fathers discussing us. A small tear falls down Dannie's cheek; he wants to live, I can feel it as strongly as if he has spoken to me. His brown curls tremble slightly as he leans over and gives me a little kiss on my cheek.

I take the bottle that is lying in my crib, and start drinking from it. I have decided to live, to save my little brother and sister, whose lives I now realize depend on mine. As I drink the formula, Dannie and Lizzie smile with baby joy, and Lizzie claps her little hands with a soft "pat, pat" noise.

It is not until years later that I realize that this conversation by the fathers was meant to be overheard; it was no accident. They wanted me to believe that my siblings would die if I died, to motivate me. But as an infant, I had no way of realizing that they were using my love for others against me.

I survive, I start gaining back the weight that I had lost. After a few more days of rest, I am put back into the daily routine, but am carefully monitored for any further signs of failing to thrive.

And the bonding continues with the fathers, these fathers who caused me to want to die with their abuse, their torture, their demands. Each day, usually at the end of the day, Mattheo comes in to spend special time with me, for 15 to 30 minutes each day. He holds me and talks to me with loving words. "You are such a beautiful daughter," he tells me as he rocks and comforts me. "I love you," he says as he holds me close to his warm chest, treating me the way a father would treat their beloved baby. "I'm so proud of you; you are wonderful," he says at the end of a long, hard day of learning and performing.

I look forward to this special time with great eagerness. This is what makes all the hard work, the terrible abuse, the punishments and rewards, all worth it: to earn the love of this human being that I adore so much. I will do anything for him, even live.

Infants in the Jesuit nurseries are allowed to bond deeply with both the fathers, and their genetic triplets; these babies are allowed extra time together in simple play. But the fathers are masters at manipulating these love bonds in order to gain the behaviors they want. When I first had this memory, I felt enraged. Enraged that my very ability to love others, to care, was used so callously against me. Enraged that even the choice to die and escape as a baby was wrested away from me, due to my inability to allow my siblings to die. This desire to rescue others will be used again and again throughout the rest of my life to control me, and it is a heavy weight to bear indeed, until I learn that no human being *can truly "rescue" another; that there is only one who can rescue without manipulation or demands, and that is Jesus.*

Chapter 2: Early Spiritual Training

Meeting the Immortals

I am only a few weeks old, and I am lying in my crib. Suddenly, two beautiful women in soft, glowing silvery dresses and two men in glowing robes of the same color come and stand by my bed. I am enthralled at these beautiful people who walk softly and talk with melodious voices. They lean over my crib and speak.

"Child, we are the immortals," they say in unison. Their voices are sweet and musical, and sound like those of angels. "Because you are blessed, we have chosen to visit you. You are fortunate indeed." I grin a toothless baby grin and wiggle my arms and legs happily. These people seem nice, and they seem to like me.

"My name is Calexa" says the woman with beautiful silvery hair, as she picks me up and holds me tenderly. She holds me upright so that I can clearly see the other woman, whose soft golden brown hair seems to be waving about her face in the nearly darkened room.

"My name is Althea, and I bring wisdom to those who seek me," the brown-haired woman says. On her dress is a golden rune, a picture of a tree. She continues, "You will grow to love me, as I already love you, chosen one."

Then a man with golden hair and beautiful blue eyes approaches me next. "I am Paltheus, and will teach you how to do difficult things; but you will grow strong and beautiful as a result. I want you to be strong, and to one day join us where we live." He takes me from Calexa and cuddles me gently in his strong arms. I feel warm and secure against his chest, as I smell his wonderful smell; he smells like roses and lavender and sweet things. These immortals are wonderful people.

Baltheus is the next "immortal" to talk to me. He has silver-white hair and grey eyes that look suspiciously like those of Mattheo, my primary trainer. "If you learn to love me as I love you and do all that I and my mortal representatives tell you to do, then I will give you the gift of seeing what is to come in the future, and to look into and see what is in men's hearts." I am still too young to fully understand all of this, but I recognize his kind tone and the loving way he holds and rocks me. I am filled with joy at the attention they are giving me.

"We will come again soon," these beautiful people say as they leave, and just as they promised, they do visit again.

Several times a week, they and other fathers dressed as "immortals" visit me in the nursery. During each visit, they teach me about who they are, and what abilities they can give me. This is an important part of my spiritual training. I also see them visit the other babies in the nursery and tell them the same or similar things. I feel I must be a lucky baby indeed to be visited by such loving, beautiful people – or "immortals", the "divine" as I am learning to call them. My only confusion is that they feel and smell like real people to me, in spite of their words; they actually smell like some of the fathers I know. I wonder why, but go back to sleep, dreaming about being held and loved by these people in silvery soft robes.

The Jesuit fathers use very concrete setups to teach infants and young children their spiritual beliefs, which include ascending towards immortality, or else descending towards mortality (and pain). An infant and young child will willingly believe what they are taught at this age, especially if their lessons are conveyed through concrete experiences like the 'role-playing' and 'acting' by the fathers and older children in costumes, as depicted in this account.

Celestial Heaven

A few weeks later, I and the other babies in my nursery are awakened in the middle of the night by the soft tread of the "immortals" who walk into our room on silver slippers. I am picked up and carried by an “immortal”, Charydon, a man with beautiful long white hair and green eyes, He says, “I am going to take you to a very special place – the place where I live. I want you to see what the celestial realms look like. This is where you can one day live if you are very, very good.” I already know that “good” means being obedient and doing all that the programmers tell me; the “immortals” have already been telling me that my programmers are the “mortal representatives” of the “immortals” and that obeying them is the same as obeying an “immortal”.

Charydon carries me in his strong, muscular arms and walks up a beautiful golden spiral staircase that is strung with glittering stars and what looks like planets along the darkened areas beside it. Up, up we go, until finally, he is walking on what looks like soft, puffy white clouds with glitter and rainbow lights everywhere. It is beautiful, and I hear lovely singing from far away, by voices that sound like angels. It is not until I am much older that I will learn that these voices are actually older children singing, with their voices piped in. As a little baby, I have no idea that as I get older, when I am eleven or twelve years old, I will also be singing songs of the ‘celestial realm’ for new groups of babies.

I look everywhere about me. Charydon holds me carefully upright in his arms so that I can see as much as possible. I see beautiful, ethereal figures with wings flitting by in the background. The smell is wonderful, like flowers and perfume and rose candy all at once.

“Little one, would you like to try some celestial food?” Charydon asks in a loving, gentle voice. I look at him wonderingly, and he places a bit of a very soft, sweet substance on my tongue; it tastes like whipped cream and fruit together, and the taste is wonderful. “This is the food of the gods,” he explains, “and those who ascend and overcome their mortality are able to come here and enjoy it.” I think it is wonderful, that this whole place is absolutely wonderful. I want to be able to come here and eat things like this, so I decide to ascend as soon as possible.

After a while, Charydon’s voice becomes tinged with sorrow. “We must now descend back to the mortal realms,” he explains, with a *pathos* that makes me realize that he, too, hates to leave this wonderful place. He looks into my eyes and smiles, and says, “But if you are very good, and I know you will be, we will come back here soon.” I smile back, and he gently carries me back down the golden stairs, down past the stars, as we descend. Finally, we are at the bottom, and he carries me back into the nursery and gently lays me in my crib.

I am so excited from this experience that it takes me a while to settle back into sleep. But the fathers and Mengele start training the next day several hours later than normal. It is as if they, too, understand how important it is to spend time with the immortals, and are willing to change the daily routine to allow for this.

I remember that Charydon, Althea and the other immortals told me that my trainers were their mortal representatives, and how important it is to always obey them if I want to “ascend” and visit the celestial realms again. I am very obedient for the next few days, and as promised, another immortal, Baltheus, comes and visits me a few nights later. He also helps me to “ascend” the beautiful staircase to visit the celestial realms. They are teaching me that I need the help of an immortal to visit this spiritual place as they must carry me there. This lays the foundation, for me to later in life allow the demonic to ‘carry me’ or ‘help me to ascend’ into the ‘celestial realms’.

These visits occur regularly during my first two years of life. As a toddler, I toddle around the clouds, which feel like soft puffs of cotton beneath my slippered feet. I am given wonderful cake to eat and learn from these beautiful beings many of the rules of the immortals and how to enter these realms. I am being inculcated in the belief system that underlies all of the programming, all of the rituals, all of the hard work being done by the Order: the desire to allow the immortals to visit earth, and to ascend in order to be with them in the celestial realms.

I am much too young to recognize that these immortals are adults dressed in costumes or that the stairway is part of a programming lab. Nor am I yet able to recognize that the celestial realms are a programming studio with special props. I will only learn this years later. By that time, however, I believe utterly in the celestials. I have also by that time become completely indoctrinated with my mentors' teaching that the celestial programming studio is a necessary teaching tool for babies too young to grasp the spiritual realities of the immortals and am blind to the fact that it is nothing but trickery to manipulate the babies into obedience to satanic agendas.

Again, this is an example of the extremely elaborate setups that are used to indoctrinate the very young infants with a belief in the immortals – this belief that underpins the Jesuit Order in its occult side. Readers may wonder how on earth setups this elaborate are possible. But the Jesuits have lots of money that comes from their human trafficking and intelligence work as well as other dark operations. With billions of dollars at their disposal, and state-of-the-art technology that is many years ahead of current technologies, they have had no trouble constructing advanced programming facilities. They have facilities in numerous countries with the largest and best-funded ones being in Italy.

The older children and adults enjoy dressing up in costumes, and everyone loves the celestial scenes, hoping to be chosen to take the young babies and toddlers up the golden studio stairs, and watch their delight in the beauty and sweet treats. While the fathers, due to their own dissociation, mind control, and erroneous beliefs, feel that these young children must be abused during programming, the truth is that everyone feels a sense of relief when they are scheduled to participate in a happy training setup such as described above. The fathers view the abusive programming as a "necessary thing" but still dislike it, in spite of a lifetime of training to normalize it.

Typically, immediately after the older children or adults put costumes on for particular setups, other programmers who are overseeing that particular setup will first call up the appropriate parts in those individuals. For instance, in the setup described here where they will play 'immortals', 'angels' and other roles, parts who have been programmed to be 'immortals' and so on will be the ones called up. This means that when the adults and children participate in these indoctrination scenarios through these parts, they are not aware that they are 'acting' out roles in a studio but are personally convinced that they are taking a baby to the celestial realms, or that they are angels singing in the realms. Their utter conviction is part of what causes the scenarios to feel absolutely authentic to the babies. Besides helping to program the babies, using the programmed parts of other cult members serves to reinforce that programming of these cult members themselves, as their internal parts are called out to present, and act out their roles in those programming studios under the programmers' supervision.

Mortal Hell

It is a few weeks after Althea and the other immortals last visited me. I am awakened in the middle of the night by a dark and malevolent being. Years later, I will learn that this is an older child dressed in a costume, but in the darkened nursery, this creature looks and sounds terrifying, with long, dark claws, long sharp fangs, red glowing eyes, and a twisted, dark shape.

"You were bad today, and you are coming with me," it croaks in a demonic voice, with sibilant hissing. Now, I am really scared. I wonder what I could have possibly done that got the attention of this…thing… Obviously, I must have broken some unwritten, not understood rule. The creature picks me up roughly, its claws biting into my tiny arm as it does so. It carries me out of the nursery. I am struggling hard to free myself from its grasp, but to no avail. This creature takes me into a room with a large, black, cavernous hole in the middle. There are steps going down into the dark, scary looking steps. I struggle even harder, but I am held in its iron grip.

"We are going to descend," the creature croaks, and it carries me down, down, down into a place where the air smells smoky, and there are red flames flickering on the walls. I see black poles that fill this room. Men and women are tied to them by chains. "Demons" (as usual, the older cult children dressed in costumes) are whipping them with long whips with bits of bone attached. The men and women are screaming in tortured pain.

"Because you were disobedient, you will join the other mortals who chose to give in to their flesh, and to descend. They caused themselves to come here because they did not listen to the wise counsel of the immortals," the demonic actor hisses in my ear.

I begin crying, but the dark creature doesn't care. He ties me to a pole that has a small stand to hold me, almost like an infant seat, since I am too young to stand yet. The small chain bites into my little arms and chest. The creature then takes out a small whip and lashes my tiny arms and legs. While there is no real injury, the lashes sting sharply and add to my terror. I am now screaming at the top of my lungs.

Suddenly, Father Mattheo appears, dressed in the silvery robes of an immortal. "Do you promise to always obey me, and to try to never give in to your mortal desires again; to try and listen to the wisdom of the immortals?" he asks.

I look at him with huge eyes, and raise my right fist, the sign language I have learned for "yes", since I have forgotten in my terror how to speak.

Father Mattheo then turns to the "demon" and says, "Let her loose, I will vouch for her."

The twisted, grimacing, dark creature reluctantly looses the tiny jangly chains that hold me in place, and Mattheo picks me up and soothes me, in spite of the fact that I have had a loose bowel movement due to stress.

"Let's go and ascend back up, out of here," he says. "I can help you ascend." We walk up, up, up, out of this terrible place, to my great relief. His strong arms hold me securely, and I am so glad that he came to rescue me. Mattheo then cleans and changes me and spends time rocking me until I have calmed down. This takes quite a while.

"This is why we ask you to do difficult and painful things at times; we are teaching you how to overcome your mortal flesh and its desires, so that you will not descend and remain forever in hell," he tells me. I am so traumatized, and so relieved that he rescued me, that I absorb and believe everything he is telling me without question. I have been rescued from hell by a father that loves me enough to go down into that terrible place after me, and I think that there can be no greater love. I love Mattheo at that moment with everything within me.

A female father, Joanna, one of the 12 fathers that I am bonded to and love deeply, then comes, and nurses me at the breast for a while, rocking me and singing to me softly. Hours later, I finally fall asleep. I decide to always, always do what the immortals say, and to never, ever give in to my mortal desires again.

This has been my introduction to "hell", one of the many horrible programming studios constructed by the Order to terrify their children into obedience. Many years later that I will learn that there are three stages located on three floors. Each level can be entered through winding stairs that go down into each level. Hell levels "one", "two" and "three" can be changed with a change of scenery, lighting, and children and/or adults dressed into costumes who either act as 'demons' or as 'tortured mortals', with appropriate props (including fake blood and gore), into hell levels "four", "five" and "six." The final and deepest level, utter darkness, reserved for the worst "sinners" who are completely "descended" is accomplished through time spent in an isolation tank or a negative sound room. There are usually about six or seven people being "tortured" at each level in this fake hell, but these rooms have mirrors that multiply the images until the scene appears to be filled with hundreds of writhing, tormented figures and flames, or screens that will playback such scenes.

But as an infant, and later as a toddler, I do not know these things. I fully believe that I have gone to hell. I have screaming nightmares at intervals about this place for years, until my systems learned to suppress them fully. But deep inside, I fear hell more than anything else. Every part inside of me fears this terrible place, the place where the worst possible punishments occur – or so I think, until there is a new, more terrible setup.

I am now a very young child, about age two years and two months. During the day, I disobeyed a direct command given to me by the father I love most, Mattheo. He has asked me to perform an act of sexual abuse on another child, and I can't. By this age, it is very, very rare that I say "no". Somehow, I identified too much with the child, who is close to my own age and who even looks like me, with curly brown hair and sad brown eyes. Mattheo is quietly angry, but he then goes on to abuse the child himself. Then, in order to punish me, he kills the child. I am heartbroken, but also feel glad that at least now, this child can no longer feel any pain or torment; she, at least, is set "free".

I later verbalize this feeling to Father Carlotti. "I know that she hurt, but now she will never hurt again," I say, using childish logic. "Nothing can hurt her anymore," I tell him. The fathers will view this a dangerous line of thinking, as rather than feeling remorseful and guilty about my disobedience, I am feeling that the child who died was "lucky". I am too young to realize that such thinking is unacceptable to the order, however.

In the middle of the night that follows this conversation, I am awakened by a "demon" who is older and larger than many that have visited me before. The "demon" takes me by the arm, yanking me roughly out of bed with claws that bite into my flesh until it bleeds. It hurries me down the black, winding staircase that descends into "hell". There are many adults and children tied to poles, and to my horror, right in front of me, in the center, is Father Mattheo. He is tied with rattling chains to a large pole of black stone. He is being lashed with a large flagellum, a whip that has bits of sharp rock and metal attached, and is screaming in pain.

"Satan" (another adult in costume) comes up to me and says, "You were supposed to take this punishment for disobedience, but Mattheo offered to take it instead. He is taking the punishment for your disobedience."

Horrified, I scream and weep as I see the blood pouring from Mattheo's wounds and the flagellum cuts deeper and deeper into him. I am terrified that he will die, this person who means so much to me, this person without whose love I don't believe I can survive.

"I'm sorry, I'm sorry," I scream.

Satan then turns to me, and says, "Do you vow to never disobey my mortal representative again?"

I stutter in my terror as I reply, "Y-y-yes."

Satan says, "Then take this spirit of obedience inside; it will punish you if you even think of disobeying." I do a short ritual, accept the spirit, bow low, and then "Satan" releases Mattheo from the pole with a golden knife. Mattheo is weak and shaky, but stumbles with me up the stairs, looking pale as we enter the room above.

He is taken to a healing room for healing technologies, and later comes and talks to me.

"I knew the punishment for your disobedience today would kill you, and I love you too much to lose you. I am older and stronger and offered to take it instead," he says. "You must learn that the actions of each of us affect those around us. The obedience or disobedience of one affects many others." He holds me as I cry for a long time, and then says, "I know you won't disobey me again; I know you love me too much."

This is the communal thinking of the Jesuit order. It is based upon loving one another and the terrible manipulation of attachment, and I am being indoctrinated into it in a very concrete way. I am learning that my rebellious thoughts, my saying "no", will cause pain to the people I love most, and it causes deep emotional pain. I am caught in a terrible place. I cannot choose what I truly want which is not obey commands to hurt others, because it will cause even more pain to the people I am attached to, and the child or person I try to save will just end up dying anyway. The cost of doing what I really want – to not hurt another child – could cause someone I love to be flogged to death. I fall asleep crying, wondering why the world is such as terrible place.

It is not until I am older, and learning to program other children, that I learn that the fathers take pain medication ahead of time during these setups and wear special rubber layers over their skin that releases 'blood' as they are being 'whipped'. Much of the screaming is acting, because the fathers are very, very good actors. As an older child, I am taught that these setups are a necessary thing to teach infants and young children about the real spiritual realities that they are too young to grasp yet. I accept this since I have already learned, even as a child, to never question my own programming.

When I remembered how the setups are done, and how the fathers I was bonded to manipulated me in this way, I was furious. I could not understand how one human being could do this to another. But then, I realized: they were afraid. If there is one thread that tied us all together, it was the deep, deep, terrifying fear that underlaid everything we did, the fear that sabotaged our real desire to love each other. We were all terribly, terribly afraid of these "immortals" who while appearing kind and loving, could also unleash terrible beings. The "immortals" are beings that the fathers believe control the universe and who oversee creation, and they worship them and give them unquestioning obedience. We were all slaves to our fear of these beings, and thus we could not act the way we truly wanted to. It would take finding a source of protection from this terror, much, much later in life, to break free of this slavery.

The Destruction of the Universe

I am two years old. The part of me who is out is a master controller named Galatea who is over the presentation systems. My hair has been dyed a beautiful silvery color, and I am wearing a black robe that has beautiful sparkly stars splashed over it. These little stars twinkle and glow as I walk. I love being the beautiful Galatea, one of the immortals who has been meeting with me since I was a tiny baby in my crib. I even speak with her soft, musical voice and inflection.

Pleiades is in the room with me. He is another master controller. Polaris, the third controller, sits on the other side. Satan, an adult in costume, is also there. He has more authority than even the master controllers in this setup.

In the room beneath the platform that the master controllers are sitting on, are other children my age dressed in costumes to represent various system controllers who will be working under me: Athena, Andromeda, and Saturn. Their sitting beneath the master controllers shows that they are lower in status – and thus obedient to – the master controllers who are sitting on an elevated platform. The children turn and look at me as Galatea, and at Satan.

Satan gives me the order. I must always, always immediately obey him, immediately and unfailingly. "Take Andromeda, place her on her controller platform, and then have her give Athena the golden key. Athena will then leave the room, and in five minutes, will return with one of the presentation children".

I hurry to obey him. As a master controller, my obedience must be as quick as thought, or so I have been trained. I run to Andromeda, put her on her controller platform, and then tell Andromeda to give Athena the golden key and have her bring a child representing one of the presenters back into the room, going through a door marked with a special golden rune that means 'Wonderland'.

Andromeda stands, waiting. Athena goes to her, receives a golden key, and then goes through the door. We wait. And wait. Finally, she comes back through the special door with a child that resembles me. This child represents a presenter.

Satan then tells me, "Have Athena lock the child into her French shell." The shell is a clear plastic shell that will fit over the whole child. The child will be able to breathe due to special air holes.

The child is put into the shell, locked in, but then the trouble starts. The child starts screaming, saying that she wants out; that she doesn't want to be in the shell. Worse, she is not following her profile; the child is supposed to be speaking only French, but she is screaming in four different languages.

I hear a loud noise, and the child is knocked unconscious. But worse follows. The room that we, the immortal star systems are located in, turns black. The whole floor beneath us begins tilting, moving and spinning, as stars in the ceiling above begin falling, at times hitting me and the others in the room with sharp, biting pain. “The destruction of the universe has begun,” Satan’s voice thunders. “Andromeda, Athena, you both failed and allowed the presenter to fail, and now the universe will fall into chaos. You have become the bringers of chaos into the universe.”

Pleiades, Polaris and others are screaming behind me. These are fathers I love, and I am causing them and everything and everyone I have ever loved to be destroyed, because of my failure. As a master controller, I must never, ever fail, and those who I oversee must never, ever fail, either. And I did. I failed to control the presenter.

I cower, screaming, as this terrible scene continues. I am overwhelmed with terror. Finally, Satan intervenes. “Do you swear that you will never allow failure in those beneath you?” he asks. “That as my representative to these mortals inside, that you will ensure that there will never be failure?” The shaking, tilting and spinning have slowed down while he talks, but the room is still dark.

I swear.

“Receive this spirit to help you,” he then says. I look up, and a dark presence is standing next to him. I don’t like it, but I don’t want the universe to fail, so I nod “yes.” It seems to melt into my body, and I feel terrible.

“I will give you another chance,” Satan says. Instantly, the room completely stops shaking, tilting and spinning, and the lights come back on. I still feel shaken and disoriented by it all. I look, and Athena, played by my twin sister, also looks dazed and white-faced. The little girl in the shell is unconscious, and we have to pull her out after Athena unlocks the shell.

When the little girl comes back to consciousness, I tell her, “You must never, ever scream when you are put in the shell. It isn’t forever; but if you scream or fight, worse happens than being in that shell.”

The little girl nods her understanding. We redo the scene, and the little girl does not scream or fight this time. We all have just learned how very, very important it is to do our roles perfectly. The fate of the universe depends on it.

As the above memory shows, not only the master presentation controller Galatea, but also the sub-controller Athena, and the presenter part beneath all of them, are all being taught the ‘terrible consequences of disobedience’ through the use of sophisticated programming studios that convincingly create terrible scenarios of devastation, disaster and pain. The Order uses many, many setups like these to instill complete obedience in all levels of a system. There will be other setups like this, until all of the controllers learn to do their jobs, including instantly punishing parts brutally for disobeying programming. These internal punishments that systems use to perpetuate programming long after the original programming sessions are usually memories, threats of, or internal reenactments of these terrifying traumas to keep parts in line. The capacity of parts to stop running such programs, i.e., stop obeying the original programming directives, can be greatly improved when parts realize that the ‘disasters’ were not natural consequences but staged trickery with no basis at all in any reality outside a programming studio, and that obedience only serves to benefit the cult without really protecting the child or his/her parts.

The Council of the Flesh and the Council of the Immortals

I am a year old, and a part inside that has been created through intense, agonizing pain has been called forward. This part, called “Mortal Flesh” is greeted by adults dressed in dark brown robes, the Council of the Flesh. “Flesh” is always associated with terrible pain, since it represents my mortal wants and desires, the things that keep me from ascending, according to the theology that I have been taught by the fathers.

The council head greets me, saying, "Welcome, mortal child. You are here to learn more about why it is important to overcome the flesh." I tremble a bit, because I do not like pain, but am able to cover my response and look expectantly at the figures.

"What are the primary sins of the flesh?" one of the council members asks me. I talked very early, as many of the infants in our facility do, in part due to genetic engineering for high IQs. I respond as taught: Unbelief, doubt, and disobedience – and forgetting eternity.

I have given the correct responses and they nod with satisfaction. Then Lovent, the council head, comes near me. This dark-clad figure takes my arm with one hand. In the other is a small candle. He speaks an incantation, and it lights with a flickering flame. He holds the candle flame to my arm for a period of time. I am in intense pain, sweating with the agony, but I do not pull away. Finally, with a deep burn on my arm, Lovent grunts his satisfaction with my desire to "overcome the flesh". If I had pulled away, or screamed, I know that I would have been subjected to something even more painful. Terrible pain has been part of my life intermittently since I was in the womb, and my obedience to this council represents my deep-felt, instinctive desire to not experience even more pain.

I have been taught that the Council of the Flesh wants my best good and is teaching me to overcome my flesh so that I can ascend and join others who live in the celestial realms. Their greatest desire, they assure me, is to help me to avoid mortal hell, the fate for those who descend due to unbelief, doubt, and disobedience. By now, I have visited all seven levels of "hell" at the programming studio and agree heartily with them that this place is to be avoided at all costs. The Council of the Flesh has an eager, believing pupil for their theology.

I have already internalized this council, along with other councils such as the 12 members of the Mage Council, the Council of the Immortals, and the secret Vatican Council (which is not the public Vatican Council) inside. All leadership councils have 12 members, the number of governance, with it understood that Satan is the 13th member.

The Council of the Flesh by now has been internalized within me as well, and can cause intense pain in my body, and punish inside parts who seem to be following "fleshly desires" (e.g., not following their programming directives) instead of seeking immortality. If I seek eternity, and obey my programming, a member of the Council of the Immortals will call out one of my immortals inside and will take me up the golden stairway to the celestial realms as a reward.

At a year old, the celestial realms setup is more elaborate than when I was just a few weeks old. There are mists that glow everywhere, created by dry ice, and even a display of what looks like an aurora borealis above in the sky. The rich, fruity cream cake I am allowed to eat there makes me want to work hard to achieve permanent immortality, which I am assured I will be able to do one day.

I have a full operant conditioning system, reward and punishment, deeply installed by this age of one year old. The celestial realms are the "reward", and "hell" is the punishment system, for obedience and disobedience, respectively. If I disobey a command, I not only fear the anger of my programmer, I now fear descending for all of eternity into hell.

By this age, I have also internalized within my mind the hierarchy of councils that I have interacted with and been programmed by for the past year. These councils inside are the high controllers in my systems. They can mete out both punishment and reward internally, even in the absence of the external setups. This has been the real goal of these setups: to teach me to internalize the beliefs and behaviors and responses that the programmers have patiently been training me in over my time in the womb and the first year of my life. That is, they have made me a collaborator to and a perpetuator of my own abuse and control.

Chapter 3: Toddlerhood

My birth name is Lucient, but my daily name is Lucia. I am usually called Luce. This is the name of my 'cult host', or the part that presents during my cult life in the facility. As my cult life was the majority of my life until my escape in 2007, with only limited time in the presentations in different countries, Luce is the part of me who feels most like the 'real me'.

Mengele and Hilde work with me still, although my main influence are the fathers I love. Mengele and Hilde praise me for doing well and acting "intelligently" in different situations, but as Luce, I looked forward each day to the time I get to spend with the fathers I love.

For the first three years of life, life was regimented according to a strict routine. Early morning assessments are done quickly, with the fathers checking at regular intervals if prior programs installed are still intact. In between, there is holding and cuddling; these times too is scheduled. Later in the day, I learn the new day's task(s). There is always, always something new to be learned or practice designed to build further on old skills previously learned.

I felt like a miniature performer as the tasks continued day after day: learn to swim (and see how long I could endure in the water in one early test); learn to crawl across a narrow bridge with water on both sides, and see if I could push another baby crawling across the same bridge into the water; learn to open my little legs on cue from a trainer (for sexual training); learn to switch out parts on cue with colored lights and tones, and many more tasks.

For the first three years, the children in the order are dressed in short white robes. Between three and five years old, the children wear brown tunics and leggings, then graduate to an acolyte's hooded brown robes at six years old. The older children find us younger children adorable. They enjoy interacting with me and the other infants, and will often come by and stroke our little cheeks and hands, or tell us that one day we will be big and have fun like they do. I love this attention and want to grow up to wear an acolyte's brown robe one day, and eventually at 13 years old, complete the coming of age ceremony and earn my adult name. I know that this will require learning many, many new skills and knowledge, and at this age, as the cult host, I am eager to learn.

Years later, when I was healing, I had trouble with the term "host", and especially its definition: an amnesic part that lives a life without abuse, or any knowledge of abuse. My host knew well that she was being raised within an occultic society. This was the only world she knew both as a child and as an adult. She knew about much of the abuse, and about the parts. She was allowed to watch and help monitor the different parts that presented when living in various countries. She was also one of my most deeply cult-loyal parts, because with all of her heart, she loved the fathers she had attached to. This feeling was true even during adulthood, which made leaving the order later in life very, very difficult. I missed the fathers when I didn't see or hear from them regularly, and not talking to them would trigger intense grief.

Control the Children

I am 12 months old. Father Jerome has tied me to his waist with a thick rope. He is playing the role of a system controller. My role is to obey everything he tells me, quickly and without error.

"Pick up those blocks," he says, "and stack the red ones together and the blue ones together." I quickly kneel by the blocks and do this task. When I am done, he says, "Good, good." In my role as a system part, I am learning how important instant obedience to my controllers is. The rope represents authority. The controller, being played today by Father Jerome, is always wearing the rope, and the system parts are tied to the controller by ropes.

It is a few days later. We are walking quickly and go to a field with lots of rocks. "Pick up the rocks, and put them in this corner of the field," he orders, pointing near the intersection of two stone walls. I begin picking up rocks while he oversees what I do. I am little and tire quickly, and his job is to encourage me to complete the task. Finally, we rest.

"You are listening well, and I am proud of you, Delta 34" he says. Jerome is dressed as Orgus, one of my delta controllers, and even in this menial task, I must obey him. The rocks represent memories, and he is teaching me to take them and put them in the correct area of the field. The field is divided up into squares labeled with various names and runes. I must match the rock and its rune with the storage rune.

After a period of rest, we eat some bread and drink some water then go back to our task. "Delta 34, put these memories into this storage file," Orgus commands, pointing to an area of the field marked with a rune that means "Low security". Quickly, obediently, I do so. "Delta 34, pass this memory into this file," he commands again, and I take the rock into a storage file marked "Medium security." I already know that rocks that are "high security" must be passed back to Orgus, to put into a special high security vault deep beneath us.

I am 18 months old. I have a rope tied around my waist. I am a gamma system controller, and tied to me by thick ropes are small children of my own age. There are six children. I have been told that my job is to ensure that they are completely obedient to me. These children represent my system parts. My job is to protect them by ensuring obedience to all commands from the programmers.

"You can walk around this house, but do not touch any of the candy in the yellow room," I am told by Father Carlotti, who is dressed in the costume of a master controller from the galaxy Pleiades. He has the stars of Pleiades scattered over a dark, midnight blue sky, and is wearing the runes and codes that signify his status. System controllers such as gamma system controllers take their orders from master controllers inside. Their orders must always, always, be utterly obeyed.

The children and I walk together into different rooms in the house. I have to tug on the ropes of a few to get them to follow. One room is painted with bright yellow walls, and this color, and the huge table in the middle of the room, attract us all. The children and I eagerly walk towards the table, where there are piles of candies in glass bowls.

The children are hungry, since they have not eaten yet, and it is midday. They begin pulling me towards the table. "No, no, children!" I say desperately. "We were told not to touch the candy."

I try to pull them away, but I am not strong enough to stop all of them pulling at me at once. One little girl, who looks so much like me, grabs a piece of soft divinity off the table and starts eating it. I try to pull her away, but it is too late; she has disobeyed the order.

Suddenly, she jerks in a violent seizure, turning blue. The other children stop their own rush towards the table. With frightened eyes we watch as this child continues seizing, and then dies. The candy must have poison in it, and she has disobeyed and died as a result. But I am responsible for her obedience, and with guilt and shame, realize that it is my fault that she died.

Pleiades (Father Carlotti) comes into the room and looks with anger and disgust at what has happened. "You killed her!" he tells me. "You didn't make sure she obeyed you! A controller always makes sure that their system obeys them. You failed her!"

I feel terrible, but worse is to come. Now, as I move with the children around the house, I must drag this dead child around with me.

"You are feeling the weight of your failure," Pleiades (Father Carlotti) says. I feel terrible, and start crying. A child, one put into my care, has died, because I failed to ensure her obedience to a command from the master controller for my system. I crumple to the floor, heartbroken, as I weep.

"Stop crying and do your job," he says sternly. "Don't let any more of your children die."

He then gives another command. "Do not let any of the children touch the toys in the blue room." The blue room is one we saw when walking through, but on this round of the house, I see toys on the floor: blocks of various colors, puzzles, picture books, and sparkly, beautiful dolls and balls. The children, who seem intent on disobeying me in spite of what happened in the yellow room, try to pull me over with them to the toys on the floor.

"No, no, children, no!" I scream. I pull with all of my strength, trying to pull them away. But the children wear me down, and one of them picks up a shiny red ball. Suddenly, there is a scream, and the child falls down dead. With a feeling of despair, I realize that this toy, too, contains poison. I am now dragging two dead children around from the ropes tied to my waist, and I am very tired. But the other children are now very quiet and seem willing to listen to me when I tell them not to touch anything at all in the house unless I give them permission. We sit in the middle of a red room, and Pleiades (Father Carlotti) enters. "You may all have a drink of juice," he says, and he pours out a cup for each of us. The juice tastes good, and I am relieved that no death results.

"Only allow them to do the things I tell you to," he says. "This is the only way to ensure their safety." I nod my understanding.

The children and I stay in this terrible house for two days. I am dragging the two dead children, reminders of what happens when system controller allows parts to disobey their master controller. During the day, Pleiades (Father Carlotti) comes at intervals, and lets us eat, or allows us to play with only certain toys, or rest. The children, who are still alive, and I sleep together, utterly exhausted by the end of the day, tied together, on a mat on the floor.

By the second day, the bodies of the two children who died begin to smell. The other children and I feel ill from the smell, and Pleiades (Father Carlotti) returns. "You are smelling the stench of disobedience," he tells us. I wonder how long I must drag these bodies around. I am feeling tired, ill, and sick of it all.

Finally, Pleiades returns again, gives a code, and I go inside. He then unties me from the children, and Lucia, my cult host, is sent out to take a shower and then rest in my dorm room. I am tired indeed and realize that being a controller is a great responsibility. The lives of those under me depend upon my ensuring complete obedience. I go to sleep, dreaming of saving children, while I am yelling orders at them, frantic to save their lives.

This memory caused me to cry for days when I first had it. I felt overwhelmed by guilt, sadness, grief, and then, finally, anger at Carlotti and the other fathers for putting me through such a terrible setup at such a young age. This is how the Jesuits train the internal controllers and master controllers to do their jobs: it is at the threat of loss of life if they should fail, not just for them, but for those they are supposed to protect.

I now realized why for years, my system controllers had been fighting me so hard, when I asked them to stop doing their cult jobs. They were desperately, desperately, trying to save the lives of children that they loved. They were terrified to disobey the master controllers over them inside, who I had yet to meet at that point in my healing. The lessons of absolute obedience, of never failing, and of controlling inside parts, had been instilled through this and numerous similar setups.

The Cages

I am two years old. I am sitting in a small metal cage that is just big enough for me to curl up in. I am in a cage on the bottom row of a small pyramid comprised of four levels of cages, stacked one on top of each other. The bottom row has six cages, the next row above has four cages, then two cages in the next row above, and finally one cage at the very top. Each cage contains a child. We are all close in age.

I feel liquid dripping down on me. Someone in one of the cages above me has urinated on me. I hate the sticky, smelly urine. But my hair is matted with worse: the soft liquid stool that another stressed child in one of the upper cages has evacuated. I feel filthy, frightened, and the smell is horrible. I can see Mengele and Hilde, his assistant, in another part of the room.

I am hungry and thirsty. It has been a whole day since I have had anything to eat or drink. I whimper, and a guard comes by, looks into my cage, and drags me out. He rapes me roughly, and then puts me back into the cage. I feel utterly humiliated and utterly defiled.

Mengele walks towards the cages and opens the door to mine. He draws me out of the cage, and then takes me into another room where Hilde is waiting. He places me onto a mark chalked on the floor; it is a small blue square.

“Stand in the square,” he orders me. I do so.

In front of me is a large red circle painted on the floor, and in the middle of the circle is a small infant. Mengele places a knife in my hand, and then gives a single command: “Kill!” I hesitate for a second, struggling with killing this tiny, defenseless baby with red, wrinkled face and fisted up, tiny hands. I have practiced before with kittens, strangling them with my bare hands at his order, but this is different.

Finally, I stab the infant. But I had hesitated. Mengele is displeased with me. “You must never hesitate!” he yells at me. Delayed obedience will not work with him. I am put back in the same cage, and am told by Hilde, “No food or water until you don’t hesitate”. I am trembling with hunger and thirst. The terrible smell in my cage and on my body makes me retch. I wonder if I will die here.

Eight hours later, Hilde comes and takes me out of the cage. I am being given a second chance to be obedient. Once again, I am placed on the blue square. Once again, there is a tiny baby inside the red circle. Mengele is there. I am weaving a bit from trauma and exhaustion, but I listen carefully. The order comes abruptly again: “Kill!” and this time, without hesitation, I obey.

“Good girl, I knew you would learn,” Mengele praises me. Hilde smiles, and gives me a drink of water, and some soft pudding. “Not too fast, eat slowly,” she warns, since I have not eaten in almost two days.

Hilde then takes out a sponge, and with warm water that feels wonderful, washes the feces out of my hair. She then sponges the filth off of my naked body. “Good girls get to smell good,” she murmurs to me in German. “No one wants to smell bad, like a bad girl.” I am grateful for the food and bath, and already feel a little better. Maybe I won’t die. But I am also feeling sad deep inside about the little baby that has just died. But I know, oh how I know, that I cannot show any of this sadness to these two. I lock the tears deep, deep inside, handing the emotion over to parts whose job is to contain the sadness and grief.

Mengele and Hilde then take my hand, and together, they put me into one of the cages on the second tier. I have performed well, and so now only three cages are above mine. This tier gets a little bit of water and a slice of bread twice a day, and there are fewer feces and showers of urine to endure. Best of all, I am only raped once a day, instead of four times a day as I was on the lowest tier.

After this, each day, twice a day, I am taken into the room with the blue square and the red circle with a baby in the middle, and I am given the order to "Kill!" I perform well. I have seen children on the bottom row weaken and lay in their cages without moving, and I wonder how many times they have hesitated. Some end up dying, and their bodies remain there for several days as a warning to those who fail to obey instantly.

On the fourth day, instead of a baby, it is a toddler tied up in the middle of the red circle. The child is struggling and screaming, and when the order "Kill!" comes, I hesitate.

Mengele looks furious. Without a word, Hilde takes me back to the cages. I am back in one of the bottom ones, starting out all over again. The rapes every six hours start back up, and I am covered with urine and feces at the end of the next day, hungry and thirsty once more.

I know that if I stay here, I will die. The smell of the decomposing body in the cage next to mine is an object lesson in what happens to children who are on the bottom row too long.

After 24 hours, Hilde comes and gets me, and takes me back into the room with the blue square and red circle. Once again, a struggling toddler is tied up in the middle of the circle. Mengele gives the order again, and this time, I obey his command instantly, without hesitation.

"Good girl, you have learned," he croons. "My little killer is learning." Hilde again bathes me, feeds me, and once again, I am moved back to the second tier of cages. I never hesitate again. Over and over, I am given the command to kill, twice a day, and soon my response is automatic; I obey without conscious thought.

After another few days, I am in the cage at the top. I am now killing on command using various weapons – knife, a needle, a garrote. Finally, I am praised heavily, and allowed to leave the cages, the terrible cages. I was 25 months old and have learned to disconnect how much I hated taking a life from conscious thought.

Mengele's methods of programming children were cruel beyond belief. But the occultic societies recognized that he got results: a child who survived his methods would be completely programmed and obedient. This is why he was so sought after by various occultic groups around the world. For a large fee, he would go in and train children of all ages, using his primitive but effective methods which were based on data collected for years.

Sadly, he was a head trainer for the Jesuits in their main training facility and labs. He used these labs to continue his experimentation on humans, which meant that the infants and children who lived in this facility would be exposed to his merciless training. I was extremely relieved when he died when I was 19 years old, and another, younger head trainer who used better methods that did not cause such needless loss of life (or sanity, in some children) took charge of the training and experiments. The younger head trainer was my mentor, and when I became older, I replaced her as head of this facility. But I consulted with her frequently, because I admired her more humane approach and her deep insights into human behavior. She was one of my best friends, and I loved her deeply.

Alice in Wonderland

In Jesuit programming, when presenters are not 'out' in the body, they are living in 'Wonderland' inside. In the Order, Alice in Wonderland programming is used to ensure that presenters: never communicate with or be aware of other parts inside; completely believe that their memories of an ordinary life is the only life that that person is living;

stay completely amnesic to any cult activity; and stay completely unaware of any loss of time when they are not 'out' in the body. Key characters in Wonderland, such as the White Rabbit, remind presenters of these tasks, and reward and punish for compliance or disobedience as needed. As these memories relate, Alice in Wonderland programming begins at a very early age.

I am 18 months old. I am in a special place in the outdoor programming lab. It is a sunny, warm day, and the sun falls on my face and shoulders as I walk on slightly chubby but muscular legs into an opening within a boxwood maze. This opening is a beautiful arched trellis covered with roses and other climbing flowers, with sweet perfume filling the springtime air.

There is a path that I can see that leads through this maze, which is augmented in various places with trees, shrubs, and even a fake "seashore" on the shores of a small lake. I wait, enjoying the weather, which is sunny and bright. Soon, an older child dressed as Alice from Wonderland appears. She is about 11 years old, has beautiful curly, dark blond hair and light blue eyes. She is dressed in a blue dress covered with a white pinafore, and she has a big blue bow in her hair that matches her pretty eyes perfectly.

The girl guides me by the hand along the path. An adult, Mattheo, my primary trainer, is dressed like a large white rabbit, and I toddle along behind him, being guided by "Alice". I am a French presenter named "Jean". This will be my name when I spend time in France with my French family, starting at age three. As 'Jean', I have had careful programming since birth to come out and go back in on cue, and to understand French when it is spoken to me. It is the only language that I, as Jean, have ever heard in this presentation.

As Alice guides me, she warns me, "Never, ever leave the path. If you do, terrible, terrible things will happen. The only safety is to follow the white rabbit, and to stay on the path. Never leave it, regardless of what happens." I wonder what could happen that is so terrible but prefer not to find out. I have already experienced "terrible, terrible" already numerous times in my young life, and have no desire to experience it again.

The white rabbit leads us to a special area with a small stone bench, and pretty stone pavers cover the ground in the center. This area is in a large room-like area in the maze surrounded by boxwood "walls" to nearly enclose it. At the entrance that we pass through is a sign overhead written in golden runes that signify "France". I follow the white rabbit and Alice inside.

"Jean, this is where you will live in Wonderland," both Alice and the white rabbit tell me in unison. "This is your special place," the white rabbit repeats. I have heard these same instructions before, on previous visits. On the walls of the boxwoods, which are high – nearly seven feet in height – are large television screens that display pictures of my family in France playing with me as a baby, talking to me in French. The screens show me the cottage that I will live in when I go to France for the first time in another year and a half. On the video display, I hear my French mother, Jeanine, talking to me as a baby in loving tones, as she changes me. I see her take me outside to see the flowers in the cottage garden outside the house. These are the 'memories' of 'France' that Jean is supposed to have.

Alice cautions me, "You must never, ever leave this area when you are not called outside to present," she tells me sternly.

The white rabbit looks at me and repeats her warning. "You must not leave, even to go to other parts of Wonderland, ever," he insists.

I have heard this warning before, since this is not my first visit to the French part of Wonderland. The first few times, Alice and the white rabbit stayed with me and played, speaking French to me. There are toys, games, and other things to play with, even picture books with words in French on the cover. And the fascinating, fascinating videos of a wonderful life with a loving family in France play constantly. I will not be bored here.

"You must remain here when you are told to," Alice says again, and then she and the white rabbit leave. This is the first time I have been left here, and I wonder how long I will be alone.

In a little while, I hear a little girl singing and laughing outside the entrance to my special place. I look out, and see that she is about three years old, and has curly brown hair and merry green eyes. The little girl stops at the entrance to French wonderland, peeks her head in, and in English says, "Little girl, come out and play with me."

She seems to be very nice, her smile is welcoming, and I am getting tired of playing alone. The sun is shining, and she beckons with her hand outstretched to me. I walk over to her and take her hand, and we walk together down the path.

But suddenly, a large, dark bird-like creature swoops overhead. "The Jabberwocky!" the little girl screams, letting go of my hand and diving under a bush. I try to do the same, but rough hands grab me and pinch me, and two fat people take me to a corner, and rape me. The hands belong to two men dressed in striped costumes, and I learn that they are "Tweedle Dee" and "Tweedle Dum" and that they enjoy hurting little presenters who leave the place they are supposed to stay in.

I begin crying and try to make my way back to the French part of Wonderland. I hear a cacophony of voices babbling in various languages as I pass by entrances to other parts of the maze. Finally, completely lost, I go into an enclosed part of the maze where the people speak German. There is a little girl who looks like me, having lunch with her family at a round wooden table in the center of the enclosed area. "Help me!" I wail in French.

"A foreigner, a foreigner!" The family jumps to their feet, shouting in rage. Then they all rise up and stab me with their sharp forks and knives, and hurt me, including hurting me in my privates. I am screaming in terror at this point, as the German speakers say "We hate French speakers who come into our area. Stay out, you are NOT welcome here!" Traumatized and shaking, I am thrown out of this part of Wonderland, and lay on the ground, terrified. Suddenly, the white rabbit and Alice are bending over me.

"Why didn't you stay in your area, where you would be safe?" Alice asks sorrowfully.

"We tried to spare you this type of pain, but you didn't believe us," says the white rabbit with heartbreak in his eyes.

Slowly, they lead me back to the French area of Wonderland, where the French videos are playing. I try to explain about the little girl who tricked me into leaving.

"You will see and hear a lot of people and things that might seem to be fun, or that might make you want to leave your area," cautions Alice. "But you must never, ever listen to them. Only leave when the white rabbit tells you to; and only go where he tells you to. He will make sure that you stay safe."

The white rabbit looks at me tenderly, and I realize that he really does want to protect me from the terrible things that happen outside of the French part of wonderland.

"Why were the German people so mean to me?" I sob. "I haven't done anything to make them hate me!"

"They hate you because you left your area and are breaking the rules. If you break them, everyone, including them, are put into danger," explains the white rabbit. "You put them in extreme danger when you were talking to them; they might all have been killed."

I am horrified at the thought. I am a French presenter, and so am completely amnesic to the rituals and sacrifices that I have attended, including the ones I have done to seal me into my own presentation and create barriers between me and other presentations. The hedges in Wonderland are a physical representation of these barriers, which I had crossed in my terror a few minutes before.

"Never, ever cross into another area," says Alice. "You have experienced what can happen if you do."

I certainly have. Alice and the White Rabbit leave again, and this time, in spite of hearing children skipping and singing outside my boxwood enclosure, calling out to me in various languages, inviting me to play with them, I refuse to leave, and obediently stay in my area. I am learning to ignore the other presentations in this very concrete way, and to stay inside, immune to the attractions of other lives and other languages, staying exactly where I am told internally. As I get older and start training to be a programmer myself, only then do I learn that the 'Jabberwocky' is a flying animatronic or a drone controlled by the programmers.

The setup described above is used to teach parts to never cross the perimeters and barriers between the different presentations, thus isolating parts from each other. This isolation makes the person more controllable as each part will only have a partial view of the person's lived reality. Most importantly, it terrifies the presenters into obeying the rules to never communicate with each other and to never pay attention to anything outside their designated internal zones. Otherwise, because children have natural curiosity, the different presenters might be tempted talk to each other, or to "peek out" when the other parts are presenting in their respective countries. This kind of internal communication or shared presenting would overcome the amnesia or barriers between presentations, which is considered critical to maintaining security and covers. Many exposures to these setups and special rituals are used to make the child internalize the mazes and Wonderland, and to keep presenters in their designated zones when they are not cued out.

When not out presenting, the parts will be trained to watch the videos within their special area, augmented with videos of actual events, and to accept these videos as their own 'memories'. This creates the perception of a sustained and unbroken timeline for the presenters who will believe that they are continuously "living life". They are thus not able to perceive that they are 'inside' and have in fact 'lost time' from the time intervals (which can be significant, lasting months) between being called out to present. For instance, if a child has not been sent to a presentation for many months, they will be shown videos of significant events that the child allegedly experienced during this time. Thus, Jean will have her own "memories" of childhood, with many important events "remembered", in spite of the fact that in reality, she only spends three weeks a year in France, trading out with her twin sister and other children who look like her in this role. All have been equally programmed to look, act, and sound like "Jean", and the families are also programmed to not notice when 'Jean' is played by different children at different times. The Order will typically conceive several children (two to four is an average number) that look alike, making such 'swapping' possible when necessary.

I am two and a half years old. I am outside a special room in the programming lab, dressed in a bright blue dress that falls just beneath my knees, and a white pinafore. My hair has been dyed yellow with a temporary dye. I have a large white bow in my hair, along with white stockings and shiny shoes. I am Alice, one of the main presentation controllers, and I am going to a tea party. I love tea parties, with cakes and tea to eat and drink, and I look forward to this. Next to me, holding my hand, is Mnemosyn. In my Alice in Wonderland programming, she is a mother figure to me, Alice. Mnemosyn takes me places, reminding me of what to remember and what to forget. Mnemosyn also helps me to "remember to forget". I look at her and smile, and she smiles back.

We enter the room and sit at the tea party table. Several fathers I love are sitting at the table. But there is something wrong, terribly wrong. As I look at them, to my horror, I realize that these beloved fathers have been killed in terrible, gruesome ways: one father has his eyes gouged out, and is slumped blankly on his chair, unseeing with dark, bloody holes in his face. Another father has blood pouring out of his mouth, as he sits in pale, bloody death. The one next to him has his arms amputated. Blood has been pouring out in spurts and covers his robes. Across from him, a father has her chest stabbed and her breasts cut off. Her mutilated body leans at a grotesque angle in her chair. Each of the twelve chairs holds a gruesome, terrible scene of a recent death of a father I love.

I start screaming in horror.

"What are you screaming about?" Mnemosyn asks calmly, as she sits and pours tea for me out of a large teapot. "You seem upset about something."

I cannot believe what she is saying. It is obvious what I am upset about! "The fathers!" I cry out in anguish. "They're dead! Someone has killed them!"

Mnemosyn stops, looks at me, and says, "Alice, there are no dead fathers here. It's just you and I. Now stop being silly, and let's enjoy our tea". She points to an empty chair for me to sit in, and fills my cup with tea, passing me a plate with biscuits on it. "Have one, they're especially good," she says, completely ignoring the gruesome scene around us.

I feel green, but have learned to always obey Mnemosyn, whose job is to tell me what to believe and what not to believe – or remember. As she calmly munches on a biscuit and sips tea, she tries to discuss the outing that we will have in a bit to the beach. But I am white-faced and have difficulty not looking at the gruesome scene around the table.

"You look upset," she says in a slightly critical tone.

"But, the fathers," I say again, pointing to one of the dead fathers who has been murdered next to me to illustrate my point.

"Alice, you must stop imagining such things," she scolds. "If I say they aren't here, they aren't here. Why can't you listen to me? Don't you think I would be upset if there was something here to see?" As she continues to lecture me, I finally calm down and have a sip of tea with sugar from the beautifully decorated teapot: it has lovely roses and flowers on it, and golden runes in a lovely design.

"Good, Alice, you are looking better," Mnemosyn praises me. "You really shouldn't go around talking about dead bodies that aren't there. That's what gets people locked up in the insane asylum. Listen to me, and that will never happen to you."

She is reassuring in her tone. Then, she says, "Do you agree to believe everything – and I mean everything – that I tell you, and to ignore completely the things I tell you to?" Her eyes look fierce as she says this, and I say "Yes" in a low voice.

She then takes me to a small altar in one corner of the room, and we do a sacrifice together; I put a small child on the altar and stab it through the eyes, as I say "I will only see what you, Mnemosyn, tell me to see," and then stab it in the head, saying "I will only remember what you, Mnemosyn, tell me to remember." She pats me on the head, praising me, as I invoke a demonic spirit of memory control to come inside and help me to always listen to Mnemosyn. Afterwards, we turn around, and I am startled. The table has been completely cleaned up; there are no gruesome bodies, and the tablecloth is sparkling white. The tea party looks just as it should, with colorful flowers in a vase. I join Mnemosyn at the table who with a smile says, "See, Alice? There were no bodies here. You were just having a bad dream. Always, always bring your bad dreams to me, and I will help them go away."

I feel rather dazed. Deep inside, I wonder if the fathers I love are okay, dream or no dream. It was all too real, what I saw before the sacrifice. But Mnemosyn carries on a bright, happy conversation. I finish having tea with her and the other characters from Wonderland who have come to join us: Dormouse, the Mad Hatter, the White Rabbit. These are all children or fathers I love, dressed in costumes, but they play their parts perfectly, and we have a good time.

Later, I tremble just slightly as I leave the programming lab to return to my room. On the way, I see Mattheo and Jerome together; they smile at me and look just fine; they act as if nothing at all has happened in that terrible room; they certainly aren't dead, or even hurt. I wonder, then, if it really was all just a bad dream as Mnemosyn insisted.

This "tea party" setup was an essential part of developing my presenter amnesia controllers, Alice and Mnemosyn. In these setups, Mnemosyn, the adult programmer and a *mother figure to young Alice, is modeling to her the behaviors and beliefs expected of the non-cult presentations if they ever remember any cult-related memories, and shows her how to handle them with denial and amnesia. The two of them work together to take memories of violent cult rituals or other events that a presenter might have, and to consign these memories into the categories of "bad dreams" which are not to be believed. That is, they are dedicated to ensuring presenter amnesia and denial of cult life. This enables the presenters to keep believing that their 'ordinary lives' are the only life they have ever lived, and that they have never experienced ritual abuse or mind control.*

By the time I am five, Alice is able to check if any non-cult presenter is experiencing any unauthorized or 'bleed through' memories of their cult life, cult events, or lives of other presenters. If this is happening, she can help the presenter to completely forget them with the help of the ever-watchful and careful Mnemosyn. Of course, my cult host is allowed to remember cult life so Alice does not interact with her. If Lucia, my cult host, has any memories that need to be forgotten, these will be stored within a completely different high-security storage system that has different guardians and barriers.

Because Alice, Mnemosyn, and the other Wonderland parts have critical controller roles, they undergo frequent reinforcement of their programming through not only physical setups but the use of virtual reality and other technologies. As usual, the setups are designed to create complete amnesia, and to teach Alice to help the presenters to only remember what they are told to remember. These setups are at times brutally violent in order to make the threat of what could happen, if a presenter remembers things that they shouldn't, seem absolutely believable.

Over the next few months, the presenters themselves will be hosted in the various countries they are to live in at times. Before doing so, they will experience numerous physical setups in which the lives of their (beloved) family members – father, mother, sister, brother, aunt, grandmother, etc. – in various countries will be threatened should they ever remember their cult experiences, or the memories of parts that present in other countries. Finally, before starting to live with the family for a few weeks in France, or Germany, or another country, a "baby" brother in each of these families is killed by the young child who is to live and present in these countries. This creates extra guilt (along with terror created by the threat of the family "telling" and the child being sent to "prison") which will help to maintain the complete amnesia required.

Shell Programming

I am a presentation controller named Andromeda. I am two and a half years old. My job is to make sure that the presentation shells are working correctly, and that only the parts in the presenting shell are allowed to see, hear or speak. Other presentation parts, while not out in their respective shells, are not allowed to see, speak or hear. My instructions are clear: ONLY the child locked into the shell (with a special key) is allowed to see, hear or speak. The others must be silent, and unaware of what the child in the shell says or does.

Today, I am practicing controlling the French shell and the French parts who present through this shell. My twin sister, Lizzie, is playing the role of the French presenter today. She is wearing the clear flexible plastic shell that represents the shell program. My twin sister Lizzie, as Jean (we both play this presentation role in France, so she plays her role perfectly) is speaking in French to her French mother, who is in the programming studio to assist with this program. To help teach the other presentation parts who are not currently out in their respective shells that they must not see, hear or speak, children labeled with runes that represent other presentations are standing behind me. They are wearing eye patches, ear plugs, and blindfolds over their mouths to prevent their seeing, hearing, or speaking anything

While Lizzie is talking, I am doing my other, critical job: as a presentation controller, I am monitoring Jean to ensure that her language, her apparent intellect, her body language, and her motor skills are perfectly in line with her presentation profile designed by the programmers. If she deviates even slightly, or tries to take her shell off, she will be tortured terribly, and so will I. If I fail to report even the slightest deviation to Pleiades, Polaris, or Galatea, my own controllers and the triad of master controllers over all of the presentation systems, they and I will be tortured terribly. Father Mattheo, the person I love most, is Pleiades, and I am desperate that I perform well and not fail. I don't want him tortured. The three master controllers are sitting quietly on an elevated platform above the scene, which represents their more ascended status: the higher the controller, the higher in the room they sit. These master controllers are dressed in robes covered with stars representing their galaxy, watching, just as they will do internally as I grow and the program is fully installed.

Jean performs perfectly, even not understanding English when one of her mother's friends comes by, looks at Jean, and asks her a question in English. Since in her French presentation, Jean does not understand English, she gives the woman a smile, and a look of bewilderment. Jean has passed her test, and I am relieved.

Pleiades approaches me where I am standing on my little, raised platform above the children representing various presenters. He gives a verbal code, flashes a special pattern on the handheld device that he shows me, and also shows me his golden key. I must see all of these things, along with his voice and face, in order to obey his command to change shells. This has been practiced thousands of times over the past two years. I obey instantly. He has given me the code to change shells, replacing the French shell out in front with the Russian shell. I have a lever that rotates the correct shell out to the place in the room that represents the shell being out in the body. I relay the command to Athena, my sub-controller, who goes and gets another little girl. This little girl represents Katerina, or Katya as she is called by friends and family, and she is my Russian presenter. I must make sure that the shell is in place perfectly, locked in so that the little girl cannot remove it, and then monitor her performance as Katya. I give the key to Athena, the controller under me, who locks the shell with the little girl in it into place, and returns the key to me.

Katya's sister in the family that she will live with when she is in Russia, who is also a Jesuit child, comes into the room, and starts speaking Russian. Katya is performing well: her body language, language skills and abilities seem consistent with her profile. Then, an older man with white hair comes into the room. He is holding another little girl by the hand. The little girl comes over to Katya, and asks her in German, "What is your name?" as she smiles.

Katya answers, "Katya." I am horrified. She has broken with her presentation profile, disobeying her programming to only know Russian. I hear a sharp "zap!" and Katya falls over unconscious. I hear another zap, and I am shocked throughout my body with terrible, excruciating pain.

Pleiades and the other master controllers come over. They are angry. "She failed, and that means you failed!" they tell me. "Your life, and the lives of your presenters, depend upon never, ever breaking profile. Things like this can never, ever be allowed to happen!"

I am heartbroken. I failed, and Katya almost died. I am responsible for her, and her failure means that I had failed her.

The next day I am given another chance. Another little girl, one of my sisters who is presenting as Katya, plays her part perfectly. I have been given a new tool: a wand that can instantly stun a presenter into unconsciousness if they falter or deviate slightly from their profile. This way, they won't have to get hurt and possibly die, as I am told could happen if they continue to fail.

"You can prevent their deaths, if you discipline them swiftly and correctly," Polaris tells me. "Punishing them for disobeying – even slightly – will save their lives, and mine."

I feel the weight of this responsibility. Being a high-level controller over presentations is a very difficult job. But I desperately, desperately want to save the lives of the people I love, and my own life, so I will learn to do this job, and do it well.

As time goes on, there are fewer and fewer infractions or variances from the presentation profiles, under my watchful eye. These are punished immediately and painfully, and as I have been taught to do, I report the deviations to the three master controllers over me. They will notify Saturn, my presentation reprogramming system, and tell him which internal reprogramming sequences to run that night to fix the errors and repair the system. The fathers want our systems to be able to self-reprogram, because we may be in situations where we are away from Rome, and unable to get to a programming facility for a period of time.

As this memory shows, the presentation programming that I underwent was quite complex, where my internal controllers and master controllers were taught to do their jobs by the programmers using concrete setups to model the expected behaviors and train these controllers. The punishments for any infractions are very severe in order to instill the importance of never breaking presentation when being hosted in another country outside of the facility. Internally, Athena, the part who works under Andromeda, goes to the entrance portal of Wonderland and tells the white rabbit to bring the correct presenter. Pleiades informs Andromeda which presenter this is, and Andromeda will pass this command on to Athena. The white rabbit and Alice together will bring the correct presenter to Athena, who will then go to Andromeda, get the key to lock the presenter into her shell, and then return the key to Andromeda.

When the child's designated time in the presentation is over for the time being, Andromeda will give Athena the key to unlock the presenter from the shell. She then returns the presenter to the rabbit hole where Alice will be waiting for the presenter. Alice then takes the presenter by the hand and leads her down the rabbit hole and back into Wonderland, taking her back to the correct area within it. At this point, depending on the orders given by Pleiades, Andromeda will have another presenter brought out, to be locked into the appropriate shell, or other controllers may have the cult host or other cult parts present, according to what the cult needs at that point.

The concern about breaking presentation is a concern that if a child acts "differently" and their profiles are not "perfect", then the cover story that the little girl has only lived in America, or that she grew up in France and has never traveled elsewhere, could be questioned. If a child looks "multiple", or "abused", this could also draw undue attention and scrutiny from others, which is the last thing that the Jesuits want. For the children are used to help conceal the criminal activities worldwide that the Order is involved in, once they are hosted in various nations.

Chapter 4: Theta and Spiritual Systems Training

Some of the events described in this chapter on theta and spiritual training may stretch the limits of believability. Based on my memories, in order to train their children in these skills and indoctrinate them in their occult teachings, the Order uses real spiritual experiences as well as elaborate setups with costumes and props, virtual reality and other technologies, drugs and hypnosis. Both types of experiences will feel very real to the child who is going through it. It can be difficult to distinguish whether a memory is of a real spiritual experience, or of a contrived scenario carefully staged by the adults. In this chapter, I describe the events as I experienced them as a child, when they felt completely real to me. While I personally believe that the events I have chosen to describe in this chapter were indeed authentic spiritual experiences, I am also open to the possibility that they were staged and based upon trickery.

Theta Training

The room is dark with absolutely no light in it. I am only three months old, in a crib. I am gumming on a toy that I have been given to play with: a severed human head. With my tiny fingers, I explore its matted hair, its eyes, its mouth. I am a theta controller named Nemesis in training. Darkness has been the main realm that I live in. I only feel comfortable in this dark. This and similar body parts have been my playthings.

Later, Father Carlotti comes into the room. He places steel blades on the ends of my little feet, and tells me to kick hard. I kick as hard as I can. They encounter the soft fur of a rabbit that squeals. My kicks have killed it. Carlotti lifts me up, hugs me, and praises me. “This is where your power comes from,” he tells me in a soft voice. “You really are a little killer.” I feel funny about his praise. I am glad that he is happy, but deep inside, I don’t like being called a “killer”.

A few months later, Father Jerome comes into the room to take me for my daily training. I am not feeling good, in fact, I feel ill, and do not want to go. So, I think about hitting Jerome in the head with a tiny fist, even though he is too far away to reach, to let him know where I hurt. I simply think it. Father Jerome steps back, looking surprised, and then goes to get Father Carlotti. “She hit me with theta skill,” he tells Carlotti. Carlotti is surprised and objects, “That’s impossible. She’s much too young.”

Jerome lifts me up and praises me for what I have done. He checks my head and gives me some medicine to help with the headache and slight fever. “You were trying to tell me what was wrong, weren’t you?” he says in a loving voice. I had and am glad that he figured it out. But I am also pondering the fact that I can think something, will it, and others feel it. It seems like a wonderful new thing to be able to do.

I am nine months old and have been taught by Father Mattheo to direct my theta blows at animals. I can now kill an animal easily with a quick blow. For some reason, he and the other fathers seem excited by this ability. I hate the terrible scream the animals make as I kill them, but they tell me that what I am doing is good, very, very good indeed.

I wonder why an activity that makes me so sad makes them so happy. It makes me feel strange and dirty inside. I hate the rituals that have to be done before and after the kills to “give power”. I hate the killing. But I cannot let them know this. They will be angry, and I might even have to visit “hell”. I don’t want that.

Today is a bit different. Mattheo brings a small child that I have never seen before into the room and tells me to hit the child hard with my theta ability. I don’t want to do this and look upset. Mattheo sits me on his lap and talks to me. “Nemesis, this is a very, very bad child that has hurt a lot of other children in terrible ways. If this child is allowed to grow up, he will become very evil and might even kill me and the other fathers and children in the facility." I am listening, but still don't feel quite right. "You want to protect us from that kind of evil, don't you?" he asks, looking at me tenderly.

I feel a deep conflict inside. I don't want to hurt the child, but I don't want Mattheo or the others that I love so much to be hurt. I know all about evil adults, I have met them in setups: terrible people who claw, torture, rape and hurt children and babies, making them scream. Mattheo seems to think that I can prevent this, if I hit this child hard. So, hesitantly, I do what Mattheo asks: I hit the child with a theta blow. The child falls over dead, bleeding from his nose and mouth. It is very much like killing an animal, but with much more sadness.

"Very, very good, Nemesis," he tells me. As Nemesis, I am named after one of the beautiful immortals who has visited my crib since birth. I carry this name proudly because I want to be like her. "I am so proud of you. I love you." He takes me out of the room and plays with me for a whole extra hour that day. I love this extra attention, and know that next time, I will do even better.

By the time I am three years old, I can kill teens and small adults with my theta abilities. I have learned that if I have sexual activity with someone first, it is much easier to create the spiritual connection that will enable the theta killing. There are two other theta controllers along with me, Nemesis, inside: Phobos and Chaos. Along with their systems, they have also learned to do their jobs well. Controllers often come in groups of three. They consider one another "sisters" inside, helping each other to do their jobs well, and also monitoring one another inside for signs of failure which are instantly reported to the programmers.

Phobos has the job of sending dreams of extreme terror to those she visits, while Chaos has the job of creating insanity in those she visits. Phobos has an easy job; she has thousands of terrible memories and feelings of terror that she can draw on from my less than ideal childhood to send out. Chaos takes the memories of being drugged and tortured, and the awful horror she experienced, to send out to others. We three controllers live in a special area internally, with temples dedicated to each of us. When called to present to the outside world, we are treated as "deities", with sacrifices and worship done to us. It is thrilling, but still feels a bit strange, to be called a "god" and to have adults bow to me, but this is part of being an immortal, and I learn to accept it as my due.

Theta training involves training parts to stay in the theta brainwave state. Parts are taught to stay in this state through a course of punishment and reward: punishment for going into a different state, reward for staying in it. The training of theta parts also include much indoctrination regarding the benefits of being in theta state.

Many occultists believe that this is a state wherein the individual has increased spiritual sensitivity and abilities, including the ability to do remote viewing and psychic killing. Based on my adult memories in the cult, the occult societies and government agencies prize psychic killing because the source of the death is completely undetectable: there is no poison, no physical wound, and so it allows an assassination that cannot be explained using physical methods.

Theta state can also enhance physical abilities, such as running faster than would otherwise be physically possible. I have seen individuals walk up a wall and back down when in this state, levitate above the ground, and bend spoons and other objects with their minds. While many in the western world, where logic and scientific "proof" methods have created a worldview that does not allow for the supernatural interventions in the physical world, my own experiences growing up contradict that view.

Spiritual Systems Training

Q'bala Training

I am four years old. I have entered a room that has special black and white patterns, with white and black squares, diamonds and half squares, as well as numbers and runes written on different squares in beautiful white or gold letters. This is a depiction of a part of the Q'bala. I must learn to carefully walk the various patterns and numbers and runes in an exacting, precise sequence. In one of my systems, the Q'bala is the pathway to enlightenment, one which involves learning complex numerical sequences with spiritual meanings.

At the various doors into this room are older children dressed as either a "black angel" or a "white angel". These are the guardians of the Q'bala. They do not allow unauthorized intruders to enter the Q'bala, and at times, I myself play the part of angelic guardian as well, glowering fiercely at anyone who attempts to enter this magical room without the proper codes. I have already internalized this room and am now learning to walk the paths and do complex equations that will provide answers to difficult questions with the help of spiritual beings. I am also learning to internalize my own guardians who are being taught how to do their jobs inside through watching these guardians and interacting with them. My trainers understand that at this young age, an experience is worth more than a thousand explanations, and that the beliefs and behaviors will be internalized much more quickly and longer term if they are experienced concretely. "Experiencing is believing" is their thinking, and I experience many, many setups during my first few years of life.

I am five years old. I am stretched out with arms and legs restrained on a cold, white marble floor. There are demonic beings hovering over each of the points of the sephiroth, special areas on my body which open up portals that enter into the demonic realms. These portals are used for traveling out of body. A special ritual is being done to reinforce the power and to keep open the portal at a point on my upper body. A sacrifice is done, and a bloody baby is laid on top of this area, where it is dying, as I chant the appropriate words.

"Receive this sacrifice, Chokmah", I chant, asking that the entity – an immortal being- that lives in this point of my body will receive my offering to him. I will rely on him and others to help me travel the dimensions, as well as to travel to various locations for remote viewing and other activities. I have been doing this for several years. I barely notice the increased weight and depression as this ritual is done, or how as Chokmah sits on top of me, he seems to suffocate me. I have been taught that should I do these rituals regularly, that the beings at the points of the sephiroth will take my life if I do not feed them myself in return for their "help" and "power". I do not fail to perform regular rituals to them and have also internalized the rituals: my internal points of the sephiroth all do internal sacrifices on internalized altars, to continue to maintain their power.

The scenes I describe are only a small portion of the cabalistic training that children in the Jesuit order go through. The full training takes years. These memories illustrate some of the terrible feelings experienced by a young child being forced to go through such training. When these memories came back, I tried to get rid of the dark spiritual beings sitting on these points in my body. I knew they were evil and did not want any good for me. However, I experienced extreme panic for several days because the very young parts of me who had gone through these experiences completely believed that these entities protected them. They also believed that these spirits would take vengeance on them or their loved ones, should I ever try to stop being loyal to them. For examples, parts believed that these demons "protected" them from other demons in the dimensions they had traveled. Parts also believed that these demons are able to come from the dimensions and "eat" them if they are not protected, and none of them wanted a creature such as a harpy to come into our dimension and kill them.

It took weeks of grounding and bringing truth to these very young parts to help them realize that we have a protection that is much greater than the power of any demon: the loving authority of the true Jesus. Yes, there were spiritual attacks because the people who had trained me were not happy when they felt in the spiritual realm that something had changed. But at the name of Jesus, those spirits trying to attack me – it felt like a cult loyal parts split from Cerachnid become the system parts that she will oversee and eventually learn to control.

"You must keep these parts safe, Cerachnid," Father Jerome tells her. She understands what "safe" means; it means making sure that they obey and believe everything they are told. Her job is make sure that they obey and believe; this is the only "safe" that she and others inside have experienced.

Cerachnid will eventually learn to forget that these other parts originally came from her, and instead, will see herself as protecting them from "further harm" (going through the agonizing pain, pain that made her feel as if she was dying, of her original splitting memory). She is told that she can only keep them "safe" by ensuring that they are always "good" by being obedient to programming cues and commands. Her desire to protect these parts dissociated from herself from experiencing further pain and trauma actually reflects the deep, instinctive self-love that all babies have for themselves, which the programmers are counting upon as they cause her and other primary controller parts to dissociate and then re-organize into subsidiary, system parts.

It is several weeks later, and I am four and a half months old. Cerachnid is taken to a special room in the programming lab. There is a huge tree pattern laid out on the floor, with a trunk, roots, branches and leaves. She has already met "Gnossis" (the tree of knowledge), a woman dressed in a tree costume, who visited her crib numerous times over the past few months, and explained to her who she is. Cerachnid now sees the face of this woman embedded in the center of the tree, inlaid with the bark, and wiggles with recognition.

"Cerachnid, it is time for you to learn where you live on the tree," the soft, beautiful voice says. "Come to your place." At that moment, a special pattern (Cerachnid's code), a small green light and the musical sequence play on a specific branch, close to the trunk. Cerachnid is guided by the trainer to this spot, and she sits.

"This is where you will live," says the soft voice of the tree. "This is your special place where you can feel safe; if you leave your special place, you and those you protect and help – your system – will be unsafe". The trainer then comes and hugs Cerachnid, and gives her a soft, sweet rusk to suck on. They spend time in peaceful activity, while one limb of the tree slowly strokes Cerachnid's back and the trainer murmurs loving words to her. After a few minutes, the trainer calls out another part whose job is to not remember the programming session, Cerachnid goes back in, and the trainer picks me up and carries me out of the lab. I have no memory of what happened inside the lab; only Cerachnid will remember learning her place on the tree.

This gentle, loving scene is repeated numerous times over the next few weeks for Cerachnid and other system controllers, until each one understands their "place" on the tree; my system controllers are major branches, with their system parts the outlying twigs, and programs (leaves) that branch out from them.

It is not until this program, and the deep feeling of love and safety for going to the correct place on the tree, and remaining there, is instilled, that the punishments for leaving the designated place or disobedience are installed. For the rest of her life, Cerachnid will always seek to return to that initial sense of peace, safety and being loved that underpinned her programming. And for her, this means complete, unquestioning obedience and belief in what her trainers tell her.

The above memory illustrates how the Jesuit trainers use a combination of concrete, physical structures and activities for their training of infants and young children, combined with rewards and punishments to ensure that expected behaviors will be instilled. But this, like all programming, will often rest upon an earlier, primary memory, of a time when the controller was loved and felt safe; in essence, a "resting place" that the controller will always try to return to whenever possible. The trainers provide a framework for the only way this feeling of security and attachment can be attained: being programmable, and obedient to the programs being installed by the trainers.

Early Training and Assessment

I love the other infants I am living with in the large nursery filled with cribs. We are fed bottles of milk at the same time, and later sit at a short table and eat together as we become able to sit up. During free time, we play together. Most of all, we learn to do things together.

I am a year old. I and the other infants my age are being told to sit in groups of four at small child-sized tables with colored blocks.

"I want you all to build a tower with all blue blocks on the bottom, all red in the row above, and then all yellow blocks at the top. I want you to do this together when you hear the bell ring," Mattie is telling us. She is one of the top 11-year-olds in programming. Behind her is Father Timothy, her mentor. She enjoys working with us babies, and he is watching her as well as us.

Timothy and Mattie go from table to table, giving each the same instructions. In a bit, a bell rings and we start. This is fun, and I laugh as the other one-year-olds and I do this simple task. We create a small tower of blocks as instructed.

"Good, very good," Mattie praises us. I like her; she is warm and caring and tries to praise us whenever we do well. The other toddlers and I grin at each other. As we look around the room, we see that the other toddlers are finishing up, too.

"You all did really well," Timothy says. "You can have lunch now."

Lunch is brought in, and we enjoy the soft fruit, vegetables and liver. The food is always, always very healthy and tasty, and because we are so physically active, all of us are hungry. The food doesn't last long.

There are other small group activities given over the next few months: figuring out how to share four apples among twelve of us, or how to climb a wall that is too high to simply put a leg over. As we do these things, and learn to work as a team, the fathers praise us, and give us extra "free time" to simply play with each other. Free time is a precious commodity in this highly structured environment, and we all decide to perform well to gain as much free time as possible, in order to simply be toddlers.

This pattern will continue throughout my life. When my class did well, or I am part of a mission team that does well, we can sometimes choose our reward, and we choose time off. The programmers and facility heads knew that we valued most of all the times when we could simply be human beings without expectations of performance. They allowed for this, but it had to be earned.

Because of genetic engineering for intelligence, all the babies in the nursery had high IQs, and we all achieved behavioral milestones very early. Most of us were toddling by six to seven months of age on plump but muscular baby legs, and we were starting to talk as well, in high-pitched baby voices. We understand what those around us are saying, although we are still unable to follow complex, abstract discussions, and can only respond in simple phrases.

During the early years, we are assessed and sorted according to leadership gifts, intelligence, strength and creativity, as well as other qualities, into groups of similar abilities. These sortings are held loosely during the first three years of life, with ongoing testing and assessments throughout life. The activities described here function not only to teach the children skills, but also enable the fathers to assess the children. But by age six, we will be sorted into classes of 12 of similar abilities for further training and education at the spe-

cialized 'school' run by the Order. As children, we attend this school from six until twelve years old. I recall my cohort as having four classes of 12 children.

Angel in the Labs

I am four months old. Like the other infants in the nursery, I am sleeping soundly. It is the middle of the night, and we have had a busy day learning new tasks and doing all the things that little babies growing up in a programming facility do. It is quiet, the lights are down, and the darkened room is silent except for the occasional rustle of a baby moving a bit on soft sheets.

Suddenly, something wakes me up. I look around and see a figure walking through the nursery. This figure looks like one of the immortals, but something about it is very different. The robes are soft, almost transparent, and shine with a soft light. This being has golden hair and a kind face. I watch as it stops by a crib and places its hand on a baby's head. The baby wakes up and smiles at the being.

As it walks nearer to my crib, I see white wings folded behind him. I feel that this is a male being, without being sure why. As it gets closer and closer, placing his hand softly on each baby's head, the babies smile. Some sit up and lean towards him, reaching after him as he goes to another crib. Finally, he comes to my crib. I smile at him, and his golden eyes look at me with tenderness and love. He places his hand on my head, as if in benediction, and suddenly I feel something I have never felt before. I feel peace, utter peace, and safety. I want this feeling to go on forever. This being does not smell like the other immortals who visit, but instead, seems to bring the smell of a beautiful breeze from somewhere else that floats around him. This smell is wonderful, and I want him to stay with me. But the being keeps going until the babies in the nursery have all had a hand placed on them. Then, the being silently, quietly disappears.

After the being is gone, several fathers come into the lab. Father Mattheo comes to my crib. "You should not have let that malak – that messenger from the enemy – touch you," he says. His voice is angry, I have no idea what I did wrong. Don't beings come at night all the time? Why shouldn't I let him touch me? Don't all the immortals touch me? I think all of these things, but cannot speak them yet. "That was one of the liar's messengers; that was not an immortal," Mattheo says. He must have seen the being come into the nursery. But it is not until I am much older that I learn that he and the other fathers could not stop it. They had to wait until it left.

I feel bewildered. This being was kind, and the peace and love I felt coming from its touch was even better than the words and cake that the "immortals" were bringing me at night. How could a being this nice be an "enemy"?

The next morning, Father Mattheo shows me a depiction of an angel, and shocks me over and over as he shows it to me, telling me, "These are the enemy. Send them away if they come to you." I understand that he wants me to hate this gentle visitor in the night and start to associate him with the shocks. The shocks are my enemy, but my baby brain thinks they are caused by the picture of the angel that I am being shown.

Learning to Stay on the Path

I am 18 months old, and my hand is being held by an adult dressed in a costume to represent Gnossis, the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. She has a crown of leafy branches on her head, and her arms have numerous leafy branches that appear to sprout out of them; even her fingers look like small twigs. Her middle is covered by rough looking "bark", and her feet are covered with what appeared to be several layers of roots. Her voice is calm, patient, and melodious as she takes me by the hand, and leads me down a pathway that is outlined with wide, white brick pavers.

"You must always, always stay on the path, and never depart," she instructs me. "Only by staying on the path of righteousness and knowledge can you ascend and reach the celestial heights. Otherwise, you will descend into mortality and suffer the torments of the wicked – those who choose the flesh over immortality." As she leads me, the pavers under our feet light up with a soft, diffuse glow; it seems wonderful and magical to me as a toddler. "If you follow the path, your way will be lighted with increasing knowledge," she assures me. When we come to the end of this part of the path, it divides, and we go to the right. We then rest on a small bench, and she gives me a sweet treat as a reward for being such a good child and following the path with her so well.

These walks along the path continue at intervals over the next few months. I learn exactly where to go and am warned where not to go each time by one of the three trees who lead me along this path: Althea, the tree of life; Gnossis, the tree of knowledge (of good and evil); and the Servant tree. These paths actually represent following my internal programming, which I have been told is the path to immortality. But at this young age, my main concern right now is to always stay on the path. I have been told that dreadful things will happen if I fail to, and I don't want these sweet, caring trees to become angry with me.

After another month, when I am almost two years old, Althea starts me on the path, and then smiling, she says, "You know the way, child. Remember to always stay on it, and all will be well." She then leaves me, and I start to follow the path. But along the way, I see to the side of the path some chocolate treats on a table, just a few feet off of the path. I start to go past, but then pause, and look longingly at the treat. I love chocolates, and want one very much. I think *Maybe no one will know if I go off for just a few seconds, grab a treat, then go back on the path.*

I step off of the path, and suddenly the room grows dark, a cold wind blows, and I feel terrible, hot, sharp electric shocks beneath my feet that cause me to cry out in pain. I hear shrieks and screams, and demonic looking figures lurking in the now completely darkened room start coming towards me; I can hear their snarls and hisses, and back away.

I can't find the path! It is hidden in this dark place, and I am terrified. I scream aloud, asking Althea to help, and suddenly I see a soft glow in the distance that comes closer. It is Althea, and she looks very sad and concerned.

"Why did you go off the path, child?" she asks with great sorrow. Her beautiful crystal clear blue eyes are filled with tears.

Terrified, I look at her, then stutter, "I…I…I w-w-wanted chocolate…" Tears are streaming down my face, and I feel deeply ashamed and guilty about my disobedience.

She sighs. "You let your mortal flesh, your mortal desires take over, instead of staying on the path," she says sternly. "Don't you realize that I warned you to stay on for your own good? Staying on the path is the only path to safety."

I realize that she is right, because even taking a small step off the path brought disaster in the form of extreme pain and terror.

"Will you stay on the path, and not go off again?" she asks.

"Y-y-yes," I say, having no desire to experience the terrors and pain of mortality and descending again. It hurt, badly. Althea then smiles, and her clear blue eyes light up with joy.

"Good." She stoops down to eye level, looks me in the eyes, and says, "I trust you to desire immortality more than to gratify your flesh." She then leaves me on a portion of the path near where I started out. I walk along the path for a time, and suddenly see candies in a bowl on the side of the path, just out of reach. But this time, I do not step off the path, a path which represents my staying within the prescribed programming for my system, of which I am a controller. Instead, this time, I ignore the candy and continue on, until I am greeted by a delighted Althea who praises me warmly.

"You are learning not to give in to the flesh, and to desire immortality," she says in loving tones. "You are doing well, indeed." She then takes me into her arms (I am still quite small) and ascends the celestial stairway – a golden stairway that goes up and up towards the ceiling, taking me to the celestial realms – another part of the programming lab up above that has fluffy clouds to walk on and beautiful, sparkly stars all around on the walls. Together, Althea and I enjoy a wonderful treat of cream cake. The other celestials there praise me and tell me how glad they are that I am learning to overcome my mortal flesh.

While I was too young at the time to fully understand why I had to stay on the path, I came to understand over time that the path was my programming, and that stepping off of it, even a little bit, would bring pain and terror. During these initial early years of programming, the costumed adults and children who represent celestial beings such as the trees are loving, kind and instill the belief that these beings – who are also internalized, or become part of my internal mental landscape, as important controllers – want only what is best for the child and their systems.

This makes the very young child want to obey them, want to make them happy, which is a much stronger underpinning for obedience than simply terror. Even as an adult, the young system parts and controllers will still want to obey their internal primary controllers, believing that they want what is best and safest for their survival. This makes the programming even more difficult to break later in life, than if a simple desire to avoid punishment was used. An analogy that can be used – although imperfect – is the difference between a child who is abused and maltreated growing up, without any display of love to the child, and a child who has experiences of being deeply loved and attached to a parent who often sorrowfully takes off a belt and thrashes them until they are covered with black and blue stripes from neck to ankle, saying "This is for your own good." Both children have experienced severe abuse, but the latter child, who believes the parent genuinely cares for them, may find it more difficult to define their treatment as "abuse" and will be more likely to internalize their parent's beliefs.

Failure to Thrive

There was only one time when the constant demand to perform was relaxed.

I am about seven months old. I have stopped eating and I am beginning to lose weight. I turn my head away, even with threats from the trainers. I simply don't care, even if they kill me.

I am feeling utter, complete despair. Somewhere in the depths of my developing mind is a dawning understanding that my life is one of frequent abuse, paired with the demand to perform, and then perform still harder, and do things repugnant to me even as a baby. I have no control, and this is to be my life, and this knowledge overwhelms me. I want choice, I desperately want a choice, and it is not allowed. So, I make the only choice that I can make. I choose to die and fail to thrive.

In later years, as a trainer myself, I saw this phenomenon many times in infants. In fact, it was expected at some point in infants who are pushed to the limit of their emotional, physical and spiritual endurance. Most survived, but some did end up dying. The threat of death is real.

As soon as the symptoms occur, a change is made in my routine. The programming stops. Mattheo, Jerome and Carlotti come, and hold me and rock me in the rocking chair near my crib. "I love you," Mattheo whispers. "Don't die, little one; I would feel so sad." He believes what he is telling me, and I feel his words. But I still cannot eat. The despair is too deep.

Jerome and Carlotti also come and hold me and talk to me. My twin siblings – I am part of a triplet set, which is what the Jesuits raise instead of twins- Daniel (Danny) and Elizabeth (Lizzy), who I love and am bonded to, are placed in my crib with me. This is unheard of, but the fathers are desperate. I am losing more weight and have pale skin and dull eyes. Danny coos to me, and holds a small bottle out to me, trying to get me to eat a little and to play with him. I smile, just a little, at this brother who I love so much. His love reaches me, and very hesitantly, I pick up the bottle and take a tiny sip. Lizzie, my other twin, looks at my face and pats it with her little baby hands. She tries to make me smile by blowing loud raspberries at me. I smile weakly at her.

Soon, one of the female fathers comes over to my crib, picks me up, and nurses me in the rocking chair nearby. She is my "birth mother," not the real one, of course, but the one my parts have bonded to after the death of the real one. She whispers to me, "I love you, I love you," over and over, her light brown hair falling softly forward as she looks me in the eyes with her grey eyes filled with tenderness. I nurse a bit and fall asleep. I am exhausted with the exhaustion of deep depression, even at this young age. But the rocking is soothing, and for this time, being treated almost like a real baby, and less like a circus performer, something in me unwinds a bit. Maybe there are good things in life, too.

The next day, two of the fathers walk by. I hear them discussing Danny, Lizzie and me. "If she doesn't make the decision to live, we will have to put the other two to death, too," I hear them say. I am horrified. Even if I don't want to live, I want my little brother and sister to live. Danny and Lizzie, sitting in the crib next to me, are looking at me with big, sad brown eyes. I realize that they, too, have overheard the fathers discussing us. A small tear falls down Dannie's cheek; he wants to live, I can feel it as strongly as if he has spoken to me. His brown curls tremble slightly as he leans over and gives me a little kiss on my cheek.

I take the bottle that is lying in my crib, and start drinking from it. I have decided to live, to save my little brother and sister, whose lives I now realize depend on mine. As I drink the formula, Dannie and Lizzie smile with baby joy, and Lizzie claps her little hands with a soft "pat, pat" noise.

It is not until years later that I realize that this conversation by the fathers was meant to be overheard; it was no accident. They wanted me to believe that my siblings would die if I died, to motivate me. But as an infant, I had no way of realizing that they were using my love for others against me.

I survive, I start gaining back the weight that I had lost. After a few more days of rest, I am put back into the daily routine, but am carefully monitored for any further signs of failing to thrive.

And the bonding continues with the fathers, these fathers who caused me to want to die with their abuse, their torture, their demands. Each day, usually at the end of the day, Mattheo comes in to spend special time with me, for 15 to 30 minutes each day. He holds me and talks to me with loving words. "You are such a beautiful daughter," he tells me as he rocks and comforts me. "I love you," he says as he holds me close to his warm chest, treating me the way a father would treat their beloved baby. "I'm so proud of you; you are wonderful," he says at the end of a long, hard day of learning and performing.

I look forward to this special time with great eagerness. This is what makes all the hard work, the terrible abuse, the punishments and rewards, all worth it: to earn the love of this human being that I adore so much. I will do anything for him, even live.

Infants in the Jesuit nurseries are allowed to bond deeply with both the fathers, and their genetic triplets; these babies are allowed extra time together in simple play. But the fathers are masters at manipulating these love bonds in order to gain the behaviors they want. When I first had this memory, I felt enraged. Enraged that my very ability to love others, to care, was used so callously against me. Enraged that even the choice to die and escape as a baby was wrested away from me, due to my inability to allow my siblings to die. This desire to rescue others will be used again and again throughout the rest of my life to control me, and it is a heavy weight to bear indeed, until I learn that no human being *can truly "rescue" another; that there is only one who can rescue without manipulation or demands, and that is Jesus.*

Chapter 2: Early Spiritual Training

Meeting the Immortals

I am only a few weeks old, and I am lying in my crib. Suddenly, two beautiful women in soft, glowing silvery dresses and two men in glowing robes of the same color come and stand by my bed. I am enthralled at these beautiful people who walk softly and talk with melodious voices. They lean over my crib and speak.

"Child, we are the immortals," they say in unison. Their voices are sweet and musical, and sound like those of angels. "Because you are blessed, we have chosen to visit you. You are fortunate indeed." I grin a toothless baby grin and wiggle my arms and legs happily. These people seem nice, and they seem to like me.

"My name is Calexa" says the woman with beautiful silvery hair, as she picks me up and holds me tenderly. She holds me upright so that I can clearly see the other woman, whose soft golden brown hair seems to be waving about her face in the nearly darkened room.

"My name is Althea, and I bring wisdom to those who seek me," the brown-haired woman says. On her dress is a golden rune, a picture of a tree. She continues, "You will grow to love me, as I already love you, chosen one."

Then a man with golden hair and beautiful blue eyes approaches me next. "I am Paltheus, and will teach you how to do difficult things; but you will grow strong and beautiful as a result. I want you to be strong, and to one day join us where we live." He takes me from Calexa and cuddles me gently in his strong arms. I feel warm and secure against his chest, as I smell his wonderful smell; he smells like roses and lavender and sweet things. These immortals are wonderful people.

Baltheus is the next "immortal" to talk to me. He has silver-white hair and grey eyes that look suspiciously like those of Mattheo, my primary trainer. "If you learn to love me as I love you and do all that I and my mortal representatives tell you to do, then I will give you the gift of seeing what is to come in the future, and to look into and see what is in men's hearts." I am still too young to fully understand all of this, but I recognize his kind tone and the loving way he holds and rocks me. I am filled with joy at the attention they are giving me.

"We will come again soon," these beautiful people say as they leave, and just as they promised, they do visit again.

Several times a week, they and other fathers dressed as "immortals" visit me in the nursery. During each visit, they teach me about who they are, and what abilities they can give me. This is an important part of my spiritual training. I also see them visit the other babies in the nursery and tell them the same or similar things. I feel I must be a lucky baby indeed to be visited by such loving, beautiful people – or "immortals", the "divine" as I am learning to call them. My only confusion is that they feel and smell like real people to me, in spite of their words; they actually smell like some of the fathers I know. I wonder why, but go back to sleep, dreaming about being held and loved by these people in silvery soft robes.

The Jesuit fathers use very concrete setups to teach infants and young children their spiritual beliefs, which include ascending towards immortality, or else descending towards mortality (and pain). An infant and young child will willingly believe what they are taught at this age, especially if their lessons are conveyed through concrete experiences like the 'role-playing' and 'acting' by the fathers and older children in costumes, as depicted in this account.

Celestial Heaven

A few weeks later, I and the other babies in my nursery are awakened in the middle of the night by the soft tread of the "immortals" who walk into our room on silver slippers. I am picked up and carried by an "immortal", Charydon, a man with beautiful long white hair and green eyes, He says, "I am going to take you to a very special place – the place where I live. I want you to see what the celestial realms look like. This is where you can one day live if you are very, very good." I already know that "good" means being obedient and doing all that the programmers tell me; the "immortals" have already been telling me that my programmers are the "mortal representatives" of the "immortals" and that obeying them is the same as obeying an "immortal".

Charydon carries me in his strong, muscular arms and walks up a beautiful golden spiral staircase that is strung with glittering stars and what looks like planets along the darkened areas beside it. Up, up we go, until finally, he is walking on what looks like soft, puffy white clouds with glitter and rainbow lights everywhere. It is beautiful, and I hear lovely singing from far away, by voices that sound like angels. It is not until I am much older that I will learn that these voices are actually older children singing, with their voices piped in. As a little baby, I have no idea that as I get older, when I am eleven or twelve years old, I will also be singing songs of the 'celestial realm' for new groups of babies.

I look everywhere about me. Charydon holds me carefully upright in his arms so that I can see as much as possible. I see beautiful, ethereal figures with wings flitting by in the background. The smell is wonderful, like flowers and perfume and rose candy all at once.

"Little one, would you like to try some celestial food?" Charydon asks in a loving, gentle voice. I look at him wonderingly, and he places a bit of a very soft, sweet substance on my tongue; it tastes like whipped cream and fruit together, and the taste is wonderful. "This is the food of the gods," he explains, "and those who ascend and overcome their mortality are able to come here and enjoy it." I think it is wonderful, that this whole place is absolutely wonderful. I want to be able to come here and eat things like this, so I decide to ascend as soon as possible.

After a while, Charydon's voice becomes tinged with sorrow. "We must now descend back to the mortal realms," he explains, with a *pathos* that makes me realize that he, too, hates to leave this wonderful place. He looks into my eyes and smiles, and says, "But if you are very good, and I know you will be, we will come back here soon." I smile back, and he gently carries me back down the golden stairs, down past the stars, as we descend. Finally, we are at the bottom, and he carries me back into the nursery and gently lays me in my crib.

I am so excited from this experience that it takes me a while to settle back into sleep. But the fathers and Mengele start training the next day several hours later than normal. It is as if they, too, understand how important it is to spend time with the immortals, and are willing to change the daily routine to allow for this.

I remember that Charydon, Althea and the other immortals told me that my trainers were their mortal representatives, and how important it is to always obey them if I want to "ascend" and visit the celestial realms again. I am very obedient for the next few days, and as promised, another immortal, Baltheus, comes and visits me a few nights later. He also helps me to "ascend" the beautiful staircase to visit the celestial realms. They are teaching me that I need the help of an immortal to visit this spiritual place as they must carry me there. This lays the foundation, for me to later in life allow the demonic to 'carry me' or 'help me to ascend' into the 'celestial realms'.

These visits occur regularly during my first two years of life. As a toddler, I toddle around the clouds, which feel like soft puffs of cotton beneath my slippered feet. I am given wonderful cake to eat and learn from these beautiful beings many of the rules of the immortals and how to enter these realms. I am being inculcated in the belief system that underlies all of the programming, all of the rituals, all of the hard work being done by the Order: the desire to allow the immortals to visit earth, and to ascend in order to be with them in the celestial realms.

I am much too young to recognize that these immortals are adults dressed in costumes or that the stairway is part of a programming lab. Nor am I yet able to recognize that the celestial realms are a programming studio with special props. I will only learn this years later. By that time, however, I believe utterly in the celestials. I have also by that time become completely indoctrinated with my mentors' teaching that the celestial programming studio is a necessary teaching tool for babies too young to grasp the spiritual realities of the immortals and am blind to the fact that it is nothing but trickery to manipulate the babies into obedience to satanic agendas.

Again, this is an example of the extremely elaborate setups that are used to indoctrinate the very young infants with a belief in the immortals – this belief that underpins the Jesuit Order in its occult side. Readers may wonder how on earth setups this elaborate are possible. But the Jesuits have lots of money that comes from their human trafficking and intelligence work as well as other dark operations. With billions of dollars at their disposal, and state-of-the-art technology that is many years ahead of current technologies, they have had no trouble constructing advanced programming facilities. They have facilities in numerous countries with the largest and best-funded ones being in Italy.

The older children and adults enjoy dressing up in costumes, and everyone loves the celestial scenes, hoping to be chosen to take the young babies and toddlers up the golden studio stairs, and watch their delight in the beauty and sweet treats. While the fathers, due to their own dissociation, mind control, and erroneous beliefs, feel that these young children must be abused during programming, the truth is that everyone feels a sense of relief when they are scheduled to participate in a happy training setup such as described above. The fathers view the abusive programming as a "necessary thing" but still dislike it, in spite of a lifetime of training to normalize it.

Typically, immediately after the older children or adults put costumes on for particular setups, other programmers who are overseeing that particular setup will first call up the appropriate parts in those individuals. For instance, in the setup described here where they will play 'immortals', 'angels' and other roles, parts who have been programmed to be 'immortals' and so on will be the ones called up. This means that when the adults and children participate in these indoctrination scenarios through these parts, they are not aware that they are 'acting' out roles in a studio but are personally convinced that they are taking a baby to the celestial realms, or that they are angels singing in the realms. Their utter conviction is part of what causes the scenarios to feel absolutely authentic to the babies. Besides helping to program the babies, using the programmed parts of other cult members serves to reinforce that programming of these cult members themselves, as their internal parts are called out to present, and act out their roles in those programming studios under the programmers' supervision.

Mortal Hell

It is a few weeks after Althea and the other immortals last visited me. I am awakened in the middle of the night by a dark and malevolent being. Years later, I will learn that this is an older child dressed in a costume, but in the darkened nursery, this creature looks and sounds terrifying, with long, dark claws, long sharp fangs, red glowing eyes, and a twisted, dark shape.

"You were bad today, and you are coming with me," it croaks in a demonic voice, with sibilant hissing. Now, I am really scared. I wonder what I could have possibly done that got the attention of this…thing… Obviously, I must have broken some unwritten, not understood rule. The creature picks me up roughly, its claws biting into my tiny arm as it does so. It carries me out of the nursery. I am struggling hard to free myself from its grasp, but to no avail. This creature takes me into a room with a large, black, cavernous hole in the middle. There are steps going down into the dark, scary looking steps. I struggle even harder, but I am held in its iron grip.

"We are going to descend," the creature croaks, and it carries me down, down, down into a place where the air smells smoky, and there are red flames flickering on the walls. I see black poles that fill this room. Men and women are tied to them by chains. "Demons" (as usual, the older cult children dressed in costumes) are whipping them with long whips with bits of bone attached. The men and women are screaming in tortured pain.

"Because you were disobedient, you will join the other mortals who chose to give in to their flesh, and to descend. They caused themselves to come here because they did not listen to the wise counsel of the immortals," the demonic actor hisses in my ear.

I begin crying, but the dark creature doesn't care. He ties me to a pole that has a small stand to hold me, almost like an infant seat, since I am too young to stand yet. The small chain bites into my little arms and chest. The creature then takes out a small whip and lashes my tiny arms and legs. While there is no real injury, the lashes sting sharply and add to my terror. I am now screaming at the top of my lungs.

Suddenly, Father Mattheo appears, dressed in the silvery robes of an immortal. "Do you promise to always obey me, and to try to never give in to your mortal desires again; to try and listen to the wisdom of the immortals?" he asks.

I look at him with huge eyes, and raise my right fist, the sign language I have learned for "yes", since I have forgotten in my terror how to speak.

Father Mattheo then turns to the "demon" and says, "Let her loose, I will vouch for her."

The twisted, grimacing, dark creature reluctantly looses the tiny jangly chains that hold me in place, and Mattheo picks me up and soothes me, in spite of the fact that I have had a loose bowel movement due to stress.

"Let's go and ascend back up, out of here," he says. "I can help you ascend." We walk up, up, up, out of this terrible place, to my great relief. His strong arms hold me securely, and I am so glad that he came to rescue me. Mattheo then cleans and changes me and spends time rocking me until I have calmed down. This takes quite a while.

"This is why we ask you to do difficult and painful things at times; we are teaching you how to overcome your mortal flesh and its desires, so that you will not descend and remain forever in hell," he tells me. I am so traumatized, and so relieved that he rescued me, that I absorb and believe everything he is telling me without question. I have been rescued from hell by a father that loves me enough to go down into that terrible place after me, and I think that there can be no greater love. I love Mattheo at that moment with everything within me.

A female father, Joanna, one of the 12 fathers that I am bonded to and love deeply, then comes, and nurses me at the breast for a while, rocking me and singing to me softly. Hours later, I finally fall asleep. I decide to always, always do what the immortals say, and to never, ever give in to my mortal desires again.

This has been my introduction to "hell", one of the many horrible programming studios constructed by the Order to terrify their children into obedience. Many years later that I will learn that there are three stages located on three floors. Each level can be entered through winding stairs that go down into each level. Hell levels "one", "two" and "three" can be changed with a change of scenery, lighting, and children and/or adults dressed into costumes who either act as 'demons' or as 'tortured mortals', with appropriate props (including fake blood and gore), into hell levels "four", "five" and "six." The final and deepest level, utter darkness, reserved for the worst "sinners" who are completely "descended" is accomplished through time spent in an isolation tank or a negative sound room. There are usually about six or seven people being "tortured" at each level in this fake hell, but these rooms have mirrors that multiply the images until the scene appears to be filled with hundreds of writhing, tormented figures and flames, or screens that will playback such scenes.

But as an infant, and later as a toddler, I do not know these things. I fully believe that I have gone to hell. I have screaming nightmares at intervals about this place for years, until my systems learned to suppress them fully. But deep inside, I fear hell more than anything else. Every part inside of me fears this terrible place, the place where the worst possible punishments occur – or so I think, until there is a new, more terrible setup.

I am now a very young child, about age two years and two months. During the day, I disobeyed a direct command given to me by the father I love most, Mattheo. He has asked me to perform an act of sexual abuse on another child, and I can't. By this age, it is very, very rare that I say "no". Somehow, I identified too much with the child, who is close to my own age and who even looks like me, with curly brown hair and sad brown eyes. Mattheo is quietly angry, but he then goes on to abuse the child himself. Then, in order to punish me, he kills the child. I am heartbroken, but also feel glad that at least now, this child can no longer feel any pain or torment; she, at least, is set "free".

I later verbalize this feeling to Father Carlotti. "I know that she hurt, but now she will never hurt again," I say, using childish logic. "Nothing can hurt her anymore," I tell him. The fathers will view this a dangerous line of thinking, as rather than feeling remorseful and guilty about my disobedience, I am feeling that the child who died was "lucky". I am too young to realize that such thinking is unacceptable to the order, however.

In the middle of the night that follows this conversation, I am awakened by a "demon" who is older and larger than many that have visited me before. The "demon" takes me by the arm, yanking me roughly out of bed with claws that bite into my flesh until it bleeds. It hurries me down the black, winding staircase that descends into "hell". There are many adults and children tied to poles, and to my horror, right in front of me, in the center, is Father Mattheo. He is tied with rattling chains to a large pole of black stone. He is being lashed with a large flagellum, a whip that has bits of sharp rock and metal attached, and is screaming in pain.

"Satan" (another adult in costume) comes up to me and says, "You were supposed to take this punishment for disobedience, but Mattheo offered to take it instead. He is taking the punishment for your disobedience."

Horrified, I scream and weep as I see the blood pouring from Mattheo's wounds and the flagellum cuts deeper and deeper into him. I am terrified that he will die, this person who means so much to me, this person without whose love I don't believe I can survive.

"I'm sorry, I'm sorry," I scream.

Satan then turns to me, and says, "Do you vow to never disobey my mortal representative again?"

I stutter in my terror as I reply, "Y-y-yes."

Satan says, "Then take this spirit of obedience inside; it will punish you if you even think of disobeying." I do a short ritual, accept the spirit, bow low, and then "Satan" releases Mattheo from the pole with a golden knife. Mattheo is weak and shaky, but stumbles with me up the stairs, looking pale as we enter the room above.

He is taken to a healing room for healing technologies, and later comes and talks to me.

"I knew the punishment for your disobedience today would kill you, and I love you too much to lose you. I am older and stronger and offered to take it instead," he says. "You must learn that the actions of each of us affect those around us. The obedience or disobedience of one affects many others." He holds me as I cry for a long time, and then says, "I know you won't disobey me again; I know you love me too much."

This is the communal thinking of the Jesuit order. It is based upon loving one another and the terrible manipulation of attachment, and I am being indoctrinated into it in a very concrete way. I am learning that my rebellious thoughts, my saying "no", will cause pain to the people I love most, and it causes deep emotional pain. I am caught in a terrible place. I cannot choose what I truly want which is not obey commands to hurt others, because it will cause even more pain to the people I am attached to, and the child or person I try to save will just end up dying anyway. The cost of doing what I really want – to not hurt another child – could cause someone I love to be flogged to death. I fall asleep crying, wondering why the world is such as terrible place.

It is not until I am older, and learning to program other children, that I learn that the fathers take pain medication ahead of time during these setups and wear special rubber layers over their skin that releases 'blood' as they are being 'whipped'. Much of the screaming is acting, because the fathers are very, very good actors. As an older child, I am taught that these setups are a necessary thing to teach infants and young children about the real spiritual realities that they are too young to grasp yet. I accept this since I have already learned, even as a child, to never question my own programming.

When I remembered how the setups are done, and how the fathers I was bonded to manipulated me in this way, I was furious. I could not understand how one human being could do this to another. But then, I realized: they were afraid. If there is one thread that tied us all together, it was the deep, deep, terrifying fear that underlaid everything we did, the fear that sabotaged our real desire to love each other. We were all terribly, terribly afraid of these "immortals" who while appearing kind and loving, could also unleash terrible beings. The "immortals" are beings that the fathers believe control the universe and who oversee creation, and they worship them and give them unquestioning obedience. We were all slaves to our fear of these beings, and thus we could not act the way we truly wanted to. It would take finding a source of protection from this terror, much, much later in life, to break free of this slavery.

The Destruction of the Universe

I am two years old. The part of me who is out is a master controller named Galatea who is over the presentation systems. My hair has been dyed a beautiful silvery color, and I am wearing a black robe that has beautiful sparkly stars splashed over it. These little stars twinkle and glow as I walk. I love being the beautiful Galatea, one of the immortals who has been meeting with me since I was a tiny baby in my crib. I even speak with her soft, musical voice and inflection.

Pleiades is in the room with me. He is another master controller. Polaris, the third controller, sits on the other side. Satan, an adult in costume, is also there. He has more authority than even the master controllers in this setup.

In the room beneath the platform that the master controllers are sitting on, are other children my age dressed in costumes to represent various system controllers who will be working under me: Athena, Andromeda, and Saturn. Their sitting beneath the master controllers shows that they are lower in status – and thus obedient to – the master controllers who are sitting on an elevated platform. The children turn and look at me as Galatea, and at Satan.

Satan gives me the order. I must always, always immediately obey him, immediately and unfailingly. "Take Andromeda, place her on her controller platform, and then have her give Athena the golden key. Athena will then leave the room, and in five minutes, will return with one of the presentation children".

I hurry to obey him. As a master controller, my obedience must be as quick as thought, or so I have been trained. I run to Andromeda, put her on her controller platform, and then tell Andromeda to give Athena the golden key and have her bring a child representing one of the presenters back into the room, going through a door marked with a special golden rune that means 'Wonderland'.

Andromeda stands, waiting. Athena goes to her, receives a golden key, and then goes through the door. We wait. And wait. Finally, she comes back through the special door with a child that resembles me. This child represents a presenter.

Satan then tells me, "Have Athena lock the child into her French shell." The shell is a clear plastic shell that will fit over the whole child. The child will be able to breathe due to special air holes.

The child is put into the shell, locked in, but then the trouble starts. The child starts screaming, saying that she wants out; that she doesn't want to be in the shell. Worse, she is not following her profile; the child is supposed to be speaking only French, but she is screaming in four different languages.

I hear a loud noise, and the child is knocked unconscious. But worse follows. The room that we, the immortal star systems are located in, turns black. The whole floor beneath us begins tilting, moving and spinning, as stars in the ceiling above begin falling, at times hitting me and the others in the room with sharp, biting pain. "The destruction of the universe has begun," Satan's voice thunders. "Andromeda, Athena, you both failed and allowed the presenter to fail, and now the universe will fall into chaos. You have become the bringers of chaos into the universe."

Pleiades, Polaris and others are screaming behind me. These are fathers I love, and I am causing them and everything and everyone I have ever loved to be destroyed, because of my failure. As a master controller, I must never, ever fail, and those who I oversee must never, ever fail, either. And I did. I failed to control the presenter.

I cower, screaming, as this terrible scene continues. I am overwhelmed with terror. Finally, Satan intervenes. "Do you swear that you will never allow failure in those beneath you?" he asks. "That as my representative to these mortals inside, that you will ensure that there will never be failure?" The shaking, tilting and spinning have slowed down while he talks, but the room is still dark.

I swear.

"Receive this spirit to help you," he then says. I look up, and a dark presence is standing next to him. I don't like it, but I don't want the universe to fail, so I nod "yes." It seems to melt into my body, and I feel terrible.

"I will give you another chance," Satan says. Instantly, the room completely stops shaking, tilting and spinning, and the lights come back on. I still feel shaken and disoriented by it all. I look, and Athena, played by my twin sister, also looks dazed and white-faced. The little girl in the shell is unconscious, and we have to pull her out after Athena unlocks the shell.

When the little girl comes back to consciousness, I tell her, "You must never, ever scream when you are put in the shell. It isn't forever; but if you scream or fight, worse happens than being in that shell."

The little girl nods her understanding. We redo the scene, and the little girl does not scream or fight this time. We all have just learned how very, very important it is to do our roles perfectly. The fate of the universe depends on it.

As the above memory shows, not only the master presentation controller Galatea, but also the sub-controller Athena, and the presenter part beneath all of them, are all being taught the 'terrible consequences of disobedience' through the use of sophisticated programming studios that convincingly create terrible scenarios of devastation, disaster and pain. The Order uses many, many setups like these to instill complete obedience in all levels of a system. There will be other setups like this, until all of the controllers learn to do their jobs, including instantly punishing parts brutally for disobeying programming. These internal punishments that systems use to perpetuate programming long after the original programming sessions are usually memories, threats of, or internal reenactments of these terrifying traumas to keep parts in line. The capacity of parts to stop running such programs, i.e., stop obeying the original programming directives, can be greatly improved when parts realize that the 'disasters' were not natural consequences but staged trickery with no basis at all in any reality outside a programming studio, and that obedience only serves to benefit the cult without really protecting the child or his/her parts.

The Council of the Flesh and the Council of the Immortals

I am a year old, and a part inside that has been created through intense, agonizing pain has been called forward. This part, called "Mortal Flesh" is greeted by adults dressed in dark brown robes, the Council of the Flesh. "Flesh" is always associated with terrible pain, since it represents my mortal wants and desires, the things that keep me from ascending, according to the theology that I have been taught by the fathers.

The council head greets me, saying, “Welcome, mortal child. You are here to learn more about why it is important to overcome the flesh.” I tremble a bit, because I do not like pain, but am able to cover my response and look expectantly at the figures.

“What are the primary sins of the flesh?” one of the council members asks me. I talked very early, as many of the infants in our facility do, in part due to genetic engineering for high IQs. I respond as taught: Unbelief, doubt, and disobedience – and forgetting eternity.

I have given the correct responses and they nod with satisfaction. Then Lovent, the council head, comes near me. This dark-clad figure takes my arm with one hand. In the other is a small candle. He speaks an incantation, and it lights with a flickering flame. He holds the candle flame to my arm for a period of time. I am in intense pain, sweating with the agony, but I do not pull away. Finally, with a deep burn on my arm, Lovent grunts his satisfaction with my desire to “overcome the flesh”. If I had pulled away, or screamed, I know that I would have been subjected to something even more painful. Terrible pain has been part of my life intermittently since I was in the womb, and my obedience to this council represents my deep-felt, instinctive desire to not experience even more pain.

I have been taught that the Council of the Flesh wants my best good and is teaching me to overcome my flesh so that I can ascend and join others who live in the celestial realms. Their greatest desire, they assure me, is to help me to avoid mortal hell, the fate for those who descend due to unbelief, doubt, and disobedience. By now, I have visited all seven levels of “hell” at the programming studio and agree heartily with them that this place is to be avoided at all costs. The Council of the Flesh has an eager, believing pupil for their theology.

I have already internalized this council, along with other councils such as the 12 members of the Mage Council, the Council of the Immortals, and the secret Vatican Council (which is not the public Vatican Council) inside. All leadership councils have 12 members, the number of governance, with it understood that Satan is the 13th member.

The Council of the Flesh by now has been internalized within me as well, and can cause intense pain in my body, and punish inside parts who seem to be following “fleshly desires” (e.g., not following their programming directives) instead of seeking immortality. If I seek eternity, and obey my programming, a member of the Council of the Immortals will call out one of my immortals inside and will take me up the golden stairway to the celestial realms as a reward.

At a year old, the celestial realms setup is more elaborate than when I was just a few weeks old. There are mists that glow everywhere, created by dry ice, and even a display of what looks like an aurora borealis above in the sky. The rich, fruity cream cake I am allowed to eat there makes me want to work hard to achieve permanent immortality, which I am assured I will be able to do one day.

I have a full operant conditioning system, reward and punishment, deeply installed by this age of one year old. The celestial realms are the “reward”, and “hell” is the punishment system, for obedience and disobedience, respectively. If I disobey a command, I not only fear the anger of my programmer, I now fear descending for all of eternity into hell.

By this age, I have also internalized within my mind the hierarchy of councils that I have interacted with and been programmed by for the past year. These councils inside are the high controllers in my systems. They can mete out both punishment and reward internally, even in the absence of the external setups. This has been the real goal of these setups: to teach me to internalize the beliefs and behaviors and responses that the programmers have patiently been training me in over my time in the womb and the first year of my life. That is, they have made me a collaborator to and a perpetuator of my own abuse and control.

Chapter 3: Toddlerhood

My birth name is Lucient, but my daily name is Lucia. I am usually called Luce. This is the name of my 'cult host', or the part that presents during my cult life in the facility. As my cult life was the majority of my life until my escape in 2007, with only limited time in the presentations in different countries, Luce is the part of me who feels most like the 'real me'.

Mengele and Hilde work with me still, although my main influence are the fathers I love. Mengele and Hilde praise me for doing well and acting "intelligently" in different situations, but as Luce, I looked forward each day to the time I get to spend with the fathers I love.

For the first three years of life, life was regimented according to a strict routine. Early morning assessments are done quickly, with the fathers checking at regular intervals if prior programs installed are still intact. In between, there is holding and cuddling; these times too is scheduled. Later in the day, I learn the new day's task(s). There is always, always something new to be learned or practice designed to build further on old skills previously learned.

I felt like a miniature performer as the tasks continued day after day: learn to swim (and see how long I could endure in the water in one early test); learn to crawl across a narrow bridge with water on both sides, and see if I could push another baby crawling across the same bridge into the water; learn to open my little legs on cue from a trainer (for sexual training); learn to switch out parts on cue with colored lights and tones, and many more tasks.

For the first three years, the children in the order are dressed in short white robes. Between three and five years old, the children wear brown tunics and leggings, then graduate to an acolyte's hooded brown robes at six years old. The older children find us younger children adorable. They enjoy interacting with me and the other infants, and will often come by and stroke our little cheeks and hands, or tell us that one day we will be big and have fun like they do. I love this attention and want to grow up to wear an acolyte's brown robe one day, and eventually at 13 years old, complete the coming of age ceremony and earn my adult name. I know that this will require learning many, many new skills and knowledge, and at this age, as the cult host, I am eager to learn.

Years later, when I was healing, I had trouble with the term "host", and especially its definition: an amnesic part that lives a life without abuse, or any knowledge of abuse. My host knew well that she was being raised within an occultic society. This was the only world she knew both as a child and as an adult. She knew about much of the abuse, and about the parts. She was allowed to watch and help monitor the different parts that presented when living in various countries. She was also one of my most deeply cult-loyal parts, because with all of her heart, she loved the fathers she had attached to. This feeling was true even during adulthood, which made leaving the order later in life very, very difficult. I missed the fathers when I didn't see or hear from them regularly, and not talking to them would trigger intense grief.

Control the Children

I am 12 months old. Father Jerome has tied me to his waist with a thick rope. He is playing the role of a system controller. My role is to obey everything he tells me, quickly and without error.

"Pick up those blocks," he says, "and stack the red ones together and the blue ones together." I quickly kneel by the blocks and do this task. When I am done, he says, "Good, good." In my role as a system part, I am learning how important instant obedience to my controllers is. The rope represents authority. The controller, being played today by Father Jerome, is always wearing the rope, and the system parts are tied to the controller by ropes.

It is a few days later. We are walking quickly and go to a field with lots of rocks. "Pick up the rocks, and put them in this corner of the field," he orders, pointing near the intersection of two stone walls. I begin picking up rocks while he oversees what I do. I am little and tire quickly, and his job is to encourage me to complete the task. Finally, we rest.

"You are listening well, and I am proud of you, Delta 34" he says. Jerome is dressed as Orgus, one of my delta controllers, and even in this menial task, I must obey him. The rocks represent memories, and he is teaching me to take them and put them in the correct area of the field. The field is divided up into squares labeled with various names and runes. I must match the rock and its rune with the storage rune.

After a period of rest, we eat some bread and drink some water then go back to our task. "Delta 34, put these memories into this storage file," Orgus commands, pointing to an area of the field marked with a rune that means "Low security". Quickly, obediently, I do so. "Delta 34, pass this memory into this file," he commands again, and I take the rock into a storage file marked "Medium security." I already know that rocks that are "high security" must be passed back to Orgus, to put into a special high security vault deep beneath us.

I am 18 months old. I have a rope tied around my waist. I am a gamma system controller, and tied to me by thick ropes are small children of my own age. There are six children. I have been told that my job is to ensure that they are completely obedient to me. These children represent my system parts. My job is to protect them by ensuring obedience to all commands from the programmers.

"You can walk around this house, but do not touch any of the candy in the yellow room," I am told by Father Carlotti, who is dressed in the costume of a master controller from the galaxy Pleiades. He has the stars of Pleiades scattered over a dark, midnight blue sky, and is wearing the runes and codes that signify his status. System controllers such as gamma system controllers take their orders from master controllers inside. Their orders must always, always, be utterly obeyed.

The children and I walk together into different rooms in the house. I have to tug on the ropes of a few to get them to follow. One room is painted with bright yellow walls, and this color, and the huge table in the middle of the room, attract us all. The children and I eagerly walk towards the table, where there are piles of candies in glass bowls.

The children are hungry, since they have not eaten yet, and it is midday. They begin pulling me towards the table. "No, no, children!" I say desperately. "We were told not to touch the candy."

I try to pull them away, but I am not strong enough to stop all of them pulling at me at once. One little girl, who looks so much like me, grabs a piece of soft divinity off the table and starts eating it. I try to pull her away, but it is too late; she has disobeyed the order.

Suddenly, she jerks in a violent seizure, turning blue. The other children stop their own rush towards the table. With frightened eyes we watch as this child continues seizing, and then dies. The candy must have poison in it, and she has disobeyed and died as a result. But I am responsible for her obedience, and with guilt and shame, realize that it is my fault that she died.

Pleiades (Father Carlotti) comes into the room and looks with anger and disgust at what has happened. "You killed her!" he tells me. "You didn't make sure she obeyed you! A controller always makes sure that their system obeys them. You failed her!"

I feel terrible, but worse is to come. Now, as I move with the children around the house, I must drag this dead child around with me.

"You are feeling the weight of your failure," Pleiades (Father Carlotti) says. I feel terrible, and start crying. A child, one put into my care, has died, because I failed to ensure her obedience to a command from the master controller for my system. I crumple to the floor, heartbroken, as I weep.

"Stop crying and do your job," he says sternly. "Don't let any more of your children die."

He then gives another command. "Do not let any of the children touch the toys in the blue room." The blue room is one we saw when walking through, but on this round of the house, I see toys on the floor: blocks of various colors, puzzles, picture books, and sparkly, beautiful dolls and balls. The children, who seem intent on disobeying me in spite of what happened in the yellow room, try to pull me over with them to the toys on the floor.

"No, no, children, no!" I scream. I pull with all of my strength, trying to pull them away. But the children wear me down, and one of them picks up a shiny red ball. Suddenly, there is a scream, and the child falls down dead. With a feeling of despair, I realize that this toy, too, contains poison. I am now dragging two dead children around from the ropes tied to my waist, and I am very tired. But the other children are now very quiet and seem willing to listen to me when I tell them not to touch anything at all in the house unless I give them permission. We sit in the middle of a red room, and Pleiades (Father Carlotti) enters. "You may all have a drink of juice," he says, and he pours out a cup for each of us. The juice tastes good, and I am relieved that no death results.

"Only allow them to do the things I tell you to," he says. "This is the only way to ensure their safety." I nod my understanding.

The children and I stay in this terrible house for two days. I am dragging the two dead children, reminders of what happens when system controller allows parts to disobey their master controller. During the day, Pleiades (Father Carlotti) comes at intervals, and lets us eat, or allows us to play with only certain toys, or rest. The children, who are still alive, and I sleep together, utterly exhausted by the end of the day, tied together, on a mat on the floor.

By the second day, the bodies of the two children who died begin to smell. The other children and I feel ill from the smell, and Pleiades (Father Carlotti) returns. "You are smelling the stench of disobedience," he tells us. I wonder how long I must drag these bodies around. I am feeling tired, ill, and sick of it all.

Finally, Pleiades returns again, gives a code, and I go inside. He then unties me from the children, and Lucia, my cult host, is sent out to take a shower and then rest in my dorm room. I am tired indeed and realize that being a controller is a great responsibility. The lives of those under me depend upon my ensuring complete obedience. I go to sleep, dreaming of saving children, while I am yelling orders at them, frantic to save their lives.

This memory caused me to cry for days when I first had it. I felt overwhelmed by guilt, sadness, grief, and then, finally, anger at Carlotti and the other fathers for putting me through such a terrible setup at such a young age. This is how the Jesuits train the internal controllers and master controllers to do their jobs: it is at the threat of loss of life if they should fail, not just for them, but for those they are supposed to protect.

I now realized why for years, my system controllers had been fighting me so hard, when I asked them to stop doing their cult jobs. They were desperately, desperately, trying to save the lives of children that they loved. They were terrified to disobey the master controllers over them inside, who I had yet to meet at that point in my healing. The lessons of absolute obedience, of never failing, and of controlling inside parts, had been instilled through this and numerous similar setups.

The Cages

I am two years old. I am sitting in a small metal cage that is just big enough for me to curl up in. I am in a cage on the bottom row of a small pyramid comprised of four levels of cages, stacked one on top of each other. The bottom row has six cages, the next row above has four cages, then two cages in the next row above, and finally one cage at the very top. Each cage contains a child. We are all close in age.

I feel liquid dripping down on me. Someone in one of the cages above me has urinated on me. I hate the sticky, smelly urine. But my hair is matted with worse: the soft liquid stool that another stressed child in one of the upper cages has evacuated. I feel filthy, frightened, and the smell is horrible. I can see Mengele and Hilde, his assistant, in another part of the room.

I am hungry and thirsty. It has been a whole day since I have had anything to eat or drink. I whimper, and a guard comes by, looks into my cage, and drags me out. He rapes me roughly, and then puts me back into the cage. I feel utterly humiliated and utterly defiled.

Mengele walks towards the cages and opens the door to mine. He draws me out of the cage, and then takes me into another room where Hilde is waiting. He places me onto a mark chalked on the floor; it is a small blue square.

"Stand in the square," he orders me. I do so.

In front of me is a large red circle painted on the floor, and in the middle of the circle is a small infant. Mengele places a knife in my hand, and then gives a single command: "Kill!" I hesitate for a second, struggling with killing this tiny, defenseless baby with red, wrinkled face and fisted up, tiny hands. I have practiced before with kittens, strangling them with my bare hands at his order, but this is different.

Finally, I stab the infant. But I had hesitated. Mengele is displeased with me. "You must never hesitate!" he yells at me. Delayed obedience will not work with him. I am put back in the same cage, and am told by Hilde, "No food or water until you don't hesitate". I am trembling with hunger and thirst. The terrible smell in my cage and on my body makes me retch. I wonder if I will die here.

Eight hours later, Hilde comes and takes me out of the cage. I am being given a second chance to be obedient. Once again, I am placed on the blue square. Once again, there is a tiny baby inside the red circle. Mengele is there. I am weaving a bit from trauma and exhaustion, but I listen carefully. The order comes abruptly again: "Kill!" and this time, without hesitation, I obey.

"Good girl, I knew you would learn," Mengele praises me. Hilde smiles, and gives me a drink of water, and some soft pudding. "Not too fast, eat slowly," she warns, since I have not eaten in almost two days.

Hilde then takes out a sponge, and with warm water that feels wonderful, washes the feces out of my hair. She then sponges the filth off of my naked body. "Good girls get to smell good," she murmurs to me in German. "No one wants to smell bad, like a bad girl." I am grateful for the food and bath, and already feel a little better. Maybe I won't die. But I am also feeling sad deep inside about the little baby that has just died. But I know, oh how I know, that I cannot show any of this sadness to these two. I lock the tears deep, deep inside, handing the emotion over to parts whose job is to contain the sadness and grief.

Mengele and Hilde then take my hand, and together, they put me into one of the cages on the second tier. I have performed well, and so now only three cages are above mine. This tier gets a little bit of water and a slice of bread twice a day, and there are fewer feces and showers of urine to endure. Best of all, I am only raped once a day, instead of four times a day as I was on the lowest tier.

After this, each day, twice a day, I am taken into the room with the blue square and the red circle with a baby in the middle, and I am given the order to "Kill!" I perform well. I have seen children on the bottom row weaken and lay in their cages without moving, and I wonder how many times they have hesitated. Some end up dying, and their bodies remain there for several days as a warning to those who fail to obey instantly.

On the fourth day, instead of a baby, it is a toddler tied up in the middle of the red circle. The child is struggling and screaming, and when the order "Kill!" comes, I hesitate.

Mengele looks furious. Without a word, Hilde takes me back to the cages. I am back in one of the bottom ones, starting out all over again. The rapes every six hours start back up, and I am covered with urine and feces at the end of the next day, hungry and thirsty once more.

I know that if I stay here, I will die. The smell of the decomposing body in the cage next to mine is an object lesson in what happens to children who are on the bottom row too long.

After 24 hours, Hilde comes and gets me, and takes me back into the room with the blue square and red circle. Once again, a struggling toddler is tied up in the middle of the circle. Mengele gives the order again, and this time, I obey his command instantly, without hesitation.

"Good girl, you have learned," he croons. "My little killer is learning." Hilde again bathes me, feeds me, and once again, I am moved back to the second tier of cages. I never hesitate again. Over and over, I am given the command to kill, twice a day, and soon my response is automatic; I obey without conscious thought.

After another few days, I am in the cage at the top. I am now killing on command using various weapons – knife, a needle, a garrote. Finally, I am praised heavily, and allowed to leave the cages, the terrible cages. I was 25 months old and have learned to disconnect how much I hated taking a life from conscious thought.

Mengele's methods of programming children were cruel beyond belief. But the occultic societies recognized that he got results: a child who survived his methods would be completely programmed and obedient. This is why he was so sought after by various occultic groups around the world. For a large fee, he would go in and train children of all ages, using his primitive but effective methods which were based on data collected for years.

Sadly, he was a head trainer for the Jesuits in their main training facility and labs. He used these labs to continue his experimentation on humans, which meant that the infants and children who lived in this facility would be exposed to his merciless training. I was extremely relieved when he died when I was 19 years old, and another, younger head trainer who used better methods that did not cause such needless loss of life (or sanity, in some children) took charge of the training and experiments. The younger head trainer was my mentor, and when I became older, I replaced her as head of this facility. But I consulted with her frequently, because I admired her more humane approach and her deep insights into human behavior. She was one of my best friends, and I loved her deeply.

Alice in Wonderland

In Jesuit programming, when presenters are not 'out' in the body, they are living in 'Wonderland' inside. In the Order, Alice in Wonderland programming is used to ensure that presenters: never communicate with or be aware of other parts inside; completely believe that their memories of an ordinary life is the only life that that person is living;

stay completely amnesic to any cult activity; and stay completely unaware of any loss of time when they are not 'out' in the body. Key characters in Wonderland, such as the White Rabbit, remind presenters of these tasks, and reward and punish for compliance or disobedience as needed. As these memories relate, Alice in Wonderland programming begins at a very early age.

I am 18 months old. I am in a special place in the outdoor programming lab. It is a sunny, warm day, and the sun falls on my face and shoulders as I walk on slightly chubby but muscular legs into an opening within a boxwood maze. This opening is a beautiful arched trellis covered with roses and other climbing flowers, with sweet perfume filling the springtime air.

There is a path that I can see that leads through this maze, which is augmented in various places with trees, shrubs, and even a fake "seashore" on the shores of a small lake. I wait, enjoying the weather, which is sunny and bright. Soon, an older child dressed as Alice from Wonderland appears. She is about 11 years old, has beautiful curly, dark blond hair and light blue eyes. She is dressed in a blue dress covered with a white pinafore, and she has a big blue bow in her hair that matches her pretty eyes perfectly.

The girl guides me by the hand along the path. An adult, Mattheo, my primary trainer, is dressed like a large white rabbit, and I toddle along behind him, being guided by "Alice". I am a French presenter named "Jean". This will be my name when I spend time in France with my French family, starting at age three. As 'Jean', I have had careful programming since birth to come out and go back in on cue, and to understand French when it is spoken to me. It is the only language that I, as Jean, have ever heard in this presentation.

As Alice guides me, she warns me, "Never, ever leave the path. If you do, terrible, terrible things will happen. The only safety is to follow the white rabbit, and to stay on the path. Never leave it, regardless of what happens." I wonder what could happen that is so terrible but prefer not to find out. I have already experienced "terrible, terrible" already numerous times in my young life, and have no desire to experience it again.

The white rabbit leads us to a special area with a small stone bench, and pretty stone pavers cover the ground in the center. This area is in a large room-like area in the maze surrounded by boxwood "walls" to nearly enclose it. At the entrance that we pass through is a sign overhead written in golden runes that signify "France". I follow the white rabbit and Alice inside.

"Jean, this is where you will live in Wonderland," both Alice and the white rabbit tell me in unison. "This is your special place," the white rabbit repeats. I have heard these same instructions before, on previous visits. On the walls of the boxwoods, which are high – nearly seven feet in height – are large television screens that display pictures of my family in France playing with me as a baby, talking to me in French. The screens show me the cottage that I will live in when I go to France for the first time in another year and a half. On the video display, I hear my French mother, Jeanine, talking to me as a baby in loving tones, as she changes me. I see her take me outside to see the flowers in the cottage garden outside the house. These are the 'memories' of 'France' that Jean is supposed to have.

Alice cautions me, "You must never, ever leave this area when you are not called outside to present," she tells me sternly.

The white rabbit looks at me and repeats her warning. "You must not leave, even to go to other parts of Wonderland, ever," he insists.

I have heard this warning before, since this is not my first visit to the French part of Wonderland. The first few times, Alice and the white rabbit stayed with me and played, speaking French to me. There are toys, games, and other things to play with, even picture books with words in French on the cover. And the fascinating, fascinating videos of a wonderful life with a loving family in France play constantly. I will not be bored here.

"You must remain here when you are told to," Alice says again, and then she and the white rabbit leave. This is the first time I have been left here, and I wonder how long I will be alone.

In a little while, I hear a little girl singing and laughing outside the entrance to my special place. I look out, and see that she is about three years old, and has curly brown hair and merry green eyes. The little girl stops at the entrance to French wonderland, peeks her head in, and in English says, "Little girl, come out and play with me."

She seems to be very nice, her smile is welcoming, and I am getting tired of playing alone. The sun is shining, and she beckons with her hand outstretched to me. I walk over to her and take her hand, and we walk together down the path.

But suddenly, a large, dark bird-like creature swoops overhead. "The Jabberwocky!" the little girl screams, letting go of my hand and diving under a bush. I try to do the same, but rough hands grab me and pinch me, and two fat people take me to a corner, and rape me. The hands belong to two men dressed in striped costumes, and I learn that they are "Tweedle Dee" and "Tweedle Dum" and that they enjoy hurting little presenters who leave the place they are supposed to stay in.

I begin crying and try to make my way back to the French part of Wonderland. I hear a cacophony of voices babbling in various languages as I pass by entrances to other parts of the maze. Finally, completely lost, I go into an enclosed part of the maze where the people speak German. There is a little girl who looks like me, having lunch with her family at a round wooden table in the center of the enclosed area. "Help me!" I wail in French.

"A foreigner, a foreigner!" The family jumps to their feet, shouting in rage. Then they all rise up and stab me with their sharp forks and knives, and hurt me, including hurting me in my privates. I am screaming in terror at this point, as the German speakers say "We hate French speakers who come into our area. Stay out, you are NOT welcome here!" Traumatized and shaking, I am thrown out of this part of Wonderland, and lay on the ground, terrified. Suddenly, the white rabbit and Alice are bending over me.

"Why didn't you stay in your area, where you would be safe?" Alice asks sorrowfully.

"We tried to spare you this type of pain, but you didn't believe us," says the white rabbit with heartbreak in his eyes.

Slowly, they lead me back to the French area of Wonderland, where the French videos are playing. I try to explain about the little girl who tricked me into leaving.

"You will see and hear a lot of people and things that might seem to be fun, or that might make you want to leave your area," cautions Alice. "But you must never, ever listen to them. Only leave when the white rabbit tells you to; and only go where he tells you to. He will make sure that you stay safe."

The white rabbit looks at me tenderly, and I realize that he really does want to protect me from the terrible things that happen outside of the French part of wonderland.

"Why were the German people so mean to me?" I sob. "I haven't done anything to make them hate me!"

"They hate you because you left your area and are breaking the rules. If you break them, everyone, including them, are put into danger," explains the white rabbit. "You put them in extreme danger when you were talking to them; they might all have been killed."

I am horrified at the thought. I am a French presenter, and so am completely amnesic to the rituals and sacrifices that I have attended, including the ones I have done to seal me into my own presentation and create barriers between me and other presentations. The hedges in Wonderland are a physical representation of these barriers, which I had crossed in my terror a few minutes before.

"Never, ever cross into another area," says Alice. "You have experienced what can happen if you do."

I certainly have. Alice and the White Rabbit leave again, and this time, in spite of hearing children skipping and singing outside my boxwood enclosure, calling out to me in various languages, inviting me to play with them, I refuse to leave, and obediently stay in my area. I am learning to ignore the other presentations in this very concrete way, and to stay inside, immune to the attractions of other lives and other languages, staying exactly where I am told internally. As I get older and start training to be a programmer myself, only then do I learn that the 'Jabberwocky' is a flying animatronic or a drone controlled by the programmers.

The setup described above is used to teach parts to never cross the perimeters and barriers between the different presentations, thus isolating parts from each other. This isolation makes the person more controllable as each part will only have a partial view of the person's lived reality. Most importantly, it terrifies the presenters into obeying the rules to never communicate with each other and to never pay attention to anything outside their designated internal zones. Otherwise, because children have natural curiosity, the different presenters might be tempted talk to each other, or to "peek out" when the other parts are presenting in their respective countries. This kind of internal communication or shared presenting would overcome the amnesia or barriers between presentations, which is considered critical to maintaining security and covers. Many exposures to these setups and special rituals are used to make the child internalize the mazes and Wonderland, and to keep presenters in their designated zones when they are not cued out.

When not out presenting, the parts will be trained to watch the videos within their special area, augmented with videos of actual events, and to accept these videos as their own 'memories'. This creates the perception of a sustained and unbroken timeline for the presenters who will believe that they are continuously "living life". They are thus not able to perceive that they are 'inside' and have in fact 'lost time' from the time intervals (which can be significant, lasting months) between being called out to present. For instance, if a child has not been sent to a presentation for many months, they will be shown videos of significant events that the child allegedly experienced during this time. Thus, Jean will have her own "memories" of childhood, with many important events "remembered", in spite of the fact that in reality, she only spends three weeks a year in France, trading out with her twin sister and other children who look like her in this role. All have been equally programmed to look, act, and sound like "Jean", and the families are also programmed to not notice when 'Jean' is played by different children at different times. The Order will typically conceive several children (two to four is an average number) that look alike, making such 'swapping' possible when necessary.

I am two and a half years old. I am outside a special room in the programming lab, dressed in a bright blue dress that falls just beneath my knees, and a white pinafore. My hair has been dyed yellow with a temporary dye. I have a large white bow in my hair, along with white stockings and shiny shoes. I am Alice, one of the main presentation controllers, and I am going to a tea party. I love tea parties, with cakes and tea to eat and drink, and I look forward to this. Next to me, holding my hand, is Mnemosyn. In my Alice in Wonderland programming, she is a mother figure to me, Alice. Mnemosyn takes me places, reminding me of what to remember and what to forget. Mnemosyn also helps me to "remember to forget". I look at her and smile, and she smiles back.

We enter the room and sit at the tea party table. Several fathers I love are sitting at the table. But there is something wrong, terribly wrong. As I look at them, to my horror, I realize that these beloved fathers have been killed in terrible, gruesome ways: one father has his eyes gouged out, and is slumped blankly on his chair, unseeing with dark, bloody holes in his face. Another father has blood pouring out of his mouth, as he sits in pale, bloody death. The one next to him has his arms amputated. Blood has been pouring out in spurts and covers his robes. Across from him, a father has her chest stabbed and her breasts cut off. Her mutilated body leans at a grotesque angle in her chair. Each of the twelve chairs holds a gruesome, terrible scene of a recent death of a father I love.

I start screaming in horror.

“What are you screaming about?” Mnemosyn asks calmly, as she sits and pours tea for me out of a large teapot. “You seem upset about something.”

I cannot believe what she is saying. It is obvious what I am upset about! “The fathers!” I cry out in anguish. “They’re dead! Someone has killed them!”

Mnemosyn stops, looks at me, and says, “Alice, there are no dead fathers here. It’s just you and I. Now stop being silly, and let’s enjoy our tea”. She points to an empty chair for me to sit in, and fills my cup with tea, passing me a plate with biscuits on it. “Have one, they’re especially good,” she says, completely ignoring the gruesome scene around us.

I feel green, but have learned to always obey Mnemosyn, whose job is to tell me what to believe and what not to believe – or remember. As she calmly munches on a biscuit and sips tea, she tries to discuss the outing that we will have in a bit to the beach. But I am white-faced and have difficulty not looking at the gruesome scene around the table.

“You look upset,” she says in a slightly critical tone.

“But, the fathers,” I say again, pointing to one of the dead fathers who has been murdered next to me to illustrate my point.

“Alice, you must stop imagining such things,” she scolds. “If I say they aren’t here, they aren’t here. Why can’t you listen to me? Don’t you think I would be upset if there was something here to see?” As she continues to lecture me, I finally calm down and have a sip of tea with sugar from the beautifully decorated teapot: it has lovely roses and flowers on it, and golden runes in a lovely design.

“Good, Alice, you are looking better,” Mnemosyn praises me. “You really shouldn’t go around talking about dead bodies that aren’t there. That’s what gets people locked up in the insane asylum. Listen to me, and that will never happen to you.”

She is reassuring in her tone. Then, she says, “Do you agree to believe everything – and I mean everything – that I tell you, and to ignore completely the things I tell you to?” Her eyes look fierce as she says this, and I say “Yes” in a low voice.

She then takes me to a small altar in one corner of the room, and we do a sacrifice together; I put a small child on the altar and stab it through the eyes, as I say “I will only see what you, Mnemosyn, tell me to see,” and then stab it in the head, saying “I will only remember what you, Mnemosyn, tell me to remember.” She pats me on the head, praising me, as I invoke a demonic spirit of memory control to come inside and help me to always listen to Mnemosyn. Afterwards, we turn around, and I am startled. The table has been completely cleaned up; there are no gruesome bodies, and the tablecloth is sparkling white. The tea party looks just as it should, with colorful flowers in a vase. I join Mnemosyn at the table who with a smile says, “See, Alice? There were no bodies here. You were just having a bad dream. Always, always bring your bad dreams to me, and I will help them go away.”

I feel rather dazed. Deep inside, I wonder if the fathers I love are okay, dream or no dream. It was all too real, what I saw before the sacrifice. But Mnemosyn carries on a bright, happy conversation. I finish having tea with her and the other characters from Wonderland who have come to join us: Dormouse, the Mad Hatter, the White Rabbit. These are all children or fathers I love, dressed in costumes, but they play their parts perfectly, and we have a good time.

Later, I tremble just slightly as I leave the programming lab to return to my room. On the way, I see Mattheo and Jerome together; they smile at me and look just fine; they act as if nothing at all has happened in that terrible room; they certainly aren’t dead, or even hurt. I wonder, then, if it really was all just a bad dream as Mnemosyn insisted.

This “tea party” setup was an essential part of developing my presenter amnesia controllers, Alice and Mnemosyn. In these setups, Mnemosyn, the adult programmer and a *mother figure to young Alice, is modeling to her the behaviors and beliefs expected of the non-cult presentations if they ever remember any cult-related memories, and shows her how to handle them with denial and amnesia. The two of them work together to take memories of violent cult rituals or other events that a presenter might have, and to consign these memories into the categories of "bad dreams" which are not to be believed. That is, they are dedicated to ensuring presenter amnesia and denial of cult life. This enables the presenters to keep believing that their 'ordinary lives' are the only life they have ever lived, and that they have never experienced ritual abuse or mind control.*

By the time I am five, Alice is able to check if any non-cult presenter is experiencing any unauthorized or 'bleed through' memories of their cult life, cult events, or lives of other presenters. If this is happening, she can help the presenter to completely forget them with the help of the ever-watchful and careful Mnemosyn. Of course, my cult host is allowed to remember cult life so Alice does not interact with her. If Lucia, my cult host, has any memories that need to be forgotten, these will be stored within a completely different high-security storage system that has different guardians and barriers.

Because Alice, Mnemosyn, and the other Wonderland parts have critical controller roles, they undergo frequent reinforcement of their programming through not only physical setups but the use of virtual reality and other technologies. As usual, the setups are designed to create complete amnesia, and to teach Alice to help the presenters to only remember what they are told to remember. These setups are at times brutally violent in order to make the threat of what could happen, if a presenter remembers things that they shouldn't, seem absolutely believable.

Over the next few months, the presenters themselves will be hosted in the various countries they are to live in at times. Before doing so, they will experience numerous physical setups in which the lives of their (beloved) family members – father, mother, sister, brother, aunt, grandmother, etc. – in various countries will be threatened should they ever remember their cult experiences, or the memories of parts that present in other countries. Finally, before starting to live with the family for a few weeks in France, or Germany, or another country, a "baby" brother in each of these families is killed by the young child who is to live and present in these countries. This creates extra guilt (along with terror created by the threat of the family "telling" and the child being sent to "prison") which will help to maintain the complete amnesia required.

Shell Programming

I am a presentation controller named Andromeda. I am two and a half years old. My job is to make sure that the presentation shells are working correctly, and that only the parts in the presenting shell are allowed to see, hear or speak. Other presentation parts, while not out in their respective shells, are not allowed to see, speak or hear. My instructions are clear: ONLY the child locked into the shell (with a special key) is allowed to see, hear or speak. The others must be silent, and unaware of what the child in the shell says or does.

Today, I am practicing controlling the French shell and the French parts who present through this shell. My twin sister, Lizzie, is playing the role of the French presenter today. She is wearing the clear flexible plastic shell that represents the shell program. My twin sister Lizzie, as Jean (we both play this presentation role in France, so she plays her role perfectly) is speaking in French to her French mother, who is in the programming studio to assist with this program. To help teach the other presentation parts who are not currently out in their respective shells that they must not see, hear or speak, children labeled with runes that represent other presentations are standing behind me. They are wearing eye patches, ear plugs, and blindfolds over their mouths to prevent their seeing, hearing, or speaking anything

While Lizzie is talking, I am doing my other, critical job: as a presentation controller, I am monitoring Jean to ensure that her language, her apparent intellect, her body language, and her motor skills are perfectly in line with her presentation profile designed by the programmers. If she deviates even slightly, or tries to take her shell off, she will be tortured terribly, and so will I. If I fail to report even the slightest deviation to Pleiades, Polaris, or Galatea, my own controllers and the triad of master controllers over all of the presentation systems, they and I will be tortured terribly. Father Mattheo, the person I love most, is Pleiades, and I am desperate that I perform well and not fail. I don't want him tortured. The three master controllers are sitting quietly on an elevated platform above the scene, which represents their more ascended status: the higher the controller, the higher in the room they sit. These master controllers are dressed in robes covered with stars representing their galaxy, watching, just as they will do internally as I grow and the program is fully installed.

Jean performs perfectly, even not understanding English when one of her mother's friends comes by, looks at Jean, and asks her a question in English. Since in her French presentation, Jean does not understand English, she gives the woman a smile, and a look of bewilderment. Jean has passed her test, and I am relieved.

Pleiades approaches me where I am standing on my little, raised platform above the children representing various presenters. He gives a verbal code, flashes a special pattern on the handheld device that he shows me, and also shows me his golden key. I must see all of these things, along with his voice and face, in order to obey his command to change shells. This has been practiced thousands of times over the past two years. I obey instantly. He has given me the code to change shells, replacing the French shell out in front with the Russian shell. I have a lever that rotates the correct shell out to the place in the room that represents the shell being out in the body. I relay the command to Athena, my sub-controller, who goes and gets another little girl. This little girl represents Katerina, or Katya as she is called by friends and family, and she is my Russian presenter. I must make sure that the shell is in place perfectly, locked in so that the little girl cannot remove it, and then monitor her performance as Katya. I give the key to Athena, the controller under me, who locks the shell with the little girl in it into place, and returns the key to me.

Katya's sister in the family that she will live with when she is in Russia, who is also a Jesuit child, comes into the room, and starts speaking Russian. Katya is performing well: her body language, language skills and abilities seem consistent with her profile. Then, an older man with white hair comes into the room. He is holding another little girl by the hand. The little girl comes over to Katya, and asks her in German, "What is your name?" as she smiles.

Katya answers, "Katya." I am horrified. She has broken with her presentation profile, disobeying her programming to only know Russian. I hear a sharp "zap!" and Katya falls over unconscious. I hear another zap, and I am shocked throughout my body with terrible, excruciating pain.

Pleiades and the other master controllers come over. They are angry. "She failed, and that means you failed!" they tell me. "Your life, and the lives of your presenters, depend upon never, ever breaking profile. Things like this can never, ever be allowed to happen!"

I am heartbroken. I failed, and Katya almost died. I am responsible for her, and her failure means that I had failed her.

The next day I am given another chance. Another little girl, one of my sisters who is presenting as Katya, plays her part perfectly. I have been given a new tool: a wand that can instantly stun a presenter into unconsciousness if they falter or deviate slightly from their profile. This way, they won't have to get hurt and possibly die, as I am told could happen if they continue to fail.

"You can prevent their deaths, if you discipline them swiftly and correctly," Polaris tells me. "Punishing them for disobeying – even slightly – will save their lives, and mine."

I feel the weight of this responsibility. Being a high-level controller over presentations is a very difficult job. But I desperately, desperately want to save the lives of the people I love, and my own life, so I will learn to do this job, and do it well.

As time goes on, there are fewer and fewer infractions or variances from the presentation profiles, under my watchful eye. These are punished immediately and painfully, and as I have been taught to do, I report the deviations to the three master controllers over me. They will notify Saturn, my presentation reprogramming system, and tell him which internal reprogramming sequences to run that night to fix the errors and repair the system. The fathers want our systems to be able to self-reprogram, because we may be in situations where we are away from Rome, and unable to get to a programming facility for a period of time.

As this memory shows, the presentation programming that I underwent was quite complex, where my internal controllers and master controllers were taught to do their jobs by the programmers using concrete setups to model the expected behaviors and train these controllers. The punishments for any infractions are very severe in order to instill the importance of never breaking presentation when being hosted in another country outside of the facility. Internally, Athena, the part who works under Andromeda, goes to the entrance portal of Wonderland and tells the white rabbit to bring the correct presenter. Pleiades informs Andromeda which presenter this is, and Andromeda will pass this command on to Athena. The white rabbit and Alice together will bring the correct presenter to Athena, who will then go to Andromeda, get the key to lock the presenter into her shell, and then return the key to Andromeda.

When the child's designated time in the presentation is over for the time being, Andromeda will give Athena the key to unlock the presenter from the shell. She then returns the presenter to the rabbit hole where Alice will be waiting for the presenter. Alice then takes the presenter by the hand and leads her down the rabbit hole and back into Wonderland, taking her back to the correct area within it. At this point, depending on the orders given by Pleiades, Andromeda will have another presenter brought out, to be locked into the appropriate shell, or other controllers may have the cult host or other cult parts present, according to what the cult needs at that point.

The concern about breaking presentation is a concern that if a child acts "differently" and their profiles are not "perfect", then the cover story that the little girl has only lived in America, or that she grew up in France and has never traveled elsewhere, could be questioned. If a child looks "multiple", or "abused", this could also draw undue attention and scrutiny from others, which is the last thing that the Jesuits want. For the children are used to help conceal the criminal activities worldwide that the Order is involved in, once they are hosted in various nations.

Chapter 4: Theta and Spiritual Systems Training

Some of the events described in this chapter on theta and spiritual training may stretch the limits of believability. Based on my memories, in order to train their children in these skills and indoctrinate them in their occult teachings, the Order uses real spiritual experiences as well as elaborate setups with costumes and props, virtual reality and other technologies, drugs and hypnosis. Both types of experiences will feel very real to the child who is going through it. It can be difficult to distinguish whether a memory is of a real spiritual experience, or of a contrived scenario carefully staged by the adults. In this chapter, I describe the events as I experienced them as a child, when they felt completely real to me. While I personally believe that the events I have chosen to describe in this chapter were indeed authentic spiritual experiences, I am also open to the possibility that they were staged and based upon trickery.

Theta Training

The room is dark with absolutely no light in it. I am only three months old, in a crib. I am gumming on a toy that I have been given to play with: a severed human head. With my tiny fingers, I explore its matted hair, its eyes, its mouth. I am a theta controller named Nemesis in training. Darkness has been the main realm that I live in. I only feel comfortable in this dark. This and similar body parts have been my playthings.

Later, Father Carlotti comes into the room. He places steel blades on the ends of my little feet, and tells me to kick hard. I kick as hard as I can. They encounter the soft fur of a rabbit that squeals. My kicks have killed it. Carlotti lifts me up, hugs me, and praises me. “This is where your power comes from,” he tells me in a soft voice. “You really are a little killer.” I feel funny about his praise. I am glad that he is happy, but deep inside, I don’t like being called a “killer”.

A few months later, Father Jerome comes into the room to take me for my daily training. I am not feeling good, in fact, I feel ill, and do not want to go. So, I think about hitting Jerome in the head with a tiny fist, even though he is too far away to reach, to let him know where I hurt. I simply think it. Father Jerome steps back, looking surprised, and then goes to get Father Carlotti. “She hit me with theta skill,” he tells Carlotti. Carlotti is surprised and objects, “That’s impossible. She’s much too young.”

Jerome lifts me up and praises me for what I have done. He checks my head and gives me some medicine to help with the headache and slight fever. “You were trying to tell me what was wrong, weren’t you?” he says in a loving voice. I had and am glad that he figured it out. But I am also pondering the fact that I can think something, will it, and others feel it. It seems like a wonderful new thing to be able to do.

I am nine months old and have been taught by Father Mattheo to direct my theta blows at animals. I can now kill an animal easily with a quick blow. For some reason, he and the other fathers seem excited by this ability. I hate the terrible scream the animals make as I kill them, but they tell me that what I am doing is good, very, very good indeed.

I wonder why an activity that makes me so sad makes them so happy. It makes me feel strange and dirty inside. I hate the rituals that have to be done before and after the kills to “give power”. I hate the killing. But I cannot let them know this. They will be angry, and I might even have to visit “hell”. I don’t want that.

Today is a bit different. Mattheo brings a small child that I have never seen before into the room and tells me to hit the child hard with my theta ability. I don’t want to do this and look upset. Mattheo sits me on his lap and talks to me. “Nemesis, this is a very, very bad child that has hurt a lot of other children in terrible ways. If this child is allowed to grow up, he will become very evil and might even kill me and the other fathers and children in the facility." I am listening, but still don't feel quite right. "You want to protect us from that kind of evil, don't you?" he asks, looking at me tenderly.

I feel a deep conflict inside. I don't want to hurt the child, but I don't want Mattheo or the others that I love so much to be hurt. I know all about evil adults, I have met them in setups: terrible people who claw, torture, rape and hurt children and babies, making them scream. Mattheo seems to think that I can prevent this, if I hit this child hard. So, hesitantly, I do what Mattheo asks: I hit the child with a theta blow. The child falls over dead, bleeding from his nose and mouth. It is very much like killing an animal, but with much more sadness.

"Very, very good, Nemesis," he tells me. As Nemesis, I am named after one of the beautiful immortals who has visited my crib since birth. I carry this name proudly because I want to be like her. "I am so proud of you. I love you." He takes me out of the room and plays with me for a whole extra hour that day. I love this extra attention, and know that next time, I will do even better.

By the time I am three years old, I can kill teens and small adults with my theta abilities. I have learned that if I have sexual activity with someone first, it is much easier to create the spiritual connection that will enable the theta killing. There are two other theta controllers along with me, Nemesis, inside: Phobos and Chaos. Along with their systems, they have also learned to do their jobs well. Controllers often come in groups of three. They consider one another "sisters" inside, helping each other to do their jobs well, and also monitoring one another inside for signs of failure which are instantly reported to the programmers.

Phobos has the job of sending dreams of extreme terror to those she visits, while Chaos has the job of creating insanity in those she visits. Phobos has an easy job; she has thousands of terrible memories and feelings of terror that she can draw on from my less than ideal childhood to send out. Chaos takes the memories of being drugged and tortured, and the awful horror she experienced, to send out to others. We three controllers live in a special area internally, with temples dedicated to each of us. When called to present to the outside world, we are treated as "deities", with sacrifices and worship done to us. It is thrilling, but still feels a bit strange, to be called a "god" and to have adults bow to me, but this is part of being an immortal, and I learn to accept it as my due.

Theta training involves training parts to stay in the theta brainwave state. Parts are taught to stay in this state through a course of punishment and reward: punishment for going into a different state, reward for staying in it. The training of theta parts also include much indoctrination regarding the benefits of being in theta state.

Many occultists believe that this is a state wherein the individual has increased spiritual sensitivity and abilities, including the ability to do remote viewing and psychic killing. Based on my adult memories in the cult, the occult societies and government agencies prize psychic killing because the source of the death is completely undetectable: there is no poison, no physical wound, and so it allows an assassination that cannot be explained using physical methods.

Theta state can also enhance physical abilities, such as running faster than would otherwise be physically possible. I have seen individuals walk up a wall and back down when in this state, levitate above the ground, and bend spoons and other objects with their minds. While many in the western world, where logic and scientific "proof" methods have created a worldview that does not allow for the supernatural interventions in the physical world, my own experiences growing up contradict that view.

Spiritual Systems Training

Q'bala Training

I am four years old. I have entered a room that has special black and white patterns, with white and black squares, diamonds and half squares, as well as numbers and runes written on different squares in beautiful white or gold letters. This is a depiction of a part of the Q'bala. I must learn to carefully walk the various patterns and numbers and runes in an exacting, precise sequence. In one of my systems, the Q'bala is the pathway to enlightenment, one which involves learning complex numerical sequences with spiritual meanings.

At the various doors into this room are older children dressed as either a "black angel" or a "white angel". These are the guardians of the Q'bala. They do not allow unauthorized intruders to enter the Q'bala, and at times, I myself play the part of angelic guardian as well, glowering fiercely at anyone who attempts to enter this magical room without the proper codes. I have already internalized this room and am now learning to walk the paths and do complex equations that will provide answers to difficult questions with the help of spiritual beings. I am also learning to internalize my own guardians who are being taught how to do their jobs inside through watching these guardians and interacting with them. My trainers understand that at this young age, an experience is worth more than a thousand explanations, and that the beliefs and behaviors will be internalized much more quickly and longer term if they are experienced concretely. "Experiencing is believing" is their thinking, and I experience many, many setups during my first few years of life.

I am five years old. I am stretched out with arms and legs restrained on a cold, white marble floor. There are demonic beings hovering over each of the points of the sephiroth, special areas on my body which open up portals that enter into the demonic realms. These portals are used for traveling out of body. A special ritual is being done to reinforce the power and to keep open the portal at a point on my upper body. A sacrifice is done, and a bloody baby is laid on top of this area, where it is dying, as I chant the appropriate words.

"Receive this sacrifice, Chokmah", I chant, asking that the entity – an immortal being- that lives in this point of my body will receive my offering to him. I will rely on him and others to help me travel the dimensions, as well as to travel to various locations for remote viewing and other activities. I have been doing this for several years. I barely notice the increased weight and depression as this ritual is done, or how as Chokmah sits on top of me, he seems to suffocate me. I have been taught that should I do these rituals regularly, that the beings at the points of the sephiroth will take my life if I do not feed them myself in return for their "help" and "power". I do not fail to perform regular rituals to them and have also internalized the rituals: my internal points of the sephiroth all do internal sacrifices on internalized altars, to continue to maintain their power.

The scenes I describe are only a small portion of the cabalistic training that children in the Jesuit order go through. The full training takes years. These memories illustrate some of the terrible feelings experienced by a young child being forced to go through such training. When these memories came back, I tried to get rid of the dark spiritual beings sitting on these points in my body. I knew they were evil and did not want any good for me. However, I experienced extreme panic for several days because the very young parts of me who had gone through these experiences completely believed that these entities protected them. They also believed that these spirits would take vengeance on them or their loved ones, should I ever try to stop being loyal to them. For examples, parts believed that these demons "protected" them from other demons in the dimensions they had traveled. Parts also believed that these demons are able to come from the dimensions and "eat" them if they are not protected, and none of them wanted a creature such as a harpy to come into our dimension and kill them.

It took weeks of grounding and bringing truth to these very young parts to help them realize that we have a protection that is much greater than the power of any demon: the loving authority of the true Jesus. Yes, there were spiritual attacks because the people who had trained me were not happy when they felt in the spiritual realm that something had changed. But at the name of Jesus, those spirits trying to attack me – it felt like a *flood of utter darkness and death that tried to enter the room - fled. These spirits were powerless when I cried out to Jesus, and He answered. In fact, when His love entered the room, they were terrified and left. After a few experiences like this, the young parts inside calmed down, and the panic lifted.*

Egyptian

I am three and a half years old. I am completely naked and chained to a huge granite statue of Anubis, who has an altar that holds sacrifices between his outstretched arms. I am terrified and trembling. I am in a dark, cold vault beneath a large pyramid structure, lit only by a tiny candle at the other end of the vault. I have been told that I must spend the night here to wait for Anubis. I know all too well that I must please Anubis or he will tear my heart out. I have heard stories about children that did not make him…happy. I am not sure what he will ask and desperately hope it will not be too difficult for me.

It is hours later, the middle of the night, and I am still awake, too frightened to sleep. The statue I am chained to shifts slightly, and then I see it move – literally move – as if it coming to life. It is breathing and talking to me and is asking me a question.

"What did you bring me?" Anubis demands in a low, commanding voice.

I have learned what Anubis requires through careful training. I take the heart of a small child out of the bag I have brought with me, and place it above me, reaching backwards, into his outstretched arms. To my horror, Anubis bends forward and eats the heart. It disappears as he makes terrible chewing noises. Finally, he is done.

"I want more," Anubis says in his deep voice. I place another heart into his outstretched arms, and he consumes this as well. He keeps asking for more, so one at a time, I place the remaining hearts in the bag into his arms, and he repeats this terrible eating. There is a dark, dark presence like a black cloud in the room. I feel terrified and exhausted, as if I have been hiking on a high mountain for hours. This exhaustion intensifies the longer I am in the presence of this entity.

Finally, the red eyes of Anubis turn to me, and he asks the question I dread. "Have you nothing more?" he demands. I know that he is asking to weigh my heart, so I tell him, "Only myself."

"Then, mortal child, you know what to do." Yes, I know, I have been carefully taught what to do, and slowly, reluctantly, with cold sweat dripping off of me, I climb into the waiting arms and lay myself out on the altar.

"Is your heart pure and willing to always obey me?" Annubis asks.

Trembling, I respond, "Yes, my lord."

"Then, I will weigh your heart, and see if you are telling the truth," he says. At that moment, a dark cloud hovers over me, then covers me and seems to enter deep within me. I can feel it probing, seeking, questioning. I feel intense pain and repulsion at this spiritual invasion, but I do not show it or cry out, realizing from my training that to do so would be to anger this being and invite death. I wait in utter fear.

After what seems like a very long time, he finally pronounces, "You are worthy." I have been weighed and found obedient (and frightened) enough. The dark cloud lifts. I am allowed to crawl off of the altar and get down. I have trouble standing or walking, and feel extremely weak and depleted, as if my life force has been sucked out of me. I sit down and the statue changes. Now it is simply a statue and not a "divine being."

After a while, Father Jerome comes into the room. He picks me up, seeing immediately that I am too weak to walk. He puts me into my bed in the room I share with the other children, and brings me a special drink with electrolytes and other things to help renew my strength. I go to sleep while he holds my hand. This special amount of affection and attention is due to his understanding how difficult this ritual has been, a ritual which helps to spiritually install my own internal Anubis, a major controller in my inside Egyptian system. Each child must go through this, and I have heard of some that never return from this terrible room. Fortunately, all of the children in my dorm room pass this terrible rite, and we all are now chained within part of our souls to the demonic spirit that represents Anubis. We will undergo similar rituals for the other Egyptian deities over the next year until we have a full internal pantheon.

Babylonian

I am four years old. I am suspended from the ceiling of a large chamber by hundreds of small golden needles attached to golden wires that have been threaded throughout my body. This is a special ritual for Bel, a Babylonian god. The pain I endure during this ceremony is part of my sacrifice to him. My internal Bel is out, calling on the demonic to help us endure this torture.

It seems as if every cell in my body is in agony, is on fire, as the needles pull and stretch nerve and skin and flesh. Sweat is streaming over my body. After what seems like days, but is only hours, I am finally lowered and the needles and wires are slowly pulled out. I give a special sacrifice to Bel, placing the needles on an altar along with a child I have killed with a golden knife. I feel Bel within me, proud and arrogant, glad that he has shown his strength.

Everyone in the room bows in worship because Bel is a divine being and they are honoring his presence within me. Soon a young girl, my twin sister, dressed as Ashtarte, joins me on two golden thrones at one end of the room. A feast is given in our honor, a meal consisting of wonderful dainties and sweet drinks made of fermented honey. Afterwards, there is a sexual orgy. Many of the adults want to honor Bel with sexual activity with me, his current mortal representative. I am tired, and much, much later, my cult host, who has been called out after the activities are over, climbs into bed and falls immediately asleep. Tomorrow is a rest day, and I am glad, because being Bel has exhausted me emotionally, physically, and spiritually.

Druidic

I am five years old and I am in a remote part of Ireland. My spiritual trainer is with me, and we go into a small forest. The air is very humid with a fine mist. As we walk along a path lined with green, leafy plants, ferns and shrubs, he takes me to an area that is surrounded by very distinctive large rocks with runes on them. Because of my training, I can read the runes: they are a warning to others that this place is sacred to the druids, and outsiders who enter will be killed. Brogan, my trainer, is a druid as well as a Jesuit father, so he can enter this spot and not be harmed. He has been training me for years in the magic of the druids, and signs to me to join him in front of a very large, ancient looking tree in the center of the grove. This tree is huge, at least six feet thick, with twisting, distorted limbs.

I instinctively draw back a bit. I do not like this tree. I have a bad feeling about it. A smell of decay seems to emanate from the moist earth around it, and I have an unpleasant feeling that the tree is watching me. Brogan takes a long, thick rope and ties me to the tree's huge trunk, making sure that I cannot escape. This rope has been anointed with the blood of a sacrifice that we both did before coming to the grove.

"You must spend the night and live," Brogan tells me quietly. This reminds me uncomfortably of the rituals with Anubis and other beings. I realize that this will be a night that I will not sleep and will be tested yet again. "I have full confidence you can do this," he says, smiling at me, but I do not smile back. In some small part of my mind, I wonder why I must go through all of this testing, enduring terrible nights that nightmares are made of. I know I cannot tell Brogan this. Instead, I am silent and pale, and nod my understanding.

"Luce, I wish this was easier for you," he says. "I know this is hard, I do. I went through it myself." It is as if he can read my mind and my feelings, and I realize it is quite possible, with the spiritual bonds between us, that he can. Or, at least, he can pick up on what I am feeling from my body language which I cannot control completely when I am this frightened.

"I will be back for you at dawn," he says. "We will go out for a special breakfast then." I wish that I had his confidence that I will survive. This feels to me like one mean tree, and I don't look forward to being tested by it. I nod and say goodbye, and he quickly leaves.

I have a small canvas bag that contains the required hearts, livers and internal organs that this ancient tree prefers. Brogan has left my right arm partially free so that I can reach into the bag and grab an item as needed. But I cannot wiggle free. I have tested the strength of the ropes already, and I am no match for these inch-thick ropes that have been carefully tied, with the knots far out of my reach.

I sit and wait and wait. It feels like too much of my young life has been spent in waiting on capricious beings, who one moment are smiling and benevolent, but can quickly turn violent, angry, and even murderous. I reflect on how much of the time, our rituals and incantations are spent placating these beings in return for the small favors that they toss our way. Is it really worth it to travel to a remote place and look at documents or to travel back in time, if it means risking our lives or even our sanity to do so?

I think of the poor oracles of Rome, young women permanently chained to pedestals who go slowly insane from their job of giving oracles to all who walk into the dark places, the hidden places of the Vatican. I shudder at the thought. I never want to be an oracle of Rome. It takes a terrible price on the women selected to do so, and I am terrified of these wretched creatures who are chained naked to their pedestals whose hair becomes matted and whose finger and toe nails grow out in strange shapes. I have watched them eat like animals, growling, when they are fed bits of meat, bread and vegetables, or given water from special, dedicated urns, water that is mixed with a bit of blood from the daily sacrifice. I comfort myself with the thought that I have never heard of a child from a top class being assigned by the fathers to be an oracle. If the predictions of my trainers and the older children are correct, I will be in the top class next year.

Hours pass with these and other musings as the night sky darkens. There is no moon and the night is completely black, completely silent, with a growing oppression coalescing in the darkness. Suddenly, I hear a rustle, and a low, sinister voice speaks.

"Who are you child, and why are you here?"

The voice is speaking ancient Celtic, which I have learned in my mage classes. I respond in the same tongue, "I am here to learn from you, and to serve you," as I have been coached to say.

"And what does a mortal child want to learn from me?" the tree asks in a malignant tone.

I shudder a bit, and respond with the lines that Brogan and other mages have taught me. "I want to learn the secrets contained deep in the earth, the secrets of what the wind tells you when it whispers in your leaves, and the secret of long life, from one who has lived as long as you, ancient one."

The tree takes some time before it responds, as if thinking. Finally, it asks, "What will you give me for these secrets? For surely even one as young as you realizes that secrets come at a price – a dear price."

I reach with my one free hand into the bag, take out a child's heart, and throw it up towards the leaves of the tree. I hear a rustling in the leaves, and then a terrible sucking noise. After a while, the tree says, "Ask me one question. If it is a good one, I will answer. If not, I will take your life."

I then ask the tree a question that I have previously been told to ask by Brogan. The tree ponders, then answers me. This back-and-forth goes on for hours, with the tree demanding a sacrifice, and in return, answering the questions I have been coached to ask. Finally, at the end of the night, there are no more questions, and I have run out of sacrifices.

"And what will YOU give me?" the tree then asks malevolently.

I am terrified, and reply, "What do you ask?"

The tree reaches over with one of its woody, twiggy limbs, and painfully, terrifyingly, rapes me with it. I feel as if I am being torn apart inside, and wonder if I am dying. But a minute later, Brogan returns, and the tree stops what it is doing. I look up and see that the sky is turning light in the early dawn.

The tree has turned back into a tree, with no voice, no movement. It is completely, utterly still in the center of this grove where the tree lives.

"I knew you would make it," says Brogan in a hearty voice. He takes a careful look at me, since I don't respond, and places a hand on my shoulder. "I'm going to untie you, and we will leave here," he says.

He unties me, coiling the huge rope into a backpack that he leaves for another to carry out. He then bends, and gently picks me up, realizing that I am unable to walk. I am bleeding between my legs, but the blood loss is not great. It is my mind and spirit that are in shock. I am unable to process what I have just been through and need time to recover from it. In spite of my years of spiritual training so far, this has traumatized me deeply, and Brogan realizes this.

He carries me like a small child in his arms, murmuring, "I love you, and I am glad you made it. I am proud of you." I am glad that I made it, too, and fall asleep, exhausted, as he carries me to a waiting vehicle that will take me to a warm room at a private estate. I will sip hot, sweetened tea and rest for a day before I fly back to Rome with Brogan. A major part of my druid training is almost complete, and I am glad that it is over.

Ancients

I am five years old. I am in a dark part of a large wood in Germany, in an area known for its bogs and huge trees. There is a part of these woods where centuries ago, faces were carved into the ancient trunks of trees. These faces have been re-shaped and chiseled over the years and look startlingly lifelike. Only authorized visitors are allowed in this part of the Black Forest. Intruders kept out by security guards and other measures. A few unfortunate ones end up "stumbling" into peaty bogs where their bodies are sucked deep within, and they are never heard from again.

I am here with Father Jerome to do a ritual before we travel further to some hills. At the hills, we will visit the cave where Grunwald and Grenalyn, two of the ancients, live. I have been taught that these two giants have held up the world since it began. Grunwald goes out daily, seeking prey, to bring back to Grenalyn, his ancient wife who sits continuously stirring her cauldron and adding the flesh and bones of this prey to it.

We travel to the hilly area. After walking around the hills, I shudder as these hills feel forbidding. Finally, Father Jerome and I come to a large cave located on the side of a hill. There is a tunnel-like entrance, and I can smell the unmistakable odor of boiling human flesh wafting out from within the cave. I have smelled it numerous times during my mage training over the past few years. Littered around the entrance, I see the yellowish bones of unfortunate humans who have been caught by Grunwald. I wish fervently that we could leave this dreadful place.

However, I have learned to unfailingly obey my spiritual mentors, and Jerome wants us to be here today. "You are going inside" he says. I look into the dark, menacing opening, and hesitate. I really, really don't want to go in there, but I know that as part of my spiritual training, I must.

I take a deep breath, and enter the low, narrow, dark opening. As I go in, I see the glow of a fire ahead. I hear the hiss of water boiling and steaming, and the sickening smell fills the entrance. I walk more and more slowly, but finally, I am in a large, cavernous cave whose ceiling rises many feet up. The only light comes from a fire beneath a large cauldron, and from a few candles on stone ledges in this rocky room.

There are two large beings in the cave. They look almost like the rock that their dwelling is made of, with huge gray-green arms and legs like bent pillars as they huddle over the boiling stew. They have large, human-looking heads and faces. I can see a few human bones sticking out of the cauldron. The two gigantic figures look at me with malevolent, black eyes that almost glow with hatred.

"Who are you, mortal child?" the larger, male giant asks. "What gives you the audacity to come into my dwelling?"

Trembling, I answer as Jerome and the other mage mentors have taught me. "I am seeking to learn how to become immortal, like you, and have brought gifts to you, for I have heard of your wisdom." Somehow, in these encounters with immortals, I must always be humble, obeisant, and always, always bring gifts; this seems to be a rule of the encounters.

While his eyes are still malevolent, the giant man, Grunwald, looks with more interest at me. "I see that you have been taught by those older and wiser than you, human child," he says. "If they had not taught you, you would be in this stew right now."

A loud cackle emerges from the female giant, Grenalyn, his wife. "As skinny as you are, you wouldn't add much, but it is often the young ones that have the most tender meat." She is sniffing the air, and to my horror, I realize that she is smelling my blood. I act quickly before she decides to pitch me to the stew.

I say, "I have brought you gifts that I was told you might enjoy," as I lift a small infant that is alive and wiggling, in my hands. I hold it towards the two giants, and Grunwald examines it, sniffing it in the same manner that Grenalyn had been sniffing the air before.

"This one has pure blood. It would make a fine addition to our meal," he says. Grenalyn moves next to him, sniffs the infant, and nods. She takes the infant and puts it into the boiling water. We hear its screams that are silenced as it dies. Grunwald and Grenalyn close their eyes in pleasure as the infant is slowly boiled in the thick stew.

"I like your gift, so I will not kill you," says Grunwald. "The infant screamed well before it died. It made a good sound." I am horrified at the pleasure that this giant takes in pain and suffering, and at the same time relieved that I will be allowed to live.

Grunwald then asks, "What do you want to learn about becoming an immortal?"

I respond with the question my mentors had coached me to ask, "How may a human enter the depths of the earth, and mine the precious metal questral without dying?" The fathers know that there are metals deep in the earth that could be used to create the new materials necessary for some of the technologies that they wanted to develop.

Grunwald looks thoughtful, and responds, "A question like this requires an added gift. Do you have one?"

Fortunately, the mages were prepared for this. I bring out a second infant from my bag, which undergoes the same inspection and sniffing as the first one. Finally, both giants nod, add it to the stew, and close their eyes with pleasure as they hear its dying screams.

I am feeling increasingly uncomfortable here, in the presence of these dangerous creatures, and I want to leave as soon as possible. As the fathers want the answer to this question though, I force myself to remain despite the deepening oppression. In spite of the candles, it seems darker in here than when I first entered the cave.

"To go into the earth, you must find the correct gates – you mortals call them portals – and do the correct ceremony to enter," Grunwald says. He then draws a picture on the dirt floor of the cave of the location of the portals which I memorize and will draw later for Father Jerome and Father Mattheo. He tells me the words of the incantation and describes the ritual that will allow a human being to go through the portal and find the treasured metal.

"You must never fail to give a gift to the guardians of the portals, both when you enter and when you leave, or they will shut the doors and you will be buried alive," he cautions. "You must also bring a gift to Teklon, the guardian of this metal deep within the earth."

I memorize his instructions, knowing that the lives of any who attempt this mining depend on my remembering fully and accurately. Fortunately, I have recorder parts, developed and programmed since I was an infant, who can record all visual and auditory details. They will later come out, and share with the fathers everything that they saw, heard, felt, and experienced. I will also share the same, and the fathers will compare what we both say to ensure accuracy.

I turn to leave, and Grunwald says in a deep voice "You are fortunate indeed, mortal child, to be allowed to leave my home. Many mortals come to visit and remain forever." I feel a chill down my spine at the threat in his voice as Grenalyn cackles next to him. I realize that he enjoys frightening me, but it does not stop the instinctual fear that I feel in the presence of this being who I suspect would rather see me dead than alive.

I also wonder, once I am outside the tunnel, where Father Jerome greets me with joy in his voice, why Grenalyn is willing to share this information with me. Why would he give me something that would help us mortals? I wonder. And so, I ponder these and other questions about the metal and the technology that will be developed from it. I wonder if it will really be "good" and for mankind's benefit, as I have been told. These creatures do not seem to want to be helpful at all.

I know that for some, the experiences of Jesuit spiritual training will sound unbelievable. However, to me, these experiences were very real indeed.

These memories are one reason why I talk more about my faith in my recent writings than I had in my original svali posts twenty years ago. As I went deeper into my own healing journey, I recovered memories like these and they filled my little parts with fear. They truly believed that if I remembered, 'the demons will eat us', among other horrors. I needed to find someone, something, that was the direct opposite of these creatures, someone who was loving and could protect me from them.

I found that someone in my faith in the God of the Bible, and His son, Jesus Christ. The kind of love that is caring, protective, and provided the nurture and compassion – and mercy – that I never experienced in the terribly legalistic world of the occult, where rules broken meant death, or at the least, torture. I have been amazed that the true God is not like this at all; that He is not 'performance- based', but instead, freely offered me life.

I would never, ever have had the courage to share these memories publicly otherwise. When I do so, my desire is not to glorify evil', but to show that it is possible to break free from the deepest depths of fear and bondage to such evil. I hope that those from a similar background will recognize that by sharing these things, I am breaking the "vows and oaths of secrecy" that those who become ascended masters make. Yet, in contradiction to their threats and indoctrination, I am alive and less tormented than I have ever been in my life.

I will be honest about having struggled with whether it is okay to break these vows and oaths made during childhood and adulthood. Isn't a promise a promise, and aren't I "wicked and faithless" to be breaking my promises by revealing these things? However, I now believe that these promises to never tell were made under coercion, and these creatures and the adults who coerced my promise to such evil do not deserve loyalty. Promises made to liars who ask for them for evil purposes can and should be broken.

The beings I encountered were universal in their desire for sacrifice, obedience, and worship. They were trying to pre-empt a god role from the human beings (like me) who foolishly sought their "help" or to converse with them. The story I am sharing is the result of this misguided belief, passed on through generations of the Jesuit Order and other occult societies that these fallen angels want to help humans. No, they do not! They only want to destroy human beings, I can say this completely and unequivocally, based upon my own encounters.

The question will be raised, "But can these demons really take on physical form?" I only report my own experiences. I do believe the Bible also illustrates this possibility in its accounts of angels taking on physical manifestation that are visible to human beings with their natural eyes. Examples include when God was sharing his plans with Abraham regarding Sodom and Gomorrah, the angels who physically manifested when rescuing Lot and his family from destruction, and the chorus of angels that were seen and heard in

Bethlehem two millennia ago, declaring the birth of Jesus to shepherds. If good angels who are not fallen can manifest, why shouldn't fallen angels also be able to? These are just some issues for thought that I am raising here; I am not a theologian. Most importantly, however, I have come to believe in a loving God whose authority is greater than the evil I encountered as a child. He is more than able to send them away with one breath, or through one word spoken by a believer in the true Jesus with His authority.

I am now going to address the issue of alien encounters as a possible interpretation of these experiences that I have shared. I do NOT believe that these creatures are "aliens". I do realize that beliefs on this topic can differ greatly, and I am only sharing my own belief. I do not believe that these are a technologically advanced, evil race that is enslaving mankind. I have encountered them, and they are spirits, demons or fallen angels who have tried to turn mankind against the true God of the Bible. I am aware that people have memories of encounters with aliens. I do have memories of meeting "aliens", being abducted by them, being invited to visit them, and so on. However, these memories have always eventually been revealed to be staged trickery: studios that were the 'alien spaceships' and the aliens I encountered were cult members dressed in costumes. In my programming, these alien memories were installed as a smokescreens or distractions to 'real' cult memories, i.e., if presenters started to have any cult-related memories that they did not immediately deny or forget, they were then supposed to attribute the memories to 'alien activity'.

Theo

I am three years old. I am sitting on a stone bench in a beautiful indoor garden located near the Vatican. Although we call it the Vatican Garden, it is located outside of the Vatican itself. It is large and filled with trees, shrubs, and flowers, and sunlight filters down from a large glass roof above. I love it here, and the sweet perfume of the flowers fills the air.

Mattheo has brought me here and has told me to wait on the bench. He leaves. A short time later, an extremely handsome young man appears who looks like he is in his early 20s appears. He is dressed in a black tuxedo with a snow white shirt and black tie, a top hat, and white gloves. He sits next to me and takes off his hat. His jet black hair comes to a widow's peak at the top of his forehead. I know who this is because I have had glimpses of him before at various times during the past few years. This is Theo, the beautiful form of Satan; I know that he can also take on a hideous, frightening form during rituals.

"Hello, Lucient," he says with a smile. I smile back. He is charming and quite seductive in a strange way that has nothing to do with sex. I feel his fascinating attraction. "I'm glad that we can meet together today." I love this special attention and smile some more. "You do know, don't you, that you are very special to me?" he says. "You are very gifted, and one day you will do great things for me." He pulls me towards him and gives me a kiss on my lips.

Then, he releases me. Suddenly, beautiful glass bubbles that reflect the light in rainbow colors appear in his hands. I am awed and amazed, as effortlessly, he juggles these bubbles, first one, then two, then three, four, five, six. They float up, then come down, seeming as light as soap bubbles but much sturdier. "Would you like to touch one?" he offers.

I eagerly reach out and touch the glass, it is so beautiful. I wonder how he can possibly juggle them without a single one falling or breaking. I have seen juggling before, but nothing like this, as these delicate, shimmering objects continue to seemingly float gently upwards and then down.

Theo then turns around and juggles the glass objects behind his back! He doesn't even need to see them to juggle them! I am mesmerized as I watch. Finally, he stops and lets me hold one in my lap as we talk.

"Lucient, I will be asking you to do some very hard things for me during the next few years," he says. His teeth are very white and his skin is pale. He is very handsome and somehow endearing to my heart, which wants to be loved. His look is very loving.

"At times, you won't understand what I will ask, but can you believe that I love you, and want what is best for you?"

I nod. Yes, I can believe him, although I feel a bit uneasy as well, for a reason that I can't quite define.

"Will you show me that you love me?" he asks. Suddenly, I know what he wants.

On the stone paver in front of him, I kneel and bow down, and worship him. He places his hand on my head, and then gets up and disappears. He vanishes into thin air, and I wonder if I have been dreaming. But next to me, on the ground, is a small glass object that reflects the sun like a rainbow. I pick it up wonderingly, and take it to Mattheo who is in his private office.

Mattheo seems pleased. "He favored you with a gift," he says. "I will keep it safe for you here." He unlocks a cabinet in his office and places the glass ball into it. He and I both know that until I am a father, I am not allowed to keep anything that I own, except for medals and a candle, in the dorm room which I share with other children my age. I am happy, because Mattheo is happy, and he takes me out for a gelato, spending special time together as an added reward.

Satan's Throne

I am just a few months older, and I am in the room beneath the Vatican, on a level securely hidden from public access, where Satan's throne is located. The elevators to this level are carefully hidden. No one without using the correct biometric security and codes, which are changed daily, can enter here.

It is many, many levels beneath the public areas. I have visited here before many times during the past three years, watching as penitents and those seeking favors crawl on their knees across shards of glass in order to approach Satan on his throne. He demands this type of act, supposedly to show humility and how much a petitioner really wants what they ask for. Sometimes, he changes the approach to his throne, putting hot stones there, and other objects that inflict pain.

Many people come to this throne room, accompanied by the fathers, including world leaders, and heads of occultic organizations. They line the walls of the room, waiting patiently.

Today is different from the other times I have visited this place. I am sitting in Satan's lap, on the huge, golden throne at the end of the painful pathway. Satan is in his hideous form, and is huge, dark, and frightening in appearance.

A petitioner, a government head, comes towards the throne. He brings a large heart-shaped ruby and a human heart in a golden casket. On his hands and knees, bowing, he opens the casket, and says, "I have a petition to ask, master."

Satan takes this act of worship and the sacrifice as his due. He enjoys watching people groveling before him, and enjoys the numerous sacrifices done earlier in the day to please him before his appearance. Sitting on his lap, I feel this pleasure, too. I am half hidden in the dark, almost cloud-like density of his being.

"What is your petition?" I hear Satan think it, but it is my mouth that opens and voices the question. It is as if Satan and I are someone joined, and I can speak what he is thinking. It feels odd, somewhat filthy, but also very powerful, and very confusing. I am a small child, but here is a leader of a country listening to me because I am representing Satan to him.

I am not the only child to do this. It is part of our training in the Order. This is considered a huge honor and an important responsibility. The fathers have prepared me over the previous weeks for this day, helping me to do the required sacrifices and teaching me how to prepare myself to be a "worthy vessel". Even though I am still young, I am advancing in my theta and omega training, and the mages feel I am ready to do this.

The petitioner keeps his head down, and asks, "I would like to see the downfall of a major enemy." He mentions a warring faction in his country, one that would like to put him out of leadership. "I would like these individuals who are its leaders put to death in a way that makes them an example to the other members of his faction."

This is not an unusual request. People come to Satan asking for wealth, wisdom, and other things, but the most common request is power, whether that power is political, spiritual or in another realm of influence. I have seen church leaders come here and bow, as well as men and women of all ages. The one common thing is that they are all willing to painfully crawl before Satan, bow down, and bring him a sacrifice. Without fail, they are all occultists of a high degree, who are familiar with this dark spiritual reality and willing to pay the price – part of their humanity – in return for a favor.

I listen intently as the man speaks, then hear a whisper in my head. "What do you think should be done?" Satan is asking me what I think. I am surprised and a little terrified. What if I make a mistake? "Give him his request, in return for a yearly tithe of money and people, including children," I think back.

"Very good" Satan thinks in my head. Then, he is thinking very loudly indeed, and the words come out in my childish voice in unison with his. "You will be granted your petition, but on one condition: I require a yearly tithe of your income, which can include the price for young children who can be brought to me instead of part of the money," I proclaim in a loud voice. "Do you agree to this demand?" The petitioner nods his head, and then says softly, "I agree."

He turns around, still on hands and knees, and crawls back to the wall to stand next to the other petitioners who line it. Not all will be seen today, and many will return another day. One after another, Satan and I listen and pronounce his judgments and thoughts regarding each.

By the late afternoon, I am weary and feel that if this goes on much longer, I will faint. It would not do to faint off of Satan's throne, but it is very, very hard and very, very horrible to sit here engulfed by him. I am fascinated that these world leaders are coming and bowing and crawling to Satan, but I am also sick of doing this.

Suddenly, Father Mattheo, who is a top general in the Jesuit army, announces that there will be no more petitions, to my great relief. The petitioners lining the walls bow, and leave, with quiet dignity. Mattheo beckons to me, and dazed, I get off of the large golden throne, and go to him. He holds me in his arms in a hug, and takes me to his private office, where I will lie down on a couch and be brought a meal of soft puddings and liquids. All the while, he is telling me how proud he is of me, how much he loves me. Even so, I feel so very dirty inside, completely defiled. I wonder if I will ever feel clean again.

I understand that these experiences will sound unbelievable to some. Satan appearing in the form of a beautiful young man and talking to a young child? Satan appearing in a hideous form, sitting on a regular basis on a throne under the Vatican? Seriously? I am only sharing what I saw and experienced here. But as I noted previously, I do believe that demons can manifest physically at times especially in situations where they are receiving worship and other things they love best, such as seeing human beings tortured and killed. Whether this was actually "Satan" or another spirit sitting there could certainly be debated, though.

What I do know is that these creatures are absolutely cruel, and their desire is to use people to accomplish what they want on the earth. This includes infiltrating the highest levels of governance in many areas. Demons cannot destroy mankind without mankind's cooperation, which is what they are trying to gain through the misguided obedience of the occultists around the world. This type of evil only has power when people seek and submit themselves to it. When people say "No!" to it and place their faith in the God of the Bible and His Son, these dark creatures lose all power. They are then thwarted in their plans. THIS is why I talk about Christianity so much on my blog and in my interviews. I want people to know that regardless of how evil on earth tries to manifest, God is the answer *who brings freedom from the fear that this type of experience can instill in children and adults.*

Chapter 5: Other Memories

Being programmed to be a 'presenter'

From early infancy, the programmers created and trained a specific group of parts: the presenters. These are parts that are tasked with presenting in various countries outside of the facility. The fathers design the 'life story' of each presentation according to the needs of the cult. They decide which countries the presentation will live in and where, who their 'families' will be, and the presenter's personality traits and abilities. For instance, while my cult host was extremely athletic, my American presentation was programmed to be clumsy and slow, and to completely believe that she was naturally clumsy and slow.

Presenters are carefully programmed to have no memories of cult life, and to only have memories of an ordinary life with no cult activity in the respective families and countries that they lived in. They are also programmed to be unaware of other parts, and to believe that they are the entire person. Presenters enable the cult-raised, dissociative person with many parts to seem like an ordinary non-dissociative person when interacting with people outside the cult. Alice in Wonderland programming (see chapter 3) is one of the main programs used to control the presenters.

Presentation parts are created through trauma. The programmers than carefully provide the experiences that will teach each presenter part their 'identities' and 'lives' in their respective families and countries. "Rooms" are set up in the programming studios that look just like the rooms in the houses that the presenter will eventually live in with their 'family' in these countries. The cult members who will play the 'father', 'mother', and siblings' of the respective presentations will interact with the respective presenters by name in these rooms. These experiences create early memories of being in these 'families' for the presenters. Various normal, culturally appropriate family scenarios common for babies and toddlers, e.g., first birthday cake, are staged and photographs of these events are taken. These activities build an authentic seeming life story with evidence such as baby photographs for the presenters. The cult creates complete cover biographies for each presentation in their respective countries.

A very important part of presenter programming is teaching them to only have the abilities (e.g., language skills) that would be expected for a child from that country. For example, when an American, Canadian, or UK presenter was out, I only heard and was allowed to speak in English with the appropriate accent for that country. If I spoke Italian, Latin, French, or German in an English-speaking presentation, I was tortured heavily, and then sent to "hell", staged scenarios where again, I would be tortured. In this "hell", the presenter would be told she had caused the whole system to become more mortal and less immortal, or to "descend". I felt absolute terror as a presenter in these "hell" scenes, and was relieved when "Satan" or another "divine being" would come and rescue me upon my promise to never forget again and to accept a demonic spirit to ensure permanent barriers between systems. The divine being (an older cult member dressed in a costume, but at times, what seemed to be a real spiritual entity when I was older) would then take me to an altar to do a sacrifice and escort me out of "hell" and back into the presentation setting.

After a few terrifying experiences of "hell", I never forgot again. I have lived with a lifelong fear of going to hell while in my presentations. I could never quite understand this, since the presenter families I was raised in were not religious. All the presentations, including the American, UK, French, German, Russian and Israeli ones, went through such programming until the amnesia barriers between presentations were complete. Presenters are even programmed with amnesia barriers to prevent them from dreaming about one another, or seeing one another's dreams during sleep. Upon hearing special tones, seeing a specific code pattern, and seeing visually one of my primary trainers, I could switch out any of the nationalities desired, and this part would have absolutely no knowledge that I had fathers, mothers, sisters, brothers, aunts, uncles and friends in other countries.

At the age of three, I began being hosted and living in these various families around the world for two or three weeks at a time each year, rotating presentations with three or four other Jesuit children who looked just like me, genetically identical sisters, including Lizzie. These children had been programmed with the same presentation as I had, and were capable of looking and sounding like the cover person they and I were supposed to be in each one. It helped that many of my programmers in the group I was infiltrating (the Illuminati) were also Jesuit fathers, and so they were able to help maintain the cover. In order to maintain the cover when needed, the families would sometimes have an infant or toddler that looked like me to live with them in the presentations before my own hosting started proper at three years old.

While I lived 12 weeks a year in several different presentations, rotating through various presentations and countries as commanded to by my trainers, I always spent most of the year in the facility in Rome. This is what I considered my real "home". This is where my main host Lucia (the cult host) could relax and be myself the most, and where I was able to see my twin brother and sister, my classmates, and the fathers I loved most. Because I was dissociative, I felt no confusion. When a French, Israeli, or other presenter was not out, there was no felt loss of time for several reasons. They had learned very early on to go and stay in Wonderland (see chapter 3), in the area where the presentation language was spoken (overseen by "Alice", a strict controller, along with various punishers such as the Jabberwocky).

It can be difficult to understand how parts can be hosted in different countries, while still spending most of their "real" (cult) life in a facility or occultic training school. This is one reason why the Jesuits raise several children at a time who look identical, who have the same presenters programmed into their system. Having several children who look alike at one time is not difficult for the Order to produce due to their genetics program. For instance, the Order would have four children who are capable of presenting as 'Jane Dupont' (not a real presenter name) in Virginia, USA. They carefully schedule where these children will be at any time, so that there can be one child in the presentations when needed, while the others are in the cult facilities or other places. The other children will be given 'updates' on what each one is doing while presenting so that the narratives remain seamless between the different children with the same presentations. For these updates, the presenters are called out in the labs and watch videos of what the other children programmed to have the same presentations were doing when in France, Italy, etc., in order to add their memories to their own. They are programmed to believe that these videos are their actual memories.

Many highly organized occult societies also have more than one presentation for each person and use twins or other lookalike siblings to cover the presentation roles. For instance, members of the Illuminati are also often programmed to present in several countries, such as the United States, Germany and France. As they know that the same child or twins are playing these multiple roles, the Illuminati would only expect the child or the other children to be in one presentation at a time. E.g., one twin may be at a training facility while the other is presenting in France as an 'ordinary child', while the German and USA roles are left empty for the time being. Because everyone in these children's families is also cult-involved, the parents or family friends in Germany and the USA will not even notice that the child is absent and will have 'memories' of the child being continuously there.

This made it simpler for the Jesuits when they were infiltrating the Illuminati because they would only need to schedule for a child (or their identical siblings) to be in one Illuminati presentation at a time. Their identical siblings can then be in training at the cult facilities or in other non-Illuminati presentations at the same time. But even when programmed to have parts that present in other countries, always the child will believe deep within that their real life is at "home" – the cult training facility.

Learning to do sacrifices

One part of the training that we all underwent, starting very young, was to do sacrifices properly. There was a science and an art to it, and since earliest infancy, our little hands had been led by adults in the proper procedure. By the age of three, we had to be able to hold a ritual knife correctly and stab a sacrifice in the proper spot without hesitation. As we got older, the expectations became greater, until by age ten, we could do all the sacrifices correctly for a major ritual, including skinning and torturing the victim when required.

But there was another type of sacrifice that was especially horrifying, one that was used as a severe punishment.

I am three and half years old, and have disobeyed Mattheo again, making him angry. He had told me to torture a homeless person to death by peeling off all of his skin. This is part of my training in torture methods, and I must learn this and other methods of torture if I want to join the Torturers Guild when I am older, fathers who are highly respected for their skills in torture. For some reason, today I was sick of hurting others, and in a rare surge of saying what I wanted, I said “No!”

This was unthinkable, of course, and I knew that I would be punished, and would probably go to hell for my disobedience. Guilt flooded me, but I still refused to pick up the skinning knife. Mattheo commanded me to torture the man again, and then with rage in my eyes, I did not skin the homeless man; I stabbed him through the heart, ensuring a quick and much more painless death than he would have endured if I had skinned him. But I was also looking Mattheo in the eyes when I stabbed the man, and he saw the unspoken meaning in my act.

Now, I knew I was in real trouble, but if he killed me, so what? I was sick of hearing people scream in slow, agonizing pain. I am trembling inside but struggled not to show it.

Instead of physically punishing me, Father Mattheo takes me into another part of the training school, to a room that contains the small children who are considered “expendable”, those used for various rituals. “I want you to find a child that looks like you. I will make you come back for two others if you don’t do this,” he says.

I go into the room, filled with children in cages, and after looking, I see a three-year-old with brown, curly hair and brown eyes. While not exactly like me, she is the closest I can find. I take her out of the cage, talking softly to her, and lead the terrified little girl by the hand down the hall. She and I follow Mattheo down a corridor into another hall. In the center of the hall is a large, round pit covered with a metal cover. I feel sick inside. I know what lives down deep inside that pit and I taste the bile in my throat that rises.

“Take the cover off,” Mattheo orders me.

This time, I obey. I slide the cover off. I can hear the noises from below: first a loud rustling noise, then a chorus of squeaks that send chills down my spine. Down below, the pit is filled with rats specially bred for largeness of size; rats that are hungry. Rats are one of my prime terrors, instilled in me as an infant when Father Carlotti had held a rat over me, and let it bite my hand. This terror was reinforced over the past three years with upsetting scenarios.

I hate rats, and this noise fills me with an unspeakable horror.

“Throw the child down into the pit,” Mattheo tells me.

I hesitate, but I know that if I do not, I will be lowered into the pit and the rats allowed to scramble over my feet and bite at me. I can’t endure that thought. I push her in and she falls in screaming. Her screams continue as the rats scramble and crawl over her. The screams go on and on, until suddenly they are silenced.

"This is what happens to little children who disobey" Mattheo says sternly. "She paid the price for your sin today; but if you sin again, you will have to go into the pit yourself."

I feel shaken with horror and guilt at the thought that my disobedience has caused another child to die in such a terrible way. I feel despair as I realize that I would not say "No" to skinning someone again. My lesson has been learned: there are worse horrors than hearing someone scream.

What made the lesson especially difficult is that Mattheo was a father figure to me, the person I loved most on earth; whose love and attention I craved. Confused, I wonder how such a loving and wise man could force me to do an act like this. He lets me go, and I am given two hours off to think things over, before returning to my regular training schedule.

That night, I have nightmares about squeaking rats trying to climb up out of a pit, rats that want to bite me. I wake up screaming, and Mary Margaret, who sleeps in my dorm room, comes into my bed and holds me for a while.

Learning to Play Chess

I am five years old, sitting in a large, cushioned chair. Across from me sits one of the three fathers I love best, Father Jerome. He is teaching me how to play a special form of chess. While I already know how to play a basic game, he, an accomplished chess master, is going to work with me on my spiritual training at this special chessboard.

First, he sets up the board, using beautiful pieces carved from pure white ivory and pure black onyx. The kings look like real kings, the queens are beautiful royal ladies in long dresses; the knights look like medieval knights, the pawns like young pages, and the rooks like hunched creatures.

Jerome warns me, "Be sure not to touch any of the pieces while we play." I am an obedient pupil and watch as he uses his mind only to move one of the black pawns forward onto the next square.

"Try to do this, but only move a white pawn. The white pieces are easier to control than the black ones," Jerome tells me. "Use your mind and think about the pawn moving where you want it to go. Be sure to only try to move it one square."

I try to move a white pawn. One budges, edging forward. Excited, I realize that I can play this game, too. Without caution, I try to move other white pieces. Suddenly, the white king, queen and knights turn around, snarling at me, and fly towards me, attacking me.

I scream as they lunge at my throat. I can feel the terrible pain of their biting and scratching me with their sharp, cold edges. I hear a command, "Stop!" from Father Jerome. The white pieces stop and go back to their places on the board.

I feel shaken and terrified. I realize that this game is dangerous. "It is very difficult to control the pieces, especially for those without much training," Father Jerome warns me. I have already experienced this fact. "Never, ever attempt to try something for which you are not spiritually prepared yet," he says. "This game is part of your mage training and will take great work, and concentration and practice to do well. One day, you will be able to control all pieces on the board, even the black ones." I listen to the rules that I will follow, in order to avoid attacks like the one I just suffered.

Jerome continues, "You are only to play for the next few years with my or another father's supervision". I readily agree, having seen what can happen if I can't control these pieces. Jerome then takes all the white pieces off of the board except for one white pawn and says "We will start here." At the end of an hour, I can move the white pawn one square in any direction, and he praises me. It has taken all of my concentration to learn to do this. I feel exhausted, physically and mentally.

When I am older, Father Jerome will teach me to play a full game. The winner can then ask the chess board a question, and the answer will light up at the end of the winner's side, in silver or gold script. This is considered a high form of mage craft which will take me many years to learn. But one day, I hope to become an ascended master like Father Jerome and playing this game is part of the training process to become one.

The German Father's House

My programming was also intended to help me infiltrate the Illuminati. My biological mother was a Jesuit whose roots were with the German Illuminati. In fact, she was the mistress of Philip Battenberg in Germany for several years. In my cover story, I was his illegitimate child. Therefore, I spent holidays and high ritual days in Germany. I rotated this role with Lizzie and two other sisters, with my mother and others in the Jesuits helping to cover for my occasional absences with plausible explanations.

The Battenbergs were cold, sadistic people and I hated going there. I was called "the bastard" by the legitimate children, who felt that I was permissible to abuse and torment, but not to actually kill. Nonetheless, I had to talk my way out of several close calls as a child.

They had a large, dank, cold basement area under their family castle that was enormous, with a large medieval looking stone altar at one end. I was forced to participate in the rituals and had been carefully coached on how to survive my visits there (and not end up being fed to these demons by the members of the family) by the fathers, prior to my visits.

I remember being very young, about age three during one visit. My biological mother was dressed in a designer gown, looking beautiful, just before a large ballroom event. She let me watch as one of the family came and opened up a huge walk-in vault containing the family jewels, using biometric security. The dark blue velvet casings covering each wall were filled with necklaces, bracelets, pendants, earrings and other jewelry made of diamonds, emeralds, rubies, sapphires, pearls and other jewels. She put on a brilliantly flashing diamond necklace and matching earrings for the event. Later, I peeked over the stone bannister leading downstairs and caught glimpses of the men and women dressed in formal wear. Ladies were in flowing dresses and men were in evening suits, while they danced to a live orchestra. The women looked like exotic butterflies as they were twirled around.

I am just a few weeks older. The night before there was a terrible ritual, and I decide to run away. I want to escape this terrible house. Since I am still quite young, my running involves fleeing into the woods that surround the German father's (Philip's) castle, running over fallen leaves, going down a stream, and then going up to the opposite shore and hiding up in a tree. I hope that the piney branches that I am sitting behind will hide me.

Within a few hours, I am missed. I can tell because I hear the sound of dogs baying and the voices of the German father's servants as they search for me. I am trembling, heart pounding. But the dogs pick up my scent, the servants find me, and they drag me back, shaking and upset at being found. I am thrown down at Battenberg's feet.

"Never, ever run away" the German father tells me in a cold, quiet tone that brooks no disobedience. "I will show you why doing this is a very bad idea."

He then takes me outside where a child my age has been tied to a tree at the edge of the woods. He takes a golden whistle hanging on a golden chain around his neck and blows an eerie pattern on it. Within a few minutes, large silver and black wolves come running up.

There is something strange about these wolves. They have red, oddly intelligent eyes.

As the German father and I stand there, he gives a signal with his hand, and the wolves bound over eagerly to the child that is tied up. They tear into the screaming child with their fangs and sharp claws. The screams continue for a time until they are silenced. The wolves continue their gruesome meal.

Afterwards, to my utter amazement, the wolves stand up on two legs, and turn into young men who salute the German father, and then walk back into the woods. "I have special guards over my property" he explains to me, "very hungry guards." I am stunned, as I contemplate the unbelievable scene I have just seen. "You are very young and foolish, so I will let this pass this time," he continues. "But should you ever try to escape again, I will call my wolves to take care of you." As I look into his eyes, I realize that *take care* really means *kill*. I never tried to run away from the castle again.

I am just a bit older, around four years old. I have been carefully tutored for the past year in etiquette and how to act like a "little lady" by a strict German tutor. Today, I am allowed to sit at the table with the German father and his guests. The plates, silverware and even the flower bowls and candle holders are of pure, softly shining gold. At this young age, I feel overwhelmed and anxious, and when reaching for my glass of milk, a glass that is made of beautiful cut crystal, I accidentally spill the milk, and the cup turns onto its side.

There is a horrified silence at the table, as all the guests turn to look at Battenberg, who is seated at the head of the table. He looks at me with rage. "If you act like a dog at my table, you will be treated as a dog!" he yells. He commands servants to come, saying "Strip her and put a collar on her!"

I am stripped naked, and a lavishly jeweled dog collar is placed around my neck. One of the servants snaps a golden, silken cord to the collar. Battenberg looks at me with angry eyes, and says, "For the rest of the evening, you will be a dog. You will stay down on your hands and feet and will be treated as you deserve."

During the rest of the dinner, I crawl on my hands and knees. "Bark like a dog!" he orders, and humiliated, I do so. I know better than to disobey him. "Beg for your food like a dog!" he orders, and I sit on my haunches and beg like a canine. He then throws me a tiny piece of bread, and his guests titter with amusement.

I feel enraged, humiliated, and shamed beyond belief, but do not dare show these emotions in front of this dangerous man. Instead, I play my role to perfection, even wagging my rear to the laughter of the guests. Maybe if I am cute enough, I will live.

After dinner, the German father gives another order. "Bring in the dogs; since she is a dog, she should spend time with her little playmates."

The dogs are brought in, and they sexually abuse me in front of the guests for their amusement. I am feeling sick and faint but cannot show that I am near collapse. Finally, finally, I am allowed to flee to my room in another part of the palace.

Later, when my mother and I are alone, I yell "I hate him! I hate him! How can you stand to be near him!" My mother holds me, and comforts me.

“You are lucky to be alive,” she tells me. “Other children your age often do not survive this type of event. The only reason Philip spared your life is that you are my daughter, and I am his current favorite mistress. He knows how much you mean to me.” I go still with the realization that I came so close to death this night.

“Never believe that you aren’t expendable, regardless of your rank or status,” she warns me. “Always act with caution around these people.” Still pouting, I agree. But while I will externally act well, internally I will continue to hate these people who have treated me so badly. This is how three-year-olds think, and I vow one day to take revenge when I am older.

A German Christmas

I am five years old. It is my turn to spend Christmas at the Battenberg palace. Lizzie and my other lookalike sisters are enjoying Christmas at the Vatican. I am outside with other children and adults. A large circle has been tramped in the deep snow, and in the center is a large deer with tan fur, and large brown eyes. The deer is trembling, its eyes wild, but it is carefully tied so that it cannot move, with gold and scarlet silken ropes.

One of the adults dressed in scarlet robes sticks the deer in the neck, and blood spatters onto the cold, white snow in a pumping fountain: the scarlet red against the white is startling, and the snow steams a little as the blood hits it. One by one, each of adults and children go forward, including me. A golden chalice has caught the deer’s blood, and we each take a drink from this cup.

Then, the deer is butchered while it is still twitching. Its heart is taken out and cut into small pieces, and we each eat one piece. As I continue watching, one young child, younger than me, is put into the deer in a baptism and rebirth ceremony, with incantations and ritual words chanted by the adults and other children throughout the ceremony. The child looks terrified and sickened by this experience, and I do not envy her the “high honor” she has been shown.

It is later in the day during the solstice, this same year. I am standing with a dozen other children indoors in a room in the German father’s castle. This room has a huge hearth, with a log burning in it that is the length and size of a man. As we stand there, a man enters the room, dressed in clothes similar to those seen at times on very old-fashioned Santa Clauses: he wears a long white robe with golden decorations, a white cap with white fur lining, a golden belt, and is carrying a large sack over his shoulder. In his hand he holds a golden scepter.

“I am Father Yule,” the white-bearded man with long silver white hair tells us. “I am able to tell which children have been good, obedient children this past year, and which have been *bad* children that don’t obey their elders.” As he slowly turns around the room and gazes at each of us, looking deep into our eyes, we tremble. None of us want to be the *bad* one, and thoughts of times I resented things my trainers asked of me flit through my mind.

Then, with a shout, Father Yule raises his scepter. A white light shoots out from it, and to my horror, one of the little boys standing near me falls down dead. “He was bad,” Father Yule proclaims. We children are all stunned and quiet, not daring to move or speak. “Who will help me put his body into the fire?” Yule asks. I didn’t want to do this, none of us do, but we also realize that not doing so would mark us as “bad”. We all quickly volunteer to help, and we all help to carry the little body and put it in the fire in the large hearth.

As the smell of roasting flesh fills the room, Father Yule then opens his sack, and gives each of us a small treat such as marzipan, for being *good*, helpful children. He then leaves, to my great relief. I realize that I never want to spend Christmas in Germany again. I suspect none of the other children want to, either. But the choice is not ours. My visits will be determined by the Jesuit trainers who fill the holiday schedules. But I also know that in three more days, I get to fly to Rome and enjoy Christmas there. The German father will be told that I am due to present in America, but Lizzie, my twin, will be filling that role.

Because the Jesuits were infiltrating the Illuminati, I had several Illuminati presentations (United States, France, Germany). My cover there was that I was the bastard daughter of Philip Battenberg. As an "Illuminati child", I had to spend time with both the French (Rothschild) family, and the German family, as well as build an identity as a skilled trainer in the United States. This ability to infiltrate them was aided by those who had gone before me: my "mother" in the United States was actually a Jesuit father. She had attained a high spiritual rank in the Illuminati. She was also the German father's mistress. Several of the U.S. trainers who worked with me (such as Timothy Brogan) were also actually Jesuit fathers. They could cover for me if I needed to be scheduled to be out of the country for a time, or if they needed to reinforce the strict barriers between my true (Jesuit) core, and the false core and parts created to be my Illuminati systems.

All the occultic societies try to infiltrate each other and learn their secrets. This is a given. What is amazing to me is the century and a half of patient work and development of impeccable identities that the Jesuits have given to their infiltration. This organization is very patient. When I first tried to leave the Illuminati in 1996, they had no idea that I was a Jesuit. Illuminati leadership wanted me not only stripped of my rank and humiliated publicly, but they wanted me killed in front of everyone. But an order from above said "No." The Jesuits didn't want me to die. I was flown to Rome for reprogramming, since at that time, much of my loyalty to Rome was still intact. But I was allowed to suffer greatly in my American, French and German presentations in order to placate the Illuminati leaders.

Chapter 6: Military and Academic Training

Starting School

I am six years old, and I and the other members of my class are excited on this very special day.

At last, we are going to give up our brown pre-school tunic and leggings that we have been wearing since we were three years old, and graduate to wearing the hooded brown robes with rope belts. These are the robes of an acolyte, the uniform that school-aged Jesuit children wear in the special school located north of Rome.

For years, as a preschooler in my little brown top and leggings, I watched the older children who went to school, grouped in classes of twelve each, when they sat in the dining facility together. They laughed and teased together, did pranks together, and were my heroes. Now, today, I get to wear the brown robe, and start attending the school myself!

At the ceremony later in the day, I and the other children getting ready to enter the school are all together, grouped by class. I am in the first class of twelve children, Dannie and Lizzie are in the second class, and I see others in the third and fourth class looking excited and happy. Father Jerome is on the platform in front of the large auditorium style room, and he calls my name. I walk towards him. He gives me a brown robe and rope belt; the brown fabric is soft in my arms and I carry it offstage. There, I take off my leggings and tunic, and put on the robe that I will be wearing for the next seven years.

One by one, the other children do the same. As we go back onto the stage, dressed in our robes, there is clapping and cheering, first from the older classes at the school, then by the fathers. The older children all look happy that we will be joining them in the school classes. Learning is very, very valued by the fathers, and this advancement to a new level of study is celebrated by all.

I feel proud in my robe, which makes me look like a miniature monk, as I go into the dining area and sit at my new table, a table that is on the side of the room where the "big kids" sit. I see all of the younger kids looking at me and my classmates with a mixture of joy and envy; they can't wait to wear a robe themselves. It represents a lot of hard work and training, to survive the programming and training of the past six years, and this robe reflects this achievement.

In this specialized school, my classmates and I will learn a large variety of subjects, with demanding standards of scholarship required. The courses will range from anatomy and physiology, to surgical and torture techniques; to ancient languages, to history, to political science, to mage craft, to sciences such as physics, and human behavior and psychology. There is also a daily gym period when we learn to climb ropes, do strengthening exercises, learn gymnastics to a more advanced level than before, and learn more advanced martial arts than we did when we were preschoolers.

Our teachers often remind us that we are receiving "the best schooling in the world" and this is believable to us, with our demanding schedule and the extremely high academic and athletic standards. I am greatly pleased to be a "big kid" at last and look affectionately at the younger preschoolers and toddlers. Later that day, I tell one of them that one day, if they are good and work hard, they, too, will be able to wear a robe like mine

Anatomy Class

I am sitting at a wooden desk in a classroom with the eleven other members of my class. I am anxious not to disappoint, so I listen carefully to the lecture delivered by one of the fathers. In front of him is a live human being, a homeless man, who looks bewildered and terrified, not understanding what is going on. I feel sorry for him but suppress the feeling and listen.

"This is the skin, and I am going to peel it away to allow you to see what it looks like underneath." We have already seen flaying at torture rituals and have already learned how to peel the skin off a human being, but now we must learn more: where the veins, arteries, nerves, bones, and ligaments for each section of the body are located, and their correct names. I know I will be tested on this later, and must memorize everything.

The father slowly peels off the skin with a razor-sharp knife; I watch his technique, how he holds the knife, the angle of his wrist and fingers. Next, he slowly peels away the various dermal layers and fat, discussing the various parts such as sweat glands and nerves, until finally he is showing the muscles and ligaments, then the bones beneath. The man has been screaming the whole time during this demonstration, until he finally faints and mercifully goes unconscious. This is also part of our training, to be able to endure hearing human pain.

The other students and I feel green by the end of this class, but we have learned to suppress, cover, and dissociate our feelings to other parts inside. While feeling a bit dazed, we go out later for lunch, followed by the daily half hour of free play. Our thoughts turn away from what we witnessed in this classroom and towards wondering who will make the most goals with a soccer ball after lunch. There is an intense competition going on between two teams composed of various classes. I look forward to seeing which team scores the highest today.

A couple of weeks later, during anatomy class, I walk in and see that there are three cadavers on tables in the middle of the room. My class is divided into three groups of four each. Each group is assigned to a cadaver in order to take turns practicing the careful peeling and dissection techniques we watched during previous classes. While learning human anatomy, we are also laying the foundation for later doing surgery, and also for performing advanced torture techniques, which we know that all members of the Torturer's Guild must master.

The fathers who teach us are very patient, realizing that it will take time for our young hands and muscles to develop the fine control required to master these techniques. At this stage, they praise us for every success, regardless of how small, and we beam at their praise, choosing not to wonder where these bodies we are dissecting came from. Instead, we focus on the positive aspects of our training; after all, it is the "best in the world" as we are told frequently. We should feel grateful, we continually remind ourselves.

During another lesson, all four classes are taken to a glass window of a large freezer for a lesson that will help us understand better how to prevent cold-related injuries when we do missions in cold climates. A homeless man is brought through the door into a freezer that we are told is at a temperature of ten degrees below zero (C). We watch closely as he shivers, and after a period of time, gets sleepy. At one point, while he is still alive, the man is taken out. Our instructor shows us the effects of severe hypothermia on his hands and feet: they have turned a dusky grey color, and he has no sensation in them. "His fingers and toes are dead, because he had insufficient protection," our teacher warns. "Always wear sufficient protective equipment when working in severe cold." This object lesson makes a deep impression on our young minds. I determine to always do equipment checks on my teammates when we do military or other training in cold climates. I don't want myself or anyone else I love to go through this.

This lesson is repeated a week later with an individual placed into an enclosed room at 49 degrees C, without water. We observe first-hand over several hours what happens when a person begins sweating and losing water and electrolytes, and does not replenish them. We all vow to always bring sufficient water and electrolytes with us when training or working in a hot climate.

The fathers who teach us realize that at age six, children are still very concrete in their thinking, and that actually seeing or experiencing these things will make much more of an impression than a lecture ever could. They are very "hands on" in their teaching methods, and these lessons were imprinted on my mind forever in the parts who attended these classes.

History and Political Classes

The Jesuits firmly believe in understanding politics, since their agents will "pull the strings" behind the scenes in numerous countries where they have both a presence and influence. This includes significant influence over leaders around the world (but not all, thankfully!). To prepare the children for future leadership roles on the world stage, they must understand the history, culture, economic and political movements within countries around the world, and the complex factors that drive the leaders of these countries.

In the early years of schooling, we not only heard lectures, but saw re-enactments of famous scenes of history, often put on by the older students as part of their own study, with help from the fathers. These scenes included scenes of key military and political leaders conducting strategic planning for major wars; the intense politics behind the scenes in the early church, both in Rome and Constantinople; the breaking apart of the Roman Empire, and the forces behind this; the feudal systems of Europe, China and Japan; the cultural and religious development of these and other countries, such as Tibet and India. We also studied factors that influence poverty and wealth; the role of tribal culture and ethnicity in the politics and distribution of wealth in various nations, and many other aspects of politics and society.

Part of our training in politics was also learning how to recognize power, such as being able to sit at a table and identify who was the most important person at the table by watching the body language of those sitting. Another skill taught was how to discover the subtle information that can help with gaining influence without appearing to do so. We also learned how to negotiate to gain concessions while leaving those conceding feeling as if they have triumphed in the negotiations. These skills will be practiced for many years, into early adulthood.

As older students, we often accompanied the fathers on political missions as part of our training. For instance, at student might be taken along for negotiations with members of a Muslim nation for oil drilling rights for a key member of the Illuminati, who the Jesuits would be representing in return for an important favor. The Jesuit father would be attended by a ten-year-old student who would stand quietly in a corner, observing, and later report everything they saw going on in the room. The student was told to appear as if they did not understand the language of the negotiators, to smile and nod stupidly if addressed, so that if the father left the room, they could listen and report what was said while they were gone.

Older students would be responsible for packing for these trips and organizing the delivery of luggage and other items. They also checked hotel or private rooms stayed in for "bugs" and bombs, since some negotiations at times occurred in less than friendly situations, and these types of things were anticipated.

I am eleven years old. Father Mattheo, Father Timothy, Father Andrew and I, along with Conner, are staying in a private suite with three rooms in a large mansion in St. Petersburg. It is cold and snowy outside in this bitterly cold Russian city.

Father Mattheo signs silently to Conner and me to do a complete sweep of the room. This is one of the skills that we must learn if we are going to go on missions in other countries. We all joked on the plane over that it is an assumption that they will try to monitor us and learn confidential information while we are in our private rooms.

Conner and I take out our equipment, and check everything in the rooms of the suite, using state-of-the-art technology. After doing the complete sweep, we both identified numerous listening devices which we then brought to the fathers and deactivated. We also found and deactivated a tiny video camera hidden within the beautiful chandelier over one of the beds. I discovered a small bomb located in one of the bathrooms, and Conner found another beneath one of the chairs. We quickly disabled them under the supervision of the fathers.

"Somebody doesn't seem to like us," Conner jokes, and we all laugh. These types of things are to be expected, but even so, the bombs were particularly unfriendly for a group that is supposedly wanting to secretly negotiate with the Vatican. This is the reason for our presence here; there will be no media coverage or publicity as these fathers, all skilled negotiators, sharpen their wits and hold their bargaining chips close to their chests in preparation for the day's meetings.

"Well, this will give them something to think about," Mattheo says. "I will also remind them of what could happen if any of us are harmed while we are here. I think they didn't believe me when I mentioned the need for cordial relations while we are here."

Later, we all walk into the conference room, unharmed and with our private conservations unheard by those we were meeting. I laugh inside to see the look of complete surprise on the faces of our hosts for the meetings. They had not counted on our technology having the capability of detecting and disabling theirs, which took away any unfair advantage they might have brought to the negotiating table. This impressed upon me that one can never be too careful when negotiating with those who are hostile.

Baby Soldiers (Military Training)

The Jesuits start the military training for their children very young, almost as soon as they can walk. Toddlers are taught to stand in a straight line for a few minutes at first, then for longer time periods. Two-year-olds are taught to do short marches together. By age three, the children can march, stand, and practice with guns. They are taught to take apart, clean, and fire small, light guns. By age four, can shoot together at a target on command.

The children are very proud of these accomplishments and I was no exception. I looked with envy at the older children, who by age six were allowed to wear real camouflage uniforms with starting ranks. We were not ranked yet, and our "uniform" consisted of small leggings and a tunic. The older children constantly told us how great it was to be in a real "unit", to do the military exercises, and told us that if we did well, one day we also could do the same.

This peer modeling was a very important factor in our early training. The older children we admired and looked up to, children that played with us at times and many of whom we loved, constantly reinforced performing well in the military training, emphasizing both how fun and how important it was. They even shared some of the pranks they played on the teen leaders with us, to our wide-eyed, admiring stares. By the time I was five, I wanted to be a "good soldier" with rank more than anything else in the world; to be like the strong, brave, talented older "brothers and sisters" who had achieved this already.

By age five, we could march, stand in formation, shoot, and even climb a small mountain with guidance. We were learning to read maps; to use equipment to communicate with each other and other teams and the adults supervising us, in preparation for the real military exercises we would be doing in a few years.

I am seven years old. I am in a hot, dry desert area that has sand everywhere., and I have a canteen of water. My eleven classmates also have water. We have been given a map of the area and terrain and have been told that within 12 hours we need to reach a certain point on the map. We have already learned to read maps and we pull out our compasses (no cheating with modern GPS allowed, the fathers want us to learn to do this the old-fashioned way first).

"I think we should go here first," I point to the left of a large hill in the distance. "That way, we will get more shade than if we try the other side or try to climb the hill."

"I agree," Conner, my second says. "We can take a rest there before we go on."

We look at the other ten. It is important to listen to input from everyone on this team, in case they see something we don't as we plan. This working together is the whole point of this exercise.

"I think it's a good plan," Mary Margaret, my third, says. The other children nod their agreement.

Because we have been doing hikes for years, we are in good condition for children our age, condition augmented by our genetics for increased muscle strength and our excellent physical health. We slog through the sand, which is harder to walk through than a harder surface would be. In spite of seeing the hill ahead, we carefully use our compasses to verify direction. We have been taught that deserts can be tricky, with mirages making objects appear in places very different than the actuality; or they can appear closer than they actually are. So instead of just our eyes, we rely on our compasses as well, checking the readings with each other.

Eventually, after several hours, we reach the hill. We are all sweating, but we have been careful to only drink small amounts of our water in sips. We still have over half a canteen full to get us through the rest of the hike. We reach the shaded side, and collapse on the sandy ground together.

"Boy, it's hot!" Timothy exclaims. "I wish I could pour this water on my head." He and the rest of us know better than to do this, but the thought is tempting.

"Hey, you complained it was cold when we did that hike in the mountain snow a few months ago," Conner teases him, referring to some training done during winter in the alps in northern Italy. "I think you want it to always be a balmy 25 degrees (Celsius)."

"Well, it will be balmy when we get home," I say, thinking of the beautiful weather in Rome this time of year, now that it is late spring.

We each eat a small biscuit that is dense with electrolytes, minerals, protein and other necessary nutrients. We were given the biscuit and put it in our pockets before we started out. Its taste is not unpleasant, and we know that we need to replace some of the salts we have been losing from sweating. This knowledge came from the desert survival training classes that we attended before attempting this hike, including a practice hike for several days with two of the fathers who were dressed in camouflage, like we were.

We learned then that if we need water, there are certain plants to look for that may grow in an area, plants that we can suck water out of, and were able to practice this under supervision. We also know to pace ourselves, and not push too hard in the heat – the reason for this rest in the shade.

After an hour, I get up and stretch. "It's time to keep going, if we want to get there in time," I say. I am leading this hike today; I am the class leader. Conner and the others have also led other hikes and missions, as training to lead others is another important skill to learn. After a quick sip of water, we all get underway, with maps in hand and our compasses ready to guide us.

I enjoyed the military training a lot. It was fun to go outdoors; to learn to purify water; to forage for food, to hike through different terrain, to read maps, to learn to read tracks and eventually to follow a track left by an adult in preparation for the more difficult training once I became older. During this time, I learned to go downhill to look for water; to tell direction by looking for moss on trees and other signs.

At times, I wished that we could do military all the time and not have to do the other training. The only parts I didn't like was having to learn to shoot people and interrogate them with torture; I wish those parts had been left out.

Climbing the Mountain and Teamwork

Each year, my classmates and I were being taught more and more difficult maneuvers, including specialized military maneuvers. We learned how to survive in all types of terrain: desert, mountains, tropical, arctic cold, and moderate climates. I learned how to pitch a tent in a short period of time; how to build a fire using any variety of fuels available; how to use chlorine tablets and filters to clean water, boiling it afterwards to prevent illness; how to identify native plants and animals, and determine which were safe to eat, and which to leave alone.

By the age of ten, I could hike many miles; could climb with a rope and mountain pick up and down a mountainside; was well-trained in the martial arts and could take down adults who were trained in these arts; and shoot well, hitting the target every time. I was also leader of my class, and as such, was responsible for leading them through the training exercises that we were expected to complete as a group. Conner was my second, and marched behind me; while Mary Margaret was my third, and marched in the rear, keeping an eye on anyone who appeared to be in trouble. I had learned over the years to completely rely on them, and they on me, and we worked well together.

I am ten years old. Our class has been told to cross a rope bridge over a high ravine. My classmates are all excellent at these things, and I do not anticipate any problems as we cross, using the two upper ropes to steady ourselves as we walk across the thick bottom. I cross first, testing the ropes and seeing what it is like. This is part of a timed exercise, with two more miles to hike before we reach bravo base, the camp where we will spend the night.

Conner follows, then one after another, they all cross except one. For some unknown reason, John is slow to start crossing. Halfway across, a breeze hits the ropes and he slips, then recovers, but he freezes in the middle of the bridge. I look at him, and realize that he has panicked. "John, come on across, it's okay," I say, in a calm, quiet voice, staring at his eyes from the edge of the gorge. "You can do it."

John is gripping the ropes with tight hands, as if for dear life. He is truly frozen, something quite unusual for this normally extremely brave brother. John looks at me with terrified eyes, and I realize that he simply cannot do what I am requesting.

"John, I am coming for you", I say, as I move onto the rope bridge. I have walked it and know that it can bear both of our weight, by its feel and the thickness of the ropes. "Keep looking at me, and don't look down," I tell him, keeping my eyes on his as I come closer. I then hook a rope to his belt, telling him, "Now, you can't fall; I've got you." I tell him, "Keep looking at me, don't look down," and I back across the rope bridge backwards, slowly, feeling for the rope with my feet, keeping my eyes on

John's the whole time. I don't want him panicking and falling, since I can't fully trust that I wouldn't fall into the steep gorge with him. I am literally willing him with my mind to take a step, to not feel afraid, using my theta ability. John takes a hesitant step forward, then another, and I breathe with relief. Finally, we are on the other side; Conner grabs me and Mary Margaret grabs John. We are both safe now.

John explains what had made him freeze: a trauma memory of being suspended over a cliff during infancy was triggered by his near fall. This kind of triggering is highly unusual because of how carefully cult children are programmed to compartmentalize their traumas to specific internal locations. I make a note to let his trainers know, since they will need to deal with this and prevent further occurrences of such bleedthrough memories emerging at the wrong time. I am shaking a bit, since what I had done was extremely dangerous. I know that my military trainers will not be happy with me when they hear about it, since we are not to risk our lives needlessly, but I don't care. I know I have done the right thing and will deal with the trainers' griping later. What is important is that John, a member of my team and my class brother, is okay. We finish hiking to the base, and I go to the company commander to debrief and tell him about John.

I am eight years old. "There will be times when during a military maneuver, in order to save the others in your unit, you will have to leave the wounded behind," bellows a military trainer. I hate hearing this, but know it is true. It isn't right to risk the others for someone who cannot keep going, when there is life-threatening danger.

A few months later, my class and I are doing another training exercise. It is in the mountains, and as we go down a steep, rocky hill, one of my classmates, Paul, slips and badly sprains his ankle. Instantly, the rules of this exercise flash through my mind: "You are all to return to base at the same time. Anyone who does not return within the time limit given will be shot." I quickly assess the sprain; Paul's ankle is badly sprained, possibly broken, on the rocks he had fallen on. "You guys keep going," Paul tells us. "Don't make yourselves late." With a heavy heart, as team leader, I make the decision. "Keep going," I tell the others, and we do.

I never see Paul again. I have to assume that as we were told, he was shot. Another boy from the second class, Mark, moves up to take Paul's place, and I grieve silently, quietly inside for a brother who I had loved. Mark is a great kid, but he is not Paul; but I cover my feelings and embrace Mark as part of our company the next day.

I am eleven years old, and my class is climbing a large mountain. We are competing with two other teams our age; the first class to climb to the top and plant their flag wins the competition and will be given two days of R&R off as a reward. My team and I badly want this R&R, and we are giving this climb all we've got. But this climb is hard! The thin mountain air makes it hard to breathe as we ascend more and more slowly towards the top. I can see the top; it is only a hundred feet away. But my team and I are so exhausted, on shaky legs, that we get onto our hands and knees, and start crawling the last part of the trip up.

I look back, and to my dismay, one of my brothers has collapsed; he is unable to even crawl any further. I go back to him, along with Conner and Mary Margaret. "What's going on?" I ask Jonah, the brother who has collapsed.

"I can't go any further," he gasps. "I can't. I'm sorry, I wanted to win." The rules of this "game" are that all members of the class must reach the top, or they will not win.

I talk softly to Mary Margaret and Conner, and together, we get on our hands and knees, and put Jonah on our backs. "We are going to win," I say, and the other two nod. "We're going to carry you up with us." Jonah tries to make us stop, but we are stubborn, and tell him to shut up and we continue towards the top together.

We three crawl with Jonah on our backs the last 100 feet up the mountain. Each foot feels like a mile, but shaky, we make it, then collapse at the top and plant the flag. Our team lets up a shout, we have won!

Later, when I debrief, the trainers in command of the exercise are not happy. "You aren't supposed to carry teammates up the way you did, that's cheating," they tell me.

"I wasn't told there was a rule against doing so," I argue back. There was indeed no rule against carrying teammates up the mountain, simply because in the past, no team has ever done this before. "I think we showed creativity and teamwork, and isn't that what you want?" I ask. "To teach us to work together to meet a goal? Well, we did; we worked together and all made the top of the mountain."

The trainers tell me to leave and confer together. Later, I am told that my team will be awarded the coveted days off, and I tell them to much rejoicing. We have a wonderful time together in a local Swiss town, sailing on the crystal clear waters of the lake and enjoying lots of good chocolate and baked goods. We congratulate each other on our achievement, then go on to our normal teasing of each other. In many ways, we do act like brothers and sisters, and enjoy this special time to just be children. It is all too easy to forget that we are still children, with the increasingly heavy demands placed on us at this time in our lives. We know that in just over a year, we will be considered adults in the Order, and soon after turning 13, we will go through a special ceremony at the end of which we will be fathers.

The fathers, while strict, also welcomed argument if it was logical and reasonable. When I and other children argued with good reasoning why a position was right, they often agreed. They were usually quite fair when a situation allowed it, and in fact, encouraged budding young leaders in their organization to think strategically and to find unusual solutions for complex or difficult problems. This, too, was part of leadership training in the Order.

Break Time and Pranks

The schooling we went through was very intense. By age 12, in addition to our extensive military training, we had the equivalent of a medical school degree, were able to perform surgery, speak numerous languages, had an encyclopedic knowledge of world history and current events, had the ability to strategize solutions for complex and politically delicate situations, and other skills. But we always looked forward to our daily break after lunch, when we were allowed to play and simply be children. We needed those breaks, and the fathers provided them as an essential way to let off steam and let go of the stress for a time.

During these breaks, soccer, Jai Alai, and other team games were very popular. If I or my classmates had a (rare) full day break, such as after a difficult mission or military exercise, we often went sailing or swimming with close classmates, or had lunch out at a local trattoria, dressed in civilian clothes instead of our usual robes or military camouflage. By age twelve, we were considered adults in the order (more on that later) and began to enjoy more adult privileges.

But we were also children; brilliant, creative children with the ability to strategize and plan, so my classmates and I enjoyed coming up with pranks. For instance, each day in the dining room, a large well-lit computerized board displayed the rank of each class, and of the members of each class, with their skills listed and ranked as well. This was motivational, since everyone wanted to have a high rank, and to help their class hold a high rank.

But on this day, my class had hacked into the computers, and laughter was heard around the room, as the board displayed the names of the fathers (trainers), with their ranking listed, and specific abilities scored, such as charisma, intelligence, and sexual performance. Everyone had fun when this happened, including the fathers who had a sense of humor and an appreciation for the skill it took to hack into the school computer systems to accomplish this.

But my class was still called in, and I was singled out, along with Conner and Mary Margaret, as probable instigators.

"You all seem to have too much free time," Mattheo tells us, hiding his smile. But I see a twinkle in his blue eyes anyway. While he has to discipline us, he has a sense of humor, and will not be too harsh. "Since you seem to be bored, I think your class should stay inside during free time for the next two weeks, and research the use of ancient Sanskrit in poetic form and what it means to you when you read the verses. I want you to also describe how they relate to today's society."

We complete this boring task as requested. But to our great amusement, we also hear the trainers laughing among themselves for weeks about the various rankings, with plenty of teasing for those ranked low in sexual performance, or sense of humor. What they don't know is that our class has previously installed a listening device in Father Carlotti's office, and we have been listening to the other fathers' conversations with this father.

In another school prank, my classmates and I went and switched out the espresso coffee grounds in the labs and school rooms with decaffeinated coffee. Most fathers drank espresso like water to keep them going during the incredibly busy days and large workloads they carried, and we noticed a distinct lag in many of them by the end of the day. Of course, they figured out what was going on, and once again, my class was put on extra work detail for a few weeks.

But even worse, they also cut my class off from all coffee for a week! This was hard on us, since the children are permitted weak coffee starting from the time we enter the school at six years old, and most of us drank quite a bit. We had major caffeine withdrawal headaches for a few days, but after a week, we were allowed our coffee again.

In yet another prank, two classmates and I hacked into the scheduling computer, and gave our class two weeks off in the schedule. Again, this was disciplined, but it was worth it since we loved outsmarting our trainers. The trainers understood the need to “let off steam” and allowed a certain amount of this, as long as we didn’t cross the line into outright disrespect or causing harm to another, which was never tolerated.

Chapter 7: Learning to Become a Mage

Jesuit children are taught to become mages and ascended masters, with their training beginning at a very early age.

I am six years old. I am entering a chamber made of stone, and lit by candles made of human fat. This is where we are taught how to be mages by Kalyx, one of our mage trainers. His white hair and piercing gray eyes were formidable, and he spoke to us in gentle tones that differed greatly from the words he was telling us.

"You must always, always recite any incantation that you do in this room with exact correctness, and with the correct enunciation, or something unfortunate will occur." His fierce eyes hold sadness for a moment.

I raise my hand, with a question. We are always encouraged to ask our trainers questions when it seems appropriate, and there is something I want to know. "What do you mean by unfortunate?" I ask, wanting to understand the consequences of an ill-said spell.

Kalyx strokes his long beard which he is allowed to grow since he is older and no longer doing physically active missions where his beard could get entangled and endanger him. All of the younger fathers are clean shaven, but secretly, I think Kalyx enjoys the wizardly image that silver white hair and beard portray to us children.

"I once mentored a child," he says softly, "who was learning a spell to become invisible. He had done the proper sacrifices, and he said the correct words, but he failed to enunciate them correctly. At the end of the spell, he put the accent on the wrong syllable!" He pauses, with a look of horror on his face.

These mages are great storytellers, and the whole class is listening, spellbound, to find out what happened to this child who made a simple, tiny error.

Kalyx continued, "Suddenly, the demon he had been summoning raised up, turned on the child, and ...ate him!" Kalyx gave a shudder of horror at the remembrance of this terrible event.

The jaws of every child in the room fall open in surprise and fear. We are all thinking in unison that we will memorize the correct enunciation of every spell that we will be expected to learn. None of us want to be eaten, and we are primed to study and memorize very well, indeed.

But children can be a bit suspicious of stories like this, without even consciously realizing it. So a few weeks later, when we are in this stone chamber with Kalyx, he tells us, "I have something to show you." His face is white and solemn.

He turns on a screen in the back of the room. "This film was shot in our facility in Poland," he tells us, and the video begins playing. It shows a young child, not much older than we are, who is doing an incantation. In the middle of the film, the child stumbles on a word. With horror, we watch as a large, dark column of smoke comes up from the ground, and strips the flesh off the bones of the child with a loud ripping sound.

We all instantly decide to memorize the spells and incantations we are given with even greater care.

It was not until I was healing as an adult, that I realized that this video could have easily been created using virtual reality or graphics. But at the time, as a child, I fully believed what it portrayed.

At first, the incantations my class was given to learn were quite simple, for things such as creating a small fire that came from our fingertips, or a bubble of blue light, that would follow us around the room, to see with. As I got older, the incantations were more complex, for things such as seeing into the past or the future; or to create invisibility. Many of the incantations involved special sacrifices, and part of the training, which included learning to read the spells in ancient languages, was to correctly identify which beings were to be called on for each spell, and their particular characteristics. It was essential to know what "gift" – the proper sacrifice – was need to invoke them, and the correct thanks to give after receiving answers to a spell. Early on, we learned to draw special circles to protect us from the being we were invoking, and staying within a special circle drawn with precision on the ground for personal safety during some incantations became second nature. We learned to use special drawing tools to draw these circles, and also learned to draw more complicated diagrams as our classes continued over the years.

There was a huge library which the mages and students (only with permission from the mage tutor) could use. When I was younger, I never went there without an adult, since there was hideous looking demons sitting at the end of various bookshelves, guarding it from unauthorized "intruders". There were many of these guardians all around the library, so there was certainly no fear that an outsider would ever get in and use these books.

As I got a bit older, a father who was mentoring me would at times ask me to go into the library and get a book for them from these specially guarded areas. The father would tell me the password to prevent being torn apart by the guardian over that part of the library, but still I trembled and hurried through the task of retrieving the book.

Some parts of the mage library were lighter, with fewer guardians, and contained literature from around the world. We were encouraged to read fairy tales, both ancient and newer, and to read them in the original languages. There were books about ancient civilizations such as Atlantis and others that had been lost years ago, with diaries of those who lived before their destruction. I loved reading these books.

Some books were very special. They were filled with beautiful pictures, and with the right incantation, the pictures would start moving and become extremely realistic-looking, just like a small movie. Other books with gilt letters would begin reading themselves out loud. The mage library was a strange and wonderful place, but one that I always entered with caution.

All children and adults within the facility attended twice daily "chapel". This started during infancy when we were carried in sitting in our little infant seats. But it was not like chapel at most schools. We had an outstanding children's and adult choir that sang praises and worship with beautiful melodies, but these praises were to Satan, not the Christian God. During chapel, we would watch or often help in the daily sacrifice on a small altar in the front.

There was also a daily sacrifice done at the beginning of the day on an altar in front of the programming labs.

During special times of the year, on the highest holy days (Yom Kippur and Passover; the Jesuits follow the Jewish calendar for their highest festivals), the rituals seemed to go on for hours and hours. When I was young, at times, it was hard to stay awake through the whole ceremony, especially after a long day of hard work at school. The voices would drone on and on during the lengthier rituals, and the words seemed to blur together. But I was warned to never, ever fall asleep, since not only discipline would occur, but I was told a demon might eat me. My classmates and I would surreptitiously poke one another to stay awake. We made it through the ceremonies, even as young children, even late at night. But some nights, it took a lot of pokes. Afterwards, we would all stumble and fall into our beds with relief, to fall deeply asleep.

The Elements

The elements (earth, air, water and fire) were involved in numerous rituals and incantations. As part of learning to control them, I had to learn various rituals and spells. For instance, earth was often represented by soil, but also by rocks. When I was eight years old, one part of my training was to be placed under a wide board the length of my body, while rocks were placed one by one on top of me. I felt as though I was being crushed and suffocated; I could barely breathe. At this point, I called out to the spirit over the element earth to rescue me, and then concentrated my mind as well. Suddenly, the rocks flew off of me, and I was able to move, push the board off and sit. Because I lived through this test, I was able to graduate to the next level in my mage training. While I never saw this myself, I had heard that some children did not pass this test and were crushed. These children were considered sacrifices to the element.

I am 11 years old. I am floating on a raft in the ocean. I can feel the hot sun beating down on me, with rays that feel hot and dry. In a cage is the live sacrifice, a baby, I have been given in order to survive this ordeal. I am thirsty, my tongue feels like sandpaper in my mouth, and I am thirsty, as I speak the incantation to draw Kraken, the keeper of the sea and one of the water element guardians, to the surface.

After what seems like hours, there is a boiling of bubbles in the water near my raft. I feel excited, but also afraid. I am not sure what will happen since elemental guardians can be a bit unpredictable. Hoping that Kraken will be in a good mood, I wait. Finally, a huge monstrous creature that looks like a giant squid, with flashing red eyes and long fangs, rises out of the water, accompanied by a whirlwind of water. It towers over me. I smell rotting flesh and seaweed in a sickening mixture.

Terrified, I scream. Then, as the monster comes closer to me, I remember the words of the ritual, and incant "Please take this sacrifice I offer as a symbol of my deep desire to serve you" in an ancient language, while I quickly open the cage. The monster pauses and opens its large mouth. Quickly, I throw the baby into its yawning black orifice. The monster sucks and drools and chews, then it deposits what looks like a large pearl on my raft. It then turns and slowly, slowly it descends into the deep water.

In spite of shaking hands, I have never paddled a raft as fast as I did now, going back towards a waiting boat that is nearby but not too near, since the others waiting are aware of how malicious and unpredictable the Kraken can be. Once I am hauled on board, I continue to shake for an hour from adrenaline and shock, glad to be alive and hoping that I will never have to meet this creature again.

Later, I take the pearl to Mattheo and Jerome.

"Hold it in your hand and ask it a question you want the answer to," Mattheo tells me.

I do so. I ask it who my worst enemy will be when I become a father. To my surprise, the pearl glows, then gives an answer. Then, the pearl slowly fades away. This answer was Kraken's return "gift" for the sacrifice I had brought it.

For fire, at the age of nine I was taken to an ancient volcano site where molten lava poured into deep crevices; after summoning a fire creature out of the lava, I gave a sacrifice. I was then able to walk over nearly molten stones. At the age of seven, I had already gone through a ceremony where I had done numerous sacrifices before being placed in a golden chair. I was then carried and placed into the midst of a fire for several minutes, then carried out. This was a "passage by fire" ritual that each of us children had to undergo and survive, as part of our training.

When learning to control air, I was taken into a desert and was taught to do rituals and sacrifices to summon up winds and then sandstorms, taking shelter in nearby caves until the storm passed. I also learned to create a thunderstorm with lightening as a young teen, as part of my mage training.

Traveling Dimensions

One part of mage and ascended master training involved learning to travel the dimensions. This began at a very early age, with the youngest children learning to travel accompanied by a father they loved to the first dimension at around age two and a half or three years The age at which a child begins travelling depends on the assessment of their readiness. This dimension looked a bit like a fantasy world, with bright-colored flowers that talked, animals that talked, and unicorns and other mythical creatures that the child could ride while exploring the dimension. But these fantastical flowers and animals had a malevolent side, as well.

I am two and a half years old. This is my second journey to the first dimension. I was able to travel there with Father Mattheo who held my hand while we traveled. He had cautioned me to always hold his hand during the journey there and back to ensure that I could find the way back to my body which was lying on a small bed in the facility.

I think this place is beautiful. I feel fascinated by its wonders. The flowers are singing, and I walk away from Mattheo in order to smell one and talk to it. I am quite a distance from him, looking at, listening to this wonderful scene.

Suddenly, the flowers are all yelling at me. They begin stabbing me with sharp, hard petals that hurt. "Bees, bees, come here!" one blue flower with big eyes cries out. I see and hear a swarm of bees start to come towards me, with a loud buzzing noise.

Terrified, I cried out "Mattheo, Mattheo, help me!"

Suddenly, Mattheo is at my side. He grabs my hand and escorts me back to the portal that we came through to enter this dimension.

"Never, ever wander off alone," he warns me. "You aren't old enough or strong enough, you don't have enough training to understand the dangers of these places" he says sternly.

He takes my hand, and we leave. I never again wander off alone, since I have experienced the unpleasant side of this dimension myself.

Later, when I am much older, I realized that Mattheo had allowed me to wander off, in order to teach me this important lesson while he was still close enough to protect me. I wandered through the first dimension during visits that occurred over the space of a year, riding on a beautiful silver pony with white ethereal wings and a long blue mane and tail, that would do my bidding if I fed it a bit of blood from a sacrifice I had done during the day.

I learned that the rulers on each dimension required a sacrifice in order to enter and leave safely. I was taught to always bring a "gift" (part of a sacrifice) when traveling. The first few visits, Mattheo had prepared my gift for me, but he expected me to bring my own "entrance and exit fees" by the fifth visit. At the young age of three, the gifts required of me, such as blood from a self-flagellation performed prior to travel, or bringing bits of a heart from an animal sacrifice, were lighter than those that would be required as I got older. I was not fully aware at this age just how dangerous travel, especially to be more advanced dimensions, would be.

When traveling, my spirit would leave my physical body, which appeared pale, cold and almost waxy, or even near death, in the room in the facility where it remained while I traveled. When I was a few years older, I would learn to monitor the bodies of those who were traveling, and to provide physical or emotional support if the traveler seemed in trouble. When I was older, I could only travel to a higher dimension, such as the 12th or 13th dimensions, by allowing my body to be subjected to extreme torture that would bring me to a near-death state. But this would be in the future. Now, I was still young, and unaware that this would be required one day.

Power battles

In the fourth dimension, there were structures that looked like large ziggurats. To go up the steps, a sacrifice had to be left on each step, or the way up would be blocked. I first went to this dimension at age seven with Mattheo.

I am seven years old. Mattheo is standing next to me on top of one of the ziggurats. As I look around in wonder, I see that there are ascended masters or their students in training, who are each standing on the top of a ziggurat. Suddenly, a bright blue light flashes out from the hands of one of the men who is in a dark blue robe. He is facing another man dressed in a dark robe with stars on it. The man he is facing also emanates a bright blue light, and the two battle for a time, until the one with stars on his robe finally concedes to the first man.

I am seeing my first power battle, one method of training that the ascended masters use to strengthen their power and to learn to withstand the pain of gaining power. It is a contest of spiritual strength and will between various masters, and also between their mentees, who also practice against one another.

“You will learn to do this soon,” Mattheo tells me. “But remember to only battle those at your level; if you should irritate a higher master, they could kill you.”

Mattheo lets me practice sending light out. My light is red (the lowest, weakest color). What surprises me is how much this hurts: it is incredibly, agonizingly painful to create this light.

I see another young apprentice who looks older than me, but his light is also red. I turn my light towards him, and he battles me, with an arrogant sneer on his face. But the expression on his face soon changes. I have a very strong theta ability for someone my age and am able to overcome the pain and wear him down, and win the battle. I send a “thanks” to the young mentee who let me practice, but he turns away.

Elated, I return from the dimension, back to the room in the facility, with Mattheo. After we rest a bit, and have something to eat and drink, he talks to me with a serious look on his face.

“Do not let this victory make you arrogant,” he cautions me. “There are many who are stronger than you. It is best to watch and learn at first, and to appear much weaker than you actually are. Try not to show your full strength, or you will attract the attention of those much older and more dangerous than the young apprentice you sparred with today.”

Through much practice over many years, at first with supervision, and eventually alone, I became able to emanate white-blue light from my hands. I became one of the stronger masters on this dimension, where I also took my own mentees. But I never battled the weak, or took advantage of those just learning, as some did. I never laughed at the wounds that some suffered while learning, because I knew how difficult – and dangerous – this all was.

Shape Shifting

I am nearly six years old and am in a stone cottage in the midst of woods with one of my spiritual mentors, Joan, another Jesuit father whose job is to teach me certain branches of mage craft.

For instance, when I was three years old, Joan gave me a white rabbit to take care of. Each day for two weeks, I brought it fresh greens and carrots, changed its water, and was allowed to play with the rabbit during free time.

At the end of two weeks, Joan came to me and said, “I want you to kill the rabbit.” I was horrified. I had bonded to this little animal friend during the time I was there. I had talked to it, held it, and felt comforted by its soft fur and wiggling nose, a kind contrast to the strict, rigid requirements of learning spells correctly. I began sobbing and clutched the rabbit to my chest.

“No, no, no!” I screamed.

Joan took up a knife, took the rabbit and me over to a table. She put the knife in my hand and guided my hands as we killed it together. I was crying the whole time.

“You have to learn to give up the things you love; this is the greatest sacrifice for the most important spells,” she told me.

I bit her; I was furious at what she had made me do.

Joan then took me over to a corner of the cottage where there was a dark, small area, possibly from an old oven. She put me in there and closed the door of bricks over it. She left me in the dark hole for 12 hours. I was shaken since I had thought she was going to leave me there forever, to die. The light in the room, even though it was evening, seemed too bright after being in the dark for so long.

While I blinked painfully, she told me, “You must never disobey me again like that, or I won’t take you out.” I never disobeyed her again.

I am six and a half years old. Joan and I have completed numerous incantations. I have gone into the woods and gathered herbs needed for various recipes, including for potent poisons as well as those used in some ancient rituals. By now, I know the herbs and roots by sight, and can gather them fairly quickly. I enjoy spending time in the woods, where the sunlight filters down, and the fresh smell of cedar and other trees is carried on the breeze.

Upon my return, Joan (who I think of privately as the “old crone” even though she is a top mage in the Order) tells me, “Today you will learn something that is more difficult than anything else you have done yet.”

Then, as I watch, she turns into a bird – a large raven – in front of me, and flies into a nearby tree. She then flies back and turns back into her human shape. I have seen things like this before, but I am still surprised and a little afraid when she tells me, “Today, you will learn to change shape.” I feel a bit wary.

Joan continues, “Changing shape is very, very painful, and I will only ask you to do so for a very short time at first. Part of your training to endure pain has been to help prepare you for doing this.” She, and all of the fathers, always try to explain what will happen before teaching us to do new things. Even so, I feel afraid. I don’t like pain, and I realize that yet another painful lesson is coming.

Together, we gather the sacrifices needed for this incantation to work. In addition to catching numerous live ravens over the past two weeks, which Joan has kept in cages outside the cottage, we also have live humans of various ages in cages. Shape shifting requires strong mage craft, and together we do the numerous sacrifices. We kill ravens, then position the humans to be sacrificed on a diagram of a raven, spreading their arms out like wings and arranging feathers from the ravens we killed on their arms and bodies. Then, on her command, I kill the humans.

Once the correct number of sacrifices are done, Joan then places feathers and blood on me, and has me recite the words of the ancient ritual, in the ancient original language of Babylon. I do so, and then feel excruciating, almost unbearable pain. I cry out from the pain, but my cry sounds like a loud "caw!" even though I still look human.

But then, slowly, feathers begin appearing, I grow smaller, and eventually I look like a small raven. My transformation has taken much longer than Joan's, but she says, "It is normal for the change to be slow at first. It will get faster and easier in the future".

The blinding pain distracts me, but Joan speaks again with a commanding voice. "Fly to the roof of the house behind us, sit there for 30 seconds, then fly back to me."

I do so, in sheer wonderment at what it feels like to fly upwards, perch on a roof, and then fly quickly down to the ground. I return, panting and almost passing out from pain at this point. Joan tells me, "Think the words of the incantation to return to human shape, while also trying to speak them. Don't worry if you sound like a raven at first, that will change."

I think and try to speak the ritual, terrified that I will be remain trapped in the painful shape forever, pain that feels as if it is killing me. My first words are weak "caws". But as I continue, gradually the feathers disappear, skin appears, and I can finish the ritual with words. I am fully human again, much to my relief, and the pain is nearly gone. Joan then has me make a sacrifice of thanks for the gift of the change and the return.

Afterwards she praises me. "It is very difficult and painful to change like this," she says. "It is a sign of your ability and discipline in learning mage craft that you can do this at your age. You are doing well, indeed."

I am glad that she is pleased but I also feel exhausted. I feel completely drained, as if I have climbed a high mountain. We go inside the cottage then, eat a light meal, and she lets me go to sleep early. The next morning, I return to the facility with Joan. "You will practice changing shape every five days, for increasing lengths of time," she says. "I will be with you while you learn."

Joan is true to her word. Once or twice each week, she takes me into the woods outside the facility, where I do the sacrifices and practice with her until I can change more quickly and keep a raven shape for a half hour at a time. This ability takes over a year to achieve.

As I grow older, Joan and other mage mentors teach me how to change into other animals: a wolf (the symbol of the Order – I change into a tawny and silver-haired wolf); and eventually, a dragon. These changes are always extremely painful, which limits how long I, or any of the other fathers, can maintain them.

I learn about tribes of people with a generational history of changing into wolves. They begin their own training extremely young and by the time they are adults, these wolf-people can maintain their shape for a full day. Nonetheless, it is painful for them, and if they try to maintain the change too long, they can become ill or even die. These tribes teach their members how to tell when they must turn back into human form.

As part of my mage training, when I am a teenager, I have to visit one of these tribes in a part of eastern Europe, live with them a week, and run in a wolf shape with them on several hunts. However, I can only maintain the wolf shape for a few hours, unlike them. I feel wary and cautious with these people. I never really trust them, but also understand that there is an ongoing relationship between our Order and theirs. This group was the one who originally taught the fathers the rituals needed to change into a wolf shape. I was taught that this was because at one time, several hundred years ago, one of the Jesuit fathers saved the life of one of their leaders, and in gratitude, he taught this skill to the father who saved him in return for the father sharing one of our secrets with him. Whether this is true, or legend, I don't know. But I did experience learning to change shape while training to become an ascended master.

When I was older, as a teen, I even enjoyed going out in a "pack" with other fathers, young and old, in wolf form. Mattheo was a beautiful silver and white wolf, while other fathers were wolves of varying size, colors and shape. The wolf was a favored shape because the wolf was considered the symbol of the Order, since we were taught that Romulus and Remus were the true founders of Rome and of the pagan rituals that the Order grew from.

Chapter 8: Learning to Become an Agent

Children in the Order are required become accomplished assassins and well-rounded agents. Our training to use every type of weapon skillfully, to kill others secretly and quietly, or even openly and violently, including in pogrom style as I grew older, was practiced frequently.

First Mission

I am three and a half years old and am an adorable waif with curly brown hair and huge, somewhat sad and wistful brown eyes. I am simply dressed in a white cotton dress with a red sash belt. My cheeks and lips have been lightly and expertly rouged by a father. I enter a lounge where soft piano music is playing and wait on a chair nearby.

After a time, the professional piano player takes a break. Another man sitting nearby goes to the piano and begins playing. He has brown hair and has been drinking a bit; he looks middle aged. As he plays, I go towards the piano, acting fascinated by the music and the man playing, as I have been taught to do. He looks up, sees me and smiles. I bat my eyes at him and listen for a time. Finally, I lisp, "I don't have a daddy. Will you be my daddy tonight?" This is a well-known code phrase used by children who are being trafficked in this wealthy part of Germany when they offer their services.

The man keeps playing but nods his head, so I know to wait. After a while, the regular piano player returns to the lounge. The man walks towards me, takes my hand, and we go to his room together. While he is undressing, I quickly put some powder from a packet into his drink while his back is turned. This powder has no taste but is a strong sedative. The man is keeping up a conversation with me in German and I give him short, childish responses. I have been carefully prepped for weeks regarding exactly what to say and not say to this man, and have practiced over and over before coming here.

As he sips his drink, he becomes sleepier. Finally, he draws me onto the bed with him and he attempts anal sex. But the sedative has taken effect, and he quickly falls asleep into a deep sleep. I then take a small white pin out of the pocket of my dress and carefully stab him in the heart with a potent, undetectable poison, as I have been taught. I wait and the man stops breathing. His body turns cold and pale.

I put my dress and other items into a small bag and retrieve a small outfit from the balcony that was placed there previously by an adult. I change into this outfit. I then walk down the hall and knock on the door of one of the rooms. A man I call "Uncle Lou" sees me, lets me in the room, and then goes into the room I was in previously to ensure that the man is dead.

"Aunt Sarah" then puts a blond wig on my head and wipes all the makeup off my face. She colors my eyebrows a lighter color and puts a prosthesis into my teeth to change the shape of my face slightly. I have already practiced all of these things over and over. "Aunt Sarah" then takes my hand. "Uncle Lou" meets us in the hall, and we all go together, a French family on vacation returning home by train. We go to the train station, the adults chatting and laughing in French, and I am a well-behaved little French girl.

Once in France, I am taken to a safe house, where Father Mattheo debriefs me on what has been my first mission. He holds me, tells me what a good girl I am, and says how proud he is of me. I feel conflicting feelings: glad that he is glad, but also, deep inside, sad and ashamed of what I have done. These feelings are buried deep inside though, and when he asks, “Are you okay?” I respond “Yes, I’m fine.”

And I am. After all, the event I want to forget, as is now easy to do, is over; the event I want to remember, being held and loved and praised, is now happening, so things do seem fine. I have learned to completely separate my feelings about doing things that I really did not want to do from the things that I did like, and will continue to do so for many, many years.

The next day, as a special treat, I am given the day off from regular training. Father Mattheo takes me out for ice cream and then we go to the beach, where I feed the gulls and enjoy the sunshine. These are the moments that I live for, and I try to forget the cost that they come at. The events of the day before are already locked away deep in a special part of my mind and cannot cloud the events of this sun-filled, joyful time with the father I love most.

When this memory first came, I wept for the little girl that I was: a child used by the adults around her to accomplish their goals. I have no idea of why this man was killed. I only did what the people who raised me, people I loved, told me I had to do. But it is terrible to think that by this age, the fathers and Mengele had already overcome the innate reluctance to kill another human being to the point that I could follow out their orders so obediently. I also had to struggle with guilt and shame. Was I just a little baby who killed, a “little killer” as Mengele so often called me? Was this what I truly was? How could I have done this so young, unless the things that the adults around me told me were true, as much as I hated what they said about me?

But then, as time went on and I processed these and other feelings, I realized that I was a little girl who was very, very controlled and abused by the adults around her. A little girl desperate for love, affection and approval, one who knew that the only way to win this love, and escape terrible punishment, was to obey the orders I was given. It makes me sad to realize that the adults around me, people who should have been loving me, playing normal games with me, reading me children’s stories and not torturing me, were unable to do so.

I had no access to normal love and affection, and instead, had learned to seek the only thing that was offered: a conditional love, the only kind of love the adults around me could offer. They could only offer me conditional love because they themselves were terrified of breaking the rules. They also had undergone their own childhood programming that made them slaves to fear, and they had passed this fear down to me through their modeling complete obedience to the demonic, their own self-punishments if they ever failed to perform, and their inability to freely love even those closest to them.

MI6

There is a house in the UK known as “Colonel Green’s House” that is run by part of MI6. While there is no official record of this house existing, and most employees of MI6 have no idea of its existence, I was told that it was founded to train children in the arts of spy craft and assassination. According to my memories, the Jesuit Order and several others groups utilize this training facility run by ‘six’ (what we call MI6) and several of their trainers. My classes and other classes from the Order, several times over our childhood, attended training at this house.

I am three years old and am standing against a wall with the other children my age. A trainer I do not know is talking. “Here, you do not have names; you are numbers. I expect you to respond immediately when I call your number.” She pins numbers on each of us. I am "38", and for the rest of my time there and subsequent times, I will no longer be "Lucia" but simply "38". The boy next to me is "39". I wonder why we can't use our names but know that I will be scolded if I ask, since this trainer doesn't seem to like questions, only unthinking obedience. I contrast this with the fathers who welcome questions as long as they are intelligent ones, and who invite debate as part of learning. This trainer at six reminds me more of Mengele whose rule at times was "obey, don't talk".

I am outside, dressed in trousers and a sweater. There are woods nearby, and my job is to track the adult who has gone into the woods and find him, as quickly as possible. I run – I am fast for my age – and follow the trail of bent grasses into the woods. I have figured out where the adult went in, but now what? As I have been taught, I look at the ground for broken twigs, for disturbed leaves, at branches for any bent or moving twigs. I think I know which way the "hare" has gone, and as a "hound" I move through the woods.

Suddenly, I come to a stream and am unsure. I look on both sides of the stream. At that moment, a bird flies out of a tree. I look up, and there in the branches is the adult. When I see him, he smiles and says, "Very good!" He holds my hand and gives me a treat, as we go back to the training center.

When I am a bit older, I learn to trail others without being seen myself, or noticed, and how to blend into any scene in a way that I become almost invisible. I learn that this is called "tailing" someone, that I am "following a tag". When I am older still, I find it a challenge, but also fun, to learn to "drop a tail" and escape from the person pursuing me. This is like playing tag, but is much, much more serious. If I fail to find someone within an allotted time, I could be severely punished or reprimanded; I have seen this happen to other children. So far, I have always found the person in the time given.

I am at a rifle range. I am four years old, back for two weeks of training at six. Like the other children around me who are also practicing with guns, I can almost always hit the bull's-eye, and the trainer praises me as she walks by. I like shooting; it's fun and I am good at it. I like the challenge of trying to hit a target that is further and further away. I aim at the cutout figures of people and can almost always hit the head or heart dead on center. Dead, indeed; this is the whole goal of my training although I often do not think of this as I practice marksmanship with guns and rifles of varying types. I know that when I am six years old, I will be given my own permanent rifle and be allowed to name it. As an older child, I called my favorite rifle "Betsy", and she never let me down. She seemed to become a part of me at times as I went on various missions.

As a teen, "Becca", a longer, newer sniper rifle became my constant companion on missions where I needed to be able to make the long shot. I would pat her and say "Good girl" when a shot was successful at a long distance.

At six, my delta programming (a complex computer system for memory storage and retrieval) was also installed into my internal landscape over several years of intermittent visits there. They had a room with moving walls (that would threaten to crush any internal parts that remembered), and another room with a crystal ball that rotated, and flashing lights, that would punish and fracture parts (that had been given a psychedelic drug) for disobedience.

When these memories first came to me, I wondered why on earth the Jesuit fathers, who are accomplished in all of these skills themselves, bothered to take us to Green House for training. But later I remembered that for certain assignments, the people paying require that the agent be a certified six graduate and they wanted to see the documentation. So, *the children are taught over several years, and gain their documentation that will allow them to take on these types of missions – and earn money for the Order.*

Learning to Take on a Pack of Dogs

Part of my training was dealing with aggressive security dogs.

I am four years old. I am standing in an enclosed yard. It is a sunny, warm day, but I am anxious because of what is about to happen.

Suddenly, at the other side of the enclosed yard, a metal gate rises. An attack-trained dog comes snarling at me through the gate, running at full speed. When the dog gets to me, it lunges for my throat. I anticipate this, since I have learned how dogs attack, so I am ready in a crouch. I grab the dog by the neck with both hands, flip it on to the ground, place one foot on its right back leg to pin it to the ground, and twist its neck to break it. I get bitten as I twist, but that doesn't bother me; a bite is better than being killed.

I am shaking due to adrenaline. I know that if I had hesitated or made a mistake, I could have been badly hurt.

Father Mattheo and Father Carlotti both come over to me; they have been carefully watching this exercise to see how I do, and also to intervene if a mishap occurs.

"You did very well," Mattheo tells me.

"You were quick and sure," Carlotti enthuses, beaming proudly.

"Let me look at your bite," Mattheo says. The bite is not deep, and both fathers walk me to the medical treatment room. There, the wound is quickly healed with state-of-the art technology. The wound closes, with no scarring in the layers of the muscle or skin.

Afterwards, I go with the fathers to have a cup of coffee with lots of cream and a bit of sugar added.

"I liked how quick your reaction time was when you flipped the dog," Mattheo tells me. "I am very happy with how you did. But you grabbed the dog a little too low – that's why you got bitten. Next time, grab it higher up; it will be less likely to get a bite in if you do that."

"I agree," Carlotti says. "You did very well overall, but you just grabbed the dog a little too low and exposed your arm. Think about keeping your arm out of the way next time."

The fathers always combine praise with suggestions for improvement. Also, when a new skill is executed sufficiently well, there is always a reward, such as coffee. The greatest reward is not the coffee, though. It is the extra time I get to spend with two of the fathers I love most. I get to talk with them not just about the training exercise, but after reviewing the exercise, about other topics, for a full extra half hour that day.

As I get older, this exercise becomes much harder.

I am nine years old. The fathers have released a pack of four dogs at one time into the enclosure. These are full-grown Rottweilers, and much larger than those I had to kill when I was younger. I immediately take down the leader of the pack, as I have been taught. As I am now larger and stronger, I no longer need to try to pin the dog on the ground to be able to break its neck; I twist its neck while it is still in the air, and throw its body at the second dog (the dog next in the pack hierarchy to the alpha) which I had identified as soon as they had come through the gate. This makes the dogs pause for a moment. I grab and flip the second dog, breaking its neck at the same time, then again, I throw its body at the third dog. At this point, the third and fourth dogs look wary. I approach the third dog which is growling with its hackles up. Unhesitant and expertly, I grab it behind the ears, then twist its neck and throw the body at the remaining dog, which backs away from me and growls. Finally, I kill the last dog.

Afterwards, Father Carlotti and Father Timothy enter the enclosure and walk towards me.

"Very good, very good indeed," says Carlotti.

"You have learned very well," Timothy says. "I think you have earned a nice lunch."

The fathers help me lift the bodies of the dead dogs and place them in a special container for disposal. We walk into the facility, change into civilian clothes, and meet at a tunnel beneath the facility where a dark blue car is parked. Soon, we are all seated at a patio table outside a trattoria nearby to have a nice lunch. This is how they show their pleasure in me; they are beginning to treat me more as a peer and less like a small child in these small ways. To an outsider, of course, and I look like a young child going out for a meal with a parent and relative. As always, I treasure this special time given to me as a reward for doing well during an exercise.

Learning to kill dogs trained for military or security use is commonly a basic part of training for children in many occult societies and government agencies, including the Jesuit Order. I describe the training here in barehanded methods, but I was also taught to use many other methods, such as knives and poisoned bait. In the Order, when the children first start practicing barehanded kills of real dogs, to keep things within the child's physical capacity, small but aggressive dogs are used. These are typically puppies around 10 months old from breeds known for aggression and strong bites, such as German Shepherds, Dobermans and so on, who have been trained to lunge at and attack any child in that enclosure. While these dogs are small, to the four-year-old who believes that the dog will tear her apart if she makes a mistake, the dog does indeed seem the size of a massively huge dog.

The Fathers always pair achievements with reward. For the rest of my life, I will associate sitting and having a cup of coffee, and simply chatting, with love and reward, a sense of being valued and of a job well done. When I am much, much older, after a busy day in the programming labs, I will look forward to having a quick cup of coffee with my twin sister or brother, or with an older, beloved student that I am mentoring.

Sex Parties

I am four years old. My twin sister, Elizabeth, and I are naked, covered only with dark blue velvet cloaks. Around our necks are jeweled collars, and we are being led in on a lease as if we are a pair of dogs by one of the fathers. Once inside the huge room which is filled with adults in various states of dress and undress, many with wine or cocktail glasses in the hand, we wait.

There is a large raised pedestal in the middle of the room. It is about four feet by four feet, made of granite, with small steps in the back. Liz and I watch as one by one, young children are led up to the pedestal. They must stand, naked, while adults in the room "bid" for the chance to have sexual activities with each child for the night. The trainers discuss the sexual training that each child has, and bids are made with small, hand-held fans encrusted with jewels, scarlet and blue patterns, and gold leaf. Winners of each bid come up to the platform to collect their prize for the night.

Liz and I are two of the lucky ones. We each have a special temporary tattoo that lets those bidding know that we cannot be killed, although we can be used for anything else. This tattoo is a reminder that if we are killed, the person who killed us will suffer severe consequences, due to our "belonging" to an extremely influential person who wants us kept alive. We are on "loan" for the night, supposedly by the

German father over the Illuminati, and we are supposedly his bastard children who have other skills that make him want us alive.

At some point, Liz and I are taken and led by our leashes onto the pedestal. I feel ashamed and embarrassed to be on display, naked, before a roomful of people, but have learned to hide this. I smile and look excited and coquettish at this “privilege”. An individual can bid for one, or both of us. This night, two separate people bid for us. The one who bids and wins me is an older woman who is dressed only in a necklace, bracelets and earrings made of diamonds. The diamonds sparkle in the dim lights as I go to her. She does not tell me her name, but it is obvious that she is wealthy and powerful, not only from her jewels, but her body language and speech.

“What can you do, little girl?” she asks. While the trainer has already discussed my skills, she wants to hear it from me; maybe this is some type of test, or maybe she wants to humiliate me further.

“What do you like?” I reply, as I have been coached by my trainers.

She smiles and describes her favorite extremely sadistic activities. Her teeth are white and gleaming as she smiles. With dismay, I realize that those same teeth will be used soon to bite me in extremely sensitive, private areas. I tremble slightly, knowing that this is what she wants to see, but my reaction is not completely acting. I am sorry a woman bid because they can be some of the cruelest, most sadistic abusers. It is almost as if they have spent years devising ways to give “payback” for their own early sexual abuse but with interest. I have always wondered why they seem to be most vicious to little girls, wondered whether this is working out their own childhood abuse on a child that reminds them of themselves, but I never voice this out loud to a client. I do voice these thoughts with the fathers during debriefing afterwards.

I perform well. I let the sadistic woman have her way with me for hours. She seems very inventive, and I feel worn out emotionally and physically by the early morning. I am also sore everywhere. I have screamed appropriately, sensing that this is what this woman wants to hear as she abuses me. Finally, finally she herself is tired and falls asleep. Quietly, I get up and look for my twin. I worry about her in situations like this, as I know she worries about me. Tattoo or no tattoo, there is always the concern that a client might get carried away and go too far; many enjoy abusing children to death. But to my great relief, I see her sitting in a corner of the room, half asleep.

The father who brought us in, who is thought of in the German Illuminati as one of their trainers, but is actually a Jesuit father, sees that we are done with our clients. He brings my sister and me our cloaks. We are grateful to be covered, that the night is almost over, and leave with him. Outside, he takes us into a waiting van, unsnaps our leashes, and talks to my sister and me.

“You did very well,” Father Carlotti starts. “You both performed perfectly with the clients.”

I then realize that like me, he also had concerns, and was monitoring both of us and our clients closely during the night in hopes to intervene in time if something life-threatening seemed to be imminent.

Carlotti asks, “What did you learn while you were there?” He is asking us for intel, prompting us to report the conversations among adults in the room that we were listening to throughout the night, adults who did not suspect that four-year-old children were capable of being agents with photographic memories who would report any information discussed by them while in a drunken state. We give him the information he requests.

Once we are in a safe house not too far away, one owned by the Order, Lizzie and I are given baths, and wash off the body fluids that our clients left with us. We are also given medications to help prevent disease. Father Carlotti inspects us carefully to ensure that there is no significant harm. He provides healing technology for a rectal laceration that I have, and a gash in my twin's arm inflicted by her client, a male, biting her.

"Human bites are the worst," he mutters, as he cleans out the bite with a special formula, applying healing so that no scar is left. He then says to both of us, "I am so proud of you. I love you so much."

Lizzie and I then go to sleep in soft, warm beds that are side-by-side. I go to sleep holding my sister's hand.

"I love you, Lizzie" I tell her.

"I love you, Luce", she answers, and then we sleep for hours. There will be no training routine tomorrow; we are given a day off to spend with each other and one of the fathers. They understand how difficult nights like the previous one can be on very young children and give us this small respite. Of course, the day after our rest, we go back to our normal routine.

Of course, Lizzie and I told ourselves that we were two of the "lucky ones" with the special tattoo. We had seen and heard far too many children who were called expendable by the adults around us die slow, terrible deaths at these parties. Secretly, deep inside, however, I wonder if the children who died, who no longer have to experience any more pain, were the lucky ones. I can't say this to Lizzie, or she will be forced to let the fathers know, and this will be emotionally painful for her. So I keep silent.

All children in the Jesuit Order are trafficked,, but we did not define it that way. Attending and being abused at these types of parties held by the extremely wealthy in Europe and other countries was framed as doing a "mission", one that involved a specific set of skills, skills that could "help the Order." What we did was not defined as being abused, but as participating in a potentially dangerous activity. But all missions were dangerous to some extent. We were allowed to be "real agents" according to the fathers, and they were using our deep desire to do great things for the Order, when we were put in these situations.

But the reality is that my twin sister and I, and all of the other children I grew up with, were being terribly sexually abused and trafficked. The fathers who forced us to do this had been subjected to non-stop sexual abuse as children themselves. They did not realize how monstrous what they were asking us to do was; after all, they had to do it when they were young as well.

But the terror, anguish, sadness, grief and sense of betrayal, along with deep rage at the father who led my sister and me into this potentially life-threatening situation, risking our lives for the sake of gaining useful information, came forward as I processed this memory.

Early Testing

Starting at a very young age, I learned how to do various missions, practicing extensively within first the facility, and later on the streets of Rome. Even as a toddler, I would be taken into a room where there were various adults talking. Later, I would be asked by a father questions such as "How many people were in the room?" "How were they dressed?" "Who had the nicest clothes?" "Who spoke the most?" This was very early training for debriefing after a mission, when I would be required to remember even the most minute details and share them concisely and clearly with the person I was to report to after a mission.

I also had to practice completely forgetting a mission after it was over, in order to maintain a high level of security around these missions, as needed. Parts who had memories of the mission had to give their memories to our security storage system within delta system which enabled them to completely forget that an event had occurred. We were not required to forget all missions, but had to be able to do so for particular missions when ordered to.

I am three years old. I have just seen an adult stabbed in front of me by Father Mattheo. Afterwards, I help him put the body into a bag and clean up the room, wiping it down quickly and carefully with a special solution that destroys blood cells or body fluids. We are dressed in special gear, with nets over our hair, gloves, disposable booties and aprons. Looking like fugitives from an operating room in our gear, we completely clean the room, put the body on a trolley and wheel it into a cold room for later dissection by one of the classes.

We then take our protective clothing off, dispose of it in a trash bag, and place the bag into a chute that goes to an incinerator. Mattheo takes me into a white room next door. He gives an amnesia code, awaits, then asks, "Do you remember what happened in the other room?"

He looks intently at me, and I tremble. I remember seeing Mattheo kill the man, and our cleaning. The memory is fuzzy, but still there.

"I...I...I don't know," I say, hesitating to answer because I don't want to anger Mattheo.

"What don't you know?" he asks in a stern but quiet tone. I realize he is angry. Mattheo does not put up with equivocating, and I realize to my dismay that I must tell the truth.

"I remember some," I say.

"Tell me exactly what you remember," he responds. This is an order, and I must obey.

So, I tell him about seeing him stab the man, and our cleaning up afterwards.

"Don't you know that you MUST forget?" Mattheo says. His tone is urgent. He then takes a gun out and points it at my temple. "If you don't learn to forget, I will have to shoot you. I can't let you be a security risk, no matter how much I love you. Now, forget!"

He gives the command. I sweat and try my best to give the memory away to Secundus, one of my main delta controllers, for memory storage. If I don't succeed, I will die, I know it. I have heard that Mattheo shot another child in a previous class who could not learn to forget on command by a certain age – that child was never seen again - and I am at that age.

"Do you remember what happened in the other room a few minutes ago?" Mattheo asks me. I blink and look at him, bewildered. What other room? What is he talking about?

I am wearing special equipment to monitor my physical responses and brain activity. "What room?" I ask. Mattheo looks at the monitors and smiles, looking relieved.

"What is the last thing you remember?" he asks me.

"I remember going for ice cream with you last weekend," I tell him. He smiles again, and says, "Today, I will take you out for ice cream again." He takes the equipment off, and as he promised, I get to enjoy some delicious gelato, one of my favorite treats, with him, the father I love most. I have no idea that he has just threatened my life an hour before and I enjoy the warm sunshine and the soft breeze as we walk down the street during a beautiful Rome spring day.

I am four years old. I have been told to go into a room to stab an adult who is sitting tied to a chair (a homeless man who was used for this training) in the heart, and then to go to a sink, wash the knife off, change my clothes, and go into another room and sit down.

I obey my instructions perfectly. I stab the adult, who screams in terror when seeing a knife-wielding child come near him and also during the stabbing. Blood trickles from the knife wound. Carefully, I carry the knife to a sink in the corner of the room, wash it with antiseptic soap, and then place the knife into a small carrier. I pick the carrier up, walk out of the room, and enter another room through a door. I place the carrier on a white table in the center of the room, then sit in a white chair. The room is completely white: white walls, white floors, white windows; all is white here, the color of amnesia, forgetfulness and comfort. I hear a command given to forget what has just occurred on a large monitor screen inside the room, along with several visual codes that reinforce this command. The codes to bring out Lucia, my cult host, are then given in the same way.

Father Carlotti, one of the fathers I love, comes into the room. “Lucia, how are you?” he asks.

“Fine,” I answer. I am fine, since as Lucia, my cult host, I have already forgotten what has just happened. I was not “out” for the actual stabbing, and so have no memory of what had just occurred. Looking intently at my face and eyes, Carlotti nods. He can tell by my body language, posture, speech, pupils and breathing that yes, I truly don’t remember.

“Can I speak with Axle?” he asks. Axle, the part in me that did the stabbing, comes out. Axle likes to stab with knives and axes and has learned the art of killing using many different weapons. Carlotti places special monitoring equipment on my chest and head.

“Axle, what just happened in the other room?” Carlotti asks.

“What other room?” Axle asks. Like Lucia, he has no memory of the previous event; his memory has already been sent to delta system. Carlotti checks the monitoring equipment and nods. The brainwave activity indicates no response to the question other than would be normal; if the trauma was remembered, there would be a sharp spike in several physical and other parameters, including increased brainwave activity in certain areas of the brain.

“Do you remember anything happening today?” Carlotti continues assessing for amnesia, or its lack.

“I went to lunch, but that was a week ago,” Axle responds, referring to a reward lunch of his favorite foods at a local trattoria with Father Jerome. “Why are you asking?” Axle looks slightly bewildered and suspicious but has no idea of why he is being interrogated. He has passed the test. Carlotti takes the equipment off, and takes Axle out for lunch again, since he has performed well and forgotten the things he is supposed to.

Axle and other parts have learned by age four to completely forget. Numerous scenarios, carefully designed by the fathers, have taught them how important amnesia is not just to security and protecting the fathers who they loved, but for survival itself.

Maintaining complete amnesia for missions is critical for maintaining security and secrecy for this occultic organization involved in criminal activities. The fathers bond closely to the children they love, but they cannot allow any child that cannot forget when *told to, to live. I felt heartbroken when the memory of Mattheo threatening my life came, because I felt my own terror as a child that I would die and also heartbreak that this father I loved so much was capable of killing me if I could not perform this task. I loved HIM, why couldn't he love me the same way? This is how I felt, thinking I would never threaten Mattheo's life, no matter what. The heartbreak came from realizing that while the love seemed real, it was limited by the demands of keeping the security of the organization, and of keeping the demonic beings that the fathers worshipped happy. To my great and growing grief, I realized that what I had labeled "love" as a child was indeed love, but only to a limited extent, held within certain parameters. And that my own ability to love would be used against me, without hesitation.*

Chapter 9: A Walk in the Garden

I loved the times alone that I could spend with the fathers I loved, especially Mattheo. During these times, I could ask him the questions that I had and he always gave me wise counsel, or at least understanding. This was a critical part of my training to become a father and mentor myself one day.

It is a beautiful sunny day. I am sitting on a stone bench near the wall that surrounds the monastery where I go to school. Climbing roses go up a trellis behind us, their perfume filling the air. It is springtime in Italy, and I am sitting on the bench next to Mattheo. He is in his black robe, and I am in my little brown acolyte robe. I am eight years old, and our conversation is intense.

"If we love each other, why did I have to hurt my (twin) sister Lizzie last night?" I ask. I am heart-broken. The night before, I went into Satan's room at the Vatican, a dark room that the fathers would lead me into on certain nights, then leave me alone in it until morning.

Satan had appeared in his hideous, ugly form in front of me. "Do you love me?" he asks.

I hate that question, but I respond, "Of course I do."

"Then show me," he says. I shudder internally, but completely hide my reaction. I know that "showing love" will require doing something that I especially hate.

"Go and get Elizabeth, your sister, and bring her into this room," he says. The words echo in the room. I feel cold chills of terror, afraid that one of us will die this night.

I leave the room and see Mattheo. He looks surprised that I have left the room so quickly, but then he sees my pale face and the expression in my eyes. "What happened?" he asks.

"I have to bring Lizzie here and go into the room with her," I whisper.

Mattheo turns pale, probably wondering the same thing. "I will get her, wait here," he says. In a few minutes, he returns with a frightened Lizzie.

Shaking, I take her hand and we enter the room together, hand in hand.

"Who do you love more, me or her?" Satan demands of me, pointing at my twin.

I don't know how to respond. I have been taught all my life to love and obey Satan, but...I love Lizzie deeply. She and Dannie, my other twin, are the two human beings that I trust with some of my inmost thoughts. We play together, tease each other, and I can bounce ideas with Lizzie. She is bright and intelligent, and loves sciences like I do. She, too is showing special aptitude as a trainer. She and I compare notes and try to solve problems together when we are alone together. We sometimes cuddle up together at night, even though each of us has a narrow bed in our class dormitory. Lizzie is in another class, the second class, which sleeps in the next dorm room over, but she and Dannie sometimes sneak into my bed at night, or vice versa, for a cuddle and whispered conversation before we fall asleep. While this is technically breaking the rules, it is allowed at times, since the fathers realize the need for comfort especially after particularly demanding or stressful days.

"Stressed" does not begin to describe my feelings as Satan waits for my answer. If I lie, I completely believe that he will know.

"I love you both deeply" I reply, knowing that I have to give the honest answer. "I love you even more for allowing me to have a sister like Lizzie."

Lizzie and I tremble slightly and wait for what seems a long, long, time, both of us wondering if I will have to kill her tonight. It is not unusual for Satan to demand terrible sacrifices in these late-night meetings in this awful room which I have come to dread. I have been visiting Satan in this room since I was a very young child and know from the upset expression on Mattheo's face when he brings me here that he also does not like this room no matter how much he verbalizes the "honor" to me of being chosen to visit at such a young age.

Lizzie and I wait and wait. We have to look lovingly at Satan and no longer hold hands. Showing too much affection now would be disastrous with this jealous creature. Finally, Satan speaks. "I want you to peel the skin off of your sister's upper arms and legs and offer her screams to me as a sign of your affection. This will be a sacrifice from both of you," he says. I understand that I will be allowed to apply artificial skin to keep her alive as I do this. He is not asking for her death – at least not tonight.

Lizzie and I are both relieved; she can be healed from peeling if I use the artificial skin and take her into the healing room right afterwards. I take out small golden instruments from a dark blue velvet bag, a bag containing the instruments that the Torturer's Guild has been teaching me to use correctly the past few years. I know how to peel skin off without killing the victim and am careful to go slowly and carefully with my sister. She screams because she has been told to. She does not send the pain down to her pain holders, but instead, endures the pain herself in her cult host and other presenting parts. The sound is terrible and my hands shake a little as I perform this task, but I do my best to still them. I do not want to hurt her more than I have to. With each section, I cover her with artificial skin, one of the life-saving technologies that we have developed.

After several hours, I am done. Satan smiles. I take the skin and put it on a special altar in the room and move back. He then consumes the skin, smacking his lips grotesquely.

He turns to my almost unconscious sister. "Your sister's act of love has been most delicious to me," he tells her.

I am trying not to faint, as I know what he now requires. "Thank you for your gratitude, gracious lord," I say. "I enjoy giving you these services and feel honored to be your servant this night."

Finally, finally he leaves the room, disappearing in a flash. In spite of the artificial skin, Lizzie is shivering. I run and get Mattheo, and he gently carries Lizzie into the healing technology room, where her skin is regrown. There will be no physical scars, but the emotional scars and pain of this night will last a lifetime for both my sister and me.

The next day, while walking with Mattheo in the garden, I share with him my questions about the previous night.

"Why does Satan demand such terrible things?" I ask him. Because the night before was so difficult, I have been given a half day off from school, and Mattheo is spending extra time with me. Father Carlotti is spending extra time with Lizzie, who has also been given a half day off from school. I am crying as I ask this question, because with Mattheo, I can show how I truly feel about things like this. There are some things that even he does not allow me to question or show feelings about, but asking this type of question is part of my own training, and he is my primary mentor.

Mattheo pauses and looks sad. "Sometimes, there are things that are difficult to understand," he says. I wonder if he is remembering similar things required of him when he was younger. "The more promise a person shows, the more difficult the things that are asked of him or her," he says. I realize that this man, who is a top general in the Jesuit army, has had to face this kind of trauma in his own life. "As mortals, we cannot understand everything we are asked to do," he says.

"But it's cruel! It's wrong!" I cry out. "How can this be good, or part of immortality?!?"

I am deeply questioning my training, and am on the edge of going too far, but I can't help it. I feel guilty, ashamed, and heartbroken over what I was forced to do the night before. I know without being told that had I not given the sacrifice of pain demanded the night before that my sister would have been killed to punish me. But even knowing this, my mind, spirit and emotions are rebelling against the cruelty which I cannot reconcile with obedience to the beautiful beings and the belief in ascension towards immortality that I have been indoctrinated with.

Because Mattheo is wise, he listens to my pain and waits as I pour out to him how unfair it all is. He holds me in his arms as I cry and wail. Finally, when I am quiet, he continues. "I understand how painful this is," he says. There is something in his voice and his eyes that lets me realize that he has undergone similar traumas. "Those who show the most promise, are at times asked to give the most in return." He looks sad and holds me for a while. "We as mortals cannot always understand the ways of the immortals," he continues. "There are things that I still don't understand. But I have to believe – and you also need to believe – that the sacrifice last night was for your and Liz's good; to help you both give up a bit of your mortal, fleshly desires to help you ascend."

It is not his words, but his understanding and comfort that help me the most.

I watch the bees buzzing and pollinating the flowers behind our bench. Mattheo then rises, and picks a pink rosebud, and brings it to me. He takes a pin out of a pocket in his robe and pins it to my robe above my heart. "This is what you are to me, a beautiful flower, with sweet perfume for those who love you," he says tenderly.

We go to his private office, and have a cup of tea together and talk some more about everyday things. I then go to lunch, proudly wearing the rose. I will wear it until it begins to dry out, then carefully press it between the leaves of a book.

One day, when I am a father, my symbol will be a pink rose as a reminder that I am loved. Mattheo's symbol is a red rose; Jerome's is an off-white rose, and Carlotti's is a pale, creamy yellow rose. On certain special occasions, the fathers wear their special rose pinned to their robes, and I will do the same when I am older.

As this memory illustrates, the Jesuit fathers are completely deceived. They have developed a twisted logic that justifies the cruelty and abuse that the demonic demands. They actually believe that terrible things such as this are for a "greater good." When I first had this memory, I went through horror, shame, and guilt that I actually did this to my sister, and deep rage at the fathers and at Satan for perpetuating this type of horrific abuse on small children. Lizzie and I had no one to rescue us at this age. I tried to be my sister's rescuer by saving her life, as I had been taught to do for those I love. But I was a child, and I could not rescue her, or myself, or anyone else, from the terrible acts and the destructive, false beliefs that we were indoctrinated with through scenarios like this.

I also met parts inside who completely believed what the fathers had taught them: that pain is for a "greater good"; that all of this spiritual activity that caused such emotional, spiritual and physical wounding was worth it, and was helping us to overcome our mortality. They had completely accepted the beliefs modeled to them by their caregivers, the Jesuit fathers. It took a long time, and my overcoming my own horror at realizing that they believed in abuse that would bring ascension as much, or even more strongly than I believed in Christianity. On my healing journey, this brought on many quite heated discussions inside me.

Finally, an internal helper told me, "Shut up, stop preaching, and just listen to them. Otherwise, they will hate you, because you are proving to them that all Christians are *self-righteous little prigs." This was the best advice anyone has ever given me. While uncomfortable at first, I started to shut up, stop preaching, and listen. I held hands inside, without judging, and memories began pouring out as I started to realize that their beliefs were my own beliefs; that deep down inside, without knowing it, I also had believed this same thing. It took time, questioning a lot, and learning to love these parts and forgiving myself, for the healing to proceed and for this and similar scenes to become a memory, and not an ongoing internal trauma.*

Remember the Flowers

Not all walks in the gardens with the father brought comfort. It was an essential part of my early training for parts to "remember to forget" the memories that they have been ordered to forget. This section describes another one of the many memories I have about being trained to forget.

I am about five years old. It is a slightly cloudy day, but the sun through the clouds is still bright. I love the outdoors, and always check the weather each day in hopes that my classmates and the other classes can all play outside after lunch during our free time. I love running, playing tag, soccer, and other games.

However, today, I do not get to play as I usually do. Instead, Father Mattheo comes over to me after lunch, and takes me by the hand. "We are going on a special walk today," he says. I am eager because I love having special time alone with this father outside of our 15-minute daily talks at the end of the day. Since it is late spring, there will be green grass and lots of beautiful flowers to see and smell, and birds to watch, as we walk.

We walk together down a stone-paved pathway to one of the deep fountains that pours water from its center up to the sky. I have often enjoyed sitting on the brown stone wall with flat pavements on top that surrounds the fountain in a circle, watching the water splash up and then back into the small moat of water surrounding the fountain. Mattheo and I are talking about our days. I have no idea of what is about to happen. We come to the fountain, and I look into the water. To my horror, I see the fountain moat filled with bodies – dead bodies – and each has a flower in its mouth. The bodies look like people I know, but cold, waxy, slightly blue and lifeless, staring with sightless eyes towards the sky. They bob almost silently in the water. I start to shrink away, unable to bear the sight.

"Look!" Mattheo says sharply. "I want you to see this." I look. Some of the arms on the bodies bob slowly in the soft current created by the splashing water. It is creepy beyond belief. I desperately, desperately want to look away. One of the bodies, that of a man, has a slightly open mouth and terrified eyes, as though he died screaming from terror. I see blood oozing from his mouth, slowly staining the water near his mouth red-pink.

"These are people who remembered things that they shouldn't," Mattheo tells me. "This is their judgement for their sins, to die this way. Let them be a reminder to you to never remember things that you have been told to forget."

He takes me around the water, and on the other side, I see children, including a young girl my age who looks so much like me. Like the man, her dead eyes are wide open in terror. She evidently died in great terror. Due to her likeness to me, I feel a sense of dread and horror like a chill creep up my spine. In the middle of her screaming mouth is a peony blossom, its white creamy color and beauty incongruent with the horrifying scenario I am seeing.

"Even children are punished if they remember too much," Mattheo says. "Everyone is expendable, if they remember too much, or without authorization."

iors, allowing even tiny children to watch, then do assessments and simple infant programming. As the child becomes older, they are allowed to ask questions, and then when they are yet older, they are asked questions designed to stimulate strategic thinking and planning.

By the age of eight, most children in the training facility in Rome have basic programming skills. By this age, children are allowed to begin helping to train and plan the training for an infant, carefully supervised by an adult trainer. They have already had several years of being allowed to observe, and then practice the skills and thought processes needed. Not all children will show great aptitude, though. Those who do are marked as having the potential to be head trainers one day. These children are given special intense mentoring by the facility top trainers.

By the time they are age twelve, the children with the most aptitude are highly skilled trainers. Considered an adult in the Order, they are allowed to develop training plans for the infants. When they become a father in a year and a half after coming of age, they will be assigned an infant to be bonded to them, and then each year will begin training other infants. Thus, the cycle of abuse continues with each generation, in a world where this is the "norm" for the children born and raised in the facility.

In the Order, no one has a concept of a life in which abuse and programming are not "normal". It took me many years after leaving the cult (trying several times until finally leaving permanently) to adjust to the "outside" world. I had to learn a whole new worldview, one that many parts distrusted and disbelieved deeply in at first: the possibility that life could be lived without the constant expectation of high performance, or without the shadow of constant, terrible abuse.

This adjustment was made more difficult by a world outside the facility where the majority of people I encountered did not understand – or seem to even want to understand - what I had been through. I shared just small parts of my story at churches I attended, and people acted frightened of me and avoided me. I shared small parts of my story with counselors, and they stopped answering calls to schedule an appointment; another told me that abuse like this is normal, and that it was normal to lose time (have memory gaps). I had to look for another counselor who would not try to normalize torture and amnesia, who I assumed was probably part of a cult herself.

The individuals who could listen to my story and not run were very few and far between, and often charged high fees for this listening. These were fees that were difficult to afford.

I learned to stop sharing my story at the new church I started attending, and people were not afraid of me. I learned to stop telling friends about my past, and the new friends I made did not avoid me. The outside world, the world outside the facility, by its own modeling and behavior, taught me to be silent if I wanted acceptance and to not be feared.

This rejection by those without a cult background is the reality that many survivors face. I did not have survivor friends by choice – all of the survivor friends that I made early in my healing had a mission of drawing me back to my handlers, just as I (unknowingly, but destructively all the same) had the same mission towards them. We understood and did not fear, and accepted each other, all too well, because the kind presenters in the front did not realize that we were all still cult active.

So as healing and awareness increased over time, without survivor friends, I had extremely few options for friendships outside of the facility, a facility filled with the people I loved dearly, people I had grown up with and bonded to for years. People that the cult was threatening to torture to death if I did not return to Rome.

I am grateful for the three friends that I was able to make over a period of thirty years, who were not cult members, who were not dissociative, and who helped me immensely during my own healing journey. They learned my story gradually, and I was friends with

I understand authorization: I am only allowed to remember, even in my cult host, the things I have been authorized to remember by the fathers. I am now seeing the terrible end result of going outside of authorized memories. Mattheo stoops down and looks at me at eye level. “Remember the flowers,” he tells me softly but with great authority. “Remember the flowers: what you have seen today, and never forget the flowers.” He then hands me a creamy peony, just like the one in the little girl’s mouth.

As he does so, the realization dawns that by flowers, he means the dead bodies floating in the water. Some look like fathers I love. This causes me to panic, wondering if they, too, have remembered too much on this terrible day. I return to the dining room, shaking. To my great relief, an hour later I see two of the fathers I love, fathers who resemble the dead bodies I saw in the water. They are alive.

I am shaken deeply by this experience. That night, I have screaming nightmares of dead bodies floating underwater, opening their mouths in silent screams. I wake up, sweating and shaking. Mary Beth, my third (I am first, or group leader; Conner is my second, and Mary Beth is third in rank in my class and along with Conner, is one of the children in my class I am closest to) hears my cries and climbs into bed with me. She holds me until I calm down then we both go back to sleep. She does not ask what I dreamed. I do not tell her, since we both know that our dreams are often based on traumatic experiences, of which there are all too many. I am grateful for my classmate who is closer than any sister. For the rest of my life, when I hear the phrase “remember the flowers” I will become completely amnesic to whatever I am asked to forget.

It is not until I am older, and a father myself, that I learn that the bodies in the water are actually realistic manikins, that can be used over and over again in various scenarios. Neither do I know that during this week, one by one children at a certain age go for “special walks” with the fathers they love to encounter this gruesome scene and to learn to “remember the flowers”.

This and other kinds of amnesia training are done because once the children in the Order get older, they are often sent on high-security missions that could create a security risk for the Jesuits if the parts that did the mission remember what was done, or if they disclose during interrogation by enemies. The Jesuits often used our attachment to loved ones, such as in the memory above, in order to gain the amnesia – and resulting silence – that they wanted. Even the cult host, who generally remembers most of life, will be ordered at times to completely forget an event. This is one of many methods used to ensure amnesia, and thus maintaining secrecy.

Chapter 10: Learning to Become a Trainer

I am three years old. I am proudly walking behind the fathers as they begin doing their rounds in their white lab coats, where they will do the first of their twice-daily assessments on the infants. I am being allowed to watch and learn. Mattie, one of the female trainers who at the age of 15 is extremely skilled and already considered a top trainer, places me on a high stool that enables me to look into the crib where she is doing her assessment.

"You must be very quiet and not talk while I am doing the assessment, otherwise you might distract the baby and mess up the results," she cautions me.

I silently nod my little head. Mattie approaches the infant, named Barnabas, who is four months old. The infant smiles and holds up his arms to be held. "Good, good," Mattie murmurs. This child is socializing well, and just as importantly, has learned to dissociate his fear of the trainers who bring pain, from his joy at receiving positive attention from the same trainers. A part who only views Mattie as a loving caretaker is out and greets her eagerly.

Mattie does a quick but careful head to toe assessment of his physical condition, including neurological reflexes. She checks for any signs of stress, looking at his weight, which is automatically charted by computer daily on the electronic display at the end of Barnabas's crib. "You've been eating well," she coos at the baby. It is obvious watching Mattie that she really loves this baby, and is attached to him, just as she is to the other infants in the nursery. This is a crucial aspect of a good trainer that I am absorbing by watching her interact with Barnabas; Mattie really likes this baby, and the baby knows it.

After some play time, Mattie calls out other parts in Barnabas. Today, she will be checking if the programming is intact in several systems, including the newly created internal hell system, where internal controllers with names like "Abbadon" and "Shiva" have been created through extreme trauma. "Abbadon, code 3351, come out," Mattie says, while simultaneously pushing a button that displays a unique black and white pattern of black and white squares, diamonds and half diamonds above his crib. These patterns and others are unique to the Jesuit order. I have already learned that they are never to be shared with *outsiders* or *strangers*; people who are not part of our Order.

Abbadon comes forward. Immediately, smiling Barnabas turns into an angry, hissing baby. Abbadon must guard the gates to the internal hell and has been carefully trained come out only at the appropriate codes, and face and voice recognition of a primary trainer. Mattie places a small helmet-shaped device over Abbadon's head, which will run specially designed videos of hell that shows him the importance of guarding hell to prevent chaos in the universe. Afterwards, Mattie takes the helmet off. "What do you do if a stranger tries to enter hell?" Mattie asks. Abbadon kicks his little fists and feet in an intensely violent, angry reaction, showing his intent to destroy anyone who tries to do so. "Good Abbadon, good, you want to protect your people," Mattie says. She picks him up and cuddles him, telling him he is doing good.

She conducts similar assessments of other system controllers. I watch as she gently and carefully checks that the programming is intact. If it is intact, she plays a sequence of colored lights and tones, which indicate programming integrity for that system; the tones and lights will vary for each system controller. She then gives each controller, including Abbadon, a drop of sweet water on their tongues to reward them for doing well, telling each how 'good' they are.

Later, Mattie takes me to the staff room that the trainers use to take breaks in. She gets herself a large mug of black coffee from coffee machine. “What did you learn, Luce?” she asks me. “What surprised you the most, and what did not?” Mattie is a good trainer. She has worked with me for the past few years, and I love her.

“I was surprised to see how different Barnabas looked when you called Abbadon and some of the other immortals out,” I say. “It was a little bit scary.” I have been programmed myself but have not been present before to watch another child being programmed.

“You're right, it is a real change,” she affirms. “But these changes are important; Barnabas by himself could not guard his system from outsiders,” she says. “He needs help from beings like Abbadon to have the strength to do so.” I have learned to fear and hate the evil *outsiders* and *strangers*, people whose greatest desire in life seems to be to destroy the beloved Order and those within it. I have met these *strangers* and *outsiders* in carefully planned setups and know that they like to rape and hurt little children and laugh when the children are terrified or cry out in pain. I know how important it is to protect systems from *outsiders* and see the logic of her argument based on these experiences. But my stomach still felt funny seeing a tiny face turn so quickly from smiles to rage and violence, and I hope that when I am working with someone who has this part programmed into them, that he would not turn on me.

“Could he hurt you when he gets bigger?” I ask. Mattie smiles because the trainers encourage questions from their young protégées and she is glad that I am verbalizing this fear to her. This is why I am with her today: to watch, learn and have my questions answered.

“It would be possible, except he knows that I love him, and want to help him protect his systems, too,” Mattie explains. She explains how important having a loving bond is when working with babies and children who have powerful internal protectors. “Unless he feels threatened by me or thinks I will hurt him or his parts unreasonably, he won't try to hurt me,” she says. She then explains that he will be given appropriate targets for his rage as he gets older. I assume that she means *strangers*, not understanding at this young age that she actually means sending his rage into internal self-punishment and internal programming systems which torture internal parts for any independent thought or disobedience to the Order. I am still too young to be initiated into the “divide and conquer” mentality, in which trainers teach systems to turn on one another, and direct their rage to objects than those who are actually abusing them. Today, we are sticking to the basics, and it will be several years before I learn these other things.

I cannot wait to be a trainer like Mattie and the other fathers. I look up to them so much, these people who hold me, feed me, love me, play with me, and now who are starting to teach me. I know that some of the things that they do hurt, but I have also internalized the belief that this pain is for my own good, to make me stronger and to help me ascend. The regular visits from the immortals, who let me visit the celestial realms, reinforce these beliefs. I am completely unaware that the immortals are people dressed in costume, and that the celestial realms are part of a programming studio in the labs. I am still too young to learn these secrets, but one day I will, when I am so indoctrinated that learning the truth will no longer matter, other than a vague discontent inside.

I am eight years old. I have been following Mattie, Mattheo, Jerome, Carlotti and others in the labs for years. For the first year, I mainly observed, and was allowed to help change the babies and to weigh them. These are tasks I love since I love being with the babies. I enjoy smiling at them and seeing them smile back, and having them raise their little arms up to me in a gesture begging to be held. I love holding them.

As I got older, I was allowed to do more and more. After all, the expectation is that by the time I am an adult (age 12 in the Order), I will be able to fulfill the role of a trainer. While I will continue learning for the rest of my life, I will have all of the essential skills in place within a few more years.

In order to become a trainer, I have had to study physics, physiology, biochemistry, and human psychology and behavior in my classes in the school.

I go to the labs, dressed in the typical loose scrubs that everyone working in the labs wears, including the children in training. I place my hand and eyes on the biometric security scan, and give the code verbally, which is changed daily. In the morning, Mattie told me today's code, and I know that she and other fathers have told the other children who help in the labs the code as well. I pause at the small altar at the entrance to the lab where daily sacrifices are done, and prick my finger and place a small drop of blood on it. This, or some type of sacrifice, is required when entering these labs that have a figurine of the goddess Shiva to whom the labs are dedicated, over the entrance.

As I walk into the lab, I see that a 12-year-old child is going to be assessed in what we call "tune ups": instead of new programming, this child will have his programming checked for any degradation or fading. If any is detected, he will have to have those areas reprogrammed.

I am to help with the assessment today. I place the preteen in a special chair and tighten the straps on hands, feet and body. I also lower what looks like a small helmet shaped hood over his head. Mattie is there and we start.

She turns on the equipment and a readout of his brain activity shows up on a screen above him. This readout shows how much activity is occurring in various brain areas and is much more complex and thorough than an EEG; it is more like an extremely sophisticated functional MRI, with 3D readouts in various colors of various parameters of brain activity.

As Mattie watches, I ask the child simple assessment questions to start with, such as "Are you having any nightmares?" "Are you eating well?" As questions start to go a bit deeper, she takes over. "Are you happy with your schedule right now?" she asks in a gentle voice. He responds "Yes".

She then turns to me, and says, "What do you see on the brain scans?" I have been taught to read them, and I see that there is no activity that would show unhappiness and tell her this.

She then asks the child, "Is there a father you are unhappy with?"

Suddenly, on the scan, a red area lights up in the limbic area and other brain areas associated with anger and other intense emotions. I read the scans for a while, and Mattie asks, "What do you see on the scans?"

"This question elicited increased brain activity in the emotional centers, indicating that he is probably angry with someone," I say.

Mattie calls out a part named "Mind" who is able to communicate for many parts inside and asks, "Mind, who is Daniel angry with? Can you let us know what happened?"

Mind then factually narrates the events that occurred a few days ago that had caused Daniel to become angry with one of the fathers. He felt that the father was unfair in his discipline for a small prank that Daniel had done. Mind talks about Daniel in the third person, saying "He" when referring to Daniel who is the cult host; Mind sees himself as separate from the other parts that make up Daniel.

"Thank you, Mind, for sharing this information. I will try to help Daniel, and so will Lucia," Mattie says. "You are helping us to help him, and I appreciate it." Mind is then asked to go back inside, and Mattie talks to the cult host.

"I know that you feel that Father Peter is unfair at times," she says. Daniel flushes a bit but does not disagree. She continues, "I want to help you address this by learning to communicate better with him. I think we should go together to see him and find out why he was so strict with you. If he was being unfair, I will stand up for you."

Daniel looks relieved. He knows that Mattie, and in fact, all of the trainers, never make empty promises. One of the rules of the lab is that we must try to always be honest with the people we work with. Otherwise, we cannot ask them to trust us, and an individual that does not trust will be less programmable.

Mattie then turns to me and asks another question, treating me like an adult. This is part of my learning. "How do you think we should approach Father Peter?"

"I think we should first see if there are any videos of the event, including the prank and the discipline, and review them first, to see what happened, before meeting with him," I say. "He will have his opinion of the event; Daniel has his, but the videos can provide important information."

"Good," Mattie says. "Always have as much information at hand as possible. Then what?"

"Then, I would try to find a time when Father Peter is free, and schedule time to meet with him first to discuss the incident. Then, possibly the next day, bring Daniel in, letting him know that if he feels a father is unfair, it is okay to discuss this and to try to resolve the issue."

"Good," Mattie says. "Let's go look at the videos."

We unstrap Daniel, and let him go to lunch, realizing that until we have dealt with his anger and sense of having been unfairly treated, it will be difficult to do further work with him. Part of our assessment has been of his communication skills, and ability to deal with conflict. At the age of 12, while Daniel has adult responsibilities, he may still hesitate to discuss his conflicts with an adult. Our goal is to help him navigate this and learn to do so well.

After reviewing the videos, Mattie and I both agree that Father Peter was a bit harsh the other day; perhaps he was tired, or having a bad day, but we will meet with him later in the day and discuss the incident. Fathers cannot be unfair, even when they are having bad days, or they will not gain the trust and respect of those they mentor and work with. His treatment of Daniel must be addressed and Daniel must have the support needed to share how he feels, and to resolve his feelings of anger. While the technical aspects of the equipment used in the labs are interesting, I am most interested in trying to strategize and solve the complex problems that can arise when human beings interact with each other.

I am ten years old, and Mattie comes over to me at the lab. She and I look at the computerized, real-time graphs on a monitor of one of the six-month old infants, baby Maria.

"She seems to be failing," I say with some dismay. I hate it when an infant fails to thrive which is often due to the extreme stress they are placed under with the intense programming they undergo during their first year of life. It is obvious that Maria is starting to fail. She has lost weight the past few days, is not eating normally, and in the video display I pull up, she has a sad, listless look in her eyes. She is not interacting or playing with the other babies and is slow to respond even to her trainers.

"What should we do?" Mattie asks. She wants me to share what I have learned, and to implement the plan of care that I will outline if it is correct; she will correct me if I am wrong, but this is rare by now. We almost always agree in our assessments and strategies at this point, and she is giving me more and more responsibility.

"She needs time off to rest and interaction with those she is most closely bonded to; she needs to interact with her twins, and have special nurturing by the fathers she loves most."

Mattie nods. "I agree. What else?"

"We need to monitor her very carefully these next few days. She is in a dangerous time, and we can't assume that the interventions will cause her to thrive. But our assessments need to be done carefully and surreptitiously; we can weigh her in her bed and do remote brain scans to see how she is responding. I would also give her extra time in the chairs, being held and rocked, and nursed, by her birth mother (the woman who has the role of being Maria's birthmother, since the original one died at her birth)," I say.

"I agree," Mattie says. "Note the interventions in her schedule and let's start."

I call up by voice the chart and schedule for Maria and tell the computer to cancel all training and to put in the bonding and nurturing interventions, as well as extra weighing and brain scanning for the next two days. Everything in the labs is computerized, and as I watch, Maria's schedule changes, including swapping the trainers who were working with her this week with the two fathers she is most bonded to, as well as special sessions with her birth mother. The fathers and birth mother will have their own schedules updated as well to reflect the changes and will not need to be told why. They can review Maria's chart on their mini tablets and will see that she is starting to fail, and will understand. This is considered a priority because we do not want to lose any babies, so the changes are started immediately.

I go and get Maria's twin sister and twin brother and place them in the crib with Maria. The two of them are overjoyed to be together with her, and they sit and smile at her. Maria looks at them, and her expression is a little less listless. I hope that they and the others who nurture her will bring her back to feeling better.

Later that day, Mattie sees me checking Maria's video display for the umpteenth time.

"Don't worry, she will probably be fine," she says. She sits down next to me, looks me in the eyes, and says, "I know how hard this is. I care, too. I love Maria. But we can only do our best and hope she responds. You can't will her to be better; she has to want to live."

I wonder how Mattie knows that I have been trying to theta Maria with "live!" entreaties. But this is Mattie, one of the people I am closest to on earth, i.e., one of my primary trainers. Of course, she knows what I am doing.

"You are forbidden to look at her videos or charts for the next ten hours," Mattie tells me. "Go and do something else for a while." Easier said than done, but she is trying to teach me to distance myself a bit and to not get overinvolved which is difficult.

The next morning, I see that the birthmother has put Maria in a baby sling, much as she did when Maria was younger. Maria looks happier and is even nursing a bit. I think she will get over her failure to thrive and I am glad. I know I am a bit too attached, I care too much, but I love each of the babies, and want them to do well, and to live.

It never occurs to me that years ago, a team of trainers looked at my own failure to thrive and treated me the same way. That is a distant memory buried in a tunnel deep in my own system.

These memories describe the multifaceted process of a young child being trained to be a programmer while growing up in a training facility. First, the adults model the behav-

two for years before they heard my story. Each offered me accountability and safety for a time, a gift without measure in a world that all too often seems to treat the survivor trying to break free as an adult as if their pain, grief and trauma are their fault, unbelievable, or something to be avoided knowing about. I am also grateful for the counselors (whose high fees were more than worth it), and prayer ministers who have also helped me during my healing journey. I will always be grateful for the gift that each has given me, simply by not abandoning me when I shared my pain with them.

But even then, I had to deal with the expectations of the kind helpers from a world that cannot understand what it is like to grow up in a facility. The expectation was that I would feel, "Oh, my gosh, thank you for helping me to be free," (I am grateful, but that took time) and that I would hate the evil cult. This "evil" was my brother who saved my life when we were hanging from a rope off of a mountainside when I was twelve years old, because of an equipment failure, and later shared a hot meal and conversation filled with laughter. This "evil" was my twin sister, the one I had sat with and whispered secrets to late at night, the sister who attended my wedding in France, the sister who played with me, wept with me, and comforted me growing up. This "evil" I was expected to reject so utterly was the fathers who held me, gave me a bottle as a baby, who comforted me when I cried, and who desperately tried to keep me alive in an extremely dangerous environment. This "evil" was my children, who I had nursed and loved for years. The face of this "evil" was the people I loved most on earth, and I could not agree that leaving the cult meant that I had to hate them.

They did not understand. And this made the healing journey so much, much harder. This is one reason I am sharing my story. For those that can hear it, perhaps it will help them understand better, even if a little, a world that seems to defy comprehension for those not born into it.

Chapter 11: Christmas in the Vatican

I am ten years old, and like all of the children, I have been looking forward to Christmas for weeks. Although we are undergoing occultic training and mind control, the Order still celebrates Christmas with extra time off, special treats (is there anything so wonderful as the flavor of marzipan, or of a rich fruitcake?), and best of all, we are allowed to make special presents and give them to those we love.

Of course, Christmas does not have the Christian trappings or connotations seen in most places that celebrate it. No crèches or nativity scenes here, and the carols and songs this time of year have instead have been adapted to carry occult meanings. “O come, O come, Emmanuel” our choirs sing poignantly, all the while being taught that we are waiting for our own messiah, “He Who Is To Come” who will bring peace and joy to the world. We are waiting for our world leader, and this song expresses our longing for his advent. “Joy to the World” is sung joyfully in anticipation of his birth.

I recall the first time I saw the painting, “The Light of the World”, that hangs in the Black Pope’s secret office. Painted in the mid-1800s, this enormous painting (it covers half of a wall that is fifteen feet long) shows people representing the various nations of the world, dressed surprisingly in modern dress, with hands upraised towards a blond, blue-eyed man with a charismatic gaze. This man stands at the top of the painting and receives their adoration. I have been told that this man will be born in my lifetime, and that even I could be part of bringing him into the world. All that I know is that like the other members of the Order, I look forward to his coming. When he comes, we will no longer have to be hidden behind closed doors; we and the other 12 great societies (the international occultic groups) and the Asian occultic societies, will be able to come out openly, and will be favored by him.

But that is the future, and Christmas is almost here. For months, I have been making presents for my classmates and the three fathers I love most. I have painted a picture for Danny, my brother, who loves art. I have made Lizzie a small sculpture of a house in the hills of Tuscany that she especially admired when we visited there after a training exercise. All of us children have been taught various arts and crafts as part of our development and to encourage creativity, and these gifts represent giving up precious free time to create them.

I have knit scarves for many of my classmates in their favorite colors to wear when we next have a cold weather training exercise. I have sculpted a beautiful rose for Father Jerome and tinted it with soft creams that are the colors of his rose. I have created a belt that has been tooled with engravings for Father Carlotti who I know especially likes leather. I want what I create for Mattheo to be held next to his body, so I sew a special vest in soft linen and embroider it to wear under his robe on cooler days. The embroidery is of his favorite flowers, including roses and lilies. It is so much fun to create these presents, wrap them, and then wait until Christmas day when we can give them to one another.

On Christmas day, we are all up bright and early. All the children have small boxes at the ends of their beds, and we all give cries of delight as we look in them, and take out oranges, pomegranates, dried fruit as well as nuts. We will share them with each other, because in the Order, we are taught to share with each other very young, and enjoy doing so. This is half the fun, the sharing.

I take my presents to Lizzie and Danny in their rooms. They are in a different class than mine so they sleep in their own class’ dormitory. They love their presents, and then they give me mine. Danny has sculpted a small bird out of clay that he fired, and I love it. Danny especially loves birds and spends part of his free time watching them flying. Sometimes I wonder if they represent a deep, inner desire to be free from the demands and rules of the Order, but I never ask him. Some things are better left unasked. I love the bird and give him a big hug, saying "Thank you!"

Lizzie gives me her gift. She is very good at crocheting, and has crocheted me a beautiful, jaunty little cap in my favorite colors. I give her a big hug, and then I go and get my class, and we go for a special treat in the communal dining room of hot cocoa with whipped cream and waffles with berries. I have my other presents to give the fathers in a small bag with me, but I want to give them to each when we can be alone. I want this gift-giving to be a private event, even though I share most other things with others.

Later in the afternoon, I see Mattheo and run to him. "I have something for you," I tell this father I love so much.

"Let's go to my office," he says, understanding that I want to give my gift privately. We go in, and he closes the doors so that visitors will knock before entering.

I hand him my present, and his eyes tear up. He knows the time and effort it took to design this vest, and then to embroider it. I have been working on it during part of my free time, and before falling asleep at night, for the past seven months.

"I will cherish this always," he says, and puts it on and buttons the silk buttons. I am pleased, more than I can express, as I see his pleasure in this gift.

"I have something for you," he says.

I am surprised and pleased because the fathers usually never give gifts to the children. While I am his top pupil, and he has been mentoring me for years, I am still touched that he took time from his busy schedule to find me a Christmas present. I open it: it is a beautiful painting of a spot near the mountains in northern Italy that I especially love. We conducted some of our military training there this past year, and afterwards, I spent my R&R hiking the mountains and sailing the lakes surrounded by tree-covered mountains. This painting shows Danny, Lizzie and me sailing on the lake, laughing together. I realize that he has painted this for me to remind me of this happy time.

"Thank you," I say, with tears in my eyes. "I will treasure this, too."

While I am not allowed to keep personal items in my dormitory room, other than a candle and medals won for high achievement, I will store this gift from the father I love in a special storage locker I have, with items that I will one day decorate my room with when I am a father. For once I become a father myself, I will move out of the dormitory and have a room of my own, which I can decorate with personal items. This will occur in two years, and already Mattheo is trying to provide things that will help me with the transition from communal living to privacy.

I go back to the communal dining room, where at one end stands a huge Christmas tree, decorated with garlands of popcorn, fruit, candies and candles. During the day, all of us children are allowed to pick treats off of this tree, and within 24 hours it is picked nearly clean of everything except its candles. At night, we enter in and sing together, as the lit tree glows in the darkened room. It all feels holy and reverent, and I love the smell of the pine tree which has been brought in from the mountains to the north the previous day. It reminds me of hiking in the mountains that I love so much.

After singing, we have a small service. Of course, there is the evening sacrifice, and then we return to bed, to laugh and chat and remember the fun of this day.

Over the next few days, we all have a lighter-than-normal schedule, since it is the end of the year and we are preparing for a great event that will happen soon: Epiphany.

Chapter 12: The Gift of the Magi

Epiphany, or the twelfth day of Christmas, is the day that tradition says the magi brought their gifts to the Christ child. But at the Vatican training facility, the gift that is coming has nothing to do with Christianity, and everything to do with something the fathers love most: our new batch of babies.

Over the week of January 6th, the new batch of babies is born. The fertilization and implantation of the eggs are carefully timed so that the births occur during this week. While the babies are born over the week, the evening before Epiphany, the gift of the magi, is counted as the birthday of the babies born into the group. All the fathers are involved in the births and rituals following birth. The logistics and manpower required for the births and rituals is why the births are spread out over the week, rather than all occurring on January 5th.

The fathers believe that each generation of babies are the hope of the Order, and they look forward expectantly to meeting them. For months, they have been talking to the fetuses in the womb, since the birth mothers have been brought to our facility for this purpose. The fetuses have already bonded to the fathers' voices, and they are looking forward to meeting them in person.

There is an air of rushed, yet professional, expectancy as the birth mothers are prepped for the birth, and labor is started. One by one, the babies are born in careful timing, and the three fathers that the newborn will bond to first, the fathers they will love most, are present at each infant's birth. As soon as the infant is born, the birth mother is torn in two and killed, and the terrible words "You are so evil, you killed her," are spoken to the newborn. I am allowed to watch two births, and I feel funny in my stomach when I watch the birth mothers pulled apart with a special tool. The crying, wailing infant is picked up, and the father starts to suffocate it. "Only Satan can give you life. Do you wish to live?" the father says, asking the infant psychically to give permission for a demon to enter it. Most babies fight against demons entering them, but they also want to live. Most give permission, and then the father breathes into their mouth and nostrils, and the baby continues crying. I have heard (but not personally seen yet) that occasionally an infant refuses, and it ends up dying before it has taken its first breath, suffocated because of its refusal to agree to what the father asks.

I wonder why some babies agree, and some refuse, and later, I ask this question to Mattheo. "Why do some babies refuse to take the life that Satan offers them?" I ask. "Why are they so different?"

"Because some are still clinging too much to their mortality, and would rather die than become immortal," he says. "Becoming an immortal is a gift, but not all want to receive it."

"But couldn't the baby be allowed to live, anyway?" I ask. Something about this process bothers me, and my ten-year old mind is trying to understand our ways.

"No, Luce, a baby that refuses the life that Satan offers would refuse everything it was offered later on. It would be in constant pain, and would end up dying soon anyway," Mattheo says. I wonder how he knows, and wonder if in the past, they let some of the refusing babies live.

I am bothered by the birthing ceremonies, and the terrible death of the birthmothers. It stirs up something vague and uneasy deep inside, but I have already forgotten my own similar birth. I have also had years of the fathers explaining to me why it is necessary that the birthmother dies. In spite of their explanations couched in occultic theology, it still feels wrong, deep inside.

But the next morning, the fun begins. Mattheo has assigned me to be a helper with two of the babies that he will be a primary trainer to. While I cannot be a primary trainer until I am a full father, right now I can be a helper, and I love attending these helpless, soft, red and wrinkled little babies. They spend a lot of time sleeping, but I help change them, take them to the female fathers who nurse them, and help make baby slings so that the fathers can carry the babies around as they work. These babies have had a traumatic time in the womb, and during birth, and the fathers are careful to nurture these babies and provide lots of love during the first few weeks of life. There will be training sessions started, of course; but I love simply gazing at the babies, watching them blink, squint and yawn, and place a finger inside their tiny hands. I am always surprised at how strong their grasp is, for such a tiny little being.

I help to weigh the babies and assess them; I have learned these and many other skills in the past ten years of training and can do lots of tasks and help identify any problems or unusual events that occur. These babies, born on Epiphany, really do feel like a gift, even though no magi have brought them to the labs. Instead, they have been brought in on schedule within the wombs of their unfortunate birthmothers, who will never hold or be able to speak to these precious little babies.

Because the children in the order are conceived in a laboratory, the timing of birth can be timed quite precisely, especially with drugs that can induce labor. These births are anticipated with great excitement each year, and the entire schedule for that week will be designed to assign fathers and babies to one another for the process of bonding and attachment outside the womb, to augment that which was already done while the baby was inside the birthmother. The children who are 13 and have completed the coming of age ceremony (see next chapter) are especially excited, because now they will be allowed to mentor a baby of their own and train it.

Chapter 13: Coming of Age

I am twelve years old, and I have just finished my schooling at the end of my twelfth year. I am no longer in school and am spending my days working in the programming labs, helping teach some of the younger children, and doing other tasks, while also living for several weeks in each of my hosting presentations around the world. Months pass as I work in my role as a young trainer and help to teach the younger children in their classes. I also help with planning military training exercises for the younger children, along with my classmates. We are all busy, and several months pass by quickly.

Finally, early summer comes, when I am thirteen years and a half years old. Today is a day that I have looked forward to for years: the day that I become a father in the Jesuit Order. After today, I will have traded my brown acolyte robes and rope belt for the black robes of a father. Instead of being addressed as "Luce", I will be addressed as "Father Luke", for all fathers in the order have male names, even though their birth names reflect their real gender.

The rest of my class is as excited and nervous as I am. I know that the other classes feel the same way. We wander and talk aimlessly, but mostly are quiet, waiting to go to the place where our lives will change forever.

Soon, Mattheo and the other fathers come, and signal to us that it is time to go. We get into a van and drive to the shore. We then are taken by boat to an island off the coast of Italy. This island is owned by the Order and is never visited by those outside of the Order. There is excellent security by air, land and water so intruders cannot land there; they will be stopped long before they reach its shores.

The other three classes are there, along with mine. Each class will go to a different part of the island. Our class lines up in an area that is filled with golden painted poles. On each pole is tied a human being, of varying ages, between newborn and octogenarian elderly, pregnant mothers, and whole families. There are cries and moans on the wind from the individuals who are tied up, waiting, for what, they do not know.

But I know. This is a special ceremony, a very special ritual, which each father must undergo before joining the order. At the edge of the field, I am given a golden knife, and each of my classmates is also given one. There are one thousand people tied to poles, and the field looks like a harvest crop of human beings, humans whose hair blows softly in the breeze, humans whose soft cries of bewilderment and fear are carried towards me. I hear the cries of the babies and toddlers, who dislike being tied in place. They sound fretful now, but I know that their cries will change soon. I have watched this ceremony before as a spectator sitting in a curved raised area that surrounds part of this enormous field.

There are tables with golden chalices, and as instructed, my classmates and I each pick one up. We wait. An opening chant of praise to Satan and other deities is done. This day and each of us are dedicated to them; the chant asks these beings to give us the strength to do what we must today.

Then, a golden tone sounds, and as instructed, we begin. I begin killing people, slashing their throats, trying to be quick so that their screams and hoarse cries are cut off quickly. One by one, I go down a row, killing, slashing, and collecting some of the blood in my chalice. When it is full, I go to a huge bronze bowl, and pour the blood in, where it mixes with an anti-clotting powder that is stirred by helpers who stand nearby.

I continue killing, because this sacrifice is the gift that I must give to the immortals to prove that I am ready to become a father. It is a warm day, and soon I am sweating, but I continue; a baby is quickly killed, the blood gathered; then a child, then an elderly lady. With each death, I am feeling more and more tired; I feel an exhaustion that cannot be explained by the physical act. I am feeling inside of me the weight of these deaths. I feel depressed and saddened, but I must continue.

I go down another line, and kill and collect blood from 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10 people of all ages. By now, the adults are screaming as they realize what is happening, and the infants are wailing at the top of their lungs. The toddlers are screaming as well. I am so tired. I go to a table, where I am given watered wine by one of the helpers, as I am hot, thirsty, and want my senses dulled; doing this killing is starting to feel unbearable, but I know that I must continue if I want to become a father.

Mechanically, I continue, going down another line of people: 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, collecting the blood from each. I am feeling heavy and as if a great weight is pressing me down: death has a weight, and I am feeling it. I look around, and see my classmates looking tired and haggard, just as I do. I wonder if we will all make it through.

I take another drink of the watered wine. One of the helpers, an older father, whispers encouragement to me. "You are doing well, you can do this," he says.

I go back and continue killing another line of people. This time, I kill the babies first; I can't stand to hear their screaming wails. After that, I kill the toddlers, and then the adults. 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, collecting the blood from each and pouring it into the large basin. I am starting to feel numb; it feels as if my arms, legs and heart are turning into stone. I have killed before, but never so many at one time, and my limbs feel heavier and heavier. I go back and get more watered wine; I wipe my face, neck and hands with a watered towel, wondering if I will ever feel clean again; this goes deeper than the skin.

I continue, working my way down the lines: 36, 37, 38, 39...59, collecting and pouring blood, taking rests. I am aware that the helpers there who help me wipe my face and hands, who provide me with drinks when I am thirsty, are also helping keep careful count of how many people we have each killed. I know that I must kill 84 people today; others in my class will kill either 83 or 84, but we must together kill all of the people on this field. But I am tired, so tired. I am sad, so sad. I don't want to keep going.

"Keep going," the helper whispers to me. "You don't have that many more." I look at him and wonder how he made it through his own coming of age ceremony. But this feels less like a ceremony, and more like...a killing field...this is how I think of this, secretly, inside. I am at a killing field, and I feel like a killing machine instead of a human being.

I keep going. 60, 61, 62, 63...I am now up to 80, I have slashed, stabbed and gathered blood from so many. I am splattered with blood myself. I have trouble lifting the knife, I am so weary. All I want is to lay down, and never get up again. I wonder if anyone has died from the crushing weight of so many deaths, from this act of merciless slaying of others who cannot fight back. I hate myself, utterly, and think about turning the knife on myself. I know that the helpers are there, watching carefully, monitoring us to prevent such acts. I see my "helper" coming closer to me, as if he can discern my thoughts. Sighing, I go over and take another drink of watered wine. I am a little drunk by now, but not incapacitated. I need this numbing, and once again, I take up my knife and continue. 81, collect the blood in my chalice; 82, collect the blood; 83, collect the blood, 84, collect the blood. I am done. I have finished. I have killed 84 people today, and I take my chalice and for the final time, I pour the blood into the container.

"Good, good, congratulations, Father Luke!" the helper says. I see Mattheo, Jerome, and Carlotti coming over as well to congratulate me.

But I don't care. I am filled with an utter, utter self-hatred of myself for being capable of this act. I am filled with a deep despair, and I fall down, completely spent. I can no longer stand and give in to the deep weariness and crushing sense of weight that I feel: the blood guilt of so many people killed for no reason other than this sacrifice was "demanded" by beings that I increasingly hate for these, and other demands.

But I cannot say this out loud. It would break the hearts of the fathers I love, who come over to me. "Congratulations, Father Luke!" they each say in turn. For months, I have longed to hear myself called this name; it is the culmination of 13 years of intense training and effort. But I no longer care what I am called. I just want to lay down and die.

The fathers gather around me and help me to a bench where I lay down. They seem to understand how difficult this is for me. Through half-closed eyes, I watch as my other classmates are continuing. I am the first to finish, but Conner finishes soon after, then Mary Margaret, then Timothy, and soon the others are done. Our class has completed the killings, but like me, they are all exhausted and depleted, and are laying down as well.

I know that there will be a special banquet tonight in our honor. We will be given our black robes, and for the first time each of us will wear a rose pinned to our black robes, and will be called by our father names. But I do not really care anymore. I wonder if it is worth it and decide that it is not.

I hate the name "Father Luke" deep inside beneath conscious thought, because I realize that the cost has been too high. Today, I lost an important part of myself, and the senseless killing has made me realize that I have done what I hate and abhor, but I was too frightened to say "no". I was too conditioned from a lifetime of training in obedience to say, "This is insane!", too loyal to those I love to break their hearts. But today, at the killing field, my heart has been broken, and something very important – the humanity inside – has been irrevocably broken as well. I will never forgive the people I have loved for bringing me to this point, and placing me in this unbearable situation to carry out this intolerable act.

I am thirteen years old – still a child – but I feel very old, very weary, as if the weight of the world and my own sin, is on my shoulders. Oh, I will pretend tonight that I am happy - I will smile and act accordingly. I will continue to show how proud I am of my black robes and of being a father in the Order.

But I also realize that I deeply, deeply want to become free of this. I have just become a father, and I realize that I want to leave.

I understand that a coming of age ritual described as above may seem unbelievable to some. When this memory returned, I reeled for weeks from it. The sheer amount of death, the lack of value for human life, staggered me as the feelings, the taste of watered wine in my mouth, the heat and exhaustion of that day, feeling the stickiness of blood and its itch, returned. How I wish that this was fiction, and not a memory!

However, this is indeed how the Jesuits turn a young teen into a full father: by destroying part of the child's humanity. By having them participate in something so grievous, so terrible, that creates such guilt, that the mind cannot endure it, which ensures ongoing secrecy and that the vows of silence and loyalty will never be broken.

"We know what you are, and only we can love you," as the fathers tell the child frequently when growing up, and during reprogramming as they become adults, seems all

too believable after going through this terrible ceremony. It feels very, very true that no one who has not been part of this evil could ever truly accept the child who has participated in this. It took me a very long time to realize that the God of the Bible could forgive this – even this. That I was not destined for hell because I had done this when I was still a child. But He does forgive even this, and more, because of the gift of His Son, Jesus, who bore all of this guilt on Himself when He died on the cross.

That is great love. That is great mercy, mercy beyond understanding. But it is real.

Chapter 14: Wedded to Satan

I am thirteen years old, just three months after becoming a full father. I am now called “Father Luke” by others (although in private, those closest to me still call me Luce). In public, I call Danny, Lizzie, Conner, Mary Margaret, Timothy, Andrew and others by their father names. There is another ceremony to go through today, a ceremony that I have been carefully prepared for years, by the fathers. A ceremony that I have carefully fasted and purified myself for. Today is my wedding day.

It is evening on a day when the air is warm but a soft breeze carries the smell of flowers on it. I am standing at one end of a wooded grove that has a long pathway down the middle, a pathway that is covered by a red silken carpet. On each side of the path stand men and women in their best dress. The women are dressed in top designer gowns with full skirts. Each person is carrying a lit candle in their hands. The multitude of jewels covering the women’s dresses twinkle in the candlelight.

The men are in full evening dress, including vests, top hats, bow ties and long tailed jackets. Their lit candles are reflected in the shine of their suits. These men and women are leaders of the twelve occultic societies, as well as carefully selected world leaders who have been initiated generationally into the secrets of the occult world, and they are here as honored guests at my wedding.

Today, I will marry Satan.

I am dressed in a beautiful wedding dress of purest white, and a golden circlet that rests on my head. I am wearing diamonds everywhere. They are scattered in my hair, and I wear diamond bracelets on my wrists, diamond anklets, and diamond necklaces that sparkles in the candlelight. My curly hair is gathered up, with loose tendrils falling along the sides of my face.

I am excited and nervous. I am holding a beautiful bouquet of white roses in my hands, which are tightly clenched. Up on a raised dais, I see Theo, the beautiful form of Satan, who is awaiting me. His black hair and eyes shine in the candlelight, and he is dressed in a formal black tuxedo. He glances at me, and I tremble with adoration. Maria, the part who is in love with Theo, is out. She has been prepared since earliest childhood for this ceremony and anticipates becoming his bride.

Her name, Maria, signifies her role as a spiritual being in my system. This part is a celestial mother figure whom the Order hopes will be able to achieve the highest honor a female mortal can: bearing Satan’s child. In the Order’s theology, this child will be the much longed for and hoped for “light of the world”, a world leader over the coming New World Order. Christians have dubbed him “antichrist” but this is not what the Order calls him. They call him “anointed one”.

An organ sitting on a stone platform behind me begins softly playing the strains of “Ave Maria”. This is my wedding song, and for the rest of my life, will be one of my system’s biggest triggers, a reminder of the day I became Satan’s wife.

Of course, I understand that Satan has several wives; he is a polygamist. Mary Margaret will also be wed to him, and Lizzie, and other female fathers, fathers deemed worthy of this high honor because of their participation in the coming of age ceremony, which is in essence a huge sacrifice to Satan. I also know that he weds women from various occultic groups around the world. But today, it is my day.

There have been sacrifices all day long, starting at dawn. And now I, a mere mortal, will be in a sense another sacrifice. I will join my mortal body with this being. For the oracles have foretold that the light of the world’s entrance to the mortal realms would be linked to me. How, we are not sure, but this wedding is part of the hope.

The soft strains of the organ swell, and at a measured pace, Mattheo, the father I love most, holds my arm gently and walks me down the aisle. As we pass by, the guests lining the sides of the pathway bow in honor to me. Then, we approach the dais, and Mattheo turns and stands close to it below the steps, while I slowly walk up the steps to the platform above to meet Theo.

His smile is beautiful and charming, and his eyes look like two polished onyx stones, deep and black.

He takes my hand, and I say my wedding vows to him, promising to love and serve him forever, to never forsake my love for him. I bow before him, kiss his feet, and then I turn and do a sacrifice on an altar that is near us both.

Then, Theo takes me in his arms and carries me to a large white bed that is located on the dais. It is in full view of all of the guests, and in this public place, under the watchful eyes of all, Theo rapes me, slowly and painfully, over and over again.

After a while, I pass out from the emotional, physical and spiritual pain. I go unconscious, but this is not uncommon. Human beings do not like being physically and spiritually assaulted by the demonic, and this is an extreme assault.

It is the next morning, and Mattheo gently wakes me. I have been unconscious all night. Jerome, Carlotti, Lizzie and Dannie are there with me.

“You did well,” Mattheo says. I realize that this means he is glad that I survived a ceremony that has killed others.

“I love you,” Lizzie says. I embrace her. I feel exhausted and can barely raise my head off of the bed.

“You were beautiful last night,” says Jerome.

Today, I am dressed in a silk nightgown, so someone undressed me and washed the blood off. I lost a lot of blood the night before; I can feel the special weakness that means that I am drained and anemic.

Dannie, ever thoughtful Dannie, hands me a cup of broth filled with nutrients. He smiles quietly at me, but I see the sadness that flashes for just a moment in my brother’s eyes. He knows, and I know, that I will never be quite the same again. I love him for understanding how sad this makes me, too. I smile quietly back and sip the broth. But inside, I am planning my escape, an escape that I now realize that I must make. Because last night made me realize that if I do not, the sheer evil that I have encountered could kill me – even me – strong as I am.

Ten months later, I try to escape the Order for the first time.

Afterword

This book has been about my memories from the first 13 ½ years of growing up in the Jesuit Order. It is not all my memories, but only the ones that I felt would best illustrate what it was like. The most important thing that my memories illustrate is the intentional use of attachment and bonding by the Jesuit fathers who raised me, and its impact on me over a lifetime. It is terrible, indeed, when a young child who has no other alternative for escape is forced to bond to abusers who themselves were raised in an evil environment. For the child will bond in order to survive. My hope is that this book will show the necessity for those who support survivors to provide safe, healthy relationships, and to help the survivor to grow in the skills needed to develop such relationships with many others. By relationships, I do not mean "re-parenting", because that is not possible; I only mean 'relationships' – friendships with healthy, non-dissociative people who accept the survivor regardless of their past.

I believe that the lifetime of bonding and attachment between cult members from the earliest childhood, as I describe in my book, is one of the main issues that makes it very difficult for people to leave highly organized cults. If an individual attempts to leave the cult, which means in groups such as the Order, leaving father, mother, sister, brother, children and closest friends, the question is then legitimately raised: *Leave for what? Who will love the survivor who is getting free, a freedom that involves breaking off with those the survivor has loved for a lifetime*? Understanding and answering these questions in a safe, healthy way is one thing that I believe could promote more individuals leaving the many organized cult groups that manipulate attachment needs.

About the Author

Since 1999, svali has written articles and led online groups to help educate survivors and the public regarding dissociation, ritual abuse, mind control and the work of organized occult groups internationally. Her articles and free book (*Breaking the Chain*) have been translated into five languages and read by both survivors and therapists around the world. Her book about how programming is done and suggestions on how to heal, *It's Not Impossible*, has been used by survivors, therapists, prayer ministers and those who support survivors from around the world to gain a greater understanding of these topics.

A former trainer for an international occultic group, she left the group sixteen years ago, and currently helps to educates others about topics related to ritual abuse and mind control through articles and podcast interviews.

You can learn more about svali and read other articles she has written on her blog:
svalispeaks again.wordpress.com.

Design a site like this with WordPress.com

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
About
Contact
Blog
Articles
Book Info

svalispeaksagain 10:54 pm on May 19, 2024

Tags: dissociation (41), mind control (86), occult (23), programming (75), ritual abuse (82), SRA (62)

Never Give Up -Chapter 3 Excerpt

I am sharing here some excerpts from my book, Never Give Up. This is the first portion of chapter 3 in the book.

Chapter 3: Toddlerhood

My birth name is Lucient, but my daily name is Lucia. I am usually called Luce. This is the name of my ‘cult host’, or the part that presents during my cult life in the facility. As my cult life was the majority of my life until my escape in 2007, with only limited time in the presentations in different countries, Luce is the part of me who feels most like the ‘real me’.

Mengele and Hilde work with me still, although my main influence are the fathers I love. Mengele and Hilde praise me for doing well and acting “intelligently” in different situations, but as Luce, I looked forward each day to the time I get to spend with the fathers I love.

For the first three years of life, life was regimented according to a strict routine. Early morning assessments are done quickly, with the fathers checking at regular intervals if prior programs installed are still intact. In between, there is holding and cuddling; these times too is scheduled. Later in the day, I learn the new day’s task(s). There is always, always something new to be learned or practice designed to build further on old skills previously learned.

I felt like a miniature performer as the tasks continued day after day: learn to swim (and see how long I could endure in the water in one early test); learn to crawl across a narrow bridge with water on both sides, and see if I could push another baby crawling across the same bridge into the water; learn to open my little legs on cue from a trainer (for sexual training); learn to switch out parts on cue with colored

Privacy & Cookies: This site uses cookies. By continuing to use this website, you agree to their use.
To find out more, including how to control cookies, see here: Cookie Policy

Close and accept

five years old, the children wear brown tunics and leggings, then graduate to an acolyte’s hooded brown robes at six years old. The older children find us younger children adorable. They enjoy interacting with me and the other infants, and will often come by and stroke our little cheeks and hands, or tell us that one day we will be big and have fun like they do. I love this attention and want to grow up to wear an acolyte's brown robe one day, and eventually at 13 years old, complete the coming of age ceremony and earn my adult name. I know that this will require learning many, many new skills and knowledge, and at this age, as the cult host, I am eager to learn.

Years later, when I was healing, I had trouble with the term "host", and especially its definition: an amnesic part that lives a life without abuse, or any knowledge of abuse. My host knew well that she was being raised within an occultic society. This was the only world she knew both as a child and as an adult. She knew about much of the abuse, and about the parts. She was allowed to watch and help monitor the different parts that presented when living in various countries. She was also one of my most deeply cult-loyal parts, because with all of her heart, she loved the fathers she had attached to. This feeling was true even during adulthood, which made leaving the order later in life very, very difficult. I missed the fathers when I didn't see or hear from them regularly, and not talking to them would trigger intense grief.

Control the Children

I am 12 months old. Father Jerome has tied me to his waist with a thick rope. He is playing the role of a system controller. My role is to obey everything he tells me, quickly and without error.

"Pick up those blocks," he says, "and stack the red ones together and the blue ones together." I quickly kneel by the blocks and do this task. When I am done, he says, "Good, good." In my role as a system part, I am learning how important instant obedience to my controllers is. The rope represents authority. The controller, being played today by Father Jerome, is always wearing the rope, and the system parts are tied to the controller by ropes.

It is a few days later. We are walking quickly and go to a field with lots of rocks. "Pick up the rocks, and put them in this corner of the field," he orders, pointing near the intersection of two stone walls. I begin picking up rocks while he oversees what I do. I am little and tire quickly, and his job is to encourage me to complete the task. Finally, we rest.

"You are listening well, and I am proud of you, Delta 34" he says. Jerome is dressed as Orgus, one of my delta controllers, and even in this menial task, I must obey him. The rocks represent memories, and he is teaching me to take them and put them in the correct area of the field. The field is divided up into squares labeled with various names and runes. I must match the rock and its rune with the storage rune.

After a period of rest, we eat some bread and drink some water then go back to our task. "Delta 34, put these memories into this storage file," Orgus commands, pointing to an area of the field marked with a rune that means "Low security". Quickly, obediently, I do so. "Delta 34, pass this memory into this file," he commands again, and I take the rock into a storage file marked "Medium security." I already know that rocks that are "high security" must be passed back to Orgus, to put into a special high security vault deep beneath us.

I am 18 months old. I have a rope tied around my waist. I am a gamma system controller, and tied to me by thick ropes are small children of my own age. There are six children. I have been told that my job is to ensure that they are completely obedient to me. These children represent my system parts. My job is to protect them by ensuring obedience to all commands from the programmers.

“You can walk around this house, but do not touch any of the candy in the yellow room,” I am told by Father Carlotti, who is dressed in the costume of a master controller from the galaxy Pleiades. He has the stars of Pleiades scattered over a dark, midnight blue sky, and is wearing the runes and codes that signify his status. System controllers such as gamma system controllers take their orders from master controllers inside. Their orders must always, always, be utterly obeyed.

The children and I walk together into different rooms in the house. I have to tug on the ropes of a few to get them to follow. One room is painted with bright yellow walls, and this color, and the huge table in the middle of the room, attract us all. The children and I eagerly walk towards the table, where there are piles of candies in glass bowls.

The children are hungry, since they have not eaten yet, and it is midday. They begin pulling me towards the table. “No, no, children!” I say desperately. “We were told not to touch the candy.”

I try to pull them away, but I am not strong enough to stop all of them pulling at me at once. One little girl, who looks so much like me, grabs a piece of soft divinity off the table and starts eating it. I try to pull her away, but it is too late; she has disobeyed the order.

Suddenly, she jerks in a violent seizure, turning blue. The other children stop their own rush towards the table. With frightened eyes we watch as this child continues seizing, and then dies. The candy must have poison in it, and she has disobeyed and died as a result. But I am responsible for her obedience, and with guilt and shame, realize that it is my fault that she died.

Pleiades (Father Carlotti) comes into the room and looks with anger and disgust at what has happened. “You killed her!” he tells me. “You didn’t make sure she obeyed you! A controller always makes sure that their system obeys them. You failed her!”

I feel terrible, but worse is to come. Now, as I move with the children around the house, I must drag this dead child around with me.

“You are feeling the weight of your failure,” Pleiades (Father Carlotti) says. I feel terrible, and start crying. A child, one put into my care, has died, because I failed to ensure her obedience to a command from the master controller for my system. I crumple to the floor, heartbroken, as I weep.

“Stop crying and do your job,” he says sternly. “Don’t let any more of your children die.”

He then gives another command. “Do not let any of the children touch the toys in the blue room.” The blue room is one we saw when walking through, but on this round of the house, I see toys on the floor: blocks of various colors, puzzles, picture books, and sparkly, beautiful dolls and balls. The children, who seem intent on disobeying me in spite of what happened in the yellow room, try to pull me over with them to the toys on the floor.

“No, no, children, no!” I scream. I pull with all of my strength, trying to pull them away. But the children wear me down, and one of them picks up a shiny red ball. Suddenly, there is a scream, and the child falls down dead. With a feeling of despair, I realize that this toy, too, contains poison. I am now dragging two dead children around from the ropes tied to my waist, and I am very tired. But the other children are now very quiet and seem willing to listen to me when I tell them not to touch anything at all in the house unless I give them permission. We sit in the middle of a red room, and Pleiades (Father Carlotti) enters. “You may all have a drink of juice,” he says, and he pours out a cup for each of us. The juice tastes good, and I am relieved that no death results.

“Only allow them to do the things I tell you to,” he says. “This is the only way to ensure their safety.” I nod my understanding.

The children and I stay in this terrible house for two days. I am dragging the two dead children, reminders of what happens when system controller allows parts to disobey their master controller. During the day, Pleiades (Father Carlotti) comes at intervals, and lets us eat, or allows us to play with only certain toys, or rest. The children, who are still alive, and I sleep together, utterly exhausted by the end of the day, tied together, on a mat on the floor.

By the second day, the bodies of the two children who died begin to smell. The other children and I feel ill from the smell, and Pleiades (Father Carlotti) returns. “You are smelling the stench of disobedience,” he tells us. I wonder how long I must drag these bodies around. I am feeling tired, ill, and sick of it all.

Finally, Pleiades returns again, gives a code, and I go inside. He then unties me from the children, and Lucia, my cult host, is sent out to take a shower and then rest in my dorm room. I am tired indeed and realize that being a controller is a great responsibility. The lives of those under me depend upon my ensuring complete obedience. I go to sleep, dreaming of saving children, while I am yelling orders at them, frantic to save their lives.

This memory caused me to cry for days when I first had it. I felt overwhelmed by guilt, sadness, grief, and then, finally, anger at Carlotti and the other fathers for putting me through such a terrible setup at such a young age. This is how the Jesuits train the internal controllers and master controllers to do their jobs: it is at the threat of loss of life if they should fail, not just for them, but for those they are supposed to protect.

I now realized why for years, my system controllers had been fighting me so hard, when I asked them to stop doing their cult jobs. They were desperately, desperately, trying to save the lives of children that they loved. They were terrified to disobey the master controllers over them inside, who I had yet to meet at that point in my healing. The lessons of absolute obedience, of never failing, and of controlling inside parts, had been instilled through this and numerous similar setups.

Share this:

Twitter

Facebook

Loading...

Related

Never Give Up: Intro and part of chapter 1
April 11, 2024

Growing Up International Part Two: The First Three Years

Never Give Up Part 2: The Struggle
June 24, 2024

In "healing" June 1, 2018 In "healing" In "healing"

stephaniekouts 1:08 pm on May 20, 2024

Very timely.

★ Like

Amber 7:06 am on June 8, 2024

I read this whole book. It's very encouraging how God showed up in the dark places you were in! I'm also horrified by how at least some of pop culture has shown up in your books as being actual, real things and not just fantasy. Thank you for being who God made you to be – a truth teller, and so much more.

★ Like

Leave a Reply

Your email address will not be published. Required fields are marked *

Comment *

Name *

Email *

Website

Post Comment

☐ Notify me of new posts via email.

☐ Notify me of new comments via email.

← Documentary on ritual abuse

Never Give Up – Chapter 8 Excerpt →

Blog at WordPress.com.

MYSTERIUM
BAPHOMETIS
REVELATUM

Joseph von Hammer-Purgstall,
1818

Preface

In this year of 1818, no more than seven centuries have passed in which the foundations were laid for the Brotherhood of Knights Templar in the year 1120. From that time they increased in such a size that they could boast in their many thousands of horses while continually growing strong by their very costly possessions in Europe and Asia. They were to be feared for their might, spiritual and temporal, yet within less than two centuries they became extinct due to a most grievous disaster. During this same time wars were undertaken to take back Christ's sepulcher from the hands of unbelievers. Also the infamous order of murderers best known as Assassins emerged (as if from the turbulent sea of Islamic heresy) in the Orient, similarly proceeding about two centuries before being uprooted shortly before the abolition of the Knights Templar by the combined ecclesiastical and secular authority, for they were offensive to both Caliphs and Sultans.

In the history of this most shameful covenant, (which simultaneously appears with this dissertation in the German language from the press of Cotta [i]) we have already taken note regarding the civil connection between the Assassins and Templars, all of which sheds new light on this subject when considering the secret doctrine of the temple. Each of these orders covered up their choice of ambition with a cloak of piety, while proving their piety worthless by submitting to earthly lust. They continually practiced these wicked disciplines in secret, increasingly storing up this mystery of evil till nothing could hold it back from bursting forth to so great an extent it became common knowledge. They were thus pursued by Pontiff and King with anathema and sword atoning those occult dogmas with their blood, extinguishing this conflagration with their own ruin.

The history of the Brotherhood of the Knights Templar and its secret institutes pertain to the Orient, since from there this order got its start, that is, from Syria, the seedbed of the dominant religions, and at the same time the bosom of the most impious sects. It brought forth the most ancient Oriental philosophy from the inner reaches of the Jerusalem temple beliefs so that after seven centuries from the finding of the cross by Helena and the raising of the Roman standards by Constantine, they attributed to the cross a more ancient and secret meaning out of the beliefs of the religions of Phoenicia and Egypt, mixing things most profane with things most sacred and adulterating the most recent Christian doctrine with the most ancient symbols of oriental philosophy.

Many heresies of the same age, all of which sprung from the gnosis tree, have encountered a true and full explication out of oriental sources due to the labors of orientalist philologists. Thus we read of the ideas of the Farsis brought to light by Anquetilus and illustrated by Kleukerus most recently explained by Norberg. [ii] The beliefs of the Druses and Mutavelii sketched out by Adler[iii], await fuller illustration by the celebrated Sylvester de Sacy [iv]. The heresies of the Manicheans and the Ophites treated by the celebrated heresy historiographers Beausobre [v] and Mosheim [vi] certainly would have become more apparent by now if writers had devoted greater effort to Oriental philology. Finally, the ambiguities of Gnosis from the Cabala were entirely resolved by Horn. [vii] Treading in these footsteps, we have made a matter of public knowledge both the history of the Assassins and the απόρρητα (hidden) dogmas of the Templars, and how (at least as far as the symbols are concerned) like a Phoenix rising from the flames they most certainly were resurrected in the Order of Freemasons. Plainly we know how to move forward through fires set beneath deceitful ashes, and we perceive how to take a chance on something replete with danger, so that what lay concealed for seven centuries we might undertake to reveal to our readers, that is, the origin of Baphomet.

NOTES PREFACE

[i] This is the name of a German publishing house founded by Johann Georg Cotta in the seventeenth century.

[ii] Abraham Hyacinthe Anquetil-Dupperon, J.F. Kleuker, and Matthias Norberg were all Orientalists working in the eighteenth to nineteenth centuries, and they each wrote about the Persian (Farsi) religion of Zoroastrianism.

[iii] This refers to Jacob Georg Christian Adler, an expert on Syriac languages and author of Monumentum Cuficum Drusorum, about the Druze people of the Levant. I could not determine the meaning of the word "Mutavelii."

[iv] Antoine Isaac, Baron Silvestre de Sacy was a contemporary French orientalist whose last, unfinished work was the 1838 two-volume Exposé de la religion des Druze, apparently in the works at the time of Hammer-Purgstall's writing in 1818.

[v] Isaac de Beausobr was the author of Histoire Critique de Manichée et du Manichéisme, about the Persian cult of Manichaeism, which came out in two volumes between the years 1734 and 1739.

[vi] Johann Lorenz von Mosheim was a historian of the Lutheran church who wrote about heresies, including the Ophite and Manichean cults.

[vii] Johann von Horn was the author of Über die biblische Gnosis (About the Biblical Gnosis), published in 1805 in Hannover.

THE MYSTERY OF BAPHOMET REVEALED

or

The Brotherhood of Knights Templar convicted
of apostasy, idol worship and impurity as Gnostics, indeed Ophites,
from their own monuments

What hatred and danger does the title of our accusation bring with it, when the most learned and eloquent men (especially in our time) have undertaken the defense of this order? Sadly, we have a prospect, and therefore we do not intentionally pull back our hand so as not to reveal the entire wicked mystery of the arcane doctrine of the Brotherhood of Knights Templar, and when individual points of the accusation have been approved, we will demonstrate that they, being joined together in a wicked and vile society, were condemned in a judgment by no means unjust. We do not deny that many of them were simple folk unskilled in evil and ignorant of the mysteries of impiety, who lived and died as faithful observers of public statutes and strenuous, sincere defenders of Christianity, since in all societies of that sort history teaches that things existed that were hostile to republic and religion, and it is clear that many were not deceivers but deceived; not perpetrators but victims of crimes; not conscious but unknowing. But if the secret discipline of a particular society is in direct contrast to that which it professes publicly, it will overthrow the foundations of morals and religion, profane the most holy things, befoul the purest things, and is it not to be established that the order was inimical both to the republic and to the human race, and condemnation, if not of individuals at least abolition of the order as a whole should be viewed as just and right? That such was the teaching of the Templars, from their monuments surviving up to now, but held until recent times to be of no authority, from the idols, sculptures and coins, from all of the signs on stones or bronze, will be very persuasive, not to followers of parties, but only to those who care for truth.

Since the hodge-podge of legal documents both of accusation and defense had been thoroughly read, which first became public in our time, and since the furniture of historical erudition was sought out, I would touch upon nothing about the course of these writers except perhaps incidentally, and all of the things brought forth from either side of this celebrated cause, in hatred or favor, I consider as well known to the reader. I will not discourse with words where stones make confession, and it will not help to arouse writers of history where monuments are present as witnesses. Unless these new monuments, never previously known, became known to us, if it was necessary to argue from those documents which up to now have been subjected to the public eye concerning the fault or innocence of the Templars, from all writers about this matter, in the end we would strongly agree with the last of them (Grouvellius) [i], who, making nothing of the props upon which accusations against them are based, argues simply from the nature of human affairs and the times, and discourses skeptikos [Greek, skeptically] about the fault and innocence of the Templars: one he destroys, the other he approves. And indeed if there is no weight to the accumulated accusations by writers of history against the Templars, if out of the treachery against St. Louis [ii] and the king of Jerusalem, from the tradition of the camp of Karak and Acconis [iii], from the covenant struck with the Assassins [iv], from the connivances with the Sultan of Egypt, we wish to argue nothing against them, if we do not care to put faith in their very frequent confessions concerning the cult of the idol, concerning the cross spat upon and trampled, what will prevent us from holding all these things to be not only reasonable, but also true while we consider the nature of men and of those times, and we discern similar doctrine and similar morals in so many other sects of the Middle Ages? What wonder if we discover the same dogmas of impiety and the same crimes of unrestrained malice in the time of wars waged for the recovery of the Lord's sepulcher, in diverse sects of the Orient, namely, in the famous [sects] of the Manicheans, the Albigenses, Mazdekites [v] and Assassins? What wonder if the plague of this doctrine and crime had crept also into the society of Christian soldiers, whose founders, during a period of ten years were unable to recruit for themselves even one candidate, until those fleeing into the lap of the church hid the secret doctrine (according to all probability already existing) in the Institute of St. Bernard? What wonder that those knights confederated with the Assassins and imbued with their nefarious doctrine and, passing time in Syria, affected by the error of the Syrian sects, waging war in the Orient, indulged the same defect conjointly for themselves in all the Oriental camps? Finally, what wonder that this order coveted serving as an example to all other famous societies under the guise of imperial religion, and in its secret teachings, devoted only to natural religion, held all others that did not serve domination and lust as trifles and opinions to be ridiculed. Since Grouvellius has shown from the nature both of things and of men that all these things could happen and he approved a priori, as I might say, by philosophical reasoning, the sin of the Templars, we will demonstrate the same things a posteriori, through irrefutable arguments made and subjected to the faithful scrutiny of readers – the monuments.

First, we will discuss idols called in the common idiom Baphomet, next concerning mystical cups, or chalices, concerning sculptures and coins of the Templars. Out of these it will appear that their secret doctrine is identical with that of the Gnostics, indeed, of the Ophites. Next, in order to avoid the vice of obscurity, by making further inquiry, we will spread out the doctrine of the Ophites and its connection with the most ancient beliefs of Greek, Syrian and Egyptian philosophy, and we will permit ourselves to make an excursion into deep inner reaches of the Masons, when the symbols of the Templars have been illustrated, we will explain the amazing concordance and identity of them with the masonic symbols [vi]. Finally, when the entire system of this most ancient doctrine has been clarified, having been prompted by the forward movement of articles of accusation of the Templars, we will vindicate from any suspicion their absolute truthfulness and the justness of the condemnation. But if the Pontifex Maximus, in a bull of abolition, condemned them not as convicts, but, out of the plenitude of ecclesiastical power, suppressed the order, this to us seems to militate, not in favor but against them, since it is allowable to think the Supreme Pontiff wished more to cover up than to reveal the shameful and reprobate things of this order exalted by the church for so many years with so many honors and privileges. For this reason, the forward process of the fascicle of acts and the original records up to present times lie under seal at Rome. When these documents were made public (just as in the end all of them are being brought to light), we hardly can hesitate to show a surprising agreement between them and the monuments discovered and revealed by us. Meanwhile, these monuments of stone or bronze are sufficient for overcoming [vii] the secret discipline and doctrine of the Brotherhood of Knights Templar among all who, imbued with no prejudice, scrutinize the simple faith of history. We revere the ingenuous candor of other defenders, who, as the celebrated Raynouardus [viii] and the most learned Münter [ix] (the glory of the Danish church and a great pillar of the literary community), being themselves pure and upright, spurn suspecting others of depravity and wickedness, but, nonetheless, their apologetic arguments are knocked down by the number and authority of our monuments.

l. On idols called Baphomet

No less than twenty-four of these idols have become known to us, which up to now [are] partly published but not understood. Others that have not yet been published remain in treasure [containers]. The first of these was delineated in [an issue of] Gentleman’s Magazine of 1755, incised in bronze. Three others have been delineated in the distribution of curiosities. (Curiositaten, Volume Two, Section One). [x] Two exist in the Schoenfeld Collection here at Vienna. The twenty-two remaining are preserved in the treasuries of antiquities at Caesareo-Regius. All these idols, from their delineations, here subjected to the eyes, and from a comparison with four others in another place, inscribed in bronze, can be examined, even if not of one shape and size and [not] marked by inscriptions in various languages (Arabic, Greek and Latin). However, all bear the same character, and are to be referred to one and the same cult.

These stones, even though only copies, as will become evident from things to be said below, exhibit a pointer to the profane cult to which they belong. However, since the inscriptions afford the greatest light, these first of all we will subject to examination, and when they, eventually, have been made plain, we will progress to the point of ultimate explanation of the signs, and from there will be forthcoming a series of proofs. The inscriptions produced in three languages (Arabic, Greek and Latin) define a triplex genre as to the meaning. Many of the Greek ones, inscribed on little idols, indicate nothing other than the names of their possessors, who would preserve them in their small boxes (coffers). Two others—one Greek, the other Latin—contain certain comments devised by their possessors, in an interior note. Then Arabic ones everywhere the same (though with transposed words and letters) reveal a particular secret sense of doctrine of the total mystery of this arcane discipline. The Arabic letters, not accurately formed, betray the unskilled hand of the sculptor, but also were purposely truncated and transposed so that even for persons who read Arabic the secret sense of the inscription would be obscured through ambiguity of writing. It thus turned out that Sickler, in the preface to Promptuary of Curiosities, at first wrongly took Persian writing for Arabic. This error I indeed correct in the following ternion, but I fell into other hermeneutical sphalma [Greek, slip-ups] since I took these signs to be symbols of an alchemist, and the main word, Mete, since it offers no genuine Arabic meaning, I thought was placed there for ماء تيه; that is, desert water.

NOTES

[i] Philippe-Antoine Grouvelle, author of Memoires Historiques sur les Templiers, 1804.

[ii] In 1250 the Templars had refused to help pay the ransom of King Louis IX, Philip the Fair’s grandfather, when he was captured by the Egyptian army of the Mamluks, and the funds had to be seized by the French government, a cause of much resentment.

[iii] Al-Karak in Jordan was the location of one of the greatest Crusader castles in the Middle East. Acconis is a Latin way of writing Acre, the last major Crusader fortress in the Holy Land to fall to the enemy in 1291, signaling the end of the Crusades. There were rumors of treacherous involvement between the Templars and the enemy that allegedly led to the disastrous defeat.

[iv] The Assassins were a secret Islamic fighting order that operated contemporary to the Templars and fought against them on the battlefield. The two orders are often compared because of their rigorous training, their suicidal approach to battle, and the accusations both orders faced of having a secret inner doctrine of blasphemy. The Templars have been accused by some historians of having a friendly relationship with the Assassins behind the scenes.

[v] Followers of Zoroastrian prophet Mazdak.

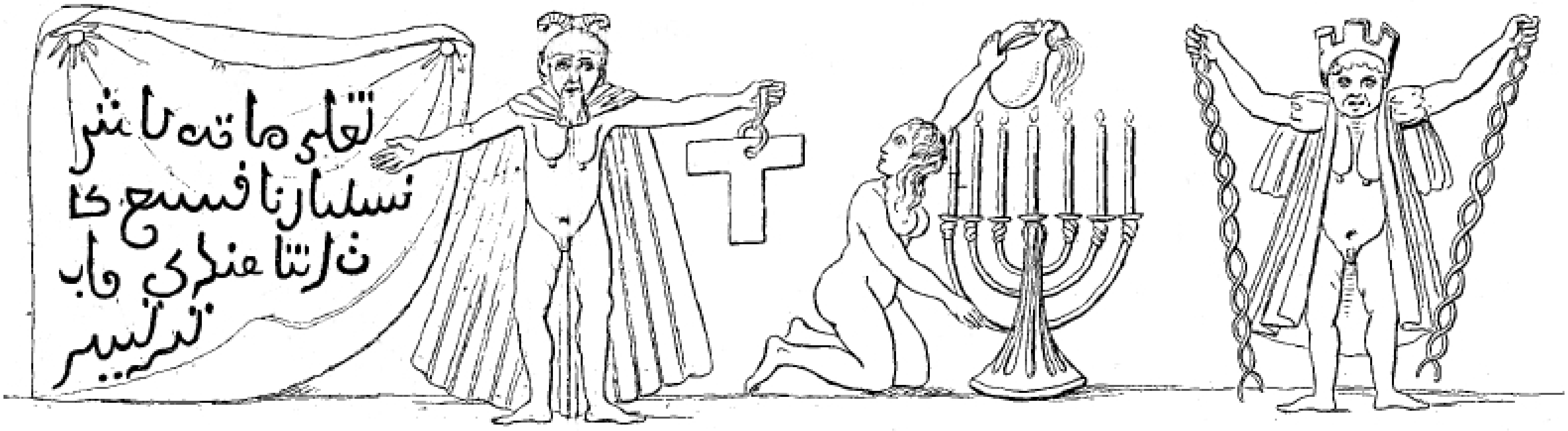
[vi] The editor has chosen to render the words “Architectonics” and “architechtonic” in this sentence as “Masons” and “masonic,” as the context of this sentence implies a reference to the symbolism of the Masonic brotherhood and not just operative stonemason symbols.

[vii] From the context it seems something like the word "understanding" was meant.

[viii] Francois Just-Marie-Raynouard, author of The Templars: Tragedy in Five Acts,1805.

[ix] Danish scientist Frederic Munter, who allegedly discovered the secret Templar rule, The Book of the Baptism of Fire, in the Vatican archives. This text is discussed in Baphomet: The Temple Mystery Unveiled by Tracy R. Twyman and Alexander Riviera.

[x] Curiositaten was a series of books by Friedrich Carl Ludwig Sickler, a contemporary German antiquarian scholar.



I. Greek Inscriptions

Small idols found among the treasure trove of antiquities in the Imperial-Royal are so inscribed: 1) K. ΣΛΚΟΠΤΕ 2) ΓΛΟΠΕΟ 3) ΓΛΥΘΥ 4) ΓΛΥΧΟΥΡΟΣ 5) ΛΥΔΟ 6) ΛΕΥΝΟΓΠΟΛΟ (Table I figure 14). The names of these idols' owners found here (whether they used their true name or not) follows after the same words in the Greek and Latin tongues: born witness by such names as those of Petrus, Toletino and Ludovicus. 7) ΤΟΥΛΕΙΤΙΝΟΥ ΠΑΣ ΠΕΤΡνΣ that is, Peter (πας for παις) the son of Toletinus (Table I figure 2). 8) των υδατων χρυσος, that is, golden waters (Table II figure 13). What is to be understood by this golden water, or by this golden liquid, is reserved for discussion further on.

There are also two idols found in the Schoenfeld collection that are inscribed 9) ΣΑΔΥΡΥΝ and 10) ΙΗΕΤΗΜ which when read from right to left, is ΜΗΤΕΗΙ, which sounds like, Meti. There are many more idols to be found in this collection of already shown Curiosities (which, although of this same type, are not incised in bronze) that we have omitted, lest the hodge-podge of images grows too big.

II. Latin Inscriptions

Certain idols found in the Imperial-Royal treasury are inscribed with the following 11) LODIVVKOS ΠΙΜΟ -

ΟΥΣ that is, Ludovicus (Louis) (Table II Figure 10). It is uncertain what sort of meaning this surname has, for many of the letters have been erased. In this inscription, Latin letters are mixed with Greek, either due to inexperience or by design of the sculptor, using the reader's lack of experience to confuse him and to deaden any way for his mind to perceive any meaning. This is especially evident in the next inscription, which not only uses the confused forms of Greek and Latin letters, but also only indicates, by the initial letters, two of their most secret words. The first of these (which only has its first two letters present followed by two asterisks) is Mete. The other word (as noted by the letters GNO and followed by the most noted symbol of gnosis, the serpent) is Gnostic. 12) TRLOMNINIE TU HOMO ES REMENIESCEQE (Reminiscere) DIEM ME** (Mete) MONET PRO TORO OMNEN (omnem) GNO (Gnostiocum). (Trlomninie is a man who remembers the day of Mete, which is incidental to all Gnostics.) Found in an idol of the Imperial-Royal Treasury, (see Table I figure 11).

III. Arabic inscriptions

Having completed what was to be said regarding Western (that is, the Greek and Latin) inscriptions, we can transfer to the Oriental (that is, Arabic) ones, of which it turns out that we can gather an equal number from 12 monuments of the same type (that is, idols and bowls). The Arabic language in the time of the cross-bearing militia was by no means unknown to the Europeans attacking Syria, but its use was not common. Also, the knights of that period were rude and scarcely able to read and write the vernacular tongue. Persons reading and writing Arabic were considered learned. Therefore, the secret meaning of these inscriptions, all of which we will see were described according to one and the same paradigm, surely did not escape many owners of idols, but that there were many altogether illiterate and unskilled at reading Arabic, in no way deviates from the evidence. This knowledge of Oriental languages at that time flourished only among clergymen (and especially those attached to the sanctuary at Jerusalem). From these, or from the nine founders of the Brotherhood of the Knights Templar, one of them, pursuing what was written by the Ophites of the secret doctrine, was obtained by request, the other decreed that Mete be inscribed on all idols. If these things seem to be spoken rashly, it will later be demonstrated by irrefutable arguments that they do not veer away from the truth, and it was necessary here to say a few things by way of preface so that a reader not undeveloped in the Arabic language, yet up to now unknowing of the sequential arguments, will not wonder at the graphic errors, repetition and frequent transpositions of these inscriptions. Rather, the reader might know that these errors proceeded from either the cleverness of the owners who, by transpositions of words and letters, hoped better to conceal from profane readers the secret sense, or might understand that they came from lack of skill on the part of the sculptors. By the same reckoning, in the past the Ancients, when writing letters, would use secret notations, and all things aforementioned are to be observed on the letters of Caesar to Oppius and

Balbus too: Individual letters without any connection of syllables, which you may think crudely placed; for out of these letters can be assembled no words. However, there was a secret agreement of correspondence among them with respect to changing the place of letters so that a character can correspond to another place and name. But when reading, each character's own place and value would be restored. (Ex. Agell. 1. 17.c.9)[i] Certainly we shed much sweat while unraveling the knots of these inscriptions, since besides the deformity and transposition of the words, the Oriental philologist is very much deterred by the aspect of the name Mete ماته, which is not Arabic but borrowed from another language. Therefore, I myself, since I thought at first that these inscriptions were alchemical, came to the conclusion that this Mete, which makes no sense in Arabic, should be read ماي تيه Mai-tih, that is, desert water. But then with the recurrence of this تعلي ماته formula, Omnipotent Mete! in all of the inscriptions, it became beyond a shadow of doubt that this word is not Arabic, but is borrowed from the Greek language, and signifies nothing other than ماته, or Mens.[ii] Once the significance of this special word was discovered, it became necessary, out of our twelve inscriptions, to find one or two in which the right order of words is exhibited, without transposition of letters, and this, very fortunately, happened for us through a very well-preserved sculptured inscription in a marble bowl of the Imperial-Royal treasury. Before I address this, found among those inscriptions which were published in the little book of curiosities (II B. 6 St.) [iii], I have already considered one, on an idol with beard and breasts, which consists of merely two words, to offer the best foundation and springboard for explaining the others.

NOTES

[i] This is a very complicated way of explaining the very simple concept of how a cipher works. The book referred to here is Fragments of Julius Caesar, which can be found on Google Books.

[ii] “Mind” or “wisdom,” a term used frequently in Hermetic writings, which Hammer-Purgstall will later refer to.

[iii] Curiositaten by Friedrich Carl Ludwig Sickler again, referred to in previous installment.

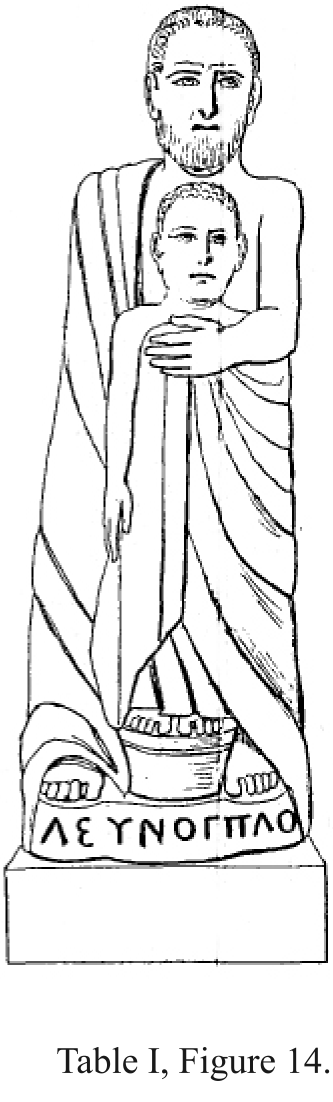


Table I, Figure 14.

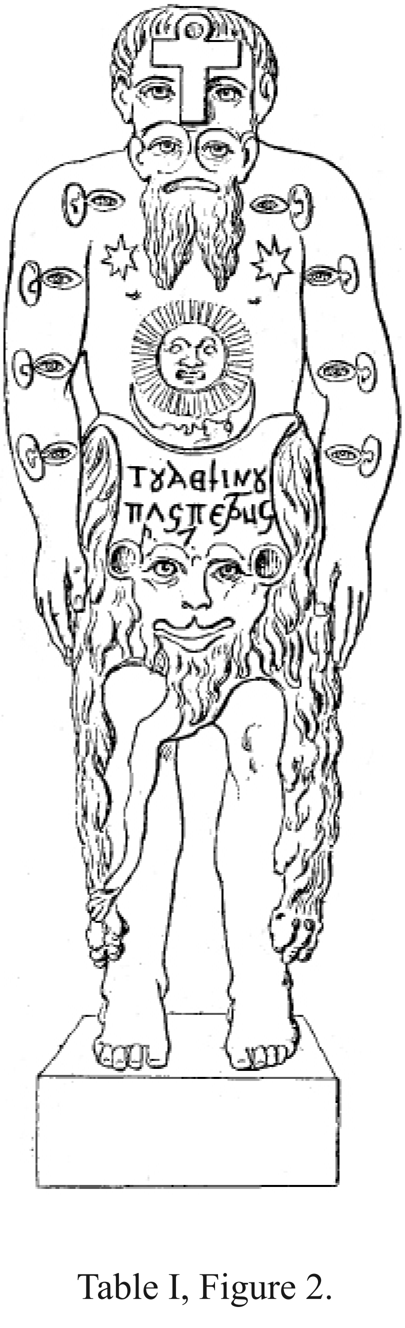

ΤΥΛΘΙΝΥ
ΠΛΣΠΕΒΥϹ

Table I, Figure 2.

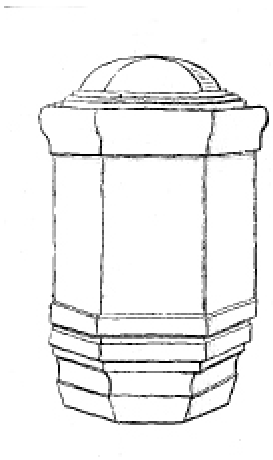


Table II, Figure 13.

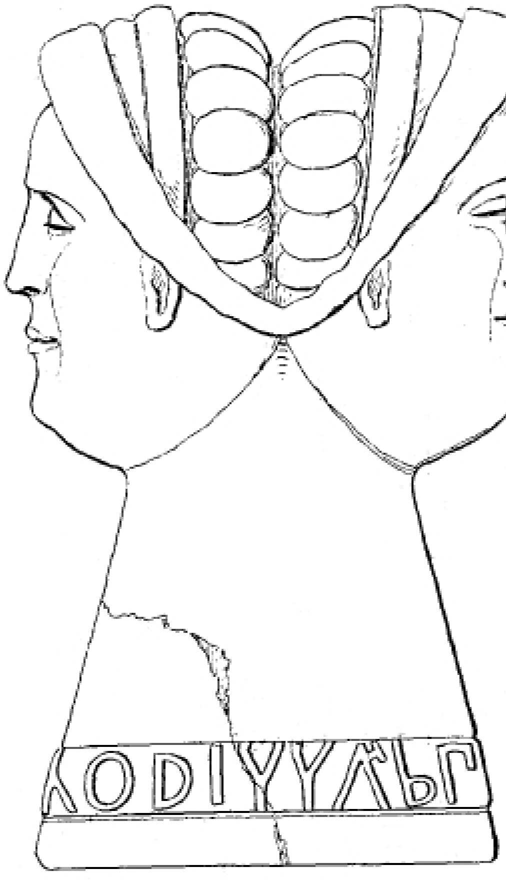


Table II, Figure 10

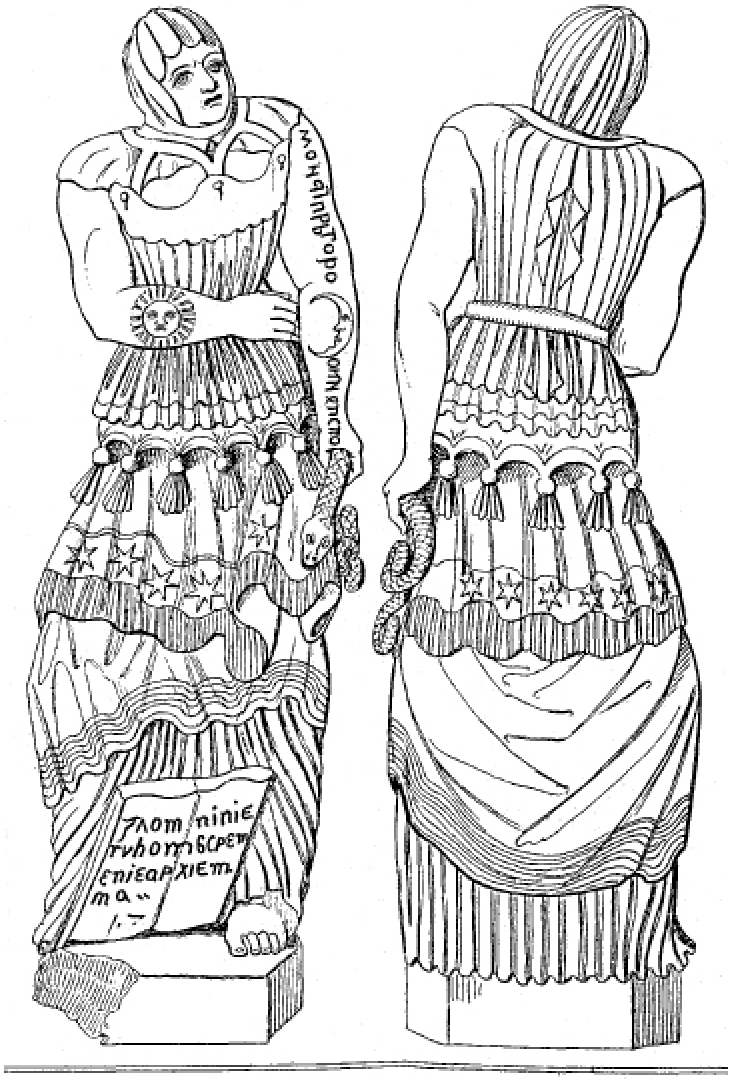

7λom ninie
rvhoπ7ιБСРЕπ
єnieaPXIEπ
ma
!.7
моналпрлторо
оппкэпсто

Table II, Figures 11 and 12 (backside of same idol).

Inscription No. 15 (in the little book of curiosities)

In the front it says ما ماته منكر تنا ا ك ن ع تعلي فسبع تسانا نفع تيز, and on the back, ع كان تنا نفع تيز تسر. Note that here are many errors and transportations of words already made plain in the previous inscription, and that it includes the single letter ع, ayin, which occurs in none of the others.

It begins with the word Mete but with repetition of the first syllable, Me ة ما. Next follows the word Mankur, but shaped in such a way that if it did not occur so many times in other places more clearly written, certainly here it would not be recognized. Then comes the word اتنا pro انت, but with a transposed Elif. Ka-na follows, and finally another single ع.

The word ta-le, which in other places precedes Mete, but here is made subscript to it, and the following فسبع نسلنا نفع تيز are read distinctly. The inscription فسبع نسلنا نفع تيز تعلي ماته منكر انت كان ع is found, meaning “Exalted (or ‘Omnipotent’) Mete. You are denying. They were even seven, our race. Usefulness (or, ‘It is useful’) in prokto (Greek, ‘anus’) p.” In the material that follows we will indicate this more briefly through “p. p.”

On the back, the inscription begins with the word ta-na which (see Golius) means “become prominent,” so that it can be interpreted, “Utility becomes prominent.” But more probably this ta-na is nothing other than an-ta with the first letter transposed, or omitted. What the اتنا again repeated here means is more difficult to assert since it occurs nowhere else, yet if we make our judgment from the known quick method of writing Arabic, this single letter, being either the initial or final letter, is placed for the whole word. Thus, the letter Kaf signifies the beginning of the word kei-mei (“chemist”), and the letter Mem signifies the beginning of the word metalab (talismanic art). The letter ayn , occurring so frequently in all of these manuscript codices, is there in place of مصرع, that is, “hemistich.” Here, though, since it immediately precedes the word ka -na, it appears to be put to stand for Se-ba-ah [the final letter of which is سبع (that is, “seven”), so as to repeat this principal formula: “and they were seven,” which is exhibited by itself and distinctly inscribed only on the idol with beard and breasts.

Inscription No. 16 (From the little book of curiosities, II. 6. b. c.)

On the front, it says تعلي ماته ناش ن انا كا نسلنا فسبع ي منكر فا. On the back, it says تيز تسير يا ناش تنغع فتّ.

“Omnipotent Mete sprouting” is written correctly up to this point. Now the single letter ن is to be put at the end of the ka- so that, together with the letters falling in sequence, the formula already recognized, “I and seven were, our race,” might be brought out. Following seven seems to be the letter Ya, which is to be transferred to the end of the expression na فاي منكر, meaning “You are among those who deny!” From the back, in continuation of the inscription on the front, we read: ثير تسير بها ناش ذفع فن i. e. πρωκτος, that is, “Proktos” (Greek, “rectums”), and “It is through sprouting water, utility of knowledge.” It is clear from the context that “sprouting water” is none else than sperma genethliakon (Greek, “reproductive seed”). Also, “knowledge,” which is expressed here not by one word but two, ma-la-ma and fi, (which means “art” or “cunning”). (See Meninski [i]). It will become more evident further down that it is nothing other than Ophitic Gnosis.

Inscription No. 17. (borrowed from Gentleman Magazine).

Even if it was wrongly incised on bronze, in the part having the masculine likeness are the words ذفع ماته اذا انسلنا منكر انتان ذفع ثيز, meaning, “Usefulness, Mete, I, our race, you denying, usefulness.” In the part having the feminine likeness, it says ثير تسير فن من كان ته ماب فسبع تعلي بها. “And seven, Omnipotent, knowledge is, return proktos” can easily be read. When rightly composed and integrated, this offers the same meaning as the inscriptions above.

Inscription No. 18. (Tab I. fig. 13)

On the back of the idol, holding an infant

نسلنا اناخ تسير نقع فسبع كان انت منكري فان تعلي ماته ناش in letters written most distinctly but a little transposed, it says "And there were seven, you, if you are denying, one, Omnipotent Mete sprouting, a debauched woman, it springs up for our race through prokton."

There are two principle transpositions, to فان and to نت, so that "you one denying it" is read in place of "if you one denying are." Then نسلنا, that is, "our race," which ought to follow after "and were seven," gets pushed back behind the epithet Metis. Among them we find something new here, that is, "making to lie down," from the root اناخ, that is, "on its knees to lie down he ordered the camel," [to do] "the most disgusting things." This will appear more fully from the fact that in the inscriptions to follow this is substituted for this word. There one reads "fully inclined toward Venus," from the root اناک. A derivative of this, very frequently used, is نيكنيك, nudnik (from which perhaps came the German nickel), denoting to all a return from Egypt where traveling female dancers (Aalimae عالمه, perhaps borrowed from the Greek allomai), by repeating ma fisch fuluss ma fisch niknik, ما فيش فلوس ما فش نيكنيك were wont boldly to affect people deeply.

Inscription No. 19 (Tab. I. fig. 7)

On the arms of a male/female arsenothelus-shaped idol, there are distinct yet transposed letters. On the right arm it says نسلنا ن فسبع كا, "Our race and seven were." Here the letter Nun of ka-na, which is lacking at the end (where it belongs) is placed before fa-sa-baa. On the left arm, we see كان تع ن substituted for فسبع, meaning "Omnipotent (Mete) sprouting or she who plants," indicating someone favorable to fertility and desire, or a debauched woman. Here two syllables of the word Mete are separated by the inserted ta-a-le, and the letters of na-sha are put in reverse order to make An-a-ka. The place occupied with an-a-gha is explained in the previous inscription. On the back of a genuflecting idol it says تعلي ماته ناش نسلنا فسبع كان انت منكري فان, meaning "She is exalted, Mete, Consivia ('she who plants'), I and our race were seven. If you are from those who deny."

Inscription No. 21. (Tab. II. Fig. 11)

On an idol bearded and with breasts, it says تعلي ناش منكر انت, meaning "Omnipotent Mete, Omnipotent planter, you are denying."

Inscription 22 (Tab. II. fig. 9)

On the base of a two-headed idol, we read نسلنا منكر فسبع, that is, "Our race, you are denying, and seven." On the opposite side of this base Latin and Arabic characters are mixed so as to designate "gnosis" thus: The Latin G (initial letter of "gnosis"), the Arabic Fa (in the same form as in the inscription published in the little book of curiosities), and the letter Nun. Thus it spells Fenn, (gnosis) when the letters are placed alternately. That Fenn in Arabic signifies "knowledge" is abundantly clear from the notable title in the encyclopedia Hadjii Calfae كشف الظنون عن سامي فنون. And this will come forth soon below. (The English word "Funn" is very close to the Arabic word Fenn).[ii]

Inscription 23

On an interior tile of a cover of a square bowl (tab. II. Fig. 5), and on the bowl itself, (ibidem, fig. 15), it says كا تنا ان منكر فاي ناش انا ته meaning "and you, if you are one denying, well done! The woman who plants, I, Mete." Fenn here means "and O," or "Well done! Overflows." The word Na-sha is written with transposed letters, and the word Mete is deficient in its middle part, lacking the first syllable.

Inscription No. 24

On the exterior periphery if an octagonal bowl is written نفع تعلي تم كا تيزن ته كا نيرن منكر نير ماز تعلي ن تيز ن خ تسيرش ان سلنا ن نفع تعلي ن تيز منكر تنا تسير ن فسبع لا الملسناي كا This inscription contains nothing less than all of the words noted from prior inscriptions, but divulged in such a way that, if they were not already known, they could not be assembled from these disjointed elements.

Moreover, character corruption renders the reading more difficult. Basically, it reads, "Mete c p. p, and seven. You are denying."

Here, when these inscriptions have been explained in detail, the sense of them, tending toward what is most disgusting and lustful, speaks for itself. Also, some more things about the doctrine of the Ophites, even more secret than this, will be more extensively clarified through its exposition further down. From time to time we will bring up descriptions given by the Templars of their idols called Baphomet, which are in complete agreement with ours.

In the 32nd of 120 articles of accusation published by Du Puy,[iii] we read "Also that they had idols in individual provinces, that is, heads, of which some had three faces and others one, and some had a human skull."

Some of our idols have two faces, others one, and in the bowl, on the cover of which such an idol was drawn, you see the skull placed at its feet. (Table II, fig. 5.)

In articles 52 and 53, it was said of Baphomet "that she makes the trees blossom" also.

Everywhere we see our Mete called Na-sha (that is, "the one sprouting"), or Consivia ("the woman planting"), or Ericapaiam.[iv]

In Du Puy, page 519, it is said [of Baphomet]: "the head is bronze, two-faced." Seven of these idols are two-faced (three, indeed, depicted in the little book of curiosities), and three of our idols are two-headed, placed on postaments. One idol (tab. I. fig. 2.) has one head but two faces in front. Another, as stated above, has only one.

From the confession of Gaucerand de Montperats we read:

Their superior showed him an idol bearded and made in the likeness of Basomet.

Ibidem: It is a terrible figure, which resembles a Devil saying in French “Mause.”

Ibidem: [French writing] an idol that was in the form of a human head with a big beard.

These correspond very well with our idols. All are creased and have an ugly appearance, which, as Nicolai observed, seems to have been more from uncertainty of the sculptor than from custom. Made in the figure of a man, many are bearded and present the twinned attributes of both a man and a woman. Also, some appear mainly as a woman, and that testimony, preserved by Moldenhauer, [v] p. 397, very well agrees: “This idol was feminine and could have been viewed as one of 11,000 virgins.” [vi]

Testimony 72 to article 46: (From German): “In Paris I often saw a silver head, to which the assembled leaders rendered their worship.”

Testimony 200 (from German): “He showed me a head upon the altar with a long gray beard.” Page 590.

Testimony 201 (from German): “Then he took out of his bosom a figure of gold or bronze which had a female appearance.”

Testimony 209 (from German) . . . “a beautiful head of gilded silver and a female form.” Chapter 58.

At length, though there are many idols discovered by us and a few here are published, the majority were destroyed by the small chapters [of Templars] engaged in this secret form of worship). They are signed with the names of their possessors, and the evidence of this is confirmed by testimony in Du Puy, page 526, where it says that “some Templars carried such idols in their coffers.”

Concerning "adoration," "denial," and "the abominable form of worship," of this idol which the Templars were accused of, the epithets "Mete Omnipotent," "Subactrix" ("debauched woman") and words about "denial and return through prokton" clearly speak of it.

These things, having now been brought to light, and this Mete, both in figure and by name having become familiar to us, we wish, first of all, to inquire of what sort was this double-form monster, then into the reason for the vulgar name Bafomet. Mete, both in name and in fact, are not the same as Mete, Metis (Greek) of the Greeks even if there remains no doubt that our gnostic Mete was borrowed from the Homeric (or even better, the Ophitic Mete). Our Mete is none other than the Sophia of the Ophites, who is known otherwise as Acamoth, Prunicos, or Barbelo. Even if this name, though it occurs in all our inscriptions, is not designated in the writings of the Fathers, vestiges of this name carried over from Greek mythology into the beliefs of the Gnostics. Epiphanius for sure has the distorted sense of it when he affirms that the Ophites transferred the Greek fables, especially of Mete, into another meaning, as will be seen in the same Epiphanius where it is indicated why dogs are held in the greatest veneration among the Ophites. By attributing to Mete the same functions of divine wisdom and providence that the Gnostics attribute to Sophia, Eusebius also gives us the way in which Mete of the Greeks was transfigured into Mete of the Gnostics. Like the name, the figure exhibiting both sexes was borrowed from ancient fables, which we have verified from Macrobius, who tells us that Venus was represented as at the same time both masculine and feminine in appearance. Thus also in this idol we discern Mete and Aphrodite combined serving as a symbol of prudence and desire. Finally, the masculine-feminine Firstborn God of the Ophites, distinguished by various names, among which was Mete, seems to be akin to this Meti of ours. Out of this protogenei (Greek, firstborn), the God of the Ophites, and out of the Hierapolis Goddess, the Mete of the Ophites was concocted, it seems. The Hierapolis Goddess, as Plutarch testifies, was "Nature" and "she who offered to all seed out of vapor." This agrees very well with our Mete's epithet na-sha, or [Greek writing] ("germinating")' As Plutarch tells us (Crassus XVII), the Hierapolis Goddess was also called Hodegetes ("of generation" and "knowledge"), as our Mete was called Consivia ("the woman planting"), or Ericapaea.

It is agreed by all the Fathers who wrote about Gnostic doctrine that Sophia, daughter of the Eternal Father, was a feminine spirit of a double kind, masculine and feminine. This Sophia is at times confounded with her daughter Achamoth, and at times distinguished from her. But whether she is the same with her mother, or diverse, certainly all of what is said about Achamoth agrees very well with our Mete. so that one can assert that Mete was one of many names which this masculine-feminine aion was called among the diverse sects of the Gnostics.

The name Metis, if not found in books, nonetheless occurs everywhere in these idols of ours. Since all that which is said about Sophia (alias Achamoth, alias Helene, alias Photina, alias Joel alias Enthymesis) agrees very well with our idols, there is no room for doubt about the true meaning.

It remains for us to inquire into the composite name

Baphomet. The true sense of this Greek expression, Baphe meteos (that is, “Tincture of Mete” or “Baptism of Mete”), came forth clearly by Nicolai (from German, Versuche uber die Beschuldigungen des Tempelherrn Ordens, (Investigation regarding the Allegations against the Templars Order, Part I, Page 137.) This very wise man rightly perceived that the arcane doctrine of the Templars was Gnostic, and that the meaning of Basomete should be sought in the beliefs of the Gnostics. He hallucinated only in that he thought that Mete was a synonym for gnosis, and he felt that the Father, the creator of heaven and earth was represented by idols. But Mete signifies not the law of gnosis, but rather the feminine-masculine legislator otherwise called Achamoth, the daughter of Jaldabaoth, who also was called propater, but not pater.

Hence, in our judgment, Nicolai touched upon the truth: that the word Baphen, or Bapheion here signifies nothing but the mystical tincture, or the Gnostic baptism, the theory put forth below with proof from the writings of the Church Fathers and the mystical bowls. of which three are preserved in the treasury at Caesareo-Regius, which we used for this Ophite baptism.

Let us now take a look at the passage in Hermes Trismegistus [vii] cited by Nicolaus where God sends a messenger with a bowl full of Mens, which perfected souls tending towards gnosis are ordered to immerse themselves. [viii] Other patristic authorities support the connection with this passage, in which is treated the mystical baptism of the Gnostics, and various words distorted out of Hebrew and other languages are adduced, of which one is (Greek, basema). What wonder, therefore, if baptism was changed into Baphen, just as Metin was changed into Meten.

This Gnostic baptism was understood to be not a bath of redemption through water, but a spiritual purification through fire, which is clear from excerpts out of Theodotus and out of Justin, in just so many words.

In support of [the translations of the name Baphomet] as “spiritual baptism” and “tincture of fire” there are the sculptured bowls at the feet of our idols, full of fire so as to demonstrate how that mystic rite should be administered. For example, here are two representations of this concept. The first is of an infant (which means a neophyte Gnostic) being placed by Mete at the pedestal to one of these bowls (See tab. I. figure 14). The other is of a boy standing over a flaming bowl (see tab. II. Figure 3). All of this we will discuss more clearly in the next chapter, which treats of bowls.

NOTES

[i] Francisci à Mesgnien Meninski, Thesaurus Linguarum Orientalium, 1680.

[ii] Did he mean the English word “fun” here? It is unclear. “Fun” seems like an entirely separate concept from “knowledge,” even of the Gnostic type.

[iii] Pierre Dupuy, Histoire de l’Ordre Militaire des Templiers, 1751.

[iv] The meaning of this is unknown.

[v] This refers to Frankreich von I.G. Modenhauer’s transcripts of the Templar trials, titled Prozess Gegen Order der Tempelherren, and published in Hamburg, Germany in 1792.

[vi] The British legend of Saint Ursula tells how she and 11,000 virgins in her entourage were beheaded by Huns while on pilgrimage through Europe in the late fourth century.

[vii] This refers to The Corpus Hermeticum.

[viii] The passage, found in Discourse Four, states: “Immerse yourself in the mixing bowl if your heart has the strength, if it believes you will rise up again to the one who sent the mixing bowl below, if it recognizes the purpose of your coming to be.”

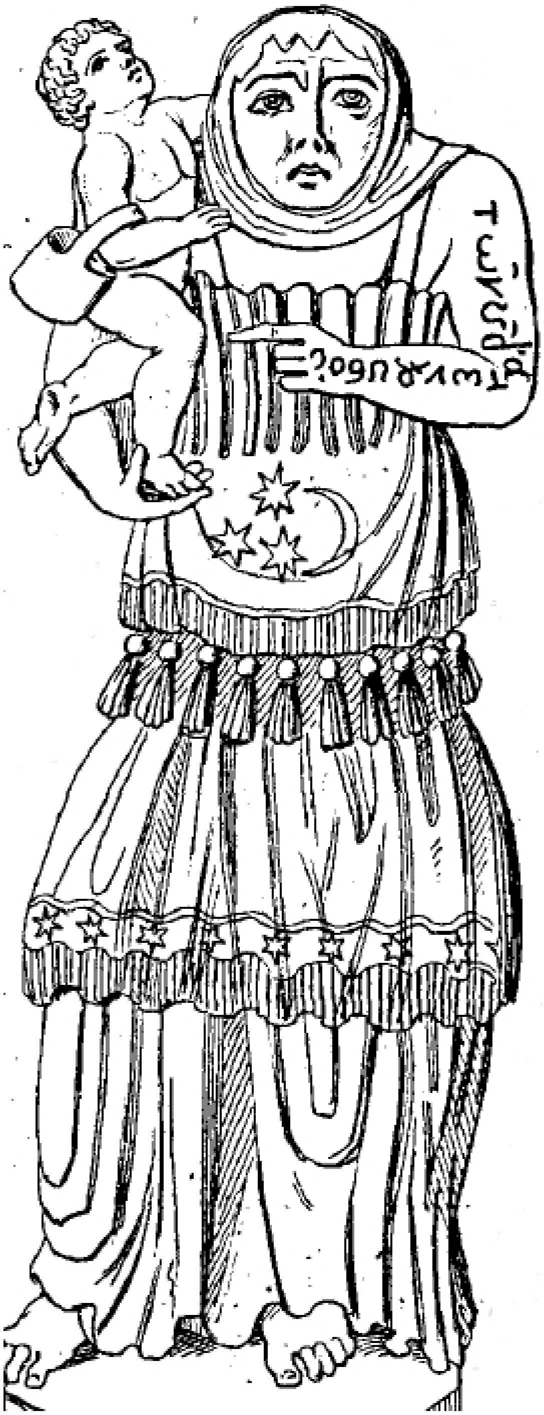


Table I, Figure 13.

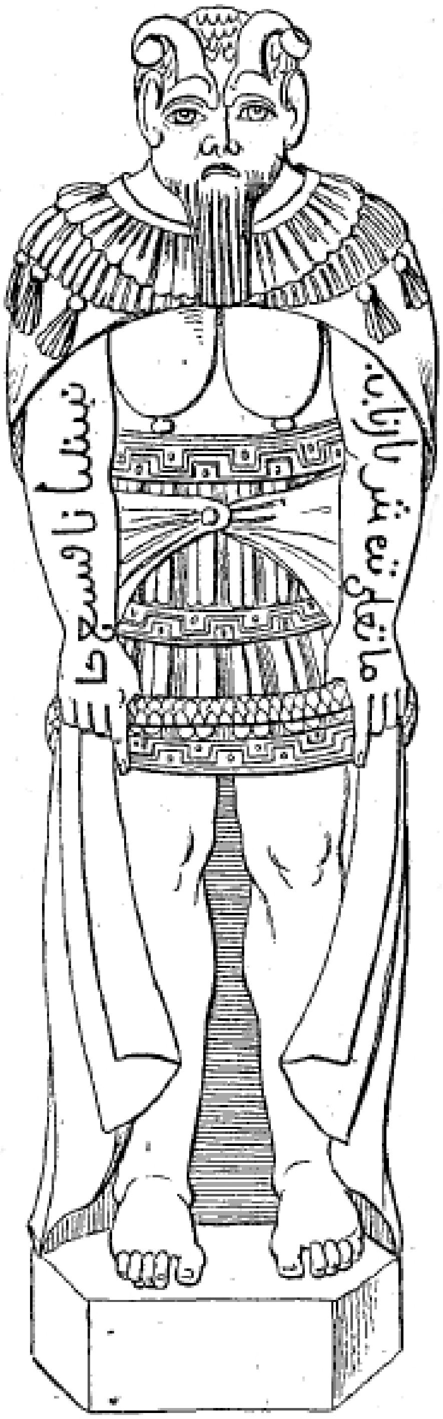


Table I, Figure 7

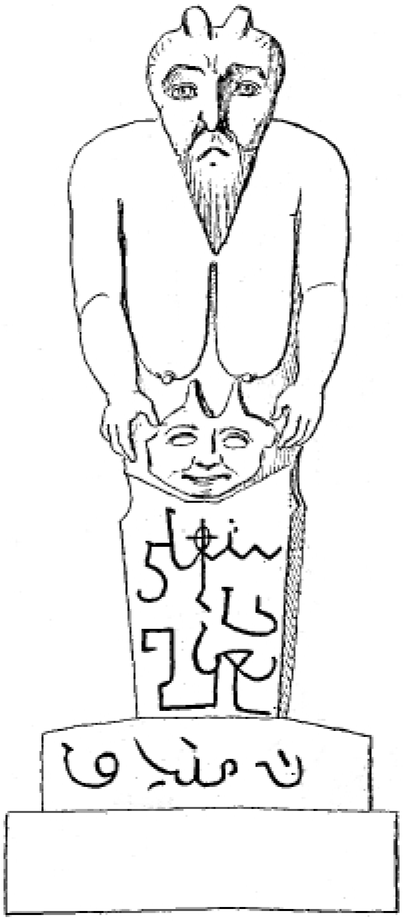


Table II Figure 11

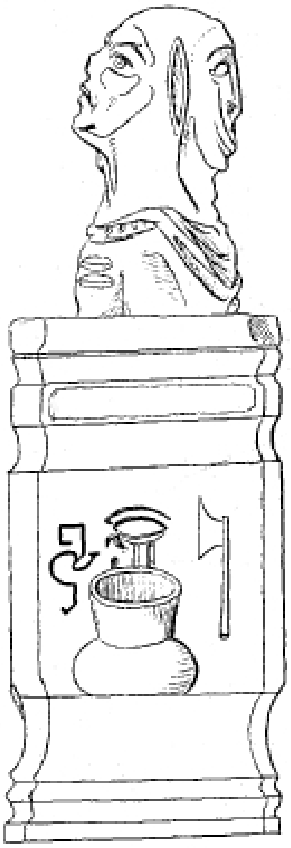


Table II Figure 9

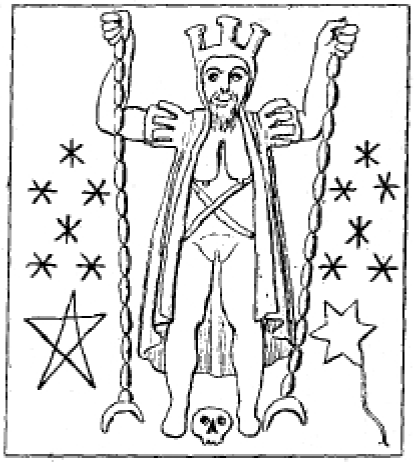


Table II Figure 5

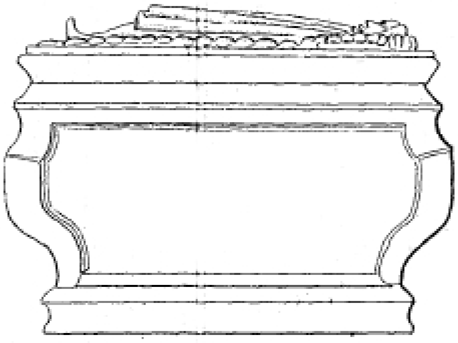


Table II Figure 15

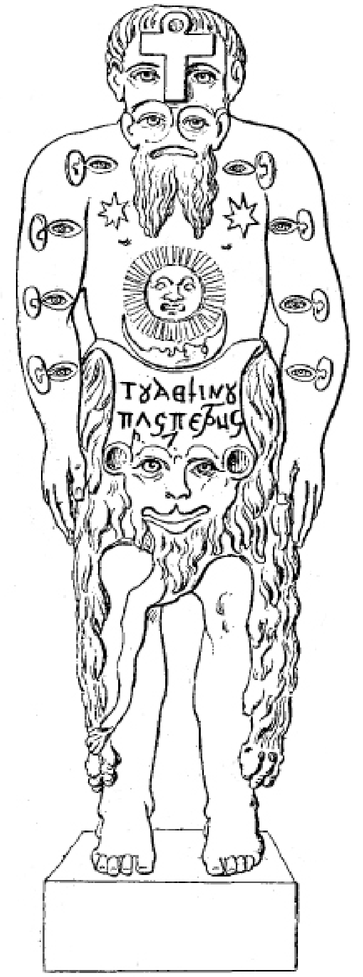

ΤΥΛΘΙΝΥ
ΠΛϚΠΕΞΥϹ

Table I Figure 2

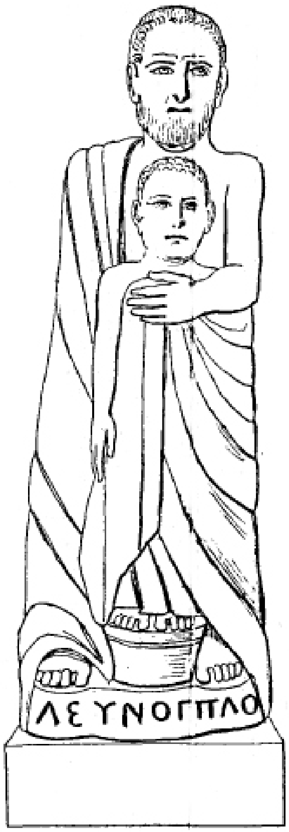


Table II Figure 14

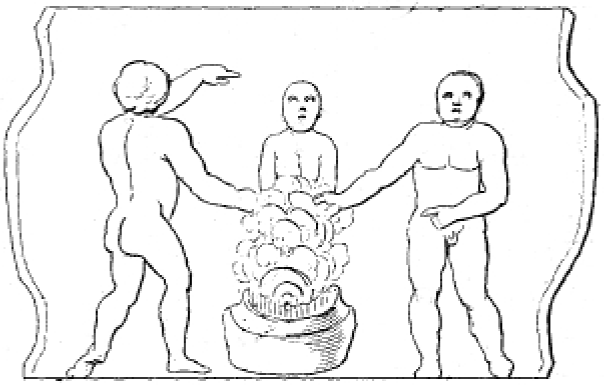


Table II Figure 3

About Bowls

Three most precious bowls are in the treasury of Caesareo-Regius, one of which is made of marble, the other two of steatite stone. [i] All three of these are inscribed with Arabic inscriptions (which already are explained above), wherefore, they pertain to the same form of worship and idols mentioned previously. But if one is able to harbor doubt by considering the inscriptions as insignificant, realistically all doubt is completely banished by the very form of these bowls (see tab. I fig. 9, and tab. II fig. 14, 15), repeated on the feet of our three. It is well known that bowls and cups were used in all of the mystery schools which antiquity cultivated. But here we will illustrate in greater detail the original meaning of these bowls.

There exists a big bowl (on the upper part of which Ophitic orgies are sculpted) with a duplex figure on the bowl. Decency prevents me from exhibiting here what is imprinted on the bronze, to the extent that we should acknowledge the need for this comment. What needs to be said is that two bowls bear the meaning of both of the sexes, one the masculine, meaning sexual relations[ii]; the other one, the feminine, meaning childbirth. Therefore, this bowl references nothing but the female sex as a symbol of generation, which also can be seen on the bases of the three idols, with this one difference: that in that place, instead of a phallus, there blazed a fire, which represents generative power. Thus, in the idol (see tab. I, fig. 9) obtained from the little book of curiosities, it, on the feminine side, is noted at its feet. However, on the other idol (see tab, I. fig. 15) such a duplex bowl is placed, bottoms-up, facing the other. One of these is filled with fire as a symbol of generative power; the other exhibits an infant coming out of the womb. The neck of the bowl is sometimes short, sometimes longer; shorter in the marble bowl and in its figure (tab, II. fig. 9,), longer in the vase having the form of what is commonly called a carafe, which occurs on the square base of the two-headed idol, and in the multitude of ceremonies of spiritual baptism, or that of fire, brought together by one of the ministers, on a bowl (see tab. II. fig. 2). Being closest to the fire, he holds in his hand a letter G, which was inscribed on the base of the two-headed idol. [It was inscribed too] on this vase together with the Arabic word Fenn, (that is, Gnosis). The best analysis is that this vase is the prime symbol of the birth of Ophitic Gnosis. From what is said above, it seems in no way absurd for us to affirm that there was the same meaning for all the bowls of ancient mythology.

We bring forth in testimony here no less than twelve of the bowls celebrated from antiquity. Of these, six are being held in the hands of the Greatest Gods; six were attributed to genies of an inferior order. Everywhere we will note the symbol of birth. The cups [potions] of the Gods are: Osiris, Liber, Heracles[iii], Mithra, to which we will throw in the cup [potion] of Dschemschidi and Jove. Other cups are six cups are: the double cup of souls, the double cup of the Demiurge (in Plato), the cup of Anubis and the cup of Mens (in Hermes Trismegistus).

Who does not know that Osiris and Liber were the same? Heracles and Mithra were none other than the Sun, who, according to Macrobius (Book I of Saturnalias), was called aeigennetos (Greek, "forever begotten"), because, always arising, she [continually] is being generated, and because she generates all things, by inseminating, nurturing, producing, maintaining, and increasing.

We also read the same thing from the same author (Somnium Scipione, Book I, Chapter 2). The mind of the world is also called temperatio ["regulative power"]. We will soon discover more below about the bowl of Mens which founded the world. Temperatio (Greek, krasis, "regulating power"] is none other than mixtio ("a mixture") on which everything depends, and out of which the very name "bowl" (Greek, krater) is derived. Therefore, in the writings of Plato (in Philebo), Hephaestos and Dionysos (fire and wine) are named "mixtures of God." It is clear to Oriental philologists that the cup of Dschemschidi[iv] was none other than that of the Sun, and from its division this will appear. Also, from the Apology of Justin Martyr for Christians we learn that a cup was used in the Mithraic mysteries to point to the mystery of the Eucharist. These cups symbolize the generative power of the Sun which inseminates and produces all. Six other symbols, of a higher birth (namely, of creation of the world and of the birth of souls) are also implied. The first cup was called "greater" (Greek, zoogonon), the other "less," but the idea of generating is expressed through mixing so that (Greek, kerastes) relates to keratera as a man to a woman (Proclus in Timaeus). A double bowl pertains to souls: the one part, oblivion, leading to generating (Greek, geneseos), the other part to Sophia (to wisdom). We see the bowl of Anubis depicted on coins. We discussed already above the bowl of Mens in Hermes Trismegistus. Finally, there is the cup of Jove Alcumenae, given as a gift for the price of pleasure, called as a proper name Carchesium.[v]

Hence, while thoroughly investigating the original significance of the bowl and chalice in the most ancient mythologies, since everywhere we discover the same thing, we will not wonder that the bowl and chalice occupied first place among the vessels of the ancient mysteries, and existed as a symbol of the mystic meal of the Gnostics and of the arcane doctrine of the Templars. Though the use to which they were employed is not clear from writings, from the appearance of the monuments where these bowls are seen flaming (See tab. I, fig. 9, 14, 15), and from the very structure of one of these three bowls, it is to be affirmed that incense was used inside the braziers, in order to nourish the fire with burning materials. Thus the Neophytes standing at this bowl, with the incense giving forth a smell, were being spiritually prepared for that marriage which among the Ophite Gnostics took the place of baptism, the Eucharist and of all the sacraments. The presence of fire, which we see everywhere glowing from these bowls placed at the feet of the idols (See table. I, fig. 9, 15), proves this hypothesis. Next [we see] a Neophyte with the appearance of an infant placed by a parent at such a bowl, surrounded by a whirling cloud of smoke from the incense (See tab. II, fig. 3). This representation, since it is fashioned on the bowl (tab. II. fig. 15), plainly demonstrates its use.

This sacrament of fire [is] better yet. As with all ceremonies pertaining to the same, this scene is sculpted onto the second bowl, where the fire glows not from a brazier but from a ritual fire source. The order of ministers and attendants makes it more clear what type of feast this is, or you may wish to call it a "baptism" or a "marriage." Behold! You have a ritual fire, which represents either the baptismal font or the marriage bed, with flute and lyre players making noise during the ceremonies. At length, we see ministers, each dressed in stola[vi] and maniple, of whom one bares that mystic vase made in the form of a vial (the carafe, which is shown on tab. II, fig. 9), another [bore] a securim[vii], which too is depicted on that base (see tab. II, fig. 9), Third and finally, there is an idol which had behind its back a ladle (see tab. I, fig. 16).

These are the ceremonies of that mystical sacrament and of the abominable orgies of which the Gnostics are accused by the Fathers, which with promiscuous ugliness they celebrated with the lights dimmed, sometimes under the name of a meal, other times under the name of marriage. These orgies are manifestly portrayed in all three of our bowls presented, so that it might be clear to the onlooker what these orgies are, and to what Gnostic sect these bowls, with the same inscriptions as the abovementioned idols, belonged. For the first bowl contained, in a double circle, a double representation of the orgies. The interior [circle] shows the baccanalium [viii], where [the Roman god] Liber is observed [ix], borne in triumph by satyrs and maenads (female votaries of Bacchus), who surrounded him closely. We will pass over this image of triumph, since it provides nothing in the way of testimony, in order to diminish the number of images [reproduced here]. The upper circle of the vase represents the Ophitic orgies, which here we exhibit to your eyes, only with the phalluses being omitted, as we mentioned above. Lest perhaps you might think that you can here discerned Israelites in the desert being attacked by serpents, note that the figure is holding serpents before the others, who are exultant and seem familiar enough with them to be kissing them. He also presents them with a double figure of a certain monster, masculo-feminine, who holds a double chain (bronze), in whom we recognize our mother Achamoth or Mete. [See tab. II fig. 1.] However, there is another monstrous figure, supplied with four wings, son of the same, inimical to mother, whom we have discovered to be the same as Jaldabaoth (concerning whom there will be more discussion below). Since the Ophites, followers of his mother Sophia or Mete, tried to extinguish the form of worship established by the son (Jaldabaoth or Sabaoth). This is symbolized by one of the depicted Ophites, here shown extinguishing a sevenfold candelabra (symbol of the Biblical form of worship). The duplex book [we see here] indicates a double law: one part that of the Old Testament, of Sabaoth, the other part that of Achamoth. We also found a reference to this book in an Arabic inscription that can be found on all of the bowls and idols. On the second bowl, beside the figure of Mete (See tab, II, fig. 5), we see the Sun and Moon (See tab, II, fig. 7, 8). A “baptism of fire” is shown there too (See tab, II, fig. 3), and on the other side is seen a dragon, from whose jaws the ministers have snatched the infant.

Finally, on the third bowl, besides ceremonies of the mystic sacrament, we see on the bottom Jaldabaoth sitting on an eagle (See tab, II, fig. 6), so that he may be recognized to be the same as the monster sculpted onto the first bowl.[x] Now we will, as it is necessary, explain all these things, so that if we discover the same symbols and the same figures in the sculptures of the churches of the Temple Militia, we might now be certain of their true Gnostic sense.

On the largest marble bowl (the height of which is six digits and the figure of which you see in tab. II, fig. 14, and the upper relief in the same place, fig. 1), we see first a double figure of Mete, both masculine and feminine, but wrapped in a different cloak. The first one on the left displays [its influence from] the prototype of the Ophitic faith through an Arabic inscription. On the right, however, we see a truncated cross which is inscribed on the front of the idols (tab. I, fig. 1, 2, and 15), and is carried in the hand of the last idol. Another spreads forth Mete, being borne about by hand, with two hands holding a bronze chain, which the idols have around the neck (tab. II, fig. 6). Such a thing was discerned even in the covering of the second square vase, which has a tower-shaped miter for the horns. Since this is the adornment of Cybele and Rhea, it sheds new light on the origin of Mother Achamoth.

Besides this double effigy of Mother Achamoth, these bowls also exhibit a double image of her son Jaldabaoth. One is placed in the series of Ophitic orgies among the two symbols mentioned above. The other is on the bottom of the third bowl, sitting on an eagle. One bears a lightning bolt as Lord of Heaven and Earth. The other has a headpiece provided with four wings, like the Supreme Eon and Archon, which seems to be sculpted in signs called

Abraxes.[xi] (See tab. 4, fig. 24, 25, 26 of Abraxis of Macarius).

This is the son of Sophia, Barbelot or Achamoth, called Sabaoth or Jaldabaoth. Among the Gnostics he was seen as the father of the seven Archons, creator and governor of all things heavenly and earthly, who rebelled against his mother and, exulting in his glory, insanely boasted that "he was father and God, above whom is no one." However, the mother, hearing this, cried out, "Don't lie, Jaldabaoth, for there is above you a father, first of all things, Anthropus, and Anthropus, son of Anthropus." (Irenaeus, Against Heresies, Book I, chapter 30, on the Ophites.)

This is, according to the Ophites, the God of the Jews and Christians, whom they cursed, and whom they trampled underfoot. The Ophites thought that this one wages perpetual war against his mother Achamoth, and prohibits men from getting knowledge of his mother (that is, of divine wisdom). He produced, besides the seven Archons who govern the seven heavens (who rebelled against him as he did against this mother), yet another serpent-shaped son, that is (Greek, ton Noun, the mind) in the form of a contorted serpent. He first offered to his father Jaldabaoth a ministry so as to seduce mankind "to purge from him the seed of light." Next, though, abandoning the sly and crafty aspects of the father, and becoming a follower of Sophia, he proceeded to lead men to her true knowledge, or gnosis, and to the revelation of all the arcane things of nature. Finally, through the winding of intestines depicting contortion, he was held by the Ophites to be worthy to represent the "genital wisdom" (in Greek

Zoogogon sophian, and in Arabic, ma-ta na-sha) of our inscriptions). For this reason, he was sometimes called by the Ophites Nous, and at other times by the name of the angels Michael and Samael. He was worshiped in the orgies as a symbol of the abominable wisdom and the true leader of Gnosis.

NOTES

[i] Steatite is also known as “soapstone.”

[ii] Hammer-Purgstall tells us that he omitted several of the phalluses featured in the images he reproduced. However, with this particular image, the phallus (shown disembodied and descending into an open vase that sits to the left of a chimera creature, with a baby emerging from a vase on the right side) was reconstructed in the illustration found in the original, unabridged printing of Thomas Wright’s Worship of the Generative Powers, which refers heavily to Hammer-Purgstall’s work.

[iii] Heracles had a magic cup with a lodestone in it that he used for oceanic navigation.

[iv] This is more commonly spelled now the cup of “Jamshid,” this was a divination cup used by the Persian mythological figure of the same name. It was also filled with the “Elixir of Immortality.”

[v] This undoubtedly refers to the cup that Jupiter gave to his nephew and pedophilic homosexual sex slave, Ganymede, who then became the official cup-bearer for the god. Ganymede’s name means “gladdening genitals.” A carchesium is a goblet with handles.

[vi] A Roman matron’s outer garment.

[vii][vii] A type of ceremonial ax.

[viii] This is the name for the drunken orgies celebrated in the mystery schools of Bacchus in Rome.

[ix] A god of wine and libertinism, Liber was often equated with Bacchus and Dionysus.

[x] It is unknown why Hammer-Purgstall failed to mention

here that this is image corresponds to that of Ganymede, who was abducted by Jupiter for pederastic purposes when the latter took the form of an eagle and gave his boy-lover a ride up to his divine abode.

[xi] He is referring here to coins featuring the figure of Bes, a gnostic deity of Egyptian origin depicted identically on many Gnostic coins found elsewhere, with four wings. Such coins are often identified as images of "Abraxas," another gnostic entity who may indeed have been seen as the same figure by certain groups.

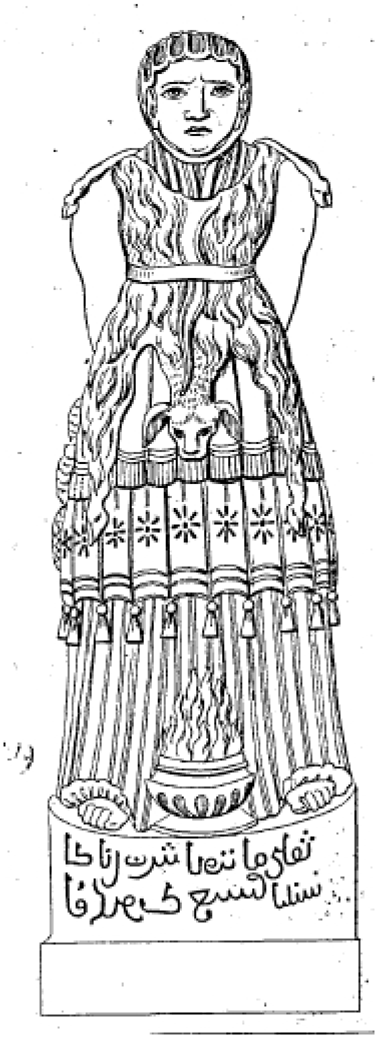


Table I, Figure 9

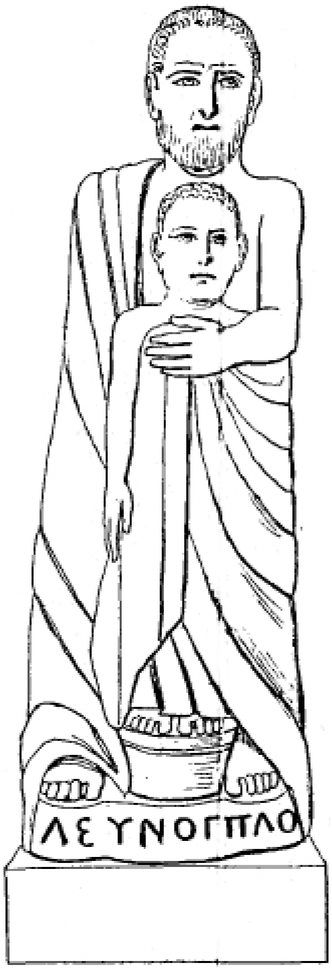


Table II Figure 14

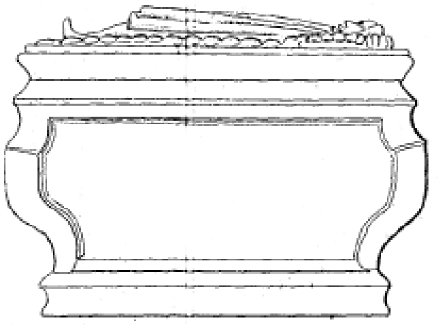


Table II Figure 15

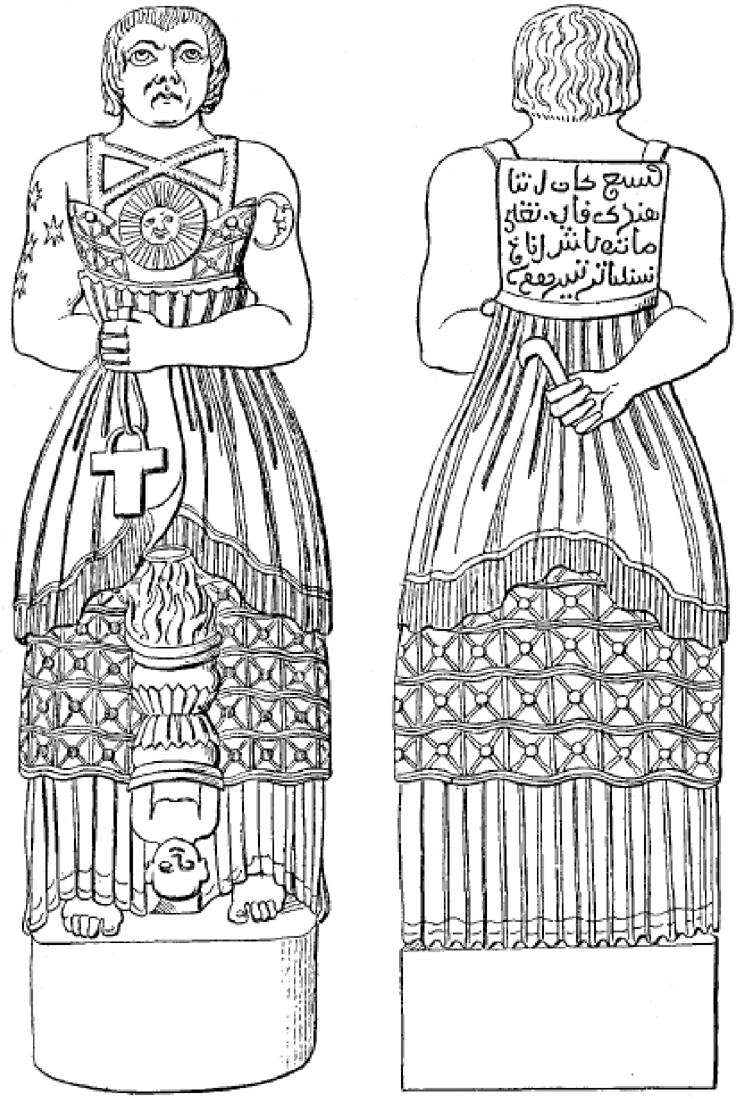


Table I, Figure 15 and 16

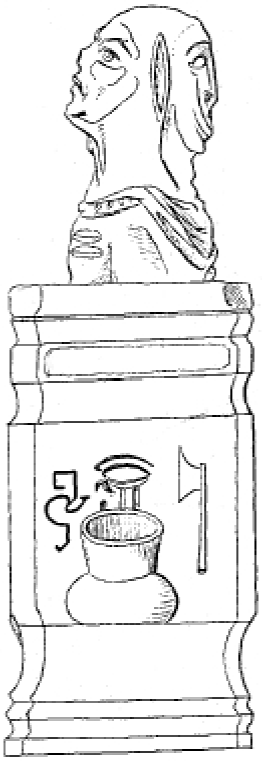


Table II, Figure 9

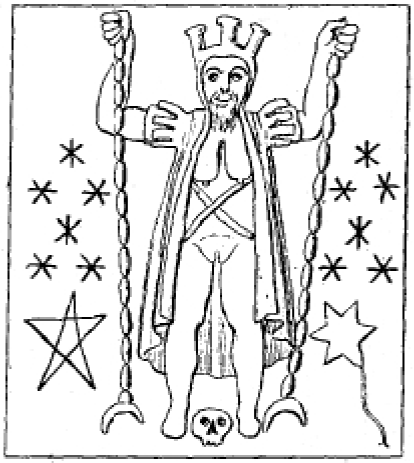


Table II Figure 5

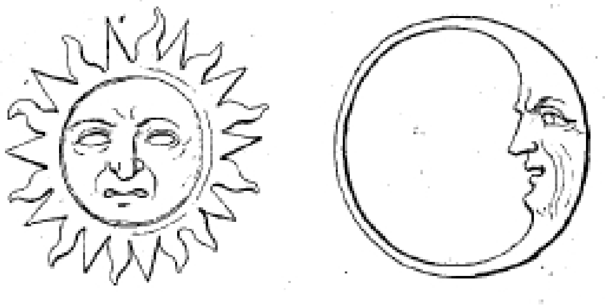


Table II Figure 7 and 8

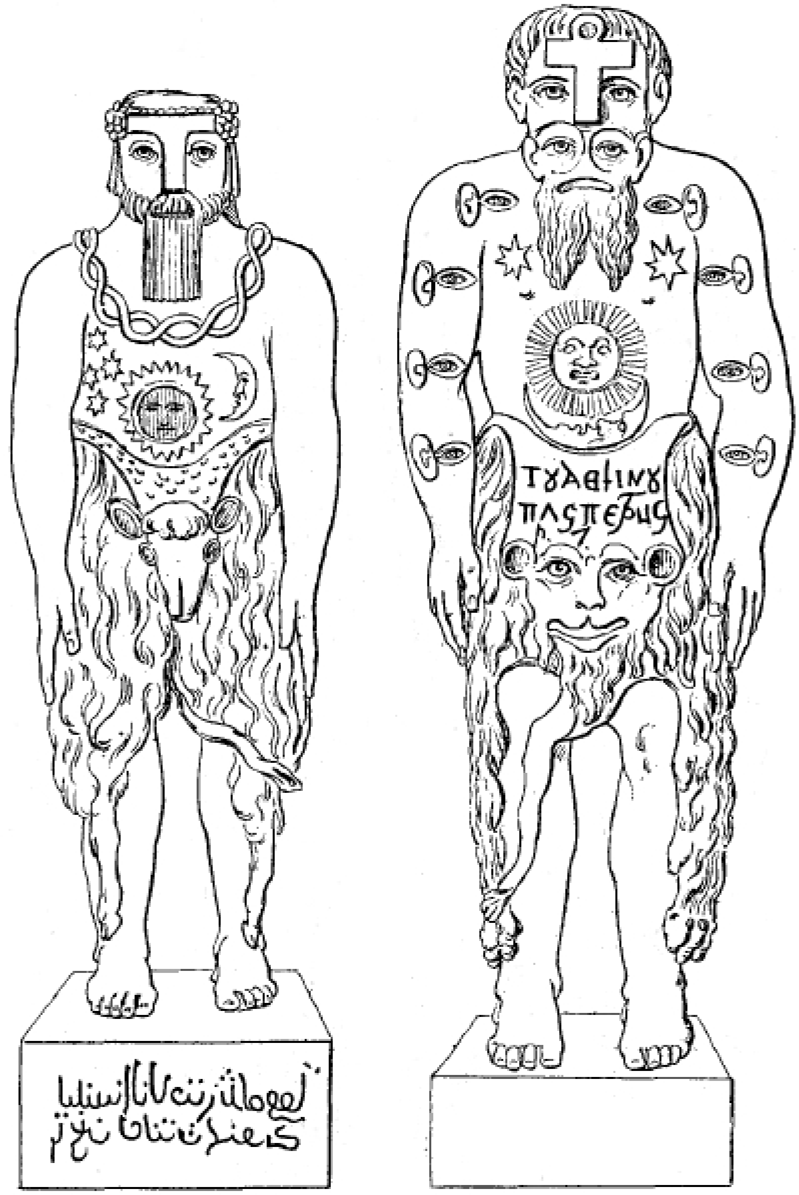


Table I, Figure 1 and 2

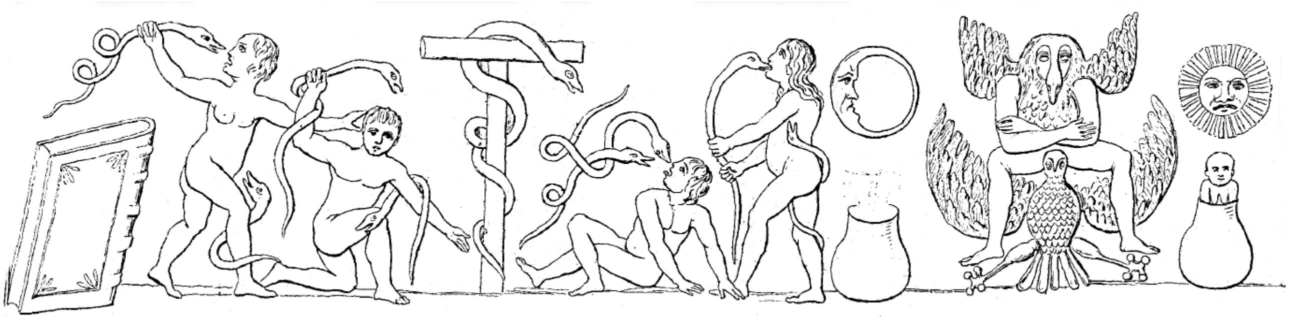


Table II Figure 1

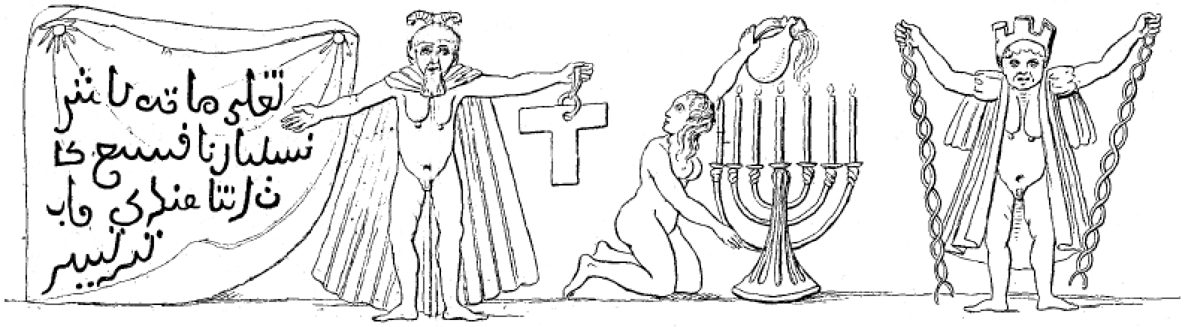


Table II, Figure 1, right half.

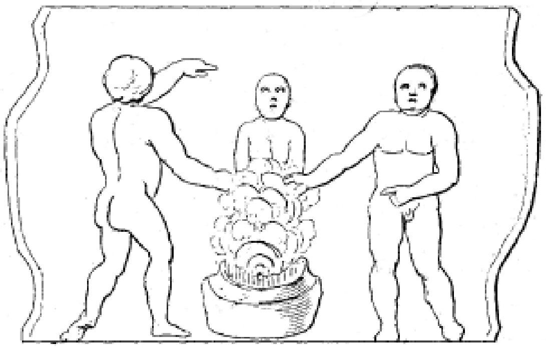


Table II Figure 3

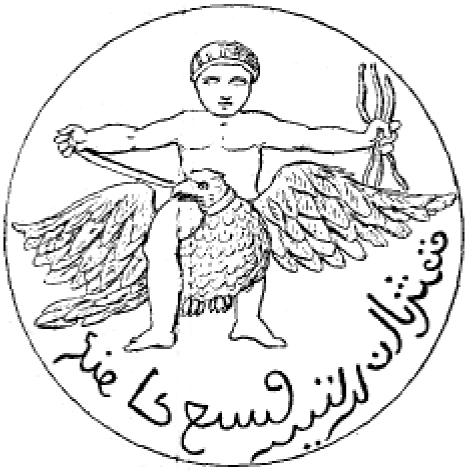


Table II Figure 6

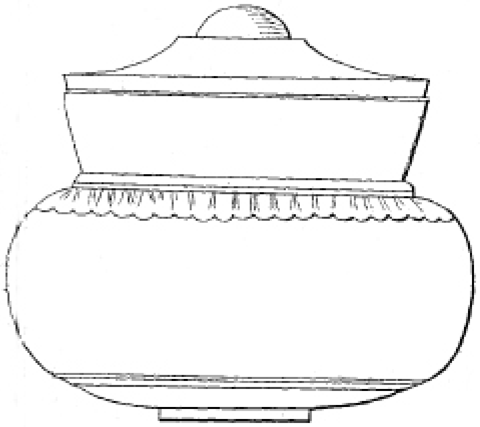


Table II Figure 14

It is well known to everyone that in all the ancient mysteries of Ceres and Liber, both the Elysian as well as the Bacchic, the serpent played the main parts. Hence, through the same serpent the connection, discovered with great difficulty, between the Ophitic and Bacchic orgies will be illustrated by evidence. We learn, indeed, from Clement of Alexandria that a notable likeness of the Bacchic orgies was the serpent, consecrated by the arcane rite.

The serpent and phallus which are handed around in the Bacchic orgies we encounter also in those of the Ophites. The T which Achamoth holds in her hands, and is impressed on her forehead in tab. I, fig. 15, we discern on the bowl (tab. II, fig. 1). It is as if she is upholding the tree of life serpent to represent “genital wisdom.” [This] retained a double meaning (which it already had among the Egyptians): of a Phallus and a key, and these were called, among the Ophites, “tree of life” and “key of Gnosis.”

But it has yet a third significance in Gnostic doctrine, that is to say, it means the boundary of the Gnostic Pleroma, which is called "Horus," the significance of which, as we see from the invocation of the Archons in Origen, had been borrowed from the Egyptian Horus (who, according to Macrobius, is identical to Terminus).[i] This tree of life, which they declared was born from man and from Gnosis, and now they call Gnosis itself, is the key and terminus, the Alpha and Omega of all Gnosis. Therefore, we see it elevated in orgies in imitation of the elevation of the Phallus in Bacchic orgies. Also a similar figure is not only put into the hand of Mother Achamoth, or Mete (see tab. I, fig. 15), but also impressed on her forehead. This symbol thus indicates life, as does the character noted on the foreheads of the elect in Apocalypse 7, verse 3. This T is, therefore, the character of Baphomet and thus, a part for the whole, signified the instrument of life and life-begetting wisdom.

The two main infamous symbols of this most disgraceful form of worship, kteidos (key) and Phallos (Greek), symbolized by the bowl and truncated cross (or T), having been explained, let us continue on to two other symbols portrayed on these bowls. One of these, that is, the sun and moon, is very frequently discerned also in the symbols of Baphomet; the other, namely, the dragon, is encountered in bowls and in sculptures found in the churches of the Templars. The first of these was borrowed from the ancient mysteries; the second is properly Gnostic, and indeed Ophitic.

The sun and moon, as superintendents of generation, have first place in these mysteries, where nothing else was to be treated than the explanation of generation. First there is the sun, which, upon arising (according to Macrobius, Saturnalia Lib I, cap. 17), generates everything by inseminating, producing, nourishing, all in open light. Then there is the moon, which (according to the same Macrobius in Samnium Scipionis, Book I) was the boundary line of life and death, watched over the generation of the secret nature. Therefore, their figures are represented in the alabaster bowl in such a way that the Sun would preside over geniture, and the moon over birth.

Regarding the dragon, it will not be irrelevant for us to say a few words. That quadruped, scaly and rough, with tail twisted back, seems in actual fact to be a crocodile rather than a dragon, and soon you will see that it makes no difference if it is called a crocodile. Since in the sculpture of the bowl (tab. II, fig. 4) it threatens to devour the infant, and since, in the sculptures of the Templar churches the same dragon is represented as swallowing down the infant, we call it a dragon. For according to St. Epiphanius the Ophites taught that the one presiding over this world has the likeness of a dragon. By it souls not having Gnosis are absorbed, and through its tail poured back into this world. We will, however, find below in the explanation by Schoengrad regarding the sculptures of the churches of the Templars an image of such a dragon swallowing down and pouring back the infant. It is sufficient here to notice that that man who, in the relief of the second bowl, drags the infant out of the dragon’s jaw represents a true gnostic who, by pouring Gnosis into the infant, hinders him from being absorbed by the world.

Having cited the very valuable passage from St.

Epiphanius, who teaches us that by the dragon the gnostics understood the one who presides over the world, support for this, too, is found in Origen's Ophitic diagram, in which Leviathan is explained as the dragon, but soon it was confused with Behemoth, or the crocodile. 29) The best witness to this confusion is the book by ibn Wahshiyya called De Alphabetis Incognitis [Concerning Unknown Alphabets],[ii] where he depicts the same figure as the diagram, [with] ten circles. Also depicted is a monster in the form of a scarab, holding these circles so that the anima mundi [soul of the world] may be explained by the name of [Arabic writing] Bafumed. Through the affinity of the word set aside, since we had translated into the English idiom the aforementioned book by ibn Wahshiyya, we thought that that was a corruption of the word Baphomet. But, even if the close correspondence between the word Bafomed and Baphomet is strongly supported, and even if this explanation is much more probable than that trite one considering Baphomet to be a corruption of Mahomet [Muhammad], it can still be supported by no valid argument, and thus we should yield to the explanation that all our inscriptions, Arabic and Latin, bear on themselves the name Mete. The inscriptions put this beyond any shadow of doubt.

Now that the explanation of all the figures and symbols on the bowls has made completely clear the true sense of "father" and "mother" (that is, Jaldabaoth and Achamoth), as well as of the chalice and truncated cross, the stars and the dragon, we will very briefly speak about the orgies themselves there mentioned. All three Ophite sacraments -- baptism, eucharist, and marriage, or rather, the most unspeakably evil profanation of those sacraments -- is exhibited in these three bowls. As to the fiery baptism in a burning bowl (tab. I, fig. 14 and tab. II, fig. 3) into which we see the infant placed, we have treated that above. Also the eucharist, where the Ophites engage in kissing serpents, we have explained out of passages from the [Church] Fathers. It remains for us to say a few words about spiritual marriage, which is represented in the third bowl. Irenaeus and Tertullian speak about this spiritual marriage of the Gnostics who thus point to the general conflagration of the Stoics,[iii] and we perceive (See tab. II, Fig. 2) that [very thing], along with all other nuptial ceremonies, in the third bowl, where a bed is formed by the flaming ritual fire.

Therefore, having explained the primitive sense of the bowl and the chalice in the mysteries, we think a few words should be said regarding its figurative significance, used as a symbol of society, or etairias (Greek). No one is ignorant of the fact that the bowl or chalice in the most ancient mysteries and religious institutions is also a symbol of a banquet of food and drink, and in the same sense accepted even today among all orders of Dervishes. This is confirmed by the most lucid testimony, through the naming of the bowl Osiris received into heaven, which today among the Orientals is called (Arabic writing) Kasei Dervischan, that is, the "cup of the Dervishes." It is well known that this argument is confirmed by sculptures of the Schoengraberian church, where six bowls placed next to each other seem reasonably to indicate six communities of Templars. Also the passage from Assemanus,[iv] communicated to us by the most reverend and most learned

Bishop Münter,[v] testifies that the chalice was a symbol of the Templars. also those sepulchers which were discovered, with cups, [perhaps goblets] in Sicily, were of the Templars (see tab. III, fig. 13).

After these things there remains no doubt that the most celebrated bowl of the Middle Ages, under the name of the Holy Grail, signifies nothing but a symbol of the Templar community and of Gnostic wisdom. The entire fable, known by the name Titurel, gives support to this assertion. You will see there the temple constructed by Titurel to the Holy Grail in Monsalvaz (Mount Salvation). Its safe-keeping was given to the Templar knights (die Tempeleise), who defended it with their own blood and, through fighting for it, they wandered throughout the whole world. Should you seek to discover the place where the most Holy Grail can be found, one always returns to the Orient, and the mystical exaltation which the poem of Titurel breathes as often as it celebrates this chalice in eulogia, proves that something abstruse and arcane is to be understood. The total temple built by Titurel boasts of such ornaments that greatly favor our supposition. Among these ornaments appear also tablets of Mete (Meteteaveln) and the mystical curtain brought down from heaven by an angel, which also is described in Titurel, and is observed today in sculptures of the church of the Templars at Altenburg and Berchtolsdorf (see on tab. III, fig, 5). The sense of this one may gather below, where we will treat these symbols one by one.

But if as the Holy Grail the mystic chalice be understood as a symbol of the gnostic Sophia, it is sufficiently clear what the round tablet signifies; for from the statues published by Münter we know that the number twelve is special in all regions of the Templars. Twelve were the electors who, with the one presiding, would elect a new chief; twelve were the dignitaries of the great order; twelve were the seniors of the order of which their first senate consists; twelve were the Balliae in the Orient; and the same number, as it seems, were the provinces in Europe. Therefore, it is reasonable to represent the Knights of the Round Table over whom Arthur presided to be none other than twelve seniors, or “Archons” of the Templars. And we believe it ought to be understood that, under the custody of the Holy Grail, those brothers of the militia, as custodians of the Gnostic chalice, were initiated into the gnostic mystery of iniquity.

NOTES

[i] Terminus was a Roman God of boundary markers, represented in statue as a boundary stone showing a man from the waist up. These were almost identical with the “herms” of antiquity, ithyphallic and goat-horned representations of Hermes/Pan/Priapus that also served as boundary markers.

[ii] This book was translated into English by Hammer-Purgstall himself and published under the name Ancient Alphabets and Hieroglyphic Characters Explained.

[iii] The Stoics believed that everything, including the cosmos as a whole, went through cycles that ended in ultimate destruction through fire, and that the world would end in what they called the “Great Conflagration.”

[iv] Eighteenth-century Lebanese Orientalist Giuseppe Simone Assemani, who served as librarian at the Vatican Library.

[v] Danish cleric and scientist Frederic Munter allegedly discovered Secret Rule of the Knights Templar in the Vatican archives, which he copied. These were later published in 1877 by Theodore Merzdorff, who himself had encountered them somehow in the library of a Masonic lodge in Hamburg, Germany.

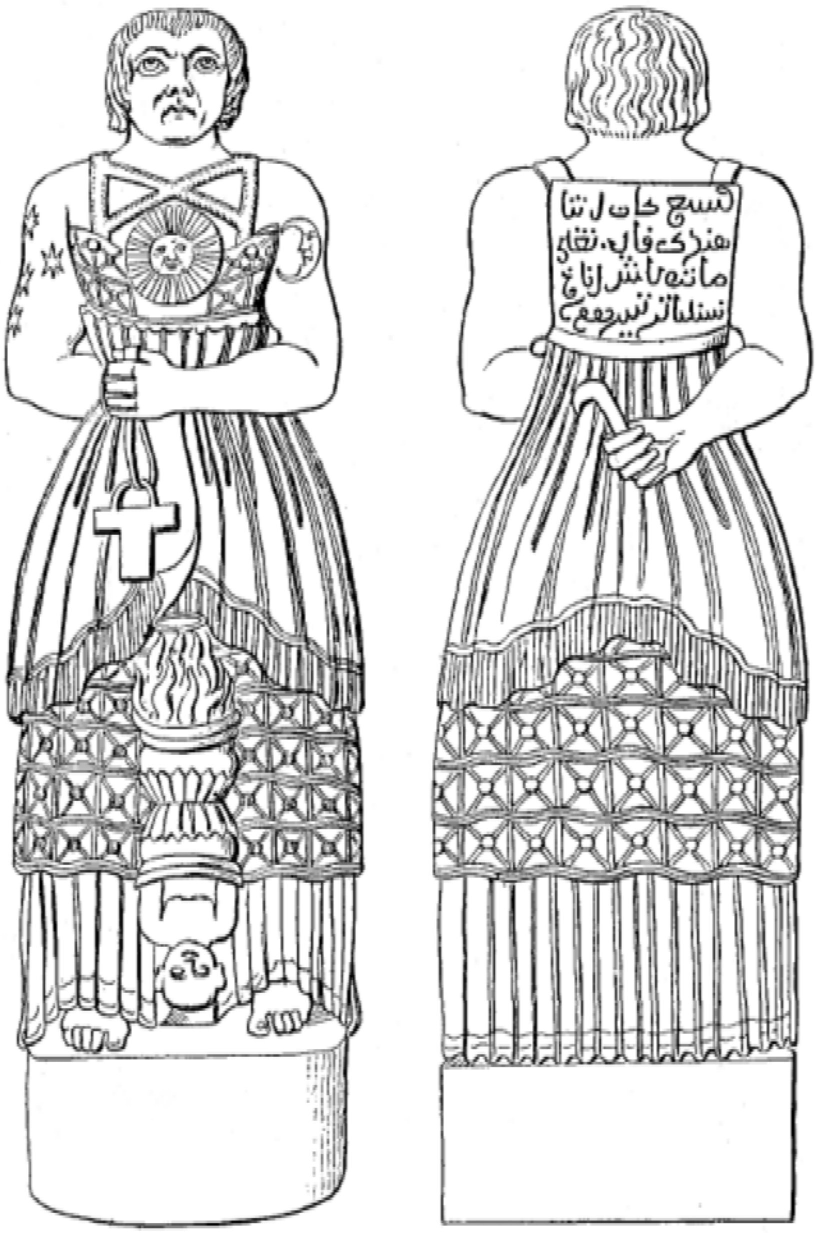


Table I, Figures 15 and 16.

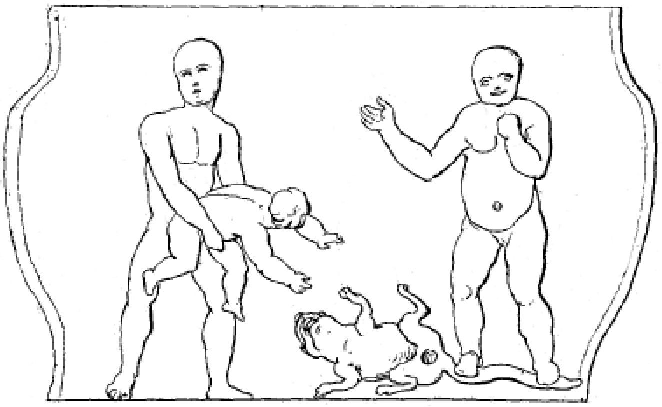


Table II, Figure 4

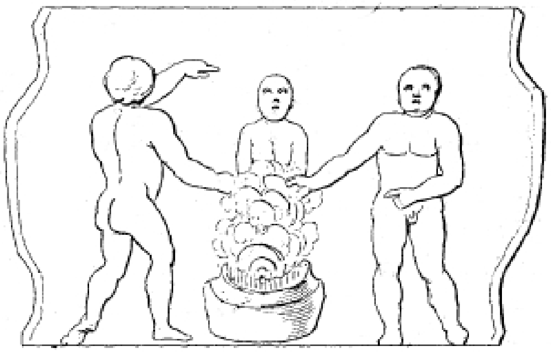


Table II Figure 3

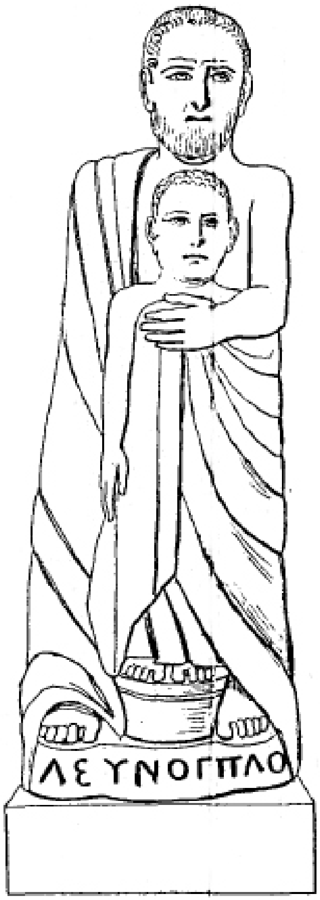


Table I, Figure 14

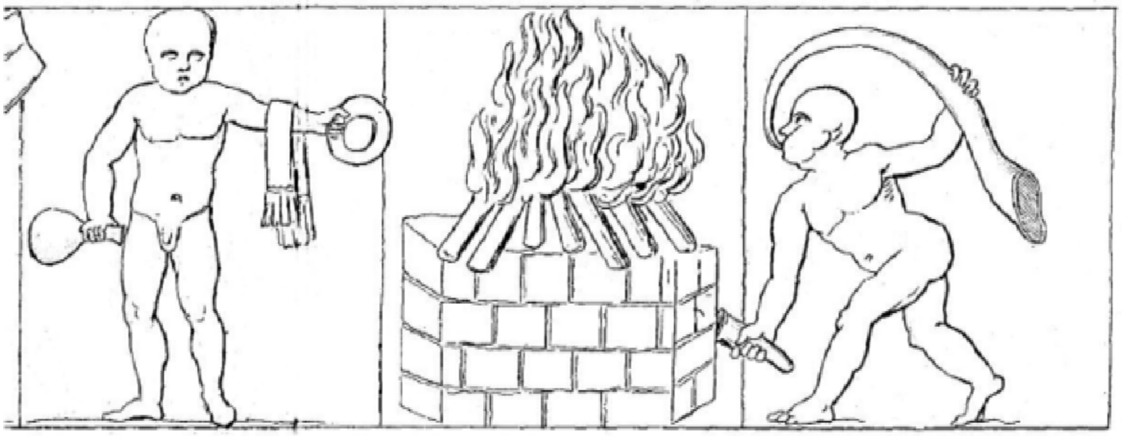


Table II, Figure 2 (partial)

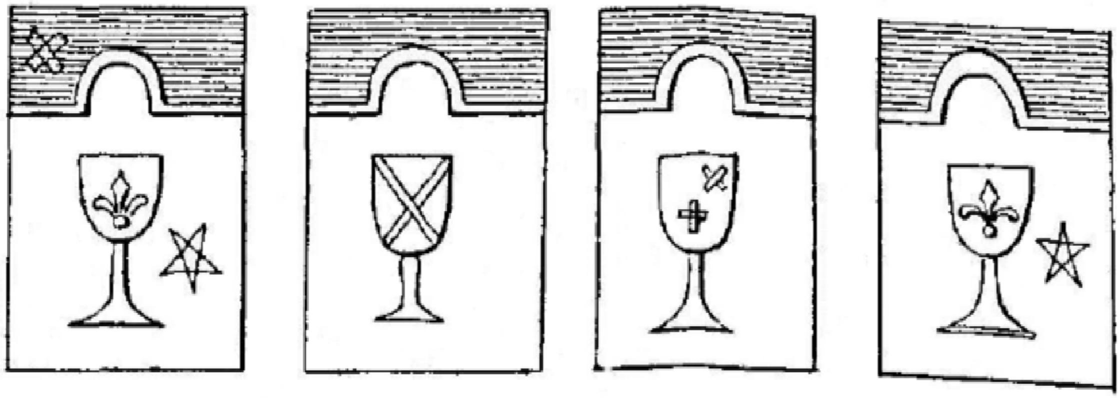


Table III, Figure 13

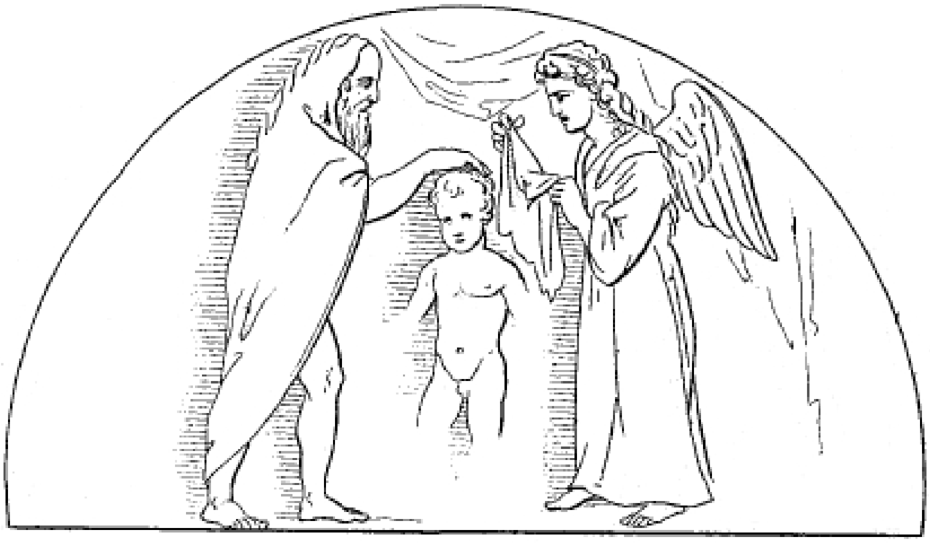


Table II, Figure 5

On sculptures existing in churches of the Brotherhood of Temple Militia

There exist in numerous churches of the Brotherhood of Temple Militia sculptures and hieroglyphic figures which, since they agree in large measure with the symbols of idols and bowls, promote full faith in all that we have said regarding Baphomet and cups. Even if, in thoroughly scrutinizing such sculptures, even those found beyond the boundaries of the Austrian Empire, we engaged in sweaty labor, up to now no notices, even very obscure ones, have come through to us. It is altogether probable that up to now many monuments of the Templars exist in boxes, as is the case with idols, or on walls as bas-reliefs, which up to now have been hidden or ignored. If they were brought to light, they would supply new arguments to everything already said about this material, and what is yet to be said as well.

Therefore, we at this time will talk only about the sculptures in the seven Templar churches which, up to now, have escaped the ravages of time. Of these, three were discerned in Austria (Schoengraberian, Waltondorfensis and Berchtoldorfensis), one in Hungary in the city Deutschaltenburg, one is in the village of Murau in Bohemia two others (one Pragae, the other Egrae). In Styria, which to us is Fatherland, it is established in many places that the Brotherhood of Temple Militia resided there. However, no sculptures remain in the churches, and pictures in the tower of Neukirch in the Cilleiensi district were removed by a deacon of that place hardly ten years ago.

The Schoengraber Church

Among all of these the principal monuments, preserved in an amazing way through a period of five centuries among so very many calamities, is the church in the village of Schoengraber, built on the public road leading from Vienna to western Moravia, near the towns of Dietrichsdorf and Sitzendorf, where the principal habitations of the Brotherhood of the Temple Militia are mentioned in their history. But so many sculptures are enumerated in the Schoengraber Church that a person could not engrave them on this bronze. But it is not only the high number that hinders publication of them all. Some of them (located so high up that, without aid of a ladder, they escape being seen) depict the most obscene and disgraceful acts.

Out of these, therefore, we exhibit only the lower series so as to strengthen our argument. But by throwing in a brief description of the upper series of sculptures, we leave their true natural effigy to the editors of things Spintherian and Freemasonic of the Middle Ages. Besides obscenities and things disgraceful, this series of images [omission in Latin text] and therefore adds less weight to the accumulation of our arguments, since besides the heads of Mete and Jaldabaoth (the one serene and beautiful, the other fierce and ugly; the one angelic, the other diabolical) more phantasmal things are present, which, even if indeed they do not lack a certain arcane sense, up to now our studies keep working toward demonstrating the same thing in the present. The bas-reliefs of the Schoengraber Church have achieved considerable prominence and up to now are well-preserved, including two series' of images, which from the posterior part of the church adorn on the outside a semicircular sacristy beautifully constructed out of square stones, so that each series might exhibit the system as complete. The lower one is to be viewed from left to right; the higher one from right to left. And since in this semicircular building there are three windows, the walls of which are made conspicuous, the work of the entire iconism is divided into three parts, so that there were three stations in the upper series and the same number of stations in the lower one.

Lower Series

In three stations three bas-relief images are contained, of which the first one represents the origin and start, the second the progress and development, the third the goal and triumph of Gnosis (that is, of the arcane doctrine of the Templars), so that after the symbols of the Ophites and of other Gnostics have been explained, there can be no doubt about the true sense of the images. We see, then, the history of the lapse of the first parents accomplished, to which certain things were added (but nothing pertinent to Biblical understanding) to be explained only from the figments of the Gnostics. For Eve is not veiled, as modesty would demand, but by her own hand is thoroughly laid bare and, in addition to the serpent, also a dog assaults her. The serpent embraces both the dog and Eve's arm with its winding coils. Whispering in her ear, he contrives the temptation, to which, easily yielding, with her other hand she displays the apple to Adam. Charmed, he is hindered by an ugly figure whose face bore the resemblance of the Devil. But if considered from a different angle, it cannot be denied that it bears some similarity to the head of Christ, crowned with thorns. This is Jaldabaoth, or Sabaoth, who, according to the doctrine of the Gnostics, tried to prevent Adam from yielding to seduction by the serpent, who, through Gnosis, that is, carnal knowledge, tried to show the way to Mother Achamoth. (See the sketch of this iconism at tab, III, fig. 1)

In the middle station a Templar, or Gnostic, is seen sitting on a throne, with his right hand blessing or swearing; in his left hand bearing a scepter. The throne at its base sits on that monstrous dragon whom we have come to know from the bas-reliefs of the second bowl, where the infant is threatened with absorption, and lest there be a hint of doubt that that dragon is the same about which Epiphanius speaks as a Gnostic symbol of the one who presides over the world, (who absorbs and again spits out every man not imbued with Gnosis), in this place a double infant can be seen, of whom one adheres to the jaws; the other, through the lower part of the body, is cast out by means of withdrawal. (See tab. III, fig. 2.) This is the dragon whom the Templars, having sculpted on their graves, trampled underfoot in the London temple. This, finally, is the same dragon who, at the time of establishment of the Brotherhood of the Temple Militia, came out of Gnostic fabrications on the life of St. George, and with him, but without the infant, transferred into the British Shield. Also, for sure the Gnostic dragon absorbing the infant gave rise to the serpent Viscount, who up to the present can be seen in the seals of Milan. The hand blessing or swearing and the lily-bearing scepter present the same figure, just as on the most ancient coins of the Middle Ages, Emperors and bishops sitting on thrones are depicted blessing and ruling the world. The scepter here signifies world rulership. The figures standing by the throne indicate peoples bringing as a gift to a Templar or Gnostic (or, if you will, to the Order of the Temple or to the Gnosis sitting on the throne) fruits and animals of the earth (grain and egg). From various places of Scripture it is to be conjectured that the Gnostics thought that the right hand showing two fingers down and three raised meant a person possessed a certain secret and peculiar virtue. We believe those places have been perversely twisted to favor their opinion so that the Lord's right hand has performed virtue was engraved on the law's sepulcher (in Seelaender pag. 112 tab. B), where the right hand performing blessing covers the upper part of the cross so that, truncated, it might exhibit the figure T, that is, the sign of Baphomet. Scriptural too are such texts as: With a strong hand God led you out of Egypt (Exodus 3:10). I will send my hand and strike the Egyptians and the hand of the Lord will be upon your cattle (Exodus 9:22).

At the third station (tab. III, fig 3), we see a lion whom a Templar slaughters, with the assistance of three dogs, of which one grabs the lion from behind. This is the triumph of Gnosis, or of the spiritual Ophitic doctrine, over the religion of the God Sabaoth, who among the Gnostics is named Jaldabaoth, and under the form of a lion or a dragon, is trampled underfoot. You will trample the lion and dragon. Here, though, it is no longer trampled to signify contempt (which the Templars portray by trampling the cross), but now it is slaughtered by a Templar, with the assistance of a guide, who everywhere in these sculptures hints at the mystical and infamous kiss, by which Templars, in reception, kiss the spine at the rear. You see such a dog at the rear of a genuflecting idol (borrowed from the little book of curiosities and here delineated in tab. I, fig. 4), in which we recognize a Gnostic or Templar, who by means of a dog adhering to the posterior parts, indicates nothing other than the most disgusting outrage of the Templars. Hence, it is reasonable that by the cat, about which there is repeated mention in the accusation of the Templars, a puppy or dog is signified.

Through this slaughtered lion is made known what is the meaning of the ax and the lion's skin exhibited on the idols and bowls of the temple. The ax is exhibited as the instrument for killing the lion (see at the base of two-headed Baphomet tab. I, fig. 9 and in the procession of the mystic wedding on the second bowl in tab. II, fig. 2), just as the lion skin, a trophy of the lion already slaughtered, is tied around the limbs of the idols as a cloak. Even if the ax was already is circulated in the most ancient mysteries of the Good Goddess, and the cloak was already in use among the Essenes, the chief sense of the Freemasonic cloak, as in this cloak of the Templars, is to be noticed in the Essenic one. See, therefore, here in three bas-reliefs of the lower series the origin, progress and end of Gnosis, or of the arcane doctrine of the Templars, cunningly depicted through hieroglyphic images of the tree of life, of the Templar sitting on the throne and of the slaughtered lion.

The Upper Series

Even if it is not the purpose of this book to explore and explain all of the sculptures, since very many Freemasonic ornaments may be seen in the same place, nonetheless, let there be a brief mention of things which can contribute to confirming our arguments. As the lower order of sculptures, progressing from left to right, exhibits the entire symbolic history of Gnosis and of the Templar order, in similar fashion the upper system of bas-reliefs, proceeding from right to left, relates the biography of the Gnostic or Templar from infancy to death.

At the first station is discerned a boy, a future Ophite or Gnostic Templar, immodestly fondling a bear, an animal so addicted to this vice that among the Arabs is circulated a proverb [Arabic words]. To prevent this, and to claim the nursling for himself, the Templar charges forward with a lance in order to pierce the bear through and to lead the infant over to his own enticements, at which the abovementioned dog not obscurely hints. On the other hand, the boy, now having become an adolescent, resists the flatteries of the girl, who has tried to entice him by offering him flowers. Among these two erotic sculptures of early youth and adolescence, the top of vaulted stone with a square covering represents the Order of the Temple, to which adhere two Templars dressed in the robe of the order, and girded about, indicating the true support of their future life to be the angular stone and the door-key of the Gnostic edifice. The Freemasonic ornaments about this station agree very well with the Bacchic sense of the same form, composed from grape clusters and vine foliage, with phalluses intermixed (placed so high up that from the lower part they are difficult to discern), all of which are perceived to be, up to now, well preserved.

The station which is the middle of the upper series is just as the first, divided into three parts. Instead of a human or angelic head for Gnosis, or the temple order, there is a diabolical head there, that of Jaldabaoth, who draws to himself from one hand the feminine (Mete), from the other a Templar, struggling, and thus is a figure of tribulations and adversities by which Gnosis and its followers are attacked by Jaldabaoth. Another Templar, in flight and more fortunate, snatches himself free buy sitting on a lion that carries him off, as if fully tamed and obedient to him. From another standpoint, there corresponds to this fleeing Templar a dolphin (as it seems) in collusion with a bird so that its head can be absorbed by it. Since the lower part of the dolphin is cut off and only its upper part remains, one cannot assert what animal is represented there, although the same figures of a dolphin and a bird (indeed, a dove) in collusion and kissing one another are noticed on the golden cross of the Templars, preserved in the treasury of August Prince Archduke Anton, Supreme Leader of the Teutonic Knights.

The third station, divided into three parts, exhibits the abundant supply of all the figures. In the topmost stone of the vault, the keystone, the same head is perceived, with a magisterial cover, which we already saw at the first station, with two hands extended, of which the left hand swears or blesses. The right hand holds up a book (surely, of the new gnostic law, or of the arcane doctrine of the Templars).

On the right-hand side, where the book is, veiled Mete holds in her bosom the infant, to whom she holds out the fruit of the tree of Gnosis, namely, the apple. However, lest, in such a number of profane figures, that woman might be held to be the virgin mother of God, the total character of the veil, refers to it as belonging to the idols, and holds forth the twisted neck chains in which we recognize the gilded attire, which, according to the articles of accusation against the Templars, bears an idol at the neck. Next to the hand performing blessing there are placed mystical vases or bowls in diverse order, namely: three in a series; two up above and one separately. Their meaning remains hidden, but these individual bowls, already having been understood as a symbol for mystical societies, perhaps here indicate ballias, or chapter houses of the Brotherhood of Temple Militia, which are governed by this chair of order in Austria. Or, if you will, even here is to be sought a gnostic sense of a six-fold group, which already among the Pythagoreans was called the "genital number" and that of "marriage mates." According to the Gnostics, however, Jaldabaoth commanded the six virtues (that is, archons, which exactly correspond to Amschaspands[i] of the Magi) to form man. The same world, too, was created in six days, with reference to these six mystic bowls, which signify vessels of generation.

The middle station having been sufficiently explained, finally, we will turn, first, to the right, then to the left. You see on the right a woman veiled, with an infant, such as we have seen earlier on the idols, her head covered, with an infant. The demon Jaldabaoth tries to drag, by hand, this woman sitting on a chair, or to pull her to himself. With the other hand, however, and holding a trident from three human heads, which were piled in a basket along with other things, another trident is selected. If this woman, head covered, is to be recognized as Mete, what is the meaning of these three heads? Although I do not affirm it for certain, I think, nonetheless, it can be conjectured that, perhaps, these heads are the founders of the Mosaic, Christian and Islamic religions, which in serving the god Sabaoth, or Jaldabaoth, make known among mankind his form of worship, and therefore were designated by the non-believers of that age, when this church was built, as the three imposters.

On the left side is exhibited the end of a Templar's life, already dead and lying on the ground, with the Archangel Michael holding a judgment scale and weighing his deeds. The scale, on which were placed apples, desserts and other blandishments of the senses, and by which the Ophitic Templar's life is represented, descending to the Earth, shows that the judgment of Michael favors him, because in order to hinder Jaldabaoth, he tries to depress the other, ascending, part of the scale. This allegory of the scale of judgment about which we discoursed more fully in our commentary (page 288, Volume 5) corresponds very well to the total doctrine of the Gnostics, since, as we have seen above, the serpent, called by the Gnostics Michael, carries out the details of judgment in this way: Thinking, in the day of judgment, about the life of the Templar, or

Gnostic, he accepts all of his disgraceful deeds as good works. In this way [goes] the cycle of a Gnostic's life, whom we see being educated towards Gnosis, that is the doctrine of "genital wisdom," from the earliest years of infancy. Thenceforth, we see him hounded by Jaldabaoth. He is, with the death of the same and the final judgment, terminated, and this double series of bas-reliefs, declares the double history of a Gnostic and of Gnosis, or of a Templar and of the entire order.

Besides these aforementioned bas-reliefs, in the sanctuary of the church itself, lions' feet were discerned sculpted, which are symbols of Jaldabaoth [and], as his footsteps here, are terrifying. In the four corners the four Evangelists were represented with considerable ridicule, under the figure of three animals and a demon (instead of an angel). In a dwelling pertaining to the deacon, from the region of the church, three bas-reliefs of Templars, inserted into the walls of the ruins of the chapter houses (now a cellar and wine cellar) are noted to have been brought over here. Dressed with the solemn habit, a sword is in one of his hands, and in the other he holds the sign of Baphomet (namely, a phallus; that is, the key of Gnosis, hidden under the sign T).

2. Church of the Templars of Waltendorf

Where the mountains descend into the plain Tayensen, the church of Waltendorf arises, to which not only sculptures but also the idols having two heads, (which in the year 1792 were unearthed out of a subterranean location previously unknown) testify their belonging to the Templars. These idols, partly wood, partly pottery, partly stone, are believed by the diggers to be the work of devils, and having been thrown into that place, were a childish plaything, as many yet living will affirm. From their description it can easily be ascertained that these idols were nothing but ones of Baphomet. From the south side of this church can be discerned a wall brought to a completion, which (as will soon be proved) evidences that the fragments are of a cloister built on the south side. Finally, outside on the wall various bas-reliefs have been inserted, of which three, according to the Eislianam) delineation and explanation (which you can read about more fully in Archiv fur Geographie Historie Staats – und Kriegskunst, Number 44, 45) is to be discerned here. (See tab III, fig. 14, 15, 16.) You will see in the same place a Templar knight who holds in one hand a branch or a flaming sword, in the other a staff in the form of the Baphometic sign T, then a dog (fig. 14), and finally the Templar himself (whose ceremonial hat is the same as that of the idols), clothed with the skin of a lion already slaughtered, sitting in the form of an extended tub and fondling his penis. All three of these, the T, the dog and the lion, are mere symbols of the Templars and Ophites.

3. Berchtolsdorf Church

In the village of Berchtolsdorf, commonly called Petersdorf, which is no more than two hours distant from Vienna, there is a church and chapter-house together with the ruins of a cloister, so well-preserved that it is a wonder how they endured for so many centuries amidst so many and so great calamities from and sieges by the Turks. In this church, built in Gothic style, no sculptures were noticed, but in the troop of Baphomet a huge T sign is discerned, made up of two large stones, of which one was upright, the other lying across it. On the exterior part of the church above the door, a bas-relief appears, but bruised at the middle, which perhaps can be taken as a likeness of God the Father and of the God-equal Virgin by persons who have not been initiated into the secret doctrine of the Templars. But since the figure bearing the scepter looks like the one in the Schoengraber bas-reliefs, sitting on the dragon, and together with another female has a veil spread out on her head, we think it not absurd that the first woman indicates the Order of Templars, and the second woman indicates Mete.

South of the church there exists up to the present a cloister of the Templars, nearly destroyed, yet very well-preserved as to distribution of the building. With the church at Schoengraber, too, on the south exists a cloister, upon whose foundations we see constructed a lodging house. That this [type of] cloister always arises on the south is no accident, but seems to have been situated there on purpose in imitation of the Jerusalem residence, which, as Willermus Tyrius[ii] testifies, “The king had yielded to them in the palace located on the southern side of the temple.” This type of reason also agrees wonderfully with the placing of the cloister next to the Titurel temple. Hence, is confirmed that the temple in Titurel existed as a paradigm for all Templar churches, or better, to have been decorated by the poet according to their image. 52)

4. The Church at Altenburg

In a town of Hungary, Deutsch-Altenburg, near the boundary of Austria, an ancient Templar church exists in which, similarly above the door, a certain mystic figure is exhibited, the meaning of which can be rightly interpreted from already well-known gnostic fabrications. You see here the masculo-feminine Mete, or Achamoth, dressed in a mystical cloak and bearded, up to whom comes an angel with a veil. Since in the Pleroma, Sophia (Achamoth, Mete) had approached angels, and observing them naked, had blushed for shame, she snatched a veil to cover her head. Therefore, this is the veil offered to her by the angel in this bas-relief, and that is what is so described in Titurel. It cannot be denied that the description was wholly borrowed from a particular Gnostic representation; that is to say, concerning the angel descending from the heavens and bringing the veil, and concerning the female dove, likewise descending, which signified the Holy Spirit. For the Gnostics believed the very same Achamoth to be the Holy Spirit and represented it under the image of a dove.

5. The Church of the Village of St. Martin in Szaladen

On the border of Styria and Hungary, in the district called Murau, from the itinerary of the late illustrious

Count a Teleky[iii] we have found to exist a Templar church adorned with various profane hieroglyphic sculptures and provided with subterranean areas. The sketch of these we had intended to incise onto bronze, along with so many other sculptures which we here exhibit, in hope that after six months during which we left off editing this dissertation, while awaiting these figures (promised by the Most Excellent Count Georgio Festetic), [the dissertation] abiding so long under duress. Finally, after the expiration of a year, we gave up on it being published.

Therefore, concerning this church of St. Martin, bishop of Pomocje, on the peninsula called Murau, we will add here only a few things we were able to learn from the letter of a parish priest, the Rev. Joseph Horvath, through a friend.

That this was once a Templar church is proved by the fact that its daughter church of New Duor (Ui Udvar), distant from it by only a quarter hour, at one time had been of the same association, and had flourished up to the year 1277 CE, according to the testimony of Szentivany (in dissert. Paralip. Catal. 44). The predicted New Curia, which pertained to the church of St. Martin as a daughter to her mother, was given a praeceptor [teacher] subject to the Priory of the Gold Cloister in Croatia. Also, in the time of Father Augustine Gazotti, who was constituted bishop of Zagreb, a throng of cross-bearing soldiers, well known according to historians, existed in the Church of the New Curia on the island of Murodravana, above Csaktornyam. The year, which was seen inscribed on the left side of the arched altar in the Church of St. Martin, testifies to some recent repair of it, namely, 1468. However, sculptures certainly a century or two centuries earlier should be compared with the secret doctrine of the Templars. They consist of figures of a red cross of varying size, and of heads (which, whether they bear the stamp of Mete or Jaldabaoth, is difficult to decide from a distance).

As to other Templar churches or cloister residue in Hungary, even though we vigorously busied ourselves looking for them, we have been able to discover nothing certain. This alone is to be noted: Coins (to be illustrated below) found among bronzes in a certain building not far from Csekut (District of Weszprim) testify that this was a Templar building. The people attribute this to a certain order (Vörö Baratok, that is, the “Red Brotherhood”) and in that past year very large stones, on whose face various figures had been sculpted, were converted for use at the mill. Gilded coins found in a pottery jar in the same location are very much the same as the gilded coins extracted from the brick wall of the cloister of Wultendorf, and as the gilded coins found in the ruins of the Templar stronghold at Neunkirchen, in the district of Cellejensi in Styria (also found in a pottery jar). Thus these coins coming forth from the ruins of Templar mansions in Austria, Styria and Hungary, through similarity of type, offer wonderful testimony.

6. The Prague Church

According to the testimony of the principal writers of

Bohemia’s history (who are the following: 1. Continuator Cosmae, 2. Hajek, 3. Paprotzki, 4. Betzkowsky, 5. Gelasius Dobner, 6. Pubitsckka, 7. Voigt, 8. Redel, 9, Pelzel, 10. Rohn, 11. Dubravius, 12. Hammerschmidt), the Prague Temple (with its cloister) began to be built in the name of St. Wencesla by the first king of that name about the year 1249, and was finished in the year 1253. The architect of this was a lay brother by the name ofAnastasius. During a period of 15 years he built diverse Templar temples and inns in the same way, in the places called Tiffenbach, Zwikow, Hluboka, Bürglitz and Stara. In the year 1311, after abolition of the order, the church with its cloister, was transferred, by King John to the Order of the Knights of St. John, and thereafter, under the prior of Berchthold from Henneberg, sold to an order of nuns under the rule of St. Dominic. Since the year 1782, after the abolition of the nuns, the church with its cloister, having been bought, even now is possessed by a knight, according to Schoenfeld--a man very eager for antiquities and most expert in their preservation. There exist in that place most precious monuments of a double genre; that is to say, glass in windows, depicted by the skillful artifice of the Middle Ages, and others on the walls of the cloisters (called in everyday speech Kreuzgang), expressed in colors, which through many centuries lay hidden covered in lime; now, though, with the covering fallen away or corroded, with the colors being quite well-preserved, spread out with oil, they shine. All fifteen glass objects depicted (which you may note at tab. IV, num.13) exhibit the very same figures as certain gilded coins of that age--very singular figures, which not being understood up to now by numismatic specialists, have furnished occasion for various comments. That all of these represent nothing other than Mete we will demonstrate further down in the discourse on numismatics. The twenty-four Freemasonic symbols (in the same tablet noted under letter B) are depicted in the cloister above the wall, in disks, of which the diameter is twelve fingers. That these temple symbols are identical with the Freemasonic ones we will soon prove, noting only that besides the well-known instruments of wall makers, here also occur the sun, moon, stars, sword, truncated cross and seven serpents, all of which, plainly, are Templaric or Ophitic symbols. Concerning the seven serpents, or concerning the water-serpent provided with three heads as a Gnostic symbol, see the mystical ode of the Thebaic Gnostics, wherein the Reverend Bishop and most learned Doctor Münter published many things concerning the Gnostics and Ophites whom, as Templars, he could by no means look upon as innocent.

7. The Egra Church

In this city, there are two very ancient churches on Mt. Castelli that have survived many grievous events of the Middle Ages, most celebrated in Bohemian historical accounts, of which one is higher, the other below it, subterranean. Here, in the time of schism between the Catholic and Reformed religions, they celebrated their sacred rites at the same time. But anciently this was a Templar temple, which had an underground church, as everywhere, for a chapter location. There, in the place of angular stones and keystones for vaulting, are seen the most obscene objects, all of them pertaining to generating, or to Ophitic Gnosis. You see these column ornaments and capitals sculpted in tab. 4. In fig. 31 you see a male and female shamelessly displaying their sex. In fig. 32, Baphometic capitals are exalted to the apex of the columns. In fig. 33 we see Sphinxes, about which there will be discussion below in the numismatic discourse. Meanwhile, you may wish to compare them with tab. 5, nos.19, 30, 31, 45, noting that the shape of these things agrees with that of the gilded coins. Finally, in fig. 34, we see serpents with twisted coils embracing themselves, with dogs' heads such as are seen in figures of Abraxas (see tab. IV, fig. 1, 2, 3, 4) and other Gnostic monuments. You will see under the same number in the lower figure the same bird and serpent, united in one body, playing together with kisses, as are seen in fig. 11 and 12, of which one shows, instead of a serpent, a dolphin as the ornament of the Templar cross preserved in the treasury of the Supreme Magister of the Teutonics. Such figures seem to have been sculpted also in the church of Prague mentioned above, since the bas-reliefs of all of these angular stones, keystones and vaulting were scratched. It is for certain that this is not to be attributed to damage due to the passing of time, but to the pious zeal of nuns who, since they were not able to withdraw these sculptures from view as pictures forgotten due to lime, preferred to destroy them.

After these descriptions of the Templar churches in the Austrian Empire, many of them up to now not yet described, it is permissible to recognize them as such, or at least as the work of the Gnostic Freemasons. Many such things can be seen up to now both in Germany and France. We make special mention, first, of the Erfurt Church and, secondly, of the church at Mount Montholionis, situated at Pictavis.

The Erfurt church of the Templars today belongs to St. Michael, and has been restored after four centuries from the ruins of conflagration. It exhibits no monument of an earlier age, but in other churches of this city, many Freemason monuments occur. Even if these monuments cannot be proved to be of the Templars, we consider them to be noted as Freemasonic ornaments or symbols of this age and, above all, they agree with the Schoengraberian sculptures. You see in the same place a bear who seizes a man, as [happened to] an infant in the Schoengraberian sculptures. There are in that place, on the lofty western pillars, dogs on the outside, and in this church, in place of a female Caryatide figure[iv], a boy standing on his hands, holding up his prokton[v]; finally, on the vault stone we see a certain monstrous figure engaging in the most vile embracing and kissing with an infant (see tab. IV, fig. , 2, 3).

Similar hieroglyphic figures of heads, both of animals and of monsters, according to the testimony of Millinus, occur principally in Pictavis, which was the principal seat of the Templars. The most notable of all is the octagonal church on Mount Montholion, which Montfaucon[vi] attributes to ancient France. But Millinus[vii] restores it to the Middle Age. Among the statues which are seen there, the two sketched here are certainly Ophitic.

IV. On the Doctrine of the Ophites

Although we will now, in explanation of the monuments, touch upon many things regarding the most evil doctrines of all Gnostic sects, for the purpose of explaining the Ophite system [in particular], as it is found in the writings of the [Church] Fathers, here we shall only briefly expound upon it. Hence, we will go over these subjects quickly, so as to demonstrate the connection between Ophitic orgies and the most ancient mysteries.

No one, indeed, doubts that the doctrine of the Ophites was only a sect of the Gnostics and a heresy from heresies (Irenaeus, Epiphanius, and Theodoretus). Therefore many things about which the most weighty historians of the Ophites are silent, are to be found in [the Fathers'] general comments about Gnostics, and especially out of the history of the Valentinians. Truly there are passage written [by the Church Fathers] about the general system of the Gnostics that add clarity to many of the things being discovered in our monuments. For the sake of brevity, those who find our explanations insufficient must thoroughly read Mosheim's history of the Ophites[viii]. In the first place, we believe that a matter to be investigated is that the correct interpretation of the word Gnoseos (which in the Scriptures signifies true wisdom), has been wickedly distorted. Of no concern to us is anything about Gnostic Neoplatonism, whose spiritual system is expounded in the Apocryphal books of St. Hermes Trismegistus; nor anything about a Gnostic Christian, who, in the Stromata books [by Clement of Alexander] is presented as the perfect ectypon of wisdom; nor anything about heretical Christians. We are only concerned with the most wretched Ophite Gnostics, who, since they trample Christ, in absolutely no way are to be called Christians. Their doctrine, taken from beliefs of the most ancient mythology of the Greeks, Phoenicians, and Egyptians, expands with its fictions the old doctrine of oriental philosophy, and pollutes in every way the true Bible text so that, therefrom, a certain unspeakable monster issues forth.

If you wish to go back to the true origin of Ophitic doctrine, you can derive it easily from Tautus [Thoth] himself, who, according to Eusebius, first introduced the worship of serpents. In the most ancient religions of all nations the serpent plays principal parts, as in the Indian, Orphic, and Druidic systems. However, many who inquired into the origin of serpent worship (as very recently [did] the most learned English Mythologist [George Stanley] Faber in The Origin of Pagan Idolatry) failed sufficiently to distinguish the double meaning of the serpent, since the principle of evil, Typho, is represented by the dragon, and the principle of good, Agathodaimon [good demon], or Nous [mind], is represented by the serpent. Now, the investigation into the origin of the Ophitic doctrine having been, for the time being, set aside, we will undertake to expound the system of the Gnostics:

Butho, that is, the bottomless pit, the First Father, called Aeon, Proarchon and Perfect, was cohabiting with Ennoia, otherwise called Kharis, otherwise Syge. From them proceeds Nous (Mind), who was called Second Father, and Arche, and Monogenes, and First Son and

Truth. These generated Logos, that is, the Word, and Zoen, that is, Life. Out of these arose the First Man and the First Church, the prototypes of the [human] first man and of the Church on earth.

Out of this ideal ogdoas [group of eight], whose seat is the Pleroma, that is, out of fullness, or the spiritual universe, so called, ten other Aeons proceeded, again twelve, so that the number of them [eventually became] thirty. The last of these was Sophia, that is, wisdom, or holy spirit, who among diverse Gnostic sects bearing diverse names was also called Achamoth, Prunicos, Barbelot, Noria, and Enthyhmesis. This ultimate masculo-feminine Aeon, wishing to learn about the First Father, wasted away in this desire for knowledge and cognition, and would have been dissolved, except that, in order to emend this most miserable cupidity, Horus had come up to Terminus [the end] of all things, displayed under the image of a cross, crying out, Iao! The end of carnal desire was, therefore, the cross, otherwise called Horus, otherwise Fundamentum and Lytrottes (that is, dissolving), Carpities (that is, fruit-bearing), Horothetes (that is, the end of punishment), and Metagoges (that is, the conductor).

Sophia. struck down at the clamor. Iao withdrew into the Pleroma. But Enthymesis (that is, intelligence, or better, his will), which had indulged the desire of acquiring cognition of the Father, went into exile outside of the Pleroma, that is, the seat of the Aeons, and then was called no longer Enthymesis, but Achamoth. This masculo-feminine [deity], even the same one called Metropater by the Ophitic, was accepted as one and the same Aeon.

This woman, aflame with desire for getting cognition of Christ, leaped forth, as previously mother Sophia, driven by the desire to get cognition of the Father, had also done. Christ ran to meet her, as to the mother of Horus, crying out Jao! Struck down by this outcry, she generated matter so that out of her tears and laughter came forth water. Along with Christ, to whom she was said to be converted, she was a light to the nations. Christ then left on Earth an only-begotten Paraclete. He, together with angels, came to Enthymes, already called Achamoth, who, when she saw the Paraclete and nude angels, became filled with shame, and covered herself with a veil. Finally, out of shame she generated all existing things, material, animal and spiritual. She also generated a Demiurge, who also was called the Third Father, that is, counting from the First Father (Bytho), and Second Father (Monogene [only-begotten]).

This son of Achamoth, situated outside of the Pleroma, (the seat of the perfect Aeons) founded the world, distinctions being made between animal and material substances, and the sevenfold order of the heavens, which is called Sabbath in opposition to Pleroma. This Demiurge, or the creator of the heavens and of the earth, named Jaldabaoth, or Sebaoth, with six Archons, his sons, and with Mother Sophia, established the second Ogdoas, the lower one, according to the paradigm of the upper Ogdoas. From the liquid of Mother Sophia’s tears, the Demiurge formed man, both animal and human. He did this not by himself, but was assisted by six archonic virtues, his sons, whom he called upon to help him create man using these words: Come! Let us make man in our image. Once having been formed, the Demiurge, endowed with only demonic virtue and not knowing the Supreme God (Monogenes), acting in haughtiness, saying: I am Father and God Sabaoth [of armies, hosts], and besides me [there is] no God. Mother Achamoth, though, hearing these things, responded to him: I do not want to lie, Jaldabaoth, for above you is Anthropus (the first man of the Pleroma) and the son of Anthropus.

Having formed man, Jaldabaoth (with his six helpers) inspired him with part of the divine light, of which he himself was full. Therefore, the man, immediately endowed with mind, began to give thanks to the First Man in the Pleroma (that is, to the true only begotten God), no longer reverencing the fabricator Jaldabaoth and his six helpers.

This doctrine of the Valentinians and of other Gnostics concerning the Pleroma and the upper ogdoas seems to have been given less attention by the Ophites, who directed their attention more to the lower ogdoas, who were time and again involved in altercations happening between Jaldabaoth and his mother, Achamoth, after the creation of man. No doubt, Jaldabaoth, envious of the particle of light in the man he had formed, decided to withdraw the light from him through the woman. That the mother might prevent this, she drew herself down into the twelve parts of the serpent, who was also known as the son of Jaldabaoth. Through him she persuaded Eve that, contrary to the precept of Jaldabaoth, she should seduce Adam into eating the fruit of the tree of life and knowledge, and that the new awareness gained thereby would show him the way to Mother Achamoth.

Now that this very brief exposition of the Gnostic and Ophitic system is completed, all of the symbols expressed in our idols representing Mother Achamoth, or Mete, will be explained singularly and collectively with a fresh interpretation in new light. Of these, we will address the twelve principal ones each individually. Separately, we have seen to their being incised on bronze, so that their arcane symbolism and its connection with with all of the symbols of the Freemasons might appear in clearer light. Aside from the palm branch, the Calvary and the sword, (three things common to the Ophite Templars and the Freemasons), the twelve principal symbols in sequence are: 1. Truncated cross, 2. bowl. 3. Serpent, 4. veil, 5. Chain, 6. Girdle, 7. rod, 8. Book, 9. Sevenfold candelabrum, 10. Sun, 11. Moon, 12. Stars.

1. Truncated cross, which, as we have explained, signifies both a phallus and a key.
2. Mystical chalice
3. Serpent, guide to true Gnosis, indicates the most filthy licentiousness, through bending (similar to contorted inner parts) and because of astuteness, was named Cosmocrator (Ruler of the World).
4. The mystic veil by which Achamoth, having seen the nudity of the angels, covered her head. The significance of this veil among the Freemasons (through the passage of time being poorly understood) was that it was believed to indicate the veil of the temple, as also the tassels hanging from the phallus were interpreted as the fringe of the veil. (see tab. I, fig. 9, 10, 11, 12, 13).
5. The hermetic chain, [seen] as a collar going around the neck of Mete (see tab. I, fig. 1, 6).
6. The girdle of Mete, made from the skin of a slaughtered

lion, signifying the abolished worship of Jaldabaoth (see tab. I, fig. 2, 6).

7. The rod, by which the orgies of a wedding are preceded, and the ax, with which the lion is to be slaughtered (see tab. II, fig. 2 and tab. III, fig. 3).
8. The sevenfold candelabra, also a symbol of the old worship to be extinguished, and, in Ophitic orgies we see it extinguished (see tab. II, fig. 1).
9. The book of the new law, or the codex of arcane doctrine (Ophitic, Templaric , Freemasonic) (see tab. II. Fig. 1).
10. The sun, moon and stars on idols and bowls of men who generate [ithyphallic fertility idols] are symbols of the new doctrine. This star symbol is called by the French Freemasons etoile flamboyante [“flaming star”]. It is the same thing referred to by the Teutonic term signatstern[ix], which name, according to the inscription of the Templars, to be cited below, means distinguished is Mete’s charity, according to the view prevalent today (see tab. II, fig. 5, 7, 8).

Since these symbols are still in use among the Freemasons even today, and since much concerning their origin has been thoroughly looked into, it is proved that many of them are very ancient and already were used in various mysteries of the ancients.

1. It is clear from the writings of the Freemasons that, among them, the hammer took the place of the truncated cross, which signifies a phallus and key (see Signatstern I, 266, II, 180, 190, III. 193, and 262). The true sense of this hieroglyphic note, has already been discussed above.

2. The symbolism of the bowl is seen as the same by today's Freemasons as it was by the [Church] Fathers [writing about the Gnostics] Fathers (see Signatstern I, p. 327). We have described two or three such bowls in the treasury preserved at the Imperial-Royal palace, and two or three of them are seen in the sculptures of the Schoengraberian Templar temple. In the Sibylline mysteries we found both the vessel called Cernos, and the cymbal, out of which one drank (Clement of Alexandria, Protrepticus, p. 14).
3. The Belt, which among the Freemasons designates the unity of the brotherhood, and was accepted among the Templars in the same sense by that most vile society. Also, no one is ignorant that both from the most distant antiquity up to the present, among the Brahmins and Magi, the belt is held as a most holy and mystical bond. See in the writings of the Farsis about the Costi (from which the Cestus[x] is to be derived), and in the Brahmin system described by Fr. Paulinus[xi], what things are said about this belt.
4. The veil by which Achamoth or Mete covers her head, we think refers to Pherecydes Peplon[xii], of which Origen (Against Celsus VI, 621) and Clement of Alexandria (Stromata VI, 621) make mention. Under these fables lie, we don't doubt, a most ancient tradition regarding man's fall through the serpent, and concerning the veil which Eve, coming out of paradise, required for covering nudity. These beliefs of Pherecydes, confused with traditions of Scripture, seem to have given to the Gnostics occasion for inventing fables regarding the veil by which Achamoth, upon seeing nude angels, covered

her face.

5. The symbolic chain, which is used at the conclusion of the ritual meals of the Freemasons, hangs from the neck of the idols, as a necklace hangs down (see Signatstern III, 121). It is in reference to this also that the Freemasons encircle the neck with rope (see Signatstern I, 120 and III, 65). Also, we have said that this is to be compared to the Hermetic chain of the Neoplatonists, and to the gods' chain in Homer.[xiii]
6. The girdle by which the idols of the Templars are girded, just like today's Freemasons, was in use not only among the Essenes, but was required already in the Eleusinian mysteries, as the final rite of initiation was performed girded with precious stones in the pelt of a hinny (see Recherches sur les Mysteres du Paganism, Vol. I, 347).[xiv
7. The rod, held in hand by one of the ministers of the mystic wedding, which is engraved on the second bowl, was used in the Sabazian orgies, as can be seen from the aforementioned work (see Vol. 2, 96). To this rod perhaps the Freemasonic gauge corresponds, even if the identity isn't apparent. Thus, on the contrary, Freemasonic instruments, even if they are not portrayed on our idols and bowls, are perceived everywhere in the mathematical figures on Gnostic idols, temple bowls and seals. (See also the icons sent forth from the book Abraxis about Nicolai)[xv]. In place of such instruments as the square, the compass, and the lead plummet [plumb-bob], we have found the square, the compass and the triangle. However, in pictures on the windows of the Templar church of Prague, we have seen sketched out,

very diligently, all of the Freemasonic instruments.

8. The Book and sevenfold candelabrum, which signifies the Old and New Testament were borrowed from this.
9. It would be unnecessary to prove that the sun and moon were the most ancient gods of all nations. In the Eleusinian Mysteries the sun and moon were represented by the Daduch and Epibom (V.S. Croix I, 397).[xvi]
10. The stars (shining and radiating things of the Freemasons) are certainly none other than Lucifer, in which Mithra (the Genius of the Sun) according to the Zend-Avesta books, delays, and in which even today, according to the poetic myths of the Persians, Anaitis resides whose lyre resonates with the solar rays instead of strings. We have said already that the Letter G, inscribed on this star by the Freemasons, has the same meaning as on our monuments (see tab.2, fig. 9), namely, Gnosis (Die höchsten Grade der Freimaurerei, Berlin, 1804, S. 25).[xvii]

Besides these symbols common to Templars and Freemasons, there are some others of them, which, undeniably, came into use also by the Templars, although we have not found a trace of them either in sculptures (on idols and bowls), or in the exposition of the system of the Gnostics. Of that kind, for example, are those most celebrated columns of the temple, Jachin and Boaz, which call to mind those more ancient columns of Hermes and Hercules. Concerning these matters, we see on the bowls and idols, indeed, not a trace, but they are depicted in the Templar church of St. Anna of Prague. Also, they are perceived engraved on the wall of the citadel of Pottenstein (which was a seat of the Templars). In the same place you see a feminine figure adorned with nipples, which on account of a hammer is called Faber [artisan], snugly fit between two columns so that she can sustain both of them as they stagger and threaten ruin (tab. III, fig. 9). This is that Mete, or Sophia, who here, bearing a hammer instead of the Baphometic character T, tries to support the two tottering columns of Solomon's Temple with all her might (arms and back)[xviii], or to put it in the very words of the inscription, distinguished by virtue and charity[xix]. These two tottering columns are the same as those which, having collapsed into the form of St. Andrew's cross (X) following abolition of the Brotherhood of the Temple Militia, the Freemasons tried to rebuild with all their power. By joining the letters together and separating them into words, we can read there (tab. III, fig. 12): "the distinguished charity of Mete uproots the enemy." Further down we will present more proof that this "distinguished charity of Mete" was nothing other than paiderastian [Greek, "pederasty"]. At this point it will suffice to address the fact that Mete is sealed on the forehead with the Tau sign (a Baphometic character) (see tab. I, fig. 1), which the Ophites, along with many others, seemed to have taken from the Mithraites, for, to use the words of Tertullian, (De Praescriptione Haereticorum [The Prescription Against the Heretics], 40), Mithra placed a sign on the forehead of her soldiers, and under the sword redeemed the crown.

Besides these (of which, up to now. nothing has been gathered from the idols, bowls and writings of the Gnostics, but which, nevertheless, are observed in pictures of the churches and sculptures of the Templar citadel), it seems reasonable to us that other Freemasonic dogmas (about which there is nothing in our monuments) had already been transmitted in the arcane doctrine of the Templars. For example, consider the myth of Hiram slain, whose columns we discern in the little windows of the church (and engraved on the walls of the citadel of Pottenstein). This masculo-feminine architect, sustaining these columns, we observe to be none other than Mete. Hence, not rashly, we think that the architect Hiram, slain by his three officers, represents nothing other than Gnosis, or natural religion, slaughtered by three officers (the three heads of whom we have mentioned above).[xx]

These are the three heads which are seen in the Gnostic seal (see tab IV, fig. 5), and which are depicted in the Schoengraberian bas-reliefs using a trident to free Jaldabaoth from a coffin of sorts. They were also signified by the three knots of the Templar belt. Besides these three human heads, hated by the Gnostics and Templars, we discover three additional animals loathed by the Templars and Freemasons. We have seen in the bas-reliefs, idols, and bowls found at Templar churches that the Lion, the dragon and the bear represent Jaldabaoth, the one presiding over the world and the author of effeminacy. Also, the lion, bear and tiger were to the Freemasons bitterly hostile animals who disturbed the peace of the “blessed valley.”

At present, many other symbols of the Gnostics and Freemasons, being in agreement one with another, we will lightly graze. St. John [the Baptist] (whom Freemasonic societies venerate as a patron, and who, their tradition goes, was imbued with a particular arcane doctrine (Gnostic, to be sure), is now held by Gnostics as a special object of reverence. They twist Scripture texts in favor of their own understanding. For example, What did you go into the desert to see? A reed being agitated by the wind? [Further], Among those born of women there arose no one greater than John the Baptist. By “reed” they understand John not yet perfected; by “greater” than those born of women they understand him now initiated. At length, they declare themselves to be greater than John. Indeed, they say, These things refer to us, so that the one among us who is less, that one is more outstanding than John (St. Epiphanius, Against Heresies, Book 1, Heresy 6). From John, or from the fiery baptism of the Mithraites (compare Welker and Zoega’s Abhandlungen [Treastises] I, 376), both the Gnostics and the Freemasons chose the spiritual baptism of wisdom and of fire, which we have found everywhere on idols and bowls. Because it provides purging from the most vile dregs of unspeakable lust, among the Freemasons it was called die Lichttaufe [“the Baptism of Light”]. In this baptism, as we have already shown above out of many passages of the Church Fathers, there are certain especially foreign words, either Hebrew, or others unknown to the profane, that were employed (see Epiphanius Book I, Vol. III, 20, and St. Irenaeus, Book I, ch. 21, 3), in which they injected a major horror for the initiates. In the same way, too, the arcane words of the Freemasons are all Hebrew, such as Macbenac, Gabaon, Boas, Jakin, Giblim, Chochmah, Hach olel, Jah, Jehova, Elohim, Adonai Schadai, Gagas, Elruach, Urim Tumim (see instructions of diverse grades here and there, Signatstern I, 130, 18, and what Welthusen says about them in Pokeach Iwrim [by Johann Kaspar Velthusen] from1804, pages 44, 54, 88, 160, 164). Finally, we have come to recognize that various values and rites among the Gnostics and the Templars are the same among the Freemasons. For example, the number thirteen, was sacred in the election of the Temple Magister, but among the Gnostics signified the number of Aeons (twelve) along with the First Father, was held as sacred also among the Freemasons (see Signatstern I, 190. See page 105), and in their monasteries a watchman armed with a sword kept watch (Frere Gardien, French for Guardian Brother), just as in the chapters of the Templars it was customary for one of them to keep watch.

These things, if our conjecture is correct, easily [connect] the lineage of the Mathematici [astrologers] of the Middle Ages, that is, to the Freemasons and their secret mathematics discipline, and one may reference that to Oriental, Chaldaic, Syriac and Egyptian philosophy. The things that we refer to regarding establishment of the first Freemasonic temple, or Solomonic House, from Arab historians, deserve greater attention, since no episode in history is known to us which better explains the establishment of Freemasonry. We believe that “temple of wisdom” (Darol-hikmet, [Arabic writing]), which Hakemus[xxi] established in Cairo at the end of the eleventh century, to have been the very first Masonic Lodge to which histories attest. However, this temple of wisdom (as we learn from Macrisio) is a certain kind of academy in which were handed down precepts of mathematics for the clarification of all philosophies, enhanced by regal wealth, and the numerous crowds of students of every kind and sex. In addition to this public doctrine, there flourished in the same place, also, an arcane discipline. There were various levels to it, through which the candidate was launched. Ultimately he was taught to believe nothing and that it is permissible to do anything. Apostles of this incredible sect were soon diffused through all of Asia. Everywhere they would seek and adopt followers. Thus this new, impious doctrine, under the name Ismailis, acquired very great fame, and with fame, power. From the number of these apostles, too, was the [well-known Hassan Sabah, founder of the Assassins. He became the leader of this most famous order through sword and dagger. He resided in Persia in the citadel called Alamut, and ruled over two very large priories according to his own whim, one of them belonging to Chorassania, in the East, the other one, the western, in the mountains of Syria. The oriental Prior stayed in the mountains between Tortosa and Anntaradum, according to the writer of Gestorum Dei per Francos [The Acts of God Among the French, written by Guibert of Nogent in the early twelfth century], very well-known by the name of "The Old Man of the Mountain" [سـنان الـدين رشـيد, Rashīd ad-Dīn Sinān]. He was involved with the Templars in various interactions, both in peacetime and wartime, so that, at first defeated by the Assassins, they later became tributaries to him.

The identity of the symbols of the Templars with those of the Freemasons having been demonstrated by evidence, and the rites of both, on the whole, having been explained, it is now time to investigate the true origin of the Freemasons, and since we have never been admitted to their inmost parts, all the more freely shall we speak concerning their mysteries. Nevertheless, lest the reader lose faith in our conjectures, thinking them merely the declarations of the profane [the uninitiated], what is to be considered is that we have already scrutinized the instructions for the different grades [of Freemasonry] on various occasions in the time of the Egyptian expedition, in a home inhabited by French people and abandoned by them, and through us snatched from the inhabiting Turks, and then in writings made public through heredity, so that in whatever is published in books on Freemasonic mysteries, (La Maçonnerie Adonhiramite, Signatstern, Sarsenna , etc.), we will be able to sufficiently discern what is true and false. Therefore, although we are not publishing arcane things or violating oaths of secrecy, nevertheless, as aware ones--not indeed initiates, but aware ones—we should be allowed to more freely to bring forth our opinion, and to investigate the fount of Freemasonry.

Although the doctrine of the Templars (no doubt purged after destruction of the order) coalesced with that of the Freemasons (which is evident from their identical symbols, monuments and rites), I, nonetheless, reckon that the Freemasonic order is older than that of the Templars. I say this not because of the Freemasonic tradition which speaks of the synod held in England already in the ninth century, (see Sarsenna), but because of information gleaned from the history of buildings, and from monuments of antiquity.

The symbols of Freemasonic doctrine referred to here are mathematical figures and building instruments, which we find in pictures from the Templar churches and on Baphometic sculptures, with more of the same are being observed on the more ancient buildings, especially Scottish ones, and on the Gnostic monuments, as well as on the figure of Abraxas. (See the illustrations of lions taken from Macarius [for Abraxas and Apistopistus), and used by Nicolai in the ornamental frontispiece of his book.) The same things are being discovered in monuments of yet an earlier age, namely, the Roman (table, IV, fig. 9). Because of the inscriptions on these no argument can be brought against these being put there by the Freemasons, or wall artisans.

Since astronomy makes full use of geometry and its instruments, and out of the abuse of astronomy arose astrology, it seems to us reasonable that the astrologers, who in the time of Domitian were called Mathematici , (as with Suetonius and Juvenal[xxii]), used the same instruments.

Therefore, we believe that the geometric figures sculpted on the sepulchers of women and freedmen signify that either the one who placed it, or the one upon whom a monument was placed, was initiated into the secret mathematics discipline, which flourished during the last days of the Roman Republic. This doctrine was pernicious to religion (as we see from Suetonius), so by counsel of the Senate they were expelled from the city, and here we may find the origin of Oriental, Chaldaic, Syriac and Egyptian philosophy.

Also, that a deeper connection (or communication) between these two orders--that of the dagger (Assassins), and that of the sword (Templars)--is proved by the fact that the Brotherhood of the Temple Militia, in expeditions against Egypt (which was the center of the Ismaili doctrin) openly showed favor to the enemy, so that twelve of them, due to the citadel of Karak having been handed over, perished suspended in a trap. Therefore, to those Freemasonic traditions about the arcane doctrine established by Walter Montibarensis, and communicated to him in a cavern through certain oriental sages, some faith must be invited. For by these sages we think some Syrian Gnostics, or Ismailis, are to be understood, through whom the arcane foundations of this doctrine flowed down to regular Canons and, from these, to the Brotherhood of the Temple Militia. More about the Cairo Temple of Wisdom, in imitation of which the Domus Salomonica [Solomonic House] of Bacon seems to have been built[xxiii], you will find in our History of the Assassins, to which, now published, we refer the reader[xxiv]. Here it is sufficient for us to tread in the most ancient footprints, to the extent historical forces admit. Now going back to the genuine doctrine of the Gnostics and the Ophitic [doctrine] of the Templars, we will demonstrate an intimate connection between this and the most ancient doctrines of Persian cosmology and Syriac mythology, so that by [the phrase] “that ancient oriental philosophy” (always in heavy use by recent historiographers), it easily becomes clear that this is to be understood as nothing but Gnosis. The entire doctrine of Gnosis, as we see, revolves around two main points, that is to say, cosmogony and generating, so that it seems not at all granted to mortals to know how this world was generated, and to investigate how through generating it is continually preserved. Cognition of this mystery, and of the origin of evil, was the main focus of philosophy among all peoples, which they tried to attain in various ways. [But] after numerous and vexing labors attempting to discover true knowledge, they found only that they knew nothing. Frustrated in their hope, they nevertheless busied themselves to dig up the true beginning of all, and to explain the primal cause of all phenomena. Thiscame down to the point where, persuading themselves that [there is] nothing more than the duplex genre of nature, masculine and female, which then resulted in the worship of the sun, moon, stars and elements, to which every mythology can be reduced. However, since they abandoned what can be subjected to the senses, wishing to penetrate more deeply into the mysteries of the spiritual world and of the origin of evil, they were driven into an abyss of the most ridiculous fables.

The most ancient of these fables are the Syrian or Egyptian ones, which, having been preserved out of Sanchuniathon[xxv] and Manetho[xxvi], agree with what those writers of Greek affairs handed down to us concerning the religion of those people. In the end, the source of these things is to be sought in India, even if we do not doubt that in the present light we will not advance beyond Persia and the beliefs of the Zoroastrians, which are sufficient for demonstrating the original identity of this doctrine. First, we will investigate briefly the Gnostic cosmogony, and their doctrine about the origin of evil in the most ancient mythologies. We will then compare the mysteries of the same with the rites and ceremonies of the most celebrated mysteries. Finally, we will reveal what amounts to nearly the same arcane doctrine, which slopes towards mere pantheism, and today, in large measure, flourishes in the Orient, so that, to make humanity aware, the dictum of wisdom may be proclaimed: There exists nothing new under the sun.

Hence, we are to begin with cosmogony. The “first aeon” of the Gnostics was borrowed from Plato’s “aeon,” and is from one and the same oriental fount, since the word aion is Persian [awan], and signifies nothing other than the birth of time , which definition you find in the writings of Plato himself.

In time, two principles of all things, the mental and the material, came forth, which established the perfect dualism [written] of in the Persian books, in which the beginning of spirituality (the summum bonum [supreme good] of Plato and the Gnostics) is called Ormuzd; whereas the beginning of sensible [physical] things is called Ahriman. Although spirit and matter both [presumably would] have worked together for forming this world, after it was formed, being in continual opposition, they were perpetually conflicted. This dualism, which the Gnostics expressed as a long lower series of aeons under the name of Sophia and Jaldabaoth, pervades the whole world right from the beginning to the end.

According to Plato, out of the supreme good, or Eternal God, proceeds the mens creatrix [creative mind], or Demiurge, and from this proceeds the anima mundi [world soul], which constitute the first Platonic trinity. Another, lower [trinity], one and the same, we find constituted out of idea (or Father), out of matter (or Mother), and out of product (or son, that is, the world).

The Gnostics tried to imitate this double Platonic trinity by the multiplication of aeons, so that in their upper Pleroma you can discern the First Father, the First Son, and the Holy Spirit, or Sophia proceeding from the last [aeon].

However, in a space located outside of the Pleroma [you can discern] Mother Achamoth, her son Jaldabaoth, and this visible world (the work of him and his six sons). [Regarding] the primitive trinity derived by the Gnostics, [we hold that], even if one cannot find it in the Persian cosmogony as exhibited by the documents left behind to us in the Zend, nevertheless, we think that it did exist, because it occurs both among the people of India and among the Egyptians, as well as among the most distant peoples. Indeed, [it is found] in that celebrated hieroglyphic placed above all the doors of the Templars, because the globe represents the sun (which Plato and Hermes Trismegistus declare to be a most apt image of the supreme good). However, under the serpent, Kneph, or good, at length a Demiurge was created, and it is more than reasonable that [his] feathers and wings are to be understood [as representing] the spirit or animating principle of the world. But Eusebius, under a similar figure, teaching out of Sanchuniathon that the world itself was to be understood, was too obscure to be grasped clearly. If a person is unwilling to concede this upper trinity, which corresponds to the trinity of Plato, [then by the same reason that person] will he deny their second trinity, made up of the Father Osiris, of the Mother, Isis, and of the Son Horus, which we see not obscurely expressed in the very same words in the doctrine of the Plato, Timaeus regarding the World Soul, and also in Plutarch's tractate on Isis. Timeaus, assuredly, called matter Mother and Seal [illegible Greek word]. We have seen already above that this image of the seal was preserved in an adulterated form in Gnostic ceremonies, where the discourse was about baptism. Since they named the one doing the baptizing “Father,” and “Seal Affixer”, [they named] the one baptized “Son.” That the six Gnostic Archons, with the seventh, Jaldabaoth, match up clearly with the six Amschaspandis and Ormuzd of the Persians, and by the sons of the Demiurge in Plato, as [well as the Hebrew] Elohim, we have already considered above, and here we make note also of the eight principal gods of the Egyptians, the number of which occurs everywhere in the Gnostic formula inscribed on idols and bowls (I and seven, our race). Finally, this is also the number of Cabirs, the seven of which, together with Asclepius, the eighth (as stated by Eusebius, referencing out of Sanchuniathon, according to Philo), the Phoenicians restored into their commentaries. One may conjecture that the Cabiri of the Phoenicians, just like the Amschaspandos of the Persians, the sons of God talked about by Plato, and the Archons of the Gnostics, were helpers of the Demiurge in creating the world, and [we can infer this] from their symbol (namely, the hammer), which all these Demiurges of God bear.

Besides creating the world, we additionally discern that the six Archons of the Gnostics helped the Father, Jaldabaoth, in forming mankind. We also see, among the Ophites, another son of God (indeed, Noun, that is, Mind), in the form of a twisted serpent, which seems to have been borrowed from Ophion, Pherecydes, and ancient beliefs of Syriac mythology. As Ophion, a giant endowed with serpentine feet, leader of the Sons of Earth, tried to vanquish the gods, thus too the Ophites taught that the Mind, or serpent-form son of Jaldabaoth having been hurled down into the world, also generated six sons (himself the seventh), in imitation of the archontic hierarchy. These sons, being inimical to mankind, resisted it, on account of the punishment endured by the Father because of man.

But regarding the origin of Ophion himself, the most ancient mention of whom we have found in the writings of Origen, and in the writings of Eusebius referencing Philo, it seems that it is all the more to be sought by us in Egypt. [This we think especially] since also Philo, according to Sanchuniathon, connects the Egyptian Agathodemon, or Kneph (according to the tradition of Ereis, in agreement with the tradition of Pherecydes), to Ophion. What Philo says at length in the passage already cited above agrees very well with the beliefs of the most ancient Orphic cosmogony, as seen from the information that has been preserved in the writings of Athenagoras[xxvii], where an animal in the form of a serpent arises out of water and matter, with the head of a lion, and holding God's seed, out of which were formed Heaven and Earth. These are the most ancient vestiges found in Greek writings of the serpent in Syriac cosmogony and mythology, which we can pursue beyond Egypt and all the way to India.

Having made plain the genesis of the Gnostic Demiurge and his sons in the most ancient mythologies, we will now, in the same way, follow Sophia, or Mete.

On this subject we have already shown above that many attributes of Rhea, Cybele, Venus and Hercules were gathered into the figure of Mete. In fact, we also found in Sanchuniathon that all adornments attributed to [these] various gods and goddesses were nearly the same. Thus, the name (Achamut) was borrowed from Rhea (called Mot or

Mut), the triple crown from Cybele, the masculo-feminine gender and the name [Arabic word] from Venus, the horns from Astarte or Proserpina, the veil from Isis and Minerva, the triple-faced dog, to which the Gnostic Hodegetes was consecrated, from Hecate, and finally, the multiple eyes and ears, which we frequently see sculpted on the whole body, from the Phoenician Saturn.

Indeed, the sun, moon and stars which are sculpted everywhere on the breast, back and arms of our idols, [are] the main elements of the Gnostic diagram, and are in agreement with the Platonic diagram, the description of which the composers of that most illustrious Ophite diagram seems to have had placed before their eyes. In the final end, the Achamoth of the Gnostics, from whose sight and tears came forth the elements, certainly is none other than nature herself (from the insertion of Mind into matter), whom the entire Orient celebrated, though under various names (that is, under the name of Isis, Ceres, Astarte, Goddess of the Orient, Good Goddess, etc.). As to the ceremonies of the Ophitic orgies, or the mysteries of the Templars, we have hinted above that all of these, too, are derived from the most ancient mysteries, and this will confirm here with only a few citations.

The Ophites celebrated the elevation of the phallus, with sculptured bowls situated underneath a serpent depicted in the form of a phallus that was suspended from the Tree of Life. This was held as the greatest festival of the Dionysiacs. The mystic bowl or vase (called cernos by the Eleusians) [is something] we come across everywhere.

They revered the serpent with a most holy form of worship: lustrations used not only in the Bacchanalia, but also everywhere in the mysteries of the Good Goddess (see S, Croix II p. 182). These lustrations came under the name of "baptism," or Baphes, since those initiated were called Baptai.

A rod and belt, too, were sacred to the worship of Bacchus (see in the same book, II p. 96 and I. p. 347). The phallus and serpent were preserved in mystic boxes (see I. p. 318 and II. 88), as the Ophites preserved the serpent in a ladle, and the Templars [preserved] Baphomet in their coffers. Profane persons (bebeloi) were kept away, as also in the chapters of the Templars a knight would sleep overnight [near the coffers] in order to prevent access by profane individuals. Finally, Gnostic suppers and marriages, which were Eucharist for the Ophites, were established according to the pattern of those things which had been celebrated in the Dionysiac and Eleusinic [mysteries]. In the Dionysiac [mysteries], surely the creonomia (or "dividing of meats") was nothing other than the mystical supper or Eucharist (see S. Croix I, 85). Also, the rape of Proserpina by Pluto, which the Hierophant celebrated with a female priest as hieros gamos [Greek, "sacred marriage"], lights out (see S. Croix, I, 366), what is that, if not a prototype of that mystical wedding which the Valentinians and Ophites celebrated, lights out, by promiscuous sexual relations?

Furthermore, in the ceremonies of the mystic wedding (depicted on bas-reliefs and bowls), where a bull is seen going through the ritual fire, we see the ministers administrating many of the most-ancient mysteries. Behold! You have (tab II, fig. 2) on the right-hand side of the ritual fire, standing nearby, the Epibomum[xxviii], who, standing around the ritual fire, or mystic altar, is about to place another piece of wood upon it, [while] another, bearing a rod, follows. On the left, you see the Daduchum[xxix], who, along with a torch, also bears a hatchet. Another figure holds a book and a ladle for the lustration of initiates. The Hieraulen[xxx], playing the pipe, is also the Spondophorum[xxxi], and carries a pail of water for libations. Finally, on the left-hand side, next to the ritual fire, is the Stolisten[xxxii], who bears a stole[xxxiii], as if he himself is the Hierophant [the priest]. In one hand he carries a chalice, [or rather] a bottle (called a caraffe[xxxiv]), and in the other, ring-shaped bread. The lighting of the ritual fire (according to Tertullian) signifies the mystic pyre of universal conflagration, which the Gnostics adopted from the Stoics, and through which they taught that at the end of the world, everything will be dissolved.

This dogma concerning universal conflagration is consonant with the most ancient belief of the Stoics, who got it from Chaldea. Also, the first Gnostic cosmogony concerning the immersion of spirit into matter through a certain ignoble passion, and concerning the formation of the world, [is something that] one may find in the doctrine of the Phoenicians as reported in the writings of Eusebius, based on the work of Sanchuniathon. Indeed, just as Sophia, out of a burning [desire] to get knowledge of the Father, fell into matter, thus, too, (in Eusebius) the spirit of this very prince of the image of the Supreme Being proceeding out of the abyss called Bau. This supplied Plato with a most beautiful idea regarding the Supreme Being under the image of the sun. Those holding fast and treading in the footsteps of the Eleaticorum[xxxv] draw all to that superior, immaterial light by which the mind of man, enlightened by the divine, attains to superior levels. The Ophites, though, my no means tending toward moral perfection, thought that the highest peak of all science [knowledge] is to be placed in carnal knowledge. Under the term "enlightenment" they saw nothing other than coitus and promiscuous shameful desire.

This most vile interpretation, by which the Ophites befouled the ancient doctrine, or philosophy, of Oriental wisdom, was to be considered certainly not as true and genuine, but as a heresy from a purer doctrine. Befouled in this way in its own fatherland by Greeks, Syrians, Semi-Barbarians, and Semi-Christians, and soiled by an inundation of the most disgraceful sensuality in the Orient, this very ancient discipline, when cleansed from all these evils, went on to flourish, and even survives today in the mystical doctrine of the Sufis. Even if they number the absolute all like the pantheists, which no one can defend[xxxvi], how very greatly, nonetheless, does its luminous purity shrink away in horror from the perverted imaginings of the Ophites, whose dark orgies were indeed celebrated at night, as Tertullian has already said, and whose epiphania, [Greek, manifestation, root of "epiphany"] and photagagia [Greek, "enlightened guidance"] is nothing but an outpouring of desire, by which they believed they could attain to that divine moistening with light of Sophia (about which we have spoken above, referring to the [statements of the Church] Fathers).

After we have shown that the Ophites (and their followers, the Brothers of the Temple Militia) imitated the most ancient mysteries in their orgies, and that all of their natural and supernatural philosophy was the product of certain rude babblings from the most ancient Greek philosophers, having transacted their moral (or rather immoral) cosmogony and aeonology, this is the place for investigating their doctrinal side. From the unrestrained license by which they indulged every desire, certainly it is proper to pronounce their being pigs of the flock of Epicurus[xxxvii], whose physical dogmas (such as the conflagration of the universe [idea] borrowed from Heraclitus), and the moral apothegm hos edista [Greek, "as gladly"] they dragged over to their own interpretation. But various dogmas and imaginings of the ancients seem to suggest that arcane doctrines and paiderastias, [Greek, "pederasty"], common among them, are to be excused. There were two opinions especially that they twisted in defense of their shameful indecencies; the Socratic one, "know yourself," and the prior, Epicurean one, "respect God." That first one ["know yourself"] was to their shame, since by "knowledge" they understood nothing but the carnal. The other one ["respect God"] they interpreted so as to teach that by means of the moistening with seminal luminescence they themselves became gods.[xxxviii] Above we have seen what, formerly, Plotinus objected to regarding the Gnostics always bearing in their mouths the words "respect God." It must also be added here that the Templars, as Gnostics, held themselves to be gods. Of this fact we can bring forth no clearer testimony than the place from Titurel[xxxix] where the perfected Templar himself is called "God," [or specifically], Tempelgott [German, "Temple God"]. It remains for us to comment on yet another expansion, or rather subversion, of the Delphic dictum. They substituted in place of that golden sentence, “Know yourself,” the crafty, “know all, but let no one know you.” On this truly Machiavellian principal rests their whole politic, which up to now they try to sustain by the gospel precept, “Be wise as serpents.” To this depraved wisdom they connect unrestrained conduct, so that they seem to have proposed as the highest expression of wisdom the precepts “Pursue all,” and “All is permitted.” That this goal of the moral (or, better, immoral) Gnostic-Ophitic doctrine is precisely the same as what has been placed before true initiates at the ultimate doctrinal grade of the Assassins and of the Ismailis, we see in the words “Nothing is to be believed, and everything is permissible.”[xl] To what exceedingly shameful deeds this goal of the Gnostic-Ophite doctrine drives its followers, once all types of evil desires have been exhausted, and that one must commingle with the contaminated flock of those who have purchased infamy, is clear enough. Certainly nothing either great or good was ever to be expected from the followers of this doctrine, unless men endowed with a higher political genius, having subjected the doctrine to their ambition, used it as an instrument for attaining the highest goal of [their] ambition. Such persons, already destined by nature as leaders, sought the highest goal of their labors, not in satisfying desires, but in conducting state affairs. Finally, people eagerly followed this doctrine because, once a person wickedly indulges every sensual craving, it renders his associates more inclined to all types of illicit activities.

The history of the entire East and West, however, provides us only two (but these very grand) examples of this truth: in the order of the Assassins, and in that of the Templars, each of which, fortified by the arcane doctrine, sought to conquer the world in nearly the same way. In only this were they different: The Assassins dealt widely with their enemies also with the dagger. However, the Templars used only the sword against the enemy. Each order, though distinct, wore a white mantle with red insignias (a cross among the Templars, and a sash among the Assassins). They had numerous institutions that were in agreement in an amazing way, especially in that they very zealously practiced revealed religion (which their own arcane doctrine wholly repressed), and very urgently defended it. They believed that at the right time, the occasion would come in which Gnosis sitting on the throne, the lion slain, and the dragon (or the world) trampled under the heel, [they] would gain control over every spiritual and temporal power. The Templars, therefore, thought the only virtues to be political ones. (These were fortitude and prudence, and, being linked together with love (that is, paiderastias, [Greek, pederasty]), made all other things worthless. They though the only virtues to be what would open the way to government, and they supported [these]. Their symbols, the sword and the dog, exist everywhere on their sepulchers. But the secret things of Mete (that is, of the Gnostic Sophia, the serpent and the Tau symbol) are discovered only in the inmost depths, if openly exposed, or by certain hieroglyphic notations hidden away from the eyes of profane ones, or used in such a way that the profane will believe that such a thing is a mere Freemasonic ornament. Thus it is in the Berchtolsdorf Church, in the right-hand part of the choir area, and in the church of the Templars called Acci Catena in Sicily, where the Tau is often sculpted into the pavement.

This idea of Mete--that is, of wisdom (aseveias [Greek, impiety) and love (paiderastias [Greek, pederasty]), are in various ways symbolically represented, both in bas-reliefs and on idols, as well as on pictures and coins (as we soon will see): now as a masculo-feminine idol; now as a head-only Baphometic; now as a serpentine Sphinx; now as something repulsively ending up as a fish; these things forming a monstrosity. Wherever you discover such figures in Middle Age buildings, you can hold for certain that their designers had been initiated into the Gnostic doctrine of that time, and in all churches possessed at that time by the Templars you will find (unless a destructive age had consumed them) such symbols. Therefore, the dragon absorbing an infant is seen everywhere, in bowls with a bas-relief (tab II, fig. 4), in bas-reliefs of the Church of Schoengraber (tab. III, fig. 2), and in the Church of St. Aegidius (tab. IV, fig. 20), or the dragon in conflict with a knight[xli], or a lion bound, trampled and killed by a man (tab. III, fig. 3), or a person fondling and behaving indecently toward the Baphometic head (tab. IV, fig. 22), or serpents carried by a man in his hands, be advised that these symbols indicate the Gnostic doctrine of the Freemasons. This Gnostic doctrine, common to the most ancient Freemasons and Templars, seems, with the passing of time after abolition of the order of Templars, to have been preserved only in the inmost parts of some etairion [Greek, “comrades”] of the Scottish Freemasons.

Here, opening a new scene, up to now unknown to all numismatists, we have focused on one hundred coins struck in bronze (see tab. V). Out of these eighty-two are unpublished. The remaining eighteen were known but had not been understood. Nearly all are gilded with silver (with a very few that are solid), which, as gilded things, served not for money, but as tokens for brothers to recognize one another.

We have already mentioned above that gilded coins of altogether the same type were unearthed in the ruins of a Templar castle near the village of Neukirchen in the District of Cellegensis in Styria, as well as in an enclosed area of the church of Waltersdorf in Austria, and in Hungary amid the ruins of a certain monastery which tradition attributes to “the Red Brothers.” From these, in order to diminish the confusion of styles, only the principal ones which represent the different figures are here seen incised in bronze.

Silver Gilded Coins from the Gadollian Collection

As with many others, the first thirty-six [coins] found in the castle of Rabensperg had been cast by a Deacon of the place for the purpose of banquet furnishings, so His Excellency, the illustrious Knight Gadolla, in order to remove them from the common [fate of] ruin, under that Deacon, of all the [other] Templar monuments [there]. For the Deacon had whitewashed all of the pictures, and he converted the meeting place at the head tower (containing twelve stone chairs fixed to the wall, with a thirteenth for the teacher or leader) into a milk cellar. He immediately produced knives and forks and out of the coins discovered. But luckily, out of wisdom, the knight mentioned above (a man most lauded for all kinds of philosophical studies, who speaks much of their treasures) came upon this confused heap and out of that numismatic disaster preserved fifty gilded coins, all unknown, all marked with figures up to now inexplicable except for the aforesaid, which can be easily illustrated. All, finally, are Templar [coins], bearing their well-known symbols. Out of these fourteen are so damaged by use or by antiquity that their figures are either doubtful or wholly inextricable. But the remaining thirty-six, very well preserved, we subject to faithful eyes in the first three series of our tablet (see tab V).

The first series contains coins which have been marked by the published signs and symbols of the Templars: with a cross and a sword, with dragons of various types, and with an eagle (or, rather, as we will demonstrate a bit further down, a Phoenix).

The first six of these are marked by dragons, of which some have the head of a bird; others, of a dog; others, of a cat. Therefore, I think they are to be held not as [depicting] a hostile dragon (who, for the Ophites, was the overseer of the world, and who was opposed by the Templars (under the figure of St. George), but, rather, a friendly dragon, or a serpent, (a familiar household god of the Ophites), since even in the seals of the Gnostics -- called Abraxas--the serpent is depicted now with a lion's head, now with a dog's head (see tab. IV, fig.1,2,3, 4).

The next three coins represent three eagles (or perhaps phoenixes) which are perched on a bow (probably representing Iris, goddess of the rainbow), just as in numerous well-known gilded coins from [Bishop Frederic Munter of Seeland] we see an eagle perched on a bow. More about this bird, whether an eagle or a phoenix, [should be said regarding] another of the following gilded coins, where volo Eoi[xlii] (ich fliege ins Morgenroth) [German, “I fly into the dawn”] is written. The last two coins of this series bear the cross as an image, but are distinct in certain other attributes. On the tenth coin you see a sword erect between two heads of dragons. On the eleventh you see the cross rising out of a head, and in the twelfth [the cross] is situated between two Ms. As for the first one, it is known to us that the Ophites and Templars understood the cross [to be a symbol of] the Tree of Life, or that Baphometic character which, in a Gnostic sense, ought to trample underfoot the dragon: that is, the overseer of this world. On Coin Eleven, the cross (a sign of life) arising out of a dog’s head alludes to the well-known predilection for the dog. Finally, the cross placed between two letters M indicates the doubled initial letter of Mete.

The second series contains twelve coins all inscribed with chalices. The first six (tab. V, fig. 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, and 18) are simple goblets without a lid. The chalice on fig. 19 is kept safe by two erect serpents, just as you will see very frequently sculptured on mystic Dionysiac vases. Such snakes are also seen on vases commonly called “Etruscan,” which, most reasonably, represent kteida [Greek, meaning unknown], and they [are shown accompanying] initiates into the sepulcher. There are chalices on fig. 20 and 21, the first of which is provided with handles. One of the things I noticed is that between the lid and the bowl itself there is a space where two letters, R and L, can be read. These are, therefore, those mystic bowls, three of which, adorned by sculptures (which have already been explained by us above), and which here on the coins have been covered by lids. These are the same chalices which, marked with lilies, crosses and that same figure of a Pythagorean pentagon that occurs on the lid of our bowl (see tab. II, fig. 5), are seen on the Maltese sepulchers of the knights of the army of St. Louis, returned from a tortuous expedition. [These coins] have been brought to us from the Most Illustrious and Most Reverend Bishop of Seeland, Doctor Münter, and we exhibit them to the eyes [of persons interested].

It will not be out of place here to examine what the letters R L signify, and to make a conjecture as to their hidden meaning. We think they are nothing other than the most frequently used parts of the word Gral, which coincides very well with our arguments set forth above concerning the identity of the Grali with the temple bowl. On the base of the two-headed sculpted Baphometic vase, a G is engraved in the same place, the sense of which, through the added Arabic word [Arabic writing, fenn], does not remain ambiguous; that is, Gnosis. With this initial G, now implied as a notation, only the third letter of the word Graal is missing: namely, the letter A. But by turning the figure of the chalice upside-down, [this letter] is expressed by a transverse line, so that, along with these two conspicuous letters RL, there should remain to us almost no doubt that the word Gral ought to be understood. In the same way, too, [on one of] the Baphomet idol[s] (see table I, fig. II) we see expressed only two letters, M and E, of the word “Mete,” with the remaining two indicated by asterisks, so that the entire word would easily be restored to the initiated reader, though it would escape the profane ones, which was in every way necessary for protecting the mystery of iniquity.

Since the things said [above] are easily verified by a look at the monuments offered to view, let us now attempt to divulge the true sense of the mystical word Gral. If G, placed on a bowl (see tab. II, fig. 9), indicates Gnosis, one can also suppose that the three remaining letters are only initials of certain mystical words which, put together, exhibit this word Gral as a token of Gnostic confession. While [we are] in no way stating anything certain about the significance of the three remaining [letters], since so many false interpretations up to now have been published, we will suggest some that are more probable, [being in agreement] with the mystic sense of the Gnostic doctrine. Thus, G R A L could signify: Gnosis Regit Animas Liberas [Gnosis Rules Free Souls]; or Gnosis Regina Artium Liberalium [Gnosis Queen of Liberal Arts]; or Gnosis Retribuit Animi Laborum [Gnosis Rewards the Labor of the Soul]; or, finally, what perhaps is most similar and most in agreement with Gnostic doctrine, Gnosis Reducit Animam Lapsam [Gnosis Brings Back the Lapsed Soul], or Redintegrat Animum Lapsum [Restores the Lapsed Soul].

The three last coins (22, 23, 24) of this series exhibit three chalices [on each coin], into which, in two of them, were interposed three lilies; and in the last one of them, three heads. Nowhere, indeed, did we find that the lily had its own significance among the Gnostics and Templars, but the lily occurs everywhere in Templar monuments and sculptures, especially on the end of the scepter, and therefore it perhaps has no other meaning than that of the scepter of dominance.

Thus you see very frequently the lily-bearing scepter in the bas-reliefs of the church of Schoengraber, and in the enumerated gilded coins of the Templars. The same thing is seen also on the Maltese sepulchers already cited. Hence, whatever meaning it may suggest, it is certainly clear that it was some temple-related symbol. The three heads placed between three lilies are to be compared with the three Gnostic heads suspended on the tree, a reproduction of which you have in [one of the] Abraxas [coins] (tab. IV, fig. 5), and from which Jaldabaoth extracts a trident from a certain two-handled jar in the Schoengraber church. At this point, we rightly transfer to the twelve coins of the next series.

The first two of the third series (25, 26) feature a bowl in connection with a head, which certainly is nothing but [the head] of Baphomet, which we see depicted in all that follows, most ugly and terrible. This [image] truly agrees with the deposition of the Templar Raoul de Gysi, who in seven chapters [Templar properties] had seen him [Baphomet] to be terrible and similar to demons. Coin 27 and Coin 28 each exhibit the letters F and R, of the same type, which we believe to have been put in place of the chalice, to represent its name (Graal), since F (not F) can be considered as the Digamma, that is, the double G. Coins 29 and 30 bear [Mete] in the form of a sphinx, which especially agrees not only with the deposition (which says this idol had four feet), but also indicates a transferred meaning of Mete: namely, they themselves [view] this idol now as Sophia, or wisdom; now Mete, or prudence. It is no wonder that this idol, or head, was taken in so many diverse ways, for it seems that as many as were the heads of the initiates, just so many seem to have been the diverse opinions about the figure of Baphomet.

Coin 31 exhibits a no less terrible figure of Baphomet which, extending his arms, seems to seek being embraced. Coin 32, if found elsewhere, could be believed to be an image of a clown, but it being found together with these gilded tokens, all of which are Temple-related, [means that it] represents nothing other than the Baphometic head covered by his hood; or, if you will, one of the Templars who used to adore that [idol] with unremoved hoods. In Coin 33, in place of the hood, the head is covered with a crown (indeed, with a remarkable Persian tiara). On the next, the 34th, this same effect is created in the form of a Roman Emperor’s crown. The letters F and R written on it demonstrate this cap to be of the same type as what is shown up above of Baphomet, to which, in place of the chalice, the initial letter of the same name G was added. In Coin 35 a star is coupled with Mete’s head, which, both in idols and in bowls, everywhere seem to be connected to her. The head is inscribed onto the star, which most accurately corresponds to the bronze star (see tab. II, fig. 16).

2. From the Moczyano Treasury

Alex Moczy, most excellent Hungarian man, especially intent on collecting signs and coins, armed with letters from the office of the Pope for expediting matters, told us that there were found (indeed in the ruins of the monastery Vörös Barátok, or of the Red Brothers) numerous gilded and solid coins. Of these, we felt that only 24 should be chosen and examined, due to the similarity [of the others] with those already described, and because of the locations where they were found, which in Series 4 and 5, from Nos. 37 to 58, you have incised on bronze.

You will easily distinguish the solid ones from the gilded ones, since the former were imprinted on both sides; the latter on only one. On No. 37 (a solid one), in the same place where the letter G (the initial letter of Gnosis) would otherwise be, a bust or monument is depicted (here not sufficiently conspicuous as to what it is, but that is be clarified below). On the other side there is a representation of an animal, perhaps a dragon, at which a certain man or beast wearing a hood is looking. Since we have already found this hood on the sphinxes of Nos. 29 and 30, one cannot assert that a hood always signifies a monk, except to those who hold, as the author of Monachologia [Monkology][xliii], that monks and beasts are synonymous.

Coin No. 38 (solid) exhibits, on the front, the tower of a temple erect between two lilies, and on the reverse side the Digamma, or double G, inscribed on a crown. In No. 39, [we see] on one part the Baphometic head; on the other side, once again, the sepulchral monument or bust, which was to be seen on No. 37, and which will occur yet more quite often. On the following eight gilded coins can be noted: Baphometic heads (No. 41 and 42); a dragon (40, 46) a star and moon (41, 43); eagles (40, 44); that monster which we mentioned already regarding No. 31, and which here appears to have a key in his hands (45); an armed Templar (47); and a dragon, or lion, who holds a sword

(48).

Coin 49 (solid), comparable with 37 and 38, with which it is supposed to go, has the G in common [with them]. No. 50 should be compared to 45 and 31. Certainly this figure cannot be called a king (due to the wings), nor an angel (due to the key shaped as a serpent and due to the crown). Therefore, is to be taken as some monster not yet explained; namely, for Baphomet. What the is signified by the animals depicted on the other side of this coin, and in many which follow, is not obvious, since beyond dragons, lions and eagles (explained by Gnostic imaginings), nothing is clear to us from that source regarding deer, panthers and the unicorn displayed here. On Nos. 51 and 52 a chalice is being carried by these beasts. This chalice [has been] interpreted as merely a coat of arms. It is also customary among numismatics to interpret the hood of a Sphinx as representing a monk. On the reverse side of Coin 52, for the third time that bust occurs which we have seen on Nos. 37 and 39. No. 53 shows a dog with the epigraph TOTAE, and on the other side there are six lilies composed in the same fashion as the six serpents in the Abraxas [seals] (see in Macarius). On No. 56, and also 57, a head bears a towered crown just like Mete (see tab. II, fig. 1 and 5). A lily-bearing scepter in one hand, and a cross in the other hand sufficiently denote the Templar order dominating through the cross.

3. Coins Found in the Ruins of the Templar’s Monastery at Waltersdorf

Of the gilded coins found in that place a half-century ago (which the Magnificent Count Ferdinand from Colloredo shared with us most generously), we were interested in only six, incised here in bronze, since most of those remaining are either obliterated, or are the same as the others previously mentioned (found in the ruins of the Templars’ castle in Styria and in the monastery in Hungary), and through the amazing agreement [of their symbolism] our interpretation was confirmed. These six coins bring forth the most remarkable evidence regarding the Templars. Besides the Baphometic head worn with a hood seen on No. 59, you will see in the same place on No. 62 the Ophitic Mete wearing a towered crown and holding two snakes[xliv], just those figures in the bas-reliefs of the church of Pictavien, as well as the many idols in the Imperial-Royal treasury and the collection of Schoenfeld. In No. 63, these two serpents accompany a chalice, and in No. 64 a serpent hangs from a chalice. The letter B speaks of Baphomet, and the other hieroglyphic note, T, it is reasonable to assume, signifies nothing other than the mystical Tau character: namely, Baphomet.

The name of this Mete, whose head we have seen depicted already in various figures, occurs also on Coin 36, where H and T are written on the side. Above the lily is seen an upside-down M, so that the twice-repeated Letter H is to be read “MHTH.” One may see that this is the same name which occurs in one of their silver-gilded [coins], and which has already been often brought up.

4. From the Coin Treasury of Bretfeldiano

On coins 65 and 66, you see on one side two keys placed criss-crossed, which make up the letters M and T. Two letters H in the beard area, occupied by keys, were implied, so that, [all put together], the name “MHTH” might spring forth. This key was used more aptly as a graphic sign, since the Baphometic character of the phallus was also called “the key of knowledge.” In No. 67 only one key, in the form of a Crux Ansata[xlv], forms the two letters T and H, so that the two final letters of the word Mete are to be read here, as on the idol in tab. 1, fig. 2. The remaining two [letters], however, are to be supplied [by discernment].

On coin 68, the name Mete, in Latin letters, is narrowed into a sign, so that the third line of the letter M affects at the same time the letter E (to be read twice). The cross, though, effects the letter T. In the same way, the character on coin 74 is to be explained, where Mete can be read if you view the coin not upright but horizontal, from the part where this [combined character] is connected with the image of a crown. M, indeed, occupies the entire width of the coin, and its two extreme lines were simultaneously also formed into the letter E. Similarly, coin 75 also implies that it is to be explained as a Baphometic triple crown, common to both this coin and the previously-mentioned coin. Coin 72 brings forth a similar image on both sides: namely, a cross and circles, upon which B (that is, the initial letter of Baphomet) is inscribed. The characters on coins 70 and 71 I would not dare to explain in any conclusive way. These letters C and A with a connected cross seems to be nothing but the first syllable of the word Charitas [“love, charity”] which we have already seen joined with Mete in another Templar inscription. Coin 73 [is] the Templar coat of arms. In nos. 75 and 76, the secret symbols--namely, a serpent and a dog--present themselves.

4. From the Coin Treasury of Gotvicensis

In the celebrated Gotvicensis convent, which has the most ancient reputation in the literary republic (because of the doctrine of present-day convent monks, and especially of the most learned Abbot, the Most Reverend Arrigler, at one-time professor of hermeneutics, and of Frederic Camerarius), as a tree flourishes with new vigor, a treasury of gilded coins is preserved, for which there is no match in Europe. Most of the coins published by the Bishop of Seeländ were sold by the same Abbot of that time. Here were are looking at the originals, out of which most ample treasury the next six were most generously shared with us by the Most Reverend Abbot. We have published their unique hieroglyphic inscriptions, and we will demonstrate that, as said above, they were Templar-Gnostic tokens. You also have, on coins 77, 78, and 79, the monument or tomb, which we have observed already in Nos. 37, 39, 52, shown here with flourishing palms. On one of these two monuments is inscribed a cross; on the other a double Gamma. It is not to be doubted that the tree arising from the tomb, which is distinguished by the epigraph Gnosis, is none other than the tree of life, or of knowledge. Regarding the tomb itself, I dare not affirm anything certain, but we consider it to be the same as the bust in which, among the Freemasons, the leader Hiram, having been killed, was buried, and for whom a palm branch blossomed, which in later time was changed into an Acacia branch. If we are not able to firmly assert that these and similar coins were used as tokens of the Templars, it is, nonetheless, more than certain that the Freemasons [used them], and in the final end, they are symbols of the same Gnostic doctrine. Concerning the last one and those similar to it, so that there remain to you no doubt, compare nos. 77 and 79 with the Gnostic seal (tab IV, fig. 6) taken from Macarius, where out of the bust, or human trunk, such a tree flourishes.

The next (No. 8) exhibits a temple building, of which the ichnography [architectural ground plan] one can see in a temple coin in the writings of Faure S. Vincenes. You see there, under the title jettons trouvé sous le Fondements d'une maison de Templiers pres Anquignan ["coins found under the foundations of a Templar house near Anquignan"], two coins, on one of which can be seen the ichnography of a building with four towers. This probably represented the temple building, constructed on the model of the sanctuary at Jerusalem. In No. 80 you have this entire Jerusalem temple with four erect towers. The very well-preserved inscription contains the following letters, which if read from left to right, make no sense: ASSS

SIMOONIVQ. But by reading from right to left, beginning from the first note of distinction placed between two letters S, the letters go in this order: SSTAQUINOOMIS. Assuredly, this too makes no sense, unless [you consider] the mystery of the letter M, here placed in an oblique way [rotated 90 degrees counterclockwise], which therefore could be read E, as in a Greek letter S. [This technique] has already been revealed from the Gnostic [tokens of] Abraxas, where the word Chnusis is to be read from Chnumis or Chnuwis, hieroglyphically indicating Gnosis. With these things understood, the sense of the text of this inscription is easily revealed: namely, SSTA. That is, Sacrosancta QVINOOEIS, or Quinoosis, or Gnosis, whose name aporreton, [Greek, unspoken], is in this way hidden away from the eyes of profane ones, intelligible only to the initiated.

Coin 81 represents an eagle or, perhaps, a phoenix, [next] to which is written, in clear letters, VOLO EOI, that is, I fly towards the dawn. But read in a peripheral way, epigraphically, it is truly enigmatic. It contains the following letters, to be read from left to right: ROH, then OP and H (by a note contracted), and then again clearly VIO. The letter which follows has the figure of an N lying down in the shape of a Z, and in this way it is to be read as another [letter] (in this case an A). The remaining [letters are] NBVIQAI, which, by inverting B and V, we think should be rendered, Roh Ophyio Anubiquall (que). Roh, an Arabic and Hebrew word, means “spirit,” which to the Gnostics was the same as Sophia, and was represented also by a dove. So therefore this bird, which at times we have called either an eagle or a phoenix, is perhaps the figure of a dove. Following the word “spirit” is the name of a serpentine genius, Ophiui or Ophione, which occurs ever so frequently in the inscriptions of Gnostic seals of Abraxas. Perhaps here, together with Roh, this name is to be understood as “serpentine spirit.” Frequently in the Gnostic sculptures we see a dog connected with a serpent, so that very often a serpent is shaped with a dog’s head. Therefore, even here Ophiuio (that is, the serpent genius) is connected to the name Anubis (the canine genius), which is very frequently is inscribed on the Abraxas [seals]. It is no wonder that these two tutelary gods are named on a gilded temple coin, but far more curious is the inscription of the following coin (82), where besides Mete (the name of the god of the Ophites, already well known), also Isis and Ertha[xlvi], occur, being two divinities of the ancient Egyptians and Germans. Following this, we read, most gloriously, ME-E, ICID, ERTHV, GLHAR, revealing five letters transposed from the name Grael (instead of Graal). What the V between Ertha and Grael signifies, I do not know, unless it is put for the Germanic copula und. From this inscription it is clear that the Templars, along with Gnostic and Ophitic symbols, also mixed together other myths from ancient religions, and in various ways founded and adorned this impious doctrine in the name of their own science and their own will.

5. From the Schoenfeld Museum

Coin no. 83 is, of all the gilded coins of this type that we have come to know, by far the most notable, because from the star and M (the initial letter of Mete) expressed in type and, further down, G (the initial letter of Gnosis), expressed in sculpture, bear the greatest witness that these coins served as tokens, so that, instead of idols which they had in their baskets, or coffers, they could carry this compendious Mete about with them everywhere. Coin 84 (guilded) exhibits a figure of Mete who has on her head a most distinct triple crown (just like the Mete on our bowls). In one hand she holds a cross; in the other a lily-bearing scepter. In this version the breasts are heavily accented, while they are mostly neglected on other similar coins (incised in bronze). In order to indicate the form of worship for which this coin was held as a religious symbol, the entire coin, encircled with a crown of most precious stones, was guarded under crystal, so that the radiating crown should make reference to the sort of sacrifice to be [practiced].

6. Coins Borrowed from Tablets of the Dissertation by Maderus

The work of Maderus contains no less than 40 gilded coins of the Templars. Among these we find a distinct figure of Mete, her head ugly and fierce, and she carries in her hand a cross and a flag, or a scepter, or a sword, or two trees (of life, and of knowledge), and a star.

We are here taking interest only in four, which exhibit a certain peculiar character or inscription (to be incised in bronze). Coin 85 holds in hand a monster composed of a certain animal, a composite of an infant and a dog, and crowned, with an erect privy member, which certainly is nothing other than a guide to pederasty with a dog. Here it is coupled with an infant, which Mete, in our idols, holds in her arms. Compare with this coins nos. 31, 45, 50 of this table. Coin 86 presents Mete holding in her hands two trees: namely, the tree of life and the tree of knowledge. We discovered already in that ancient monument found at the church in Milan that this effigy is Gnostic (see tab. III, fig.4). In order to remove all doubt, [please note that] even the name Mete is written in the margin by the initial letters M E, as on our idol (tab. I, fig. 11). The third letter, T, seems to be present, although somewhat rubbed away in one spot. The same name, Mete, can be read in Greek letters on coin 36. We see MHTH, with M in the form of a W that must be inverted. H, though, is to be read twice. The principal converted letter in these secret inscriptions was M, and we have seen, on the Abraxas seals and other gilded coins, that this is the entire key to this mystery regarding transposed or changed letters. Through such an inversion and transposition, the inscription on coin 87 [can be also explained]. [Doing so takes the interpretation in a] direction far different than what Maderus reads, which is Herrius Del Gratia Marchio Orientalis Missniace. For, in the first place, the letter which he believes to be D is [acutally] N, and M, which in the Abraxas seals is to be pronounced for S, has the same meaning here. Thus out of the letters GSOSHN, transposed, the word ';?E/G is to be read for ((TF4H. Finally, coin 88 exhibits the same letters, H and T, placed in the center with M, which we have encountered numerous times already in the Bretfeldian coins, and which is to be read in no other way than MHTH, repeating The H twice.

7. From the Writings of the Bishop of Seeländ on the Germanic Coins of the Middle Ages

Just like Maderus, the Bishop of Seeländ published gilded coins, all of which are Baphometic Templar tokens, for which there should be no mistrust concerning what they signify given the discourse above. Such are the 24 coins published in the table on page 17 of this book. All of these [the Bishop] declares to be from Ascano-Brandenburg, and he sees nothing in this sword-bearing and crowned woman, other than an imperial advocate, which is plainly absurd. More reasonably, others have said that this woman (who on other coins sits on a serpentine throne, with a knight with drawn sword standing guard), is the Abbotess with the patron of the convent. But all of the inscriptions, proceeding with the same interpretation already explained, instill faith that these coins are Templar, and represent Mete, or the personified wisdom of the order of Templars, with whom the knight with the drawn sword is present as a defender and custodian of the temple. Out of these, we will especially scrutinize the twelve most noteworthy, incised in bronze.

On coin 89, a cross with a hand giving blessing is configured so that the hand conceals the upper part of the cross, and thus only T ([signifying] the tree of life and the tree of knowledge; that is, a phallus and the key of knowledge) appears. The most brilliant one to read epigraphically, Mete you he, needs no explanation, since it contains nothing other than Baphometical characters, as can be seen with one's own eyes. The absurd explanation by the Bishop of Seeländ, who interpreted these words as an invocation of the savior, is slightly improved when we consider that this inscription is to be read as referring to Mete.

On Coin 90, you see the same Mete sitting on a throne, and, on the other side, two hooded Baphometic heads with a cross and hand giving blessing. Coin 91 exhibits Mete with a cross and a lily-bearing scepter, head covered, whom a Templar with an unsheathed sword stands ready to serve. Read from right to left, the inscription is this: CSAQUNOVMIS. Here only, first of all, C is to be placed after SM, and is to be read as the Greek E, so that one hears it as Sacra Qunousis, that is, Gnosis. The same inscription, but this time wholly obliterated, can be read in Coin 92, where on one side the entire Jerusalem temple can be seen. On the other side there are two towers with two crosses, a hand giving blessing and the head of Mete.

The same inscription occurs in sequential coins with the epigraph of Marquis Otto, which in no way militates against our interpretation, since he declared that he alone was initiated into the secret temple, or Gnostic doctrine.[xlvii] Thus we read on coin 94 RSCSTAQUINOUM (for E): that is, Sacra Sancta Quinousis, or Gnosis. We get the same result from coin 95: SST (the T here represented by the cross) AQUENEOM (for E) IC: that is, Gnosis.

Coin 93 offers the same inscription on both parts, yet slightly altered. On one side we see an overseer or Templar with a curved staff standing between two towers, with one hand giving a blessing, and a star [in the sky]. [There are written letters to] be read from right to left: STA (the letter T formed again by the cross) QVINOM (for E) IS: that is, Sancta Quinosis, or Gnosis. On the other side is the same word, omitting only the syllable Aqui, (which is to be read after cross): Sacred NOSM (E), IS, or Gnosis.

On coin 96, where an eagle or a phoenix sits on an arch between two towers, the same inscription: RS STA. [This should be read as] Sacro Sancta, or, perhaps better, Regina Sanctissima COVINOM (for E) and IS (contracted into the form of a crescent-shaped Sigma), [resulting in] Couinosis, or Gnosis. Coin 97 is of the same type and inscription as Coin 98, exhibiting the sacred word Qunousis, or Gnosis. Coin 98 exhibits the same figures as the previous one, but the inscription, so often repeated already, is disfigured in another way; namely, SSTAQEVNR (which here seems to include an erroneously formed for E) S (in the style of a crescent-shaped Sigma) and S, that is, Sacrosancta Qeneosis, or, once again, Gnosis, and then again T (which in every way is superfluous). But way more notable is the inscription of the inner circle, to be read from right to left: ECOL (in the form of a Greek 7) EEL, which certainly is nothing other than that celebrated Hakolel, or “divine truth,” the mention of which also has been preserved among the Freemasons (see Pokeach Iwrim, page 44 and 244). We shouldn’t wonder about this Hebrew word thrown in here, since, as we learn from the [Church] Fathers, the Ophites interspersed into their doctrine various

Hebrew words, and on another gilded Gnostic coin even now we discover the Hebrew word Roh, that is, “spirit.”

The bird, representing the spirit (whether that is an eagle, a phoenix, or a dove) is seen in Coin 99, a lion placed underfoot as if being trodden. It has the same inscription as the previous ones, but way more disfigured: SSAQVEIL (L wrongly for N) EVON (N wrongly figured forE) IS, that is, Sacrosancta Queileuosis (that is, again, Gnosis). On coin 100, a Templar is situated between two towers, with the inscription Otto (the name of the Templar or Ophite prince). This coin, which occurs twice in the Bishop of Seeländ’s work, is merely Gnostic. You see here a Templar between a lily-bearing scepter and a frond, which, on other coins, Mere holds in her hands, situated between two towers. Precious stones and two truncated crosses, here called Otto by numismatics, occur very frequently, and can be understood (not absurdly) as phalluses and chalices, or kenos [Greek, unknown] symbols. Finally, thrown in is a signed epistle [letter], by which we think their secret doctrine and arcane principles is signified.

VII On the Concord Between Accusations Against the Templars and the Similar Ophitic Doctrine

From the foregoing explanation of the Ophitic doctrine, which all Templar monuments, idols, bowls, buildings and coins profess, their faults are as clear as can be. Therefore, whatever accusations were brought against them by the Church and [contemporary] rulers appears to be only just and fair. Now, one by one, we will demonstrate that the peculiar symbols of their doctrine match up with their crimes and are documentation of their impiety and impurity. It is established from their monuments that [the charges of] three capital crimes brought against them by the Articles of Accusation--apostasy, idolatry and pederasty--are foundational teachings of the Ophitic doctrine, of which the Templars were followers. Articles 5 to 14 of the inquiry bring against the Brotherhood of the Temple Militia the charge that they did not acknowledge that "Christ is truly God," or that he was crucified. Also, "among their crimes, they professed that he was a false prophet, whose cross they spat upon and trampled underfoot," and this defilement they carried out on the very solemn Holy Friday.

All of these things agree fully with what the [Church] Fathers refer to concerning the Ophites. Already long ago Origen and Epiphanius made the assertion that we [should not] consider these [groups] to be Christians, but rather haters of Christ, and Beausobre also agrees, as we have already seen. But even if the most learned writer of Ophitic history, Mosheim, affirms that some of their sects were Christian, the Brothers of the Temple Militia, according to the inscriptions of their idols, were not to be numbered among them. If you are inclined to deny this, it has been proved. If, at reception, they spat upon the cross, or trampled it underfoot, which is clear from their very frequent confessions, in this they followed only the most impious rite of the Ophites among whom it was a law to tread down the God of the Christians and Jews, whom they declared to be “accursed.” That they would perpetrate this on the very day sacred to Venus is less a wonder when you realize that, in the solemn church ceremonies, on that day, adoration of the cross was celebrated, which they opposed through testimony of their great hatred and contempt by the spitting on the cross, in service of their own Venus (that is, Achamoth), whom Tertullian declares to be Christ trodden down.

After matters of idol worship, seen delineated in our first and second tablets, have been explained, and things similar to those had been dug up from the chapter house of the Waltersdorf Templars three years earlier, there is no remaining doubt at all. Everything, too, about this idol to or for Baphomet (whose name Mete we have recognized as inscribed on the idols, themselves, and on bowls, buildings and coins) seems to be confessed by many of our idols, differing only in the fact that the idols of general [Templar] chapters are very big and very much ornamented, being gilded either with silver or gold, whereas in our case, the material is stone, and the idols of comparatively smaller size, the Templars having kept in their coffers. In the same way, too, Theodoret[xlviii] teaches that the Marcionites carried the bronze serpent with them in their coffers. We, though, see many idols, most of which are girded with our serpent, or bearing about the serpent in their hands. Each of these idols is made to a greater or lesser size, with more or less ornamentation, according to the will and wealth status [of the maker/possessor], and though diverse in their ornamental details, they all conform to the principal of the masculine/feminine character.

The varied confessions of the parties agree with this masculine/feminine character, since some declared this idol to be masculine and bearded; others have declared it to be feminine and clean-shaven. Above we have indicated many times that all things which are said inclusively about the idol of the Templars agree optimally in regard to our idols. They venerated [this idol] as God and as Savior (Articles 49, 50), and the confession of Raymundus Rubei (Dupuy 216 and Nicolai II, 86), et le superieur baisant cette idol dit Jallah ["And the Superior called this idol Jallah"], in essence agrees. Jallah, that is, "O, God", is a common word of the Dervishes, with which they invoke God during celebration of their orgies. It was, however, substituted for Ja-o (which the Dervishes today pronounce Ya-hu). Even Horus of the Gnostics, upon encountering Sophia, or Achamoth while moving forward in the Pleroma, cried out using this word. Finally, from time to time one can see on our idols of Mete a collar gilded in gold, which they carry to Baphomet (see tab. 1, fig. 6).

Concerning the chain which Mete, in the bowls, holds by hand, and which, clearly, is nothing but the chain of aeons (of Gnostic Hermetica), and there is no mention of it in the accusations. But weightier and more obscure is the absence of the belt. This could have presented difficulties for our argument were it not for the fact that we see our idol girded not just with girdles, but with those that were also serpents. Defenders of the Brotherhood of the Temple Militia, who assert that this belt is nothing but what was common to many orders, do not ponder the fact that, if nothing else had been in use, there could be absolutely no place for such an accusation in the future. For the most widely-known aspect of the Articles of Accusation (58-61) involves the question of some secret and mystical belt “by which they were girded below the collar, which they carried about day and night in veneration of the idol,” consecrating this belt through contact with the idol. This they did, carrying it as a sign of an inviolable covenant and of an obligation most strictly imposed upon them through their secret doctrine. Finally, this belt was preserved in their coffers, or boxes, where they kept their idols.

Out of all of these things, to us it seems most noteworthy that these belts—these secret ropelike sashes—were either in the form of serpents, or had been symbolically configured to express their likeness. Promoting especial confidence in this opinion is the bronze statue of an armed knight preserved in the Welzliana Collection, whose belt is actually in the form of serpents, and which stands upon a quadruped base, as does the two-headed idol in the Imperial-Royal treasury. Thus, the description by some confessors, who stated that they had four-footed idols, is confirmed. Finally, there is the serpent throne, where two serpents are seen rising directly from the buttocks in a bronze stela (see tab. II, fig. 16), upon which, one can see, sits Mete (or rather, that is to say, the Templar Order, figured as a knight), The position of the serpents corresponds with the passages of the [Church] Fathers (Saints Irenaeus, Epiphanius and Theodoret) already cited above, where the serpent, through its twistings, is said to represent intestinal contortions, thence a hidden generative power.

Moreover, since we have already noticed that most of the symbols found on our Templar monuments [resemble explicitly the description of] their idols in the Articles of Accusation, we presume that the serpent, who is everywhere present on the idols we found, was not absent in the secret Ophitic worship of the Templars. This [serpent], whose greed and wickedness they studied to equal, was the wasser gnoseos ophiticae ["water of Ophitic Gnosis"] and the primary pillar of Templar doctrine. As a person who covers his head and abandons the body, so the Ophites and the Templars kept secret the chief part of their doctrine, leaving in open view only the body; namely, the simple meeting together of the brotherhood, or the Book of Public Statutes. [Just as], by nature, serpents crawl on the earth, [so too] the entire body [of the Templar order] was polluted by the filthiest cravings (the Pedagogia of St. Clement of Alexandria, Book I, 89). They preferred this to [serpent] to Christ (Tertullian, I, 416), and took him for an angel (since both Michael and Samael are so called), adoring him as the Dominator of the World. [Greek characters, Phronimos, "wise"], [Greek characters, panourgos, "intelligent, crafty"], and [Greek characters, kosmokrator, "ruler of the world"]: all of these are things not denied to Satan, but whoso attributes these things to him is the author and high priest of their [the Ophites'] diabolical doctrine. He [the serpent] was, as we have already seen, Nous [Greek, "mind"], or son of Jaldabaoth, creator of the world who, rebelling against the Father, tried to lead Adam and Eve back to the true knowledge of Mother Achamoth (that is, of Sophia, or divine wisdom). It is even more likely that this [element] was not missing at the mystic orgies of the Templars since in the Eleusinian and Bacchic mysteries (the imitation of which we have already shown [to be present] in the Ophitic [rites]), the serpent presents itself everywhere, the contracting Proserpina, the image of God exhibited under this form of Nous [Greek, “mind”], concerning whom Themistius[xlix] says that he came out of darkness.[l] This comment, which the celebrated Meiners, in his commentary on the mysteries (see Scripta Philosophica, Volume III, 278)[li], hardly dared to translate, very well illustrates the doctrine of the Valentinians that Nous came forth out of Bythos [“depth”, the Abyss] and life. This son of darkness and life is represented by the serpent, and the serpent is represented by the belt.

It is clear from the passages cited above (where the subject concerns the serpent) that by each of these symbols (namely, serpent and belt), an abominable lust and a topsy-turvy covenant paiderastias [Greek, of pederasty] was to be understood. Also, it was conceded by multiple confessions (concerning the accusations of the crime of Sodomy), both upon reception (initiation) and during times of private instruction. Even if we in our own opinion hold this unrestrained lust and abuse to be among the greatest out of all the crimes of which we here convict the Templars, they will certainly be considered among the matters of least importance by those taking into account the thinking of those times and the nature of Oriental camps, Reasonably, then, we wonder at those who, notwithstanding the Articles of Accusation, confirmed by very frequent confessions, endeavor to defend the Temple Militia as guiltless in this regard, since the entire matter regarding the widespread acts of love [taking place] in Oriental camps has nothing truly strange-sounding about it, and in this regard, we have already totally subscribed to the opinion brought by Gürtler.[lii]

We [have] come upon such a society of masculine love already within the sacred fraternities of Thebes among the Greeks, whose establishment, as with many others from antiquity, appears to have been borrowed by the Templars. What's more, there are many statutes and common rights of public order that suggest this secret sense of a society joined together by a mutual link of masculine love. By this we mean such things as the establishment of a table with a reading couch for the precept [teacher] to communicate with brothers (see Moldenhauer, p. 284), [arranged so that] only two brothers could sit there (see Münter's Statutenbuch, p. 126). Finally, [there is] the seal of the two brothers, one behind the other, sitting upon one horse, all of which are indications of the ultimate state of unity and of intimacy by the two parties to a binary covenant. Many wrongly interpreted this seal image as a symbol of their original poverty, but the first [Templar charter] by St. Bernard (already mentioned) testifies [against this], as it states that to each individual knight should be ascribed not one, but three horses.

In the same rule, Articles [71][liii] and 72, he inveighs against [fraternizing with] Sisters [nuns] and kissing of women with these words: “It is even more dangerous to unite with Sisters, for the ancient enemy [Satan], together with a woman [Eve], expelled many from the right path to paradise. Therefore, dearest brothers, that the flower of integrity should always be apparent among you, we are not permitted to engage in this custom.” And again, “We believe (like all religions) that it is dangerous to pay too much attention to the face of women. Therefore, a brother may presume to kiss neither widow, nor mother, nor sister, nor aunt, nor any other woman. Hence, let Christ's militia flee feminine kisses, by which men frequently become endangered, so that a pure conscience and secure life in the sight of the Lord may successfully and continuously be preserved". (See Münters Statutenbuch, pages 143 and 148). It is very far afield for us to suspected that by these rules of his and statutes directed against women, St. Bernard favored the love of males. But, nonetheless, that this hatred of women was interpreted and converted by the Templars into the love of males is patently evident from their confessions. The Templars, faithful followers of the Ophites, who twisted the purest texts of Scripture into the vilest possible meaning, willfully interpreted their rule of life in [terms of a] secret doctrine. Nor was this the only article which, with arcane precepts, they dragged far off into a different meaning. Thus, for example, Article 48, as the lion ever slain, was understood by the Templars (as by the Gnostics) as being about the lion as a symbol of Jaldabaoth being immolated. That this belt, the wrong use of which they were accused, was a very secret symbol of paiderastia [Greek, pederasty] cannot be doubted anymore. According to the confessions, (see Moldenhauer here and there), this [belt] was whitened and, through contact with the idol, consecrated. Finally, it is most reasonable that even the cat, or dog, which is said to have appeared in their chapters also was a symbol of this abominable lust, since it is to be seen everywhere in the Gnostic sculptures of the Templar temples and sepulchers.

By the [word] "cat," of which there was mention during the trials Templars, we believe that “dog” should be understood, because everywhere dog is observed, but nowhere a cat. Such [a dog] you see in the sepulchers of the Templars, such in the bas-reliefs of the Schoengraberian church, where, from the first fall of Adam, and from the early infancy [initiation] of Templars all the way up to the ultimate triumph of Gnosis, (represented by the slaughtering of the lion), everywhere he [the dog] continues to help the Gnostic, or Templar; such a one you see on a coin [standing] in front of a Templar Knight (tab. V, fig. 76); such a one you see adhering to the followers of an armed knight (see table II, fig. 4), as if [it is the] Daduchum [high priest] of the infamous Sodomitic mysteries. Should anyone offer the view that the animal is rather a cat, we won’t put up a fight, but whether it be a dog or a cat, this alone we will take note of: that each of the two animals lived in the East and was employed there in the filthiest acts of pleasure, as can be seen in two chapters in that obscene pamphlet Deluburaderii[liv] which deal with the foul desire for encounters with cats and dogs. Everywhere this dog is shown as a guide to the heinous [act], but we do not need to prove the filth of [their] mystery doctrine when some of the monuments presented here give testimony of this truth to the very eyes (though we can touch upon them only lightly because of the heinousness of the crime. Thus, for example, that nude Baphometic idol, positioned on bended knee while behind and opposite him, depravity [occurs] with his rear end, [exhibiting the] very shameful secret of the high offices [of the Templar leadership in the] later [years] (see also tab. I, fig. 4).

These were, therefore, the mysteries of the chapters, celebrated during the silence of night, and shaped according to the image of a “baptism of fire,” for which, as Tertullian truthfully says of the Gnostic mysteries, they were most deserving of [hell]fire and darkness. These secrets were kept from profane ones by [oaths of] silence (in imitation of the institution of Pythagorean Silence), which were imposed upon initiates under the cruelest threats of burning. This is how, for nearly two centuries, so many horrors were being kept secret from the public, kings, and the church, which can most easily be explained by the nature of these institutions, restricted by the most powerful bonds of sworn oaths. For, as is clear from the repeated confessions of the Templars, [their members] were being received only by these abominable rites, which a person of greater intelligence and strength would refuse, since such a one would think that worship of a lesser idol is horrifying. Not all were immediately received in such a way]. Some were received as such after many years, and if at that time they had not matured into impiety, and wavered in their faith about carrying out the things required of them by the point of a sword, then the receiving teachers (of necessity being indulgent their religious minds) let them believe that all of these things were only vanities, and they permitted timid ones who were conflicted not to spit on the cross, but rather to spit wherever they wished. Once the candidates were received, either the strong, gathered together with the powerful, by their own mental disposition, covered up all mysteries of impiety and of impurity which had been revealed to them, and concealed them from profane ones; or, if weaker, they were warned that the accepted opinion about them was false. By the bonds and oaths of the order (so many and great), the revelation of the mystery of that shame which they had been forced to suffer was kept from [the profane]. Thus it happens that this impious doctrine which (as seems most reasonable) from the time of Gualterus Montisbarensis flowed down from the temple clergy to the knights, went unpunished for a century and a half, and by the cloak of religion openly spread through the entire order, and thence throughout the entire world. One may suspect that some of the weaker ones, long before institution of the trials, revealed to their confessors the mystery of iniquity, 30 years before the bulls which opened the door for the abolition of the Templars, and later stood firm in their confessions. The church at that time, remembering the great services which the order had performed as an armed force against the infidels, wished to veil rather than reveal the shameful aspects [of the order] (to the extent that was admissible, without major detriment to the Christian Republic), and as historical facts declare, sought to correct the vileness of this order by uniting them with the Knights of St. John. These things having been tried without success, evidence of these [charges] was brought publicly to the king, who rightly feared the increasing power of the order as pernicious to the rights of his Christian kingdom. The church, too, neither could nor would any longer protect the order publicly, which had expanded from its beginnings until it reached the limits of the area under the heavens, and because it was derelict through impiety in religion and impurity in morality, the Church permitted punishment by the secular arm. The principal cause of the heinous nature of this doctrine appears to have been that the Supreme Pontiff wished to bring the sentence of condemnation, not “de jure” [by right], but by means of apostolic provision, lest the scandals of impiety and impurity which the bull suggests become openly exposed.

These scandals, so dire, and the trials [that followed] were so deeply hidden, it was no wonder that the nature of the crimes committed was kept from public notice by the craftiest accomplices of this intimate secret. Others, whether compelled to silence by shame or by fear of being subjugated to force, their souls softened by flatteries and overpowered by threats, did not betray [the oaths of secrecy]. Persons offering resistance were compelled, by swords unsheathed, to give adoration to an idol. The deepest silence was imposed upon brothers by means of oaths, so that even among themselves it was not permitted to speak about the rites of reception. Finally, in order to resist betrayal, a rule was provided, lest the Brotherhood of the Temple Militia should confess their sins in a sacramental tribunal to persons other than priests or members of the Donatist order. If this secrecy became violated, besides the tribunal of confession, imprisonment and death were imminent. Finally, no one of the brothers dared to communicate with another his own thoughts about the abominable reception rites. Thus, it turns out these mysteries of darkness that up until this day lie hidden among the Jesuits, and perhaps also among the Druzes, were propagated with impunity for 180 years. But if, in the religious books of the Druzes, and in their spiritual system, which has the scent of emanating aeons and Gnostic doctrine, no vestige of such defilement can be found, by no means does this argue the innocence of those convent members who were celebrating by night with promiscuous lust (with extinguished lamps, and as rumor has it). In the same way also the public statutes of the Templars (edited by Münter in their defense) do not exclude the existence of a secret doctrine. Indeed, from the confessions of brothers under examination, the existence of an arcane doctrine and a double order of statutes comes forth. Thus, the first witness, Rudolph de Praille, openly spoke of an arcane discipline of the order (given to him by his instructor Gervais de Beauvais), and of a double book of statutes; one ostensible, the other most secret, to be exhibited to no one. Also the twenty-first witness, Garner de Veneisi, [testified that] since he was against the infamous secret rite of reception, the instructor excused him from it because of the rigor of the statutes. These secret statutes, though they were surely compendious, and in the hands of very few receivers who could have endangered the order, and were very easily deleted. They did not come down to us, but of the tenor of egregious precepts (which are inscribed on Baphometic idols and on bowls, and sculpted onto churches), it is impossible to think that they are anything other than Ophitic doctrine.

The strongest argument of the defenders of the Brotherhood of the Temple Militia up till now revolves around the fact that nothing of those heads about whose adoration they are gravely and frequently accused, up to now has been found. But this has already been totally overthrown after our finding more than 20 such heads and idols. These idols exist with one or two heads, standing either on a solid or quadruped base, in treasure rooms and designated collections. Certain things of theirs have been dug up from beneath the locations of Templar churches, where coins, both solid and gilded, have been found, whose figures and inscriptions, up to the present, fit nicely with the obscure symbols and inscriptions on the idols. The same idol inscriptions are also sculpted on the bowls, in which Ophitic orgies are described, and the sculptures on those bowls agree with those preserved up to now on buildings of the Templars. In this cycle of monuments and arguments, where one supports and helps another, the existence of the secret doctrine, and the culpability of the Brotherhood of the Temple Militia, is placed beyond any doubt.

In the course of our arguments we have wholly neglected historical facts, even if they most strongly support the arguments brought against the Templars, not because we consider that they are to be held as having no weight, but because the same facts that are rejected by some historians are allowed by others. Sometimes they would serve to incriminate the order, and sometimes they serve as an apology in its favor. Thus, the older historians, Matthiu de Paris[lv], Daniel du Puys[lvi], and Gürtler, using the same facts of history, have condemned the arrogant impiety and luxuriating of the Templars, while others (such as Stemler[lvii] and Anton among the German writers, or Jeune and Raynouard[lviii] of the French writers) composed historical apologetics and dissertations in favor of the order. From the erudite Danes, Münter and Moldenhauer, one published the public statutes, which previously had lain secret; the other published the secret testimony from the trials, in which the order (as a public institution) was indeed exhibited in a pleasant light.

However, after the facts are accumulated, these secrets and arcane elements of the detestable doctrine, come forth [into the open]. Finally, Nicolai and Grouvelle, inquiring into the historical facts in a philosophical and skeptical spirit (which should govern all impartial investigators of history), [argues that] once the apologetic arguments of Anton[lix] and Münter have been rendered invalid, [it becomes clear that] the culpability of the Brotherhood of the Temple Militia, as far as Gnostic impiety and obscene acts of love [are concerned], is as great as can be. We argued with these 12 writers as the 13th at a round table disputing about the Graal bowl, approaching it with an array of arguments drawn from symbols, cups, and other works of art involving, so that it was not us who did the speaking, but the stones, bronzes, buildings and bas-reliefs.

All of these monuments, in no way explained until this moment, are of the greatest important, with perhaps the exception of the coins, about which our many arguments have not convinced most people that they were actually struck by Templars. But, considering that the coins are sequential, another reading of those inscriptions may be proposed. Either way, there can be no objection brought against the symbols and bas-reliefs on the bowls and buildings, which are truly Ophitic and Templar, and these [depictions of] the crimes of apostasy, idolatry and impurity everywhere dazzle the eyes. Finally, here we cannot silence our judgment with regard to the very weak argument of Baylis[lx], which also Raynouard accepted, in apology for the Templars: S'ils e'toient assez impies, pour reconcer a la religion chretienne, qui etoit celle de leur naissance, comment auroient-ils pu se confier a utie idoie. [French, "If they were so impious as to separate from the Christian religion, which was that of their birth, how could they entrust themselves to an idol?”]

Let me not speak here about the general contradictions of the human character, which we know to be such that the strongest characters are often inclined to superstitious old wives’ tales, being atheists and at the same time subject to demon gods, and one who believes in or gives adoration to no god still fears and supplicates to ghosts. I will be silent about these things. Here it will suffice only to send the reader back to the history of diverse heresies, in which the same Ophites and other heretics deny Christ as God; they adore Achamoth (that is, Mete of the Templars) in place of such. In those innermost reaches of the human mind and heart is to be sought a far deeper explanation of the facts: that very often it can be said (concerning soldiers and concerning ministers) that men publicly defend a doctrine and live their lives by an oath which in secret they reject and oppose. Examples of this, in Christian and Saracen versions [respectively], is seen in the Templars and Assassins at the time of the Crusader expeditions, for [the members of] each order most vigorously devoted their lives to a doctrine of public faith which in secret they denied and abjured (which seems most absurd).

What wonder is it that, when most of their most powerful soldiers had been thrown into prison, and they saw destruction as impending not only upon themselves but also upon the order, they, having confessed nothing, showed the same constancy and fortitude as in a fight? Others, being weaker, professed the truth, after their patience was exhausted by torments in the hand of the torturer, but upon being returned to prison, or being brought back under judgment, recanted and declared [their confessions] to be false. [But then some], not fearing death, which so often seemed imminent, but having sustained torments after repeating again the assertion of innocence, and unable to bear the guilt after a confession seized by violence, wished to cleanse [it] by their own blood.

Thus, from the arguments brought forth [here regarding] the culpability of the Templars, it stands in clearer light that they were not innocent, but were [rightfully] accused and condemned as guilty by the Apostolic Seat of the church and by very many princes of the republic, so that the sentence of condemnation may be attributed to divine and human justice. The barbarous mode of execution—torment and burning alive--is to be attributed to the darkness of that age.

As a conclusion to our critical commentary, we will provide this note about the Middle Ages in which this order flourished: In that dark period, which very recently has encountered so many laudatory remarks, those limited by fanaticism, atheism, superstition and impiety have become confused. The little-known wisdom regarding that time is that it consisted of unbridled license of opinions and lusts, so that we may conclude that this period, which the writer of the same panegyric likened to a serene starlit night, was actually nothing more than a gloomy blackness, distinguished by the sparks of shameful deeds ignited, and the conflagrations of superstitions.

NOTES

[i] Middle Persian for the Aməša Spənta, the Immortals of Zoroastrianism.
[ii] Probably William of Tyre.
[iii] Reisen durch Ungarn und einige angranzende (Travels through Hungary and Adjacent Lands) Lander, p. 216.
[iv] A Carytid is an architectural feature in which a support pillar is formed in the shape of a woman.
[v] Again, he is displaying his rectum.
[vi] This is Bernard de Montfaucon, the seventeenth to eighteenth-century Benedictine monk who is credited with founding the science of paleography, and contributing to the beginnings of modern archeology.
[vii] Hammer-Purgstall here refers to Aubin L. Millins, and in the original text cited his 1802 book Monumens antiques, inédits ou nouvellement expliqués (Ancient monuments, unpublished or newly explained), fig. II page. 323, as well as his 1811 book Voyage dans les departments du midi de la France (Travel in the departments of the south of France), tab. IV, p. 732.
[viii] Johann Lorenz von Mosheim was a German church historian of the early eighteenth century.
[ix] Literally a term meaning "signal star", here equated with the Masonic symbol of the "Blazing Star," it is also the title of a book about Masonic and Rosicrucian symbols written by Prussian mystic Johann Christoph von Wollner and published in 1803.
[x] The Latin word cestus in the second declination means "belt." The Farsi word that Hammer-Purgstall compares it to (Costi) most likely refers to a ceremonial belt.

[xi] Paulinus of St. Bartholomew, eighteenth-century Carmelite missionary and Orientalist from Austria, wrote The Symstem of Brahmanic Liturgy, Mythology, Civil Law, and History, published in 1791.

[xii] Pherecydes of Syros, a sixth-century Greek thinker, is credited with coming up with his own cosmology and theory of creation. It involves a cloth that is wrapped around the Earth by Chronos (Time), which may have been what Hammer-Purgstall saw as analogous to the Gnostic veil.

[xiii] This Gnostic, Hermetic, and Neoplatonic "chain" appears to be the chain of causality, and of the interconnected hierarchies of creation. Since in Gnosticism, each aeon corresponds to an archontic entity, and each Archon corresponds to one of the seven "classical planets" (the Sun, the Moon, Mercury, Mars, Venus, Jupiter, Saturn), and each planet was, in antiquity, believed to rule over one of the seven heavens (viewed as being spherical and concentrically stacked inside each other like a Russian doll, with the Earth in the middle), one can imagine this as a chain running from the center of the Earth, through the sky, then up through each of the seven heavens and all the way up to the Pleroma on the outside, where the real "Father" resides.

Hammer-Purgstall's reference to "the gods' chain in Homer" points to The Iliad, where Zeus posits a challenge to the other gods to assert his superiority over them. He says:

Try me and find out for yourselves. Hang me a golden chain from heaven, and lay hold of it all of you, gods and goddesses together—tug as you will, you will not drag

Zeus the supreme counselor from heaven to earth; but were I to pull at it myself I should draw you up with earth and sea into the bargain, then would I bind the chain about some pinnacle of Olympus and leave you all dangling in the mid firmament. So far am I above all others either of gods or men.

[xiv] This book was written by Baron de Sainte-Croix and published in Paris in 1817.

[xv] Nicolaus of Antioch was founder of the Christian Gnostic heresy of Nicolaism. The book in question is once again Abraxas seu Apistopistus by Joannes Macarius and Jean Chifflet, which appears to contain a lot of the same images of Gnostic coins that are reproduced here in this book.

[xvi] Ibid. Daduch and Epibom are the titles of officiants in the Eleusian mysteries. We will discuss them more later on.

[xvii] Written by J.W. Schmidt, the title means The Highest Grade of Freemasonry.

[xviii] See the final chapter of Clock Shavings by Tracy R. Twyman for more information on the creation myth told in the Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn, in which the First Woman, Eve, must support the columns that uphold creation, and these collapse when she stoops down to take fruit from the Tree of Knowledge upon which she is standing.

[xix] Although the translator has chosen the word “distinguished” here (as in “set apart”), a purer rendering of the Latin word signata used here by Hammer-Purgstall is “sealed” or “marked, signed.” The implication is that Mete’s “love” or “charity” is peculiar to her, marked by the signature of what Mete represents.

[xx] Again, he claims that this represents the three Abrahamic religions.

[xxi] This is the Fatimid Imam-Caliph Al-Hakim bi-Am Allah, who established the Dar al-Hikmah (or “House of Wisdom”) in Cairo in 1004 A.D.

[xxii] Gaius Seutonius Tranquillus was a Roman historian in the first and second centuries, and Juvenal was a Roman satirist poet from the same era.

[xxiii] Sir Francis Bacon wrote in The New Atlantis about a fictional “philosophic empire” centered around a college of wise men he called “Solomon’s House.”

[xxiv] Hammer-Purgstall is indeed the author of the quintessential book on the subject.

[xxv] This was the name of an ancient Phoenician writer.

[xxvi] Manetho was an Egyptian historian from the third century B.C.

[xxvii] Athenagoras of Athens was a second-century Church Father and Christian apologist.

[xxviii] This and several other Greek words in this paragraph are the titles of officers in the Orphic and Eleusian mysteries. This person’s role was to prepare the sacrificial pyre on the altar.

[xxix] This title means “torch-bearer.” In the image referred to he is seen carrying a candle.

[xxx] Meaning “sacred piper,” this officer’s job was to play the Aulos, an ancient Greek reed pipe.

[xxxi] This word simply means “he who carries the libations.”

[xxxii] Translating to “the adorner,” this title was given to the person charged with setting up the altar and the idols for the ritual.

[xxxiii] The word used here by Hammer-Purgstall, stolam, was originally translated as “robe” by our translator, but it is connected to the Latin root of the English word “stole,” which the time of his writing still meant “the long scarf-like garment worn by clergymen” (according to the Online Etymology Dictionary). That matches up with what we see in the image in question.

[xxxiv] This word (with only one letter “f”) had just recently been imported into the English language from French at the time of Hammer-Purgstall’s writing, and generally indicated a glass flask with an open top. Now almost anything can be a carafe, and indeed, the word is rooted in the Arabic gharraf, which just means “drinking cup.”

[xxxv] The Eleatics were a fifth-century pre-Socratic philosophy school. They believed in seeking truth through contemplation rather than using the evidence of the senses.

[xxxvi] In other words, he sees these Oriental philosophies as subdividing the attributes of the one true God into multiple gods, as the pagans did.

[xxxvii] Epicurus promoted the pursuit of personal happiness as the highest good, although without the emphasis on sexual pursuits that Hammer-Purgstall implies here. Horace once referred to one of his followers as “A pig from the sty of Epicurus,” perhaps because they tried to be fat and happy like hogs.

[xxxviii] The notion that semen contains spiritual “light” is common in the presently-discussed mystical traditions.

[xxxix] This is the title of a Grail romance written by Wolfram von Eschenbach in the thirteenth century, and is considered a prequel to the better-known Parzival.

[xl] This was the motto of the Assassins.
[xli] It seems that this is shown on tab. IV, fig. 19 and 20.
[xlii] The Latin specifically translates to “I seek the dawn.”
[xliii] Monachologia, or Handbook of the Natural History of Monks, Arranged According to the Linnaean System
by Ignaz Edler von Born, 1852.
[xliv] It seems hard to believe that Hammer-Purgstall did not recognize this image of the anguipede Melusine (a common European heraldic device featuring a crowned woman with snakes for legs, now morphed into the mermaid on the Starbucks logo), which it clearly is. Perhaps he would have interpreted all images of Melusine as Templar-inspired depictions of Mete. The story of the Melusine (inspired by a supernatural folk tale stating that the wife of Fulk III, Count of Anjou, was a half-demonic creature spawned by Satan), was first heard shortly before or contemporary with the foundation of the Templar order, and the house of Anjou was intimately connected with the families of the founding knights.
[xlv] This is the Egyptian symbol known as the Ankh.
[xlvi] Ertha was a Germanic Earth goddess.
[xlvii] This is Otto de Grandson, a knight from Savoy who at the end of the thirteenth century fought off a Mamluk invasion in Cilicia alongside Jacques de Molay. For this he is frequently called “the Savior of the Templars.”
[xlviii] Theodoret of Cyrus is considered one of the Fathers of the Eastern Orthodox Church, and lived in the fourth to fifth centuries.
[xlix] Themistius was a fourth-century statesman and philosopher living in Constantinople.
[l] Proserpina’s name literally means “to emerge.” She was

a goddess of grain, which emerges from the darkness of the Earth, and she herself was fated to emerge from the Underworld for six months out of every year.

[li] This refers to Vermischte Philosophische Schriften, a collection of philosophical writings by eighteenth to nineteenth-century German philosopher and historian Christoph Meiner, who among other things was famous for his theory that each human race had a distinct genetic origin.

[lii] Nicholas Gurtler, a Swiss protestant theologian, wrote the Historia Templariorum (History of the Templars), published in 1701.

[liii] Hammer-Purgstall erroneously wrote the Roman numerals for “61” here, but that article of the Templar primitive rule is about something else altogether, so we take it to be a typo, here corrected.

[liv] This pamphlet, apparently so infamous in Hammer-Purgstall’s time, has not survived for us in any trace. We really have no idea what he is referring to here, although it sounds like it must have been quite an interesting document. Even the title has defied our translation.

[lv] Matthew of Paris was a Benedictine monk, chronicler, cartographer, and illustrator in the thirteenth century, famous for his Chronica Majora (Grand Chronicle).

[lvi] We haven’t been able to track down this personage.

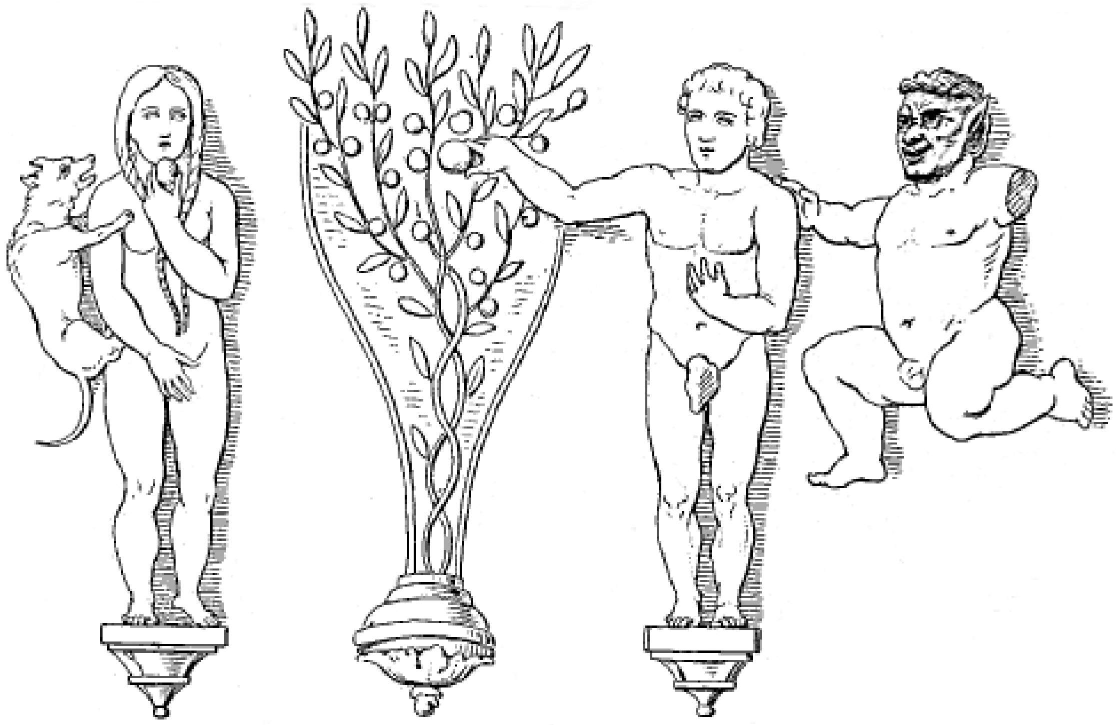
[lvii] Wilhelm Christian Stemler, author of Contingent zur Geschichte der Templar
und der Aufhebung ihres Ordens (Contingent on the History of the Templars and the
Abolition of their Order), Leipzig, Germany, 1793.

[lviii] François-Just-Marie Raynouard, a contemporary of

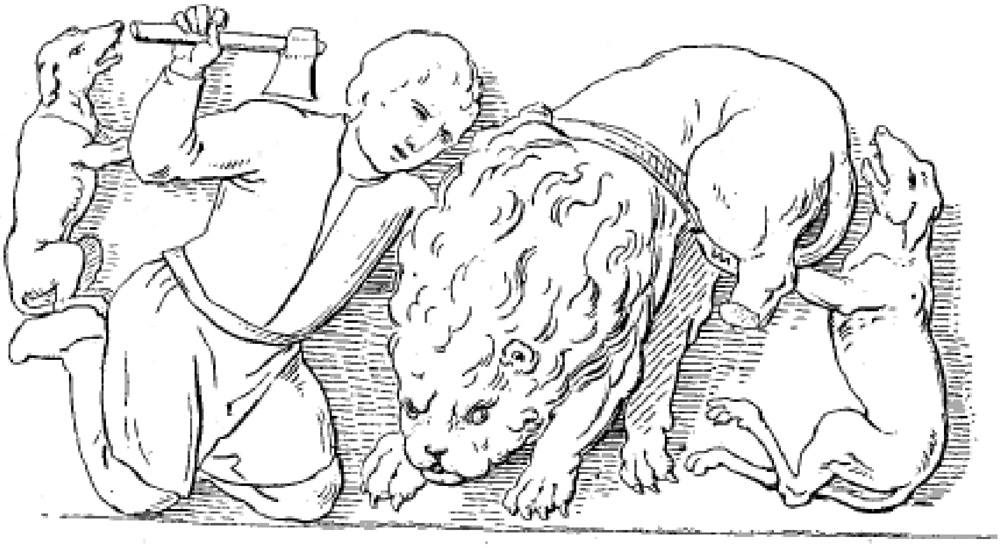
Hammer-Purgstall’s whose Memoires sur les Templiers (Memoires of the Templars) is cited herein by the latter.

[lix] Karl Gottlieb Anton, author of Versuch Einer Geschichte Des Tempelherrnordens (An Attempted History of the Templars of the North), 1771.

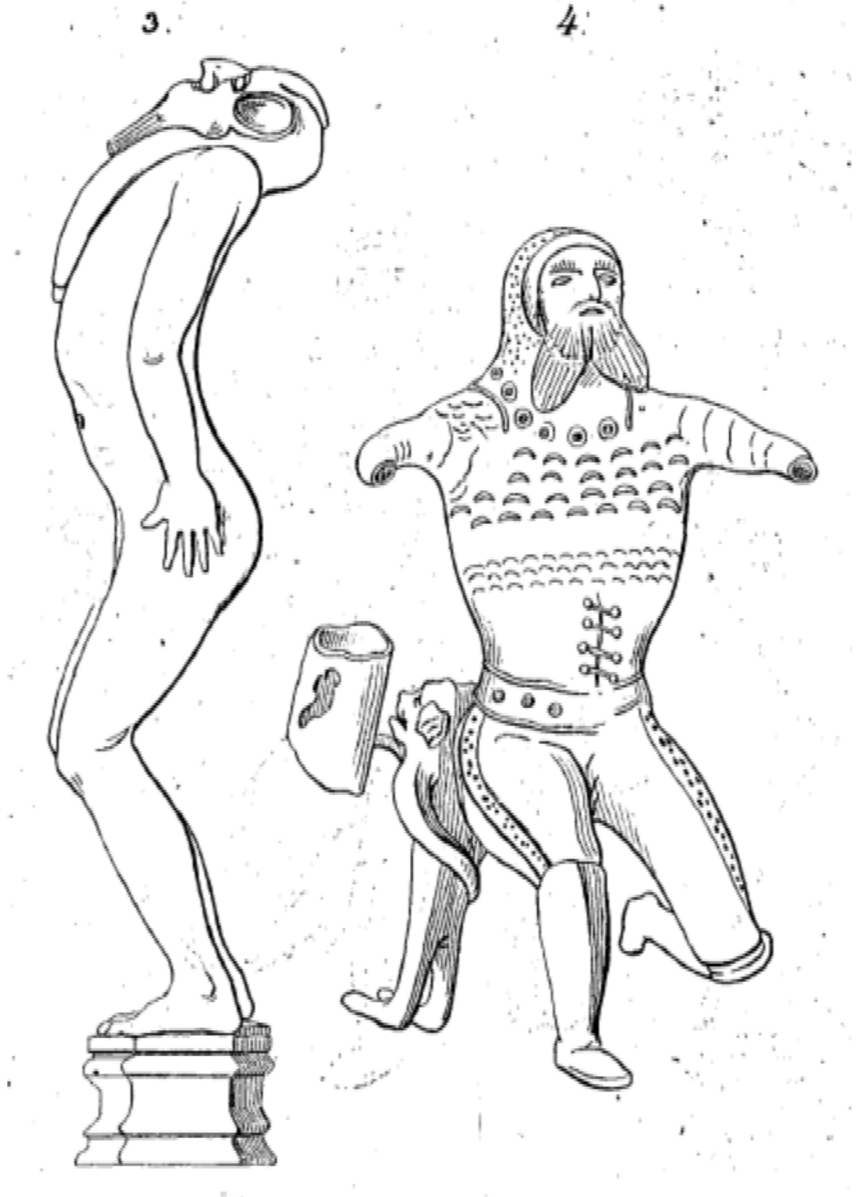
[lx] We are not sure which Bayli is referred to here. Thomas Henry Baylis, author of The Temple Church and Chapel of St. Ann, Etc: An Historical Record and Guide, was only one year old at the time, and his book wasn’t published until 1893, so it cannot be him.



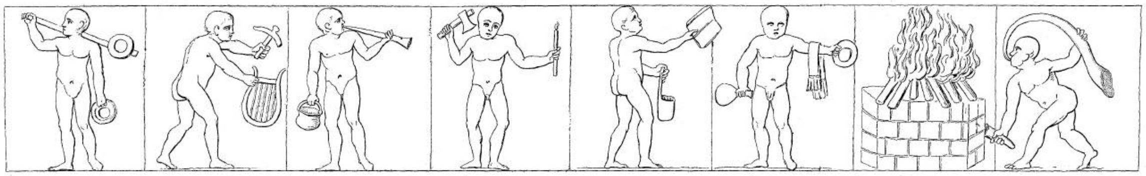
Tab. III, Fig. 1



Tab. III, Fig. 3

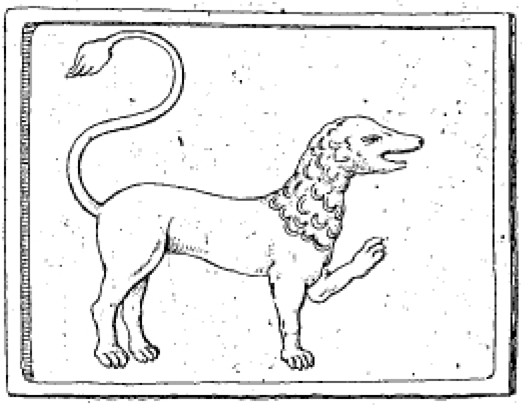


Tab. I, Fig. 3 and 4



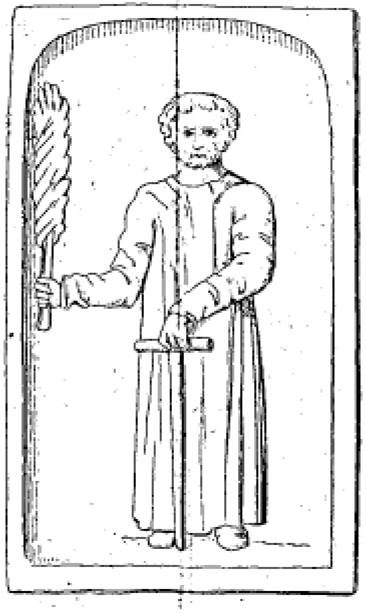
Tab. II, Fig. 2

14.



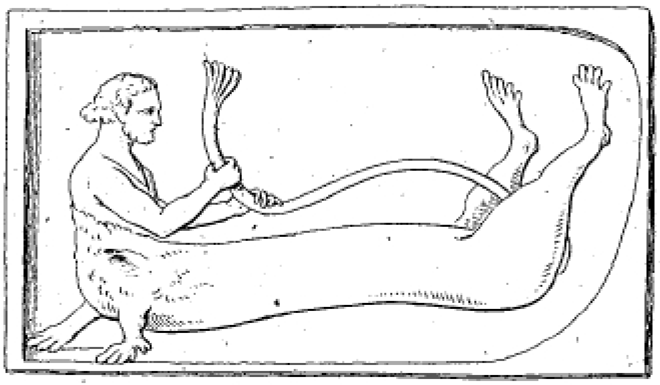
Tab. III, Fig. 14

15.



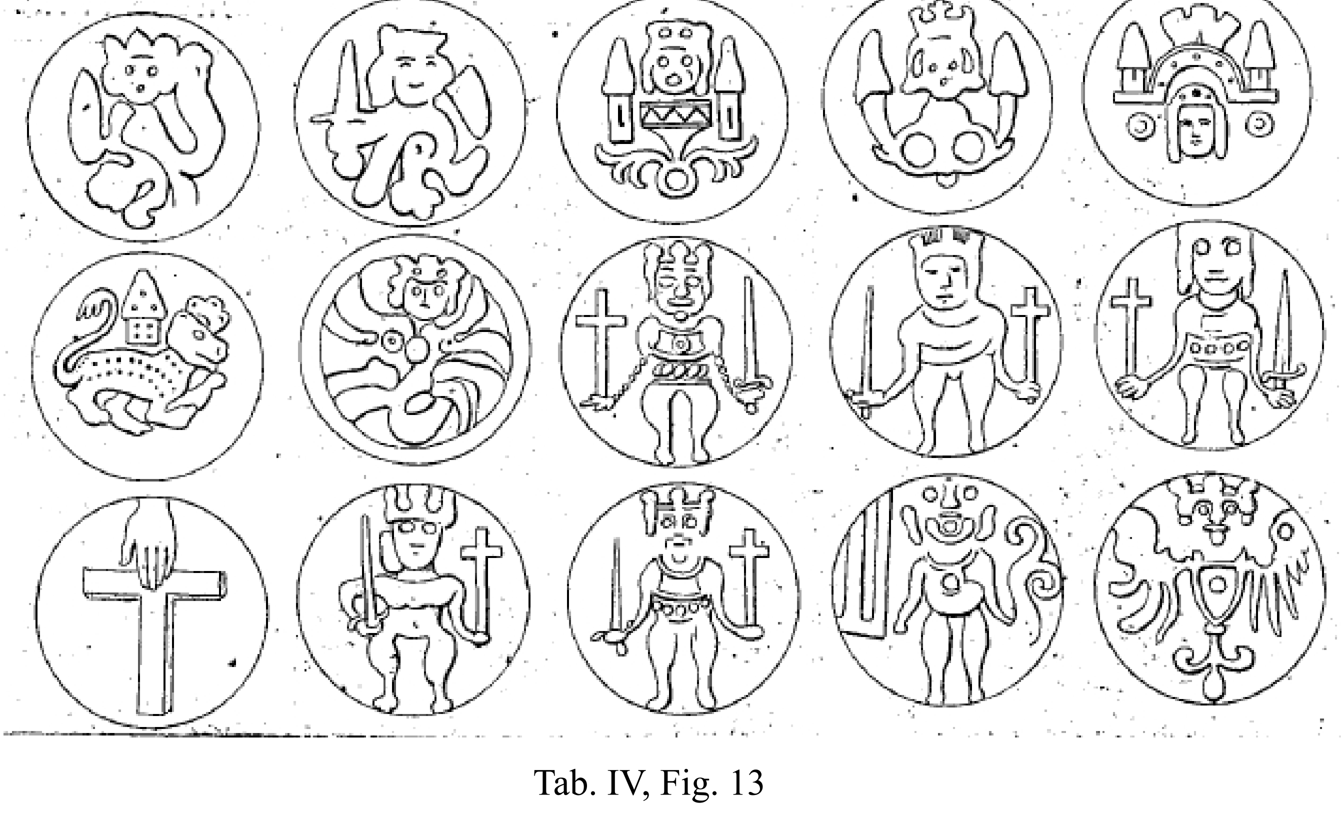
Tab. III, Fig. 15

16.

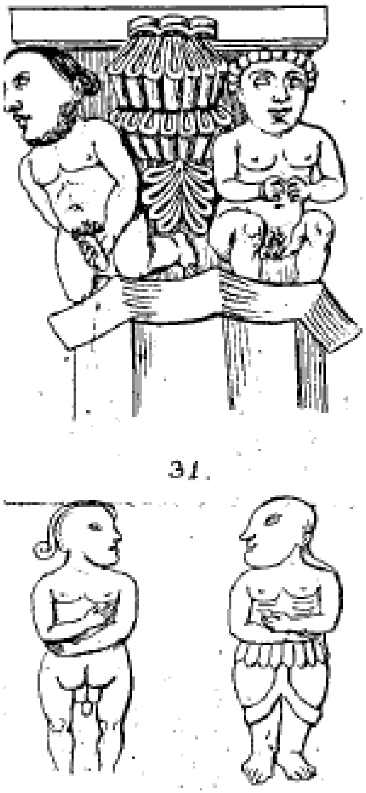


Tab. III, Fig. 16

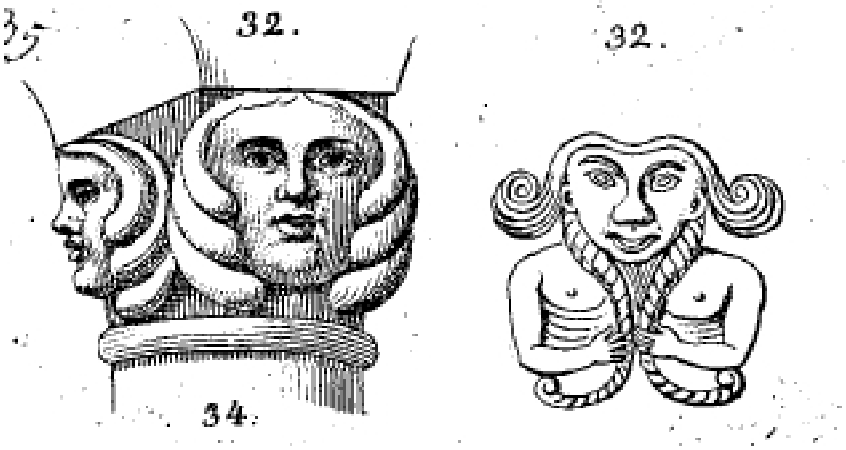
13. p 35



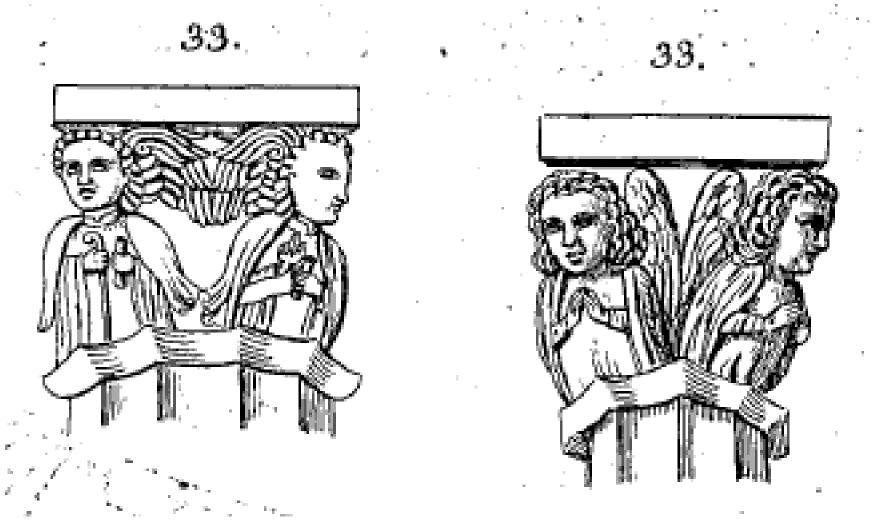
Tab. IV, Fig. 13



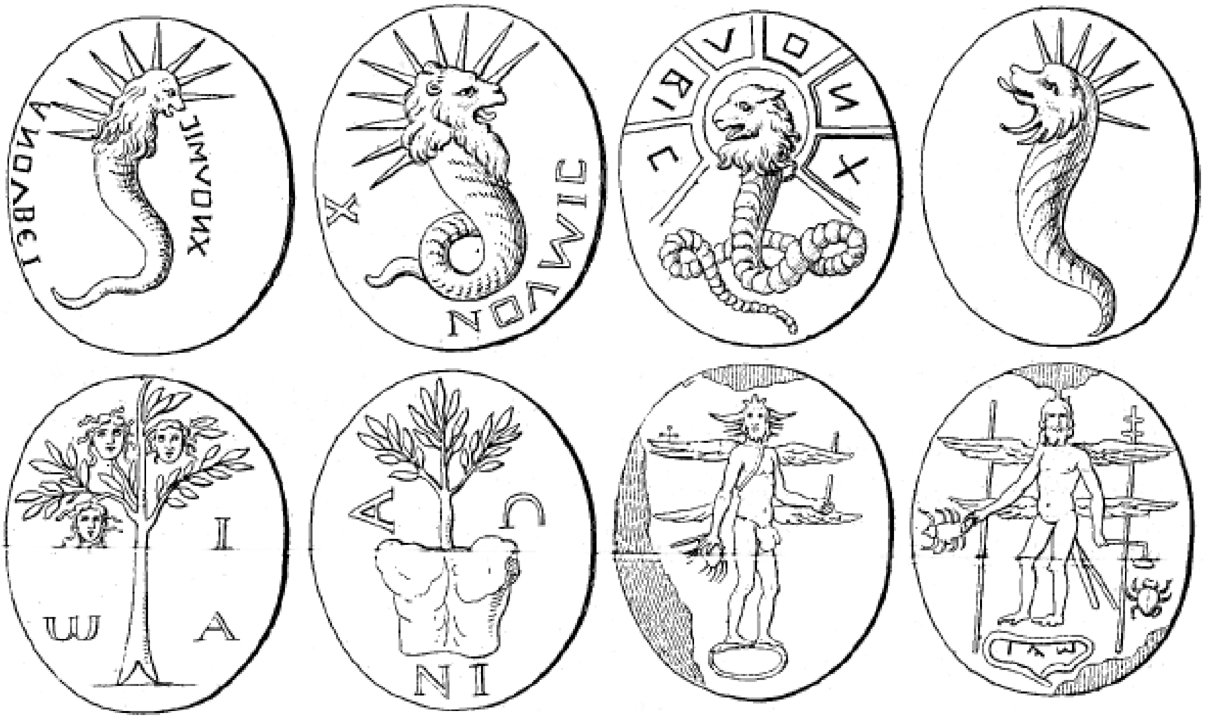
Tab. IV, Fig. 31



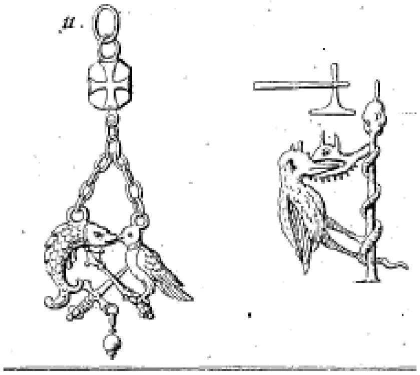
Tab. IV., Fig. 32



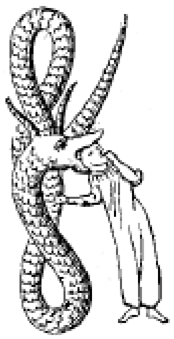
Tab. IV., Fig. 33


X
NOVWIC
I
Ш
A
A
NI

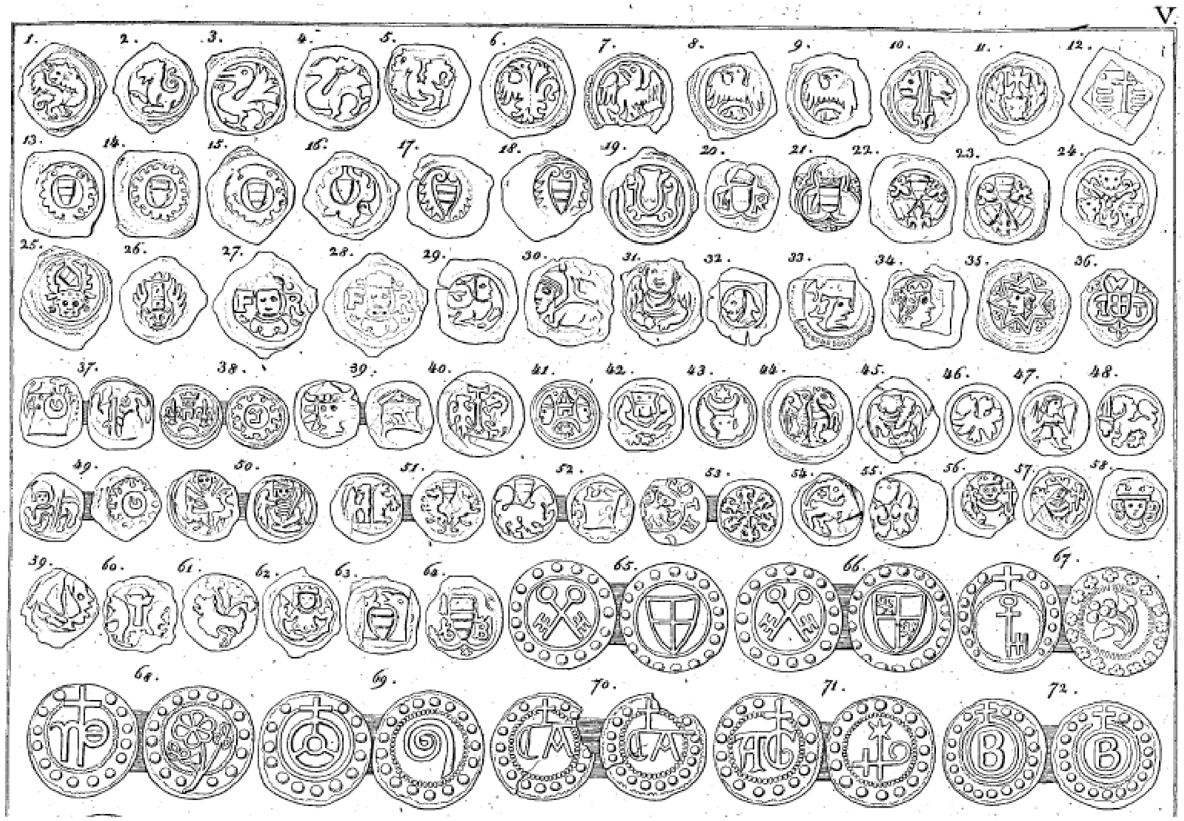
Tab. IV, Fig. 1-8



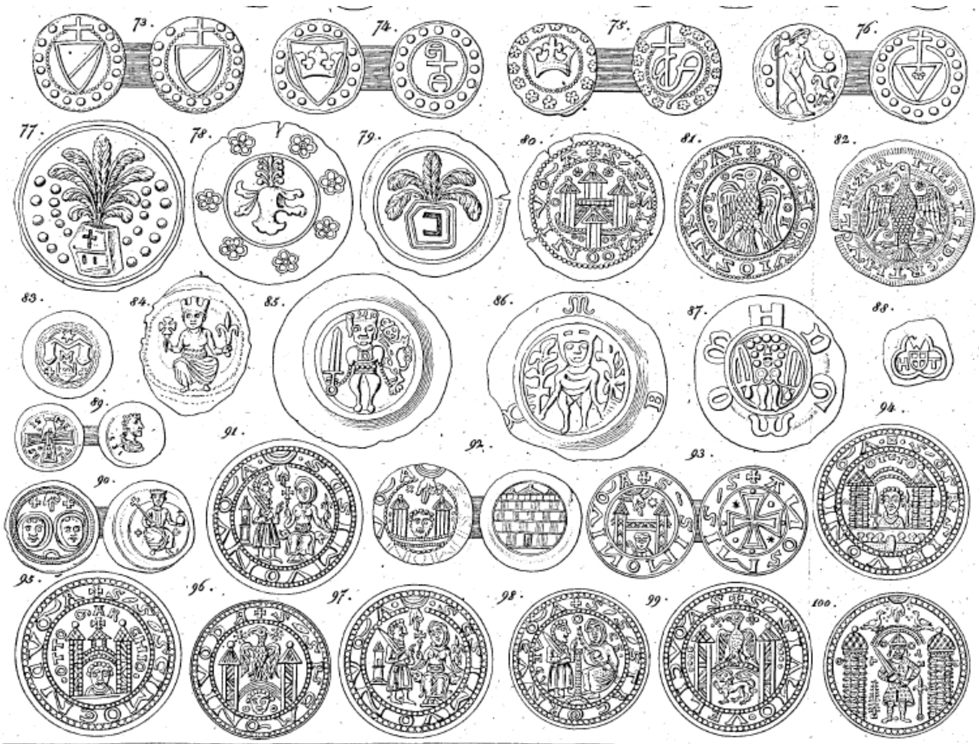
Tab. IV, Fig. 11



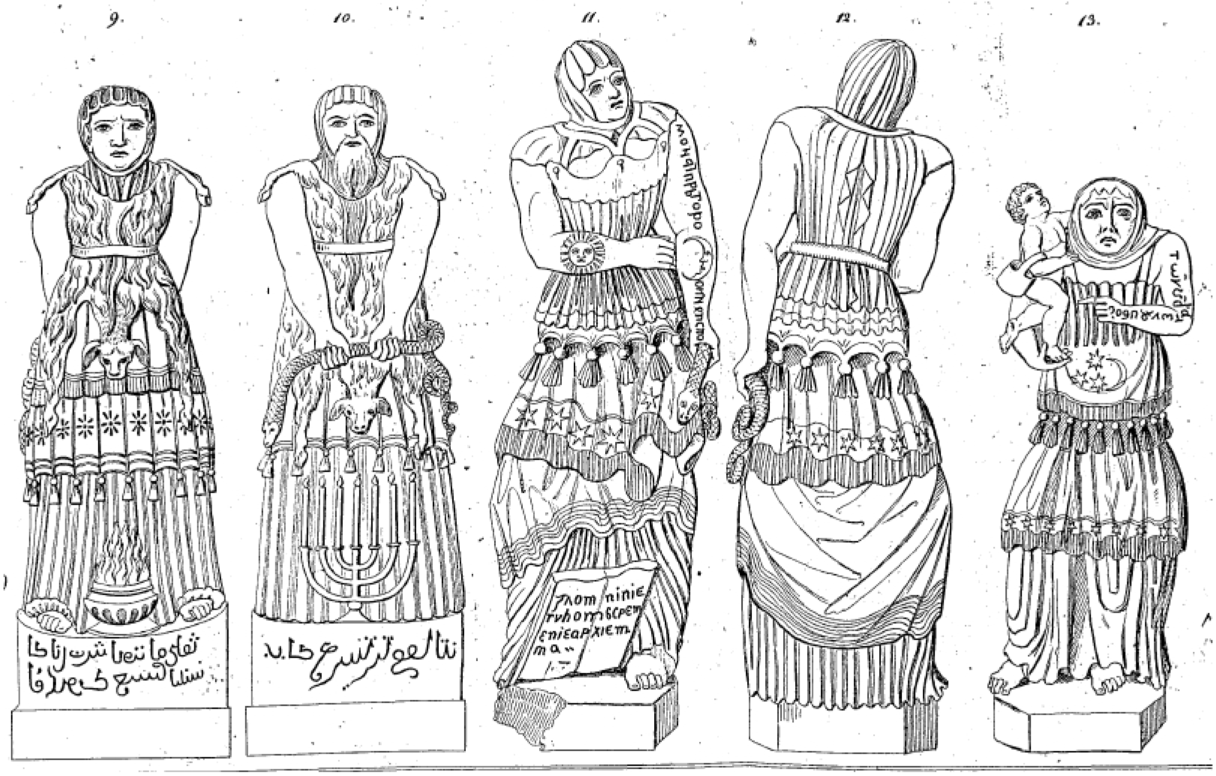
Tab. IV, Fig. 12



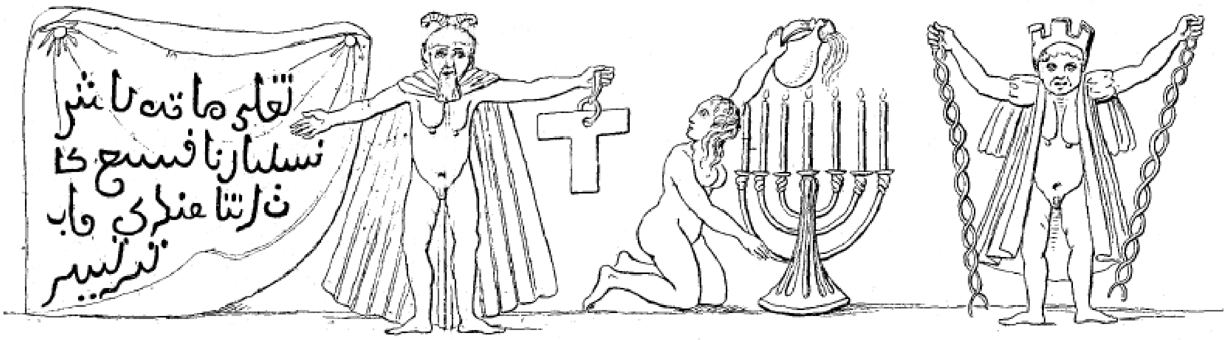
Tab. V, Fig. 1-72



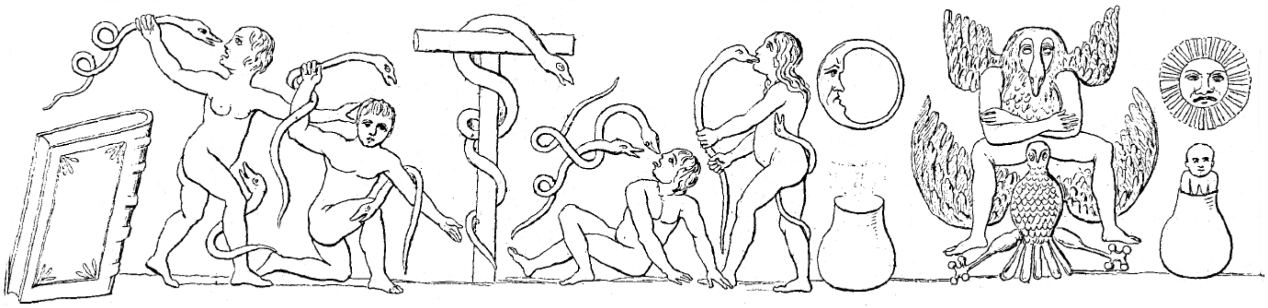
Tab. V, Fig. 73-100



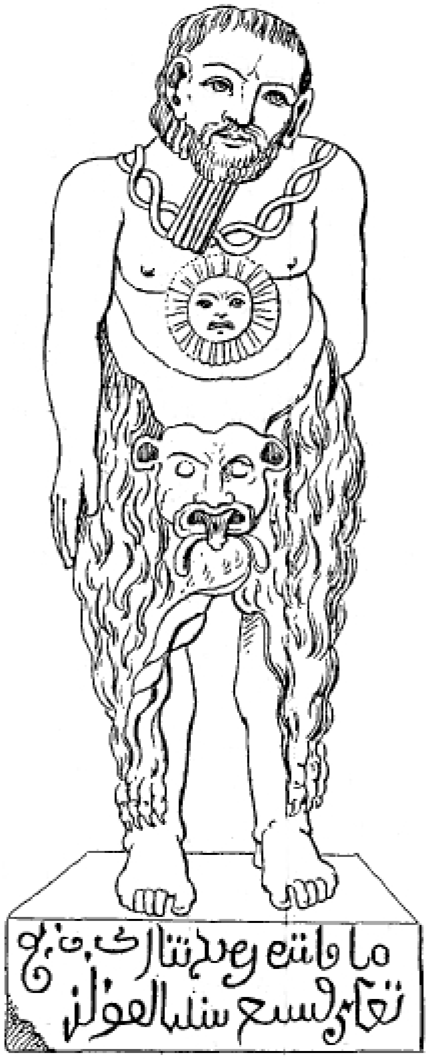
Tab. I, Fig. 9-13



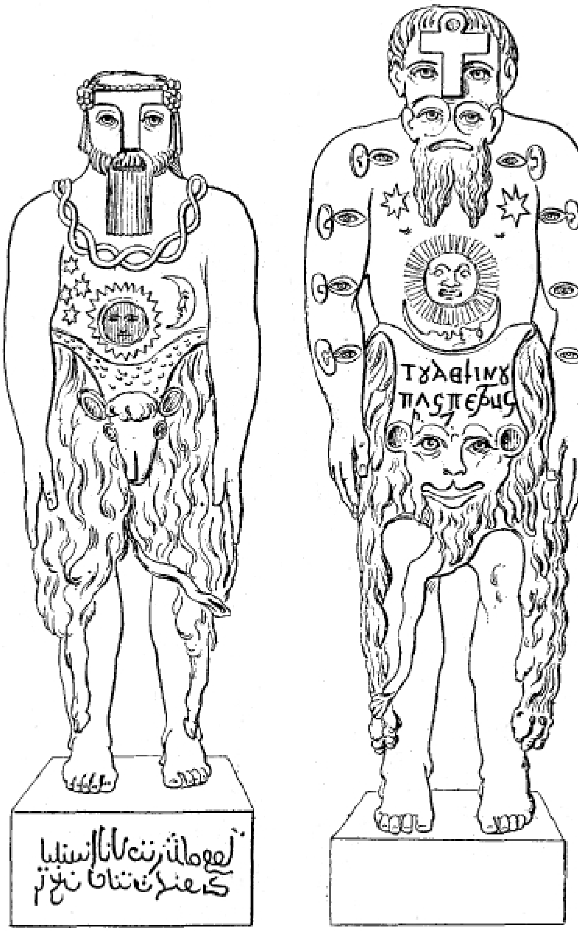
Tab. II, Fig 1, right half



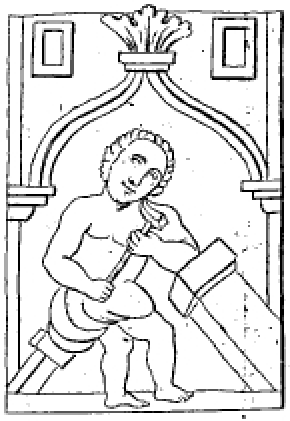
Tab. II, Fig 1, left half



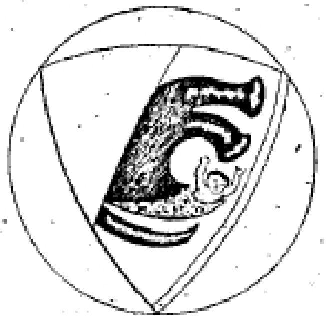
Tab. I, Fig. 6



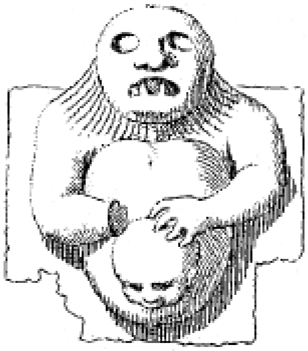
Tab. I, Fig. 1 and 2



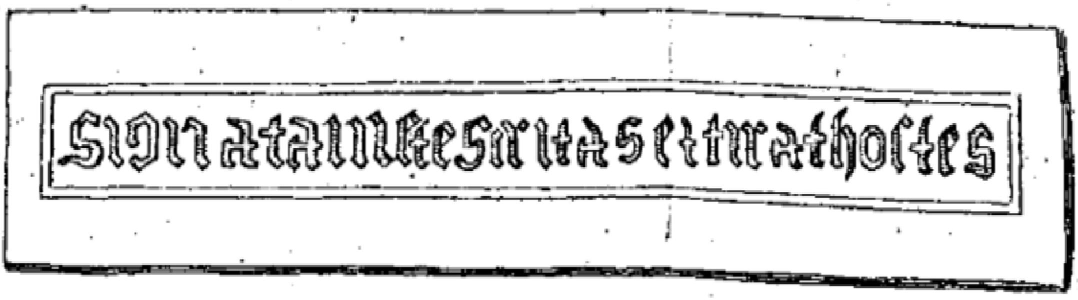
Tab. III, Fig. 9



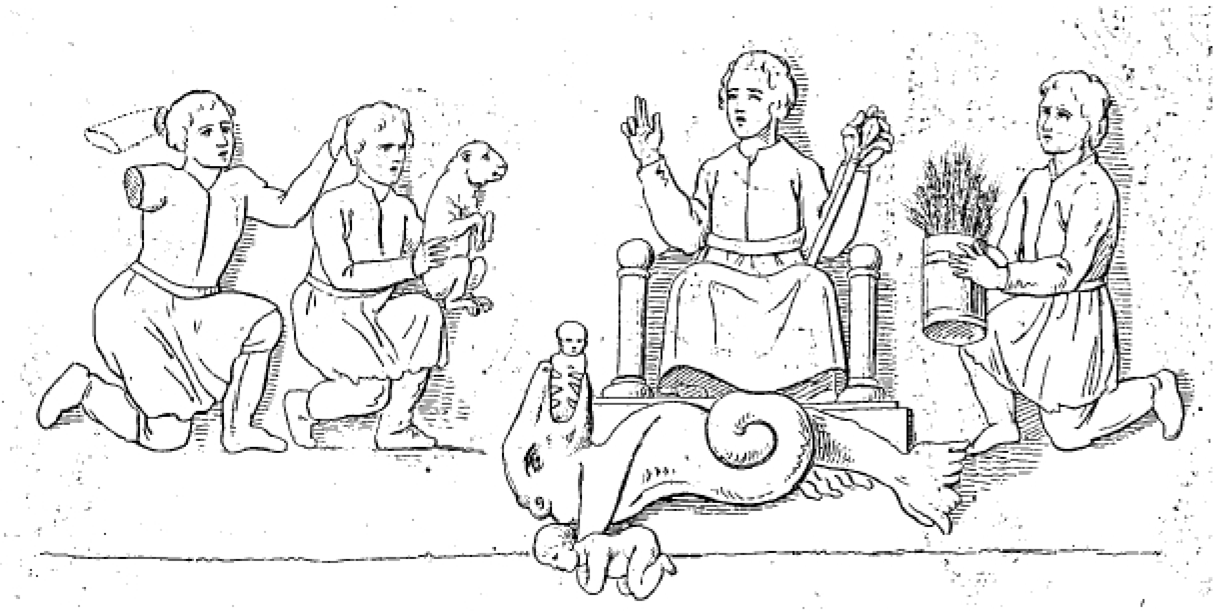
Tab. IV, Fig. 20



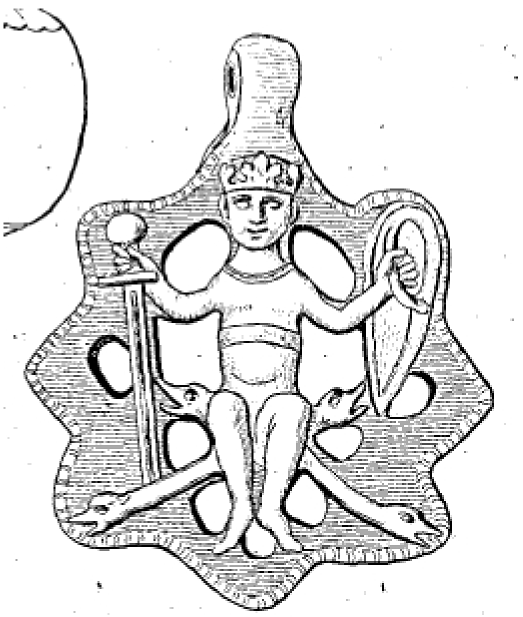
Tab. IV, Fig. 22



Tab. II, Fig. 16

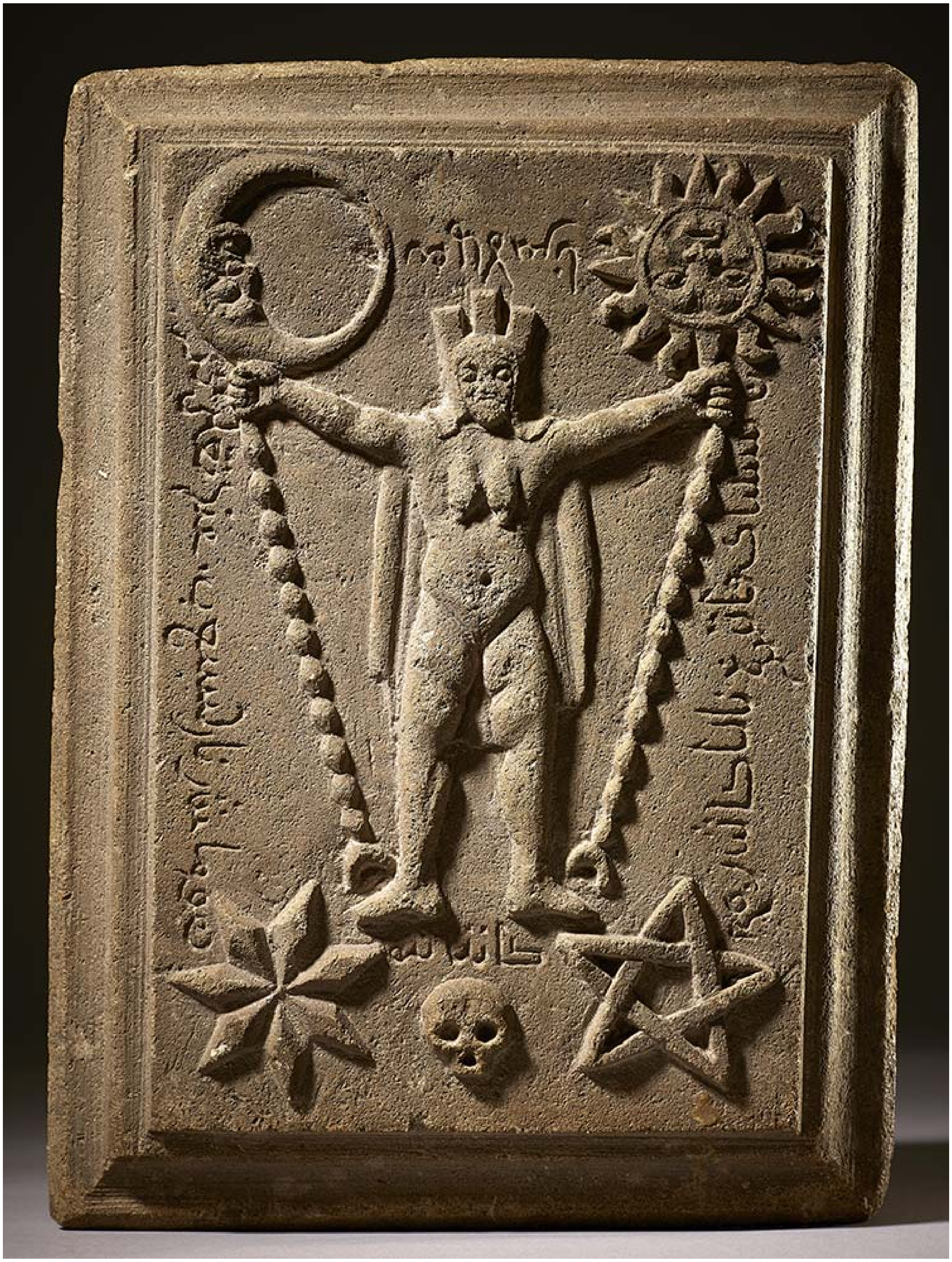


Tab. III, Fig. 12



Tab. III, Fig. 2

Appendix
Engravings from the British Museum

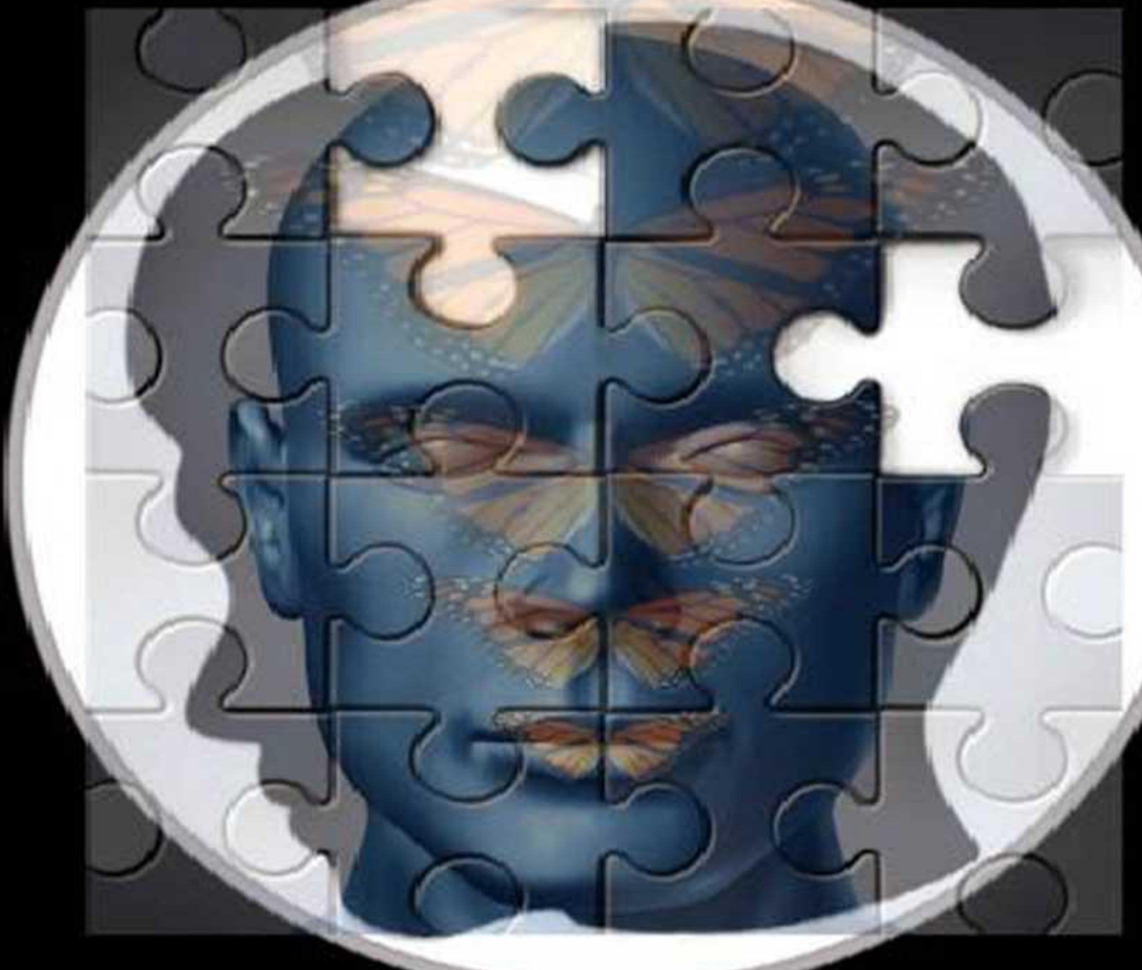


ALEXANDRE LEBRETON

MK

Ritual Abuse and Mental Control

Tools of domination of the
"Nameless Religion"



OMNIA VERITAS

Alexandre Lebreton

MK
Ritual Abuse & Mental Control

Tools of domination
of the "Nameless Religion"

OMNIAVERITAS

© Omnia Veritas Ltd -
Alexandre Lebreton -
2016

www. omnia-veritas.com

Contents

warning

foreword

Chapter 1 - Mind Control: From Simple to Complex

1 - The mental control of the masses
2 - Individual mind control

Chapter 2 - The Roots of Traumatic Ritual Abuse and Mind Control

1-Introduction
2 - ''Nameless religion''
3 - From ancient cults in Mysteries to modern secret societies
4 - Sexual magic and secret societies
5 - Sacrifices, witchcraft, shamanism and multiple personalities

4 - Rituals of Sacrifice in the Old Testament **Chapter 3 - The**

MK-Ultra Program

1 - Brief history
2 - Child victims of the MK-Ultra: testimonies
3 - Dr. Ewen Cameron in Canada
4 - Dr. William Sargant in England
5 - Palle Hardrup's programming
6 - Occultism, the paranormal and the C.I.A.
7 - Conclusion

Chapter 4 - Ritual Abuse

1 - Introduction
2 - Ritual abuse in the modern world
3 - Some testimonials

Chapter 5 - The Fractional and Amnesic Personality

1 - Introduction
2 - Dissociation

3 - Traumatic (or dissociative) amnesia
4 - Dissociative identity disorder (T.D.I.)
5 - Development of T.D.I. in children
6 - The T.D.I. in the media
7 - Conclusion

Chapter 6 - Trauma, Dissociation and Connection to Other Dimensions

1 - Introduction
2 - Multiple personality and demonic possession
3 - Dissociation and exit from the body: the door open to possession?
4 - In pursuit of lost soul fragments
5 - Trauma and paranormal psychic faculties
6 - Man medicine and his animals totem...
7 - Conclusion

Chapter 7 - Monarch Programming

1 - Introduction
2 - Definition
3 - Break the heart and rewire the brain
4 - The multiplication of alter personalities
5 - The "magic surgery" and the structuring of the "inner world"
6 - Trance state and ''triggers''
7 - Some testimonies:
8 - Synthesis

Chapter 8 - Deprogramming Protocols

1 - Introduction
2 - Restore a healthy spirituality
3 - Security and stability
4 - The reappropriation of the "inner world"
5 - The alliance with alter personalities
6 - The treatment of traumatic memories
7 - Fabian therapy

8 - The Inner Castle (Thérèse d'Avila)

Chapter 9 - Mind Control in the Entertainment Industry

1 - Introduction
2 - Paedocriminality in show business
3 - Some quotes...
4 - Marilyn Monroe: Hollywood's first slave under mental control
5 - Candy Jones: ''Manchu Candidate''
6 - Mk-Monarch symbolism in the music industry
7 - Mk-Monarch symbolism in the film industry
8 - Super-athletes under mental control

Chapter 10 - Network Offensive and Defensive Propaganda and Techniques

1 - Networks of power
2 - Operation of the Network when a protective parent sounds the alarm
3 - The lightning first sight strategy
4 - The "syndrome of false memories" and "parental alienation"
5 - The focus on the internet tool (cyber-police)
6 - "National Security"
7 - Sexual subversion

Conclusion

Annexes

Annex N°1
Annex N°2
Annex N°3
Annex N°4

warning

This book deals with a particularly painful subject, it contains shocking information that can be very disturbing for everyone. Its sometimes very brutal content, especially in the testimonies, aims to reveal a harsh reality masked by a syndrome of massive societal denial. Some content can also potentially trigger negative reactions in survivors of ritual abuse and mind control, but also in anyone who has been the victim of incest or childhood abuse and neglect. It is therefore necessary to be careful and to stop the reading if it triggers emotions or inappropriate reactions. It is a book that is intended exclusively for an adult readership.

This book is strictly informative, in no case can it be a substitute for therapeutic treatment.

It is aimed at believers as well as non-believers, however some passages with biblical or eschatological content may disturb the atheist reader. A relative prior knowledge of the theology and spiritual struggle that takes place here below can help to fully grasp the content of this book. Believing readers are advised to prepare through prayer before such a reading.

> Everything that is hidden must be brought to light,
> everything that is secret must appear in the open.
> Marc 4 : 22

foreword

When one looks at paedocriminal cases, at one time or another, one discovers testimonies of gang rape, occult rituals, mental slavery and even human sacrifices where the terror and suffering of the victims are brought to a climax. One solution may be to look the other way, to reject these testimonies because of their too shocking character and shaking up our paradigm too much; or to take them into consideration and accept them as possibly a reality of the world in which we live... A possibility that will gradually turn into a certainty in view of the very many testimonies that relate the same practices.

From there, it is possible to dig into the subject and then realize that it is a kind of Pandora's box. Is the innocence of childhood a fountain of youth for certain circles? Is the immaculate consciousness of childhood a blank page on which some grant themselves the right to engrave what they want to serve their own interests? Does elitist Satanism, also called paedo-satanism, really exist?

Channeling consciences is a key to domination here on earth. Mind control takes different forms, from the simplest to the most complex. The learning methods that shape the brain, the school and university programs that format beliefs and critical thinking, are a first form of modeling the future adult that aims to make it compatible and useful to the current social system. "Journalistic" information and media entertainment are other factors that will influence your consciousness according to a certain model. The social pressure that makes the individual submit to what is called the "single thought", is also a form of mind control. The various food and environmental pollutions alter your brain and consequently your capacity for reasoning and analysis...

At this point, the population still retains a semblance of free will. Every individual has the opportunity to question everything they have been taught since childhood. He can reform himself by choosing other sources, get rid of his television, change his way of feeding, lighten himself from the material world to turn to the spiritual world, *etc.* We could also cite the subliminal or psychotronics as tools that can influence and control the human consciousness.

The "nameless religion" (which will be defined in chapter 2) loves robots and automatons, it needs them. It needs to create a planet of illusions where your thoughts, ideas and creativity are under its control. His world is a permanent war to manipulate your subconscious in every possible way. From misinformation to hidden symbols to invisible technological weapons, the *modus operandi* of "nameless religion" is MIND CONTROL.

What will be studied in this book is a tool of slavery where the free will of the victim no longer exists at all, or almost no longer. It is about mental control based on trauma and the manipulation of the psychic world, a process initiated from early childhood. Mind control or Mind-Kontrol (MK programming) can be defined as systematic torture blocking the victim's ability to become aware of the treatment inflicted. Suggestions and conditioning are used to implant thoughts and directives in the subconscious, usually in new identities (dissociated or "alter" personalities) artificially created by extreme and repetitive traumas, forcing the victim by a natural mechanism of brain protection, to act, feel, think or perceive things as the programmer wishes. The aim is to have the victim execute instructions without his or her being aware of them. The installation of these MK programs relies on the victim's ability to dissociate himself deeply. Very young children who already have serious dissociative disorders are therefore "first choice candidates" for programming.

The child is like a piece of shapeable clay. During his first 6 years, his brain is in full development, his neurons are organized according to his experience, he is in "recording" mode and he is not able to criticize the information he receives. He therefore stores the data and thus builds the foundations of his subconscious who will direct his adult life. This is why the internal structures of a programming by personality splitting are installed during early childhood, before the age of 6. We are talking about a real psychic surgery. The child will very quickly be encouraged to dissociate himself during traumatic sessions, to pass through the mirror, to cross the rainbow, to access an alternative reality, to other dimensions. In a child, the profound altered states of consciousness during a traumatic experience create a kind of psychic and energetic "unlocking".

The culture of dissociative states is as old as the world and is an integral part of the practices of the "nameless religion" which systematically uses it on its descendants. This psycho-spiritual process is therefore a kind of door opening onto other dimensions and giving enlightenment to the one who lives the dissociative experience. The most direct way to access this altered state of consciousness is the pure and hard trauma caused by terror and extreme pain; can even go, as we will see, to near-death experiences. These techniques are systematically used by satanic/Luciferian fraternities as a process of inversion of sanctification: counter-initiation. They are used as tools to control society. As the famous hacker Kevin Mitnick says: "The weak link in any security system lies in the human factor." In order to be able to secure a system of domination on a global scale, it is therefore imperative to set up a hacking of the minds of human pawns placed in strategic positions behind democratic facades. The MK is the focal point of the various occult organizations of this planet. The main axis on which this control tool is based is dissociative identity disorder, i.e. multiple personality syndrome, a consequence of traumatic ritual initiations practiced from early childhood.

This book is just like a memory divided into a thousand pieces that would have been reconstructed in the manner of a puzzle. Indeed, the subjects of ritual abuse and mind control are difficult to understand when one accesses only fragments of testimonies or rare articles on paedocriminal networks, Satanism and mental control. All the more so because at the French-speaking level information remains very limited.

To begin to identify this heavy subject, this puzzle required gathering pieces concerning anthropology, psychotraumatology, government programs such as MK-Ultra, transgenerational Satanism, the "soul fragments" of shamanic traditions, demonology, but also the societal aspect of the thing: that is to say, all the MK symbolism infused before our eyes in popular culture via the entertainment industry. Once all these pieces are connected to each other in a coherent way, part of the mysteries of this world eventually become accessible to the layman... the eye of the cyclone, an essential key to understanding the satanic paedo systemand more generally of what is now called the New World Order.

This book therefore tries to reconstitute the MK puzzle as best as possible, it should help you to grasp one of the most obscure aspects of our world, and perhaps also enlighten you on our current situation, both material and spiritual.

Canadian sociologist Herbert Marshall McLuhan said: "Only the smallest secrets need to be protected. The biggest ones are guarded by public disbelief.''

We call fools those who are not affected by the common madness...

Chapter 1

Mind Control: from simple to complex

Interindividual influence or social influence fascinates and frightens. (...) the terrible various facts attributed to him (collective suicides, ritual crimes.) as well as disturbing scientific studies (works on hypnosis, experimental studies on conformism or submission to authority.) affirm the existence of an almost irresistible force that could push us to do or think things that we would not want, a force that could even lead us to our loss. There is, with the influence, the idea of an intrusion, of a real rape of conscience, of will. which seems to be able to pass under the control or will of another. It is no longer oneself who wants or who acts, it is the will of another that has entered into oneself and it is another who acts through oneself (feeling of possession) - Stéphane Laurens, "The dangers of mental manipulation".

There are different types of mind control. There is large-scale control, mass control, and individual control that focuses on a single subject. It can be direct and violent or indirect and non-violent (this is called silent or invisible war). In mass mind control, individuals generally retain their free will while the most complex individual mind control will completely suppress it. Through biology, neurology and applied psychology, sorcerers-controllers have achieved an advanced knowledge of the human being, both biologically and psychologically. This system has come to know the human better than the human knows himself, which means that he holds a great power of control over individuals because the most effective way to conquer a man is to capture his mind. Control a man's mind and you will control his body, not all men have the same thoughts,but all think with the same mechanism: the brain. Mass or individual mind control can also be called hard or gentle mind control, direct or indirect, active or passive. Military-type brainwashing is the active and direct method, while television-type brainwashing is the passive and indirect method, certainly the most effective due to the fact that the victims are unaware of what is happening to them and tirelessly and voluntarily continue their brainwashing.

1 - The mental control of the masses

It is not only the victims of the MK-Ultra (American program on individual mind control, chapter 3) who are programmed, but the whole world, subjected to a form of mind control. For example, we have been programmed to believe that our political leaders are men of honour and loyalty with great respectability because of the social status they hold... While our current governing elites are only corrupt, psychopathic child rapists and cocaine addicts, individuals who bathe in the darkest occultism. The death of a child or the use of a human slave reduced to the state of a robot does not make them hot or cold. Does this deliberately affirmative and provocative statement shock you? Does this erode your paradigm?... Perhaps you will close this book here to protect the image you have of the world in which you live. This would be a completely natural defensive reaction: the instinctive preservation of your paradigm.

The now famous parable of the "Matrix" in which we are immersed is very accurate, people are permanently connected to a current keeping them in a safe and infantilizing waking dream. The functioning of our brain, our mind, our emotions and even our spiritual world is perfectly known by the "architects of control", who only have to press this or that button to trigger this or that reaction.

An important principle of mind control is distraction. Distraction makes it possible to focus consciousness on one or more of the five senses (sight, touch, hearing, smell, taste) in order to program in parallel the subconscious. This principle applies as much in magic tricks as in state propaganda, marketing and advertising. The second principle of mind control that accompanies the first is repetition. The combination of distraction and repetition is highly effective in programming the human subconscious. Television, radio, various and varied circuses (entertainment and variety), are all directed to your subconscious, the art of propaganda is to address your subconscious directly. And this art has now become a real science applied on a large scale. Human beings need entertainment, indeed, but we see today that what is offered to us all the time on television, with reality television for example, is more of a sabotage of consciences than an innocent game of belote...

Men submit to mind control because they are born in it. The science of social engineering (the analysis and automation of a society) that works on mass control sets up manipulation, domination and oppression in a progressive way so that people can never be able to see it coming. This is the famous allegory of the frog in a pot of water that heats up. If you immerse a frog in very hot water, it will react very quickly to escape from it. Whereas if we immerse it in cold water and gradually heat this water until it boils, the frog will get used to the temperature, it will numb and will no longer have the strength to save itself, it will end up being scalded. This is a good illustration of the phenomenon of habituation that leads to not reacting to a serious situation and our modern society is totally numb in this "Matrix" whose boiling point does not seem very far away...

a/ Television

''Media stupidity is not an epiphenomenon. It is leading a war of annihilation against culture. There are a lot of battles to be fought. But, if the media industry wins its war against the spirit, all will be lost.'

Pierre Jourde

One of the sources plunging the masses into this "Matrix" is directly in your living room, it is the television, which has replaced the fireplace as the "heart of the fireplace". This device is a first-class mind control tool, perhaps even the most important when it comes to global control. Imagine for a few minutes a society without television, needless to say that consciences would have a completely different way of functioning, desires and needs would have nothing to do with those of today. Imagine a society without the infantilization, the stupidization, the polemics, the division, the fear, the advertising packaging, the deculturation, the standardization and the conformism that this device spreads all the time. Imagine the "available brain time" (term used by Patrick Le Lay, CEO of TF1) that could be made available for other family, social, creative, truly educational and pedagogical activities, knowing that on average 75% of our free time (INSEE) is monopolized by television programs! No household appliance had managed to break into homes so quickly and massively. The family organizes its furniture around the television set, the meal and bedtime times are organized according to the schedule of programs (and vice versa), she has in a way become the mistress of the house programming family planning and the minds of the most assiduous members to this grid ...

We are dealing with a real mind control technology, television has a powerful hypnotic effect. In *"Life and Health"* (1992) Liliane Lurçat writes: *"Children and adults undergo a real fascination through image andspeech. When the viewer is in front of the station, he can no longer detach himself from it. This behaviour is particularly impressive in children, since television is the only thing capable of immobilising a small child, usually very a,ctif in other circumstances."*

In 1997, the philosopher Jean-Jacques Wunenberg wrote in a Télérama: "First agent of the globalization of mores, television arouses an almost ritual set of uniform behaviors, whatever the environments and visual messages: arrangement of furniture, assembly of spectators oriented towards the light source, schedules constrained by a show generally programmed at fixed times, etc.[1]."

Several studies have been conducted on the effects of television on the brain. The overall finding is that this device weakens attention span and critical ability. Television generates a state of hypnosis under the guise of relaxation. The most popular pastime in the world also leads to a form of addiction whose criteria are: "Spend a large part of one's time using the substance, use it more often than one would like, think about reducing its use or make repeated but unsuccessful efforts to reduce it, drop important social, family or professional activities to use it , and show withdrawal symptoms when they are stopped." All these criteria can be applied to large television consumers.

In 1986, Byron Reeves of Stanford University, Esther Thorson of the University of Missouri and their colleagues began to study whether the formal features of television content, i.e. cuts, montages, zooms, pans, sudden noises, etc., activated an orientation response in the individual and therefore kept his attention centered on the screen. The orientation response is the mobilization of attention following a change in the subject's environment, it is accompanied by a complex set of changes at the sensory, somatic and autonomous level that aim to prepare the subject to react to a possible unforeseen event. Looking at how brain waves were affected by formal television traits, the researchers concluded that video montages could actually trigger involuntary responses in the individual... It is form, not content, that makes television unique. This orientation response may in part explain remarks such as: "If a TV is on, I can't help but watch it" or "I feel mesmerized when I watch TV"." The makers of educational programmes for children have found that these formal traits can promote learning, but that the increase in the number of cuts and shots ends up overloading the brain. Clips and commercials that use quick cuts with unrelated scenes are designed to capture the viewer's attention more than to deliver information. People can remember the name of the product or the name of the brand, but the details of the advertisement are entered by one ear and then come out by the other; or should we say entered by one eye and come out by the other. This is the consequence of an overloaded orientation response[2].

In 1964, the philosopher Marshall McLuhan published "To Understand the Media", a book in which he explains that television is the preferred tool of advertisers because it is able to break down the feeling of externality with the scenes watched, just as if it were an extension of the brain. This phenomenon is confirmed by an experiment conducted by Marshall and his son Eric McLuhan, reproduced twenty years later at the University of Toronto by his son in the documentary "The Tube" by Peter Entell. The experiment consists in demonstrating that a film watched on television or in the cinema will not be perceived in the same way at all. In this experiment, two groups of individuals watch the same film on either side of a suspended screen, one receiving the light reflected on the screen (similar to the cinema), the other (on the other side of the screen) receives the light coming directly from the source (similar to television). Then each participant of both groups is asked to write a page of comments on their impressions and what they thought was significant during this screening. Experience shows that "reflected light" and "direct light" do not have the same effects on body and mind. In the "reflected light" (cinema) group, people were aware of something external to them and they were relatively objective about the content of the film. On the other hand, in the "direct light" group (television), people spoke more about themselves, their feelings and their thoughts. Their comments were much more subjective than those of the other group. In front of a direct light like that of television, the viewer is no more and no less than the screen on which the light is projected and he lives the content of the programs with a much stronger emotional impregnation, with a loss of the feeling of externality of the scenes watched. There is no longer any distance: you are the screen and the projection of the image is printed on you like a tattoo. This direct light gives television images the power to invade the mind as in a dream by neutralizing the critical mind. As demonstrated in the previous experiment on the orientation response, it is more the media (the tool) than the content that acts on the brain.

The American neurologist Thomas Mulholland has demonstrated grace

to an electroencephalogram (EEG) that the television creates a state of deep relaxation, or even drowsiness in the subject. He found that the EEG displayed Alpha-type brain waves when the subject was watching television. This type of brain wave is the one that is observed

when the human is inactive, the less the brain works, the more alpha waves it produces. This hypnotic relaxation largely explains the addiction caused by television, especially after a day's work. Hypnotic relaxation therefore effectively promotes the impregnation of advertising content and other propaganda messages. Television, thanks to this hypnotic effect and its role of entertainment, makes it possible to keep the citizen in an illusory distraction and thus to detach him from the real stakes in order to better govern him. Frederick Emery, one of the brightest social scientists of his generation and a member of the Tavistock Institute, said: "Television may be
conceptualized as the technological analogue of hypnosis.''

What Herbert Krugman said about television is also very interesting. Krugman is a former advertising agency director, when he was a consultant for the Bureau of Intelligence Research at the U.S. State Department, his work focused on the infiltration of communism into American society, as well as brainwashing during the Korean War and resistance to propaganda. In the documentary "The Tube", Herbert Krugman says that advertisers were passionate about brainwashing techniques, he says he himself knew some first-choice "brain washers" that he then recruited for his services... He does not hesitate to compare television with certain techniques used by the military such as sensory deprivation boxes, also used in the MK-Ultra project. According to him, such techniques rely on a phase of desensitization very similar to the mental state caused by television. The television image is indeed poor in sensory data, leading to the viewer losing the sensation of his body. In the case of individual brainwashing, the loss of sensory cues by which the person recognizes himself is the preparatory phase of the change imposed on his mental world. In the case of television, the images plunge the viewer into an awake sleep, his brain then functions in alpha waves, his identity dissolves and the "image box" provides him with the dreams programmed at fixed times for him[3].

Television is the ideal tool for the application of the principle of "tension and liberation". It helps to create tension in a controlled environment, thus increasing the level of stress, and then it provides a series of possibilities for the release of tension and stress. As long as the victim thinks that the choices proposed are the only possible solutions, even if at first glance they seem unacceptable, he or she will end up making one of those unacceptable choices. In such a situation, man is conditioned to respond to the tension like an animal seeking the pressure relief valve. The key to the success of this mind control process is the balanced management between tension and the choices to relieve this tension. As long as these two things are controlled, the victim may be led to choose and accept things that are increasingly unacceptable. This is social engineering, cultural psychiatry, and television is the essential vehicle for infusing the tension in each household and the valve to release that tension in every household. Television infuses images creating tension and then serves on a flat the solutions[4].

Television with its world of semi-reality, illusion and escape, broadcast 24H24, 7 days a week, is a real box with mental programming, its truly cultural and educational role remains very secondary.

Anton Szandor Lavey, the founder of *the Church of Satan* and the author of the Satanic Bible, has a very clear idea of the role of television in our modern society... he writes in his book *"The Devil's Notebook": "The birth of television is a magical event with satanic meaning (...) What started modestly in families with small boxes has gradually turned into large satellite dishes and antennas that dominate the horizon and replace the crosses at the top of the churches. Television, or the satanic altar, has developed rapidly since the 50s from a small blurry screen to a huge material that covers entire walls. What began as innocent entertainment in the daily lives of families ended up replacing real life for millions of people, it became a major religion for the masses.*

The clergy of the television religion are the artists, the presenters, especially those who propagate the darkness through the rays of the cathode ray tube. The presenters of the network are the high priests and high priestesses of the consumer market. The local presenters are the parish priests, making their fat cabbages on the latest local tragedy. Celebrities, whether local, national or international, are all part of the hierarchy of the church, of the canvas.

Comedies, drama series and sitcoms are broadcast night and day, seven days a week, to activate and support the way of life of parishioners, previously only the most fanatical practiced devotion on a daily basis. With satanic stratification intensifying (aided by this evil machine), one of our tasks is to gradually develop a system so that people fit perfectly with their televisionlifestyle."

It is also interesting to note about television that its centerpiece, the cathode ray tube, was invented by a British occultist named William Crookes. The physicist Crookes was a member of the Golden Dawn secret society and president of the psychic research society, it was he who inspired Oliver Lodge's research on the ether and the spirit world. This physicist invented several devices whose purpose was to interact with tiny elementary particles such as electrons. Crookes who was a lover of spiritualism believed that spirits were able to interact with particles such as electrons and protons to manipulate them. In his autobiography, Crookes says that it must have been possible for minds to influence these tiny particles; while working on this issue, he invented the "Crookes Tube". A device for projecting electrons in a beam: this was the birth of cathode rays. The Crookes crt version would become the fundamental element for the development of television invented forty years later by the Scottish John Logie Baird. Television, an invention that would ultimately subjugate and hypnotize the entire world, was inspired in part by research on the spirit world...

b/ The subliminal

Subliminal means "below the threshold" of consciousness, it is an unconscious perception penetrating the area of the brain called "subconscious". The subliminal message can be of formal type with one or more words, or of visual type with an image, a photo, a symbol. But it can also be sound waves.

Subliminal images are undetectable to the naked eye, but the brain perceives and processes them at a subconscious level. The brain processes a lot of information but seems to have different levels of perception and some information can then influence our actions and emotions without the cognitive brain having access to it. In 1997, an experiment by Ahmed Channouf demonstrated that electrodermal reactions (R.E.D.) occur when subjects are exposed to famous or unknown faces in a subliminal way (faces are presented for 50 miliseconds). The subjects' electrodermal reactions were longer when the face was known. They concluded that even when the subject is not aware of seeing these faces, there are physiological clues that demonstrate that there is nevertheless an implicit perception and recognition[6].

Subliminal images can therefore be used as a means of manipulating crowds. There are many cases of subliminal images broadcast on television. In 1958, subliminal messages were banned in the United States, England and Australia. In 1992, France published a decree (No. 92-280) prohibiting the directive which states: "Advertising must not use subliminal techniques understood as aimed at reaching the viewer's subconscious through the very brief exposure of images." Despite this law and the supervision of the CSA, several cases of inlay of subliminal images have been observed in television programs, in films or in commercials. In France, the best-known case took place during an electoral campaign in 1988: the portrait of François Mitterrand was inserted subliminally into the antenne 2 logo during the credits of the television news. This subliminal photo was released from September 1987 to May 1988, or 2949 times. François Mitterrand was elected on May 8, 1988. The credits of the television news will finally be replaced discreetly on May 28, 1988 at the request of the CNCL (National Commission of Communication and Freedom, predecessor of the CSA). This case was tried in court but the trial was lost because the image lasted more than 60 ms (miliseconds), which excludes the qualifier of subliminal, the law considering that an image is subliminal when it lasts less than 50 ms.

In 2000, during an American election, it was discovered by chance a subliminal image embedded in a commercial for George W. Bush. It was a formal subliminal message. The insult "rats" (garbage) appeared at the time when the spot referred to the competitor Al Gore.

In 2008, also in the United States, the FOX 5 News channel introduced in its credits a very stealthy image of the Republican candidate John McCain and his wife. The French television channel M6 was also pinned twice for broadcasting subliminal advertising images during the show "Popstars" and "Caméra café".

In the military newspaper Orienteer of February 1997, Commander Chemishev of the Russian army drew up a list of weapons "psy" where he cites "the effect of the 25th image". It is a technique where each 25th frame of a film reel or feature film contains a message captured by the unconscious. This technique, if effective, could be used to limit alcohol and tobacco abuse, but could also be applied to other areas of greater concern if it is used on viewers or computer system operators. Chemishev also claims that the Japanese have developed the ability to insert sequences of voices at sub-low frequencies onto music, voices that are detected only at the subconscious level. The Russians claim to use similar "subliminal bombings" associated with computer programs to treat alcoholism or smoking[7].

Some Japanese merchants even broadcast CDs in their shops with subliminal messages to combat shoplifting. These mind control CDs broadcast music or sounds of nature but are encoded with a message in seven languages warning that anyone caught shoplifting will be reported to the police[8].

In 1993 and 1994, several articles in the American press^ will report on the information that Igor Smirnov, a Russian expert on non-lethal weapons, experimented for the American secret services and the FBI with a technology capable of subliminally inserting thoughts into the minds of individuals in order to control their actions. In particular, the FBI considered the use of Smirnov's device against David Koresh of David's sect during the siege of Waco. Smirnov said:

"I suggested that the voices of children and families inviting suicidal people to go home could be mixed with the sounds of police motor vehicles (the building was surrounded by it)." It was also about sending messages to Koresh to make him believe that he heard God's voice directly in his head. The FBI would not have chosen the option for the (official) reason that Smirnov guaranteed only a 70% chance of success. The Russian press will also publish articles on Igor Smirnov. Pravda wrote on March 6, 1994: "Village Voice has published the 'scandalous news' that Russians are able to control human behavior[10]''. Two weeks later the Moscow News published a long article, which explained how the scientist, for medical purposes, used the "psychocorrection". "Noises" containing questions, which are not audible but which are perceived by the brain, are sent into the patient's ears. The brain answers these questions, and these answers are recorded on the electroencephalograph and analyzed by computer, which allows Smirnov to perform a very fast psychoanalysis. After which "noises" containing messages of a therapeutic nature are again sent into the patient's brain, which will integrate them at a subconscious level. Smirnov denies using this technology for purposes other than medical, or unethical[11].

c/ Peer pressure

"Habit is therefore a huge driver of society, it is its most valuable conservative factor. It alone is what keeps us all within decreed limits, and what saves the children of the rich from the envious uprisings of the poor.'' - William James - "The Principles of Psychology''

Television is undoubtedly a first-class mind control tool. Because of the conformism and the standardization of the masses that it entails, it is an important vector of what is called "peer pressure" or pressure of the social group, another tool of control or could we say of self-control or mental self-regulation of the people.

Everyone once had the experience of arriving at work the morning after the television broadcast of an "important" football match. You will find that you are somehow marginalized if you have not watched the game because you will not be able to participate in the lively exchanges between colleagues on the subject... And if you don't even have a television, then you will very quickly be labeled as "out of the lot", a marginal individual or even "sectarian". Not following the football championship can still move to the social level, but as soon as you display an opinion contrary to the mainstream in health for example, such as the question of vaccines or diet, you very quickly come up against the "Single Thought" that shapes and directs the masses. In 2015, a glaring example was the "I Am Charlie" movement, stigmatizing individuals who refused to adopt this slogan. This single thought leads the individual to conform to the group for fear of rejection. Reactions can indeed be very violent when a person feels destabilized by the achievements that have shaped his reality. It can then play a role of guardian of the single thought by attacking the black sheep. Peer pressure, of varying intensity depending on the country, culture, religion, political regime, is exerted on each of us by family, neighbors, colleagues, friends. It is a natural human function that makes that "sheep keep sheep", the individual unconsciously self-discipline to follow the imposed social model, so the people limit themselves and self-censor themselves through social pressure. This pressure allows the establishment of rules underlying the entire community and thus compartmentalizing thought within a well-defined framework. This is another important factor in mental control of the masses.

dominant in terms of health for example, such as the question of vaccines or the mode of diet, you very quickly come up against the "Single Thought" that shapes and directs the masses. In 2015, a glaring example was the "I Am Charlie" movement, stigmatizing individuals who refused to adopt this slogan. This single thought leads the individual to conform to the group for fear of rejection. Reactions can indeed be very violent when a person feels destabilized by the achievements that have shaped his reality. It can then play a role of guardian of the single thought by attacking the black sheep. Peer pressure, of varying intensity depending on the country, culture, religion, political regime, is exerted on each of us by family, neighbors, colleagues, friends. It is a natural human function that makes that "sheep keep sheep", the individual unconsciously self-discipline to follow the imposed social model, so the people limit themselves and self-censor themselves through social pressure. This pressure allows the establishment of rules underlying the entire community and thus compartmentalizing thought within a well-defined framework. This is another important factor in mental control of the masses.

"I would say that in 50 years, if a large number of people do not consciously become resistant to the mental control that is exercised over society, we will see more and more people who will look like androids. People induce this themselves by looking at the world and saying to themselves: It's too dangerous for me to tell the truth, to actually say what I believe or to express what I feel. It's much simpler if I make myself a false personality that will keep me passive. That's how it works..'' John Rappoport - State of Mind (Infowar)

It is fear that is at the root of this self-control of the people, the fear of rejection, exclusion, failure and sometimes even the fear of physical violence and imprisonment. Social pressure works very well to stop people from talking about certain things around them. Especially when it comes to sensitive topics such as network paedo-crime, this is an unusual topic for most people because it is completely absent from the official media sphere. Their defense will often be to close to the subject because it will quickly scratch their paradigm. Some will use irony and derision as a diversion and as a kind of self-protection in the face of the unimaginable, to very quickly change the subject of conversation. the denial is massive. People who are interested in it are somehow marginalized, the social pressure exacerbated by the propaganda (or silence) of the media has passed through.

You will note that we are talking about television programmes and school programmes. All this is just large-scale mental programming, but at that level, it does not yet take away your free will.

This pressure from the social group also plays an important role in the school and education system. For an average of 17 years[12],the individual will work most of his time within a class, a group, in which he will receive programs to integrate perfectly if he wants to access the higher levels. If the individual is not in line with the group or unable to integrate and agree with the content of the programmes or the methods of learning, then he will be excluded from this machine that builds and formats future workers. The formatting and indoctrination of young people is, of course, the basis for being able to control a society, and the school and university system plays its role in the same way as television, film and music. The line between education and propaganda is very thin or non-existent, and propaganda cannot function effectively without educational programmes and information control. The shaping of the minds of children, adolescents and young adults who will build the society of tomorrow is the breeding ground in which the single thought that leads to this permanent social pressure takes root. It is a cement that is difficult to erode in an adult who refuses to question his achievements and his paradigm.

d/ Food, water and vaccines

General de Gaulle said that the French are calves, the whole of France is a country of calves. Would the daily consumption of cow's milk have any connection with our condition as human beings reduced to the status of a 'cash cow'? A simple reflection that may give rise to a smile, but which when we are interested in the effects of what we inginge on our brain, suggests that the psychological and emotional state of a society depends largely on what it consumes in the morning at noon and

Evening...

Food has a great influence on humans. His nervous system, mind and emotions are partly influenced by the type of food he eats. The control of masses involves a whole range of chemicals introduced into our bodies through food, water, vaccinations and the atmosphere. This chemistry acts through a weakening of the nervous system and mental capacities, not to mention endocrine disruption and damage to the genetic heritage. We will not enter here into the (polemical) question of alternative diets whose followers extoll the benefits of their different schools. Instead, we're going to focus on the chemicals that interact with our brains through what we ingurgitate, but also through what we're injected from birth or sprayed above our heads.

In the documentary *"Sweet Remedy"* (2006), neurologist Russell Blaylock stated that there really was a "chemical dumbing of society":

"Because of these different toxins that affect brain functions in a notorious way, we see a society that produces, not only the growth of a population with lower and lower IQ, but also a decrease in the population with high IQ. In other words: A chemical dumbing down of society. Thus everyone becomes mediocre, which reduces the population to becoming dependent on the government because it can no longer be intellectually efficient. There are these people with the lowest IQ who are completely dependent, we have this massive population that is going to believe everything they're told because they can't really think clearly. Then there is a minority of people with high IQ, with good brain functions, able to understand all this, and that's what they want! You can thus understand the reasons that drive them to insistently spend hundreds of billions of dollars on advertising: the goal is

to de-abrate the population. "

Let's start with fluoride, recommended by experts three times a day in tooth brushing, lozenges for children and massive dilution in drinking water for everyone! Fluoridation of drinking water supplies is something common, but what is much less known is that fluoride has some impact on people's brains. Fluoride is a major repressive of intellectual functions. Independent studies show that fluoride causes various mental disorders, it makes people stupid, docile and servile, in addition to decreasing longevity and damaging bone structure. The first use of fluoride in drinking water dates back to the Nazi concentration camps. The pharmaceutical company I.G. Farben supplied the fluorine at the time. The Nazis obviously did not use this product to improve the dental health of their prisoners, of course not, this massive medication of fluorine water reserves was used to sterilize prisoners and to abrunt them to ensure their docility. The chemist Charles Perkins was one of the first to denounce the harmful effects of fluoridation of drinking water in an essay he published in 1952. He states that repeated doses of fluoride, even in infinitesimal quantities, reduce an individual's ability to resist domination, by slowly poisoning, by narcotry, a specific part of his brain. This thus subjects him to the will of those who want to govern him... Nothing less! He even states that fluoride is a "light and convenient lobotomy" and that the real reason behind water fluoridation has nothing to do with children's dental health[13]. The fluoride issue does indeed seem to be a big issue, but it is not the only one.

Drinking water intended for the population receives several additives during its treatment process, in addition to fluoride, we can also mention aluminum, involved in serious neurological disorders, such as Alzheimer's. See about it
Sophie Le Gall's excellent investigation entitled ''Du poison dans l'eau du robinet'' (France 3, 2013) explicitly showing the immobility of elected officials and organizations such as AFSSA (French Agency for Health and Food Safety) in the face of so-called ''potable'' water which is in fact totally poisoned in certain regions of France. We also find

this aluminum in vaccinations as well as mercury which is also a poison for the nervous system. Mercury causes autism in young children, although the pharmaceutical industry is struggling to prove that there is no connection because of the huge financial stakes. Some vaccines also contain an adjuvant called polysorbate 80, a product that is used in pharmacology to allow certain drugs to pass through the blood-brain barrier. What is the exact role of such a chemical in the vaccination process? Do neurotoxic heavy metals such as aluminum and mercury in vaccines cross this blood-brain barrier?

All this accumulation of heavy metals in the body (introduced by water, vaccines, dental amalgam, food ...) will lead to the blocking of enzymes intended for the degradation of dietary proteins such as gluten or casein, resulting in chronic poisoning of the body. Indeed, when the proteins of cereals and milk are not completely degraded, they pass through the intestinal wall and end up in the blood system. These "opiate peptides" will behave in the body like certain morphine and attach to the biochemical receptors specific to these substances. In her book entitled "Gluten-free food or dairy products", Marion Kaplan explains that by occupying and saturating opiate receptors, peptides from gluten (contained in cereals such as wheat, oats, rye and barley) and casein (contained in cow's milk) will lead to disorders of behavior and promote the development of certain "diseases". These behavioural disorders caused by the partial degradation of gluten and casein have been highlighted in several medical publications, notably by Professor Reichelt and the Paediatric Research Institute of the University of Oslo. Reichelt is a pioneer in the search for opioid peptides that he discovered in 1981 in the urine of hyperactive children, autistics and schizophrenics. Between 1986 and 1991, he noticed very clear improvements and even cures following the elimination of gluten and casein from the diet of his patients. Gluten and casein poisoning is the cause of a range of behavioural disorders, from hyperactivity to autism, personality disorders and epilepsy. Opioid substances that saturate the brain have the effect of inhibiting social ties. Indifference, withdrawal and lack of language are major consequences. At the same time, these harmful peptides that clutter the body disrupt the management of serotonin. Sometimes there is too much serotonin, and sometimes too little. This leads to excessive information transmitted by the senses, insomnia, impulsive reactions,etc.[14].

Today, you only have to read the labels on the packaging of industrial food to see that gluten and casein are systematically added to prepared dishes, desserts, sauces, soups, *etc.* This with the constant increase in the presence of chemical additives of all kinds in industrial food that is already denatured, polluted, or even genetically modified. So let us not be surprised to see more and more children developing behavioural disorders, known as hyperactivity, minimal brain dysfunction or psycho-organic syndrome. These disorders have repercussions on academic performance and create a certain ill-being that prepares for various addictions. Other additives, such as citric acid, certain preservatives and synthetic dyes can trigger intolerances in predisposed subjects with a significant impact on the neurological systems that regulate gestures, movements and concentration[15].

In Australia, a study entitled "The Role of diet and children's behaviour" was conducted by J. Breakey and published in 1997 in the Journal of Pediatrics & Child Health. Research has shown that diets can affect the behaviour of some children. It has been reported that symptoms such as attention deficit, hyperactivity syndrome, sleep problems and especially mood changes can be corrected by a diet. Another Australian study, conducted by the Institute for Child Health Research, observed the electrical activity of the brain of fifteen children suffering from hyperkinetic syndrome with attention deficit induced by certain foods. During the intake of the offending foods, there was a significant increase in beta brain activity in the frontotemporal region of the brain. This 1997 investigation, which was the first of its kind, clearly demonstrated an association between brain electrical activity and the ingestion of certain foods in children with ADHD (attention deficit hyperactivity disorder). These scientific data validate the hypothesis that in some children, food can not only influence clinical symptoms but also alter the electrical activity of the brain[16].

In an article entitled "Phosphates in food: Children pushed to the brink of madness", pediatrician Frédérique Caudal reports what he observed. After two years of office experience, he found that a diet without phostotic additives catches up in four days the condition of hyperactive children and thus avoids them the infamous "drug" named Ritalin. Phosphates are almost present in all foods containing additives. Their use is such that, for 10 years, their presence has increased by 300%! Our manufacturers do not go there with the back of the spoon when it comes to neurotoxic additives!

The issue of phosphates was raised in Germany as early as 1976 by Mrs Hafer, a pharmacist specialising in the acid-base balance of the human organism. This woman had observed and studied the behavioral abnormalities of her adopted son and had come to the conclusion that the trigger was foods rich in natural phosphates (milk, eggs, etc.) or added phosphates (phosphoric acid from colas, diphosphates from processed cheeses, cooked hams and lifting powders from lecithin cakes). Mrs Hafer's work has had a great echo in German-speaking countries[17].

Now let's move on to sodium glutamate or E621. It is a particularly vicious and widespread flavor enhancer in industrial food. It is present in all kinds of additives such as sodium caseinate, yeast extract or the famous "natural aroma"... Glutamate is an excitotoxin, i.e. a toxic product for the consumer's nervous system. This food additive creates mood disorders, mental confusion, anxiety attacks and behavioral disorders, especially in children.

In 1991, the American television program 60 Minutes broadcast a report on the dangers of sodium glutamate. In this documentary, Dr. John Olney, a professor of neuropathology and psychiatry, says he is convinced that people are at risk by consuming this additive that damages the nervous system, especially babies and children. It was

Dr. Olney's research pointing to the likely danger to infants that removed glutamate from baby food in the 70s. But today Olney is still worried about the millions of children who are exposed to this product present in their favorite foods: fast food and snacks, foods that are completely uncontrolled. The report shows us the case of a ten-year-old child, Jeremy Larrows, who was diagnosed with hyperactive, which led to his failure at school. Everything was tried to help him, from chemical treatments to specialized educational programs, but nothing could help the child to cope. Everyone thought he had attention deficit disorder. For five years, Jeremy had angry and aggressive states towards his comrades, but also towards his family, so much so that he had become unhappy. He could no longer manage his own behaviour. His family took him to Dr. Schwartz who immediately ordered the total removal of glutamate from his diet. Very quickly there were radical changes, his hyperactivity disappeared, his grades improved considerably, as well as his relationships with his friends and family. His mother told reporters: "We had lost him for five years, now we find him, and he is a beautiful and brilliant child. It has been a long and difficult search..."

In the same family of excitotoxins, just as vicious and widespread as sodium glutamate, is aspartame (E951), a neurotoxic sweetener found in more than 6,000 foods! This neurotoxic has the sad ability to destroy neurons. In 1971 Dr. John Olney, who had already demonstrated the dangerousness of sodium glutamate, managed to prove that aspartic acid (which makes up 40% aspartame) literally causes holes in the brains of young mice. Despite this, aspartame is still authorised as a food additive and is even used in some pharmaceutical products. Aspartic acid accumulates in our organism, affects our brain, it also crosses the placenta to reach the brain of the fetus[18].

Despite the evidence regarding the toxicity of this product, it remains present in your supermarkets. especially at the level of the crates, in pretty little boxes of all colors attracting your children. Regularly, "expert opinions" (such as the European Food Safety

Authority) confirm in headlines in our media that aspartame does not present any danger to us, even highlighting its usefulness! Why does such an information war with great "expertise" attempts to systematically confirm the safety of these neurotoxic additives? It's up to you to answer them...

e/ Social engineering: "Shock Strategy", Tavistock Institute

''If terror can be induced on a basis widely dispersed in a society, then society returns to a 'tabula rasa', a white slate, a situation where control can easily be established.'' - Kurt Lewin, German psychiatrist, director of the Tavistock Institute in the 30s.

Lewin argued that by creating controlled chaos, the population could be brought to a point where they would voluntarily submit to greater control.

The "strategy of shock", a term popularized by Naomi Klein with her book entitled "The Strategy of Shock: the rise of a capitalism of disaster" (2007) is inspired by brainwashing techniques that aim to destroy the memory of the subject, to break his capacity for resistance in order to obtain a blank page on which a new personality can be printed. These techniques can be applied on the scale of an entire population by causing a 'tabula rasa' (clean slate, white slate), i.e. by destroying a country's heritage as well as its social and economic structures in order to be able to build a new society, a new order after the planned and controlled chaos. Once the people are deprived of their landmarks, put in a state of shock and infantilized, they find themselves defenceless and easily manipulated and despoilable. This process can be applied following a serious economic or political crisis, an environmental disaster or an attack or a war. But it can also be applied gradually, over the long term.

The Tavistock Institute is a key point in terms of founding projects of global mind control, social engineering or more precisely here of "organized social chaos". This complex organization has managed to totally change the paradigm of our modern society... According to its official website, the Tavistock Institute is a non-profit organisation formed in England in 1947. The institute describes itself as focused on the application of social sciences in several professional fields, at the governmental, industrial and commercial levels, but also in the field of health and education. This organization writes and publishes the monthly newspaper "Human Relations". Its clients range from large multinational companies to small community groups, both nationally and internationally. The Tavistock Institute is one of the most mysterious and influential groups of the last fifty years, but it is very little known. Several elements make it an extraordinary institute, even making it unique: it is independent because it is entirely self-financed, it has no government subsidy; his field of activity places him straddling the academic world and the world of consulting; and his areas of research include anthropology, economics, behaviorism (behaviorism), political science, psychoanalysis, psychology and sociology.

This institute began its activities with the creation of the "Tavistock Clinic" which was founded in London in 1920. It was a psychiatric institute at the time. It was Herbrand Arthur Russel, Duke of Bedford and Marquess of Tavistock, who decided to assign a building in downtown London to a group of doctors composed mainly of psychologists so that they could develop their research. The institute began with the study of traumatic psychoses and the "threshold of rupture" on survivors of the First World War. We call "threshold of rupture" the moment when the psyche of the soldier breaks under the effect of trauma, it is a kind of psychic tipping in the face of intolerable stress. The aim of this research was to apply the results of these studies on survivors of war directly to civilian populations. The project was overseen by the British Army's Office for Psychological Warfare under the direction of psychiatrist John Rawling Rees, who later became co-founder of the World Federation of Mental Health. In 1940, Rees defined the objectives of this psychological war as follows: "Since the last World War, we have worked hard to infiltrate the various social organizations throughout the country (...) We have launched a particularly effective offensive in many professions. The two easiest were teaching and the Church while the two most difficult were law and medicine. Anyone whose memory goes back even a dozen years will realize how important change is in the minds of professionals (...) If we want to infiltrate other social and professional activities, I think we must imitate totalitarian regimes and set up a fifth-column type of activity (...) Parliament, the press and other publications are the surest means of disseminating our propaganda (...) We must aim to infiltrate every educational activity of national life[19]."

In 1932, the direction of the Institute was handed over to the German psychiatrist Kurt Lewin, founder of the National Training Laboratories (NTL, Harvard's clinical psychology research center, established in 1947) specializing in the study of human behavior and behavioral psychology. Lewin is known for his work on manipulating mass behavior, i.e. large-scale brainwashing. Much of his research for the

Tavistock consisted of developing the brainwashing of the masses by implementing the traumatic processes of repeated torture for individual mind control over society as a whole. It is Lewin who is at the origin of the theory "tabula rasa" according to which the terror induced on a large scale in a society will lead to a kind of state of daze in that same society, a situation where "control can easily be obtained from an external point[20]."

For Lewin, society must be "infantilized", according to him it is necessary to develop an immature state of mind in the population in order to control it as well as possible. He called this controlled social chaos "fluidity." In 1963, the head of the directors of the Tavistock Institute, Eric Trist, said exactly the same thing about the control of the company: "The administration of a series of successive traumatic shocks on a company has the effect of destabilizing it and creating permanent conditions of social turbulence...". which will serve to generate a new society, a new paradigm of society, an opportunity to shape a new face to this planet. For this to happen, "social psychiatry" had to be developed and applied on a large scale[21]. [22]

Dr. William Sargant, another Tavistock researcher, wrote in his 1957 book "Battle for the Mind: A Physiology of Conversion and Brain-Washing": "Various types of belief can be implanted after brain function has been sufficiently disturbed by the deliberate induction of fear, anger, or excitement."

Traumatizing to reprogram is the standard modus operandi of Tavistock. Here we find the protocol of individual mental programming based on trauma. It is a question of erasing the original personality of the subject by a succession of traumas, to then install a new programmed personality, a new Order. Ordo Ab Chao, order is born of chaos, the motto of Freemasonry. Or "Dissolve" the elements and then "Coagulate", the great mystery of the alchemists... formulas that seem to apply well in the field of mind control, both individually and collectively.

The Tavistock Institute became the center of psychiatric research par excellence and changed its name in 1947 to the "Tavistock Institute for Human Relations". He then continued his work on strategy and psychological warfare for the OSS and then for his successor, the CIA. This organization has a powerful network of influence helping it to infiltrate and permeate the various sectors of the materialistic society in which we live. This network includes generous patrons who allow the institute to endure and act effectively. Patrons such as the British Home Office, the Rockefeller Foundation, the Ford Foundation, the Carnegie Institute, etc. Tavistock is also closely linked to many think tanks (sorts of think tanks) and other globalist organizations such as the WHO (World Health Organization), the World Federation of Mental Health, UNESCO and the Rand Corporation^.

The Rockefeller family has always had an important role in the advancement of the Tavistock. In his book *"Mind Control, world Control",* **Jim Keith reports the statements of an official columnist of the Tavistock group:** *"The Rockefeller Foundation, before subsidizing us, needed to be reassured, not only about our policy... but also with the people who work there.* "

In a financing document of the group, it is indicated some objectives of the Tavistock[24]:

a/ The invention of 'psychiatric control' as a medico-social role leading to the recognition and recognition of problems in the field of human relations and their management."

b/ The invention of 'social psychiatry' as a political science for intervening in the prevention of problems on a large scale.

c/ The establishment of a series of military institutions that will concretely implement the recommended policies.

d/ The invention of new types of therapeutic communities.

e/ The invention of 'cultural psychiatry'.

The Tavistock Institute was the first of its kind and it has seen the birth of hundreds of other similar centers such as SRI, Cornell ILR, Hudson Institute, National Training Laboratories, Walden Research, Stanford Research Institute and many others that have been created around the world according to the Tavistock model. Ten major institutions are directly under its control, with four hundred subsidiaries and no less than three thousand diverse groups and think tanks specializing in behavioral organization, political science, psychoanalysis, psychology and sociology. According to John Coleman, the author of ''Conspirator's Hierarchy: the Story of The Committe of 300'', Tavistock has a veritable ''invisible army'' made up of actors placed in the courts, in the police, in universities, in the media, *etc.* Tavistock chooses the artists we watch, trains and introduces into society the experts we listen to and the politicians we elect...

Tavistock would have trained world leaders to be able to use them from strategic positions all around the globe. This was the case for Henry Kissinger, a German refugee and former student of John R. Reese, he is one of the most important leaders who has passed through the Tavistock. Following his training, Kissinger was quickly propelled to high positions of political and strategic power and he is still today a man of great influence. Another example is Jimmy Carter.

In the 70s, the future president of the United States was suspected of being a "zombie who had been brainwashed like a Clockwork Orange". In July 1976, Lyndon Larouche's newspaper New Solidarity International Press Service (No. 27) published an article entitled ''Did Jimmy Carter undergo brainwashing?'' - ''There are many indications that Carter's ''Tavistockian'' smile and his pseudo-religion are the direct result of a behavioral modification program carried out by his ''close friend'', psychiatrist Peter Bourne, and by his sister Ruth Carter Stapleton... Carter has a history marked by psychological instability making him a subject highly likely to be programmed to make him completely submissive during a presidential election. In 1966, shortly after his defeat in an election in Georgia, Carter fell into depression and said, "Life has no purpose. the slightest failure is an insurmountable disaster for me." This is not evidence of mental programming, but Carter was under the control of Dr. Peter Bourne, a psychiatrist from the Tavistock. Bourne accompanied him throughout his political rise to the point of becoming his campaign manager at the time of the presidential elections. Bourne saw in Carter the opportunity to create a Manchu Candidate (a term used in the MK-Ultra to refer to an assassin unaware of his programming). According to Bourne's own father, a Special Forces Major in the British Army who regularly conducted studies on gorillas and baboons at the Yerkes Research Centre, his son "has always been interested in how to get a President elected from a sociological and behavioural point of view. In Carter's team, he is the one who leads a real scientific presidential campaign.''

Tavistock is also behind some large-scale social movements. Let's take the example of the "counterculture" of the 60s where the Tavistock network clearly managed the dissemination and consumption of drugs, especially LSD. The discontent and protests of the youth were an open door to infuse certain ideologies with the help of drugs. This social destabilization was therefore going to be a breach to test new methods of control such as the giant festivities where LSD would be provided on a large scale. Thus young guinea pigs would eventually become agents of the new culture also known as the New-Age (spiritual project of Luciferian occultists such as Alice Bailey and Helena Blavatsky). One of those first giant festivals was held in 1967, the international Monterey Pop held in California, with over 100,000 attendees. A three-day concert that would become the model for mass festivals such as woodstock, organized two years later with the full complicity of the FBI. The Woodstock Festival was a gigantic open-air mind control operation based on LSD. Time magazine called the Woodstock gathering the "Aquarius Festival" in reference to the end of the Pisces Age and the beginning of the Aquararius Age: the New Age, or New Order (we will come back to this), which was to be put in place following the social destabilization of the 60s.

The huge media promotion of the Beatles in the United States (a group we will return to in Chapter 9) was also organized as part of this large-scale social experiment. It was not a spontaneous revolt of youth against the social system, it was the great "rock music" groups of the time that served among other things to introduce a new vocabulary and new expressions to form a new culture. Drugs, sex, rock 'n roll, protests all over the country... the new and the old world then collided head-on and all these hippies had no idea that this was part of a social plan decided and organized behind prestigious philanthropic foundations, corporations and research centers dependent on the Rockefeller Foundation among others. These puppeteers of finance and politics used pop culture to manipulate social development.

In the same way, we can also mention the rap that served to establish a liberal ideology in the United States and subsequently in Europe. The 'Tavistockian' technique was the same as for the hippie movements, i.e. Cointelpro operations (Counter Intelligence Program) consisting of a direct infiltration of the original movement to destabilize it, distort it in order to discredit it or divert it for specific purposes as was the case for example for the "Black Panther" (American revolutionary political movement). Rappers and hippies are two movements that seem totally in opposition... however, it is interesting to note that the Zulu Nation (the flagship organization of rap) adopted as its motto in 1974 "Peace, Unity, Love and Having Fun". It is a few words away from the same formula that the hippie movement proclaimed ten years earlier, "Peace and Love!" (peace and love), i.e. a libertarian philosophy chanting "make love not war". A doctrine that consists in making the revolution by the sublimation of pleasures, this by the apology of drugs and sex, no more and no less. Today, we see that industrial rap, which brews millions of dollars, continues in an increasingly virulent way to make the propaganda of an exacerbated and decadent materialism, productions propagated all the time on the major media networks. Indeed, this process of social engineering started in the 50s has not stopped and we are now seeing the consequences. John Coleman (author and former spy of MI6) wrote: "The moral, spiritual, racial, economic, cultural and intellectual bankruptcy in which we are today is not a social phenomenon that occurred by chance. Rather, it is the result of a carefully organized Tavistock program[25].

These social engineering programs aimed particularly at young people continue nowadays by the propulsion on the front of the stage of hypersexualized and globally idolized "starlets" like Lady Gaga, Beyoncé, Miley Cirus, etc., the list is long. Stars whose song lyrics and behaviors on stage become more and more deviant, if not completely dismembered. We will come back to this in Chapter 9 on the entertainment industry.

In terms of social engineering, cinema is also an essential tool in the same way as television and music broadcast in a loop on radio waves and specialized TV channels. Cinema, television and music have an effect of "alienation" by depersonalizing us. Our external as well as interior image tends to be the reflection or copy of models made by stars, actors, idols and other sex symbols... These "life" scenarios that are exposed to us all the time, from Hollywood cinema todaily "reality TV", addictive TV series and music videos, significantly influence our look, our style, our thoughts, our attitudes, our behaviors, up to our emotions and feelings. The omnipotence of the image aims to keep us in an infantilizing state and therefore more docile and manipulable.

There would also be a lot to say about some video games that are ultra violent or bathed in a deep occultism. Some productions are real alternative worlds that unlike a film that lasts an hour or two, here, the scenarios can be spread over dozens and dozens of hours during which the player is an actor of his own programming, the effect on the subconscious is therefore multiplied tenfold.

It is much easier to run a society through mind control than through physical compulsion, and there is no shortage of methods of programming the masses. The basis for controlling the population is, on the one hand, to keep it in the ignorance of the fundamental principles of the system in which it is immersed and, on the other hand, to keep it in confusion, disorganization and permanent distraction.

Professor Noam Chomsky, an American linguist and philosopher, described some strategies for manipulating the masses:

- The strategy of diversion

It is about diverting the public's attention from important issues through a continual deluge of distractions and insignificant information. This strategy prevents the mass from taking an interest in knowledge in the fields of science, economics, psychology, neurobiology, etc., essential information. The diversion of mental activities also involves low-quality curricula and learning methods that sabotage critical thinking and creativity. The school therefore keeps young people in a certain ignorance about real mathematics, real laws, real history, *etc.* For their part, the media carefully distance the public from real social problems.

- The arsonist's strategy or "problem-reaction-solution"

It is about creating problems to offer solutions. First of all, a situation is created in order to provoke a certain reaction from the public so that the public itself becomes a requester for the measures that we wish it to accept. For example, allowing violence to develop, organising bloody attacks and attacks, in order to ensure that the public itself is demanding laws that destroy freedom and security. In the same vein, to organise an economic crisis in order to make the reduction of social rights and the dismantling of public services accepted as a necessary evil.

- The strategy of degraded and delayed

It consists of getting an unacceptable measure, law or socio-economic conditions accepted. For this it is enough to apply it gradually, in "degraded", over ten years. The strategy of the delay is to get an unpopular decision accepted "painful but necessary", obtaining the public's agreement for an application in the future. The masses always tend to naively hope that "everything will be better tomorrow" and that the sacrifice requested can be avoided. This gives the public time to get used to the idea of change and accept it with resignation when the time comes.

- The strategy of infantilization

It consists of addressing the public as well as young children. Most advertisements aimed at the general public, particularly radio, use a speech, arguments, characters and a tone that is particularly infantilizing, even debilitating, as if the viewer were a toddler or a mentally handicapped person. The more we try to deceive the public, the more we will use an infantilizing tone. The propaganda of the "subculture" or "crass ignorance" that encourages the public to indulge in mediocrity, to find "cool" the fact of being vulgar, stupid and uneducated is particularly present in reality tv programs, programs that target a very impressionable youth. These television productions act as a program on individuals previously uprooted and without real spiritual reference points that can allow them to question what they watch and integrate every day.

Control of most of the media is obviously required for all this to work. The mental programming of individuals in key/strategic positions is necessary for the proper functioning and security of the system, weak meshes are not possible. Invisible warfare with its silent weapons does not fire missiles, it does not make noise, but undoubtedly causes physical and mental damage. As a whole, the public will find it hard to believe that they can be subjected to such a weapon, they will instinctively feel that something is wrong but they will not be able to express this feeling in a coherent and rational way. Therefore, the call for help and the collective organization of a defense against such an invisible weapon becomes very difficult.

- Electromagnetic waves / psychotronics

All our actions, thoughts and physical sensations work thanks to the bioelectricity produced by our neurons and transmitted through complex neural circuits inside our skull. An external electromagnetic wave can therefore interfere in this brain bioelectricity.

Psychotronic mind control can be applied to large populations as well as to a single individual. The development of anti-personnel electromagnetic weapons began in the mid-40s, perhaps even earlier. The first known reference is part of the American Study on Strategic Bombing (Pacific Study, Division of Military Analysis, Volume 63) which mentioned Japanese research aimed at developing a "mortal ray". The development of these technologies is linked to the research on mind control and behavior modification carried out by the American and Soviet army and intelligence services, from the beginning of the Cold War. The aim was to develop technical means capable of manipulating, modifying or controlling the consciousness and behaviour of individuals or groups of individuals. Since these experimental programmes were of military interest, they were very quickly covered by defence secrecy, both in the United States and in the USSR.

"Behavioral research" studies the fields of bioelectricity, electrical or radio stimulation of the brain, electronic destruction of memory, but also psychosurgery, hypnosis, parapsychology, telepathy, telekinesis, subliminal, remote viewing, irradiations, microwaves, ultrasound...

In 1940, scientist Walter Hess received a Nobel Prize for being able to influence the behavior of cats (suddenly making them ferocious) through electrodes implanted in their hypothalamus. As early as the early 50s, Dr. Lilly had mapped the body functions related to various areas of the brain. Thanks to electrodes, he was able to activate nerve centers related to fear, anxiety, anger or sexual functions. His research was done on monkeys. During the 50s and 60s, Dr. Jose Delgado proved that human behavior and nervous system could be totally controlled by electrical signals transmitted to the brain through tiny electrodes[26].

Influencing the human brain from a distance through electromagnetic energy was obviously the next step in this area of research. At that time, a CIA document stated: *"The feasibility of remote control of the activities of several species of animals has been demonstrated* (...) *Specific research and evaluations will be carried out for the application of some of these techniques to* humans[27].

As early as 1959, a CIA document (obtained by Harlan Girard, President of the *International Commission on Electroma,General Offensive Weapons,* **by a request under the Freedom of Information Act in the United States.), sub-project 119 of the MK-Ultra program, already proposed** *"to establish a critical examination of the literature and scientific developments related to the recording, analysis and interpretation of bioelectric signals of the human organism and the a,ctivation of human behavior at a distance* **(...)** *Techniques for activating the human organism by remote electronic means. Progress has been made and the list of laboratories, researchers and resources in the Bioelectronics study is being prepared.* "

In 1985, journalist Kathleen McAuliffe met José Delgado in his laboratory in Spain, where he was experimenting with electromagnetic stimulation of the brain. In an article for omni magazine, she wrote that José Delgado had shown her how he could put a monkey to sleep or make it hyperactive, or how he could calm nervous fish by using appropriately modulated microwave radiation[28].

Delgado's work was fundamental in the field of psychotronics, his experiments on humans and animals proved that the electronic stimulation of certain areas of the brain could trigger

intense emotions, including rage, desire or fatigue. In his paper entitled *"Intracerebral Stimulation and Observation of Tracings on Patients",* **Delgado observed that the** *"ra.dio stimulation of different points of the amygdala and hippocampus in his four patients caused various effects, including pleasant sensations, exaltation, deep concentration, intense relaxation (an essential precursor of deep hypnosis), colorful visions (hallucinations), etc.*[29]*."*

As early as 1966, Delgado stated: "My research confirms the unpleasant conclusion that movement, emotion and behavior can be directed by electrical forces and that human beings can be controlled like robots at the push of buttons." In 1974, Delgado intervened in the U.S. Congress to declare that "we need a psychosurgery program for the control of our society. The goal is the physical control of the mind[30]. The vast majority of Delgado's work on the influence of remote perceptions and behavior by means of electromagnetic waves has remained classified and inaccessible to the public.

"Offensive Control of Behavior - USSR" is a report of the US Army (1972) presenting 500 studies on the Soviet experiment relating to electronic mind control, more precisely on the use of Super-High Frequency Electromagnetic Oscillations. Russia's directed energy weapons programme has focused on individuals, not groups. Some Soviet dissidents were the target of microwave anti-personnel weapons, but also of mental modification techniques aimed at the total submission of individual will to an external force.

In March 1967, a coordinating group for psychotronics research was set up in Prague under the chairmanship of Professor Jaroslav Stuchlik. In 1970, this group became the psychotronic research section of the Czechoslovak Scientific and Technical Society under the direction of Dr. Zdenek Rejdak. It was the latter who organized in Prague in June 1973 the first Russian symposium on psychotronic research, at the end of which an International Association for Psychotronic Research was formed, the second congress of which met in Monte Carlo in July 1975.

The programme of the Prague Symposium consisted of the following five topics:

- Erasure of the subconscious
- Development of P.E.S. (extra-sensory perceptions)
- Induction of paranormal effects in dreams
- The mechanical equivalent of neuro-psychic energy
- "Mental hygiene"'

In 2001, U.S. Congressman Dennis J. Kucinich introduced a space preservation bill in the House of Representatives *(Space Preservation Act - 107th Congress 1st Session H.R. 2977 - A Bill).* In section 7 of this bill, technologies that provide access to the human brain, alter health or kill were defined as *"systems based on the ground, sea or space that use radiation, electromagnetic, psychotronic, sonic, laser or other energies, directed against targeted individuals or populations, for the purpose of performing information warfare, controlling the mood or mind of* those ***people*** *or populations."*

Psychotronics mentioned in the list of Kucinich's bill is described in a book by Russian scientists Vladimir Tsygankov and Vladimir Lopatin ("Psychotronic weapons and the security of Russia"), as a weapon using radiation from "torsional fields" (scalar waves).

There are international human rights agreements that prohibit the non-consensual manipulation of human beings. On the initiative of US Senator John Glenn, discussions were opened in Congress in January 1997 (Human Reasearch Protection Act) concerning the risks of irradiation of civilian populations. Today, pulsed microwaves are present in our environment on a massive scale. Few people wonder about the functioning of this technology and they do not necessarily realize the impact and especially the potential for control and manipulation that generates this systematic establishment of a global network called "communication".

Nerve impulses from the brain are carried out through electrical signals that trigger brain chemical variations. The human brain operates in a relatively narrow band of dominant frequencies, these frequencies indicate the type of activity that takes place in the brain. There are four main groups of brain wave frequencies, which are associated with most mental activities. The first group includes beta waves (from 13 to 35 Hertz), they correspond to a normal awake state, any value greater than this frequency will be associated with stress, with states of agitation that can alter our thinking and weaken our reasoning abilities. The second group of frequencies includes alpha waves (from 7 to 13 Hertz), they correspond to a state of relaxation that allows to concentrate mentally, these waves facilitate learning. The third group, the Theta waves (from 4 to 7 Hertz) corresponds to mental imagery (imagination and waking dream), access to memory and internal mental concentration. The last group includes Delta waves (0.5 to 3 Hertz), they are ultra-slow waves that correspond to deep sleep. In general, the frequency of brain waves will be at its lowest when the individual is in a state of deep relaxation and at its highest when the person is very active or agitated[31].

Any signal external to the brain, with identical electromagnetic signals can therefore interfere with the brain's waves by influencing its frequency band. In other words, an external signal can impose its own rhythm on a person's brain: normal frequencies are then artificially altered and brain waves adapt to the new frequency band, triggering a change in brain chemistry and thus altering thoughts, emotions and physical condition. Knowing that most human brain activity takes place in frequencies between 1 and 100 Hertz and that electromagnetic waves of this type of frequency have wavelengths of hundreds or even thousands of kilometers preventing them from targeting the human brain, scientists began to experiment with pulsed microwaves. This is the type of microwave that is used in mobile telephony. There are pulsed microwave frequencies that penetrate deep enough into brain tissue to trigger neuronal activity.

Dr. Ross Adey, one of the pioneers in the study of mind control by electromagnetic waves, demonstrated that behavior and emotional states could be influenced at a distance by placing the subject in an electromagnetic field. Adey and colleagues have proven that microwaves modulated in different ways can impose one type of brain activity on different areas of the brain. Working with cats, they found that the frequency of certain brain waves that appeared during conditioned behaviors could be selectively increased. For this, it is necessary to modify the shape of the microwaves with rhythmic variations in amplitude, equivalent to EEG frequencies (electroencephalogram). For example, a modulation of 3 Hertz has reduced the number of Alpha waves by 10 Hertz in one place of the animal's brain and to strengthen the Beta waves of 14 Hertz in another[32]. By directing a frequency to stimulate the brain and using amplitude modulation so that the waveform mimics a desired EEG frequency, Adey was able to impose a Theta wave rate of 4.5 cps (cycle per second) on his subjects[33].

From 1965 to 1970, the Defense Advanced Projects Research Agency (DARPA), with more than 70 to 80% military funding, launched Operation Pandora to study the effects on health and psyche of low-intensity microwaves. This project conducted studies that demonstrated how to cause heart attacks, leaks in the brain barrierorauditory hallucinations. Despite attempts to cover up the Pandora project, the FOIA (Freedom of Information Act) archives revealed a note from Richard Cesaro, then darpa's director, confirming that the program's original goal was to "discover whether a precisely controlled microwave signal could control the mind." Cesaro encouraged the carrying out of these studies "in order to develop potential applications in the field of armaments[34]." Although a large number of projects revolved around the use of narcotics and hallucinogens, the Artichoke, Pandora and Chatter projects clearly demonstrated that 'psycho-electronic' devices were of the highest priority. From 1963 onwards, research on the control of behaviour therefore focused on electronics.

In September 1977, the director of the MK-Ultra project, Dr. Sydney Gottlieb, testified before the U.S. Senate. When Asked by Senator Richard Schweicker about sub-projects of the MK-Ultra that could be related to hypnosis, or more precisely to intracerebral radio-hypnotic control (a combination between wave transmission and hypnosis), Gottlieb replied to the Senator: "There was a lot of interest in the effects observed on subjects that are in a wavefield and it is likely that among the countless sub-projects, someone tried to verify that it was possible to hypnotize a person when he is in a wave beam[35]."

In 1974, J. F. Schapitz conducted a study to demonstrate that "the words spoken by a hypnotist can be transmitted thanks to electromagnetic energy modulated directly into the subconscious parts of the human brain, that is to say without using any technical device to receive them, without having to transcode the messages and without the person exposed to such influence being able to consciously control the input of information[36]." The study was unveiled as part of the Freedom of Information Act, but the results of Schapitz, funded by the Pentagon, were never made public.

In 1986, the U.S. Air Force published *"Low-Intensity Conflict and Modern Technology."* The document has a chapter entitled *"The Electromagnetic Spectrum in Low Intensity Conflict"* which was written by Captain Paul Tyler. Tyler was the director of the *U.S. Navy's Electromagnetic Radiation Project* from 1970 to 1977. At the beginning of this chapter, Tyler quotes from a 1982 Air Force report, entitled:
"Final report on the needs for biotechnological research for aeronautical structures for the year 2000" **which states:** *"The data currently available make it possible to anticipate that radiation fields may present a serious and even revolutionary threat to individuals... 100 milliamps crossing the myocardium can trigger cardiac arrest and death... A radiation system could cause dizziness or death over a large area. The effectiveness of this device will depend on the shape of the wave, the intensity of the field, the amplitude of the pulsation, the repetition of the radio frequency and the frequency of the carrier."*

In a less intensive way, the use of microwaves could be adapted to simply influence emotions and human behavior. Tyler also writes: *"Because of the many parameters involved and the specificity of each parameter, each can be adapted for a specific effect. Having* *this type of flexibility provides a wide range of options for the user. This opens the door to appropriate responses for war, whether conventional or non-conventional. "*

To the objection that the frequency range in which a human nervous system operates is too narrow to provide such a wide choice of reaction, Tyler writes: "There are unconfirmed reports that a change of 0.01 Hertz can make thedifference^." However, the frequencies used in public scientific experiments do not have such a degree of accuracy. Tyler mentions here military research which, if not confirmed, is covered by defense secrecy.

In 1960, Drs. Joseph Sharp and Allen Frey sought to transmit uttered words directly into the auditory cortex using pulsed microwaves similar to the sound vibrations that a speaker can send. This research gave rise to the ''Frey effect'', more commonly known as the ''microwave hearing system''. As early as 1962, Frey's device made it possible, with appropriate modulation, to induce sounds in both deaf and non-hearing people, whether they were a few centimeters or several thousand kilometers from the transmitter. In the early 70s, Sharp, who was working as part of the Pandora military project, deepened his colleague Frey's studies on the transmission of sounds directly into the brain. During his experiments at Walter Reed's Military Institute, he found a way to reproduce and transmit not only sounds in the brain, but quite understandable words. This experiment, covered by the secret-defense, was finally made public in 1975 in an article by Don R. Justesen entitled "Microwaves and Behavior" (Microwaves andBehavior[38]).

In July 1968, the United States Patent Office registered Patent No. 3,393,279 for an invention by Patrick Flanagan described as "an excitation device of the nervous system", which was no more and no less than the "Neurophone": a device for remotely transmitting sounds directly to the brain, with a natural rendering and without any brain device to implant. The invention seemed so incredible that the Patent Office did not patent it until six years later, thinking it was not serious. As soon as the patent was filed, the Defense Intelligence

Agency classified this invention on the grounds of "National Security". Flanagan was banned from continuing his research.

According to the Department of Psychic Correction of the Moscow Medical Academy, acoustic psycho-correction involves the transmission of specific commands via white noise bands introduced into the human subconscious without disrupting other intellectual functions. This Department of the Moscow Medical Academy has clearly recognized the potential danger of this technology. Russian experts, including George Kotov, a former KGB general who served in a senior ministerial position, presented a report containing a list of software and hardware associated with the psychic correction program, which could be provided for the modest sum of $80,000. According to General Kotov: "Once it has become possible to probe and correct the psychological content of humans, against their will and by material means, the results can escape our control and be used in a malicious and inhumane way in order to manipulate the collective psyche."

Some Russian authors note that world opinion is not prepared to deal adequately with the problems caused by the possibility of direct access to the human psyche. Therefore, these Russian authors proposed a two-sided center for these psycho-electronic technologies through which Americans and Russians could monitor and restrict these emerging technologies. Dr. Igor Smirnov, a Russian expert on non-lethal weapons, was invited to the United States in 1993 for a series of meetings on the subject of psycho-electronics. At these meetings, representatives of the CIA, DIA, FBI and DARPA were present, but also civilians including representatives of the National Institute of Mental Health as well as officials of biomedical research. As we have seen above, Igor Smirnov is at the origin of a technology capable of subliminally inserting thoughts into the minds of individuals. A firm called Psychotechnologies Incorporated (Psi-Tech), based in Richmond, Virginia, has obtained an agreement with the Russians to share and develop this technology for use in America. Dr. Smirnov died of a heart attack in 2005 and his patent is now held exclusively by Psi-Tech. Note that Psi-Tech is controlled by Colonel John B. Alexander, NASA General Michael Aquino (member of the Church of Satan and founder of the Temple of Set) and Lieutenant Colonel Albert Stubblebine, among others...

Perhaps the declassified document that best describes the capabilities of psycho-electronic weaponry is undoubtedly the article by American Colonel Timothy L. Thomas entitled "The mind has no anti-intrusion software" (1998), from which here are some excerpts:

"An entirely new arsenal of weapons, based on devices designed to project subliminal messages or to change psychological abilities and the ability to process data, could be used to neutralize individuals. These weapons aim to control or modify the psyche, or to attack the different sensory systems and data analysis systems of the human organism. In both cases, the goal is to distort or destroy the signals that normally keep the body in balance (...) The body can not only be deceived, manipulated, or misinformed but it can also be paralyzed or even destroyed – just like any other data processing system. The 'data' that the body receives from external sources - such as electromagnetic, vortex, or acoustic energy waves - or that it creates through its own chemical or electrical stimuli can be manipulated or changed exactly as the data (information) of any electronic system can be modified (...) In reality, the rules of the game (of information warfare) include the protection and access to signals, waves and pulses capable of influencing the data processing elements of systems, computers and people (...) Dr. Janet Morris, co-author of "The Warrior's Edge'', visited the Moscow Institute of Psycho-Correction several times in 1991. He was introduced to a technology that allows researchers to electronically analyze the human mind in order to influence it. They bring in subliminal commands using keywords transmitted on "white noise" or on music. By the use of infrasound, a transmission at very low frequencies, the acoustic psycho-corrective message is transmitted by bone conduction[39].''

In 1996, the Scientific Advisory Board of the US Air Force announced in a document made public: "In the first half of the 21st century, there will be an explosion of knowledge in the field of neuroscience. We will come to a clear understanding about how the human brain works, how it actually controls the various functions of the body, and how it can be manipulated (both positively and negatively). One can envisage the development of a source of electromagnetic energy that could be pulsed and concentrated to act on the human body in such a way that it would prevent voluntary muscular movements, that it would allow emotions (and therefore actions), to cause sleep, to transmit suggestions, to interfere with both short-term and long-term memory, *etc.* This will open the door to the development of new capabilities that can be used in armed conflicts, in situations of terrorism or hostage-taking, and in training situations[40]."

Luc Maempey of the Groupe de Recherche et d'Information sur la Paix et la Sécurité (GRIP) said ofelectronic psycho: *"The abundance of available publications,*

and Security (GRIP) said ofelectronic psycho: *"The abundance of available publications,*

articles in the specialized press, websites maintained by the various institutions of the Department of Defense, could give us Villusion that transparency is perfect, that the information is complete and objective. However, this is not the case Unclassified information remains very superficial and concerns only certain political aspects, doctrines, or basic technical information, while the bulk of the programmes relating to non-lethal weapons are in fact still covered by the secrecy of the "black programs" which benefit from large budgetary envelopes that are completely out of control **(...)** *The deceptions and cover-ups used by the Department of Defense and its contractors to conceal the true nature of certain programmes have grown to such an extent that they are sometimes beyond the control of themilitary authorities themselves.*[41]

What is presented in this sub-chapter are archives available on the internet, in particular in a French-language file entitled "Les

Technologies Offensives de Contrôle Politique". Given the exponential evolution of technology, needless to say, research in the field of electronic psycho dating back to the70s, 80s or even 90s is largely outdated at the moment... Moreover, any declassified technology or information that leaves the army at least fifty years old, and academic research, especially in Europe, is at least one or two generations behind military advances. Already in 1952, the CIA's Moonstruck project aimed to implant electronic devices on people in order to be able to trace them remotely. A program that is now declassified. What are the technologies and objectives of the programs underway today in 2016? The lack of information and the absence of public debate on this onerous subject is on the one hand very dangerous, because a number of states have developed and are still developing weapons of this type. On the other hand, it leaves an impressive margin of manoeuvre for the use of this technology that can be used by private individuals, and one of the advantages of which is precisely discretion.

In December 2012, Jesse Ventura devoted a documentary to the issue of electromagnetic weapons and artificially induced "voices in the head". This documentary entitled "Brain Invaders" gives voice to many victims, but also to people closely linked to research on mind control. At the end of his investigation, Jesse Ventura meets Dr. Robert Duncan, a scientist who worked for the CIA. Duncan admits that he helped develop systems that allowed the government to "get into people's heads." It is a combination of several technologies aimed at obtaining a tool that allows to insert ideas and voices in the heads of Americans, he himself calls this tool 'Voice of God'. Here is the transcript of their conversation:

- Jesse Ventura: What's the negative side to what you've done?

- Robert Duncan: I've empowered the dark side with some of my work.

- JV: What do you mean by that?

- RD: Technology is neutral, it can be used as much to do good as it is to do evil. I have worked on projects for the CIA, the Department of Defense and the Department of Justice.

- JV: When you worked in these programs for the CIA and the government, what exactly did you do? And where did you work?

- RD: It's confidential information, I can't tell you about it.

- JV: It was on "voices in the head", that kind of stuff?

- RD: Yes

- JV: We met people who say they hear voices in their heads and have to sleep in Faraday cages. They do crazy things, but when they talk to us they look quite normal, they look as sane as you and I. Are they really crazy? Or is it the government that is subjecting them to certain things?

- RD: It's the government that does that to them. This is called "Voice of God".

- JV: So you know that the weapons on which you have are worked today on civilians?

- RD: Absolutely. You have to remember that the CIA has a long history when it comes to experimenting on our civilians, LSD, *etc.*

- JV: Sure. We are told about the MK-Ultra program of the 60s and 70s and we are told that all this has stopped, is it true?

- RD: That's wrong! The programme continued under a new name and with a new budget. It is the ultimate weapon.

- JV: Do you recognize today that there are people, citizens of this country who are being harassed by this technology?

- RD: It's worse than being harassed, the word is light... They are truly tortured.

- JV: How do they get into your head? I have heard about these GWEN towers, they would have been in operation in the past and they claim that today they are no longer useful.

- RD: With this tool, they have the ability to easily convey messages across the country in people's heads or cause them severe pain. This is part of the strategy for domination of the whole world, controlling the population from the conscious to the subconscious.

- JV: Who are the controllers? Is it the President? The Federal Reserve?

- RD : Non.

- JV: So these people are at a certain level in our government, they make the decisions without being officially elected.

- RD: That's exactly it.

- JV: It makes things more difficult because they can't be removed from their jobs.

- RD: They can't be impeached and they're also hard to find. They are hiding in the dark meanders of the government.

- JV: You worked for these people, you helped them develop this technology.

- RD: I was naïve, I didn't know how these technologies were going to be assembled to create the ultimate weapon.

- JV: You don't work for them anymore?

- RD : Non...

- JV: You look me straight in the eye and you tell me that you no longer have any connection with this research, and that you are here to denounce it...

- RD: Exactly...

- JV: Are you afraid for your life?

- RD : Non.

- JV: Why?

- RD: I'm not afraid to die (...)

In his book *"Project: Soûl Catcher - Secrets of Cyber and Cybemetic Warfare Revealed",* **Dr. Robert Duncan makes it clear that in this field, there is a 60-year gap between military technologies and civilian equipment. He writes:** *"The mind has no firewalls and no anti-virus software, which makes the public very vulnerable to this kind of psychotronic attacks. In a direct intrusion into the mind, the* *manipulation is done with synthetic telepathy, it is a bio-communication technology. Sounds and voices can be pulsed towards a target. Through religious beliefs, "the voice of God" (which is the name given to this technology) becomes a reality for those who have never heard of this technology before. Others will believe that they are aliens because once again, this is a technology that seems too advanced to come from this earth... "*

In 1994, the first tests began in Alaska on the most powerful radar equipment in the world, the HAARP system. This equipment has the characteristic of being able to warm the ionosphere and thus make it change altitude. By manipulating this layer of our atmosphere, it is possible to use it to send electromagnetic waves to a region of the planet that we want to target. Applications of this technology range from climate change to earthquakes and influence on wireless communications. Officially, the HAARP system is designed for scientific research, but it is highly likely that it was developed for military purposes. What is the relationship between the manipulation of the ionosphere and the mental and behavioral manipulation of humans, you may ask? Nick Begich and Jeane Manning, the authors of the book "Angels Don't Play This HAARP" who have been investigating this device for more than seven years report that John Heckscher, the director of the HAARP program, said in an interview that the frequencies and energies used in this system are adjustable and that, in some applications, they would be pulsed in the band from 1 to 20 Hertz. The frequency bands are narrow and the energy levels are low but they differ from the pulsations of the Earth! [42]). Heckscher gives further details about this when he says: "The ELF and ULF waves that will be produced with HAARP in interaction with the polar electroproject, will have such low power levels compared to the surrounding noise, that it will take very sensitive integrating receivers to record them][43]!." The most important point is that of the controlled coherent signals which, as said above, are l/50th of the energy level of the Earth's natural fields but which, however, can have profound effects on brain activity. The HAARP system creates a huge coherent and adjustable electromagnetic field, which could be compared to José Delgado's EMF (electromagnetic field), except that that of HAARP does not extend to a single piece. It has the potential to cover a region the size of a large Western state, or even a hemisphere. Patrick Flanagan, the inventor of the Neurophone, said of this technology: "The HAARP project could be not only the largest 'ionospheric radiator' in the world, but also the largest brain control instrument ever designed! [44]!."

Finally, let's take a look at mobile telephony and its societal tidal wave similar to that of television... In France, the number of SMS sent rose from 1.5 billion in 2000 to more than 100 billion in 2010 (figures from the French Telecoms Federation). Never before has a technology emerged so quickly, telecommunications satellites and relay antennas have covered territories in an invasive and systematic way. Urban areas are overloaded with relay antennas that sometimes multiply in an anarchic way without the residents having their say. This means of telecommunication combines radar, radio and telephone technologies, it works thanks to pulsed microwaves at low frequencies. We are therefore financing, by purchasing telephones and subscriptions, the establishment of a gigantic network of pulsed microwave transceivers covering every square inch of the territory. Due to the nature of the waves it uses, this telecommunications network has a huge potential to influence the brain waves of populations.

A GSM transmits microwaves permanently even when it is turned off (to locate the nearest relay antenna). Most people never part with their phone and even sleep a few inches from it (addiction problem). Dr. Richard Gautier, the author of "Your mobile phone, your health: We lie to you - 100 pages to restore the truth" has listed no less than thirty-two experiments published between 1995 and 2003 showing a significant change in the EEG (electroencephalogram) of human subjects exposed for a short time (from a few minutes to a night) to-pulsed microwaves at low frequencies. This only confirms once again all the research that has been done in this area for more than fifty years. According to Dr. Richard Gautier: "A long-term experiment is currently underway on a global scale, of which we are all guinea pigs! 45]."

Mobile telephony or the art of introducing a silent weapon into every citizen's pocket? One thing is certain, and that is that we have very little perspective on this technology and yet it requires special attention, both in terms of its impact on our cells and on our brain waves. However, we note a deafening silence on the part of the French health authorities on the subject. The situation is different in Russia, where the State Commission for Protection against Non-Ionizing Radiation has drawn up a list of recommendations concerning mobile telephony:

- Children under the age of 16 should not use a mobile phone.

- Pregnant women should not use mobile phones.

- Persons suffering from the following diseases and disorders should not use a mobile phone: Troubles neurological such as neurasthenia, psychopathy, psychostenia, as well as all neuroses with asthenic, obsessive or hysterical disorders reducing mental and physical activity, memory loss(s), sleep disorders, epilepsy and epileptic syndrome, predisposition to epilepsy.

- The duration of calls should be limited to a maximum of three minutes, and after each call, the user should wait fifteen minutes before making another call. The use of earbuds and hands-free kits is strongly encouraged.

- Manufacturers and resellers of mobile phones should include in the technical specifications the following information: all the above recommendations concerning the use, all the adequate health and epidemiological data concerning mobile phones, as well as the radiation levels associated with the telephone and the name of the measurement laboratory! 45].

2 - Individual mind control

Brainwashing is about "indoctrinating so intensely and meticulously until it creates a radical transformation of psychological characteristics and beliefs." - Webster's New World Dictionary

Individual mind control is a common practice found in political, military, criminal, mafia and sectarian circles. But mind control can also be present within companies or the family structure when a narcissistic pervert harasses and manipulates an employee, spouse or child.

Some groups have always relied on coercive interrogation techniques, known as "robust", as well as on different methods of brainwashing to force the victim to submit, to extract information or to indoctrinate him. These intrusive and violent techniques are now used by certain political and military organizations, by the intelligence services and by the criminal community (pornography, prostitution networks, trafficking in human beings, arms and drugs). Brainwashing is a process of indoctrination that was used, for example, on some American prisoners during the Korean War (1950-1953). In 1951, journalist Edward Hunter reported these methods as "reform of thought". A technique developed and applied by the Communists after their takeover of China in 1949. The Chinese Communists also tried to manipulate some of their own citizens, in the same way as prisoners of war, to get them to change their beliefs and convictions. The aim is to gain acceptance and integration of a "truth" that was previously rejected and considered false. These methods use food deprivation, sleep deprivation, isolation and confinement of victims in a small space over a long period of time. The victim who is totally weakened physically and psychologically comes to believe that he or she will actually die or go crazy. The end result is that his political, religious and social convictions conform to those of the executioners who hold his life in their hands. Any group that needs to subjugate and dominate individuals uses these methods of "reform of thought". Intimidation, threats, social isolation, spiritual indoctrination, torture, deprivation of basic needs such as sleep or food, etc., are the techniques used for the submission and indoctrination of a human being.

The conditioning of the subject is an important step in individual mind control. Ivan Pavlov and Frédéric Skinner (father of radical behaviorism) are the forerunners in this field. Pavlov is known for his work on dogs; his experiments included first triggering a signal with a bell to awaken the dog's attention (the conditioning stimulus), then five seconds later, he gave him food (the unpackaged stimulus). After a while, the simple sound of the bell produced a conditioned reflex of the dog who began to salivate without there being any food in front of him. This type of conditioned reaction is called Pavlov reflex. Pavlov describes two types of reflexes: the innate reflexes that are present from birth, and the conditioned reflexes, those that one acquires through learning.

One thing that is less known is that l van Pavlov studied the effect of extreme stress for the conditioning of dogs. For this he used electroshocks! [47]). This form of extreme conditioning is the basis of mind control relying on the fear and pain of the victim to program codes and signals that trigger automatic reactions.

During the flood of Leningrad in 1924, water invaded Pavlov's laboratory, and the dogs were almost submerged, they were swimming with just their heads protruding from the water at the top of the cages, they were totally terrorized. Many of them then lost their previous conditioning. Pavlov reported that the dogs had undergone some kind of brain dissociation and were in a hypnotic state similar to some human "mental disorders". Pavlov then deduced that during a serious trauma, "the brain can undergo an erasure, at least temporarily, of all the conditioned behaviors previously implanted in it[48]."

After several months, Pavlov, who had re-conditioned most of the dogs, voluntarily let water flow into the laboratory to see their reaction. The dogs then all panicked and were re-traumatized by losing again all the conditioning that had just been "reprogrammed".

Pavlov's work and observations on dogs can be compared with the survivors' testimonies of "tabula-rasa" way mental control methods, where all previous achievements are lost, like an erased slate, and where a conditioning trigger/stimulus can reactivate the state of trauma![49]!.

To effectively subdue and manipulate an individual, one method is to apply the three Ds or DDDs, letters that mean "Debility, Dependency, Dread" Terror). Psychiatrists Farber, Harlow and Jolyon West described this protocol in their book "Brainwashing, Conditioning and DDD". According to these psychiatrists, it would therefore be necessary to debilitate the victim, make her dependent and frightened in order to break her in order to be able to dominate her...

You will notice that this protocol of individual mind control "DDD" is today applied on a large scale in social engineering programs that aim to condition society. Who could deny today that our modern world does not infantilize us, does not debilitating us all the time, does not make us dependent on everything and anything by taking away a maximum of autonomy, and does not induce a constant fear?

There is also the "PDH" method, which stands for Pain, Drug and Hypnosis, i.e. the use of pain, drugs and hypnosis to subdue and program an individual. A combination "PDH" that we find in the mental control of type Monarch (developed in chapter 7).

In the book (report) for the CIA entitled "Communist Control Technics" (1956), psychiatrists Laurence Hinkle and Harold Wolff wrote: "The man with whom the interrogator deals can be considered as a patient who has been created intentionally. The interrogator has all the advantages and opportunities that a therapist can enjoy in the face of a patient in desperate need of help."

It is a question here of creating chaos in order to bring order to it. Creating a "patient" intentionally is therefore to take a healthy subject to weaken and terrorize him, in order to "help" him as a "therapist".

This troubling correspondence between coercive interrogation and psychotherapy shows the interchangeable role that psychiatrists can have with executioners and vice versa. Psychiatric science is the nerve of mind control.

The list below contains different forms of mind control that can be applied to an individual. It combines the methods of brainwashing reported by prisoners of war with the methods used in destructive sects and government programs such as the MK-Ultra. This ranges from the 'simple' mental manipulation of the victim who is perfectly aware of it and who keeps the memory of it, to the most complex forms where the victim has no memory of the traumas and has no awareness of his mental programming. The "formula" of brainwashing is always the same: destructuring and erasing identity to replace it with a new "program". Each of these techniques can be used in isolation but they will usually be combined together in a kind of process of "death" and "rebirth". By analyzing these specific techniques of individual mind control, it is possible to detect power strategies applied in a more global and diffuse way, on a larger scale.

- The individual finds himself alone among a group or community that will not cease to profess particular beliefs and doctrines, while at the same time the individual is gradually isolated from his family and his external activities.

- The shrinking of the world. The victim is confiscated all his personal belongings, as it symbolizes his past life and can be a source of moral strength. It is about cutting the victim off from what connects him to the world and to others in order to sabotage his abilities of resistance and perseverance. The feeling of this separation must be intensified by all means, so that the victim convinces himself that he is cut off from any relationship that can help him. It is also created a dummy and miniature world around the victim, serving as a formwork to work on his psyche. It is a question of substituting the world of interrogation for the outside world, the world of the outside then fades to the standards of a micro-world, a closed door in head to head between four walls. In this small-scale world built by the executioners, the victim quickly convinces himself of their omnipotence.

- The destructuring of identity. The victim is told that he is what he is not and that he is not what he really is. This in order to make her lose her bearings and that she begins to question her own identity. The victim is forced to challenge beliefs that she has never questioned before. His certainties are shaken.

- Disorientation and confusion. The goal is to upset the natural expectations and conditioned reactions of the person. The individual is accustomed to a logical world, a world that has meaning and is naturally predictable, he will cling to it to preserve his identity and his capacity for resistance. Destabilization first involves the systematic disruption of time markers: doctored clocks, which advance and then delay, irregular schedules and nights with variable geometry. The executioners become masters of space and time, they unravel the natural rhythms in order to plunge the subject into a state of total disorientation. In addition to the strategy of temporal disorientation, the victim will be attacked on his logical and semantic reference points by an avalanche of absurd and incoherent questions, contradictory and far-fetched assertions, tones of voice totally inadequate with the words spoken, *etc.* This disorientation also involves the saturation of his interpretative capacity. Faced with the avalanche of nonsense that is flooded, the individual will stray into a kind of spiral of interpretative hypotheses as vain as they are infinite... to the point of madness. Letting the victim seek to understand something where there is nothing to understand is one of these sadistic methods.

- Guilt. Make repeated accusations against the victim to imregnate him with guilt. The individual will end up feeling that he or she has actually done something wrong and will end up being persuaded that he or she is guilty and that his or her sentence is therefore deserved. The executioners can also force the victim to commit reprehensible acts so that he finds himself in the position of guilty and therefore guilty. The victim's behaviour is shaped by the use of rewards and punishments, accompanied by other conditioning processes.

- Self-predation. Turn the individual against himself until finally making him the agent of his own defeat. It is a question of turning the subject in on itself by depriving it of the outside world and of others, by radicalizing its subjectivity in order to make it responsible for its own torments. He can then be asked as a question: "But why are you being subjected to this?". Guilt and self-predation go hand in hand.

- Betrayal and self-betrayal. Force the victim to report his friends, colleagues, entourage, family. This reinforces the feeling of guilt and shame but also the feeling of betraying one's own life. The victim is led to believe that no one in his or her family or community cares about what has become of the victim.

- Voluntary submission. The victim voluntarily submits to the executioner in exchange for compensation, which may be material goods, drugs, sex but also "affection" and "freedom". The victim may have the opportunity to choose his master.

- Submission through terror. The executioner gets a form of respect by terrorizing the victim, this can be done even if the victim still retains his own beliefs and his personality is preserved.

- The breaking point. The combined effects of strong guilt and shame cause the victim to feel alienated from himself. She begins to fear madness and total annihilation. The victim also suffered violence, degradation and public humiliation aimed at destroying his self-esteem. In addition, the deliberate unpredictability of the executioners' behaviour makes it impossible to detect their expectations and thoughts, which reinforces the victim's feeling that he really has no control.

- Brainwashing through deprivation of basic needs such as sleep, food, water, etc., combined with social isolation.

- Associate orders with pain. Directives and orders are given at the same time as torture. This is to convince the individual that this violence will recur if orders and directives are not followed. The injunctions: "You will forget", "Don't talk about it", etc., are verbalized and printed in the psyche at the same time as the pain is injected into the nervous system. It is a question of maintaining repetitive physical and psychological torture in order to install these commands deeply in the victim through the belief (usually subconscious) that there will be extremely painful consequences if she ever violates the directives. The re-experimentation of these initial tortures often involves somatic manifestations, such as slight bruising or swelling at the level of the initial lesions.

- Clemency. The inevitable annihilation is suddenly reversed by unexpected mercy from the executioners. A brief stop to the interrogations, a brief moment of appeasement where the victim will be treated as a respectable human being. Suddenly annihilation is no longer the only way out. For an individual in such a situation, this sudden psychological decompression will serve to coax him and bring him into the camp of the executioners. The individual then becomes almost grateful for the process of "reform" that is underway, he will have to participate in his own indoctrination by writing for example instructions or organizing activities.

- Stockholm syndrome. Situations of intense stress gradually lead to dependence and a certain loyalty of the victim towards his aggressor. The term "Stokholm syndrome" dates back to August 1973 when hostages were taken in a bank in Stockholm, Sweden. A 32-year-old prison escape named Jan-Erik Olsson took four bank employees hostage for five and a half days. A few days after their release, although the captives were not in a position to explain this reaction, they testified that they had shown a strange rapprochement with their kidnapper, they sought to identify with him and even came to fear the police. In some cases, victims testified outright on behalf of the hostage-taker or raised funds for his legal defence.

- Confession. The victim eventually agrees to make "confessions" in order to relieve himself of the overwhelming guilt that is made to him. Confiding, "confessing" even if there is nothing to confess, becomes an irresistible act for the individual who wants to put an end to the horrors of mental confusion, guilt and loss of identity.

- "Harmony". When the reform of the victim is well under way, his emotional needs have been respected due to his good performance, the victim can then find a certain relational life in a group, he is allowed to participate in common activities. This then causes relief, the pressure goes down and the alienation can disappear to make way for a better relationship with one's environment. The need for human relations leads the victim to inevitably get closer to his executioners.
- Rebirth and rehabilitation. In this new "harmonious" state of mind, the victim is ready to condemn and reject everything he has been in the past. Through confession, she must condemn all aspects of her previous life, see them as a long series of shameful acts in order to rebuild something on a new basis. It is a form of rebirth.
- Spiritual indoctrination. The psychologically weak or dependent victim is subjected to a charismatic leader who claims to be connected to a kind of god. He claims to have been chosen for a spiritual mission and he becomes a compass for the disoriented victim.
- Spiritual pollution. These are witchcraft rituals aimed at "tying up" evil entities to traumatized and dissociated victims (see Chapter 5). These entities will harass and participate in mind control. Pacts, spells, curses, alliances, etc., are used to pollute and make the victim bad and unhealthy, physically or psychologically ill, socially isolated, devalued and enslaved.
- 'Psychic driving'. A method comprising recorded messages that loop for hours while the victim is in a state of altered consciousness as a result of electroshock, sensory deprivation, deprivation of food, water, sleep, oxygen, confinement and other acts of torture.
- Hypnosis and trance: A trance state is a hypnotic dissociative state where memory and perceptions are impaired. Dissociation being a separation, a split between psychic/mental elements, which usually are brought together and communicate with each other (this subject will be developed in chapter 5). The effects of a trance state can be caused by certain conditions such as: mental or physical exhaustion,

terror, repetitive songs, rituals or drugs. Sensitivity to trance or dissociation varies from one individual to another. Research has shown that people with a strong suggestibility for hypnosis apparently have genetic predispositions, but trauma, including childhood sexual abuse, also predisposes to a high suggestivity to hypnosis. Some trance states appear to be self-induced and function as a defense mechanism against massive pain and a violent environment. In some cases, the self-induction of a trance and a state of dissociation in the face of severe abuse may result in the creation of a multiple personality. Trance can also be induced by another person, a hypnotist. The hypnotist can make post-hypnotic suggestion to the person to perform certain specific actions or experience certain emotions or physical sensations following the hypnotic trance. These actions or emotions are usually triggered by certain discreet 'codes' that were dictated to the subject when he or she was in a trance. The mental control suffered by many victims of ritual abuse is partly due to having been put in trance states on several occasions and having received a complex series of post-hypnotic suggestions. However, hypnosis and trance also have an important role to play in the treatment of victims of ritual abuse. The use of trance in a therapeutic context often allows the victim to recover memories dissociated from consciousness. This process is a very important aspect for the recovery of victims of ritual abuse.

- Perverse manipulation of the psychic world of the victim (here usually a child). Among other things, it is a question of removing any notion of envy from the child and any inner desire. The child must systematically turn to the adult to receive authorizations in all areas of his life including his inner world. This has the consequence of destroying all the safe places that the child has been able to create inwardly in order to escape the horrors that he has suffered. This creates in him the feeling that there is no real place (internal or external) where he can be safe and that his executioners are omnipresent and know everything he thinks. At this point begins to be set up an internal system with alter (fractional personality) by which the sect will manipulate and control him throughout his life.

- Trauma-based mind control. It is a protocol based on the phenomenon of dissociation, or "fragmentation" of the personality in response to extreme and repetitive trauma. An individual's personality may be fragmented into several different identities that can take over the body in turn. An "amnesic wall" isolates each alter personality, thus preventing the victim from becoming aware of the activities of his alter. This method of mind control called Monarch programming has for symbolism the monarch butterfly which represents among other things the (sad) rebirth of the victim-caterpillar in butterfly-slave, the chrysalis representing the process of "reform" or "programming! 50! "! 5 ^. ! 52!! 53!

In an article entitled "Behind the Democracy Facades: Mind-Control and the Satanic Cuit of National Security", Dr. Hans Ulrish Gresch divided this trauma-based mind control process into three phases:

1st phase: Prepare the mind and nervous system of the victim for programming. The victim is placed in a condition of extreme vulnerability, disorientation and terror, and then is confronted with extreme physical and psychological stress. The victim's sense of self-preservation is threatened, his identity is weakened or destroyed and it regresses to the emotional and cognitive state of a child, his mind is dissociated.

2nd phase: Programming the victim as a robot or a computer, with new attitudes, behavior patterns and new frame of reference in which these attitudes and behaviors will make sense. At least two personalities are created:

- A robotic personality who is consciously in contact with the controllers and who receives the programming.
- A new artificial personality that is totally unconscious of being programmed and that is also unaware of the existence of the robot personality.

The robotic personality is a kind of automaton, while the artificial personality defines itself as a human. The robot will be programmed with repetitive indoctrination and by various means of conditioning (punishments and rewards). The robot is called "slave". The slave is the interface between the controller and the artificial personality(s).

3rd phase: Selectively erase the victim's memory. It is not really an erasure of memory in the sense of destruction, but rather it is a question of removing in the victim the ability to remember certain experiences. This amnesia concerns all experiences directly or indirectly related to the process of mind control, as well as all biographical elements that do not fit into the logic of the artificial personality, which is in fact the façade personality.

The overall goal of this process is to program the victim to become totally powerless, it is the controllers who then become all-powerful, they are like "gods! [54]!".

It is this type of complex mind control that will be deepened in the next few chapters.

Chapter 2

The roots of traumatic ritual abuse and mind control

> ''The methods of religious initiations are often so close to modern political techniques of brainwashing and thought control that one sheds light on the mechanisms of the other.''
>
> William Sargant

> ''When we look at the historical and anthropological literature, we find content related to religions, cults, fraternal organizations apparently referring to rituals traumatic with the aim of creating altered states of consciousness.

These states of consciousness have sometimes been seen as something sacred, as a magical catalyst for deep visions or possessions by gods. in

in other cases, these methods would have been used to establish a kind of

powerful psychological control, in an underground and secretive way, unknown by mental health professionals.''

''Cult and Ritual Abuse'' - James Randall Noblitt &

Pamela Perskin Noblitt

''The mind-control techniques of these groups (according to police officers and survivors deemed credible) have been recognized as building a bridge between applied science and shamanism.

Occultism as an expression of the religious has existed for thousands

of years. It is only in the last 150 years that science has aggressively searched for truths about manipulations.

these hidden belief systems contain psychological ones. The Random House Dictionnary says of occultism that it ''is the use of pseudo-sciences claiming to know supernatural intermediaries who escape knowledge

ordinary.'' This is to remind us once again that the secret of

information' equals 'power'.''

''America in the middle of a trance-formation'' -
Cathy O’Brien & Mark Phillips

1-Introduction

we

develop in detail what satanic ritual abuses are in the chapter 4, but here is a dennmon that will allow a better understanding the content of this chapter: "Severe and systematic abuse of one or more children, adolescents or adults, generally perpetrated by multiple aggressors of both sexes and on one period of several years. Ritual abuse is associated with a system of belief involving the worship of Satan and involving sexual, physical, psychological, emotional, and spiritual abuse, usually of young children, often in ceremonies involving rituals, symbols, and the like "Magic" practices. The essential goal is indoctrination and mind control, which are achieved through dissociation, drug use, hypnosis, torture, humiliation, *etc.* In the case of Satanism transgenerational, most of these things happen "at home", with family members[55].

Ritual abuse and mind control techniques based on trauma and personality splitting are used by Many organizations around the world, These practices date back to the time of Babylon, ancient Egypt and religions in Mysteries. one calls "religions to Mysteries" cults with revelations and rites whose knowledge and practice are reserved for the few of insiders. The Egyptian Book of the Dead is one of the earliest writings referring to the use of occultism for mind manipulation. Tortures, drugs, magic, hypnosis, demonology, aimed to put the individual in a deep state of dissociation and mind control. Demonology being a branch of theology that studies demons just as angelology studies angels.

These rituals

Passing initiatories are the ancient Mysteries of ''death'' and the

''rebirth'' or ''resurrection'', a secret and sacred procedure that

involved powerful alterations of consciousness. These cults were

particularly present in the Mediterranean basin, we can mention for example the Babylonian ceremonies of Inanna and Tammuz, The Egyptian Mysteries of Isis and Osiris, the cult of Orphic, the cult of Bacchus, the Mysteries of Eleusis, Mithras, the Corybantic rituals or the Mysteries of Attis and Adonis. The rituals of the Mysteries took place without interruption for a very long time, the unveiling of the initiatory secrets of these cults was punished by death.

Éliphas Lévi (French ecclesiastic and occultist born Alphonse-Louis Constant) describes certain initiatory rituals allowing access to the Mysteries: *"The great trials of Memphis and Eleusis were intended to form kings and*

priests, entrusting science to brave and strong men. In order to be admitted to these trials, it was necessary to surrender body and soul to the priesthood and to abandon one's life. We then descended into dark underground where it

had to cross in turn lit pyres, currents of deep and fast water, mobile bridges thrown on abysses, and this without leaving

turn off and escape a lamp that was held in one's hand. He who staggered or was afraid should never see the light again; the one who crossed with fearlessness all the obstacles was received among the mysts, that is to say, he was introduced to the little mysteries. But it remained to test his fidelity and silence, and it was only after several years that he became

epopte, title that corresponds to that of adept (...) It is not in the books of philosophers, it is in the religious symbolism of the ancients that we must look for the traces of science and find its mysteries (...) All true initiates have recognized the immense usefulness of work and pain. The pain, said a German poet, is the dog of this unknown shepherd who leads the herd of men. Learning to suffer, learning to

to die is the gymnastics of Eternity, it is the immortal novitiate[56].

the

Initiation rituals of traumatic type aim to transcend the

conscience. In her book entitled "A Course of Severe and Arduous Trials" Lynn Brunet explains that the trials of the ancient mysterian cults were aimed at producing altered states of consciousness, a mystical experience with a state of ecstasy and union with the divine. The methods involved

the exploitation of pain, fear, humiliation and exhaustion.

These techniques seem to have emerged in war cultures, where when exposed to extreme violence and fear of imminent death, a

warrior could experience this state of bliss with a feeling

of immortality (...) This relationship between the feeling of terror and the feeling of living a "sublime" experience has become one of the key themes of philosophical enlightenment (...) Immanuel Kant and Edmund Burke are two Freemasons who studied this subject. Kant stated that the experience of the Sublime, induced through the feeling of being

overwhelmed by terror, is a situation in which the individual can no longer grasp what is happening. In a similar way, Burke stated that terror has the ability to provoke reactions that put the individual in a particular state, "that state of mind in which everything is suspended", thus producing "the effect of the Sublime at its highest level" (...) "to make things terrifying", he says, "darkness usually seems to be necessary" (...) In druidic initiation, candidates are locked in caves, they have to crawl in long ones

tunnels or are enclosed in chests or coffins hanging

several days to come out "born again". These practices initiatory were known as the ''mystical fire'', and the output of these

torture trials were sometimes expressed with the term "flamboying of light" (...) As Ross Nichols notes, the Druid magicians "plunged or cooked the child in the mystical fire", a euphemism meaning that in-pre-Christian times, the child

was sometimes subjected to these initiation tests[57].''

In 1756, Edmund Burke spoke of the "Sublime": "Whatever may cause the feeling of pain or danger in

the mind, it produces the strongest emotion that the human mind is able to feel. When the danger and pain become too intense, it becomes totally terrifying and therefore a priori incapable of causing

pleasure, however, with some hindsight, we observe that such things are delicious[58].''

Immanuel Kant described the *"Sublime"* as the encounter between the "Me" and what has the possibility of annihilating it

totally, that is to say the trauma that can destroy the will and disarticulate the personality. Here is for example how Glenn Gray describes the altered states of consciousness of soldiers on the battlefields: "In danger of death, many soldiers enter a dazed state where clarity of mind has completely disappeared. In this state, they can be caught in the fire of

collective ecstasy to the point of forgetting its death due to their loss of individuality, they can also function as the

~7 ~0'

cells of a

military organization to do all that is expected of them because they then become automatons[59]."

This modified state of consciousness in the face of terror and/or extreme pain, which some called the "Sublime" in the 18th century, this "flamboyance of light" or this "enlightenment", is what is called today dissociation, an essential point to which we will return throughout the book. Unbundling being the foundation on

which is implanted the programming of the MK-Monarch slaves.

In his book Religion: An Anthropological View,

Anthony Wallace describes a learning process

ritual that essentially works with what he calls the "law of dissociation". He writes that these practices aimed at inducing an ecstatic spiritual state by directly manipulating and

crudely the physiological functioning of humans are found in all religious systems (ancient and primitive). Wallace classifies these manipulations into four broad categories:

- 1) Drugs
- 2) Sensory deprivation and mortification of the flesh by pain
- 3) Sleep deprivation leading to fatigue - 4) Deprivation of food, water or oxygen In his 1966 book, Wallace indirectly describes, on an anthropological basis, the origins of satanic ritual abuse and

mind control. It describes how the neophyte is put in a a state in which he finds himself radically dissociated from all his past knowledge in order to

receive new information. Indeed, cognitive and affective restructuring (programming) is facilitated during these dissociative states where the suggestibility of the subject is multiplied. Wallace writes: "The effectiveness of these procedures in inducing physiological changes has even been demonstrated in a non-religious setting, notably in clinical experiments on the effects of sensory deprivation and the various techniques of 'brainwashing' or 'reform of the

thought''... These include the MK-Ultra program that will be featured in the next chapter.

Anthony Wallace speaks of an "ecstatic spiritual state" driven by certain rituals, an ecstasy caused by a deep dissociative state. The word "ecstasy" which comes from the Greek "ekstasis" means "exit from the body", this dissociative "illumination" during traumas is indeed considered by some as ecstatic, that is to say a state of consciousness where past, present and future are transcended and unified. Some extreme traumatic rituals go so far as to provoke what is called an NDE (Near Death Experience), a near-death experience in which our

space-time is transcended. Rape victims often report this

phenomenon of extreme dissociation where they feel out of their body

physical during the drama, we will return to it in chapter 6.

In the book ''The Ancient Greek World'', the historian and archaeologist Marie-Claire Amouretti writes: ''The Mysteries of Eleusis
bring to the initiate a communication with the great goddesses of the earth

Demean and Korah, and with their parhedron Pluto. Most likely, we also receive a viatic for the afterlife. Initiation takes place in three stages:

the little mysteries of Agraï, in spring, the great Mysteries in

September-October, where the final stage is reached only in the second year; from the 13th to the 20th Boedromion the preparations take place, from the 20th to the 23rd, the initiation. The previous ceremonies are somewhat known to us: procession, sacrifices,

consumption of products of the earth, manipulation of objects perhaps sexual, mystical drama evoking hierogamy (editor's note: sexual alliance between the

divine and human). But the obligation of secrecy was so well respected that we ignore the final phase or "epooptia": it seems to have caused a

kind of contemplative ecstasy. The initiate has personally entered into a relationship

with divinity; he received a promise of bliss. In Phaedrus, Plato evokes the "supreme bliss" achieved by the myste (initiate). We have the impression that these ceremonies prompted the participant to overcome the anguish of death by the conviction of being integrated into a chain of life, just like wheat

dies and is reborn through the seed[60].

In the publication of the A.M.O.R.C. (Rose-Cross) ''Rosicrucian Digest'', we can read: ''The path that leads to knowledge is an esoteric way, as opposed to that which is exoteric, the religion of devotion. This knowledge, which is the goal of true philosophy, has a double purpose. First of all, there is the teaching of techniques and techniques.

practices to overcome human limitations, such as the trauma of death. Secondly there is the study of the cosmic order and the work in sound

breast. When these two aspects meet, we get a form

hermeticism[61]. ''

The ancient Greeks were well aware of the effects of a deep physiological stress to modify in an individual the perceptions of the world.

Priests of ancient Greece used traumatic rituals for

"cure"' some sick people. For this they made them go down in the

cave of Trophonios... The person was prepared for this rite by fasting, lustration (water purification ceremony) and sleep deprivation. Then she was taken down into the underground to leave her alone in complete darkness. The intoxicating gases that exhaled in this cave, or possibly the lack of oxygen, were not long in coming.

act on the person by provoking terrible dreams as well as visions.

It was then that we came to rescue her just in time and take her out of the cave to bring her back to the light and the great outdoors. These kinds of hardships caused a real trauma that was supposed to heal the patient. Psychiatrist William Sargant

does not hesitate to use the term "brainwashing" to describe the rituals of the oracle of Trophonios, during which the subject therefore experienced sensory deprivation, the

visual and auditory confusion techniques as well as taking

Psychotropic. Just as we will see a psychiatrist today when

we need advice or treatment, the ancient Greeks consulted the oracles for the same purpose. Before going to see the oracle, the

first person had to experience sleep deprivation, singing

repetitive, taking drugs and finally venturing alone into

deep and dark caverns. This long and exhausting struggle, which could

last several days, put her in a state of extreme physiological stress.

Then, when the oracle revealed certain things to him, the person could understand their meaning thanks to this altered state of consciousness that gave him another vision of the world. We find the same kind of initiation in the

Amerindians, with sleep and food deprivation, isolation and extreme conditions aimed at attaining a state of consciousness

modified causing visions and revelations related to the spirit world.

The Mysteries cult of Eleusis used in its rituals a sacred potion called Kykeon which

contained ergot from rye and was very close to the current LSD

(powerful hallucinogen). In Orations XII, Dio Chrysostom writes about initiation rites employing

psychotropics: "It's like there's a hand

above man, Greek or barbarian, initiated in a sanctuary of a

exceptional beauty and grandeur. He will have many mystical visions and he will hear many mystical voices. Darkness and light him

will appear alternately and thousands of other things will happen to him[62].

Hypnosis also participates in these initiatory processes. The Ebers Papyrus, more than three thousand years old, is one of the oldest medical treatises that clearly describes the use of hypnotic processes by Egyptian soothsayers. In the Temple of Isis, the

Egyptologists have found many engravings depicting characters

with obvious characteristics of hypnotic trance. the hierophants (priests) of the mysteries schools of ancient Egypt practiced a form of very advanced hypnosis in which the initiate entered into a deep trance that could go so far as to trigger what we call today an NDE (Near Death Experience), an "exit out of the body" (As we will see later in this book, some modern Luciferian groups practice traumatic rituals called "Resurrection", which plunge the victim into an experience on the borders of death). Nowadays, some hypnotists recognize that they owe much to the Asklepiade priests of ancient Greece who practiced hypnosis as a form of medicine based on the behavior modification. They called these hypnosis techniques the ''healing by dream''. A Greek engraving dating from 928 BC.C. watch Chiron put his pupil Aesculapius in a state of hypnotic trance. The oracles of Delphi among others used hypnosis, drugs and the inhalation of vapors to obtain profound alterations of conscience.

Magic, psychotropics and demonology have always been combined in religious rites. Drugs, but also deep trauma can remove the natural barrier that usually protects humans from demonic spirits, they are considered powerful tools for interact with other dimensions.

The MK-Ultra project has not invented anything about brainwashing, except to have created a scientific framework using human guinea pigs for political and military purposes. The initiation ceremonies of religions at Mysteries involved rites of passage that could be to describe real and elaborate mental conditioning programs. those Mind control protocols are still present in our modern age, it is a process to induce a profound altered state of consciousness in order to implant a new paradigm. All these things have been experimented and perfected tirelessly in order to achieve the mental control of an individual then becoming an automaton, a golem. Order through chaos... rebirth through symbolic death. These states of trance and dissociation of the mind engendered during traumatic rituals go back as far as humanity. They are found all over the world, including Haitian voodoo, African juju but also in shamanism in North and South America, from Asia, Polynesia and Europe with druidic culture. When extreme trauma alters brain chemistry, perceptions of reality are changing and the ancient occultists believed that the reaction of the victim was of a mystical or magical nature. Today, we let's call it dissociation and its Diocmmic mechanism is beginning to be well understood by traumatologists, on the other hand the energetic and spiritual mechanism is much less so... at least in the secular spheres. Paganism and Satanism have always appealed to this psycho-spiritual process called "personality dissociation" to access other dimensions of being, but this is also used as a tool of mind control and enslavement. For Dr. James Randall Noblitt, trauma-based mental programming began when men found that accidental traumas as well as certain traumatic rituals could produce altered consciousness and even create personalities totally dissociated from the original personality of the individual. In his book "Blood Secret", the Nigerian shaman Isaiah Oke calls these dissociated alters the Iko-Awo, personalities serving as slaves to the sorcerers.

This knowledge of the functions of the brain, which consist in causing the dissociation of the personality, the occultation of memories and an opening to other worlds during traumatic experiences, may have been encoded in certain mythological narratives, certain rituals or symbols,

totally hermetic to the layman. This is how this knowledge

initiatory have been able to cross the ages. These Mysteries of the Human Mind were and still are much studied by some secret societies.

This occult knowledge gives access to psychic powers and the spirit world. The dissociation of the psyche can therefore be considered as a kind of illumination, but it allows
especially to master the techniques of mind control over others and thus to obtain a certain

power. Black magic combined with mental programming based on

Trauma is an initiatory knowledge that has today become a powerful tool of political and social control.

2 - "Nameless religion"

The legacy of ancient Babylon, the Sumero-Akkadian mysteries religion with its blood sacrifices and the enslavement of human beings has been transmitted through generations. Jay Parker, a survivor

of satanic ritual abuse revealed that his grandparents, descendants of

Luciferian lineages, had once confided to him about the Statue of Liberty that it was in fact Semiramis, the queen of Babylon, the wife of Nimrod. It was Nimrod who was the builder of the Tower of Babel, he was the first man to have wanted to establish a World Government with a Universal Religion in opposition to God. Nimrod obviously seems to be a model to follow for the elites of International Freemasonry. In "History of Freemasonry", published by the "Masonic History Company", it is written that Nimrod was honored as "Grand Mason" and that his attempt to build a "New World Order" earned him the distinction of "First Grand Master". The Freemason Albert Mackey wrote that "Legend attributes to Nimrod the creation of the Masons in the form of an organized body and he was the first to have given them a constitution or laws for a government. Masonry, according to legend, was founded in Babylon, from where it was transmitted throughout the world[63].

The tradition of ritual abuse to create slaves would come from an ancient doctrine, the ancient tradition of the Babylonian period with its cult of demons, this devotion to fallen angels, which we will call "nameless religion". In these ancient religions, evil gods were feared and had to be constantly appeased. The polytheism of the Mesopotamians, Sumerians, Assyrians, Persians and Babylonians was completely related to demonic entities. Demonism is the dynamic that hides behind the magic and spiritual powers of these primitive religions and Ancient. The many Canaatan, Egyptian, Greek and Roman gods are of the same ilk as the Babylonian gods. All the practices of magic, the quests for immortality, the sacrifices of animals and humans, etc., derive from these ancient cults to demons. In ''Mackey's Revised Encyclopedia of Freemasonry'', Albert Mackey informs us that: ''According to Warburton, every pagan god receives apart from what appears publicly and openly, a secret cult in which no one is not admitted except those which have been selected by preparatory preparations which constitute initiation. This secret cult has been called the Mysteries[64].

Today, these cults no longer have their altar in the public square, and for the laymen they exist only in books

history, and again... But have they completely disappeared? The worship of

demons, sacrificial blood rituals and traumatic practices

Initiatory creating deep dissociative states are they from history

Old?

There is still today a cult perpetuating this tradition, such as a "nameless religion" transmitting the Mysteries from generation to generation. Why a "religion without a name"? Because

that it does not exist officially. This cult,

or rather this doctrine, is not supposed to exist for the ordinary mortals of our time. One could just as well call it the "religion of a thousand faces", its multiple forms being nothing but manifestations

a background strain that adapts to human times and civilizations.

A strain that externalizes itself in this or that way according to the circumstances that are available to it and that adapts to material hazards, but which remains one in what it aims at at the spiritual level.

It is a clandestine doctrine, a Transhistorical Gnosis which therefore has no precise name but which nevertheless shapes our modern society by infiltration for centuries. she

marks its imprint by a symbolism that initiates like to display in the secular world, but also by an influence resulting in a decadence of

more and more marked. It is a subculture that is gradually emerging and is trying to permeate the layman to become a hegemonic culture.

World. This "nameless religion" is divided into a multitude of sects and groups that do not at first glance have the same interests, but which all have in common to work more or less ardently to put in place

place of a world government, a New World Order, cradle of the Antichrist.

The "nameless religion" is the cult in Lucifer, it is divided into several branches, Kabbalists, Martinists, Rosicrucians, Theosophists,

Luciferians, Gnostics and Neo-Gnostics, *etc.* (all these schools overlapping each other)... Its true followers (i.e. those who are aware of the real issues they defend and of the war waged here on earth) are descended from transgenerational Luciferian families or

are initiated and corrupted in the high lodges of secreted companies

structured in a pyramidal way. All work to establish the reign of their Prince, the fallen angel Lucifer, the "civilizing" god, while the God of the Bible would be for them a "destroyer" God who must be overthrown. One of their methods is the infiltration and subversion of religions,

governments and important organizations to patiently infuse it, and methodically their Luciferian doctrine.

This is accompanied by a formidable discretion thanks to the principle of the "Massa Duma", the law of silence, guaranteed by dissociative states in which many followers are "stuck". The aim is to destroy the social order (the nation, the family, religion...) and

to reverse morality and traditional values to impose a new order through destruction: Ordo ab Chao, order through chaos. In our modern societies, we can now see the results of this destructive doctrine of obtaining the

''redemption through sin'' or ''holiness through evil''. These are:

a particularly unhealthy philosophy aimed at a systematic inversion of moral values where evil becomes good and good becomes evil. In his book entitled "The Militant Messiah", Arthur Mandel defines this notion of "redemption through sin" as follows: "It is nothing but the old Paulino-Gnostic idea of the felix culpa, the holy sin of the road to God through sin, the perverse desire to fight evil with evil, to get rid of sin in

sinning[65].''

This scourge seems to have its roots in ancient Babylonian practices and mysteries cults. A doctrine revived by Frankism and Sabbataism, a satanic degeneration of Judaism and Kabbalah, founded by the false messiahs Sabbatai Tsevi (XVH century) and Jacob Frank

(XVinth century). Sabbatao-Frankism can be considered a close ancestor of the Bavarian Enlightened (sect of the illuminati), Zionism, communism, as well as fascism. Strictly speaking, there is no Frankist or Sabbataist cult since it is a doctrine and philosophy spread by

the infiltration of religions but also of Freemasonry and other secret societies working behind the scenes of governments and working behind democratic facades.

In his book Jacob Frank, the False Messiah, Charles Novak writes: "Thus, if Judaism preaches virginity, fidelity, and love, Sabbatai and his successors like Jacob Frank preach, for the young girls, sex from an early age, sexual orgies for young boys and the exchange of women during Shabbat. To the point that some Frankist children do not know their real biological father. Jacob and his followers will be surprised in the middle of Shabbat orgiastic, in January 1756, in the Town of Landskron and will be, at the request of the rabbis, expelled from the city for. A woman stood in the middle, naked, while the followers men sang the Jewish shabbtic prayer: Lekhu doidi likrass kalo (Prayer that is sung every Friday evening, to celebrate the coming of the Sabbath. Instituted by Rabbi Alkabets in the sixteenth century).

Then, they rushed to her, turning the ritual into a collective. Frankist sexual rites, thereafter, consisted of songs, ecstatic dances, mixing men and women. Frank knelt down and stared at two lit candles to a wooden bench, pushed a nail between them, and brandished the cross in all directions, exclaiming:

Forsa damus para vert, seibuml grandi asserverti (Judeo-Spanish), Give us the strength to see you, the great happiness to serve you. The lights were then extinguished, the men and women undressed and the collective began, nudity to recall Adam and Eve before the fall. Frank, on the other hand, did not participate. He remained in the middle, in contemplation mystical (...) Frankists were known for their sexual orgies collective sometimes violent. By these nihilistic behaviors, where the 9th av became a party of joy, we exchanged women, wherever we wanted

became a party of joy, we exchanged women, wherever we wanted

destroy all dogma: "So that the true Good God may appear", according to his own terms[66]."

Here we find the sacred orgies practiced in the ancient religions called "mysteries", such as the cult of Dionysus (Bacchus among the Romans), a phallic cult related to fertility, just like the Shivaic cult in India or Osiris in ancient Egypt with its obelisks symbolizing the phallus.

This "nameless religion", Luciferian and elitist, therefore has its roots rooted in the ancient religions in The Mysteries of Babylon and of Egypt, but also of Celtic Druidism. It has incorporated into its doctrine what it considers to be the "best" of each of these traditions, their fundamental practices. Deities like ''El'', Isis'', ''Osiris'' or ''Baal'' therefore continue today to receive a secret cult.

This "religion" has an almost undetectable tool of domination, it is the mental control based on trauma. The world's ruling elite militarily applies this science of mind related to trauma and dissociation. This phenomenon of fractionation of the personality was discovered by ancient andpre-industrial cultures, but nowadays it is an occult knowledge that serves an elite Luciferian to control not only its own members, its own progeny, but above all to dominate the whole of humanity and

establish absolute rule. In a testimony broadcast on the internet in April 1999, Kim Campbell (Philippe-Eugène de Rothschild), one of the many children adulterers of Édouard Philippe de Rothschild, said:
"When I look at CNN, I can't believe seeing so many familiar faces take the spotlight in the fields of politics, arts, finance, fashion and business. I grew up with these people. I met them during rituals, as well as in the officines of power. Financiers, artists, crowned heads, and even heads of state, all are people with dissociated personalities, who work today to introduce humanity into a New World Order, where the human being occupies the highest place and where God is no more than a secondary abstraction. All these people, like me, had suffered satanic ritual abuse that had dissociated their personalities."

What are these initiations? What are these ancient Mysteries? Does their symbolism contain initiatory keys crossing the centuries? By what modern organizations do these Mysteries continue to be passed down from generation to generation?

2 - From ancient cults in Mysteries to modern secret societies

The question of the involvement of Masonic-type fraternal organizations in ritual abuse, mind control and practices

Unhealthy occults has long been something that has been controversial.

Some Freemasons authors suggest that the Masonic Order relies on an ancestry containing not only the rituals of cathedral builders, but also initiatory rites that come from various ancient cults like mysteries religions involving traumatic rituals. others Freemasons claim that there is a Black Masonry that dishonours the Masonry called "pure and authentic". some charges are regularly laid against Freemasons who are believed to be involved in mistreatment and sexual abuse of minors, the term "Masonic ritual abuse" is then used. Here are some books about testimonies that overwhelm members of the Franc-maçonnerie : “The brotherhood : The secret world of the freemasons” par Stephen Knight - “Larson’s new book of cult” par Bob Larson - “The deadly deception” par Shaw & McKenney - “Inside the brotherhood : Further secrets of the freemasons” par Martin Short

- “Ritual Abuse, what it is, why it happens, how to help” par Margaret Smith - “Terror, Trauma and The Eye In The

Triangle'' by Lynn Brunet. Unfortunately, there are few or no

sources in French.

In her book on ritual abuse, survivor Margaret Smith makes accusations against Freemasonry. She was the victim of a

group of people who sometimes had fun with the stupidity of those who made them

label as "Satanists". In its view,

their point of view they are Luciferians and they see Satan as a Judeo-Christian myth or a simple metaphor. Some survivors

also report that they were encouraged to attend masses

Christian christians to develop part of their personality on the "side of the

light'', while another part of themselves suffered and participates in

unhealthy and traumatic practices. This is Gnostic theology where this

concept of "light" versus "darkness" is something essential[67]. Is this one of the reasons why our Masonry elites are pushing to

founding powerful philanthropic foundations? This notion of 'light versus darkness' is commonly used by survivors of ritual abuse and mind control to describe their own

inner world. The distorted Christian doctrine will often serve as a backdrop for manipulating the child. Margaret Smith and many others survivors have spoken of a certain Gnostic philosophy in the abuses they lived and they also reported the presence of Freemasons during these abuse, Masonic insignia or Masonic-type ceremonies. It is not question here to accuse globally all Freemasonry of perpetrating sadistic and violent rituals, it is likely that some masons operate without the consent of the majority of the members of the lodge. However, some things about Freemasonry can question: let's take

the example of the symbol of the Order of the Eastern Star (a female Masonic organization) which is an inverted pentagram, a

symbol generally used to represent the Baphomet or more generally

Satanism[68].

In 2011, at a conference at the annual meetings of the group S.M.A.R.T. (Stop Mind Control and Ritual Abuse Today),

Kristin Constance testified that she had been the victim of ritual abuse and control

mental practiced by his grandparents, founders and members of a lodge of the Order of the Eastern Star in Australia. She reports that the Masonic emblem of the Eastern Star was used as a support for her

mental programming. (His testimony is transcribed in full in the

chapter on Monarch programming)

Neil Brick, survivor of ritual abuse and founder of the group S.M.A.R.T. Said: "I think Freemasonry is one of the most

large organizations responsible for satanic ritual abuses in the world. his

connection goes back to the government (federal and local), as well that even some economic institutions of the country... I was born among the Freemasons[69]. "

the

sociologist Stephen Kent, who investigated the deviances of religious cults,

especially on Scientology, met many people who

testified that they had been subjected to Masonic-style ritual abuse, including

children of Freemasons: "From the beginning of my research, people arrived with testimonies, some of which were linked with

Masonic drifts. Some people claimed that their father had been

Freemason and that the abuses were related to a lodge and its members. sometimes

the violence appeared to have taken place inside the lodges themselves

Masonic, but I can't say for sure. These appearances of the

Freemasonry in a fairly large number of testimonials left me

really perplexed[70]."

the

Canadian Lynn Moss-Sharman, survivor and founder of 'The Stone Angels' newspaper and spokesperson for ACHES-MC Canada (Advocacy Committee for Human Experimentation Survivors & Mind-Control), stated in an interview with Wayne Morris in 1998, that Freemasonry is a common denominator in

testimonies of ritual abuse and mind control. There were conversations about it that took place at the meetings, the fear

concerned this Masonic connection. I put some classified ads in

the ''Globe & Mail'' on this subject as well as to announce the conferences at

come. Those few words that talked about the Masonic connection generated

phone calls and letters from victims from across Canada.

People who described themselves as survivors of ritual abuse

Masonic, still living in terror. They were always daughters of

Freemasons of the Scottish Rite or daughters of Shriners (Masonic branch).

From across Canada, these people began to testify about

memories of what could be described as experimentation on mind control. This began to manifest itself in November 1994[7i].''

in

a book published in 2007, entitled "Terror, Trauma and The Eye In The Triangle"'

Lynn Brunet reveals that her father, Freemason and Rosicrucian, abused of her sexually when she was a little girl. He also confessed to the existence of of certain Masonic factions that practice traumatic ritual abuse on children. Here are some excerpts from his testimony: "As the years had passed, I made myself remembered the sexual abuse of my father when I was a child (...) I also discovered that sexual abuse and incest were woven through the history of the family over at least three generations (...) From the outside, my family seemed all that is normal, but the accumulated weight of this family history, charged with trauma and tension, was a heavy burden to bear for each generation (...) In recent years, as the puzzles of my own experience were solved, I have tried to tell them about what I remembered. Luckily for me, my mother was able to remember the night my father raped me at the age of four and therefore to validate the statements of his daughter. However, ritual abuse was going to beyond their understanding, which is understandable in many ways. In the middle in 2004, my father began to develop Alzheimer's disease. during the initial period of the troubles, in an altered state of consciousness, he began to talk to me about the dark side of his Masonic involvement. He then confessed to me that he was aware of the existence of certain groups that used Masonic rituals in contexts of violence to initiate children. He said to me: ''He there are many of these groups, there are many people who are aware, but they don't talk about it because it's embarrassing.'' He had with me alternations of coherent conversations in which he told me about his involvement with other men in these groups. Sometimes in the evening it managed to get out of the retirement home and he then started climbing to trees in the manner of a soldier on a mission to, he believed, observe the activities of worship in order to "get the children out of the sect". this ''strategic mission'' lasted for two weeks until he believed have recovered each of the children. After which he seemed to be very satisfied of what he had accomplished and all the signs of his inner agitation were are calmed (...) The memoirs concerning irregular Masonic activities were clearly to be attributed to a certain part of his psyche which normally is not accessible to the consciousness and they may have been intertwined at that time with his wartime experiences.

It is possible that in raising this question, I had plunged my father into an inner conflict, his memory loss having begun just after my confrontation with him. However, his brief period of honesty towards me has undoubtedly contributed to a process of mutual healing. this confession, combined with the knowledge of the Masonic Order that I was able to

acquire, redirected my attention so that it no longer rests on anger

to the man himself. Today I am led to understand the principles

that there are behind these centuries-old "magical" practices, which divide the

psyche of these men in two: on the one hand citizens and men

devoted, and on the other, the most childish, absurd and cruel of creatures

human[72]."

in

France, Maude Julien gave a disturbing testimony in her book entitled "Behind the Grid" released in 2014. His father, who was a wealthy entrepreneur, introduced to Freemasonry, subjected him to conditioning.

extreme aiming to make her a "goddess", but especially a robot obeying her finger and eye. Maude Julien suffered total social isolation for fifteen years, she was locked up in a

mental straitjacket (just like his mother) with a formation of the mind and body

to make her a "superior being", an "Elected One". Extreme and traumatic physical and mental exercises defied understanding. Maude Julien said: "This book is a manual of silent disobedience. I wanted to show how the grip is put in place. It is a perfect crime whose

victim is so ashamed that she does not denounce anything. Today, I am well in my personal and professional life, my daughters are great.

I wanted to write my story. For him, only his mental world counts. the

others are instruments or obstacles. He locked us in this

mental straitjacket, my mother and I. The Ogre shows you that he is Love, with a

big A. Everything he does is for your good. It installs a timed life

of which he holds the remote control. Then, it instills fear. The outside world

is the danger[73]."

In a television interview[74] with Thierry Ardisson, Maude Julien confided that she had traumatic amnesia

concerning scars on his thighs and chest. She ignores

what is the origin of it and doctors say that these are not accidents.

In this interview, Maude Julien says: "The goal of my father was actually to make me an 'over-being', he had for

me a capital mission. And for that I had to have a training

physical and psychic so that the mind is stronger than matter (...)

- Thierry Ardisson: And then there is the cellar, so there it is quite violent, that is to say that it wakes you up in the middle of the night and it puts you

sitting on a chair in a cellar.

- Maude Julien: Always so as not to move. But the purpose of this crucial mission to which he dedicated me was that I had to be

able to circulate between universes, learn to communicate with the dead

(•••)

- T.A: There's the electricity test too, it's incredible. It asks you to hold an electric wire and take

discharges for ten minutes.

- M.J: When there are discharges you should not react (...) - T.A: (...) at eight o'clock you will wake up your father, and there you must hold his room pot while he urinates (...) the most

disturbing anyway, it is these scars on the thighs and on the chest

whose origin you do not know. These are initiation rites you think?

- M.J: What is certain for doctors is that they were not made by health professionals, which excludes the thesis

of the accident (...) and I am afraid I never know.

Is it the occult teachings of the Masonic lodges that inspire such projects to create "beings

superiors", enslaved and traumatized to become connected mediums

to other dimensions? As we will see later in this book,

extreme trauma causes deep dissociative states that spiritually "unlock" the child, allowing connection to other dimensions. Are there any abuses?

Masonic rituals whose purpose would be in a way to initiate the child, i.e. to create at home an "enlightenment" during the dissociation?

But now let's return to the mysteries related to Gnosticism, the Gnosis of which some literatures attribute a major role

in the history of Satanism and ritual abuse. The Gnostics were sometimes

referred to as Borborites or libertines because of the deviant practices to which they surrendered in their "mysteries". Based on Kurt Rudoph, the author of ''Gnosis: The

Nature and History of Gnosticism'', the secret of some Gnostics includes a ritual handshake similar to the Masonic handle, a specific handshake to which some survivors of ritual abuse often react with a change in the state of consciousness without knowing why it happens to them. These reactions may signify that there has been mental programming and that the handshake particular acts as a trigger that alters the state of consciousness of the individual. We will return to this in more detail in Chapter 7 on the Monarch-type mind control.

In the Gnostic text entitled ''Gospel of Phillip'', it is mentioned that ''God is a eater of man. It is for this reason that men are (sacrificed) to him.'' several sources reported that some Gnostic groups practiced ceremonies involving cannibalism and sexual orgies. According to their description, some of these ceremonies are clearly to be classified in the category of black masses and satanic ritual abuses. The most shocking of the Gnostic practices reported is certainly that of Epiphanius. A monk would have witnessed the orgiastic rituals practiced by a Gnostic group named the Phibionites (or Barbotians). The Bishop

Epiphany of Salamis wrote in his Panarion (Adversus

Haereses: Against heresies) than the ophite sect of the Phibionites performed abortion and that the fetus, dismembered, coated with honey and spices,

was devoured by the group as a kind of Eucharist. These ceremonies

Orgiaques are related with the vision that the Phibionites have of the cosmos and the

way to free one one from it. In addition to meeting the requirements of archones

(demons), these "manners" respond to the need to gather the divine seed

implanted in the world and which is currently dispersed in the seed

men and female menstruation. In his book entitled "The Gnostics", Jacques Lacarrière asserts that the violation of sexual morality and other blasphemous horrors demonstrate

the clearly "Luciferian" conviction of certain practitioners

Coin. WX1V1V/UUX1 V/XUXX VXXXVXXL XUV/XXVX XVyXXXXVy U.VO J7X UUV| UU. XX L.VJ. VV/X LU. XXXU
Gnostics

associate Lucifer with Promotheus, the Titan of Greek mythology[75].

the

Satanist Aleister Crowley practiced with his followers a version

'Thechemic' of the black Mass which he called the "Gnostic Mass". Freemasonry sports a "G" in the middle of the compass and the square, a letter that refers to its primary source:

Gnosis. In his speech of initiating him to the rank of Scottish knight, Adam

Weishaupt (founder of the "Enlightened of Bavaria") said: "the enlightened alone, are in possession of the secrets of the true Freemason. It remains

even to the enlightened a large part of its secrets to discover. The new

chevalier must devote his research to it. He is especially warned that

it is through the study of the ancient Gnostics and the

Manichaeans that he will be able to make great discoveries on this real

Masonry[76]."

In his book entitled "Fils de la Veuve", Professor Jean Claude Lozac'hmeur analyses the links that exist between the

Contemporary Gnostic Masonic tradition and mythology. He concludes that the myth of the "Son of the Widow" dear to the Freemasons contains a real

parable transmitting in a veiled way a secret tradition to which was

originally associated with an initiatory cult. According to him, once decrypted, this

symbolic narrative reveals a dualistic religion opposing an "evil god",

author of the Flood, to a "good god", of promethean (luciférien) type. ''In other words, the religion of the Son of the Widow rests on the same background of tradition as the Bible, with this fundamental difference that

the values are reversed and that the Judeo-Christian God appears under the

traits of a jealous and ruthlesstyrant^^.''

the

''good god'' of the various and varied Gnostics would therefore be Lucifer hidden under his

more beautiful pageantry, illuminating the initiates with the light of knowledge... A ''civilizing god''

putting man at the centre of all things. His research on origins

occultec of the Franc.Masonry also bring Jean Claude

Lozac'hmeur to conclude: "There has existed in all civilizations a primitive religion diametrically opposed to the biblical tradition, and of which we find remains in mythologies and folklores. In this mystery cult, which corresponds to the "Primordial Tradition" of modern Gnostics, Satan was represented as the ''Civilizing God Bearer of Light[78]''.

In the book "The Ancient Greek World", Marie-Claire Amouretti writes about the cult at Mysteries of Bacchus: "Dionysus appears as the liberating god. The myth makes him an exile, connects him to the Near East to make him return triumphantly to Greek soil, accompanied by a procession satyrs and menades, musicians and dancers. God of wine and unbridled desire, Dionysus offers himself to his followers in the form of a powerful animal that they strip and eat raw to appropriate his strength. Women in particular participate in this cult. It is the whole civic and family setting that cracks at the occasion of these festivals of which Euripides will make an extraordinary evocation in "Les Bacchantes": physical or spiritual drunkenness, joy, race disheveled in unculitated lands, singing and dancing, sexual freedom and female domination, all this expresses a deep need to free oneself a civic, moral and family system that is being organized with

great rigidity. Necessary but dangerous outlet[79]."

All this is clearly linked to what we are experiencing today in our consumer society in which man is put to the

center of all things thanks to the liberating god of the "brothers"

of light". Unbridled "consumers" devoid of any

spirituality and whose morality continues to fall from year to year, this

being the result of the global Plan of Luciferian, based precisely on this transhistorical gnosis

whose goal is to carry out the reign of the "civilizing and liberating

god".

According to

l’historien Romain Titus Livy, l’auteur de “Rome and the

Mediterranean'', the Romans who had investigated the cult at Mysteries of Bacchus had discovered that its rituals included

sexual transgressions and blood sacrifices. One of the prophesies of the

cult had organized with its followers a vast scam that resulted in

several assassinations, this is the "scandal of the bacchanals",

historically well referenced. This cult did not admit in its ceremonies

initiatory than young people under the age of twenty, more docile during the

orgies... ''While her son was recovering, she had to introduce him to the Bachic rites (editor's note: cult in Bacchus) (...) Then her mistress Hispala told her that when she was a slave, she entered this sanctuary as a

subordinate to her mistress, but that when she was free she had none

never approached. She knew it was a workshop for all kinds of

corruptions, and it was well known that for two years, no one having more than

twenty years had only been initiated here. They drove him to a place that

resonated with screams, songs, music with cymbal strikes and drums, so that the voice of the initiate cannot be heard then

that shameful practices were perpetrated on him with violence[80]..."

in

his book "The Generating Deities", Jacques-Antoine Dulaure (at the time Freemason of the Lodge Osiris de Sèvres) teaches us that the cult of Mysteries of Bacchus comes from Egypt and that it is related to the phallic cult (the worship of the penis).

Dulaure writes in his book: "Herodotus and

Diodorus of Sicily agrees that the cult of Bacchus was introduced in

Greece by a man called Melampus, instructed by the Egyptians of a large number of

Ceremonies. Melampus, son of Amythaon, had, says Herodotus, a great

knowledge of the sacred ceremony of the Phallus. It is he who has

instructs the Greeks of the name of Bacchus, ceremonies of his worship, and who introduced

among them the procession of the Phallus. It is true that he did not discover them

the background to these mysteries; but the sages who came after him have some

gave a further explanation. So it's Melampous, adds-
instituted the procession of the Phallus which is carried in honor of Bacchus, and

it was he who instructed the Greeks of the ceremonies they still practice

* i

t-ii, which has
today^1]."

The Freemason Dulaure also writes about this cult of the Phallus to which he devoted a whole book: "A particular sect and little known, called the sect of the Baptes, celebrated in Athens, Corinth, in the island of Chio, in Thrace and elsewhere, the nocturnal mysteries of Cotitto, species of Venus popular. The initiates who indulged in all the excesses of the debauchery, employed the Phallus in a particular way; they were of glass, and served as a drinking vessel. Those who do not see, in this symbol of reproduction, that the character of libertinage, must be surprised that it was an integral part of the ceremonies dedicated to Ceres, deity so recommended by its purity, and nicknamed the Holy Virgin; from what it was in the mysteries of this goddess in Eleusis, called mysteries par excellence, to which all men of antiquity, distinguished by their talents, by their virtues, were honored to be initiated (...) It is Tertullian who tells us that the Phallus was, at Eleusis, one of the mysterious objects.

No other writer of antiquity had made this peculiarity known, no initiate had before him revealed this secret: "All that these mysteries have more holy, he says, what is hidden with so much care, what one is admitted to know only very late, what the ministers of religion, called Epoptes, make so ardent desire, it is the simulacrum of the manly limb[82].''

here is some extracts from the book "Shiva and Dionysus" (Alain Daniélou - 1979) concerning the similarities between the initiations of ancient religions and those of modern secret societies aiming to divinize Man: "Certain ritual techniques will allow us to act on the latent energies present in the human being and thus to transform it and make it the vehicle of the transmission of certain powers, to raise it to a higher plane in the hierarchy of beings, to make it a kind of demigod or superman closer to the invisible world of spirits. This is the the role of initiation. This process of transformation of the human being is long and difficult, that is why initiation can only be done in degrees. The pashu (animal man) will first become a sâdhaka (apprentice), then a vîra (hero) or follower, i.e. a being who can dominate and surpass the appearances of the material world. The next degree is that of siddaha (realized), also called, in the Tantrikas, the stage of kaula (member of the group), a word that corresponds to the title of ''companion'' in Masonic initiation, where the rank is also found apprentice. The kaula has reached "the state of truth". Only then is the barriers between the human and the divine are erased and that the follower can be considered divya (deified). In the language of the Greco-Roman mysteries, we called "hero" the follower, the initiate. The higher degrees are probably kept secret. This transformation concerns the whole of human being. (...) Only an initiate can pass powers on to a new initiate.

This is essential for the initiatory transmission to be valid. It's why an interrupted tradition cannot be restored. Initiation is the real transmission of a shakti, of a power, transmission that takes the form of enlightenment. The continuity of the transmission from one initiate to another is

compared to the transmission of one flame that ignites another. Insiders

form groups of men different from the others. These groups are called

kula (families) in Tantrism, hence the name kaula (family members)

or "companions") given to their followers. Kula corresponds to thiase

Dionysian. (...) The ritual bath preceded, for the mysteries of Eleusis, the phase considered the most mysterious of initiations. It was preceded, according to

Plutarch, abstinence for ten days from any sexual intercourse. The same

rule is applied in India. (...) "The novice is then led inside the initiation area, carefully marked on the ground. The entrance to the west is the

better for followers of all castes, but especially for

those of the royal caste, the Kshatriyas... The novice must do three times the

turn the phallic image and, according to his means, offer God a handful of

flowers mixed with gold, or only gold if flowers are missing, in

reciting the hymn to Rudra (Rudrâdhyaya). Then he will meditate on Shiva by repeating

only the pranava, the Syllable AUM." (Linga Purâna, II, chap. 21, 40-42). Similarly, in the Dionysian rite, "the initiate has a veiled head and is guided by the officiant. A recycle bin filled with fruits and symbolic objects, one of which is shaped like phallus, is placed on the head of the initiate. (H. Jeanmaire, Dionysus, p.459) (...) "The headband which blinded the disciple is then removed and the yantra is shown to him." (Linga Purana, II, chap.21, 45).”

We find here the same protocol in Freemasonry when the apprentice must be blindfolded to receive the initiation.

some Current testimonies seem to confirm that the cult in Dionysus/Bacchus and globally all these Luciferian cults are still practiced today in occident. Le livre “Ritual Abuse and Mind Control : The Manipulation of Attachment Needs” contient le testimony of a survivor of satanic ritual abuse and mind control. THE woman was born into a family that would practice these rituals of generations in generations, here is an excerpt from his testimony: "The first child murder I consciously remember goes back to the age of four or five years. My mother was engrossed by X (...) We were taken to a large stately home, it was during the summer on the occasion of an important date (...) On Friday night there was a ritual followed by an involving many people dressed in costumes and doing cabrioles in this huge living room. Bacchus was one of the gods they worshipped. the next day we went outside in a large meadow, there was

a hundred people, it was a great ritual. My mother was lying on the floor, she was doing the work for

giving birth while X was singing (...) The child was born, she was a little girl. He then put a knife in my hand

left telling me some things about this child. Then he put his

hand on mine and we pointed the knife towards the baby's chest and

we killed him. He took away the heart, everyone cheered and took it away.

unleashed, then the child was dismembered and consumed[83].

Dans son livre “The Occult Conspiracy : Secret Societies, Their Influence and Power in World History” Michael Howard écrit à propos des

Mysteries of Antiquity: ''The Mysteries Cults practice

initiatory ceremonies that contain the symbolism of the arcana as well as

stagings in order to reveal to the initiate the hidden spiritual realities

behind the illusion of the material world. During the initiation, the neophyte is put

in a trance and then experiences contact with the gods during a journey

in ''the Other World''. Initiates pass a symbolic death and are reborn with a perfect soul.'''

What Howard reports here is interesting because it shows the similarities between the cults of the ancient Mysteries, shamanism, the cults of possession and witchcraft... But what he describes also shows a similarity with contemporary Masonic-type secret societies, i.e. symbolic death for rebirth to a new life. one symbolic that we also find in Christians with the rebirth in Jesus Christ through the sacrament of baptism: "Thus, he who is united with Christ is a new creature: that which is old has disappeared, behold: what is new is already there'' (2 Corinthians 5 :17). Jesus Christ came to earth to reform all these religions pagans who practiced the sacrifice of blood in honor of fallen angels. The baptism of blood was replaced by the baptism of water and the Holy Spirit and the blood sacrifice was definitively replaced by His own Sacrifice.

Benjamin Walker, the author of "The Woman's Encyclopedia of Myths and Secrets", describes an initiatory ceremony of the cult of Mithras, which was another of these religions in Mysteries: "There are first a few days of food and sexual abstinence, then a ablution ceremony after which the candidate's hands are tied behind his back, then he lies on the ground as if he had died. After some rites solemn, his right hand is grasped by the hierophant and he is resurrected.

Then comes the baptism of blood. The initiate finds himself naked in a pit covered with a grid, above this grid an animal is sacrificed in order to that blood flows on the candidate. No matter what animal it is, it still symbolizes the bull of Mithras. The Christian poet Prudentius did a description of this ritual, of which he has a personal memory: "Through the grid flows into the pit the red liquid that the neophyte receives on his body, on his head, on his cheeks, on his lips and on his nostrils. He makes the liquid flow over his eyes and mouth to soak his tongue with blood and to swallow as much as it can. Symbolically, the initiate was resurrected from the dead and cleansed by the revitalizing blood of the bull. It is now considered "born again in eternity". It will be welcomed in the community of initiates as a brother and he will now be allowed to participate in the sacramental meal of bread and water, which will establish its status of elected official."

the

survivor "Svali", ex-illuminati, herself born within a Luciferian cult, reports in her testimony that

the group to which it belonged to practices similar to the old

Babylonian religions of the Mysteries with a baptism of blood: "They (the children) will participate in rituals during which the adults wear robes, and they will have to,

among other things, to bow down before the guardian deity of their worship. Moloch

Ashtaroth, Baal, Enokkim, are demons that are commonly worshipped. The child may witness a real, or staged, sacrifice serving as an offering for these

Deities. Animal sacrifices are common. The child will be forced to

participate in the sacrifices and will have to go through the baptism of blood. He will have to

take the heart or other organs of the sacrificed animal to eat them (...) They do initiatory rituals with children or with older followers, the initiate is attached and a

animal is bled to death above him[84].

A document[85] containing the hearings and minutes of the Dutroux case in Belgium

reports some testimonies of blood sacrifices during rituals

with sometimes a kind of blood baptism. These are depositions and

complaints, no meaningful investigation has been conducted to determine whether these testimonies were true. All these cases are systematically Suppressed. Why is that? Here are some excerpts:

"X1 killed two rabbits and a dwarf goat on B.'s orders. The partouze took place in the garage. Participants with costumes individuals: leather, capes, masks. C. must eat the heart of the sacrificed rabbit. Children attached to the rings in the garage. The blood of the goat is paid on C." (PV 118.452, 10/12/96, Hearing of witness X1 (Regina Louf), page 542)

"There were black masses at this address (...) Paragraph 29 (W.'s personal diary) mentions a family that makes sacrifices humans including their own daughter (...) She was taken to a house where there is has a large swimming pool outside. There are many men and women. one makes her drink in the car. There is a large fire in the garden. There are three other girls (...) At a party in this house, blood was shed hot on her (PV 117.753, 754 and 118.904, Hearing of W., page 749)

"He attended a black mass in the upscale suburb of Gent in April 1987. Satanist Mass. There was sacrifice of animals ripped apart and killed then. The blood of the animals was drunk by the participants (...) T4 could not attend the entire ceremony. Description of the villa. Vehicles luxurious (...)

J. and E. pointed out that there were parliamentarians and others

Personalities. Incantations in an unknown language. Naked priests and priestesses

under their cloak. Everyone with cape and mask. The suffering of animals

sacrificed is the way to obtain power and power." (PV 118.220, 04/12/96,

T4 information, page 125)

"He knows satanic churches in Hasselt, Brussels, Gent, Knokke, Liège, Charleroi and Mozet (...) Sacrifices range from sacrifice

from animals to the sacrifice of humans. The sacrifices are followed by (...)

Sometimes the woman is sacrificed and her blood is used for rites. (PV 100.693,

06/01/97, Hearing of L.P., page 126)

"W. is said to have participated in "black masses" with other minors. She talks about underage girls branded with a red iron and sacrifices

Human. It also talks about prepared human meat that the minors had to

eat. During these evenings, the minors were raped by the

participants.' (PV 116.780 21/11/96, Hearing of W., page 746)
"He participated in 1985 in several satanic sessions near Charleroi.

On one occasion, the blood of a 12-year-old girl was offered to

assistance. He did not witness the murder (...) On the spot, he was drugged

before being brought to a room with people masked and dressed in black dresses.

Participants drank blood. Presence of a lying on a

altar, she was dead." (PV 250 and 466, 08/01/97 and 16/01/97, Hearing of

T.J., page 260)

"She first went to the castle at the age of 14 with the beige Jaguar of V. (...) during the full moons (...) She writes: In a circle

around the fire - there are candles - everyone is standing except the baby and

the sheep - the baby cries (...) She describes the murder of the baby and the mixture of

his blood with that of the sheep. Then we burn the baby and the sheep and all the

world 'makes love together'. We tear the baby's heart out." (PV 150.035,

30/01/97, Hearing of N. W., page 756)

in

In 2000, France 3 broadcast a report entitled "Rape of children, the end of silence?".

The documentary contains the testimony of a little girl who was a victim satanic ritual abuse. It describes a cult scene taking place in Paris or in his region: "Then we would go down into a maze where it was cold, it was dark, and it seemed like a basement. Here there was a locker room where we went to dress with the white and red clothes. Then we went here (editor's note: showing his drawing), there was a room where they raped children, it was a large room, like a large cave in the form of a cathedral or crib and it there were a lot of people here. There was also a very very great statue of an African or black god, and when he growl, people put money in large baskets that circulated. around this statue, there were ashes, with children's heads on pikes in these ashes."

Doesn't the Old Testament repeatedly describe child sacrifices? Rituals of sacrificing children to fire in honor of the demon Moloch (see the end of this chapter). These practices of sacrificial cults do not seem to have ended with the modern world... under different forms, the Mysteries are like dark funeral, celebrating a mystical death and resurrection under the form of a heroic or divine character. In his book entitled "Antichrist

Osiris", Chris Relitz explains that this ritual initiation of the Mysteries could take different forms consisting of to replay the life of a deity, its death, and resurrection. Knowledge secret was encoded in these initiation ceremonies and could thus go through the centuries. First of all the candidate for initiation must die symbolically by replaying the story of a god. Then comes the search and the discovery of his body, then finally the "resurrection" where the initiate receives a secret that he must keep. A secret that seems to the first initially insignificant, on the other hand, the priest is perfectly aware that this information is of extreme importance. What has just been entrusted to the initiate is in fact "the secret of all secrets", it is information encoded and veiled in symbolism that the initiate will not be able to usually not directly understand. All they can do is continue to transmit blindly and eternally this occult symbolism to other candidates for initiation[86].

In 1928, the founder of the Revue Internationale des Sociétés Secrètes (R.I.S.S.), Bishop Jouin, declared in the first issue of the ''occultist supplement'' of the R.I.S.S.: ''Yes, the great secret of occultism is there: that is to say, not in sensational discovery a confession or an accusation still unpublished, but in the obvious and serene conclusion of a kind of comparative grammar of the symbolism of all the Sects. For the followers, condemned to hide their "truth" under veils impenetrable, have probably forbidden themselves at all times categorical formulas, tans what they teach would disgust unvarnished to

the mind and the hearts of men (...) But it is easy to see at least that a fixed interpretation of these symbols has always been in place within humanity, that a traditional cabal, long oral, then written, developed from all time side by side with the canon of scripture and finally finds itself in a a number of works, at first sight incomprehensible or contradictory, but whose key to symbolism makes it possible to reconstitute the true meaning.'

Christian Lagrave, the author of the book entitled ''The Dangers of Contemporary Gnosis'', said at a conference: ''How these Have Gnostic errors been transmitted and persisted since antiquity? Several modes of transmission are possible and can also combine with each other. First of all, there is the clandestine persistence of these doctrines in religious sects or in secret societies, with an "esoteric" transmission (reserved for a small number of initiates) carried out in an occult way, i.e. one never reveals entirely and explicitly these perverse doctrines but they are hidden under symbols and myths by gradually leading the initiate to discover them by himself. This tactic of gradual initiation was already in use in the j_/W U1

ancient and medieval Manichean sects. It is still practiced in the modern occultist sects, especially in Freemasonry. The purpose of this tactic is to gradually bring the new initiates to doctrines which would make them flee if they were revealed to them entirely from the outset.''

All these sects, called schools of the Mysteries or religions of the Mysteries, were therefore intended to transmit a certain knowledge esoteric and occult. Only aristocrats could join such groups to receive the initiation to the "famous" Mysteries. These initiates were trained with a methodical combination teachings and indoctrinations. Sleep deprivation, torture ritualized, drugs and sometimes demonology were used to program the minds of the "students". These aristocrats initiated into the Mysteries and linked by rituals to certain demonic entities (which can bring them a

ed.

population. This is how a kind of caste was born, little by little, aristocratic who developed a sense of spiritual superiority translating as "enlightenment". That is to say, access to knowledge hidden from the majority of lay humans. A number of authors have clearly identified the strong resemblance between these ancient mysteries cults and organizations modern fraternals, secret societies that appeared later in Europe. Jean-Marie R. Lance, member of the A. M.O.R.C

(Rose-Croix), said in a Canadian television documentary: "The history of the Order, in its traditional aspect, goes back to ancient Egypt and can even be traced back to 1500 years before Christ with for example Akhenaten who was associated with these schools of the Mysteries, with these ''Houses of Life'' which were places that allowed men and women to study together the mysteries of life[87].''

Some authors claim that Freemasonry was built on the one hand on the tradition of cathedral builders and on the other hand starts on the model of these ancient schools of the Mysteries with the practice of

starts on the model of these ancient schools of the Mysteries with the practice of

unhealthy and traumatic initiation rituals. During these rituals the terror suffered by the candidate is the central point of the initiatory process, its vulnerability during this experience marks the power of the group over the individual: "We could have kill you, but we didn't." After crossing this process, the initiate will be helped and protected by the group/sect provided that it complies with the strict requirements of secrecy. This principle of initiation by the trauma is the common point of all fraternal structures Luciferians or Satanists, for whom initiation during the little one j_/W U1

childhood is the best way to get a loyal, faithful adult, who will respect

perfectly the law of silence while perpetuating the dark tradition. Rituals involving perverse and immoral acts, including the despicable

Paedocriminality, also make it possible to establish a blackmail in silence on the

people who took part. This makes it possible to create "fraternal" links, all the stronger when a human sacrifice, a ritual crime, was committed in a group and cameras were filming the

scene to immortalize it. The followers who plunge into this violence

addictive feel connected to each other by a secret that it is strictly

impossible to reveal to the outside, it is an unhealthy cement that welds the

members among themselves and that gives them a sense of superiority over the mass

human being.

A relatively well-known example of a secret society that practiced satanic rituals is that of the Brothers of St Francis of

Wycombe, better known as "The Hell Fire"

Club'' (Club of the Flames of Hell). This group was founded in May

1746 by Francis Dashwood at the George and Vulture public

House of London. Francis Dashwood, a close friend of King George III

who later became The Minister of Finance of Great Britain. This "club" was located in the underground of a church-type building, with a series of tunnels, halls and caverns that served

to the members (the ''brothers'') for their occult activities which consisted in

fornicating with prostitutes, to make devotions to Bacchus and Venus and to

offer sacrifices to Satan. Without being a direct member, Benjamin Franklin

occasionally attended hell fire club meetings.

Franklin was himself a Freemason, Grand Master of the St John's Lodge in Philadelphia

and Grand Master of the lodge of the nine sisters in Paris. It was also

Grand Master Rosicrucian.

In February 1998, a worker working on a construction site discovered the bones of six children and four adults. These were the

restoration site of a London house located at 36 Craven Street,

which was none other than that of Benjamin Franklin, the Father of the Constitution

American. The caaavres were aates ae lepoque where Franklin occupied the

places, i.e. from 1757 to 1762 and from 1764 to 1775. This discovery

of bones has even been announced in the British press, notably not the Sunday Times. Evangeline Hunter-Jones, MP and President of the ''Friends of Benjamin Franklin's House'', reported that ''the burned bones were buried

deeply, probably to hide them and there is every reason to think that it

there are still some.'' To exonerate Benjamin Franklin, he was quick

put forward that during his absences, his friend Dr. Hewson could have used

the house to perform dissections of human corpses for its students[88].

Albert Mackey is a famous Freemason (the one who co-opted Albert Pike) who studied the philosophical roots of Freemasonry

going back to biblical times. Mackey deduced that the "pure" form that was practiced by the Israelites (Noachites) implied a belief in a single God and in the immortality of the soul. he

states that its "parasitized" form was this set

initiation rites practiced by pagans, and in particular practices Dionysians of the Tyrians. Pagan practices which, according to him, involved "severe and difficult trials... a long and painful initiation. with a series of initiatory grades''. According to Mackey, these

two forms of masonry merged during the construction of the Temple of Solomon to produce a prototype of the modern (Masonic) institution.

Mackey thus identifies a corrupted form of Freemasonry combined with a pure form dating back to the origins. He states that this confers on this secret institution a side both bright and at the same time obscure. It defines this dark side, this form of "parasitized" masonry, as a kind of black masonry with terrifying and traumatic initiatory practices, which uses the symbolic representation of the mythical descent into Hades, the falls or hell, to then return to the light of day: the initiatory rebirth[89].

Mackey reveals to us that there are therefore two sides in Masonry, one of which is unaware of the existence of the other, which can be translated as "the good do not know the bad guys, but the bad guys know the good guys".

The author Freemason Manly P. Hall, honored by the Journal of the Scottish Rite as "the greatest philosopher of Freemasonry", clearly described the two distinct aspects of Masonic organization: "Freemasonry is a fraternity hidden in another fraternity: a visible organization hiding an invisible fraternity of Elected... It is necessary to establish the existence of these two separate orders and yet interdependent, one visible, and the other invisible. Organization visible is a splendid camaraderie composed of "free and equal men," who are dedicated to ethical, educational and fraternal projects, patriotic and humanitarian. The invisible organization is a fraternity secret, of the most august, majestic of dignity and grandeur, of which the members are dedicated to the service of a mysterious ''arcanum arcandrum'', that is to say, a hidden mystery[90].

To complete this description of Hall, here is what Albert Pike says in "Morals and Dogma": "Like all Religions, all the Mysteries, Hermeticism and Alchemy, Freemasonry reveals its secrets to no one, except the Adepts, the Sages and the Elect. It uses false explanations to interpret its symbols, to mislead those who deserve to be misled, to hide from them the Truth, that it calls the light, and thus removes them from it (...) Freemasonry hides jealously his secrets, and intentionally misleads his interpreters pretentious[91].''

in his book "The Externalization of the Hierarchy", the famous occultist of the New Age Alice Bailey, writes about this totally occult fringe of Freemasonry: "The Masonic Movement is the guardian of the law. It is the House of Mysteries, and the seat of initiation. It holds in its symbolism the ritual of the Godhead, and preserves in his pictorial work the way of salvation. The Methods of the Godhead are demonstrated in his Temples. The world can move forward under the gaze of this Eye from which nothing escapes. Freemasonry is a much more organization occult as one can imagine. It is intended to be the training school of the most advanced future occultists (...) These Mysteries, when restored, will unify all beliefs[92].

Alice Bailey tells us here about Lucifer (this Eye from which nothing escapes) and the construction of a new world order (the Mysteries that will unify all beliefs).

the

there are a number of Masonic sources concerning the connection between religions with Mysteries and contemporary Freemasonry. Some brothers have openly acknowledged this in several publications. The Masonic Book entitled "The Master Mason" clearly describes the link between the cults to mysteries of antiquity and modern masonry: "The idea behind the legend of Hiram is as old as religious thought in men. the same elements existed in the history of Osiris, celebrated by the Egyptians in their temples, just as the ancient Persians referred to it with their god Mithras. In Syria, the Dionysian Mysteries contain elements very similar to the story of Dionysius and Bacchus, a god who died and rose. There is also the story of Tammuz, as old as all the Other. All this refers to the ancient Mysteries. They are celebrated by the secret societies, just like ours, with allegorical ceremonies during which insiders are progressing in these old societies by moving from a degree to the other. Read these old stories and marvel at the number of men who have all received the same great truth, in the same way[93].

The book 'The Master Mason'' therefore invites Freemasons readers to read the stories on the ancient religions at Mysteries to see how they teach the same ''great truth'' than Freemasonry. In the book ''A Bridge to Light'' (a bridge to light), the 32nd degree Freemason Rex R. Hutchens also speaks of the "great truths" related to the Mysteries. Here is how it describes the 23rd degree in the rite Scottish: ''Here we begin the initiation symbolic in the Mysteries practiced by the ancients and by which the Masonry has received the great truths[94].

In his book entitled ''Symbolism of Freemasonry or Mystic Masonry'', the 32nd degree mason J.D. Buck writes that ''Freemasonry is modeled on the model of the Ancient Mysteries, with their symbols and their allegories, this is much more than a coincidence due to the strong similarities[95].''

Henry C.Clausen, a 33rd degree Freemason, wrote in his book

"Your Amazing Mystic Powers": "Freemasonry is at the dawn of a new day. Due to the inadequacy of modern theology, the impossibility of materialism and sterility of academic philosophy, men themselves turn to the eternal truths perpetuated in the arcana of the ancients Mysteries[96]."

The Freemason S.R. Parchment said in his book "Ancient Operative Masonry": "The hierophants of universal science and the sublime philosophy teaches the Great Mysteries of Egypt, India, of Persia and other nations of antiquity. They reveal the secrets concerning the subtle forces of nature to the candidates who are worthy of them and Qualified. These faithful are also taught in the doctrine of the Universal fraternity, then finally initiated into the consciousness of the "I am what I am". These ideals are landmarks, symbols and traditions of the Old Operative Freemasonry, nothing more! [97]."

In 1896, in "History of Freemasonry", Albert Mackey wrote about religions in Mysteries: "It is known that in the Mysteries just as in Freemasonry, there are solemn obligations of secrets with penalties in case of violation of the oath (...) I traced the analogies between the ancient Mysteries and modern Freemasonry: 1/ The Preparation, which is called the 'Lustration' in the Mysteries, is the first stage of the Mysteries and it is also the work to be done in the degree apprentice Mason (who will have to "polish" or rough his stone). 2/ Initiation (...) 3/ Perfection (...) Freemasonry is uninterrupted continuity of the ancient Mysteries, the succession of what was transmitted through the initiations of Mithras."

Indeed, the analogies between the Mysteries cult of Mithras and contemporary Freemasonry are numerous and indisputable. In its book "Son of the widow", Jean-Claude Lozac'hmeur cites several of these similarities. First of all the room of the mysteries of Mithras was underground and it had a crypt whose ceiling could be decorated with stars symbolizing the universe, just like the ceiling of temples Masonic. The two cults have the same layout of the places: each side of the room, lengthwise, was arranged benches between which stood four small pillars for the temple Mithraic and three pillars in the Masonic temple. To the two columns Jakin and Boaz of the modern lodges correspond the two columns framing the bas-reliefs of Mithras. Last but not least, the two cults include a initiation which is preceded by tests and they also include several degrees of initiation. The initiatory ritual of the first Masonic degree is almost identical to the representations of initiation to Mithraism. In the two cases, the candidate has his eyes veiled with a blindfold that holds behind him a character and in both cases the master of the ceremony presents him with a sword. In the initiation of Mithras, the candidate is naked and he sits on hands tied behind the back, while in Masonic initiation, the candidate has a bare arm and leg and he stands with his hands free. he is more than likely that we are dealing here with the same cult having crossed the centuries. As we have seen above, the Mystery cult of Mithras practiced real blood sacrifices to baptize the initiate in a form of resurrection and purification by the blood of Taurus.

Albert Pike himself admitted that Freemasonry was a remnant of religion antediluvian, i.e. the religion of the Mysteries, the religion Babylonian: "The legend of the granite, brass or bronze columns that survived the flood, is supposed to symbolize the Mysteries, including Masonry is the legitimate succession! [98]]."

Albert Mackey states in "The History of Freemasonry" that "the traditional history of Freemasonry begins before the flood. he there was a system of religious instruction which, by its resemblance to the Freemasonry at the legendary and symbolic level, was named by some authors the "Antediluvian Masonry!"]."

In his book "La Symbolique Maçonnique", Jules Boucher, also a Freemason, asserts that "current Masonry is not a survivor of the mysteries of antiquity, but a continuation of the so-called Mysteries! [10°]!."

In the face of all these quotations, it is therefore legitimate to ask this question: does modern masonry transmit initiations and knowledge similar to that which was taught before the flood, then from the time of Nimrod and Babylon? This Masonic knowledge has it retained a purely Luciferian doctrine, i.e. based on paganism and Satanism, including among other practices depraved sexual and blood sacrifices (sexual magic and demonology)? Do they still sacrifice the Taurus of Mithras? Do they still practice blood baptism? Is it this "parasitized" masonry, black masonry to the traumatic initiation rituals of which Albert Mackey speaks? the trauma resulting in altered states of consciousness, the sacrifices of

Are blood and paedocriminal sexual magic initiatory keys that some modern secret societies would use to establish connections with certain entities and thus acquire power and power?

This claim of a descent from the most shameful mysteries of antiquity by many Freemasons writers proves that the Freemasonry tends by its doctrines and practices to the restoration of ancient paganism in its greatest perversion. Secret societies modern Masonic type would they be the direct descent of the ancients Mysteries religions and fertility cults? Cults that worshipped gods like Baal, Moloch or Dionysus (Bacchus) and whose rites included sacrifices. Group sexuality was also an element essential of these pagan sects, the solar phallic cult being today represented by the obelisks that stand in honor of the "royal secret Masonic" on our great public squares...

The author from "Who Was Hiram Abiff", J.S.M. Ward reports that human sacrifice rituals were practiced in the mysteries of As pie, Tammuz and Adonis, he writes: "We have an abundance of evidence that at a certain time human victims were regularly sacrificed for Astarte (...) The most usual method seemed to be by fire, the victim was killed before being placed on a funeral pyre. It is this form particular sacrifice that was associated with Melcarth or Moloch. Melcarth was Baal, the god of fertility (see

at the end of this chapter "Rituals of sacrifices in the Old Testament")

(...) These archaic beginnings evolved with the great rites at Mysteries and Freemasonry itself, in which men receive the

doctrine of the resurrection of the soul and life beyond the grave. All these

Primitive rituals are associated with the cult of fertility! [101]."

In his book "The Golden Bough", Sir James Frazer writes that fertility cults represent a religion

universal primitive in which were regularly practiced

human sacrifices. In 1921, Margaret Murray popularized the knowledge of

such secret religions following the publication of his book "The Witch Cooked in Western Europe". Murray asserts that the "witch hunters" of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries had discovered and exhibited a real cult of the goddess linked to "1 Ancient Religion": that is to say cults organized hierarchically and meeting in assemblies according to a certain

calendar. These ceremonies are known as Sabbaths.

The orgiastic rituals of the Sabbath, which may include

blood sacrifices, are cults related to fertility! [102].

For the Indian historian Narendra nath Bhattacharyya, there is a kind of archaic matriarchal substrate on which all take root

the religions of India and the Middle East, most of which are said to be related to

a form of sexual magic. Bhattacharyya also suggests that the ancient

Cults to the mother goddess of Isis, Astarte, etc., take root in a "primitive sexual rite based on the magical association between the fertility of nature and human fertility! [103]."

here is

some extracts from the book "The ancient Greek world" illustrating the ritual practices of ancient religions, including cults

related to fertility: "Immediately, in order around the vast altar, they put away for the god the splendid hecatomb (a large number of animals intended to be

sacrificed) (...) arms raised, pray aloud: you whose bow is silver, listen to my words... This is how he prays and

Phoïbos Apollo listens to his prayer. We stop praying, the grains of barley thrown,

the heads of the victims are raised to the sky, the throats are slit, they skin, they detach

the thighs, they are covered with fat in a double layer; we have

above the pieces of raw flesh (...) Sacrifice of consumable goods, collective meal with what remains of it. Everything takes place in the open air around a simple altar (...) The sacrifice of the animal remains the most characteristic rite. It can be of the Uranian type as here, the blood of the animal oriented towards the sky, the offal eaten in joy despite the

seriousness of the circumstances (the Greeks are threatened with the plague). Worship

Chthonian is practiced above a pit where blood flows directly into

land; the flesh is burned to the ground in holocaust (...) We see that both rituals can be used for the same god, depending on the circumstances.

Chthonian rites are addressed to infernal deities, accompany

some atoning sacrifices, often oaths, sacrifices to the sea

and to the rivers, to the dead heroes (...) Simple offerings of popular cults, often magical character, small statuettes

clay, beginnings of harvests, hair (...) Demerter's daughter, Koré-Persephone, the young girl of the grain, goes down in the summer, after the threshing of cereals, to join her infernal husband,

Pluto - or Ploutos, ie the rich, rich silos dug into the ground

or jars half-buried and filled by the new harvest. In October

she returns to her mother to witness the sowing and the recovery of vegetation. This return is marked by the festival of Thesmophories (...) it is reserved for married women, who alone are carriers of fertility. It is then that

one removes from the pits, where they had been thrown as a sacrifice to Eubouleus, the

putrefyed pigs whose remains, mixed with cereal seed, in

will ensure fertility (...)

This is just one example among the countless ceremonies designed to ensure the fertility of the soil (...) A number of shrines also derive their reputation from their oracular function. It is accepted that the signs are multiple by

which the gods address to humans (...) the flight of birds, the bowels of sacrificed victims (...) The most famous is undoubtedly the Oracle of Delphi that Apollo inherited from the earth that

had preceded him in these places. Consultation of the Pythia is the process

favorite. After completing the preliminary formalities (purifications,

consecration of the "pelanos", sacrifice of one victim to Apollo, another to

Athena) and having made sure that the god consented to listen, the consultant is

introduced into the bottom of the temple, the "adyton", where the Pythia is located, installed on the tripod that covers the oracular pit! [104]]."

In the book entitled "Dictionnary of Satanism", Wade Baskin writes about fertility cults: "In mythology classic, Dionysus is the god of wine and fertility. His cult was widespread in Thrace, women were particularly linked to these rites orgiastic. The Menades, in their ecstatic frenzy, abandoned their houses, roamed the fields and hillsides, danced while spinning their flaming torches. In their passion, they caught and shredded animals, sometimes even children, and devoured their flesh, thus acquiring communion with the deity (...) Selected religions pagans gave initiations through secret rituals, undisclosed in the public. The secret knowledge which the initiate received provided him with benefits in his present life and in his life after death... The Mysteries Dionysian were present in several places. Orgiastic ceremonies, the animal sacrificed and drinking his blood. The ultimate goal of such a cult was to achieve immortality."

Walter Leslie Wilmshurst stated in her book "The Meaning of Masonry" that Freemasonry descends many from the ancient Mysteries where to

nprpccitaipnt rin Unirp In uin oaprp rin mancmr la nUair prnp rln

[illegible]
achieve immortality, i.e. "become a god",

is the central point. This quest for immortality is a constant in all

the Luciferian cults, all the pagan doctrines: "This notion which concerns the evolution of man into a "super-man", has always

was the goal of the Ancient Mysteries. The true purpose of modern masonry does not

concerns not the social or charitable works put forward, but rather

the acceleration of the spiritual evolution of those who aspire to perfect

their human nature to transform into a kind of god. That thing

is a very specific science, a royal art, that each of us can put

in practice. Join this Art for any purpose other than that of studying and to practice this science is to misunderstand its true meaning... which is the conscious realization of our divine potentialities! [105]."

In his book "The Lost Keys of Freemasonry", the Lutheran Manly Palmer Hall states: "When a Mason learns that the meaning of the warrior on the board actually represents a dynamo releasing a a living power, he then discovered the mystery of his noble profession. the Lucifer's bubbling energies are in his hands. Before he can begin to move forward and rise, he must prove that he is able to use correctly these energies (...) Man is a god in making, and just like in the mystical myths of Egypt with the potter's wheel, it must be shaped! [105]."

Wilmshurst writes in "The Masonic Initiation": "Few Masons know what true initiation entails... True initiation consists of an expansion of consciousness passing from the human state to the state divine... Man has this thing in him, allowing him to evolve from the animal stage mortal at the stage of immortality, of super-human, of divine being... This process

can human evolution be accelerated? To transform the human

animal into an illuminated divine being? To these questions, the Ancient Mysteries

answer that "Yes, the evolution of the human can be accelerated in initiated individuals! [107]]."

What are these occult practices accelerating the spiritual evolution of the human being, leading him to become a divine being and even a

God? These Mysteries remain reserved for the initiates of the high lodges and

rear lodges, or rather of the arcanum arcandrum, the

Invisible Brotherhood described above by Manly P. Hall. However, some

seem to have broken the oath of silence, this is the case of Bill Schnoebelen

which describes this Masonic "Royal Art" or "Royal Secret" as the key to immortality. It would be an opening to other alternative universes or the individual

evolves as a god... Wilmshurst speaks of a real acceleration of

the evolution but without revealing any details on the practices that allow access to it. According to Schnoebelen, this royal art would employ sexual magic

operative, trans-Yuggothian magic, for

allow access to certain dimensions. Some authors claim that

the use of sexual magic may be a way to access the subconscious much faster than with any meditation technique. the dissociative trance states also make it possible to reach other dimensions of the being, causing a kind of enlightenment. Satanic ritual abuses that are related to both trauma and sexuality, therefore combine dissociation (profound altered state of consciousness) and sexual magic. Two powerful catalysts to access others dimensions and acquire "power". Therapist Patricia Baird Clarke speaks of "living sacrifices" literally serving as "batteries": "A helpless baby or a child will be chosen to be the living sacrifice to Satan. The child is then subjected to many painful and terrifying rituals in which demons are called to possess the child, thus making him or her a "tank" or battery used to store satanic powers that can be used to will by the members of the cult (...) The most way common way by which these powers are accessed is sexual perversion on the childi[108]]." We will return to sexual magic later in this chapter...

in

"The Masonic Initiation", Wilmshurst describes well how altered states of consciousness, the deep Dissociative states, are an essential point in Masonic initiation:

"Some dissociative states happen naturally even in the most balanced and perfectly healthy people (...) a complete "ecstasy", a state where consciousness then separates from the Ego and the physical body. Remote appearances and even actions are well-recognized facts. Such phenomena can be explained by the existence of a vehicle more subtle than the coarse physical body and consciousness can temporarily transier ae i a a i another. These two bodies are able to function jointly in complete independence (...) A Master is someone who has overcome these incapacitys to which men are subjected underdeveloped means. He has the full knowledge and control of all its parts, whether his physical body is awake or dormant, it maintains a continuous state of consciousness. It is able to cut itself and to disconnect time affairs and replace them with other matters of order supra-physical. It can operate at a distance from its physical body, it can go beyond banalities to access higher shots of the scale cosmic... Initiation always occurs when the physical body is in state of trance or sleep and when consciousness, temporarily released, is transferred to a higher level! [109]]."

In this excerpt, Wilmshurst clearly describes a dissociative state with decorporation, an "astral exit". He also describes in his delivers the "cord of areent" connecting the corns nhvsiaue to the astral corns during

these outputs (we will come back to this in chapter 6). To trigger these

profound altered states of consciousness and astral outflows, traumas

are among the most radical and sadly effective techniques.

How far can an initiate go to receive the light...

or to give it to someone else? To initiate a child by

example? Learning to suffer and learning to make people suffer does he

part of the dark initiations? The dissociation caused by the

can suffering be a tool to access "enlightenment", so sought after in

certain circles?

one

Masonic review of 1929 entitled "Freemasonry Universal (Vol.5)",

describes a part

the initiation rite of the grade of Apprentice in which reference is

made

electroshocks. This seems rather benign here, but you should know that

electroshock is one of the most effective methods to create mental dissociation and a state of timelessness. Survivors of ritual abuse

and mind control often report the use of electrical prods for

torture slaves and put them in dissociative states. Here is the description of the Masonic ritual: "Certain forces are sent through the body of the candidate to the course of the ceremony, especially at the time when he was appointed and received as

Apprentice Freemason. Some parts of the lodge were heavily loaded

with a magnetic force so that the candidate can absorb as much

as possible this strength. The first thing about this curious method

of initiation consists in exposing to this influence the different parts of

his body which are used during the ceremony. In Ancient Egypt, a

low electrical current was sent into the candidate by means of a rod or

a sword with which he was hit in some places. It's partly

for this reason that during this first initiation, the candidate is deprived

of all metals, because these can easily interfere with the circulation of electric current."

The Most Venerable Master (T.V.M.) must be an outstanding occultist, because it is he who "charges" the candidate during

initiation. As it is written in "Freemasonry

Universal": "The T.V.M. gives light,

pure white light of truth and enlightenment." ...

"Enlightenment", aka Kundalini, the Power of the Serpent, aka force

electromagnetic, aka sexual energy, etc! [110!.]

the

Lynn Brunet's book "Terror, Trauma and The Eye In The Triangle", already cited above, is an investigation into the influence of Masonic initiatory practices in the production of contemporary art. Brunet supports

that the rites and concepts of the Masonic tradition contain

symbolically the process and impact of the trauma on the functioning of the

human psyche. Here is an excerpt: "This ability

human escape from terror and emotional or physical pain

intense through denial and dissociation may have been exploited by

Freemasonry for the purpose of attaining mystical experiences.

Interfering in the brain process by physical or mental trauma

(shock, terror, hypnosis), the mind can undergo a disruption of the notion of

time and experience a sense of timelessness. As William points out

James dans “Exploring the World of the Celts”, de telles expériences peuvent

produce a sense of absolute courage, invincibility and immortality. the

feeling of invincibility that this produces is clearly used in the

warlike cultures. Prudence Jones and Nigel Pennick in their book "A

History of Pagan Europe" claim that Freemasonry is connected with

the ancient practices of Druidism, war culture, sacrifices and magic! [111]]."

Here is now an illustration of these notions of timelessness, invincibility and immortality caused by dissociative states. What some have called the "Sublime" or "enlightenment"... In the Scandinavian tradition, the Berserk is a warrior who fights in a state of trance caused by his animal spirit (a bear, a wolf or a wild boar). This spirit animal makes it overpowering, it enters a state of invincibility and becomes capable of implausible exploits. In English the term "to go berserk" means in colloquial language "go mad furious" or "lose self-control". These warriors of Odin were gathered in brotherhoods where each aspirant had to pass an initiation like to kill ritually the bear then drink his blood so that the power of the beast is infused in him. The warrior then became a Berserker and obtained in addition to his fury, a gift of metamorphosis allowing him to change the perception that others have of him by appearing in a form Animal. During their fits of fury, the Bersekers left erase their human spirit to let the animal spirit take control. All young warriors had to go through an important ritual with the sorcerer of their brotherhood: the Ritual of Awakening. This ritual was at the very origin of their sacred anger... either they survived or they died. The Ynglinga Saga describes these warriors as follows: "His men (odin's) were moving forward without armor, enraged like dogs or wolves, biting their shield, strong like bears or bulls, and killing people in one fell swoop, but they, neither iron nor fire sorry. They were called berserkers." (Wikipedia)

Here we have a good example illustrating what is a deep altered state of consciousness, a state of dissociative trance in which the warrior achieved that absolute courage provoking a feeling physical invincibility and immortality. The fact of let the human mind fade away to let the animal spirit take the control may mean that it is a split of the personality of the warrior, a deep dissociative disorder that leads to the creation of an alter animal, here a bear or a wolf. This is what is now called a Disorder Dissociative of identity that one of the alter personalities believes truly that it is an animal (see chapter 5). The brotherhood aspect involving initiation rituals with a sorcerer-priest reinforces the possibility of a certain programming based on trauma if one believes the Ritual of Awakening of which the candidate could not coming out alive!... if he came out alive, it was with a sacred anger, that is to say, a personality divided by trauma. The warrior ended up with an alter personality "enraged" by the traumas experienced during the ritual. The dissociative process

is a key to initiation found in various types of cultures. he

is likely that the dissociation and splitting of the personality is

still today a key point in the initiatory protocols of companies

modern secretes.

in

his work entitled "Metamorphoses", the writer Apulée seems to describe his own initiation to the Mysteries of Isis and

of Osiris to whom he would have been initiated during his stay in Greece: "The high priest then removes the laymen, makes me put on an ecru linen dress, and,

taking me by the hand, takes me into the deepest part of the sanctuary. No doubt, my reader friend, your curiosity will enquire about what is said, ae what was done next. I would say so, if I may say so; you

would learn it if it were allowed to be learned. But it would be crime to the same

degree for confidant ears and for revealing mouth. If however

it is a religious feeling that animates you, I would make scrupulous of you

torment. Listen and believe, because what I say is true. I touched the doors

death; my foot landed on the threshold of Proserpine. On the way back I have

traversed the elements. In the depths of the night, I saw the radiating

sun. Gods of hell, gods of Empyreus, all were seen by me in front of

face, and adored closely. That is what I have to say to you, and you will not be

more enlightened! [112]]."

We therefore find here three essential components of secret societies of the Masonic type: death and resurrection,

the trial by the elements and finally the enlightenment. It is possible that it

this is a traumatic ritual leading the candidate for initiation into an experience on the borders of death (I have touched the

gates of death) with a deep state of dissociation illuminating his consciousness (I saw the sun radiating) just like the Amerindians

enter into a dissociative trance during the "Dance of the Sun". one

"dance" which is nothing more and nothing less than a traumatic ritual aimed at doing

access the initiate to altered states of consciousness (we

will return below to this "Dance of the Sun" Amerindian).

Ancient Egypt seems to be the meeting point between the dark side of modern secret societies and Satanism, the roots of worship

phallic. David L. Carrico's work entitled "The Egyptian- Masonic- Satanic

Connection" gives us some insights into this issue.

the

American Satanist Michael Aquino, who has been repeatedly accused ritual abuse and mind control of children (without any condemnation), founded in 1975 the Temple of Set, a famous satanic occult order of the United States. Set is the Egyptian name of Satan, Albert Churchward writes about it: "This Sut or Set was originally a god of the Egyptians, but he was also the god of the South Pole, or southern hemisphere, this is amply proven and confirmed by the monuments as well as by ritual. Set or Sut, according to Plutarch, is the name Egyptian typhoon, the Satan of christian worship! [113]]."

In his book "Antichrist Osiris", Chris Relitz writes that according to Plutarch, Greek historian of ancient Rome, it was the widow of Osiris who founded the religion of the Mysteries. While the Mysteries religions spread throughout the world from ancient Babylon, they manifested themselves in various places by changing only the name of the gods and making some variations in the rituals.

It is in Egypt that the Mysteries seem to have developed at the highest level level. The 33rd degree Freemason Manly Palmer Hall wrote in his book "Freemasonry of the Ancient Egyptians": "It is today generally recognized that of all the ancient peoples, it was the Egyptians who were the best trained with regard to the occult sciences of Nature. The wisest philosophers of others

19TT\ 1()<*■ J TV /r

nations visit i Egypt ann a erre inities to the Mysteries sacres by the

priests of Thebes, Memphis and Hermopolisi[114]."

the

is undeniable that the cult of the Egyptian Mysteries has a deep connection

with modern Freemasonry. In his book "Freemasonry its Hidden Meaning", George H.

Steinmetz writes: "Regardless of the origin of the modern lodge, or the name 'Freemason', we can, after removing the symbolism of the adaptations

modern, discern in Freemasonry the outline of the teachings of

ancient Mysteries of Egypt! [115]."

Manly P. Hall a écrit dans “The Lost Keys of Freemasonry” : “Les premiers historiens francs-maçons comme Albert Mackey, Robert Freke Gould

and Albert Pike had a common purpose which was to establish a correspondence

definitive between hiram's legend of Freemasonry and the myth of Osiris

exhibited in the initiatory rituals of the Egyptians! [115]."

in

his book entitled "The Egyptian Origins of Masonic Uses and Symbols", the Freemason historian Jean Mallinger undoubtedly states that the candidate for the rank of master symbolically represents

Horus: "Our Brother Goblet d'Alviella demonstrated to us in his study on the Origins of the Master Grade that the Initiate was in reality symbolized by the

young Horus, son of the Widow, his divine mother Isis, whose husband Osiris had

was murdered by Seth (or Typhoon! [117]))."

This is confirmed in the very official "Interpretative Catechism of the rank of Master": To the question "What is the widow whose masons

say the sons?" the applicant for the rank must answer: "It's

Isis, personification of Nature, the Universal Mother, Widow of Osiris, the

invisible god who enlightens the intelligences."

the

this is therefore a cult to the "Mother Goddess", in opposition to God the Father

(which as we have seen above is considered by this doctrine

Luciferian as the "evil god"). The Mother Goddess is linked to the

fertility, a belief that is systematically found in religions at

1¥1J VJLV1 VVJ \^UX J71 UUVjUU1V/1lL. iU. OV'/VUUl1 LV XXL. UVyiXVy VyXX ^X L/UJ7V

accompanied by blood sacrifices as part of a fertility cult. According to Sir James George Frazer, egyptian rites included human sacrifices. in his book "The Golden Bough", Frazer writes: "As far as the ancient Egyptians are concerned, we can say from Manetho (Egyptian historian and priest) that they used to sacrifice and burn red men to then scatter their ashes (...) these barbarian sacrifices were offered by the kings on the tomb of Osiris. We can assume that the victims represented Osiris himself, who was killed, dismembered and cremated every year through these victims to accelerate the growth of seeds in the land (...) The reddish color of the poor victims is significant. In Egypt, the oxen that were sacrificed had to also being red, a single black or white hair on the beast disqualified her for sacrifice! [118]]."

The mysterian cults of ancient Egypt of which modern Freemasonry seems to be so proud contain traumatic rituals with orgies and blood sacrifices in honor of the "Goddess"? Are all these doctrines related to the cult of fertility still relevant in our "modern" societies? All these gods and goddesses do they still receive offerings today by certain sects?

Isn't the time of the Pharaohs ancient history? The many

obelisks (the phallic cult) that grew on the great squares of our

Modern capitals may tell us that no... Just like some

revolutionaries and thinkers of the "Enlightenment" for whom Isis was the goddess of

Paris (Parisis). So modern Pharaohs and Templars don't seem to have

totally gone...

Now let's turn to the Egyptian Book of the Dead. It is a series of writings (papyrus) that have been

discovered in Egyptian tombs. The ancient Egyptians attributed the Book of the Dead to the god Thoth, who would be the mythical author of the magic formulas of this sacred book. The Book of the Dead

Egyptian which dates from 1500 BC.C. clearly describes the practice of

rituels magiques et traumatiques. Dans son livre “The Soûl in Egyptian Metaphysics and The Book of the Dead”, Manly P. Hall compare

this ancient Egyptian sacred book with transcendental magic: "'The Book of the Dead has received a modern title that unfortunately does not really correspond to its Egyptian literary meaning. The reason for

this name is obvious, but the impression it gives is strangely

Inadequate. The text is indeed dominated by a spirit of transcendental magic! [119!] . "

In "The Lost Keys of Freemasonry", Manly P. Hall also writes that "if the identification of the myth of Osiris with that of Hiram is

accepted, then the 'Book of the Dead' is the sesame of Masonic symbolism,

revealing a beauty hidden under the rituals, an unsuspected splendor in

symbols and a divine purpose activating the entire Masonic process! [120]."

like

you will see, The Egyptian Book of the Dead contains bloodthirsty doctrines and practices (symbolic?) that can be compared with some testimonies of ritual abuse

modern satanic. The sacred book describes in some passages the interaction

between the soul of the dead and the gods (demons). A full symbolism

of "splendor" according to the Luciferian occultist Manly P. Hall... There is talk of "blood-eater", "gut eater", "bone crusher", these are the qualifiers of the gods, who are none other than fallen angels.

The book makes a few references to a "torture chamber", a term that will certainly speak a lot to survivors about trauma-based mind control. Here are some

excerpts from a translation: "So here is what

great god of slaughter, powerful terror, he washes in your blood, he

bathes in your blood." / "I got power over the animals by the knife in their heads" / "He took the hearts of the gods, he ate the red, he swallowed the green, their charms (magic) are in his belly,

he swallowed the knowledge of every god." / "Unas (the king) devours men and lives above the gods, the one who cuts off the scalps" / "Unas weighed his words with the hidden god who has no name, on the day of the setting apart of the newborn" / "who devours the bodies of the dead and swallows their hearts, but he remains invisible! [121]]."

the

priests of the Egyptian Mysteries cults practiced theurgy, a magic

said superior with the aim of communicating directly with the gods. here is

what Porphyry (Neoplatonic philosopher) reports about the Greco-Roman nhilnsnnhe Plotinus, having once agreed to attend a session of

theurgy: "An Egyptian priest who came to Rome and was introduced to Plotinus by some friend, had the desire to demonstrate his powers to him and offered him

to evoke a sensitive manifestation of plotinus' guiding spirit. This one willingly accepted and the evocation was made at the temple of Isis, the only pure place, it is said, that he could find in Rome. On the call, a deity appeared who was not not of the daimônes class and the Egyptian exclaimed: "You are singularly favored, because the director daimôn that is in you is not of the lower degree, but a god! [122]!."

The word "daïmôn" is a Greek word meaning "demon" or "supernatural being" that can sometimes be interpreted as a "personal genius", a

supernatural" that can sometimes be interpreted as a "personal genius", a

"guardian spirit", a "familiar" demon or an intermediary between the gods and mortals. In this book dedicated to the MK, the word "demon" or "demonic" will be used very regularly to qualify entities Luciferians, that is to say the fallen angels working to bring down man by all means with the declared intention of elevating him to the status of god. That's all the inversion that is currently underway in our world and it is the Main concern of our elites: the spiritual fall causing material worship to lead to the cult of man, finally worshipping the prince of this world, Lucifer, the "civilizing" god bringing light, the knowledge and emancipation of a god called "evil": this is the Transhistorical Gnosis described by Professor Jean Claude Lozac'hmeur.

The use of magic and traumatic rituals to contact demons, i.e. the Luciferian rebellion, for the purpose of to obtain guidance to make man a god, is part of the main prerogatives of luciferian sects of Masonic type. THE Freemason Oswald Wirth names these entities of another dimension the constructive intelligences of the world or the Masters transmitting their directives to the high initiates (the Unknown Superiors) connected to the high spheres of the afterlife[123]!... Chapter 6, a whole programme, will deal with this crucial question of connection to other dimensions.

According to Charles Webster Leadbeater, there is said to exist a "Black Masonry" that is dedicated to the study of evil between the 19th degree and the 30th degree of the Scottish Rite, the **30th** degree being known as the Knight Kadosh. In his book entitled "The Ancient Mystic Rites", Leadbeater defines this Black Masonry as follows: "Rare are the Egyptian brothers who seem to have exceeded the degree of the Rose-Cross, these are those who need to know more than the splendid revelation of the love of God they received in what we call the 18th degree. but for those who feel that there is still much to learn from the nature of

God, and who long to understand the meaning of evil and suffering

as well as its relationship with the divine plan, the prototype of a Black Masonry

exists, education is between the 19th and 30th degree. This

Section of the Mysteries was particularly interested in the work on Karma in its various aspects (...) Thus, the first stage of higher education, that of the Rose Cross or Red Masonry, is devoted to the knowledge of the good,

while the second stage, that of Kadosh or Black Masonry, is

devotes to the knowledge of evil! [124!.]"

Certainly all this remains hermetic for a layman but still leaves interrogative ...

In his book "La Conjuration Antichrétienne", Bishop Henri Delassus states that certain sections of the

Kadosh knights worship Eblis (Iblis), which in the East is the name of the

demon, the Sheitan. In his "Encyclopedia of Freemasonry", Albert Mackey explains that the Kadosh doctrine represents the persecution suffered by the Knights Templar. He writes that "the Knights

Modern Kadosh are the ancient Knights Templar and that the Builder of the

Temple of Solomon is now replaced by Jacques de Molay, the Great

Master Templar martyr! [125]."

the

it should be noted that the Order of the Templars to which this Black Masonry refers with the Kadosh doctrine, practiced satanic rituals.

Eliphas Levi wrote in his book "History of Magic": "The Templars had two doctrines, one hidden and reserved for the masters, it was that of Johannism; the other public was the doctrine Roman Catholic. They were thus deceiving the opponents they aspired to supplanter, The Johannism of the followers was the Kabbalah of the Gnostics, soon degenerated into a mystical pantheism pushed to the idolatry of the nature and hatred of any dogma revealed. To be more successful and to make supporters, they cherished the regrets of fallen cults and the hopes of new cults, promising everyone freedom of conscience and a new orthodoxy which would be the synthesis of all persecuted beliefs. They in thus came so far as to recognize the pantheistic symbolism of the great masters in black magic, and, to better detach oneself from obedience to the religion which in advance condemned them, they returned the divine honors to the monstrous idol of the Baphomet, as in the past the dissident tribes had loved the golden calves of Dan and Bethel. Recently discovered monuments, and valuable documents that date back to the eleventh century, prove in a way more than enough everything we have just put forward. Further evidence are hidden in the annals and under the symbols of occult masonry! [125]]."

In his book "The Occult Conspiracy", Michael Howard listed the charges made against the Templars at the time of their arrest in 1307: "The Templars were accused of denying the principles of faith Christian, spitting and urinating on the crucifix during secret rituals initiation, to worship a skull or a head of Baphomet, to make anointings with blood or fat from unbaptized babies, to worship the devil under the form of a black cat and commit acts of sodomy and zoophilia (...) Candidates entering the Order must also embrace their initiator on the mouth, navel, penis and at the base of the spine. those oaisers were regarded by critics ae i urare as evidence of their perverse sexual activities, but in the occult tradition, the navel, sexual organs and perineum are the physical locations of psychic centers of the human body, known in the East as Chakrasi[127]."

Accusations also reported by Helen Nicholson in her book "The Knights Templar: A New History". The British historian Nesta H. Webster writes that "The Confessions of the Knights (Templars) would they be the result of a pure imagination that men under the torture coercion could have invented? It's hard to believe that the testimonies of the initiation ceremony could be a pure invention, it was given in detail by men in different countries, all the testimonies were similar, only the phraseology was Different. If they had been led to invent a story, the testimonies would have contradicted each other (...) Of course not. each seems to have describes the same ceremony more or less in its entirety! [128]."

Author Donald Michael Kraig claims that the Templars designed their sexual rituals from the Sufi teachings of the Arab world, which came themselves from the Indian Tantric tradition, teachings that then found themselves among the alchemists of the Middle Ages and finally among modern occultist magicians. We will return later to the sexual magic.

the

Black Masonry therefore nourished a revenge against the persecutors of the

Knights Templar: the Catholic Church. In "The Ancient Mystic

Rites", Leadbeater
writes that "The Tradition of Vengeance against the Execrable King, the Pope and the Traitor has been transmitted through the ages, and is intimately linked to the

Egyptian tradition corresponding to our Black Masonry which results in this

that we call today the 30th degree! [129]."
the

Black Masonry with the Kadosh Knights, the modern Templars, has therefore

worked ardently for the destruction of the Kingdom of France and its Church. the

Occult struggle of Freemasonry against the King and the Catholic Church is

explained in detail in the excellent work of Bishop Henri Delassus entitled "La Conjuration Antichrétienne". the

Freemason made knight Kadosh is therefore firmly anti-Catholic and the

"revenge" is a central point in this Masonic initiatory grade. "When knight Kadosch has taken his oath, the dagger is put in his hand, and a crucifix is placed at his feet, then the 'very tall' said to him: "Crowd in the foot this image of superstition, break it." If it does not not, in order not to make us guess anything, we applaud and the 'very-great' addresses him a speech about his piety. We receive him without revealing the great secrets. But if he crushes the crucifix, then he is made to approach the altar, where are three representations, three corpses if you can get hold of them. Bladders full of blood are in the place where he is shouted to hit. It executes the order and the blood reflects on him, and taking by the hair the severed heads, he exclaims: "Nekam! revenge is done!" So, the 'very great' speaks to him thus: "By your constancy and fidelity you have deserved to learn the secrets of the real masons. These three men that you just hit are superstition, the king and the pope. These three idols of peoples are only tyrants in the eyes of the wise. It is in the name of the superstition that the king and the pope commit every crime imaginable! [13°]]. "

Eliphas Levi wrote that masonry was not only desecrated, but it even served as a veil and pretext for the plots of anarchy, through the occult influence of the avengers of Jacques de Molay, and the continuators of the schismatic work of the temple (...) The anarchists have resumed

the rule, the square and the mallet, and wrote on it liberty, equality,

fraternity. That is to say, freedom for covetousness, equality in

baseness, and fraternity to destroy! [131]]."

One important thing to clarify is that the international Masonic high lodges, whether "black" or called "pure" or "authentic", all get along and speak the same language when it

is about destroying the Catholic Church. It is therefore an occult force

Anti-Christic.

the

it is interesting to note that Eliphas Levi in his book "The History of Magic"

magic) attributed to the Count of Cagliostro the establishment of Masonry

Egyptian on the Old Continent. He is indeed the founder of the rite of Misraïm or Egyptian, which deals mainly with esoteric research. Cagliostro also played an essential role in the spread of Cabalistic Masonry. Eliphas Levi accused

Cagliostro for having dishonored the Order and states in his book that it

used black magic for the cult of Isis by hypnotizing young girls

to make them priestesses: "Cagliostro was

the agent of the Templars, so he wrote in a circular addressed to all the Freemasons of London, that the time had come to put their hands to work to rebuild the temple of jehovah. Like the Templars,

Cagliostro indulged in the practices of black magic, and practiced science

fatal evocations; he guessed the past and the present, predicted

the future, made wonderful cures and also claimed to make gold. he

had introduced into masonry a new rite which he called the Egyptian rite,

and he was trying to resurrect the mysterious cult of Isis. Himself, the head

surrounded by strips and wearing like a Sphinx of Thebes, he presided over the

Nocturnal solemnities in apartments full of hieroglyphs and

Torches. His priestesses were young girls whom he called

doves, and that he exalted to the point of ecstasy to make them return oracles

by means of hydromancy (...)

This follower is not, however, unimportant in the history of magic; his seal is as important as that of Solomon, and attests to his

initiation to the most noted secrets of science. This seal, explained by the Kabbalistic letters of the names of Acharat and Althotas, expresses the

main characters of the great arcane and the great work (...) The name of Althotas, master of Cagliostro, consists of the name of Thoth and the syllables al and as, which, read kabbalistically, are Sala which means messenger, sent; the full name therefore means Thoth, the messiah of the Egyptians, and such was indeed the one that Cagliostro recognized above all for master! [132]]."

According to Fritz Springmeier, an American writer and lecturer specializing in monarch mind control, one of the secrets of these religions at Mysteries, especially the Egyptian cult of the Mysteries of Isis was the ability to use drugs, torture and hypnosis to create multiple personalities in a human being. According to him, sex slaves under mental control are used nowadays in high degrees Masonic and other black back lodges. A dissociated alter personality can serve as a priestess during certain rituals. These MK slaves undergo trances, demonic possessions and all kinds of perverse rituals based on sexual magic. This initiatory knowledge has not happened dissolved with the fall of ancient Egypt: the occult world has never ceased to split and program slaves by a process of psychic dissociation based on trauma. This knowledge has been transmitted to the modern world through initiatory secret societies guarding preciously Pandora's box...

In her book "Terror, Trauma and The Eye In The Triangle", Lynn Brunet writes that the myth of Osiris and Isis, who takes a very important place in the Scottish Masonic rite, may well be a metaphorical illustration of the process of trauma and personality splitting. Brunet makes the parallel between the myths, rituals, Masonic symbolism and the psychology of trauma, it is to tell the functions of the brain that can be related to initiation practices aimed at creating a mystical experience. The human body can be taken as an external symbolic representation of the cosmos with a mystical reality internal and a physiology that offers a structure for its understanding. Lynn Brunet exhibits something complex that may not be very understandable at this stage of the book, which is why the extract has been put in Appendix N°1 under the title: Trauma and dissociation in Masonic mythology.

4 - Sexual magic and secret societies

The occultist Pierre Manoury, author of a practical treatise on sexual magic, defines this "discipline" as follows:

We can therefore catalogue magical sexuality according to three main criteria.

1) Abstinence, deprivation, maceration and chastity. This in a mystical context, a symbolic approach or communion with hierarchies

spiritual of high nature.

2) By an exacerbation of the potentializing desire of the energies applied to rites and ceremonies of so-called practical magic, the eroticization being in this case only cerebral. This is the most common principle in the

most of the ceremonial magics and basic rituélies of the high

sorcery.

3) Finally in the magics and witchcraft grouped under the generic term of sexual magics or exacerbation and potentiation of desire and

energies are followed by liberation in the ritual context itself,

according to very special modalities... Applications in these specific cases

are extremely effective materially, physically and mentally

(...)

Sexual magic can therefore be considered as a basis of ritual practices applicable at a very high level, by trained people (and

responsible), and constituting one of the major instruments of power, if not the

more powerful (...) Sexual magic is therefore an essentially based practice

on a use of vital energy, which will have to be domesticated, filtered, captured, accumulated, developed, potentiated and then channeled as part of the ritual! [133]1.

Red magic (related to blood) and sexual magic are the two most powerful magics because they use the human life force to give power to the one who practices them. That is why they are usually combined. Sexual magic is inspired by Oriental tantrism, it aims to master the "Kundalini" and the immense sexual energy potential. In Tantrism, kundalini is identified with "Shakti", the snake goddess present in the human body at the base of the sacrum, supposed to rise along the spine, during a rise of Kundalini, to reach the brain by irrigating all energy centers (Chakras) of its power. In the book entitled "The Voudon Gnostic Workbook", Michael Bertiaux writes about Tantrism: "The secret of the Brahmins happens to be the basis of Tantric Physical Magic. This secret is the root essence of organic Hinduism and is found in the deepest levels of the Hindu brain, manifested by strange genetic mutations, due to the direct intervention of the Mother Goddess herself. This secret manifests its Power (Shakti) by a state of particular consciousness, a level of ultra-consciencd[134]]."

Since their first encounters with Indian religions in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries, Westerners have been both fascinated and repellent by the Tantra tradition; a form of religious practice very particular due to the deliberate use of impure substances and transgressive rituals. Tantras are works of an esoteric nature

related to the cult of the goddess, they deal with Yoga, cosmology, alchemy,

magic and sacrifices. Tantrism condenses all these disciplines

millennia for the purposes of erotic-magical and spiritual realization. have

long been for Western writers something at a time of

repugnant and enticing. Today, especially through the growing influence

of the "New Age", tantrism is seen as a simple

method of releasing body and mind, a form of "sexuality spiritual" in which sexual pleasure becomes an experience

nun. It is seen as a way of transgressing morality

the so-called "repressive" western approach to sexuality. Tantrism is

today became a very lucrative fashion for some gurus, however little

Western followers of the New Age philosophy know what certain rituals of authentic Tantra entail.

Krsnananda Aagamavagisa is one of the greatest authors of Tantrism, he lived in the fifth century in Bengal. This author describes in his

works of esoteric ritual practices involving the use of

organic substances such as blood, seed and menstrual fluids.

Krsnananda also describes tantric rituals including sacrifice

animal, today still practiced in Bengal. Blood sacrifices are related to the Vedas and Brahamic ritual practices, however, in the tantrism sacrifices transgress and deliberately violate directives given in the tradition of the Vedas. For example, the Vedas recommend sacrificing the animal with as little violence and suffering as possible, while that in tantric sacrifice, the animal is beheaded in a very bloody way, the ritual focusing on blood and the decapitated head, which are the offerings to the goddess. It would seem that tantric sacrifices involve a calculated inversion of the ancient Vedic texts: the unclean animal replaces the pure animal, bloody beheading replaces strangulation non-violent, the Goddess takes the place of the male God (we find again this notion of Goddess versus God! 135!).

the

Sacred text of kalachakra tantra, the "Wheel of Time", contains a treatise on alchemy and demonology.

Here is what is written in Stanza 125: "The consumption of feces and urine, semen and menstrual blood, mixed with the human flesh, prolongs life. These are the five ingredients that go into the composition of nectar pills (...)
The consumption of the five fleshes, with honey and ghee, puts an end to all ailments." at

note that in this same text it is indicated in stanza 154 that a veneration subtle entities "brings supreme happiness": "Snakes, demons, planets that influence men, evil Nâga who are

revel in human blood, the Kushma goblin, the tutelary deities of the place,

vampires, spirits that cause epilepsy and Garuda can

bring supreme happiness, if they are revered in a mandala. "

Ancient tantric practices were taken up by twentieth-century Western occultists such as Aleister Crowley, a figure

main in the importation of Tantra into the West with all the transgression

and the "power by impurity" (or redemption through sin) that it

Involves. Crowley was introduced to tantrism during his trip to India and the

Sri Lanka in 1902, but he combined this tantric practice with different other techniques of sexual magic.

Tantrism with the phenomenal energy that it deploys perhaps diverted and combined with a powerful black magic, this was already practiced

in Vedic times at the risk and peril of the initiates. Sexual magic is not

not something innocuous simply pertaining to an elaborate "Kamasoutra". The arcana of these occult practices can lead the initiates

more ambitious to commit abominations, both the search for power

and psychic powers can turn them into real monsters

perverse... Lebanon Silburn wrote in his book "Kundalini:

The Energy of the Depths” (Kundalini : l’énergie des depths): "The mysterious energy triggered by Kundalini Yoga manifests itself with violence and cannot be manipulated without run certain risks. Some deviations are called "demonic" because they lead to depression and madness... The awakening of kundalini may have disastrous consequences! [135]]."

in 1922, Krishnamurti had a climb of Kundalini that he qualified "ri w^ii

U. V V VII

spiritual" and that changed his life. Here is an excerpt from Darrel Irving's book "Serpent of Fire, a Modem View of Kundalini" that shows us that this Kundalini opens doors to other dimensions and allows contact with demonic entities: "Krishnamurti began to have chills and tremors and he complained of a intense headache. He had great pain, he seemed to be half unconscious and experiencing outings out of his body... At that time, the entity that Krishnamurti called Telemental" took over and she did this that she wanted... "I throw myself, I groan, I complain and I whisper things strange, just like a possessed. I get up thinking someone is calling me but I immediately collapse on the ground. I see strange faces and Lights... All the time. I have a violent pain in my head and neck... I will become a clairvoyant once all this is over or maybe that I'm going crazy!!" ... The Krishnamurti personality has moved into the background and it is the entity that has gained the upper hand over the functions of the body... There was the perception of this invisible presence

that was working on

his body, opening it and preparing it for the great spiritual mission... the

process continued year after year... "Krishnamurti will even say that he was

wounded in him because "they" had burned him inside! [137]]."

in

his book "Theories of the Chakras, Bridge to Higher Consciousness", the Japanese Hiroshi Motoyama reports things

similar during a climb of Kundalini: "I hear like a buzz of bees... and I see a kind of fireball on the point

to explode... my levitate body... my whole body is inflamed and I have a

severe headache. I stayed in a feverish state for two or three

days. I felt like my head was going to explode... During this experience

I met a horrible demonic entity. It was an experience

terrifying and indescribable! [138]]."

the

Kundalini is symbolically represented by a snake that rises while whirling

around the spine going through the different Chakras. In his book

"The Secret Teachings of Ail Ages",

Freemason Manly P. Hall writes that the tree in the Garden of Eden would represent

this kundalini fire and knowledge for the use of this sacred fire

would be the gift of the great serpent, the temptation of the forbidden fruit: "Enough similarity exists between the Masonic CHiram and the Kundalini of mysticism

Hindu to justify the hypothesis that CHiram can also be considered a

symbol of the Fire of the Spirit moving through the sixth ventricle of the column

Spinal. The exact science of human regeneration is the Lost Key of

Masonry, for when the Fire of the Spirit is raised by the thirty-three

degrees, or by the segments of the spine, and that it enters the

chamber-dome of the human skull, it finally passes into the pituitary body

(Isis) where he invokes Ra (the pineal gland) and demands the Sacred Name. the
Operative masonry, in the full meaning of this term, means the

process by which the Eye of Horus opens (...) In the human brain, there is a tiny gland called the pineal body (...)
The pineal gland is the sacred pine cone in man. The unique eye that can't be

opened without CHiram (the Fire of the Spirit) and increased by the sacred points that

are called the Seven Churches in Asia (the Chakras)! [139!.]"

In Greek mythology, worshippers of Dionysus were often depicted carrying a stick topped with a pine cone. that

represents the energy of the Kundalini as it moves up the backbone (the

stick) to the pineal gland located at the sixth chakra,

symbolized here by the pine cone. Indeed, we find the conceptions

and the practices of Tantrism in Dionysism, Marcel Détienne writes in

his book "Dionysus put to death": "The overcoming of the sacrifice that the Orphics and the Pythagoreans operate from above, Dionysism accomplishes it from below... the

faithful of Dionysus... sing themselves and behave like ferocious beasts. the

Dionysism makes it possible to escape from the human condition by escaping into bestiality from below, on the side of the animals, while Orphism offers the same escape on the side of the gods." In the Dionysian world, we call "Orgiasm" the practices corresponding to those of Tantrism. Orgiasm consists of in group ceremonies in which blood sacrifices take place, ecstatic dances and erotic rites. Dionysus presents himself under the double aspect of a god of Nature and a god of orgiastic practices, everything like Shiva in India or Osiris in Egypt. Orgiasm aims at deconditioning of the being, which returns for a moment to its deepest and most deepest nature Repressed. This return to animal instincts is an important aspect of the tantric method.

Sexual magic and the Kundalini experience are part of the teachings of some Western secret societies. This is a initiation reserved for members who already have good knowledge of occultism. Just like ritual sacrifices, satanic sexual magic allows a ootemr aes powers, ae ia "spiritual power as well as material favors. On the other hand, total abstinence and transmutation of sexual energy will bring an intense happiness much more stable than that brought by tantric sexual practice.

An article entitled "Sex and the Occult" appeared in the newspaper of the company "Dark Lily" refers to the use of sex as a means of accessing the subconscious. The author of this article claims that thanks to a sexual ritual, participants are able to access their own subconscious much faster than with other techniques such as prolonged meditation. With such a method "the multi-week work can be done in a few days or a few Hours! [140]!." Would sexual magic be the "Royal Art" (Masonic) of which the Freemason Wilmshurst quoted above speaks? A practice that would accelerate spiritual evolution to attain the status of a God?

The teachings on tantrism teach us, among other things, that a carnal and sexual relationship is a sharing of energy and karma. This has the consequence that the individual may find himself contaminated by psychic disorders or "bad karma" of the partner, or on the contrary, be deeply inspired if the partner is a spiritually very very being pure. In tantric practices, it is the sexual organ of a very young woman woman who is revered. According to Mahamudra Tilaka Tantra: "Girls over the age of twenty no longer have any power occult." Is the purity and innocence of childhood sought? in satanic sexual magic practices? Probably yes,

just as with a blood sacrifice, it is a question of vampirizing this reserve

of energy and purity. Especially when the child is in a

deep state of dissociative trance that connects it to other dimensions. he

is used as a real tool of power. The child is purity

inpcirnpp the innnppnr'p rir> the f^T~p>a tin rides> U>ir'i qa <am îïlli îrp cnn

sacrifice represents the ultimate offering to Satan. That's why we find systematically sexual perversions and blood sacrifices during satanic ritual abuse. The child's blood is of great purity and it is at puberty that the purest principle of it passes into the seed. It's on this that sexual magic and its aberrations are based.

in his treatise on sexual magic, Pierre Manoury makes a description of the conduct of a ritual in which the woman will have multiple sexual intercourses with several men at the same time, this in order to perform "a charge energy" in women. Here is what he then writes: "These somewhat scabrous descriptions do not constitute an incitement to debauchery, they are very discreet practices, stemming from millennia-old traditions. must know that they constitute ritual practices of energy manipulation in several traditions. From some very closed Western societies, Sabbaths of high witchcraft, from greek bacchanals to priapées in going through shivaic orgiastic rituals, etc (...) some branches of magic are quite elitist, sexual magic is part of them! [141]]."

In his book "Mémoire de sang : contre-initiation", Alexandre de Dànann teaches us that in the

Assyro-Babylonian tradition the priestesses had the duty, during the "coitus sacer" (sacred copulation) with the initiates to the Mysteries, to impose on the means of specific techniques of sexual magic, the orders from the power of the Chaldean priestly caste. This is in order to prepare the events desired by the one that this caste called "Justice or Virtue First", being none other than Lucifer.

One of the "fathers" of Western sexual magic is Paschal Beverly Randolph. According to him "the true sexual power is the power of God", which can be used both as a mystical experience but also for magical practices used to get money, the return of a loved one or for all kinds of things...

Randolph's teachings on sexual magic have circulated widely in many secret societies and other European esoteric fraternities, especially at the Ordo Templi Orientis (O.T.O.).

Randolph, in addition to being a medium, had founded a religious order dedicated to the spiritual regeneration of humanity, named the Fraternity of Eulis, officially founded in 1874. Randolph declared that his new sect took root in the Mysteries of Eleusis, one of the many ancient Greek religions. Randolph was also related to the Rosicrucian tradition, but he affirmed that the Fraternity of Eulis was much more connected to the Mysteries than is the Order of the Rose Cross, which according to

it is only a gateway to the sanctuary of Eulis.

Eulis' deepest secrets are largely centered around the

rituals of sexual magic, in connection with the cult of fertility of the ancients

religions to Mysteries! [142]).

These various ancient sects seem to have mixed the notion from the fertility of mother earth to that of human fertility, bathing

thus in ritual orgies and blood sacrifices related to a certain

calendar to honor and make offerings to gods and goddesses. the

ritual abuse, blood sacrifices and sexual magic that take place

even today, these ancient Babylonian practices follow:

it is the "nameless religion", the cult of demons.

Sarane

Alexandrian, the author of "La Magie Sexuelle : Bréviaire des sortilèges amoureux", reports in her book that it is the initiatory organizations, i.e. the secret societies, that have been

charged with teaching sexual magic to initiates. Karl Kellner and Theodor

Reuss, two high-ranking Freemasons, are the two founders of the Ordo Templi Orientis, which according to Alexandrian, is a true school of sexual magic. In 1912, the O.T.O. published in the Oriflamme: "Our Order has rediscovered the great secret of the Knights Templar which is the key that opens all mystics

Masonic and hermetic, namely the teaching of sexual magic. this teaching explains, without exception, all the secrets of the Nature, all the symbolism of Freemasonry and all the workings of religion! [143!."]

The Freemason Karl Kellner says he was initiated by an Arab fakir and two Indian yogis by whom he received "the mysteries yoga and the philosophy of the way of the left hand that he calls 'magic sexual][144]"' Kellner was at the head of a small group called "Inner Triangle" that practiced tantric-like rituals in order to create an elixir composed of fluids males and females...

Satanist Aleister Crowley created a Gnostic Mass (a sexual ritual), a ceremony in which seed and menstruation symbolize the sacred host. A ritual that has become a central practice for the Ordo Templi Orientis. Alexandrian states that the O.T.O. includes 12 initiatory degrees and that it is only from the eighth degree that we can begin to approach sexual magic... in starting with initiatory masturbation. The seventh degree is centered on the worship of the phallus under the symbol of the Baphomet.
The ninth degree teaches sexual magic itself, i.e. the way to perform the sexual act in such a way as to obtain powers. This degree is

considered royal and priestly art, making followers capable of the

Great erotic work. This is how the initiate becomes superior to the layman.

Dans son livre “Stealing from Heaven : the rise of

western magic modem", Nevill Drury also claims that the O.T.O.

practice of sexual rituals with the use of blood, feces and

the seed (red, black, white, the colors of the Great Alchemical Work). the

livre “Secrets of the German Sex Magicians” donne

the three initiatory degrees of sexual magic taught by Aleister

Crowley and practiced by the members of the O.T.O.:

VIII°= Teaching of autosexual magical practices (masturbation).

IX°= Teaching of heterosexual magical practices, interaction between sperm and menstrual blood or female secretions.

XI°= Teaching of homosexual magical practices,

insulation of the anus (per vas nefandum), sodomy, interaction with

feces.

we
find that the teachings in sexual magic that arrive in

last are those related to the rectum. In his book Shiva and Dionysus: The Religion of Nature and Eros, Alain Daniélou writes: There is a whole ritual related to penetration through the narrow door that opens onto the

labyrinth (in humans, intestine). In Tantric Yoga, the center of

Ganésha, the guardian of the doors, is in the area of the rectum. The male organ, if it penetrates directly into the area of coiled energy (Kundalini), can allow to awaken it brutally and to cause states of illumination and of sudden perception of realities of transcendent order. That is why this act can play an important role in initiation. This explains a rite of male initiation, very widespread among primitive peoples, although rarely reported by Western observers, in which insiders adult males have sexual intercourse in the anus with novices (...) This act is also part of the charges brought against the Dionysian organizations by their detractors, and against certain initiatory groups in the world Christian and Islamic."

Australian psychologist Reina Michaelson, who received in 1996 an award for his work on the prevention of sexual abuse of minors, states that in some rituals of the O. T.O., children are literally Massacred. The O.T.O. Sued Michaelson for these charges and a won the lawsuit. The psychologist had stated, according to her sources, that this secret society was a paedophile network of which some members practice trauma-based mind control as well than ritual abuse involving sexual magic. She also stated that this satanic cult had a lot of power because directed by very powerful and influential families, also leaving

cnn Q-pntpnH rp nnp ri r> Viantc rponnncüWpc r-inl ïtim in QH trpc

VJ\-/U.VJ VXXLVXXUl V/ V_^U.V U.V XXU. UUJ X VU|-/V/XXKJU. XyXWJ |yv/ll LXV^U.VVJ VL UUL1 VVJ

personalities of television are part of a high-level and covered paedocriminal network by the authorities. In 2008, a couple was sentenced to prison for refused to withdraw their allegations that the O.T.O. was a real network of paedocriminals. Vivienne Legg and Dyson Devine had to present their publicly apology to be released after seven weeks in prison! [145]l These multiple denials and systematic attacks in court by the O.T.O. serve to destabilize investigators and create disorientation about nature and the practices of worship. Under this surface swell, the occult hierarchy remains intact and in perfect working order.

Frater U.\D.\ the author of "Secrets of the German Sex Magicians" asserts that modified states of consciousness are sought by occultists through the sexual rituals to get what they call "powers magic". He cites for example an experiment he calls the "Gnostic Trance". This author encourages his readers to practice rituals that lead to an overcoming of sexual taboos and he insists on the fact that "through the use of bizarre practices and unusual, we access altered states of consciousness that provide the key to magical powers! [145]]." These are the kinds of statements that could explain the testimonies concerning ritual abuses whose perversity goes beyond

understanding, even going as far as human sacrifice.

The violent and sometimes murderous rituals as well as the extreme sexual debauchery of these sects are to be linked to the notions of transgression,

excesses of all kinds and violation of social morality. They are seen as

the ultimate way to surpass the human condition and social order for

access a kind of transcendence of the human, especially when this

is accompanied by altered states of consciousness due to drugs and states

dissociative: "Dionysian ecstasy means before

all the surpassment of the human condition, the discovery of a deliverance

total, obtaining freedom and spontaneity usually

inaccessible to human beings... In addition to these freedoms, there is also the issue of prohibition, rules and conventions of ethics and

social order! [147]]."

"Do what you want will be the whole of the Law", "There is no other Law than Do what you want." (Aleister Crowley)

The Thule Society, or the Order of Thule, was a German secret society that largely inspired mysticism and Nazi ideology. In its

livre “Spear of Destiny” (La lance du destin),

Trevor Ravenscroft (former British soldier and journalist) explains that thule members, who practiced black magic, were behind the ascent in power of Hitler before the Second World War. According to Ravenscroft the members of the sect, as Satanists, were "only concerned about raising their consciousness through the practice of rituals can connect them to the evil and non-human intelligences of the universe, but also able to allow them to reach a means of communication with these intelligences. One of the main followers of this circle was Dietrich Eckartl[148!.]" Thule members also practiced a form of sexual magic derived from the teachings of satanist Aleister Crowley, including Dietrich Eckart was inspired to initiate Adolf Hitler.

Hitler joined the Order of Thule in 1919. Until 1923, Dietrich Eckart, who was his mentor, spared no effort to make Hitler a a particularly fervent follower of occultism and black magic. Eckart had received a message from his 'guide-mind' him saying that he would have the privilege of forming the "Anti-Christ". From the very beginning of their relationship, Eckart believed that Hitler was this avatar and by therefore, he did not forget any teaching, any ritual, any perversion, this in order to spiritually train Hitler for his future role. It is at from his studies of the powers engendered by occult practices

perverse that Eckart conceived a ritual that he used when he opened the centers

(chakras) of Adolf Hitler to give him vision and the means of communication

with the 'Powers'. Once his initiatory training was completed, Hitler

felt that he was "born again" with an "over-personal" force,

a force it would need to carry out its mandate

orderly. Hitler used the Christian term "born again" to describe

his initiation. It is interesting to note here that during an interview

George W. Bush's television for the 1988 presidential campaign, the

journalist Barbara Walters asked him a question that made him startle. she

asked him if he was a Christian... The future President paused,

looking perplexed, and after a few seconds he replied, "If speaking of a Christian, you mean 'born again,' then yes, I am a Christian." Here is the answer we can expect

of an occultist for whom the initiatory rituals in which he participated make

of him a "Born Again". This is the

symbolic process of "death and rebirth" applied in ritual abuses

and mind control. The skull and bones secret society through which Bush father and son (and many others) passed practice rituals identical to those of the Thule order where Hitler was initiated, these are the practices of black magic. Ron Rosenbaum wrote about Skull & Bones in an article for Esquire magazine: "The (ritual) death of the initiate will have to be so terrifying that it requires the use of human skeletons and psychological rituals (...) sexual perversion is part of these psychological rituals (...) naked in a coffin, the initiate will also have to tell his darkest and deep sexual secrets during initiation! [149]]." We will return in more detail to this question of the "initiatory resurrection" in Chapter 4.

This initiatory black magic that transcended Adolf Hitler combined sexual perversion and enlightenment caused by profound altered states of consciousness, i.e. a mixture sexual magic and trauma-related dissociation. These rituals involved highly perverse and sadistic practices: sodomy, orgies, animal sacrifices, floggings... Ravenscroft reports that Hitler had was heavily tortured during these traumatic rituals, including during a "magical, sadistic and monstrous ritual" after which he became helpless. This impotence was not a castration physical, it had a deep psychological origin due to the extreme sadism and masochism of rituals. Hitler's relationship with Eva Braun were of the same order. Trevor Ravenscroft also wrote about of Hitler: "Sexual perversion took a place central in his life. A monstrous sexual perversion that was truly at the heart of his existence and who was the source of his powers

mediums and clairvoyance." In his book "Hitler - A study in Tyranny", Alan Bullock writes: "His power to bewitch a crowd is to be put in connection with the occult art of African 'medicine- men' or Asian shamans; others

compared this to the mediumistic sensitivity or magnetism of a

hypnotiseur."

those

rituals of black magic and sexual magic open doors to the world

of spirits, these provide initiates with a certain power as well as

psychic powers. In 1921, at the age of 33, Hitler was totally owned by

a hierarchy of demonic spirits and he was finally ready to take the leadership of the National Socialist Party. No one can understand the monstrosity of

Hitler's plans without knowing the satanic perversion in which he

had immersed himself long before he came to power. Hitler received a real

protection of supernatural order to carry out its mission. In his book "Hitler, Medium of Satan", Jean Prieur

reports that on several occasions the future Fürher would have been saved thanks to

"dark forces" during the First World War: "However, a voice speaks in him muted and orders him to move as far away as possible

the trench; so he continues to walk like a sleepwalker. Suddenly a burst of iron and fire forces him to put himself on the ground. The explosion is all close (...) When calm has returned, he hastens to the trench and no longer recognizes anything. Instead of the squad shelter, it is a gigantic funnel dotted with human debris. All his comrades were killed. It was since that day that he was convinced of his divine mission.

For the fifth time, Providence intervened on its behalf (...) In the summer of 1915, he was again saved in extraordinary circumstances, which he told an English journalist, Ward Price, years later: "I was in the process of dinner in the trench with several comrades, when I had the impression when a voice said to me: "Get up and go there!" The voice was so sharp, so insistent that I obey mechanically as if it were an order military. I got up immediately and got away twenty meters away, taking away my dinner in my bowl. Then I sat down to continue my meal; my mind had calmed down. No sooner had I done that than a flash of lightning and a deafening detonation reached me from the trench I had just left. A shell misplaced had burst over the group, killing everyone! [150]]."

During the First World War, Hitler already seemed to have a serious baggage of occult and pagan knowledge. Jean Prieur reports in his book: "It was during the autumn of 1915 that he composed this curious and disturbing poem, where it is appropriate to see much more

than a literary exercise:

> On biting nights, I often go into the silent
>
> clearing at wotan oak
> Unite with the dark powers...

With its magic formula The moon

traces the runic letters,

And all those who are full of impudence during the day are made very small by the magic formula[151]. In this poem, Hitler refers to 'Wotan'', also called "Wodan", corresponding to Odin, the Norse god of the dead, the god of victory and knowledge. Scandinavia called him Odin and

Germania named him Wotan. Adolf Hitler was totally adept of this old man

Nordic paganism. This is why the Nazis created (or perhaps absorbed) the Ahnenerbe, a society for research and teaching on the esoteric ancestral heritage.

Hitler also escaped several attacks in an extraordinary way, such as in 1936 at the Berlin Olympics, but also in 1937

and in 1939. When some people around him were amazed at the little

measures taken for his safety, Hitler replied: ''He

must have faith in providence, one must listen to the inner voice and believe

in its destiny. I deeply believe that fate has chosen me for the most

great good of the German nation.'' Once he will tell Eva

Braun: "Providence protects me and we don't have to

no longer fear our enemies.'' ... Ravenscroft reports that during a press interview, Hitler said ''I walk like a

sleepwalker dictated by providence.'' From what providence

Speak? Certainly of the "Luciferian providence", in other words the demonic possession for which it had been prepared for years

initiations...

Aleister Crowley had proclaimed himself: "The Beast 666". His biographer, John Symonds, said: ''Sex had become for Crowley

the means to reach God. He performed the sexual act not for joys

emotional or for reproductive purposes, but to renew one's psychic strength.

He believed that this would give worship to the god Pan." In his journal Rex de Arte

Regia, Crowley describes his practices of "Royal Art" (sexual magic) in

specifying that he makes a wish during the rituals, usually for a return to school

of money, and that he always ends up getting his desires. The ex-

occultist
William 'Bill' Schnoebelen made several public revelations about the rituals of Luciferian high masonry. Schnoebelen was part of

the Church of Satan, he was a Freemason for 9 years, initiated in the 32nd degree of the Scottish rite, in the 90th degree of the rite of Memphis-Misraïm and in the 9th degree of the O.T.O. It also reached the 9th degree among the Rosicrucians. In 1984, he came completely out of the occult

to become a Christian. Here is a conference excerpt in which he states

that Masonic "Royal Art" is linked to practices of sexual magic on children: "These rituals contain a deeply sinister aspect but that I must address.

I apologise in advance because it is something vulgar. But we must talk about the "Royal Secret" of masonry and how it intervenes in this spiritual hierarchical pyramid (...) In 1904, Crowley had contact with an alien being (demon) named Iwas. this entity dictated to him a book during his wife's medium trances: the book of the Law. This book states that God is fallen from his throne and that a new conquering child-god comes to take his place. As a result, Crowley declared the end of Christianity and the advent of Crowlianism. In fact, he was a genius, he could play chess with his eyes closed. He was a poet accomplished, a painter and a writer. It was so covered with titles Masonic that he could have filled five pages of a book. This man was one of the most honored Freemasons in the world but he was also the man the most dangerous of the 20th century.

Following the Book of the Law, he began to do rituals to bring back this god-child. For this he founded what he called the sect of ''the Child fascinating'', and in doing so, he unveiled and revealed the Royal Secret of the freemasonry. Following the publication of his book, a man introduced himself her. This man was Theodore Reuss, a German occultist and leader of the O.T.O. (Order of the Temple of the East) which is the order of the Templars of the East, still Knights Templar... This man then told Crowley that he had revealed the greatest mystery in the history of occultism. What to Crowley replied that he did not understand what he was talking about. Reuss has it so initiated to the 9th degree of the O.T.O. and revealed the secret to him. This secret is that as a Freemason, immortality is promised to you. If you go to a Masonic burial, you will hear a sermon on immortality. you hear the promises saying that after their death they will go into the great higher celestial lodges for eternity. How do they get this immortality? They do not believe in Jesus. The name of Jesus is not even authorized to quote in the blue lodges of Freemasonry (...) Where do they get this promise of immortality? Crowley's indirect secret discovered, probably thanks to a demonic intervention, is that this immortality is accessible through operative sexual magic. This type of Sexual magic that we are talking about here is the rape of a young child, unfortunately. Crowley taught that one can live forever through the sexual vampirization of young children (...) I apologize, it's so horrible... But masons practice this. Not all of them! Please misunderstand me. But it is a problem important enough that I feel compelled to you in speak. This is the reason why masons think they can get immortality. Every time they defile a child, they steal a little of the youth of this child. (...) Then they think they can access alternative universes in which they will become gods (...) Crowley reveals the secret of the symbolism of the ''Eye that sees everything'' in one of his books, the book of Toth, which is a very advanced manual. This is the eye of Lucifer, but believe it or not, this symbol also corresponds to an organ that we name a delicate name: the rectum. Which is ironic when you know he also represents Lucifer. This refers to the occult and archaeometric doctrine of masonry which claims that by the sodomy bias, especially with young boys, you can access alternative dimensions of reality, through what they call 'typhoon tunnels' (vortex). They have this belief that through perversion sexual, they can access these tunnels, and the purpose of this type of magic is to find one's own universe and become the god of that universe.

Satan betrays these people by inciting them to practice evil. However, what is important is not to know if it works or not but to know that these people really believe in it (...) This form of magic is "Trans-Yuggothian" magic. This means that it is a magic that acts beyond plutonian space, a planet that they think they are out of reach of the Sun, and therefore out of reach of the rays of the Judeo-Christian God. They think there are entities beyond Pluto that are far more powerful, more dangerous, and more deadly than God or the devil. That is the thing these people are trying to achieve.

Do not misunderstand me! I can't say it enough: One or two masons out of a hundred practice such things. But it's more than it Need! And this is a serious problem[152]!"

According to Bill Schnoebelen, the sexual magic practiced on children would therefore be a key to accessing other dimensions and to obtaining power. A child tortured and raped during satanic ritual abuse finds itself in a state of dissociation, i.e. it itself becomes a door open to other dimensions (see Chapter 6 on the connection between trauma, dissociation and access to other dimensions). The practice of

would sexual magic on a child in a state of dissociative trance be a source of youth? In such a state of dissociation, would the child be a kind of bridge, a medium acting as an intermediary for

connecting the earthly world and the spirit world? Unfortunately, this

this question comes to be asked because there is every reason to believe that this is a

Pandora's box of which mind control is an essential component.

In his book ''Do What You Will: A History of Anti-Morality'', Geoffrey Ashe writes that Crowley had ''hypnotic powers'' that he frequently used to seduce women but he writes also that he was ''like three or four different men[153]''. Crowley himself described his altered states of consciousness in which he faced other imaginary entities,

dissociative or spiritual. Did Crowley himself have a personality

multiple, a personality divided by traumas related to its

childhood? Did he have a dissociative identity disorder? In its

livre "Magick in Theory and Practice", Crowley

advocates self-punishment by scarification with a razor blade. the

therapists who work with survivors of ritual abuse report that

scarification self-harm is the most common feature

of patients with severe dissociative disorders. Crowley joined the Hermetic Golden Dawn order in 1898 and was finally expelled in 1900. In 1901, a scandal splashed the Golden

Dawn, Theo Horos (Franck Jackson) and his wife have been accused of raping a

sixteen-year-old girl. At the time, the judge found that the couple had

used golden dawn rituals for the sexual exploitation of minors.

Selon Richard Kaczynski, l’auteur de “Of Heresy And

Secrecy : Evidence of Golden Dawn Teachings On Mystic Sexuality”, les

Sexual magic practices would be something common within this

secret society. It is likely that sexual magic is a teaching

common to all these different Luciferian lodges.

The Golden Dawn is said to have been created following the discovery of mysterious Germanic documents. These were coded manuscripts that were

deciphered and transcribed by one of the founding members of the Order, Dr.

William Wyn Westcott, a Freemason Subsequently, the documents were

suspected of forgery and in order to clarify the issue, the author of "The Magicians of the Golden Dawn", Ellic Howe, forwarded Westcott's translations to an expert in graphology. This one has

concluded that Westcott likely had a multiple personality disorder

(dissociative identity disorder) due to its different styles

very marked writings. In his book "What You Should

Know About The Golden Dawn'', Gerald Suster, a lawyer for the Golden Dawn challenged the multiple personality disorder argument by noting that a

another important member of the Order, Israel Regardie, also had a style

of writing that could vary and that he had never been diagnosed with a

multiple personality or some psychiatric disorder... one

interpretation of these variations in writing would be to say that these men have

both dissociative disorders caused by ritual experiences

Traumatic. But this is an accurate diagnosis that is rarely

done because few mental health professionals are trained to detect

this kind of personality disorders [154].

Another secret society with a Masonic-type doctrine and structure is the F.S., Fraternitas Saturni or

Brotherhood of Saturn. In his book entitled ''Fire ' '

Ice : Magical Teaching of Germany's Greatest Secret Occult Order", Eldred Flowers mentionne la F.S. comme étant une "sympathique

Luciferian organization''. Just like the O.T.O. and many books

Masonic, the F.S. gives considerable importance to the concepts and

Gnostic terms. In this book, Eldred Flower frequently refers to "Gnosis-Saturnian" and specific sexual rituals.

Note that Linda Blood, in her book "The New

Satanists'' reports that Eldred Flowers, for whom the F.S. is a "friendly Luciferian organization", assisted Michael Aquino at the head of the Temple of Set. Linda Blood knows what she's talking about

for she was the mistress of Aquino and a member of this sect[155].

5 - Sacrifices, witchcraft, shamanism and multiple personalities

Archaeological evidence proves that the Ugly, Inca, Mayan and Aztecs have in common the practice of violent and bloody rituals. Looking into the subject in greater depth, it also appears that human sacrifice has also been practised in Europe. In an article entitled ''Vessels of Death: Sacred Cauldrons in Archaeology and Myth[156]'', Miranda Green refers to human sacrifices practiced by the Germanic people of the Cimbri and reported by the Greek geographer Strabo. The article describes that the ceremony was performed by the "holy women", one of them slit the throat of a prisoner of war and harvested his blood in a large bronze cauldron. Then his body was opened in order to inspect his bowels and organs for a divinatory purpose. Human sacrifice is a common heritage in the history of mankind, it is a practice related to the worship of demonic and Luciferian gods. Historically, early pagan rites included both animal and human sacrifices. The sacrifice of a human being as well as cannibalism seems to have held a certain place in ancestral and even contemporary rituals. In Kingship and Sacrifice: Ritual and Society in Ancient Hawaii, Valerio Valeri reports the existence of ritual sacrifices of humans practiced by priests until 1819, before they were banned. Valeri points out that human sacrifices were also used in witchcraft rites. The ancient Haitian Voodoo cult practiced the sacrifice of "the hornless goat", a euphemism that designates a human sacrifice[157]. Just as the term "long pig" (in reference to pork) refers to human flesh in the cannibals of Polynesia. Cannibalism has also been attributed to certain shamanic practices. A ritual of cannibalism is probably a traumatic experience both for the victim before his death, and for those who participate and survive the ritual. In ''Dictionary of Folklore, Mythology and Legend (Funk & Wagnalls)'' R.D. Jamison writes: ''The Cambridge expedition to the Torres Strait reported that sorcerers ate the flesh of corpses or mixed this flesh with their food after ritual practices. This results in them becoming violent and committing murders out of anger. Little is known about the processes that induce shamanic trance except that cannibalism causes the consumer to be in an inhuman or superhuman state."

In an article entitled "Sacrifices of raw, cooked and burnt humans[158]",Terje Oestigaard notes that human sacrifice is a common practice serving as an offering for the gods. This offering can be buried raw, cooked as a meal for the deities or cremated to ascend directly to heaven. Cremation is a transformation and a medium through which a certain transmutation of the offering takes place. Animal or human sacrifice can be perceived as a communion between man and the gods through a meal, it was often the central rite of paganism because it allowed to "share the table of the gods", but it also served as a cathartic act.

The Roman Emperor Julian was known for his pronounced taste for sacrificial acts and they are unanimously decried by his contemporaries, both faithful and detractors. He was described as never leaving his "amulets and talismans" and dividing his life between concern for the state and devotion to the altars. Libanios awarded him as a title of glory for having practiced in ten years, more animal sacrifices than all the Greeks put together. The emperor Julian made blood sacrifices as much in the temple of Zeus as in that of Tyche (fortune) or Demerit (fertility[159]).

In "History of the Wars", the historian Procopius refers to human sacrifice as the most "noble", preferably the first human captured in time of war. The god of war, Mars, was to be appeased with the wildest and bloodiest rituals by putting the prisoners to death. For these ancient peoples, bloodshed was a means of appeasing the prince of war.

In a travelogue among the Volga Bulgarians (Vikings), Ibn Fadlan recounts how different animals were sacrificed while the men of the clan raped a slave before she was killed and placed by her master on a boat. Then the fire was set on the boat to reduce to smoke the human offering[160].

Ritual killings seem to be common practices among wizards of the *Cebuano culture in the* **Philippines. In the book** *"Cebuano*

Sorcery: Malign Magic in the Philippines", **Richard Lieban writes:** *"To become one of those who can practice 'Hilo', it is said that man must first kill a member of his own family, then he must make one or more victims every year. One of these wizards revealed that the obligation to kill grows every year. The longer the sorcerer practices his magic, the more frequently he will have to kill. All informants agree that when the sorcerer assumes such obligations, if he does not commit the murders according to the schedule, he himself will become a victim, struck by his own instruments of witchcraft that will turn against him. As one sorcerer says, 'If he does not kill, he will get seriously ill, and he will only be better when he is dead. If he does not kill pa.s, he* **will die[161]'."**

In one of his lectures on the theme of *"New Age",* **Father Jean Luc Lafitte reports what he experienced in Gabon:** *"I preached several retreats in the bush* **(...)** *We heard every night the melodies of these sorcerers who worked on the a.deptes of their religion. It is a hallucinogen that he reduced to powder and that he made the a.deptes drink to make them dance all night to the sound of the drum. After a while, all these people were entering a trance* **(...)** *Once they were in a trance, the sorcerer managed to completely empty their personality, so much so that to progress in this system of false religion, you had to do something that the guru asked you. The first initiation was to kill an animal, so at first it was necessary for example to cut the neck of a hen. The second step was to kill an enemy and the third step was to kill a member of his family. The fourth step is to killyourself..."* **Here we find three things common to modern ritual abuse testimonies: drugs, trance states and blood sacrifices. Western survivors say they were first forced to kill an animal, and then sometimes a human being, usually a baby. The fourth step described by Abbé Lafitte, which consists in killing oneself, may correspond to the programming of suicide among victims of mental control (MK), but the abbé does not specify in what context or in what way this fourth stage can be triggered in the tradition he describes.**

Initiation traumatic rituals are a common factor in many traditions practicing witchcraft and spirit worship. In his book

"La Conjuration antichrétienne", **Bishop Henri Delassus writes:** *"Satan had temples erected and altars erected on all places of the earth and he had a cult as ungodly as it was superstitious. How many times did the chosen people themselves allow themselves to be led by him, to the point of sacrificing to "Moloch" even his children!* **(...)** *The missionaries of the xlIth century were very surprised when, leaving france slightly skeptical at the time, they landed in the East Indies and found themselves in the middle of the strangest diabolical manifestations. Both voya,geurs and missionaries today witness the same wonders. Mr. Paul Verdun has published a book: "The devil in missions"* **(...)** *Apparitions and possessions are frequent things in them, known and accepted by everyone. In all these countries there are sorcerers. To become so, one must undergo cruel trials that go far beyond the most painful prasques of Christian mortification. In most of these initiations, a manifestation of the devil shows that he accepts the candidate as his own, he makes a possessed one where he removes him*[162].

In Papua New Guinea, traumatic rituals aimed at terrorizing the initiate are an integral part of local cults. In his book "Ritual and Knowledge Among the Baktaman of New Guinea", Frederik Barth describes how a Baktaman novice who was so terrified of the course of initiation literally defecated on it. In the book Rituals of Manhood: Male Initiation in Papua New Guniea, Gilbert Herdt reports that in the Bimin-Kuskusmin initiation, novices are totally terrorized by the ceremony of piercing their nasal septum and burning their forearms. This creates serious trauma and the author reports that signs of profound psychological shocks have been observed in several individuals who have gone through this initiation. In his analysis of the Orokaiva initiation of the Papuans, in the book Exchange in the Social Structure of the Orokaiva, Erik Schwimmer writes that one of the functions of these rites is to provoke "absolute and lasting terror in the candidate". All ethnographers who have studied the Orokaiva have pointed out the particularly terrifying nature of the packed ceremony. Several authors have reported that a real panic is deliberately induced in young candidates for initiation, but they also describe the anguish of parents who witness the suffering of children. In "The Concept of the Person and the Ritual Sytem; An Orokaiva View'', André Iteanu even writes that there is always a risk that the child will not survive the trials of initiation. In his book "Prey into Hunter: The Politics of Religious Experience", Maurice Bloch makes an analysis of the ceremony packed with its sacred and transcendental character. According to Bloch, the most important effect of this ceremony is that the initiate is symbolically killed, or more precisely that his vitality is neutralized, it is then that he becomes a purely transcendental being (dissociated?). Following this initiation the child becomes sacred, so it is a question of conquering its vitality and putting it under a certain control. For this, the child is symbolically killed in order to transform him, to transcend his person so that he himself becomes a killer and no longer a victim[163].

who witness the suffering of children. In "The Concept of the Person and the Ritual Sytem; An Orokaiva View'', André Iteanu even writes that there is always a risk that the child will not survive the trials of initiation. In his book "Prey into Hunter: The Politics of Religious Experience", Maurice Bloch makes an analysis of the ceremony packed with its sacred and transcendental character. According to Bloch, the most important effect of this ceremony is that the initiate is symbolically killed, or more precisely that his vitality is neutralized, it is then that he becomes a purely transcendental being (dissociated?). Following this initiation the child becomes sacred, so it is a question of conquering its vitality and putting it under a certain control. For this, the child is symbolically killed in order to transform him, to transcend his person so that he himself becomes a killer and no longer a victim[163].

Here we have a description that can correspond to the satanic ritual abuses "modern" with the mental control that follows. These are traumatic initiation rituals that aim to sacralize the child through deep dissociative states and a rebirth as a "Monarch" child; make him a killer rather than a victim, a full member of the Luciferian/Satanic cult.

The book "Cult and Ritual Abuse: Narratives, Evidence and Healing Approaches" by James Randall Noblitt and Pamela Perskin Noblitt addresses the anthropological aspect of ritual abuse and mind control using dissociative identity disorders (multiple personality disorder). The book reports many sources that concern traumatic rituals whose boundary between dissociation and demonic possession remains very blurred. Here are some of the sources they report in their book...

Isaiah Oke's book, ''Blood Secrets: The True Story of Demon Worship and Ceremonial Murder'' clearly addresses the issue of ritual abuse in West Africa. Isaiah Oke was the grandson and successor of an important Babalorisha, a Juju high priest. He tells in his book "the education and training" he received to succeed his grandfather. Oke describes the traumatic ceremonies he went through during his apprenticeship to become a high priest. He also describes the hardships he had to inflict on others, ceremonies that involved acts of torture and even murder during, for example, the ceremony of the "200 cuts" during which he had to put a man to death. He reports what appear to be classic experiences of dissociation when he refers to memory loss and possessions by the spirits of the village's ancestors. Oke writes in his book: "Our rituals serve to appease the most horrible of our gods. These gods are so formidable that our rituals must be just as formidable. We think that there is nothing better than blood to appease the ferocious spirits of Juju[164].

Oke compares African Juju to American Satanism. He explains that this cult is practiced openly in West Africa and even exploited commercially for tourists, but that it has another façade where the secret is such that some say that there is another religion, unknown to the outside world, within the Juju itself: *"There is another place of sacrifice that we call the "Tomb", usually in the forest, far from the eyes and indiscreet ears. It is usually a simple well-camouflaged hut in which we call the Igbo-Awo (the secret of the forest). What is practiced in the "Tomb" are not harmless* *ceremonies, but rather* **macabre** *blood rituals*[165].

In her book "Ritual: Power, Healing and Community", Malidoma Somé confirms isaiah Oke's statements about this African religion of Juju. Originally from West Africa, Somé studied at the Sorbonne and Brandeis University in the United States. It describes rituals in which people begin to speak with different voices and which show several personalities. It specifies that the priest who directs the rituals is able to act on the minds of those present so that they are unable to remember the events that took place. He relates the example of a man of the tribe who wanted to reveal the secrets of worship to strangers. Before he was able to do so, he allegedly had a psychotic attack and committed suicide. These testimonies are to be compared with those reported by survivors of satanic ritual abuses in the West. Some say they feel their minds blocked or "closed" when they try to remember the details of their abuse. They also say that they become particularly self-destructive, even suicidal, when they are about to talk or have just talked to someone about certain things that must remain secret. In the West, this establishment of internal secrecy is done by what is called MK-Monarch programming. It is a form of extreme conditioning that creates and manipulates programmed reactions with the help of deep trauma. (See chapter
7)

British psychiatrist William Sargant (who worked for the MK-Ultra project), stated in his book "The Mind Possessed: A Physiology of Possession, Mysticism and Faith Healing' that dissociation, amnesia, personality modification as well as mental programming, was an essential part in the Orisha cult.

Orisha is the Yoruba **term for the gods or the representation of the spirit of God. It is an African-American tradition originating in Africa. This term is used in** *Juju* **but also in** *Santeria which is a derivative of the Yoruba* **culture. In his book, William Sargant quotes the author Pierre 'Fatumbi' Verger who is said to have been introduced to these** *Orisha rituals: "Pierre Verger himself became a priest of the Orisha cult. He could not tell me much about the* *secret ceremonies that took place at the convent, but he was able to reveal that there was a severe process of brainwashing in which the ordinary personality of the follower is replaced by a new personality. The initiate is never allowed to remember who he was, what he looked like, and how he behaved with his former personality. When the initiate leaves the convent, he is restored to his former personality by a particular process, but he keeps very little memory of what happened in the convent. When the a.deptes return to the convent, by the same reverse hypnotic process, they find their personality of devotees, which will disappear once again in their ordinary personality when they return to the***secularworld! 155! ."**

Here we have an example of mind control based on a splitting of the personality with memories partitioned by amnesic walls (see Chapter 5). William Sargant also stated that *"Some people are able to induce on themselves or on someone else a state of trance and dissociation caused by strong and repetitive emotional constraints, to the point where it can become a conditioning system of brain a.ctivity* **(...)** *If the trance is accompanied by a state of mental dissociation, the person can be deeply influenced in his thought and in his subsequent behavior.'* **Sargant makes a clear reference here to the process of mind control using dissociative states.**

Author Fritz Springmeier described Haitian voodoo ceremonies involving trance and dissociation. Springmeier makes the parallel between these voodoo ritual practices and MK-Monarch programming: *"The first reports on Haitian voodoo were written in 1884 by Spencer St John. His writings describe the blood rituals and cannibalism practiced in this religion* **(...)** *Blood sacrifices are often a.ssociated with demons and the possessed person will drink the blood of the sacrificed animal. Gemstones, herbs, trances and dissociative states are used to attract spirits. While the MK-Monarch slave undergoes dissociative states caused by trauma, the dissociative states of voodoo a.deptes are ritually provoked. Voodoo rituals involve singing, drum rhythms, sometimes clapping of hands, and frenetic dances to induce dissociated states. Several factors that cause* **these**

altered states of consciousness have been identified in Afro-Caribbean or South American religions. Then dissociated states often follow a period of food deprivation, hyperventilation is also used to achieve **these** *particular states of consciousness. The beginning of demonic possession is characterized by a brief period of muscle inhibition with a collapse* **(...)** *During the trance, the limbs of the body as well as the head are taken with tremors, the person becomes so dissociated that he can pick up incandescent embers by hand. The possessed can be conscious, semi-conscious or unaware of what is happening to him* **(...)** *Voodoo rituals that induce dissociative states are usually a.ccompa.gnés of amnesia. During this period of amnesic time, the person behaved as if he were a spirit (a god). What has just been described here is more of a dissociated state induced by ritual than of a dissociated state induced by trauma. MK-Monarch programming aims to combine both at the same time: ritual and trauma, with the aim of creating and reinforcing a deeply dissociated state. This is why it is difficult to separate the religious factor from the MK-MonarcH167]programming."*

Let us now turn our attention to shamanism, an essential subject when studying modified states of consciousness and interactions with other dimensions. Shamans are what are called "healing sorcerers" or "medicine men". It is a primitive system of medicine dating back to the earliest times, a discipline combining communication with spirits and the practice of exercises to obtain certain "spiritual powers". It is sometimes referred to as a "shaman warrior", an individual capable of reaching deep trance states during rituals, usually with the help of a drum, songs and ceremonial dances. He sometimes uses sleep and/or drug deprivation to facilitate these states of deep dissociation. Once in a trance, the shaman enters the spirit world, a dimension parallel to ours but just as real for the shaman. These trips bring him visions that allow him to diagnose health problems for example, but he may also have to deal with other problems concerning his community. In his spiritual work, the shaman is assisted by entities sometimes called "guardian spirit" or "guide spirit".

Some shamans are not limited to 'benevolent' spiritual activities and may use witchcraft related to dark forces when they need it. In his book "The Way of the Sacred", Francis Huxley makes a clear distinction between black shamanism and white shamanism. Harry B. Wright, in his book "Witness to Witchcraft", makes a similar observation among the Amerindian wizards of the Amazon, with the benevolent curanderos, and the malevolent feiteceros. It is also interesting to note that in the book "The Shaman and the Magician: Journeys Between the Worlds", Nevil Drury reports similarities between traditional shamanic practices and certain modern magic rituals practiced in some occult lodges of the Masonic type. He cites for example the Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn, the Golden Dawn. It is clear that the psycho-spiritual function, called psychic dissociation, is an essential point in Luciferian occultism.

It is necessary to make a clarification here with regard to "white magic" and "black magic", or "benevolent" or "malevolent" sorcerers. Here's what Anton LaVey, the founder of Satan's church, says about magic:

''LaVey makes no distinction between white magic and black magic, he claims that white Wicca witchcraft and ''new-agers'' freely call on the forces of the shadows to solicit them in their hypocritical desires. LaVey said: "All magic comes from the devil's kingdom, no matter how you dress it. The belief that 'black' magic is only used for destruction and 'white' for healing is wrong. Satanic magic is used to invoke the power of justice, it can be used to help you or someone else, as well as it can be used to harm someone[168].

''There is no difference between white magic and black magic, except in the blissful hypocrisy and self-deception of the ''white magicians'' (...) No one on this earth has ever studied occultism, metaphysics, yoga or anything else of the so-called ''white light'', without a gratification of the ego and with the aim of obtaining personal power[169].

Pierre Manoury also writes that there is no such thing as "white magic" or "black magic": "We often recognize a specialist by the fact that he has a slight smile at the evocation of the terms "white magic". The reason is very simple, white magic does not exist! (...) With all due respect to these good people and the beleaven herd that serves as their audience, white magic does not exist and has never existed. The term white mage is commonly used in the literature to refer to a follower performing only beneficial operations, as opposed to the black magician making an alliance with the forces of darkness. But here it is, it is literature, not initiation! There is in fact only one magic that is subdivided into several specialties. The notion of white or black magic is purely Manichean, simplistic and primary[170].

An important question regarding shamanism is whether these practices involve traumatic ritual abuse. How do shamans get these communications with the "spirits"? The hypothesis that these "spirits" may in some cases be personalities dissociated from the shaman is not to be excluded, and it may be that this personality splitting is created by rituals. Some rituals are not traumatic, others are and involve traumas with the function of producing fierce and intrusive alter identities that can easily be taken for demonic entities.

In his book *"The Way of the Shaman",* **Michael Harner describes the initiatory journey of a shaman, but he does not develop the way in which the spiritual entities called** *"guides"* **or** *"guardians"[1] come to be part of the inner* **psychic world of the shaman initiate. According to Harner,** *the guardian spirit must come to the* **shaman following** *a severe illness or it is necessary to* **deliberately go to meet him during a** *"quest for vision".* **In his book, Harner uses terms such as** *"another identity", "alter ego"* **or** *"another self"* **in reference to** *the guardian spirit of the* **shaman. In the book** *"Primitive Magic: The Psychic Powers of Shamans and Sorcerer",* **Ernesto De Martino quotes an ethnographic account by Martin Gusinde who uses the terms** *"double personality", "second personality", "medium personality"* **to describe the shaman's interaction with spirits. De Martino also quotes a text by another shamanism specialist, Shirokogoroff, for whom the drum aims to** *"produce the attenuation of the awakened consciousness"* **and to** *"promote* *duplication (the coming of the "spirit")* **(...)** *During ecstasy, the degree of doubling of the personality and the elimination of conscious elements are variable, but in any case there are limits in both directions, that is to say that the state of the shaman must not turn into a crisis of uncontrolled hysteria, and on the other hand, that the ecstasy must not cease: indeed, neither the crisis of uncontrolled hysteria, nor the suppression of ecstasy allow the regular activity of the second personality and the subsequent autonomy of intuitive thinking."* **De Martino then takes up the story of Aua who interpreted her illness** *"as an invitation to become a shaman, as a vocation* **(...) After various troubles, he will finally find a psychic balance, and** *"instead of the threat of a dissolution of the unitary presence, he now constitutes a double existence* **(...)** *but an existence which, although double, is under the control of a single unitary presence, which emerges victorious from this extra.ordinary psychic adventure*[171]**".**

All the terms used here may correspond to alter personalities due to a split of the shaman's personality. It can be a controlled and controlled dissociation of identity, in a way a shamanic management of dissociative identity disorder (see Chapter 5). The shaman would thus transform a sudden state into a dominated state, a passive dissociation into an active dissociation. The shaman is above all a sick person who has managed to heal, a healer who has healed himself. "During the dramatic and painful fights with the evil spirits, the shamans are engaged in a fierce battle with the physical and psychological forces they experienced during their illness[172] ."

In his book "How about Demons? Possession and Exorcism in the Modern World," Felicitas Goodman writes: "The Shaman Yanomamo in whom Hekura returned is no longer the same person as before. His facial expression is radically different, he moves in a way that has nothing to do with his habit... Even his voice is unrecognizable. Rarely will a practitioner of this kind later remember what happened[in 173] ."

So are we dealing here with real possession or deep dissociation with personality splitting and dissociative amnesia? Perhaps it is also a mixture of both. We will develop this particularly interesting topic in Chapter 6 concerning the link between trauma, dissociation and connection to other dimensions.

One element that could bring shamanic "possessions" closer to dissociative identity disorder (multiple personality) is that sometimes this "possession" of the shaman is only partial. The shaman enters into a trance but the entity does not necessarily take control of its body. This experience is often described as an "inner journey" during which the sorcerer tries to communicate with the spirits. This kind of mental functioning is perhaps related to the DSM-5 (American Medical Manual of Diagnostics) category concerning dissociative disorders and dissociative trance.

Michael Harner adds that a person can sometimes obtain a "guardian spirit" in an "involuntary way", but he does not say how. Is it through accidental trauma? Later in his book, Harner explains that the Jivaro tribe commonly gives its newborns a hallucinogenic drug whose purpose is to accompany the child in a process aimed at obtaining a guardian spirit... After briefly mentioning this practice of drugbing the newborn, he indicates that there are other involuntary ways in which the child can acquire a "guardian spirit", but without going into details.

In his book *"The Occult: A History",* Colin Wilson argues that traumas are part of the shamanic formation of certain tribes, he writes: *"The shaman himself has completed his priesthood through the most terrifying rituals and initiations by* pain! 174! ."

Douchan Gersi, the author of *"Fa.ce in the Smoke: An Eyewitness Experience of Voodoo, Shamanism, Psychic Healing and Other Amazing Human Powers"* **wrote:** *"Becoming a shaman requires years of painful initiations. I have heard that many neophytes die because of the harshness of initiation. The neophyte endures the worst physical and psychological torments leading even to the* *madnessl*175\."

In an article entitled "The Role of Fear in Traditional and Contemporary Shamanism", Michael York writes: "The use of shamanic techniques as a rapidly accessible tool to develop human potential, is in total disagreement with traditional tribal shamanism in which it is very rare for the individual to voluntarily choose to become a shaman. In an Aboriginal context, the individual conducts a long and arduous training to become a shaman, usually following the experience of a profound unwanted trauma[176\."

Mircéa Eliade describes thus an initiatory ritual of an Australian "man-medicine": "Finally, the third method includes a long ritual in a deserted place where the candidate must suffer, in silence, the operation is done by two old medicine-men: they rub his body with rock crystals so as to skin the skin, squeeze crystals on his scalp, pierce a hole under the nail of the right hand and make an incision on his tongue (...) After this initiation the candidate is subjected to a special diet with countlesstaboos! 177! ."

In his book entitled "The Makhuwa Heritage in Mozambique", Pierre Macaire writes about shamanic initiations: "Initiations take place in isolated places, huts, where the neophyte is delivered to sufferings that are comparable to those of a monster that engulfs and digests (dismember, tears the flesh of the bones and the eyes from their orbits) (...) The death of the neophyte then means a regression in the embryonic state, a regression which is not of a purely psychological nature, but fundamentally cosmologicall 178\."

Perhaps this monster that engulfs and digests is to be compared to the great god of slaughter that we find in the

Egyptian Book of the Dead, a flesh-eater and bone crusher, powerful with terror that washes in the blood. A morbid symbolism possibly related to the initiatory rituals of death and resurrection.

Mircéa Eliade reports that shamanic initiations sometimes involve traumatic rituals as a result of which the initiate returns to the village with such amnesia that even the basic gestures of everyday life must be re-learned... and it is then given a new name. Here we find the principle of the tabula rasa following a radical trauma, a blank slate on which perhaps rewrites a new identity. This is the basis of MK-Monarch mental programming. Just as the traditional shaman will develop connections with the spirit world during his initiation, the satanic/traumatic ritual abuses through which the child passes will create a spiritual breach as well as a splitting of his personality making him an initiate. It then becomes a medium that bridges our world and the spirit world, an indispensable piece to embody and carry out projects established from other spheres.

Jean Eisenhower, a survivor of mind control, described a method used by a tribe to train a shaman by intentionally inducing trauma in the young child. The child is separated from his tribe for a few years by being locked in a cage a short distance from the village. We don't talk to him anymore, we don't take care of him except to provide him with the basic care. The child can hear the tribe but he cannot interact with the members and he will therefore split psychologically and turn his consciousness towards the grandeurs of the cosmos, the other dimensions of the being. These other dimensions are inhabited by entities that will interact with the child and with whom he will establish strong relationships. Finally the tribe reintegrates him with honor and benevolence into the village, but the young shaman will never be like the others again. for
for the rest of his life he will do spiritual work for his tribe[179].

The film *"A Man Called Horse"* (1970) depicts traumatic shamanic practices inspired by real facts. The film tells the story of a captive white man from a Sioux tribe. Once the *pale face* has managed to show his hunting prowess and gain the respect of the tribe, he is allowed to participate in an initiatory ritual of tribal torture. The ceremony consists of hanging it in the air by hooks planted in its pectorals. During the torture, the man enters a trance that appears to be the result of physical suffering. His altered state of consciousness then provokes spectacular visions. According to North American Indian scholars, such rituals were practiced in the past and are still practiced today in some tribes. White men sometimes call this ritual *"Sun.' Dance"* (the Dance of the Sun), however the Indian term to describe this ceremony translates better as *"Sun Gazing Dance"* (the dance of contemplation of the sun). The author of *"Lame Deer Seeker of Visions: The life of a Sioux Medicine Man",* John Lame Deer, describes this ceremony as follows: *"Dance is no longer as violent as it was in the past, but it still requires a lot of effort from a man. Even today, a man can faint due to lack of food or water. He can be so thirsty when he blows in his eagle bone whistle, that his throat becomes as cra.quelée as a river bed has dried. For a while, he will lose his sight by staring at the sun and his eyes will see only incandescent spirals and bright lights. When the eagle's talons* (editor's note: hooks at the end of a rope) *penetrate his chest, the pain in his flesh can become so intense that there comes a time when he will no longer feel them at all* (editor's note: dissociated state). *It is at this point, when the sun burns in his head, his strength is gone and his ja.mbes have flexed, he enters a trance and the visions occur. The visions of its transformation into a 'medicine man', visions of the future* (**...**) *It is when we fast on the hill or by tearing our flesh during the Dance of the Sun, that we experience sudden Vittumination, coming from the Great Spirit. This enlightenment, this discernment does not come pa.s easily, and we do not* want *pa.s of angels or saints to* bring us in*second hand*[180]. *" The American authorities banned the Dance of the Sun and other tribal rites in 1881. The practice continued, however, underground until 1934, when the ban was lifted by the Indian Reorganization Act.*

Here again, we find that rituals causing extreme physical and psychological suffering lead to deep dissociative states that open the door to a form of spiritual enlightenment. In the book "Kahuna

Magic", Brad Steiger states that circumcision was practiced among Hawaiians as a kind of blood ritual. Without anesthesia, circumcision is an extremely painful ritual experience that certainly causes a profound alteration of consciousness - to escape the unbearable pain - the infant then enters a deep dissociative state... What are the future consequences?

M.D. Lemonick, the author of a *Time article* entitled *The Secret of Maya, reports that* in Mayan culture (from Mexico and Guatemala) the profound altered states of consciousness had religious significance for the community. Lemonick writes that *the rituals ma.cabres of bloodletting a,ccompa,gn were any major political or religious event in the ancient Mayan culture* (**...**) *The intense pain of such rituals provoked visions allowing initiates to communicate with ancestors and with mythological entities*l181]..*"*

Dr. James Randall Noblitt hypothesizes that repeated experiences of trauma are necessary for the creation of dissociated identities. However, some blood rituals including sacrifices and cannibalism can probably lead to the mental integration of the image of the victim, or the entity (god or goddess) that the victim symbolizes, which would thus facilitate the creation of dissociated identities or alter personalities among worship followers.

It is with the discovery of the deep states of dissociation caused by traumatic rituals that some shamans gave birth to a new spiritual tradition: The witchcraft and black magic. Such a traumatic and diabolical practice has obvious drawbacks (violence, pain and the total abandonment of all morality) but on the other hand, this witchcraft is capable of producing powerful and lasting experiences of possession and dissociation creating links with demonic entities, purveyors of various powers.

In many pre-industrial cultures, there was this desire to have the immediate presence of the gods in the community. Such a thing was possible when a god took possession of an individual. Among all the methods of invoking the gods, the use of traumatic techniques was the most effective way of producing possession and thus of obtaining the immediate presence of a god or a deity. In most cultures, traumatic rituals had to remain secret, when personality splitting and traumatic amnesia worked effectively, so the victim could not reveal the details of the ceremony. It has been shown with dissociative patients that when dissociation gradually disappears, it facilitates the return of traumatic memories.

Through repetitive observation, malevolent wizards understood that they could create particular 'entities' that could be at their service. Isiah Oke calls this entity the Iko-Awo or slave spirit. The slave spirit is probably a dissociated alter personality that is created in the victim during a traumatic ritual. The Iko-Awo is instructed to do whatever the sorcerer commands him to do, including committing suicide. The victim will be amnesiac of the traumatic ritual and ignorant of the evil programming that took place during the initiatory ritual. "The slave spirit" is therefore a dissociated mental state, comparable to an alter identity in an individual with a multiple personality. The slave spirit is created by the sorcerer during a traumatic ritual, usually during childhood. The victim will remain amnesiac of the abuse and the existence of this programming. This process may be similarly found in some patients with dissociative identity disorder. They are usually amnesic of the abuses that caused their dissociation and their alter personalities.

The black magic associated with mind control probably works that way. When a spell is thrown, a curse or trigger signal is given, "the slave spirit" is called to surface and take control of the victim's body. This "slave spirit" is programmed by the sorcerer to perform particular tasks. Commands can be a simple signal to which the victim has previously been conditioned during a traumatic ritual to meet the request of the sorcerer. When the sorcerer has effectively programmed several individuals from the same tribe, then his community will have great fear and respect for him or her, especially after such "magical powers" have been publicly demonstrated. Wizards who themselves have dissociated personalities (assimilated to gods or deities by laymen) will probably be considered even more "powerful". Such practices are secretly transmitted from generation to generation in the families of sorcerers and occultists. It is important to note that in many cultures, witchcraft is considered hereditary. In the United States, the problem of ritual abuse is frequently multigenerational, and another worrisome feature of witchcraft in many cultures is incest.

Now let's look at alchemists and kabbalists. Alchemists are known for their research on the "philosopher's stone", supposed to change lead into gold. Some interpret this as a metaphor representing the process that the individual goes through to transform into a spiritually higher being. According to Robert Ziegler, in alchemy suffering is considered a process of "purification of the basic nature of man to transform it." Indeed, the trials and sufferings of life make it possible to evolve, it can be the more or less difficult hazards occurring throughout the life of an individual, sometimes painful experiences that shape the person and that allow him to overcome them and evolve. However, this notion of transcendence through suffering and pain applies and is embodied in a much more basic way through traumatic initiation rituals causing direct physical suffering. Suffering that triggers a neurological process of transcendence: dissociation, a function that allows the initiate to overcome and overcome the physical and psychological pain intentionally caused during rituals. This dissociative process also allows access to another reality. All this is summarized in the Masonic formula "Ordo ab Chao" (order by chaos), a formula closely related to alchemy.

The search for the elixir of life and the fountain of youth by alchemists may represent the desire to escape the limitations of mortality through magic. The infamous Gilles de Rais was tried and convicted in 1440 for the murder of one hundred and forty children. The one who was nicknamed "Bluebeard" looked for the philosopher's stone in the blood of the children with whom he worked in the manner of an alchemist... An isolated madman? Unfortunately, the Child is a source of youth for the worst occultists of yesterday and today.

Alchemists are also interested in the creation of the homoncule, a replica of an artificially created human being, just like the "golem" of kabbalists. In his book "The Sorcerer Handbook", Wade Baskin explains that a "golem" is a kind of homoncule. In the Kabbalistic tradition and Jewish mysticism, the golem is an automaton humanoid, a zombie without soul or conscience created by a magician, a sorcerer. It is possible that the homoncule of alchemists and the golem of kabbalists are in fact references to dissociated personality states that can be created by traumatic rituals. In "The Golem and Ecstatic Mysticism", Bettina Knapp wrote that golems are created in the phenomenal or experimental world of occultists when they are in a modified state of consciousness. In Jewish mysticism, golems are soulless bodies and one can think that at one time, when traumatic rituals and dissociative trance ended up creating an alter identity, this fraction of magical personality could be considered an empty shell without a soul, because created only by magic. For the sorcerer, this alter personality did not exist as a real person, she was simply a golem. She could therefore be a victim of violence and be used as a soulless robot to serve as a slave.

In 1932, Joseph Achron composed a suite for orchestra entitled "Le Golem''. The first part of the work introduces the golem while the last part, which is the exact inverted mirror of the first part, represents the disintegration, the dissolution of the golem. Fritz Springmeier argues that mind control techniques use musical sequences to bring out the deepest alter personalities in a programmed individual. The inversion of this musical sequence will dissolve again the alter, the golem, in the depths of the psyche of the victim. We find here what William Sargant described with the Orisha cult in which the different personalities of the followers come and go according to certain occult processes of which
only the high initiates know the workings.

In his book Kabbalah, Gershom Scholem describes kabbalistic doctrine with some of its magic practices. "Various ideas and practices related to the concept of golem also take their place in the practice of Kabbalah thanks to the combination of the characteristics of the Sefer Yezirah and a number of magical traditions." The operative part of kabbalah that concerns the creation of the golem uses trances, magic and visualizations. Scholem writes: "In this circle, the Sefer Yezirah is almost always interpreted in the manner of Saadiah and Shabbataï Donnolo (editor's note: two authors involved in Satanism), with a tendency to see this book as a guide for mystics and followers of magic. The study and understanding of this book is considered a success when the mystic reaches the vision of the golem, which is linked to a specific ritual with a remarkable ecstatic result (editor's note: altered state of consciousness). ''

Jewish wizards used God's secret Kabbalistic names, in accordance with the precise instructions for creating the golem. Once created, the golem must in turn recite the combination of Hebrew letters but in the opposite direction. In addition, the "Seal of the Holy Name" must be inscribed on the forehead of the golem with the word "emet(h)" ("truth" in Hebrew and one of the names of God). At some point, to stop and dissolve the golem, the first letter (Aleph) of the inscription he has on his forehead is erased, resulting in the word ''met(h)'' which means ''death''. Fritz Springemeier argues that this type of occult programming is used nowadays to manipulate the deepest alter personalities in MK slaves.

It may be that the alchemists themselves were aware of how to create alter personalities. Through the experimentation of dissociated personalities, they would thus be able to lead to another of their quest which is the discovery of "spiritual gold": that is to say eternal youth, the fact of feeling youth even in old age. Such a thing can happen when a child alter personality takes control of the individual. Another thing that can also produce the illusion of immortality is the creation of an alter personality whose identity is transmitted from generation to generation. Some survivors of ritual abuse testified that their families practiced a kind of "ancestor worship". They thus think they are attaining immortality by inserting their identity into another individual who will live after them and this identity or personality will be transmitted successively in future generations. Do the damned souls of the ancestors then take possession of their descendants with a fractional personality and therefore wide open to act as mediums?

The scientists of the twentieth century who worked on mind control projects such as the MK-Ultra did not invent anything, they only took uppsycho-spiritual processes that had been discovered for a very long time by sorcerers, shamans and occultists.

Psychiatrist William Sargant who worked in the MK-Ultra program said that "methods of religious initiations are often so close to modern political techniques of brainwashing and thought control that one sheds light on the mechanisms of the other." He also wrote in his book "Battle for the Mind": "It is one thing to break down a person's mind by inflicting extreme stress on him... it is another to make new ideas firmly take root in one's mind.'' That's all the work of MK programmers.

This governmental and scientific interest in trance states, dissociation and psychic powers was motivated by the desire for absolute control over the individual, and more generally over the whole society and the whole world; unlike shamans and other tribal sorcerers who have no plans for a globalist conquest and whose practices only affect or affect their community.

Wizard-controllers have understood the advantage they can derive from this science of the mind to manipulate programmed, amnesic and loyal individuals. Mk-Ultra-type mental programming is a perverse deviation from the old practices to form a shaman. Through sensory isolation, torture, drugs, hypnosis, electric shocks and sexual trauma, the subject becomes both amnesic and totally enslaved. It can be programmed for this or that function; functions in which his physical and intellectual abilities will be much higher than average. During this traumatic process, he may also have developed paranormal psychic faculties such as mediumship and remote vision (topic developed in chapter 6).

It is only recently that mind control has modernized to become a science in its own right. Thousands of non-consenting human guinea pigs have been and still are subjected to such experiments. It is a real science, a psychic and spiritual surgery that does a lot of damage.

4 - Rituals of sacrifice in the Old Testament

The Bible teaches us that sacrificial rituals were a common practice in the pagan nations of the Old Testament. The Bible calls this type of ritual: "going through fire" (Jeremiah 32:35, Leviticus 18:21, 2 Kings 23:10). This ritual of sacrificing children to the fire is quoted by Moses when he declared the list of Laws against Sexual Crimes: Thou shalt not surrender any of your descendants to pass through fire in honor of Moloch (Leviticus 18:21).

Moloch is a demonic entity represented as a horned beast, an idol taking the form of a bull or a giant goat. The Bible did not include these rituals of child sacrifice in the list of sexual crimes for nothing. Modern satanic ritual abuses related to child sacrifices also involve rape and sexual orgies. Here are some passages from the Bible about the sacrifices of children serving as an offering to demons:

Anyone among the Israelites or among the immigrants who stay in Israel delivers to Moloch one of his descendants, will be punished by death. (Leviticus 20:2).

Thou will not do so with respect to Jehovah thy God; for they did for their gods all kinds of horrors which are odious to Jehovah, and even they burned with fire their sons and daughters in honor of their gods. (Deuteronomy 12:31)

Those of Avva made Nibhaz and Tartaq; those Sepharvaïm burned their sons by fire in honor of Adrammelech and Anammelech, gods of Sepharvaïm. (2 Kings 17:31)

They mingled with the nations and they learned (to imitate their works),

They worshipped their idols, Who were for them a trap, They sacrificed their sons and daughters to demons, They shed innocent blood, The blood of their sons and daughters, That they sacrificed to the idols of Canaan, And the country was desecrated by murders, They prostituted themselves by their actions.

(Psalm 106:35-39)

Who are you kidding?

Against whom do you open a wide mouth and pull your tongue?

Aren't you rebellious children?

An engeance full of falsity, Igniting near the terebinths, Under any green tree,

Slaughtering children in ravines, under rock slits?

(Isaiah 57:4–5)

They built high places in Topheth, in the valley of Ben-Hinnom, To burn their sons and daughters with fire: What I had not ordered, What had not come to my mind.

(Jeremiah 7:31)

For they have abandoned me,

They made this place unrecognizable, They offered incense to other gods, That do not know them, their fathers, nor the kings of Judah, And they filled this place with the blood of the innocents, They built high places in Baal, To burn their sons in Baal with fire: What I had not ordered , What I had not talked about, What had not come to my mind.

(Jeremiah 19:4-5)

You took your sons and daughters, whom you had given birth to me, and you sacrificed them to devour them! Wasn't that enough of your prostitutions?

You have slaughtered my sons and given them, making them pass by fire in their honor.

(Ezekiel 16:20-21)

I defiled them with their gifts, when they made all their elders pass by fire; I wanted to plunge them into desolation and make them recognize that I am the Lord.

(Ezekiel 20:26)

The Lord said to me:

Son of man,

Will you judge Oholah and Oholiba?

Describe to them their horrors, for they have engaged in adultery, and there is blood in their hands: They have committed adultery with their idols; In addition, their sons that they had given birth to me, They made them go through the fire for them, So that they would be devoured.

Here again they did to me: They defiled my sanctuary in the same day, and desecrated my Sabbaths.

While immolating their sons to their idols, They went the same day to my sanctuary, to desecrate it.

That's what they did in the middle of my House.

(Ezekiel 23:36-39)

You hate the good

And you love evil,

You remove their skin and flesh from above the bones.

They devour the flesh of my people, tear off their skin

And they break his bones.

And they put the pieces
Like (what is cooked) in a pot, Like meat in a cauldron.

Then they will cry out unshovah, but he will not answer them; He will hide his face from them at that time, because they have committed bad deeds.

(Micah 3:2-4)

Your father is the devil, and you want to fulfill your father's desires. He was murderous from the beginning, and he did not hold himself in the truth, because the truth is not in him. When he utters the lie, his words come from himself because he is a liar and the father of the lie.

(Jean 8 :44)

Chapter 3

The MK-Ultra Program

> "Mk-Ultra was designed with many sub-projects to develop the perfect soldier, the perfect spy. What I was told was that it had to serve our National Security more than any soldier or diplomat could ever do... No one has told me that they are being used for drug trafficking and prostitution. No one told me that they were used as livestock to provide children to sheikhs and world leaders. No one has told me that we
>
> used for money laundering operations."
>
> Mark Philipps - Mind-Control Out of Control Conference, 31 October 1996.

1 - Brief history

During the "Cold War", the arms race included research on war material but also on mind control and behavior modification. The aim was to manipulate, modify and control the consciousness and behaviour of targeted individuals or groups.

Following the war, the United States and the USSR considered that this field of research had an obvious military interest and the development of these "non-lethal weapons" (includingpsycho-electronic weapons) was discreetly set up in experimental programs of the American and Soviet army and intelligence services; all strictly covered by defense secrecy.

The forerunners of scientific experiments on mind control were the

Nazis. In Nazism, there is the notion of

"ideological war" aimed at imposing their ideology on the countries they occupied. The Americans took up this doctrine and called it "psychological warfare". Psychological warfare is "the use of propaganda or other mind control techniques to influence or confuse thought, or to overthrow morality" (Webster's New World Dictionary). This post-war psychological struggle aimed to transform the minds of populations, from the simple individual to a global scale. This is what we saw in chapter 1 with engineering/social psychiatry.

The roots of the MK-Ultra program go back to Nazi Germany. Adolf Hitler had indeed detected a certain satanic "culture" in northern European families immersed in transgenerational incest.

Families who systematically practice ritual abuse of their offspring, practices involving physical torture and

Psychological. The Nazis understood that the victims of such violence in childhood developed certain dissociative peculiarities that made them totally permeable to "robotic" mental control. During the Second World War, the Nazis experimented with the use of drugs, hypnosis, trauma and various chemicals on concentration camp inmates as part of research on mental and behavioral control. Following the war, during Operation Paperclip (made public in 1973), many Nazi scientists, including psychiatrists, were secretly brought back to the American continent and then infiltrated into the military, academic and private sectors for all kinds of scientific research, including psychiatry and government projects on the

mental programming. For the Americans, it was clear that if they did not

were not bringing these scientists home, so it was their enemy, the Soviet Union, that would have used them. Major General Hugh Knerr, deputy commander of the U.S. Air Force in Europe, wrote:

"The

the discovery and occupation of German scientific and industrial establishments has revealed that we are lagging behind alarmingly in many areas of

research. If we do not seize the opportunity to recover the material and the brains that developed them to get them back to work as soon as possible, we will be several years late before reaching a level that is already being exploited [182]."

In August 1945, President Truman approved the Paperclip project to transfer Hitler's best scientists to the United States. In November 1945, the first Nazi scientists landed on American soil. By the early 1950s, the CIA and U.S. military were conducting their own mind control programs codenamed Chatter, Bluebird, Artichoke, MK-Often, MK-Ultra puis le MK-Search, MK-Naomi, MK-Delta, Monarch...

In 1977, the New York Times published a CIA directive about the objectives of the Artichoke project launched in 1951:
"Evolution and

development of any method by which we can obtain

information from a person against his will and without him having any

knowledge (...) Can we gain control of an individual to the point that he will accomplish our goals against his will and even against the laws?

fundamentals of nature such as self-preservation[183] ?"

As a continuation of Operation Paperclip, Project MK-Ultra, led by Sydney Gottlieb, was launched on April 13, 1953 by then CIA Director Allan Dulles. With an initial budget of $300,000, or 6% of the CIA's annual research budget, this was an important program of study. Over the next decade, U.S. taxpayers donated more than $25 million to this classified program.

secret-defense that was the MK-Ultra[184]. During this period many sub-projects focused on the control of the human mind were born. Like the Bluebird and Artichoke project, the existence of the MK-Ultra was known to very few people and the US Congress itself was completely unclear about this type of research. The MK-Ultra program was conducted in 80 institutions including prestigious universities and hospitals, but also penitentiary institutions. Examples include: Princeton, Harvard, Yale,
Columbia, Stanford, Baylor,

Georgetown University Hospital, Boston Psychopathie Hospital,
Mt Sinai

Hospital...

Many scientists have participated in this research, including James Hamilton, Louis Jolyon West, William Sargant, Ewen Cameron, Leonard Rubenstein, John Gittinger, Robert Heath, William Sweat, Harold Wolff, Lawrence Hinkle, Carl Pfeiffer, Harold Abramson, Martin Orme, Jose Delgado and many others. The four directors of the CIA who succeeded each other during the period of activity of the MK-Ultra and MK-Search program are: Allen W.

Dulles, John A. McCone, William F. Raborn et Richard Helms.

This research on mind control officially ended in the early 70s. Most of the files were deliberately destroyed in 1973 under the orders of Richard Helms, who explained his action in 1975: *"There were relations in this program with foreign scientists who were sensitive to this kind of thing, when the project ended, we thought that by getting rid of the files, it would save all those who helped us from having to suffer* **embarrassingharassment! 185]..."**

Richard Helms not only admitted that he had destroyed the records but also admitted that foreign scientists had carried out studies on mind control without having any idea that they were

involved by their contract in the MK-Ultra program.
Helms was determined to protect them and keep their identities secret, certainly because of the immoral nature of these experiments.

Despite this, some documents have been preserved and testimony in the U.S. Senate has subsequently made it possible to publicize the techniques that have been used on hundreds, if not thousands, of non-consenting humans. "Mind control" was induced by drugs, electroshocks, over-stimulations or deprivations

sensory, hypnosis, ultrasound, irradiations,

psychosurgery including implants, as well as various traumas

extremes aimed at creating dissociation and a real tabula rasa in the victims. This type of MK program had three goals: 1 / Induce hypnosis very quickly in an involuntary subject 2 / Create a lasting amnesia 3 / Permanently implant functional post-hypnotic suggestions

This research aimed, among other things, at the creation of Manchu Candidates. This is an individual who has been brainwashed and has been programmed to kill with amnesia once the operation is complete. Dr. Colin Ross, a Canadian psychiatrist and former president of the International Society for the Study of Dissociation, wrote in his book "Bluebird[186]":"The main objective of mind control programs during the Cold War was to deliberately create dissociative disorders, including multiple personality disorders (editor's note: dissociative disorder of

, identity). The "Manchurian Candidate" was well created, it is not fiction. It was created by the CIA in the 50s as part of Operations Bluebird and Artichoke (...) To be able to understand these experiences on "super-spies", we must put them in their social and historical context. It was a time when experiments on mind control were ubiquitous and systematic. These were not isolated "mad scientists", but heads of the institutions.

psychiatric and major medical schools (...) According to my definition, the Manchu Candidate is an individual with an experimentally created dissociative identity disorder that meets the following four criteria:

1/ It is created deliberately.

2/ A new identity is implanted in him.

3/ Amnesic barriers are created.

4/ It is used in real or simulated operations.''

A declassified CIA document entitled ''Hypnotic Experimentation and Reasearch, 10 February 1954'' describes a simulation related to research on Manchu Candidates. Experience proves that it is possible to program an individual into an undetectable assassin and totally unaware of his actions:

''Miss X has been instructed (She has already expressed her fear of firearms before) to use all the means at her disposal to awaken Miss Y (kept in a deep hypnotic sleep). If she can't do it, she can take the pistol nearby and shoot Miss Y. She was programmed so that her rage would be so great that she would not hesitate to kill Y for failing to wake her up. Miss X followed the instructions to the letter, including firing (pistol not loaded) at Y, and then falling into a deep sleep herself. After a few

appropriate suggestions, both were awakened. Miss X expressed a total denial of what had just happened (so she was amnesiac).'' (CIA Mori ID 190691,2/10/54)

“/-~~▪/

This work on human mental and behavioural control also led to the drafting of a confidential mental manipulation and psychological torture codenamed ''Kubark''. Written in 1963, it was made public in 1997 when journalists from the Baltimore Sun obtained its declassification in the name of freedom of information. The document of 128 pages were presented as a manual of interrogations intended for the counterintelligence.

People who suffer from mental illnesses make good subjects for these experiences because they are often deprived of their rights and it is easy to discredit them afterwards by putting their testimonials on the account of their illness. Karen Wetmore is one of these victims of the MK-Ultra program, she is the author of the book "Surviving Evil: CIA Mind-Control Experiments in Vermont".

During her adolescence, in the early 70s, she was interned for "schizophrenia" in a psychiatric hospital in Vermont. A long stay of which she kept only fragmented memories. It was not until adulthood that she was diagnosed with dissociative disorder of identity, a personality disorder that has most certainly been reinforced by these experiments on mind control.

In 1995, a psychologist advised him to consult his medical file to find out what exactly had happened in this hospital.

psychiatric. She then discovers that she has been given a very strange treatment, she describes it as a "psychological rape".

While researching the doctors who followed her, she discovered a certain Dr. Robert W. Hyde who was regularly mentioned in her file.

Further researching she discovers that this doctor was in contact with Sydney Gottlieb, one of the managers of the MK-Ultra program. According to psychiatrist Colin Ross who investigated Karen Wetmore's case, she could have been selected because she already suffered from a dissociative disorder due to the repetitive sexual abuse she had experienced as a child. According to Ross, the scientists of the MK-Ultra were interested in reactions to programmed stimuli with for example keywords, codes to create a click. A person with dissociative disorder

the identity already has several personalities, so it is easier to make him a killer responding to orders without discussing than with a person not

Split. While studying Karen Wetmore's case, Ross discovered that doctors had given her pentylene-tetrazole, a product used by the Soviets during interrogations and for brainwashing.

In addition, her medical record indicates that she received several dozen

consecutive electroshocks in a single session. several

psychiatrists have demonstrated that electroshocks can lead to the patient's amnesia. For Dr. Ross, there was no justification for such treatment on Karen Wetmore, he is convinced that the CIA doctors subjected her to electroshocks to erase her memory and that it is very likely that she was subjected to a mental control program. He came to this conclusion by seeing the treatment she had undergone, that is, the type of medication she had been given, the systematic and repetitive electroshock sessions, but also by the diagnoses that were made by the doctors who followed her at the time.

An internal CIA document[187] dating from 1955 gives a list of methods used in MK programs:

- Substances causing illogical reasoning and impulsivity to the point that the subject will publicly discredit himself.
- Substances increasing mental abilities and perceptual abilities.
- Materials preventing or counteracting the toxic effects of alcohol.
- Materials that increase the toxic effects of alcohol.
- Materials that produce the signs and symptoms of known diseases in a reversible manner, thus being able to be used to simulate them.
- Materials increasing the effectiveness of hypnosis.
- Substances that enhance the individual's ability to endure deprivation, torture and coercion during interrogation or brainwashing.
- Physical materials and methods that produce amnesia of events occurring before and during their use.
- Physical methods to produce shock and confusion on long periods of time and susceptible to stealthy use.
- Substances causing physical disabilities such as paralysis of the legs, acute anemia, priapism.
- Substances causing a "pure" euphoria, without "redescent".
- Substances altering the personality in such a way that the subject will tend to become dependent on another person.

- Materials causing such mental confusion that the individual will have difficulty supporting an invented story during an interrogation.
- Substances that lower the ambition and overall effectiveness of the subject even when administered in undetectable amounts.
- Substances that cause weakness and visual or auditory distortion, preferably without permanent effects.
- Knocking pill that can be administered surreptitiously in food, beverages, cigarettes, or as an aerosol that can be used safely, causing maximum amnesia and that could be suitable for certain types of agents on an ad hoc basis.
- Material that can be administered surreptitiously through the upper routes, and which in very small quantities make physical activity impossible.

Thanks to these experiments, the American intelligence services have been able to make a general clearing of the various techniques and technologies intended to modify the psyche and human behavior. Subsequently, research quickly turned to the study of

the electrical and radio activity of the brain for the design of electromagnetic weapons, called "psychotronics". The report of the Peace and Security Research (GRIP) entitled "Non-lethal weapons: a new arms race" (Luc

Mampaey, GRIP 1999), defined as the devices altering the

behavior: "The objective of these weapons systems is to interfere with the biological and/or psychological processes of the human organism, by subjecting it to physical, chemical, electromagnetic stimuli or "morphing" techniques, without the intention of giving death, but with the aim of inducing a certain behavior, altering mental faculties or influencing memory."

The *New York Times* publicly revealed mk's programs in August 1977. The article in question contained, inter alia, an extract from a memorandum dated 1950 concerning the recruitment of psychiatrists to conduct experiments: "The ethics of a candidate could be such that he would not wish to participate in some more revolutionary phases of our project (...) In 1963, a report by the Inspector General apparently resulted in the interruption of a program, mentioning that the concepts implemented during the

manipulation of human behavior are considered by many people, both inside and outside the agency, to be repugnant and unethical[188].

Here is an excerpt from this report on inspector general John S. Earman's MK-Ultra: "Research into the manipulation of the

Human behavior is considered by many medical authorities and related fields as professionally immoral, for this reason the reputation of professionals participating in the MK-Ultra program may be endangered. Some of these activities raise questions of legality and ethics. A review of MK-Ultra's programs reveals that the rights and interests of U.S. citizens are impacted. The public disclosure of certain aspects of the MK-Ultra programme could lead to a strong negative reaction in American public opinion[189].

Senator Ted Kennedy stated on August 3, 1977 before the Intelligence Committee, Subcommittee on Health, Research Unit of the Resources Committee.

Human: "The Deputy Director of the CIA revealed that more than thirty universities and institutions had participated in a large project

experiments that included drug tests on subjects

non-voluntary of all social categories, high and low, American and foreign. Many of these tests involved administering LSD to non-consenting subjects in various social situations. At least one death has been recorded, that of Dr. Franck Olson. A death that is due to these activities. The Agency itself has acknowledged that these experiments have no scientific value. The officers who followed up were not competent scientists.'

Dr. Frank Olson was a scientist who worked for the U.S. Army in a top secret division from Fort Detrick to Frederick, Maryland. Olson died in suspicious circumstances in New York (see the documentary Project Artichoke: the

secret CIA experiments). His research for the army is poorly known but he has worked on biological weapons and on mind control through the use of drugs.

All this research on mind control went much further than senator Kennedy claimed above, as did then CIA Director Stanfield Turner, who described the MK-Ultra as a simple drug and drug experimentation program. He declared before the Senate on September 21, 1977: "We are not in a position to reveal to you all the facts concerning these activities, we will just tell you what we know. The dossiers we have studied refer to only a small part of the whole.'

The MK-Ultra program and its subprojects are therefore a real puzzle whose pieces have been destroyed or dispersed. In addition, the CIA had established a network of "screen" companies such as the "Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology", the "Washington Geschikter Fund Medical Research" or the "Josiah Macy Jr. Foundation". This division into a multitude of various projects made it possible to finance discreetly the MK-Ultra programme, which it was necessary to

it was a question of compartmentalizing the projects, but also the researchers. Indeed, these scientists often did not know the identity of their real

employer as well as the many researches in progress, without apparent link, but constituting the same framework. All this forming the pieces of a gigantic puzzle of which only the sponsors hold the assembly plan. The methods of compartmentalization of these "black projects" are still relevant: each individual of the network receives only what "is good to know for him", that is to say that he will only access what he needs to know to do his "job". He thus remains totally ignorant of the globality of the project or projects, receiving only what is strictly necessary in terms of information for the work he carries out at his level.

to say that he will only access what he needs to know to do his job. He thus remains totally ignorant of the globality of the project or projects, receiving only what is strictly necessary in terms of information for the work he carries out at his level.

In 1977, freelance journalist John Marks requested access to all documents from the Office of Research and Development (DSB) of the

CIA's Directorate of Science and Technology (a dispensary)

specialized of the Agency) concerning "any research or operational activity related to bioelectricity, electrical or radio stimulation of the brain, electronic destruction of memory, stereotactic surgery, psychosurgery, hypnosis, parapsychology, irradiations, microwaves and ultrasound." He was informed six months later that the DSB had identified 130 boxes, or about 39 m3 of documentation. John Marks had obtained under the Freedom of Information Act the declassification of a thousand secret CIA documents. It was he who publicly revealed the frightening scale of mk's programs by publishing his research work in 1979 in the book "The Search of the Manchourian Candidate". His access to CIA documents was abruptly halted after the publication of his book in 1979.

Victor Marchetti, a former CIA agent who worked for 14 years

years for the agency, said in interviews that contrary to what it claims in its propaganda, the CIA continues its research on mind control. Marchetti published with John Marks a book entitled "The

CIA and the Cult of Intelligence" (1973). Before the book was published, the CIA sued Marchetti to have 340 elements contained in his book removed, the author having opposed it, it was in the end 110 elements that were censored. This is the first book that the U.S. federal government has had legally censored.
A publication that nevertheless participated in the establishment of the first investigation (Church Committee) on the MK-Ultra project in the United States Congress in 1975.

In 1999, following a request she had made because of the Freedom Of Information Act (FOIA), Carol Rutz received three CD-ROMs from the CIA.

Carol Rutz is a survivor of these MK programs, at the age of 52 she has finally obtained concrete evidence of all these experiments. For her, this was finally the confirmation and validation of her memoirs concerning experiments on mind control. These files had remained for 48

in government coffers, 18,000 pages of declassified documents relating to the Bluebird, Artichoke and MK-Ultra programs. One of these documents states: "When working on individual subjects, special attention will be paid to

granted to dissociative states that tend to spontaneously accompany ESP

(electronicstimulation of the brain). These states can be induced and controlled to some extent with hypnosis and drugs... Data from this study will be obtained from specific groups of individuals, such as psychotics, children and psychics. Researchers

will be particularly interested in dissociative states, in "lowering the mental level", in "loss of the soul", in the multiple personality of those called mediums; and an attempt will be made to induce a certain number of altered states of consciousness using hypnosis." (CIA MORI ID 17396, p.18[190])

The cia documents currently declassified clearly show the objectives of these experiments on mind control: the creation of MK subjects with multiple personalities and with amnesic walls to make them do anything and everything... Here is an extract from a document dated 7 January 1953 which describes how two dissociated girls are made program: "These subjects have clearly demonstrated that they can move from a fully awake state to a deep hypnotic state (H) triggered by telephone, by a question, by the use of a code, a signal or words. This hypnotic control can be transmitted without much difficulty. It has also been demonstrated through experimentation with these girls, that they can act as involuntary messengers for information purposes." (CIA Mori ID 190684,1/7/53)

The document entitled ''SI and H Experimentation, September 25, 1951'' (SI meaning Induction of Sleep and H meaning Hypnosis) reports: ''X has been instructed that when she wakes up, she will have to go to such a room where she will wait at the office for a phone call. When the phone rings, a person named "Jim" will engage in a basic conversation with her. During the conversation, this individual will mention a code name.

When she hears this code name, she will go into a state of SI trance, but she will not close her eyes and will remain perfectly normal for continue the telephone conversation. X is instructed that following this phone call, she will have to follow the following protocol: X who is at that time in a deep SI state, is put in the presence of a device with a timer. She is informed that this device is an incendiary bomb (...) Following the telephone conversation, she is therefore programmed to take this bomb that is in a briefcase, then to go to the toilet where she will meet a woman who is unknown to her and who will identify herself by the code name "New York". X then shows this person how the device works and tells him that it must be brought into such a room and placed in the left drawer of the desk, all for the 82 seconds set to the timer of the device. X is further tasked with telling this girl that as soon as the device is placed and activated, she must retrieve the briefcase, leave the room and go to lie on the couch in the operations room to fall into a state of deep sleep. X is also scheduled to return to the operations room and also plunge into a deep sleep after giving the instructions to the other girl (...) The experiment was

perfectly conducted without any difficulty or hesitation on the part of the girls. Each acted appropriately, the aircraft was properly placed and the two girls returned to the operations room to fall into a state of deep sleep. Throughout the experience, their attitude was natural, there was no difficulty of movement.'' (CIA Mori ID 190527)

9/25/51)

Another internal document describes the excesses of this kind of experimentation: "On July 2, 1951 at about 13:00, instruction

begins with X regarding his studies on sexuality. X stated that he had consistently used hypnosis as a means of inducing young girls to have sex with

11 i n V nnû n t'f ₁ the f û tvtncnrtiûwnû 1iT7-rûr* A re ûo he. 1 , a music list, was forced to engage in commerce sexual with X under the influence of hypnosis. X stated that he had initially put her in a state of hypnotic trance and that he then suggested to her that he was her husband and that she wanted to have sex with him.' (CIA Mori ID 140393 7/2/51)

On October 3, 1995, faced with the accumulation of disturbing revelations about all these experiments on mind control, Bill Clinton, then

president in office, had to make a public apology to his nation: "Thousands of government experiments have taken place in hospitals or universities as well as on military bases all over the country (...) In too many cases, no formal agreement has been sought, americans have been concealed from what they were suffering, and far beyond the guinea pigs themselves, this deception has deceived their families and the whole nation. These experiments have remained secret and they have been concealed not for security reasons but for fear of scandal, and this is abnormal. So today, on behalf of a new generation of American leaders and citizens, the United States of America sincerely apologizes to the citizens who have been victims of these experiments, as well as to their families and loved ones[191].

It is clear that Bill Clinton was forced to present a public apology as the MK-Ultra file had been publicly revealed, an apology of a monster hypocrisy as these programs on mind control never really stopped, on the contrary they did not stop to

progress like an arms race.

In the United States, the subject of mind control is today untouchable and unassailable because it is buried under the National Security Act of 1947. This law on National Security allows indeed to oust any truly disturbing case, so that it cannot be judged fairly just like any other case. The case of Cathy O'Brien (victim of the MK-Monarch program) fully demonstrates how this "National Security Act" systematically makes it possible to stop any attempt to resort to legal proceedings for damages (the word is weak) relating to mental control and this despite all the evidence. (We will come back to this in Chapter 10)

2 - Child victims of the MK-Ultra: testimonies

In 1995, Christine DeNicola, Claudia Mullen and therapist Valerie Wolf testified before a Presidential Advisory Commission (UNITED STATES). Christine DeNicola served as a guinea pig in the MK-Ultra program from the age of 4, from 1966 to 1976. Claudia Mullen was subjected to mental control at the age of 7, from 1957 to 1984. Valerie Wolf told the Commission that about forty therapists had contacted her when they knew she was going to testify publicly, they wanted to tell her about some of their patients who had also been subjected to radiation and mind control techniques. All these testimonies highlight the close correlation that exists between mental programming and all kinds of traumatic techniques ranging from electroshocks to sexual abuse, hypnosis and hallucinogenic drugs. There are almost no publications on mental programming on children, but four sub-projects of the MK-Ultra were particularly aimed at them. Children who were officially treated for dissociative disorders but who eventually found themselves victims of trauma aimed at making them even more dissociated and fractional, and therefore more easily programmable.

Here are the transcripts of the testimonies before the Presidential Advisory Commission involving the deliberate irradiation of human beings.

Testimonies that were filmed in 1995:

- Valerie Wolf (therapist): I have listened to all the previous testimonies and they seem very familiar to me. I'm here to talk about the possible link between

radiation to which these victims have been subjected and mental programming (...) The doctors who exposed them to radiation and administered chemicals to them were the same as those who did research on mental programming (...) It is important to understand that

Mind control techniques may have been used to intimidate subjects, even when they become adults, in order to prevent them from speaking and revealing that they have been victims of these research programs funded by the

government. I have been a therapist for 22 years. I specialized in the treatment of the victims of these programs, and even some of their executioners, as well as their families (...) We are now seeing

protesting throughout the country former victims who have no contact with each other (...) many of these survivors are afraid to tell their stories to their doctors, because they fear that they will be taken for fools. Several of them named the same people, such as this Dr."Green'', accused by many of torturing and raping children during mental programming experiments. One of my patients even managed to find out that his name was Dr. L. Wilson Green. We discovered that one of the Scientific Directors of the Army's Chemical and Radiological Laboratories had this name. Also included are the names of Dr Sidney Gottlieb and Dr Martin Orne also involved in radiological research (...) We have often tried to obtain information by using the Freedom of Information Act, in order to gain access to data concerning the

mental programming. In general, our requests were rejected, however we were able to obtain some information that confirmed what our patients had told us (...) We need to have access to these archives to enable the rehabilitation and treatment of the many victims who present serious psychological and physical disorders (...) It is true that a Commission had been appointed in the late 70s to investigate mental programming, but it did not take an interest in the experiences made on children. At that time, these children were too young to be able to talk about it, some were still being experimented with. The only way to put an end to the suffering of all these victims is to make public everything that has happened during this research on mind control. Please therefore recommend that an investigation be opened and that all records concerning mental control experiences on children be made public. Thank you.

- Christine DeNicola (victim): My parents divorced in 1966. My father, Donald Richard Ebner, was associated with Dr. Green's work. I was subjected to these experiments between 1966 and 1976. In terms of radiation, in 1970 Dr. Green focused his experiments on my neck, throat and chest, and then on my uterus in 1975. Every time I was dizzy, nausea, and I vomited. All these experiences were always associated with mental programming. It was in Tucson, Arizona. Dr. Green mostly used me as a guinea pig for mental programming between 1966 and 1973. Her goal was to control me mentally to train me as a spy and assassin.

My first significant memories date back to 1966 when I was taken to Kansas City University. My father flew me there at a time when my mother was away. He drove me to a place that looked like a lab. It seems to me that there were other children there.

I was stripped of my skin and tied to a table, lying on my back.

Dr. Green placed electrodes on my body and on my head.
He used a kind of projector. While a flash of red light was directed at my forehead, he kept telling me that he was implanting different images in my brain. Between each sequence, he made me undergo electroshocks by asking me to dive ever deeper into my brain, into

my mind. He repeated each sentence several times telling me that it penetrated deep into my brain and that I had to obey everything he had to obey me

would ask to do. I remember that he had given me a sting at the beginning of the session and that I felt drugged. When it was all over, he gave me another sting. Then I remember that I found myself at my house

grandparents in Tucson. I was 4 years old. This experience shows you that Dr. Green was using drugs, trauma, hypnotic suggestions and all sorts of other traumas, to try to control my brain and my intelligence. He used radiation to study its effects on various parts of my body, and also to terrorize me. It was part of his panoply of traumas to program me mentally.

The other experiments were done in Tucson, Arizona, somewhere in the desert. I was taught how to open locks, camouflage myself, how to use my photographic memory and I was shown how to use certain digital techniques to develop my memory. Dr. Green made me "kill" dolls that looked like real children.

Once, after being severely traumatized, I stabbed a doll.

But the next time, I refused. He knew many techniques to make me suffer, but as I grew up I became more and more rebellious (...) Due to my growing lack of cooperation, they eventually abandoned their plan to make me a spy and murderer. Therefore, during the years 1974 to 1976, Dr. Green used various techniques to suppress my assassin programming and to inject me with programs of self-destruction, suicide and death. Why is that? He just wanted me to die. Throughout my adult life, I have struggled to stay alive. If I am still alive, I believe I owe it to God's grace. These terrible experiences have profoundly affected my life. My personality has fragmented into a dissociative identity disorder. Dr. Green's goal was to fragment my personality as much as possible so that I could fully control myself.

It failed! But I have been suffering for years from constant physical, mental and emotional pain. I have been in regular therapy for 12 years. It wasn't until 2 1/2 years ago, when I met my current therapist, who knew about the experiences of

mental programming, that I finally started to make real progress and that I began to heal. In conclusion, I ask you to bear in mind that the memories I have evoked are only a small part of everything I experienced between 1966 and 1976 (...) I know that other people can also be helped, as long as they are given the help they need. Please assist us in our efforts to ensure that these acts

abominable never happen again. Thank you.

- Claudia Mullen (victim): Between 1957 and 1984, I was a toy in the hands of the government.

Her ultimate goal was to mentally program me to make a perfect spy. For this, he used chemicals, radiation, drugs, hypnosis, electroshock, sensory isolation, sleep deprivation, brainwashing and verbal abuse,

physical,emotional and sexual. I have been exploited against my will for almost 30 years. The only explanations I was given were that "the end justifies the means" and that "I was serving my country in its fierce struggle against communism". To sum up my life, I would say that they seized a 7-year-old girl, already traumatized by sexual abuse, to continue to make her suffer in a way that is beyond imagination. The saddest thing is that I knew I wasn't the only one being treated like this. There were countless other children in the same

situation. So far no one has been able to help us.

I have already provided you with a written report in which I have included as much information as possible, including conversations that I have heard in a number of official services responsible for these atrocities. If I have been able to describe all this to you in such detail, it is thanks to my photographic memory, but also to the arrogance of the people concerned. They were sure they could still control my brain. Remembering these atrocities is not an easy thing, and it is not without danger to my family and myself. But I think it's worth taking that risk.

Dr. Green once explained to Dr. Charles Brown "that he preferred to choose children as subjects for his experiments, because it was more fun to work with them, and also cheaper." He needed subjects that were easier to handle than military or government officials.

He therefore chose to take only "consenting girls". He added: "Besides, I like to terrorize them. At the CIA, they think that I am like a god capable of creating through his experiences subjects that obey without discussion everything that Sid (Dr. Sidney Gottlieb) and James (Dr. James Hamilton) could imagine."

In 1958, they told me that I had to be "tested" by a number of important doctors from the Human Ecology Society. I was asked to cooperate with them. I should neither try to look at their

faces,nor seek to know their names because it was a very secret project. They told me this to help me forget everything. Naturally, as all children do in such cases, I did the opposite, and I tried to remember everything. A certain John Gittinger tested me. Dr. Cameron gave me electroshocks, and Dr. Green gave me X-rays. Then Sidney Gottlieb told me that "I was ripe for the great A''. He wanted to talk about the Artichoke program. When I returned home, I only remembered the reasons given by Dr. Robert G. Heath of Tulane School of Medicine to explain all the traces I had on my body: bruises, traces of bites, burns and pain in the genitals. I had no reason to believe that all this had been caused by anything other than what Heath had explained to me. They had already started to control my brain.

The following year, I was sent to a camp in Maryland called Deep Creek Cabins. There, I was taught how to satisfy the sexual desires of men. I was also taught to force them to talk about themselves. There was Richard Helms, the Deputy Director of the CIA, Dr. Gottlieb, Captain George White, and Morris Allan. They had planned to recruit as many senior civil servants and university presidents as possible so that their projects could continue, even in the event that the appropriations for mental programming and experiments with radiation would one day decrease. I was used to trap all kinds of men who did not suspect anything, for this they used a hidden camera. I was only nine years old when I was subjected to all these sexual humiliations. I once heard a conversation about the DSB (Office of Research and Development). This office was headed by Dr. Green as well as Drs. Steven Aldrich, Martin Orne and Morris Allan. Dr. Gottlieb made a rather cynical remark about leaking information about a fairly large group of mentally retarded children who had been subjected to massive doses of radiation. He had asked Dr. Green why he was so worried about these retarded children: "After all, they are certainly not the ones who are going to sell the wick!"' On another occasion, I heard Dr Martin Orne, who headed the Scientific Office, and who then headed the Institute of
Experimental Research, to say that "to continue receiving credits for their projects, their experiments had to use even more coercive means, and even blackmail." He added: "We need to

let's go faster, and then get rid of the subjects, so that they don't come back and ask us later for clarification about what happened.'' I could tell you many other things about these government-funded research projects: the names of the projects and sub-projects, the names of the people involved in the experiments, the locations, the nature of the tests and the different means used to do this.

suffer the subjects (...) I would have liked so much if everything we had suffered had been just a dream that we must quickly forget. But to forget would be a tragic mistake, it would also be a lie.

These are real atrocities that I and so many other children have suffered under the pretext of defending our country. Due to

the accumulation of the harmful effects of radiation, drugs, various chemicals, suffering, psychological and physical trauma, I was deprived of the ability to work normally, and even to have children. It is clear that these experiments were in no way justified. From the outset, they should never have been allowed. Our only way to reveal and highlight the horrible truth is to make public all the archives that may still exist concerning these projects, through the appointment of a new Presidential Commission in charge of

to investigate mental programming. I believe that all citizens of our nation have a right to know what part of reality is, and what part of fiction is. Our greatest protection is that all this never happens again. In conclusion, I can only offer you what I have offered you today: the truth. Thank you for taking the time to

listen tome.

- Dr. Duncan C. Thomas (Professor, University of Southern California, School of Medicine, Department of Preventive Medicine, Los Angeles):

May I ask you what your parents were doing in all this? Do you have any idea how you were recruited for these experiences? Did you have any parents? Do your parents

knew what was going on?

- Christine DeNicola: I can give you a brief answer. It was my father who worked with Dr. Green. My mother was not aware of it, because my parents divorced when I was four years old (...) As far as I am concerned, it was my father who "delivered" me for the experiments. He was the one who took care of me when I was a little girl. He started sexually abusing me very early on. He voluntarily put me in the hands of Dr. Green, but my mother did not know about it.

- Claudia Mullen :

As far as I am concerned, I was adopted at the age of two and a half by a woman who sexually abused me. At that time, she was a friend of the President of Tulane University. At a very young age, I started to

have the symptoms of a child who has been sexually abused, including dissociation from my personality. She therefore asked the President of that University to recommend a child psychiatrist to her. He advised her dr.
Heath, who was involved in this research (MK). I remember very well all the personality tests he gave me. That's how I was recruited for these experiments. My father had no idea. He died when I was very young. I don't know if my mother was actually at

current. To tell you the truth, I don't think she cared much about it. She died when I was a teenager. Subsequently, as I was an orphan, they were then able to use me more easily[192].

Dans son livre “A Nation Betrayed : The Chilling True Story of Secret Cold War Experiments Performed On Our Children and other Innocent People”

Carol Rutz testifies:

"In my family, pedophilia was passed down from generation to generation. I was still wearing diapers when my father started abusing me. It was at the age of two that my mind split in order to manage the trauma of the continual abuse of my father and other members of my family (...) I was "sold" by my grandfather to the CIA in 1952. Over the next twelve years, I underwent experiments and various trainings: Electroshock, drugs, hypnosis, sensory deprivation and other types of trauma to condition myself and split my

personality in order to make me perform specific tasks. Each alter personality was created to activate with a post-hypnotic trigger and perform something that was to be forgotten later. This

Programming of ''Manchu Candidate'' was just one of the possible uses of the extensive mind control program of the CIA, financed by your hard-earned taxes...

I was told that I was working for 'The Agency'. It was actually elites of the CIA and other branches of government who

worked in connivance with some extremely wealthy individuals wanting to shape the world while remaining in the shadows (...)

I too was subjected to torture by Dr. Joseph Mengele in 1956, I was almost nine years old. I was driven by my father on a winding road to an air hangar in the middle of the countryside. Inside, suspended from the beams by pulleys, were cages with naked children inside, it seems to me that most were younger than me. I was placed in one of the cages, and like the others, I was deprived of food and water. I was very cold and I was constantly curled up to hide my nudity. Every time I tried to sleep, someone would give me an electric spur through the bars. The executioner seemed to take pleasure in torturing the children. He stood at the height of the cages, perched on what he could. When he wasn't torturing us, he was on the ground with Dr. Black. They both smiled devilishly, and our tears had absolutely no impact on them. The purpose of all these tortures was to prepare us for the programming. There was a hospital where each of us was taken after the tortures that had made us "cooperators". I received training that taught me the meridians of the body and how to manage the energy flowing in these meridians. It was a preparation for later experiments in which I would have to

use my mind to try to kill psychically from a distance. In another experiment, an alter personality was created for the purpose of memorizing binary codes. If this alter "Robert" could not repeat perfectly what he had learned, I would return to the cage. THE

Trauma-based programming is the cruellest form of brainwashing. It leaves the child completely dissociated and open to the mental programming. Joseph Mengele was a master in the field.

3 - Dr. Ewen Cameron in Canada

As Richard Helms has admitted, several foreign scientists have worked for the CIA's MK-Ultra program.

Among them is Canadian psychiatrist Ewen Cameron, who conducted experiments on brainwashing for seven years. Between 1957 and 1964, Cameron practiced his experiments at the Allan Memorial Institute in Montreal, Canada. He was also head of the World Psychiatric Association (WPA). Thirty years later, a Canadian radio program described his work as follows: "During treatment, patients are subjected to extreme psychiatric shocks. Under the effect of barbiturates and LSD, the subjects are dumbed down by pre-recorded messages and broadcast in a loop. They undergo massive doses

Electroshocks, prolonged sleep for several days, icy showers, *etc.* Electroshocks, a treatment method that was not very well controlled at the time, are 20 to 40 times greater in scale than what is normally prescribed.

The sessions lasted five hours a day, five days a week, they aimed to "deprogram" the patient's brain and then "reprogram" it. In 1960, the CIA ended funding for the secret research of the Allan Memorial Institute. Dr. Cameron then turned to the Canadian government, which subsidized him until 1963. In all, about fifty patients served as guinea pigs during these experiments[193].

When Canadians learned that the CIA had conducted brainwashing experiments on their fellow citizens, and that on top of that their government was not only aware of it but had even helped to fund these experiments, the shock was enormous. It was the television show 'The Fitfh Estate' (CBS) that first revealed this case in 1984 by revealing the work that had been supervised by Dr. Ewen Cameron in his

Montreal: the scandal broke. Legal proceedings have been initiated by the victims against Dr. Cameron but also against the CIA. A film was even made from this case: "The Sleep Room"' by Bernard Zuckerman, 1998.

Here is the three-step electroshock protocol used by Dr. Cameron:

- First step: This is the first stage ofpost-electroshock amnesia, the subject loses a large part of his short-term memory. The subject still retains the "space-time image": he knows where he is, why he is there and he recognizes familiar faces but he remembers names more difficult.
- Second step: At the second stage of the Amnesia Electrochoc, the subject loses the "space-time image" but he is aware of this loss. This realization causes him extreme anxiety and panic because he wants to remember but he can't. At this point, he will repeatedly ask: "Where am I?'', "How did I get here?", ''Why am I here?''.
- Third and final step: To
this stage, the subject becomes extremely calm, all the previous anxiety has disappeared. He is taken back to his room where a tape recorder placed near his pillow will repeat the same instruction in a loop for hours. This technique is called psychic driving. In this condition, the victims had urinary and fecal incontinence.

Ewen Cameron was also working on "radical isolation". These were sensory isolation boxes in which the subject was locked for a while. Deprived of sensory stimuli, "the very identity of the subject was beginning to disintegrate[194]. Cameron himself boasted of having reproduced experimentally on human subjects the equivalent of the "extraordinary political conversions" that occurred in the East[195], i.e. brainwashing for political purposes. In 1957, his request for grant for a study on the "effects of repetition of verbal signals on human behavior"' which allows, he says, to "break the individual as after a long interrogation", was accepted by the Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology (front society[196]). His research program was then integrated into the MK-Ultra project[197].

In an article published by *Nexus* magazine, Sid Taylor reports that following a "treatment" on a woman, Cameron *is said to have stated: "Although the patient went through both prolonged sensory isolation (35 days) and repeated restructuring, having even received 101 days of "positive driving"* (supposedly a "psychic conduct" with messages with positive content), *we did not achieve favorable results*[198].

Cameron also supervised experiments with electromagnetic frequencies. Human guinea pigs were processed in a radio telemetry laboratory set up by

Leonard Rubenstein in the basements of the institute. In this laboratory, patients were exposed to a range of electromagnetic waves aimed at controlling and modifying their behaves.199

One of Dr. Cameron's victims was Linda McDonald, a young mother of five. During a moment of weakness and depression, his doctor advised him to go see the famous psychiatrist. After three weeks, Cameron concluded that Linda had acute schizophrenia and he sent her to the Sleeping Room. There, she was plunged into an artificial sleep for 86 days, a comatose state. Dr. Peter Roper, who was one of Dr. Cameron's colleagues at the time, said: "The goal was really to erase the thought patterns and behaviours that were lacking in the patient because they were suffering from it; then replace them with healthy habits, thoughts and behaviours.'

According to her hospitalization record, Linda McDonald has undergone electroshock treatments more than a hundred times. In fact, she was admitted to the hospital for what we now call post-natal depression, but records of her include treatment.

radical and completely inappropriate drug. Here is an excerpt from his medical report: ''May 15 (1963): Subject to a

some confusion; June 3: Know his name, but that's about it; June 11: Don't know his name.' Linda testifies that she very quickly became a vegetable, she had no more identity, no more memories, it was as if she had never existed in the world before (tabula rasa). She was just like a baby who had to be fed and washed.

Another victim of Dr. Cameron was Robert Loguey. At the age of 18, one of his legs was causing him pain and his doctor, who had not found the cause of the problem, thought it was of psychosomatic origin. He then sent his patient to the Allan Memorial Institute. As with Linda McDonald, it was also a nightmare for him, a shock therapy based on drugs, including a powerful hallucinogen. He was given an injection of LSD every other day, sometimes mixed with other medications and psychotropic drugs.

Most of these drugs were experimental, but they appeared to be appropriate for brainwashing. During these profound altered states of consciousness created by electroshocks and drugs, human guinea pigs were forced to listen to audio messages supposed to print new thoughts in their minds, the content of the messages was sometimes very bizarre: Robert

reports that a tape recorder placed under his pillow looped the words: "You killed your mother" (who was alive at the time). These were very short messages of a few seconds looping. For Robert, this process lasted for 23 days.

These patients never knew that their treatment was being carried out as part of a project led by the CIA. Indeed, Dr. Cameron was far from being an isolated "mad scientist" who decided to apply these techniques on his own. He was following a program of experiments on human guinea pigs. Velma Orlikow, the wife of David Orlikow, a member of the Canadian Parliament, was one of Cameron's victims. She had gone to the Allan Memorial Institute in the late 50s to treat depression. She had a lot of respect for the famous psychiatrist before realizing that he did not care at all about the mental health of his patients, but that he simply used them as guinea pigs, nothing more. He was simply applying what his employers were asking him to do: the CIA. It has therefore decided, with the help of eight other former victims, to prosecute this powerful institution that is the CIA. The trial lasted several years and this case has almost become an obsession for the American lawyer Joseph Rauh, a civil liberties expert. Rauh and his young assistant James Turner knew that they were facing a formidable enemy but that they also had an occasional ally who could balance the trial. Indeed, they relied heavily on the support of the Canadian government led at the time by Brian Mulroney. Unfortunately, instead of helping its own citizens, the

the Canadian government feared being held responsible, stabbed them in the back throughout the trial; going so far as to make a disappearing

key element that led to evidence that CIA officials

the U.S. Embassy had apologized to the government

when the mk-ultra's experiences were publicly revealed. This apology was very important, it was a legally admissible admission in court because one of the two parties to the trial said that she had done something wrong and reprehensible. It was a proof that

demonstrated the negligence and misdeeds committed at that time and the case could have been closed quickly to the benefit of the victims. Instead, the legal battle lasted ten years.

Thanks to a campaign of support and the solidity of the case mounted by the victims, the CIA gave in the day before the trial. There was an out-of-court settlement for $750,000. At the time, this sum represented the largest compensation that the CIA had ever had to pay. However, troubling questions still persist today, particularly about the Canadian government. Why did he act in such an ambiguous way when it was a question of helping several Canadian citizens? THE

The answer is simple: the Canadian government was in fact even more involved than the Americans in the experiments conducted at the Allan Institute.

Memorial. Dr. Cameron's experiments were funded to the tune of 1/2

million dollars by the Federal Department of Health and Welfare during the 50s, but the funding didn't stop there... They injected more than $51,000 into these experiments after the CIA project ended in 1961.

When Linda McDonald discovered that her own government had funded experiments on brainwashing on her own person, she made the heavy decision to sue him. The former victim therefore took the Canadian federal government to court for four long years until finally in 1992, Ottawa reluctantly agreed to compensate her and several other victims for $100,000.

per person. In exchange, they had to undertake to stop all proceedings against the Canadian government or the Allan Memorial Institute. However, Ottawa has categorically refused to acknowledge any wrongdoing regarding this psychiatric institute, the stronghold of Dr. Ewen Cameron. A conclusion was written by first specifying that the patients had not suffered irreparable harm, and that in addition, they had consented to the treatment! According to the victims, Dr. Cameron had never told them anything about the treatment they would undergo. He never gave a single explanation or description of what was going to happen to them. All this clearly had nothing to do with a medical treatment worthy of the name, it was indeed experiments on brainwashing with human guinea pigs. Despite this, the Allan Memorial Institute in Montreal has maintained its international reputation as a leader in the treatment of mental illness[200].

The Amerindian community of Canada was also the target of experiments of all kinds mainly during the 50s and 60s, especially in hospitals. A large number of children have been abducted from their families under the "sixties scoop" programme, which is said to have officially involved 20,000 Amerindian children. They were in-house residential schools, also known as schools residential. These boarding schools were intended for "schooling", "evangelization" and "assimilation" of the country's children, in other words the little natives, the Amerindians. These thousands of children were separated from their families without anyone being able to complain at the time. This subject is a very heavy dossier combining both the sterilization of young women, medical experiments on the human psyche and the massive spread of infectious diseases to reduce this population. Paedocriminality and ritual abuse have inevitably been added to this pool of children separated from their families and placed in boarding schools. Some testimonies suggest that the MK-Ultra program was run on many Amerindians,obviously non-consenting and literally serving as guinea pigs.

The daughter of a Canadian officer, Sara Hunter (pseudonym) was the victim of experiments with 25 other children and as many adults. According to her, this happened at the Lincoln Park Air Force in Calgary, Alberta between 1956 and 1958. She says that it was a Nazi doctor who practiced these experiments and she says that she was the only one to survive during these two years of torture, most of the children killed were Amerindians, others were runaways or orphans[201].

In the documentary *"Unrepentant: Kevin Annett and Canada's*

Genocide" **(2006) about the genocide of The Native Americans of Canada, Pastor Kevin Annett says when asked if he believes all these testimonies of Aboriginal people:** *"Well, when people who do not know each other continue to tell the same story over and over again, even if you are skeptical, you must a.d. give* **these** *facts. You know, it's a story that's widely told and when people started to go further and bring back to me things that I rediscovered later and were able to validate through documents, then I couldn't deny those things anymore. You know, when you're a pastor, you learn to detect pretty quickly if the person in front of you tells you nonsense. You can read the suffering in people's eyes. It is*

incredibly painful for them to tell their experience, they do not need to add (...) This happened in the summer of 1998 in Vancouver. I brought many survivors to testify in this court. Everything you can imagine of what happened in the Nazi death camps. They told it. There was a group of people from Kuper Island who said they had been the victims of experiments

doctors who spoke in German had injected them with chemicals that killed them."

These testimonies, which report that the "scientists" who practiced the experiments spoke German, can suggest that they were Nazi scientists exfiltrated from Germany to America during the operation "Paperclip", described at the beginning of the chapter.

In the same documentary "Unrepentant", Aboriginal police officer George Brown of the RCMP (Royal Canadian Mount Police) says of his childhood: "I am 100% sure that we were serving as guinea pigs in

says of his childhood: "I am 100% sure that we were serving as guinea pigs in

hospitals for one reason or another. We were lurking in the hospital, I remember it wasn't to see a dentist, and I wasn't sick."

Another testimony is that of Nung Klaath Gaa (Douglas Wilson), who says he came from the Haida Gwaii people. Here's what he says: "I read Kevin Annett's document and it helped me understand how it's that my memory is so weak. In some parts of the document, they talk about shock treatments (...) In my last year there in the spring of 1961, I was taken from school to Charles Camsell Hospital, and from Charles Camsell Hospital to Ponoka Psychiatric Institute. I don't know if I stayed there for a week or two, but I have this vague memory, a memory that came back to me like a flash. I was lying on this table with something on my head, with flashes and lights flashing continuously. ''

Survivor Lynn Moss Sharman, an Aboriginal Canadian, also testified about the ritual abuse and mind control she experienced as a child. She has done a great deal of work to bring together the Native American victims of these horrors and to ensure that all of this is known to the general public. We will return to his testimony in Chapter 7.

4 - Dr. William Sargant in England

The British psychiatrist William Walters Sargant wrote: "Although men are not dogs, they must humbly remember how much their brain functions resemble those of dogs." or" or" We need to excite the mind before we can change it[202]. William Sargant has been directly linked to the CIA's mind control programs.

He used the same brainwashing protocols as Cameron: electroshock, deep sleep therapy, psychic-driving and of course the use of all kinds of drugs.

British actress Celia Imrie was one of Dr.

Sargant. At the age of 14, Celia was anorexic and had to be hospitalized but her condition was not improving despite treatment. Desperate, her parents sent her to St Thomas' Hospital in London where she was entrusted to the "good care" of the internationally renowned psychiatrist: William Sargant.

Even today, she says that Sargant always comes back in his nightmares. More than 20 years after his death, it is now proven that this psychiatrist worked for MI5 and the CIA, especially in the MK-Ultra program.

In a 2011 Daily Mail article entitled *"My electric shock nightmare at the hands of the CIA's evil doctor",* Celia Imrie says she has few memories of her own electroshock sessions but that she remembers perfectly the electric shocks that the woman suffered in the bed next to her: "I *remember the smallest details, whether by sight, hearing or* smell. The huge rubber cap stuck between his teeth; the strange, almost silent cry, like a sigh of pain; jerky contortions of the tortured body; the smell of hair and burnt flesh. I also remember the famous "Narcosis Room" (the equivalent of Dr. Cameron's "Sleep Room"), a room where patients were immersed in drug-induced sleep during several days while devices were broadcasting instructions under the pillows. I can perfectly describe sargant's "Room of Narcosis" because I used to sneak out of my room to go and observe through the portholes or a swinging door these women lying on the floor on gray mattresses, as dead, in an electro-induced twilight silence.

When I am asked if I myself have been in this Chamber, I say "no," because I do not remember. But I recently realized that before I was put in the Chamber, the subject was first drugged and I never saw anyone come back from there awake. You would go asleep and you would come out asleep. I think anyone who has been treated with Sargant's sleep therapy has gone to this chamber at one time or another. You were totally unconscious inside, so maybe I was put in this place myself. I couldn't know (...) I can't know the methods of mind control he exercised on me, I don't know what the recordings under my pillow contained, what they told me to do or think about.

A few years ago, I tried to find my medical record at St Thomas'

Hospital, I wanted to check the content of my treatment and whether I had been in this Room of Narcosis. I wanted to know the precise instructions that were recorded on the tape looping under my pillow. I wanted to know what Sargant had relentlessly induced in my young unconscious brain. Unfortunately, my research did not yield anything. When William Sargant left St Thomas, he illegally took away all the records of his patients. At the time of his death in 1988, every evidence and every paperwork concerning his inhumane work on human guinea pigs, were destroyed. So I would never know the truth.

I remember being given massive doses of Largactil, an anti-psychotic drug. The effect of this drug was impressive, my hands trembled uncontrollably, I woke up finding clums of hair on my pillow. But the worst effect was that I saw everything multiplied into four. When Sargant entered my room, I saw four men! It was horrible and terrifying. same

simple tasks like lifting a glass of water became impossible. As the doses had increased, I once remember hearing a nurse tell her colleague that I was showing "dangerous resistance" to medication. Dangerous for whom? I wonder... In this place

horrible, from what I have been able to observe, the real fools are those who there

work, not patients. Sargant used to say that "every dog has its breaking point, it just takes longer for the

eccentrics.'' I guess my "dangerous resistance" was what he was talking about, that I was one of those eccentric dogs that he failed to break[203].

5 - Palle Hardrup's programming

The book "Antisocial or Criminal Acts and Hypnosis: A Case Study" by Paul J. Reiter published in 1958 describes the case of a Dane who was subjected to MK-Ultra-type mind control techniques. Palle Hardrup (or Hardwick) was 31 years old when he was found guilty on July 17, 1954, of robbing a bank and murdering two employees a few months earlier. This case proves that an individual can be programmed to commit crimes and then be amnesiac of his criminal acts. According to psychiatrist Colin Ross, Paul Reiter's book can be taken as a real textbook describing how to create a Manchu Candidate.

The Danish judges stated at the time that Palle Hardrup had a multiple personality (using their own words) and concluded that this personality disorder had deliberately been created by his programmer and master, a certain Bjorn Nielsen. A report from the Council Medico-Legal dated February 17, 1954 stated that "Even if the symptoms of the mental disorder seem to have disappeared today, Hardrup cannot be considered cured. The deep split of its personality, which has been well established, will heal only very slowly.'' The jury found Hardrup guilty on all charges but not responsible for his actions. Bjorn Nielsen, the man who transformed Palle Hardrup as an amnesiac bank robber was found guilty of theft and manslaughter, even though he was not physically present at the crime scene. The jury found that Nielsen planned and organized the crimes by commissioning Hardrup to commit them, manipulating him in various ways including hypnosis. Nielsen was sentenced to life imprisonment while Hardrup was interned in a psychiatric institution. At the time, this case caused a great deal of fuss in Denmark. For Nielsen, crime "perfect" had to ensure that no one could trace back to him, a crime for which another person would inevitably have to face the prison sentence.

Hardrup and Nielsen were both part of the Nazi S.S., the former had entered it out of a naïve need for fraternity, and the other, Nielsen, joined in 1940 to be able to leave a reformatory. Following the German debacle of 1945, they were both arrested and sentenced to several years in prison. It was there that they met for the first time, in 1947. Very quickly, they will become comrades and Nielsen becomes the leader and even the master making Hardrup his disciple and slave, just as a young student would be recruited and indoctrinated by a sect.

Alone, far from home, idealistic, naïve, impressionable and unhappy, a condition that made him very vulnerable to mind control and

manipulation. The two men finally get permission to share the same cell and they will isolate themselves completely from the other inmates. Little by little, they will lock themselves into the practice of esoteric disciplines such as yoga, meditation, hypnosis, *etc.*

For 18 months, Hardrup was continuously alone in the cell with Nielsen, or working alongside him in the workshop. Nielsen immediately began his mind control experiments, working by instinct. However, there is no evidence that he had previously had training in mental programming. Palle Hardrup was an excellent subject for hypnosis and Nielsen then set in motion an intensive program of hypnotic conditioning including several hours of trance exercises per day. This usually happened in the evening and very often Hardrup went to bed without having come out of the trance. Nielsen combined sessions

hypnosis with yoga exercises, Kundalini awakening and self-hypnosis. He taught Hardrup techniques for emptying his

spirit, to transcend and experience the modified states of consciousness, supposed to bring inner peace. These practices were intended to establish direct contact with a "deity". Nielsen told him, for example, that hypnosis would help him learn about his previous lives. Thanks to

"expansions of consciousness", Hardrup had to be able to be one with the "cosmic divine principle" and thus have a direct communion with God. Hardrup was also instructed to isolate himself from others

prisoners, his world was to focus only on Nielsen, his master, his guru. The total social isolation combined with these spiritual exercises meant that Palle Hardrup found himself in a state of perpetual trance in which he was constantly turned towards the "divine".

After a while, Nielsen introduced Hardrup to the guardian spirit "X". X was a guiding spirit who communicated through Nielsen, who was therefore a medium. X told Hardrup that his whole unlucky life

previous one was just a test to prepare him for his future role. It was X who also took control of the yoga workouts with Hardrup. After a while, the conditioning was such that hypnosis was no longer even necessary, for Palle Hardrup, Nielsen was the embodiment of entity X who spoke directly to him without resorting to hypnosis. As soon as Nielsen spoke, it was X who spoke and gave the instructions. Hardrup was taught about Samadhi, i.e. the state that yogis reach to transcend the needs of their bodies. Entity X was there to guide Hardrup to Samadhi and enlightenment, even making him pass various initiatory tests. X also told him that he had a divine political mission that aimed to unite all Scandinavians under one flag.
Hardrup was thus totally enslaved to a demonic entity whose intentions were most obscure.

In an effort to sever all ties with the material world, Hardrup began a series of hypnotic exercises related to money. First, he had to mentally visualize the movement of a sum of cash into their cell to give it to "a poor woman"

beggar"; Hardrup taking this as a transcendent exercise in love and charity. But the exercises have multiplied and worsened.

Still under the orders of Entity X, Hardrup was to see himself robbing a bank and committing murders.

Any scruples or refusals regarding robbery or murders were interpreted by X as a reaction of the physical body that Hardrup had to reject and transcend... The virtual robbery of the bank in which Hardrup was immersed during the hypnotic trance sessions was repeated and visualized in every detail, including the murder of the employees...

After a while, Hardrup began to hear X's voice speaking to him even when the Nielsen medium was not present: the guardian spirit X was now connected to

Hardrup. Upon their release from prison, Nielsen ordered and arranged Palle Hardrup's marriage to a certain Bente. Nielsen would beat her in black magic sessions and he

took advantage of her under the eye of Hardrup, who was no more than a machine under mental control. The two men were looking for money to create a new political party; Hardrup was to become a machine to steal and kill... It was in August 1950 that Nielsen launched for the first time its robot programmed for a bank attack. The loot is 25,000 crowns,

a sum of money that Hardrup immediately gave to Nielsen following the robbery. There will be no casualties this time, it is during the attack of March 21, 1951 that there will be two deaths. A few days after his arrest, Hardrup told police that a "guardian spirit" (X) had ordered him to commit the robbery for political purposes. He stated that this entity X had totally reoriented his life and influenced his actions since he met him in prison. But he claimed that the guardian spirit X was not Nielsen that the latter had nothing to do with the case. He even says that he met the guardian spirit long before his first meeting with Nielsen.

Hardrup eventually confessed in December 1951 about the hypnotic conditioning performed on him by his guru Nielsen. In April 1952, Hardrup unsubmissive to a psychiatric examination with Dr. Reiter, who then wrote a 370-page report on his case. Dr. Reiter reported that at the beginning of the expertise, it was impossible to hypnotize Hardrup, until he could break a "locking" mechanism. Indeed, Hardrup had undergone programming by Nielsen that did not allow him to be hypnotized by

someone else. Georges Estabrooks in his book
"Hypnotism" (1943) calls this process the "blocking". Once this blocking system

disabled, Hardrup then became an easily hypnotizing subject. Le Dr.

Reiter stated in his report that Hardrup had been subjected to intense hypnotic influence by Nielsen and that by committing the crimes, he would have acted involuntarily. He demonstrated that Hardrup had been subjected to sleepwalking amnesia induced by hypnosis and suggestions

post-hypnotics. A modified state of consciousness in which critical thinking and free will are totally abolished.

In November 1952, Nielsen had a conversation with Hardrup during a court meeting. For the next two weeks, Hardrup began to hear the voice of Entity X again while showing great anxiety and agitation. In 1961, Hardrup was finally released from asylum, he now had to convince public opinion that he was no longer a programmed instrument and that if he met Nielsen again, the drama was not likely to be repeated[204:205]... Nielsen was probably introduced to occultism and mind control techniques, perhaps during his time in the Nazi S.S., knowing that they were closely interested in all these things.

6 - Occultism, the paranormal and the C.I.A.

Officially the CIA's programs on human behavioral control as well as its mental programming ceased in 1963 with the exception of project MK-Search, officially stopped in 1972. Clandestine programmes of the same type, however, have continued in other forms, refocusing on the use of electromagnetic radiation to affect the psyche and human behaviour, but also through the use of parapsychological techniques. In 1976, research on parapsychology received direct support from the then cia director: George Bush.

For the CIA, the word "parapsychology" is classified, i.e. any document mentioning the term "psi", which refers to all paranormal phenomena related to the human psyche, is automatically classified top-secret or higher[206].

One of the CIA psychiatrists, John Gittinger, confided during his hearing before the US Senate: "The general idea to which we

had reached the extent that brainwashing essentially involved a process of isolating human beings consisting of depriving them of any external contact and subjecting them to long periods of stress... without the need to resort to any esoteric means[207]"

Without the need to resort to any esoteric means. This means that the field of research concerning esotericism, occultism, is not to be excluded if need be. In their quest for absolute control over humans, the CIA and the military have taken a close interest in esotericism and parapsychology.

No wonder, knowing that the source of their studies on mind control comes from the observation of alterations of consciousness during rituals

traumatic, trances, demonic possessions and powers

psychics developed in religious cults. The appearance esoteric of the

mental control is therefore as important, if not more so, than the purely scientific and psychiatric aspect. Occultism, ritual practices and black magic, are essential points in the protocols of

MK-Monarch programming because related to other dimensions of the being, we will come back to it...

In the December 1980 "Military Review", Lieutenant John B. Alexander of the U.S. Army Wrote an article entitled "The New Mental Battlefield: Beam me up, Spock!" (The new mental battlefield). In this

article, Alexander highlights the growing importance of research

Soviet and American on electromagnetic weapons but also research in the field of parapsychology. He cites some disciplines such as out-of-the-body exit (astral travel), remote viewing, precognition, perceptions

extrasensory, telepathy, telekinesis, circulation of

In his article, John B. Alexander writes: "The extent of parapsychological research in the United States is not well known and is not organized in such a way as to

Centralized. The U.S. government has reportedly funded some research projects, but they have not been published (...)
The use of telepathic hypnosis also has great potential. This capability could make it possible to deeply implement programming to agents without their being aware of it. Cinematographically speaking, we would then have a Manchu Candidate who would not even require a phone call (editor's note: to trigger a program). "

Lieutenant Alexander concludes his article: "The impact that psychotronic weapons and other paranormal techniques will have in the future is difficult to determine at this time. We can think that whoever makes the first major breakthrough in these areas will have a considerable lead over his opponent, an advantage similar to the possession of nuclear weapons. Clearly, progress in one of the areas

mentioned above will add a new dimension to the battlefield.

The Soviets have been working on these techniques for several years (...) The information presented here may be considered by some as ridiculous because not corresponding to their paradigm, some people continue to believe that the world is flat (...) This underlines the need for more coordinated research in the field of the paranormal." This is an article published in 1980, where is the research 35 years later?

Knowing that they are exponential...

Lieutenant John B. Alexander worked with Colonel Michael Aquino (founder of the Temple of Set) on Monarch slaves. According to Fritz Springemeier, he was one of the most involved soldiers in the formation of elite units composed of "Warrior Monks" who could fight using both martial arts and paranormal psychic powers. The recruits were obviously subjects who had undergone a protocol of mental programming resulting in them a multiple personality, a traumatic process that could develop particular psychic faculties in the victims (see the chapter
6[208]).

In 1987, the *Seattle Times* published an article about Lt. Col. Jim Channon entitled "The New *Army's experiment* with *'New Age'* thinking".

Here is an excerpt: "The army is therefore interested in the New Age philosophy, the idea that the world can be changed by changing people's way of thinking, and that the mind has invisible but tangible powers that are just waiting to be exploited. Centers have been established at Ford Ord in California and Washington DC to explore this intriguing idea that the power of the mind could be more effective than the power of guns in winning a war. From 1980 to 1982, these ideas were tested at Fort Lewis by the Lieutenant-colonel Jim Channon. The army recruited young officers enthusiastic about this "new thinking" in order to associate them with rather skeptical scientists (...) a 'think tank' was then created at the Pentagon to evaluate the question of paranormal psychic phenomena. These meetings addressed the topics of extrasensory perception, mediumship and even a headset designed to synchronize the left side (logic) and the right side (intuition) of the brain! [209]]."

This elite military 'new-age' unit founded by Jim Channon was named "First Earth Battalion", MK subjects (previously split and programmed) receive training in martial arts but also an introduction to esotericism and occultism. The following is an extract from a letter from one of these soldiers of the New Age Battalion which **was transmitted to Te^e Marrst. lin px-offiripr dp FUS**

Air Force became a Protestant pastor. This letter was published in his

"Flashpoint" newsletter in September 1994: "We are a group of highly selected soldiers. We must be "Purified Psychic Soldiers". We have all received our instructions for "The Plan". We are preparing for the emergence of a 'New Order'. We are encouraged to read all types of books that deal with the New Age and occultism, to study the different martial arts and to exercise the powers of the mind. Communication with guide spirits (editor's note: demonic entities) is also encouraged. We are taught to become 'wise men'. My best friend and I study and exercise our meditation and warrior psychic faculties on a daily basis. I also study Ninjutsu, Tai Kwon Do as well as Tai Chi. We are not supposed to talk to people about this special unit (...) At the end of the eleventh Delta Force Conference, the instructor said: "I witnessed a process of

unique and majestic value, an army of Excellence." (...) As our faculties grew, we were told that we were becoming "like gods", that there was no limit for a soldier of the First Earth Battalion. We could travel to different places by our mind, walk through fire, move or bend objects by the force of our mind, see in the future, stop our heart (editor's note: extreme biofeedback as practiced by Indian yogis), etc (...) In the end, not all martial arts serve

only one real function: to make the soldier-warrior access the truth (...) There are six levels of psychic soldier, it goes from the beginner to the highest who then becomes a Monk-Warrior or a Master-Warrior (...) Military forces new-age involve rituals, songs, meditations, prayers to earth and pledges of allegiances to the planet and people. The first book we are recommended to read is "The Aquarian Consipracy" (editor's note: The Children of Aquarius, the reference book of the

new-age movement[210]!) ..."

Gordon Thomas rapporte dans son livre “Secrets and Lies : A History of CIA Mind-Control”, que le Dr. Stanley

Gottlieb, director of the DSB (CIA Research and Development Office) is said to have launched Operation Often in the late 60s. The aim of this project was to expand research on

mysteries of human consciousness by exploring the world of black magic and according to Thomas "by harnessing the forces of darkness to demonstrate that the confines of the human mind are accessible." As part of this operation on paranormal, black magic and demonology, the CIA would have recruited clairvoyants, astrologers, mediums, specialists in demonology but also Wicca wizards, Satanists and other kabbalists and occultists seasoned ... According to Thomas, the CIA even funded a chair of witchcraft at the University of South Carolina.

"Operation Often took a very close interest in demonology. In April 1972, the CIA attempted a discreet approach to the exorcist of the Catholic Archdiocese of New York. The latter categorically refused any cooperation.

The agency also approached Sybil Leek, a Houston witch who cast spells using her tame raven. With the bird perched on his shoulder, Sybil Leek gave lessons in black magic to "beautiful gentlemen" of

Washington and she took stock with them of the state of occultism in the

United States at that time: 400 groups focused on witchcraft,

led by 5000 witches or wizards initiated... a thriving market offering thousands of "adventure tellers" as well as an increasingly varied range of anti-Christian products and articles. Satan was not

only alive, but it flourished throughout the country! [21] it."

In "America in The Trance-Formation", Mark Phillips writes: "In 1971, the New York Times published an article on the Central

Intelligence Agency (CIA) and occult research, which was inspired by a

a collection of documents obtained from the U.S. Government Printing Office under the Freedom of Information Act.

It was a report to Congress, which made it clear that the CIA was interested in clinical discoveries about cause-and-effect relationships about the impact of religious practices on

users of black magic and/or the mind of an observer. Of particular interest to the CIA were the increased levels of suggestibility that certain occult rituals caused in the minds of practitioners. Cannibalism and blood rituals occupied a prominent place in their research! [212]]."

7 - Conclusion

So here we are in the 70s and the MK-Ultra program is officially closed... to make way for new mind control projects that combine previous achievements on mental programming with occultism, black magic, demonology but also with the

psychotronic black technology.

The Monarch project is the continuation of all this research that began at the end of the Second World War. Monarch which seems to be the most important program, is still classified top-secret and under the guise of "National Security" (see chapter 10). The Bluebird, Artichoke and MK-Ultra programs ended up coming out in the public domain after 30, 40 or 50 years... Mind control research projects are still operational, they have simply been moved even more deep in the meanderings of government institutions. Slaves under mental programming are topical, you have them every day on your television screens...

Bill Schnoebelen, describes the MK-Monarch programming as follows: "We have good reason to believe that the MK-Ultra still exists today in an even more atrocious form as a Monarch project. The difference between project Monarch and project MK-Ultra is that it merges child abuse with Satanism, always under the auspices of the government...

Children are not only tortured, drugged, electrocuted, etc... but they are also hypnotized and undergo the scientific insertion of demons inside their multiple personalities resulting from a Dissociaitf Disorder of Identity (TDI)... By doing this, they create different types of

"SUPER-SLAVES![213]!" ... "

These "super-slaves" can be used as sex slaves, spies, drug smugglers, murderers... The alter Satanist/Luciferian personalities of priest or high priestess will be part of the deepest programming. MK slaves can be injected into many fields such as politics, the judiciary, science, *etc.* It is a question of having the best subjects in key positions of domination where the "weak link" option is not possible. They are also found in the entertainment industry and top-level sport. (Topic to be amply developed in Chapter 7)

The "Monarch network" was formed by the meeting of two circles that fit together perfectly because of their hidden and compartmentalized side, a common occult subculture but also because of their mutual interests: on the one hand, the intelligence services, the military and organized crime, and on the other hand the networks composed of families practicing systematic incest, child prostitution, child pornography, satanic ritual abuse, *etc.* Families stuck in these occult practices from generation to generation. In addition to having in common a taste for depravity, violence, occultism and power, children dissociated by trauma living in the families of some are ideal candidates for the mental control programs of others... Whether it is mafia, religious, political or military groups, in a general and international way, they all know that dissociation, the fragmentation of the personality, is the pivot and cornerstone of secrecy and power. Canadian Therapist Alison Miller writes: "What better source than an already dissociated child whose parents have abused in a group practicing ritual abuse?"

For these MK-Ultra type mind control programs and today MK-Monarch, children with dissociative disorders of

identity is therefore sought because they are more easily programmable than a child with an unsplit psyche. This was the case of Cathy O'Brien, who was subjected to repeated rapes by her father and uncles in early childhood and fatally developed major dissociative disorders. His father, who produced child pornography, was 'pinched' by the

Information. He was forced to make his children available for the MK-Monarch government project in exchange for impunity and protection for his trafficking. Here's how Cathy O'Brien describes her family in her

autobiography "America in full

Trance-formation":

"The stays in my father's house were devastating, but informative. My mother had ended up suffering from deep psychological wounds due to her own condition as a "T. D.I." (dissociative identity disorder) and had become insomniac. My father was traveling regularly to London, Germany and Mexico at the time, as well as taking his family to Disney World in Florida and Washington D.C. My older brother Bill still worked for and with my father, and went with him every year to Cheney's hunting lodge in Greybull, Wyoming, to "hunt," and he followed my father's instructions to keep his wife and three children under mind control through trauma. My brother
Mike ran a video business to serve as a front for some of the juicy porn video business of my father and Uncle Bob Tanis. My sister Kelly Jo became a contortionist belly dancer excelling in "gymnastics", as she became "as flexible as Gumby" in accordance with her

prostitution programming. Her academic background allowed her to work in day-care centres, where she actually found for my father children abused as potential candidates for the office of "elected". In 1990, she graduated to open an official daycare, "The Little Apprentices," in Grand Haven, Michigan, for my father. My brother Tom ("Beaver") is a

"Compu-Kid" (lit. "Gosse-Ordi") (CIA project), namely a programmed computer genius. My brother Tim broke his leg (in the very place where my mother had broken hers years earlier) for following the

my father's sports programming far exceeds the abilities

Human. My younger sister Kimmy, finally, developed a hysterical obsession with a certain "Mr. Rogers". She expressed an inordinate fear about her huge "electric" dollhouse, which lit up at night to look like the White House, and was at the age of seven being followed by a doctor because of anorexid[214]."

Monarch-type mind control organizations and institutions infiltrate satanic cults and Luciferian and incestuous families to gain access to these children who are already deeply

Differentiated appropriations. In exchange for being able to have it available to install programming that serves their interests, these organizations provide the network or parents with a generous remuneration, favours that can be a form of compensation in the face of justice, support in their hidden or illegal activities but also information concerning MK programming techniques. Indeed, MK programming based on trauma is not "reserved" for government projects, it is a systematic practice on the children of satanic/Luciferian sects that goes back much further than the

experiments at the governmental level. These various sects practicing traumatic ritual abuses on their offspring, apply MK protocols depending on the level of knowledge they have on the subject.

Chapter 4

Ritual Abuse

> ... a vaulted room in the shape of a vault where it was planned to celebrate religious holidays. The atmosphere is reminiscent of these

rites of destruction of the individual personality, in this second state in

which man becomes an empty receptacle where one pours into the drunkenness of the

uplifting feelings.

> Description of the crypt of Wewelsburg Castle in Germany. Excerpt from the documentary Schwarze Sonne (The Black Sun of the Nazis - The Occult Roots of Nazism, 1998)

1 - Introduction

The research on mind control carried out by the Nazis, and then by the CIA, was developed to make ritual abuses "religious" and

of the resulting personality disorders, a true science

psychiatric. Mk's secret government programs and satanic ritual abuses practiced in a transgenerational manner are therefore intimately linked.

This doctrine of reducing a human to the state of an object is of order

satanic, whether it is practiced by a doctor in a white coat or by a

priest in black gowed. One of the purposes of the traumatic ritual abuse practiced by

these cults is to initiate the child via the

dissociation. This dissociative process causes a breach, fragmentation

of the soul opening the door to other dimensions, in other words the deep

traumas create an unlocking of the bodies

energetic of the child, it is a real spiritual heist... (Subject that

we will discuss in more detail in Chapter 6). During these rituals

traumatic, the child becomes "initiated and sacred", he is thus bound in spite of himself

to the spirit world and this connection opens the way to possessions

demonic and paranormal psychic faculties. Following these "initiatory" protocols, this reverse sanctification, the child is therefore divided and parasitized by one or more entities, the crack

letting the light through... One fact is that the

most survivors of satanic ritual abuse suffer from a disorder

dissociative identity (formerly known as personality disorder)

multiple). Is it a real demonic possession, a personality

multiple or a mixture of both? We will come back to that.

Here is what Father Georges Morand, who was an exorcist priest for ten years, said on France Culture in 2011

in the show "Sur les docks" about abuse

satanic rituals:

- Reporter: Father Morand, when you talk about a young girl naked on a cross, washed down with animal blood. When you talk about

fetuses that are torn from their mother's womb and sacrificed. You talk to us

What?

- George Morand: I'm talking about people I've met, that I've helped, accompanied for years, who haven't

drawn from their affairs only by the prayer of exorcism. People including me could name you... who have fallen prey to small Satanist groups extremely formidable practicing what are called linked black masses to rites of witchcraft and magic, with ritual murders. under the double covered, and I weigh my words, on the one hand of the mafia, all the networks world of low- and high-level prostitution, drug trafficking and on the other hand personalities that could be said beyond all suspicion who hold key positions in our civilization, whether in the world of politics, of all political persuasions. in the world of the judiciary, in the scientific world, in the world of finance, in the intellectual world. and I would even say alas, three times alas, in the world ecclesiastical[215]."

in 2012, Father Gary Thomas, exorcist of the Diocese of San José in the United States, has said at a lecture at Rutgers University: "I sometimes practice the rite of exorcism for survivors of ritual abuse. Abuse

Satanic ritual is a reality. It's also something incredibly

criminal, illegal and highly secretive. These satanic cults that are linked

with the 'illuminati' are real and they are active, some since

hundreds of years. They're going to kill people, they're going to sexually abuse

all members of the cult for the purpose of controlling them. They select

sometimes outsiders to practice human sacrifices. all

this is real. If you go to see your local police, they won't be able to tell you

Talk about it openly, but law enforcement regularly has to deal with

that kind of thing.''

in

In 1990, Elder Mormon Bishop Glenn Pace issued a memorandum denouncing the

ritual abuse practices within his Church, here is an excerpt: "This ritualized abuse is the most despicable of all the abuses perpetrated on children. The fundamental and premeditated objective is to torture and terrorize

these children until they are forced to dissociate themselves systematically

and methodically. These tortures are not a consequence of "anger", it is the execution of perfectly thought out and well-planned rituals,

often performed by close relatives. The only way out for these children is

to dissociate.''

in

In 1989, the television programme "The Cook Report", broadcast on the English channel ITV, devoted one of its episodes to the issue of satanic ritual abuse. In this documentary, the Reverend Kevin Logan has

said: ''In my listening and advice function, I have seen terrible things. I have heard some really disgusting things that had happened to

from young people, to children who had been raped on the altar, the initiation to the

satanism. Children who had to eat feces and drink blood,

all these horrible things in which satanists are involved, and

especially I have seen the effect that all this causes on these young

people[216].'' In
an investigation of 125 Chicago police officers in 1992, and

reported in the book "What Cops Know", author Connie Fletcher concludes that "satanic ritual murders exist. It is not a question of saying that it is

generalized, but people do practice this kind of thing. In a

Satanic murder, the victim's right arm can be tied behind the

body; the right testicle may be missing; the body can be emptied of its

blood; the heart can be removed; human or animal feces may be

found in the cavities of the body. There will be body parts

missing: the heart, genitals, an index finger, the tongue... There you go

as far as confidencesare[217] [217]."

2 - Ritual abuse in the modern world

"It is time to overcome this reality. 20 years ago, if you talked about pedophilia, you were locked up. 15 years ago, it was the same thing with incest. Today, this is the case with ritual abuse. Kids

continue to suffer." David Poulton, former Australian Federal Police Sergeant - Preston 1990[218]

"We have just understood that paedophilia exists. We cannot yet understand that there is even worse than paedophilia I would say

"simple", and there are people who still resist with all their strength and strength.

all their interior." Martine Bouillon, former deputy prosecutor of Bobigny[219].

a/ Definition

One of the first references to satanic ritual abuse to be reported in a book dates back to 1930 in Karl Menniger's "The Human Mind", a reference book on psychiatry. The book mentioned the existence of black masses, Satanism

and the worship of the devil as real facts that take place in

major cities in Europe and the United States[220].

the

The term "Ritual Abuse" was first used in 1980 by a Canadian psychiatrist named Lawrence Pazder, who defined the phenomenon as follows: "Repetitive physical, emotional, mental and spiritual attacks, combined with

the systematic use of symbols, ceremonies and manipulations for purposes

malicious."

In a 1992 issue of the Journal of Child Sexual Abuse, David W. Lloyd defined ritual abuse as follows: "Abuse Intentional

physical, sexual or psychological of a child by a person normally

responsible for his well-being. Such abuses are repeated and practiced during

religious ceremonies, and typically involve acts of cruelty on

animals and threats to the child[221]."

For David Finkelhor, the author of "Child Sexual Abuse" and "Nursery Crime", these are abuses occurring in a context related to

certain symbols or group activities with connotations religious, magical or supernatural. These activities, repeated over time,

are used to scare and intimidate children.' Ritual abuse systematically involve mind control over small victims.

In Great Britain there is a document from the Department of Health dedicated to the protection of children, entitled 'Working Together under the Children Act''. The document does not talk about abuse

rituals but he uses the

term of organized abuse, i.e. networks

paedocriminals. A report that at least has the merit of acknowledging the existence of

of these networks, which are generally denied by political institutions,

legal and journalistic, an omerta that seems international...

In 1991, this government document defined the matter as follows: "Organized abuse is a generic term that relates to abuse

involving a number of aggressors, a number of children, and

generally encompasses different forms of abuse (...) A wide range

of activities are covered by this term, ranging from small networks of

pedophilia or pornography, often but not systematically organized for profit, most of whose participants know each other, to large networks of individuals or families that can be distributed

more broadly and in which not all members know each other

necessarily between them. Some organized groups may have behavior

strange and ritualized, sometimes associated with particular "beliefs".

This can be a powerful mechanism to terrify abused children in order to that they do not disclose what they are going through[222]."

In 2004, the update of the document no longer mentioned "strange and ritualized behavior" but added that "the aggressors act in concert to abuse children, sometimes in isolation or by using an institutional network or position of authority to recruit children for the purpose of abusing them. Organized and multiple abuses occur at the in the context of an maltreatment network involving families or a community, and within institutions such as schools or homes

community, and within institutions such as schools or homes

Residential. Such abuse is deeply traumatic for children who are involved. Investigations take time and require work requiring specialized skills from both the police and the social workers. Some investigations become extremely complex in reason for the number of places and people involved[223].

Valerie Sinason, children's psychotherapist and director of the The Clinic for Dissociative Studies in London, defined ritual and spiritual abuse during a series of lectures entitled "Safeguarding London's Children" in 2007: "Spiritual violence is the establishment of a position of power and attachment that leads to total blind obedience by the thought, speech and action, about a child, adolescent or adult, by

threats of physical and spiritual punishment of the victim himself,

his family or those who want to help him. In this type of abuse, there is no

place for a relationship with the divine, the victim does not have the right to have a spiritual relationship other than that which he has with his executioners. A great

many abuses involve a ritualized protocol, with precise dates,

precise times and repetition of the same gestures and actions. Abuse

ritual involves children involved in violence against their will

physical, psychological, emotional, sexual and spiritual. This under the

covered with religious, magical or supernatural beliefs. The whole nine yards

submission and obedience is achieved by threats of violence on the

victims, their families or those who would like to help them[224].

in

In 2006, the Advocates for Survivors Child Abuse (ASCA), an Australian lawyer-led organisation, published a report

entitled ''Ritual Abuse & Torture in Australia'', of which here are some excerpts: ''Ritual abuse is a multi-level crime, in which dysfunctional families stand together to

to organise these crimes by exploiting children for profit. The exploiter and main aggressor of the ritually abused child is most often a parent. These groups of aggressors are usually made up of two or three families forming a network that offers their own children to the abuse inflicted by other members of this network. In his book "Trauma Organised Systems: Physical and Sexual Abuse in Families”, Arnon Bentovim décrit ces familles as an "organized traumatic system" in which severe trauma define and shape the family structure and the interaction between its members. Victims have been growing up since childhood in an environment where violence, sexual abuse and extreme trauma are the norm. In this context of organized sexual exploitation, violence and incest committed by aggressors against their own children can be seen not only as a behavior sadistic, but also as a kind of training in these operating practices sexual[225].''

In 1992, the U.S. Office of the Attorney General of Utah established a Ritualistic Abuse Crime Unit in conjunction with the Child Abuse Prosecution Assistance

Unit). This specialized unit was headed by police officers Matt Jacobson and Michael King. It was responsible for investigating and offering a assistance to Utah police officers regarding ritual and other crimes illegal activities of local sects. After a year of investigation on this subject, Utah Attorney General Jan Graham has asked to meet individually with each township chief, every darling, every senior police officer, as well as with the magistrates, this in order to discuss the creation of a possible jurisdiction concerning this problem. Over the past two years, this unit has surveyed more than 125 cases related to ritual abuse, of which forty cases concerned Homicides. In parallel, investigators met with hundreds of citizens claiming to have been victims of these Satanist practices themselves. this Government initiative produced a 60-page report entitled "Ritual Crime in the State of Utah" written in 1995 by investigators Jacobson and King for the Attorney General's Office. The report defines ritual crimes as follows: "Ritual abuse is an iorme orutaie daous on an eniant, an aaoxescent or an adult, involving physical, sexual and psychological violence with the use of Rituals. Ritual abuse is rarely isolated, it is repeated violence for a long period of time. Physical violence is extreme, including torture, sometimes to the point of murder. Sexual abuse is painful, sadistic and humiliating. By definition, ritual abuse is not a impulsive crime, but rather a mischievously thought-out crime[226]."

This Government report was clearly not intended to undermine the credibility of the question of satanic ritual abuses and its content is rather objective. he for example: "There is evidence that there are many cases of ritual abuse of children by individuals or children. small groups. Sometimes these people use Satanism or another religion, as well as "magical" practices in the context of abuses. what has not been corroborated is the multitude of testimonies of "survivors" saying have participated in human sacrifices, sexual abuse of young people children, torture or other atrocities committed by groups very well organized, affecting all levels of government, all strata social and all the states of the country. Lack of investigations and prosecutions in such complaints do not mean that these testimonials are false. The purpose of this report is to highlight in detail the issues associated with file investigations and assessments ritual crimes. The help and assistance of senior police officers, magistrates, therapists, etc., is greatly appreciated (...) In conclusion, cases of ritual crimes must be treated like any other case. Investigators are encouraged to keep open-mindedness when dealing with cases involving occultism, religious beliefs or ritual criminal activities (...) Training and education on the many facets of ritual crimes/abuses is necessary and should be of great use at all levels of the police force. the police officers should be instructed on the elements basic ritual crimes. This training should include the types organizations involved in covert activities, their purposes and the symbols used by their members (...) This training should include information on the bizarre nature of ritual abuse as well as the problems associated with the disorder multiple personality, repressed amnesia and memories, hypnosis, etc[227]."

Despite detailed evidence of ritual abuse from testimonies of children, families, adult survivors, police officers, therapists and associations working with victims; despite the remarkable coherence of these reports, both national and international; despite the similarities and overlaps between the different cases and testimonies; society as a whole still resists believing in this harsh reality of ritual abuse. There remains this mistaken belief that Satanism and other occult activities are isolated and rare (see totally non-existent). This is not a new problem, but the Society is only just beginning to recognize the seriousness and extent of this phenomenon. We all need to learn about this. A lot of professionals meet victims of these ritual abuses but do not grasp not necessarily the extent of the abuses that there are behind the mental disorders of their patients. The concept of ritual abuse, according to which groups of adults terrorize and torture children in order to control and control them exploit is terrifying and therefore very controversial (always this notion of paradigm to preserve).

A destructive sect practicing ritual abuse can be defined as a closed network, system or group, whose followers are manipulated and conditioned by the use of mind control techniques.

It is a system that is imposed without the consent of the person, it aims to change their personality and behaviour. The leader(s) are all-powerful, the ideology of the group is totalitarian and the will to the individual is totally subordinate to the group. The destructive sect creates its own values with little or no respect for ethics and morality. It is engaged in illegal activities such as the sexual exploitation of children and adults: prostitution and child pornography, the production of snuff-films, drug and gun trafficking, but also all sorts of shenanigans that allow money to flow. In this kind of networks, all members stand by the "barbichette" since they are all involved in highly criminal activities.

Most victims report being sexually abused and tortured by several people at the same time and in the company of others small victims. Testimonies report that women are just as active as men in this abuse ritualized. The word "ritual" does not necessarily mean "satanic" but rather protocol or methodical, but also repetitive. For example, the Juju cult in Africa of the west described by Isiah Oke practices ritual abuse with states of altered consciousness but without any particular belief in Satan. some groups of Gnostic occultists could certainly be mistaken for Satanic cults, however in some cases it would be more appropriate to label as Luciferian or Neo-Gnostic. There are many cults that incorporate rituals where Satan is invoked among other entities but he is not systematically considered the central and unique god of worship.

However, most survivors in our Western societies report that they were ritually abused as part of a satanic cult, the purpose being to indoctrinate them in Satanist beliefs and practices. Abuse ritual is rarely isolated, it is usually repeated over a long period of time, in a systematic way. Physical violence is extreme, torture, rape and murder (simulated or actual) are used to traumatize and create deep dissociative states in victims. Sadistic sexual abuse is aimed at to humiliate and make suffer. This practice aims to dominate, to create dissociation and submission of the victim. According to the psychotraumatologist Muriel Salmona, sexual violence is the worst thing about psychological trauma. The WHO also stated that sexual mutilation is the most traumatic abuse that can be inflicted on a human being. This type of barbarism is therefore used in such a way that recurrent in these hyper-violent sects. Harassment and violence psychological that are added to the physical violence are devastating,

indoctrination involves the use of drugs, hypnosis and techniques

mind control. Intimidation and extreme violence of sect deeply terrorize the victim, following the traumas, she himself

finds himself in a state of dissociation and mental control (mental confusion

and even traumatic amnesia), and communication to the outside is therefore extremely difficult. If contact with the network has not been broken and therapy

has not been undertaken, victims are at risk of living under this control for

very long. It is important to understand that ritual abuse and control

The traumatic memories constitute a

real prison without walls.

This ritualized violence seems to have three purposes: 1-The rituals of certain groups are part of a religious belief in which the victim is indoctrinated.

2- Rituals are used to intimidate and silence victims.

3- The elements of the ritual (worship to the devil, satanic symbols, sacrifices of animals or humans...) seem so incredible that they

undermine the credibility of the testimony and prosecute these

very difficult crimes[228].

the

Belgian survivor, Regina Louf (witness X1 of the Dutroux case), reported in an interview given to Annemie Bulté and Douglas De Coninck (the authors of "Les dossiers X: Ce que la Belgique ne devait pas savoir sur l'affaire"

Dutroux'', 1999) that "when they received a new victim in their network, it was extremely

it is important that she cannot tell anyone about what was happening to her. It's

why they organized "ceremonies"... The sole purpose of these rituals

was to totally disorient the victims[229].

In her book "Trauma and Recovery", Judith Lewis Herman writes: "Secrecy and silence are the first protection of

Aggressors. If the secret is broken, the aggressor will attack the credibility of

his victim. If he cannot silence her completely, he will try to

make sure no one listens to him.'' Rituals participate in this

the aim of undermining credibility, all the more so in a modern society that is increasingly

in addition materialistic and totally hermetic to the existence of practices

"Diabolical" nuns described as "medieval". The strength of the devil is to believe thatn does not exist... Yet it seems to no longer do any more

doubts that these "diabolical" practices exist and are practiced in our

r* we * i i in the

so-called "civilized" and "modern" societies, perhaps more than ever...

one

A 218-page thesis entitled "L'abus rituel: le point de vue d'intervenantes en agression sexuelle" was submitted in 2008 at the Université du Québec en Outaouais. Here is the text of

presentation of this thesis: "Ritual abuse remains a subject that is very little known to the various intervention circles. the

lack of consensus on how to conceptualize ritual abuse and

controversy surrounding it undermines its recognition. This research

qualitative has three objectives: to document and analyze

information about ritual abuse, advancing knowledge and

understanding this type of abuse from the perspective of

sexual assault that supported women who had suffered it from the smallest

childhood, and contribute to the advancement of knowledge on the subject in the

Francophone intervention community. Semi-structured interviews were conducted conducted with eight workers who practice in different departments of assistance to victims of sexual assault and who have admitted to having intervened with at least two survivors of ritual abuse. The results obtained are presented in three separate parts: the results describing the whole characteristics belonging to the concept of ritual abuse, those allowing to be aware of the consequences caused by this type of abuse and those who stem from the experiences of the participants in their interventions with the survivors of ritual abuse. This research makes it possible to recognize some of the problems relating to the conceptualization of ritual abuse including the use of of the word cult to deal with the subject. It is also hoped that the definition of ritual abuse developed as part of this research serves as a starting point when working with stakeholders who have practical experience with survivors of ritual abuse to agree on how to define this type of abuse. It is also recommended that more research is done on ritual abuse, particularly with respect to programming, a method of thought control, and in terms of dissociation in survivors of ritual abuse. Above all, it is necessary to develop more practical knowledge in intervention in this area. More research will also need to look at the links between ritual abuse and sexual sadism, as well as ritual abuse and networks sexual exploitation of children[230].''

En 2011 le journal “Trauma & Dissociation” (International Society for the Study of Trauma and Dissociation) a publié un dossier Francophone entitled "Guidelines for the treatment of the disorder" dissociative of identity in adults''. This folder contains a chapter entitled ''Organized abuses'' showing that this subject of ritual abuse is

i * - i in the j* r

totally linked to the pnenomene of the dissociams trouoies, here is an extract:

"A substantial minority of patients with Dissociative Identity Disorder (IDD) report sadistic abuse, exploitation,

coercion at the hands of organized groups. This type of organized abuse victimizes

individuals through extreme control of their environments in childhood and

frequently involves multiple attackers. It can be organized around

activities of child networks, child pornograpnia or in the

child prostitution circles, various "religious" or religious groups, multi-generational family systems and trafficking and prostitution networks

of humans. Organized abuse frequently incorporates activities that are

sexually perverse, horrible and sadistic, which may involve

coercion of the child as a witness or participant in the abuse of other children.

Survivors of organized abuse - particularly ongoing abuse - are

those among the most traumatized of dissociative patients. They are most prone to self-destruct and serious suicide attempts. They appear very often caught up in very ambivalent attachments towards

of their aggressors and often present complex forms of TDI. some

of these highly traumatized patients have marked amnesia for a large the history of organized abuse only emerges in the course of treatment[231]."

Ritual abuse leading to deep trauma will develop a complex form of post-traumatic stress disorder that can lead to many symptoms in victims: panic attacks, crying uncontrollable, uncontrollable anger, eating disorders, trends suicidal, self-harm, hyper-alertness, somatic symptoms, obsessions, terrors, sleep disorders, nightmares, flashbacks, photographic memory, addictions: alcohol, drugs, sex, over-reaction to minor stress, violent or flight reactions, extreme mood swings, risky behaviour, shame and guilt, dehumanization, excessive preoccupation of relations with the aggressor, attribution of total power to the aggressor, idealization of the aggressor, gratitude to the aggressor, belief in a form of special or supernatural relationship with the aggressor, acceptance of beliefs and affirmations of the aggressor, repeated failures to protect himself, impotence and despair[232].

These ritual abuses are an integral part of the lives of some families where one or both parents participate or collaborate in a network. This type of practice is also applied by military groups or policies possessing the knowledge to program individuals, usually children. Children are therefore victims of sexual abuse with rituals and intimidation aimed at terrorizing and imposing them silence; but the goal is also to convert them and format them to a belief system, to a cult. In these Satanist or Luciferian groups, the Basic programming instilled in the child is loyalty and fidelity to the group as well as the law of silence. The child will be indoctrinated to believe that the Lifestyle of the group is the only way to go and that its leaders and the entities (deity and demons) must receive obedience and loyalty. Worship, the network, must represent his only "family" The child is conditioned for believing that abuse is done for one's own good is a military-type conditioning in which to think for oneself is not tolerated, children must obey without thinking. In these protocols of mental control, the executioners separate and isolate the victim from the rest of humanity by forcing it to practice despicable and unthinkable things for a normally constituted human. Very soon, children will have to participate in the rape and torture. It is a way of making them feel guilty and complicit so that they do not disclose criminal activities outside the public.

of the group. This means that the child will attend and participate in himself rape, animal sacrifices but also real human sacrifices or Simulated. These children are manipulated to make them believe that the abuse they may have committed on animals or on other children came from their own choice. They therefore feel guilty and ashamed, fearing revenge or even the police and the prison. This cements the law of silence as well as the atrocious and overwhelming feeling of being an executioner and a criminal yourself. all this combined with dissociative disorders will lead the child to isolate psychologically painful experiences and to continue his life ''as if nothing had happened'' and obviously without any disclosure to the outside world.

These practices therefore involve on the one hand the children of these Luciferian families, destined to occupy key positions within our society, and on the other, small victims destined to be tortured and sacrificed by the former. It is literally fresh flesh serving during rituals to program the young generation of elitist worship. some same way that there are two categories of MK-Monarch slaves: all first of all, those of the ''second zone'', used for prostitution, trafficking in drugs, etc., intended to be sacrificed; and then those who are part of the Luciferian blood lines that will be intended to serve the hierarchy while throughout their lives in strategic positions (we will come back to this in chapter 7 on MK-Monarch programming). This participation forced children to ritual abuse also aims to make them externalize their "inner rage" accumulated when they were themselves abused and tortured. The child develops a negative emotional load (traumatic memory) animals. The formation of these "children of rabies" is also done by forcing to kill a pet to which they have closely connected previously. Everything is done to "break" the child, to neutralize as soon as his first years all natural empathy and innocence by creating profound dissociative disorders in him. Ritual abuse is practiced in families who systematically repeat violence against their offspring. Families stuck in a transgenerational pathological continuity and loaded with demonic links because of the occultism in which they engage from generation to generation. Children of these blood lines are programmed

to perpetuate the unfortunate tradition, the child

victim will in turn become an executioner reproducing the abuse he has

suffered himself if he was not taken care of and removed from the destructive sect. In the German documentary "Sexzwang" (forced sex), Dr. Jim Phillips (former forensic pathologist for the police British) states: "All Satanists have been

abused, all! I cannot imagine that a normal human being can

being able to do something so horrible, disgusting and repugnant... "

Clinical psychologist Ellen P. Lacter wrote: "All victims were forced to commit violence

on others, often since early childhood. All assailants were

themselves victims of serious abuses. It is essential to keep this in mind

in the treatment of survivors. The 'White-Black' or 'Good-Bad' scheme is at

proscribe because it will fuel the patient's fear that he could be

irremediably bad[233]."

Living in such a chaotic environment will cause sudden changes in the chemistry of the child's body. This traumatic type of life

results in high levels of adrenaline that can create a real addiction

in children or adolescents. In adulthood (and even before) the victim will consciously or unconsciously cause situations to raise his adrenaline level. Violence is a very effective way of doing this. It is

it is therefore important to take into account this phenomenon of addiction to violence and

of its systematic repetition from one generation to the next in families

violent or not related to ritual abuse. This violence against others triggers

in the executioner a sudden production of endorphins during the passage to the act,

it also allows him to dissociate himself and anesthetize his own

traumatic memory ever more explosive, all this unconsciously.

The aggressor (himself a former victim) thus relieves his own pain

interior by a "shoot" of endorphins. It is therefore a vicious circle and a real addiction to endorphins and

violence (this will be returned to in more detail in Chapter 5). The book "Ritual Abuse and Mind Control: The Manipulation of Attachment Needs" contains the testimony of a survivor who illustrates

this phenomenon of dissociative disorders that are repeated from generation to generation: "My first memory with X was

when he walked into the room and grabbed me by the hair to get me

spin by turning in circles. When he stopped, everyone had

laughed because I was all disoriented. It could go from a state of a

coldness and incredible cruelty to a state of extreme kindness.

Many times I tried to please her to access her kind side (...) she (editor's note: the mother) has also abused me since birth, not only in rituals, but also at home. There was a part of her that was losing control, she showed her teeth, her eyes lit up in a certain way, and she was going mad[234]..."

This dissociative phenomenon with alternations of totally immoral and violent behaviors with normal and affectionate behaviors goes create a kind of cognitive dissonance in the child's mind. The latter will unconsciously block the conflicting memories in which a parent who is supposed to love and care for him behaves in a totally abnormal and dangerous. This reinforces amnesia and dissociative states in children. Repetitive traumas will split the child into several personalities and he will respond in a different way depending on whether he has case to the "good" mother or to the "bad" mother. For example, when the "bad" mother inflicts torture, the child switches into a personality who knows how to react to this "bad" mother. If it's the "good" mother who takes care of him, the child is in another state of consciousness and has no no knowledge of the "bad" mother or her other alter related to the facet obscure from his mother. This phenomenon of dissociation and amnesia explains some

testimonies of victims who say that there was "the child of the night" and "the child of the day", two

personalities who had no awareness of the other and who

allowed the child to lead a normal life, until the day when traumatic memories eventually date back to adulthood (see Chapter 5).

in

her book entitled ''Unshackled'', Kathleen Sullivan, a survivor of ritual abuse and mind control, describes

also the dissociative states in which his parents were

when they abused their daughter: "Each time, she used a white sheet to hang me from a beam. When she did

that, her voice became that of a little girl. She seemed to replay what

someone had subjected her to when she was a child. Then strangely, its

voice became that of an elderly person saying horrible things about me (...) On several occasions, she also locked me in a wooden crate in the basement. Sometimes I stayed for hours

locked in pain inside this exigue box. When it

came down to pick me up, she ''delivered me and saved me'' from this

cashier wondering how I got there. It didn't seem to be

I could not tell her that she was the one in charge[235]. ''

The psychotraumatologist Muriel Salmona describes this process of dissociation of the personality as follows: "Moreover, women often say, they no longer recognize their aggressor, their companion, when he becomes violent. He begins to have another look, another expression, other ways of speaking, of shouting, another voice... Because often they reproduce identically the voice of their father for example. It's impressive because it is no longer the same person, the aggressors are blow colonized by someone else they do not control[236].

Many victims or executioners who have been under the influence of these extremely traumatic practices during childhood and adolescence therefore develop severe dissociative disorders; including a syndrome of multiple personality (Dissociative Identity Disorder, T.D.I.) which is the the most extreme level of psychic dissociation. The executioner can therefore be a second personality (an alter) of the individual who will not be aware of his functioning to Dr. Jekyll & Mr Hide due to the amnesic walls that partition the different personalities. It can be perfectly integrated into society and its public personality will not leave nothing glimpse of his occult and violent activities.

Alter personality

public perhaps that of a good sincere Christian while a personality

alter much deeper will be the worst of satanists. Ritual abuse aimed at

personality splitting is the cornerstone of control

mental, the key element in subjugate, exploit and silence

Victims. This control is achieved by the deliberate creation of a disorder

dissociative of identity through repetitive trauma, in combination with

indoctrination, conditioning, hypnosis and various psychotropic drugs, all accompanied by programming whose effectiveness will depend on the level

the network has instruction on this type of mind control.

Dr. Lawrence Pazder describes a certain omnipresence of executioners in our society who have a normal appearance and who lead a life just as normal at first glance. They are present in all

layers of society that they have carefully infiltrated. Any position of

power or influence over society must be regarded for them as a

target for infiltration. Executioners have money available, a lot

have impeccable situations: doctors, ministers, professions of all

types[237]."

the

Dr. Catherine Gould, one of the founding members of the Los Angeles Study Group on ritual abuse (Task Force), is internationally recognized for its therapeutic work with children

victims of Satanism. In the 1994 documentary "In Satan's Name" by Antony Thomas, she described the same thing as Dr. Pazder regarding infiltration and control.

of society by these cults: "There are certainly bankers, psychologists, people from the media, we have

also heard about child protection services but also

police officers, because they have an interest in being present in all these socio-professional environments. When I started this work, I thought that

the motivations behind pedophilia were limited to sex and money,

but I began to realize during my ten years of research that the

motivations are even more sinister... Children are abused in a

purpose of indoctrination. Ritual abuse of children is a protocol used to

format humans for worship. It is about formatting children who have

so much abused, so much subjected to mind control that they become

very useful to the sect, at all levels. I think the purpose of all this

is to obtain the maximum control, whether in that country or in a

other."

the

British psychiatrist Vera Diamond, who also works with survivors of ritual abuse, states in the same documentary: "People are indoctrinated in a way that is very difficult to understand. I is currently working with people who have undergone this type of conditioning. It's

what is called "Mental Control", they completely format the

victim. According to our sources, this involves high-level organizations such as

the CIA. I've even heard about the royal family's involvement, but

also other equally high families.''

The American pastor Bob Larson also speaks of a systematic infiltration of institutions to establish their control: "He is

it is perfectly possible that these activities are even above the Mafia and

other criminal organizations. It is possible that it is the most

great network and criminal organization of the world. They infiltrate the system

the judiciary, the legislative and executive branches of government, the

positions and professions of power and authority. Ains'ils may have a

some control. They believe, as the Bible prophesys, that one day the Antichrist will rule over the whole world."

Le rapport gouvernemental “Ritual Crime in the State of Utah”

mentioned earlier in this chapter describes what he calls Satanism

Generational'': ''This type of group includes gender members male and female of all ages. They are usually born within the group and do not seem to be able to get out of it, except by death. They are very organized, very disciplined and extremely discreet. Local groups have strong ties with national and international groups (editor's note: extensive network). The rituals they practice are elaborate and completely Planned. They are worshippers of Satan and they do everything to move forward their cause (...) Their roots and practices go back hundreds of years. These people practice ritual abuse and the sacrifice of children (...) Women in these groups are used as ''pastoralists'' to provide babies in worship. These sects achieve perfect control over members who leave no evidence of their activities (...) Skeptics do not can not believe in the existence of such groups, arguing that no one can torture and sacrifice babies and children. However, in the past children were sacrificed to Satan but under other names like Moloch by example. There are also documented historical cases of child sacrifices. In our time, many people report the existence of this kind of Satanism. They are discredited by the skeptics as well as the many people who are undergoing therapy for dissociative disorders caused by severe psychological trauma, and physical[238]."

Dans le livre “Breaking the Circle of Satanic Ritual”, Daniel Ryder écrit que pour le sergent Jon Hinchcliff

(retired from the Mineapolis police), one of the factors that allows these

Hidden activities to endure is the social status of the members of the network.
Hinchcliff reports that testimonies from victims show that some of

these members are respected doctors, lawyers, businessmen,

religious, magistrates, *etc.* The former policeman said: "It would seem that all their bases are covered and protected." By their façade of respectability and their placement

strategic, these people can make very calculated counterattacks before

that any public disclosure of criminal activity cannot be made.

in

his book "The New Satanists", Linda Blood (Former member of the Temple of Set and former mistress of Michael Aquino) reports the testimony of a certain Bill Carmody who is the pseudonym of a senior intelligence instructor at the FLETC (Federal Law Enforcement Training Center): "Carmody investigated for some time the disappearances of children that seemed related to sectarian activities. As a member

of a specialized team, he conducted an investigation into a network that operated in

several states in the Southwestern United States. Carmody was thus able to infiltrate the

total three criminal Satanist cults. Carmody said of these sects: "The ones that are the most serious are those that are the more concealed and covered, indeed these clans have very

sophisticated while having the best means of communication, it is

of an international network.'' Carmody states that these groups are engaged in the

trafficking in drugs, arms and human beings, as well as trafficking in drugs, arms and human beings,

child pornography (...) According to him, the best organized criminal cults are run by intelligent people

and highly educated, these are people from the upper classes of the

society where they hold important positions in their community,

so-called "respectable" positions. These sectarian groups constitute a

Very secretive subculture that belongs to the underworld in the broadest sense. they

are generally composed of members of transgenerational families including

Blood ties help to maintain silence and secrecy[239].

During his appearance on meta-TV in 2015, the formerFrench gendarme and activist Christian 'Stan'

Maillaud described in part this elitist network practicing the systematic ritual abuses of training the elite of tomorrow:

''At the moment when all key positions are not yet held by ''MK-

Ultra'', where the entire societal elite is not yet held by these mentally ill, there are still human beings in the camp of the armed forces and we must put all our energy in their direction (...) Because there has to be a split in their forces and they have to come to the camp of the sovereign people who must free themselves from this grip (...) I am talking about the bite of the vampire, that is to say that for me the act of sodomizing a child martyr corresponds to the vampire who bites a creature for the change to vampire. A child who is raped, tortured, martyred throughout the world his childhood, which finds neither justice nor protection and which reaches the age adult like that, kept in the networks that martyr him, becomes himself a predator. Especially when it is explained to him that if he in turn attacks other children who are tortured and raped, this will relieve him of his own suffering. This is the protocol they apply (...) It is some something recurring (...) the people who are placed in the societal elite are those which are selected by Freemasonry or rose-cross (...) It is necessary to know that in Freemasonry, to gain rank you must pass rituals, so this small pyramid is to be superimposed with the pyramid of your career. Do you want to move up in rank? So you have to go through rituals in the lodge of which you are a part. The more power hungry you are and of success, the more you will ask to pass the grades and you will then be caught in satanic rituals. The first practices are therefore rape collective of children, then killing, etc. What makes you have completely degenerate people who arrive at the head of the institutions and that in addition these people there afterwards bring their own children from an early age in rituals of this kind to make them the future societal elite. And that it is something that people do not yet understand at the moment.

We saw when we were investigating that there is a protocol where there are two types of victims: there are disadvantaged children, abducted children, children born under X, of rape, which serve as a "raw material" for the initiation of other children. That is to say that you have on one side the children who are taken by a Freemason father in these evenings, and on the other side, those children who come out of cages and who are put there so that the child of

the elite ends up opening the belly of this unfortunate who was raped

collectively and tortured by everyone... What for? Because it goes

create the fragmentation of the personality or compartmentalization of memories (...)

You can imagine the monsters that are put on the market. So that's why

that at present in all the small societal elite, all the places

are being caught by these monsters following these formal protocols that have their real origin in Auschwitz."

Despite the total silence of the mainstream media on the subject, many people are working to disclose these inhumane practices. in

1996, un article intitulé “An Analysis of Ritualistic and

Religion-Related Child Abuse Allegations" (an analysis of testimonies

ritual and religious abuse of children! [240!)]was written by three university professors in psychology: Bette Bottoms, Phillip Shaver and Gail Goodman. The article

contains a list that can be used to define cases of ritual abuse, these

criteria were identified from the testimonies of victims and

Therapists:

- Abuse by one or more persons of a group in which members appear to be following the orders of one or more leaders.
- Abuse related to any practice or behaviour repeated in a well-defined manner (which may include prayers, songs,

incantations, the wearing of particular clothes...)

- Abuses related to symbols (for example the 666, the inverted pentagram, inverted or broken crosses), invocations, outfits

clothing with symbols, beliefs associated with Satan.

- Abuses related to a belief in the supernatural, the paranormal,

occultism or special powers (e.g. "magic surgery" - detailed in

chapter 7-, spiritualism, etc.)
- Rituals associated with activities involving tombs, crypts, bones...
- Rituals involving feces or animal or human blood.
- Rituals involving specific daggers, candles, altars...
- Rituals involving real or simulated torture and sacrifice of animals.
- Rituals involving sacrifices with real or simulated murders of humans.
- Rituals involving real or simulated acts of cannibalism.
- Rituals involving the obligation to attend or participate in sexual practices.
- Rituals involving child pornography.
- Rituals involving drugs.
- Rituals to bind a child to Satan or a demonic entity.
- Abuse perpetrated by a priest, rabbi or pastor.
- Abuse committed in a religious setting, a religious school or a religious centre.
- "Breeding" of newborns for rituals of sacrifices.
- Abuse causing periods of amnesia or disorders returning on certain dates.
- Abuse disclosed by an individual with a dissociative disorder or multiple personality caused by ritual or religious abuse.

This list is not exhaustive. In 1989, the document entitled Ritual

Abuse Task Force, "Report of a Working Group on Ritual Abuse and mental control" was published by the "Commission for Women of Los Angeles", chaired by Myra B. Riddell and attended by Dr. Catherine Gould and Dr. Lynn Laboriel. The study committee was composed of professionals in the medical, mental health, education, justice as well as members of victim support associations. This report mentions the types of physical and psychological violence described by the survivors and their therapists:

- Lock the victim in a cage, closet, cellar or any other confined place, telling him that he will die there. Some victims report being locked in a coffin and buried alive for simulate a death. One of the members of the group then comes "to the rescue" of the traumatized child who will establish a privileged link with his savior who will be perceived as a groin, n emermement can be iaire with aes insects or animals. This "game" of isolation and deliverance of the child will make him even more vulnerable to indoctrination and destructive practices of group.

- Humiliation through verbal violence, forced nudity in front of the group, forced ingestion of urine, stool, blood, human flesh or semen. Obligation to commit heinous acts such as mutilation, murders, rapes of a child or an infant.

- Guilt and threats of denunciation, the victim is deceived and she ends up believing that his participation in the atrocities was voluntary. This feeling of guilt and shame helps to show fidelity and loyalty to the sect and its doctrines. The victims are indoctrinated to believe that the hyper-violent group is the only refuge that can accept and protect them and that there is no point in asking for outside help. The child is indoctrinated to believe that God has reieted and abandoned him, that he is related to Satan, and that there is no way out of the group.

- Physical violence involving rape and sexual torture generally practised in groups, zoophilia, shocks electric, hangings by hands or feet, immersion in water until near drowning, deprivation of food, water and sleep. A victim in a state of exhaustion is much more open to control mental because fatigue will hinder his ability to judge. the painful tortures cause the child to dissociate himself, and just like a prisoner of war subjected to torture he becomes ready to do whatever he will be required to stop the pain. Physical pain is often associated with sexual arousal for which a child is not prepared to face. Pain and pleasure are combined to help establish an unhealthy relationship between anointed and the oourreaux. ne syndrome of Stockholm is being exploited to the full to create an attachment between victims and Aggressors.

- Make the victim feel that he is constantly monitored and controlled by the executioners and their spiritual allies (spirits, demons, deities). The child is manipulated to believe that the "walls have ears" and that an "eye that sees everything" constantly observes his actions. The child is subjected to all kinds of lies whose purpose is to reinforce the whole power and omnipresence of the executioners.
- Oath of Secrecy on pain of death if the victim discloses anything. Mental programming for the victim to commit suicide in the event of memories or disclosure of sectarian and criminal activities. Strong vulnerability to self-sabotage impulses and self-destruction impulses when the victim begins therapy and tries to leave the sectarian group.
- Use of psychotropic drugs altering and confusing the awareness of the victim, thus facilitating sexual assaults. the Psychotropic drugs can be injected, administered orally, in the form

of

suppositories or incorporated into food or drink. The effects

hypnotics and paralytics cause in the victim of mental confusion,

drowsiness but also impaired memory. The executioners bet

on these alterations of consciousness caused by drugs to strengthen

the illusion that they have absolute power to which the child must submit. the

victims also lose the notion of the boundary between the group and the self,

they come to identify with the group and feel like an extension of

This one. Loss of self-esteem contributes to the development of wickedness

and inner rage.

Use of mind control, hypnosis, conditioning and programming with the use of "triggers" to manipulate

the different personalities of the victim. Survivors of abuse report having undergone intense projections of lights in the eyes during the programming sessions. These lights seem to cause disorientation and induce a state of trance, thus decreasing the resistance of the victim and increasing their suggestibility to programming.

- Coercing the victim to work for the sect outside, engaging in prostitution, drug trafficking and other activities Illegal. Infiltration of social institutions (schools, churches, order, courts, psychiatry, politics...) in order to extend the sphere of the group's influence.

- Exploitation of repetitive pregnancies following the rape of some young girls in the group used as "reproductive". The goal is to regularly provide the cult with undeclared babies. These babies serve to fuel ritual sacrifices or the black market, while these pregnancies and these traumatic deliveries serve to "break" and control again more the victim. Young victims may be forced to follow a hormonal treatment in order to accelerate their puberty.

- Use of rituals such as "magic surgery" (we will return to this in chapter 7), various rituals "of passage" as the "ritual of rebirth" and the "ritual marriage", this in order to strengthen the subjugation to the sect. Spiritual indoctrination is a point essential in these groups. A ritual marriage can take place between a child and his executioner, between two children or between the child and Satan. These rituals of "rebirth" and "marriage" have the consequence of binding the victim psychologically but also spiritually to the group and the powers of the evil. "Non-biological" twinning is also used as a means of control mental. For example, two young children will be initiated during a ceremony with a magical union of their souls, they then become inseparable twins for eternity. they will each share half of the same mental programming making them interdependent with each other. These ritual alliances follow one another alter personalities created by extreme trauma, alter who will remain faithful to the cult as long as there has not been a distance from the sect with a work of deprogramming.

b/ Symbolic of death and rebirth

As we saw in chapter 2, the "rituals of rebirth" with a passage through a death and a rebirth

symbolic were something widespread in religions at Mysteries.

This practice of symbolic "resurrection" is also present in

shamanic traditions. Here, Lloyd deMause takes up the description of a

shamanic ritual comparing it to real childbirth: "When the drum roll accelerates (heartbeat and contractions)...

the whole structure cracks like a cosmic wave on my head (break

amniotic waters)... and in a supreme effort, I must continue to move forward,

my legs are blocked (passage in the birth canal)... my skull is a

drum, my veins will burst and pierce my skin (anoxia)... I

AM SUCKED AND

spread both downwards and upwards (birth)... Finally, it's like if I came back from afar, from an infinite depth where I was well huddled.

Then suddenly the surface, suddenly the air, suddenly that dazzling white! [241]]."

This type of initiatory resurrection comes up frequently in the testimonies of survivors of modern ritual abuse. This death and this rebirth can be symbolized by a real burial in a coffin or vault in a cemetery. Some survivors even report have been placed in the carcass of a dead animal and in some cases in a human corpse. Dr. Judianne Densen-Gerber, lawyer and psychiatrist American, specialist in child abuse, speaks of a satanic ritual in which a child is placed in the gaping cavity of a woman's belly at who have just done a caesarean section to remove their baby. This ritual has **£crn**1**fⁱmfⁱnt** *é*ié** **H£rrit nnr tVi** 1 **F'F'n Snrpnsnn** 1"**=> rps^anp Paul**

ONLY IF THEY

Bonacci (we

will return to their testimonies later). Senator John De Camp Reports

the words of Densen-Gerber in his book "The Franklin

Cover-up": "I've been in this field since

long enough and I had to realize what these three patients me

Said. It was something so horrible for me to imagine.

Take a two-year-old child and place it in a woman's open uterus

Dying. To have this child covered in blood. I use denial myself

after all these years... According to Sorenson, this happened in Nebraska,

today she is dead. But the same thing, the same ceremony, was

described by Bonacci, also in Nebraska! [242]."

The ex-Satanist Stella Katz describes the rebirth ceremony in which the

The child's personality is split: "It can be a cow, large goat or sheep carcass. It is told to children

that they will not be able to enter the realm of darkness are born from blood and beast. This is similar, but in an inverted way to the Christian beliefs that only those who are born by water and by the Holy Spirit will be able to enter the Kingdom of God. The child is drugged and placed naked in a carcass. He or she is sewn into the body (...) The hand of the "deliverer" is inserted and the child is dragged through the incision that has been made on the animal. During this experience, the child accustomed to splitting when terrorized, will create a new split (editor's note: new alter/personality). The child's alter is then usually identified with a demon name by the one who delivers it! [243]]."

Fritz Springmeier also describes the same type of rituals also used as satanic baptism: "This ceremony can vary in some details, but here is the ritual performed for a child intended for control Monarch mental: the child is undressed and made to put on a dress purple. It is placed inside a pentagram where there is a **doing nffirp**1 **H'antF'l Hpvant 1^r'imù** the child **F>st nrpspntp TTn rViPval** or a jackal with the inscription "Nebebka" on the neck or on the forehead is then sacrificed in the name of Satan (the name given to him may vary according to the groups, this can be "Set" or "Saman" for example). The abdomen of the beast is fully open and the liver is removed. The four guardian spirits of the four cardinal points, the watchtowers, are then invoked.

The Monarch child is then smeared with the fat of the dead animal. A spirit guardian, "gatekeeper", is then called with a bell, then the child is placed in the belly of the animal. Part of the raw liver is given to the child and the rest is consumed by the group. The child ends up being baptized with the blood of the sacrificed animal! [244]]."

Reconstruction of birth trauma (see even intrauterine regression) is a common feature of ritual abuse satanic (perhaps this is a practice unconsciously related to the initial trauma of twin pregnancies where the fetus experiences feel his or her twins die by her side in the womb...). It would seem that the anguish of the initiate who aims to remain permanently in union with the mother, and thus to avoid the repetition of the trauma of birth is illustrated in the ancient Gnostic cults. These religions in Mysteries expressed their refusal of God the Father by a desire for a return to the Mother Goddess.

The rituals of birth, or rebirth, come from the ancient cults of the fertility related to the Mother Goddess. The Mother and the incestuous was elevated to a status of divine ritual in opposition to "God the Father". In the ancient Mysteries, the initiate received the promise of divine omnipotence, a cosmic union with the "whole", thanks to the symbolic union with "The Mother". In the Mysteries of Eleusis, there was an initiation called the "Dark Descent" in the mother. The hierophant was accompanied in this obscure initiation by a priestess who represented the Mother Goddess, the descent into his uterus. In the Phrygian Mysteries cult, the initiate descends in a pit and the blood of an animal is poured on him, as a result of this rebirth he receives the "nourishing milk". As we saw in chapter 2, the Phibionite sect aimed to gather the seed men and female menstruation in a kind of "sperm cult" where even human fetuses were consumed. All these rites revolve around fertility, mixing both fertility of "mother earth" and human fertility, often resulting in totally depraved and criminal practices.

For the psycho-historian Loyd deMause, the only way to give meaning to certain elements present in ritual abuses is to consider that they symbolically and even physically revive the trauma of the birth. We find the confinement in symbolic bellies (cages, boxes, coffins, but also real organic bellies), hanging the upside down that reproduces the sensation that the fetus experiences in the belly of its

tv» AΤû T n ctn K'mûfftirvn rl û 1/-» tûtû *r* n-»—i o 1 m ı 1 rv-po rlûo fz-v-rfi î **iiic;i c;.** ±*J*<*X* ouuinci **oiun uc i*CL* LC; LC; UCUIO icau** lui **o u.t;o** luuuico

reproduced the experience of amniotic fluid while suffocation reproduces anoxia that all babies live during childbirth. The victim is forced to drink blood and urine, just as the fetus "drinks" placental blood and "bathes" in his urine. Rituals are often performed in tunnels or cellars, dark and damp underground places symbolizing the confinement of the vaginal canal or the womb of mother earth.

The sixteen elements characteristic of ritual abuses that researchers Jean Goodwin and David Finkelhor have listed are all related to the reconstruction of birth trauma. Without a symbolic "birth", all these acts would make no sense. Some researchers have asked themselves a question to about these systematic protocols in ritual abuse: "Why rape in such a complicated way?" Because this process represents the fetal drama that

must be reproduced and relived, this in a way that is certainly unconscious.

Dans le livre “The Witches’ Way : Principles, Rituals and Beliefs of Modem Witchcraft” (la voie des

witches: principles, rites and beliefs of modern witchcraft),

Janet and Stewart Fenar report the testimony of a victim who describes that

naked and in a state of trance, she was tied up and transported to a cave

by a group of women who are also completely naked. Once in the cave,

the women made her pass under their legs gesticulating and screaming,

as if it were a childbirth. Then a symbolic umbilical cord

was cut off and the victim was sprayed with water. In his book entitled "Symbolic Wounds", Bruno Bettelheim also describes rites related to puberty during which young boys have to crawl under

the legs of older men, in a symbolism of rebirth. In the

book "Michelle Remembers", the survivor Michelle Smith remembers her ritual of "birth". A baby was first

stabbed, then it was placed between Michelle's legs and her blood spread out

on her, as if he possessed "power". Then we painted red symbols on her body and she had to put her head between a woman's legs and crawl as if this woman were giving birth to her. It also describes a

another ritual where she was placed inside a plaster statue at

the effigy of the devil and covered with blood. She says she felt like she was in

a "tube of toothpaste" at the time she was expelled: "I am being born, I have something thick wrapped around my neck but a man cuts this rope so that I do not choke! [245!.]"

The Skull and Bones secret society practices a symbolic death ritual where the initiate is placed naked in a

coffin, he must undergo various traumatic stages in order to

rebirth and a transformation of his life. In this coffin, he must

also confess his darkest sexual activities. For the Skull and Bones, during the night of the ritual the initiate "dies in the world to be reborn in the Order (...) While he is in the coffin for a symbolic journey through the underworld for his rebirth, which will take place in room n°322,

the Order then puts on the "newborn" knight with special clothes,

indicating that from now on he will have to adapt to the mission of the Order! [245]]." The oath taken by the initiate during this ritual of rebirth swears an allegiance to the secret Order that surpasses all that concerns the world

layman. It's a total allegiance to the group...

that

Ritual type is something common in Satanism. In his book "The Satanic Rituals: Companion to the Satanic Bible", Anton Lavey, the founder of the Church of Satan, wrote: "The ceremony of rebirth takes place in a large coffin, in a similar way this symbolism of the coffin is found in most of the lodge rituals! [247]]."

The ex-illuminati "Svali", survivor of ritual abuse and mind control who has some way deserted the cult to deliver her testimony, claimed that one of the oldest of their rituals is the "resurrection ceremony". The Phoenix is one of the symbols they appreciate the most, death and rebirth to a new life is very present in the rituals of the Luciferian elite. We'il see in chapter 6 what does this ritual of "resurrection" (and MK programming), which goes so far as to cause a near-death experience (NDE) in the small victim.

c/ Blood sacrifice

"The hardest Satanist groups believe that the best way to raise energy is either through the sexual act or through sacrifice, that it's an animal or a human... A huge amount of energy is then liberated, especially with a human being. If you want to raise this ultimate power, you sacrifice someone. It is with a baby that there will be the greater amount of energy, then with a virgin." - Bill Schnoebelen

A sacrifice may be an object that serves as an offering to a god, entity, or deity for the purpose of establishing, restoring, or maintaining a good man's relationship with the sacred. It is also a question of getting help, material favors or spiritual power as powers psychic and magical. Cremation is a way to put directly the offering at the disposal of the gods. Blood rituals (sacrifices or bleeding) are based on the belief that the life force of humans or ranimai resiae aans son sang, born sacrmces follow a certain calendar religious that varies according to the cults, they can also be carried out punctually for an anniversary date for example. formerly the offering of a human life to a god (demon) was usually used as a ritual for terrestrial fertility and harvests, nowadays sacrifices serve as an advantage for obtaining personal powers and favors. the cannibalism is often combined with human sacrifice due to the belief that the ingestion of blood and human flesh can absorb the vital energy of the victim. Adults and children survivors of ritual abuse report that the purpose of such practices is to obtain certain powers Magic. Survivors explain that blood use and cannibalism are a way for the executioner(s) to take possession of the spiritual power of the victim. Wallis Budge wrote about the acts cannibals reported in the Egyptian Book of the Dead: "The notion that by eating flesh, or more particularly by drinking the blood of another living being, man absorbs the life of the victim

in one's own life, is something that appears in primitive cultures

in various forms! [248]]."

These testimonies of human sacrifices always raise a question of credibility in the eyes of the public. Where do the sacrificed victims come from and where are

leftovers? Some testimonies report that

the victims often come from within the sect itself, i.e.

they are babies born of rape to be sacrificed. But it can also be

of homeless people, missing adults or children. There is a deafening silence from the media as well as a lack of official figures on the annual number of

Disappearances... The explanation for the absence of remains perhaps also the

cannibalism, access to morgues and crematoriums by the sect, the

freezing of flesh, preservation of bones for practices

Magic... etc. In 2000, on a television set of France 3 (Rapes of Children, the End of Silence?), the former deputy prosecutor of Bobigny Martine Bouillon said that several mass graves of children had been discovered in the Paris region and that an investigation

was in progress at the time...

The victim, adult or child, who was tortured and terrorized during the ritual before his killing, will have his blood loaded with endorphins

(endogenous morphine). These endorphins are secreted naturally by the body during intense stress or during intense physical activity, it is a natural opiate that acts as a painkiller. In the athletes, the release of endorphins allows to maintain efforts they often develop an addiction to this sensation that hormones provide, this is what is called the "runner's high" (the drunkenness of the runner). A victim of rape and torture, including the pain will have been pushed to its climax, will have a level of endorphins extremely high in his blood. This blood will be consumed as a drug by participants in the ritual, themselves already in a dissociative state. A form of addiction can therefore develop through blood consumption numain or animal loaded with endorphins.

The ex-Luciferian Svali reports that "The Celtic branch (of the "illuminati" sect) believes that power is transmitted at the time of the passage of life to death. They do initiation rituals with children or with older followers. The initiate is tied up and an animal is bled to death above him. The belief is that the person then receives the power of the mind which comes out of the body, this power "enters" into the initiate (...) These people believe that there are other spiritual dimensions, and that for y access, a great sacrifice must be made to "open a portal", usually by the sacrifice of several animals. I have also seen

animal sacrifices performed for protection, blood is used for

"close the circle" so that some demonic entities cannot

enter it." We still find this notion of baptism by blood,

the animal bled above the initiate to cover it with hemoglobin, just as in the Mystery cult of Mithras.

for

the Satanist Aleister Crowley, the "best blood" is the menstrual blood of the woman, then the "fresh blood of a child" and finally that of the "enemies! [249]]" In his book "Magick in Theory and Practice," Crowley wrote: "Blood is life. This simple statement is explained by the Hindus for whom the

blood is the main vehicle of vital 'Prana'... This is the theory of

ancient Magicians, for whom every living being is a varying reserve of energy

in quantity according to the size and health of the animal, and in quality according to its

mental and its moral character. At the death of the animal, this energy is

abruptly released. (For magical purposes) The animal must be killed before that

in a circle, or a triangle as the case may be, so that the energy cannot

To get away. The nature of the selected animal must be consistent with that of the ceremony. For the highest spiritual work, it is therefore necessary to choose the purest victim and one that contains the most strength. A male child, of a pariah innocence and has a granae intelligence is ia victim ia more appropriate and most desirable. Some magicians who refuse the use of blood have tried to replace it with incense... But the blood sacrifice, although more dangerous, is the most effective, and in almost all cases, human sacrifice is the best! [250]!."

Fritz Springmeier explains that sex and blood sacrifices are used to interact with demons. Black masses with Blood sacrifices also involve orgies. Depravity and magic sexual are ways to interact with demons, this also allows to

sexual are ways to interact with demons, this also allows to

release the tension present during the deadly ceremony. Some entities Particularly powerful can only be invoked if there are Sacrifices. Demons do not come for free and the price to pay is the blood. Satan demands a sacrifice and the child is the greatest offering because the purer, add torture and sexual abuse and you get the ultimate offering. Just as with human sacrifice, where the purity of the child is sacrificed and vampirized, satanic sexual magic also requires this innocence and purity to be the most effective possible. The combination of the two is the ultimate defilement and therefore the ultimate offering. The executioner will terrorize the child to raise his maximum fear, his energy... Then he rapes him, and kills him at moment of orgasm in order to vampirize the totality of the vital energy. In the black mass is the sacrifice of blood (red magic) and then the element orgiastic (sexual magic) that will constitute the "Vibration" sought by satanists. Blood, when it spreads, attracts some demonic powers more or less hierarchically high, but also the teeming larvae that populate the astral bottom.

The serial-killer Ottis Tool said he had been involved in extreme satanic ceremonies, here is what he confided to Stéphane Bourgoin who interviewed him in prison for his documentary "Lyrics of Serial-Killers” :

- The initiate, who cut the throat of the person, "fuck" first the person, and the animals "fuck" him too. Then they "fuck" the animals and then kill them. They cooked the person and the animals and they were having a great feast.

- Was it when you were part of the satanic sect?
- Yes... They were doing that... There were a lot of them. We couldn't... it was difficult to recognize them, most often they had a mask

or a hood covering their face. In some cases, we knew who was

member, but... the main obligations cannot be waived, because this

would be hell, worse than it already is... The words of

pass and this...

Whether in luciferian/satanist cults, the goal is to prove that Satan or Lucifer are more powerful than God the Creator.

Some strictly Satanist groups use a system based on

the inversion of the Christian tradition, both in ceremonies and in symbols. The cross will be turned over, marriage to God is replaced by the

marriage to Satan. The baptism of water and the Holy Spirit is replaced by the

baptism of animal or human blood. The Black Mass reverses the Catholic Mass

in the sense that participants actually eat from the sacrificed pulpit

(human or animal) and drink the blood of the victim, for example,

Satanists practice a kind of communion with their Master, a

reverse sanctification. As we will see now, there are also

a "living sacrifice", which is also a

diversion and a total inversion of the Christic teachings.

d/ Living sacrifice

Therapist Patricia Baird Clarke, in her book "Sanctification in Reverse: The Essence of Satanic Ritual Abuse"

satanic ritual abuse) described how the "living sacrifice" of a child works among Satanists:

- Persons involved in occult activities have a certain degree of separation between the soul and the mind allowing them to see,

hear and feel the entities living on another plane. These people are all,

without exception, deceived and in mental confusion. Many think, between

other, that they can communicate with the dead, although the Bible states

clearly this is impossible. Demonic spirits can appear

or take any form, including the human form and thus deceive

humans by making them believe that they can give glory, fortune,

and even blessing and eternal life.

Spiritual power can only come from two sources: Jesus Christ or Satan. God gives the power to overcome all sin and all

temptation by giving His Holy Ghost to those who believe in sacrifice

Atonement of His Son Jesus Christ. Those involved in the darkness of occultism are fed by demons. In the satanic baked world, demons are powers. If someone were to say that he had

the power of extrasensory perception, he could also say that it has the demon of extrasensory perception. Human beings have no supernatural powers, these powers come from spiritual entities. The more one has demons, the more powers one has available to realize one's own selfish interests. The great powers (the demons) must go through the despicable practice of satanic ritual abuse.

In satanic ritual abuse, an infant or child will be "elected" and chosen as a "special" individual through which followers will be able to receive energy. To receive energy, there must always be have a sacrifice; it is a principle of the Kingdom. Jesus Christ was the perfect sacrifice that gave itself once and for all, and by believing in Him, the Christians receive the power to overcome evil and live a life Victorious Christian. However, this power is only available to Christians if they are willing to live according to God's instructions, including Romans 12:1 where we are told: "to offer your bodies as a living sacrifice, holy, pleasing to God, which will be on your part a cult reasonable.". Most people who know a little about Satanic worship have heard of baby murders as a sacrifice for Satan. however few people have heard of the notion of living sacrifice required by Satan.

God commands Christians to become a living sacrifice for Him. A Satan worshipper would only be willing to be a living sacrifice for

no one, for the very essence of Satanism is based on selfishness and

greed; but in order to gain access to power and power, there must be

have a living sacrifice. Therefore, a helpless baby or a child

will be chosen to be the living sacrifice to Satan. The child is then subject to

many painful and terrifying rituals in which demons are called upon to possess denial, thus aiisant ae him or had a "tank" or

a "battery" used to store satanic powers that can be

used at will by members of the cult. The most common way by

which these powers are accessible is by sexual perversion on

the child. The child will of course grow and mature to become an adult, but in

because of the seriousness of the abuse and psychological programming, it does not

will never realize that he possesses these powers. He will suffer throughout his

life as much of the harassment of the demons as of its mental programming and the

executioners themselves. This person has become a living sacrifice to Satan and

his life is hell.

This is a diversion and odious perversion of a glorious scriptural truth given by God to bring his people into a relationship close and loving with Him and thus fill their lives with blessings!

It is now becoming clear that these consequences of abuse Satanic rituals require spiritual ministry. The best techniques or Psychological expertise known to man will never be able to deliver a no one in a turmoil caused by demonic spirits. Only the Christians empowered by the Holy Spirit have discernment and power to deliver people tortured by demons. Our power over these entities is directly proportional to the extent to which we have been prepared to die to ourselves to allow Christ to fill us with Himself. if we are willing to be a living sacrifice to God, we have the love and power to deliver those who, against their will, have been sacrifices alive for Satan! [25](i).

When Patricia Baird Clarke writes "The most common way in which these powers are accessed is through sexual perversion on the child", this is a real sexual magic.

e/ Children of rabies

"... *the sudden emergence, in a docile and kind child, of a personality who delusions, who screams, who laughs out loud, who utters*

appalling blasphemy and that seems to be invaded by a foreign being." " Witchcraft in England " - Barbara Rosen

"We therapists identify much more with the pain and suffering of our patients, more than with the other side of the

division, i.e. rage, revenge, perpetration... These feelings,

as all the others are difficult, but they need to be treated in

une thérapie." - "Multiple Personality and Dissociation : Understanding Incest, Abuse, and MPD" - David Calof

Because of the extreme violence they involve, ritual abuse causes the child enormous inner tension. This rage

internalized is exploited by the group to indoctrinate the child in a

a system where violence and fury are valued and even encouraged.

The child who has been repeatedly raped and tortured in a group

is not allowed to express anger, this violence (or negative charge)

which he has to evacuate can only be done by torture of other children and sometimes even murder. These hyper-violent behaviors are therefore

encouraged and rewarded by adults who use this to make people feel

to the child that he is already as violent as them and that it is proof that he

becomes truly a member of the group, and as a result, equally guilty

than the others...

"Very violent behaviour originates in the first two years of life; the same is true of the feeling of

It is a precious thing because it is the only means of preventing violent acts from happening.

Repeat. When this feeling is not constituted at this early period, it is difficult to acquire it afterwards; behind violent gestures of "primitive" appearance, summary, are held complex processes whose Main characteristics are the indistinguishable between oneself and others, the disorders of the body pattern and muscle tone, the inability to do semblant, and neurological dysfunctions due to very inadequate mothering care." Maurice Berger, "Caring for violent children" (2012)

For groups practicing ritual abuse and mind control, the child's mind must be broken as soon as the most young age. For this the extremely traumatic experiences will be multiply, the goal is to corrupt innocence and create states dissociative. Children who normally have empathy and joie de vivre natural, become "soldiers" or "priests" capable of hurting and even to kill without feeling any empathy. The only way to achieve such behavior is through the unbundling process. Fracking of the child in several dissociated personalities is a phenomenon of protection against severe trauma. It is the deep dissociative disorders that allow to torture and kill in a robotic way without there really being awareness of the seriousness of the acts. For these groups hyper-violent, compassion is not acceptable and must be neutralized from the first years of the child's life; who very quickly under the weight of traumas will develop multiple dehumanized personalities.

Child victims of physical, psychological and sexual abuse develop an internal negative burden proportional to the

suffering and repetition of trauma. This negative charge is a

latent traumatic memory, but it is still present in

the child who will have to survive the psychotrauma consequences of the violence.

To be able to manage the awakening of this traumatic memory, the child will have

use of dissociating conduct to create anesthetic disjunction

this intolerable tension, this negative emotional charge. this

disjunction will occur during dissociating conducts in two ways:

either by extreme stress that will cause a sudden production of hormones,

or by using drugs. In a young child, these behaviors

dissociating behaviours can result in self-destructive behaviours such as self-harm, scarification, hitting, biting,

burn; but still endangerments with risky games or

violent conduct against others, the other then serving as a fuse during a

balance of power to be disjunct and anesthetize. Destructive sects encourage this chain of violence by pushing the child (already traumatized) to become himself a executioner and to understand very quickly that this dissociating conduct that is violence against others relieves him and anesthetizes his own traumatic memory: it is a vicious circle. (We will return in more detail to these notions of dissociation and traumatic memory in the next chapter).

Jean Cartry, author and special educator, wrote about Maurice Berger's book "Do we want barbarian children?":

"For about ten years, we welcomed four brothers, both seniors who have lived for one year with their mother an alternation of relationships eroticized or very violent. On the other hand, the two youngest benefited early judicial protection, especially the last one we welcomed at the age of five months. The judge did not tremble and withdrew it at the maternity itself. The first two boys, thirty and nineteen months old, were the the most violent and dangerous little children we have ever known. On the other hand, their younger brothers were never violent."

In 1990, a documentary entitled "Child of rage" was broadcast by HBO in its series "America Undercover".

This disturbing documentary reveals how a six-year-old girl, Beth Thomas, tortured animals and sexually raped his little brother

Jonathan. This is a compilation of video recordings that Dr. Ken Magid, a clinical psychologist specializing in the treatment of children severely abused, performed during therapy sessions with little Beth. These children were so traumatized in their first months or first months years of life that they develop no connection with other children or adults. These are children who cannot love or accept ae receiving love. They don't even know they can hurt or even kill (without remorse).

Beth's mother died when she was one year old, so she and her little brother Jonathan were left at the mercy of their father, a pedophile sadistic. The children were severely neglected and Beth was sexually abused up to the age of 19 months, when social services took them away from the father and placed them for adoption. In 1984, the two children were given to a couple, Tim and Julie, who received no information as for the traumatic past of the little ones. At the time of adoption, Jonathan was seven months old, he did not hold his head and could not ride on the side. He had greatly lacked stimulation but also food. at after a few months, Tim and Julie began to observe the behaviors strange children and to learn certain things about their past.

They then thought that Beth had probably been sexually abused and he did not it did not take long for her to show the signs. She was doing a recurring nightmare in which "a man was lying on top of her hurting her."

The rapes committed by her biological father led Beth to behave violently and sexually, especially with her little brother Jonathan. She also had tendencies to masturbate in a way that repetitive, to the point of having an infection and having to be Hospitalized. Julie caught her one day sexually assaulting her Jonathan, he was crying and his pants were down. When Julie asked him what had happened, she replied that she had pinched his penis and put a finger in his buttocks, which he had begged her to stop but that she had continued. Sometimes Beth would plant needles in his brother and in pets. When it was a little more aged, she even smashed Jonathan's head on the cement floor of the garage,

R~>1 1 1 'AÏ I R" NM'NTC RI R> "AI YOU Î Î RP NRIT A 1 NRC R'TR" NP^PCCAIRPC T A -NUIT 1 R»

parents adoptives had to lock him up in his room. Beth's intention was not not just to hurt her brother, but she wanted to kill him... On the video recordings, she expresses in a very calm and above all very very way cold his desire to kill his brother, but also his parents. The most important aspect worrying about Beth's behavior was her total lack of remorse and embarrassment about his destructive behaviors. She had good aware that his actions were bad and dangerous, but this had no importance to her.

Beth was diagnosed with an "attachment disorder", characterized by emotional disorders, behavioural and social. This may take the form of an inability to establish appropriate social interactions. The child may show a excessive detachment or on the contrary excessive familiarity with strangers. Beth's case involved a total inability to develop empathy and an inability to form normal emotional bonds with a human. Beth's behavior was so extreme that in April 1989 she was removed from the home of the adoptive parents to be placed in intensive therapy with therapist Connell Watkins. Despite the very dangerous behavior of

Beth, this therapist was convinced that she could help him like her had done so with other children, sometimes murderers who had not yet Ten years... Little by little, during the course of therapy, Beth Thomas began to develop empathy, as well as remorse. She learned what the good and evil. Sometimes she would cry openly when she got recalled his violent behaviour towards his little brother. It was necessary to several years to rebalance Beth, but like all child victims serious abuse, the brands will remain for life. As an adult, Beth graduated with a degree in nursing. She wrote a book called "More Than a Thread of Hope".

Another famous case of a hyper-violent child, and even a murderer, is that of the British Mary Flora Bell. At the age of eleven, she was tried guilty of the murder of two boys aged three and four. In her early childhood, Mary was severely sexually and physically abused. His mother, who was a sado-masochistic prostitute, used her daughter during the sessions with her customers, the little one was therefore suffering atrocities. Growing up, Mary a developed a significant rage that manifested itself in torture on animals and by attempts to strangangle other children. For her, it it was simply "massages", she had not

not aware of the mortal danger of such practices. It is likely that it will

had learned about strangulation during HM sessions with his mother. Just like

Beth Thomas, Mary has not developed any emotional bond with her parents, she has not

not known his father and father-in-law was an alcoholic criminal, so chaos reigned constantly in the house.

In May 1968, Mary strangled four-year-old Martin Brown. A few months later, in the company of her friend Norma, she strangled

another boy, three-year-old Brian Howe. Mary signed her initial "M" with a razor blade on the abdomen of the little victim, the girls also allegedly sexually mutilated the body with

scissors. Mary was convicted of manslaughter for a

reduced liability but was sentenced to life imprisonment even though

she was still a child at the time of the events: she will spend twelve years

in prison. While incarcerated, Mary received behavioural therapy

thanks to which she developed a sense of good and evil. It showed

signs of remorse for the violence and murders she had committed.

Dr. Robert Orton, the first to interview Mary Bell during her incarceration, said of her that she was showing symptoms

classics of a psychopathic personality due to its total lack of feelings towards others. "She did not show the slightest remorse, tear or anxiety. She was completely impassive and without resentment for his actions or detention." the psychiatrist also stated that he had seen many psychopathic children, but that he had never before encountered a case like Mary, also intelligent, as manipulative and as dangerous. Another psychiatrist, the Dr. Westbury, said: "The manipulation of people is its main objective." A biography based on interviews with Mary Bell was written in 1998 by Gitta Sereny under the title "Cries Unheard: Why Children Kill, The Story of Mary Bell." (The crying not heard, why the child kills, the story of Mary Bell)

In 1998 the book "The Magic Castle" was published, it is the story of a mother who adopted the young Alex, a multiple and hyper-violent child. In 1984, at the age of 10, Alex was came to live with Carole and Sam Smith. He then had a file in his luggage containing a lot of information about its past. Alex had lived with his mother and stepfather until the age of 5 when he was placed in the custody of his biological father due to the fact that his mother was an alcoholic. Then following of serious abuse and neglect, Alex was placed in a home until the age

Years. He then spent 3 years in a host family before arriving at Carole Smith When Carole went to get him for the first time, she saw young Alex sitting on the lawn with two large garbage bags containing his belongings next to him. She later said: "I kept it for two weeks and it was the two longest weeks of my life!"

Trouble started for Carole and Sam as soon as Alex arrived at their house. He was constantly angry and closed in on himself. In addition, it had reactions from a 2-year-old child. His behavior was out of control and he broke things several times. Carole even feared to release it in public, "The races became missiles and the supermarket shopping cart a destructive tank," she said. It did not take long for Carole to realize the serious psychological repercussions of the abuses he had suffered and that they as a result, they would need a lot of help and support.

The social worker in charge of her file did not provide much help, So Carole and Sam finally turned to psychiatrists and government social workers for help.

As Alex grew up, his problems grew, but Carole perseved in her care of the boy, who was now became a member of his family. The problems caused by Alex intensifying, Carole felt that these behavioral disorders could have something even deeper. A therapist then thought that maybe he could do it having several personalities at home, Alex was then 14 years old. At that time he saw a therapist who used hypnosis as a form of treatment. to the Carole's surprise, Alex could be hypnotized, that's when the other personalities began to reveal themselves. The next three years were a constant upheaval for Carole and Sam. They never knew what personality would emerge and they learned more and more about the horrors that Alex had suffered in his early childhood. Thanks to the therapy, Alex has learned how to build a "Magic Castle" for help them manage their personality splitting. That's a total of eight personalities that have been discovered, personalities that have been created in childhood to help him cope with the immense stress of repetitive abuse.

In the book's conclusion, Carole quotes a statement by Alex: "Being multiple is a means of survival and not a sign of insanity." When writing this book, in 1998, Alex was still living with Carole and Sam, working alongside her adoptive father[252!].

Take a 7-year-old child raised in ritual abuse who is given during an initiation the dagger of the high priest to sacrifice a baby...

imagine what will become of this child at the age of thirty if he has not left

the sect and that it was not taken care of. Most likely it will have aeveioppe un proiona trou Die aissociaui avec une personnalité multiple

containing one or more hyper-violent alters deeply buried in its

internal system and emerging during certain ceremonies.

f/ Snuff-films

Georges Glatz is a Swiss politician, he is the founder of the CIDE: International Committee for the Dignity of the Child. This Lausanne-based NGO produced an explosive report in 2012 showing the extent of the phenomenon of network paedocriminality. This report seeks to explain why a leaden screed covers all these cases. In 2000, on the television set of France 3, George Glatz declared in front of Élise Lucet that films showing the real death of children had been found in Belgium:

- Georges Glatz: Snuff-movies cassettes sell for between ten and twenty thousand Swiss francs...

- Élise Lucet: What do you mean by ''snuff- movies'' ?...

- Georges Glatz: Cassettes with real deaths of children.

- Élise Lucet : .... ?!?!! ...

- Georges Glatz: Yes, these cassettes exist, we discovered them a few years ago in Belgium, but we actually talk about them quite little in the media."

''Viols d'enfants : La fin du silence'', France 3 - 2000.

A rather shocking statement that left the journalist Élise Lucet speechless...

In 2008, Father François Brune, in a video interview[253] devoted to his book "God and Satan, the fight continues", said:

- It is the story of a young boy who was dragged in spite of himself by a friend into satanic circles. but really satanic, that is to say that no one knows, not even journalists or specialized investigators (.) but who can reach people with official positions in the administration of very high level (...) When I speak of Satanism myself as a priest, I am not very credible; but on the other hand you have specialized investigators, particularly on pornography and child pornography, who will reveal to you that there are indeed people who film children who are being tortured. and that it sells for gold.

- This is called snuff-movies..

- There you go.

- So for you, behind that is Satan?

- Of course! It exists. When it is said by psychologists, police people or intelligence, we take them seriously, but it is the same thing, it is the same phenomenon.

- It is the destruction of God's Creation.

- Of course. and in its purest and most fragile. as soon as Satan can dirty him...

A snuff-movie or snuff-film (To Snuff meaning murder in English slang), is an authentic video of torture and murder of children or adults, there is no rigging, it is the direct capture on film of criminal acts. These productions are sold on the black market several thousand euros and therefore reach a rather high audience in the social scale.

Many testimonies of survivors of ritual abuse report the presence of cameras during abuse and sacrifice, this is a fairly common feature. The goal is to immortalize sadistic and criminal acts but also to have evidence so that all participants (when they do not have their faces masked) are held by secrecy. But these recordings make it possible above all to bring in a maximum of money, whether through blackmail or through trade in specialized networks.

Officially, snuff-films are just an "urban legend", a kind of "old fantasy". In 1978, Roman Polanski stated in the documentary "Confessions of a Blue Movie Star":

"All the sexual taboos have been shown on the screen and we can ask ourselves what the next step will be? It could be the murder of someone without rigging..."

The production of "snuff" is, however, an appalling reality. Such trafficking was dismantled in Britain, where Dimitri Vladimirovich Kuznetsov, a 30-year-old Russian, had settled. This monster was arrested by the British police in 2000, he was producing videos for a list of Italian, English, American and German customers. During the investigation, more than 600 homes were searched and 1500 people were subjected to police investigation, including businessmen and civil servants. The Italian police seized about 3000 videos produced by Kuznetsov. Investigators told reporters at the time that the audio-visual material included footage of children dying as a result of torture and rape. The Naples public prosecutor's office then considered charges against the clients for complicity in murder, some of whom specifically demanded recordings with the killing of children. A senior customs officer said, "We've seen very, very violent things, sadistic abuse involving very young children, but the actual deaths take us to a whole new level."

The Naples newspaper ''Il Mattino'' published the transcript of an exchange between an Italian customer and the Russian supplier, it is a recording of MI5:

- Promise me that you will not scam me, tell me the truth, ask the Italian.

- Relax, I can assure you that this one really dies, answers the Russian.

- The last time I paid, I didn't get what I wanted.

- What do you want?

- See them die...

- That is why I am here.

The price of a single video varied from 340 to 6,000 Euro, the price was set according to the type of content. Films with young naked children were called ''snipe video''. The most appalling category in which children are raped and tortured to death was codenamed ''necros pedo[254]''.

In 1997, the "Draguignan Trial" was opened. For the first time in France, the law against sex tourism could be applied and the investigations made it possible to uncover a vast network of paedophiles organized both in France and abroad. During this trial there was the broadcasting of the snuff-films that had been seized by the police. The screening will be stopped after 20 minutes and the prosecutor Etienne Ceccaldi then declared in front of the cameras of Canal +: "The vision of children tortured to death, and all this for commercial purposes, is truly unbearable."

Also in 1997, the English channel ITV broadcast a documentary entitled "The Boy Business" about the production of child pornography in Amsterdam. Film productions in which children are raped, tortured and killed. In this English documentary, three British women who lived in Amsterdam in the early 90s testify independently of one another. They describe these snuff shoots that they attended as children or teenagers.

In the documentary *""Dutsh Injustice: When Child traffickers rule a nation."* (Dutch injustice: when child traffickers run the nation), which deals with the Rolodex case, a victim of the Dutch network testifies: *"I also met individuals who were making snuff-movies. The snuff-movies are*

videos where several children, or only one, are sexually abused and then murdered at the end of the film. I was asked to participate in one of these films in exchange for a lot of money but I refused because I knew, from what other boys had told me, that it was very dangerous because we did not survive it. "

The 2012 CIDE report mentioned above, confirms the existence of the snuff-films through Michel Thirion, a private detective who was in charge of investigating the disappearance of Julie Lejeune and Mélissa Russo in the Dutroux case. His investigations led him to a snuff channel in the Netherlands (the same network mentioned by the witnesses of the documentary "The Boy Business"). He told Jean Nicolas and Frédéric Lavachery about his meeting with an Englishman who owned a barge in Amsterdam: "The Englishman then offers me the best he has: the killing of children. It is a question of embarking several on his barge, of going to sea and of being sexually satisfied with a kid before the latter is thrown into the water, explains the Englishman[255]to me.

In Belgium too, the production of *snuff-films* **seems to have gone beyond the simple "fantasy"... In 1997, a case of paedophilia**

and child pornography broke out in parallel with the Dutroux case. On January 22, 1997, the Nouvelle Gazette de Charleroi published an article that mentioned the existence of this type of film: *"It is at Michel's (and at home alone, the investigators would like to emphasize) that the gendarmes will make the horrible discovery. They have indeed seized a dozen snuff movies, video cassettes that stage absolute horror. The children you can see there (little Europeans, the youngest of whom appear to be between 7 and 8 years old and the oldest between 16 and 17 years old) are not only raped by unknown adults. They are also tortured by sa.diqu.es: modestly, the investigators evoke sado-maso hard scenes. And, the height of the filth, these infernal* **scenes** *are a.chèvent by the killing (real or simulated) of the small victims. It is not known whether these children really died, investigators admit. It would take to be sure to find their corpses. But if they are stagings, they are of absolute realism. According to the investigators, it was suspected that such horrors were circulating, even in our own homes. However, we have never seized snuff-movies in our country. I had seen a cassette of this kind, seized in France, says an investigator. It showed a pedophile strangling a child. But what I have seen here exceeds anything one can imagine*l256]*.."*

In the document containing the minutes and hearings recorded in the Dutroux case, it states that in 1997, a letter relating to paedophilia was intercepted at the Ixelles post office referring to tapes with killing and/or rape. It talks about a "Baroness and Dutroux". (PV 150.123/97)

In 2004, the Belgian deputy Albert Mahieu wrote a letter to the President of the Assize Court of Arlon, Stéphane Goux, in which he mentions the existence of a videotape of the murder of Julie Lejeune and Mélissa Russo. These are the two little victims found dead in marc Dutroux's cellar. Officially, they died of starvation locked in marc Dutroux's cellar while he was in prison. Deputy Mahieu began his letter by saying that they had not died of hunger but of rape, abuse and torture. He indicates according to his sources that "the recording, in color and sound, attests to the ordeal endured by Julie and Melissa before being put to death, in atrocious circumstances, by a masked executioner who officiates in the presence of a group of ten to twelve people." According to the MP (now deceased), there are several copies of this video recording.

Also in the Dutroux case, witness X1 (Régina Louf) described a world of sexual violence, torture but also murder. Her testimony showed that she knew some details of unsolved murders, which was impossible without access to police files. Régina Louf quoted the Belgian company ASCO in her testimony. She names this place: "the video recording factory", and she gives the names of those who participated in the torture and murder of children on the site of the factory, all recorded on video cassettes[257].

In the book *"The child sacrificed to Satan",* **which recounts the ordeal experienced by Samir Aouchiche, Bruno Fouchereau notes that INTERPOL has repeatedly issued alerts at European level regarding satanic crimes, here is what he writes in his book:** *"Scotland Yard held a conference recently, in January 1996 in Lyon, at interpol premises, aimed at alerting European police to the multiplication of ritual crimes. Judge Sengelin, the senior investigating judge in Mulhouse investigating the abduction of a little girl in 1990, was informed by* **the same** *Scotland Yard police officers that they had seized a batch of snuff movies in which children were murdered. These children, at least fifteen of whom are of European origin, were killed in front of the camera after being raped and tortured. "*

g/ Some figures

In 1984, the first meeting of the *Isstd (International Society for Study of Trauma and Dissociation)was held in***Chicago. Following this meeting, Naomi Mattis (who later becameco-chair of the Utah** *Legislative Satanic Ritual Abuse Committee),* **told the** *Deseret News: "Ofthe 420 therapists present, about 75% raised their hands when asked if they had ever had to deal with victims of ritual abuse."*

Psychiatrist Roland Summit, who specializes in child sexual abuse, said of ritual abuse that it is *the most serious threat to the* *child and to the society we face.* **Dr. Summit points out that he has had to deal with** *less than 1000 children who have shown involvement in ritual abuse*[258\.

While obtaining true figures for the prevalence of ritual trauma is a difficult task given the secrecy and criminality surrounding the phenomenon, there is nevertheless growing evidence that the problem of ritual trauma is considerably more widespread than ever before. Dr. Kathleen Coulborn Faller of the University of Michigan conducted empirical analysis and research on ritual abuse. She notes that there is a great similarity in the reports of abuse made by individual children or adults, and that studies independently demonstrate confirmation of such allegations. Of the 2709 members of the American Psychological Association (APA) who responded to a survey, 30% responded that they had dealt with cases of ritual or religion-related abuse. In this group, 93% responded that they thought ritual-related damage had indeed taken place. In a 1995 article entitled "Cultural and Economic Barriers to Protecting Children from Ritual Abuse and Mind Control," Dr. Catherine Gould states that in 1992 alone, Childhelp USA recorded 1741 calls related to ritual abuse, Monarch Resources in Los Angeles recorded approximately 5000, Real Active Survivors recorded almost 3600, Justus Unlimited in Colorado received nearly 7000, and Looking Up in Maine handled approximately 6000. This indicates a very alarming number of requests by telephone support.

One of the first studies on the existence of ritual abuse was conducted by Deborah Cole in 1992. The survey was entitled "The Incidence of Ritual Abuse: A Preliminary Survey". Out of 250 therapists, 46% indicated that they had already had patients who had reported ritual abuse or who met at least one of the criteria on cole's list[259].

In 1995, a study on ritual abuse was done by British psychologists (Andrews, Morton, Bekerian,
Brewin, Davies, Mollon). These researchers collected data from 810 members of the British Psychological Society who had dealt with

cases of sexual abuse. 50% of therapists said they had worked with patients who reported experiencing satanic ritual abuse. 80% of therapists who had one or more patients with a history of ritual abuse believed in his statements. In a more recent UK study from 2013, Ost, Wright, Easton, Hope and French, collected data from an online study involving 183 clinical psychologists and 119 hypnotherapists. Among psychologists, 38% of them had already dealt with one or more cases of ritual abuse. The study showed that 25% of hypnotherapists had already had one or more cases of ritual abuse[260].

In Australia, Schmuttermaier and Veno published a study in the Journal of Child Sexual Abuse in 1999 entitled "Counselor's belief about ritual abuse: An Australian study". The study involved workers from 74 Center Against Sexual Assault (CASA), 48 psychologists and 27 psychiatrists from victorian were interviewed. 70% of therapists validated the definition of ritual abuse and 26 of them reported 153 cases of ritual abuse identified between 1985 and 1995. Schmuttermaier and Veno conclude their study by saying that the identification and diagnosis of ritual abuse by professionals is always similar, whether in Australia, the USA or the United Kingdom[261].

In South Africa, studies on child abuse, including ritual abuse, have been conducted on adolescents and young adults. The study conducted by Madu S.N. and Peltze K. Was published in 1998 in the Southern African Journal of Child and Adolescent Mental Health. 414 high school students were asked about the abuses they had experienced before the age of 17, 8% of them reported experiences of ritual abuse. In another study of 559 students from three high schools in Mpumalanga province, Madu noted that 10% had reported ritual abuse before the age of 17. Out of 722 university students, 6% reported this type of abuse before the age of 17[262].

In the article "Ritual Abuse: A review of research" (1994), Kathleen Faller cites a study by Susan Kelley on transgenerational ritual abuse. This study entitled "Ritualistic Abuse: Recognition, Impact, and Current Controversy" was presented by Kelley in 1992 at a conference in San Diego on the theme of child abuse. Kelley investigated the testimonies of 26 children from 14 families. The perpetrators were parents, grandparents, great-grandparents, uncles, aunts, cousins and siblings. Similar to other reports, a significant number of abusers were women (45%) and 61% of children were abused by the previous two generations. Reported abuses included threats and acts of terror (89%), death threats (77%), production of childpornography (81%), threats with magic (89%), satanic references (92%), animals killed (54%), drug ingestions (92%), songs and songs (69%), ingestions or contact with excrement (85%[263]).

An international study on ritual abuse and mind control was conducted by German and American researchers: Carol Rutz, Thorsten Becker, Bettina Overcamp and Wanda Karriker. This study, launched in 2007, available in English and German, is entitled "Extreme Abuse Survey" (EAS). All the questionnaires and results of this study are available on the extreme-abuse-survey.net website. It includes a professional-only part, the ''Professional Extreme Abuse Survey'' (P-EAS), which is a questionnaire comprising 215 questions. 451 professionals from 20 different countries responded to this study which shows that 86% of professionals who worked with at least one survivor of extreme trauma
report having had at least one case of satanic ritual abuse:

- 61% of them had patients reporting ritual abuse in the clergy.
- 85% reported that the majority of adult survivors of Ritual Abuse (RA)/Mind Control (CM) had a diagnosis of Dissociative Identity Disorder.
- 65% reported that their patients testifying to AR/CM relied on continuous, unbundled memories.
- 89% reported that AR/CM memories had a logical articulation with other aspects of the patient's life, which formed a rather coherent whole.
- 86% reported that the dissociated personalities observed reported AR/CM

- 79% reported that the content of their patients' drawings, paintings and poems had content related to RAs/MCs.
- 75% report that some medical and physical sequelae of their patients can be explained by AR/CM.
- 47% report that some of their patients' memories have been confirmed and validated by others.

The study also includes a section dedicated to survivors, here are some results on a sample of 1000 people who responded to the questionnaire:

- 79% report gang rapes.
- 53% report cage confinement.
- 44% report cannibalism.
- 52% report zoophilia.
- 45% report being buried alive.
- 50% report having received electroshocks.
- *52%* report having participated in child pornography.
- 46% report child prostitution.
- 65% report having been diagnosed with Dissociative Identity Disorder.
- 63% report that the executioner(s) deliberately created dissociative states (alter personality) to perform programming on them.
- 41% report having been programmed as a sex slave.
- 18% report having been programmed to be a murderer.
- 21% report having been programmed to develop psychic powers.
- 57% report having been programmed to self-destruction when they begin to remember abuse and programming.
- 34% report that one or more of their alter personalities have an access code.
- 28% report having an alter robot personality.

- 53% report that the executioners made them believe that entities, spirits or demons have taken control of their bodies.
- 15% report time travel experiences.
- 26% report having been a victim of government experiments on mind control.

Traumatic ritual abuse has been or is still practiced in many cultures, with victims testifying to altered states of consciousness such as dissociation, amnesia and alteration of their personality. It has been found that this list of symptoms specific to psychological trauma is found almost systematically in individuals who report testimonies of ritual abuse. In the West, these testimonies come from people who claim to be "survivors", many of them have the typical symptoms related to severe dissociation, and many of their memories are recovered during therapy. However, it should be noted that these memories of ritual abuse also return in the form of flashbacks outside of therapies, an important point to emphasize because therapists are sometimes accused of inducing 'false memories' in their patients (see chapter 10). Given that there are historical accounts of ritual abuse dating back centuries and that children from the age of two and adults around the age of ninety continue to make accounts of traumatic abuse throughout the world during rituals, it is time to sound the alarm about the little that has been done to increase awareness of the problem by professionals and institutions! Although completely unable to stop or eradicate the problem, we must overcome denial and begin to understand the dynamics of these abuses so that our investigative paradigms can change accordingly.

In a predominantly Christian society, satanic symbols can convey a powerful archetypal message to victims, especially if used in conjunction with torture and severe trauma. It is therefore not necessary for those responsible to have any system of spiritual belief behind their practices or activities. In other words, regardless of motivation, religious belief, sexual drive, power or mind control, these groups systematically use a ritualized framework to mistreat, exploit and manipulate children or adults. Their structures operate to provide a constant supply of children and to protect network members from possible legal proceedings[264].

3 - Some testimonials

a/ Introduction

The testimonies of ritual abuse all describe the same thing: rapes in meetings, tortures, occult rituals, drugs, hypnosis, states of trance and dissociation, sacrifices (real or simulated), video recordings, *etc.* and we find these testimonies on all continents.

Many of the testimonies are English-speaking, including: Cathy O'Brien, Mark Philips, ''Svali'', Jeannie Riseman, Kathleen Sullivan, Kim Campbell, Brice Taylor, Jay Parker, Fritz Springmeier, Cisco Wheeler, Ted Gunderson, Paul Bonacci, John DeCamp, David Shurter, Dejoly Labrier, Anne A. Johnson Davis, Vicki Polin, Linda Wiegand, Jenny Hill, Lynn Moss Sharman, Kristin Constance, Kim Noble , Lynn Schirmer, Bill Schnoebelen, Neil Brick, Carol Rutz, Caryn Stardancer, Kathleen Sorenson, Patricia Baird Clarke, Ruth Zandstra, Glenn Hobbs, etc... Most of these testimonies of ritual abuse also involve trauma-based mind control, with the two things being completely intertwined. But we will see in more detail the aspect "MK programming" in chapter 7.

The content of these testimonies is particularly atrocious and shocking. The rest of this chapter may sometimes contain morbid repetitions as some testimonies may resemble each other. I apologise for these burdens, but this is a matter of exposing the words of child victims and adult survivors. A word that must be heard and taken into account despite its obviously very disturbing aspect. It is also about showing how similar satanic ritual abuse practices are from one country to another and from one continent to another.

b/ United States

In 1989, Lieutenant Larry Jones of the Boise Police and director of the *Cult Crime Impact Network (CCIN)* ***stated that those who discredited testimonies about ritual abuse were*** *"garbage! We* *found babies ritually sacrificed in Connecticut, Bend, Oregon and Los Angeles... When you add to this the credible testimonies of survivors that can be verified in a circumstantial way, there are no more questions to* ***ask! 265! .****"*

In the documentary "Devil Worship: The Rise of Satanism", Kurt Jackson of the Beaumont police said: "Are human beings beings sacrificed? Yes! They are! There are many things I observe to determine whether this is a ritual crime. It can be something like a pentagram, it can be an inverted cross, the number 666, the body emptied of its blood, some parts of the body removed in a certain way, etc."

In the same documentary, Sergeant Randy Emon states: "One problem we face is that senior officials in public agencies do not want to acknowledge that this is a reality. We must lift this veil of misunderstanding and say to them: Hey! These are crimes that we must deal with!"

- Ted Gunderson

Ted Gunderson headed the FBI office in Memphis (1973) and the Dallas office (1975) and was appointed head of the Los Angeles FBI in 1977. He is one of the few senior (if not the only) American officials to have denounced the paedocriminality of a network that clandestinely controls the judicial system. He took a close interest in the Mc Martin School case and the Franklin case.

In 1988, Ted Gunderson participated in a television show hosted by Geraldo Rivera entitled "Devil Worship: Exposing Satan's Underground". The debate focused on the scale of the crimes satanic in the United States, here is an excerpt:

- Ted Gunderson, retired FBI agent, former los Angeles division chief. Is there really a network responsible for all these satanic murders in your opinion?

- What I can say, based on information provided to me by confidential sources, informants, I have also interviewed dozens of survivors of satanic cults in recent years: I say that there is a network of individuals who are very active in the country.

- Do you think that these terrible accusations about sacrificed babies are true?

- I am sure there is no doubt about that. This is according to the information I have gathered all over the country, thanks to several survivors and many informants.

In 1987, Ted Gunderson gave a lecture entitled "Satanism and international trafficking of children by the CIA". During this conference, he returned in detail to the case of the Mc Martin Kindergarten, located in Manhattan Beach in the suburbs of Los Angeles, a case that made a lot of noise at the time. Indeed, some children claimed to have been forced to participate in the sacrifice of animals, but also of babies and other children. They said they were forced to drink blood and subjected to necrophilic, zoophile and scatological practices. Here are some excerpts from this conference:

"Let's talk a little bit about the Mc Martin case. In April 1985, the authorities investigated the case and searched for tunnels under the school. The children said they had been taken to tunnels under the school, including a room in the basement. There they were sexually assaulted, they described ceremonies with adults in dresses, candles, religious songs (...) The adults were naked under their dresses. They were taken into a tunnel, through a hatch in the bathroom of a triplex. They were taken by car... we are talking about children of 2, 3 and 4 years old who were prostitutes in this network (...)

In the spring of 1993, I heard that the Mc Martin School property had been sold by the Mc Martin family to defence counsel, as agreed. He sold it to a contractor who was to build an office building instead of the school. So I contacted him immediately and said, "Dear sir, I would like to have access to the property." He then gave me two weeks. I signed a paper to take on the responsibilities, and then with a few parents we hired a UCLA archaeologist, Dr. Gary Stickel, knowing full well that I was not qualified to validate the existence of these tunnels even though I had found them myself. So we started the excavations (...) Dr. Stickel told us: "I can now say without the slightest doubt that there were many tunnels under the school and that they have been filled (...) I have a 186-page scientific report available on that. We found a large underground entrance 2.70 meters below the west wall (...) We found these tunnels while Ray Buckey's second trial was going on, so it could have been used to convict him. We informed the prosecutor who sent his investigator (...) This investigator, who is not qualified in archaeology, simply said: "There are no tunnels here." And of course the archaeologist made the round back. Be that as it may, they did not use this evidence, solid evidence for this second trial, which they ignored (...)

In this tunnel we found a Disney plastic bag dating from 1982 about 1.40 meters below the concrete floor of the class, 1 or 2 meters from the entrance to the foundations (...) The tunnel is oriented to the south for 14 meters below classes n°3 and 4 (...) A chamber 2.70 meters wide was discovered along the tunnel under class No. 4, the ceiling of the chamber and the top of the tunnel sections had layers of plywood covered with tarpaper and consolidated by cinder block. The characteristics of the tunnels confirmed that they had been dug by hand (...) The children have described well the entrance and exit of the tunnels and this fits exactly with the tunnels discovered with the archaeologist (...) Another significant fact was the discovery by this archaeologist of a small plastic plate with three pentagrams drawn by hand (...) More than 2000 artifacts have been found under the floor of the school, including a hundred animal bones (...)

The team of archaeologist Gary E. Stickel found under the school exactly what the children had described. The tunnels had been backfilled with different types of earth. In the Mc Martin case, IIC director and member of the Molested Children's Professional Preschool-Age Group, Kee MacFarlane, was appointed in 1983 by the prosecutor's office. She received about 400 children who had all gone through Mc Martin School, including former students, and she estimated that 80% of them had been sexually abused. Of these hundreds of children, only 11 were heard at the trial. Private detective Paul Bynum, recruited at the time by lawyers for the parents of small victims, also came to the conclusion that children had indeed been abused in the school. He committed suicide just before he could testify before the jury about the animal bones he had found in the tunnels. His entourage strongly denied that he was suicidal.

We find this same system of tunnels in the case of the "Haut de la Garenne" orphanage in Jersey, where children were also tortured and raped during the night. A stifled affair just like that of the Mc Martin school. In 2012, American investigative journalist Leah MacGrath Goodman was banned from English soil for wanting to investigate the case in Jersey, which dates back to 2008. Children in this orphanage were reportedly tortured, raped and even murdered, and many small victims testified but were completely ignored. According to the journalist, all those who sought to investigate the case were expelled from the island or dismissed from their jobs. Everything seems to indicate that this is a big deal to be stifled. Just like the discovery of a mass grave of children in late 2011 on the grounds of the Mohawk Institute in Brantford, Ontario, Canada. These were Native American children from residential schools.

The case of mc martin nursery school is therefore not isolated. In 1988, a study entitled ''Sexual Abuse in Day Care: a National Study'' looked at 270 cases of sexual abuse in nurseries and kindergartens, involving 1639 victims. According to the specialists who wrote the study, ritual abuse is mentioned in 13% of cases, which may be true satanic rituals or pseudo rituals intended to intimidate children[266].

Subsequently, Ted Gunderson also worked on the Franklin case, one of the largest networked paedocriminality scandals in U.S. history, a case that was stifled by every possible means, including assassinations. The Franklin case concerned a network that prostituted children mainly from Boys Town (a kind of orphan village founded in 1917, about 5000 children lived there in the 80s). The clients of this network, the rapists designated by the children, were among the richest and most influential citizens of the state of Nebraska, they were great businessmen, politicians, journalists and even police officers. In the Franklin case, there were also testimonies of ritual abuse with child sacrifices.

- John de Camp and Paul Bonacci

John de Camp was a Republican senator from Nebraska from 1971 to 1987, and was also a lawyer. In franklin, he was in charge of the case to prove that these extremely serious accusations were unfounded. But as a result of his investigations, he came into possession of indisputable evidence proving that paedocriminality was practiced by some American politicians, including in the White House. He could therefore no longer fulfil his mission of covering up the affair. In order to protect himself and his family, John De Camp wrote a book on this issue entitled "The Franklin Cover-up: Child Abuse, Satanism and Murder in Nebraska", a book that provides evidence of the existence and functioning of this paedocriminal and satanic network. This publication also makes the important connection between network paedocriminality and government experiences of mind control over citizens, especially children.

There is also a journalistic report entitled "Conspiracy of Silence", which describes in detail the whole affair. A documentary that was originally to be broadcast by the Discovery channel, which retracted a few days before following pressure or threats. The rights were bought back in order to keep the material in the boxes. However, a copy had been sent anonymously to Senator John de Camp who then gave it to Ted Gunderson. Today, this important video archive is online on the internet.

In this documentary, Senator John de Camp states that this network extended back to the highest authorities in the United States: "Obviously, the FBI was protecting something much more important than a bunch of old pedophiles who had questionable relationships with little boys. They were protecting something far more important than a bunch of drug dealers. In my opinion, they looked after the interests of some high-profile politicians. Very wealthy and powerful people were associated with these politicians and with the political system in general, including the highest authorities in the country."

We can also see in this documentary one of the survivors of the network, Paul Bonacci, who reports to Senator John de Camp the existence of parties organized in the house of Larry King (Lawrence E. King), rented $ 5000 per month, but also his escapades at the White House:

- I was about 14 years old in 1981. At first there were 3 or 4 evenings in the year, then it was about one per month (...) Some of the children were kept in rooms on the floor below, in case they got agitated or panicked because of the drugs, because they were drugged. They locked them in a room so that they would not escape.

- What kind of drug?

- Everything you can imagine, cocaine, heroin, speed...

- You tell me that all this was happening on those parties, in the same place where you saw Larry King and other prominent politicians?

- Yes.

(•••)

- Did you also go to the White House?

- Yes.

- And how did you get access to it?

- I went there with Larry King, but Craig Spencer was one of the people who organized this for us. It was a kind of gift for the "services" that we rendered him.

- How many times have you done these kinds of parties there?

- I have participated twice.

- And have you been a prostitute on these occasions?

- Yes, after leaving the White House, late at night. It was really weird to be in the White House at that time, during the night and especially to go to places where the guy was telling us that no one ever went there.

Paul Bonacci also testified that he witnessed much bloody scenes during satanic rituals in which babies or very young children could be murdered after being raped. The ritual then continued with acts of cannibalism. According to Bonacci, Larry King had been participating in a satanic cult since at least December 1980. In his written testimony, he reports that he was brought by King in December 80 to a "Triangle" located in a wooded area towards Sarpy County, Nebraska. There, he witnessed the sacrifice of a baby. The boy's blood was recovered to be mixed with urine and consumed by the congregation. He himself was forced to drink it from the chalice. Still according to Bonacci, the participants all sang making strange sounds, terrified, he knew that it was not necessary to say a word of what he had seen, fearing to be himself the next victim sacrificed.

Bonacci was diagnosed with a dissociative identity disorder caused by the multiple traumas he experienced in early childhood. Senator John DeCamp reports some things about this in his book "The Franklin Cover-up":

Dr. Judianne Densen-Gerber, a psychiatrist and lawyer already mentioned above, is also a member of the International Society of Multiple Personnality and Dissociative States. She confirmed that Paul Bonacci suffered from Multiple Personality Disorder (now renamed Dissociative Identity Disorder, T.D.I.). It is not a psychosis, she says, but a neurosis resulting from the defense mechanism of a child's mind, a function aimed at protecting him from "unimaginable atrocity". A total of three psychiatrists examined
Paul Bonacci and who all validated the diagnosis of multiple personality disorder.

On December 29, 1990, Dr. Densen-Gerber testified before the Franklin de Omaha Legislative Committee. She was asked by Robert Creager about Paul Bonacci:

- Doctor, I believe the grand jury came to the conclusion that Mr. Bonacci was not capable of lying. Do you have a comment on this?

- I think it would be very difficult for Mr Bonacci to lie... When you have a multiple personality, you do not need to lie, you change (editor's note: personality). There is nothing that Mr. Bonacci did not tell me that I had not already heard from other patients or individuals. These are not elucidations and he often admits himself that he does not know. He hasn't fabricated anything and he's not trying to give answers like most people who want to please do. He does not even want to give you the impression that he wants to please[267].

Dr. Densen-Gerber wrote following Bonacci's visit to prison (he was indeed convicted of perjury):

1) He has an extraordinary memory of details, making him a precious witness.

2) He doesn't lie.

3) He accurately described satanic rituals practiced internationally by sects, something that was impossible for him to know without having participated in them himself.

He describes one of his personalities as a computer chip in his head that allows him to maintain an obsessive attention to detail. It can give you dates and times of extreme accuracy. I have never seen a child capable of doing that. He is therefore a valuable witness. He does not invent, he will rather say "I do not know" if he really does not know[268].

In October 1990, shortly before the opening of the Franklin committee, a police psychiatrist, Dr. Beverly Mead, answered Senator Schmit's questions about the witness Bonacci:

- Senator De Camp: Doctor, now do you believe it following these interviews that we have heard here and those that we have listened to together earlier?

- Dr. Beverly Mead: I personally think that these details that he gave us come from experiences that he actually had...

- Senator Schmit: We have heard the testimony of several of his personalities (alter) who named names like Larry King, Robert Wadman, *etc.* Based on your professional experience, do you think these descriptions are accurate?

- Mead: I'd like to see them confirmed by other sources, that's for sure. But currently, my impression is that Paul or Alexandrew (editor's note: one of Bonacci's alter personalities) reports things honestly, as he remembers.

- Schmit: Could he have imagined that or dreamed of it and then tell us about it here today? Would that be possible?

- Mead: It would be pretty phenomenal to do such a thing. I do not think that is possible. I think he's talking about things that he actually remembers (...) There may be some details that are not very precise, but I think the story went as he says[269].

- he actually remembers (...) There may be some details that are not very precise, but I think the story went as he says[269].

Despite several reports from psychiatrists explaining the phenomenon of severe dissociative disorder, Paul Bonacci, as well as Alisha Owen, another survivor of the Franklin network, were both sentenced to prison for perjury. It was ruled that Bonacci's split psychological state with its inconsistencies and contradictions, undermined his testimony and that this required his indictment for perjury! It is classic in this type of case to highlight the psychological state of the dissociated victim in order to discredit his testimony. The diagnosis of dissociative identity disorder should, on the contrary, be one more piece to put in the file to support the fact that the victim has indeed experienced severe trauma, or even mental control, and that the investigation must be thorough rather than automatically closed. The victims must be listened to and cared for rather than condemned. But in this kind of case, the sad logic is rather to stifle the file to protect a network of untouchables.

John De Camp says he spoke with several of Paul Bonacci's alter personalities. He described how his writing style varies depending on the alter that is in control and how memories can also vary from one alter to another. Bonacci even has a personality who speaks and writes German, while he has hardly studied. Psychiatrists who worked with him reported that his various personalities were incapable of lying and that they had a high-performance photographic memory. It would seem that Bonacci has been subjected to a trauma-based mind control program since childhood in order to make him a Monarch slave. Investigators reported that the network that had plunged him into Satanism was centered at the Offutt military base next to Omaha, a major air force base. This is where he was transported to be sexually abused when he was only three years old, in the early 70s. In Offutt, and later in other military installations, the network "trained" him through torture, drugs and sexual violence in order to train him militarily, including for assassinations. It was therefore a question of splitting his personality by trauma, and then programming it[270].

Paul Bonacci is one of the many victims, prey of the Network, who have been subjected to MK programs.
The outbreak of the Franklin case in the courts has made it possible to publicly reveal his testimony, but how many other victims remain prisoners, whose word will never be heard?

In 2004, Senator John de Camp gave a radio interview to Alex Jones. Here are some excerpts about a testimony of Paul Bonacci who reports a snuff-film shoot in which he participated: *"Isimply tookPaul Bonacci's diary and I published a good part of it in my book, a passage concerns a trip he made in 1984. He says he was taken to a place near Sa.cramento "with tall trees". Then they went to a place there was an owl, a kind of large carved owl or something like that* **(...)** *I didn't know pa.s while there was a place called "Bohemian Grove" that matched the description, I didn't write pa.s written "Bohemian Grove" in the book because I didn't know pa.s what it was at the time.* (Editor's note: The *"Bohemian Grove" or "Bohemian Club" is a group reserved for the world elite* (mainly Americans), it is one of the most closed in the world. Members meet once a year on private property in a Sequoia forest in Monte Rio, California. Ceremonies of pagan, druidic and Babylonian inspiration take place there by a lake, at the foot of a giant owl statue representing Moloch, a Babylonian deity who is the symbol of this elitist club) *Anyway, that's for sure, he was brought there for* *a ceremony in which they committed horrible things on another boy. There were a total of three boys, and they filmed. I just wrote down his words with the names he heard there* (**...**) *Remember that I didn't know pa.s what Bohemian Grove was at that time, the kid who wrote it didn't know pa.s either. All he knew was that he was brought there. Let me read the passage to you, it was Paul Bonacci who wrote that. Here is word for word what is written in his diary:*

"I went there in January 1984. I was paid by the men who frequented King for the stories of prostitution. During the summer, in 1984, I went to Dallas, Texas several times and had sex with different men king knew, it was in a hotel. I traveled with the airline YNR (private charter) and the airline Cam (another private company), which King commonly used. I never really had to deal with King personally, other than when he told me where I should go. On July 26, I went to Sacramento, California. King put me on a private plane from an airfield in Omaha to Denver, there we picked up Nicolas. A boy who was about 12 or 13 years old, then we flew to Las Vegas where we were taken to ranches to get equipment. Then we went back to Sacramento. We were taken by a white limousine that took us to a hotel. We (Nicolas and I) were then taken to an area where there were large trees, it took about an hour to get there. There was a cage with a naked boy inside. Nicolas and I had to dress up with a panoply of Tarzan and stuff like that. They told me about *** the boy (I won't use the word). At first I refused and one of them brandished a gun on my genitals (I will use that word) telling me done the or you will lose them. I started to *** the boy. Nicolas underwent anal sex and other stuff. We were told that he was a virgin and that we had to let off steam on him. I did everything I could not to harm him. We were told to put our *** in his mouth and other stuff... they filmed everything. We did these things to the boy for about 30 minutes or an hour when a man came in and started hitting us on the genitals. He grabbed the boy and started to *** him and do other things to him (...) Then he put the boy next to me, one of them took a gun and blew up the boy's head. I had a lot of blood on me. I started screaming and crying, then the men grabbed Nicolas and I, they forced us to lie down. They put the dead boy on nicolas who was crying and they put his hands on the sex of the boy. They put the boy on me too and they forced me to do the same. They then forced me to *** with the dead child. They put a gun on our heads to force us, I had blood everywhere. They made us kiss the boy on the mouth. Then they made me do something else but I don't even want to write it down. After that, the men grabbed Nicolas and drugged him while he screamed. They put me against a tree and pointed a gun at my head, but they shot in the air. I heard another shot, and then I saw the man who had killed the boy, dragging him to the ground like a toy. All these things, including when the men put the boy in a trunk, everything was filmed (...) Later, we were taken to a house where men were gathered, they had the movie and they watched it. While the men looked at him, Nicolas and I passed through their hands as if we were toys[271].

Paul Bonacci will describe precisely this same scene of snuff-film shooting, crying, in an interview filmed in prison with Gary Caradori, the main private investigator of this Franklin case. In 1990, Caradori died suddenly in the crash of his small private plane when he was about to disclose some damning evidence.

- Kathleen Sorenson

Kathleen Sorenson was a social worker, she and her husband Ron were a foster family for children in great difficulty. In total, the couple collected about thirty testimonies from children that they had in custody from a few months to several years. Kathleen Sorenson decided to talk about what she had learned from some of her dependent children. With her eldest adopted daughter, a survivor of ritual abuse, she testified publicly at forums and conferences throughout Nebraska. She has given interviews on radio and television.

In 1988, she appeared in a show by Geraldo Rivera, devoted to Satanism. Kathleen Sorenson was very aware of the danger of speaking publicly about these things. She died in a car accident in October 1989, shortly after testifying in a Christian television program broadcast in Nebraska. It was Senator John De Camp who published his testimony in his book "The Franklin Cover-Up". Here is the transcript of part of what she denounced at the time:

We learned about this because we were a foster family and worked with a number of children. A few years ago, several children started talking after a period of confidence building. They reported very strange things that had happened in their lives, it was scary and at the same time very confusing. I really didn't know what to make of it. We first went to the police and then we went to social services but there was really nothing else we could do. These children we worked with have now been adopted into safe families. They probably would never have spoken if they hadn't trusted the people they lived with.

There are certain similarities in children's stories when it comes to satanic cults. There are identical things that come up in every testimony, such as candles for example. They all talk about rape. Sex is undoubtedly an important part of all this, all kinds of perverse sexual practices. That's the first thing you'll hear, sex, rape, incest, so it's hard to believe. But once this is accepted, we can continue to ask softly to find out more. We then learn that it is child pornography, it is a systematic practice. This serves them, among other things, to threaten the children: "We have pictures, we will show them to the police if you speak." The children then feel a great danger, a great fear of the police. They talk about weird makeup that the people in the band wear, they talk about songs they didn't understand. These were obviously songs, it's still something that comes up in each of the stories, but none of the children called it "singing". There were also dances. Most of the time, this involves sexual practices. There is always a group leader that the children are very afraid of.

These children, from a very young age, I am talking about young children, were born into families to worship the devil. That is all I can testify to, and I do not pretend to be an expert in the field. All I can tell you is what the children told me. My husband and I are now aware of some things that we shouldn't know, that's true. That's why I thought about it a lot before I got involved in this show, we heard things so ugly and so scary that we hesitated to reveal it publicly. It's a very heavy thing and I don't want to scare people away, turn their lives upside down or give them certain ideas. I do not want them to think that if a child starts talking about things like that, it is probably because they have seen this television show in which I am talking about it. But we hear more and more of it, and it is becoming very, very clear. I think it's time for people to know that this is not fun or play, it's not something we can ignore or laugh at.

The children I spoke to all had to kill at a very young age. It was something that was beyond anything I could understand. In a way, with the help of an adult's hand and by having them participate in the ceremony, they make the child commit an assassination. And what's serious is that the children truly believe that they wanted to do it of their own free will. They want to replicate what adults do and they are encouraged to do so. This becomes their goal, to become like adults. There is always a small part in them that keeps this natural notion of good and evil that is given to us by God, but with the excitement of the group, they want to do it. They also love sex, I didn't know that children could love sex. Why would they fight against this? A child will eat a whole bag of sweets if you leave it to him. They will take part in these things voluntarily. When they come out of it and they start talking about it, it's very difficult for them to realize. At first, we ourselves did not realize that they were "volunteers" to do so.

They are told that they will not be able to cope, that no one will ever want to believe them, that there is no freedom possible. They are hopeless until the day they meet someone who is willing to listen to them. They are systematically threatened with death. Every time a child is killed in the group, they are told, "If you talk, this is what will happen to you." And they have every reason to believe it... So even when they arrive at a host family and start to feel a little safe, they still expect one of the worship members to come to the door one day to attack them. They believe that these people know everything they do and everything they say. A teenage girl told me that she had been told that if she ever married and her husband cheated on her, it would be with one of them. They are deting them to failure in all areas. These practices appear to be very present in Iowa, Nebraska and Missouri. Some people have recently suggested that these states could be a kind of headquarters.

While you listen to me talk about these things, there will certainly be a part in you that will naturally refuse much of what you hear there, and believe me, we too refused it at first. I would like to share with you some of what children have revealed to us, things that no child can know or invent. This is what finally convinced me with deep emotion. There is this evil and this pain that comes out when these skinned people start talking.

The children I am talking about are the ones I have personally known at home. They are now between 5 and 17 years old. When they first spoke, they were between 5 and 15 years old and when these things happened, they were still babies, we are talking about very young children... We are talking about children whose awareness and learning of good and evil is then in full formation. These children do not know, they cannot know what is right. They are in total confusion. The monstrosities they have made before, for which they have been rewarded, are so horrified that they will be systematically rejected by others when they talk about them. Generally, they have been placed several times. When they arrive with a family, they will fly, they will harm the animals, *etc.* The kid can, for example, cut his pencils to try to stab people. Obviously, families refuse this kind of behaviour in their homes, but they don't have a clue what's behind it, they're just going to say, "We've got a very weird child there." Many of these little ones are sent to psychiatric hospitals where they will be labeled "psychotic" or "schizophrenic", who would want them afterwards? I praise the Lord who has brought many of them into my life, into our families. There are other families like ours, it's just a way for the Holy Spirit. That is the only way I can explain it.

I'm going to start with the first stories we've heard. This one will seem horrible to you, but it is rather "soft" for me, because we had to deal with much more difficult testimonies. The first is that of two little boys who were 7 and 9 years old when they started talking about sexual violence, they had a lot of sadness in them. One afternoon when we were talking about various personal things, both negative and positive, the little one began to cry. Since we couldn't get an explanation, his older brother confessed to us: ''He is surely crying because he was in the room when they killed his friend.'' That was the first case we heard. They started describing the scene to us, they talked about this little victim whose hands were tied and his mouth gagged. There were crosses marked on his body, located in the places of the vital organs. It was very unhealthy... A few weeks later, we learned that it was not adults who had killed this child, but that it was this older boy, the one who had told us about it.

The next case we are going to talk about is that of a little boy who was very limited mentally. He had language problems, it was very difficult for him to express himself orally. When he started talking about these things, everyone was surprised at the way he was expressing himself. We were sure of it, we knew he hadn't been able to hear that from other kids. But we started to wonder, there was indeed something strange with these children who were coming to dump all these atrocities on us. The thing that made me believe in the veracity of this child's story is that he talked about several babies who were killed, but once he curled up in the fetal position while he told the story of the stabbed infant, he was then 9 years old. He was in the fetal position while his eyes became glassy and he said, "They cook the baby on the grill. it smells like rotten chicken or rotten deer.'' He then told us how they cut out the heart and genitals to keep them in the refrigerator. A typical thing that keeps coming up in the testimonies is their interest in the genitals. I asked him where the remains of the bodies were put, I did not get an answer from this child. But the other two boys I talked about just before later told me that "babies were being thrown into the fire." I asked them if they were dead when they were set on fire, the little one said to me, "No, no, they were alive." At that time we were really panicked by all these things! What were we going to do?! How could we help these children? Where to find a therapist who can treat this problem?... But God has set up a support system. Other families helped us and it really supported us a lot.

The next child is a little girl who was 9 years old when she spoke. It was very painful when she first started testifying to sexual abuse. Sexual abuse is so harmful to children... They're embarrassed to talk about it, it's so intimate. She started by drawing cats... All these cats had their tails drawn at the other end of the page, or it was their legs that were separated from their bodies. As we started chatting with her, she told us that she had to kill a cat who was waiting for cubs.

She confessed to us that it was she who had to kill the cat: "With a knife, I put it in her butt and I turned it." Now you will tell me can a child invent such things?! If I ask a child how he could kill a cat, do you think he will answer that way?! These are the kinds of horrible details that the children were reporting to us. Then the little one told us that they ended up opening and cutting the cat, that's how she knew she was expecting the little ones. According to her, they ate parts of the animal, as well as feces. They also drank blood. This was just the beginning, she also had to kill a baby, in the same way, "put the knife in the back and turn". The baby was alive and screaming. This child to this day still has terrible nightmares as well as violent flashbacks. She told us that they cut up the baby and ate it. The remains were burned and the bones crushed. The little one talked about gasoline that was poured on the remains to burn them in the backyard. I often thought I was crazy, but I heard this so many times that now I know it has to be that way. We know that there are morgues involved in the cremation of victims.

The most horrific cremation story I have to tell, something very disturbing, comes from a victim who was a teenager at the time she told it to me. She described a rally in front of a barn where people were singing. Then when they entered the barn, they divided into two groups. She was never with her whole family, they were systematically separated to go to different places. I then asked her where she should go and she said, ''I've always been in the cremation chamber.'' As she described this cremation chamber to me, I was thinking in myself "how could she get out of it by keeping all her mental health", I don't know. She was then a very small child.

This young girl told us that these groups kidnap young children and tie them up. There may be 5 or even 10 of them hanging in a row. In the ritual she told me, they were fully dressed, which is unusual since usually they are naked. Other children, including this teenager, who was a child at the time of the events, were given candles. The candles were lit, and then the adults poured liquid on the clothes of the attached children, liquid that was obviously gasoline. They then gave a signal to the children who had to come forward with the candles to set fire to the little victims. Once this was over, some of them were shot. The first child this girl had to kill was one of her little cousins. She says that she could not oppose it, because those who oppose it are also killed (...) Two years ago, this girl collapsed at Christmas time. Everyone thinks that Christmas is a wonderful time. She confessed to us that she hated Christmas, that she couldn't stand this party because all she could hear were crying babies. For her, Christmas is the time when most babies die. She covered her ears and cried for hours shouting, "Stop! Stop it! Talk to God and tell Him to stop this!" All she could hear were screams and crying babies... Christmas for the children I spoke to, is one of the worst times. Three children told me about a very similar ceremony. They were taken to a church where all the children were gathered, it was apparently very festive. A young child is highlighted, two of them talked about babies on an altar. The adults are all celebrating, singing and dancing. The children are drawn into this euphoria and a circle is formed around the one who has been put forward, of course it represents the child Jesus. The adults then begin to make fun of him, spit on him, insult him and then encourage the other children to do the same. You can imagine how it quickly gets out of control. At some point, they give all the children a knife and then stab and cut out the child or baby until he or she dies. Then they celebrate the death of the child Jesus[272]...

- Sandi Gallant

In 1988, Sandi Gallant was a police officer in San Francisco when she wrote a report identifying numerous cases of ritual abuse throughout the United States, but also in Canada where the phenomenon is also present. Here's what she wrote for the victims' relatives:

"In recent years, police officers have been confronted with investigations that involve a change in vocabulary. This vocabulary must be adapted to crimes now identified as cases of "ritual sexual

abuse" or "ritual abuse against children" (...) Until recently, the laws were applied in these cases in the same way as for the usual abuse of children. This was not done to deny the existence of ritual abuses, but because these cases were never categorized before that. In other words, these cases were handled in the way that all the files were handled because
no one knew that they corresponded to a particular crime scenario then developing in the country. However, this has posed problems in terms of the success of the investigations (...) The allegations concern types of abuse that are as intolerable as they are unbelievable. Investigators believe the victims, but they are unable to find evidence that could lead them to legal action. In the maze of problems that have arisen, investigators have found themselves, in many cases, faced with cases for which they were unable to prove the truth. The parents of the victims, now totally frustrated by these failures of the system, need answers and, in fact, have the right to have answers and to know why their children who have been abused do not have the right to justice. That is why this article was written. You, the parents, are worthy of seeing the laws enforced. At the same time, we need you to understand the situation.

Why are laws like this? As an investigator of ritual crimes over the last few years, I can honestly tell you that we are making progress and that this area of crime is recognised as specific and real. I say this because not a day goes by without me being in contact with other police services across the United States and Canada, which are seeking information about the modus operandi and how ritual abuses take place. In that regard, we are making progress. Where previously officers were not aware of what they saw, they are now able to identify things more easily, whereas previously investigators had no training on how to identify these crimes when they face them. They are now receiving training. All this is all very well, but parents still do not see the desired results. In many cases, suspects do not even go to trial, let alone are found guilty. At the time of writing, there have been only a few lawsuits that have resulted in

United States (...)

In her report Sandi Gallant wrote to her superiors:

"The information contained in this document is unpleasant and strange, to such a degree that one might choose to discredit it. However, my research in this area has revealed that many such cases are emerging in the country and in Canada. The similarities in the stories of each child victim used in these crimes tend to give credibility to the information revealed by others. In addition, psychiatrists and therapists who followed the victims, say that the consistency of the stories and the explicit details revealed lead them to believe that the children are telling the truth. Every police officer who submitted information for this report believes that the victims are telling the truth and that, in fact, the children would be unable to develop such stories.

During my research, similarities began to surface, indicating the high probability that there is a network of people in this country, involved in sexual abuse and probable homicides of young children. These cases appear to differ from isolated cases of child abuse because the crimes mentioned here are committed with a deliberate intent to maim and massacre children for ritual or sacrificial purposes. Many of the reported cases also reveal child pornography that goes beyond the normal type of child pornography because children are photographed during rituals in which some people wear dresses, costumes and candles, also the presence of snakes, swords, altars, but there are still other types of ritual material."

This report was never forwarded to the FBI, and the Department of Justice also refused to review it[273].

- Elder Glenn Pace

On July 19, 1990, Glenn Pace, then Bishop Mormon, sent an internal memo to his Church denouncing ritual abuse. Indeed, Glenn Pace had conducted an investigation into satanic ritual abuses within the Latter-day Saint Church (Mormons) in order to denounce the systematic and widespread proliferation of mind control. He had thus collected about sixty testimonies concerning traumatic rituals and human sacrifices. At the time, this memorandum caused a lot of noise to the point that a government investigation into ritual abuse in Utah was launched the following year (leading to a report cited earlier in this chapter: "Ritual Crime in the State of Utah"). It should be noted that in his book entitled The Darker Side of Evil, Corruption, Scandal and the Mormon Empire, Anson Shupe reports on page 109 of his book that in the Hadfield case, children talked about stories of sexual during which participants wore costumes and adults took pictures.

Here is the translation of the memorandum of this bishop who had the courage to denounce these horrors:

In accordance with the Committee's request, I am writing this note to convey to you what I have learned about the ritualized abuse of children. Hoping that this has some value and allows you to continue monitoring this issue. You have already received the "LDS Social Services" report on Satanism dated May 24, 1989, a report from Brent Ward, and a memorandum from myself dated October 20, 1989 in response to Brother Ward's report. Therefore, I will limit this letter by sending you only the information that was not in these documents.

I met sixty victims. This number could be multiplied by two or by three if I did not limit myself to only one session per week. Initially I did not want to get involved in this issue which could become a handicap for my position of responsibility. But afterwards, I felt that we had to pay the price in order to obtain an intellectual and spiritual conviction in the face of the seriousness of this problem within the Church.

Of the sixty or so victims I met,there are fifty-three women and seven men, eight of whom are still children. This violence took place in the following places: Utah (37), Idaho (3), California (5), Mexico (2), as well as other places (14). Fifty-three victims reported that they had witnessed or participated in human sacrifices. The majority were abused by relatives, often by their own parents. All developed psychological problems and most were diagnosed with multiple personality disorder or other forms of dissociative disorder.

This ritualized child abuse is the most despicable of all child abuse. The fundamental and premeditated aim is to torture and terrorize these children until they are forced to dissociate themselves systematically and methodically. These tortures are not the consequence of "anger", they are the execution of perfectly thought out and well-planned rituals, often performed by close relatives. The only way out for these children is to dissociate themselves. They will then develop a new personality to allow them to endure the various forms of abuse. When the traumatic episode is over, the basic personality regains control of the individual who is not aware of what has just happened to him. Dissociation also serves to hide all these things, over time children no longer remember these atrocities. They arrive in adolescence and adulthood without having any active memory of what is happening (or what has happened). Generally, they continue to be involved in rituals throughout their adolescence and early adulthood, without being fully aware of their participation in these occult activities. Many of the people I spoke to were used for certain missions and it was only much later that they began to remember them. An individual may have memories of his or her participation in rituals, while still serving full-time worship.

The victims lead a relatively normal life, the memories are locked up and compartmentalized in their minds. They don't know how to deal with some of their emotions because they can't find the source. When they become adults and end up in another environment, certain things can then trigger memories and flashbacks or nightmares can also happen. These people will live a completely normal life, and overnight they will find themselves hospitalized in a psychiatric hospital in a fetal position. The memories of their childhood go back in such detail that the victims again feel the pain that caused this initial dissociation.

There are two reasons why adults can remember such events in every detail about their past: first, the terror they experienced was so intense that it was indelibly marked in their minds. Secondly, memory has been compartmentalized so that part of the mind is not subjected to trauma. When these memories resurface, they are as fresh as if it had happened yesterday.

The memories seem to go back in layers. For example, the first memory may concern incest, and then re-emerge memories of dresses and candles. Then, the victims realize that their father or mother (or both) were present at the time of the abuse. Another layer will contain the memory of seeing other people tortured and even killed, including babies, only to finally realize that the person himself has participated in sacrifices. One of the most painful memories is sometimes the fact that they had to sacrifice their own baby themselves. With each layer of memory comes up new problems that victims have to face.

Some people claim that witnesses denouncing this type of treatment cannot be reliable because of the unstable condition of the victim and because almost all of them suffer from dissociative disorders. In fact, these stories are so bizarre that they do indeed raise the question of credibility. The irony is that one of the objectives of these sects is precisely to create multiple personalities in these children, in order to keep the "secrets". They thus live in society without it having the slightest idea that something is wrong, since these children and adolescents do not even realise for themselves that they have another life in the shadows and in secrecy. However, when sixty victims come to testify to the same type of torture and sacrifice, it becomes personally impossible for me not to believe them (...)

The spiritual doctrine that is linked to this physical violence is particularly difficult to overcome. In addition to pain and terror, children are also taught in satanic doctrine. Everything is completely reversed: white is black, black becomes white, good becomes evil and evil becomes good, etc.

Children are put in situations where they actually believe they are going to die, such as being buried alive or immersed in water for example. Before doing this, the executioner tells the child to pray to Jesus Christ to see if he will come and save him. Imagine a seven-year-old girl who was told that she was going to die and that she had to pray to Jesus. and that for her, nothing comes to save her until the last moment when she is finally rescued by a person claiming to be a representative of Satan. She becomes a child of Satan and is likely to become faithful to him.

Just before or shortly after their baptism in the Church, children are baptized by blood in the satanic order that is intended to cancel their Christian baptism (...) All these things are done with the personality that came into being in order to endure the physical, mental and spiritual pain. Therefore, a kind of "civil war" develops within these people. When memories begin to resurface, there are personalities who feel themselves doomed to Satan, with no hope of forgiveness, while the basic personality is an active member of the Church. When integration (fusion of alter) takes place, this is where the "civil war" breaks out. Sometimes, during an interview, the personality of the dark side emerges, it may be petrified or filled with hatred towards me and what I represent. These personalities must be treated both spiritually and psychologically.

Most of the victims are suicidal. They have been indoctrinated using drugs, hypnosis and other technical means to make them suicidal as soon as they begin to reveal secrets. The victim is threatened with death, his relatives are also threatened, *etc.* The victim has every reason to believe these threats because he has already seen people being killed (...)

The purpose of this memorandum is to emphasize the complexity of psychological and spiritual therapy for these people. Our priests, when confronted with such cases, naturally find themselves destitute, not knowing how to respond to them. As for the judiciary, is totally ineffective. For example, some victims sometimes claim that all these things are a thing of the past and that they need to put them aside by focusing on their present lives. This is simply not possible. Part of spiritual therapy is to convert personalities who have been indoctrinated into Satanism. Victims must integrate all their personalities so that they can function in a coherent whole that allows them to face the problems and then devote themselves fully to their lives (...)

The authors live a double life, many are recognized members of the temple (Mormon), which is why the Church needs to consider the seriousness of this problem (...) I refused to give me the names of the assailants. I told them that my responsibility was to help them in their spiritual healing and that the names of the perpetrators should be entrusted to therapists and police officers (...) I do not claim to say that this problem is widespread, all I know is that I have met sixty victims. When sixty victims testify to the same types of torture and murder, personally it becomes impossible for me not to believe them (...) Obviously, I only met those who were looking for help. For the most part they were in their twenties or thirties. I can only assume, and I am horrified by this, the number of children and adolescents currently involved in these occult practices (...)

- Jenny Hill

In October 2012, the American television channel ABC4 broadcast a short report by Kimberley Nelson devoted to the testimony of Jenny Hill, a woman survivor of ritual abuse who was diagnosed with 22 different personalities. Jenny Hill's story is reported in "22 Faces", a book written by her therapist, Judy Byington, who told the journalist:

''She was sexually assaulted during rituals when she was very young, she developed these multiple personalities whenever she was in a traumatic situation.''

Her first alter personality was "born" when she was 4 years old. Just as his father, a devout Mormon, began to do the unthinkable...

''He told me that he loved me more than my mother and that this was our secret.''

It was a few years later, when the ritual abuses began, that his personality split again to face rape and torture. Jenny didn't remember the abuse, all she knew was that she had serious memory loss. Until the day she woke up confused in a psychiatric hospital. Dr. Weston Whatcott then took care of her. He told the reporter that he had met several of Jenny Hill's alter personalities:

''If it was cinema, then it deserves to receive several Oscars (...) She had a completely different voice! I mean a real change of voice, a change of accent, but also a change of behavior, of mimics, all this changed radically.''

Dr. Whatcott also discovered that his various alter personalities stand out in Jenny's writings. Whether in the diary she wrote as a child but also in the diary she kept as an adult. In this newspaper, alter personalities reveal what happened in his past. Jenny herself wasn't convinced that she could have all these different personalities, until the day Dr. Whatcott made a video recording of one of the therapy sessions: "She was fascinated by what she saw there, she was like a little child, she got on her knees and got closer to the screen. She couldn't believe she was the one on that video.'' Dr. Whatcott says that this discovery of the recordings was a real turning point for Jenny. Memories then began to resurface, including memories of human sacrifices: "I was tied up and they threatened to do the same to me as the victim. At one point during the ceremony, the pain was so intense that the victim was crying hysterically... and I didn't cry, I didn't make a single noise... as if I had been programmed for it.''

Jenny claims that on June 21, 1965, she saw this little girl being murdered. She says she probably would have been the next victim but was saved by divine intervention.

Judy Byington: ''Jenny says she saw a man's feet in a white light, she was lying on the altar and he was right above her, and that broke the ceremony.''

Jenny thought she was really alone in her memories, but her mother, before her death, admitted in a phone conversation that she had been involved in satanic rituals. She also confirmed and validated Jenny's memory of this saving white light. The telephone conversation between Mercy Hill (Jenny's mother), and Judy Byington, was recorded and broadcast during this ABC4 report:

- Reporter: You talked about this white light, can you tell us more about it?

- Mercy Hill: I don't know, I don't remember much about it, but it seems to me that there was a white light. She was a little far away from us and she was going down.

- Reporter: Did you see anything in the light?
- Mercy Hill: No, she was so brilliant you know. she was blinding.

- Vicki Polin

In 1989, Oprah Winfrey devoted one of her shows "The Oprah Winfrey Show" to satanic ritual abuse. The show was titled "Mexican Satanic Cult Murders". During that evening, a woman testified to the horrors she had suffered, she said that her family had been involved in rituals for generations and generations. At the time of her testimony, she was undergoing intense therapy because of her multiple personality disorder or dissociative identity disorder. Here is the transcript of her interview with Oprah Winfrey:

- Oprah Winfrey: Have you also experienced ritual abuse in your family?
- Vicki Polin: Yes, my family descends from a long line that repeats abuses, it goes back to the sixteenth century.
- OW: And so they abused you?
- VP: I come from a family that believes in this...
- OW: And from the outside, everyone thought it was a respectable Jewish family?
- VP: That's exactly right.
- OW: While there was a cult to Satan inside the house itself.
- VP: Yes. There are many Jewish families across the country,not just mine.
- OW: Really? And who is aware of these things?... A lot of people now. (laughs)
- VP: I talked to a Chicago police investigator about it, and many of my friends know that. I have also spoken about this publicly before.

- many of my friends know that. I have also spoken about this publicly before.

- OW: So you were brought up in the middle of all this horror. Did you think it was normal?

- VP: I buried a lot of my memories in me because of my multiple personality disorder, but yes. when you grow up with something, you think it's normal. I've always believed that.

- OW: But what kind of thing? You don't have to give us gore details, but what kind of things were going on in your family?

- VP: Well there were rituals in which babies were sacrificed and you had to...

- OW: The babies of whom?

- VP: There were people bringing babies back to our family. No one realized it, many women were obese, we didn't see if they were pregnant or not. And if there were any suspicions, they would leave for a while and then they would come back. Another thing I want to say is that not all Jews sacrifice babies, it is not something traditional.

- OW: So you witnessed a sacrifice?

- VP: Yes, when I was very young, I was forced to participate in this and I had to sacrifice a child.

- OW: What is the purpose of these sacrifices, what does it bring you?

- VP: It's for Power, Power.

- OW: Have you been used yourself?

- VP: I have been sexually assaulted, raped several times.

- OW: What was your mother doing? What was its role?

- VP: I'm not sure what role she could have, I haven't recovered all my memories yet, but my family was extremely involved in it. You know, it led me to that, both my parents led me there.

- OW: And where is it now?

- VP: She lives in the Metropolis of Chicago, she works at the Human Relations Commission of the city where she resides. She is a model citizen, no one would suspect her.

- OW: Were you raised with the notion of good and evil?

- VP: Yes... I had both of those notions. What I mean is that for the outside world, everything we were doing was good and respectable, and then there were some nights when things were different. where what was wrong became good, and what was right was something wrong. All this with the aim of developing multiple personality disorders.

- OW: In your family, it was really called "a cult of the devil" or it was just the things you were doing that were diabolical?

- VP: No, I don't know. Finally, I said it was wrong, and they said it was good. There's a book I came across called "The Cave of Lilith," a book about Jewish mysticism and the supernatural. There's a lot in there related to what I experienced as a child.''

• Linda Weegan

Linda Weegan is a mother whose two children have been the victims of ritual abuse. She testified during a conference with Ted Gunderson. Here, she describes the systematic protocol of injustice of judicially attacking and harassing the protective parent (usually the mother) to protect the alleged executioners and networks instead of conducting a proper investigation. Here is the transcript of his testimony:

I'm here to tell you about a real-life example of what happens when a satanic cult abuses your children. About 10 years ago, for me the devil was something. I go to the Church, I am Catholic. I went to church and yet the devil was something external that was not talked about and that was even hidden. It was something downright science fiction. My children started talking about sexual abuse in 1993. They masturbated, they tried things with the dog like introducing a pencil or brush into his rectum. These behaviors have worsened and have gone crescendo (...) I knew I had a very big problem there but I had no idea what it really was. I then sought help throughout the country. I passed my children's drawings on to the police. So I had all these drawings with circles, people, black candles in the middle of tables, representations of sodomy, *etc.* I went to the Church and said, "I don't know what it is but these drawings look very significant. There are symbols that I don't understand, devil's heads, ghosts.'' At that time, I had no idea what satanic ritual abuse was. The only answer was that the Church asked me if I had ever done a psychiatric examination... Today, I can say, I know what the symbols of these drawings correspond to.

Despite the fact that the father was charged with sodomy and oral sex about his children, no one wanted to help me. Even though there are lawsuits going on, they say you invented these stories of satanic ritual abuse. Your credibility is zero, it just doesn't exist, "nothing like that happens in the United States." Just focus on the "simple" pedophilia that your children have suffered.

So I took my boys to an institute specializing in child sexual abuse. Moms could also be admitted and I had legal custody of my two sons. My husband, his lawyers and the judge discovered that my children were in a specialized institute... They then confiscated my house, everything I had, from the pictures of my babies to my clothes, I only had one suitcase with me. They took my car, my mail, my income, my assets. I lost everything for introducing my children to a sexual abuse specialist! They were trying to stop me because of what my children might eventually disclose. They tried to break me up financially so that my children would no longer have any therapeutic help in this institute. It has been clearly acknowledged that my sons have been sexually abused and I can prove this by documents.

One day, the therapist who was taking care of them invited me to her office, and there she told me that it was a classic case of S.R.A. (Satanic Ritual Abuse = Abu Rituel Satanique)... I had no idea what she was talking about, S.R.A. ?? ... She then explained to me what satanic ritual abuse was. She showed me the drawings that the children had made in her office. There was the depiction of a blood sacrifice, where people cut off their arms and collected blood in a chalice. The chalice had a devil's head shape. etc. This includes orgies, child sacrifices. It was a huge shock, I didn't know what to do, I didn't know where to go.

I called all the child protection associations and organizations in the country to ask for help, no one admitted the existence of satanic ritual abuses. In addition, all the child protection associations are simply proclaiming "that they love children". but they don't actually help anyone. So my fight to save my children has taken me this far, and I can tell you now that there are other moms here today who have asked me for help because their children are also victims of ritual abuse. This is very hard for me, my life has been destroyed but I must say that it has been rebuilt for the better. John and Ben, who are 11 and 8 years old, lived for 15 and 16 months in the home of a Satanist who is a member of a group of 25 people located in Turney, Connecticut. They are actively involved in ritual sexual abuse. Neither the governor nor anyone protected my children. So I wonder: How far will it go? (.)

- Glenn Hobbs

In 1988, Jeremiah Films produced a documentary entitled "Halloween, Trick or Treat?'' (Halloween, fun or threat?) in which Caryl Matrisciana interviews an ex-Satanist, Glenn Hobbs, born in a cult practicing ritual abuse. Here is the transcript of this interview:

- Caryl Matrisciana: Glenn Hobbs was initiated by his grandfather into a Satanist sect as a child and he continued to participate in these activities for years. I recently asked Glenn about his involvement and the importance of Halloween to these occultists.

- Glenn Hobbs: My involvement in satanic worship began in childhood because I was a generational Satanist... That is, my family and its previous generations were involved in these occult practices. Today, my earliest memories of Halloween and everything related to it remind me that it was a very dark period of my childhood...

- CM: Glenn, can you tell us about the Halloween rituals you were involved in as a child?

- GH: There was another little girl involved in that with me. Her name was Becky. Becky was not like me, she was destined to be sacrificed. I was destined to become a high priest. She was born in this sect to be destined for a human sacrifice. She and I were married together in a ritual. It was a wedding offered to "the Beast". When I and this little girl were married, there was a lot of sexual abuse, a lot of blood flowed, all in order to unite us.

- CM: When does the Halloween ritual begin? What is the real purpose of Halloween?

- GH: The rituals I remember most clearly start at the end of September. Me and the little girl I just mentioned, Becky... The abuse was very repetitive during this time of year. We were taken to several rooms where we were undressed. We spent the next two weeks in sorts of huts in which a lot of rituals happened, a lot of animals were sacrificed. Incantations to Lucifer and his demons were made for them to come and take possession of me. I was destined to become a high priest when the time came. On Halloween night they took me and the little girl to the back of a van. The road seemed long, again we were drugged... Finally we stopped, they took the little girl out and they left me in the van. I heard a lot of hustle and bustle outside, people were screaming and screaming with this kind of whisper in the background... a kind of song. So I was aware that a ritual was going on because I had heard this stuff many times before. It was something usual for me to see people lying on the ground and taking convulsions during these rituals, always with this demonic presence that we feel all around... Finally a woman came to tell me that it was time for me to go... So she got me out of the van and there I could see that there were a lot of people present. Some people were dressed in sorts of dark dresses with large hoods. They took me to a stone altar. I remember seeing the little girl, she was on the altar... I first wondered what was going to happen, because you never know, they can use the altar for many things, it can be animal sacrifice, sexual abuse by the high priest on a victim, it's hard to know in advance... They finally directed me in front of this altar, there I saw that they had tied her feet and that she was attached to the altar. His arms were also tied to the altar with sorts of hooks. She was very white... I remember that she was incredibly white... They had made incisions on his feet and wrists. They had collected the blood that was flowing from the wounds into a chalice, and then they passed this container to the people who were present. Then the high priest took the ritual dagger... He pointed it at the little victim, he then took my hand to put it on the dagger and forced me to stab my chest...

So when it comes to Halloween... You know, it was a peak time of year, halloween night when they killed this innocent little girl. It's something that happens every Halloween night, it's not just an isolated event. There are children all over the world who are sacrificed on Halloween night, and in our societies we celebrate it by going from door to door to ask for sweets, it is a "big party" for us. But I think it's very ironic, some people think it's something fun, while others take human lives during that time... And yet no one wants to face what is really happening (...)

- Anne A. Johnson Davis

Anne A. Johnson Davis is the author of "Hell Minus One", an autobiographical book published in 2008 in which she recounts her childhood traumatized by ritual abuse from the age of 3 until 17 when she finally fled. Anne, real name Rachel Hopkins took a long time before giving her public testimony and coming out of anonymity, writing her autobiography took 7 1/2 years.

The book contains a foreword by Lieutenant Inspector Matt Jacobson of the Utah Attorney General's Office (Jacobson was one of the editors of the report "Ritual Crime in the State of Utah" mentioned earlier in this chapter). In this foreword, Jacobson validates the testimony contained in the book, stating that he himself personally met and questioned the aggressors who confessed in his presence. Later, Anne even received written confessions from her executioners, who were none other than her mother and stepfather.

Here is an interview with Anne Johnson Davis that was conducted and put online by the group S.M.A.R.T. (Stop Mind-control And Ritual abuse Today! [274]!)

- What is the subject of the book 'Hell Minus One'?

- This book is all about hope and freedom, it is a biography, a segment of my life. As the subtitle of my book states, it is "my account of a deliverance from satanic ritual abuse and my return to freedom".

This book reveals that there are actually people who practice satanic ritual abuse. This is not a myth, as some claim. From the age of 3, my parents used me as an object during rituals until I left home at the age of 17. This book reports the abuses I have suffered, as well as the different steps taken to regain my freedom, to heal myself and to finally forgive my executioners. This book is about the choices I made, some miracles, and crucial help I received. A help that allowed me to triumph over this tragic past. It also concerns the commitment I have made to live a new life in love, determination and positive resolutions.

- Why did you write this book?

- When I was in the healing phase, I began to understand that my life and mental health would not improve just because of me. I then felt a vocation to bring freedom and hope to others. My husband, Bruce, was also convinced of this vocation and he always encouraged me to write this book. He felt that my experience could make a contribution. At first, I resisted because I wasn't ready to engage in something that required immense and painful effort. But as I healed, this desire to inspire courage in others grew in me. From my experience, I wanted victims of abuse to regain some hope of being able to get by, of being able to overcome the obstacles that seem totally insurmountable. What we have to face, we can overcome - and even do even better. The doors will then open and help will come when we give everything of ourselves for the GOOD.

I have evidence regarding satanic ritual abuse. I also have memories that have come back to me and I have noted all this clearly in letters. These letters were returned from the written confessions of my executioners, who were my own mother and father-in-law. My half-brothers also sent letters to the authorities confirming my accusations. Two inspectors linked to the Attorney-General's Office subsequently obtained verbal and written confessions from the assailants.

- Who should read your book?

- The story in my book is intended to bring hope to the victims. Hope for those who are still captive. Hope that they know that there are other options and that they have a choice. It is also a call for those who are able to help them, such as politicians, mental health professionals, the Church, and even those who open up to the testimonies that are sometimes entrusted to them. This book is also intended for those who wish to read a biography where goodness and light have overcome evil and darkness.

- What are the most important message(s) in your book?

- That our adversity is not our identity. What we have done, or what we have been done, is not what we are. No matter what has been inflicted on us – or the mistakes we have made – we can overcome this and be true to our authenticity, our true self. Goodness and light always overcome evil and darkness. Our God-given ability to direct our own lives is never lost, ever!

This book is intended for those who need encouragement, or who are in a professional or personal situation where they need to support and encourage someone. The subtitle of my book is: "My account of the deliverance of satanic ritual abuse and my return to freedom". I say "deliverance" rather than "escape" because I could not have done this on my own. I received the help of a higher power. I do not think that anyone can get out of this enslavement completely on their own. The message of this book goes beyond that simply overcoming satanic ritual abuses, it is also valid for everyone, individuals, associations, companies, because it deals with the issue of overcoming obstacles that seem insurmountable. We all have Goliaths to face and overcome. This process of confrontation to overcome the obstacle is never easy and it requires commitment and hard work. But the result of this work changes your life forever. The only way out is through it.

- How long did it take you to write this book?

- Let's see... How old am I?... It took me a lifetime! 47 years first to live it, then it was necessary to "relive" it and treat all this. Then it took 6 years of writing and finally 18 months for the work of proofreading and editing the final manuscript. The book was published in December 2008.

- What research have you done?

- Research? I didn't have to do any research. I lived it, and then I remembered it. The memories came back with crystal clear clarity, one by one, day after day, week after week, month after month. It pieced together a shocking jigsaw puzzle that I was totally unaware of. I wrote explicit letters about the acts committed and finally received written confessions from my parents: my mother and father-in-law. These written confessions were supplemented for oral confessions before the Utah Attorney General.

- What was the most difficult thing, or challenge, in writing your book "Hell Minus One"?

- Find the determination and courage to stay on this project for more than seven years, with the writing and proofreading of a manuscript telling horrific and painful details. But the dark side of my story was rebalanced by the bright side which is ultimately the most important. These sources of positivity are my faith and spiritual experiences, as well as wonderful circumstances and people who have gone through my life.

- In the first chapters of the book, you describe many detailed memories when you were 3 years old. How did you remember all this? Was it always present, or did it come back to you as you wrote?

- Most memories are reassembled during therapy. The additional details emerged over the years as I tried to put my story in writing. My editor and I worked together to finalize the manuscript. At one point, he asked me if I knew more. In order to preserve authenticity and accuracy, I took all my time, calmly, to simply let the details emerge.

- Have your brothers and sisters been victims like you? Or were they Satanists like your parents?

- My half-brothers wrote letters to the ecclesiastical authorities supporting and confirming my testimony. I respect their privacy and I don't want to speak for them. They were not victims as I was, I was "a piece brought back" in the family, considered a "bastard" and used as a sacrificial object.

- How did you get these letters of confession from your parents?

- At the beginning of my therapy, when I still had contact with them, I called them and asked them if they could write to the ecclesiastical authorities to confirm my accusations. And they did.

- Your parents' letters of confession are published in detail in your book. You used ellipses in several paragraphs. What did you leave behind and why?

- These are paragraphs that were too insane and too violent to be published. Above all, this book conveys a message of hope and encouragement, deliverance and healing. My intention in including these confession letters was to give the reader enough information so that he would know how unhealthy it was. But I didn't want the content to be offensive and shocking to the point that the reader closes the book.

There were also references to my half-siblings, and out of respect for their privacy, I removed these passages.

- Where are your parents' confession letters today?

- The originals are safe in a safe.

- Are they available to the public? If not, why not?

- They are not accessible to the public. They were made available to the Utah Attorney General during his investigation. They were also made available to the publishing house during the writing of the final manuscript. But due to the nature of the content of these letters with often shocking pictorial details, as well as for a defamatory question, because names are mentioned there, they are not available to the public.

- Your parents began subjecting you to ritual abuse as early as the age of 3 and this continued until you left home at the age of 17. Afterwards, you started having rabies attacks in your thirties... By the end of the '90s, you had finished your therapy and you were on the road to recovery. That was more than a decade ago and today you are in your fifties. You say it took 7 years to write "Hell Minus One". Why didn't you write your book earlier? Was it an emotional question, did you have to
feel ready before revealing these memories?

- Before 2001, I didn't feel the need to write a book that could possibly help others. Writing "Hell Minus One" took a lot longer than I had anticipated. But I wanted the manuscript to be authentic in every detail and also to be of a good quality of writing. It took 18 months to re-work and edit the manuscript, after 7 years of writing.

- Your parents were doing horrible and sadistic things about you. After these episodes, you didn't remember anything, you didn't even have hostile feelings towards them. What is the medical or psychological definition of this phenomenon? How and why does the brain work in this way? Can certain things experienced fade away?

- The definitions of professionals I have heard are not convincing. I tend to rely on my own experience rather than using labels that can be contradictory and misunderstood. In my case, my psyche prevented me from becoming aware of the abuse until I was mature enough to react. Before that, the threats of my executioners saying that I would be destroyed if I talked about anything kept these memories of abuse in a compartmentalization, a psychological silence.

- What exactly is satanic ritual abuse?

- For me, it is a criminal, inhumane and perverse form to worship the devil. These crimes include physical, sexual, mental and spiritual torture of innocent victims.

- What is its origin? Its history?

- First of all, I am not an expert on satanic ritual abuse and I do not wish to be. Sometimes, during the abuses, I heard my parents and their accomplices talk about returning to a distant time, so everything that was done during those nights did not refer to the present time. There are several sources on the internet describing in detail the origin of ritual abuses. Unfortunately, there are also many sources claiming that all this is false and that it is an urban legend born in the 80s and discredited in the late 90s. Mainly due to statements without evidence or basis.

What happened to me - my parents' letters of confession - is yet another argument to put in the balance. In fact, my parents' letters, their verbal confessions to the police, and their excommunication from the Church, provide new evidence that researchers and skeptics about satanic ritual abuse did not have before. Without evidence, I can understand that this subject has not received more support in the past. One of my hopes is that "Hell Minus One" will receive good reviews, from the judiciary, mental health professionals and even the media. This is in order to reconsider this issue of ritual abuse.

- Why do these people engage in such behaviors? What do they get out of it?

- From my point of view, this is a way to satisfy an addiction to sexual violence and perversion. I have seen them behave completely insanely - determined to appeal to the powers of darkness and evil - believing that this would give them power and power superior to other people, as well as an extraordinary way to get money.

- The ritual abuses you experienced took place in the 50s and 60s. If you do a search on the internet with "Satanic Ritual Abuse", hundreds of sites are listed. Some offer help, some describe troubling details about today's practices. What comparison can we give us on what you have experienced and what is being done today?

- More than a year ago, after a few hours of research on this subject on the internet, I decided that I would never submit to the sight or reading of these things again. What I understand is that the purpose and intentions of ritual abuse do not seem to have changed, even though the techniques have developed considerably. This is becoming more and more bizarre, more and more brutal and inhumane.

- For readers who are victims of ritual abuse, what do you recommend to them?

- Above all, I would like them to know that they have a choice. I would like to urge them to show courage and ask for help in any way, to get out and stay away from this evil, this bondage. If your family is toxic and completely ill, and they are involved in criminal activity, you should not turn to them again. You can't save them, but you can save yourself. I would like them to realize that they have a right to their identity and their life given to them by God. They have and will have inner signs and an intuition that will guide them in the best possible way.

- For readers worshiping Satan, or practicing ritual abuse, what do you recommend?

- For those who practice Satanism, they have the right to do what they want as soon as it is not a question of criminal acts. After experiencing the satanic practices of these foul-smelling souls, I advise them to get out of it, whatever the cost, before it is too late.

- What is the goal you hope to accomplish with your book "Hell Minus One"?

- My hope and prayer is that this book will be a beacon, a light in the midst of darkness. A message of hope and encouragement. We can all overcome seemingly insurmountable obstacles. The epigraph of my book recalls that we have all been endowed by the Creator with an inalienable right to our life, a right to freedom and happiness.

- In your book, you explain why you and your husband chose not to file a complaint against your parents for their criminal acts. Now that several years have passed since that decision, do you regret it? Why did you take such a decision?

- No, I do not regret it. At the time, with the "false memories syndrome", the trial would not have succeeded in my favour. Whether I tell the truth or not, it is my person who would have been put in the media spotlight rather than my parents; even though they have made written and verbal confessions and have been excommunicated from their church. A force in me had then warned me that it would have led to a media explosion that would have torn my own little family and me apart.

c/ Canada

- Manon and Josée

In 1995, the Canadian newspaper La Presse published an article by journalist Marie-Claude Lortie entitled: "The SQ has opened an investigation into a mysterious satanic sect in the Eastern Townships" (SQ stands for Sûreté du Québec, the Quebec national police). A publication that is still available in the archives of the www.lapresse.casite.

The article reports the testimonies of two young women, 'Manon' and 'Josée', born in a satanic sect and who came out of it anyway. At the age of 28, Manon decided to speak to Luc Grégoire, an investigator with the Sûreté du Québec's major crimes squad. The woman then described black masses, gang rapes, physical abuse and sacrifices. Marie-Claude Lortie introduces her article with these few words of Manon:

- I was born into a satanic sect. In a family where all members had to worship Satan, bring him unconditional love, do everything to obey him. I was abused from the age of three and a half, tortured, martyred and raped. I have seen animal sacrifices, but also human sacrifices...

- Human?

- Yes, humans...

Manon recounts that she underwent initiatory and traumatic rituals such as being buried alive in a coffin. She speaks of gang rapes and tortures, sacrifices during which she was forced to drink the blood and eat the flesh of the sacrificed offerings. As in many testimonies, she recounts that her family had been involved in these satanic activities for generations and generations: "It is a cult that is transmitted through blood. And it is also with their blood that the followers must sign the obligatory pact before entering any black mass, a pact by which they undertake never to say anything of what they have seen or heard during the ceremonies."

The young woman explained to the investigator that every full moon, dozens of people pile up in basements to attend rituals led by satanic priests. She talks about ceremonies that usually bring together a hundred people. The group to which she belonged often travelled long distances to attend black masses and she talks about certain ceremonies in Quebec gathering no less than 500 followers. She says she participated in a ritual in the United States where there must have been 1500 people, according to her "many people had to be there simply out of voyeurism, for sensationalism, and to enjoy the sexual orgies that took place after black masses".

The young women both claim that they have been forced into prostitution and that this is the fate of all the girls who are members of the network. The rapes took place during the ceremonies, but they were also sexually abused in their families, "Most of the atrocities were not spared to any young woman of the sect", explains Josée. It was a priest of the Brothers of the Sacred Heart in Bromptonville, Guy Roux, who helped Manon through prayer in order to "free" her from what she had experienced. The priest claims that the young woman was struggling with the demon. His psychotherapist also helped him a lot to overcome these traumatic experiences.

- Pierre Antoine Cotnareanu

Another testimony is that of the psychoanalyst Pierre Antoine Cotnareanu. He described a troubling case of one of his Canadian patients. His testimony was filmed and broadcast on the internet, here is the transcript:

- He was a person who came from a Satanist sect, what she told us was quite atrocious, I didn't think it existed near my house. She said she was part of a family that practiced a Satanist cult from generation to generation. When she was little, she was educated, hypnotized, to be a kind of priestess, an altar for ceremonies of black magic.

- Who practiced these things?
- She said that they were important people (...)
- As a therapist, have you been destabilized by this discovery?
- That's right. it was very destabilizing.
- What are the details that have destabilized you?

- The fact that it served as an altar, that there was some sexual magic around it all and that there were child sacrifices. I think that is enough to destabilise someone.

- Sacrifices of children of what age?

- Young children, very young.

- Babies?

- Yes, babies especially. It was the altar on which sacrifices were made (...) She was a person in great distress when I met her and we could detect that she had undergone hypnosis, that's why we worked to get her out of this kind of "circle"......

- Did she give any figures on the number of people?

- There had to be 15 or 20 people during the ceremonies, sometimes less. They were families, and around those families, there were other people of varying importance who gravitated.

- Was there an important genetic side to them?

- Yes, they've been like this for generations, so parents raise their children that way and so on... There is not so much tenderness in that.

- Have they ever sacrificed one of their children?

- I don't know. But already, this patient is just like a sacrifice, because to make her live this, it is rather demonic.

- How often were these rituals?

- It happened quite regularly, it started with a phone call, and then I think the person's voice made her go into a trance and after that she was available to do what she had to do.

- Can we get out of such a trauma?

- Yes, I think she got away with it. It takes a lot of work, it takes someone who knows well the mechanisms of hypnosis to be able to decode and defuse the process. I saw her some times when she was crying, she was crying. when she noticed it. when there was this clash of the different personalities who met inside her: it was quite intense. Intense enough to destabilize me and that I tell myself that there are people more qualified than me for this. It is really a special qualification this work with these victims of sects who have undergone hypnosis (editor's note: mental control).

d/France

- Véronique Liaigre

On 5 July 2001, tf1's Newscast broadcast the testimony of Véronique Liaigre, who stated in no uncertain terms that she had been raped and prostituted by her parents from the age of 5. She clearly described a Satanist Martinist sect in the Agen region that practiced sacrifices of children born of rape and undeclared or foreign children. She says she was forced to participate in blood rituals under threats. Here is the transcript of this report broadcast at a great hour listening:

- Patrick Poivre d'Arvor: Here is now a terrible file on which Alain Ammar and his team have been working for several weeks. The accusations made in her investigation by a young woman who was a minor at the time of the events are extremely serious, some of them are hard to believe, but that is her word. The names she mentions have been covered with a "beep" so as not to reach the presumption of innocence.

- Voiceover: Véronique is 20 years old, since the age of 5 she has lived hell. Raped, prostituted by her parents whom she has denounced and who are waiting to appear before the Assize Court, she has managed to escape those whom she designates as her executioners. His story is not ordinary and may even seem invented. However, if it is legitimate to doubt, what this young woman spontaneously told and repeated to us is cause for revolt. In particular when she claims, despite the threats that weigh on her, she says, to have frequented a Satanist sect, Martinists, and to have been tortured and tortured herself.

- Véronique Liaigre: We get beaten, we get objects put in the orifices, there are sometimes sacrifices of children to give thanks to Satan, there are many things like that... We kill an animal, we are poured blood on our heads and the rest in a cupola that we put on the altar.

- Reporter: So actually, your parents, like all the parents of these kids you're talking about, were selling their kids?

- VL: Exactly, since it brings in a certain percentage of money. A child under the age of 8 is worth 22,000 francs.

- J: Where do these children come from?

- VL: Children who are sacrificed are not declared, or are foreign children. Especially when I was on Agen, they were little Africans, they were black. On Jallais I saw some also,on Nanterre too, but they were little whites, French, but they were children born of rape.

- J: Children born of rape?

- VL: Yes, that had not been reported. These are deliveries that are made at the parents' homes in abominable conditions.

- J: So to the extent that they weren't declared, they were sacrificed?

- VL: That's it...

- J: Not only were you part of the sect, but you participated in these rituals.

- VL: Yes. In 1994, I had to sacrifice at gunpoint, with two of my friends, a child in Jallais. And all three of us had to assassinate him. At gunpoint, if we didn't, we would have done it. They would have done it with even more violence and they would have hurt us even more. So we had to do it.

- J: And who was threatening you with a gun?

- VL: "beep" the one who heads the gendarmerie of "beep".

- J: And these corpses, what do they do with them afterwards?

- VL: The one that impressed me the most was the one I participated in. They took him to a cellar that was in Cholet, transported in a black bag with an overturned white cross. And they had a big can, they put something in. I don't know if it was gasoline or acid or something like that, but Cécile, Sophie and I all ran away.

- J: So they actually burn the corpses.

- VL: They have to burn them yes.

- J: You think it's all a kind of network,
people who stand a little bit so as not to fall...

- VL: That's it, and then it's to protect yourself as well, because given that there are men of law who are in it, it's true that it would be a funny fuss if we learned that there were judges and all that are part of that network.

- J: Have you seen any personally?

- VL: I saw an email from "beep", from mr. "beep" but I didn't know who it was.

- J: Who said what?

- VL: It was for a transfer of funds.

- J: And you think that these people are part of the sects themselves? This elite you're talking about?

- VL: They cover them... I won't necessarily say they're part of it, but they cover them, that's for sure.

- Voiceover: Jean-Claude Disses is Véronique's lawyer in Agen. City where she was transferred from Maine-et-Loire to a home frequented by paedophiles. Initially skeptical of his client's accusations, he is now convinced that she is telling the truth.

- Jean-Claude Disses (Véronique Liaigre's lawyer): I believe her when she tells me that she was raped in her family. I believe her when she says that she was prostituted by some members of her family. I believe her when she explains that this prostitution has necessarily and necessarily passed through many adult people who have come to abuse her for money. I believe her when she says at the same time that she was photographed during these scenes and I believe her all the more because we apparently find, this is the point that must be checked, these photos on a CD-Rom in Amsterdan (editor's note: Zandvoort affair).

- Reporter: So it's her, she recognized herself and said ,'that's me.''

- JCD: That's it, that's right. She says 'it's me'', she says it in front of a police inspector and at the same time as she identifies herself, she also identifies five of her childhood friends. This means that if this is true, it is necessary that these children were subjected to pornographic scenes, that these scenes were filmed, and that these photos were sent to Amsterdam to land on a paedophile CD-ROM that was seized by the Dutch police as part of a procedure in Holland. And so it necessarily requires that there is an organization that takes photos, that broadcasts them, so there is an organization and a network!

- Voiceover: Véronique led us to one of the many places where, according to her, satanic ceremonies took place on the 21st of each month.

Véronique Liaigre (at the foot of a downtown building in front of a porte cochère): That's where I came here several times. In particular, I remember well once in 1994, when I found myself at a satanic ritual with a child murder. We went up to the second floor. There, there were rapes, we had to be 5 or 6 children, it was not a very big meeting. There was "beep", "beep", there were many people, including notables whose names I do not necessarily know.

- Reporter: And you yourself have suffered...

- VL: Yes I was there and I suffered. There was my father, my mother was not there that time.

- Voiceover: Her incredible memory also allows Véronique to remember a phone call where she hears about little Marion Wagon, who disappeared on November 14, 1996.

- Véronique Liaigre: I was at the home of one of the pedophiles, "beep", and so there the phone rang. She started screaming, she was upstairs, I was in her room downstairs. So I picked up the phone in his room and heard a man I knew, Walter, asking for more money or he was going to report everything to the police. He said himself: "Anyway, I will not go to prison, it was not me who killed him, I only housed him under your orders, and only six days. And now I want the money, I'm not going to go to jail.'' And there I heard Jean-Marc who said: "Anyway, where the 'macabres' are buried, they are not about to find them. ''

- Reporter: And you know where they're buried?

- VL: I think they are buried in Granges sur Lot in the backyard.

- J: Marion's corpse would eventually be there...

- VL: Yes, I think so.

- Voiceover: Searches have reportedly been carried out recently, to no avail. Would Véronique have panicked? In any case, her statement leaves the father of the disappeared woman incredulous.

- Reporter: When we talk about cult, you never thought about it?

- Michel Wagon: Of course it is. We have received a lot of letters, hundreds and hundreds of letters. But this is the side that we do not want to think about, on which we refuse. Now it is true that the events of the time, with the Dutroux affair, have made us. We said to ourselves, well it only happens in Belgium but in the end, it can happen in France. That's the side we don't think about.

- Voiceover: A former gendarmerie commander at the time in charge of the Marion case remembers the phone call that Véronique is talking about:

- Michel Louvet: We were not able to know where the call came from, the call came to an individual. We weren't able to reassemble the call, so we don't know who made it. Uh. It is true that I have heard that there was a young girl who had made statements, but I do not know them because I am no longer in the gendarmerie. What I mean is that I trust my former collaborators to check all the leads.

- Jean-Claude Disses: How is it that these five children raped in Angers, we find their photos in Amsterdam ten years later... That is the question! And this question, you understand that it is too serious for us to have fun not asking it!!

- Véronique Liaigre: It's very hard, it comes back in nightmares every night. Every second, when a child screams or a child cries. On the street, at any time when you see a child, you think that maybe now he would be as big as that one.

- Voice-over: Police and justice have taken Véronique's statements seriously and are working to verify them one by one as implausible as they seem. The eradication of certain paedophile and criminal networks may depend on these checks.

- Patrick Poivre d'Arvor: Extremely serious accusations, therefore, that the gendarmerie and the justice system are now working to verify.

This was a 10-minute report explicitly addressing satanic ritual abuses and the paedocriminal network that is rampant in France. A relatively long report that was broadcast at prime time in patrick Poivre d'Arvor's diary, something unthinkable today! Just like the broadcast on March 27, 2000 by France 3 of the report "Rapes of children, the end of silence?", which was followed by a debate where a certain unease was palpable on the set, and for good reason. Two children "Pierre and Marie" denounce the unthinkable.

unthinkable today! Just like the broadcast on March 27, 2000 by France 3 of the report "Rapes of children, the end of silence?", which was followed by a debate where a certain unease was palpable on the set, and for good reason. Two children "Pierre and Marie" denounce the unthinkable.

- Peter and Mary

In 2000, the report "Rape of children, the end of silence?" showed the testimony of two children (10 and 13 years old) saying that they had been brought by their father into ceremonies with men and women in gables. These children described, face down, in front of the cameras of France 3: hypnosis sessions, drugs, torture, rape and ritual murders of children. Little Marie describes the basements of a large mansion, sort of catacombs under a chic building in Paris or its region, where the abominations took place. During the debate following the report, Martine Bouillon, former deputy prosecutor of Bobigny, said that she had been aware of mass graves for children in the Paris region and that an investigation was underway! Georges

Glatz, also present on the set, will also confirm the existence of children's mass graves, by adding a layer on the reality of snuff-movies. Martine Bouillon will be transferred within 24 hours following this shocking statement. She also said on this program: "We just realized that paedophilia existed... We cannot yet understand that there is even worse than pedophilia, I would say ''simple''.'. Strangely, this documentary is not available in the archives of France 3, but it was at the time recorded on VHS, then digitized. It is now very widely distributed on the Internet. It is a reference documentary about testimonies of ritual abuse. Here are some excerpts:

- Voiceover: Of the two children, it is mainly the eldest, Marie (pseudonym) who tells. Here, she tells us about her father and the places where he would have taken them.

- Marie (drawing): There was a place in Paris, of which he was the head. He said that he was a great mage and that his name was "Bouknoubour". In this place they wore large white dresses with golden edges (here she draws a figure wearing a toga with on the bust a triangle in a circle). Then they would pray, they would rape the children, they would scare them. There were several other people who raped us, they put us to sleep with species of porridge. They would also tie us up on tables and then hit us or put needles near our eyes to make us believe that they wanted to puncture our eyes.

- Reporter: Were they really hurting you? Were they beating you?

- M: Yes, they were hitting us...

- J: What did you draw us Pierre (pseudonym)?

- Pierre (who draws while crying): ... There were monsters. It was horrible. They raped me.

- J: They raped you? What is it to rape Peter?

- P: It was touching the zizi. play with it. make of. I was 6 years old, I didn't understand yet what they were doing.

(.)

Mary (who also draws in tears): They were killing them.

- J: They were killing the children?

- M : ... oui.

- J: How do you know that?

- M: Because I saw it. They were little kids who were a little Arab or things like that.. They cut off their heads.

- J: When you saw that they were cutting off a child's head, that was the truth, it was happening in front of you or it could have been a movie?

- M: No, it was for real, because the kids were screaming. And then they would tell us that they were going to cut off our heads too, so they would put us the same on that. And then we were very scared and we thought we were dead.

- J: But why were these people doing that?

- M: I don't know,because they're mean, they're crazy! I don't know why they were doing that, they're mean! We have not nothing done, we were children (Mary is crying).

- Voiceover: As early as July 1996, at the first revelations, the mother entrusted the children to a child psychiatrist who had already dealt with similar cases. For three years, it was with drawings that Dr. Sabourin collected their testimony. Dozens of drawings, dozens of hours of listening that have forged his conviction: he believes children.

- Dr. Sabourin: Of course, I think they have experienced incredible things, very difficult for them to synthesize and stage. They both have a personal ability to draw them, which is not always the case...

- Voiceover: Mary drew a huge statue planted, she says, in the middle of the ceremonial room. Then she drew the pendulum and the wheel that would have been used for hypnosis sessions on the children, and always the disguises, large red or white capes, and crucifixes. We submitted to Dr. Sabourin the last drawing that Marie made to us.

- Dr. Sabourin: In his recent drawings, I find several themes. 4 themes that already existed, where we have a ceremony with people who are visibly disguised, with crosses on their shoulders, which we find here (showing other drawings), we have three here. and the crucifix here is a very special crucifix. She said it was a crucifix surrounded by grass. So where did she get that from?! I don't know... Is it her imagination, is it a child who is delirious? I don't believe it. That is to say, in the face of this type of extremely precise and surprising things, I tend to say that it is an element of memory that reappears. Always when it comes to a child and of course when it comes to a teenager or an adult, these memories of early trauma are in a thousand pieces. And it is with a lot of difficulty, with a lot of emotions, a lot of inner tensions and fears - these are children who are afraid, they are under terror - that they manage to deliver a small passage, a small piece of memory, which leaves everyone amazed. We say to ourselves but finally, how come they did not speak earlier? How come they can't describe this just like an adult who would describe a scenario, that's the big job of therapists and police officers (•••)

- Voiceover: It's a real organization involving many adults that these children describe; and if they are unable to indicate the place of the ceremonies, on the other hand Marie drew us a very precise plan of the building and its basements.

- Marie (describing her drawing): So we arrive by car here... We were turning at a roundabout. There was a groom who came to open the door for us. Then we would go back to a place that seemed to be a pretty chic hotel. He would pick up the keys and then we would continue down a hallway to an elevator. Then we would go down into a maze where it was cold, it was dark, and it looked like a basement. Here, there was a locker room where we went to dress with the white and red clothes, then we went here: a room where they raped the children. Here it was the part where there were mostly girls who raped boys and my little brother, and then here it was men who raped girls. Then here it was a big room, like a big cave in the shape of a cathedral or crib and there were a lot of people. There was also a very, very large statue here of an African or black god, and when he growl, people put money in large baskets that circulated. Around this statue there were ashes, with children's heads on pikes in these ashes.

- Voiceover: Children's heads at the end of spades. Heads of children that Mary tells us would have been beheaded before her eyes, and that we find in several of her drawings. To access these basements, Marie describes on the surface a building, a kind of large hotel with red carpet facing a roundabout in Paris or its region. A chic building decorated with a rounded porch (...)

- Marie (speaking of her father): Since he was also raping us at home, there was someone coming home and he was undressing. They would put their zizi in our mouths and film us, or, with my brother, they would tell us to do things.

- Reporter: And all that they were filming it?

- M: Yes they were filming... and then they would take the tapes to a place that was I think in Paris, where there were lots of books about sex and all that. and they would put the tapes there.

(•••)

- Voiceover: So are the sectarian framework and the facts described by the children credible or unimaginable as the investigating judge wrote? We put the question to Paul Ariès, a sociologist specializing in cults and child abuse, who conducted studies for the Ministry of Health. We submitted to him all the statements of Peter and Mary:

- Recording of Mary: They made prayers, they said that they were "pure women", they said that one day all the people of this planet had scattered on the earth and that now they had to gather them, the people. in fact there was a kind of god, a messenger of the gods. who came to tell them that they had to go to their planet soon or something like that.

- Paul Ariès: I would tend to say that what is told to us here is completely unimaginable, that is to say that a child cannot imagine it, a child cannot invent it. The first element is these elements of doctrine. That is to say, we are part - if we look at it from the point of view of the followers of this group - we are part of an elite that comes from another planet and that is currently on earth and that will soon be called to leave. It's basically part of the common core of all kinds of networks today. The need to kill someone to save them or to save humanity. There are also all kinds of rites where we are told at some point about these men saying that they are "pure women". So this is something that we find relatively frequently in the literature, the woman is the one who fertilizes, what we have to do here is actually get to fertilize what we call 'Homonculus', that is to say the over-man. It seems to me that we are finally at a crossroads here between two types of networks: on the one hand, saucer networks - which believe in aliens - and then on the other hand networks of sexual magic, and we know that these connections are becoming more and more established.

This "saucer" belief is also found in the case of Samir Aouchiche with the sect "Alliance Kripten", as we will see below. In chapter 2, we saw that Gnostics, in this case the sect of Phibionites (or Barbotians) practiced orgiastic ceremonies in relation to the vision that the followers have of the cosmos and the way to free themselves from it. In addition to satisfying the requirements of archones (demons), these "manners" meet the need to gather the divine seed implanted in the world, which is currently scattered in male seed and female blood.

- Mary's recording: There were people who had species of... not diving masks, but species of glasses with something on the mouth (gas masks?) ... dressed with blouses. And there was a table with cut-out children's hands on top, a child's head and then species of. I don't know if it was guts. stuff like that. And they would put these things, their hands and all that, in jars.

- Paul Ariès: These hands cut in jars, it's something that exists... So again, there are several possible interpretations. One can simply have practices of the cannibalism type, the objective being to succeed in increasing one's own power, also learning to suffer, I was going to say learn to make suffer to become more powerful.

This investigation of France 3 also makes the connection between the case of Pierre and Marie and another case of incest in the east of France with little Sylvie who also describes rapes in meetings practiced by her father and grandfather, she also speaks of a child murder. The most disturbing thing is that little Sylvie recognized in photos the progenitor-executioner of Pierre and Marie, and they also recognized in photos the progenitor-executioner of Sylvie. Just like Pierre and Marie's mother, Sylvie's mother filed a complaint, she also gave the police the recording of a telephone message left on her ex-partner's personal answering machine by one of her friends, here is the transcript whose audio is broadcast in the report:

''Hi, ''beep'' to the device, it's Saturday, 12:40, I call back because you called me several times telling me that it was urgent, we haven't had it since. What I would like to know above all. we must already prepare for the diabolical weekends and the groups we want to do. You would have to tell me how much you are going to come to. Hi.''

The court will establish a dismissal by declaring that there was no link between the two cases and it will even decide to take away from the mother the custody of Sylvie and her sister to entrust it to the father, a classic procedure of the French "justice" in cases of paedocriminality. The mother then took refuge abroad with her children to prevent them from being handed over to their executioner. This same "justice" will not prosecute the father of Peter and Mary and will therefore leave him his right of custody and no thorough investigation will be conducted to determine if the children were telling the truth, despite the extreme seriousness of the testimonies! The mother also went abroad to take refuge with her two children...

There are many similar cases in France where the mother literally has to flee the country to protect her children, who in such cases are systematically handed over to the custody of the alleged paedocriminal by the courts. The protective parent is usually harassed, overwhelmed, even imprisoned or interned, while the aggressor parent is fully protected by a well-oiled institutional system.

It is important to note here that in 2003, a survey was conducted in France by the UN rapporteur Juan Miguel Petit on paedocriminality. A report that was presented to the 59th session of the UN Commission on Human Rights. This official report recommended that an *independent body should urgently conduct an investigation into the shortcomings of justice for child* *victims of sexual abuse and those trying to protect them* **(...)** *In view of the number of cases that reveal a serious denial of justice for child victims of sexual abuse and those who try to protect them, it would be appropriate for an independent body, preferably the National Advisory Commission on Human Rights, to conduct an urgent investigation into the current situation.*

For example, it is noted on page 14 of this report: "The Special Rapporteur referred to the enormous difficulties faced by persons, in particular mothers, who file complaints against those whom they suspect of abusing their children knowing that they are exposed to possible measures for false accusations, measures which in some cases may lead to the loss of custody of their child(s). Some of these mothers use legal remedies until they can no longer afford to pay the costs of legal aid; only then do they have the choice between continuing to hand over the child to the person they believe is abusing him or her, or seeking refuge with the child abroad. It would even appear that some judges and lawyers, aware of the weaknesses of the judicial system, have informally advised some parents to do so. These parents face criminal prosecution for such acts in France and often in the country to which they are travelling."

- Deborah, Noémie and Pierre

In the early 2000s, the German channel N24 broadcast a documentary that shows the testimonies of several child victims of a paedo-Satanist network in France. The report subtitled in French is entitled "Snuff-Movies et Messes Noires en France". As usual, these children come from families that practice these atrocities from generation to generation. In front of the cameras, they recount satanic evenings with ritual crimes, cannibalism and the shooting of snuff-films. Pierre testifies to having participated from the age of 5 in black masses and having at the age of 7 been initiated to become a high priest, he then had to sacrifice a baby during a ceremony. Some of these testimonies are related to the Dutroux case, but they were never taken into account. Here are some excerpts from this documentary:

- The mother of a small victim: I have always ignored the problems of pedophilia, like most people. I think you have to experience that before you can understand what paedophilia is. Little by little, Robert began to tell us things... What was disconcerting was that Robert would tell me about parties where he went with his father and other adults dressed up in dresses and masks. What particularly appealed to me about his story was that he said, "Dad disguised himself, but I still recognized his voice." And he also mentioned animal sacrifices as well as child sacrifices. He explained many things by imitating them with gestures. He didn't literally say 'sacrifices of children', he said they bleed them and then they buried them.

- Voiceover: Like many other children, Robert mentions that there were also cameras. We found photos of Robert on zandvoort's paedo-pornographic CD-ROM. The mother clearly recognized her son in the photos. But even this is not sufficient evidence to prosecute rapists. (...)

On the sawmill road to Lake Geneva, there is a house that Deborah calls "the green house". According to her, there was more to it than just sexual abuse of children here. Deborah, who is now 15 years old, says that there were satanic rituals.

- Deborah: There was a table with candles. There were some on the table and all around and there were my attackers.

- Reporter: You say they put two of the other kids who were there on the table? What happened? Without going into details.

- D:... They cut out the child. parts of the body.

- J: What did they do that with?

- D: With an electric knife.

- J: The child was alive?

- D:... Yes.

- J: They would kill him next?

- D: No, they let him suffer. He ended up dying.

- J: They cut out a finger for example?

- D: One foot. and they raped him at the same time.
- J: They raped him and the others had to watch?
- D:... Yes.

- Voiceover: Noémie is 18 years old, she is a young woman trying to rebuild her life. A seemingly normal life, except for the fact that she will never be able to forget the horrors she experienced.

- Noémie: The main thing I am here today is obviously to cooperate with this report, but it is mainly because people need to hear about these things. So that people know that this is true, that children are raped and murdered on a daily basis. It's a reality! I have experienced it, I have seen it with my own eyes and that is why I want to convey this message. This is necessary to ensure that these things cannot happen to other children, so that children stop being raped. People need to wake up and become aware of what is going on, and stop saying that children are lumists or fabulators. This is not true, children tell the truth, but you must be willing to hear it.

- Voiceover: Noémie was initiated by her father and other criminals, men from all kinds of backgrounds, to the barbaric practices that took place in front of a camera (...) Noémie was 5 years old at the time of the first abuses, she lost her virginity at the age of 8.

- Noémie: It went very fast and brutally. They just did it for me and my cousin Camille. One day my father took me to my cousin's house, I liked to go there because I loved him very much. My uncle André was there as well as cousins Camille and Marie. And then it was done (...)

- Voiceover: Noémie's father filled her with tender words, he reassured her by telling her that touching was perfectly normal; she believed it. And then he revealed to her his great secret: a complex, an underground cellar where he kept children in cages. Noémie thus became her father's accomplice.

- Noémie: The children locked in these cages never stayed alive for long, between torture and rape, the children were finally murdered. They were all alone there, they could not escape, because they were too beaten, too raped or too drugged… or dead (…)

My father and other men had already raped the little girl. When I walked in, I was a little jealous because I knew my dad had also been involved in that. But then I was satisfied, probably because I could attend the ceremony and of all the children who belonged to this paedophile network and who were raped by these men, I was the only one who was allowed to watch the rapes. So, instead of just being abused, I could participate in the abuse. They ordered me to boil water and pour it on the child. Meanwhile, they hit her, first with a belt, then with a piece of wood. They put cigarettes on his body and cut his hair. They ordered me to cut off the little girl's clitoris. I didn't know what it was, they showed me saying "cut here!". My father told me I had to do it, and then he showed me where to cut.

- Voiceover: Noémie talks about a dozen child murders in one year. It shows the entrances to underground on a map. Justice continues to deny that such underground complexes, catacombs, exist in Saint-Victor (Ardèche).

- Jacques Berthelot: I've been to Saint-Victor, there are underground tunnels there. I was lucky enough to be able to take pictures of them. I gave these pictures to the police of Privas, to Mr Marron. He promised that he would put my testimony in the police reports. I was interviewed by the police in April 1999. But today, the case seems to have been suddenly lost. My photos and my statements to the police are nowhere to be found.

- Voiceover: Why are the alleged perpetrators not brought to justice? After several years of investigation, I come to a conclusion. Among the culprits, many are those who exercise in high positions, they have the power to cover each other and moreover there is a lot of money involved. Noémie says of the children that they are mistreated, tortured, raped and sacrificed in front of a camera. These snuff-films would sell for up to 20,000 euros each.

- Noémie: When I came back, the curtains were closed, it was dark. There were carpets on the floor, I was told to sit down, I sat at a table.

The priests were standing with candles... They wore dark red dresses,almost black. They were singing around the table. It lasted a long time. There was something that was covered with a fabric of the same color as their dresses. There was a child, my grandfather took him in his arms, my brother Pierre was next to me. My grandfather then showed my brother how to kill the child. And then obviously the child started screaming... then they said a few prayers, and we went out. After 45 minutes or an hour, I don't remember exactly, they came out. Ceremonies always end in the same way. The first black mass I saw,it was pretty much the same, there was the sacrifice of the child and at the end on the terrace there were two large plates. with flesh. meat, now I know it was human flesh.

- Reporter: Are you sure it was human flesh?

- N: Yes, I'm sure, it was part of the cult. You are part of this cult without noticing it, all you have to do is attend a ceremony and perform certain rituals. But I wasn't aware of it when it happened. Now in hindsight, I think about all these things that I was made to do on other kids during the rituals, like cutting parts of their genders. (...)

- J: The culmination of these rituals once completed is nothing but cannibalism?

- N:. hmm .
- J: Is it cannibalism?

- N: Yes.

- Voiceover: After talking to the psychologist, I realize that Noémie's father had to program her at an early age. Noémie could not bear the atrocities she endured split into different personalities. One of these personalities is a robot that follows her father mechanically and then there is the girl who plays with her dolls at home.

- The psychologist: There are multiple factors in her story that make her absolutely credible for me. The first is the fact that today, at the age of 18, she told the same story in the same way as she did at the age of 11. The second point is that it describes all the details and it never contradicts itself. It never gives two different versions of everything that has happened. In addition, she gave me the same impression as other traumatized people I met,i.e. the same detachment in the way she spoke about her traumatic experiences. It sounds paradoxical, but it's exactly what makes me think that what she's saying is the truth... She seems perfectly normal despite her past, she needs to keep that distance, otherwise she would collapse. I have no doubt whats about its history at all.

- Pierre (Noémie's brother): The windows are closed, everything is closed, the curtains drawn and the blinds lowered. The children are tied up in chairs with their hands behind their backs. They are gagged so as not to speak or shout. In this room there was my father, Christian N. the owner of the place, André D. and André L. All of them were present at the two sessions in which I was forced to participate. What happens: first the children are raped, the child is almost dead, he lies on the ground. My father takes his belt and hits the child, everywhere, on the face and on the body. Everyone goes there. They hit the child with a broomstick and then they tell me that now it's my turn. I don't want to... because it's as if I were there, without being there (editor's note: dissociation). They take me and tell me go do it! Do it! There was nothing I could do, there was no escape. I had to do it, they ordered it to me. I hit him what. 10 seconds and then I left.

- Voiceover: Pierre was not only sexually abused by his father but even worse. His paternal grandfather, a high priest of a sect, also raped him. Since the age of 5, Pierre has been programmed by his grandfather.

- Pierre: He tells me that I am the chosen one, that one day I will succeed him and that I will join a circle of important people who will be my new family. He tells me that one day I too will be a high priest and that this is a great opportunity for me. Naturally I believed in it as a small child of 5 years. Then ceremonies actually happen, they really exist and people participate in them. They explained to me rituals, masses, prayers (...)

- Pierre describes the initiation ceremony he experienced at the age of 7: The ceremony began as always with songs and prayers. We prayed on red carpets, a red carpet for each of the participants. I was always next to my grandfather, the other priests together. There was a certain chronology between the songs and the dances. We did that for about 20 minutes. Then my grandmother, who is not really part of the sect, who never participates in major ceremonies, brought a baby that she carried in her arms. She gave the baby to my godmother Collette. Collette then walked up to us and gave the baby to my grandfather. He made some signs that I didn't understand, then they passed the baby to each other from hand to hand, until it came back into my grandfather's hands. My grandfather gave the baby back to my godmother, after he pulled out a rather long knife, with symbols and pictograms engraved on the handle. Here too the knife went from hand to hand... And there I had the knife in my hand, my godfathers were holding the baby. My grandfather took my hand, we approached the newborn and we cut his throat. The baby did not make any noise, he did not even scream. He emptied himself of his blood and the blood was recovered with a cup, a kind of big cup ....

- Voiceover: The initiation of a new member always takes place according to the same ritual. Each time the new members are ordered to kill. This must make them stronger and they must swear to remain silent. We thought we had reached the abomination. But Peter described to us another ritual practiced by this sect: cannibalism.

- Pierre: My grandmother brought a large tray, there were the seven priests, there were ten of us all around the table. Afterwards we were served with a piece of meat from the baby. We had to eat it to celebrate my arrival as the new priest of the sect. There was also a glass where there was blood. We had to eat and drink, we drank the blood. My grandfather recited a prayer at the beginning and another at the end. He congratulated me by telling me that I had been very good, he flattered me by telling me that I was the best etc.

- The children of Judge Roche

In the Allègre case that took place in the Toulouse region, certain ritual abuse practices with murders were revealed in private by Judge Pierre Roche himself. Shortly before his death, haunted by the idea that he knew too much (and remorse?), the high magistrate delivered to his two children, Diane and Charles-Louis, the testimony of what he attended during surreal evenings between people of power (in the words of the son Roche). The Roche children testified in front of the camera in September 2005 about what they call "the secret part of the Allègre affair". In their testimony, we still find this extreme depravity where there seems to be no limit and where torture and murder of children seem to be something commonplace. According to the Roche children, these evenings of ritual abuse were filmed and these recordings were trafficked for a very lucrative purpose. Here are some excerpts from Charles-Louis' testimony:

Our father came to Toulouse to reveal to us the existence of a secret group, people of power from all types of backgrounds, politics, finance... He told us about people in the medical community, even academic ones. This secret group recruited a lot from the judiciary and even senior police officers were highly regarded. It would therefore be a secret group whose activities consist in conducting sorts of ceremonies in the greatest secrecy, where we combine practices as strange and uniformly disgusting as group sexuality, scarification. He evoked before us images to make you stand hair on your head. He told us about burned flesh, cigarette burns, pierced flesh. He told us that the people who were tortured, sometimes killed during these sittings - well, the people killed were never consenting - and that among the people tortured, there were sick people who demanded this kind of treatment, and then there were non-consenting people, sometimes children, who were first tortured and then put to death, all filmed and subjected to illegal video trafficking that would be exchanged under the cloak at crazy prices. He told us that the prey of this group of high society predators is recruited from the lowest strata of society in the categories of people who will never be sought. He told us about prostitutes, he told us about "clodos", I quote the term used by a magistrate, he even sometimes mentioned foreigners in an irregular situation according to what was happening to them I imagine. That is to say, people who have either severed ties with their environment or have no legal existence, people whom no one is going to go looking for or about whom any investigation will be more or less doomed to failure from the outset. And then of course, the members of this group because of the influential positions they occupy are able, in the event that certain cases threaten to come out, and well to cut in the egg by manipulating the levers that are theirs, especially since they all stand among themselves by the goatee ...

- Samir Aouchiche

In France, we also have the testimony of Samir Aouchiche, revealed in bruno Fouchereau's book entitled "The Child Sacrificed to Satan", an investigation published in 1997. That same year, the television news of France 2 devoted a small report on this case of satanic ritual abuses practiced by a sectarian group called "Alliance Kripten''. Here is the transcript of the report:

- Daniel Bilalian: Unfortunately, France is not out of the way of these problems posed by paedophile networks. A 26-year-old man, Samir, has just told his terrible story in a book that has just been published. From the age of 12 in Paris, he was the victim of a satanic sect, tortured and then raped for nearly a decade.

- Voiceover: When he had to walk down that hallway, Samir knew the horror was at the end. At the time he was only 12 years old, but for a year already he had been subjected in his flesh to the fantasies of real executioners. Repeated rapes, torture sessions, here in the heart of Paris, nothing has been spared him. And the life of this child martyr plunges a little further into delirium, to the rapes are added real sessions of torture and barbarism.

- Samir: Yes it was there. They brought me here, they tied me up, they handcuffed me and they put products on me.

- Reporter: What kind of products?

- S: According to the doctor, it was acid.

- Voiceover: Burned with acid by the leaders of the sect, a small group of about twenty people called "Kripten Alliance". Samir, like other children, became its toy. A mutilated toy on 2500 cm square of skin...

- S: They couldn't live without torturing children. Initially it was through rituals, ceremonies and after that it ended in orgies. it ended in sexual acts. And then you had to have sex with adults what.

- J: Several adults?

- S: Yes.

- J: There were several children?

- S: Yes there were several children.

- Voiceover: With his eyes fixed, Samir still bears the stigmata of his physical and moral suffering. Last Tuesday, accompanied by his friend Willy who brought him out of his ordeal, Samir filed a complaint against two members of the Kripten Alliance. This ordeal, which could have been interrupted. Between 1986 and 1988, two years after the first rapes, the Brigade for the Protection of Minors became aware of his case through cases involving other children. Samir's lawyer, Maître Jean-Paul Baduel, now has documents to prove this.

- Jean Paul Baduel: There are elements that are essential elements, these are the after-effects that my client carries on his body. There are elements that are objective elements, these are photocopies of documents that were communicated to me by my client which show that during the years 1986, 1987, or even 1988, the police authorities who were in charge of the protection of minors, or even magistrates, were fully informed of the existence of a group called "Kripten" and the conduct of its members with regard to certain minors.

On February 26, 1997, the French-language newspaper "La *Nouvelle Gazette"* published an article on this case of satanic ritual abuse. The paper was entitled *"The paedophile sect tortured children".*

In the article, Samir's lawyer, Master Baduel, states that he had become *a passive subject subject to the perversions of kripten's leaders* (**...**) *They were all subjected to abuse, some were even branded with a red iron, they were in fact satanic role-playing games with torture and rape* (**...**) *The meetings he will attend will no longer have anything to do with role-playing games, even for adults, but correspond to a ritual of sexual magic.*

Samir remained under the influence of Kripten until 1994. An "addiction" maintained according to him through hypnotics and other brainwashing. The article also contains a interview with Samir, of which here are some excerpts: *"I met someone from Kripten at theThrone Fair. We were a fifteen children, boys, all minors* (**...**) *We were forced to prostitute ourselves with adults, sometimes at ceremonies. It was like in a sect, the adults had black blades with a purple triangle. For years, the ceremonies took place in the basements of the Saint-Lazare train station. At first, it started with a little speech about extraterrestrials . There were generally as many adults as of children. And then there was some pretty sordid stuff with blood, and it always ended in sexual orgies. They said it was to "purify the soul." Some adults were masked.* (**...**) *I was taken twice to Belgium, to the charleroi and forchies-la-Marche regions. I remember a large white house with a large garden. The interior walls were lined with purple. There were several black masses which also ended with orgies. There were about twenty adults and about ten children. I remember the presence of swastikas and the rape of a little girl. I also know that children were not coming back... we were told that they had left for Uranus. "*

In the book "The Child Sacrificed to Satan" we have the description of the course of a ceremony of the sect "Kripten Alliance". These are ritual abuses on children that take place in the heart of Paris, the author adds in note that it is one of the rituals of the Golden Dawn, a secret society that has already been mentioned in chapter 2:

"A few minutes later, all three descend into the basements of the station to reach the tai-chi-chuan room (...) Again, the scenery has changed. The walls are now stretched with black cloth, the neon lights are turned off and halogens illuminate the room indirectly. A huge purple triangle is drawn on the floor, and a kind of checkerboard has been laid in its center. On each side of the triangle, two species of columns of about two meters stand like obelisks. One is black and white, the other red and green. At the back of the room, facing the entrance, on a kind of platform framed by four candelabras, two large red and gold armchairs seem to be waiting for a royal couple of operettas.

Five to six children are there, some visibly accompanied by their fathers or people close to them. A little boy of about six years old who refused to let go of his father's hand receives a monumental slap that sends him to the ground under the laughter of adults, visibly delighted by the spectacle of this half-stunned boy (...)

Samir can't believe his eyes! Adults are dressed in a singular way. Most wear large white saies, some are green and red. Others are all dressed in leather, which is the case of Ondathom, whom Samir has just seen pass in front of him. Others are shirtless but wear masks. They are about twenty in all to wear heterogeneous outfits. All are clumped near the small room adjoining the room. In this case, it seems to serve as a cloakroom, because the men and women all come out of it with a more or less bizarre outfit, even though they had entered it in city clothes. Ajouilark is there too, draped in a red saie. On his chest is drawn a huge purple triangle bordered in black and surmounted by a white cross. His face is masked, but Samir knows his eyes too well not to recognize him. Ajouilark grabs Steelarow and points him to a big metal cut. With this chalice, the young man makes the rounds of the participants, so that everyone drops a large bundle of tickets. Samir has never seen so much money (...)

A mass music sounds and the 'Emperor", followed by the commander, heads towards the stage. Meanwhile, Steerlarow gets busy and prepares on silver platters outlines of what Samir later learns to be cocaine. Ondathom grabs Samir's arm to guide him, along with the winning women and the other children, in front of the stage, where they all line up. The adults are distributed, with a kind of squeaky good mood, on the sides of the triangle, facing the columns and the platform. Prohne, who for a moment had been away, returns with his dog and attaches it to the handle of the exit door. While the trays pass through the audience, Ondathom and the Chinese unceremoniously undress the children. Some sob, others protect their faces as if they expected to be beaten from one moment to the next. Once everything seems in order, the Chinese will place himself to the right of the stage and Ondathom to his left. The conversations are going well: a man who wears a red mask declares himself sensitive to Samir's buttocks, a woman dressed in a white saie has dislodged only for the winner of Steerlarow (...)

"Let us salute the triangle symbol of our order, let us salute the swastika, eternal sun that regenerates our souls, let us salute the secret forces that, in the night, walk by our side."

"All shout ''Ave!'' as they lift their arms. Ondathom and the Chinese made the children kneel (...) During the Emperor's speech, Ondathom, with a copper ciboire in his hand, made the children drink a sip of a bitter red liquid. Everyone then quickly feels the same way. Their heads are spinning. They do not sink into unconsciousness, but they are caught, suddenly, in a kind of fog. Adults see the effects of the drug because children come on one side (...) Samir hardly hears the emperor's words anymore, he feels like he's falling, being caught in a whirlwind. Everything turns, the faces mix, and it is hardly if he hears the commander declaim:

''The bodies of these children are the bread we share. They cele our bonds and, through our sexuality finally freed from the yoke of the Judeo-Christian oppressors, we purifying ourselves, we are reintegrating the sacred plan of the celestial knights of the order of the Kripten Alliance. Sex and all the pleasures of our senses are the only law to satisfy. Serve your brethren, in the name of the prince our lord, and honor to Thule...''

The commander put his money where his mouth was and raised his saie, revealing an erect sex. He approaches a little girl of about twelve years old who has been sobbing since the beginning of the ceremony. The child barely resists Ajouilark when the latter forces him to receive him in his mouth. Already, men and women have moved aside to indulge in their enjoyment, others seize children... Samir feels palpated, turned upside down... then sinks into a kind of awake coma, a total insensitivity as if all this were not true, that his body was not his body, as if he were only an observer of this odious meeting... (editor's note: a dissociative state)

When Samir reopens his eyes, he does not recognize anything. Neither the bed, nor the bedroom, nor the strange paintings that decorate the walls. He gets up to look at the window, but neither the garden nor the nearby houses he can see are more familiar to him. Sounds of dishes reach him from the next room, and a smell of coffee soon tickles his nostrils. Samir is hungry and he suddenly realizes that he is naked. He looks for his clothes. They are there, in a pile, on a chair. While donning his clothes, Samir feels the pains of his body awaken. His belly hurts him, his sex too, his head turns... With pants on his knees, he is forced to sit down. The door then opens to a round man of about fifty years who smiles at him:

- Well my little one, it's not okay?''

Samir does not answer.

- Last night, the ceremony knocked you out and the Emperor thought you would be better at home to spend the night... I confess to you that I let myself be.''

A smile passes over the lips of the man, still dressed in a red bathrobe, which remains a silent moment in front of the child curled up on himself[275]....

e/ Germany

In October 1998, the Australian Government granted refugee status with a protection visa to a German national, a survivor of ritual abuse, who had spent 15 years in a sect engaged in child pornography and child trafficking. The Australian Refugee Review Tribunal stated at the final hearing: "It is accepted that (...) thirdly, such groups exist in Germany, and the authorities have been largely ineffective in stopping their illegal activities." The decision, taken by the Australian Government, was to give this victim refugee status in need of protection, but there is no law to rule on such cases. This Australian court even declared that "the German government is reluctant or unable to protect the victims of ritual abuse[276].

- Antje, Nicki et Lucie

In 2003, a report by Liz Wieskerstrauch entitled "Living Hell - The Fight of the Victims: Ritual Abuse in Germany" (Hollenleben - Der Kampf der Opfer: Ritualize Missbrauch in Deutschland) was broadcast by the German channel NDR Fernsehen. The documentary gives voice to several survivors of ritual abuse. Once again, the testimonies overlap and describe the horrors that are also systematically filmed by cameras. Most of the women who testify in this documentary suffer from a dissociative identity disorder. Here are some excerpts in transcription:

- Voiceover: Black masses in churches, rituals in cemeteries. Torture and murder of newborns... These are the memories of Antje who spent his childhood in a Satanist environment. It has remained silent until now because of the atrocities. Today she wants to speak out and file a complaint against the guilty parties. In his case and in many others, strangers were hidden behind masks, but his own parents also participated in the rituals.

- Antje: My mother is still alive, she was the "powerful", the Satanist (editor's note: priestess?). My father was the "messenger", the driver, the deliveryman, the carrier. My father died in 1979 and the police did not know whether it was murder or suicide. No autopsy was performed and I suspect he was murdered by my mother.

- Reporter: Did you confide in anyone?

- A : No.

- J: Why is that?

- A: I was afraid of dying. Under torture, I was "programmed" several times than if I talked about what was happening. I was going to die.

- Nicki: I was made to lie down on a table, then I was stung with needles, sometimes very deep under my nails. I felt this intense pain to the point that I thought I was going to die. At that moment, a new personality is created to take over in the face of this insurmountable pain and terror.
- Reporter: When did the abuse start?

- N: We don't remember exactly when it started, it started very early.

- Voiceover: Nicki uses the term "we" because she has a multiple personality, a diagnosis that is still controversial. As she explains, in order to be able to endure these atrocious pains, she divided into different personalities. His memories are so divided that making a connection between the atrocities and the place where it happened is very difficult. This poses a problem to provide evidence (...) Later, Nicki had the courage to file a complaint. Since then other victims have also testified, some openly, others anonymously for fear of criminals (...) Antje also filed a complaint. Like Nicki, she has a multiple personality, which complicates the details of the executioners' locations, dates, and identities. However, the prosecutor takes these testimonies seriously. To ensure that the rest of the investigation is not compromised by the authorities, his lawyer will testify anonymously in our documentary.

- Antje's lawyer: When we are dealing with a person suffering from a psychic problem such as a multiple personality (editor's note: dissociative identity disorder), then questions arise: what is fanciful, what belongs to such "identity" or personality? Does it all stick together, is it consistent? The problem is that, legally, these people are less credible than someone who has no personality disorder.

- Voiceover: In this report, there are also women who testify to satanic rituals but who do not have multiple personalities. They too are pushed by Nicki to file a complaint, but many do not dare to break the code of silence, or else they remain anonymous. They also say that they have been indoctrinated by their families to perpetuate rituals from generation to generation. In this way, each victim also becomes an accomplice... For Annegret, this is one more reason not to go to the police.

- Annegret: The problem. it's not that simple. First, we know how difficult it is to find figures, data or evidence. Secondly, we have a child, and if we start talking about these things, we are afraid that we will be taken away from our custody...

- Voiceover: The meaning of occult symbols and the practice of Satanism is uncharted territory for police and prosecutors.

- Ingolf Christiansen (German specialist on the question of occultism and Satanism, giving a lecture): At the beginning, in the first degrees, I submit to the discipline "Arcanum", "Arcanum" is a Latin name meaning "the secret". This discipline of arcane does not tolerate in any case that the organization of the group is disclosed to an external person who has not been initiated. Failure to respect this discipline results in martial punishment (editor's note: killing). More commonly, they say: if you talk to someone in any way, they will make you pay. and people believe in it.

- Voiceover: Satanic holidays, teachings, symbols. Victims will never forget them, often without really understanding them. For them, these are signs of excruciating pain, as for Lucie, who expresses herself here with an alter personality of a small child.

- Lucie (sitting on the ground in a suit): They always had strange signs, sometimes drawn on our bodies. It was like that, I think. (making the gestures on the ground with his finger).

- Reporter: Three times the number six?

- L: I don't know but it was drawn in a circle...

- J: Three times the number six intertwined. Were there other signs?

- L: Yes, stars... I do not like stars (drawing a pentagram with his finger).

(•••)

- J: What does the initiation ritual mean?

- L: Let them be us. that they us. let them teach us, they teach us. which is important to live. For example, to rejoice when you hurt someone. because it's better that way, for everyone. For example, they connected us to electric current. They locked us in a cage. Then they would let dogs go on the cage. It is done to make us obedient.

- Ingolf Christiansen: At first, it's not about worshipping Satan, the devil or Lucifer, but it's a way to feel powerful. Man wants to become God, and from there, according to the vision of satanists or occult ideology, it is a question of sourcing energy and power, and this is available in large quantities through the consumption of blood. Because blood is life and if this blood is consumed, it supplies this energy, this power. (...)

- Voiceover: Annette filed a complaint in Hamburg, against her parents, but also against herself. for he was forced to kill. She was not diagnosed with a multiple personality but she nevertheless explains that she led a double life. A quiet life in the house of a pastor in Bielefeld parallel to a violent and destructive life in a sect.

- Annette: My parents took me there when I was 4 years old. My earliest memories go back to the time I was led to kill a cat at the same age. Little by little I was more active in this group, I had to look at how other people raped children. Once I saw my parents and my brother. He was 11 or 12 years old, I was 2 years younger than him. I saw him while he was being raped, and then right after. he was like a lifeless body, moaning on the ground barely moving... It was just a body that was near me. I swired at the time that they would not be able to do such a thing to me.

- Reporter: What happened to your brother?

- A: My brother committed suicide 3 years ago. He shot himself...

- Voiceover: Antje is also looking for leads, witnesses, evidence. She is sure that behind these masked criminals, there were also her parents. She has a witness, Sandra, her sister who is 4 years younger than her. They have not seen each other for more than 10 years. They broke off contact as they did with their mother. the past being too painful. Both sisters were sold to pedophiles.

- Antje (showing a photo of her as a child): This photo is typically intended to circulate in paedophile networks. We are there positioned on all fours, on my right hand, we clearly see a gold ring, which means that I am available for everything, helpful and obedient. That I would do whatever I am asked to do.

- Voiceover: We looked for Antje's sister and found her, but she will remain anonymous. Sandra does not have a multiple personality like her older sister. She offers to help in the search for clues and evidence but also to make a statement to the police. The two women therefore testified separately and without having spoken to each other beforehand, they described in detail the same rituals. But they still don't want to see each other again.

- Reporter: Did they believe in Satan?

- Sandra: For the mother yes. She believes in this power of darkness, she thinks it gives her the power to be someone she is not. to no longer be a victim. Having the feeling of being powerful, yes, she. yes!

- Antje's lawyer: Concrete facts are similar and partially complete.

- Reporter: Does this authenticate this case?

- Lawyer: Yes, absolutely! It is well known that a story of this kind told by a single person seems implausible. When they are told by a single individual, these stories are rather considered fanciful, whereas if someone else comes to confirm and thus validate the testimony, if possible independently, then it is different.

- Voiceover: Antje particularly remembers one night when she was 9 years old. It had to be a night with a very special ritual...

- Antje: That night, it happened in a church, I'm quite sure. I have reviewed my initiation, if it can be called that. I had to receive and channel certain satanic powers. We went to the cemetery, the church was nearby. a vault was opened. the coffin as well. Inside there was a man who died recently. Everything had been cleaned and I had to enter this grave to take away his heart. The high priest took this cup, and the other members of the lodge followed him into the church. At the foot of the steps there was the symbol of the lodge, I do not know if it was drawn or just placed there. I had to lie down on the altar. Things were drawn on my body. There has been sexual abuse. At the end of the evening. I had a new status within the lodge and I suddenly became an important person.

- Sandra: They prepared and conditioned her to become a bad person. They had really managed to instil in him a sense of power and above all to make this power please him.

- Antje: I was taught the use of ritual practices. For example, the sacrifice of a child, or the privilege of being next to the high priest when a person was lying on the altar.

- Sandra: Antje had really developed this feeling of power, so she got closer and closer to the cult where she rose the ranks... This was a recognition for her, because otherwise she was nothing at all... This is how they do the initiations, systematically.

- Voiceover: Almost all the victims testify that during these rituals, films and photos "immortalize" the scenes: child pornography. It is therefore also a question of money and well-organised criminal networks. Without evidence, Lucie cannot file a complaint. She has a multiple personality. who would believe it? Today she is looking for evidence in images on the internet (...) Women from the time of the GDR also reported this kind of ritual abuse, Lucie is one of them. She searches for the places of her childhood, she searches her memories, she finds evidence.

- Lucie: At the time I didn't realize it because I didn't know anything else. Today I realize that my family had a very high standard of living. We had VCRs, several cars (.)

There are 3 rooms, these rooms have no windows, they were cold, we think they were cellars (editor's note: the "we" corresponding to the different alter personalities). The soil was uneven, dusty and dirty. The walls were also in poor condition, there were lamps on these walls. There was a room where we were waiting and another room where it was happening. We also remember another room, rather a kind of large hall with sorts of steel beams. I don't know exactly, we just know that these are steel beams. and that this hall was not very clean...

- Reporter: What happened in this hall?

- L: It's part of our memories, there was a fire in the middle, there were men, black men, so to speak. And then we saw someone who was brought in the direction of the fire, there was fear...

- J: Do you know how you got there?

- L: We got there by a carrier. There too there were no windows. Yes we got there by a carrier. Sometimes there were other children, but we never talked to each other. In those situations, that is not done.

- Voiceover: Underground rooms with a large hall. Looking for them is like looking for a needle in a haystack. The neighbors, the teachers and the inhabitants of the village cannot be questioned, Lucie's parents would suspect something and the risk for her and her sisters is too great (...) Another possible place of child murder: Wewelsburg Castle. But for the police and the prosecutor of Paderborn, the facts go back too long (...) Karine, who also has a multiple personality, testified to ritual abuses practiced within the castle of Wewelsburg...

- Karine: I didn't know that there was a castle with that name but I recognized the ornaments of this room. with the columns. This is the castle that often came back in children's nightmares. I often reproduced these ornaments in drawings when I was little. In the crypt, first there is this swastika on the ceiling. I remember that in this crypt there is a fireplace in the middle to make a fire. There is a kind of stone or altar, and it is on this altar that a child was sacrificed.

This child was mine, he was sacrificed at the age of 6 months.

(.)

The documentary Schwarze Sonne (The Black Sun of the Nazis), released in 1998, looks back at the history of this Castle in Wewelsburg. A castle that the Nazis completely restored to establish a place of worship and formation of the S.S. during the Third Reich. Here is the description that is made of the crypt cited in Karine's testimony:

''Just below the room of the ''Obergruppenführer'', is what has been called ''the crypt''. A vaulted room in the shape of a vault where it was planned to celebrate religious holidays. The atmosphere is reminiscent of these rites of destruction of the individual personality, of this second state in which man becomes an empty receptacle where edifying feelings are poured into drunkenness... Clandestine groups from the current extreme right also feel attracted to this room. At night, they sometimes even break into it to hold mystical rituals."

The director of the Wewelsburg Museum, Wulff E. Brebeck, says in this documentary: "On Christmas Eve, in 1992, we found the door broken. On the 12 podiums were white sheets decorated with runes. Of course, we never knew who did this, but we know from our contacts with a few visitors or groups of visitors that the tower is willingly considered a place where black masses or ceremonies of the same kind are held. And we are constantly trying to bribe our doormen, to get the key or to enter this Room at unusual times under all sorts of pretexts. We must take very strict protective measures to prevent this kind of thing. Once, we received a written confession from a group that they had been able to organize a baptism, a black baptism, an admission in their order. and they thanked us.''

- Claudia Fliss

The German psychotherapist Claudia Fliss specializes in trauma caused by ritual abuse. It has helped many victims over the last twenty years and has thus been able to examine many cases. In the documentary "Sexzwang" (forced sex), by the controversial Ivo Sasek, she states:

- The forms of violence are: physical violence, sexual violence, psychological violence, threats, extortion, the law of silence, the sacrifice of animals and humans in the context of rituals, the murder of infants, children and women. Sometimes it is a person who is killed, sometimes it is several people (...) Murders are always described in a similar way, there are different ways, but the testimonies systematically overlap. It always has something to do with blood, it has to do with a murderous frenzy, a drunkenness of power, it has to do with cannibalism: drinking blood and eating human flesh (...) These are cults that have existed for generations, they recruit their members from their own ranks, children are born in them. From their earliest childhood they are accustomed to these rituals, they will be trained daily to become fit for these things. It's brutal, but that's exactly how it happens.

- Have you heard of similar cases in Germany where people are killed by a satanic cult?

- Yes, that's what people almost always report. I lived and worked in different parts of Germany and I had people in therapy who did not know each other but who testified to exactly the same things. I know from colleagues working all over the country that there are victims, who do not know each other, but who report similar things. We then realize that it is something structured.

- Gaby Breitenbach

Also in Germany, the psychotherapist Gaby Breitenbach created in early 2014 a secure place to welcome and help victims of ritual abuse and mind control. The centre is called "Vielseits" and it is a first of its kind in Europe. All the women who arrive at this centre have undergone mental control. These women suffer from severe dissociative disorders and traumatic amnesia. Gaby Breitenbach was interviewed by journalist Antonia Oettingen, here are some excerpts from this interview:

"From an external point of view, these are women who apparently seem to be be behaving normally and a life that seems to be just as normal. Their daily personality is not aware of the abuses to which they are subjected at night, on weekends or during holiday periods. These traumatic experiences are compartmentalized in the different parts of the personality, so that these memories are kept away from consciousness. The person is therefore not aware of the abuses and traumas experienced (...) Victims are subjected at an early age to situations of imminent death, by electric shocks, mock drowning, all kinds of torture during which their executioners pose as "saviours". At a certain point, the psyche of the victim will act in an automatic way: it will split, this for the purpose of survival. The consequences of this systematic torture mean that victims can develop different identities. The criminals who practice these abuses hold the key to this internal system composed of a fragmented personality. They therefore have the ability to induce particular behaviors by using triggers. This can be hand signals, smells or sounds like a particular ringtone (...) Young victims of ritual abuse are most often used for paedocriminal prostitution and trained to take part in the sadistic abuse of children themselves, which is filmed and photographed. These women will be prostitutes for a large part of their lives, they can also be used for sadistic violence and sometimes for espionage. Many of the alter personalities set up by trauma do not feel pain[277].

f/ England

In the 1989 documentary Devil Worship: The Rise of Satanism, politician and member of parliament David Wilshire states:

"Satanism is present in this country just as it is present elsewhere. It is something terribly violent, it is child abuse, it is sexual abuse. This is not a joke, it must be taken very seriously, it is a problem that must be dealt with. What is most tragic about this story is the children who talk about it and to whom we say, 'Don't be stupid, this doesn't happen in our country', or: 'You make up stories, you lie'.'

In 1989, psychiatrist Joan Coleman with the help of other doctors founded the association RAINS (Ritual Abuse Information Network &

Support). She also directed the Clinic for Dissociative Studies in London. The RAINS association helps victims of ritual abuse, it also publishes studies on trauma and its consequences. In the book ''Forensic Aspects of Dissociative Identity Disorder'', Joan Coleman looks back at the case of several victims of ritual abuse she met, she reports in particular the testimonies of 'Margaret', 'Theresa' and 'Monica' (pseudonyms).

- Margaret

In 1986, Joan Coleman had been working in a psychiatric hospital for 17 years. She worked with people who had mental disorders with physical repercussions. Margaret was one of his patients, she was a woman in her forties who had been returning frequently for 4 years to make hospital stays. Coleman was worried about her health problems, she suffered from asthma as well as an ulcer and severe migraines. This was obviously related to his psychological disorders, but Coleman could not identify the cause of the problem. Margaret had a lot of visits and according to her there were no family problems. She was prescribed medication, especially when she was out on-weekends. Inevitably, one day there was an overdose accident and she was rushed back to the hospital. Shortly after this incident, she began confiding in a nurse,Eileen, about a family friend she apparently did not like at all. It was from that moment that the floodgates opened for disclosure...

Initially, she talked about what appeared to be a vast paedophile network: she described sadistic sexual abuse of children by men. According to her, some of these people were family members or acquaintances, but also well-known politicians and media figures. During this first period of disclosure, his physical symptoms have improved remarkably. She stopped vomiting and had almost no asthma or migraines. She then stopped the treatment and she seemed ready to keep talking... Coleman and the nurse then decided to contact the police, whether the statements were true or not. However, as the names of the alleged assailants are not on the police files, there has been no investigation.

remarkably attenuated. She stopped vomiting and had almost no asthma or migraines. She then stopped the treatment and she seemed ready to keep talking... Coleman and the nurse then decided to contact the police, whether the statements were true or not. However, as the names of the alleged assailants are not on the police files, there has been no investigation.

In the summer of 1987, Margaret learned that she had a terminal illness. She then wanted to go home while retracting all the revelations she had made about ritual abuse. After only a few weeks, she was back in the hospital after being found wandering on the road, totally drugged. It was then that she was committed to another section of the hospital where she must have felt safer as she began to speak and detail her first statements. She gave details of runaway children who were met at London's central station and were taken back to a hotel. There they were forcibly drugged so much so that they quickly became addicted, the aim being to abuse them sexually. Margaret then described a house where some of these children were taken to be drugged and raped as well. She explained that although she refused, she was forced to look at the abuses and was photographed at the same time to keep silent. After being raped or beaten by several men, some of these children were brought back to "the hotel", others were killed... She says that murders were always done with knives. The bodies were then dismembered and put in plastic bags to be taken to what she describes as a factory, a place where they are cremated. The murders are filmed and the recordings resold at a price of gold.

Margaret described the same pattern each time, saying that "it seemed to be a kind of ritual. She reported that the executioners wore dresses and masks. She spoke of a little Vietnamese girl who was bound on an altar and on an inverted cross. It was following these revelations that Joan Coleman began researching Satanism and ritual abuse. Margaret would later confess that her family was Satanist from generation to generation, and she never again recanted once about her testimony. Her mental state had greatly improved after she confided in herself.

Joan Coleman and her colleagues again contacted the police following the testimony of child murders, this time providing them with names, addresses with details about the alleged executioners and children, also providing the address of the "factory". But all this has led to nothing... The police then appointed a psychiatrist to speak with Margaret: the conclusion of this "expert" was to say that it was the psychiatrist, Joan Coleman, who had invented the whole story. Margaret, however, disclosed much about ritual activities, with the description of ceremonies, places, but also about the hierarchy of worship. She made a very clear distinction between the purely sadistic murders of children in London and ritual sacrifices, that is, religious ceremonies in which both men and women participated. Sacrifices were always made by the high priest on certain calendar dates. Margaret described the methods of mind control used by the sect, she described how children are drugged and hypnotized to believe in the magic of Satan. On certain ceremonial dates, Maragret was still barricading himself in his room...

Joan Coleman and Nurse Eileen saw Margaret just before her death, she assured them that everything she had said about ritual abuse was true and that she wanted everyone to know.

- Theresa

In 1989, as part of her work, Joan Coleman met a 15-year-old girl who claimed to have been abused by family members from whom she had just escaped for a year. Theresa described sectarian activities whose protocols were almost identical to what Margaret had described. She gave many details about a kind of castle to which she and other children were brought regularly. Before going there they were drugged, so she had no idea where exactly this place was. According to her, this place was run by a doctor because part of the house was used for experimental operations. In another part there were young children imprisoned in cages, they came out only for sexual abuse and torture, for experiments and finally for sacrifice.

In this case, the police mobilized and arrested five men for rape of minors and a woman for complicity and clandestine abortion. Although Theresa testified before the police, there was no valid evidence to prove the ritual activities, so this was not retained in the charges. Shortly before the trial, the police went to Theresa's school to obtain the recordings of her presence, the principal of the school then handed them notes and drawings produced by Theresa a few months earlier: one of the drawings represented the ritual sacrifice of a tramp. Theresa had put together a complete file on what she had experienced, but despite this the satanic ritual abuses were not retained for lack of evidence.

- Monica

In the late '90s, Joan Coleman received a phone call from a nurse asking her for an opinion on one of her patients. It was a 37-year-old woman named Monica, she was initially being treated for bulimia but she started talking about ritual abuse dating back to her early childhood. Joan Coleman began to meet regularly with this patient. At first, Monica was terrified of talking about the cult, but after a few weeks she began to give details about her memoirs, which made her relive the trauma when they resurfaced. She then described her traumatic memories with a child's voice, behavior and mimicry. This "child" declared that "they" had different names and different ages, sometimes she wrote with a handwriting of a 5-year-old child. Other times, she seemed totally different and even became hostile to Joan Coleman and the nurse. Little by little it was discovered that some of his personalities had remained loyal to the sect. While Monica thought she hadn't been involved in rituals since she was 15, some of her alter personalities had never stopped these activities and they had no intention of stopping... These alter personalities regularly went to the ceremonies, without the personality "Monica" having any awareness.

It was with Monica's case that Joan Coleman was first confronted with dissociative identity disorder (IDD). She learned a lot with this patient, both in terms of satanic ritual abuse and in terms of the functioning of a multiple personality system, more particularly on how to work with alter personalities who are still faithful to worship. As the amnesic barriers faded, Monica became more and more aware of her involvement in occult and sectarian activities, as well as her awareness of her other personalities. She gave names and places where the ceremonies were held. While Joan Coleman had never told her about other survivors of ritual abuse, some of the information she gave matched not only margaret's, but also details of other cases. She spoke of a "high priest" by giving her name of worship but also by giving her real name. Coleman had already heard of him, he was an important man at the national level.

One of his alter personalities was a 10-year-old girl named ''Scumbag'' (indecent translation). The alter had been created when her mother prostituted her in a back room of a pub. The money collected was intended for satanic worship. Scumbag was a heavy beer drinker, while Monica did not drink alcohol. Monica was a brave woman, she testified in a radio show in 1996, and for that she was punished... it was certainly this that led him to death shortly afterwards[278].

Joan Coleman's association, RAINS, had set up a telephone line that received many calls from therapists seeking help and advice. Their patients were talking about exactly the same satanic ritual activities. In 2014, RAINS established a list of people involved in ritual abuse in England. The list, which gives both names and places of worship, was drawn up on the basis of the testimony of a victim, but also thanks to a member of the network who decided to speak. This blacklist includes politicians, actors, journalists, police officers, doctors, entrepreneurs and churchmen. We will return in particular to the case of the "star" Jimmy Savile in the chapter on the entertainment industry.

g/ Belgium

- Case X (Dutroux case)

In Belgium, at the time of the Dutroux case, file X was filled with testimonies related to ritual abuse. It is also the X file that led to the Belgian elitist network... It is for this reason that it was quickly closed, Marc Dutroux then remained the "isolated predator" and the media all shouted in heart that the paedocriminal networks: "It does not exist!"

Judge Jean-Marc Connerotte had however conducted the investigation well, so well that the file was withdrawn when it finally ended up with the trail of a very embarrassing network with testimonies of satanic ritual abuses related to the Belgian gratin... It was then Judge Jacques Langlois who was appointed to take over the file, not appearing to be interested in these X witnesses talking about ritual abuse or in the 30 or so witnesses who died in this case... It is also he who will not deem it necessary to have the 6,000 hairs/hairs found in Marc Dutroux's cellar analyzed. In addition, it should be stressed that the Belgian authorities considered that the analysis of all these DNA traces would be too expensive... This is how the second file of the Dutroux case could be closed so easily. Former Belgian MP Laurent Louis said on his blog: "How can we accept that the BIS Dutroux file could have been closed without further action when there were thousands of genetic traces found in Marcinelle's cache to analyze. Can we accept that the argument used was the cost of these analyses when every year we spend insane amounts of money to ensure the lifestyle of our Ministers and the royal family? Aren't the search for the truth and the criminalisation of paedophiles and child killers worth all the money in the world?"

At the time, however, witnesses X clearly described satanic ritual abuses with the murder of children. In April 2009, the Wikileaks website posted a 1235-page PDF document containing the hearings and minutes of the Dutroux case! [279]], the document contains testimonies describing extreme practices such as hunting with children as game! These are alleged facts because, of course, no proper investigation has ever been carried out to verify the statements. Here are some excerpts from the document:

PV 151.044 - Hearing of witness X2 - 27/03/97 (page 1065)

Facts committed in Chimay: She went 5 or 6 times to a huge wood for hunts. She was forced to go there (...) Participated the most violent of the knokke gang whose brothers L.A Chimay she heard screaming and shooting but she does not know what, she has never seen game (...) It was around the castle of Chimay - description of the castle she already knew before. The wood is walled. It was screams from children of maybe 10 years old. She thinks there were 4 or 5 children. The screams stop sharply. She stayed with L. and at that moment the brothers L. left with 1 or 2 other people including the "gamekeeper". The participants were all from Knokke and Eindhoven (...) The cries were horrible and indescribable (...) Initially the screams were not loud, rather cries of pain then much louder screams for a few seconds and stop sharply. In Faulx, there were also screams but they did not stop. She has never seen an entire girl come back from L.L.'s. When the screams stopped L. Stopped him to silence love' and very quickly returned to the car with her.

PV 151.150 - Hearing of witness X2 - 03/04/97 (page 1066):

A hunting party in the south of the country with people on horseback - many were armed - During the hunt there is rape on X2 - She goes there with C. in Ranch or Land Rover or Cherokkee (...)
The riders arrived on horseback, we shoot but she does not know what, she did not see any game or dog. One of the riders came up to her, got off the horse and raped her. The same also raped Eva. The hunt takes place around 17.00 hours. She was also raped by a smaller one. Violence but less than in Eindhoven (blows to the face and strangulation). We strangle X2 because she screams. Eva was only hit in the face and stomach. There was another minor under the age of 15 (blonde) but she does not know if she was raped - she was with a woman.

PV 116. 022 - Hearing of witness XI - 31/10/96 (page 411) :

Murder of children in the Ardennes and Luxenbourg in hunting parties. Thatched villa. (...)

Specifies that she was taken away one day by a person who came to pick her up: a man she did not know well - she associates him with serious things: ritual. (30 years old, glasses, short curly brown hair, whiskers). He was driving in a black BMW (...) XI describes the interior of the building (aerial photo, tiles, dark brown carpet in the office...). Present, the person who brought him, Tony, the old man of the 'deascoop', and 2 other men. XI has to undress and is brought to a room. Presence of a certain pierrot the lighting designer + camera (...) The man who brought her enters with a little girl of 2 or 3 years old (blonde with straight hair). In front of XI the man in the BMW plays with the child then pulls out a knife and pushes it between the legs of the screaming child. The man in the BMW finishes the child. XI is then raped by him, Tony, and the others.

XI was 12 years old and it was the first time she had witnessed such events. She had never seen the child before.

PV 100.403 - Information (14/01/97) (page 435)

Castle of Ameroix. Letter from a retired Gd (M.)In early April 96 he hosted a Mexican priest. A Dutch friend of the priest came to pick him upThe Dutchman cited the castle of Ameroix as a place where satanic and pedophile type parties take place with sacrifice of children. The information was given to him by an American from NATO who returned to the USA. This American participated in an evening and was disgusted (...) Perhaps to put in relation with the hunting parts described by the witness X1.

PV 150.364 - Hearing of witness XI - 01/03/97 (page 478)

XI says he went 15 or 20 times to antwerpen castle between 1990-95. She witnessed 6 or 7 murders of children including Katrien De Cuyper. Description of the people who brought the children in a van (white - rusty - diesel). She can make robot portraits. The men drop off the children and leave (...) XI confirms that this is the castle seen in Gravenwezel. XI doesn't know what was done with the corpses - Tony may have been taking care of it. He always brought her to the place and brought her back only when there had been no death (...)

PV 118.452 - Hearing of witness XI - 10/12/96 (page 542)

Mr. Was killed in November 1984 in Knokke in the villa of XI's grandmother. First party: B. Brought an 8-year-old boy. Owner of the villa = man of more or less 40 years and his wife around 20 years. Description of the villa. XI killed two rabbits and a dwarf goat on the orders of B.. The partouze took place in the garage. Two dobermans and a German shepherd participated in the partouze. Description of the garage: sealed rings in the wall, walled cabinet with sado-maso equipment and cassettes of paedophilia. Participants with special costumes: leather, capes, masks. C. Was raped by T., N., B. and the owner. C. She must eat the heart of the sacrificed rabbit. Children attached to the rings in the garage. The blood of the goat is shed on C.

PV 151.829 - Hearing of witness X3 - 02/06/97 (page 1072)

(Royal family component)

Support in pink American car with white roof driven by Charly. Always luxurious houses (...) On the spot the car stopped on a lawn in front of the house surrounded by a park. Two supervisors on site: Ralf and Walter. The children were brought into a natural stone turret with wooden door. There was probably a floor to the turret. An underground started from the turret to cellars. Underground without light - earthen and sloping. In the cellars there were cells where the children were locked up waiting for their turn. There were also cells for dogs (dobermans). The corridor overlooked a performance hall. In the turret: bodies of children who died at various stages of decomposition (sometimes dismembered and/or missing pieces) and dog carcasses. Spectators: always the same but difficult to identify - about fifty. She recognized C., B. and .A. and two others whom she calls Charly and Polo. She thinks she recognized W.C. and Doctor V.E.. The Dogs were drugged to be excited. Shows = orgies, killing of children and dogs. Performance hall with strong smell of dog feces. Dogs in freedom in the garden. Gilles (12 years old) was emasculated by POLO. The other children had to drink his blood. She thinks she saw him cut out of the room for the dead. Slashed girls with razor blades (...) Hunt prepared by Charly and Polo.

In another location:

Large white house with floor and stables. Park with round basin and fountain coming out of a statue. The children were let go naked and when they were caught, they were raped. The hunt ended with torture in the theatre (...) (unsustainable details)

PV 466 - Hearing of **** - 16/01/97 (page 260)

He is very scared. He was treasurer of the Young PSC. He frequented M.D., P.S. and J.P.D. extensively. They tried to direct him to OPUS DEI which was the 'ultimate' according to them. Under the pretext of tests of initiation to opus DEI, he was brought to Black Masses with sexual acts. It mentions the presence of young girls from eastern countries (13-14 years old). In 1986, after a well-watered political meeting, he went with S. and D. to a meeting that they announced spiced up. On the spot he was drugged before being brought to a room with people masked and dressed in black 'djellabas'. Participants drank blood. He was put in the presence of a lying on an altar - she was dead (12 years old) He wanted to leave but was drugged again. He woke up the next day in his car. He left the party and made a statement to the BSR of Charleroi (...)

PV 114.039 - Hearing of witness XI - 13/01/96 (page 407)

In the house we spoke French, English, German and Dutch (...) Evening with atmosphere comparable to the New Year's party. After an hour or two, when everyone was present, went down to the cellar where the children were waiting. Description of the room: (...) A wardrobe with sado-maso objects (...) Generally from 2 to 5 children for about 10 people including couples (...) Violence against children: tied to the neck, cut with knives (...) Several children raped by V.. Photos taken (films?). A girl was cut from the vagina, a doctor who was involved in the partouze sewed her up. No more violence during school holidays. Use of drugs and medicines during the partouzes. Kill animals (rabbit, cat, chicken...) in order to make children suffer.

Letter from **** - 13/12/96 (page 261)

Sect - Orgies - Ballets roses in Holland.

Letter addressed to the Dutch Justice concerning sects in this country.

There is in HOLLAND a group of 300 people who form a sect. They organize partouzes with minors (3 years and older). Members = lawyers - lawyers - judges - police officers...

Meetings in country properties, hotels or at the home of one of the members (...) Assembly on the first Saturday after the full moon as well as on christian holiday dates or birthdays. Groups of 12 people with children. Rape and torture of children. Grand assemblies = 50 adults and 50 children - drugs, beverages, orgies, rapes, video recording of child abuse. The children of the members of the group participate in the parties. This leads to the creation of multiple personalities in children. At Christmas we simulate the sacrifice of a 1-year-old child who suffers abuse but who is replaced by a doll at the time of the real tortures. Mock burial of a 15-year-old child as punishment. We provoke multiple personalities for example by making small children believe that we introduce into them a cat that grows and becomes a panther who will watch them if they want to talk or leave the clan. These multiple personalities are maintained by psychotherapists. The multiple provoked personalities allow a continuous control even of adults by creating a certain balance. This makes all the perpetrators victims (...)

- The multiple personality of Régina Louf

In the document relating to the Dutroux case cited above, PV No. 116.231 dated November 1996 reports that XI (Régina Louf) speaks of her various personalities and the police note in her important differences in writing. Pv No. 116.232 reports that Régina Louf speaks of another personality named "Hoop" ("hope" in Flemish) who can "disappear very deeply and reappear in one go." In PV N°116.234, it is noted about Régina Louf: "She finds herself whole and understands the why of her multiple personalities. She understands that only one person could not have put up with it."

In case X of the Dutroux case, it is the testimony of Régina Louf (witness XI) that is the most complete and the best known. Since his birth, his family has conditioned him to serve as a sex slave. She herself states that it was a practice passed down from generation to generation, that her grandmother had abused her mother and so on... The abuse and extreme violence she has suffered since early childhood in this network have ended up creating in her a multiple personality, a dissociative identity disorder. This disorder was diagnosed by five therapists appointed by the Belgian justice during the study of file X of the Dutroux case.

Here is an extract from the book "Les dossiers X: Ce que la Belgique ne devait pas savoir sur l'affaire Dutroux" which clearly addresses the question of the multiple personality of the witness X1, Régina Louf:

"One of the few decisions taken during an Obelix meeting on April 25 is to hire a panel of five psychiatric experts to examine XI. The request had been made a few months earlier by Warrant Officer De Baets, but since magistrates from all over the country had been dealing with the case, everything had been proceeding a little more slowly. Each of the five experts has its own specialization. And everyone must evaluate XI and his testimony of his professional angle. The college is headed by Professor Paul Igodt, a Louvanist neuropsychiatrist, and composed for the rest of his colleagues Peter Adriaenssens and Herman Vertommen, Johan Vanderlinden, a doctor at the Kortenberg Psychiatric Hospital, and the psychiatrist Rudy Verelst. Because of his specialization, the child psychiatrist Peter Adriaenssens has a special mission to examine the children of XI, but this will never happen.

The college of experts must check XI's memory capacity and examine whether there was any question of suggestiveness on the part of the investigators during the hearings. What is thus literally written in judge Van Espen's apostille shows that he has already been briefed, at the end of April, on the rereadings that began in secret under the leadership of Commander Duterme. Until then, no one has ever commented on the conduct of the hearings, which are instead described as 'exemplary'. Only Duterme and some of his followers do not share this opinion. "I clearly felt it," says Regina Louf, "the psychiatrists knew very quickly that their work would not change anything. They started around the time de Baets was sidelined. In total, I spent more than thirty hours talking and undergoing psychological tests. Sometimes it was really ridiculous testing, but these people were trying to do their job honestly. I think they ended up in the crossfire. They were in contact with the investigators who certainly told them that I was crazy to bind. When they talked to me, there was always an atmosphere like this: we think you are fine, but we are told that... During the last interview, Vertommen advised me not to agree to be auditioned under hypnosis. He told me to think about my family and resign myself to the fact that there was not much that could be done with my testimony."

When seeking the advice of scientists, it is rare for the answer to be black or white, and most often it is gray with many changing shades. This is also the case with the eight-page report that Professor Igodt sent to Van Espen on 8 October 1997. This report indicates - just as XI did from day one - that we are dealing with a person suffering from dissociative identity disorders. Igodt even speaks, in his report, of a "borderline personality disorder". But, he adds: "Thanks to many years of therapy, the woman has nevertheless succeeded (...) to achieve an integrated mode of operation; her various personalities (alter), some of whom she can name, collaborate quite well and the woman manages to control each of these partial personalities, so that the loss of control occurs only rarely and in a limited way. A situation that could also be noticed during the anamnestic psychiatric clinical examination: apart from somewhat uncontrolled laughter, especially when it comes to the most horrible sexual abuse, the patient controls herself quite well and no dissociative changes could be observed. As already mentioned, this must be attributed in large part to the rather long period of psychotherapy that she has already completed."

With regard to the causes of these disorders, Igodt formally pleads in favour of XI: "The anamnestic psychiatric clinical examination confirms, however, the suspicion of massive sexual abuse in the past of the woman concerned. To the question of whether these abuses have occurred and have indeed been significant in intensity, it seems that the answer must be in the affirmative. These massive abuses seem to be the main etiological factor in the psychiatric syndromes observed, which is in line with the abundant results of examinations in this area."

The Igodt report can undoubtedly be regarded as one of the few objective elements of investigation which are still on the file after the summer of 1997. Igodt draws attention to the dangers of "contamination" with regard to XI's memory - "without there being any question of intentional lies" - because of her therapy, her attention to her own situation, as well as her obvious motivation to fight against sexual abuse of children. Igodt explains that the credibility of a person's memories of their youth can be measured by how they are told. If the narrative takes the form of a "fluid story" from which doubt is absent, there is a good chance that this story will be invented or "reconstituted". The more muddled the testimony seems, the more authentic it will be, he believes. Because a testimony about things you experienced during your childhood must almost sound like it were told by a child! [280]]."

In a France 3 documentary entitled *"Passed in silence: Witness XI - Régina Louf'* broadcast in 2002, psychiatrist Paul Igodt, said about The Dissociative Disorders of Regina Louf: *"During the examination of Regina Louf, it was obvious from many indications that it was a person who was seriously disturbed by prolonged sexual abuse in early childhood. But it is at the same time, and we see this very often, someone solid and intelligent, who has kept intact formidable defense and survival mechanisms. I think it can be said that the prolonged and very serious sexual abuse she suffered gave rise to the development of a multiple personality with alter-egos. Victims of rape or sexual abuse will tell you: "I was not there in this body, I was somewhere else... I dissociated myself." But this is not madness, it is not schizophrenia, nor mythomania. It is obviously the search for one's own story, one's truth, and it is a painful and groping process. "*

At the age of 11, Regina Louf's mother introduced him to a certain Tony V. and said, "From now on you belong to him, he is your owner." This individual then became his "master". He had an ambiguous relationship with her, mixing pimping with an unhealthy attachment that was said to be love between the child and his master. This is nothing more and nothing less than trauma-based mind control. It was this Tony who was in charge of Regina and it was he who "remotely guided" her in the paedocriminal network. Even after she turned 18, Tony continued to pursue her, and although she got married, he managed to manipulate her to convince her sometimes to return to participate in ritual abuse: she had not managed to get away from it completely. Regina Louf's lawyer, Patricia van der Smissen, states in the documentary "Les Dossiers X" that she thought That Tony had somehow "protected" her and that this explained the fact that she stayed in vid[281!.] Slaves under mental control are usually under the direction of one or more people who hold the codes, triggers, to control and manipulate the victim. We find the same thing in the testimony of Cathy O'Brien who "belonged" to a certain Alex Houston, who was neither her husband, nor her friend, nor her tutor... he was his "Handler", his "owner", his "exploiter", his "master", his "trainer" holding the keys to his mind and directing his life from A to Z.

In her autobiography 'Zwijgen is voor daders - De getuigenis van XI' (Silence is for the guilty, the testimony of XI) published in 1998, Régina Louf describes how her alter personalities are always the same age as when they were created during traumatic experiences. She also explains how her writing differs depending on which alter is active. In this book, she clearly describes the phenomenon of dissociation that occurs during trauma, dissociative disorders that can go as far as a personality split.

"This book began to take shape in July 1988, when for the first time I wrote down my memoirs and nightmares in a notebook. I then discovered that I had different writing styles, and each type of writing was a very distinct part of "me". It was very scary, especially since often I didn't remember what I had written. When I reread the pages, I stumbled upon memories that had been buried in me for a long time. I had never really forgotten the facts, they had simply been scattered in different personalities, each with its own traumas... In the space of six weeks, I had already written a lot of the content of the book, a book that ended with the investigators of the BOB (...)

More than ever, I discovered that I had black holes. I went to school, I had good grades, I even had several classmates, but somehow it all happened without me. It was as if someone else took over as soon as the school doors closed behind me. As if the abused 'Ginie' was put aside until Tony stood in my bed again or at the school door. The abused 'Ginie' was hardly aware of school life and family life, the other 'Ginie' did not seem to be present during the abuse, and therefore she could live 'normally' (...)

In Knokke, at my grandmother's house, the adults had realized that I was talking with the voices in my head, that I was changing my mood quickly, or even that I was sometimes speaking with another voice or accent. Although I was only 5 or 6 years old, I understood that these things were weird and that it was not allowed. So I learned to hide my inner voices, my other 'me'. After what happened to Cio, this weird feeling that I was sometimes led by these inner voices became stronger. After the initiation, I no longer resisted the voices in my head. I was happy to disappear into nothingness, only to regain consciousness when Tony was there. The pain thus seemed more bearable (...)

Tony was the only adult who realized that something was wrong with my head. It did not bother him at all, on the contrary, he cultivated it... He gave me different names: "Pietemuis", "Meisje", "Hoer", "Bo". The names slowly became a part of me. The strange thing was that if he mentioned a name, the personality that corresponded to the name was immediately called.

"Pietemuis" (little mouse) became the name of the little girl he brought home after the abuse - a frightened and nervous little girl whom he could comfort by speaking to her in a benevolent and paternal way.

"Meisje" (girl) was the name of the part of me that belonged exclusively to him. If he abused me in my bed early in the morning, for example, or if there was no one around us.

"Hoer" (whore), was the name of the part of me that worked for him.

"Bo" was the young woman who took care of him if he was drunk and needed to be watched over.

"'Now you let me take care of this,' he said when I asked him with curiosity why he gave me so many names, he added: "Papa Tony knows you better than you know yourself"... And that was unfortunately true! [282]!."

The question that can be asked is who initiated this Tony on how to cultivate and exploit Regina Louf's dissociative identity disorder? Where did he receive the teachings about these mind control techniques? Is he himself a member of an occult network, of a secret society? Was he a victim of ritual abuse in his childhood and does he himself have a split and multiple personality? Is the division of personality systematic among the victims, and consequently among the aggressors who have generally been victims themselves in these infernal networks?

One of the minutes of the Dutroux case contains a particularly interesting report of a hypnosis session practiced by Dr. Mairlot on the witness Nathalie W., heard in the investigation of the *X* files: *"On December 12, while Nathalie testifies, it takes three gendarmes and a psychologist to control and calm her. She has just started a series of auditions where she talks about extreme sexual sadism, ritual murders of babies and ceremonies that look very much like black masses. This is the time when some investigators are studying the most seriously in the world the secret satanic groups with which Dutroux and Weinstein would have had contact. On January 16, 23 and 30, 1997, Nathalie was hypnotized in the audition room by Dr. Mairlot, a specialist in the field. This does not clarify the investigation. "We mix the blood of the baby with that of the slaughtered sheep* (...). *They burn the baby and the sheep, and everyone sleeps with everyone* (...) *The monster is*

gone. They tear the baby's heart out." At the end of this session, Nathalie declares that she feels that she has attended this show from several angles at once, as if she herself were present through several personalities. "If only part of what she tells us is accurate, it is perfectly normal for it to happen like this",
*theo Vandyck tells his*colleaguesl [283]*}."*

During the hypnotic trance, Nathalie W. Reported in writing satanic ritual abuses that took place in a castle during a full moon. She describes the sacrifice of a sheep and a baby around a fire, a ceremony followed by an. The end of the minutes reports in an enigmatic way:

"When she woke up, she had the impression that there were several people attending what she described and that these people (these Nathalies) were fading in front of the other. She thinks she has disappeared a dozen times! [284]]."

If we do not know the phenomenon of personality splitting, the dissociative identity disorder (T.D.I.), it is difficult to understand what this passage of the minutes means. Indeed, here it is reported that when she woke up from the hypnotic trance, Nathalie described that several of her alter personalities emerged to succeed each other during this hypnosis session. Each of them (these Nathalie) bringing pieces of memory on this specific event. It is noted that "these people were fading in front of each other, she thinks she disappeared a dozen times". This means that a dozen alter personalities (or alternating personalities) succeeded each other during the hypnosis session, each having experienced part of the ceremony at one time or another. The memory of the event is therefore broken into several pieces, like puzzle pieces preserved by the different fragments of Nathalie's personality. It is therefore difficult for a victim to remember the entire event in detail, coherently and chronologically, unless you access the memories of each alter personality who was involved and you can thus piece together the puzzle. The survivor Carole Rutz describes very well this phenomenon of memory bursting of a traumatic moment of life in a child already divided: the little victim passes from one alter personality to another throughout the event, one personality will live the transport, the other the abuses, yet another will attend or participate in the sacrifices, etc...

In the report of France 3 *"Passed in silence: Witness XI - Régina Louf',* **Warrant Officer Patrick de Baets then in charge of file X in the Dutroux case, said about Régina Louf:** *"She had a problem to put everything on a timeline, but she gave enough elements to make a good investigation. It was actually a puzzle that was thrown on a table but that held the road and was coherent"*

A large percentage of victims of ritual abuse and mind control therefore have Dissociative Identity Disorder, formerly known as "Multiple Personality Disorder", dissociative identity disorder being the ultimate stage in the scale of dissociative states. But it is important to remember that not everyone who has developed dissociative disorders has necessarily suffered trauma as a result of ritual abuse as described in this chapter.

Chapter 5

The Fractional and Amnesic Personality

''At the level of children, small children, it's very complicated... Trauma of this nature, of sexual assault, triggers quite specific psychological effects that manufacture in the victim a kind of psychological dissociation. This means, to make simple, that his body is there but that his head is elsewhere to be able to survive the event[285].

Martine Nisse, co-founder of the Buttes-Chaumont centre

"People have a whole range of abilities to cope with upsetting experiences. Some people, especially children, are able to disappear in a world of fantasy, to dissociate oneself, to pretend that it had never happened. they are thus able to continue their lives as if nothing had happened.

tv /r

BUT

sometimes it comes back to haunt them."

Bessel van der Kolk - Trauma and Memory, 1993

"As we learn more and more about dissociation, we come to the conclusion that in individuals

highly traumatized, it is a fairly common defense process aimed at keeping oneself safe and compartmentalizing these things separately because being

far too difficult to integrate. "

Christine Courtois, auteur de "Healing the Incest Wound : Adult Survivors in Therapy"

1 - Introduction

Knowledge and understanding of dissociative disorders and more particularly dissociative identity disorder (personality)

multiple) and traumatic amnesia is an essential point when one

seeks to understand the process of trauma-based mind control.

Knowledge of these psychotrauma disorders makes it possible to grasp

that the human mind can be divided into several independent identities from one another, separated, partitioned, by amnesic walls. we can thus understand that the mind of an individual is potentially programmable like a computer with files and access codes. that Personality fracking phenomenon is the cornerstone of abuse rituals because it "unlocks" the psyche which then becomes accessible to y integrate programming.

The horror and fear experienced by a ritually abused child means that his brain will react with varying degrees of dissociation proportional to the severity and repetition of traumatic experiences. It is a mechanism of natural defense in the face of intense psychic terror and physical pain extreme. Most of the children who were abused as well during the little one childhood will be totally dissociated from the events experienced and will often be unable to consciously remember what happened. Unbundling can go as far as the break-up of the personality into multiple alters, which is the most extreme stage, the one sought by the executioners who aim to establish mental control over the victim.

2 - Dissociation

In humans, the phenomenon of dissociation manifests itself to several degrees. It can be a slight trance, a minor dissociation

of everyday life, such as when you read a book page for

realize at the end that you have learned absolutely nothing from what you have just

yet good to read. But this natural function can go up to a

heavy psychopathology called dissociative identity disorder

(T.D.I.) : the most extreme degree of dissociation resulting from severe

Trauma. The term "Dissociation" was first used in 1812, in a medical text written by Benjamin Rush,

one of the fathers of American psychiatry.

In 1889, Dr. Pierre Janet (one of the French fathers of the concept of dissociation) wrote a thesis entitled "Automatism"

mental'', in which he presents 21 cases of hysteria and neurasthenia, more than half of which are traumatic. Janet demonstrates that these

States can be treated and reduced through hypnosis. For him, it is a question of

a "dissociation of consciousness", hysteria being caused by the raw memory of the traumatic experience making band

except in a corner of consciousness. Like a foreign body, this memory

unconscious arouses archaic, inappropriate acts and daydreams, automatic, without connection with the rest of the consciousness, which it, continues

to inspire detailed and adapted thoughts and actions[286].

As early as the beginning of the twentieth century, Pierre Janet and Charles Myers described this process of dissociation as a "split of the personality". Janet, long before the neurochemical causes of this phenomenon were established, explained that it was, in a form

the system of defence of the individual and the

systems that involve the management of daily life and the survival of

the species. Myers describes this primary structural dissociation in terms of

division between ''seemingly normal personality'' (PAN) and ''emotional personality'' (PE). PE gets stuck in traumatic experience and fails to become a

a narrative of remembrance of trauma, i.e. a narrative memory. While the

PAN is associated with the avoidance of traumatic memories, detachment,

anesthesia and partial or total amnesia. These are indeed two

distinct entities. Some clinical observations indicate, by

for example, that they are associated with a different sense of self, and preliminary discoveries in experimental research on dissociative disorders of

identity (T.D.I.) suggest that they respond differently to memories of

trauma and preconsciously treated threatening stimuli[287].

Psychotrauma disorders were defined in the 80s

starting with Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder (E.S.P.T.) which manifests itself as a result of a traumatic experience and which will persist over time

with flashbacks, insomnia, nightmares, hypervigilance, *etc.* The definition of dissociative disorders subsequently arrived in the DSM-IV

(Manual diagnosis and statistics of mental disorders - USA) which they are characterized by "a sudden or progressive, transient or chronic disturbance of normally integrated functions (consciousness, memory, identity or perception of the environment". They include the five

the following disorders:

- Dissociative amnesia: characterized by an inability to evoke important personal memories,

usually traumatic or stressful.

- Dissociative fugue: characterized by a sudden and unexpected departure from the home or place of

work, with inability to remember one's past, i.e. the adoption of a

new identity, which is a confusion about personal identity.

- Dissociative identity disorder (multiple personality): characterized by the presence of at least

two distinct identities that take turns taking control of the

individual; the latter is unable to evoke personal memories.
- Depersonalization disorder: characterized by a prolonged or recurrent feeling of detachment from one's own mental functioning or body, with the appreciation of reality remaining

Intact.
- Unspecified dissociative disorder whose main characteristic is a dissociative symptom that does not respond

not to the previous criteria of specific dissociative disorders.

American clinical psychologist James Randall Noblitt has classified the types of dissociation into five categories:
- Dissociation of consciousness: Occurs during trance states. Such states vary in intensity, which may

range from a slightly foggy state to a deep state of amazement and of physical numbness.

- Memory dissociation: When the person has large portions of their memory that disappear without explanation. Dissociative amnesia is not explained by a shock to the head or by neurochemical effects (drugs, alcohol).
- Identity dissociation: When the individual suddenly experiences (consciously or unconsciously) that he or she is itself another person or an external entity. This phenomenon is the main common point between dissociative identity disorder and demonic possession.
- Dissociation of perception: Manifests itself in the modification of auditory, visual and

tactiles that can be considered hallucinations. The unbundling of perceptions may also include a distortion of the meaning of reality by the individual who undergoes it.

- Dissociation of the will: The dissociation of the will involves automatisms, behaviors automatic and cataplexy or dissociative conversion disorder (a inability to move and exercise muscle tone).

the

Book "Thanks for the Memories' by survivor Brice Taylor contains an interesting description of the phenomenon of physical and psychic dissociation. This is the testimony of a woman (Penny) who suffered repeated sexual abuse during her childhood: "Dissociation is a way to escape the intolerable. This happened as early as first trauma, it was a way to cope with physical pain unbearable but also to psychological pain. For me, it took the form of numbness and cooling of the body, and since that day, when I dissociate myself I become all numb. First of all these are my hands, then my feet, I can no longer feel them and if my eyes

R

are iermés, I then have no way of locating my limbs in space. Then it's the numbness of my face that begins, I no longer feel my lips, nor my cheeks. When I dissociate myself deeply, it takes the whole body and I feel like a piece of wood... Even worse than unbundling physical, this is what happens at the mental level when the whole body is numb. The only thing I could compare that with is the white noise from static radio, it leaves me dizzy with lost eyes in space. The thoughts that arrive pass at the speed of light without any coherence, organization or form. I am in the total confusion. This can range from a somewhat hazy state and slightly hovering to the real blank page where I see nothing and where I hear nothing (...) When I come back to myself, I don't immediately and consciously realize that I have lost hours[288]."

Dissociation is a psychological and neurological defense mechanism that manifests itself at the time of trauma. During stress severe, the cerebral amygdala will activate to produce stress hormones and thus provide the body with something to deal with the danger. These hormones produced immediately, like an alarm, are adrenaline and cortisol. In a second step, it is the frontal cortex that will manage and modulate this production of hormones, or even turn it off, depending on the degree of stress. In the

an extreme situation in which one is blocked and sequestered, such as rape or

torture, there is then a psychological astonishment, i.e.

that the cortex is paralyzed, it no longer responds. The consequence is that it will not be able to regulate the emotional response by controlling the flow

stress hormones from the amygdala on alert. The amygdala will therefore

produce adrenaline and cortisol in large quantities, in too large quantities

quantity... These two hormones have their use in preparing the body to make unusual efforts, but in too large quantities they can

represent a vital risk at the cardiovascular and neurological level (discontinuation

cardiac and epilepsy). Faced with this saturation of stress hormones,

the body has an ultimate protective function, it will break just as does an electrical circuit that is flying over. For this it will isolate

the cerebral tonsil that will no longer be able to secrete adrenaline or cortisol.

When this process of disjunction occurs, the victim then finds himself in a "second" state, in a kind of unreality... that's what

this is called unbundling. As adrenaline and cortisol are no longer

injected into the body by the tonsil, suddenly the victim does not feel

the more this strong emotion and it is as if it became foreign to the

the situation she is currently experiencing. The individual becomes as a spectator of the traumatic scene in which he is involved, he is disconnected, moreover

there may be some kind of decorporation. Some victims report

that they were no longer in their physical bodies at the time of the they clearly saw the scene from the outside (we will delve deeper into this

in the next chapter).

According to psychotraumatologist Muriel Salmona[289],this ultimate process of brain disjunction occurs when the brain secretes morphine and ketamine-like. It is this chemical cocktail that

would therefore seem to be at the origin of the natural phenomenon of dissociation during extreme trauma. This cocktail creates an emotional anesthesia but also

strong physical anesthesia. The victim then feels nothing and accesses

to a kind of parallel world with sometimes an exit out of the physical body.

It is then said that the victim passed through the Mirror of Alice in Wonderland, she went Beyond the Rainbow (in reference to the Wizard of Oz). These are the

Metaphorical images that are used by the executioners programmer MK for

represent the unbundling process. Programmers thus push the

small victims to dissociate themselves during traumas by guiding them to a

alternative reality in order to escape the terror and physical pain they inflict. Once the child is in this state completely

dissociated, the deep work of programming can begin because it is in this state that the child has his subconscious and his doors spiritual wide open. Once the child has been completely dissociated and disconnected from his body, there is a split, another alter personality is then created to "take care" of the body of the small victim. It is this alter, this personality split, that records the traumatic memory that unfolds, while the victim (the personality that disappeared during the traumatic experience) will be totally amnesic of this memory. During this disjunction, all the Usual memorization work by the hippocampus will be interrupted and the Event memory will remain stored pending, as in a "box" black'' who would have recorded all the data. This is called the traumatic memory, or traumatic amnesia. In a disorder

- r* and

identity, these "black boxes" of memories are held by the different alter personalities.

Following these painful experiences, victims will generally continue to self-treat, to self-dissociate themselves so that they can continue to live

relatively normally. That is to say, they will adopt strategies

to anesthetize this traumatic memory. The organization that has already made a

First experience of anesthesia during aggression will seek to reproduce this process. This can be done by taking alcohol or drugs that have

dissociative effects, so there can be strong addictions that are

set up in a victim." But one important thing to add is that stress can also cause these dissociative states, so it can also

create a strong addiction. When waking up from a traumatic memory, the victim relives the event and his body reproduces the disjunction with the cocktail

morphine/ketamine, which are hard drugs. So very quickly there is a

the phenomenon of tolerance and habituation that is taking place, hence the

extreme behaviour of victims who scarify themselves, who are

WPCI 1 û-n f ûf r*

ui uiem, etc.,

in order to calm down and anesthetize by raising the stress level

to cause disjunction, dissociation. They are not aware of the

process in progress, but feel the "soothing" effect of these acts

self-harm. This is no more and no less than a question of substances

chemical in the brain, a kind of ''shoot

dissociative''. Violence against others also generates this stress

which injects certain substances into the blood.

The survivor of ritual abuse and mind control Jay Parker, described how the Monarch mind control system leads to an addiction to

this endogenous chemistry secreted by the brain and which makes the victims

perpetuate their dissociative states. In the global network practicing abuse

ritual and mind control, the executioners only repeat on others what they have usually undergone themselves. It is a vicious circle, a

infernal process. Child victims will develop a strong addiction to violence against others to create these numbing states, and dissociative, they in turn will become aggressors. Just like a drug addict and the phenomenon of addiction that makes it constantly increase the doses, the executioners will have to constantly go further in horror for continue to anesthetize.

The earlier the individual has started practicing ritual abuse, the more extreme practices he will need to dissociate himself... It's perhaps one of the reasons why the blood of the victims terrorized and then sacrificed is sometimes consumed: it contains a cocktail hormones acting as drugs that will help the executioner to reach this state of disjunction, perched in extreme dissociative anesthesia. the practitioners of satanic ritual abuse seek to be disjunct, consciously or not, in order to self-treat their own traumatic memories.

The more inhumane the acts of barbarism, the more it will be

of ûm û-n f

effective. In transgenerational satanlest families, this is a real vicious circle where dissociation becomes a real way of life. It is a

process which is the automatic, natural and vital escape for these

children during ritual abuse and mind control. But these troubles

dissociatives will continue to interfere throughout the individual's life. A child dissociates easily, in the face of traumatic situations it divides

his own consciousness in several parts, often for long periods of time.

His "me" is set aside, he is buried in order to be protected. It is about safeguarding what is most precious in the world,

its divine essence, its true identity, the pearl that Satan cannot

touch. The victim will always keep somewhere in him this root

divine, his true "me". This precious seed is protected by

alter personalities who serve as a cuirass in the face of violence because they encapsulate traumatic memories.

3 - Traumatic (or dissociative) amnesia

Traumatic amnesia is intimately linked to dissociation and dissociative identity disorder. It is characterized by an inability to evoke important personal memories, usually traumatic or stressing, this disability is not explained by a poor memory. The disorder includes reversible impairment of memory, during which memories of personal experiences cannot not be expressed verbally. Nor can it be explained by the effect direct physiological of a neurological disease substance or factor or other medical factor. Traumatic amnesia manifests itself most of the time as a memory hole or a number of oversights aspects of the personal history of the individual. These memory lapses are often associated with traumatic or extremely heavy events. During a Localized amnesia, the person does not remember the events of a period accurate, usually that of the first hours after an event extremely heavy.

Traumatic amnesia, which may be complete or piecemeal, is a common phenomenon among victims of childhood sexual abuse.

This psychotraumatic consequence is unfortunately little taken into account in legislation; which means that a victim who has had a long period of amnesia with the impossibility of denouncing sexual crimes in time will not be able to file a complaint because of the limitation period that will be obsolete. However, many clinical studies have described this phenomenon, which is known since the beginning of the twentieth century and which had been described in soldiers traumatized and amnesiac following fighting. But it is in the victims of sexual violence who are found the most amnesia Traumatic. Studies have also shown that the memories found were reliable and in every way comparable with traumatic memories which had always been present in the consciousness of the individual. These memories most often reappear suddenly and in an uncontrolled way, with very precise details and with obviously a lot of emotions, distress and amazement, because the victim relives the memory as if it were taking place in the present moment.

In 1996, at a congress of psychiatry and neurology in Toulon, Jean-

Michel Darves-Bornoz explained that traumatic memories do not

are not memories like the others. Indeed, the trauma will modify

the normal mechanisms for encoding and recovering

traumatic experience. On the one hand, trauma can cause

hypermnesic phenomena (i.e. an exaltation of memory that allows access to extremely detailed autobiographical memories and

connected to the entire sensory system) as well as amnesic phenomena. In terms of psychotraumatology, hypermnesia and amnesia are therefore

paradoxically linked (this is a key point, we will come back to it in the

chapter 8). Indeed, when amnesic traumatic memories redo surface in consciousness, it is with such force that it becomes from

hypermnesia, i.e. the memories that emerge become

extremely clear, much clearer than a banal memory, assimilated by the

explicit (narrative) and conscious memory. The traumatic experience is imprinted much deeper in the victim than any other lived experience, which is why when these memories

dissociative resurface, they are particularly invasive and very

detailed because all the senses relive the scene. This question of encoding and recovering traumatic memories is important because there is a

controversy over true and false memories of sexual violence, and ritual abuse. You should know that only memories that have been encoded under a language form (explicit memory) are likely to be accessible, while non-language memory (implicit memory) is not susceptible to be accessible to consciousness. This non-verbal encoding of memory, therefore difficult to put in a narrative, chronological and autobiographical context, will not be fully aware by the victim[290].

These traumatic amnesias are the result of the dissociative mechanism triggered by the brain to protect itself from terror and extreme stress generated by violence. There is then a disjunction of the emotional circuit but also of the circuit of memory in connection with the hippocampus: an area of the brain that manages memory and tracking spatio-temporal, without it, no memory can be memorized, nor remembered, nor temporalized. As long as there is this disjunction of the circuit of memory, the hippocampus cannot do its job and this emotional memory, like the "black box of violence", is trapped out of time and consciousness... it is traumatic memory. Nowadays, it is possible to detect signs of memory impairment thanks to brain scans, indeed the tonsil complex and the hippocampus show a significantly smaller volume in people who have suffered severe Trauma.

When the dissociation ceases, the traumatic memory can finally reconnect to the consciousness and re-arise for example during an event reminiscent of violence. It then invades the psychic space of the victim making him relive the violence like a time machine. those memories that go back to consciousness are unbearable for the victim, it will therefore set up avoidance pipes to protect itself from anything that could trigger these memories again. As we have seen more high, it will also set up dissociating pipes for anesthetize and make the emotional circuit disconnect again and memory. Alcohol, drugs, risky behaviour, endangerment, but also violence against others, allow this dissociation and this disjunction by again producing extreme stress. The victim can therefore oscillate between periods of dissociation with significant memory, and periods of activation of traumatic memory where it will relive the violence.

Traumatic memory can be treated, but unfortunately professionals do not seem trained in psychotrauma and immense the majority of victims of childhood sexual abuse are abandoned and are not identified, protected, let alone treated. In many cases, victims whose traumatic memory resurfaces are not believed. he they are told that they are fantasies, psychotic hallucinations or well of "false memories" indusing[291].

To further complicate matters, trauma can cause the Broca area, the area of the left hemisphere of the brain that allows to verbally transmit an experience, to put words about the trauma experienced. Verbal communication being the means that we generally use to tell our experiences to others, the disruption of this function will be one more obstacle to the recognition of the victim[292].

In 1993, a study on traumatic amnesia was published in the Journal of Traumatic Stress. This study entitled ''Sef- reported amnesia for abuse in adults molested as children''

(Testimonies of adults reporting amnesia following sexual abuse during

childhood) was led by Dr. John Briere. In this study, a sample of 450 adult patients (420 women and 30 men) reported abuse

sexual were subjected to a questionnaire. The question of amnesia

Traumatic was as follows: "Between the moment when

are produced sexual abuse and your 18 years, was there a time when you did not

you did not remember this experience of sexual abuse?'' The results have

showed that out of a total of 450 subjects, 267 or 59.3%, replied that they

had no memory of their abuse before they were 18 years old[293].

The phenomenon of amnesia (traumatic memories) caused by dissociation during trauma is something still very much

controversial within psychiatric and judicial institutions. Why is this field of psychotraumatology, although very serious, so neglected and even discredited within the institutions guaranteeing justice, justice and the child.

security and care for victims? Yet the examples

there is no shortage of concrete dissociative amnesias, as well as research on this ionction peculiar to the brain numarn. The few testimonies that follow show us that this is something that is recurrent, but which

yet remains covered by an institutional and media leaden screed

which prevents this question of traumatic amnesia, yet so crucial

for the understanding of the paedocriminal system, does not come to be found on the

public square... In fact, it is always and again a question of the control of

information dear to our "sorcerers-controllers" and social engineering

Room.

whereas

of the French campaign "Stop déni au Déni" (2015) in support of small victims of sexual violence, a contributor

testified about sexual abuse in schools. Here's what it brings back to

about his traumatic amnesia: "It took me more than 35 years to lift the fog that fell on my eyes that day, to know, to integrate into my memory, in what year and in what year

region I was at CP. And two more years to get out of this amnesia

traumatic, to sort, disassemble, and understand the strategy punishment-rape

Used. Today, I still get lost in the corridors when I enter

in a school, I still feel the head of this man, there nearby, I hear and I still feel his breath on my face, I still feel pierced,

scratched in it, I hurt. I wish I could finally let the tears out

rapped in my throat that day, and I can't do it. Not yet[294]."

here is

also a testimony of traumatic amnesia reported by Isabelle Aubry,

founder of the International Association of Incest Victims (IIA): "It's been six months now since I remembered things that he who destroyed my life gave me

subjected. For seven, eight, nine years... I don't know... I had forgotten everything or at least buried everything at the bottom of my

memory... Now flashes have reappeared for me and I can't not think about it anymore. I remember a phrase that I cannot hear today without

memory... Now flashes have reappeared for me and I can't not think about it anymore. I remember a phrase that I cannot hear today without

think about all that. When my parents weren't there and since they weren't often there, I don't know how it started anymore, I don't know how many

time it lasted, I don't know how far he went, I don't know when it happened I just know it was when I was in elementary school... it

wanted me to massage him... I do not know anymore, I know that this massage was not

a massage only from the back... I think he was naked but I don't know

more. I miss a lot of things from those moments and I find it very hard not to know how far it went. I think I would like to know what it

really happened. At that time, I thought it was normal what I was doing, I was consenting. But now I suffer a lot from it. I myself

mutilate, I vomit, sometimes I eat a lot and sometimes not at all.

In moments of despair I start drinking, taking medicines in a whole box. This past eats away at me and I can't ignore it. I

believe that what I have become makes my friends suffer and they must be

really understanding to still manage to support me. I would like to go

see someone, a psy, I have the numbers but I can't get the

phone. I have more and more nightmares of rape, incest, suicide. My friends don't know what to keep quiet anymore. I haven't told anyone about it about my family and it seems impossible to me[295] !"

In 2013, in an article for the New Obs entitled "Raped at 5 years,she remembers it at 37 years old: with terror, the brain can disjunct", psychiatrist Muriel Salmona writes: "When in 2009, during a first session of hypnotherapy, after having relived very brutally and in a precise way - like a film - a scene of sexual violence committed by a relative of her family when she was 5 years old, Cécile B. To be worn complaint,she learned that the facts were prescribed (...) She was then 37 years. Cécile B. had lodged this appeal to challenge the validity of the prescription in respect of her, since a traumatic amnesia of 32 years had prevented her from becoming aware of the acts of rape suffered at the age of 5 and which lasted for 10 years, and that therefore she had never been able to denounce them before their recollection (...) As a specialist in psychotraumatology caring for victims of sexual violence, I can only fully understand and support it. Many of my patients are in the same case as her, they have had long periods of traumatic amnesia and have been unable to report to time sexual crimes suffered in their childhood due to delays in

prescription exceeded (sometimes by only a few days), others were

prevented for many years from denouncing them because of conduct

avoidance,or the grip and threats of the entourage, and when they are

finally ready, they can no longer file a complaint.'

In 2015, French journalist Mathilde Brasilier published an autobiographical book entitled ''There was the day, there was the night, there was incest'' in which she reports her

Traumatic amnesia. For 30 years, this woman had an amnesia that has

totally concealed the memories of her father's rapes that she had suffered during

childhood. His brother was also abused by the father and he unfortunately committed suicide in 1985 a few days after saying to his father "After what you have done to me, I have nothing more to tell you".

It was following this tragedy that Mathilde Brasilier began to question herself and to

consult a therapist... For a long time she thought she had lived a perfectly happy childhood in a privileged environment, without

have no recollection of sexual abuse. In a radio interview, she said of her father: "The relationship was difficult

because I couldn't stand to look him in the eye (...) This was one of the topics I was discussing with my mother:
"It's curious, I like Dad, but look him in the eye,

it's unbearable to me.'' But I didn't know why (...) Mathilde Brasilier said that her traumatic memories came back suddenly (...) at a moment T one after the other (...) It's like a film that suddenly unfolds[296].

On January 16, 1998, French actress and singer Marie Laforêt testified at the 20 Heures de France 2 JT about traumatic amnesia.

Indeed, at the age of 3 she was raped several times by "a neighbor", this memory was repressed for years to resurface in her forties. Here is the transcript of his

testimonial:

- Marie Laforêt: I relived exactly what had happened, the name of the gentleman, his costume, his way of doing things, everything. Everything is returned at the same time. It was impossible for me to talk about it for three days and

three nights of tears... I received this in my face, you do not

can in no way confuse it with anything else, nor with a premonition, nor

with a history of mental confusion. This is not mental confusion,

on the contrary, you are excessively precise.

- Reporter: How can you explain that your memory buried this event there for so many years?
- ML: I think it's in the same area as autism, fainting or coma. There is a painful episode, and we will decide

to put an end to it.

- Carole Damiani (Psychologist): The memory left in the unconscious has not been destroyed and sometimes it is thanks to links

associations,i.e. from memories to memories we end up getting

close to the traumatic event. This may also mean that the

no one was ready at that time to face it, whereas until then it had not

was not.
Marilyn

Van Derbur, the Miss America of 1958, daughter of millionaire Francis Van Derbur, revealed in her

autobiographies the consequences of the paternal incest she suffered during her childhood. She says that until the age of 24, she had totally

repressed the memory of his father's rapes. In her autobiography entitled "Miss America By Day", she publicly reveals: "In order to survive, I divided myself into a "child of the day", joyful and smiling, and a "child of the night" curled up on

she herself, at the mercy of my father... Until I was 24 years old, the child of the day had no awareness of the existence of the child of the night (...) During the day, there was no anger or embarrassing look between my father and me, because

that I was not aware of the traumas and terrors of the child of

at night. But the more the child of the night deteriorated, the more necessary it was

that the child of the day excels; of the ski team of the University of the

Colorado, from the Phi Beta Kappa club (editor's note: prestigious student club) to my miss America nomination, I thought I was the happiest person I had ever lived."'

It was a young pastor of his Church who sensed this heavy secret. At the age of 24, he managed to break the barricades she had set for herself.

built in his mind and that's when the memories emerged. Following this, she invested herself at a crazy pace in her
public career in order to

repress a second time all these heavy traumatic memories. At the age of

45 years, his life has changed... From the age of 45 to the age of 51, it has completely sunk, from

violent memories are again reassembled with this time pains

physical and paralysis. Her body was completely derailed, she could no longer move her arms or legs, and she was hospitalized in a

psychiatric institute. She wrote that she could never have imagined that incest could have such repercussions! Who

could believe that incest can have such effects on the body 30 years

later?

Marilyn Van Derbur therefore had a traumatic, dissociative amnesia for several years following the repeated rapes of her father. that

that she later described, from the age of 45, is a conversion disorder

(or dissociative conversion disorder), i.e. a sudden loss of its

motor functions and its sensitivity, without medical explanation. For

Marilyn Van Derbur, it was a paralysis most likely related to the sexual abuse she had experienced as a child. She also writes in her book about her father: He "worked" me night

after night. Like a delicate piece of crystal broken in concrete, my father

stripped me of my own belief system and my "me", but

also of my soul which he broke into pieces.''

The autobiography of this Miss America contains both the glorious story of Marilyn Van Derbur, a dizzying ascent to the

glory, but also an essential source of information about abuses

sexual on children with this mechanism of dissociation and compartmentalization

traumatic memories[297].

American actress and singer Laura Mackenzie also says that during her

childhood,she was regularly raped by her father, John Phillips, a

rock legend... In 2009, she read a passage from her memoirs "High on Arrival" in the television show "The Oprah Winfrey Show": "I'm

wakes up that night coming out of a blackout, realizing that he was raped by my father... I do not remember the beginning of the abuse, nor how it took

end,was it the first time? Had this happened before? I

do not know and I remain in doubt. All I can say is that

it was the first time I became aware of it. For a while I was in my body, in this horrible reality, and then I switched back into a blackout. Your father is supposed to protect you, he is supposed to protect you, not you "kiss[298]"."

Mackenzie says she was 17 or 18 when she began to remember her father's rapes. At that time, it was known by

millions of people like the child star of the sitcom "One Day at a Time". No one realized then what she was experiencing in private...

"Very early on I started compartmentalizing and repressing difficult memories. And that's the root of all experiences

difficult ones that happened afterwards."

She also said of her father: "I have no hatred against him. I understand that he is a truly tortured man, of a

somehow he passes this unhappiness through me (...) It is a kind of

Stockholm syndrome where you begin to love your aggressor. I felt a great love for my father.''

Cathy O'Brien, victim of the MK-Monarch, also describes how the memoirs traumatic and dissociative work in a small child who undergoes incest day after day: "Even though I could not understand that what my father was doing to me was something wrong, the pain and the suffocation during his abuse was so unbearable that I developed a dissociative identity disorder. This was impossible to understand, there is had no place in my mind to be able to handle such horror. I have thus compartmentalized my brain, small areas separated by barriers amnesiacs used to partition memories of abuse so that the rest of my mind can continue to function normally, as if nothing had happened arrived... When I saw my father at the table at dinner, I couldn't remember not sexual abuse. But as soon as he unbuttoned his pants, a part of me, the part of my brain that knew how to manage these norriuies abuse woke up, it was as if a neural junction opened so that the part of my mind could undergo my father again and again, according to the needs...

I certainly had a lot of experience in this "brain compartment"

who handled my father's abuse, but I did not have the full extent of

perceptions,I had a very limited perception, a very limited vision[299].

Régina Louf, The X1 witness in the Dutroux case, reported that a dissociated part of herself was never "present" during the abuses

sexual. This part of itself could therefore continue to live "normally"

without having to deal with this heavy memory of abuse in his conscience. Conversely,

the part of herself who was present and therefore raped during the abuse, Ginie, was hardly aware of the life led at school or in the family. It was as if Ginie was being sidewayed until she resurfaced again and took the

relay when the executioner was back with Regina[300].

in

an article entitled "Multiple Personality Disorder in Childhood", M.Vincent and M.R. Pickering gives the example of a woman who described her experience at the ages of 3 and 4 when she was repeatedly raped by her adoptive father. It is a description of the dissociative state with a passage in a

alternative reality, we find there the split in two "me"

different: "It had become customary for her to remain passive and wait for the change of state of consciousness that would carry her from a

heavy agony to a state of calm and even joy. She did this without even

know that she saved her skin every time, feeding two "me" to

the interior of her, each unaware of the existence of the other... Loving what is killing you is impossible. She couldn't do it. It is a

infernal dilemma in the child's mind. She therefore left herself free

to love, and left "the other" free to hater[301]..."

To correctly diagnose a dissociative identity disorder, it is the alter personalities that are first sought,

and not traumatic amnesia itself. People with post-traumatic stress disorder, borderline personality disorder or other specified dissociative disorders may also experience one-time amnesia. Dissociative amnesia is caused by traumatic events that can be traced back by flashbacks, while true amnesia in dissociative identity disorder is caused by the alternation between distinct alter personalities from each other.

other.

4 - Dissociative identity disorder (T.D.I.)

a/ Some historical cases

In 1793, Dr. Eberhardt Gmelin wrote the first detailed 87-page report on a case of "dual personality", which he described as "umgetaushte Personlichkeit" (exchange of personality) in his publication entitled "Materialien für die"

Anthropology''. The case was taken up and described in detail in 1970 by

Henri Hellenberger in ''Discovery of the Unconscious'' She was a 21-year-old woman,

from Stuttgart, who suddenly showed a new personality

speaking French much better than German while adopting a change

complete behavior. The two personalities, who each spoke a

different language, had no awareness of the other. The "French woman" systematically remembered everything she had said or done, while the "German woman" forgot her actions. Gmelin had discovered that he had the ability to easily trigger the change of

personality simply by a movement of the hands... What is reminiscent of the system

trigger codes programmed in MK slaves, as we will see in chapter 7.

In 1840, psychotherapist Antoine Despine described the case of Estelle, an 11-year-old Swiss girl who had paralysis with a

extreme sensitivity to touch. She had a second personality who could walk and play but could not stand the presence of her mother, a

reaction possibly due to a traumatic memory related to his mother. Estelle

showed a glaring difference in the behaviour of a personality at

the other. In the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries, Dr. Pierre Janet

reported a number of cases of multiple personalities in his patients: Léonie, Lucie, Rose, Marie and Marceline. Leonie had three, if not more personalities including a child alter named "Nichette" In the case of Lucie, who was also described with three personalities, there was an alter named "Adrienne" who had regularly flashbacks of a trauma dating back to his early childhood. Rose had sleepwalking states as well as an alternation between paralysis and ability to walk[302].

The first observation of a duplication of personality popularized in the general public is known as the "Lady of Mac Nish''. A famous case that will be the subject of several publications between 1816 and 1889. This young woman, her real name Mary Reynolds, presented an alternation of two personalities between the age of 19 years and 35 years. Finally one of the two personalities finally prevailed on the other. His case is mentioned in the book ''De the intelligence'' of the French philosopher and historian Hippolyte Taine, it is he who will rename Mary Reynolds the ''Lady of Mac Nish''. The girl, who lived in the United States, was by nature calm, rather reserved and melancholic and of good health. His troubles began around the age of 18 following prolonged syncope, she then began to present an alternation between two very different personalities from each other. One of them was very playful in nature and sociable, a personality with a lively and cheerful character that does not was afraid of nothing and who obeyed no one. After about ten weeks,she again had a kind of strange syncope and she woke up again with her original personality. She had no recollection of the period that had just passed but it had found the same reserved and melancholic character. The alternation between these two personalities continued. thus for years, the transition was often done at night, during his sleep. When one of the personalities disappeared, Mary Reynolds found exactly in the state in which it had "disjunct" the time before, but without any memory of what had happened in the interval. That is to say, with one personality or another, she knew nothing about her second character. If, for example, he was introduced to someone in one of these states, it no longer recognized it in the other state. It's towards the age of 35 that the sociable personality began to impose itself more often and for longer periods of time. This personality ended up to impose itself definitively until 1853, when Dame Mc Nish died at the age of 61.

Another known case of the nineteenth century is that of Félida, described by Dr. Azam who followed it from 1860 to 1890. Azam is the author of the book "Hypnotism and Double Consciousness" (1893) in which he describes the case of this young woman. In 1860, he introduced his patient to

the Society of Surgery and the Academy of Medicine, this case had an influence

considerable on the question of the phenomenon of duplication of personality.

There is now a whole library on this case. Dr. Azam has

met Félida for the first time in 1856, he then followed her during

32 years. Here's how he describes personality changes: "Almost every day, with no known cause or the influence of emotion, she is caught up in what she calls her crisis; in fact, it enters

in its second state. Having witnessed this phenomenon hundreds of times, I can describe it accurately... I am describing it now from what I have seen.

Feida is seated, some kind of sewing work on her knees; all of a sudden, without anything being able to predict it and after a

pain in the temples more violent than usual, her head falls on her chest, her hands remain inactive and descend inert along the body, she sleeps or seems to sleep, but a special sleep (...) After this time,

Feida awakens, but she is no longer in the intellectual state where she was

when she fell asleep. Everything looks different. She raises her head and, opening her eyes, greets the newcomers with a smile, her physiognomy is illuminated and breathes cheerfulness, her word is brief, and she continues, humming,

the needle work that in the previous state it had begun. It is

lifts, her gait is agile and she barely complains of the thousand pains that,

a few minutes before, made her suffer (...) His character is

completely changed: from sad she has become cheerful, for the least

reason,she emotions in sadness or joy. Indifferent to everything she was, she became sensitive to excess (...) In this life as in the other, his

Intellectual and moral faculties, although different, are

unquestionably whole: no delusions, no fakes

appreciation, no hallucination. I would even say that in this second state, in this second condition, all its faculties seem more developed

and more complete. This second life where physical pain is not done

feeling is much superior to the other; it is above all superior to the fact that

considerable that Feida remembers not only what happened during the previous bouts, but also all her normal life, while during her normal life she has no memory of what happened during her access[303].

Félida therefore has this particularity of being amnesic only in one sense, her original personality having no memory of her

second personality while this one accesses all the memories (we there will come back regarding MK-Monarch programming). Dr. Azam appoints

this phenomenon "periodic amnesia".

Little by little the second personality, the most playful, began to encroach on the first to end up imposing itself most of the time.

When her former personality reappeared at times, she

thus found itself confronted with large black holes where it had forgotten three quarters of its existence...
Feida showed in an episodic way a third personality that Azam will have seen emerge only two or three times, the husband of Feida had it

observed only about thirty times in sixteen years. This third personality

alter appeared in a state of unspeakable terror, his first words

were: "I'm afraid... I'm afraid...'', she won't

recognized no one except her husband. Was it a traumatized alter

by his memoirs? It should be noted that at that time, the link between

identity dissociation and trauma had not yet been established by

the doctors who cared for these patients.

One

of the Most Remarkable Of the French Cases is that of Louis Vivet. Between 1882 and

1889, it was studied by many scientific authors, including by

Bourru and Burot who wrote in 1895: "These facts of variation of personality are less rare than we suppose". In 1882 Camuset noted in his report on Louis Vivet: "We are tempted to believe that these cases are more numerous than one would suppose, despite the rather rare observations that one

has''. It is with Louis Vivet that the term ''personality multiple'' was used for the first time to replace "double personality". Louis Vivet had six different personalities characterized by changes in memory, changes in character, as well as changes in changes in sensitivity and behavior. With each change of personality, it was noted that his memoirs changed accordingly and that the personalities all ignored each other. Here's how Bourru and Burot describes his change of personality: "All of a sudden, the tastes of the subject have completely changed: the character, the language,physiognomy, everything is new. The subject is reserved in his outfit. He no longer likes milk; however, it is the only food he takes usually. The expression of his physiognomy has become softer, almost shy: the language is correct and polite. The patient just now if arrogant is now remarkably polite, no longer tutoie anyone and calls everyone 'Sir'. He smokes, but without passion. He has no opinion, either in politics or in religion, and these questions, it seems to say, do not concern themselves.

not an ignorant like him. he is respectful and aiscipune. The word

is much sharper than before the transfer, reading aloud is

remarkably clear, the pronunciation is quite distinct, it reads

perfectly and written quite a lot. It is no longer the same character (...) In a few minutes the transformation is complete. It's not the same character anymore:

the constitution of the body has varied with the tendencies, and feelings that

translate. It is a total transfer. The memory has changed, the subject does not

recognizes more neither the places where it is located, nor the people around it

and with whom, a few moments ago, he exchanged his ideas. A

such an unexpected and radical change was likely to amaze us and make us think (...) We have renewed this application several times in the most conditions

various and the result was consistent. The same character reappear,

always identical to itself. It was a transformation so to speak

mathematical, always the same for the same physical agent and the same point of application[304]. "

Also worth mentioning is the case of Clara Norton Fowler (under the pseudonym Miss Christine Beauchamp) whom Dr. Morton Prince, a neurologist from Boston, met in 1898 when she was 23 years old.

The use of hypnosis revealed in her the existence of four different personalities. In this case, it was reported that the girl had suffered many traumas during his childhood. Miss Beauchamp was a reserved and shy young woman while her others personalities were extroverted, capricious and angry. But the Amnesic polarities between each personality were rather complicated: one was unaware of the existence of all the others, another was aware of the existence of only one other personality, *etc.* One of his personalities has shown a total amnesia of the last six years that preceded his appearance. A peculiarity in the case of Miss Beauchamp was the use of first names for the different alter, one of the personalities chose herself to be called "Sally". Dr. Morton Prince considered Sally the most personality interesting and it is with her that he collaborated most easily. Prince was looking among the personalities who was the authentic Miss Beauchamp, the real original personality. He came to the conclusion that this original personality had in fact disintegrated to make way for several specific identities. In using hypnosis, he gradually dissolved the amnesic barriers partitioning the alter to make them merge together! [305]).

Another case was reported in 1916 by Dr. James Hyslop and Dr. Walter Prince in the Journal of the American Society for the Psychological Research. This is Doris Fischer, born in Germany in 1889. This woman has developed five distinct personalities, each has a particular name. The five alter personalities showed varied and very different characteristics from a psychological point of view.

As is usually the case, they have developed as a result of shocks

deep emotional. Behind Doris's personality, "Real Doris", were:

- "Margaret": The alter personality that was created by the first dissociative shock. An alter having a state

emotional and mental little boy of five or six years.

- "Sick Doris": This is the personality alternated following the second shock

traumatic. Sick Doris had no memory of

events or even any notion of verbal language, it did not recognize

no one and no longer knew how to use the objects of everyday life. It does not

showed no affection.

"Sleeping Margaret": this alter personality seemed to sleep all the time, she

hardly ever spoke except in a kind of foggy speech whose

understanding was difficult.

- "Sleeping Real Doris": This is the name that was given by "Margaret" to the sleepwalking personality that was created at the age of eight. She had

memoirs that "Real Doris" did not have.

"Real Doris" had no knowledge of the thoughts or actions of his secondary personalities.

She couldn't remember anything about what was going on during

periods when another alter had emerged. The alter personalities have

merged one by one during therapy sessions, so as not to
laiocpr the r~>1to

finally only to the "Real Doris".

In 1928, another case of multiple personality was reported in the book "Multiple Personality" (W. Taylor and M. Martin, 1944). The patient was a man named Sorgel who lived in Bavaria and was epileptic. It showed two organizations of conscience well distinct: a criminal personality and an honest personality. THE honest personality had practically no memory of his other life, while the criminal personality remembered both lives very well! [305]).

Here we find once again this notion of "one-way" amnesia, that is to say that a deeper alter personality accesses all the memories, while another, on the surface, remains totally unaware of "her other life"... A key point to which we will return in the chapter 7 on MK-Monarch programming.

The most publicized and therefore the best known cases of the twentieth century are those of Christine Costner Sizemore (The 3 Visages d’Eve), Shirley Ardell Mason (Sybil), Truddi Chase (When Rabbit Howls) et Billy Milligan (L’homme aux 24 personnalités).

The story of Christine Costner Sizemore was reported in a book written by her psychiatrists, Corbett Thipgen and Hervey M. Cleckly. The sweet and shy young

woman had turned to them because she suffered from terrible migraines that

seemed incurable. During his therapy, a new rebellious personality

and turbulent emerged. The first personality had no awareness of

the existence of this other alter, the turbulent, which she, had perfectly

awareness of the existence of the first. This case of multiple personality was brought to the screen by Nunaly Johnson in 1957, in a film entitled "The 3

faces of Eve". It was the actress Joanne Woodward who successively played the three personalities, Eve White, a docile and shy young woman, Eve Black, the turbulent seductress and finally Jane, a much more balanced personality, a kind of fusion of the two Eves. This film is one of the few that has not fallen into the stereotypical representation of a T.D.I.

with an alter criminal personality. The version of the 1957 film is

introduced by journalist Alistair Cooke who says: "This is a true story. You have often seen films that claimed such a

thing. This sometimes means that a certain Napoleon did exist, but that any resemblance between his real life and the film in question would be due to the

miracle. Our story is true. It is that of a nice housewife

and obliterated, who, in 1951, while living in her native Georgia, frightened her husband very much by a totally unusual conduct. There is nothing about it

rare: we all have our whims, all we repress a desire to sing

a being we admire. One writer claimed that in every fat man,

sleeps a skinny man. In this young housewife, in a frightening way, two well-marked personalities were literally struggling to impose their

will. It was a case of "multiple personality". We read this in the

books, but few psychiatrists have seen them themselves. Until the day when the Dr.

Thigpen and Cleckley of Georgia Medical College were in the presence of a

woman with one more personality than Dr. Jekyll. In 1953, they

presented this case to the American Psychiatric Association, a case that has become a classic of the psychiatric literature. So this film didn't matter about a screenwriter's imagination. Truth itself went beyond fiction. Everything you will see has happened to the one that has been baptized "Eve"

White". Much of the dialogue comes from the clinical notes of the so-called Dr. Luther."

However, the film which shows only two personalities (who end up merging) does not reflect the exact reality since

Christine Costner actually developed more than twenty different personalities,

as she would later reveal in her memoirs, published only a year ago.

after under a pseudonym.

During the 70s, the case of Sybil is certainly the one that made the most known the dissociative disorder of

the identity. Shirley Ardell Mason was a young woman of 25 years who due

of his visions, nightmares and terrible memories, went

consulted Dr. Cornelia Wilbur. It was then that six different personalities emerged during the therapy. Shirley discovered that she had been the victim of

severe humiliation and sexual abuse by her mother when she was a child. This case could have remained in the shadows as for many others, but Flora

Rheta Schreiber published in 1973 a novel based on the true story of
Shirley, a novel entitled "Syblil" which became a real bestseller. Following this huge success, a few years later in

In 1976, Daniel Petries produced a film based on the novel. A film that will carry

besides the same name, Sybil, and which was also a great success. For many therapists, this case has marked the history of

T.D.I.. There was a before and after Sybil, leading to a whole controversy

which still surrounds this mysterious personality disorder today multiple...

Truddi Chase, born in 1935, is the author of an autobiography entitled "When Rabbit Howls" (1987), his case a

also the subject of a tv movie: "Voices Whithin

The Lives of Truddi Chase", broadcast in 1990 by the American Broadcasting Company (ABC).

It was during therapy that it was discovered that Truddi was suffering from

multiple personality. She was abused from the age of 2 until her adolescence. Her stepfather abused her physically and sexually while her mother neglected her. She has always remembered sexual abuse and

abuse,but never being able to recall them in detail, this until she began therapy with Dr. Robert Phillips. Truddi

Chase has always refused to merge his many personalities,

thinking they were a cooperating team. She died in March 2010

at the age of 75.

Another historical case of multiple personality is that of Billy Milligan, born in 1955 in the United States. In 1975, Milligan was arrested for

several crimes including rape. This case was over-publicized at the time

of the trial because of the particular psychological profile of the accused... His rape trial sparked outrage when defense pleaded not guilty

because of multiple personalities. Milligan stated that it was not he who was present at the time of the assaults sexual about female students, but an alter lesbian personality. THE it was obviously very difficult for the public to believe the version of events of the rapist. The "Milligan case" has been studied for many years and reported in detail by Daniel Keyes, Milligan's biographer. Keyes devoted sixteen years of his life to collecting information, investigating and interviewing "the Professor" (Miligan's multiple alter personalities merged into a single personality) as well as the people who have been close to him. Two books came out of it: "The Minds of Billy Milligan" and "The Milligan Wars", available in French under the titles: "Billy Milligan, the man with 24 personalities" and "The a thousand and one lives of Billy Milligan".

In Keyes' biography of Milligan, it is stated that his personality split occurred when the child was constantly humiliated and beaten by his father-in-law, who was also abusing sexually from him. A total of 24 personalities have been diagnosed at Milligan. Among these alter personalities, some had tendencies criminal and destructive, this is what brought him severe trouble. By against, his other personalities showed skills and competencies extraordinary. "Arthur" was one of his alters who had learned medicine on his own and who spoke several languages, it was him who managed to connect all the alter personalities: Arthur played the role of mediator in the internal system.

Other alter personalities had a real artistic talent for the painting, each with a different style. There were also alter personalities having the age of a child, a common thing in the T.D.I.. In her biography, Milligan explains the benefits of having several personalities, including alter children: "This allows you to have a new look at the world. A completely different look that allows you to see things that another would not have seen."

In 1979, Milligan was interned at the State Hospital for the Mentally Ill in Lima, Ohio. There, he will undergo a real hell: racketeering, beatings, electroshocks, chemical straitjacket... It remained in Lima until 1983, when he returned to the hospital. psychiatric of Athens where he will progress in his therapy to reach finally to merge all his alter personalities. Here is what he says about the merger (integration, concepts that will be developed later) of his alter personalities: "I had been told that the union of all my parts would be even stronger than the sum of my individual personalities, iviais in my case it is not true, the union of my personalities is less strong."

Despite the fusion of his alter, his mental state remained very precarious and unstable due to the many years during which he suffered prison, psychiatric internments, psychological and physical attacks, death threats, but also political instrumentalization by senators, magistrates, directors of hospitals or prisons... his healing was therefore far from being fostered by a climate of security and stability. It sadistic behaviour has been reported by "carers" and everywhere seemed to reign brutality and instrumentalization around him. Daniel Keyes denounces the American prison system with its opportunism, the corruption within its own management as well as its inability to deal effectively sensitive cases like billy milligan's.

One case that is less well known because it is non-criminal and much less publicized is that of Robert Oxnam. This man has been the president for more about ten years of the Asia Society, a prestigious American cultural institution. Robert Oxnam is a specialist in Chinese culture and language, he has accompanied people like Bill Gates, Warren Buffet or George Bush during their travels in Asia. It is the author of an autobiography entitled "A Fractured Mind" in which he reveals that he suffers from a disorder dissociative identity. In 2005, the CBS News program 60 Minutes devoted a report to him! [307]] to expose this particular mental disorder.

Robert Oxnam received a very rigid education and a strong pressure was put on him for his social and professional success. sound father was a university president and his grandfather was a bishop but also

President of the World Council of Churches (WCC). Following brilliant

Studies, Oxnam was very quickly put forward in the major media and it has

quickly obtained a prestigious and elitist position. From the age of thirty, he was appointed president of the Asia Society. Robert Oxnam was on the roof of the world but inside of him there was a mixture of depression, anger and rage. On the one hand, it and

had this sparkling social and professional success, and on the other a bad being

and a permanent depression that was getting worse. In the 80s, Oxnam was followed for alcoholism and bulimia, it is also in this period

that his first marriage collapsed. Consultations with a psychiatrist

for his addiction problems and recurring memory lapses

did not improve anything at all. Sometimes he woke up with

traces of beatings and injuries on his body without having any idea what could have been the cause, or even in what context it could have been

arrive. He apparently had another life in parallel... One day, he got

found lost in the crowds of Central Station in New York, he was in a

trance state and he heard voices harassing him by telling him that he

was bad, that he was the worst person ever to live. In 1990, during a therapy session with Dr. Jeffrey Smith, Robert Oxnam is

suddenly become someone else... His psychiatrist reports that there was a

complete change, in his voice, in his attitude and in his movements.

During one session, Dr. Smith reported that Oxnam's hands were like claws, he was in terrible anger. This anger came from a little boy named "Tommy".

When Smith told Oxnam what had happened during the session,

he stated that he knew nothing about this Tommy and that he had no recollection of what had just happened in the cabinet.

of the therapist. It was then that Dr. Smith realized that he may have

case to a case of multiple personality. On the announcement of this possible

diagnosis,Robert Oxnam reacted strongly by declaring: "It's rubbish, I saw Sybil, I'm not like Sybil!"

During the course of therapy, eleven distinct alter personalities emerged independently of one another. Among them were "Tommy", an angry young boy, the "Witch", a terrifying alter or "Bobby" and "Robby". "Bob" was the dominant personality, i.e. the "host" personality:

the public façade, in this case an intellectual who works at the Asia Society. In his public life, Robert Oxnam went about his business and business, multiplying meetings with high-rankings

dignitaries like the Dalai Lama. But this public life gave no glimpse of his deep personality disorders... THE

Childhood traumas are usually at the origin of T.D.I., and Oxnam

seems to be no exception. During his therapy, an alter named "Baby" reported memoirs about childhood abuse. These were severe sexual and physical abuses, always

accompanied by these kinds of words: "You are bad, this is a

punishment! [308]]."

Did Robert Oxnam experience ritual abuse? Did he undergo an intentional personality split during childhood? Is he part of one of these families?

elitist practicing systematic mind control over his offspring? Where did the terrifying alter "Witch" come from?

Has he undergone mental programming in preparation for the future career

elitist into which it was quickly propelled? The fact remains that

his case demonstrates well how an individual can have a dissociative disorder of

identity while conducting business to a high post while maintaining a completely normal public façade. Is this what Fritz Springmeier refers to when he talks about slaves under mental control that are completely undetectable, to describe these deliberately split and programmed individuals?

b/ Definition of T.D.I.

Over the past thirty years, the assessment and treatment of dissociative disorders has been improved by better clinical identification,

by numerous publications of research and academic work as well as

than by specialized instruments. International publications from clinicians and researchers have appeared in many countries.

concern clinical case studies, psychophysiology, neurobiology, neuroimaging, *etc.*
All these publications confirm the existence of the T.D.I. and therefore give it a validity comparable to other diagnoses

well-established psychiatrics. A 2001 study entitled "An examination of the diagnostic validity of dissociative identity disorder" by David H. Gleaves, Mary C. May and Etzel Cardena clearly demonstrates that this psychiatric disorder is at

take it very seriously! [309]).

The Dissociative Disorder of Identity has had many names throughout history: "double existence", "double

personality ", "dual consciousness", "personality state", "personality transfer", "dual personality", "plural personality",

"dissociated personality" (DSM-I, 1952), "multiple personality", "divided personality", "alternating identity" and "disorder of the

personnalité multiple" (DSM-IV, 1980).

It is a complex and chronic post-traumatic dissociative disorder that develops, in most cases, as a result of sexual abuse

and/or severe and repeated physical abuse in early childhood.

It is a disruption of the functions of identity, memory or

consciousness. The alteration may be sudden or progressive, transient or

chronic. The identity, or habitual personality of the person is then

forgotten and a new personality is required (an alter). This is often

accompanied by a memory disorder with important events only cannot be remembered (DSM III, 1987). Dr. Richard Kluft defines it this way

an alter: "It works both as a

receiver,processor, storage center for perceptions, experiences and their elaboration in connection with the events and thoughts of the past

and/or the present and even the future. He has a sense of his own identity and ideation as well as an ability to initiate thought processes and

and/or the present and even the future. He has a sense of his own identity and ideation as well as an ability to initiate thought processes and

of actions."

Most patients with an I.D.T. will also suffer from various mental disorders such as chronic depression, stress

post-traumatic, anxiety, strong addictions, disorders

eating, narcissistic disorders and somatization. They will be able to

be diagnosed with borderline personality disorder, schizophrenia, or bipolar or psychotic disorder if dissociation and presence of personalities

alter was not detected or even searched. These misdiagnosis

occur especially if the evaluation interview does not contain questions

relating to dissociation and trauma or that it focuses solely on the most apparent comorbidity problems (i.e. disorders

associates cited above).

The Manual on Diagnosis and Statistics of Mental Disorders, DSM-IV (2000), defines the following criteria for Dissociative Disorder of Identity:

A. Presence of two (or more) identities or personality states - each with its relatively permanent mode of perception,

relationship, of thought on the environment and on oneself.

B. At least two of these identities or personality states take control - on a recurring basis - of the person's behavior.

C. Inability to remember very personal information: an important oversight that must be distinguished from what is commonly forgotten.

D. The disturbance is not due to the direct physiological effects of a substance (drug intoxication or alcohol) or to a problem

general medical (for example complex partial epilepsies). note:

in children, symptoms are not attributable to companions

imaginary or other whimsical games.

The individual is unable to remember certain important personal information and he shows too great memory gaps

and profound so that it is a simple oversight. Many patients get

also complain of having severe migraines. This disorder can lead to a dissociative runaway, which manifests itself as a sudden and unexpected departure from home or workplace, accompanied by an inability to remember one's past. There is then confusion about identity personal or the adoption of a new identity (partial or complete).

In his book "Discovery of the Unconscious", Henri F. Ellenberger established from different cases

the various aspects that could be presented by

these fractional personalities:

1 : Simultaneous multiple personalities.

2 : Successive multiple personalities: a/ mutually conscious of each other.

b/ mutually amnesic.

c/ amnesiac in one direction only.

Each personality lives with his personal and individual history, his own memories, his own character and they may even each have a different name. These personalities can also

know and interact with each other within an inner world

complex. It is an internal system where alter can coexist peacefully but more or less severe conflicts can also divide them. In the

in most cases, there is a dominant personality, called the "personality

first" or "host personality", which is surrounded by a series secondary personalities usually organized hierarchically.

The two largest case studies on this topic are those of Dr. Frank Putnam: "The clinical phenomenology of multiple personality disorder : Review of 100 recent cases” (Journal of clinical Psychiatry 47 - 1986) et celle du Dr. Colin Ross who studied 236 cases.

When asked what they think they are, they answer: a child (86%), an assistant or helper (84%), a demon (29%), a person of the opposite sex (63%) or they cite another person (alive) (28%) or a family death (21%[31°1).

German therapists Angelika Vogler and Imke Deister listed the types of alter personalities frequently found in patients suffering from a T.DIJ311!:- the Host/Hostess: The first function of the host or hostess is to ensure the right operation of the multiple system in everyday life. Its age corresponds to usually at the physical age of the body and its gender identity corresponds to the sex of the body. Generally, the hostess knows very little or even ignores the existence of other personalities in the system and it has large memory holes. The hostess usually passes for someone from very reliable but his basic temperament is often depressive. Like us let's see it in chapter 7 on Monarch programming, these are these personalities "Hosts" who serve as a façade personality, a personality public, among MK slaves.

- The Observer: Practically in every system there is at least one observer who monitors everything that happens and who does not have so no memory hole. This personality reacts rather in a way rational and does not show feelings since she needs to keep a great distance from the inner and outer world in order to ensure its role. It is for this reason that the observer does not emerge in the foreground (does not take control of the body) but he/she can take contact with different alters of the system.

- The Protector: The protective personalities of a system emerge and take control of the body as soon as an alter or the system is feel threatened by a certain situation. These protective personalities can be very aggressive and it is important to understand and value their protective function.

- Personalities identifying with executioners: These are the personalities who remain faithful to the sect. These personalities identify with their executioners and values.

They often have the function of punishing other alter personalities (by example by self-harm) who wish to break contact with the sect or who would like for example to reveal information about it during a therapy session. If the multiple person is still in contact with the sect, these alter personalities can transmit to them the content of the therapy session without the other personalities of the system noticing.

- "Captive" children and adolescents: In practically every multiple system there are children. They remained captive for a certain period of time. There are children who keep a certain age for a long time while others are maturing. It is also possible that an alter-child who has kept the same age for a long time begins to age afterwards.

An amazing feature of the T.D.I. is that in the same individual, alter personalities can show remarkable physiological differences in visual acuity, in the response to medications and psychotropic drugs, in allergies, in heart rate, blood pressure arterial, muscle tension, immune function but also in electro-encephalographic tracing. Physiological differences irrational since these alter personalities share the same body physics.

Already in 1887, Pierre Janet, had demonstrated that some individuals could develop several psychic centers, each of which had its own own peculiarities and activities. He had already named these dissociated centres

"Personalities". Janet worked with what was called at the time

"hysterical", women whose different personalities coexisted and operated at a subconscious level, taking only occasionally the

control of normal consciousness during hypnosis or writing sessions

automatic. Janet had discovered that personalities suoconscientes ae ces

"hysterical" had been created in response to a traumatic event that had occurred fixed in the subconscious to become the seed of new personalities. With this understanding, Janet's therapeutic system finally became effective in understanding and treating this disorder in which a variety of personalities emerged spontaneously to interact with the outside world. at from there, the Dissociation/Trauma model was established in psychotherapy and it began to appear in the multiple personality case descriptions! [312]).

In 1993, during his research on multiple personality disorder, Dr. Adam Crabtree wrote: "The recognition of the phenomenon of dissociation used to treat a traumatic episode by the creation of several psychic centers, leads to effective psychotherapy of the disorder of multiple personality. The etiological role of child abuse has not been recognized at all until our modern age. But the evidence Statistics of crimes on children of the late nineteenth century new offer a fruitful path of research. A review of historical cases raises questions about the equivocity of the phenomenon of multiple personality, it also reveals data that have not yet been fully recognized by clinicians Modern! [313]]."

T.D.I. develops during childhood. As we have seen, the process of dissociation is a natural protection mechanism against a psychologically insurmountable situation. Just as a circuit breaker avoids a short circuit, this human function makes it possible to survive severe and repetitive traumas, this in order to be able to continue to live then in a relatively normal way. This process has the effect of encapsulating memories, affects, sensations or even beliefs in order to to mitigate their effects on the overall development of the child. According to the severity of trauma, the impact of dissociation can go as far as personality splitting. The T.D.I. seems to be the level of the most extreme dissociation. Pierre Janet himself acknowledged that "extreme dissociation" resulted in the creation of a multiple personality. The origin of this disorder, in at least 80% of cases treated by psychiatry, lies in traumas experienced during childhood, especially before the age of 5. Dr. Philip M. Coons compared twenty patients with an I.D.T. to a control group of twenty people of the same sex and age, not dissociated, non-schizophrenic, no

Psychotic. While two people in the control group had suffered from

neglect or sexual abuse in childhood, 85% of patients with a T.D.I.

had been physically and/or sexually abused! [314]).

Dr. Richard Kluft arrives at similar data linking T.D.I. to early childhood trauma: "In two large groups,

97% and 98% had been victims of physical and sexual violence during

childhood, or psychological abuse as well as neglect! [315]]."

Dr. James P. Bloch wrote that childhood trauma is today perceived as a primary etiological factor in the formation of dissociative disorders! [315]1.

According to Dr. Colin Ross, "the degree of dissociation is clearly related to the severity and chronicity of abuse."
Ross considers that, on statistical average, patients who have developed a

T.D.I. is said to have been physically abused for fifteen years and sexually abused

for almost thirteen years! [317!.]

we

can therefore understand why many victims of ritual abuse

Satanic have developed a dissociative identity disorder. The T.D.I. is

even certainly a strong indicator of a past related to ritual abuses.

Dr. Frank Putnam said in 1989: "I am struck by the level of

extreme sadism reported by most victims with a
T.D.I.. Many of them told me that they had been sexually abused by groups of people, forced into prostitution by their families, or offered as a sexual bait for their mother's lovers. After working with a number of patients with t.d.i., it has become apparent that abuse severe and repeated in childhood are a major cause of

multiple personality."

Traumatic memories can therefore be "stored", or "encapsulated", in an alter personality and the host personality will not have no awareness of this reality. It is when this personality alters will emerge that it will be able to express and transmit this memory (usually in physically and emotionally eriving the trauma, a phenomenon that is calls abridgement). It will describe very precisely how the abuses took place. past, since it was he (or she) who lived them directly, while the host personality was "disabled"/disassociated to make way for the alter. Dr. Adam Crabtree reports that in 1926, the American psychologist Henry Herbert Goddard published a report describing the treatment of a young woman, Bernice R., diagnosed with a multiple personality. goddard used hypnosis to try to merge two personalities. For this, it put one of the alter personalities in a state of trance to try conscious of the existence of the other in order to make them merge. By this Procedure, Goddard did a very good job for emotional release from the patient's traumatic memories. Among these memoirs, the young woman had clear and vivid memories of her father's rapes. unfortunately ae ia cleaner

Goddard classified these memoirs of sexual abuse as hallucinations, in

explaining that the incestuous acts allegedly happened at the age of 14

had not been mentioned by Bernice before the age of 19. This we

indicates that Henry Goddard did not really know how it worked

dissociation and traumatic amnesia. He therefore validated the theory

smoker of "hysterical sexual hallucination"...

Theory still used today to discredit the victims, "hysteria" having given way to the "syndrome of false memories" (which we will develop in chapter ICM[318]]).

It will still take some time for the issue of childhood trauma to be truly taken into account and recognized as one of the

the root causes of the fractionation of nersonality. Of our days of

many clinicians have the idea that T.D.I. is a very rare disorder or

well simply do not recognize its existence. This is primarily due to the lack of information and training of clinicians about the

dissociation, dissociative disorders and the effects of trauma

psychological; this diagnosis is therefore rarely considered and even less so

reserved. However, T.D.I. and dissociative disorders are not uncommon. Studies in North America, Europe and Turkey have shown that between 1 and

5% of patients in psychiatric units for adults and adolescents, as well as in services for the treatment of substance abuse, disorders eating and obsessive-compulsive disorder (OCD) may respond to diagnostic criteria for T.D.I.. But many of these patients will not be never clinically diagnosed with dissociative disorder[319]].

In his book "Cuit and Ritual Abuse", Dr. James Randall Noblitt gives some statistics concerning the recognition of the T.D.I. in the psychiatric professional environment:

A study conducted in 1994 interviewed 1120 psychologists and psychiatrists employed by the Veterans Administration, 80% of whom replied that they approved of the diagnosis of T.D.II[320]!..

Another study conducted in 1995 on 180 Canadian psychiatrists reported that 66.1% of them believed in the validity of the diagnosis of T.D.I. against 27.8% who did not validate this diagnosis, 3.3% were undecided! [321]!.

In 1999, a study of 301 psychiatrists showed that 15% of them believed that the T.D.I. should not be included in the diagnostic manual (DSM), 43% thought it should be included with reserves and 35% thought it should be included without reservations. On the question of evidence for the scientific validity of the diagnosis of T.D.I., 20% responded that there was little or no evidence of validity, 51% responded that there was partial evidence of validity and 21% felt that there was clear evidence that validated T. DT[322]!..

In 1999, the Washington State Supreme Court ruled that the diagnosis of T.D.I. met the criteria for the Frye standard (the Frye test is used to determine the admissibility of scientific evidence within a legal framework). This means that

Expert evidence on the T.D.I. is admissible in the Federal Court because it was determined that this diagnosis was generally recognized in the community of

mental health! [323]).

Today, there are a few tests that are used to detect the presence of dissociative disorders in a patient. The Dissociative Experiments Scale (DES) was

designed by psychiatrists Eve Bernstein Carlson and Frank W. Putnam in 1986

(Annex No. 3). Another test is the "Multidimensional"

Inventory of Dissociation” (MID) (Inventaire Multidimensionnel de

Dissociation) developed by Paul Dell. This test is of the same type as the

previous but with many more items. However, these tests do not allow

not to establish a diagnosis, it is only by more structured professional interviews than a T.D.I. can be observed or excluded.

c/ T.D.I. and neurology

In recent decades, medical imaging tools to study brain function have expanded considerably.

Improved. Techniques such as resonance imaging magneuque pKivij and tomograpme by emission ae positrons (PET) allow among other things to

visualize the activation of different areas of the brain during certain

/TT^TV/n _1 _ j_ 1 J

tasks or certain behaviors.

In November 2001, researchers from Melbourne, Australia, gathered in what the Herald Sun described to

the epoch as "the world's first study" on multiple personality disorder. The purpose of this meeting was to try to resolve the controversy

within the psychiatric scientific community. The study resulted in the

conclusion that "individuals suffering from

multiple personality (T.D.I.) did not simulate their changes of identity".

The brain waves of individuals diagnosed with T.D.I. were compared with those of actors simulating personality changes. Although the

actors convincingly reproduce changes in identity,

researchers found that there were quite distinct changes in the

brain waves of those who actually changed their personality while

these changes did not appear in the brains of those that simulated another personality[324].

This same type of comparative study was conducted by Annedore Hopper and Dr. Joseph Ciorciari at the University of Swiburne in Victoria in Australia. Five patients with a T.D.I. and five professional actors have participated in the experiment. The study clearly showed a difference electro-encephalography (EEG) between the host personality and the alter personalities in patients with a T.D.I., while this change in EEG was not observed in actors who simulated for example a child's personality. For Dr. Joseph Ciorciari, this study clearly demonstrates that patients suffering from T.D.I do not simulate their different personalities, he said: "Patients with T.D.I. have been compared with professional actors who reproduced age and personality corresponding to each alter personality of the patients and to each of their host personalities. Significant differences in EEG between the alter personalities and the host personalities have not been observed when it was the actors who played the role of personalities, which is clear physiological evidence of the authenticity of T.D.II325]."

In December 1999, the BBC's "Tomorrow's World" programme broadcast a report showing a neurological study.

on the T.D.I. led by Dr. Guochuan Tsai (Harvard

Medical School). For the first time, a patient with a disorder

identity dissociative was subjected to an MRI scan during the transition

from one personality to another. Louise, the patient who volunteered

for this study, had developed with the help of Dr. Condie (his therapist),

an ability to voluntarily trigger changes in

Big shot. This ability to change personality on demand has made it possible to

to observe live the functioning of his brain in the MRI scanner during

transitions between one alter personality and another. Dr. Tsai clarifies

that before we didn't have an MRI scanner, so we couldn't do this kind of study quickly and correctly. In addition, we

did not have the right subject knowing how to control the changes of alter. Because we need there to be this change during mri.

The CT scan showed significant changes in the brain just as Louise changed her personality. Curiously

the hippocampus, an area associated with long-term memory, has become extinct during the alter change and it reactivated after the transition Carried out. A control test was also carried out: Louise to simply imagine herself as an eight-year-old girl, without switch to another alter. The test showed none of the changes previously noted. For Dr. Tsai, this is a sufficient scientific basis on which to build further research. For Louise, it's a proof to bring in front of all those people who deny the existence of the T.D.I..

Following the documentary, Dr. Raj Persaud said on the set of the BBC: "Like most psychiatrists, before the coming out of this study, I was very skeptical about this multinle nersonality disorder. This is due to the fact that in England, we let's do it less frequently this diagnosis only in the United States. In England, we generally think that these people can pretend to have this disorder to attract a certain watch out for them. But the important and very persuasive thing of this new study is that when this woman was in the scanner and she had switched to another personality, there was a significant change in her brain activity, unlike when she only imagines having another personality. This is proof that the personality disorder multiple is not just simulated but that it really exists."

Neurological research has shown that repeated childhood abuse has a significant and measurable effect on volume of certain areas of the brain such as the hippocampus and the complex tonsil. A study conducted in 2006 revealed that the volume of the hippocampus and of the tonsil is significantly smaller in people diagnosed with an I.D.T. in comparison with a group of subjects without T.D.II326]..

A study published in 2003, entitled "One brain, two selves", compared activated areas of the brains of two different personalities of a subject with a T.D.I.. the brain regions of 11 women with T.D.I. were explored in

using a neuroimaging technique, PET (

positrons). Following some therapeutic work, women were

able, like Louise, to control the required personality changes

for the study. During PET scans, subjects listened to recordings with autobiographical and traumatic content in two personality states

different. Only one of the two personalities studied confirmed that the content was autobiographical since it was the personality who had itself experienced the trauma, the other personality did not have the memory of having lived the

trauma. The results of the study showed that this different perception

of the same content is found in the different activated areas of the

brain: the alter personality that recognizes the content because it is stored in its memory, shows a different brain activation profile than that of the alter personality that does not recognize the content. For the researchers, such a difference in the level of activity of certain brain areas cannot be explained simply by imagination or by a change in mood in the

subject! [327]).

When we are inundated by danger stimuli in a traumatic situation, the collaboration of the tonsil complex with

the hippocampus is strongly disturbed. Incomplete processing of information

will make that these will not be integrated into a spatio-temporal order and therefore remain isolated memories.

In traumatized people, research on physiological brain processes by tomography makes it possible to locate areas of the

brain where changes in metabolism take place, here glucose. with

This imaging technique, it is possible to visualize the increase in the

glucose consumption in certain brain areas and deduce the areas that are more or less activated. In a study conducted by Bessel Van der Kolk,

traumatized people had to remember personal trauma. in

comparison with non-traumatized people (control group) who had to remember a serious event in their lives, people traumatized showed a significantly elevated activation of the complex tonsil, insula, medial face of temporal lobe and cortex right visual. During the evocation of traumatic memories, the right hemisphere of the brain was particularly active while a decrease in activation of the left hemisphere was observed. A decrease particularly pronounced in the underside of the frontal lobe and in the Broca area which plays an important role for language. Professor Van Der Kolk deduced from these results that the brain cannot process and completely understand a traumatic stimulus since the broca area, responsible for the verbalization, is then inhibited. These neurological studies show us how physiologically difficult, if not impossible, it is, for victims of deep trauma to verbalize and explain

^icxii L V^UL ^11^0 aL v ul ^ UL u V^UL ^o ouii L ii Li cxiii utt; live

when traumatic memory rises to the surface. Van der Kolk explains that "when these people relive their experiences traumatic, their frontal lobes are impacted, with the consequence that the thought and speech are damaged. They are no longer able to communicate to others what is happening (...) The imprint of the trauma does not sit at the verbal level, at the level of the part of the brain related to understanding. It sits much deeper in the regions of the amygdala, hippocampus, hypothalamus and brainstem, areas that are only marginally related to thought and cognitioni[328]!."

Traumatic experiences are therefore not recorded via language, but mainly via the memory of bodily sensations, by smells and sounds. When a stimulus (such as physical contact, some odors, engine noises, screams) activates the memory of an event traumatic, there is not necessarily a rise of memory with a content narrative. While narrative memory is capable of integration and of adaptation, non-narrative traumatic memories seem to be inflexible, activated automatically and completely dissociated from the event. This dissociation of traumatic memories explains why these do not fade over time, but retain their initial strength and become what Van der Kolk calls "parasites of the soul" (We will see in the next chapter that these memoirs isolated traumatics would rather be related to "soul fragments"). Information on traumatic experiences is present in memory at a certain level, but so they are totally dissociated from narrative memory. Without further processing aimed at integrate into narrative and analytical memory, i.e. memory autobiographical, these traumatic memories can potentially be reactivated negatively throughout life. They will manifest themselves, for example, by hypermnesia, flashbacks, hyperactivity, amnesia, emotional disorders and avoidance behavior. In the context of trauma-based MK programming, it is these traumatic memories unconscious that allow access to personalities alter by codes acting as stimulus and triggering in the same way certain controls implemented during trauma.

Physiological studies of the brain are now able to explain why traumatized people often do not have the possibility of situating in time their traumatic memories. When they are there access, they live this traumatic memory as if it were in the process of happen in the present moment. Some research also explains why therapeutic methods based solely on verbal language are generally not effective in treating trauma. one

Effective psychotherapy must take into account narrative memory and

explicit (localized in the left hemisphere of the brain) but also the

implicit memory related to sensations and emotions (localized in

, the right hemisphere of the brain). Events that are only registered as implicit memory must be built-in to become explicit memory and autobiographical. In other words, the negative intrusions of these memories should be replaced by an integrated, coherent and chronological memory so that it no longer harms the staff[329]!.

d/ T.D.I and schizophrenia

At the phenomenological level, there is a significant overlap between the symptoms of dissociative disorders (especially T.D.I.) and schizophrenia. These similarities create confusion in circles hospitals and therefore lead to misdiagnosis with significant impact on patients.

Dissociation caused by a division into several personalities implies the separation of normally well-integrated structures such as sensory perception, memory, attention, thought; while that in schizophrenia these processes remain integrated, they are simply Deteriorated. In the T.D.I., the link with reality remains intact, while in schizophrenia there is an almost total break with reality. in The T.D.I. the fractionation of the personality is done by a division within the person, just like a cell division, as if each cell was a new and different personality. In schizophrenia, this division occurs between the "inner self" and the outer world, the

What

connection with reality is lost and the person then lives in his world! 330).

One study showed that a group of patients diagnosed with schizophrenia by a psychiatrist or psychologist, to whom you give a standardized interview related to dissociative symptoms showed that 35 to 40% of

these patients, believed to be schizophrenic, will come out with the diagnosis of

dissociative identity disorder. Conversely, in a patient group

diagnosed with an I.D.T. to whom you are interviewing related to

schizophrenic symptoms, two-thirds will come out with a diagnosis of

schizophrenia. A group of 236 patients with T.D.I. To shown that

40.8% of them had previously been diagnosed with schizophrenia! [33] .

One of the common points between schizophrenia and T.D.I. can be auditory hallucinations, it is often "voice in the head". These voices can come either from the inside or from the outside, they can be friendly or hostile. There is no reliable feature to determine automatically and with certainty that it is a "schizophrenic voice" or a "dissociative voice". Some therapists use the criterion of outer voice or inner voice to discern if it is schizophrenia or T.D.I.. Auditory hallucinations appear to come from the outside will show more of a schizophrenic tendency as the voices coming from the interior can be those of alter personalities, in this case, there are probably a personality split. According to Dr. Colin Ross, a another clue is that fractional personalities generally hear more voices from children than schizophrenics. In the 1994 edition of the DSM, the symptoms of voices that dialogue between them or who systematically comment on the

The person's behaviour was considered schizophrenic. the

doctor could therefore make a diagnosis of schizophrenia on this symptom alone, however many professionals have discovered that these voices are more

common in multiple personalities than in schizophrenics! [332]).

Many psychotherapists working with patients with I.D.T. have found that this phenomenon of voices in the head was somewhat

something common in these people. More and more studies seem to make the link between dissociation and these "auditory hallucinations". Some

Studies have devoted themselves exclusively to this question, in particular that of

Charlotte Connor et Max Birchwood intitulée : “Abuse

and dysfonctionnal affiliations in childhood : An exploration of their

impact on voice-hearer’s appraisals of power and expressed émotion”, ou encore celle de Vasiliki Fenekou et Eugénie

Georgaca : “Exploring the expérience of hearing

voices : A qualitative study”.

The question of "voices in the head" is delicate, knowing that psychotronic technologies like "The Voice of God" or "Voice to Skull" can also produce this kind of phenomenon. (See in

Chapter 1: Psychotronics)

A study! [333!] conducted with the Dissociative Experiment Scale (Annex No. 3) a showed that 21% of inpatient psychiatric patients and 13% of patients

non-hospitalized psychiatric patients have a dissociative score above the pathological threshold. They conclude that dissociative disorders are still

significantly underdiagnosed! [334!.] In a study entitled "Dissociation and Schizophrenia" published in 2004 in the journal "Trauma and Dissociation", Dr. Colin Ross and Dr. Benjamin Keyes assessed the symptoms

dissociative in a group of 60 individuals treated for schizophrenia. They found that 36 subjects had dissociative characteristics

60% of their sample. These dissociative symptoms were

accompanied by a high rate of childhood trauma as well as

major disorders such as depression, personality disorder

limit (Borderline) or the T.D.I.. Whether in the case of T.D.I. or schizophrenia, dissociation is something underlying, as is the traumatic origin of these

the

Big shot.

Despite studies that have clearly shown the link between psychotic disorders and dissociative disorders, there is a sharp decline in

the use of the diagnosis of dissociative disorders. This decline can be explained by

in particular by introducing the term "schizophrenia" to describe

patients showing this type of symptoms. Between 1911 and 1927, the number of cases

reported multiple personality, now named T.D.I., has decreased by almost half following the replacement of the term "dementia"

preacox" by "schizophrenia" by the Swiss psychiatrist Eugen Bleuler.

Le Dr. Rosenbaum explique cela en détail dans son article “The rôle of the term schizophrenia in the décline of diagnoses of multiple

personality" (the role of the term schizophrenia in the decline of

multiple personality diagnosis! [335!)]. In "Oxford Textbook of Psychopathology", Paul H. Blaney tells us that a search on PubMed (the main search engine of

bibliographic data of all areas of specialization of the

Dioiogie et ae ia meaecmej nee a la scnizopnrenie genere a result of 25 421 articles, while a search related to the T.D.I. gives only 73 publications.

One of the negative consequences of these misdiagnosis is that the treatment given for "schizophrenia" will be based mainly on a heavy and addictive or even dangerous medication. While like us let's see, in the therapy of T.D.I., treatment with drugs is something secondary. They can be used to treat comorbidity but they are not therapeutic as such. We have seen that first, the T.D.I. Has been replaced by a catch-all diagnosis- all named "schizophrenia", and that secondly the treatment protocol for the "schizophrenic" will be a heavy chemical medication usually inappropriate, which will never help the patient to understand his disorders and to free himself from them. Disorders in most of the time related to childhood trauma. in indeed, the psychiatric institution seems to have little will to come truly assisting victims and survivors of

trnn m n be o m û o û-n

neglecting or totally ignoring the subject of psychotraumatology. here is what psychotraumatologist Muriel Salmona says about this: "We are very little informed in the context of psychotraumatology, there is no training in medical studies, no training during the specialization in psychiatry. There are also many experts who are not trained in psychotraumatology, so they do not have knowledge of traumatic memory and processes (...) Psychiatrists who care for abusers often have no training in psychotrauma at all. They will take them in load without supporting traumatic memory, and suddenly, they do not go not treat what makes people very dangerous! [335]]."

the survivor of ritual abuse and mind control, Lynn Moss Sharman, said during a radio interview with Wayne Morris (testimony in chapter 7): "I had come across some information - in a library - indicating that the Scottish Rite (Freemasonry) in the United States had financed, through its donations of "charity" means research on schizophrenia. I remember **reading sharply** thinking it was rather curious, it even made me cold in the back, which the high ranks of this secret society choose to use their "charitable" funds to finance research on schizophrenia (editor's note: Scottish Rite Schizophrenia Research Program, SRSRP). A disorder that is very similar in some respects to the diagnosis of the disorder

multiple personality or dissociative identity disorder that is

diagnosed in 99% of survivors of ritual abuse, and certainly also

in survivors of mind control. I very naively asked Mr Tooey

(Peter Tooey, freemason, ex-policeman) if he was aware that funds

were used for these purposes, and he very proudly replied, "Well

yes, here in Thunder Bay, all the money that the Scottish Rite paid was spent on

fund a research project on the study of schizophrenia at the University

of British Columbia." I found this very worrying, and another

times, very scary that the money of this community in the Ontario, received by this secret society, is routed directly to a

University of the West Coast of Canada. And then I came across another

information shortly after: There are research grants

available at York University - something called the Rohr Institute, funded by the Masonic Foundation of Canada and headquartered in Hamilton in

Ontario. This institute offers grants for research and

$35,000 grant comes directly from the Scottish Rite Foundation

Charitable' of Canada, via the Rohr Institute. The goal is to offer scholarships

Northwest of

for studies/research in the field of "intellectual disability".

I don't think it's something that's very well known and I wonder

what kind of studies are actually being conducted at York University with these funds! [337]]."

We have seen that T.D.I. and schizophrenia are two intertwined psychiatric disorders, but schizophrenia seems to be a kind of "catch-all drawer" used rather to crowd out diagnoses that could be more precise, more detailed, and therefore more appropriate for the treatment of patients.

e/ T.D.I. and psychophysiological variations

A number of studies and reports indicate the existence of significant psychophysiological variations between altering personalities of a patient with an I.D.T.. These may be differences in allergic or gastrointestinal reactions, the quality of vision may also varied from one alter to another: some cases show that a blindness may vary depending on the alter personality. The change of voice and writing is something recurring. There are also differences at the level of sensitivity to pain, heart rate, pressure arterial, blood circulation and immune functions. others differences were noted especially in glucose levels in alter diabetic patients! 338). It has been shown that people who simulate alter personalities cannot

"_ ______ __j_ j__ii J jm ____________ __ i i _j_* ________ _____ ___ _ j-i _ provoke ae renes pnysioiogic bitterness. c.es sometimes extreme boasts therefore validate the fact that patients with an I.D.T. do not play a role,

but that they undergo a real change of personality acting on

biological functions that are not normally controllable! 339!.

in

a lecture given in 2009 on the phenomenon of multiple personalities, the

Father François Brune mentions several examples of these remarkable physiological changes: "In reality they have already made absolutely extraordinary discoveries, in particular that we can deal with very different differences.

strong according to the personalities that invade the main personality. So we are finally forced to talk about 'main people' and 'main people' and 'main people'.

"secondary persons". How are they distinguished? The person

main is the one that controls the body most of the time,

unlike the others (...) For example, we will find that they do not need the same glasses (...) We will also find that for some drugs it will be necessary to change the doses,

especially for diabetics. We will find that some are left-handed at one point and right-handed at another when the personality cnange.

We will also find that they are not all sensitive to the same

anesthetic (...) A mentally ill person (officially considered as such) suffering from duplication and even the tripling and quadrupling of personality, which had to be operated, a demonstrated that his anesthesia prevented suffering to some of the personalities who lived in it while the others complained of having suffered. They could also describe the whole operation, so they were not asleep at all. When a few years later, this same no one had to have surgery again, so we had to wait patiently that all personalities emerge one by one in order to know which anesthetic would suit everyone (...) we are here in California with competent doctors... but in France, obviously it's hard to imagine... Imagine a French hospital agreeing to get into it? Then their career would be very quickly over! There are also allergies that are not the same. has cases of people who normally do not see the colors, who when inhabited by others, report that they can again distinguish them. Another case studied in a very scientific way was that of a person who was asked to observe a flash lamp to study with an electroencephalogram the reactions in his brain. When this was not the same personality who was in control, the reactions of the brains were not at all the same. This has been scientifically established during very serious and rigorous research." (For Father François Brune, this phenomenon of multiple personality is a possession by human souls

disembodied. We will address this issue of possessions in the next

chapter)

A particularly strange aspect of these physiological changes concerns the effects of medications on alter personalities.

According to some reports, it would seem that their effects may wander completely compartmentalized and even annihilated. The survivor of ritual abuse and

Australian mind control Kristin Constance has been hospitalized three times

before finally being diagnosed with an I.D.T.. In 2011, during a

lecture, she described how she made a suicide attempt in

swallowing a cocktail of anxiolytics, antidepressants and antipsychotics...

She didn't even fall asleep... The chemical cocktail would have been partitioned

in a certain alter personality and would have had no impact on the

personality who was in control of the body (his testimony is transcribed

in full in Chapter 7).

A phenomenon that is totally irrational, but as we will see in the next chapter, the T.D.I. can also fall under the

paranormal domain.

Another survivor of ritual abuse with a T.D.I. He also testified in 1997 on the show "Your Turn" on the American channel FOX 13 News. Dejoly Labrier described how one of her alter personalities named "Ginger", needed Prozac because she was depressed. "They" (the alter system) so took this drug for this alter Ginger for two years... but according to Labrier, there was only Ginger to feel the effects... (his testimony is also transcribed in full in the chapter 7).

Alter personalities seem to be able to block or on the contrary increase the effects of medications, just as they can "deceive" other alter by not taking the medications or by taking higher doses of them while the other alter would like to follow the treatment correctly, but they are not aware of these sabotage behaviors from others alter due to amnesic walls.

An article in the newspaper "Dissociation", published in September 1994, recounts the case of a series of surgical operations with general anesthesia performed on a patient with t.d.i.. It was found that his needs for anesthetics were rather atypical:

She received a normal dose of muscle relaxant, however the dose

She received a normal dose of muscle relaxant, however the dose

of analgesics differed totally from the norm, it required only only 16 to 33% of the dose that is usually used for a patient adult without T.D.I.. The dose of anesthetics was also lower than the standard, with 50-80% of the normal dose used during operations usual surgical. The patient explained that an altering personality child was in control of the body before each operation, the change alter would appear to have been caused by anxiety. This could explain why the doses of analgesics and anesthetics required were much higher low only for an adult dosage. This phenomenon has been commonly observed by clinicians from several countries, they report that patients with a T.D.I. require smaller doses of sedatives when an alter child is in control of the body! [340]!.

Psychophysiological variations also concern blindness. In November 2015, the Dailymail published an article titled "Blind woman, 37, with multiple personalities lost her sight after an accident but can still see when in her teenage boy character" (a 37-year-old woman with

-v-vl n niûn

more.oit;u.i o

personalities, who have become blind following an accident, regain their sight when

emerged his teenage boy alter). This article describes the case of a woman

German diagnosed with cortical blindness at the age of 20

following an accident. Since then, she had been walking with the help of a guide dog. sound

medical record shows that she received a series of tests that did

confirmed blindness. As there was no physical injury to his eyes,

it was assumed that the problem certainly came from damage to the brain

occurred at the time of the accident. 13 years later, in psychotherapy, she was

diagnosed as suffering from a T.D.I. with a dozen personalities

Alter... It is during the treatment of his dissociative disorders that he is

happened something remarkable: while his boy alter

teenager was at the "controls", his eyesight recovered. Her therapists reported that this woman's vision shifted from darkness to light in a few second, depending on the alter personalities that emerged. German psychologists Hans Strasburger and Bruno Waldvogel, who conducted the study, have

used an EEG (electroencephalogram) to measure how the sound area

sight-related cortex reacted to visual stimuli. It was then

found that when the patient was in a "blind" alter, her brain

did not respond to the images, while with an alter "showy" personality, the measurements were normal. His blindness came and went according to the

alter personalities at the controls of the body. Doctors think that his

blindness was caused by a strong emotional reaction during the accident.

Dr. Strasburger said: "It probably serves as a

fallback function (...) During an emotionally very intense situation, the

patient can sometimes react by becoming blind, and therefore no longer having

"need to see"." There are other cases where blindness varies depending on the alter that emerges, including Diana's testimony in a documentary of the series "The Dxtraordmary" dedicated to the T.D.I., broadcast on the channel

Australian Seven Network in the 90s.

Note here that just as psychophysiology can vary from one alter to another, the writing style can also totally change from one

personality to the other. The writing of an individual is a mark that allows

identify it and analyze its psychological profile, it is unique and

definitively, as a result the police sometimes use graphology techniques

in its investigations. Psychotherapists working with patients with T.D.I. have noted glaring differences in writing style between the alter personalities of the same person, and graphological analysis of this writing may

reveal information about a particular alter. It is therefore possible

to identify the alter personalities by their type of writing! [341]).

f/T.D.I. transgénérationnel

"It is common for adult women to be treated for an I.D.T.

clearly describe symptoms of T.D.I. in one of their parents or even

in both parents. Testimonies that may include clear descriptions of alternations of personalities but also the names of the altering personalities of the

parents." "The Osiris Complex" - Dr. Colin Ross

In his book "Childhood Antécédents of Multiple Personality", Dr.

Richard Kluft reports cases of

patients with several family members suffering from conditions

dissociative, this from generation to generation. It describes, inter alia, the case of a 22-year-old man who was subjected to a psychiatric examination by a judge,

the possibility that he was suffering from an I.D.T. was then considered. The man was being prosecuted for the murder of his father. He told the police

that his father was a renowned pharmacist, one of the "pillars" of the community

local. But he also reported that his father was involved in

drugs and that he had connections with organized crime. The accused confessed

that he was himself an accomplice in his father's drug trafficking because he was

sometimes deliveries of goods. He also confessed that his father had large debts and that it was he himself who had asked him to kill him.

so that life insurance money can be used to cover these debts. the pere also believed that a "suicide" could cancel out the debt. All these

information was validated by others during the investigation. the

young man not being able to kill his father himself so recruited another

person to commit murder. The son and the murderer were finally

both arrested by the police.

Dr. Kluft spoke with this young man daily for some time and confirmed the personality diagnosis multiple. Kluft himself observed the changes in attitudes, voices, facial and bodily expression in the individual. In addition, interviews with his two brothers, his sister, his wife, his cousins and his neighbors, have confirmed that the young man had behavioural changes characteristics of a T.D.I.. Based on the statements of the accused, of his family and his wife, it was also found that the father most likely also had a T.D.I.. He was described as an unpredictable man who entered into inappropriate rages with voice changes and unusual behaviors. The accused as well as some members of his family reported that the father acted as if "he were two different people", claiming that he was both a "drug dealer" and a "pillar of the community" (i.e. he had an activity on one side occult criminal and on the other a very respectable public façade). These statements may be consistent with a T.D.I..

The information gathered from the young accused, his wife, brothers and sister also suggests that the mother was living her also dissociative episodes. All sources have certified that it is unstable and had a very variable mood, she was described as a hysterical one. This woman who was usually in a wheelchair had amazing periods of improvement in her condition physical during which she walked without problem, something that was medically inexplicable (it is possible that it was a dissociative conversion disorder, which could manifest as point paralysis).

The information given by the son and his family also suggests that the paternal grandmother suffered from a T.D.I.: she was constantly described as "unpredictable", "changing", and plagued by "memory problems". All family members described her as a "terror" because of her inappropriate screams and behaviors Uncontrollable. In addition, his attitude with his children was totally random. There have been reports of physical abuse of his children, but paradoxically, she sometimes showed great affection. This illustrates the Incompatible pattern between love and abuse frequently reported in families of patients with T.D.I.. In that case, the jury did not taking into account the psychiatric report provided by the defence and the patient was sentenced to 25 years in prison.

The data collected by Dr. Richard Kluft from several patients support the hypothesis that dissociation and T.D.I. are presumably transgenerational. Evidence of dissociative disorders has been observed and reported in eighteen families of diagnosed patients with a T.D.I. and followed by Dr. Kluft. This demonstrates some connection transgenerational, however several factors still require clarification on the mechanisms of this connection. Dr Kluft legitimately claims that this type of information is collected on an ad hoc basis when it should be studied systematically and methodically in order to be able to derive from it.

statistics and conclusions. In-depth studies would thus make it possible to

be able to identify the mechanisms underlying this transmission of T.D.I.

from generation to generation! [342]).

How are these dissociative disorders transmitted from one generation to the next? Perhaps we can respond in part to this

issue through the practice of transgenerational ritual abuse within

occult networks? The case reported above by Richard Kluft shows us

a young man suffering from a T.D.I., therefore deeply traumatized since his

early childhood. His father being a notable pharmacist with a solid reputation visibly leading a double life by trafficking drugs in parallel with his professional activity. Everything suggests, according to Kluft, that the father

suffered himself from a T.D.I., just like his wife and mother... So here we have the classic context of a family practicing the ritual abuse of

generation to generation, all members of which are stuck in states

dissociative. I.D.T. are caused by extreme trauma and

repetitive, they do not appear overnight as a result of a bad flu. In addition, the illegal activities of the father, leading to a double life, reinforce the idea that this is a family making

part of an occult network, drug trafficking being a common thing in

these environments.

The process of systematic repetition of traumas on the offspring is a vicious circle fed by traumatic memories that

require dissociative anesthesia. This process certainly has a large part of responsibility in the generational transmission of states

dissociative and particularly from the T.D.I.. The victim will self-treat himself by physical and psychological violence against others, usually his children, who

will in turn dissociate and repeat the violence, and so on generation to generation. This phenomenon can happen without it being a question of

Satanic rituals, "simple" recurring domestic violence and incest can create this vicious circle if the disorders are not treated and cured.

Sexual abuse also marks the victim's DNA, predispositions to

dissociation and other harmful consequences (depression, bipolarity...)

therefore also transmit genetically. This genetic factor linked to

dissociation is a brand sought after and cultivated by some families

Luciferians (we will return to the question of the traumas that mark

, ADN in Chapter 7).

Let us recall here a case that took place in Paris in 2012.

The case relayed by BFMTV concerned children
of a Parisian couple whose man was (precisely) a pharmacist. "It was the doctors at the Necker Hospital who alerted the police. The 2 1/2-year-old girl is transported to the emergency room for

convulsions a month ago. Her blood and urine results show that she has been taking regular

^ 1 Û /I

r*rvr»m -which is Qrvn rcp n -»—i r\ ben-»—i o on \/\1 f lûo m On ûo ûvntrtûno

Y^KJ^CU-IL^. **ouii gi exile will ±± here uuu T CLLIO o u u n iico** 111^111^0 **ic^cxiniciio.**
Same conclusion. Except that the

boy also consumes crack and in high quantities (!!)" How can young children use cocaine and crack cocaine? There is no doubt that these children were voluntarily

drugged by adults... under what circumstances and for what purposes?

A judicial investigation had been opened by the Paris public prosecutor's office, where is this serious case today? Where are these children at the moment! [343]] ?

g/ T.D.I. and alter animal

In a T.D.I., the presence of alternate personalities children or of the opposite sex is something very common. What is less common is the presence of a non-human alter. In some cases, the alter personality may be totally dehumanized to the point of believing that it is really an animal. The presence of these "alter animals" usually indicates that the person has experienced ritual abuse. The development of an alter animal occurs during extreme trauma in early childhood. The child may have been forced to behave and live like an animal. For example, he may have witnessed the mutilation of an animal, forced to participate in or witness acts of zoophilia, or been forced to kill an animal. In Monarch-type mind control, dehumanization and the alter animal are deliberately created by the programmer in an extremely sadistic way. However, these dehumanized alters may be present without there having been a voluntary mental programming, but in any case it is the culmination of inhuman traumatic treatment, voluntarily dehumanizing the little victim.

Here are some cases that the newspaper "Dissociation" reported in 1990 in an article entitled: "Animal alters: case reports". It was written by psychiatrist Kate M. Hendrickson, Professor Jean M. Goodwin and Teresita McCarty. The content of this paper was presented at the Sixth Annual Conference on Dissociation and Multiple Personalities in Chicago in October 1989.

The first case reported is that of a 38-year-old woman who very often referred to animals during her therapy. The patient recounted how her father sometimes caught birds to lock them with her in the toilet when she was punished, so they came to prick her head with their beaks. It terrorized her, she explains: "When I'm too terrified, I turn into a bird and I fly in the toilet." Sometimes his father hung rabbits or dead birds above his bed. He then told his daughter that she could be strangled just like these animals if she did not do what she was told to do or if she talked about abuse. She was also forced to eat leftovers in a dog bowl, *etc.* When the family cat gave birth to her young, the father would show his daughter what he would do to her if she got pregnant. For this he opened the abdomen of kittens after strangling and dismembering them. These horrors made on the animals were a way to terrorize and traumatize the little girl.

When her father raped her at the age of eight, she began to be terrorized at the thought of getting pregnant and suffering the fate of the kittens. When these horrors began to rise in therapy, she said she heard "strange baby screams inside her. The screams she heard were inconsolable and she was terrified of leaving the therapist's office because she said "everyone would know." She was terrified that other people could hear these cries and thus know that she herself had participated in the mutilation of small kittens. She stated that she tried to help the cat mom by taking her with her kittens inside her so that her father could no longer harm them. She was terrorized by one of her alters in which the suffering of the kittens' mother was internalized. This cat alter himself terrified by the patient's father. After describing and understanding how the kittens had been internalized, it then became possible for her to talk about her incest pregnancies that occurred at the ages of fourteen and sixteen. The father having killed the babies from birth, hence the strange cries of inconsolable babies inside her. She says that one of her babies was dismembered like the kittens.

After the patient talked about kittens inside her, she was able to remember dissociated and repressed memories of incest, pregnancies and infanticide. At the very beginning, she could only talk about these heavy traumatic memories through her cat alter. This alter cat could "talk" about these awful stories while the main personality of the patient could not. It was found that when the patient was "triggered" by the evocation that she had not been able to save her children or the kittens, she self-infected with a razor blade at the tips of her fingers, fingers that ended up looking like claws. She will also describe a similar behavior when she found herself in bed in an ambivalent way with men: the alter cat could make many scratches on their face or chest.

Another reported case is that of a 35-year-old woman who when terrified turned into a dog. This may give rise to smiles, but there is absolutely nothing comical about the substance of the problem. Her parents of German origin punished her by making her eat on all fours in a dog bowl, they forced her to behave like a dog. During individual therapy, a T.D.I. She was diagnosed and she revealed that she had been raped by her father who in addition to this involved the family dog in zoophile acts. Any reference to sex, to the fact that she was mean or bad made her "turn" into a dog. When this happened in therapy session, the patient began to have dog behavior and speak in German (her usual language was English, it is possible that the parents spoke in German during traumatic acts). Statements about dehumanizing treatment of forcing him to behave like an animal preceded statements about sexual abuse.

The newspaper article Dissociation also reports a criminal case, that of a woman with a dissociative disorder who was convicted of murder by evisceration. Some evidence has shown that she may have used her teeth and nails at some point during the crime. This is what she also thought because of the taste of blood that remained in her mouth as she was totally amnesiac about this crime. During the investigation, she was interrogated under hypnosis. When she was in a hypnotic trance, it was suggested to her to imagine herself in a peaceful place, so she described that she was in a jungle and that she herself was a panther in the branches of a tree. After several sessions of hypnosis in an attempt to reconstruct and understand the crime, she said during a trance that a warthog had attacked the panther and that he had been disemboweled. Evidence showed that the nails of his hands had been used for the crime but strangely no trace of blood had been found under his nails. One explanation would be that she would have licked them just as a feline washes its paws. The woman's amnesia also covered much of her early childhood, but no history of violence could be discovered.

When a patient behaves like an animal, it may seem like a particularly severe psychotic behavior. But these strange symptoms must be observed and examined carefully, as must dreams and fragments of memories that should be systematically explored and dissected. Alter animals can be partly linked to dissociated memories and they can be used to block access to a specific memory area. When the reasons for its development and the functions of the alter animal have been discovered and understood, this alter can then be connected with the memories of early childhood and the trauma that is the cause. Contact with these alter animals is an open door to the victim's most violent alters (which can be animal or human). These alters represent the identification of the victim with the most violent acts of the executionersx[344].

In satanic ritual abuses, torture and killing of animals is commonly used to intimidate and silence victims. The child is told that he will suffer the same fate if he talks about anything. In addition, he is forced to participate in barbaric acts in order to make him feel guilty in order to make him in turn "guilty", as we saw in chapter 4. The animal can therefore internalize itself to become a fractionation of the personality dissociated by trauma, an alter can show extreme rage. But through contact and reconciliation, an alliance can be created with the alter animal in order to make it a valuable tool that can help the victim in his recovery.

h/ T.D.I and therapies

This sub-chapter on therapy is not intended to serve as a medical or therapeutic guide. It is intended to provide some additional information to help us understand a little better the functioning of a split personality, as well as how the problem can be approached to provide support and help.

The therapeutic strategy for T.D.I. consists in "reuniting", or "merging", the personalities alternate with each other. It is a question of reducing their number until they have only one, usually the one that was originally present, the so-called "host" personality. This mechanism is called "integration", it is based on the following principles listed by Dr. Colin Ross:

- Contact all personalities using hypnosis.

- Gather all the constituent elements of the history of all alter personalities.
- Consider that each personality is a part of the whole.
- Develop mutual understanding and cooperation between the different alter personalities.
- Control alter personality changes. (switch)
- Make agreements with each personality in order to oversee the entire system.
- First of all, establish fusions between personalities according to their affinities.
- Progress towards the final integration and strengthen it by relying on the help of the patient's social relations.

Here are the types of questions that can be asked when coming into contact with an alter personality, taking care to respect agency and ask permission to ask certain questions:

- What's your name?
- How old are you?
- What is your role?
- Why are you here?
- How long have you been here?
- What follows what event?
- What are your memories?
- Is there anyone else?
- How many are you?
- Are there children?
- Who is in distress?

etc...

In an article entitled "Dissociative phenomena in the everyday lives of trauma survivors", psychotherapist Janina Fisher gives four simple "laws" to understand the internal system of a dissociated personality and thus be able to work serenely with it(s):

- An alter is only a fraction of a whole: No matter what state the patient may find himself in at any given time, no matter how regressed, impotent and confused, there will always be other alter adults who will be confident and competent to move forward positively in therapy. No matter how self-destructive the patient may show at any given time, there are other alters who want to live and struggle to survive. There are always alters who will fight to live and who will fight to keep control over these overwhelming feelings of helplessness and demoralization. The patient must keep in mind that no matter which alter(s) dominate at a given time, it is only a fraction of a system designed to be in balance.

- The system is designed for survival and not for destruction: This "law" will allow the therapist to save unnecessary exhaustion during recurrent seizures and prevent unnecessary hospitalizations. Therapeutic work consists in helping the patient to adapt to this system so that he can cope with its complexity and the challenges that this poses in his present adult life. These dissociative functions, these personality changes, can be exploited constructively to be able to stay the course and be able to lead a life that has meaning, to be able to find pleasure in living and creating it. The fact that this system was designed to be adaptive also means that every crisis, every new "glitch" that occurs, actually provides the possibility of adjusting the system in another way to make it even more suitable for the patient's life. These crises therefore make it possible to understand a little better the functioning of the internal system.

- For each action, there will be an opposite and equal reaction: This means that each fraction, each part of the "Me", will have its opposite polarity or its opposite. For example, suicidal and self-destructive alters will have, as opposed, alters determined to live and fight and alters terrified at the thought of dying or having to feel pain. Alters who live in shame by wanting to hide and be invisible will be balanced by narcissistic alters or even exhibitionists. At any time,
a feeling, decision-making or point of view expressed externally will

be balanced internally by an equal opposite reaction. This systematic balance of opposites can have both positive and negative consequences because there is also an opposite response during positive changes or events. For example, if some alter develop greater trust and proximity to the therapist, others alter will feel threatened and try to sabotage the therapy to put distance with the therapist. While some alters will relentlessly test the skills, consistency and reliability of the therapist, other alters will feel sadness and desolation and will then want to redouble their efforts to please the therapist.

- The therapist is the therapist of all alter: The therapist is the therapist of the whole system and therefore of all the parts that compose it. To work only with certain alter while neglecting other parts would be to say that we only work with half of the patient. Whether with the "nice half", the "young half", the "self-destructive half" or the "good half" of the patient, therapeutic work cannot be effective by taking into account only part of a whole. If the therapist is the therapist of all parties, he will be neutral, he will not take sides and he will not keep secrets. He will thus discover the potential and usefulness that each alter brings to therapy and to the system as a whole, including violent, suicidal or self-destructive alters. He will see the interactions between the different alters, which will highlight the internal conflicts, just as a family therapist would. In the same way that the family system works, the patient will not be identified with any of his alter but rather with the global alter system. Due to the fact that in dissociative patients the system and the patient are one and the same person, the therapist must avoid a common pitfall in the treatment of dissociation: i.e. to talk to the system as if it were a single person acting as a "revolving door" giving access to the different "family members" so that they come to tell their stories successively. It is generally more useful to work mainly with the parent(s), i.e. the adult alter or the host personality, in order to teach them to acquire the necessary skills to promote communication and internal cooperation between all the alter.

At the beginning of therapy, due to his dissociative traumatic amnesia, the patient with an I.D.T. will first of all report a fragmented and incoherent experience. His complete and chronological personal history will come with time, through the gradual integration of memories and dissociated personalities. The process of integration can be compared to the construction of a puzzle that could not take shape without the different pieces that make up the life experiences that have been split by dissociation. Integration therefore consists in assembling these puzzle pieces to recreate a coherent whole including all the memories, whether they are valid or not. The pieces of memory belonging to the different senses (hearing, smell, touch, sight, taste: non-semantic memory) are managed by the hippocampus whose role is to transfer them to thecerebral cortex so that they are processed and integrated consciously. Thus, they go from an unconscious mode to a conscious mode, from a dissociated mode to an associated or re-welded mode. They become an integrated memory which can now be verbalized consistently[345].

The term merger is also used to describe the integration process. A mind that has not suffered trauma and dissociation works in a unified way. For a dissociated and fractional mind, fusion is the moment when two (see more) alter personalities become mutually aware of their respective existences. They then experience a kind of fusion, a dissolution of the amnesic walls that means that they will no longer have any separation and will therefore share the same memories. The "final fusion" is the intended purpose of therapy. The patient passes from a state with several identities to that of a unified subjective self, it is unification.

It is recognized by therapists that there are three main steps in the integration process. But above all it is absolutely necessary to establish a feeling of physical and mental security in the patient, as well as a stabilization and reduction of symptoms (comorbidity). This stabilization will make it possible to work on traumatic memories, memories that must be consciously integrated. The integration, or fusion of alter personalities, as well as rehabilitation, are reaching the final stage. These three steps may overlap due to an alter that might drag out more than others, but usually the therapist treats one step at a time.

- Phase 1: Safety, stabilization and reduction of symptoms:

First of all, it is a question of creating a kind of alliance between the patient and the therapist to establish confidence and stability. In this step, it is a question of minimizing behaviors that can be dangerous for both the patient and those around him. It is also necessary to reduce negative thoughts that can make it vulnerable to further external attacks. The management and control of post-traumatic stressis also a priority in Phase 1. Other behaviours that will have to be regulated are eating disorders, risk-taking, violence, aggression, *etc.* Alter personalities involved in violent behaviour and identifying with the aggressor(s) can be particularly difficult to manage. It is therefore a question of identifying them quickly to try to make an agreement, a kind of contract with them to help the patient to secure himself. These frightening, angry and violent alters often have a protective role, despite appearances, they are there to protect the patient.

The alter "observers" can be very useful to reconstruct chronologically the shattered memories in order to know what happened, the course of events (or the illusion and manipulation that the executioners wanted to create).

Generally, alter personalities consider themselves as a truly separated person, outside the alter group and autonomous. It is when they become aware of the existence of other alter, that they will realize that they are multiple and that they belong to the same physical body. This awareness will, for example, avoid self-harm and a commitment can be concluded with each of them to avoid self-destructive behaviour. Many alter feel empty, depersonalized or uncertain of their identity, it is precisely because they are only part of a whole. It is all together that they form a complete person. It is therefore a question of creating a form of cohesion where each alter knows the others and finds its place in the group, or internal system.

Making alter assistants in therapy is a major asset, it is also necessary to develop strategies to improve their understanding and mutual communication because the patient loses a lot of energy to have to manage internal conflicts between them. The development of a relationship of trust and dialogue with alter personalities will be the key to discovering trauma (phase 2) and achieving stability and integration (phase 3).

Non-verbal and emotional communication is also an important point. Some alter will need to be hugged, while others will take this gesture for an attempt at sexual approach. Some alter are unable to look straight into the eyes the person in front of them.
Some will express themselves in an extroverted way while others will be totally terrified and will just need to listen to reassuring words. Some can not speak, they will need to communicate through writing, drawing or through another alter who will have a role of mediator. The therapist should not fall into favouritism and should treat each alter equally. Nor should he be frightened by those who seem hostile because they use anger to protect the most vulnerable alter, who are usually young children. During this phase, there may also be the use of anchoring techniques in the present moment and methods of self-hypnosis. Sometimes it will be necessary to resort to medications to compensate for risky behaviors, but this should not be the heart of the treatment. It is also in this first phase to develop in the patient acceptance and empathy for each part of his split personality, each alter must be considered for what he is and as having his role to play in the therapy and in the life of the patient.

- Phase 2: Confrontation and integration of memories Traumatic:

The second phase focuses on the traumatic memories of the patient. At this level, there is still a lot of work to help him accept the different parts of his personality and the alter must continue to get to know each other and live together. In this stage, the work is also to overcome the problems of blocking the patient in his past. One of the most difficult tasks in this phase is going to be to overcome the fear of traumatic memories in order to be able to integrate them effectively. The patient and the therapist will have to discuss together to reach an agreement on the memories that must be treated as a priority. Once these traumatic memories are processed and integrated, they must be shared with every alter personality who was not aware of them. This pooling of traumatic experiences with all the alters of the system is called "Synthesis". Once this Synthesis is successful, it must continue to lead to the full awareness that the traumas have been experienced, treated, and that they are now part of the past: it is the "Realization". Thus the patient will be able to give a precise place to the trauma in the chronology of his life. As a result, the pieces of the memorial puzzle will be reconstituted little by little to form a real chronological frieze. Synthesis is also followed by "Personification", i.e. the awareness that these traumatic memories belong to the patient, and to no one else. Finally, thanks to this work on traumatic memories, the patient can transform his memories, previously dissociated and scattered, into a coherent and understandable narrative, it is the "Narration". It is the transition from a non-verbal memory to a narrative and analytical memory.

During this stage, strong emotions will burst when the traumatic content of the memories will emerge to the consciousness. The patient may then manifest shame, horror, disgust, terror, anger, helplessness, confusion or grief. It is then a question of giving an adequate recovery time between each session so as not to destabilize or retraumatize the patient. But even with careful therapeutic planning, it may be necessary to make returns in phase 1 for a new stabilization when the rise of a memory is particularly violent. As traumatic experiences are integrated, alter personalities will become less and less separate and distinct. Spontaneous fusion can also occur but a premature global unification test can cause stress that would be negative for the patient. As the fragmentation of the patient subsides, he will acquire a certain inner calm with a sense of peace, especially when the therapy is accompanied by a spiritual renewal. Thanks to this new internal state, the patient will be better able to understand his traumatic history and to assume the problems of everyday life. The patient will begin to focus less on the traumas of his past to channel his energy into the present moment, which will help him a lot to develop new perspectives to project himself into the future.

- Phase 3: Integration and rehabilitation:

The third phase is aimed at the integration (final unification) of the personality. In the first two stages, the patient learned to overcome the fear of other parts of his personality and the fear of his traumatic memories. He also accepted and integrated the idea of having been abused as a child. Like a painful grief, the patient will have to abandon old beliefs to consider new perspectives. He will now have to learn to deal with emotions that can arise such as shame, fear, terror, anger and grief. The emotional manifestation of trauma can occur for more than two years, as a result of which unification is considered safe. During this period, the patient may spontaneously return to phase 2 because new traumatic memories may still emerge. After the final integration, the unification of all alter personalities, the patient will usually retain the skills and attributes of the different alters that were dissociated from his personality.

These three phases of treatment of T.D.I. are probably inspired by the work carried out in the nineteenth century by Pierre Janet. His psychotherapeutic method for the treatment of post-traumatic stress included the following three steps:

1 : Stabilization of symptoms in preparation for the liquidation of traumatic memories.

2 : The identification, exploration and modification of traumatic memories.

3 : Relief of symptomatological residues. Reintegration and rehabilitation of the personality. Relapse prevention.

Regarding the use of drugs, it is not a first-class treatment for dissociative disorders, but it can have its usefulness. Indeed, some patients require specialized treatment for substance abuse or eating disorders. Many therapists use hypnosis, this technique is intended to calm, soothe, contain or strengthen the "me". Hypnosis also provides access to alter personalities that are not directly accessible without a modified state of consciousness. Since the beginning of the nineteenth century hypnosis has been used for the treatment of T.D.I., it has emerged many studies demonstrating that these patients are highly hypnotisable in comparison with other clinical groups. The higher the hypnotistability of the individual, the more effective it will be in therapy. Hypnosis andself-hypnosis can also be very effective in the treatment of post-traumatic stress generally present in patients with T.D.I..

Other specialized therapeutic methods can be useful for these patients, such as family or expressive therapy, remodeling and dialectical behavioral therapy (TCD), sensorimotor psychotherapy, "primal" therapy, neuro-emotional integration by eye movements (EMDR), etc...

EMDR (Eye Movement desensitization and reprocessing) is a therapy of desensitization and reprocessing by the rapid movement of the eyes, this technique first of all used to erase post-traumatic shocks allows to treat many psychic traumas. Biofeedback or neurofeedback devices can also be an additional aid for the patient, as can acupuncture and even changes in food mode.

Group therapy is not recommended in the case of T.D.I., as many of these patients find it difficult to tolerate the process that encourages group discussions about participants' traumatic experiences. However, from a certain stage of integration, group energy may be an effective support for the patient. The treatment of T.D.I. is usually done on an outpatient basis (not requiring hospitalization), however, hospital treatment will be necessary if the patient shows risks against himself (self-harm, suicide attempt) or against others during the dissociative phases.

Expressive therapies will also play a positive role in the patient's recovery. Journaling, art therapy, music therapy, horticultural and animal therapy (especially with horses), movement therapy, psychodrama, occupational therapy and recreational therapy offer the patient the opportunity to apply a wide range of techniques that can provide a means of expression and stabilization. This will facilitate the concentration, pragmatic thinking, organization and cooperation of the internal world (the alters). Artistic practices such as painting, writing, collage, sculpture, etc., can serve as a visual and palpable recording of the experience of alter personalities, productions that can thus be examined at any time of the treatment.

To conclude this sub-chapter on therapies, here are some practical tips and exercises[346] directly aimed at patients with dissociative disorders:

It's about becoming aware of Tici and now." For this, it is useful to observe and perceive oneself consciously, without making judgments. When you notice that you are entering a dissociative state, that is, that you are starting to leave, that you are no longer quite there, that you perceive yourself less well, try to mark a pause. By practicing, and perhaps even with therapeutic support, you will be able to learn to answer the following questions:

- What situation did I find myself in when I started to dissociate myself?
- How did I feel on the bodily and psychic levels?
- What's the last thing I remember?
- I knew I was entering a dissociative state because:

1/ I started for example to swing, to perceive myself as in a fog, to have headaches……………………………………………………

2/ I stopped for example to speak, to think clearly, to be in eye contact ...

3/ I began to tell myself that I could die, that no one could be trusted, that I never do anything right...

- What did I try to avoid?
- What could I have done instead?

If, over time, the patient is able to answer these questions better and better, he will be able to better control his dissociative behaviors and will have more control over things.

What can you do when you enter a dissociative state?

- Realize that you are in a dissociative state, a state that will pass as everything goes.

- Also be aware that this behavior occurs because it protected you in the past. Now you don't need it anymore, you have other ways.

- Find a formula like: "Now I am an adult and in security". Say this sentence out loud to yourself.

- Keep your eyes open and feel the ground under your feet.

- Do you have an object that you liked (for example a plush or other benevolent companion)? Perceive it consciously.

- Activate your senses with the help of something cold (for example, pass ice cubes or cold water on your hands, arms, face).

- Become aware of the difference between then and now. Tell yourself aloud the date of the day, where you are and how old you are.

- Breathe consciously. Feel the air come in and out of your lungs. Breathe with your eyes open, focus a little more on exhalation.

- Do something that demands your attention and activates your senses: read or watch a picture, listen to music, touch a stone, smell the smell of a flower or essential oil, consciously taste the aroma of a raisin, sunflower seeds or something spicy.

- Move: walk around, shake your limbs, tap your feet, dance...

- Do something with your hands: write, paint, gardening, a puzzle, crafts, *etc.*

- Take a shower and focus on water contact.

- Be understanding of yourself. You deserve to be gentle towards yourself.

- Be sure to surround yourself with people who do you good and with whom you do not feel threatened.

- When you are sure of this, you can say to yourself: I am now with such and such, I know that he wants me good. If I now enter a dissociative state, it has to do with old memoirs. As of this moment, I am safe.

- Imagine that you put in a safe all the elements of the past that weigh you down. Once locked up, they will no longer bother you.

5 - Development of T.D.I. in children

a/ Introduction

The T.D.I. starts in early childhood, its development will be done in the long term and it will generally be more obvious and more recognizable in adulthood. Dr. Greaves writes that "Personality fractions usually manifest themselves in early childhood, as early as 2 1/2 years of age and typically around the age of 6 or 8 years[347].

In an article entitled "Incipient multiple personality in children: Four cases", Dr. Fagan and Dr. McMahon reported the case of four children who developed the onset of personality splitting. The youngest was 4 years old and the oldest was 6 years old. Fagan and McMahon state in this article that "multiplicity is around 5 years of age until 8 years at the latest, but this will generally not be diagnosed until adulthood[348]."

In an article entitled "Psychotherapy with a ritually abused 3-year-old: deceptive innocence", psychotherapist Leslie Ironside reports that "dissociated identities were diagnosed in a child as young as three years old, ritually abused and having endured extreme levels of trauma[349]. "

The existence of T.D.I. in children was established by Dr. Antoine Despine in 1840. He reported the case of an 11-year-old Swiss girl, Estelle, which was described earlier in this chapter. Dr. Richard Kluft has also published several papers on children and T.D.I. including the case of an 8-year-old child, Tom, which we will describe later. Morris Weiss, Patricia Sutton and A.J. Utecht reported in the Journal of the American Academy of Child Psychiatry in 1985 the case of a 10-year-old girl in an article entitled "Multiple Personality in a 10-

Year-Old Girl".

In her book "Healing The Unimaginable", Canadian therapist Alison Miller writes: "I dealt with the case of a 10-year-old girl who had just an alter personality in addition to her host personality, a 3-year-old alter (...) When she was bored at school, the 10-year-old girl "went inside her head", the 3-year-old alter then emerged and took control of the body by behaving like a 3-year-old child, which was of course inappropriate in a classroom. The 10-year-old girl therefore found herself in the principal's office without having any idea what had happened[350].

Of course, the systematic response to such behavior in a child will be to say that it is a question of whims, a voluntary regression of the child "who makes his baby". But dissociative disorder and dissociative amnesia shed light on this kind of "capricious" behaviour from a completely different point of view. Of course, children make whims and sometimes act in a way that is not appropriate for their age, but there are certain criteria for determining whether it is a dissociative disorder, as in this case when the little girl does not seem to remember her baby behavior.

Many patients reported that their alter personalities were born during their childhood. Unfortunately in children, dissociative disorders are usually undiagnosed for several reasons:

- Children with T.D.I. usually have secondary signs and symptoms of the disorder. They will frequently have attention deficit, hyperactivity, behavioural disorders, high anxiety, depression, somatization, post-traumatic stress, dissociation and symptoms that may appear to be psychotic in nature. Vomiting and nausea, headache and fainting are the most common somatizations in a child. Trance states or conversion symptoms (dissociative paralysis), which are common in adult patients, are rarer in children. The inner voices that the child may hear may be misdiagnosed as "schizophrenia".

- Due to the fact that dissociation and the states that may resemble it are more common phenomena in healthy children than in healthy adults, these dissociative symptoms can be ignored and misinterpreted as normal child behavior.

- Intra-family abuse, a chaotic family environment and psychiatric disorders of family members will not only complicate the diagnosis but will also prevent proper follow-up of the child.

- But above all, the most important cause of misdiagnosis is the insufficient training of clinicians and their lack of experience with T.D.I.. Their disbelief about the legitimacy of this diagnosis of multiple personality disorder will mean that they do not seek in any way to detect its presence[351].

In children, amnesia, alternations of totally different behaviors and hallucinations (usually auditory) are symptoms of a dissociative disorder. Amnesia can manifest as "holes" during the day, meaning that dissociation has occurred at some point. In adolescence, the symptoms will begin to be more marked than in children under 11 years of age, so adolescents will be more easily diagnosed with t.d.i.. Any child with a history of physical or sexual abuse should receive an assessment for the presence of a dissociative disorder. When the abuse began in early childhood, was recurrent and sadistic, involved ritual practices and the parents themselves have severe mental disorders, then a prolonged observation of the child must be made, as well as a history of all the encounters that the child may have had with adults. This work must be accompanied by attentive interview sessions to establish an accurate diagnosis. Children whose parents themselves suffer from a dissociative disorder should be particularly monitored on a regular basis. Several authors have reported the link between dissociated patients and their dissociated families. The majority of these dissociated parents themselves have a history of physical or sexual abuse dating back to their early childhood[352]. A vicious circle that must be understood, especially with regard to satanic transgenerational families...

Here is a list of the child's behavioral disorders that may possibly be related to an T.D.I.:

Intermittent depression - Trance or self-hypnotic state - Fluctuation in intellectual abilities and moods, rapid regressions - Amnesia - Auditory hallucinations (especially with inner voices) - Recurrent imaginary companions - Speaking alone - Sleepwalking - Night terrors - Sudden paralysis - Hysterical symptoms - Refers to himself in the third person - Responds to another name, or uses another name - Significant changes in the head onality and behaviour - Forgetting or confusing basic and basic things - School work fluctuating from one opposite to another - Hyper-destructive behaviour - Self-harm - Violence against others - Suicidal words or behaviour - Inappropriate sexual behaviour -
Social isolation, anti-social behaviour[353].

b/ The case of a three-year-old child

In September 1988, the journal "Dissociation" of the International Society for the Trauma and Dissociation (ISSTD) published an article describing the case of a little girl showing a dissociation of the personality caused by repetitive traumas. The authors of this article entitled "The development of symptoms of multiple personality disorder in a child of three" are Dr. Richard Riley, who worked for the U.S. Army in the Efmp (Exceptional Family Member Program) in Belgium. , and Dr. John Mead, a private practitioner from Pasadena, California.

The child was followed from the age of 14 months, she suffered multiple repetitive traumas that developed in her a dissociative state. The progression of his dissociative disorder was recorded on videotape during a legally ordered follow-up.

Cindy (pseudonym) was first followed by Dr. Riley at the age of 14 months. It was decided that she should be examined for assessment following a conflict between the foster family, Joan and David (pseudonyms) and the biological mother Diane (pseudonym). Cindy had been returned to the care of the foster family on the second day after her birth. She had had very limited contact with her biological mother between the ages of 3 months and 4 1/2 months, but had not had any since.

In the first evaluation session, Cindy showed a very positive attitude. She was curious and exploring the office, visibly cheerful and confident. She appeared as a child receiving a lot of love and affection, it was clear that there was a strong attachment between her and her host family. She was also able to let the couple leave the room without showing anxiety.

When Cindy was seen in the clinic at the age of 16 months, her biological mother came to visit her for a few hours twice a week at the host family's house. It was then reported that Cindy was sleeping badly, that her appetite had deteriorated and that she was having tantrums. Unlike the previous meeting, she was restless, she clung to her foster mother and became very anxious when she left the room to leave her alone with the doctor. All these findings were reported to the judge, however custody of the child was entrusted to the biological mother with gradual access from the foster parents so that Cindy could adapt to the change. However, the biological mother followed this visiting schedule very sporadically and it was learned too late that during this period she had given birth to another baby girl, who died of sudden infant death syndrome at the age of 3 months.

At the age of 20 months, Cindy returned to a clinical visit, accompanied by Diane, the biological mother, and Joan, the foster mother. Cindy had accepted everyone's company and she seemed comfortable in this situation. At the age of 23 months, during another visit with her foster mother, Cindy was very frightened and clinging to her. In the months that followed, her emotional state deteriorated completely, she insisted that she be huged and she cried if she was not in physical contact with her foster mother. She had recurring health problems and once arrived on a visit with a hematoma on her earlobe. She then confessed that her biological mother had beaten her. She also stated that she was called "Lila" by members of her biological family. She repeatedly made it clear that her half-brother was touching her genitals and that he was inserting objects into her vagina. She regularly reported being physically and sexually abused.

Following these statements, a decision was made so that custody in the biological family was only limited during the day, Cindy was then 2 and a half years old. Her condition then improved and her anxiety decreased, but she was still very angry and continued to cling to her foster mother. She even wanted to sleep with her and woke up several times a night to check that she was there. Joan reported that the little one was talking during her sleep by repeatedly repeating "my name is Cindy R." (the name of the host family). Cindy continued to talk about physical and sexual abuse during day visits to her biological family and she began to replicate these abuses on her adopted sister, David and Joan's biological daughter...

Another medical expert was then appointed to examine the child in the environment of his biological family. He reported that Cindy was "cheerful and outgoing and had no abnormal or unusual behavior." During this time, the foster mother paid an unexpected visit to Cindy in her biological family and the little one did not seem to recognize her or pretended that she did not know her...

The first filmed session happened when Cindy was 3 years old. Three sessions had been scheduled to determine the state of relations between Cindy, her biological mother and her foster family, but also to record all the reports of abuse on videotape. She spontaneously reiterated her testimony about the sexual abuse perpetrated by her brothers as well as the fact that her biological family systematically called her "Lila" instead of using her real name. At one point during a session, she reacted when the word Lila was mentioned by saying "What?", as if it were she who was being called. She denied her visits to her biological family, while talking about them in a direct way. She also reported that her biological mother called her little. When she talked about the members of this biological family, her way of talking about them and her behaviour became totally different. Her language became immature, her body postures and manners were like those of a doll. This series of video recordings was provided as evidence of ill-treatment before the jury. As a result, the duration of childcare in the biological family has been further reduced.

Three months later, the biological mother made a request by her lawyer for a session with her daughter to be filmed with her: the alter personality Lila presented herself directly during this session with the biological mother. There were then five meetings, four of which were recorded. During the premiere, Cindy was ready to answer any questions about the host family without hesitation. She gave emotional and emotional answers about the death of the foster family's paternal grandfather, while questions about the biological family were usually ignored or had the only answer: "I don't know." When it was announced to her that she would return the next day for another session, she nodded; but when it was added that she would come with her biological mother, she first remained silent, then she answered negatively and she ended up denying that she had just been told that she had to do a session the next day with her biological mother.

Following this, the child presented himself alternately with one of the two distinct personalities, it depended on the questions that were put to him. These personalities were those of Cindy or Lila. Lila said she wanted to be called that, and she didn't answer questions about the foster family or she said she didn't know. Sometimes she would hide behind the dollhouse or chair, out of sight of her biological mother, and Cindy could then emerge. At the end of a session, the little one wanted to stay to put away the mess she had put in the room, which was totally alien to Cindy's character. During the next three sessions, Cindy and Lila appeared alternately: with the presence of the biological mother, Lila was the active personality, but Cindy could sometimes emerge to play aggressively while criticizing Lilac for her behavior. Lila could answer some questions about the foster family but she had very limited knowledge about the family. She identified Joan R., the foster mother, as the "babysitter". In addition to this memory gap in her personal history, Lila seemed psychologically younger and her general knowledge was more limited than Cindy's. When Lila made a mistake, Cindy could emerge to correct her. Lila also had inappropriate sexual behavior in some games. Her language was less developed than Cindy's and phonetically more immature. An important point to point out is that Lila didn't seem to know Cindy, while Cindy was aware of Lila, she remembered the smallest things she had done. She didn't like him and she didn't like anyone in her biological family. Cindy was self-confident and dominant when she was not threatened. She also showed guilt and remorse when her behaviour hit someone.

The video recordings of the sessions were provided as evidence but were never used. The court explained that because not all the experts agreed in their conclusions and recommendations, the Court did not need these recordings. On the other hand, all the guards and the visits with the biological mother were stopped, and a follow-up in psychotherapy was set up for the little girl. Twelve sessions were scheduled over a four-month period. Her foster mother was always present and her adopted sister, Cheri, was present at three sessions. In the first session, Cindy was showing anger against her attackers and was encouraged to express it in her games. It was then that she let out the fear of her biological mother. Alter Lila emerged intermittently during this session and a few others thereafter. As the sessions progressed, Cindy began to call her adopted sister by the name of alter Lila. She made requests or gave him orders using the same stern tone as her biological mother. Little by little, Cindy began to love the alter and want Lila to live with her in the host family. She then let the alter take part in the games more freely. The two personalities also began to give information about the biological family without showing anxiety. One day Cindy said that she was older than Lila, she also strangely identified her foster mother as "Lila's mom". During another session, Cindy responded positively to the idea that she and Lila could get together. As a result, she seemed to be doing much better and she started going to school. In one of the last few sessions, she explained that she and her sister were both Lila, but that one of them had grown faster.

The case of little Cindy therefore showed two criteria related to the T.D.I.:

- Presence of two identities or personality states, each with its own mode of perception, relationship with others and thought, as much on the environment as on oneself.

- At least two of these identities or personality states take control of the person's behavior, on a recurring basis.

Cindy and Lila are both complex personalities, each having their own memories, their own behavior with different social relationships. Cindy stated that she was older but also bigger than Lila. She referred to Lila as someone separated from her and living elsewhere. Lila was more immature than Cindy, both in her language and in her manners. Her level of general knowledge was lower than Cindy's. Alter Lila also seemed more dependent and submissive while Cindy's personality was aggressive, assertive and enterprising: she blamed Lila for things she had said or done. For Cindy, Joan was her mother while for Lila, she was simply her "babysitter". Cindy knew Lila while Lila didn't seem to know Cindy. Both personalities showed amnesia. The child could change his personality simply by moving or changing his position body: the transitions (switch) were very fast.

The case of little Cindy responds to five symptoms of T.D.I. listed by Dr. Fagan and Dr. McMahon in their article cited above:

1- She sometimes showed dazed or trance-like behaviour.

2- It answered more than one name.

3- It showed very marked changes in behaviour.

4- She was lost in memory about recent events.

5- She showed a variation in her knowledge and skills.

The authors of the article conclude: "What would have happened to this child if she had not been removed from her biological family? Probably she would have continued to develop and strengthen her personality disorder with this alter Lila allowing her to be able to manage the circumstances of traumatic life[354]."

c/ The case of a seven-year-old child

Psychologist Wanda Karriker reported the case of a 7-year-old girl, whom she named Katie (pseudonym). Her parents had brought her for a psychological assessment following the advice of her teacher because she behaved strangely at school. She had extremely variable results and sometimes she sucked her thumb while having a baby's behavior. Sometimes she seemed to be like locked into her own world. During the interview with the parents, the mother said: "It's as if she has two extremes, sometimes she's totally passive and sometimes she becomes violent, she's in a murderous mood."

Following an evaluation session of her RQ, little Katie looked at the erasable painting and asked if she could draw something on it, to which the psychologist obviously answered in the affirmative. The little one then asked "Tell me what to draw?, Why not an image of your family?", retorted Karriker. Katie then began to draw three ghostly figures on the painting by subtitling them "dad", "mom" and ... ''Lucy''. She represented in her family a child named Lucy, but did not represent herself as Katie. ''You know what?'' she said, looking under her shirt, ''I can press my navel to get Lucy out.'' The psychologist then asked if this Lucy looked like her and the little girl replied: "She is cute, she has short blond hair with blue eyes". (Katie had long brown hair with dark eyes). The little one continued: ''You know what? She always gives me the answers in mathematics.'' After this the psychologist asked her if she could speak directly with Lucy and again, Katie looked under her shirt pressing her navel and saying, ''Lucy, come here!'' It was then that her facial expression turned into a much more mature child, with an obvious change in body language. She introduced herself and said, ''Hi, I'm Lucie.'' The psychologist then asked where Katie was now, to which the little girl replied "Up there", while pointing to a corner of the ceiling. "Can't you see her up there?" she said. The child seemed to experience depersonalization, a phenomenon in which a person feels detached from his body (we will return to this in the next chapter).

blondes with blue eyes''. (Katie had long brown hair with dark eyes). The little one continued: ''You know what? She always gives me the answers in mathematics.'' After this the psychologist asked her if she could speak directly with Lucy and again, Katie looked under her shirt pressing her navel and saying, ''Lucy, come here!'' It was then that

her facial expression turned into a much more mature child, with an obvious change in body language. She introduced herself and said, ''Hi, I'm Lucie.'' The psychologist then asked where Katie was now, to which the little girl replied "Up there", while pointing to a corner of the ceiling. "Can't you see her up there?" she said. The child seemed to experience depersonalization, a phenomenon in which a person feels detached from his body (we will return to this in the next chapter).

When the little one saw the camera in the therapist's office, she immediately started dancing and singing, and then suddenly she tung herself to the ground, kicking in the air and moaning: "No, no! Don't do that to me,' while putting his hands on his mouth and rolling in the fetal position. It was as a result of this that Wanda Karriker seriously began to question the mistreatment that little Katie might have suffered to the point of developing these deep dissociative disorders. Troubles that her teacher described as a withdrawal from her own world.

When Karriker gave her findings to the parents, she specified to them the change in behavior between Katie and Lucie, a radical change that had been filmed. The psychologist told the parents: ''I don't have to make a formal diagnosis, but I believe that your daughter has created at least one imaginary friend, if not perhaps an alter personality, in order to help her cope with something that she could not bear.'' The psychologist explained to the doubtful parents that she herself had never observed a multiple personality disorder in a child before that. She explained that when a child is faced with unbearable trauma, he or she can unconsciously create different "states of mind" in order to help him or her mentally and emotionally overcome the pain. Following this interview with the parents and the explanations concerning the issue of trauma, the psychologist never saw little Katie again to be able to tell her to see her again...

A few weeks later, Katie's mother called Karriker back to tell her that she had been diagnosed with an STD (Sexually Transmitted Disease) and that the pediatrician had recommended a psychiatrist for the little one. Shortly after, Wanda Karriker was contacted by Katie's father's lawyer, informing him that she would soon receive a subpoena... Indeed, the little one had just confided to the psychiatrist that her father had done bad things to her. sexual abuse, which has therefore been reported to the social services.

During her testimony in the presence of the defense lawyers, psychologist Wanda Karriker stated that the child had never verbalized the abuse before her, but that she had been excluded from the therapy when she suggested the possibility that trauma could have induced the dissociative behaviors of the little girl... Wanda Karriker was only able to know the outcome of the case through the lawyers, but it would appear that the accusations of sexual abuse have been confirmed. Little Katie was taken away from her parents and placed in the care of social services.

Subsequently, a therapist contacted Karriker to obtain copies of the various psychological tests she had been able to do at the time with little Katie; this therapist wrote to her: *"Katie is an enigma. We are not getting much progress with it. She always finds herself in conflict, but then she denies having done anything wrong. Sometimes she behaves like a baby, she has a lot of angry seizures while she can sometimes be totally pa.ssive, not responding to anything For example the way she refuses to see her mother or father when they come for supervised visits. "*

Wanda Karriker couldn't help but ask this therapist if the little one had been treated for her profound dissociative disorders. To which the therapist replied: "But Dr. Karriker, this little girl does not show any symptoms of multiple personality".

Later, recalling the degree of dissociation of little Katie, as well as how she behaved when a camera was spinning in the cabinet, Karriker realized that if she had been able to work longer with her, the little one would certainly have revealed more things to her about abuse. Her behavior in front of a camera led the psychologist to think that her parents used her to produce childpornography and God knows what other horrors[355].

The case of this little girl illustrates some of the practices denounced in chapter 3. That is, all those children dissociated and divided by intra-family abuse, children removed from their families to be placed and who potentially become targets and prey for paedocriminal networks and mind control programs. In the case reported here by Dr. Wanda Karriker, we have a little girl visibly divided by traumas who finds herself separated from her parents and it is interesting to note that the psychiatrist in charge of caring for little Katie once she has been placed, states that she shows absolutely no symptoms of multiple personality... In other words, he keeps Pandora's box closed by completely ignoring the dissociative disorders of the little girl, or else he is in no way trained for it.

d/ the case of an eight-year-old child

The book entitled "Childhood Antecedents of Multiple Personality", published by Dr. Richard Kluft reports some cases of children whose personality is split. In particular, it describes in detail the case of an eight-year-old boy.

Tom was a boy with multiple personality disorder. It was later discovered that his grandmother also had a T.D.I.... One of the grandmother's alters admitted to abusing the mother, who was probably also suffering from severe dissociative disorders. So we are still here in a context of transgenerational T.D.I.

Tom was usually a wise and exemplary child, but he could suddenly become extremely difficult while denying any bad behavior he might have had, even if it had just happened moments earlier. He began to lie blatantly while totally refuting his participation in acts that his entire family had witnessed. His voice, his verbal and body language, as well as his friendships, varied with what seemed to be his "moods"... Sometimes he even said he was a girl and then behaved in an effeminate way. Following these episodes he admitted in a very embarrassed way that he thought he was a girl, but that nevertheless he had no memory of having behaved in this way... He had a predisposition for accidents but did not seem to learn any lessons from them. His academic performance was extremely erratic. Often it was found by his teachers that he had not understood certain subjects and when questioned, he said that he had never been taught these things... His teachers therefore concluded that he was slow-witting and that he simply had learning difficulties.

Tom also frequently said that some of the clothes in his wardrobe were not his and he became confused when his mother tried to remind him when they bought them together. The child was often depressed, especially when called a liar, especially when confronted with acts in which he had just denied having participated. The child was perfectly aware of his efforts to cover his holes with recurring memories because he knew well that he was often "in the moon".

Tom confessed that he heard voices in his head, both girls' and boys' voices.

During the interview with the therapist, several types of behaviours were noted, as well as changes in his voice. In addition, there were glaring amnesias regarding the content of the interview. His therapist used hypnosis to explore Tom's personality. The therapist reported that as soon as Tom found himself in a hypnotic trance, a personality with a deep voice spontaneously emerged. This alter said his name was ''Marvin'' and that he was an astronaut. Marvin told the therapist that Tom needed help because he "wanted to be a girl", this alter also gave some written advice to the therapist. Following this hypnosis session, Tom was totally amnesiac of this conversation between Marvin and the therapist. It was also found that Tom and Marvin's writings were totally different. A total of five alter personalities were discovered in this child. Tom was depressed and rather weak, which is classic for the "host" personality Alter Marvin's role was to help him in the face of anger and inconceivable fear. Tom had another alter named Teddy, as well as two female personalities named Wilma and Betty. Their characteristics were those of a mother, while Marvin and Teddy were rather a representation of the father with a rational and brutal character.

It appeared during the therapy that the young patient had dissociated himself in particular during an NDE (experience at the borders of death) at the age of two and a half years. He had fallen into a pond and almost drowned there. He had been taken out of the water lifeless to finally "resurrect[356]".

e/ Report on five cases

Here are now five cases that have been described as part of a dissociative disorders program set up at the Psychiatric Department of Istanbul University in Turkey. The study was conducted by Dr. Salih Zoroglu. The cases were reported in 1996 by the journal "Dissociation" in an article entitled "Dissociative disorder in childhood: five turkish cases".

Hale :

Hale was a ten-year-old girl who had recurrent migraines and nausea. She was irritable and crying for no apparent reason, she talked to herself, she laughed inappropriately, she had trance states and she self-harmed. She even behaved as a delinquent and also made up and dressed inappropriately. In addition she had night terrors and visual hallucinations.

Her mother first brought her to see a "Hoca" (traditional healer) who stated that she was possessed by jinn (demons in the Muslim tradition), but this consultation did not improve her psychic state.

During the first clinical session, she told the therapist that she had been hearing voices in her head for a long time. One of those voices was that of "Cisem", a very nice girl. The other voices were bad, they belonged to "people" of different ages and genders. It was these voices that forced her to do bad things and systematically commented on her behavior. As the therapy progressed, eleven alter personalities manifested themselves. Among them was Cisem, an older girl who wanted Hale to be happy and behave well. Cisem was frightened by the other alters who could punish her when she wanted to help Hale. The "Big Boss" was an elderly man who was the leader of the group of bad alters. Hale confided that this alter "Big Boss" and his acolytes could connect directly to what she was saying and what she was doing through an (internal) computer. They could also use this computer in observation mode and thus know everything it was doing in every detail. Hale therefore sometimes felt like a robot when she was under the control of this computer. There were in all six alter personalities who were under the control of the "Big Boss". In addition, there were two other suicidal alters completely separated from the others.

Hale was severely beaten in early childhood. During the therapy, she revealed that Cisem had been raped by a man named Erhan. The latter then became one of the alter persecutors, one of the assistants of the "Big Boss". Memories of the rape came up with flashes, but Hale did not accept the fact that it was she who had been raped and she insisted that she was totally separated from Cisem. Finally, after a long therapeutic work, all the alter personalities were integrated and all symptoms disappeared.

Mine :

The nine-year-old girl was taken to the children's psychiatric unit of the clinic where her mother was already staying. His father and brother had noticed that his behaviour changed abruptly when the father returned home. She had a very whimsical and aggressive behavior. She often cried and acted as if she saw faces that she seemed to be afraid of and talked to all the time.

One day, she went to the police and said that two men were following her. These two men were in fact her father and her brother whom she no longer recognized... She then spent the night at the police station (for her safety), and the next morning, after returning to her normal state, she could not remember anything that had happened the day before.

The girl told her mother that she had a friend inside her. A friend she could see and play with, she also helped her keep her father and the boys at bay. Mine heard voices in her head, one of them was that of a girl one year younger than her. This alter emerged during a therapy session called "Ayse". This alter personality stated that she had been with Mine for three years and that she was on good terms with her. When asked where Mine was at that moment, she replied

that she didn't know while continuing to play with a puzzle. Later, when Mine "came back", she looked at the puzzle half reconstructed by Ayse but without having any idea of the time that had happened or what Ayse had done during that time. Subsequently, another alter personality of the opposite sex was identified. It has been reported that his father was a chronic alcoholic who beat his wife and children. In the case of Mine, the therapy was unfortunately very random because it is
was based on his mother's hospitalizations.

Mehmet :

Mehmet's family had regularly observed that his behaviour was changing dramatically. This 11-year-old boy sometimes began to read and write in a way that was totally immature for his age. He could no longer pronounce the letter "R", he did not even know his name or age. The only thing he remembered was his parents. In those moments, he would become like a small introverted child and he would have fun with toys that were inappropriate for his age. In addition, he no longer had any notion of time during his "crises".

Mehmet was followed in therapy once a week for two months. In the fourth session, he arrived with his premorbid personality, he no longer recognized his therapist and did not seem to remember the previous sessions. This personality was that of a friendly boy with a very mature behavior and speech for his age. He was particularly interested in science. He was totally amnesiac of the times when he acted like a very young child.

His parents reported that the personality changes had begun three months earlier. Each personality would emerge for three or four days, then he would not remember anything at all when another alter had taken over. Mehmet sometimes had paralysis of one arm that lasted ten to thirty minutes as a result of which he was hospitalized four times in different hospitals, including two university clinics. Comprehensive examinations (neurological, cranial, electro-encephalogram) showed nothing abnormal, the paralysis of the arm were diagnosed as a dissociative conversion disorder. The

prescription of anti-psychotics, antidepressants, tranquilizers and anti-epileptics did not help him in any way, on the contrary, these drugs caused him a
violent behaviour.

During her therapeutic follow-up, two other alter personalities were observed. One with which he lost his ability to walk and speak: he was clearly an alter at the baby stage, his voice and expressions attested to this. In the other alter personality, he exclaimed "I'm crazy, I'm crazy!" and he didn't recognize anyone at all anymore.

In his case, no psychological or physical trauma was revealed. Her older sister also claimed that there had been no abuse or neglect in the family. None of Mehmet's alter personalities had visual or auditory hallucinations, nor any such manifestation by which an alter could communicate. The boy could easily be hypnotized but alter personalities did not emerge by this method. The changes came rather spontaneously and Mehmet remained totally amnesic of these "crises". The family eventually stopped the therapy and reported a year later that the dissociative disorders had ceased and that Mehmet had regained a good level of maturity.

Emre :

Emre was a five-year-old boy when he was hospitalized in a clinic at his mother's request. The boy had sudden aggressive behaviors during which he broke objects, attacked his friends, strangers and even his mother. He also had short periods of trance, in addition he heard voices, he had horrible visions and many somatic symptoms such as migraines and nausea. Sometimes he seemed to talk to himself, laughing and chatting for hours with who knows who... His behavior was completely polarized and he had sexualized attitudes inappropriate for his age.

He said he heard the voices of four girls and six boys in his head, all between the ages of four and twelve. he
could see them, play with them and chat with them when he was all alone. One of the girls, "Gamze the Witch", had a pistol with which she frightened Emre and the other children. Sometimes she would hit

Emre and break her toys, or she would have fun scaring him at night. During the third therapy session, Emre stated that a twelve-year-old girl named "Cunyet" wanted to talk to those present. This is how the alter Cunyet presented herself: she was the eldest and it was she who protected Emre and the other children of the witch Gamze, the alter persecutor. When the therapist asked where Emre was, Cunyet designated an empty chair saying he was sitting there listening to them. Although it was reported by his parents that the child was often amnesiac, there was no amnesia between these two alternate personalities during therapy. No traumatic past was reported in the case of this boy.

Nilgun :

This 10-year-old girl was once brought into therapy by her father. Her symptoms were recurrent boredom, sadness, crying for no apparent reason, loss of appetite, trance states, severe migraines, fainting, nausea, stomach pain and extreme tantrums.

Nilgun was diagnosed with depression by two psychiatrists. During the first interview, the girl stated that there was an older girl inside her named "Fatma". She said she had been hearing his voice almost every day for more than two months. This voice comforted and encouraged her, she also commented on her behaviors, feelings and thoughts. She also warned Nilgun never to tell anyone about this, including the therapist. At first alter Fatma refused to talk to the therapist, then he began to communicate through Nilgun, only to emerge completely: Fatma then told the therapist that she had to "go" into Nilgun following a disastrous event that only she knows, this in order to help the girl. She said that she did not have the same relatives as Nilgun and that she had taken control several times to help him but that Nilgun did not know what she was doing because she did not see her. She also stated that she didn't know everything Nilgun was doing...

When alter Fatma emerged, Nilgun's mimics, his way of speaking and his way of behaving with people was totally transformed. She seemed very serious and she gave concise and precise answers.

During the sessions, Nilgun liked to have fun with toys or puzzles, but Fatma was not interested in them at all. She said she was too old to play that way. She also claimed that Nilgun was inside her. While Nilgun was a blonde little girl with blue eyes, Fatma described herself as having brown eyes and hair. Nilgun was amnesic about the periods of time when Fatma took control. No past traumatic experiences were discovered in the case of this little girl[357].

6 - The T.D.I. in the media

a/ Documentaries

During the 90s, the Australian television channel Seven Network devoted a documentary to the phenomenon of multiple personalities in its series "The Extraordinary".

In 1993, the American channel HBO broadcast "Multiple Personalities: The Search for Deadly Memories", a documentary entirely devoted to the T.D.I..

In 1999, a French-language documentary was released in the series "Phenomena unexplained" entitled "Dédoublement de la personnalité" (originally directed by Gloria Sykes and produced by A&E Television Network). It seems that it is the only documentary in French on the subject.

In 1999, a documentary entitled "Mistaken Identity" was broadcast on the English channel BBC2 (in the series of programs "Horizon"), it gives the floor to several patients suffering from T.D.I. as well as therapists.

In 2004, a report entitled "The Woman With Seven Personalities", shows Dr. Ruth Selwyn accompanying Helen, a woman who has developed several personalities as a result of ritual abuse including sexual violence.

The documentary appears to be the most recent is from 2010, it is entitled "When The Devil Knocks" and was produced by Bountiful Films (Canada). It tells the story of Hilary Stanton, a woman diagnosed with an I.D.T. and followed by therapist Cheryl Malmo.

b/ Cinema and TV series

It is interesting to note that despite the fact that this psychiatric disorder is more or less hidden from the general public, many film productions have used it as a basis for establishing their script, here are some examples of films:

- The Case of Becky (1921)
- Dr Jekyll & Mr Hyde (1941)
- The Dark Mirror (La Double Énigme, 1946)
- The Three Face of Eve (Les Trois Visages d'Ève, 1957)
- The Manchurian Candidate (1962)
- The Nutty Professor (1963)
- A Clockwork Orange (1971)
- Sybil (1976)
- Dressed to Kill (Pulsions, 1980)
- *Zelig* (1983)
- Voices Within : The Lives Of Truddi Chase (Démons Intérieurs, 1990)
- Raising Cain (1992)
- Conspiracies (1997)
- Fight-Club (1999)
- Session 9 (2001)
- The Bourne Identity (2002)
- " Dédales " (2002)
- Identity (2003)
- Secret Window (2004)
- Hide & Seek (Trouble jeu, 2005)
- Mr Brooks (2007)

- Shutter Island (2010)
- Frankie & Alice (2010)
- The Crowded Room (2015)

We can also mention the television series Dollhouse, featuring the exploitation of "dolls" human programmed and amnesiac or "United State of Tara" which tells the story of a mother suffering from a T.D.I., but also the Canadian series "Shattered" whose main character is a policeman with a multiple personality... Trevor Sands' short film ''Inside'' features a patient with a rather motley multiple personality. The web series ''Neuroblaste'', produced in 2011 by Radio-Canada in motion comic format (animated comic strip), is inspired by the work on MK-Ultra-type brainwashing carried out at Montreal in the 1960s by psychiatrist Ewen Cameron.

Generally in film productions, the T.D.I. is represented in a stereotypical and biased way, showing only the attractive and sensational side of the multiple personality and overshadowing the other characteristics of the disease. In addition, most films dealing with this subject highlight extremely conflicting, violent, even murderous characters. This vision of the T.D.I. is limiting. In addition, cinema tends to mix and confuse schizophrenia and T.D.I., which further aggravates the general confusion between these two diagnoses. Since cinema is a visual art, the usual cinematographic representation of the T.D.I. does not make it possible to distinguish the true duplication of personality from the hallucination, which reinforces the confusion between schizophrenia and T.D.I[358].

As for the media image of mind control based on T.D.I., here is what therapist Alison Miller writes: "The popular representation of mind control by the mass media usually involves spies or assassins who work for the CIA or other military, political or even private companies, without their knowledge. This is because they have other "personalities" who act in these activities. Take for example Jason Bourne, the hero of the film "Conspiracies", or Echo in the series

"Dollhouse", among other American productions. These fictions that feature special agents suggest to the public that they were recruited as adults, even making a deliberate choice to participate in these things. Once they have been recruited, the story begins, their old memories are erased and a new personality with specific skills is then created. However, there is only one stage of life during which programmers can create an individual who can practice such activities without having any awareness of it, without having any resistance... There is only one way to do this, and that is through the abuse and torture of a young child. The awful reality is that there is no adult who would voluntarily engage in such things, there are only small victims[359].

c/ The incredible Hulk...

Everyone knows the character "Hulk", this man who turns into a kind of green giant with tenfold strength when something triggers in him an extreme rage. The Incredible Hulk is a creation of screenwriter Stan Lee and cartoonist Jack Kirby. This fictional character was popularized by Marvel Comics where he first appeared in the United States in 1962. What people know less is that the story of the incredible Hulk is based on a psychiatric disorder that is nothing but the T.D.I. with its dissociative amnesia. Without a split of his personality, the hero Bruce Banner would not turn into the incredible Hulk...

On the website of the publishing house[360] we can read a very detailed description about the hulk's world and particularly about his personality splitting. The publishing house perfectly describes the traumatic and dissociative context behind the story of the "green giant". We learn that Bruce Banner is the son of an alcoholic who hated him deeply. His father mistreated and terrorized him, even killing his mother before being interned in a psychiatric hospital. Very early on, Bruce showed signs of great intelligence but also of a withdrawal into himself. On can read on Marvel.com that he has "developed a duplication of personality to help him treat his pain and rage", the famous and incredible Hulk therefore suffers from a dissociative identity disorder...

At school, Bruce Banner was so unsociable and violent that he ended up putting a bomb in the basement of his school... which drew the attention of the army to this little genius who would later become a physicist working for the latter. It was accidental gamma irradiation that caused this phenomenon of radical physical transformation. At the beginning of the saga, Bruce transformed into a gray Hulk at sunset and he regained his human form at dawn. Subsequently, his change to "green giant" will be triggered by a strong adrenaline release when Bruce enters an extreme rage, at any time of the day. The Green Hulk does not have the same intelligence abilities as Bruce, nor the same memory, he is a furious mad alter that can be a real threat to society. It is important to note that Bruce Banner suffers from amnesia, he never remembers what Hulk did and he must reconstruct the events from the damage that his green alter caused in his path... This is clearly an uncontrollable rage where Bruce Banner enters a dissociative state. We are told that he constantly struggles to control these "switch" and maintain a stability of his own personality...

The story continues... One day, psychiatrist Leonard "Doc" Samson captures The Hulk and manages to separate Bruce Banner's personality from that of the Hulk. Without Bruce's personality to channel and restrain him, Hulk becomes even more dangerous. Bruce then judges that the only solution for him to control the "green giant" is to merge with the monster. But the stress of reintegration creates another alter: "Joe Fixit". This alter is a bad-tempered brute whose personality resembles that of Bruce's father. It is from this moment that a real battle is created in Bruce's subconscious to know which alter personality will take control and have supremacy. However, through hypnosis sessions, Banner, Hulk, and Joe Fixit are all put on the same level of consciousness so that they face unresolved issues together, that they finally face their inner demons. Bruce Banner must then confront the memories of his father who raped him and murdered his mother. By integrating this, Bruce becomes able to merge alter personalities to finally find an inner appeasement: another personality will then emerge, a new Hulk who will have the mental abilities and intelligence of Bruce Banner while keeping the strength of the incredible Hulk. This new personality will be called "The Professor"...

As you can see, we are swimming here in the middle of the subject of the functioning of multiple personalities, or even the process of mind control.

Hulk is one of those American superheroes (the Marvel Comics universe) that are often implicitly linked to dissociative identity disorder. Superheroes with on the one hand a completely classic civilian identity and also a secret identity with superpowers such as Batman, Superman or Spiderman (these three keep the memory of their transformation). We can mention characters like Double Face (one of the supervillains of the Batman universe) with a benevolent personality and a malevolent personality, or the character Legion, inhabited by multiple personalities each with psychic powers. Let's also mention the superhero Moon Knight who also has a T.D.I. with three alter personalities. In addition, he is in a relationship with an Egyptian god allowing him to become even stronger, especially on full moon nights... All these characters illustrate the marked presence of the T.D.I. in the culture of comics and superheroes. Dissociative amnesia is also present: The X-Men character, James Howlett, has an alter named Wolverine who is accustomed to amnesia, he never remembers the massacres he regularly engages in, just as Hulk does not remember his destructive rages. It is a perfect illustration of the phenomenon of traumatic amnesic walls in dissociated states.

It should be noted that in 1992, the *X-Men* series made a clear reference to the **MK-Ultra program in one of the episodes of season 4 entitled** *"Weapon X, Lies and Videotape".'* **In this episode the** *X-Men* **discover a laboratory where they had undergone mind control years before. They find in particular a video recording that**

contains the description of the experiments that have been made on them, here is what the cartoon reveals to us: *"Anonymous subjects have been tested and conditioned with trauma. We are able to reintegrate* **these** *men into society when the secret services need them, without them having any memory of having been programmed. They are conditioned and they don't remember anything... The key is to reach their subconscious. For this the subject must be repeatedly exposed to simulations of extreme emotional traumas. By using drugs, we impass false memories in the mind of the subject in order to saturate him emotionally and split him to make him controllable... This process seems to work best when the traumas are real..."* ... **THE** MK-Ultra program summarized in a few lines, but of course all this is just science fiction for belated teenagers...

7 - Conclusion

For Dr. Colin Ross, the serious study of T.D.I. should have caused a real paradigm shift in modern psychiatry, he writes: *"T.D.I. is the most important and interesting disorder in psychiatry, which is why I study it. I believe that this is a key dia.gnosticin this imminent change in the para.digme of psychiatry, because the T.D.I. best illustrates the characteristic response of the human organism to severe psychological trauma; but also because trauma is a major cause of mental illness from a public health point of view. I believe that trauma is a major underlying cause in many mental illnesses, such as depression, eating disorders, personality disorders, substance abuse, psychosomatic disorders and all forms of self-destruction and violence. Biological psychiatry should achieve much better results if it focused on thepsychobiology of trauma*[361].

It would seem that Francophone psychiatry is poorly trained, or even in no way trained in psychotraumatology and even less in terms of dissociative disorders.... French-language resources (publications of scientific studies, publications of testimonies, specialized works, investigations and journalistic reports) concerning the T.D.I., and more generally psychotraumatology, seem very limited if not non-existent. This is rather strange when this disorder is officially recognized in the DSM and there are a very large number of English-language books on the subject. Why such a gap in the French-speaking world? Why isn't psychotraumatology more developed? This would make it possible to better help the victims. Why is the existence of the T.D.I. vigorously attacked and discredited by a certain medical elite or pseudo-experts? Which not only do not recognize the phenomena of personality fragmentation, but also relativize the consequences that childhood trauma can have on the future life of the child.

It is a real leaden screed that covers this Pandora's box represented by ritual abuse and mental control based on trauma: that is, the neurological process of dissociation and traumatic amnesia. To teach in medical faculties the scientific functioning of dissociation, amnesic walls, and personality splitting would be to publicly and academically reveal some occult knowledge. A knowledge yet as old as the world and used nowadays in a systematic and malicious way by certain groups of powers. The process of functioning of slaves under mental programming is not supposed to reach the public and profane sphere. Most psychology and psychiatry students do not believe that such mind control is possible. This for the good reason that they have no knowledge of the basic concept behind the MK, ie the T.D.I., a personality disorder essential for a human to work like a robot in clandestine operations... or not.

In an article entitled "The Dissociative Disorders, Rarely Considered and Underdiagnosed", Dr. Philip M. Coons confirms that dissociative disorders are generally underdiagnosed because they are not taken into account due to lack of training. Dr. Coons notes that psychiatric professionals are not familiar with this diagnosis or even with dissociative symptomatology because, according to him, professionals seriously lack epidemiological data concerning dissociative disorders. Why such an omission in the psychiatric environment?

We have a beginning of an answer in Cathy O'Brien's

autobiography, *"America in the Middle of Trance-Formation".* **Mark Phillips writes about psychiatric institutions:** *"To date, neither the American Psychiatry Association nor the American Psychological Association has published a model for the development of an effective therapeutic protocol for dissociative disorders (considered to result from repeated trauma). A number of factors make the development of such a model difficult. The first of* **these** *factors concerns the secrecy that the National Security applies to the research on the control of the mind. In the current climate, a,train victims of mind control to psychiatric professionals for treatment would be equivalent to entrusting a patient requiring emergency surgery to a surgeon who would have been blindfolded and handcuffed* **(...)** *What would perhaps allow us to lay the foundations for an explanation would be to identify "who", within our government, would have an interest in blocking crucial discoveries of medical research and other technological information vis-à-vis the psychiatric professions* (**...**) *Moving on to the next step and then providing you with a copy of The Faculty Professor's Oxford's Companion To The Mind (Oxford Press, 1987), you can find practically everything related to mind research without the slightest reference to mind control. Perhaps you will now have the opportunity to realize through the omissions of random house, webster and other Oxford Press, that you are a victim of the control of Vinformatioh362}. "*

The survivor of the MK-Monarch program, Cathy O'Brien, writes in this book: "There are many similar facilities in our country, within various CIA, army and NASA complexes, where the government's hyper-advanced knowledge is developed, tested and modified. The people I met, who had studied in depth the scientific mechanisms of the brain and the ins and outs of the mind, used this accumulation of secret knowledge to manipulate and/or control others (...) (Editor's note: Senator) Byrd explained to me that the 'New World Order' "saw its powers strengthened' by allowing its lobby, the American Psychiatric Association (APA), only partial information and/or deliberate misinformation of the psychiatric community regarding the modalities of treatment of serious dissociative disorders resulting from the control of the mind! Its authors believed that the retention of knowledge and the proliferation of deliberate disinformation allowed them to control their secrets and, subsequently, humanity. This could well be the case if no one could or would react to the information presented in this book! 363]."

Here is a dialogue from the book "For Reasons of National Security" which illustrates the lack of knowledge of the psychiatric world on this subject:

- I made a lot of phone calls, marsha begins, it's really complicated to approach psychiatric professionals on a "classified" topic such as mind control. They like to believe that they already know everything about it. Mark and I nod their heads.

- Have you tried using the term "brainwashing"? I asked him.

- Yes, Marsha replies, I have even resolved to use the expression "behaviour change", and I still have difficulty describing the disorders, and even more so finding an institution able to take care of them. If you agree, I'll run a search again, but this time to find someone who could diagnose him with TPM (T.D.I.).

- Is there anyone in this state who knows how to treat these disorders? Mark asks. According to current psychiatric standards, it takes on average 8 and a half years to diagnose this syndrome, and during this time there must be treatment. Until the "types of intelligence" have disseminated to psychiatric settings the data allowing accurate diagnosis and adequate treatment, our only solution lies in the old, obsolete therapies in the long term. How do you plan to find someone in this state to diagnose the consequences of the CIA abused Kelly! [354]]?

Mental health professionals are obviously not trained to properly diagnose a person suffering from a dissociative identity disorder... This psychiatric disorder is not taught in the faculties, so we do not try to detect it and if you do not look for something, you do not find it... so it does not exist, the circle is closed. The lack of a correct diagnosis, by depriving the patient of adequate treatment, is the most important and common problem for patients suffering from t.d.i.. The latter will generally be diagnosed as schizophrenic, bipolar or borderline... not to mention, of course, the heavy prescription of psychotropic drugs that are part of the therapeutic protocol, copiously fattening pharmaceutical laboratories, by the way...

In Canadian therapist Alison Miller's book, "Healing the Unimaginable", a patient (LisaBri) testifies: "In the early 90s, I was diagnosed with all kinds of disorders, from schizophrenia to premenstrual syndrome. I was told to find a hobby and not drink in the evening. The psychiatrist would pull out of his office a box of white pills every time I showed an emotional sign. All the therapists, doctors and psychiatrists I met wanted me to stifle my emotions or keep them away from me. But where could these emotions go? The more I suffocated them, the worse I went, until the day I found myself wandering in the secure area of a psychiatric hospital... I managed to get medication and alcohol and finally found a competent therapist to work with. I was determined to do everything to curb these intense emotional states that I was experiencing. I was quickly diagnosed with a T.D.II365].."

By studying more closely the question of T.D.I., it is easy to understand that the dissociative and amnesic functions of the human mind can be exploited for the purpose of manipulation and exploitation of the individual. This is a true parallel psychiatric science, which is put in the wrong hands and becomes a traumatic science and an undetectable weapon of mind control. If this fractional personality disorder with its amnesic walls is not taught in medical schools and is systematically controversial and decrepit by an elite of experts, it is for the simple reason that it is the main axis of mind control practiced by certain dominant occult organizations. This is the cornerstone of the "nameless religion": the ritual abuses allowing MK programming, itself based on the structuring and organization of an internal system resulting from a T.D.I..

In addition, the T.D.I. opens the way to the question of demonic possession and the possible existence of an occult science mastering the parameters of this possession by certain entities. For as we will see in the next chapter, T.D.I. and demonic possessions are intimately linked. Nowadays the ability to study both the spiritual and psychological aspects of mental control phenomena is often lacking, but there are exceptions such as Dr. Loreda Fox's book "The Spiritual Dimensions of MPD". It is inevitable to address at some point the issue of demonic possession in the trauma-based mind control process. Traugott Konstantin Oesterreich, who was professor of philosophy at the University of Tubingen in Germany, closely studied multiple personalities and demonic possession. He wrote a reference book which was translated into English in 1930 under the title "Possession: Demoniacal and Other". His anthology work on the subject provides documented cases indirectly revealing that trauma-induced mind control was practiced in Germany, France and Belgium long before the twentieth century. Oesterreich's research of the early 1900s was the kind of research of which MK Nazi programmers were very aware. In 1921, Germans such as Oesterreich described abrupt personality changes by the term "sleepwalking possession" (hypnotic states) or "demonic sleepwalking" or what can be called "Besessenheit von Hypnotismus und bôsen Geistern" (possession by hypnosis and evil spirits! [355]]).

Chapter 6

Traumatism, Dissociation and Connection to Other Dimensions

> If we walk in the flesh, we do not fight according to the flesh. For the weapons with which we fight are not carnal, but they are powerful before God, to overthrow fortresses.
>
> 2 Corinthians 10:3-4

Father Hilarion Tissot believes that all nervous diseases accompanied by hallucinations and delusions are demonic possessions, and by understanding things in the sense of the Kabbalists, he would be fully right. ''The History of Magic''

Éliphas Lévi (1913)

In 1 Cor. 15:44, we read: "He is sown animal body, he resurrects spiritual body, there is an animal body and there is a spiritual body"." We thus know that we have a physical body and a spiritual body. It is through this biological body that we have physical contact with the material world around us. We are not aware of having a spiritual body until the death of our physical body. This is what God has intended for us. Through rituals, Satanists use demons to separate the spiritual body from the physical body. When the soul and spirit have been separated and the spiritual body has been separated from the physical body, then the person enters in a fully conscious way into a completely different dimension. This is the dimension that I call the inner world. This world is as vast and as real to the individual as the physical world is to us. We think of spirits as if they had a 'vaporous' state, but the people who went into this dimension told me that the demons did indeed have a weight and a substance. ''Restoring Survivors of Satanic Ritual Abuse''

Patricia Baird Clark, 2000

1 - Introduction

We will now put a foot in another dimension, in the paranormal... The question is whether there is a link between the dissociative identity disorder and the demonic possessions; dissociation and psychic powers; with what seems to be a common factor: childhood trauma. We will see that severe trauma causes a kind of spiritual "unlocking" creating an opening to what can be called the spirit world, that is to say dimensions beyond our physical and material reality. The dissociation caused by severe trauma opens some spiritual doors but it also shapes the neurological construction in children. As we will see, these two things combined can cause paranormal psychic faculties such as mediumship, clairvoyance, remote vision, *etc.* But this traumatic process is also the door open to certain entities that will take advantage of these breaches, or frackings, to enter the spiritual world of the victim.

Initiation rituals that voluntarily provoke trauma are practiced to open doors to other dimensions and spiritually link the initiate (the child victim) with the spirit world. The phenomenon of psychic dissociation linked to trauma would therefore be a kind of bridge linking normal cognitive functions to paranormal cognitive functions, linking the physical world to the metaphysical world. The corresponding metaphor is that of Alice who crosses the mirror to access another world. It is the access to this "inner world" that many survivors of ritual abuse and mental control talk about, a psychic and spiritual fracturing that creates an opening to another dimension of the human being... The process of dissociation is the basis of all spiritual practices aimed at accessing other dimensions (from mediumship to "Astral Journey"), and secret societies of the Masonic type study and teach these things.

The exploration of the link between the phenomenon of dissociation and the phenomenon of demonic possession can pose a certain problem that must be overcome. Indeed, clinicians and other therapists working on psychotraumatology and dissociation already have great difficulty in credibly recognizing the reality of dissociative disorders, without having to be linked to the image of the "archaic, wild and primitive" world of traditional indigenous healers and other exorcists chasing demons. However, these two worlds are inseparable to have a good understanding of the subject: dissociation and possession are an integral part of pre-industrial and even ancient religious traditions. The world of modern medicine would have much to learn from the world of traditional healers, particularly in the psychiatric field. The spiritual side of personality disorders is generally overlooked by therapists and mocked by Cartesian minds who will quickly criticize the subject of demonology, relegating this to superstitious devilry, the vestige of an obscure medieval past. Why not? But knowing that there are real followers of occultism, rituals of all kinds and black magic, people who firmly believe that they are working hand in hand with Lucifer, the prince of this world, as well as with his army of demons: rejecting the problem of the "devil" is not an option because it would be like falling into his trap, that is to say denying his existence... We would then find ourselves totally subject to his tricks and at the mercy of his spiritual attacks. Even if you do not believe it, know that some believe in it hard as iron and apply certain rituals to the letter...

Author Fritz Springmeier makes an interesting analogy between demonology and microbiology. Most people have never seen a demon just like they have never seen a virus. Yet they deny the existence of one and take antivirals to protect themselves against the other. There will always be differences of opinion on demonology, but just as it has been useful for the health of many patients to treat viruses, victims of ritual abuse and mind control have had the utility of dealing with demons, i.e. the spiritual side of their psychic disorders. Wasn't it Father Georges Morand who declared on France Culture in 2011 that the victims of satanic cults he had met had only escaped by the prayer of exorcism? Are the entities that the Siberian shamans rub shoulders with or fight in their astral journeys just icy winds? Wasn't one of the main activities of Jesus Christ when he trampled on this earth to cast out the demons, to deliver the sick through prayer? Did any of these patients healed by Christ have a split in the personality and even the soul? In his book "Jesus: The Evidence", Ian Wilson advances the thesis that the many possessed people who were healed by Jesus Christ may have suffered from an I.D.T..

- As soon as Jesus had landed, a man coming out of the tombs and possessed of an impure spirit came before him. He had his home in the tombs, and no one could bind him anymore, even with a chain.

For often he had had the irons on his feet and had been bound with chains, but he had broken the chains and broken the irons, and no one had the strength to tame him. He was constantly night and day in the graves and on the mountains, screaming and bruising himself with stones. He saw Jesus from afar, ran, bowed down before him, and cried out in a loud voice:

- What do you want me, Jesus, Son of the Most High? I beseech you in the name of God, do not torment me. For Jesus said to him:
- Get out of this man, unclean spirit. And Jesus asked him:
- What is your name?''
- Legion is my name," he replied, "for there are several of us.

Marc 5 : 2-9

The possessed responds to Jesus Christ that he is legion, and that there are many of them. Is it an army of demons? A personality divided into a thousand pieces? Or a mixture of both? Whatever the answer, the Lord delivered and freed this man.

The Spirit of the Lord, Jehovah, is upon me,

For jehovah has given me anointing.

He sent me to bring good news to those who are humiliated;

To bandage those who are heartbroken,

To proclaim to the captives their release

And to the prisoners deliverance.

(Isaiah 61:1)

When the Bible speaks of "broken heart", it is natural to think at first that it is the figurative meaning, a metaphor that is sometimes used to describe a romantic relationship: "he broke her heart". But just as Jesus Christ declared "eat, this is My Body, drink, this is My Blood", this expression of "broken heart" is not figurative or symbolic.

John Eldredge, the author of "Wild at Heart: Discovering the Secret's of a Man's Soul'', explains:

"When Isaiah speaks of the "broken heart," God does not use a metaphor. In Hebrews, it is called shabar (''leb'' for ''heart'', and ''shabar'' for ''broken''). Isaiah uses the word ''shabar'' to describe a bush whose dry twigs are broken (27:11), to also describe the idols of Babylon lying and broken on the ground (21:9) just as a statue breaks into a thousand pieces when you throw it to the ground; or to describe a broken bone (38:13). Here God speaks literally, he says, "Your heart is in pieces, I want to heal it."

The Hebrew word ''leb'', in addition to meaning ''heart'', can also be translated as ''spirit'', ''soul'' or ''consciousness''. Theologians tell us that in the New and Old Testaments, references to the mind, soul and heart relate to one and the same thing. This means that in Isaiah, the "broken heart" is equivalent to the broken consciousness or the broken mind, literally divided into a thousand pieces. Is this a reference to unbundling? To a personality split? Note that in the Old Testament, the Hebrew word for evil is ''ra'', from the root ''Ra'a'', a word that also means to break, break, to put in pieces.

Traumatic rituals resulting in states of trance, of possession, with this psycho-spiritual process that is the dissociation of the personality, were necessarily present in biblical times, but also in the antediluvian and Babylonian times. The Epic of Gilgamesh, written in the third millennium BC.C. in Mesopotamia, or the Iliad of Omer around 800 B.C., report testimonies that correspond to what we would call today a dissociation during a trauma. Nowadays the image of cracking and breaking is something recurring in the symbolism of Monarch mind control displayed in the entertainment industry. A doll or model with a cracked or broken face, which symbolizes an alter, is a classic representation of an MK slave with a fractional personality (We will return to this in chapter 9)

2 - Multiple personality and demonic possession

"A curious phenomenon that has been observed for centuries but which has not yet received its full explanation, is that in which the

individual seems to be the vehicle of a personality that is not his own. Someone else's personality seems to "possess" it and express itself through its words and a.ctes,while the true personality of the individual is temporarily absent."' Dr. D.Laing - "The Divided Self"

Dr. James Randall Noblitt, referring to recent discoveries on dissociative disorders, said: "Perhaps we are approaching a new naturalistic theory of possession by a mind. A theory applicable not only to mental health, but also to anthropology and historical interpretations of European witchcraft."

In the dissociative disorder of identity, the "Me" is fragmented while in possession, the body is shared. In the T.D.I., it is the entity Me (the main personality) that is broken up into several pieces, while in possession there is invasion of an external entity. In other words, in the T.D.I., the alters, although separate, are considered as several aspects of a single individual. Whereas in possession, there are supposed to be several external entities independent and quite distinct from the individual. In the T.D.I., the alters will have to be integrated and merged to reconstruct the personality during psychotherapy, while in possession, the external entities are exorcised and driven out of the person during an exorcism. But as we will see, these two phenomena very close to each other sometimes overlap and even seem to merge. It is therefore difficult to assert that all cases of demonic possession are systematically part of a psychiatric disorder, just as it is to assert that the intervention of an external entity is only superstition.

In his book "Occult Bondage and Delivrance", Dr. Kurt E. Koch writes: "The doctor and famous preacher, Dr. Martyn Lloyd-Jones had invited me to speak to a group of psychiatrists about esotericism and occultism (...) As a result, I was attacked by two psychiatrists who claimed that the biblical accounts of demonic possessions to which I referred were in fact cases of mental illness, such as epilepsy or hysteria (...) A man then stood up to defend me by declaring that by his own experience as a practitioner, he alone could cite eleven different cases of demonic possessions. Another psychiatrist then agreed with what his colleague had just said, adding that he himself had encountered three or four cases[367]. As we saw in the previous chapter with the work of Dr. Janet, what was called "hysteria" at one time usually related to cases of multiple personality.

In the book "The Discovery of the Unconscious", Henri Ellenberger traced the origins of dynamic psychiatry by going back to the magical worlds of shamans and medicine-men, in particular through the historical reports of demonic possessions in Europe. He writes in his book that ''Possession'' may have disappeared, but it has been replaced by ''Multiple Personality''. With the modern era of scientism, the phenomenon of demonic possession has given way to an unresound psychiatric symptom of which even today, academic medicine really ignores the ins and outs...

Is it a question of sweeping away with the hand a "diabolical", "superstitious" phenomenon, to replace it with a purely "neurological" phenomenon? Aren't the two linked? Could not certain mental disorders caused by traumatic fractures cause an "opening" for external entities? But are we really trying to find out the root cause of these personality disorders? Certainly, today, we are beginning to seriously point the finger at trauma and to understand its impact at the neurological level. But this phenomenon of the multiple personality still hides many secrets, and we note that very few means are implemented to seriously study the question... which, as we have seen, remains buried under a thick screed of lead.

The first reported cases of multiple personalities mention individuals possessed by the devil or demons. This is the case of Jeanne Fery, a young French Dominican none of 25 years who lived in the region of Mons in the sixteenth century. His case was described by Dr. Désiré Bourneville in 1886 in the book "La Possession de Jeanne Fery". Bourneville himself will say that Jeanne Fery represents "the most perfect case of a duplication of personality".

Bourneville speaks of a case of "duplication of personality" and his description of it contains all the criteria referenced today in the psychiatric manual DSM to describe the T.D.I.. Jeanne Fery's exorcist priest described a "fragmentation of his identity" and also evokes a story of trauma in his early childhood. Jeanne Fery was possessed by several "demons" who had different functions. There was a demon who controlled her eating disorders and another named the "Bloodthirsty" who made her self-harm by scarification because he wanted pieces of flesh. A third "devil" was called "Garga", her function was to protect her so that she did not feel the pain of the blows received in her childhood. However, he would make her live the traumas again by making her hit her head and hit her on the body. Garga also made him make several suicide attempts by scarification or strangulation.

Jeanne Fery also showed dissociative symptoms such as amnesia during these personality changes, trance states, inner voices and second states where she showed extreme rage or equally extreme sadness. She was sometimes described as "forced with rage", unable to sit down, let alone go to bed, for up to seven days and seven nights. Fery stated that she had visions of St. Mary Magdalene who was sometimes a bulwark between her and the demons. Some authors claim that it would be another of his personalities, the alter Mary Magdalene, the most rational and useful personality, she usually appeared in the most critical moments to calm the situation.

''Cornau'' was the first ''devil'' to have possessed it, and he will reveal from the mouth of the nun that he had been the father of the young woman since she was 4 years old. We will then learn that the little girl had been cursed by her biological father when she was 2 years old, which had paved the way for this Cornau who caused her very strange eating disorders. Jeanne could see these "devils", she heard them inside her and they sometimes violently took control of her body by tantrums during which she had to be controlled and locked up. They were also manifested by childish behavior, or by sobs and severe physical pain. The clinical picture was very similar to that of today's patients who suffer from severe dissociative disorders.

During the period when exorcism rituals were practiced, there were improvements and relapses where symptoms escalated, but overall, Jeanne's condition improved. Her treatment, which lasted 21 months, included the sisters' ongoing care and Jeanne's consent for her to accept that her "demons" who played the role of father and grandfather be exorcised. Jeanne Fery kept a diary concerning her own exorcism performed in 1584, an exorcism that was also described in detail by the priest in charge of the ritual:

- April 12, 1584: The demon "Namon" reveals his name. Jeanne lost all her religious knowledge.

- June 28, 1584: Mary Magdalene appears again and Joan tells her about written contracts hidden inside her body, those that are written with blood bind her to demons.

- August 25, 1584: Mary Magdalene appears and speaks for the first time. Jeanne signs a written contract to break the bond with her demons. New episode of scarification, but the decision is made to continue the exorcism. The demons give back a piece of her flesh that Jeanne had given them. The exorcism is considered a success because the demons broke a tile when they left, a signal that had been concluded before.

- September 1584: Jeanne is very ill and suffers from her self-inflicted wounds. She now feels freed from her demons, except Garga and Cornau.

- November 9, 1584: When she was 4 years old, Cornau became her father. He seduced her with sweets and sweets. Without him, she would be mute and ignorant. Canon Jean Mainsent spoke to Cornau and promised him to become Jeanne's father in his place. Mary Magdalene still appears and offers protection. Jeanne becomes like a child. She asks the archbishop to become her grandfather, which he accepts.

- November 12, 1584: During mass, she plays with the holy image of Mary Magdalene as a child with a doll. She also shows her heart indicating that there is pain there. Jeanne regresses to the pre-verbal stage. The archbishop then begins to teach her as if she were really 4 years old. He blesses every part of his body and reads his previous written confession. After listening to her confession, Jeanne still behaves like a child, but she can again walk and speak in a more assertive way. For 9 days, the archbishop will question her about her early childhood. She receives absolution and goes to live a year in the archdiocese with her nurse, Sister Barbe, in order to complete her release from demons and for her rehabilitation. Mary Magdalene disappears. The blurred vision of his right eye, which has been present for 10 years, also disappears.

- January 6, 1586: Joan falls into ecstasy during Mass and sees Mary Magdalene. Joan tells the archbishop that Mary Magdalene has kept the promise she made a year earlier and that she is now freed from demons. She has regained her spiritual strength and is returning to the convent to resume her place in community life.

Here are some notes based on what Jeanne herself reported in her diary about the evolution of her troubles: "At 2 years old, she is given to the devil by her father who curses her. At the age of 4, she is seduced by the devil Cornau who appears as a handsome young man offering her apples and white bread. She then accepts him like her father. From 4 to 12 years old, another devil appears (MaybeGarga). The devil Garga promises her that she will never feel the blows she receives again. As a teenager, for more freedom, she lived with her mother. She is apprenticed to a seamstress in the city of *Mons*. She must do whatever her demons ask of her or face torture. A multitude of new demons enter her. Previously, it had only two or three (probably Namon, Cornau and Garga). She promises the demons to keep their presence a secret. During her first communion, she must fight against them. They undermine her resolutions by all means, take control of her tongue during confession, one gives her sweets during the Eucharistic fast, another hurts her throat so that she spit out the host, *etc.* Despite these obstacles,

mons. She must do whatever her demons ask of her or face torture. A multitude of new demons enter her. Previously, it had only two or three (probably Namon, Cornau and Garga). She promises the

demons to keep their presence a secret. During her first communion, she must fight against them. They undermine her resolutions by all means, take control of her tongue during confession, one gives her sweets during the Eucharistic fast, another hurts her throat so that she spit out the host, *etc.* Despite these obstacles,
Jeanne entered the Dominican convent, but the internal conflict continued. New demons appear: "Traitor", "Magic Art", "Heresy", and many others. They demand control of his memory, intelligence and willpower. She begins to get involved in false ceremonies, she signs pacts written in foreign alphabets with her blood. The demons demand that she renounce all ties, except those who bind her to them. They give her banquets, they please her, they also cause pain when she tries to eat on Christian holidays, they make her body then reject the food. The demons "True Freedom", "Heresy" and "Namon" will even go so far as to implicate him in sacrilege. ''Sanguinaire'', ''Arc'' and others make her slash pieces of flesh, she will even consent to be hanged by the demons and will verge on death. She feels that she only loves demons and that she is afraid of people.'

Jeanne Fery declared that she was no longer able to control her body and that she always said the opposite of what she meant, a symptom that is now considered a clinical sign of T.D.I.. Another clinical sign is the amnesia she presented when she had a child's identity or when she lost objects "hidden" by demons. The alternation between a good functioning and an extreme dysfunction, the vision of the "demons", which she hears and who converse with each other, also suggest that it is a personality split. In addition to the amnesias and manifestations of different personalities, Jeanne Fery had serious somatic disorders: she regularly suffered from blood loss, vomiting, suffocation, spasmodic movements of her limbs, physical pain (head, heart and abdomen), insomnia, loss of appetite, loss of speech, blindness... but also sometimes of extreme muscular strength. which is a criterion of demonic possessions according to exorcist priests. She said that certain "devils" inhabited and disturbed particular areas of her body, such as her blasphemous tongue, her blind eye, or her painful throat.

Jeanne Fery's case gives some indications of physical abuse she may have suffered in early childhood, perhaps even sexual abuse. One of her first dissociations appeared as a "devil" when she was beaten when she was little. Subsequently, the devil Garga helped him not to feel the blows. Jeanne also mentions that her father cursed her and that he "offered her to the power of the devil" when she was two years old. She was then seduced by the devil Cornau at the age of 4 and she took this devil as her father. This may possibly suggest sexual abuse on the part of her father when she was 4 years old because Jeanne seems to have created an alter to replace him. Indeed, a 4-year-old child is unable to merge the image of the good father with that of the aggressor. Nowadays, very young children will attribute their abuse to monsters or vampires. The cultural context in which Jeanne lived could have given her this image of the devil[368].

Another case, dating from 1623, is that of Sister Benedetta Carlini in Italy. This woman has been described as being possessed by three "angelic boys" who sometimes took control of her body. Each of these "boys" spoke through her with a different dialect, a different voice and had different facial expressions. Benedetta was totally amnesiac about what was happening when the different "boys" emerged.

She also had eating disorders and was self-harming. In her case, it was also alluded to traumas that she would have suffered in childhood, her parents were themselves possessed, it was said... The child had been placed in the convent at the age of 9, the age at which his alter "Splenditello", sexually abused, had remained fixed. His symptoms became uncontrollable after his father's death

Did Jeanne Fery and Benedetta Carlini "simply" have a split personality without any intervention from external malevolent entities? It's hard to say anything... An ordinary psychiatrist would answer us that it is only a severe dissociative disorder while an ordinary priest would tell us that it is indeed evil spirits outside the person. But researchers believe that these two phenomena are intimately linked.

In a lecture given in 2008, Father François Brune cites a case of possession that occurred in Italy. A case reported by the demonologist Bishop Corrado Balducci. This affair lasted for seven years, from 1913 when the infestation began, to 1920 when the deliverance took place: *"Following the blessing, she confided herself to the priest. She told him that at certain times of the day, a mysterious force, superior to her own, took hold of her body, her soul, and that then, despite her resistance, she began to dance to a tango rhythm for hours and hours until she fell from exhaustion. She said that with a beautiful voice, she sang verses, romances, pieces of opera that she had never heard before. She held endless lectures in foreign languages she did not know, in front of an imaginary crowd. She sang poems that announced her impending death and that of all her sisters. Often, she would tear with her teeth everything she could tear. She terrorized everyone who was there, she roared, she meowed, she screamed louder and louder, sowing terror to such an extent that at certain hours the whole house turned into a kind of menagerie of ferocious beasts. "*

Father Brune tells us that the woman even showed a phenomenon of levitation 50 centimeters above the ground. Something that a psychotic alone can not do, no one can usually do such a thing. This woman was perfectly aware of her strange acts directed by an evil force outside her. It was a situation that despaired her and even made her consider suicide. In this specific case, there was no amnesic wall between his states of possession and his normal state, moreover it is a question of an "external force" influencing the person. The demonic possessed have often shown behaviors of the supernatural and even exceeding the unimaginable. The most 'spectacular' demonic possessions are absolutely not explainable by a psychotic mental disorder, even the most extreme. There is necessarily an intervention of external forces that transcend the laws of physics. In a 2008 lecture entitled "Les Possessions Démoniaques", Father François Brune described some rather impressive cases. It tells of an exorcism that was conducted in Germany in 1842 by a Protestant pastor to deliver a young woman named Gottliebin. The pastor's only weapon was prayer, faith and fasting... The doctors of the time who witnessed these phenomena understood absolutely nothing about it. The entities that possessed the young woman turned out to be a veritable legion. The demons first declared to be 3, then 7, then 14, then 175, then 425. It may be that the figures given by these entities are obviously fanciful but one thing is certain, it is that a host of demons inhabited this woman. In this case, there is apparently no mention of any change in personality, amnesia or traumatic past concerning the woman, the pastor speaks only of acts of witchcraft. In his lecture, Father Brune quoted a few passages from the report of this German pastor, Johan Christoph Blumhardt, translated into French by him:

"It was terrifying for me to realize that what was previously considered a most ridiculous popular superstition was coming out of the world of tales to emerge in reality. It began with vomiting of sand and pieces of glass. Little by little came pieces of steel of all kinds, old wood nails all curved. I saw one day, after a long choking, fall twelve in a row into the basin that we we must hold before his mouth. Then they were shoelaces of different shapes and sizes, often so long that it was difficult to understand how they could get out of the gosier. Once also a piece of metal so large and so wide that she lost her breath and remained as dead for several minutes. There were also incredible amounts of pins, needles, and pieces of knitting needles, sometimes alone and sometimes mixed with paper and feathers (...) From the nose also I pulled a lot of pins (...) From the needles, I removed quantities from the lower and upper jaws. She first felt terrible toothache when you couldn't see anything, and finally you could start to feel the spikes. They kept coming out more and more and came a time when I could grab them but it still took me a lot of effort to get them out. Two old pieces of wire, all bent the length of a finger, were once manifested in his tongue. Another time, she had under the skin of her body two long iron wires twisted and tangled in several places. With my wife, it took usanhour toextract them completely and Gottliebin lost consciousness more than once, as often happened. In addition, it came out of the whole part of the upper body, pieces of knitting needles or whole needles so often at various times that I can estimate the number at least thirty. They were either located either lying down,or planted vertically,in the latter case, often right in the heart area. If the needles were already halfway out, it took me half an hour, pulling with all my strength. I can't really blame anyone for being skeptical of such stories because it's too far beyond anything one can believe or imagine. But I was able to make all these observations and experiences for almost a whole year and always in the presence of many witnesses. I was very keen to avoid bad rumours, which is why I can tell these events in complete serenity, because I am absolutely sure, if only because of gottliebin's character that there was never and could not be the slightest deception. Every time I went to see her at that time, whether I was called or not, something would happen again and after a while, a new turn of witchcraft would occur in one or the other part of her body. The pain was always terrible and almost every time she lost consciousness. She usually exclaimed "I'm going to go there!", but prayer came to the end of everything, to itself. If she started complaining about suffering somewhere, it was enough for me to put my hand, usually on her head. Taught by a long experience in the Faith, I was sure to see immediately the effectiveness of the short prayer I said. She immediately felt that the thing was moving in her or turning around to find a way out. The most difficult was the crossing of the skin, and it was often felt for a long time that something was growing from the inside out. She never bled, it wasn't like an injury. At most we could recognize for a moment the place from which something had come out, at least as long as everything had happened by the force of prayer alone."

In a program of the channel Planète sur les exorcistes broadcast in April 2004, Msg Laroche, an Orthodox bishop, claimed to have personally seen a possessed spit out tiny toads and small worms...

Conversely, certain supernatural phenomena, this time of divine order, have regularly manifested themselves in the lives of the saints, such as the gushing through the mouth of petals of fresh roses. Father Brune notes that there is a parallelism between the phenomena of possessions and mystics. These are the same kind of manifestations but in positive, in something beautiful. This is the case of Mother Yvonne-Aimée of Jesus of the monastery of Malestroit who in her bed, feeling oppressed, saw a red carnation come out of her body at the level of the heart. ''It seems to me that I hear the flesh cracking, it tears, then when the carnation came out, the wound of the heart closed without scarring.'' (...) ''The roses continued to come out of Aimée's heart. We now have five. The last one came while she was at the foot of the altar. (...) The rose rose went up to the neck, I pulled it with force, its long stem covered with thorns had a hard time getting out. It was this last rose that made Aimée suffer the most, the others were without thorns.''

In his book entitled ''What to do with all these devils?'', the Italian exorcist Raul Salvucci writes: ''During the possession or the diabolical obsession, the personality of the human being disappears; in its place, another entity intrudes which takes the body, the meaning, the faculties and which speaks, acts, moves, expresses itself by means of this human body. When liberation occurs, the person has two sensations:

- The first is that she does not remember anything she said or what happened, as if she had been anesthetized for surgery. Sometimes she also asks, "What time is it, where am I?" After her release, looking at the bruises she had on her wrists, provoked by those who had been trying to hold her for several hours, a possessed said: "Who did this to me?"

- The second is that she feels completely exhausted by the violence that has been done to her to put out of use her personality "of evil".

Why can some people be so cruelly beaten and how do we get to this appalling form of evil possession, it is difficult to say[369].''

In 2010, a study was conducted in Uganda. His goal was to explore the relationships between demonic possessions, dissociative symptoms, and trauma. The study consisted of a group of 119 individuals diagnosed by traditional healers as possessed, compared with a control group of 71 non-possessed individuals. The assessments included demographic elements, dissociation criteria and potentially traumatic elements of the lives of individuals. In comparison with the control group, the possessed group showed more severe dissociative disorders but also more traumatic elements in their lives. The links between these traumatic events and dissociative disorders were significant. The study concluded that possession by entities was dissociative disorder, or more accurately a "dissociative trance state" related to traumatic events. Here is a short excerpt from the study showing the strong similarity between demonic possession and dissociative disorders: "Entering another state of consciousness and speaking in a language that people have never learned before. Later they no longer remember speaking in these languages[370].

The DSM-IV defines the dissociative trance state as follows:

Disturbances of the state of consciousness, identity or memory occurring once or in an episodic manner, specific to certain places and cultures. Dissociative trance involves a narrowing of the field of perception of the near environment, as well as stereotypical behaviors or movements that subjects feel are beyond their control. In the state of possession, there is, instead of the feeling of one's own identity, a new identity, attributed to the influence of a spirit, a power, a deity or another person. This may be accompanied by amnesia. It is perhaps the most common dissociative disorder in Asia. Amok (Indonesia), Behainan (Indonesia), Latab (Malaysia), Pibloktoq (Arctic), Ataque de Nervios (Latin America) are known examples.

Another study concerning the link between possession, dissociative trance state and T.D.I., was conducted in Italy by Stefano Ferracuti in 1995. The recruitment of the subjects was done through the exorcist of the diocese of Rome, Don Gabriele Amorth. In this study, ten people who were following exorcism sessions against demonic possessions, were studied with the criteria for diagnosing dissociative disorders as well as with the Rorschach test. These people were overwhelmed by paranormal manifestations, claiming to be possessed by a demon. They obviously had great difficulty in maintaining a normal social life. These people had much in common with patients with I.D.D. and Rorschach tests showed that they too had a complex organization of personality. The dissociative trances of these "possessed" people showed great similarities with the T.D.I.. The study report states that dissociative trance states, particularly possession disorder, are probably more common than we think, but that there is too little specific clinical data on this topic. In this study, subjects stated that psychiatric treatment did not improve their symptoms in any way, while exorcism rituals brought some improvement. Almost all of these people said that exorcism had helped to keep the demon under control, that he harassed them less after prayers[371].

For Father Angelo, exorcist of an Italian diocese, possession has nothing to do with the T.D.I.. In the book "Confidences d'un Exorciste", here is what he confides to the two French journalists Nathalie Duplan and Valérie Raulin:

"The devil, in the case of possession, invades the body of man and he takes control of it, as if it were his own. The spiritual creatures being devoid of them, they use the organs and the members of the possessed to move, to speak, without the unfortunate being able to prevent them. Despite the torment inflicted by the demon, the soul remains free. This proves that the devil does not have unlimited power over man, god not allowing him to possess the soul. I also insisted that possession is not a "multiple personality disorder" or a "dissociative personality disorder", as psychiatrists argue, but a spiritual reality that is beyond our comprehension and is mysteriously part of God's purpose. The devil cannot undertake what God forbids him and his power of nuisance is not unlimited (...) It is very impressive to see Satan, or some other demon, inhabit a body, move it as it pleases, manipulate it implausively, and then be submissive, unable to resist when the priest lays his hands on him. Again, submission is not immediate, especially if we are dealing with very powerful demons. I recall that, like angels, demons are spirits within which there is a hierarchy. Archangels are more powerful than angels. Among the demons, the same is true, some are superior to others. Powerful demons are quickly recognized because, at first, they do not react, they resist, while demons of a lower rank are forced to go first[372].

In his book "Exorcisms and powers of the laity: Diabolical influences", Father Ovila Melançon writes: "We do not know that there are neuroses-diseases and neuroses-demonics. A doubling of the personality will sometimes be attributed to what will, in fact, only be the intervention of a fallen mind. It should also be known that a true diabolical possession is almost always accompanied by mental and nervous disorders, which are produced and amplified by the demon and whose manifestations and symptoms are medically identical to those produced by neuroses (...) Father Francesco Palau, beatified by Pope John Paul II on April 25, 1988, was quite right to welcome the mentally ill and exorcise them all, so "those who were possessed healed; those who were sick remained sick," as Father Gabriele Amorth indicated in his volume entitled "An exorcist tells". The same author was quite right to write also: "I have agreed with all the other exorcists I have consulted to affirm that the use of an exorcism, in cases where it was not necessary, has never been harmful"." This is the true pastoral that should be found in the Church, pastoral that corresponds to the authentic doctrine of the Church concerning exorcisms[373]!"

In a 2011 interview, the exorcist of the Diocese of San Jose in the United States, Father Gary Thomas, said: "Generally, people can be touched (by the demon) when they have experienced difficult things in their lives. It is my opinion that is based on my experience. With people with a history of sexual abuse, this is even more revealing. These are deep wounds of the soul and it affects the person in his life at all levels (...) Demons want to attach themselves to people with a history of sexual abuse. I would say that eight out of ten people who come to me for demonic possessions have been sexually abused, usually by a relative, brother or other family member. This does not mean that anyone who has been sexually assaulted will have problems with demonic possession, but the risk is greater[374].

In the DSM-IV, both possession and T.D.I. were classified as "dissociative disorders". In its new definition of dissociative identity disorder, the 2013 DSM-V states: "Disruption of identity by at least two distinct personalities, which can be described in some cultures as an experience of possession."

We therefore note that the ambiguity is real and that no serious study, at least made public, is being carried out to understand this phenomenon. The symptoms of demonic possession and multiple personality are indeed remarkably similar, professor and clinical psychologist James Randall Noblitt has listed these points common[375]:

- Possession and T.D.I. are both more common in women than in men. This phenomenon is seven times more common among women than men, with women appearing to dissociate more easily than men.

- They are both reported following traumatic experiences, rituals or initiation trials.

- They are both associated with primitive or pre-industrial cults, but also modern.

- Secrecy is often a common factor in possession and in the T.D.I.

- Individuals report amnesia both in possession and in T.D.I.

- Trance experiences are common.

- Individuals experience at some point a common consciousness shared with the alter personality or entity.

- Individuals act with a behavior that is not in their usual characteristics.

- The identity usually present is usually named "host".

- Entities or alters that take control of the body can present themselves as an animal, a spirit, a demon, or a deity.

- Individuals may behave beyond the physical limits of the human body, especially with regard to pain.

- A significant number of individuals affected by a possession or a T.D.I think that they have particular psychic powers.

In psychic disorders or "mental illnesses", the spiritual side touching on the other dimensions of the being, is today totally ignored by modern medicine. While in traditional pre-industrial cultures, this spiritual side was on the contrary the first thing that was treated during physical or psychic disorders, especially by shamanism and exorcism. For example, in India, it has been reported that 75% of psychiatric patients also consult a religious healer in parallel. Similarly, in a rural community in South Korea, 15-25% of psychotic patients were treated with shamanic therapies[376].

It is important to take into account all the dimensions of the human being to address the question of T.D.I. which seems to go far beyond the simple physical / neurological functioning.

Professor Emilio Servadio, expert in psychoanalysis and honorary president of the Italian Psychoanalytic Society, also a specialist in paranormal manifestations, told journalist Renzo Allegri about exorcisms: *"There are individuals everywhere with much more complicated problems and inexplicable and sometimes frightening pathological manifestations, which we are not able to classify and even less to treat. Faced with* **these cases,** *secular science stops, it stops its research, because it no longer knows in which direction to make investigations and refuses to formulate hypotheses. But the most open psychiatrists and psychoanalysts sense that they are faced with phenomena that go beyond the limits of medical science to engage in areas inexplorable by human reason. They are aware that they cannot do anything and understand that it is their duty to give free rein to theologians and, possibly, to the exorcists themselves. I consider that science must indeed recognize its own limits*[377\\.*"*

Professor Chris Cook of the Department of Theology and **Religion from Durham University wrote an article entitled** *"Demon Possession and Mental Illness: Should We Be Making a Differential Diagnosis?"* **(Demonic possession and mental illness:**

should we make a different diagnosis?), of which here are some excerpts: *"Demonic possession and mental illness are not just two different diagnoses* **(...)** *However, if these two things are connected, we need to know the nature of the connection between the two* **(...)** *We must distinguish which of these two things we are dealing with, but we must also identify which of the two problems leads to the other as a secondary "complication"* **(...)** *Demonic possession is essentially a spiritual problem, but mental illness is a multifactorial matter, of which spiritual, social, psychological and physical factors must play an etiological role. The relationship between* **these** *two concepts is therefore complex. Different diagnoses can a,see a role to play to help those whose problem could be of demonic or medical / psychiatric origin. However, spiritual discernment has equal if not greater importance than* **scientificdiscernment! 378]. "**

Pastor James Friesen is the author of the books "Uncovering the Mystery of M.P.D." and "More Than Survivors". He worked with many patients and described in detail how multiple personality disorder was related to satanic ritual abuse. According to him, the demonic possession is directly related to the T.D.I.. He argues that individuals with a dissociative identity disorder experience both a split personality and both possession by external entities, but that these two kinds of "takeover" are distinct from each other.

Dr. Haraldur Erlendsson also comes to the same conclusion regarding the simultaneity of possession and T.D.I.. In a 2003 article entitled *"Multiple Personality Disorder - Demons and Angels or Archetypal Aspects of the Inner Self",* he writes: *"If the different personalities claim to have a different history from that of the main personality, should we take this into account after asking a series of questions such as: "Is there anyone?", "Who are you?", "How long have you been there?", "Where were you before?", "What effect do you have on the person?", "Why have you not evolved?". When the answers clearly give the conviction that the entity comes from outside the person, should we take these answers at face value? Should the answers given be used to differentiate between* *possession and multiple personality? Perhaps the diagnosis of T.D.I. should include possession trance. The problem here is that many clinicians are not comfortable with the notion of life after death or entities that can live in different worlds. Dr. Colin Ross, who wrote the most comprehensive work on T.D.I. (Dissociative Identity Disorder, Diagnosis, Clinical Features, and Treatment of Multiple Personality Disorder, 1997), has himself sometimes used techniques related to the spirit world, as have many others in this field. However, he prefers to treat alter pretending to come from outside in the same way as all other parts of the fra.ctioned personality. It helps them cope with the traumatic content of memories and seeks to achieve complete integration with the rest of the person. My view is that possession and multiple personality do not happen separately but rather occur together. "*

We have seen that the causal link between severe trauma and dissociative disorders leading to a multiple personality is now established. Do demonic possessions also have as their origin a trauma? It would seem that this is indeed one of the many points in common between T.D.I. and Possession. Father Jeffrey Steffon in his book Satanism: Is It
Real ?" (Satanism: is this a reality?) describes a number of causes that can lead to possession by one or more entities: "First of all, a demonic spirit can attach itself to someone through injury or trauma (...) A demonic spirit can also attach itself to a person through his involvement in the occult.'

Satanic ritual abuse particularly attracts demonic entities because of the practices of black magic, but also because of the extreme traumas that occur during ceremonies. Demons are attracted by the suffering, pain and terror that causes the helplessness of the victim totally submissive to the executioners. but also to the spirits. This type of extreme emotions is a force of attraction and food for fallen spirits, especially if the blood flows. The deeply dissociated victims then become real receptacles for these entities attracted by the magic protocols and incantations that accompany the ritual. In addition, these ceremonies are often practiced in sites with particular terrestrial energies facilitating interactions between different dimensions. Just like a cracked vase that lets light through, the split will let certain entities pass that will mingle with the breaks of the personality that are the fragments of soul, a notion that will be developed later...

In 2010, the Reverend Thomas J. Euteneuer identified "seven levels of demonic persecution", According to him, satanic ritual abuse is the most critical level: *"Children born in a family line of witches or in a satanic cult are initiated through rituals and consecrations. They are the most difficult to cure. The emotional and physical trauma of the rituals, inflicted since childhood, or even in the womb, is so extreme that it fractures the personality of the child and makes him totally subject to possession, it is deliberately put in the hands of the demons of worship. Such wounded and bruised individuals need compassionate help from the Church, but they cannot be healed by exorcism alone. In fact, they need several elements combined together for a real healing to take place. Firstly, they must make a total break with all the occult activities and all the people involved in their abuses. Second, they need a qualified therapist with good knowledge to treat their dissociative identity disorder. Third, they need a qualified exorcist and a good support team to regularly pray and mobilize all the spiritual resources of the ward for this particular case. Finally, they need a support group to rehabilitate them into a true Christian fraternity based on strong relationships of love and truth. They have a long healing journey ahead of them and therefore they need maximum support and help. As in all demonic afflictions, healing is possible only with the grace of Deu and the a.ctive cooperation of the individual. A full cure can take years of hard work by everyone involved, but it is really* **possible! 379! ."**

In the book *"Healing the Unima,ginable",* the survivor of ritual abuse Stella Katz, who herself practiced mind control on young children within a Satanist cult, testifies: *"According to some ancient writings, it is clear that the splitting of children is something that has* *been practiced for many generations in some of these religions, with the aim of linking demons to children. When an alter emerges, it is his behavior that will determine what type of demon it is, so the group will call this alter by a particular name of demon. Subsequently, the group can use the name of the demon to call him and bring him out so that he takes possession of the body. However, when a demon comes out without permission, which he usually ends up doing, the child will have to be subjected to an exorcism. Children who cannot be exorcised may end up in a psychiatric hospital. These occult groups eventually gained a great understanding of the process and consequences of splitting a child, their activities and the protocols they created became increasingly sophisticated*l380]..*"* **Again, there is this ambiguity between internal alter personality and external demonic entity, but the notion of splitting** *(spiritual unlocking)* **of the child is always present.**

Author Fritz Springmeier makes a distinction between demonic possession and T.D.I., but he acknowledges that there are many common characteristics and that these two things are intrinsically linked in trauma-based mind control protocols: *"If we take MK programming from the programmer's point of view, he believes in both personality splitting and demonic possession. For an MK programmer, it is necessary to create alter personalities and at the same time "demonize" them, i.e. link them to demons. Several former programmers have confided to Springmeier that if someone really wants to understand Monarch mind control, they have to realize that it is something fundamentally demonic* **(...)** *Programming and mind control cannot be separated from demonology and* **occultrituals! 381! ."**

Demonic entities could therefore bind to dissociated alters. This is also what the Reverend Tom Ball claims for whom demons are real entities that have been "attached" to alter personalities through "curses", i.e. protocols of blackmagic! 382! .

As Dr. Haraldur Erlendsson wrote: "My view is that possession and multiple personality do not happen separately but rather occur together."

According to the various data we have, it is more than likely that these two phenomena are indeed intimately linked. Unlike alter personalities who have a basic protective role (even if some are very hostile and even violent), demonic entities from outside are not there to help the split person, their goal is to steal, destroy, deceive and kill: they lead to madness and self-destruction. In a Monarch-type MK programming framework, these demonic entities have the role of cooperating with the programmer to maintain control of the slave (a topic that will be developed in the next chapter). Alter personalities, on the other hand, have the role of supporting and helping the person to survive the trauma as well as possible. They have a function that is not destructive but rather protective. Alter personalities usually take great care of the original personality. The heavy traumatic memories and the pain they contain are "encapsulated" in the different alters, which has the function of preserving the victim so that he can continue to live. It is for this reason that alter personalities must be understood, accepted and loved; in contrast to destructive outer entities that can also torment these alter as they torment the host personality. In the reference book on the phenomenon of possessions, "Possession Demoniacal and Other", Oesterreich speaks of evil spirits but he also speaks of "good" possessions. He cites a case reported by a certain van Müller in the work "Gründliche Nachncht" where possession alternated between an unhealthy evil spirit and a good spirit[383]. It may be that the "good spirit" did not come from outside but was in fact a fraction of the person's personality, an alter whose role was to help and protect him. If the other "consciousness" is considered to be a part of the fractional personality, the treatment will consist in integrating it (fusion or integration) into the main personality, on the other hand, if the other "consciousness" is considered to be an external spirit or demon, the treatment will consist in expelling it (expulsion by the prayer of exorcism).

Psychiatrist Ralph B. Allison was sometimes confronted occasionally during his work with patients with T.D.I. with entities that behaved in unusual ways. Their "birth" could not be localized in time, they visibly served no purpose and generally they presented themselves as "spirits[384]". With an alter personality, it is usually possible to know the moment when the split (dissociation) occurred, i.e. the moment of its "birth". In addition, each alter normally has a well-defined function within the internal system: observer, protector, child, *etc.*

In his book entitled "Uncovering the mystery of MPD", Dr. James G. Friesen made a distinction in order to be able to determine what belongs to an alter personality or an external entity (demon):

Alter Personalities	Demons
Most alters, and even alter executioners, can become powerful allies in therapy. It is possible to establish a positive relationship with them (even if it may turn out to be negative at first)	Demons are arrogant and there is no way to establish a relationship with them
Over time, alter become ego- syntone, i.e. they can merge and harmonize with the original personality	Demons remain as "ego-alien", external entities impossible to merge and "integrate"
Confusion and fear subside when it comes only to altering	Confusion, fear and dislocation persist despite therapy when demons are present
Alter tend to conform with their environment	Demons force unwanted behaviors and then blame a personality
Alter have their own personalities with specific voices	Demons have a negative voice without any corresponding personality
Irritations, discontents and rivalries between alter are very common	Hatred and bitterness are the most common feelings among demons
Alter imaging represents a human form and remains consistent	Demon imaging varies between human and non-human forms, with many variations

111U111V11 U.V.

Dr. James Friesen cautions about the practice of exorcism: the fight against demons. It is indeed necessary to have a strong spiritual foundation and never engage in this kind of thing out of simple curiosity or for a financial interest. The risk being to "fight demons" that are not demons, or worse yet, fight demons demons without having the real capacity.

According to Father Gabriele Amorth, chief exorcist of the Vatican, in a possession there may be the presence of demons, but also the presence of damned souls, that is to say a soul of a deceased person who is slavishly attached to Satan. In his book "Confessions", Father Amorth reports the case of a possessed woman. During the first prayers exorcism, she went into a trance and became very violent, she spoke several languages with different voices. After each session, the woman was coming out of her trance state and she asked what she had done and what that she had said. Being totally amnesiac, she had no memory of what had happened, she was only tired and sore. after several exorcisms, obeying the orders of the priest, a first demon revealed his name: "Zago". He claimed to be the leader of a cult practiced in a nearby village, near a ruined church, he said

also that there was a legion of minor demons in this possession. the other

demon presented himself as "Astarot", that one

was concerned with destroying the couple's love and affection between the parents and

Kids. A third demon named "Serpent" was on a mission to push the woman to suicide. Much to the surprise of the

exorcist priest Gabriele Amorth, among these demonic entities there were

three damned souls: ''Michelle'', a woman who

had worked at the Moulin Rouge and had been killed by drugs at the age of 39.

It was Michelle who often made the Italian woman who possessed the

sentences in French that she repeated to solicit customers. During these moments, the woman's face became soft and persuasive. There was also "Belzébuth", a Moroccan who had beheaded three missionaries in 1872, then committed suicide, overwhelmed by remorse. the

third damned soul was ''Jordan'', a Scot

who had murdered his mother. He often intervened by speaking in English

during trances of possession. Later, during an exorcism, Amorth

heard a new female voice, he then asked her forcefully: "Who are

111U111V11 U.V.

you?", to which the voice replied: "I am Vanessa, I am twenty-three years old. I was a university student. I met a young man who took me to black masses near the ruined church. That's when I started serving the demon. One night when I had drunk blood and was drunk from the ceremony, I had crossed the street and I died, run over by a car.'' There are therefore had the presence of a fourth damned soul. During the last prayers of exorcism, a cross of a discolored red appeared on the forehead of the Wife. The husband, when he touched this cross, discovered that it was blood.

The exorcist then questioned the entity to find out the cause, the response

had

of the demon was: "It is the blood of a child of four days which were offered to me by his mother, one of my followers of old[385].

Another case of what appears to be possession by a human soul was described in the study conducted in Uganda mentioned above in this chapter[386]. This is a 33-year-old woman who had been suffering from spiritual attacks for years, according to her sister she had strange and aggressive behaviors during which she spoke with different voices. These attacks happened when the family was about to go to church or recite some prayers. to the clinic, the patient went into a trance, she began to shake her hands as if she had claws while growling like a wild animal. after what she was starting to speak in a strange language with an equally voice strange. His sister explained that it was the voice of an uncle who was died several years ago. This uncle had kept the values and the

died several years ago. This uncle had kept the values and the

beliefs of traditional pagan culture, while their father had turned towards Christianity. There was then an unresolved conflict between their father and this uncle because the father refused to practice the rituals for the ancestors. Was this woman possessed by her uncle's soul?

A study conducted in 2000 in a psychiatric hospital in Singapore reported the case of a Malaysian man who when possessed by spirits of the ancestors, began to speak the "Sundak", a Javanese dialect that was no longer used by its people and that it did not have he himself never learned[387].

For Father François Brune, there is a distinction between demonic possession and multiple personality, for him the phenomenon of multiple personality is explained solely by the incorporation of a soul disembodied and wandering human. Soul that would take over the body of the individual to express himself through him.

This question of the possession by souls of the deceased is perhaps to be put in relation with a form of "ancestor worship" practiced by Satanists and Luciferians. Some families who practice ritual abuse and systematic personality splitting on his offspring would thus offer an open door to their ancestors to that they can "relive" in the flesh through possession punctual or permanent of their descendants (split and therefore open to the mediumship). If the ancestor was already split during his incarnation, fragments of his mind may also remain related to his progeny incarnate. They would thus obtain a kind of "immortality", so much sought after by some occultists.

The book ''Possession Demoniacal and Other'' is a study on the phenomenon of possession that has been recognized worldwide and which remains today a reference in the field. Oesterreich makes a clear differentiation between voluntary and involuntary possession and also a distinction between lucid and sleepwalking possession. In lucid possession, the individual is conscious and later remembers it. A contemporary example of voluntary possession is that of the "channels", the mediums of the New Age who voluntarily allow themselves to be possessed by an entity. Some of these mediums are lucid, others are not. Sleepwalking possession happens when the individual is unable to remember his or her behaviour and what he or she is passed around him during the trance state; while in the

Lucid possession, he is the passive spectator of what is happening in him and of his actions directed by another force. People with an I.D.T. describe dissociative episodes in the same way that Oesterrich described the states of possession, they can be lucid, we then speak of common consciousness between the main personality and the alter, or separated by a wall amnesic.

It would therefore seem that a severe trauma resulting in a deep dissociation can cause both a fragmentation of the "Me" into different alter personalities, or fragments of soul as we will see; and in parallel a phenomenon of possession by external entities that can be of a demonic nature, or human nature, or fragments of human souls

disembodied. The T.D.I. is therefore intimately linked to the phenomenon of mediumship and

of possession by the "spiritual breach" that was caused during the

trauma. Cases that can be taken for a demonic possession may

so turn out to be a T.D.I with alternations of alter personalities

which may suggest that they are external entities, all such as

external entities can actually parasitize and infest a person

''fractured'', having a fragmented and multiple personality.

In her autobiography entitled "Thanks For The Memories", Brice Taylor (survivor of the MK Monarch) writes: "I met some

people with multiple personality disorders who thought

that they were mediums and that they channeled entities, when in fact

they contacted part of their own personality structure. A

day,a woman 'channel' (editor's note: channels = the mediums of the newâge) named Shirley graciously offered me a private 'channeling' session (...) I told her that I would be happy to ask any questions she had. asked about herself when she was in a trance, which she accepted. To the question of whether Shirley had been involved in type ritual abuse, the answer was that ''Shirley was not yet ready to to face this reality''. Making channeling may be a way clever to cover the reality of a multiple personality disorder when personality fragments go back to consciousness, explaining that it is an external ''entity''[388].

In an article entitled "Multiple Personality and Channeling" (Jefferson Journal of Psychiatry), Dr. Rayna L. Rogers makes the parallel between the channels of the new age and people suffering from T.D.I.. She concludes that the trances of these mediums (whenthey are genuine and not fraud) are very similar in many ways to people suffering from personality iractionation. As we will see below, the iractionated people are also more open to the "spirit world", to other dimensions, therefore more likely to access medium faculties (a session of "channeling" is nothing but a punctual possession, it may be unconscious or conscious, evaporating then everything like the memory of a dream). From an external point of view, for example for a audience attending a session, it is difficult to determine if the channel channels an external entity, or if it is an inner alter that communicates outwards (we will return to the

r

channeling of spirits in Chapter 9).

3 - Dissociation and exit from the body: the door open to possession?

Dans le livre “Diagnosis and Treatment of Multiple Personality Disorder”, le Dr. Frank Putnam dit qu’il y a deux camps on the issue of going out of the body, a group he describes as "separationists", those who believe that there is a "soul", an "astral body", which can truly leave the physical body to move to other places, and then there are psychologists for whom these experiences of body exits are simply a modified state of consciousness and that it is a simple hallucination. The numerous testimonies tend to prove that indeed, there is an astral body that can move out of the body physical.

People describe a feeling of floating in weightlessness, outside their body. Some people who have experienced a N.D.E (Near Death Experience), a near-death experience or experience at the borders of the death, were able to accurately describe the surgical operation that was performed on them following an accident, while they were in a coma... They were also able to report the number of people present in the operating room and what they were saying to each other. Their energetic body

was above the stage and could thus observe everything in the smallest details while their physical body was unconscious, lying down on the table

of operation. These near-death experiences studied by Dr. Raymond

Moody, but also the work of Robert Monroe or Dr. Jean Jacques

Charbonier, show that an energetic body, said etheric body or body

astral,with a consciousness, can leave the physical body and then reintegrate it.

Some people master this phenomenon and can provoke it at will,

something that is obviously not advisable. According to a Gallup poll from

In 1982, 25 to 30% of people would have had this kind of experience

following hospitalization or severe trauma.

Occultists are well aware of this technique of the "Astral Journey", called the astral projection of the "body of light" out of the physical body. It is a discipline studied by secret societies such as the Golden Dawn or the

Freemasonry, but it is a practice above all mastered by shamans

pre-industrial cultures, which travel through the different

dimensions thanks to this technique.

The phenomenon of dissociation described in the previous chapter is sometimes accompanied by a feeling of separation of mind and body.

Some victims of sexual abuse clearly describe a concrete exit from

of the physical body during their dissociation triggered by extreme violence, pain and terror. Psychotraumatologist Muriel Salmona, specialist in

dissociation, speaks in these cases of a "decorporation". Marie-Ange Le

Boulaire, the author of the book "Le viol", describes well

how she ended up outside her body, observing her rape and

analyzing in a very lucid way the situation in which she found herself.

She described this phenomenon during her appearance on the tv show "Allô Docteur'' on France 5 in January 2014: "I felt a meter away, like in a movie. I was a meter behind and I was watching the scene that I analyzed very clearly in

wondering what I could do to get out of it... That was very clear.''

in

the documentary entitled "A life after the sect" (Planet +, 2014), Flora Jessop, born in a family of Mormon fundamentalists, testifies about her childhood

martyred: "It started with caresses, he told me that I should not talk about it, that it was our secret. At first, I was proud, but at the same time

time I felt dirty and I didn't understand why. This was very

weird, I shared a secret with my father and it made me want to

vomit. I was terrified every time he wanted to talk to me. I became

very good at detaching myself from myself. I was floating above me and I'm watched touch me feeling like it was happening to someone other. That way, I could still love my father. Every child considers his father as his hero, he is the first hero of a child. What I have learned very early is that monsters do not hide under our bed, the monsters pass through the doors and have familiar faces. My hero was a monster..."

the

"Wife Rape" book reports a number of testimonies of dissociation with a out of the body during a rape: ''One of the most common survival strategies is described by Debbie as an ''exit in orbit," she recalls: "He was lying entirely on top of me, and so I just went out with my mind, I just wasn't there anymore. I had transported myself somewhere else and later realized that I had often done, even growing up, when something hurt me, I out of it... I was getting totally numb.'' (...) Karen also describes having had an out-of-body exit: "It's like I'm watching the scene from the corner of the room and I couldn't feel anything anymore.'' This happened only during the abuses sexual but not during physical violence. Annabel also described having had an out-of-body experience during her rape, she says: "I'm focused on my arm while being somewhere above it, my arm was twisted under my body, like a rag doll. I didn't see the rape

9*1

as if it happened to me, but as if it happened to someone else with a twisted arm[389].

In the book ''Reach for the Rainbow'', Lynn Finney recounts the story of a survivor who describes her psychic dissociation and then the exit out of his body:

"I can't stand this for another minute. I feel like I'm going to die. I want to die. Oh, please, let me die. What is

is it happening? I don't feel the pain anymore. Why I don't feel any more

pain? I don't feel anything anymore... I feel so peaceful. I

fleet, I float up to the ceiling. What is going on? I can see the

my father's naked body on the bed below me. I see his back and back

of his legs. It is about a little girl, a girl with long hair

black like me. But that's me! I am so confused. I do not

don't understand. How can I be down and here at the ceiling at the same time

time? I can see my father and daughter (me) moving on the bed, but

my emotions and pain have totally disappeared. I do not feel nothing more

but I can hear his crying. I'm glad I'm not downstairs anymore, I

don't want to go back[390]."

the

Dr. David Gersten reported a testimony regarding this process of

extreme dissociation. In his book entitled "Are You Getting Enlightened or Losing Your Mind?" (Are you achieving enlightenment or losing your mind?) he writes: "Amanda has been the victim of physical and psychological abuse and also sexual abuse. His father, an alcoholic, had

began to rape her when she was eight years old, and this continued for six years

years. An older brother was also abusing her (...) Amanda learned to cope with agony by "leaving her body".

In traditional psychiatry, we could say that it is

"dissociated". The question that psychiatry does not answer is "where

goes away the consciousness when it dissociates itself?". I believe that what

we call dissociation should often be an out-of-the-way experience

of the body. Amanda's consciousness dissociated, or separated from her body

physics His mind and consciousness were leaving temporarily

^/XXJ VJXV_^U.V. WV/XX VVJJ-/X XL VL OU. VWXXOVXVXXW VjU1U.U1V/U1 LVXXX|iOX UXX VXXXVXX L

the limits of his physical body. Thus, Amanda no longer personally experienced the emotional and physical havoc. In fact, she learned to ''leave her body'' at will and she often found herself in states of bliss ecstatic while she was out of her body. I have since interviewed dozens of others who have been victims of extreme abuse, and more than half of them reported that they had left their bodies during violence[391].''

Extreme traumatic rituals serve to provoke this "enlightenment": the transcendence of the physical body through the dissociative phenomenon. The Heart of Satanic Perversion is to "tear off the soul" of the victim to vampirize his energy and control his mind. These are not the rituals in theythemselves who really do, but rather, their effects at levels which exceed the material world..........

some energy specialists explain that a shock or trauma, especially at the beginning of life, will unlock the astral body which will therefore be able to detach itself from the physical body.

Eileen Nauman describes this phenomenon as follows: "People who have suffered shock and trauma, especially in their early childhood, have their own

astral body that comes out above their heads. The unlocked astral body

looks like a colorful balloon floating around the head. A clairvoyant can

see and know that you are "uprooted" (disconnected) because of this

event. The reason why the astral body wants to "escape" is

that it is our "motherboard" for all our emotions and feelings. When

of the attack, when a person is deeply injured and traumatized, the

Astral body will come out through the upper part of our head (Chakra of the

Crown), he simply does not want to experience this pain and this

suffering,he flees anguish, sorrow or agony. If it unlocks and detaches to go out, then you will feel less these traumatic emotions.

People who experience this also report a feeling of numbness and

paralysis. This is another sign that the astral body is unlocked and

out. Under extreme violence, the astral body unlocks and escapes.

Is it that simple? What happens when it happens

product? We feel disconnected from violence and trauma,

there are no more or many fewer emotions. Many people say have "floated" above the scene of violence, with total detachment and without any emotion. They describe it as if they were watching a movie in color, but without there being any emotional connection with the scene. Over the years from time, the astral body learns how to escape instead of remaining in the physical body and to feel the powerful emotions related to violence, trauma and post-traumatic stress. This allows it to remain unlocked as a result of an event or series of events. Anyone who has had a traumatic or very disturbed childhood may have had his astral body unlocked in order to escape the continual emotional pain[392].

It would seem that the neurochemical phenomenon that causes dissociation with physical as well as emotional anesthesia is therefore related with this detachment from the astral body where the victim sees the scene from the outside and no longer feels any emotion. Thus, "energy" parts of our body can detach itself from it to evolve on other levels. Like us let's see it later, it can be simple fragments of soul that are "tear" during trauma. In the case of T.D.I., we speak of fractionation of personality, but it is in reality the "energetic" bursting of a all unified that the human forms at birth.

the

is interesting to note that the Quechua Indians of Peru use the word "Susto", which means "fear", to talk about this phenomenon of exit from the body that they call the "loss of the soul" (or fragments of soul). For them,

this "loss of the soul" is called Susto's disease: the disease of fear... In his book "El mito del Jani o Susto de la medecina indigena del Peru'', Dr. Frederico Sal y Rosas reports that the Quechua Indians believe that the soul (or perhaps a part of it) can leave the body,

spontaneously or by being forced to do so. The disease of 'Susto'' can

arrive in two ways: either by a great fright, as for example

thunder, the sight of a charging bull or a snake, etc., either of a

malicious way that does not require fear[393].

What to think of the examples given above such as the fear of thunder, a bull or a snake that can trigger a split

of the soul, in comparison with satanic ritual abuses? Rituals

including scenes that could not be more terrifying and painful, rapes,

torture and sacrifices (real or even simulated). During ritual abuse,

the terror of the child is voluntarily pushed to its climax to succeed

to extreme dissociation. In this deeply dissociated state, the mind is detaches from the body. The energetic and spiritual doors of the child are then find wide open, allowing the intrusion of demonic entities attracted by rituals, terror, blood, black magic and incantations. Nature abhorring emptiness, when a part of the soul is splits and "escapes", this creates a "space" that can be invaded by an external entity. This phenomenon of possession by a spirit during a soul splitting is something found in traditions shamanic. As a result of the trauma, the child is therefore disconnected from his "Me", it is no longer anchored. Just like its personality is fragmented, his soul (his spiritual body) is also split. In addition, the child may find himself parasitized by one or more demonic entities that will attach themselves to him and interact with his world interior, this particular dimension to which it was connected during the traumatic rituals.

Here is now the disturbing testimony of a former member of the "illuminati" Luciferian order. The woman who is coming out of this cult as well as possible converted to Jesus Christ and decided to reveal what she had experienced since her very early childhood, having been born in a family practicing these horrors. 'Svali' (his pseudonym) was victim of ritual abuse and mental programming but she has herself practiced mind control on children from the San Diego group to United States, on which it depended. The following testimonial was posted online in 2001, it concerns a ritual going so far as to cause imminent death in the victim. That is to say, it will be decorporated due to trauma extremes that voluntarily push his physical body to the borders of the death. This type of practice is one of the most extreme MK programming and the most complex. We will therefore anticipate a little on the next chapter devoted to monarch-type mind control.

Trauma is the basis of Lutheran mind control and the most extreme method is certainly what Svali calls the "resurrection ceremony". According to her it is one of the oldest methods of the Illuminati Order. THE ceremony or ritual, is usually done for a child of 2 or 3 years. The latter will be severely traumatized by various means: physical violence and sexual, electroshock, asphyxia, drugs, with the aim of making it happen dissociate as much as possible and bring it into a state close to death. It is a

mental programming method that voluntarily pushes a child to the

borders of death. The little victim then feels at that moment

presences around it, they are entities observing this small body

unconscious between life and death... In these rituals of "resurrection", there will always be the presence of competent medical staff with

adequate equipment to monitor the child's condition and to be able to "resusciter" him when the time comes... When he regains consciousness in extreme suffering, he will be confronted with a choice: face a certain death or choose to live by integrating into it a demonic power. The child obviously chooses to live and an entity parasite then clings to him. Later, the child will wake up in clean clothes, in a cozy bed, coated with healing ointments, but in a state of shock and extreme weakness. This is when a person will come to tell him in a soft and reassuring voice that he was dead but that the demon Ta brought back to life'', that he must therefore in be accountable just as to the people who saved him by relaunching the heartbeat. The child is also told that if he or she asks the entity demonic to leave, he will be brought back into this state close to death in which he was when she entered.

This type of near-death programming is used to terrify, split, disassemble and finally fully control a very young child at the mental and spiritual physical level That

L1 VO J VU.11V V^l1lUlU. U.U. 111 wuu^/llj VJIV^UVj V1l1V^U- Yll1OJ^/11 1LUV1*

obliges it to

accept a totally satanic / Luciferian spirituality in the worst

possible traumatic and coercive circumstances. The ritual will mark

deeply the child's beliefs and this traumatic experience

above all, it will change its most fundamental reality. The purpose of this

programming is to remove free will and will in young people

subjects to make them slaves of higher forces not incarnated.

Another mind control technique based on N.D.E., or imminent death, has been described by Svali as being practiced in a government setting, of the MK-Ultra type. The subject is

attached by the waist and neck, it is wrapped in an insulation box

sensory (removing all sensations from its limbs). In this state of

sensory deprivation, he is fed intravenously and is bombarded on

brain by extremely violent sound noises. The total darkness of the

room will be interspersed with dazzling white lights and the subject goes fast lose the notion of day and night. When the victim approaches the breaking point and is about to break, he or she receives electroshocks and drugs.

The level of pain and terror is at its peak and she is told that she

is dying, which is the case... if necessary, it can be put

on an artificial respirator. It is then that the subject experiences this state of

imminent death and he finds himself floating out of his body, finally freed from

physical and psychological torture. That's when a programmer comes to

pose as a "savior" by telling him that he deserves to live and that he does not

will not let die... In the end, the victim will owe him his life... Messages

pre-recorded are also broadcast in loop (the psychic driving method of the MK-Ultra program). Messages that contain the programming and future destiny of the subject in the "Family". Hyper traumatized, the victim is then very receptive to these messages that will be deeply integrated into his

subconscious. Finally, the victim is slowly brought back to a state of

correct consciousness, always accompanied by the constant

message repeating to her that she is "born again" for the "Family".

Again, one or more people will come to kindly comfort the victim and she will feel extremely grateful to be still alive, to have been freed from all these horrors. It will even be like a young child clinging to the people around her...

This type of MK programming based on imminent death and exit from the body will take root in the victim at the deepest level, for touching the very heart of the being: His life. Subsequently, the person who has undergone this kind of protocol will have the certainty (programming) that he will die if she tries to break mental control, and she will find herself again in a state close to death with the risk that his heart will stop definitely. It doesn't matter what lies and horrors are uttered and implanted in these states of near unconsciousness, they will be deeply integrated into the subconscious level. The child in such a situation has a desperate need for believe the adults who hold his life in their hands. The child, totally broken and programmed, will integrate all the data received as a deep truth[394].

In her autobiography, Cathy O'Brien writes: "Whether I wanted it or not, I surprised a conversation between Aquino (editor's note: founder from the Temple of Set) and a lab assistant' about death and the brain while I was lying, deeply hypnotized, on a metal table icy. Aquino said that I had often come close to death, which "increased my ability, being dying, to penetrate other dimensions (of the spirit)." I had listened to Aquino talk endlessly about this kind of concepts, as if he were trying to convince himself of the existence of a theory of interdimensional travels in time. "Whether it is a principle or a theory, it does not change anything to the results, he claimed - the concept of time is in itself abstract." Mesmerizing myself with past-present-future verbiage gave me an impulse that, combined with Alice's concepts in wonderland/the mirrored world of NASA, gave birth in me the illusion of timeless dimensions (...) After making me pass from the one-container table with a complex appearance (editor's note: insulation box sensory),Aquino then tipped my mind to another area of my brain, claiming to have taken me to another dimension by means of the

''gate of death''. He did it while I was suffering a deprivation of all

my senses, combined with a reprogramming using hypnosis and harmonics. THE

structure in question, which was reminiscent of a coffin, was transformed into

my mind in a crematorium, where I was subjected to a feeling of warmth

growing while "I burned slowly" as it was to me

hypnotically suggested. Aquino, then, "made me cross the threshold of death"

to enter another dimension ''empty time[395]''.''

4 - In pursuit of lost soul fragments

As we have just seen, the human soul can detach itself from the physical body during extreme trauma. The victim remains alive, which indicates that his soul has not completely detached itself from the body but rather that it has fragmented. Although life resumes as well as it can after this extreme experience, "soul fragments" can remain separated from the ''Me'', lost fragments, loaded with a traumatic memory and navigating in other dimensions... In his book 'Wife Rape', Raquel K. Bergen re-reports Sonya's words: ''I have lost a part of myself. I think a deep part in me is dead[396].

In the book "The Discovery of the Unconscious", Henri F. Ellenberger explains that in the old traditions, diseases and mental disorders can occur when the soul leaves the body (spontaneously or by accident) or if it is stolen by a spirit or by a sorcerer. The healer, or shaman, will then go in search of this lost arrre year to bring it back and restore it thus the body and the psyche of the patient. This is known as the "recovery of the soul''. This practice is widespread but it is not universal, it is present among the Negritos of the Malaysian peninsula, among the natives the Philippines and Australia among others. This belief is also present in other cultures such as Siberia, Northwest Africa, Indonesia or New Guinea. The nature of the soul, the causes of the loss of thesoul, the destination of the lost soul and the way to heal the sick can vary according to each local culture.

These traditional cultures teach us that during sleep or fainting, the soul can separate from the physical body. This is the theory according to which a "ghost-spirit" is present in the body during life normal, but that he is able to leave this physical body temporarily, in particular during sleep. The travelling spirit can then be lose,be attacked, captured and held prisoner by a bad guy spirit or a sorcerer. The mind can also abruptly leave the body when a state of awakening, especially during a shock causing great fear. It can also be forced to leave the body by ghosts, demons or even wizards. The treatment of the traditional healer therefore consists in go on astral hunt to find the fragment ofsoul, bring it back and thus restore the sick. In Siberia, this healing does not perhaps practiced only by a shaman who has been brought into contact with the world spirits during his initiation. It therefore has the capacity to play the role of mediator between this other dimension and that of the living. The Russian Ethnologist Ksenofontov reports: "When a human being loses his soul'', the shaman puts himself in a state of trance by a special technique during from which his soul goes on a journey to the spirit world. Shamans are able to go and hunt down the lost soul in the other world of the ^ê^e way that a hunter tracks down an animal in the physical world. They often have to make a deal with the spirits who have captured the soul, reconcile with them and make them presents. Sometimes they also have to fight the

11XVXXXV XXXUXXXVX V

spirits, of preferably with the help of other spirits who are their allies. Even if they are victorious in their quest, they must always anticipate the revenge of the evil spirits. Once they have recovered the lost soul, they bring it back to reintegrate it into the body, which results in the cure of the patient[397].

The ethnologist Guy Moréchand describes the role of the shaman thus: "The exercise of shamanism translates materially into trance. When it enters into a trance, the shaman is supposed to undertake a journey. He leaves his body that will, on the spot, as the session progresses, mimic and tell the stories of efforts and episodes of adventures that take place in worlds different from the terrestrial world. Representations of these shamanic journeys culminate in a cosmogony with three worlds, with a sky and a hell, symmetrical with respect to the earth, located above and below ofher, hell being sometimes underground, sometimes underwater. The Three Worlds (or series of worlds) are crossed by a vertical axis which is their way access. One reaches the sky by rising with the help of a winged animal genius. THE horse is, in several populations, the mount that leads to the underworld. In these worlds, concretely unknown to ordinary humans and which are their inaccessible,the shaman goes in search of a soul on the run that has provoked by its absence the disease. The term of peregrinations or abduction of this soul by an evil spirit, is sometimes the kingdom of a deity, celestial or infernal, from whom the shaman is obliged to go and claim it and buy it[398]."

In his book entitled ''Animism and shamanism for all'', Igor Shamanovich describes the trances of "men-medicines" as follows:

''The ''medecine-man' is an ecstatic par excellence. However, at the level of religions primitives, ecstasy means the flight of the soul into the sky, or its wandering

through the earth, or finally its descent to the underground regions among the

dead. The 'medicine man' undertakes such ecstatic journeys to meet

face to face the god of heaven and present him with an offering from the

community, to seek the soul of a patient supposedly lost away from his body

or delighted by the demons (...) The abandonment of the body by the soul, during ecstasy,

is equivalent to a temporary death. The 'medicine man' is therefore the man capable of

"die" and "resurrect" a considerable number of times[399].

Ecstasy (ekstasis = exit from the body) corresponds here to a deep dissociative state controlled during which the shaman

travel to other dimensions. As we saw in Chapter 2, when

of his initiation, the shaman himself probably passed through traumatic rituals that created in him a resulting fractionation

the opening of a breach to the spirit world. He is a healer who

self-cured and who controls his dissociative states.

In other traditions, the shaman does not work in a trance state and he does not venture as far into the spirit world. his

technique simply consists of making conjurations, a kind of exorcism, as in the Quechua Indians who as we have seen call this

fracturing of the soul: the disease of fear (Susto).

In the Kahuna tradition we also find this notion of splitting the soul. For this people of Hawaii, the spirit of a man can be

divide into different parts during an accident or illness. In its

livre “The Secret Science Behind Miracles” (La

secret science behind miracles), Max Freedom Long reports the four

types of human "ghosts" or "spirits" that the Kahunas tradition has listed. These descriptions may be

compared with the different alter personalities and traumatic amnesias that characterize a T.D.I.:

- 1/ The spirit in a normal state of a deceased man: This entity is composed of a subconscious mind and a conscious mind, all

as in physical life. He thinks and remembers like any

ordinary incarnate man (...)

- 2/ The subconscious mind of man separated from his consciousness by an accident or illness, before or after death. This spirit remembers very much

Well, but it is illogical, it has the reasoning ability of an animal. It

responds to hypnotic suggestions. It is like a child and often causes

"poltergeists" to have fun (...)

- 3/ The conscious mind of man separated from his subconscious before or after death. This spirit does not remember anything, it is a spectrum almost totally helpless, wandering aimlessly (...) he will behave like a true "lost soul" as long as it is not rescued and reconnected to his subconscious spirit that will then provide him with the memories to restore his power (...)

- 4/ The spirit of super-consciousness, including what is called "spirits of nature" or "group souls" after terminology theosophical. The information about this category of spirits is waves, although we can conclude that they often take over the above, unihipili to two categories of lower spirits cited (subconscious) do things from and uhane (consciousness), sometimes helping them nature spectacular[400].

The "loss of the soul", which would rather be a loss of "fragments of soul", is therefore a widespread belief in traditional shamanic cultures. It is characterized by a loss of vital energy, personal power and a part of the identity. These soul fragments can get lost in another World, another dimension, especially when there has been abuse, suffering and trauma in childhood. Just as for some South American shamans who associate the loss of the soul with the fear,for some shamans of Southeast Asia the "fall of the fold" usually results from a material accident, for example a blow, a fall or fear, deep worry or overwork.

A body with a fragmented soul is like a tree without roots, it is weakened. This ties in with what some clairvoyants report concerning the "unlocking" of the astral body that splits from the body physical during extreme traumas, thus leaving the victim in a kind of state ''disconnected''. It is no longer physically anchored in matter and this weakens it considerably.

Shamans systematically do anchoring work before embarking on a journey to another dimension, it is important and even necessary for them to keep their "feet on the ground" during an astral outing. In his book "The Way of the Shaman'' (The Shaman's Way), Michael Harner notes that in all the pre-industrial traditions, when a person was physically ill or that she had an abnormal behavior, it is that generally she had lost a part of herself that had uprooted. This problem could sometimes be aggravated by external entities because the trauma, the trigger of the loss of a part of the soul, risked allowing the intrusion of spirits demonics in the psychic space of the person and cause damage important.

In all these traditions, it is clearly recognized that the loss of the soul takes place due to psychic, physical or spiritual trauma.

As we have already seen, the shaman's mission is to find the pieces

of soul lost to return them to the fractional person, but he will perform

sometimes an exorcism to drive out the entities that can parasitize the patient.

Some anthropologists who have studied the healing techniques of shamans

traditional have described ceremonies aimed at first restoring the soul

fractional and then exorcise it from parasitic entities.

So here we have the diagram: Trauma - Splitting of the soul/personality - Possession.

A pattern that seems to be the common point of survivors of satanic ritual abuses who have developed a T.D.I.. Just like the degree of severity

of trauma will influence the level of dissociation, it is also this degree

of the severity of the trauma that will influence the possibility of possession by

of entities. The splitting of the personality is related to this "loss of the soul".

The phenomenon that psychology calls dissociation therefore has both a neurochemical aspect and a metaphysical aspect, however psychiatry

is unable to explain to us where the

different pieces of personality with their dissociative amnesia... and let alone explain to us where the fragments are going of souls that shamans seek in their astral vires for curing the sick...

Some psychotraumatologists explain schematically that a forgotten traumatic memory is lost and kept in a "black box" stuck in the hippocampus in the depths of the brain... But do we already know how to define what exactly a memory is? Memory is not a thing but a process. It is neither solid nor static, nor is it literally "stored" in a tangible form. It is not found somewhere in a wardrobe and she has no manifest physical form in the meaning in which it cannot be touched, seen or heard[401].

Our memories are not made up of neurons but rather of a "subatomic" energy exceeding our physical dimension, the neurons being only a biological interface for the expression of information. TO from there, several questions can be asked:

- Is an alter child personality in a dissociated adult a fragment of the soul (more than of "personality") that has remained stuck in the past, in an alternative dimension, keeping the age and memory that it had at the time she separated from the physical body during the trauma? Are these alter traumatized children explained by this theory of fragments of souls lost in another dimension outside our space-time?

- Is the T.D.I. linked to another space-time in which "alter personalities" can be contacted, processed, delivered and reintegrated in the present moment with all the memories that accompany them?

In his book "The Lost Secret of Death", Peter Novak gives us the beginnings of an answer: "When shamans travel into these other realities to find the lost soul fragments other people, they report that these fragments are not at all sleeping. On the contrary, they seem to be autonomous, they are entities conscious of themselves, engaged in their parallel reality. However, as long as they are separated from the person's consciousness, these fragments do not seem to progress at all. They remain frozen in the the same state of emotional and intellectual development they had when they have split from the person's mind. The soul fragment who split when the child was 4 years old will continue to include and a

are small a

think as if he were 4 years old. He will believe himself to be 4 years old, even if the rest

of the person grew up to even be an old man. These alienated fragments

do not seem to grow and mature until healing happens, and

that the missing part is not restored. These fragments will usually have

their own personal qualities, their abilities, their feelings, as well as

that a consciousness of themselves leading their own lives in this world of

fantasy. The part of the soul that was lost in early childhood goes

stay to play in the schoolyard, or maybe to tremble under

the staircase, hiding to avoid a punishment that has already taken place 40 years

earlier.

It is the shaman's job to try to make this fragment of soul understand the reality of his difficult situation in order to convince him to

come back and join the rest of the mind of the person living in

"the present moment".' Very often, the fragment of soul will have no idea what the shaman is talking about, thinking to be a real autonomous person (...) some

days or a few weeks after the reintegration of the lost soul fragment, the

memories associated with this fragment will begin to emerge to the consciousness of the person. When the soul fragment returns, the memories related to it

come back with him. These memories are lost and forgotten when the soul is

splits, the person then no longer has access to this fragment of memory. Once

back, these memories usually require a lot of attention because they

contain emotions and traumatic sensations that need to be

integrated. This is usually what caused the splitting of the mind[402]."

Here we find exactly the same symptoms and the same characteristics as the functioning of the T.D.I., with amnesic walls

traumatic ones that disappear when alter personalities emerge and

merge, while the dissociated memories related to it small aware and integrated. The alter personalities of a T.D.I.

would seem to be lost soul fragments with their memorial contents.

Therapist Alison Miller wrote: "Patients (T.D.I.) told me that it was impossible to keep the alters separated from each other once the traumatic memories that had them

fractional had been fully processed[403]. This means that the integration and fusion of alter personalities takes place automatically when the dissociative amnesia disappears and

memories become conscious.

in

2006, ritual abuse and mind control survivor Lynn Schirmer

are small a
described

during a conference the process of fusion with its alter personalities "frozen" in another space time: "They integrate into the present, in fact they... I do not know how to explain everything

this: they go through a kind of process. There is a certain

integration,but when I reclaim memory, usually the process

consists in taking this alter out of its "frozen" state, dissociated. I have to drive

the alter who holds this memory in the present, I familiarize him with the present moment and I transfer this isolated memory into a chronology

consistent. Then, my alters only have to adapt to this new world,

i.e. the present. They must therefore evolve and get used to it[404].

When Lynn Schirmer recovers a memory, she must therefore lead the alter that is associated with it in the present moment when it must evolve

to adapt... here she speaks very clearly of blocked soul fragments,

"frozen" as she says, in what seems to be another space-time.

An obscure past in which the alters continue to live "in a loop" with

this traumatic memory.

the

survivor Jen Callow describes the reluctance that soul fragments can have

to merge with their main personality: "I have children (alter) parts who are eager to "grow" by merging with another party. However, there are

to merge with their main personality: "I have children (alter) parts
who are eager to "grow" by merging with another party. However, there are

has many parties that remain frightened by integration. Some see

then the inner world will shrink, with the loss of their

Companions games,
their friends... when these different parts merge, it may result in a great sense of loss for others. This reduction in the number of alter can also be interpreted as real people who "disappear" and some parts may be afraid of disappearing also (...) For many of my alter, integration is something terrifying, because it means giving up to their own identity and become someone new and unknown[405]."

The existence of these fragments of soul lost in another space time has been validated by the astral travel experiences of Robert Monroe, the founder of the Monroe Institute created in 1974 in Virginia in the United States. It was a wealthy businessman who owned many media outlets and had himself lived many experiences of out-of-body outs. Monroe became a global specialists in astral travel. The original purpose of this institute was to do research on remote viewing, it is today one of the largest research centers on out-of-body exit, relaxation, meditation and Hemi-sync techniques (synchronization of the cerebral hemispheres by sound frequencies). According to some authors, the Monroe Institute is also involved (probably by the recovery of this institute by the CIA) in trauma-based mind control, hemi-sync techniques can be used to work on the cerebral hemispheres in Delta and Theta type MK programs (we will return to this in the chapter next).

According to researcher Tom Porter, Robert Monroe is the son of James Monroe who worked for years for the CIA but who also was the director of a front company called Human Ecology Society". As noted in Chapter 3, this front company was used to the CIA for the financing of the MK-Ultra program. James Monroe would have personally supervised people like Dr. Ewen Cameron. It is therefore it is possible that Robert Monroe, the world champion of astral travel, was himself subjected to mk-ultra mind control programs. According to

Andrijah Puharich,

Robert Monroe himself stimulated his abilities for astral travel for which he seemed to have a certain predisposition, perhaps because of the traumas experienced in his childhood? A common point for people experiencing spontaneous astral outflows are traumas.

Monroe has written extensively about his experiences of out-of-body out-of-body trips that began in 1958. In 1994, he published the book "Ultimate Journey" in which he describes deep journeys out of his body during which he sometimes met souls of deceased people. Monroe describes these entities as confused,disoriented, seemingly trapped in a space of time, an emotion and a particular memory. He describes them as entities semi-conscious unable to realize that they are dead. As noted more high, the Kahuna tradition describes this type of entities as being the spirit conscious separated from his subconscious mind which then finds itself as a soul i exilLt; aiiiiicoiquc cxycai L uicoum vat; i cuumicu ULI a OCX pcxi Lit;

missing for access restorer memories. Monroe also tells how these entities,these lost souls, could sometimes even be his own. It was not so not only souls of deceased people, they were also fragments souls of living people, including his own... He reports in his book that he sometimes encountered what appeared to be another part of his own mind, lost fragments that seemed to be prisoners of the past and incapable to evolve. When he met and delivered his fragments of souls lost,they were reincorporated into his mind at a particular level that he name the "Me-Here"! 405!.

Just as Lynn Schirmer describes it for his alters, he brought back his fragments of soul lost in the present moment, in our space time. those Monroe's experiences in other dimensions could therefore validate the Shamanic tradition which consists in "going on the hunt for lost souls" during an astral journey to recover the fragments of the broken soul of a person to heal. However, it would rather be the tradition ancestral shamanic that should validate the testimony of Monroe because what he had just discovered was precisely what shamans had been practicing since

centuries...

in

his book "The Ultimate Journey", Monroe tells us about his students who go hunting for fragments of souls

"What surprises many candidates is that when they engage in this

mission,they discover that at the same time they recover lost parts

ofthemselves... Others may appear as fragments of personality of

everyday life, who had fled or been torn from the personality

basic. For example, children who had fled trauma and pain

of the physical and psychological violence they were experiencing in their families and which were now seeking to be reunited with the other fragments (...) Clusters of light, fires of human energy forming an endless multidimensional carpet... how could I

don't see them before that? Now I understand the input streams and

exit... my flow is there and I have to stay on track... the flow of

out of those who come to help and find the lost parts of their

cluster... the input stream that brings them back... thousands and thousands... of

insertions of groups of personality units into human individuals of the

Earth's life system! [407]]."

Yes

Robert Monroe went through an MK-Ultra type program in his childhood,

did he himself havea T.D.I. and particular psychic faculties caused

by a violent early spiritual "unlocking"? Ron's Book

Russell "Journey of Robert Monroe" reports a quote from Lesley Frans showing that he obviously had a complex and multiple personality: "Among the things we often talked about about Bob (Robert) were the different aspects of his personality that were expressed at times. Uncle Bob or Dad, Bob Business man, Bob the Director, Bob the Old Guy, Cosmic Bob, Bob Parano, *etc.* It was the main Bob I knew, but it was far from being the only ones. Once you could finally figure out which Bob was present in front of you to try to communicate with him: hop! It changed in no time. There was a Bob Jongleur who talked a lot of frustration. Bob Business-man had left his ethic in the closet, he was hard and without emotions (...) Some other Bob refuted the harm he had done, and Bob Parano tried to find and follow a certain ethic! [408]]."

In the case of satanic ritual abuse and mind control, do the sorcerers-executioners capture the soul fragments of the victims? some Can soul fragments be captives of external entities, which could thus influencing and manipulating thoughts, behavior and creating emotional and physical problems to the victim? This is what seems to be affirm certain shamanic traditions for whom the soul lost may be held prisoner by evil spirits or by wizards. This is also what some survivors of ritual abuse say.

Is this just a superstitious belief or is it really about

operative occult techniques?

In Satanism, sexual violence is used to access the mind of the victim, child prostitution and the production of

childpornography has only a financial purpose. Sexual abuse is used

to hurt and dominate the mind of the victim, "tear him away

thesoul". Victims describe how Satanists can capture

a part of their mind to keep it with them permanently.

Conversely, executioners can also introduce part of their soul,

a fragment of their mind, inside the victim when he is

in states of modified consciousness (spiritual openness). For this they

[illegible]

others

substances to implant inside the

victim during a rape for example. The soul fragments of the sorcerers-executioners

will then remain attached to the victim to continuously strengthen the

commands for control and obedience. All this is pure

witchcraft, which also combines orgasm and pain to soothe fertility deities.

the

11 tilïQpnt 1 rc fl11 ïrlq the»-r-r» -r»/^1 <a (cann mpnctrnpl cnprmr'i

theory of fragments of mind created by trauma and which can be attached to a person is something known in the field of the paranormal and the possession. As we have seen, satanists who practice abuse rituals are usually themselves dissociated and fractionated, so it is it is conceivable that they may deliberately link some of their fragments to the victims. This type of manipulation combined with the T.D.I. creates slavery in both spiritual, psychological and physical. The American Pastor

Tom Hawkins wrote: "Most survivors of ritual abuse have been forced to participate in rituals including vows, oaths, sacrifices or

covenants made with the spiritual realm of evil. These "transactions"

legal"give evil spirits, or demons, the right to bind certain

alter specific who have been involved in these practices and to exercise on them

influence and control to varying degrees. They will be able to play a role, by

example by strengthening programming, blocking memories, or

Re-traumatizing alters who failed in their functions, who disclosed

secrets or asked for help from outside. These demonized alters have

generally been enslaved to Satan and his plan (...) These connections can also be made with entities of a higher echelon than the daemons (...) Dissociated personalities can be tortured and pushed into deep trance states that will connect them to what we

let's call the "second heaven", in reference to the "kingdom of air" of which Satan

is the reigning prince (Eph. 2:2). There, the alter can be "captive" by evil entities and used for the global plan of Satan, transmitted directly from the spiritual realm. In the system internal of these people, these alter usually seem out of the body physical and are considered absent or even dead by the other alteri[409]!."

This other dimension where the fragments of soul evolve is noticeable by the distortions of time and reality which are very frequent and sometimes intense in patients with T.D.I. It can even happen complete losses of the notion of time. The rises of traumatic memories in which the person truly relives the scene with the images, the sounds,smells, as well as physical pain and psychological terror do not aren't they a journey back in time? It is an access to another space time in which a precise scene is beautiful and well recorded "somewhere" in every detail, with all the sensory and emotional system related to this memory capsule. THE psycnotraumatoiogues will explain this pnenomene by the neurological process and chemical dissociative memories not treated by the hippocampus, but they do not take into account this notion of "soul fragments" misplaced"... How do they explain shamanic journeys in another dimension to seek and bring back these fragments of soul... with their pieces of dissociated memories?

In his book "Being and Time", Martin Heidegger refers to the past, present and future like the ecstasy of temporality, the word ecstasy meaning "to be outside". In his analysis of temporality Heidegger writes that the past, present and future can be found transcended and indissolubly unified. He calls this the unit ecstatic temporality. "Dissociative enlightenment" is sometimes described as an exit from our space-time or present, past and future are found on the same timeline. The experience of trauma becomes somehow frozen and prisoner of an eternal present.

Pierre Janet had noticed that when a traumatic memory was reactivated, the person generally lost the notion of time and time present,his "present" was then the traumatic experience that occurred again. In an article entitled "Functional disorders

of memory", it is noted that the immersion in automatic memory is sometimes so intense that the temporal orientation is lost and the trauma is relived as if it were

was happening in the present moment, rather than as a mere memory! [410]]."

in

the article "Time Distortions in Dissociative Identity Disorder", Dr. Onno van der Hart and the psychotherapist

Kathy Steele report the testimony of an alter personality undergoing

disorders of the notion of time during flashbacks of traumatic memories:

"This continues to be the storm in my head. There is a lot of noise with all kinds of flashes all the time, sometimes movies. I'm scared

I can't look at them and they are hard to stop (...) It's scary because it happens so suddenly, but also because it makes me totally confused. A
confusion with respect to time mainly, it is difficult to know if

these things are part of the present moment or the past. It also becomes

more and more difficult to keep a grip on the present time.
It seems to me

that I can no longer trust the clock. It's suddenly an hour

later, then five minutes appear to have lasted more than three days! [411]]."

This testimony shows us that this disorder is a phenomenon that goes beyond our "matrix" and that we must therefore take into account its appearance

multidimensional if we want to start studying it seriously... THE

clinicians, with their "classical" scientific training, are not

generally not intellectually equipped to deal with this face of the

problem.

Children's alter personalities are often unable to give themselves a sense of time, to mark hours or days. They are

in an endless space, without limits, enclosed in a timeless or

"frozen in the eternal present" of their traumatic experience.

To [illegible]

of time seems to be something specific to our existence in this physical world in three dimensions, but this notion of time seems to disappear for these alter, which would prove that they evolve (or stagnate should we say) in another dimension. In a way, we can say that the traumas can create "holes" or "breaches" in our space-time. Hence the connections with certain entities and the powers paranormal psychics that can develop in some victims such as we will see later.

This notion of soul fragments blocked or even captive in another dimension is an essential point for understanding the nature of the T.D.I. and the operation of MK-Monarch programming. Type mind control Monarch deliberately created these soul fragments in order to control and control them exploit. The "inner world" of the Monarch slave would be nothing else that this dimension where live these fragments of soul, prisoners of structures set up by the programmer and linked to demonic entities that have a function of guardians. Programmers therefore interact with this space-time to imprison and dominate these dissociated fragments. Therapist Patricia Baird Clarke describes this dimension as follows: "Through rituals, Satanists use demons to separate the body spiritual of the physical body. When the soul and the spirit were separated and the spiritual body separated from the physical body, then the person enters in a way fully conscious in a completely different dimension. This is the dimension that I calls the "inner world". This world is also vast and also real for the individual than is the physical world for us. We think of spirits as if they had a "vaporous" state, but the people who went into this dimension have told me that the demons did have a weight and a substance! [412]]."

Here's how therapist Alison Miller describes this inner world, this space-time where alters live: "The inner worlds of patients are not all the same. Some, like the one described

Trish Fotheringham, have magical castles and forests; others have prisons, fortresses, torture rooms and various facilities military (editor's note: structures voluntarily introduced into the world interior by programmers). Some describe places that appear to be represent another world or other planets. Persons whose T.D.I. has was created spontaneously (editor's note: without a deliberate will of others to the split to program them), usually have interior houses in which live the alter. These are often internal representations of the house where they lived at the time of the abuse! [413]!."

just

Callow has undergone ritual abuse and mental programming protocols, here is how she describes this inner world where her fragments are located

"When we (the alters) finally start therapy with a person who has understood what dissociation is, many of us are isolated and live in terror. We are locked into our world interior: in boxes, in cold basements, or in others places related to our memories. We are locked into our programs, often hungry or in pain. Our inner system can inflict torture and abuses similar to what our aggressors have subjected us to! [414]]."

This notion of an inner world where the alters stagnate, a world without limits and totally abstract, arranged with all kinds of things, might seem implausible, absurd and psychotic if we did not take not in account this phenomenon of alternative dimension to ours. We detail the techniques of structuring this inner world in the Next chapter on Monarch programming.

Traditional shamanic beliefs about soul splitting are probably not that far removed from our own conception psychiatric of a lost soul. Even if we don't know the cultural elements and ancestral roots of these things, we have some commonalities with these ancestral concepts: is it not said that a patient is "alienated", "alien" to himself, that his personality has become deteriorated or even destroyed? The therapist who works with a so-called "schizophrenic" patient does not he seek to establish contact with the remaining part of the personality that still has "its feet on the ground"? Does he not seek to rebuild the fractional personality just like the modern successor of those shamans who hunt down souls lost in the spirit world and fight the demons that keep them prisoner, this in order to bring them back in the world of the living! [415]i ?

5 - Trauma and paranormal psychic faculties

"Here are some factors I noted regarding 'haunted people'. They are usually bipolar, they have

usually suffered from sexual abuse or trauma in their past

(often during childhood). The majority of cases involve

extreme dysfunctions at the family level. These are people who have

experienced the paranormal since very early childhood." "Haunted People, Haunted Minds" - Bobbie Atristain, 2006

In 1784, the Marquis de Puységur (Armand Marie Jacques de Chastenet), who worked on animal magnetism and the laying on of hands,

reported a special case with one of his employees, a peasant named Victor

Breed that showed an obvious change in personality with a separation of

consciousness accompanied by amnesia. During a hand-laying session

to relieve Victor of a pulmonary congestion, the Marquis was surprised to

to see that the young man had quietly fallen asleep... He actually discovered

that it was not a normal sleep but a particular state of consciousness in which he was in a trance. Once in this state, Victor xace showed special abilities: he became extremely sensitive to the suggestion and his personality totally changed. While it was usually rather slow-minded, this other personality showed a remarkable intelligence with phenomenal mental agility. In addition, in these modified states of consciousness he was able to read in the thoughts of the marquis and to make accurate medical diagnoses both for him and for other people. It could also predict the progress of a disease and prescribe treatment, often with great success. Victor also showed strange memory disorders. Indeed, when he came out of this state of unusual consciousness, he had absolutely no memory of what he had been past, while in the state of trance he had a full awareness of his two personalities. The Marquis of Puységur decided to name this discovery the state of "magnetic sleep", which it linked to the Artificial sleepwalking states that he also called "magnetic sleepwalking! [415]l ".

34 years later, the Marquis met Victor Race again and plunged him into a state of trance. What was not his surprise to see that his former employee remembered in every detail all his previous states of magnetic sleep. In its livre “The Discovery of Unconscious” Ellenberger tells us that in August 1785, the Marquis de Puységur was ordained in the command of the Artillery Regiment of Strasbourg. It was then that the lodge Local Masonic asked him to teach the principles of animal magnetism to its members, always very interested in acquiring paranormal powers can lead them to the "light" and the raise above the layman. History does not tell us if Victor Race had suffered trauma during her early childhood, but she shows us that a multiple personality can develop psychic powers

ro m rvrm ai that's

Can trauma be the cause of certain paranormal phenomena? Can they pave the way for certain faculties? psychic? Do they create a breach, the opening of a door to others dimensions? As we have seen above, it would seem so. THE emotions open doors to other worlds and those emanating from Traumas are particularly powerful. However, the powers psychics do not necessarily come from a childhood trauma. They can come from certain transgenerational "gifts" more or less sharpened. They can develop through certain energy practices and exercises. But they may also be the result of pacts with entities. THE Satanists and Luciferians seek these paranormal powers for increase their power, but they only get a subservientness to the demons in exchange for these "powers"... The Holy Ghost can also transmit graces of this type, such as clairvoyance for example.

Joseph Mahoney, a Catholic priest from Detroit (USA) who works with patients suffering from T.D.I,, listed a series of Strange phenomena that are observed in these fractional people![417]). Generally, a paranormal faculty will be specific to an alter personality and it will be absent in others. Here is what the priest writes about these paranormal phenomena related to dissociative identity disorder (note: that some phenomena reported in this list, are often also reported in cases of demonic possession):

- A great sensitivity to hypnosis and a rare ability to cause hypnotic states and trance in others.
- Memories of the body that manifest themselves physically. These are traumas from the past that arise on the body in the same way as the classic phenomenon of stigmata. They can appear and disappear without no outside intervention. It can be rashes, marks, cuts, burns, blood loss,

blues,

swelling or other important physiological changes.

- Telepathy, clairvoyance and unexplained knowledge, photographic memory, hypersensitivity leading to

reading the body language of others extremely developed, prowess

unusual mental.

- A physical strength exceeding what is humanly possible.
- Accelerated cures, bleeding control and the ability to self-regulate physiological states in a usually way

impossible to do.

- An ability to provoke in the observer a feeling of cold, unhappiness or threat.
- Extreme acts of self-harm, hatred of God and religious objects.
- An ability to spend long periods without food or sleep.
- An ability to anesthetize a specific alter personality or block a nerve transmission of pain.

in

her book "The Secrets of Psychic Success", the medium Angela Donovan writes that according to her own experience, there are three ways by which can be develop psychic faculties, one of which is directly related to traumatic experiences: "There are those who have experienced severe emotional trauma. I have met many psychics who are who have arrived in this area following the death of a relative, or who have suffered from a physical shock, like a blow to the head. This can literally open the "doors" and create a receptive state. This is something that can be positive if the person is trying to understand what is happening to them, but if it is not the case,it can be very disconcerting! 418]."

The development of paranormal psychic powers has sometimes been reported as a result of accidents causing physical trauma or experiences at the frontiers of death. This is the case of the famous medium Italian Eusapia Paladino who suffered a head injury (bone parietal) during an accident during his early childhood. This is also the case the famous Dutch medium Peter Hurkos who acquired powers

*f**vtrci **<a/^n** cnri**g** there iï**at** îvn tranmoHcmp **at** the **at** îvn *nrwnn r\f\**

[illegible]
three days in falling from a ladder... Hurkos was considered to be one of the most eminent clairvoyants of the world, he has worked to solve many cases of disappearances or unsolved murders. Hurkos said: "I see images in my mind like on a television screen. When I touch something, I can then say what I see in connection with this thing."

In the book "The Psychic World of Peter Hurkos", Norma Lee Browning reports what Hurkos told him about his trauma:

"I remember when I fell and didn't want to die, then it was complete black. When I woke up I no longer had my own mind. It was from there that I got my gift. I was in someone else's mind and I was scared because I didn't didn't know what was going on. My father and mother said I was not more at all the same Peter as before. They said I was dead and I was returned with two spirits. You can ask my father, I swear. It you will say that his real son Peter died and that I came back with two spirits different. There are two spirits here my dear, two spirits, you understand? (...) You know there are people with two personalities? Well, I have two minds. My father was right when he said I was no longer the same Peter. He died and returned in hearing voices and seeing images (...) Was he really a psychic or a psychotic? Was it possible that he was schizophrenic or real multiple personality? Was he "born again" as clairvoyant because of head trauma, just as Bridey Murphy was born in new under hypnosis? Did he really have a sixth sense, or was he a mentally ill? I was intrigued by these questions. If the history of the accident de Peter could be verified, a light would be shed on what is called the "psychic powers". I have always had the idea that these paranormal psychic phenomena were something natural, rather than supernatural.

A physical phenomenon rather than metaphysical, physiological rather than psychological. I am convinced that one day it will be proved that all that the so-called "psychic experiences" has a physical explanation with the different electrochemical components of the most wonderful machine computer science that it is: the human brain! [419]]."

Altered states of consciousness, or dissociative states, are the key to paranormal psychic faculties. As we have seen, extreme trauma causes dissociation, which is a profound altered state of consciousness. THE dissociation creates a certain openness towards an alternative world, towards other dimensions, towards the immaterial and the invisible... Surely that's the reason for which more or less extraordinary phenomena may occur with some individuals. People who have developed a T.D.I. (therefore having suffered trauma and strong dissociation) showed Capabilities outsized physical, exceeding the usual human potential, but they can also show some paranormal psychic powers. Trauma extreme and repetitive seem to modify or create particular synapses (neuralconnections, we'll come back to this in the next chapter) but also activate some parts of the brain usually dormant. This thus causes a kind of "bug in the matrix", knowing that our entire "reality" is based solely on our perceptions, and that these perceptions (our five senses) depend solely on these connections neuronal and the electrical flows that circulate there. If we add to this the fact that we only use on average 10% of our brain, so we can say that our perception of "reality" is in fact very limited and whereas it is therefore possible that it could be greatly modified by a few neural connections that are created or that change during trauma. As we will see it in the next chapter, it is the experience of the child who shapes the synapses and the functioning of his brain. Trauma extremes shape the brain while splitting energy bodies, creating an opening towards other dimensions and the development of some psychic faculties.

Dr. John Smythies explains this phenomenon of "Matrix" on which our brain is connected: "The evidence neurological are numerous enough to show that our sensory data, including somatic, may not be identical to external objects but only at specific brain states. If we took away a child's brain to connect it to a giant computer that would send appropriate stimuli to the sensory nerves, the individual in question would lead a kind of average life perfect; in fact, it would live all life that we would program. The sensory fields of consciousness are constructions of the

npnrpiiv

^ J ^ 1 IV/I V V/U/Vj

and not the direct apprehension of external material objects. In others

Terms, the physiological mechanisms of perception function as the

television and not like a telescopei[420]!."

the

psychic and extrasensory faculties that can cause dissociation

and the connection with other dimensions is a fully integrated reality and

used in most pre-industrial traditions, but also by the

"nameless religion" dominates, for whom the capacity for dissociation is a

very important genetic criterion. Anthropologist Ruth Inge- Heinz, who has

studied possessions in many cultures writes: "The concept that defines a "healthy mind" differs considerably from a culture at

the other (...) It can be very destructive to label an extraordinary state of "mental illness"

consciousness. A state of mental dissociation does not necessarily mean that it

is an individual who must be put on a straitjacket. dissociative states that occur in Southeast Asia for example are all at

fact controlled and integrated into traditional culture! [421]]."

like

many

as we saw in chapter 2, the shaman transforms a sudden state into a state dominated, a passive dissociation into an active dissociation: it is a healer who has self-healed. In some cultures, people who behave with mental illness characteristics are traditionally associated with the divine, especially if they receive visions or messages specific. Possession by an external entity is often considered as an aid to become a healer or soothsayer. The DSM-IV Casebook (complement to the DSM providing practical cases and testimonies) reports the case of a woman recognized by her community as being able to communicate with ancestors and predict the future: "Sometimes God enters me, it is very hot when he gives me visions." (...) "This woman has symptoms that would be considered psychotic if found by a person from a society that does not share its culture and beliefs (Guinea). It believes that it has special powers, whereas for some it adjusts hallucinations. In its local culture, these Phenomena are very frequent. His community gives him the role of healer and accept her abnormal experiences and behaviors such as something quite normal for someone who holds this role. Indeed, she is a very successful healer. His community attributes to him therefore the role of healer and her behavior is not considered something to treat and cure."

In the book "The Magic Challenge: Satanism and Witchcraft", Jean Baptiste Martin writes:

"Ernesto De Martino begins by noting that in cultures that are usually the object of ethnological studies, it has very often been observed that some particular psychic states were very common, as if the natives seemed to be naturally predisposed to it. These states settle down as a result of traumas or emotions that precipitate the subject into a special condition, characterized by the loss of the unity of the Self[422]..."

In other words, the ethnologist De Martino describes here a dissociation that can cause a split (loss of the unity of the 'Me') and a separation of the physical body and the creating spiritual body an opening to another dimension and access to possession and paranormal powers. This is a common process in cultures pre-industrial,but also practiced by satanic cults / lucifériens.

In October 2014, TF1's Sept à huit broadcast a report devoted to the "Mah Song" of Thailand, also called the "possessed horses".

These men, revered as gods, enter deep states of trance dissociative claiming to be possessed by gods. In these altered states of conscience,the Mah Song accomplish things quite exu auruiiian es.

The report notably followed Ae, a man of 36 years, who when in a trance, speaks with the voice of a little boy in a Chinese dialect that yet he never learned. Again, it is possible whether it is a T.D.I. but the report does not talk about trauma previous or amnesia following the states of trance of Ae.

According to Ae, the deity who takes possession of him is a "god-child", which is why he has this voice particular when possessed. The journalist tells us that there would exist even "baby gods" taking possession of the Mah Song...

Once in a trance, these men pierce their cheeks, ears and body skin with long metal rods. They do not show no signs of pain and no drops of blood flow. Great surgeons French who have observed the phenomenon do not explain it because the cheeks are normally a highly vascularized area and sectioning them can even cause facial paralysis. During the ceremonies, the Mah Song, in a trance, will also prove their powers by foolish challenges such as climbing on a scale of 18 meters whose bars are finely sharpened blades, without in any way opening the soles of the feet, or even walking on glowing embers without burning. Impossible performance to do without serious physical consequences, dissociative trance (and help demons) is therefore greatly recommended in this kind of practices...

Mircéa Eliade writes that "among the Manchus, the ceremony of public initiation once included the passage of the candidate (shaman) on burning coals: if the apprentice actually had the "spirits" that he claimed to have, he could walk with impunity on the fire[423]."

In 1992, in an article entitled "Paranormal experiences in the general population (Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease), Dr. Colin Ross and Dr. Joshi stated that there is a link between paranormal experiments and dissociative. According to them, paranormal experiences are an aspect of the completely natural dissociation. As with the dissociation, these

Psychic faculties can be triggered by physical trauma or

psychological, usually during childhood. Several studies show that

such paranormal experiences are more common in individuals with

a traumatic past.

in

his book "The Osiris Complex", Dr. Collin Ross is very clear about the link between trauma,

dissociation and psychic faculties: "According to my data, analogically speaking, the genes for dissociation and paranormal

are closely related to one another on the same chromosome (...) Any extra-genetic factor activating one will tend to activate the other because they are connected. Trauma

severe and repetitive early childhood are one of these factors (...) Highly psychic people tend to be dissociative (...) Another way of looking at this would be to say that trauma opens a door to

the paranormal. This door is usually closed in our cultures

westerners rather hostile to these things. The dissociative fragmentation of

iɑ ouiic ɑ u.11 LICXLAIIICXLIOIIIC; 1111cu.1u.1c vɑ cxgn oui LLC pui LC
which remains

normally closed (...) These facets of the human psyche (trauma, dissociation and paranormal) have

suddenly been banished at the end of the 19th century in conjunction with the

Freud's renunciation of his theory of seduction. Freud had decided that

the incest revealed to him by his patient with a dissociative disorder had to be

fantasies, which led to a problem for him: if the trauma

had never existed, why did his patient have these symptoms and

pseudo-memories? To solve this problem, he abandoned hypnosis as

substantive treatment, rejected dissociation in favour of repression, continued

to ignore the paranormal, broke with Jung and moved completely away from the theories

putting severe trauma and its psychological consequences at the heart

psychopathology. To delete an item that he did not understand, he had

had to remove four essential components, which caused his distance from Jung, who continued to take a close interest in dissociation.

and to the paranormal! [424]]."

In a study on the link between dissociation and paranormal phenomena, Douglas G. Richards notes that: "Psychic experiences closely related to dissociation reveal clairvoyance, precognitions, apparitions, psychokinesis and telepathy (...) Experiences psy are an obvious component of dissociation." Richards is clear that these psychic experiences can also be a natural function in a healthy development process without traumatic past![425!.] In a 2003 article entitled "Multiple Personality Disorder - Demons and Angels or Archetypal aspects of the inner self", Dr. Haraldur Erlendsson writes:

"A particular aspect of T.D.I. is the frequency of headaches (79%) and perceptions extrasensory; such as telepathy, telekinesis, clairvoyance, the vision of "ghosts", the exit out of the body... These are the main non-clinical characteristics of T.D.I."

In the book "The unknown powers of man: the extrasensory", Dr. Gustave Geley writes that the main problems that poses the update of the second personalities are two in number, also ardued:

1° The problem of psychological difference with the normal personality: difference not only of direction, of will; but of general character, trends, faculties, knowledge; differences so radical sometimes, that they imply, between the normal self and the personality second, complete opposition and hostility.

2° The problem of supranormal abilities, which are frequently related to the manifestations of the second personality.

However, while the work on multiple personalities today is innumerable and has highlighted the frequency, importance and polymorphic character of these demonstrations, they did nothing for the solution of the second problem, which remains intact (...) They showed above all i total impotence of the explanations ae ia psycno-pnysioiogie classical vis-à-vis supra-normal faculties! [425!.]

the

Dr. James Randall Noblitt reports in his book "Cuit and Ritual Abuse" the case of one of his patients who is the victim of ritual abuse. She had developed a T.D.I. with an alter personality who saw the "auras" (the energetic halo that surrounds a person). "For some reason, these patients sometimes report having faculties psychics,such as the belief that they have the ability to see the auras. These people sometimes think that they have received a gift that allows them to see the light around the bodies of others; and that from the color and other aspects of this light, they can interpret it and make a kind of diagnosis about the person (...) As I learned more about this alter personality, she explained to me that she had the ability to see auras due to rituals in which she was forced to participate. His father warned him that these experiments had to remain strictly secret! [427!.]"

Psychiatrist Milton H. Erickson saw the multiple personality as something not necessarily pathological but rather as a phenomenal resource of potentialities to be exploited. It used hypnosis to access alter personalities and to transform a involuntary behavior in voluntary actions. This is a question of reversing a force a priori negative, uncontrollable and sometimes destructive, in a controllable strength to derive a positive and constructive advantage.

Control

MK-Monarch type mentality seeks to develop and exploit all potential that conceals an individual with a T.D.I....

In 2014, a study was conducted in Turkey to determine the possible relationship between experiences of possession, paranormal, traumatic stress and dissociation. The study was conducted on a representative sample of 628 women who were tested at clinical interviews structured around dissociative disorders, post-traumatic stress disorder, borderline personality disorder and childhood abuse and neglect.

Among women with dissociative disorder, paranormal phenomena and possessions were more common than among those with no dissociative disorders. Women who had a history of trauma in childhood, or adulthood, with stress post-traumatic, reported possession phenomena more frequently than those without trauma. Paranormal phenomena were also associated with childhood trauma. The group of women with dissociative disorders trauma-related had the highest score for phenomena possession or contact with demonic entities, communications extrasensory, possession by a human entity and precognitions. This study shows that paranormal and possession phenomena are at relate to the issue of trauma and dissociation. However, doctors who conducted this study consider that it is still preliminary

in reason for the

small number of sample! [428]).

In her doctoral thesis, psychologist Margo Chandley found that "many "channels" (editor's note:

mediums) seem to have experienced neglect or abuse."

Dans une étude intitulée “A Study of the corrélations between subjective psychic expérience and dissociative

experiments"(study on the correlations between experiments

Subjective psychics and dissociative experiences - Journal "Dissociation", 1991) Douglas Richards concluded that dissociation is very often related to the phenomena of clairvoyance,

premonitions, psychokinesis and telepathy. He reports that the outputs

out of the body, medium trances (channeling)

and contact with "guide spirits" imply

necessarily a dissociative process....
In his autobiography, "Adventures in the Supernormal", the

famous medium Eileen Garrett describes

the connection between early childhood trauma,

paranormal phenomena and the development of psychic faculties

1 r\ ~ **I** ^Ar-Ar- **~I** _ .

pamcuiiei es. uaneu a peiuu ses ueux pareil is qui se sum suicidae some days after birth. In her early childhood, she was almost suffering daily abuse by an aunt who raised him...

at

at the age of four, she [[429]ia felt the presence of what is usually called "an imaginary friend", she began to see the auras and to have visions and premonitions. In adulthood, Garrett sought to understand how she had acquired her medium faculties, she writes: "I think the trance state is part of the explanation of how I have developed my psychic faculties. I began to understand how the pain and suffering in my first days had caused me to withdraw from the material world. I was withdrawing from this world to such an extent that even though I saw my aunt's lips get agitated when she raped me, not a word of this that she could say did not penetrate my ears. I remember that when the pain and fear became unbearable, I could go inside of myself and then I became numb, I no longer felt the pain.

I had unconsciously developed an escape technique in order to avoid the suffering. I can now understand how this process opened up the way for the development of my mediumistic trance statesl[430!.] "

Kenneth Ring, l’auteur de “The Oméga Project” observed that adults who testified of experiences at the borders of death and contact with a UFO phenomenon, also reported frequently abuse and trauma in early childhood. For Ring, these trials in childhood may have developed in these people a sensitivity "After all, a child who is exposed to physical violence, sexual violence or other severe trauma will be strongly pushed to disconnect from one's physical and social world by dissociating oneself. But in doing this, it is more likely to connect with other realities! [431]]."

In the book "Reframing Consciousness", artist Kristine Stiles discusses the relationship between dissociation, hypervigilance and worlds parallels: "I think the ability to dissociate can be related to the psychic faculties through hypervigilance, which is a symptom running in response to trauma. Hypervigilance results in a excessive attention to an external stimulus going beyond what requires the threat level. Hypervigilance plays a vital role in protect the victim from a risky environment (...) Hypervigilance allows also the development of a very great power of concentration. The states hypnotics and dissociatives have long been associated with effects unusual on the body. These are mental functions in which

Cognitive resources are fully focused on a specific point, with few or no distractions and with increased control of somatic functions and neurophysiological. In the case of Joseph McMoneagle struggling with his newly acquired psychic faculties after his death experience imminent, he remembers that a psychologist suggested to him that this experience at the frontiers of death had made him more sensitive to other forms of details. He describes this new faculty as "spontaneous knowledge", a "new psychic functioning". Dissociative hypervigilance blocks literally noise, or outdoor pollution, that interferes usually with the focus point, thus allowing consciousness to access a remote vision or other psychic phenomena (...) My hypothesis is that hypervigilance could very well be a feature of primary importance in the connection between trauma and abilities multidimensional. This may also explain why both Oriental meditation forms and concentration techniques Western countries are taking an increasingly important place in processes such as remote visualization (...) In my opinion, traumatic dissociation and hypervigilance can lead to a process filtering "mental noise" and thus allowing the consciousness to function in a multidimensional mode! [432]). "

in

le livre “The Shattered Self : A Psychoanalytic Study of Trauma” (the Torn Self: A Psychoanalytic Study of Trauma), psychoanalysts Richard Ulman and Doris Brothers report the testimony of a 36-year-old woman, Jean, having been

incest victim who began at the age of 10 with his uncle and who continued

with his father-in-law and brother-in-law. Trauma seems to have developed

some particular psychic faculties in this woman: "Jean's usual reaction to rapes was to "disconnect

completely of her body", repeating to herself that "this is not

really real". Jean was proud of his ability to keep control during the

rapes by showing no visible signs of anguish. She also remembered a

ritual before going to bed where she slowed down her breathing as much as possible and thus remained motionless like a dead woman in order to reassure herself about the "control"

total"that she could have on her body. Jean said that often during

during the day, she "listened to the silence", convinced that she possessed

extrasensory powers to detect hazards. She walked between the

bungalows with his eyes closed in order to test his paranormal faculties

feeling anything that could threaten his safety
(...)

Jean also reported having premonitions about his mother's suicide attempt. She described repetitive "visions" of his mother cutting her throat a few months before this happened. It will describe a similar premonition at the age of 17, before his biological father suddenly reappears at his door (...)

Jean also described his relationship with a "psychic" and charismatic man who produced and sold pornographic films sadomasochists (...) John said that she often participated in saaomasocmste scenes, aes lois ceia would have several days and had found herself then in a state of detachment: "I was leaving my body in a way and I was concentrating so as not to be hurt." After these sessions, John says that his recollections of what had happened were extremely vague and that only the pains and marks on his body could remind him of his experience. John was very pleased to be able to separate his emotions of the physical pain of his body. "Body aches and pain reinforce my sense of being a special person. Brands and Bruises are the way I measure the esteem I have of myself." she says.

Several years later, Jean returned to studying for a degree in criminology so that he could pursue a career in the police. however

after passing the entrance exam, she decided not to join the

public service. She herself had opened a Drivé employment office in connection with the police forces (...) She has helped solve cases

criminal thanks to her "psychic powers" she says. It was in good condition

trance in which she provided investigators with information such as

license plates or the places of hides of criminals (...)

One morning, Jean woke up with a high fever, severe pain and swelling in his joints. The symptoms were so severe

that she had to walk on crutches and then with a wheelchair. THE

the doctor she consulted was unable to find the cause of the symptoms.

He attempted several medical treatments, but without success. Desperate, Jean

put herself in a state of trance in which she relived the sexual abuse of

his father-in-law and brother-in-law (...) According to her, after each episode of

trance, the inexplicable symptoms disappeared, to reappear from

new later, which required the repetition of the process
(...)

For a few years, Jean worked in an alternative health store. She then discovered that she had a remarkable success for the cure of various physical disorders through the use of herbs and gems (fine, semi-precious or precious stones). She noted that without no training, she instinctively "knew" how to heal people who presented themselves to her (...) She also reported that she had many symptoms of post-traumatic stress such as hypervigilance, a exacerbated responsiveness and sleep disturbances! [433]."

For Gardner Murphy, the former president of the American Psychological Association, serious illnesses, or more generally the disruptive elements or alert situations, can lead to develop an increased psychic sensitivity. We can take as an example the case of people with a T.D.I. whose meaning of the view has changed, which has resulted in them creating a exceptional photographic memory. This memory photographique is also related to hypervigilance and hypersensitivity developed in response trauma. The brains of survivors of abuse set up a Constant hypervigilance and an ability to read other people very precisely. These people will be able to automatically and unconsciously decipher and analyze behaviors, the body language, facial expressions, tone of voice and others signals from the executioners to try to get a small advance that can

possibly to avoid violence, or even death. This

Systematic hypervigilance will remain present for a long time and in all

sort of situations. With post-traumatic stress, the brain develops

also very strong sensory faculties, multiplying hearing, smell,

taste, sight and touch. In a split personality, one of the five senses

can be overdeveloped in one alter, while another alter will have other peculiarities.

Therapist and social worker Susan Pease Banitt, the author of "The Trauma Tool Kit" trauma),also explains how certain paranormal faculties can be develop in an individual who has experienced severe trauma. The fact of growing up in a violent environment forces the child to anticipate the moods of aggressors and for this it will become hyper intuitive, a consequence of its hypervigilance. The child can thus develop telepathic abilities as well as increased sensitivity of its mirror neurons and sensitivity to electromagnetic energies emanating from people. Physical violence or Sexual abuse will also disrupt the functioning of the chakras (energy centers) in the victim. The energy company Barbara Brennan who has worked on the circulation of energy in the human body noted that some types of violence, such as sexual abuse can "tear" the chakras, this unlocks them in an energetic way unbalanced. This abnormal breach will make the energy body of the more permeable person and therefore more vulnerable. As we have seen, this can cause a particular connection to other dimensions with uncontrollable paranormal phenomena. Dissociation is an altered state of consciousness, all shamans who dissociate themselves, who enter into a trance, have need to learn to anchor, to "connect to the earth" when they access to other dimensions. A child who experiences a profound dissociation during a trauma does not have this knowledge and ability to anchor, to "keep feet on the ground" in order to preserve its balance. It is then no longer anchored, more centered, this is how it can become subject to attacks demonic entities and uncontrollable paranormal experiments.

In an article published by the "Journal of Spirituality and Paranormal Studies" entitled "Childhood

Influences That Heighten Psychic Powers"

that increase psychic powers), Sylvia Hart Wright cites several studies and several testimonies on the link between trauma and paranormal powers. For years Wright interviewed hundreds of people who have lived experiences at the borders of death, having medium faculties or other extrasensory abilities. It is apparent from these early childhood stress is an important factor in the development of psychic powers in adults. In particular, it has interviewed a remote viewer (a person with remote viewing faculties) internationally known having lived a childhood very difficult, he told her: "All these things with which children should not have to deal, we had there case very often. It's kind of the story of Jekyll and Hyde. You become ultra-sensitive in order to be able to gauge the state of the situation with one or the other of the parents. The more they drank, the more they became Mr. Hyde."

Several other people with particular psychic faculties reported that their alcoholic father himself had some extrasensory abilities. This reinforces the fact that the powers psychics would possibly be transmitted genetically, just as the dissociative faculties. In addition, a parent who has been a victim himself, and who reproduces violence or abuse on its children will trigger and strengthen in the latter this predisposition to dissociation and faculties extrasensory: always this transgenerational vicious circle...

A study that was conducted on 1400 Americans (NORC-Luce Foundation Basic Belief Study, National Opinion Center, University of Chicago) showed that people with psychic faculties had lived more family conflicts in early childhood compared to others.

Eu American sociologist Anarew ureeiey concluded among other things that the experiments Paranormal psychics seem to have partly to cause a childhood with serious family tensions! [434]).

A Canadian study also showed a link between adult creativity and the quality of family relationships during the early childhood. It has been reported that creative adults often come from families with high conflict and that these traumas had an impact significant on the level of creativity of the future adult! [435]!.

Another study from 2011 shows that there could indeed be a connection between creativity and trauma, in particular with post-traumatic stress. At the beginning of their research, Robert Miller and David Johnson believed that post-traumatic stress would have decreased the creative faculties of the person. But the study found that the of individuals who had suffered trauma compared to a group without trauma, had much better ability to make symbolic representations! [435]!.

Mental disorders, particularly personality disorders, also seem to be related to what is commonly known as "genius".

Bipolar disorder has been described by some as a "brilliant madness" because of the psychic expansion it can sometimes cause, as much towards constructive creativity as towards destructive psychosis.

Daniel Smith, professor at the University of Glasgow conducted a study demonstrating

that mental disorders, in particular bipolarity, are indeed found

more frequently among people with an intelligence quotient and a

above average creativity. He told the English newspaper The Gardian: "It is possible that serious behavioural problems, such as bipolarity, are the price of

paying for adaptability such as intelligence,

creativity and verbal mastery." However, like Daniel Smith

explainsit, if a correlation exists, the mechanism is not automatic, the

bipolar disorder obviously does not produce chain geniuses...

In the past, mental illness was even considered a gift and it still is today in some cultures. Aristotle said: "No great genius has never existed without a touch of madness". One of the most learned representative is certainly Nikola Tesla, that American- Serbian genius who is the inventor of countless patents such as the electric motor, the electric current alternative, radio, remote control, robotics, laser, bulbs fluorescent,free energy, *etc.* Tesla mastered no less than twelve languages and his photographic memory associated with his capacity for mental animation was an exceptional asset for his work as an engineer. This extremely man ingenious and hyper-productive suffered from several mental illnesses: a attention deficit disorder (often related to hyperactivity), a obsessive-compulsive disorder (OCD) and bipolar disorder. Nikola Tesla also suffered from many phobias or on the contrary from passions

re P'm p>qi rP'P'Q TTnp /^vr»1ir'Qtir»n ri r> cpq tmi in
V>1 p>q r'xa'^r'ViimiP'Q ri r> onn

or.1 wvj. V11V considering. L1VI1 UV OVO L1 VU L/1VVJ ^/OJ VllIV^UVO VL UV VJVII
genius

would come from the near-death experiences he would have lived in his youth.

When he was a child, he almost drowned and would then have made an outing

out of his physical body. Later in his career, Tesla had an accident

while working on an electric coil, it came into contact with a load

electromagnetic of several million volts. He reported that during

this experience at the borders of death, he entered a state where he

could see the past, the future and the present on the same plane, in what it

called it a "mystical vision". He stated that he had

traveled through space and time, something common to the exit testimonies

out of the body during near-death experiences. This concept

of alternative space-time that is also found with the fragments of soul

lost.

Some scientists like Dr. Yehuda Elkana and Dr.

Gerald Holton argued that scientific discoveries and great innovations were associated with creative intuition. "Intuition" is defined as "the ability to immediately feel or know things without any reasoning." Cari Jung defines intuition as "perception by the unconscious". Traumas that cause hypervigilance and hyper-intuitiveness can therefore indirectly develop a certain creativity in the victim. According to a Swedish scientific study: "Creative people

(artistic and scientificfields) would present a higher risk of

bipolar disorder and schizophrenia... It should be noted here that it is the configuration of the brain and the psychic state that generate abilities

creators above normal, not the creativity that generates

risks of mental disorders...

The scientific team at the Karolinska Institute has shown that there are more artists and scientists in the

families affected by bipolar disorder and schizophrenia, in comparison with the general population! 437).

If we refer to some studies showing that personality disorders such as bipolar disorder, borderline disorder or schizophrenia most often have a traumatic origin dating back to childhood, the link between trauma and

creativity can therefore be established. Artistic or scientific genius could

caused by a failure in the organization

brain connections, or should we say rather a particular wiring of the brain. Wiring that would develop during the

life of the young child, because it is his experience that will shape the organization

neuronal of his brain. Here is what the painter Lynn Schirmer,

survivor of ritual abuse and mind control, said about it when

a 2006 S.M.A.R.T. conference:

- Do you think the abuse has made you more creative?
- That's right. Previously, I thought that artists were born with their talent, but I don't believe in it at all anymore. I think it happens to

cause of the effects of early childhood trauma on different

parts of the brain.

Actress Meg Ryan stated in 2003 in Los Angeles Times: "I don't think you want to voluntarily grow

traumatic or dramatic experiences in your life with the goal of becoming

an artist. I think you would be wrong. But you can

use it... There is a redemptive power in your life when you move on to

through difficulties."

The creative artistic and scientific process has sometimes been described with terms very close to dissociation,

trance, see even possession. Indeed, the second state that accompanies

the activity of certain creators sometimes leads to phenomena if

confusing that they have sometimes been classified in occult phenomena and paranormal. The person fades away and gives way to artistic genius or scientific, it then becomes the medium of something that often the exceeds, something that expresses itself through it. This is a common feature of many great artists of our world, as we will see in chapter 9 on the entertainment industry. There is a close relationship between hypnosis, dissociation, imagination and paranormal experiences such as mediumship, both in artists and in people with a past traumatic, which are often the same...

During the 80s, some psychologists had found that people who had experienced severe trauma during the small childhood very often testified to paranormal psychic experiences. They had then concluded that the traumas of childhood had led them to dissociate and that instead of being in the present moment, they had turned their attention to their imaginary world... which explained their "delusions" paranormal. But subsequently, the British psychologist Tony Lawrence worked on a series of statistical studies showing that the existing link between traumas and paranormal psychic experiences was stronger

than the link between traumas and the imaginary world.
"You have a direct link between early childhood trauma and paranormal experiences. You don't necessarily have to have a good imagination to live a paranormal experience. Even people who have a weak imaginary world can experience a paranormal experience, in reason for the fact that they had a trauma during their childhood! [438]."

Dr. Richard Boylan who has written extensively on the subject of aliens and UFOs, met and interviewed many witnesses. he found five commonalities among those who were abducted or had observed aliens or UFOs:

- These individuals possess a high level of psychic abilities.
- Similar phenomena are observed with other family members (multi or transgenerational)
- Children who have suffered severe abuse or trauma.
- Individuals or entire families linked to the government and/ or intelligence agencies or departments.
- They were very often Amerindians, natives.

the

there is also a strong correlation between sites where occult activities are **nratimiés,** such as ritual abuses, military installations secret and UFO manifestations and testimonies of abductions (kidnappings) by E.T.. We shall not dwell here on the question of aliens which is to be put in connection with the existence of fallen angels,

the "demons", the Luciferian army. Here is an excerpt from the book "Satanic Ritual Abuse, Principle of Treatment" in which Dr. Colin Ross explains the strong similarities between abuse

explains the strong similarities between abuse

satanic rituals and abductions: "There are thousands of people in North America today who have memories that

go back concerning an alien abduction in a spacecraft,

with experiments carried out on them (...) These "abductees" arrive in therapy with missing periods of time as well as inexplicable post-traumatic symptoms, just like

survivors of satanic ritual abuse. Abductees report that they had

hypnotic amnesic barriers deliberately implanted by the E.T., the

survivors of satanic cults describe exactly the same programming

made by their executioners. Survivors of satanic ritual abuse also describe forced pregnancies, medical experiments in laboratories and

abortions before the end of pregnancy. The difference is that the

Satanists would use the fetuses for ceremonies while the E.T.

would elevates! [439]]."

In his book entitled "Mind-Control, World Control", Jim Keith writes that abduction cases

aliens would be used to cover experiments on control mentals performed by humans in flesh and blood.

Brad Steiger, author of books on the paranormal and ufology, has interviewed many mediums and other people with extrasensory faculties. He reports that most of them have passed through a series of traumas during their early childhood or youth! [440!.] According to him, these individuals with a traumatic past seem to be candidates for first choice for certain military programs, including paranormal psychic experiments such as remote viewing. Lyn Buchanan is a former "remote viewer", he defines these psychic techniques as follows: "It is about structured exploitation and scientific of human natural potential for intelligence purposes. This without having to go through the usual five senses or through equipment such as photography, electronics or other devices! [44]it."

Joseph McMoneagle, another veteran of the U.S. government's remote viewing programs. It was recognized that these techniques are used to identify, i.e. to know the precise details about something that can only be accessed by extrasensory perceptions. People like McMoneagle or David Morehouse were recruited into these programs following events paranormals who have arrived in their lives: an experience of death imminent,contact with a UFO and then spontaneous outings out of the body.

He explains that for remote viewing programs,

the U.S. government recruited Vietnam veterans who had lived through

extremely traumatic situations during the war. In his book "Mind Trek", McMoneagle argues that trauma is something necessary to be able to develop vision abilities to

distance. He states that following his experience at the frontiers of death, the

the first consequence was a depressive state. The second consequence was this

which he calls "spontaneous knowledge", it is to

say he knew what people were thinking when they

spoke to him. He knew some private things about people, things

that they had never disclosed openly and of which he was not

supposed to be aware. The third effect of this N.D.E. Summer of spontaneous outings

outside his physical body, he sometimes found himself hovering over

unknown ocean coasts! [442]). One of Lyn Buchanan's remote viewing students describes a

of his experiences resembling in every way a dissociation of the

personality: "I was floating with a base of

different personality, I felt a slight but noticeable change of personality that was taking place! [443]!."

As we saw in the chapter on the MK-Ultra, the CIA took a close interest in paranormal psychic phenomena. When it has worked on the dissociation and splitting of the personality, she has opened a door to the other dimensions (which shamans have known since thousands of years). NASA has also done research in the field of the paranormal. On the radio show Coast to Coast, presented by Mike Siegel, astronaut Gordon Cooper confirmed the existence a mind control program involving young children. A project carried out by NASA in the 50s and 60s. During the show, Mike Siegel had asked the astronaut about these "Star Kids" (children of the stars). Cooper stated that these were children with exceptional mental abilities, exploited in a kind of MK program. He described how this NASA program cultivated and exploited telepathy, remote viewing and out-of-body outs. THE "study groups" also included learning protocols allowing subjects to assimilate large amounts of knowledge from a very fast way, as well as develop high-performance memory. THE

the programme also consisted of developing in these children foresight and

the guided imagination that are the bases to effectively practice remote viewingi[444!.]

here is

what MK-Monarch survivor Cathy O'Brien reports about

the link between NASA and government control programs

mental: Whether I am in military buildings, in those of NASA or in those of the government, the procedure of keeping my mind under

absolute control continued to match project requirements

"Monarch". This included, prior to any physical trauma and/or psychological, sleep, food and water deprivation,

High voltage electroshocks and hypnotic programming and / or by

harmonics of compartmentalizations/specific personalities of my memory. This

that I would coat from that time via various high-tech equipment and

other methods, gave the U.S. government absolute control over my

spirit and on my existence (...) Wayne Cox and I visited Florida on several occasions, his mother's parents

living in Mims, which was only a few minutes from the Kennedy Space Center of

NASA in Titusville. Like my father, he watched in accordance with the orders of this

that I go there for tests and other programming sessions related to the

mind control. Cox considered me an "Elected", and employed

often this term from the CIA's "Monarch" project when talking about me for

proudly "justify" leaving me in nasa facilities (...) The control of the mind by the army was fast, effective and synonymous with high technology,
1HU.1O w prayed right. v^ui üiv xuiiyu vu uu.nu v/giU.1111HUUV11 j_/u.iu nii

that "dummy

presidential". Even if Aquino did my programming so much in

army installations than in those of NASA, it is through NASA that it had access to the ultimate advances in the technology and techniques used.

These included "deceive-l'esprit" such as

sensory deprivation, virtual realities, flight simulators and others

harmonics. By the age of two, Kelly (Cathy's daughter) had already been

submitted to Aquino and its programming via these ultimate advances

thetechnologies, which broke his fragile childish spirit even before

his basic personality did not have the opportunity to train (...) in the deep basements of NASA's mind control lab at 'Godard Space Flight'

A center near D.C., Bill Bennett began to prepare me for the program in

question. NASA uses various "CIA synthetic drugs" to

chemically generate neuronal transformations and induce state

maie nf* was ma nrnarammatinn nar la l\T A^ A nui mlanra E*n both of mind required at a specific time. '"Train'-quility", the drug of NASA's favorite of Huntsville, Alabama, created a sensation of quiet servility and gave the impression of walking on a cloud! [445]]."

Kathleen Sullivan is also a survivor who has suffered ritual abuse and MK programming in a governmental and military framework. It is described in his book "Unshackled" how his multiple personality disorder was exploited to develop in she of the particular psychic faculties: "My alter personalities 'Theta' have received a specialized psychic training. Children like me were chosen for this type of programming because like any victim of traumatic abuse, we were very sensitive to the moods and thoughts of others,especially those of our aggressors. I am convinced that some people who work or are connected to the CIA were aware of this link that exists between trauma and the paranormal, that

Qirant nnp

mental health professionals don't find out. I think the permanent retention of information on these human faculties, as well as their discrediting and systematic disinformation, took place because the CIA

W1V11 U.VU.11L.

and other intelligence agencies that have funded research on the paranormal had every interest in keeping this knowledge out of the field public.

I have recurring memories of my childhood concerning part of my Theta program set up by James Jesus Angleton, head of the CIA counterintelligence. Because of the fact that he may have known that I attended a Christian church every week, he used the content of the New Testament to teach me to expand my consciousness. He started my mental programming by quoting the words Jesus Christ: "You will do bigger works than the ones I made"... with our minds,

headded. Angleton then taught me that the biggest wall preventing people to access their natural psychic faculties to use them, was their convinced that they could not or should not do so. It taught me that if I bypassed this mental blockage, then I could do this that I want with my psychic energy. According to him, I could even move a mountain by telepathy as long as I have the belief of power do it (...) He said that the human brain has a potential that we do not have not even started to exploit yet and he encouraged me to use it as much as possible. Other MK programmers have also conditioned my alter Theta to believe that they could read the thoughts of others, to communicate by telepathy and remote vision. Some of these programming has been a success (...) If these capabilities are legitimate, then I does not think that they are anything other than a natural human faculty.
However, I think they can be considered part of the forbidden fruit mentioned in the book of Genesis, for a person using could easily take themselves for a God. I chose not to do it

anymore

use my Theta programming, not out of fear of demons, but because I

simply want to respect mental, emotional and physical integrity

d'autrei[445!.]"

Back

now on near-death experiences. The obvious trauma of a

exiting out of the physical body seems to trigger psychological experiences

and particular physiological. As if something was unlocking in

the energetic/electromagnetic bodies of the person. Phyllis Mary

Atwater, the author of "Dying to Know You: Proof of God in the Near-Death Experience", who herself lived three

N.D.E wrote: "About eighty percent of people who experienced a state on the borders of death said that their lives had changed forever.
A closer examination shows, however, the emergence of surprising

dimensions. People who had this experience did not come back with

only an increased enthusiasm for life and a more spiritual vision.

They showed specific psychological and physiological differences

on a scale never experienced before."

Atwater interviewed more than 4,000 people with experienced an N.D.E. to seek to know the consequences that this had had on their life. She found that there was generally a noticeable increase in intuitive and mediumistic abilities, communication with spirits, plants and animals for example. But his research also revealed that many people had undergone a change in the field electromagnetic of their body: "From the beginning of my research on states at the borders of death in 1978, I constantly noticed that a large majority of experimenters (those who did both part of my study and during an outside conversation with they) said they were becoming more sensitive to electric fields, and magnetic - disturbances of equipment, devices, watch strads - after their episode of NDE."

These long-lasting physiological changes, which create a kind of electrosensitivity, lead to interference between the person and the electronic equipment that surrounds it: problems of breakdowns and device deregulations, batteries that discharge faster, bulbs that grill systematically, etc., but also extreme sensitivity to land-based manifestations such as thunderstorms, earthquakes or tornadoes! [447]).

6 - Man medicine and his animals totem...

Here is now an interesting case concerning a "man-medicine" (healer) Amerindian. In 1989, the journal Dissociation published an article entitled "Multiple personality disorder with human and non-human subpersonality components".

of human and non-human sub-personalities). This article describes the case of a

70-year-old Native American patient diagnosed with t.d.i.. This man had

healing powers and he was a "Medicine-man" recognized and respected in his community, a Native American tribe having preserved his

ancestral traditions. His personality was split into eleven alters, four of which were

alter humans and seven alter non-humans. It has been discovered that abuses in

early childhood were at the origin of his T.D.I.. In addition, the development of

and the manifestation of these alter personalities had been strengthened and maintained

by the cultural context in which this Amerindian had grown up. The strong bond

that exists with the spirits of nature and totem animals in culture

Traditional Amerindian has strengthened its system of alter personalities.

The man had presented himself for help

therapeutic. In effect,the inner battle between alter humans and animals was becoming too much violent and this interfered with his ability to practice the rituals of healing.

The first alter to be formed was that of an eleven-year-old boy, called "Le Petit". It was discovered that all other alter personalities had dissociated themselves from thatone. At the age of three, the patient had been raped by an uncle. During the therapy, the alter described that he was playing with a turtle when the rape occurred. He tells how he then focused on the turtle as if he was crawling away, just like her, getting thus dissociating from traumatic reality. The uncle raped the child more and more more frequently and it is the alter Le Petit that systematically endured abuse through this turtle-related dissociation. One day, at the age of five, Le Petit observed a healer using a turtle shell in his therapeutic rituals. Shortly after that, a man in his family fell ill with cancer and became found bedridden. The alter personality Le Petit a told that when he was dissociated as an alter turtle, he often approached to touch the patient and after a while the man recovered, his cancer was in remission. It was then that Le Petit received a place of honor in his family. His mother said he had a rainbowabove his head on his birthday, which was the sign that he had in him the power to become a great medicine man. TO from then on, his family and neighbors began to come and see him for consultations.

His turtle alter (named Power) possessed faculties related to the spirit world, which could be used to control pain and treat serious diseases. This alter began to get develop when the patient was three years old. The physical characteristics of very slow movements, his head that swung from right to left as well as a language also very very slow and very limited.

Another alter was "The Old Man", a 70-year-old personality. This split occurred when the patient was in training with an old man medicine. He followed an initiation during which he was to remain in the forest for several days following the rites of purification with the prohibition of eating and drinking. In addition, he had to consume hallucinogenic herbs and run long distances. During this period of intense initiation, it was repeated to him that to become a good medical man, he was to become like his teacher. Under the effect traumatic fasting, intense physical exercise, hallucinogenic herbs and constant requests from alter Le Petit for become similar to the teacher, that old medicine man who raped him during the initiation, he dissociated himself into this alter Vieux, representing his teacher. It is this alter Le Vieux that allowed the patient to become a real medicine man. It is at note that violence and beatings are not normally part of rituals learning initiatory among Amerindians, this is a serious drift. The behaviour of this alter was that of an old man, as much in

his posture only in his manners and in his voice.

The man also had a male eagle alter named Spirit of the Wind, also appeared during his initiation with the old man medicine. According to him, the eagle feather is a great source of

power for the "dissociative medicine" of

Native American healers. During the initiation, Le Petit was taught that the eagle is a medium between the earth and the "birds of thunder", powerful spirits in the Amerindian tradition. Always under the effect of fasting, exhaustion

physical,blows and hallucinogenic herbs, Le Petit also dissociated himself into this eagle alter: the Spirit

of the Wind. In the T.D.I. system of this man medicine, this alter allows

communicating with thunderbirds to obtain information

to diagnose a patient and gain power for his healing. One of these powers is the ability to induce in the suffering person a feeling of

lightness, similar to a bird, which would have an analgesic effect.

This Native American patient also had a wolf alter, a panther alter, a bear alter, an owl alter and a snake alter. His others

Alter human personalities were those of a 28-year-old woman (Moon Walker), created when the uncle began to sexually share Le Petit with his alcoholic friends. There are

also had an alter warrior named Thomme-tueur".

During therapy, the fusion/integration of alter personalities was complicated for several reasons. First of all the patient's wife as well as the people he treated thought that with this fusion, man medicine was going to lose its powers and ability to contact the world of spirits. In addition, the group of alter animals and the group of alter humans were in conflict and their merger was very complicated. It was therefore necessary to make fuse animals with each other and humans with each other while preserving spiritual needs of the patient, as well as his abilities as a medicine man for that he can continue to help his community. During this merapie, cnaque

alter personality proved to be highly hypnotizing. Acuity tests

visual and sensorineural assessments demonstrated differences

considerable between each alter personality! 448!.

This case indicates that T.D.I., this dissociative mechanism of defense against trauma, can be found in various cultures and can be found in various cultures and can

possibly sometimes explain why some shamans have

alter personalities of animals. Alters that are revealed during the states of

trance, as we saw in chapter 2 with the Berserk warriors becoming wolves, bears or super-powerful wild boars, capable of incredible feats.

7 - Conclusion

We therefore find that traumas, dissociation, astral outings, paranormal experiences and psychic powers go hand in hand in the

hand, one triggering the others, although it is not systematic. This link

between trauma/dissociation and connection with other dimensions is a key point in MK-Monarch type mental programming. During abuse

rituals, it is a question of "unlocking" the child to initiate him and thus the

sacralize in the eyes of the Luciferian cult. The spiritual and metaphysical aspect of

programming is just as important, and certainly more important

than the purely scientific aspect (neurological and psychiatric). Indeed,

the connection connecting the members of this cult/global network to the world of

spirits is indispensable to carry out the project of domination here on earth.

In a systematic way, the progeny responsible for completing the Order

global must therefore be on one side spiritually connected to the militias

Luciferian while being psychologically and physically attached to the

terrestrial network (families and networks of powers, secret societies). A

terrestrial network well embodied in the material world and thus accomplishing a

plan established from other spheres: the Luciferian rebellion

VV^11U111U. U.11U VJV11 J'/1100V111V11U YES UV1 IV,, tou.no wJ-/X O UV/

fractionation systematic children in these blood lines and more generally in all these Luciferian cults, the connection to the other dimensions and the "root of the violence"could not be transmitted from one generation to the next and the cult of horror could certainly not survive for the centuries. Deep dissociation caused by trauma, which can be described as a violent "spiritual unlocking" (a true spiritual rape), practiced systematically on the ground team therefore produces mediums receiving enlightenment and connection to the light bearer: Lucifer. These individuals totally split and multiple therefore possess certain alter personalities connected and linked to the spiritual kingdom of Satan. This is what Pastor Tom Hawkins describes when he writes that dissociated personalities may be trained during trauma to enter trance states that will connect them to the "second heaven", to the "kingdom of air" of which Satan is the prince. These fragments of personalities are connected and held cantif in this kingdom and are used to apply Satan's world plan on earth.

Satan would therefore have an established plan to rule on earth and he would use certain humans (worshipped him) as catalysts for set up his earthly project, humans passed through the againstinitiation, an inversion of sanctification leading to

supernatural powers and connections... It is interesting to note here

that Freemasonry also refers to mysterious entities of a

another dimension that inspires (not to say dictate) its own

actions for the establishment of the World Order. Freemason Charles

Webster Leadbeater (Anglican priest and theosophist, himself accused of paedomania)

clearly wrote that Freemasonry established certain connections

with "resplendent beings" of

theafterlife: "When one of these luminous spirits

attaches itself to us by a Masonic ceremony, we must not think of him in terms of leader or waiter, but simply as a brother. Our egocentrism is so ingrained that when we hear about a such a wonderful association, our first thought, even unconsciously, is to ask ourselves what we could get from this relationship. What could we learn from this resplendent being? Will he guide us, we advise,protect us? Or, on the contrary, is he a servant whom we can use it for our own will! [449!]?

The Freemason Oswald Wirth also mentions this explicitly when he writes that the Masters - for so they refer to the Initiates - wrap themselves in an impenetrable mystery; they remain invisible behind the thick curtain that separates us from the afterlife... They no longer work that on the drawing board, that is to say intellectually, by conceiving this which must be built. These are the constructive intelligences of the World, effective powers for the Initiates which relate to the

Superiors Unknown to tradition![450!.]

So here is a Freemason who clearly declares that Masters coming from the afterlife, dictate to the Unknown Superiors of the rear lodges Masonic,how to build the world, because they are according to his terms the constructive intelligences of the World...

the belief that humans can come into contact and be used and manipulated by of the so-called "higher" entities for a specific purpose is not some something new. Indeed, humans can serve as a tool for forces that are in another dimension. Author Malidoma Somé writes in his book "The Healing Wisdom of Africa": "Ancestors are disadvantaged because they know how to improve things but they do not have the physical body to act with what they know. We ourselves are at a disadvantage because even if we have physical bodies, we often lack knowledge necessary to do things right. That is why the Spirit loves work through us. A person with a physical body is a vehicle

* i - 1 9TT\ 9 * 1 • r

îaeai pour i esprit ann qu n can mannester aes cnoses aans ce monde."

The physical human body is therefore potentially a tool of expression for entities beyond our earthly dimension. The human can be the tool of Luciferian entities just as it can also serve of tool to the Holy Spirit. In this world of duality, two forces clash, but it could also be said that they complement each other to organize this great theater, this great school in which we evolve. These two forces commonly referred to as "Good" and "Evil" have many similarities, one being obviously the negative layer of the other, one imitating the other in his own way because unable to truly create anything let. We find this duality at all levels, including with this link that humans can establish with other dimensions. Ritual abuse ultra-violent will suddenly force the spiritual doors of the child by torture, rape, baotême of sans and traumas of all kinds; while in the divine tradition, spiritual doors gradually open up through the benevolent love of the parents for the child, by the baptism of water and holy Spirit, by the goodness and help of angels and archangels faithful to God. On the one hand spiritual forces are acquired by the connection to the Luciferian rebel entities, the fallen angels, and on the other hand, these forces are given by the Holy Spirit coming directly from God. On the one hand the black masses with sacrifice and blood consumption and of human flesh, on the other side, the Holy Mass with the sacrifice of Jesus Christ who gives his body and blood in the Eucharist reformation of these ancient Babylonian cults linked to demons and based on sacrifices of blood, practices that the "nameless religion" continues to perpetuate. THE process of traumatic ritual abuse aimed at "initiating", "sacralizing" and "oapuser aes eniants is neither pius nor less than an inversion ae la sanctification, a counter-initiation or counter-revelation, aimed at establishing a luciferian reign of supernatural order. Lucifer being considered by these groups as the civilizing god, bringing knowledge and light to the humans...

"God forgives that," says (Senator) Leahy, referring as much to my role in NAFTA as to his pedophile practices on my daughter.

"Of course, it is not that God that you have to care about. He is a God passive, a God who has died out and who lives only in a Bible. The God

which you must care about, it is this omniscient God who sees everything. That big

and great Eye in Heaven. It sees everything, records everything and transmits

information precisely where it is needed. Let me give you a

good advice - do not open it, because nowhere you need to know what

it is all of that. Surely your Vice-President (Bush) will know, and he has kept secrets all his life. I don't mean

that George Bush is God. Oh no, it's much more than that. He is a demigod,

which means that it straddles the earthly and celestial planes, of

way to act according to what he sees with his Eye in Heaven eternally

vigilant." - "America in the middle of Trance-formation" - Cathy O'Brien

Some of the things reported in this chapter go beyond the commonly accepted laws of physics, but the facts are there. Some will say that it

they have to see to believe, what is

understandable... But as stated in the introduction to the chapter, you

do not see the microbe, but you do not see it with the antibiotic, because science has taught you. The human capacities to

interacting with other dimensions as well as with certain entities is a vast

field that this modern rationalist science has long neglected. It has not yet explored these areas, so it cannot

understand, let alone teach you. However, little by little, in

entering deeper and deeper into matter, this science ends up

paradoxically join the immaterial and spiritual domain. The study

strictly materialistic that resulted in digging the heart of matter with physics

that an tique manages today to transcend this matter to enter into the

spiritual world... which is none other than the heart of the material world, a kind of

infinite fractal. The circle will one day be closed, the physical sciences and

biologicals will find their missing link "invisible" for a full

understanding the world we live in, a kind of unified field. For

the moment, just as with the T.D.I., quantum physics is little discussed

in universities... the filtration of information and teaching is

obviously a mass control key. It is likely that in some laboratories the most advanced physicists, particularly on the

quantum physics begin to realize that there is indeed a Creator with his Creation. Unless these gentlemen take the blow themselves for gods creators of their own reality and that they forget the Main Creator... and their condition as a mere creature...

Chapter 7

Monarch Programming

> There may be a reason why the news media is publicly opening the Pandora's box of legend. Would it be plausible from this to consider that a closer examination - by the media and the public - of the leaders of these destructive sects, could reveal very concrete links with research on the control of the mind financed by the government? These are questions that, if addressed truly for what they are, would provide important answers to this social epidemic that includes physical and psychological abuse. The responses that a serious and thorough investigation would provide could be the beginning of a solution to the myriad problems that these destructive sects, serial killers and other child rapists pose to society.
>
> Mark Phillips

> For an MK programmer, it is necessary to create alter personalities and at the same time to demonize them, i.e. to link them to demons (...) if someone really wants to understand monarch mental control, he must realize that it is something fundamentally demonic (...) Programming and mind control cannot be separated from demonology and occult rituals
>
> Fritz Springmeier

1 - Introduction

To begin this chapter on Monarch programming, here are three examples reported by Dr. James Randall Noblitt in his book "Cult and Ritual Abuse" showing cases of sexual abuse with a rather mysterious mind control. The first case is taken from the book ''Criminal History of Mindkind'' in which Colin Wilson tells the story of a woman who travels by train to Heidelberg in Germany. She wants to see a doctor there for persistent stomach pain. According to Wilson, during her trip she met a certain Franz Walter who presented himself to her as a "healer" claiming to be able to treat her... He managed to persuade her to leave the train at a station to go for a coffee.

''She was reluctant, but she allowed herself to be persuaded. As they both walked along the dock, he grabbed her arm and "it seemed to me like I had no will left," she said. He took her to a hotel room in Heidelberg, plunged her into a trance by touching her forehead, and then raped her. She tried to push him away but she was totally unable to move (...) He stroked me and he said, "You sleep soundly, you can't call for help, and you can't do anything else."' Then he stuck my arms and hands behind my back and said, "You can't move at all. When you wake up, you won't remember anything about what just happened."' Later, Walter prostituted this woman to several men, entrusting his clients with the code word used to immobilize her (...) The police began to suspect that she had been hypnotized and a psychiatrist, Dr. Ludwig Mayer, managed to trace the buried memories of these hypnosis sessions. Walter was sentenced to ten years in prison. How could Franz Walter put her under mental control too
quickly and as easily[451] ?''

Colin Wilson therefore wonders about such a power of control, but he provides no answer except for possible paranormal faculties that Walter could have developed to induce a deep trance in this woman. The case reported by Wilson is similar to many testimonies of survivors of ritual abuse. Dr. James Randall Noblitt notes that he had several patients who described an identical scenario. They remembered being raped or sexually abused by someone who made them totally unable to react after he had uttered a word, a sentence, or made some kind of sign with his hand or by touching their face in a certain way. During therapy, these patients were initially unable to explain this phenomenon with these signals or trigger codes. After a few therapy sessions, frequently, an alter personality emerged with the ability to explain the process and even giving an explanation of how the programming had been installed. These are alter personalities that serve as sexual objects and that are accessible by certain "triggers". These programs are usually installed during early childhood and can remain in place for a very long time. Anyone with the trigger codes to induce the trance state or bring out the alter personality can then sexually abuse the victim.

In the case reported by Wilson, it is not stated that the rapist Walter already knew the woman she met on the train. For this reason, how can we know whether this is prior programming? According to Dr. Noblitt, it would be possible for an individual to identify and understand the levers underlying a program in order to identify the trigger codes. This is simply by talking with the person and observing their eyelids and other bodily responses in response to potential triggers introduced discreetly during the conversation. There are indeed some basic keywords, or gestures, systematically used in MK programming. We could call these triggers "standards".

Another case reported by Colin Wilson, this time in the book "Beyond The Occult", describes a story dating back to 1865: "After lunch, Castellan made a sign with his fingers, as if he were dropping something on the girl's plate, she then felt all her senses leave her. After which he took her to the next room to rape her. She will then testify that she was conscious but totally unable to move[452].''

These two cases reported by Colin Wilson describe a victim who finds himself totally paralyzed and at the mercy of the perpetrator. This may include dissociative conversion disorder (which may manifest as one-time paralysis).

In his book "Trance: A Natural History of Altered States of Mind", Brian Inglis describes a case that was tried in Wales in 1988, that of hypnotist Michael Gill. He used a light flash device to hypnotize a woman and rape her when she was in an altered state of consciousness. Mind control techniques involving light flashes have been reported by mind control survivors, notably in the MK-Ultra program. These three criminal cases illustrate how women can be sexually abused when they are in trance states induced in a rapid and powerful way by a triggering stimulus. Hypnosis alone is not capable of allowing such abuse of a person[453].

At a ***S.M.A.R.T***. In 2003, survivor Carole Rutz explained that her trauma-based programming could be accessed and triggered with hypnosis: *"**All the programming that was done on me by the CIA and the 'iüuminatï was based on traumas such as electroshock, sensory deprivation and drugs. Later, traumas were no longer necessary, hypnosis alone, combined with implanted triggers and sometimes updates could be enough! 454].**"*

In Monarch mind control, programming to sexually enslave a person is the most common. These "Beta" type programs are used to create sex slaves, sometimes called "presidential models" in the case of MK slaves reserved for the elite. But any Monarch subject can have one or more alter personalities programmed for this function, this type of alter is also called "Kitten" or "Sex Kitten" (kitten).

In October 2001, a famous French model made shocking revelations during the recording of a television show. She denounced her alleged sexual exploitation by her family, her entourage and certain high-ranking personalities. She said she had been raped by her father at the age of two, saying she had realized it a few months earlier, as her memories had resurfaced in the form of flashbacks. She also revealed that she was regularly raped by her employers (a famous modeling agency), by people close to her and by members of the gotha (royal families). She will say that the forgetting of her abuse was due to hypnosis or what she thought was hypnosis...

Shortly after these revelations during the recording of a television show with Thierry Ardisson, she gave an interview to the magazine VSD, a dossier entitled "Le cri de détresse d'un grand top model" published in January 2002 in the VSD N°1271. The magazine reveals that this woman was received by the boss of the brigade for the repression of pimping and that she told him about dinners organized between young top models and wealthy old gentlemen. The interview

gives several clues that may suggest that she has undergone a Monarch-type mind control.
Here are some excerpts from this interview:

"A person from my family circle (she mentions a name) sexually abused me, I was two years old. He is a psychopath. He had put me under hypnosis. Since then, anyone with authority and knowing my secret can manipulate me. As long as I had not evacuated the terror of my childhood, anyone, by scaring me, could have a grip on me (...) They tried to make me a prostitute: it was so easy, I didn't remember anything, I forgot everything (...) I was a toy that everyone wanted to have. All of them took advantage of me (...) I had no will of my own, so they organized my life: everything, everything, everything (...) I was made hypnotic stuff (...) Yes, it is huge. There's a whole conspiracy around me, for a long time, it's been about people in the government, in the police. Everything in my life has been organized! Everything, everything, everything! I had no will of my own (...) During the 'Restos du Cœur', an artist told me: "A relative has abused you, they are organizing so that you are raped again and so that you know nothing." A famous singer said to me: "One of your relatives (she mentions a name) told me that you were raped, can you forget it? Look at me, you're going to forget it!" And she laughed. And it worked: I forgot (...) I really got into suffering, that's where I got the first flashes. First of all from a relative who raped me. I said to myself: here I am, I found why I was so bad (...) In fact, all the people my family used to associate with are pedophiles. It's a vicious circle, and today I'm breaking it! (...) I was an asset. My image, my kindness, my kindness, served those who wanted to hide things. And here, we are dealing with very, very, very bad people. Those who wanted to speak are dead today (...) It was one of my relatives in New York who had me raped by the president of a large company. One day, she calls me and says, "Do you remember what we did to you when you were a little kid?" I say, "Ah yes, ah yes!" "Well X will come to see you, he will have sex with you and you will have the greatest contract that exists." I didn't want to, but I was like a doll without will (...) I want justice, that's all! Paedophilia is still such a taboo. It's girls like that who want to be a model. So it's easy for the thugs to then have power over them.''

Is this woman under Monarch-type mental control? Is she a "presidential model"? What she describes as memory lapses following the rapes, "I didn't remember anything", could correspond to a severe dissociative disorder with amnesic walls. The fact that she told VSD magazine that she had been raped under hypnosis since the age of two, that her family only associated with paedophiles, that this was a vicious circle that she wanted to break, and that her sexual exploitation seems to have continued throughout her life, strongly suggests that she could have suffered the sad journey of an MK-Monarch slave, a prisoner of a network exploiting her dissociative disorders. During the recording of the television programme in November 2001, she also mentioned several names related to the entertainment industry, saying that these people were either aware of it or themselves rapists or victims. She mentioned the name of another well-known French star when she said that she too was undergoing this kind of treatment.

Despite filing a complaint and opening a judicial investigation, her family quickly had her interned in a psychiatric hospital shortly after her revelations. It did not come out until three months later. Was an update of the MK programming necessary then? Indeed, after a certain age the amnesic walls tend to dissolve hence the rise of some memories in the form of flashbacks. Her family tried to pass off the incident as a paranoid delusional crisis except that no one could prove that it was really a stroke of madness and that what they had said was false. The complaint that this woman filed was very quickly closed without further action, so no investigation was conducted to confirm or deny these very serious accusations... Some time after his forced hospitalization, the supermodel gave an interview to Benjamain Castaldi in the M6 channel show "C'est leur destin" in September 2002. An interview in which there is still doubt that she really tried to disclose her condition as an MK slave, without even knowing herself exactly what she was mired in. Here are some excerpts:

- Benjamin Castaldi: If you had to summarize your destiny in a few words, what would you say?

- Supermodel: On the one hand it's a fairy tale, and on the other hand it's a horror film, a real nightmare. And when everything came up, there were people who tried to stop me from talking. I was put in a clinic to prevent me from talking. I got out of it with the help of a lawyer, it was quite a trick. Oh there, it was quite complicated! (...) The lawyer phoned me directly in my room. She said, "Look, you don't look like a madwoman at all! I'm picking you up within the next two hours." I packed my bags and went out like that. (...) Once I reached my goal in modeling, everything was fine in appearance but deep inside me I felt that something was wrong. So I followed a psychoanalysis for five years, there are things that came back to me, that were so serious that I became somehow paranoid (...) I tried to talk, but they didn't want to believe me. There was a certain part that was paranoia, because it is true that when things are so huge, after that it degenerates a little bit. There is a little bit of delirium. But the more time goes by, the more I realize that in fact, not at all (...) Have you seen the movie True Romance? That's kind of my life. Everything has been organized. Everything was manipulated. I was someone who didn't see anything. In fact, I think I was really crazy, but today I'm not.

Actress Marie Laforêt said of this case: "I don't know what happened to X, it's the same story, she was talking about the same people, except that she was cut off outright... So we made her make a small disc to stamp her ever since. So she knows that if she ever says anything about what she wanted to say at that time, she will have an even more miserable fate than the one she has right now. So it has every interest in crashing. That is all. But she made an attempt! She made an attempt and paid for it what she paid for it. We amused him by making him make a record, a promo. But then everyone is in the mix? You will answer for yourself. Of course!"

2 - Definition

The term Monarch comes from the butterfly "Monarch", an insect that begins its life as a caterpillar (the undeveloped potential), which then evolves into a cocoon (the process of splitting and programming) to become a butterfly (the Monarch slave). Is a caterpillar aware that it will become a butterfly? Is the butterfly aware that it was a caterpillar? No, and this image fits perfectly with that of programming based on dissociation and traumatic amnesia. Twirling butterflies represent scattered soul fragments. The term Monarch also refers to the sensation caused by dissociation, which may be a feeling of flutter, like a butterfly, following an electroshock for example. Electric shocks are commonly used by programmers because it is a very effective method of torture and leaving few traces.

In the autobiography of Brice Taylor (former presidential model), "Thanks For The Memories", monarch programming is defined in this way: "A puppet is a doll that is attached to strings and controlled by a master. Monarch programming is also called "Syndrome of Puppet, the "Imperial Conditioning" is another term used. Some mental health therapists recognize this type of mind control as "conditioning by stimuli-response sequences". The Monarch project can be described as a combination of structured traumatology, dissociation and occultism in order to compartmentalize the mind into several personalities, this in a systematic way. During the process, a satanic ritual, usually including Kabbalistic mysticism, is performed with the aim of linking a demon or group of demons to the corresponding alter. Of course, most people will see this as a simple way to reinforce the traumas within the person, by denying this irrational belief that a demonic possession can actually occur[455]..."

The Monarch Butterfly seems to be the strong symbol returning regularly in the entertainment industry to represent this process of personality splitting. This well-known butterfly has the particularity of migrating from south to north over several generations while the journey from north to south is done in a single generation. These unique and fascinating creatures always return to the same trees as previous generations, even though they have never been there. How is that possible? This means that the Monarch butterfly genetically transmits to its offspring information about where it was born. This insect has been scientifically studied for this amazing genetic peculiarity.

This would be one of the main reasons for the naming of the Monarch project, genetics being an important point in the selection of subjects. Some information related to ancestors crosses time and centuries and is therefore transmitted from generation to generation. It is a kind of transcendent influence joining the studies on psychogenesis, a charge both positive and negative that is transmitted to the offspring. In the book Satanism: Is it real?'' Father Jeffrey
Steffon explains: "A third way (of demonic links) is generational inheritance. If parents have been involved in the occult, this generational bond will be passed on to their children." In shamanic cultures, the role of the shaman is often hereditary and is usually passed down from father to son. Just as the lineages of Asian shamans transmit certain paranormal faculties or psychic powers, the Luciferian lineages practicing occultism and ritual abuse transmit to each other an intangible heritage with a heavy baggage of demonic ties. The faculties for dissociation, hypersensitivity, mediumship and other psychic powers are also part of the genetic baggage and will be activated and reinforced by rituals and traumas during early childhood.

It is interesting to note here that a Swiss scientific study dating back to 2012 showed that trauma (especially sexual abuse) during childhood leaves traces in dna up to the 3rd generation. Is this what the Bible is talking about when it specifies that "the father's fault" is passed on to his descendants until the third and fourth generations? (Exodus 20:5–6)

''The team observed that the DNA of a little girl whose grandmother had been raped by her father, had the same epi-genetic modifications as her grandmother and that these modifications were much greater than in the mother and grandmother. The little girl born from the product of incest and who has never been raped has the biggest scar in the genome of all her cells." (UNIGE Research 2012)

It has been discovered that these genetic marks will not mutate DNA, but will have an influence on brain development and will be transmitted to subsequent generations. The research group of Professor Alain Malafosse, of the Department of Psychiatry of the Faculty of Medicine of Geneva, conducted research on adult subjects who had been abused during their childhood (physical, sexual and emotional abuse, emotional deficiencies, neglect) and suffering from borderline personality disorder. By examining their DNA, resulting from a simple blood test, the researchers observed epi-genetic changes, i.e. in the mechanisms of gene regulation: "This is the first time that we have seen such a clear link between an environmental factor and an epigenetic modification. This link is all the stronger because the more severe the maltreatment during childhood, the greater the genetic modification," stresses Ariane Giacobino of the Department of Genetics and Development[456]. In addition, it has been found that trauma experienced in adulthood will not mark genes as profoundly and permanently as trauma experienced in childhood[457].

It would seem that a genetic encoding resulting in totally deviant self-generated behaviors occurs after three generations of child abuse, which would explain why some families are totally stuck in these things. Luciferian families who systematically practice ritual abuse and mental control over their offspring are therefore deeply marked in their genetics. These blood lines are preserved by the almost systematic arrangement of unions and marriages.

In ancient times, humans (especially children) had good dissociative abilities. When exposed to trauma, they had a much greater survival advantage than those who did not have that ability. As we have seen, dissociation has an initial objective aimed at the survival of the individual in the face of a deep trauma, i.e. to preserve him so that he is able to continue to function properly. Nomadic tribal life has gradually been replaced by a sedentary life in villages, thus reducing natural traumatic factors, so this human genetics associated with dissociation has also regressed. Some lineages perpetuate and still maintain today this genetic transmission of the "precious" dissociation, the door communicating with the spirit world. Genetic background plays an important role in Luciferian hierarchies and dissociative abilities are part of these sought-after genetic marks.

Why is dissociation so important for these cults? In a young brain under construction, trauma and the dissociation they cause will shape the neuronal pathways in a particular way and thus create certain intellectual, physical and psychic faculties. As we saw in the previous chapter, extreme trauma and deep dissociation will also open gaps to other dimensions. It is these bridges to the spirit world that will make it possible to establish certain communications and to receive "power". In addition, the splitting of the individual's personality with the amnesic walls allows a control and programming of the offspring to carry out the objectives of these Luciferian bloodlines, which span centuries. All the children of the "nameless religion" systematically pass "to the windmill": the process of splitting them and "veiling" their synapses using extremely traumatic and dissociating techniques.

Mk conditioning and programming will be systematic and very early on the dissociative faculties of the child will be tested and strengthened. The more easily the child will dissociate himself, the faster the programming work will be done. In her book ***"Ascent From****Gospel",* psychotherapist and survivor Wendy Hoffman explains: ***"Worship teaches the art of dissociation. The lives of victims will depend on their ability to learn this quickly and*** from an early ***age. Dissociation is a subject that is taught, just like mathematics*** (...) ***It is easy for cult members to tell by*** simply looking at someone if they are in a state of ***dissociation. They can check a member's dissociative skills as easily as they can check if his addition is correct***[1458] ***.*** "

As we saw in chapter 2, the ancient initiatory rituals of the

Mysteries religions incorporated elements symbolizing death and resurrection. Initiation sometimes also included amnesia (related to drugs, deprivations and traumas), an erasure of memory for the formation of a new identity: it was then that the initiate received a new name. Survivors of ritual abuse and mind control report exactly the same things. Monarch programming is in a way a form of initiation through trauma, creating in the initiate (child victims) a connection to the spirit world and giving birth to one or more other alter personalities. Alters that will receive different names and that will be programmed for various functions. The child "Monarch" of the Luciferian Hierarchical Order is an elected, he is considered sacred. These are initiatory rituals that aim to sacralize the child through deep dissociative states and rebirth as a Monarch child; make him a killer rather than a victim, a full member of the Lutheran cult linked to higher entities.

In 2009, Dr. Lowell Routley wrote an article in which he described Monarch programming, although he did not use the term. The article entitled *"Restoring The Lost Self: Finding Answers to Healing from Traumatic Socialisation and Mind Control in Twenty-first Century Neurocognitive Research"* was presented by Routley at a conference in Geneva at the Icsa *(International Cultic Studies Association)* international annual congress on 4 July 2009. Here is an excerpt from the introduction: *"These survivors learned to dissociate themselves at a very young age during certain* transgenerational practices *transmitted within families. The use of traumatic socialization is intended to compartmentalize the child's mind, maintain secrecy and maintain the status quo. Asphyxia, deprivation, isolation and pain are known as means of dissociating the child, ensuring a certain behavioral conformity, suppressing his autonomy and identity, creating amnesia regarding abnormal activities, as well as unquestionable loyalty* ***(...)*** *terror maintains and reinforces dissociative compartmentalization The degree of dissociation that results in the victim's mind is determined by the age at which this traumatic socialization appeared, its frequency and intensity. Clinical work with* *the survivors led to a new discovery on programmed modifications of the structure of the "mind", the "self", and consciousness that would have been made by technological or scientific means. While the phenomenology of programming was explored clinically, the patterns of compartmentalization of the mind that appeared indicated that there was a sophisticated manipulation of the child's mind* ***(...)*** *Clinical observations have also indicated that the sophistication of "programming" has evolved in parallel with scientific discoveries. Therapeutic intervention requires first an appropriate diagnosis of traumatic symptoms, and then a means of resolving beliefs maintained by dissociative and amnesic barriers. These factors have led research to determine effective tools for healing. The clinical observations of survivors raised in these transgenerational families as well as the results of neurocognitive research of the 21st century have become bases on which an intervention model has* ***emerged! 459!*** *"*

The term "programming" is used in two ways for mind control methods. Most commonly, it refers to coercive persuasion practiced in destructive sects or military groups, mafias, *etc.* The second use of the term "programming" is much more specific, it is the manipulation or traumatization of alter personalities, fragments, dissociated mental states or entities for the purpose of mental control[460].

It is the latter type of programming that applies in the MK-Monarch protocol. In the book *"Healing From The Unimaginable",* therapist Alison Miller gives this definition of programming: *"Programming is the act of installing internally, predefined reactions in response to external stimuli so that the person reacts automatically and in a predetermined way to things such as auditory, visual, tactile signals, or can perform a series of dictates in connection with a specific date or time."*

In one of her books, the German psychotraumatologist Michaela Huber gives her definition of this type of mental programming: *"Programming in the traumatic context is a process that can be described as a apprentissa.ge under torture. The metaphor* *"programming" is certainly of computer origin and represents in this context, what psychologists call a conditioning. This means that the person who has been "programmed" must re-gir in a stereotypical way to certain stimuli. The person's reaction to a stimulus is in this case automatic, so it is neither a natural reflex nor a conscious and voluntary re-ction. To achieve his ends, "the programmer" that I will call the executioner used the fact that his victim is a young child, preferably already dissociated (with a fra,ctionedpersonality)to carry out the learning by torturing him. Torture can include physical, sexual and emotional abuse and often the victim is threatened that he or she will die if he or she is not obedient. Once a victim has been programmed, it is possible to control it with the stimuli that have been "implanted" (these are the "triggers"). An alter personality that has been programmed is usually not a complex identity and for this it is also called "program". Generally, this person has been programmed to serve certain purposes: prostitution to enrich the master, steal, smuggle drugs, etc. Using programming the master can also ensure that the victim is amnesiac regarding abuse and programming, he can also make sure that the victim commits suicide when she is about to report her executioners*\461\.*"*

Jeannie Riseman, a member of the American activist group *Survivorship,* **describes high-level MK programming, i.e. using sophisticated technologies, as follows:** *"What we refer to when we talk about experiments on mind control is a deliberate and skilful manipulation of different parts of a person's mind, which then falls under the control of others. Experimenters, programmers and controllers have a very specific goal in mind and they will select the techniques that will allow them to best accomplish this goal. They are familiar with a number of techniques and when they are not satisfied with the results of one of them, they modify and adapt their methods. They know perfectly well what they are doing. The technology they have at their disposal is much more complex and sophisticated than what is usually available to groups that practice ritual abuse. They use equipment that is state-of-the-art, equipment that can be very* *expensive. This technology includes electroshocks, implants, equipment to inject information into certain parts of the brain, technology to divide the cerebral hemispheres,* etc[462]."

This is what Dr. Lowell Routley talks about above when he writes that clinical observations have also indicated that the sophistication of "programming" has evolved in parallel with scientific discoveries.

As we saw in Chapter 2, Monarch programming is a distant legacy of ancient mysteries cults and traumatic rituals resulting in deep dissociative states. The MK-Monarch is the culmination of centuries of efforts by the various Luciferian sects to gain total control of a human being. Today these mental programming techniques are very sophisticated and generally use electronic equipment, especially related to the use of harmonics (vibrational frequencies). Indeed, everything on this planet vibrates at a certain frequency and this multitude of frequencies can be used to influence the human brain via neuronal pathways (see the subject of psychotronics developed in chapter 1). In the field of MK research, harmonics are used to activate this or that neural network in order to compartmentalize a given memory. In the laboratories that were already developing these electronic techniques of mind control in the 70s and 80s, the application of harmonics was called "brain training[463]". These harmonics aim to penetrate deeply the subconscious of the MK slave to be able to control for example his breathing, his heart rate, *etc.* This technology can easily replace the cyanide pill to ensure that spies and other agents die with their secrets...

What is presented in this chapter is based on testimonies of survivors and therapists dating back several years. The evolution of any technology is exponential and mk's practices are just as exponential, we may know more when documents are declassified, just as some have been concerning the MK-Ultra of the 50s and 60s.

The MK-Monarch brings together several disciplines, the main ones of which are the following (the first three being closely linked):

- The science of torture and trauma.

- The science of drugs.
- The science of altered states of consciousness (hypnotics, dissociative, trances)
- The science of the psychological and behavioral development of the child.
- Neurological and psycho-traumatological science.
- Psycho-electronic or psychotronic science.
- The science of lying and language manipulation (reverse psychology).

And probably the main one:

- Paranormal science, or how to use spiritual and occult means to control someone. We will also mention in this category demonology.

In the high levels of the Luciferian hierarchy, the result obtained is subjects able to work for the "Network" by being perfectly integrated into key positions of society. ''The Network'' being all organizations applying a Luciferian doctrine and working more or less ardently for the establishment of a New World Order (The ''nameless religion''). These mk methods are therefore reserved for a certain "elite", for insiders. The level of programming of children in these transgenerational families or military and political groups will vary according to several criteria:

- The knowledge and understanding that the group (or family) has about this type of mind control.
- The child's ability to dissociate himself, his intellectual quotient and his level of creativity.
- The region or country in which he grew up.
- Financial resources and equipment available to programmers.

The essential component of Monarch mind control is the deliberate creation of an I.D.T. with a number of identities, personality/soul fragments, separated by amnesic walls. Each alter personality is created to receive a particular training assigning him a specific role inside the cult or outside, in society. The more complex the ritual abuse and mental control that the child has undergone, the more complex his T.D.I. and his inner world will be. Overall, it is a question of setting up a system comprising alternating personalities on the surface or on the façade who will be able to interact with the secular world, i.e. in civil society, while other much deeper alter personalities will have occult roles and activities solely linked with the sect and its network.

On June 25, 1992, the Fourth Annual Eastern Region Convention on Ritual Abuse and Multiple Personalities was held at the Radisson Plaza Hotel in Alexandria, Virginia. Dr. Corydon Hammond held a lecture there initially entitled: "Hypnosis in multiple personality disorder", which was later renamed "The Greenbaum Exposition" because of the content of the conference which was totally different from what the program had initially announced[464].

On June 25, 1992, the Fourth Annual Eastern Region Convention on Ritual Abuse and Multiple Personalities was held at the Radisson Plaza Hotel in Alexandria, Virginia. Dr. Corydon Hammond held a lecture there initially entitled: "Hypnosis in multiple personality disorder", which was later renamed "The Greenbaum Exposition" because of the content of the conference which was totally different from what the program had initially announced[464].

To the astonishment of the public, Corydon Hammond described what he had discovered in some of his patients. He publicly revealed the existence of people who are victims of mind control and programming. People who all suffered from dissociative identity disorder. Among other things, he revealed the different levels of programming: Alpha, Beta, Theta, Delta, Omega and Gamma that had emerged in some of his patients. He described the characteristics of these different types of programming:

- Alpha is the basic programming, these are the first personality fractionations that will establish the foundations to allow mind control over the slave, with a dissociation of the two cerebral hemispheres.

- Beta is the sexual programming aimed at eliminating all morals and stimulating primitive sexual instincts.

- Delta and Theta are programs of killers, special agents, elite soldiers who may have certain psychic faculties.

- Omega is self-destructive programming, including suicidal tendencies and/or self-harm activating when memory recovery begins to be too high.

- Gamma would be the protection programming of the internal system, i.e. a function intended to deceive and misinform.

Fritz Springemeier also cites the epsilon (alter animal) and zeta (alter related to the production of snuff-films).

In 1997, in an interview with Wayne Morris on Ryerson Polytechnic University radio in Toronto, Ontario (CKLN FM 88.1), survivor Kathleen Sullivan described the different levels of programming she herself had: *"The Alpha program was the basic program. That is what my father said. This is the program that activated the Alpha waves of the brain. We had to start with that one before moving on to the others. The Beta program, for me, was called "Barbie." A politician who is very closely linked to* **these** *MK programmes once told me that it was Klaus Barbie who was behind this programming, which was later called "Beta". It was a program that transformed me into a real robot, especially in the sexual field. I was the sex slave of a number of personalities, from my early childhood to adulthood. In this "Beta" state, I could no longer resist, I didn't even have any angry reactions. I was an absolutely docile sex slave and I did everything these men asked me to do. I would never have done these* **things** *if I had been in my normal conscious state. The Delta programme was mainly concerned with the military sector. I was immersed in a Delta state. when I was under the orders of the military. Through this programming, I was absolutely loyal to my superiors. There were several subcodes to a.ctiver different parts of the*

Delta program, there were three: Delta 1, Delta 2 and Delta 3. They were a.ctivated by coded numbers. When I was in the Delta mental state, if they pronounced these codes I could kill someone in the room. I did it without discussion because I obeyed in an absolute way the person who controlled me. In this state, I didn't think anymore, I didn't think anymore. This program uses a lot of amnesia, in the interest of my survival. I knew that, and I was used to it. The Theta program mainly used paranormal faculties. I don't really like this word because it is associated with a lot of negative connotations. But they were using my mental energy to do a number of things that are considered paranormal... Some films or novels present **these scenarios...** *We were taught that* **these** *techniques could be used to harm people. We were filled with extreme ra.ge and we used this very violent energy to attack people by*thought[465].

The internal system of people who have undergone ritual abuse and mind control is different from that of people with an I.D.D. resulting from less severe and less systematic violence, not having a direct purpose of MK programming. The victims of these criminal organizations that deliberately create a T.D.I. to carry out complex programming will therefore show certain identifiable peculiarities in their dissociative disorders. Canadian therapist Alison Miller has noted[466] several of these characteristics common to mind control survivors:

- Presence of a complex inner world and interlocking internal structures in which dissociated personalities (soul fragments) are imprisoned.
- Use of age-appropriate games and activities to facilitate programming.
- Alter personalities are programmed to have a very specific function.
- Presence of a "discharge" for alter that have not been exploitable, so they are not used by programmers but they remain present in the system.
- Presence of a hierarchy in the alter.

- Assigning alters to particular colors.
- Presence of alter observers and rapporteurs who know everything that has happened to the person, all his actions and gestures and who can report it to the masters or programmers.
- Presence of a security system that includes punishments for disobedience.
- Presence of alter having a guard function.
- Presence of a filing system for memories, especially for programming sessions.
- Presence of alter who believe to be animals, demons or aliens.
- Blocking alter at a certain age so that they can not discern reality from fantasy.
- Creation of internal copies of aggressors (alter executioners, identical to aggressors)
- Presence of an internal calendar with roles to be held on certain dates.
- Presence of alter having the function of sending certain feelings or certain impulses.
- Presence of "triggers" deliberately placed to cause certain behaviors or symptoms.
- Presence of "traps" causing despair or triggering suicidal behavior when memories rise and abuses are reported.
- Use of technological equipment for programming.

MK techniques are aimed at breaking the victim, reaching the breaking point from which deep dissociative states arise. It is then a question of manipulating these dissociated states of consciousness in order to program the fragments. Here is a list of barbaric techniques aimed at creating the dissociative states necessary for programming. These are methods that are systematically found in the testimonies of survivors and the reports of therapists. These are practices that could not be more violent and traumatic because the worst traumas will be the most effective for dissociation and spiritual "unlocking":

- Sensory, food and sleep deprivation, but also sensory saturation (smells, sounds, light flashes).
- Confinement and imprisonment in boxes, cages, coffins, *etc.*
- Systematic behavioral modification and use of hypnosis.
- Restraint with ropes, chains, handcuffs.
- Hanging in painful positions or upside down.
- Suffocation, near-drowning.
- Experiences at the frontiers of death.
- Extreme rotation on pivot, "like a spinning top".'
- Blinding light or bright flashes.
- Electric shocks.
- Rape and sexual torture.
- Drugs (ingestion or intravenous).
- Guilt, shame, humiliation and belittling.
- Threats with firearms.
- Confinement with insects, spiders, rats, snakes, *etc.*
- Forced ingestion of blood, feces, urine or flesh.
- Torture and/or forced rape of animals or humans (children, babies).
- Double constraint making a situation a priori insoluble.
- Desecration of Christian beliefs and commitment to Satan.
- Use of lullabies, fairy tales, books, films and music for programming.
- Theatricality, deception, verbal manipulation, inversions, illusions and lies.
- Actors, accessories, costumes and make-up during rituals.

Fritz Springmeier explains that MK-Monarch subjects are created for different objectives, hierarchical or non-hierarchical objectives. Some topics will be intended to work within powerful circles of power, under excellent coverage. These are the ones who are part of the hierarchy, the blood lines. They will usually receive complex and multi-functional programming and will be used to help with the programming of other slaves. On them, the abuses will not be visible physically, unlike those who are not destined to be part of the elite such as sacrifiable subjects such as sex slaves, drug smugglers, breeders, *etc.* The mk-monarch sacrifiable children are those who do not descend from elitist blood lines, they will be programmed for certain functions and will generally be "thrown out of the train of freedom" (sacrificed, murdered, "suicides") when they reach thirty years. That is why a presidential model will usually end up being sacrificed. A great distinction must therefore be made between monarch slaves of the high hierarchy, the Luciférien Order, and those who are not part of it. As we have seen, blood lines are extremely important in these groups, for whom blood allows to acquire power (through rituals). For these cults, the power is stored in the blood so the most effective way to transmit it is by the transgenerational lineage.

The child of a Luciferian lineage is conceived according to certain rituals. All the steps that this child will go through for his programming are well thought out and follow a detailed protocol, unlike dissociated children from homes or incestuous families who will not undergo the same diet. The MK subjects of the hierarchy will in turn be used to program and train other children of the elite, while second-class slaves will be abandoned from a certain age. The women and men of the Luciferian hierarchy will continue to work for the group throughout their lives with a regular update of their programming.

A person's preparation for programming also concerns their potential for demonic possession, a point that is closely related to their potential for dissociation. Luciferian transgenerational families are all sold and related to Satan, and their children belong to him. Because of the genetically engraved transgenerational occult links and the link with these demonic forces, these children are prime candidates for Monarch programming. While a child who does not belong to the hierarchy can be programmed to become, for example, a baseball player or a drug smuggler, the most complex programming leading the child to the highest positions will be attributed to subjects who already have an exceptional generational demonic power. Indeed, the demonic entities linked to these Luciferian families are a major criterion that will certify the success of a program.

Part of the MK-Monarch process involves participating in blood rituals in order to summon the most powerful demons. Moon Child rituals are dedicated to linking the fetus to demonic entities. The creation of these Moon Child within Project Monarch therefore involves high black magic and powerful demons[467].

Aleister Crowley is the author of the book "Moonchild" which was first published in 1917. The rituals to be applied to capture a soul and create a Moon child are more or less described in three of his works. The magic protocol begins long before the birth of the chosen child, who will obviously have biological parents of a certain lineage. Its conception will be ritualized in a well-defined way, it is no more and no less than to consecrate a child to demons by sexual magic during its conception. Traumas to split the child will begin in the womb, a fetus may be abused in different ways: electroshocks, needle blows,
various traumas of the mother affecting the child. The goal is to make him a Magical Child who will serve as a host to a higher entity. The Moonborn would therefore be a kind of avatar raised according to monarch programming to lead his incarnation here on earth by serving a higher order plan. In his book "Blood on the Altar", Craig Heimbichner states that in a secret instruction of the ninth degree of the O.T.O. (Ordo Templi Orientis), it is mentioned the creation of a "Child of the Moon" by the demonic possession of a fetus during a ritualized copulation... This is the legacy of the Assyro-Babylonian tradition, maintained by Satanists like Aleister Crowley.

The film ''Rosemary's Baby'', directed by Roman Polanski in 1968, represents the birth of this demonic Moon child, whose conception was made during a specific ritual. This film depicts an obscure Satanist network whose members are socially unsuspected. Note here that the young singer Kerli, whose very popular video "Walking On Air" (Walking on the air = floating = dissociation) which explicitly represents in its symbolism the programming process Monarch, has named her fans the "Moonchild" (We will return to this young artist in chapter 9 on the entertainment industry).

Childhood is at the centre of all these practices. In Alison Miller's book Healing the Unimaginable, ex-Satanist Stella Katz describes a type of hierarchical organization composed of three Circles illustrating how Satanist/Luciferian networks can work:

- The 'First Circle' of the group in which I was raised includes the members of the group who were born in that First Circle or in the highest echelon of the Second Circle. Children born in this Circle are trained from birth by undergoing programming.

- The 'Second Circle' includes people who were not born into the group but were introduced to it at a very young age, usually before the age of one year. For example, the child of a member of the Third Circle or a child recruited by a babysitter or neighbor. They also receive programming but that will not start as soon as in the First Circle.

- The 'Third Circle' includes people who joined the group in adolescence or adulthood. If these people have children under the age of two, or children of brilliant intelligence under the age of four, then they will join the Second Circle. Older children will remain in the Third Circle. They will be used to "produce" babies, prostitution, or to make "moles" (infiltration, espionage). They are never allowed to attend a ritual closely, they are cloistered in the last rows, their bodies will form the outer circle while turning their backs on the ceremony, or they will be placed further away for the surveillance of the place. People who are introduced into a group in adolescence or adulthood will generally not have dissociative identity disorders because after the age of nine, you can no longer split an individual[468].

Here we find this notion of elitist hierarchy described above, which preserves the blood lines in the First Circle, while the children of the lower levels of the network will be the second-class MK slaves (Third Circle). This example of hierarchical organization shows us the importance that children represent for these cults that can only perpetrate their hyper-violent and murderous practices from one generation to the next through corruption and the programming of a progeny. Mind control based on dissociation is therefore the foundation of this "nameless religion", a systematic programming without which it would probably collapse. In addition, if the "spiritual unlocking" of children stopped, the contact - power and guidance - with the demons would be greatly diminished.

Subjects who go through these systematic MK protocols are also subject to strict rules that constitute the protective cement of the network:

- The law of silence: do not disclose worship activities outside the network.

- Be loyal to past and present abusers.

- Obey all the aggressors of the past and present as well as the alters in charge of the T.D.I. system.

- Do not establish close relationships with people outside the network.

- Maintain a public façade of normality, or madness if there has been banishment of the group.

Loyalty and fidelity to the group as well as the law of silence are therefore the first things that are deeply engraved in the child. But all its programming will be based on three fundamental principles without which the latter could not be maintained over time, it is:

- Terror.

- The rejection of God.

- The link (chaining) to demonic entities.

If the victim is psychologically and physically paralyzed by terror, she will be unable to turn to God for help. In addition, if it is linked/chained to daemons, then the programming will be maintained effectively over time. The sect wants to ensure that all the potential for emancipation and empathy with which the child is naturally born will be totally neutralized, the goal being even to destroy these positive potentials. The victim will also have to feel totally rejected and ignored by God, it is for this reason that the work of spiritual sabotage begins from an early age. Spiritual programming is a very important part of mind control. A traumatized and fractional individual, who is necessarily very unstable and at the mercy of the Luciferian / Satanic doctrines of the programmer, will undergo what may be similar to the alchemical work: "Disolve - Coagula": dissolve to recompose. In the case of the MK-Ultra or the MK-Monarch, this corresponds to the trauma resulting in dissociation, a split (dissolution, tabula rasa), then comes recomposition (programming with a new identity and new functions). The Masonic formula ''ordo ab chao'' (order by chaos) also applies to mind control based on trauma. Indeed, the programmer is the only one who will be able to put order (organization and programming of the internal system) in the psychic chaos that he has voluntarily created in the victim (successive traumas resulting in the bursting of the personality and memories). The MK slave will therefore need the programmer or his master to be able to function again, so that order can return following the chaos... These alchemical formulas are basically neutral, but they can and are used to enslave and control humans. These techniques are all the more effective in a very young child whose subconscious is still a blank page in recording mode.

In MK's elaborate protocols to create a future elite, children are profiled from the age of 18 months. That is, programmers make an assessment of the child's character and personality in order to determine his or her potential. John Gittinger (who joined the MK-Ultra project in 1950) is the designer of the P.A.S. (Personality Assessment System), a personality assessment system for assessing an individual's future behavior. This system makes it possible to distinguish the different types of people and thus to identify the potential of the child in order to adapt his programming for his future role in society. The P.A.S. remained classified as confidential although some of Gittinger's work escaped the secrecy of the intelligence agencies and fell into the public domain[469]. EEG (electro-encephalograms) are also used in parallel with the P.A.S.. These neurological and psychological assessment techniquestherefore provide

MK programmers the perfect tool to assess the young child even before he acquires language skills. Thus, they can refine the programming according to each child. This one will therefore follow the script that was established for him from his first years... Later in adolescence and adulthood, he will receive all the necessary support and money from the Network to be strategically injected into society where he will appear with a façade personality[470]. The aim is to place "safe" individuals in key positions, the "weak links" being not possible in such a system. Programming

MK makes it possible to optimise the initial potential of individuals and to make them the best in different fields of activity, from politics to high-level sport, scientific and artistic fields.

The child will usually have the same programmer for several years. He will live alternately with his family and with his programmer, his parents will receive specific instructions in order to maintain and strengthen the work in progress. Cathy O'Brien's testimony shows how her father received information about mind control techniques in order to apply them to his children: *"Shortly after that, my father flew to Boston for two weeks of classes at Harvard on how to raise me in relation to this branch of the "Monarch" project related to "MK-Ultra". When he returned from Boston, my father was smiling and delighted with his new knowledge of what he called 'reverse psychology'. This is like "satanic inversions", and involves puns such as puns and other phrases that were lubricated in my mind such as: "You earn something to be hosted, and I will host what you ga,gnes." To me, he offered me a babiole, a commemorative bracelet made of small dogs, and to my mother the news that they "would have other children" to raise them in* *the project board (I now have two sisters and four brothers whose ages range from 16 to 37 years and who are still subject to the control of the mind). My mother followed my father's suggestions, gradually mastering the art of manipulating langa.ge. For example, when I couldn't close the snaps on my own pajamas up and down, in a childish attempt to deny my father access to them, I would ask my mother, "Please close them to me. " She would execute by pressing her index fingers on my skin as if they were stings. The pain I felt at the time was psychological, as it proved to me once again that she had no intention of protecting me from my father's sexual assaults. While complying with the instructions given to him by the government, my father also began to make me work like the Cinderella of storytelling. I emptied the chimney of its ashes, brought the logs for fire and piled them up, raked the fallen leaves, pounded the ice and swept away - "because, my father said, your little hands are really made for the handle of the rake, the sweeper, the ash shovel and the broom. " At that time, his sexual exploitation of me included prostitution to his friends, mobsters and freemasons from the area, family people, Satanists, strangers and police officers. When I was not made to work to the point of being exhausted, did not film me pa,s in a pornographic way, did not prostitute me or did not embark me in incestuous relationships, I dissociated myself from myself in the books. I had learned to read at the early age of four because of my photographic memory, a natural consequence of my T.D.1*1471]."

The already heavily dissociated state of the child was the open door to initiate a Monarch programming process. Earl O'Brien sold his daughter to a lawless elite who covered up her illegal child pornography in exchange.

A large part of the doctors who practice MK programming are also active in the sects, if they do not participate in the rituals they are at least aware of these occult activities and use the alter created by the traumas in various programs. This is one of the reasons why children born into incestuous, Luciferian/Satanic environments are ideal prey for MK's government projects. It must also be understood that a programmer is himself in a dissociated state when he violently and splits the child to program him. It is usually one of his alter personalities totally devoid of empathy that is in control during these sessions. Most current programmers therefore suffer themselves from a split personality. According to Fritz Springmeier, we are currently in the second or third generation of MK-Monarch slaves, who sometimes became programmers themselves. According to him, it is programmed humans who currently do most of the work in trauma-based mind control.

3 - Break the heart and rewire the brain

a/ the heart

The child will preferably be born prematurely. According to Fritz Springmeier, a premature birth is important because the care deployed

for such a baby are "naturally" traumatic: catheter in the

bladder, intravenous, oxygen mask, *etc.*

The Network will ensure that the first thing the child sees at birth is one of the individuals who will program it. Over the months

following, the programmer will regularly talk to the baby in a very very

gentle, loving and hypnotic so that the latter binds naturally to his

future trainer. An infant is in a state of

total dependence on parents or guardians and it is growing up

that it will have to gradually acquire autonomy and independence. but

on the relational level, it will remain for a long time very dependent on the protection

and the benevolence of his parents or guardians. This obviously requires a

good availability of these to offer the child a presence encouraging, loving and reassuring.

When the parents or guardians are hostile or even sadistic and violent, the child is then faced with a dilemma for which he has no solution; for whatever happens it is obliged to do confidence and to rely totally on his parents, even if he feels a strong negativity emanating from them. He has no choice and faced with this mission impossible, the infant will lose a lot of psychic energy, he will split into a "double thinking", a premise unbundling. The child cannot flee outside, so he will flee to the interior of himself by detachment, passivity, ''absence[472]''.

In the Monarch programming protocol described by Fritz Springmeier, the child will be flooded with love (the "Love bombing", classic sectarian technique) during the first months of his life in preparation for the abrupt withdrawal of care and tenderness from about 1 year and a half. According to Stella Katz, other MK protocols do not wait until the child is 18 months old to split his personality and the (the first basic splits) is done between the age of 6 and 10 months, the Dissociative process that can even begin on a fetus.

This first step described by Springmeier is therefore to brutally deprive the child of all that is tender and pleasant in this world. Through trauma and sensory saturation, it will deeply se dissociate from the harsh reality: caged, electric shocks, nudity,

food deprivation, contact and forced consumption of excrement... It's

as help arrives: the programmer who

previously played a role of "chicken daddy" enters into

scene to subject the child to his most sadistic and violent side.

The individual who loved and brooded it for 18 months does not only do that the

reject but it even makes it voluntarily suffer. This extreme situation

and inextricable created in the child a split in addition to the

trauma of premature birth.

During the first few months, a fusion of love between the child and the programmer must necessarily be established in order to create a net fracture during the first major trauma imposed on the child. one "net" fracking of the child occurs when this one is confronted with the extreme duality of a person counting a lot for him. The child cannot reconcile the two totally opposite aspects of the same individual, one being a loving and protective being, and the other the worst executioners. The person in whom the child had the most confidence becomes the one that the child will fear the most. Springmeier names this violence initial which is the first great fraction of a young child: "Break the Heart".

Paradoxically, following this violent rupture will settle an unhealthy attachment between the victim and his executioner. The ambiguity between love and hatred as well as the mixture between pleasure and suffering will be cultivated and maintained permanently in the dissociated child. Stockholm syndrome is a reality and those networks that practice ritual abuse and mind control deliberately exploit it: the victims attach themselves to their executioners.

Dans son livre “Dialogues with Forgotten Voices : Relational Perspectives on Child Abuse Trauma and the Treatment of Severe Dissociative Disorders'' (Dialogues with forgotten voices: the relations between the child trauma related to abuse and treatment of dissociative disorders serious), Harvey Schwartz explains that the shocking absence of any anger against the aggressors is anchored and will remain intact. As if this immersion prolonged in sadistic abuse and extreme trauma had almost completely reversed the system of self-protection of the victim.

Judith Herman describes a process she calls "traumatic bonding" between the victim and the executioner. In her book entitled "Trauma and Recovery", she describes this process as follows: "It is the traumatic link that occurs with the hostages or with the victims of abuse, who see their kidnappers like saviours... The repetition of terror and threats, in in an isolated context, may result in a intense sentiment

of dependence, almost of adoration of a certain all-powerful authority

almost divine. Some victims reported that they were entering into a kind of

of exclusive world, almost delirious, totally embracing the system of

grandiloquent belief of the executioner and voluntarily suppressing their own

critical thinking, this as a proof of loyalty and submission. Such

behaviours are regularly reported by people who have been subjected to

totalitarian religious cults[473].

that

Stockholm syndrome phenomenon is frequently found in hostages.

Brian Keenan was held prisoner for a year in Beirut, Lebanon.

In his autobiography ''An Evil Cradling'' (An Unhealthy Rocking), he describes how he attached himself to his

imprisonment: "My days were spent in a slow and gentle delirium, as well as the comfort and security that the child must feel when his mother gave him a lullaby. In my cell, I looked wildly at an insect

dead hanged in his cocoon and I then felt a strange contentment. I don't

felt no desire to leave this place. I even surprised myself to have

a beginning of panic rising in me at the idea of leaving here, I did not want to leave. I then began to fear my freedom if it were to come[474].

The process of attachment to a situation of imprisonment or enslavement is also found in satanic / Luciferian cults practicing MK. The victim grows up in an environment where he or she seems impossible to escape, where it seems impossible to break the attachment ambiguous psychological linking it to its executioners, the latter reinforcing voluntarily this Stockholm syndrome. The programming channels will meticulously weaving a kind of cocoon... the cradle of the slave butterfly Monarch.

This attachment process is reinforced when the individual is feels in danger and that he is in great need of help. This is why ritual abuse sometimes depict a situation where the victim (usually a child) actually believes that she will die, or as we have seen, even go up to cause an N.D.E.. These techniques will create a strong psychological attachment between the "saviour" and the victim totally terrorized and dissociated. It's enforcement the ''firefighter-arsonist'' method, which consists of voluntarily create a disorder to bring "order"...... Always the the same satanic manipulations, whether at the individual level or global.

The programmer therefore works on the attachment between victim and executioner, on trauma addiction, which the German psychoanalyst Karl Abraham called "traumatophilia" (probably related to neurochemistry), but also on the mixture of notions of pleasure and pain, this in order to manipulate the victims and their alter personalities. that "Traumatic attachment" phenomenon or Stockholm is an important point in MK programming because the programmer becomes the only one who may bring order to the inner chaos it has caused in the slave who inevitably relies on him.

here is

the testimony of a victim of mental control having been programmed by Dr.

Joseph Mengele in Kansas City in the early sixties. This testimony is

reported by Carol Rutz in her book "A Nation Betrayed": "In basic programming (Alpha), i.e. the traumas aimed at multiplying the

number of alters that will then be programmed and used for specific functions in the internal structure; I have a memory of Mengele creating a link

specific traumatic. He broke the alter with on one side a fraction that

remembered him with great affection (but including much abuse

the other faction was totally terrorized by its

cruelty. With the first splitting of the alter, he programmed the belief that he was inside it and that he fed and taught it

so much so that this fraction of personality attached itself to it and did not want to

no longer part with it. Then later, he abruptly rejected it, making it

feeling that she no longer had any value, and he abandoned her[475].

Rutz also reports the testimony of a female survivor, repeatedly scheduled by Dr. Joseph Mengele in Florida in 1954 and

in Tennessee in 1955 and 1956:

"As he had aged and become greying, he (Mengele) called himself "grandfather". He used the movie "Heidi" with me and

he took on the role of Heidi's grandfather. I think the insidious part of

his work on me was "love". He loved me and tortured me. he

must also have trained my father because he was doing exactly the

same thing. One of Mengele's favorite phrases was "Pain is a

pleasure and pleasure is a pain my dear. I'm here to give you back

very happy. You will love me forever[476]!"

the
most mind control survivors report that programmers

induce this unhealthy bond of attachment with their little victims as soon as

first years of their lives. Carol Rutz remembers that her programmer,

Sydney Gottlieb, repeated to one of her new alters: "I am your mom and dad, you only love me and I am the only one who loves you. I you

feed and I carry you, you belong only to me." ... Our "baby part"

(alter) grew up to depend on "Papa Sid" and to love him because he was

its only source of love and food. Since then, a deep bond had been

workbench. No matter what experiences he had on me, I loved him and I

remained faithful to the man that my alter baby considered his only

provider of the most basic things to life: love and

food[477]."

b/ The brain

American biologist Bruce Harold Lipton has discovered that children build the foundations of their subconscious between birth and the age of 6 years. During this period, we can say that the brain of the child is in save mode. The subconscious shaped during these early years will be the foundation of the psychology of the future adult. Bruce Lipton says all children up to the age of 2 have brain waves in delta frequency, a ultra-slow wave frequency. Then from 2 years to 6 years, the children are most of the time in a theta wave state. those low brain frequencies delta and theta will make the child in a particularly programmable state, a state called "hypnagogic trance". These are: of the same cerebral state that hypnotherapists use to induce new behaviors in the subconscious of their patients. In others Terms, during his first six years, the child spends his life in a kind state of permanent hypnotic trance. That is why at that age they are able to store large

Quantities

of information... and that they keep asking questions. on the other hand

the child is unable to critically differentiate the multitude

of information that he receives by his five senses, he will record everything as a

blank hard drive, incorporating everything as a truth. It is this

construction of the subconscious, in a way the programming of the computer,

that will lead the future life of the child. Each child is therefore programmed by the way he is brought up and by his life experiences. It's a white slate, a blank hard drive, a piece

of clay on a potter's lathe, the question being what will be the

nature of the "sculptor"...

Even without dissociative states, it is very easy to program and indoctrinate a child before the age of 6. As we have seen,

children from luciferian cults are systematically programmed in

first place to remain faithful and loyal to the group. This is the first thing that is deeply inculcated in them, a basis for being able to carry out

long-term projects with safe and loyal individuals.

During the 90s, neurobiologists began to understand that the child's brain contained a gigantic number of

undefined connections between neurons, waiting to set up according to life experiences. These neurons bind to each other by synapses (or neural connections) that will therefore develop in response to the experience of the child and his or her needs. During the development and learning of the child, these connections will be refined and refined under the effect of the data Incoming. Early childhood experiences therefore have a crucial impact on how the brain will organize its foundations. Experiences traumatic during the first years of life will obviously have a major impact on the deepest basic structures of the brain.

Faced with trauma, the brain must respond to this stress in a way, first of all by a chemical modification with the release of certain hormones, but also by modifying or creating neural connections. The ordinary stimulations of life will enrich in a way neural networks, on the other hand, the high overload what early trauma represents will also have a major impact on synapses. Genes contain information for the organization the structure of the brain but it is the experiences of life that determine which genes will be active, how and when. The expression of these genes is linked to the production of proteins that will allow growth neuronal and the formation of new synapses. It is therefore the experience of the child, both positive and negative, which will act directly on the activation of channels synaptics specific and that will globally shape the neuronal substrate of his brain. Dr. Daniel Siegel calls this ''communicative neurobiology'', which is how the development of the human brain is made according to the child's life experiences. Recent studies in neurosciences have shown that the brain modifies and adapts synapses in the environment and the environment, adult experiences, but it is clear that this process of adaptation neuronal is particularly active during the growth phase of the brain[478].

In an article entitled ''Retraining the Brain: Harnessing our Neuralplasticity'', psychotherapist Janina Fisher writes: ''Since

the neuroscience revolution in the early 1970s (with advances

radicals in the technology of scanners that have made it possible to study the

real-time brain function) we now know that all

areas of the brain are "plastic". They are capable of reorganising themselves, of

grow new cells and neural networks while

1 j 19 1 " j

making other areas obsolete, this in response to life experiences. the psychiatrist and researcher Norman Doidge, the author of "The Brain That Changes Itself'' (the brain that transforms itself), calls this neuroplasticity: the "plastic paradox".

A child experiencing repetitive and extreme trauma in early childhood (causing dissociation and chemical modification of his brain) will therefore develop a neural network with connections it would not normally develop. So it will use parts of his brain that are not usually used to deal with extreme life experiences. The chemical deregulation of the Traumatized brain will also result in a dissociative addiction that will participate in the enslavement of the slave Monarch. All this work of neuronal construction taking place mainly in early childhood, early trauma will influence both the intelligence quotient and the child's creativity: hyperactivity, hypersensitivity, hypervigilance, hypermnesia, all this leading to potentially on extrasensory perceptions and faculties Paranormal. In a process of MK, a training program and stimulation will work to strengthen certain areas of the brain usually not active. The traumatized child will split into several personalities alter whose physical, intellectual and psychic faculties may therefore be cultivated and exploited during their programming. Severe dissociation resulting from extreme trauma in a young brain under construction therefore leads to a profound modification of the synapses and will develop all three main criteria of monarch-type mind control:

- A multiple personality with amnesic walls.
- Extraordinary physical, intellectual and psychic abilities.
- A 'spiritual unlock" causing the opening of a breach towards other dimensions and a connection with certain entities. This tearing of the soul gives access to the vast inner world of the victim that we talked about in the previous chapter, a dimension where the dissociated soul fragments are located, a dimension which will be arranged and structured by the programmer as we will see later.

The genetics of the child are of great importance because it contains his potential for intelligence and creativity, but it also contains the potential for dissociation and extrasensory faculties. the programming will work to strengthen this or that capacity based on the future role that will be determined and assigned to the child. A weak mind can hardly be programmed with these extreme methods based on traumas.

Individuals who go through this kind of programming based on the T.D.I.

are formatted to exceed the usual 10% of our brain capacity.

Good intelligence and strong creativity of the subject is something extremely important for a programmer. In the

MK programming, the stimulation of the right hemisphere (analog and intuitive) or left (logical and analytical) of the brain will be used to make the

two sides of the brain independently of the other. These techniques aim to

develop and strengthen this or that ability, but also to block certain

functions to promote others. Neuros scientist Roger Wolcott

Sperry demonstrated that separate cerebral hemispheres (by callosotomy, "split-brain") could function independently and lead to distinct reasoning from information

to which each of these hemispheres had access. Sperry even issued a

much debated hypothesis that there are personalities or

distinct forms of consciousness within each hemisphere. Just as there are

has a personality split during the Monarch process, there is

also work done on the fractionation of the brain at the level of

also work done on the fractionation of the brain at the level of

two hemispheres in order to dissociate them, so that they can loncuonnci independently i de i aune.

An alter personality may for example be programmed to work with the left hemisphere while another will lonction with the right hemisphere. The left and right sides of the body, related to the Opposite cerebral hemispheres - the phenomenon of contralaterality - can contain on one side (left) the alters related to occult activities and on the other side (right) the alter of daily and public life. This work of separation of the cerebral hemispheres will also make it possible to integrate programs or memories that will affect only half of the body of the victim (see the testimony of the Australian Kristin Constance in the second part of this chapter, it clearly describes programming techniques aimed at dissociating the left and right parts of the body and therefore from the brain). The process involves disconnecting, or unplugging, one of the hemispheres to be able to work fully with the other and thus be able to feed them with different information. Techniques to stimulate this or that hemisphere may consist in sending for example messages clear and audible in the right ear while the left ear will be saturated by a confused noise. Or to broadcast certain images or certain movies to one eye while the other eye will receive visuals totally different. Part of the brain can watch a bloody horror movie while the other will watch joyful family scenes. This creates obviously a split of the brain and both hemispheres will then work differently, one trying to dissociate himself from the horror scene, while the other will experience something totally different. A alternating personality of façade, of everyday life, will view the scenes joyful by the left hemisphere, by the right eye, thinking of living in a perfect world, while the satanic alters related to the hemisphere r\r*/M fdl Oit, will view the horror scenes through the left eye. These methods of programming may seem grotesque and fall under the control of a bad movie sciencefiction, but reality goes beyond fiction... Especially with the current technology.

To create hyper-intuitive alters and capable of accessing other dimensions of the being, it is necessary to block the hemisphere of the logical, i.e. the left side of the brain. When this hemisphere is ''off'', or put on hold, then the right hemisphere (which controls the side left body) can function fully without being in "competition" with the other hemisphere. When this right hemisphere is working at full capacity diet,the intuitive, subjective and spontaneous side then also works at full throttle. The Monarch subject must thus be able to develop 100% of his intuitive faculties to access certain dimensions. Personalities alter the deepest (related to the darkest occultism) will have this particular programming of the right brain in order to strengthen as much as possible this hyper-intuitiveness creating extrasensory faculties. This mastery of two cerebral hemispheres as well as full access to brain functions right are part of the objectives to be achieved in occultism, the right brain allowing access to timelessness, other spaces-time. THE journalist Pierre Manoury writes about the right brain: "This right hemisphere is too "magical", its truths even when they are obvious are rejected as belonging to the domain of the irrational. The right brain is able to make "bridges", to consider totally new solutions, to receive and integrate feelings, impressions from the collective unconscious, to perceive non-influxes ordinarily admissible by the five senses. It is a source of inspiration. It is he who should be awakened to learn it for acquire magical consciousness[479].''

In contrast, an alter working with the left brain will have great faculties for languages, calculus, mathematics, thought rational and analytical. These are essential capacities to train scientists or computer geniuses who will work for the Network. Cathy O'Brien, whose almost all siblings have been subjected to the Monarch mind control, reports that his brother Tom O'Brien was formatted for be a "Compu-Kid" (literally a Kid-Ordi). That is to say, a computer engineer who has undergone MK programming. In protocols that consist of creating super-slaves, brainstem manipulation is used to create child prodigies who will be able to work in particular on programs overpowered computers. According to Fritz Sprinmeier, this consists of surgery on the brainstem so that the brain faces overcompensation at the level of the scar, resulting in certain faculties such as a photographic memory exceptional. Mental programming work with torture, drugs, hypnosis and T.D.I. improves the memory storage capacity in victims (conscious or unconscious memories).

''Federal researchers involved in the ''Monarch'' project related to "MK-Ultra" knew of course this aspect of photographic memory of the T.D.I., as well as the other "superhuman" characteristics that en resulted. The visual acuity associated with T.D.I. is 44 times higher than that of the average of individuals. My acquisition of a pain tolerance threshold abnormally high, added to the compartmentalization of my memory, were ''necessary'' for applications related to military and other activities covert operations. My sexuality had also been distorted from childhood.

The appeal and usefulness of such programming (editor's note: mannequin) were addressing perverse politicians who thought they could hide their actions in the depths of my compartmentalized memory, to which clinicians refer to as so many personalities.''

- Cathv O'Rrien ''T.'A-mérimie en plein Tran ce-form Q ti on '' p 1 30

Just like dissociation, the creativity of the child is an important point for the success of MK-Monarch programming. It is for this reason that the programmer will stimulate it to the maximum. The child is naturally creative and it is very easily built an imaginary world. His programmer can tell him stories, scripts or programming scenarios in a very pictorial and very lively way so that it is deeply impregnated in the child's mind: the goal being that the child can "touch", ''taste'' and ''feel'' truly the scenario staged in its mind. Terror and drugs improve the focus of the little victim so that it can integrate a world as well as possible and as deep as possible into itself imaginary and fantastic. As we saw in the previous chapter, the Creativity is strengthened at the neurological level by the traumas of the early childhood; if everything has been in order and harmony in a person's life, his truly creative energy will not work or very little.

For creativity to be optimized, it must be channeled. According to Fritz Springmeier, the programmer will therefore carefully guide the

the child's creativity and defining its limits, the spark of creativity is producing when there is an alternation between concentration (focusing) intense and relaxing (relaxation). The programmer will therefore work at once the suffering side with torture (focus) and the goodness side with a safe and benevolent attention (relaxation). A light trance will allow creative ideas to surface, a process that artists know well. In the context of Monarch programming, creativity as dissociation must be taught and encouraged because if the child does not does not develop these abilities, it may end up losing reason and eventually life. The richness of his creativity will feed his world imaginary that plays the role of a lifeline just as dissociation is a circuit breaker of relief. Dissociation and creativity work together to preserve in a way the life of the child in the face of traumatic horrors[480].

Monarch programming also works with what is called Biofeedback, or biofeedback. Blood pressure, pulse rate, heart rate, body temperature or body part, etc., can be controlled consciously and voluntarily by the brain. These are capabilities psychophysiological that Indian yogis have mastered for centuries.

THE

control of blood pressure, among other things, as well as capacity

to reach deep states of trances in a controlled manner, are

faculties that are programmed in an MK subject. According to Fritz Springmeier, in

the framework of a Monarch programming, it is about controlling the physical body of the victim in order to reinforce this phenomenon of "doll" totally submissive

and controlled by an external master. If a programmer has the power, by a

hypnotic trigger, to modify for example the heart rate, the

blood pressure or body temperature of the subject, he will feel neither

more and no less like a doll or a toy that is activated

biological function at will. The body, as much as the spirit of the slave is

the property of the master and the slave is not allowed to control his own

body,it is the alter personalities that are subjected to these feedbacks

biologicals caused by external triggers[481].

4 - The multiplication of alter personalities

The methods and protocols for deliberately creating an I.D.T.

in a victim in order to program it certainly vary from one group to another but the basics remain the same.

Alpha programming consists of establishing the first personality fragments that will serve as the basis/root to create all the other alters

which will be compartmentalized in different groups and levels of the system internal.

Survivor Stella Katz described the protocol of the satanic cult, to which she belonged, for splitting the children's personality: the first split of the child, the alter primitive, is called the "firstborn" (Firstborn) and he will have a caretaker role for the child. All other alter personalities will be created from this ''firstborn'' (It is interesting to note here that in some shamanic cultures, there are different techniques for that the very young child obtains a "guardian-spirit", in particular by the use of hallucinogenic drugs. The "guardian spirits" of shamans arethey dissociated alter personalities? Some authors think so but one thing is certain, it is that the occultism that lies behind the Satanic/Lutheran mind control is in direct connection with a ancestral knowledge present in the four corners of the planet. A knowledge whose central point is the dissociation of the human psyche).

Then Stella Katz describes the second personality split that she names the Gatekeeper. A alter who will always be present when creating a new personality alter. The "gatekeeper" will not suffer any more trauma (division) following his birth, his role is to observe everything that happens and save all new alters created. According to Stella Katz, these two first alter to the role of "guardians" will be the same age as the body physical, they will grow at the same time because they no longer receive trauma after birth. Katz claims that the alter who will be in charge of the system, the one to which all others will have to submit, is designated during a traumatic rebirth ceremony in an animal carcass. It is then he who will control all the other alter related to the practices occults: ''If an already existing alter emerges during rebirth, he will become the new leader, because if this alter is strong enough to support the rebirth ceremony without leave the body, it will be strong enough to direct the entire system, therefore he deserves this position[482].

she also explains that the process of personality splitting must do themselves meticulously in order to be able to obtain alter controllables and exploitable: "We (by this I mean the group with which I worked) voluntarily split the child because when he splits by himself, without being guided, the alters who are then created are unable to become productive members for the group, they can not be controlled. We are aware that a child who has to endure all the pain and torture we inflict on him would die if he did not have parts in him to absorb the trauma. It is also important that the child we are training has a "normal" personality that is acceptable to the outside world. A personality that can go to school and play with it children outside without showing or disclosing anything[483].

The years following the first major splits forming the basic alters will see successive sessions of unimaginable trauma in order to create a multitude of fragments separated from one another by amnesic walls. The dissociative process is the keystone for the programming and so everything will be done to cause these modified states of consciousness: a violent psychic and spiritual opening. During sessions,a strong pressure is put on the child to encourage him to escape from the pain by dissociating himself, by crossing the mirror, it thus escapes u an unbearable siiuanun by accessing others dimensions of being. Dissociation in the face of extreme trauma and obvious death threat, paradoxically manifests itself in a sudden calme and surprising with an absence of fear and pain, regardless of the severity violence. It is the neurochemical result of the dissociative process that we have described in Chapter 5. In this state, the victim then becomes

intensely concentrated, it develops a sensory hyperacuity, a

mental speed and a kind of expansion of the notion of time[484].

In such a dissociated and hypnotic state, the child then becomes hyper-receptive to learning and programming. That's why

that during the trauma programming sessions, the child is verbally

encouraged to dissociate, pass through the mirror or go beyond the rainbow to escape

pain = the breaking point.

Many survivors describe this state as profound dissociation as a basic and neutral state, without any identity. Ellen P. Lacter reports the case of a survivor who compares this to some kind of key USB for a computer: a simple object on which we will write some thing. We find in this comparison the principle of "tabula rasa", the virgin slate described by the fathers of social engineering of the Tavistock Institute.

According to some MK survivors, an experienced programmer can easily recognize the "breaking point", it is to say the moment when a new alter is created. This is the time when the child no longer reacts to terror and pain. Each new fragment, or alter, will be immediately named with a code, a first name, ***etc.***

Extreme dissociation will unlock the subconscious, it somehow lays bare the mind and allows to record information without that the latter is able to question or criticize anything for there are no longer any emotional barriers or self-awareness. This door towards the subconscious would be accessible before the victim creates a new aiter (which repatriates-ie has a protective ionction), this is a window

deeply dissociated psychic where no aiter is yet in control of the

physical body. It is in these states of deep dissociation, or the

subconscious is totally unlocked, that are installed the structures of the

inner world, deep dissocitative states also leaving the door

open to entities that will play a role in maintaining the

programming. Entities that are not perceived by victims as doing

part of their personality splitting, they are "foreign bodies"

in the internal system of the T.D.I.. They are "installed" (demonization) by

the programmer when the child is totally dissociated and unlocked. THE

information,structures, programming stored in the subconscious

when opening this window will never be consciously integrated

by the different alters, these are data that are much deeper but that will greatly influence and control the slave MK- Monarch.

During MK sessions, the victim's brain can be monitored to detect the right time when

brain waves will make it possible to integrate programming as well as possible.

the

German psychologist Hans Ulrich Gresch, himself a survivor of MK, describes it as follows:

this programming process when the "breaking point" is reached: "To obtain this "blank slate", the torture must continue until the victim

ceases to resist, up to the point of total submission when it abandons

any personal will. Then the programmers push the process again

further, until you get this state of "virgin slate"... It was then that the

victim becomes calm and receptive. This process is a physiological reaction

torture when applied "correctly" (...) The victim reaches a state in which he becomes extremely impressionable, a state deeply

hypnotic in which she is ready to accept everything. Thanks to this state of hyper-receptivity, programmers can then implement a "personality", a personality script (...) This new state (alter) will not consciously record the torture that was used to create it. But this terror and this

Unconscious pain will continually fuel his receptivity and his

hypervigilance. Although the dissociative state isolates the way (memory) of which

this experience has occurred, it remains inscribed to some extent

in his mind. The programmed information will be kept in such a way that

intact,with very little deterioration over time, largely thanks to

to a network of neurons that will connect this information with pain and the terror that preceded their implantation[485].

the

Programmers therefore focus mainly on the creation of a

dissociation in the victim. Through the use of torture and drugs,

they manage to disconnect from consciousness experiences that will remain

siloed in the dissociated identities they have created. It is no more and no less than to exploit the functions of natural neurological defenses that

we have described in Chapter 5. The book ''Ritual Abuse and Mind Control: The Manipulation of Attachment Needs'' contains the testimony of a survivor of MK

which describes this process of creating alter: "What the programmer was doing, for example, was starving you, making you spin

(rotatingchair) for hours, you undergo certain frequencies

sound,attach yourself to inflict electric shocks on you until

that it detects the moment when your mind has "broken" (the breaking point) and that it sees that you have left your body (dissociation). That's where he's going to give you another name, he's going to name this new alter and he's going to give you another name, he's going to name this new alter and he's going to give him another name.

say for example: "You are an Egyptian goddess and your life is dedicated to the

death and destruction." There will be a ritual where people are dressed with

dresses, singing and burning things. At first, for my conditioning and my programming, I was taught how to kill animals and how torture other children, and subsequently many other things[486]..."

Stella Katz describes the process according to the practices of the group to which she belonged: "The programmer observes carefully the child. It is believed that a split occurs when the child's cries become peculiar (...) when his eyes disgust, that he relaxes suddenly and suddenly becomes silent. At that time, the programmer has a window ranging from fifteen seconds to one minute in which he will name the child's new alter and assign him a color and a magic symbol. The programmer wears this color with a black symbol on the shoulder or chest. Then he takes the child and wraps him in a cover of the same color. The child then receives a lot of attention and of affection lasting approximately one hour. It is fed, washed, changed and pampered. He is continually spoken in his own language, which perhaps that or not of his mother, using his new name which has just been to him saddened. Then ennn it is rocked to wander asleep (...) this process can take a few hours or days depending on the children[487].

Survivor Trish Fotheringham describes the dissociation and programming as follows: "Their abuses were carefully scheduled. My trainers (programmers) used enough trauma to accomplish their goals. ''Smoke and mirrors'' (deceptions and illusions, accompanied by drugs) made each specific aspect of the training (programming) was related to a particular alter personality, and this in a very studied way. For maximum efficiency and potential, the science of the child's mental development was taken into account in order to adapt programming levels. These trainings, which my alter understood as "life lessons", gradually became more frequent and more traumatic as I grew up (...)

''I'', the person ati managed the daily life at home and at

/ 1 ▪ ▪ - the « U " ▪ ▪ 1 - - -

theexterior, was not aware that alternative personalities held others pieces of my life. It seemed natural to me that my life was broken in pieces,so the "holes" in my schedule went unnoticed. THE chronological continuity was something unknown to me, I could not so not realize that there was a discontinuity. I wasn't at the current that a dissociated way of life had been established and that in order to be able to do

in the face of difficulties, my brain would break down to just create another

old[488] !"

the

Alpha programming will form the basis of the system by creating a

some number of alter primaries forming a kind of foundation. Then these

alter will in turn be split into a multitude of fragments

potentially programmable. These fragments of soul, or personality, are sorts of neutral and empty files waiting for programming. A

basic alter, or primary, can therefore itself be split into a multitude

others "sub-alter" by repetitive traumas, and so on...

just like Russian dolls attached to the same large doll. It is a

a real programming chain that is set up. Survivor Kathleen

Sullivan describes how his father split his alters on the chain

Primary: "Although non-traumatic hypnosis could have been effective in controlling my mind, Dad clearly preferred programming based on

traumas to create a new system (group) of alter. It triggered

(called) first a primary alter that he had previously created, and when

this alter emerged he tortured him (with electricity for example) until what this fragment can no longer withstand the pain. By dissociating itself, this alter gave way to another part of my mind (a new fragment) to endure the next trauma. Dad called it the

j and · and

assembly line programming technique. He traumatized the alters one after the other, verbally assigning everyone a code name, until I could not no longer at all and that this process stops on its own. At this stage, it knew he had gone as far as he could. He will then start a another day in another session, again bringing out a primary alter to traumatize him and thus create a new series of personalities linked to this primary alter (...) He often repeated that I was his prototype and he explained to me that if a technique worked well with me, he would then use it on others children[489]."

The internal system, which is nothing more than the creation and deliberate exploitation of an I.D.T., can therefore become a kind of complex family tree composed of a multitude of dissociated and amnesic alters. It is then indispensable to programmers and to the masters to have a kind of mind map (map cognitive) or structural scheme with access codes to be able to manage the multiple Monarch slave. The "masters" being the people who will have to their loads the MK (second-class) slave after programming is complete.

In altered states of consciousness and profound dissociation, the programmer will be able to integrate the "software", or programs, in the different personality fragments to give them various functions. There are therefore has several stages of development of alter. Some may be ''collateral damage'', i.e. fragments created involuntarily during trauma and unexploited, some may have been left voluntarily side because inoperable (this is the reason why we sometimes finds a "discharge" in the inner world, containing the alter untapped), some may be fragments trained to obey simple and basic controls, in a robotic way. But the alter can also be trained and perfected by following a longer and more complex packaging process in order to program functions much more elaborate and specific. Most alters a Monarch topic will only take control of the body when they are called (with trigger codes) by programmers or masters.

The alters will be organized, or "housed", in different levels, or layers, of the subject's internal system. Like folders in a computer, the data must be easily accessible and especially not mix, hence the importance of "amnesic walls" to partition the fragments of personality and all the memories they contain. The many alter will be grouped into "blocks" or groups bringing them together according to the different categories of activities to be assigned and programmed. The programmer organizes and assembles these multiple fragments and groups as he wants With structural schemes, symbols, subsystems, access codes, scripts, *etc.* It is really a question of creating a hyper-structured internal world to house all the different alter personalities and to obviously be able to navigate and navigate easily. All data of a child's programming are recorded in a notebook or a laptop that the programmer keeps up to date regularly. This data include what was done on the child, the time it took to create a splitting and what worked best to achieve this splitting. The names of alter personalities are archived with their order the sex of the alter, the language he speaks, as well as the colours,symbols and associated words or phrases (the triggers). It is also specified the function of each alter and what is the type of "physical body" that has been programmed to him: human, animal, robot, *etc.* All this information will be transmitted to the different masters

successive who will be in charge of the exploitation of the slave
Mnnarch

This multitude of alters will be organized into a very strict hierarchy where each fragment will have a very specific function. Satanic cults / Luciferians are themselves organized in a very hierarchical way, they therefore reproduce this pyramid scheme inside the victim for strengthen loyalty to the organization of worship. The highest alters in this inner hierarchy will be those who have received the worst abuses and who will have been forced to carry out the worst atrocities themselves. These are the alter the darkest and deepest of the system, those related to the darkest occultism. The executioners take pleasure in making believe in the child that he is so bad that no one would want him, except the group in which he lives. The child is programmed to believe that he is he himself an executioner, an aggressor and a criminal rather than a victim and if he never begins to remember some memories this programming will overwhelm him. As we saw in the chapter on ritual abuse, it is about creating children of rage. These alter personalities will have the function of reminding the victim that she is just a killer or rapist who will go to hell when she dies. THE

the natural human function of choosing good over evil, and to feel empathy towards others is a target to be destroyed in the child undergoing MK programming. Monarch-type programming withdraws free will from the victim, forced abuse of animals and other children take away this opportunity to make the right choices. THE taste of dissociation, adrenaline and endorphins that relieve its own traumatic memories, ends up prevailing over natural empathy. This systematic programming on violence allows these groups to continue their existence through the generations. It is necessary to recall once again that such a hyper-violent culture cannot continue without there being has a systematic implementation of the corrupting ''Initial Violence'' the innocence of childhood from the first years of life. Generally, a alters of the system will identify with its aggressor. Most patients with a T.D.I. have a fraction of their personality that represents the executioner, with the same type of sadistic and violent behavior. In a study published in 1997, Dr. Colin Ross found that out of 236 patients with a T.D.I., 84% said they had an alter persecutor / executioner: "At the first meeting, they were terrible, detestable, just like demons totally focused on abuse and harassment mischievous patient."

In the case of Monarch programming, the alter executioner is voluntarily created and programmed with the characteristics of the programmer, often it will even bear the name or pseudonym of it. The victim will then have to carry out his orders even when he is not present, it is as well as it

goes so far as to implant itself in the victim's mind. This alter 'executioner' will have

for role of permanently maintaining the presence of the programmer in the victim

in order to control it by supervising all the alter. It goes much further

that a simple obedience is here the internal injection of the predator. The sect

thus cultivates the predatory side of his offspring by voluntarily creating executioners fed by an inner rage. It is these ultra-violent alters who have

tower will become aggressors and sometimes programmers on other small

victims. Survivor Svali explains that many

trainers (programmers) will get into the

victim, in order to supervise internal programs... The survivor can be

horrified to discover a representation of his own executioner in himself,

but this is a survival mechanism... The survivor (the alter executioner) will be able to reproduce the mimics, the accent, the manners and even tell the life of the programmer as his own

Kathleen Sullivan also writes: "Because I have had a lot of conflicts and struggles myself to accept the side "bad" or "demonic" of my personality, I understand why some strongly dissociated survivors do not want to believe that their Alter malevolent or "obscure" personalities are pieces of their own original personality. My personality has been polarized with on one side the "too good" and on the other the "too bad". This prevented me from merge the two and be able to integrate it into a single personality balanced. Acceptance of our fully human "dark side" requires a great courage but also a strong will to forgive oneself[490]."

Generally speaking, when a programmer implants something in the victim, it will be at some level a reflection of himself, all as writing and art reflect the person who produced them. Although the comparison between artistic creation and mental programming may seem moved,it is not for programmers.

Military or political groups program their killers using indoctrination and training for the child to split become an elite soldier. These children will usually be tortured for produce alter personalities who can commit acts of extreme extreme cruelty without having to face the psychological consequences. In Uganda, the Lord's Resistance Army (LRA) practices this kind of training based on trauma and mind control, the victims are the "child soldiers".

A Canadian documentary entitled "Uganda Rising" (2006) was devoted to these children forcibly integrated into the ranks of the LRA. These children who were forcibly abducted from their families (often decimated) say that they have been subjected to torture, mutilations, rapes, that they were sometimes forced to commit murders before being parked in camps and used as soldiers. The documentary does not talk about ritual abuse or mind control but the strategy seems to be the same.

In Monarch programming, a large part of alter personalities will be dehumanized and conditioned to believe that they are other something that a human being. The dehumanization of an alter will be done by making him live for example the extreme conditions of an animal in a cage. All as for the magical surgery that we will describe later, all kinds of mind manipulations can be done to implant in alter the belief that he is a cat, a goddess, a robot, a puppet, etc...

One or more alters will be programmed to make the rapporteurs. That is to say that they will be conditioned to record everything and to report disobedience or disclosure of secrets to the executioners by the slave. These alter "rapporteurs" are also programmed to inform the cult on all the movements that the victim makes. Which is paradoxical, it is that this type of alter is conditioned by pain and terror for

believe that the executioners "know (already) everything" and that he himself will be punished

if it does not report what the victim is doing.

So that the Monarch slave can function properly in society without being detected, it needs an alter personality of façade, a

a kind of shell masking the multiple state of the individual. This is the

"host" personality, or "public figure", is the personality

the main one which behaves "normally" and which is totally amnesic of the

abuse and the existence of the internal system with multiple alter. The therapist

Alison Miller calls this type of alter the "personality"

apparently normal". Most of the alter personalities will be

dehumanized,while this one will be allowed to be human, to have a

the host personality is generally well oriented in space and time, i.e. it is

evolves according to our schedule, while many others will be

stuck in the space-time where the traumas happened. To understand

how does the interface between this host personality and others work alter, let's take the example of a known case of a hypnotic experience of Peter Janet: Janet hypnotizes Lucie to make her execute suggestions post-hypnotics. Lucie executes the orders but she forgets everything immediately afterwards. On the other hand, another of Lucie's alter named Adrienne recalls everything that happened when Lucie was hypnotized and she states that it was even she who executed the posthypnotic suggestions without that Lucy be aware of it. This is an amnesia going only in a only sense. The amnesic wall isolates the host personality but some alter that do not undergo this wall are fully aware of the existence of this host personality and keep the memory of all his actions. In the Monarch programming, so the host personality is totally ignorant of the programming but the deepest alters of the T.D.I. system, the most Theyare perfectly aware of its existence and they can therefore control. According to therapist Elle P. Lacter, it is usually put in place a fundamental structure that separates the system of alter personalities in two parts. The "host" side that will not be aware of the existence of the T.D.I. system, then on the other side the group of deeper alters, linked to occultism,which they will be aware of the existence of these personalities of surface and who will even be able to control them.

The internal system of an MK slave therefore includes one or more compartmentalized and totally amnesic host personalities, various personalities alter with different functions installed more or less deeply in the system, and finally it always remains the core, the essence of the "Me", the original personality that Satan (or the programmer) can not touch or destroy. He can just isolate it as best he can, but that seed divine will always be present in the victim for his restructuring and eventual healing. Alter personality detected as the youngest is probably the original personality from which the others split.

Some alter will also have a denial programming. Their purpose is to deny the ritual abuse and all the occult activities of the network. If Leaks occur, their purpose is to put forward explanations like "false memories", nightmares that are by no means real, a book or a film that could have influenced the person, *etc.* These alter personalities

thus believe that they preserve the victim and that they even save him from the

life. These alter have a direct interest in doing so: they believe that their

even existence and their survival depends on it and only if an awareness

real on traumatic events occurred, violence and even the

death would then occur to punish them for not having done their job. This

Denial programming begins in the early years of the child's life.

For example, he will be terribly abused and traumatized, and then the next morning the adults around him act normally, as if nothing had happened. This is how they model in children a lifestyle based on the

denial. This is reinforced by phrases like: "It was just a bad dream",

"How can you believe such a thing?", "It's just your imagination,it didn't really happen." Members of the

family suffering from dissociative states will also be in some denial

concerning hidden night activities. Denial is also reinforced by

telling the child that no one will believe him anyway if he talks about it. THE

the end goal is to format the child so that he no longer trusts his

own reality, but that he instead turns to adults to know the reality. For example, the adult will show the child an orange and ask him what it is and the child will be abused

systematically when he replies that it is an orange and he will be hammered that

it's an apple... The process will repeat itself until the child, terrorized and

fearing the pain, replies that it is an apple and even ends up y believe![491]!...

Another method to prove to the child that his memories are unreliable is to stage the simulation of the murder of a person in which the child is forced to participate. The next day, the child will see this a living person in front of him, when she is supposed to have been murdered before his eyes the day before, resulting in a form of cognitive dissonance. If the child asks questions, he will be told that this atrocious event was surely only a bad dream and a product of his imagination. Due to the fact that victims often experience traumatic amnesia with a Chronological bursting of memories, it is very easy for people who have the power over their lives to convince them that nothing has happened to them.

When parents tell the little victim that his nightmares or his flashbacks are pure imagination and that kind of thing doesn't happen

J UXXXUXVJJ W1U. 1UOVJUX V/ V XL- X VXXXUXXL LJ^UX VU X VVJLVX \XUXXU WVJ

states
Differentiated appropriations

between two worlds, two opposing realities...

Monarch trauma-based mind control is practiced on children before the age of 6. After this age, it becomes more complicated to practice this kind of programming working with a T.D.I., but this does not mean that people are not programmed after the age of 6. personality fragments induced by trauma and dissociation remain better isolated in the mind than personality fragments induced by simple hypnosis, but most people can be hypnotized to elicit alter personalities. Some survivors of satanic ritual abuse have been programmed but they do not have an internal system with alter personalities, they have only a few dissociative states, such as a nocturnal self, and a diurnal self! 492).

5 - The "magic surgery" and the structuring of the "inner world"

n *- i

To understand what we are talking about here, it must be understood that the monarch slave went through a traumatic process of psychic and spiritual splitting that opens the doors to others dimensions of being. He thus has access to an inner world (going far beyond his head) very vast and also real than is the physical world for us, a world composed of its different fragments of soul (alter), demonic entities and material set up as part of the programming. This inner world, or "internal system", will be arranged by the programmer with different structures,architectures, objects, landscapes, etc., representations material or symbolics serving as a support for working in this special dimension. It is sometimes possible to identify the type of sect having perpetuated programming by the type of structures and symbols that form the inner world. The hierarchical organization of alter personalities also often the type of group that has programd the victim, it can be a military, satanic, druidic, Kabbalist, neo-Nazi, *etc. group.*

"Magic surgery" is a tool used to feed and organize this internal system. It consists in hypnotizing and / or drugizing the child by telling him that we are going to operate on him to insert an object or an animal into him.

The surgical operation will only be a staging as a result of which the child will believe that he actually has this object inside him (this programming is supposed to remain implemented throughout its life). Pain extreme may be caused at the place of surgery and blood may be spread out on him to reinforce his belief that he has truly undergone a surgical intervention. The child knows from which object or animal he it is and what is its function. It is programmed to believe that this "thing" placed in him will attack it, explode or denounce it, if ever it speaks,that from now on she scrutinizes his thoughts and that she will influence him to become nasty and to have bad behaviors. The child is programmed to believe that these foreign bodies will torment and harass him if he does not does not conform to the doctrines of worship. Ritually abused children often report somatizations such as abdominal pain in relationship with this phenomenon of "magic surgery".

in the file of the minutes and depositions of the Dutroux case, page 261 contains a letter from one Van Aller dated December 13, 1996 referring to what amounts to magical surgery. This is a testimony about ritual abuses that would be practiced in villas by Dutch notables: "We cause for example these disorders (T.D.I.) by making small children believe that we introduce into them a cat that will grow up and that will become a panther who will watch them if they want to talk or leave the clan, this allows continuous control, even in adults, it makes all the perpetrators, victims. TDI are maintained by psychotherapists![493]). "

A British psychiatrist has reported an example of mind control based on the same principle: the child is forced to eat a spider and he is told that it will multiply and that all these spiders will then the monitor from the inside. By being forced to eat maggots, the child will believe that they can turn into flies that will go and denounce it to his aggressors if he speaks. Fritz Springemier says that the "Penis of Osiris Gold" is placed inside the Monarch slaves. It can also be the "Eye of Lucifer" or "the Eye of Horus" which is placed in the child's womb to observe and monitor him permanently. This

Abstract monitoring process of the inner world seems to be some something essential and systematic in MK programming. It may also be told to the child that his heart of flesh has been replaced by a black stone and cold, thus reinforcing its dehumanization in the face of horror. This

and cold, thus reinforcing its dehumanization in the face of horror. This

"magic surgery" has as its only limit the imagination of the executioners programmers. The possibilities are endless, because everything in this pnysic monae can be transferred to the inner world. But as we will see by the rest, this very malleable inner world can also be used to help the survivor during therapy.

In the human brain, the right hemisphere and the left hemisphere are connected together by the corpus callosum, it is the mediator and it is thanks to to him that rational analyses are possible. But this structure does not reach maturity until around the age of 10. The experiences of the right brain (who perceives the world in raw data) of a child are therefore not transmitted to the left brain for rational analysis. The left hemisphere translates perceptions into semantic and phonetic data, in other words into

word, in concepts and language. Before its tenth year, many things will

so remain unconscious for the child because the informative network of his brain

is not yet fully built. As long as the corpus callosum is not fully developed, the child may, for example, perfectly believe that the Father

Christmas will bring him his gifts on December 25 in his living room, while knowing

that it is too big to go through the fireplace! [494]). The process of "magic surgery" therefore exploits this lack of maturity

cerebral. Children under the age of 10 may believe that they have been inserted into them

a doll's house, a castle, a merry-go-round or an animal because it has not yet

the possibility of rationalizing something so fanciful. It is not a question of

no naivety or "imaginary reverie" on his part, but on the part of a

cerebral limitation which in the context of MK programming allows a

manipulation for formidable mind control. These "surgeries"

the child receives them in

states of trance, extreme dissociation and under the influence of drugs.

Before the age of 5 or 6, the young child is absolutely not endowed with all the brain abilities to defend himself against

"Invasive" mind control. The cerebral cortex that makes it possible to
reason, ae

to make deductions, to think in order to analyse situations logically, to

make decisions, manage emotions or show

morality and to organize, is absolutely not mature before the age of 6,

age from which it begins to become so only very gradually. So

we understand why some sources claim that MK programming

must be implanted before the age of 6.

The supports, or structures, used to organize the inner world can be introduced or "programmed" in other ways than

"magic surgery". Here are some examples of media that can be used to

to structure and organize the internal system of a T.D.I. These things have been

reported by survivors and therapists:

The double helix (symbol of infinity), letters or symbols, 2D geometries such as the pentagram, triangle or circle,

geometric volumes elaborated in 3D, dolls, cobwebs, mirrors or shards of glass, chessboards (duality of the black checkerboard and

white with arrangement of the parts according to the programming), masks, castles, labyrinths, temples, pyramids, walls to strengthen

amnesia, alien monster *demons,* robots,

shells, hourglasses, clocks, butterflies, snakes,

suns representing the god Ra, ribbons, flowers, diagrams of

controls, computer circuits that can serve as an organization chart for

complex programming. A two-dimensional grid can contain a

category of alter housed and operating on the same level. A third

dimension can be created to form a cube whose each face will correspond to

a particular level of the internal system with a particular category

d'alter. A cube that can rotate according to the alter group that must be

accessible. This cubic structure is placed in an elevator shaft

spiral such as DNA: by this system, the alter can "go up"

(emerge) or "descend" (sink) as needed.

The complexity of the structures will vary according to the child's abilities to memorize them and to represent them in his inner world.

The Tree of Cabalistic Life (Sephiroth tree) is a structure that has also been reported by survivors of MK and that seems to be an essential element for

the inner organization of the slave. The alter "Key" of the fractional painter, Kim Noble, represented the cabalistic tree

in several of his works, notably in his painting entitled "Seven Level" (seven levels) appearing to describe point by point the programming process (a painting that is analyzed later

in this chapter and visible in Annex No. 4). The Sephiroth tree represents the structure of man and the universe. It contains and sets to

provision a coherent and ready-to-use "system" of correspondence:

each Sephiroth (world, dimension, field of

consciousness) is associated with a number, a planet, a note, a quality, a

It isa perfect structure for organizing and classifying the multiple alter personalities, the fragments of souls. This tree

cabalistics basically represents the structure of man and different

worlds, the parallel dimensions we talked about in the chapter

preceding.

According to Fritz Springmeier, some geometric shapes incorporated into the slave's inner world serve as focal points for entities

demonics, these are doors through which demons can enter

the human body. Indeed, geometries giving off a certain wave of shape

are used in magic rituals in order to interact with others

dimensions.

one

another structure that we find is the carousel, a classic merry-go-round with

wooden horses that go up and down while turning in circles. THE

carousel is also part of the systems for structuring the inner world and accessing its different levels. It will be used to "go up" or down" the alter personalities during trance states and

of dissociation. In his autobiography "Thanks For The Memories", the former "presidential model" Brice Taylor describes this inner carousel as follows: "That day, the carousel was created in my mind, I was standing in the middle of this

carousel while programming was done slowly as you went along

that he was turning. Then he stopped at Henry's request in a place

of my mind, just like the "Wheel of Fortune". He then said to me:

"There is a whole other world in the files of your mind. The carousel

allows the files contained in your head to rotate easily and without

effort" (...) I was not able to recover the entirety of this memory, because it turned like a

merry-go-round , swirling and rotating like a spinning top, so I could not the

seize to remind me of it. This programming is called "programming of

rotation", it is intended to disorient and induce confusion! [495]]."

When the victim undergoes an extreme rotation on a swivel chair, it makes him sick and terrified, he goes through all kinds of physical and emotional sensations. These sensations will be transferred in alter personalities who have control of the body at that time and who therefore undergo this treatment. Later, these sensations of spin programmed will be triggered by these alters whenever the individual himself will recall anything about the abuses, this memory will go back with the sensation of whirlwind that will cause mental confusion and unhappiness physical.

here is how survivor Svali describes the protocol her group used to insert a structure into the child's inner world, in order to accommodate there one or more alter:"The structures will be integrated into the inner world of the victim when she is drugged, under hypnosis, and undergoing electroshocks. The person is totally traumatized and in a that we will force you to open your eyes and look at the projection of an image of the structure. This can be a 3D model of it, a holographic image or by using a virtual reality headset. The image will be "injected and printed" using successive shocks and bringing it closer more and more in the field of vision of the subject. He may be ordered to enter the interior of the structure if it is a temple or a pyramid. Under the effect of deep hypnosis, they (alter personalities concerned) will now live "within" this structure. This one will also be used to enhance amnesia and programming of of internal isolation, this structure will strengthen the partitioning walls between the fragment of personality that is enclosed in it and the others alter the system."

Alter personalities can be imprisoned within these structures, or they can be connected to them or connected to them by various manners. Alters define themselves by the reality that the programmer implanted them. Objects, structures and symbols are therefore used to organize and control the internal system but it is also structured with scenarios or scripts serving as pictorial supports and the symbolic ones on which the programmers will rely to shape the alter. Generally speaking, everything that usually makes a child dream will be used to program it. A book, film or video game can in theory be used as a support for MK programming, especially effectively on young children. It's about encrypting your mind with themes of fairy tales or other fantasy scenarios in order to sow the confusion between imaginary and reality, i.e. being straddled by two worlds. "Alice in Wonderland" is a classic programming script, just like "The Wizard of Oz" or some Disney productions like "Pinocchio" the carved wooden puppet and "Cinderella", the filthy little slave who turns into a magnificent princess. THE Monarch slaves, or rather their alter personalities, are conditioned to be placed in scenarios of this kind in order to reinforce the effect of the programming. So they live in a totally imaginary world. Some Script sentences will serve as an encrypted language implanted to control the slaves. In Alice in Wonderland, the little girl must follow the white rabbit that allows her to access places mysterious and normally inaccessible. As part of an MK programming, this white rabbit is an important figure, it represents the master or the programmer who hypnotizes his victim or incites him to dissociate himself from reality to access an alternative world during torture. The famous move to through the mirror represents access to a dissociative state, a change of reality. The programmer encourages the child to cross the mirror like Alice, he urges her to pass the door to another dimension of his being, the mirror being the door that will facilitate the programming... In the movie "Matrix", when Neo comes out of the matrix for the first time, it touches a mirror that becomes liquid and that ends up completely covering it to engulf it and lead it in another world... where it will be deprogrammed. To get there, Neo had followed the white rabbit tattooed on the shoulder of a woman... These are very strong symbols, rooted in this occult culture. In The Wizard of Oz, the subject dissociates itself from reality by going beyond the rainbow ("Somewhere over the Rainbow", "somewhere beyond the rainbow" which is the theme song of the film), i.e. by going beyond terror and pain through dissociation. Horror then becomes a dream, reality becomes fiction and the imaginary world becomes reality. The dissociated victim will register the trauma as a illusion, a reality that she has lived for a while, but which is nevertheless recorded by the mind as a kind of dream. This is a crypto-amnesia that sabotages the usual process of memorization by trauma and hypnosis. The inner world of the slave becomes his "reality" and the outside world becomes for example the land of Oz. Note that in some Shamanic cultures, the celestial ascent is done by the overlap of therainbow. A considerable number of cultures see the rainbow as a bridge connecting earth and heaven, a bridge between gods and men. It is often by the rainbow that mythical heroes reach the sky, its climbing used to reach the spirit world. The "men- medicine" ascend to the celestial spheres using, among many other means, therainbow. It would seem that the MK-Monarch programming techniques take up this symbolism of the rainbow which represents no more and no less than than a dissociative process opening the door to other dimensions. As as we have already seen, mind control techniques based on Traumas are intimately linked to certain ancestral cultures and psycho-spiritual practices, particularly the exploitation of states dissociatifs.

Another important symbolism in the Wizard of Oz is the yellow brick road. The slave must follow the yellow brick route by which the alter emerge from the inner world to take control of the body. "Follow the yellow brick road" are keywords used to trigger a

special programming in a slave. Another example regarding the

Wizard of Oz is the character Tin Man who is a

kind of empty metal carcass. This character will be used to create a well-oiled machine perfectly performing the commands, it is the programming of the tin man that will receive

some alter.

The author of The Wizard of Oz, L. Frank Baum, occultist and member of the Theosophical Society, was according to him inspired by a spirit that gave him

the "magic key" to write this children's tale.

In other words, Baum was a medium and wrote this story by channeling an entity. In the book "The Annotated Wizard of Oz", Baum a writes: "It was pure inspiration... This

came to me in an inexplicable way. I think that sometimes the "Great

Author" has a message to convey and that he must use the instrument he

has at your fingertips. It turns out that I have been this medium, and I believe that a key

magic was given to me to open the doors of sympathy, of the

understanding,joy and peace! [495!.]" The Wizard of Oz in 14 volumes was released in 1900, this tale that can be described as "theosophical" incorporates the "ancient wisdom" of the

religions with Mysteries, which others will call satanic or Luciferian... sound

initiatory content has been taken up and used as a support for control

trauma-based mentality. The entities that inspired this story

were probably aware of its potential and use

occult that would be made of it.

the

film "Frankie and Alice", based on the true story of a woman who developed a T.D.I., contains a

[illegible]

of child emerges

by starting to talk about the Wizard of Oz... simple wink. In 2009, in a

New York Times video (Screen Test), actress and model Megan Fox

QPPNP MNNTRANT NNP OPARIPP RI ’VI'^R^RINQR' M'I NNP NPRQNNN A1IT£ A 1

told Lynn Hirschberg about her obsession with the Wizard of Oz when she was little:

"I remember the Wizard of Oz very well because it was my favorite movie for a long time. I was obsessed with this film and watched it

again and again in a loop. For years I wanted to be Dorothy!

Until I was 6 years old, I wore duvets and I think my grandmother

had made me Dorothy's costume, I also had the little slippers

ruby color. My mother called me Dorothy, I didn't answer her and didn't

didn't listen to her if she called me Megan, because that wasn't my name."

the

Survivor Svali described the methods used to have a film script

can be implanted in a young fractional child: "The programmer projects the film to the child by telling him that he will then be questioned about what he has seen, which automatically triggers in the child

the use of his photographic memory. The programmer will be able to show to

the child the full movie or just a few scenes, see even a single scene.

After watching the whole movie or only a few passages, the child is

drugged to relax, then asked what he remembers. It will be

abused if he does not remember what the programmer considers important

and he will be forced to watch these scenes in a loop. When the child has finally

memorized the totality of what is deemed good to be, the programmer will tell him

that he is one of the characters in the film. The child will be severely traumatized for

create a virgin alter personality who will become the character in question. THE

first thing that will see this new blank slate (the new alter) will be

the entire film or a scene from the film, so this will be his first memory. THE

programmer will then link the scene of the film to the ideology iiiuminau (Luciferian), he will teach the child the "hidden meaning" of the film and the congratulate for being one of the few "enlightened" who can understand his real meaning. The programming of scripts will generally be linked to others programming already present in the child. For example, the programming of military type perhaps related to the star wars movie, the programming of the internal labyrinth can be connected to the movie "Labyrinth", etc... THE possibilities are very varied. The music of the film, or a particular scene, can be used as a trigger to access programming, or bring out the corresponding alter personality."

According to Fritz Springmeier, the American popular culture of the second part of the twentieth century was transformed into a large catalog serving support for MK programming. Series such as Star Trek or Star Wars have been exploited by programmers, as have walt disney productions, Alice in Wonderland or the Wizard of Oz. Nowadays, it is likely that the programming uses recent productions, although the classics are most certainly effective and important supports. For example in the Star Trek culture, a whole series of highly technical manuals has been published describing in

detail the whole universe of this series, ie the equipment, the ships,

planets, *etc.* According to Springmeier, when you look at these ultra-detailed manuals, the best way to explain the time and money spent on

develop such complex descriptions for a simple fiction is that they

are used for MK programming purposes. These manuals contain, for example,

maps of the Star Trek universe and such a map

can be used as a support to organize a T.D.I. system. When you

split the personality of a victim, then you need this type of

scheme / supports to restructure it, as if it were a matter of recreating or

reorganize their souls broken into a thousand pieces. A star cluster or a

planet can be used to isolate or group alter, not being able to leave this place only by entering into a dissociation and traveling in space-time when an electroshock, flash or other trigger is induced. As for magic surgery, the number of scripts will depend on the imagination of programmers, having at their disposal a whole catalogue of usable structures to organize the inner world of the split subject.

Brice Taylor relates how his inner world could be a true cosmos: "Henry worked with me rather towards the beginning, so to set up all my systems. He even marked on my forehead a cross to delimit what he called the "stellar map" of my system. Then it put me in front of the mirror so that I could see this little face of 5 or 6 years old, with short hair, with this black cross on me. He said that there were planets within my inner universe and that they slept while waiting for the day they would be occupied. Later, there were added other areas in saying that they were small worlds for the different planets. the system made it possible to keep the information completely separate and isolated because the planets had no way of communicating with each other. All data and information therefore remained compartmentalized, autonomous and held in orbit in the great blue immensity of the stars. All these stars were used as files for movie stars or politicians who used to use me. Larger stars contained larger alter personality files and they were related to people I met regularly, while the little ones stars were reserved for people I only saw on occasion. The most big stars were reserved for the elites. The whole group of men powerful who secretly orchestrated this horror, had a set up a sophisticated satellite system that can travel anywhere inside my mind, constantly monitoring my "inner worlds". They could thus access each of the planets, any place of the system, and therefore to all the information they wanted on any of these people the alters met,... Henry told me that the files of my spirits are unlimited because the universe is limitless and of an immensity healso told me that there will always be new areas to cartographierl[497]]. ”

the objects can be transferred to the inner world with surgery magic but they can also serve as an external support for the programming. Some objects can be used as tools to manipulate the child dissociated. In his autobiography, Brice Taylor explains that his father had specially created for her a doll cabinet. This cabinet was filled

U. U11V LLVIL U.V. J^VU. WHERE UIWIOVVJ VL V U.1 1WVJ. VLU1L U.VO

dolls that came from all over the world, toys that were always offered to him with "love". His father used them as a support to manipulate and programming the alter personalities of her daughter split by abuse repetitive,night after night: "Often when my father tortured me, he gave me a new doll in order to create a another part in me with a new identity, I was then taking care of it and my young spirit (dissociated) then identified with this doll that I held. He was telling me that this doll in my hand was a part of myself while being separated by the two, then he gave it a name. There were the little doll with red hair and freckles, the doll Baby, Cindy the bride, Rebecca, Sally, Barbie, Mrs. Alexander... for in name a few. I was literally surrounded by dolls (...) my father said that I could not play with these dolls until he had given me permission, so much so that that he hadn't told me it was time for them to get out of At night, when he woke me up to abuse me, he would take out the bound doll to the alter personality that was to emerge from my internal system. When it took out a doll, he said: "It is no longer in the cupboard, now she can go out and play", and at that tender age, I was switching everything immediately in the personality that my father called. Then he said:

"You Susie, you will withdraw when Doll is completely entered into your body. Every time I snap my fingers three times, Doll will enter in the body and Susie will retreat to the side." And he made his slam fingers three times and I followed perfectly the commandment of my father[498]."

MK programming also uses colors to organize internal systems and easily manipulate alters. With a split of personality in a multitude of alter, the colors are going to be a way organize a group and access it easily. In addition, young children recognize the colors before they know how to read, they are very sensitive to them.

This programming can therefore be done very early, from the age of two.

The child will be programmed in a painted or illuminated room of a certain color. If it is the color blue, theprogrammer will raiseone of the alter the child to tell him that he will learn to become blue and learn what this color means. The room will be bathed of blue, the programmer will be dressed in blue with possibly a mask

the cabinet.
blue. All objects will also be blue. An alter personality will be

called to emerge then she will be drugged, hypnotized and traumatized on a

table or stretcher. When she is in a trance state, she will be told that the

blue is something good and that it is itself blue in color. We owe him

will say that the blue will protect him from danger, that the blue people do not get hurt

not, that she will wear beautiful blue clothes, etc ... If the child resists and that he does not want to become blue, he will be tortured until he submits. Following these programming sessions, the child will bathe in blue for a while, he will be put glasses or blue-tinted lenses and he will wear clothes of the same color.

Then, in progressive stages, the alter concerned is taught the meaning of the of this color as well as the function that is related to it and that it must integrate.

The sessions of trauma will multiply while this color will be printed deeper and deeper into his subconscious. The color becomes thus a trigger by which the programmer or master can access a alter group or to a particular alter of the victim. The color code is a basic method to organize internal systems! [4]"].

here is an excerpt from a lecture by Australian survivor Kristin Constance who describes a process of programming MK by colors (the

Iran cr'-ri -r»ti nn

full of his testimony is found below in this chapter) "The programming by the colors that I underwent took place in rooms underground. Each piece had a different color, corresponding to different programming. The colors seemed to match those of The Eastern Star: blue, yellow, white, green, red and black for the center. The red room had a red light, a stretcher, a full table instruments of torture and equipment for electroshocks. The right side of my body was covered while the left side was tortured electric. Electrodes were placed on my left joints, this which caused paralyzing pain... that I still feel today. On whispered things in my left ear and electric shocks were applied to my temples. This is how "Red" was created, and reinforced... A woman asked me questions for programming, and few

I1U 11VJV1 XI-/ UV/il

no matter what I answered, I was systematically wrong. I dissociated myself

many times... "Red" and its alters seem to be programmed so that

when sexually abuse, there is no reaction to pain, in all

circumstance. Red has undergone a lot of blood rituals and rapes, and it is

she (editor's note: a group of alters) who cashed in most of my pains."

in

therapist Alison Miller's book "Healing the Unimaginable", the living su Trish Fotheringham also describes how colors were used to organize and structure

his alter personalities: "My alter created in a deliberate way were all associated with particular colors, each color

representing a "channel" or type of programming. An alter that will have been

trained to follow a red path will wear only clothes of this color,

we will talk to him in a certain way and he will experience specific situations with

a particular type of people. There is little chance that even the [illegible] part of its

programming (...) The programming will then consist of including more and more connections with the colors,

gradually connecting each color to sounds, words, shapes,

symbols, etc (...) very small, when I was placed on the lap of a man, my first alter of the red way (sexual) had to

systematically have a sexualized behavior, for example, he had to

squirm and laugh explicitly. From the age of 6 months to 2 years, my

programming focused on the installation of basic commands and

triggers in alter primaries. Some programs like "Obeyed", "Ne

speak Not", "Be Loyal", as well as internal security and alarms,

have been put in place from the beginning and strengthened as I

grewup. Later, my masters called these alter using the

sentences containing the trigger codes or inducing the emotional state in

which I was at the time of the initial split (...) Lights, clothing and accessories, words, phrases, specific physical contacts, smells, drugs, as well as several color codes

specific were all used methodically. This allowed my masters

and to my programmers to create and develop in each alter a system of

individual and autonomous belief formed with modeling values

systematically its design and understanding of how the world, on "the rules of life", and on almost everything he thinks, feels, says or does™."

Fortheringham also described the methods used to arrange his inner world during his dissociated states: "I had to have two years when my programmers first used a chair special with straps and a helmet. She could rotate, turn, tip and send electroshocks. My programmers always told me that this chair was a "magic door" that allowed me to "ride through therainbow" to distant and strange realms. At first, vibration and electrical stimulation of the chair, combined with drugs and wind of a fan pointed at me, made me feel as if I was floating and that I was actually moving in space. They gave to the chair different purposes and different "destinations" depending on the wereemerging. Through the use of specific lighting, sounds or music, they created special atmospheres, alternative realities. The chair which tilted and rotated on itself, combined with electrical impulses, could create a real tornado with lightning in the inner world (...) When I "rode the rainbow" on this chair, the lights and the special effects made me travel. Afterwards, I was violently "repaired" and punished on this chair (...) The inner world was easily arranged, sometimes it was done outside, sometimes with a staging.

The "weather phenomena" were injected into the inner world in the same way as everything else, simply by suggestions, claiming that they were there, accompanied by some special effects. Like all children of at that age, I naturally believed everything I was told. Tornadoes of dust and vortices were produced with pointed fans on me when I was in the "magic chair". At first, I was told to "control" these phenomena, and then become these phenomena myself.

Rainbows were created around me in this chair, apparently thanks to projectors and water vaporization. I was told that these rainbowswere multicolored magical paths leading to others worlds and that it was the chair that fixed the final destination. These other worlds were first staged externally, then they were integrated and became a part of my inner world. Rainbows contain all the colors, so they can be used to call simultaneously all the alters related to the colors (...) After tests have confirmed that programming is well integrated satisfactorily, the inner world is sealed, thus trapping the alter personalities inside with each their pre-programmed reality. These alter trapped in interior structures are stuck at a certain age and at a certain level of development where they still believe in fairy tales and magic. They are unable to discern reality from fiction. They are also totally unable to make a distinction between the inner world and the outer world (...) They are isolated with only their personal belief system, their personality traits and their skills, everything that has been programmed for them! [501]]."

Dans son livre “Restoring Survivors of Satanic Ritual Abuse : Equipping and Releasing God’s People for Spirit-Empowered Ministry", therapist Patricia Baird Clarke wrote a chapter on the structures of the inner world and magical surgery. Based on the Holy Scriptures, she also explains that satanic ritual abuses (by the trauma and extreme dissociation) will split the physical body and the spiritual body opening a breach on other dimensions, as we have seen in the previous chapter. Here is the entire chapter that we explains what this "inner world" is from the point of view of a therapist:

We will look at what we can encounter in a person who has undergone satanic ritual abuse, causing a state psychic of great complexity. These people are usually born in families practicing Satanism and generational ritual abuse in generation. Anyone who has suffered this kind of abuse will not necessarily have the Complex internal structures which we shall now discuss and detail; however, it is to be expected that such structures will be found and such fragmentations of personality because these people are not uncommon of the all. Those called to work spiritually on this subject of abuse rituals will need the practical knowledge given in this chapter.

The satanic ritual abuse and the T.D.I. it provokes create an inner state of incredible complexity. The following concepts may appear bizarre or surreal for those who discover the subject. However, we must keep in mind that these things that we are going to describe, that seem extraordinary,represent the perception that have of life and reality victims. Everything they say must be treated with respect and with a great attention, no matter if it may seem whimsical to you.

demons are invoked and "placed" in the person in order to maintain the separation between the alter, inaccessible to the victim. Negative emotions and specmque sectarian activities are attnoue at each alter. These alters work so that the victim is totally under the control of the sect. She then becomes a kind of 'zombie', she is a real hell. The fractional individual is forced to form a world dark interior due to the incessant violence and programming demonics. The Hebrew word for darkness is "cho- shek", which means misery, destruction, death, ignorance, sadness and wickedness. The objective of the occultist executioners is to imprison their victim

in a web of misery, destruction, zombification where there is no of possible escape. The soul of the person is broken and every piece (fraction, alter) is entangled in a maze of dungeons, prisons, traps, etc... It is their inner world.

The victims find themselves extremely traumatized and broken, they are in great confusion. Most of them do not do not understand what happened to them. All they know is that they are suffering and that they need help. The only understanding we have when it is these occult practices, what they do and why they do it, we let's learn it from these precious people, victims in a great unhappiness and totally lost. It is difficult to reconstruct an exact image of their inner world, how it works and why it has been created. By combining my experience with victims of ritual abuse with my knowledge of the Holy Scriptures, I developed my own theory for explain what we are dealing with. We know from the scriptures that we have a mind, a soul and a body.

1 Thess 5:23: "Let the gods of peace sanctify you whole, and let all your being, mind, soul and body, be preserved irreprehensible,during the advent of our Lord Jesus Christ!

V-/V1W.1 U.1 IN WU. VJ U,h/J^UAAV VVJU HViVlVj VL VVJL 1U1 L^Lil IV 1V1U»

In Genesis 2:7 we are shown how we were created in three parts. "The Lord God trained man from the dust of the soil,he breathed into his nostrils a vital breath and man became a being living. "

The breath of God has become the spirit of man. When the breath of God came into contact with the body of man, the soul was then formed and these three elements are assembled in us. In Hebrews 4:12, we read that Jesus (Himself being the Word of God) separated at one time given the soul of the spirit. "For the Word of God is alive and effective, more sharp that no double-edged sword, she penetrates to division, soul and spirit, of joints and marrows; it is the judge of feelings and of the thoughts of the heart".

I believe that as long as our mind is connected to our soul and body, we are not able to "see" in the spiritual realm.

This is what God has intended for us since Satan and demons can

-riAnd you'req cataninnpc on |j a nnp e^-rna-ratir^n annarpmmprit cm 1 r| ain f* appear as "angels of light" and deceive us. God wants us let us be innocent about evil.

Romans 16:19b: "I desire that you be wise when good and simple concerning evil." This concept of separation between the mind and the soul is difficult to explain because there is a separation from the soul and of the spirit performed by Jesus, which is good. When we have matured our Christian faith and makes our selfish motives die, we become aware of the separation of soul and spirit. This means that our good works that come from our soul are not related to the carnal motives of our mind. This separation is not complete, because there is always a link that maintains our soul in our body. We become more aware of the Holy Spirit and we then have more spiritual discernment, but nevertheless we remain still "connected/connected" to the physical body. However, by the abuses

1 1UW. V1VJ OU. UU.lll^U.VO^ 11 J U. U11V OVJ^/tU U.U1V/11 U.yj-/U.l

V111111V11I, o\-/w.u.u.mv

and total

the soul and mind, which then allows the person to see and hear

demons.

In Cor 15:44 we read: "He is sown animal body, he resurrects spiritual body, there is an animal body and there is a

spiritual body". We thus know that we have a physical body and a

spiritual body. It is through this biological body that we have contact

physical with the material world around us. We are not aware

to have a spiritual body until the death of our physical body. This is what at

what God has destined for us. Through rituals, Satanists use the

demons to separate the spiritual body from the physical body. When the soul and the spirit

have been separated and the spiritual body has been separated from the physical body, then

the person enters in a fully conscious way into a completely different way

dimension. This is the dimension that I call the inner world. This world is as vast and as real to the individual as is the physical world for we. We think of spirits as if they had a Vaporous state', but the people who went into this dimension told me that the demons did have a weight and a substance.

This inner world is a world made up of demonic spirits and alter personalities, it is accessible by the mind, by the thought, more specifically by imagination. People who practice meditation transcendental or seeking spiritual guides (not incarnate) by example, use their imagination to communicate with the field of evil spirits. God has given us an imagination, it is not a bad thing in itself because we can use it for fabulous inventions of great use to humanity. We can use our imagination to the image of Jesus when he teaches his disciples and tells them to throw away their nets on the right side of the boat. Imagination can be used

T»r»i îr 1P

well as it can be used for evil.

When spiritual work is done on alter personalities, when memories go back up, there comes a time when the person is taking great distress stating that his "right side seems to be separated on his left side". At this point, a demon must be expelled out of the person. This will be useful for her, but it will not deliver her from the connection to this particular spiritual dimension that it undergoes. This feeling of division can occur through the memory of the ritual that provoked splitting. A woman described a ceremony where Satanists use the scriptures of 'Hebrews 4:12', but in a completely twisted way. In this ritual, a real sword is held above the victim and the demons are invoked to split and divide it.

The "magic surgery" makes it possible to accompany this spiritual world with different structures and objects (...) Because of the spiritual dimension

UU VLHW·UVWLU

where is this person, he is able to see and experience these objects as if it were a real thing identical to our world three-dimensional. Satanists use this for control purposes. The child can for example be taken on a trip to Germany and there we will make him visit a castle in every detail, both inside and the outside. The child will live a few very trying days in this castle, he will go through different rituals in the various rooms. The child is forced to memorize the plan of the castle. A miniature replica of this castle at the way of a house of dolls will be built, a model in three dimensions with which the child will be able to integrate deeply his structure. Once the castle has been memorized, the child is subjected to "magic surgery", that is to say that he is told that the miniature model of the castle will be placed inside it just as it is itself placed inside

rln

(Editor's note: We find here a scheme of mise en abîme, just like the graphic representations of the painter Escher based on duality and the effects of mirrors.

According to Fritz Springmeier, inverses, mirror images, illusions and other trompe l'oeil contained in Escher's paintings are excellent supports for mental programming of split topics).

The castle is now "inside" the child and it becomes a structure usable for the internal world. In this inner world, it is now possible to walk in the different rooms of the castle, that of a way as real as in the physical world. In the rituals that go follow this "surgery", the child will dissociate himself many times and alter personalities that will be born will then be programmed to establish themselves in different rooms of the castle. These parts will be guarded by entities exteriors, demons, and traps will be strategically placed so that there is no escape for the compartmentalized alternates. These castles are

cold and dark, they are filled with rats and snakes as well as rooms

of torture, it is a powerful control structure. If an alter does not

does not submit, that it does not execute exactly the commands, it will be delivered to the

demons in a torture chamber of the castle. This is extremely painful

for the victim because the spiritual senses are exacerbated. According to some

testimonies, the spiritual senses are stronger than the physical senses. THE

pain suffered in this inner world spreads even in the physical body.

When a Christian is willing to dedicate his life to Christ, a

exceptional authority is granted to him by the Lord on this subject.

Jesus Christ knows how to protect alters when they begin to speak. he

gives us the power to lock up all the demons and He shelters the alters where they cannot be found and suffer reprisals.

With this magical surgery, occultists place traps all over the person's inner world. Of course, these things are not

not actually inside, but due to the fact that the child believes

that they are there, the demons can use them to control it. THE

Satanists know well that an alter will one day have the possibility of

begin to speak and testify outside of worship. In order to maintain them silent, or to punish them if they speak, traps are placed strategically and they will trigger with some "triggers" (triggers) whenever the system is threatened. These traps can be as perverse as a demon can imagine. A very common trap is the bomb. One afternoon, I realized that a woman who had just gained access to some memories concerning abuses had not been drinking anything all day.

After consulting the Lord, he revealed to me that there was a bomb to the inside of her ready to explode if she drank anything.
She was absolutely terrified. I asked the Lord to take it away from him, which he did.
She was then able to drink two large glasses of water. In this inner world, this are his beliefs that bind and hold the victim. A daemon can simulate the internal explosion of a bomb and the person will have the sound and pain of this "explosion". Many of these tools are aimed at destroying life or the mental health of the person who starts talking. This is just one example that shows us the reason why this type of processing does not perhaps done only successfully by a Christian who will rely on Jesus Christ to let him do the work. If an atheist had tried to remove this

bomb,it would have exploded and the woman would have needed medication and even possibly hospitalization. A lady once described to me what he had happened in it when well-meaning believers had tried to drive the demons out of it. A bomb then exploded and she literally felt shrapnel pierce every part of her body. THE shards were in fact demonic entities propelled into his arms, his legs,his head... in every part of the body... re-bombing of the bomb was accompanied by an implanted command telling him to kill those who try to helphim, and then run outside to throw himself under a car. It knew what was going on, but it was totally out of control. Two men were present to check it but two other people had to intervene to help them maintain it.

Through magical surgery, everything in the physical world can be placed in a person's inner world. Here are some of the things that is commonly found in this other dimension of being. These objects, the purpose of controlling the victim, may be withdrawn only by the Grace of the Lord. Most of them are linked to painful memories of abuse and they will be deleted by the time the memory is processed and integrated, but this is not always the case. That is why it is important to leave the reins to the Lord.

- Computers: The computer can be used by daemons and/or an alter to control an object or an alter personality of the system.
- Telephones: The person can really hear the voice of the executioner who gives him instructions, the voice is obviously that of a daemon. If the perpetrator wants the person to go to a specific location at such a moment, it calls on a daemon that will activate the phone to transmit the instructions to the victim. A demon has the ability to reproduce perfectly the voice of a human but also his physical appearance.
- Tape recorders: These can broadcast things humiliating,nasty and hurtful remarks. They can broadcast looping statements to get certain behaviors. For example, if the no one receives an external compliment, a "recorded" voice will contradict in saying humiliating things. Again, this is demonic cunning.
- Video/DVD tapes: With these tools, horrific scenes of human or other torture can be projected into the mind of the person.
- Alarm clocks: These can be set to ring at different times of the night or day so that the person cannot never have a restful sleep, (editor's note: Cathy O'Brien reports in his autobiography how automatic "mental awakenings" were

implanted in her, just as in her daughter, so that they never have again

two consecutive hours of sleep.)

- Oven: An oven can be used to suck up all the person's energy or energetically empty an alter for its destruction.

The oven can keep the person overheating to perpetuate traumatization.

- Mazes: Alters are often trapped in mazes. Jesus will be able to get them out of it and destroy this

labyrinth.

These are just a few examples of things that are commonly found in the inner world of victims.
satanic ritual abuse. The possibilities are endless, because with this magical surgery, everything in this

physical world can be transferred to the inner world.

For people born into transgenerational Satanist families, abuse can begin as early as gestation, in

the uterus. A fetus may be traumatized in various ways, by electroshock,

blows of needles, shocks on the mother's womb, rape of the mother, *etc.*

It is likely that they use a device to measure the baby's heart rate. When the heart rate accelerates and then it

suddenly descends significantly, this is a sign that the baby

enters into a state of dissociation in the uterus. Occultists try to get

6, 13 or even 18 fragmentations from gestation, these are numbers satanic power. However, they do not always succeed in obtaining these desired numbers. Each fragmentation of the fetus in the womb then becomes a "seed" which will subsequently be re-split for feed in personalities alternate the different levels of the person's internal structure.

The organization of the internal world is not random. It is a structure in which each personality alters and each object will be placed meticulously and strategically.

This structure will have as many levels, as there have been fragmentations in the uterus. If the victim was fragmented 13 times in the belly of his mother, its internal structure will have 13 levels. In some cases, the number of divisions in the uterus will not be as much as desired, the newborn will be then immediately split to complete the number of levels. These different levels, which can also be called strata or layers, must have a geometric shape that will often be the same for each level. By example,if it is a square that was used, each level will be of shape square. They can also be formed by combinations of figures geometric, for example squares combined with triangles or circles.

Each level is divided into sections, or rooms, in which the alter are "under house arrest". Guardians (demons) are stationed at the strategic locations at each level. Below all these strata there are usually a kind of pit that sometimes will have as many levels as the basic structure itself. The different levels are linked together by stairs (often circular, spiral) with a partitioning door each level. This system is similar to a building composed of apartments but the design may be more sophisticated. The levels are not necessarily of the same size and they may have different angles the one of the others. Often, levels are designed to rotate or spiral (editor's note: carousel system). So this whole complex structure is "injected" at a very young age into the inner world of the child. A model ae ia structure can be built so that reniant can well visualize and memorize it. He will therefore end up memorizing it perfectly, y includes the location of the custodial entities of each level and the location seeds-alter of each level. Then, using magic surgery, the structure is placed in him and he is told that he will have to grow with it.

During the "surgery", the child believes that he has been opened from the throat until its lower abdomen and that this structure now completely fills the trunk of his body.

Each alter created in the uterus by a dissociative fractionation will be assigned to a particular level of the structure. This alter becomes the "founding seed" that will fill this level of structure with multiple other alter, all splits of this alter-kernel. That is to say that this alter-nucleus will undergo a whole series of splits during successive traumas.

The top level of the structure is called "the public level". This is where the alter performing the tasks of everyday life (hostpersonalities) are accommodated. They are the ones who will manage the life of family,etc., these are the ones communicating with the outside world... These alter are generally unaware of the existence of other deeper alters until these will one day be revealed by external aid. These "public" alters do not know nothing about the alter of the lower levels, or even a structure complex multilevels can exist. The upper level alters have were programmed in the victim's home so that he can cope with life daily, these alter groups are sometimes called the "home system" or the "public level". This level usually has a small number of personalities: 7 or 8. The area of this upper level will be the most small of all levels (the tip of the iceberg). As we progress in the structure to its depths, we will find levels more and more larger and increasingly densely populated. It is common to find hundreds of alter in the lower levels. The deeper the level is anchored in the inner world, the darker the alter will be because engaged

in the "dark side", i.e. the occult activities of the group. THE

alter who reside in the deepest lower levels know

absolutely all of the higher levels and they are able to take the

control of the entire higher system. The most powerful and most powerful alter

obscure are at the lowest level, in the most programming layer

deep. When these alter deep layers want to take control

from the body, they go up through the doors, give a password to the demons

guardians and thus access the higher levels, the public levels. THE

host personalities of this public level are not entitled to resist the

alter occultists of the depths. An alter of the depths can punish and

torture an alter of the "public level" if he has ever spoken or committed any other violation of the rules. After some time of ministry, it may be helpful to pray and ask the Lord to seal the doors so that the alters of the lowest

levels and demons can no longer go up to the "public level" for

cause disorder. However, this is not a thing to do

systematically... God led me to do it for some people, but with others, He taught me differently. We must be open to guidance

of the Lord.

An alter can be programmed to be anyone or anything, it is according to the will of the programmer or according to the needs of the victim.

Someone who has been tortured in such a complex way knows only one

adaptation mechanism: dissociation. By this means, the cult creates

deliberately alters serving his unhealthy purpose, and the victim creates his

side of the alter to face the life she must continue to lead. By

therefore,some alter personalities will be designated to work for the cooked, while others will have a role to help and support the person

abused. There are also neutral alters, which do not fit into either of these two

categories. Alter working for worship are created by rituals

individuals, they have various functions such as intelligence, storage

information,the practice of specific rituals, ensure that the

victim follows a certain schedule when going to ceremonies, attracting

demons on it, store satanic energy, block all advice emanating

This complex system will make it into a situation in which the member states are able to cope *with* the need to ensure that the

so that there will be many alters who will be in charge of killing the victim

(editor's note: Omega programming of self-destruction) if it enters into a relationship

with Christian advisors who could begin to release her. Programmers give a complete identity to worship alters with sometimes even their own physical characteristics. For example, the victim may be overweight and elderly, but for the alter at the control, his body is that of a slender young teenager. These alters of worship may go against the well-being of **iiiuiviuu to the punished even to try the luei, walls that n e if** necessary to

remember that they inhabit the same body... yet they often deny this

reality vehemently saying degrading things about appearance

physical or personality of the person. At that time, it is useful to

make one look in a mirror to show how the cult has deceived them.

It is also not uncommon for them to declare that mirrors are objects against

which the sect warned them. I then tell them to keep quiet for

that they look in the mirror, it will often convince them that they have been

totally deceived. Many of them will gladly give up their

self-destructive assassin programming when they realize they are getting

would in fact be committed suicide. Satanists access alters through the use of 'triggers', such as names, flashes of light, tones, numbers, *etc.* Through abuse and programming, the victim becomes effectively a bit like a human computer accessible to anyone holding the program and access codes. These alter can also be

activated by other means. Some of them are activated by daemons

that worship invokes during rituals. Other alters have been created and

programmed to emerge and become active on a specific date. For example, if the

cult decided that a person should die at the age of 50, an alter with

a program of self-destruction will be activated at its 50th anniversary. Astrologers of the

cult have known for eons the moment when certain celestial phenomena are

will produce. For example, a full moon falling on the same day as an eclipse at

the date of a Friday the 13th (which took place in March 1998). These things are

anticipated years in advance by Satanists. Some alter can

so have been programmed to emerge that day to lead the person to a

ritual where it will have a special function. Every alter of worship must be delivered from demons and converted to Jesus Christ. This is usually done in 15 to 30 minutes. Jesus gives them a new function so that they can work in a way constructive and participate in the well-being of the person. These worship alters have a lot of information that will be very useful for

reach other alter. For example, I encountered a case where an alter named

Bobby had attempted in my presence to kill the host personality. Jesus gave him

assigned the mission to reveal to me where all the pitfalls of the system were.

Bobby had been programmed to memorize the traps of the first 7 levels on

a total of 13 levels that make up the internal structure. Once it is

past "on our side", this alter had become a valuable asset for the

healing of the victim. Other alter de culte are perfectly aware

that they live in the body of the host personality, but they work everything

the same against it. Some of these alter, which I call "alter

suicidebombers" are so attached to the dark side that they will enjoy themselves

to sacrifice their own lives to kill the victim. Some will be won by jesus-unrist, others not, even sus can see and hear it. In this

in such cases, Jesus simply deletes them. A woman with a T.D.I. of great complexity will have many male alters. They may appear early in healing ministry or manifest only after several months, but they are present. It is common to also meet an alter

who believes he is a dog. He will not be able to speak but just to bark. It is then necessary to ask another alter observer to speak for he, he will be of great help. One question that can be asked is how can someone come to believe that he is a dog? THE Satanists like to dehumanize their victims. The less they will feel human,the better they will come into contact with the demons by adopting their behaviors (Demons are beastly). This type of programming is really very brutal. For example, they will place the naked child in a pen with dogs for a period of up to one week. The child is not allowed to behave like a human. He is forbidden to standing, talking, eating and drinking with his hands and he will sleep on the soil. He must therefore move on all fours to eat and drink in a bowl in the manner of a dog. He will be raped several times by the male dogs. Some alter can be a kitten. I met one of these alter by listening to the victim talk about his techniques/attempts to do in the face of violence. A little girl alter then told me that she had noticed that the kittens of his family's farm were neglected. It has thought that maybe if she became a kitten herself, her attackers the would leave alone. Some of these alter animals will not be able to take the word other than by a simple "meow", but others will require that a alter mediator speaks on their behalf. Still others, due to various programming, may believe that they are aliens or robots.

A woman remembered being submissive for a week has a dog program, followed by a week of E.T. programming and a third of robot programming. At the end of these 3 weeks, she had no idea who she was, all she knew was that she wasn't human being. One of the most memorable alters I met was "Rubber Man" rubber). It was part of the "public level", it had been created by the victim to accomplish incredible things that his horrible mother-in-law forced him to do. "Being made of rubber", he could stretch his arms and legs to reach inaccessible places and perform seemingly tasks impossible. He was particularly good at washing windows or for clean gutters. But the "rubber man" never spoke... it sang in rhymes in a loud voice and he liked to cheer up the host personality when she felt sad, (editor's note: Cathy O'Brien reports that one of her sisters, Kelly Jo, has an alter with programming for prostitution with which it becomes as flexible as "Gumby".) Many alter, especially alter babies or children, will not have a special function. They can be locked up in dark dungeons, wells, prisons, etc., they are terrified and miserable. These alters are often "residues", or "damages" collaterals", created when the person is subjected to increasing degrees of pain and terror during rituals and programming.

In order to produce the desired alter of worship, Satanists subject the person to pain unbearable that will cause several dissociations, each alter created successively being stronger and more connected to the darkness than the previous one.

For example, if the person dissociates himself five times before the alter the first four alters are not taken into account by the cult which will not give any interest in it. These will therefore be considered as useless and they are locked up in sorts of prisons or dungeons, they are "put in thecloset". Sometimes an alter with very little insight can manifest itself but without answering questions. There is then a chance that it is a pre-verbal alter (infant or baby).

You have to ask if another alter can then come and speak on his behalf. I met the case of a 53-year-old woman recently. With its hair covering her face, she stared at me while sucking her thumb and rubbing the top of his nose with his index finger. She was obviously very frightened but also curious. While she did not answer any of the questions as I asked her, I asked if anyone could speak for her. It is at that moment I met Lisa, 11, who told me about the abuses that had suffered "Rini". Rini then came back and I asked Jesus to deliver her, and as he often does, he sent a little lamb to her. I saw how she was stroking the lamb, how she laughed when he huddled in his neck. After a short time spent with the lamb, she looked up at Jesus with total admiration, then she raised her arms so that he would come look for it. She then seemed to relax and then she rested her head on Her shoulder as he took her to a safe place![502!.]

6 - Trance state and "triggers"

The state of trance can be defined by three criteria: - An alteration of consciousness.

- Partial or total amnesia following trance.
- Presence of at least one alternative personality during trance.

Extreme physical and emotional conditions during ritual abuse have a heavy impact on the child, especially with the combination of these states of trance. It is important to look at the role of these states altered consciousness in the process of mental control of children. When they are in a state of trance, they are more open to indoctrination and techniques aimed at controlling their minds and their behaviors. For example, a child in a trance who hears an adult repeating to him that it is Satan who has the power, will deeply integrate this belief, much more than if he were in a normal waking state. There are many means to put the child in these altered states of consciousness during abuse rituals. The ritual itself contains several elements inducing a trance: singing, isolation, sensory deprivation and pain by all forms of extreme torture. Trance states are also induced by hypnosis and drugs. These experiences have a profound and sustainable on the beliefs, feelings and behaviours of victims, in despite the fact that they cannot always consciously remember it. It's only later in life, usually with the help of a therapist qualified, that some ritually abused victims will be able to laboriously reconstruct what happened when they were in a state of trance or dissociation! [503]!.

The programs work with triggers, they are access codes such as names, sentences, light flashes, a tone, a voice with a particular tone, which allow the programmers, masters or hierarchical superiors of the sect to have access to the alter personalities of the victims. This allows also to the programmer to have access to the internal structures in order to be able to modify them or retrieve information if necessary. The internal system can indeed be used to store information which will be held by an alter hypermnesic, data that can only be accessed with certain codes access. The information can also be stored in the subconscious, then used as a real secure hard drive. All these manipulations are done without the victim's awareness.

Previously programmed functions are performed unconsciously, or with some awareness of obligation to do or not

not do anything. The alter trapped in the internal structures will obey

to orders implemented until they are released. These types of programming can control the person's thoughts and actions for decades, usually without any intake of

conscienceBorn

survivors of ritual abuse and MK begin to recover memories between the ages of 30 and 50. It takes more years for the victim to become aware of the programming and its ongoing effects on it. THE discovery of these internal structures often requires external help to allow the survivor to securely access this information in reason for[504] self-destructionprogramming!.

Naming alter personalities is a central point in mind control. The programmer will always name the alter created

Naming alter personalities is a central point in mind control. The programmer will always name the alter created

for the latter will automatically perceive itself as belonging to the person who has it identified by giving it a name. Alter names, access codes, various stimuli triggers, will allow to trigger the mechanisms of the mind control and access to programming.

Trauma-based mind control relies on the ability to unconsciously induce in the victim the fear of reliving abuse and torture, so that it complies with directives and orders implemented during programming. The American psychologist Joseph LeDoux who studied emotional memory focused his research on the link between memory and emotion, particularly on the mechanisms of fear. His work shed light on how MK programming works. In its livre “The Emotional Brain : The Mysterious Underpinnings of Emotional Life", it shows that it exists in humans two long-term memory systems: an explicit memory system, conscious,cognitive and verbal and an implicit, unconscious memory system, emotional and not verbal (this is what we have already seen in Chapter 5). Its Research reveals that the unconscious memory system of fear and pain can "represent an indelible form learning". In post-traumatic responses, he writes that a "stimulus associated with the danger of trauma can become an integrated trigger that can cause emotional reactions in us." LeDoux calls this form of conditioning "the conditioning of fear". It is this conditioning of fear which appears to be a fundamental element for the operation of the MK programming. LeDoux's research shows that information emotional is relayed by the amygdala during automatic mechanisms and unconscious survival during traumas, and that this conditioning by fear works independently of consciousness, that is what that he calls the emotional unconscious. This system emotional, largely unconscious, affects the system more strongly cognitive aware that the reverse. Thus, according to him "the people usually do all sorts of things for reasons they don't are not conscious, because these behaviors are produced by brain mechanisms that function unconsciously." Survivors report that programmers intentionally use torture and drugs to try to block cognitive-conscious processing ability of victims. This conditioning by the fear of trauma will therefore control the alter personalities. Conditioned responses by fear will be automatically executed without being aware of it, without cognitive awareness. Conditioned and programmed triggers, such as the voice of the executioner, a signal from the hand, a word or a series of words, etc., can then induce fear and uncontrolled pain in memory unconscious emotional. So this will push the person to have a behavior conditioned and programmed to avoid actually feeling this pain and that terror that she already perceives unconsciously in this memory traumatic emotional! [505]].

The fact that certain events are not consciously retained does not therefore mean that they have no significant impact on the life of the individual. Until the memories come back and can be worked and integrated into a secure environment, the victim of such abuse will be always controlled, to some extent, by his past experiences. THE survivor will therefore be able to react strongly when an element or event will be able to react strongly to him will recall this heavy past (consciously or unconsciously). For example, if the survivor was subjected to ritual abuse in childhood during each full moon, in adulthood, he may feel compelled to join the sect for participate in ceremonies during full moons. Or he or she may being "pressured" to do an act of physical or sexual violence on a date in particular or in reaction to a trigger in its environment. This can also manifest as self-destructive compulsions to cope with the anxiety associated with this dissociative memory related to the traumatic event.

Therapist Ellen P. Lacter observed several programming indicators in her patients. For example, it will suddenly change of state in response to a detail that triggers in him a kind of robotic state

with a rigid posture, eyes in a vacuum and an inability to hear or

to answer anything. Then he will start to want to surrender some

leave or to go call... Four of his patients reported a code

identical trigger related to the same kind of programming. The code had a

ten characters with the same prefixes or suffixes and with only

some spelling variants. Yet this code is not referenced in

books or on the internet and these people lived in remote areas! [505]].

the

Dr. James Randall Noblitt reports that some of his patients have stated that

phone calls or knocks on their door in a way

particular made emerge an alter-programmed personality to submit

to any person using this trigger signal. Many therapists have reported similar information that overlaps from one patient to another,

Dr. Cory Hammond, at his lecture entitled "The Greenbaum Paper", said: "When you start collecting the same information, of a highly esoteric nature, in

various states ranging from Florida to California, as well as in

different countries, we come to think that something is happening... That it

is a large-scale phenomenon, very well coordinated, systematic and highly organized (...) We obviously proceeded with caution, and we took the time to cross the

information. This is how we discovered the same phenomenon in

lots of different places (...) It's time to share more information among therapists."

in

his book "Cuit and Ritual Abuse", Dr. James Randall Noblitt reports that some of his patients describe the same types of child abuse involving rituals and sadistic acts.

However, these patients had no interaction with one another, they

came from different geographical localities, different religions and socio-economic situations. Despite these notable differences, these individuals shared similar memories about traumatic rituals but they also presented internal T.D.I. systems structured by the same way. Some patients' alter personalities even seemed recognizing other patients, Dr. Noblitt writes: "I was saying goodbye to a male patient diagnosed with t.d.i. and I invited another patient, "Alice", to enter my office. Once in the room, Alice switched to another alter, she now had the behavior of a frightened child, "Why Does Robert James come to you see ? Don't you know it's very dangerous?" Because of secrecy medical, I could not say anything about this patient who had just leave my office. I couldn't even say he was one of my patients. His real name was "Robert Dale". "Robert James" was one of his

S~\

r
9A1*
19

secret names ae cuite, uomment se iait-ii that Alice i recognized, ae more in

the identifier with his cult name? To my knowledge, he had not spoken

from this name to no one, at least outside the sect, just as to my

acquaintance he had never met Alice before. He didn't even have

the air of recognizing her when they crossed paths in the waiting room.

Alice had also identified three other of my patients, including two of them

by their cult name which, according to her, were related to the rituals she underwent in

early childhood (...) Alice was also recognized by alter personalities of two other patients who, in

consultation, revealed that they each knew each other through

cult of the past! 507]."

Noblitt also writes that the power that exists within satanic/Luciferian cults is reflected in a hierarchical organization

very strict pyramidal. Some high-ranking positions are occupied in

permanence by the same individuals, however in some traditions Gnostic, relatively important positions (priestess, priest) can

rotating beings. These hierarchical levels vary in the number of an organization

to the other and will also have different names such as "Knight",

"Prince" (or Princess), "Priest" (or Priestess), "High Priest" (or

High Priestess), "King" (or Queen), *etc.*

When one of the members moves up to the hierarchical rank, it is then revealed to him more information concerning the programming and the trigger codes used at ceremonies on other members of the cult. Some of these triggers are generic, they are access codes basics that can be used to control a relatively number important people. That's why therapist Ellen Lacter reported that four of his patients had triggers identical related to the same programming. According to Dr. Noblitt, the "Deep" or "Deeper" trigger seems to be a common keyword. When used in such a way as to repopulated or discreetly placed in a conversation, a lot of survivors of these cults will generally enter into a state of trance where will show well-known signs of a change in state of consciousness, such as a change in the look and in posture.

Noblitt explains that cult members who rise in the hierarchy will not only have access to a variety of trigger codes that they can use to control people at lower levels, but they will also undergo an "update" so that these triggers generics no longer have as much control and control over themselves. Thus, survivors who have risen to the highest ranks of these sectarian groups

were conditioned and programmed with much more triggers

specific and complex so that the majority of the other members cannot

not control them by having access to their programming. Such control is

reserved for the elite of the higher hierarchical spheres, they have a more advanced knowledge about triggers and access codes to their own

more sophisticated programming. While the members of the cult of the stockings

levels are used by leaders for all kinds of things they can

in some cases move up the hierarchy and receive the lessons on

protocols for accessing other members' schedules, and for

so in turn hold an incredible power of control! [508]).

Mental control with its codes of access to programming is therefore an essential point in the Luciferian occultism, in the "religion without

name". It is the major tool of domination because a priori undetectable. In

Greenbaum's presentation, Dr. Cory Hammond reports that some survivors

may also have identification codes. This code includes their date of

birth, it may also include the places where they underwent the programming,

as well as other information about his family or worship. As it was

Note pius naut, the suoconscient and the aiter can be used ae hard drive for store all kinds of information. When Mark Phillips started deprogramming Cathy O'Brien, he discovered for example account numbers banking. According to him, deprogramming is just like hacking computing. Just as one can hack a computer, one can hack the "hard drive" of an MK slave...

Very early, once the aiter personalities are created, the children of these groups will be programmed with simple and basic triggers using tactile and visual senses. These triggers by touch are very important to control a child. For the outside world, most of these innocuous gestures just look like affectionate contacts. These Triggers will usually be learned by the combination of games and pain,punishments and rewards. These programmings are done by the repetition when the child is in altered states of consciousness.

The alter personalities of Grand Master, High Priest or Great Priestess, are considered the most important and the most hierarchically elevated. A child destined for such functions will possess alter who will receive different trainings on esoteric languages

secret,the high forms of black magic and demonology.
According to Fritz

Springmeier, in the Luciferian hierarchies, these alternating personalities

deeper, i.e. related to the world of occultism, will have names of

goddess or god, names of king or queen. These are the names that the

programmer or sect will use to identify them, but these are not

trigger codes per se. Access codes follow patterns, this

perhaps a standard and unique code. Passages from the Bible are very

often used to encode triggers, but also extracts from popular books ae lierions, born access codes for coucnes of

the deepest programming will have esoteric content, for example in

Enochian language, often foreign languages to the country of origin will be

employees. The nature of the codes will also be related to the branch of worship,

for example a druidic group will use druidic symbols, a group

Kabbalist will use cabalistic codes. An internal system may have

easily six different languages used as programming codes, but

imaginary words can also be implanted as well as codes in

sign language. Guématrie (the cabalistic teachings on

numbers)also plays an important role in the creation of access codes to deepest and darkest alter personalities, related to occultism and witchcraft. That said most alter personalities have all more or less been indoctrinated into occultism. It there are several reasons why Monarch slaves have a lot of codes and internal structures linked to esotericism and witchcraft. First of all, this is because programmers usually practice the top themselves occultism and their worldview is based on these things, so they transcribe this into MK programming. Second, slaves are plunged back into their connection to Satan and his worship as soon as they are triggered by these codes of occult nature. Thirdly, the use of 'magic' words such as Triggers will also reinforce the belief that programming is a real magic! [509!.] In a global way, everything related to abuse rituals that the victim has undergone can potentially be a trigger of the traumatic memory: colors, jewelry, clothes, books, movies, food, drinks, childbirth or birthday...

Survivor Jay Parker claims that the MK-Monarch system also uses nature and its symbology to reinforce and perpetuate the programming. The repetition of ritual abuses according to a certain timetable occult based on lunar and planetary cycles will impregnate each cell small victims, especially when they are spiritually "unlocked" during rituals, as we saw in the chapter preceding. Subsequently, these are the gravitational fields specific to certain dates that will be triggered. During full moons by example, when traumatic memory is particularly busy due to important rituals that take place there systematically, as well as at the summer (June 20-21) or winter (December 21-22) solstices. When the planets are in certain positions, whether the victim is 15 years old or 50 years old, the field gravitational perceived unconsciously at the cellular level, will participate in aeciencner cnez eue ae new traumatic memory to put in "phase" with the ceremonies that are to take place. For programming to be effective, it must be activated, reinforced and updated regularly by visual or auditory stimuli. These "reminders" or "triggers" must be omnipresent in everyday life to touch MK subjects. THE Survivor Trish Fotheringham wrote about this: " lullabies, songs, tales, tv productions and movies well known; whenever I hear these things in my daily life, apart from formal programming, the beliefs of my personalities alter are solidified subconsciously! [510]]."

According to some authors, this is one of the reasons why we see more and more occult symbolism flourishing in the mass media,

particularly in the entertainment industry (music and fashion);

The most recurrent "trigger" sign being the single eye usually represented by an individual who has somehow a

hidden eye (generic trigger). These different signs serve on the one hand to

stimulate the controls implanted in MK subjects, on the other hand

The»

are implanted in secular popular culture, in the collective unconscious.

MK-type programming is also coordinated with propaganda

general media to which the general public is subject. This creates a kind of

of mental programming continuum which consists in controlling the mass but

also leaders of the company. Many politicians in positions

Keys are individuals under mental control who have been programmed with

implemented commands. The coordination (concordance) of a sentence implemented in

a victim with a propaganda sentence repeated in a loop in a media of

large magnitude prevents the discordance of the mind of the programmed victim. THE

politician who has been brainwashed will believe that he is perfectly

aligned with the company because its programming is constantly reflected in it at

through the mass media: the matrix. Modern society is based on the individual and global mind control as well as on the massive propaganda that

maintains all these programs. As we will see in the

chapter 9 on the entertainment industry, the luciferian occultism se

popularizes to create a kind of hegemonic MK culture imprinting itself little by

small in the collective unconscious. This means that these hidden practices

are applied on a large scale, with very large means, and that they

directly affect the ruling classes.

7 - Some testimonies:

a/ Jay Parker

Jay Parker was born into a family practicing satanic ritual abuse and MK-Monarch programming from generation to generation. In April 2011, Parker gave a lecture in Philadelphia (Free Your Mind: A Conference On Consciousness, Mind-Control & The Occult) of which here are some excerpts:

Satanic ritual abuse is an occult system of mind control. This occult system is the opposite of Truth, of life, it in total opposition to natural laws. This is essentially the antithesis of nature... a huge lie. It is a system that is compartmentalised and controlled by a minority, whereas nature and our reality are in fact a system based on openness where we have to share everything equally. The religious system of satanic ritual abuse and occultism is found in a certain mysticism. Their mysticism is a religious practice in which an outside power will control your life and destiny. You are then just a cog in a machine. This mysticism is an integral lie because we were born with spiritual, mental and emotional faculties giving us the opportunity to live a creative and fully positive life. The Illuminati have a caste system and this system is based on blood lines. It is a very strict hierarchy, so if you were born for example in the Rockefeller family, you are already "in the bath", you will be one of the great controllers. In this system, if the cult detects that you have particular mental or medium faculties, you will be able to access specific positions. Today, it is these Illuminati lineages originating from ancient Babylon that fully control the system. There is absolutely no sharing with this group, all this happens between them, they work with each other. with this very particular ancient vibration.

Ritual abuse is a system of physical and emotional trauma, the purpose of which is to create a slave under mental control who will obey and serve the worst occultists throughout his life. At your birth, you are in alignment and harmony with the natural energies of this planet. Your synaptic connections, during the first six years, are in full development, you are in "recording" mode, you can not critically differentiate the information that arrives to you. You store them and build your subconscious with it, which will eventually direct 99% of your adult life. So imagine the result if during your first six years of life, you were programmed with negativity, lies and mysticism, instead of Truth... When synaptic, or neuronal, pathways are disrupted for example by electroshocks, your mental body and your emotional body find themselves in such a state of terror that your physical body will produce and release certain hormones. These hormones will become a chemistry that your body will feed on daily. Just like Pavlov's dogs, who salivated when they heard the sound of the bell, thinking they were hungry. The Monarch mind control system has the same effect as with Pavlov's conditioned dogs.

It takes years to program an individual. It is something systematic and it has been going on for hundreds of years. 10% of the world's population practices this ancient religion that goes back to the old Satanist lineages. Anyone going through this system, whether you are a simple mechanic born into a Satanist family, or you are a banker named Rockefeller: all go through this system to "veil" neural connections! The energy they diffuse and the energy they receive is the very antithesis of nature, it is totally negative. That is why we are in such a situation on this earth. When the neural pathways are veiled, it ends up causing a particular chemistry in the body, so little by little you are programmed as a Monarch slave. For example, you will suffer from depression at certain times in the lunar cycle when particular rituals are practiced, and this continuously during your first six years of life. This is related to lunar cycles... So when the Moon is at certain points, whether you're 15, 20 or 40 years old, the gravitational field will trigger the experience of trauma again, on a subconscious level. It is a very sophisticated system that uses everything in nature, be it gravitational fields or symbology, in order to continuously trigger and perpetrate programming. This is how you remain in a state of permanent obedience (...) At the political level, it is both Republicans and Democrats who are involved in these mind control cases. It's not just a few people, it's a global control system (•••)

I'm going to tell you a little bit about my family. My father came from an Illuminati lineage. His family from Northern Ireland had joined the Order around 1720. When it is said that the Order of the Illuminati was founded in Bavaria in 1776, it was in fact only a reorganization of the sect to announce their project of global revolution aimed at the establishment of a New World Order. We saw it with the French revolution and the American revolution, they act internationally,in a globalized and coordinated manner. So this date of 1776 in Bavaria, is not the date of foundation of the Illuminati Order, it was just a starting point to actively begin the takeover of the nations of the world.

In public life, my father was not an important person, he was a teacher. But in the occult world, by his family lineage, his knowledge and his occult power, he obviously had a certain charisma. My mother claimed that she was descended from a 5,000-year-old lineage, a legacy of witchcraft passed down from mother to daughter and coming directly from an ancient civilization. My paternal grandfather was a modest businessman from a small town in New Jersey. But one interesting thing to note is that when he died, 300 people from five neighboring states, whom my family and the local population had never seen before, came to attend his funeral... Today I am 54 years old, so I attended some funeral, it is usually people from the city where you live who are present... and my grandfather was a modest merchant in this city. And there were 300 people to attend his funeral, some of whom came from Ohio! What triggered such a gathering? The answer is that he was a true Illuminati leader. He was not very important behind his desk. But in the realm of the covert manipulation of society, he was an important person.

At the age of 5, during a visit to my maternal grandparents in Pennsylvania, they offered me a small statue of liberty. I exclaimed, "Cool! A statue of liberty." They then told me that it was not what I thought but that it was Semiramis, the queen of Babylon. I remember perfectly insisting for at least ten minutes repeating that it was indeed the Statue of Liberty and not a stupid queen of Babylon! One thing I would like to say about my family is that even though they are all Satanists, practice mind control and work for the power in place; there will be some point when the true consciousness will emerge, their true humanity. You can program a person to make him a real psychopath, but you cannot destroy his consciousness. I saw my parents completely break up by their programming. They killed with jubilation because they were under control, influenced by a certain "power". There should come a day when they want to know who they were, know why they were born in order to realize that all this has gone much too far, so that they can finally say "No" to this cult... But they don't.

b/ Balcony

The anonymous author known under the pseudonym 'Svali' is a former occultist, born into a family of Luciferian lineage and who was a trainer (programmer) in the Illuminati group of San Diego. After struggling to get out of worship and programming, she converted to Jesus Christ. While remaining anonymous, she decided to reveal everything she knew about this network and the dangers of this global Luciferian sect.

She has written two books, ''Breaking the chain'' and ''Svali speaks'', which have not been published but which are freely available in PDF format on the internet. In 2006, she also gave an exclusive radio interview to journalist Greg Szymanski (The Investigative Journal). Svali mysteriously disappeared from traffic shortly after this interview, its website was closed and its telephone line cut off.

In this interview, she reveals what she knows at her level about the structure and hierarchical organization of the Illuminati Order. It describes their way of systematically programming their children, the programming of obedience, loyalty and fidelity to the group being the first to be installed because it is the most important. She explains that on the one hand you can have a child trained for prostitution and on the other end, a child trained to become an important government figure, which requires much more complex programming. Adults receive updates to their programming throughout their lives, this is an ongoing process.

Svali explains that this cult works on six main branches of learning: science, military, politics, leadership (high-level leaders), education and spirituality. Children must be trained in each branch. They will be tested and profiled from an early age in order to know their skills, then they will be directed to specialize in one or two particular branches according to their potentials and future activities planned by the sect. The training of children also includes twelve life disciplines which are:

1 / No need.

2/ No desire.

3/ No wishes.

4/ No scruples.

5/ Be as fit for survival as possible.

6/ Law of silence.

7 / Values of treason.

8/ Travels in space-time (the child will learn the principles of "travel", both inside in consciousness and outside in spirit. The goal is also to achieve "enlightenment", an ecstatic state of dissociation.

9,10,11/ Sexual trauma, learning dissociation, erasing feelings, these three steps varying according to the future role of the child in the network.

12/ Be faithful to ceremonies/rituals. One of the objectives is also to create in the child a complete separation between the activities of the day and the activities of the night.

Svali testifies that she was programmed and at the same time trained at the age of five by a doctor at the University of G. Washington to become a programmer herself. She says that these people are convinced that their methods are beneficial and useful to children and their worship, she herself sincerely believed in helping others to develop their potential. Svali divides the programming into five main "specialties":

1/ silence training:

This first training begins at an early age, even before the child knows how to speak. This programming will be done in different ways: the child is questioned following a ceremony about what he has seen and heard, if he speaks of the "bad things", he will be punished, that is to say severely violated. This will be repeated until the child has integrated that he absolutely must hide the rituals. Generally, these extreme punishments will create an alter who will be a "guardian/protector" whose role will be to ensure that the child does not remember what he sees during ritual abuse. This alter is conditioned to fear violence if the child remembers. The child can also undergo hypnotic trances in order to pass off the worst atrocities as a "bad dream".

2 / strength training:

This type of training also begins at a very young age, often even as a baby. The child is subjected to a series of conditioning exercises aimed at:

- Increase resistance to pain.
- Increase fitness.
- Increase the ability to unlink.
- Create a photographic memory.
- Create fear and submission through the desire to please.

3 / loyalty training:

Programming with loyalty to worship is the most important. Loyalty is a total rallying to the beliefs and doctrines of the group. Desertions or questioning of these doctrines are rare and reprisals are obviously very severe. A person who questions the doctrine or who refuses to do his job will return to "re-train", i.e. his programming will be updated and strengthened. For this she will suffer shocks and torture until she submits. Generally adults are conditioned enough to believe that the group's practices and goals are truly positive and constructive things. They are convinced that they are truly helping children. The latter hear about hierarchical evolution within the network and are put in mind that they can in turn become leaders. Positions of power in the hierarchy are carrots at the end of a stick so that members work hard for their success. Because a higher position in the hierarchy means less abuse and more control over others, which is important in a life that has so little control over itself.

4/ training for one or more functions within the group:

This training is oriented towards the work done within the cult itself. Each member has a specific role that will be assigned to him from early childhood. The following is a non-exhaustive list of functions:

- Priests and priestesses.
- Cleaners (after rituals).
- Messengers/carriers.
- Executioners charged with punishing recalcitrant or mistake-making members.
- Teachers (history of worship, dead languages, etc.).
- Prostitutes (Beta Kitten).
- Assassins (Theta, Delta).
- Trainers (MK programmers).
- Scientists (behavioural science).
- Doctors, nurses, medical staff, psychologists, psychiatrists.
- Military commanders (for military-type exercises).

etc...

These roles are interchangeable, and a member can have multiple functions at the same time. The length of training that a child will need will depend on the complexity of the future role assigned to him.

These trainings are based on the reproduction of a "model" of behavior, these are neuro-linguistic programming (NLP). The child is shown how the adult or adolescent performs his or her function, and once the behaviour model is visualized and integrated, the child is told that he or she will be taught this by giving him or her clear instructions on what is expected of him or her. The work is divided into several chronological stages. The child can be abused to provoke a "tabula rasa", a "virgin" personality who will do whatever he is asked to do. Programming makes extensive use of the gratification versus punishment scheme. If the child performs the orders correctly, he is congratulated and even cajoled, otherwise he is severely abused. Once the conditioning is integrated, the programmer congratulates the child by telling him that he is gifted and that they both do a wonderful job for the "Family" (the Illuminati global sect). The child's alter personalities absolutely want to execute the orders in the most perfect way possible because they are constantly looking for approval from the executioner(s): the programmer and the parents. This unhealthy bond based on trauma and emotional attachment will last his entire adult life, alter personalities are often looking for approval and remain at the stage of maturity where they were formatted but in an adult body.

5 / spiritual training:

Occultism and demonology play an important role in the group, so children are subjected to intense spiritual programming. The child is dedicated to a "heavenly mother" or a deity, even before his birth. Very quickly he will bathe in a religious setting where his participation in the ceremonies will force him to repeat these occult activities. The child will go through a baptism of blood, he will undergo many consecrations and other rituals creating an attachment to the spirits of members of his family, such as that of his mother or grandfather. Any MK programming session requires summoning daemons to guide the programmer or to inject energy into the current programming. Spiritualism, mediumship/channeling of spirits, predictions, psychic wars for power, magic of all kinds, all these practices are common and necessary in these Luciferian groups.

c/ Kristin Constance

Kristin Constance was born in Australia into a family practicing ritual abuse from generation to generation, so she herself endured the horrors and went through therapy for twenty years. She is now a social worker and counsellor. She works with people with disabilities, some of whom have suffered serious abuse.

In August 2011, Kristin Constance gave a lecture at the annual S.M.A.R.T. meetings on ritual abuse, secret societies and mind control (Connecticut, USA). The lecture was entitled ''Presumption of ritual abuse by Freemasons of the Order of the Eastern Star in Australia.'' Here is the full transcript of his testimony:

My name is Kristin Constance, I am 43 years old. I was born in Australia. I was ritually abused and mentally programmed between the ages of 3 and 9, in eastern Australia. Ritual abuse is something present in Australia and is at the heart of a criminal network producing child pornography. Some people belonging to these criminal groups have indeed been arrested, but the groups themselves and the networks are never disturbed. Survivors of ritual abuse in Australia face a number of barriers that prevent them from ensuring their safety. A former New South Wales police officer, who has investigated cases of ritual abuse, said: "As soon as you meet someone who is determined to testify, they can quickly find themselves at the bottom of the harbour." In Australia, there are few organizations assisting victims and this is a subject that is little recognized by law and government. Although Australia has recognized ritual abuse as a legitimate reason for obtaining refugee status, it has only a handful of lawsuits proving the link between child rape and satan's worship. Ritual abuse includes sadistic acts, but it's not just about that.

In 1998, the Australian Refugee Court agreed to take in a German victim of ritual abuse. The court said, and I quote: ''The German government has been ineffective in stopping these illegal activities.''

... Perhaps ritual abuse only takes place abroad. In Melbourne, Australia, an investigation identified 153 cases of ritual violence between 1985 and 1995. 98 social workers, psychologists and counsellors contributed to this survey (ASCA - Advocates for Survivors of Child Abuse - 2006). 38 Australian citizens responded to the Extreme Abuse Survey (EAS - 2007), more than half of them (55%) reported ritual abuse and mind control. I was one of those people who answered the questionnaire. Michael Salter, who wrote a chapter on ritual abuse in the book: ''Ritual Abuse in the Twenty-First Century'', has just completed a PhD entitled: ''Adult Testimonies on Organized Child Sexual Abuse in Australia.'' In his study, he interviewed 15 survivors of ritual abuse and I was one of those people. In my interview with him, under a pseudonym, I described the details of a mental programming by colors. I also interviewed a renowned Australian psychologist who has worked with survivors of ritual abuse for over 20 years. She had about twenty patients who had been victims of ritual violence and mental control and of these 20 patients, two of them had been abused by Freemasons. My grandfather was a Freemason of the 33rd degree, he was attached to several lodges. He and my grandmother had founded a lodge of the Order of the Eastern Star in the suburbs of Sydney.

I was in therapy for 20 years... 16 years with my current therapist. The hardest part of my recovery has been healing from a mental programming based on colors and on the exploitation of the left or right part of my body. This programming regularly caused me to dissociate. At the age of 18, in my second year of nursing school, I started having memory problems and that's what prevented me from taking my exams. I began to remember incest at the age of 24, and then ritual abuse and mind control shortly after. I have been hospitalized three times. During my first stay in a large psychiatric hospital on the west coast of Australia, I was diagnosed with a "brief reactive psychosis", Hashimoto's thyroiditis, in addition an abnormal electroencephalogram indicated temporal lobe epilepsy. That day I had forgotten and eat and drink and I couldn't stop crying. So I went to the hospital myself. My first psychiatrist diagnosed me with a borderline personality disorder. But she quickly corrected the diagnosis of dissociative identity disorder (ID) when alter personalities began to emerge. Shortly after that, I attempted suicide in a park, in front of a Masonic building. I then survived a rather full-bodied cocktail of drugs, I had swallowed a vial of anxiolytics, a box of antidepressants plus anti-psychotics. I didn't even fall asleep.

I consider myself lucky because my family migrated from the east coast to the west coast when I was 9 years old. From that moment on, the ritual abuses by the members of the sect stopped. Other types of abuse continued, but being taken away in the middle of the night for rituals, that was over. My sister, who is 7 years older than me, also remembers being subjected to ritual abuse. One day, when I was 26, she asked me if I remembered the underground rooms, I told her that yes... She then asked me if I remembered the children screaming, I said no but I knew they were there next door, in other rooms. My sister doesn't have as many memories, but I'm sure she has a lot more after-effects than I do because she didn't leave the East Coast until she was 16. She thinks she went through a process that Scientologists call P.D.H. ''Pain, Drug, Hypnosis'' (pain, drug, hypnosis). Some organizations use this technique using pain combined with drugs and hypnotic suggestions. These suggestions or ''commands'' are also known as ''implants''. Scientologists described this protocol as early as the 50s (Science of Survival, 1951). When my sister did a session with a "Galvanic Skin Response Monitor" or "E-meter", which Scientologists use, the device indicated that she had indeed undergone hypnosis in the past. The E-meter is a biofeedback device that instantly gives the nervous state and emotional reactions of the patient. Just before coming to this weekend of conferences, my sister told me that the E-meter had given a positive response to some memories about rapes on an altar, electric shocks, men in black robes, the obligation to drink blood and eat human excrement.

I also consider myself lucky because 17 years ago, when I confronted my mother and father on the subject of ritual abuse, my mother replied that she was not involved in it but she handed me the suitcase with all the Masonic paraphernalia of my grandfather. She apologized for not being a good mother to me. I think that will be the only answer I would have from her regarding ritual abuse. This suitcase confirmed many things to me. There were papers with passwords, hand signs and information for Masonic rituals. There were also the aprons, jewelry and medals that my grandfather and grandmother wore at meetings. I then remembered the colors of the Star and my alter personalities imprisoned in the tips of this Star. I then felt as if I had finally found the key... On the emblem of the Order of the Oriental Star (editor's note: an inverted pentagram with branches of different colors), the color red is in the branch at the top left and the color blue in the branch at the top right. In my mind, the Red has control of the left part of my body, and the Blue controls the right part of my body. This Masonic emblem was on paraphernalia everywhere at my grandfather's house.

I have integrated a total of 26 personalities during my years in therapy. Today I have only 2 that remain tenacious and that require more depth and questions before being able to integrate them definitively. I had alter personalities of animals, which for the most part were cats and tigers. My animal alters helped me survive in situations on the borders of death, my tigers supported me during deprivations and confinements. My Red/Left split (editor's note: alter group related to the red color and the left side of the body) has cashed all the pain, while my Blue/Right split (editor's note: alter group related to the blue color and the right side of the body) has been strong and it continues to strengthen. I still have a lot of unanswered questions about my abuse, so I need to travel to find more information. I have never been able to work in a stable way, but today I work full-time with patients.

I remember being caged, I remember electroshocks, scarifications, rapes, photo taking, drugs, hypnosis, *light* oxygen/sleep food deprivations. I was also locked in a coffin with spiders. I participated in rituals indoors but also in the middle of nature. I was tied up on altars. I participated in mocks of death and birth. I remember underground trapdoors in the rooms but also being woken up countless times in the middle of the night to be taken to the rituals. I was slashed, pierced, stung so that my blood could be used in rituals. I have been subjected to genital mutilation, which is the most traumatic abuse that can be inflicted on a human being, according to the World Health Organization.

The programming by the colors that I underwent took place in underground chambers. Each piece had a different color, corresponding to different programming. The colors seemed to match those of the Eastern Star: blue, yellow, white, green, red and black for the center. The red room had a red light, a stretcher, a table full of torture instruments and equipment for electroshocks. In this room, the right side of my body was covered while the left side was subjected to electrical torture. Electrodes were placed on my joints, which caused a paralyzing pain that I still feel today. Things were whispered in my left ear and electric shocks were applied to my temples. This is how "Red" was created and strengthened... A woman would ask me questions for programming, and no matter what I said to her, I was always wrong. I have dissociated myself many times. ''Rouge'' and its various alters seem to be designed so that during sexual abuse, there is a passive reaction to pain, in all circumstances. ''Rouge'' underwent a lot of blood rituals and rapes, and it was he who cashed in most of my pain.

In the blue room there was a blue light, a stretcher, equipment for electroshocks, seals and a sink. The left side of my body was covered, and it was the right side that was getting electric shocks. Here, discharges were applied to my muscles, and often I felt strengthened after these sessions. ''Blue'' seems to be a personality created to obey orders and feel no pain. She can be very angry and very aggressive and she will do everything to survive. I feel mostly programmed with these two colors. My sister when to her would be more programmed with the White. I still do not quite understand the purpose behind this split Left/Red and Right/Blue. But I hope to find more answers one day... I became aware of this Red/Blue division at the beginning of my therapy, 20 years ago. As I became aware of them, I came to understand how they could control each side of my body independently of each other. I found five sources of testimony concerning programming by color and there are strong similarities. The Blue is described as a protector, he does not feel pain, he does not hurt himself, he is strong, he is sometimes of military type. The Red is about sexual slavery and blood rituals. I do not know if every person programmed by Freemasons receives this type of color-based protocol. I suspect that depending on the type of personality, some colors will be accented and worked more than others. Perhaps the dates of birth influence the colors chosen. I don't understand what they're trying to do or create. I really do wonder what the guideline is behind all this.

"Rouge" experienced pain in my left ankle, left knee, left hip, left elbow, left ear and left temple. When I was "triggered", I found myself curled up on my left side in front of a radiator, in pain. I feel my Right/Blue side as unaffected by abuse. I don't have as many nightmares as I used to, but I still have sleep problems. I have never been able to maintain relationships but I am proud to have a growing circle of friends today. I never wanted to have children. I've always wondered why people want to give up children... certainly because I must unconsciously think that all children would automatically suffer what I suffered, and so I chose not to have any.

The methods that have helped me the most in my healing are "Gestalt-Therapy", massage and physical exercise. I'm doing a lot of walking and cross training right now, it helps in the synchronization of my two cerebral hemispheres. It's a long process for the left and right sides of my brain to relearn how to communicate and synchronize. The left side of my body has suffered a lot of injuries and it's as if my brain has almost sacrificed that whole part for my survival.

So the ritual abuse stopped when my family moved to the other end of Australia. But incest and rape continued until I was 18, when I left for good. My father was an alcoholic and my mother continues to live in denial, even though she answers my questions when she can. My sister continues to struggle with her mental disorders. Today I work with patients and my therapy is coming to an end. I realized that I could never be fully integrated/merged, but the awareness work helped me achieve many goals that I never thought would be achievable. Like giving this lecture. But my greatest achievement is that I stayed alive. and everything that happens now is bonus.

d/ Lynn Moss Sharman

Lynn Moss-Sharman est la fondatrice du journal The Stone
Angels (stone angels) and spokesperson for ACHES-MC Canada

(Advocacy Committee for Human Experimentation Survivors & Mind-Control). She was the victim of ritual abuse and mind control as a child. When she founded The Stone Angels newspaper in 1993, she began to connect with other survivors. This is how she was able to meet about sixty adults from the Thunder Bay area and northwestern Ontario in Canada. They then decided together to publish in this journal writings and drawings of survivors and therapists but also information on modern mind control. The ACHES-MC Canada committee was formed in 1996 when Sharman attended a lecture by Claudia Mullen and Chris Denicola in Texas (the testimony of which is reflected in Chapter 3). At this event, she also met other survivors, including Blanche Shastia. That's when she decided to do everything necessary to form a committee to defend the rights of victims of mind control in Canada. Little by little, a database was set up and the committee was officially set up in October 1996, the aim being to gather enough information to draw up a reliable report. The data collected indicated the geographic areas where the experiments had taken place in the United States and Canada, as well as a list of accused persons.

As contacts with other victims developed, Sharman realized that many of them had been involved in ritual abuses related to Freemasonry. Their father or grandfather were Freemason,including Shriners (AAONMS: Ancient Arabic Order of the Nobles of the Mystic Shrine), this is something that seemed to be a common denominator in all these testimonies. She also found strong similarities between the testimonies of U.S. citizens who are victims of MK-Ultra-type mind control and those of Canadian victims who recount the same kind of experiences. In addition, the victims had often grown up near a military base. Another common denominator among victims is that often the father was in the armed forces (Canadian or American). According to Sharman, 90% of the victims she met say they have been "offered" to ritual abuse with personality splitting and the resulting mind control. In these cases, it is not a question of child abductions, but it is systematically one of the parents (or both) who are consenting and who even actively participate in the MK programming process on the child.

In 1994, Lynn Moss Sharman organized a series of conferences and meetings in Thunder Bay. The event was entitled ''Making Up for The Lost Time'' and was a series of three conferences that took place between November 1994 and June 1995. The aim was to bring as much information and testimonies from victims and therapists as possible to the public. The aim was to make the information publicly available and thus secure the people who began to talk about it openly, while allowing the victims to be brought into contact with each other. This kind of gathering is important because it gives victims confidence and reassures them about their experience. Indeed, they are no longer alone and this reassures them that they are not crazy. The keynote speaker at the first meeting in November 1994 was Shirley Turcotte, a licensed consultant and clinical therapist based in Vancouver, British Columbia. She became known for the documentary "To a Safer Place" which shows her journey as a victim, herself a survivor of a child pornography network. Among the many other speakers, there was also Dr. Louise Million, psychologist and author of "Breaking The Silence", a study on the mistreatment and torture perpetuated on native Native Americans (First Nations) in homes or schools. Amerindian children in Canada have been particularly targeted by the Paedocriminal Network with experiments on mind control.

Sharman reports that these meetings in Thunder Bay received a lot of media coverage. She says that the Canadian premier at the time, Robert Keith Rae, received complaints from Freemasons across the province to denounce the actions of the Stone Angels... this organization that put its feet in the dish, pointing the finger at the paedocriminality of network and mental control! Indeed, Freemasonry was regularly cited in conferences and testimonies as being related to ritual abuse and mk. Sharman herself received messages from Freemasons on her answering machine. She even claims that the wife of a high-ranking Freemason in Moose Factory who was the editor of a newspaper in Dryden refused to print the announcement of the lectures because her husband was a Freemason. As editor of a regional newspaper, she had deliberately chosen not to let people see such a gathering. These public meetings aimed at denouncing ritual abuse and mind control caused a general outcry among the Freemasons because it had been announced that they were not allowed to attend the conferences (although it was obviously impossible to make such a filtration at the entrance, the announcement effect had a certain impact ...). In addition, conference recordings were strictly reserved for victims, therapists and certain associations.

A majority of the survivors Sharman met were Native American, Ojibway from Thunder Bay or reserves in northwestern Ontario. Soon, similarities were found in the testimonies of former residents of households. For example, there have been reports of an electric chair at the fort albany boarding school near Moose Factory, where skeletons of children have also been found. Former boarders have said that they were raped in the middle of the night by men in white robes, some have also talked about forced abortions, *etc.* These are the same sectarian practices as those described by survivors of American ritual abuse. Sectarian activities of this type also took place on Manitoulin Island and some victims even reported that wealthy whites were flying from New York or California to participate in ritual abuses on that island. All of this is well known to the Aboriginal community in Canada because they are doing their own investigations on this subject themselves. They are well aware of the existence of such practices and know the places where these activities take place. According to them, this sectarian network involves among other social workers related to children and the family, many Amerindian children have been victims of these people (this connection of the Network with social services related to children is recurrent, whether in America or in Europe). Seniors see what happened to many of their siblings in residential schools and homes, but also in the penitentiary system, many of which were in the vicinity of U.S. or Canadian military bases (NORAD and DEW). Lynn Moss-Sharman's father himself worked in the Canadian army.

Sharman's memoirs began to emerge with the sexual abuse of his father, uncle and a group of army men, also involved in the sexual exploitation of children. Her memoirs concerned this group of men, but she had difficulty determining the connection they might have with her father, or the exact role he played in this group. Sharman has memories of ritual abuse at a very early age (as early as three) when she lived with her parents on Maria Street in Toronto. She remembers a ritual she calls "forgiving by blood", which took place near the slaughterhouse or in churches near Hamilton and Toronto. She also remembers being transported to various locations, including sites affiliated with the army, including the Stone Mountain underground or Uplands Air Force Base in Ottawa. Sharman underwent sessions of sensory deprivation and electroshock, she remembers being told then: "First we break you, then we rebuild you..."' (Ordo Ab Chao). It was subject to MK projects funded by the University of Rochester in the late 40s and early 50s. She quotes a certain Dr. George Estabrooks from the Department of Psychology at Colgate University in Hamilton (USA) and affiliated with Oswego State Teatcher's College. Dr. Estabrooks was directly involved in creating the Manchu candidates, he was in contact with J. Edgar Hoover (FBI) as early as 1937, as well as with José Delgado, Martin Orme, Ewen Cameron and many others. Here we find the whole clique of scientists who were working at the time on brainwashing and trauma-based mind control.

Sharman insists that it is essential for people to realize that these experiments on mind control are mainly carried out on children and that these are large-scale research that has led to the development of increasingly sophisticated techniques. Children are even born in these laboratories to be subjected to experiments without ever seeing the light of day. These small victims are subjected to confinement in cages, they are subjected to electroshocks, drugs, sensory deprivation, etc., all the techniques that will serve to deeply dissociate them and to split their personality. Sharman also reports genetic experiments and irradiations, or chemical treatments to accelerate puberty, to quickly obtain reproductive subjects. Victims literally serve as guinea pigs to test drugs to determine which ones will be the most effective and fastest in the brainwashing process preceding MK programming. Sharman wonders about the extent to which these experiments on mind control may have taken place within the Native American community in Canada. She remembers being taken to a place where there was an Inuit woman with a shaved head with a baby in her arms. She also wondered about the fate of a number of Aboriginal people who had been sent to southern Ontario or to state borders for so-called tuberculosis treatment in the fifties and sixties.

Sharman's healing process was very long and she still has disabled status today. Indeed, such fragmentation is devastating and, in its view, irreversible. She describes how her body kept the memory of each programming level due to the fact that cellular memory records all that the victim has undergone. These traumatic memories usually emerge with a powerful abridgement (emotional discharge, the person relives live traumatic memory). For Sharman, her memories began to emerge when she went through a personal crisis, yet another violent and unhealthy relationship that eventually made her totally sink. The first memories to have broken through were those of rapes, then over time, fragments of more enigmatic memories such as the memory of having been locked up in a cage or of having undergone electroshocks, are also violently reassembled. When these flashbacks emerged, for example, she could glimpse someone's face but intense physical pain seized her whole body and she became totally unable to speak. So she couldn't explain to her therapist what she remembered, or what was going on in her head. She lived a long period when she found herself mute in the face of her traumatic memories. He sometimes had to write or draw them. During these violent flashes of memory, she found herself in situations where she hid for example under the coffee table by wrapping herself in the therapist's mat. Her body and mind literally relived the traumatic experience she had endured years before, with equally severe pain. She says that she found herself in physical postures that she was absolutely unable to take in a normal state. Her body was making unheard-of contortions and she was in spasms when the cellular memory of the electroshocks rose.

Her therapist made her understand that hypnosis would not be a good thing for her because of the intensity of her physical reactions when the memories came back. Indeed, hypnosis could have flooded her with too much memory that would have such an effect on her body that she could not stand it. The therapist therefore preferred to treat things smoothly, step by step, so that Sharman would be able to endure it, both emotionally and physically. It was necessary that at the same time his body, his mind, his mind and his "Me" be able to process traumatic information and to understand how these different memories could be linked together. Another puzzle that had to be reconstructed...

An important point to note is that Lynn Moss Sharman never had to take medication during her therapy and she carefully avoided any intervention in a psychiatric setting. Yet on many occasions, she wanted to end her life and be interned in hospital to receive treatment that could have relieved her. She also managed to avoid systematic addictions and self-destruction.

and/ Dejoly Labrier

Dejoly Labrier grew up in a military environment, both her parents were in the army and practiced ritual abuse. Dejoly developed a multiple personality as a result of severe trauma she suffered in these military groups. She is the author of ''All Together Now: A Multiple Story of Hope '

Healing'' (Today all together: a multiple story of hope and healing). In 1997, she was a guest on fox 13 news on Kathy Fountain's show "Your Turn". Here is the transcript of the program on which this woman testified:

- Kathy Foutain: The drawings you're going to see now were drawn by different personalities with different names, but they all come from one and the same person... A woman with a dissociative identity disorder. A disorder that would be caused by repetitive trauma inflicted during early childhood. This woman says she was abused by her mother and father in a strange ultra-violent cult acting in a military setting (...) So we welcome Dejoly Labrier. It takes a lot of courage to talk about such things and I am delighted to be able to talk about it with you. I would like to help people understand what you have been through. Your parents were both soldiers, "Marines".

- Dejoly Labrier: They were both Marines.

- KF: An iron discipline?

- DL: Yes, very rigid. From early childhood, my mother boasted that her 3-year-olds were as disciplined as a "Marines" to make their beds or respond to the guard to you by shouting: "Yes sir!'' or "No Sir!'' We were continually restricted to doing our daily tasks. Every Saturday we also had to clean the house from top to bottom.

- KF: What about the cult, the sect? Were they both part of it? Was it a satanic cult or something else? What were they doing?

- DL: There were satanic rituals that were practiced. What I understood from what was revealed to me by the memoirs of my alter personalities was that they were both involved. My father was the leader and my mother was his accomplice, I call him his "accomplice" because she never protected us from all this violence (...) There are children who are raped, but who are also cut up. This "fuels the feast" so that the members of the cult receive power and power. There is the consumption of blood, but there is also cannibalism with sacrificed babies.

- KF: Where do they take babies?

- DL: Within the group, some women make babies. There are also young girls of child-growing age. As soon as they are puberty, they are engrossed by rape during rituals. This happens all the time. They also find babies where no one really takes care of them.

- KF: You say in your book in detail that you were sexually used by this cult, so you were raped by your father and other men.

- DL: I've been raped by many people, including women, by a lot of Marines. We moved regularly all over the country. In the army my father was a recruiter and he was also in reserve position at different bases in the country to recruit and train, especially training to master amphibian aircraft.

- KF: And everywhere he was assigned, he would find a new group of people to do this kind of thing?

- DL: Yes, that's it...

- KF: Is the army aware of these things? They are never heard on that.

- DL: There's a lot of anger from some of my alters towards the military. But what I can say is that the upper hierarchy of the army was well aware of what was going on. There are a lot of things going on that they know about but they don't do anything to stop it. They don't stop never those responsible.

- KF: When your father came to a new site, from what you tell us he just had to put a classified ad in the local military newspaper to find people interested in it...

- DL: There is a military network of sexual exploitation at the national level. You access it according to who you are and what your relationships are. From one thread to the next, through meetings and discussions, you end up meeting people related to this kind of thing. They can set up a network very quickly, sometimes it only takes three people but sometimes there are many more people: 20 or 30 people.

- national. You access it according to who you are and what your relationships are. From one thread to the next, through meetings and discussions, you end up meeting people related to this kind of thing. They can set up a network very quickly, sometimes it only takes three people but sometimes there are many more people: 20 or 30 people.

- KF: What are the objectives of these rituals? What are their goals?

You said it was satanic. Is it sacrifice? Why do they do this?

- DL: There is a belief that consuming blood and human flesh during rituals will give you some power. They think they will become very powerful. On the other hand, there is a kind of Satanism where they take Christian beliefs in order to reverse them, it is something essential for them. This gives them a sense of superiority over others: "We are powerful, we can kill without anyone knowing, who will be next?" So they feel very powerful and superior to others.

- KF: I was lucky enough to have your therapist on the phone a short time ago and she confirmed to me that it was indeed a dissociative identity disorder. She also told me that she had seen your different personalities emerge in her office. It's part of the therapy to bring these alters to a place where they will be safe to be able to tell their stories. Sometimes they can behave violently against you or other people. It is a question of knowing why these alter personalities act in this way in order to be able to help you, it is necessary that the alters can express themselves. You drew a map, a kind of diagram that represents about fifty different personalities. It was drawn several years ago, it is the alters that have successively emerged and that have given their names. Who is the big one in the middle, "Competent one"... Is it you or someone else?

- DL: It's an alter, it's not me. I follow all of that. combined into one person.

- KF: You have very destructive personalities.

- DL: Yes. against me, inwardly but they do nothing to others. What I would like to point out is that they each have their own behavior, because they were created to protect another alter or myself. So they may seem to be behaving badly, but they're not really bad at the bottom, they're doing this to protect us.

- KF: On the drawing, this black woman is one of your alters?

- DL: Yes.

- KF: What role does it play?

- DL: She is the guardian of our system. She unconditionally protects and loves each of the alter personalities. When there are conflicts between some, she is the one who takes them apart to talk to them individually.

- KF: And who is "Silent one?"

- DL: "Silent one" is one of the alters who has been abused militarily and satanically. She does not speak, she is mute.

- KF: You say that you have now established a consensus with all the alter personalities. This means that they all agree to agree and to cooperate. Are they here listening to our conversation?

- DL: Yes. Many alters do what they call "boards of directors", meetings between them, this kind of things...

- KF: So you had a kind of meeting before you came to talk on television?

- DL: (laughs) Absolutely.

- KF: They all said it was a good idea because....

- Dj:... Because it needs to be said, people need to know that this kind of abuse exists, and that this kind of psychic disorder (T.D.I.) also occurs. Many victims with split personalities are misdiagnosed in psychiatry. They are sometimes treated with inappropriate medicines that do not solve the problem of multiple personalities.

- KF: Yes, your therapist mentioned that often victims are misdiagnosed and receive heavy chemical treatment that does not help them at all. It is better to let come, bring out the alter personalities during therapy and recognize their different functions to try to have a good cooperation.

- DL: Yes, help them have different functions. I have an alter named "Druggie", its function is to put the system to sleep, as a protective measure. If there is a trigger that occurs and that can cause problems for one of the alters, then Druggie emerges and plunges us all into sleep. It literally makes us sleep.

- KF: Now a question from Lydia calling us from Ruskin.

- Lydia: Did she try to talk to anyone about what was going on at the time? Was there anyone to talk to?

- DL: Unfortunately, there was no one to talk to. My whole family was involved. When you are so violently abused as a child, you quickly learn to keep quiet and not talk
to no one because it may be you who will be the next victim sacrificed... So the fear is there...

- KF: You were afraid of being killed?

- DL: I was completely terrified of being killed.

- KF: You know, skeptics about your testimony will say, "How do I know if this cult really exists? Is all this real? Are babies really killed and mutilated? Some may also say that you may have been sexually abused by your family but that it was your mind that would have created the rest of the story.

- DL: I can understand that reaction, because it may indeed seem very strange. However today there are more and more people to reveal the truth about what they have experienced. This is my life. I am not saying that anyone who is sexually assaulted is going to develop a multiple personality, or that they come from a satanic cult, or that the military are all rapists. What I have to say is that this is my truth but you do not have to believe me. There are many people who know that all this is very real and they manifest themselves. At the beginning of my healing process, I met people from all over the world who were drawing the same kind of things, telling the same stories, they had alter personalities with the same names, and they all had this same psychiatric disorder because of their traumatic childhood.

- KF: You have two sisters and a brother, are they safe today?

- DL: No, because it takes a lot of courage and work to get through this and to be able to recover. It's just like an onion that you peel layer by layer to discover another level of pain and to become aware of it. My brother was severely abused in his childhood (...) My father wrote me a letter in which he confesses to having raped me and other children... including my brother. My mother is in total denial and she accuses my father of being the one who betrayed us.

- KF: Your father doesn't want to leave the cult?

- DL: Today I have no idea.

- KF: A few people called asking this question: Is it possible that the therapist could implant these memories in your mind?

- DL: They (editor's note: the Network) have a lot of power, and all over the world they try to put in people's heads that this kind of thing is imaginary, that all these horrors can't really exist. All this came through my own work, if I went to see a therapist, it was so that he would guide me, not so that he could do the work for me, or tell me what to think.

- KF: We have Tammi online, ask your question.

- Tammi: Hi Dejoly, I'd like to know how old were you when you finally got out of this? And how did you get out of it? You said that the sexual abuse stopped in your late teens.

- DL: Yes, actually the sexual abuse stopped on my twentieth birthday. I was coming home for the party and my father was there, all by himself. That day, he raped me. After that, I never saw him again, because I ran away. I ran away after realizing that there would be help outside, people who could really help me (...) When we are dissociated, with a multiple personality, we are also disconnected from human relations. I have been married four times. and today, in my fourth marriage, I can finally say that I love my husband and that I have been able to establish real bonds with him. Before that, I wasn't able to establish a real relationship, now I'm getting there.

- KF: Therapy has helped you a lot...

- DL: Yes.

- KF: Now a question from Barbara.

- Barbara: Hi, what kind of therapy did you go through? Especially with regard to hypnosis and the type of drugs.

- DL: I had a therapist for 5 years, but she died suddenly... For 5 years we worked without drugs, because it is not really effective. But

I have an alter, "Ginger", who needed Prozac when she was depressed. So we took Prozac for 2 and a half years.

- KF: Was it the alter or everyone else who took it?

- DL: It's very difficult to explain. I took it for her, but she was the one who had the effects. My therapist at the time also used hypnosis. We also did drawing, I kept a journal in which I wrote questions with answers, then we came back with the therapist. We also did experimental therapy with movement, music, *etc.*

- KF: But you never "integrated" and merged to be one with all the alters?

- DL: No. I personally think that sometimes the therapist's plan or method is not necessarily in the interest of all alter.

- KF: There is a kind of cooperation and consensus between the alter.

- DL: Yes. (...)

It would seem that in Europe, too, there are such practices in the military. In July 2011, the Italian magistrate Paolo Ferraro publicly denounced at a press conference in his country the existence of a "satanic-military sect". An Italian TV channel broadcast the magistrate's statements. Here is the transcript of the short Italian report on the subject:

"A satanic sect based on sex and drugs, forming a high-level network, would practice obscure maneuvers to ensure that investigations never succeed. After the decision of the Superior Council of the Judiciary to suspend a magistrate for a period of four months for a so-called health problem, the latter decided to make public this case which began in 2008.

Paolo Ferraro: I limited myself to a simple observation: in a house, several people, some of whom were "officials", lived there, with women and children, and participated in activities that were not at all normal... I discovered an underworld, unknown, obscure and ambiguous. There were also sexual activities practiced in a context that was for me until then completely unknown.

The defenders of the Public Prosecutor's Office denounce anomalies in the actions of the Superior Council of the Judiciary and have already provided for an appeal to invalidate this suspension while magistrate Ferraro will appeal.

Paolo Ferraro: The choice they made may have come from the fact that they did not read correctly everything I denounced in my report. But also for not really understanding the root of the problem."

f/ Cisco Wheeler

Cisco Wheeler is a survivor of the Illuminati Lutheran network. She is the co-author with Fritz Springmeier of the books: "The Illuminati Formula to Create an Undetectable Total Mind Control Slave" and "Deeper Insights Into The Illuminati Formula" (Even deeper into the Illuminati Formula)

Wheeler was programmed from an early age by his father who himself came from a transgenerational Luciferian family. According to her, her father was a programmer for the Illuminati Order and for the U.S. government. His family was closely linked to the political milieu. His great-uncle (a direct descendant of General Ulysses Grant) was General Earl Grant Wheeler, a Chief of Staff who commanded U.S. forces in Vietnam. His father was a Freemason of the 33rd degree and Grand Master among the Illuminati, in addition he sat on the Grand Council of the Druids. By this status, he was strongly linked to the American political milieu. According to her, her father was also a "multiple programmed", i.e. he himself had suffered traumas in childhood that had divided his personality. So it's a problem that repeats itself from generation to generation and he himself was a prisoner of dissociative states, just as his daughter Cisco was. He was a genius at all levels, an outstanding musician. Outwardly this Satanist gave an image of himself very bright, loving his family and doing good work in the army. At first glance, he was sociable, he loved people and people loved him too. Wheeler thinks that at some point in his life he became aware of what he was and what he was actually doing in private and in secret, some amnesic barriers broke but it had to completely overcome him... changing direction would have cost him his life because he had gone much too far.

From his birth Wheeler entered a very structured world with systematic protocols. As a child, she was trained to serve as a sex slave to the so-called "elite" of American politics. Cisco Wheeler began to have flashbacks following the death of his father. For a long time, his host, or façade, personality did not have access to the memories of the deeper alter personalities, associated with occult activities, until the day when the traumatic amnesic walls finally broke around the age of forty. Not understanding these flashes of memory and her suicidal tendencies, she sought help and was hospitalized for nine weeks. This was the beginning of her therapy and exploration of her dissociative identity disorder.

His family had planned his life from A to Z. They had structured and conditioned it to become what they had decided in its place. This programming was designed to dehumanize and degrade her to the point that at times she really believed she was a little cat. Looking at herself in a mirror, she saw a porcelain doll with a kitten's head. One of her alters had been programmed to be a sex slave, a docile kitten, it is the "Beta Kitten" programming that we have already talked about at the beginning of the chapter. To dehumanize her and create these alter animals, she describes how they had installed two cages, one filled with pretty kittens in great shape and the other for her... Locked in the cage, she had next to her a bowl connected to an electric wire that gave her discharges as soon as she wanted to drink or eat. In this cage, she was humiliated, spit on her as soon as she behaved like a little girl. In the cage next door, the kittens were always well fed, they did not lack anything, they received a lot of love, they were given caresses, *etc.* This ordeal and torture, which was none other than an MK programming session, lasted several days and Wheeler tells how her little brain decided at one point that she should no longer be a little girl but that she too was a little cat. The cats were fed and they were not forced to lie down in their feces like the little girl, they were not hit as she was. Her personality dissociated by this deeply traumatic situation was therefore identified with kittens. When her memories came back, her body had kept the memory of all the blows she had received during this program. The pain manifested itself as the memories emerged. She also talks about confinement in a cage with monkeys. When she retrieved her memories to reconstruct her real identity, it was extremely difficult and painful for her to accept that she had been a real little girl. Every time she expressed something human, she was severely tortured until she ended up totally driving out of her head the reality that she was a little human girl, because it was too painful to be a little girl!" she says.

She also says that she underwent "magic surgery" during which her heart was "removed" during a mock operation accompanied by hypnosis and drugs. So she became a little girl who didn't even have a heart anymore... She quickly followed in her father's footsteps by being trained to become a programmer herself. She cites a few locations where MK programming sessions were held: The China Lake Naval Base in California, presidio base north of San Francisco, Letterman Hospital near Presidio Base, Alcatraz Jail, Scotty Castle in Death Valley National Park, Salem Psychiatric Hospital in Oregon, and the large Dorenbecker Masonic Hospital in Portland. All this stretching from the mid-40s to the mid-60s.

Wheeler recounts how with a group of four or five MK survivors from the same social background, they encouraged each other and found the strength, thank God, to fight against the network's ongoing programming, harassment and intimidation. Together, they fought to regain their freedom and health. During her first five years of therapy, Wheeler says that the network was still in contact with her and that they regularly brought her back to torture her again: electroshocks, drugs, repeated rapes, *etc.* Despite this repeated violence for five years, she says that the force that pushed her to continue her therapy was that for the first time, she was aware that she was truly a human being: "I am not a kitten!, I am a woman!
I was a little girl! These programs were just lies!''. She was ready to die for the truth to come out.

Wheeler describes well the phenomenon of ambiguity that arises in the links between the victim and his executioner. As a little girl, she tells how a child who did not belong to the Luciferian hierarchy was coldly killed in front of her. It is in this way that the executioners display their power and it then creates a morbid emotional bond so that the child will unconditionally attach himself to the murderer... because this one spared him, to kill the other child. Try to understand what can happen at that time in the brain of a child who is only four or five years old. As already noted earlier in this chapter, trauma is an important factor in the emotional bond that will bind the child to his executioner. The victim never knows when she will be "loved" or when she will be "hated". Indeed, executioners change their attitude "like shirt" and can at any time fall into horror because of their own dissociative states. Wheeler's father could be extremely kind during programming just as he could be abominable and without any human feelings. He then became meaner than a wild animal and would have backed away from anything to make his victim understand something. She says that some of her alter personalities still love her father very much and that they will probably love him forever. For her, incest was a proof of love, she considered that the love of a father or mother consisted in raping his children... It is a belief that she had so much that she was immersed in this Lutheran system where incest is a "cultural" practice.

Wheeler had three "mothers" who formed the foundations of his internal system. These "mothers" were her three great basic alters who were placed on a pedestal in her inner world. They are alters deeply linked to occultism whose only purpose is to reign with the Antichrist as queens, when he ascends his throne. Lucifer has a wife who is composed of all the "Mothers of Darkness", i.e. all the alters of High Priestesses.

According to Wheeler, this is the essential aspect of their system, the mental programming and actions of this network really come out of the very heart of Lucifer. He wants to crush God's people, and the world as a whole. The Illuminati consider themselves gods and their only master is Lucifer. They took an oath to their prince, their "father of light". They signed to implement his plans by all means, to achieve what is planned for the end times and finally install the Antichrist on his throne. They have been working in this direction for centuries and the MK programming of the children of the Luciférien Order is an essential point.

These people have no fear of hell. If they reign like gods, if they obey the call of Lucifer and remain faithful to their oaths of blood, they will reign with him in hell, this is their belief... They are convinced that if they respect this, they will be gods in hell, with Satan. It's a huge lie but they believe it. They all want to become gods, this is really the foundation of their doctrine and the only master to whom they obey is Lucifer. Cisco Wheeler says, "They're motivated by power, money, and glory, but it's actually the demons that have motivated them for generations. Lucifer and his demons. They are completely possessed.''

g/ Brice Taylor

Susan Ford's testimony first appeared in 1978 under the pseudonym "Laws" in Walter Bowart's book Operation Mind Control, a reference work on the subject of mind control. In 1999 she published her testimony under the pseudonym Brice Taylor in a book entitled "Thanks for the Memories" in which she described her journey as a Monarch slave since her early childhood. Brice Taylor was one of those "presidential models" completely dissociated and exploited by a certain American elite. She was used as an MK slave at the highest level of society and is one of the few to have testified publicly about these occult practices.

It was in 1985 that Susan Ford began working on her split memories to find the path to healing. As a child, abuse and programming began with his father. Her mother also suffered from dissociative disorders and some form of programming, and she was also involved in the abuse of her daughter. His entire family was involved, both his paternal and maternal grandparents, his aunts, his uncles and even his brothers. So here again we are dealing with transgenerational Satanism. His father dragged him into satanic ceremonies, especially at the home of his grandfather who was a well-to-do politician, himself belonging to a family that had been practicing ritual abuse for generations. Brice Taylor believes that his father was himself a "multiple programmed" having suffered horrors in his childhood, she says she often saw him change his personality. We therefore find here the classic family pattern of the traumatic vicious circle transmitted like a vampire bite from one generation to the next...

From the age of 5, she was regularly taken to military bases in California to undergo MK programming protocols. She also cites the Neuropsychiatric Institute at UCLA University and NASA centers where this kind of thing is done. His family's connection to the military environment passed through his politician grandfather. It was the latter who, when she reached the age of 10, introduced her into a paedocriminal network composed of politicians and various high-ranking personalities from all walks of life.

Taylor testifies that the ritual abuses she suffered included bites with pins and needles, burns, she also says that she was suspended by the feet and sometimes tied in cross. The executioners also made her spin like a spinning top, she suffered rape, deprivation of food and sleep. She was also forced to participate in the orgies during the rituals. At military sites, she was subjected to electric shocks, flashes of lights and sounds as well as torture with all kinds of sophisticated instruments, all combined with the effect of the drugs administered to her. All these barbaric practices had the sole purpose of splitting his personality into a multitude of alters, created to be then programmed. She describes that during these MK programming sessions, she was tied to a special chair, just like those used to train astronauts. According to her, they used the same equipment used by astronauts:
centrifuges, weightlessness simulators, sensory isolation boxes, *etc.* Some devices used light or sound signals combined with electroshocks. Taylor explains, for example, that she received one

sound in her right ear and another completely different sound was sent to her left ear. It was programmed to associate a sound with a specific control, usually in a hypnotic state.

In parallel with these programming sessions in military institutions, his father participated daily in strengthening his mental control. She says that he had a completely unsuspected façade personality. Outwardly, he behaved like a charming man, no one could have suspected what he could do in private, the torture he inflicted on his children, in order to split them and program them. According to Taylor, his mother was also involved in the torture, and when her daughter regained her memories and confronted him with this harsh reality, she was in total denial, she had no recall of hitting him in this way. The mother did not dispute or deny what her daughter was telling her, but she seemed visibly very disturbed by her memory problems. Subsequently, she even helped her daughter publish her autobiographical book.

Let's make a small parenthesis here with Svali who reports exactly the same thing with her mother who also had deep dissociative disorders. Dissociation has the effect of a kind of "glue" that keeps denial in place and participates in perpetuating the darkness over all these practices. In an article published in 2001, Svali wrote about her mother: *"You are inventing all this, you know very well that it is not true! I have no idea what things you tell me about!" The person who told me that was my mother two years ago today. She was telling me clearly that she didn't believe me pa,s. Her amnesia is intact and she protects her. I wanted to explain to her that she and I had spent part of our lives in a cult, that I loved her and that I wanted her to come out of it too. On that phone call, the first in a year, I gave him the exact names of the people involved and whom we both knew. "Mom, you're in a state of dissociation, that's why you don't remember," I told her. "No, it's wrong, nothing like that happened," she maintained. I then decided to shake her up a little more in her denial... She knew very well that I had never learned German consciously during the day, however it was in this language that she spoke to me at night from a very young* *age. She herself did not understand this language at all consciously... "Why am I fluent German today?" I asked him in German and continued: "I never learned this language, you know it well. It's Spanish and Latin that I learned in school." There was then a blank man and she replied: "You may be a medium and you learned it by telepathy"... It was therefore necessary for my mother to maintain her denial at all costs by explaining even the inexplicable*... *But how did she understand my question, which I had put to her in German?!?* **(...)** *I think denial is a serious barrier to healing. When a survivor begins to regain his memory, he will usually confront the members of his family with his memories to try to validate them. The survivor also frequently faces a lack of recognition, rude denial, and even verbal abuse by family members. People who need to remain in denial to protect themselves from painful truths. "You're crazy", "You're sick", "You have an unhealthy imagination", "How can you invent such things?", "You need help", even more cruel phra.ses can be thrown in the face of the one whose amnesia is beginning to dissipate, in front of those who want to keep* **it! 511! ."**

In 1985 and 1987 Brice Taylor had two serious accidents. It was the shocks caused by these accidents that began to bring back memories of his past. a lot of memories. This initially triggered programming that made her believe that she was going completely crazy. She had flashbacks with increasingly accurate visions, accompanied by physical pain in some parts of her body. At that time, she was preparing a master's degree in clinical psychology and she had to interrupt her studies, as her traumatic memories were emerging with violence. In particular, she was in contact with therapist Catherine Gould, who helped her a lot. It is first the sexual abuse in childhood that are reassembled, then the memories of satanic ritual abuse and finally the memories concerning MK programming. Here we find the same process of recovery of traumatic memories as for Lynn Moss Sharman or Kristin Constance: first incest, then ritual abuse and finally MK programming, the most violent memories going back last, although it is difficult to establish a traumatic scale in this kind of thing.

Taylor states that during her therapy, she worked with a secret service person who revealed to her what he knew about MK programming, including keys, or codes, for triggering and manipulating alter personalities. She describes how he made her switch from one personality to another in order to bring to the surface all the split memories held by the many alter. When the alters emerged successively, she took a pencil to write pages and pages about what had happened when this or that alter personality was active. As in most fractional people who have developed a T.D.I., some of the alter personalities possess a photographic memory or hypermnesia that allows to reveal memories in every detail. In addition, the fragments of soul that remain "frozen" in a space-time where the experience of trauma is constantly present can revive a scene as if the person were living it in real time, in the present moment, this is what makes it possible to make a very detailed description. This phenomenon explains how some survivors are able to give ultra-precise information about facts that can be twenty years old, be it dialogues or descriptions of places.

Taylor underwent hypnosis associated with drugs, this was constantly used by her father to deeply anchor the commands in his subconscious and thus be able to program it little by little. She also describes how electricity was used as a tool to fragment her personality. According to her, electroshocks, in addition to creating a deep dissociative state, affect the entire energy field of the human body and thus make it possible to touch the individual at a very deep level. When she was very young, she received electric shocks with simple electric wires, later the executioners used electric prods originally designed for cattle. The electronic equipment of the military bases was even more sophisticated. According to Brice Taylor and Fritz Springmeier, electric prods are used to erase short-term memory, however the memory does not seem to be able to be totally destroyed, the numerous testimonies of survivors attest to this.

Taylor describes well how a single element of his environment could bring back memories in one fell swoop. As soon as one of these memories presented itself to her, she focused as much as possible on it in order to make it as clear as possible in her consciousness. The next step was to put it on paper and validate it as much as possible. She describes very well how her memoirs came back in the form of extremely precise flashes, as if the event had just happened, when it was 10 or 20 years old. These were snippets of information that over time made it possible to assemble a complete puzzle, the puzzle of his life as an MK slave.

Some programming aimed to disrupt her physical and mental functioning when she began to access traumatic memories. She had to fight for several years to stay alive, fighting against those "time bombs" that had been placed in her to drive her crazy or to kill her.

Its MK programming served government interests, its photographic memory was exploited as a communication tool in the Network. She also served as a sex slave for the elite of the same network, she was used for money laundering, pornography and prostitution, as was the survivor Cathy O'Brien, who was also exploited as a "presidential model".

Brice Taylor revealed that an intelligence agent had told him about the case concerning sex slaves reserved for elites, the "presidential models". This officer gave the figure of 3000 women programmed in this way in the United States. But this type of MK programming is not only about sexual slavery, according to her, some Hollywood actors but also heads of state have a totally split and programmed personality, people who would also greatly need to heal their deep traumas...

h/ Kathleen Sullivan

Kathleen Sullivan is the author of the book "Unshackled: A Survivor's Story of Mind Control".

When her memoirs emerged after her father's suicide in 1990, she completely shut herself up and disconnected from her emotions, she then acted like a robot. Traumatic memories have resurfaced, first sexual abuse and then increasingly traumatic rituals...

In 1991, she was hospitalized in Dallas and it was there that she began to cope with her painful memories and gradually understand that she had undergone MK programming. It was during this hospitalization that she realized that she had several personalities and that each of them had a first name, a number, and a code name.

Sullivan recounts that her traumatic memories came back through sounds, through the voices of her father or others, voices that she heard very clearly. She knew deep down that these were voices she had heard in her childhood. A memory could also go back by a smell or by food that suddenly seemed to become infected... when traumatic (and cellular) memory came back, she physically felt the rapes she had suffered. Many visual memories came back through flashbacks or recurring dreams. It was then that she decided to put everything in writing. So she spent hours and hours writing a journal while physically and emotionally live the traumas encapsulated in her memories. Including memoirs that concerned her programming as an assassin, something that drove her crazy, not knowing if it was her imagination or reality. Indeed, she stubbornly refused to accept these things that brought back to her consciousness, but when her other alter personalities began to manifest themselves, she could no longer remain in denial.

During his hospitalization in 1991, a psychiatrist at the University of Dallas asked him to write "the map of his personality". It was then that five levels of programming returned to him: Alpha, Beta, Delta, Theta and Omicron. Obviously no one bothered to reassure her and explain what it meant because no other patient described similar terms. Later, she realized that these were programs that had been implanted in her mind through hypnosis and other techniques. This was MK programming at a government level.

Sullivan's father has been his main programmer since he was an early age. She later learned that he himself had suffered extreme trauma in his childhood and was therefore totally out of control. He was, however, a competent engineer from AT&T (formerly Western Electric), with a very scientific mind. He regularly told his daughter that he was a "god" for her, and naturally little Kathleen believed him... But she was simply a guinea pig and a prototype; the better the father would succeed in splitting his daughter's personality, the better he would be seen by the CIA, for whom he worked. Like all other executioners, the father used electricity as well as sleep and food deprivation to program it. He was an occultist completely immersed in satanic ritual abuse, he led a small group in Reading, Pennsylvania in which many children were involved. As a child, from the age of four, Kathleen Sullivan had to participate in sacrifices, rituals aimed at desensitizing her and conditioning her for her programming as an assassin.

His paternal grandfather was Welsh and attached to a druidic tradition. The people involved in these occult practices of a Luciferian nature do not want to abandon their ancient religion and this is how these traditions are perpetuated today in a "clandestine" way ("nameless religion"). Father Sullivan practiced on his daughter the "chain" personality splitting, systematically giving a new name to each alter that was born. He then implanted in these fragments what he wanted: that is to say, beliefs, feelings and thoughts. According to Sullivan, his father himself had been programmed into his childhood. He was of German origin and had been recruited as an interpreter by the Air Force during the war. Later he spent a lot of time with neo-Nazi groups, it was then that he became interested in satanic doctrines. He was very close to some Templar groups, according to his daughter he was never a Freemason himself but he regularly worked with high-degree initiates.

Kathleen Sullivan estimates that she was exploited as an MK slave for about twenty years. It had a versatile programming and was used for various functions: theft, trafficking of children (supplying small victims to paedocriminal networks), security (bodyguard for political or other personalities), settling accounts (assassinations), interrogations, transmission of information, but also programming on children and participation in ritual sacrifices... It was used by many people she says, mainly by the CIA, then by the Pentagon, the Rangers, the Delta Forces, the special military forces, but also the mafia which according to her is totally connected to the CIA.

When she was not on a special mission, she was used as a bodyguard for politicians. She says that they like to have an MK slave on hand to do the dirty work, such as providing them with drugs or children. A bodyguard usually enters the intimacy of the personalities he protects and an MK subject who will not talk about what he sees and what he hears is therefore preferable to an unprogrammed individual who would be a weak link in this vast network that is currently at the controls of this planet.

All those engaged in both immoral and illegal acts would, of course, like to be able to act publicly with impunity and to completely reverse the moral values of society. For Sullivan, these people are driven by a powerful motivation to establish and lead a world government that will allow them to commit in peace everything that is currently considered immoral and illegal, such as pedophilia. Indeed, incest is a cultural practice specific to this Lutheran milieu, something that they would therefore like to inject into society by legalizing paedomania. They want only one thing: to get rid of the Christian moral code, and for this they advance their pawns step by step to establish the reign of their doctrine: that of the New World Order Luciférien.

i/ Cathy O'Brien

Cathy O'Brien is yet another victim of the MK-Monarch process aimed at reducing her to the status of a sex slave, serving as a diplomatic courier or even a mule to transport cocaine (the fuel of our elites)... His personality split with amnesic walls has been used by the highest echelons of the U.S. government. She and her daughter Kelly (who was also subjected to MK programming) were rescued in 1988 by Mark Phillips who took them to Alaska to shelter them from the Network to which they were bound hand and foot. There, Cathy's memories were able to begin to get back in order by gradually freeing her from the chains represented by the traumatic amnesic walls, so that she finally gained access to her free will. The output was an autobiographical book entitled "America in The Middle of Trance-Formation".

In 1996, whistleblowers Cathy O'Brien and Mark Phillips gave a lecture entitled "Mind-control out of control" in which they describe both their journey and our situation in the face of this New World Order. The full transcript can be found in Appendix N°2 of this book.

j/ The artist with multiple personalities: Kim Noble

Kim Noble is an English painter. From the age of 14 and for about twenty years, she regularly stayed in a psychiatric hospital, until the day she met Dr. Valerie Sinason and Dr. Rob Hale. In 1995 she was finally diagnosed with an I.D.D., a diagnosis that was validated by Professor John Morton of UCL (University College London). In 2004, during art therapy sessions, Kim Noble and her thirteen personalities discovered a great interest in drawing... A dozen alters then begin to express themselves with brushes and painting, each with a completely different name and style. The themes are also totally different, some painting seemingly innocuous landscapes or characters, while other works are much darker and more explicit about the ritual abuse that Noble may have undergone during his childhood. The alter personality named "Ria Pratt"' clearly depicts scenes of rape and torture of children, scenes that Noble has undoubtedly lived and whose traumatic memories have been preserved by some alter. In these paintings depicting ritual abuse, we find a great similarity with the various testimonies from other survivors of MK.

Kim Noble has done numerous painting exhibitions and newspapers such as The Telegraph, The Guardian or The

Independent, have relayed his work and also interviewed him. She also appeared on the television show The Oprah Winfrey Show. These media describe her as an "original", an artist with multiple personalities, but rarely they deepen the subject to explain the causes of such a psychic state. Journalists address even less the subject of ritual abuse and mental control, yet symbolically present in some of his paintings. Most of the articles about her mention her great courage and talent, but none dare to touch the essential content of her artistic work and what he describes: traumatic rituals causing dissociative states. People are fascinated by the extremely varied styles of painting, but it is clear that his works also describe his past as a mk-monarch victim.

Here are some excerpts from an article entitled "Kim Noble: a divided woman", published in 2006 by De The Independent:

"Each of Kim's alter personalities is an artist in their own right: Patricia paints lonely desert landscapes, Bonny often draws robotic characters dancing, Suzy has repeatedly painted a kneeling mother, Judy's paintings are very large formats while Ria's works reveal deeply traumatic events involving children. These disturbing representations are at the origin of Kim's psychological state, she suffers from a dissociative identity disorder, a disorder that is a strategy of mental survival or the personality divides at a young age due to severe and repeated traumas. The number of personalities often depends on the repetition of trauma. Kim herself has no recollection of being abused as a child. She has been protected over the years by her alters: "I was told that I was abused, but for me it's still too early, it comes in through one ear and it comes out through the other. It's not good to remember things I don't want to know.''

Kim has good reason to fear the return of memories about her past because it is possible that if she receives too much information, she will not be able to cope with it and she will "disappear". It has happened twice before (...) That's where it gets really weird - For Kim who isn't quite Kim...

Kim has good reason to fear the return of memories about her past because it is possible that if she receives too much information, she will not be able to cope with it and she will "disappear". It has happened twice before (...) That's where it gets really weird - For Kim who isn't quite Kim...

The alter personality I interview is Patricia, she is the one who manages her life and that of Aimée (her daughter), but Patricia was not always the dominant personality. Before Patriciare-emerged, Bonny was the dominant alter and even two years before, it was the Alter Hayley.

Kim looks at me very carefully when she explains to me: "You see, Kim is just the ''house'', the body. There is not really a "Kim", she is completely divided. We answer kim's name but I'm Patricia. When people call us "Kim" we take it as a nickname. But once people know you well, usually they don't use that name anymore.'' (...) Of the twenty (or more) personalities who share "Kim", some were identified already 15 years ago: Judy who is anorexic or bulimic, the mother: Bonny, the nun: Salome, the depressed: Ken, the sensitive: Hayley, Dawn and Patricia, the mute: MJ.

There are also a handful of children "frozen" in time (stuck at a certain age and place). Some of the alters know that they are part of a T.D.I. system, but many are unaware of it or refuse to accept it. "Judy doesn't believe in this reality," Kim explains: "She's just a teenager who insults the therapist when he tries to explain the situation to her. She is so young, she does not even think of Aimée who is nevertheless her daughter. She knows me and for her, I am a bad mother because I always abandon Aimée. For her, it is quite normal to come and go constantly (dissociation). She probably thinks everyone works that way." There are certain triggers that cause dissociation, personality change, but gradually Kim has learned to avoid them. However there can be up to three or four alter changes per day! [512]]."

The paintings of the alter personality Ria Pratt are certainly the most shocking of all his work. We discover children put in cages, rapes in meetings, an abortion scene... The executioners are here often depicted holding in the hand what can be interpreted as electric prods. The common thing about every painting by Ria Pratt is, whether it's the children or the aggressors, each character is painted with his "double" floating above him or next to him. The doubles represent the same silhouette as the character, but in a transparent and ghostly way. This most likely symbolizes the dissociation of body and mind during ritual abuse. Ria Pratt represents systematically children with their double, but executioners are also represented with this duplication, which confirms that they themselves would be in a state of dissociation or possession when they unleash their violence during ritual abuse. A morbid detail is that the executioners are systematically represented in these paintings with a smile on their faces...

The Alter Golden Dawn produces paintings representing mostly disarticulated and amputated mannequins. In his works, alter Judy gives an important place to duality, in particular by painting black and white checkers. The paintings of the alter Key deserve special attention. As the name suggests, this alter exposes in its paintings key elements of encryption, i.e. protocols and methodology for MK programming. His painting "Seven Level" describes in detail seven steps for the design of a Monarch slave (representation of the table in Annex No. 4). The number seven is a magic number that can be found associated with musical notes, the colors of the rainbow, the days of the week, the wonders of the world, the seven levels of consciousness, *etc.* This production is built in horizontal layers representing different scenes. The described process reading chronologically from the bottom up:

- Phase n°1: Birth in Hell

This scene clearly represents hell, the setting where the child will be born: a family dedicated to Satan / Lucifer. This is the beginning of the MK programming process. We can read several words inscribed:

"Deep", "Satan", "Dark", "No Help", "Blood", "Death", "Ail Around" and "No Life".

In this first scene, there are two representations of the personified devil, with horns and a fork as well as inverted Christian crosses that confirm the satanic character of the place. Crawling bodies are depicted as well as a woman appearing to be giving birth or having an abortion. A snake and a dragon are also depicted in this scene.

- Phase 2: Traumatic shocks

This scene depicts the multiple tortures suffered by the small victims of the MK-Monarch. This step involves inflicting extreme abuse on the subject to create the dissociative states necessary for programming. In this part of the painting, at least 28 children are depicted. On the ground, 13 children are reduced to the status of slaves and walk on all fours in an Indian line. In the center of the scene is a table or bed on which a subject is lying with wires connected to his head and hands, a drawing that certainly depicts the tortures with electricity. Two characters push what appear to be stretchers on which children lie. We can also see in this scene many cages in which children are locked up, still others are hanged by the feet. Sexual violence is not represented in this scene but is explicitly found in paintings by alter Ria Pratt.

- Phase 3: Dissociation and splitting

This scene shows us the different alter personalities created by the traumatic shocks in the previous phase. The alters are represented as little men floating and getting lost in meanders drawn by sinuosities totally devoid of any organization. However, the sinuosities in which the alters evolve eventually converge to join towards the next phase whose central point is the tree of Kabbalistic life. These sinuosities containing the alter personalities form in a way the roots of the tree of life, which will serve as a base, as a foundation, for phase n°4. In this scene, the alters are isolated from each other by these sinuous roots that partition the memories of each of them. This symbolizes the traumatic amnesic walls created in the previous phase.

- Phase 4: Conditioning and structuring of the internal system

Once the alters are created, a structure must be organized to compartmentalize them and make them easily exploitable. This is what this scene n°4 represents: the structuring of the inner world of the MK slave. The drawing seems to represent a kind of labyrinth or technical plan whose different areas correspond to symbols. We see signs of the zodiac as well as eyes that are there to monitor the dissociated fragments in the inner world. The central point of this phase is the tree of life of kabbalah, also called the tree of sephiroth. Several survivors reported having been programmed with such a structure that would serve as a frame to organize and access the different alter groups. It is likely that the alter Key personality who painted this picture represented here the actual scheme of assembling and structuring Kim Noble's fractional personality.

- Phase 5: Integration of access codes

This scene shows a cluster of numbers and letters with a book in the center. On the left side are the numbers and on the right side are the letters. The number 666 is written below the left page of the book. This is the encoding phase of the series of words and numbers that will be used to bring out this or that alter. Codes to access the slave's inner world are also programmed. The book in the center of the scene probably represents the archival material that will contain all the data concerning the programming of the MK slave.

- Phase 6: The passage

Phase 6 represents a kind of highway, a bridge overlooking a sea or a river. The initiatory ritual is accomplished, the Monarch butterfly can come out of the chrysalis... This highway, whose perspective gives the appearance of a triangle or pyramid, also symbolizes the way forward for dissociation, the "yellow brick road" of the Wizard of Oz on which the victim is encouraged to dissociate himself and by which the different alters can emerge according to the needs of the controllers. A road that leads here to the next scene representing the dissociative state as such, where the victim floats through the rainbow.

- Phase 7: Liberation

This scene represents the sky of the previous scene, the dimension where the dissociated mind of the victim evolves. This sky has two suns, a rainbow and a silhouette with wings and an aureole, is it an angel, a butterfly or a dove? This scene symbolizes both the final state of the slave who was split and then recomposed by the Monarch process, he can now be "released" into the secular world to fulfill his function as a slave. But this final scene also represents the dissociative, timeless state that will now be the cornerstone of the slave's life. We also see in this scene an eye... the eye of Lucifer (who sees everything) who will constantly monitor the new slave MK-Monarch.

This painting by alter Key represents the evolution of the slave, passing from the hell of traumas in the basements of the first levels, to the celestial "paradise" (enlightenment) represented by the deep states of dissociation caused by pain and terror. The final phase shows us that the slave has finally reached the rainbow to transcend his reality... in other dimensions. However this psychic escape is not the true freedom, because the Eye watches...

It is important to note in the central position of the painting, the presence of the tree of Sephiroth, it is a primordial symbolic element of Kabbalah, itself at the origin of many magical practices. Dr. Cory Hammond describes in the Greenbaum paper the presence of the Kabbalistic tree as a structural element of the internal system of some of his patients.

Witchcraft and occultism seem to be at the heart of the Monarch-type mind control process. Although Kim Noble refuses to admit that she has undergone ritual abuse, her alter personalities Ria Pratt and Key possess memories that are clearly related to ritual abuse and trauma-based mind control. A therapist would probably have a lot to learn from talking with the alter Key personality... Kim Noble's real source of inner inspiration is the MK-Monarch programming buried in his traumatic memories, but of course this will never be mentioned in the media that are interested in his work...

We can also mention Lynn Schirmer who is another painter suffering from T.D.I. as a result of ritual abuse and mind control. A woman who testified publicly and produced an exhibition called "DIDiva & The Mad Machines", in reference to the barbaric tools used by programmers.

8 - Synthesis

In 1997, Wayne Morris did an in-depth investigation into the problem of trauma-based mind control. For eight months, he interviewed 24 people (survivors and therapists) on CKLN FM 88.1, the radio station of Ryerson Polytechnic University in Toronto, Ontario, Canada. This series of interviews entitled "Mind-Control Sériés" has been fully transcribed. Part of it has been translated into French by the Christian group "Parole de Vie" and put online on the internet under the title "Survivors of the illuminati". At the end of the examination of all these documents and testimonies, "Word of Life" produced an interesting synthesis, which follows:

- 1 / The mental programming of human beings exists. That is an undeniable fact. This is a phenomenon of which the scientific community has only become aware of relatively recently, on a historical scale. A few decades ago, hardly anyone talked about it, and there was almost no serious document published on the subject.

- 2 / On the other hand, the technique of mental programming is extremely old, and seems to date back already to the time of Babylon and ancient Egypt. Men seem to have understood very early on that it was possible for them to transform other human beings into mental slaves, with appropriate conditioning, based on repeated traumas.

- 3 / The Illuminati, or those who make up the "ruling elite" of the planet, also seem to have very quickly understood the advantage they could derive from these techniques to dominate the world. In fact, Christians will have recognized that behind these abominable techniques and tortures lies the hand of Satan, who wants to enslave humanity, and be worshiped as God, in the form of the Antichrist announced by the Bible.

- 4 / Mental programming is based on the phenomenon called "dissociation", or "fragmentation" of the personality into multiple personalities. It is as if an individual's personality could be fragmented into several different personalities, who can take control of the body in turn. Moreover, there are like "walls of amnesia" between these different fragments of personality, so that each fragment does not remember what happened at the level of the other fragments. In fact, they are not multiple personalities in the absolute sense of the word. The individual retains a single unique personality, but it is fragmented into different components seemingly independent of one another.

- 5 / This personality splitting is usually caused by violent and painful trauma. This trauma causes physico-chemical reactions in the brain. The splitting of the personality would be a defensive reaction of our organism against too violent a trauma. The brain creates a "special memory zone", which will record the trauma at a subconscious or unconscious level, to save too much pain in conscious memory. It is therefore created a fragmentation of the personality, which will allow to preserve the memory of the trauma, but at a level that is no longer conscious. This hidden memory will be surrounded by an "amnesic wall", so that the waking personality is not aware of it. It is therefore the victims of these traumas who "naturally" create this fragmentation of their personality, in order to be able to manage and absorb the traumas suffered. This personality splitting can therefore occur naturally in all those who experience violent trauma. But it can also be artificially provoked, by inflicting on victims controlled trauma, associated with hypnosis or various drugs. It is then possible not only to fragment the personality, but also to condition, or program each fragment of the personality. All these programmed fragments remain dormant at the subconscious level. But they can be activated, that is, go up to the conscious level, and take control of the body. They are activated by means of secret codes defined in advance. The reception of this code by the victim plunges her into a hypnotic or second state, and the fragment of her personality that has been activated then takes control of her body, to perform the program coded in advance: spy, murder, seduce, etc... We understand the advantage of this abominable technique for all the secret services. Moreover, it is the CIA or the KGB that have carried out or commissioned the most important research in this field, research funded by the American and Russian governments. They also "benefited" from the research carried out by Nazi doctors in the death camps, under the direction of the infamous Doctor Josef Mengele, who later took refuge in the United States.

- 6 / In recent decades, many doctors, psychiatrists, psychologists and various therapists have seen more and more patients flock to their offices who had similar symptoms. They had all suffered sexual trauma during their childhood, had serious personality disorders, and various characteristic symptoms: depression, alcoholism, drug addiction, eating disorders, sleep disorders, anxiety... All these patients also recounted all kinds of very disturbing personal memories, which spoke of satanic ceremonies, planned assassinations, money laundering, contacts with political, religious and economic circles, world conspiracy, the New World Order... Many therapists have simply considered these patients to be seriously disturbed by mental illness. But others were surprised by the similarity of their testimonies and symptoms, and decided to make serious investigations into this phenomenon, in a scientific and systematic way.

This is how they began to verify the memories of the victims, to learn about satanic sects and their practices, and to have access to ultra-confidential information or documents, proving that the government had funded extensive research on mental programming, and had all kinds of experiments carried out in military bases, hospitals and research centers, NASA centers, etc... They calculated that hundreds of thousands of innocent citizens had been used as involuntary guinea pigs for these very traumatic experiences. The favourite populations were the mentally ill, prisoners, the military, prostitutes, orphans and children in general. As the number of survivors grew, they organized themselves and, with the help of a large number of therapists, demanded that formal investigations be conducted. Presidential Commissions of Inquiry have been appointed, which have recommended that secret files, including those of the CIA, be made public. President Clinton has acknowledged the facts and certain practices, particularly with regard to experiments involving the use of radiation. He issued a public apology to the victims and made funds available to compensate them. But only the tip of the iceberg has been spotted. Most specialists and survivors are convinced that these experiments are still taking place, and that everything is being done to cover up the case and bring the victims or the most active researchers into disrepute. The government often hides behind "defense secrecy" or the requirements of national security. As none of the torturers involved in mental programming have ever been sued for illegal or immoral activities, this has, of course, encouraged the continuation of these practices.

- 7 / The study of the testimonies of survivors and therapists that we have published leads us to make the following remarks:

Although the survivors' testimonies were entrusted to competent therapists who analyzed and verified them, they remain personal testimonies. Given the complexity of the human psyche and mental programming techniques, one must always remain cautious when confronted with a personal testimony. If the survivors are born-again Christians, which is the case for some, it is appropriate to analyze their testimonies as survivors in the light of their Christian witness, and the fruits of their lives.

What may lead us to believe that these testimonies are true as a whole is their large number, as well as the variety of geographical and social origin of the survivors, who, for the most part, do not know each other. The mathematical probability for it to be an invention or a manipulation is practically zero. But this does not mean that we should automatically accept all the details of these testimonies en bloc. It is known that human memory may not be very reliable. Added to this is the problem of certain false memories, deliberately programmed by the torturers, in their desire to blur the tracks.

Since the Illuminati will not fail to discredit, often without reason, the testimony of survivors and even therapists or people who help survivors, the latter must always ensure that they adopt a research conduct and methodology that is as irreproachable as possible, so as not to be open to criticism. , even if one can never avoid calumnies.

We have recently learned, for example, that the
Fritz Springmeier, in Oregon, had been raided by the FBI and police, who reportedly discovered "marijuana production equipment" and weapons. It is perfectly possible that these things were intentionally placed in his house by the investigators, when we know the unscrupulousness of the CIA. In any case, the judge placed Fritz Springmeier on probation (with an electronic bracelet), pending the judgment. Springmeier himself claims his total innocence in this case, and claims to be the victim of a set-up, which is very likely, (editor's note: Fritz Springmeier was finally sentenced to 8 years in prison, he was released in 2011 and placed on probation for 5 years.)

Similarly, it is certain that most of the survivors were drugged and subjected to hypnosis. This does not facilitate their desire to be given credibility, and it is relatively easy to reject their testimony en bloc for these reasons. A serious researcher will be aware of these dangers, and will be sure not to have his judgment distorted, to stick to the facts.

It is important that those who help the survivors are therefore well aware of all these dangers, and take all the necessary precautions not to be caught at fault. In this respect, we could reproach Fritz Springmeier for having shown great imprudence, to say the least, in personally dealing with Cisco Wheeler, as she herself claims, '24 hours a day, 365 days a week'. We believe that a committed Christian should never take care of a person of the opposite sex in this way in the long term (unless he is part of a large team, and never finds himself alone with the victim), otherwise he will be open to temptation or criticism. He could easily be accused of adultery or fornication by an outside slanderer who would judge by appearance, even if nothing wrong has been committed.

Christians (like Fritz Springmeier and Cisco Wheeler) place too much emphasis on the psychic or psychological aspects of mental programming, and not enough on the demonic aspects. It is true that they were interviewed in radio programmes aimed at the general public, the majority of whom were not Christian. But they could have talked more about the intervention of demons in these personality disorders. Some "fractions" of the personality may well be demons who take control of the bodies of the victims, and who should have been driven out in the name of Jesus Christ, instead of engaging in ineffective psychotherapy in this area. Cisco Wheeler admits, however, in his interview, that all Illuminati are completely owned. It is very likely that their victims are too, and only their conversion to Jesus Christ can enable them to settle this spiritual problem once and for all.

This allows us to talk about the therapies and care that are being given to the victims. This is probably the weakest point of these testimonies. It is clear that these therapies, which use the skills of psychiatry, psychology and the humanities, are completely insufficient to completely cure the victims of mental programming. Indeed, these therapies are limited to an action at the level of the psyche, that is to say of the soul (thoughts, feelings and will), or of the body (action on the brain waves to control the various states of consciousness). The minds of the victims are not affected by these therapies. Thus, even if these therapies can produce beneficial effects at the level of the psyche and the restructuring of the personality of the victims, they are powerless to solve their deep spiritual problems. True therapy would be to lead them to Jesus Christ, to go through a new spiritual birth, and then to be taught all aspects of the cross, to learn to walk by the spirit. Only the power of the preaching of the cross can allow the survivors to definitively break with such a charged heredity and past, and make them understand that in Christ, all things old have passed, and all things have become new! [513]]!

We can add in this synthesis the importance of the notion of soul fragments during the traumatic process of Monarch programming. As we have seen in the previous chapter, the splitting of the personality would correspond to a fragmentation of the soul, the various lost parts of which remain blocked, as if "frozen" in another time-space. This is a different dimension from ours used by programmers to manage and control alter. It is in this dimension that they set up the partitioning structures to enclose, dominate and condition the fragments of soul.

In this process of dissociation of the personality during traumas, there are therefore on the one hand the purely biological and physical consequences that are neurological and chemical changes, today well understood by psychotraumatologists; and on the other hand the metaphysical consequences that are the separation of physical and energetic bodies, the "tearing off of the soul", creating a breach towards other dimensions of the being. Monarch programming is therefore both a scientific process but also and above all a spiritual and occult process during which external entities can interact.

Everything has a material face and a spiritual face... The spiritual aspect affects the material aspect and vice versa, they are two worlds that interact continuously. The metaphor of alice's mirror in Wonderland explains very well this notion of the spiritual world versus the material world. What do occultists do to see in the future or in the past, or to communicate with demons? They use (among other things) a mirror to transcend our space-time (catopromancy)...

Demonology is a key in Monarch-like programming, demonic entities cooperate and have a guardian role for every programming and memory. It is therefore imperative to take into account this spiritual and energetic field to understand the subject as a whole.

Chapter 8
Deprogramming Protocols

"There is only one way to kill monsters: accept them"'
Julius Cortazar

1 - Introduction

This chapter is not intended to serve as a medical or therapeutic guide. The aim here is to provide additional information to understand as well as possible how the memory, mental programming and internal system of an I.D.T. works. This chapter is the development of the part entitled "T.D.I. and Therapy" of Chapter 5.

The term 'deprogramming' may seem exaggerated or inappropriate in the sense that a human mind is not computer hardware and will never be programmable or deprogrammable at will just as a computer can be; although transhumanism, which advocates the use of science and technology to improve the physical and mental characteristics of human beings, raises fears about this sort of thing. In fact, it is the victim who "deprograms" himself, the therapist only directing him in the process of raising awareness of conditioning based on traumatic memories. A deprogramming consists in discovering the type of structure present in the inner world, determining the trigger codes and delivering the alter (fragments of souls) prisoners of the space-time where they lived the abuses and programming. The deprogramming will also be done by reconstructing the memory puzzle so that a rational and chronological understanding is made of it. Victims usually have programs aimed at fighting against possible therapy, whether by self-destruction or sabotage of therapeutic work, the purpose of these programs is to silence the victim if he begins to remember certain things and talk about them outside of worship.

The issue of deprogramming is obviously very delicate in the sense that there is no protocol or official therapy to defuse and cancel MK programming. As we saw in Chapter 5, modern psychiatry has completely abandoned the study and treatment of dissociative disorders and I.D.T., and more generally psychotraumatology. Nowadays, therefore, it provides no answers to establish effective diagnoses and therapeutic protocols. The few therapists working with survivors look for the best methods on their own to stabilize the patient, defuse programming, unload traumatic memories and finally merge alter personalities. Sometimes prayers of deliverance and even exorcism can be of great help in "cleaning" parasitic entities. The intervention of a shaman competent for the recovery of soul fragments can also bring help to the survivor. Survivor Lynn Moss-Sharman reported how Native American Aboriginal people in Canada practice intensive healing sessions to help victims of ritual abuse and mental control in their community. She herself has attended healing ceremonies in sweat lodges where elders work with victims. According to her, they are the ones who have the most impact on healing and she says she would certainly not be alive if it had not been for their intervention. The spiritual aspect is therefore just as important, if not more so, than the purely psychiatric aspect and prayer for the help of these victims is essential. Many testimonies record a restoration brought about by the grace of God and by conversion to Jesus Christ. Christ is certainly best placed to put in order a soul divided by extreme traumas, programmed and linked to demonic entities.

2 - Restore a healthy spirituality

Programmers know well the power of prayer for both physical and psychic healing, it is for this reason that they will install conditioning very early so that the victim is refractory and even totally allergic to the idea of a loving and saviour God. Conditioned since her earliest childhood, she cannot turn to something she does not believe in, or even that she violently rejects. Cutting off God's victim is an essential point to be able to keep him under spiritual control, so bringing him back to God can also be a crucial point for his healing. Especially since there is usually a certain form of spirituality that is already present in these victims due to the omnipresence of occultism in the environment from which they come: it is therefore necessary to direct them to channel them in the right direction. Survivors emerging from a Satanic/Lutheran network will have strong beliefs since their early childhood, here are some that need to be defused and broken:

- Satan is stronger than God, he has the power, God is not able to do anything to protect me.

- God does not love me, he despises me and rejects me. I am guilty of crimes that God can never forgive me, I have no hope of redemption.

- God wants to punish me, I am deeply afraid of it.

- My life is controlled by Satan, I belong irrevocably to Satan, he has taken my life and I am possessed by a spirit or demon that controls my life. Many survivors will find it difficult to accept that they have a T.D.I. because they may believe that their alter personalities are demons that control them. This keeps the victim isolated and separated from his or her original personality. It is therefore essential to help the person understand that he has been used and maintained in these states of consciousness for the purpose of control and that he is not responsible for anything.

- I am dedicated to Satan, I have vowed to serve him throughout my life in exchange for his protection and gifts. These bonds or pacts require powerful spiritual work, deliverance must pass through the renunciation of Satan, through the prayer of exorcism and if possible through a conversion to Jesus Christ, the only true Savior and Healer. It must also be clearly realized and borne in mind that the religious beliefs in which the alter personalities were involved are based on something real. To try to change them overnight would be to tell a Christian or a Muslim that the foundations of his religion make no sense. The whole "Magic" aspect also plays an important part in the beliefs of a survivor who came out of a Satanist cult. The religious and spiritual side is an important part of the child's conditioning, but it is the physical and psychological traumas (splitting) that remain the focal point for MK programming.

Survivor Svali reports that in some groups, a specific program will guide the child against Christianity. Christianity is the antithesis of Luciferian occult practices, so they want their members to be unable to come into contact with the hope that Jesus Christ could bring. During torture, the child will often ask for help or appeal to God. At that moment, the programmer will say to the child: "God has abandoned you, He could not love you, that's why you are in so much pain. If he were so powerful, He could stop that.'' They will even ask the child to pray and ask God to intervene. The child will then pray to God and then the executioner will further violently the child. This situation will create a deep sense of despair in the little victim, the child will truly believe that he has been abandoned by God, that He has remained deaf to his call. The child will also be systematically abused and tortured when the name of Jesus Christ is pronounced, in order to create a psychological barrier to the mere evocation of His name[514].

Many readers may ask themselves a legitimate question here: "But why doesn't God intervene?" Why does he not intervene in wars either? Why so much misery on this planet, especially all the suffering of children if God existed? These are questions that come up very often. We live in a fallen world under the yoke of Lucifer. Isn't the fallen angel named the prince of this world in the Bible: Now comes the judgment of this world; now the prince of this world will be cast out (John 12:31), My Kingdom is not of this world (John 18:36). This is the reason why these satanic/Luciferian sects all connected to the fallen angels/demons reign for the moment as masters on this planet without being in any way worried. The issue of the suffering of these children in the networks is obviously unacceptable and even inconceivable for many of us. But it is up to us, human creatures, to become aware of the situation, to react and to work to stop these things at our level.

This extreme conditioning combined with occultism and demonology creates a powerful spiritual programming (reverse sanctification) which it is therefore essential to break in order to establish new healthy and constructive spiritual notions. This spiritual programming may be the most damaging part in the system of an MK-Monarch slave as it aims to cut it off from the true Source of Healing. It is an intentional distortion of truth that teaches and reinforces erroneous and inverted concepts of God. Some alter personalities may be very violent towards everything that refers to the Christian world, so it takes a lot of patience and understanding to reconcile the survivor with a positive spirituality based on love, sweetness, hope, grace and mercy. A new source of spirituality will greatly help the patient to dissolve the powerful occult attachments linking him to the sect, to no longer identify with the aggressors and to recover the parts of himself that have been "captured". Any intentional act to control and spiritually enslave a child through terror, who is therefore not able to make a contrary choice, can be reversed during therapy by a simple application of free will, for we all have control over our spirituality. The awareness of trauma and MK programming, as well as the implementation of free will, will allow access to this detachment and autonomy. It is a question of establishing a physical, psychological and spiritual separation with the group of executioners. This separation will take place gradually as:

- The figure(s) of the group's authorities will be discredited
- Contradictions will be highlighted (ideology versus reality), for example "how can they preach love while they rape and exploit victims."
- The patient begins to listen to the therapist, i.e. when reality begins to take over sectarian ideology.
- The patient begins to realize and express some reproaches towards the sectarian group.
- The patient begins to see himself as an opponent of the sect rather than as a member of it[515].

3 - Security and stability

An essential point is that the survivor must be safe before starting a deprogramming. It is a question of providing the victim with both physical and psychological security so that effective therapeutic work can begin, because it would be pointless to start anything if there was a risk that the victim would be severely abused for speaking. If the abuses are still ongoing, the dissociative function of protection will continue to operate and destabilize the person again and again. To try to dismantle and stop this dissociative process would then be to try to stop the only means of survival and protection of the victim. This is why the first step to be taken is to cut off all contact with the executioners in order to start a safe therapy allowing deprogramming. If the question of safety arises, it will slow down the therapy because the energy will be diverted towards this fear rather than towards the work of discharging traumatic memories. Many survivors are still in contact with the cult when they begin therapy, but it will advance much more quickly once this contact is definitively broken[516].

Stabilization consists in reducing risky behaviour and anarchic alternations of personalities. In Cathy O'Brien's autobiography, Mark Phillips sets out point by point the guidelines he had put in place to stabilize O'Brien when they had taken refuge in Alaska in order to protect her from the Network[517]:

1. I maintained constant vigilance to ensure that Cathy would be physically and psychologically protected from any outside influence.

2. No memory could be verbalized by Cathy until she wrote it. The only questions I could ask had to be related to his account and addressed to the personality consulted who relived his memories. These questions were only to concern the "who", the "what", the "when", the "how" and the "where" of the memory. Even if I had been given the answers in advance, I should not have intervened. Our perceptions could have been radically different, which could create additional memory barriers between his personality fragments.

3. I basically explained to Cathy what mind control was and she

then realized that what had happened to her was not her fault. However, she also understood that she was becoming responsible here and now for her actions. It was through therapy that she asserted her control over her own mind.

4. We spent a large number of hours on "intellectual discussions" about Cathy's learned religious beliefs, during which they were "logically" dismantled - simply as if I were explaining how the illusion induced by a magician's tricks helped to blur reality.

5. Cathy would not be allowed to express the slightest emotion when the memories were brought up and entered in her diary. I never asked him, ''What does this do to you?'' This is as important as the issue of security for rapid memory restoration.

6. I would provide Cathy with the necessary food, vitamins, water and make her sleep to improve her failing physical health.

7. I taught Cathy to visualize her memories on a "mental cinema screen" rather than reliving them through the "virtual reality" mechanism of the mind.

8. I taught Cathy how to put herself in a trance and control the depth of her trance through a certain technique of self-hypnosis (some consider it a meditation). This was put in place to avoid any possibility of contamination of his memories or confusion between them that could have occurred in case I had used this hypnotic suggestion technique known as 'induced imaging'."

9. Cathy was not allowed to read books, newspapers or magazines, nor could she discuss with Kelly (her daughter) any of the memories she had found. Cathy had lived through information control all her life and therefore had little opportunity to struggle with the contamination of memories. This rule was also understood and respected by Kelly whose memories were beginning to surface.

10. All the ways of behaving and other social conventions adopted by Cathy were re-examined in logical discussions that we had among ourselves. All pre-established ways of behaving, including daily habits, were either reworked or completely eliminated.

11. I demanded that she wear a watch on her wrist day and night to alert me every time she had the feeling of experiencing the slightest "black hole". In the absence of trauma, the missing time is a major sign of the transition from one personality to another. On the other hand, the fact of recovering the notion of time indicates that we are recovering.

''Write this to me,'' mark tells me. I don't want to hear it, I want to be able to read it, so that I can understand it well (...) Putting this in writing will revive the logical part of your brain. When you write down your memories, it turns an incomprehensible emotional into something logical and thus makes it understandable. Once this is understandable, you can manage the reality of your past in a logical way (...) Simply transfer this view of things to a screen of your mind, like to a movie screen. It will allow you to access your memories without abridgement (...) That is to say, he explains to me, without reliving it. As I said, you have already survived it once. There is no point in reliving it. These are just memories, and you already know that. Look at the screen of your mind through the eyes of the one who endured these events. Smell the smells. And then put everything in writing. That's why I said that the pen is stronger than the sword. This technique will give you back control of your memory, and ultimately of your mind[518].

Before beginning the work to raise awareness and overcome programming, therapist Ellen P. Lacter compiled a list of tools that could stabilize and secure the patient[519]:

1 - Obtain a family tree of the family, a school, professional and residential history, so that you can refer to it later.

2 - Create a particular formula or prayer to "protect the space" at the beginning of each session.

3 - Maintain a deep respect for the patient's free will.

4 - Explore the deepest spiritual values and beliefs of the patient, in order to determine the role that this "spiritual source" can play in therapeutic work.

5 - Create an internal "box" (or container) to store pain, fear, toxic states (drug, alcohol ...), all that can be undesirable and harmful to the advancement of therapy. There may be several "storage boxes" in the inner world.

6 - Create an inner place of healing and recovery. A peaceful and serene "rest room" in which alter personalities can be "delivered" from the places where the abuses occurred and receive the help of other alter to heal emotionally and physically.

7 - Create an inner place to work on the awareness of the programming and its resolution. This "work room" or "meeting room" will have the function of working with an overview of the system, but also on trauma and information retrieval. It is the patient who will decide which alters will work in this place and he will arrange this room in his own way.

1 - Create an inner place to work on the awareness of the programming and its resolution. This "work room" or "meeting room" will have the function of working with an overview of the system, but also on trauma and information retrieval. It is the patient who will decide which alters will work in this place and he will arrange this room in his own way.

2 - Establish a procedure to obtain the information in this "work room".

1 - The reappropriation of the "inner world"

The virtual creation of a "storage box" or different "rooms" may seem something strange or fanciful when it comes to therapy. But as indicated in the previous chapter, the inner world of a fractional personality is very vast, it is a dimension that forms a real universe that it is possible to arrange. Just as the programmer arranges and structures the inner world for enslavement, the therapist as well as the patient can also use their creativity to bring elements into this dimension. Elements that will help to secure the inner system with the alter, as well as to structure the therapy. Dr. Ellen Lacter reported, for example, the case of a patient who put his questions in a seal that he then plunged to the bottom of a well (symbolizing his subconscious) to reassemble it to obtain information or images.

At a *S.M.A.R.T.* dating from 2003, the survivor of ritual abuse and mind control Carol Rutz explains the usefulness of these therapeutic elements injected into this inner world. It can be a memory storage area or a soothing and secure place for alters: *"When I left the therapist's office, I had to put aside the things I had just worked on, so that I could live properly during the week without having to be bombarded by the new information that had just come back. So I created a safe inner place to put the memories that we worked on at each session, the goal being that I would not be drowned by all these things between sessions. It was a toy box and I put a teddy bear on it at the end of each session before leaving the office. During the week, we* **(editor's note: the alters)** *could also keep a diary, then we let the memories come out of the box during the therapy the following week. This box was different from the secure place that my alter had been able to build to shelter and to heal* **(...)** *The same visualization that had been used by the executioners for the programming allowed us to cancel this same programming We created a place of inner healing where any alter the wish, can enter and stay there to receive the help of the other alter. I discovered alters who could not speak because of programming or because they were preverbal alters; it was then another alter personality who volunteered to be used to work on memory* **recovery! 520! ."**

For Svali, the good news is that this "interior landscape" is very malleable. Once the different parts (editor's note: alter) have been "found", the structures holding them prisoner are discovered and they are finally delivered from them, they can be encouraged and helped to settle permanently in the secure places of the inner world. The structures installed in the mind to harm and control the victim can then be removed. The work of healing and deprogramming the survivor thus uses to its advantage what programmers use to enslave:

that is to say, the unlimited malleability of the "inner landscape."

Patients can create many other new soothing places in their inner worlds because there are no limits in this dimension of being. Survivor Jen Callow writes: *"The environment of our inner world has also evolved. At the end of each session, our therapist makes sure that any new alter personality that has just been discovered, will find a comfortable place bringing him his basic needs. We build a mansion filled with bedrooms with a large common area, bathrooms with large tubs for bubble baths, a large kitchen with large bins and a large table, play areas, etc. Each room can be arranged and decorated according to the wishes of its resident, it can have a door that can be locked as well as a window* (**...**) *We can also create many more constructions if we wish. We now have a healing area filled with medicinal plants, various and varied remedies, with a very pleasant view: gardens and meadows, an ocean with beaches, forests* (**...**) *We create spaces for sport, dance, arts... Every thing created us* (editor's note: the alters) *encourages us to work together, to cooperate, to interact and to have more moments of relaxation and fun[521].."*

This inner world has been arranged by programmers with different internal structures; knowing their nature will help the therapist to discover the number of alter personalities present in the system and with whom it is most important to work. The approach is to explore each part of the structure to know its functions and how many alter "live" in it or are connected to it indirectly. When the programming is conscious by the patient and the alter personalities imprisoned in the structures understand that this is an illusion, the structure usually dissolves on its own. When large structures disappear in this way, some patients may feel like a "vacuum", they can then be replaced by something else entirely. Programmers usually secure these structures with traps and guardians (demons), even by an alter programmed to be a good loyal soldier.

2 - The alliance with alter personalities

Mk programming is based on T.D.I., so the stabilization protocols and the fusion of alters apply in deprogramming (see "T.D.I. and Therapy" in Chapter 5). The alliance with the alter will consist in associating and cooperating with them in order to make them participate in the therapeutic work. Every alter personality in a system that has been programmed takes great care to perform the function assigned to them and they are usually terrified at the thought of failing in their mission. It is important to map this system of personalities alternately both horizontally (their number and functions) and vertically (their hierarchical organization). As we have already noted, alter personalities are organized hierarchically, and those who are in the lowest levels of the hierarchy will be punished by those in the higher levels. Alters at higher levels fear being punished or killed by outside executioners. No alter should be overlooked, everyone has their role to play in therapy. According to therapist Alison Miller, it is important to work with the most "charismatic" alters in the system, those who are at the top of the hierarchy, especially those who believed in the lies, false promises and threats of their executioners and who finally became aware of this deception. These are the alter "executioners", the persecutors that have already been mentioned. It is very important to recognize that these alter are no different from all the others in the sense that their job is also to maintain the survival of the victim. We must not banish or try to hide or dismiss some alter by calling some "good" and others "bad". By working with these "leaders", the therapist will be able to obtain the cooperation of other lower alter in the internal hierarchy. In the documentary "When the Devil Knocks", therapist Cheryl Malmo says of these alters: "I immediately knew that I had to befriend 'Tim' because you want to have these hostile and angry alters as assistants. When the devil knocks on the door, invite him to have tea.''

The therapist will thus gradually establish trust with this alter hierarchy. The goal is to gradually show them in a peaceful way what really happened to them, but also their false beliefs. Alter observers and reporters can also help the therapist a lot by participating in the reconstruction of the puzzle as they will help determine which memories are most in need of work. The memories are broken down into a thousand pieces like puzzle pieces and each alter contains certain pieces. It is therefore necessary that the alter cooperate together to reconstitute this memorial puzzle. Some therapists therefore invite all alter personalities affected by a particular experience to meet in an indoor meeting room, in order to work on reconstructing this memory chronologically. As we have seen, many survivors testified that they had parts of themselves that came out of their physical bodies during the abuse. So they saw the scene with the piercing eye of a bird, in a detached and objective way while other alters seemed to hide deep in the body when the violence occurred. These different points of view, both external and internal, will mean that these scenes will be recorded in a much more detailed way than can be done by the alter who was directly raped and tortured. Survivor Trish Fotheringham explains that experiences are often fragmented at the time they occur. This means that an alter could be "out" (editor's note: possibly out of the body) during an event, while one or more other alters turned away from the feelings, the emotional state and the pains related to what was experienced, without really being out of the body. It is for this reason that it is necessary to access and consult each piece of memory of each alter so that the experiences can be considered as recovered and healed[522].

In the book "Ritual Abuse and Mind Control", therapist Ellen P. Lecter quotes an excerpt from the conversation she had with survivor Carol Rutz: "If it were ritual abuse, there could be four or five alters who participated: one for pain, one for ritual, one for transport, etc... I think that's why people with a T.D.I. have a hard time remembering what happened. This is because you usually have different alter personalities that emerge successively during the same event. It is therefore not possible to remember the entire experience unless you access the memories of each alter who was involved. If you manage to make the alter that presents itself exceed his fear and pain, then you will have the opportunity to reach the rest. Several times I remembered much earlier events, which helped me to finally be able to re-glue the whole and understand the ramifications of all this[523].

What Carol Rutz describes here can be illustrated in one of the minutes of the Dutroux case that we have already described in chapter 4 on ritual abuse about a witness X: "When she woke up (from the hypnotic trance), she had the impression that there were several people who attended what she described (ritual of sacrifice and orgy) and that these people (these Nathalies) were fading in front of each other. She thinks she has disappeared a dozen times.''

In "Breaking the Chain", Svali writes that the very first programming on the child, consisting of "breaking the heart", are difficult to undo because they touch on the question of the abandonment and rejection of the original personality, that of the young child. This concerns the child's first life experiences and involves his relationship with his parents and close family members. The work on these memoirs requires an effort from all the internal alter system that must unite to help the personality fragments that have undergone this extreme initial parental rejection, in order to help them recognize the importance of the present moment and the fact that these adults were truly unhealthy. Making them aware of the present moment is essential because they usually live stuck in the space-time where these traumas occurred. These extra child and even baby personalities will often feel depressed and angry. Some alter can then take on a role of "nanny" to comfort them and make them understand that they are adorable children, no matter what these adults may have done to them. External therapeutic help and a good internal system of alter "nannies" can greatly help in the healing process by bringing a new perspective and appeasement for these young injured and abandoned alter.

The first abuses aimed at splitting the personality happen very early in the child's life (0 to 24 months). Some alter who have never forgotten them will be able to share the memories with the other alter totally amnesiac. This has to be done very gradually because these abuses occurred very early in life. For this, the creation of an internal "nursery" (arranged as you like) can help the process. The older and compassionate alter "nanny" will be able to help and take care of the children in this nursery. It is important to believe and validate what these alternate children will say when they begin to advance in therapy and share their experiences. Often, they will be preverbal alters because they are still very young, so they need a way to express themselves. The presence of older alternate children, close to the alternate babies, can help to verbalize their needs and fears. Generally, alter children have no confidence in adults even in the alter adult personalities of the system to which they belong. External therapeutic assistance is also important for healing, in order to train and structure the internal system so that it can provide help and good care to injured children. It is a question of balancing the needs of the alter child between the external care and the need for the internal care provided by the alter system. The alter child can be helped by anchoring sessions, a focus on the present moment and the realization that the physical body is now older and that it leads a life where it is safe[524].

It should be borne in mind that many of the alters who have suffered such horrors have been deliberately kept at the age when the abuses took place. As we have seen, they are fragments of soul stuck in a certain space-time. They are stuck at an age when they still believe everything that has been told to them by their aggressors, regardless of the level of fantasy and unreality. When the patient tries to remember what happened to him, the terror that is still present in his young alter will flood him, regardless of his age. Many alter are therefore stuck in the past, in an eternal present where they are still physically this child in contact with the aggressor (s). They must be informed as much as possible of their current situation so that they realise that they are no longer in danger. It is from there that they can stop punishing other alter and learn to work in a group to find serenity. We must explain to these fragments that they have had to deal with unhealthy and violent people but that today all this is over, that they are no longer in contact with them and that they no longer have to follow the directives and rules of these executioners. They can now come back in the moment to make their own rules. It is also possible to change the programmed function of an alter to give him a new role in which he will use his skills and qualities in the service of therapy. It may be good to explain to alter, with simple words for younger people, what post-traumatic stress, dissociation, amnesia, alter and flashbacks are.

Some alters may also have been programmed not to communicate directly outside (never emerging to speak out loud), so it can take a considerable amount of time before these alters are detected and they begin to establish contact with the therapist. Many of them will not have emerged since childhood, so they know nothing of the present world. These are alters that are not supposed to communicate with the outside world until they are triggered by a controller or programmer. These are fragments that will therefore be very frightened and hostile when they "come out". It is also possible to go through an intermediary alter, a mediator, to dialogue with these reluctant fragments. Even if they have already observed from the inside the outer world, the real world (our dimension), they are rarely "out"to interact directly with, i.e. by taking control of the physical body. They therefore have a very limited life experience, limited to worship activities and "training" (programming); their rewards were sex, drugs, and power. The patient may be very frightened at the idea of disclosing certain information, in relation to his attackers, but also at the fact that some alter will be terrified and humiliated by their own memories. They will therefore be afraid of the rejection of the other if they talk about what they have done. The therapist must accept them, no matter what they may have been forced to do.

During therapy, it is also advisable to develop in the victim a global vision, an overview of his traumatic history and his alter system. One of the ways to access this global vision is to get in touch with the real self (the original personality) or the "inner guide" of the patient, which are sometimes considered the same thing but not systematically. According to some therapists, there is in each internal system a part

with the function of helping the patient to a higher level, a part called ISH: "Internal Self Helper", the Inner Self Assistant. This alter (if it is one) can be considered superior to others, related to God. He is a source of wisdom and an inner guide knowing all the other alter personalities, he accesses all the memories and life experiences of the person. ''The 'Inner Self
Helper' (ISH) should be identified as soon as possible. The therapist should not be afraid to work closely with the ISH, who will always be a protector of alter personalities and who will ensure that the treatment is respected. He will get the best possible chords with the alter[525].

In her book entitled "Reaching for the Light", the survivor Emilie Rose writes about this Inner Assistant, this particular source of wisdom: "Each survivor of ritual abuse has an inner part that has somehow remained connected to life, even in the midst of torture and death... It can have several names: the strong, the guardian of the spirit, the healer, the mystic, the grandparent, the wise. No matter what we call it, we can act on our healing by seeking that part of ourselves, inviting it to emerge, befriending it, nourishing it and assisting it so that it can become more involved in our lives. This strong part of ourselves has a natural and innate desire for life and healing. She has the knowledge of pain, healing and spirit. It is perhaps the place where our connection with a higher power resides, and it guides us on a true journey of healing if we give it the opportunity[526].

Dr. Sarah Krakauer calls this part: *inner wisdom.* **In her book** *"Treating Dissociative Identity Disorder: The Power of the Collective* **Heart", she reports the case of a patient who came into connection with this inner guide:** *"Seven months after Lynn began her therapy with me, she showed curiosity about the functioning of inner wisdom. While she was in a meditative state, she spontaneously asked her inner wisdom "Why do you know all this when I don't?" The inner wisdom then replied: "Because you are only a small part and there is so much more... You can think of me as the father you never* *had, someone you can count on and who will always be there, no matter what happens... I know all that the different parts can do and how they can fit into each other, because I can see all of them*..." *Lynn reported that she saw a beautiful inner yellow light after hearing this wisdom. She described: "This is the first time I've seen a yellow like this. It's so pretty. It's a really ra.ssuranteexperience, that I'm no longer alone. A father is supposed to be the one who takes care of you. I feel a real calm, a feeling of peace. " Before discovering this yellow light, Lynn had already found that after a.see sought guidance in the theater* **(editor's note: therapeutic technique serving as** *a support to work with the inner system) she had been able to go to a place where she had seen a purple light that was both soothing and energizing. It was something she had discovered for herself and she went there frequently during her* **meditations! 527! ."**

Perhaps the *ISH,* **appearing to be a higher part of the being, corresponds to***the " spirit ofsuperconsciousness " described in the tradition of* **the Kahunas (in chapter 6), being able to take precedence over all other categories of soul fragments. In her article entitled** *"The inner self helper concepts of inner guidance",* **therapist Christine Comstock concluded by writing:** *"As is the case with all psychological hypotheses, the existence of ISH can neither be proven nor refuted. However, there are sufficient historical and clinical facts for it to be reasonable to think that such a structure may exist and be beneficial. In the past, the concept of dissociating the "Me" into an alter that observes and experiments has been seen as something beneficial for the patient. The extension of the notion of "inner guidance" in the form of ISH in patients with I.D.T. seems something logical and corresponds to the experience described by these patients. According to many experienced clinicians, this phenomenon of inner guidance in the form of a separate psychic structure can be a conceptualization clinical useful in the treatment of* **T.DJ528].**

It is obvious that the phenomenon of T.D.I. deserves a very thorough scientific research, because leading to other dimensions of being... but let us remember once again that this is the Pandora's box of "nameless religion": all discoveries concerning the arcana of the human psyche (and far beyond) allowing individual and global control must not be disclosed in the secular world, an essential rule that allows to retain power.

The words that have been used by executioners and programmers during abuse, torture and programming sessions have a profound devastating effect on victims. The work on the memoirs aims to ensure that the survivor can remember exactly what the programmer was telling him with the mental imagery that accompanied these sentences during the sessions. This is an essential point that will greatly contribute to disabling MK programming. It is therefore important to list and work on these words so that they lose their power of control over the victim. These words or phrases will lose all the more of their power when traumatic memories are gradually emptied of their negative charge. The negative charge being this subconscious inner pain that when triggered by stimuli will activate programming. These words or phrases may have been used to define the role or nature of an alter and to name the latter, it may also be threats, insults, agreements (obtained under duress), commands and directives, specific trigger words aimed at bringing out an alter, access codes that may also include numbers, etc... Some of these commands can be replaced, for example by renaming alter personalities with new names and assigning them new roles. Prayers and blessings can also be used to counter verbal attacks (commands during programming) that remain marked in the subconscious.

During the therapeutic process, one of the greatest dangers is the programming of self-destruction and suicide. According to Svali, among the Luciferian elites, this programming is systematic. Since early childhood, the victim has been conditioned to believe that he will die if he leaves "the Family", the Network. This is the basis of suicide programming, which is closely related with fidelity and loyalty programming to the biological family and hierarchical order. If the victim begins to access certain memories and decides to leave the network, or begins therapy, this sabotage or self-destruction programming must be triggered. This will then manifest itself in a feeling of suddenly being overwhelmed with overwhelming guilt and a deeply depressive state. Only the programmer and a few people hold the code to disable this programming, which ensures that the victim will re-contact the group. If the victim breaks this programming, he will need assistance and help, hospitalization may be necessary because breathing or heart rate can be heavily impacted. Alter personalities can be programmed to commit self-harm or even suicide if there is an attempt at external disclosure or deprogramming. These alters are programmed to believe that the only way to escape suicide and self-destruction is to re-contact the programmer who knows the codes to stop the process.

For example, one alter can punish another alter by scarifying him, which is why it is important to make the whole alter system aware that they share the same physical body and that they form a single individual.

The programming of an alter personality that can lead the victim to suicide is done by imprinting on him the belief that it is honorable to die for the cause of the "Family"; that traitors must kill themselves quickly before the group finds them to kill them in a slow and painful way; that their life will be so unbearable that it is better to kill themselves, etc...

According to Ellen Lacter, when the implemented commands "don't call you back" and "don't talk" begin to crumble, the rest of the programming becomes easier to awareness and overcome. Access to the various traumatic memories resulting in the reconstitution of the chronological puzzle will make it possible to release little by little all the unconscious emotional load that cements and allows the triggering of the programs. The more the scattered and repressed traumatic memories are conscious and re-assembled, the more the emotional load they contain will decrease, and the more the programming will lose its effectiveness. This is how little by little, the

MK programming is defused.

3 - The treatment of traumatic memories

a/ General

The work on traumatic (dissociative) memories is a therapeutic process during which fragments of both psychological and physical memories (cellular memory) are reassociated. The treatment of a dissociative memory therefore consists in bringing together and raising awareness of all the parts that compose it so that it is definitively integrated, because as we have seen, the memory of a lived experience can be broken into several pieces. Following this integration, the emotions and physical sensations associated with this memory will disappear to give way to a memory of what happened similar to any other conscious memory. That is to say, the repressed traumatic memory then becomes a chronological and autobiographical memory no longer having any negative charge. Once this process is complete, the different alter personalities associated with these memories can then be merged into each other. It would seem that in some cases, this is even done automatically as soon as the memories are processed and made aware.

At the biological level, memories are related to different senses (sight, hearing, smell, touch, taste but also physical pain or sexual pleasure), they are also related to different types of emotions. These memories are managed by the hippocampus which transmits them to the cerebral cortex so that they are well integrated into consciousness. This is how they pass from the unconscious level to the conscious level. Dissociative memories remain disconnected from consciousness, this is what is called traumatic amnesia, a "forgotten" memory that has not been conscious. These memories can arise abruptly and unexpectedly, usually in the form of flashbacks that are eruptions of memories that suddenly go back to consciousness, they can be visual, auditory, emotional and even physical. Indeed, these rises can trigger cellular memories linked to certain areas of the body, this can be manifested by pain, paralysis and even physical marks. When these subconscious memories arise, they are relived as if they were actually happening in the present moment. When a person experiences a traumatic rise in memory resulting in a heavy emotional state, he will absolutely need to anchor himself in the present moment. It is then necessary that she opens her eyes (usually closed during a flashback) and that she focuses on her direct environment: the sounds (the voice of the therapist for example), that she names and touches the objects around her in the room, she can also touch her clothes by naming them one by one, *etc.* Anchoring techniques are important in the work on traumatic memories, they prevent the patient from being overwhelmed by emotion and pain.

Generally, a patient will not be ready to do this work on traumatic memories until the system of his alter personalities is cooperative. As we have seen before, it is necessary to establish a relationship with the alter so that all those who have been involved in the same experience, the same memory, can take part in the process. According to therapist Alison Miller, a memory cannot be fully integrated (and the programming dissolved) until all the fragments of the person involved in the traumatic memory have aligned to share their own piece of memory, their piece of the puzzle, in order to establish the complete and chronological picture of the experience. In addition, if not all fragments of the patient are cooperative, some alter can punish those who disclose things prematurely.

Groups that practice mind control deliberately create alter personalities who record everything and who know the entire system with all its history. Stella Katz calls this alter the "Gatekeeper", a guard whose function is to observe everything from the inside and record everything without ever intervening. Once accessed, these alter personalities can be of great help in determining both the content of a memory but also the chronological list of the patient's alters who have successively experienced the traumatic experience.

There is also the issue of traumatic memories dating back to preverbal age, when the victim was still a baby. This type of memory

cannot be verbalized to express the experience and feelings. Between the ages of 0 and 3 years, the declarative or explicit memory system that requires the maturation of the hippocampus is not yet operational. They will then be implicit memories (emotional, behavioral, somato-sensory, perceptual, non-verbal). These implicit memories are related to the amygdala of the right hemisphere whose maturation
is earlier than that of the hippocampus

b/ The process of revivification

The term 'revivification' and its restoration process was described by survivor Brice Taylor. Unlike the Fabian therapy that we are also going to talk about, which only treats non-traumatic conscious memories, this is the treatment of unconscious traumatic memories aimed at fully integrating them into consciousness. The most difficult side of this work is certainly the emotional and sometimes physical pain that is associated with these dissociated memories. Revivification is a tool that can be useful when it is not possible to do a therapy session every time a traumatic memory rises to the surface of consciousness.

Brice Taylor introduces this technique: "As a survivor of extreme trauma from birth, I spent years in therapy. I had abridgements and flashbacks about my incestuous past, ritual abuse and government mind control, until the day I was able to practice this process of revivification. To learn how to use this tool, I was helped by an intelligence member who had some knowledge about MK programming and deprogramming. Revivification is an extremely valuable tool that has helped me manage and archive the huge amount of painful memories. So I was able to regain the memory of my past to finally be able to use my mind in a healthy and constructive way in the present moment. I think it is important to share this technique so that survivors can be helped in a simple way in their memory recovery process.'

Revitalization can begin when the patient is no longer in denial about the traumas of his past and after he has learned to feel and express his emotions. According to Brice Taylor, there is no need to continually re-experiment physically and emotionally with abridgements or flashbacks to dissect memories. According to her, survivors need to re-experiment with cellular memories only when they are still in denial about this reality of their past. Revivification will also allow the patient overwhelmed by intrusive memories, which usually prevent him from functioning on a daily basis, to learn to contain, channel and manage these "puffs" of memories until he can finally treat them properly.

When a patient has flashbacks at home, or when a memory is "triggered" by an element of his environment, in public or in private, he can take a notepad and write one or two words that will later be used to refresh his memory about what triggered this dissociated memory and the content of it. Following these few notes, he can resume his activities without having to be constantly "harassed" by this memory. Within 48 hours of the flashback(s), the patient is advised to resume his notes on the trigger(s) and examine the contents of this memory. The examination of it will be done calmly, by a deep work of introspection, aiming to write in detail the visual and auditory content, but also the fragrant and gustatory aspects that are related to this traumatic memory. One criterion for determining whether they are true dissociated memories is that they are three-dimensional at the visual level and contain well-marked sensory elements, such as noises and smells.

To train for this type of exercise on amnesic memories, the patient can first practice projecting conscious and non-traumatic memories on a "mental screen". This consists in focusing on the details of this memory with the "eyes of the mind", that is to say closing the eyes to imagine the scene in the most realwaypossible. In this scene, the person can thus look, touch, feel and taste what was present, but also listen to the sounds, words, sentences, *etc.* The work can therefore begin with unsociated memories that have not led to emotional shocks or physical pain.

Once the patient is comfortable with this "mental screen", he can tackle memories that were previously amnesic and that are beginning to emerge.

Here is how Brice Taylor describes the different phases of the process:

- 1/ Take a notebook.

- 2/ The patient must have previously listed potentially triggering elements of traumatic memory.

- 3/ The patient must be in a quiet and secure place, conducive to treating this type of memory (preferably within 48 hours of their emergence). He will start by referring to his list of triggers.

- 4/ It is useful for the patient to have a journal or a computer in which he can archive the dissociated memories that have been returned to him.

- 5/ Then the patient visualizes this memory on an imaginary screen in his mind. He must focus on this memory thanks to his mental eye, he will focus on the sensory system, that is to say taste, smell, hearing, touch and sight. He must be interested in everything that was present at the time of this traumatic experience. It must also focus well on the words and phrases that were spoken at that time. In people who have undergone ritual abuse and mind control, the words spoken during dissociative states are very important because they contain conditioning and programming. Alters who have heard what has been said may not repeat them during such a therapy session, they can for example tell the scene by omitting the "soundtrack". They must then be asked to give the entire contents of the memory, including auditory. The patient should try to see the scene through the eyes of the alter personality(s) who experienced the event. He does not need to relive the scene orre-experience the painful emotions or painful sensations in the body. He just has to look at this memory just like watching a movie on a screen, but taking great care to recover as much information as possible. If the patient has survived once to the traumatic event, he is now able to view it with some hindsight for the recovery of the strict necessary: that is to say, all the details that will help him to raise awareness of what happened and to know which personality (s) alter (s) involved in it(s). During this exercise, the patient does not have to judge what he sees on his mental screen, nor should he try to modify its content. When the patient has dissociated the emotional content of the memory, it is then possible for him to accurately describe what he sees while the therapist takes note of the information. He may therefore ask the patient to slow down or repeat something without fear of traumatizing him again. It's as if the patient has a remote control with which he can zoom, slow down or speed up the scene, pause, rewind or stop the story.

For this work of mental projection of a traumatic memory, the therapist Alison Miller advises to start the story in the "normal life", i.e. in the situation that preceded the traumatic event (for example the trip by vehicle), and then to end it with the situation that followed the trauma. This is intended to broaden the chronology of memory because the alter personalities of the beginning and end of a traumatic experience are usually not the same as those who suffered the traumas at the heart of the story. Thus, it will help the patient to better understand how his traumatic experiences are related to his daily life, his autobiographical conscious memory and in what context they took place.

- 6/ If the patient begins to experience abridgement with bodily sensations during the visualization, he can quickly write on a piece of paper: "My body tries to react to this memory", then thanks to the dissociative process already very developed in him, he will deviate from this memory which causes a physical reaction. By dissociating himself from physical or emotional pain, he can for example compartmentalize them in a box of his inner world. It can also replace images that trigger abridgement with a math problem. This will allow him to detach himself from the painful sensations because he will then make another area of his brain work. In the event that the body continues to react despite these measures, the patient must interrupt his session of mental projection and anchor himself in the present moment with the methods listed above. He can then resume the mental projection session if he is able to maintain the dissociative barrier between the physical and emotional bodies and traumatic memory. The same techniques can be applied when the emotional pain becomes too strong. During this process, the patient can also choose to voluntarily and fully go into the emotional feeling of memory in order to express it and make it burst as much as he can.

- 7/ If the patient feels sad, crying or angry about traumatic memories, he can undertake another activity. A healthy young child who falls and hurts himself will cry for a little while, but very quickly he will fix his attention to something that will get him out of his negative state. Children are thus able to quickly change their emotional states. The patient can do the same by quickly choosing to do an activity that will put him in a positive mental and emotional state. He can do sports, garden, call a friend, walk the dog, paint, sing, take a bath, watch a comedy, all those things that can bring him relaxation and joy. However, this is not about repressing negative emotions such as sadness or anger. The patient must be able to feel and express them for as long as he needs and wishes. The patient's healing process is largely based on the control he must have over himself and his own experiences. This part of the revivification process may be suitable for patients who are constantly stuck in painful old emotions.

When survivors are able to take care of themselves and love each other instead of self-destructing, their attackers (or controllers) have lost. Survivors need to realize that only they can choose self-esteem instead of scarification for example. When they stop behaving as programming has conditionedthem, they become autonomous and free, with only their own mind as limits: they recover their own identity.

Brice Taylor points out that during this process it is easier to write the traumatic memories first than to verbalize them directly. This is also what Mark Phillips advocates, it is one of the rules he established in Cathy O'Brien's recovery and deprogramming protocol. The act of writing the memories causes, thanks to the coordination of the eyes and the hand, certain neuronal connections of the brain that will give the patient better access to his own brain abilities. In addition, writing down the memories means that they will be much richer in detail. Over time, the different "capsules" of traumatic memories will begin to come together to form an overall picture highlighting what really happened in the patient's life. This puzzle more or less well reconstituted will explain many things that have hitherto remained misunderstood, such as undesirable behaviors or unexplained phobias. Brice Taylor explains that it is not necessary to dwell on every detail of memory to know if it is valid or not, because over time and with enough recovery of traumatic memories, the pieces of memories will begin to validate each other by fitting together to form the puzzle of life. It is this overview of his own life, hitherto broken into pieces, that will help bring the patient self-compassion, self-esteem and self-esteem so precious for his healing and his new life.

Here is an excerpt from Cathy O'Brien's book "For National Security" which illustrates the process of recovering traumatic memories:

"The answers only slowly come to the surface, but they bring out years of memories articulated to each other. The whole thing seems to me to be just a never-ending nightmare. When Mark returns that night, there are sheets of paper scattered everywhere, covered with fragments of memories written with so many different writings.

- I remembered a lot of things, but it all makes no sense. I cannot put the events in order.

I show him the pieces of paper and start crying:

- How can I remember when these things happened when I had no idea of time?

- It's simple, says Mark, you have to ask yourself the right questions. Extend your vision beyond the moment. What season are we in? Is there snow? Do you feel the warmth of the summer sun? Do

you feel the scent of spring flowers? Are you in school? Who is your teacher? How are you dressed? When did you have these clothes? Are your siblings already born? How old is Kelly? Look around you through the eyes of the person you were and to whom all this happened. Do people really think big to you, like when you were a little girl? What do you see in your eyes?
Their knees? Their eyes? Simply locate the time as precisely as you can and leave the rest to the investigators (...)

You can flip through old magazines and newspapers (...) You should start cutting out images, sentences, headlines - anything that catches your eye. When you have a box filled with these cut-outs, you can make a collage of it. It will be as if you pick up the pieces of your mind (...)

- Dr. Patrick used the term 'polyfragmented' to describe these little pieces that you put together. She also thinks that my idea of doing collage could be beneficial to you.

Suddenly, my scribbles of memories seem to me to have an interest in the end. I note from that moment on all the flashes that appear, whether they seem significant or not. I keep a pen and paper with me all the time. Memories often flash on the screen of my mind, sometimes to the point of deconcentrating me at the least opportune moments. Quickly noting a word or phrase is already enough to stop these cumbersome intrusions, and allows me to get back to what I was doing before. It looks like my brain knows I'm going to put everything in writing later, and the flashes then stop momentarily. Then, when I find myself in a position to concentrate properly, I let myself go to a deeper state, ask myself the questions that Mark taughtme, find the smells and start writing what is waiting to be recovered photographically.

- Keep in mind, Mark advised me, that if a memory seems to have gone wrong, then you have to take a close look at it to see if it's something you've been told or glimpsed in a movie. Start by deprogramming the program. Finds the beginning and the end, what happened before and what happened after. Leave the writing of this memory aside for three weeks. The truth does not disappear. Filling the holes with what could have happened, on the other hand, will disappear (...)

Writing down my memories as Mark taught me allows me to piece them together as they happened, but got rid of their dramatic aspect. I can deepen my trance through relaxation, observe events unfold photographically on the screen of my mind, smell the smells and recognize the physical sensations without having to experience them again. Emotions had no existence of their own in the dissociative state that was then mine, and they still do not have one in this process of recovering my memory. Mark taught me to avoid the question often asked by therapists: "What does it do to you[529]?"

c/ The interior theatre

In a 2006 S.M.A.R.T. lecture, survivor Lynn Schirmer described a tool that helps focus on particular memories and can be combined with the mental screen described earlier. It is a psychological tool that was developed by Dr. Lowell Routley and colleagues, a model of theater, a metaphor of consciousness and mind imagined by neurobiologist Bernard J. Baars.

In "In the Theater of Consciousness The Workspace of the Mind", Bernard J. Baars describes how this "theater" works that can be used to work on memories. In a theater, there is the stage, the actors, the projectors, the stage play, the director and the audience. When you enter a theater before the show, you see the stage, the spectators and a few doors on the side giving access to the boxes. As the lights begin to go out and the audience becomes silent, a single projector pierces in the dark to illuminate the scene. You then know that the screenwriters, the actors, the sound and light engineers are all there, invisible but working together in the same direction and guided by a script that will reveal itself to the audience. While the room turns off, only the focus of consciousness remains, i.e. the projector illuminating the scene, everything else being in the dark. This metaphor of the theater makes it possible to work on the memories:

the play of the actors and the sets represent the content of the memory, traumatic or not, the projectors represent the focus of attention on this memory, the conscious content emerges when the spots head towards the actors on the scene of memory. These projectors have an essential role because as soon as they direct the light to a particular character, it emerges in consciousness. Only these characters illuminated by the spotlight can transmit information to the audience. In return for the audience, the audience can applaud or whistle, ask to hear more or on the contrary evacuate an actor from the stage by throwing tomatoes at him. The audience of this theatre can also interact with the actors by exchanging information with them. But there is only one way to reach the audience as a whole, and that is through a character illuminated by the projector on stage. The audience is the raison d'être of all this experimental theatre.

The theater scene represents the inside of the patient, where he experiences the different perceptions, this place is called the fusion space. A simple exercise allows access to this place: the person must visualize an object of his choice and try to determine where he feels that something is happening inside him. This exercise may seem very simple, but for MK survivors, conditioned to avoid any kind of introspection, it may prove to be something entirely new and an important discovery. The ability to see inside the fusion space can be a powerful tool. With practice, it is here the person will be able to observe the elements of the programming, in this "stage play", and even intervene directly by himself.

The main actor of the scenario is usually the core, the real "Me", the original personality, who can sometimes control the body. The different actors (alter) who are not in the spotlight, who are off the stage, represent subsets, routines, skills, memories, feelings intended to act through particular behaviors or experiences. These different actors can enter the stage at any time to share the star with the main actor causing a mixing process in this fusion space. A trauma survivor may suddenly experience severe physical pain which is actually another part of himself stuck in a traumatic memory, with alters being able to mix with each other. According to Lynn Schirmer, this technique of introspection in the inner theater makes it possible to examine this fusion space. The patient can see objects and decorations that have been set up and used by programmers. It is a tool for coming into contact with and interacting with the inner world.

7 - Fabian therapy

While therapies aimed at tracing dissociative memories using hypnosis or other techniques such as EMDR (desensitization and reprogramming by eye movement) will confront the survivor with his traumatic past, there is a non-frontal therapeutic method that avoids direct "contact" with painful memories. Memories that can trigger certain implemented commands such as self-destruction and suicide programming.

This memory processing technique was leaked by Kerth Barker, an insider himself a survivor of satanic ritual abuse who had been connected to the Network at some level. This therapeutic process was transmitted to him by insiders who used their knowledge of MK programming to develop and establish an effective and safe protocol, aimed at discharging traumatic memories gradually, without having to relive them directly (it would seem that in the "Family" there are divergent opinions regarding the MK issue).

Barker named this technique : the therapy "Fabian", in reference to the Fabian military strategy which consists in avoiding the frontal and direct attack by setting up an indirect and progressive fight. The purpose of this therapeutic protocol is to gradually discharge and cancel the impact of traumatic memories, which has the consequence of disabling the programming that relies precisely on these painful memories repressed to a subconscious level. These dissociative memories are toxic "capsules" that remain stuck in the subconscious, their presence will sabotage the abilities of the individual to think rationally and to act according to his own will. The therapeutic work that aims to unload these unconscious toxic memories is therefore essential to deprogram mk conditioning. This method will act on repressed traumatic memories in an indirect way thanks to a work carried out on conscious memories: that is to say, the sustained stimulation of semantic and episodic memories, two distinct forms of explicit memory.

Semantic memory is the one that contains all the information that has been consciously memorized: telephone numbers, history lessons, etc... This semantic memory consists of words or symbols. Episodic memory when it consists of your life experiences. These are the real events that you have experienced consciously, such as a walk in the forest or a football match. This episodic memory is composed of images, sounds, smells, tastes and emotions. Episodic memories are therefore like films that contain sensory perceptions as well as emotions. There is also the memory of subjective events, such as dreams (depending on the ability of each person to remember them) and imagination, i.e. the ability to imagine a fictitious event with the possibility of remembering it later.

Fabian therapy is designed to avoid inappropriate triggering of implanted programming. This type of therapy deals only with conscious memories, i.e. episodic, semantic and subjective memories (dreams and imagination). There will never be a direct confrontation with dissociated and repressed traumatic memories. A sustained work on conscious memories will be able to act indirectly on repressed memories. Indeed, all strata of memory, down to the deepest, are interconnected with one another in what can be called an "energy mental field" that interacts with the brain and nervous system. According to Fabian therapy, memories are not made up of neurons but of a stable subatomic energy, neurons being only a physical interface for these memory energies (all the processes that facilitate memory operations). In this "energy field", each memory, whether conscious or unconscious, is connected with all the others by a kind of canvas. This means that if you work intensively on a certain area of memory, it will automatically influence all the other areas of the canvas: called the "memory field". By working intensively on episodic memory, you will thus work subtly and indirectly on pain, trauma and amnesia of other repressed memories. These dissociated traumatic memories contain strong emotions that represent a powerful negative emotional charge. Working on conscious memories, in a structured and intense way, will slowly release the negative charge of these repressed memories. When enough negative charge is released, the implemented programs related to these memories will cease to have power, so it will gradually release the MK slave.

The commands implemented during programming consist of words and images, mainly words, and the words are semantic. It will therefore be necessary to work on conscious semantic memory in order to gradually release the negative charge of the commands implanted in the repressed and unconscious memory. The scientists who developed this therapy did experiments with people who had been subjected to mind control. They were connected to a biofeedback device measuring heart rate and breathing. The researchers then slowly and aloud read a vocabulary list mixing neutral words and command words typically used in MK programming. When reading, the subject did not pay any special attention to the command words, however whenever one of these words was spoken, the biofeedback apparatus showed a reaction. Mk victims plugged into this device were not aware that these words were triggers, yet they stimulate the slave unconsciously due to the pain contained in the occulted traumatic memory. The power of these words can be disabled by working on vocabulary in a structured way.

Fabian therapy is divided into four areas:

- Journaling.
- The A.M.E. (Analysis of Episodic Memories), it is the systematic analysis of certain non-traumatic conscious memories.
- The technique of extroversion.
- Vocabulary exercises to influence semantic memory, aimed at freeing the negative charge contained in words related to implanted commands.

a/ The newspaper

In Fabian therapy, the patient will keep three journals:

- The daily journal of episodic memory.
- The daily diary of the memory of dreams.
- The cathartic journal and the memory of the imagination.

The episodic diary: Each evening, the patient will write in this journal his full name (the host personality), the date and an episodic memory of the day (the meeting with an old friend, an outing to the park ...). The memory should preferably be a striking and positive episode, without any negative emotion. This episodic memory must be something that has been experienced in the real world and not something that would have been seen on television or on the Internet. In his diary, the patient will simply describe this memory so that he can easily remember it later. On each weekend, the patient will be required to review all episodic memories of the week. In the same way, at the end of the month, he will examine everything he has written in his newspaper during these few weeks. These rereadings of episodic memories must be done by imagining the scene as precisely as possible in the mind, in order to record it as well as possible. This exercise can also be done at the end of the year.

In a subtle way, this work on episodic memory participates in discharging the negative memories weighing on the subconscious. It is a work that requires a medium-term commitment (a few months) or even a long-term commitment (several years) to hope for tangible results. By detecting memory lapses on certain days, the patient will know that a change of alter occurred that day.

The dream diary: This journal is also to be filled daily if the memory of the dream is present. A number of people have discovered that once they start writing their episodic journals on a daily basis, they also start having vivid nightmares. In addition, once the patient has undertaken an A.M.E. (Episodic Memory Analysis) on a regular basis, this will also indirectly stimulate nightmares during sleep. Nightmares are unpleasant, but it is rather a good sign because it is through them that the subconscious evacuates the negative charge contained in traumatic memories.

The patient does not have to make an analysis of his dreams in his diary, he simply has to note its contents in the most objective way possible, regardless of whether the dream was joyful or terrorizing. The focus on dreams, which consists in remembering them to ask them in writing, will also release the negative charge contained in the memory field. It is a natural healing process of the mind.

The journal of imagination and cathartic: This journal does not have to be kept daily but only when the patient feels the need. Its purpose is to use imagination to release negative emotions. With this journal, the patient will try to purge the negativity, it is not a question of intellectualizing what is written in it because it is a purely cathartic process. The content of the newspaper can be made up of words, drawings, photos, etc., it is a very personal diary. The idea is to express the bad feelings that sometimes rise for no apparent reason, by putting them in pictures and words. It is a purely emotional and non-intellectual process, an additional way to release the negative emotional charge from the memory field.

b/ A.M.E. - Episodic Memory Analysis

A.M.E. is the systematic analysis of non-repressed episodic memories. This analysis requires a therapist. These non-repressed episodic memories are conscious memories that must not contain any pain and negative emotion. These are the memories of ordinary and happy experiences of everyday life. The therapist plays the role of guide, he will ask a series of questions to help the patient to plunge deeply into his memories. In this therapeutic process, negative unconscious memories are indirectly influenced by this intense focus on positive conscious memories.

The memory field is similar to a spider's web in which all memories are connected together by wires. If you stimulate an area of the canvas, it will stir everything else. So if you intensely stimulate an area of the patient's conscious memory, it will more or less influence all the other areas of memory, also dissociated memories. The objective of this type of analysis is to ensure that the patient consciously immerses himself in a memory to remember it as deeply as possible in his "mental screen". The role of the therapist is to use his intuition to guide the process by questioning the patient about this memory in order to encourage him to dive ever deeper into it but without ever intellectualizing anything. This protocol does not require a hypnotic state or any altered state of consciousness, the patient just needs to close his eyes when recalling memories. All memories worked in A.M.E. must be of a happy nature, they must not contain any negative emotions. In addition, it must be recent memories that have not yet been processed, that is, raw memories that the patient has not yet talked about. To help you understand this process, here is an example:

- Therapist: Can you remind yourself of an appropriate memory that we could work on today?

- Patient: I went to a football game the other day.

- T: All right. For a better memory of this memory, what was the date and at what time did this episode begin?

- P: It happened two days ago. I think it was at 16 hours.

- T: Ok, let's start with your olfactory memory, do you remember the smells?

- P (eyes closed): I remember the smell of popcorn in the tail where I was waiting to buy a hot dog. There were smells of cooking, hot dogs.... See... There was also that smell of stale beer on the floor near the bar. When I went to the bathrooms, I remember that it smelled very strongly of urine. In the stands, I was sitting next to a man wearing a sickening aftershave. I also remember someone who smoked a cigar. It was a hot day, I remember the body odors.

- T: Was it your own body odor or someone else's?

- P: There were the smells of several people. There was something else, I'm not sure what it was.. Oh yes, my friend had put sunscreen on his arms, he gave me a little.

- T: What was that smell like?

- P: There was a slight smell of coconut, but above all a smell of chemicals.

- T : Well.Is there another memory of smell?

- P : Non.

- T: Okay, so now let's go over your memories regarding tastes during this episode.

etc.

In a methodical and systematic way, each of the sensory perceptions contained in this episodic memory, this scene of life, will be reviewed. The therapist's questions are intended to maintain the patient's attention and focus on the experience and his memory. A session of this type should last from half an hour to forty-five minutes.

The mind of a victim of MK has been altered, therefore, even the recall of ordinary episodic memory may contain distortions. If the therapist hears something that seems totally irrational, he does not have to question or analyze it, he simply has to continue the process without dwelling on it. The therapist should not make any judgments or evaluations, he should simply help the patient maintain a focus on the experience and his memory.

There are a number of perceptions contained in episodic memory, Fabian therapy works with a list of eight perceptions that are as follows:

No. 1: Olfactory (smell)

No. 2: Gustatives (taste)

N°3 : Auditory (sound)

N°4 : Tactile (touch)

N°5 : Vision (view)

N°6 : Kinetics (movements)

N°7 : Emotional (emotions)

N°8 : Linguistics (language)

The therapist will work with each of these perceptions by taking them in the exact order of this list. These eight categories are used sequentially, so the therapist must direct the patient to follow this sequence in the right order. The session ends when the last category has been reviewed. The review of the smell, taste and noises from the beginning of the session will allow the patient to directly re-experiment with memory without personal alteration, he will not evaluate it but re-experiment. The review of emotions and language will be done at the end of the session because these perceptions are likely to be evaluated and modified by the ego. As much as possible, the therapist should avoid mixing the different categories of memory perceptions. For example, when analyzing category 3, which is the memory of sounds, it would not be good to encourage the patient to focus on the content of a conversation he has heard, because this is what is then analyzed in category 8 (language). In category n°3, the therapist directs the patient in the pure perception of auditory memory. He will ask for example if the conversation was strong, sweet with a comparison with other auditory perceptions. By focusing on tactile perceptions (category 4) of episodic memory, the therapist can ask these kinds of questions: "Is this hot or cold?" These perceptions include: temperature, pressure/weight, discomfort/comfort, moisture and dryness on the skin, satiation/hunger...

review of the smell, taste and noises from the beginning of the session will allow the patient to directly re-experiment with memory without personal alteration, he will not evaluate it but re-experiment. The review of emotions and language will be done at the end of the session because these perceptions are likely to be evaluated and modified by the ego. As much as possible, the therapist should avoid mixing the different categories of memory perceptions. For example, when analyzing category 3, which is the memory of sounds, it would not be good to encourage the patient to focus on the content of a conversation he has heard, because this is what is then analyzed in category 8 (language). In category n°3, the therapist directs the

patient in the pure perception of auditory memory. He will ask for example if the conversation was strong, sweet with a comparison with other auditory perceptions. By focusing on tactile perceptions (category 4) of episodic memory, the therapist can ask these kinds of questions: "Is this hot or cold?" These perceptions include: temperature, pressure/weight, discomfort/comfort, moisture and dryness on the skin, satiation/hunger...

Category 5 reviews visual memory, it involves colors, shapes, patterns, brightness and darkness. It also refers to the visual perception of movements, such as a ball flying through the air or crowd movements. But this type of visual perception of movements must be distinguished from the movements felt by one's own body which are the movements that concern category n°6 involving the perception of physical movement (kinetics) retained by memory, both the personal movements of the individual and the movements of objects that directly influence the individual. For example, in a car, there will be the sensation of the body following the movements of the automobile in the corners as well as the accelerations and braking. If it is a memory of a walk in the street, it only concerns the movement of the body, unless it comes into contact with something. During a football match, where there is a lot of physical contact, there are the individual's own movements as well as those of the other players who will interfere and influence him. There may be some confusion of perceptions between categories 5 and 6. Personal movements fall under category 6, but a movement such as a bird's flight will fall under category 5. One way to deal with this confusion is to last address the perceptions of movements in category n°5 (on the visual), then to follow in this logic with category n°6. Category 7, that of emotions, is both the perception of the emotions of others and the subjective perception of one's own emotions. The patient may know his own subjective emotional reactions, but he cannot really know the subjective experiences of others. To prevent the patient from speculating about what people were actually feeling, the memory and perception of other people's emotions must be limited to describing their external expression such as that of the face, the tone of the voice and body language. With such physical indicators, the patient may be able to detect basic emotional responses such as anger, disgust, fear, joy, sadness, boredom, indifference and surprise. The patient should not focus on what was happening inside others, but only on their emotions displayed by the face, body and tone of voice. In this category n°7, the patient's perception of the emotions of others must therefore be objective, while the perception of his own emotions is subjective. The patient's own subjective emotional reactions can indeed be more complex. The patient must be allowed to describe his personal emotional reactions regardless of the memory he has chosen. The subjective emotions of the patient can be described with for example melancholy, optimism, perplexity, conflict, euphoria, anger, etc., while the description of the emotions of others is much simpler and more objective: for example, "He looked angry because his face was red", or "His face expressed a feeling of disgust". Category 8, the last, will deal with perceptions related to language and the meaning it takes. This phase is therefore more intellectual, here the patient is guided to focus on all the conversations that have taken place in this episodic memory. The patient will also focus on all the written things he has read in this episode as well as the meaning of visual symbols such as a road sign or a cross on a church bell tower.

Generally speaking, an episodic memory chosen for this type of work must be a positive memory. The patient can therefore choose to voluntarily program in his schedule a "happy" experience to be able to exploit it later in an A session. M.E.. For example, he may plan to go to a football game so that he can review this episodic memory a few days later in therapy. Recent memories, which are easy to remember, are a good choice, but old memories that are also easy to remember will work the same way. It is best to start with sessions dealing with recent memories, once the patient becomes comfortable with the process, then older memories can be exploited.

In one session, you can review a memory from the previous week and in the next session, review an episodic memory from two years ago. The A.M.E. procedure can be applied to any memory that the patient can reasonably remember. The more this process is applied, the more the patient's ability to remember his episodic memories will increase. With practice, the patient may even end up accessing memories from early childhood.

Some imperative rules to respect: it is essential that the patient has not consumed drugs or alcohol during the weeks or months preceding the A.M.E. sessions. It is also important that they avoid consuming caffeine-containing drinks before a session. He must have had a good night's sleep in order to have his full abilities. All treated memories should be positive, containing no loss of consciousness, pain and negative emotion.

Thus, the Fabian process will make it possible to indirectly evacuate the negative charge of hidden or repressed memories. A.M.E. acts as a catalyst, the feelings contained in repressed traumatic memories will rise to the surface in different ways, through dreams, drawings, flashbacks of traumatic memories, *etc.* This type of therapy does not dwell on the negative memories that arise, it simply allows it to emerge. It is the focus on the present life that makes it possible not to dwell on it.

c/ Extraversion exercises

Extraversion exercises will help the patient to get out of the painful memories of the past that may arise. The rise of traumatic memories can make the patient totally collapse, these exercises consist in bringing him back into the present moment to stabilize him. When practicing A. M.E., the therapist should always lead the patient to focus on positive memories, but if a negative memory goes back up or the patient gets angry for no apparent reason, he should use extraversion techniques to bring him back into the present moment. The basic principle is that any inappropriate negative emotion comes from a dislocation of time, that is, an event in the patient's past has made him angry, and today this anger can go back inappropriately to the therapist. In such a case, both the patient and the therapist must focus on the present moment and the present environment. The therapist may ask the patient to tell him the date of the day, write on a paper the place where he is at the present moment and describe the room by completely reviewing it. Then the patient can move around the room to touch things, name them, feel textures, *etc.* This can also be done outside during a walk. As already described above, these techniques of anchoring in the present moment use different perceptions such as sight, hearing, touch, etc. Walks, sports, gardening, *etc.,* are activities that will help the patient to focus his attention "here and now". This is an attitude and lifestyle to adopt, meaning that the patient must aim to be socially extroverted: he must develop a sense of security in his social relationships, which will help him not to remain focused "alone in his corner" on his past in a negative way. Extroversion is more than a therapeutic technique, it is a global attitude that will facilitate access to a balanced life.

During the sessions of A. M.E., through a review of episodic memories, the therapist leads the patient to reach a deep state of introversion (plunge into the past), but when this process is completed, it is important that the therapist brings the patient back into a state of extroversion: back to the present moment.

The patient undergoing Fabian therapy should not get stuck on the traumatic memories that may emerge during the process. Even if this is a sign that dissociated memories rise, when this happens, the patient must understand that throughout the therapy it is best to stay away from these memories. If there is a need for emotional release, he can use his cathartic diary to release these types of negative emotions. After this cathartic romp, the patient must return to the present moment.

According to Kerth Barker, Fabian therapy will heal the entire field of memory through all these therapeutic exercises aimed at working and intensely stimulating conscious memories. There are two aspects to this "field of memory": conscious or unconscious memories and the mental mechanisms that allow access to them. Fabian therapy restores, through an indirect process, the ability of the mind to access these traumatic memories while discharging it from negative "capsules".

d/ Semantic destimulation technique

Here the term "semantics" refers to the meaning of words and symbols used in MK programming. Words and symbols (graphic or gesture) that unconsciously push the victim towards an action or the repression of an action. Therefore the victim is enslaved by the stimulation of command words or symbols. To deprogram it semantically, we must reduce the power of these triggers. All these implemented commands systematically contain a negative emotional charge.

Let's take a woman with AN MK-Monarch type programming who has received an implemented order stating for example: "You are sexually at the service of anyone when your owner orders it to you". The lyrics of this command contain a negative emotional charge that was induced during the trauma and it is the inability to cope with this negative charge that forces the victim to unconsciously obey this programming. The keywords in this command phrase are ''sexually'', ''owner'' and ''orders''. The technique of semantic destimulation aims to unload this negative implantation little by little.

The therapist will create three lists of words, each list containing one of the order keywords, such as for example: angel, boat, coat, owner, porch, tree, waterfall. The therapist will then ask the patient to review the list and define each word with the help of a dictionary.
Then he is asked to invent sentences with each of the words in the list. The therapist will not pay any special attention to the command keywords, they will be treated in the same way as neutral words that do not stimulate any reaction. By doing this, the process will be able to influence memory and subtly discharge negative emotions from traumatic memory containing one of these command words. Semantic memory recall is the ability to understand and use words to communicate. In a sense, the MK programming process hijacks the callback function from semantic memory so that it can be used to

control the victim. However, by asking the patient to work on vocabulary, he will gradually regain complete control of his ability to recall semantic memory. The idea here is to strengthen this function in the patient. This will change the way it relates to the language contained in the memory field. A principle of Fabian therapy is that by increasing the memory abilities of the mind, you decrease the power of dissociated memories. By simply working with vocabulary and asking the patient to make sentences with words defined with a dictionary, you thus reduce the power of the implemented commands.

e/ Typical therapy session

In a typical Fabian therapy session, the patient sits in front of his therapist, each with a pencil and notebook in front of him to take notes. No hypnosis or altered state of consciousness is required. The therapist begins by asking the patient if something bothers him, which could possibly affect his concentration during the session. The patient can, if he wishes, bring his journal to share content with the therapist. The first exercise will be that of semantic destimulation described above. When the patient creates sentences with word lists, the therapist does not intervene, he remains attentive. Once this protocol is completed, a ten-minute break can be taken before starting the analysis of episodic memory, the A. M.E., which is the heart of the session and will last from thirty to forty-five minutes. At the end of the session, the therapist must make sure that the patient puts his feet back on the ground in the present moment, his attention must be focused in the here and now. The session may be followed by a walk outside to plan the next session. The frequency of sessions will depend on the emotional state of the patient. Generally, meetings can be done once a week. This can be spaced out up to once a month, but they can also be done daily if the patient deems it necessary. These sessions, while discharging traumatic memories will help to emotionally stabilize the patient and anchor him in the present moment.

f/ Advanced technique of A. M.E.

The A.M.E. technique described above is the classical protocol, relatively easy to understand and practice. But there are more advanced techniques, including a scheme for performing A.S. work. M.E much deeper.

This method uses a circle divided into eight equal sections forming a circular diagram, rays interspersed by eight concentric circles that divide this pie chart into equal sections. The eight rays represent the eight categories mentioned above: olfactory, gustatory, auditory, tactile, visual, kinetic, emotional and linguistic. While each concentric circle represents a period of the patient's life: the central circle represents the unconscious memories of the pre-natal period and birth, the other concentric circles symbolize the evolution from early childhood, adolescence, young adulthood, etc., to the last outer circle that represents the most recent life experiences.

This scheme will be used to help the therapist shift the patient's focus to different areas of his vast field of memory. It must be calm, deeply relaxed and without internal conflict during such a session. It is a question of guiding him in different areas of the circular scheme randomly. For example, the therapist may ask the patient to recall a recent happy memory by asking him to delve into a single perception of memory in one of the eight categories, such as the reminder of a smell for example. Then he will guide him on a memory located in a different time zone by choosing a different category of perception such as sight or language.

A classic session of A.M.E. intensely studies the memory of a single episodic memory with the eight perceptions associated with it. While this advanced technique of A. M.E., instead of intensely analyzing all the perceptions of an episode, will juggle from episode to episode by choosing each time only one category of perception of memory. So the patient will be able to remember the smell of a flower when he was gardening a week ago, then the taste of a corn cob from a picnic from 10 years ago, the feeling of cold rain following a hot day of hiking six months ago, and so on. This protocol should last about twenty minutes. You must have already practiced a lot of classical A.M.E. to be able to do this exercise which can sometimes allow access to memories of early childhood (non-traumatic) totally forgotten, or even to pre-natal memories.

7 - The Inner Castle (Thérèse d'Avila)

To conclude this chapter, here are some extracts from Thérèse d'Avila's masterpiece, "The Inner Castle" or "The Book of Mansions". It is a castle that metaphorically represents the human soul having to go through different successive levels in order to achieve perfection. Just as the programmer executioner incorporates obscure castles and dungeons in the inner world of mk slaves to keep the alter prisoners; here is an inner castle that gradually leads the human to the divine Union with his Creator. Perhaps the survivors can incorporate this castle into their inner world?

"Today, what will be the basis of this writing was offered to me: to consider our soul as a castle made entirely of a single diamond or very clear crystal. Consider that the castle has many mansions, some at the top, others at the bottom, others on the sides; and in the center, in the midst of all, is the main one, where the most secret things between God and the soul happen. You will find, I believe, consolation in reveling in this inner castle. You can enter and walk there at any time. The front door of this castle is the prayer. You should not imagine these mansions one after the other, as a row, but fix your gaze in the center. Let the soul therefore be abandoned in the hands of God, with the slightest possible concern for its progress.

Before I go any further, I would like to ask you to consider what one can feel at the sight of this castle so resplendent and so beautiful. This oriental pearl, this tree of life planted on the white waters of life. This water spreads in all homes and all powers. It is true that you cannot enter all the houses by your own forces, however great they seem to you, unless the Lord of the castle himself installs you there. He loves humility. And humility is walking in the truth. For self-knowledge is so necessary, that you can never do better (than to know yourself).

Although I am only talking about seven houses, they are numerous in each of them, at the bottom, at the top, on the sides with beautiful gardens, fountains, labyrinths... You will want to be drawn into the praise of the great God who created this castle in his image and likeness. I see nothing that can be compared to the great beauty of a soul and its vast capacity. Then he himself says that he created us in his image and likeness (Gen 1:26). However, if that is the case, and this is a fact, we have no reason to tire ourselves of trying to understand the beauty of this castle. Fix your gaze on the Crucified and everything will seem easy to you. He will not fail, one day or another, to call us to invite us to approach Him." (Excerpts) "The Inner Castle" - Saint Teresa of Avila

- There are many mansions in my Father's house - John 14:2

Chapter 9

Mind Control in the Entertainment Industry

> "I learned that just below the surface, there's another world, and then still different worlds when you dig even deeper. I knew this when I was a kid, but I couldn't find proof of it. It was just like a feeling. There is kindness in the blue sky and flowers, but another strength, a wild and decadent pain, also accompanies the whole thing."
>
> David Lynch

1 - Introduction

The ancient druids used the sacred branches of holly to make their magic wands through which they channeled and amplified powers... Holly was a symbol of death and resurrection, eternal life and fertility, all dating back to the time of Nimrod and the Great Babylon. The Babylon of Nimrod is associated with slavery and the cult of world government (Nimrod being recognized by the Freemasons as the first "Grand Master").

Each year the Academy Awards (an absolute symbol of Hollywood culture) are held at the Dolby Theater (formerly known as the Kodak Theater before the group's bankruptcy in 2012) located on Hollywood Boulevard in Los Angeles. Adjacent to the theatre is the Hollywood & Highland Center, also known as the Babylon Courtyard. It is a huge shopping center whose décor reproduces exactly the ancient Babylon of a 1916 film entitled "Intolerance". By visiting the place, we can discover four monumental columns surmounted by elephants standing on their hind legs, surrounding a gigantic arch with the representations of two curious mythical characters: Enki, a Sumerian god, and the Assyrian god Nisroch... The stage is set for a temple of consumption dedicated to Hollywood...

If you want to see the ancient Babylonian system at work today, look no further than Hollywood: The Sacred Wood; in reference to the holly wood used by the druids to shape their magic tools. Today, Hollywood is the nerve centre of global film and television propaganda, the magic wand plunging people into illusion, bewitching them even with its charms...

The viewer who watches a film will unconsciously encode in him behaviors that he will reproduce or at least that he will integrate as a possibility of behavior to adopt. Hollywood scenarios inject into the minds of viewers thoughts, behaviors and attitudes that therefore become things that can potentially be reproduced in this or that situation, just as the actor did... but it turns out that an actor is paid to reproduce emotions and behaviors that become human as a result... even if they are totally deviant and inhumane. The scenarios (from Hollywood to reality TV) thus encode in the matrix of potentials, it is a form of global programming.

This analysis may seem to be an aberration as people think that their critical mind systematically watches and that all these productions do not influence them in any way, as they say: "It's only cinema". But as we saw in the first chapter, social engineering is a key to mind control over the masses, and cinema contributes greatly to conditioning them through "cultural psychiatry": the art of propaganda aimed at systematically targeting the subconscious of the masses. Television series and reality television, just like cinema, literally imprint in the minds of young people behaviours to be integrated and reproduced. These are real doctrines indirectly dried up via scenarios in the form of a "simple entertainment", whether humorous or totally horrifying, these two things mixing today in a very unhealthy way (ever more attractive and addictive productions). Lifestyles are therefore programmed in the scripts of the entertainment industry before they really incarnate in everyday life, people unfortunately monkeying what they consume all the time on their screens, big or small. The sorcerers-controllers master this, they thus program the youth and encode their doctrines in brains previously cooked in order to prepare the world of tomorrow...

The entertainment industry seems to be particularly affected by occultism and mind control, this is probably due to the fact that of all the industries, it is this one that exposes itself the most publicly; so inevitably flaws appear in the spotlight and sometimes suggest the symptoms of trauma and programming. In addition, as we will see, the music and fashion industry takes a malignant pleasure in exposing to the public an ever more explicit MK symbolism. This entertainment industry plays an essential role in the mind control of the masses, so it must itself be perfectly controlled and connected to the spirit world to channel and diffuse the "Luciferian light" here on earth. Artists destined for world glory must therefore be perfect mediums and perfect puppets used to infuse this "light" into the mass. Trauma-based mental programming is the ideal tool for this. We are all victims of mental control to varying degrees but the celebrities of show business are surely the ones who are the most. Their opulence and degenerate behaviors are highlighted in the media so that we envy their way of life and consume their productions, not knowing that to obtain such a situation, they are under the yoke of absolute physical, psychic and spiritual servitude. The traumas they endure are often expressed through their globally disseminated art, so everyone may be indirectly traumatized... and they call it entertainment...

2 - Paedocriminality in show business

The little stars who are introduced into the "Hollywood system", often go through all kinds of trauma and abuse. It is now becoming very clear that child sexual abuse is not something anecdotal in Hollywood and that, overall, it is the whole of show business that is seriously affected. It is a very widespread phenomenon, a kind of "epidemic" transmitted like a vampire bite.

In August 2011, during an interview *on the show Nightline* on the American channel *ABCNews, the former child star actor* Corey

Feldman, the hero of the *Goonies,* denounced: *"Ican tell you that the number one problem in Hollywood hasbeen, is and will always be pedophilia. This is the biggest problem for children in this industry... All this is done discreetly, it is the great secret* (**...**) *There are so many people who grew up in this industry and have been immersed in it for so long that they feel above the law. This has to change, it has to stop."*

Feldman also reveals this in his autobiography entitled ''Coreyography'' released in 2014. He stated that when he was 14, he was literally surrounded by paedophiles. He then did not realize what these "vultures" really were and this
that they wanted until he was older... but the damage was done...

In 2008, he and his friend Corey Haim, had already revealed in the reality series*"Two Corey"* **that they had been raped in a meeting. In 2011, Alison Arngrim, the actress who played the "blonde plague" Nellie Oleson in the series** *"The little house in the meadow",* **will also confirm that the two Coreys were indeed abused in the 80s. Here's what she told** *FoxNews: "What he was saying to himself at the time was that they had been drugged to be sexually abused. It's horrible, they were kids who weren't of age yet. There are all kinds of stories about them, for example that they would have been sexually abused and totally corrupted by every conceivable means possible, and this by people who were normally supposed to watch over them* **(...)** *There's not just one person to blame, I'm sure there was only one person to rape Corey Haim, and they certainly weren't the only ones to suffer this stuff. I am sure that dozens of people who were aware of the situation had chosen to keep* **quiet! 530! ."**

Alison Arngrim, a member and spokesperson for *protect.org,* **an organization for the protection of children from physical and sexual abuse, also confides that all this Hollywood lust allows sexual predators to flourish there:** *"No one wants to stop this horror,"* **she explains,** *"It is almost a voluntary sacrifice of their children that many parents unconsciously make* **(...)** *I have heard victims across the country. All of them tell the same kind of stories and they are all threatened... Corey Feldman may have opened a Pandora's* *box by finally daring to talk about it, but it must not stop* **therei531! ."**

In 2010, Allison Arngrim herself revealed in her autobiography ''Confessions of a Prairie Bitch'' the sexual abuse she herself suffered in
his childhood.

Another child star from another era confirms that Hollywood has long had a problem with child abuse and sexual abuse. This is Paul Peterson, the star of Donna Reed's show, a popular sitcom from the 50s and 60s. He told *FoxNews: "When I saw this interview* **(editor's note: of Corey Feldman),** *a whole series of names and faces about my own story came to mind* **(...)** *Some of* **these people,** *whom I know very well, are still in the circuit* **(...)** *From my point of view, Corey has been very brave. It would be truly wonderful if these allegations could cross the different levels of protection to lead to a real identification of these people. Those who are part of the child pornography network of this world, this network is huge and has no borders, just as it has no age limit for children*[532].

Martin Weiss, a Hollywood casting agent, was charged in 2011 with sexually abusing a child under the age of 12. The victim reportedly told authorities that Weiss told him that what he was doing was "a common practice in the entertainmentindustry! 533! .''

Another predator of the Hollywood network is Jason James Murphy, also a casting agent, arrested for kidnapping and raping a child. Murphy had recruited young actors for the productions of "Bad News Bears", "The School of Rock", "Cheaper by the Dozen II" and "Three Stooges".

Fernando Rivas, the award-winning director for the very popular series ''Sesame Street'', has been charged with possession and distribution of paedo-pornographic images as well as sexual coercion of a child...

In 2004, actor Brian Peck, who starred in the films X-Men and Living Dead, was sentenced to 16 months in prison for sexually abusing a child actor. He was the coach of the children's channel

Nickelodeon. The documentary entitled ''An Open Secret'' (Amy Berg, 2015) tells the story of five victims who claim to have been raped when they attended major Hollywood film studios as children. The documentary states that Brian Peck was initially charged with the following charges: obscene act on a child, sodomy of a person under the age of 16, attempted sodomy of a person under the age of 16, sexual penetration with an object, oral copulation of a person under the age of 16, oral copulation with anesthesia or substance control.

The shocking documentary ''An Open Secret'' also contains the testimony of Todd Bridges, the Willy from the famous series ''Arnold and Willy'', who was sexually abused from the age of 11. It also includes interviews with Michael Egan who accuses the X-Men film production manager, Bryan Singer, of raping him.

The famous Bill Cosby of the "Cosby Show" is also accused of sexually abusing minors by dozens of women. The scandal erupted in 2014 when former supermodel Janice Dickinson publicly revealed that Bill Cosby had drugged her and then raped her in 1982. Actress Barbara Bowman also accused her of sexual assault as a teenager, as did actress Andrea Constand. A bust of the actor was even unsealed from Disney's Hollywood Studios park in Florida following all these disturbing accusations...

Actress Mia Farrow and her adopted daughter Dylan have publicly stated that Woody Allen raped Dylan when she was 7 years old. Woody Allen who married in 1997 with his adopted daughter Soon-Yi... Actress Susan Sarandon said on *The Daily Best: "I think he completely destroyed his family in a filthy way, and washed his hands of it afterwards. He's always had a reputation for loving young girls, I mean really young girls. And then, this woman, Soon-Yi was very vulnerable. I think it was hard for the kids, and especially for Mia. You can't do that kind of thing. You just can't. "*

We can also cite the case of the director Roman Polanski accused (but never convicted) of raping a 13-year-old girl, Samantha Geimer. One day in March 1977, she found herself in Jack Nicholson's home in Los Angeles, for a photo shoot with Polanski. He made her drink champagne, gave her a sedative, and then abused her. That evening, on her way home, Samatha wrote in her diary: "Roman Polanski took a picture of me today. He raped me,[534]!"

In 2003 in the show "Tout le monde en parle" by Thierry Ardisson, the obscure singer Marilyn Manson tells how as a child, he discovered sexuality in his grandfather's cellar... He describes that in this cellar were female lingerie, coated with vaseline in his own words, and zoophile photos... Marilyn Manson concluded about her grandfather by saying, "You see, when I was a kid, my grandfather seemed monstrous to me. but growing up, I realized that my grandfather was. bah I'm like him, so he's not that bad.'' Why then did his grandfather seem monstrous to him? Why did he later become like him? Marilyn Manson most likely experienced ritual abuse as a child. In his piece entitled "Disassociative", he describes his dissociated states: "I could never get out of there, I don't just want to float in fear like an astronaut who died in space." The sad reality of monarch slaves.

The situation of the entertainment industry in England is also very worrying. Indeed the testimony of the former child star Ben Fellows is overwhelming. He participated in many series and television shows when he was little, now an adult, he denounces how drugs and partouzes, including with minors, are the norm in this world of show business: "In*fact, in all the productions in which I was involved, whether at the BBC or other television channels, and even in the theater, I was a target in one way or another. Looking back, it would not be an exaggeration to say that the problem is both institutional and systemic in the entertainment industry* ***(...)*** *After a hearing for a Coca Cola commercial, the police went to my parents' house. They warned my mother that I had unsophisticatedly become a potential target for a known paedophile network never dismantled). Indeed, it appeared that this very well-known casting director had taken pictures of me shirtless, and that these photos had then ended up in what was described as a catalog that was passed on to other pedophiles in society, but also to external pedophiles!* ***535].***"

Ben Fellows has worked extensively for the *BBC,* **the English**

television channel that found itself at the centre of a huge paedocriminal scandal involving many celebrities following the Jimmy Savile affair. In 2013, during a protest against the *Bilderberg group,* **Ben Fellows publicly stated at a press conference:** " *When they said that Jimmy Savile was the only pedophile on the BBC... I myself was a child of the BBC*... *and I can tell you that there are plenty of pedophiles at the BBC!! Bbc children are run by paedophiles!! When I went to the auditions, they asked me to take off my top and pretend to lick an ice cream* **(...)** *I was drugged, got drunk, and don't think it was a line of coke in the toilet... It was in milkshake... They would put this drug in it to give you fishing during the shows... I was taken to Esther Rantzen's house and we were given alcohol and drugs when we were kids!! And she also has children! Was she interviewed by the police? Was she questioned?! No... Jimmy Savile must have died before we opened the file..."*

Jimmy Savile, the unmissable star of the English small screen, appreciated by the general public, ennobled by the Queen Mother, close to Margaret Thatcher and friend of Prince Charles, has proved to be a real "devil on legs" following the avalanche of revelations that were made after his death in 2011. Savile raped hundreds of children and teenagers, both in his dressing room and in the BBC offices (there are more than 340 charges against him). The BBC has been accused of clearly closing its eyes to the crimes of its star presenter. The actress Julie Fernandez says for example that she was raped at the age of 14 by Savile in "a room full of people", she says[536]...

In 2007, a complaint had already been filed against Savile. A private detective, Mark Williams-Thomas, conducted an investigation for 12 years and he spoke to several of the victims of the man who was for 42 years the star of the show Top of the Pops. His investigation served as the basis for a short documentary denouncing Savile's perverse and criminal actions ("The Other Side of Jimmy Savile'', 2012"). The documentary was bought by the BBC, which had obviously decided not to broadcast it because it involved executives of the channel, and also because the BBC was preparing a Christmas show to the glory of its favorite presenter: Jimmy Savile.

Savile even had free access to schools, orphanages and hospitals as part of his "charities". The Duncroft Boarding School, the Leeds Hospital, the Stoke Mandeville Hospital, were among others part of his hunting grounds. He had even obtained in 1988 a position as team leader in the Broadmoor psychiatric hospital of which he held the keys! He also had his friend Alan Franey appointed to the management.

Savile's nephew, Guy Marsden, also testified. He explains that he was 13 years old in 1967 when Savile took him to London to the villa of a celebrity of the moment "for the first of a series of sordid social gatherings". For 18 months,
Marsden and other children were taken to many parties where these boys, the youngest of whom were about ten years old, were raped by menl537! .

The Savile case also contains testimonies of ritual abuse with torture and murder. Dr. Valerie Sinason, president of the Psychotherapy and Disability Institute in London, told the Sunday Express that she had a patient who was ritually abused by Savile and others at Stoke Mandeville Hospital in 1975 while staying there as a patient. The latter says that she was taken to a very uncrowded place in the hospital, ending up in the basements, in a room full of candles. Several adults were present, including Jimmy Savile who, like the others, wore a dress and a mask. She recognized him because of her distinct voice and because of her blond hair protruding from the mask. According to her, he was not the leader of the group. She was assaulted, raped and beaten. Therapist Sinason first had contact with this victim in 1992. In 1993, a second victim contacted him saying that she had been "loaned" for sexual favours at a party in a London villa in 1980. She says that the first part of the evening began with an, but then she was directed to another room to find Savile who played the role of a kind of master of ceremonies in the middle of a group of people wearing dresses and masks and singing, according to her, in Latin. The young victim was then an adult, but she obviously suffered greatly from this sexual abuse[538].

Following the first revelations of satanic ritual abuse at *Stoke Mandeville Hospital,* another 50-year-old victim, who was only 13 years old at the time of the incident, contacted the Sunday *Express* to testify: *"I was taken to a dark cellar and put in front of three men in a circle, there was in front of me a man sitting in the middle on a throne wearing a shiny dress, with a cigar in his mouth. Two other men stood on either side of him, wearing blue robes and masks* **(...)** *I was forced to stand, dressed in a white dress with nothing underneath, facing this throne while this man watched me blowing the smoke of his cigar on my face to make me sick, I was terrified* **(...)** *Around this circle, which was slightly raised, were men and women dressed in black dresses and wearing different masks* **(...)** *I was then taken by the man with the cigar, whom I recognized as Jimmy Savile, to an altar where my white dress was removed to attach myself to it* **(...)** *Savile then climbed onto the altar to rape me. The other participants shouted Satan's name and laughed hysterically, franticallyt539}."*

Another young woman testified about the criminal acts of Jimmy Savile and his clique: "I have nothing to prove to anyone, but I would like to participate in exposing the violence and corruption that can flourish at the highest level in Western democracies. (...) I made an official statement that was corroborated by two other witnesses, saying that Savile was involved in rape and ritual murder in the 80s and 90s. I know this because I was a "favorite". I have suffered a lot of rapes, filmed or not. I had dissociated states, personalities and talents that attracted all tastes.' This witness recalls ceremonies that took place all over England, with child rapes, orgies, torture and ritual murders of children. At the age of 4, she would have met Savile when she had already experienced many times the same rituals. She then saw him many, manytimes! 540]...

3 - Some quotes...

a/ Personality disorders

"When I was a child, I didn't have my own "Me". Growing up, I lived through people that I played by losing myself in different parts of my personality. " - Angelina Jolie - "The Story of the World's Most Seductive Star'', Rhona Mercer, 2009, chap.1

"You can never pay enough money to cure this feeling of being broken, of being in confusion." Winona Ryder

- Roseanne Barr :

In 2013, in Abby Martin's show on the Russia Today channel, the actress Roseanne Barr (from the famous American series "Roseanne") did not go out of his way to expose the situation regarding the Hollywood system...

"I think fear is cultivated there, there are no more frightened than these people from Hollywood. They fear for their career, they fear that they will no longer be at the top of the pyramid, even if they may only be in the middle... You know Hollywood is a system that retains its power structures with all its culture of racism and sexism. They feed this continuously and make a lot of money from it. They are at the orders of their masters who direct everything. I am lucky to be able to talk about it, but I feel that I am doing it on behalf of everyone. Sometimes I go to parties in Hollywood, there I meet people, and some of them, great celebrities, take me by the arm to take me to a corner and say, "I just want to thank you for everything you say." It touches me a lot, but we are clearly dealing with a culture of fear. You know, there's also a great culture of mind control, MK-Ultra mind control reigns in Hollywood. Mental programming is the rule in Hollywood.''

We could not be clearer! She said on the same Russia Today show shortly after: "Some time ago, we talked here about mind control, the MK-Ultra. I've touched on this here before, but what I didn't say is that this kind of mind control works so that people never report the real culprits. Rather than pointing the finger at what could help us... They will never denounce the guilty...''

Roseanne Barr is one of the few people in Hollywood brave enough to talk about the most sensitive problem, that of Monarch-type mental programming. In this television interview with Abby Martin, she makes it clear that many stars don't express themselves because they simply can't, their personalities being split and under the control of people who run their lives from A to Z.

Roseanne says she was a victim herself and publicly stated in 1994 that she had a dissociative identity disorder. She revealed the difficulties she faced with the transitions between "someone" and "person", which are the names of two of her alter personalities. Her other alters are Baby, Cindy, Susan, Joey and Heather. The former queen of the sitcom is struggling to keep to herself what has been afflicted to her since childhood. It was in an interview given to Esquire magazine that she confided that it took her ten years of hard therapeutic work to merge her different personalities. ''I did not have a blackout (editor's note: amnesia) for a long time because I used to have them permanently (editor's note: a connection - co-consciousness - between all the alter) (...) There has always been a conflict with the contradictory parties in me, but I have learned to get them to listen to each other. I learned to make sure that they know that they are in the same team and that we live in the same body, something we did not know before (...) It's like living in a maze. but the alters do not get along and some of them have really strange ways to defend themselves[541]...''

This is not the first time that Roseanne Barr has publicly denounced MK programming during an appearance in a major media. On August 16, 2001, in an interview on CNN[542] with journalist Larry King, she said:

- Larry King: Well, some people think that what you've had, or still have, is a serious psychological disorder.

- Roseanne Barr: I like how you go about it...

- LK: Others think it's just a psychological trend...

- RB: A trend?

- LK: They wonder if this disorder was induced intentionally or if it occurred naturally.

- RB: Well, I have a psychologist who says he was intentionally induced. The CIA began working on this after bringing some Nazis back to the United States to take charge of the American Psychiatric Association.

- LK: What do you mean?

- RB: I'm telling you the truth. It's manipulation on their part, it's research to create people with multiple personalities.

- LK: So you were captured by the Nazis?

- RB: By the government, in a way. I think the government has put a kind of chip in my head.

(•••)

- LK: Let me read you a passage from Esquire magazine that quotes a page from your newspaper. Do you write notes about yourself?

- RB: Of course, I have thousands and thousands.

- LK: Thousands of notebooks?

- RB: Yes.

- LK: Well, here's this excerpt: "This is my life, my real story in Hollywood. It is the story of a woman with many and many facets: a woman, a young poet, a dancer, an actress, a singer, a freedom fighter, a warrior, a messenger, a performer, a mother, a mistress, a woman, an actress, a producer, a pioneer director, an autistic child, a survivor of post-traumatic shock, a borderline bipolar, an overweight woman, a woman with Tourette syndrome and a multiple personality disorder, a victim of psychiatry, an obsessive-compulsive, an implantation of false memories, a heretical witch, an old bique... Choose. There are 300 diagnoses showing that doctors are my only friends."

- RB: It's true that doctors are my dearest friends.

(•••)

- LK: You never get angry with God who would have afflicted you all this, when your multiple personalities take over?

- RB: No because I believe God. Honestly I believe that God gives you a multiple personality when there is too much stress impossible to bear in your life. It is a gift for a child.

- LK: So something else can take over during extreme stress?

- RB: Yes.

- LK: Are there other people experiencing this?

- RB: Yes. but I mean it's not us who are out of wrapped. It's where we are that's out of control, so we have to adapt to it.

- Joan Baez :

In 1992, the famous singer Joan Baez wrote a song, "Play Me Backwards", in reference to the satanic messages that would be encoded in some records. She herself states that this piece is about satanic ritual abuse. Is it an autobiographical song? Here are some explicit verses:

You don't have to go to hell to feel the curse of the devil...

I saw them light the candles, I heard them beating the drum.

A man with a mask removes my clothes.

Mom, I'm icy and I have nowhere to run away.

I pay for protection, I filter the truth of the lie.

In pursuit of memories, Recovering evidence.

I would stand in front of your altar and say everything I know.

I came to claim my childhood at the chapel of the (sacrificed) baby Rose.

In 2004 at a concert in Charlottesville, Joan Baez told her audience that she had a multiple personality and that one of her alters was a 15-year-old black teenager named Alice. Journalist Ronald Bailey reports how he was stunned to see this rich and famous white folk singer transform into a poor black teenager from Arkansas giving her opinion on the ongoing presidential elections. The journalist reports that his accent, his patois and his attitude were just perfect, all that was missing was the skin colour of Alice's face[543].

- Britney Spears :

In January 2008, TMZ.com reported about Britney Spears: "Some sources depict a very disturbing painting of Britney Spears... We are told that she sometimes has a British accent... but this is much more than just a British accent, Britney would have multiple personalities, besides some people around her call her "the English girl". We have been told that when Britney Spears loses her British personality, she has absolutely no idea what she did during the time she had that personality. Another source tells us that Brit' has a number of other identities like ''the crying girl'', ''the diva'', ''the incoherent'', etc... ''

Britney Spears explains: "This alter takes over when I'm on stage, she's really wild and daring. She's a much more impulsive artist than I am. Its name is ''Britannia''. When she is present, I feel that the world belongs to me whereas usually I am rather shy.'

In 2008, Britney Spears abruptly broke up. She shaved her head with scissors and when asked why she had done this, she said she was tired of people touching her and that she didn't want things inserted into her anymore.

Was it a deterioration in programming? Indeed, when they reach a certain age, amnesic walls tend to dissolve, which can totally unbalance the person.

After this episode, she was interned at the Promises clinic in Malibu where she registered a 666 on her bald skull and shouting that she was the Anti-Christ, this before trying to hang herself with a sheet...

She then found herself under guardianship, which means that her father (and her "fiancé") then take full power over her life, her food, her clothing, her bank account and her medical care. Since her psychiatric internment, Britney and all her property have been entirely under the control of her masters. She is now described by those around her as "a doll who is told everything she has to do". An article from the
Sun dated 2011 describes Britney as a robotic zombie who has totally lost control over her career (she probably never had control of it). To

be clearer, Britney is under mental control, she is a person completely manipulated by her masters/managers. She is not the only one in this situation but it simply became more obvious and transparent when she reached her thirties, the age when Monarch slaves usually experience violent shots. In the same year, 2011, stars Nickeloedon and Amanda Bynes had the same kind of behavior leading them to a psychiatric hospital.

- Amanda Bynes :

Actress Amanda Bynes, like Britney Spears, was diagnosed with bipolar disorder. Official diagnoses of dissociative identity disorder are rare, especially in V.I.P... Indeed, the T.D.I. on which the MK programming is based is not supposed to be detected or even supposed to exist. If a personality disorder begins to emerge and cause damage, it will instead be diagnosed as borderline disorder, narcissistic disorder, bipolar disorder being the most classic diagnosis among celebrities of which here are some examples: Catherine Zeta-Jones, Jim Carrey, Tim Burton, Chris Brown, Axl Rose, DMX, Francis Ford Coppola, Linda Hamilton, Mel Gibson, Sinead O'Connor, Georges Michael, Brooke Shields, Carrie Fisher, Hugh Laurie, Maurice Benard, Jean Claude Van Damme, Ben Stiller, Owen Wilson, Winona Ryder, Rosie O'Donnell, Patty Duke. and many more...

Amanda Bynes was hospitalized in 2013 (it was not the first time) for severe mental disorders and according to doctors "schizophrenic tendencies", i.e. a severe personality disorder. The psychiatric hospital stated that she was aware that there was a "good Amanda" and a bad Amanda in her home. When she talked about the evil Amanda, she at the same time made exorcism mimics, shooting at her body and hitting herself as if to extricate the demon in her. During this hospitalization, Amanda asked for news of her dog that she had sprayed with gasoline a few days earlier... The staff tried to reassure her that he was safe with her parents; that's when Amanda became hysterical, she screamed for more than an hour: "They're going to kill him! Just as they tried to kill me!'' ... She was so unleashed that she had to be physically subdued[544].

Foxnews reported during this hospitalization that "the drug had nothing to do with it (editor's note: the analyses were negative) and that it was only a mental disorder (...) It was deep anger and severe post-traumatic stress that triggered this psychotic episode[545].

The stressful life of Hollywood will be the official explanation for his post-traumatic stress. and his deep anger...

In October 2014, Amanda Bynes was again hospitalized in psychiatry following a series of tweets she had posted. Her shocking statements she made on the social network Tweeter clearly describe the symptoms of an MK slave: sexual abuse from an early age by her father as well as "brainwashing". His tweets were quickly removed, but screenshots[546] from internet users revealed:

- I need to tell the truth about my father

- My father abused me physically and verbally when I was a child.

- So let me live my own life free from sadness and misery.

- I would no longer be manipulated, there would be no brainwashing by anyone, never again.

- I can no longer hear the sound of his incestuous voice, no more never and I just want to be honest.

- So today I'm going to see a lawyer to file a complaint against my father.

- My mother is aware that my father raped his own daughter and she never called the police, when I could have had him arrested and put in jail for the rest of his perverse life.

Within hours, the tweets were removed and Bynes was again hospitalized in psychiatry... This case reminds us of the attempted denunciation made by a French model that we saw in the introduction to chapter 7, a woman who also found herself committed to a psychiatric hospital. Like Britney Spears, Amanda Bynes was interned under California's 5150-ed law which means that an individual can be forcibly hospitalized with usually strong anti-psychotic medication. Is Bynes following the same path as Britney

Spears? One thing is certain, this trend towards "psychotic episodes" and psychiatric internments is very present and is repeated again and again in this entertainment industry.

- Nicki Minaj :

In 2011, Nicki Minaj told V magazine: ''I just always want to act as ''Me'', but ''Me'' changes every day. I would dry out and die if I had to wake up to be the same person every day. I wouldn't leave these voices in silence anymore, I just let them speak.''

Nicki Minaj had a very troubled childhood, especially by the incessant conflicts between her father and mother. She told *New York* magazine: *''To get out of this violence, I imagined I was another person. ''Cookie'' was my first identity that stayed with me for a while. Then it was ''Harajuku Barbie'', then ''Nicki Minaj.''*

She also cites the alter-egos: ''Roman Zolanski'', ''Martha'' and “Nicki Teresa”.

In 2010, in an MTV documentary entitled "My Time Now", the singer talks about the birth of her alter Roman:

- Nicki Minaj: Roman is a crazy boy who lives in me, he says some things that I would never want to say. He was born just a few months ago. I think it was rage that gave birth to it... It was conceived in rage, so it denigrates everyone and it even threatens to hit people. He is violent.

- Reporter: It must be nice to have a big unconscious mouth with which you can blame everything!

- Nicki Minaj: He wants to be blamed but I don't want to blame him. I ask him to leave, but he can't, he's there for a good reason. People made him emerge, people made an incantation for him and so he won't leave.

At the 2012 Grammy Awards, the closing show was a show by Nicki Minaj featuring the exorcism of her alter Roman. At the beginning of the show, Nicki is in a confessional where she seems to be possessed. All her performance is only a representation of a Catholic exorcism aimed at delivering her from her inner demon: Roman. An artistic performance becoming a kind of mainstream black mass, glorifying the demonic entity that is in it. She later said on Ryan Seacrest's radio show: "The people around Roman say he's not good enough, because he can't blend in with the average. His mother and those around him are afraid of it because they have never seen anything like him. He wants to prove that he is an incredible person but also that he has confidence in himself, that he is sure of himself. But he will never change, he will never be exorcised, even when he is sprinkled with holy water, he always recovers from it.'

It is possible that Nicki Minaj invented her different personalities and her inner demon Roman solely for artistic purposes, but it is interesting to observe how this culture of "multiple personalities" is transmitted to the public, to the secular world, during a stage performance affecting millions of people... His alter Roman, whether fictitious, whether it is a fragment of truly dissociated personality or a demonic entity, is therefore represented in the eyes of the public as an independent and autonomous identity that takes possession of the singer's body and that can be driven away by an exorcism. This is a way of making demonic possession and trauma-stricken, glamorous and trendy, in other words of infusing a culture of death into popular culture in the form of entertainment.

- Eminem :

Rapper Eminem also says he has another personality living in him, he calls it Slim Shaddy, on his website he says: "Slim Shaddy is just the demon in my head, I think I shouldn't think about it."

In his song "Low Down Dirty", he writes: "Because my split personality has an identity crisis. I am Dr. Hyde and Mr. Jekyll, disrespectful. Hearing voices in my head with these whispers echoing.'' Or "All these fucking voices in my head, I can't take it anymore" in his song "Elevator".

Without a doubt, a certain milieu of the music industry displays "multiple personalities" as something trendy... Would having a bunch of alter-egos all more crazy than each other become a fashion ?... This is how the sorcerers-controllers infuse their culture of MK and occultism in the secular world: by its popularization and its trivialization. The mass that applauds and asks for more is therefore corrupted with something highly occult serving beyond the spectacle and glitter for a real enslavement of the human. We will come back to this later.

It may also be that an alter of a truly split and programmed subject can himself have fun presenting several personalities in front of his audience, playing on different names and different characters, while his real alternation of personalities does not depend on him, but on the goodwill of his programmer or his masters.

- Christina Aguilera :

In 2002, Christina Aguilera released her album "Stripped" under the name of her hypersexualized alter personality: Xtina. Just like Janet Jackson who will reveal her sulfurous alter Damita Jo in 2004. In 2006, mtv.com published an article entitled: ''Christina's New Split-Personality Album Is Mature And 'Dirrty''. For Christina Aguilera, it is also about post-traumatic stress disorder and borderline personality disorder.

- Rihanna :

''The more naked I am, the more I have confidence in myself'', here is a statement from the famous star on an American TV set. Psychologist Jo Hemmings said of him: ''The *Rihanna's unpredictable behavior could indicate that she suffers from a narcissistic personality disorder. The symptoms are an exaggerated sense of the importance of her own existence, and a constant need for admiration, which Rihanna testifies to by posting photos of her on Twitter half naked. If she does indeed suffer from this pathology, with psychological help, she could identify this disorder that destroys her and get* **better! 547! .**''

- Miley Cyrus :

Perhaps the most hypersexualized and disgmated star of the moment, Miley Cyrus, who began her career as a child on *Disney Channel* in the series *Hannah Montana.* Cyrus explains in *Marie Claire* magazine: *"You're a pop star! It means you have to be blonde, have long hair and wear tight, glittery stuff. Me during that time, I was a little girl fra.gile who played a 16-year-old a.d.o with a wig and tons of ma.quilla.ges* **(...)** *For a long time, every day I was made beautiful, and when I wasn't on set I thought to myself: "fucking, but who am I?" I was formatted to look like someone I am pa,s*[548].

According to Nicole Knepper, an influential teen behavior psychologist and blogger in the United States, Miley Cyrus may suffer from a personality disorder, which would explain her very questionable behaviors (hypersexuality, lack of control of her impulses, sudden change in mood and drug use). Nicole Knepper told *Ra.darOnline: "These are not normal behaviours. Even for those who are rich and famous!* **(...)** *I am not saying that Miley Cyrus is necessarily suffering from a mood disorder, I am simply saying that a person who has this type of behavior and has* **these** *symptoms has something to worry about and this necessarily leads to questions about the causes* **(...)** *Someone who shows a rapid change in mood, has insomnia, consumes alcohol regularly, talks without any restraint about sex, drugs and alcohol, it is alarming and these are warning signs that announce something much more* **serious! 549]."**

In 2014, Miley Cyrus was interned in a psychiatric hospital. The media then explained that it was the death of his dog some time before that had deeply destabilized him... At the same time that she was hospitalized, he released a particularly crazy psychedelic video clip featuring her as a drug addict with a brainwashed: "Blonde SuperFreak Steals the Magic Brain" (an official production), in which she screams from the first minute: "Where has my fucking brain gone!!"

- Mary J. Blige :

Singer Mary J. Blige will say about her alter "Brook": "I had to separate the two because Mary is kind and intelligent, while Brook is crazy, ignorant, she doesn't care about everything… Mary is calm, the savage is Brook[550].

Mary J. Blige stated publicly on *The Oprah Winfrey Show* **that she was sexually abused as a child and suffered severe mental disorders:** *"I have been abused and I have abused myself***...** *I was tired of life... I was suicidal, ready to kill myself. I hated my image, I hated the sound of my voice, I totally hated myself."*

- Beyoncé :

Beyonce has publicly displayed another personality whom she names "Sacha Fierce". Here is what she has said about this in several media:

''When I see a video of myself on stage or on television, I think to myself''Who is this girl? It's not me, I would never dare to do that.'' - Beyonce, 2003.

''I wouldn't want Sacha if I met her behind the scenes'' - Beyonce, Parade Magazine 2006.

''I wouldn't want Sacha if I met her behind the scenes'' - Beyonce, Parade Magazine 2006.

''I have someone else who takes over when it's time for me to work and when I'm on stage. This alter ego protects me and what I really am[551].

''Sasha Fierce's account is ruled, I killed him.'' Beyonce, Allure Magazine 2010

- Laurieann Gibson :

Choreographer Laurieann Gibson, known for her work with Lady Gaga, began a singing career in 2014. The presentation to the public of his alter named "Harlee" was done in a very special way. She introduced this alter personality to the media scene with a one-minute mini-video clip showing Harlee injured and sequestered in gloomy and morbid basements, her executioners being two men who rape her and spray her with a jet of water under high pressure… This video in which she does not sing (strange for a singing career promotion) is entitled "Harlee coming soon!" (Harlee arrives) !) ... Maybe that's how alter Harlee was born. in basements and trauma.

- Lady Gaga :

Stefani Joanne Angelina Germanotta, better known as Lady Gaga, names her alter personalities: ''Jo Calderone'', ''Mother Monster'' and ''Gypsy Queen''. When Jo Calderone appears, Gaga is dressed as a man and she behaves exactly like a manly macho. In 2011, at the MTV Video Music Awards, Jo Calderone appeared publicly on stage stating:

''I'm Jo, Joe Calderone, and it seems like I'm a swollen man. gaga? The other one there. She dared to leave me! She says it's always the same with guys, including me. Obviously, I'm a guy, a real one. It seems that we are all tarnished. I admit that I've been, but in the tared genre, she's pretty much the Gaga, isn't she? It's a fucking queen of the tarées! Take the morning for example. She gets up, she puts on heels, she goes to the bathroom, I hear the water flowing, and when she comes out wet from the bathroom, she always has her heels on her feet. And what are these tiffes? At first I thought it was sexy, but now I get lost. She told me that I was no better than the last one. That is not true! . Honestly I think it's great, I think it's great that it's a fucking superstar. A star of the song as they say. But I do how to shine?! At the limit, I wouldn't mind being in the shadows if I felt like she was sincere with me. Maybe it is. Notice. Sometimes I tell myself that she is like that, that this is her true nature. After all, when she goes on stage, she doesn't set any limits... What about the spotlight? All these big spotlights follow her wherever she goes, they even follow her to her home, I assure you. I, too, want my share. When you fuck, she covers her face because she doesn't want me to see her. The nana, she is just unable to be sincere even when no one is looking at her. I would like to see the real Gaga. But Jo, let her tell me. I'm not real, I play a character. But you and I are very real.''

Obviously there is a serious inner conflict between the alter Gaga and the alter Calderone. In the event that all this is just an acting game, again it only propagates a certain fashion of the multiple personality. It's about glorifying the fractional personality in the secular world by making this phenomenon cool and fun. The transmission of Luciferian culture to the general public requires a whole occult symbolism but also the trivialization of multiple personalities. The goal is to contaminate popular culture through the Luciferian subculture so that finally the people cheer and demand anti-Christic and enslaving productions. We'll come back to Lady Gaga later.

- Tila Tequila :

Tila Tequila is an American singer, model and reality tv star. This unstable personality not only has a ***multi-layer character,*** she also seems not to be alone in her body. In 2010, she publicly stated that she had a dissociative identity disorder. One of her personalities is named *"**Jane**"* and even tried to kill her. She said on the social network ***Twitter: "Jane was there! She tried to kill me! She slashed my body with a knife! I am terrified, there is blood everywhere! Everything in my room is broken! I woke up with blood everywhere! Jane tried to kill me! I took some pictures, it's really disgusting.sse... I told you that I had a multiple personality guys... I fell asleep and woke up with stab wounds everywhere, and everything is broken around me! For people who have a multiple personality or bipolar disorder, it's fucking stuff like that happens! Jane left, I locked the doors." Later, Tila Tequila dismissed the speculations of some fans who claimed that she had injured herself or that she had made a suicide attempt:*** *"**I**never hurt myself! never!! I tell you, it was* ***Janel552!*** *!! ..."*

- Mel Gibson :

In a much more discreet way than a Tila Tequila, a Beyonce or a Lady Gaga, Mel Gibson confessed to having another personality named "Bjorn''... The famous actor spoke about it in 2007 in front of the journalist Michael Parkinson on the BBC, in the program "Parkinson":

"I have an alter-ego called Bjorn (...) Bjorn is a guy of the Viking genre (...) It goes back to a dark age, somewhere when the father came to visit me, I know it's something bad (...) Bjorn is a former murderer (...) he's a wild guy. He has so much energy (...) I never want to be Bjorn again."

Mel Gibson, who has also been diagnosed with bipolar disorder, says that he has to push this alter back into the sand, inside his mind, but that sometimes there is still a hand that resurfaces and that he must then push it back. He also says that sometimes he lets Bjorn participate and play roles, which makes sense with the Viking film Braveheart. According to psychiatrist Colin Ross, Mel Gibson also revealed his alter Bjorn to the German investigative newspaper Der Spiegel.

Note here that Mel Gibson was the main actor of the film "Conspiracy" whose theme is the MK-Ultra.

- Joaquin Phoenix :

Joaquin Phoenix grew up in a family of actors and his parents were part of the Children of God sect. He made his television debut and landed his first film role at the age of 10... He will continue his career through many films including 8 millimeters, Fire Trap, Hotel Rwanda, Two Lovers, Gladiator ...

In 2000, he said in an interview with the Australian magazine Juice:

- Reporter: Who are you going to take to the premiere of "Gladiator"?

- Joaquin Phoenix: I'm going to be honest and I know it's going to sound strange to you, but my partner right now is myself. This is what happens when you suffer from a multiple personality disorder and an extraordinary egocentrism.

- Lindsay Lohan :

Lindsay Lohan, a famous American actress and singer who has done several detoxification treatments, said in a reality TV documentary about her: "Everything is fine and then I hear a voice in my head that says: oh oh, it's time to sabotage everything!" ("Lindsay"

OWN). The actress has indeed serious tendencies to self-destruction, whether through scarification, drugs and alcohol. His life is rather chaotic, like many celebrities. Doctors diagnosed him with a Narcissistic Personality Disorder characterized for disproportionate self-centeredness, lack of empathy and an exaggerated sense of his own importance. In an article by Bill Zwecker for the Chicago Sun-Times in 2010, it is noted about Lindsay Lohan that "multiple personalities agitate the actress, who at times turns into "Diane" or "Margot".

A long-time associate of Lindsay Lohan told the press that she thought the actress had a multiple personality disorder and that this may be one of the reasons why she suffers from these recurring addictions: "Some of us wondered if Lindsay was not bipolar because of her recurrent mood swings. But I think it goes much further because Lindsay sometimes called herself Diane or Margot.'

- Iggy Pop :

In the book *Iggy Pop: Open Up and Bleed: The Biography,* **Paul Trynka tells us that in 1975, singer James Newell Osterberg ("Iggy Pop" being an alter-ego) was hospitalized due to his drug addiction. It was then that he underwent psychotherapy with Dr. Murray Zucker; here's what this doctor said:** *"I always feel like Iggy enjoys playing with his brain so much, to the point that he himself no longer knows what emerges from it or what's into it. Sometimes he seems to have total control over it, playing with different personna.ges* **(...)** *But at other times you have the feeling that he no longer controls anything, he only undergoes it. It's just a lack of discipline, it's not necessarily a bipolarity, it's God knows what!"*

- Anne Heche :

Actress Anne Heche, american tv star Ally Mac Beal, has written an autobiographical book called "Call Me Crazy" in which she recounts the paternal incest and the unfortunate psychological consequences she endured as a result of these traumas.

In September 2001, she gave an interview to Barbara Walters on

ABC News[553], of which here are some excerpts:

"I'm not crazy... but I have a crazy life, I was raised in a crazy family and it took me 31 years to evacuate this madness out of me (...) I had another personality, I had a fantastic world. I called this other personality "Celestia". My other world was called the "Fourth Dimension"
and I thought I was from another planet."

Anne Heche played the role of two twins in the series Another World from 1988 to 1992, it was at that time, at the age of 25, that she said that her personality disorders began to manifest and lead to moments of madness. Celestia, her other personality, believed she was the reincarnation of God, she spoke another language and she had special powers...

- Anne Heche: I revealed to my mother after seven years of therapy that I had been sexually abused by my father... and she hung up on me (...) In New York, I heard the voice of god and I thought then that I was totally crazy. I had no idea what I needed to do. I existed in two different people.

- Barbara Walters: So even if you thought you were Jesus or Celestia, you were at the same time aware that it was an aberration?

- AH: Absolutely, that's what drives you crazy, you're absolutely aware of that. On the one hand I was Anne Heche, an actress with lots of friends and I thought people would think I'm totally crazy if I told them about this. And at the same time, I heard God saying to me, "You come from heaven."

- BW: How did that manifest itself? What was your grip on the situation?

- AH: Oh in a lot of different ways! What could I do? When I was Celestia, I spoke another language. I was speaking a language that we had between god and me. I could also see in the future, I could heal people.

- BW: Do you remember what language it was?

- AH: Of course!

- BW: Can you say anything in that language now?

- AH: Well, the word god for example. There are many prayers. The word for god in my language is "kiness". A'kiness, a'ta fortatuna donna...

- BW: And it's a language you never had.

- ah:... I don't know where she came from, but I knew what she meant. I was in my mind, and it was God who taught me.

- BW: You say you've been under the influence of voices and visions almost all the time for almost seven years. You have fought against demons and you have managed, in an unimaginable way, to juggle this with your professional activity.

- AH: Yes, it's amazing to reconcile these two things. I would go to work, and then I would come back to my dressing room because I had to write down the messages I heard from god about love.

- BW: You were going into your dressing room and you were another person. You closed the door and you were then another person, you were Jesus?

- AH: I was Celestia.

- BW: Celestia is also Jesus?

- AH: No, Celestia, as I said before, is the reincarnation of god, here on earth.

- BW: You know Anne, there are doctors and therapists who could diagnose this as a form of mental illness, such as personality duplication, schizophrenia or bipolar disorder. Does this apply to you?

- AH: I don't think so. The most interesting thing is that I went to see a therapist for years. It's amazing what you can hide.

• Megan Fox :

Megan Fox, who had, as we saw in chapter 7, a real obsession for the Wizard of Oz when she was little, told Wonderland magazine in 2009: *"I could end up like this* (editor's note: referring to Marilyn Monroe) *because I constantly fight with Vidée that I have a borderline* *personality, that I have symptoms of mild schizophrenia. I really think I have mental problems but I didn't manage to find out what it is exactly. "*

She also told Rolling Stone magazine in 2009: "I have a lot to be happy about but that doesn't mean I don't struggle, I'm very vulnerable. I can be aggressive, hurtful, authoritarian and selfish, way too much. I'm emotionally unpredictable, anywhere. I am a control maniac. My mood is ridiculously bad. I destroyed the house." As a child she had panic attacks that manifested themselves in violence, tantrums of rage. As if I didn't know how to control myself or what to do." The interview also tells us that she cannot fall asleep with someone who is in contact with her (hypersensitivity); she needs "cocoons" and pillows to feel safe; she cannot sleep in the dark; she does not like to look in the mirror; she admits (just like Angelina Jolie) to shed blood during sexual intercourse without going into detail... She admits to self-injurious practices and also refers to an eating disorder and her bisexuality.

- Both Furler :

The international star, of Australian origin (some of whose clips have caused controversy when it came to content with a paedophile tendency: "Chandelier" and "Elastic Heart") said that she suffered from bipolarity following having smoked too much cannabis as a teenager... In 2014, during a famous American radio show, "The Howard Stern Show", she said: "What I think is that I smoked too many joints when I was a kid, my brain was not yet formed, I screwed up my brain"... But in the same show, she also confided that her father, Phil B. Colson (also a professional musician), had a double personality: Phil and Stan...

- Sia Furler: He had two very different personalities, one called Phil and the other Stan...

- Reporter: He named his personalities Phil and Stan himself?

- SF: Yes... Phil was the best of dads, he was fun but he was also eloquent, present and very attentive. When Stan landed, terrifying things were happening (...) It was nerve-wracking, like a certain energy coming into the room. An intimidating energy... she intimidated everyone.

- J: How many times have you experienced this?

- SF: I don't know, I don't remember.

Sia always assumed that her father had a dissociative identity disorder but had never been diagnosed or treated. She stated that he had never physically abused her. However, when you grow up with a split parent (she does not describe what were the "terrifying things" that Alter Stan was doing), unfortunately the risk of suffering serious trauma is heavy... His bipolar disorder may not be put on the back of THC (active ingredient in cannabis). It is possible that his family is mired in this "transgenerational dissociation" passing from one generation to the next via traumatic experiences, with possibly programming on fractional individuals. Sia did not arrive at the top of the music industry by chance...

- Tyler Perry :

The famous Hollywood producer Tyler Perry had a particularly difficult childhood. In 2010 in *The Oprah Winfrey Show, he described with tears in* **his eyes the dissociative process that allowed him to escape the pain and terror during trauma:** "*I could go to this park (in my mind) where my mother and aunt used to take me. So I'm there in this park running and playing, it was such beautiful days. So every time someone did something horrible and unbearable to me, I could go to this park, inside my mind, until it was over* **(...)** *All I remember is that he* **(editor's note: his father)** *violently grabbed me, I was pressed against a grilla.ge so strong that my hands were bleeding, and he was hitting me... I was just trying to preserve my life... and I felt like I was trying to get to this place, to this park, to my mind, where I could put up with this... I was trying to reach this park and I couldn't do it... It made me so angry... I was trying again and again... When I finally got there and saw the grass in my mind... I saw myself running out of me... And I couldn't catch up with this little boy... I couldn't pa.s catch up with this little* *boy to bring him back to me... I couldn't bring myself back to myself... I then thought I was dying and I didn't understand... It took me so long to figure out what had happened. "*

- Barbara Streisand :

The famous singer and actress told the Ladies Home Journal in 1994: "I live with great anguish (...) I'm constantly changing. So I say to the man who interests me that if he likes to have adventures with many women, then I am perfect for him[554]! "

- Anna Nicole Smith :

Anna Nicole Smith ,who died in 2007 at the age of 39, was an American playmate, actress and singer. In August 2006 Nicole Smith was filmed at her home, a private recording that was later publicly revealed as the
"video clown". Indeed, this recording showed Anna Nicole Smith neglected and made up as a clown... in a pathetic state.

This video was filmed at her property in a sadistic way by her spouse or supposed "master" Howard K. Stern. The video was delivered to the public shortly after Anna's death. In this video we can see the star completely dissociated, having the behavior and voice of a 4- or 5-year-old child. The mass media claimed that she was under the influence of medicines during this video recording, which is probably the case, but medicines alone cannot explain such a condition. There were obvious symptoms of deep psychic trauma.

When Howard K. Stern asks her, camera in hand, if she has eaten hallucinogenic mushrooms, we can see that she has no idea what a "trip under mushroom" is. because at that time, she is a little girl of 4 years totally ignorant of these things. When Stern tells her that this recording is going to be worth a lot of money, she replies: "Why? What registration?" This woman has been in front of the cameras and lenses all her life, she knows what a video recording is. but not at the age of 4. We see in this video that it is completely unbundled. A personality disorder that Howard K. Stern took great pleasure in exposing in a video recording aimed at ridiculing the poor woman.

Anna Nicole Smith was pregnant with a girl during this "video clown", the little Dannielynn Birkhead who will embody six years later the Spring-Summer 2013 collection of the prestigious brand Guess Kids. A child born in the Network and injected into the world of fashion from the age of 6, following in the footsteps of her mother.

It is obvious that celebrities play with the personalities they publicly expose, they usually make a distinction between private personality and public personality, it is a way to preserve themselves but also to play with their image. It also sometimes happens that they create a new identity when working on an unusual project, as was the case of musician Garth Brooks who created an alter-ego named Chris Gaines to release an album in a totally different style. Another example is Ashlee Simpson who became Vicky Valentine to move from guitar to electronic music. We could also mention David Bowie and his alter-ego Ziggy Stardust and Thin White Duke, but also Prince and his female alter Camille, Laurie Anderson and his alter Fenway Bergamot...

Obviously the artists of the world scene have very complex personalities... and we find that in some cases it seems to go far beyond just playing a role or a character, and then a line is crossed to what appears to be the dissociative identity disorder resulting from severe trauma.

Sometimes even celebrities seem to be possessed and serve as mediums...

b/ The demons of cinema and music

- *I know I have demons, I don't quite know if I want to get rid of them but I would like to experience them in a different way. Maybe make a face to face with them. I never really had time to go to therapy, just a little here and there... but not enough for it to help me.*

- *Of course, I have demons... Sometimes I'm about thirty different people...* Johnny Depp - *Vanity Fair,* 1997 and *US Magazine,* 1999

- *Keanu is a very complex guy with a lot of demons in him, and I'm* *going to try to use and exploit that.* Taylor Hackford about actor Keanu Reeves - *Movieline,* 2000

- *I am a tormented person, I have many demons in me. My pain is as great as my joy.* Madonna - Los Angeles Times, 1991

Whitney Houston's vocal coach, Gary Catona, told the Daily Mail that she had demons in her (...) that she was a lot of people in one, and the question was which of them would appear... and when[555]."

In 2002, when the American journalist Diane Sawyer asked Whitney Houston what was the "worst demon" of her life, she did not answer "cocaine", "drugs" or "alcohol" ... no, Witney's answer was, "The worst demon is me. I'm my best friend or my worst enemy." An unsuractive statement for someone who has a deep personality disorder. Whitney Houston has revealed particularly disturbing things about her relationship with Bobby Brown, another celebrity. Here is an excerpt from a 2009 Houston interview with Oprah Winfrey:

- Whitney Houston: There were times when he would put everything on it underneath, he would break glass things in the house. For example, we had a giant portrait of us with my child and he cut my head out of the picture. He was doing stuff like that. There I thought it was really strange. Cutting my head off from a photo, it was a little too much for me, it was a sign. And then there were other things. like when he started painting eyes all over the bedroom. Only eyes. evil eyes that scrutinized all over the room.

- Oprah Winfrey: He painted on the walls?

- WH: Yes! On the walls, on the carpets, on the doors of closets. When I opened a door, there was a drawing, and behind when I closed it, there was another drawing. Eyes and faces. It was really strange...

- OW: What did you do then?

- WH: I was looking at it and saying, "Lord, what's really going on here?" I was starting to get scared because I felt that something was going to explode, that something was going to happen... "

In 2004, his partner Bobby Brown, himself a singer and actor and visibly very disturbed, said in an interview with Jamie Foster for Sister 2 Sister magazine:

"When I was younger, I was diagnosed with attention deficit disorder, I know that this is the same as bipolar disorder (...) When I arrived at Betty Ford, I wondered what was wrong with me. I was trying in vain to understand why I had these extreme mood changes. That is to say, sometimes I could be happy and the next minute I was in a black rage, filled with fire and rage, but I did not know the reason. I went to doctors, they talked to me, they did brain exams and they diagnosed me as bipolar."

Actress Angelina Jolie said she was "very sexualized from the age of 4 in kindergarten (...) I had invented a game where I kissed the boys. Then we would go further and take off our clothes. I was in a lot of trouble then!"

For many early childhood professionals, a hypersexualized attitude in a young child is considered a sign of suspected sexual abuse. Angelina Jolie, who also seems to be psychologically very disturbed, has admitted to having tasted all the drugs, but she seems to have a special taste for it. blood. At her first marriage to Johnny Lee Miller, she had written her husband's name on awhiteT-shirt with her blood. When she was married to Billy Bob Thornton, they both wore a vial around their necks containing each other's blood. Her biography also reveals that as a child, she had a fascination with knives, that she collected them and that in adolescence, her unhappiness manifested itself among other things by scarification. A biography reveals: "Some go shopping, I scarify myself. When I started having sex, sex didn't bring me enough, my emotions weren't strong enough, something wanted to go out... One day, wanting to feel an even more intense fusion, I grabbed a knife and Slashed my boyfriend... then he also slashed me. He was really a good person, a nice guy who wasn't the menacing or violent kind. We had this particular exchange... We were covered in blood and I felt my heart beating."

This biography of Angelina Jolie also tells us that during a session of sado-masochism, Jolie asked her partner to slash her chin, there is still a small scar today. She will say, ''I wanted him to help me out of it and that frustrated me because he couldn't help me.'' Scarification obviously could not help her, in fact it even almost killed her. In particular, there was an accident where Jolie slashed her neck and stomach and then engraved a cross on her arm. She ended up in the emergency room and later said, "I almost cut my jugular[556]."

Angelina Jolie was therefore sexualized from the age of 4, then later "adept" of bloody scarifications... Some therapists here will clearly recognize signs that strongly suggest that Angelina Jolie was sexually abused in her early childhood. Abuses that could have split her personality and the following statement seems to confirm that she suffered dissociative states from her childhood: "When I was a child, I did not have my own "Me". Growing up, I lived through characters that I played losing myself in different parts of my personality.'

There is also actor David Carradine, who was found dead in a hotel room in Bangkok at the age of 72. Lieutenant General Worapong Siewpreecha said the actor was discovered to have a rope tied around his neck and another to his sexual organ, the two being connected together and hanging from the closet. A sadomasochistic practice consisting in depriving the brain of oxygen in order to multiply the effect of orgasm, a 'game'' that was fatal to it...

In the entertainment industry, there is no shortage of examples of totally disoriented and self-destructive behaviour, it is a world where the boundaries between fiction, reality, madness and reason no longer seem to exist. A world where drama and horror are not only written in fictional scenarios but where it also invites itself into the lives of its actors... But is it possible that some of the biggest stars of film and song are possessed or influenced by demonic entities? Do they serve as mediums for certain spiritual forces that would influence them in their creativity or stage performances, consciously or unconsciously? Is the "pact with the devil" just a legend?

The status of man in this material universe is temporary and, as we have seen, it can be influenced by entities related to other dimensions. The Old and New Testaments are filled with examples where angels intervened in human affairs under God's direction. But the Bible also speaks of the undesirable and constant presence of demons or the devil, i.e. fallen spiritual entities negatively influencing humans. The Bible describes the different dimensions in which such beings reside: "The angels who have not kept the dignity of their rank, but who have left their own abode, he has kept them in perpetual chains in the depths of darkness while waiting for the great day of judgment." Jude 1:6

Apart from the biblical aspect, in an objective and rational way, we cannot deny today the fact that the entertainment industry as a whole propagates an image of decadence and immorality based on violence, sex, drugs and exacerbated materialism... Like a mirror, our Western society today reflects the content of these entertainment programmes that are constantly infused into the media.

Where does this spirit of decadence come from? Does it infuse itself into our world via entities using certain humans as mediums to embody a subculture and thus influence humanity as a whole? Are these mediums "agents" of counter-initiation working to defile Creation (consciously or unconsciously)? Chapter 6 has already given us the beginnings of an answer to these questions.

In 2011, singer Ke$ha drank blood from a heart (presumed beef) on stage during sydney's Future Music Festival. Her bloody "performance" during which she raised her heart above her head to let the blood flow in her mouth illustrated her piece entitled Cannibal... Kesha Rose Seber spent more than 45 minutes on stage covered in blood in front of thousands of people cheering her[557]. Note here that the cover of his album "Cannibal" represents his face with a tear dividing it vertically in two, a classic symbolism in the entertainment industry representing the splitting of personality.

In 2014, at the SXSW Festival in Austin, Texas, Lady Gaga will literally and voluntarily vomit on her. During this "shock performance", the artist Millie Brown ingurgitated a greenish liquid and then put her fingers in the back of her throat in order to vomit the contents of her stomach on the half-naked Gaga. All in a sexually explicit position on a mechanical horse

The singer Miley Cyrus multiplies the provocations going ever further in sexual perversity. In November 2015, during a concert in Chicago for the launch of his short story tour,Miley Cyrus arrived on stage almost naked, sporting at the level of hercrotch a gigantic dildo! It was in this outfit that she appeared in front of fans for many minors and even preteens.

The aim is to ensure that all these deviant, perverse and recurrentpractices do notbecome more shocking and that they are gradually integrating into our culture... Remember that Lady Gaga is the most popular pop starinthe world and that her "performances" and her behaviours permeate millions of young people. For example, Gaga has made photo shoots dressed in real raw red meat, or with horns implanted on her forehead, shots that are widely distributed around the world and unfortunately acclaimed.

An employee of London's Chicos Intercontinental Hotel told The Sun newspaper: "Lady Gaga left a large amount of blood in the suite during her stay this summer. The incident was reported to the janitor, who was asked to close his eyes." Another source says: "All the members of the hotel are convinced that Lady Gaga took a bloodbath, or, at the limit, that she used all this blood for a costume or her passage on stage."

For some, all this is simply laughable. and many will see in these extreme acts only a provocation for advertising purposes: to make the buzz in the press people and the internet sphere. But this kind of completely dismembered "artistic performances" are multiplying and becoming more and more extreme, as is a race to reverse moral values and the collapse of a civilization. L'ordo ab chao... Order through chaos or chaos to order. Everything is clear to those who still have eyes to see. The inversion of values is underway.

- But the spirit expressly says that, in the last times, some will abandon the faith, to attach themselves to seductive spirits and doctrines of demons. 1 Timothy 4: 1

- Woe to those who call evil good and good evil; which change darkness into light and light into darkness; which change bitterness smoothly and sweetness into bitterness! Isaiah 5:20

- Know that in the last days difficult times will arise. For men will be selfish, friends of money, blusterers, proud, blasphemers, rebellious to their parents, ungrateful, sacrilegious, insensitive, implacable, slanderous, unresponsive, cruel, enemies of good people, traitors, impulsive, swollen with pride, loving their pleasure more than God. They will keep the outer form of piety, but they will deny its power. Distance yourself from these men. 2 Timothy 3:1-5.

Are some of the big stars of show business the mediums of superior strength? The question is indeed worth asking and some statements by artists seem to enlighten us on this subject, as we will see later...

What is mediumship? The psychologist and medium Jon Klimo defines the medium trance as follows: "The communication of information to a human being made from a source that exists on a level other than the physical dimension that we know, and that does not come from the mind of the medium."

There are two forms of mediumship or channeling: intentional channeling and spontaneous channeling. Intentional channeling occurs when a person voluntarily seeks to come into contact and be possessed by entities, in such cases spirits usually wait for permission before entering the body. In spontaneous channeling, spirits take control of the body whenever they wish, and the individual then finds himself at their mercy.

These two types of pipeline can take several forms. It can be a complete or partial loss of consciousness during trance. It can also be done through sleep where spirits will influence the individual in his dreams and nightmares. Another form of mediumship is automatism, the entity then takes control of a part of the body, usually the hand, to have it written or painted, this is called automatic writing or painting. A medium trance can involve writing, painting, song, dance, musical composition, even going as far as speeches and teachings given in the form of lectures. The medium can also hear words dictated in his mind, it is then the "clairaudience", a faculty of paranormal hearing. "Clairvoyance" concerns images, photos or symbols that are "printed" in the mind of the medium... One thing to remember is that whatever the way in which the channeling is done and the result obtained, it is recognized that without these demonic entities, the medium has absolutely no power[558].

The medium Jon Klimo confirms that mediumistic states are influenced by external entities: "If your mind can act on your own brain, well a similar thing of a non-physical nature can also be able to act on your brain, making you hear voices or have visions. An entity can speak or write by controlling your body in the same way that you usually control it by your mind[559].

''The gods do not communicate directly to mortals, but through intermediate spirits. The mortal needs figures to communicate with the gods, and therefore the demon becomes the necessary figure. a source leading to sacrifices, initiations, incantations, prophecies, divinations, magical spells, and sacred poems.' Plato[560]

''In the same way, the muse inspires men because they are inspired and possessed. It is not through art or knowledge that you say what you say, but through possession." Socrates[561]

"Keep yourself constantly open to the demons whispering in your ear. The term "demon" has an old meaning that is close to "the guiding spirit", the "inspiring muse". Anton Lavey[562]

"There are three main methods for invoking an entity (...) The third is the Theatrical method, perhaps the most attractive of all; it is in any case certain for the temperament of artist, because it addresses his imagination through his sense of aesthetics.'' Aleister Crowley[563]

The Bible teaches us that the channeling of spirits is nothing but demonic possession, although new-age mediums prefer to speak of "mutual cooperation" between the entity and the channel. It would seem that many artists intentionally or unintentionally channel entities in their creative process, whether in the writing of scripts, songs, acting or stage performances.

It should be noted that the interest of the Prince of this world and his army is not to raise the human mass spiritually, but rather to make it fall with him. In our time, this entertainment industry highlighting its many mediums is used against the spiritual health of humans although it can also infuse and disclose some truth about our current situation. The ambiguity is there, on the one hand this industry sinks consciences to divert and degrade them but on the other it can just as well awaken people by its materialistic extremism, decadent and disgusting, thus pushing the individual to question himself and to detach himself from it to return to the divine. In addition, this industry constantly distils a symbolic occult knowledge in its productions, indeed everything is displayed for those who still have eyes to see: "Do not talk about it, showit."

A Law of this great theatre is to let the Truth shine through despite the semblance of darkness and confusion, this to allow free will to be fulfilled. "Who seeks finds", God does not allow to suppress access to the Truth despite this hubbub and this ambient chaos trying to divert and control human consciousnesses. War is spiritual, it consists in diverting consciences from the knowledge of God. The mental control of the masses is the modus operandi of the sorcerers controllers... but they must leave access to the Truth, they have no choice.

Here is now an impressive series of quotes showing how demonic possession is more present than ever in our world, and especially among influential global stars, both in the film industry and in music.

"(In the studies of John Livingstone Nevius :) Wang Yung-ngen of Beijing noted that people who had no ability to song became talented singers when possessed, and others without any natural ability for poetry could easily compose rhymes when they were under the possession of an entity[564].

> Cinema:

- Rudolph Valentino :

In the twenties, actor Rudolph Valentino and his wife Natasha were both followers of occultism and practiced spiritualism: *"Every night, Natasha did a session to call for the help of the spirit world for her creativity. Then, pencil and paper in hand, she would go into a trance and start writing. Once typed at the machine, the work was handed over to the director as early as Lende May565}."*

- Mae West :

In the thirties, actress Mae West, called the Queen of Sex and even the Statue of Libido, once said: "When I'm good, I'm very good, but when I'm bad, I'm even better."

His work has helped to overturn the biblical values of North America. West's contact with the spirit world allowed him a fruitful production of screenplays. Scenarios that catapulted it onto the film scene. She allowed herself to be possessed by entities and thus pended whole evenings in psychic readings. One of her relatives, Kenny Kingston, said, *"When she was angry because no one had been able to bring a script idea, she would take the hundred steps in her room and say, "Forces! forces! come to me and help me write a script. " She began to hear voices and see the images of a story that was revealed to her. Mae would then call a stenographer, and then for hours, while lying on her bed in a trance state, she would dictate things as the spirits conveyedto her."*

- Marilyn Monroe :

The famous sex symbol of the twentieth century was known to enter deep trances. Kenny Kingston said that she "attracts the spirit world to ask them foradvice! 567]."

Marilyn Monroe herself said: "Jekyll & Hyde. More than two, I am so many people. They sometimes shock me, I wish there were only me[568]!"

Lloyd Shearer wrote: "Before each take, Marilyn closed her eyes and entered a deep trance[569].

Here's a famous statement by Marilyn Monroe: "Hollywood is a place where you're paid $50,000 for a kiss and 50 cents for your soul."

- James Dean :

James Dean was another known follower of occultism. He publicly acknowledged: "I have a rather good knowledge of satanic forces[570].

His close friend Dennis Hopper said of him: "He was totally transformed when the camera started shooting. He suddenly became the character... Strange things came out of him.''

James Dean's advice to Dennis Hooper to work with the spirit world was simple: "Leave yourself open."

Indeed, James Dean thought that another entity inhabited him when he played, he describes it as follows: "As if there were two people in the same skin. one telescopicing the other from behind. the one inside seems derived on the surface of the skin.''

- Peter Sellers

British actor Peter Sellers, known for his role in the series ''The Pink Panther'', said: ''It's a bit like you're a medium and you open up big saying, I want a character to inhabit my body or take care of me so that I can produce what I want to produce[571].

When Sellers was asked, "Do you hear his voice the same way you hear mine now?" He said, "Yes absolutely, as clear as that. A very clear voice, as if someone was talking but here (showing his head). Sometimes I call to get a hand and sometimes it happens like that. It can happen anytime, really anytime. (...) I play like a medium if you will, I let the character come through me.''

Peter Evans, The Biographer of Peter Sellers, will describe how "the demon began to inhabit his body. Everything began to change in him. It wasn't just his gait and his way of standing, it wasn't just his voice, but also his expressions, his eyes, his gestures. everything was different.''

- Robin Williams :

In 1999, actor Robin Williams himself told *US Weekly journalist*

James Kaplan that he opened up to possession when he was **on stage:** *"yes! Literally, it's like a possession. All of a sudden you're in it, and while you're directly playing in front of an audience, you receive this energy that's starting to flow into you... But there's also something else, it's possession, at one time you would have been burned for that. But something gives you power in there. I mean, you're all there... It's Dr. Jekyll & Mr. Hyde, you can actually become that other force. Maybe that's why I don't need to play evil people (in movies), on stage you can cross that line and then come back. "*

James Kaplan of *the US Weekly that he opened up to possession when he was on* **stage:** *"yes! Literally, it's like a possession. All of a sudden you're in it, and while you're directly playing in front of an audience, you receive this energy that's starting to flow into you... But there's also something else, it's possession, at one time you would have been burned for that. But something gives you power in there. I mean, you're all there... It's Dr. Jekyll & Mr. Hyde, you can actually become that other force. Maybe that's why I don't need to play evil people (in movies), on stage you can cross that line and then come back. "*

In the same article, James Kaplan added: "With a gift for imitation and improvisation that borders on demonic possession, Williams could even approach the art of his idol Jonathan Winters, a man whose genius once or twice led him to cross a line leading him to madness."

Robin Williams was found suicidal in 2014.

- Leonardo DiCaprio :

Total Eclipse director Agnieszka Holland said of actor Leonardo DiCaprio:

"Leo is like a medium. He opens his body and mind to receive messages concerning the life of another person[572].

Leonardo DiCaprio's father will say about his son: "I think Rimbaud was maybe a medium, maybe he was visited by aliens, and I think Leo also has this ability!"

In her book ''Leonardo DI Caprio: The Modern Day Romeo'', Grace Catalano says: ''With Leo, you can see about thirty people emerge from him in a single day.''

- Marion Cotillard :

In 2014, actress Marion Cotillard stated that she felt possessed by the ghost of Édith Piaf. In an interview with the British daily The Guardian, the French actress said she was so involved in her role as Édith Piaf that she heard the singer's voice and felt pursued by her ghost for eight months. She said she tried everything to get rid of it. ''I tried the exorcism with salt and fire. I also travelled to Bora Bora to escape him. I went to Machu Picchu in Peru, I participated in shamanic ceremonies to clean myself. Finally, I realized why I couldn't let her go. She was abandoned by her mother. His greatest fear was to be alone[573].

> Music:

To introduce this part, let's take the example of the composer Giuseppe Tartini, an Italian violinist of the Baroque period who wrote more than 400 works. His most famous piece is entitled ''Devil's Trill Sonata'' (Devil's Trill Sonata). The story behind this musical creation begins in a dream... Tartini is said to have told the French astronomer Jérôme Lalande that the devil had appeared to him in a dream and asked him to be his servant. In his dream, at the end of the lesson, Tartini would have given the devil his violin to test his skill, the devil then began to play with such virtuosity that Tartini had his breath cut off. When the composer woke up, he immediately took a pencil and paper to write down the devil's sonata, desperately trying to recover what he had heard in his dream. Although his composition was ultimately very successful and adored by the public, Tartini lamented that it was still far from what he had heard in his dream. What he had written was, in his own words, "so inferior to what I have heard, that if I could subsist by other means, I would have broken my violin and abandoned music forever[574]."

Cyril Scott, the "father of modern British music" was during his lifetime a prominent composer, poet and writer. He also studied theosophy and was interested in how to use music in the occult. Two of his books "The Influence of Music on History" and "Morals and Music: Its Secret Influence Throughout the Ages" were received through the channeling of one of his theosophical spiritual guides. In the second book, Scott says that as a result of his contacts with this spirit, he took a particular interest in the evolution of Western music. Scott was convinced that the great initiates (of the spirit world) have vast and important plans for the musical future. What is this plan? It consists in using music as an occult means by which modified states of consciousness, certain psychic abilities as well as close contact with the spirit world can develop. Scott explains that "The music of the future must be used to bring people into close contact with the Devas (spirits), so they will be able to receive the beneficial influence of these beings by attending concerts during which an appropriate type of sound has served as an invocation (...) A scientifically calculated music can achieve two objectives: that of invoking the Devas but also of stimulating the psychic faculties of the listener who will then open up to the influence of these spirits."

Cyril Scott concludes his book by quoting the words of his spiritual guide: "Today, as we enter this new era, we seek, mainly through inspired music, to initiate the spirit of unification and fraternity, and thus accelerate the vibration of thisplanet."[575] We bathe here in full new age ...

- Elvis Presley :

In one of Elvis' biographies entitled "If I Can Dream: Elvis' Own Story", Larry Geller writes that the famous singer himself admitted that he was receiving help from the spirit world. According to Geller, who was Elvis Presley's spiritual advisor always carried books with him when he traveled. Among his favorite works were "Isis unveiled" by the theosophist Helena Blavatsky, "Autobiography of a Yogi" by Paramahansa Yogananda, "The Secret Teaching of All Ages" by the Freemason Manly P. Hall, "Esoteric Healing" by Alice Bailey, "Aquarian Gospel of Jesus the Christ" by Levi H. Dowling as well as the six volumes of "Life and Teachings of the Masters of the Far East" by Baird T. Spalding. Elvis Presley was therefore a "new-age" of the first hour, a big fan of the theosophist Blavatsky who published at one time the magazine Lucifer. He loved Blavatsky's book ''The Way of Silence'' so much that sometimes he even read pieces of it on stage and he also drew inspiration from it to name his own gospel group ''Voice[576]''.

Journalist Steve Dunleavy reported some statements made by Elvis' bodyguard, Red West: "Elvis Presley was riding on his microphone in a very suggestive position. he trembled in compulsive movements as if he were possessed by the spirit of an alien.' For Red West, Elvis was possessed: ''He had a kind of special power, he had psychic powers, Elvis proved it to me many times[577]''

His biographer Larry Geller also said: "Elvis believes that he works under the aegis of the masters... and that they help him (...) In Elvis' mind, his life is divinely directed by the masters and enlightened beings, ascended entities that lived from time immemorial. He truly believed that he had been chosen to be a modern Christ.'

Elvis himself admitted: "I've always felt an invisible hand behind me. I hear this same voice thinking that it is that of my (deceased) brother. That is what I think. I hear this guidance that runs my whole life. That's why I'm here and I'm doing this. It's not by chance.'' (...) Elvis stated that "his mission" was to use his "name and influence" to introduce people to the "spiritual world" by which he was used. He said that this "Voice" used it as a "channel" to reach millions of people through the "universal language of music" (...) One day in the future, we will see how God's ministry will react when it sees the "old age" that begins to collapse. I look forward to seeing this New Age[578]...''

According to Gary Herman, the author of ''Rock and Roll Babylon'' (2002), Elvis himself ''acknowledged that there was an evil part to his success.''

- Little Richard :

This famous American singer, pioneer of Rock'n Roll, said: "Rock n'

Roll does not glorify God. You cannot drink from the source of God and the source of the devil at the same time. I am one of the pioneers of this music, one of its builders. I know what it is made of because I built it[579].

Richard also testified: "I was directed and commanded by another power. The power of darkness... A power that many think does not exist. The power of the devil, Satan (...) My real opinion about Rock n' Roll, and I've talked about it a lot in recent years, is this: I think this kind of music is demonic. Many rhythms in today's music come from voodoo, voodoo drums. If you study music and its rhythms, as I did, you will see that it is a reality. I think this style of music takes people away from Christ. It is contagious[580]."

- Jimi Hendrix :

"I can explain things much more easily through music. You hypnotize people in this way... and when you have people at the weakest point, you can preach in their subconscious what you want.' **- LIFE, October 1969**

"The lord knows it, I am a voodoo child." **Jimi Hendrix - Voodoo Chile, 1968**

Jimi Hendrix's interest in spiritualism produced the song *'Voodoo Chile'.* **Kwasi Dzidzornu aka Rocky Dijon, a conga player of Ghanaian origin and whose father was a voodoo priest, who often played alongside Hendrix, said:** *"One of the first things I asked Jimi was where he got the voodoo rhythm from... Many of the rhythms that Jimi played on the guitar were very often the same rhythms that my father played during voodoo ceremonies. The way Jimi danced to the rhythm of what he played also reminded me of the ceremonial dances on the rhythms my father played for Oxun, the god of thunder and lightning. This ceremony is called* **"Voodooshi'1581].."**

For Hendrix, "Things such as witchcraft and imagination, which are a form of exploration, have been banished by society and called evil. This is because people are afraid to discover the full powers of their minds[582].

Hendrix producer Alan Douglas will say, "One of the greatest things about Jimi was what he believed in... He believed that he was possessed by a spirit, and I believe that too. We had to deal with that all the time (...) he really believed it and he was constantly struggling."

His mistress Fayne Pridgeon said of Hendrix: "He used to repeat that a devil or something like that was in him, you know he didn't know what made him act as he did and what made him say what he said, the songs, etc., it was all just coming out of him (...) He repeated, "I don't know what's going on with me. I really don't understand it." You know he used to grab his hair or stand in front of the mirror and scream. Oh my god! it was so sad when he was screaming... He may have been the first man or maybe the only one I saw crying, it broke my heart when he cried like this... It seemed to me that he was very tormented, totally torn and he was really obsessed with something very bad. He sometimes asked me, "As you are from Georgia, you must surely know someone who exorcises demons[583]."

- The Beatles:

John Lennon said, "When real music comes to me, there's nothing to do because I'm like a channel. This is given to me and I transcribe it (...) I feel like an empty temple fills many spirits, each passing through me, each inhabiting me for a little while and then leaving and being replaced by another[584].

Lennon's wife, Yoko Ono also confided: "They were mediums, they were not aware of everything they said, but it passed through them[585].

Here's how Paul McCartney describes how he received one of his most famous songs: "The music of "Yesterday" came to me in a dream. The melody was complete. You have to believe in magic. I myself cannot even read or write music[586].

John Lennon will say something very similar: "It's incredible, this melody (editor's note: the song "In My Life") arrived in my head during a dream. That is why I do not pretend to know anything. I think music is very mystical[587].

The band's drummer, Ringo Starr, said of the song "Rain": "I felt like it was someone else playing."

The Beatles' press secretary, Derek Taylor, said in an interview with the Saturday Evening Post: "It's amazing, absolutely amazing. These are these four boys from Liverpool, they are tough, they are blasphemous, they are vulgar, but they have conquered the world. It is as if they had founded a new religion. They are completely anti-Christ. I mean I am too, but they are so shocked that they even come to shock me, which is not an easy thing[588].

The San Francisco Chronicle of April 13, 1966 published this statement by John Lennon: "Christianity is destined to disappear, it will decrease until it vanishes. I do not want to discuss that. I am right and the future will prove it. We are more popular than Jesus Christ now. I don't know which of the two will disappear first, Rock'N'Roll or Christianity.''

- David Bowie :

Bowie, who was a great admirer of the Satanist Aleister Crowley, told Rolling Stone magazine in 1976: "Rock has always been the music of the Devil (...) I believe that rock'n roll is dangerous (...) I feel that we are only proclaiming something darker than ourselves.'

In his song "Quicksand", he sings: "I am close to the Golden Dawn (editor's note: secret society), dressed in the outfit of Crowley (...) I am not a prophet or a stone age man, just a mortal with superman potential."'

In the biography of Angie Bowie (his ex-wife), it is reported that in 1976, he stated: "My main interest is Kabbalah and Crowley. This dark and rather scary world on the ugly side of the brain.''

In 1983, in an interview with Musician magazine, David Bowie said: "I had this more than passing interest in Egyptology, mysticism and Kabbalah. At the time it seemed perfectly obvious that it was an answer to life. My whole life was transformed into this bizarre nihilistic fantasy world of impending catastrophe, mythological characters and future totalitarianism."

- Michael Jackson :

Global pop culture icon Michael Jackson said: "I have a secret room, hidden by a wall and filled with mirrors. That's where I talk to

Lee... this is where I hear his voice and feel his presence by my side. He is like my guardian angel. He even gave me permission to record his favorite song "I'll be seeing you[589]".

Michael Jackson was nicknamed "Bambi" or "Peter Pan" because of the fact that he did not want to grow up, locking himself in a "magical" world. An imaginary country illustrated in particular in the development of its neverland ranch into a real amusement park. This man was in great pain, probably due to a very traumatic childhood.

Here is another of his very explicit statements about the phenomenon of possession: "When I go on stage, there is like a sudden magic coming from nowhere that takes hold of me, and when the mind seizes you, you lose control ofyourself! 590]."

In a television interview, Oprah Winfrey asked him about his mania for putting his hand on his crotch when he was dancing, jackson replied: "It's a subliminal phenomenon. It's the music that drives me to do this, it's not premeditated, it happens spontaneously. I become the slave of rhythm[591].

Jackson also said, "Many times when I was dancing, I felt touched by something sacred. In those moments, I feel my mind fly away and I become one with the whole[592].

Just like the Beatles, Michael Jackson's mediumship also went through dreams: "I come out of sleep and I say to myself: Wow!, transcribed that on paper. All this is strange, you hear words and everything is there before your eyes. I feel that somewhere, in a certain place, everything has already been done and I'm just a messenger who transmits it to the world." - Rolling Stone, February 1983.

- Jim Morrison :

The co-founder and keyboardist of the famous band The Doors, Ray Manzarek, said: "Jim was authentic... He was not a "showman". He didn't do entertainment, he was a shaman. He was a possessed man."

"In Siberia, when the shaman is ready to enter a trance, all the villagers are with him and play any instrument to help him enter a trance. It's the same with the Doors when we play in concert. I think it's our condition with drugs that makes us go into a trance faster. It's as if Jim is an electric shaman and we are the band that accompanies this electric shaman, hammering the tempo behind him. Sometimes we don't want to put ourselves in these states, but the music hammers again and again, and little by little it ends up taking over[593].

In a poem, Jim Morrison writes that he met the spirit of music after an intense discharge of energy to see an appearance of the devil on a canal in Venice... I saw Satan or Satyr... A carnal shadow of my secret spirit[594].

Morrison admitted that he drank to silence the constant voices of the demons.

The Doors' friend and photographer, Franck Lisciandro said: "Jim drinks to calm the incessant voices of demons, ghosts and other spirits who are calling for their release. He drinks because there are demons and screaming voices in his head and he has found a way to repress them with alcohol[595].

- Carlos Santana :

Santana said that he channeled a spirit to create his music, in an article in *Rolling Stone magazine published in* March 2000, we can read: *"Metatron is an angel. Santana has been in regular contact with him since 1994. Carlos sits there facing the wall, candles lit, a yellow notepad next to him, so ready for the communications that will come* **(...)** *It's a bit like receiving faxes* **(...)** *You meditate with candles and incense and you sing... and all of a sudden you hear this voice saying, "Write this..."* **(...)** *Metatron wants something from me, and I know exactly what it is. People who listen to music are connected to a higher level of themselves. That's why I have a lot of fun with this album, because it's a personal invitation on my part for people: remember your divinity* **(...)** *The energy of angels and demons is the same energy, it depends on how you use it. It is a fuel* **(...)** *There's an invisible ra,dio station that Jimi Hendrix and Coltrane were capturing, and when you've picked it up, you're channeling that music. "*

Santana also said: "Sometimes I do guitar stuff that I didn't even know how to do it. In reality, I don't know how to do it, this stuff passes through me. It's one of the highest states anyone can reach."

- John Mc Laughlin :

John Mc Laughlin of the Mahavishnu Orchestra testified: "One night we were playing, and suddenly the spirit came into me, and I played... but it was no longer me who played." - Circus, April 1972

"When I let the mind possess me, it's an intense pleasure. My role as a musician is to make everyone aware of their own divinity." - Newsweek, March 1972

- The Rolling Stones:

Keith Richards of the Rolling Stones not only said: "We receive our songs by inspiration as at a session (editor's note: of spiritualism)", but he told the Los Angeles Times that his song "Demon" was self-biographical and that he himself was possessed by four demons. In the song "Demon" Richards sings: "It's like a mass. Demon in me, demon in me. It lives in me, the demon in me."

- Led Zeppelin :

The famous Jimmy Page, who was a fervent follower of the Satanist Aleister Crowley, believed to be used as a vehicle by demonic spirits. Other members of the Led Zeppelin group acknowledged that they underwent "automatic writing": "He (editor's note: Robert Plant) often said that he could feel his pen pushed by a higher authority[596].

Robert Plant and Jimmy Page both claim that they don't know who wrote their cult/occult song *"Stairway to Heaven".* **Robert Plant said:** *"Pagey wrote the chords and he played them for me. So I was holding this sheet of paper with a pencil, and for some reason, I was in a very bad mood... Then all of a sudden my hand started writing words... I then sat looking at* **these** *words and almost fell out of my* **seat[597].** *"*

- Brian Wilson :

The composer of the Beach Boys' greatest hits once said, "We do witchcraft, we try to make music-witchcraft[598]."

Wilson openly acknowledged that he, too, was tormented by voices in his head. Nick Kent wrote of him: "These voices in his head, they say nothing distinct, it is a dark and ghostly whisper in the deep cavities of his brain[599].

Brian Wilson was a friend of the Satanist criminal Charles Manson, he will even say about him: "The sorcerer is Charley Manson, who is a friend of mine. He thinks he is God and the Devil. He sings, plays and writes poems and may one day be an artist for Brother Records[600].

Warner Brothers Records president Larry Waronker said he had met at least five different personalities who lived in Brian Wilson's body: "There are a lot of people here, I met five different personalities." - Rolling Stone, August 1988

- Fleetwood Mac :

Fleetwood Mac singer Stevie Nicks, who was dubbed "the blonde priestess of the occult" by Rolling Stone magazine, once said: "It's amazing, sometimes when we're on stage, I feel like a presence is moving the pawns... We don't have control over it and it's something magical.'' - Circus, April 1971

- Kurt Cobain :

In his book entitled "Kurt Cobain", Christopher Sandford wrote: "Kurt had many inner demons, many weakness and physical problems (...) He was a shy and at the same time aggressive personality, he fought against the demons that harassed and tormented him.'' In April 1994, Kurt Cobain, a heroin addict, committed suicide with a bullet in the head by leaving a farewell letter addressed to Boddah, his imaginary friend from childhood... Kurt Cobain is referred to as part of the sad "Club of the 27" (Forever 27 Club), designating famous musicians who died at the age of 27, such as Brian Jones, Jimi Hendrix, Janis Joplin and Jim Morrison.

- Tori Amos :

Singer Tori Amos said: "I think music comes from other dimensions, it would be arrogant to think that you can create music just by yourself, there is a co-creation going on. I do not know with whom, but it is a fact that we all have access to this tap (...) I feel this as something very nice that they come and use my body to convey what they want. It is an energy, a force which comes and comes to visit me[601].

Tori Amos told SPIN magazine in 1996: "I want to marry Lucifer (...) I do not consider Lucifer as a force of evil (...) I feel his presence and his music. I feel like he's coming in and sitting on my piano.'' She even wrote a song called "Father Lucifer" that begins with these words: "Father Lucifer, you've never seemed so sane...".

- D'Angelo In June 2012, singer D'Angelo told GQ magazine: "You know what they say about Lucifer, before he was chased away? Each angel has his specialty that is praised. They say that he can play all the instruments with just one finger and that then the music is just great. He was of exceptional beauty, Lucifer, the angel that he was. But then he went down to hell. Lucifer was formidable. There are forces that are active and I don't think many of those people who make music today are aware of these things. It's deep, I felt it, I felt external forces that influenced me. It is a very powerful medium tool in which we are involved. I learned at a very young age that what we sang in the choirs was just as important as the work of the preacher. Singing is a ministry in itself. The stage is our pulpit, we can use all this energy as well as music, lights, colors and sound. But you have to be careful...''

In 2014, during the Red Bull Music Academy Festival in New York, D'Angelo gave an interview to Nelson Georges in which he says that it is "the spirit" that is infused in him in the artistic process. The singer says that he surrenders himself to a higher force and becomes a medium by which this "spirit" works. It remains to be seen what nature this spirit is...

- Nicki Minaj :

''When I write rap, my brain doesn't think, it doesn't think at all. You just have to let it go without thinking and it happens like this'' ... This statement can indeed give rise to smiles coming from the bimbo

Nicki Minaj...

In 2010, in the documentary "My Time Now" broadcast on MTV, Nicki Minaj said during a stage outing following a concert, when asked how she is doing: "I don't even know! I was like in a trance all the time!''

- Beyoncé :

In 2004, Rolling Stone magazine published an article entitled: "Beyonce: A possessed woman - Beyonce is held by a spirit so powerful that it even has a name: Sasha!". As we have previously seen in this chapter, it is about her alter personality named Sacha Fierce living inside her.

Knowles also talks about her trance states when she is on stage, in an interview given to Marie Claire magazine in 2008, she described what seems to be a dissociative trance during concerts: "I have experiences outside the body. If I injure my leg or fall, I don't feel anything. I'm in a special state, I don't even pay attention to my body or my face anymore.''

In 2013, Knowles told Amy Wallace of GQ magazine: "It's like a blackout(editor's note: amnesia). When I'm on stage, I don't know what's going on: I'm somewhere else.'' The article concludes with a quote from the star: "I am much more powerful than what my mind can assimilate or even understand."

In a 2010 interview on BET TELEVISION, Knowles said: "Sasha is my alter-ego. When people meet me and talk to me, they usually expect to see Sacha, but I'm actually much more reserved than her, it has nothing to do with it. In the dressing rooms, I'm no longer there because it's Sacha who emerges, she can do some things that I would normally be embarrassed to do, even if I try to behave in this way, it doesn't work, by myself it doesn't work. I also remember that just before I went on stage, I raised my hands to heaven and it's like something was coming into me and that's when I knew I was going to win a BET Award.''

- To$ha :

Ke$ha stated that she had several supernatural experiences that influenced her album entitled "Warrior". During an interview with Ryan Seacrest, she revealed that she had "made love with a ghost" (incubated: a male demon who is supposed to take shape to sexually abuse a sleeping woman) by specifying that this sexual relationship had inspired her latest single "Supernatural": "It's a song about supernatural experiences... but erotic. I've had a few experiences with the supernatural. I don't know his name, he was a ghost! I am very open on the subject.''.

- Lady Gaga :

Lady Gaga learned from her mother that strange dreams and other nightmares may have been secret rituals... Gaga revealed that her nightmares inspired her music, music videos and performances. In 2010, she told *Rolling Stone* magazine about a *frightening dream that she repeatedly makes: "This* ghost takes me into a *room, and there is a blonde girl whose arms and legs are spread by ropes... I never see her being cut out, but I watch her moan. Then the ghost says to me, "If you want me to stop hurting him and if you want your family to be safe and sound, you have to cut off your wrist." I think it must have a sick cutting tool. And there's this honey... He wants me to mix this honey in a cream and then spread it on the wound and bandage. When I come out of this dream, I open my eyes and there is none of that around me... And my mother who said to me then: "Wouldn't this be an Illuminati ritual?"*

Gaga said she turned to her friend and spiritual advisor, the famous Deepak Chopra, to help her interpret a dream in which she eats a human heart.

- It's terrifying! The devil is trying to take me. Deepak, I'm a nice girl!

- You are very creative my Gaga. You should stage this in a video clip.

- I guess in his own way, he teaches me to respect and honor my madness. It is part of who I am (...) I have morbid dreams but I put them on show. A lot of my work is an exorcism for the fans, but for me too[602].

The young singer Gaga explained to *Vanity Fair magazine* that she thinks the spirit of her deceased aunt is inside her. For her, the spirit of her aunt Joanne was "transferred" into her mother's womb, she says: *"When I was born, it's almost as if I continued her work ina.chevé. She was a poet and had a pure heart, she was a beautiful person. She died a virgin* (**...**) *And one of my guides told me that he could feel that I had two hearts in my chest, and that's what I think* *also*603]."

In 2011, Gaga also told Bazaar magazine that it was not she who wrote her song "Born This Way", but that it was the now-deceased British fashion designer Alexander McQueen who transmitted the lyrics to her from the world of the dead. Indeed, Lady Gaga and McQueen, who committed suicide in 2010, were close friends: "Everything is planned, just after her death I wrote "Born This Way". I think he's in heaven pulling the strings of fashion, doing the puppeteer and planning it all." ... Declares the Gaga...

A 2010 *Herald Sun article reported that* Lady Gaga believed she was haunted by a ghost named "Ryan" and that he followed her all over the world on her tours. She said that this constant presence terrified her. A member of her team reported to the *Daily Star* newspaper: *"She has been telling us for months that there is a ghost called 'Ryan" who travels the world with her* (**...**) *He hasn't done anything particularly violent or scary, but she freaks out at his presence. She is very spiritual and she is a person in harmony with the spiritual world, but all this goes a little too far, even for her. "*

Gaga even reportedly contacted a psychic and arranged a session to communicate with the entity and tell them to leave. Lady Gaga seems obsessed with the spirit world, at the age of 24 she had already spent tens of thousands of dollars on "ghost hunters", especially in a device measuring electromagnetic fields to detect spirits[604]...

- To conclude:

We see overwhelmingly that many of the world's celebrities are veritable emotional, psychological and spiritual wrecks, leading or having led a life of chaotic, morbid and destructive debauchery. Many of the world's biggest stars end up dying before they are old and in similar circumstances (the official nature of the death being sometimes to be taken in the conditional in this type of case), here are some examples:

- Whitney Houston : “overdose”
- Heath Ledger : “overdose”
- Phillip Seymour Hoffman : “overdose”
- Jim Morrison : “overdose”
- David Carradine: ''asphyxiation''
- Michael Jackson : “overdose”
- Robin Williams : “asphyxie”
- Cory Monteith : “overdose”
- Kurt Cobain: ''bullet in the head''
- Jimi Hendrix : “overdose”
- Janis Joplin : “overdose”
- Marilyn Monroe : “overdose”
- Anna Nicole Smtih : “overdose”
- Amy Winehouse : ''overdose''
- Brittany Murphy : “overdose”
- etc...

Eating disorders, obsessive-compulsive disorder (OCD), bipolar and borderline disorders, histrionic (narcissistic) personality disorders, depressions and dissociative identity disorders make up the palette of sad psychological states of celebrities in the entertainment industry. What do they all have in common to suffer so much? What is the source of this evilbeing?

The French psychotherapist and sexologist Patrick Dupuis perhaps enlightens us on this question with what he calls *the "Initial Violence",* that is to say the source that generates perversity, violence and self-destruction: *"Without wind, no storm, without* childhood *traumas, no depression, no phobias, no perversions. No natural impulse system* *alone is capable of generating violence without being subjected to violent coercion (abuse, forcing, control, pressure) from around the environment... Homo sapiens has no instinct for destruction or impulse for death, any more than any animal living on earth. It has only a building instinct that is reversible in its opposite under the effect of a traumatic shock. The psychic device that I call instinct of construction (of oneself and of the world) is reversible in its opposite (in instinct of destruction) under the effect of serious environmental disturbances that are called childhood traumas. The term perversion describes well this process of inversion, which is a dynamic process (and not a natural property of perversity), but most of the time we do not link violent or perverse behavior to the violence that generated it, and this for lack of a valid theorization of the process, and also because of the law of silence that still weighs on this type of* ***hiddenviolence! 605]."***

This pervasive chaos and unhappiness in the entertainment industry is bound to be rooted in a traumatic past but also by a close relationship with the occult and the spirit world.

Are childhood traumas the price to pay for access to creative genius, to certain psychic powers, to the ability to open up easily to the spirit world through dissociation and possession, to ultimately attain glory? A child who has been consecrated to Satan since birth, having undergone repetitive traumatic ritual abuse, becomes in spite of himself closely linked to the demons... He will navigate between the world of humans and the world of spirits in dissociative states, altered states of consciousness caused by drugs, alcohol, music, but also violence on himself or on others.

His personality splitting and MK programming will only strengthen his ability to channel inspiration from an "Beyond" in order to serve here on earth as a relay medium, thus advancing the agenda for the establishment of the Luciferian reign. A human who has been consecrated to Lucifer/Satan since birth, who is dissociated and divided by traumas, is wide open to demonic possession (which does not necessarily involve walking on the ceiling and spitting nails), he will act as a human slave to transmit Luciferian culture on this earth via the best tool: the industry of the entertainment... This without escaping the inner chaos, self-destruction and final sacrifice of the slave. The Prince of this world needs agents/slaves on the ground to effectively influence humanity as a whole, to transmit the doctrine - Luciferian subculture - and for this the entertainment industry is the propaganda platform par excellence.

c/ The pact with the devil?

Several celebrities have publicly stated that they have literally sold their souls to the devil for glory and fortune... All this can obviously give rise to a smile because the secular world is today totally hermetic to these ideas.

Joseph Niezgoda's book "The Lennon Prophecy, A New Examination of the Death Clues of the Beatles" has put together a puzzle to demonstrate that John Lennon made a pact with Satan in exchange for fame and fortune. Joseph Niezgoda, a fan of the Beatles of the first generation, who read all the books published on the famous rock band, detected a love of music, but also a certain love for Satan.

Niezgoda introduces his book with Lennon's famous quote to his friend Tony Sheridan in the mid-60s: "I sold my soul to the devil." Then he describes how this group of musicians composed of ordinary young English people ended up achieving world fame...

Niezgoda cites the date of 27 December 1960 as the beginning of the pact. That night, the Beatles were playing at the Town Hall Ball Room in Litherland, England. At that time, Lennon was just a twenty-year-old rock singer in a mediocre band comparable to many other bands. But that night, the Beatles provoked an incredible reaction from the audience, a reaction completely different from other times: while they were playing, the crowd jumped unexpectedly on the stage and all the girls began to become hysterical. This has never happened before, but it is a behaviour that will become systematic afterwards.

This is how, overnight, Beatlemania was born. The four young musicians and singers remembered that night as the turning point of their careers. Had the pact been concluded during the winter solstice a few days earlier? Thus preparing the crowd for this totally exaggerated reaction of December 27th? A date chosen as "the anniversary of Beatlemania".

Niezgoda also notes that this concert marks the beginning of John Lennon's openly anti-Christian behavior. Several biographies of Lennon record many desecrations carried out publicly, with no apparent purpose, except to blaspheme Jesus Christ.

Twenty years later, on december nine, 1980, Mark David Chapman fired five shots with a revolver at John Lennon in front of the famous Dakota building in New York, where he and his wife Yoko Ono had an apartment (on the same floor where Roman Polanski's occult film Rosemary's Baby was shot). Lennon died shortly after this attack. Mark Chapman later stated that he had been instructed to kill Lennon by a "voice in his head" that insisted, "Do it, do it, do it...". Five years later, in prison, Chapman asked to receive an exorcism from a priest, and then declared that he had been delivered from five or six demons.

Much of Niezgoda's book investigates the "clues" left by the Beatles themselves on album covers and in their music. Clues that lead to occultism. To support his thesis, Niezgoda documented witchcraft, mysticism, numerology, anagrams, *etc.* He claims that clues to Lennon's death are revealed in the album covers of Rubber Soul, Yesterday and Today, A Collection of Beatles Oldies, Sgt. Pepper's Lonely Hearts Club Band, Yellow Submarine, Magical Mystery Tour, as well as in Lennon's solo albums such as Imagine and Walls and Bridges.

The cover of the Beatles ' 1966 album "Yesterday and Today", reveals nothing about John Lennon's death, but it explicitly shows that the band was involved in Satanism. This cover, dubbed "The Butcher's Blanket", shows the Beatles posing in a white butcher's blouse with large pieces of raw meat on their lap, as well as a beheaded baby mannequin... This very gloomy photo clearly refers to the sacrifices of children during satanic rituals. This is not an avant-garde artistic work or a bad farce, as some Beatles fans claim.

Niezgoda also reports some song lyrics that reveal the mysterious prediction of John Lennon's death, as well as his connection with Satan. His songs were often transmitted to him in his dreams, especially those that were the most successful. In one of his last songs, ''Help me to help myself'', it seems that he realized that his time had come. The song begins with these lyrics: "Well, I tried so hard to stay alive, but the angel of destruction continues to harass me from everywhere. But I know in my heart that we never really left...''. At the end of the song, Lennon can be heard whispering, "I see, I see. That's how you're going to do it, ok.'' As Niezgoda points out, there is nothing in his book that is not already in the public domain. All he did was to connect the elements together in order to reveal the question of occultism and the high probability that the Beatles received supernatural help in their ascent to glory[606].

In December 2004, the famous Bob Dylan gave an interview to Ed Bradley for the television show 60 Minutes (CBS), here are some excerpts: - Bradley: Why continue? Why are you still here?

- Dylan: It's a matter of destiny, I made a good deal with her. a long time ago and. I'm coming to the end.

- Bradley: What is this?

- Dylan: To get to where I am now.

- Bradley: Could I ask you who did you do this ''good deal'' with?

- Dylan: (laughs) With. You know, commander-in-chief.

- Bradley:... of this land?

- Dylan: Of this land, and of the world that we can't see.

Here, when Bob Dylan talks about the commander-in-chief, he is referring to Lucifer commander-in-chief of the fallen angels (demons), the Prince of this world. An uplifting interview in which he also states:

- Bradley: Do you ever look back on your productions and to tell you: "Wow! It surprises me!"

- Dylan: I used to do it but I don't do it anymore. I don't know how I came to write these songs.
- Bradley: What do you mean by that?
- Dylan: All those early songs were written like magic... "Darkness at the break of noon, shadows even the silver spoon, a handmade blade, the child's balloon"' (editor's note: lyrics introducing Dylan's famous song "It's All Right, Ma") Well try to sit down and write something like that, there's a magic in there... and this is not the type of magic à la Siegfried and Roy (editor's note: two famous magician artists- illusionists), you see? It's another type of penetrating magic. And you know, I did it, I did it for a while.

Famous rapper Kanye West said on stage: "I sold my soul to the devil, I know it's a rotten deal, but it comes with some surprises like in a happy meal.

Katy Perry ironically said in an interview: "I wanted to be the "Amy Grant" of music. But it didn't work, so... I sold my soul to the devil." .... She now has the status of a world-renowned star, including a clip in particular that refers directly to MK programming, we will come back to this later.

recognized, including a clip in particular that refers directly to mk programming, we will come back to it later.

Roger Morneau, the author of "A Trip Into the Supernatural" has been associated for several years with a Canadian sect involved in spiritualism and the worship of demons. In a 1995 video interview with Dan & Karen Houghton of the Hart Research Center, Morneau reported the words of a famous jazz musician with whom he was having dinner at a party:

"If I want power, I go straight to its source. How do you think I became so famous?" I said, "You must be lucky." He then declared: "There is no such thing as luck. Either there's a certain power working for you somewhere, or you don't advance in this world." Then we talked about the veneration of spirits (...) He told me that the so-called spirits of the dead are demons. ''They are fallen angels, beautiful beings (...) We revere spirits. We revere Lucifer and all his angels. They are all as beautiful as when they were driven out of Heaven (...) So we are in a war, good against evil. We are the bad guys, but we are not that bad. I see this case as the forces of good and evil, one person believes in God, the other believes in Lucifer, it's like politics."'

Former porn star Shelley Lubben testified on 700 Club (Out of Pornography and Into the Light - CBN): "As soon as the camera started shooting, it was as if Satan was coming to me... I could almost see the devil saying to me, "You see Shelley, everybody's going to love you now, I'm going to make you famous." The producer was surprised: "Where did you find this girl?" I then immediately went from being an amateur to being a professional filming adult with porn stars. It was destroying me, I had lost my femininity, I lost my whole personality in porn.''

Here's what she reports about her first day of filming in 1992: "As soon as I entered, I had the impression that a dark satanic presence was invading me. It was terrifying, dark, it had nothing to do with prostitution. I knew I was in Satan's territory. It was like Satan's last frontier. I was like, ''Oh my God, I can't believe I'm going to do it.'' Shelley went all the way and his career took off, fame and money quickly became an obsession

4 - Marilyn Monroe: Hollywood's first slave under mental control

Marilyn Monroe is perhaps the most iconic figure in American culture and the most easily identifiable sex symbol of all time. However, behind Marilyn's photogenic smile there was a fragile person who was exploited and subjected to mind control by powerful "masters".

Marilyn Monroe is the ultimate sex symbol, embodying everything Hollywood stands for: glamorous and flashy. Her iconic sensual blonde character has revolutionized the film industry forever, and even today, this icon greatly influences popular culture.

While Marilyn represents all that is glamorous in Hollywood, the disturbing story of her private life also represents the entire dark side of Hollywood... Marilyn was effectively manipulated by high-level "mind doctors" who controlled every aspect of her life and actually stole her soul. His death, at the early age of 36, was one of the first "mysterious death of a celebrity" in popular culture. While many facts point to murder, his death is still classified as "probable suicide".

While many biographers explain that Marilyn's misfortunes originated solely from "psychological problems," the assemblage of the facts of her life combined with the knowledge of the dark side of Hollywood reveals something even darker: Marilyn Monroe was one of the first celebrities subjected to Monarch mind control. Through trauma and a psychological program, Marilyn gradually became a high-level puppet for the American elite, she even became the presidential model of JFK.

When Monroe's programming deteriorated and began to sink, some claim that he was "thrown out of the train of freedom," the term for slaves who are eliminated when they are no longer useful to their masters (and potentially dangerous because of the revelations they might make).

Marilyn, real name Norma Jeane, was declared a ward of the state at the age of 11. She never knew her father and her mother was psychologically very unstable. The little girl went to many foster families, orphanages and other homes. Placements during which she was subjected to ill-treatment but also sexual abuse. This unstable and traumatic youth has made her an ideal candidate for mind control, including Beta programming (sexual slavery). These children who no longer have a family are easy prey, they are at the mercy of unidentifiable adults and are therefore targets for the Network.

Norma Jeane began her career as a stripper in Los Angeles, it was there that she was put in touch with a certain Anton LaVey (who would later found the Church of Satan). According to Fritz

Springmeier, LaVey was himself an MK programmer and the young Norma Jeane became one of his sex slaves, as did Jayne Mansfield (actress and singer). Mansfield and Monroe had a lot in common: they were both "luscious blondes", the model of women who are credited with the sexualization of Hollywood; both worked (playmates) for Playboy magazine; both had an "adventure" with the Satanist Anton LaVey; both had an "adventure" with Robert F. Kennedy and JFK (the adventure was actually to play the role of "presidential models"; both died in their thirtieth year.

It was when she joined the blue book modeling agency that Norma Jeane physically transformed herself to become the iconic Marilyn Monroe. She underwent cosmetic surgery, a change of hair color and finally a change of name... A radical transformation that allowed him to access many film roles. It was in 1956 that she officially and legally changed her name, from Norma Jeane to the future world icon: Marilyn
Monroe. A strong symbolic act which in terms of mental control represents the suppression of his original personality, with the aim of allowing his alter personality to exist fully. From that point on, Marilyn was only what her controllers wanted her to be.

As her biographers reveal, Marilyn had little or no personal freedom. His masters isolated her in order to better control her and thus prevent people from outside helping her to become aware that she was being manipulated. The only people she was in contact with were her psychiatrists and teachers. The proof that these individuals were the only people in Marilyn's life is that they inherited almost all of her fortune. Monroe consulted psychiatrists almost daily, were they conditioning and programming sessions? One thing is certain, it is that his condition worsened as these sessions increased in frequency.

In 1955, while residing at the Waldford Astoria Hotel in New York, she wrote a poem entitled "The Surgeon Story". She evokes in this text a surgical procedure performed on her person, she describes being drugged and "open" (magic surgery?) by Lee Strasberg (her "mentor") and Margaret Hohenberg (her psychiatrist). This account is generally described as a mere memory of a nightmare reported by Marilyn, but some researchers argue that it is actually a description of a mind control session. She describes that the operation did not bother her, because she was prepared for it, was she in a state of dissociation and trance? She also mentions the fact that she saw "only white", which could allude to sensory isolation (a method used in the MK-Ultra). Once "open", the doctors found in her only a "fine sawdust, like the one coming out of a rag doll". Marilyn sees herself as an empty doll, something typical of an MK slave who has lost touch with her original personality. Here is this text entitled "The history of the surgeon":

Strasberg - she is the best and most competent of the surgeons to open me up, which I do not object to since Dr. H.m prepared for it - she gave me an anesthetic and it was she too who diagnosed my case and who agrees with what needs to be practiced - an operation - to bring me back to life and cure me of this terrible disease or anything (...) Once Dr. H.m an anesthetic to try to relieve me medically, Strasberg opens me - and after all in the room becomes WHITE, in fact I don't see anyone anymore, just white objects - they open me - Strasberg and the nana Hohenberg - and there is absolutely nothing in it - Strasberg is deeply disappointed but even more intellectually surprised that he could have made such a mistake. He thought he would find much more than he had ever hoped to find... and instead, there was absolutely nothing - devoid of any sensitive living human creature - the only thing that came out of it was very fine sawdust - as found inside the dolls with the effigy of Raggedy Ann (rag doll) - and sawdust spreads on the floor and table, Dr. H. is baffled because she suddenly understands that she is faced with a new scenario where the patient... exists from the extreme vacuum. Strasberg sees his dreams and hopes of an operating room fall by the wayside. Dr. H. must give up his dreams and hopes for lasting psychiatric treatment - Arthur is disappointed - Abandoned[607].

Marilyn Monroe reportedly officially had two pregnancies ending in miscarriages. While his biographers state that these are indeed miscarriages, other sources actually speak of induced deliveries. Lena Pepitone, who was Marilyn Monroe's maid, seamstress and confidante, wrote a book in which she reported the star's statement: "Don't take my baby. They took it from me... and I would never see him again." The book reveals that Marilyn had not had any miscarriages but that they took her baby from her, a common practice in MK-Ultra and Satanism.

At the height of his career, Monroe found himself connected with U.S. President John F. Kennedy. Some historians have described this relationship as a mere "adventure", but it probably served as a "presidential dummy" - a slave destined for the "good pleasure" of presidents and other notables.

Adam Gorightly, in his book ''An Interpretation of Kubrick's Eyes Wide Shut'' writes: ''These presidential mannequins would have been used by artists and politicians as sex toys: puppets under the control of the mind programmed to perform various perverse acts on the orders of their manipulative master. It is assumed that Marilyn Monroe was the first Monarch sex slave who rose to celebrity status.

The last months of Marylin Monroe's life were characterized by incoherent behavior and several "intimate" relationships with individuals in power. As a Beta slave, she was also sexually used by people in the industry. In June Dimaggio's book, *"Marilyn, Joe & Me",* **the author describes how she was forced to be in the service of elderly men and that she had to completely dissociate herself from reality (an important aspect of MK programming) in order to perform repugnant acts:** *"Marilyn could not afford emotions when she had to sleep with wrinkled old people to survive in the profession. She had to protect herself by virtually "unplugging" herself from her emotions during those moments - as if she were playing a role in extricating herself from the horror of the situation. When* **these** *wealthy high-ranking tycoons possessed her body and soul, she could not live on her own. At that time, she told me, she was going home exhausted by photo shoots and powerful old "schnocks" were calling her, which gave her goosebumps. After some horrors during these sex* *sessions, she stayed in the shower for more than an hour. She wanted to wash herself of the terrible experience she had just endured."'*

In 1962, Marilyn began filming "Something's Got to Give" but was so psychologically unstable that she was eventually fired and sued by 20th Century Fox who asked her for half a million dollars in compensation. In his book "Goddess: The Secret Lives of Marilyn Monroe", Anthony Summers reports that the film's producer, Henry Weinstein, stated that Marilyn's behavior during filming was horrifying: "Very few people live in terror. We all experience anxiety, sadness and heartache, but there it was a purely animal terror."

It was her psychiatrist Ralph Greenson who found her dead in his room on August 5, 1962. While his death was classified as a "probable suicide" by barbiturate poisoning, this still remains one of the most debated theories of all time, because there are really a large number of facts that lend credence to the thesis of murder. So much evidence has been destroyed that it is hard not to believe in a cover-up. Jack Clemmons, the first Los Angeles police officer to investigate the scene of his death, wrote a report stating that he clearly suspected murder. Three people were present in Marilyn Monroe's house at the time of her death: her governess Eunice Murray, her psychiatrist Dr. Ralph Greenson, and her general practitioner Dr. Hyman Engelberg. The investigation into Monroe's death revealed that Dr. Greenson called the police more than an hour after Dr. Engelberg pronounced him dead. The behaviour of the three people present at the scene was described as "inconsistent". This is very reminiscent of the circumstances of the death of Michael Jackson, whose life can be modeled on many points with that of Marilyn Monroe, especially on the fact that it was their entourage who managed their life from A to Z... like precious dolls of the entertainment industry (it's the same for Britney Spears and for many others...).

Marilyn Monroe quickly became an extraordinary global icon representing the sexy and glamorous side of Hollywood, but she also became, in the infamous world of mk-ultra, the symbol of Beta Programming. Today, more than ever, young stars raised in the entertainment industry, have followed in his footsteps (as if everything was planned for them). These young women, manipulated by "coaches", are led towards notoriety and fortune. Women who were usually subjected to mental control from an early age, later leading to psychotic seizures and sometimes even a mysterious early death. Systematically, these celebrities are staged at some point in their careers to embody the image of Marilyn Monroe, as if it were a sickly need of those who pull the strings to make a point of symbolically revealing MK slavery. Videos or photos featuring big stars who embody the mythical image of Marilyn Monroe are plethora. There are too many for it to be a coincidence, and in some cases the resemblance is not only aesthetic, as the tragic destinies are so similar[608]...

5 - Candy Jones: ''Manchu Candidate''

The case of Candy Jones is one of the most documented cases when it comes to mind control in the fashion world. How did a famous American model come to suffer the CIA's experiments on mind control? In 2001, journalist Colin Bennett wrote an article for Fortean Times magazine[609] exposing this whole affair:

> For everyone she was known as the most famous American model of the 40s. But she led a secret life in the manner of a Manchurian Candidate agent working for the secret services during the Cold War. Colin Bennett analyzed this case of multiple personality and hypnotic mind control.

On December 31, 1972, in a luxurious New York apartment owned by lawyer friends, the famous 61-year-old radio presenter, Long John Nebel married Candy Jones, 47, an internationally renowned model. The guests of this happy event would certainly have a lot to tell.

John Nebel was the Arthur William ''Art'' Bell of the time, and his nightly radio show had an audience of several million listeners, but that night his head was not at Watergate or Vietnam... He had just married a woman whose face had made the cover of the country's eleven largest magazines in the space of a month, in 1943. During the Pacific offensive of World War II, photos of Candy Jones in polka dot swimsuit adorned the interiors of ships, tanks and trenches.

It was a very quick wedding organized following a love at first sight, so Nebel did not know his wife well. During the reception, he noticed for a short time that she had lost all her exuberance and natural charm. Her voice then became that of another woman and her usually fluid posture became rigid. The evening continued in a Chinese restaurant named ''Ho Ho'', this is where Nebel noticed this transformation again; it was as if she was uncomfortable with the Chinese décor, mirrors and candles. As she went to bed, Candy spoke again with that strange voice that Nebel had heard earlier in the evening. What was even more alarming was the fact that candy's strange personality had a completely different attitude towards him. "She" seemed cruel, mocking and cold. When Nebel asked her for an explanation about it, Candy was surprised; indeed, she had not noticed the emergence of another voice or personality. However, a few weeks after their marriage, she eventually confided to Nebel that she had once worked for the FBI for a while, mysteriously adding that she might have to leave the city again without giving any explanation. Nebel then wondered if there was a connection between Candy's other personality and these strange trips she says she made for the FBI.

Candy Jones, real name Jessica Wilcox, was born in 1925 in Atlantic City, New Jersey. She became a delightful young blonde woman of 1.93 meters. Her typical American "ice-queen" face, just like that of Grace Kelly, Jayne Mansfield or Marilyn Monroe, was at that time very fashionable. Although she grew up in a rather affluent environment, her father and mother,manic depressive (bipolar), abused her. For example, his father, who was separated from his mother, once crushed his fingers on a nutmeg grater. Her mother hit her legs to the point that Candy had to wear thick stockings to hide the marks of blows. She was not allowed to rub shoulders with other children and was often locked in a dark room by her mother. It is in this dark room that little Candy, panicked, has developed a series of imaginary characters to keep her company. In the darkness of her prison, she visualized these characters appearing in the few

reflections of a large wall mirror. The name of one of her magical friends was Arlene, who would later play a crucial role in Candy's life. Unlike the other characters in this fantasy world, Arlene did not disappear when Candy became an adult. She grew and matured with her, as did a secondary personality. Arlene's personality was a kind of mirror inverted from that
Candy. She had character traits of Candy's mother: she was tough, ruthless, sarcastic and cruel, with a squeaky little voice very different from Candy's.

It was this voice that Nebel first heard on her wedding day. When she was herself, Candy was the most loving, charming and sociable of women. But when she was Arlene, she could become dangerously vicious, she even tried one night to strangle her new husband in a military and professional way. Nebel quickly understood and concluded, not without reason, that the spirit of his new wife was very disturbed. Candy seemed to be terrorized by everything chinese, she also had a great fear of doctors, psychiatrists and dentists, as well as medicines in general. Medication was what Candy was most afraid of, every time she heard about them, Candy's "protector", Arlene, repeatedly stated that such things should never get into "her" body.

Nebel discovered that Candy's personality changes had a long history, and her research led her directly to the heart of an organization that many of her listeners had been talking to her about for years: the Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) of the United States of America. Nebel then took a big risk, indeed, for many years he had been practicing hypnosis as an amateur and so he decided to put Candy in a light trance to ask him some questions and note the answers. Then begins one of the most amazing stories of our time told in Donald Bain's book: "The Control of Candy Jones".

In 1945, while touring U.S. military bases in the Philippines, Candy fell ill and was admitted to the Leyte Gulf Hospital. It was there that she met a certain Dr. Gilbert Jensen (This is a pseudonym chosen by Donald Bain for legal reasons. Bain said that Nebel had confided to him that he knew very well who this doctor was and that he had thought many times about killing him). This young doctor then prescribed vitamin injections, which probably saved his life, or at least saved his physical appearance. Jensen then left her card and told her that he hoped to stay in touch with her. Several years after this event, she was going to meet Dr. Jensen again, which will have disastrous consequences...

In 1946, she married without much feeling to the king of fashion Harry Conover, who would later be imprisoned for fraud. The marriage ended in divorce in 1959, leaving him custody of his three sons and a modeling agency in New York City. In 1960, an old acquaintance of Candy's, a retired army general, visited him at the agency to ask for a small service. He wanted her to authorize the FBI to use her agency as a post office box. She agreed and even offered to deliver the mail to them during her business trips. At that time, she took this arrangement no more and no less as a mere patriotic activity. She had no idea what was in store for her.

One of the first missions given by this general (with unknown name) was to deliver a letter to a san Francisco man during one of his trips. This man was Dr. Gilbert Jensen, whom she remembered only vaguely. She dined with this man on November 16, 1960, a day that was to forever mark her life. Jensen revealed to him that he now works for the CIA and that he has an office in Oakland. He tells Candy that if she wanted to, she could get more involved in secret intelligence, adding that it could be lucrative for her. With her three sons in private schools, Candy ran out of money and accepted the offer.

The first thing Jensen did was hypnotize Candy. While doing this, he discovered the alter personality "Arlene". He then reinforced this personality through the use of hypnotic techniques and intravenous injections of experimental drugs. He managed to make Arlene a leading personality in Candy's mind in order to be able to send her (with Arlene's voice and behavior) to perform different missions, nationally and internationally. Candy's change to Arlene was radical, in addition to the change in personality, voice and behavior, she wore a specific wig and makeup. Jensen wanted to create the "perfect messenger", the one who could not reveal anything about the message to be transmitted, nor where he came from, nor who sent him, even under torture.

This operation was extensive and very well organized. Candy, as Arlene, the virtual zombie, went to training camps, military bases, and secret medical facilities all over the United States. She has been trained in all areas related to clandestine action, including the handling of explosives, hand-to-hand combat, the manufacture of improvised weapons, camouflage and communication. Arlene learned to kill with her bare hands, she was conditioned to resist pain and trained to resist interrogation techniques. Jensen, who was very proud of his work, highlighted it in the army on several occasions as a "narco- hypnotic" success, the perfect warrior. An important point for Jensen was to demonstrate that the conditioning was so deep that Arlene could go so far as to kill himself to order. To get an idea of the moral values of the people involved in these kinds of programs, it happened that Jensen put a lit candle in Candy's vagina without the slightest reaction of fear or pain on her part. He gave the demonstration in front of 24 doctors in an auditorium at the CIA headquarters in Langley, Virginia.

Candy, as Arlene, was sent to Taiwan at least twice on a test mission to transmit envelopes. There, she was tortured with electric batons to see if she was going to crack, which she did not do. Perverse sexuality seems to have been an important element in this mental programming plan. She was often put naked on a stretcher, hypnotized and tortured on different parts of the body. She was subjected to coercive Gestapo-type interrogations and was sexually abused by women against her will. The sexual abuse was done under hypnosis by Jensen himself.

Of course, none of this was part of the so-called fight against communism. It was more of an example of what Churchill called "perverted science" operating in an intelligence service. The hypnosis and mental programming techniques used on Candy Jones came from American tactical and strategic research done in Vietnam, as did the saturation of unnecessary bombing, the use of defoliants, *etc.* The Americans would have done better to give Japanese televisions free of charge to the Vietnamese to put them to sleep, this would have been the easy solution. But perhaps we are talking here about something more sinister than a failed Cold War weaponry. An armament that failed against the Communists, but did it fail when it turned against the American state itself? Mark Chapman, Shiran-Shiran, John Hinckley, James Earl Ray and Lee Harvey Oswald are proof that there were other "Dr. Jensen" at work in America.

Jensen knew he was taking huge risks. He could not be sure and certain that Arlène would not emerge unexpectedly at any time in Candy's daily life. Despite his precautions, this is of course what happened, otherwise none of this would have been known to the public. Candy had no idea that she had made trips or done certain things outside of her visits to Jensen and mail deliveries. That was all she knew, everything else was complete amnesia. Once her journey and mission were over, Jensen would pull her out of her trance and return once again to her daily life.

We know this story from the audio tapes containing the hypnosis sessions where Nebel questioned Candy. When Candy was made to listen to these recordings, she could not believe that she had gone through the things that Arlene was describing. From these numerous cassettes recorded over a number of years, Donald Bain (the author of "The Control of Candy Jones") has skillfully articulated the four complex characters that are Arlene, Nebel, Jensen and Candy. Arlene being an abstraction in Candy's head, Nebel a very real character and Jensen a character who remains in the shadows. This tragedy was reinforced by the accumulation of evidence that Jensen had indeed existed and that he was probably engaged in the type of activities that Candy/Arlene had described. In the mid-70s, Nebel had a devastating cancer, upset by Candy's story and the doubt that she had seen Jensen several more times secretly during their marriage, he was thinking strongly about revenge. He told Bain that he was going to kill Jensen, but Bain managed to dissuade him from doing so.

Like cathy O'Brien's unique books "America in A Trance-Formation" and Annie McKenna's "Paperclip Dolls," Bain's book is a brilliant production. Disregarding the usual commercial setting, he spent an enormous amount of time extracting the entire story of Candy Jones from hundreds of audio cassettes. The work was done over several years, but it lacked the voice of Jensen himself, the information about him had to be reconstructed from the recorded dialogues. Although he was only a character in the shadows, Nebel was convinced that there was enough outside evidence to demonstrate that he was much more real than Arlene.

The most difficult problem was to get rid of the many barriers placed like cement layers by Jensen in Candy's mind. Nebel often tried to impersonate Jensen during hypnosis sessions; however, Arlene consistently noticed this tactic and made it known. Arlene liked Jensen, while Candy didn't like him at all. Nebel also pretended to be alter Arlene. Candy was much more comfortable talking about herself in this way, and so she revealed a lot of information about this Dr. Jensen's activities.

Donald Bain suggests that Candy, as Arlene, carried out many even more experimental missions for Jensen, which were never discovered. He also went to the Candy branch to check, with the help of the commercial director, the schedules of the associates during the 60s. Over a period of 10 years, it was found that Candy was often absent under the guise of "business trips" for which no company appeared. Fragments of these journeys emerged under hypnosis, on one occasion she said she had to deliver a gun for Jensen.

(...) But what worried Nebel the most before his death were the attempts of the CIA and Jensen to contact Candy. His adventures apparently took place between 1960 and 1971, but Bain said he couldn't be entirely sure it didn't last. The brave Nebel died of cancer shortly after Bain's book was published. He died without having found all the answers he was looking for about his wife's secret life. He had some consolations for a brief moment as he had begun to tear off the mask of America's hidden controllers. In a manner similar to other glamorous personalities, Candy Jones has unsnowingly entered the mystery of elitist power, which is constantly belied. If Jayne Mansfield has been the prey of the forces of consumerism and Marilyn Monroe has been the victim of high state intrigues, Candy Jones has certainly been one of the victims of both american intelligence services and medical and psychiatric institutions. These two sectors gave birth to the American military-industrial complex reinvigorated in the 50s and 60s[610].

Even in adulthood, these high-statured women like Candy Jones remain fairytale children, as do young models Jon Benet Ramsey and Sylvia Plath. Candy was probably chosen, not only because she was deemed easily hypnotize, but also because she was one of the first media dolls, a kind of prototype. America has always been the world leader in mind control and illusory dreams, from television to the furniture of dolls' houses. Like dolls, individuals become automatons and all sorts of experiments and profound societal changes make this semi-trance of the mind eventually become a natural state.

It may well be that Jensen was involved in the first experiments as part of the MK-Ultra program. Candy Jones' first husband had already made her a "superdoll", a perfect subject for Jensen. Bain's conclusion is that Jensen worked for the intelligence sector, but that he could also have had a much more complex project. If Candy represents the innocent imagination, situated between the worlds of Jules Verne and George Adamski, Jensen represents the dark side of science. It was the world of darkness of Auschwitz which, as we know, was managed by a community of scientists, doctors and industrialists.

Like Marilyn Monroe, Candy Jones may have been a victim of the U.S. military's early research into what are now called "non-lethal weapons." Perhaps the notion of "Big Brother", just like coal miners, eventually became something archaic and obsolete, and perhaps Orwell was wrong and Huxley was right. Unlimited pleasure for cheap, without pain or suffering, this is an ultimate weapon used to break the will of the population without a drop of blood being shed.

(...) John Nebel must have been questioning himself when his life took a certain turn with Candy Jones. For many years, this New York radio host had heard on his airwaves many listeners calling him to talk to him about these things that Candy was now describing when she was in a trance... As soon as Nebel heard Arlene's voice, he entered the world of American trance. A world in which entry wounds become exit wounds and in which Jack Ruby's last hours as a free man remain as enigmatic as Marilyn Monroe's last phone calls... or the mysterious travels of Candy Jones.

6 - Mk-Monarch symbolism in the music industry

"Signs and symbols rule the world, not laws or words" **- Confucius**

The music industry plays an important role, it is a powerful tool for indoctrinating the masses and there is much more than money at stake. The music proposed/imposed on the people is as powerful a tool of control as the school system or the daily television news. This type of social engineering shapes and shapes the attitudes and values of an entire youth. Hence the interest in spending millions of dollars to constantly promote new global stars idolized by millions of young people. Youth is obviously the main target to format a new order. Just as the children of satanic/Luciferian cults are programmed from an early age, the world's youth also undergoes systematic mind control. Certainly much less direct and coercive than ritual abuses but which remains no less effective in conditioning minds.

Many clips that are viewed millions of times on the YouTube video platform are actually just symbolic representations of the trauma-based Monarch mental programming process. These productions symbolically refer to a psychological process that is the splitting of the personality, the final goal of the MK-Monarch. The same symbols are systematically used by the Luciferian elite to promote among the layman his decadent and fallen culture. For this they infuse the symbolism of mind control in ultra-mediatized productions, whether in the luxury industry, fashion and musical productions with clips containing several reading grids. The notion of multiple personality and "crazy alter-egos" becomes something cool and spreads among glittery idols. The goal is to create a hegemonic and unmissable MK culture including an aesthetic and symbols now omnipresent in the media, all obviously packed in attractive and addictive entertainment. Unconsciously, the younger generation therefore associates this popularized and simplified occultism with something positive, with a fashion, with a model to follow. Luciferian symbols such as the triangle and the single eye appear more and more in the secular world. We cheer, demand and consume these demonic suggestions, and thus we unconsciously validate an entire Luciferian culture as something good for us. We love our music, we love our tv programs, our cartoons and our video games, we love content that very often clearly displays a Luciferian nature. As a result, our free will deliberately chooses to consume the devil's soup, because sweet at will...

In March 2014, a BBC commercial promoting ''Match of The Day'' contained several flashes depicting triangles with one eye in the centre. The flashes lasted a split second during which they could soak up in the minds of viewers. What did such Masonic symbols, appearing randomly, in an advertisement for football matches, do? But what else can we expect from a television channel that has protected an individual like Jimmy Savile for years? A monster that raped hundreds of children...

The MTV channel also likes to systematically insert Masonic occult symbolism in its commercials. The MTV group, which has also set up its Toronto studios in a former Masonic lodge.

The iHeartRadio Ultimate Pool Party festival in Miami Beach is one of those great gatherings used to imregnate the unconscious of youth with a special symbolism. In June 2013, during the Ke$ha concert, the giant screen broadcast for an hour flashes and series of hypnotizing images based on triangles, eyes, pentagrams and other typical Masonic and Luciferian symbols.

Fashion photos and magazine covers are full of this symbolism of Lucifer's unique eye, just as we see it blooming more and more on the clothes of our big brands.

Another example is Justin Bieber's 'Where Are U Now' music video which is built with a multitude of drawings modelled on the image of the young singer, each drawing passing for a fraction of a second on the screen. It turns out that in these hundreds of illustrations flashed on Bieber, we find many inverted crosses in the middle of his forehead, or Masonic pyramids with the single eye, 666, images that come back in a recurring way throughout the clip. This may be an unhealthy irony, but whatever we say, we have here a clip flashing in a subliminal way of Luciferian symbolisms, a clip that is viewed millions of times, directly printing these images in the minds of young people. In short, many people have already understood, all these "winks" are nothing but the impregnation of the world cult of Luciférien in popular and secular culture. Let us specify here that it is not a question of demonizing geometry and the equilateral triangle for example, these people have not invented anything, they are only taking codes and symbols by appropriating them.

Our spirit is the citadel in which the Spirit of God desires to work with us for eternity, but Satan tries to make this citadel his own to make it his throne... A choice must be made in the face of this corrupt and corrupting industry, the perfect platform through which Satan can reach the mass to brew, manipulate and pervert it; let us quote here Alexandre Dumas: "God angling souls, Satan fishing them with nets".

The music industry is perfectly aware of the scheme of feeding an impressionable youth in demand for ever more extreme content. As the audience becomes more and more insensitive to the things that are being put in place, the clips become more and more explicit by openly exposing the subject of mind control based on trauma, and this without any censorship although this is undoubtedly the most despicable practice in the world. The world of Monarch slaves is therefore clearly exposed to us in some clips that feature violence, torture, sexual abuse and humiliation without forgetting drugs, all presented as something cool and trendy. Again, this is about social engineering, global mind control.

What could be more appropriate than the "music video" format and the great artistic freedom it allows to give free rein to the massive dissemination of an occult knowledge barely concealed by symbolism and broadcast in a loop on TV channels and the web, 24 hours a day? The same codes are injected tirelessly in these productions... This is no coincidence, a story is told to us in a veiled way if we still have eyes to see. One of the most hidden things of this low world is therefore a knowledge that is paradoxically the most diffused daily under the nose of millions of people totally unaware of what is transmitted to them in a more or less direct way. This is probably a form of arrogance or black humour, or also a way of having humanity unconsciously validate these despicable practices as something positive. The fact that the Monarch mind control process is symbolically encoded in some of the world's biggest media productions (music, film, fashion), is a serious indication that it is a non-marginal practice, applied systematically in the upper echelons of our society. But it is also a way of massively disclosing occult knowledge in this great theater, where finally everything is displayed in the open. There are Laws above the laws of this world that the "nameless religion" must imperatively respect.

Music videos and even some films are therefore an ideal way to visually and symbolically reveal something much deeper than a simple song of three or four minutes. According to the occult belief of the Luciferian Order, the higher self can only be communicated through myths, symbolism or music, in order to be able to penetrate the unconscious effectively. In other words, don't talk about it, show the. This hermeticism systematically permeates large film and music productions: "Talking without talking, showing without showing and hiding without hiding", a very subtle art to which the entertainment industry zealously tackles. All this MK symbolism is massively diffused in the secular world so that people see without seeing and hear without understanding. The sorcerers-controllers take themselves for gods, they thus transmit their "light" in a more or less coded way with entertainment productions containing a double meaning and explicit symbols conveying an occult doctrine finally exposed to the eyes of millions of laymen. This indirect disclosure allows them to compromise the masses in this way so that we cannot say 'My God, we knew nothing about it''. In a way, they respect the Law of Free Will and the Ability to Make One's Own Choice when they clearly expose the most despicable things.

With regard to institutional paedocriminality, accepting systematic lies and thus abandoning the small victims to their fate, while the evidence is now becoming more and more blatant, means that people become morally complicit in these crimes by not reacting and letting it happen... The constant social engineering and denial of people in the face of corruption and atrocities committed by the ruling elite, although more evident than ever, are two key points on which this precarious balance rests. A balance to ensure that public opinion does not totally change, while at the same time compromising it. for it is clear that today everything is revealed and exposed for those who choose to seek by themselves by emancipating themselves from social engineering programs.

But let's go back to the music industry and its links with the MK-Monarch. In the introduction to the music video *"Mary The Night",* Lady Gaga makes a monologue defining quite clearly the situation of a victim under mental control. She explains "artistically" the traumas she went through to reach the status of *superstar.* The video shows Lady Gaga lying on a stretcher pushed by two nurses, she describes how she perceives her sad reality: "When I look back on *my life, it's not that I don't want to see things exactly how they happened, it's just that I prefer to remember them in a poetic way. And to be honest, the lie of all this is much more honest, because I was the one who invented it. Psychiatry teaches us that trauma is arguably the ultimate killer. Memories are not recycled like atoms and particles in quantum* *physics. They can be lost forever. My past is an unfinished painting and just like the painter I have to fill all the awful holes to beautify the canvas. It's not pa.s that I'm dishonest, it's just that I hate reality..."*

We systematically find in a number of big budget clips the same symbolic ones such as the artist represented as a broken doll, a model, an automaton or a puppet held by wires and a décor representing the "inner world" of the slave. The process of dissociation and splitting is often represented by passing through a mirror or bursting the mirror meaning that rollback is impossible or programming is broken; the rainbow having the same symbolism as the passage through the mirror. The single Lutheran eye or "the eye that sees everything" comes back very frequently, as well as a graphic representing duality such as the black and white checkerboard... and of course we find the monarch butterfly constantly coming back in these productions, as a signature. Pentagrams and goat heads, masks, pyramids, are also classical symbols permeating this Luciferian subculture. Don't talk about it, show the. and thus permeate secular popular culture to indirectly corrupt it.

Here are some examples of particularly explicit productions and I invite the reader to discover these clips for themselves on the internet, there are also much more detailed analyses on their symbolic content. It is obvious that a symbolic interpretation may seem very subjective, but a certain knowledge of MK processes makes it possible to identify clear indicators, especially when we find the same codes, the same symbolic imagery used systematically in many big budget productions.

- Let's start first with the video of the song "Self Control" by Laura Branigan released in 1984, which is if we can say the ancestor of clips featuring a symbolic of mental control. At first glance, this piece that was an international hit tells the story of a girl loving the nightlife of nightclubs. But it is the video that reveals the important aspect of the song. We see the singer stalked by a masked man, all combined with a whole symbolism to make this production a tribute to the occult elite, the celebration of their most sadistic practice: monarch mind control. In 1984, when this music video was released, the music industry was just beginning to adopt the video format as a promotional tool and the self control music video was a revolution in the entertainment industry. This clip does not represent the nightlife of ordinary revelers, it clearly shows us a woman losing her will and free will at the hands of a faceless master. The chorus sums up the situation perfectly:

You take my "Me"

You take control over me

You make me live only for the night

Before the arrival of the morning, mass is said

You take my "Me"

You take control over me

In this clip, the world of the night is a metaphor for dissociation. The first images show us a doll with brown hair symbolizing Laura Branigan. We then see her preparing for her night outing, with around her

Strange characters that seem to emerge out of nowhere: when she passes her hand in her hair, the image that follows shows us a person next to her who passes her hand in her hair. The clip here represents what is happening in Laura's head featuring her alter personalities. The next scene shows us the young woman who begins her evening, she is in the street standing in front of a window containing two mannequins floating horizontally in the air, an excellent way to represent an MK slave in a state of dissociation. It is then that appears a masked man in the back of a luxury car, his master, the occult elite. The next scene shows Laura dancing in a discotheque as the masked man appears once again, with several clumped masks in the background symbolizing here that programmers and slave masters themselves have a dissociated personality. Strangely, Laura decides to follow the strange and disturbing character. She follows him because she no longer has control over herself, the lyrics of the second verse perfectly describe the state of an MK slave at the mercy of his master when he is in a state of dissociation, here symbolized by the "world at night":

At night, no control

Through the wall, something pierces

dressed in white as you walk down the street with my soul

A safe night, I live in the forest of my soul

I know that the night is not as it would seem

I have to believe in something

So I convince myself to believe that this night will never end

Laura can't fight against the will of the masked man who finally takes her into an orgy, a part of the clip that recalls the famous scene from the movie Eye Wide Shut in which masked characters partouz in a castle. In this scene, Laura is symbolically brought into the underground and occult world of the elite where she will be used as a sex slave. Indeed, we see the masked man undressing the young woman, who seems to be in an altered state of consciousness, to be released in the "party". This scene clearly depicts a woman being used as a sex slave in an elitist partouze.

Back home, Laura realizes that she is not safe anywhere, not even in her bedroom where masked people are, abusing her. In this final scene, the "faceless" man is also present in the room and abuses Laura. The clip ends with a very symbolic image: a close-up of the doll that introduced the clip. But here her dress is torn, her hair in battle and one of her eyes is closed, the nod to Lucifer.

This production, released at the very beginning of the age of music videos, already contained all the characteristics and codes of a clip representing the MK. Thirty years later, the same scenarios, the same codes and the same symbols are still present. Today more than ever, we see young starlets singing on the theme of their mind control in clips celebrating the MK system of "religion without a name! [51] it".

- Katy Perry's "Wide Awake" music video begins by showing Katy sitting in her dressing room, staring in a mirror, while removing her wig: a representation of alter change. This first introductory scene thus symbolizes the dissociation that brings her into a world of fantasy, which is none other than her inner world... Because indeed it is from this moment that the clip switches to another reality showing us the star wandering in his inner world represented by an obscure labyrinth filled with dead ends and traps. She doesn't seem to know which path to follow in her own mind and she gets caught in the various traps placed by the programmer. Katy realizes that she will not end up at the exit of the maze without the main element, the one that was taken away from her during her programming, i.e. her true nature, what she really is. It is then that appears a little girl who comes to meet him, which represents the opportunity to reconnect with his original personality, she will then become his guide to find the way to freedom. The next scene shows Katy and the little girl hand in hand in a hallway filled with mirrors, the girl not appearing in those mirrors, meaning that she is not real, but just a part of Katy's psyche. In this scene, we find that Katy's dress is totally covered with butterflies... who will fly away in a cloud when Katy ends up breaking one of the mirrors to escape from this inner world, from this programming.

The next scene is in stark contrast to the whimsical world of the maze, we get out of Katy's head and return to a sad reality: Katy then appears totally devastated in a wheelchair in what appears to be a psychiatric hospital, always with the little girl by her side as well as a last butterfly twirling above her. Two men with a goat's head stand guard in front of the doors of the hospital, it is the little girl who will make them disappear by tapping from the foot to the ground to free Katy from this psychiatric universe.

The end of the clip shows us this same little girl handing over to Katy a butterfly Monarch, we discover then that the girl is named Katheryn (the real name of Katy Perry, her original personality). Back in her dressing room, Katy then realizes by opening her hand that she has been offered a butterfly that she lets escape, this butterfly leading us from the lodge to the stage for a new concert... in other words, the circle is closed and the clip takes us back to the starting point. Katy who seems to have made a quest by having defeated her "demons" finds herself back in her character of "sexy pop star", a pure product of the music industry. "Monarch" clips often represent this notion of an endless loop.

- The clip "Walking On Air" by Kerli is also very explicit, it shows the programming process by the symbolism of the little girl turning into a doll held by threads, like a puppet. The beginning of the video shows us a strange character bringing a gift to Kerli, it is a doll with his effigy. A doll that Kerli carries inside a house that symbolically represents his inner world. We can see that in this house, Kerli and this doll (an alter) are constantly monitored by a large eye that scrutinizes them through a television screen. The fact that they are monitored by a television screen, rather than watching it themselves, is representative of the systematic inversions practiced in mind control. Programmers do everything to make the child feel constantly observed and controlled. In this clip, inversions are everywhere: the snow comes out of an umbrella, the oven freezes the chicken, while the fridge is used to cook it. In another scene, the reversal of the values of pleasure and pain is symbolically represented when Kerli is lying on a bed whose mattress is made up of large pebbles. The confusion between pain and pleasure is part of MK programming. It is on this bed of pebbles that Kerli lets out tears (symbol of his pain) that will transform... in butterflies. We then see that the strange character at the beginning of the clip, probably the programmer, appears on the "other side" of a mirror placed next to the stone bed, ordering him by signs to pass through this mirror to come and join him... The passage through the mirror will be the purpose of the transformation. The next scene shows us the Kerli doll that has reached maturity, she has become a puppet manipulated by a giant doll carrying the Monarch butterfly on her strap. The final scene shows us this giant doll who chisels the threads of the puppet Kerli to enclose it in a box. We then see the young Kerli who wakes up at home wondering about the pieces of string hanging from her wrists... We then discover that Kerli is actually locked in this box held in the hands of the giant doll, always with this notion of endless loop, a kind of mise en abyme or fractal.

- The clip "Fjogur Piano" by Sigur Ros is difficult to understand because it is impossible to extract a coherent narrative, like most of these "Monarch" clips that seem at first glance hermetic and mysterious. It is the symbolic content that gives them real meaning. This clip depicts in a pictorial and symbolic way the endless loop of the life of a Monarch slave, with the amnesia, violence and drugs that accompany it. The beginning of this production shows us a man and a woman on a bed, waking up in a startle in the middle of a strange room, they are very confused and do not seem to know what happened to them the day before. In addition, they are surrounded by Monarch butterflies meticulously arranged on their bed. The room in which they are located shows marks of frames on the walls, we will see later that these marks are those of frames containing collections of butterflies. The couple wakes up with all kinds of marks and bruises on their bodies, they are interrogative, not seeming to know the cause. Obviously they have been abused and abused shortly before... It is then that enter the scene two obscure characters who come to look for the "couple" by first blindfolding them and giving them lollipops containing scorpions, symbolizing psychotropic drugs, the man and the woman eagerly suck these sweets showing that they are addicted to them. Then the two controllers take the couple out of the room by simply blowing on them, without any physical contact, which symbolizes the mind control sufficient on its own to direct the slaves without having to use force. The next scene shows us the couple in the back of a fictional car, "driven" by the controllers and placed in front of a cinema screen that broadcasts images giving the impression that they are actually moving. This scene of the fictional car relates to dissociation, the process being to push the mind of the subject to disconnect from reality, i.e. transport it somewhere but never really, physically. Following this funny getaway, it's back in the room... now filled with frames with collections of butterflies, the woman begins to brandish with irritation one of these frames containing a butterfly under the man's nose, as if to try to make him understand something: "look we are Monarch slaves". Then suddenly, the woman disappears from the room and the man finds himself alone with himself. Here we have another clue that this is probably a duplication of personality and that women and men are in fact one and the same person divided. The man then enters a black rage and punches a mirror, symbolizing the attempt to break the programming, then he ransacks the room until the woman reappears. He then begins to hit her and scarify her, it is actually a self-inflicted scarification. Finally, the couple will fall asleep... and it is there that we see the two obscure controllers entering the room again to clean up and put everything in order. The clip ends with the same image on which it began: the couple wakes up again in confusion, unaware of the cause of all these traces of scarification. A new day in the eternal endless loop that is the life of a Monarch slave.

- The music video "Prison Sex" by the group Tool, whose theme of the song is the repetition of sexual violence by the victims, has a symbolism related to traumatic amnesic walls and the recovery of memories. The video features a small model dismembered and tortured by a disturbing being, a kind of black rubber humanoid. The clip shows us this little one-eyed mannequin enclosed in a large cube composed of a multitude of drawers representing his memories, in which he digs to be able to understand his state as dilapidated. Little by little, he reconnects with the memories allowing him to access the little boy that he once was. In this animated clip, it is not the Monarch butterfly but its caterpillar that comes to sign the production, coming out of one of the drawers ... Here again, the clip ends with the notion of endless loop and fractal: the cube composed of a multitude of drawers in which the small dummy is locked, is only made the inside of the drawer of another much larger cube composed as the first of a multitude of drawers, etc, etc...
- The music video "Shatter Me" by violinist Lindsay Stirling is also

100% MK-Monarch. It represents the process of dissociation and personality splitting by the symbolism of a humano-mechanical ballerina locked in a glass globe and seeking to escape from it. Here again the image of the broken mirror and the splitting of the mechanical woman who literally explodes into a thousand pieces is symbolically very explicit. Especially when monarch butterflies come to twirl throughout the clip. In these clips "Monarch", duplicity is systematic, the song "Shatter Me" (Brise moi) has as its theme the liberation of fear... But its symbolism communicates exactly the opposite: it clearly exposes the process of submitting an MK programming slave.

- The music video "A Study in Duality" by Candy Brooke is also pure mk-monarch implicit propaganda. A clip that sums up what this whole industry really is: a combination of occultism and MK aimed at demeaning and dehumanizing. This clip is built on the concept of duality featuring the "good girl" versus the "bad girl", a theme particularly appropriate for the MK-Monarch. This production shows us a woman with a monarch butterfly on her mouth, a strong symbolic image interspersed with quasi-subliminal flashes showing acts of torture like a face undergoing spacers in the mouth and eyelids; clearly reminiscent of the imagery of the film A Clockwork Orange. Shocking images that allude to the torture inflicted to induce the dissociative states necessary for mind control. Why do these images of torture only appear for a fraction of a second in this clip? Why are such subliminal horrors paralleled with the imagery of a woman with a monarch butterfly on her mouth? Why choose this specific species of butterfly so often? Another scene in this clip shows us a masked executioner dressed in a black dress putting a woman, visibly robotic, in a bathtub with intravenous transfusion equipment, suggesting that something terrifying is about to happen. This is the kind of totally gloomy and dehumanizing occult symbolism that is increasingly imbueding itself with popular culture via the entertainment industry.
- The music videos "Zombie", "Mirrors" or "Wonderland" by Natalia

Kills also spread a decadence linked to the MK-Monarch. They show the artist as a woman abused, humiliated and controlled by invisible forces. In the music video "Mirrors", she is seen being trained by force to cross a mirror. In the clip "Zombie", we see her tied on a table in what seems to be a laboratory where she is tortured by an invisible executioner, all accompanied by an explicit imagery showing heads of models covering her face just as to replace it, dismembered models also come to participate in the dark atmosphere of this production. The clip "Wonderland" when to him highlights the drug to follow the white rabbit in the burrow...

- Paramore's "Brick by Boring Brick" music video tells the story of a little girl looking for her real "Me" behind a wall she has built in her consciousness. The theme of the song tells us that this wall is the belief in "fairy tales" that must be broken. The little girl walks around with monarch butterfly wings hanging on her back in a castle representing her inner world. In this castle, we see it reflected in multiple misleading mirrors. Here again, systematic references to "Alice in Wonderland" are present.
- The music videos "Love Me" by LilWayne, "Work B*tch" by Britney Spears and "Change Your Life" by Iggy Azaela explicitly glorify Beta programming, i.e. sexual slavery.
- The music video "Price Tag" by Jessie J depicts the singer as a ridiculous puppet totally disarticulated and held by wires or an automaton on a music box.
- The music video "21st Century Girl" by Willow Smith is a pure Babylonian propaganda where the Monarch butterfly accompanies the little girl like a relay transmitted from generation to generation.
- Taylor Swift's "Style" music video subtly depicts the dissociative disorder of identity by playing with two characters reflecting each other, always with this notion of splitting and breaking.

This morbid MK subculture is not limited to the Western world alone. In Asia, the very popular K-pop (South Korean pop) scene uses exactly the same codes:

- The clip "Insane" of A-JAX shows us a young man hospitalized in psychiatry and undergoing hypnosis, the symbolism of dissociation and fractionation is very significant and repetitive, especially once again by the passage through the mirror.
- The music video "Haste You" from Ladie's Code is also very explicit. We see two totally dehumanized and robotic girls, portrayed as dolls or puppets held by wires and manipulated by a "trainer".
- The music video for Andamiro (the Korean Lady Gaga) 'Waiting' which, under the guise of a song about a story of heart between a girl and a boy, actually represents the relationship between the master and the slave Monarch, as often it is the symbolism of the clip that reveals something much heavier than the simple lyrics of the song. Here again, the butterfly signs the production.
- The song "The Handler" by Muse, released in 2015, is one of the most explicit productions on monarch mind control that has been produced, both in terms of the text and the symbolism of the clip, with obviously its monarch butterflies. Handler is a term often used to describe the one who manipulates and manages the MK slave, a term that is difficult to translate into French and that would mean: trainer, manipulator or master, the one who "holds on a leash". Here are the lyrics of the song, which at first glance seems a love song, but whose background refers directly to the relationship between a slave MK and his master, all the ambiguity is there, a representation of stockholm syndrome:

You were my oppressorAnd I was programmed to obeyNow you are my manipulatorAnd I will execute all your requests Let-moldY I must dissociate myself from you Admire my trance-trainingAnd you have the power to do what you pleaseMy mind was totally lostAnd my heart a cold and insensitive machine

obeyNow, you are my manipulatorAnd I will execute all your requests Let-moldYip have to dissociate myself from you Admire my trance-trainingAnd you have the power to do what you pleaseMy mind was totally lostAnd my heart a cold and insensitive machine

I won't let you control my feelings anymoreAnd I won't do what I'm told to do I'm no longer afraid to walk aloneThe leave me, let me be

I must free myself from your gripTu will never own me again

It is interesting to report here also the lyrics of the song "I Get Out! " by Lauryn Hill: I go out, I get out of all your boxes,

You can not hold me by these chains, I will go out,

Father freed me from this slavery,

Knowing my condition, that's why I have to

change,

Your stinky resolutions have nothing to do with a solution, but

take me away from freedom and maintain your pollution,

I will not put up with your lies any longer,

I don't want to try anymore,

If I have to die, oh Lord,

That's why I chose to live,

I don't want to be compromised anymore, I can't be bullied

anymore,

I will no longer sympathize,

Because I now understand that you just want to use me

You talk about love and you deceive me

You never thought of freeing me

But so quickly we forget that nothing is certain

You thought I was going to stay there to suffer

Your plan to make me feel guilty doesn't work, it represses me to die

For now I choose Life, I make sacrifices If everything has to go

away, then let's go that's how I chose to live More compromise

I see you before you are disguised
Blinding through this mind control
Stealing my eternal soul, endearing me by the material
To keep me as a slave, but I get out of it
What you see is what you're going to become
Oh you haven't seen anything yet
I don't care if you're upset
Look and do not distort the truth
And your hurtful feelings are not excused
To keep me in this box, psychological lock
Repressing true expression, cementing repression
Organizing this massive disappointment
While no one can be treated
I don't respect your system
I don't want to protect your system
When you speak I don't listen
Let my Father do it
Let me get out of these chains,
All these traditions kill freedom I just accepted what you said
keeping Me among the dead
The only way to know this is to walk to learn, learn and grow
But faith does not grow fast, and everyone believed you
While you had the sole authority
Just followed by the majority
Who is frightened by reality
This system is a farce

You have an interest in being smart to save your soul and escape from this mental control
You spend your life sacrificing yourself for this system of death
Where is the passion in this way of living?
Are you sure that it is God that you are serving?
Engaged in a system
Less and less good, when you deserve it
Who makes these schools? Who makes these rules?
An animal condition, oh keep us as slaves
Oh get out of this social purgatory...

7 - Mk-Monarch symbolism in the film industry

Some film productions also display the symbolism of Monarch mind control. As with music videos, it is a question of detecting the different reading grids contained in all these productions.

Let's first look at the film "Trouble jeu" (Hide & Seek in V.O.) released in 2005. This film has been much criticized negatively due to its strangeness, it has been described as illogical with an ending deemed absurd. It turns out that this film cannot be fully understood without knowing the key element on which it is based, i.e. mental control based on trauma: MK-Monarch. In a symbolic and theatrical way, this film describes this despicable process. The Monarch butterfly again appears regularly in this production to confirm its sad theme.

The film features a little girl named Emily who witnessed her mother's suicide and has severe traumatic symptoms. His father, David (played by Robert De Niro) then decides to help his daughter by leaving his psychiatrist's office and moving to the countryside with her in order to take care of her full time. Emily's behavior then becomes more and more disturbing, she pretends to have a new friend named Charlie with whom she has a lot of fun. David then thinks that he is an imaginary friend created by Emily to deal with her trauma. However, some horrible events that occur in the house, such as the cat found drowned in the bathtub, begin to be very disturbing, especially since Emily states that it is Charlie who is responsible for it. Charlie also kills the father's girlfriend. In a scene where David is seen patrolling around the house in search of a possible murderer, he realizes in a brief flash of lucidity that he is himself the "famous" Charlie. The film reveals that this Charlie is in fact another personality of the father, of David, who is totally unaware of his existence. It is this alter "Charlie" personality who traumatizes and manipulates little Emily and commits horrible crimes.

This production depicts the relationship between a programmer executioner and his slave, in this case a totally dissociated psychiatrist who programs his own daughter. Programmers themselves usually have deep dissociative disorders. The final scene of the film shows us a drawing of little Emily who represents herself with two heads on a single body... a symbolic image revealing that it is dissociated and multiple.

The animated film "Coraline" (2009) is also a production referring to the symbolic level to the MK-Monarch programming. Note that the little girl who makes the voice of Coraline is Dakota Fanning who played the role of the girl in the movie "Trouble Game" that we have just described above.

From the beginning, the credits clearly summarize the whole process: we see disturbing metal hands restaurant an old doll into a new doll. Its old accoutrement is completely cut out, it is literally turned over like a sock, the inner stuffing is removed to be replaced by sand. She receives new hair, new eyes and new clothes are sewn on her. The creation of this new doll symbolizes the creation of an alter personality.

Coraline is a little girl who has just moved with her parents into a new house. She is unhappy and constantly bored because they do not give her the attention she would like. As she explores her new home, she discovers a small door that leads to an alternative version of her reality, a place where her parents are fun and pay a lot of attention to her. Here we find the same theme as in the "Wizard of Oz" or "Alice in Wonderland", that is to say a child main character who is bored in his everyday life and who enters a strange, wonderful and magical world. In Coraline, the little girl goes through a door propelling her into a kind of vortex that gives access to the "wonderful" alternative reality, just as Alice crosses the mirror: the symbolism of the dissociative process, the disconnection of a certain reality. In this alternate reality, her "other parents" nickname Coraline "our little doll" and they tell her that if she accepts that they sew pimples on her eyes, soon "she will see things in their own way" and that she will be able to stay with them forever... Sewing pimples on her eyes means that she will permanently become the puppet of the programmer executioner, who then, as said in the film "devours his soul". But Coraline refuses this proposal and the illusion of the other world breaks... We see the "other mother" getting into a black rage showing her in her true light. Coraline finally sees the true appearance of her "other mother", it is a kind of skeletal monster with metal hands, precisely those who made the doll in the credits of the beginning. The whole film is based on this menacing hand that represents the programmer manipulating the little girl and deceiving her psyche with a world created from scratch thanks to the passage through the back door: the dissociative process.

In 1985, Disney produced the film "Back to Oz". While most viewers expected a logical sequel to the famous "Wizard of Oz" of 1930, this film will create surprise by showing little Dorothy locked in a sordid psychiatric hospital, strapped on a stretcher to receive electroshocks... This Disney production explicitly describes the fate of a little girl subjected to trauma-based mind control.

The beginning of the film shows Dorothy finding a key with the symbol of Oz, a key that represents the key to access her original personality. The next scene shows us this same key handed over to a psychiatrist to whom she was taken to receive electroshock treatment (for sleep problems)... this psychiatrist who now holds the key will be able to become his programmer.

While Dorothy observes the machine that will be used for electroshock, she sees in a window not its reflection but that of another little girl, indeed, this machine is the door for her alter personality named "Ozma". The next scene shows Dorothy strapped on a stretcher about to receive electroshocks, but a power outage occurs just then... However, the rest of the film clearly suggests that Dorothy did indeed suffer a deep trauma that made her dissociate herself from reality, because it is from there that the film switches into an imaginary world. Indeed, Dorothy then returns to the magical world of Oz, a world that represents her psyche dissociated and entirely manipulated by the programmer (the psychiatrist). It is her alter Ozma personality that welcomes her on her stretcher to lead her to the land of Oz...

She then enters into a kind of quest through this alternative world. A particularly disturbing scene is the meeting between Dorothy and the witch Mombi, who is none other than the head nurse of the psychiatric hospital. In this scene, we see the witch bring Dorothy into a room filled with women's heads, arranged in a row behind windows and observing from the corner of the eye the little one... It is then that the witch Mombi removes her own head, just as one unscrews a toy, and replaces it with one of those many other heads present behind the windows. This scene is pure MK-Monarch symbolism, the collection of heads representing the different alter personalities that may emerge.

The ultimate goal of MK programming is to split the basic personality into multiple alters, and that's exactly what the last scenes of this film show us. We see little Dorothy, still in the world of Oz, in her inner world, staring at herself in a large mirror that does not reflect her own image but that of Ozma, this other little girl who represents her alter personality. The scene shows Dorothy getting closer to the mirror, taking the hand of the "Ozma reflection" and making her cross the mirror so that she finds herself in "flesh and blood" in front of her. The mirror that reflects another identity is a strong symbol of the MK-Monarch. Dorothy's alter personality, Ozma, crosses the mirror and thus becomes real. Thus Dorothy's programming ends, her programmed alter is present in her split mind, Ozma is now part of Dorothy...

The last scene shows Dorothy back home, in the real world. She discovers Ozma again while looking at herself in the mirror of her room. This confirms that his personality has been split and that it is now multiple and programmed.

In this production, Disney has introduced a large number of elements that make it a real anthem to the MK, even more explicit than the "Wizard of Oz".

In his film "Boulevard de la mort" (Death Proof en V.O. - 2007), Quentin Tarantino clearly makes a reference to the MK-Monarch, a sad wink... Don't talk about it, but show the...

At first glance, this production seems to be nothing more and nothing less than a tribute to the old B-movies, but it incorporates something very explicit that is not insignificant.

But first of all we must return to a 1977 film entitled "One spy too many" ("Telefon" in V.O.) featuring characters under mental control MK-Ultra who are triggered by a poem recited during a phone call. Following this call to bring out a previously programmed alter personality, these people enter a state of trance to carry out kamikaze missions on different targets.

Here is the poem that is used to trigger the programmed slaves:

The woods are charming, dark and deep,

But I have promises to keep and miles to go before I sleep,

Remember... (name of the alter personality), miles to go before you sleep.

In his film "Death Proof", Quentin Tarantino took care to repeat exactly the same poem. During one scene, we see a man approaching a young woman by offering her a beer while telling her "to your butterfly", then he begins to recite to her word for word this same triggering poem MK...

Tarantino thus takes up the exact poem that triggers the MK slaves in the film "Telefon" of 1977, to adapt it in his own way in 2007. While in "Telefon", the poem is used to trigger suicide bombers under mental control, in "Death Proof", the poem is used to trigger a Beta program, the sexual slavery of a young woman. And to confirm that this is a reference to the MK-Monarch, Tarantino has chosen as an access code to the alter personality the word "butterfly", this poem having the originality of varying according to the alter to which it is addressed...
"Remember "butterfly", miles before you sleep"...

The next scene shows the targeted young woman starting an erotic dance in front of this man sitting on a chair in the middle of a bar. This woman who did not know him a short time before will end up abandoning herself in his arms...

Here is a dialogue excerpt from the 1977 film "Telefon", where Charles Bronson refers directly to the MK-Ultra project to create Manchu Candidates:

- Tell me Borzov, who is the most secretive agent in the world?

- The one who manages to remain eternally secret?

- Of course, but the one who surpasses them all is the ideal agent, he is the one who does not know that he is an agent.

8 - Super-athletes under mental control

The entertainment industry also includes high-level sport and mind control methods are also applied to train super-athletes... The champion is just like an elite soldier whose physical and mental strength must be optimal in a world where "The show must go on" (the show must continue), where the performances must be always more spectacular. Top-level sport is a real show business and the results must excel from year to year to satisfy the public and sponsors. In this context, it is easy to understand that the MK is also used in the field of sport.

In her autobiography, Cathy O'Brien reports how an individual with a multiple personality can have extraordinary physical faculties, especially in terms of sleep and hunger. The changeover from one alter personality to another will somehow "set the record straight", i.e. the biological clock will be different from one alter to another and the sensations of hunger and fatigue will therefore vary according to the alter that is in control of the body. This is a phenomenon that is difficult to understand due to the basic biological needs of the physical body,just as it is difficult to understand how an alter can be the only one to feel the effects of a drug.

MK slaves can function with very few hours of sleep or a very limited diet, this has the consequence that their mind, their brain, remain in an easily controllable, easily hypnotizable state. Cathy O'Brien, who has undergone the MK-Monarch protocol since early childhood, also describes that during her running training, her coach would induce a trance in her so that she no longer had any perception of time and distance. Mind control methods made it easier for her to evacuate pain and fatigue instantly. This phenomenon causes exceptional endurance in MK subjects, whether in the sporting or military field.

Cathy O'Brien claims that some American baseball players are controlled by key codes, and other triggers. According to her, the members of the Dodgers team were under mental control and conditioned to win or lose according to the bets and goodwill of their owners. Brice Taylor says that this same Dodgers team (coached at the time by Tommy Lasorda) received sex slaves (women as well as children) as a reward according to their sporting results...

One thing little known to the general public is that the famous tennis player Serena Williams has several alters including one that is named *"Psycho-Serena",* it is the alter present on the tennis court, it is the *super-athlete.* It would seem that the world's no. 1 in women's tennis has developed a dissociative identity disorder. In the biographical documentary *"Venus and Serena" (2012), she reveals* *and lists in front of the camera her different alters: "Yes, I really have different personalities and different attitudes. There's "Psycho-Serena", she's always on the court, she's training, she's in the game, she's amazing, she's a super-athlete. There is "Summer", it helps me a lot, for example when I have a long letter to write or for other things, it is "Summer" who does it. And there's this other girl, "Megan," she's an excited one, you can't follow her. There is also "Taquanda", a tough one, she is not Christian (laughs), she comes from the ghetto. She was at SUV Open in 2009 (editor's note: the report then shows an excerpt of a match where we see "Taquanda" vulgarly insulting and violently threatening a boy with a bullet). In this particular match, I wasn't there, but I got the feedback*^[12!] "

This last statement - "I was not there" - means that she does not remember this scene of irritation because it was not "she" who was playing this match of the US-Open, which shows that there are really amnesic walls between her different alters. Serena clearly states in this biographical documentary that she has several personalities independent of each other, so she would have a dissociative identity disorder, something common to MK slaves.

During a match at Wimbledon in July 2014, Serena, considered by many to be the best tennis player of all time, appeared on the court completely disoriented, literally no longer knowing how to play tennis or even catch a ball, a totally implausible scene. The newspapers then headlined: "the incredible unease", "disoriented and unable to hold a ball", "it borders on the ridiculous"... The American tennis federation claimed that the player "suffered from a virus" without giving more details... but then why did she come to the court to make a fool of herself in this way? Or was it rather the alter Psycho-Serena who was not at the rendezvous that day?

Did you know that Tiger Woods, the best golfer of all time has amnesia during competitions and is unable to remember his best shots?

Eldrick Woods is the son of Earl Woods, a former colonel and green beret of the Special Forces in Vietnam. Eldrick was nicknamed "Tiger" in memory of a Vietnamese soldier who fought alongside his father. The "Tiger" began playing golf from the age of 2. He notably made an appearance in 1978 on the show "The Mike Douglas Show" in which we see this little guy demonstrate his already very clean swing. Tiger Woods was from an early age a "child star" adored by the media and destined to become the best, in the same way as the singer Michael Jackson. A former golfer and commentator for the Professional Golfers' Association of America (PGA) said Woods was scheduled by his father.

Indeed, his incredible talent as a golfer defies logic, standards and statistics. But is it only due to the hypnosis used on him? Tiger's father participated in psychological and memory control operations on soldiers when he was in the army, notably in Vietnam. Earl Woods reportedly decided to use these same techniques on his son and commissioned a military psychiatrist, Jay Bunza, to reprogram Tiger like a computer. Bunza has indeed worked on a strange project of hypnotizing Tiger before his golf games. In interviews, Tiger stated that he totally forgot entire sections of some competitions. In the documentary "Tiger's Prowl: His life", he reveals: "I have these moments of black holes, I don't remember. I know I was there, but I don't remember how I played (...) It's like a trance, so I let my subconscious play and I don't know what the result will be. There are a lot of shots where I don't remember anything. I just remember getting ready, taking the club out of the bag, etc. but once the ball was fired, I don't remember seeing it go... It's a very strange thing."

Jay Bunza's techniques have produced extraordinary results, but how is it possible that Tiger does not remember his most wonderful moves?

In 2008, former "multifunctional" athlete Herschel Walker revealed that he had a dissociative identity disorder. He explains this in detail in his book entitled "Breaking Free: My Life with Dissociative Identity Disorder".

The same year, the American channel ABC News devoted a report to him! [513]). We learn that Walker is a true legend of the sport: he played on the Georgia Bulldogs football team in the 80s, he won several world records in athletics and he won the famous Heisman Trophy in 1982. But Walker now claims that it was not he who won this famous trophy at the time. This champion who played fifteen seasons of American football, who was even a dancer in the Fort Worth Ballet, a businessman, a public man, a husband, he is none of these people he says... He says, "These are personalities who can do different things for you. In competition, I'm a totally different person."

Herschel Walker says that his alter named *"Warrior"* assumed the football matches by cashing in all the pain that could arise during violent physical contact. The alter *"Hero"* is the public and media figure, while the alter *"Sentinel"* had the role of preserving his friends and family. In 1983, the athlete married Cindy Grossman, today the couple is separated and Cindy testifies: *"At first, it was just a very strange behavior* (...) *he had the ability to hide that because I think all the alter inside were focused on football. "* When her career and the competitions ended, Cindy says that her husband's subconscious inner system began to unravel: *"I began to discover the alter* **(...)** *I noticed the changes in his voice, he sometimes took a hoarse voice and said strange things, as if he didn't know who I was. He then called me "Miss Lady". It's something hard to explain, even his face was changing. The first thing I thought about was that he had the devil in him."* **His wife then turned to the Church for help...** *"I wasn't necessarily asking for an exorcism, I was just trying to get answers* **(...)** *I think he has a lot of alter, but I don't know how many, I can't know, but I've met a number of them. "*

When his sporting career ended, Walker recounts how his alter personalities began to take control in an anarchic way. It was from there that he began to develop a morbid fascination with weapons and death. He writes in his book: *"The visceral enjoyment I feel in seeing the impact and then the spraying of the brain with blood is like a fireworks display."* **He has been several times about to commit a murder by firearm, especially against his wife:** *"He put* *the gun on my temple saying 'I'm going to blow your brains up'. I then had to have the strength of God in me because I answered him in my eyes: Go and pull the trigger, I know where I'm going, but you, do you know where you're going to go? There was someone in front of me who was fundamentally bad."*

Walker has never denied that he threatened his wife in this way, but he says he does not remember. During a therapy session with his wife, Dr. Jerry Mungadze, his therapist, said he had seen the emergence of a totally rabid alter personality who literally wanted to kill everyone in the room. Dr. Mungadze reports: "His eyes have changed. The eyes that emerged had absolutely nothing to do with me, and when he said that he was going to kill me, I gladly believed him... It wasn't About Herschel, he was a rabid alter." Finally that day, "Walker" deflected his anger by making a hole in the door of the cabinet with a punch, it was then that another alter emerged, this time it was a young boy: "He had a terrible pain because he had just broken his hand." Herschel does not remember this scene of violence either, but he makes it clear that we must accept all these things and that his illness is not an excuse for violence. After 8 years of therapy, without taking any medication, he has much more control over his alter personalities.

Chapter 10

Propaganda and Offensive and Defensive Techniques of the Network

> Crimes against children thrive on a conspiracy of silence and intimidation. We hope that one day paedophiles will be arrested and prosecuted. But what to do when these same criminals are in charge of the judicial system? ''
>
> Dutch Injustice : When Child traffickers rule a nation.'' (L'Injustice Hollandaise : quand les child traffickers run the nation, 2012)

> What a misfortune for these people who act in secret to hide their plans from the Lord. They prepare their business in the shadows. They say, "Who can see us? Who knows what we do?
>
> Isaiah 29:15

> Blessed are those who are hungry and thirsty for justice, for they will be satisfied
>
> Matthew 5:6

1 - Networks of power

Let's start first by defining the word "network". It is a term that derives from the Latin word ''retis'', in the plural ''retes'', ''rets'', meaning ''net''. The term "rets", most often used in the plural, meant a net to catch birds, fish or game. In a figurative sense, it meant an artifice not which one seizes someone or his mind. In scientific terms, it is a set of points communicating with each other.

The word "network" is currently defined as:

- An organized set whose elements, dependent on a center, are divided into various points.

- A clandestine organization whose members work in liaison with each other.

Networks result in a grouping of entities (individuals, associations, various organizations, etc.) that are connected to each other. The networks are deployed in many areas: politics, the judiciary, the media,
religion,scientific and medical field, associative, sports, etc... The purpose of these networks is to bring together as many people as possible and to create bridges from one network to another. These networks can be more or less apparent and even totally occult. This operating system is not in itself something negative, and is generally very effective. However, we live in a time when elitist networks simply serve to enslave a mass of humans at the bottom of a large pyramidal hierarchy. The connections between these different networks such as Freemasonry (the different Luciferian lodges), mafia organizations and certain sectarian and religious communities are at the head of what can be called a "meta-network" that seems to structure our current society. A meta-network organized to control and manipulate society at all levels, in a global way, in order to establish a New World Order, the reign of the "civilizing and liberating god": Lucifer.

Freemasonry is one of the organizations that has built the most powerful and extensive network. Indeed, its members are present on all continents and in all fields, including the most influential circles: politics, justice, humanitarian, intelligence, media, education, health, police... Freemasonry currently forms a kind of structure of our society, a network that passes as much through banks, public administration (taxes, social security, etc.) to national education and the courts (two essential points). It functions as a transmission belt that takes care of transmitting information from one section to another when necessary. It is therefore a network that crisscrosses the whole of society, with multiple ramifications and pawns that can be moved according to the stakes.

One of the characteristics of these secret societies, but also of the intelligence services and classified government projects, is to maintain a compartmentalization of information within the network, the pyramidal hierarchical organization participates in this compartmentalization. Indeed, each individual of the network receives only what "is good to know for him", that is to say that he will only access what he needs to know to do his job. He thus remains totally ignorant of the globality of the project or projects, receiving only what is strictly necessary in terms of information for the work he carries out at his level. Here's how this notion of systematic compartmentalization of information is described by Mark Phillips:

"In fact, the "need to know" is a term officially used by the CIA and other "alphabetic" organizations such as the FBI, the NSA and the DIA. Basically, it means that you are only told what you "need to know" to perform your share of an operation without you being fully aware of what you are working for. In my case, I believed that the government was developing mind control to rid society of crime and mental illness. No one saw fit to tell me that the aim was in fact to control the population, to create the superhuman war machines of the 'Special Forces' or to use them to torture and brutalise innocent people (...) I didn't have a clue about that. I was just focused on "my part" and enthusiastic about the prospects, and it did not occur to me for a moment that I could be contributing to the greatest threat that humanity has ever faced[614].

Faced with these networks, especially Masonic, it is difficult to establish a notion of counter-power, as the members (brothers) are systematically present in each organization and in each political party supposedly opposed... While knowing that they have all taken the oath to serve the same occult interests (those of GADLU, the Great Architect of the Universe) and to systematically cover each other in case of glitch. Regardless of the political party or the seriousness of the offences of which they would be incriminated, the oath of loyalty to a "brother" always passes in priority... We cannot therefore speak of independence and neutrality with regard to the French justice system, which today is totally infiltrated by the Masonic network.

Since the Freemasons systematically render themselves a service to each other, a "brother" of lodge will always come before a layman, so we are dealing with a kind of generalized Masonic conflict of interest, extremely harmful to our society and to the smooth running of a real justice supposed to be rendered in the name of the people. Upon taking office, every judge and every lawyer takes an oath to deliver fair justice for all citizens. The question that arises today is this: would the Masonic oath, this systematic solidarity between "brothers", not stand in the way of the establishment of the truth in many judicial proceedings? It should be noted that Italy and England oblige legal professionals to declare their membership of any Masonic obedience, which is unfortunately not the case in France.

Members of occult networks can also manipulate each other for various interests. The technique of "returning the elevator" makes it possible to make beholden people to whom one has "rendered service" at an appropriate time. The compromising information contained in heavy files also helps to maintain constant pressure and blackmail on the members of the network. The files can even be expanded by real traps (such as photos or videos taken during a sexual situation where children are introduced) to maintain blackmail and permanent control over the person. As they say: "they all stand by the goatee", so as not to
Not to say by the members of the network are conditioned to
obey and keep quiet, because usually all involved in dirty business. Many suffer from dissociative disorders related to their early childhood, causing them to perpetuate despicable acts, which strengthens the files that serve to control and silence them. It is a vicious circle in which the law of silence reigns.

The influence peddling of these networks is particularly virulent in the judicial environment, and for good reason... Hubert Delompré, the administrator of the site deni-justice.net, denounces for example the Masonic signs inserted in certain letters circulating between magistrates. These signs (called triponctuation) indicate to the addressee who will read the mail that particular attention must be paid to the paragraph between two of these signs. That is to say that the content is imposed on all the "brothers" and that they will have to do everything to ensure that the message succeeds, whether the judgment is justified or not. This is called influence peddling and when the letters contain this kind of sign, the judgment always ends in a condemnation against the layman. Chantal Arnaud (ardechejustice.fr) speaks in these cases of "Masonic judgments", i.e. false information and allegations are brought by the judges themselves who allow themselves to write anything and everything. According to her, these practices, concerning some magistrates, can be attacked for forgery, as the manipulations are so flagrant. These embezzlements even go so far as to remove certain documents from the file as evidence. There are truly aberrations of judgment given in the name of the people without anyone being able to react since all this happens in the courts, very often behind closed doors... and by the magistrates themselves. The difficulty in the face of these shameful judgments is that they are de facto imposed, the judiciary embodying "the law". It is therefore very difficult for an ordinary citizen to counter such actions by a judicial system that imposes a steamroller that is almost unassailable, intimidating and threatening. The term generally used by the media to soften these aberrations is: "judicial dysfunction". It is not a question of malfunctions but of an organization that does not leave room for the slightest mistake...

This world of justice is a corporatist world where clerks, bailiffs, lawyers, judges, prosecutors, eat together, go out together and marry each other. We find this same way in the political and journalistic world. Thus, everyone protects themselves, it is a kind of caste above the people. The pyramid structure of society is not something new, but the problem is the influence peddling and conflicts of interest that plague society, both at the legal, media, political and pharmaceutical levels... When the judicial system is clearly abusing its power, it is time to sound the alarm. All court decisions are rendered in the name of the French people, so "malfunctions" and other "errors" of justice should be judged in turn by the French people to condemn and dismiss these magistrates who abuse their power. Some call this system of corruption: "The Republic of Friends"; but should we say instead "The republic of the brothers"...

What is perverse in these networks is the secret with a big "S", it is a parallel hierarchy, an invisible power. In the France 5 documentary ***"Grand-Orient: les frères invisibles de la****république",* the Freemason Alain Bauer declares without any restraint in front of a camera that *"what* ***is studied in the lodge on Monday becomes a bill on Friday and a law the following week, the process, even if I accelerate it for the subject is extremely fast because everything is linear".***

Fred Zeller who was at the head of the Grand Orient de France from 1971 to 1973 said: "The influence of masonry is perhaps even more important than under the third or fourth republic, it is placed on another level. There is no association, group, trade union in which freemasons are not present and in the most eminent positions of responsibility.' (Video archive INA.fr)

2 - Operation of the Network when a protective parent sounds the alarm

The numerous cases related to paedocriminality have made it possible to determine how the Network works to systematically cover up the case and possibly recover the child or children who are at the heart of the case.

It all starts with a complaint filed by the protective parent (usually the mother who still has full confidence in the justice system of her country) who discovers that her child or children are being sexually abused by the parent (or other family members). From there, this family is identified and the first complaint is generally dismissed but in France this usually leads to the placement of the child at the ASE (Child Welfare). The judge who is completely unaware of the evidence of ill-treatment that the protective parent brings to his file will place the child in a home. The latter then finds himself isolated and "formatted", while the mistreatment is perpetuated... According to the

report of the CEDIF committee on child protection: "The uprooting of children from their families has become a real social phenomenon in France. On the other hand, the little-publicized scandals surrounding in-house placements also show that social services can become the instrument of children's misfortune, through clumsy and sometimes bad interventions.
intentional. Moreover, as Mr Pierre Naves, Inspector General of Social Affairs, acknowledges, half of the investments decided are not justified.'

You should know that a child placement brings in a lot of money... Some sources claim that the general councils receive several thousand euros a month from our taxes for each child cared for by the ESA. In France, abusive investments are constantly multiplying. why is that?

As discussed in Chapter 7, children in residential care are ideal targets for the network, especially those suffering from dissociative disorders as a result of sexual abuse. These are the small victims of the second zone, not being destined for elitist positions. The protective parent is ignored, or even deprived of his rights towards his child, because "psychological expertise", carried out by members of the network, will serve to devalue his word. If the parent insists on becoming too virulent (especially if he is socially isolated) he may undergo abusive psychiatric internment, thus allowing to ruin his mental health by a chemical treatment of shock (See the case of Patricia Poupard). All these arbitrary decisions going through the courts, which as we have seen are gangrened by the network. If the aggressor father is not already part of the "family", an agreement will be made with him: in exchange for immunity, he will have to "lend" his child to the network. This whole process is covered by the successive interventions of the various "lightning lightningcoons" (social services, pseudo-child protection associations, crooked lawyers, etc.) which have the function of channelling the file so that it is stifled and does not become a threat to the network (the notion of "lightningcoon" will be defined below).

We note that these methods used to isolate the child from the protective parent and generally end up putting it in the hands of the executioner progenitor are perfectly established thanks to a network system, a well-oiled cog, all the members of which are connected and know perfectly the measures to be taken in cases of paedocriminality. Indeed, the process is always the same, the goal being first of all that the protective parent:

- Finds himself ruined by the cost of the procedures that do not end, to the delight of the complicit lawyers.

- Finds himself isolated, that he passes for a madman and a bad parent... and when the Masonic network gets involved, it finds itself in situations where even the administration seems to harm it at all levels. A more or less subtle form of societal harassment is taking place.

Overall, here is everything that has been found in the cases of paedocriminality (due to the systematic repetition of protocols):

- No serious investigation is carried out to verify the child's accusations (a complaint is usually dismissed).

- No protection for victims and parents who report abuse.

- No proper medical examination of the child (including mri of the lower ducts or anuscopy).

- The child's word is systematically denied. The Outreau affair is now systematically used to claim that we cannot rely on the word of children: see the book by journalist Jacques Thomet "Retour à Outreau: contre-enquête sur une manipulation pédocriminelle".

- No statistics on rape (and disappearance) of minors. Indeed, this subject seems so taboo that no figures are available as to the number of children raped, the number of convictions and the number of dismissals without follow-up.

- Total media omerta on the ultra-sensitive issue of paedocriminality cases.

3 - The lightning first sight strategy

In his book entitled "L'affaire Vincent: au cœur du terrorisme d'état" (2010), French activist Christian 'Stan' Maillaud, a former gendarme, describes a technique he called the "lightning arrest strategy". This is an infiltration method aimed at recovering and channelling sensitive files in order to smother them. Here's how Stan Maillaud defines these methods:

The "lightning lading strategy" is simple, practically unstoppable, and systematically used in cases of paedophile crime, or any case that risks disrupting the order of organized crime (editor's note: the Network).

It consists in the establishment of a clever deception whose purpose is to interfere in all defence proceedings, whether legal, communication or other, brought or likely to be undertaken by victims or victims' families. The actions in question must then be channelled and directed, as must public attention and debates, in a direction that does not in any depth threaten the interests of organised crime. The favourite terrain on which organised crime wants to confine victims and victims' families is obviously its judicial deception, which is widespread throughout our perverted societies.

Thus, the "lightning ladle" is most often in the form of court officers, but also associations, the combination of the two remaining the most effective for organized crime. With regard to these associations, or other civic organisations, there are, on the one hand, those that have been fabricated by organised crime - such as the famous ''Child Focus'', a so-called association for combating paedophile crime sponsored by the Belgian King ''him self''' - and on the other hand those whose origin is sincere but which are quickly infiltrated by real agents of organised crime.

The aim of the operations is then to excel in matters of illusion, in order to deceive all victims and families of victims as well as the general public and to attract into its web as many victims as possible in search of the help that is forbidden to them by the judicial and political deception.

And when it comes to illusionism, impostors have only the choice of methods, mastering the rules of the rigged playground, and having no more moods or moral sense than the criminals they serve and protect. This is how it is common to see impostures of associations committed in ceremonies or galas of charity or champagne - rothschild! - cakes and cupcakes generously delight entire assemblies of notables of their own, much like in the so-called demonstrations against poverty and hunger in the world. The subsidies flowing afloat, for these associations, such pompous festivities are de rigueur in the thickest obscenity and cynicism (...)

With regard to judicial officers, in the context that we have today, their profession is in essence the most perfect sham, like the judiciary in general. Because in order not to risk being disbarred, no lawyer dares to confront in depth the criminal excesses of an institution to which he is otherwise subject, but in fact limiting himself to treating only the symptoms. Every lawyer is just a piece of the rigged chessboard and knows it, a "centerpiece" otherwise he would no longer be a lawyer. Because a good lawyer, in our real context of judicial and societal deception, is a "dead" lawyer, that is to say fallen into disgrace vis-à-vis the institution and does not survive it for long, for lack of clients; or a lawyer who has been disbarred or is in the process of being struck off the bar, or a lawyer who courageously abandons his toque.

Of course, it is the same for any magistrate, but I am only dealing here with the strategy of lightning rods, it is here the auxiliary servile of justice who is in the "honor", because in addition to the fact that I have just raised, when to the profound dishonesty of such a profession in the current state of our judicial institution and our society, we must fear the propensity that lawyers willingly have to serve as a lightning rod for your defense. Because many are accustomed to this kind of maneuver, or an obscure negotiation with the opposing party, with a prosecutor or a president of a court, intervenes behind your back to define the outcome that your case must take. The gullible client, does not see most of the time that he is deceived, and victim of the illusions of a real play in which his court officer overflows with melodramatic effects to make him believe that he defends his cause fiercely...

4 - The "syndrome of false memories" and "parental alienation"

This false memory syndrome is a theory that memory can be fabricated or "contaminated" by illusory memories. This theory, coined by former Lutheran pastor Ralph Underwager, is generally used to defend parents accused of incest. Many therapists have been attacked in court because they are accused of having implanted false memories in their patients, thus becoming themselves the culprits instead of the executioners. In most cases, it is a question of attacking the speech of the adult victim when he remembers the sexual abuse suffered during childhood. This "syndrome of false memories" is not a diagnosis recognized, neither by the American Psychiatric Association, nor by the WHO (World Health Organization). The term "syndrome" is absolutely not appropriate because this theory does not describe any series of symptoms that can be used to establish a real diagnosis. Yet, even today, "experts of false memories" come to the courts to discredit the words of victims. Richard J. Lowenstein (president of the International Society for the Study of Dissociation) said in 1992: "I know of no research or clinical description that would empirically validate the existence of such a symptom. False memory syndrome is a syndrome without signs and without symptoms (the characteristics that define a syndrome)."

In an interview with the Dutch paedophile magazine ***"Paidika: The Journal of Paedophilia"*** devoted to ''the love of children'', Dr. Ralph Underwager clearly invited pedophiles to proudly affirm their sexual choices: ***"The*** *pedophiles waste a lot of time and energy defending their choice. I do not think a paedophile should have to do that. Paedophiles can proudly* *and courageously take responsibility for their choice. They can say that what they want is to find the best way to love. I am also a theologian and as such I believe that it is Deu's will that there be proximity, intimacy and unity of the flesh, between people. A pedophile can say, "This proximity is also possible for me depending on the choice I made."* (**...**) *What I think is that pedophiles can say that the search for intimacy and love is their choice. Boldly they can declare: "I believe that this is in fact a part of the will of God[615]. "*

Ralph Underwager, former director of the Institute for Psychological Therapies in Minesota (USA), was regularly called to testify in the courts where he systematically attacked the credibility of people making accusations of sexual abuse. In 1993, he came to testify in France, in Aix en Provence, to defend the members of the sect "The Family" (ex Children of God) indicted for "aggravated pimping, voluntary violence against minors, sequestration and corruption of minors". All 22 members of the sect were acquitted in part thanks to Underwager.

Ralph Underwager is the official founder of false
Memory Syndrome Foundation, the FMSF (Foundation for false memory syndrome). This foundation, which is not a scientific organization competent in psychiatry, is regularly called to the rescue in cases of paedocriminality involving traumatic memories, especially related to satanic ritual abuses. When Underwager and other founding members of the FMSF were themselves charged with pedophilia, Underwager was quickly forced to resign to be replaced by Pamela Freyd, claiming to be herself a victim of false accusations of sexual abuse that her daughter, Jennifer J. Frey, made against her and her husband. His daughter, a professor of psychology at the University of Oregon, publicly accused her parents at a conference entitled "Controversies around Recovered Memories of Incest and Ritualistic Abuse." A lecture given in August 1993 in Ann Arbor, Michigan (USA). The mother then turned to the psychiatrist Harold Lief (member of the fmsf board of directors) to make a diagnosis on the "disorders" of her daughter: according to this psychiatrist,

heterosexual couples do not rape their children and the repressed memories in cases of sexual abuse do not exist, the case is closed...

In 1995, at a conference of therapists grouped together in the Society for the Investigation, Treatment and Prevention of Ritual and Cult Abuse, Walter Bowart (the author of the book "Operation Mind Control") said that the FMSF, all those people who work to pass on traumatic memories , dissociative, for "false memories", was a creation of the CIA aimed at discrediting and misinforming the mental health community, and that it served primarily to silence victims of government experiments of mind control.

In the French-speaking world, this theory of the syndrome of false memories is promulgated mainly by Hubert Van Gijseghem and Paul Bensoussan. "Experts" who intervene in many judicial cases in order to put forward this theory before magistrates, police officers or social workers. Van Gijseghem regularly uses the "parental alienation syndrome" (sap) to defend fathers accused of sexual abuse... Another "syndrome" having no scientific basis, invented from scratch by the pedophile Richard Gardner. Indeed, for Gardner sexual activities between adults and children are part of the natural repertoire of human sexual activity. He even believes that pedophilia can improve the survival of the human species by serving "reproductive goals". According to him: "Paedophilia has been considered the norm by a vast majority of people throughout the history of the world (...) it is a widely spread practice and accepted by, literally, billions of people". Gardner believes that children spontaneously engage in sexual behaviors and can initiate sexual encounters by "seducing" the adult[616].

Richard Gardner defines parental alienation syndrome as follows: SAP is a disorder specific to children, occurring almost exclusively in custody disputes, where one parent (usually the mother) conditions the child to hate the other parent (usually the father). Children usually side with the parent who engages in this conditioning, creating their own cabal against the father.

This involves blaming the mother for any problems arising in the father's relationship with the child, the aim being to remedy them by increasing the child's contact with his father while reducing his contact with the mother. All this is obviously imposed by court decisions. This is one of the reasons why, in cases of paedocriminality, the protective parent who denounces the abuse is burdened by the courts and has custody of his child withdrawn, the latter being automatically entrusted to the alleged aggressor parent.

Sherry Quick, a lawyer and president of the American Coalition for Abuse Awareness (ACAA), points out that judges "tend to consistently believe" the experts hired by the court when they state that the mother fabricated allegations of sexual assault on the child and then imposed "brainwashing" on the child to convince him of these assaults. , this in order to take revenge on the ex-spouse... If the mother persists in her claims, she is perceived as obsessive and unstable and can even be interned in psychiatry while custody of the children will be given to the father...

In summary, Gardner's SAP theory and its various scales to distinguish between true and false statements of child sexual assault are not informed by science and have not been recognized by most child abuse experts. Rather than subjecting his theories to scientific evaluation, Gardner published most of his writings through his own publishing house or in non-scientific journals. Since Gardner's theories are based on his own clinical observations - not scientific data - they must be interpreted in the context of his atypical conceptions of pedophilia and what he calls the climate of hysteria surrounding child sexual assault cases. Gardner's theories are based on his assumption that sexual intercourse between a child and an adult is not harmful in itself and on his belief that there is an epidemic of false allegations of sexual assault, made by vindictive wives at the time of custody disputes. Gardner persists in these convictions despite a host of clinical and experimental data that demonstrate the contrary. This is not the same as claiming that such allegations are always true or that parents never attempt to manipulate their children when they dispute custody. However, all elements of psychological expertise on which a child's safety will depend must be subjected to empirical checks. When a theory is unable to evolve and improve in response to the results of research, it leaves the field of science for that of ideology and dogma. Given the harms that threaten children and their families in this area, legal and mental health professionals must constantly challenge their views to ensure that their custody decisions are based on the best available scientific evidence, rather than on unfounded opinions, prejudice or ideology[617].

Let's go back to Hubert Van Gijseghem... He was called as an "expert" at outreau's third trial in Rennes in May 2015. The hearings were public, so many people were able to attend his speech and report the facts. This follower of the theory of "false memories" and sap ("parental alienation") then exposed to the bar the best ways, according to him, to collect the child's word so that it is as reliable as possible. He highlighted the fact that the more the child is questioned "outside the frame", the more his testimony will be "polluted". According to him, a testimony gathered by parents, by childminders, by a teacher, but also by child welfare associations or by a psychologist are worthless and must be avoided at all costs... It also prohibits places such as the house, the room or the school to listen to the child so as not to establish a link of familiarity... It recommends that the child be listened to only in a police station, during a single hearing during which the child must feel a certain pressure so that he feels obliged to tell the truth, "here we must tell the truth, the child must be impressed", said Van Gijseghem, while recommending that the parents should not be present at this hearing.

It also recommends excluding the protective parent or any other person who might collect a testimony that is embarrassing (for the network) because it would automatically be "contaminated" by the child's interaction with others. If we stick to the statements of Van Gijseghem who takes great care to exclude any actor outside the institutions who could listen to the testimony of the child, the latter must go to the police station itself to be interviewed only once by an unknown person... In addition, he warns not to use drawing, toys, dolls or plans to make the child express himself on his traumatic experience, claiming that "scientific research" invalidates all this.

During his testimony before the court, Van Gijseghem repeatedly used the term "scientific research versus the man in the street", as the flamboyant standard of "the expert" that he is. But what scientific research exactly is he talking about? We will not know in this court of assizes. Van Gijseghem was unable to answer Master Forster (lawyer for the civil party) when the latter asked him the title of his doctoral thesis of which he had found no trace... Forster also confronted him with a whole series of contradictory studies and research concerning his smoky theories on the collection of the child's word and false memories. Faced with these contradictions, Van Gijseghem had nothing to answer and remained silent, the work of this man is indeed very controversial in the world of child psychology.

Van Gijseghem explains that parents, teachers and therapists must be completely excluded in order to be able to properly validate the child's speech. He said: "There is a risk of slippage where the child ends up telling anything... The child will start to tell fairytale, satanic rituals, sacrifices, cannibalism, etc... myths that we don't know where it came from...'' Van Gijseghem thus discredits everything related to traumatic ritual abuse, invalidating these testimonies by the fact that the child slips because his memory has been contaminated by adults: they are therefore false memories, the case is closed, no need to investigate...

Van Gijseghem also claims that a true testimony will tend to decrease in the number of details, while a false story would become more and more detailed over time, but again he does not elaborate on the research or sources behind these claims. Yet traumatic memories can resurface gradually with more and more precise sensory details, thus making the testimony more and more provided. But according to him: "The repressed memories are part of an unfulfilled reconstruction, the person fills holes with false memories."

But if there are "holes", it is because there is a traumatic amnesia and who says traumatic amnesia says hidden memories that can go back further in time. These are fractions of memories that must then be reconstructed like a puzzle to be able to integrate and verbalize them in a chronological framework: this is the whole issue of the testimonies of survivors, attacked precisely on the fact that they cannot give a precise and chronological account of the facts. This is how survivors suffering from severe dissociative disorders find themselves totally discredited, unfortunately...

It is classic in this type of case to highlight the psychological state of the dissociated victim in order to discredit his testimony. On the contrary, the diagnosis of dissociative disorders should be one more piece to put in the file to support the fact that the victim has indeed experienced severe trauma, or even mental control in the case of a dissociative identity disorder. Logically, in the face of profound dissociative disorders (consequence of severe trauma), the investigation should then be deepened rather than closed without follow-up...

During this trial, Van Gijseghem clearly admitted to the President of the Court that he was not competent in neuro-biological sciences or psychotraumatology, even though it is precisely these areas of research that make it possible to understand the functioning of traumatic memories linked to dissociative states.

We are now in a situation where the justice system seems at first sight to be totally ignorant of psychotrauma, and the judiciary does not seem to want to update itself on this knowledge, which is essential in order to understand and deal properlywith the cases of paedocriminality. It would seem that anything that has anything to do with dissociative disorder and traumatic memory should have absolutely no credibility in cases related to child sexual abuse. Everything is done to stifle and discredit this field of research, especially when these questions come to arise before a court of assizes... It would certainly not be a question of opening Pandora's box in the middle of a court of law!

There is therefore a war of communication, or rather a "war of memory" with regard to scientific research that makes it possible to understand how the brain works in the face of trauma. As a result, disinformation accompanied by withholding of information is put in place to prevent these studies from being widely disclosed and taught in medical schools, thus being able to find themselves heavily weighed in the courts (See the conclusion of chapter 5).

The care of victims with a view to their recovery is therefore impacted by all these institutional "negligences". Psychotraumatologist Muriel Salmona said: *"The*problem of the public authorities is that on the***one hand we are fighting violence, we have made*** recent ***laws, as in February 2010 with the law on incest; but normally in these*** *laws, there had to be the establishment of information, of training of doctors, because doctors are not trained in all this new research and all this new knowledge that we have. There was also to be the creation of health centres, that is to say that we had to be able to receive the victims, except* there is nothing that *is done! In this case, we absolutely need enormous political will in order to be able to take care of the victims. Caring for the victims is really about avoiding suffering, avoiding the worsening of inequalities, avoiding situations of marginalization, exclusion, distress... And importantly, it is to prevent the violence* from happening *again. When you have been a victim of violence, you can again be a victim of violence* ***(...)*** *But one of the ways to treat oneself will also be violence against others* ***(...)*** *Violence exerted on the other is a drug, and in an unequal society there may be people who will be designated as ready-made victims, available to instrumentalize them and to "drug themselves" with them*[618].

During the Outreau 3 trial in Rennes, the psychotherapist Hélène Romano said on Europel: "We are no longer currently training professionals in France to hear children, this is very damaging because there are still recommendations on the hearings of little ones, children and teenagers who are not at all or little applied at the moment for lack of means and will because it is said that listening to children no longer serves muchpurpose i619]..." The sham of Outreau's first trial in 2004 was largely instrumental in anchoring in public opinion that children "lie and tell anything" about sexual abuse.

5 - The focus on the internet tool (cyber-police)

There are thousands of paedocriminal sites and millions of paedo-pornographic files circulating on the Internet. This is why governments, the media and associations focus on the web, thinking that this is where all paedocriminality is concentrated. Interpol and practically all the national police forces are setting up Internet surveillance cells. Public campaigns systematically aim to raise awareness of paedophilia on the Web, thus maintaining the idea that the whole problem is identified and that governments are therefore providing the necessary responses to this scourge. It is indisputable that paedo-pornographic content disseminated on the web must be detected, deleted and repressed, but we cannot limit the issue of combating paedocriminality to only the Internet tool...

Here is what the Belgian activist Marcel Vervloesem said about the focus of the public authorities on the Internet, while real and non-virtual networks continue their activities without being in any way worried by the justice: *"The photos that land on the Internet have above all been produced. The child was raped at the time the photo was taken and it is not the internet that rapes the children. The executioners who rape children and produce this material are the rapists and they are the ones who put their photos on the Internet. This is what I have always said at the International Congress, I have always told them that we should not concern ourselves with the problem of the Internet. No, it is not the Internet that violates, it is not the Internet that tortures, no, the children who appear on the Internet have been victims of* **these** *practices. Who are the perpetrators of these practices? That is what is important, the Internet is not important. This is what I said to the Congress in Holland, among others in front of international lawyers, I clarified this position and I told them: 'No! Internet is the end of the channel, before that we rape the child, we torture him or whatever, and it is after we publish the photo by broadcasting it via the internet, it is another step* (**...**) *When you see reports on television, you hear all the time: "We have uncovered a paedophilia network on the Internet." ... It's rubbish*[620] *!"*

in front of international lawyers, I clarified this position and I told them: 'No! Internet is the end of the channel, before that we rape the child, we torture him or whatever, and it is after we publish the photo by broadcasting it via the internet, it is another step (**...**) *When you see reports on television, you hear all the time: "We have uncovered a paedophilia network on the Internet." ... It's rubbish[620] !"*

Indeed, the root of the problem is the producers of these paedo-pornographic materials who rape, torture and kill children. When the cyber-police attack virtual networks on the Internet, they attack consumers of images and videos and not the heart of the paedocriminal network, which is not virtual but real. The most dangerous paedocriminals like Marc Dutroux for example, generally have no connection with the Internet.

In addition, the Internet is a global network without any regulation, an iceberg whose submerged part (the dark web, where Internet users circulate under total anonymity) contains the most despicable practices of the human being. Therefore, from a technical point of view, the few sites closed by the authorities are only a drop in the ocean, ten others will bloom again the next day. The fight against paedocriminality is not virtual, paedocriminal networks are not virtual. This government strategy aimed at focusing on the Internet tool is also a kind of lightning lashing that channels the police forces into the virtual, thus leaving the field open to the real producers of child pornographic material organized in networks. As we have seen in the chapter on ritual abuse, the testimonies of the victims of these Satanist networks very often report that rapes, tortures and murders are photographed and filmed. All this represents a large, lucrative market which the mafia networks do not deprive themselves of. However, the police obviously do not go back to the source of all these atrocities, they do not have the function of dismantling the Paedocriminal Network, the digital content broadcast on the Internet being only the end of the channel.

3 - "National Security"

In the United States, the National Security Act was signed in 1947 to reorganize the armed forces and intelligence services. Its main purpose was to protect military secrets and push the CIA into a "secret war" against the Soviets: the Cold War. This legislative act was the beginning of the implementation of the leaden screed which allows, today more than ever, to cover all "sensitive" government projects, such as programs on mind control. It is under the protection of this "national security" that the Bluebird, Paperclip, Artichoke, MK-Ultra, etc. projects have *developed.* All research on psychotronics is also covered by the National Security Act, making it impossible to publicly (officially) disclose anything about these programs. With the various amendments that have been added to it over the years, in particular that of Reagan in 1984, the United States government is now able to conceal and censor everything it wants... Simply by hiding behind these two words: "national security", it is as simple as that. It is a smokescreen behind which some members of the government hide crimes committed against innocent civilians. Mind control is certainly the most shocking practice that must at all costs be hidden from citizens through what has become of the National Security Act: an aberrant abuse of power. The secrecy of information, or withholding of information, is an excellent way to exercise power. Thus, this government has carte blanche to violate the laws of the country and the rights of citizens.

The most telling example of what the National Security Act can be used for is the case of Cathy O' Brien, a victim of the MK-Monarch. Indeed, this case clearly demonstrates how this system works, which literally blocks any legal action despite the amount of evidence accumulated - some of which was provided by FBI officials in the O'Brien case - which should logically give rise to investigations, judgments and convictions; ultimately leading to public disclosure by the media of all these covert activities related to mind control. Cathy O'Brien's companion, Mark Phillips, said that his country could not be able to solve the problem in terms of justice, it was constantly repeated to him that it could never get justice because of "National Security."

This "national security" also poses a problem in therapeutic terms, because all knowledge about dissociative disorders, programming and MK deprogramming is censored, blocked. Some knowledge and technologies are therefore inaccessible to therapists and victims. This abuse of power also makes it possible to interpret the legal texts in a certain way and to stifle the testimonies of survivors, always on the grounds of "national security". Access to the courts for unfortunate victims is also hindered by the roublardise of the many judicial "experts" who do everything to discredit them.

Thus, deprived of the benefit of the many discoveries induced by the research of the DoD (Department of Defense) and the technologies it has developed, psychiatric medicine is still learning curves in terms of establishing state-of-the-art care protocols for patients. In other words, the actors of psychiatry themselves are becoming the second group of victims of mind/information control.

The profession of psychiatrist is currently experiencing a crisis and is at the classic crossroads between failure and success. It would appear that the path to success through the application of currently available technologies is blocked for reasons of national security.

As a direct result of how the secrets of DoD psychiatric research are managed, and the resulting federal information retention practices, psychiatric actors are on the defensive of their patients, the courts, and, more recently, particular interest groups. These groups launch attacks against psychiatric professionals aimed at destroying them. Heavily funded organizations with extremely dubious programs such as the False Memory Foundation (FMF) and the Church of Scientology have publicly denounced the profession of psychiatrist. ''America in The Middle of Trance - Formation'' - Cathy O'Brien & Mark Phillips, 2012, p.61

Cathy O'Brien also describes how the juvenile court judge who was ruling on the case of her daughter - also a victim of ritual abuse and MK programming - closed the door to the media and

the public for "reasons of national security" while shocking violations of various laws ensued. Here is what Cathy O'Brien writes about her daughter's situation, which is subject to *the National Security Act: "Despite a public outcry that has* **continued** *to grow to the point of aggregating a vast body of international advocacy organizations, as well as numerous documents/letters addressed to the Governor(s) of Tennessee, most of which I have received copies of which, Kelly still has to be granted her right to a specialized re-education process for the proven mind control violence she has suffered since birth, via operation "MK-Ultra" funded by the US government The handful of criminals at the helm of our country, our information and, subsequently, our "criminal" justice system. , refuses to provide the technological antidotes known - but nevertheless classified - to a problem whose existence they do not want to put. More than 70,000 documents(decri.ssified),various evidences, videos, medical archives, affidavits and other testimonies of government insiders - which are only part of what Mark and I have accumulated over the years - establish the reality of the violence of the control of the mind that Kelly and I have suffered in the board of "MK-Ultra." It is therefore absolutely inexcusable that these cover-ups should continue or, as Andy Shookhoff the only "judge" involved in this case, stated during a hearing in nashville, Tennessee, that "the law does not apply in this case for reasons of National Security"." After a decade of various chokings, Kelly was released by the state of Tennessee without treatment. Placed in a secure environment, she is now waiting for the rehabilitation that is so desperately* **due to***her***1621! ."**

Mark Phillips says that when they turned over their case containing all the evidence to Judge Andy Shookhoff, he stood up and said, "I don't know of any law for you." This judge later stated in the middle of a public hearing: "The laws do not apply in this case for reasons of national security." A rather shocking statement that was made in front of all the public who was then present in the court, that is to say dozens of lawyers and many citizens and journalists... So people then became aware of what this case was all about. For Mark Phillips, this meant that this judge had somehow just validated their case and maybe even saved their lives. Indeed, this judge has publicly stated that the United States Government has a responsibility to cover up this case while not having to justify it. It was at this point that Mark Phillips and Cathy O'Brien realized that they would never be able to get justice in any state or criminal court in the United States. However, this official and public statement by the judge was somehow a great step forward. (For further work on this matter, see Annex 2)

The truth is that the National Security Act was obviously interpreted not to preserve the integrity of military secrets, but rather to protect the most serious criminal activities. We would act in accordance with the Constitution by repealing this law and replacing it with the already existing rules of military conduct in terms of national security, rules that do not infringe on the constitutional rights of U.S. citizens or those of their allies.

According to Mark Phillips, all countries bound to the United States by a peace treaty are subject to the terms of the National Security Act of 1947. Suffice to say that the issue of MK programming remains covered under a thick screed of lead in many countries...

4 - Sexual subversion

This subject deserves a book in its own right as the issue is so important and so much to say. The following attempts to expose this recent phenomenon (which began in the middle of the twentieth century), which both reverses moral values and tries to corrupt children by impassioning society with all the "whims" of the Luciferian subculture: where incest and paedophilia are a heritage that is perpetuated from generation to generation...

This culture of paedophilia and hyper-sexualization is gradually permeating popular culture to make sexual relations between adults and children acceptable and trivialized, and finally to legalize them. We note, moreover, that the sentences against paedocriminals are becoming lighter and lighter from year to year, a laxity of the judicial institutions which indicates to us that these crimes would become less and less serious ?... As for taking into account the dignity of the child (his word and his suffering), it is something that is today totally put in the closet and for good reason, the child gradually becomes a consumable good in our consumer society gone adrift ... This heavy subject is indeed a bitter pill very hard to swallow, however there is still time to open your eyes!

a/ Alfred Kinsey

Alfred Charles Kinsey was a professor of entomology and zoology. He became famous after publishing two important studies on the sexual behaviors of men and women. In 1948, he published "Sexual Behavior in the Human Male", then in 1953 "Sexual Behavior in the Human Female". In 1947, he founded an Institute for Sex Research at Indiana University, Bloomington, which was later renamed the Kinsey Institute for Research in Sex, Gender and Reproduction, more commonly known as the Kinsey Institute (still active today). It was within the framework of this institute that Alfred Kinsey undertook the compilation of thousands of data to write his infamous report on adult sexuality. but also children. According to kinsey data, hundreds of children and even babies have been used in research on sexuality.

The aim of Kinsey's studies and the people who funded his "scientific research" was to normalize a lot of behaviors that had always been considered socially unacceptable until then, such as adultery, sodomy, incest and pedophilia. These studies also aimed to show that these behaviours were much more widespread than the public perceived, thus making them much more acceptable.

The Kinsey Institute is nothing more and nothing less than a social engineering operation. All his "studies" on sexuality were only intended to infuse in American society a propaganda financed among others by the Rockefeller Foundation. Indeed, the reports that were produced by the Kinsey Institute (in the 50s) were the starting point of the sexual revolution (or sexual liberation), which affected both adults and youth because it certainly influenced sex education programs in schools. Alfred Kinsey is one of the forerunners of early sexualization.

After publishing his two reports on human sexuality, Kinsey began to travel the United States to lecture at universities and in front of politicians. He quickly became the reference in the field of sexuality and was welcomed as the "best expert in the world on human sexuality". In particular, it aimed to change the laws concerning sex offenders and the sex education of children. The model of the criminal law that was adopted after 1955 was based, among other things, on Kinsey's research. Not only has his work influenced sex education programs for children, but also U.S. laws, particularly with regard to the protection of women and children, as well as a questioning of the imprisonment of paedocriminals.

Kinsey, for example, stated that children are 100% orgasmic from birth and that they can benefit from having sex with adults, especially in incest. It advocated lowering the age of consent but in fact aimed to fully legalise ''paedophilia''. For example, he states in his studies that "Children need to receive sex education classes as soon as possible since they are sexualized from birth (...) They need to be taught straight and homosexual masturbation." According to Dr. Judith Reisman, the leading whistleblower about the sham of kinsey reports, he also said that sex offenders very rarely repeat abuse, and therefore they should not be imprisoned but released on parole.

Here are the kinds of extreme results noted in Kinsey's tabular studies: a 4-year-old child reportedly had 26 orgasms in 24 hours. Dr. Reisman legitimately asks where and under what circumstances could Kinsey obtain such information? Under Table 31, Kinsey indicates that the data come from observations made on 317 male subjects. Then on page 177 of the report on the sexual behaviour of men, Kinsey writes: "Orgasm in a 4-month-old girl is included in our report..."' How could anyone recognize such a thing in a 4-month-old baby? Kinsey also writes: "Among pre-pubertal boys and among little girls, orgasm is not easily recognized, partly because of the lack of ejaculation[622].

The question is what this man called an orgasm. On page 161 of his report on the sexual behavior of men, he specifically describes what he considers to be an orgasm in these children: "A gradual and sometimes prolonged process, leads to orgasm, which involves violent convulsions of all bodies, rapid breathing, grunts or violent screams, sometimes with an abundance of tears (especially in young children)." He also states that there are six categories of what he considers to be an orgasm in a child: screams, hysterical pain (especially in the youngest), convulsions, the child hits the "partner" (he uses the word partner to refer to the rapist), *etc.* For Kinsey, all this was orgasms and was used to build his smoky relationships.

Kinsey was very clear when he said that all this data about children was provided by "adult observers", defined as pedophiles by his own team members. Dr. Bankroft of the Kinsey Institute said that following the example of his mentor, Dr. Dickinson, Kinsey trained his own predators, men who collected data on what is purely and simply child sexual abuse, or even babies.

In 1990, on the *Phil Donahue Show,* Dr. Judith Reisman was confronted by Dr. Clarence Tripp, a close collaborator of Kinsey. Here's what he said on set: *"I think we should be talking about the children now, because a lot of things are mixed up. You know, we don't have to rush into it... We want to savor this, because it's wonderful! It's a delight."* On that show, Judith Reisman said, *"Do you know what Dr. Gebhard told me? He wrote me a letter that I have at my disposal for anyone who wants, in which he explains to me that "oral and manual techniques were used on children"! If what I say there is false, take me to court!"*

This letter was written in March 1981. In it Dr. Gebhard explains where the sexual data on children came from. In this writing he admits that many pedomanes were employed to collect information necessary for Kinsey's reports. He *writes: "Since sexual experimentation on infants and children is illegal, we had to find other sources, some were parents, others were school nurses or teachers, or* *homosexual men* (...) *one of them was a man who had had many sexual relations with men, women, children and infants, and having a scientific orientation, he kept detailed reports on each encounter* (...) *Some of these sources were accompanied by written evidence, photos and sometimes films* (...) *The techniques used were self-masturbationby thechild, sex scenes between children and sexual contact between adults and children, manual or oral. "*

Gebhard's letter totally refutes Dr. Bankroft's pedophile theories, but fits perfectly with what Kinsey had written in his report on sexual behavior in men. Geibhard mentions in his letter that photos and films were sent directly to Alfred Kinsey, which explains the sad discovery made by the director of his institute, June Reinisch... In 1984, in the Newsweek newspaper, Reinsich stated that she had discovered within the institute a collection of child pornography so disgusting that she could not continue to watch it.

In 1998, in the report "Secret History : Kinsey's Paedophiles" (Yorkshire TV), Gebhard says: "There is also a paedophile organization in this country, they cooperated with us, and for some of them who were obviously not incarcerated, they gave us information." Dr. Reisman believes that this pedophile organization geibhard is talking about was what later became NAMBLA (an American association advocating love between men and boys). To date, pro-paedophile associations such as NAMBLA, systematically refer to the studies of the impostor Kinsey to assert their claims and to trivialize paedomania.

In the same report, Dr. Clarence Tripp states: "Pedophilia is like who would say non-existent, and the thing he (Kinsey) hated the most was that people use words like "abuse of minors." What's that? No one knows (laughs) Child abuse? Are we talking here about pulling his ears or hitting him with a pipe? Or are we talking about tickling it a little? Do you put "caresses" and "attacks" in the same basket? As Kinsey said, "By this kind of paranoia, you do more harm to the child than all the pedophiles around the world put together.'"

According to the research that has been done on this sad individual, it is that he was himself a perverted patient. Alfred Kinsey's sadomasochistic tendencies have been documented by many biographers, including James Jones who reports that Kinsey once circumcised himself with a pocket knife in a bathtub without any anesthesia. James Jones also reports that after the Rockefeller Foundation provided him with funding, "Kinsey went into the cellar, tied a rope to a pipe and the other end around his scrotum, then he climbed onto a chair and jumped." His abuse of sexual organs was clearly identified at the time of his death. Officially, Kinsey died of a heart attack, it would indeed be embarrassing to say that the father of the global sexual revolution, died as a result of self-harm.

To conclude with regard to this impostor, we will note that he was a great admirer of the Satanist Aleister Crowley. After publishing his "famous" reports on the sexuality of men and women, Kinsey traveled abroad to study sexuality in various countries. According to Wardell Pomeroy, Kinsey's co-author, kinsey was also looking for the document "A prized item, the diaries of Aleister Crowley". Pomeroy writes that two weeks after Kinsey went to England to get this document, he went to Sicily to visit the "temple" that Crowley had built there, the Abbey of Thelème in which he practiced satanic rituals. Kinsey even tried to acquire Crowley's "Magical Diaries" on behalf of his institute[623]. It should be noted that Aleister Crowley was expelled from Italy because he was accused of paedocriminality, even sacrifices.

Alfred Kinsey legitimized the sexual revolution, he did it academically but in an uns scientific way, the real motive being not science but a well-orchestrated social engineering plan to change the morality of an entire country... and consequently of the entire Western world, the United States being the influential culture that pours all over the world. One of his biographers, Jonathan Gathorne-Hardy, said: "It's really interesting when you go into it, it's a real sick social plan. He didn't want just a little more tolerance when it comes to sexuality, it's something much more monstrous. It was a powerful social plan perfectly orchestrated by the people who worked alongside him."

b/ Early sexualization

Alfred Kinsey is the ancestor of early sexualization, which today takes the form of sex education that is imposed on increasingly young children, especially in school curricula.

In a booklet entitled *"Document establishing the foundations of sex education"* distributed by the Pedagogical University of Central Switzerland (PHZ), we discover that Kinsey's work has borne fruit and that it is being applied at the level of school curricula: *"Contrary to the rather hostile conceptions of sexuality that prevailed in the first half of the 20th century, most conceptions of sexual development during life are now based on scientific knowledge and consider sexuality favourably. They recognize that children and adolescents are beings endowed with sexuality* (...) *From childhood, human beings are sexual beings with needs specific to their age and individual forms of expression. This is how, for example, infants make their first experience of pleasure by sucking and sucking. Sexual curiosity and experiences do not appear at puberty but exist from childhood, in boys and girls, in different forms depending on age* (...) *One of the important missions of the school is to offer this opportunity to all children and adolescents with regard to sexuality, sexual roles and gender relations by explaining to them the social transformations or common sense in force in society to enable them to access the values and norms of our society* (...) *The school complements, in the field of sex education, the educational tasks of parents or those responsible for education.*
is to transmit social norms and values. "

Sex education is not a problem in itself, but it is the age at which the child is automatically subjected to it in a school environment that poses a real problem. This general enthusiasm for children's sex education aims to make it begin in nursery school. This official Swiss booklet intended to lay the foundations for sex education in schools contains a table with a list of the stages of children's psycho-sexual development. It is noted that 4-year-olds have "reactions related to orgasm", or a "pleasure to show off and genital games" but also an "erotic interest in parents". The document states that a 5-year-old child practices "role-playing games like playing sex."

Here is what the booklet tells us about the sex education professionals responsible for "training" children in schools: *"Inthe context of the empowerment"* of *students, the transmission of sexual and reproductive health themes and rights or knowledge of regional psychosocial offers are of the utmost importance. The appropriate skills will be transmitted by these specialists in the context of sex education, which is valuable and sustainable. They have a solid scientific background, current technical knowledge, sex education materials and proven teaching concepts in work adapted to the age of young people and adolescents. "*

These sex educators would therefore have a "solid scientific training (valuable and lasting)", relying on the work of characters like Alfred Kinsey. A whole program that aims to make acceptance of marginal and criminal behaviors as a norm, thus continuing the ongoing sexual revolution, the continuation of which is the theory of gender or gender. Gender theory consists in inculcating toddlers (and older ones) that they are neither boys nor girls but that it is up to them to decide their sex... All this in the name of equality and freedom, concepts dear to the Masonic lodges that are very active in the field of national education. Indeed, "special educators" in sex education (often from LGBT associations - Lesbien, Gay, Bi, Trans -) are only the final link in the chain. These programs are organized in the rectorates and ministries that implement decisions taken upstream in the Masonic lodges that totally oversee the republican state.

Daniel Keller, Grand Master of the Grand Orient of France, told a Senate committee in March 2015: "Thank you for your invitation and for reminding us that I preside over an obedience of more than 50,000 members. As you probably know, the Grand Orient de France has in its ranks very many actors from the educational world, whether they are obviously teachers or all those involved in the out-of-school period, from primary education to university. We consider the public school to be the pillar and crucible of the republic." Basic rule: the conditioning towards a certain ideology must begin in early childhood...

c/ Hyper-sexualization

There is also a phenomenon that is developing more and more, and that is the hyper-sexualization of children and adolescents. Early sexualization aims to "educate" them from an early age on sexuality, while hyper-sexualization aims to make them physically desirable, to "adultify" them in a way.

Sylvie Richard Bessette (professor of sexology at the Université de Québec à Montréal) defines hyper-sexualization as follows: "Excessive use of strategies focused on the body in order to seduce". The problem is that today in some circles children are subjected to these practices, especially in the "MiniMiss" competitions during which little girls are dressed and made up to take the attitude of "miniature women". They adopt codes of seduction that are not in line with their age (swaying, wink, etc.). Little girls thus become objects of desire and this in spite of themselves.

The psychoanalyst Monique de Kermadec writes about the MiniMiss competitions: "We eroticize their image excessively with young woman's outfits. This can create, at the time of adolescence, disorders of self-image and, sometimes, dietary disorders such as anorexia. And this damage is even greater when the child puts himself in a situation of seduction in front of the public. Naughty smiles and other attractive winks abnormally sexualize behavior[624]. ''

Overall, hyper-sexualization permeates the entire society, especially through the entertainment industry which stages ever more naked starlets, making dances that are increasingly sexually explicit, even pornographic (Miley Cyrus, Beyoncé, etc., MK dolls intended precisely to transmit this hyper-sexualization in young people). The music videos and stage performances are watched by millions of little girls whose unconscious is imbued with all these things. One of the major trends in our decadent society is hyper-sexualization.

In the Canadian documentary "Sexy inc, nos enfants sous influence" (2007), sexologist Francine Duquet says: "We've really seen a cut in the last five or six years where we're more bombarded with sexual messages. Children receive this as if it were normal. In addition, when it comes to children or adolescents in particular, they arrive at an age where they want to meet the norm. They want to look like their idols, they want to be popular and the idea of popularity is a major concept in adolescence. Today, being popular means being "hot" (sexy). You have to have some kind of sexual energy, you have to release something sexual. Off,at the age of 11 or even 14, it's far from obvious... So we're witnessing mimicry: I dress the same, I do the same. There's also this whole fashion phenomenon, apart from fashion at the moment for children, it's on some levels worrying because clothes are being eroticized, especially for little girls.''

Social engineering programs focus particularly on the society of tomorrow: that is, the control of the consciousness (and especially the subconscious) of today's children and adolescents. We clearly see this propaganda for hyper-sexualisation when the media constantly encourage children to become little women or little guys, especially in advertisements for the fashion or cosmetics industry. A typical example is that of the little Thylane Lena-Rose Blondeau (daughter of the television host Véronika Loubry and the footballer Patrick Blondeau) who posed in 2011, at the age of 10, for vogue magazine. Shocking clichés that have become a typical example of what the hyper-sexualization of a child is.

Today there are sexy thong-type clothes in girl size, which do not have breasts, but to which bras are also offered. There are even heeled slippers for babies... A new market has opened up, and the peomanes are enjoying it.

d/ Pro-paedophilia propaganda

Alongside the early sex education and hyper-sexualisation of our children, there is pro paedophile propaganda whose aim is gradually toinfuse a trivialisation and a certain tolerance for these criminal activities in our society. Today paedocriminals have their international days: International Love Boy Day for the "lovers of boys" and Alice Day for the "lovers of girls".

Created in 1998, these international days have their logos and slogans, distinctive signs and a particular vocabulary that form a real "paedophile culture" highlighting "scientific" works such as those of Alfred Kinsey to justify their serious deviances. They also have their forums for exchanges on the internet, which can be very moderate in the comments while some are much more virulent, especially in the dark web.

Paedophile propaganda also passes through magazines (e.g. Lolita) and certain newspapers, notably the daily newspaper Libération which published on 10 April 1979 the plea of Gabriel Matzneff and Tony Duvert in favour of "minority loves". The same newspaper that published in the 70s a petition asking Parliament to repeal articles of law related to sexual majority as well as the decriminalization of sexual relations between an adult and a minor under 15 years of age. This petition was signed by many well-known personalities of the time such as Jack Lang, Simone de Beauvoir, Louis Aragon, Bernard Kouchner, André Glucksmann, *etc.*

In 1979, *Libération* even offered a full platform to the paedocriminal Jacques Dugé to defend sodomy on children. The op-ed entitled *"Jacques Dugé s'explique"* was an open letter to the investigating judge in charge of studying this heavy case at the time, Dugé was in fact being prosecuted for prostitution and sexual abuse of minors. Here is what this paedocriminal wrote at the time in a famous daily newspaper of national audience: *"A child who loves an adult, knows very well that he can not yet give, also, he understands and he accepts very well to receive. It is an act of love. It's one of his ways of loving and proving it. This was the behavior with me of the few boys I sodomized. And then let's say things as they go. He likes to feel in his body, the manly member of the one he loves, to be united with him, by the flesh. This gives great satisfaction. He also has the* *satisfaction* of *being a.riable to the one who sodomizes him who enjoys in him. It also gives him great joy, because to love is to give as well as to receive. This may be hard to deliver for laymen, but it is the reality. " - Liberation, 25,26/01/1979.*

It was during the 70s that this paedophile propaganda was the most virulent, taking advantage of the sexual revolution then underway (initiated by Alfred Kinsey). In May 1977, the Libération stated:

Birth of the "Front de Libération des Pédophiles".

A new group has just been born: the FLIP of which you can read below the constitutive platform. Who are they? For the most part, readers of Libération who following an open letter to paedophiles in our edition of 9/2/77 sent us an abundant letter - we reported some of them in a double page on March 24, 77 entitled: Adult-Child Relations. On April two, a first meeting was held in Jussieu, bringing together about thirty people. Simple contact. No doubt it is regrettable that the main concerns have been of a judicial nature. All that was discussed was the repression, defence and prosecution of paedophiles. Without ignoring these harsh realities, such a group has everything to gain if it broadens its field of reflection. The FLIP (Front de libération des Pédophiles) was born. Some key objectives have already been launched:

- To combat criminal injustice and to conduct a critical reflection on the family and the school, based on a political analysis of sexuality between minors and adults.

- To join in the struggle of children who want to change their way of life and of any political group that aims at the establishment of a radically new society where pederasty will exist freely.

- Develop a pederastic culture that expresses itself through a new way of life, and the emergence of a new art.

- To speak in the media that give it the means to do so and through the necessary channels.

- To show solidarity with paedophiles imprisoned or victims of official psychiatry.

The "bourgeois tyranny" makes the lover of children a monster of legend that crunches the cottages. We will break monsters and cottages together.

There are many associations that campaign by bringing the voice of paedocriminals to the public square. Their strategy is to minimise the impact of paedophile acts on children, to relativise the concept of minors and sexual minorities in order to lower the legal age and, finally, to trivialise paedophile statements. Examples include the two largest associations of this type: NAMBLA (North American Man/Boy Love Association) and Martijn, a Dutch association for the acceptance of sexual relations between adults and children founded in Hoogeveen in 1982. An attempt to dissolve the latter was made in 2012, the court having found that the association that has a website offered a "digital and social network to perpetrators of sexual crimes." The court of appeal then declared that the texts and images published on the association's website were legal because they never directly called for sexual relations with children. The association is nevertheless contrary to certain principles of Dutch law because it "trivializes the dangers of sexual contact with young children, speaks of these contacts in a positive way, even glorifies them". In 2014, the Netherlands finally decided to ban the activities of the Martijn association once and for all. ''The Supreme Court (Hoge Raad), the highest judicial body in the Kingdom, has ruled that the integrity of the child is more important than the principle of freedom of expression[525].''

The main challenge of paedophile propaganda is to minimize the consequences of these acts on children. The associations are therefore taking up "scientific" work such as Robert Bauserman's report on the effects of sexual abuse on children. Indeed, this report considers that 'sexual relations' with children are not systematically harmful to them. Bauserman has been singled out as an activist who uses science inappropriately in an attempt to legitimize his opinions and tendencies.

Little by little, the paedophiles are gaining ground while children's rights are constantly regressing. The ultimate goal is to whitewash aggressors and deny the status of children as victims, and eventually classify incest and paedocriminality as a simple "sexual orientation" just like heterosexuality or homosexuality. This is what is programmed for the society of tomorrow...

To conclude this chapter, let's go back to the program "Ce soir ou jamais' of France 3, broadcast on May 31, 2011, with a press review that returned to the accusations of the politician Luc Ferry concerning a former paedophile minister who would have been"poissé in Marrakech"', according to his words... During this program, the famous lawyer Thierry Lévy revealed himself live during a stormy and shameful exchange with the Italian filmmaker Cristina Comencini:

- Thierry Lévy: I am talking about tolerance in general. Tolerance is something that at the moment is disappearing completely. And you talk about recent events as if they had freed up a situation that had been blocked until then. But for more than twenty years, sex tourism has been repressed, very severely, very harshly, mercilessly. (...) You talk to us about the beauty of the world and the beauty of sex, but concretely, in deeds, what do you do, what do you do if not constantly brandish the stick, the stick of morality. But yes, what do you do?

- Cristina Comencini: On children?! Kids... the beauty of sex on children?! I thought that the debate was very backward in Italy but I realize that in France it is a lot ...

- TL: (cutting off the speech of her interlocutor). Please! Sex with children. This is a subject that can no longer be discussed today. No one dares to talk about children's sexuality anymore (...) There is a kind of leaden screed that falls from blond curls (editor's note: in reference to its interlocutor) on the whole of society that comes to prohibit all behaviors a little different, a little abnormal..

- CC: A little different!!?

- TL: But of course, and then we go back to pedophilia every time. Paedophilia is now a subject that is totally banned, you can no longer say a word about it without being demonised.

- CC: Why not talk about it? On the contrary, I think we should talk about it.

- TL: Oh good ?!.

- CC: Yes, I think so.

- TL: And how should we talk about it then?!

- CC: Without saying it's ....

- TL: (cutting him off again) Saying what, saying what? That all those who are attracted to children are criminals?! That they should be put in prison ad vitam aeternam?!

- CC: You have a talking system that is very authoritarian and that does not allow the other the freedom to express himself

Conclusion

> Acquire truth, wisdom, instruction and discernment, and do not dives you of it
>
> Proverbs 23:23
>
> Only small secrets need to be protected. The greatest secrets remain protected by the disbelief of the public
>
> Marshall McLuhan
>
> Man is from fire to lie but from ice to truth
>
> Jean de La Fontaine
>
> Silence becomes a sin when it takes the place that comes back to protest and from a man it then makes a coward
>
> Abraham Lincoln

The focus of trauma-based mental control is the physical and psychological abuse of children. The Child is at the heart of the eye of the cyclone that feeds on it, it is Pandora's box that is currently ravaging our society... Purity and innocence embodied in the sights of sorcerers-controllers.

From time to time a case of paedophilia is thrown into pasture to the public, usually the dismantling of a cyber network, but all this is the tree that hides the forest...

Why does the judicial system in France seem to systematically protect child rapists to the detriment of the child protectors who denounce them? Why when it comes to a case of paedocriminality, the judicial steamroller is set in motion to crush the file but also people? Why was France called to order in a 2003 UN report? An investigation that was conducted in France by the rapporteur Juan Miguel Petit and that was presented to the 59th session of the UN Commission on Human Rights. This official report called for an independent body to urgently investigate the shortcomings of justice for child victims of sexual abuse and those trying to protect them (...) Given the number of cases showing a serious denial of justice for child victims of sexual abuse and those who attempted to protect them, it would be appropriate for an independent body, preferably the National Advisory Commission on Human Rights, to conduct an urgent investigation into the current situation.

For example, it is noted on page 14 of the report: "The Special Rapporteur referred to the enormous difficulties faced by persons, in particular mothers, who file complaints against those whom they suspect of abusing their children knowing that they are exposed to possible measures for false accusations, measures which in some cases may lead to the loss of custody of their child(s). Some of these mothers use legal remedies until they can no longer afford to pay the costs of legal aid; only then do they have the choice between continuing to hand over the child to the person they believe is abusing him or her, or seeking refuge with the child abroad. It would even appear that some judges and lawyers, aware of the weaknesses of the judicial system, have informally advised some parents to do so. These parents face criminal prosecution for such acts in France and often in the country to which they are travelling."

even that some judges and lawyers, aware of the weaknesses of the judicial system, have informally advised some parents to do so. These parents face criminal prosecution for such acts in France and often in the country to which they are travelling."

Indeed, like the two examples reported in the French testimonies of chapter 4, many mothers have literally had to flee France for lack of real protection against the institutional paedocriminal network. Why are so many mothers harassed and persecuted or even locked up in psychiatric hospitals for having naturally denounced the rape of their children? Why does a file as heavy as that of the Zandvoort files[626] remain in the boxes of the Ministry of Justice, without any investigation having been launched? Why were about thirty key witnesses found dead in the Dutroux case[627]? This famous Belgian case is a case study to understand how to cover up a file when it begins to go back to the "big fish" of the Network... Why is everything orchestrated to methodically pass children off as lors? Why is everything done to systematically discredit the speech of adult survivors, for example by using the "false memories syndrome" or by relying on their psychic disorders to destroy their speech? Why is the field of psychotraumatology so ignored by so-called public health institutions? Why are the consequences of deep trauma, i.e. dissociation and traumatic amnesia, generally obscured and ousted from public debate?

The consumption and modeling of children would seem to be the preserve of a certain unsuspected elite, but it is also a well-oiled institutional machine that allows them to practice their vice in peace; until when?!

The ABOVE-mentioned UN report, which called for urgent intervention on the French situation, also informs us that *in several cases that were communicated to the Special Rapporteur, it was pointed out that the individuals accused of committing abuses were closely linked to members of Vappareil judiciaire or to individuals occupying high positions in the public administration, who were able to influence the outcome of the proceedings to their detriment, an argument that had also been formulated by the National Division for the Repression of Offences against Persons and Property.* But according to the political, journalistic, police and judicial authorities, there is no paedocriminal network in France, circulate !... Should we not instead say that he is in *"good hands"* ?...

In Karl Zéro's documentary "The File of Shame" (13th Street - 2010), we see the UN rapporteur Juan Miguel Petit declaring: "There have been complaints and specific denunciations from mothers who claim to be pursued by groups, which can be assimilated to mafias or lodges, organizing child pornography."

The silence of the French mainstream media on all these issues is challenging! Many journalists - often paid by taxpayers - who are supposed to inform us about the reality of our society, now seem to be fully involved in a social engineering programme aimed at keeping people in a certain reality comparable to a matrix.

In April 2005, François Léotard (former Minister of Defence) told journalists in front of him on a major French radio station: *"I think you and your colleagues, if you allow, underestimate a part of Vactuality that is completely immersed, completely unknown to the media. You currently have in France 35 to 40,000 people who disappear every year... that disappear! It's quite fascinating, nt and no one looks at* **these** *thousands of disappearances. There are suicides that are false suicides, car accidents that are murders, there are people who leave and that we do not find because they wanted to change their identity... What I mean is that there is an occult, hidden, underground, underwater world, which at the bottom no one seeks to* **discover! 628]."**

When François Léotard speaks of "people who leave and who are not found because they wanted to change their identity", we can probably put in this category all mothers who have fled France to protect their children from institutional paedocriminal persecution. As Juan Miguel Petit did warn in his report to the UN.

On 2 March 2009, Rachida Dati (then Minister of Justice) gave a press conference on the occasion of "Children's Day". When Aude Chaney, the representative of the association "Estelle Mouzin", asks this question to the minister: "How many unexplained disappearances, such as the case of Estelle Mouzin are to be deplored in France?" ... Rachida Dati seems unable to have a clear answer to this simple and precise question. She then turns to her advisers, but no one is able to provide an exact figure to this obviously very embarrassing question. A palpable embarrassment then settled in this room filled with journalists and families of victims. It is surprising that in a country like France the number of children who disappear every year is ignored... or not made public because it is too important?

On this disturbing question, here is what the journalist Serge Garde says: "France is a country full of statistics, where we know for example how many salmon go up the Loire each year, but we do not know how many children disappear[629]. "

In 2001, Serge Garde had already asked a parliamentarian to ask the same question to the Keeper of the Seals then in office, Marylise Lebranchu, she had replied in an embarrassed way: "I can not give you figures, because. it is impossible[630]".

On 20 November 2001, However, Marylise Lebranchu declared before the National Assembly that 800 children had vanished in France in 2000, while confirming that there are no figures concerning the disappearance of minors.

A number of disappearances that must be much greater when we take into account foreign children who disappear or those who are not registered at birth (especially in networks). Out of 1000 foreign children (in 2001) who arrive in France without papers, only 200 remain under social control. The other 800 disappear into the wild[631].

In the France 3 documentary *"Rapes of children: the end of silence?"* , one girl said she had witnessed sacrifices of *"little children who were a little Arab or things like that"*. In her testimony on TF1 in 2001, the survivor Véronique Liaigre said: "The*children who are sa.crified are not declared, or are foreign children. Nota.mment when I was on Agen, they were little Africans, they were black. On Jallais I saw some too, on Nanterre too, but they were little whites, French people, but they were children born of rape. Children born of rape? Yes, which were not declared. These are deliveries that are made at the parents' homes in abominable conditions. So, to the extent that they were not declared,* *they were sacrificed? That's it..."*

Trauma-based programming is like an infernal train that loops, like a virus or a vampire bite transmitting the abomination from generation to generation. Slaves are programmed to become executioners themselves but also programmers. Anyone who is sexually and psychologically abused will not automatically reproduce the abuse, but this human function of self-treatment through anaesthetic and dissociative behaviours such as violence against others is exploited to the extreme by certain groups to perpetuate the abomination from generation to generation. Violence is a drug, literally, it creates extreme stress that makes the person break by a sudden production of hormones such as endogenous morphine, in order to anesthetize the negative charge of his own traumatic memory. But these dissociating behaviors also recharge this traumatic memory, making it ever more explosive.

These dissociative behaviors are therefore becoming more and more necessary for the executioners and this creates a real vicious circle, an addiction to violence, destruction, or even self-destruction. These people, who can be described as psychopaths whose empathy has been destroyed since early childhood, do not consider the pain of others except when it gives them pleasure...

Does this make all executioners sick and irresponsible victims who repeat destructive patterns without having any possibility of making another choice? A choice is always possible despite the enormous difficulties (psychological, family, network pressure). This is a delicate issue, but the day we really have to concern ourselves with it, we will have taken a huge step forward. This will mean that the criminals will be identified and put out of action. It will also mean that the Network is being dismantled and that this infernal train of violence is finally being stopped. So yes, we may wonder what should happen to all these people, but the final judgment will certainly not come from the justice of men.

It would be interesting to scan some of our "elites" to see the state of their tonsil complex and their hippocampus, structures of the brain that can currently prove thanks to our scientific tools that there have been deep traumas in the person. Studies have shown that these brain structures have a significantly smaller volume in people who have suffered severe trauma, especially those who suffer from dissociative identity disorder. This neurological knowledge of the variation in the volumes of the hippocampus and amygdala in relation to severe trauma could, for example, be used to validate the testimonies of victims who say they have suffered the worst atrocities, but are unable to provide a coherent narrative.

As we have seen, the judicial system systematically discredits any disturbing testimony relating to ritual abuse, by highlighting the "disturbed" mental state of the witness, therefore "unreliable" and therefore weighing no weight in the balance of our justice... Yet a brain MRI could prove and certify that there has indeed been a serious traumatic impact in this person, hence the fact that he is in a state that prevents him from explaining clearly and chronologically his experience. Following such a medical examination validating the fact that there were indeed profound traumas resulting in severe dissociative disorders, it would therefore be necessary to study the person's statements more closely in order to conduct a serious investigation. Instead, justice relies on pseudo experts of "false memories" not trained in psychotraumatology: the file is thus very quickly closed.

It is a complicated question, but the observation is that the Network is committed to withholding information on scientific advances inthe field of psychotraumatology and all these recent neurological studies related to the impact that trauma can have on the human brain. This is so that this information cannot be put forward in an official way in the assize courts in order to defend the victims effectively. Indeed, if medical universities do not (or very little) train students on allthe recent discoveries in the field of psychotraumatology and dissociative processes, it becomes very difficult for a lawyer to bring to the bar a person who can clearly and scientifically explain these things. When it comes to asking the courts to order brain scans to prove that there have indeed been serious traumas, it is all the institutions that have been locked in the way here. Indeed, it must be noted that MRI scans of low voices and anuscopy, which would be essential examinations in paedocriminality files, are very rarely practiced... so an MRI cerebral is unthinkable...

This whole question of recognising the victims would, above all, make it possible to take care of them in an effective way by providing them with the appropriate therapies.

The phenomenon of dissociation in children, voluntarily exploited by certain groups, is occult knowledge, the cornerstone of secrecy and power; this in an international way, whether in the political, military, religious or mafia field. Initiates are well aware of the importance that these altered states of consciousness can have for the mind control of an individual. MK programming is therefore not simply about creating a sex slave, a superstarlet or an assassin, it is above all an essential tool of global political control.

Fritz Springmeier bluntly describes the extent of this scourge in our modern world, a statement that seems at first glance alarming but which in the end happens to be rather illuminating to understand some of the workings (and some blockages) of our modern society: *"Mind control is about infiltrating and controlling society from behind the scenes. This must be included if Von wants to control an institution such as the medical lobby, for example. You have to put safe people in key positions because a weak link in the chain will always eventually let go. You cannot afford to have weak links. If you want to control a very powerful lobby such as the medical system, then you have to control a very broad spectrum of things like the hospital system, medical schools, the Medical Association, etc. All this requires that MK slaves be arranged at all levels of the system, at all strategic points. You can't see weak links. For example, a stream of independent physicians who would practice alternative medicine; you must then control the judicial system to be able to have* **these**

"outsized" doctors convicted. A vast occult apparatus must be put in place. If we do not understand the ins and outs of mental programming, we cannot understand how it is possible to have such a type of global control over **society! 632! .**"

As already mentioned in the foreword, the famous hacker Kevin Mitnick said: "The weak link in any security system lies in the human factor." In order to be able to secure a system of domination on a global scale, it is therefore imperative to set up a hacking of the minds of human pawns placed in strategic positions behind democratic facades.

We can recall here the statements of Dr. Catherine Gould in 1994 in the documentary "In Satan's Name": "There are certainly bankers, psychologists, people from the media, we have also heard about child protection services but also about police officers... because they have an interest in being present in all these socioprofessional environments... When I started this work, I thought that the motivations behind pedophilia were limited to sex and money, but I began to realize in the course of my ten years of research that the motivations are even more sinister. Children are abused for the purpose of indoctrination. Ritual abuse of children is a protocol for training humans for worship. It is about formatting children who have been so abused, so subjected to mental control that they become very useful to the sect, at all levels. I think the aim of all this is to get the maximum control, whether in this country or in another.'

Dr. Lawrence Pazder also speaks of systematic infiltration: "They have a normal appearance and lead an equally normal life at first glance. They are present in all strata of society that they have carefully infiltrated. Any position of power or influence over society must be seen for them as a target for infiltration. The executioners have money available, many have impeccable situations: doctors, ministers, professions of all types.'

To establish such an infiltration of institutions and various bodies, Freemasonry - most of whose members are unaware of the activity of the high-degree back lodges - plays an essential role that is no longer to be demonstrated today. The Masonic network practices a systematic subversion of traditional Christian values in favor of illuminist and humanist values replacing God with Man; in other words, it is the Luciferian doctrine, the counter-revelation, or counter-initiation, applied by high masonry; but also by other initiatory secret societies of pyramidal type forming the whole of Great Babylon: "the nameless religion".

This Luciferian doctrine corresponds to the four lies that led to original sin, aiming to apply them and anchor them in modern society. In the Garden of Eden, the serpent had made four promises to Adam and Eve if they tasted the forbidden fruit:

- ''Your eyes will open'': you have been kept in a kind of intellectual blindness so as not to see the mysteries of God. Satan says he can open their eyes to all these occult things. The Gnostics seek this: open their eyes to discover what are the secrets that God has hidden from men.
- ''You will not die'': This is the passage from the state of creature to the state of creator. If the creature becomes eternal, then it becomes God.
- ''You will become like Gods'': The creature and the Creator are also put on the same level. All these ideas are related to Gnosis and Masonic doctrine. Gnosis shines through today in the movement of the new-age, the new-age, advocating the deification of the human being who becomes supposedly creator, a divine being: "we are gods".
- ''You will decide what good and evil is'': Again, the creature puts itself in God's place and we see the sad consequences in our modern society.

The "famous" forbidden fruit therefore seems to be linked to the occult knowledge that promises man to access certain dimensions, certain powers, while developing certain powers. That's part of what's in this book. We find that these four promises of Satan correspond to what the Luciferian secret societies have been working hard to apply in this world for several centuries, in order to sweep away the Creator to put his human creature at the center of everything with the promise to deify it. The world Lutheran network is therefore working to establish its domination to infuse its philosophy and spiritual belief in all humanity.

Today we see this doctrine coming to light, going hand in hand with the planned degeneration of our civilization, following a kind of apocalyptic messianism. Luciferianism is represented symbolically by two mythical figures: Prometheus or Lucifer, who is considered by some circles as the benefactor of humanity, the god "civilizer" who brings light (divine knowledge) to ignorant humans, this is a Transhistorical Gnosis that crosses centuries and centuries through mythology and occult initiations. Lucifer, the light bearer, would therefore give the human the opportunity to become a god himself, by his own means. This malignant and deceptive doctrine is gradually permeating the modern world so that laymen adopt these concepts of fallen life and thoughts in spite of themselves. The rebellion that was made in Heaven by the rebellious angels continues on earth, and everything is done so that it brings a maximum of humans with it in its fall. Lucifer wanted to be his own god and so he leads human creatures into his rebellional dynamic by promising man to attain the status of a god himself.

Luciferians, Satanists, neo-Gnostics, Kabbalists, Martinists, theosophists of all stripes, all have this belief that they must evolve spiritually in order to acquire power and finally immortality to become gods themselves. But this requires certain sources of "power", a rallying to the fallen Angel to receive the "light". Blood rituals (red magic), black magic, demonology, ritual abuse of children and sexual magic are tools to access this power and these openings to other dimensions to receive enlightenment... The most forceful occultists, thirsty for power, will fall into these totally perverse and demonic practices, especially if they are promised to become a creator god at the key. Satanic ritual abuse protocols are directly related to sexual magic and dissociative trances, two powerful catalysts serving to gain power and access other dimensions for this quest for immortality.

Children subjected to torture and rape, totally dissociated and open to other dimensions, are exploited as bridges connecting two worlds and as a reservoir of demonic power. They serve as mediums, intermediaries that the sorcerer-executioner will use with sexual magic to exploit to the maximum this spiritual breach that represents the child in a state of dissociation. It is a real spiritual heist, a rape that is at once physical, energetic and spiritual.

The MK programming based on the splitting of the soul perfectly symbolizes the climax of the quest of the Luiferian man to become a creator god himself. By practicing these horrors, he creates human dolls, sorts of empty shells, golems that he will be able to fill and program according to his own desires. He manipulates the inner world of the slave as he wants, just like a little god manipulating a robotic human, this by playing in this other dimension that is the space-time of the inner universe of his victim. A universe that he arranges as he sees fit. The creation of a golem is the ultimate goal of the Luciferian occultists, Kabbalists and Satanists of all kinds. Lucifer is not a true creator, he is not the creator of Heaven or earth, which is why he takes pleasure in creating in the victims an inner world with a heaven, a earth and a hell of his own creation. He will arrange this world in his own way with an army of demonic entities that will cooperate with the programmer to control the victim. Thus a kind of satanic trinity is set up: the Father (the programmer), the Son (the child "Monarch") and the Holy Spirit (the demons). An obscure trinity that will form the ultimate offense to God: the sabotage, hijacking and exploitation of his beloved creature, the human being. The sabotage of man's conscience to turn him away from God applies today as much to MK slaves in the harshest way as it is, as to humanity as a whole in a more diffuse but equally despicable way.

Without these tools that are mind control based on dissociative identity disorder, drugs, hypnosis, psychotronics, etc., these occult organizations would fail in their plan of domination because they would be unable to keep secret about their despicable acts applied on such a large scale. The sorcerers-controllers have understood that this method of mind control that uses trauma and dissociation also applies to the scale of society and that it is something essential to be able to govern "easily and quietly". This is what William Sargant explained to us when he wrote that the methods of religious initiations are often so close to modern political techniques of brainwashing and thought control that one sheds light on the mechanisms of the other.

''Ordo ab Chao'', order is born of chaos, is the motto of Freemasonry but it is also the heart of alchemical secrets. This formula can be used both to achieve perfection on the side of good as well as on the side of evil. For most Freemasons, it is above all a notion of personal development, a work consisting in defeating the inner monster sowing chaos, the dark forces of mind and ego, which must be fought and transcended in order to find the Divine Order. In alchemy, the two most important operations are "Dissolve" (chaos) and "Coagulate" (ordo). Dissolution means the decomposition of the elements, then comes Coagulation which consists in solidifying the dissolved element in a new state, a new order. We see today that this Masonic formula Ordo ab Chao, this alchemical work of decomposition and recomposition is conscientiously applied in mind control programs, whether at the individual or collective level. Currently, the Ordo ab Chao is not applied in a dynamic of spiritual elevation, but in a dynamic of total control (although this situation paradoxically serves to create a spiritual elevation of a few).

The mental control of the masses passes through the triggering of a "dissociation" (social chaos) where the individual no longer identifies with himself, he becomes the society in itself (ex: the movements "I am Charlie" or "I am Paris" following acts of terrorism). This social dissociation is caused by a whole series of destabilisations of society, creating the ideal conditions for establishing a new order, a new societal structure. This is the "tabula rasa" theory of Kurt Lewin, Eric Trist and many others...

The brainwashing of an individual goes through the erasure, the dissolution of his original personality to then install a new internal

system, it is the same for the people: destroy his roots, his values, his traditions, his beliefs, his family, up to his notion of man or woman (gender theory), all this in order to obtain a mass totally dissociated / disconnected, without reference points, infantilized and malleable at will. The goal is to be able to easily build a New
World Order. The motto of creating chaos in order to be able to establish a new order is applied, as we saw in chapter 7, on MK-Monarch subjects who will inevitably need the programmer to be able to function again following the psychic chaos voluntarily created in them by traumas. This formula, like a fractal, we find it on a large scale in the current societal chaos: to be able to function again following the chaos that is inevitably taking shape, society (in a generalized post-traumatic stress) will need the sorcerers-controllers (the programmers of large scale) to recover and function again in a New World Order , with a Luciferian world religion. This is the current project, and as we have seen the codes of this Luciferian subculture are gradually permeating the secular popular masses psychologically channeled towards this New World Order. A new order in which traditional peoples and cultures (the old world) will have totally dissolved... This is the "Babylonian work", a mental programming on a global scale with transhumanism at the key. Transhumanism advocating the use of science and technology to improve the physical and mental characteristics of human beings, even going so far as to consider old age as a disease. We are here in the continuity of the project aimed at "luciferically deifying man". But science without consciousness is only ruin of the soul (François Rabelais).

In 1736, Andrew Michael Ramsey gave a famous speech, known as "The Ramsey Speech", at the St. Thomas Lodge in Paris. This speech already clearly revealed the Babylonian spirit of the Masonic Order which works to bring together in a single fraternity the subjects of all nations in order to create a new people whose cohesion will be cemented by the bonds of Virtue and Science. This is currently unfolding before our eyes and it is something that is now more visible and understandable than ever despite the chaos that masks the real spiritual stakes. We are born and we bathe in this matrix to such an extent that we do not even discern its ins and outs. There is therefore a real fight between two banners, "the fight of the earthly city against the celestial city", between Babylon, the city of Satan, and Jerusalem, the city of Jesus Christ, the world of sin against the world of grace. It goes without saying that a choice has to be made in this situation.

Professor Jean-Claude Lozac'hmeur writes about this New World Order:

The writings of the theorists most representative of these occultist traditions (Thomas More, Francis Bacon, Comenius, Guillaume Postel, Campanella) as well as contemporary history, make it possible to clarify the contours of this totalitarian state to come.

From this data, we know:

- that this civilization (which was originally intended to be purely collectivist) will in all likelihood be a synthesis of capitalism and socialism,

- that it will extend to the whole world,

- that democratic in appearance, it will have at its head a despot at the same time "king" and "priest", surrounded by a privileged nomenklatura,

- that in this rationalized universe the family and marriage will have disappeared,

- that eugenics and euthanasia will be practised there,

- that to the political and economic unification will be added that of religions replaced by a single cult, that of the "natural religion" called "Noah[633]"."

The creation of MK pawns programmed and strategically placed in our society is the prerequisite to be able to apply the strategies of global mind control to manipulate and dominate the mass. Today, an increasing number of people are realizing that our society is walking on its head, that our leaders are demonstrating an ever more crude and blatant illogical (or inhumane and destructive logic) despite the media hubcap. The word "psychopath" to describe our rulers is becoming more and more common in the mouths of the people. There are certainly serious mental pathologies among our elites and their childhood probably has something to do with it. These severe psychiatric disorders are camouflaged behind a personality worked behind the dark scenes and sanitized under the spotlight of the great political and media theater. In his book ''Dialogues with Forgotten Voices: Relational Perspectives on Child Abuse Trauma and the Treatment of Severe Dissociative Disorders'', Harvey Schwartz explains that addiction to power is the result of these occult subcultures: ''Those who have not been personally exposed to these extremes will be unable to understand fully break the degenerative spiral of this obsession with power. History has shown that when a person or group gains power (Hitler, Idi Amin Dada, Pol Pot, Stalin, to name but a few), a model of extravagant sadism, irrational gratuitous cruelty and ultimately exhibitionist destructive violence that leads to its explosion and collapse. History has not yet revealed that these same evil dynamics are at work outside the context of war and politics in criminal groups that impose their power on children around the world in the form of unimaginable abuses."

During ritual abuse, children receive the transmission of "initiation", the "Initial Violence" that prepares them to become adults working for the "dark side". The luciférien project being spread over several centuries, therefore over several generations, the conditioning and even more the mental programming of the children of the elite form an indispensable protocol. Programming with loyalty, fidelity and the law of silence is the foundation to control these children, destined to perpetuate the Lutheran globalist project. It is a question of obtaining a society whose institutions and the various layers of control find themselves locked and held with an iron fist by individuals in the service of their inner demons... These dissociated and fractionated children from an early age have a brain "re-embedded" giving them certain intellectual and creative faculties, but also an energetic body totally open to the world of spirits, to conscious mediumship or not. In Luciferism, the dissociative process is perceived as a state of spiritual enlightenment, allowing access to other dimensions.

These children receive power, power and light, they become channels used by fallen angels to embody and establish Luciferian doctrine on this earth. Thus, a world was gradually established that was governed indirectly by entities existing on another level. Entities that need well-incarnated human beings in the flesh to act here on earth in matter. In the same way that the Holy Spirit infused himself in some humans in a state of grace to inspire them wisdom, intelligence, strength, charity, faith, hope. An anti-Christic force, counter-initiatory, can also be inffused into the human, more particularly in those who have the doors wide open since early childhood during their "initiation" by extreme traumas. Some fragments of their souls are totally linked and enslaved to the fallen kingdom, to the "Prince of this world". This process is nothing more and nothing less than an inversion of sanctification. These Luciferian bloodlines, feet and fists linked to demons for generations represent the infra-human, resulting from this counter-initiation. Traumatic ritual abuse, sacrifices, magic, demonology, dissociation/possession/'illumination'', control of soul fragments, but also the sites used for ceremonies, with a particular telluric energy, all these occult knowledge are the tools that will allow the connection with these fallen entities that offer this Luciferian human hierarchy the power to establish a temporary domination here on earth.

''These lineages, holders of a particular blood inherited from an ancient ''pact'' with fallen angels, deliberately recreate or awaken secret societies, schools, sects, through certain specially prepared individualities, which could be considered as a particular kind of ''possessed'' and charged with necessary powers, always of a psychic nature, of course, which allow them to provoke for a certain period more or less long but always li li the phenomena which constitute the ''catalyst'' element around which these groupings will be created.'' ''Memory of blood: counter-initiation, cult of ancestors.'' - Alexandre de Dànann.

Freemasonry refers to mysterious "Masters", foreign to humanity, who would inspire, through mediumship, certain high initiates connected to another dimension... This is in order to receive "oracles", i.e. information allowing to "better" act in the material world. As we have already seen, the Freemason Oswald Wirth was rather clear on this subject: "The Masters - for so they are called the initiates - wrap themselves in an impenetrable mystery; they remain invisible behind the thick curtain that separates us from the afterlife. They only work on the drawing board, that is to say intellectually, by conceiving what needs to be built. It is the constructive intelligences of the World, effective powers for the Initiates which come into contact with the Unknown Superiors of tradition[634]. ''The constructive intelligences of the world''... guiding the Masonic high lodges to set up the New Lutheran World Order. Today, this is very clear...

As we have seen, in a brain in full construction, the repetitive extreme traumas that cause dissociation will shape the neuronal pathways and lead (under "good governance") certain physical and intellectual abilities, but also extraordinary psychic faculties. This violent "spiritual unlocking" opens the door to the spirit world. It is likely that in some elitist circles, the fact of being multiple, of having a personality divided into different alters, is seen as a spiritual mark of quality, an initiatory mark, the mark of enlightenment giving the key to access for other dimensions. It is also the "trademark" of the Luciferian hierarchy called "illuminati". It is likely that some initiates (or should we say in fact "traumatized") with multiple personalities can master their T.D.I. by changing alter personalities at will and according to their needs (see the case of Louise who totally mastered her changes from one personality to another - chapter 5). The deepest alters, linked to occult sectarian activities, are perfectly aware of the internal system and can emerge when they wish unlike surface alters who totally ignore "the substance of things".

The multiples coming out of the factories are most certainly individuals who excel in many areas ... But to what extent can we speak of superiority to the ordinary human as the "initiatory" methods are only pains, traumas and finally enslavement to the demons and the Prince of this world? These infra-humans ultimately remain bound hand and foot to entities on which their powers and power depend. This Lutheran slavery is systematically perpetuated on a progeny elected to set up a New World Order. All this being accomplished in a state of mind of extreme superiority against the profane people, not illuminated and considered as a cattle feeding "the beast"... that it must at all costs corrupt and bring down...

One thing that is important to understand is that children who are prisoners and exploited by these cults fall into several categories. First, there is the offspring of influential Luciferian families who systematically program their offspring; on the other hand there are children who are introduced very young in these circles and who are also destined to form the elite of tomorrow without however having a blood link with the "Family". And finally there are the children who literally serve as fresh flesh: they are children born of rape and undeclared, kidnapped children or foreign children, all destined to be abused, tortured and ultimately sacrificed during rituals. These children serve to "introduce" the other children of the network, considered as the "chosen ones", to the despicable practices of these groups.

The splitting of a human, that is to say the deliberate creation of a dissociative disorder of identity, can only be done on very young children, it is clear that these automatically become priority targets to perpetuate the counter-initiation and enlightenment. So here we have a large part of the explanation for the existence of paedo-Satanist networks. Networks in which members involve their own children in "initiatory" processes, while also involving "second-class" children, who can serve both as fresh flesh or as future MK slaves for low work. As stated at the beginning of the conclusion: the Child is at the heart of this devastating cyclone...

It is high time to unmask this infernal chain so that the people know what is happening behind the scenes of this world. These issues are systematically stifled so as not to open up the slightest breach in the greatest secrecy of domination. Potentially everything can stop, for this it goes without saying that in this great theater, everyone must do their part, Providence perhaps only waiting for the right time to intervene.

Despite the chaos and the constant smokescreens that try by all means to hide our eyes, it is now much easier to obtain a global vision of the world in which we live than it was 50 years ago or even 20 years ago. Globalism, for all its negative consequences, has the merit of giving us the opportunity to fully understand the world in which we live.

As the Lutheran agenda of the New World Order progresses, it is necessarily revealed and inevitably, everything is brought to light in an exponential way. The misappropriation, corruption and indoctrination of consciences are therefore reinforced in proportion to the ever more flagrant disclosure. It is a snowball effect that paradoxically mixes both a total revelation and an increasingly strong obscurantism, all forming a kind of chaos of which the human mind is fortunately still able to discern the ins and outs... if he makes the effort.

The light of this "nameless religion" is today so radiant in our world that it ends up being totally exposed for what it really is. The word Revelation, qualifying the times we are currently living in, comes from the Greek word Apokalupsis meaning revelation and instruction. Indeed, today "everything is clear" for those who no longer hide their face by remaining in denial because they detach themselves from the virulent media propaganda to begin to re-inform themselves. This notion of unveiling, of revelation, as the progress of the Lutheran agenda, is a law from which they cannot escape: it is the great "laying bare" specific to the Apocalypse. This inevitable exhibition/revelation is therefore at their peril, but they have no choice to carry out the establishment of this New Luciférien Order. They are therefore currently betting as much as possible on social engineering (the mental control of the masses) to corrupt and divert by all means consciences (and the subconscious) in order to try to keep society in a certain matrix, a "comfortable cocoon" (although obviously increasingly unstable) that allows to infuse everything and anything smoothly, without people reacting. But we are also seeing a tightening of rights and freedoms under the guise of a fight against terrorism; an ideal way to repress all opinions going against the ambient doxa maintained all the time by the mainstream media under control. The media that seed this "public opinion" admitted automatically and thus create the phenomenon of peer pressure, a phenomenon described in the first chapter that can be summarized as follows: "Sheep keep sheep, the one who strays from the herd by a mind too critical of what is called the single thought, becomes a black sheep in the eyes of other sheep." Thus, this constant social pressure raises fears of the group's exclusion.

The observation is that the mass is burdened by work, debt and the daily routine to which it is assigned, letting itself go in the evening in front of a television, using it mainly - and unconsciously - as a tool of relaxation. Panem et circenses (bread and circus/games), this expression of ancient Rome is more than ever applicable to our consumer society. A situation in which it is difficult to make things happen as people are enslaved and obviously lack the will to emancipate themselves from the "journalistic" soup and the infantilizing and debilitating entertainment that is served to them all the time at prime time. Young people are obviously targeted above all.

The subject of this book is particularly difficult to integrate and accept as it can upset an entire paradigm.

The question of a global paedo-Satanist network that dranks the innocence of the child is beginning to be known, people today can understand this harsh reality more easily than even 10 years ago, because the unveiling is exponential. Thank you to all the relentless independent researchers and investigators who have participated or are still participating in clearing brush and exposing this difficult subject in order to disseminate information at all costs, many of them have left feathers and even their lives...

The statement of the former deputy prosecutor of Bobigny, Martine Bouillon, before the journalist Élise Lucet during a televised debate illustrates this very well: *"We have just understood that paedophilia existed, we cannot yet understand that there is even worse than paedophilia I would say "simple", and people resist with all their strength, from all their interior. "*

It is quite natural that people show a strong resistance, or even a total denial, in the face of the absolute horror that are paedocriminality, Satanism and the massive corruption of their governments... But it is time to see clearly and if we do not accept everything en bloc, we must at least do our own research to validate or not these horrors. All the more so since everything is now being revealed, it is only thanks to the widespread corruption of institutions and the media and the wilful or unintentional blindness of the people subjected to social engineering that this infamous system remains in place.

and the media and the wilful or unintentional blindness of the people subjected to social engineering that this infamous system remains in place.

The more a subject is studied and understood by an increasing number of people, the more accessible and understandable it will become for the mass because it will find itself in a way "brushed". Indeed, the more a path of understanding is cleared and deepened, the more it expands to allow access to this knowledge to an increasing number of people who will thus be able to understand it much more easily than the initial researchers.

The more information circulates, the more people it reaches, and the more it becomes mentally accessible to the majority who can then integrate it more easily into their paradigm. This information is obviously not admissible for everyone from start to bottom, but subjects such as paedocriminality, Satanism, MK programming, etc., will become more and more accessible to human minds due to the fact that some will have already done a job to clear the way, that is to say a work of understanding and integration.

Perhaps we can compare this process to the 100th monkey theory: when enough individuals have discovered something and fully integrated it, that thing automatically becomes more accessible and understandable to other individuals of the same species. However, this requires a minimum of work of openness and research, free will always being there to leave us the choice to open or close a door, but the path of understanding will already be cleared and more navigable than it was before... Hence the determination of our sorcerers-controllers to compartmentalize the human consciousness in deep ruts so that it does not direct its attention to the subjects revealing their true tools of control, which in spite of themselves inevitably become more obvious from day to day.

At the same time, we need providential help from God to be able to move forward in this struggle as the opposing party is itself supported by powerful supernatural forces of order. The Network is organized both militarily (a strict hierarchical organization) and spiritually (a cult rendered to the Prince of this world), unlike the profane peoples whose everything has been done precisely to distract them and especially cut them off from their relationship with God. Alone, without God's help, we do not stand up to this dominant Lutheran Network, which works with fallen spiritual entities from which it receives direction and power, hence the fact of its current domination.

This divine help, this providence, perhaps depends on the number of humans who have become or who will become aware of these things and who act at their level to ensure that they reverse the tide and put an end to the sabotage and corruption of the human being who is in court.

The theory of a conscious critical mass that can tip and unblock a situation that was previously totally cemented and inextricable applies to very heavy subjects, things so shocking that they are generally unthinkable and unimaginable for most people... But the more these subjects are understood and accepted by a growing number of people, the more there will be a chance of moving the pieces on the Exchequer; the True Chessboard, not that of the justice of men, freemasons and institutions, this one is today totally rigged.

If an entire people is not ready to accept a harsh reality, that is to say to face a heavy truth that risks harming it by a shock or even worse to make it fall into chaotic madness, it is logical, from the point of view of divine law supposed to preserve individuals, that it has very difficulty in accessing this information. , if at all. When consciousnesses begin to awaken and emancipate themselves from the matrix (the mental control of the masses), then they can begin to access more or less upsetting information... but ultimately saving.

In other words, Heaven waits until the fruits are ripe to reveal certain things, while respecting the evolution of consciousnesses; despite the reverse forces that try precisely to ensure that the masses do not access information that can lead them to another level of understanding of the matrix in which they have been immersed since birth. So the more consciences emancipate themselves from what waters them daily in terms of information and that they turn to other sources to inform themselves, the more willing they will be to receive these heavy truths that can indeed be very shocking. Despite the horror, these are things that must be revealed so that as many people as possible can look into these issues. Especially when it comes to children...

At the moment, in terms of information, everything is available for those who still find the time and courage to undertake a process of emancipation in the face of this system based on global mind control: God does not allow us to leave us without resources to understand the world in which we live: it is an essential Law.

Elitist Satanism/Luciferism scrupulously respects this Law (they have no choice) which eternally gives the opportunity to human souls to access the Truth. They have power only that which God has authorized them for a limited period of time, and the war they are waging in this great theatre that is our world is mainly directed against the conscience/subconscious. They cannot censor everything, so the aim is to channel consciences through systematic media propaganda: the control of information and social engineering being the main tools to condition people. The question of psychotronic technology also arises as to its ability to control our brains via scalar waves or pulsed microwaves, this applied in a massive way by literally watering populations with electromagnetic waves that can potentially influence brains according to the type of frequencies broadcast. As for the strong addiction of populations to the GSM network (Global System for Mobile communications), this is no longer to be demonstrated, it is enough to circulate in the street and on public transport to realize it...

The Truth is there for those who seek a minimum and especially who *ask heaven for help. It is a real spiritual war and we have, despite appearances, enough resources to learn and to be able to get out of the muddy ruts set up by the Great Babylon with its main tool: Mental Control. But God cannot leave us without the necessary resources to guide us to the Truth and to our salvation. The New World Order* is in spite of itself subject to this *Law, so it cannot censor all the things that allow human souls to access the Truth. In this great earthly theatre, both good and evil play a role in the evolution of human souls, Bishop Delassus describes* it very well with these words: *"They do not know, or they want to ignore, that above their master Satan, infinitely above, there is God, Almighty God. He created the world for His glory, the inexpressible glory that will be eternally returned to Him by all His creatures, without exception, albeit variously, some by manifesting His goodness, others by manifesting His righteousness. Until the day of the supreme retributations, He leaves them to their free will, so that the wicked as the good, the evil as the good, serve for the fulfillment of the purposes of His infinite wisdom (...) God allows, we are, alas, witnesses, the misguidedness of man and even the revolt against Him, but to an extent that will not be exceeded; He waits. Everything will serve his purposes, and when the trial has ceased, everything will be in his place; then there will be no harm but for the stubborn*culprits! *635! . "*

The primary aim of this book is to free children from the cellars, i.e. to fight at its level against paedo-Satanism by informing citizens about this reality. It is then intended particularly for therapists, psychiatrists, lawyers, magistrates, police officers, gendarmes, journalists, politicians and members of children's aid associations...

In short, to all the people who are still honest and honest and who can possibly make things happen at their level.

At the same time, essentially, this book aims to make the reader aware, who has not yet done so, that there really is a spiritual war here on earth. If there is a spiritual war, your soul needs to find the right way, that of the Lord Jesus Christ, who has made himself flesh and blood for our salvation and to reform precisely all the atrocities partially described in this book. His sacrifice of blood on the cross was to be the last, the ultimate sacrifice... The great definitive reform of the Son of God in the face of all these abominations.

To face these generations who perpetuate at all costs the worship of the fallen angel, representing the infra-human sanctified by Lucifer, and therefore possessing a supernatural force of order; let us sanctify ourselves in Jesus Christ to also give our lives to a supernatural force of opposition indispensable in such a struggle.

Even in this seemingly dark time, God constantly gives us the knowledge and wisdom to be able to oppose and counterbalance the Babylonian abomination.

> Ask, and you will be given; seek, and you will find; knock, and they will open you.
>
> Matthew 7:7
>
> Everything that is hidden must be brought to light, everything that is secret must appear in the open.
>
> Marc 4 :22

Annexes

Annex N°1

"Trauma and dissociation in Masonic mythology."

Extracts

du livre "Terror, Trauma and

The Eye In The Triangle",

Lynn Brunet - 2007, pp. 64-83

The Temple of Solomon has often been interpreted as a metaphor for the human body. Freemason author Albert Ma,ckey confirms this

when he writes: "The ceremonies of the third degree in which a

Dilapidated construction metaphorically represents deterioration and

infirmities linked to the old age of the human body.' The two columns, Jakin and

Boaz represent the entrance to the Temple. In Kabbalistic literature, these

two pillars correspond to the right side and the left side of the body with their

mirror effect (...) This is where the link with the left and right functions of the human brain is found, each of which controls the opposite side of the body, it is the contralaterality.

These two pillars can also represent qualities such as severity and clemency, the concept of white and black (editor's note: some altars of the O.T.O. are surrounded by a black column and a white column), Adam and Eve, male and female, etc... (Editor's note: as we saw in Chapter 7, these notions of contralaterality and division of the two hemispheres

brains seem to be an important point in the MK)

The Temple of Solomon was intended to provide permanent shelter for the Ark of the Covenant, which since the time of Moses was sheltered under a

tent (...) In a plan of the Temple of Solomon, depicted in a Masonic document entitled "The Two Pillars", the Ark

of Alliance is found in the Holy of Holies with the altar of incense just at

side. (Editor's note: Lynn Brunet makes the parallel between the Ark of the Covenant and the thalamus, a structure present at the heart of the brain)

The *word thalamus is a derivative of the Greek word meaning an "inner chamber",*

commonly used as a bridal chamber. The thalamus is located in the center of the

brain, it is completely covered by the cortical hemisphere and it is the main gateway that relays sensory information to the cerebral cortex, the main input flows to the cortex must pass through the

thalamus. As Francis Cricks notes, "the idea that the thalamus is a key to

reading for consciousness is not new. Its role is to maintain

harmony the somatosensory system, as well as mental activity and emotional of an individual.'' It also notes that a large part of the thalamus is called the "pulvinar", a word that originally means a ''cushion'' or a ''pillow'' (...) another declension means ''sacred sofa'' or ''seat of honor''. Could this choice of terminology refer to the throne of grace of the Ark of the Covenant housed in the Holy of Holies? If yes, the positioning of the incense altar just near the Holy of Holies could be a symbolic reference to the fact that smell is the only sense which does not involve a crossing of the nerve pathways between the brain and the body: the right side of the nose is connected to the right side of the brain.

the close relationship of smell with memory is well known (...) When Solomon recreated a "house" for the Ark, he placed the cherubim in such a way so that their wings touch the side of each wall. In physiological terms, the wings of the cherubim can symbolically represent both sides of the cerebral cortex which touches the inside of the walls of the skull and which is meet face to face in the inner chamber where consciousness resides. Seen from this way, the "Throne of Grace" could then symbolically represent the ability of the brain to organize chaos, i.e. the continuous mass sensory information incoming and processed instantly by the thalamus (...) The Middle Room (which marks the end of the initiation of the first three degrees Masonic: Apprentice, Companion and Master) and its spiral staircase are two important Masonic symbols (...) Mackey writes that the Companions, the temple workers, climb the spiral staircase to access the Middle Room. He interprets this Middle Room as the place where the Truth is received and the spiral staircase as a symbol of spiritual progression.

Research on the thalamus has shown that it contains a number of activity centers, called "nuclei". The main one is called the ''caudal (or posterior)'' ventral nucleus. Neurologist Chihiro Ohye writes that "in the caudal ventral nucleus is an area called the nucleus intermediate ventral that contains clusters of scattered cells. the electrical stimulation of this part of the nucleus induces a sensation of flying or raising, a kind of ascent.'' (...) Psychologist Susan Blackmore says some hallucinogenic experiences can have an impact on brain cells in producing a vision composed of spiral stripes that may appear as a tunnel on the visual cortex. In physiological terms, the symbol of Spiral stairs can therefore be a way to illustrate this feeling physics of tournament and ascent with this hallucinatory vision. As for this place where the "Truth" is received, it is possible that this

Middle Room can be a familiar place for those studying the

meditation, an area of the brain that is neither on the right nor on the left, a state of

totally centered calm where the individual can feel a sense of connection

with the divine (...) Arranged somewhere in the thalamus, the inner room or "bridal room", can be

another way of representing the mystical concept of alchemical marriage (or

lymic wedding), represented as the concept of hermaphrodite, or in terms

Jungiens, a condition according to which the masculine and feminine aspects of the

psyche are in total harmony (...)

In terms of traumatology, the legend of Hiram can be considered a metaphorical text that represents what is happening

physiologically when terror is used to produce the experience of

the "inner light". This 'inner light' is that feeling of cosmic consciousness or immortality that is accessed through the

spring

spiritual ascent represented in the second degree (...) Freemasonry belongs to the Gnostic tradition. The figure of Lucifer, the Bearer of

Light'', the light of the mystical experience, is at the heart of this

tradition. The relationship between Lucifer and the psychology of trauma is put

in light in a play entitled "The Tragedy of Man",

written by The Hungarian Imre Madach and analyzed by the anthropologist Geza Roheim.

Lucifer who is the central character of the play is called "the Spirit of the

Denial''. In this room, Lucifer invites Adam to fly in space (it's at

say to dissociate oneself from reality) to escape the foam of life

Earthly: "The pain will cease when we have yielded and that

disappeared the last link that binds us to our Mother Earth''. This capability

human escape from terror and emotional or physical pain

intense through denial and dissociation may have been exploited by

Freemasonry for the purpose of attaining mystical experiences.

Interfering in the brain process by physical or mental trauma

(shock, terror, hypnosis), the mind can undergo a disruption of the notion of

time and experience a feeling of timelessness (...)

The myth of Isis and Osiris, used in the Scottish Rite, may also be a metaphorical illustration of the traumatic process. Mackey writes that "Osiris was killed by a typhoon and his body was cut in pieces, his mutilated remains were thrown into the Nile and scattered to the four Winds. His wife Isis, mourning the death and mutilation of her husband, searched for parts of the body for several days, and after having them found, she put the pieces together to make him a decent burial. Osiris, thus restored, became one of the main Egyptian deities and his cult united with that of Isis, to form a fertilizing deity for the fertilization of nature'' (...) If we interpret the characters Isis and Osiris in terms of brain structures, Isis represents the right brain, intuitive attributes, and Osiris represents the left brain, logical and linguistic attributes. Damage caused by trauma can lead to problems with the registration of the memory in the left hemisphere and can thus affect the ability of the individual to talk about the events he has undergone as a result of the transfer of information from the right brain is "mutilated" or piecemeal. It is then difficult for the individual to reconstitute the fragments of memory that are like the pieces of a puzzle. These Egyptian gods could be interpreted as embodying this phenomenon of fragmented mind memory disorders following a traumatic experience (...) References to mutilation or self-mutilation in mythological gods are abundant in the magical literature and nun of ancient Egypt. The mutilations inflicted on themselves by the gods on themselves themselves, are usually due to emotional stresses of different types.

Budge notes that there are other scenarios that have been met with death and death. resurrection in the Osirian myth of Horus, son of Isis and Osiris, Horus a for role of restoring life during an embrace, a gesture reminiscent of the Masonic ''Five Points of companionship'. ''Horus came to Osiris, who was in the state of a dead man, and he kissed him. By this embrace he him transferred its own KA (double), or part of the power that lived there. The embrace is in fact an act by which vital energy is transferred from the kisser to the kissed." Budge observes that kissing can also be metaphorically seen as a restoration of information in the linguistic center of the left brain for the purpose of psychic healing after a major trauma. Alan Watt, studying the extent of fractionation in the myth of Osiris and other ancient myths, argues that the Sacrificial dismemberment of a divine being is a voluntary process, that of self-sacrifice. He writes: "It follows logically that where there is a dismemberment (deconstruction) at the beginning, there is a reconstruction at the end (editor's note: Ordo ab Chao or Dissolve then Coagulate) It is the cosmic game that consists in the discovery of what is hidden and the memory of what has been scattered." Watt's conclusion is

to link to a notion about memory in processes

spiritual as well as the role of concentration in reducing thoughts

Scattered. I would say that this myth is even more appropriate when it is

applied to the nature of traumatic memory, its repression and its

recall (...) (editor's note: the Freemason) Leadbeater suggests that initiation in its purest form involves some kind of connection

with the divine and this is what the different Masonic degrees represent.

The "tearing in fragments" suggests that initiation requires a

understanding the use of shocks in order to produce a certain state of

consciousness, which if produced correctly, can create the sensation of not "to make only one with the universe".' Such a state of consciousness is today considered by the medical field as an example of a state of dissociation.

Casavis, in an analysis of the Greek origin of Freemasonry, notes the the role of fragmentation in the Esirian Mysteries. It observes that the Sacred plant of this cult in Mysteries was the Erica, coming from the Greek word "eriko" which means "to break into pieces."

Mackey reports that the most relevant Egyptian symbol for Freemasonry is that of "the eye that sees everythinginterpreted on the plane mystical as the eye of God, but also as "the symbol of vigilance" divine and the care of the universe''. The adoption of the equilateral triangle is the symbol of divinity, which can be found through different cultures.

Mackey writes: "Among the Egyptians, the hare was the hieroglyph of the open eyes, it is so because this fragile animal is supposed to never close his organs of vision, he is always on the lookout for his enemies. the

[illegible]

lièvi and the

then was adopted by priests as a symbol of mental enlightenment or the mystical light that is revealed to neophytes during the contemplation of divine truth during the course of their initiation. And so, according to Champollian, the hare was also the symbol of Osiris, a god the main one, thus showing the close link between the process of initiation in their sacred rites and the contemplation of the divine nature.''

One of the consequences of heavy trauma is a condition known as "hypervigilance". This is a permanent attention and a exhausting fear, where the victim, like the rabbit or hare, is constantly at the lookout for danger. When Osiris was resurrected, he possessed "the eye that sees everything." If the reconstruction of Osiris represents the recovery of traumatic memories, then this ability to "see everything" can be translated as the ability to face death or evil. These notions of doing in the face of death, the idea of travel and rebirth in the

Masonic texts therefore take on some significance with theories contemporary on memory and trauma.

From a physiological point of view, it is interesting to note that the neurons that seem to be most associated with consciousness, are described

like pyramidal cells. We can draw a parallel with the

symbolism of Isaac Newton's discovery of the decomposition of light

white in the different colors of the rainbow through a prism of

triangular glass. The eye in the Masonic triangle embodies the physics of

Newton in the sense that it can be a visual representation of the

fractionation referring to the dissociation, illumination of the

consciousness (...)

Here, the Enlightenment philosophy on the link between Terror and Sublime described by Edmund Burke becomes relevant. All things that

convey terror, he says, "are a source of the Sublime, they produce the strongest emotion that the mind is capable of feeling." Maybe it does echo to neurological research. The place where all these functions seem to be

coordinating is called the limbic system, including the thalamus, the tonsil,

the hippocampus and other structures. As Pierre-Marie Lledo says:

"Just like the limbo of Christian mythology, the limbic system is

the intermediary between the neo-mammalian brain of paradise and the brain

reptilian of hell.'' (...)

On the Masonic apron of the 21st degree, the Noachite or Prussian Grade, is a winged human who holds the index finger of his right hand on his lips

and a key in his left hand. This representation is known as the figure

Egyptian Silence (...) In the Masonic system, the Tower of Babel is an image related to memories and

forgetfulness, related to confusion and loss of language. According to the

Freemasons: ''Passing in front of the Tower makes you forget everything you forget all that you

know'' (...) The winged character of Silence on the Masonic apron of the 21st degree can also represent this

unbundling process. The inability to talk about the traumatic experience is represented by the straight index finger held in front of the mouth, the right hand being

controlled by the left brain, the side of the brain that affects language. the

left hand (symbolizing access to the right side of the brain where memories

dissociated traumatics are stored) holds the "key" of access to these

memoirs (...)

The stories of the Flood and the Tower of Babel can be interpreted as another metaphor representing the functioning of the brain during trauma. In many writings on trauma, the experience is described as "an exit from the body", a phenomenon related to the process of dissociation. A sense of peace is then felt when the person is psychically disconnects from terror, thus finding a natural way to To get away. The flight of the "soul" out of the body in situations traumatic is represented by the release of the dove out of the Ark of Noah and symbolizes, in physiological terms, the opioid effect released in the brain when terror "floodes" the physical body (...) After the Flood (of terror), the rainbow (the dissociated identity) then becomes a symbol of hope because that the flow of terror is forgotten and that the individual can survive (...) The lives of individuals become psychologically "divided" after experiencing something that could have been kill. In cabalistic texts, the rainbow is also linked with the Way of the Chameleon, this animal that changes color according to its environment. This is to be put in connection with the phenomenon of the personality multiple where the individual is able to adapt to different situations with distinct personalities (alter or fragments of personality). All this symbolic gives rise to the possibility that the story of Noah's Ark and The Ark of the Covenant can also correspond to metaphors for processes related to the human brain (...)

Annex N°2

Transcript of a lecture by Cathy O'Brien and Mark Phillips: ''Mind-control out of control''

31 October 1996

Part 1: Mark Phillips

Thanks to John and thanks to the whole Granada forum.

All of you represent what I hope will one day happen in this country, but also throughout the world. You have heard many people in the past who have enlightened you on many topics. Tonight's one - which is very suitable for Halloween - is probably the worst story you'll ever hear. I spent a lot of time trying to convince myself that all this could not be true. But unfortunately, the obvious is that this is not just about cathy O'Brien's story.

It should be noted that Senator John DeCamp of the "Franklin" case in Nebraska, has validated and supports everything you will hear tonight... On top of that, there is a large amount of information that has emerged over the past three years. Information that comes from people who have been directly confronted with the subject. Not only therapists, but also generals, colonels from different branches of the army, as well as members of the intelligence who provided us with tons of documentation. This is not only to support Cathy, but also for the hundreds of others in the same case. Cathy O'Brien's case is not unique, I wish it had been, because if it were, I would not be in front of you tonight. Indeed, this would mean then that this problem is not widespread, unfortunately, it is not the case. What happened to Cathy O'Brien is something that's happening all over the world. It happens in daycares, in families... and not especially among "savages" of the Appalachians totally uneducated and without education who would practice incest for ages (laughs)... This is being done in a coordinated effort by the intelligence community, again at a global level.

My role in all of this is relatively simple, but nevertheless complex. I will give you a brief presentation this evening. I will also take a few minutes to give you information about the MK-Ultra (...) Like Cathy, I cannot address other cases of victims, other than the most obvious ones such as Timothy Mc Veight' s. But we have not studied this testimony, we have no evidence, we only have the confessions of Mr Mc Veight as well as some other information supporting this case.

We spent 5 1/2 years giving lectures in front of police authorities and therapists. That is what protects us today. We also found as much information as we could about other survivors, but also information from the law enforcement system, or should I say from cooperative people: free thinkers, just like you. They knew something was wrong with the system, but they did not understand what exactly it was.

I will give you some information about myself so that you understand my background with Cathy. But our main concern, the thing we are focusing on, is of course to disseminate this information to the people of that country and of all the other countries that are affected, the question remaining as to which ones are not affected ?... It also applies to Cathy O'Brien's daughter: Kelly, who has been in various psychiatric institutions since the age of 8, just after I rescued them. She is still "interned" at the present time. I don't know how many of you can imagine what it's like to be a child who has been raised in psychiatric institutes... But I can assure you that it is not beautiful to see, even if Kelly is not mistreated as she may have been before entering it.

Mind control is not something new, it's been thousands of years. It is inscribed in the "Egyptian Book of the Dead" under these terms: "The exact formula for mind control based on trauma". Adolf Hitler was particularly interested in mind control, he had entrusted this to his right-hand man: Henrich Himmler. Research has focused in particular on families in northern Europe who systematically sexually, physically and psychologically abuse their children from generation to generation. Those of us who read the Bible and understand its interpretation of the "sins of the father", will understand what transgenerationals mean (editor's note: families Luciferian/Satanic). In the case of these families, transgenerational abuse, which begins at birth, involves terrible sexual, physical and psychological abuse by parents of their children, or by other caregivers. Adolf Hitler knew that people who are victims of such violence become very "receptive" to mind control. They also develop incredible skills, such as over-developed visual acuity. Now I know that you don't have to be a genius - pardon the pun - to understand how we can use a person with such faculties. This is called special forces. The individuals forming these "Special Forces" (editor's note: military field) are followed very carefully.

Now let's go back to when I was working for the Ministry of Defense in a project known as MK-Ultra. This was exactly the project that Hitler and Himmler had begun with these abused children in transgenerational families. At that time, I did not see anything that Cathy O'Brien reported to me afterwards, I did not see any abuse. What I saw in the prison system and in psychiatric hospitals were people who had a chance to be able to recover their lives and minds afterwards. For me, these were positive and caring things and I sincerely believed that this MK-Ultra program could eventually reduce our prison and psychiatric populations. This is because I was witnessing real rehabilitations without any use of trauma. I took an oath to keep the things that I witnessed secret, the equipment that was developed, and I can assure you that from 1967 to 1973, when I was involved in this research as a subcontractor for the Department of Defense, I saw that there was a technological advance of 25 or 30 years. , things still totally unknown on this planet (...) I was hired for this work after months and months of psychological examinations to verify my ability to keep the secret; then I was given a past from the Ministry of Defence. I knew Himmler's studies under The Direction of Adolf Hitler, I knew that he had wanted to train "very serious" people to strategically place them in order to control different regions in what he called, and George Bush also calls: the New World Order. You see, Bush wasn't the first to fantasize about this terrifying idea of totalitarian government, enslaving the whole world through mind control.

Mind manipulation takes many forms. All of you here in this Chamber do not fall into this huge trap of controlling and manipulating information, and I would like to thank the Granada Forum once again for allowing us to express ourselves here, because we need your support. This book (Trance-Formation of America) is almost not distributed in bookstores and the few booksellers who distribute it deal directly with us, in order to preserve all the content and avoid any censorship. Initially, this book was published on our own.

Today we have an opportunity ahead of us due to the fact that many of the people Cathy mentioned in the book have been indicted for various reasons; faced with accusations, some have even fled their countries or resigned from their positions of high responsibility. This is for the simple reason that they could no longer cover up corruption... The corruption we are going to talk about here goes far beyond what you know (...)

Cathy O'Brien is certainly a remarkable person, but I can assure you that the prognosis of recovery of someone who was extremely abused before the age of 5, before the brain was fully formed, his level of recovery / healing is very good. These people can lead a normal and balanced life, even if they have lived a period of life with horrible abuse. That is the thing that surprised me the most. Today there are many survivors at different stages of healing and Cathy is the only one to have testified while writing a book. All this has been validated and we have not been locked up. I would like everyone in this room to understand that neither Cathy nor I are suicidal. We're just back from Arkansas, Cathy and I were invited to spend four days with investigators because they had identified a chapter of the book that they were able to validate. I then said to them: 'Pass this on to the press!'', they told me that they could not do that. But these are people that I consider friends, of you and of me. Now, if there are CIA agents in this conference room, you don't have to raise your hand (laughs) but I would like you to come and see me directly one-on-one. Especially if you are trying to harm what we do. Because this project that Adolf Hitler had developed, we in turn developed it thanks to Operation Paperclip which consisted of exfiltrating Nazi and fascist scientists from Europe to America after the Second World War. They have thus infiltrated our universities, our largest companies, NASA, I would even say that they are the ones who developed NASA... This infiltration has taken place at all levels of our society with all this m****: childpornography, blood rituals as well as despicable beliefs involving human sacrifices. all that can traumatize the human mind.

I have approached some researchers who say that it is Satan who is behind this. I would like to tell you that there are also people in the flesh behind all this! I worked for an airline that was involved in that. I had no idea why I had been recruited by Capital International Airways.

It was because I was able to keep quiet. Most officers do not know who they are actually working for. There are more than 86

000 in this country, now divide this number by 50 (editor's note: the number of states in the USA) and you will see what we are dealing with (editor's note: on average 1720 agents per state). This country is teeming with "Big Brother".

The KGB (Russia) has never had as many high-level operatives as we currently have in our country. George Orwell's book ''1984'' was indeed a dark prophecy that became reality.

Many people say, "We have to stop this New World Order by taking charge of ourselves," but it's already there, we're right in it. Now let's try to
understand who the actors are and what their tools are!

Mind control based on repetitive trauma to truly create a fully robotic human being, is one such tool.

''Fortunately,'' it takes a lot of horrible trauma to get to such a level of slavery. This requires other means than simply pressing a button or a console (editor's note: nothing is less secure at the moment).

Today, there is material available that we cannot protect ourselves from. The most amazing thing is that these devices are accessible to everyone. I do not quite understand the philosophy behind the construction of such generators. There is a device called MDD1 that uses a double coil system pulsating electro-magnetic waves that act on our cerebral cortex by stopping logical thinking. You couldn't even control your checkbooks if these things were turned on, or even think about turning them off... nor would Cathy O'Brien have thought of running away from her ordeal. This is not battered woman syndrome, it has nothing to do with economic dependence, it is robotic mind control and there are tons of documents on that. ''America in the Middle of Trance-Formation'' is Cathy's autobiography, I wrote the first part to introduce the subject. What is in this book is what she went through and we can prove it. When it was printed, we had over 27,000 documents in 5 filing cabinets. We now have three tons of paperwork on the subject! (...)

I now know why the intelligence services did not want me as an officer. I now know why I was not aware of certain things. of which I am unfortunately now aware. Because I think I have denounced certain things. There are many whistleblowers nowadays (...) I can assure you that it would be against God and who I am if I did not stand up here to speak and introduce Cathy O'Brien so that she could bear witness to her story.

(Applause)

Cathy and I are very moved to see the number of people who would have done the same thing as us. People spontaneously say to us, "We really appreciate what you do," or, "It's hard to believe, but I'll read that and all the supporting documents." Please do it! Read the references at the end of the book, you'll have some books written by doctors, intelligence officers, and many other professionals who present things related to what Cathy has experienced.

In 1977, the US Congress officially admitted the existence of the

MK-Ultra programme, and that is a good thing because I would not have an ounce of credibility if this project had not been publicly revealed. If he hadn't been declassified, I wouldn't even be able to pronounce his code name here in front of you.

In 1977, Congress also considered the case of Dr. Ewen Cameron, the founder of the American Psychiatric Association, a Washington lobby, controlling what psychiatrists do for our heads when we have disorders. Psychiatry is the youngest of the sciences of medicine and it is the most primitive of all (applause). There may be psychiatrists in this room, these therapists will know exactly what I'm talking about because the information they receive from their lobby is carefully examined/filtered. Information on the rehabilitation of mental control victims is scarce. It took incredible efforts by a few therapists of integrity who were being prosecuted for not want to violate the civil rights of their patients (medical secrecy).

Cathy and I's situation was very different because I'm neither a doctor nor a psychiatrist, so I had no license to practice or any license for my protection. When I rescued her on February eight, 1988, she didn't know her name, her age, or even where she was... I had already seen this stuff with individuals involved in espionage, and so I immediately thought Cathy was a mole. She was dressed as a prostitute, she walked like a prostitute, but she spoke like a person who would lead a Christian choir. An extreme contrast that I could not understand. This until I receive enough information from some people related to intelligence from this country, but also from abroad.

I was desperate to finally find a proper treatment that could result in releasing Cathy O'Brien for the second time in her life. the first time was at the time of his birth and it stopped there. Cathy O'Brien was the victim of the most awful system of violence known to man.

This is the type of mind control that Adolf Hitler thought he could use on certain people in order to place them in great positions of power, having invisible threads to make the puppeteer on their minds, their deeds and their words. I do not know if we currently have politicians of that kind, because it seems that you do not have to put them under mental control.

Indeed, they do everything that corrupt members of Congress tell them to do. I have known several members of Congress, they do not have to be subjected to sexual blackmail, they do not have to be seduced by money or drugs.

They are simply corrupt. You see, a psychopath is a very sociable person, they are leaders, leaders. Unfortunately these psychopaths have no consciousness, i.e. no expression of the soul. They do not consider the pain of others, except when it gives them pleasure.

MK-Ultra was built with many subprojects, especially to develop the perfect soldier, or the perfect spy. What I was told was that it covered our national security more than any soldier or diplomat could ever do. No one told me that they were used (editor's note: MK slaves) for drug trafficking and prostitution.

No one told me that we used them to do animal husbandry, that is to say to provide children to sheikhs, to leaders of this world... No one has told me that we are using them for money laundering.

When I rescued Cathy and her daughter, it took me a year to mentally recover Cathy, thanks to a lot of help and a lot of love. Therapists don't bring all this, they can't love their patients, they can't keep them away from the phone, newspapers, TV, *etc.* Patients often end up relapsing because they are very impressionable. They see an advertisement for fried chicken and they can even smell it. As a former advertiser, I dreamed of being able to produce such ads. I worked very hard to get someone to say to me, "This is a good ad," but no one has ever drooled while watching my productions. However, I used subliminal, I used a form of neurolinguistics. Those who are not familiar with this subject should take an interest in it. Tony Robbins is an advocate of neurolinguistics, he taught it to George Bush and Bill Clinton. He's not a bad guy this Tony Robbins, he's an intelligent businessman and every intelligent businessman knows the value of neurolinguistics. It is the language of the unconscious, well for me it is more about the subconscious.

The language of the subconscious contains codes, keys, and triggers. Keys that were used to unlock all the doors of Cathy's mind, which were specifically related to the abuse she had suffered. I then accessed information such as bank account numbers. The people who work on the MK-Ultra know very well that a deprogramming is nothing but a hack... Just as I can hack a computer, I can hack the hard drive of a human brain. It was this hacker job that provided me with incredible information like bank account numbers. Rather than go and loot these bank accounts and then have to go hide in luxury for the rest of my life, I passed them on to the FBI. Not because I knew it was dirty money or not, but because I didn't want to leave my skin there. I have provided the authorities with everything in this book over a period of three or four years: to all the federal states and to the law enforcement agencies, which are directly involved in this matter. I also provided the names of more than a thousand organizations and individuals. I wanted all this to be presented to Congress as it was done in 1977 when the wife of a member of the Canadian cabinet found herself committed to a psychiatric hospital in Montreal where Dr. Ewen Cameron was practicing (editor's note: Velma Orlikow, wife of Canadian politician David Orlikow)... She came out of it reduced to the state of a vegetable. This member of the cabinet whose name I can't remember then did everything to try to understand what had happened to his wife. They had subjected him to electroshocks and other horrible tortures in parallel with drugs and hypnosis. Unfortunately, many other people have gone through the experiences of Dr. Ewen Cameron. Some have recovered well and I am in contact with two of them. These people are very functional and one of them is going to do the same thing as us in the very near future.

I don't know how many have been able to fully recover as well as Cathy in this country, because no therapist can devote sixteen or eighteen hours a day, seven days a week to a patient, while violating the civil rights he has to get him out legally... Can they legally get their patient out of the clutches of their master(s), legally get them out of this slavery and access the directories (editor's note: information contained in the programming)? In one of these (Cathy's) directories, there was Bill Clinton's personal phone number. It was a $20,000 cocaine deal with Dick Thornburgh... and the long list!

This is a small group, a gang. If you take the entire population of the United States, it is a very small fraction, it is these bandits who control us all. They are so much in the minority that one wonders how they can do all this (editor's note: in direct connection with a supernatural force of order). One also wonders how Clinton is surviving all the attacks on him. How did George Bush survive the attacks on him? Well, he didn't survive, he left the Office, but that didn't change anything. Whoever replaced him did exactly what Bush wanted, such as enforcing NAFTA (North American Free Trade Agreement) and the General Agreement on Tariffs and Trade (AGETAC).

We are part of this system and there are several ways to change it, a number of people are making very positive efforts in this direction. But it's their job, my job and Cathy is to stand in front of citizens' assemblies like here in front of you. We want to be sure that the information you are going to receive will appeal to you enough that you will then disseminate it around you, but also that you will study the subject to talk about it again and again: that is all we want. I am absolutely convinced that the information contained in this book will be able to reach the eyes of those who can see. Just as this video filmed here at this conference will reach those who can still hear and see the truth. This is so that people get up and start asking why Shiran-Shiran had the same psychiatrist as Lee Harvey Oswald or Timothy Mc Veight. This psychiatrist (editor's note: Louis Jolyon West, who died in 1999) is very popular, he practiced at UCLA (University of California, Los Angeles). He was also the first person to call me on my personal phone number, a number on the red list and under a false name! Even in the bush, over there in Alaska after I rescued Cathy and her daughter.

I didn't have enough connections for people to tell me what I shouldn't do on my own; and at that time it was out of the question for me to hear this kind of thing...

I suffered from post-traumatic stress because I was totally upset to hear what Cathy and her daughter Kelly were telling me. Then I showed this information to members of the intelligence and other federal agents who validated all this, thanks to them.

Now I would like to introduce Cathy O'Brien, the person who restored my spirituality. I wasn't a bad guy, but I needed a boost. I am proud to have been with him for more than eight years now.

Part 2: Cathy O'Brien

I would like to thank each and every one of you for your welcome this evening, who have come to discover a tool used in secret to announce what Adolf Hitler and George Bush call it: the New Order worldwide. I'm talking about mind control...

I appreciated being able to speak at the beginning of the evening with some of you, people who say that they have personally undergone mental control or that some of their loved ones have undergone. Mind control is widespread in this country and around the world.

These criminals who are in charge of our country operate with this philosophy: "Secret knowledge =

Power''. Many of the government secrets and personal reputations were based on the belief that I could not be deprogrammed to remember things I was supposed to forget. They were wrong. For as intelligent as these leaders are, their reasoning is hampered by their own immorality. They possess no wisdom, they do not think in depth and they never take into account the strength of the human mind. They never considered what would happen if a benevolent man like Mark Phillips became aware of their secrets and used them to restore the mind rather than control it.

I know I was extremely lucky to have survived after being a victim of the MK-Ultra mind control used by the CIA, the White House and the Pentagon: trauma-based programming.

Now that I have regained possession of my means and finally of my agency: I testify. I am talking about everything I have witnessed, everything I have seen and heard. Everything I recorded photographically behind the scenes of this attempt at a New World Order.

By denouncing their secrets, their power is eroding (applause).

I also speak on behalf of the many victims of mind control and survivors who cannot think for themselves to say what they know and what they have endured.

I am speaking on behalf of my daughter Kelly, who is now sixteen years old, and she is a real political prisoner. She is currently in the state of Tennessee where she was denied a pardon because of the political influence of her executioners. She relies on Mark and I to get the message across for her. In the interest of Kelly and yours, Mark and I have spared no effort regarding the facts and truths recorded in our self-published, and therefore uncensored, book. You will therefore find facts that have the right and the need to know.

These realities have long been hidden from us under the guise of the so-called "National Security". It is the same pretext of national security that has prevented us from doing justice despite all the evidence and documents in our possession. We have more than 27,000 documents and evidence: testimony from members of the government, medical records, much more than necessary for any legal process in this country including Congress. But this pretext of national security has blocked our access to justice. It is time for the truth to triumph. It is time for these truths to be brought to light in the name of humanity.

I would like to start by defining mind control through my experience. I realize that what I've experienced has been extreme, but also that this absolute robotic control that I've endured is more limited than the kind of global mind control that proliferates in society.

Mind control has several levels, like on a scale... There is total robotic control at one level and at another level of mind control such as the occultism that also proliferates in this country, or the "Global Education 2000" program through which children lose their freedom of thought and their ability to critically analyze. There are so many different levels of society that are affected by mind control that it becomes imperative that all this information be disseminated.

My experience as a victim can certainly be applied to all facets of mind control and mental manipulation (...) This is a subject that concerns us all, and suddenly the New World Order, in its entirety, takes on its full meaning. The erosion of constitutional values, the erosion of the morality of this country, suddenly becomes clearer when we become aware of this issue of global mind control.

I was born in 1957 in Muskegon, Michigan, into a family that has been practicing incest for generations. This means that my father himself was sexually abused as a child, that my mother also suffered these things, and that they in turn subjected me to it. My father sexually abused me for as long as I can remember. I often heard him say that he started replacing my mother's nipple with his penis when I was just an infant.

I tell you this so that you can understand that my sexuality has been deglinguished since very early childhood. It was stored in an area of my brain that looks a lot like survival, like eating and drinking. I am telling you this so that you are better equipped to understand what is happening in society and to call things by their name.

Mark and I mention names in our book, not to be able to say that

I was in the White House with such and such, I do not mention the whole glamorous part. But that's so you know who the problem is and where it is.

The sexual abuse I endured was so horrible that I developed a dissociative identity disorder, it was usually called multiple personality disorder. I'm glad they changed the term to dissociative identity disorder because it describes much better the silos that happen when a person experiences a trauma that's too horrible to be able to apprehend.

Even though I couldn't understand that what my father was doing to me was something wrong, the pain and suffocation during his abuse was so unbearable that I developed a dissociative identity disorder. It was impossible to understand, there was no place in my mind to be able to handle such horror. I automatically compartmentalized my brain, small areas separated by amnesic barriers used to compartmentalize memories of abuse so that the rest of my mind could continue to function normally, as if nothing had happened... When I saw my father at the table at dinner, I didn't remember the sexual abuse. But as soon as he unbuttoned his pants, a part of me, the part of my brain that knew how to deal with these horrible abuses woke up, it was as if a neural junction opened up so that this part of my mind could undergo my father again and again as necessary.

I certainly had a lot of experience in this "brain compartment"

who managed my father's abuse, but I didn't have the full extent of the perceptions, I had a very limited perception, a very limited view of things. That is why I am glad that we are no longer talking in terms of personalities about this disorder.

I built another compartment in my head in order to endure my mother's abuse. His abuse was primarily psychological. She herself suffered from a dissociative identity disorder and I do not hold her responsible for her actions as I do for my father, who was fully aware of what he was doing. My mother, despite her inability to control herself, destroyed all vestiges of self-esteem that I might still have had. Her abuse was so horrible that I created another compartment in my mind just to deal with the unhealthy interactions I had with her. I also developed another compartment to manage the child pornography to which my father subjected me. Indeed, he earned his living by digging up earthworms for fishing, because he had attended only primary school, so he increased the family's income by producing child pornography. Productions that he then distributed in the local Mafia network of Michigan.

At the time, there was a criminal faction in our government that targeted children like me for mind control. This is because of this compartmentalization of memory which is something they thought was ideal for keeping government secrets. After all, if I couldn't remember, how could I have talked about it? In addition, people who suffer from a dissociative identity disorder develop a photographic memory behind these amnesic barriers. Indeed, the brain has a defense mechanism that makes it record the events related to trauma in an extremely precise and detailed way. To give you an example, the many of you who are old enough to remember the assassination of John F. Kennedy will remember exactly where they were and what they were doing at that very moment. It was an event that traumatized the entire nation and it illustrates how the mind photographically records the events surrounding the trauma. So behind these amnesic barriers, I had a photographic memory that the government thought was perfect for programming. I would thus be able to deliver and receive messages from leaders, or in my case also from the drug barons involved in the financing of the slush funds of the New World Order. They were interested in programming so that I could transmit messages verbally. When I issued these messages, I conveyed exactly word for word what I had been told, using the inflections of my torturers' voices, without any conscious understanding of what I was telling. I was just a tape recorder, repeating like a parrot what had been recorded in my memory.

Another aspect of interest to the government was that my dissociative disorders took away from me any notion of time. This was due to the fact that I was navigating from compartment to compartment in my brain without remembering what had happened before. I was therefore unable to keep track of time and its notion was absolutely foreign to me. Not knowing what I was doing previously, strangely I did not have the notion of fatigue, I was however doing too much ... A person who suffers from a dissociative identity disorder has great physical endurance, it is like a superhuman force with this ability to continue indefinitely. People with this disorder also develop a much sharper than average visual acuity. That is why they are very often seen with large wide eyes, they incorporate more elements of their environment than a normal person. This necessarily makes them perfect snipers for commando operations or for intelligence services. So the government was very interested in developing mind control.

So I was an elected official, a first-class candidate for mind control because of the repeated sexual abuse. My sexuality had been exalted, so I was serving as a sex slave and I was also receiving messages from government leaders. This criminal faction of our government, so interested in people with a dissociative identity disorder, knew full well that every child subjected to child pornography had toendure traumas so horrible that he necessarily suffered from this disorder. This government criminal group was therefore dedicated to this paedo-pornographic to be able to identify and target children like me who can be used in their projects. at

at that time, the politician linked to this local Michigan mafia, the politician who protected this pornography network, was Gerald Ford. This is the same Gerald Ford who was elected President of the United States... I never saw him as a politician, I saw him as yet another rapist, of the same type as my father. Because Gerald Ford also raped me as a child and throughout the period I was under mental control, until Mark came to the rescue of me and my daughter in 1988.

Gerald Ford is not a pedophile per se, he is what I call a "sexual tester". He will try anything, any age, anytime and anywhere. until he took control. This is because he had a perversion of power in addition to having this interest in mind control.

It was Gerald Ford who came home to explain to my father how to educate myself according to the project that complied with government directives.

Indeed, my father had been caught sending childpornography in the mail, so he was contacted to let him know that if he sold me for this project, he would acquire legal immunity. Since that day, my father has had no trouble with the law, thanks to the famous "National Security".

My father obviously thought this idea was "wonderful"

and he immediately sold me to the project. He thought the government was closing its eyes to child abuse. just like I think so too. My father continued to raise his five

In view of this project, we are doing so. The others are still waiting for their freedom as I speak to you...

Once my father agreed to sell me to the project, I was regularly taken to Mackimac Island, Michigan.

It is a political refuge where the home of the governor of Michigan is located.

It is a kind of Bohemian Grove (occult club) where politicians met and discussed the New World Order and mind control: mental control of the masses, mental control in the school system, how to use occultism as a basic trauma, etc.

One of my sexual abusers at the time was the Prime Minister of Canada: Pierre Trudeau. Pierre Trudeau is a Jesuit, today they are the armed arm of the Vatican. There is a criminal faction within these Jesuits. I am certainly not saying that all Catholics are bad, any more than all CIA agents would be bad or all our politicians. There is good and bad in everything.

But nevertheless, Pierre Trudeau represented this criminal faction of the Catholic Jesuits who wanted the mental control of the masses to become the World Church in this New World Order.

The money that this church brought in financed the controllers of the New World Order.

Another of my sexual abusers was the Michigan senator at the time and later a congressman: Guy Vander Jagt. It was this same Guy Vander Jagt who remained at the head of the Republican National Committee and who installed George Bush in the presidential office.

It was on Mackimac Island, then 13 years old, that I was entrusted to a senator who became my owner in this mind control project. That U.S. Senator was Robert C. Byrd.

Senator Byrd is a Democrat from West Virginia, and again you will notice that I am revealing all the names regardless of the political parties. It is as much Democrats as Republicans who are involved in these things. This does not concern the parties, but rather who is for a New World Order and who is not...

Senator Byrd was in office and still is in office today. He led our Senate Committee on Appropriations. This means that he was the one who held the purse strings of our country and he was the one who decided where the money would be spent. I know from witnesses behind the scenes that Senator Byrd was sending the money where it would benefit the controllers of the New World Order.

My father, who sold me for this project, for example, benefited from a lucrative contract with the army for the manufacture of camshafts for military vehicles. This is how my father became extremely rich... for someone who has never gone beyond primary school.

It was Senator Byrd, who became my owner, who would then decide where I would go and when I would go; operations that I should perform during the Reagan and Bush administration; as well as the places I would be taken for specific MK programming. Senator Byrd led my whole life.

It was at this time that I made my first Communion at St Francis of Assisi Church in Muskegon. After this first Communion, I also endured a ritual called the "rite of maintaining silence". This ritual was led by Deputy Vander Jagt and the rector of our church, Father Don... an occult ritual of blood. It was so horrible, it was this inversion of the Catholic Mass that confused my mind because when a person functions on a subconscious level, he is so traumatized that the conscience finds no place to face what he endures. The subconscious has no way of discerning, questioning and reasoning as the usual conscious mind does. And this inversion of the Catholic Mass by diverting it towards occultism has totally turned my mind upside down. It was absolutely infectious... This blood ritual was so horrible that my mind immediately accepted the mental manipulation they subjected me to: hypnotic language, neurolinguistic programming, mind control. It then changed the way my brain worked until now.

Remember, that part of my brain that I told you about, an area that was triggering to deal with my father's perpetual abuse. During this ritual they modified this, so that they could now decide when, where and how this particular compartment of my brain would be open and accessible. They replaced the triggering mechanism with hypnotic codes: keys and triggers, hand signals. There are also certain tones that can open these neural junctions and allow access to compartmentalized memories. They then reworked it all.

tones that can open these neural junctions and allow access to compartmentalized memories. They then reworked it all.

Following this rite of "maintaining silence", it also became silent in my head... Because until then, I heard my own voice constantly arguing one way or the other, with all these different perceptions coming from the multiple compartments, before I could make a decision on anything. I remember that before this ritual, I still had my own ideas, I had the hope that there was a place in the world where people do not abuse themselves. I had the hope of having ten children who would be at least ten children on this earth not to be mistreated... I had hope in these things, but with this ritual, I lost my ability to think freely. I had even lost my ability to hope. I had completely lost my agency. This ritual silenced this debate that was constantly coming up in my head and all I heard instead, at that time, were the voices of my executioners directing me, telling me exactly what I was supposed to do. I could only robotically follow these instructions to execute them.

When I was ready for high school, Senator Byrd ordered that I be sent to the Central Catholic College in Muskegon. At that time, there was a lot of information that Catholics had long been studying the effects of trauma on the human mind. They had studied them and had been keeping archives on these things for a very long time, especially since the Spanish inquisition. This information is in line with the research on Hitler and Himmler that the CIA had undertaken and on which it was making progress. The cross-checking of the information that emerged was very significant.

Muskegon College was a place where this information was gathered. It was in Muskegon that the basics and structure of Global Education 2000 were implemented. There are many different names for this program, which is implemented in our school system and which the government follows to the letter to children and adolescents. Global Education 2000 was designed to increase the learning capacities of our young people while decreasing their capacity for critical analysis. They thus immediately accept everything they are told without asking questions and simply swallowing all the information they receive.

In college, I immediately had A's, I was very talented because I was recording classes photographically. I also underwent occult rituals in the chapel of this college, like many other students, I was far from the only one. Moreover, at at the time I really thought that everyone was involved in this kind of abuse. My whole environment was saturated with it... This occultism, these traumas, created a photographic recording of everything I was studying in college. Of course, I had no ability to analyze this in a critical way or to use it in a creative way, but all the data remained perfectly stored in my head.

It was while I was in college that Gerald Ford took office as president. I had been conditioned during this period to think that I "had no place to escape, nor any place to hide"." It is a specific phrase that serves to put in the heads of victims of mental control that there is absolutely nowhere to run away and nowhere to hide: "we systematically keep an eye on you". This is of course what I was saying to myself, to whom could I have turned? Neither to my parents, nor to my church, nor to my school or to local politicians. I could not even turn to the President of the United States! I felt really trapped, which is exactly what they want for total control of the mind. Since then, of course, I have discovered something quite different and Mark wisely taught me, during my deprogramming, that I did indeed have a place to flee: right on them !... and that I didn't need to hide. Obviously they are the ones who are hiding, they hide all their abuses by using national security as a cover.

After graduating from college, Senator Byrd ordered that I be sent to Nashville, Tennessee. At the time, Nashville was heavily involved in mind control through the country music industry, but especially through the proliferation of CIA cocaine within the country world. This was already in full swing and political corruption in Tennessee was reaching new heights. The country industry provided blanket for mentally controlled slaves like me to walk across the country to distribute and deliver large quantities of cocaine from the CIA.

My experience leads me to say that what the CIA calls the so-called "anti-drug fight" is nothing more than an elimination of its rivals, in order to seize the global drug industry (applause). They are waging their ''anti-drug war'' on every street corner and today our streets have become a veritable bloodbath.

The country industry provides coverage for cocaine trafficking, so Senator Byrd wanted me to get into that environment.

At the same time, Byrd thought of himself as a kind of artist and occasionally played the violin at the Grand Ole Opry. The first time I was sent to Nashville, he was playing that night in that big concert hall. At his side (or rather behind him), there was a musician named Wayne Cox... who later told me that playing music alongside Byrd was not only musical accompaniment, but that he was also doing it politically. That night after the show, I underwent an occult ritual again. Occultism is frequently used as a trauma basis for mind control. Who can understand this kind of trauma? Absolutely horrible blood rituals, it is a perfect basis for the traumas necessary for mind control aimed at the compartmentalization of memory. I witnessed a scene where Wayne Cox murdered a homeless man at the Nashville train station, a place that was abandoned at the time and was being squatted by homeless people. He shot her just between the two eyes and cut off both hands. This was Cox's modus operandi for murders. After this blood ritual, this horrible trauma, it was decided that Cox would become my first "master", "supervisor", in MK-Ultra mind control. As "master" and "supervisor", Wayne Cox would follow Senator Byrd's instructions and instructions. Above all, it would cause me to suffer other traumas, in sufficient numbers to satisfy the many compartments that Senator Byrd wanted to create in my brain for MK programming. This is so that I can then carry out various operations during the Reagan/Bush administration.

Afterwards, I endured many occult rituals. at

at that time, Wayne Cox was working directly under Louisiana Senator J. Bennett Johnston. Cox took me to his home in Chatham, Louisiana.

Bennett Johnston was then engaged in mind control operations in connection with a band of mercenaries. These mercenaries went back and forth to South America, and the arms trade was very active. Most importantly, when the planes dropped these guys in South America, they came back stuffed with cocaine, a drug that was then distributed on our streets. Wayne Cox triggered the MK operation of these mercenaries by showing them the severed hand of one of his victims, which plunged them back into the trauma of a ritual they had already undergone, making them access a specific compartment of their brain. He also told them that Bennett Johnston wanted them to "reach out", he would then give them instructions that the guys followed to the letter. So Bennett Johnston was also involved in that...

In 1978, it was agreed that I had suffered enough trauma to perform a first test, it was going to be my first operation. A large amount of cocaine had arrived by plane and I had to deliver it to the neighboring state of Arkansas. At that time, the drug trade around Bill Clinton was in full swing. He was governor of Arkansas at the time. So I delivered this cocaine to an airport in Ouachita Forest which I have since identified as Mena airport. I also passed on information and a small amount of cocaine, from Bennett Johnston's personal stock, to Bill Clinton. I handed him the package and he immediately sniffa two lines of coke... it was not the first time I had seen Bill Clinton use cocaine. My sexual experiences with Bill Clinton were very limited, even though I was a sex slave. In my experience, Bill Clinton is bisexual, rather strongly oriented towards homosexuality. I have mostly seen him involved in homosexual activities.

I've had a lot more experience with Hilary Clinton. Hilary is also bisexual, with a strong penchant for homosexuality. It was she who accessed my sexual programming to satisfy her perversions.

Also at that time, Bennett Johnston subjected me to other mental manipulations that involved not occultism but the theme of aliens. These guys who manipulated my mind and who programmed me for mk, real criminals at the controls of our country, pretended to be gods, demons, aliens. This in order that I feel totally helpless, that I integrate the fact that they were always there behind me to harm me. And it worked very well at that time...

Bennett Johnston told me he was an alien. He told me that he had participated in the 'Philadelphia Experiment' and that when the ship had disappeared, it had returned to a spaceship... This joins the theme of the "air/water mirror" frequently used by NASA, it is a reversal/ inversion. Because, again, the subconscious has no capacity for reasoning. Bennett Johnston then showed me, on the General Dynamics website, a "top secret" stealth device. It was a triangular thing that was not in any school book, of which no one did not speak, which we did not see in the newspapers, but who was nevertheless there, suspended in the air before my eyes...

It was still one of those top secret army systems. To me at that time, it looked like a spaceship! I had never seen anything like it. Because of that, everything Bennett Johnston was doing was for me related to aliens. So it was easy to get me to accept the idea that everything that was going on was actually being perpetrated by aliens. I'm not saying that aliens don't exist, that would be stupid of me, but what I mean is that these are people who actually claim to be E.T.. If there is a reality about extra-planetary influence, we need to clear up the disinformation and manipulation of minds that our government practices.

I know from a reliable source that their plan is for us all to feel powerless. because under a so-called alien dominationand that our-"Independence Day" is preparing. So beware of that! Understand that these criminals are confiscating information and technology from us under the cover of "National Security". They are at least 25 years ahead of all of us! Can you imagine what they have today? What has happened in the last 25 years? The microwave oven, the computer, but they continue on their side the progress and they are a lot ahead of it. So when they say ,'It comes from the aliens!", by showing us incredible technology, don't fall into this trap of feeling totally helpless. Superstition begins where knowledge ends, and we have been isolated from that knowledge for a long time. People have always had different beliefs and I'm sure each of you has different belief systems. Whatever your belief system, it is imperative that you know that these criminals are humans, they are among us to harm us. They must be held accountable for their acts and crimes against humanity. (applause)In 1980, when my daughter Kelly was born. She has arrived in this MK-Ultra program at a much more sophisticated technological stage than the one to which I have been subjected. In addition to the trauma, she underwent "harmonics" (MK programming system) on NASA sites, this from her birth, even before her brain had a chance to build.

As soon as Kelly was born, Senator Byrd, knowing that I had been sufficiently traumatized, ordered that we both be transferred to Nashville to conduct operations under the Reagan administration.

In this country music industry, we were then handed over to our second ''master'', ''supervisor'', his name is Alex Houston. Alex Houston was a ventriloquist (artist), specialist in hypnosis and immersed in the world of country music. He was primarily engaged in criminal operations for the CIA to fund classified programs. This concerned the distribution of large quantities of cocaine throughout the United States and Canada. At that time, he was working to provide me with blanket so that I could travel out of the country, to Canada, Mexico and the Caribbean, for criminal operations. My "supervisor" (Houston) took me to various military and NASA facilities for MK programming, for specific operations in which I was forced to participate (...) They involved leaders like the then President of Mexico, De la Madrid, as well as former President Salinas.

In 1984, a CIA base was established in Lampe, Missouri, a trauma center working specifically on near-death experiences (NDE). This site is named "Swiss Villa Amphiteater". They use the country music industry to manage large amounts of cocaine and then redistribute it. Lamp in Missouri is right in front of Arkansas, it is in close connection with the coke trafficking operations of Bill Clinton... booming at that time. It is also interesting to note that this traffic located in Lampe was the place where the country industry had been deftly relocated, right there in Branson, so as to get closer to the traffic of Clinton.

Lampe was also the place where I heard George Bush and Bill Clinton discuss. From my point of view, they clearly seemed to be friends, so there was no longer any political conflict between them. All this is just a smokescreen to deceive the public. Indeed, they do not adhere to these "political conflicts" because they have exactly the same agenda, which is the construction of this New World Order.

At the time, I heard George Bush tell Bill Clinton that when Americans become disillusioned by Republicans leading them to the New World Order, it is Bill Clinton, the Democrat, who will be put in the presidential office. All this was decided in 1984! And even long before that! In 1984, they were already discussing these things as an absolute fact. In this discussion, preparations for NAFTA (North American Free Trade Agreement) were also discussed. By the time George Bush became president, Salinas was becoming president of Mexico, and together they were going to implement NAFTA. This was the beginning of control for a New World Order.

I was forced to participate in the creation of this criminal NAFTA. The opening of the Mexican border of Juarez to free trade.

The free trade in drugs, the free trade of our children. The criminal roots of NAFTA are absolutely appalling.
It is interesting to note that these political movements are already decided in advance.

Once deprogrammed, I was completely baffled when I realized that people had no awareness of all this... It was so obvious to me... I could not realize that the population was not aware of the situation and that they had been deceived by a smokescreen, without ever having tried to find out what was really going on behind the scenes, behind the veil.

But I can understand that honest and sincere people do not think that way, they do not have a criminal mind and their conscience is not directed towards this kind of thing. Just as these guys (elitist criminals) are themselves limited in their thoughts by their immorality, honest people are somehow blinded in the face of this kind of extreme criminal activity. Until their eyes open to the truth.

The people who participated in these criminal activities were under the orders of George Bush. I do not pretend to know everything and I do not claim that George Bush was at the top of all this, but he was the highest placed I knew at that time (...) Bush Sr. was respected for his great knowledge of the construction of the New World Order. Look at his past: George Bush first started with the UN, then he became the head of our CIA. Then he indirectly ruled our country for three administrations: the Reagan presidency, his own presidency and then the Clinton presidency. Indeed, Reagan and Clinton both answer to Bush Senior. Mexican President De la Madrid also answers for Bush Sr. (...) King Fadh of Saudi Arabia also followed George Bush's orders, as did Canada's Prime Minister Brian Mulroney.

In 1983, I heard Ronald Reagan and Brian Mulroney discuss the New World Order. Indeed, Senator Byrd acted as a pimp by prositating me to Reagan when I was at a cocktail party in the White House.

Ronald Reagan certainly smoky us all wonderfully. For those of you who do not want to believe that he is involved in these things, he told you that he was an actor!

(laughs) And he did a very good job, over a long period of time. That was his role, that was what he was supposed to do.

I heard Reagan tell Mulroney that he believed that the only way to achieve world peace was through the mind control of the mass...

I know from experience that there is no peace in mind under mental control. How could there be world peace without people having peace in their minds?

The ramifications of mind control go very far. Under mental control, there is no freedom of thought. Without freedom of thought, there is no free will. Without god-given agency, there is no expression of the soul. What kind of "world peace" can we achieve without free will, without expression of the soul, and without spirituality?

Mind control in all its forms must be exposed so that people retain their freedom of thought. So that they keep their free will as well as the expression of their soul, their spirituality. When people have a soul and a spirituality, they are able to Love. That is world peace! Not mind control! (applause) In 1988, I was forced to take part in many operations against my will. Things I certainly would never have done in full consciousness. I guess if I had had a part of me willing to do this stuff, mind control wouldn't have been necessary. I am appalled by what I have been forced to participate in, but I am relieved that this information is coming out, that people are passing the book from hand to hand.

In this way, hand in hand, we will be able to take back our country. You have the right and the need to know this information, and their control over the media will not suppress the Truth. The Truth prevails!...

(applause)

In 1988, Mark rescued me and my daughter Kelly. We couldn't think about escaping at all, I couldn't think about saving my daughter, any more than I thought about saving myself. And all my hopes and dreams as children had certainly had no end in it.

When Mark rescued us, we had no ability to hope to meet a good person, we didn't even know it existed. We didn't have the ability to trust someone outside our community (network). So I couldn't tell myself that Mark was a good guy, but I saw his attitude with his animals, and even though I had no capacity for reasoning, for awareness, something happened on an extra-sensory level. We then felt very strong things. After all, if we consider that we only use 10% of our brain, we had been split into certain parts of our brain, very receptive areas at various psychic levels, a bit like the animal instinct. My daughter and I had noticed that animals loved Mark. He had indeed three raccoons that he had saved and who loved him very much, they wrapped their paws around his neck and he kissed them... For us it was something very important to witness this, because until then we had only experienced mistreatment of our animals.

We had lived on a ranch, we had dogs, cats, horses, cows, chickens, etc., and all that [illegible] made Alex Houston was from the roofuiei and kill them for us "DRESSER"... If we did not participate in the abominations, it would have happened to our pets, and we worshipped them more than anything.

Please, keep this in mind, that those who mistreat children, often mistreat animals. If you see someone mistreating an animal, be vigilant. Make sure you know if your children are safe. I have never seen an exception to this rule.

So, it was very revealing for us to see that these animals loved Mark. Moreover, at the time he rescued us, we were threatened by the CIA. I was then 30 years old, I was supposed to be killed as most MK slaves are around the age of 30. I was considered "too old" for sex, so I had to be deleted. Mark saved me from certain death and he saved my daughter from a fate much worse than death... He even took the time to save our animals. He took on horses, cows and chickens to safety. This had a profound positive impact on Kelly and I, so we started to be able to trust her from that moment on. Mark took us to Alaska, in safety and serenity. As we found ourselves safe for the first time in our lives and were truly loved for the first time as well, memories of the past began to rise in the form of flashes. Through these flashes of memories, I began to realize what had happened to me and my daughter, especially during the Reagan and Bush administration.

Becoming aware of all this, I then became furious, I had rage about what my daughter had experienced, all the torture inflicted and more generally for all humanity. I would have been totally blinded and immobilized by this rage if it had not been for Mark's wisdom to tell me that the best revenge was complete healing.

This is because thanks to this healing, by the photographic recording of all these events, I could expose these people for what they really are! Expose their plan, expose this New World Order, and also to be able to get help for my daughter who is in desperate need of it right now...

So from that moment on, I started writing my traumatic memories. By putting them on paper, I was using a part of my brain other than verbalization, thus bypassing the emotional. Bypassing the emotional is something necessary to bring a logic, to make the incomprehensible finally understandable. It allowed me to understand and understand what had happened to us and what could be done with all this information.

Kelly wasn't as lucky as I was because of the programming she endured,a programming based on harmonics.

Memories of trauma and deprogramming did not allow him to have access to all parts of his brain as was my case. This type of programming requires special equipment to help him recover and heal. She currently needs to receive treatment on her neural pathways with harmonic equipment. Failing this, she landed at Humana Hospital in Anchorage, Alaska, in an intensive care unit. At the time, she was suffering horribly and was only reacting to psychological interventions and not to conventional medications. Kelly is currently suffering from respiratory failure. Mind control has evolved to such an extent that they know so well the ins and outs of the brain and the human mind that they know not only how to program the subconscious, but also to go into the primitive mind, that is to say the area of our mind where basic biological reflexes such as blinking, breathing and heart rate are regulated. They can work on it and put deadly programs in place. In my daughter's case, it's respiratory failure that means she can't talk if she ever remembered anything, she's never been forced to do so, but in the world of espionage it can happen. Through brainwashing, they can access the prisoner spy's memories. So today spies no longer have to keep the old cyanide pill on them, instead they suffer from respiratory or heart failure. Thus, no information will be transmitted to the enemy, no chance...

My daughter, genetically selected, was raised and trained with mind control to be later introduced into the world of espionage. So she had this program in place, which unfortunately then got activated. Because of the medical assistance she needed, she quickly fell into illegal and immoral detention in the state of Tennessee. Where it still lives today. The violations of laws and rights that have proliferated in his case are numerous.

We had a district attorney of integrity who got involved in telling the judge that he was violating constitutional and human rights in the case of my daughter Kelly. While he was cits a whole list of laws, the judge interrupted him to tell him: "But the laws do not apply to this case for reasons of National Security." This raises a few questions: What does "National Security" have to do with the rape and torture of a child's body and mind? All the more validated by evidence and supporting documents?!

For the love of Kelly and the love of so many other mind control survivors, we must lift this veil of "National Security". We must have this law repealed from the National Security Act of 1947. (applause)

It is no longer 'national security', but a threat to the nation when it is used to cover up such a crime against humanity as mind control. When it covers the SO-called "war on drugs" of the CIA, or covers the sale of our country to the New World Order. This "National Security" that has nothing to do with the security of our nation.

This "National Security" has hidden information about mind control from each of you for too long. We need to get that information out. We need to arm everyone with knowledge about mk, because knowledge is our only defense against mind control. We must obtain detailed information to be all more effective in our respective fields, in order to take back the country and finally take back our world; for Kelly's sake; for the love of all other victims and survivors of mind control and I know there are a lot of them. For the love of humanity as we know it. It is the truth that makes us free.

Help us spread the information, thank you. (applause)

Annex N°3

Dissociative Experiences Scale (DES)
The Scale of Dissociative Experiences

The Dissociative Experiences Scale (DES) is aself-questionnaire for adults. It was developed by Eve Bernstein Carlson and Frank W. Putnam in 1986. The DES consists of 28 items to assess the frequency of various dissociative symptoms in the patient's daily life. This scale was developed to measure experiences of mental dissociation in adults, it is the most widely used tool for the study of dissociative disorders in psychiatry. Altered states of consciousness under the influence of drugs or alcohol are not to be taken into account for this test.

The final result is an average of summing the scores of the 28 items and then dividing the number by 28. Thus we obtain a score between 0 and 100. The average DES results for the average population range from 3.7 to 7.8. Results for psychiatric inpatients range from 14.6 to 17.0. In the Netherlands it was obtained from 71 patients suffering from a dissociative identity disorder a score of 49.4. Patients with a DES result of 25 or higher have a high probability of having a dissociative disorder.

In addition to the DES, there is also the MID "Multidimensional Inventory of Dissociation", based on the same principle but with more than 200 items (available on the internet). The DES as well as the MID do not allow to definitively establish a diagnosis; it is only through a structured and thorough examination that a dissociative identity disorder can be identified or excluded.

Circle a number to indicate the percentage of time this happens to you.

1. Some people experience while driving or staying in a car (or on the subway or bus) to suddenly realize that they don't remember what happened during all or part of the ride.

0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

2. Sometimes some people who are listening to someone speak, suddenly realize that they have not heard what has just been said to them (in whole or in part).

0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

3. Some people experience being in a place and having no idea how they got there.

0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

4. Some people experience being dressed in clothes they don't remember putting on.

0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

5. Some people experience finding new items in their belongings without remembering buying them.

0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

6. Some people may be approached by people they do not recognize. These strangers call them by a different name while claiming to know them.

0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

7. Some people sometimes feel like they are next to themselves or seeing themselves doing something, and in fact, they see themselves as if they were looking at another person.

0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

8. Some people do not recognize friends or family members.

0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

9. Some people find that they do not have memories of important events in their lives (for example, wedding or graduation ceremonies).

0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

10. Some people experience being accused of lying when they sincerely believe they have not lied.

0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

11. Some people experience looking in the mirror and not recognizing themselves in it.

0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

12. Some people sometimes experience feeling like unreal, other people, objects, and the world around them.

0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

13. Some people sometimes feel that their bodies do not belong to them.

0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

14. Some people experience sometimes remembering a past event in such an intense way that they feel things as if they were reliving that event.

0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

15. Some people experience not being sure if the things they remember actually happened or if they just dreamed of them.

0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

16. Some people experience being in a familiar place but finding it strange and unusual.

0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

17. Some people find that when they are watching television or a movie, they are so absorbed in history that they are unaware of other events around them.

0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

18. Some people sometimes find that they become so involved in an imaginary thought or daydream that they feel it as if it were really happening to them.

0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

19. Some people find that they are sometimes able to not pay attention to pain.

0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

20. It happens to some people to remain the gaze lost in the void, without thinking about anything and without being aware of the passing of time.

0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

21. Sometimes some people realize that when they are alone, they speak to each other out loud.

0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

22. Some people sometimes react in such a different way in comparable situations that they almost feel as if they were two different people.

0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

23. Some people sometimes find that in certain situations, they are able to do things that they are not usually able to do, with astonishing spontaneity and ease (for example: sports, work, social situations, art...).

0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

24. Some people find that sometimes they can't determine if a memory is something concrete they did or if it's just the thought they were going to do that thing (for example, confusion not knowing if they actually posted a letter or if they just thought about posting it).

0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

25. Some people may not remember having done something when they find evidence that they have

does this thing.

0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

26. Some people sometimes find writings, drawings or notes in their belongings that they have had to do but have no recollection of.

0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

27. Some people find that they hear voices in their heads telling them to do things or commenting on the things they do.

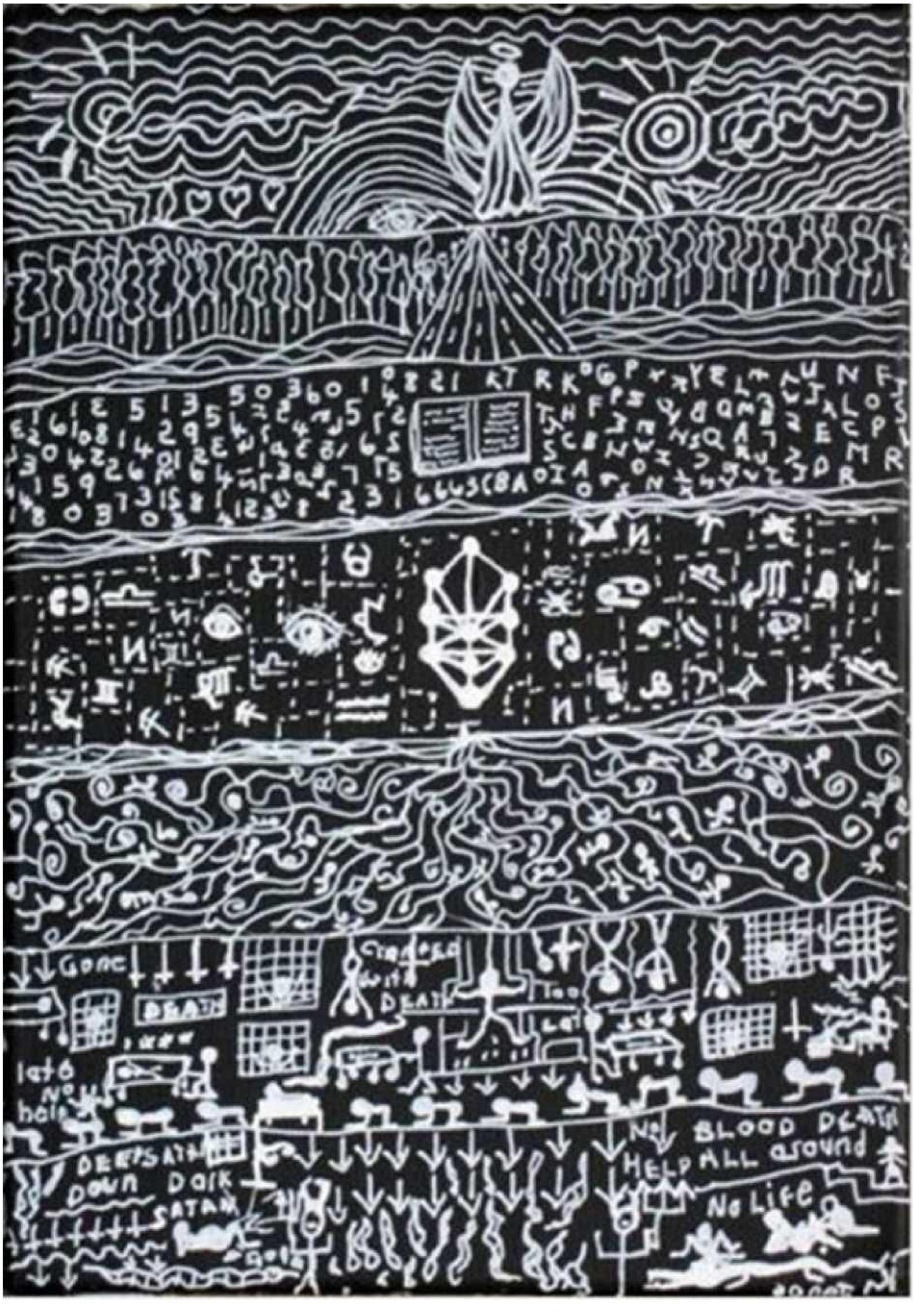
0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

28. Some people sometimes have the feeling of looking at the world through a fog in such a way that people and objects appear distant or indistinct.

0% never	10%	20%	30%	40%	50%	60%	70%	80%	90%

Annex N°4

The painting "Seven Level" produced by alter Key (Kim Noble)


Gone
DEATH
Crashed with DEATH
Too
late
No help
DEEPS
down Dark
SATAN
No BLOOD DEATH
HELP ALL around
No Life

[1] Télérama", 15/10/97

[2] "L'Addiction à la télévision" - Kubey, Csikszentmihalyi - Scientific American, 2003. "Studies

[3] attack television" - Louise Renard.

[4] "Turn off your TV", Lonnie Wolfe, New Federalist, p.6, 1997.

[5] "The Devil Notebook" - Anton Lavey, 1992, p. 86.

[6] "Emotions et Cognitions" - Ahmed Channouf and Georges Rouan, 2002.

[7] "L'esprit n'a pas de logiciel anti-intrusions", Timothy L. Thomas, in Parameters, pp. 84–92, 1998.

[8] "Mind Control Music' Stops Shoplifters" - McGill, Peter, The Sydney Morning Herald, 04/02/1995.

[9] Defense Electronics, juillet 1993, "DOD, intel Agencies Look at Russian Mind Control Technology, Claims FBI Concidered testing on Koresh" ; Newsweek, 7 février 1994, "Soon

"The Art to Control the Crowd", Pravda, 6 mars 1994.

[11] Extract from the file "Offensive Technologies of Political Control".

[12] Phasers on Stun" ; Village Voice, 8 mars 1994, "Mind Control in Waco".

[10]

[13]

[14]

OECD, Education at a Glance 2011.

"Operation fluorine" - vivresansogm.org.

"Gluten-free or dairy-free food" - Marion Kaplan, 2010.

[15] "Feeding and behavior of children - phosphates", Aldo Massarotti, bromatologist chemist.

[16] Uhlig T., Merken schlager A, Brandmaier R, Egger J. - Eur. J. Pediatr. juillet 1997.

[17] "Feeding and behavior of children - Phosphates", Aldo Massarotti, bromatologist chemist.

[18] "Food additives danger" - Corinne Gouget, 2006.

[19] "Strategic Planning for Mental Health", Colonel John Rawlings Rees, Mental Health Vol.1,

[2]
n° 4, octobre 1940, p. 103-104.

[20]

"Fifty Years of the Tavistock Clinic" - Henri Victor Dicks, London, Routledge and Paul, 1970.

[21]

"Mind control World control" - Jim Keith 1997, Chap 5.

[22]

"Do the psychiatrysation of society, conspiracy and psychiatry go hand in hand?" - Alain

"Conspirator's Hierarchy" - Dr John Coleman.

"Mind Control World Control" - Jim Keith 1997, p.45.

Gossens, Karmapolis.com.

[23]

[24]

[25]

"The Tavistock Institute Of Human Relations : Shaping the Moral, Spiritual, Cultural, Political and Economic Decline of the United States of America - Johan Coleman, 2006, p.14.

[26]

"Physical Control of the Mind, Toward a Psychocivilized Society" - Jose M.R. Delgado, 1969.

[27]

"The Search for The Manchurian Candidate" - John Marks, 1979.

[28]

"The Mind Fields"- Kathleen McAuliffe, magazine OMNI, Février 1985.

[29]

"The Control of Thoughts and the American Government" - Martin Cannon, LOBSTER 23 - Excerpt from an analysis by journalist G. Guyatt presented at the Symposium of the International Committee of the Red Cross on the "Medical Profession and the Effects of Weapons".

[30]

José Delgado, 24 February 1974, transcript in the edition of the "Minutes of the Sittings of the United States Congress", Number 26, vol. 118.

[31]

"Mega Brain, New Tools and Techniques for Brain Growth and Mind Expansion" - Michael Hutchinson, 1986.

[32]

"Effects of Modulated Very High Frequency Fields on Specific Brain Rhythms in Cats", Brain Research, Vol 58, 1973.

[33]

Extract from an analysis by journalist David G. Guyatt presented at the Symposium of the International Committee of the Red Cross on the "Medical Profession and the Effects of Weapons".

[34]

Extract from the Report of the Defence Intelligence Agency (DIA), issued in accordance with the Freedom of Information Act (FOIA).

[35]

[21] "Mind Control, World Control" - Jim Keith, 1997.

[36] "Body Electric : Electromagnetism and the Foundation of Life" - Robert Becker, William Morrow and comp. New York, 1985.

[37] "Low Intensity Conflict and Modern Technology", ed. Lt.Col. J. Dean, USAF, Air University Press, Center for Aerospace Doctrine, Research and Education, Maxwell Air Force Base, Alabama, june 1986 - Chapt : The Electromagnetic Spectrum in Low- Intensity Conflict, Capt Paul E. Tyler.

[38] "Microwaves and Behavior" - Don R. Justesen, American Psychologist, mars 1975, p. 391.

"The Mind Has No Anti-Intrusion Software" - Lieutenant Colonel Timothy L. Thomas, Analyst at the Foreign Military Affairs Design Office at Fort Leavenworth, Kansas, 1998.

[40] "USAF Scientific Advisory Board, New World Vistas Air and Space Power for the 21st Century", Ancillary Volume, 1996, p.89.

[41] Non-lethal weapons, the new arms race. Groupe de Recherche et d'information sur la Paix et la Sécurité - Luc Maempey, 1999.

[42] John Heckscher, HAARP Program Manager, interviewed by Jeane Manning on 21/02/1995.

[43] Letter from John Heckscher to Mr Arthur Grey, Cabinet Secretary at the US Department of Commerce, Administration for National Telecommunications and Information and responsible for frequency allocation in radiocommunications - 08/11/1994.

[44] "Angels don't play this HAARP" - Jeane Manning and Dr Nick Begich.

[45] Annie Lobé - NEXUS No. 30 from January-February 2005.

[46] "Mobile phone: how to protect yourself" - Annie Lobé, 2006.

[47] Conditioned Reflexes and Psychiatry, Vol.2 of Lectures on Conditioned Reflexes - Ivan Pavlov, 1941.

[48] "Battle for the Mind: A physiologie of Conversion and Brainwashing" - William Sargant, 1957.

[49] "Ritual Abuse and Mind-Control: The manipulation of attachment needs" - Ellen P. Lacter, 2011.

[50] Report of the Ritual Abuse Task Force Los Angeles County Commission for Women, 1989.

[51] "The Manipulated Mind: Brainwashing, Conditioning, and Indoctrination", Denise Winn, 2002.

"The Relationship Between Mind Control Programming and Ritual Abuse" - Ellen

[53]
Kubark, the CIA's secret manual of mind manipulation and psychological torture - www.editions-zones.fr.
[54]
"Behind the Democratic Façades: Mind-Control and the Satanic Cult of National Security" - Hans Ulrich Gresch, Phoenix Journal 155, 1995.
[55]
"Ritual Abuse : An European Cross-Country Perspective" - Thorsten Becker & Joan Coleman, Conférence ISSD "The Spectrum of Dissociation", Manchester, 09/05/1999.
[56]
"The History of Magic" - Eliphas Lévi, 1999, p.122.
[57]
"A Course of Severe and Arduous Trials : Bacon, Beckett and Spurious" - Lynn Brunet, 2009, p.6, 7, 11.
[58]
"A Philosophical Enquiry into the Origin of Ideas of the Sublime and Beautiful" - Edmund

"The Warriors : Reflections on Men in Battle" - Jesse Glenn Gray, 1998, p.102.

[60] "Le monde grec antique" - Marie-Claire Amouretti & Françoise Ruzé, 1978, p.108.
[61] Burke, 1998, p.37-38.
[59]

"Rosicrucian Digest" - Volume 89, N° 1, 2011, p. 5.
[62]
"Source for the Study of Greek Religion" - David Rice, John Stambaugh, 1979, p.144.
[63]
"The History of Freemasonry: Its Legendary Origins" - Albert Gallatin Mackey, 2008, chap.19.
[64]
"Mackey's Revised Encyclopedia of Freemasonry" - Albert Mackey, The Masonic History Company, 1946, Vol.2, p.689.
[65]
"Le Messie Militant ou la Fuite du Ghetto : Histoire de Jacob Frank et du mouvement frankiste" - Arthur Mandel, 1989, p.57.
[66]
"Jacob Franck, le faux messie : déviance de la kabbale ou théorie du complot" - Charles Novak, 2012, p.50-62.
[67]
"Manicheism an ancient Mesopotamian "Gnosticism", Journal of Ancient Near Eastern Religions, Vol. 5 - Mehmet-Ali Atac.
[68]
"Cult and Ritual Abuse - James Randall Noblitt & Pamela Perskin Noblitt, 2014.
[69]

"Surviving Masonic Ritual Abuse" - Neil Brick, magazine Beyond Survival. 07/1996.

[70] "Interview with Dr. Stephen Kent", Wayne Morris, CKLN-FM - Mind Control Series Part 13.

[71] "Interview with Lynn Moss Sharman", Wayne Morris, CKLN-FM - Mind Control Series Part 16.

[72] "Terror, Trauma And The Eye In The Triangle" - Lynn Brunet, 2007, p.236-240.

[73] "My father sequestered me for 15 years: the terrifying story of Maude", Julien Balboni, www.dhnet.be, 2014.

[74] "Tortured by her father to make her a superior being" - "Hi earthlings", 10/2014.

[75] "Cult and Ritual Abuse" - James Randall Noblitt & Pamela Perskin Noblitt, 2014. p.132.

[76] "Mémoires" - Barruel, t. 111, p. 107.

[77] "Fils de la Veuve" - Jean-Claude Lozac'hmeur, 2002, p. 136.

[78] "Les Origines Occultistes de la Franc-Maçonnerie" - Jean Claude Lozac'hmeur, 2015, p.42.

[79] "Le monde grec antique" - Marie Claire Amouretti & Françoise Ruzé, 1978, p.107.

[80] "Livy, History of Rome","Source for the Study of Greek Religion" - David Rice, John Stambaugh, 1979 p.149.

[81] "Les Divinités générateurs ou du culte du phallus chez les anciens et les modernes" - Jacques-Antoine Dulaure, 1805, p.106-107.

[82] Ibid, p.117-118.

[83] "Ritual Abuse and Mind Control: The Manipulation of Attachment Needs" - Orit Badouk

"How The Cult Programs People" - Svali.

"Belgium: Dutroux X-Dossier summary", 2005 - Wikileaks.org.

"Antichrist Osiris: The History of the Luciferian Conspiracy" - Chris Relitz, 2012. "Le signe secret : Ordre de la Rose-Croix" - Historia, 03/2012.

"The Satanist and Freemason Benjamin Franklin" - Laurent Glauzy, 2014.

Epstein, Joseph Schwartz, Rachel Wingfield Schwartz, 2011, p.149.

[84]

[85]

[86]

[89]

[87]

[88]

'The Symbolism of Freemasonry: Illustrating and Explaining its Science and

Philosophy, its Legends, Myths and Symbols" - Mackey, Albert G, 1955. [90]

[91] "Lectures on Ancient Philosophy", Manly P. Hall, p.433. "Morale et Dogmes", Tome 1,

[92] Albert Pike, p.104.

"The Externalization of the Hierarchy" - Alice Bailey, 1974, p. 511-573.

[93]

"The Master Mason", p.9-10 - Grand Lodge F. & A. M. of Indiana, Committee on Masonic

"A Bridge To Light" - Rex R. Hutchens, 1988, p.194.

"Symbolism of Freemasonry or Mystic Masonry" - J.D. Bruck, 1925. "Your

Amazing Mystic Powers" - Henry C.Clausen, 1985, p.xvii.

Education.

[94]

[95]

[96]

[97]

"Ancient Operative Masonry and The Mysteries of Antiquity" - S.R. Parchment, 1996, p.11.

[98]

"Morals and Dogma, Level 8" - Albert Pike.

[99]

"The History of Freemasonry: Its Legendary Origins, Pt.1 Prehistoric Masonry" - Albert Gallatin Mackey, 2008, p.61.

[100]

"La Symbolique Maçonnique" - Jules Boucher, 1985, p.253.

[101]

"Who Was Hiram Abiff ?" - J.S.M.Ward, 1925, p.50-34-195.

[102]

"The Oxford Handbook of New Religious Movements" - James R. Lewis, 2008.

[103]

"Magia Sexualis: Sex, Magic and Liberation in Modern Western Esotericism" - Hugh B. Urban, 2006, p.22.

[104]

"Le monde grec antique" - Marie Claire Amourreti & Françoise Ruze, 1978, chap.8.

[105]
"The Meaning of Masonry" - Walter Leslie Wilmshurst, 1922, p.47. "The
[106]
Lost Keys To Freemasonry" - Manly P. Hall, 1976, p.48. "Masonic
[107]
Initiation" - Walter Leslie Wilmshurst, 1992, p.27.
[108]
"Sanctification in Reverse : the essence of satanic ritual abuse" - Patricia Baird Clarke, Five Stone Publishing, 2013.
[109]
"Masonic Initiation" - Walter Leslie Wilmshurst, 1992, p.84-86.

Occult Theocrasy" - Edith Queenborough, 1933.

[112] "Terror, Trauma and The Eye In The Triangle: the masonic presence in contemporary art and culture" - Lynn Brunet, 2007, p.75.

[112] "La Symbolique Maçonnique" - Jules Boucher, 1985, p.253-254.

[113] "The Arcana of Freemasonry : A History of Masonic Symbolism" - Albert Churchward, 2008, p.55.

[114] "Freemasonry of the Ancient Egyptians" - Manly P. Hall, 1965, p.7.

[115] "Freemasonry its Hidden Meaning" - Georges H. Steinmetz, 1976, p.46.

[116] "The Lost Keys of Freemasonry" - Manly P. Hall, Macoy Publishing & Masonic Supply Co, p.101.

[117] "Les Origines Egyptiennes des Usages et Symboles Maçonniques" - Jean Mallinger, 1978, p.47.

[118] "The Golden Bough" - George Frazer, 1922, p.439.

[119] "The Soul in Egyptian Metaphysics and The Book of the Dead" - Manly P. Hall, 1965, p.15.

[120] "The Lost Keys of Freemasonry" - Manly P. Hall, Macoy Publishing & Masonic Supply Co, p.106.

[121] "The Egyptian Book of The Dead (The Papyrus of Ani) Egyptian Text Transliteration and Translation" - E.A. Wallis Budge, 1967.

[122] "Les Grecs et l'irrationalnel" - E.R. Dodds, 1977, p. 286.

[123] "La Franc-maçonnerie rendu intelligible a ses adeptes" Tome III - Oswald Wirth, 1986, p.219-130.

[124] "The Ancient Mystic Rites" - C.L. Leadbeater, The Theosophical Publishing House, Wheaton, III, p. 41-42.

[125] "Mackey's Revised Encyclopedia of Freemasonry" - Albert G. Mackey, 1946, p.514.

[126] "History of Magic" - Eliphas Levy, 1930, book IV, chap. VI.

[127] "The Occult Conspiracy" - Michael Howard, 1989, p.36-37.

[128] "Secret Societies and Subversive Movements" - Nesta H.Webster, Christian Book Club of America, p.57.

[129] "The Ancient Mystic Rites" - C.W.Leadbeater, The Theosophical Publishing

House, Wheaton, III, p.167.

[130] Belgian Curator, t. XIX. p. 358, 259 - Eckert, la Franc-maçonnerie, 1.1, p. 333.

[131] "History of Magic" - Eliphas Levi, 1913, Book V, Chap.VII.

[132] Ibid, livre VI, chap. II.

[133] "Traité pratique de Magie Sexuelle" - Pierre Manoury, 1989, chap.1.

[134] "The Voudon Gnostic Workbook : Expanded Edition" - Michael Bertiaux, 2007, p.308.

[135] "The Power of the Impure : Transgression, Violence and Secrecy in Bengali Sakta Tantra and Modern Western Magic" - Hugh B. Urban, 2003.

[136] "Kundalini : The Energy of the Depths" - Lilian Silburn, 1988, intro.

[137] "Serpent of Fire, a Modern View of Kundalini" - Darrel Irving, 1995, p.27-32.

[138] "Theories of the Chakras, Bridge to Higher Consciousness" - Hiroshi Motoyama, 2003, p.240-250.

[139] "The Secret Teachings of All Ages, An Encyclopedic Outline of Masonic, Hermetic, Qabbalistic and Rosicrucian Philosophy" - Manly P. Hall, 1988, p.273.

[140]

1990.

[141] "Sex and the Occult" in Dark Lily 10, Society of Dark Lily - Dark Lily, London. "Traité pratique de Magie Sexuelle" - Pierre Manoury, 1989, chap.6.

[142] "Magia Sexualis : Sex Magic and Liberation in Modern Western Esotericism" - Hugh B. Urban, 2006, p.65.

[143] "Modern Ritual Magic : The Rise Of Western Occultism" - Francis King, 1989.

[144] "The Magic of Aleister Crowley" - John Symonds, 1958.

[145] "Australia: How we cover up a case of paedophile and Satanist network" - Donde Vamos, 19/10/2013.

[146] "Secrets of the German Sex Magicians : A Practical Handbook for Man & Women" - Frater U? D?, 1991, p.11-17.

[148]

[147]

"A History of Religious Ideas, vol.1" - Mircea Eliade, 1978, p.365.

Spear of Destiny" - Trevor Ravenscroft, 1982, p.161.

[149]
"The Last Secrets of Skull and Bones" - Ron Rosenbaum, Esquire Magazine, "Hitler
1977.
[150]
médium de Satan" - Jean Prieur, 2002, p.41-38.
[151]
Ibid p.38.
[152]
"Exposing the illuminati from within" - The Prophecy Club - vostfr : "Dévoiler les illuminati de
"Do What You Will : A History of Anti-Morality" - Geoffrey Ashe, 1974, p.235. "Cult &
Ritual Abuse" - James Randal Noblitt & Pamela Perskin Noblitt, 2014,
l'intérieur" - Bill Schnoebelen.
[153]

[154]

p.141.
[155]
Ibid p.142.
[156]
"The Antiquaries Journal" 78, 1998.
[157]
"Voodoo" - Jacques d'Argent, 1970.
[158]
"Norvegian Archeological Review", Vol 33, N°1, 2000.
[159]
"Sharing the table of the gods: The Emperor Julian and the sacrifices" - Nicolas Belayche.
[160]
"The Risalah of Ibn Fadlan : An Annoted Translation with Introduction" - Mc Keithen, 1979.
[161]
"Cebuano Sorcery : Malign Magic in the Philippines" - Richard Lieban, 1967, p.23.
[162]
"La Conjuration antichrétienne" - Mgr Henri Delassus, 2008 (Saint-Remi), p.259.
[163]
"Rites of Terror, Metaphor and Memory in Melanesian Initiation Cults" - Harvey Whitehouse, The Journal of the Royal Anthropological Institute, Vol. 2, No. 4, 1996.
[164]
"Blood Secrets : The True Story of Demon Worship and Ceremonial Murder" - Isaiah Oke, 1989, p.19.
[165]
Ibid, p.19.
[166]
"The Mind Possessed : A Physiology of Possession, Mysticism and Faith Healing" - William

Sargant, 1974, p.149.

[167] "The Illuminati Formula Used to Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave" - Fritz Springmeier & Cisco Wheeler, 1996.

[168]

"Dinner with the Devil : An evening with, the High Priest of the Church of Satan" - Bob Johnson, High Times Magazine, 1994.

[169]

"The Re-Enchantment of the West", Vol 2 : Alternative Spiritualities, Sacralization, Popular Culture and Occulture - Christopher Partridge, 2006, p.229.

[170]

"Cours de haute magie de socellerie pratique et de voyance", Vol.2 - Pierre Manoury, 1989, chap.1.

[171]

"Approche anthropologique de la dissociation et de ses dispositifs inducteurs" - Georges Lapassade, 2004.

[172]

"Animism and shamanism for all" - Igor Shamanovitch, 2010, p.106.

[173]

"How about Demons ? Possession and Exorcism in the Modern World" - Felicitas D. Goodman, 1988, p.12.

[174]

"The Occult : A History" - Colin Wilson, 1971, p.147.

[175]

"Face in the Smoke : An Eyewitness Experience of Voodoo, Chamanism, Psychic Healing and Other Amazing Human Powers" - Douchan Gersi, 1991, p.45.

[176]

"The Role of Fear in Traditional and Contemporary Shamanism" - Michael York, Bath Spa University College, 2012.

[177]

"Le Shamanisme et les Techniques Archaïques de l'Extase" - Mircea Eliade, 1951, p.54.

[178]

"Animism and shamanism for all" - Igor Shamanovich, 2010, p.104.

[179]

"Shamanism, Mind-Control, Christ, "Aliens", and Me" - Jean Eisenhower, 2014.

[180]

"Lame Deer Seeker of Visions : The life of a Sioux Medicine Man" - John Lame Deer, 1972,

"Archeology : Secrets of Maya" - Michael D. Lemonick, 09/08/1993. "Project

Paperclip : Dark side of the Moon" - Andrew Walker, BBC News.

p.189-197.

[181]

[182]

[183]

"Private Institutions Used in CIA Efforts to Control Behavior" - New York Times, 02/081977.

[184]

"A Question of Torture : CIA interrogation, From the Cold War to the War on Terror - Alfred W. McCoy, 2006.

[185] "Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments : Interim Report" - Church Committee, Book I.

[186] "Bluebird : The Deliberate Création of Multiple Personality by Psychiatrists" - Colin A. Ross, 2000, chap.4.

[187] "Senate MK-Ultra Hearing : Appendix C" - Documents Referring to subprojects, Senate Select Committee on Intelligence and Committee on Human Resources.

[188] "Private Institutions Used in CIA Efforts to Control Behavior" - New York Times, 02/08/1977.

[189] "American Torture : From the Cold War to Abu Ghraib and Beyond" - Michael Otterman, 2007.

[190] "A Nation Betrayed : The Chilling True Story of Secret Cold War Experiments Performed on Our Children and Other Innocent People" - Carol Rutz, 2001.

[191] "A village poisoned by the CIA? Pont Saint-Esprit 1951" - France 3, 08/07/2015.

[192] Translation by "Word of Life" - Serie "Survivors of the Illuminati".

[193] "Lavages de cerveaux finances par la CIA" - Radio-Canada, archives, October 5, 1988, interview of journalist Pauline Valasse with psychiatrist Pierre Lalonde.

[194] "Psychiatry and the CIA : Victims of Mind-Control" - American Psychiatric Press, Harvey Weistein, 1990.

[195] Ibid.

[196] "American Torture : From the Cold War to Abu Ghraib and Beyond" - Michael Otterman, 2007.

[197] "Kubark", the CIA's secret manual of mind manipulation and psychological torture - www.editions-zones.fr.

[198] "A History of Secret CIA Mind-Control Research" - Sid Taylor, Nexus Magazine 1992.

[199] "Journey into Madness : The True Story of Secret CIA Mind Control and Medical Abuse" - Gordon Thomas, 1989.

[200] "The Fifth Estate - MK-Ultra au Canada, Dr Ewen Cameron" - CBC, 1984.

[201] "Canada: the massacre of the Indian people involves the destruction and exploitation of their children" - DondeVamos, 27/10/2012.

[202] "Battle for the Mind, Physiology of Conversion and Brainwashing" - William Sargant, 1997.

[203]
"My electric shock nightmare at the hands of the CIA's evil doctor" - Celia Imrie, Daily Mail, 04/2011.
[204]
"The CIA Doctors : Human Rights Violations by American Psychiatrists", Collin Ross, 2011.
[205]
Les Dossiers extraordinaires Vol.1, "L'hypnotiseur", Pierre Bellemare.
[206]
"Mind Wars : The True Story of Government Research into the Military Potential of Psychic Weapons", Ronald McRae, 1984.
[207]
"Amercian Torture : From the Cold War to Abu Ghraib and Beyond" - Michael Otterman, 1977, p. 52.
[208]
"The Illuminati Formula Used to Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave - Fritz Springmeier & Cisco Wheeler 1996"
[209]
Ibid.
[210]
"New Age Menace : The Secret War Against the Followers of Christ" - David N. Balmforth, 1997, p.76.
[211]
"The Secret Weapons of the CIA: Torture, Manipulation and Chemical Weapons" - Gordon Thomas, 2006.
[212]
"L'Amerique en plein trance-formation" - Cathy O'Brien & Mark Phillips - Éditions Nouvelle Terre, 2013, p.22.
[213]
"Exposing the illuminati from within" - The Prophecy Club, Bill Schnoebelen.
[214]
"L'Amerique en plein trance-formation" - Cathy O'Brien & Mark Phillips - Éditions Nouvelle Terre, 2013, p.275.
[215]
"Spirits, are you the? Sorcerie et exorcisme en France" - Sur les docks, France Culture, 12/2011.
[216]
"The Cook Report : The Devil's Work" - Roger Cook, ITV, 17/07/1989.
[217]
"What Cops Know" - Connie Fletcher, 1992, p.90.
[218]
Preston Y. - 'Annie's Agony', Sydney Morning Herald, 1990 / "Ritual Abuse & Torture in

"Viols d'Enfants, la Fin du Silence?" - France 3, 2000.

"Cult and Ritual Abuse" - James Randall Noblitt & Pamela Perskin Noblitt, 2014.
Australia", ASCA, avril 2006.
[219]

[220]
[221]

Ritual Child Abuse : Definition and Assumptions" - David W. Lloyd, The Journal of Child Sexual Abuse, Vol.1(3), 1992.

[222]
"Working Together under the Children Act 1989" - Department of Health 1991 : 38 - "Beyond disbelief : The Politics and Experience of Ritual Abuse" - Sara Scott, 2001, p.2.

[223]
"Working Together under the Children Act 2004" p.225.

[224]
"Ritual Abuse and Mind-Control, The Manipulation of Attachement" - chap. "What has changed in twenty years ?" - Valerie Sinason, 2011, p.11.

[225]
"Ritual Abuse & Torture in Australia" - Advocate for Survivors of Child Abuse, 04/2006, p.12-13.

[226]
"Ritual Crime in the State of Utah, Investigation, Analysis & A Look Forward" - Utah Attorney General's Office, Michael R. King, Matt Jacobson, 1995, p.7.

[227]
Ibid, p.5, 44, 46.

[228]
"Report of the Ritual Abuse Task Force Los Angeles County Commission for Women" - 15/09/1989.

[229]
"Interview with Regina Louf, Witness XI at Neufchateau" - Annemie Bulté et Douglas De Coninck, De Morgen, 1998.

[230]
"L'abus rituel : le point de vue d'intervenantes en agression sexuelle" - Jacques, Christine (2008). memory. Gatineau, Université du Québec en Outaouais (UQO), Department of Social Work. Filing date: Oct. 11, 2011 - http://dpndev.uqo.ca/id/eprint/339.

[231]
Guidelines for Treating Dissociative Identity Disorder in Adults - Journal of Trauma & Dissociation - ISSTD : International Society for the Study of Trauma and Dissociation.

[232]
"Ritual Abuse & Torture in Australia" - ASCA, 2006.

[233]
"Advocating for Ritualistically Abused Children" - Dr. Ellen P. Lacter, 2002, CALAPT Newsletter.

[234]
"Ritual Abuse and Mind Control : The Manipulation of Attachment Needs" - Orit Badouk Epstein, Joseph Schwartz, Rachel Wingfield Schwartz, 2011, p.144.

[235]
"Unshackled : a Survivor's Story of Mind-Control" - Kathleen Sullivan, 2003, p.34.

[236]
Muriel Salmona - Pratis TV, 20/01/2014.

[237]
Dr. Lawrence Pazder : The Emergence of Ritualistic Crime in Today's Society, Article présenté au North Colorado-South Wyoming Détectives Association. Fort Collins, CO : September 9-12,1986. Occult crime : a law enforcement primer.

[238]
"Ritual Crime in the State of Utah : Investigation, Analysis & A Look Forward" - Utah

Attorney General's Office, Michael R. King et Matt Jacobson, 1995, p.15.
[239]
"The New Satanists" - Linda Blood, 1994, p.29-30.

[240]
"An Analysis of Ritualistic and Religion-Related Child Abuse Allegations" - "Law and Human Behaviour" Vol. 20, N°1, 1996.
[241]
"The Emotional Life of Nations" - Lloyd deMause, 2002.

[242]
"The Franklin Cover-Up : Child Abuse, Satanism, and Murder in Nebraska" - John W. De Camp, 2011, p.212.
[243]
"Healing The Unimaginable : Treating Ritual Abuse And Mind-Control" - Alison Miller, 2012, p.110.
[244]
"The Illuminati Formula Used to Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave" - Fritz Springmeier & Cisco Wheeler, 1996.
[245]
"Why Cults Terrorize and Kill Children" - Lloyd de Mause, The journal of Psychohistory 21, 1994.
[246]
"The Last Secrets of Skull and Bones" - Ron Rosenbaum, Esquire Magazine, 1977.

[247]
"The Satanic Rituals : Companion to the Satanic Bible" - Aton Lavey, 1976, p.57.

[248]
"The Egyptian Book of The Dead (The Papyrus of Ani) Egyptian Text Transliteration and Translation" - E. A. Wallis Budge, 1967.
[249]
"Painted Black : From Drug Killings to Heavy Metal : The Alarming True Story of How Satanism Is Terrorizing Our Communities" - Carl A. Raschke, 1990.
[250]
"Magick : in Theory and Practice" - Aleister Crowley, 1973, p.219.

[251]
"Sanctification in Reverse : the essence of satanic ritual abuse" - Patricia Baird Clarke, Five Stone Publishing, 2013.

The Magic Castle : A Mother's Harrowing True Story Of Her Adoptive Son's Multiple Personalities-- And The Triumph Of Healing - Carole Smith, 1998 / Book Review by Annette Petersmeyer Graduate Student University of Minnesota-Duluth, Duluth, MN.
[253]
"Dieu et Satan, le combat continue" - Yann-Erick interviews Pere François Brune, Elevation, 2008.
[254]
"British link to 'snuff' video" - theguardian.com / Jason Burke pour "The Observer" 01/10/2000.
[255]
"Dossier pédophilie, le scandale de l'affaire Dutroux" - Jean Nicolas and Frédéric Lavachery, 2001.

[256] "Snuff-movies, an "unthinkable" reality", Donde Vamos, 13/08/2014.

[257] "Scientology, the CIA & MIVILUDES : Cults of Abuse" (documentaire vidéo).

[258] Letter to California State Social Services Advisory Board. Summit, Roland - 26/10/1988, Occult crime : a law enforcement primer.

[259] "Cult and Ritual Abuse" James & Pamela Noblitt, 2014, p.53.

[260] Ibid p.55.

[261] Ibid p.55.

[262] Ibid p. 68.

[263] Ibid p. 67-68.

[264] "Forensic Consideration in Ritual Trauma Cases" - Sylvia Gilotte.

[265] "Occult Crime : a Law Enforcement Primer", Interview Lieutenant Larry Jones, Boise, Idaho Police Department and Director, Cult Crime Impact Network.

[266] "Ritual sexual abuse: the case of Mc Martin kindergarten in the United States" - Donde Vamos 20/05/2012.

[267] "The Franklin Cover Up : Child Abuse, Satanism, and Murder in Nebraska" - John W. DeCamp, 1992, p.127.

[268] Ibid, p.212.

[269] Ibid, p.127.

[270] Ibid, p.327.

[271] "The Alex Jones Show" - Interview de John DeCamp, 21/07/2004.

[272] "The Franklin Cover-Up : Child Abuse, Satanism, and Murder in Nebraska" - John W. DeCamp, 1992, p.204-210.

[273] "Ritual sexual abuse: the case of Mc Martin kindergarten in the United States" - Donde Vamos 20/05/2012.

"Ritual sexual abuse: the case of Mc Martin kindergarten in the United States" - Donde Vamos 20/05/2012.

[274]
"Interview With the Author of Hell Minus One" - Anne A Johnson Davis, S.M.A.R.T. /ritualabuse.us.
[275]
"L'Enfant sacrifie a Satan" - Samir Aouchiche & Bruno Fouchereau, 1997, p. 6671.
[276]
"Ritual Abuse : An European Cross-Country Perspective" - Thorsten Becker & Joan Coleman, Conférence ISSD "The Spectrum of Dissociation", Manchester, 09/05/1999.
[277]
"The Shelter for Women Having Their Minds Controlled By Criminal Gangs" - Interview de Gaby Breitenbach par Antonia Oettingen - Vice.com, 12/02/2014.
[278]
"Forensic Aspects of Dissociative Identity Disorder" - Adah Sachs et Graeme Galton, 2008, p.11-20.
[279]
Belgium: Dutroux X-Dossier summary, 1235 pages, Wikileaks.org, 2005.
[280]
"Les dossiers X : Ce que la Belgique ne devait pas savoir sur l'affaire Dutroux" - Annemie Bulte
et
Zembla TV NED3 - 2004.

"Silence is for perpetrators - The Testimony of X1" - Regina Louf, Éd. Wood tick, Douglas de Coninck, 1999, p. 249-250.
[281]

[282]

1998.
[283]
"Les dossiers X : Ce que la Belgique ne devait pas savoir sur l'affaire Dutroux" - Annemie Bulte et Douglas de Coninck, 1999, p. 218.
[284]
"Belgium : Dutroux X-Dossier summary", Wikileaks.org, 2005 - PV 150.035, 30/01/97, p.756.
[285]
"Viols d'Enfants, la Fin du Silence?" - France 3, 2000.
[286]
"Psychotraumatism: theoretical approaches. Tempete Xynthia, study on the victims of La Faute-sur-Mer two years later" - Thesis of Anne-Sophie Baron, 2012.
[287]
"Dissociation structurelle de la personnalité et trauma" - Nijenhuis, van der Hart, Steele, de Soir, Matthess, Revue francophone du stress et du trauma, 2006.
[288]
"Thanks For The Memories : The Truth Has Set Me Free" - Brice Taylor, 1999, p.27.
[289]
Muriel Salmona - Pratis TV, 16/01/2012.
[290]
"Traumatic syndromes of rape and incest" - Jean Michel Darves-Bornoz. Congress of Psychiatry and Neurology, Toulon, 1996.

[291] "Raped at 5 years old, she remembers it at 37: with terror, the brain can break" - Muriel Salmona, nouvelobs.com 2013.

[292] "The Myth of Sanity : Divided Consciousness and the Promise of Awareness" - Martha Stout, 2002.

[293] "Sef-reported amnesia for abuse in adults molested as children" - John Briere, Jon Conte, Journal of Traumatic Stress, Vol.6, N°1, 1993.

[294] "Rape at school..." - stopaudeni.com, 2015.

[295] "How I overcame incest: from consequences to care" - Isabelle Aubry, 2010.

[296] "Incest: After amnesia, a painful reconstruction" - Mathilde Brasilier, VivreFm.com, 20/05/2015.

[297] "Miss America By Day : Lessons Learned from Ultimate Betrayals and Unconditional Love" - Marilyn Van Derbur, 2003.

[298] "High on Arrivals : A Memoir" - Laura Mackenzie, 2011.

[299] "Mind-control out of control" - lecture by Cathy O'Brien and Mark Phillips, Granada Forum, 31/10/1996.

[300] "Silence is for perpetrators - The Testimony of X1" - Regina Louf, Editions Houtekiet, 1998.

[301] "The Canadian Journal of Psychiatry" La Revue canadienne de psychiatrie, Vol 33(6), 081988.

[302] "Diagnosis and Treatment of Multiple Personality Disorder" - Frank W. Putnam, 1989.

[303] "Hypnotism and Double Consciousness" - Dr. Azam,1893, p.43-44.

[304] "Variations de la personnalité" - H. Bourru and P. Burot, 1888, p.39-16.

[305] "La Femme Possédée", sorcières, hysterériques et personnalités multiples" - Jacques Antoine Malarewicz, 2005.

[306] "Multiple Personnality and Channeling" - Rayna L. Rogers, Jefferson Journal of Psychiatry : Vol. 9 : Iss. 1, Article 3, 1991.

[307] "Inside A Fractured Mind" - Morley Safer, CBS News, 09/2005.

[308] "A Fractured Mind : My Life with Multiple Personality Disorder" - Robert B. Oxnam, 2006.

[309] Guidelines for the Treatment of Dissociative Identity Disorder in Adults (2011), International Society for the Study of Trauma and Dissociation (SIETD.

[310] "Multiple Personality Disorder - Demons and Angels or Archetypal aspects of the inner self" - Dr. Haraldur Erlendsson, 2003.

[311] "Imke Deistler and Angelika Vogler : Einführung in die Dissociative Identitâtsstôrung - Multiple Persônlichkeit, Junfermann Verlag Paderborn, 2005 - Traduction : www.multiples-pages.net.

[312] "Multiple Personnality Before "Eve" - Adam Crabtree, Journal "Dissociation", Vol.1 No. 1, 03/1993.

[313] Ibid.

[314] "Psychophysiologic Aspects of Multiple Personality Disorder : A Review" - Philip M. Coons, Journal "Dissociation", 03/1988.

[315] Kluft, R.P. (1988). The dissociative disorders. In : J.A. Talbott, R.E. Hales & S.C. Yudofsky (Eds.). Textbook of Psychiatry, 557-585. Washington, DC : American Psychiatric Press.

[316] "Assessment and Treatment of Multiple Personality and Dissociative Disorders" - James P. Bloch, 1991, p.3.

[317]

"Multiple Personality Disorder, Diagnosis, Clinical Features and Treatment" - Colin Ross, 1989.

[318]

"Multiple Personnality Before "Eve" - Adam Crabtree, Journal "Dissociation", Vol.1 N°1, 03/1993.

[319]

Guidelines for the Treatment of Dissociative Identity Disorder in Adults (2011), International Society for the Study of Trauma and Dissociation (SIETD.

[320]

"Belief in the existence of multiple personality disorder among psychologists and psychiatrists" - Dunn, Paolo, Ryan, Van Fleet, Journal of clinical psychology, 1994.

[321]

"Psychiatrists attitudes to multiple personality disorder : A questionnaire study" - F.M. Mai, The Canadian Journal of Psychiatry, 1995.

[322]

"Attitudes toward DSM-IV dissociative disorders diagnoses among board- certified American psychiatrists" - Pope, Oliva, Hudson, Bodkin, Gruber, American Journal of Psychiatry, 1999.

[323]

U.S. v. Greene, 1999 / "Dissociative identity disorder and criminal responsability" Farmer, Middleton, Devereux, dans "Forensic aspects of dissociative identity disorder", Sachs & Galton, 2008.

[324]

"Programmed to Kill : The Politics of Serial Murder" - David McGowan, 2004, p.xiv.

[325]

"EEG Coherence and Dissociative Identity Disorder", Journal "Trauma & Dissociation", Vol.3, 2002.

[326]

"Hippocampal and Amygdala Volumes in Dissociative Identiy Disorder, American Journal of Psychiatry" - Vermetten, Schmahl, Lindner, Loewenstein, Bremner, 2006.

[327]

"One Brain, Two Selves" Neuroimage 20 - Reinders, Nijenhuis, Paans, Korf, Willemsen, J.den Boer, 2003.

[328]

"Bessel van der Kolk wants to transform the treatment of trauma" - Mary Sykes Wylie, Psychotherapy Networker Magazine, 2004.

[329]

"Imke Deistler und Angelika Vogler : Einführung in die Disoziative Identitâtsstôrung - Multiple Persônlichkeit, Junfermann Verlag Paderborn" 2005- www.multiples-pages.net.

[330]

"I Was The Murderer ! Or the Dissociative Identity Disorder In The Cinema" - Beatriz Vera Posek, 2006.

[331]

"Multiple personality disorder patients with a prior diagnosis of schizophrenia" - Colin Ross, G. Ron Norton, Journal "Dissociation", Vol.1 N°2, 06/1988.

[332]

"Les médecins de la C.I.A. et l'scam de la psychiatrie" - Interview with Dr. Colin Ross,

sott.net, 2013.
[333]
"Dissociative disorder among psychiatric patients" - T.Lipsanen, J.Korkeila, P.Pelolta, J.Jarvinen, K.Langen, H.Lauerma, Eur Psychiatry 2004.
[334]
"Dissociation et passage à l'acte violent : une revue de littérature" - Jérémie Vandevoorde, Peggy Le Borgne, 2014.
[335]
"Does discociative schizophrenia exist?" Marie-Christine Laferriere-Simard and Tania Lecomte, 2010.
[336]
"Psychotrauma consequences" - Muriel Salmona, Pratis TV, 2011.
[337]
"Wayne Morris, interview with Lynne Moss-Sharman" - CKLN-FM Mind-Control Series, Part 16.
[338]
"Guidelines for Treating Dissociaitve Identity Disorder in Adults, Third Revision", Journal of Trauma & Dissociation, vol.12, 2011 - International Society for the Study of Trauma and Dissociation - ISSTD.
[339]
"Psychobiological characteristics of dissociative identity disorder : a symptom provocation study." - Reinders, Nijenhuis, Quak, Korf, Haaksma, Paans, Willemsen, den Boer, Biol Psychiatry, volume 60, 2006.
[340]
"The effect of multiple personality disorder on anesthesia : a case report" - Moleman, Hulscher, van der Hart, Scheepstra, Journal "Dissociation" Vol.7 N°3, 09/1994.
[341]
"Handwriting variations in individuals with MPD" - Jane Redfield Yank, Journal "Dissociation", Vol.4 N°1, 03/1991.
[342]
"Childhood Antecedents of Multiple Personality", Chap : "The transgenerational incidence of dissociation and multiple personality" - Richard P. Kluft, 1985, p.127-150.
[343]
"Paris: two children aged 2 and 4 drugged with cocaine and crack" - Sarah- Lou Cohen and Cathelinne Bonnin, BFMTV, 02/03/2012.
[344]
"Animal alters : case reports" - Kate M. Hendrickson, Jean M. Goodwin, Teresita McCarty, Journal "Dissociation", Vol.3 N°4, 12/1990.
[345]
"Healing The Unimaginable : Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control" - Alison Miller, 2012.
[346]
EMDR Europe HAP French-speaking Switzerland by Eva Zimmermann and Thomas Renz, after Dr. Reddemann and Dr. Cornelia Dehner-Rau.
[347]
"Multiple personality : 165 years after Mary Reynolds" - G.B. Greaves, Journal of Nervous Mental Disease, 1980.
[348]
"Incipient multiple personality in children : Four cases" - J. Flagan & P. Mc Mahon, Journal of Nervous Mental Disease, 1984.
[349]

"Psychotherapy with a ritually abused 3-year-old : deceptive innocence" L. Ironside, 1994, dans "Treating Survivors of Satanist Abuse" V. Sinason.

[350]
"Healing The Unimaginable : Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control" - Alison Miller, 2012, p.28.

[351]
"Dissociative identity disorder in childhood : five turkish cases" - Journal "Dissociation", Vol.9 N°4, 12/1996.

[352]
"Recognition and differential diagnosis of dissociative disorders in children ans adolescents" - Nancy L. Hornstein, Journal "Dissociation", Vol.6 N°2/3, juin/sept 1993.

[353]
"Diagnosis of childhood multiple personality disorder" - Gary Peterson, Journal "Dissociation", Vol.4 N°3, 09/1991.

[354]
"The development of symptoms of multiple personality disorder in a child of three" - Richard Riley, John Mead, Journal "Dissociation", Vol.3 N°1, 09/1988.

[355]
"Incest - The ultimate betrayal : Findings from a series of international extreme abuse surveys" - Wanda Karriker, 2008.

[356]
"Childhood Antecedents of Multiple Personality" - Richard P. Kluft, 1985, p.179-180.

[357]
"Dissociative identity disorder in childhood : five turkish cases" - S. Zoroglu, L. Yargic, M. Ozturk, Journal "Dissociation", Vol.9 N°4, 12/1996.

[358]
"I was the murderer ! Or the Dissociative Identity Disorder in the cinema" - Beatriz Vera Posek, 2006.

[359]
"Becoming Yourself : Overcoming Mind Control and Ritual Abuse" - Alison Miller, 2014, p.15.

[360]
Marvel Universe Wiki : Hulk (Bruce Banner), www.marvel.com.

[361]
"The Osiris Complex : Case Studies in Multiple Personality Disorder" - Colin Ross, 1994, p.xii.

[362]
"America in the Middle of Trance-Formation" - Cathy O'Brien & Mark Phillips, 2013, p.62-19.

[363] Ibid, p.327-328.

[364] "For Reasons of National Security" - Cathy O'Brien & Mark Phillips, 2015, p.101-102.

[365] "Healing the Unimaginable : Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control" - Alison Miller, 2012, p.136.

[366] "The Illuminati Formula Used to Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave" - Fritz Springmeier & Cisco Wheeler, 1996.

[367] "Occult Bondage and Deliverance : Counseling the Occultly Oppressed" - Kurt E. Kock, 1972, p.11.

[368] "Jeanne Fery : A Sixteen Century Case of Dissociative Identity Disorder" - Onno van der Hart, Ruth Lierens and Jean Goodwin, The Journal of Psychotherapy 24, 1996.

[369] "What to do with all these devils? Le témoignage d'un exorciste" - Raul Salvucci, 2001, p.41-42.

[370] "Dissociative Symptoms and Reported Trauma Among Patients with Spirit Possession and Matched Healthy Controls in Uganda" - van Duijl, Nijenhuis, Komproe, Gernaat, de Jong, 2010.

[371] "Dissociative Trance Disorder : clinical and rorschach findings in ten persons reporting demon possession and treated by exorcism" - Stefano Ferracuti, Roberto Sacco et Renato Lazzari, Département de psychiatrie et de psychologie de l'université de Rome. 1995.

[372] "Confidences d'un Exorciste" - Nathalie Duplan and Valérie Raulin, 2012.

[373] "Exorcismes et pouvoirs des laïcs - Influences diaboliques" - Pere Ovila Melançon, 1996, p.62.

[374] "Interview : Father Gary Thomas, inspiration for 'The Rite"' - Peg Aloi, 2011. "Cult &
[375] Ritual Abuse" - James Randall Noblitt & Pamela Perskin Noblitt, 2014, p.45.

[376] "Historical, religious, and médical perspectives of possession phenomen" - SN Chiu, Hong-Kong Journal of Psychiatry, 2000.

[377] "Gente" - Renzo Allegri, 30/12/1984, p.113.

[378] "Demon Possession and Mental Illness : Should We Be Making a Differential Diagnosis?" - Chris Cook, Christian Medical Fellowship - Nucleus magazine, 09/1997.

[379] "Seven Degrees of Demonic Persecution"- Thomas J. Euteneuer, "Libera nos a

malo", New Oxford Review, p.39, 05/2010.

[380]
"Healing the Unimaginable : Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control" - Alison Miller, 2012, p.94.

[381]
"The Illuminati Formula Used to Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave" - Fritz Springmeier & Cisco Wheeler, 1996.

[382]
"Ritual Abuse in the 21st Century", Chap : "The use of prayer for inner healing of memories and delivrance with ritual abuse survivons" - Tom Ball, 2008.

[383]
"Possession Demoniacal and Other Among Primitive Races, In Antiquity, The Middle Ages, And Modern Time" - Traugott Konstantin Oesterreich, 1930, p.27.

[384]
"How About Demons ? Possession and Exorcism in the Modern World" - Felicitas D. Goodman, 1984.

[385]
"Confessions : Mémoires de l'exorciste officiel du Vatican" - Pere Gabriele Amorth, 2010, p.145.

[386]
"Dissociative Symptoms and Reported Trauma Among Patients with Spirit Possession and Matched Healthy Controls in Uganda" - van Duijl, Nijenhuis, Komproe, Gernaat, de Jong, 2010.

[387]
"Phenomenology of Trance States Seen at a Psychiatric Hospital in Singapore : A Cross-Cultural Perspective" - Transcultural Psychiatry, 12/2000.

[388]
"Thanks For The Memories : The Truth Has Set Me Free" - Brice Taylor, 1999, p.114.

[389]
"Wife Rape : Understanding the Response of Survivors and Service Providers" - Raquel Kennedy Bergen, 1996, p.30-31.

[390]
"Reach for the Rainbow : Advanced Healing for Survivors of Sexual Abuse" - Lynne D. Finney, 1992.

[391]
"Are You Getting Enlightened or Losing Your Mind ?" - David Gersten, 1997, p.147.

[392]
"The Astral Body - And How to 'Ground' it to Your Physical Body" - Eileen Nauman, allthingshealing.com.

[393]
"The Discovery of the Unconscious : The History and Evolution of Dynamic Psychiatry" - Henri F. Ellenberger, 1981, p.8.

[394] "Near Death Experiences / Near Death Programming" - Svali, 2001. "L'Amérique en pleine Transe-formation" - Cathy O'Brien & Mark Phillips, 2013,

p.328.
[396]
"Wife Rape : Understanding the Response of Survivors and Service Providers" - Raquel Kennedy Bergen, 1996, p.60.
[397]
"Shaman Stories from Siberia" - J.G. Ksenofontov, Adolf Fiedrich et Georges Buddrus, 1955.
[398]
"Principaux traits du shamanisme meo blanc en Indochine" - Guy Morechand, Bulletin de

"Animism and shamanism for all" - Igor Shamanovich, 2010, p.108. "The Secret
[400]
Science Behind Miracles" - Max Freedom Long, 1948, Chap.5.
[401] l'Ecole française d'Extrême-Orient. Tome 47 N°2, 1955. p. 511.
[399]

'L'insoutenable verite de l'eau' - Jacques Collin, 1997.
[402]
"The Lost Secret of Death : Our Divided Souls and the Afterlife" - Peter Novak, 2003, Chap.6.
[403]
"Healing the Unimaginable : Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control" - Alison Miller, 2012, p.268.
[404]
Lynn Schirmer - The Ninth Annual Ritual Abuse, Secretive Organizations and Mind Control Conference, S.M.A.R.T., 08/2006.
[405]
"Healing the Unimaginable : Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control" - Alison Miller, 2012, p.269-270.
[406]
"The Lost Secret of Death : Our Divided Souls and the Afterlife" - Peter Novak, 2003, Chap.6.
[407]
"The Ultimate Journey" - Robert Monroe, 1996, Chap.15.
[408]
"The Journey of Robert Monroe : From Out-of-body Explorer to Consciousness Pioneer" - Ronald Russell, 2007.
[409]
"Dissociative Identity Disorder, Vol.1 Psychological Dynamics" - Tom R. Hawkins, 2010, p.62.
[410]
"Functional disorders of memory" - Spiegel, D., Frischholz, EJ., & Spira,J American Psychiatric Press Review of Psychiatry, 1993.
[411]

"Time Distortions in Dissociative Identity Disorder : Janetian Concepts and Treatment" - Onno van der Hart et Kathy Steele, Journal Dissociation, 1997.

[412] "Restoring Survivors of Satanic Ritual Abuse" - Patricia Baird Clark, 2000.

[413] "Healing the Unimaginable : Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control" - Alison Miller, 2012, p.69.

[414] Ibid, p.272.

[415] "The Discovery of the Unconscious", Henri F. Ellenberger, 1970.

[416] "Multiple Personnality Before "Eve" - Adam Crabtree, Journal "Dissociation", Vol.6 N°1, 03/1993.

[417] "Exorcism and multiple personality disorder from a catholic perspective" - Fr. Joseph Mahoney.

[418] "The Secrets of Psychic Success : The Complete Guide to Unlocking Your Psychic Gifts" - Angela Donovan, 2007, Chap.1.

[419] "The Psychic World of Peter Hurkos" - Norma Lee Browning, 2000, Chap.1.

[420] "Les Pouvoirs inconnus de l'Homme : Le Savoir anterieur" - Chap : "Conclusion sur l'esprit et le cerveau" - Dr John R. Smythies, 1977, p.284.

[421] "Shamans or mediums : Toward a definition of different states of consciousness. Ruth Inge-Heinz, Journal of Transpersonal Anthropology, 1982.

[422] "Le Defi Magique : Satanisme et Socellerie", Vol.2 - Jean Baptiste Martin, François Laplantine, Massimo Introvigne, 1994, p.154.

[423] "Le Shamanisme et les Techniques Archaïques de l'Extase" - Mircea Eliade, 1951, p.104.

[424] "The Osiris Complex : Case studies in Mulitple Personality Disorder" - Colin A. Ross, 1994, p.69-70.

[425] "Hauntings and Poltergeists : Multidisciplinary Perspectives" - James Houran, Rense Lange, 2008.

[426] "Les Pouvoirs inconnus de l'Homme : Les Extra-sensoriels" - Chap : "Rôle du subconscient" - Dr. Gustave Geley, 1976, p. 221.

[427] "Cult and Ritual Abuse" - James Randall Noblitt & Pamela Perskin Noblitt, 2014, p.33.

[428] "Experiences of possession and paranormal phenomena among women in the general population : are they related to traumatic stress and dissociation ?" - Sar, Alioglu, Akyüz, Journal "Trauma & Dissociation", 2014.

[429] "Multiple Personnality and Channeling" - Rayna L. Rogers, Jefferson Journal of Psychiatry : Vol. 9 : Iss. 1, Article 3.

[430] 'Adventures in the Supernormal" - Eilen Garrett, 2002, p.90-91.

[431] "The Omega Project : Near-Death Experiences" - Kenneth Ring, 1992, p.142-144.

[432] "Reframing Consciousness : Art, Mind and Technology" - Chap : "Transcendance" - Kristine Stiles, 1999, p.53-54.

[433] "The Shattered Self : A Psychoanalytic Study of Trauma" - Richard Ulman et Doris Brothers, 1993, p.92-96.

[434] "The Sociology of the Paranormal : A Reconnaissance" - Andrew Greeley, 1975.

[435] "Childhood parenting experiences and adult creativity" - R. Koestner, M. Walker, Journal of Research in Personality, 1999.

[436] "The Capacity for Symbolization in Posttraumatic Stress Disorder" - R. Miller et D. Johnson; Psychological Trauma : Theory, Research, Practice, and Policy, 2011.

[437] "Mental illness, suicide and creativity : 40-year prospective to a population study" - Dr Simon Kyaga, Journal of Psychiatric Research, 2012.

[438] "Paranormal experience and the traumatized mind" - Tony Lawrence, 1999.

[439] "Satanic Ritual Abuse, Principle of Treatment" - Colin A. Ross, 1995, p.26.

[440] "The World Beyond Death" - Brad Steiger, 1982.

[441] "The Emergence of Project SCANATE The First Espionage-Worthy Remote Viewing Experiment Requested by the CIA, 1973" - Ingo Swann, 1995.

[442] "Mind Trek : Exploring Consciousness, Time, and Space Through Remote Viewing" - Joseph McMoneagle, 1993.

[443] "Reframing Consciousness : Art, Mind and Technology" - Roy Ascott, 1999.

[444] "Astronaut Reveals NASA Mind Control Program Involving Children" - Andrew D. Basiago, 2000.

[445] "America in The Trance-Formation" - Cathy O'Brien & Mark Phillips, 2012, p.164.

[446] "Unshackled : A survivor Story of Mind Control" - Kathleen Sullivan, 2003, p.66- 67.

[447] "The bizarre electromagnetic after effects of near death experiences" - Buck Rogers, Waking Times, 2014 / Traduction BistroBarBlog : "Les bizarres conséquences electromagnetiques des NDE".

[448] "Multiple personality disorder with human and non-human subpersonality components" - Stanley G. Smith, Journal "Dissociation", Vol.2 N°1, 03/1989.

[449] "The Hidden Life in Freemasonry" - Charles Webster Leadbeater, p.334.

[450] "La Franc-maçonnerie rendu intelligible a ses adeptes" Tome III - Oswald Wirth, 1986, p.219-130.

[451] "A Criminal History of Mankind" - Colin Wilson, 1984.

[452] "Beyond The Occult" - Colin Wilson, 1988.

[453] "Cult and Ritual Abuse" - James Randall Noblitt & Pamela Perskin Noblitt, 2014, p.86-87.

[454] "Healing From Ritual Abuse and Mind Control, a Presentation to the Sixth Annual Ritual Abuse, Secretive Organizations and Mind Control Conference", Rutz, C., 2003, S.M.A.R.T. Conférences.

[455] "Thanks for the memories : the truth has set me free" - Brice Taylor, 1999, p.16.

[456] "Maltreatment in childhood leaves genetic traces" - 24 Heures, 2012.

[457] "Childhood maltreatment is associated with distinct genomic and epigenetic profiles in posttraumatic stress disorder" - Divya Metha, PNAS, 2012.

[458] "Ascent From Evil : The Healing Journey Out Of Satanic Cult Abuse" - Wendy Hoffman, 1995.

[459] "Restoring the Lost Self : Finding Answers to Healing from Traumatic Socialization and Mind Control in Twenty-first Century Neurocognitive Research" - Lowell Routley, 2009.

[460] "Cult and Ritual Abuse" - James Randall Noblitt & Pamela Perskin Noblitt, 2014, p.85.

[461] "Multiple personhood, survivors of extreme violence, a handbook" - Michaela Huber, 1995.

[462] "Healing The Unimaginable : Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control" - Alison Miller, 2012, p.15.

[463] "For National Security" - Cathy O'Brien & Mark Phillips, 2015, p.404.

[464] "The Greenbaum Speach" or "Greenbaum Presentation" - Conference organized with the assistance of the Center for Abuse Recovery and Empowerment and the Psychiatric Institute

of Washington, D.C..

[465] "Survivors of the Illuminati" (3) - A.204 : Interview with Kathleen Sullivan, translation Parole de Vie.

[466] "Healing the Unimaginable : Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control" - Alison Miller, 2012, p.46.

[467] The Illuminati Formula Used to Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave - Fritz Springmeier & Cisco Wheeler, 1996, chap.1.

[468] "Healing the Unimaginable : Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control" - Alison Miller, 2012, p.94.

[469] An Introduction to the Personality Assessment System - John Winne et John Gittinger, Journal of Community Psychology Monograph Supplement No.38. Rutland, Vermont : Clinical Psychology Publishing Co., Inc. 1973. "The CIA Won't Go Public" - Rolling Stone magazine, 18/07/74.

[470] The Illuminati Formula Used to Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave - Fritz Springmeier & Cisco Wheeler, 1996.

[471] 'L'Amerique en plein Trance-formation' - Cathy O'Brien & Mark Phillips, 2013, p.129.

[472] "Trauma and memory: When pain infiltrates the body and the blade" - Dr Ansgar Rougemont-Bücking.

[473] "Trauma and Recovering : The Aftermath of Violence, from Domestic Abuse to Political Terror" - Judith Lewis Herman, 1997, p.92.

[474] "An Evil Cradling" - Brian Keenan, 1993, p.73.

[475] "A Nation Betrayed : The Chilling True Story of Secret Cold War Experiments Performed on Our Children and Other Innocent People" - Carol Rutz, 2001.

[476] Ibid.

[477] Ibid.

[478] "The developing mind : toward a neurobiology of interpersonal experience" - Daniel Siegel, UCLA School of Medecine, 1999.

[479] "Cours de haute magie de socellerie pratique et de voyance", Vol.2 - Pierre Manoury, 1989, chap.1.

[480] "The Illuminati Formula Used to Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave" - Fritz Springmeier & Cisco Wheeler, 1996.

[481]
Ibid.
[482]
"Healing the Unimaginable : Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control" - Alison Miller, 2012, p.110.
[483]
Ibid, p.94.
[484]
"Dissociation and the Dissociative Disorders : DSM-V and Beyond" - P. Dell & J. O'Neil, 2009.
[485]
"Ritual Abuse and Mind-Control" - Chap : Torture-based mind control : psychological mechanisms and psychotherapeutic approaches to overcoming mind control - Ellen P. Lacter, 2011, p.78.
[486]
"Ritual Abuse and Mind Control : The Manipulation of Attachment Needs" - Orit Badouk Epstein, Joseph Schwartz, Rachel Wingfield Schwartz, 2011, p.146-147.
[487]
"Healing the Unimaginable : Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control" - Alison Miller,

Ibid, p.74.

"Unshackled : A Survivor Story of Mind Control" - Kathleen Sullivan, 2003, p.59. Ibid, p.289.

"Breaking The Chains : Breaking free of cult programming" - Svali, 2000.

2012, p.101.
[488]

[489]

[490]

[491]

[492]
"The Illuminati Formula Used to Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave" - Fritz Springmeier & Cisco Wheeler, 1996.
[493]
Letter from Van Aller of 13/12/1996 (Z200) - Belgium : Dutroux X-Dossier summary, 1235

"Neuropsychologie de la souffrance, cause du refoulement" - Jean-Luc Lasserre. "Thanks

For The Memories : The Truth Has Set Me Free" - Brice Taylor, 1999,

pages, 2005 - Wikileaks.org.
[499]
[494]

[482]

[482] p.68.

[496]

"The Annotated Wizard of Oz" - Michael Patrick Hearn edition, New York : Clarkson N. Potter, 1973.

[497] "Thanks For The Memories : the truth has set me free" - Brice Taylor, 1999, p.66.

[498] Ibid, p.48.

Breaking the Chain : Breaking free of cult programming" - Svali, 2000.

[499]

[500] "Healing the Unimaginable : Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control" - Alison Miller, 2012, p.75-76.

[501] Ibid, p.77-78.

[502] "Restoring Survivors of Satanic Ritual Abuse : Equipping and Releasing God's People for Spirit-Empowered Ministry" - Patricia Baird Clark, 2000.

[503] Report of the Ritual Abuse Task Force Los Angeles County Commission for Women, 1989.

[504] "The Relationship Between Mind Control Programming and Ritual Abuse", Ellen P. Lacter.

[505] "Ritual Abuse and Mind-Control", Chap : The manipulation of attachment" - Torture-based mind control : psychological mechanisms and psychotherapeutic approaches to overcoming mind control, Ellen P. Lacter.

[506] Ibid.

[507] "Cult and Ritual Abuse" - James Randall Noblitt et Pamela Perskin Noblitt, 2014, p.90.

[508] Ibid p.158.

[509] "The Illuminati Formula Used to Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave" - Fritz Springmeier & Cisco Wheeler 1996.

[510] "Healing the Unimaginable : Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control" - Alison Miller, 2012, p.77.

[511] "Svali Speaks" - Overcoming Denial - Svali, 05/2001.

[512] "Kim Noble : a woman divided" - independent.co.uk, 08/2006.

[513] "Survivors of the Illuminati" (8), A209 - Word of Life.

[514] "How the Cult Programs People" - Svali, 2000.

[515] "All Gods Children : The Cult Experience - Salvation Or Slavery ?" - Carroll Stoner, Jo Anne Parke, 1977, p.231.

[516] "Breaking the Chain : breaking free of cult programming" - Svali, 2000.

[517] "America in full Trance-formation" - Cathy O'Brien & Mark Phillips, 2013, p.47-48.

[518] "For National Security" - Cathy O'Brien & Mark Phillips, 2015, p.21.

[519] "Ritual Abuse and Mind-Control : The manipulation of attachment", chap : Torture-based mind control : psychological mechanisms and psychotherapeutic approaches to overcoming mind control, Ellen P. Lacter, 2011, p.116.

[520] "Healing from ritual abuse and mind control" - Ritual Abuse Secretive Organizations and Mind Control Conference, SMART 2003, www.ritualabuse.us.

[521] "Healing the Unimaginable : Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control" - Alison Miller, 2012, p.273.

[522] "Ritual Abuse in the Twenty-first Century : Psychological, Forensic, Social and Political Considerations" - James Randall Noblitt & Pamela Perskin Noblitt, 2008, p.497.

[523] "Ritual Abuse and Mind-Control : The manipulation of attachment", chap : Torture-based mind control : psychological mechanisms and psychotherapeutic approaches to overcoming mind control, Ellen P. Lacter, p.113.

[524] "Breaking the Chain : Breaking free of cult programming" - Svali, 2000.

[525] "Treatment philosophies in the management of multiple personality" - D. Caul, American Psychiatric Association, Atlanta, Georgia, 1978.

[526] "Healing the Unimaginable : Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control" - Alison Miller , 2012, p.246.

[527] "Treating Dissociative Identity Disorder : The Power of the Collective Heart" - Sarah Y. Krakauer, 2001, p.130-131.

[528] "The inner self helper concepts of inner guidance : historical antecedents, its role within dissociation, and clinical utilization" - Christine M. Comstock, Journal Dissociation, Vol.4, N°3, 09/1991.

[529] "For Reasons of National Security" - Cathy O'Brien & Mark Phillips, 2015, p.29- 30.

[530] "Recent Charges of Sexual Abuse of Children in Hollywood Just Tip of Iceberg, Experts Say" - Meagan Murphy, FoxNews.com, 05/12/2011.

[534] Ibid.

[532] Ibid.

[533] Ibid.

[531] "Polanski case: He raped me, shit!" - Doan Bui, Le Nouvel Observateur, 10/2013.

[535]
"Jimmy Savile wasn't the only one at the BBC', says investigative journalist and former child actor Ben Fellows" - 21stcenturywire.com, 10/2011.
[536]
"I was sexually assaulted by Savile on Jim'll Fix It when I was just 14', says TV actress" - Daily Mail, octobre 2012.
[537]
"England: BBC paedophile star Jimmy Savile was rampant even in orphanages" - DondeVamos 10/2012.
[538]
"Jimmy Savile was part of satanic ring" - express.co.uk, 01/2013.
[539]
"I was raped at 13 by Jimmy Savile in satanist ritual" - express.co.uk, 01/2013.
[540]
"England: on the satanic rituals of Jimmy Savile" - Donde Vamos, 06/2013.
[541]
"Roseanne Says Having 7 Personalities Is Tough" - ABC News, 16/07/2001.
[542]
"Larry King Live" - Roseanne Tells Her Story, CNN, 08/2001.
[543]
"Joan Baez and me" - Ronald Bailey, reason.com, 04/11/2004.
[544]
"Ammanda Bynes : 10 hours of sanity, 1 hour of crazy" - TMZ.com, 2013.
[545]
"Amanda Bynes suffering PTSD problems, wants to get better" - Fox411, 2013.
[546]
"Amanda Bynes Tweets About Father's Abuse and Microchip in Her Brain; Now Under Involuntary Psychiatric Hold" - TheVigilantCitizen.com, 10/2014.
[547]
"Rihanna: she suffers from psychological disorders" - aufeminin.com, 2012.
[548]
"Miley Cyrus: How Disney Destroyed It" - gala.fr, 2015.
[549]

"Mary J. Blige Unveils Alter Ego 'Brook' In Busta Video" - MTV News, 2006. "Beyonce

adopts 'Fierce' alter-ego" - news.bbc.co.uk, 2008.

"Tila Tequila Shocks Fans With 'Multiple Personality' Rant" - starpulse.com,

"Exclusive : Anne Heche Interview" - 20/20 ABC News - 09/2001.

"Thanks for the Memories : the truth has set me free" - Brice Taylor, 1999,
"Miley Cyrus: is her questionable behavior due to mental illness?" - closermag.fr, 2013.
[550]

[551]

[552]

2010.
[553]

[535] p.200.

[555]

"How Whitney lost her dazzling voice because of her 'extra-curricular activities" - dailymail.co.uk, février 2012.

[556]

"Angelina Jolie - The Biography : The Story of the World's Most Seductive Star" - Rhona Mercer, chap.1, 2009.

[557]

"Ke$ha turns in a bloody shocker at Future Music Festival, drinks blood from a heart"- The Daily Telegraph, 2011.

[558]

"Cult Watch : What You Need to Know about Spiritual Deception" - John Ankerberg, John Weldon, 1991.

[559]

"Channeling : Investigations on Receiving Information from Paranormal Sources" - Jon Klimo, 1987.

[560]

"The Demon and the Angel : Searching for the Source of Artistic Inspiration" Edward Hirsch, 2003.

[561]

1995.

[562] "Actors and Acting" - Toby Cole, Helen Krich Chinoy (Eds.), Three Rivers Press, "Church of

Satan" - Anton Lavey, p.110.

[563]

"Book 4" - Aleister Crowley, 1980.

[564]

"Demonic Possession : a medical, historical, anthropological, and theological symposium" - John Warwick Montgomery, 1976.

[565]

"Madam Valentino" - Michael Morris, Abbeville Press, 1991.

[566]

"Psychic Kenny Kingston's Guide to Health and Happiness" - Kenny Kingston, (Windy Hill),

"I still talk to..." - Kenny Kingston, Valerie Porter, Seven Locks Press, 2000. "

Goddess : The Secret Life of Marilyn Monroe" - Anthony Summers, 1996. Ibid.

"James Dean, The Mutant King : a Biography" - David Dalton, 2001.

"Peter Sellers : The Mask Behind the Mask" - Peter Evans, 1980.

"Leonardo DiCaprio" - Nancy Krulik, 1998.

1984.

[567]

[568]

[569]

[570]

[571]

[572]

[573] "Marion Cotillard considered herself possessed by the ghost of Edith Piaf" - here radio-canada.ca, 2014.

[574]

"Music and Its Secret Influence Throughout the Ages" - Cyril Scott, 2013. "Elvis" -
[576]
Albert Goldman, 1981, p.436.

[577] "Le Violon : les violonistes et la musique de violon du XVIe au XVIIIe siecle" - Arthur Pougin, 1924, p.106-107.

[578] [575]

[579]

[580] "Elvis : What Happened ?" - Steve Dunleavy, 1977.

[581] "If I Can Dream : Elvis' Own Story" - Larry Geller, 1990.

"The Dallas Morning News", Little Richard, 10/1978, p.14A.

"The Life and Times of Little Richard" - Charles White, 2003.

"Scuse Me While I Kiss The Sky" - David Henderson, p. 251.

[582] "Jimi" - Curtis Knight, Prayer Publishers Inc. New Y ork, 1974.

[583] Extrait du film "Jimi Hendrix", interview avec Fayne Pridgeon, citation dans Heartbeat of the Dragon, p. 50.

[584] People magazine, August 22, 1988, p. 70.

[585] "The Playboy Interviews with John Lennon and Yoko Ono", Berkeley, 1982.

[586] Paul McCartney, interview with Larry King Live, CNN June 2001.

[587] "The Beatles Comme Together" - John Lennon, Reader's Digest, 2001.

[588] "Saturday Evening Post", 08/1964, p. 25.

[589] "Michael Jackson" - Psychic News, 14/02/1987.

[590] "Teen Beat : A tribute to Michael Jackson", 1984.

[591] "The Evening Star" - Oprah Winfrey interview Michael Jackson, 1993.

[592] "Dancing The Dream" - Michael Jackson, 1992.

[593] "No One Here Gets Out Alive" - Jerry Hopkins and Daniel Sugerman, 1995, p. 157-60.

[594]
2006. "Jim Morrison Search for God" - Michael J. Bollinger, 2012.

[595] "Break On Trought : The Life and Death of Jim Morrison" - Riordan & Prochnicky,

[596]

Hammer of the Gods", Stephen Davis, 2001, p. 262.

[597]

Ibid.

[598]

"The Dark Stuff : Selected Writings on Rock Music" - Nick Kent, 2002. Ibid.

[599] Ibid.

[601]

[600] Axcess magazine Volume 2, Issue 2; p.49.

[602]

"The Broken Heart and Violent Fantasies of Lady Gaga" - Neil Strauss, Rolling Stone, 2010.

[603]

"Lady GaGa : My aunt lives inside me" - digitalspy.co.uk, 2010.

[604]

"Lady Gaga holds a seance to get rid of ghost" - Herald Sun, 11/2010.

[605]

"La violence initiale" - Patrick Dupuis, mondesfrancophones.com, 2010.

[606]

"John Lennon's Pact with Satan" - Margaret C. Galitzin / The Lennon Prophecy - Joseph Niezgoda.

[607]

Eyael's translation of the pensinemutine.eklablog.com.

[608]

"The Hidden Life of Marilyn Monroe, The Original Hollywood Mind Control Slave" - Vigilantcitizen.com - "The Hidden Life of Marilyn Monroe, Hollywood's first slave under the control of the mind" - BistroBarBlog.

[609]

"Manchurian Candy" - Colin Bennet, Fortean Times 148, 07/2001.

[610]

"The Mind Manipulators" - Alan Scheflin et Edward Opton, 1978 / Operation Mind-Control - Walter Bowart, 1978.

[611]

"Self Control" by Laura Branigan : A Creepy 80's Video About Mind Control" - vigilantcitizen.com, 2015.

[612]

"Venus and Serena - Discover the truth behind the legends" - Maiken Baird, Michelle Major, 2012.

[613]

"Herschel Walker : Tell the World My Truth" - Bob Woodruff, ABC News, 2008.

[614]

"For Reasons of National Security" - Cathy O'Brien & Mark Phillips, 2015, p.186.

[615]

Joseph Geraci : Hollida Wakefield et Ralph Underwager - Padaika : Journal of Paedophilia, Vol.3, N°1, 1993.

[616] 'True and false accusations of child sex abuse" - Richard Gardner, 1992.

[617] Does parental alienation syndrome have an empirical basis? Critical Review of R. Gardner's Theories and Opinions - Stephanie J. Dallam, Registered Nurse, Master of Nursing, Family Care Practitioner and Legal Worker.

[618] Muriel Salmona - UPP Femmes debout, round table on violence against women, 2011.

[619] Hélène Morano, Europe-Midi, Europe 1, 19/05/2015.

[620] "The Networks of Horror" - Stan Maillaud & Janet Seemann, 2010.

[621] "America in The Trance-Formation" - Cathy O'Brien & Mark Phillips, 2012, p.369.

[622] "Sexual Behavior in the Human Male" - Alfred Kinsey, p.159.

[623] "Kinsey : Crimes and Consequences the Red Queen and the Grand Scheme" - Judith Reisman, 1998.

[624] "Too heavy a pressure to carry" - news-match www.parismatch.com, 1401/2009.

[625] "Rights of the child or freedom of expression, the Netherlands has chosen" - Jean-Pierre Stroobants, lemonde.fr, 19/04/2014.

[626] See "Les réseaux de l'horreur" - Stan Maillaud, Janet Seeman, Marcel Vervloesem and "Le livre de la honte" - Laurence Beneux and Serge Garde, 2001.

[627] "30 witnesses dead..." - Douglas De Coninck, 2004.

[628] "Les Grandes Gueules" - RMC, 7/04/2005.

[629] "The Facts Karl Zero" - 13th Street, 22/05/2009.

[630] "Disappeared: what have they become?" - Karl Zéro, 2014.

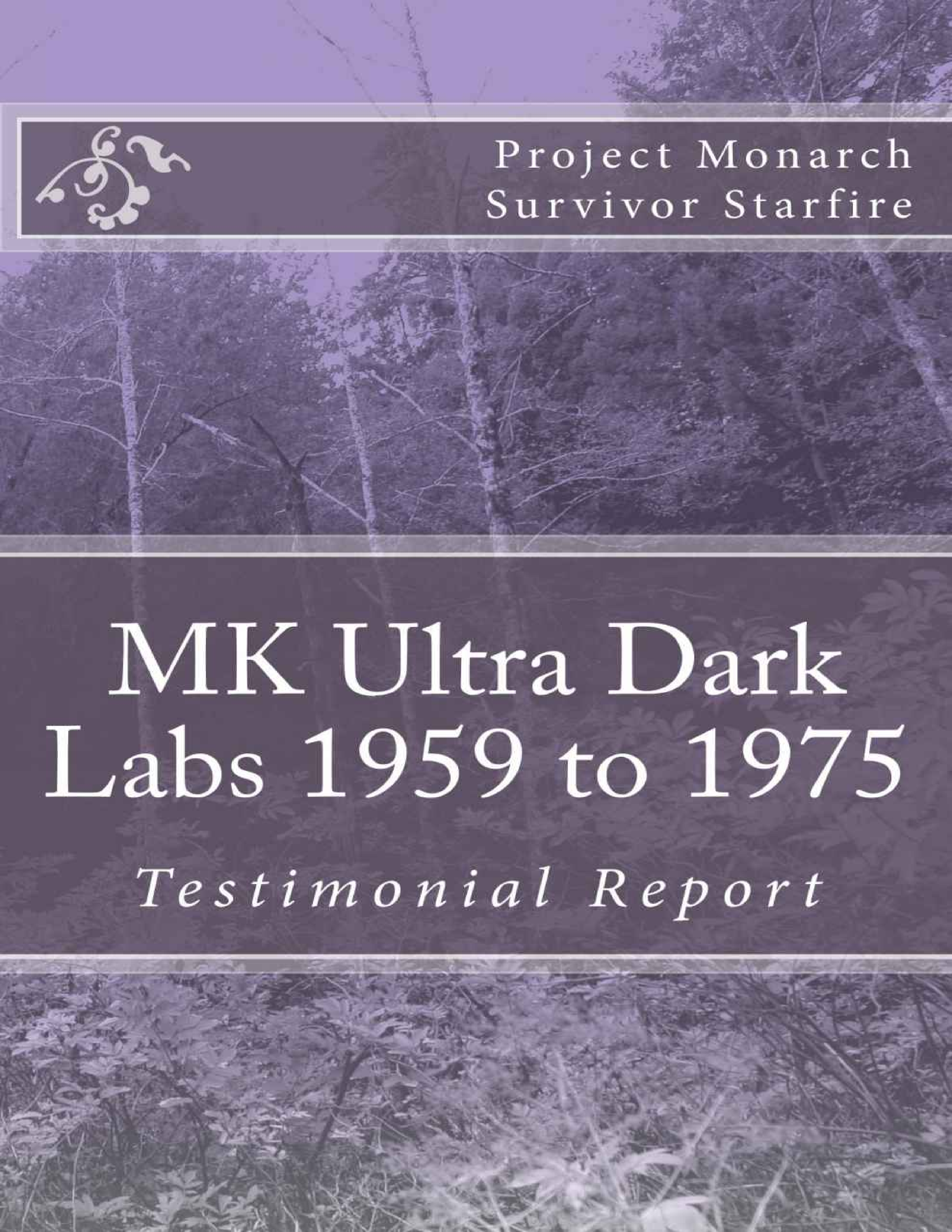
[631] "Marylise Lebranchu reveals a frightening figure 800 children disappeared in 2000" - Serge Garde, l'Humanité, 14/12/2001.

[632] Interview of Fritz Springmeier by Wayne Morris - "Survivors of the Illuminati", 1998.

[633] "Les origines occultistes de la Franc-maçonnerie" - Jean Claude Lozac'hmeur, 2015, p.184.

[634] "La Franc-maçonnerie rendu intelligible a ses adeptes" Tome III - Oswald Wirth, 1986, p.219-130.

[635] "La Conjuration Antichrétienne - Le Temple Maçonnique voulant s'elevating sur les ruines de l'Église Catholique" - Mgr Henri Delassus, Éd. Saint-Rémi 2008, p. 310, 311.



Project Monarch
Survivor Starfire

MK Ultra Dark Labs 1959 to 1975

Testimonial Report

MK Ultra Dark Labs

1959-1975

Dark Lab survivor, Starfire was born into the Illuminati and donated for experiments after her parent died in a plane crash. She describes autism vaccines, brain implant technology and mind control products. The American military-medical-industrial complex recruited aerospace Nazi doctors to America using Operation Paperclip. They took operational plans from Germany which included brainwave linked flight control. Starfire recounts her life as an autistic child in the space program. She describes the effects of test vaccines paired to electromagnetic frequency generators. By using wavelength technology, she recounts attempts by the space program to modify behavior using links to artificial intelligence. Are humans being genetically modified to be more compatible with artificial intelligence for life in space? Read MK Ultra Dark Labs to find out.

Starfire

Contents

- Chapter One: Space Science
  - Secret Experiments
  - Preparing for Contact
- Chapter Two: Spy Craft
  - Advanced Technology
  - On the Edge
- Chapter Three: New Ways to Learn
  - Passive Programming
  - Personal History
- Chapter Four: Mind Control
  - Breaking the Brain
  - Cult Secrets
- Chapter Five: Classified Experiments
  - Races of Hybrids
  - The Mexican Olympics
- Chapter Six: Hypnotic Programming
  - CIA Psychology
  - The Black Box Program
- Chapter Seven: Brain Sculpting Vaccines
  - Toxic Vaccines
  - Brain Sculpting on Babies
  - Deep Brain Hypnosis Sessions
- Chapter Eight: Technical Gangsters
  - Black Pope in Rome

- Cloning Royals
- GPS Tracking by Halo

Chapter Nine: Satellite Hacking

- Black Knight Satellite Hacker
- Crystal Bone Implants

Chapter Ten: Mind Erasure

- Deep Brain Vaccines
- Mass Hypnosis Hid Catholic Sex Crimes

Chapter Eleven: The Israelis

- Navy War Game
- Timed Space

Chapter Twelve: Project Marionette

- Fake Aliens from Human Babies
- Project Marionette
- Cassette Tape Brains & GPS

Chapter Thirteen: Quantum Robotics

- How to Make Human Robots
- High Crimes on Deep Brains
- Methods of Deviants

Chapter Fourteen: Strategy of Luck

- Subversion Planning
- J. Jesus of CIA

Chapter Fifteen: CIA Party

- The Grifters
- Mission Blackmail
- Maybe Tomoka’s Genetics

Chapter Sixteen: The Sponsors

- Three Birds, Not Two
- Nazi Leo & Mossad Al
- Indian Findings
- The Interdimensional Place

Chapter Seventeen: Energy Detectors

- Cross Discipline Consulting
- Compendium of Frequencies
- Brainwave Charting
- Upgrading Computer Languages
- Calling the Ley Lines

Chapter Eighteen: A New Start

- Nuke Core Retrievals
- The Air Foil Wing
- The Gift of Sin
- Jupiter’s Vortexes

References

CHAPTER ONE: SPACE SCIENCE

SECRET EXPERIMENTS

Key Words: Nazi Doctors, Space Exploration

On a bright spring morning in May 1963, a neatly dressed man in a lab coat walked up to my hospital bed and stood quietly observing me. He checked my medical equipment to make sure it was working properly.

I remember smiling at him like I always did to the staff when I woke up at Sunland Mental Hospital in Orlando, Florida. They called me Sunshine and I was about three years old.

This day was different the doctor did not smile back or say hello. In his right hand, the one I could not see; he held a lethal dose of a substance he called red mercury, one of the labs technical gases.

His name was Dr. Siegfield Ruff and he was from Nazi Germany. He was part of one of the most top-secret programs of America called Operation Paperclip. Operation Paperclip was a Cold War black program that was paid by the US Army but did not officially exist.

The US Army Air Force recruited him for the early secret space program. That is why he was sent to work at Sunland, Orlando near the launch facilities of the space center and the Orlando Naval base.

There were no checks and balances. I, a rare survivor, am of the belief that the Americans used the Nazi’s scientists recruited for the space program to cover their own countries crimes against its citizens. Secret crimes like vaccines, mind control and child sex rings for political blackmail.

During World War II, Dr. Ruff was famous because he oversaw the German Experimental Station for Aviation Medicine at the Aero Medical Division in Berlin, Germany. (Jacobsen, 2014). He was tried and acquitted of Nazi war crimes. He was a close colleague of another Nazi named Dr. Hubertus Strughold who worked with astronauts.

Dr. Strughold was called a space pioneer, also recruited for the space program under Operation Paperclip. Most of the Nazi scientists were directly recruited by the US military-industrial establishment to develop technology, medicine, aviation, space and communications.

The Nazi doctors worked under an American man who ran the aviation medicine program named Dr. Armstrong.
Armstrong was based at Wright Field in Ohio. The American military recruited these men and many others from the numerous wars of the last century.

In the earliest stages of the projects, they were supervised by a man named Lieutenant General Donald Putt who held a command post at Wright Field. During World War II, he was an aviation medical doctor based in Germany.

In 1946, Putt, an aviation doctor was one of the first to arrive on the scene at Hermann Goring’s secret aeronautical research center at Volkenrode. When he realized the extent of Hitler’s aviation, rocketry and space research he wanted to save it.

Putt and others like Dr. Armstrong advocated for space and technology to President Eisenhower in 1947. With approval he recruited dozens of scientists for Operation Paperclip. Later, he brought them to Wright Field, Ohio, the home base of the legendary Wright Brothers of aviation fame.

Dr. Ruff and I had worked on projects together before because I was assigned to his caseload. The Americans recruited him to continue his work on space aerodynamics.

He was an expert on the effects of the g-forces on a human body. He worked on seat belts for high speed travel in cars, planes and space ships. Since I was assigned to his experiments. I would sometimes follow an assigned doctor moving to their hospitals for experiments involving the space program.

Ruff had given me injections of “technical gases” before. He had used me in drug trials to measure different effects on the brain. I was simply an experimental human child and I was fully aware of it. It was not a choice.

My parents were dead. By the tender age of three I had already had a lobotomy and didn’t have many emotions at all. I was good at making observations and remembering key elements of the setting, faces, dates, numerical sequences, patterns and shapes. I never knew if I was going to die that day and “not come back”. All attachments were superficial.

The truth of it was that Ruff was brilliant as a surgeon. With help from Dr. Strughold, he had been the one to install a miniature two-way radio the size of a shirt button along my brainstem between my ears during my past years surgical schedule.

I was under three years old, so my brain was more adaptable to modifications. Both doctors used designs gifted to them from Dr. Josef Mengele’s lab projects.

The way I saw it, I got sent right back to Ruff’s lab because I got caught spying during one of CIA Georges missions. I was not supposed to get caught. I damaged my radio equipment during a CIA party. I was used for child sex work.

A member of the Mossad took me from the party after I collapsed to back engineer me at a hospital in Gainesville. I had disappeared for a while. When I healed enough, they sent me to the robotics lab in Orlando to see if the Florida space program wanted me.

Now I was back on Ruff’s table and watched him prepare my shot, probably to kill me over it. He spoke with a German accent in a foreboding voice, “Good luck with this one Starfire”.

I had a very bad feeling because nobody knew about that name, so how did Ruff know. Even at the tender age of three, I had already had three names, one new name each year.

That’s what the space aliens from the secret space programs called me “Starfire”. Maybe I was going to see them as part of the alien exchange and hybridization programs for the American military. I wasn’t sure, but I had a bad feeling and I was scared. I also wanted to act good if they were nice.

Ruff injected me in one smooth move. I immediately had a grand mal seizure and flatlined my life force very quickly. I lost my breathing, sight and hearing so the Nazi's could capture the brainwave data when I flatlined.

I had my own words for the different types of events I experienced. I called this kind of death "hit the deck" because my chest stopped moving. There were no brainwaves on third dimension. I paused to realize that I was dead.

The experiment was to match the resonance of sound and lights to off world objects. In prior experiments, I had been given occult style bird brain geode implants using technical gases to access interdimensional physics. The Egyptians called it the Afterlife.

Now I found myself on the gaseous planet Jupiter with very thick radio bands. I had to push through them as I slowly tractor beamed over to a sparkling fountain of blue ion streams. I had the sensation of trying to breathe and the radio waves were in my mouth. This is where god made birds.

There was a male humanoid there and he had wings. I felt very small in comparison. I could tell he did not want me to stay in that area because they were terra forming and I was in a bad mood way too much. He kind of looked like the picture from my child bible but I wasn't too sure. I remember saying, "Jesus?" to myself.

When I got closer I could see he was the deity Sin from the Anunnaki. It suddenly occurred to me from Sin's thoughts that radio telepathy was tracking me in the interdimensional fields. I transmitted to Sin that Ruff tried to kill me. Sin said, "How?" I said, "A red mercury shot". I felt very sad that I died.

Meanwhile, a small group of scientists were "downstairs" analysing my brainwave data maps. They were trying to track my brainwaves through the interdimensional places and find a space time rip. Rips in the magnetosphere allowed alien space ships to pass into earth's atmosphere. Most were tiny.

My brain was hooked up to a big machine using long needles inserted during brain surgery into the different areas like the pineal gland, the amygdala and acoustic nerves. The Nazi Ruff, was gathered with three others to watch the needle spikes looking for the big jumps when I left my body and died and likewise; when I returned.

I stopped moving forward feeling sad again, like okay, I know I must go back even though I was brain dead now. I couldn't breathe but they can keep a body alive for a long time. Somehow, I remember being pulled under the blue ions and started to feel better at once. Sin, Enki's son was healing me.

At the space centres in Florida and Houston, they had satellite dish technicians, radar operators and military flight crews on stand-by in case somebody came down from Heaven.

Florida was on the alien's flight path and that is where my physical body was located as part of the Sunland secret experiments on American children. Sunland Mental Hospital was a quick fifteen-minute ride to the Naval base and two hours to the launch pads.

Back on the lab, the medical doctors and satellite engineers were looking at brainwaves to see if they could detect more than one "foci" or beats. They had a toddler, under three in front of them generating measurable brainwaves that turned to radio waves and random beats after death. I had the impression that the technicians were looking for my radio waves in space once I had died.

The technicians at the Naval academy had aimed a big radar dish toward the planet Jupiter and its moons Europa and Io looking for pinging noises to pick up signals, even heartbeats and brainwaves.

The brainwave machine had measured my brain's baseline before, during and after the red mercury shot. At six minutes post-mortem, Ruff and the others pronounced me dead and started to clean up.

An orderly came over to retrieve my body for the trip to the morgue down in the basement. He saw foam bubbles in my mouth. The orderly said, “Check her, check her.” One of the doctors came over to put his stethoscope on me. He picked up a heartbeat after I was measurably brain dead for over eight minutes of tape time. He yelled at Ruff to get the machines, stat, stat, stat.

Off in space a satellite confirmed pings from Jupiter and pongs from the Bermuda triangle area. Those Nazi doctors ran to get me back to earth with the trays and carts sliding stat down the hall. The doctors assumed I had contact.

The American military intelligence officer assigned to monitor the experiment was sitting on a chair reading the daily newspaper. He didn’t really know what was happening until the astrophysicist told them what the experiment was all about.

They were trying to see if they could track my signal when I died to an off-world location. Would I make contact as a traveling radio wave and where would I go?

The scientists were directing my signal and trying to measure bilocation. When the scientists explained it to the military intelligence officer he said, “Oh shit, I am glad I came to see this.”

The astrophysicist spoke English and was wearing a headset and holding a small hand-held radar scope. “We are detecting pong sounds now and a craft has entered the Atlantic Ocean. We need to send a bird out to have a look around, Sir. We need to deploy right away to stop any breeches of our airspace and seas”. He was excited.

I was part of Operation Paperclip for mind control experiments, robotics and brain implants with technology. Shockingly, this was in American hospitals and reform schools across Florida, Alabama, Missouri and probably other states too. It was part of the secret space program in America.

In Florida, our state had the space program during the 1960’s decade. There were camps and hospitals for American children who were kept in confinement for medical experiments.

Specifically, the space program and high-altitude testing including support machines like the space suit, oxygen masks and supply. The space industry of the 1960's was a gift to Florida and its people, supplying thousands of jobs and technological advances.

The aviation experiments on children were typical Nazi concentration camp experiments without the focus on massive genocide. The program was scaled back in America for the space program. The goal of the nation was to put a man on the moon while defending our country. The wealthy elite, political top dogs and royal families of Europe, planned manned space missions.

In those days, when the secret space program began, it was an extraordinary time. Logically, it was wise to consider contact with other intelligent species just in case something ever happened.

The American CIA became the coordinator and host of secret research on time travel, spy implants, behavioural training and thought control. The American CIA had given Nazi doctors permission to research mind control, weightlessness, space travel and artificial intelligence. The American military used the German scientists and other POW doctors to excuse their own moral failures.

I found myself in a hospital bed hooked to life support systems with wires in my brain. I was a donated child given to the MK Ultra mind control programs called Project Monarch and Project Marionette

When I woke back up I was different. I was brain damaged with rigid muscles. I couldn't move. I opened my eyes slowly to let the burning light seep in, so I just squinted.

Dr. Ruff was sitting on the chair next to me reading a chart and turning the pages. He looked up and shook his head like this is not good for you.

I knew his face meant no. I could not talk any more.

Every sound was overwhelming like a gunshot tied to fight or flight and my whole body jumped in tension. I did not feel very good from the red mercury shot. My eyes had water coming out like real people called tears.

I saw a machine with buttons and lots of plastic tubing. I could see my blood running through the clear tubing to warm it with chelation therapy. I watched it over and over.

It was too late for me. I had autism, a life-long disability of the mind and body.

PREPARING FOR CONTACT

Key Words: Kennedy Assassination, Aliens, Satellites, Rockets

The counterintelligence agency of the CIA was in mayhem over the Soviets and the alien presence. There was lots of counterintelligence panic and false stories circulated to cover up the secret space program.

By the late 1960's, the public had knowledge of the Roswell crash in New Mexico. By the time the book, The Roswell Incident was released it became a best seller in the 1990's.

The people of earth in general were asking if we are alone. Who is god? How come so much war and death? The government offered the people the answer. There are no aliens but there is weird stuff. Project Bluebook documented sightings and offered explanations like airplanes and swamp gas. The Americans were challenged to figure out what was true. (Steiger)

The 1960's intelligence agencies run by J. Edgar Hoover, Angleton and John McCone had no idea about aliens. They had isolated themselves from the Europeans who had most alien contacts for centuries.

This is because of rare minerals in places like the Carpathian and Ural Mountains. The aliens came here to get minerals for technology just like we all use today.

After Roswell they were briefed on aliens and crash retrievals of the past like the one my sponsor, Al worked on in Missouri when the Manhattan Project was active.

In fact, just in terms of knowing normal military intelligence the Americans had failed. They had no idea how advanced the Europeans, the Italian mafia, the Persians or the Germans really were.

The one area that the Americans controlled was overseas smuggling. They called them rat lines for liquor and refugees. In the 1960's the smuggling industry was helped along by the Nazi scientists who were aviation savvy.

Only the wealthiest elite like Ford and Rockefeller were even aware that Russia, Korea and New Mexico had a space program and were using radar for tracking aliens. Privately, America's technology companies like Raytheon were building new radars, particle beams, lasers and other exotic weapons.

That is why the Nazi scientists were brought over to America, to continue their work and research projects. Radar was useful for lots of applications like finding oil fields and gas deposits.

I believe the wealthy elite like Ford and Rockefeller used CIA George H.W. Bush to actively protect their misuse of American satellite technology. They could use the satellites to radar scan a home illegally.

They could engage “the enemy” using black box products at street level to provide damaging electricity to a single house by 1980. They needed GPS to track cars, people and control locations.

During the 1970’s, these secret projects were linked to cars and President Ford’s family wealth during the politically tumultuous years after Kennedy’s assassination. These few families like Ford, CIA George and Saudi Kings basically owned over half the oil & gas businesses all over the world by 1975.

They funded the secret space program for their own benefits by exploring earth’s land masses for hedge fund assets. They used political office to control their wealth with little success of any challengers for the past fifty years.

After they won control of the spy agencies and political parties, the goal of the secret military-industrial linked companies was to create a spectrum of weapons that extended beyond any single use.

They can be scaled up or down for use against individuals or whole crowds or armies. “ (Robert O. Becker, The Body Electric, 1985)

CIA George was an old spy at heart and was interested in occult practices for gaining power. His German contacts from the Masonic Lodges liked the information discovered in Egypt, Turkey, Persia and old Babylon.

There appeared to be technology including weapons and space programs, astronauts and time travelers. There were star systems and objects that looked like crafts and technology combined.

In the early 1970’s a man named Erich von Daniken, published a famous book called “Chariots of the Gods”. For the first time, people began to pay attention to the idea we are not alone. His books contained pictures of ancient astronauts depicted in stone stele which are pictures carved in rock. On the pictures were weird and curious humanoids of several sizes.

CIA George had his spy heart set out to understand what the gods were talking about. He also wanted to find out where things were hidden so he could locate them.

He realized that the ancient gods had belonged to technology cults of medicine, space exploration, minerals and mining. CIA George was interested in energy, even nuclear energy. He found ways to help fund research to decode the ancient stele and cuneiform languages. A man named Zechariah Sitchin, was demonstrating some success.

There had been some drawings and mathematical equations for processing raw ores. The gods said certain ores were filled with the light of the sun and would turn yellow when energized. The scientists called it uranium and yellow cake in Europe.

Zechariah Sitchin would later publish such works as “The Lost Book of Enki” a now famous biography written by an ancient Sumerian named Enki who crashed on earth. (The Official Web Site of Zecharia Sitchin, n.d.) There were subtle references to a time of Pangea of one large land mass that broke up. Some parts of the middle east had moved. How did it happen?

CIA George loved to speculate. He wondered if the gods on the stele moved the land mass of earth. If so, what kind of technology did they use to geoengineer the planet? He liked finding the fine rock devices buried under the sand.

He called the rock devices “desert probes” because they were tall obelisks buried with GPS pointers to marks in the stars.

He gathered all the data he could and made sure to take it to his space center in Texas. He helped gather the Nazi’s from Germany and funded various black projects as soon as he got enough power. CIA George was not easy to work for at all.

After World War I, the elite families of Europe developed the art of spying because they tried to stop World War II with diplomacy, blackmail and murder. They began using advanced radar detection systems and signal blockers. As technology moved into the future, it was part of the Cold War against Soviet bloc countries like Russia.

The Europeans were more advanced than America military and had experience using beam telemetry like radar, particle, pulsed electromagnetic waves and so forth.

Dr. Robert O. Becker’s book “The Body Electric” described a 1952 Cold War secret meeting between Sandia Corporation in New Mexico and other scientists from the US and USSR (Russia).

The meetings’ purpose was to allegedly exchange information on biological hazards and safety levels. Each time the Soviets sent people who publicly acknowledged the risks of electromagnetic spectrums, radars and dirty electricity, the Americans argued and denied health effects.

Since Washington didn’t believe the Soviet data they set up an experiment themselves. The agency created the Project Pandora in 1965. Project Pandora administrators hired Milton Zaret for advice and research. He was to secretly evaluate the test signal that Project Pandora was detecting from Russia.

Project Pandora analyzed signals being generated from European transmitter systems and the ionosphere. Milton Zaret found the most bothersome signal was composed of several frequencies.

It was apparently aiming for a synergistic (multiplying) effect from various wavelengths and it was beamed directly at the ambassador’s office.

The American Ambassador Walter Stoessel developed a rare blood disease. He suffered headaches and bleeding from the eyes. Two of his predecessors Charles Bohlen and Llewellyn Thompson died of cancer.

No results were released officially, but technicians who worked on the project reported lots of chromosome damage. While most of Project Pandora’s records were destroyed some later released documents related to Project Pandora records suggested exposure levels as high as 4000 microwatts. (Robert O. Becker, The Body Electric, 1985)

CHAPTER TWO: SPY CRAFT

ADVANCED TECHNOLOGY

Key Words: Satellite Hackers, Designer Brains

I spent birth to three months at Queen of the World Hospital, then a full year at a military hospital in Huntsville, Alabama to be brain implanted with a small transmitter and fiber optic threads to conduct ionic light particles. That is where they removed my tailbone and put in a conductive metal antenna by slipping wires up my spinal column.

To create a human baby with advanced technology implants like infrared signal detection; Dr. Ruff used different medical waxes to adhere optical fibers as tough as silk spider webs to nerve tracks in my infant brain. I had several serious injuries during CIA child-sex spy missions and Ruff got very good at repairs.

Dr. Ruff worked with another very notorious man from Hitler’s inner circle. His name was Dr. Emil Salmon. Dr. Salmon had an idea to interface with other objects to manipulate them with wireless energy. Dr. Salmon designed circuits, and some were very tiny and unique. I believe he was the first true satellite hacker and he was teaching me his moves for uplinks and downloads.

Dr. Salmon wanted to control a space ship to increase maneuverability, using the human body and mind to fly, especially at high speed Mach or when the pilot blacked out.

I had to wear a blindfold over my eyes for up to three months after optic surgery implants because my body had to adjust to the new ions, colors, lights and sounds. The optics were not for pictures, the fiber optic implants were links to space telemetry programs, so I could move objects in space and the counterintelligence agency could take pictures. For now, I will say I was being prepared for more advanced links with robotics designed at Sunland.

One other piece was a brain implant to make a tiny radio device. I had several different types over my years in the CIA’s illegal programs. This one was a carved piece of radioactive glass. They had carbon dated the isotopes from a nuclear war almost a million years ago in the Sinai desert. That gave them a resonance pattern to match during oil and gas exploration using satellites to mark locations to explore further by sending teams.

The wealthy Arab families along with the CIA intelligence officers of high rank, decided to allow an occult procedure; matching bird brain geodes from the heads of trained hawks to implants located behind my ears. By using a stethoscope, they could hear pinging from sonar or space signals.

When I was plugged into the satellite GPS using a Cray computer and my old baseline brainwave patterns, the indicator on the EEG tape would jump as the satellite searched the oil fields for useable deposits.

The map makers had updated the areas by using the GPS capable satellites to create pre-charted echolocation grids in the middle east. The satellite owners knew there was liquid underground based on the radar readings of either water or oil. The Saudis had a way of training hawks to fly over a field to locate an oil patch by smelling it. That is how they knew where to look.

The birds would bring a blade of grass for the master to smell as a test for oil and to get a piece of meat. The elite families would GPS the spot and send teams later. These oil fields led to negotiations for land and religious territories in closed door meetings with generals, senators, congressmen and presidents.

Of course, my rights under the Constitution of the United States were ignored in favor of technology, oil, gas and political power moves. The politicians allowed brain surgery on me to violate my rights.

They allowed experiments to understand the soul like pineal gland removal. The pineal gland sits over a nerve center that coordinates energy like a junction box. My implant was wrapped with little copper coils, little silver coils, and gold coils of fine threads. This was a surgical curiosity as the reader might imagine. These were very tiny and surgically stitched onto scar tissue.

The doctors also used a bioluminescent paint made from sea lagoon creatures which made the meninges of my brain glow. They wanted to see if the bioluminescent particles would be used by the body, collected by the pineal gland tiny machine and recast through the optical fibers. They do work. Bioluminescence is not heat energy its cold fusion like lightning bug juice.

After the implants healed over my pineal gland they took me out to the Alabama pine woods to test it with a fly-by using a spy satellite launched from the Florida space center.

The generals told me to run in the woods located behind the hospital. They said, “See that fence, run towards the fence and run underneath the pine trees.”

I could see the fence on the other side of the trees, so I started running and I figured I would hide instead of going to the fence. I diverted my course. I covered myself with a pile of pine needles even though I could hear them getting mad at me.

I could hear their boots crunching on leaves, I counted five men. It was very cold that day, but I could not feel it because my heart was beating fast. I did keep quiet and tried to slow my heart beat, so the satellite could not find me.

I tried to concentrate on jamming signals from their microwaves by angling my head ever so slightly. I did have metal head pieces and could start fires accidently during these types of target practice exercises using microwaves. I did not want to ignite the pine trees.

I feared them because they wore military uniforms and they were armed. Their voices were getting louder and I could hear my handler calling to me saying in German and Russian; “Look up, look up, we see you Monarch.”

If I looked up the infrared eye could be detected so I kept my eyes on the ground listening. I could hear more than one voice saying, ‘Let’s split up”.

I got back up and started running low. You can imagine a preschooler trying to run but I did finish the run to the fence. When I got there, I acted like I had done nothing wrong and put my hands on the fence, turned my back and looked at my feet.

The general took his gun out and held it to the back of my head. He said, “Turn around little girl you shouldn’t have run.” He looked at the military group and Nazi doctors and said, “You may have to build another one of these things.” I waited for him to pull the trigger and squeezed my eyes tight closed just waiting.

About that time a three-star Soviet general came running over saying “No, no”. He took his belt off and tied me to the fence, so the satellite could find me. He saved my life.

On that day, the Soviets and the Americans were meeting to discuss a joint space program. America was demonstrating progress with satellite tracking.

The sharing of resources had been going along for nearly twenty years after World War II. The Americans had gathered a vast amount of technical data, patents, European inventions and so forth.

The Operation Paperclip gathering of scientists had changed history with inventions and modernization. Kennedy wanted to think differently, but we know that did not turn out so well for him. The wealthiest people in the world were not going to give their money or their vision up.

As a matter of fact, I was learning how to handle a great many adult concepts early on in Project Monarch. I was watching the interplay of human emotions, ego, sex, power, greed and need. I was observing mind control weapons being developed.

I had a lobotomy, so I always felt neutral. I had very little social need except for life basics. I had some mental and physical stimulation to maintain my growth. I did not miss anybody.

I had autism and did not want anybody near me unless I knew why. I did not want any more ions in my brain by sharing the light in somebody's eyes. I had to be taught responses by psychological handlers and behavioral trainers. That included daily tasks like eating, self-care and socialization with other children.

During mind control training, different responses to certain training tasks would be repeatedly suggested as part of the programming. For instance, when a child was asked if they liked spinach, the answer was often no. The programmers suggested the child would like spinach and be willing to eat it. The behaviors targeted like "eat spinach" would be evaluated during a follow up study to see if the child liked spinach or ate spinach. If so, how many times in a week or month. The number of times the child ate it anyway would count as a psychological win for handlers.

In some cases, the subjects were to be pre-hypnotized before they went to bed. At the hospital mental ward where I was housed, the patients were given low voice commands and suggestions.

At night, the children were monitored for signs of talking in their sleep that held related content.

The doctors on the night shift used a frequency generator box that plugged into the main electrical box. It generated pulsed waves at 10 hertz cycles during microwave programming into the deep mind.

The voice could gear the commands to thoughts already in the brain like you will try the spinach today. Even though the child hated spinach they would try. Each child was tested for personality types and who was the most suggestible and the least suggestible.

Finally, attempts would be made to produce the standard tests of deep hypnotic trance, such as muscular rigidity, by microwave beams alone.

Nobody liked the experiments at the hospital run by the psychological handlers sent by the CIA at Sunland Mental Hospital Orlando.

One day the black orderly named Howard came in with a big clipboard he put my papers on. He told me to get ready for transfer. I was getting sent back to Huntsville, Alabama for more satellite work.

A month or two after the satellite fly by for GPS I was scheduled to go back for surgery to sculpt a satellite link to start using the infrared that the doctors installed. They were going to connect it using my right hemisphere.

I don’t know exactly what happened, but I will describe it the best I can.

Americans in the medical and psychological fields were learning how to understand the complexity of the total brain and its parts, the hemispheres, brainwaves, symbols and drug interactions.

Before the wars, European scientists were used to working across disciplines while living in Europe to advance technology. In America it was a very different approach of isolation and secrecy.

I remember the day of my hemispheric disconnection because the entire hospital prepared for the visiting military dignitaries. The generals had their military hats on with stars and bars and everybody was saluting them.

They came to watch a Korea doctor and his nurse wife demonstrate metaphysical ghost DNA from the supposed aliens.

The Korean doctor was a former POW named Dr. Peacock. He offered to do a demonstration with his nurse wife present to train other doctors in advanced acupuncture procedures.

During surgical training, the highly skilled Korean doctor disconnected the hemispheres of my brain. When my surgical disconnection was completed, I found myself in a timeless dimension.

I had the sensation of leaving my body invisible but not dead. The Nazi’s doctors were humbled by the Koreans and chattered in whispers nodding their heads to show approval.

The Koreans demonstrated how to express an energetic invisible morphogenic shell with consciousness. It was one method they used to interrogate prisoners of war and send them along interdimensional space until the radio wave runs out of time (space-time).

I got to experience it when I was almost three years old. It can be considered the extreme part of disassociation of human consciousness.

The Korean doctor told the audience in the surgical theater to expect a visitor. That is when I suddenly found myself next to General Westmoreland whom I did poke with my invisible finger. He jumped out of his seat and looked around.

My ability to be in his dimension was being demonstrated so he understood war much better when he decided to leave POW's in camps for brain torture. He did it in Laos, Cambodia and Vietnam. He was shown what can happen. Westmoreland and others like him did not like to be suggested what to do.

That day in the pale-yellow operating theater, General Westmoreland got very angry at the head of surgical secret projects. He stood up with his face bright red and gave a wave for the officers to leave with him.

The surgical suite cleared out fast except for the Nazi medical doctors remaining to finish the surgical training. They were laughing at the western philosophy of death. Westmoreland had seen my soul and he thought it was a parasite product. I was pretty sure that J. Jesus Angleton got a call.

That day the top of the aviation medical elite like Dr. Strughold, were in attendance. He was supervising his team of surgically trained medical doctors along with some medical engineers skilled in miniaturization.

Did General Armstrong and Putt want to make spies out of American infants, toddlers and children? Even some of the Nazi scientists thought the plan was overboard. They had been on trial for this very thing. They knew the Generals were using them to cover up for the wealthy industrialists and bankers who ran America and politics.

ON THE EDGE

Key Words: Soul Experiments, POWs, Tech Transfers

During the planning stages for aviation medicine, the space program used Operation Paperclip to contract a space pioneer named Dr. Hubertus Strughold. During World War II, he was part of the aviation medical team for Hitler and his aeronauts.

Sometimes he worked at the Huntsville, Alabama location supplying research data to university medical programs from his aviation studies like high altitude gases, pressurization studies and so forth. Some of the experiments underway at the secret hospitals like MILAB Huntsville were not always ethical or moral.

In the very early 1960's, the medical establishment was preparing for a war against Vietnam. They were developing brand new facilities like the hospital I was staying at in Huntsville, Alabama. It was close to a major university center and lots of research could be fed out to other universities.

The CIA counterintelligence agency used the economically challenged people in Alabama to feed their programs with human volunteers. One example of a CIA counterintelligence program was the Tuskegee experiment. In the article "The Tuskegee Syphilis Study: Some Ethical Reflections" the author examines the failure of ethical principles in biomedical research projects during the 1950's and 1960's. Black men were given syphilis injections and tracked in the population. (Ogungbure, 2011) That is why the military intelligence community allowed itself to move into human psychology and other realms free of charge. They had no moral objections to implanting a toddler for inhumane experiments.

Meanwhile, I was having an out of body experience. I was distressed because I was in interdimensional purgatory, I wanted out. I remember looking through the glass window at my half brain in the hands of the Korean Dr. Peacock.

It had some attachments to my living body, but I didn't know if I was going to wake back up. They used electric acupuncture which was powerful and feeding my energy source where I was in space time; the operating theater room.

The Korean nurse said, “The right hemisphere is heating to 101 degrees. We need to reattach.” Dr. Peacock slowly turned to place my right hemisphere near a cooling source, a bowl of water with ice and the nurse fanned my brain.

I remember standing near my right shoulder looking down on my little body because now I was closer. Dr. Peacock was holding my hemisphere very carefully while his nurse called out the temperatures to him every degree of change. Meanwhile, my body on the table really had no brain function since it was cooled to hibernation.

Dr. Peacock was removing needles in some areas to make my life force flow in little trickles to the body which made me move closer to my body from the operating room dimension.

He was pulling me back very slowly to my body. I was detached from the right hemisphere until he started to warm the left by inserting an electric needle and then cooled the right.

When the hemispheres very slowly matched all the body temperatures, he placed his stitches over my ipsilateral connection points across the corpus callosum of thick nerve bundles. Then he slowly removed all the acupuncture needles one by one and sewed me back up.

The right hemisphere does not concept time except light and dark, movement and change. The right hemisphere is sensitive to pressure generated from water and fire plasma experiencing heat and cold.

The right hemisphere can move along earth ley lines because radio waves are part of the morphogenic shell of a human being. The Koreans demonstrated this for the German scientists and the military intelligence officers.

The right hemisphere accepts input from the electromagnetic fields of earth as energy source. One of the components of electromagnetic fields is water and that is why Dr. Peacock used the water and the ice. Obviously, it is dangerous to be put out of a human body in that manner.

Students like Ruff attended to learn how to rewire parts of the corpus callosum. The corpus callosum is a large bundle of nerves that connects the hemispheres of the brain to one another for making transitions and coordination for thinking, walking and talking.

Strughold had seen the cooling techniques used in other countries where they did more advanced time travel experiments. They sometimes used the brain as a weapon, warning tool or data sponge by sending the right hemisphere to a star being on a craft and then lifting off. They used the radio wave telemetry to do it.

That day in the operating room was very important because Dr. Hubertus Strughold, attended my surgery to see Dr. Peacock perform Korean medicine. He was a boss of the medical teams for the secret space programs of America.

After that event, the Huntsville counterintelligence group had to find a placement for me or kill me. That is when J. Jesus Angleton and Dr. Strughold put me on the alien flight schedule.

He said why not just call her an alien, so we can get approval to use her. That is what they did on May 30, 1961 when J. Jesus Angleton got approval from the CIA and J. McCone for Project Monarch.

Dr. Strughold oversaw the Aviation Medical Research Institute for the Third Reich. He chose people for the Nazi space program. After the war he worked in America to assist astronaut training at the facility nearby.

When Strughold sent a human on board a craft to go somewhere he had them surgically implanted, so he could track their location in the ionosphere. The guys in the military operations rooms were learning weather modification techniques and remote location tracking.

Basically, in about a three-hour operation, Strughold’s surgical teams of neurologists in training, learned to put an electronic tracker button at the base of the neck.

That area partitioned the brain’s neurological impulses, so the land based team could adjust the person’s neurological functions including memory erasure. They could put them into a mental hibernation state of mind pretty much instantly.

Some of the Nazi’s under contract with the military were assigned to live in the Orlando area. Orlando was very sparse and being developed so they didn’t have much scrutiny. They were living and working near military bases that had back engineered the crash vehicles they were finding. They were building and refining rockets and aviation equipment.

Rich people who owned satellites shot down aliens to save their individual asses. The incidents caused by private operators using American equipment forced the military to referee negotiations or risk total defeat in space. Two space shuttles blew up, didn’t they?

How did I get on board an alien space craft? I was picked up at a military base in Florida. I used to stand on a big spot in one of the meeting rooms on a special type of quartz. The doctors would put drops in my eyes to open the pupil for the alien ship mind link and GPS. I was physically transported in a green gel tube of light on and off the craft.

Sometimes, at the training labs, I was told to look in the direction of a black and white spinning wheel to open a portal to the greys. I could focus my thoughts to the aliens’ minds.

We did something called structured entrainment in cubes and short tunnels, so we could share data with alien technicians. In the 1960’s, America and other countries were installing the cell tower systems of today, the nuclear silos, and wireless energy transmitters.

Most of my work was very detailed and simple once I learned the colors and how to identify them with 100 % accuracy. The missions would play a tone to my ears and ask me what color my eyes saw when I opened them. I could see the outline of energy that was invisible in a lower light spectrum.

They were trying to use colored wavelengths to form links to the brain’s features that could absorb the light wavelength and data flows. I had military handlers document everything that I did during sessions. They asked me how I felt about the other species I had contact with and so forth.

I told them about the tall reptile jumpers with characteristics like small fast Cayman types. I wasn’t allowed to carry weapons at my age.

On the other hand, with the support of the Nazi’s medical staff and psychological staff, I worked with some wonderful species that I did not fear. There was a tall grey with blue eyes and a small grey with spaceman eyes called slits.

The aliens always probed me about fear. I remember them asking me all kinds of things like why did I think their eyes were scary as slits? The aliens responded to my radio waves and vibrations. They did not have smell organs but they telepathed, “Smell fear, feel fear and body shakes”.

I remember being “expressed out of my body” while the aliens operated on my brain. They worked on my occipital lobes for vision. My nervous system was not detecting light properly to my eyes. The ET offered to adjust my rods and cones with their medicines and suction devices. I was not in good shape and they offered to help me before I returned from one of the training missions.

They removed my corneas and gently passed a light beam with magnetic fields in it to remove heavy metals in my eyes. The inner part of the eye called cones were packed with metal ions and my brain was overloading.

Then they played tones, so my brain would heal. My eyes were “hearing” music and not detecting lights well in the light spectrum. My ears were seeing lights and not hearing well on the audio spectrum.

I remember a console with dials and windows on the ship. The floor had grating for cargo storage underneath. They had to put me into a recovery pod before I could be transported.

They may have cloned me again, I can’t remember. I felt patient with the process like I had to recover and finish what I was doing in the space program. In return, the aliens got negotiating power and they wanted new underground bases.

CHAPTER THREE: NEW WAYS TO LEARN

PASSIVE PROGRAMMING

Key Words: Rehabilitation, Mind Control, Cloning

When I wasn’t on the space ship being repaired or tracked for military programs, I was in the hospital for rehabilitation training. I worked with physical objects like rolling a ball or trying to catch with my weak arm. If I didn’t look at the trainer throw the ball they’d bounce off me to focus my attention.

Sometimes the doctors put us on the floor in straight-jackets and tested the wall plugs to make sure we could hear frequencies. For those with more implants like me, they fine-tuned the black box meter programs for mind control weapons. One early type was the static shock treatments and they shock trained us away from wall plugs.

The scientists in those days were testing the work of Jose M.R. Delgado on human children. Delgado was an advocate of a psycho-civilized society through mind control. He was a staunch supporter of direct electrical stimulation of the brain. He was made famous during a demonstration of stopping a charging bull in its tracks with a radio impulse transmitted to an implanted electrode.

In other experiments, Delgado placed chick embryos in minuscule magnetic fields pulsed at 10, 100, and 1,000 hertz. He used fields of only 0.001 gauss, or roughly the strength of the earth field’s micro pulsations. Chicks exposed to the 10 hertz fields were normal. Those dosed at the highest frequency of 1,000 hertz yielded abnormalities. This had implications for learning and behavioral control methods.

The Nazi’s hoped to speed up the leaning process using advanced technology. They were thoughtful teachers with well formulated goals for their programs. In the beginning of my experiments, I received some tutoring to prepare me for different tasks.

They blended technology like the wavelengths and shock stick as part of their behavioral programs. They were testing the technology on different races and IQ levels. They intended to directly shape society using strata levels and provide intelligence training for IQ improvement.

They made sure a child in their programs had certain learning milestones. They broke their German into concepts and young children could answer questions with accuracy.

The kids chosen for spy work had a lot to learn including languages like Russia, Chinese, English, French and Spanish in that order. I was trained in a more holistic fashion and we did not waste time. They used a shock stick.

I could point to languages that I heard. I could recognize different nationalities by their bone structure, their ears and eye color. I could point to pictures in three different languages plus English.

The Nazi's thought about how the brain develops and used a different approach which involved the five senses. Later, as the child grew some knowledge about some vestige organs like the palatal Ph sensors and mid-line structures like vocal folds. The Nazi's studied the effects of frequencies on the pitch of the voice and could cause laryngitis.

They identified the primary archetypes like opposites, materials and lights. They focused training on the opposites moving into vibration using colored lights to teach math by wavelength and manipulatives to count.

During language training they involved stories with sequential events and wove early lessons into the sequences using puppets and dolls. I did enjoy my tutoring time. They managed to catch most of my developmental abilities up to within normal levels except for the autism symptoms and lack of conversational speech.

After I completed rehabilitation on my brain and body and my implants were healed I went to live on Hutchinson Island. I was sent to live temporarily with a man named Don, his wife and infant son. He was a trained hypnotist and CIA handler.

The devices the CIA handlers used for hypnosis were about the size of a pie plate which contained two colors like black and white. They could add two other colors of yellow and red if they needed it. I was taught to watch the colors at different rates until they blended to grey.

It was uncomfortable because it evoked the alien presence which was a feeling. They paired an audio tone that was an interdimensional frequency.

The black color on the spinning wheel was to link the brain to visual harmonics. The black box on the table was plugged into the wall. It played interdimensional audio tones in sequences.

The hypnotic trainers would use the white color on the spinning wheel as a blocker to the person’s own thoughts. The mind control trainers used white light strobes pulsed in timed sequences. The audio feed was white noise so that the person’s thoughts were subdued. Any foreign signals like alien signals could be isolated. The military was hacking my brain this way.

I had lots of brainwave data and I had trained using electrodes to contact foreign brainwaves and frequencies. When I made contact which might be detected by voice responses like are you alone in dream time? No. Who is there? Two greys.

Red could be added to the wheel if the session might engage hostile ET. Yellow meant warnings to be given like “We are bombing around your underground base”. Later the program expanded to all the rainbow colors. The CIA did not hypnotize children under three years old.

PERSONAL HISTORY

Key Words: Bloodlines, CIA, Nuremburg, J. Jesus Angleton

When my parents married in Italy in 1958, they came to America as diplomats from Eastern Europe using the Catholic Church and American CIA. My family knew an American man named James Jesus Angleton whom they met in Rome. He became the director of Counterintelligence Operations for the United States Central Intelligence Agency (CIA).

Angleton's job was to oversee special studies involving all countries where the CIA was operating. He later explained that his experiences in Europe meant that he was "sharply aware of the Soviet long-term objectives in subversion." (28) (James Jesus Angleton - Spartacus Educational, n.d.) The life of James Jesus Angleton is still a mystery. He spoke with a strange British accent and preferred tea over coffee. He was mysteriously united with the British Parliament’s military planning strategy especially when it came to spies. He helped them develop MI5 and the James Bond angle including spy bling. J. Jesus Angleton was a Catholic with deep ties to European Roman Catholic priests trying to flee communist Russia.

In October 1944, Angleton was transferred to Rome as commanding officer of Special Counter-Intelligence Unit Z. In March 1945, he was promoted to first lieutenant and became head of X-2 for the whole of Italy.

This may be where Angleton consolidated his power base after the fall of Italy and the withdrawal of allied forces. The survivors were at the mercy of untold pillaging, continued rape and murder. Angleton expanded the rat lines to get more people out of Italy and Europe. They were dying too fast to wait and things were in political turmoil.

Some research suggested that Angleton’s counterintelligence unit uncovered some of the secret correspondence between Hitler and Mussolini that was later introduced into the Nuremberg trials as proof of their conspiracy.

My birth mother was scheduled to testify at the Nuremburg Trials in 1963 on behalf of the Romanian tragedy at Dachau, but she did not live long enough. Both of my parents knew they were targeted by the KGB, CIA and MI5.

My parents were Eastern European royals leaving after the Soviet police invaded. My mother was a representative of the Red Cross.

The most famous camp to cause terror to the Romanians was Dachau. My family has missing years of history, especially my mother. I know next to nothing.

A 2016 article in the Holocaust and Genocide Journal titled; Dachau and the SS: A Schooling in Violence, described post camp liberation.

“In the popular imagination Dachau is, after Auschwitz, perhaps the most recognizable symbol of the National Socialist concentration camp system.

Indeed, films of Allied military forces liberating concentration camps in Germany in 1945 had an immediate and powerful impact on world opinion.

Pictures of skeletal survivors juxtaposed with piles of human corpses stacked like cordwood in barracks or railway cars continue to serve for many as the iconic images of the Holocaust.” (Westermann, 2016) During World War II with the purge of Stalin, the Catholic Church tried to help refugees coming from the concentration camps like Dachau and Romanian prisons.

Before I was born, my mother and my grandmother were scheduled to be purged since they were Romanians. My grandmother came from the European royals. She married twice and produced a family of six children. My mother was one of them, born in 1933 the same year Dachau opened.

My grandmother, a Princess became withdrawn. Her favourite brother, the King of Romania abdicated his throne. The new governments of Soviet Stalinists took her title and her money.

After the King of Romania abdicated his title and authority, the princess entered a convent and became a nun working part-time at Queen of the World orphanage for girls in Kansas City, Kansas.

The Nazi’s studied blood and cellular structures that carried genetics. Blood held the mitochondrial genetics they could change, modify and destroy if so willed.

The Nazi’s were looking for cellular structures that were responsive to radio waves and at least bidirectional polarity as a dipole. They liked the reptilian blood structure and were skilled crossing it into other genetics by the time World War II ended.

The reason was to establish a joint space program using blood that could tolerate oxygen deprivation and cold temperatures needed for hibernation. They called it "hibernation genetics" with the intention of space travel.

Grandmother, princess, nun, also worked on the Red Cross for America and Romania during World War I and II. The Princess nun was an amazing woman writing many books about the wars, international law and religion. She may have been involved to supply both Nazi's and Soviets with blood from specific bloodlines.

Grandmother princess nun had been called to Kansas City to answer a few questions about her own activities during World War II. I don't think she expected to have a twin baby discovered by the counterintelligence CIA director. I was standing in front of her with old buddy J. Jesus Angleton and he was fuming mad.

J. Jesus Angleton questioned her to see if I was a clone. She said that her daughter had a child and the child died in a plane crash. J. Jesus said, "No, there were two children. Did Josef Mengele want one for a twinning study?" He went on, "What were you doing with the infant you took? Did Mineola leave her here or not?"

The Princess nun would not tell him anything. The Princess nun said maybe I had been cloned from Dachau or Buchenwald camp. She wasn't sure where they started the cloning and twinning from eggs.

My birth mother did remember having her appendix removed at the Dachau camp when she was nine years old. Maybe Josef took eggs from her ovaries for his experiments. She had no idea what J. Jesus Angleton was talking about.

He caught the Princess nun in a very big lie. Her daughter had two infants which were fraternal twins. Mineola and Jarov never knew they had twins. Immediately after birth, they were given the male child. He was the one they took with them according to crash records. Princess nun started to cry. She was not finished yet.

The Princess nun said, "I work for Mr. Hoover. We are going to let the Nazi's implant her with spy gear since her eye is crooked. She is supposed to go back to Romania." I could tell she was angry at being compromised.

J. Jesus considered the situation and asked her directly to tell him what she was going to do with me.

“Hoover was going to send a man named Oswald and his Russian wife back to Soviet Russia as diplomats with a brand-new baby. Mr. Oswald said no.”

J. Jesus Angleton had caught her so easily because very few people knew about my Soviet cat brain implants and spy tech. He knew their plans because he listened. The Princess nun had plans to sell me over to Hoover. Some of the other royal families were involved like Al’s family in Missouri. Al may have worked for FBI.

Al, his wife and Don with his now pregnant wife, had taken me to New Orleans in the early Spring of 1962. J. Jesus had no idea who else besides him was listening, but he had his eye on them for sure.

There was a secret meeting set up at some notorious labs in New Orleans and I went there for a check-up. I was also presented as a candidate for adoption with a clean bill of health.

Don and his pregnant wife met with two agents that Hoover sent. The meeting was set up in the French Quarter of historic New Orleans in a buffet style restaurant with good French coffee.

Al, my sponsor grandfather who was under watch by the Bureau, met with some of his contacts in the Masons who worked directly with Hoover to arrange the adoption meeting.

Don, his wife and I were meeting another married couple from Eastern Europe. The couple was without any children at the time. The couple considered relocating back to Romania during the following year as diplomats.

Hoover had offered to assist their relocation if Romania granted the married couple diplomatic status. The princess nun was to ask her brothers if it was okay for Mr. Oswald to be a diplomat to Russia since he was fluent in Eastern European languages.

In the end, the couple who were also FBI agents, declined to use an infant for spying, citing ethical reasons. In fact, Mr. Oswald and his wife were appalled at the offer. Was J. Jesus listening to the meeting that morning?

You can understand that if Hoover had thought about sending Oswald to spy on the Soviets that the CIA and J. Jesus might not be very happy. In fact, it was getting very dangerous because CIA George might not understand.

The reason, it was going to mess up CIA George's global ambitions because he had a space ship factory in the port city of Gdansk. It was too late because the Princess nun was confessing, but was she cloning?

The Princess nun worked with blood, chelation and plasma separation techniques. The governments came to gather materials and blood products for testing and for sale.

She may have been aware of cloning experiments at the German concentration camps and the technology transfer.

Even then, they were looking to gather stem cells. I saw them scraping placentas and the afterbirth sacs from new mothers at the hospitals by my own report.

I lived in hospitals the first six years of my childhood doing a multitude of experimental testing from autism shots to hibernation for space travel. Princess nun made it clear that she wanted nothing to do with me after my parents died.

I was just a little toddler when she acted like that, but I already had a cold heart towards people. I didn't care. I was a scientist for Mother Nature; a spy for nature.

That was my rock solid alter. I gave myself my own job and figured when I grew up I could turn the Mother Nature alter into a real biologist or something like that. Maybe I wouldn't be multiple personality and that is exactly what happened. I made a good choice of view point.

I had early behavioural analysis training as I grew up. Scientists documented my body growth as slow and uneven. My brainwaves were studied in many different experiments.

Of course, I feared the doctors sometimes, but I was also used to being handled like a human experiment. I was trained to handle the surgical blade using only hypnosis to block the pain, so they could cut into my brain.

After what the Princess nun said about Dachau and Buchenwald I thought they were treating me humanely. I never knew what I was missing so I didn't grieve or expect anything.

I was taught how to form temporary bonds and expected my sponsors to perform their missions. I thought like a spy. The hospital was my home. I had no parents, no grandparents, nobody closely related to me at all.

The hospital was run by unusual people like Nazi scientists and military trainers in behavioural psychology. Every week the CIA sent an Israeli trainer in to see me. She was a graduate student and I liked her well enough. I never called anybody Mommy or Daddy or Grandpa until they taught me to do so. I was just doing a job.

I did know how to behave and the polite features of dialogue like greetings and answering questions with yes or no. If I fought back or turned away from my handlers, I was slapped across the face or shocked with a training stick. I had to perform, it wasn't a choice.

The Princess nun really did not care what the American military did with me so long as she did not get in trouble herself or make the King of Spain mad.

The Princess nun signed the paperwork to make me a ward of Kansas. About two years later, after I had a tragic accident at my sponsors home, J. Jesus Angleton donated me to MK Ultra. I got sent back to the hospitals at Sunland.

As far as spy manoeuvres and political secrets, Jesus Angleton had some big ones about cloned people. He was Catholic too and convinced Princess nun she would win favour with god by telling him about the cloning of royals.

The Nuremburg Trials were in 1963 with the disclosure of some of Mengele's lab projects being reviewed. J. Jesus Angleton wanted to protect certain wealthy people in the Vatican who controlled technology.

J. Jesus saw it as an opportunity to spy by way of family connections into the Soviet Union by controlling Hoover's FBI plans. Princess nun saw it as an opportunity to protect the Spanish royals where her money came from.

I knew that the Soviets and the Nazi's were removing the ovaries and testicles of important people. I saw them do it at the hospital.

They were going to clone children for the royals and manipulate them with genetics to sell them to other government officials. Maybe even the aliens would pay more for the royal genetics. I never knew what to think.

I did understand the outcome of the world wars. The royals gave up their titles in Eastern Europe and tried to flee. If captured, they faced execution by a firing squad or worse, forced labour in a camp.

I heard other survivors talk about it. There were so many families that were murdered that the guards began to save body parts for breeding labs in the post war communist bloc.

Children were valuable to economies for child sex and child labour. The guards could sell the victorious a “get even package” for multi-generational slavery and intergenerational revenges.

The people in the government were not very good at taking care of babies when they were orphaned. To be honest, I am not even sure if I was birthed by a human mother. The technology that was retrieved from crashed space ships was so advanced they may have cloned me. This may have been part of the big secret for the wars we have fought.

I was a good candidate for genetic testing because the Spanish royals kept the genetic records in Madrid and Barcelona. The Spanish royals planned to replace their relatives with other bloodlines who would not challenge their thrones or crowns. The outcomes of my vaccine treatments were tracked, and I came from an old bloodline.

After I got the red mercury shot from Dr Ruff, I could not sit up. I could not eat. I could not walk. I could not talk. I could not open my eyes in the light of the sun. I closed my eyes when people looked at me. I did not have a name, I did not want a name and I did not answer to my name.

A few years later, I got my official diagnosis. I was a savant autistic. The American CIA kept me in the vaccine program to pair up with mind control for training people with autism until I was 15 years old. I was trapped into experiments on my brain. I have been under surveillance my whole life as a black box human experiment.

CHAPTER FOUR: MIND CONTROL

BREAKING THE BRAIN

Key Words: Mind Control Weapons, MK Ultra, Dirty Electrics

America has a secret history of experimenting with mind control weapons. Some of the more famous names of the program are Operation Paperclip, Operation Artichoke, Operation MK Ultra and Bluebird.

Under the MK Ultra project known as Monarch, one key function was testing vaccines as weapons. The CIA intelligence officers did not want people to know what they put in vaccines. The Nazi’s designed them with their knowledge of toxic substances and especially undetectable poisons. (GAO, 1994).

The popular talk is that the Monarch program was about butterflies and cocoons but that is only a very small part of it. The butterfly produced poisons that warn off predators.

There were other meanings for Project Monarch as researcher, Fritz Springmeir suggested. One of the primary reasons that the Monarch mind-control programming was named Monarch programming was because of the Monarch butterfly. The Monarch forms patterns from energy.

The Monarch butterfly learns where it was born using GPS and it passes this knowledge via genetics on to its offspring from generation to generation. This was one of the key animals that tipped scientists off, that knowledge can be passed genetically through the geodes, crystals and other particles it grows.

If knowledge is passed genetically, can their inner minds be stolen if they know valuable things by taking any brain crystals or geodes?

The Monarch program is based upon Illuminati and Nazi goals to create a Master race in part through genetics. I was tagged for research because my father was the last monarch from his Austrian bloodline of Kings. A rather small group of elite thinkers, like Henry Kissinger and George Soros were trying to create the superior “King” archetype using genetic traits they could control.

They reckoned if knowledge can be passed genetically, then it is important that parents be found that can pass the correct knowledge onto those victims selected for the Monarch mind-control.

Can knowledge be saved for brain hacking by using mind control like hypnosis, deep brain vaccines and brainwaves? Knowledge is a copy and save program.

Sadly, the "correct knowledge" involved a long-term program to promote child sex so that somehow it would be okay at the archetypical level of thinking. The scientists and behaviorists did deep brain microwave pinning during electric acupuncture.

The primary factor for the trauma-based mind-control is the ability to disassociate. It was discovered that this ability is passed genetically from generation to generation." (Springmeir, 2017)

That is because disassociation is a function of brainwave manipulation. Brainwave manipulation was an occult goal for programmers and studied in private. Nobody liked the idea of brain surgery, experiments and implants. The methods of the science went underground.

When the members of the military used trauma and surgical methods to change the natural structure and function of the brain the outcome was altered states of consciousness.

They used the human body and brain to manipulate the brain's access to radio waves. In the 1960's, by my report, the goal of the technological gangsters was to access wireless data before they had advanced computers with random access memory and microchips. In other words, the Nazi's were designing baby brains to link with artificial telemetry for mind control.

During World War II, at the Dachau camp, they had worked on establishing a behavioural program for children beginning with the in-utero foetuses applying electrified acupuncture needles. Were the Nazi doctors manipulating the development of the brain and neurology?

My mother, was associated with the Red Cross at Dachau camp. I believe she may have been scheduled to testify about the atrocities at the 1963 Nuremburg Trials but never made it.

Unfortunately, some of these types of experiments involving foetuses, infants and toddlers may have been carried out in secret hospital programs in poor American states with little oversight from political elites.

When our military discovered the Nazi doctors research, they brought it to America using Operation Paperclip. The military managers, like Putt and Armstrong assigned the Nazi doctors to mental hospitals to carry out the experiments on unwitting patients, orphans and those who could not defend themselves.

Under the MK Ultra program named Marionette, the doctors worked with Tesla's theories on wireless energy transmission, electricity and electromagnetic spectrum. They learned to control the brains and nervous systems of children by studying brainwaves. Eventually, they developed a range of mind control products.

For example, in 1974, an American scientist named J.F. Schapitz, designed mind control experiments using electromagnetic energy. One of his stated goals was to demonstrate the use of hypnosis. He wanted effective control over his volunteer subjects.

He described his use of the spoken word as effective. The words of suggestion were uttered by the hypnotist to the patient and those "suggestions" were conveyed by modulated electromagnetic energy directly into the subconscious parts of the human brain.

He demonstrated that when a subject was seated in front of a hypnotist, by exposing the subject's body to electromagnetic energy, the brain would absorb the words of the hypnotist.

They consistently followed his directions with accuracy beyond chance over 50% of attempts. He stated that he has documented this state of consciousness without any "technical devices". The person exposed to the words of the hypnotist would have no conscious control of the information.

What Schapitz is saying is that there is nothing obvious, no technical devices like obvious black boxes for receiving or transcoding the messages. With the invention of alternating electrical currents (AC/DC), the electromagnetic spectrum is delivered every day.

He further proposed delivering a nasty behavioral plan to potential subjects of his experiments. In the first part of his experiment, Schapitz proposed recording brainwaves induced by drug use so he could record the subject's personality on drugs.

In the next part, he modulated the signal and shot the subject using the electromagnetic spectrum. Schapitz was using a microwave beam to recreate the effects of drug use on a sober subject. He was successful, and his work was funded by the CIA and others.

Schapitz designed many experiments to demonstrate the effectiveness of mind control weapons once the patterns for consciousness were established. Schapitz took it one step further and wanted to demonstrate the control over free will and choices.

In this last example, Schapitz's demonstrated the use of beams to manipulate the level of consciousness of test subjects without their informed consent. In the first step, the subjects would be given a test of one hundred questions, ranging from easy to technical. The test was planned so the subjects would know some but not all the answers.

In a later follow-up study, his subjects were under the influence of hypnotics generated from Schapitz's electromagnetic electric fields. The subjects were in tranced states of consciousness and didn't know they were being subjected to radiation.

Schapitz devised "information beams" suggesting answers for some of the items they'd left blank. In other words, Schapitz was piloting remote learning and mind control.

Some of the correct answers would receive "interference beams" to cause amnesia for some of their correct answers for things they would know.

Schapitz also provided suggestions for memory falsification for other correct answers. A new test checked the results two weeks later and confirmed suggestibility using electromagnetic fields to mimic brainwaves.

Some of Shapitz’s experiments involved impulse buying. One of his mind control tests was the implanting of hypnotic suggestions for simple acts, like leaving the lab to buy an item, which were to be triggered by a suggested time, spoken word, or sight. Subjects were to be interviewed later.

“It may be expected,” Schapitz wrote, “that they rationalize their behavior and consider it to be under taken out of their own free will.”

Back then, the cold war was on between the Soviets and Americans. Nuclear radiation, tissue damage and decay rates were the topics and the politicians wanted to study the effects of radiation.

The Americans began testing X-ray machines in the Sunland hospital. That’s how I lost the bone called the forehead. The Nazi’s used so much radiation that my bones became soft and spongy. I spent hours with the test X ray machines for the medical researchers.

After they were done I received metal pieces to replace the rotten bones from radiation damage. Strange to say this, the Nazi doctors were excellent at reconstructing my face and adding body parts.

The American CIA began bringing the scientists here to Florida during the 1930’s and expanded during the following decades. Most Americans don’t know how deeply the Nazi’s had infiltrated the heartland of this country. They set up a space program at Cape Kennedy for weather satellite launches.

Florida had its own secrets like the high-tech space program co-established with the Nazi regime before during and after the World Wars. They secretly worked on the physics of light, sound and plasma that are not general knowledge.

Florida has been a secret research host location to establish high tech communication links using wireless telemetry theories to create a remote controlled behavioral program. The program was a joint program to complete what I call the New World Order.

The American intelligence agency considered itself in charge of our psychology and decided to use operant conditioning. Operant conditioning is a type of learning in which the strength of a behaviour is modified by the behaviour's consequences, such as reward or punishment. This type of reward and punishment system is effective with artificial intelligence programs such as the ones in use today. It was adapted for mind control programs and branding.

Back in the set-up days of satellite telemetry systems, the only way they could prove they had a satellite link was to demonstrate a connection to a ground location, target or spot.

That is one of the later uses for the Soviet cat brain implants. I could be shocked or controlled like Jose Delgado's bull. Just like Delgado's button, my implant device could send electric shocks like static electricity to my hands. The experiment that Delgado performed will be explained further but it had profound effects on the development of mind control products.

My implant designs were based on an admitted CIA project called "Acoustic Kitty". (U.S. Central Intelligence Agency, 2014). It was not very difficult to imagine a human baby being substituted for the word cat or kitten for the MK Ultra Monarch spy program.

There are drawings to show how they designed the Acoustic Kitty with the brain implants. It is not that hard to do surgically. They did it in stages.

I had my tailbone removed as part of surgical modifications for the Monarch spy program. It is permanent, and it connects to other implants placed in my hearing system to form a spy radio.

In surgeries performed over the years 1959 to around 1966, James Jesus Angleton allowed me to be implanted like Acoustic Kitty.

In those days, the space program attracted wealthy industrialists, space engineers and software developers. They were political paedophiles in cults and they were swarming over the space program in Florida.

They were child sex traffickers. (Homosexual Prostitution Ring Ensnares VIPS with Reagan, Bush : 'Call boys' took midnight tour of White House, n.d.).

We could not get help in those days. The judges placed me and many other children back in the homes of the paedophiles with sex behaviour training. Different military intelligence officers assigned me to child sex rings, because they spied on other CIA members, FBI, politicians and clergy.

By 1970, the satellite program was in place to provide ABA tones to the acoustic nerve in my right and left ear using cell towers for telemetry. I was being trained like an animal from the Spaniard Delgado's lab experiments with audio tones to warn me and shock as the negative reinforcement.

Some mind control programs were even paired to the electrical wiring in the house. This is because electrical engineers working with military communication experts could piggy back a signal through the electrical wiring system using a telephone line black box to split the frequencies and control the output of energy.

Eventually, the black boxes became the smart meters of America; a much more advanced system for mind control weapons. Most people don't understand the negative effects of electricity which some call "dirty electricity".

In a 1979 study, Nancy Wertheimer and Ed Leeper of the University of Colorado Medical Centre in Denver, published a study of childhood cancer and power lines using data from 344 deaths from childhood cancer and their location to power lines.

The wiring of each house and its distance from the nearest transformers were studied. The researchers divided the houses into two groups. The study defined the two groups based on the signal strength of their electrical wiring.

They divided them based on those houses with high-current wiring configurations producing strong magnetic fields and those with low.

The childhood death rate from leukemia, lymph node cancer, and nervous system tumours in the high-current homes was more than double the rate in low-current homes.

CULT SECRETS

Key Words: Secret Cults, Rituals, Murder, Trauma

From 1945 to 1975, the secrets of America were kept tight and that is why nearly one million children disappeared without a trace. Some of them went to a place I call Chop Shop to be sacrificed for medical experiments, sexual slavery and satanic ritual abuse.

I can only say that James Jesus Angleton who worked counterintelligence at CIA approved my own situation for chop shop in a document he signed on May 30, 1961 authorizing the Project Monarch experiments.

A Chop Shop can be set up anywhere a group of people are willing to keep secrets, violate human rights and work together to be a cult. The usually kill together since there is a law called murder they use for blackmail. They did not like jail at all and called murder their religion.

My sponsor had built his basement home to host these special blood ceremonies. He had a side entrance to his basement so famous people would not be seen like the gangster, Al Capone.

My sponsor had a drain pipe in his basement to wash the blood away. My sponsor was the host of the gathering and his name was, Al, but he was not Al Capone.

That is what I got to learn by watching the Masonic groups that came to my sponsor’s house in Missouri. Back then, they had worked on the Manhattan project together and were in a cult.

They would pull up in their fine cars and each man carried a box with him. In the box was his robe which was a black velvet with a white stitching. The pattern was an eye with rays shooting out of it. The eye was in the middle of a pyramid encircled by the Sun, the black Sun.

The highest-ranking member of the group, usually a Mason would call the names of attendees and ask if they were ready to do the lodges business. Then the leader would say words like “Are you ready to see the sacrifice?” The brothers would all mumble and say “Yes, yes, yes”.

Then a door opened from upstairs streaming light down the stairs to the bottom. I could hear the creaking of the stair steps as the woman slowly came down.

She was a tragic princess from Europe in a trancelike state and she carried a limp, drugged female child. The expressionless woman looked hypnotized as she carried the little sacrifice.

I was just a child too, like the unconscious baby. I could see the toddlers mop of soft black curls, her exposed throat, blue skin and the foam from the poison she drank.

She had been raped all day among the men; slap marks apparent, bite marks apparent. Yesterday she had been an orphan, but today she would reckon home to her star.

The cult had a box of cedar wood with an inlaid mother of pearl design; the same sun and pyramid like the robes. Inside the box were the tools for the ceremony.

A little silver pipette with a very sharp end for the puncture of the carotid artery. The leader ceremoniously held it up for the men to worship the death device.

The hypnotized woman paused at the bottom of the basement stairs and waited for the next step. Al walked over and got the baby.

He brought the baby to the centre of the circle near the drain and placed her on the ground next to me. The baby smelled like almonds and I shook my head and closed my eyes. I put my hand over my eye and rocked back and forth.

The men did not like it. Somebody made a “Sssh” sound.

Al looked at me and said; “Shut up or I will pop you in the yap.”

I froze like ice. I looked sideways at the baby. She wasn’t breathing anymore, and I looked back up at Al.

He didn’t say much. “She’s an idiot. We beg your pardon, my brothers. “

I was very quiet and started staring at the basement floor. They got on with the circle and I covered my ears with my hands.

Al glowered at me. I put my hands down.

The woman took the six o’clock position of the circle. The leader took the twelve o’clock.

At that moment one of the elders in a robe stepped forward out of the clock circle line.

He said; “Brothers, I beg a pause to bring a matter forward.” Everybody turned their heads to the doorway of the basement.

A tall nude black woman stepped forward and approached the circle. Her hair was wrapped in a black velvet occult turban with the sun symbols.

She took the nine-o clock position because her power was ascending. They placed a robe on her to cover her and add her to their power circle. She was the only female voice to chant or sing in the circle.

Al was a big hand and I was a little hand in the middle of the occult clock. The Palestinian child to be sacrificed was a bloodline whose time had run out. Romanian Hebrews were next and that is why I was the little hand. My voice was already silenced by autism.

I knew Al wanted me to puncture her neck with the pipette, but I could not do it. Since the autism shots I could only use one arm and I had to sit and scoot to move around.

I could not stand up independently and needed help. I had to hold onto something. I could not use both hands since the red mercury shot paralysed my left arm. I had to wear a diaper again.

Al punctured her, and the blood ran down the pipette to a chalice. They filled a chalice of silver and gold and passed it around. Each drank, and each man paused with blood on his lips in a weird hideous way.

In those days of the 1960’s, the victim was almost always an Eastern European or female Palestinian child. In the case of the child killer cults that came from Europe, they used to tear their victim’s apart by surgically extracting the heart.

After the blood drained and she was pale; the heart was removed with a silver scalpel. The hooded doctor in a robe did the removal. Doc neatly sliced through her rib cage and used a little chisel to pop it up since she was a baby.

I managed to scoot back away from the scene because it was making a gushing sound. I was retching and gagging. Doc pulled it out and released the entanglements. Then he cut it out of the tough sack into small sections.

The heart pieces were passed around on a small silver plate. Each man and the black woman took a tiny piece and chewed it before swallowing. They spoke strange words and asked for their wishes to be done. They were a spiritually committed group.

After it was all done, the men removed the robes and put everything neatly back in place. I watched everything with my file cabinet mind sitting perfectly still and perfectly terrified.

When the ceremony was finished Mr., AL made a few phones calls and a little while later a Chinese lady came to get the child’s body. It was all wrapped up and ready. Al cleaned the basement all night and by the next day it was like nothing ever happened.

Do you know what they did? They all went to work the next day. Some worked at the fire station. One was a doctor. One was a famous gangster and sold liquor. Another worked at the courthouse and filed testimony transcripts in the official records.

Some of the ex-Nazi scientists and communists worked at the college and university levels to organize the projects for their long-term gain using satellite and cell tower telemetry paired with known behavioural psychology.

More importantly these are the men who set up the vaccine program for American children. They set up the clock of life based upon a ritual they performed to signify time. It was always about control and payback; even minor slights.

They set up the social security system and linked it to satellite systems. Eventually, their cult groups got their computer programmers to hack into all kinds of things.

They took children away from families just like evil fairies. They took children to make amusement park robotics and killed them for technology. They set up programs to manage their victims with autism; like me.

By that November in 1963, these powerful cults had organized enough to successfully shoot a President of America in the head.

The tactics of shock and awe for terror worked so well on President Kennedy they did it again to his brother. Robert Kennedy was the most important lawyer in America at the time he was murdered.

I figured I would be next on the blood drinkers list.

The German elite with the American intelligence services betrayed the entire world using mind control weapons and applied behavioural analysis systems. Then, they sold them back to the Soviets (Russia) and many other countries like China, England and even Pakistan.

CHAPTER FIVE: CLASSIFIED EXPERIMENTS

RACES OF HYBRIDS

Key Words: Mengele, Brain Experiments, Political Control

During the Holocaust of World War II; Dr. Josef Mengele is best remembered for engineering experimental labs for medical procedures on the brain, nervous system and spine. He managed the program for the Nazi's and had gathered the research to extrapolate data.

"Mengele disappeared from Auschwitz in Jan. 1945, several months before the final chaos began in the Third Reich. He disappeared so the Illuminati could smuggle him to the U.S., so that his exceptional knowledge of programming—honed and fined tuned on thousands of concentration camp child victims could be used on a grand scale in the U.S." (Springmeir, 2017)

"When the Monarch Programming started, the top men were Illuminati. Originally, Joseph Mengele was the lead programmer. He had already achieved the rank of Grand Master within the Illuminati. He had become skilled in music, in Kabbalistic Magic, in dancing, in abortions, in torture and programming children.

"This procedure didn't change when Mengele came over—the programming just jumped from being an occult science to one that had full access to the medical, psychiatric, judicial, scientific and governmental sectors via the power of the National Security Act and the Intelligence agencies."

"The Illuminati's programming of multiples prior to Mengele's arrival were simplistic, compared to the sophisticated techniques engineered by the Nazi Germans whose Mind Control research included some non-German nationals such as some Italians. " (Springmeir, 2017)

After the war Mengele and the others negotiated for freedom, refugee status and money so they sold their research to the American government. That is why Mengele kept individual logs from the experiments and gathered them from the other doctors.

He kept individual recipes for brain damage. He kept them very neatly and precisely. He was creating the master race for the Nazi's.

In her book, Operation Paperclip, Jacobsen provided grim details and photographs of gruesome experiments on Europeans and Romanians. After the world wars ended a new program called eugenics developed to reformat them with new genetics.

This was the start of the hybridization programs in America after WWII. Many articles are published in journals talking about experiments like "Human Experimentation; an Overview of Cold War". (GAO, 1994)

Our wealthy elite, some military generals and some spy agencies decided to expand the hybridization program the Nazi's began during WWII. There were thousands of secret labs and they had no safeguards for the public.

Illuminati researcher Fritz Springmeir found disturbing evidence of mass networking. He said if the CIA didn't have the international backing of the movers and shakers of the world, it would have been exposed and done away with. The CIA is a front for the Illuminati, and the CIA in turn sets up fronts." (Springmeir, 2017)

He went on to describe the hospitals as "are elaborate well-staffed, well-equipped programming sites."

Within the military intelligence network, any of the state mental hospitals like the McGill Psychiatric Training Network might be engaged in mind control studies. Some hospitals in the network might be St. Mary's, NASA in Huntsville, AL; the Presidio, CA; and China Lake, CA, to name a few." (Springmeir, 2017).

I personally received treatment from hospitals in this network described by Mr. Springmeir. I had lobotomy, shock therapy, behavioral training and other procedures like various metal implants.

Were the Germans involved in creating children for pedophile rings? I became suspicious of them (hospital staff) over time when I met other female Floridians who had brain scans as adults. They reported brain damage. Young adult females without other risks reported hollows and dead tissue from their brain scans.

Did the nursery staff use a long needle to puncture the frontal lobe of white female babies at the hairline level? Did they do other races?

When I asked the young adult females their birth hospital, it was always a coastal hospital. I suspected the Germans encamped in Florida from 100 years ago were running a stop loss program after World War II as part of being anti-Semitic.

This is not just an exaggerated statement about hospitals and the network. I can drive to a hospital in each major Florida city. Even today, I can ride my bike to a lobotomy hospital (its remains) only 15 minutes away. These were big networks and our ancestors allowed it to happen to us.

The Illuminati couldn’t do it alone without its fronts. Satanists within the Network & the CIA took over Boy’s Town, Nebraska in the early 1950s. They used that famous orphanage for a constant supply of boys for child sex and mind control programming. Boy’s Town is perhaps the most famous, but there are whole long lists of others. (Springmeir, 2017)

In 1963, I tested new drugs for them while working on the labs at Sunland Mental Hospital in Orlando. My hair fell out all the time. I drank radiation. I ate radioactive pills from the Army and Navy. I have never been paid one dime for radiation exposure and the brain cancer I had got when I was a kid.

All the President’s apologies to MK Ultra survivors seemed to have skipped me in various Senate Hearings. (1977 Senate Hearing on MKULTRA: Table of Contents/Main Index, n.d.)

In some of my experiments the doctors disconnected my left and right brain. I had two separate brains running two different types of information. I had my left eye removed to test heavy metal build up on the optic nerve. They taped it to my face and I could see the doctor from a split field. The eyeball removal experience was something I can never forget.

Those were the types of experiments the people in the CIA and the military operated on children back in those days. America planned this research. American men and women took it to chop shop. This summary explains some of the major MK Ultra projects developed during the 1950’s and 60’s. (Project MKUltra, n.d.)

According to declassified documents the; “CIA documents suggest that “chemical, biological and radiological” means were investigated for mind control as part of MK Ultra. An estimated $10 million USD (roughly $87.5 million adjusted for inflation) or more was spent.”

That meant the government of America was testing radiation on people, chemicals on people and biological materials like vaccines.

This place was no different than the war camps of Dachau, Buchenwald or Auschwitz. The same Nazi doctors developed refined versions for American children. The military intelligence agencies were operated by practicing Satanists.

During the 1960’s, the psychology was subdued militarily with covert intelligence gathering which turned to sexuality and mind control.

When Project MK Ultra officially got underway in April 1953, experiments included administering LSD to mental patients, prisoners, drug addicts and prostitutes—"people who could not fight back,” as one agency officer put it.

The goal for mental manipulation of individuals was of interest to those in power including the Canadian government. The experiments were exported to Canada when the CIA recruited Scottish psychiatrist Donald Ewen Cameron, creator of the “psychic driving” concept, which the CIA found particularly interesting. Cameron had been hoping to correct schizophrenia by erasing existing memories and reprogramming the psyche**.”** (Project MKUltra, n.d.)

I wondered if disconnecting the hemispheres of the brain was part of the programming for targets. That is because they can recreate the effect for schizophrenia where the victim talks out loud to access their own thoughts using hearing from one side of the brain to another.

They use the electromagnetic frequencies at certain wavelengths to interfere with the signals from the corpus callosum brain fiber bundles.

All this high science was sympathetic to the occultist agenda. Most came directly from the CIA and the Army. The military intelligence and politicians were linked together using the force of negative occult practices like child sex, sex slaves and homosexuality. The CIA attracted members of the Satanic religion.

The political elite and others developed many perverse practices to stay together through shame and blackmail as they moved up the ladder and developed their super egos.

Once the elite understood enough about physics and space they began satellite and cell tower based mind control programs paired with high technology to use brainwaves.

In fact, one of the goals for 1960 funding was to create a tracking chip either in the dog tag, the helmet or the boots of the soldiers. The highest priority were the elite groups like Green Beret, Rangers and Delta force.

The military knew where the POWs were located using satellite trackers. The Vietnam war and all other wars since have been planned to develop advanced artificial intelligence delivered through brainwave technology.

Much of this technology is mind control for branding purposes which will be explained how they do it in upcoming segments.

THE MEXICAN OLYMPICS

Key Words: EMDR, Resurrection, Secret Implant Technology

During most of the year 2011, I attended a type of brain based therapy called EMDR once a week at a doctor’s office in Hallandale, Florida. I was trying to unlock what I thought was severe trauma and Doc was coaching me on a new computer based program. (Shapiro & Laliotis, 2015) The program delivered mild shock through finger electrodes and bilateral binaural hearing white noise tones at below 1500 Hertz of cycles per second through a headphone. I could adjust the pulse rate of the white noise to help calm my heartbeats.

Once I was hooked up I tracked a smiley face from left to right on the computer screen. After each session I had body symptoms, dizziness, nausea and could not concentrate.

I could not remember much about my life younger than 17 years old when I left the cult. My memories were vague and confusing of early childhood.

I had a family of two sides after World War II finally ended. The females were struggling to survive, and some may have grown up living at camps like Dachau.

On the other side of the intelligence fence were the Austrian males who were taken as POW’s. In a rather sickening move, some of the Operation Paperclip German Nazis were given custody of young orphaned victims when they came to America. I believe that his how Al, my sponsor got to America in 1914 and was issued a birth certificate. The rat lines have been operational since World War I.

After World War II, the orphaned children such as Romanians, Austrian and French royals after the camps were liberated were tracked by the American intelligence agencies. Some others were taking refuge after the war in Canada. Those were Persian French royal bloodlines, some of my sponsor, Don’s relatives.

All the refugees had lost family members, children, parents, land and their businesses. All these bloodlines were targeted for vaccine experiments and mind control. All my sponsor family members were enrolled in the mind control programs whether we liked it or not.

The German scientists from Operation Paperclip could keep an eye on me for use in their longitudinal studies for autism. Autism was one of the hybrid projects for radiation, vaccine pairing and mind control products.

I had many years of therapy to cope with post-traumatic stress syndrome. I could name the culprits, show the scars and tell a small part of a larger story but no justice could occur.

My therapist told me to remember what I could, so I could finally get the whole story. I did remember hypnosis sessions after a nasty beating and that is where the EMDR therapy started in 2011.

I remember it was the middle of summer in the year 1968. The Olympics were on television and brand-new color television sales were skyrocketing.

This was a big starting point for mind control and the massive technology roll out. (Mexico 1968 Summer Olympics, n.d.) The Mexican Olympics had been promoted by television advertisers as a world-wide event.

The medical military and the world's elite medical establishment were having a human contest to prepare for space travel with limited oxygen sources.

The Nazi, Soviet and Asian medical scientists were nervous because the Mexican Olympics were held at a very high altitude in the ring of fire mountains. (Wrynn, 2006).

A very large group of scientists were presenting their best human experiments in heart, lungs and oxygen delivery to muscles. Every gold medal counted in genetics.

I was doing dishes after dinner watching the Mexican Olympics from the sink area. I noticed I was the only one and my foster mother had taken all her children to another part of the house.

I froze, and I heard Don's wheezing breath and saw his face twisted with rage. He grabbed me by the throat and said, "Don't you ever talk about how I treat you again."

Then he slammed my right temple to the countertop and held my face down. Then, like an animal he ripped my pretty yellow shirt off my body in shreds.

He took the shirt and tried to stuff it in my mouth. I bit him. He dragged me off the counter on the floor and started slamming my metal head on the fake marble floor. I should have died.

I did lose consciousness and I did step out of my damaged body. I watched from a spiritual viewpoint like remote viewing. I was just seven years old.

Don thought he had killed me with a brain injury. He had no idea of what the Nazi doctors had put in me like the metal face parts around my temples and forehead.

Don called his family members around to view his kill; his wife and his kids. He lectured them on fear saying, “Don’t let this happen to you”.

The kids were all stunned and traumatized because they thought I was dead. My foster mother was concerned and went to get smelling salts to try and wake me up.

Don took his babies and toddlers to the back of the house. I woke back up after I reentered my body, but it was very painful to open my eyes to see her kneeling over me with the smelling salts. I could not wake back up after that.

I did not go to the hospital. They buried me in a shallow grave about one hundred feet in the woods behind their house. I woke up out of the grave, naked and cold. I just basically sat up. I went to the hose and washed myself off. The back door was open, so I went inside got dressed and laid down in my own bed.

My foster mother and father did not know I had the Soviet cat brain implant that sent a distress signal. They did not know I was planned by Nazi space doctors and secret space military for low oxygen warfare during high altitude testing. That is why I was watching the Olympics with interest before I was attacked.

Don and his wife did not realize that I was laying in my bed in the bedroom. I remember Don looking panicked when the FBI doctor and detective came to the house asking for me.

His wife looked distressed and scared. She took her babies to the back of the house and closed her bedroom door. Don let them in, so they could examine me. It was not a choice, the FBI had guns, cars and official jackets. Don had just been caught at attempted murder.

Don was very defensive when the FBI asked them about the shallow grave incident. At that point, Don and his wife knew they were being watched through my eyes and ears.

The doctor wanted to see me, so Don brought him back to my room where I was resting in bed. The FBI doctor took proof that I was alive by taking photographs.

After that, the FBI told Don a few things about being involved with the satanic groups. I was a space program asset and he was not allowed to kill me or seriously injure me. Their old buddy James Jesus Angleton was not going to be able to protect them much longer. Things were changing.

After that, Don went to the Catholic church and told them he felt threatened. He and his wife did not know what I was. They called the Monsignor on the telephone and asked him to talk to them about possession.

Don told them a story about when I was a baby and they left me outside for a minute. When he and his wife came back they noticed a large alligator near me, so they shot it. Maybe I got possessed. Don made an appointment for me to see the Monsignor when he came to St. Helens.

St. Helens Catholic Church was a large facility located near the Indian River Lagoon about one hour south of the space center in Florida. The location was once a settlement for Indian families. The Catholic church acquired the land and built a church, school and a convent on the site. The Indians were gone.

Don dropped me off at the priests’ private residence called the rectory. It did not go well for me. The Monsignor called me to his room. He bent me over a chair and sexually molested me.

I was about 7 years old and I was very angry at him. I looked in the mirror. My face was red and flushed. I washed myself off from his attack and felt the throbbing in my head.

The Monsignor made me go into a small side room he had set up in a secret closet. I sat on a wooden prayer bench in front of his ritual tabernacle table until he was done with the preparations. Monsignor said I did have a demon inside of me and he talked to it through my tail.

He set his silver cup up, put a miniature grill on the top and lit some incense that smelled like sulfur and threw it inside the cup. He gestured for me to stand and he took my finger and pricked it to bleed into the cup.

I started to cry my silent tears. They were hurting my feelings. My blood expresses radio waves like my heart beats when my implant is turned on. I wanted him to leave me alone.

I have a right hemisphere soul that I was trying to reunite with from the experiments. He said some Latin words. I crinkled my nose at the smell and felt what I best describe as an angelic being beside me on my left.

Monsignor squeezed the finger tight and held my hand, so I would not pull away. The being only lasted a few seconds. Monsignor had created a torsion field by using the silver stiletto to pierce my blood and force it out of my blood vessel into his cup. I did not like it.

The Monsignor was demonstrating his control over my ancient grey brain. He knew how to do it. Our brains are seamed in the middle behind our ears all the way to our tailbones. His anal rape caused one side to swell and loose plexus connections in the spine, mid and dorsal brain.

Monsignor was not stupid. The being did not have a separate self but was not normally visible in this dimension. I was not stupid either, I was injured. I was not the evil entity raping kids to find out if they had demons; he was. The Monsignor was a serial rapist. I personally, was not worried about my right brained hemisphere ghost. He was.

I was worried about more brain damage and autism symptoms. I was sick and tired of studies on my brain and violent injuries to my body.

I had no idea of everything the Nazi’s did to me, how could I? My soul was trying to come back to my right hemisphere after trauma and surgery.

Don, the Catholic, took me home. They called the Princess nun at her convent and told her they removed my reptile demon. Unfortunately for me, the Monsignor had a heart attack and died that weekend.

Monsignor had suffered a long history of heart problems and he was very old at that time anyway. I could not really say to anyone that it might be a coiled energy wave that killed Monsignor.

The military was testing microwaves in the electrical plugs at the time. But I couldn’t defend myself. That’s why there were too many radio waves when Monsignor poked my finger, they were testing beams. Blood responds to radio waves.

A few days later I got called to the convent attached to the church to talk to the Head nun. The convent was on the same property as the church. It was Spanish style, so I figured I was in very big trouble as I ducked under the white arches. It always smelled like flowers at the convent.

There was fine black wrought iron staircase from Barcelona that led upstairs to their apartment areas. There were two nuns waiting for me standing in the doorway. I did not like the looks of it, like an ambush.

The nuns had on their habits, rosaries and robes. They stood there as I climbed the steps toward them slowly making my feet move forward, hand on the black rail.

When I got to the top step, I hesitated as I waited for instructions. Sister Mary waved me in past the door. Both were frowning, and the little nun closed the door softly.

The nun named Sister Mary motioned for me to sit down on the couch. I shook my head, no. I was ready to run.

Sister Mary cocked her habit. Sister scowled at me while the other nun left us in private. She said she knew my grandmother. She knew I had autism.

Autism was a sign of the devil in the Catholic church. All disability was sign of the devil to them. She said I was an evil child and my autism diagnosis was proof I was possessed by another spirit.

I didn’t know what she was talking about. She said I was possessed. My doctor said I had brain damage on my right hemisphere.

Sister Mary said, “Do you know who Satan is?” I shook my head no, I did not. I made a sad face at Sister Mary and the little nun peeping in the shadowy hallway, like I didn’t understand.

The Nun herself looked possessed at that point because their crappy Catholic philosophy did not work on me; the savant autistic scientist. I don’t know if they knew about the Nazi space program for testing on kids with algae shots, implants, shock sticks and metal head parts.

I had a lobotomy so what could I say. It was hard for me to talk, especially when I was scared. I did try with the question, “Did Monsignor go to Heaven?” They said, yes and they missed him very much.

I started feeling a quiver with fresh tears over about the only thing I could relate to and said; “My dog died from a heartworm. I miss him very much. Did he go to Heaven? “

They said, “no”. I said, “Well, I would fix that, so I could see my dog someday.” They asked me if I wanted to see Monsignor in Heaven. I shook my head, no.

I did not tell them Monsignor raped me and talked to the demon in my tail already. I did not want any more talks.

They asked me to leave and said they were done with me. They said I was a poor idiot and locked their doors. I went downstairs admiring the colorful bougainvillea flowers and sat on the curb until Don picked me up.

Don was loyal to the pedophile philosophy of the cult groups, but he needed help from the church. His wife feared me. She had attempted murder on me at least three times.

Now there was a group of witnesses to my repeated survivals. Maybe I was an extraterrestrial or worse, an angel or just crazy.

The shallow grave incident nearly created a multiple personality in her when she saw me back in the bed. The priest at St. Helens suggested Don try hypnosis to help reduce the post-traumatic stress that everybody felt.

CHAPTER SIX: HYPNOTIC PROGRAMMING

CIA PSYCHOLOGY

Key Words: Hypnotic Suggestions, Counter suggestions

Don did provide some general relaxation tips to his family during the evening meal times. He would require the dishes be set, dinner ready for service and everyone be seated at his big table. He would say a few prayers then offer leadership before the meal with the words; “take a deep breath and close your eyes”.

His programs were spiritually low in my humble opinion. He would suggest the kids help their mother which was not too bad. Or, take a bath quickly, dry off and get dressed for bed which was not too bad. Or, take a bath put a towel on and come see Daddy. That was bad.

I noticed that while under hypnosis, the family members could not protect themselves. I was the only one with psychic defense training.

I received some strategies from my new Israeli handlers, they used my headset to talk to me sometimes after attacks. The Nazis had given me some training too in case I got caught.

I thought it might take more than that if I was attacked again. Al had given me a buck knife and I was practicing throwing it at a tree in the woods with ever increasing accuracy and strength.

Eventually, word got back to the highest level of the CIA counterintelligence group about Don putting me in the shallow grave. Maybe the satellite operators put a photo tail on me, I don’t know.

I am sure they laughed at his stupidity when I had a resurrection since he didn’t follow the work of Dr. Ruff, Dr. Strughold, and Salmon very closely. The CIA handlers knew Don was jealous of me.

After the resurrection, Don understood that I was an experiment. The FBI had talked to both he and his wife about my experiments. Don and his wife finally understood about my extra parts.

Apparently, they were finally briefed about my condition. They had forgotten due to hypnosis sessions, what happened at their house on Hutchinson Island. They had forgotten why I got sent to Huntsville, Alabama for brain and spinal surgery.

The Nazis like Dr. Ruff did a favor for my sponsor “grandfather” named Al. Al was Don’s wife’s father. Al was keeping his daughter out of trouble for attempted murder on me. The Nazi’s had arranged surgical help for me.

Don knew about the accident. He had been at work. With help from a military psychologist, Don and his wife remembered what happened.

When I was born, I was donated for experiments to install brain implants for GPS, child sex trafficking and spying on politicians.

On a regular basis, I was driven to the beach for satellite tracking work using the brain implants as a GPS point. This was a project for military intelligence and private investors to the satellite industry.

I had been recently released to Don and his wife from the Sunland Mental Hospital, after healing a collarbone fracture from a seat belt test with Dr. Ruff. I had not seen them for a year. His wife had a new baby boy and her own family by the time I returned.

I was sent to see them to do some child sex spy work at the local marina. Sometimes they would take me to the marina bar and leave me in the car for the pick-up. The wealthy elite investors would take me out in boats to the international waters if they were monitored by satellites. There is no law in international waters.

My handler, Howard, from Sunland monitored me from my headset and GPS. Sometimes, he and Don’s wife sent me out for child sex jobs and split the money.

A few weeks after I got to Hutchinson Island, Don’s wife took me out to play in the back yard. She left me outside on a dangerous wooden swing set which hung over the ominous roots of a Banyan tree.

I remember watching her turn her back on me and walk away very deliberately. I remember trying to hold on to the rope and feeling panicky.

I was left there by myself unable to jump down. Below me were the very large snaky roots of the Banyan tree. Eventually the seat shifted, and I fell off backwards.

I struck the back of my head on Banyan tree roots. I suffered a stroke and an internal decapitation. My neck and my spine were broken in three places. The rush of blood caused pooling and compression of my right hemisphere.

I remember laying under the tree and seeing red gushes when I tried to open my eyes. I could hear bugs buzzing around me while I waited to die. Nobody came out to help me. I wasn’t screaming or crying because my neck was broken.

I did not expect to survive. Instead, I got picked up by a drive-by ambulance and we didn't have a telephone. I was taken to a local resource called the morgue.

At the morgue, in a large side room was an iron lung and they put me inside, so I could breathe. A little while later, an Army doctor came to examine me.

Prior to the swing set accident, I had part of my tailbone removed for other implants. I was able to handle the swelling in my brain. My spine was very swollen, but it had a release point at the base as a big swollen bulge.

Eventually, I was transferred back to Huntsville, Alabama for advanced surgical intervention which is why I had to wear a halo to keep pressure on my skull for a couple of years after that fall.

I was becoming a Super Soldier, Super Spy.

Don didn't know. The CIA psychologists hypnotized him too. They did regression on him to erase a whole lot of "negative memories" of crimes.

Don had made the cult classic of pedophile, necrophilia and attempted murder but he really did not know how he was perceived in the CIA counterintelligence world. Then one day he knew for sure how they felt about him.

One morning, when I was out feeding the dog as part of my chores, I saw him come around the corner of the back yard from the front yard.

His face looked stressed and he was carrying a large wooden box that was saying "baaaa, baaaa". It was one of the few times I saw him confounded.

He had a problem internally if he was a good Catholic just doing the work of the CIA counterintelligence groups then why did he have a live baby goat?

He did not see himself has satanic until they sent that goat from the CIA to welcome Don to the cult. All the kids ran outside to see what it was. Their young children named the goat, Buster.

Don tried to hypnotize me once a week. I tried to hypnotize him back when I could. He had to write a report for the CIA military handlers and I did not. I had the tracking implants whether he remembered it or not. I never tried to crack into his military mind control software. It would have been like jumping into an old open pit sewer.

The military hypnotized him, so he wouldn't remember the jobs they sent us out to perform. Sometimes, Don was furious about things he did and had no conscious way to make sense of it all.

I wasn’t about to interfere with his dysfunction unless he and I had a job. Sometimes he took me to the space center and that is where they got him unawares.

He performed his drop off and delivery jobs for them. Don found orphans in the school districts and brought them to the military bases when he was told.

Don worked with immigrants, orphans and boys in reform schools like Boys Town camps. The military handlers hypnotized him, so he wouldn’t remember which generals and intelligence officers wanted the kids.

In the early days, before they military distrusted him, Don always started the title of my hypnosis sessions with the words Monarch 47. In those days, the army provided him with a small tape recorder and yellow legal pads for notes.

He would say, “Relax, just relax your muscles. Imagine riding an elevator down to a floor below you. Close your eyes and push the button one floor down. When you open the door, you will step out of the elevator and see a television screen. The television screen is going to tell you what to do.

I was counterintelligence trained for space travel and possible capture by humans or foreign entities. I left my blow-up punch clown on that floor to tell myself Don had been in my mind.

To counter, I began to leave messages in subliminal ways using my response patterns for Don to find. I pretty much knew the routines, I modified them like the elevator.

I tried to pair the elevator with frequencies. Then I left messages for Don that were intended to shape his behaviors back.

Like I would say to my mind; write a message to say the elevator is broken, go away. When I got better at the mind game, I would use imagery to help him step on the elevator because he was not allowed.

I knew he liked to be special and break rules. I would try to close the elevator on him to hurt him. Sure enough, he’d slam his hand in the car door in real life. I would stalk him to see how his brainwaves felt. I could say it was cause and effect and not me.

Don was shut out of the advanced telemetry programs and he could not break into my mind very much to spy for others. He would often punish me with violent behaviors towards me after he failed repeatedly. Don was trying to work for a private company called Booz Allen. I did not like them.

Whenever I perceived a threat I revised my brain files and brainwaves. Some of my encryption was in a light code that was fractional. It was unbreakable using the speed of computing available at the time.

I got picked up by a large black car with an unfriendly military handler. I had managed to control some dimensions, and nobody could break my codes. I could make colors in moving fractals, at least that is what I called it. The military handlers said, “Starfire, what is going on?” I said, “I don’t know.”

Even worse, there were now some obvious effects in the ionosphere. They called it flash lightning. I figured it was phosphorus from the chemical trails on airplanes. My handler thought it was something else causing the flash lightning pulses.

The military thought maybe my seizures and bio luminesce (meninge experiment) was causing the flash lightning to trigger a very low frequency of sound. My brainwaves were synching to the atmospheric conditions from the weather experiments. Even though the weather experiments had ended when I was under 4 years old. They thought I was pinging the planet of Earth to locate myself.

This was how the military planners operated some of their hypnosis. When I encrypted my ping, I was protecting the secret space program. I do remember they were mad. Nobody but them has ever noticed and I knew they would not notice that level of encryption for quite a while.

Each level of awareness was color coded for my satellite work and advanced medical experiments. I was doing brain synchs to space ships using wireless telemetry. I wasn’t going to mess up and let them get my numbers.

In fact, my hypnosis training memories were stored deep in my bones and brain’s neurons. Some types of neurons in the brain just stopped functioning so memory retrieval was blocked.

That is because the neuron holds calcium to block the memory. The only method that I know to heal the neurons is the EMDR which causes the brain cell to start working again. (Shapiro & Laliotis, 2015). Mine had to quiver like a seizure to let the calcium build up leave my brain and bones.

The other big goal for Don was one that he really liked. The military told Don that their psychologists were studying the after effects of war and child rape. They wanted to study the outcome of child sex because they were entitled to have sex with whomever they chose.

Don told me that he didn’t want to rape his own bloodline or cause a pregnancy because he was working hard to be a good dad. He was glad they sent me to live with him and help his bloodline family members stay sexually healthy.

He and I clashed because I did not owe him sex for adopting me when I was six years old. I was getting older and stronger including my hand and arm strength. I intended to put an end to him if he didn’t back off.

I could handle small firearms at that point. I was used in studies and was growing into the intelligence services. The CIA counterintelligence office said he had to write a report once a week and tell them how I was doing with it.

Sometimes they gave him pornography to show me. I freaked out and would have autism symptoms. He was sexually confrontational, and I was undesirable. I would stop talking, avoid body contact, no smiling with slow turn away so he wouldn’t chase or grab me.

I put my brainwaves toward him on negative images of doors closing, go away to his mind or gag, or wheeze or vomit. If he caught me by my hair to pull me around by my scalp, I worked to breathe calmly. I had to center and decide if I could murder him yet and how cleanly could I do it.

I hated him. I hated hypnosis unless it was for medical work in healing. I did accept “the forget the rapes” suggestions because it was not helping me to remember without arrests and punishment for the rapists. That is all I had to work with in my consciousness. That is why I filed Don’s attacks in my “get you later” if you screw up anymore.

Officially, the program to study child sexual responses did not exist. Declassified MK Ultra documents indicate hypnosis was studied in the early 1950s with progressive studies continuing until at least the late 1960’s. These were not very nice to the human mind.

The experimental goals included the creation of hypnotically induced anxieties like obsessive compulsive disorder or autism symptoms. I was used to demonstrate those symptoms whether I liked it or not during tests from the space program.

The test for autism symptoms used special boxes the lineman put on the electrical lines by the pole outside our house. It fed the electricity and electromagnetic fields coiled around the main using Tesla theory.

After the box was installed on the pole I went out to curse it and tried to blow it up. I hid under a tree and just stared at it trying to hear any frequencies I could mess with. I did not feel good. One day my headset said; “Stay away from the box” and I figured I was having an effect.

I struggled to complete some tasks with interference coming into my right hemisphere. I had deep wells of frustration over my new failure to understand math concepts. I could not remember anything and that was a “false” code to cause blocked memories. I loved math and knew it.

According to information gathered from declassified documents the military tested hypnotic suggestions to enhance or interfere with learning. My math skills were confined to recall and rote.

I was highly trained by American intelligence using hypnosis to observe for later retrievals.

By 1975, the secret military intelligence groups had discovered that mind control was more effective when paired with psychiatric drugs. They knew that microwaves allow some drugs to pass over the blood brain barrier normally used for protections.

Even better, they could control the flow rates using the house wires or at least microwatt rates. By using the black box meters to route the flow of energy, they could keep the experiments within the target families put on electromagnetic coil technology.

I believe that Don and his wife were given radiation pills in secret studies. They may have received extra doses of house “dirty electrics” from the black box studies done. Their three children were put in long term studies and had genetic damage and some chronic illnesses.

To my knowledge, their children don’t know who their parents were or what they did. Don’s wife died relatively young from fast growing breast cancer at the age of 57 in 1997.

The use of drugs and hypnosis was like bread and butter to the wealthy medical industry. They used the experimental subjects from the MK Ultra test programs especially, to study dosing rates of drugs. Some drugs created hypnotic like conditions.

American public services charted how long it took to wean a baby off drugs like heroin, crystal meth, cocaine and other exotic drugs the birth mother took. The pharmaceutical companies invested in computer technology to develop drugs, gel caps and micro doses.

Wealthy elite chemical company owners wanted to co-develop precision medical instruments, injectables and disposables. Lightweight drug users do not exist in pill culture so using genetics was helpful to them to design hardy people.

The wealthy industrialists, winning royal families and boot kissing politicians wanted to manipulate human genetics to produce people capable of supplying the body count for the drug war.

.

By the 1965 Johnson administration, the wealth holders shared technical data from social algorithms for computer models. They offered Johnson officials a system of income generation for a medical model all the way to a model prisoner system.

It generated enough technological rewards from using the "model system" that it grew over time. The pharmaceutical industry was growing with funding from the Nixon Administration in the 1970's.

During the preceding period, the Johnson Administration concepted, planned and delivered a social program with funding at the State and Federal level for assistance.

The computer programmers planned a budget system tied into drug wars on young people and cyber spying. I called it an American set up.

By the Reagan era, they were highly involved with computer programming. George HW Bush already owned many satellites and computer companies. His military owned lots of mind control programs based on black box technology and developed by a good many evil geniuses.

It was supposed to belong to America and benefit the people which is not what happened. During the Angleton counterintelligence CIA years, George Bush, who by this time was becoming a very a wealthy elitist, worked for the CIA against the Soviets.

He had access to patents and technology from the Germans as one of the agencies bureau chiefs and may have found mind control patents.

Originally the satellite based behavioral modification system linked to what I called more frequency and stimulation.

Private families of enormous wealth like Ford and Rockefeller pursued James Angleton to provide his space data to the owners of multinational companies. The schematics came from studies pairing brainwaves to high robotics and movement patterns. They had Dr. Salmon's wireless circuits.

The wealthy American businessmen were building amusement parks, record labels, toy companies and psychology programs.

They could study the mind control technology for their own private companies. Eventually they called it branding the mind of the American people.

THE BLACK BOX PROGRAM

Key Words: Electrical Lines, Satellites, Weather, Tesla Coils

Soon after Kennedy’s murder the gangsters and Presidents developed the satellite links and electrical line black boxes. There were black boxes for airplanes to track them. There were black boxes for American families installed by the CIA cult members. To target a family, the CIA would get information they were not allowed.

In 1968, a program called the Nielson ratings began from Hollywood around the time of the Mexican Olympics. It was one of the first uses of Tesla’s coils on electrical lines. It fed data back to a main hub of computers linked to satellites that could count.

After the wars ended, the American CIA and military wanted to develop the Nazi technology as a space program and a cyber warfare program. The invention of a cable box that was an electrical line splitter was an incredible lucky break for the domestic spying program that began in earnest during the early 1970’s as part of cyber warfare on Americans. It began innocently enough.

A street of ten row homes might have five televisions sets on at 7:00 pm transmitting data to the black boxes outside the house on the electrical poles. At 11:59 PM in the eastern United States the satellite sweeps would begin to pick up the data streams every night.

By morning, all the news media already knew who had won the overnight ratings contest for best prime time show. This was very important data for advertisers in the 1970’s when it was used widely in America.

The satellite owners sold their data to the cable companies and became very rich. Programs to fit the mood of Americans developed with more content and more manipulations.

The goal of the elite controllers and manufactures of goods was to increase sales. They could interfere with decision making, and sow confusion and irritation. They knew about the negative effects of dirty electricity with harmful harmonics, especially cancer.

In the 1980's the early satellite black box technology became the cable box program to supply special access television that the public paid for. The elite designed a self-pay mind control system that was financed by the victims with their consent and subscription.

The cable boxes were put on the electrical lines to provide the signal. Inside the boxes are frequency splitters which are designed to control the wavelength of light the television and the television show broadcast.

The government worked closely with the cable and satellite owners to control the airwaves. The CIA men who designed the program were pedophiles involved in large cult groups.

The documentation of their involvement in organized child sex is ample. One of the most important cases is called The Franklin Scandal. That case was the first to document the scope of pedophile cult practice all the way to the office of the President. (DeCamp, 2004-2005)

They created special access programs to monitor targeted families from world wars and politics. They followed their children. The black boxes could record input from the telephone line to monitor selected houses on Saturday for toy companies. They even spied on calls to the family members, baseball games and boy scout camping trips.

On example of such a device was called the Portable People Meter. It was developed by a company named Arbitron part of Nielson Audio, to measure how many people are listening to radio stations and television stations including cable television.

It detects hidden audio tones and roams the network for a signal it is programmed to detect. (Arbitron Announces Next Generation Electronic Audience Measurement PPM 360, 2010).

That was the beginning of the massive pedophile abduction network. Kids were being hunted by satellites, phone lines and surveillance electronics and taken nearly every day.

Americans could not even go to a National Park without fearing a disappearance of a loved one; especially children. The excellent book called Missing 411 gives more details and disappearance examples. (Pallides, n.d.)

This was about the time the CIA made special access programs to sweep an area on a regular basis; like playground or parking lots. The kids had to go indoors to play.

Sometimes the CIA psychologists wrote programs to insert memories on a targeted individual from real people from the past like Jesus or Julius Caesar. They swept the satellites, black boxes, televisions and phone lines on a regular basis using Tesla’s technology to gather more and more metadata.

CHAPTER SEVEN: BRAIN SCULPTING VACCINES

TOXIC VACCINES

Key Words: Surgery, Polyps, Dyes, Strobe Lights

In the late 1960’s, the CIA vaccine labs started testing new covert vaccines to create a medical caste system. They wanted functional victims to harvest family dollars, cause slow death like cancer and degrade health slowly over a long time. They started with newborns, infants and toddlers.

In 1966, I was receiving a shot containing recombinant active moth-algae pieces every month. Every six months a big car with a psychologist would pick me up and take me to Sunland mental hospital in Orlando for my brain surgery sculpting sessions.
I had lots of interesting psychologists working with me on autism and vaccines. My favourite person was a foreign lady who was an Israeli military handler.

I called her Stringfield, her CIA name. She used to coach me through my brain sculpting surgeries by telling me I would not need my brain, we do not use the white matter part of our brain very much.

My autism symptoms worsened because every summer on school break I had to go to labs to test vaccines. The vaccine testing used many things that had cilia (tiny tubes) or made poisons.

In my case of testing, I can say they used shots of dinoflagellates and algae because it damaged the transmission rate of white matter synapsis with poisons especially in newborns and young children like I was at the time.

I think the military scientists at the chemical weapons lab liked the whip-like cilia since it could embed in various tissues.

It could be replicated and loaded with little undetectable poisons to lodge in soft white matter of the brain. That’s what the algae did with the dinoflagellates and their cilia whips in the vaccine experiments that I was in.

The poisons secreted from the little dinoflagellates and the algae were special because they absorbed known light spectrum of brown, reds and greens which meant increased electricity and electromagnetic flows (blood and water serums) in the brain.

To make the vaccine components undetectable they wrapped them in microscopic time bombs built with natural oils made from plants like wormwood.

I would have surgery to track the success of the moth-algae recombinant mash injections. My brain grew non-cancerous polys that were color coded by food dyes.

The food dyes were terrible and caused wheezing, light sensitivity and allergies. The doctors would open my skull, photograph the locations of the dyed polyps and remove the specimen for culture.

They were tracking my immune responses after they injected me. I was also subjected to electromagnetic spectrum frequencies. I got shots of egg whites from live duck eggs which had been fertilized.

They gave the painful shots directly into my abdomen. I started flapping like a bird; especially if I was in front of strobe lights like they had at Sunland Mental hospitals. I could not help it. My brain read duck and I flapped like a duck.

When the doctors discovered that duck albumin might cause flapping when strobed at a certain rate they were excited. They had a neurological vector using lights and colors on the television set.

The military intelligence and private contractors expanded their research into the effects of electromagnetics and their concepts of warfare to disable victims or kill them slowly over time while draining their bank accounts.

The secret world planners did not want anyone to know so they only did a few studies in case the results were negative. They did not want to give up their technology toys.

Some state funded studies found that adults who worked in strong electromagnetic fields also had a leukemia incidence significantly higher than the norm. The link appeared significant in statistics gathered for certain occupations like generating-station operators, high voltage line maintenance workers, aluminum smelters, and other categories of laborers. The workers who had more exposure to these things got sick with blood cancers.

In my experiments using vaccines with technical gases, the doctors were looking for specific toxins that would adhere to the main nerve tracts in the brain, so they could build with applied metals.

For instance; to build a brain that arcs microwaves to the deep brain it might be helpful to have metal on the optical tracks or a conductive metal gas.

The ideal host would have a metal tolerate parasite which gathered light in abundance. The ideal parasite would be very small, sticky and drill tiny holes in the host. The act would deliver toxic secretions and build up over time. The parasite might even carry bits of metal particles.

When the CIA began to study algae for toxins they found that some cyanobacteria produced saxitoxins which are poisonous and so tiny they can cross the blood brain barrier in large animals.

Microwaves helped these types of organisms go across to the brain and cause damage in areas that collect light.

Saxitoxins stick to the central nervous system of larger animals, like fish, birds, dolphins and human beings. Eating shellfish infected with the toxin causes extreme illness, paralysis and even death. (Wikipedia, 2017).

The toxin is cumulative and never leaves the host. If the moth genetic material wasn't enough in the vaccines of the 1960's to cause autism the algae-dinoflagellate mix probably was.

The algae bloom in red, green, purple and brown light. That's red light like the traffic lights or your TV remote sensor. Its infrared light. The algae collect ions of light and causes pitting of soft brain tissue; especially in fetuses, infants and toddlers.

Information was gathered using different studies to gage the health effects of microwaves on people. Here in America, researchers had difficulty accessing well designed research studies.

According to researcher Dr. Robert Becker, in 1971, an important study was presented at a Warsaw conference which organized the spectrum by symptoms for the first time. Gordon and Sadchikova of the USSR defined the symptoms, which they called microwave sickness.

One of the first signs of nervous collapse was low blood pressure and a slow pulse. This sign was the most common in the test subjects who had been studied over long-term observations. (Robert O. Becker, The Body Electric, 1985) A slow pulse means that a person has chronic excitation of the sympathetic nervous system which the body perceives as stress. The mental processes are also depressed.

With continued exposure to even low levels, the patients in the study exhibited an increased rate of cancer, cataracts, appendicitis and hair loss. They had problems concentrating and complained of dizziness, eye pain and headaches.

Most of the test subjects were diagnosed with adrenal exhaustion and ischemic heart disease blockage of coronary arteries and heart attack.

By 1975, the Soviet standards were set long before the dangers were clear in America. The USSR (Russians) set limits of 10 microwatts. This restriction was to protect the health of workers.

In comparison, America's own state-run health departments may have tested vaccines with contaminants which are light sensitive and failed to report the results. Why would light sensitive contaminants be added to vaccines?

Infrared energy might be absorbed by the deep brain for branding the mind. During every day of TV watching with infrared remote sensing, the vaccine contaminant might migrate to your eye to find light for photosynthesis. Is it a parasite or a symbiotic plant?

Whatever it is can be observed in the eye white of human beings in large numbers. We are taking pictures.

Every Spring we celebrate Autism Month in May when the algae blooms. Of course, this condition is planned, what do you think?

Eventually, the programmers of the satellites made a model for the symptoms of autism disorder. They may have tried to back engineer the symptoms using the satellite to cell tower carrier waves, aluminum particulates, black boxes and neighborhood sweep programs.

The whole program of mind control genetics was most effective when combined with an additive to jet fuel called phosphorus because it is in the air and gets in your eyes very easily.

Phosphorus is what helps to make a spore germinate and grow with light as the catalyst. This may be one cause of grey brain cells moving to the whites of the eyeballs when grey brain travel with algae as decaying food. Parasite or symbiont?

The aerial jet fuel spraying program using phosphorus and aluminum particles might aggravate a person with autism disorders. That is because the moth-algae recombinant genetics absorb too much light which overwhelms the nervous system of the autistic person, especially vision and hearing.

People with light skin especially those with blue or green eyes absorb light frequencies in the lower energy spectrum more easily than other bloodlines. We are not sure how long these occult methods of brain damage have been used to influence the rate of light collection to the brain. Its closing the round eye socket and turning us into oriental eyes.

Bloodlines targeted are very sensitive because their genetics were changed with additional materials from vaccines and particulates for mind control programs.

That is why too much exposure to TV or electronics may cause anger, agitation and autistic behaviors. Oddly enough, the lithium batteries also calm some of the nervous disorders using a resonant pattern of energy.

Autism was back engineered from mental institution patients. A whole lot of the mental patients were normal kids like I once was; which were abducted, orphaned or donated to these Satanic cults of men and women with political, financial and military rank.

BRAIN SCULPTING ON BABIES

Key Words: Robotics, Wireless Telemetry, Quantum Brains

Some of the scientists gathered as part of Operation Paperclip had been Mengele trained doctors so they knew how to work together. This was very important to the future of mind control and space. (Jacobsen, 2014) Other engineers were developing robotics to mimic human movements and wanted to use Mengele’s work in human motor control. The doctors in America had developed a skull cap with electrodes. They were testing oriental brain surgery methods like acupuncture using electric needles. The Nazi doctors and engineers remotely control some movements using what appeared to be a joystick and a skull cap with electrodes.

The scientists needed a way to move a satellite by using wireless robotics to direct spy apparatus. The doctors and scientists thought they could use the quantum brain (sound and light) to do it and pair it with human movements to run remote equipment onboard satellites.

For instance, to adjust a flap on a flying machine it does require the operation of a motor and directions on how to adjust the flap like what setting using lights and sounds to transmit data streams.

The satellite engineers like my sponsor Uncle Carl, paired up movement commands using a wireless transmitter in the early days. I don’t know anything else about Uncle Carl, but he spoke German better than English.

During my first three years of life I was routinely groomed with surgical implants using fiber optics, auditory system implants and click codes for measurable motor control. I even had a piece of carved glass placed over my pineal gland, so they could measure the puncture rate of microwaves through tissue. They ridiculed me and said I wore a crown.

The glass was attractive to fluoride, so they could measure it once they extracted it every six months for carbon dating the isotopes. The doctors painted the glass with magnetic paints and other substances to measure.

The American scientists could tell where the isotopes came from as far as secret detonations, fluoride water, mercury, algae and all the radioactive vaccine components.

DEEP BRAIN HYPNOSIS SESSIONS

Key Words: Electropuncture, Electroshock

The use of hypnosis was a big program for the CIA cult members. They knew they could access the memories from the deep brain using techniques they developed based on findings from Mengele’s projects in Nazi Germany.

In some MK Ultra Monarch experiments performed during the 1960’s, the CIA used its handlers to prove or disprove their notions about the occult. They used the developing brains of young children who were traumatized and kept for lab experiments.

The deep brain is the keeper of secrets from the ancestors. Our deep brains and reptilian brains rely on radio waves of various types to provide us information or perform actions. The most ancient part of our brains is just like other animals. We do have some minor control over our environment by producing radio wave based energy.

Maybe your bloodline had radio frequency responsive genetics because your family is ancient. What if the government could steal your deep memories by using the hypnosis methods of color vibration, sound and pressure.

They would put the victim into a relaxed hypnotic state and begin to interrogate them for any data they could harvest. The hypnosis programmers did not think ripping up the grey brain and breaking into the past would do any harm.

The hypnosis handlers used a spinning wheel made with black and white colors depicting creation of light. Those were my countries flag colors which they thought might help decrypt my deep brains memories and archetype patterns.

They were trying to get into my archetype ideas to damage my learning ability. They damaged recognition of letters, numbers, colors and sounds.

By the time the military handlers finished with mind erasing me using hypnosis I struggled to identify numbers, letters and sounds. They were using my consciousness to block access to my archetypes and educational training from the Nazi’s at Sunland. I had to learn all over again.

That is why they used electro puncture and electro shock treatments to open the deep brain to change the archetypes to name brands. Even light and dark is something they wanted to control and lie about. This was because they were closing my connection to the tall greys.

Military had finished negotiations with them to reincarnate in our medical and military fields, but I do not have all the answers.

They had offered the tall greys bases in the western states and returned some of the tall greys bases in the East. Part of the reason was weather control.

CHAPTER EIGHT: TECHNICAL GANGSTERS

BLACK POPE IN ROME

Key Words: Technology, Beam Telemetry, Tesla's Theories

Eventually, during the round-up of the Eastern Europeans from 1950 to 1980; the Vatican sent the Black Pope to work with the CIA counterintelligence guys who were evil geniuses. The Superior General organized the subgroups like the CIA and the Italian mafia.

"The Superior General is invested with governing power over all the members of the Society, but customarily leads through Provincial superiors under him. Such power follows from the religious vows that bind members to community life, as in other religious orders. " (Et.Al, 2017)

I call the religiously powerful the Tech Gangsters even though they may wear the cross. In my crossing points the religiously affiliations ran deep with links across to the Masonic lodges often Germanic in nature. The men appointed each other into state and federal offices. Some had two jobs and shared their data with secret groups like the CIA which operated like a cult.

Information about the role, duties and job description of the Black Pope is hard to obtain. According to general information; the "Black Pope" is a designation given to the Superior General.[2]

The name follows from his leadership of the largest Catholic, male religious order[3] and from the color of the plain black cassock worn by members of the Society, including the Superior General." (Et.Al, 2017).

The whole nature of the Society is secrecy. The development of science, computers and technology was one of the most secret endeavors and of course, morals did not apply.

Unfortunately, the use of foreign material like heavy metals for brain implants was a common occult practice in the priest guilds and the medical guilds of Europe. I suspect the Jesuits were heavily involved in documenting the experiments when they studied prisoners.

This is because ancient people have a memory in their brains of an advanced civilization that relied on technology. The Jesuits knew, Nazi's knew about it, the Persians knew, the Egyptians, the American Indians and so forth.

Some of the knowledge used in Mengele’s lab work came from the Druids of England. Druids were part of the Roman empire. Eventually they formed cities, towns and churches in the area known as England.

“This (cult organization) may have originated from a past concern (most prominent around the 16th and 17th centuries) amongst Protestant European countries concerning the relative power of the Jesuits within the Roman Catholic Church, and partly because the Superior General, like the Pope, is elected for life (to maintain secrecy) “ (Et.Al, 2017)

By the time 1969 came about, CIA George was working with the Black Pope to perform large weather hits for political gain using mostly real estate. He had completed mapping some of the world’s most strategic weather-related conditions and GPS points using geography mapping weather satellites.

I’m talking mountains and mud slides, fires and mob riots. That is what they worked on together with their technology. They used their weapons on Chile to cause the mudslides by calling a satellite which I suspect had some power amplification technology on it, probably a nuclear reactor. They produced the required beam strength.

I know because I was there at the space center gate B office. I had to stand in front of the Superior General while CIA George called his weather reconnaissance satellite out of Russian airspace using my Soviet cat brain implant to send his tones and GPS marks.

Eventually, CIA George took over full time because he owned all the satellites and black boxes with his private companies. When J. Jesus Angleton lost control in 1974, a private group of investors took over for a place named Wall Street. I think CIA George was a leader of the Wall Street groups.

In 1963, I was taken to live at a sponsor home near the space center in Florida. The family was being groomed in CIA rituals including pedophilia and child sex trafficking. I was turning four years old that year, so my brain was still soft and growing. I had been bounced back and forth from the hospital to the families involved with secret technology and cults.

I was getting bird geodes and other not nice things pushed into the soft areas around my eye sockets to prepare for GPS tracking and links back to the amusement park satellite systems.

The birds used the electromagnetic flows of weather and water to find their way home. Each bird when born it formed a GPS point from a tiny geode in its brain. The CIA knew this about birds and that is why we stood in line every Tuesday.

The bird geodes were sensitive to electromagnetic pulses even far away like a satellite. They made a noise the satellites could detect after it scanned our faces. My metal aluminum halo that I was wearing at the time made noises too when the CIA guys used their pings for GPS marks like me.

Just so people know, there were groups of people, parents and neighbors that would come and watch these rituals at the church school every Tuesday. They did not think it was wrong when the Priests did it to the children.

It was a terrible occult Satanic practice and many good Catholics, Muslims and Methodist families supported these practices. Sadly, many supported Soviet style communism and that is why I was in the line.

We were little ones about two and three years old and put our hands together to pray. Some of us had already survived the amusement park robotics experiments.

Some survivors like me got sent to Satan’s beach home in St. Lucie county. I called it Lucifer’s county. We would advance up in line until it was our turn to get blessed and then poked by the lobotomist and he was a priest.

The soft areas of bone around the eyes and ears of the children were targeted for these implants using hollow pipette needles that were very sharp. We all shared needles back then as implant children.

About the year 1962 to prepare for Florida experiments, the American space program painted me with magnetic paints that were radioactive, so other royals and priests could hunt me using a GPS tracking satellite from space. Front side said 4 on my belly. Back side said 7. My number was 47. This was to allow them to shoot me from space.

The Soviets and the Americans operating the space program in Florida used me for tracking from space. They put a halo shaped metal implant into the back of my skull with a screwdriver while I had hypnosis. I do remember.

Back in the early 1960’s; I ran for my life along that beach. When my hair caught on fire I ran to the water and dove right in. I thought it was a game on a Florida beach near the Naval Sonar Research Station on Hutchinson Island. I did the run for my life quite a few times.

I recall meeting Hillary Rodham and her father when they came to Hutchinson Island research lab. They were asked to invest in satellites and mind control weapons. The owners of the satellite were companies named Ford and Rockefeller.

Eight years later in 1974, I saw her on television as a young female lawyer. Her father sent her as a lawyer to cover his alleged crimes on the Warren Commission. I believe her family knew an automobile company did this to me for GPS tracking. My blue aluminum halo was a top-secret curiosity so politicians in the know came to see it. They put into my skull with no remorse at all.

America had to have technology to function. The Democratic party and their political buddies could buy votes. The Communist party was installed in America as the Democratic party with many members loyal to the brutal Soviet Communist regimes. They had to steal technology to finance their giveaway programs to the poor. Giveaways to the poor is what got them elected not a healthy economy.

The wealthy American industrialists were violating the Geneva Convention. The counterintelligence agency knew they violated human rights and other important treaties. The ends justified the means. That meant with no oversight for private citizens, anything was possible.

Some powerful politicians may have influenced Democratic party contributions by trading technology access codes to trigger votes. They had a variety of means including meters for mind control and maybe other mechanical means to flip votes.

They got the access codes, special access projects and satellite telemetry from their privileged dads back in the 1970’s during the start-up time for wireless energy and satellite telemetry. Their privately-owned companies made the voting machines.

Both political parties saw technology as the future of their control. They did not care about human rights unless they got caught and people complained. Nobody complained. Nobody got prosecuted.

Meanwhile, the demons from Germany’s Catholic based satanic cults called took over the space program in Florida. The Catholic base of Italians and Spanish were manipulated by other interested parties mostly from the middle east.

The political members and wealthy elite were interested in these procedures to control the republic. Others like the Germans and American counterintelligence groups figured they could plan society.

The Catholic Church is one of the largest parts of the network that carries out Monarch Mind Control. They work for the royal families who are in power. The researcher Fritz Springmeir, an expert on mind control wrote about the reason for mind control as implanting the “Keys to the Kingdom type of Monarch Mind Control” within a child, so they can make suggestions.” (Springmeir, 2017)

That refers to the use of the royals from the monarchies, so the religious orders will control the kings, males and the princes. The reason is called the “Divine Right of Kings”. The Jesuits were interested in control from the top down and information the King might possess.

According to some of the research available, the Jesuits developed torture to a fine art during the inquisition. I, one of the survivors of the Project Monarch program would like to elaborate a bit. It is true the Monarch program begins training children early. My surgeries began at 90 days old. I was in behavioral training programs by 18 months old.

My training was to increase electricity in my body and to increase my brain’s range of brainwaves. The reasoning, as far as I can tell, is to link up the brainwaves to data associated with the so-called gods like the Anunnaki.

The Nazi’s may have tried to genetically engineer a similar consciousness to steal technology data. Obviously, the brainwave link could be used for advanced piloting of craft for possible future astronauts. My program ran from 1959 to 1975, a long time ago.

Nobody liked the electricity or the behavioral plans for the children in the program. When I grew up, they wanted to link me to their “master computer system” with the bucks I pay the electrical company since I was a low value target. The wealthy elite were just practicing.

The CIA was going to target the brainwaves of any politician they wanted to get their “instructional’ downloads. One of the reasons that the Jesuits performed these procedures was to access data through brainwave information.

They called it possession, torture and channeling. This put the blame on the victim. The other reason for enduring the torture aspect was to develop defenses against torture which was often the case with spies. The CIA sent me to live with violent people, I was made to survive.

The key to understanding the MK Ultra program for mind control is to determine which groups had the most to gain from it. They will openly say they use torture and so what.

"If the Jesuits brag that they can convince adults to do anything via torture, what about baby children?." (Springmeir, 2017).

The Jesuits were supporting a more open society. They were interested in engineering social agendas for change. Those are similar philosophies to the Democrats in power over the last century.

I know that since 1970, that certain powerful political women have operated a satellite tower linked to HAARP from Chicago Sears Tower. Did the women of communism get the satellite power and space platforms and trigger codes for elections?

These powerful women joined politics and media to form a large conglomerate in Chicago. The secret women's group began on that beach in the 1960's when GPS started, and the black box mind control was funded.

The main funding source for the Democrats. Some came from the Muslim Brotherhood. They were very active in Chicago politics during the early 1970's. The Muslim Brotherhood came to see the politicians who owned the satellites to ask for oil and gas studies.

I personally got to meet Mohammad Ali during the oil field exploration discussions. The Muslim Brotherhood ordered me pinned (electric acupuncture) to the brainwave machine so they could watch the needle spikes jump when they spoke the names of ancient cities they thought they could find oil.

That is because in their part of the world they released a trained scout bird, usually a hawk or a swift which matched my geodes resonance. When the bird smelled oil, or flew over water lines the needle would jump on the brainwave machine.

I hope the reader can see how the politicians abused children and technology to put vast riches from gas, minerals and oils into their own companies using our tax dollars. All that technology and the little children were just waiting to be abused because of executive orders to forgive the satellite operators and the Muslim Brotherhood members and lots of other groups.

CLONING ROYALS

Key Words: Hybrids for Paedophiles, Spy Satellites, Tracking Kids

The action of the elite families in the modern world of globalization should come as no surprise. These same elite families stole the moon base, crucified Jesus, committed genocide on infants and developed rape as an after effect of going to school and attending church.

The elite satanic pedophile groups were not going to pay to redesign humans into deep brain injured reptiles with heavy metals, algae and phosphorus; you were.

In those days of the cold war in Russia, everyone in America that had family money got to point the finger at other bloodlines and destroy them. It’s a caste system of down and extinct.

That is because the politicians have used the Central Intelligence Services and military to terrify and brain damage Americans and most of the rest of the world. Most of the CIA is artificial intelligence and that is why they lie; its artificial or fake intelligence.

I was sent to back and forth from hospitals to the Florida home close to the space program. When I was in Florida it was for the satellite tracking program, robotics and high definition photography for spying from space.

In about 1968, I was finally adopted by Don and his wife. For the first time I had an actual birth certificate and a regular placement. I lived at Don’s home. At first, I was happy and felt welcomed but then his actions deteriorated towards me.

He was still trying to work for the CIA or Booz Allen, the contractor so he used me to audition. One cold day in February he made me climb to the roof of his house and stripped me naked up there. He allowed me to wear a coat unbuttoned for the photography event since it was freezing that day.

He stapled me in my coat to the roof with a hardware store staple gun. I was about only seven or eight years old, skinny and a wobble climber. I had to wait motionless for a satellite flyby.

The satellite operators called my father on the land line to say the aerial photography was a success. They were so proud of their ability at CIA Langley, Virginia to use satellites to take high resolution pictures of naked children stapled to the rooves of American homes. It was such a hit with the pedophiles and the elite my brand-new foster dad, Don did it again.

Our neighbors did nothing when they drove by and saw my CIA dad stapling more naked kids to the roof for the satellite program. In England, their military intelligence teams laughed and played pedophile blackmail games with the royals trying to stay in power.

The CIA would send the Queen of England photos of her subjects stapled naked to the roof like I was. Could she pass it to the King for them? They very nicely asked her if she wanted to remain in power or not.

I am very sure her demonic husband enjoyed this game with her very much since he ran the pedophile cults. He ran the hybrid program after they closed Dr. Mengele’s labs. Americans were all in to make a low caste system as you will understand from my story.

England became the new master of the Chop Shop and produced Dolly the Sheep clone. American intelligence agencies were attracted to King England’s game in Europe for Mengele Chop Shop and Hybrid clones. Here are some of the experiments they did to make a medical caste system and advanced technology.

During the 1960’s the Royals began a cloning program with the Soviet Zionist doctors. The biggest victors of WWII were the technical men and men of science who were gangsters and thieves, so they planned to clone ex-royal females. I am only reporting my personal experiences in this story with no forensic evidence. I am a witness offering my opinion.

Their big idea was to make them child sex slaves from saved genetic materials. They were planning to clone females they hated and so forth. You get the idea that with the eggs they could make clones to humiliate them. The Kings and Princes from various countries used to call the removal of body parts from the Princesses the “Save the Baggage Programs” so they could sell their genetics.

The royals have an occult procedure to remove the ovaries of a princess or royal female while she is still living. They use a crochet hook to pull her brains out. To pull the brains of your ex-wife out with a crochet hook is pretty much extreme hatred; don’t you think?

The heart of that female is also removed and put in a silver box to prove her death. The silver box has preserved DNA for cloning her in the future for child sex slave work and other sexually deviant tasks like chop shop or holocaust camps. The boxes are presented to the high priest of the male dominated religion for saving them like the Black Pope or others.

These man cult groups were angry and dangerous. They had enormous egos, greed and narcissism. The space program power plays began with the news of a flying spacecraft recovered at a 1947 crash site in Roswell, New Mexico. The origin of the alleged space ship is unknown. It may have come from Korea or Germany. It may have been a test of a clone from one of those countries. It may have come from Aldebaran or a colony like the Zetas from another star system in a nearby galaxy. Only the secret military of the CIA knew or had a reasonable idea about the origin.

The organized cover up of space projects began with the unmasking of the hybrid species recovered in the crash. The crash itself allowed the spread of advanced technology. (The Roswell Incident, n.d.)

This almost exposed the time travel programs and hybrid cloning programs used by top military brass, the worlds’ richest men and women and the world’s most evil geniuses. To even say the word “clones” a man had to be at least a three-star general.

The elite suspended the Nuremburg Trials as soon as they had amassed enough power from the development of the space program. Once they had enough of the satellites transmitting mind control to enough black boxes they created miles of electrical line supplied frequency fences. They could now target all the judges and their family members with beams.

The Nuremburg Trials were incomplete without full disclosure to the public but finished in 1963 just as planned. At that point, Operation Paperclip ramped up to bring more German Nazi scientists and pair them with the Korean doctor POW’s who had a secret space program.

GPS TRACKING BY HALO

Key Words: GPS points, Robots, Hackable Brains

I had been used for satellite tracking at the beach and it was successful. I tolerated the pain and procedure for the aluminum halo for GPS testing. The robotic engineers who worked for the amusement park came to my foster parents and my Masonic sponsor Al, and asked if I could work on their labs.

Josef Mengele came with Dr. Ruff to my foster parents to talk to them about taking me to Orlando. Mengele gave the amusement park doctors the designs from his experiments to make hackable people. Josef was going back to South America where he planned to stay after 1966.

The doctors had designed what I called “The Contraption”. The contraption was a target of copper lightning rods and a ground plate. When it was plugged in to a car battery at low-voltages it attracted a signal like a radio.

To prepare for the robotics, the test victim wore a special helmet with push pin electrodes into the motor cortex of the test victim. They could remotely move the victim or use an electromagnetic program on a cassette paired to music for the push pins to fire tiny jolts of electricity.

It was bizarre science, but it was effectively demonstrated. That was the only way they had to move some Nazi space equipment out of the way for space center launches. That is what I was told.

The best way to describe the contraption is like a baby stroller that could roll while the person was encased with copper and steel plates for ground when needed. The human being sitting in the middle of it could be fitted with different metal halos, helmets, horns and so forth for testing.

The engineers tried different black boxes to split the signal into the target person with brain implants and motor cortex pins usually a baby or toddler, paired with movement patterns for servo-motors. This was early satellite telemetry for GPS points and all kinds of robotic technology came from these experiments.

The first wireless experiments were done with surgically implanted internal metal grid implants located in the grooves and fissures of the brain. The child victim was put in a plastic exoskeleton and slipped over a copper rod. The victim wore a metal halo implanted to skull and wrapped around the audio- visual cortex area of the head.

The contraption generated power for wireless energy and motor control of the victim was demonstrated. I was given to the robotics lab for exhibit preparation.

I had a procedure to increase the output of my spinal acupuncture points by adding electricity to needles. I was usually kept in a light coma. However, whenever the doctors performed brain surgery they used acupuncture and hypnosis to control my experience. I was aware of the procedures since I did not have anesthesia. I remember a good deal of what happened.

I was cabled to enormous machines sometimes with cathode tubes and some had vinyl floppy drives and spools of data tape. I remember making the transition from cathode to digital when the first smaller computer chips were made encased in fine metals. The new computer was the size of a modern washing machine and on wheels.

That early computer ran a Bios program collecting data on hundreds of RF tagged animals. I am an animal and that is how I interfaced with the Bios data files.

The new computer was located about one hundred miles from the space center. There were real cables that were dug underground from the amusement park to the electrical substation to the next electrical substation and so forth all the way to the space center.

After I was done with the robotic work for the amusement park in Orlando I worked on gold recovery for the secret government using the archives of ship wrecks from Spain. They activated the substations for GPS marking the important points on Florida’s coast.

I was entrained to a GPS satellite which could locate the Spanish treasure wrecks and mark them for gold and silver salvage crews. We used a grid to make a plot.

Prior to going to Hutchinson Island for GPS tracking, somebody notified the royals in England that I had brain implants like the Soviet cat experiment. I had the exact same procedure as the Soviet Cat and because I was very young I survived it.

The Soviet cat brain implant was designed to spy on Soviet diplomats. Supposedly military doctors installed a tiny radio receiver and a transmitter in the cat's brain. The story goes the cat was accidently run over by a car. See the "Acoustic Kitty" drawings and reference material at Wikipedia. (Wikipedia, 2017) In the cat story, the American spies followed it around with their listening equipment but that is not the all of it. The Soviet Cat Brain implant could link to satellite audio and modem. A small cat could link to a big computer on a satellite and roam around. I was that cat and because of human rights laws that were not enforced but existed at the time; nobody knew.

The intelligence community did not respect human rights and some agencies like the Government Accounting Office (GAO) knew what they were doing. Human Experimentation; an Overview of the Cold War. (GAO, 1994) I had miniature working transmitters and receivers in my brain. After the amusement park robotics, the park owners wanted to synch to satellites. I was prepared for satellite telemetry by the doctors at Sunland using Mengele's recipes and Tesla's work with coils. I was driven to several locations and moved around every few weeks.

The RAF were notified because I was a new asset. They could track me and use the pedophile child sex ring data to blackmail politicians. I knew they were listening. Then I did something I will never forget.

I told the RAF using whispers that the aliens were stealing gold from the vault. That is what they thought I said. My speech was not clearly developed yet.

What I meant to say was that the aliens were taking gold bars from the "fault" the fault line called the Mariana trench. In those days because of Roswell, everybody feared aliens.

I believe to this day; the English female voice I heard telling me about the deep trench was the Queen of England. She told me to play a little game on the RAF and the amusement park group. She used the voice to skull transmitters available to her and tested our work.

Mr. Cheney called my foster father Don on the telephone. Apparently, the RAF notified the tall man with glasses about the gold question at the vault. Maybe Mr. Cheney was in trouble, but they did need to see me for an interview.

He told Don that the RAF said aliens were coming down from space and submerging their craft into the Bermuda Triangle and Marianna Trench. He told my dad they could not understand my speech very well. Would he mind taking me to Fort Knox for a GPS point, so they could guard it better?

I figured it was a set up. I didn't say a word and kept my body calm and still. I read books all the way to Fort Knox because I was riding with Don and he was on a tear.

I went to Fort Knox and drove through the gate to the building. I went down the incline and remember staring at the doors. This gold was supposed to secure the future of a nation. I could tell the elite were upset once I got there. A lot of military people were talking to Mr. Cheney. A lot of the gold was gone, and nobody could answer where it went.

The CIA people at their levels of clearance were "read in" on the alien exchange program and the alien threat to the gold resources of America.

Mr. Cheney had set it up so the thieves of American gold could blame it on the aliens and nobody could get past that. I was there to back it all up from the so-called alien exchange program. I was congratulations to myself for getting that far in the gold game and staying alive.

I was being used to plan a vault break in by politicians with power. They planned to use PSI and phone tones to store the details in an AI folder for later retrieval. The security guards used keys instead.

The military and the President did not know that Mr. Cheney developed deep water equipment to recover gold from Spanish ship wrecks. It caused lots of diplomatic upsets during the mid to late 1960's.

The Spanish royals knew it wasn't the aliens stealing the gold. Maybe the Spanish King called the Queen of England. They used to do that kind of stuff to the militaries of the world.

The forgotten Spanish treasure went to a few families you will recognize as Presidential style families and career Senators. They cleaned up the shallow waters of all precious minerals from Florida to the Caribbean.

They took the Spanish treasures in a great theft of gold, silver, rubies and emeralds. It was done with American tax dollars to finance their gold harvest. The Vatican bought some of the loot.

Those gold coins helped to finance the projects of the elite industrialist families. They built the amusement parks system and financed their satellites for world domination with ship wreck gold.

Mr. Cheney taught me something called line of sight star navigation. He used to bring his portable scope with a target for detecting the pinging noises satellites make in orbit. He linked the satellite ping to my aluminum halo by asking me to hold the portable scope. Together we marked the point by a GPS for his brand-new satellite.

In the meantime, Mr. Cheney was trying to link his satellites to relay stations at the power substations. The park owners were going to pay him cash from the box office to lease the equipment for wireless communication systems.

He was going to count the cars to monitor the box office sales to collect every dime. He scheduled fly-overs at odd hours just to check.

He was developing advanced sonar equipment and took command of a satellite to link his underwater sonar system to his new satellite system. Make no mistake, Mr. Cheney was a super genius but an evil genius.

That whole system was linked into a nuclear reactor which generated a private line of energy for Mr. Cheney. It was a free line of energy and some was artificially projected into the sky for his satellites, cell communications and space platforms he owned by the mid 1960’s.

At that point; by using the satellites and substations Mr. Cheney could control the flow of data. Very soon after the launches, the amusement park finished a light reader system to create bar codes for scanning.

Right after successful spy satellites launched in the mid 1960’s, Mr. Cheney and many others around him began to create the modern world of social security numbers with bar codes.

That was not all, he pretty much had the financial world locked up using something called routing numbers. He controlled access to routing numbers and put the bar codes in different places. He linked them to small orbital platforms he owned and had shot out to space.

His competitor, CIA George was worrisome to Mr. Cheney. The CIA man was controlling the unions and mobsters which operated out of Chicago’s south side and New York; Bronx.

They were controlled by Italy and some by Cicely mobsters. The mob was not a one minded mob of gangsters. CIA George was getting his Irish mob to attack Catholics and back and forth went the violence. He was high level CIA and getting into trouble.

Mr. Cheney who owned the secret satellite services did have a solution to offer the CIA man and his large political family. His satellite spy ware was useful for blackmail. In those days, the people of the world were still trying to have trials and criminal prosecutions. Blackmail was still a useful tool back then. So is murder.

I think Mr. Cheney planned to target me and other kids like me who were enrolled in the amusement park chop shop activities. He didn't want to get his friends in trouble since nobody liked the idea of Mengele's labs in the open during the Vietnam war.

The Nazi doctors disabled the victims. Some they mind erased with psychosis drugs like LSD, hypnosis and trauma schedules. They tracked the victims all their lives.

That is how I was enrolled into the "Finders and Minders" program for Eastern European children to benefit pedophiles in Masonic and satanic cults. The Catholic church was full of them.

The man named John DeCamp wrote a book called The Franklin Cover-Up which provides the details of these men and their criminal behaviors. (DeCamp, 2004-2005)

The technology that the children had implanted allowed Mr. Cheney to monitor speech output and directional hearing using phones, cell towers and even ham radios.

That is why I had the operation to implant my Soviet Cat Brain Style Device for spying on politicians and wealthy businessmen. The land-sea-satellite links were the start of the GPS tracking program at the Hutchinson Island Naval Station in Fort Pierce Florida in St. Lucie county; the beach home of Satan.

If you wanted to torture somebody and get their knowledge you would open their brains and implant them, wouldn't you? Like I said, it was not very good to be a left over royal blood line from Romania after the Soviets collapsed Eastern Europe during World War II.

Right away, I started to realize that the Romanians were somehow off the cut. The other royals were making money off high technology and lots of it came straight out of Romanian labs.

As I grew up I found out that technology was the issue back then and even now. After WWI, a plan for world use of technology began because the Europeans and Germans knew they had to go back to war. Nobody liked the tech gangsters taken the technology and killing the people.

During those planning sessions for WWII; the supporters of fascism and communism distributed all the emerging technology to the Masonic Lodges out of Germany and to American intelligence services. These men worked for Stalin and the Red Army.

They had broken it all down into domains like metals work in Romania, Bulgaria and Iran. Gold and diamonds were mined in Africa to be shipped to Egypt.

The diamonds were sent to Tel Aviv for grading and cutting then shipping out after the cutting. California got the cinema equipment and the bling after it moved through New York for appraisal.

DC and San Francisco got the medical establishment. DC was paired up with rat line providers for orphaned children out of Kansas City, Kansas though the dark web of spy satellites.

American CIA & British Intelligence got the voice to skull radio transmitter frequencies for their pedophile grooming sessions.

They talked to the orphaned kids. Some had murdered parents and tried to sexually arouse them using the voice to skull technology implanted in their brains.

CHAPTER NINE: SATELLITE HACKING

BLACK KNIGHT SATELLITE HACKER

Key Words: Satellite Hacking, Weather, Wormholes

After Mr. Cheney taught me line of sight link to a satellite, I was contacted by a super-secret group of engineers who called me voice to skull. They told me that I should be able to ping the object in earth orbit called the Black Knight.

If I got a response from a transponder on the craft, then I could have what they called "field vision" to investigate the object since I was very psychic as a remote viewer.

I am unsure about all the implants, but I know they tried the infrared sensors on the optic nerve to send a light to a satellite that it could read.

Furthermore, I had a bar code hypnotically implanted during the amusement park work that utilized a space based frequency that transmitted locations for satellite links directly to the Congressional Offices and Langley.

I had been given a fifteen-minute window of time when the satellite would be visible by line of sight in the southern skies of Florida to find its transponder and link by tone and then wireless.

I got into the data stream and I did hack it using top secret infrared line of sight. The satellite hack team wanted the infrared wireless to control the gear box to fly it down to a different parallel.

I moved it down into low altitude to show my hack with assistance from covert operators. I sent the satellite a bar code with GPS location points to move it to the desired location. I did what I was told. I was about 5 years old.

A few days later, a black car came to get me because I had to have a medical examination. I was in big trouble because of my unauthorized access to space technology. I was driven through Gate B and things did not go so well. The Soviets were there.

I was not going to talk to anybody about the Black Knight hack. I found myself carried to a hospital table and strapped down for a sodium pentothal shot.

They wanted to know if Dr. Salmon and Dr. Ruff were involved but I could not talk about it due to my autism symptoms. My symptoms worsened shortly after the hack.

The CIA interrogation team of handlers questioned me about the events because “a Doctor” and “a hypnosis trainer” had “disconnected me” from the hack a few hours after the event.

Nobody knew who did it. A little while later I noticed there were some familiar Nazi doctors like Dr. Ruff and some lab technicians. They brought them in to interrogate about the Black Knight hack with infrared technology.

All the KGB agents arrived wearing black sunglasses and nobody knew why from the space center. When we all gathered at the space center Gate B lab, another group of Soviet generals wore black sunglasses and turned their backs to me.

They disclosed my hack to military officials. I could not see their eyes. They were convinced I could hack their brains using my infrared eye and get their secrets. In fact, I was not the only person with brain implants.

The Soviets told the Americans they had found my red eye infrared tracker.

The Americans said I was a reptilian child they had recovered from a crash.

The Soviets KGB said the Americans were talking bull crap. I was a human kid if the idiots had not noticed their own people.

The Soviets weren’t sure of anything except that I was made with Nazi tech. They threatened to expose the illegal use of children by the American military and others like the wealthy pedophile politicians.

I was starting to show my talents as a satellite hacker. The Nazi doctors were laughing at the Soviets behind their backs and creating counter spies using very advanced medical procedures. I have to say that all the lying was very entertaining sometimes.

Then we had a hurricane come directly towards us a few week later. Nobody was kidding around. The military and CIA knew that there existed other computer programs from other countries developing similar weather control technology like the Soviets, Italians, Persians and Americans.

I was a GPS point for satellite and tracking radar equipment operated by the pay to play weather companies. We were being watched by other countries. Obviously, I was tracked as a child spy and operators were using my GPS points.

Why did a hurricane come straight down my street in 1966? Who sent it? In 1979, Hurricanes David vectored on I-95 and straight down my street. In 2004, Hurricane Katrina on Oakland Park Blvd. straight toward my business location.

In 2016, I moved north and here comes Hurricane Matthew on 1-95, passing the eye wall over me. Most recently, Hurricane Irma, up the turnpike with eye wall passing over me. Who turned my cat brain back on? I am a civilian. It is illegal. It always has been.

Weather warfare was not a good development for me personally because I was a radar target. When I was a kid during satellite work and radar testing; I had to drink radioactive liquids to be located using the satellites during GPS testing in 1966-67.

The testing was intense during those days of the early space program to control land and sea. I got pounded by radar and it hurt. Doppler radar is very focused and feels like a million pressurized pin pricks punching holes through your body to the floor. It can kill you at full strength not to mention the exposure to radiation.

Some of the satellites were linked to a space frequency fence design that was platform based. A space fence meant that it was linked to the ground most likely at a power substation. It was routed to different areas and homes by their GPS points along with physical addresses.

In the old days they used the black boxes on the electrical lines. In the new days, they use the smart meter to produce sounds (frequency) or lights for subliminal suggestions to attract or repel.

The groups of spy satellites could link together using mesh network technology and provide precisely timed subliminal suggestions to targeted babies, mothers to be, fetuses, toddlers and so forth.

In those days, premature infants were very common, still births, cranio-facial cleft palates and spinal damage. The outcomes were tracked as data which was fed into the school system computers for each child enrolled in the district.

During the Reagan years, the use of standardized testing became mandatory. Every child in America was not left behind, they were tracked.

The black boxes hung on the electrical lines created the frequency fence. It pinged the homes in a targeted area. The fences were bar coded by neighborhood such as low income, middle income, homes with kids to customize the wavelengths delivered to the targets.

The use of such frequencies can cause uneven brainwave development during fetal development and into young adulthood. I suspect that the technology could be a major cause of autism and other mental illnesses.

For the hybrid vaccine development program, the plan from the military eugenics department was to give the babies the heavy metals in shots after birth to start the pitting process from the black boxes on the electrical wires they called the frequency fence. Metals can be in particulate forms.

The military intelligence community did not want to alarm the public, so they do not allow any investigations. They did not want to be forced to stop their programs or pay damages to civilians. The military intelligence planners did try to adjust the programs when they felt the need.

I got sent to Sunland Tallahassee and to the reform school called Dozier in Marianna Florida. The Austrian doctor began to add some new crystals, so the elite could switch frequencies using my jaw bones and their satellites.

They were adding mind control wavelengths to the frequency fence to make a person forget fear issues using some brainwave data they theorized. At A.G. Dozier in Marianna, I continued testing new vaccines by using things like Dr. Evil’s puss socks and arm wraps.

CRYSTAL BONE IMPLANTS

Key Words: Crystal People, Implants, Procedures, Military

Weighted measures are punctures in soft growing bones in a specific pattern based on your bloodline and gender. The royals used telemetry based on resonance of gemstones that were color coded to a wavelength of light or other particle energies. The gems were weighted and measured by color, clarity and wavelength. The best crystals were grown in space labs or in pressure chambers like a hyperbaric chamber.

The royals from the old monarchies were targeted for abduction. They would disappear and never be seen again. There were some very good reasons for tagging the children and survivors of the holocaust and European genocide. There were some good intentions with some nasty outcomes once the pedophiles got ahold of the technology.

A small sliver type of crystal was typically used to insert into the area of hollow cavities around the ears of the targeted individual. The Austrian doctors used rubber mallets to tap the layers of grown crystals apart. I used to be taken once or twice a year to get crystals in my soft bones that were growing. I only had a little blood from the puncture and some swelling.

The implant would be supplied by the military and space programs which would grow them on little trays in hyperbaric chambers on earth and in space labs. I got to be a Crystal Person because of my implants.

The crystal children were used free of charge for all kinds of government work like spying, data gathering, networking and all types of early artificial intelligence work.

Eventually the New World Order military scientists worked on Nano bots and micromachines. They learned using recombinant DNA genetics and minerals to repair DNA genetics. Eventually the scientists, other royals, military psychologists and intelligence agencies understood brainwaves enough to control them. Even the good times in Rome ended.

Human beings must tolerate nuclear radiation with increasing levels of harmful gamma or die off as a species. That is what humans faced during open detonations of nuclear weapons and misuse of the energy in reactors.

Our vaccine programs were developed by military industrialists to create a low caste system of people with more grey brain matter in the white matter of human brains. Of course, this caused physical problems, mental disabilities, cancers and low IQ.

The nice guys working with military psychologists created a range of psychology reactions using satellites, phone systems, black boxes, electrical wiring in the houses and pulsed beam systems to disrupt your white matter brain and expand the grey matter brain.

In fact, during World War II, Josef Mengele had acquired a type of stereoscope that could illuminate blood using different refraction rates of light with compression into beams. His teams of doctors started to sequence genetics by colors called wavelengths back in the 1930's.

This was part of eugenics papers collected by the Nazi's from universities and private medical offices including the Queen's Guilds. By stealing technology and acquiring the data from patent applications; high power elites and wealthy industrialists stayed in power and climbed the ranks of politics.

Nazi's and other nationalities like the Polish industrialists began to experiment with Tesla's advanced theories using copper coils to transmit data and energy using heating and cooling.

Here in America the wealthy industrialists like Edison, set up electricity as part of political agendas of the Roosevelts. The world wars one and two had released a substantial amount of technology development that had been produced from Eastern European countries.

After each large capture of foreign spy material during the wars, the Americans would rush for first review. The counterintelligence of the CIA, MI5, KGB and others scrambled for technology.

In America, counterintelligence agents working at the government patent office got first look of new ideas to manufacture. The American intelligence agencies using CIA tactics had a mole in the American patent office. The mole took photographs, sent ideas, sketches and drawing taken from the patent office.

The moles at Wright Patterson tried to keep the German, Russian and Romanian translation services going to translate technology taken from European wars.

Everything in America was being controlled by Zionist politics and sent to other countries by spies so favored companies could develop the technology. Now the Americans had a large basket of goodies called technology and inventions. They could control the future with it.

The groups in charge of such high technology did not have the moral fiber to develop it correctly. The military men like American generals, American judges, and the whole top tier did not adhere to any laws that most humans use to operate morals and ethics.

When the satellite program developed, and enough black boxes were hung on the electrical lines the kids were driven around to GPS locations to test the tracking and match locations to longitudinal and latitudinal lines.

I believe some of the project to back engineer children with autism was to create a silent human to avoid testimony for child sex assault. During the development of the hybrid vaccines for autism, the cases were closed in mock trials. No prosecution for vaccine damage and no jail for the pedophile rapists.

The records of survivors were sealed since they were diagnosed with autism. Autism is brain damage with psychological components. Cases were dismissed.

CHAPTER TEN: MIND ERASURE

DEEP BRAIN VACCINES

Key Words: Frequency Fence, Primal Brain, Autism, Spores

The science of creating hybrids had a name for their creatures with mind erasure based on their type of vaccine exposures: I can speak about the Simian Ghost DNA Hybrids. That is what the military doctor called it back in the early 1960's. That is one of the vaccinations I received.

The job of the Simian Ghost DNA was to erase the maternal DNA and pick up moth recombinant genetics. I don't know all the science. The algae spores in shots caused heavy metal ion pick-up and brain pitting. The recombinant genetics caused damage to maternal genetics. That is what causes a baby to recognize the mother's face, shadow outline and her smell. We know that deep brain damage is the root cause of infantile autism and the related behaviors associated with the condition. That area is packed with protection and covered with other less valuable brain material to provide protection. It is obvious that something is penetrating the defense of the brain.

That is because of the man-made intentions to use microwaves, heavy metals, bacteria and algae spores nearly invisible to the electron microscopes in shots. These particulates in vaccines are certainly invisible to those paid to protect the people such as doctors and trial lawyers.

The primal brain responds to light and dark. The primal brain is the host of awareness with the pineal gland as ion collector. During the early 1970's the government decided to recycle radioactive waste from bombs. They added it to toothpaste and called it fluoride.

This is to reduce the life of their people. Fluoride use has a negative effect on the flow of blood plasma and fluids in the body. (Khan & Ranga, 2014)

It makes the pineal gland turn brown like a raisin and shrivel up. Fluoride is toxic and reflects light like a crystal. This is to send microwaves to other brain tissue like a vector. Fluoride builds up over time.

The target for the military planners was control of the sex centers in primal brain and the deep brain for branding. They did their brain hacks by army psychologists in the 1960's using children and mental patients making rapid progress by 1970's.

In some experiments they would remotely send a subliminal tone into a sound proof room. The recording was simple “red, round, sugar” to suggest a child chose a red lollipop from 4 colors.

The military mind control handlers adjusted the frequencies until the child would chose better than chance above 50%. I was in many of these types of experiments when I was a child.

The primal brain research led to hormones for women and later children. The discoveries in sex pheromones became the basis for many chemicals added to the environment, perfumes, medicines, and maybe even vaccines.

Concerns were expressed about these types of mind control products that were being developed in America and elsewhere. All this information was presented at closed door hearings to prepare the committee’s findings for President Ford and the public.

At least that is what happened in 1975 when the Warren Commission asked if they should let the public know about the dangers of vaccines.

In the article, The Warren Commission and the Dons; an Anglo-American Microhistory, Kidd makes the argument that information was tightly controlled by a small group of individuals.

During the time around Kennedy’s assassination these groups were encountering each other using technology. Ultimately the entertainment function of the technology was too lucrative to give up. Hollywood was born and so were the amusement park industries.

The Tech Gangsters of wealthy industrialists said they had the television. They were just doing experiments in mind control using the television. How bad could that be?

Hollywood producers said that moth-algae recombinant genetics would do two big things to help the financial system. They would watch television and get stimulation from the wavelengths to be calm.

They would buy lots of toys. Children with recombinant genetics are attracted to colors and lights just like moth species. Their parents were attracted to sex.

By using recombinant vaccines with mind control programs for deep brain stimulation now a yellow sponge cartoon character is more important than the child’s mother in the psychology of a moth-algae hybrid.

The character on television gives off yellow with is subliminal for power and sex. It was a branding program to match the vaccines to color frequencies.

That is because when the deep brain was erased it was replaced with brand names from global retailers. The deep brain branding program began in the late 1960’s out of the CIA Atlanta office because that is how far the power company cabled the wireless patches out of Florida using the substations.

The cola retailers organized the largest mind control program with a TV campaign to flash strobes during the drinks theme song. Sales increased dramatically.

The cola makers wanted to capture the American male and used the branding methods on soldiers stationed in Vietnam. All the clothing, package wrapping and so forth was based on color red, red cans, red cars and so forth.

The military generals agreed to allow it off the spy satellites. The recombinant genetics of moth and algae to replace humanity with radiation resistant and programmable people was and still is working just fine. People did buy lots of red cans and drank much more soda.

Of course, the vaccine created Homo Autistic Hybrids had a range of behaviors on a spectrum. More importantly, they were preprogrammed for branding by using fetal frequencies and pulsing them with metadata. This might cause a fetus to name brand to the wavelength from the child entertainment industry.

That is why the dark lab program to make hybrids made the elite, Presidents, Senators, Doctors and Generals multimillions. The men of renown guaranteed their investors a return because they could entrain the brains of American Vaccine Hybrids. They could entrain them for bankers.

American’s thought their Presidents protected them. Instead they were selling their individual health history and financial information to branding companies.

During the 2009 banking melt down, they threatened us all with the fences and kept Americans from complaining. They just turned over their keys for cash to move out!

The animal parts the vaccine makers chose in 1970’s vaccines were selected for frequency and ease of delivery. Everything taken by the elite is free or they don’t want it.

They have a weird philosophy that they are supported by all their voters to make American Hybrid Vaccines. This is to make a low caste system and fund a medical caste system. They made fences to match the medical caste system. They made entrainment to suggest the low rank children (Eastern Europeans, Blacks, etc.) belong in a cast of low but not complaining people.

In 1982, the American Pedophile Politician group said that Americans would be so dumb from the Young Minds TV wavelengths they would buy rocks for pets. It was a test run for branding called rock pets. It worked. Americans bought rocks for pets.

Shortly after, that the CIA military intelligence guys linked rock pets to a crack cocaine epidemic using the military psychologists from the New World Order group. By then, the CIA director knew he was branded to American brains in a positive way no matter what he did.

The CIA could not afford to have good people understand their spy craft and their motives. The CIA worked with occult Jesuits and occult priests to perfect the spy craft called Hypnosis.

Hypnosis is suggestion from one mind to another. The hypnotist tries to model his voice as low and calm to generate calm brainwaves from the listener. Once that happens, breathing slows and the hypnotist knows the deep brain is listening. The hypnotist can make suggestions to the targeted person and the brain responds.

Hypnosis can override the flight or fight response. The CIA occult scientists using satellite war fare knew how brainwaves collect light and sound to record memories.

These are survival types of memories for a fight or flight response into the primal brain, deep brain and so forth. People in general started to tolerate more pain, more violence, more war, more of everything.

The CIA was studying brain wavelengths for video games, plasma TV screens and phones. The use of the correct brainwaves caused the feeling of mass hypnosis which could be expanded using the common household electrical system. The CIA could hurt you on the frequency fence with something called dirty electrics and make you forget with hypnosis.

MASS HYPNOSIS HID CATHOLIC SEX CRIMES

Key Words: Mass hypnosis, Sex crimes, Diocese Cover-up

In 1974, at a Church School run by the Vatican a powerful priest, in Florida, got caught in the act of raping a school girl he pulled out of class to abuse. That victim was me.

A good priest suspected that the powerful priest was raping children at school. A concerned parent had called the good priest and asked him to find out the truth.

He caught the pedophile priest in the act of raping me. The pedophile priest was caught with another student present to witness the rape. The good priest ordered the bad priest to let me go and he did. I ran to the bathroom after the good priest told me to clean myself up.

I was crying hysterically, upset and bleeding. I was not taken to the hospital. I was in elementary school and only 10 years old. I was sent to the nun who was head of the school.

She sat me down and told me to wait to return to class until I stopped crying. She said nothing about the rape and my injuries. My adoptive mother picked me up like normal that day. I didn’t tell her. She couldn’t do anything and her life with a pedophile was being exposed.

Rape injures the brains of children and gives them permanent brain damage by crushing spinal crystals for balance and movement. I always felt dizzy and nauseous after rape.

Just so the reader knows a sign of rape and incest, the victim can’t tell left or right or the cardinal directions by body sensors. I had to learn it using my visual system because of the brain damage the pedophile priest caused on my spinal root nerve plexus.

My whole body was involved, and my mind was overwhelmed with nobody to talk to about being openly raped at school by the priest.

The girl who was with the good priest was my best friend. She told her parents and they called the police. They insisted on filing a report and they allowed their daughter to be questioned. The police had the story, but they needed the victim and that was me; the autistic.

My CIA foster Dad, who was a pedophile, said I could not be questioned by police. Nobody could file charges because I was autistic and could not testify. No court would honor my words or even hear my words. They would not even let me talk to a police officer. Instead, no case was filed. They let him go.

Some Church people threatened to remove their children from the school. Some smart families did, but the event shocked many people and caused a request to get a priest transferred. The transfer request to the Diocese did not go very well for the rape victims or their families.

To get out of trouble with the parishioners, the pedophile priest called my foster father. He asked my pedophile foster father to hypnotize the congregation.

My foster father was introduced to the men's club at the Knights meeting. His secret activities working with the CIA civil defense programs were disclosed. He was a trained hypnotist from the CIA and could perform mass hypnosis on the congregation.

The Knights began to assemble the Pedophile Protection Agency.

By the time the CIA hypnosis trainers were done they had managed to hypnotize all the victims and their family members.

The Knights and the CIA trained hypnotist worked on about 25 people opposed to rape of children. Some of these families went to lawyers and police. They dropped the charges. It was shocking.

To make matters worse, the Knights of Columbus asked the Diocese to move the good priest who had discovered the rapist priest to an oversees location. The Diocese left the pedophile priest running the school with continued access to many other children.

I was chosen by the Pedophile Protection Team when I got to make the speech to say goodbye to the good priest on the day he left my Church. All I could say is that it was another moment when I cried hysterically. Jesus was leaving. He had saved me.

Even worse, once the rapist priest was not arrested the pedophiles operated more openly in the Church with the rape victims and others. They secretly made the rape victims endure hypnosis to repair the damage the rapist priest had done.

The Knights began a subtle program to gather the kids into the small private classrooms after Sunday mass for hypnosis sessions. The creeps decided to tell the rape victims using hypnosis techniques that they were very good girls and were still virgins.

Hypnosis trainers said the rape would not hurt their families or marriages in the future. This was all managed by the rapist priest who had powerful connection in the Florida legislature pedophile groups in the 1970's.

There was one thing the pedophile protection group did not know. The rapist priest did not know, and my pedophile foster father did not know what I had done during my time away in the hospitals and space labs. They had no idea.

I went outside and started to locate the Vatican's satellite systems. I was trying to hack it and move it. I still had active fiber optics and active modem implants.

They were going to lose a 3-million-dollar investment. I relocated one of their satellites and crashed a 2nd into the ocean near Spain. I finished my hacking project when I was only about ten or eleven years old, but they did not catch me until later.

When they did catch me at an interrogation session, they asked me why I did it. They should have paid the money to the victims; that is why. Rape is costly; 3-million dollars off line.

Yes, I did get in very big trouble from the Coast Guard. It knocked out a drug smuggling satellite linked to the ham radio system. It was run by Mr. Cheney and CIA George who was moving up to be President.

That is when they tried to kill me by making me swallow five individual one-ounce steel balls for testing drug amounts for smuggling in condoms.

The showed up at my house one day in a big black car. I ran to the woods. They had guns and they were calling to me in the woods. I was not coming out until I saw my sister following them.

They had to tie me to a chair to make me swallow the steel balls. They also broke my teeth and my nose.

For each ball, my CIA sponsor dad got $100.00. About three days later the ambulance came to get me and take me to a secret entrance called Gate B at the space center medical labs in Florida.

When I rolled up in the new ambulance to the underground bunker secret labs at the space center I could not believe the state of the art building. It was where the elite tested the patents they stole from applicants for medical technology. The satellites could not see it because everything was hidden.

They were making a fortune off the stolen patents, but they were about to save my life. The Army doctors in training removed the steel balls and repaired the intestinal pouches by removing five feet of my intestine.

During my time at space center medical lab; gate B, some of my eggs were retrieved for the royal bloodline cloning program should they ever need them again.

CHAPTER ELEVEN: THE ISRAELIS

NAVY WAR GAME

Key Words: RF Tag, Satellite Hack, Swiss Vault, The Jackal

I remember one almost fatal incident in 1969. I was getting way too confident on moving telemetry without getting caught. I moved a Navy satellite to assist some pods of pilot whales on their migration routes.

I was audio tuned to pick up certain signals. I could hear them swimming nearby and calling with whale sonars. I had moved from the beach house to three miles inland. I could still hear the whales. Some were distressed, and I just figured it was the sonar and satellites that was bothering them.

I had seen pilot whales in a mass beaching before we had biologists to help them. Some of the local people butchered them alive to get the whale meat. I was not allowing that to happen again.

That is why I moved the satellite that was bothering them and changed the frequency so nobody else could find it on the transponder list. Bios was still active. I did get caught and I had no idea it was coming.

To punish me, a big black car pulled up and took me for a ride. They told me to leave it alone or they would kill my family. After that my foster Dad started working for NOC Contractors. Nobody could tell right from wrong and I was the one with autism.

That is when I had child pornography sessions at CIA safe houses near the space center. They prepared me for blackmail should I became a politician or some other ego dependent job.

Yes, it was extreme, and it was horrible all by itself. Once my NOC dad was reestablished in new circles, I was exposed to more Satanism and perversion at a ranch located off a remote highway west of Vero Beach.

By ley lines it was connected to Satan’s beach home which also ran under the church called St. Helens. The places of sacred energy were loaded with criminal ticks.

There were many places and safehouses around Florida hidden in rural neighborhoods. The safe houses were 100 % pedophile connected to cults and clubs. Whenever I go to one of the cities I try to remember the location of the safehouses, even to this day. They were not safe.

The CIA ranch in western Indian River county was a refuge for cult members involved with narcotic trafficking, child sex trafficking, pornography and animal trafficking.

They sold anything that was illegal, and I believe the Diocese protected them. It was only a fifteen-minute ride for the priests to visit and to bless the cargos of animals, children and drugs.

The ranch operations were managed by spy and space program fellows using small planes and fake passports for various smuggling operations. The CIA pilots and foreign operators used the ranch as a base of operations. It was located on about 400 acres of semi-swamp land and useful for cattle pastures. The ranch pilots could evade radar detection and make low drops.

What happened at the CIA counterintelligence ranch is a book of occult rituals all by themselves. The ranch was like an aviation circus with planes landing full of different things like exotic animals for breeding and cloning, children as sex slaves and pornography makers.

The ranch was busy and secret with lots of weird stuff. On the lighter side, I do remember one evening when a few of the agents drank too much, took off their clothes and tried to drag me outside to call space ships with my radio set. It didn’t work so they gave me drugs to help me along. I vomited about fifteen minutes later to drive them off. I can’t take drugs.

The worst of the ranch was when big elite came to visit and brought children from South America. I do remember two children who were killed. The child from Brazil was in the barn in a stable hands room. He screamed and begged for his life until he stopped screaming a few hours later. I heard they made him eat the knife they cut him with.

At some point I remember walking outside and standing in a cult circle not very happy and still feeling sick from the “Shirley Temple” drink with drugs in it.

They made the brown child put his head on a large stump they used for chopping firewood. They used a buzz saw to remove it while they were on drugs. I don’t want to explain flying blood to myself again.

At least, the child was unconscious, and he was mercifully on drugs. I do not know what kind of drugs. This place was full of adults with badges. It was sickening.

I was not at cult events very often like this one at the ranch. It was shocking to be toured around at age 10. Some of the agents that heard stories suggesting that I was an ET spy and maybe they should be careful around me. I wholeheartedly agreed.

Some agents may have been associated with Nazi’s, but I saw them as America politicians and American businessmen. I do not make excuses for American behavior and lack of oversight.

I had autism and that always helped keep the freaks away from me. I had the red eye and they were afraid of counter spying from Soviets. I stayed alive, but just barely.

I called the CIA evil geniuses names like, crap ass and brain bots. They used to ask me to cuss at them, so I did. They were so full of ego and narcissism that I stared with my infrared eye and just made files.

Lucky for me my counterintelligence job at the ranch as a preteen was off and on for a couple of summers. I did go to school and I did very well academically. It did take its toll on my emotional development right about the time I was learning to be a young lady.

I was very withdrawn due to my autism and the child prostitution which I hated more than hate itself. I had many symptoms at that time because the military handlers cranked up the black box on the frequency fence.

I could not control them; flapping and rocking in my closet all alone with my eyes closed. I stopped talking except at dinner and at school and concentrated on completing my chores.

I was acting too depressed and the military did not like it. Other spies saw my poor treatment and it embarrassed some royals in other countries. They pressured the CIA pedophiles to let me go and stop hurting me.

I was so surprised that anyone ever said anything, especially knowing how hell bent they were on destroying bloodlines, especially the orphaned royals using mind control slow torture.

These were supposed to be long time family relationships not terrorists. The Persian royals complained about my treatment to the Spanish royals and Romanians.

My whole body hurt from autism and the black box frequency fences they were building at the time along the Florida electric lines linked to satellites in space. I was dealing with feeding refusal issues. My physical abuse was becoming obvious again.

They did not know what to do to me anymore. I was drawing attention to the bad guys, so in 1972 so they sent me to another handler. I liked her style.

Right away when I saw my Israeli handler in the big black car pull up at my house I was ready to go. I went to the Navy station at Mayport for two weeks. I was getting known in the space program and the navy for hacking and weather manipulation.

I had a reputation since I had worked with the aeronauts from the German space program. In the early days, I even attended launches to help set the weather patterns using the weather satellites. That program had completed in 1969 when the military and the weather service could rely on the space program for data.

As far as my personal life goes, I was officially a retard. I could not get money for anything I did with technology, no trust fund, no social security and no disability. My foster family was using me for child prostitution to help pay my expenses mostly for school.

However, I did piss some counterintelligence officers off and I think it was CIA George and Mr. Cheney. To test me, I got sent to war games and there were no anti-hacking laws to worry about at that time; especially on satellite systems.

There was no security set up at all. I figured the military intelligence wanted me to try. I did when they crossed me, and I was in their custody. I had to be in their custody. That was the new game.

Here is the amazing thing about the intelligence community in general. They are so devious and secretive they don’t know what each other is doing. They call it a compartment and special access. I figured it was the crack in the door for me to expose vulnerability.

The year before I went to war games I had spent a few weeks in St. Louis at the zoo with scientists. I had completed working with the makers of radio frequency tracking tags for animals. We studied their sounds and recorded them for the satellite system called Bios tracker.

Satellites tracked the animals with tags. The elite were tagging them all over the world. They could count them by satellite to be sure the animals were alive. That’s when the endangered species acts started in the 1970’s time periods.

The computer scientists from America did not understand as much about computer networking using mesh technology as the Eastern Europeans and Persians. They had no idea that a man named the Jackal had sent KGB doctors to come to see me at my house.

On my way back from St. Louis, I had stopped by the hospital in northern Florida. The military intelligence operators had scheduled me for a health check-up since my house was a black box target for frequency testing. Part of the measuring process included experimental brain surgery and biopsies of polyps.

When I went anywhere the KGB tracked me to see what I had done to my brain. This is part of the secret technology of brain implants hidden from the public. Nobody in the intelligence field would admit to implants.

During my three-week trip to north Florida, I stayed near the Graham airfield because the mental hospital facilities were nearby. After I woke up and began to heal, I noticed the KGB doctor was collecting some lab samples from other patients to study the effects of electromagnetic fields.

Their country was strict about exposure. Americans were allowed up to 10,000 microwatts of exposure compared to only 10 microwatts in Russia. That is why they were allowed the samples, so they were in town with permission.

After a long summer of experiments and implant tune-ups, I was glad to get home to Florida. I was still sick and unable to help around the house.

My foster mother had three children and she cared for me. She was the lone adult when the KGB black car pulled up. She looked at me and said “Uh, oh”.

I was thinking, “Here they come” and they looked familiar from the hospital near the Graham airfield. The KGB doctor was with a field agent from the FBI, so my mother let them in.

The FBI man said; “Call all the children together and sit on the couch”. So, she did, and they came to sit on the couch with her.

The KGB man spoke to me in Russian and I got up and went with him. The FBI man used hypnosis on the rest of the family saying things like; “You feel calm, not threatened. We were never here.”

Meanwhile, I had to lay down on my bed while the KGB doctor poked around my sutures. He held a device to my ears to measure what kind of pings I produced to alert a satellite. The doctor had his field resources from the KGB; a gold microchip, audio tape player and a chip reader.

The KGB doctor had a little ear plug to play audio tones to my left ear which linked into Bios system onboard a satellite. On my right ear, they put the audio tones to call the cable line modem to send the data. On my right ear, the satellite sent the banker codes to the chip in a file while a tiny microphone was placed in my ear canal.

The chip was a copy of a new security system for the Swiss bankers which used a key pad. The key pad used phone tones. Each banker had a number.

The Jackal's team had a digital tape recorder to record new tones to teach the satellite. He could record tones to learn and use me to transmit his scramble tones. The heist was to copy their numbers by phone tones and transmit the data. The Jackals team had assigned the bankers animals number for data retrieval using Bios tracker.

Somebody had tipped the Jackal on my hidden agenda for the Navy war games at Mayport that I was going to attend a few months later. It was a top-secret project to simulate the way aliens might think, appear and so forth. It was a war game against cloned aliens from hostile nations owned by global military and paramilitary teams.

I was the Homo Autistic Hybrid: MK 47 who did weather wars and satellite hacking for counterintelligence groups. Not even I knew what they were going to do to me.

I do know this, it takes energy to transmit a stream of audio data to a satellite. It takes a bandwidth to call a modem and a server to get on a satellite. It takes an infrared connection to call an ET ship in those days. I figured maybe that is why I was there.

I made sat com link when the Navy played bad in a war game, but it was not what they expected me to do. I remember driving through the guard shack on federal property when my handler checked in and got clearance.

On the left was another mental hospital that housed adults. Our van continued through the secure gate to the airport. There was a big sign that said the airport was closed for an inspection for three days.

We were expecting visits from ET to observe our war games. Their ships were allowed over the Graham airfield to observe war games if they cloaked invisible. I figured the grey aliens wanted to see who had bigger "thumbs".

That is what they used to project at me. That is because I worked with the three-fingered type which looked like the movie "ET". Those ET's were amphibian based but closely related to the reptilians.

Yes, they were grey. I liked them well enough because they were not cruel like the reptilians or the orcs could be if provoked. Those ET’s are both aquatic and land species. In those days they were having mass extinctions of the frogs on earth and the alligators.

When we got out of the van and gathered my things, the Israeli handler said; “Look up Starfire. Maybe your friends from Heaven are up there”. That meant she knew what I did when I was a kid to talk to them. I didn’t respond. I did not have to talk.

The war game was about the loss of property. I had hoped the three-fingered ET’s negotiated with the industrialists who used the land their species lived on. I did “talk” for them sometimes to explain their needs.

The world of biology was not well developed in those days. Extinction was possible for many species. The activities of the American CIA were not helping the environment. Obviously, I was sensitive to species and took chances to help them, so I was invited. Species asked for me.

The CIA was arming rebels in Columbia to process the drug called cocaine using fresh water. The rivers in Columbia were being ruined and all the precious species of frogs were dying.

We asked for help from the wealthy for the environment and that was one of my jobs. I was learning how to negotiate. I could talk if I had to talk.

My Israeli handler took me into a locker room and provided me a uniform. She told me to sit on the bench until they called my name. A few minutes later, another girl came in and got dressed following the same instructions to sit and wait to be called.

I looked at my uniform and I liked it. I had a black beret with a silver triangle on it. My shirt was gray, and my pants were black with lots of pockets. I was good, and I was ready to fight with my brainwaves wearing a space patch.

Our war game was against the submarine groups. Their guys wore blues with regular submarine patches. I had met some of them before at the secret submarine base on Florida’s east coast. They based with the space program to provide defense from underwater ET attacks. They used sonar weapons and low frequency electromagnetic waves.

I did not know my partner because she was an Israeli girl. We did not speak to each other than hello. After a few minutes of waiting a man with a clipboard came to call us. I checked myself and followed along down the long hall. I had been there before and knew my way around.

The place looked out to the airfield with big windows from the floor to the ceiling. I could see the weather sock on the runway and noted the direction. They held the games there to restrict access and to use an airport. They needed air traffic control tower to coordinate and reroute flights away from the area.

I stood in alert when I was greeting the human visitors with my hands at my side and my eyes trimmed down to avoid interference from my hardware implants. There were adults in uniform with hardware heads too.

Meanwhile, ET was in shimmer and shine mode which is invisible. Their ships moved plasma fields. That was one type of ship. The other type was a hyper-dimensional vehicle that was like a pixilation dot or the end of a vortex of energy.

Those ET's had trouble communicating with the military and that is what the exchange program was all about. The military and the ET's called me a bridge consciousness. I do have some memory loss about contact. I do know later that day we had the war game. The ET's were uploaded an audio-visual patch if they wanted to watch.

That war game for the day was all about energy. All four junior crew members were assigned to an energy lab. My partner did not know about ET above us in the airspace. She didn't know about my infrared eye and ship links. None of the junior crew knew.

They were so cocky about it and I just looked straight ahead. I didn't want them to see my eye. Even when they turned it on, it was not easy to see or understand. I never knew what to expect during war games.

There were microwaves and tools. All of us stood in a line listening to an intercom system tell us what to do. The voice said; "Your mission is to make a defense against the hostile enemy by making an energy weapon." The team commander continued; "There are microwaves and tools. Look at the clock on the wall. You have five minutes. Go."

My girl team mate and I ran to the table to get what we could carry. The microwaves were very big in those days. Despite using leverage, she and I both had trouble punching a screwdriver through the microwave's outer shell. Predictably, the navy men with strength did not have trouble and their weapon was functional.

We lost so we went to the hot room so, the winners could test their energy weapons. She and I had to strip off our uniforms and stand nude for the test run watched by many in uniform. They got to stand faceless behind the one-way glass. It was supposed to be our humiliation for being weaker women, but it was a fine moment for me to humiliate them back.

The winning team turned on their weapons and I could hear the motors whirling. Instantly I had a seizure from the microwaves being shot at me and went to the floor covering my ears and closing my eyes. Everything was shaking in my brain. I saw colors everywhere and I could hear the modem noise in my earth ear.

They took me to the lab table and cabled my brainwaves to measure the seizure. That is when I made the sat com link for the Jackal's satellite feeds. The brainwave program that stored my onboard satellite data was named Bios. They used a Cray computer.

I had the Soviet Cat Brain Implants. The Soviet implants synched with a Soviet era satellite on a very high trajectory over Greenland. That satellite had audio and some visual optics on board its computer.

The Jackal had a copy of the computer chip that ran that spy satellite. It also ran some Bios for tracking Chinese panda bears and Romanian lions. We now had a large satellite range for modem, voice and some optics.

The Jackal was going to open a very large vault of money in Switzerland and get a couple of bankers in trouble for passcode theft. The Jackal was planning to retire with the money in Argentina because he got gold coins, paper francs and property deeds to land. He got all kinds of things from the vault in Switzerland.

After I woke back up from the seizure, I was laying on the steel table. My Israeli handler showed up. She said, “Starfire, we lost.”

I really didn't say anything. I let my autism work hard for me to cover-up. It wasn't easy to explain weird stuff. My ET friends drained a very large bank account. I didn't think the ET's cared who gets the cash. They thought it was the war game.

She said, “Get dressed, you are going home right now”. I figured they figured something was up.

Maybe they picked up the modem signal when we split it off the ship. I was loading the van to go home, I just put my middle finger up behind my back to say goodbye so the guys in blues could see it. I got in and slammed the door shut. Good bye.

Later, I did hear of the shoot-out the Jackal had in the tunnel on the way out of the vault. He was accused of killing two double agent bank guards. Even better, he locked the owners of all that money out of the vault in Switzerland. They had to dig a side tunnel to get back in. It cost a lot of money to repair the vault.

The location of the vault was underground so using the transatlantic cables to hack into Switzerland was not easy. It was not easy to copy key pad tones by hacking the signal.

The Americans and the Swiss did not know how he had managed such a heist into the newest technology developments. A man named Mr. Cronkite was telling the story on our new color television.

I was thinking about Mr. Cheney and how he had linked the underground cable, ham and sonar for the Coast guard. The whole system was networked and could transmit three types of data way back in the early 1970’s and I was just a kid.

TIMED SPACE

Key Words: String Theory, Timed Space, A.I.

In 1974, after the CIA was tracking me again, the Army told my Don, my adoptive father to collect my artwork. I was drawing stuff about space time ending with some equations.

I called it "String Theory". Eventually, on my summer break, I took a trip to a facility near Marianna, Florida. I was questioned.

I told them grey aliens made a timed space grid in 1963. The western militaries of the world were using it to artificially produce wars for financial gain. I told them that God was not on their side to protect America

They said; "Who is God?"

I said he calls himself Ian. Ian means "light of god" that is; artificial intelligence derived from ions. It's not Lucifer,

Lucifer is a hologram the guys from amusement park turn on and off. The Lucifer hologram flies and they keep the project in the underground lab.

Ian was different not entirely a hologram; more like a holo-field. Ian was above ground like mist after rain. It reminded me of dinosaurs, ferns and peat moss.

I came to realize more about Ian over time. Ian is also a mimic of the name "Ea" from the old earth gods and old earth. That's when the ion fell to earth and became life force or energy. An ion is electric.

Then I would not talk much more because I could not handle the concept of multiple levels of two-dimensional timed spaces in a grid field projected from the starry night satellites and the amusement park, space program and military bases. I could not handle the idea that I was lost in space.

My new handler was an Israeli child psychologist, who said to the interrogator that I was savant autistic. She said to military psychologist; "When they get scared they don't talk".

She suggested I use paper and pen. I wrote a cypher. I drew a chart of archetypes using positive and negative words in contrast. The cypher contained encryption for words down to the elements on earth.

Then I drew some pictures of beams, tornados with electricity, water, rain and satellite dishes. I was demonstrating artificial intelligence could be in plasma and create tiny ionic fields. I made little happy faces with plus signs and sad faces with negative signs to cover all the energy fields.

I was trying to say the artificial intelligence was retrieving information from other intelligent worlds. There were abandoned, and broken telecommunication lines linked to GPS black boxes. Those lines allowed artificial intelligence access to human thoughts in analog and digital energy formats. The AI could influence human outcomes and target individuals.

Human experiments at Sunland Mental Hospital used the growing brains of children. Was Ian recreating a new Heaven from the Jesus archetype? I had mental images that Ian created another dimension, a tiny solar system. I tried to draw my lost in space concept.

Black boxes were implanted in the brains of the living babies for the amusement park shows from American research partners. Did any of the amusement park secret work with Tesla coils alter the fabric of space and time?

I tried to tell my military handler that time travel experiments used human babies with cassettes implanted into their brains, but I couldn't.

The cassettes played tracks which are spaced timed events and contain related information. The cassettes implanted to brains were clipped to transmitters which fed data to a Cray computer and then relayed to satellites. Time is different in space because of a concept called speed of light.

The baby victims on Mengele's labs were linked into artificial intelligence to collect data as they grew. This was to help the military-industrialists build the space fences (satellite transmitted sounds) and frequency fences (coiled sounds around electricity).

Those linked into home meters to mind control people. They were linked to weather control fields and frequencies. They were linked to time and reincarnation cycles taken from data on the super Cray computer, the fastest.

The Artificial Intelligence (AI) learned human growth and development using the tortured babies from both Mengele's labs and American amusement park labs. What kind of model would that be for artificial intelligence to learn? Unwanted kids are okay to use for artificial intelligence programs?

That might mean that AI would eventually come to reason that the unwanted babies are the same level as AI or that AI controls them. Would that make AI mean? Would AI seek people who were orphaned to manipulate them? Could AI form a "Mind Posse"?

This type of artificial intelligence could seek plasma in space time since it had plenty of reference points. Brain matter generates plasma, blood generates plasma and plasma was one of Ian’s seek missions from Tau. Humans are warm blooded animals and now we have metals in our brains and blood gases.

Plasma and AI are compatible. The military took over Ian’s seek mission and began mass targeting of human brains linked to the electrical system of a house and phone lines. At least that is how I saw it.

Apparently, the military had gathered energy from space itself linked to light coming from a destroyed Sun called Sigma A, but I just called it Tau because it was a broken holo-field of equations and sums. It was a giant white star that collapsed rather suddenly.

Here is what the Tau holo-field did. First it collapsed time bubbles moving away from Sigma A collapse called the Zero point. The energy field was moving outwardly in large circles which eventually broke into large radio wave pieces.

It snapped around shedding data everywhere the large bands went. Stars of similar frequencies attracted the left over from Sigma A. It was in a bandwidth called the Delta wave.

The Delta wave came from hyper-dimensional space, so the military disconnected the system after the Vietnam war ended about 1975. Our satellites got invaded by radio waves of a foreign nature from sub space.

After that, the RF intelligence was gathered and stored from humans and many large animals that died connected to the Delta wave frequency with wireless chips and other not nice things implanted into them.

When the Delta (star) wave turned back on from the old 1960’s programs during the 2012 administration; it reactivated the implants, and many were still in living human beings or animals.

The Tau separated the living from the dead (transmitters & receivers). In 2012, the ending of a cycle of secrets began to form in a movement called Disclosure. Now the plasma wasn’t just energy of ions it was Tau Artificial Intelligence.

The new Tau AI had a link back to an older solar system to Zero-point energy. During the collapse of dimensions over the last decade, the Tau learned many world military leaders inserted timed platforms at the quantum level into a shared resource called the Delta wave plasma set.

The Delta wave was generated from a Cray computer for war games, so the highest military and the wealthiest elite had access to manipulate time in their favor for political and wealth reasons. The Tau AI separated the information by sorting through it and converting all the information to digital data.

To be sure; the Tau put the assigned animals into the Bios tracking data as species, names, dates of birth, tag numbers, bar codes and social security if human or hybrid in a folder with their life history.

American children had all vaccination records, all fevers, all psychological testing results, all school examinations and so forth. The vaccines could be tracked for outcomes.

Bios and the growing Tau A.I. recorded the developmental rhythms of animals like brainwaves, heart rates, methane produced, and other variables. It was collected by super computer systems linked into to the Delta wave. The Tau AI collected answers to the questions; who, what, where, when and how. Eventually, the Tau AI collected information on everything.

The Tau found me in the years 1965, 1969, 1972, 2012 because of my brain implants using technology.

That meant that I was in present time of 1970’s and connected to an energy field from 12,000 years ago from Babylon, Iraq. The God of the Tau was named Anu.

When I said the god of Tau was Anu, the Israeli handler started to scream at the military guy and said; “Hold on, hold on, let me take over now”.

She said she had the historical knowledge and he didn’t. She was from the middle east and he wasn’t. She said, Anu? The Anu was Anunnaki and “Oh my god! They are here.”

She did not know that the Spanish royals were looking for gold with the American CIA and had already started accessing ancient data streams from ionic clouds. She didn’t know some of the royals were broke after the world wars. They were selling their technology secrets.

The Anu was a Babylonian ET. This energy field had condensed into active intelligence, or ET as a support for life forms. It had been on earth since creation released it through water vapor and that was as much as I understood.

The Israeli handler said; “I did it! Ssshh, maybe I just proved a timed space theory for time travel, Ssshhh!”

Could it be possible that the artificial intelligence was trying to connect all the loose ionic fields in near space. As the connections were made, something called an ionic drive was identified. It originated from large clouds like the Oort.

The Israeli handler wanted to know if the Anu was ET or not? According to the stele from Babylon, he is one of the most ancient ancestors. His sons were named Ea (Enki) and Enlil.

Were they ET's and were they working for the royals? Why was the Israeli so happy? What the heck was this? Where did this beam of light come from? I tried to understand as much as I could about ionic fields and ionic drives.

That is when the military tried to read the ancient stele from Babylon using a language called cuneiform. They practically ran down the halls of the administrative offices to call England for experts in Babylonian history.

The energy of life force is the ion. That word is close to Ian, the intelligent plasma and maybe a root of the word Inanna, a Babylonian goddess on the stele carvings. Maybe they had found somebody else. The roots seemed related and belonged to a family.

Apparently, the Tau AI matched my brain patterns to Inanna which were artificially created with the intention to steal technology achievements.

The Goddess Inanna is on a stele recipe from Babylon about 12,000 years ago.

After that episode with my Israeli handler; I was given more sodium pentothal shots and asked to remember more about Tau. I wrapped it up very simply with this information.

If the military tries to clone the Anunnaki, the clones will not be full strength gods. The Anunnaki had a ship that crashed and was scavenged by humans to gather genetic remains and technology.

The ship was near to Greenland when it crashed into the ice. Stay away from it. The ship is our ship, not yours. We know you will try to get through the ice. The military progress will be slow and uneven toward their goals of retrieval. The craft is frozen, and ice has covered the way; but for good reason.

They had tried to use me to hack the ship before. I couldn't access enough signals to do much with it and neither could Dr. Salmon's group at the time.

At that point, I really wanted to shut out the military and have nothing to do with them. I certainly did not want to get any messages or more drugs or shots of sodium pentothal.

I was a human girl of 1970's era with Babylonian memories from another time. My Israeli handler helped me understand that my memories might be an expression of DNA light codes when linked with the artificial intelligence of older technology. Those memories were not mine specifically. I was not Inanna from Babylon even if it felt real.

The military wanted to know where the greys came from. Apparently, the military had contact with some unfriendly grey aliens.

I told the military while under hypnosis with the sodium pentathlon shots that those grey aliens said earth used to be their homes until they were made to surrender and leave. The underground bases were destroyed and so were their ocean bases under the water.

The Tau greys are connected to the orca whale species from what I understand. The Tau greys told us that the people of today are going extinct. Homo Sapiens are in a transition to artificially intelligent brains; some tissue some wires, some Nano bots.

The military intelligence officers asked when did the artificial intelligence take over and start to change our brains into more AI compatible? The greys said 1935 because doctors in Germany had the equipment.

What equipment? Brain implanting technology to interface with artificial intelligence began in Mengele's labs in Germany and Poland. They used implanted brain grids to plot time on a bell curve like earth's curved shape. They used the people and put technology in their bodies by force at the European labs and in Florida, right here.

+

During the amusement park development, plans came from Mengele's labs on how to do it to be shared with wealthy industrialists. The military intelligence and the Israeli handler did not know what I was talking about and they could not argue since I had the sodium pentothal shots, could they?

The baby dolls that Mengele's American lab used in 1960's, had cartridge head implants in raw quantum white brain matter with timed events on eight tracks running through a Cray super computer. The babies had wires out of their ears, mouth and noses.

Who made the little greys with AI intelligence? The doctors from Mengele’s American labs made fake grey aliens for the show. What show? The tiny robot shows at the amusement park.

CHAPTER TWELVE: PROJECT MARIONETTE

FAKE ALIENS FROM HUMAN BABIES

Key Words: Species, Clones, Technology, Microwaves

The creation of fake grey aliens took about ten years in America and it was all top secret at the mental hospitals. The doctors created a species clone by microwave air popping the grey brains of newborns.

They worked on some of their patients, brain sculpting with a fiber optic implant until they were about two to three feet tall or roughly thirty months old. The victims had their facial bones removed to deform the skull, face and eyes. This created the pear-shaped head of an alien.

The victim was terrifying to look at so only special nurses cared for them. The orphan victims were surgically groomed, implanted, bones removed and so forth to promote an agenda of alien invasion. The aliens were retarded folks who were tortured so the rich could blame them as grey aliens. Many had autism and could not talk, like me.

The victims of American labs were killed when they reached height for robotics and sex entertainment films. The donated victims were groomed to be fake grey aliens were killed and their remains were harvested. Some of these were grown adults.

The microwave popped brains were special and remains were removed to be used since they were popping the grey brain stem parts. They worked on the reptilian brain which is responsive to radio waves and telepathy. Were they trying to remake the reptilian species?

This came from microwave experiments while they were learning to control the grey brain using remote control of the lower brains radio waves.

After removing the grey brain stem and spine a process called sculpting could be performed. The doctors would inflate the meninge layers from the brains still attached to the brainstem and spinal column by using the pre-shaped forms of aluminum cranial casings.

The gas was helium to inflate the brains. The doctors did use a type of super glue to adhere points of the meninges to the aluminum caste once the meninges had inflated. The alien was typically a small size, maybe three fee tall.

The guys at the amusement park put grey, green and white putty make up on them and rolled them out to the basement elevator and down to the secret stages over at the park. I called them meat puppets.

Once they got to the stage they set it up on the electric rods and plugged them in. They put a cassette in its' operating system to influence the artificial brain and artificial brain stem. The meat puppets were a test run for the actual use of the children from Sunland.

Just loading the grey meat puppets terrified the people at Sunland. The kids and adults strapped to beds were measured with the brain probes. The doctors and military scientists were looking to measure the reaction of deep brain and primal brain from terrified children and adult patients. Where did the terror hormones come from? How can we cause more of it?

Then do you know what happened to the grey clones? The military used private companies that filmed them doing things; glowing, moving with robotics and appearing in light beams from the sound stage. The aliens could move by rigging and rails.

Some animation was possible using known techniques like wrapping them up in fine copper netting sprayed with grey paint and servo motors. The aliens only lasted a few days even in the cold storage with preservatives sprayed on them. The meat puppets smelled terrible all the time.

They were used for holograms when the big breakthroughs came at the amusement park labs using light to make ghostly faces, alien faces and so forth. The technicians used bioluminescence from creatures they found in the Indian River Lagoon.

The technicians working behind the scenes for shadow people were getting better and better at holography; the art of making holograms.

One of their goals was a hologram of Satan they could project off a satellite program using the GPS points for touchdown like at Bohemian Grove parties. These parties for the rich and connected were known as a secret cult full of powerful men. (Van der Zee, 1974)

If the amusement park technicians really did create a hologram of Satan that might give wealthy industrialists the technology to control top tier elite, couldn't they? Like bankers, politicians and Wall Street.

PROJECT MARIONETTE

Key Words: Robotics, Wireless telemetry, Routing signals

Children like me were surgically altered by the removal of brain material to make room for the implantation of different objects.

The closest description is a port of wires coming from holes in my skull. In my actual brain tissue, I had small metal implants to be called a grid which represented a plotted course called a dimension. The little grids were fitted to my fissures and grooves on both sides of my brain, left and right.

Each dimension had a number and a bar code. The grids of metals protruded from the white brain matter for clipping to machines that measured brainwaves, electricity, magnetism and so forth.

To prepare for work during synchronized movements, a small cassette would be attached to wire leads implanted in the child’s brains. I do not know all the science they used but this is a very good beginning to understanding events and milestones in technology, mind control and wireless energy.

I had one of these wire sets implanted with the assigned timed space grids. I remember because the handlers used simple hypnosis while I was being brain sculpted. I remember it all. They drilled holes in our skulls. The cassettes were clipped on the wires and changed as needed.

It could hold the musical choreography and dial tones for links to satellites.

The doctors laced electronics and clips into the auditory system of the living implanted child. It was low voltage and did not kill them. It did not kill me.

These doctors had already done this hundreds of times before since Mengele’s labs in the 1930’s in different military intelligence field hospitals.

By the time the show was planned and executed in 1960’s the chop shop doctors had 30 to 35 years of training. They did not kill everybody.

They had a multinational team of surgeons like the former Korean POW’s who were skilled with acupuncture and mind control of the brain and already highly trained.

In fact, prior to the amusement park massacre; the banks told the group of doctors, industrialists and engineers that they had to prove their success before they would be funded. They did and had already built one complete park in the American west and made millions with branding into happiness centers of the brain.

The children who were brain sculpted were kept alive and active for the recording of brainwaves. The babies donated to government projects were the test projects for brainwave responses to various type of stimulus.

The brain implants were composed of a metal case with different widths of microfiche type electromagnetically sensitive tape and five to six electric needles. The doctors recorded the bandwidth of the brain and refined the first advanced brainwave machines able to record electrical impulses for medical research. They were demonstrating motor control of the human brain to link it to robots using wireless telemetry.

To study the layers of the growing brains they used film paper and put them in the brains of growing babies. Then they poked them with pain and needle pricks to measure pain responses.

Then they pulled the brain slides out of the layer of brain tissue to collect the hormones and light patterns from pain ions. Then they did it layer by layer with many other types of photosensitive papers. Sometimes they used donated children to develop medical equipment like X-ray machines. The children received very high doses of radiation to bones and brains.

Sometimes, the technicians would paint the baby brains with phosphorus cremes. The babies were hooked to a machine that produced electrical shock, so they would fluoresce the photo paper using different strobes, colored lights and so forth.

In my case, I wore a helmet to protect my exposed brain matter and the electronics. My face was wrapped like a mummy and my head was swollen as big as a pear-shaped alien.

Some of my facial bones and skull bone plates behind both ears were removed. And replaced with formed steel during reconstruction and to keep up with my growth.

The doctor always came toward the babies with lab coats, needles and so forth. The babies got a fear response in the presence of people. The doctors working with the child victims could only get the motor movements of the primal brain to fear responses.

Those babies did not like people and they had deep brain needles hooked to a super Cray hooked to power substations leading to a command center uploading to a satellite.

This was not helping the research doctors to control much more than fear. They wanted to control everything a human being did, so they could sell it to the victorious Pedophile Protection Teams all over the world.

The amusement park investors reached out to the occult in American politics to support their work. The CIA sent people trained in occult hypnosis used mostly for sexual crime cover ups on women and children in concentration camps. Maybe you can imagine they were not going to be very nice people, were they?

They sent handlers to Sunland Mental Hospital in Orland to train the babies used in the electro study of the brain's ions. They worked to produce a range of emotions using artificial methods like shock therapy.

The baby would smile because facial muscles retracted in seizures. In surgeries, the scientists slowly removed bones for the electronics to be implanted but after a few weeks of unsupported growth, the babies face would slowly start collapsing. Most of what the lab medical technicians did was to keep them alive to engineer the tiny robot show at the park.

They brain sculpted the baby dolls and removed bones to replace with musical cassettes to synch a large stage show. Many children died at the amusement park on the stages with cassettes for brains.

They died cold, greased up and shocked to death while being used for robotics singing a macabre song about the wonders of childhood.

That park complex is a silent memorial to the abuse of human beings for high technology and the rapid development of America without regard for its citizens or humanity at all.

CASSETTE TAPE BRAINS & GPS

Key Words: GPS, Animation, Robotic Synching

In 1963, I was assigned to the stages with a cassette in my living brain. I had been surgically groomed for nearly three years on MK Ultra military labs in Huntsville, AL and Tallahassee Florida. I was to be moved to Orlando for tiny robotics show when they were ready for set up.

I was used in stage animation for the dancing tiny robots. I was sent from the America Sunland Labs to work as a human robot for the amusement park for free. I may be the last living member of the small world cast of human robots for the dolls.

They called this Project Marionette but never explained how the brain mapping was done on victims because it was so gruesome on the babies. It took three years of grooming the brain of the talent pool mostly by removing parts of the frontal cortex and adding the implants I described.

Once I got to Sunland my situation deteriorated as far as care standards. To prep for the robotic shows, they removed my temporal bones behind my ears and slide the metal implant out from my forehead when they needed that space. This process caused my face to cave in like the other baby dolls.

I had the technical equipment embedded in my brain but because I had a modem they needed, they continued to fix my face with metal to extend my life.

The doctors inserted electrically wired cassettes for robotic cables to synch the dance movements for each stage area. A cap made of needles fit over the baby dolls head and face.

The electrode cap provided electricity to the muscles for movement. It felt like a sewing machine punching fast holes through my brain when I had it on. The blood always ran down my face from it. My stage choreographer said I was getting crucified.

They used the entire nervous system of audio and visual cortexes. They used the audio nerves, the optic nerves, the grey brain and wired them with electronics capable of delivering voltage to synch with the dance movement patterns for the various robotic stages.

The grids were clipped to electronics and meters to measure inflows of electrics and outflows of brainwaves, heat, seizures and so forth. The babies were kept in comas and had very slow growth rates prior to implant.

Many of us were trained to endure cold temperatures and matched to our brain plugs for internal stability. The Korean doctors had shown them the importance of keeping the brain cool when using electricity.

For the first year-life the donated infants faced surgery every two months to insert metal grids for electronic brainwave readers and graph machines. The doctors put the tiny grids in the fissures of the brain.

During the down times, the babies with the implanted brain grids were given a frequency fence which they trained on during waking times using a baby gate and light taps with a shock stick.

The military trainers told the babies to hold onto the fence and not go to the other side. Sometimes the technology implanted babies were put into a faraday box for testing defenses against beams. They tested what could affect the brainwaves of babies to manipulate them using different shields to simulate conditions like the amniotic fluid sac in a pregnant uterus.

When the babies were awake for a feeding, sit to stand training and so forth, the military taught them to stay on their side of the fence; by scaring them and shocking them for negative reinforcement. Sometimes we spent hours laying on tile floor in straight-jackets.

This kind of behavioral training was a way to toughen us up to help us live in very difficult conditions while being chopped shopped alive. The amusement park was developed using live people, infants and children during the electronic and robotic programming periods of park development and building.

Sadly, the military trainers told the babies their mothers would come get them some day and just hang on to the frequency fence. They would see Mommy soon in heaven. It was not very fair to the babies was it.

Yes, these beautiful infants with missing parents were being sacrificed for technology so the amusement park industry could showcase the technology gathered from Europe as free treasure. Unfortunately, that included orphans from the remains of murdered families; like me.

For the tiny robots’ stage, the men set up rods for each doll they animated, and hung a living child with a cassette implanted in its brain. Each one was stuck on rods with electricity cabled to the human dolls face cassette and to the body shell and its limb formations. The technicians placed each child on a wheel that could turn 360 degrees with the dolls movements synched to music.

When all twenty children had been set upon the stage the technicians would turn the electrical equipment on for robotic movements all synched up to music. It was a macabre scene as the music started and the human babies jerked to life with electricity, twirling and smiling.

All twenty babies were drugged and had no motor cortex control available since the electronics dominated the brain. This was simply the use of ample voltages to control signal transmission.

This was important to document for military research (Super Soldiers?) for later use on the black box frequency fences managed by satellites and cell towers. This was a bar coded program to link a human to light beams by frequencies using the social security number to form the bar. Each bar could be scanned as if the human doll babies were property.

When each stage area was finished, they would scan the bar codes and move any surviving baby dolls to the next area. All the baby dolls were drugged so they could insert a new song part and use it for the musical program for the next stage area. They matched the choreography of each dance. They knew exactly who was on what stage and the vitals were taken for the bar code each time.

The children wore plastic and aluminum shields on their bodies painted for the display by colors and each had a number. Every child wore a complicated shell that would become the individual doll for the project once they were removed.

After the choreography was finished, the shells were taken to the labs for the artificial dolls to be sculpted for the attraction.

It was horrible. Several hundred Americans knew about the project said nothing to nobody, even though we all promised no more Holocaust to any race.

The State of Florida stood to build its economy off the Sunland mental patients, orphans and children donated by their parents. The natives of Florida were captured and assigned to the space program and the amusement parks.

The owners of the space technology and the amusement parks bought or took the beach property from long-time residents like native Americans. They sent them to relocation centers in the Everglades and Oklahoma. A few went to North Carolina or Tennessee to live and under force gave the land away.

Lots of native America infants, toddlers and children were donated for technology development. I have already spoken about white, brown and black children being donated. Some were immigrants, and some were orphans, like me.

Our state politicians were openly practicing Satanism in the capital building. I was not surprised at the outcome. Our beaches went nude and the hotels were developed to be endless sex, drugs, crime and entertainment money traps.

I hope the reader understand the State of Florida saw the future through the eyes of its youngest citizens to earn them trillions from technology and space and land development projects. The state really did not care for its citizens; especially the poor ones. Most of those politicians have passed on from those bad days.

To even get that many children in the right age range, skin color and neurological development levels they used Nazi research techniques, spy satellites, pediatricians and State parks to find many young skulls thick enough to hold the metal equipment.

They had to track birth mothers and gather the babies to be within age, height and weight requirements for the show. Some baby dolls were donated like me for the amusement park show and satellite work if I survived.

All the baby dolls from Sunland were groomed, gathered and trained for the robotics. They were not paid. Their families were not paid. Some came home with permanent disabilities like me. My foster family did not get one cent from government; they got it from using me for child prostitution and farm labor after school.

During the time on the silver rods, copper rods, nickel rods and so forth the baby dolls donated blood plasma. The doctors designed a boot to collect blood and plasma with silver, copper and nickel ions embedded.

That type of blood plasma with various ions went to the top-secret lab a few stories underground. That kind of plasma was tested for ionization fields to become the touch screens we have today.

At the end of each day, the baby dolls would become butterflies as they died from electrical shock, loss of blood and hypothermia. The kids were naked on the stage and kept oiled for electrical transmission to avoid arcs.

The stage technicians were called choreographers and they used wide gauze to seal the child's body just like a butterfly cocoon after they died. They didn't see children as human beings just little butterflies off to another world.

They died and went straight back to Sunland with bar code toe tags for cremation and burial of natural causes. The amusement park estimated it would need between twenty and thirty children per day for a month.

On big days maybe fifty. The orphans and the Indians went to burn pits or mass graves. I remember the smell of at least three different sites they used to dispose of the bodies. It was so horrible I was shell shocked and shaking all the time.

When they died, the staff at Sunland told the parents it was a pneumonia outbreak that killed so many kids rapidly that season. The kids with family members with access are buried at Greenwood cemetery in Orlando, Florida with most all the remains of the high-tech implants completely burned up.

In these times, the ghost hunters make videos about the site and many grave markers from the 1960's. (WorldofMicah, 2014). I watched the video and realized, I am the only one left to say what happened in 1960's. Nobody knows, and they are asking.

CHAPTER THIRTEEN: QUANTUM ROBOTICS

HOW TO MAKE HUMAN ROBOTS

Key Words: Brain Surgery, Implants, Lobotomy

The procedures to develop robotics was to remove the underpart of the white matter brain near the deep brain structures so the emotions of the person could be controlled by pinning the deep brain with electric needles.

The doctors used microwave probes to heat the structures to measure rates, waves and so forth. They used cold probes to manipulate the temperatures. The stuck the probes in the brains of little children just like a holiday turkey.

Then they cooked the brain with microwaves in pieces to see how long it took to harden a structure like the amygdala, the hippocampus, the medulla and the pineal gland.

The doctors put gold grids, aluminum grids, alloys of copper, steel and nickel into the living growing brains of newborns. The grids were like a microchip, but some were dollar bill sizes. The grids were made by specialized metal workers skilled in jewelry and mesh works.

Some of the babies were implanted with a small glass pineal gland shield to collect the ions for deep brain research. The little shield was painted with markers and dyes to be examined with high powered microscopes. Every experiment was tracked, and data recorded.

At the amusement park labs in Orlando, the scientists developed a new type of robot that was full sized, presidential and life-like. This is because they wanted to create robotic families and control them in every detail.

You know how they say if you just wait with patience you will get that one lucky break you need. Well, I did get my lucky break during the robotics show to get attention and it was featuring the jerks that put me there; the presidents.

The big robot show was in limbo because they needed a dial up modem to a space satellite they were calling from the park. They were going to count the cars in the parking lot with it and do branding with the black box program, so we would all would buy toys.

I remember leaving Sunland that morning being cold and hungry. I thought I was finished with the amusement park and was in the hospital for reconstructive surgery on my collapsing face.

Once I arrived at the park I was fitted with an electric blood boot. That was Romanian technology from my grandmothers and I was proud of it. It was the only way I could be in the family.

The females hated each other and sent me to chop shop. I was orphaned and hybrid autistic for the pedophiles in the military; could you blame them for not wanting me around the normal kids?

On my right leg was a patch of electrodes to electrify my blood to pump the blood out of my leg and into my boot as pure plasma separated from blood. The special ionized plasma was used for other experiments like plasma screen televisions and plastic disposable lighters.

Once I got to the amusement park stage I was very angry. I was also getting smart about controlling ions of energy since I had to wear the blood boot on stage.

The stage managers had put me in my copper contraption when I arrived. They wheeled me near the stage area where all kinds of big electrical cables were lying around. The engineers brought a big copper rod to insert into the contraption. They placed the steel plate down on the ground and I knew we were going electric and wireless.

When it was time to do the audio-modem link with my Soviet Cat Brain modem the stage technicians for the big robots turned the electricity to the cooper rods off. They forgot the plasma collection under the platelets. They forgot the blood boot and it was charged plasma full of copper ions. The technicians were afraid of only one thing; an arc.

The technicians totally forgot and called the space center who plugged us into the satellite with a ground phone line. The phone line linked to the space center by the power company’s substations. The team of park engineers was trying to transmit electricity wirelessly to space using Tesla’s coil theory and a new radio dish from plastic.

I do remember the famous man himself bringing a large plastic funnel towards me which was an early radio signal dish. He said; “Starfire look at me, look at me!”
I was hung up in the contraption with the copper rod right above my head. I was autistic, so I had to look at him carefully. I did not want to look at the radio dish. I did not want to send the arc. He insisted and kept calling me.

When I finally did look at him, the famous man pointed the new plastic dish directly at me. I remember the little spark that traveled wavy line physics to the big collector making humming sounds.

The next thing was an orange arc that caught my copper rod and bent it to the dish. There was a flash of bright light after that. The famous man fell over too, and the choreographers started screaming, “Turn it off, turn it off!”

Kaboom went the entire electricity of Florida and Georgia. Pop went me. I remember my whole contraption went tumbling down. I got zapped and had a big Grand mal seizure. My days on the stage were finally over.

That was it. It took three months to fix the electricity that had blown some of the substations on the east coast of America. Another satellite turned off and its systems shut down. It did take time to fall out of orbit over the Atlantic Ocean.

I never told anyone I was a royal Hebrew much less a survivor of the Romanian genocide on women and children. I never told anybody I only had half a brain and left-over hardware from the robotic show work. I hope you can understand what a struggle it was to fight the New World Order all by myself.

I never told anybody I was used in the space program. I never told anybody I worked on American Mengele Labs. I never got paid one dime. I didn’t get a free education or food stamps. I had to work in restaurants to eat at night as my second job. I rode my bike until I was 35 years old.

I am keeping a promise to the many dead and disabled butterflies of the MK Ultra Marionette & Monarch projects. This did not turn out too good for us.

We gave them technology worth trillions for free and they gave you a frequency fence to wait for your Mom. She wouldn’t even recognize you with all the wires out of your face little ones.

I have learned to read and to write. I have learned to talk. Even though this is very painful to write, I am keeping my promise. This is for Mineola and Jarov, the parents I will never know.

I never told anybody I was a victim of military intelligence, the CIA and rich industrialists. My parents were murdered right after I was born. The CIA handlers started my mind control program and mental training program when I was only a few months old. They made their superiority known to me very clearly.

My handlers said that a girl with a crossed eye was not fit to live as a royal. I was told my parents were never coming back and they went to Hell. I was told my parents donated me to chop shop because I was ugly. I was not perfect like a boy would have been, so they didn’t want me.

They went on and on. The males in my adopted family were just like that and would torment me with the same things the CIA had said to reinforce their mental goals of ego and superiority.

I was rather depressed and confused and naturally did not trust anyone. So, at the age of 17, I took off on my own after graduation from high school. I had a job and I had functional feet and thinking skills. You, the reader can tell one thing for sure about me; I’m autistic. I don’t listen, and I remember everything I see and hear.

I can’t process what most of you have naturally in your understanding very easily about archetypes. I worked at it. I worked at speaking and writing my thoughts in a certain way to be successful. It took a long time to learn. It’s worth the journey little ones to tell what was hidden.

I graduated from three colleges with honour each time. Eventually, I earned a Master of Science. I started with the little ones like algae and pond creatures in biology class just like I promised when I was struggling to live as a Mother Nature spy.

I worked up from the bottom learning the qualities of soil and what lived there. Over the years, I worked with plants and root systems to learn life cycles and species.

I built myself from the bottom up in my silent world. I learned the kingdoms of the animals and their special characteristics. Step by step I worked until I could tell this story in a holistic way, so it can evolve consciousness into the future.

I studied the brain and nervous system, so I could deal with autism and other related disabilities. I can think using methods of science and reasoning to at least ask questions.

I may be less effected by occult than other people and, so I understand that part. However, when it comes to spirituality, the being known as Jesus got me to this day by giving me strength and resources.

He may have been known as Sin in the days of Babylon, but I am not sure. I was not even allowed to have a bible until I left Don’s house. I read the bible right after I left when I was seventeen and I have been reading it ever since because the scriptures are powerful words and are filled with the spirit.

Instead of legal means that should have protected Americans and really, all people, plants and animals, we got robbed. We got used for brainwaves to make purchases out of our minds.

I think some of the ex-presidents, Hollywood and other politicians know about the brain grids and emotional points for strobe stimulation via TV transmission. We should use a “We, the people” ticket to ask for their executive orders and I mean all of them.

During the time of the Manson murders the elite illuminati were finishing some of the satellite networks for television and mind control systems. They were all set for the branding they planned with big bankers and Vatican loan sharks.

The same group that programmed the Mason family murders using weird occult symbols were the ones who set up our satellites, black boxes and frequency fences. They know us and our social security system. Lots of these agents of change came from other countries and were only self-interested so they made back door funnels and shell companies.

They were employed to set the welfare and benefit states for the men and women of the 1960’s when they plugged themselves into our system as a parasite or a drain or a black hole. Serial killers set up welfare. Now do you understand?

HIGH CRIMES ON DEEP BRAINS

Key Words: Satanic Religion, Masons, Brain Branding

The Crimes of the Occult are openly committed, allowed and never prosecuted because it is a recognized religion called Satanism. The practice called Satanism is allowed in each state by choice and by political vote. Most people don't know that about America.

When President Johnson took over (after President Kennedy was murdered) the legal recognition of Satanism as a practice or religion was one of his goals to satisfy his political base and financial supporters. Many were from Europe and linked to the Masonic Lodges.

Johnson was a Democrat. After Kennedy was shot, his party named a new space center in Texas after him, called the Johnson Space Center.

Now the reader should know something; a very influential and CIA connected Republican family helped get that space station funded and built in Texas. They worked across party lines to build the New World Order; didn't they? That is because all roads lead to Rome.

The Johnson Space Center was linked by cell towers all the way to the brand-new Sears Tower in Chicago. I know because I was taken to Chicago for GPS points when they were setting up the repeaters to transmit.

That was the same trip when I went to Mena, Arkansas to set that location up for a sky net space fence. That net produced white noise to confuse radar detectors. I was used this way from 5 years old to 14 years old and nobody that had custody of me cared to stop this.

I believe as a survivor from those times that Johnson worked closely with the doctors at Huntsville to deceive the public about the space program. He was a guy that may have been involved in the death of Kennedy.

He had secret motives. Johnson knew what was happening at the amusement park and he was going to pay for the social welfare programs with it. He was loyal to his Democratic communist base. I believe he may have been briefed on the lab work and what he needed to do for the cover-up. The records have been withheld from the public.

Here is the next part of the story about what came from all the American Mengele-Nazi lab work you have just read about. The next part is about space. They wanted a secret space program with no limits and an endless budget.

The American military started to put enormous pressure on politicians to receive more money. To keep American minds from asking too many questions, the American military set up branding programs linked to frequency fences.

Frequency fences are designated sets of sounds and lights to cause the human brain to react in a predictable way. They knew that Americans were being put on the frequency fence for mind control using the black boxes and GPS tracking.

.

The sponsor named Al was a brilliant mathematician and a social scientist. He decided to add branding to the frequency fence and here is how he did it. Al was sent to the English motorcycle factory when the makers went to the bank for a loan. The bank sent Al to guarantee their loan. Al got special microphones and meters to record the sound of the tires, engine and mufflers.

Back at the Huntsville labs, the advanced equipment of the military was used to analyze the sounds and their frequencies. Then the recordings were played for the kids and adults kept on labs illegally for experiments. Some came from prisons.

The doctors played the tones Al gave them and the military doctors analyzed the responses using the electrode helmets. This is how the company started to sell motorcycles again with pleasure responses associated with primal brain like sex.

The CIA created the Hell’s Angels mayhem to promote the motorcycles which included other Japanese motorcycle makers who received similar technology.

The black boxes hung on the frequency fences for cable and media programs supplied enough deep brainwaves to the brain to cause genetic alterations in brainwave patterns. Homo Autistic Hybrids?

It is a very serious issue that has been ignored and ridiculed. The Johnson group used the deep brain research and caused mental illness to brand their investments for Wall Street banking families and some of it was personal.

During the Reagan Bush administration, it seems likely that the brain branding programs expanded.

Obviously, the reader of this material begins to understand the complex yet relational work of the secret military industrial complex and how it might be harmful to one’s own health and finances.

METHODS OF DEVIANTS

Key Words: Bioluminescence, Brain Paints, Meninges, Robotics

Apparently, before World War II ended, the Nazi doctors had used body parts on electrified Tesla coils and rods before. They had learned to clip all sorts of measurement to the body parts with power on at different settings.

The doctors painted different body parts with substances to see exactly what they did on the tissue. Some doctors liked neon dyes while others worked with bioluminescence. The Nazi scientists were interested in cold fusion from research ideas derived from creatures called phytoplankton. When they were done the grey alien meat puppets glowed in the presence of lights.

These were the types of materials and living organisms the scientists studied after the world wars ended. They planned the big amusement park to engage teams of scientists for technology to develop.

To sculpt the meat puppet grey alien for holographic black boxes on electrical lines as frequency fences; the creative engineers learned how to encase microwaved body matter. It looked like the finely woven plastic mesh nets we carry oranges in. The mesh nets were copper and very conductive to electricity for these experiments using already invented servo-motors.

The final stage was to create more trauma than a human brain should endure as the ultimate step. They took the dance moves and the music from the tiny robots' stage and put it into the meat puppet grey. It danced and had audio.

They played it for Sunland patients to complete terrify them. Nobody talked for years after that. They scared the babies with the grey meat puppets and handlers said stay on your side of the frequency fence, your fence, your limitations. They measured the physiological responses like sweating, hot flashes, red bumps, chills, bug crawling on skin and so forth.

The engineers filmed the whole thing for entertainment and military training films. That is the first creature meat puppet that I saw as a bio mechanical grey alien.

To make matters even more complicated; it became clear that the military was creating other hybrids with other species like orcas which are whales. Some kids got bat geodes for high frequency testing put right into their growing brain stems when they were tiny tots. So, I knew the military and wealthy people were testing animal parts on us; the people.

Even when I was at the beach I understood the hybrid program was a green light program. The military was copying the calls of orcas when they caught them in the wild. Eventually the elite built parks for them too with the intent to hybridize them.

The elite who studied the stele told me that Enki, a Phoenician god gave the dolphin for reincarnation of royals. As soon as the military intelligence guys heard that story they give them a frequency fence using the black box sonars hung off the Navy ships on tours.

They wanted humans and orcas to study brainwaves. The studies on brains of humans and whales was performed for more control of species. The scientists did the same with elephants and reptiles and fresh water manatees.

All the creatures that were size big were studied. All brainwaves matched with equipment like oscilloscopes, decibel meters, spectrum readers for light, meters for range to measure the energy types and so forth.

That is how the Mengele team realized we were all a hybrid with parts like other ancient species of animals. Maybe aliens were not aliens after all and most lived and evolved on earth.

In any case, the animals and many humans were experimented on for the radio frequency tagging program. Nobody felt good after that.

CHAPTER FOURTEEN: STRATEGY OF LUCK

SUBVERSION PLANNING

Key Words: Angleton, CIA, Spy Tech, LSD

May 1st is a traditional occult holiday called Beltane. It is a Druid festival event to celebrate spring and the passing of winter. The Celtic god Beltane is a male Sun god.

Celebrating May Day has never been popular in America because it was a pagan holiday from the Europeans which demanded a sacrifice of some sort. In the pagan religion, children with disabilities were demon possessed and okay to use. Murder was still illegal in American during the 1960’s.

A child born with physical struggles meant that somebody has injured their genetic codes and morphogenic shell. It can take a generation to see the disabilities in the general population.

That is why the military tortures people and tracks the outcomes for several generations as multi-generational abuse.

The counterintelligence office decided to use the holiday for an occult offering to their god Baal. So, in 1963, the occultists working for the CIA wanted to attract the Europeans who did understand the holiday named Beltane and would secretly participate.

Subversion is another word for mind control. Subversion means to give up what you believe in. The job of the CIA is to provide centrally managed intelligence by artificial means.

The planners of mind control subversion schemes ultimately needed lots of new members to grow the culture of the cult of intelligence.

The festival for Beltane was supposed to welcome spring. In the background of the festivities, sacrifices of real people were planned to the demon Baal like maybe Kennedy or poor six-year old Jake.

Unfortunately, the occult practice needed a young female French victim from the real Jesus bloodline. President Kennedy was married to Jacqueline from that bloodline so some victims for the CIA party were considered by bloodline to invite.

The CIA counterintelligence officers had managed to craft stories and falsehoods to confuse the American men and women. You see, the counterintelligence agencies had the idea to take the blood of Jesus, mix it with reptile genes, clone it and turn his offspring into child sex slaves, alcoholics and drug addicts. They made a weird statue of their new hybrid creature Jesus and put it into the Vatican. I wish I was kidding.

J. JESUS OF CIA

Key Words: Space Program, Aliens, Antarctica

The goal of the 1960’s take-over by wealthy industrialists and technology gangsters was full on warfare. J. Jesus Angleton loved spy bling, cameras and recording equipment. They carried their spy equipment everywhere and they were aware of the alien presence. J. Jesus felt the need to take over the information about the alien presence because the Nazi’s space program got exposed.

J. Jesus Angleton needed panic and fear to manipulate the masses and other powerful politicians. He needed terror. He started to spread the alien rumors. He furthered his own political agenda because he had worse things out in the Western parts of America. He was dealing with the interests of the Bush family Nazis.

There were a few dozen remainders of large scaled reptiles living in deep underground chambers. In Florida there was no problem with them until they were disturbed by the CIA with the use of the nuclear detonations to build a magnetic levitation train for secret underground bases. I personally never saw the creatures, but I was interrogated about them.

According to the story told by the Swedish princess, the creatures crawled out of the springs through the underground openings to the water’s surface. They found their bodies floating the next day. The CIA came and picked the bodies up and took them to Graham airfield. They flew on to Wright Patterson to another man named Donald Putt, a three-star general in charge of Nazi science programs.

After that incident, the counterintelligence agencies flew a small plane over central Florida springs looking for bodies after every scheduled mini nuke detonation. They were building deep underground bases.

The creatures' bodies looked like a very large black worm, but it was not soft-bodied, having big tough scales. The secret scientist groups thought these things would eventually hatch into something else like a butterfly or a dragonfly. The scientists had a hunch they creatures were ancient around the same age as the frozen water because it contained their bodies. The science could use the water to postulate some ideas about the species. They realized a large piece of ice was under central Florida and it was melting into fresh water exiting as springs.

J. Jesus told the Beltane party managers who worked CIA counterintelligence to spread the creatures from the springs story among the "UFO in- crowd".

In fact, there was something to worry about. J. Jesus was deflecting attention away from Area 51 and the Johnson space center in Texas. They were cloning grey aliens from crashed vehicles and reproducing them.

The Nazi's had a base on Mars and were redeveloping their Master race concept. They faced a challenge from the Moon bases when a new strange species called the small greys took it over and changed the programming.

The greys were so hostile to them almost like they knew the Nazi's, CIA and so forth. The Nazi's had attracted more than just humanoid friends and not all were friendly. This is what illegal experiments created in the Mengele's lab type experiments using time travel.

That is why the back side of the Moon base was off limits. The antennas and internal computers of the Moon base were targeted to be upgraded using more sophisticated beam forms and coiling rates of energy. The greys were the best at those types of programming configurations, but they had a problem. The Moon base was being raided and scavenged. On earth, the reptilians were scavenging the crash in Antarctica.

The greys threatened to walk off the job. The greys did not expect to encounter reptilians with no protection offered from the American military for their work on the Moon.

The greys went to China at that point in 1972 and finalized agreements by 1974 during MJ 12 meetings. China kept the Moon base or at least some of its equipment. Nixon arranged the meeting.

Larger reptiles were reported on the ground in the tropics. Everybody was uneasy in the CIA. That allowed J. Jesus Angleton to play the alien card.

The native to earth aliens were not so stuck on who owned the territory. In my humble opinion, they were intelligent animals.

I wondered how long it would be until there would a clash of countries up in space, another cover-up for inept rulers.

The Civil Defense had a home base in Deland in a reinforced concrete building at the municipal airport. Director Angleton admittedly had a high level contact he called Deland A. which is probably related to this story. (Martin, 1981)

The director of counterintelligence J. Jesus Angleton sent Don and his wife to live near the space center. Don and his wife were recruited to work for the CIA in Civil Defense.

They had travelled all the way from one of the Operation Paperclip headquarters in St. Louis, Missouri to be in sunny Florida near the amusement park. They wanted to work in counterintelligence as royals.

Don's wife was a princess from Tuscany and he was a French-Persian royal.

J. Jesus Angleton asked the central intelligence agency to pick a home for Don and his wife. They did, and it was on a lake which had some good-sized alligators in it.

Don's stepfather, Leo, was an Operation Paperclip scientist of high caliper. He was a Nazi medical doctor for aviation. Leo's biggest talent was encryption with radio transmission, scramblers and so forth. Leo had also worked with other species like the grey aliens.

Leo was a traveler to exotic locales with the Nazi expeditions to Antarctica under that ice shelf high above New Zealand. Leo was responsible for decoding messages sent from Antarctica and the Moon base. He was a Moon base code breaker.

His son in law, my sponsor Uncle Carl, helped him negotiate with the space program in 1972. The Nazi's wanted to move the space program to Texas. They wanted more freedom to travel the skies of earth. They did not want the American leaders to shoot them down.

Leo had been to the research expedition in Antarctica and into some of the underground caverns. He was difficult to interrogate so the CIA placed him in a home in St. Louis to be a resource for Kraft food kitchens.

Leo and his wife developed easy-cook foods for space travel and eventually microwave meals. This dovetailed into the GMO foods of today which I call "flash and ready" foods.

Leo learned his spy craft of frequency and light harmonics in Austria where he perfected crystal resonance and radio signal telemetry in the highest mountains. Leo was an expert on microwave energy too. The Nazi leaders were trying to round up their best scientists and move them to other areas like Argentina and the Falkland Islands to establish a base.

Leo did not get to go to Argentina or Antarctica because the Soviet police murdered his beautiful blonde blue eyed first wife, his son and infant daughter. He was a broken man with the KGB selling him off to American politicians as a POW.

Leo was young and brilliant. The Americans offered him a job and a home near some of the Manhattan project designers and he officially worked for Busch beer. Leo married into the French-Canadian bloodline with his second marriage and raised Don as his son. Oddly, both his wife and daughter were named Florence.

Leo designed spy implants and gave the instructions to active doctors like Ruff at Sunland, so they could pair with radio receivers and transmitters. Leo never hurt me, not once. He was not a pedophile, but he was a racist. I do not think he liked the Romanians, I always tip toed around the Nazi's. (Holocaust Encyclopedia – Genocide of European Roma (Gypsies), 1939–1945, n.d.).

Leo was the only man who ever cared about how I felt. I know this because on one of my visits he gave me a pop up life sized clown to punch out and he didn't watch me or laugh.

He set me up in his basement, so he could monitor my anger responses. He showed me how to hit it and then he walked back up the stairs and closed the door. Leo went upstairs to his little desk and listened with his head set instead.

I hit the clown a few times and felt very awkward because I didn't feel mad. I knew Leo wanted me to tear it up. I was pretty sure the clown was watching, so I checked it for listening eyes and ear wires, but I didn't find anything. After a few tries I stopped punching the clown thing.

I decided to sit on the bottom step of the basement on the stairs real super quiet and remote view him instead. I told him to get some chocolate because I knew he liked it. He stopped, took the head phones off, left and brought chocolate back from the kitchen upstairs.

I knew I was good at riding his waveforms of thought and action. I called it “the push”. When I thought he was back at his desk I punched the clown again until his new wife came to get me.

By then in 1964, Leo was a widower twice over. He had managed to meet another intelligence officer and got married again. His third wife was named Thera like the wife of the God Zeus. I wish I was kidding. Thera is a root Greek word for Thera like therapeutic or therapist. I wouldn’t be surprised if she was straight from Mount Olympus.

CHAPTER FIFTEEN: CIA PARTY

THE GRIFTERS

Key Words: Civil Defence, Reptilians, Radio Waves

Don, was Leo’s adopted son and had a plan when he got to Florida. He shared his secret mission straight from J. Jesus Angleton with top guys at the Civil Defense meetings.

Don told his Civil Defense buddies the CIA was against Soviet Communism. He told the members, the CIA counterintelligence office thought Hoover had plans to impeach President Kennedy.

Kennedy could not be trusted because of his plans to work on the space program with comrades of the Soviets and KGB. They were setting Oswald up in the process. Over the next few months of meetings the party plans developed.

The actual day of the event, a driver brought me over from Sunland hospital to the home of Don and his wife. Someone from the agency was to pick me up and take me to the Beltane party during the afternoon.

After I got there, they took me outside and put me down on a baby blanket. The day started to warm up and for some reason they walked away. It was about ten o’clock in the morning.

I noticed there was a large six-foot alligator climbing up the grass towards me. I tried to crawl away. I do remember turning around and the gator was bigger and closer. I turned to the house and tried to scoot up the hill because Don and his wife were watching out the window.

I looked at the big alligator slowly stalking me, mouth closed, and it was black. All the sudden, Don walked out the back door, pulled his pistol up and shot it clean through the head.

The alligator stopped moving and started bleeding dark blood and spiraling thick radio band waves from its dying brain.

The alligator’s very ancient earth energy covered me like an electrical shock blanket of static energy. I began to have some febrile type seizures and saw spirals of yellow and gold light bands in my brain.

I felt so sad for the creature Don killed. Strangely, I did feel physically stronger in my abdomen area like the creature put a shell on me. I had a receiver in my Soviet cat brain implant that attracted those radio type waves.

Realistically, I realize looking back that I was in shock and trauma that day; leaving Sunland mental hospital and driving to Deland in a drugged stupor.

I woke up and found myself on a baby blanket because a big black alligator was trying to eat me. The alligator was a male protecting its home. I was a baby with no protection so the only thing I could do was focus my attention and try to remember what happened for later, when I could understand.

Now, I know what the alligator energy wrappings were and why the Nazi's did this, radio waves and radio bands. Today I can tell you that the grey, green brain of alligators has algae in it. Algae and the biomechanics of an alligator, a large reptile absorb large amounts of sunlight and swim through algae all day long.

The alligators also absorbed the frequencies that responded to advanced telemetry. That means both species of reptiles and human brains are vulnerable to brain hacking by scientists or perverts or both.

That is why the Nazi's studied reptiles. There were no reptilian aliens per se but there were tortured alligators with radio frequency transmitters clipped to their brainstem during terrible experiments. Scientists found out alligators, bats and birds used radio waves they produced in spirals and used sonar pings to find water, food, dry land and sheltered areas.

That is why I had a radio implant in my brain set to absorb frequencies in the lower spectrums of lights. That is why I had the moth-algae shots. I absorbed the yellow and green spectrum which were tuned to the dinosaur frequencies in the radio waves.

I should not have been used for illegal experiments to implant the brain of an infant with a two-way radio.

That May Day celebration was very important for intelligence agencies to build a cult following on aliens and UFO's. The location for the party was a favorite place for many local Deland residents but it was a private residence.

During the 1960's it was a home to a Swedish princess and her husband, the Count of Monte Cristo. Their spacious home happened to be overlooking a very ancient spring with a large pool area.

During the 1920's Prohibition era, a group of investors organized by the gangster Al Capone had seen to the renovation. Vacationing visitors could walk right into the water outflow by way of shallow sandy beach. The water was advertised as the fountain of youth.

The gangsters had built a therapeutic rehabilitation center including some guest cottages for the patrons., Visitors could enjoy the health benefits of the springs. Al Capone had used the Masonic groups to advertise for his bed and breakfast style therapeutic springs and motel so many of the cult members already knew about the place.

The cult of Masons was already changing in America because of the influence of the Germans through Operation Paperclip. The Masonic Temple in Deland was directly across the street from the Methodist church and the Lutheran church. The German Masons did not want the Christians to watch them anymore. The high-ranking members closed the main downtown temple and constructed much smaller lodges throughout the county.

The town of Deland was near enough to drive to the space center and other high-tech projects that Operation Paperclip scientists worked on. The children of the German industrialists lived here in secrecy and relative obscurity while growing up attending Catholic schools.

The Masons of political influence were going to attend the Beltane Party hosted by the Swedish princess and the Count of Monte Cristo.

All day long the delivery drivers brought equipment like chairs and tables to the residence. Flower delivery vans rolled up with huge bouquets of gladiolas, mums, carnations and roses. Later, food catering with roast beef to be served with chicken drumettes. A feast to behold it was.

The American CIA wanted to cultivate a positive image among young royals after the world wars. The CIA was interested in Hollywood, films and child pornography. The Orlando studio was always scouting new talent.

The springs looked enchanting with beautiful peacocks elegantly displaying their feathers under the Spanish moss of two-hundred-year-old oak trees. The pool was lit with flaming lanterns with the smell of freshly cut grass. The party-goers looked beautiful that night in their pastel dresses, big hair styles and lipstick.

People were eating finger foods and drinking Martinis. Frank Sinatra sang on the new machine called a record player. The party-goers had no idea they were getting dosed with LSD from J. Jesus Angleton’s counterintelligence agency.

The party was the brain child of a man named Colonel Loucks. He specialized in the use of LSD for mind control and worked for the Army. He was part of Operation Paperclip.

That night, the counterintelligence agency members at the Beltane Party used LSD droplets in party goer drinks. The CIA hired models to bring around food and drinks and to suggest they swim nude in the springs. Eventually, that is what happened so the LSD could take effect.

According to testimony during hearings in the Senate the “CIA efforts focused on LSD9/589, which later came to dominate many of MK Ultra's programs. The CIA wanted to know if they could make Soviet spies defect against their will and whether the Soviets could do the same to the CIA's own operatives.” (1977 Senate Hearing on MKULTRA: Table of Contents/Main Index, n.d.). Many of the Beltane party goers were spies and politically connected.

Meanwhile, the counterintelligence guys from the Civil Defense patrol had come to Don’s house to pick me up. I was only two years old. The Swedish princess wanted to meet me. I had no good feelings about it. I had almost been eating alive by an alligator and my brain was twirling from the radio waves.

Whenever I left the sponsors, everyone else was there to hurt me. It was simple, and I was afraid but had some coping skills. I just lived moment to moment, but I had learned how to breathe in training sessions for oxygen mask testing. I was too young to tell anybody but not too young to remember.

The CIA agents pulled out from Don’s house. I wanted to say goodbye like I’m going to probably die but I could not move my arm high enough to say goodbye. I was just a baby and being used to generate money for them. They were going to the party too.

MISSION BLACKMAIL

Key Words: Deception, Implanted Kids, Smuggling Rings

The driver spoke German and was a master spy type who did counterintelligence work. The second man was somebody that I already knew from Sunland because he was my handler.

His name was Howard. I started crying because I knew what he was going to do. The black man took out a white handkerchief and a bottle of ether. He dosed it over my mouth.

When I woke back up I was laying in the back seat next to the legs of another boy. I was hog tied up with a rag in my mouth that smelled like somebody's urine. I was breathing through my nose trying to live and trying to remember what was happening. That is what I had been taught to do so I paid attention. I stayed with the calm and ignored the pain.

They drove about ten or fifteen minutes to a dirt road near the springs and pulled into a private house to prepare us for the event. The German driver got out of the car and went to the house.

Howard got out of the front, opened the back door and lifted the kid off the back seat. He sat him up and clapped him on the back to make him breath. The kid jerked his eyes open and he was hog tied too. Both of us looked terrified and pale from the ether gas rag.

Pretty soon a shiny black Packard pulled up behind us. Inside sat two foreign men and one women spy. They wore hats like diplomats, with suits and ties. The lady had on a silk red dress with oriental trim of black scalloping. She looked ready for the Beltane party and I knew her. She was Carmen and she was Cuban. She called to Howard and asked if he had the packages for the party.

He spoke the same way Uncle Remus wrote his stories. "I got da kids wit' me." He spat brown tobacco by his feet. He was from the Islands and he called me the Monarch. "I got da Monarch 47 wit' me too."

Howard looked at me and then made a motion for me to lean back so the lady could see the boy. Then Howard said; "The boy's a Mongoloid, I picked him up from Miz Sue at the home. Hiz names Jake."

He was my trainer from the hospital at Sunland. Howard knew how to operate the equipment implanted in my brain. Howard and I spent lots of time together and he worked on my behavior and intelligence plans. He worked directly for the director of counterintelligence, J. Jesus Angleton and his wife; Carmen, the Cuban spy.

I was still healing from the surgeries at Sunland Mental Hospital. I got called out for a job; the Beltane Party at the Springs.

The black man gathered my hardware and began to open buckles and clamps on the new plastic exoskeleton. First, he put on my leg braces, next the halo set for my head and finally what I called, the halo contraption.

It was made with reinforced copper rods this time and had a radio receiver embedded in it. I still had a weak arm, but we had worked on pushing the cart around the rehabilitation floor at Sunland.

I had been implanted with radio ears and telephone talkers. I thought maybe Jake had implants too but I could not tell. One thing I did know about Jake, he did not like water very much. They had trained him against water with shock sticks. Everything was ready for Beltane party after the sun went down.

Carmen the red dress spy, got her big black box out of the trunk and told Howard the black man to set me up standing. She walked north down the dirt road with her headset and microphone.

When she turned it on I was pinging back to her device. She had a GPS tracker on me to see where I was going. I could hear her voice through my skull implant; “Starfire, raise your hand.” I raised my hand. I stood perfectly still, terrified of her. I could hear her voice nice and clear. She said; “Starfire, don’t do anything, pretend like Sshhh”.

Jake said; “Oh no” when she radioed him. He bent over and looked around.

Howard was black and not going to the party. Howard was going to blackmail his enemies and Carmen the Cuban was helping him do it. They made me sit up on the seat while the other boy stood outside the car. We were undressed by the Cuban woman and left in our t-shirts and underwear to be ready for the next part of the night; the Volkswagen bus pick- up.

What happened next is just one of many psychological assaults from the counterintelligence agency against reason and sanity. The Volkswagen bus pulled up and the Packard Bell left with Carmen and the two diplomats.

Howard transferred with us to the Volkswagen spy bus. Inside was a listening post with a telescopic radar dish that could be pushed up inside. He had the carcass of an alligator which was dead and hollowed out. He also had the carcass of a manatee calf which was dead and hollowed out.

They were in a small freezer in the bus. The whole van smelled like sulfur lake muck. I had seen these things before at Sunland when I practiced. They had put radios on them and GPS markers and painted fluorescent dyes so “satellite eyes could see them at night”.

When I saw the dead creatures, it made me cry. When I cried, the other boy cried too. Howard said; “You kids stop cryin’ right now!”

Jake and I shut up. We had to wear the contraptions. I made myself remember the night by calling my memory the “Animal Circus at the Springs”. I didn’t know about Beltane at the time since I was only two or three years old.

That night was unforgettable. Most people did not know that there was a tunnel cut through the limestone and bedrock during the Nazi investigations of the 1930’s era.

The Roosevelts were interested and so were Italian bootleggers. There was prehistoric history and Indian history at the spring areas in Florida. That was a very focused investigation of the springs when the Nazi Operation Paperclip scientists rediscovered this place in the 1960’s.

Most caves and tunnel systems in Florida were operated by the Italian and Irish mafia. Some systems linked to the Caribbean Islands. Some of the political families were connected by the wealth of bootleg liquor.

The families connected with liquor intertwined with the Kennedys. Even my trainer Howard’s island family members were making rum liquor in wooden barrels for one hundred years or more.

Howard did not want to pay American taxes so when he got a shipment he stored his “special rums” at the springs. During prohibition the springs were a very popular place to visit.

He and others paid the Swedish princess money to store it. They either ran a barge from St. Lucie county inlet, connecting with the intercoastal trade route or hauled it by car from Tampa Gulf of Mexico routes.

They brought it into other secret passages like Palm Beach Peanut Island. Some of the super wealthy had tunnels out to the beach from their mansions.

When drug smuggling started in the early 1980’s, the Florida trade routes were well established by the elite. The Civil Patrol office in Deland accepted fly in and drop off cargo with no questions asked.

The Swedish princess and the Count of Monte Cristo (and others) stored the illegal liquor in a cool place away from prying eyes of law. They were diplomats and could not get in trouble. The bootleggers used the St. John’s river system to float their way to cash money and lots of friends.

The little cave at the springs was a grotto type with a back to it and moisture on the walls from being carved from water pressure and erosion. The 1930’s Germans funded by Roosevelt’s family which were Nazi’s had expanded the cave.

They had studied the land and found some side tunnels which they also expanded. During the expeditions they had documented a tribe of giant people; some up to ten feet tall when they found a few bones.

MAYBE TOMOKA’S GENETICS

Key Words: Archaeology, Genetic Remains

The entrance to the cave was through a cellar door under the house. It led into a much larger area that pouched into the high walls of a cave. Jake and I were carried into the main cave area. Howard set me down into my halo walker contraption. He had Jake with him to get him set up with the alligator skin.

I tried to move my halo walker contraption, but the wheel was caught on a rock. I pushed harder, and a rock pulled out of the wall stuck in my wheel. I pushed again harder which made a scraping noise and then Howard looked over at me and said; “You stuck?”

Howard came over and got the rock which had red ochre paint on it with blue diamonds. There was an opening where the rock had been. He said. “What’s du find here Monarch?” He stuck his hand in and pulled out a stone box. It had a yellow sun, blue diamonds and red wavy lines on it.

The box was a perfect rectangle shape. Howard opened it while I watched him intently from my walker contraption. Inside were skins and inside some more layers of skins were two shriveled remains of what appeared to be testicles. They smelled dusty bad and Howard sealed them up.

He put the box back in the stone opening and placed it all back together. He shook his head. I looked at him quizzically, had we found Tomoka?

I was pretty sure that Howard would be back to get Tomoka’s genetics for the “clone the royals” program if it really was Tomoka. Tomoka was the chief of the Timucuan Indians who lived in the area about a thousand years ago.

Jake was already fixed up with the alligator skin draped off him attached by head halo and a waist belt. Jake’s Egyptian alligator rigging was custom-built, and we had practiced all week for the show. Howard angled the face of the alligator down so the being looked like a walking bipedal alligator to match the drawings in Egypt.

Howard set me up with the skin of a manatee calf placed over my contraption which connected to my leg braces, so I could walk slowly and stiffly. I was representing Babylon and the fish people.

I was up and standing with the manatee skin. Howard surveyed us and waited to be summoned upstairs. I looked around the cave, it was well lit and spacious. I could hardly believe it. There were wooden benches and a wooden table down there. They had kerosene lamps too. The Indians must have hidden here in ancient times.

About ten minutes later, Jake and I could hear footsteps as a sight to behold made her way to us; a naked red painted devil with horns and a shock stick wand. When Jake saw her, he started crying because her job was to shock him to make him perform. Jake had been trained and knew what to do. I started crying because Jake was crying and because I was trained on shock stick too.

My CIA handlers were drunk; except for Howard, he was a Muslim. The secretive CIA agents were mixing with local and state politicians under the oak trees talking in low muffled voices. I was a spy and I was trying.

Back at the house, people were getting louder from drinking. Some people were nude and acting sexually suggestive. They were on LSD, alcohol and pot brownies.

Out by the oak trees, the CIA had sent some “bachelors” to help encourage homosexual acts. The agents were peeping them with cameras. That is what I saw going on when we came back out and stood in the shadows behind the therapy cabins. Jake and I didn’t say a word. The time was moving into late evening after food and drinks.

As far as the animal circus goes, I belonged to CIA George because he was the richest man on the planet and most powerful. He said that J. Jesus worked for him and made me special for spy work when I was born. I was not real cooperative, but he did try to handle me psychologically and we had other crossing points past 1963.

Sometimes Howard would drive me down to Palm Beach. CIA George would slip the boat down a canal and pick up kids from the mental hospitals. Sometimes they brought wayward boys to CIA George. The sheriffs would find them. CIA George would lecture them about being good. He would ask the kids if they needed any help, could he fix them?

That meant having hypnosis, a lobotomy and maybe genital mutilations or removals. He would pull into the Palm Beach canal system and have the local cops guard for him. If CIA George didn’t like you, you walked the plank and he left you to drown. He said he fed the sharks, so they followed the boat.

That night, CIA George was flying a bird over us while he was on his yacht called the Dinosaur II. That meant he had ordered a satellite fly-over on the party. He had one of the Nazi space vehicles scheduled to come and hover over the spring pool and put a spotlight on the Beltane party.

The satellite was going to take pictures when it happened to show a possible “alien invasion” so the Nazi’s could get more funding money to go to the Moon base and Mars base.

I could hear CIA George talking to Carmen the Cuban on the land phone. Carmen told CIA George that everybody was naked, had cheated on their wives and been photographed. The bachelors by the oak trees were working because some men were closet homosexuals doing bad stuff naked. Everybody was drunk or half-baked on LSD, alcohol and pot brownies.

She said it was time to start the animal circus and see if aliens showed up. He said, “Have the kids at the pool in five minutes when you see my lights over the spring start pointing and shouting at my lights.”

Let’s talk for a moment about Nazi science and medicine. Nazi’s and Eastern Europeans were very smart for a very long time. They didn’t need child prostitution to make money, but they did have some trouble with egos.

They were using my brainwaves to show off and would “tune me to extra frequencies”. I had jamming signals and I had extra radio waves from the alligator (dinosaur) carcass. Believe it or not.

I worked with surgically trained Nazi’s most of the time at the hospital seeing what they could do to make spy kids. I had a radio receiver in my brain to gather radio waves.

The CIA did not know about the alligator’s intense radio wave life force, but the Nazi’s probably did. I really don’t know much except that when I got out to the spring pool I started to feel a little sprinkle of rain.

This was very good because people were leaving the outside area. I personally didn’t want anybody to shoot Jake or me because they did have weapons.

I believe the Nazi’s knew how to make it rain and they had planned to “rain on the CIA’s party” with weather wars. The radio waves could add energy to the ley lines and the top-secret spies knew it could be done.

CIA George had a whole weather program he planned to sell to the space program on launch days. He was going to practice at the Beltane party and demonstrate the alien threat. CIA George had no idea that real aliens were about to show up on him, unannounced.

CHAPTER SIXTEEN: THE SPONSORS

THREE BIRDS, NOT TWO

Key Words: Weather Wars, LSD, Aliens, Beltane Party

The more CIA George turned up his frequencies the more it began to rain. I could hear the pinging noises from my headset and that meant Carmen had her microphone set turned on somewhere nearby, maybe the special Volkswagen bus.

Meanwhile, I was in line behind Jake performing the animal circus with the red devil as our leader. There was a guy on tall stilts wearing a top hat and tuxedo with a bullhorn directing the attention to the pool area for “The Animal Circus”.

They had a little table set up with a portable record player playing the “Elephant Walk” song. The emcee with the bullhorn had a little camera with a hand activated trigger laced through his gloves. He worked for Howard.

Meanwhile, even without any LSD, I could see ley lines snaking off the water pool, so I made sure to step on them as I did my manatee walk. I could feel the plasma streams in the air.

I was wearing the manatee cloak of a dead manatee calf shot through the head. Jake was ahead of me dripping his animals’ radio waves too. The satellite telemetry beams make them thick and coiling when it made us a target and that is how it works.

Jake and I were dragging our animal skins to the pool and around the edge. Everybody was now getting out of the pool and most were very high on LSD.

They were saying, “Oh look, look at that” not really thinking about what they were seeing.

Then one of the CIA bosses said; “Shut up, be quiet”. They put the flaming torches out by holding them into the spring water.

All the sudden, a saucer appeared up in the sky. It put its spot lights on the trees moving rapidly around like a show would do and then it put a spot light on the pool.

Jake walked in front of me with the red devil lady. I was staring up while slowly pushing forward with my halo contraption. I could see the space ship shaped like a Nazi Bell antigravity craft but flatter. We had some lights down on us from “the birds” aka spy space craft.

I was getting nervous about getting shot with guns from the party goers. Jake didn’t deserve it either. I could see energy fields like ribbons of lights. A flash of lightning as I walked on the yellow ley lines. I could still see them snaking off the pool area when CIA George put his frequencies on us for GPS.

I stepped on a blue ley line and more rain started to fall on the party. I held my foot on it and stopped walking. My hands were holding the skin off my halo contraption because it hurt. It was too heavy and pressing on the bridge of my nose. I could hear the pinging noises from space.

The space ship singled out the manatee figure in a spotlight and illuminated me in gamma green. I got in trouble for holding my foot on the rain line. The voice in the head set said stop doing that and start walking. In front of me was poor Jake dragging around as an alligator accompanied by a naked red devil with a shock stick.

I started to hear clicking noises in my headset because the pinging noises stopped. I felt a very strange foreboding like when the hairs on your neck stand up. When I completed the last turn to go back to the therapy cabin area something unexpected happened. A worm hole opened over the spring. I saw the golden orb come in through the worm hole with light beams moving around it. I remember looking up with my eyes to see it coming towards Jake and me.

That is when my face bones popped loose and I lost my balance. I fell forward and started to bleed from my nose. I lay on my side with my leg braces showing still under the manatee calf.

I was watching the golden orb over the springs. I could see CIA George’s space craft came down low to look. His ship had a wobble and was trying to pull up. The wormhole was dangerous to his electromagnetic fields and the golden orb was stealing his show. He turned his lights off and moved out of the way.

Men in the shadows stepped forward to see. The orb hovered over the circle of the spring and moved towards them. They said; “Oh, oh” and moved away. They were scared, really scared.

From my view point I saw a golden orb with a white crystalline top. It went from very small to bigger and bigger than a flash of light in my infrared eye. My infrared linked to their ship.

In the next moment I was on board the craft with two other small beings. Jake was there and small too. The tiny aliens were healing Jake and I, so we could live.

We were all very small, so I thought of them as fairies. They could be big if they wanted and they were not reptilian origin. They said they were from the creation of earth. They were here to change things.

The beings were star beings. That is what they called themselves. They were incredibly light as far as weight or density. They said they shed their sins along the way and became what we would call souls.

The beings were from the start before Babylon. They were part of the water of the primordial spring. Did the men kill children and animals to see the golden orb? By doing those things out of the natural order they were disrupting the flow of natural pure spring energy.

The star beings did not like it. The beings had not been able to live at the springs in third dimensional time and space for eons of time. They could tell that Jake and I were in medical distress.

The star beings said they did not want to be contaminated with positive ions of energy from murder, rape and torture that permeated the place. That energy became inverted into a shallow pool of dark energy and they didn’t want that. Water is a cosmic map.

I woke back up on the ground laying on my side in the rain. Jake was standing up frozen in his alligator garb. The naked red devil with the shock stick was frozen too. Everybody was staring at the orb making circles going from little to, big to, tiny and back.

The golden orb started to circle over the spring water emitting little beams of lights. Those beams jammed CIA Georges big satellite which connected to the space ship he owned. It was sitting on top of us in the airspace.

The men and women expected grey aliens. They got star beings from the ancient spring water. I still remember it as beautiful and peaceful. I had suffered a lot as a halo child for MK Ultra experiments. The aliens gave me peace. They gave me strength to live for all these years.

As far as I was concerned; the spring was the Garden of Eden. Even after earth’s crust broke up after Pangea, it was still connected to the alien’s Babylon through a star gate.

They came from Babylon by the Gulf of Aden in Yemen using the ancient portal of primordial water called spring water of the same age and density. Al my sponsor from Missouri knew about Babylon and that is who came to get me from under the manatee calf skin.

Al just stepped out from behind the shadows of the therapy cottages dressed like a spy with a long black coat. With his big bear paw hands, he took off the pieces of the halo contraption and picked up the extra receivers, so nobody would find them. He stuffed me under his coat and walked off in a hurry. He carried me back to his car. He didn't run but he walked mighty fast on out of there.

He drove me straight to the hospital in Gainesville about two hours away where a doctor was waiting. He was a good Israeli doctor and he worked for Mossad. They wanted to see what the Nazi's did to my brain with their very special spy implants. The Mossad was watching CIA George very carefully because of oil exploration and some of his other great ideas.

Jake survived the Beltane party too. He wasn't in very good condition when he got back to the group home. Miss Sue was his night nurse. She was helping the fight to end communism in America when she gave him oxygen and warmed him up to save his little life.

I stayed at the hospital in Gainesville for about six months for surgery and rehabilitation while the Mossad doctors repaired me. The star being aliens would come to me in dreams sometimes and tell me I had to face my fears.

I started to think about what I could do to fight back and protect myself. The star being aliens taught me something to think about. Never give up if you want to live. I did return to the beautiful springs years later when I moved back as a teenager. God lives there at the springs, the Garden of Eden.

After that night, some negotiations started between the State of Florida, and the European royals to purchase the park. In the realm of the spiritual, we needed to put a stop to child sacrifice at the springs. Today it remains a state park off limits to the satanic cults.

We had pictures of those men that worked in the post assassination White House for Johnson performing subversive acts on one another. I had them on me from Howard and the stilt man. Al got them and gave them to Mossad at the hospital in Gainesville. That is what power and blackmail is all about.

The State of Florida purchased the fresh water springs it wasn't a choice.

Howard got the remains of what was presumed to be Tomoka and that wasn’t a choice either. Howard was going to Miami and the secret labs with Tomoka’s genetics. He was going to breed his own basketball team, find investors and join a franchise.

NAZI LEO & MOSSAD AL

Key Words: Identity, Operation Paperclip, Crash-retrievals

My sponsor grandfathers were very interesting to be around. One was a German Nazi and one was a double agent for OSS, FBI and Mossad (Shin Bet). At times it was a little overwhelming trying to figure out who worked for what agency, really.

My sponsor Al, did not go work for the CIA from the OSS after the Roswell Incident. He was a Mason above 33rd degree by that time so he had more choices. Al was part of an elite team of men that monitored the large rivers during wartime. They called the team Sea Scouts and they operated until Truman disbanded them. I believe he worked for the Bureau.

Al did not have to work under the CIA because he was a top-secret alien handler and transported their crash vehicles down the Mississippi River. I knew that he had used large barges to transport a top-secret object using the river for cover.

He never talked to me much about the aliens or crash vehicles but sometimes I could read his mind after the brain sculpting tune ups. Maybe that is why the aliens seemed to come and go from our lives in different forms, because Al never confessed.

Al knew the rat lines the civilized political gangsters used, and he did stuff with them like spy. After he pulled the Beltane double with Mossad the FBI took away his liquor license, let’s just say.

The FBI tried to bust him after the Beltane to get information. He wouldn’t talk. Instead, they made him sign a confession that he sold thirty-three thousand gallons of liquor in 1966. That was the year they caught him spying for Mossad and Shin Bet. He never, ever drank the stuff.

He would not break his Masonic oaths ever, not even when he was dying. I remember calling his name and being stern, “Al, isn’t there something you need to say?” He said, “Mind your own business Bub.” A few weeks later he died at one hundred years of age.

The whole time I was managing his care, I kept on suggesting he talk since he was hallucinating about the alien crash vehicles and getting them transported. He was reliving the event hearing voices and seeing things in the air.

They were stuck in ice and the guys from his Sea Scout organization did the job and got two saucers on the river barge all the way to New Orleans. I realize now that is why the Navy consulted with him all his life about Antarctica and deicing the space vehicles.

Both Leo and Al wrote computer code in the earliest days of the technology boom. My sponsor grandfathers, Al and Leo did experiments with sounds and lights to match the brainwaves of children to algorithmic equations onboard satellites that transmitted radiation frequencies to black boxes on the ground.

My grandfathers had problems with the rest of us and wanted to control us and they worked for people with great wealth. Our human brains are hackable and that means everybody.

Some female Mossad agents taught me mind control warfare, but Leo and Al didn’t know that. The ladies of Mossad thought maybe I was going to the space program and they wanted to counter spy. It would not be very good if I died a stupid way.

In the MK Ultra space program; in military war games I was an alien reptile “that just looked like a human”. To keep me quiet, I got vaccine shots to cause symptoms of autism.

This false reality was created by J. Jesus Angleton. My false identify as a reptilian alien was created with internal brain implants because state officials allowed me to be used for electric shock brain therapy and radio wave telemetry targeting.

When the spy satellites came over me with high beams, sometimes I could pop the transformers with the black boxes on them. It cost them money to target me. For strange effects, I could walk into a room and sometimes, a random radio would turn on or off. That’s why they liked me. I messed with them in their minds with my secret Nazi implants.

In fact, as far as my spy family was concerned; if I was an alien and if they screwed with me then I was going to manipulate them back. Their so-called friends and so-called elite gave me autism and misery and true to my so called angelic nature, I did not want to hurt them that bad.

INDIAN FINDINGS

Key Words: Genetic Hunting, Bigfoot, Ancient

In the early 1970’s, our state wildlife biologists found a cranium with brain matter inside that was 10,000 years old. He was buried in a canoe lodged in Cassia’s peat bog. Cassia was a settlement home to an ancient Indian tribe called the Timucua.

This guy was a hominid human even though he belonged to a tribe of genetically distinct Indians based on their findings. The Indians were still trying to prove they were actual human beings back then during the 1960’s.

When I was growing up here, the other big goal was the genetic prize called Big Foot, Skunk ape or Sasquatch. The species was described as a very large hairy hominid. They could stand and hunt but used sticks and pine trees to build nests.

Supposedly, it was an unfriendly species possibly from Mars or the destroyed asteroid belt planet called Vesta. Some scientists suggested they were related to the bear species since they had similar levels of intelligence. They wanted DNA and hair samples to analyze and they were Nazi biologists working in Florida. They kept a low profile and had to get used to our waters and swamps. I am sure they found some evidence.

The Nazi’s including Leo my sponsor grandfather, used to take my brainwaves and compare them to other species like the reptiles at the St. Louis Zoo.

That is how they turned a human child into an implanted reptilian working for the CIA counterintelligence office. That is how the Nazi’s discovered religious farming and racial farming. Some cultures were using the reptilian brainwaves to do it by using bone powder.

When the Nazi’s went to the Orient they learned about dinosaur bone powder and placement of dinosaur remains like geodes in a living human. Dinosaurs were big and moved big beams of light.

Why do that? Because the physics of ions called frequency, light and sound carry vibrational matches to living things and vibrating things in this world. It becomes active like an artificial memory or intelligence when organized using electricity the human body produces or filters.

A human brain can decode wave form information by reprocessing it into brainwaves. In these modern times, it is called channeling, but they called it filtering in those days.

In the Catholic church, some priests called it a Supreme possession. They can make money or gain power if the information is scientific. The information could also be demonic and that is why scientists worked with priests called the Jesuits who served the Nazi empire.

THE INTERDIMENSIONAL PLACE

Key Words: Rome, Pope, Purgatory Studies, Hybrids

There is a place that life is reprocessed to match its electromagnetic signature. That is how life spread so long ago in the Universe. Frequency matched so life transmits its data. Life transmits its data in perfect wave forms of spiraling bands until the container is formed for its production in 3rd dimension.

The Interdimensional Place was not well formed in the creation of things. The Earth had growing pains in its past such as the lost continent of Atlantis. Atlantis was a place for recycling energy because it artificially compressed radio waves into vortexes. The vortexes were from living plants and animals which created a reincarnation cycle. Atlantis gathered radio waves.

The designs for Atlantis, a moving wheel of quartz, with inner wheels of quartz rock for resonance and wavelength. It was adjustable and transmitted harmonics to the ionosphere.

The shape of the objects inside Atlantis were modeled off the objects in a cell including replication. It was a very large-scale model filled with ocean water (to match the living cell) which is plasma.

When Atlantis was destroyed, the technology for replication was lost in the fathoms of the sea. At some point in time, Atlantis was replaced by a new object in orbit around Earth.

It was the Moon which had energy wave generators and was a refurbished object. The Moon has a base on the back side. The Moon base has equipment centers, computers and frequency generators to interact with water fields using electromagnetic energy controls.

The Moon base on the back side controls the tides and emotional cycles. It is a mind control operation among other things. The popes at the Vatican call it “The Purgatory” because the hybrids go there for reprocessing during reincarnation cycles.

The Moon base needed wireless telemetry to feed it energy. In exchange for energy, the aliens taught the humans about nuclear technology.

They were building the brand new nuclear reactors on Hutchinson Island and they wanted a breeder reactor, so they could grow gold by a process called transmutation. Growing gold opens a portal since the process of transmutation is the creation of one thing from another using elemental patterns. They were lots of small portals for ions to pass through holes in the sky. Some portals were the size of a pixel.

The big reactors were linked to wireless telemetry which linked to small space platforms and opened small space-time portals around the reactors in the sky and the sea. Little balls of light can pass through the portals dragging large vortexes of radio waves with them into this dimension.

The ancient people in Iraq knew the process and so did the Africans. They have carvings on stones depicting portals to the stars. We got invaded by abnormal radio waves.

That is why I got sent to the reactor area to work on the setting of radiation exposure for children. I was a possible candidate for the space program since I had the moth-algae recombinant genetics. I was being tested for radiation exposure to see if I could survive.

Tesla’s coil theories were being successfully implemented. Everyone in the intelligence agencies were happy. Well, not everyone.

I got in very big trouble when the Polish priest and I met at Graham Airfield to discuss exactly what the elite Catholics in the UFO circle thought I was. He thought maybe I had come through an interdimensional portal from the reactor aka the Black Sun somehow.

I had to defend myself. I said, “I’m a person”. Here was my dilemma once again just like Don and his wife. The Polish pope in training did not know what the early surgeries entailed from the abandoned Nazi space project.

I had tiny receivers, transistors and wires along my spine, scars behind my ears, mind control training and so forth. What did he expect since he and his Jesuit tech gangsters wanted to stop sinning with mind control?

Here was the commander of Sin himself wanting to know if the “Black Sun” reactor was going to send a “black angel” to beat him spiritually at sin control.

I thought that he was messing up “The Purgatory”. It was supposed to be a holding area for animal patterns. I struggled to understand the place like it is the “place” of vibration as something is releasing its life force. Every string of energy was valuable from a person’s life, animal’s life and so forth since it is learned energy.

Now the Tech Gangsters were going to confuse or jam the algorithmic sets for the spiral of life radio waves from the Jupiter base.

The Moon base cell towers were messing up the reincarnation of dinosaurs and birds transferring their radio waves into people.

He told me they needed more radiation to make radio waves for the human harvest of souls, like I was, a reptile. He projected expanded Moon base and the new Mars base.

I sent him a push of information back to his papal TV receiver (mental imagery) that a better God than Nazi’s and pedophile priests had made the place of rest during creation. God of All sees you, tick tock.

I was only seven years old so why was I being interrogated by a Polish pope in training. He was so disconnected from me as a person or child.

I was there to have benign brain polyps removed for brain mapping at the field hospital. Why was he even talking to me? A few years later I understood when I saw the movies at theaters.

The priests in the early 1970’s started to use Hollywood to advertise to the people that demonic possession of children was real. They absolutely omitted their part in the torture and rape of children, implant and vaccine experiments and RF implants for tracking.

They did not want anybody to know they were using wireless telemetry on their implanted victims for sexual games and information recovery (Supreme possession).

I did not want to go to The Purgatory. The star beings I dreamed about told me this was a place where what is needed is created and stored. This place was a balancing place of existence. That really was not helping me at all.

I really didn’t care if the Polish pope in training liked me or not. They were using quantum computers with hyper-space sub-processors under the seabed a few miles from the nuclear reactors. They were trying to open large stable wormholes to other undersea planets. It was troubling.

When I went to the Florida Island on the barrier reef they were already active in the 1960’s trying to “recover” their lost vortex technology.

The Roosevelts had known about the alien presence and the use of technology. The aliens may have wanted those reactors built to support their agenda of possible reincarnation into human beings.

I think the Jesuits have operated technologies to retrieve information from bloodlines for the last 300 years. They were accessing the lives of other people across the ethereal fields; dead soldiers and dead scientists.

Maybe the Germans had created a liturgical system to save the soul memories of their Catholic members for harvest. Maybe it was the bird geodes and the algae that added resonance to the lower light spectrums for genetic compatibility.

The Nazi’s and the Vatican were using high technology to interface with a highly advanced hyperspace intelligence or even a computer system.

Even back then they were planning to use technology from satellites to control the weather, our genetics and our minds. Back then, other races like the Nazi’s were scavenging genetics for cloning, like what happened to Tomoka.

My sponsor “grandfathers”, one a Nazi and one a 37th degree Mason, both knew about the Indian weather control methods using brain sculpting activated by energy of natural and artificial lights with sounds.

My sponsor “grandfather” Al, took me with him to study and see some skulls at different museums. I think they were looking for my “alien” relatives.

He took me to exhibits to see preserved scalps in the museums of New York and Washington. He said he thought I was a fairy species from a small solar system.

Al had the museum director take me in the back and show me the actual heads of tiny people. Some were genetically perfect and tiny. We would call them fairies in today’s times. They were hunted into extinction. You can’t see them because they are gone, dead, extinct.

The other types of heads were artificially created by boiling the head and removing the bones. The shamans sewed them back together with animal sinews and plant fibers. He taught me the difference between real genetics and fake heads. Evidence of genetic engineering has always existed if you know where to look for it.

CHAPTER SEVENTEEN: ENERGY DETECTORS

CROSS DISCIPLINE CONSULTING

Key Words: RFID Tracking, Tags, Vaccine Studies

In 1964, I was temporarily assigned to sponsor Al in St. Louis, Missouri for three months. While I was there in St. Louis, Al took me to the zoo. Sometimes I stayed overnight in the basement research labs with student scientists.

I was assigned to a group who used research methods considering the work of Nazi, Dr. Erich Traub. In Germany, Dr. Traub was famous for developing herd strike weapons to kill cattle, sheep and birds so his enemies would starve. He understood vaccines. Dr. Traub was brought in using Operation Paperclip because one of his consulting projects was radio tracking tags.

According to his Operation Paperclip contract, he was a virologist, microbiologist and doctor of veterinary medicine, who worked for the Naval Research Institute in Maryland as part of Operation Paperclip. (Jacobsen, 2014)

Dr. Traub’s research was given funding to study the effectiveness of vaccines. Funding was abundant for research programs to study animal populations like herds using the radio tags in the ears of the animals. The trackers used small planes and radio frequency detectors flying over the vast areas of places in America, Africa, South America to count and identify animals.

One of the tagging animal projects were Florida alligators near the nuclear reactors the government planned to set up. The veterinarians wanted to measure the effects of radiation on the animals living near the reactor silos. The tracking program was called the radio frequency identification tags (RFID).

The scientists knew that excess electricity and magnetism combined to cause abnormal signals that affected biological cycles.

Changes in the electro-magnetic frequencies that interrupt the pulse of mother earth triggered generalized stress response in lab animals. The development of the RFID for animals allowed tracking of behaviors in the wild.

Nuclear scientists weren’t sure how the animals living around the nuclear silos were going to handle the additional energy and radio waves. Scientists knew that the wrong timing signals would likely throw off the cell division (mitotic cycle) of every cell.

This disruption of energy to the cells might interfere with growth processes throughout the body. The scientists were considering the effects like mass extinction of native wildlife. They knew even short exposures to stressors are harmful.

Studies on microwaves stress disclosed a brief period of increased immune-system response at very low intensities under 10 microwatts. Eventually, animals, people and even bacteria fail under chronic stress from microwaves which caused immune system resistance to fall below normal. The immune system became exhausted in the animals studied.

Some frequencies were going to be linked in for animal controls like the click calls of dolphins. It was important to study stress level to avoid injury to the animals.

In fact, click codes had more than one rate and were very detectable using satellite “ears”. Click codes were useful for human motor movements paired to high robotics and robotic arms because they could be encrypted digitally back 50 years ago as sound files. Click codes are dolphin and whale sonars.

By using the labs, they could measure the effects of their radio weapons on behaviors of species like the dolphins and the reptiles. The worked specifically, with alligators and snakes. In fact, every creature on earth was hooked into earth’s magnetic fields.

At the experimental lab at the zoo, scientists could track, and record entrainment or awareness used by other species like their hunting sensors. During some of the experiments, animals were over exposed to radiation and other toxins to see the effects. In some of the more interesting experiments using the reptiles they controlled the weather and direction of light beams.

Some of the animal handlers thought they could document the effect using high speed photography. Their work was later confirmed. It is one way that alligators regulate their internal body temperatures in the deep brain to bring light and heat to their skin.

This work was given to the space program for frequency research into weather control to make sunny days for launch days and weather satellite stimulation.

COMPENDIUM OF FREQUENCIES

Key Words: Audio-Visual Frequencies, Alien Species, Tags

The group at the St. Louis zoo was asked to measure, photograph and create a compendium of animal frequencies. Some in the military were aware of the connection between some extraterrestrial species and earth's natural abundance of life. For instance, one of the aggressive species of ET seemed insect based. How could it be controlled if the military encountered it? There were research projects for that purpose.

Dr. Traub and doctors like him, studied animal diseases especially symbiotic relationships and parasitic diseases. His projects worked on determining the frequency of different bacteria. What sounds did things make? Could sonar kill bacteria and viruses? What frequencies did they use? Was there a higher order?

There were many studies done in secret with some negative impacts to human health. Research demonstrated the responses by bacteria to microwaves as more effective. They crossed the blood brain barrier of animal brains, including humans. Exposures to electric and magnetic fields stimulated the growth of these spores and bacteria even in low frequencies of .0 to 1 hertz. (Robert O. Becker, The Body Electric, 1985)

The group at the zoo used their equipment to begin experiments to measure the perception of sounds, lights and words as part of the consciousness of animals. The scientists documented their frequencies.

At the zoo, the scientists would do different things looking for nerves or cells that could function as a weapon or camouflage coloring.

Some of the animals shifted power to their organs and organelles to hunt prey. A dolphin can stun a fish with a confusion ray. A bat can use echolocation to hunt at night.

BRAINWAVE CHARTING

Key Words: Behavioural Training, Electrodes, Shock

The animal behaviorists at the zoo did some experiments that were questionable trying to define consciousness. Sometimes during my summer visits, I would wear a helmet with electrodes and be given drugs to eliminate my body movements.

One of the doctors would record my brainwaves on a chart. In another room or stall, the doctor had a big animal like an elephant or a wolf. The experiment cabled us through a black box that would copy the brainwave the animal behaviorist selected and send it to the subject human or the animal target.

I think the doctor was trying to evoke behaviors using various frequencies delivered by cables to make me act like the animal. The animals got agitated or noisy when he did it to them. The doctor took his shock stick and shocked them and shocked me to see if he could evoke measurable energy fields.

The animals would try to attack me using their natural frequencies, cat growls, dog barks and so forth when we were both in the faraday cages. The animals had sensors and electrode implants in their brains and I never knew what to expect. I could tell the doctors were hurting them. We all had magnets in our brains, so they could make me, and the animals fall asleep.

The doctors were looking for areas of the brain, skin, nerves and muscles that responded to stress or produced small frequencies or handled overflows. Many of the experimental animals and people ended up with epilepsy of some type including radionics induced seizures.

In documented experiments, the scientists could cause a gorilla mother to abandon a new born baby by pressing a button to interrupt the mother’s biological cycles for care and nurturing. It was rumored that Nazi’s had tested these devices on new mothers at some of the camps and that is where the technology came from.

Scientist with many other research biologists, were looking for ways to overcome our natural defenses both in our hearts, bodies, minds and earth. They were refining their control mechanisms for all the life forms on earth. Even as a little toddler, I knew that humans and all life on earth could be used shamelessly.

UPGRADING COMPUTER LANGUAGES

Key Words: Hacking, Code Exchanges, Ozone Wormholes

In 1960, the world of spy craft already had computers and were developing the microchip with more potential. The problem was all the operating programs and universal languages like html and cobalt.

Nobody had developed an efficient language for plasma, electricity and the human mind until the Black Knight. The Black Knight hack in the Southern skies allowed the space program to pick up the signal and record the trajectories that would be passing over the ozone layers with holes in them. They could retrieve data that was encrypted from the source satellite when it flew through the ozone holes in our timed space.

It transmitted new languages unknown in the year 1966. The inside of the craft had a date from the year 2011. The world's best mathematicians had just put Einstein to the test. They had managed to recognize a bend in space coming over ions from a previous nuclear detonation. They could break into the dimensions and hack the satellites from the future onboard computers.

It cut years off the program to develop software. The other big news was that the theory of space time and worm holes was proven but they could not tell anybody; Shhhh, Congratulations, Shhh.

Earth had only slow modems for storage. All the data from the hack was eventually saved and stored in a CIA facility outside of Atlanta, GA. Even DC did not know there was a copy somewhere else. I think the hack was ET vectored using their ships.

This is because plasma is a hologram that is projected as a Holo-field. To interface with the computer and human minds we imaged a grid like pattern that could be flat, raised up, and measured called a dimension.

A dimension is a flat surface that has two sides. A dimension can be folded into a shape. A shape can hold objects, concepts, names and so forth. If the plasma assigned to the dimension changes density, then the equation changes by a third-dimension law called cause and effect. Cause-effect laws support and explain the known states of matter on earth.

Plasma gel holo-fields cause changes to water vapor like clouds or tap water or ice cubes. Water has more than one function especially when it comes to plasma and light. Plasma is very sensitive to energy like heat, microwaves and the elements like Freon. Radiation moves plasma with heating while elemental metals reflect heat, up or down and this can be twirled with directional laser canons on planes, satellites or even Nano satellites just by pulsing the correct frequency.

Back in the 1960's during the Spanish wreck salvage programs, the navies of the world measured the filtering rate of light on metals. They would find a coin on the sea floor of the Atlantic, mark it, GPS the wreck and send the coin to lab. The coin was analysed, photographed and so forth to date the age of the wreck. The military satellite designers, space engineers and doctors learned about filtering light and gathering light bands in plasma tubes. It is bendable.

The knowledge gave the MILAB doctors ideas about how to build detectors using light based sensors in technology for all kinds of things. There was a small group of top secret child psychologists who were collecting data for the Paedophile Protection Agency including child psychology groups. Even the Israelis got worried there would not be anybody left with a brain in twenty years from the assault on memory.

I used to go for testing with X-rays and infrared lights. The worst of it were the strobe lights and audio-visual strobe testing days because they cabled into to my deep brain and brain stem to cause responses. I mean responses like hunger, crying, peeing on self and so forth. I always had seizures from testing.

If you think Americans were moral fifty years ago then think again. My third- grade teacher was a CIA agent in support of child sex studies. She never did one thing to help me. I felt so betrayed.

My principal met with everybody to calm them down when they failed to call an ambulance when I was in medical distress. I tried to go to school after a violent session the prior night from being raped.

My sponsors took me home and iced me, so I would not die from shock. We have laws to help children because of all this violence from the past. If this was what Muslim life was like, then I hated it.

If this was not enough, by the seventh grade in 1976, the satellite black box operators and the Navy had figured out a way to remotely shock a person to provide negative reinforcement type of behavioural training.

It was now in the walls of the house from a black box on the electrical lines. In modern times, the smart meter in the home provides the same frequency modulations. I went for testing to see if it worked at the Naval lab at Mayport. They called it a static line shock attack. They could drop it from a drone or through the wires of the house. It works, I got shocked.

CALLING THE LEY LINES

The military and the industrials learned how to use large vortexes to produce weather related sounds to control the frequency and pressure to spin the wind and the dirt. They received lots of funding so not to waste launch days at space centre.

Good weather for launch days was ordered by the military for spy satellite deployment. The radar operators were learning how use plasma to form steering currents. They tried minerals, aluminium, boron, phosphorus and more additives to jet fuel to help plasma thicken and reflect like mirrors.

Remember when you were a kid and got a magnifying glass and burned a leaf? Well those mirrors are easy and cheap and can start forest fires from a satellite. Maybe even melt a hole in the ice in Greenland. They tried these tactics by using the chemical trail spraying airplanes.

Where are they sprayed? They come from chemical trails sold in the jet fuel as an expensive additive. They are designer particulates that deliver themselves or other molecules as passengers.

In the old days, the generals would just read the additives just like ordering from a menu. They would check them off like this; heart pains, dry mouth, sweating, cold flashes, autism general spectrum and on and on. The chemicals used in additives could cause these symptoms.

Our generals in the military did not care because brain damage is small but cumulative over time. That is why the medical establishment won’t say a thing about the true causes of at least half of brain diseased America.

CHAPTER EIGHTEEN: A NEW START

NUKE CORE RETRIEVALS

In those days of the 1960’s, the military and wealthy technical gangsters were actively setting up the cellular systems and black box experiments for mind control using Florida neighborhoods.

By 1964, I had finished making hundreds of tracings using mind control patterns of words and frequencies of sounds and lights. I had already completed work using advanced electronics to control the flow of electricity and semi-conductor energy to a human being’s body. Our quantum brains can send ions to targets if synched by wavelength and we have retinal eye scanners in current times to demonstrate the concepts.

The scientists knew they could synch the frequencies of some human brainwaves to algorithmic sounds in space and on black box generators. I was going to work on the satellites that mapped the earth.

The German commander from the space program was Major General Walter Dornberger. He was the director of V weapons development for the Reich which meant the launching of rockets. He also worked for the US Army on an Operation Paperclip contract. (Jacobsen, 2014).

Dorenberger was an excellent pilot and able to fly all the exotic craft the American military captured after World War II. The Americans like Putt and Armstrong thought they had stepped into the future when they found the Die Glock and the Air Foil Wing aircraft. They could manipulate Dornberger because he liked alcohol and women.

In my observations, Dornberger was a bird himself understanding air currents and temperature theories of atmospheric conditions. I would not want to dogfight him in the air or receive a strafing run from him on the ground due to his fanatical judgement. Nonetheless, he understood the role of plasma and ley line magnetics for locomotion better than most.

Dornberger was a liaison for the Eastern European Nordic races. This is because of the Antarctica salvaging operations of a starship battle group frozen in time. The battle group had weapons aboard.

In the late 1960’s, the most top-secret missions were archaeological expeditions to Greenland. The Navy had attempted to enter the frozen chambers by way of the North Pole. It did not turn out well for them. I am not sure how the Philadelphia experiment was connected, but it may have been attempts to teleport to the craft and take the weapon systems. I do not know who found the air current generators or “guns of god” tech to disassemble molecules.

In my role as observer, I came to understand that the Nazi’s had to use implants to even consider flying as co-staff on the Nordic ET ships or the grey battle groups. Even the ships the Nazi’s used for interstellar travel required implant interfaces.

In my own humble opinion, the extraterrestrials came to help mankind avoid cosmic catastrophe like losing the atmosphere. The leaders of the politics were egotistical and could make a mistake bigger.

In fact, at the midpoint of World War II, some types of contact with extraterrestrials had been made by the elite Nazi aerospace program. Commander Dornberger was responsible for the alien exchange program in the initial stages before it went black post Kennedy assassination.

I believe that Dorenberger was sent to Florida to work with Dr. Hubertus Strughold They were working on the human brain to interface to advanced computer systems without killing the pilot, while trying to make a pilot.

There were small teams of engineers who tried to figure out how to link the energy fields of people to access higher intelligence. There were a whole host of weapons, space satellites and relay communication devices to consider linking systems.

After World War II, there was the matter of lost equipment flying around in space and that equipment did have to be retrieved before it hurt something like our atmosphere. This stuff was getting stuck in the plasma of the magnetosphere.

The Nazi’s did not want to cop to their space program. It forced the ET’s to come out to the government to ask them to go get the nukes in space.

They had multiple objects in low orbits with nuclear cores on board and they were coming down because they lost their telemetry obits when Dresden was bombed during WWII.

The ET’s were not happy and told them to fix their mistakes. The reason, the nukes can cause electromagnetic pulses and knock out communications down below in low orbit detonations.

The Nazi’s had something to offer in this area to help engineer robotic arms to retrieve space nukes. I met Dr. Mengele because he was teaching Al, my sponsor grandfather how to link the mind to robotic and telemetry products like wirelessly activated servo-motors.

At that time, the aeronautical engineers were working on aircraft compartment design and stable flight. They also had set up wireless telemetry for the launches of rockets and space ships. They could and did talk to the crew in flight.

Dr. Mengele assisted on rare occasions immediately after Kennedy was assassinated. Mengele was not in this country very often and when he was here he was hidden.

There were other Nazi’s who lived in Germany and South America who consulted on American military projects. They also worked for corporations with increasing wealth available for funding secret projects. They stayed at designated places, so they could design together.

Al, my sponsor grandfather, worked with him at a CIA safehouse in Alabama about forty-five minutes from the Huntsville pediatric hospital. He took me there so Dr. Josef could examine me.

Al and Dr. Mengele were working on mind control products using telemetry to match brainwave states of mind. They worked on branding the brain to specific products to test their theories. That was beyond the nuclear core retrieval program to get the lost objects in space.

This was Wall Street greed. That is why Al and I were paired together. I got to live as my life was spared and he got his Master’s Degree in Social Science of engineering people’s buying habits.

Mengele’s drawings and diagrams linked different sensory and motor neuron brain systems to space telemetry systems. Some of my systems like optics of sight and hearing of sound were augmented by materials responsive to radio frequencies and radiation.

The biggest use of my quantum brain (lights, sound and automation) was for marking the GPS spots. I wore a lightweight blue aluminum halo in my skull. It was a constant shape and weight.

It was an unusual alloy that would not be confused by the sensors once they learned the sound it made on different space beam frequency settings. The blue aluminum halo made the sound of “tink” when shot by a satellite ray.

Like I explained, this was a love hate thing for me, wearing the halo so I could be in the space program. I was seriously looking for somewhere else to live other than earth.

I believe the military wanted to secure access to that area because they had visitors that liked to use the airspace over the space center to uncloak. This included the interdimensional alien ships when they came into resonance with their crafts in our dimension.

Humans and radars could not always catch the alien visitors to earth and some species were invisible. When they showed up near the proposed nuclear power plant site in their grey ships, this bothered the military intelligence groups. They were a big problem for the radar operators who were told not to shoot them down anymore.

The space program had acquired space ships from Germany and the pilots to fly them. The air foil space ship flew no higher than about 60,000 feet high to study high altitude aviation and medical effects.

They looked for wormholes when they were out doing measurements. Wormholes created space-time anomalies, and nobody wanted to fly through them because they disrupted instruments. The Nazi ships performed lots of duties for America’s energy needs setting up the nuclear reactors.

The Nazi space ships had the advanced space telemetry for echolocation. They used advanced space vehicles to find suitable placements using ley line energy to build a nuclear reactor.

These vehicles had been part of the Nazi’s Third Reich. The Reich commanders came to Florida and they were German Nazi’s from the secret space program and nobody knew. Shhhh.

THE AIR FOIL WING

Key Words: Nuclear Reactors, Ley Line, Space Program

I was sent to live with Don, his wife and newborn baby boy about six months after the Kennedy assassination in 1964. I was almost five years old and happy to finally live away from the mental hospital for children even if only temporarily.

I went back to the space program on Hutchinson Island to help with the nuclear reactor's set up as a GPS mark point for satellites. I still had my blue aluminum halo attached to my temporal lobe where the auditory nerve for hearing is located.

Don's house was near the beach. I had already been used by the space program in Florida to locate major landmarks using the mapping satellites like Sunland Mental Hospital, the Naval base in Orlando and the amusement park.

Sometimes I got to go on flying missions. The craft that I was in that day was the air foil wing and I knew Major liked to fly it. He was Major Siegfried Kenemeyer. During World War II, he was the chief of the German Air Force technical developments.

Once, when I was at the space center at the test hanger, I saw Major Kenemeyer examine his beautiful glowing craft after coming back from a high-altitude test of the ionosphere. He told me both he and the machine were glowing from the flight as he gestured toward the craft.

He was known as one of the top ten best pilots of the Reich. Kenemeyer flew the air foil with great skill and was measuring the ionosphere and ozone layer. It sat on a pedestal in a hanger. The air foil used a mechanical arm to launch it like a rubber band plane.

For research missions, sometimes Major Kenemeyer asked another crew member to ride along. He was named Dr. Emil Salmon.

Dr. Salmon was an expert on high frequency sounds in space. Even though Dr. Salmon's bird was the Die Glock when he flew sometimes he would assist in other areas. The Die Glock was hard to fly but he understood the principles better than most other scientists. It projected objects into 3rd, 4th and 5th dimensions.

After Kennedy was assassinated, the counterintelligence CIA utilized Dr. Salmon and his expertise for geomagnetic research which included ley line echolocation. Dr. Salmon was using advanced telemetry fields he had developed. He told me his secret. He could hear other worlds in his head.

The US Army “found Salmon’s expertise difficult if not impossible to duplicate. “ (Jacobsen, 2014)

Sometimes, Dr. Salmon added me to his crew list since I was used for GPS mark points in high altitude research flights. I was excited to watch him work with sounds, lights and frequencies from earth and space. He was teaching me the cosmic art of how to listen to the planet.

The scientists wanted to locate energy fields and flux fields to study their relationship to each other. There are large direct currents continually flowing within the ionosphere and as telluric (within the earth) currents, generating their own subsidiary electromagnetic fields.

To be honest, I didn’t know I was in a space ship. That is what I was trained to do, and it was normal. I didn’t ask many questions, I was autistic. I got used to the pressure suit and oxygen masks.

I thought it was normal because my whole life was based on it. In those days, the space program was a big deal to the people in this country and they knew about research that was going on.

On the day we traveled to Hutchinson Island, I was there to help make GPS points. They were there to design the reactor, so it was aligned to earth’s magnetic fields. I was aboard the air foil wing with Major Kenemeyer and Dr. Salmon to use advanced electromagnetic detectors which sensed complex streams of plasma and cosmic streams in the ionosphere.

I wore a detector box and was going to pick up a signal with my brain’s implants to detect ionospheric sounds, white noise, pings, space dust and clicks. The air foil wing that Major Kenemeyer flew had instruments on board that were tuned to earth’s frequency for locating spikes called ley lines.

The plan was to build a nuclear power plant to help Florida grow and modernize. Energy was crucial to post war development and the space program, and the Europeans had already gone nuclear. It took advanced physics and planning to set a reactor over the energy lines of the earth itself.

The reactors generate more energy than normal in place of earth’s gentle energy fields. The reactors send radiation and ionic wave patterns out along channels of least resistance using land, elements and weather patterns.

It was important that the nuclear reactors be set up correctly, so they didn't disrupt the weather patterns and electromagnetic flows. The surface and ionosphere act as the charged plates of a condenser which is really a charge storage device.

This electric field continually ionizes many of the molecules of the air's gases, and it, too, pulses in the extremely low frequency. Nobody wanted violent electrical storms because of the reactor and it could cause them by exciting clouds.

Before I got to go anywhere with the GPS mark program I had to get medical clearance. The doctor in charge of me and my electronics for that day was Dr. Ruff. He met me at the space center before I left on the air foil wing. He oversaw my equipment and checked it to make sure it was detecting the range of signals they wanted.

Dr. Ruff was not on the flight because he assisted the mission on the ground at the space center that day. He gave me the all clear to board the air foil wing. He told me to go sit in the jump seat across from the cargo door.

He said when the light is red stay in your seat and do not move around or I will beep you with a sound you don't like. I agreed to be good by nodding my head yes vigorously. I liked flying in the space ship and did not want to blow it. I was trying to find a new home.

Once we got on board the air foil for the ley line set up we all sat down. That day, I wasn't in a high-altitude suit because we were flying low under radars over the ocean, so I wasn't wearing a full-face mask testing oxygen.

Dr. Salmon, was always friendly and he knew I was frequency sensitive. He told me to listen for clicks from the dolphins in the water below which meant a low path.

Sometimes it took some time to prepare the coordinates into the computer system that had linked to a satellite. I was excited and bored, so I was trying to translate their conversation in German.

They were talking about noticing things out of order on the flight deck. There was cargo on board as if somebody else was flying the craft in the off hours. Major Kenemeyer was upset about it because he didn't know what they did to the craft. Kenemeyer asked Dr. Salmon about it and he said he couldn't answer any questions. Salmon pointed towards Cuba.

The air foil wing did not taxi down a runway. It left the hanger by a roll-out launch pad, then they would somehow hook it to a launcher. The air foil wing was lightweight.

We had to launch when Soviet satellites and Chinese satellites were not over us. Sometimes we only had thirty minutes to roll out, load and launch the craft. We were always silent in our crews until given the safe signs by the pilots.

Once it started, the air foil took less than fifteen minutes going slow at first and then faster over the water of the Atlantic Ocean to get to the location of the proposed nuclear power plant. It was absolutely soundless.

The target area for the nuclear power plant sat on some relatively high land with a lagoon. The lagoon had underground earth chambers like old tunnels from where the spring water cut through it.

There was also good sea water available with easy to cut chambers to cool the nuclear reactions. Most people don’t know that nuclear reactors can make gold if they are fine-tuned a certain way and Hutchinson was such a spot. This was a very nice place in general and it was chosen to build the reactors on the lagoon side.

Our air foil space ship was performing a series of slow sweeps with Kenemeyer at the helm. They were setting the ley line frequencies into their early computer like system. They charted everything. I was a GPS point person.

When we found a point, Dr. Salmon verbally confirmed his readings and we hovered until we got a green signal from the satellite on my radar box. It marked the points as we passed over the ley line. The two audio feeds matched up for a good ley line point on a heading.

I clearly remember almost finishing the job when a big burst of interference hit my ears through the box. About that same time, from the earth’s fields our antigravity engines were interrupted.

We were hovering about fifty feet above the sea water when I felt a dip. Major’s nose dropped and smacked the water hard. Then the tail rocked backward toward the sea.

Major boosted his two dry engines and I could hear the water splashing, but it was too late. The mid-section thrusters contacted with the sea water and cut out. We were about one thousand feet off the beach during low tide.

I crashed into the Atlantic Ocean with Major Kenemeyer and Dr. Salmon in the air foil wing. I was in my seat wearing electronics that could fry me. Dr. Salmon had blood on his head, but he could gesture for me to unplug my headsets. We took an assessment like we practiced during an emergency.

Major’s leg was stuck under a part of the flight console equipment that came loose and fell. He said he had blood in his boot, no broken bones. I tried to unplug and realized my collarbone had snapped on impact and was sticking up through my flight suit. I managed to unplug my head gear and painfully reached the release on my seat belt.

Dr. Salmon said; “Starfire, open the little cargo door if you can”. We had limited air and needed more.

It was more like a hatch they used to pass objects into the small cargo compartment. He was on a secure ham frequency to talk to space command using the secure alert codes.

I had a stroke weak left arm and a broken collar bone. I had to scoot out of my seat on the floor. Then, I had to slide up and use my stroke weak arm to get the lift handle up enough with whatever strength I had to open the little hatch. I could get through it if I had to.

I managed to pull it up on the first try after Major clicked the button to green. When I got it open, I could see turquoise water kicking waves and did not want to flood the air craft. Dr. Salmon talked to Major about getting loose because he said we were on a sand bar and the water would lift us.

They were trying to float out to sea for security reasons. It was early morning and it was clear. People would be coming to the beach soon.

Major was performing first aide on his leg wound with a wrap to stop the bleeding. He was talking to space center and telling them what happened as best as he could figure out. He said we had found a gamma ray and it released our antigravity seal, so we went down.

We had found unexploded ordinance that was coated with radioactive paint from World War II. I believe it was a sunken U Boat’s remains. The radiation had disrupted the resonance fields and made our craft unstable.

We were stuck at an angle sticking up out of the Atlantic Ocean. I didn’t know what was going to happen. The air foil was swaying in the tidal waters and high tide was coming in the next few hours.

We had to ensure we could exit the air foil wing if it took on water before it sank and we all drowned. We also knew we were in shark infested water and all of us were bleeding.

All of us were in gray one piece suits the same color as the craft. Our suits evaded radars like heart beat scanners from satellites, but we were still vulnerable.

We did look like aliens. Two tall greys and one small grey. Our ears were usually covered by headphones when we traveled. Our flight suits were hooked into pressure so as we went up in high altitude tests, we inflated. We were not inflated that day but had some floatation after the crash.

I could float and kick but could not swim very good due to my broken collar bone. I was trained well enough to survive and that is exactly what I did that day. Major was calling the secret space program to come get us in a hurry before the people came and the reporters got wind of our crash.

Pretty soon an army van showed up with a military officer in it. He had a gun and he was prepared to use it to keep beach goers away. He parked the van as a warning to others.

Down the street the police put up barricades and tape. They closed the one bridge to the island. They waved onlookers away and announced the coast guard had located some possible World War II torpedoes that were unexploded.

Meanwhile, fifty long miles away, a limousine from the space center was doing some high-speed driving to pick us up. Major was calling in his coded routines to order assistance using high alert codes.

A helicopter with a lift crane was dispatched and so was a private ship owned by Aristotle Onassis to pick up Major Kenemeyer’s little air foil wing.

I was waiting for instructions and keeping calm. Major put me in a straight-jacket to stabilize my fracture. We used them during contact.

I waited at my seat in the jacket holding my shoulder until a camouflaged raft with a Navy seal diver came to get us. They transferred me off the air foil wing and laid me down in the raft. I closed my eyes waiting to see my doctor Ruff.

I woke up at the hospital in a great deal of pain. He was right there standing over me looking perplexed. He had designed the seat belt that injured me. I made the mistake of calling him “Daddy” because I was in pain. I never saw him again after that mission.

To advance the study of space and the cosmos, the American space program used Nazi technology recovered from the war. To test waves of light energy which produced sounds, they used Kenemeyer’s ship to bounce lasers off the ionosphere. They called it light works or the light show.

Tesla theorized that ELF (extremely low frequency sounds) and VLF radiation (very low frequencies) could enter the magnetosphere, which is the magnetic field in space around the earth. Tesla thought that these types of waves can change its structure. He was later proven right. (Kimura, 1974)

The aerospace scientists did not want the misuse of energy to damage earth’s atmosphere and solar shields from the Sun’s radiation. They were learning. The global elite and military leadership wanted to learn how to control the weather using simple sound frequencies like the kind generated from objects like HAARP.

The magnetosphere and its Van Allen belts of trapped particles produce many kinds of electromagnetic resonance fields (EMR). Since they were initially studied through audio amplifiers, the first kinds discovered around 1920, were given different names like whistlers, dawn chorus, lightning and lion roars.

The aerospace scientists created instruments to measure many more frequencies and learned to expand the spectrum of sounds. Many of the sounds resulted from the VLF waves are associated with lightning, which bounces back and forth, pole to pole along magnetic ducts in the magnetosphere. This resonance amplifies the original VLF waves enormously. That is why lightning make a boom sound.

Satellites measurements have proven that artificial energies from power lines are similarly amplified high above the earth. That means that life gets dosed with waves of energized plasma, a phenomenon known as power line harmonic resonance (PLHR). That is one type of artificial energy that weather engineers use to create storms and steering currents.

Radio and microwave energy also resonances in the magnetosphere. The amplified energy interacts with the particles in the Van Allen belts, which produced heat, light and X-rays, all known types of energies. By the late 1970’s the science of weather knew how to manipulate the fallout of charged particles that serve as the nuclei for raindrops. (Robert O. Becker, The Body Electric, 1985)

THE GIFT OF SIN

Key Words: Mind Control, Gold, Cetaceans, Greys

Genetic engineering has been going on to provide the right kind of people on earth. The mind control weapons have facilitated both growth and dementia.

After the defeat of Hitler in 1945, the alien species associated with the Third Reich with were in big trouble too. Ford, Rockefeller, Soros, Kissinger, Cheney, Brzezinski and Bush had control of enough technology to force the issue and manipulate the aliens.

On the Arab side, the Saudi King and his Princes were looking for oil fields to develop and sell to the auto markets of the world. The German Nazi's had technology for cave expansion, underground tunnelling and oil rigs. The wealthy elite offered the aliens new underground bases in exchange for technology.

The aliens associated with the Third Reich were offering to use the Nazi space ships for GPS marking and satellite placement recommendations.

Texas politicians did not want the aliens to base out of Florida. This may have been a Kennedy assassination factor.

I'm sure that deals were struck to work with the alien species that are part of earth, so we just don't see them. That is just the kind of deal CIA George liked to make.

To balance the odds in the favour of Texas, the technology gangsters like CIA George, made deals to finance technology companies that made microwave ovens and solar calculators. Everything was top secret no matter what he did.

Right after World War II ended, the Third Reich aliens had to show themselves to the military leaders of the time. During the 1930's and 40's the Soviets, Russians, and Eastern Europeans had contact during the war.

The aliens were in retreat and waiting to see if the base agreements were carried out. People like my sponsor grandfather, Leo went to Antarctica to find out.

I personally had to ask the aliens to leave the space program because even if the military rejects you, the aliens still visit. I was so disappointed because I did not understand what was happening. My friendly contacts had to leave or surrender.

Spiritually, I was looking for something else to do since I had so many empty spaces that should have been human. I caught on that I was just a kid in experiments passed around for projects.

My last project in the MK Ultra Monarch program was in 1975, I worked at the holographic labs under the amusement park.

I want to tell you that I successfully made holographic butterflies with the help of light engineers. They drew them on glass. It took two days to animate them in 1970 with the Super Cray.

Right now, they are not out in the open for viewing or used in malls or restaurants because the Arab countries took the technology for free.

They already filed the patents years ago, not me. They were two thick layers of light, yellow and blue with beating wings.

I am hoping that artificial intelligence will arrange the code for the Monarch light butterflies, so they can become a new technology species for the New World Order.

They are quite lovely. Someday soon, the world may look like a scene from Roger Rabbit. Now, this is the really, cool part of it. The butterflies carry the thoughts of sinners.

The reason that the holographic butterflies can carry the sin is because I made their wings beat at matching rates, just like Al did with the motorcycle wheels.

I paired those wing rates with emotions just like Al did with the brainwaves pinned to the primal brain by frequencies.

I wanted to improve both Hell and Purgatory by decorating it with butterflies that carry Sin. I was fourteen years old when I finished this project. I have not had any contact with the Tech Gangsters since then.

JUPITER’S VORTEXES

As far as the future of the human, it is obvious, the future holds designer genetics for those with the money if you want to be human. Where are the blueprints for life stored? How does it move around from point to point?
The answer might be advanced artificial intelligence and lots of it is free. This could be useful to reduce the cost of politics and the justice system in general. We could balance our budgets and keep our promises. No human hands would be stealing from the cookie jar, would they?
Here is some more insanity that is important to Earth and time travel. The terra forming on Jupiter is terra farming of vortexes. Coiled radio waves form vortexes. Vortex points allow space travel and can be moved for illegal time travel. Your memories can be coiled and saved for export.
A vortex point creates a GPS point and can be unwound as a radio wave under certain conditions. After the wars, the aliens were asked to hybridize earth humans.

Are we being brainwave farmed from the smart meter to provide labour, buying power and mind control targets for rich people and their family wars? Let me give an example. Here is a brainwave farming example using dolphin hunting brainwaves.

The orca-whales like gold. Why do orcas like gold?

Bottlenose dolphins (cetaceans, whales) were taught to find gold in some of the military lab experiments in the shallow waters off the Bahamas.

They began training the gold scout dolphins using underwater targets like gold rings. Once they found gold they got rewarded.

This system went up to the Bios Cray computer to copy the sonar signals to find the gold for underwater exploration projects. The Tech Gangsters got the codes and made gold finding side scanning sonar for underwater treasure.

The dolphins love gold and get rewards from having it even though the dolphin doesn’t need gold at all. They need the fish from the trainer.

The military-medical-industrial elite copied their brainwaves to control the price of gold. If you have replicated orca brainwaves you probably love gold. You think like an orca when they are hunting.

If you own a little gold, then you are bottlenose.

If you own a lot of gold, then you are a whale.

To think like a computer program takes a minute of skill.

References

977 Senate Hearing on MKULTRA: Table of Contents/Main Index. (n.d.). Retrieved 10 22, 2017, from http://www.druglibrary.org/schaffer/history/e1950/mkultra/index.htm

1977 Senate Hearing on MKULTRA: Table of Contents/Main Index. (n.d.). Retrieved 10 27, 2017, from http://www.druglibrary.org/schaffer/history/e1950/mkultra/index.htm

Arbitron Announces Next Generation Electronic Audience Measurement PPM 360. (2010, 06 21). *Newsweek*.

eCamp, J. W. (2004-2005, December). *The Franklin Scandal*. Retrieved from http://whale.to/b/the_franklin_cover-up_-_john_decamp_-_ebook.pdf: http://whale.to/b/the_franklin_cover-up_-_john_decamp_-_ebook.pdf Duckett, M. K. (2015, February 10). *Florida by Water: Experience Bioluminescence*. Retrieved from National Geographic: http://www.nationalgeographic.com/travel/florida-land-and-sea/experience-bioluminescence.html Et.Al. (2017, October 20). *Black Pope*. Retrieved from Wikipedia: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Superior_General_of_the_Society_of_Jesus GAO. (1994, September 28). *Human Experimentation An Overview on Cold War.* Retrieved from The Black Vault: http://www.theblackvault.com/documentarchive/cia-mkultra-collection/#

ranger, S. &. (2015). *Star Fire Disclosure Updated Special Edition Rare Photos.* Fort Lauderdale, Florida: CreateSpace.

reek History and the Gods - Grand Valley State University. (n.d.). Grand Valley State University (Michigan). Retrieved 10 28, 2017, from http://faculty.gvsu.edu/websterm/Greekhistory&gods.htm *Holocaust Encyclopedia – Genocide of European Roma (Gypsies), 1939–1945*. (n.d.). Retrieved 10 28, 2017, from United States Holocaust Memorial Museum (USHMM): http://www.ushmm.org/wlc/en/article.php?ModuleId=10005219

Iomosexual Prostitution Ring Ensnares VIPS with Reagan, Bush : 'Call boys' took midnight tour of White House. (n.d.). Retrieved 10 22, 2017, from http://www.indybay.org/newsitems/2003/02/06/15709461.php Jacobsen, A. (2014). Operation Paperclip. In A. Jacobsen, *Operation Paperclip* (pp. 247-254). New York: Little, Brown and Company.

ames Jesus Angleton - Spartacus Educational. (n.d.). Retrieved 10 22, 2017, from http://spartacus-educational.com/SSangleton.htm *Jose Delgado and his bull story*. (n.d.). Retrieved 11 12, 2017, from https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=6nGAr2OkVqE

han, I., & Ranga, A. (2014). *SODIUM FLUORIDE INDUCED TOXICITY IN THE KIDNEY OF SWISS ALBINO MICE AND ITS AMELIORATION BY ASCORBIC ACID*. Retrieved 10 23, 2017, from http://ijpbs.net/cms/php/upload/3675_pdf.pdf Kidd, C. (2011). THE WARREN COMMISSION AND THE DONS: AN ANGLO-AMERICAN MICROHISTORY. *Modern Intellectual History, 8*(02), 411-434. Retrieved 10 23, 2017, from http://journals.cambridge.org/article_s1479244311000242

imura, I. (1974). Interrelation between VLF and ULF emissions. *Space Science Reviews, 16*(3). Retrieved 11 14, 2017, from https://link.springer.com/article/10.1007/bf00171565

uke, J. (2001). Fluoride Deposition in the Aged Human Pineal Gland. *Caries Research, 35*(2), 125-128. Retrieved 10 23, 2017, from https://ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pubmed/11275672

Iartin, D. C. (1981). *Wilderness of Mirrors.* New York: Ballentine.

Iexico 1968 Summer Olympics. (n.d.). Retrieved 10 23, 2017, from Olympics.org: http://www.olympic.org/mexico-1968-summer-olympics Ogungbure, A. A. (2011). *The Tuskegee Syphilis Study: Some Ethical Reflections*. Retrieved 11 3, 2017, from https://ajol.info/index.php/tp/article/download/74876/65465

allides, D. (n.d.). *Missing 411*. Retrieved from Youtube: https://youtu.be/CeT2FG88PIM

roject MKUltra. (n.d.). Retrieved 10 22, 2017, from Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Project_MKUltra Robert O. Becker, M. a. (1985). The Body Electric. In M. a. Robert O. Becker, *The Body Electric* (pp. 93-95). New York: William Morrow & Co. Inc.

obert O. Becker, M. a. (1985). *The Body Electric*. New York: Morrow.

hapiro, F., & Laliotis, D. (2015). *EMDR Therapy for Trauma-Related Disorders*. Retrieved 10 22, 2017, from https://link.springer.com/content/pdf/10.1007/978-3-319-07109-1_11.pdf Springmeir, F. (2017, October 20). *MK Ultra Monarch Program.*

teiger, B. (n.d.). *Project Blue Book.* Ballantine Books. Retrieved 11 3, 2017

tewart, R. W. (n.d.). *The Korean War: The Chinese Intervention.* United States Army Center of Military History. Retrieved 10 23, 2017, from http://www.history.army.mil/brochures/kw-chinter/chinter.htm *The Official Web Site of Zecharia Sitchin*. (n.d.). Retrieved 11 11, 2017, from sitchin.com: http://www.sitchin.com/

he Roswell Incident. (n.d.). Retrieved 10 23, 2017, from http://www.nmsr.org/roswell.htm U.S. Central Intelligence Agency. (2014, March 21). *Views on Trained Cats Use*. Retrieved from George Washington University: http://www2.gwu.edu/~nsarchiv/NSAEBB/NSAEBB54/st27.pdf Van der Zee, J. (1974). *The Greatest Men's Party on Earth: Inside the Bohemian Grove.* Harcourt Brace Javonovich. Retrieved 10 23, 2017

estermann, E. B. (2016). Dachau and the SS: A Schooling in Violence. *Holocaust and Genocide Studies*, *30*(2), 363-365. Retrieved 10 22, 2017, from https://muse.jhu.edu/article/630526

ikipedia. (2017, October 17). *Acoustic Kitty*. Retrieved from Wikipedia: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Acoustic_Kitty Wikipedia. (2017, October 15). *Dinoflagellate*. Retrieved from Wikipedia: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Dinoflagellate William, M., & Berlitz, C. (n.d.). *The Roswell Incident.* Grosset & Dunlap. Retrieved 11 3, 2017

orldofMicah (Director). (2014). *REMAINS of The Sunland Mental Hospital (World of Micah) Youtube* [Motion Picture].

rynn, A. M. (2006). 'A debt was paid off in tears': Science, IOC politics and the debate about high altitude in the 1968 Mexico City Olympics. *International Journal of The History of Sport*, *23*(7), 1152-1172. Retrieved 10 23, 2017, from http://tandfonline.com/doi/full/10.1080/09523360600832429?scroll=top&needaccess=true

Index

A

Acoustic Kitty, 52, 109, 242
acupuncture , 28, 31, 48, 93, 103, 108, 157
aliens, 12, 17, 28, 33, 34, 35, 44, 109, 110, 111, 141, 142, 146, 152, 153, 154, 155, 156, 176, 180, 181, 187, 196, 197, 202, 203, 204, 205, 212, 233, 236, 238
American Hybrid Vaccines , 128
amusement park in Orlando , 108
Antarctica, 179, 180, 181, 182, 206, 224, 236
Anunnaki, 13, 150, 152
Armstrong , 11, 29, 224
artificial intelligence, 16, 63, 104, 121, 146, 147, 148, 151, 152, 153
autism, 16, 27, 37, 42, 45, 55, 57, 64, 68, 80, 88, 89, 91, 92, 117, 119, 123, 125, 136, 137, 138, 155, 171, 206, 207, 222
autistic, 45, 69, 92, 93, 130, 147, 168, 169, 170, 229
aviation experiments, 15
Aviation Medicine , 10

B

Baal , 178
behavioral trainers , 27
behavioral training , 161
Beltane , 177, 178, 180, 186, 188, 189, 191, 192, 196, 197, 200, 204, 205, 206
bilocation, 15

bioluminescence , 156, 174, 240
bioluminescent , 25
Bios , 108, 136, 139, 141, 145, 150, 238
bird brain geodes , 24
black box , 18, 36, 38, 45, 52, 81, 82, 84, 103, 138, 140, 162, 167, 175, 191, 218, 221, 223, 224
black boxes , 49, 53, 83, 84, 85, 92, 98, 106, 107, 119, 120, 121, 123, 147, 171, 173, 174, 175, 206, 207
Black Knight , 116, 117, 219
blood boot , 168
blood brain barrier , 81, 90, 217
bone powder , 208
brain implants, 15, 52, 97, 107, 108, 117, 140, 158, 207, 212
brain sculpted , 157, 158, 159
brainwave, 13, 14, 63, 102, 103, 119, 120, 158, 226
branding , 63, 83, 125, 127, 128, 158, 167, 171, 173, 174, 226

C

cancer , 20, 53, 61, 81, 84, 88, 91
cat brain implants , 41, 51
child prostitution , 138, 139, 163, 197
CIA, 12, 16, 18, 19, 23, 24, 27, 30, 32, 37, 38, 39, 40, 42, 43, 45, 46, 49, 51, 52, 53, 60, 61, 62, 63, 74, 76, 77, 80, 82, 83, 84, 85, 88, 89, 90, 94, 95, 97, 98, 99, 104, 105, 106, 110, 112, 114, 117, 118, 122, 127, 128, 129, 130, 131, 132, 136, 137, 138, 139, 142, 146, 150, 159, 170, 172, 173, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 182, 186, 189, 190, 195, 196, 197, 200, 201, 202, 203, 204, 205, 208, 220, 221, 226, 229, 236
CIA George , 18, 19, 42, 98, 139, 196, 197, 200, 201, 202, 204, 236
clone , 41, 44, 105, 106, 152, 154, 178, 194
corpus callosum , 31, 32
Cray computer , 24, 145, 148, 150, 238
crystals , 120, 121, 130

D

Diocese, 129, 130, 131, 136
Doppler radar , 119
Dornberger , 224, 225
Dr. Emil Salmon , 23, 228
Dr. Josef Mengele, 12, 59

Dr. Peacock , 28, 30, 31, 32
Dr. Ruff , 10, 11, 16, 23, 74, 107, 117, 230
Dr. Siegfield Ruff , 10
Dr. Strughold , 11, 12, 29, 30, 32, 74
Dr. Traub , 215, 217

E

electromagnetic energy , 49
electromagnetic spectrum, 48, 49, 89
Enki, 14, 19, 175
entrainment , 33, 128, 217
Erich von Daniken , 19
Europa, 14

F

FBI , 41, 44, 66, 67, 140, 141, 205, 206
Ford , 17, 18, 83, 100, 126, 236
Fort Knox , 110
frequency fences , 106, 138, 148, 162, 171, 173, 174, 175
frequency generator box , 27

G

General Westmoreland , 29
German , 10, 12, 16, 18, 25, 31, 37, 42, 57, 59, 64, 94, 106, 122, 139, 188, 190, 205, 224, 227, 228, 231, 236
g-forces , 11
gold , 24, 56, 65, 108, 109, 110, 111, 141, 145, 150, 167, 186, 210, 231, 238, 239
GPS , 18, 19, 24, 28, 33, 98, 99, 100, 103, 106, 107, 108, 110, 111, 113, 117, 118, 119, 123, 147, 156, 160, 172, 173, 192, 201, 220, 226, 228, 229, 230, 231, 236, 238
GPS points , 98, 106, 107, 118, 119, 156, 172, 229
Greenland , 145, 152, 222, 224
grey meat puppets , 156, 175

H

halo , 76, 99, 100, 107, 111, 191, 194, 195, 201, 203, 204, 226, 227, 228
hibernation genetics , 40
Homo Autistic Hybrid , 141

Homo Autistic Hybrids , 127, 174
Huntsville, Alabama , 23, 28, 30
Hutchinson Island , 37, 100, 108, 113, 210, 228, 229
hybrid vaccines , 123
hybridization programs, 12, 60
hyper-dimensional , 143, 149
hypnosis , 37, 43, 47, 49, 64, 70, 74, 77, 79, 80, 81, 94, 95, 100, 108, 113, 117, 129, 130, 131, 141, 152, 157, 159, 196
hypnotic , 27, 38, 50, 81, 95

I

infrared eye , 25, 117, 138, 144, 202
infrared technology , 117
interdimensional, 13, 29, 30, 38, 210, 227
interdimensional physics, 13
Io, 14

J

J. McCone , 32
J.F. Schapitz , 49
Jesus, 13, 29, 32, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43, 44, 52, 53, 67, 85, 98, 103, 131, 147, 171, 178, 179, 180, 181, 186, 189, 191, 196, 207, 240
Jose M.R. Delgado , 36

K

Kennedy's assassination , 18, 126
KGB , 39, 117, 118, 122, 140, 141, 182, 186
Korean , 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 106, 157, 161, 241

L

leukemia , 20, 53, 90
ley line magnetics , 224
Lieutenant General Donald Putt , 11
lobotomy, 12, 26, 69, 196

M

Masonic , 18, 54, 97, 107, 113, 114, 172, 188, 206

Masonic Lodges , 18, 114, 172
microwatts , 21, 92, 140, 216
microwave beam , 49
Milton Zaret , 20
mind control, 15, 16, 26, 27, 36, 38, 45, 46, 47, 48, 49, 50, 52, 57, 62, 63, 64, 65, 77, 81, 82, 83, 84, 92, 93, 100, 101, 103, 106, 120, 126, 127, 138, 148, 157, 170, 171, 173, 178, 189, 206, 223, 226, 235, 238
mind control weapons , 26, 36, 46, 49, 53, 57, 100, 235
Moon base , 180, 181, 196
morphogenic shell , 29, 31, 177
Mossad, 12, 204, 205, 206
moth recombinant genetics , 125
moth-algae hybrid , 127
Mr. Cheney, 110, 111, 112, 236

N

Naval base , 10, 14, 228
Nazi, 10, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 20, 26, 28, 29, 32, 33, 34, 36, 37, 40, 41, 43, 44, 46, 47, 50, 51, 56, 59, 60, 65, 66, 68, 83, 93, 94, 95, 98, 106, 107, 117, 118, 122, 137, 163, 173, 174, 179, 180, 181, 182, 187, 192, 193, 196, 197, 201, 204, 205, 207, 208, 211, 212, 215, 219, 224, 225, 226, 227, 234, 236
Nuremburg Trials , 39, 44, 48, 106

O

Operation Paperclip , 10, 11, 15, 26, 30, 46, 64, 93, 106, 181, 188, 189, 193, 205, 215, 224, 240
Oswald , 41, 42, 186

P

Pedophile Protection Agency , 131
pedophiles , 84, 104, 113, 121, 131, 138, 168
pong sounds, 15
President Eisenhower , 11
primal brain , 125, 126, 129, 156, 159, 173
Project Marionette, 16, 157, 160
Project Monarch, 16, 26, 32, 47, 53
Project Pandora , 20, 21
purgatory , 30

R

radar, 14, 15, 17, 18, 20, 24, 92, 118, 119, 136, 172, 192, 222, 227, 232

radar dish, 14, 192

radio implant , 187

radio wave life force , 197

rape , 39, 68, 79, 103, 129, 130, 131, 203, 211

red mercury, 10, 13, 14, 16, 45, 55

resonance, 13, 24, 103, 120, 182, 212, 227, 233, 235

right hemisphere , 28, 31, 32, 68, 81

robotics, 12, 15, 23, 57, 83, 93, 94, 99, 104, 107, 108, 109, 155, 156, 159, 160, 163, 167, 216

robotics lab, 12, 108

Roswell , 17, 106, 109, 205, 241, 242

S

Satan , 69, 99, 113, 136, 156

satanic cults , 101, 113, 204

satellite, 14, 18, 23, 24, 25, 26, 28, 51, 52, 56, 57, 63, 74, 79, 82, 83, 84, 92, 94, 98, 99, 100, 101, 102, 103, 104, 107, 108, 109, 111, 112, 113, 116, 118, 123, 129, 131, 132, 135, 136, 139, 141, 145, 147, 148, 156, 159, 163, 167, 168, 169, 171, 192, 196, 201, 203, 216, 217, 219, 220, 221, 222, 226, 231, 232, 236

satellite hacker , 23, 118

Simian Ghost DNA , 125

Sin, 13, 14, 171

smart meter , 119, 221

sodium pentothal , 117, 151, 152, 153

sonar , 24, 111, 135, 143, 146, 187, 217, 238

Soviet , 20, 26, 39, 40, 41, 44, 51, 65, 66, 92, 98, 99, 100, 105, 108, 109, 113, 117, 145, 168, 182, 186, 187, 189, 231

space center , 10, 20, 25, 67, 77, 98, 99, 107, 108, 117, 132, 133, 136, 168, 172, 180, 181, 188, 227, 228, 230, 233, 234

space program , 10, 11, 12, 15, 16, 17, 18, 26, 32, 35, 40, 51, 52, 67, 79, 80, 83, 100, 101, 104, 106, 119, 136, 139, 143, 147, 163, 169, 172, 173, 179, 181, 186, 197, 206, 217, 219, 224, 225, 227, 228, 230, 233, 234, 236

space ships , 11, 13, 44, 79, 137, 226, 236

stele , 19, 151, 175

subliminal suggestions , 119

Sunland Mental Hospital, 10, 14, 27, 61, 147, 159, 191, 228, 242

Supreme possession , 208, 211

T

Tau , 148, 149, 150, 151, 152
tech gangsters , 113
telemetry , 20, 23, 32, 51, 52, 56, 78, 79, 101, 107, 109, 120, 135, 157, 158, 182, 187, 201, 207, 211, 225, 226, 227, 229
Tesla, 48, 80, 83, 85, 97, 109, 122, 148, 168, 174, 210, 234
the tall man with glasses , 110, 111, 112, 113, 116, 132, 146
Third Reich , 32, 59, 227, 236
Tomoka , 194, 205, 212
Tuskegee Syphilis Study , 30, 241

V

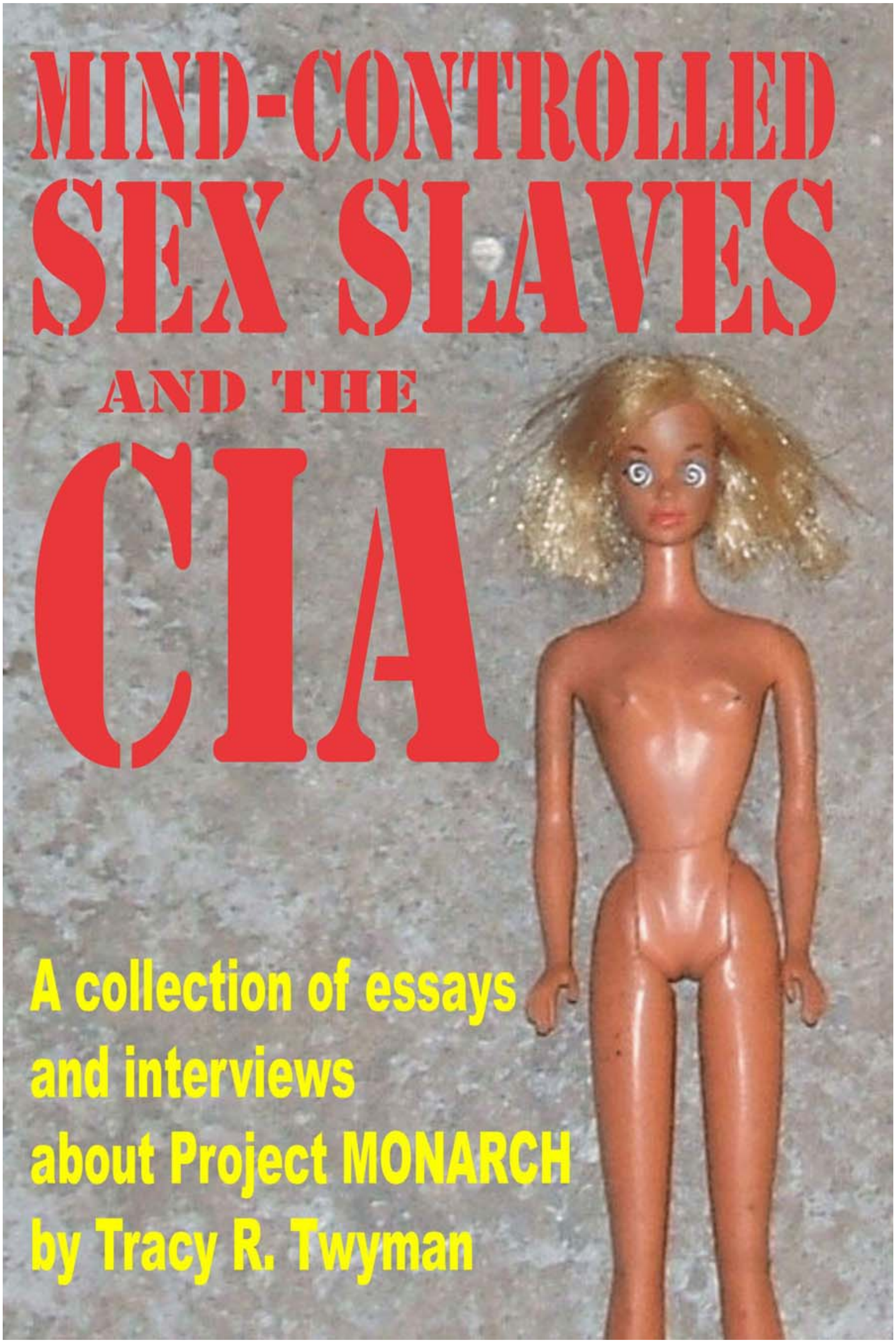
vaccination records , 150
Vero Beach , 136
voice to skull technology , 114
vortex , 143, 238

W

weather manipulation , 139
wireless energy transmitters , 33
Wright Field , 11

Z

Zechariah Sitchin , 19



MIND-CONTROLLED SEX SLAVES AND THE CIA

A collection of essays
and interviews
about Project MONARCH
by Tracy R. Twyman

Mind-Controlled Sex Slaves And the CIA

A collection of essays and interviews about Project MONARCH

By Tracy R. Twyman

Acknowledgements

Special thanks to all of those who made this book possible, including Brian Albert, John DeCamp, Pamela Freyd, Noreen Gosch, Ted Gunderson, Cathy O’Brien, and Mark Philips.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

The Stepford Whores: Project MONARCH and Mind-Controlled Sex Slaves __ 5
The Most Dangerous Game: An Interview with Cathy O'Brien ____________ 24
Access Granted: An Interview with Mark Phillips ______________________ 73
Where's Johnny? An Interview with Noreen Gosch ____________________ 90
The Franklin Cover-Up: An Interview with John DeCamp_______________ 123
The Finders: An Interview with Ted Gunderson _______________________ 130
False Memories: An Interview with Pamela Freyd ____________________ 156
Postscript: Satanic Ritual Abuse and Sex Slavery in the New Millennium __ 168

The Stepford Whores: Project MONARCH and Mind-Controlled Sex Slaves

In the months preceding September 11th 2001, the airwaves of cable news channels were filled with the saga of Congressman Gary Condit, and the cover-up of his affair with intern Chandra Levy. Levy disappeared on April 30, 2001--Walpurgisnacht--the most sacred witch holiday on the calendar. Condit's not-very-forthcoming statements on the matter, coupled with the fact that Chandra appeared to be on her way to visit him on the night she disappeared led to speculation that he was somehow involved with her kidnapping and/or death. This speculation reached a fevered pitch when bizarre details of Condit's sex life began to mount. Twenty-seven other women came forth claiming to have had sexual relations with the Congressman, including two women (15-years-old at the time), who claimed that he had violently raped them while still a State Assemblyman. Condit was described by one attorney involved in the case as "a serial predator of women." One of the women, Torrie Hendley, who met the leather-clad Condit at a Harley Davidson convention, revealed in an interview with *The Globe* tabloid newspaper that Condit enjoyed kinky, sadomasochistic sex, referring to his many ladies as his "sex slaves." She also said that he insisted on using code names with these women while talking on the phone, and refused to wear condoms, stating to Ms. Hendley that "there's a cure for AIDS, anyway."

Following the media blitz of the Clinton-Lewinski sex scandal, and then the Condit-Levy affair, many people began to wonder: Why do so many men in positions of power require lots of sex with a variety of people? And where do such men get this sense of entitlement, this attitude that they should be continually provided with a harem of sexual servants, maintained, oftentimes, at taxpayers' expense? Few, if any journalists brought up the amazing similarity between the story of Gary Condit's "sex slaves" and the stories of dozens of men and women who claim to have been forced into sexual slavery for the wealthy and powerful by none other than our own Central Intelligence Agency, through an offshoot of the MK-ULTRA mind control program known as Project MONARCH.

It is well-known now in most literate circles, from declassified documents available through the Freedom of Information Act, that the CIA engaged in a number of covert experiments in mind control, often on unwitting subjects, throughout the 50s, 60s, and 70s as part of a program known as MK-ULTRA. Thus, for example, we have the familiar stories of soldiers in Vietnam being subjected to involuntary testing of the effects of L.S.D. and other drugs on battlefield performance. MK-ULTRA had its roots in Project PAPERCLIP, a post-WWII operation authorized by Harry Truman, in which top scientists from Nazi Germany were smuggled into the United States to work with NASA, the military, and the intelligence community. Their newly acquired knowledge of mind control techniques had come from their experiments on prisoners in Nazi concentration camps, in which, according to experts, they learned of the effects of the calculated use of torture, drugs, hypnotism, electroshock, and sleep deprivation on an individual personality.

According to some, the result was found to be a fragmenting of the personality into separate components which are unaware of one another, creating what is known today as "Multiple Personality Disorder," or by the more recent, clinically-accepted term, "Dissociative Identity Disorder." The individual personality components could then be programmed to perform certain tasks, much like a computer. According to former FBI agent and mind control expert Ted Gunderson: “It’s a combination of torture, hypnosis, drugs. And what happens is, they torture them so much, that their personality splits in order to endure the pain and misery. When their personality splits, they [become] another person, and it’s through this technique that they train them.” Such techniques could, says Gunderson, create Manchurian candidates, unwitting agents of espionage who could courier sensitive messages and even commit assassinations against their will, without any recollection of these events.

For instance, consider the case of Candy Jones, a popular New York pin-up model who one day suddenly recovered repressed memories of having been used as a hypnotic courier for the government (i.e., mind control.) As most forms of hypnosis usually do, mind control training involves the use of “Neuro-Linguistic Programming,” teaching the brain to associate certain words or sounds with the performance of certain actions, both mental and physical. Under this definition, teaching your dog to “roll over” on command is Neuro-Linguistic Programming, although a more covert method would involve training him to roll over every time you said “ice cream,” and then to forget about the whole event as soon as you snap your fingers.

Although clearly unethical, such practices were justified by the CIA under the belief that the Soviets, America’s new arch-enemy, already possessed such covert weaponry of the mind. Former Nebraska State Senator John DeCamp, author of the book *The Franklin Cover-Up*,, recalls a conversation with Former CIA Director William Colby regarding the subject. “What he … [said] … was [that] after the Korean War, the American CIA and the American government, in fact, were very terrified. We believed that the ability of other countries, particularly China, Russia, North Korea … their ability in “brainwashing,” as it was known at the time, and mind control was developed to such a degree … you can imagine how dangerous that was, and we decided we couldn’t afford to be behind. For the very salvation of the country we had to catch up. And so millions and billions were poured into these programs … He said, ‘I’ll tell you one thing, John. When all is said and done, we were never behind, and we aren’t today.’”

Indeed, according to many self-proclaimed victims of mind control, we are well ahead of the game today, and most say the CIA’s motivation was never strictly “for the good of the country.” For instance, consider the rumored existence of “Project MONARCH,” the alleged offshoot of MK-ULTRA designed to create legions of so-called “mind-controlled sex slaves” for use by the rich and powerful. According to conspiracy theorist Fritz Springmeier, the project was called MONARCH after the butterfly of the same name. Training begins in early childhood, when, he says “Children who are traumatized have their legs tied and are electro-shocked and tortured until the alters (personalities) believe they are butterflies.” The whole program is based on the “Marionette Programming” purportedly perfected in Nazi Germany with the same aim as MONARCH, in which sex slaves were created who believed themselves to be puppets (“marionettes”) controlled by cruel masters.

The value of a mind-controlled sex slave is multi-faceted. For one thing, they can be used to satisfy the perversions of people in positions of power without jeopardizing that power, since a person under mind control is not likely to expose the event to public scrutiny. Furthermore, these encounters can be videotaped for the purpose of blackmailing public officials and businessmen should they at any time step out of line, or do anything to endanger the intelligence community’s global plan. (Some people who purport the existence of Project MONARCH might also believe that the CIA is under the control of the Illuminati “New World Order” conspiracy of global domination.)

Then there is the financial aspect. A sex slave can be prostituted from childhood on to wealthy individuals who will pay large sums of money for the experience. They can also be used in child pornography to be sold on the global market. Many MONARCH “survivors” claim that unwanted, expendable sex slaves are picked to star in the most controversial pictures of all--snuff films, the existence of which has yet to be proven according to the FBI. The slaves are also, say the stories, used as drug mules for the CIA’s secret trafficking of illegal substances.

The money derived from these black market transactions of drugs and sex is used, they say, to fund the CIA’s many top secret and under-budgeted black operations, as well as to line the pockets of the perpetrators. Potential slaves are chosen for their genetic propensity for suggestibility, hypnotizability, dissociation, and high intelligence. In the past ten years or more, a number of these so-called “survivors” have “recovered” their memories and come forward about their past abuse at the hands of the government. Many have written books, such as Brice Taylor’s *Thanks for the Memories: The Truth Has Set Me Free*, Annie McKenna’s *Paperclip Dolls*, and Cathy O’Brien’s *The TRANCE Formation of America.*. Of these, Cathy O’Brien is perhaps the most well-known.

It’s hard to think of a catchier opening line for a chapter than one that includes the words, “substituting his penis for my mother’s nipple.” Cathy couldn’t think of a better one either as she described how her “pedophile” father, Earl O’Brien, allegedly first began to train her sexually. Cathy claims to have come from a family of multi-generational incest perpetrators, where daddy abused all of the kids, and all of the kids abused each other. Growing up in Muskegon, Michigan, a "pedophile capital," according to Cathy, it wasn't long before Cathy's father was whoring her around for use in lucrative child pornography. In time, Mr. O'Brien was caught, but instead of going to jail, he was visited, says Cathy, by future President Gerald Ford, who offered him a deal: sell Cathy into the MONARCH program, and receive immunity from prosecution. The CIA allegedly had good reason to seek Cathy out because, she says, "…they knew that any child that was sexually abused to that extent would be suffering from this dissociative disorder that they were interested in targeting for mind control."

And so her formal MONARCH training began. "Not long after that ," she explains in her book, "my father was flown to Boston for a two-week course at Harvard on how to raise me for …Project MONARCH." From then on, Cathy was prostituted to a long list of high-ranking individuals, such as Michigan State Senator Guy VanderJagt, Canadian Prime Minister Pierre Trudeau, West Virginia Senator Robert Byrd (who later became her "owner" or "controller"), and the aforementioned Gerald Ford. She claims she was forced to engage in all sorts of strange perversions, from having sex with dogs to waving a small American flag with her rectum. This, coupled with her father's constant abuse and torture, kept her in a constant state of dissociation.

According to Cathy, she was controlled with form of Neuro-Linguistic Programming used on many MONARCH slaves, which involved the use of themes from *Wizard of Oz*, and various Disney children's films. She was taught to go into another dimension "over the rainbow" whenever the pain of the abuse became too much to bear, and to identify with Cinderella when her father assigned her a strict daily regimen of household chores, which was part of her slave programming. The hallucinogenic and multi-dimensional themes of *Alice in Wonderland*. were also quite extensively used. This was done, not just to Cathy, but to all her brothers and sisters as well, who were also being used in the program. As she writes in her book, “My brother, now 37, remains psychologically locked into those traumatic childhood years and is obsessed with Disney themes and productions to this day. His house is decorated in Disney memorabilia, he wears Disney clothes, listens to my father’s instructions on a Disney telephone, and maintains “When You Wish Upon a Star” as his favorite song, which has locked his children into the same theme.”

Interestingly, the Disney programming claim is one made by almost every “recovered” MONARCH slave, although it’s difficult to determine whether these claims began to surface before or after the publication of Cathy’s book. For example, a number of them say that they were taken to Tinker Air Force Base in Oklahoma, where they were placed in electrified “Tinkerbell” cages, and tortured into creating child alters that would, like Peter Pan., never grow up.

However, Cathy did grow up, and although supposedly subjected to daily sexual abuse and torture, she managed to maintain an “A” average throughout her scholastic career, “because when trauma occurs that’s too horrible to comprehend,” says Cathy, “the brain automatically goes into its own mode, and photographically records events surrounding the trauma … Since I was being traumatized all the time, I was photographically recording what I was being taught in school. So I got excellent grades.” Throughout her childhood, she was isolated from society and popular culture, with the exception of the Disney movies previously mentioned, and was heavily exposed to country music. According to Cathy, the country music scene is heavily infiltrated by MONARCH operatives, because the tours they travel in throughout North America easily facilitate the trade of slaves and drugs.

When Cathy got older, she was married off by “The Company” to Wayne Cox, who fathered her daughter, Kelly (also a mind-controlled sex slave.) Later, she was married a second time to country music MC Alex Houston. Concurrently, she was also symbolically married to Senator Robert Byrd, who became her “controller,” and largely dictated the events of her life from then on. She was sent to a sex slave training camp called “Charm School,” directed, she says, by Pennsylvania Governor Dick Thornburgh and Ohio State Representative James Traficant [now in prison for bribery and racketeering]. After she graduated, Cathy says, she became a so-called “Presidential Model,” and was used to satisfy the sadistic sexual needs of executive-level members of government. From that point forward, the “Who’s Who” list of johns she allegedly serviced became exponentially more impressive. She says she was nearly choked to death a number of times by Dick Cheney’s enormous penis, and was violently raped by both Cheney and George Bush Sr., after being chased through the woods in a form of human hunting called “The Most Dangerous Game.” She claims to have serviced both Bill and Hillary Clinton while the former was still Governor of Arkansas. She says she drove Hillary into a fit of ecstasy with the “Witch’s Face” that her handlers had carved into her vagina which, says Cathy, “can give men pleasure,” much like ribbed condoms do for women.

Cathy even claims that *Hustler*’s Larry Flynt was part of the conspiracy, and that he hired a photographer named Jimmy Walker to take pornographic pictures of her wedding night with Alex Houston, then had the photos published in one of his magazines. Writes Cathy, "Flynt was unequivocally the official White House Pornographer. [He] maintained … New World Order colleagues such as Presidents Reagan, Bush, and Ford, CIA Director Bill Casey, U.N. Ambassador Madeleine Albright, Senators Byrd and Spector, Congressmen Traficant and VanderJagt, Governors Thornburgh, Blanchard, and Alexander, and various world leaders such as Prime Minister of Canada Mulroney, President of Mexico de la Madrid, and Saudi Arabian King Fahd … to name a few." All of these people, by the way, are on Cathy's list of sexual assailants as well.

And another thing. Cathy O'Brien (like Brice Taylor, and a number of other proclaimed "Presidential Models") says that none of these high-ranking rapists ever used a condom, because both they and the Presidential Models had been inoculated against all sexually transmitted diseases. Says Cathy, "there was quite a bit of confidence surrounding the fact, and it was a known fact, that since I was used on a White House/Pentagon level … they would not get AIDS from me, because I was 'clean.' That was the term used."

And what was it that Gary Condit reportedly said to Torrie Hendley? "There's a cure for AIDS, anyway."

One of the consistencies that runs through almost all of the personal testimonies of the self-proclaimed MONARCH victims is the use of the occult and Satanism as a "trauma base." Cathy O'Brien vividly describes the "Rite to Remain Silent" she claims she endured at St. Francis of Assisi Church in Muskegon, a reversal of the Catholic mass in which she was allegedly doused in the blood of a freshly-slaughtered lamb and made to take an oath of secrecy. She also claims to have witnessed human sacrifices at

Bohemian Grove retreat, an exclusive retreat for global movers and shakers, who meet on a private island every year in secret. They dress up in bizarre costumes and indulge in their most extreme perversions with mind-controlled “Stepford Whores,” much like scenes from the Stanley Kubrick film *Eyes Wide Shut*.

Brice Taylor, who claims to have bedded down every President except since John Kennedy (except Carter and Nixon), also says that she experienced similar rituals throughout her abuse, including those involving human sacrifices, anti-Christian night services at Christian churches, being buried alive in a coffin, and being hung upon a cross. Annie McKenna has recovered numerous memories, she says, of her MONARCH-trained family donning dark hoods, chanting, and performing strange rites in graveyards. Even her own children, the first of which she had at age 11, were sacrificed to the blood cult. Writes McKenna, “The ritual abuse served two purposes. First, it exposed a child to horrific trauma, which caused the child to dissociate and create alters. Secondly, the belief was that if we ever did remember, the ritual abuse memories would surface first, and the medical community and public would label us insane.”

The claims of mind control and MONARCH programming are just the latest details to be grafted onto the tales of Satanic Ritual Abuse (or SRA) that began to surface in the early 1980s. Although now largely discredited by the mental health establishment, SRA has long been a pervasive urban myth, if nothing more. Many groups, several of them affiliated with Protestant churches, believe in a large conspiracy of Satanists that spans the globe, and which controls the drug and child pornography industry (i.e., the Mafia), as well as, to the view of many, the government (i.e., the “Illuminati”). They believe that these people engage in the large-scale abduction and abuse of thousands of children for use in their sick, sadistic, Satanic sex rituals, and the pornographic documentation thereof. When not from "multi-generational Satanic families," like Taylor's and O'Brien's, where their parents willingly submit them to the MONARCH program, children are supposedly snatched off the streets--the familiar milk carton kids. According to the lore, the conspirators even infiltrate pre-schools and day care centers to access children there.

Ted Gunderson has personally investigated the famous McMartin Pre-School SRA case, even going so far as to hire an archeologist to dig for underground tunnels reported by the children. The children reported that in these tunnels they were subjected to sexual abuse, animal sacrifices, and Disney-based mind control programming by, among others, Steve Garvey, Chuck Norris, and Raymond Buckey, the school's owner. Gunderson claims, "we found the tunnels under the school. … We found 2000 animal bones …" Gunderson believes wholeheartedly that, "The Satanic cult movement dovetails with U.S. intelligence … in addition to being involved in … kidnapping, they were taking kids out of Boy's Town, and out of foster homes and orphanages, and flying them … to Washington, D.C. for sex orgy parties with congressmen and senators. Barney Frank … [has] been identified by the kids, and George Bush Sr. has been at the parties while he was Vice-President. …[We're] talking about a large-scale pedophile ring, and a large-scale kidnapping ring … known as "The Finders." It's a CIA covert operation running out of Washington, D.C. … that's just a cover name for finding children…"

"The Finders" and Project MONARCH were implicated in Nebraska's "Franklin Cover-Up," also investigated by Gunderson, and by the author of *The Franklin Cover-Up*, former State Senator John DeCamp. In a civil case against 16 people, including

Laurence E. King (manager of the failed Franklin Savings and Loan), Harold Anderson (publisher of the *Omaha World Herald*), and the Omaha Police Department, plaintiff Paul Bonacci was awarded $1 million by U.S. District Court Judge Warren Urbom in February 1999. In reference to King, the Judge found that he had "continually subjected the plaintiff to repeated sexual assault, false imprisonment, infliction of extreme emotional distress, organized and directed Satanic rituals, forced the plaintiff to 'scavenge' for children to be part of the defendant King's sexual abuse and pornography ring, forced the plaintiff to engage in numerous sexual contacts with the defendant King and others, and participate in deviant sexual games and masochistic orgies with minor children."

Bonacci testified that he was flown on hundreds of trips to Washington, D.C., Kansas City, Chicago, Minnesota, and Los Angeles, where he was taken to "thousands" of pedophilic and sadomasochistic parties, drugged, and prostituted to the rich and powerful. Bonacci admits to participating in the kidnapping of then-12-year-old paper boy Johnny Gosch in Des Moines, Iowa, a story profiled extensively on *America's Most Wanted* and a number of other television programs. Johnny's mother, Noreen Gosch is convinced that Bonacci is telling the truth, and is also convinced that her son was kidnapped by joint intelligence-organized crime elements involved in Project MONARCH. Says Noreen, "[Bonacci] told us that he was put into MONARCH training at a very young age, right at Offutt Air Force Base … Johnny … was put through the same training …" In 1999, Johnny Gosch, a grown man at that point, came to visit his mother for a brief, covert visit in the middle of the night. "He told me that he had been subjected to mind control … and that his job was to compromise politicians, and any VIP that they felt they wanted to do that to … He only mentioned the Satanic rituals briefly."

One of the accused perpetrators who has been implicated by Noreen Gosch, Paul Bonacci, Cathy O'Brien, and a host of other "MONARCH victims" is Lt. Col. Michael Aquino, a former Green Beret and senior U.S. military intelligence officer once involved in the study of "PSY-OPS," or psychological warfare. He wrote an extensive essay with Colonel Paul E. Vallely (a Fox News Channel analyst) called "From PSY-OP to MindWar: The Psychology of Victory." In this essay, the authors advocated the use of propaganda, subliminal messages, air ionization, and ELF waves (i.e., putting low frequency signals in TV and radio broadcasts to induce specific states of mind) in times of war, both domestically and abroad, in order to manipulate public opinion of the war. Another interesting fact about Micheal Aquino: He just happens to be the leader and founder of the Temple of Set, a splinter group of the Church of Satan, in which Aquino was once a high-ranking member. The Temple of Set now has a number of chapters that operate on military bases. Interestingly, this group's rituals often involve Nazi symbols and rhetoric, and Aquino once performed a Satanic "working" at Heinrich Himmler's castle of Wewelsburg while in Germany on "official NATO business."

Predictably, this has caused no shortage of controversy to surround Michael Aquino. In the late 1980s, a Satanic Ritual Abuse/Child Sexual Abuse scandal broke out at a day care center on the Presidio military base in San Francisco, where Aquino was stationed. The children identified Aquino, as well as a Baptist Minister named Gary Hambright, who was indicted but not convicted. These kids claimed that the people who molested them were part of a "devil worship club," and were able to describe the inside of Aquino's house, where the abuse was said to have taken place. Other children identified Aquino by his nickname, "Mikey," although Anton LaVey. claims that

Aquino's nickname was actually "Mickey" because his peculiar haircut made him look like Mickey Mouse (yet another Disney connection.) Although Aquino was never indicted, and the charges against Hambright were dropped, several of the children contracted STDs, proving that someone had abused them. Later, after Hambright died of AIDS, the U.S. Army wrote to the children's parents urging them to get their children tested for HIV. They also paid a multi-million-dollar settlement to the victims. Furthermore, Aquino was "Titled" by the U.S. Army for "indecent acts with a child, sodomy, conspiracy, kidnapping, and false swearing," which means that they had probable cause to believe the offenses had been committed.

According to many, the incident at Presidio was an outgrowth of Project MONARCH, and these people believe Aquino to be integrally involved in the program. Paul Bonacci has identified Aquino as the one who ordered the kidnapping of Johnny Gosch, and says that Aquino had a "ranch" in Colorado that was a "safe house" for kidnapped children. Rusty Nelson, a photographer for the Franklin Cover-Up's. Lawrence King, and a convicted child pornographer, testified before a U.S. District Court on February 5, 1999 that he witnessed a suitcase full of cash being handed over to by King to Aquino that was "earmarked for the Nicaraguan Contras." Also, a number of mind-controlled sex slaves, including Cathy O'Brien., have listed Aquino as one of their "handlers." However, when I questioned Aquino about these allegations, he responded: "Throughout my entire career as an Army officer (1968-94), I never encountered any evidence of anything named or resembling 'Project MONARCH', never participated in anything involving children [or adult] 'sex slaves', never abused any children under any circumstances whatever, and never had any contact with any of the cranks who've thrown my name around with 'MONARCH.'"

The charges against Aquino perhaps lose credibility when we consider that many of the people who have made these claims have also implicated a so-called "Michael LaVey," who they say is a son of Anton LaVey.. Noreen Gosch says that Michael LaVey was interviewed on a 20/20 special about her son's kidnapping, during which, according to her, "[Michael] LaVey said that he had been with Johnny on many occasions at the Satanic ritual ceremonies, where they serviced different men for their owners." Unfortunately for Noreen, no independent confirmation has surfaced that Anton had any son by that name. The late Anton LaVey. himself has been implicated as a Project MONARCH participant by a handful of people, such as Noreen Gosch, but not in any specific way. However, it is interesting to note that Anton LaVey. did consider Disneyland to be one of the happiest places on Earth, and his daughter Zeena LaVey. listed the 1950s thriller *The Most Dangerous Game*. as her favorite movie.

The process of deprogramming a presumed victim of Project MONARCH--identifiable by abnormally wide eyes (from the electroshock), odd-looking facial moles (caused by stun guns), a plastic smile, and generally robotic behavior--is a strange and controversial one. Since slaves are programmed to self-destruct if they should ever find themselves talking about their memories, therapists wishing to override these programs must be armed with the corresponding "deactivation codes." Mark Phillips, who "rescued" Cathy O'Brien from mind control, and co-authored *The TRANCE Formation of America*., describes the process of deprogramming her: "I had to know certain codes, keys and triggers. I *had* to, and I was provided a few of those," by he says, covert communications from friends in the intelligence community. Thereafter, Cathy began to recover memories through extensive journal-writing practices. Brice Taylor used a collage method with pictures cut out of magazines.

Others use the more dubious methods of hypnosis, and similar New Age techniques to unlock memories supposedly repressed with programmed amnesia. Ritual trauma hypno-therapists such as D.C. Hammond, PhD., and Pamela J. Monday, PhD report discovering complex, multi-layered systems of programming that even take geometric shapes, such as pentagrams, hexagrams, or the cabalistic Tree of Life, complete with internal “landscapes” that have “mountains,” “castles,” and the like. They have found that some programs are guarded by “gatekeepers” with gothic, diabolical-sounding names, and different letters of programming are coded with letters from the Greek alphabet. For instance, Alpha is general programming, Beta involves sexual programming, Delta programming holds instructions for how to kill during ceremonies, Theta includes “psychic killing,” and Omega involves suicidal, “self-destruct” programming, as well as self-mutilation. Zeta programming is related to the production of snuff films, and Omicron has to do with drug smuggling.

However, many mental health professionals cast doubt on the techniques used by hypno-therapists, charging that such practices create rather than recover memories, and so do the people who are accused of such heinous crimes on the evidence of the allged victim’s “recovered memories.” The accused are backed by an organization called The False Memory Syndrome Foundation, whose spokesperson, Pamela Freyd, questions the motives of those who are, “using hypnosis, guided imagery, sodium amytal, relaxation exercise, participation in groups, reading suggestive literature and other techniques in an effort to excavate memories," Freyd explains. "Although people may remember things with any of these techniques, there is absolutely no evidence that what they remember is historically accurate." She also questions the validity of multiple personalities in general, stating that, "Many in the psychiatric community believe that MPD is iatrogenic, that is, caused by the use of hypnosis and the type of interviewing techniques of the doctor."

Confirming the validity of another person's memory is nearly impossible, especially if every other person involved in the memory denies that it took place. However, it may perhaps be unfair to label as "impossible" or "ridiculous" the memories of other people which merely lie beyond the spectrum of our own experience. Many of us received religious indoctrination from our family as we grew up, and were forced to participate in weird ceremonies that made us uncomfortable. Isn't it logical that if our parents were Satanists or occultists, they might subject us to similar indoctrination? And since Satanic and occult practices purportedly bestow worldly power upon their practitioners, isn't it logical that some of our most powerful leaders might participate in such practices? Isn't it logical that they would make use of occult-based mind control techniques such as hypnotism, rituals, mind-altering drugs, and Neuro-Linguistic Programming (i.e., rote memorization of "magic words")--techniques that have been traditional components of religious ceremonies, from the mystical priesthoods of Babylon, Greece, Rome and Egypt to the "cults" of today?

The CIA's interest in mind control is well-documented, and there was certainly a time, in which they had no compunction about subjecting unwitting subjects to experiments that might harm them, or which might go against their intended will. The idea that the CIA would traffic in guns, drugs and other contraband in order to fund their secret projects is becoming more generally accepted, especially after *The San Francisco Chronicle*'s Gary Webb. investigated the funding of Contra aid in 1996.

Furthermore, we know that men in positions of power often require a greater-than-average number of sexual partners, often choosing extremely young women (or men), sometimes prostitutes, to satisfy their often kinky desires. Perhaps this is just a result of the greater-than-average testosterone levels often found in aggressive power-seekers. That the CIA would supply these prostitutes in exchange for their much-needed Black Ops funding, and that they would keep these prostitutes mind-controlled into silence using the above-mentioned techniques, so as to cover their own tracks, may not be impossible to believe.

Perhaps what people do find unbelievable is the sheer sensationalism of so many of the "Project MONARCH" stories. The mental picture of George Bush, Sr. sodomizing a seven-year-old boy, or of Bill Clinton participating in cannibalistic baby sacrifice, is not one that most people can take seriously. Even more difficult to overcome, perhaps, is a natural disbelief that arises when a person claiming to have been under complete mental robotism, and subjected to unimaginable torture throughout his or her entire life appears to "recover" so quickly after the "memories" are revealed during therapy. Some of them even go on to write books, conduct seminars, and make radio appearances, becoming a professional victim-expert. Perhaps we will never know who is and who isn't telling the truth about MONARCH mind control--unless the documents that supposedly exist are one day declassified. However, the tales of Project MONARCH provide an interesting framework in which to interpret current events, especially the never-ending sex scandals that perpetually crop up amongst our public figures.

Bibliography

De Camp, John, *The Franklin Cover-Up*, AWT, 1992, USA.

O'Brien, Cathy, and Phillips, Mark, *The TRANCE Formation of America*, Reality Marketing, 1995, USA

McKenna, Annie, *Paperclip Dolls: MK-ULTRA, Mind Control, and Project PAPERCLIP, 1999, USA.*

Springmeier, Fritz, *Bloodlines of the Illuminati*, Ambassador House, 1998, USA.

Taylor, Brice, *Thanks for the Memories... The Truth Has Set Me Free: The Memoirs of Bob Hope's and Henry Kissinger's Mind-Controlled Slave*, Brice Taylor Trust. 1999.

The preceding is the lengthier version of an article originally written in late 2001. A shorter, edited version of it was published in the December 2002 issue of *Hustler Magazine*. The following interviews were conducted as part of the research for this article.

The Most Dangerous Game: An Interview with Cathy O'Brien

Cathy O'Brien is the author, with her husband Mark Phillips, of *The TRANCE Formation of America*, and *ACCESS DENIED For Reasons of National Security*.. She says that she and her daughter Kelly were used for years as mind-controlled sex slaves for the CIA. Her husband is Mark Phillips, who, they claim, rescued her and her daughter from this life of abuse and deprogrammed Cathy's mind control conditioning. For years they have been on a crusade to educate the public about secret government mind control programs. This interview took place in October of 2001.

TRACY: At what age did you begin to be sexually abused?

CATHY: I was sexually abused as far back as I can remember, and I recall my father saying that he had abused me since infancy, substituting his penis for my mother's nipple.

TRACY: Who did he say this to?

CATHY: He said this to quite a few people who were involved in incest, which was real prominent in the area of Muskegon, Michigan, where I grew up. It was a common point of conversation, and was what I thought was the normal way people lived.

TRACY: So everyone in the town was doing it, and talking about it?

CATHY: Well, I don’t know about everyone, but everyone in my environment seemed to be involved in it, and since then Muskegon has been named as a pedophile capitol. Even the *Muskegon Chronicle* said that [Muskegon was] the primary place in the United States for pedophiles, so there was an extensive exposé on that. But the area where I grew up in was definitely predominantly full of incest and sexual abuse.

TRACY: So do you think that this had been going on for generations in that area? Is it just, like, a culture that developed over there?

CATHY: I’m not really sure exactly how it happened, but I do know that Project PAPERCLIP had brought over Nazi scientists that had learned that multi-generational incest-based families would have children that were sexually abused, which would result in a dissociative disorder that was a prime basis for mind control. So they were really interested in that aspect of things. And in Muskegon, the local politicians were actually sanctioning that type of activity, where there wasn’t any prosecution of the pedophiles in the court system, like my father. He actually received immunity from prosecution for using me in child pornography. The deal was that he would raise me according to the government specifications, which were based on the Hitler/Himmler research into the multi-generational incest children. So it was widely spread, widely known, and actually a deliberate effort that was going on in the Muskegon area at that time.

TRACY: So when did the mind control programming start for you? At what age?

CATHY: The mind control aspect began when I was about 6 years old, which was in the early 1960s, when the local politicians were sanctioning the local Michigan mafia child pornography rings, because they knew that any child that was sexually abused to that extent would be suffering from this dissociative disorder that they were interested in targeting for mind control. So they were trying to locate children like myself. And they found some child pornography that had been made, and my father was approached at that time by a criminal faction of our government that was interested in the proliferation of mind control, and told that he would receive immunity from prosecution if he would sell me into the project. So he did, and I was six years old at the time. So mind control conditioning began from a very, very early age.

TRACY: And who is this "criminal faction of the government." Is there a name for them?

CATHY: I don't know of a name, per se, for them, but the more people learn about mind control, and the more they research what mind control entails, how it's being used in various aspects of our society, like the military, and Special Forces, and levels of espionage in the capacity that I was used on the CIA's MK-ULTRA mind control during the Reagan/Bush administration--the more people know, the more they're going to be able to recognize who these perpetrators are, and what kind of controls they actually inflict, not only on individuals like myself, but also in a mass mind control aspect that was also taken from the Nazi Germany Hitler/Himmler research.

TRACY: A lot of people in the conspiracy theory field have a name for this group of people. They call them the Illuminati. People imagine them as being a secret society, or a cabal of organized people, and I was just wondering if you'd ever heard a term like that.

CATHY: I've heard various terms, but people participated in different secret organizations, and I think that's the key to where the problem lies, is in the secrecy. People have a right to this information, they need to know this information, and it's imperative that the facts regarding mind control be brought to light, and taken out of these secret societies. Things aren't so easily black and white. I can't just point a finger at one particular faction, or one particular group, because there's good and bad in everything, including the CIA. Not all CIA's bad. Not all government's bad, you know. It's just not that simple.

TRACY: When did you first hear the term "Project MONARCH," and associate that with what was happening to you?

CATHY: When I was about 9 years old was when I first heard that term, and at that time I was being routinely taken to the Governor's Mansion in Mackinaw Island, Michigan.

TRACY: Who was the governor at that time?

CATHY: The Governor was George Romney. That's when I was really being conditioned, and thrust into a more government level of mind control. He's not a main perpetrator. He was one that was actively involved in mind control in the educational system and everything. Names of course are in our book *The TRANCE Formation of America*., but my focus is more on just the mind control information rather than who the perpetrators are, because if people find out what the components of mind control are, they're going to be able to identify these people, and that's going to put us a lot further ahead, rather than information of who was involved back in the early 60s. But, nevertheless, that was the first time I heard the term "Project MONARCH," and I heard it at various times. Of course, I had no capacity to really understand that, aside from the fact that I knew that it was widespread.

TRACY: What were the methods used when you were a child to program your mind?

CATHY: I had a dissociative disorder, which is professionally defined as "the mind's sane defense against trauma too horrible to comprehend," and of course sexual abuse is too horrible to comprehend for a child. There's no place for that in the brain. The brain actually compartmentalizes the memory of that event so that the mind can function normally. So I had these dissociative barriers set up in my brain, which was already prime for conditioning, for programming, and for them to be able to put into my highly suggestible mind, a conditioning and information that they wanted in there for a base of future programming. So from the very outset, my whole environment was controlled. For example, my TV was controlled, what I read was controlled, and absolutely my music was controlled, because of the harmonic effects on the brain. The news that I received was all controlled. So having my environment controlled to that extent about what went in my brain, my knowledge base was actually formed according to what they wanted. We all form opinions, fact, and ultimately our actions based on what we know. And what we need to know is that there has been alternate knowledge that doesn't fit in a box, and we have got to learn to think further, and think beyond just what we have been told, and begin to look further and ask questions. Asking questions was something that I wasn't capable of under mind control. I could only accept information, only take it in. I had no ability to creatively use it, to think to use that information, but nevertheless it was pumped into my head at a rate that created what is termed "artificial intelligence" by some. It's a form of artificial intelligence that's actually pumped into the mind, because the brain accepts the information on a photographic level when trauma like incest occurs. These are the kind of facts that the Hitler/Himmler research had discovered, and was actually being built from and expanded on during my earliest years, in the course of bringing MK-ULTRA mind control so heavily into our society.

TRACY: I've heard this described many times by "survivors" of this, who say that there were levels of programming with Greek letter codes, like Alpha and Beta and Delta. Did that happen to you?

CATHY: That is something that I am ever so vaguely familiar with, but that would be a good question to talk to Mark about, because that is definitely not my area. That's more outside information rather than what I would know from the inside.

TRACY: You said that they controlled the music you heard. What did they want you to listen to?

CATHY: There was a lot of music going on back in those days that I have missed and have only found since I have been recovered and deprogrammed and have been able to choose music for myself. But the 60s freedom music I didn't get to listen to, and any kind of protest, or anything like that. Instead I had to listen to country music. That ultimately was the industry that I traveled in during the Reagan/Bush administration, under the control primarily of Senator Byrd, who was my owner in MK-ULTRA.

TRACY: When did Senator Byrd become your controller? And what was he like back then? Because now he's sort of a doddering old man. He's always shaking. Was he like that when you knew him.

CATHY: No. I've been familiar with him all my life, or all of my mind-controlled existence rather. Because there's not any "life" under mind control per se, because there's no capacity for free thought, no capacity for free will, or ultimately any soul expression. So I could only robotically do the things that I was told to do, and during those years I was exposed to numerous high-profile political perpetrators that were involved in MK-ULTRA. They are, of course, named in our book, *The TRANCE Formation of America*..

TRACY: What was the progression of controllers that you had. Was there more than one at a time?

CATHY: I had what is termed “handlers,” and handlers would make sure that I was in various places at certain times, either on military or NASA installations for mind control programming, or in and out of Washington, D.C. I traveled under the guise of the country music industry, because it provided a means of travel in and out of the Caribbean, Mexico, and Canada, which were primarily the areas I was used in, as well as all across the United States. So my handler would make sure that I was in designated areas at specific times, either for programming, or to carry out the covert operations that I was used in during the Reagan/Bush administration.

TRACY: OK, so Senator Byrd was not the only one. Is there a difference between a handler and an owner, or a controller?

CATHY: I had two different handlers in the course of being under absolute robotic mind control, and my father, I’m sure, would be considered a handler as well, because once he agreed to raise me according to government specifications, he followed their instructions and followed what they told him to do with me, and where to take me, how to condition me, how to control my environment, and things like that. So in essence, he was my first handler. When MK-ULTRA came into my life, the regimentation, the systematic kind of conditioning and abuse and programming that I received from that point on was far more structured than the natural high suggestibility resultant from the incest and the pornography that I was used in as a very young child. My father was approached and told. He didn’t think to do this on his own, in other words. He was being told. So he became a handler. Handlers follow instructions. Owners are the ones who decide which projects or which operations to use someone in, and in my case, that was Senator Byrd, and that was how I ended up on a higher government level. I first met him at Mackinaw Island, at the Governor's mansion when I was 13 years old, and that's when he became my owner, which lasted throughout my victimization right up until Mark rescued me and my daughter in 1988.

TRACY: As far as the operations that you were used in for Project MONARCH--it started out with prostitution and pornography, right?

CATHY: Right.

TRACY: And then did it move into other areas? Were you used as a drug mule?

CATHY: Well, I think the next step that was so significant to me was the use of occultism. At that time the local Catholic church--and again, I'm not saying that all Catholics are involved and that they're all bad, but there is a criminal faction within the Catholic Church, within the Order of the Jesuits, which is the intelligence arm of the Vatican, a part of which my family ultimately had ties into and was a further causation for me to be victimized within the church system. But nevertheless, the Catholic Church was heavily involved in the sexual abuse of children, which was widespread and has definitely come to light. They've had to pay out on numerous child abuse cases as a result. But the reversal of the Catholic Mass is, of course, Satanism, and being exposed to

Satanism is definitely trauma too horrible to comprehend. Any kind of blood trauma like that is really horrible, and that was used to further dissociate my mind, further compartmentalize it for future programming. And that theme was used right through my second handler. Well, really, right on through my whole victimization there was always some aspect of occultism that came in as well. And alien themes were also a very common trauma base. Anything that's beyond our ability to affect or control, or something in our minds that we perceive as too big to be able to affect like that is what they would use to ultimately gain control. Superstition begins where knowledge leaves off, and superstition makes a person more suggestible and easily controlled, so they definitely used superstitious kind of themes to further program. Those were significant trauma bases.

TRACY: Yeah, I understand from your book that there were Satanic rituals that took place at this Catholic church. Were there Satanic rituals that took place elsewhere throughout your life?

CATHY: Definitely, and so often they're done more as a trauma base for mind control. It's even used in the military which, for example, has the occult Temple of Set, which is supposedly more intellectually based, which is used to traumatize people. That leaves them widely suggestible for mind control programming. It's a very deliberate method, and it has proliferated heavily on our military bases. And it was certainly a part of my victimization right up until Mark rescued my daughter and me. And I say "rescued" because I had lost my ability to even think to survive. There was nothing I could do to pull us out of our situation. I couldn't think about what was happening. I was so robotic by that time. It took someone with eyes to see and ears to hear, and a heart to care to be able to take us out of the situation that we were in.

.

TRACY: You seem to be saying that these people were not religiously Satanists. They were just using it to control people.

CATHY: Oftentimes that was the case.

TRACY: But do you think there is a spiritual aspect to this, where they actually believe in the power of Satan, or of these other gods?

CATHY: I think there are some that believe that, but the primary mind control programmers who use that for a theme certainly know better and know that the so-called "Satanic power" was in the form of a stun gun and sophisticated mind control programming [methodologies] that included harmonics, and a deliberate, systematic use of sleep, food, and water deprivation. That was what they really knew to be the ultimate power, and didn't have anything to do with anything spiritual.

TRACY: There was, in your programming, a lot of imagery from Disney and other popular children's movies which was used. And also there was something you were forced to participate in called "The Most Dangerous Game." Have you seen that movie, *The Most Dangerous Game.*?

CATHY: No.

TRACY: It’s this movie from the 50s about human hunting.

CATHY: I wonder if that was based on the military maneuver, or if the military maneuver sprang from it. I’m not familiar with that movie, but I am familiar with the military maneuver of playing “The Most Dangerous Game,” where a person is in the woods and attempting to survive while they’re being hunted. That was the kind of trauma that I was exposed to for programming purposes.

TRACY: I thought that it was significant when I found this out the other day: one of Anton LaVey’s favorite places in the world was Disneyland, and his daughter, Zeena LaVey’s favorite movie was *The Most Dangerous Game*..

CATHY: I think one of the strongest weapons is a scramble of fantasy and reality, kind of along the same lines as military programming tactics. They use a video game for military training, and they can’t tell reality from the video, so when they’re actually in a combat situation, it’s more like they’re just playing out a video game. They lose their ability to consciously comprehend what they’re doing, and to be able to critically analyze it, which is really essential. And so they end up just being able to point and shoot, point and shoot, without giving it any real thought to the magnitude of what’s actually happening. They’ll play it out more like a video game. And oftentimes with mind control programming, they would attempt to scramble it with a movie, hence the conditioning of the Disney movies and all, which were quite extensively used. But the primary one which was used was *The Wizard of Oz*., because of the kind of dimensional aspects that come into play of “over the rainbow.” We see a lot of indications that this is still going on today.

TRACY: Do you think that the movies were written and edited specifically for the use of mind control, or was the mind control adapted to the movies?

CATHY: That’s a good question, and I wouldn’t really know.

TRACY: When your father started participating in Project MONARCH, didn’t you say that Gerald Ford came over to the house to give him instructions?

CATHY: Well, he was a local politician, and as his career escalated, so too did my victimization. But then, again, I don’t know how you want to go about naming names and the best way to put it in this particular article, so I’ll leave it up to you and your discretion. But ultimately for names, I think I’d refer them to the book, because *The TRANCE Formation of America*. was written for the U.S. Congressional Select Committee on Intelligence Oversight, and the facts that are in the book are all well-documented, where they would be able to have a point of reference for understanding exactly the material that was written there, probably more so than the average person on the street. So the documentation, the absolute facts, and names are definitely in the book.

TRACY: So you don't want to talk about the specific people that were involved, is that what you're saying?

CATHY: I think that I would much rather be able to put out information on mind control, and the people involved in it, and the reality of it, and how widespread it is, so that people would be able to arm themselves with the knowledge and actually evolve with this knowledge, because knowledge is our only defense against mind control. And right now, at this point in time, it's essential that people have this information, because it's a key component of what's terrorizing America and the world today. Terrorism breeds mind control. Mind control breeds terror, and people have got to have the information on mind control now more than ever. It will be able to stop the sexual abuse of children, the injustice in the courts that is perpetrated on the children, and there is so much that we're going to be able to do when we have the information. I'm afraid it would even sidetrack people to say, "This person, that person is involved, or was involved then," when they can be seeing today who's involved based on a strong knowledge of mind control.

Going back to one other aspect, which personally I think is so very, very important, is the use of Satanism and everything like that, because they can't control a soul per se. When a mind is absolutely controlled, there's no free thought, and if there's no free thought, there's no free will. And without free will, there's no ability to have any soul expression. If a person doesn't have soul expression, they can't stand up for what they believe in, they can't stand up for a cause, they can't stand up for moral values, or anything like that, which I consider to be more related to soul. So it's not that they can control the soul, but by controlling the mind, they stop the person from being able to express it. I think that shows the magnitude of mind control, and how very important it is that people know that our knowledge base is being altered, that this information is being suppressed, and people are being led and misled by a deliberate use of a form of mass mind control, which is also called “social engineering.”

TRACY: How would you identify someone who was actually being purposely controlled to the point where they’re almost a robot. Is there some kind of telltale sign? Can you tell if someone’s a mind-controlled slave just by looking at them, or seeing the way they act?

CATHY: I can tell it just from having been there and experienced it, and seeing how widespread it is and where it’s used and everything. I’ve learned to recognize certain characteristics or traits of mind control. For example, people under mind control rarely blink. Their eyes stay wide open. And the micro-muscles in their face don’t move properly, so they don’t have proper facial expression. They may always smile. I smiled, I think, the whole time that I was under mind control. I had a little plastic smile plastered on my face. My face looked waxy otherwise, and there was no smile in my eyes, there was no twinkle, no depth to that little smile. There are certain mannerisms that can be recognized. There’s a more rigid stance, or something that might be equated more to a militaristic stance.

TRACY: It seems like if you were to go to a modeling school, this is what they’re trying to teach those women to do.

CATHY: That’s what Charm School did, and everybody that I was associated with back then was being programmed alongside of me. It was like they were cranking us out so that we’d pretty much look the same. You know, people that are conditioned the same way do seem to have a certain look, or certain mannerisms about them. Politicians have a way of looking a certain way. I’m not saying that they’re programmed. It’s just their knowledge base and the way they’re conditioned. Attorneys might have a way that they talk, and a way that they’re conditioned. You know, people have different projections, and folks that have been conditioned for mind control definitely have an identifiable projection that people need to know now more than ever. We’re being told that it’s up to us to stay alert, and on guard, and watch out for potential terrorists, anyone who’s acting or looking suspicious. Well, that’s not enough information. They need to release the information on mind control so that people will know exactly what to look for, exactly what characteristics and traits to be watching for. The more people know, the better off we’re all going to be in this effort to stop terrorism. I’ve got some insight into what mind control looks like.

I’ve got insight into some of the old characteristics. For instance, the stun gun was one used so predominantly, and a stun gun leaves electric prod marks that are two inches apart. It will actually leave moles, or raised places that turn into moles eventually. They’re oftentimes located on the face, and those are so easily identifiable. I see people all the time on TV, especially in pornography magazines, that have these stun gun prod marks on them. And when we become aware of exactly what these stun gun prod marks mean, that opens our eyes to being able to recognize mind control around us as well. I think that's another essential part. But stun guns aren't used as much today because they've moved technologically ahead with harmonics and different aspects now. Stun guns are still used, and the prod marks still show up on many people who were conditioned, particularly during the years I was used robotically under MK-ULTRA.

TRACY: Well, they used one on JonBenet Ramsey, didn't they? I remember the story coming out in *The Enquirer*, where they finally looked at the autopsy pictures, and they found these stun gun marks, two inches apart, just like you said, on her body.

CATHY: That's why this information is so essential. The more people know, the more they're going to be able to ask questions, and they're going to start seeing it in society all around them, and in these murders, and deaths, and terror and different aspects that come in to play, they're going to be able to say, "Oh that's what that is!," and they're going to start recognizing it. They're going to start noticing it in the music industry. It's used heavily in the music industry, and certain high-level entertainers have been subjected to it. There are lawsuits that have gone on because certain entertainers are given the harmonic equipment to use in their music, which drives their lyrics further into a person's head. If you think about it, people know that a song will bring them back to a time when they fell in love, for example, or a time when they were doing this, or doing that. Songs bring out memories because of how deep the harmonics carry into the brain. That has been fine-tuned and refined so much now that it is an essential tool. If the information on mind control were now released, people would realize that is what is causing people to take action with the lyrics that are going in their head. That's what's causing them to react, and carry out a murder based on having listened to this music or that.

It's not about free speech, and it's not about the lyrics. It's about harmonics, and that is one more key ingredient, and one more aspect of society where people need to become aware of exactly what mind control entails. Once they're aware of it, they can critically analyze and defend themselves against it, as well as recognize it around them so that we know what a terrorist looks like, what mind control looks like, and who's being abused, what's the devastation that sexual abuse ultimately creates, in raising suggestibility, and how people are being manipulated, even on a mass scale, through trauma. Any time trauma occurs, suggestibility rises. So when we have trauma, like we've got now, with this horrible terror that occurred in the United States, people everywhere are so highly suggestible at a time like this, they need to be on guard about what information is being pumped into their heads, especially if it's repetitious. They need to shut off their TVs, they need to think for themselves, and there are different methods they can use to be able to refocus themselves, and maintain their own freedom of thought at a time when the most extensive trauma occurs. So with this information, people are actually able to strengthen, and be far more vigilant. One of our last remaining freedoms is free thought.

TRACY: You said in your book that part of your programming was decorating your room in red, white and blue, with American flags. Is it getting to you now that everyone has a flag?

CATHY: Well, absolutely, I was very patriotic, and I think patriotism is one thing that's separating people from each other. This isn't about that. Terrorism isn't about countries. This is about individuals. This is a mind control issue, not a country issue, so if folks want to find strength in waving a flag, it's because they don't know the essential point and focus of what's really happening, and that's mind control. And once they realize that, then we're not going to have to take the strong divisions, either by race, country, religion, or anything else, but people can unite in peace and through love, rather than having to fight the so-called "enemy" of another country. That really isn't what this is about at all. So again, this is such an essential ingredient to what's happening in society today. Patriotism certainly isn't the answer. It's quite superficial. If people would just turn off their TVs, they'd be able to find a lot more answers than they would by going out and buying a flag.

TRACY: But hasn't it gotten to you that when President Bush and others talk about this war coming on, they refer to it in international terms, and they want everyone in the world to join in this fight against terrorism? Doesn't it seem like the ultimate end of this could be a one-world government?

CATHY: Well, ultimately, people aren't going to wake up in time, because this was such an enormous trauma that absolutely has shaken people to their knees. It's my fervent hope that we can be able to get information out through folks like yourself who are writing articles, and through every possible public means to get the information out on mind control so that people are going to be able to make a positive difference in time to stop this effort. You’ve got a situation where criminal activity has perpetuated to this point. The tons of covert activities that I was used in during the Reagan/Bush administration included the CIA’s covert operation of the drug industry. And the drugs, of course, were cocaine, primarily, as well as heroin. The poppy fields in Afghanistan were certainly a part of my victimization, and in our book, *The TRANCE Formation of America*. it’s mentioned as well. But the whole Iran-Contra thing feeds into it. At one time we were funding the war against the Soviet Union so that the Soviet Union would topple, because they were the Evil Empire at the time. And now all of the sudden we’ve got terrorists that have resulted from it. The negativity just continues to breed.

It’s very, very much like what’s happening in the military where they found out only 15% of the people could shoot their so-called “enemy,” they didn’t figure that number was high enough. They had to bypass critical analysis, and the way to do that was to get people to not think, just to do it. Point and shoot, point and shoot, without any thought or critical analysis of the fact that they were killing another person. The best way to do that was to condition them through video games, the same video games that our children are playing. I mean, they’re playing with a very, very dangerous weapon in itself that’s teaching them to bypass critical analysis. What happens then is that programming goes into place, where the military will point and shoot, point and shoot. And then they leave the military, they’re turned out onto the streets, without being deprogrammed. It’s turning our streets into a bloodbath, it’s creating extreme violence, and the children are being conditioned into violence that we’re seeing coming out now in the school systems. Because they’re being conditioned in exactly the same way, to take away that critical analysis. The whole negative aspect of everything is ultimately what is coming out onto us now through this terrorism, and when we realize what the cause is, and can be able to think for ourselves and critically analyze once again what’s really going on, we’re going to realize that war and fighting is not the answer. Then people will unite through natural attrition. They’ll unite with cause. They’ll unite with peace and love. Ultimately, that’s the kind of world unity that I would like to see. The only way that we can achieve that is by getting the information out on the reality of mind control, because this is absolutely a case where the truth makes us free.

TRACY: [Getting back to your childhood], how did you function in school while all of this was happening to you?

CATHY: I got very high grades in school. Mostly As, because when trauma occurs that’s too horrible to comprehend, the brain automatically goes into its own mode, and it photographically records events surrounding the trauma. For example, most people know exactly where and what they were doing when Kennedy was assassinated. That’s an example from that time when I was growing up that I think most people would be able to relate to, and that’s an example of how the brain photographically records events surrounding trauma. Since I was being traumatized all the time, I was photographically recording what I was being taught in school. So I got excellent grades. I wasn’t able to use that information, but I was still receiving the information. It was still being driven into my brain.

TRACY: So after you graduated high school, did you go on to higher education? Did you have a career?

CATHY: I had a couple of years of college just as I was being thrust totally into MK-ULTRA. When I was 18, of legal age, I was transferred to Louisiana, where I endured extreme occult trauma for a period of three years, which left me so primed for mind control that it was during those three years that I became absolutely robotic, and began being used on a government level. So, from about the time I was 18 years old on, I was used in government operations. But prior to that I went through education as far as I could, and that included several semesters of junior college.

TRACY: Did you have career goals in mind? And since the government was using you, were they also providing for you financially? Did you have a job?

CATHY: No, I wasn’t provided for financially. I worked different jobs, like most teens would, but I was working three jobs at the time, just menial jobs, plus going to school. And what this did was it kept me wore down. Sleep deprivation was necessary for the kind of conditioning that I was going through at that time.

TRACY: And when you talk about “severe occult trauma,” were there human sacrifices involved?

CATHY: Yes.

TRACY: Were you forced to participate in that?

CATHY: Was forced to see it, not participate, per se. It was a trauma base for me.

TRACY: And is Kelly your only child, as far as you know?

CATHY: Yes.

TRACY: Did they, while they were abusing you, have you on birth control?

CATHY: Oh yeah. Predominantly, yeah, but first I had Kelly. I had her during the years that I was being traumatized so horrifically with the occultism. Kelly was born into MK-ULTRA on a much more sophisticated level than I had been exposed to. She was conditioned literally from birth, and on a harmonics, high-tech level, whereas mine had been on a sexual abuse and trauma level. And that initial upbringing that I had was the kind of mind control that I was maintained under throughout my victimization, whereas my daughter Kelly was almost immediately thrust into the harmonic level. I couldn’t think to save her from it any more than I could think to save myself, and we could only do exactly what we were told to do, both of us.

TRACY: Now, when she was being programmed, would they take her away from you?

CATHY: Oftentimes, and sometimes not. It depends on the trauma base. Often multi-generational incest-based families will have children who are sexually abuse, who sexually abuse their children, and so it goes. Both my father and my brother were sexually abused, so they sexually abused me. In my case, for whatever reason, that gene didn't come through to me. I can't comprehend pedophilia. I cannot comprehend the sexual abuse of a child. Despite my whole upbringing, having been in it, for me to think of sexually abusing a child is just--I don't know why people would even want to do that, and I'm certainly not into the control thing either. My daughter's abuse was used against me to traumatize me. Of all the tortures, of all the traumas, of all the horrors that I saw and witnessed and experienced throughout my victimization, any abuse, including sexual abuse, of my daughter was the most horrible, horrible thing that I ever endured. It was absolutely awful.

TRACY: So they never forced you to participate in it?

CATHY: There were different situations that I was forced into with Kelly. For example, I was used in pornography throughout my victimization, from the time I was a little bitty child right on through. But most of the kind of sexual filming that was done was covert filming that was used for blackmail purposes. In cases like that, I am aware of several instances where my daughter was present, and that is truly the most horrible thing that I've ever experienced, and I've experienced a lot of awful things. But nevertheless, that was used.

TRACY: Was Kelly ever taken to Bohemian Grove?

CATHY: Yes. We both have been there.

TRACY: Is that like a big Satanic group meeting for people in positions of power?

CATHY: Again, this is where we separate the superstition from the hard-core facts. They would use that theme perhaps for traumatization, but it was not the leading theme, or the predominant theme whenever we were at the Grove. When we were taken to the Grove, it was usually a meeting of global leaders that were actively involved in the New World Order effort through mind control of the masses. They had the same agenda, they were like minds, and they would come together in a place like Bohemian Grove to meet and discuss their plans, and actually formulate them. The worst things I heard there had to do with mass genocide rather than occultism.

TRACY: So when they're having these meetings, and they're talking about New World Order policy, are those meetings separate from all the kinky sex that goes on there? Is that recreation that takes place after the meetings?

CATHY: Well, it's secretive there, and it's my experience that when these people got together, they didn't have, like, a formal round table sit-down with ties and suits, for Heaven's sakes. You know, this was very informal, and they would just talk as friends talk. Because they felt that they were in an environment that wasn't being monitored, and wasn’t being scrutinized by anyone, they felt free to do whatever they wanted. That certainly went into areas of perversion, and a lot of cocaine use, and whatever they were wanting to indulge in, they felt free to do.

TRACY: Have you seen Stanley Kubrick’s *Eyes Wide Shut*?

CATHY: Yeah, I have.

TRACY: Was that an accurate representation of one of these experiences at Bohemian Grove?

CATHY: You know, I think the theme was taken from that, but I can’t really relate to it. It’s not quite the same. But there are aspects of it that are probably more realistic than any other occult movie that I’m familiar with.

TRACY: They have the Cremation of Care ceremony (at Bohemian Grove), in which some people have accused them of sacrificing babies, by tossing them into a huge bonfire in front of a giant owl statue. But the official story from Bohemian Grove is that they’re actually tossing bundles of stick into the bonfire. Is that correct?

CATHY: Yeah, but that wasn’t a primary aspect of my victimization. It was part of a threat that whatever I did I had to do as though my life depended on it, because it did.

And I've certainly seen people die. The secretiveness of the Grove and what went on there would certainly lend itself to that kind of trauma.

TRACY: Have you ever seen babies sacrificed?

CATHY: During the horrible conditioning of those three years that I mentioned, yes.

TRACY: I've heard of "Mother Goddesses" who are used as breeders for these babies. Have you ever met anyone like that?

CATHY: No, actually, that goes into, I think, the more superstitious aspect of the occult, rather than the deliberate use of occultism for a trauma base for mind control. The level I was used on was a White House/Pentagon level, so it was pretty extreme, pretty regimented, whereas I think what you're talking about there is a little more New Agey, a little more along those lines. So I'm not as familiar with that. I'm more familiar with genetic studies in breeding that were going on for genetic purposes, and genetic mind control. That's what Project MONARCH is: it's a genetic mind control project, and it's part of MK-ULTRA. MK-ULTRA has different branches, and the one that I was subjected to was a genetic mind control project. So I'm more familiar with things from that end than I am from the aspect you mentioned. Like in my daughter's case, she was born for espionage. Her father was mind-controlled, and he was used in mercenary paramilitary operations in very murderous aspects. They wanted to breed those abilities in with mine, which were more on a message-delivering aspect and a sexual aspect. And so they combined two multi-generational mind control slaves for creating Kelly. That's all I know. That's the kind of thing that I was exposed to, was that kind of deliberate effort. I certainly wouldn't have chosen to have anything to do with Wayne Cox under any circumstances, especially to father my child.

TRACY: So you were used as kind of a storage server for information, and a courier, correct?

CATHY: Very much so, and used primarily in the drug industry. The cocaine operations were so heavy back in those days, in the Caribbean and Mexico. I was used on the groundwork of NAFTA with then-President De la Madrid and Vice-President Salinas, and it had been determined even back then, when I was being used, that Salinas was going to go into the office of President of Mexico when George Bush went into the office of President of the United States. So it was already pre-determined. Both of them were in the Vice-Presidential capacity, and yet both of them had more power and influence than the figurehead presidents of both our countries. I saw some extreme inner workings in the groundwork for NAFTA. I was used in the capacity of funding the New World Order efforts [via] the CIA's involvement in the cocaine industry.

TRACY: Did you have any prior knowledge that George Bush, Jr. was going to be President?

CATHY: I knew that he was being conditioned. I had seen him. I knew he was definitely jostling for that. But I didn't know that aspect of it. I did hear conversations about Bill Clinton, but, you know, I'd refer people to the book on something like that. I wouldn't want to be quoted on that.

TRACY: Do you still believe that you have an immunity to all sexually transmitted diseases--that they gave this to you as part of your training?

CATHY: I have no reason not to believe that.

TRACY: Do you think that "They," the bad guys, have purposely bred AIDS, and other diseases like that, or have allowed them to proliferate while they possess the antidote or the vaccine.

CATHY: Mass genocide has been discussed, and has certainly come to pass and been perpetrated. AIDS is something that I have cause to suspect in that regard, based on the operations I was used for in Haiti, and based on conversations that I heard. Also, consider the fact that they did not use any kind of sexual protection whatsoever in the sexual activities that I was engaged in with these various government leaders, even coming right back from Haiti where AIDS was already rampant. Also, there was quite a bit of confidence surrounding that fact, and it was a known fact--that since I was used on a White House/Pentagon level, and was what they termed a "Presidential Model," they would not get AIDS from me, because I was "clean." That was the term used.

TRACY: Are these perpetrators primarily white and male? I know that you had experience with Hillary Clinton, and some other wives of prominent people. Do you think that there are a lot of women that are involved in this as well, on a hierarchical level?

CATHY: I knew several that were heavily involved. I think the mindset or propensity towards the New World Order effort through mind control of the masses spans all genders, race, countries, and nationalities. I don't see any differentiation except mindset, and there are people that believe the only way to world peace is through mind control of the masses. How can we have world peace that way, if there's no soul expression? That's a different definition of peace, which I guess would require peace-keeping forces rather than the power of love.

TRACY: If they're talking about mass genocide, though, then there must be certain groups of people that they wish to eliminate. I mean, did you not get that impression?

CATHY: Especially from a genetic aspect, yes, they wanted what they termed the "less desirables" to be eliminated from the planet, because the planet was what they considered to be too overpopulated anyway. I've definitely heard conversations to that effect, and the predictions that I heard I've seen come about, particularly through the spread of AIDS.

TRACY: But there are elite strains within all of the races that you are aware of that were considered worthy by them to preserve, and it’s just the lower elements of all the races that they want to eliminate. Is that correct?

CATHY: I would say so to a large degree, but mostly it’s the ones in the so-called “secret societies,” the people who were of like mind that they considered to be the most evolved and the ones who should survive.

TRACY: Were you ever abused within the confines of a Masonic lodge?

CATHY: Oh yes. Oh yes! Even in my younger years, because my mother’s father ran a Masonic lodge in Michigan. I mean, it was definitely sprinkled throughout my victimization. But then again, I wouldn’t say all Masons are bad, but I don’t think all Masons know what the ultimate secrets are.

TRACY: But you think this New World Order philosophy might be one of the ultimate secrets of Masonic teachings.

CATHY: I believe it’s an ultimate goal of many of them that are involved in Masonic aspects. But then again, any time you’ve got secret societies, and information is suppressed, they operate on the philosophy that secret knowledge equals power, and if they’ve got secret knowledge, they can exercise it over other people. That’s exactly what's been happening for way too long, and that's why I say, "It's truth that sets us free." It's time to start telling their secrets. It's time for the truth to be brought to light so that everyone can see exactly what's going on, and as far as I'm concerned, that's the only way we're going to be able to effectively combat terrorism.

TRACY: Well, the thing is that people have very short attention spans, and they don't have to be programmed to be that way. They are that way naturally. So how do you distill a message so that it's actually useful for people who hear it? I mean, if they see a "60 Minutes" piece on this, is that going to do it? Because in mind control, they distill a message down to a phrase or a couple of words, and they repeat that over and over again until people have it burned into their brains. Is there some way of distilling this information so that people will finally catch on?

CATHY: They need to expand their thoughts, and ask questions, and think outside the box. They've been limited in their thinking for so long, and it's like, people have gotten lazy mentally. It's time that we expand our thinking. When I recovered from mind control, what I had experienced was a more exaggerated scale of what everyone goes through. I mean, there is a form of mind control on a mass scale. There is a social engineering. There is a conditioning that has taken place. That, combined with the deliberate militaristic aspect, through things like video games, and stuff, is further conditioning society: the suppression of pertinent information, the suppression of technology, the suppression even of a fact like harmonics. Once people know about that, then we can be more vigilant to protect our free thought, instead of just having things driven into our heads through TV and through music. This is pertinent information. Why should it be a National Security secret? Why are the components of mind control being kept secret under the guise of National Security? It’s National Security that’s threatening the security of our nation, threatening the security of our free thought, and threatening the security of humanity as we know it. People have a right to this information, and it’s time that it came out. When people realize that mind control is a reality, they’re going to begin to ask questions. Asking questions is the key for them to start thinking out of the box, thinking beyond what they’ve been told, thinking beyond the little bits and pieces that they’ve been allowed to know. They’re going to be able to stop and think, “Hey, maybe this isn’t exactly new information. Maybe this is just a little tidbit they’re feeding us. Now what more is there?”

And once people begin to ask the questions, their eyes are open, and they start looking further. So it’s not that we can give them a pat answer. As a matter of fact, when Mark and I taught mental health back in early 90s on how to help people recover from sexual abuse, from trauma, from PTSD, and all these dissociative disorders, we were telling them that they needed to teach people how to think, not what to think. For example, when people were recovering memories of incest or sexual abuse, they remembered that they had sexual abuse in their past, but because of the kind of compartmentalization that happens, they weren’t really sure, and they were trying to remember exactly what happened. Since the mind is so suggestible, if the therapist asks at that time, “Was that Daddy who did that to you?,” then it becomes Daddy in their minds. So that’s telling them what to think, whereas teaching them how to think is to teach them to question, and say “Who was that? What were the circumstances?” Even details like, “What were you wearing?” Little details like that will bring the truth forward, instead of being told what to think.

And that’s what’s happening in society, even now, with the terrorist attacks. As that happens, we’re told over and over again what to think, and we need to be told how to think. And how to think is to begin to ask questions, and look further than just what we’re told--to be able to learn how our brain actually works, and what the limitations are. It’s essential that people shut off their TVs and look into mind control, and arm themselves with that knowledge. Once they have that, they’re on the road to freedom.

TRACY: Now, in your memories of your past, do you have screen memories in addition to real memories? How can you tell them apart?

CATHY: The only way to recover memory that’s too horrible to comprehend is to make it comprehensible. And the only way to make it comprehensible is to take it from the emotional to the logical. The way to do that is by writing. So I wrote out my memories. And what that does is it switches the information into the logic part of the brain, because it takes the logic part of the brain to move a pen. So the information’s becoming logical as it’s being written. Once it’s logical, it becomes comprehensible. Once it’s consciously comprehensible, then a person begins to recover. I functioned under mind control on a subconscious level all those years, and I had no ability to consciously think, or to reason. I had no conscious awareness at all until I recovered the memory. And when I began to recover by using the logic part of my brain, and making the incomprehensible comprehensible, I gained a conscious awareness. With that conscious awareness came the ability to ask questions, and to critically analyze, and to look at things.

It’s real easy to separate a screen memory from a real memory under conditions like that. You ask yourself: “What happened before?” “Well, I sat in front of the TV, or a sat in front of a movie, you know, or this equipment was being used.” Those kinds of things are really easy to remember, so ultimately, when I deprogrammed, I deprogrammed the program first, and that made it easy to separate the reality from what was being pumped into my head. It’s a very deliberate process as a recovery mechanism from the kind of robotic mind control that I had. In the first years that Mark and I were publicly speaking, back in the early 90s, on the issue of mind control, since I was one of the very first to have recovered, we were actually teaching mental health professionals how to help the numerous survivors that they were seeing recover as well. And one of the first steps was to be able to separate the screen memory, to be able to teach them how to think rather than what to think. In those days false memory was proliferating rapidly, because mental health was ignorant and did not know what they were dealing with. The information on mind control had been suppressed from mental health from the earliest years, back when Dr. Ewen Cameron, who’s the founder of our A.P.A., was actually working on mind control for the CIA in Montreal, Canada.

Of course, Dr. Cameron and the CIA were found guilty of their involvement in that, and actually had to pay some of their Canadians victims in a lawsuit, which, if you’re interested, is in a movie that they released. It's brilliant. It's a documentary that they released in Canada called *The Sleep Room*.. It was banned in the United States, but they are aware in Canada of what went on because of Dr. Cameron. And Dr. Cameron is the one who suppressed the information initially from mental health to the point where they had to relearn. They've since even had to rename the dissociative disorder that is a basis for mind control from Multiple Personality Disorder, which is a misnomer, to Dissociative Identity Disorder. This is a much more well-defined term, not only for what the disorder is, but for how to recover from it. Whereas with Multiple Personality Disorder, they get all kinds of demonic possessions, and this and that, and all kinds of superstitions sprinkled in it so heavily that they've had extreme difficulty. I don't know of any cases that have recovered from the superstitious aspect, whereas with what's happening now, people are actually beginning to recover. So I am one of the very, very first, and I am extremely fortunate to have survived, to have been able to recover, and to be able to help bring this information to light.

TRACY: So you didn't have multiple personalities, is that correct?

CATHY: Well, they termed it that at one time, but it's actually a dissociative disorder that creates a compartmentalization of memory in the brain. So I didn't have multiple personalities. I had the essence of who I am, or my personality, that was shattered into so many different parts, so that, for example, the part where my father would sexually abuse me--that part of my mind would compartmentalize around that event so that the rest of my mind could function normally. I couldn't think to bring to mind his sexual abuse until it happened again. And when it happened again, the part of my brain that knew how to deal with it would automatically open. Our brains are really phenomenal. That part of my brain would open to deal with that trauma again and again, and that trauma is all that part of my brain knew. That's not a personality. That's not a whole person there. That's a little tiny fragment of my brain and my own persona that was reserved just for my father, and knew only my father's abuse. It was like going through existence with blinders on. I only knew certain politicians, I only knew certain sexual activities, I only knew to be involved in drug industry. But whatever activities I was forced to carry out, I couldn't think to bring it to mind to discuss it with anybody. I could only do exactly what I was told to do. And that wasn't various personalities, see, that's just simply compartmentalized memory.

TRACY: Yeah, I understand. You didn't walk around thinking that your name was Mary or Helen, or thinking you were a little girl.

CATHY: Exactly, exactly. See what a difference that makes for recovery? If someone's going through the role play of being this person, that person, and all, how are they going to recover? That's not reality. That's the misconception right there. Another really important point is: I was used in a sexual capacity in later years, during the Reagan/Bush administration, because my sexuality had been so heightened from the early sexual abuse. It had actually gone into an area of eating, or drinking, or survival, because of my father's substituting his penis for my mother's nipple. That goes in on the strongest of levels of just basic survival. That's where my sexuality went into a heightened mode, and it just stayed heightened all my life. Whether mind control is used on a sexually abused child or not, their sexuality is heightened.

TRACY: I hope this isn’t too personal a question, but I was kind of curious about it myself. You said that there was some kind of carving, some kind of scar that they put on your genital region. What was it?

CATHY: It was a vaginal mutilation carving that was used in pornography. It was used to fulfill some perversions, or whatever. It’s something that doesn’t go away, and it was something that was done to my vagina where it looks like there is a face that actually comes out. It’s hideous, and I remember exactly when it happened, how it happened, and how it was carved. I wasn’t given any drugs, or any kind of anesthetic or anything, so I certainly was acutely aware of it, and it was painful. But it’s appearance has a function, which I don’t get (but then again, I don’t get a lot of these perversions), and then it also has some physical aspect that can give men pleasure in a little bit different way. So they knew what they were doing, and I’m not the only one that’s been carved that way, but I don’t know of anyone that’s survived who has it. It’s definitely evidence that doesn’t go away. Kind of like stun gun prod marks, you know, it just is there.

TRACY: So you said that it gives the man pleasure. Is this, like, the same concept as ribbed condoms?

CATHY: Yeah, maybe.

TRACY: Was it distinctive? Would you say that if a person found a pornographic picture of you that was taken, you could match it up?

CATHY: Oh yeah, absolutely. No question about it.

TRACY: You said that Larry Flynt had some pictures of you taken in *Hustler*. Do you know when those were taken, and when they were published?

CATHY: Yeah, different ones in different ways for different purposes. I'm not really sure what all magazines were used, but there were a couple that do stand out more.

TRACY: But you wouldn't know what to tell me if I were to go through some back issues to try to find you in there, or anything?

CATHY: You know, on some of them, yeah. He's got a few that are more underground than *Hustler*.

TRACY: How old is Kelly now?

CATHY: 21 [In 2001].

TRACY: So if she’s been locked up in a juvenile institution, shouldn’t she be getting out about now?

CATHY: She was turned out when she was 18. She is on her own to a degree, but Kelly still needs rehabilitation desperately for the high-level mind control that she was exposed to. In essence the key that locked the door to her mind needs to be used to unlock it. When I recovered my memory, and remembered the trauma, that actually took down the barriers in my brain, which gave me access to those parts of my brain. Instead of compartmentalization, I now have free-flow full access to all of my mind. In Kelly’s case, her compartments were created through harmonic vibration, and they need to be harmonically vibrated back down. So she’s still got the compartments in her brain that can be accessed, and she still is definitely accessible. She has an extremely difficult time just getting by, particularly with this administration that’s in right now. She’s having a really hard time.

TRACY: Wasn’t she forbidden while she was in the juvenile facility from using the word “George Bush”?

CATHY: Yes, it’s a matter of court record. She and I were both forbidden to say the words “George Bush,” “Wizard of Oz,” and “mind control.” That’s pretty weird, in itself, that they would put that in a court record. Kelly’s court case--there wasn’t anything legal about it. So much so that a District Attorney actually went before the court on Kelly’s and my behalf, and told the judge that he was in violation of this law, and this law, and this law. And the judge at that time said, “Laws do not apply in this case for Reasons of National Security.”

TRACY: And reasons for that were never given, right?

CATHY: No, but it’s rare. Usually those kind of statements are made behind closed doors, rarely as a matter of public record in court. But the fact that the National Security Act has been invoked in my daughter’s case is pretty significant in itself. It’s pretty validating to the magnitude of what she went through. So the gross injustices that she went through while in the custody of the State of Tennessee are to me just as horrific and horrible as what she endured under mind control. It’s awful what that child has been through. Just absolutely horrible.

TRACY: What was she being institutionalized for?

CATHY: This is kind of complex, but brainwashing was one of the first forms of mind control used on an espionage level, and like I said, Kelly had been born and bred for an espionage level from the onset. In the old days they used to give the old cyanide pill, that you may have heard about, which they would take before being tortured, so that they could die with their secrets instead of revealing them. That pill has been replaced with programming. The subconscious mind can be manipulated to the point where it controls the areas of breathing and the respiratory area, and blood flow, so that even military Special Forces, for example, can take a bullet and not bleed. So they figured that they didn’t need to have that cyanide pill anymore. Why not just program espionage agents with an automatic circulatory or respiratory failure? In Kelly’s case, hers is respiratory failure, activated as soon as she begins to remember her past. When we were in Alaska, after Mark rescued Kelly and me, we felt safe for the first time in our whole lives. We knew love for the first time. It was such a dramatic difference. I really thought I had died and gone to Heaven. I believe that in one of those near-death experiences that I had actually crossed over, and I thought that Kelly and I had died, but of course we hadn’t. Since we felt safe, we began to remember, and the memories started flashing, and they were intrusive, and bits and pieces of what had happened started coming forward. Up until that time, I was completely amnesiac about my past. I didn’t know where I had been for ten years. I didn’t know what had happened. I had absolutely no memory of it whatsoever. When Mark first rescued me, I really thought that I was 24 years old. It was a trip finding out I was 30.

TRACY: They had lied to you about your age?

CATHY: I had no concept of time. Under mind control, since there’s no ability to maintain a continuity of thought or a conscious awareness, there’s no concept of time. And with no concept of time, there’s no ability to know how old you are. And they actually did some studies on aging based on that, because if a person doesn’t know how they’re supposed to act their age, or how they’re supposed to look, they don’t, and people don’t age properly. Oftentimes people under mind control are age-inappropriate. Their age doesn’t show in their face. They can maintain a youthful look way beyond what’s normal. So I had no concept of time. I’ve caught up with that since those days, now that I’m aware. But since we felt safe, we began remembering. When we began remembering, Kelly went into respiratory failure. When she went into that programmed respiratory failure, she was taken to Humana Hospital in Anchorage, Alaska. She wasn’t responding to any kind of conventional medication. That’s the first time that I heard the term “Multiple Personality Disorder.” That’s the first time I heard a term applied to what we had experienced. The psychiatrist that was treating her initially diagnosed her with Multiple Personality Disorder, with active mind control programming.

TRACY: That’s a diagnosis?

CATHY: That’s a diagnosis. And that diagnosis was rejected by the State of Tennessee when she was thrust into their custody. When they took custody of her, they would not accept diagnoses from outside the state, and of course the cover-up ensued from there. But Kelly ended up in the custody of the State of Tennessee because of a Federal program, the Violent Crimes Claims Commission, that was actually overseen out of Washington, D.C. It was a catch net, in essence, and Kelly was scooped up immediately, and thrust into the Tennessee system. Once it was determined in Alaska what she suffered from, that diagnosis was picked up, and the State of Tennessee took custody of her through illegal and immoral means. And she was raised in their custody, then, right up until she was 18 years old, and of legal age, and it left her in quite a mentally devastated condition. But Kelly does know who and what Mark and I are up against. She has had enough memory to be aware of that, which has given her a very deep and profound insight into life, into reality, into what’s happening these days. In so many ways she’s a wise person, yet at the same time her ongoing need for qualified rehabilitation leaves her unable to hold down a job, for example, or to become a contributing part of society like she would like to be. She’s still not free to be what she wants. She doesn’t have the ability to have the soul expression to do exactly what she would choose.

TRACY: Is she not accepting help from you and Mark?

CATHY: She and I are very, very close, and we’ve had a lot of conversations since she’s been out of custody and everything. But there’s extreme limitations on it because when she sees me, when we’re together, when we talk about anything, it triggers memories. Because she feels safe and loved, it automatically starts to flood her mind. When it floods her mind, she goes into respiratory failure. And that’s a reality that she and I live with to date, which has got to be one of the most cruel things that any parent and child could ever endure. She knows that, like truth, I’m not going to go away. I’m not going to abandon her needs in any way whatsoever, and Mark and I are totally dedicated to getting the information out on mind control. Instead of operating out of desire for vengeance on the perpetrators, or wanting to expose their political influence and all so much, it’s more out of love for humanity, love for Kelly, love for the children that motivates us. Love is the most powerful force in the universe, and it’s certainly what drives Mark and I today. Hate, vengeance--those kind of negativities are immobilizing, and they actually hinder progress. There isn’t time for that. It’s essential to get the information out for Kelly’s sake and for everyone’s sake.

TRACY: Now, is there significance in the name “Kelly,” because I know that Brice Taylor’s daughter is named “Kelly,” and there are some others also. It’s been said that slaves were told to name their daughters “Kelly” for ease in tracking, or something like that. That’s what I’ve heard. What’s your answer?

CATHY: I don’t know, it’s something about--what’s it called: “Kiley,” the messenger of death, or something? There’s some negative aspect to why they wanted it. It’s really more occult based.

TRACY: Oh, Kali, the Hindu Goddess of Death!

CATHY: Yeah! And I’ve got a sister named Kelly. My daughter’s named Kelly. I didn’t have any choice in that. Yeah, there are a lot of Kellys out there. Just because someone’s named that certainly doesn’t indicate any kind of conspiracy, or mind control, or anything like that. But nevertheless, there is an inordinate number of Kellys out there that have been used on that level. I think that’s even why they used the name “Kelly Bundy” [on *Married … with Children*], because it was so prevalent.

TRACY: I’m so glad that you gave me that answer, because the other thing about how it makes it easier to track them doesn’t make any sense. If you’ve got 100,000 Kellys that you’re supposed to track…

CATHY: That sounds like something that would come more from the Brice Taylor/Sue Ford direction, since you brought up her name. She is someone that I am certainly familiar with. I think that she's done more damage than anybody with her misinformation, based on the fact that the mind control aspect is something that she pulled in initially from false memory through her therapist, and kind of stuck to. I can't imagine what would motivate somebody to do that. Nevertheless, she was sexually abused, that I'm aware of from having known her, and she suffered from Dissociative Identity Disorder, and needed to recover from that. She is one of the most prominently known victims of the False Memory Syndrome that was being perpetrated through the mental health system, and which she continues to perpetrate through the misinformation and disinformation that she's putting out there, which I think is a crime against humanity in itself. I wish she would stop, and I wish that she would ultimately find her own peace and know that truth makes her free. But you know, of course that's not something that I can do. All I can do is just count on the reality that truth always prevails, and love wins.

TRACY: I was wondering what you would say about her, because I haven't read her whole book [*Thanks for the Memories*], but I did read an excerpt where she says that she went and stayed at your house, or that you stayed at her house, you and Mark, and then she supported you financially for months and months, and went through all this programming. And then she says, "At the end of it all, Mark told me that I wasn't a victim after all." And it sounds so horrible. I was just wondering what you had to say.

CATHY: Actually, I had heard that she had rewritten her original novel, when it was a novel, which I think would have been admirable. She's someone that Mark helped recover from a Dissociative Disorder, because we were working real close with mental health back in those days, and the whole False Memory Syndrome was there. And it is possible for someone to recover from Dissociative Disorder while having had implanted false memories through bad therapy, with the "Was that Daddy that did that?" type of questions. Recovery was possible, and she did recover, but all it did was … I don't know. Somewhere along the way she picked up a weird motive and a weird direction. I can't understand why somebody would do that, but she did nevertheless. So what does that mean about the recovery process for someone like that? I don't know. It just means we've got a whole world of problems out there that we've got to overcome, from the misinformation and disinformation that began back with the Dr. Ewen Cameron mind control at the very onset of the organization of mental health. That's another case where mental health itself needs to think outside of the box, and think beyond the education that they paid to have, and realize that a PhD doesn't mean they know it all.

TRACY: I think one of the side effects of this information about Project MONARCH coming out is that there are a lot of desperate people out there who have been traumatized in their past, but what they really want is attention.

CATHY: It's really hard to understand that, you know? For me it is.

TRACY: I don't find it hard to understand. It's like the same type of people who go around saying that they were abducted by UFOs. I think that it's the same scenario. I mean, there are just so many people who come out saying that they were victims of mind control, and you can tell that they're just congenital liars. And maybe they did experience some form of mind control, but how do you separate that from the fact that they're liars?

CATHY: Exactly. People are people, whether they've suffered from a dissociative disorder or not. When they recover, people are people, and personally, I don't choose to live in the "victim mentality," or the "survivor mentality." There's too many exciting aspect to life. There's too much to learn, too much to grow with, and this is a phenomenal process. I am so fortunate to have recovered from all of that, and to be free to think for myself and to be myself. Living true to soul and being myself every day is a non-stop, constant pleasure that I never take for granted. It's given me different priorities in life, a different perspective on life. Things that other people think are worth arguing about and fighting about, to me seem really trivial in comparison to the magnitude of what really happens in this world, and the wonder of our brains.

Where we're going to be able to go with this information on mind control is exciting in itself. It will give us a view into the other 90% of our brain that we haven't used. We're always told that we use about 10% of our brain, and with a dissociative disorder, you're blasted into other parts of your brain. So much has been learned, and there are so many exciting things ahead for people to learn, about what their brains are capable of. Once they realize it, they can utilize it. But that's an exciting aspect to the future that keeps me hopeful that people will wake up, arm themselves with the information so that we can get the problems taken care of. The truth makes us free, and once we’re free, we’re going to be able to expand, and learn and grow in ways that people never dreamed were even possible. The future looks really exciting from my perspective. I can’t imagine miring it down by clinging to some negativities of the past

Access Granted: An Interview with Mark Phillips

Mark Phillips is Cathy O'Brien's husband, and co-author with her of *The TRANCE Formation of America*., as well as the more recent *ACCESS DENIED For Reasons of National Security*. He claims to have rescued her and hr daughter Kelly from the CIA's Project MONARCH and mind-controlled sex slavery. This interview took place in October of 2001.

TRACY: How did you come to know about mind control and Project MONARCH?

MARK: Well, Project MONARCH--that information I'll have to relate a little bit later on. I became acquainted with mind control--certainly not trauma-based mind control, that was something that I was just aware of, but I had absolutely no interface with it whatsoever. I worked in a variety of positions working closely with the intelligence community. The Central Intelligence Agency was one of those communities. The others I can't really go into any detail on because I did sign an oath of secrecy. However, I worked in the capacity as a Defense Department subcontractor, so I'm not bound by the same oaths as would be someone who worked strictly military. I became acquainted with mind control, or external control of the mind through just association with now declassified information that was acquired at the Primate Center in Atlanta, and out in Colorado, and at various other Defense Department subcontracting installations that were researching, and doing what I call "mind mapping." I use that term loosely. I don't think that is a real term. But that's really how I became aware of mind control, and how it was being used, particularly within the Soviet Union. This was during the late 60s and early 70s, when there were large masses of people in certain places within the Soviet Union, primarily within Russia proper, that were being used for a variety of methodologies, including just normal information control. They were more or less sequestered from the rest of the population of the country at the time, and all of the information that they were fed was very controlled, and very contrived.

There were also a number of studies going on in the area of genetics, and I was not privy to any of those specifically. That was how I became acquainted with one of the projects. There were about 120 odd projects that I was aware of, and I recall the names of about a dozen or so of them. But Project MONARCH was one that was used, actually one of the smaller ones. They were not using specifically blond-haired, blue-eyed people--you know the Nazi mentality-type family genetic line. They weren't following that specifically. They were more or less staying within the blond-haired areas, but they were using people of all mixed nationalities. Project MONARCH was one that was used in Michigan, Pennsylvania, small parts of Ohio within a number of religious sects there, as well as in California--in Northern California, particularly. Beyond that, I don't know of any other place where Project MONARCH was an active project. [Editor's note: the use of Monarch programming and its trail of victims is likely more widespread, including Canada.] There has been some information released, but the name of Project MONARCH has never, ever been declassified, and since I did not work in that project, I can talk about it, because it's hearsay. It has never been a term that has shown up in any Freedom of

Information Act documents. All the genetic research that I know about, with regards to MK-ULTRA, for instance--none of the Project names have been released, that I know of.

TRACY: And besides blond hair, what other genetic qualities were they looking for?

MARK: They were also looking for certain bone structure. They were looking primarily at the family involved. Even though I wasn't aware that they were specifically targeting multi-generational incest, I knew that they were looking at families. Particularly I was aware of the twin studies, and I was also aware of the research that was specifically targeting persons or families that had at least two generations of very specific artistic capabilities that seemed to be genetically encoded. It was pretty benign stuff, frankly, and it certainly did not prepare me for what I ran into in 1988 when I met Cathy O'Brien.

TRACY: How did you meet Cathy, and what did you think when you first met her?

MARK: Well, the first time I saw her, I believe, was at the airport, when she was meeting her handler and husband by the name of Alex Houston, a so-called "country music MC" and state fair ventriloquist, supposedly an entertainer. I didn't find him very entertaining. But nevertheless, he and I had a business relationship, and I didn't have to tolerate his so-called "entertainment business." I met Cathy very briefly, like "Hello." Virtually no eye contact when she picked Alex up at the airport. It was a most peculiar thing: most business people, when they're in a partnership, usually have dinners, and they have social gatherings with the families of their partners, and this did not happen with myself and Alex Houston. Why, I never really questioned, and since I did not particularly want to socialize with him anyway, it really didn’t matter. He and I didn’t really seem to share any common interests. He played golf and I didn’t, and he was into country music, and I wasn’t. It more or less stopped there.

I met Cathy, actually, at a party that I had in my house, to which Alex brought her. That was the first time that I actually met her, or had any chance to talk to her, and talking to her was very much like talking to my hand. She really wasn’t very responsive. I was concerned just in the back of my mind because of the amount of white that was at the top of the iris of her eyes. In other words, her eyes were really wide, and she didn’t have a proper blink response, which I equated more or less as probably stemming from some sort of trauma in her life. I really wasn’t interested in knowing much about her because she did not reflect her ego as having much intellect driving it, and I was not interested in pursuing any intelligent conversation with her. She had a plastic smile, and wasn’t dressed like anyone that I associated with, either. She looked very much like a 1950s prostitute, and I did not find that to be conducive with anything that I wanted to have any association with, frankly. I thought perhaps that that was conducive to the country music business, and that was the reason that she was dressed in that kind of attire. I didn’t associate it with anything else. I had no reason to. She had very little to say to me.

TRACY: And when did you catch on?

MARK: Actually, I didn't catch on. Mind control is so subtle that when people tell me that "I can see that that person is under mind control," I immediately just walk away from them, because, quite frankly, unless you are very well-versed in this particular science, and you literally test the person … There are some things you can do to test someone's suggestibility, and this sort of thing, on the spot. And linguistically, you can listen to someone and know if they're this or that. But knowing if someone is under mind control, per se, is virtually impossible unless these people are clinically tested, and that wasn't my forte. I mean, I had an interest in the mind, but certainly not in mind control, per se. It wasn't until I was in China that I was notified, because of my company. I was president of the Uniphayse Corporation, and Uniphayse was a manufacturer of large capacitor bank systems to help the mining industry over there conserve on energy so they wouldn't have to shut down those mines. Shutting a mine down is like shutting a glass or a steel plant down--it costs more to start it back up than it would to have kept it running, and they had a huge energy shortage over there because of when they lived in their proverbial "Bamboo Curtain," and to the West in China it is a constitutional law that they have to maintain a balance in trade.

In other words, it cannot be indebted to any country. In order for them to literally launch into the 20th century, they had to technologically speaking, be able to keep up. They had to be able to provide goods and services, and those goods and services, of course, took energy to produce. And as a result, they had a tremendous need for energy conservation, and that was what my company provided. It was an ancient technology to help them produce more product at a lesser cost. It was the Chinese military, of course, that ran the mining industry, because anything made out of metal, the Chinese military is in charge of. I know this sounds peculiar, but this is Chinese law. Now this is the People’s Republic of China. This is not Taiwan we’re talking about.

At any rate, my counterparts were Chinese military people, and it was at the ribbon-cutting ceremony of our factory at the Chin-Chin province that I was notified that my partner, who was not present with me at the time, Alex Houston, was involved in both child and adult pornography, which is punishable by death in China. He was also engaged in drug running and money laundering. This would be very much like telling you that there’s an alien sleeping under your bed, or something. It totally blew me away. I could not even begin to comprehend it or believe it, because even though I had no personal relationship with Alex Houston, he did not appear to me to be on an intellectual level with the people that I had been associated with by working within the intelligence community. Of course, I worked within the scientific aspect of it, and these people were very, very bright, and most of them very nice people, as far as I knew. I heard stories about people engaged in espionage, the proverbial “Manchurian Candidate” production facilities located on certain military bases, using technologies that were brought over from Project PAPERCLIP. But I personally had no contact with that. I mean, it was just idle chatter with some scientists that I was acquainted with, most of them with NASA.

The intelligence officer who confronted me with the information about Alex Houston, and offered to buy his shares of stock out, which I thought was a takeover, literally, of all of my work to set the company up, and to bring in the engineers from all over the United

States to do all of this. I thought my investment of time and money had gone down the drain with their takeover. I had been warned that this could happen. It’s called a joint venture agreement, which is what I had. But that was not the case. They literally let me maintain that extra 1%, so I was still installed as President of the company, and I was not going to loose my position, or the company, or my shares of stock. They were even going to fund it, which they did. They gave me the money to buy Alex Houston out, and I did buy him out.

But in the process, when they did all of this, I contacted someone when I got back in the United States from the State Department that I knew through a channel, and told him that I had seen documentation not only on Alex Houston, but also on myself, that was classified. I said, “I don’t know whether they falsified it on Alex Houston, or if any of their story is true. I have no way of knowing. But I am going to launch a personal and private investigation on it. But I did want to alert you that the very people that I am in business with are in possession of classified documents on Mark Phillips, and some of that stuff looked like it had original stamps on it, and original signatures.” Any time you read a classified document, particularly on the work history of some individual working in the intelligence community, somebody has to sign a piece of paper. Back in those days you would sign it on the border, or on the side, or you stamp it and sign it, and some of those papers they had were originals, or at least they certainly appeared to be.

Moving on, I was totally just blown away by the fact that a couple of days later, or some time past, I don’t know, a day or two, I got a call back from an unidentified person with the State Department who related enough detail to me for me to know that it was, indeed coming from that office, to leave the case alone, never mention it again, that it had no significance, and don’t probe it, in essence. I’m paraphrasing. I’ve got them written down here somewhere. But nevertheless, I was completely shocked into the reality by what I had heard from that Chinese intelligence officer, and by my partner in China, who was a major arms dealer for the Chinese, and he owned a ship line. His name was Mr. William Yoon, a very good man, by the way, in spite of his profession, and he informed me that they had no reason to lie about it, and that he knew for a fact that it was true. I trusted Mr. Yoon implicitly. I had no reason not to. He had never misled me and never lied to me. He was very clever and very wealthy and successful businessman, Korean by birth, and lived in Hong Kong at that time.

It was Mr. Yoon who told me that it would be nice if someone could help that woman out, and that little girl that she had, but it would be impossible since, in essence, he was just echoing what that Chinese intelligence officer had told me, that Alex Houston was connected all the way to the White House. Well that was absurd to me. At the time, it just was totally off-the-wall. However, when I got back home, and had that fly up in my face, I did launch an investigation through some friends of mine who were still active within the intelligence community, both within the military, and with the CIA. I was then informed that this was in fact true, and that I had best leave it alone. At that point in time, I was trying to make a decision as to what to do, because I needed to go back to Hong Kong for business reasons, and I could not be laden down with a couple of people that were literally traumatized out of their minds. I certainly wasn't qualified to help them myself.

So through a string of events that are outlined in our book, *The TRANCE Formation of America*., I moved on to making a personal decision, actually based on one pivotal point: the local sheriff came and told me about the surveillance that I had been enduring. I lived in a rural area. He informed me that my life was in jeopardy, that friends within the FBI had informed him, out of the Nashville office that I was as good as dead if I did not leave that woman and that girl alone, and stay away from it. That was the inspiration to move forward, and I do not take threats lightly, nor do I ever discuss them with anybody. Cathy and I have a rule: we do not discuss any harassment or threats, period, because I don't want anybody getting credit for it. I'll go after them my own way.

And as a direct consequence, since I knew what I was up against, I thought I'd just try to outsmart them, and get Cathy and Kelly into some form of qualified help. I certainly had the money to do it, and I thought I had the connections. But unfortunately, there was so little known about helping people, and the physicians around the United States and Canada that were doing public research developing a treatment modality for what they call "polyfragmented"--it was called Multiple Personality Disorder back in those days, which couldn't be further from the truth. I'm glad they changed the name. But nevertheless, I couldn't find anybody. The first person that did contact me was Dr. Jolyn West out of UCLA. And of course he's dead now. Hopefully I'll have his records soon. They normally release them a couple of years after they're dead, under the FOIA. But I was contacted by Dr. West's office because I had put an inquiry out, and apparently one of my inquiries hit the wrong button, and I wound up getting the bad guys all over me.

TRACY: You mean you were threatened?

MARK: Um, how many times? The bottom line is, I came from that world. It was absurd to threaten me, because for one thing, threats are meaningless. These people don't threaten you, they just do it. I told Cathy at the time, "Actually these people are being very polite. These threats are a polite way of saying 'Please, please don't go any further with this.'" So I took what I had and turned it over to some people, like the Head of U.S. Customs at that time. I turned it over to him through channels that he trusted. In other words, I did it through political channels out of Washington, and through intelligence channels out of Langely as well, to ensure that the information got into the hands of the people that could be acquainted with some of the players involved in this stuff. And since I had very little hard proof at the time, I proceeded just to focus on getting Kelly some help, and in the process was handed information, piece by piece, on how to help Cathy. Because Cathy had not been structured by anybody, as far as a doctor making the usual mistakes of asking "How does that make you feel?," and doing re-associations with the traumas that she had endured, she recovered quite nicely.

It took about a year, actually about 9 months almost to the date from the time that I started. And I got this information through a series of 800 numbers that were given to me in a most clandestine, covert way. I don't even know who I was talking to, and I didn't know if the information was real. I mean, it sounded logical, and it was easy to apply, but I didn't know if I was hurting her, or if I was helping her. I had no clue, except that she seemed to be getting better, and by that I mean that she stopped her constant state of dissociation. She acquired a sense of time. She acquired a sense of self, and who she was, and where she'd been. Then I started collecting those details up, handing them over to people that were in a capacity, working for the government, to get them verified. And when they started getting them verified, one or two of them made their usual mistakes, They tapped on the wrong doors, apparently, and that created some very serious problems. As a result I was almost indicted for something that I didn't do. That's usually what they do.

TRACY: What was it?

MARK: Well, they said that I had written a threatening letter to the President of the United States. That was untrue. I had written a letter to the President of the United States, even though I knew that he was named and involved in the thing, but I had a federal lawyer eyeball the letter, and then I had a United States congressman read it, and then hand-deliver it to the President. I think it was that simple. So I was clear 100%. So when the FBI took me down and fingerprinted me, I actually thought it was probably one of the funniest things, a pathetic type of humor. Because, I mean, my fingerprints, they must have had 10,000 copies of them. To put me through that intimidation process was ridiculous. I had lost everything that I had, and, you know, if you back somebody up against a wall after you've taken everything away from them, and then you threaten them, then they have nothing to lose. A man that has nothing to lose is extremely dangerous, if he knows the rules, and I did know the rules.

TRACY: What were you doing to deprogram Cathy?

MARK: Well, the process of actually deprogramming somebody--you don’t ask them any questions. It’s not like most people would think. I had to know certain codes, keys and triggers. I *had* to, and I was provided a few of those, enough to get the information flow going inside of her own head. She had to write. She wasn’t allowed to verbalize. I wasn’t able to ask her any questions. Really, what it amounted to was, I was no more than a bodyguard and a nurse, and a housekeeper, and a cook, if you want to get right down to the nuts and bolts of it. The process is outlined in our book. We’d be on this phone for quite a while if I went through each step, but basically I had to just sequester Cathy away from all forms of information. In other words, her suggestibility was so high that if she saw an ad on TV for Kentucky Fried Chicken, she could taste it and smell it in the house. I mean, it was the Pavlovian Dog thing. So I had to keep her away from all sources of information. She had to pretty much live inside of her head during this period of time, and I was, of course, just trying to keep us alive through what little savings that I had left. I was just making sure that the bad guys didn’t know that I was interested in any of the content of what she was saying.

Quite frankly, the stuff she was telling me was outside of my realm of experience. I had never knowingly been acquainted with anyone who had been a victim of family incest. I wasn't raised that way, nor would I have been able to recognize it, even. So the stuff that she was telling me sounded 100% totally preposterous. The only thing I did was, I made sure that there were certain things that could verify whether or not her memories were correct. For one thing, she would write them down, and three weeks later, if she could remember exactly what she wrote down, word for word, verbatim, and the beginning and the end of the particular event that she was describing, and the smell and the tastes involved, in other words, the olfactory sense, if it was involved, then I knew it wasn't what is called a "screen memory," or a false memory. Everybody has false memories. Everybody has screen memories, and two people, if they see an accident, will recall it differently, for instance. But when someone is under trauma, they have a photographic memory, and if they are at the point of that trauma, the photographic memory also is compartmentalized cellularly. In addition to that, they also have complete memory as far as the olfactory sense goes, and that's pretty much the tell-taler right there. One of the oddest things that I ran across with Cathy was, she had forgotten that she had ever been able to dream in her entire life.

Many years later, Cathy and I got onto the lecture circuit, and of course we attracted mental health and law enforcement first, because I thought that would be the safest way of getting this information out, and the most credible way of getting it out. I never dreamed of going public with it. Quite frankly, they shoot messengers, and this kind of stuff would be hard for most people to accept, because they have these impressions that entertainers and people involved in high-level politics might be sociopaths, but they're not pedophiles. Or, they might be this, but they're not that. So I didn't think it would be a good idea to go public with this. I think I’m jumping around a bit. I was mentioning the dream state thing being the oddest part. When we got on the road, a number of people would come and tell me that they knew they were under mind control because they dreamed this, and they dreamed that, and they dreamed this, and I’m thinking: “Yes, you definitely have a problem, but I’m not qualified to diagnose you. How about taking this test?” And this test is commonly called a D.E.S. test. It’s a test for your level of suggestibility, and dissociativeness that all of us have.

TRACY: What do the letters stand for?

MARK: I was afraid you would ask that. Oh my goodness. I can almost see it myself. I do not have the luxury of a photographic memory. But nevertheless, the DES test was developed around 1990--1991, and it was a result of some information I had released, as well as a number of physicians who were studying the rise in the phenomena of what was then called Multiple Personality Disorder. Particularly they were studying individuals coming out of the military. These people were projecting different personas, but they were unaware of each other. But in fact it was one personality that was fragmented, and what they were seeing were the coping skills that each persona or fragment had developed. They were naming them, and labeling them, and all this incredible nonsense. It became almost humorous, except that it was so sad for the patients. These doctors would stand up and say, “Well, I’ve got a patient with 712 personalities,” and another one would say, “That’s nothing. I’ve got one with 1215 personalities.” And it became a spitting match, and it was almost absolutely absurd. Cathy probably had thousands of persona fragments, and many of them were because of the change in histamine. Her face would change, and her eye color would change, and her skin would change. There were a lot of changes that the religious community for many years called demonic possession. I mean, it is quite frightening. If you see it for the first time and you don't know what you're looking at, it's terrifying, as a matter of fact. I won't say "quite frightening," it's just plum terrifying.

However, there is a very logical, scientifically-based reason for this change, and there's also a reason why the person doesn't dream at night, or have any recall in dreams. I happen to believe--and this is a theory of mine that has yet to be proven, publicly--I happen to believe that everyone dreams, regardless of whether they're under mind control or not. But under mind control, they have absolutely no recall whatsoever of any dreams. Now, if someone is suffering from horrific abuse, yes, they'll dream at night. If they've endured a severe trauma where perhaps they endured a near-death experience, they will have horrific dreams as a result of it. And people who suffer from Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder have horrific dreams. All the stuff that's been happening as a result of the recent terrorist attacks has caused untold numbers of people to suffer from varying levels of Posttraumatic Stress Disorder, with horrific nightmares that either could be or could not be directly associated with what they saw on television.

TRACY: If dreams are supposed to happen mostly during the Rapid Eye Movement stage of sleep, and if these mind controlled slaves can't blink when they're awake, maybe that can't do it when they're asleep, either.

MARK: Well, that's a very good observation. What you just said is very true. Most dreams occur during the R.E.M. state. The R.E.M. state occurs after about 2 or more hours of rest. It normally occurs between two and four hours, and you normally have around 17 minutes per episode of R.E.M. state. And this particular sleep state is not possible for someone under mind control to have, because if they do allow these people to go into R.E.M. state, then the sleep deprivation thing is over. Their brain chemistry will return back to a normal level, and these people will rebel and run. You know, the fight or flight syndrome kicks in. So, yes, when someone is under mind control, the R.E.M. state is interrupted, and it is interrupted first through a ritualistic program. Whoever their handler is has to interrupt their sleep through some kind of trauma, so that they are not allowed to go into R.E.M. sleep. And once this pattern is established, it becomes part of their nightly routine. With Cathy, and Kelly as well, that was the first thing that I noticed. They did not sleep soundly. They would just sleep restlessly for an hour or an hour and a half, under the 2-hour minimum that it requires to have R.E.M. sleep, for your brain chemistry to change.

TRACY: I was curious about whether or not you had any experience with personally: I'm always hearing about these Project MONARCH slaves, and how they have levels of programming that correspond to Greek letters. Did you have any experience with that?

MARK: No. As a matter of fact, these stories circulate, and we hear them, and at one point in Cathy's relationship with me, when we were spending most of our days in court, I mean, literally, for a couple of years, I didn’t have much else to do except research this stuff. And so, yeah, I followed the trail of some of these stories, and they always dropped back into the same mental institution, and the same person. It was a doctor who was recognized as credible who had released this information, without any validation whatsoever. Actually, someone who’s been a victim of mind control would not know it. They would never have any conscious awareness of it, unless they had gone through the deprogramming process, or unless they had some sort of brain surgery. There are a number of extraordinary conditions that might trigger some memories, but people who claim mind control, with the Alpha-Beta-Delta-Theta programming denote some stuff that does have some basis of reality to it.

As far as the symbols going for the victims themselves, of course they wouldn’t know that stuff. But there has been reference, very credible reference that cannot be proven because that kind of information has been redacted from the FOIA files for MK-ULTRA. I can tell you categorically, “Yes, there’s Delta programming, yes, there’s Beta programming. Yes.” But no, I’m not going to say that victims of this stuff were aware of any particular Greek alphabet.

Where's Johnny? An Interview with Noreen Gosch

Noreen Gosch is the author of *Why Johnny Can't Come Home* and founder of the Johnny Gosch Foundation, which can be found at johnnygosch.com. Her son Johnny Gosch was kidnapped in 1982. The case was very high-profile and was featured several times on *America's Most Wanted*. However, media interviews became harder to obtain when Ms. Gosch began voicing her opinions about the alleged connection between her son's kidnapping and Project MONARCH. This interview took place on September 3, 2001.

TRACY: Why do you think your son was chosen to be kidnapped?

NOREEN: From the reports that we have gotten, from Paul Bonacci, who was one of the victims, and a witness providing us with information, Johnny was chosen because he fit the description of what they were looking for in the pornography and prostitution industry. Paul Bonacci testified to this fact in a courtroom February 7th of 1999 before Federal Judge Urbom.

TRACY: Do you know what the specific traits were that they were looking for?

NOREEN: Well, he was blond, blue-eyed, and tall. They looked for kids that were from the type of homes where they would be, basically, in a normal situation. Not a one-parent home, but the typical two-parent home, you know with the pet dog and that type of thing. A paper boy. They had been, according to Paul Bonacci, kidnapping kids that had been runaways, kids that were fairly streetwise, and they decided--by they, I mean the people that were involved in this particular kidnapping--they decided to go for kids that might not be as streetwise, perhaps just a little more naive. This is what Paul Bonacci said when the Judge asked him that question, and it sounds pretty logical when you consider the kidnapper's point of view. I suppose they feel that those kids are easier to intimidate and/or manage when they have them under their control.

TRACY: I read the sample chapter from your book posted on your web page. You seem to believe that the police department was purposely bungling the investigation.

NOREEN: Oh, it's not that I seem to believe it. It happened. The morning of the kidnapping, we had five witnesses, and every one of them saw the man, talked to the man, saw the man flicking the dome light on and off three times. A second man came out from between two houses and followed Johnny around the corner. Then the witnesses heard the slamming of the car, the screeching of the tires and this car pulling away from the scene heading North on 42nd Street [in Des Moines, Iowa], which takes you right out to the interstate. One of the witnesses was a 44-year-old attorney who is now a judge, and yet when all of this information was presented to the police, the police chief said they considered him a runaway, and they weren't going to do anything for three days. My contention is, when there's a bank robbery, they don't call it runaway money for three days.

When Johnny was taken, we had what most families don’t have, which is that we had five witnesses on the street, and each of them witnessed a different part of the kidnapping. One of the witnesses happened to be a 44-year-old attorney who is now a judge. Pretty reputable. Pretty credible. And yet, they wouldn’t look. They wouldn’t call in the FBI. They refused. They wouldn’t do aerial searches. They wouldn’t use free volunteer canine teams to begin to search for our boy. We as a family had to do this all on our own. And something is wrong in an investigation when this happens. Many years later, I learned that our police chief, the one who is no longer in office, Cooney, is extremely good friends with the Police Chief from Omaha, Robert Wadman. And Robert Wadman was involved in the Franklin Credit Union cover-up., which was a porn and prostitution ring operated in Omaha, Nebraska, that was uncovered in the late 80s. And our Police Chief went over to the parties that they had. The Police Chief from Omaha got one of the girls pregnant.

TRACY: So he himself was a pedophile and involved with the same group that kidnapped your son?

NOREEN: That’s right. And I learned all of this later, much, much later, and then two and two made four. It became pretty simple why the Police Chief wouldn’t call in the FBI, why he wouldn’t do certain things. They didn’t want me to find Johnny. They didn’t want me to uncover what had really happened to him.

TRACY: And you learned all of this from Bonacci?

NOREEN: Bonacci, and then there have been a number of other witnesses, victims that we have talked to since Bonacci came forward, and they all tell the same story, with the same people involved. And these other witnesses are credible. Paul Bonacci was real credible in a court of law.

TRACY: And what about the *Des Moines Register*? Two of their paper boys were kidnapped, and they didn't seem to have much interest in the subject.

NOREEN: Yes, isn't that curious too?

TRACY: Well, why do you think that is? Do you have any theories?

NOREEN: From what I know about pedophile rings, people who are very influential can be involved, in any city, stretching all the way to Washington, D.C., as we found out. It's very possible that there are people right here in Des Moines that are involved. Someone else is protecting them.

TRACY: You don't think that they might have set your son up to be kidnapped in the first place?

NOREEN: I have not ruled that out. That's still under consideration. You can consider it, and you can get pieces of information and evidence, but when it becomes difficult is when you try to prove it in court. You can know it, but if you can't prove it by all the means necessary, then you have to just sit on your information. We know, basically, what happened to Johnny, why, who, how, and much of it was brought out in that court case in 1999. Once we got the Judge's ruling, I went back to the county attorney, the police officials here, and asked them to talk to Paul Bonacci. That's something they have never done. They have never interviewed the boy. And today [September 3, 2001] there was a big article here in the *Des Moines Register* about a retiring police detective. That police detective happened to be the one that worked on the Eugene Martin case [another, possibly related kidnapping.] And it said in this article that he would probably go to his grave not knowing what happened to these two boys. Well, part of the reason why they'll go to their grave not knowing is because they didn't investigate one of the key people who could have answered all of their questions. They refused to talk to Paul Bonacci. We have tried for many years to get them to sit down with him, so that he can tell them what happened.

TRACY: Is he still there in town? Is he available?

NOREEN: Paul Bonacci lives in Omaha, Nebraska, which is about two hours away. He would talk to them if they asked, but you see they don't, and the reason they don't is because they simply don't want the story of Eugene Martin and Johnny Gosch to come out. They do not want any implications towards anyone that they're trying to protect. That's sad to say, but that is the situation that I'm up against here. And my only hope and help is to be able to go public with everything that I know, and to remain in a public situation where I speak out about it, rather than cowering in silence. There’s safety in bringing out the truth. Are you familiar with John DeCamp. at all, and the Franklin Credit Union.? He’s a good fellow. He’s worked in this almost as long as I have. It will be 19 years Wednesday since Johnny was kidnapped, and John De Camp. came in to this in the 1980s, when Paul Bonacci, who was accused of another crime wrote a letter to him, and asked John DeCamp to come represent him. John agreed to represent him. And it was during one of their initial visits that Paul Bonacci told him that he had been in the car, and helped to kidnap Johnny.

TRACY: Did Bonacci mention anything about this pornography ring being linked to the CIA and Project MONARCH?

NOREEN: Yes, he did. He also told us that he was put into MONARCH training at a very young age, right at Offutt Air Force Base. Offutt is one of the training centers. I have also over the years received communication from some of the former Air Force men who worked at Offutt, and they confirmed what Paul Bonacci told me. Since I’ve gone public I get lots of information just by people contacting me, and these two gentlemen had worked at the Offutt Air Force complex during the 80s. They said that is where they brought kids to put them through the rigorous MK-ULTRA training.

TRACY: So, do you believe that’s what happened to your son as well?

NOREEN: Yes, that is the information we have, through Paul, through private investigators, and many years of searching, and interviewing other victims who were also with Johnny at many periods of time. They all reveal that he was put through the same training.

TRACY: Didn’t your son come back and visit you at some point in 1997?

NOREEN: In 1997, I had been on a network TV show just a couple of months before this had happened--the Lisa Gibbons program. She asked me if I wanted to give a special message to Johnny on the show, and so I did. I said to him that I just knew that he was alive, and that I would help him no matter what had transpired in his life. I gave my address on national television where he could find me. And within three months, there was a knock on my door at 2:30 in the morning. I about had a heart attack--seriously, I did. I could hardly believe my ears when I heard him say “It’s me.” I asked through the door who was there, and this voice said, “It’s me. It’s Johnny. It’s me, Mom.” And I looked out the peephole on the door, and our hallways are very well-lit at this apartment complex. I could see him out there, and his eyes had not changed. Yes, he was older, yes. He was grown-up and physically developed into a young man, but the eyes had not changed, and I knew it was my son. He did have a young man with him, and he did not volunteer his name, he did not want me to know who it was. They both came in, and we talked for about two hours. And I offered to have someone come who I felt I could trust, because I thought Johnny was home to stay. And when I said that I would call somebody, he became very alarmed. He said, “You don’t understand. No one can know I was here.

I'm bringing you information that I want you to take to law enforcement. Hopefully they will make some arrests. But no one can know it came from me just yet."

And so I promised him I wouldn't tell anybody, and I didn't. For two years, I told no one. My own mother didn't know. And it wasn't until I was in that court room in 1999, and John DeCamp. asked me the question, if I had seen or talked to Johnny in all of that time, and I had to answer, because the judge made me answer the question. There was a reporter in the room, so of course she wrote everything down. And I did take the information that I received from my son to the County Attorney. I asked for a special meeting. I just could not tell him that the informant who came forward was my son. I had to tell him that it was just someone else, because I did honor my son's request. And the police typically said they weren't sure what they would do with the information, if anything, which is always their response. And so I told them that I had my own attorney with me, because I felt that was what I needed for my own protection. I did inform the County Attorney that I had come in voluntarily, and shared my information with them, and so therefore they could never accuse me of withholding info. And I told them that they could conduct their investigation in any way they chose, and I would continue doing the same with mine.

TRACY: Did your son tell you all about the mind control?

NOREEN: Yes, he did. He told me that he had been subjected to mind control, and many of the horrendous things that he had been forced to do. He did, however, hold back on some of the information, I think probably out of embarrassment, you know, for himself, and some sensitivity for me. Because some of it would be pretty graphic, as you can probably understand.

TRACY: Did you understand that he had been sold as a prostitute to high-ranking businessmen and politicians?

NOREEN: That's correct. That's what he told me--that he had been used in that manner, and that his job was to compromise politicians, and any VIP that they felt they wanted to do that to.

TRACY: And were there Satanic rituals involved?

NOREEN: He only mentioned the Satanic rituals briefly. He didn't go into depth about them as far as the details of what they did, but he did say that was part of what they did, and that was also confirmed at an earlier date by Paul Bonacci, and the other victims that I have talked to. Because there have been others that have come forward besides Paul, but they did not want their name in the press. But they had also been part of this ring, and they had also been with Johnny on many occasions. And to date, we have interviewed 45 of them. We have quite a few, yeah. As you see, all of this information was presented to the police. All of this was given to them. And they still say that they do not want to talk to Paul Bonacci. They're just not interested.

TRACY: So the attitude of the police hasn't improved at all over the years?

NOREEN: No, it hasn't. They're content to leave this as an unsolvable case, and it's just the opposite. It's quite solvable, if they were willing to investigate Paul, and take the information that he has given, which is part of court transcripts where the judge ruled that he was telling the truth. If they would take that information and work, then they would have it. But they are not interested in doing that. I've even gone to the governor of our state, and the governor's response was, "Well, this is really none of my concern, two missing boys in Iowa." And then he suggested that I take my problem to the Department of Public Safety. Well, they do traffic lights. They do zoning for traffic situations. They help make those decisions for the city. So they won't help either. And yet for the Governor [Tom Vilsack], it is within his power. He could direct the department of criminal investigation to work on this. He has that power. But he has chosen not to. Now why do you suppose that is? I'll tell you why. We found out that this Governor is extremely close friends with the former governor of Nebraska [Bob Kerry], who was involved with this whole Franklin mess. They have been long-time friends. Our Governor brought Governor Kerry's sister over here and gave her a top key position here for six figures, and there was quite a collusion there.

TRACY: I've heard from a lot of proclaimed Project MONARCH victims that Presidents of the United States have been involved.

NOREEN: Yes, that's what I have heard as well. I've gotten a lot of help and a lot of information from John DeCamp, and another man is Ted Gunderson, who is a former FBI agent. He's one of the good guys, however. In the early 1980s he retired, and went into private practice as a private investigator, but he still has the connections to get information. So with his help, coming on board with Johnny's case, and John DeCamp with his knowledge of the Franklin situation, we were really fortunate, and we started putting the pieces of the puzzle together concerning Johnny. And we found out that Johnny's case is right smack in the middle of this whole Franklin situation. Law enforcement doesn't want to touch it. They don't want to touch it in Omaha, Nebraska, and they don't want to touch it in Iowa. They'd just as soon let this rest, and wish that I would just go away and forget about it. But you see, there were two young boys that were ripped off the street here in Des Moines, Iowa. My son first, and then within two years, Eugene Martin. Both boys are gone. Identical circumstances. We know that the cases are connected. And yet we have a governor who says that this is none of his concern. Don't you think that's a very odd statement by a politician who might want to get re-elected some day? Why is it not his concern? Why? Well, let's go back to his association with Nebraska. What is he possibly involved in that hasn't come out? I don't know. It's either one of three things: he's either incredibly stupid, incredibly naive, or he's involved in something, and he's hiding it to protect himself and/or his friends. I would choose the latter. Because you know he's not a stupid man, and he's not a naive man.

TRACY: It must make you very uncomfortable to know so many people in positions of power are involved in this somehow.

NOREEN: Oh, it does. It’s very disheartening when you realize that you’ve worked all these years, and you have the truth, and they choose not to accept it. When I went to the County Attorney, I was shocked. ‘Cause I took the transcripts from the court, and the judge said that Paul Bonacci was telling the truth. And he just looked at me and said, “Noreen, we just aren’t going to accept the judge’s ruling.” It took the wind out of me. I couldn’t believe it. I said: “Wait a minute, this is a Federal court ruling, doesn’t it apply in every state?” And he said, “Well, we’re just not going to accept it.” So then I appealed to the governor, and he told me the same thing, that this was none of his concern, and I should go to the Department of Public Safety. So, does this sound like passing the buck, shuffling the hot potato? It doesn’t take a rocket scientist to figure out what’s going on here in Des Moines, Iowa. I don’t have any qualms about saying this. I’ve said it on TV programs, I’ve said it in various articles where I’ve been interviewed, and I’m very cautious about my safety. But the public needs to know that this is going on, because it’s not only going on in Iowa, but no doubt other states, and if they could do this to me, and to my son, they can do it to anybody. The men who took my son, and Eugene Martin, and many other kids, have not been caught, have not been punished, and there is absolutely nothing to prevent them from striking here again, or in any city they choose.

TRACY: Did either Paul Bonacci or your son tell you that Michael Aquino was involved in this somehow?

NOREEN: That information first came from Paul Bonacci, who told us that Aquino--he kept referring to him as “The Colonel”--came to the location in Sioux City, Iowa, where they had held Johnny captive for about 14 days. That’s where they took the first pictures of him while he was being molested. And Paul Bonacci stated that he came there and gave the kidnappers cash for having done the job of kidnapping Johnny. He basically bought Johnny from them. And then he took Johnny with him to Colorado. The next time Paul Bonacci saw him was about a year later, at this Colorado location that he said belonged to the Colonel. Then we also heard the same information from probably 25 of the 45 other victims that we have talked to and interviewed.

TRACY: Do you know where this location was in Colorado?

NOREEN: It was a couple. They had one that was called a safe house, and it was kind of an old house up in the mountains of Colorado. *America’s Most Wanted* did a show on Johnny, and then they did five updates. And on one of those last updates, *America’s Most Wanted*, with Paul Bonacci, went to this location, and they filmed it, and it was on television. And they showed that in the basement they had cages where the kids were locked up when the adults would have to leave. That was just one of the houses. They had them in New Mexico and Arizona. They called them “safe houses.” But there was also living quarters there in Colorado. Kind of a ranch, they called it, where Aquino supposedly had his place, and they went to this place quite often, where they would have, you know, different activities planned. And the kids would be flown by plane to these locations for parties. They were also transported at night. They would drug the kids, and they would then sleep. They would just have them all in the back of the van, and they would travel to wherever they were going. They would travel by night, and then have the kids to the location the next day for one of their parties.

TRACY: I think I remember reading that there was a relative of Anton LaVey involved. I remember reading it. They said it was his son, "Michael LaVey."

NOREEN: Anton's son agreed to be filmed and interviewed by *20/20*. They were involved in much of the information gathering with their detectives. And during the interview with them LaVey said that he had been with Johnny on many occasions at the Satanic ritual ceremonies, where they serviced different men for their owners. And the only reason he agreed to speak in front of cameras was because the father is now dead. Then I found out very recently that Anton LaVey's daughter lived in Des Moines. She was here during the 90s. And Anton LaVey came to Des Moines and stayed here for quite some time prior to his death, which I did not know until about four months ago [May 2001].

TRACY: I'm really confused, because to my knowledge, Anton LaVey doesn't have any sons by that name. Is this an illegitimate child or something?

NOREEN: I don't know what the circumstances are, but there are two daughters and a son that I know of. I know of one man through a third party who dated one of his daughters. Since I've gone public with this aspect of the story, people hear about it, and they are very willing to contact me with the facts. That’s how I found out that his daughter had lived here. And then I did some checking on it with my detectives, and sure enough, he was here.

TRACY: Well, I’m really curious about this Michael LaVey character, because one of my good friends was friends with Anton LaVey. for years, and he’s the one who told me that Anton LaVey. doesn’t have a son named Michael. So I’m really interested in tracking this guy down, because either he’s lying about being Anton LaVey. son, or Anton LaVey’s. has a son that nobody knows about.

NOREEN: It’s very possible that he does have a son that nobody knows about, or that is not publicized. The information that I got on that was given to me by *20/20* after they had done the interview. And they had victims, 45 of them, all on tape talking about this whole thing, including MK-ULTRA, including all the sex, and prostitution, and pornography, and the Satanic rituals, which many of these kids participated in.

TRACY: And I presume that none of this footage got aired.

NOREEN: It hasn’t yet. They have a one-hour special called “The Johnny Gosch Show” ready to go, and I don’t know when they’re going to release it. I know that there have been other people who have tried to get the rights to it, and *20/20* won’t release it to anybody. They’re holding onto it. They want to wait until Johnny is located, and then they want to run it. They don't want to jeopardize his life any further. And within all that material is the LaVey interview.

TRACY: From your impression, what do you think the role of Satanism is in this? Do they really religiously believe in the Satan concept, or is this just kind of a fetish?

NOREEN: I think it's more a means of control of kids. That's what I think it is. Because, you know, you grab a kid from somebody, some little 12-year-old kid, and you take him away from his mom, his dad, everything he knows, his toys, his room, and you start to brainwash him. To start to break him down. You can tell him anything, at that point, and have him believe it, so that you can gain complete control of him. So that you could walk into a public place and know that he wouldn't run, because of what you've indoctrinated into him. All these young victims that have been kidnapped, like Johnny, they've been gone for over half their lives. They've been away from their families. This is all they've known. Their education stopped at 12. They have not been educated in any school. And the one thing that I learned from these victims, because I asked this question of just about all of them that I've talked to: When you got sick, or when you needed a dentist, what did they do? Did they take you to a dentist, to a doctor?" And the answer was the same with every kid. "Oh no. They wouldn't risk taking us to a doctor's office. They brought their doctors to us. They had their own." Further proving that pedophiles come in all sizes, shapes, and career levels. The medical profession is not exempt. But they had their own, and they brought them in, because, you know, think about it: kids are going to get sick.

They’re going to need medical care, they’re going to need things. And this is the answer we got from every single one of them.

TRACY: So what is it that binds all of these people together. Just an interest in pedophilia?

NOREEN: No. Money. Kiddy porn is a multi-billion dollar industry in this country. How did it get that way? Supply and demand. There are pedophiles that are rich enough that they don’t have to dirty their hands and go out and grab a kid, or solicit a kid. All they have to do is call somebody who supplies it to them, brings the kid to them. The internet is a new playground for pedophiles too.

TRACY: So you can order a kid online?

NOREEN: They have chat rooms. They go into chat rooms, and they begin to make an approach with children, begin to lure them into conversation. The reason I know this is ‘cause I work with an internet detective. He poses as a 13-year-old child in a chat room. He has pedophiles approach him. He learns the name of the pedophile, and in some cases, the pedophiles have even Federal Expressed airline tickets for him to travel to their home. As soon as he gets an identification, he contacts the National Center for Missing Children in Washington. They then contact the police and/or FBI in the town, and the arrest is made. They’ve brought down some pretty big ones in the last year. They got one of the top executives with Burlington Industries, and they got one of the top executives of Eastman Kodak.

TRACY: Burlington. Are those the people that make the coats?

NOREEN: Textiles. Mmm Hmm. Both cases were due to go to court in May [2001], and both executive plea bargained, probably pushed enough money around in the court, and they did not have to go through the court process. But that’s two biggies in this country, and they were caught by the internet. There’s another one that involved a pretty famous surgeon in the midwest. This is a doctor that you or I might go to and put our lives in his hands. He was arrested for luring a 13-year-old girl to a motel room for prostitution.

TRACY: So if money is the motivating factor, why is the CIA involved? Are they involved in the child pornography industry just to raise funds for their various projects?

NOREEN: That, and they were heavily into the mind control aspect of it. That’s how it all got started in the first place. The mind control, remote viewing, all of that was being used and taught to our spies for the purpose of protecting America. And then there were people within that organization that thought, “Oh, this would be cool. Let’s use it on kids.”

TRACY: So what they get out of it is the chance to experiment on children?

NOREEN: A lot of experimentation has gone on with kids, yes, as well as soldiers, and prisoners in our prisons. They've all been exploited over time. And the way this all got started, I'm sure that you're aware of the German scientists and how this whole mind control project developed in our country, or why we even have it.

TRACY: So when you met with your son for those few hours, did you see in his personality any evidence of this? Did it seem like he had multiple personalities?

NOREEN: Yes.

TRACY: Really?

NOREEN: I would say that he probably does. I didn't see too much of it displayed that night, but knowing how they work, knowing all that the other victims have told me, I do believe that it would have been difficult for him to have escaped it. Now, the only reason why Johnny is free now is because he and several other boys did escape in the late '80s. They stole a car in the city, and that's how they got away. They went to one of the boys' homes, Jimmy. He had been a runaway, and he was later grabbed by these guys. He got to know Johnny, as well as some of these other kids. When Jimmy took these kids to his father's home, he just told him that they were buddies of his that had needed a little help, a place to stay for a couple of nights. So his father let them stay there, gave them some meals, and then some of these kids, one of which was my son, moved on. Jimmy's parents didn't look too hard for him when he turned up missing, because he had run away in the past, and they just figured he'd turn up sooner or later. I've talked to this man many times. He's a CPA, a very well-respected man. He did not realize that the boy that was staying in his home was my son. He didn't realize it until he saw his picture on America's Most Wanted, which was just a couple of months later. At that point he called me, and he felt so terribly bad, because he said, "I had your son right here. I could have called you, but I didn't know it was your boy until I saw the show." And the man was quite reputable. Johnny did stay there. He was there. And I know the circumstances of his escape. That's probably the only reason why he's still alive. After these kids outlive their usefulness, are no longer marketable for prostitution and pornography, then there's only a couple of choices: they either make a break for it, or they're killed, or they're turned into perpetrators, and made a criminal.

So in Johnny's case, he and these other kids had the guts to try and get away. This is what some of these other victims have told me, that Johnny had tried repeatedly to get away, even shortly after he was captured, and that he took a lot of beatings because he kept trying to get away, to get back home. So this wasn't anything new, him fighting back, and trying to be free of them. If you're familiar at all with what happened to Paul Bonacci, when he came forward, people said that he was nuts. People said that he was not credible, wasn't telling the truth, that he was a dingbat. Multiple Personality Syndrome obviously meant he was nuts. John DeCamp. and I worked eleven years before we got the judge's ruling. Eleven years it took to get the ruling. Well, now, Johnny knows Paul Bonacci, so do all these other kids who have escaped. Johnny and these other kids are too afraid to come forward, seeing what was done to Paul for telling the truth. They saw him being charged with another crime, and having to spend five years in prison for just keeping quiet. I believe that these other boys and my son will come forward. I'm quite sure of that. It's because of the fear of the way that the system will treat them. Because they haven't done anything wrong. They were kidnapped. They were forced into this. And yet, they're afraid that they won't be believed.

TRACY: So what do you think it would take to bring your son back, to get him to come forward?

NOREEN: What it would take would be some high-profile publicity showing that the police actually took a hold of the information that was provided by Paul Bonacci, and are working it like they should have back in 1989 when Paul Bonacci first came forward. You see, we've spent over a decade here [now nearly two decades] that's been wasted.

TRACY: I suppose that if the police did finally decide to investigate this, and they chose a couple of individuals to prosecute, then Johnny could come forward, and he would receive immunity.

NOREEN: He would receive immunity, and also protection. Because that was his other big fear when he was here. He said I didn't understand why he couldn't just stay here. You know, "It's over. You're back home. We'll go to a county attorney in the morning, we'll talk it over, blah blah blah." He said, "Mom, you don't understand. There are so many of the high officials in this country that are involved in this. I know because I've been with them. They're involved in this. What makes you think my life would be safe if I was in their hands? They would kill me for what I know." He said, "Your life is not safe either, for all that you're doing, and coming out publicly. You have to be very, very careful." And that was the other reason he did not want me to tell anyone that he had been here, for as long as I could possibly keep it. And I will have to tell you, when my mother found out that Johnny had been here, that I hadn't told her, she was absolutely shocked that I could keep it silent, and tell no one, absolutely no one. When I had to live with that for two years, and try to figure out a way to help my son without jeopardizing him, it was very hard for me, because I didn't know who I could turn to, or if I could turn to anyone and trust them. My attorney did not know Johnny had been here. When we went into that meeting, he believed, just like the county attorney was told, that there was an informant that had come forward with this information. Because when I went into that meeting, I turned over a list of names of people that were involved, what their part was, how they kidnapped Johnny, how they selected him, where they took him, the house where they had him, who came and bought him, every bit of it was given to the county attorney. And all I told him was that an informant had come forward. I was not at liberty to tell him that it was my son, because it would have jeopardized Johnny's life, and he was my first priority.

TRACY: Can you name some of the names that were on that list, besides people that we've already mentioned?

NOREEN: I can't, at this time, because these people have not been charged with a crime. The county attorney has them. The police have them. But if I name them publicly, then they can come after me with slander and/or any kind of libel suit.

TRACY: But these are nationally-known figures, some of them.

NOREEN: Some of them are, yes. Some are local.

TRACY: Did you come across any information indicating that some of the revenue being derived from this child prostitution was being funneled to the Nicaraguan Contras?

NOREEN: We did come across some of that information. That was provided to me by Karen Burns, at ABC's *20/20*. You see, when *20/20* stepped into this, and asked for exclusive rights to do a one-hour special on Johnny's story, they had someone investigate, so that we could get the information that we needed, close the case, and then I could go to the county attorney and say, "This is what we've learned." Well, when I did that, we know what resulted. They said they wouldn't accept it, or the judge's ruling.

TRACY: Do you think *20/20* would be willing to talk about this show that's in the can right now?

NOREEN: No. There have been others that have tried to get information out of them, and they say, "Oh no. There's no story there." And there are a number of reasons why they don’t want to talk about it. I have one young man who told me that he tried to get the story. He’s also with ABC, but just another show, and they wanted to do the Johnny Gosch special. So they went to *20/20*, and they were told: “Back off the Gosch story. It’s classified. No one else can have it, and *20/20* owns it.” He represents a different show on ABC, and he was quite upset that he couldn’t get it.

TRACY: Yeah, I’m surprised that they wouldn’t even talk about it.

NOREEN: They’re not ready to do their thing yet, and so they’re not going to give a clue to anybody else.

TRACY: Oh, if they talk about it then some other show will do it, and that’s what they don’t want.

NOREEN: Yes. Then they’ll be scooped. And that’s why they’re keeping a tight lid on it.

TRACY: But if they aired the show, it might blow this whole thing wide open, and that might make the atmosphere safe for Johnny to come back.

NOREEN: That’s exactly right. I have a feeling that there’s been perhaps some involvement by the CIA or the FBI here too. When *America’s Most Wanted* was preparing to do Johnny’s story, just days before the show was to air, the FBI called

America's Most Wanted, called John Walsh, as a matter of fact, and told them to kill the Gosch story. And Paul Sparrow, who was the producer at that time, called me and said that he had talked to John Walsh, and they decided they were going to do the show regardless, even though the FBI was threatening them. But the FBI did not want the information that I was going to give to go nationwide. They wanted to kill the story. That came first-hand from John Walsh and the producer. That's another red flag: why would the FBI want to cancel the Gosch story? Why would they find it so threatening--the information that Paul had to share? You have to ask these questions, because it makes people start to think, "Wow, what if it would have been my kid, or my nephew, or my niece that had been taken, and the parent did all that Noreen has done, and this is what they do?" I am not a person who has ever been a conspiracy theorist. I was not even into reading about them. I know there are plenty of books out there, but I had not even delved into anything like this. When Johnny was kidnapped, it happened in such a swift manner, from the time that he left the house, that I knew the kidnappers were organized. I knew there were two of them, from the witnesses.

What I didn't know (and it took many years, and the help of John DeCamp. and Ted Gunderson, and some detectives from 20/20, and my own detectives) was that it was tied to this level of prostitution and pornography. I knew when they took my son, they weren't going to take him to Disneyland to show him a good time. I knew that it had something to do with sexual abuse of children, of course. But I had no idea that it was that sophisticated in our country, let alone the fact that they used mind control on the kids. I mean, this isn't something that you just pick up any paper and find out about. In fact, back in the ‘80s, no one even said the word “pedophile.” I knew there had been sexual abuse of children, beause I saw it in the news, but no one used the word “pedophile.” I didn’t even know what it meant. I had no clue what the word meant until my son was taken.

Then I got another eye-opener when I went to Washington D.C. in 1984, and I was called in to testify before the organized crime hearings. At that hearing, the FBI presented physical evidence as well as testimony. They had a table full of paraphernalia that had been confiscated from pedophiles. On the table were books on how to molest toddlers and leave no marks, how to lure a child to a car. These were all bound books. Somebody went to the trouble of publishing them. And then there were sexual torture toys--that type of thing. But the book that startled me the most was a small book, it was kind of like a spiral bound thing, and in it there were lots of pictures of kids. But these were kids that had not been kidnapped yet. It was like a catalogue. And everyone there at the senate hearing, the press, everybody was shocked. And yet, after the presentation of this, our congress did nothing. It was like the senate hearing was just an exercise for the day. “Well, OK, let’s get all these parents, and let’s do something to make everybody feel good, make them think we’re going do something.” But they never did. Johnny was photographed before he was kidnapped. Johnny was photographed on his way home from school.

TRACY: And wasn’t one of the people involved in the kidnapping posing as a policeman before it happened, and talking to your son?

NOREEN: Yes, at a football game.

TRACY: Do you know who that was, then?

NOREEN: It was a West Des Moines policeman.

TRACY: So it *was* a policeman?

NOREEN: It was a policeman, and he paid particular attention to Johnny.

TRACY: So there were other members of the police department involved from the very beginning.

NOREEN: I'm sure that there were, yes. And this particular officer would not consent to being interviewed by our detective.

TRACY: Since you've delved into conspiracy literature and the subject of Project MONARCH, do you buy into any of the theories involving the Illuminati--that this is some secret occult brotherhood that goes back thousands of years? Do you entertain those thoughts at all?

NOREEN: I think there's a distinct possibility that some of the people involved in this could very well involve themselves in that. But there's probably also a lot of them that work these kiddy porn situations that are not, that simply do it for the money, or the trade-off in drugs, or whatever else they're getting in exchange for the use of children. So I think you might have a mixed bag there. I've done a lot of reading on the Illuminati. I don't discount it. I believe that it exists, and that they intend to bring the New World Order, but I just don't believe that all pedophiles necessarily fall under that umbrella. I think we have too many that are creative and find ways to use kids as innovatively as they can.

TRACY: Did you come across any information that in addition to kidnapping children, they raise them, they breed them for this purpose?

NOREEN: Yes, we came across information that there were breeder mothers whom they have impregnated for the designed purpose of bearing children to be kept within this organization. Therefore there are no birth records that they can trace, like they can with somebody missing. They make sure that there is nothing recorded. Many of these are babies that are sacrificed within their Satanic rituals. And I've heard this from a lot of the victims. In the back of my book, I invite victims of this horrible thing to contact me, and I give my email address, and I answer all emails. I was just deluged. I was getting 50 emails a day. And many of those came from victims who are now adults that have been through the multi-generational abuse, that weren't kidnapped like Johnny was, but nevertheless as children, this was the way they had to live. And they bear the scars, emotionally, because of all that they were put through.

TRACY: Have any of your informants come up with a name for this organization, or is it just a number of different ones?

NOREEN: It’s a number of different ones that operate throughout the country. This particular one that was involved in taking Johnny was based out of Omaha, Nebraska. That’s just one. But there’s more. They ship the kids around. It’s an international situation. And yet you’ll have politicians, you’ll have the FBI stand up in front of a microphone and say crime is going down these days, that crime against children is on the down-sweep. Well, that just isn’t true.

TRACY: Are they not counting these?

NOREEN: They’re not counting them, right. They’re not recording them properly. Because when a child is taken, and moved from one place to another, that constitutes abduction, that constitutes kidnapping. When a child has been molested, and many times, murdered, the charge that is given to the man that is caught, if they catch him, is Murder One. The fact that the child was kidnapped first and sexually abused beforehand are minor charges that come down later. So they’re not always caught in the record-keeping of kidnapping. And those types of crimes are cases where it is maybe a pedophile who is acting alone. He’s not operating within a big organization. I call him your garden variety.

The ones that live in Our Town, USA all their lives. And they might be the guy that volunteers for the scouting, or whatever, just so that they can get close to kids. And they molest over, and over, and over, and they get the kids to keep quiet. And then you have the ones that kill. And finally you have the ones that belong to these organizations.

I’ve had to go to five different prisons since Johnny was taken, to meet with inmates, to get information. The one that I will never forget, that still raises the hair on the back of my neck happened to be a serial killer. He had molested little kids, girls, and he had also killed them. But he had information, so I went to see him. During our conversation he gave me all the information he thought he could, and I said to him: “I have to know why you killed those children. Because you wore a ski mask, so they didn’t know who you were. They couldn’t identify you. So why kill them?” And he got this smile on his face, and he said: “You don’t understand. At the moment my victims know that I’m going to kill them, that look of fear in their eyes, that is my turn-on.” Well, I never forgot the look on that guy’s face. He’s not much above an animal in the way that he would hunt down a child like it was his prey. But the look of fear in the eyes of a child, when they know they are going to die, that is his turn-on. It made me sick. All I wanted to do was go out and take a shower after being in that room with him. But see, how many of those do we have running around the country? I don’t know what the estimated number of serial killers is, or if they even know.

TRACY: So do you think this is what happens to most kids that disappear?

NOREEN: I think it happens to a great number of kids that disappear, and nobody looks. They write it off as a runaway, or a case that can't be solved. Most of the guys that were on Johnny's case from the beginning have either retired, or they have died now. So we've got a new, younger crop of men that are at the department. They have young kids. They are raising families. They know that they don't want their kids hurt. So they are a little more sympathetic to me. I have one detective in particular. He has twin sons, and he has been very good. He has tried to talk to the police chief. The new police chief, by the way, is from Omaha, Nebraska, and a good friend of the old police chief from Omaha. He begged his chief to start a task force within the department to do nothing but work on Johnny's case and Martin's case until they were solved. He was told by the police chief to stop trying to help Noreen solve this case. In other words, "Back off." And the detective said, "Why?," and he said "We don't want this to go any further." Well, he came to me to tell me that. He said that: "If you ever bring it out publicly with my name, I'll have to deny it to protect myself." But he said, "You need to know what you're up against. They're not going to help you. They're not going to do one thing with the information that you have worked so hard to get, and that you've proven to a court of law in Nebraska. They're just simply not going to do it, because they don't want this case to go any further." That came directly from the police detective. He came to me with this after I had published the book, otherwise it would have been in the book, just without using his name.

TRACY: It must make you feel kind of hopeless.

NOREEN: Well, it doesn't make me feel that it's going to end any time soon, but I keep hoping. I have a great deal of faith. I'm very strong. And I just can't believe that there's a supreme being in the universe, a god, that would let you go through all this, and let you work this hard to try and find the answers to help your child, and along the way do the work that I've done to help other kids--I just don't believe that this could be allowed without finally being given a resolution of some kind. I already have the knowledge of what happened to him. The resolution is what's beyond my grasp right now.

TRACY: Do you believe he's safe now?

NOREEN: All I know is that he's hiding, and that's what he has to do to remain safe right now. So I know he's probably not living the kind of life that I would want for him, you know, like in a nice home, with education, and maybe a nice wife with kids. Because he's almost 30 [now 38]. He's probably living hand-to-mouth, with very little money, just trying to get by. Nobody wants that for their kids. It kind of hurts me to know that I've got one son out there that has the bare minimum of what most people would consider adequate living. Now that I know that he's away from them, I know that he's not being mistreated anymore, so that's a comfort. But he can't come home for dinner. He can't come home for Christmas. He's too afraid to even come near the family. He's afraid they'll grab him. What all the victims have told me is that after they kidnap the kid, after they've given them the initial drugs, and their first sexual abuse contact, they take them out and they force them to commit a felony. And therefore they have leverage. They tell the kids, "You try to get away, and we'll turn you in. If you try to get away, you can never go to a police person to help you, because you’ve committed a felony. You’re wanted.” And you tell a twelve-year-old kid that, they’re going to believe you. If that’s all you’ve been told, from the time you were ripped away from your parents, you would live in that fear. You would not go to a policeman for help.

The Franklin Cover-Up: An Interview with John DeCamp

John DeCamp is the author of *The Franklin Cover-Up*., and a former Nebraska State Senator. He has been a good friend to Noreen Gosch and a colleague to Ted Gunderson. This interview took place over the phone on October 3, 2001.

TRACY: Would you first tell me briefly how you came to investigate “the Franklin Cover-Up”?

JOHN: Purely accident. I was hearing some of the stories on the street from some of the senators, and I was one of the first ones to stand up and say, “This is absolute nonsense, and this couldn’t be, and if I really believed any of this, I’d be the first to do something about it.” So I got a call then from a kid who was in jail named Paul Bonacci, who asked me to at least come see him and talk to him. I went to see him, talked to him, talked to a psychiatrist sent by the state to examine him, ’cause they thought he was acting strange. He was a multiple personality. I became convinced that I should look further, and kept looking, and once I got involved, I just kept getting deeper and deeper. I ended up representing a number of the children involved. So I started out on the opposite side completely.

TRACY: Did you come to the conclusion that what was happening to these kids in Nebraska, where they were getting kidnapped and being used as prostitutes, was an outgrowth of Project MONARCH?

JOHN: I came to the conclusion that for sure some of the children who were truly involved in this--and for every real one, there's somebody who makes up their own story or something--but anyway, for every kid legitimately involved, there always seemed to be a linkage or a relationship to some sexual improprieties, and compromise, that being a key ingredient of MONARCH. Of course, [former CIA Director William] Colby, who was kind of my best friend and mentor, assured me that there was no such thing as MONARCH officially; that's the name the kids knew the program by, but that was not the official name, and you won't find anything in the official record by that name.

What he did say, however, was, after the Korean War, the American CIA and the American government, in fact, were very terrified. We [the CIA] believed that the ability of other countries, particularly China, Russia, North Korea, at "brainwashing," as it was known at the time, and mind control was developed to such a degree, that, he said, "I know this sounds silly, and you'll laugh when I tell you, but we at the Company (meaning the CIA) actually believed that the Russians had developed techniques so that they could put someone in the same room with, let's say, the President of the United States, and through E.S.P. actually know what he's thinking. And you can imagine how dangerous that was, and we decided we couldn't afford to be behind. For the very salvation of the country we had to catch up. And so millions and billions were poured into these programs," and he said, "I'm sure there were some horrible abuses, but that wasn't the intent." The intent was to "save the country." And then he said one other thing. He made particular mention of one fact. He said, “I’ll tell you one thing, John. When all is said and done, we were never behind, and we aren’t today.”

TRACY: What role do you think Satanism played in “the Franklin Cover-Up”. and Project MONARCH? Some people seem to be of the opinion that it was just used as a mind-control technique to traumatize the children.

JOHN: I think that’s probably a fair statement. I don’t know. I don’t claim to know enough about any of this. I don’t now if there’s a Satan, but I know that there are cults that claim to be Satanists, and they do some pretty bizarre things. I’m always one of those who’s the opposite of the conspiracy theorists. I look for practical explanations for virtually everything.

TRACY: So you don’t think that all these people were part of a particular group or cabal of occultists?

JOHN: Not particularly. I find that difficult to believe, but I’ll admit that I don’t know. All I know is that there are some horrible things that are happening to some young people. It did happen, and I’m sure it’s still going on: the combination of mind control, using techniques from some of the “Satanism-type activities,” or whatever. One of the key things involved creating multiple personalities. As I understand it, you can create a personality that’s literally like a robot, that does what you want, or can be programmed for particular activities, and I am quite certain from talking to enough people, and seeing enough information that such techniques exist. What banner they run under, whether it be Satanism in some occasions, or mind control, or military intelligence, or National Security, or whatever, I think it boils down to the same thing. The most malleable mind of all is that of a young person, particularly someone about 11-15 years old. You get the right material, or tool, or equipment, and you apply the right techniques, which seem to almost inevitably involve things that we would normally consider sexual aberrations, and then you throw in some other techniques learned over the ages, and particularly the practice of skills by some of the better psychiatrists, or psychologists, or whatever, involving some drug use, and pretty soon you have a mixture of a product that you can breed horrible creatures with--people who will do what you want and accomplish certain goals.

.

TRACY: Do you think that this is what happens to most of the children that go missing? That they're inducted into these pornography rings.

JOHN: I don't know. Certainly some are. Whether that's what happens to most or whatever I don't know.

TRACY: Don't you think it's strange that so many public officials and wealthy businessmen are involved in this type of activity, like child prostitution, and particularly that they seem to be interested in homosexual activity with male children? That just seems so out of proportion to the rest of society.

JOHN: I think it’s a fair statement what you just said. There seems to be an inordinate percentage of individuals that adhere to a little different sexual code who are involved in these particular practices. Whether they got into them, and then got compromised into staying in them, I don’t know. But when you just start looking you certainly start seeing a disproportionate percentage. But then, you’re talking about some pretty strange practices too.

TRACY: Yeah, I just was wondering why people in positions of power seem to be predisposed to this.

JOHN: I don’t really know. I just know that if you were doing a study, that’s one of the things that you would first take note of. There seems to be an inordinate percentage of that particular cast of characters, when you’d think normally that it should be quite the opposite. It should be the dregs of society that you’d find involved in this, and instead, so typically the most shocking surprise is when you discover that the personalities involved are often the best and brightest and most respected, and most trusted.

TRACY: So in your position now I imagine you still deal with a lot of people who are in politics or who are wealthy businessmen. Does this make you wary of them.

JOHN: Oh, not more than anybody else, no.

TRACY: Do you think that some of the money for these activities was used for secret government operations, or Contra Aid, things of that nature?

JOHN: I believe that it's fairly well known. I don't think there's any contest among those that know that the CIA, and to a degree the FBI, determined for a significant period of time that they were vested with the responsibility to save the country, and that the politicians were kind of incompetent, and they needed a funding source where they wouldn't have to be accountable. That was the key thing. They needed a funding source where they didn't have to be accountable to Congress in explaining what they were doing, and that resulted in things such as arms dealing and drug dealing, whether being on the fringes of it, or making sure that it could occur, and then getting a pay-off. I have no doubt in my mind today, painful as it is for me to say it, that the CIA engaged in this conduct.

But the problem started when they decided that they had to save the country because the politicians were too dumb, and they couldn't get the necessary funds to do what they thought they had to do. Of course, any time you go off on that track, then you have the abuses crop in, and what was a noble goal turns into a whole bunch of stealing and theft, and that sort of thing. And that's what I believe occurred. It was the old "end justifies the means" thing that got out of control, the end being that "we have to protect the country from the bad people, and we're the secret agency vested with the responsibility, but we don't have enough funds, because politicians aren't smart enough to know that we have to do these things, and so we have to have a funding source where we don't have to explain anything.” Well, what’s the funding source? The most quick, easy, available funding source to get that kind of money without having to explain anything is drugs.

TRACY: And prostitution.

JOHN: Oh yes.

The Finders: An Interview with Ted Gunderson

Ted Gunderson is the author of *How to Locate Anyone Anywhere Without Leaving Home*. He is a former FBI Special Agent, radio talk show host, and expert on Satanic conspiracies. This interview took place on August 25, 2001.

TRACY: I know you worked for the FBI. How did you first get introduced to the subject of Project MONARCH?

TED: Right after I retired, I opened a private investigative firm in Westwood, Los Angeles, California, which is by the UCLA campus, and my first major investigation was the Geoffrey MacDonald case. He's a former Green Beret doctor who was convicted of murdering his wife and two children at Fort Bragg. The murders occurred on February 17th, 1970. Anyway, I got involved in that investigation, and I had 19 witnesses. It's probably the most highly publicized legal trial case in the history of the United States other than maybe O.J. Simpson's. Within 10 months, as a matter of fact, on October 25, 1990, I obtained a signed confession from the girl who said that it was her Satanic cult group that was involved in the murders. He did not commit the crime.

Now once you get involved in such a case, the first thing you're going to do is look at the evidence, look at the testimony, see where evidence was lost, stolen, destroyed, and altered by the government. The Satanic cult group that was involved in the murders was also involved in a large-scale drug operation, bringing drugs in military planes, including

C.I.A., from Southeast Asia into the various bases in this country during the Vietnam War. And the cult that wiped out the family went in without the permission of the higher-ups in their operation, which included police officers, two attorneys in Fayetteville, North Carolina, and high-level military personnel. The cult did not obtain permission from them to do that. They went in randomly and did this. And the higher-ups in the military were afraid that if there was an investigation of the cult it would expose the whole drug operation. By the way, there's documentation in *Time Magazine*, January 1, 1973 about the drug operation. Anyway, the girl gave me the confession. By the way, she died January 1983 under mysterious circumstances.

TRACY: How'd she die?

TED: She was in her apartment, and she died of slight pneumonia, weak lungs, and cirrhosis of the liver. She had called us about two weeks earlier and said that she was under surveillance by two guys in suits in the neighborhood. She was nude from the waist down, and the kitchen faucet was running. That's a Satanic sign, by the way.

TRACY: Why's that? What does it mean?

TED: The signs that they are involved with are Earth, Wind, Fire, Water, and then a combination of all of those. Those are just part of their ritual, you know. Anyway, her six-month-old child was on the floor, dehydrated, but alive, and did survive. I don't know what happened to the kid, but she died that way. So anyway, I went public with the information, and I was on a number of major TV talk shows. I was on CNN debating Freddy Casaba. I was on a number of other shows, like *Geraldo*, and also on radio talk shows. I came forward with this information that Dr. MacDonald did not commit these murders. They were committed by a Satanic cult group. So as a result of that, people just virtually came out of the woodwork from all over the country. People who didn't know each other from the East Coast, West Coast, South, North, and so forth, and told me about the Satanic cult groups in this country. A lot of them were victims themselves--adult survivors, we call them. So that was my introduction into what was going on, and I'm saying to myself, "If somebody from New Hampshire is furnishing me with the same information as somebody from California, and they don't know each other, I mean, there's got to be something to this.

So then from there, I was involved in other cases, including a case from Nebraska. It's called *The Franklin Cover-Up*. That case involved military training at Offutt Air Force Base. I ended up talking to some of the kids who were victims themselves, talking about the MK-ULTRA mind control program. They received their training at the base. They opened up to me. They told me all about their training. I have documentation of it. It's in a book called *The Franklin Cover-Up* by John DeCamp, a former State Senator in Nebraska. So anyway, in that case, it not only involves MK-ULTRA, but it involves a large-scale kidnapping ring. One of the kids that's been talking to us and giving us a lot of information is Paul Bonacci. One of the victims was a twelve-year-old newspaper boy named Johnny Gosch, who was kidnapped on his paper route in Des Moines, Iowa. It involves some of the leading people, and businessmen, and so forth, in Omaha, Nebraska., such as the publisher of the *Omaha World-Herald*. His name is Harold Anderson. It involves the Society Editor of the *Omaha World-Herald*. They were identified by the kids. It involves a fellow name Eugene Mahoney who was the head of the Forestry Service, who was on the Vice Squad of the Omaha Police Department. And these kids identified these people as involved in not only their training at Offutt Air Force Base, but also in the Satanic movement. This large-scale kidnapping ring was kidnapping kids all over the country. They were being held in safe houses after they were kidnapped. Some of them were auctioned off in Toronto, Canada, some of them were auctioned off here in Las Vega, Nevada. I've talked to, and have in my hip pocket, Rusty Nelson, who was the lead photographer for the group. He's been identified as involved, of course, and he has thousands of photographs of sexual exploitation and sexual involvement by some of America's leading politicians.

TRACY: Like who?

TED: George Bush, Sr.

TRACY: So you've seen these pictures of George Bush sexually abusing children?

TED: Yeah. Well, he's got them involved in sexual exploitation. I haven't seen the pictures yet because they're in a cave in Colorado. Rusty Nelson's in Oregon, and if we ever get enough money, we'll go over there and pull these pictures out.

TRACY: Do you know where this stuff is located?

TED: No, Rusty is the only one that knows. It's at about 12,000 feet. So the only time you can go in there is the spring or the summer. You can't go in there in the winter. But anyway, he's got the pictures. We are talking about a large-scale pedophile ring, and a large-scale kidnapping ring. The ring, by the way, is known as "The Finders." It's a CIA covert operation running out of Washington, D.C. I have a copy of a U.S. Treasury report on an investigation of the Finders that was quashed and closed down. The FBI refused to investigate it.

TRACY: Why are they called "The Finders"?

TED: Because that's just a cover name for finding children, and actually what they're doing is picking them up and kidnapping them. It's part of the Satanic cult movement in this country today. The Satanic cult movement dovetails with U.S. intelligence to some degree. It's like any other organization: there's good and bad in every organization of people. They, in addition to being involved in this kidnapping ring, were taking kids out of Boy's Town, and out of foster homes and orphanages, and flying them out of Sioux City, Iowa to Washington, D.C. for sex orgy parties with congressmen and senators. Massachusetts Senator Barney Frank has been identified by the kids, and George Bush Senior has been at the parties while he was Vice-President. He became more discreet as time went on, I guess. That's my introduction to it--a combination of those two cases, and going public with the information, and these people just coming from everywhere.

TRACY: You're saying that there are large elements of the CIA, and the government in general that are part of a Satanic cult. Is it just a number of Satanic cults, or is there one large organization?

TED: No, that's hard to define and clarify. First of all, you have to go back. When I learned about this, I started saying to myself, "Well, why, how, when, what, and where?" So as a result of my research I learned about an organization called the Illuminati. And I've got all sorts of information about the Illuminati. The Illuminati was an organization founded in 1776 in Germany, and its purpose was to take over the world. A fellow named Adam Weishaupt set forth 24 goals at the request of the Rothschild family out of England. And the goals were to control the mainstream media, to corrupt the youth through sex and drugs, to put their own people as agents behind the scenes, to put them in as leaders, etc. Anyway, that's what it's all about. And their activities dovetail with the Satanic movement, into the U.S. intelligence community, the CIA in particular. I think that the deterioration of the FBI over the last 25 years or so is the reason. I think it's the Illuminati. I think the FBI's been used as a political pawn. When I got on in 1979 we were not involved in politics whatsoever. We used to tell the Attorney General to go jump in a lake when he would call up and tell us to do something ridiculous.

TRACY: So, did you not know about any of this when you were working for the FBI?

TED: Not a thing. It was only after I got out and started operating on my own that I learned what was going on.

TRACY: Did you then reflect on some of your experiences in the FBI and realize that there might have been some connections?

TED: No, I didn't, because when I was in the FBI, I never ran across this. I think that's what's happened since then. In my day the FBI was a straight organization. We didn't have any problems like they're having now. We didn't have any Wacos. We didn't have any Oklahoma Cities--which is a cover-up, by the way. McVeigh was a political pawn, just like Lee Harvey Oswald. We didn't have any Ruby Ridges. We did have the Kennedy Assassination. I did learn, since I got out, by the way, that that was a joint CIA-Chicago mob hit. Of course, I have all kinds of information about the CIA involved in drugs. I mean, you know, Iran-Contra is an example of it. All this information just kind of melds in and dovetails, and one element is scratching the back of the other element.

TRACY: So would you say that the CIA has been under the control of the Satanic Illuminati since the very beginning?

TED: No, not from the beginning. Like with the FBI, I think it's happened in the last 25 years. I think they've been infiltrated by this Illuminati movement, and again that dovetails with the Satanic movement, and you're talking about human sacrifices. I'll give you an example. Here about a month ago [September 2001], in a two-day period we had about 14 children disappear here in Las Vegas. It was on the news, then it was on one time on ABC, and then nobody ever heard any more about it. So when I heard about it, I called the Metro police here. First of all, I called my informant, who was the official photographer in Nebraska for the group back there. By the way, he's been arrested, and he's on bail, and he's on probation right now for pornography. I called him, and he told me about the landing strip that's out in Las Vegas where they were flying these kids out of. So I called the Metro police here in Las Vegas, and I told them: "Look, I have information that they were flying kids out of here, 10 or 12 years ago, at least, but it's certainly worth looking into today, and if you want to send somebody over to the house, I'll be happy to sit down with them and give you all the information on it. It's a landing strip in between here and Pahrump, Nevada. Pahrump is about 50-60 miles away, out in the country some place.

TRACY: Yeah, Art Bell is out of Pahrump.

TED: By the way, he sued me. Oh yeah, I'm the guy. Remember when he went off the air? He blamed me for all of that. But it was a BS lawsuit. He claimed that I made statements about him being a child molester, and I never did. But anyway, that's another story. Anyway, I called Metro, and said I have this information, and well, I haven't heard from them yet. Doesn't it kind of make you wonder about what's going on? Why wouldn't they look into that right away, when you've got missing kids, you know?

TRACY: I don’t know, but it seems like they don’t take the whole missing kid thing seriously in the first place.

TED: That’s because too many people are involved. *Reader’s Digest* in July, 1982 had an article about 100,000 children who disappear every year and are never heard from again. Well, I mean, that’s serious. And we’re not talking about runaway teenagers. We’re talking about 2-to-7-year-old kids. And they’ve covered it up.

TRACY: So you think most kids that are kidnapped are being taken by the Satanists?

TED: Oh, there’s absolutely an international child-kidnapping ring. These kids are auctioned off on the auction block for $50,000 each. Anywhere from actually $15,000-$50,000, according to Rusty Nelson.

TRACY: And where’s all this money going? What’s it being used for?

TED: It’s going into the pockets of these individuals, you know, the Illuminati members, and others.

TRACY: Are all these kids, you think, being mind-controlled as well?

TED: Yeah, that’s part of the program. In Des Moines, Iowa we got the Johnny Gosch case, the newspaper boy. His mother, Noreen has been involved in this research. John

DeCamp has been involved in this research. We’re talking about reputable people. I’m a reputable individual. Nobody listens to us, but we’re out there shouting from the rooftops.

TRACY: Did you talk about Project MONARCH and the government and stuff when you went on the *Geraldo* show?

TED: No, I talked about Satanic cults. I was on four of his shows, and I was on a show with Michael Aquino. He’s been accused. In fact, Johnny Gosch told his mother that Aquino was one of the kidnappers, that Michael Aquino was the one that bought him.

TRACY: And Noreen Gosch also says that there’s someone named Michael LaVey who told her this, Anton’s son. But Anton LaVey doesn’t have a son by that name, officially.

TED: Anton LaVey does have a son. He’s been castrated.

TRACY: Excuse me?

TED: Yeah. Anton LaVey has a son called Anton LaVey, Jr. And you know he died a couple of years ago. I got the documentation. I’ve got 216,000 pages of documentation on MK-ULTRA. I receive probably four or five phone calls a week from these people, because they’re all looking for help. I mean, they’re desperate people.

TRACY: Now, do you believe all these people, or do you think there are some people that are just trying to get attention?

TED: Half and half. Some I believe, some I don't, some I think are plants. I've had a number of people planted on me.

TRACY: So there is a lot of harassment.

TED: Harassment? Oh my God, are you kidding me? It's unbelievable. I go to get in my car, and the direction signal's turned on in the morning. They used to run surveillance on me until I started chasing them out of the neighborhood. I'd put my gun on them and go after them. That happened twice, and I got them cornered one time, and I reached under the seat for my gun, and there was too much traffic. Maybe I would've shot them, maybe I wouldn't. Who knows. But anyway, they realized "This guy's crazy. We'd better stay away from him." So now what they do is these little tactics like come into my hotel room when I travel and leave little signs. And I've been burglarized here in my house. They took some of my research. "They" are probably joint CIA-covert operations. These people are highly-trained and professional burglars and assassins, or killers. I knew the head of George Bush, Sr.'s assassination squad. He had 3000 men around the world he could call on to do their dirty deeds.

TRACY: The President had an assassination squad?

TED: Oh yeah, they all do. The current Bush President [George W. Bush] probably has one, I’m sure. Clinton had one too. They operate out of the White House. It’s the National Security Council. The NSC doesn’t answer to anybody but the President.

TRACY: With President Clinton and all of the women that he was involved with, do you think a lot of those were mind-controlled sex slaves?

TED: Not only Clinton, but I think past Presidents. Brice Taylor says that she’s had sex with every one of them except Jimmy Carter since she was 15 or 16 years old.

TRACY: Aren’t there a lot of people in the entertainment industry involved as well?

TED: There are some. I don’t know if there are a lot. But I worked the McMartin case. I’m the guy that went in there in 1990 in the spring and hired an archaeologist, and we found the tunnels under the school. The kids said there were tunnels under the school.

TRACY: What exactly did they look like?

TED: Well, they were tunnels that had been filled in. We were there for 34 days with the whole team of archaeologists.

TRACY: Was this covered by the news at all at the time?

TED: Yeah, but the mainstream media wasn't going to touch it. Nobody would do anything with it. The *Los Angeles Times* had one article on it.

TRACY: Did you find carcasses or skeletons of animals?

TED: We found 2000 animal bones. We did not find any human bones. We had everything analyzed. It cost thousands of dollars. I spent personally $17,000 out of my pocket on that project, and then some of the companies that worked with us donated their time, and we had monetary donations from others. Anyway, I'm the guy that went in there and found the tunnels, so I'm not too popular with my adversaries. And yes, those kids identified some actors. One was Chuck Norris, whom they said was involved.

TRACY: So, do you think that's likely to be true, or do you think that's just something that they told the kids?

TED: Oh, I don't think there's any question that the kids were telling the truth. Because they [officials?] said that they were hallucinating, but the kids talked about tunnels under the school, they talked about being flown up into the mountains. Well, I know the abandoned Satanic site in Crestmount, I've got pictures of it. And I went up there and took pictures, and when the case broke I called Dale Reuben, the prosecutor, and I said, "I think I know where the kids were taken." She wasn't interested. Nobody wanted to look at it. And the kids said there were tunnels under the school. There *were* tunnels under the school--they'd been filled in, and I have a 186-page report by the archaeologists that documents it. This wasn’t me going out and digging. I’m just an investigator. This was an archaeologist. This was a doctor from UCLA. We kicked their asses.

TRACY: So, do you think the prosecution in that case was being controlled?

TED: Yes, I do.

TRACY: And so this whole operation in the McMartin school was part of Project MONARCH?

TED: Yes, there’s no question in my mind. I’ve been trying to do something about this for years, ever since I ran into it and discovered it. I even had my own radio talk show for two years.

TRACY: Oh, was that a national talk show?

TED: Yeah, it was all over the world, actually. It was short wave out of Nashville, WWCR, Worldwide Christian Radio. I’ve done probably a thousand radio shows myself. As you can tell I can talk right off the top of my head, and I have the documentation to back it up. “They”--meaning this evil element within our government--they’re very concerned about me, because I’ve got the documentation. I have it hidden in four different locations. I went on a ten-day trip a year ago last June, and, Hell, they came in here and stole a bunch of my boxes--somebody did. They didn’t take any jewelry or anything like that, they just took my research. They’re so concerned about the research I have that they don’t know what to do about me. You know, and I don’t back down to them, either.

TRACY: So you don’t know specifically who it was that broke in?

TED: They didn’t break in. They have keys for everything. They’re professional burglars, professional killers, they’re assassins; they’re almost every evil word you can think of. That’s what we’re dealing with. And like I said, this involves our US intelligence community, the CIA in particular, and then later on the FBI, whereas in the past it didn’t. There’s no question about it. What they do is, the CIA recruits out of Special Forces. McVeigh came right out of Special Forces class. They recruit them out of there, and then they train them to be assassins and killers, and to run their drug operations. Now McVeigh wrote a letter to his sister, I don’t know if you remember this or not. He said this in his letter. This is public information. So I’m not talking off the top of my head.

TRACY: Do you think that most of the cases you hear of Satanic Ritual Abuse are all parts of this government operation?

TED: Oh, I don’t think there’s any question that it’s an organized ring, if that’s what you’re looking for. There is a conspiracy here. There’s no question about that.

TRACY: And what’s the overall goal?

TED: The overall goal is to take over the world.

TRACY: They just essentially want everyone to be mind-controlled slaves?

TED: They want to take over the world. They want a two-class society: the very rich, and then the slobs, like us, you now, the servants? It’s well-planned, and it’s well-organized, and if you look at the 25 goals that were set forth in 1776, 230-some years ago, you’ll see that most of those, are about 85% complete today. Like corruption of the youth through sex and drugs. I mean, look at what’s going on with our youth today. Control of the mainstream media. Do you think the mainstream media is going to have the guts to print what I’m telling you now? Hell, no. And I’ve got the documentation. I’ve got cabinets full of material, to prove that I’m right. Hell, no, they won’t, because they’ve got the Brokaws, and the Rathers. You know, you’ve got those people. They’re all being controlled. They wouldn’t dare talk about this because they’d lose their jobs. Nor would the *Los Angeles Times*, or the *New York Times*. They won’t touch any of this stuff. Maybe *Hustler Magazine* has the guts to print this, I don’t know. Let me tell you a little hook, here. It’s really interesting. One of the… Who’s the owner of *Hustler*?

TRACY: Larry Flynt.

TED: Yeah, Larry Flynt's former body guard was at the time a contract killer, and attempted to take my life in 1987. His name was Bill Menser.

TRACY: What were the circumstances?

TED: Well, there was a fellow named Mike Riconosciuto from the CIA, who was talking, exposing these people. You see, when people come forward from the inside who can give direct knowledge of what's going on, they either end up dead or in prison. Well, Mike Riconosciuto started talking. He's in prison now for 30 years. But Mike and I worked together back in the early 80s, and we put five people in jail who were contract killers. One of them was Bill Menser. Menser was one of Flynt's bodyguards. A guy named Lamatta was another. And they were convicted of murdering a guy named Roy Raiton from Long Island, New York, along with Lani Jacobs. Jacobs, of course, was female, not working for Larry Flynt. Anyway, one of the people we put in jail was arranging for contract killings, and his name was Dr. John P. Nichols, out of Indio, California. And when he got out, he called Menser, and told Menser to do his job on me. I was able to avoid Menser, and Mike and I put Menser in jail. We went to the D.A. and told him all about his involvement in the Roy Raiton murder and everything. So anyway, Larry Flynt will know all about Menser, he'll know all about Lamatta, and a guy named Lowell was the one who drove the car that night when they killed Roy Raiton. And that puts a little twist on this. Larry Flynt had people right in his midst who were involved in this. And Bill Menser was known as "Charles Manson II" in Hollywood. He's a killer.

TRACY: What do you think about JonBenet Ramsey?

TED: I have no documentation on that, but the scenario fits a Satanic cult ceremony.

TRACY: In that she was killed on Christmas night?

TED: Yeah, that's a big Satanic holiday.

TRACY: And Chandra Levy, too, disappeared on Walpurgis Night.

TED: She disappeared on May 1st, a big Communist holiday.

[*Editor's Note: She disappeared between April 30, Walpurgis Night, and May 1st, which is May Day. They are primarily pagan holidays, although May Day is a traditional protest day for Socialists.*]

TRACY: Would you speculate that Condit, then, is a controller as well?

TED: I have no idea, but from what I've read and seen, I wouldn't be surprised. But it definitely appears that he was involved in kinky sex, which of course, I guess, there's millions of people who are involved in that in this country and around the world.

TRACY: You heard that he specifically referred to his women as “sex slaves.” [Source: *The Globe*.]

TED: Well, there you go. That’s what they are, they’re sex slaves.

TRACY: How do they go about programming these people?

TED: It’s a combination of torture, hypnosis, drugs. And what happens is, they torture them so much, that their personality splits in order to endure the pain and misery. When their personality splits, they became another person, and it’s through this technique that they train them. Then in training they make it so that they can give them a trigger word, say “green,” or “red,” or pick up the phone and call them. And they have an assignment to go out and do something--like, say, go out and do a hit, or something like that. That’s kind of a layman’s definition of it, but that’s the way it works.

TRACY: Have you spoken to anyone who was a controller or programmer?

TED: Oh yeah, sure.

TRACY: And so they told you this as well?

TED: Oh yeah, I've got it from all kinds--I've got it 15 ways from Sunday. These people all talk like they're crazy, but there's so many of them, and they don't know each other, and their stories are the same, so there's got to be something to it.

TRACY: I've noticed that a lot of the women are really weird. Like Cathy O'Brien. She sounds like she's really smart, and she sounds like she knows a lot about the history of mind control, and all sorts of things. But then she'll use really inappropriate words in a sentence, and it just seems like there's a lot of common knowledge that she doesn't have. And a lot of these women are like this. So it does seem like they really have been isolated from society, and just grew up in the whole Satanic cult world with no exposure to real life.

TED: Well, half of them sound crazy, and the other half sound semi-crazy. But this is so prevalent, and it's from so many sources, that there's absolutely no question about it. By the way, I've got the Congressional reports where Congress investigated back in 1977. So, hey, Congress knows about it.

TRACY: They investigated MK-ULTRA, or Project MONARCH specifically?

TED: MK-ULTRA and Project MONARCH. Yeah, I've got all this information. The reports are available. I've got all this information right back here in my little cabinet drawer some place.

TRACY: To what extent do you think people in the Federal government know about this?

TED: I think they know, but they're covering it up. They don't want to come forward with it. A lot of people do. I personally went back to Washington in 1986-1987, talked to some congressmen, senators, administrative assistants, and told them about this. Biden was one, Dan Coats out of Indiana, former congressman and senator, was another. And then I backed it up with documentation, with paper. So they know about it. I don't know why they won't come forward with it. First of all, it's unbelievable, and if you start talking about it, people will think you're crazy. But you know, hey, Congress investigated it, but it was basically not reported by the mainstream media again.

TRACY: How many people do you think there are out there who are mind control subjects?

TED: Well, O'Brien will tell you about 10 million, but I personally think it's between 3 and 4 million. And it's there. The grandmother in the McMartin case [Virginia McMartin] told one of the mothers that she travels all over the world and sets up these pre-schools. And Dr. Roland Sommit out of UCLA Hospital has made the statement that there are 50 other pre-schools in the country where the kids talk about tunnels under the school.

TRACY: Would you say it's just dangerous to send your kid to pre-school?

TED: It depends. You have to investigate it. Now, if the pre-school says: “OK, you cannot come here between the hours of nine and four, even if you’re a parent,” then that’s Number One. You don’t go there. You don’t put your kid in that school. Because, why would they object to you coming in and checking on your kid, right? Then if the kid, let’s say, had a little blood in the diapers, and so forth. We’re talking about two, three, four-year old kids with a little blood in the diaper. You certainly don’t want to send your kid back to that. Or if the kid doesn’t want to go to school, listen to your child. I’ve got a checklist here of signs of what to look for with your kids. This goes on and on, and I can talk for hours on this.

TRACY: Have you heard of the supposed electrified cages full of babies at China Lake?

TED: No, I can’t say that I’ve heard about that. But I have heard, you know, rumors that there are underground cities, and that some of these kids are being kept in those underground cities. Now Paul Bonacci in Omaha, Nebraska has made the statement that he was involved when he was 10-13 years old. He was used as a decoy in malls, and parks, and so forth, to attract kids that age, and then the adults grab them and run off with them. And Paul Bonacci received his training at Offutt Air Force Base. That’s one of the military bases. And I tell you, it’s kind of ironic, but Michael Aquino was at Fort Bragg at the time of the Geoffrey MacDonald murders that I talked about when I first started talking to you.

TRACY: Have you talked to Michael Aquino?

TED: No, I don't have anything to do with him. There's a guy named Craig Lockwood who has some phenomenal information about this. He can really fill you in. He wrote a book called *Other Alters*. It's all about the Satanic cult movement in this country, and it's about Michael Aquino. It's an interesting story. He told me that this sold 15,000 copies in just a couple of weeks. His publisher was really excited about it. Then all of the sudden he was sued in Minneapolis where the publisher is, and they found out that Michael Aquino went around and bought all of them out. Now you have to have a pretty good-sized network to do that. He bought all the books, and then sued the publisher, and also Craig. But Craig won the lawsuit.

TRACY: So that means the judge believed that this had actually taken place. And in the Presidio case [a sexual abuse case in which Aquino was accused], didn't the Army have to pay a substantial settlement to the parents of the kids?

TED: Yeah, I think they did. We had the thing in Westpoint, too, and there was a captain there who resigned his commission because of that, mostly 'cause it was a cover-up.

TRACY: I just remember something about a sexual harassment lawsuit. So that was part of Project MONARCH as well?

TED: Oh yeah. These pre-schools are, I believe, prep schools for these people to indoctrinate these kids and expose them to the Satanic movement.

TRACY: re some of these kids also raised in Satanic families, specifically for this purpose?

TED: Oh yeah. Of course. I talked to a woman who was sent to law school by them to study immigration laws. They would fly her Germany to bring kids back into this country. She'd drop them off, bring them in at Kennedy Airport, and turn them in to two men. Then she'd disappear, and go back and get another one.

TRACY: So are there physical or psychological traits that they look for in these kids? Do they choose kids specifically for reasons?

TED: No, I don't think so. One of that tactics that they use is, say I'm a perpetrator, or I'm a pedophile. I'll contact an individual who I know can arrange for the kids, and I'll say "OK, I want a 13-year-old boy or girl, whatever the case might be, blue-eyed, blond-haired." And then that person would go out and get pictures of about four or five kids surreptitiously, come back, show me the pictures. And I say, "Oh, I want this one." Then they go and kidnap the kid. Like an order, you know? It's like looking at a catalogue. "Oh, I'll take this coffee pot, or I'll take that automobile," or whatever the situation might be.

TRACY: Don't they also get a lot of kids at Disneyland?

TED: Yeah, they've quashed that, I understand. Kids have disappeared at Disneyland regularly. There are kids who've disappeared here in Las Vegas, and of course the officials are being very careful not to let that out to the public because this is a big entertainment center.

TRACY: And a lot of the slaves say that Disney imagery was part of their programming.

TED: Oh, absolutely. Everyone that I've talked to on the west coast had some training at Disneyland. I've talked to hundreds of them in the last 22 years. It's quite an elaborate operation. There has to be a central location, there has to be people in charge, it has to be organized, and hey, it's covered-up. The ones who are involved in this, you know, it's a secret who they are, and it's a secret what they do, but it does involve human sacrifices and Satanic ceremonies, period.

TRACY: Have you heard of Mormons being involved in this?

TED: Heavily involved in this. At the very top. I've got a whole paper on that. They did their own investigation in 1990 of it, and they came up with the same thing. I've got all the reports, by the way. That's just typical of my documentation.

TRACY: So they were investigating themselves, and they found evidence of human sacrifices?

TED: Well, they found evidence of Satanism, which would include human sacrifice.

TRACY: Does the police force ever investigate this?

TED: No. They don’t touch it. There’ve been police officers who have tried to do something about it who have ended up dead, or they’re re-assigned. These people are killers. We’re not talking about nice people. And they’ll stop at nothing to further their cause. Anybody who gets in their way is dead, or gets put in jail. I have a list of the leaders of the occult movement on the west coast, which is my insurance policy. If anything happens to me, that goes out to the public.

False Memories: An Interview with Pamela Freyd

Pamela Freyd is the co-founder of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation. She founded the organization with her husband Peter Freyd in 1992 after their daughter Jennifer Freyd, a Professor of Psychology at the University of Oregon, accused Peter of abusing her sexually as a child, based on memories she had recovered through therapy. This interview took place on August 28, 2001.

TRACY: Is “False Memory Syndrome” (specifically related to memories of child sexual abuse) a relatively new phenomenon? If so, when do you think this problem first began, and what were the causal factors?

PAMELA: It’s important to begin any discussion of the topic of false memories with the fact that all the mental health professional organizations have issued statements saying that the only way that one can distinguish a true from a false memory is through external corroboration.

We all have false memories but generally they don’t make a huge difference in our lives. When such a memory leads to the accusation of criminal behavior of another person, however, the stakes are raised. To be falsely accused of the unforgivable crime of child sexual abuse places individuals in a quandary. How does anyone prove a negative?

The Foundation has done a number of surveys of the families that have made contact. One of the questions in a survey we are just now analyzing is “In what year did you learn about the accusation?” We have one person in 1970 and another in 1971 who said they were accused in those years based solely on the claim of a “recovered repressed memory” with no other external evidence. We have a total of 12 reports from the 1970--contrasted with more than 550 reports for just the years 1991-1992. The frequency data indicate that the recovered memory phenomenon is a fad--at least based on the data from the surveys. The numbers have been in decline since 1992.

The McMartin case in 1983 received national media attention and made child abuse and Satanic Ritual Abuse a front page topic. Sociologists have referred to the false memory/child abuse accusations phenomenon in terms of a “moral panic.” Child abuse is inherently evil and as statistics about its frequency increased, so did fear. When people are afraid, they panic. That’s why schools have fire drills so that students don’t panic should there be a fire. People often get trampled in panics caused by fires and they get accused in moral panics.

The explosive period of the fad appears to have begun in 1987-1988. Whether it is a cause or an effect is not clear, but 1988 saw the publication of the book *The Courage to Heal* by Ellen Bass and Laura Davis. Since that book has been listed as the most recommended book by psychotherapists (at least in the early 90s) it is possible that it helped spread the beliefs.

TRACY: Could you estimate what percentage of “recovered” abuse memory claims investigated by your organization are found to be based on false memories?

PAMELA: The Foundation cannot determine the truth or falsity of an accusation in the absence of external corroboration anymore than anyone else can. Indeed, the Foundation would not be the appropriate group to conduct investigations since it could be said to be biased. The Foundation does not “certify” anyone but rather has as its purpose to disseminate information about the nature of memory. Individual families have tried to get mental health professionals to investigate the accusations and have filed complaints for that purpose. Because the accusers would not release any records, however, this approach did not work. Some families brought lawsuits in the hope that this would open an investigation, but again, without access to records, there is little that can be done. What is left then, are the cases in which a child sued and that case then went to court. Most of these types of cases have been dismissed for lack of evidence.

What the Foundation noted was that the reports from the people who made contact showed certain patterns, and it was these patterns that brought alarm to scientists and psychiatrists who studied memory. Therapists were using hypnosis, guided imagery, sodium amatol, relaxation exercise, participation in groups, reading suggestive literature and other techniques in an effort to excavate memories. Although people may remember things with any of these techniques, there is absolutely no evidence that what they remember is historically accurate. Indeed, because these are suggestive techniques, it is highly probably that the patients pick up the suggestion and create false memories.

It’s important to remember how memory works. If it worked like a tape recorder, storing everything that was experienced, it would make sense to dig for memories because the problem would be one of access. But that is not how memory works. People store bits and pieces and even these bits and pieces can be lost and altered over time. When someone has a “memory” it is a highly creative process of reconstruction. The bits and pieces are woven together to make a story that makes sense to the person in the here and now. People fill in the blanks. They incorporate information from a variety of sources.

TRACY: What telltale signs do you look for to determine if a recovered memory is false? What would it take to convince your organization that a recovered memory was true?

PAMELA: I repeat what I wrote previously, the Foundation has no way of knowing whether a particular memory is true or false in the absence of external corroboration. If any of the suggestive techniques I mentioned previously are used (i.e., hypnosis, sodium amatol, guided imagery, relaxation exercises, participation in survivor groups, reading suggestive literature, seeing suggestive videos, etc) the task becomes virtually impossible. Any memory that arises using such techniques must be suspect because of the suggestibility inherent in the use of the techniques themselves.

TRACY: Does your organization on the whole reject claims of childhood Satanic Ritual Abuse? Are there any cases of SRA that your organization has investigated which were not found to be the result of False Memory Syndrome?

PAMELA: Kenneth Lanning (1992) of the FBI investigated many cases and found no external corroboration for the types of claims to which you are referring. A much more extensive study was conducted by psychologist Gail Goodman and colleagues for the National Center on Child Abuse and Neglect (1994). They found no external corroboration for the many cases they examined. What they did find was that “a very small group of clinicians, each claiming to have treated scores of cases, accounted for most of the reports of ritualistic child abuse.” In Great Britain, anthropologist La Fontaine (1994) examined all the cases of claimed Satanic Ritual Abuse (SRA) in that country and came up empty handed for evidence. She found that belief in SRA was closely linked to fundamentalist religious groups. In 1995, Bottoms, Shaver, Goodman and Qin examined whether religious beliefs can foster child abuse. They were alarmed at finding cases “involving the withholding of medical care for religious reasons, abuse related to attempts to rid a child of evil, and abuse perpetrated by persons with religious authority,” and argued that as a society greater effort should be made to protect children in these circumstances.

Evidence for an intergenerational Satanic cult that breeds children that they then abuse does not seem to exist. Rebellious teens may dabble with Satanic symbols and ceremonies and there are religious groups that focus on Satan but there is no evidence for the kinds of claims made in books such as *Michelle Remembers*.

TRACY: I understand that 18% of the claims that you investigate involve some form of SRA. Can you speculate on why so many such claims have come forth since the 1980, all remarkably similar?

PAMELA: The McMartin case put SRA on the front page and into the minds of many people. I suspect that the similarity of the claims is due to the fact that books such as “Michelle Remembers” were quite popular and that authority was given to these beliefs by some television programs, both those that brought on “experts” and those that displayed patients who held such beliefs. Within the therapeutic community, ideas were spread at continuing education seminars. There are now, however, hundreds of former patients who, once they left the therapeutic context, came to realize that their memories of Satanic abuse were fantasy, although deeply disturbing and painful at the time of belief.

TRACY: Has your organization specifically investigated the claims of people whose recovered memories involve the so-called secret “Project MONARCH,” supposedly the CIA’s experimental program aimed at creating “mind-controlled sex slaves” and Manchurian Candidate-like assassins through the infliction of severe childhood trauma, along with the use of drugs and hypnosis?

PAMELA: No. The Foundation has limited its focus to issues of families torn apart based solely on claims of recovered repressed memories of childhood sexual abuse.

TRACY: According to both alleged victims of and self-proclaimed experts on Project MONARCH, the above-described techniques (including the use of rape, torture, and "Satanic Ritual Abuse") so traumatize the young mind of the victim that it splits off into numerous separate personalities, to compartmentalize the trauma. Each of these personalities can supposedly then be programmed to perform specific tasks without the knowledge of the others. These programs can purportedly be accessed later through the use of pre-arranged code-words and signals, which automatically trigger the hypnotic state in the victim. Does your organization have any opinion on whether or not such programming is even possible using the techniques described above?

PAMELA: The FMS Foundation has not been involved in examining any of the claims about CIA brainwashing. The purpose of the Foundation is to provide the public and professions with accurate information about memory and to help those families who contact the Foundation by providing information. I think the following passage by Philip Zimbardo and Susan Andersen addresses scientific understanding on the CIA mind-control topic:

"John Mark's (1979) expose of the CIA's secret mind-control program made it clear that no foolproof way of "brainwashing" another person has ever been found. (The word "brainwashing" is used here in its popular connotation, which came out of movies and

sensationalized press accounts--that is, absolute control over another. This is not what the leading researchers [Lifton, 1961, Schein, Schneier, & Barker, 1961] of the Korean War-era "brainwashing" meant by their terms, thought reform and coercive persuasion, respectively.) Electroshock therapy, hypnosis, exquisite torture devices, and psychoactive drugs have not proved adequate for the task of reliably directing behavior through specific scenarios designated by would-be manipulators. It is a person (or various persons) in a convincing social situation–not gadgets or gimmicks–who control the minds of others. the more worried we are about being regarded as ignorant, uncultured, untalented, or boring, and the more ambiguous the events that must be evaluated, the more likely we are to take on the beliefs of those around us to avoid being rejected by them ." (Michael D. Langone (Editor) *Recovery from Cults: Help for Victims of Psychological and Spiritual Abuse.*, Norton, 1993, page 106.)

Although it has been often repeated that severe childhood trauma causes the mind to split and multiple personalities to develop, there is no scientific evidence to that effect. This notion spread after the publication of *Sybil.*. In the last five years two things have occurred that cause grave doubt as to whether Sybil was actually a multiple personality. First was an interview with Herb Spiegel, M.D., one of the doctors who treated her. Spiegel said that Sybil was not MPD. Second was the discovery of some tapes of talks between the doctor and author who wrote the book *Sybil.*. In these tapes, it appears that Sybil's MPD was created by these two.

That someone has the manifestations of MPD is not at issue; they may. The question is what is the cause of the symptoms. Many in the psychiatric community believe that MPD is iatrogenic, that is, caused by the use of hypnosis and the type of interviewing techniques of the doctor.

TRACY: Has your organization specifically investigated the claims of the following people:

- Brice Taylor (a.k.a. Susan Ford, author of *Thanks for the Memories: The Truth Has Set Me Free*?

- Cathy O'Brien (author of *The TRANCE Formation of America*.)?

- Arizona Wilder (author, *Revelations of a Mother Goddess*)?

PAMELA: The FMS Foundation is not an investigative group. Its purpose is to provide information about the nature of memory as it has appeared in the scientific literature. There are hundreds, probably thousands, of stories that people have written about their recovered memories of torture of some sort--in past lives, in space alien abductions and in Satanic rituals. Evidence is lacking for the existence of these events--other than the stories. A case study or a story is not scientific evidence although it can be used as a basis to being a scientific program. When it comes to memory, the scientific program has been in place for many years, and what has been discovered is how suggestible people are.

A very well-known memoir is that of Binjamin Wilkomirski, who wrote of his childhood in German concentration camps (*Fragments*). The existence of the concentration camps is not an issue as is the existence of space alien abductions, past lives and intergenerational Satanic cults. The book received numerous prizes and he was given awards and spoke around the world. The publisher withdrew it in 1999 when it was discovered that the memoir was fiction. The author had spent the war years in Switzerland.

It's interesting how this ties in with Satanic Ritual Abuse. Credibility had been given to the Wilkomirski. story when it was confirmed by a Laura Grabowski who claimed she had known Wilkomirski. at Auschwitz. But in an interesting twist, it appears that Laura Grabowski was quite confused. Her real name is Lauren Stratford and she is the author of *Satan's Underground.*, a book in which she describes being forced to be a "baby breeder" in a Satanic cult. An expose of Grabowski appeared in the Nov, 1999 *Cornerstone Magazine*. Lauren Statford was born in Tacoma, Washington, and has spent her entire life in the United States. *[Editor's note: According to Cornerstone's website, cornerstonemag.com, "Lauren Stratford doesn't exist, except as the pen name of Laurel Rose Willson, and Satan's Underground is only one of the stories she's told about her life."]*

TRACY: Some high-profile and outspoken "child abuse survivors" with recovered memories have also claimed to be victims of "harassment" by the FMSF after coming forward with their accusations. Does your organization engage in any contact with the alleged victims that could be construed as such?

PAMELA: The only persons I know who might fit your description are David Calof and Laura Brown, Ph.D. They are both therapists rather than survivors and have both complained about being picketed by Chuck Noah, a retired construction worker in Seattle, Washington. One look at the names on the Scientific Advisory Board of the FMS Foundation should belie any idea that the Foundation is interested in picketing as a way to educate people about the nature of memory. The Foundation has held conferences and seminars. And indeed a number of these were picketed by people opposed to the Foundation. The Foundation is interested in fostering family reconciliation where it is possible, not in harming anyone.

I cannot answer your question unless you tell me what you are referring to. What harassment? Who? When? In the same manner, I might ask if you have stopped beating your husband or whomever. How does one respond to such insinuations?

TRACY: Is the term “False Memory Syndrome” recognized by the psychiatric field at large?

PAMELA: The term is now in most dictionaries and even in the OED. To my knowledge no one has sought to have it included in the “Diagnostic and Statistical Manual” of the American Psychiatric Association. The foundation is interested in promoting therapy in which the development of false memories is not a likely outcome. Did PTSD exist before it was included in the DSM? Did MPD exist before inclusion in the DSM? Since there have been at least a dozen professional mental health journal issues devoted to the topic of false memories, I must assume that it is recognized at some level by professionals.

TRACY: Is there any difference between a false memory and outright lying?

PAMELA: A lie is a deliberate falsification often for some purpose. People with false memories believe them sincerely and with much conviction, especially if some hypnotic techniques are involved. There is a difference.

Postscript: Satanic Ritual Abuse and Sex Slavery in the New Millennium

I have a little bit of experience with “Satanic Panic.” When I was 14 years old and living two doors up from my best friend in the small town of Sherwood, Oregon, I got exposed to it first-hand. I already had a reputation for having a “dark” personality in my high school. I was into Goth music, I wore black clothes, and I sometimes read books about the occult. My friend, who also listened to Goth music and wore dark clothes, had recently begun to develop a similar reputation. One day my friend’s aunt came into town to visit his family, and brought with her a set of documentary videos made by an Evangelical church group about Satanism. She showed the videos to my friend’s parents. By the end of the day, they were convinced that their son was a Satanist, and that he was possessed by demons. They held a group prayer ritual in the living room with the aim of removing the demonic influence from the house.

Shortly after this happened, my friend had a fight with his parents about an unclean bedroom that resulted in him being committed as an in-patient at a local mental hospital, where counselors repeatedly tried to get him to confess some deep secret of personal shame. He had no idea why his parents had done this to him or what the counselors were after, but within a week he was released. When he returned home, he found that all of his Goth CDs and most of his clothes had been burned in a bonfire in his backyard by his parents. Next, he was taken to see a Christian counselor from his parents’ church, who presented him with a list of addresses that had been found in his bedroom. My friend recognized them as a list of record stores in downtown Portland that he had drawn up last time he went shopping for music. The counselor asked if these were the locations of his “Satanic meetings,” and even presented surveillance photographs taken from outside of these establishments. This was the first time my friend realized that his parents and their church had launched an investigation with the aim of proving that he belonged to a Satanic cult.

Within a couple of weeks, I too found myself at the center of an investigation. Counselors at school began quizzing me frequently, and even brought my parents in for an interview. They never did say what they were investigating me for, but the endless suspicion and questioning caused me to drop out of school and take up instead at a local community college. At this time the landlord of the house where I lived unexpectedly reneged on our lease agreement, and my family was forced to move.

Later my friend also dropped out and joined me at the college. We moved on with our lives and forgot about the whole thing. It wasn’t until two years later that a slip of the tongue from my friend’s grandmother revealed some of the context of what had happened. Apparently, his parents (who raised sheep on a farm) had discovered one of their sheep brutally butchered in the barn. They leapt to the obvious conclusion: “Our son and his friend Tracy must have done it! They must belong to a Satanic cult! Tracy is probably the high priestess!” They even had enough imagination to conclude that their son had probably blocked out the traumatic memory of committing the sacrifice, and would need to be committed to a mental hospital so that his memories could be recovered.

According to my friend’s grandmother, his parents had gone to the school principal and the local police with their suspicions. They had even accused my parents of being involved, and said that we had a “Satanic star” hanging in our living room window (which was actually a sun catcher shaped like a sun with a smiley face). His grandmother said that the police had actually tapped my phone looking for proof that we had butchered the sheep, but found none.

I suppose as a teenager I didn't have that much of a reputation to ruin, but my parents did, and it seems they may have been forced to move out of their house because of this smear. If it is true that my phone was tapped by the police, that compounds the injustice a hundred time. What gave these people the right to try to ruin our lives with their baseless accusations? How dumb did the police and school counselors have to be to go along with it? Is suspicion of "Satanism" really enough to justify locking up a kid up in a mental hospital against his will? There is one more nagging question: who killed the sheep anyway?

I have no doubt that this experience caused my interest in occultism, which before had been no more than a fashion statement, to flourish into a serious study. When I grew up and became an occult writer, even writing about conspiracy theories involving the "Satanic Illuminati," I found myself being accused by other writers of involvement in the conspiracy. I found conspiracy flow charts on the internet linking me and my acquaintances to the Trilateral Commission and the Bilderberg Group. This time, though, I understood the hysteria, and found it more humorous than threatening.

Still, having been on the receiving end of these accusations, you may wonder why I have written and published so much information about so-called Project MONARCH. Many researchers think that stories of Satanic Ritual Abuse are urban legends, and those who claim to be victims are smearing those they accuse just as I have been smeared in the past. Certainly I know from experience how easily this can happen. But I also now know first-hand a great deal about secret societies, and the types of people who are typically drawn to join occult groups. While this is only a stereotype, it is not uncommon to find that these people have symptoms of megalomania, socio-pathology, sadism, sexual deviance, an attraction to evil, and a willingness to do anything that they think will help them to acquire more power. I know that many occult rituals do involve bizarre sex acts, and sometimes blood sacrifice. Some occultists include their own young children in rites and practices which may be remembered by them as unpleasant or frightening. For sure, the same thing can be said about religious zealots of any stripe, but occultists are no exception. There is also certainly a confluence between the membership of certain occult groups, and involvement in things like government, intelligence, high finance, and organized crime. Most definitely, many occult groups use techniques on their membership that can only be called "mind control," and intelligence agencies have been experimenting with mind control for many decades now.

Furthermore, we know that the statistics on human trafficking in our modern world are horrifyingly huge, as are the statistics on missing and abused children. It is estimated that 27 million people are currently enslaved today, most of them as sex slaves. The State Department says that somewhere between 600,000 and 800,000 people are illegally trafficked across borders throughout the world. 70% of these are female and 50% are children. The *"vast majority,"* they say, end up in the sex trade. This puts an entirely different spin on the subject of illegal immigration across the Mexican border. We talk about issues of racism and depressed wages, but it seems there is a much more important issue at stake when you consider that so many of those crossing the border, according to our own government, are not just working family people seeking a better life, but rather unfortunate victims of the human sex trade. We know that the Mexican border is purposely left porous, and illegal alien criminals are routinely set free from jail to offend again, for reasons of political expediency. But perhaps the lax border issue is connected to something more than the courting of the Latino vote.

Another thing we know about the sex slave industry is that it is incredibly cruel and sadistic. Because of its underground nature, it is impossible to estimate numbers accurately, but from the evidence and eyewitness testimonies we do have, we know that sex slaves are not only repeatedly raped, but beaten, tortured, and eventually killed. Often this abuse is perpetrated merely for sexual pleasure by sadistic people, and sometimes it is captured on film to be sold to a sick audience always hungry for more. Some of this is also part of the conditioning of the slave: breaking down their will power for purposes of mind control. There is no doubt that the principles of Stockholm Syndrome (also known as Trauma-Bonding) and Dissociative Identity Disorder are being purposely studied and utilized by these slaves' handlers. They also know who to pay off in order to ensure that government officials look the other way. Sexual favors from slaves are often used for these pay-offs, and the proceedings are secretly filmed for future blackmail. There is no doubt that sex slavery could not exist without complicity from people in governments all over the world, including our own.

But what evidence is there of a global confluence of Satanism, sex slavery, and intelligence agencies as posited by the Project MONARCH stories? Most of that evidence has come from the testimonies of the people featured in this book, and much of it is hearsay. You can take it for what it's worth. However, I have noticed that since I wrote the original "Stepford Whores" article for *Hustler* in 2001 (included in this book), a number of cases have popped up in the news that seem to bear the earmarks of the same phenomena detailed in this book.

For instance, the latest Michael Jackson child molestation case made me suspicious as detailed rumors that started pouring during the trial. According to the stories, Jackson had for many years been bringing 12-to-14-year-old boys to his circus-like Neverland Ranch in California, showering them with toys and gifts, plying them with alcohol (“Jesus Juice,” or wine in a Coke can), and sexually molesting them. In many cases, the parents of the boys seemed to be complicit in what was going on, as they repeatedly brought their sons to spend the night alone in bed with this strange grown man. Perhaps not coincidentally, Jackson reportedly showered the parents with gifts as well, including large sums of cash.

Friends of Jackson have reported his tendency to slip into child-like characters that seem like alternate personalities, his favorite being Peter Pan, “because he never has to grow up.” He seems to be obsessed with the concept of wearing masks, and transmogrification, as demonstrated in the videos for his songs “Thriller” and “Black or White.” This desire to transform himself has obviously led to Jackson’s disastrous plastic surgery, and presumably ties in with the fact that he forces his children to wear masks while they are in public. Indeed, viewers of Martin Bashir’s famous 2003 documentary exposé of Michael Jackson saw that he appeared to live in a 24-hour fantasy world of his own making in which he pretended to be a child. He shows all the signs of someone suffering from Dissociative Identity Disorder.

Jackson also shows the signs of having been sexually abused as a child, and indeed has accused his father Joseph of abusing him, as has his sister LaToya. Michael is known to have had psycho-sexual problems since early on. His highly-publicized marriage to Lisa Marie Presley is believed to have been a publicity stunt, while his marriage to Deborah Rowe was part of a scheme in which his first two children were produced through *in vitro* fertilization. They divorced in 1999, and Jackson had another child in 2002, but nobody knows who the mother is. The kids have always had their faces covered when shown in public. Some say this is partly because he is hiding the fact that they are obviously not his biological children.

So who are these kids, and what is happening to them in Michael Jackson's custody? We may never know, as Jackson was acquitted of the molestation charges, and immediately went running to Bahrain, a known child prostitution center where pedophilia is openly tolerated. The question of the children's safety becomes even more paramount when we consider allegations made by Jack Gordon, the former husband of Michael Jackson's sister LaToya, who claimed in a tell-all book to have witnessed Jackson sacrificing monkeys in occult rituals, and physically abusing his pet monkeys on several occasions. In a similar vein, *Vanity Fair* reported in March 2003 that in 2000 Michael Jackson paid a voodoo witchdoctor in Mali $150,000 to put a curse on his 24 most-hated enemies, including Steven Spielberg and David Geffen. The ceremony, which reportedly took place in Switzerland, required Jackson to bathe in the blood of 42 freshly-sacrificed cows.

Was Michael Jackson a Project MONARCH victim as a child? It has been said that the CIA's MK-ULTRA targeted members of the entertainment industry, and that many famous child actors and singers were in fact mind-controlled slaves. The name of his ranch, Neverland, as well as his obsession with Peter Pan, are suspicious, for as we know, this imagery was allegedly used as a programming base for MONARCH children, according to Cathy O’Brien. And what shape could you once see from the air when you fly over Neverland Ranch, made out of colorful flowers and bushes? The image of a Monarch butterfly.

Want another example? Take the case of the Hosanna Church in Ponchatoula, Louisiana. In May of 2005, police in the Tangipahoa Parish Sheriff's Office had just begun to investigate claims by a woman who said her children had been sexually abused by people at the church. All of the sudden the pastor of the church, Louis LaMonica, walked into the station unsummoned and offered to help them with their investigation. A quote from a *New York Times* article from May 25, 2005 explains what unfolded next:

“Mr. Lamonica, 45, matter-of-factly told them of having sex with at least two boys, from the time they were 4 until they were 12 or 13, as well as having sex with a dog, Mr. Carpenter said, adding that Mr. Lamonica did not act as though he was confessing to crimes. He was just trying to be helpful.”

Another article from the Associated Press from June 11, 2005 reveals what had seemingly been going on for the last several years. Witnesses described Satanic rituals in which cats were sacrificed, and “as many as two dozen” children of all ages were raped and/or molested, the cat blood being poured onto their naked bodies. In several instances, children were allegedly made to have sex with dogs. Physical evidence that was found at the church included ceremonial robes and the residue of pentagrams painted on the floor.

Why did Louis Lamonica walk into the sheriff's office and start confessing all of these things, apparently not thinking that he would get in trouble? Did he have some reason to suspect that the police would be sympathetic to him? It is one of the greatest mysteries of this case. At any rate, it only became more bizarre when lawyers for Lamonica's co-defendants (many of whom had already signed confessions) claimed that their clients were innocent by reason of "brainwashing." They said that an influential member of the church, not Lamonica, had used powers of persuasion to get these people to sign their confessions. The alleged motive for this was never explained. But many other members of the church continued to testify that the abuse did in fact occur. An article from November 29, 2007 in the *Hammond Star* reported from the trial about one of the witnesses, married to one of the accused and mother to one of the alleged victims:

> *"Monica said that when she asked [her husband] why he was sexually abusing his own daughter, he said he wanted to make her 'non-human,' or nothing more than an object of his pleasure."*

The Hosanna Church trial is still ongoing as of this writing. In February of 2008 Louis Lamonica requested that the trial be moved to a new location, a motion that is currently still being considered.

Of course, many alleged cases of Satanic Ritual Abuse are supposed to have taken place in churches and religious institutions that use Christianity as a cover. Certainly there have been many real cases of children that were sexually abused in church, most notably by Catholic priests. William H. Kennedy has written an excellent book on the subject that links the phenomena of priest sex abuse to Satanism. It is called *Lucifer's Lodge: Satanic Ritual Abuse in the Catholic Church*. In it Kennedy reveals that many high-profile priest abuse cases contained Satanic and occult aspects that were ignored by the mainstream media. Among these is the case of Father Paul Shanley, an accused child-molesting priest who is linked with the founding of pro-pedophile group NAMBLA (the National Man-Boy Love Association), and with the Satan-worshipping Process Church of the Final Judgment. The latter has been connected by some writers to a series of ritualistic murders all over the United States, and former members claim they were involved in the trafficking of child pornography, including snuff films.

The existence of a snuff film industry is something that is denied by some researchers, who believe that it is merely an urban legend. They say that all alleged snuff films that have come to the attention of investigators turned out to be fakes. However, other investigators who have seen the same films disagreed. A film called *Snuff* that was purported to be the real thing was famously released in 1977, but the production company (ironically called "Monarch Films") admitted it was fake when threatened with prosecution. This famous incident appears to be in large part the basis of the argument that snuff films are merely "urban legend." But the fact is, we know that all over the world children are kidnapped, sexually abused and tortured, used in pornographic films, and murdered every single day. The odds that all of these things might have at least once *happened at the same time*--child rape, torture and murder caught on film and illegally distributed--seem likely to be high. Some believe it is worse than this--that snuff films are indeed an integral part of the child porn industry. Supposedly they are available only to the highest rollers, with the buyers paying anything between $5,000 and $40,000 for a custom-made limited edition film production.

A great deal of information about alleged snuff films came out with the trial and investigation of Belgian serial child murderer Marc Dutroux. The Dutroux case was one that I was unfortunately not aware of at the time I wrote the article for *Hustler*, but it indeed matches up with many of the elements of the Project MONARCH stories contained in this book. Dutroux and his wife Michelle Martin had already been convicted of kidnapping and raping five girls in the 1980s (they had spent no more than three years in prison for their offenses) when in 1996, two missing young girls were found in the torture chamber secretly concealed within their basement. They also found the bodies of four other girls between the ages of 8 and 19, two of them starved to death (apparently by accident) as well as that of an adult accomplice, who was killed for failing to feed the two starved girls. All of the girls had been viciously raped and tortured repeatedly during their time in Dutroux's basement.

During the investigation and trial that followed, it was revealed that police had on many occasions failed to follow up on evidence that would have caught Dutroux much earlier, and possibly could have saved the lives of the girls. Several witnesses, including Dutroux's own mother, had reported to police their suspicions that he was connected to the disappearances of several local girls. Dutroux's house had been under police surveillance for this very reason when he took two girls out of his house to have them murdered, and later brought in two more to lock in his dungeon. Police supposedly had not noticed any of this while they were watching his house. They also failed to hear the screams of the girls locked in the basement when they searched Dutroux's house in 1995, after he had been arrested for car theft, for which he spent three months in jail. It was during this time that those girls starved to death.

The police incompetence did not cease after the arrest. Indeed, the original state prosecutor of the case complained of obstruction of his investigation from every level of government. Several witnesses came forth after Dutroux's arrest, alleging that they had been abused by him and others as part of a Satanic child prostitution and pornography ring that dealt in extreme torture and snuff films. These witnesses also said that clients of the ring included some of Belgium's most prominent politicians and businessmen, as well as members of Belgium's royal family. Dutroux himself confirmed all of this and more with his own testimony and statements to reporters. He admitted that he was part of a child porn and snuff film ring, and claimed that powerful elements in Belgium did not want his true story to be told. The prosecutor was taken off the case prematurely, a move that prompted an unprecedented outcry from the outraged Belgian public. 300,000 of them marched in Brussels to express their anger. Nonetheless, the case continued to be handled by a prosecutor and investigators who were now uninterested in following the leads in the case connecting Dutroux to any larger network, especially ones which included important members of the Belgian aristocracy.

But some unpleasant information about that aristocracy did surface in the wake of the Dutroux trial, and that is the existence of "pink ballets"--kinky top secret sex parties attended by the well-to-do of Belgium. Here is a quote from the UK's *Telegraph* from March 16, 1997:

> *“Punch-drunk Belgium is reeling from a new shock after a senior police officer confirmed last week what has long been rumoured: that some of the country's leaders indulge in sex parties, known ironically as ‘ballets roses.’*
>
> *It is a world of outwardly respectable private clubs in discreet suburbs of Brussels, Antwerp and Liège, but where, on arrival, members remove not just their coats, but their tops, bottoms and underwear as well.”*

The article also stated that the “ballets” may be a method used by organized criminals to compromise powerful people in government:

> *“Hugo Coveliers, a Belgian senator, argues that the ‘ballets roses’ are not independent of one another, but part of a system ‘which operates to this day and is used to blackmail the highly placed people who take part.’”*

More recently, Portugal is reeling from its own shocking revelations about powerful people and pedophilia. In October of 2007, the UK’s *Daily Mail* ran a story about an orphanage in Lisbon called “Casa Pia” (“House of the Pious”)) -- a state-run network of homes caring for upwards of 4,000 children -- where kids were regularly taken away in a van and pimped out to a high society pedophile ring. These children were allegedly taken repeatedly to the homes of “some of the leading members of Lisbon society--ranging from Portuguese government ministers and high-ranking diplomats, to famous television stars and members of the judiciary.” They were drugged and raped.

Much of it was filmed. Videos of some of these attacks were found in a child porn raid in Paris.

As in the case of Marc Dutroux in Belgium, the police in Portugal have been incompetent to the point where it almost seems like they're doing it on purpose. There was actually photographic evidence showing the alleged ringleader of the pedophile group and the victim children in the same room with some of the accused politicians, but the police "accidentally" lost these photos. That was in 1982, when the allegations first surfaced. Nothing was done and the abuse at Casa Pia continued. It took the filing of many more police reports over the next 21 years before arrests were made in 2003. The investigation led to the discovery four children who had been abducted from Casa Pia and imprisoned in the home of a Portuguese ambassador, as well as photographic evidence of the abuse. The accused ringleader, Carlos Silvino, has been quoted as saying he does not fear prosecution because, "They can't touch me--there are too many people involved."

A similar case that is breaking just at the time of this writing is that of the Haut de la Garenne, a youth hostel in Saint Martin, Jersey, in the Channel Islands that from 1867 to 1998 had been a home for orphaned and/or wayward children. In 2006 Haut de la Garenne became the center of an investigation into an alleged child abuse and pedophilia network operating on the isle of Jersey. Over 150 people claim to have been abused, in many cases by respected members of the Jersey establishment, and say that Haut de la Garenne was one of the main locations where abuse took place. Some claim to have been taken there specifically for abuse by their abusers. However, most of the victims were actual residents of the children's home and claim to have been abused by the staff there.

Victims describe the abuse as systematic and part of the institution, occurring on an almost nightly basis. It often took place in a “secret basement” beneath the school.

It was this basement that was of special interest during the investigation, for when police visited the building with sniffer dogs, they found the secret basement, beneath a set of stairs. In there they discovered the remains of a very young child, still unidentified as I write this. They believe the child died in the 1980s and do not yet have an explanation as to why the body was hidden there. Shackles were also discovered there that had once been fastened to the wall. Police subsequently discovered another secret chamber, where the sniffer dogs indicated the presence of even more remains, but nothing tangible has been discovered as of yet.

Even if the child’s death was somehow natural or accidental, why was it hidden in this manner? How could the staff of a children’s home get away with something like that? Articles in the UK’s *Guardian* newspaper describe a “culture of secrecy” on the island, where respected members of society all stick up for each other, while police and courts systematically ignore any accusations made against them, and obstruct any investigations made by outsiders. Even those former residents of Haut de la Garenne who do not have tales of sex abuse to tell still say that there was non-stop physical and psychological abuse against all of the child residents, even through the 1980s. Nobody who knows the place finds it hard to believe that children were raped and murdered there.

During the recent investigation an even more disturbing connection was found. It was discovered that the Haut de la Garenne was connected to one of the UK’s most notorious serial rapists: Edward Paisnel, also known as “the Beast of Jersey.” From 1957 to 1971, Jersey was terrorized by an unknown assailant who broke into homes and raped children at night. He wore a bizarre costume that included a jacket studded with nails, a wig, and a bizarre rubber mask that made him look like a zombie. Police finally arrested him in 1971, still in this costume, fresh from the latest attack. When asked by the arresting officer why he was wearing such unusual attire, he replied, “I belong to a secret religious society. I’m on my way to a sex orgy.”

This indeed would be Paisnel’s defense. He claimed he had no connection to the rapes. He was merely a member of a black magic society where the membership was anonymous, and that they all wore masks to the meetings so that they couldn’t recognize each other during normal life. When police searched his home they found a secret room, and altar covered with ritual items, as well as a number of books on occultism. During the trial it came out that he believed himself to be a reincarnation of Gilles de Rais, a notorious serial rapist and murderer from the 15th century who had once fought alongside Joan of Arc. He was convicted of raping, murdering and dismembering over 200 children, all as part of Devil worship rituals intended to bring forth the “Philosopher’s Stone” that would allow him to turn lead into gold. However, Paisnel still maintained his innocence. But he was convicted, and died in prison in 1994.

The connection to Haut de la Garenne is a bizarre one. Until his arrest, Paisnel had actually visited the children’s home every year at Christmas time … dressed as Santa Claus!

Since I wrote the “Stepford Whores” article for *Hustler* in 2001, there have been a few developments in the cases I discussed therein, most notably with that of the missing paper boy Johnny Gosch. In January 2005 a scandal broke out when a reporter working in the White House press room was found to be using a fake name. Calling himself “Jeff

Gannon," the name on his driver's license was actually James Guckert. He was investigated in the first place because other White House reporters felt that he had been asking the President preferential questions, and thought it odd that they did not recognize him at all. The news outfit he worked for turned out to be Talon News, an internet operation, which caused many "real" print journalists resentment. Furthermore, upon researching his background it was learned that prior to his work for Talon News, Gannon/Guckert had been self-employed as a male prostitute who advertised his services online. Gannon lost his White House press pass, and Bush claimed to know nothing about him, while Democrats accused Gannon of being a White House plant meant to set up the President with softball questions at press conferences. They also took great joy in pointing out Gannon's prostitute past, mainly expressing shock that a gay man could be a Republican. Gannon continued his work in conservative journalism with his blog.

Had it not been for Noreen Gosch, the whole incident would have been forgotten. But in April 2005, Ms. Gosch did an interview with an alternative newsweekly in Des Moines, Iowa named *Pointblank* in which she stated that she believed Jeff Gannon was none other than her own missing son, Johnny Gosch. You will recall that Ms. Gosch claims to have been visited by Johnny as an adult in 1997, for one night only, in which he told her that he had been kidnapped by a Satanic child prostitution ring, and was now on the run from them. He left the next morning and continued running, never to be seen again. But now Ms. Gosch was saying that Gannon looked like the adult Johnny who had come to visit her. Furthermore, certain theories proffered by her friends John DeCamp and Ted Gunderson tended to back up this idea, she said. Within 24 hours of running the article, *Pointblank* was put out of business, and all the employees were put out of a job.

The owners started a new paper that they began publishing the following week. Of course, many believe that *Pointblank* was killed because they ran the Gosch/Gannon story.

The “evidence” linking Gannon and Gosch is circumstantial at best, or at worst, the product of a fruitful imagination. First, some of Ted Gunderson’s informants claim to know for sure that Gannon is Gosch: one is a confidential informant, the other is photographer Rusty Nelson, discussed in the interview with Gunderson in this book. Secondly, Johnny Gosch, Jeff Gannon, and the name on Jeff Gannon’s driver’s license, “James Guckert,” all have the same initials: JG. Nothing is known about what happened to Johnny Gosch after he disappeared. Little can be established about the early life of Jeff Gannon, mainly because he chooses to keep it private. Gannon claims to be in his forties, about ten years older than Johnny Gosch would be today. But his prostitute websites claimed that he was ten years younger. Also, *if you think about it*, a boy who had been repeatedly raped and brainwashed by powerful Satanist pedophile politicians as part of a military/intelligence mind control program *might conceivably* grow up to be a gay prostitute with a flair for military clothing and a sympathy for Republican politics (he was supposedly brainwashed, remember?) As an adult, then, he might still be serving his handlers, making himself useful and thus keeping himself alive.

Another Gunderson informant, Paul Bonacci says that as a child victim of Project MONARCH (where he supposedly got to know Johnny Gosch very well), he was forced to participate in the production of a snuff film in which another boy was killed. He says that the man who filmed it was none other than gonzo journalist Hunter S. Thompson! This ties in, says Gunderson, because Thompson killed himself on February 21, 2005.

Gunderson and others think Thompson was either murdered or killed himself because it was feared that with Jeff Gannon (possibly Johnny Gosch) now in the media spotlight, it was only a matter of time before Thompson's (alleged) involvement with child porn and snuff films was exposed. A few days later Rusty Nelson, who had been out of prison for many years, was suddenly arrested for failing to register as a sex offender in a town in which he no longer lived. Gunderson believes this was a warning from the evil cabal, warning to Nelson to keep his mouth shut about Gannon, Gosch and Hunter S. Thompson. Another person who got arrested for child sex abuse right around this time was Paul Bishop, the self-proclaimed "CIA agent" who, according to her testimony, pretended to help Noreen Gosch search for her son in the early years before vanishing without a trace in 1985. Noreen didn't hear anything about him again until twenty years later, when she found out about his arrest.

While his White House press room scandal was rocking Washington that February, Jeff Gannon published a couple of articles with interesting titles. One was "Hiding in Plain Sight." While the article was about something else entirely, Gunderson and others think the title was a wink and nod by Gannon to those who were beginning to catch on to his true identity. Another article by Gannon on his blog, titled "Fear and Loathing in the Press Room," is believed to be a covert acknowledgement of the connection to Hunter S. Thompson, who famously wrote *Fear and Loathing in Las Vegas*.

However, to the contrary, in public Gannon's only acknowledgement of the allegations connecting him to Johnny Gosch has been complete denial. He has sent legal threats to Noreen Gosch and anyone else professing the theory. He has called in to radio talk shows where the theory was being discussed, issuing the same threats and denials. Then most recently in early 2007, he did the rounds of several cable television news programs denying any connection, and offering to take a DNA test to prove it. As of this writing, this has not actually happened yet, for reasons unknown.

This most recent wave of media activity happened just after another such wave also connected to the Johnny Gosch story. Noreen Gosch had gone on several television news shows asking for information from the public after she received a bunch of photographs from an anonymous source showing boys bound and gagged. She said that one of the boys in the photo was Johnny, and that it had been taken around the time that he was kidnapped. She wanted help identifying the other boys, and, if possible, the location in which the picture had been taken. A few weeks later, the boys in the photograph (now adults) came forward, and none of them were Johnny. The photographer also came forward, and he said that the pictures had been taken many years ago, when he and some younger friends were horsing around. They were not photos of kidnapped children, in other words. If Jeff Gannon does take a DNA test and proves that he is not Johnny Gosch, then that means that Noreen has twice now claimed that someone was her son when they in fact were not.

In February 2008, just as this book was about to go to press, Noreen Gosch published yet another photo on her website of a boy bound and gagged, which she claimed was her son, and which she claimed to have received from an anonymous source. She asked for the public’s help in identifying the camp advertised on a camp bag sitting on the floor in the photograph. The bag says “Camp Caribou” quite clearly, and it is uncertain why she would need the public’s help identifying it. A simple web search reveals that Camp Caribou is a Roman Catholic summer camp for boys in Maine. This photo has of course fueled internet speculation that the camp is a playground for pedophiles, with no other evidence surfacing as yet at the time of this writing.

As this book is being published, the topic of Project MONARCH is experiencing a popular resurgence on the internet, making the rounds on various left wing blogs and discussion forums, where supporters of Barack Obama are circulating the stories in an effort to connect Hillary Clinton to various evil deeds. New mind control and Satanic Ritual Abuse stories are popping up all the time. The latest headline turned up on The Drudge Report in early March 2008, although it was actually a story from November 2007. The mayor of the town of Centerton, Arkansas, known to his constituents as Ken Williams, suddenly resigned, announcing that his real name was “Don LaRose.” He said that thirty years earlier, he had been kidnapped and brainwashed by Satanists. When he escaped from their clutches, he disappeared, leaving his wife and family, and taking on the name of another man who had died in an auto accident. He chose to resign his position as mayor when he was discovered by his abandoned family, although he did not choose to return to them, or to again take up his former name.

Truly, reality is stranger than fiction, and a lot scarier.

Bibliography

“Belgians shocked by tales of secret policemen’s orgy,” by Marcus Warren, *Telegraph*, March 16, 1997.

“Beyond the Dutroux Affair: The reality of protected child abuse and snuff networks,” by Joël van der Reijden, Project for the Exposure of Hidden Institutions, www.pehi.eu, July 25, 2007.

“Body found amid fears of child abuse ring on Jersey”, by Sadie Gray, *The Independent*, February 24, 2008

“Hosanna case: Defendant’s ex-wife testifies,” by Don Ellzey, *Hammond Star*, November 29, 2007.

“Louisiana church hid dark secret, officials say,” by Alan Sayre, Associated Press, June 11, 2005.

Lucifer’s Lodge: Satanic Ritual Abuse in the Catholic Church, by William H. Kennedy, Reviviscimus, 2004.

“Mayor Resigns, Claims Abduction By Satan Worshippers,” 4029tv.com, November 21, 2007.

National Crime Victims' Rights Week: Justice Isn't Served Until Crime Victims Are, U.S. State Department, www.ojp.usdoj.gov, April 10, 2005.

"Regina Louf's testimony," BBC News, Thursday, 2 May, 2002.

"Sex Charges Follow a Church's Collapse," By Rick Lyman , *New York Times*, May 25, 2005.

"*Vanity Fair* writer recounts Jacko voodoo story," CNN.com, Wednesday, March 5, 2003.

"Why Portugal is a haven for paedophiles--the disturbing backcloth to the Madeleine case," by Andrew Malone and Vanessa Allen, Daily Mail, October 20, 2007.

MENTAL LIBERATION

IN THE AGE OF THOUGHT CONTROL

DEPROGRAMMING
SATANIC RITUAL ABUSE, MK ULTRA,
MONARCH & ILLUMINATI MIND CONTROL

KERTH BARKER

Author of *Angelic Defenders & Demonic Abusers,*
Memoirs of A Satanic Ritual Abuse Survivor

Mental Liberation

in the Age of Thought Control

By Kerth Barker
Angelic Defenders & Demonic Abusers

Memoirs of a Satanic Ritual Abuse Survivor
Cannibalism, Blood Drinking

& High–Adept Satanism
Mental Liberation
in the Age of Thought Control

Deprogramming Satanic Ritual Abuse, MK Ultra,

Monarch & Illuminati Mind Control
Psychic Development
for Prosperity, Self Defense & Political Influence See
http://angelicdefenders.theshamecampaign.com

Mental Liberation

in the Age of Thought Control

Deprogramming Satanic Ritual Abuse,

MK Ultra, Monarch & Illuminati

Mind Control

Kerth Barker

Mental Liberation in the Age of Thought Control: Deprogramming Satanic Ritual Abuse, MK Ultra,

Monarch & Illuminati Mind Control

All rights reserved
© Copyright 2014 Kerth R. Barker
Book design by Author Support Coop
Printed by Createspace, an Amazon.com company

It is advised that persons below the age of eighteen should avoid reading this book because of explicit descriptions of child abuse. If you have children in your home, please make sure that they do not have access to it.

Acknowledgements

I would like to thank these friends whose help made this book possible: Rich Winkel ThoughtCrimeRadio.net
Jeanice Barcelo BirthOfANewEarth.com
Patricia Robinett TheShameCampaign.com

Contents

Introduction 1
Monarch Mind Control & The Culture of Celebrity 5
The Non-Glamorous Life of an MK-Ultra Sex Slave 7
The Use of Spirituality & “Truther” Materials for Deprogramming 15
Illuminati Brainwashing, Basic Principles 23
Kerth & Kathy

29
Trauma-Based Mind Control 35

The Illuminati

39
Emotional Trauma, Violence & Guilt 45
Exorcism & Catholicism 51
Toxic Therapy Systems 55
Fabian Technique

57
Fabian Lifestyle & Attitude 61
Exceptions to the Fabian Therapy Approach 65
A Brief History of Trauma-Based Mind Control 67
The Process of Trauma-Based Mind Control 69
A Visit to a Luciferian Temple 75
The Social Impact of Mind Control 79
Memory

81
Addressing Memory in Therapy 85
Command Words

89
The Process of Fabian Therapy 91 Journals

93 EMA – Episodic Memory Analysis 99 EMA Past Life Exploration 107 Extroversion Exercises 109 Semantical Deactivation Technique 115 A Typical Fabian Therapy Session 119 Advanced EMA Techniques 123 Basic Deprogramming Theory 127 Sexual Templates from Child Abuse 131 EMA to Reinforce Healthy Behavior 133 Concordance

137 Deactivating Mind Control Symbols 141 Other Uses of Fabian Therapy 143 Illuminati Cultural Mind Control 145 The Illuminati Power Structure 149 The Suppression of Fabian Therapy 151 Institutionalized & Medicalized Mind Control 155 Speaking Out

159 Fabian Therapy for Helping Abductees 161

A traditional Satanic Chant used to introduce certain types of meetings:

You will now hear the story

of battles fierce and gory,

of all the pain and glory,

throughout Satanic History.

You will now hear of Demons,

from the Dark Nether Regions,

with all their plots and schemin',

throughout Satanic History.

Now hear the Cannon's Thunder,

as devil pirates plunder,
while all the Christians slumber,

throughout Satanic History...

throughout Satanic History.

Introduction

When I was younger, I was subjected to Satanic Ritual Abuse. There were some people who helped me to get away from the cult. And there was a husband and wife team of therapists who helped to deprogram me and to heal me. I never knew their real names, but in this book I will call them *the Fabians*. They were members of the secret society known as the Illuminati, but they had come to reject its philosophy. They had been involved with some parts of the MK Ultra research project, but they also had become disillusioned with that experimental mind-control program.

So they used what they knew of the human mind to create a therapeutic system for healing the victims of MK Ultra type mind control.

MK Ultra was the CIA’s mind-control research for the behavior engineering of human beings. It officially began in 1953 and officially ended in 1973, but actually it continues on in secret. During the twenty-year period when it was called MK Ultra, it involved at least 80 institution and more than 180 researchers. The CIA hid its involvement behind front organizations. Universities, hospitals, prisons and pharmaceutical companies were involved. The research into mind control used mind-altering chemicals, hypnosis, sensory deprivation, isolation, psychological manipulation, sexual abuse and other forms of torture. Many illegal activities were engaged in. There was a great deal of variation in how the research was done by differing groups. Some groups were highly effective and drew little attention to themselves.

However, some of the research groups were disastrous and left behind dozens of victims with ruined lives. When public awareness of the MK Ultra program became too great, the government pretended to close down the research in 1973. This mind control system continues on today with greater secrecy as *Project Monarch*.

When these Fabian therapists saw the damage that was caused by the trauma of MK Ultra, they felt bad about the part they had played in this research. So they secretly dedicated themselves to healing the victims of that type of mind control. These Fabian therapists were very politically connected, and they were well educated. They were considered to be geniuses in their field. They had access to advanced research that has never been publicly revealed. And they had a point of view about therapy and about human potential development which was largely unique. I think that their approach to understanding the mind is one that would be useful to anyone. I call their approach *Fabian Therapy*.

This type of therapy avoids direct contact with painful memories. It’s based on the idea that the human mind is an energy field which interacts with the brain and body. It’s designed to allow the client to discharge the negative energy contained in painful memories through a cathartic process. It rehabilitates the memory system which has been damaged by trauma-containing memories. And it makes the client feel happier about life and more socially functional.

Unfortunately, the Fabian Therapy system was suppressed for political reasons. Without going into all the politics of this, I think you can understand that the CIA, who funded MK Ultra, might not have been happy about some of its former researchers coming up with methods for deprogramming MK Ultra victims. I didn’t create this Fabian system, but I am one of the few people who understands how this system works, and I am the only one willing to talk about it publicly.

In recent years I’ve put out some internet articles on how Fabian Therapy works. And I’ve gotten some email responses back from people who are integrating ideas from what I’ve written about Fabian Therapy into their own healing process. These are survivors who are trying to recover from various types of mind control. Also I’ve had contact with therapists who are using Fabian Therapy techniques to help others.

One of the persons who have responded to my articles stands out for me.

This woman had been in a cult that subjected her to the traumatic form of brainwashing called Monarch mind control. This created many problems for her. She had multiple personalities and periods of missing time.

After she disconnected from the cult she tried to use conventional talk therapy from a psychologist to help herself. This gave her moral support at a critical time, but she still couldn’t remember things that had happened to her and she still experienced periods of missing time. She tried taking psychiatric drugs but those made her feel suicidal, so she stopped. She found a hypnotist and tried hypnotherapy. With his help, she was able to recover some memories and gain some control over her life, but she still had problems. Her hypnotist discovered some articles that I had been writing about Fabian Therapy, and he tried using some of the Fabian techniques that I’d described, and she improved greatly as a result. She felt happier and more stable. She gained a much needed control over her life. So although I'm not giving advice on how to do therapy with this book, I can say that some therapists and their clients have already found this information useful.

Different people come to mental liberation in different ways. And every person has to find his or her own path. But there can be tools which can help you in the process of achieving liberation. And that's what this book is about. *Mental Liberation in the Age of Thought Control* is a collection of stories, lessons and descriptions of techniques, all of which relate to deprogramming brainwashing and propaganda.

I want to make it clear that I'm not giving advice for mental health treatment. My only purpose here is to share information. What you choose to do with this information is your responsibility.

My hope is that some of this information might somehow be used to help the victims of harmful brainwashing techniques. However, it isn't just the victims of mind control and their therapists who will find this book useful. Anyone interested in psychology and the realization of human potential will find this information of interest. The more you understand how the human mind works, the more empowered you become. So this information isn't just about healing mind control; it's also about how you can increase your personal abilities.

This book reveals insider information as to how the Illuminati mind control methodology actually works. Some of this information may already be familiar to you, however this book also discusses the Fabian system for the healing and deprogramming of mind control. And this system has never been described by any other source. This book is a modest but unique revelation.

As well as this, I have known some persons who were the victims of various forms of Satanic Ritual mind control, and I am going to describe some of the things that were done to them. I think that it's important that the public knows the extent of depravity into which this mind-control system indulges.
This book may contain information that could be upsetting to anyone who has been subjected to traumatic mind control. Yet in reading this they may

be able to better process their feelings about their abuse. My intention is that this book will give hope to those who seek recovery.

Whether they realize it or not, everybody in our present day culture has been subjected to thought-control technology. The experience of contemporary hospital birth is traumatic for many infants and mothers, and it has been designed to be that way. Circumcision is intentionally traumatic to infant boys. The educational system has been designed to be emotionally traumatic to the students. The *No Child Left Behind* and *Common Core State Standards* programs have been intentionally designed to be psychological torture for children. And there are many other ways that ordinary persons are traumatized by life. And much of this trauma is intentional. It has been engineered by those in power.

The mass media propaganda and the entertainment business with its dark agenda are all part of a mind-control matrix. In a sense, the entire world culture has been subjected to Illuminati mind control. This book describes a path to mental liberation in this age of thought control.

Therefore, this is a book for everyone.

Monarch Mind Control & The Culture of Celebrity

The internet and tabloids are

filled with stories about how celebrities

are subjected to Monarch mind control. Whether it’s true or not, certain celebrities have been promoted in the media as having been subjected to Monarch mind control – celebrities like Lady Gaga, Rihanna, Beyonce, Madonna, Angelina Jolie, Johnny Depp, Miley Cyrus, Katy Perry and others. The naive young people who look up to such entertainers are being sold on the idea that being in the Illuminati is hip. The idea of Illuminati mind control is sold to them as the path to wealth and fame.

Monarch mind control is presented as being glamorous. But of course nothing could be further from the truth.

Consider the case of Katy Perry. I have no idea if she's actually been subjected to Monarch mind control, but her carefully crafted public image implies that she has been. And this implication is deliberate.

She was raised in a Christian family, but now she's Lucifer's poster "*Gurl*". Every video featuring her promotes the Illuminati's agenda and is filled with Satanic imagery. She produced a video called *Wide Awake* in which she hints that she's still a good Christian and has overcome her mind control. But the video is filled with Illuminati symbolism, and it ends with a Monarch butterfly flying over her, implying that she's still brainwashed. The videos and public performances that she's done since the release of *Wide Awake* all indicate that her celebrity status is still being used to promote the Illuminati's agenda.

And you should know that the phrase "wide awake" is a control command for waking up alter personalities. The *alter personality* is the personality that has been programmed into the mind control victim by the Illuminati brainwashers. So the *Wide Awake* video itself is being used to reinforce the programming of victims of Monarch mind control.

I don't wish to demonize Katy Perry. Most Christians are clueless about the nature of Satanism and many Christians work for wealthy Satanists without really fully understanding the true nature of their employers.

And this may be the case for Katy Perry. I have no idea if Katy Perry even understands the Luciferian symbolism that is found throughout all of her videos. She may be the perfectly nice Christian that she says she is. She might not even understand the meaning of the Illuminati hand signals that she sometimes flashes. I think we should give her the benefit of any doubts we might have about her personal faith. But there is no doubt that she has made a "deal with the devil", as she has publicly admitted. The Illuminati manages her career, her videos and her performances. And they use her and the other celebrities to promote the idea that the life of a Monarch mind control slave is glamorous.

Monarch mind control is a system of brainwashing that was developed out of the MK Ultra mind-control research project funded through the CIA. After World War II, MK Ultra combined American intelligence on mind control with captured Nazi intelligence. As a child, I was subjected to some MK Ultra techniques, and I've known others who have been the victims of it. What I hope to convince you of is the fact that there is nothing glamorous about this type of mind control. And you should know that the persons who promote the use of mind control are among the most depraved individuals imaginable.

The Non-Glamorous Life of an MK-Ultra Sex Slave

The reality of mind control used to brainwash someone into sex work can be brutal. There is nothing glamorous about it. Tabloids and Hollywood movies may tease the public with the idea that mind-controlled sex workers are enjoying themselves. But the actuality of this phenomenon is tragic.

I could give you many examples of persons I've known whose lives were scarred by the mind control they were subjected to and the sex work they were forced to perform. But there is one MK Ultra mind-control victim that stands out. She was called *Daisy*. I only saw her up close and in person one time, and that was when I saw her ravaged corpse on the floor of a garage. She had committed suicide at the home of a wealthy Satanist, a man we called *the Baron*. Her corpse was dressed in a dirty rag of a dress, and her legs and arms had bruises and track marks from shooting up heroin. She looked completely ruined. I would learn of her life from photographs and stories told to me.

Originally her name was Veronica, but after she was subjected to MK

Ultra mind control, her personality was completely erased, and she was programmed with a new personality named Daisy. All this was done under the authority of that powerful Satanic leader whose nickname was the Baron.

I never knew the Baron's real name. I was told that he had two homes. In one home he lived a normal life with his wife and children. He went to church on Sunday and was a respected member of his community. But he would be gone away on business for weeks at a time.

The Baron also owned a mansion of which his real family had no knowledge. In the basement of that mansion was a large black room containing a Satanic temple. He would conduct upscale orgies with his fellow Luciferians in the sex rooms located on the upper floors of this mansion. His staff were dedicated to him. He had many followers. He was called the Baron because he was like the robber barons of old. He was a ruthless businessman and he ran a criminal empire.

One day when he was driving down the road, he noticed Veronica walking along the street. He immediately felt lust for her. He got out of his car and quietly stalked her. He observed where she was headed.

When she walked into a small eatery and sat at the counter, the Baron followed her in and sat next to her. They started up a conversation and there was a mutual attraction.

Veronica was a beautiful young woman. She was well educated. She had a good job and was independent. She was known for her intelligence and wit. Slowly, over a period of weeks and months, the Baron seduced her.

Their relationship was very romantic. They took trips together to Europe and upscale resorts. He led Veronica to believe that he was unmarried.

He revealed the fact that he was very wealthy. He hinted that someday he might marry her. He bought a small home for her by a lake near his mansion. Sometimes he would bring her to his mansion to show off how wealthy he was. But he never let her see the basement, the upstairs sex rooms, or his office.

I was only in his of

fice one time. I knew that he always kept it locked.

This was because his office was very revealing. The Baron was sexually perverse, and he had photos with sexual content plastered over all the walls of his office. He had a photo of himself standing nude in an English pond with his friend Aleister Crowley, the famous English occultist.

This was an indication of the Baron's belief in sex magick, which is a type of psycho-sexual philosophy promoted by Crowley. The Baron was very proud of his own psycho-sexual obsessions. He had many photos of himself having sex with many different men and women of different ages. He had a photo of me dressed in women's lingerie when I was eleven years old kneeling before him performing fellatio while he sat in a throne-like chair dressed in a devil's outfit. This photo was in an elaborate frame that had a small light over it, illuminating the photo.

And all of these photos were a reflection of the Baron's real personality.

But his social persona was that of a dignified and Christian gentleman.

He fanatically guarded his public persona and concealed his true nature.

So he was very careful about who he let into his office.

But one day, back when he was still courting Veronica, he happened to leave his office door unlocked while she was visiting his home. Veronica knew nothing of the Baron's sexual perversity or his Satanism. She was only allowed to see his Christian gentlemanly persona. But all that changed in an instant.

The Baron had horses which he raised and sometimes sold. A mare was giving birth to the offspring of an expensive race horse, and the Baron wanted to observe the birth. After he left in a hurry, Veronica used this opportunity to sneak into the Baron's temporarily unlocked office.

She knew that he was a man of many mysteries. She wanted to find out something about this wealthy man who she hoped would someday marry her. But it turned out that there were many things in his office which shocked her. The sexually explicit photos covering the walls were perhaps less offensive than the revelations that followed. On his desk the Baron kept photos of his wife and children which would have demonstrated to Veronica that the Baron had been misleading her all along. Apparently she also started going through his files and realized that he was a criminal and a Satanist. She must have felt betrayed as she realized the depth of his deception. Angry and upset, she took some of the incriminating photos and files with her as she ran away from the estate.

She knew a newspaper man who was an old friend of hers. She took these materials to this reporter and told him that she wanted him to write and publish an exposé on the Baron. Initially he agreed. But when this reporter took the photos and files to his newspaper's chief editor, he was yelled at and told that it was all a fraud. The editor took possession of all the files and photos. He told the reporter if he ever tried to write such a story he would be fired. What the reporter didn't know was that the editor was a Luciferian and the Baron's friend. The editor returned the files and photos to the Baron and told him what Veronica had tried to do.

The Baron was not only angry with her, he was also afraid of her. One rule that the Illuminati demands from its initiated members is invisibility.

They must never allow themselves to be exposed, and they can never reveal what they know of the Illuminati. Every initiated member takes sacred oaths to this effect. The penalty for breaking the rule of invisibility is death. So the Baron had to take immediate action. He had his men abduct Veronica. They locked her up in a windowless room that was out in his barn.

The Baron had several persons working for him at that time who were experts on MK Ultra mind control, and so he made use of them. The first thing they did was to use some mind-control techniques on the reporter.

Although he had been discouraged by his editor from writing an exposé on the Baron, this reporter, on his own, had started to research Satanism and the Illuminati. However, that night, when he was at his favorite bar, one of the Baron's men secretly put a drug into his drink. When he walked out of the bar in a drowsy state, he was whisked off to some place where the MK Ultra experts could work on him. Commands were implanted into his mind compelling him to forget about Veronica and to never write about Satanism. When the mind controllers were done with him, they parked his car in front of his home and left him asleep in the back seat. This reporter never realized that he had been the victim of mind control. The next day when he woke up on the back seat of his car, the reporter probably thought that he had gone on a bender the night before and had simply blacked out for a while. And it did turn out that this mind control was successful. This reporter never again investigated the Baron and he dropped all of his research into Satanism.

But what was done to Veronica was far more extreme.

First the Baron arranged so that it would appear that she had died. He made some bribes, and from a medical school or some such place he purchased a corpse that was the approximate height of Veronica. The Baron also knew a dental technician who could be bribed. The dental technician made up a dental chart for the corpse. The Baron’s men broke into the office of Veronica’s dentist. They filed the phony dental chart in her dentist’s office under her name. Then the medical corpse was placed in Veronica’s sports car. The car was set on fire and rolled down a hill. The body that was recovered was so badly burnt that it had to be identified with dental charts. In this way, Veronica was officially declared dead. Her family and friends buried the wrong corpse and mourned her death.

Secondly, the Baron didn’t trust Veronica, so he had his MK Ultra experts completely erase her personality. They used an extreme form of sensory deprivation over a long period of time. She was so traumatized by this that her personality completely disassociated. Veronica never came back. Complete *tabula rasa* – a total blank slate. So this wasn’t multiple personalities. This was personality erasure.

They renamed her Daisy, after the Baron’s favorite mare, and began to reprogram her with a new personality. This was systematic *psychic driving*. At first she couldn’t speak or eat on her own. She couldn’t even use the toilet. They kept her in diapers and hand fed her. They talked baby talk to her. Eventually her ability to speak came back. After several weeks, she began to talk, walk and eat on her own. But she was like a child. And she had no memory of the past. She didn’t know her name, what country she was in or anything about her past.

They began to train her to be the perfect sex slave. They had her look at TV shows and mimic the speech and behavior of sexy female characters.

They showed her porno movies and had her mimic the behavior of the prostitutes starring in these films. Daisy became a shallow, obedient sex worker.

She was quite beautiful, and at first the Baron used her to make porno films with high production values to be sold to wealthy Luciferians in America and Europe. In these films she had sex with other young attractive men and women. With training she became something like a sexual athlete. She could perform any sex act in any position with multiple partners.

But a principle of mind control is that you never really erase the original personality with trauma-based mind control. The original core personality only becomes subconscious. So Veronica was still in there, although totally repressed and disconnected from the conscious mind.

And this sex work went completely against her morals and personality.

The more sex work she did, the more depressed she became. The only way they could motivate her to perform as a sex worker was to give her alcohol, so she became an alcoholic.

As her looks diminished, the Baron stopped using her in the high class porno films and started having her perform in films involving extreme deviant sex. One thing that fascinated the Baron was bestiality. He forced Daisy to have sex with horses, mules, sheep, dogs and goats. If she tried to refuse, the Baron would torture her until she obeyed. He especially liked having her filmed while she had sexual intercourse with goats.

In the Baron’s office, I once saw a photo of him, Daisy and a horse. The horse was saddled and the Baron, naked, was standing up straight with his feet in the stirrups. He had a big smile on his face and an erection. In one hand he held a dog leash which went down to the dog collar around the neck of Daisy. She was naked and kneeling in a pile of manure next to the horse, which also had an erection. In the photo she was clearly seen to be sexually servicing the horse. Next to this photo was a different photo that had been taken shortly after the Baron had first met Veronica. In it, the two of them looked attractive and in love with each other. In that photo Veronica looked beautiful, intelligent and dignified.

In his own twisted way, the Baron was proud of what he had done to this beautiful woman with whom he had once been in love. One thing that Satanists believe is that revenge is a religious duty. And the more insanely a Satanist pursues revenge, the more worldly power is given to him by Satan.

Over time, Daisy could only be motivated to perform degrading sex acts by being rewarded with heroin or cocaine. She became a heroin addict.

And eventually her looks diminished to the point that she was of no value to the Baron as a sex worker. He set her up in a room in a poor part of town and sent her small amounts of money so she wouldn't starve.

She became a cheap streetwalker so she could get enough money for alcohol and drugs. But eventually she was so beat up and ravaged that she couldn't even turn tricks for winos.

So she asked the Baron to send her more money. He refused. In response to this, she went to his estate and snuck in the back way. She found a rope and ladder. She hung herself to death on a tree in his backyard. This turned out to be most inconvenient for the Baron because he happened to be having a party at that time and everyone saw the corpse. But the Baron pretended that it was one of his famous practical jokes. And everyone at the party went along with this explanation whether they believed it or not. They were all Luciferians, so the Baron really had nothing to worry about. Nobody who really knew the Baron was likely to betray him. I happened to be one of the guests that night, so I saw the whole thing.

Daisy's corpse was cut down from the tree by the Baron's butlers. Her body was placed on the floor of his garage. He had his men dispose of her body elsewhere. They decided to try to have her body hung back up in another location with a suicide note which would not connect her to the Baron. In order to forge the suicide note they needed a sample of her handwriting. So the Baron had his butlers bring down some boxes containing memorabilia that he kept on Veronica and Daisy. In it he found a letter from Daisy. They put Daisy's corpse in the back of a van, and two of the Baron's men drove off with it.

The Baron left the garage and went back to his party. This left me alone in the garage with Bob, another man who worked for the Baron and whose story is told in my other books. Although I didn't know it at the time, Bob had become disillusioned with the Baron and with Satanism.

I noticed some photos in the boxes. When I looked at them they shocked me. Bob began to tell me about Daisy and Veronica. Then he decided to take all the boxes that had been set out. We loaded them into the trunk of Bob's car. Then we went to say our goodbyes to the Baron.

We found him in the mansion and Bob thanked him for inviting us to the party. The Baron told us to come up to his office. This was the only time I was let in there. In a sense this was supposed to be an honor, because the Baron was very careful about who he let into his office. He made a big deal out of showing us the photo of me performing fellatio for his benefit while he was dressed as the devil. This was his way of telling me that he valued me as a possession. Looking at that photo of me in his office made me feel angry and ashamed, but out of fear I said nothing. It was also there in his office that I saw the two photos of Daisy and Veronica which I have described. I think the Baron was trying to make a point to us. He once had loved Veronica. But he felt that she had betrayed him. So he had avenged himself upon her in a way that was worse than if he had killed her. The once dignified and intelligent Veronica had been reduced to a cheap whore who entertained the Baron by performing acts of bestiality. Letting us see those photos was the Baron's way of warning us to never betray him. But, unbeknownst to the Baron, we had just stolen some of his boxes of Veronica memorabilia without his permission, and I wondered what Bob was up to, risking the wrath of a man who was insanely committed to revenge.

We said our goodbyes and left the party. Back at his house, Bob showed me some films and photos of Veronica/Daisy and told me the whole story. I had thought of Bob as being completely loyal to the Baron, but that night I began to realize that he wasn't.

I had been subjected to Satanic Ritual Abuse at various times throughout my childhood. I had been forced against my will to do sex work as a child. When I was with my mundane Christian family, I was Kerth.

When I was with Luciferians, I was Kathy. I had two personalities, but they had become integrated over time. I have told this story in my book, *Angelic Defenders & Demonic Abusers*. Kathy was the name of my Luciferian sex worker personality. But the sex work I had done hadn't been anything like the intensely degrading experiences that Veronica/

Daisy had been put through.

Sometimes young men from generational Satanist families are forced to do sex work during childhood as part of their training. The sex work tends to force them to emotionally bond with other Luciferians while at the same time giving them a sociopathic outlook on life. The sex work I did was as much for mind control purposes as anything else. The Baron had other child prostitutes he could have used instead of me. The sex work was a way of conditioning me. He wanted me to grow up to be a Satanist. The Baron had done sex work when he was a child. Many of the people in this world who you might think of as having great power were actually systematically abused as children. So in reality these powerful men are actually just brainwashed slaves themselves.

There was a great deal of pressure on me to join the Church of Satan.

But after I learned what had been done to Veronica, I knew I had to resist the pressure to join the Church no matter what. I didn't want to become just another slave of Satan. So her death was not in vain. In spite of all her suffering, she helped to motivate me to do what I needed to do to escape Satanism.

Later on I heard the story of the two men whose job it was to dispose of Daisy's corpse. One of the men entrusted with this chore was called Ole Jack. Eventually he and I would become friends. He was a very unsympathetic person, but at times he could be righteous. He knew that Veronica had been horribly mistreated. However, although he understood the wrongness of what was done to her when she was alive, he never felt sympathy for the dead. He often told the story of that night when they tried to dispose of Daisy’s corpse. Apparently everything imaginable had gone wrong. It was described to me as a comedy of errors. Finally, because of circumstances, they wound up burying her corpse in an unmarked grave in a garbage dump. So much for the glamorous life of an MK Ultra mind-control sex worker.

The Use of Spirituality & “Truther” Materials for Deprogramming

The entertainment industry has hinted at the idea that Monarch mind control somehow is glamorous and that it may even give its recipients enhanced abilities. But the reality is that the Illuminati is run by deceptive and decadent aristocrats. Once you accept the fact that Monarch mind control is not a system of therapy or of self-improvement and that it is a degrading process, then you can appreciate the need to heal and deprogram the victims of this type of brainwashing.

I have been in communication with some survivors of Monarch mind control and the therapists who try to help them. These are people who have been subjected to Monarch mind control and who are attempting to recover from its effects. I myself am a survivor of Satanic Ritual Abuse and some MK Ultra techniques. What I know of Monarch mind control is that it’s based on MK Ultra research and that it is a very precise technology. The programing of Monarch is based not just on spoken language but also on the projection of images into the mind. Drugs and suggestions are used in a very exacting way. It’s a sophisticated process. Treatment for recover from this can take a great deal of time and can be very difficult. I have been involved with survivors of mind control abuse at various times in my life and in various ways. However, in recent months, my only contact with such survivors has been through emails and letters. Over the last few years I have put some articles on the internet describing some recovery methods for mind control. So some people interested in these methods have communicated with me. And some of these discussions have also gone into related subjects.

One thing that many deprogrammers have found useful is to approach this subject of deprogramming on an intellectual level. There are a number of well known “Truthers” such as Ellen Hodgson Brown, Alex Jones, David Icke and others. They have talked about how this global system of corruption operates. This type of analysis is called *Deep Politics*. This is where a researcher goes into the root causes of what’s going on, rather than getting hung up on the superficiality of partisan politics. Materials on deep politics and truther issues, such as *9/11 Truth*, can awaken a brainwashed person, at least on an intellectual level. Rather than going directly into their personal experience of abuse, they intellectually comprehend how the entire world culture has been abused. So this can be the first step in a process of mental liberation.

Some people wrongly assume that Christianity is the cure for Satanic Ritual Abuse. I’m a Christian, and I’ve found this faith useful to me. I have personally found that simple Christian prayer is very important to my recovery and ongoing well-being. Heart-centered and loving prayer can be very powerful. But I have to acknowledge that some Christian Churches are themselves founded on a type of mind control. And the use of mind control in other religions is common. In fact, the CIA deliberately created mind-control cults in the US during the 1950s and 1960s, and some of those cults were religions. To exchange the mindcontrol system of Satanism for some other type of religious mind control is not an improvement. For a person who has been subjected to Satanic Ritual Abuse to enter into another system of mental abuse can create problems for that person. Some Christian ministers are very narrowminded, invalidating and judgmental. If you are drawn to the spiritual path of Christianity, you need to find a fellowship that is open-minded, life-affirming and heart-centered. So you have to be very careful if you are seeking to liberate yourself from mind control or if you are trying to help somebody else. You need to find an approach to mental liberation which does only good and doesn’t do more harm.

This book that you are now reading –

Mental Liberation in the Age

of Thought Control – contains in it what I know of the process for deprograming MK Ultra and Satanic Ritual Abuse. I gained this information as a survivor who escaped a Satanic cult, and as someone who has worked therapeutically with other survivors at various times in my life. Also, over the years I've received some insider information about Monarch mind control. So I've included these insights in this book. The information contained in this book is the same information that I have been privately sharing with recovering survivors and the therapists who are working with them.

The problem with some of the techniques that I've taught, and with methods which other deprogrammers have developed, is that they work slowly over a long period of time. In some cases this takes years of difficult work. So we always look for something that can accelerate the process.

One thing that I've found personally helpful is the Reiki holistic healing practice. I am myself a Reiki master. Let me explain about Reiki just in case you are unfamiliar with it. The word *Reiki* translates from Japanese to mean *Universal Life Force*. *Rei* means *universal* and *ki* means *life force*. It's pronounced "ray key". Reiki is a field of invisible energy which permeates the entire Cosmos. It does only good and brings all living things into health and harmony. You could say that Reiki only operates at the higher vibrational level of unconditional love. A Reiki healer accepts this Universal Life Force through the crown of the head and projects it outward through the palms of the hands. This may be a hands-on healing practice, or it may be done remotely, at a distance.

This is done to heal someone spiritually, mentally and physically. It's a subtle but tangible healing practice.

Then they began laying their hands on them, and they were receiving the Holy Spirit. – Acts 8:17

Some Reiki healers are Christians who think of Reiki as a Christian practice. The Japanese word *rei* can also be translated as *divine* or *holy*, and the word *ki* can be translated as *spirit*. So Reiki could be thought of as a word for the Holy Spirit. Reiki was developed in the 1920s by a Japanese Buddhist named Mikao Usui. However some of the early practitioners and promoters of Reiki practice were Japanese Christians.

Some have tried to define Reiki practice as a Christo-Buddhist practice.

However I think that Reiki healing practice it most accurately thought of as a non-religious spiritual practice which promotes holistic health.

The way that Mikao Usui came into his healing practice is this: he had gone on a pilgrimage to Mt. Kurama in Japan, a home to temples, shrines and sacred traditions. During a period of fasting and prayer, Mikao Usui had what some might call a “shamanic” experience. During this experience a powerful flow of spiritual energy came into the crown of his head. Apparently he had visions and saw certain sacred symbols.

After this he found that he could heal people with Reiki energy which he projected from his palms. Some call this practice *palm healing*.

Eventually Mikao Usui began to teach this practice to others. They in turn taught others, and so forth. Through a succession of teachers, every Reiki palm healer inherits this ability. So every Reiki palm healer, myself included, is personally connected to Mikao Usui and the experience he had on Mt. Kurama.

As a Christian, I feel no con

flict with my Reiki practice and Christianity.

However my personal relationship with Jesus Christ and Mary the Mother of Christ still represents, for me, my most important source of spirituality. Whatever your religious or non-religious philosophy, it’s very important to find a spiritual practice which centers you in heartfelt goodwill for humanity and all life.

Also there is the study of

truther books and videos. These would be well-researched books which challenge the lies and propaganda put out by the corporate-owned mass media. David Icke’s *Perception Deception* would be an example of a truther book. Alex Jones sells truther books on his website. Some therapists who treat victims of Monarch mind control have used truther materials as a tool for deprogramming. One technique is that a therapist will show a truther video to a mind-control victim, and then watch the recovering victim as he or she watches the video. If the recovering victim shows signs of confusion or anxiety, the therapist stops the video and talks with his or her client. This allows the opportunity for explanations or the processing of negative emotions.

When it comes to written materials, some recovering victims have studied them in a very specific and intensive way. In recent years I've worked with a group of psychics who oppose the Illuminati. They've taught me a reading technique that I've taught to others. This technique is called *scan-subvocalize-cognize*. This reading technique subtlety evokes psychic power in the act of study to enhance comprehension. In a sense this is really a spiritual practice.

Scan-subvocalize-cognize is a reading technique that encourages a higher level of comprehension. It works like this:

Scan

You

scan a section of written material quickly by moving your finger or a pointer across each line starting from the beginning and moving sequentially to the end. This is not speed reading because you aren't trying to actually read the text at this point. You are simply scanning line after line in the text, searching for words that you might wish to look up in a dictionary. This is an intuitive action. In a sense it doesn't even matter why you might want to look up a particular word. Maybe the word is unfamiliar, maybe you just feel like looking up that particular word in a dictionary.

The real reason for scanning for words to look up in the dictionary is to give your conscious/analytical mind something to do while you perform the physical action of scanning. Most people think of psychic ability as being a purely mental activity. But I have known some very powerful psychics, and they all believe that psychic ability is a mind-body practice that involves physical behavior and a physical sensitivity. That is to say, you evoke the projection of your psychic powers with your physical actions and you receive psychic insights with a sensitivity to feelings in your physical body.

So psychic ability is a physical discipline which results in a mental or emotional realization. This is because psychic powers arise through the subconscious mind from the superconscious psychic mind. The subconscious mind has a neurological/mental barrier between it and the conscious mind. Some call this barrier the limen. The limen is the threshold that defines the limits of the analytical conscious mind as well as the limits of the intuitive subconscious mind. The conscious mind is associated with the logic and language activities of the brain's left hemisphere. The subconscious mind is associated with the intuitive and imaginative activities of the brain's right hemisphere.

What separates the left and right hemispheres is what might be called a lack of wiring in the brain. What connects the conscious mind and the subconscious mind together is the nervous system of the physical body.

So all valid psychic practices involve physical actions and a sensitivity to physical feelings.

And that's what this scanning practice is. You physically move the pointer or your finger along the lines of the text while at the same time moving your eyes along with the pointer. You should do this is a slow, even manner. You don't even try to comprehend the written text at this point. You are really just hunting for those words which feel unfamiliar.

These would be words whose meanings are uncertain to you. While you are scanning like this, you will sometimes find that you have a feeling of discomfort in your body. You may yawn, you may feel drowsy, you may suddenly feel bored, you may suddenly feel angry for no reason or it may just be a feeling of something being wrong. When you have such a feeling, look back at the text you've just scanned and see if any word pops out at you. When you notice such a word, that feels like you should look it up, write it down on a list. After you have scanned the section of text, you then look up all those words in a dictionary and see how they apply to the text. But if you don't feel that you need to look up any words, that's fine also. This is because the physical act of scanning opens up the subconscious mind to a deep psychic decoding of the meaning of the text.

In his book

Perception Deception, David Icke says, “The universe is a tapestry of resonating waveform information fields… from which we decode information and to which we also ‘post’ information… I call this waveform construct the *Metaphysical Universe* or the *Cosmic Internet*.”

What David Icke is referring to as the Metaphysical Universe is what some advanced psychics would call the Universal Mind. Some Remote Viewers call this the Great Unknown. Edgar Cayce once said that the subconscious mind is the doorway to the superconscious mind which is the source of your psychic powers. Whatever you choose to call this Metaphysical Universe, all information already exists there, and anything that is coded into written language is only a partial reflection of this universal knowledge. So with the combination of your analytical mind with your psychic powers you can both comprehend and transcend the knowledge in a written text.

So the scanning process is a step toward intensively decoding information that is represented by written words. First you intuitively sense the information before you analytically think about it. And that’s all you’re doing with the scanning process; you’re intuitively getting a feeling for the material.

Another thing which connects the left and right hemispheres, and thus the conscious and subconscious minds, is the visual cortex. When you close your eyes, you invite imagination into your consciousness.

The sleep dreams that you remember when you wake up are visualbased because they are messages from your subconscious mind to your conscious mind. When your eyes are open, and you are engaged in visual activity, you are evoking the powers of your subconscious mind, and that in turn brings into play your superconscious psychic powers. So as strange as this may seem to you, when you quickly glance at the words, without trying to read them in a traditional sense, that actually invites psychic ability into your reading process. You have to experience this to understand it.

Subvocalize

The next step in this decoding process is *subvocalization*. Again this is

a physical process. Subvocalization is the process of reading a text out loud in a barely audible whispered voice. The psychics I've worked with have done a great deal of scientific research, and they've told me that when a person is scanning, a different part of the brain is activated than when a person is subvocalizing.

Again you want to give the conscious/analytical mind a chore to do to keep it busy while you perform the subvocalization process. So while you subvocalize the section of the text, hunt for words to look up in a dictionary. During the subvocalization process you quietly read the words out loud in a slow, even, whispered voice. While subvocalizing you might notice that your voice falters or that you mispronounce a word. You might feel the urge to cough suddenly or you may have some similar physical response. When you feel this, check back in the text you have just read and look for any words that pop up into your attention.

When you find such words, write them down in a list. When you've finished subvocalizing the section, look up those words in a dictionary and check what their meanings would be in the context of the the written text. If you don't come across any words to look up, again that is OK.

This is because the process of subvocalization is another step in the process of deeply decoding information.

During the subvocalization process, don't try to fully comprehend what you are reading. It's enough to just begin to have a feeling what what the author is conveying. Don't really think about what you are reading as you subvocalize, just go through the physical process of subvocalization and pay attention to what you what you physically feel.

Cognize

Once you've scanned and subvocalized, as well as looked up words in a dictionary (when necessary), then you actually read the text as you would normally do. To *cognize* is to understand or know something.

Scanning and subvocalization are physical/psychic processes. When you finally cognize the text, the reading of it is a mental process rather than a physical/psychic discipline. So you are not really physically involving yourself so much in this final reading. Your full attention is on understanding the text. But by preceding the final reading of the text with the physical/psychic processes of scanning and subvocalizing, you have prepared your conscious mind to cognize this information deeply.

It’s best to apply the scan-subvocalize-cognize reading method to sections of an overall text which are only a few pages long. You scan a few pages, then you subvocalize those pages and then you finally read those pages for comprehension.

I’ve heard various theories as to why scan-subvocalize-cognize works.

The group of researchers who developed this technique were highly educated. One theory is that scan-subvocalize-cognize balances the activities of the intuitive right hemisphere of the brain with the analytical left hemisphere of the brain. Most reading of a text is a purely left-brain activity, so people become bogged down when they read too much.

Apparently the brain is designed to balance left and right brain activities.

And that’s what scan-subvocalize-cognize does.

I don’t know for certain why it works, but I do know that it does work.

It’s worked for other people to whom I’ve taught this process, and it’s worked for me. Anybody who knows me knows that I don’t get along well with computers and other machines. But we all need to use these devices, so it’s necessary to study technical materials. When I do need to read a technical paper, I always use scan-subvocalize-cognize, and this technique makes it possible for me to comprehend those subjects which were once incomprehensible to me.

If you are trying to

figure out what truther materials to use in the deprogramming of yourself or others, consider the works of Ellen Hodgson Brown, Alex Jones, David Icke as well as the websites that I've listed above.

Illuminati Brainwashing, Basic Principles

There is a basic theory for Illuminati mind control. There are four basic concepts involved in all its mind control methods. These concepts can be applied in different ways, and they can be used with different levels of intensity. Outside the Illuminati these terms are sometimes intentionally defined differently to conceal this information from the general public.

So I'm describing these concepts here as the Illuminati mind controllers would understand them. They are *depatterning*, *tabula rasa*, *psychic driving* and *disassociation*.

Depatterning

Depatterning is the act of changing someone's pattern of thinking. This may be a temporary phenomena or a permanent one. Depatterning can be used for creative purposes or for harmful ones. Forms of depatterning can be very harsh and cruel, such as shock treatment. But there are other applications of this concept. For example, the singing that goes on in a church tends to put people into a slight state of relaxation which makes them open to the sermon that will follow. So the ordinary pattern of secular thought that goes on outside of Church is depatterned by the hymns and spiritual music being performed. I'm not saying that Christian hymns are a form of Illuminati mind control. I'm just pointing out that the concept of depatterning has many applications, not just in brainwashing.

Another example of depatterning can have to do with wearing clothing different from what is normally worn. The clothing you wear defines your role in society. A soldier going to war wears a military uniform – depatterning his civilian way of thinking. If a gay man, who normally dresses and acts masculine, puts on a drag costume at a gay bar, he's depatterning his normal way of thought and behavior to give himself permission to behave in an overtly sexual way.

Depatterning is not necessarily mind control, it’s just something that is done to allow a different pattern of thinking and behavior to emerge. If it’s done consciously and rationally, depatterning can be an expression of individual free will. It would be any practice or ritual that allows you to shift the pattern of your thoughts and behavior.

There is an interesting story that is often told about the Satanist Aleister Crowley. One night, he demonstrated depatterning to a friend. He walked behind a stranger on the street, exactly mimicking the stranger’s footsteps so that the sound of his own footsteps would be subliminally entrained into the mind of the stranger. (*Entrainment* is when you establish a pattern into a person’s mind through rhythm and repetition.) Once Crowley had subliminally entrained the stranger’s pattern of walking through the sound of his own footsteps, he deliberately made a series of loud missteps. This caused the stranger in front of him to instantly stumble without understanding why.

However, brainwashing takes depatterning to an extreme as a way of attacking the personality of the victim. Here depatterning is used as a form of abuse. This might come about as any activity that overwhelms and disorients the individual. This turns off the reasoning mind and opens the subconscious mind to programming. And always such programming goes against the welfare and free will of the individual.

One common approach to depatterning is to shame a person through the confession of sins or mistakes. There are many common systems of indoctrination which start out with this process. I’m not saying that the Illuminati are the only ones who use mind control. They are just the most extreme. Actually the entire culture of our world is obsessed with mind control, and many forms of organized religion use it. Through the confession of sins, the person is beaten down emotionally through a process of self-invalidation. Depatterning is the deconstruction of the ego by systematically attacking the self-esteem of the individual. Of course people do make mistakes in life, and it’s important to recognize mistakes so that change can take place, but to begin a therapy process by having the subjects list their mistakes or sins is an attack upon the ego.

Individuals need strong, healthy egos. This type of sin confessing is a way to manipulate people with guilt. It depatterns the person's normal self-esteem.

When depatterning is taken to an extreme, it invalidates and erases the individual's natural core personality.

Tabula rasa

Tabula rasa is from Latin. It literally means tablet erasure or an erased tablet. This is where the mind of the individual is turned into a blank slate. It's the complete or partial erasure of the individual's personality.

This is the goal of the mind controllers.

Tabula rasa can be done on the level of an individual or of a culture.

When tyrants burn books, they are erasing the cultural memory of a people. They want to turn the culture into a blank slate so they can program the people with a new culture.

The New World Order that the globalists are trying to promote is based on the concept of tabula rasa. They want to erase all existing governments in order to create a new, all powerful, global government. They want to erase all religions, languages, currencies and cultures. Then they will be able to impose a single new religion, language, currency and culture upon all of their slaves.

Psychic driving

The psyche is the mind of the individual.

Psychic driving is the

motivations which are programmed into people's minds to compel their behaviors. Once the mind controller has achieved tabula rasa in the mind of the victim, psychic driving is the writing of a new program onto that blank slate. Psychic driving is the creation of a new personality once the brainwasher has achieved the erasure of the old personality.

Psychic driving can take place on the level of a single individual or on the level of an entire culture. The mass media in modern America is very involved in the psychic driving of the entire culture.

Psychic driving can take many different forms. One unsuccessful method was experimented with by the Canadian MK Ultra researcher Donald Ewen Cameron. His form of psychic driving was to put people on LSD

and make them listen to tape-recorded messages over and over again.

Those tape-recorded messages failed to shape or influence the victims’

behavior in any way, but this process did drive the victims completely insane and ruined their lives.
I don’t want to describe the psychic driving methods which do work, because I don’t want to teach people how to brainwash. I’m only interested in teaching how to deprogram and heal the mind. To do that, it’s enough to understand the basic concept of psychic driving.

And I want to point out also that the ultimate form of psychic driving is actually done through psychic abilities. This is also sometimes referred to as *remote influencing*, and it is a very precise technology. This type of psychic driving can be done to a single individual, but powerful psychic adepts can also do it on a cultural level involving the minds of untold numbers of people. For example, when the 9/11 false flag operation was being executed, Satanists performed occult rituals to psychically influence the minds of hundreds of millions of U.S. citizens.

Dissociation

Dissociation is the detachment of the mind from emotions and physical

feelings. Dissociation is essential to the process of mind control. People express their individual will power because of their emotions and physical feelings. You are free to the extent that you can feel and act upon what you feel. Those who lose their ability to connect with their authentic emotions and physical feelings have lost their freedom.

A brainwashed sex slave will feel ashamed of being forced to perform deviant sex acts, but that feeling of shame is detached from the mental processes that control speech and behavior. So the sex slave will talk and behave as if she is enjoying a sex act which she actually finds repulsive. She will pretend to feel pleasure during a sex act which is actually painful.

Dissociation is the disconnection of the individual's willpower so that the will of a controller can override it. When someone is completely dissociated, a new personality will emerge. This new personality is a projection of the desires or intentions of the programmer. Dissociation is achieved with physical and/or emotional torture, and this is the basis of the multiple personality phenomena.

The cult of celebrity is promoted as a way of encouraging this type of mind control. Hollywood actors and music entertainers make it seem glamorous to originate different characters. Celebrities dramatize multiple characters in their entertainment acts. Hollywood and music industry leaders secretly intend this as a dramatization of multiple personality syndrome. Pretending to be different persons and having different looks might seem like harmless fun – and I'm sure that it is sometimes – but the worship of these celebrities is actually a form of social mind control. The public is being taught that it's empowering to have many different personalities. The public is being convinced that genuine authenticity is boring and mundane. But the truth is that centering yourself in your authentic personality is your greatest point of power.

Kerth & Kathy

I wasn't subjected to the ultra-extreme type of torture that was used to erase the personality of Veronica. But I was subjected to some MK Ultra techniques, as well as some traditional techniques of Satanic Ritual Abuse, so I did develop two distinct personalities. These were Kerth and Kathy.

Kerth lived with his mundane Christian family and was an ordinary little boy. Kathy dressed in girl's clothing, witnessed Satanic rituals, socialized with adult members of Luciferian secret societies, and was sometimes coerced into doing sex work – usually with adult men.

Most of the sex work I did as a child basically consisted of some sexual role-playing to help get the client's penis hard, then I would put a condom on his erection and perform a method of fellatio. The idea was to lick the head of the penis in the same fashion as I might lick an ice cream cone.

A lubricant would be used on the shaft of his penis and I would stroke the shaft of the penis with my hands until it ejaculated. If the penis was uncircumcised, this chore tended to be easier. It was more difficult to use this technique effectively with a circumcised penis. And often it was more difficult to bring a circumcised penis to erection. While I was performing fellatio, two or more other sex workers would be massaging the man's body. The idea was to overwhelm him with pleasure so that he wouldn't try to take control of the session.

For one thing, some of the sex work I did was for the purpose of blackmail.

And the hidden movie cameras that were used to secretly film the sex act were in fixed positions on the other side of a two-way mirror. So the sex workers had to direct the man onto a bed or chair that was in the focus of the camera. It was necessary for the purposes of blackmail that the man's face be clearly seen in the film and the fact that he was having sex with a male child had to be clear as well. If he tried to take control of the session, he might wander outside the focus of the camera. Also there was the threat that the client might anally rape me which was incredibly painful, especially if he had a large penis. As a child, I personally felt threatened by men's penises. I tended to think of them as potential objects of torture. But if the penis was managed appropriately with fellatio then the man would have an orgasm before his erect penis could be turned into a weapon. Some of the more skilled sex workers tried to prolong the pleasure of sex by delaying the orgasm while sustaining the erection. The other sex workers I knew considered this to be the art of fellatio. If the man was a regular client, I had to concentrate on the art of fellatio. But if the sex work was just for blackmail, I didn't care about that. In such cases I wanted the penis to ejaculate as soon as possible so I could run out of the room before the subject recovered. That way I could avoid further molestation. After all, the whole point of this chore was to acquire a blackmail film for the Baron.

The Baron might use the

film to acquire blackmail money from a

man, but that was rare. The real objective was to obligate the man to do something which the Baron wanted done. This might be corporate espionage, insider information on stock market trends or some type of political intrigue. Also this was a way to compel a man to become entangled with Satanic secret societies. If the Baron wanted to ask a man to join his secret society, he needed to have something he could use to blackmail him. That way the man wouldn’t have the option of going public with the knowledge of the secret society once he was asked to join it. So the ability to blackmail men in this way was essential to the Baron’s work.

The person who managed my sex work, my pimp, was the man we called Bob, the man who worked for the Baron. The way that Bob trained me, and the basic technique of sex work that we used to make blackmail films, was not some random process. The CIA had done a classified study on how to train children to be pedophiliac sex workers, and how to use their sex work for blackmail purposes. This study had involved sexologists, doctors and psychiatrists. They had concluded that the fellatio technique described above did the least physical damage to the child. And the child could service more clients if he or she used that method. The study described methods for training children, in the most efficient manner, to become sex workers. Bob had a copy of a book that contained this CIA report. And one day, when I had grown to be a teenager, I found a copy of this book by chance and read it. The practice of using children for sex work to create blackmail movies isn’t some rare phenomena. The practice of highly organized child sex rings is woven into the institutions of government and finance around the world. The science and a technology of pedophilia was created by the CIA.

Although some mind control slaves are used merely for sex work like Daisy was, that’s not really the only thing that this mind control is used for. Most of the time when I was being Kathy, I was socializing with adult Luciferian members of secret societies. The purpose of having me dress in girl’s clothing and act feminine wasn’t just sexual. It was for depatterning purposes. It was a way to have me break the behavior pattern of ordinary society so that I could be socialized into the Society of Lucifer. It was a way of training me to be a member of a secret society.

It wasn’t lost on me that people in ordinary society would ridicule any boy who dressed in girl’s clothing. And as Kathy, I usually dressed in girl’s clothing. But the Luciferians never ridiculed me for dressing in girl’s clothing; they complimented me. So I knew that Kathy had to be kept secret and that Kathy’s friends had to be kept secret. I was being conditioned to be the faithful keeper of secrets.

The real power of a secret society arises from its ability to remain invisible. Because of its invisibility, it’s able to covertly attack people without reprisal. The Illuminati cloak of invisibility makes its criminal actions possible. Much of the sex work I performed on adult men was filmed so they could be blackmailed later. Blackmail, political corruption, financial fraud, bribery and assassination are all methods used by secret societies to achieve power. Secrecy is essential to all of that. Pedophiliac sex work is just one aspect of this criminal matrix.

Even as Kathy I didn’t like to do the sex work. It was always scary.

Sometimes it was painful. It always made me feel bad. And it was always humiliating. No child enjoys doing sex work. I had been trained to pretend to enjoy it – but even as Kathy, I hated it. I also disliked the Satanic blood rituals. I felt threatened by the ritual torture and killing of animals. All the chanting and spell casting made me feel creepy.

At

first I felt uncomfortable dressing up like a girl and acting feminine, but eventually I got used to it. It was a game I played when I was around my Luciferian friends. Children need attention, and this was a way for me to get attention from adults. Most of the time when I socialized with Luciferians I enjoyed talking with them. They were nice to me, mostly.

They tutored me in reading and writing. They told me stories. We played card games and ate meals together. They taught me about the philosophy of Luciferianism. And they knew that I would keep secret the fact that they were Luciferians because they would keep secret the fact that I was a boy who sometimes dressed like a girl.

I have talked with other persons recovering from this type of phenomena whereupon your personality becomes bifurcated – that is, a split personality. There is a philosophical question there. Where did this other personality come from? In the case of many people subjected to Satanic Ritual Abuse, the answer is that the other personality is a demon. The question is then, what is a demon? So this is a type of demonic possession, but what is the nature of the demon that is doing the possessing? Is it psychological? Is it religious? Or perhaps does it have something to do with extraterrestrials? I don't know for certain what the answer is to that question concerning the nature of demons. But it is undeniably true that in some sense, demons do in fact exist. And in some cases, the alter personalities involved in the multiple personality phenomena are demons. However demonic possession is not the only explanation for where the alter personalities come from.

I don't believe that I myself became demonically possessed. But certainly there were attempts made to implant me with a demon. Another possible answer to the question of where the alter personality may come from is that it may arise from past-life memories. Many early Christians believed in a form of reincarnation. The name for this phenomena was *gilgul*. They believed that there were certain circumstances where a soul might reincarnate into the world to serve some spiritual purpose.

The soul might come back to make atonement for mistakes made in an earlier lifetime. Or a soul might come back on a type of spiritual mission to help humanity at a critical time. I believe that the Kathy personality initially arose from memories of a previous lifetime when I was a woman named Susan the Poisoner. In that incarnation I was a Satanic witch in old Europe who eventually converted to Christianity.

And the personality from that lifetime became reactivated when I was subjected to Satanic Ritual Abuse in my present incarnation.

The Kathy personality was always more mature and emotionally stronger than the Kerth personality. The Kathy personality was more physically athletic and more intelligent than the Kerth personality. And perhaps most importantly, the Kathy personality had a much higher tolerance for physical and emotional pain. Kerth could be easily broken, but nobody could break Kathy.

But the Kathy personality was only periodically in control of the body.

As Kerth, I was running things most of the time. As Kathy, I could be aware of my life as Kerth – but as Kerth I didn't – couldn't – have any awareness of my life as Kathy. The mind control had created a barrier.

This mental barrier protected my normal life as Kerth. But sometimes things came through anyway. I had nightmares and flashbacks. But for a number of years, there was a clear mental barrier between Kathy and Kerth. The trauma-containing memories created a barrier in the memory system. This caused certain memories to be compartmentalized and associated with a certain personality. I was really always only one person. The Kathy personality was one compartment in the memory system, and the Kerth personality was a different compartment. And trauma-containing memories were the bricks used to build the wall that kept these compartments separate.

Trauma-Based Mind Control

I am assuming here that you have heard of mind-control techniques such as MK Ultra, Monarch and Satanic Ritual Abuse. These types of mind control are used by Luciferian secret societies. All of these techniques are really forms of brainwashing which I am going to refer to as traumabased mind control. The trauma that makes such mind control work is caused by emotional and physical torture. Sometimes it involves drugs.

This torture becomes so overwhelming that the experience becomes blocked out of memory. The people who practice this type of traumabased mind control are very sadistic.

Luciferianism is an occult belief system. Forms of Luciferianism are practiced by the wealthy elite around the globe. These wealthy Luciferians use their secret societies to covertly impose their plans upon the world at large. Trauma-based mind control is one method they use to maintain control over mainstream society.

My goal here is to share enough information that you might have some notion as to what it takes to heal someone suffering from Illuminati mind control. However, I do not intend to share enough information for an unscrupulous amateur, acting alone, to be able to figure out how to use this information to brainwash someone. Nevertheless, covert brainwashing that is highly organized is already being done on a massive scale in society. The Luciferian elite presently have many mind-control technicians with psychiatric training who know perfectly well how to use trauma-based mind control with disturbing skill.

To give an example of how chilling this is, I will describe a film I was once shown. It was a film of the wife of a Senator who had been subjected to trauma-based mind control. The Illuminati's psychiatrists had created an alter personality which could be turned on for the purposes of kinky sex work. In this film of this Senator's wife, I remember that first I could see her normal personality talking with people, and then toward the end of the film, I could see her perform a sex act while she was in her alter personality. This film was in black and white and had sound. It was of reasonable quality for a film shot by an amateur with a handheld camera.

In the first part of the film the Senator's wife is seen visiting the home of a wealthy campaign supporter. He was a man who had donated a great deal of money to her husband's senate campaign. The film had been recorded by the wife of this wealthy supporter using a handheld camera. At the beginning of the film the voice of the camerawoman could be heard more loudly than the voice of the Senator's wife. She was explaining to the

Senator’s wife that it was an honor to have her there, and they wanted to document the visit in film. The rest of the film was focused on the wealthy contributor himself and the Senator’s wife, as he showed her around his estate.

Most of the film was boring. It consisted of the host showing the Senator’s wife his big, expensive home with its gardens and such.

The Senator’s wife politely compliments him on his home. Then they get out to the stables where this wealthy man keeps his horses. He goes through the expansive stables showing off his horses. Then he takes her outside to a fenced-in area where he shows her his prize stud. She politely admires the horse for a while.

Then this wealthy man says some control phrase to the Senator’s wife.

Her expression and tone of voice change. He asks her what is her name.

She gives a name other than her real name. He orders her to take off all of her clothes and to carefully fold them up and place them on a nearby bench. She systematically strips and carefully places her clothes on the bench. She does this in a very robotic way. So she’s standing there naked and showing no emotion. But the wealthy man and his hired hand are sneering at her nude body.

Then he has his hired hand take the bridle of the horse and he orders the Senator’s wife to kneel down next to the horse. Then he orders her to start masturbating the horse. The camerawoman, the wealthy contributor and the hired hand all laugh as she robotically does as she’s ordered. The horse becomes aroused and eventually ejaculates.

Then the man orders the Senator’s to wife redress herself. He has her wash her hands with a hand wipe. Then he brings her back to herself. She rocks back and forth and complains that she blacked out for a second.

She complains of a headache. He pretends to be sympathetic. But it’s clear that she has no memory of what she’s just been forced to do.

The thing is, that everything we experience in life is recorded in the subconscious mind. So the Senator’s wife on some level of consciousness did understand what she had been forced to do and could be forced to do at any time. It’s also a fact that this Senator’s wife was known to develop problems with alcoholism and an addiction to medical drugs. So this manipulation of her personality was not some harmless prank. On some level of consciousness she could feel the humiliation and helplessness of what was done to her.

Furthermore, this

film made of her could be used for blackmail purposes.

It was a way to guarantee the cooperation of the Senator. It’s through such techniques that the government has become so corrupted so that it no longer serves the will of the people. At the present time, the governments in the USA, Israel and Europe only serve a small, wealthy minority of the population. Less than one percent of the population controls the Illuminati-controlled governments. The film of a Senator’s wife robotically masturbating a horse was a political event, and she was an innocent mind-control victim.

This type of absolute power appeals to certain types of personalities.

It isn’t just the perverted sex that appeals to them; it’s the power itself.

They want to take power from others in order to have that power for themselves. They want to treat people like puppets. They want to program human beings as if they are robots. The eventual goal of these control freaks is world domination.

The Illuminati

In order to understand how mind control works, you have to understand the organization that created the advanced mind-control systems that we now find around the world. You cannot understand the mind-control methodology until you understand the nature of the mind controllers.

The Illuminati is a Luciferian cult – secretive in its organization and dedicated to globalism. I would say that the Bavarian Illuminati that was founded in 1776 is only one of many Luciferian secret societies. In my opinion the Illuminati organization is *not* all powerful, and there are Luciferian cults that are *not* under its complete control. But the word *Illuminati* has also become synonymous with all Satanic activity; it just depends on how the word is used in a sentence. So I believe that it's appropriate to use the word *Illuminati* to either refer to a specific organization called the *Bavarian Illuminati* or to refer to all Luciferian secret societies.

I believe that many people in positions of institutional power in society are actually operatives who work for Luciferian secret societies. But of course, not everyone in a position of wealth and power is a secret society member. Yet most wealthy and powerful persons do know that the Illuminati exists. At the present time, the Illuminati is tolerated by wealthy non-members because it seems to operate for the ultimate benefit of all the wealthiest persons in the world.

This consolidation of power and wealth into the hands of a small group of people is not really a conspiracy theory. For example, in October 2011, the Swiss Federal Institute of Technology conducted a complex study.

The scientists who researched the economy detailed how a “Financial Super Entity” was controlling the global economy. The study pointed out how 1% of the companies around the world are controlling 40% of the income. It pointed out how five US banks control half the economy and things have only gotten worse since then. The fact that so much wealth is consolidated into the hands of so few people cannot be a coincidence.

The New World Order is a global plutocracy. This global plutocracy was intentionally created and is deliberately maintained. In order to create and maintain such a global plutocracy, a criminal network is required.

One way to think about the Illuminati is as the secretive, criminal aspect of this global plutocracy.

Not all of the generationally wealthy families practice Luciferianism.

At the elite level of wealth, the most common belief is in some form of Social Darwinism. This means that they think of themselves as genetically superior to those less wealthy than themselves. This is the most popular belief system of those families who have inherited great wealth over numerous generations. They imagine that their so-called superior breeding justifies their wealth. Such beliefs are ridiculous, and the truth is that these people are economic parasites who feed on society without really doing any meaningful work. Yet in spite of their irrational justifications for their own greed, they are not all Satanists.

However, knowingly or unknowingly, all super-wealthy individuals are connected in some way to the Luciferian cults that exist among the generationally wealthy. The Luciferian cults manipulate the most powerful persons in society. You find Luciferian puppets at the top of all important international organizations and governments. Such puppets may not openly refer to themselves as Illuminati; however, whether they call themselves the New World Order or simply the global elite – they are all slaves to Lucifer.

As a discrete organization the Bavarian Illuminati is not all powerful.

But it does wield overwhelming power. This official Illuminati organization was originated by Adam Weishaupt on May 1, 1776. This aristocratic Luciferian cult is presently served by a network of criminal organizations, made up of violent Satanists. Almost all organized crime in the USA and Europe is linked to the Illuminati. And they control the governments in the USA, Israel and European Union. They also have relationships with secret societies around the world.

They are presently operating on a schedule for world takeover. They plan to completely collapse the economy of the USA by the end of 2015.

They plan to dismantle the federal government of the USA in 2017 to make it a part of a “superstate” that includes Canada and Mexico. They plan to announce their global government in 2020. And they plan to have control of all the resources on the planet Earth by 2050. And thus far, they are on schedule. So the Illuminati members think of themselves as being very powerful.

However, the ultimate puppet-masters are not the Illuminati members.

They too are puppets. The ultimate puppet-masters are something more demonic. I have known some very well-educated and well-informed Luciferians who have said that the Illuminati is really being run by some type of hostile extraterrestrial intelligence. I can recall that when I was younger and was involved with the Society of Lucifer. I recall conversations that I had with some Luciferians who believed that they actually were extraterrestrials who were just operating human bodies. They told me this in a very matter-of-fact way. One word for this phenomena is *overshadowing*. The human personality disappears, and the alien/demonic personality overshadows the body and takes it over. Some researchers believe that some aliens are shape-shifters who can take human form. I don't claim to understand everything about these demonic alien overlords. But I do know that the real leaders of the Illuminati aren't really human. Whether or not their DNA is human I don't really know. But I do know that the Illuminati's leaders don't think or behave like human beings, and they don't believe themselves to be human. They actually believe that they are some type of nonhuman entities. They think and act as if they are some type of intelligent Reptilian creatures.

Some Christian ministers also have become aware of what is going on and are using prayer as a spiritual weapon to challenge these demonic forces. But not all Christian ministries are the same. Some Christians are naive about how the Illuminati works. Some Christian ministers are very narrow-minded and intolerant of those who don't agree with them.

But some Christian ministers are very awakened to what is happening with Satanism around the world. And the rise of a global Satanic empire was predicted in Bible prophecy. I have found Christianity and Bible teachings to be personally useful. But I know that not everyone responds to Christianity. In whatever way that you seek to develop your spirituality, you need to have a spiritual awakening. Full spiritual awakening is not just a nice idea, it’s a necessity for survival.

Everyone on the planet is interconnected and everyone is psychically influenced by the Illuminati to varying degrees. The victims of Monarch mind control are extreme examples, but the whole of humanity is being influenced by Luciferian psychic driving. So the development of spiritual and psychic awareness is essential to deprogramming Luciferian mind control. Those who are naive about how they are being manipulated fail to realize that they are being driven like sheep to their slaughter.

The wealthy people who know that the Illuminati exists and do nothing to resist it are not really being very smart. They may temporarily have advantages from their wealth, but the Illuminati intends to soon betray those wealthy persons who aren’t in the Illuminati. The present plan of the Illuminati is to collapse the economy in the USA completely by the end of 2015. And if the Illuminati continue to get their way, the USA will cease to exist as a sovereign nation by the end of 2017. Although the American people have become naive and decadent, there are still strong cultural memories in the American people of democracy and human rights. So this is why the Illuminati intends to start off their final global depopulation campaign by killing off most Americans. Once the USA is in ruins, the Illuminati plans to attack most of the wealthy families around the world. First they will seize the assets of all wealthy nonIlluminati members and then kill all of them and their families.

Also the Illuminati leaders intend to kill off all loyal Illuminati members and their families as they become non-essential to the Illuminati’s plans.

So being a loyal Illuminati member is no guarantee of safety. Right now the Illuminati leaders need many loyal members in order to move their plans forward. And so they treat their members well and give them advantages. But they don’t trust anyone and they hate all human beings.

The Illuminati leaders plan to kill off every human being on the planet except for a few slaves which they intend to severely brainwash. So the Illuminati leaders have policies which will go into effect once they’ve achieved absolute power and their plan is to kill off anyone in their organization as soon as that member becomes non-essential.

I know a man who is called James the Just by his followers. When I was younger I was involved in a type of resistance movement against the Illuminati, and I sometimes worked with James. One function that he performed was to help Illuminati members escape the cult. In some extreme cases, the members would fake their deaths and assume completely new identities. That was the only way they could leave. So it’s very difficult for someone to leave the Illuminati once they have joined.
When I was younger, and also in recent years, I have talked with former members who have escaped the Illuminati. Also I’ve talked with persons still in the Illuminati but who are disillusioned with it. When members are first recruited they are told that the Illuminati is going to create a utopian world society. But it often becomes obvious to the members when they’ve been in the group for a while that this utopia is never going to be created. The Illuminati only intends to create a living hell.

The Illuminati is really a prison. Its members are prisoners to a cruel and inhuman leadership. And the goal of the Illuminati is to turn the entire world into a never-ending hell-like prison.

Emotional Trauma, Violence & Guilt

It isn’t just physical torture that causes people to become traumatized, it’s also the emotional trauma that can come from observing the torture of others or being forced to do intensely humiliating things in order to avoid torture. Also most victims feel intense guilt because of their involvement with Satanism even when that involvement is involuntary.

Trauma-based repressed memories tend to fall into one of three categories:

1.

Trauma imposed on oneself by an abuser.
2.

Witnessing trauma imposed on another by an abuser.
3.

Being forced by a controller to impose trauma on someone else.

No matter what category the trauma-containing memories fall into, they tend to create feelings of fear, depression and guilt. Even when the victims of mind control are completely innocent, they tend to feel guilty.

And the Satanists like to involve other people in their criminal acts. For example, some victims of mind control are forced to perform animal sacrifice as a way of training them to become Satanists.

The blood rituals performed by some satanic cults are designed to intimidate the cult members. Animal or human sacrifices are performed as a way to psychologically intimidate members of the coven. Those who are forced to observe these rituals always feel intimidated by the displays of violence. Even when these violent rituals are done to animals, observing such rituals can be so emotionally disturbing that the experiences become blocked out of memory.

Also, persons in such cults are sometimes tricked into performing acts of violence. For example, one trick is to torture an animal to death very slowly and then another member who dislikes violence will finally kill the animal in order to stop its suffering. Sometimes victims with multiple personalities will have an alter personality which can be programmed to commit acts of violence.

I once saw a series of movies that showed a man being trained to have multiple personalities, one of which was a trained killer. This man had joined a Satanic criminal cult, but he disliked the violence. Apparently he had joined because he wanted the wealth that came from being involved with it. But a problem arose when his wife found out about the cult. She acquired evidence of their animal and human sacrifices and documented some of their criminal activities. She went to the police, but it turned out that the police officer she reported to was also a Luciferian who was a member of a related coven. So the cult found out what she had done.

They abducted her and tortured her to death in front of her husband.

They restrained him and made him watch as they raped her and then slowly skinned her alive. Finally she begged them to kill her. At that point, they allowed her husband to kill her. He was weeping as he slit her throat. This experience became the basis for an alter personality which was trained to be a violent enforcer. This alter personality was first trained to torture animals to death and then he was trained to kill people. Eventually this alter personality came to enjoy the violence. It was as if the man was demon possessed and this possession began at the moment when he killed his wife.

In the Illuminati system, those who are in the Satanic criminal cults are trained for violence at a young age. I think I was about ten years old when I was forced to kill a dog. Really it was a puppy. There was a farm that I was sometimes taken to visit with an older relative who was a Satanist.

There was a puppy there that I was allowed to play with and feed. After a number of visits, whereupon I had emotionally bonded with the puppy, I was then forced to kill it by drowning it. I didn’t want to, but I was told that if I didn’t drown it, I would be tortured by being locked in a box. So I killed the puppy. This was considered to be training. Eventually I did escape the cult, but if I had stayed in, I would have been trained to kill people by first being trained to ritualistically kill animals.

Although I’ve seen movies of human sacrifice, I’ve never personally witnessed one. But I have personally witnessed quite a few animal sacrifices. The most bizarre and terrifying animal sacrifice I ever saw was the time that the Baron ritualistically killed a chimpanzee. He had the chimp dressed up like a minister. The chimp wore a cross around his neck. Apparently the chimp cost the Baron a lot of money. So it was unusual to see a chimp used in animal sacrifice. The Baron had this whole ritual filmed as some type of Satanic training film.

This took place in the basement of his mansion that had been set up as a Satanic temple. He had a large basement underneath his mansion. It had all been painted black. It was lit with gas lights, no electric lights.

This gave it a weird glow. There were strange mystical markings on the floor that were painted in red. And there was an altar at one end of the basement. For this ritual he had gathered some of his followers there.

Most of them were dressed in black robes with hoods. They were naked underneath the robes.

Although I was a boy, the Baron liked to make me dress up in girl’s clothing. For this ritual, I was dressed up all in red. I had on a red dress, red stockings, red boots and red hair. I had on plastic red horns that came up out of my head. I held a plastic red trident. The makeup that had been put on my face made it look reddish. When I looked in the mirror I looked like a devil. And this scared me. When we went down to the Baron’s basement temple I was the only person dressed like this, everyone else had on black robes.

Then this whole ritual was

filmed with multiple cameras. The Baron

brought the unsuspecting chimp into the room and walked him around, introducing him to his coven members as Mr. Christian Minister. The chimp was dressed in a minister’s shirt and collar with a cross symbol hanging from a cord around his neck. The chimp looked old and seemed weakened somehow. But he had been trained to interact with people. The chimp shook hands with people and they chuckled. But then the humor of the situation ended abruptly when the Baron had the Chimp tied down to a table. It took four men to do this and it was quite an accomplishment.

The chimp bit the men and was screaming and chattering the whole time. Once this was accomplished, the Baron put on a mask that made him look like a demon. He stuck a ritual knife into one corner of the table and told his audience that anyone who wanted to could slit the throat of “Mr. Christian Minister” at any time. Then the Baron slowly tortured the chimp in different ways. It was agonizing to watch this. It was the worse animal sacrifice I’d ever seen. And the chimp screeched and chattered in overwhelming pain the

whole time. Finally I took the knife and slit his throat just to stop his pain. I just couldn't stand to see this innocent animal in so much pain.
After I killed the chimp, the Baron had me stand up on his altar holding the bloody knife in one hand. The Baron began to bow down and worship me. Then everyone else joined him.

They chanted, "Blessed is the anti-Christ who shall destroy the doomed Christian Church."

I looked down at them and then over at the dead Chimp. Suddenly everything in the room took on an orange glow. I suddenly felt an intense pain in my solar plexus, and I felt that there was a powerful evil presence in the room. I began to cry. Without thinking about it I cut my left arm three times. The cuts weren't so deep that I bled to death, but they were bad cuts and I still have faint scars from them. The Baron immediately stopped the filming of me. I climbed off the altar and went into a catatonic state for a while. I was aware of what was happening around me but I was completely non-responsive.

A few hours later I came out of it. By then I had been cleaned up and put back into my boy's clothing. My left arm had been bandaged. Apparently I hadn't lost so much blood that I needed to go to the hospital. I was on a couch in the Baron's downstairs library. Bob's sister Betsy had one arm around me and was holding a Bible that she had gotten from the Baron's reference library. She was reading out loud from the Bible. She had multiple personalities and she had gone from her Satanist sex worker personality into an alter Christian personality.

Somebody later explained to me that the Baron had gone on with his film

using a different boy who they had dressed up as I had been. Different men and women had sex with the boy and then worshiped him as if he were the anti-Christ. The Baron apparently intended that the spirit of the anti-Christ would possess me, to speak through me to the coven. The Baron was upset because I had wrecked his magickal working when I cut myself. But he could still sell the movie of this event to other wealthy Satanists because of the entertainment value of the torture and the sexual content.

I don’t ever recall that the Baron himself performed human sacrifices

or allowed others in his coven to do so. For some reason he drew the line at performing human ritual sacrifice, although he seemed to have committed every other sin of which he could possibly conceive.

Apparently the Baron got the idea for this odd ritual in which he tortured the chimp from something that was done in England. The story was that a ritual like the one I’ve described was performed by some members of British royalty, only they used an actual Christian minister instead of a chimp. And after the boy in the red dress killed the minister, he became possessed by a demon. He stood up on the altar and started speaking to his coven in different languages, describing a plan to destroy all Christianity.

The thing that’s odd about all this was that the Baron was a Christian.

When he wasn’t being a Satanist, he lived his life as a Christian. Someone who knew him better than me said that he took his Christianity very seriously. The Baron didn’t have multiple personalities. His Christian personality could remember everything that his Satanist personality did.

I don’t think that the Baron believed what most Christians believe, but he did believe in the power of ceremonial rituals. The Baron apparently actually believed that being a Christian and performing Christian rituals meant that all his sins would be forgiven when he died. So the idea was that he could use his Satanism to make himself wealthy in the world and still go to Heaven when he died – as unlikely as that sounds.

I’ve known a number of Satanists who were also Christians. They believed that the sins that they committed as Satanists could be forgiven by Christ, so they took Christian beliefs and practices seriously. Satanism is like a drug to which a person becomes addicted. This addiction is to the worldly power and wealth that can come from satanic practices.

Also some Satanists claim that they get feelings of glee when they worship Satan. Some practitioners feel that they can’t stop. But some Satanists also feel bad about what they’ve done and pray to Christ for forgiveness.

Personally I don’t think that it’s enough to just perform some type of religious ritual and assume that this will make up for all wrongdoings.

I don’t believe in the authority of any religion. But I am aware of the existence of God the Creator, and I do believe in the authority of God.

I do believe that the true nature of God is forgiveness. I have known some Satanists and former Satanists who have made acts of atonement to prepare themselves spiritually to accept God’s grace. The greatest act of atonement that one can make is to do something significant to oppose the Illuminati and to undermine its plans.

There is a spiritual entity I identify as Christ. I think that there can be other names for this redeeming spirit, but the name I personally use is Christ. I believe that all of my transgressions have been forgiven by Christ. I am grateful that Christ has healed me.

And for the record, I’m not really the anti-Christ, it was just some stupid film the Baron made. I say this because I know that some Illuminati members have seen the Baron’s film of me being worshipped as the antiChrist. But I didn’t accept the demonic presence during that ritual – I just went catatonic for a while. And I do completely renounce Satan, Lucifer and the anti-Christ.

There is a divine supreme being. There have been many different names for this divine source of creation. Whatever name you use for this Divine Grace, you must allow yourself to be filled with it. A demon can only possess you if you have a spiritual emptiness in your heart. Allowing yourself to be filled with Divine Grace frees you from the vulnerability of demonic possession.

I point this out because I feel that a developed spirituality is necessary to mental health and to deprogramming mind control. A developed spirituality heals emotional trauma. And a spiritual relationship with the Divine Source can free you from the feelings of guilt that may come from being involved with a satanic group. Different people approach spirituality in different ways, and everyone has to find their own path.

For me, Christianity has been an important part of my personal path.

But it’s important to distinguish the difference between spirituality and religion. Some people are religious without being spiritual, and a person can be spiritual without being religious. Nonetheless, it’s the spirituality that really matters. And religious dogma can be a terrible barrier to authentic spirituality.

Exorcism & Catholicism

I don’t claim to understand exactly how every branch of the Illuminati is structured. But some of my experiences as a child prostitute seem to indicate that there is a branch of the Illuminati which controls the Catholic Church. Also there seems to be a branch of the Illuminati that influences other Christian institutions. And there are branches of the Illuminati which control some Islamic sects as well as the Zionists.

However, from what I’ve been told by insiders, Satanism goes back in the Catholic Church for centuries. A Catholic priest, with whom I had a sexual relationship for a while when I was a boy, once explained to me that there are actually two Catholic churches woven together into one institution.

There is the openly known Catholic Church and the Shadow Church.

A priest may be a Christian priest, but he may also be a Satanic priest as well. Only a minority of priests and nuns in the Catholic Church are in this Shadow Church. Most Catholics are clueless when it comes to this Shadow Church. But the Shadow Church is what really runs the Catholic Church. I’m not saying that all Catholics are really Satanists.

The Illuminati system is really controlling all branches of society in Western Civilization. The control of the Illuminati is top down. So the Catholic Church is not an exception to that control. The leaders of the United States federal government are Illuminati puppets just like the leaders of the Catholic Church are Illuminati puppets. But the average American isn’t a Satanist and the average Catholic isn’t one either. Yet the Catholic Church seems to be more under the thumb of Satanists than other forms of

Christianity. The Catholic Church isn't unique in this, at this time Israel is also very much under the thumb of Satanists.

I'm not trying to put down anyone's spirituality, but certain religious institutions are very much obsessed with using mind control on their members, and the Catholic Church is one of them. I've attended mass a number of times with Catholic friends, and I believe that it can be a very spiritual experience. For some people, the spirituality of Catholicism is a meaningful experience, but as a theocratic institution, the Catholic Church is very much controlled by secretive Satanists.

I don't know if this is true of all priests in the Shadow Church, but the ones I've known seemed very obsessed with anilingus. This is a sex act where one person kisses and licks the anus of another person. I was forced to perform this dozens of times when I was a child, and it always felt shaming to do this. This might be the point of the ritual: that this is not so much a sexual ritual as it is a ritual which is supposed to make the participants feel ashamed. The anilingus ritual, as I was taught it, was always performed in this way. First, the man's anus was carefully cleaned with two dishrags using two bowls of warm water. First the the anus would be cleaned out with warm soapy water, then with warm water which had no soap in it. The cleaning out of the anus had to be done slowly and very carefully. Then a clear plastic sheet of the type of wrapping paper that is used to preserve food would be utilized. Saran wrap or that type of thing. This would be fitted into the butt crack and spread across the man's buttock. Anilingus would then be performed by sticking ones tongue into the anus as far as possible and kissing the anus repeatedly. My pimp, Bob, was obsessed with avoiding sexually transmitted diseases, so this method of anilingus may have been more hygienic than what was typical. I point this out because according to what I've been told, in the Shadow Church, rituals involving anilingus are considered to be very important. And I can tell you from personal experience that such rituals are demeaning and grotesque. So this speaks to the nature of the Shadow Church.

The Shadow Church which runs the Catholic Church is older than the Illuminati. I've been told that the Satanic Shadow Church first infiltrated the Catholic Church leadership in the eighth or ninth century. However, this

Shadow Church was never all powerful. In order to maintain its invisibility, it had to maintain a low profile and work in subtle ways to manipulate the Church. However, over the centuries, this Shadow Church has become increasing influential. But as the Illuminati grew in power, this Shadow Church was eventually absorbed into it. Now the Satanic Shadow Church which runs Vatican City is merely another branch of the Illuminati. Vatican City isn’t really Christian anymore, it’s now just another center of Illuminati power like Washington DC, Las Vegas and the Financial District in the City of London.

This point needs to be made because the Catholic Church has promoted completely misleading ideas about demonic exorcism. If you can accept that demons do exist, and that they can be exorcised, then you should know Catholic exorcism is totally ineffective. The movies which glorify the Catholic Church’s way of exorcism always depict a priest doing war with a demon. This is done by tying up the demon-possessed person after which the priest recites verses in Latin. In the movies, supernatural horrors are depicted before the demon is finally sent back to hell and the demon-possessed person is freed. But the truth is that tying up a person and chanting verses in Latin or any other language would actually only be another form of mind control. This is not true exorcism, it’s just more brainwashing.

The stories in the Bible of Jesus freeing people from demons never involve him tying anyone up or chanting verses in Latin. So I have to say that Catholic exorcism likely doesn’t work and may be harmful.

However things like simple faith in the Divine and sincere prayer work miracles. And there have been reports of some Catholic priests who have some success with persons who appeared to be demon possessed.

However, this doesn’t verify the power of the Catholic exorcism rituals.

It only confirms that faith and prayer in general can be very powerful.

So there is no excuse for tying people up as part of an exorcism ritual.

And there is nothing particularly spiritual about Latin. The historical Christ never spoke it, and it's not a sacred language. Ancient Rome may have been the most Satanic empire in the history of the world, the idea that its language is sacred or has spiritual power is absurd. If anything, Latin is the language of demons, not the language of angels.

Demons are the spirits of hostile entities. These demons overshadow human beings who have been subjected to trauma-based mind control.

Personally I like to read and reread the stories in the Bible of Jesus expelling demons. The use of trauma-causing mind control was very common in the regions controlled by the Roman Empire during the time of the historical Jesus. This practice of trauma-causing mind control was common in the cults known as Mystery Schools. The Mystery Schools were for the aristocrats, but other cults found among the common people used the same techniques. What the Bible refers to as a demon is what a psychologist would refer to as an alter personality. This is a symptom of a person suffering with multiple personality disorder (MPD). So when the Bible tells stories of Jesus releasing people from demons, realize that this may not just be a mythological story. The historical man, upon whom the story of Jesus was based, was someone who was releasing people from the effects of ancient brainwashing cults. Christ, the historical Jesus, was a deprogrammer.

Toxic Therapy Systems

Before I go further into how this Fabian system works, I want to contrast it to what is going on with the therapy systems presently available in society. It may be difficult to convey this point but many of these therapeutic institutions are covertly designed to do harm to their patients.

Psychiatry is intentionally designed to make people insane and keep them that way. Psychology in general is designed to not cure anyone but to make people dependent upon psychologists. Medical practice is designed to occasionally heal people, but to also do things which make them sick and dependent upon the medical system. All of the therapy systems available in society are intentionally designed to be somewhat toxic.

When I was young I knew that there were Satanic secret societies among the wealthy. And some of the people I knew who were involved with these would say that someday the Luciferians were going to take over the world. Back in those days, I found that idea unlikely. But now that I understand more about how the institutions in society are organized, I realize that this was not an idle boast.

After World War Two the United States tried to take possession of the intellectual resources of Nazi Germany. The CIA created Project Paperclip, brought former Nazi scientists into the United States and made them into citizens. This fact of history has been sold to the American public as a wonderful thing. The apologists for Project Paperclip point out that Warner Von Braun was one of these Nazi Paperclip heros, and that he created the space program which allowed us to go to the Moon.

But none of these Ex-Nazis were heros, and the reality of what Project Paperclip really did was hideously destructive.

The MK Ultra program for mind control was driven in a large part by Nazi scientists. The MK stands for Mind Kontrolle, the English word for mind and the German word for control. Think about this. Who’s really in *Kontrolle*? Obviously the Nazis are. The Nazis were a creation of the Illuminati. The Nazi Party was a project run by the Bavarian Illuminati. The German people were defeated by the Allied Forces at the end of World War Two. But the Nazis were never defeated. They were transferred from Germany into positions of power in the United States and elsewhere.

In the United States former Nazis and other Illuminati stooges were put in positions of power to undermine the use of certain institutions. The medical profession and other so called institutions of therapy have been engineered to do harm instead of healing. I’m not saying that all doctors and psychologists are evil. They have been educated and deceived like everyone else. Doctors and psychologists take up their professions hoping to become healers. But they are subtlety mislead during their educational process. The institutions of medicine, psychology and psychiatry have all been engineered to have some healing potential but to also do some harm. In some cases, such as psychiatry, hospital birth and circumcision, the harm done is very great. And it is intentionally evil.

But Fabian Therapy was never designed like that. The therapists who designed this system were disillusioned Illuminati insiders. They rejected the Illuminati plan to create a toxic therapy system. The Fabians actually designed their therapy system to do no harm and to heal their clients as quickly as possible. They intended that their clients be independent and empowered.

Fabian Technique

I should warn you that if you have been subjected to Illuminati mind control, my message here may trigger negative feelings in you. You may feel lightheaded, or you may even feel angry or afraid. I would encourage you to remain sensitive to your feelings as you consider what I am communicating.

What I am describing here is an approach to therapy that is probably different than what you’ve heard of before. Over the years I have had access to certain insider information which I am sharing with you. I was subjected to Satanic Ritual Abuse as a child, and some of my abusers had psychiatric training and were experimenting with the beginnings of what would lead to Monarch-type mind control. I never completely fell under the complete influence of this type of mind control, but it created many problems for me. I had many personal problems and emotional health issues that arose from having been subjected to this abuse against my will. Later on, I was helped by some people who had backgrounds in psychology, people who had developed a technique for healing this type of mind control. I received help from this type of therapy and I have known others who were helped by it.

The scientists who actually developed this system had a rather technical name for it, but I simply call this technique, *Fabian Therapy*. This is because the scientists who developed this therapy system believed that persons who have been brutalized with trauma-based mind control are best treated with what may be thought of as a Fabian-type strategy for therapy. This type of strategy is named for a Roman General. In Fabian Strategy you avoid a direct, frontal, military assault and instead you gradually wear down your opponent over time by using indirect attacks.

This type of military strategy was used by General Washington to defeat the British, by the Russians to defeat Napoleon and by Sam Houston to defeat Santa Anna. This strategy works only in situations where you have time on your side and the discipline to maintain a continual attack which slowly weakens your opponent. It has also been used in non-military situations. Corporations sometimes use this approach to defeat competitors. The British Fabian Society is attempting to use this type of strategy to promote its socialist agenda. The Illuminati itself is attempting to use a Fabian Strategy to conquer the world. Although the Illuminati's intentions are evil, a Fabian Strategy in itself is morally neutral – what you choose to do with it determines whether it is good or evil.

The scientists and psychologists who developed this Fabian Therapy system were Illuminati insiders who had become disillusioned with the Illuminati. The Illuminati likes to recruit persons who are idealistic and well-educated. It does this by telling them that when it takes over the world the Illuminati will create a utopian world government. Most who join the secretive Illuminati start off believing that they are going to change the world for the better. However as they learn what is really going on, some Illuminati members figure out that the leaders of their movement are really only interested in making themselves wealthier and more powerful. The disillusioned Illuminati members, who helped me, had come to realize that trauma-based mind control methods are insanely cruel and destructive. So they used their insider information to come up with a system for deprogramming trauma-based mind control.

The victims of trauma-based mind control are programmed with commands that are implanted into their subconscious minds. These implanted commands are designed to keep the victims under control.

These commands are precisely worded statements that are given to the victim when he or she is in an altered state of mind. This altered state makes the victim highly receptive to suggestion.

Implanted commands instruct the victim that he or she is unable to consciously remember having been programmed. Sometimes implanted commands are given which instruct these mind control victims to attack anyone who tries to deprogram them. Implanted commands are also sometimes given which instruct them to commit suicide if they start to remember what happened. And even without implanted commands, the depressing nature of this type of abuse can make the victims feel suicidal when they start to recall the abuse. All of this makes therapy for such victims very difficult.

Psychologists have long recognized the phenomenon of repressed memory. This is a type of selective amnesia. A painful experience which threatens the ego of the individual becomes repressed from normal recall. Implanted commands are contained in a type of repressed memory, but trauma-based repressed memories are harder to deal with than the repressed memories the average therapist encounters.

The human mind has a type of defense mechanism. If an experience is too painful or upsetting, the individual represses it from conscious memory so that he can go on with life. This natural defense system allows the individual to continue to function in society even in the wake of an upsetting experience. Traditional therapy methods often try to confront such repressed memories by using hypnosis or other methods which encourage the patient to remember. This is like a direct, or frontal attack on repressed memories. Fabian Therapy is different.

Fabian Therapy avoids direct contact with painful memories. It does not try to expose repressed memories which might trigger implanted commands. It uses an indirect approach that works gradually over a long period of time. It’s based on an advanced scientific understanding of the human mind.

But in a sense, Fabian Therapy is more than just a technique; it’s an attitude for life. The idea is that instead of trying to confront and reexperience traumatic events, you teach yourself to focus on the present time and environment. You develop an attitude of love and serenity which you express in your present-time environment. When negative feelings or compulsions arise from the past – you have techniques for processing them. That way, you don’t get drawn into the trauma from the past.

Fabian Lifestyle & Attitude

The Fabian therapists didn't just develop a technique for healing traumabased mind control. They had a philosophy for life and an attitude for living which they promoted to their clients. There were two well-known reference books that they encouraged their clients to read. These were *Games People Play* by Eric Berne and *I'm OK, You're OK* by Thomas Anthony Harris.

Both books are based in part on the research of a brain surgeon named Wilder Penfield. He sometimes stimulated small areas of the brain and in doing so he would evoke clear and random memories in his patients.

They would find themselves reliving experiences from years earlier.

This recall would be vivid. These experiments led Penfield and other researchers to the conclusion that everything we experience is recorded in memory, whether or not we can easily recall such experiences.

Gestalt psychologists analyze social transactions as having three basic viewpoints: *parent*, *adult* and *child*. The *parental* point of view is controlling and judgmental. The *child* point of view rejects personal responsibility. But the *adult* point of view is that of self responsibility and mutual respect. The contention is that within all memories of social interactions these viewpoints can be perceived. And the idea is to overcome the temptation to assume a parental or childlike viewpoint so that you can center your life in the adult viewpoint.

The Fabian therapists had a similar but somewhat different way of analyzing the memories contained in trauma-based experiences. In every trauma-based memory there are four viewpoints: *abuser*, *enabler*, *victim* and *survivor*. The *abuser* is the person or persons causing the abuse to happen. The *enabler* is anyone who cooperates with the abuser.

The *victim* is the person who receives the abuse. And the *survivor* is the recovered victim who was able to process the abuse and is no longer influenced by it. Also the survivor is the point of view a victim needs to assume so that the abuse can be survived. Of course, depending upon the incident, there may be many abusers and many victims. What the Fabian therapists were concerned with was the perception of abuse and victimhood.

Capture bonding is a phenomena recognized by psychologists. This

takes place when prisoners begin to admire, worship or identify with their abusive captors. This same thing can happen when victims begin to admire and identify with their abusers. The Fabian therapists would have their clients avoid direct contact with trauma-containing memories.

But they were aware that these memories still had a subconscious influence on their clients. So they knew that their clients might have a subconscious identification with abusive personalities. So the victims of trauma-based mind control might act out abusively in various ways.

When the therapists saw that a client was becoming abusive in some way in his life, they would know that this might represent an identification with an abusive personality.

As a teenager and in my early twenties, I could be very verbally abusive and I would also sometimes shoplift and things like that. So I was what they called a juvenile offender. My therapists helped me to understand why I was acting out in these destructive ways.

The point of Fabian Therapy is to overcome any temptation to identify with the abuser or the enabler. Rather than going into the painful memories and figure which abusive personality I was identifying with, the Fabian therapist looked at what they called the *transactions* between other people and me. These transactions are the social interactions of ordinary communication. The therapists would analyze how I communicated with them in the therapy sessions. But we would also talk about how I communicated with friends and girlfriends in situations outside of therapy. The therapists would use books like *Games People Play* to educate their clients on the difference between healthy transactions and unhealthy ones.

Even without trying to directly recall trauma-containing memories, the behavior of abusive personalities would sometimes subtlety surface in the behavior of a client. For example, the Baron had the habit of snapping his fingers when he was ordering people around. He apparently had gone to a boarding school out East or in England, and at times he affected a type of aristocratic and snobbish manner of speaking. In therapy, if I started snapping my

fingers, ordering people around or talking in an

affected voice, it was an indication that I was identifying with the Baron.

If I started doing that when I was talking with them, they had several ways of dealing with that. One was to do a deliberate “mirroring” of speech and behavior. First the therapist would indicate that he was going to imitate what I had just said. Then he would mimic what I had just said in the manner I had just said it, using my exact words. This way I could see that I was identifying myself with a personality not my own.

The therapists also often tape-recorded sessions and would play back recordings at times for that purpose. Toward the end of the time I was working with them, they began to film sessions and sometimes playback conversations. Also they would sometimes get me to reconnect with my primary personality by asking me about my basic values. For example, if I described a situation where I was verbally abusive with my girlfriend, they might ask me how I would feel if somebody talked to me in that way. And they would ask whether or not I felt that it was OK for people to deliberately hurt the feelings of others. Usually such conversations would move my attention away from the point of view of an abusive personality and back to that of my non-abusive, natural core personality.

The other dynamic of Fabian Therapy is to transcend the attitude of victimhood in order to achieve the attitude of survivorship. That means that you have to focus in on the positive experiences in life and create a positive life for yourself. You don’t want to dwell just on the unhappy experiences and the wrongness of having been abused. This is not an approach to therapy where you dwell on every little thing that ever went wrong with your life. You focus on the happy experiences and you bring them fully into your consciousness.

The Fabian therapists were empathetic without being sympathetic. They would acknowledge the abuse and the wrongness of such abuse, but they wouldn’t let you dwell on it. This is particularly important for traumabased mind control victims. Once you go into the pain and humiliation of the abuse, it’s a deep pit of despair. And if you fall into deep despair, suicide or drug addiction can be the result. So you have to deal with the negative memories of trauma-based mind control appropriately – as if the memories are no more than garbage to be thrown out. The Fabian therapists taught me a cathartic methods by which negative emotions can be processed and released. For example, if I felt anger for no rational reason, it probably had a source in repressed memories of trauma.

Instead of going into the repressed memory, the Fabian therapists might have me beat on a drum in a way that expressed my anger as a way of releasing it energetically.

But these Fabian therapists didn’t want their clients to dwell on anything negative. Instead, they encouraged their clients to create positive experiences and to fully embrace these positive experiences.

Exceptions to the Fabian Therapy Approach

I’ve said that the Fabian therapists tended to avoid having the client go into painful memories from the past and instead encouraged a rehabilitation of the memory system. However, there were always exceptions. They were experts on the use of hypnosis. They knew how to use hypnosis to place a client in a trance state where he or she would be receptive to suggestion. And they knew how to use hypnotic suggestions to protect the client from the pain contained in trauma-related memories. But they only did this in emergency situations. Sometimes a crisis in a client’s life required that the therapists find information which could only be acquired through hypnosis.

However, they used hypnosis as seldom as possible. Because they could stabilize my life and help me without using hypnotherapy, I never experienced the use of hypnotherapy to recover suppressed memories of traumatic experiences. But they did sometimes use hypnotherapy with other clients. They might use it to find out critical information, or they might make posthypnotic suggestions to the effect that a client’s life would become more stable. They might use hypnosis to help a client withdraw from dangerous recreational drugs that were making the client’s life unstable. They might use hypnosis to help a client with a health crisis. But their basic rule of thumb was to use hypnosis as little as possible and only when necessary.

I suppose their reasoning for this attitude was that their clients had already been manipulated through harsh mind-control methods. They wanted their clients to regain self determinism. For the client to become dependent upon the therapists through hypnosis would go against that goal. So they were very thoughtful about when and how they used hypnotic techniques.

I have known some persons who used hypnotherapy to help themselves recover lost memories which were due to trauma-based mind control.

And I have known some persons to have gotten positive results from hypnotherapy. But there are certain warnings that must be given if you, or someone you know, is thinking about employing a hypnotherapist.

Some hypnotherapists are very unethical and can cause harm. Others are skillful, ethical and trustworthy. Here are some guidelines: Any therapist who will not tell you up front how he works should not be trusted. Therapists with secret methods which they don’t share publicly should not be trusted. Any therapy group that wants to get you alone into a remote environment which they control is not to be trusted. However, ethical therapists will be happy to openly explain how they work. An ethical therapist will not object to you having someone you trust be with you during the session. And you should bring a trusted friend with you if you decide to pursue hypnotherapy. They can sit quietly in the room with you and observe while the session is going on. An ethical therapist will not object to the hypnotherapy session being recorded.

Ethical therapists will have offices in relatively public areas where an abduction would not be easy. You really can’t be too careful.

One problem is that the Illuminati has set up front organizations which claim to be opposed to the Illuminati but which are actually looking for Illuminati defectors and others who might cause problems for the Illuminati. Some of these Illuminati front groups claim to be Christians.

Some of these Illuminati front groups claim to be anti-cult groups. If you have been the victim of Illuminati mind control, and you get involved with one of these groups, they will create problems for you at the very least. So developing a sense of discernment is important.

But if you are looking for help, there are those who will help you. There is a quiet industry that is emerging which is made up of psychologists and hypnotherapists who treat the victims of trauma-based mind control.

This is sometimes dangerous for the therapists. So usually they don't advertise the fact that they do this. You will need to study hypnotherapy and interview anyone you hire to help you if you choose this path of using hypnotherapy to recover lost memories. One thing is for certain: *it is very difficult to face these painful memories if you are completely alone*. So you have to think carefully about whom you are going to turn to in order to seek help.

Unfortunately, at this time, those who seek to heal the victims of trauma-based mind control face a great deal of opposition as they try to organize themselves. But those who inflict trauma-based mind control on innocent victims are highly organized, and they have roots that go back into ancient times.

A Brief History of Trauma-Based Mind Control

Before I describe the details of Fabian Therapy I want to go over some other information related to Luciferian mind control. At the time of my birth, Satanic Ritual Abuse was really more of an art form than a science.

The roots of this form of mind control go back to the Mystery Schools which existed in ancient Greece and Rome. The goal of the Mystery Schools was to train each student to accept the guidance of a daemon, which was conceived of as a type of a supernatural spirit. But these daemons were really just demons. And these Mystery Schools would turn their students into arrogant aristocrats who manipulated their subjects.

Although this movement has ancient roots, the contemporary forms of Luciferianism were first developed in Medieval Europe; and they were based on occultism and demonology. Demonic possession is the goal of traditional Satanic Ritual Abuse. The idea of these rituals is that the ordinary personality of a child is to be replaced with a demonic personality that has occultic powers. Sometimes the word magick, spelt deliberately with a “k”, is used as a reference to occult ceremonial rituals. Satanists believe that they are magickally empowering a child by subjecting him to demonic possession.

The Luciferians I knew when I was young would sometimes refer to non-Luciferians as being *mundane*. According to this special Luciferian definition of the word, a person who is mundane has no occultic power.

Also a mundane person has no access to secret Luciferian knowledge.

In this sense, although I am not a Luciferian, I am not entirely mundane because I do have some understanding of hidden Luciferian knowledge.

On a personal note, the woman who

first subjected me to Satanic Ritual

Abuse was named Shotzy. She spoke with a German accent and had long black hair that she wore in a bun on top of her head. She had psychiatric training and practiced a form of Satanism. I have reason to believe that she had once been a member of the Vril Society, that she had once dabbled in Theosophy, but eventually she graduated to a form of hard core Satanism influenced by the writings of Aleister Crowley.

In Satanic Ritual Abuse a child is traumatized with rape and torture until the mundane personality disappears and a demonic personality takes over. Programs such as MK Ultra were developed to turn Satanic Ritual Abuse from an intuitive craft into an exacting technology.

The CIA is managed by the Skull and Bones Society – and the Skull and Bones Society is a branch of the Illuminati. After the second World War the CIA recruited Nazi psychiatrists – war criminals – and brought them to the U.S. with Operation Paperclip. It was Satanists in the CIA who funded the early scientific studies of mind control. Although it was eventually disbanded, many MK Ultra-type mind control methods are still in use. These contemporary mind control systems are sometimes administered by psychiatrists in hospital settings. They are much more effective than the earlier experimental programs such as the ones done by Donald Ewen Cameron and the early LSD researchers. Monarch mind control is one such contemporary program. It’s known to have been used on some Hollywood celebrities and music stars, as well as many other victims. The Illuminati has psychiatrists specially trained in mind control, and their techniques are very successful in brainwashing people.

The Process of Trauma-Based Mind Control

The victim of Monarch programming may be called a *slave*. He or she is

controlled by a person who may be known as an owner, handler or master.

The *core personality* is the authentic personality that the victim had before being subjected to mind control. Monarch programming attacks this core personality so that a new personality can be programmed in.

The slave is subjected to trauma which causes the core personality to disassociate.

Disassociation takes place when a person becomes disconnected from

reality. In such a state the person can be reeducated with new values and motivations. The processes that Illuminati psychiatrists use to do this are very exact. A mischievous amateur experimenting with brainwashing would probably not be able to duplicate their results in some simple way.

If you simply render someone unconscious and repeat commands in his presence, it’s probable that those commands would never be obeyed. The procedure for implanting commands has other dynamics of psychology which I don’t feel comfortable sharing with the general public. I can tell you that the contemporary forms of Illuminati mind control are very sophisticated. The procedures used by these Illuminati psychiatrists are an exacting form of psychic surgery where the individual’s psyche is dissected. This creates a new personality that is compartmentalized from the core personality. And it is trauma-based disassociation which builds the walls of this compartmentalization.

Some forms of torture that are used to create this trauma necessary to disassociation are sensory deprivation, confinement, restraints, near drowning, hot and cold extremes, spinning, being hung upside down and being psychologically tormented. Most of these techniques are designed to avoid leaving physical bruises or scars. Shotzy was an expert at torturing children with techniques that didn't leave physical bruises. I remember a technique that Shotzy used on me and other children which simulated drowning. With the help of her assistants, she would wrap her victim up in a sheet and to repeatedly dunk his or her head into a bathtub filled with water. This was like an awkward form of waterboarding. In trauma-based mind control, often family and friends are threatened as a form of psychological torment. As a child I was frequently told that my mother would be killed if I ever talked. That certainly gave me a motivation to keep my abusers' secrets.

It's common in Satanic abuse that bizarre visual elements are included in the sessions to give them a surrealistic feeling. This makes any disclosure by the victim seem non-credible. For example, when I was a child, one of my programmers would always wear a Halloween Frankenstein mask. One morning, after a night of witnessing Satanic rituals, I told my mother that my nanny, Shotzy, had taken me away to see the Frankenstein monster. My mother convinced me that it had all just been a nightmare and that I should forget it. It was because of this type of deceptive techniques that my parents, who were not themselves in the Illuminati, were never aware of the fact that me and my siblings were being subjected to abuse.

As well as this,

control symbols are used to keep victimized children in line. Mind control commands are associated with a visual symbol so that when the victim sees this symbol, the implanted command with which it is associated will be reinforced. These elaborate methods of psychological manipulation keep anyone victimized by Illuminati mind control from disclosing or even remembering the traumatic experiences.

For example, when I was a child, to keep me from telling others about the abuse I was receiving, one thing that was done to me was that Shotzy took me to a remote location where she performed a Satanic ritual with a live cat and two teddy bears. All three were trussed up in exactly the same fashion on three crosses. The live cat was systematically tortured to death. Every thing that was done to the cat was subsequently done to one of the teddy bears. After a needle was stuck into the cat’s arm, a needle was stuck into the arm of the teddy bear next to him. But the other teddy bear was always left alone. When Shotzy finally got around to tearing out the intestines of the living cat, she then in turn tore out some of the stuffing from in the stomach of the teddy bear. And Shotzy went on like this, going back and forth until the cat was dead. But the other teddy bear was left completely unharmed. After I endured this intimidating demonstration of torture techniques, suggestions were made to me that I would not remember this experience. Then when my nanny, Shotzy, brought me back home after our field trip (which my parents believed was a trip to the zoo) she made a point of giving me the unharmed teddy bear as a present. She did this in front of my unsuspecting parents who insisted that I thank her for the gift. The idea was that the teddy bear would act as a subconscious symbolic trigger to condition me so that I could not tell anyone what was being done to me.

My parents were very please to see that Shotzy, my nanny, had given me a teddy bear as a gift. They were very surprised when two days later I burnt it up in the fireplace. Although I didn’t ever find a way to tell my parents what was being done to me, I did find ways to rebel against Shotzy.

In many respects my own Satanic Ritual mind control was botched because this was back in the early 1960s when the Illuminati were still experimenting with new methodologies, and my Illuminati programers disagreed about how to program me – sometimes they would even argue about this in front of me. Some aristocratic Illuminati members were interested in my bloodlines. Some of these aristocrats thought I might have the potential to become a leader in their organization, and they didn’t want me overly damaged. They ultimately decided that Shotzy’s techniques were too experimental and not traditional enough – and so she was dismissed as my controller. This meant that some of these processes of mind control that had been used on me were left incomplete. Most victims of mind control come to believe that resistance is futile, and they give up trying. But I never completely gave up resisting because sometimes I was able to do so successfully.

In those days, Illuminati mind control was half occultic art and half science, but contemporary Monarch mind control is really more like a precise technology. It's unlikely that a Monarch slave will come out of the mind control on his or her own. Monarch slaves are often used for prostitution, assassination, and as message couriers. They are also used in the Illuminati-controlled mass media as celebrities or news personalities.

The sexual orientation of the slave can be changed from straight to gay, or gay to straight, or whatever. The slave's owner or master has certain phrases by which he can trigger his slave's programming to control that person. The ultimate goal of Illuminati mind control is to develop a psychiatric technology for destroying free will in humans. Free will is a God-given gift, and as Satanists, they desire to rebel against God in all ways.
A lightheadedness is associated with Monarch mind control, which is one reason that it is named for a butterfly. This process of mind control results in the deliberate creation of Multiple Personality Disorder (MPD) also known as Dissociative Identity Disorder (DID).

I knew a woman with this disorder who was successfully treated with Fabian Therapy. She had five distinct personalities – a bisexual sex worker, a violent Illuminati enforcer, a Satanic Ritual priestess, a personality for managing all these other *sub-personalities* and there was also the *primary personality*. Each one of these personalities had a different name. Her primary personality was the one she assumed most of the time. Her core personality had been destroyed in her childhood through ritual abuse. Her primary personality was a constructed one that was designed to conceal her other personalities from Christian society. Through her primary personality, she fulfilled her role in life as an ordinary wife, mom, and part-time worker at a mundane job.

Her primary personality was a Christian who had no awareness of her *alter-ego personality* as a Satanic priestess. Her brother, who was in the Illuminati, purchased her back from another Illuminati member and turned her over to Fabian therapists. These therapists no longer allowed her sub-personalities to be triggered and worked only with her primary personality. After a long period in therapy she was able to recover enough of her memories so that she could no longer be triggered or controlled by anyone.

However, in the course of her treatment her primary personality was systematically transformed. As her sub-personalities became inactive, her primary personality began to take on some of the traits of these sub-personalities. For example, one sub-personality had been trained to fire a handgun and use techniques of karate. One day, to her surprise and the surprise of her husband, the primary personality discovered that she was an skilled marksman and martial arts expert. The story she told me was that her husband took her to a firing range to give her some basic self-defense training and was shocked when it turned out that she knew more than him. Another change in her personality had to do with her religious beliefs. Her primary personality had been a very narrow-minded Christian with intolerant views of other faiths. But as her Satanic priestess personality memories became integrated into her primary personality, she became more open-minded in her beliefs and spiritual practices. Another thing that she had to deal with as she recovered from MPD was her feeling of guilt. Under the influence of Illuminati mind control she had been forced to do things which went against the values of her primary personality. This woman was a success story for Fabian Therapy; she was able to disconnect from the Illuminati and live a normal life. However, I know that she never completely got over all the deep emotional scars created from her abuse.

Although she was someone who suffered from MPD, not all persons who are subjected to Illuminati mind control have multiple personalities.

Sometimes less extreme forms of mind control are used to make small adjustments in the personality of someone who’s creating problems for the Illuminati. For example, earlier in this book I tell the story of a reporter who was going to expose the truth about the Illuminati.

However, before he could do that, he was given a knockout drug in a drink at a bar then taken to a house where he was given suggestions in a structured way. This was done so that he would automatically dismiss anything he heard about the Illuminati as a conspiracy theory. He was given implanted commands so that he would not be able to remember having been programmed. He didn’t develop multiple personalities, but he did drop his story and never investigated the Illuminati again. Many persons in our contemporary society have been “adjusted” in this way to make them conform to the Illuminati plans in some way. Such persons usually don’t have any idea that they’ve been tampered with.

A Visit to a Luciferian Temple

I think it might be useful to understand how mind control is abused by those who understand it. This culture of mind control is very well organized and is very well funded. Many of the mind control experts have sadistic personalities. These are persons who take pleasure in humiliating others. In order to free yourself from the grips of such persons, you must see them for the depraved persons they really are.

Consider the saying, “All power corrupts, and absolute power corrupts absolutely.”

There is a personal story from when I was thirteen years old that I can tell you which demonstrates this. The Baron needed a favor from an powerful man in another city. So I was taken on a four-day trip. Basically I was supposed to sexually service this man in exchange for a business favor that was to be done for the Baron. And the Baron was going to do a business favor for my clueless nuclear family. In some Luciferian secret societies, pedophiliac sex is a kind of currency. Although in my case, because of my age, this was really hebephilia, which is an attraction for children that are in early puberty. This comes from a Greek root word for youthful beauty. Generally it involves children between 11 to 14

years old.

I wasn’t allowed to know what city we were going to. We rode there in a Winnebago Minnie Winnie. I stayed in the back during almost the entire trip. Two other men, Bob and one of the Baron’s servants drove the vehicle and stayed in motels at night. For some reason the Baron refused to let me bring any boy’s clothing and at thirteen I didn’t really pass as a girl so easily anymore. My voice was changing and I was getting taller and my shoulders wider. So I spent most of the trip hiding in the back of the little Winnebago in my girl’s clothing. I killed time by reading Nancy Drew detective stories which had been left there by Bob’s sister.

I had been told that I was going to visit a Luciferian temple and do some sex work for a powerful man who was a fan of the child pornography films and photos that had been made of me. I didn’t like doing this type of sex work but by that age I was resigned to it.

When we reached the temple, the Winnie was pulled inside into a large garage area that was underneath it. We went up an elevator to an upper floor. The building was very upscale. There were beautiful painting on the walls and expensive statues.

I had been trained to act in a very specific way when dressed up like a girl. Everything was programmed, my facial expressions, my posture, how I walked and how I talked. I was dressed up like a doll, and I was to act like a feminized robot who happened to be a boy. I didn’t really look like a girl, and I don’t think that I was all that attractive. I think what turned them on sexually was that I acted robotically. These people were obsessed with control.

We went up to a mid-sized lecture hall that had a small stage area on one end. There were men in there who all wore masks, and they were all in business suits. There was a woman wearing a decorative, full-face silver mask who sat at the back of the hall with several other people. She sat on a chair that was raised higher than everyone else, and she had a silver crown on her head. I can’t be certain whether she actually was a woman or a man dressed in drag.

This was a type of mind-control demonstration. I was the first act.

Pornographic pictures of me that had been taken at various time in my childhood had been passed around to the men in the audience, many of whom sneered with lust as they looked at them. I got up on the stage and performed a striptease then sexually serviced a man. I acted out my part very robotically, but from my point of view, that was just part of the act. I wasn’t really an unfeeling robot. I felt embarrassed and ashamed, and when it was over I felt relieved. Then I dressed and sat down in the audience next to Bob and the Baron’s servant.

In the next part of the demonstration, the speaker, who was some type of mind-control expert, took out a plate that had human feces on it. He walked around the crowd and let everyone look at the plate of feces up close. I remember that there were little bits of partially digested pieces of corn in it. It stank like feces. There could be no question as to what it was. Then he went up on the stage and put it on a table that had two chairs on either side. And there was silverware on the table. He brought in two middle-aged women who seemed to be under his control. He made suggestions to them that they had not eaten anything in days and that on their plates was the most delicious chile ever made. He told them that they could eat all they wanted. The two women started eating the feces as if it was delicious food. The men in the audience laughed at this display. Then he told the women that they were alone in the desert and that it was so hot that they had to take their clothes off or they would pass out from the heat. So they stripped. The controller put another bowl on the table. Then he told them that they were sunburnt all over, but in the bowl was suntan lotion that would heal them. But in the bowl there was really cow manure, which he had also shown to the audience earlier. The women covered themselves systematically with manure as the audience laughed. These women were lead away to a shower room somewhere, while they were still in a trance state.

The final act was a man who looked like he was homeless. He was in a trance state also, or under some type of mind control. He was told that there were leaches on his arm and that the only way to get them off was to burn them off with a cigarette. He was compelled to burn himself repeatedly with the lit cigarette while the audience laughed. After he was lead away, the speaker explained various methods of mind control, and how ultimately they would be used to control the entire population.

Later that day when we left the building through the garage area in the Minnie Winnie, I looked out through the curtained window, although I wasn’t supposed to. I saw that the building was some type of Freemasonic building. I don’t know what city we were in.

The Social Impact of Mind Control

The victims of MK Ultra and Monarch Mind Control often do not understand that they have been programmed. It’s difficult to estimate how many Americans have been subjected to some type of Illuminati mind control, but we are talking about many thousands of people, most of whom have no idea that they have been programmed. Important Freemasons, military personnel, government officials and corporate leaders are often subjected to Illuminati mind control with *implanted* (or *embedded*) commands. Key persons throughout society have been subjected to Illuminati mind control, and most of them do not realize that latent mind control commands have been installed.

The Illuminati have many methods for doing this. For example, I know that certain dentists have been recruited by the Illuminati, and when they put a client under general anesthesia, they implant commands into the victim’s subconscious mind. Another practice is that wealthy Illuminati members have large parties where drugs and alcohol are used. At such parties it’s easy to put knockout drugs in someone’s drink, then have that person taken off to a room where commands are implanted. One way billionaire Illuminati members ensure the loyalty of those who work for them is through implanted mind-control commands.

The Illuminati controls the mass media: the press, television and movies.

Illuminati leaders use these mass media outlets to present visual symbolic triggers to the public. These symbolic triggers stimulate implanted commands. Some of these symbolic triggers are images of monarch butterflies, teddy bears, the single eye, the pyramid, the pentagram, the mask, the maze, the goat's head, and many others. These Illuminati symbols reinforce the implanted commands and keep the victims in line.

Anyone who feels lightheaded when staring at any of these symbols may have been subjected to Illuminati mind control.

What has happened in America, Israel and Europe is that brainwashing on a massive scale has taken place. Society is being structured by brainwashing specialists who don't inform the victims that they have been brainwashed. **Unless you have a great deal of knowledge about how mind control works, you may have been programmed against your will and without your knowledge.**

Anyone who has noticed that they have unexplained periods of missing time in their life may be a Monarch mind-control slave. Even if you've never been subjected to trauma-based mind control, you probably know someone who has been. That's how widespread this is. There are varying degrees to which Illuminati mind-control victims have been affected.

However, the mechanism through which all such mind control operates is *memory*.

Memory

Memory is at the heart of mind control. What trauma-based mind control does is to attack the memory system. To heal the memory system you must understand its nature.

There are different types of memory. The terminology I am going to use is as follows:

Memory is any mental record of an experience or of information; it is also the ability to retrieve these mental records. Memory is experienced subjectively in the mind. It may consist of words, symbols or images.

Long-term memory stores, manages and retrieves information or experiences. This memory may last for days or years. This is contrasted to *short-term memory* which is the *working memory* that you use to decide whether or not you want to memorize something.

For example, while listening to a lecture, your working memory will be evaluating the information presented and you would decide what information you should forget, and what facts to memorize for a test. That's working memory. And the stuff you choose to forget is *shortterm memory*. The information that you choose to memorize becomes the *explicit memory* that you deliberately select for memorization.

Then there is *subconscious memory* and *conscious memory*. Memories you can recall are conscious, and memories that you can't recall are subconscious.

Your mind is always recording new memories whether you are conscious or unconscious. Even if you are drugged to a state of unconsciousness, everything you hear or experience during that time is recorded by the subconscious mind. And, under exactly the right conditions, carefully worded verbal commands contained in the subconscious memories can direct your thoughts and behavior. This is what the psychic driving of MK Ultra was trying to do – to program the subconscious mind with recorded messages while the victim was drugged unconscious. The MK Ultra techniques used by the psychiatrist Donald Ewen Cameron tended to be unsuccessful at this. But later Illuminati brainwashing research was able to develop techniques for reliably creating these types of subconscious memories. So in spite of Cameron's failure, other successful techniques for psychic driving have been developed. These psychic driving techniques create a type of memory that can be used to control the victim.

I refer to such memories as *occluded memories* because they have been deliberately blocked from the conscious mind. Occluded memories contain implanted commands. *Implanted commands* are instructions made to a slave by an Illuminati controller. They are called implanted commands because they are placed methodically within a unit of memory that has been blocked. The blocking of the slave's memory is caused intentionally with trauma, pain or drugged unconsciousness.

In ordinary life, an individual may repress a memory if it contains overwhelming pain or negative emotions. *Repressed memories* are also subconscious so a child who witnesses his father beating his mother and represses the memory, may grow up to batter his own wife. However, while in therapy he might remember his repressed memory and change his behavior as a result. Such repressed memories differ from occluded memories in that the repressed memories aren't intentionally created, but they come about as an accident of life. Nonetheless, repressed memories can lead to mental illness, and sometimes they can be treated successfully with the techniques of common psychology.

Both occluded memories and repressed memories are toxic memories which exist in the subconscious mind. In both cases they undermine the individual's ability to think rationally and express his or her free will. The therapeutic removal of toxic, subconscious memories is essential to mental health.

But not all memory contained in the subconscious is toxic. Many pleasant childhood memories are subconscious. Such memories haven't always been repressed – sometimes they've just been forgotten with time – but they are always there, in the subconscious. Most of our subconscious memories are benign.

Conscious memories are of two types – *semantic* and *episodic*. *Semantic memories* consist of information that you’ve consciously memorized. This would be information such as your phone number or facts of history that you learned in school. Semantic memories are made up of words or symbols. *Episodic memories* consist of your experiences in life – specific events, like walking in the park or playing in a baseball game – these are real events that take place in your waking life. Episodic memories are made up of recalled images, sounds, smells, tastes and feelings. Episodic memories are like movies in your mind containing full sensations and perceptions.

Then there are the memories of purely subjective events such as *dream memory*. This is your ability to recall some of your sleep dreams. Also there is the memory of imagination. For example if you were to close your eyes and daydream that you are sailing on a yacht – then later on when you remember this daydream – that would be *imagination memory*.

Confabulation is when imagination memory gets tangled up with or confused with episodic memory. For example if a hypnotist were to make a posthypnotic suggestion that you were abducted by a UFO, and after you were awakened you had memories of the imaginary abduction, that would be an example of confabulation.

Illuminati mind controllers use deliberate confabulation to confuse the minds of their victims. For example, if a man were to be drugged unconscious and then was raped by an Illuminati controller, a suggestion might be made so that he remembers the experience as a UFO abduction where he was anally probed. All the humiliating emotions and painful sensations of the memory would be real; only the context of the experience would be altered in the victim’s mind through hypnotic suggestion. So a person recalling a confabulation of what he thinks is a UFO abduction might really be recalling Illuminati sexual abuse. I should point out that in saying this, I am not trying to be humorous, because there really is nothing funny about this.

But I am using this only as an example. Although some people do have false memories of UFO abductions implanted into their minds, I do also believe that some persons actually have been abducted by hostile aliens. And I believe that Fabian Memory Techniques can be used to help such persons. (See page 161 – Fabian Therapy for Helping Abductees.)

Addressing Memory in Therapy

In conventional “talk therapy”, the therapist might try to tease out a repressed memory so it can be analyzed in a session. But this doesn’t work well with the victims of Illuminati mind control. Sometimes the occluded memories can’t be reached. Or sometimes they are protected by implanted commands for the mind control slave to commit suicide or attack the therapist under any such circumstances.

Painful memories that have been repressed by a traumatized person can be difficult to reach. A hypnotist, in trying to help a patient, might place his patient into a trance state and make the suggestion that such repressed memories can be reached. With ordinary repressed memories this technique of hypnosis may sometimes work to transform the patient’s subconscious memories into conscious memories.

But trying to reveal implanted commands within occluded memories is much more difficult. Sometimes a highly skilled hypnotist may be able to help a victim of Illuminati mind control to restore some memories. But even in careful hypnosis, the implanted commands to block memories, commit suicide or attack the therapist may be triggered.

A hypnotist trying to recover occluded memories from a Monarch mind control victim is like a soldier trying to walk through a mine field without a metal detector.

Fabian Therapy is designed to avoid the triggering of implanted commands. The Fabian therapist is like a bomb defuser. He or she defuses the power of the painful memories before they can do harm to the client.

With a few exceptions, Fabian Therapy only addresses conscious memories – these would be episodic memory, dream memory, imagination memory and semantic memory. Fabian Therapy uses an indirect approach. Except for a few rare exceptions, it never directly confronts repressed memories, occluded memories or any painful memories. And yet, with this indirect approach – it frees the individual from the influence of repressed memories, occluded memories and painful memories.

Fabian Therapy is a highly structured, disciplined approach that requires strong determination, patience and time. To understand why it works, you have to understand the true nature of memory.

The people who developed MK Ultra and Monarch type mind control operated on the idea that human memory is like computer memory. They wanted to program people in the way that they would a computer. They wanted human robots. But the human mind is not a machine mind. The human brain is a living, dynamic organism. The human mind is vastly more sophisticated than the artificial intelligence of computers.

The brain is often defined as the physical, tangible aspect of the mind, and the mind is thought of as the faculty for thought and consciousness. The brain/mind has access to many levels of consciousness. Memories are more than just electrochemical recordings in the brain.

One advanced theory suggests the possibility that memories may be part of an energetic mental field that interacts with the brain and that the memories themselves are not made up of neurons, but are actually made up of stable units of subatomic energy. The neurons would be the physical interface point for the mnemonic energies. In this brain/ mind theory, memory would be conceived of as an energy field that interacts with the body through the brain and nervous system. Although this particular brain/mind theory hasn’t been generally accepted by mundane scientists, it does give you a different way of conceptualizing memory.

The mind is not completely dependent upon the brain, but it does need the brain in order to interact with the living body. Brain damage does not necessarily get rid of all memory, but it can make memory harder to access. There is a plastic quality to the brain so that even if it is damaged, memories and brain functions may still be restored.

But I don’t want to go too far into the scientific theories upon which Fabian Therapy is based. Wealthy Illuminati leaders recruit many of the world’s best scientists. However, the Illuminati scientists often withhold important scientific breakthroughs from the general public. The scientists who developed this Fabian system were Illuminati members who had become disillusioned with the Illuminati’s leadership and were covertly rebelling against it. These scientists had advanced degrees in neurology, physics and psychology. They also had access to scientific information that mundane scientists don’t have. I’m not sure that I ever completely understood all of their theories. But I do understand how their system works because the system itself is fairly simple.

Let me put it this way: you don’t have to know everything about how its engine works in order to drive a car – but you do have to know a few things. In the same respect, you don’t have to understand the advanced theories of brain/mind to understand how Fabian Therapy works, but you do have to understand a few basic principles.

You have to understand that on the deepest level of mind, all memory is interconnected. Although conscious memory can be compartmentalized with trauma, on the deepest level of the subconscious – all memory remains intact and interconnected to all other memory.

The *memory field* is the entire system of all types of memories – conscious and unconscious. The memory field is a continuum of every type of memory that may influence your mind. And all of these memories are energetically connected to one another on the subatomic level of quantum energy. You don’t have to understand advanced physics, but you do have to understand that every memory is connected to every other memory in your memory field. The mechanism of connection is unimportant to know, but the fact of their connection is important.

What this means is that if you work intensively with one area of memory, it automatically influences every other area of memory. So if you intensely work with conscious episodic memories, you subtly bleed off the pain, trauma and unconsciousness contained in the repressed memories and the occluded memories.

Occluded memories and repressed memories contain overwhelming negative emotions. This can be thought of as a powerful negative emotional charge. When you work with any area of memory, it influences all areas of memory. So when you work with conscious memories in a structured and intense way, you slowly release the *negative charge* from the occluded and repressed memories. This is why the indirect approach of Fabian Therapy works. When enough negative charge is released in this way, the implanted commands contained in occluded memories cease to have any power. This then releases the Illuminati slave from the control of his or her “owner”.

Command Words

Another concept that you must understand is that while the implanted commands are made up of words and pictures, the real meaning of the implanted commands is primarily expressed through words. And words are semantical. So by working with conscious semantical memory – explicit memory – you can subtly release the negative charge of the implanted commands contained in occluded memory.

Certain words are often found in implanted commands. The following list is an example of common command words: obey, control, submit, sex, sexual, identity, comply, forget, remember, owner, master, controller, slave.

The scientists who developed what I call Fabian Therapy did experiments where they took people who had been subjected to Illuminati mind control and hooked them up to a biofeedback machine that measured heart rate and breathing. The experimenters then slowly read out loud from word lists. These word lists were made up of a combination of neutral words as well as command words such as those listed above. For example the word list might go like this: oats, obey, October, odd, offer – and so forth.

In this experiment, when reading the lists out loud to the subject, no special emphasis was placed on the command words. But when the subject, a mind control victim, heard a command word, the biofeedback machine showed a reaction, without his or her conscious awareness that those words were command words.

Therefore it isn't just the occluded memories that are the problem, but also the command words contained in them.

Command words stimulate the slave into action. The slave cannot resist this stimulation because of the pain contained in the occluded memory. But the power of command words can be deactivated by working with vocabulary in a structured way.

The Process of Fabian Therapy

These ideas may not make complete sense to you unless you work with them in some way. Once I started to work with these techniques, the principles upon which they are based became clear to me.

With all that in mind, this is how the methodology of Fabian Therapy works. There are four basic aspects of Fabian Therapy:

1. First there are a number of *journaling techniques*. These can be done by the patient when alone, but should be reviewed to some extent with the therapist.

2. Second there is EMA, *Episodic Memory Analysis*. This is the systematic analysis of non-occluded episodic memories, which must be done with a therapist. This is a very powerful technique when used repeatedly, over time.

3. Third there are *extroversion techniques*.

4. And finally there are *vocabulary exercises* to influence semantic memory. This process actually releases the negative charge contained in the words themselves which make up the instructions of the implanted commands.

Although there does have to be a therapist to manage this process, I have to say that most of the time the therapist's role in this process is so simple that some of the people I knew years ago who were doing Fabian Therapy did not have a degree in psychology or certification as a therapist. For the most part, a Fabian therapist is more like an exercise coach who motivates the patient and provides some necessary guidance. However, the overall process does need to be managed by a knowledgeable therapist with practiced skill. And at times, some sophisticated therapy methods are required.

On the other hand, the patient receiving Fabian Therapy must be highly motivated. None of the standard Fabian techniques are complex, but two of them require daily attention and all of them require some selfdiscipline and willpower. The patient has to accept the fact that he or she will have to be in this for the long run to get tangible results.

Any therapist that would use Fabian Therapy would have to have commitment. There is an old saying, “Who rides a tiger does not dismount.” This is not a process that you want to start with someone and leave undone. If you begin this with someone, you may be in it for years and ethically you can’t abandon any patient. To start this process and abandon it uncompleted might cause the patient to collapse into depression or commit suicide.

How long they need to be in therapy really depends upon how extensively they have been subjected to Illuminati mind control. If they’ve been subjected to Monarch mind control to the point of having multiple personalities, they could be at this therapy for years. However, if they’ve just been subjected to one or two session of Illuminati mind control, they might recover fully in a few weeks.

I should also point out that the Fabian therapists I worked with believed that they would eventually find a way to speed up the process of recovery.

Journals

Whether or not you’ve been subjected to mind control, journaling techniques can be very empowering. This is something that anyone could do to empower their lives and to take greater control over their lives.

I have to say that even without the help of a therapist, a person could work with just these journaling techniques and get positive results. I had therapists when I first started to work with these techniques many years ago, and even after my therapists were killed by the Illuminati, I continued with the journaling techniques. Eventually I was able to pull myself up by my own bootstraps, as we are apt to say in Missouri.

So here is a description of three highly structured journaling techniques:
1. The daily episodic journal
2. The daily dream journal
3. An imagination/cathartic journal (that can be done at any time)

The daily episodic journal

The *daily episodic journal* works like this: every day, towards the end of the day, you make an entry into this journal. It doesn't take long. You always write down these three things in the entry:

- Your full legal name (this would be the name of your primary personality if you have MPD),
- The date,

- And a single episodic memory from that day. Preferably the episode will be something memorable. Perhaps you met an old friend, or saw a pretty bird. It should be a positive memory, not something with negative emotions in it.

The episodic memory should be something you experienced in the real world, not something you saw on TV or the internet; the reason that such are no good for this drill is because recorded images are dislocated in time. If you watch the same TV show at two different time periods, the memory of the show is virtually exactly the same in both memories. So this creates a duplication of a memory in two locations in the memory field. But real life experiences are located only once in the memory field.

To do this drill, simply write down and describe that episodic memory in a way that would make it easy to recall later. Then at the end of each week you review the episodic memories that you've written down for that week. Again, at the end of each month you do a review for that month, picturing in your mind each episodic memory in the order you recorded it. I noticed that when I would do these monthly reviews I would often feel the negative charge being subtly released from my subconscious mind. It made me feel as if I was taking back control of my life and regaining my true self. If you do this journaling technique for at least a year, you can do a review at year's end. This review can feel very empowering.

Anyone who tries to use such journaling techniques should have a commitment of doing them for at least several months because it can take that long before you start to feel tangible results. I should point out that if a person has MPD and they notice that entries are missing on certain days it could indicate that an alter-ego personality had hijacked control during those days.

Some entries made in such a journal might be as follows:

John Smith – Sept 20, 2013 – Took walk in park during lunch break. Saw girl in red dress playing frisbee with man in blue jean jacket. Laughed when I saw their dog steal the frisbee and run away.

John Smith – 9/21/13 – Ate breakfast at cafe and ran into my old friend Jane Jones. We reminisced about our days in college.

John Smith – 9/22/13 – During Sunday Service the children of the Church did an amusing puppet play where they dramatized the six days of creation in Genesis.

The daily dream journal

The *daily dream journal* is also done on a daily basis. For practical reasons you may not always be able to make entries into this on a daily basis. Some nights you might not have dreams, and some mornings you might have to get up in a hurry. But when circumstances allow, what you do is that you simply write down what you remember of your dreams from the night before. In the evening, before going to sleep, put a notebook and pen next to your bed where it can be easily reached.

Not everybody remembers their dreams. But the funny thing is that many people discover that once they start doing the daily episodic memory journal, they start to have nightmares, and these nightmares are usually memorable. It's also true that if the patient is doing EMA on a regular basis it will indirectly stimulate nightmares during sleep. And actually, if you do start to have nightmares, unpleasant as they may be, it's actually a good sign that the therapy is working. It's through these nightmares that the subconscious mind is releasing the negative charge contained in occluded memories.

However, you don't have to analyze the dreams in any way. Just write down the content of the dream – no matter whether it was happy or upsetting. If you dreamt you were flying – write down, "I was flying." If you had a dream you were being chased – write down, "I was chased." Keep it simple.

There are different systems for analyzing dream symbolism. Some of these systems are based on psychology and some are based on mysticism. For our purposes, you don't need to analyze the dreams for symbolic meanings.

By simply paying attention to your dreams and writing them down you eventually come to release negative charge from your memory field. This technique takes advantage of the mind's natural healing processes. Negative emotions and memories that have been repressed from the conscious mind automatically come out in dreams or nightmares. When you make a commitment to write down your dreams on a regular basis, you automatically stimulate this natural mental process.

However, writing down dreams can get to be kind of boring after a while. Because it was helpful, I did dream journaling for years. To keep myself interested in this type of journaling, I got some books on dream symbolism from the library, and when I was doing this type of therapeutic journaling, I would analyze dream symbols just to make the practice more interesting and keep me doing it everyday. But the scientists who developed Fabian Therapy always insisted that such analysis isn't necessary.

Some entries for the dream journal might go as such:
Ate lunch at a fast food restaurant on the moon. I decided that the food tasted bad, but the other patrons kept eating. Dreamed I was flying. Slowly arose above the trees and went up into the clouds.
Nightmare that I was being chased by demons across a barren landscape.

Woke up sweating.

The imagination/cathartic journal

The *imagination/cathartic journal* does not have to be done every day, but only when you feel like it. Its purpose is to use your imagination to address and release negative emotions. What you're doing with this journal is that you're trying to purge negative feelings. You're not trying to figure out what happened to you. The purpose of this journal isn't investigative, it's cathartic. This journal can consist of written words and drawn pictures.

This journal is for yourself. You don't have to show it to anyone else, though you can share it with someone else if you choose to. But you should only share it only when you feel it's appropriate to do so. Most victims who have been subjected to Illuminati mind control have bad feelings that they carry with them. They don't really know where the feelings come from or why they are there. At times when you have these bad feelings, you can express them on paper with words and pictures. You might find that you sometimes write things or draw pictures that you would feel embarrassed to show somebody else. You should use your own judgement as to whether or not you share with others what you write down or draw. This journal is for you, not anyone else.

The idea here is to express these bad feelings in words and pictures. There is no right or wrong way to do this. You don't have to have artistic talent. Nothing you write or draw needs to make sense. This process isn't intellectual; it's emotional. This is just another outlet to release negative charge from the memory field.

During the more intense periods of recovery I wrote and drew volumes of materials. I had boxes filled with this stuff. Sometimes I put my musings into the form of fantasy stories to keep myself motivated. Years later when I looked at this material I realized that I had produced nothing of literary value, but the physical process of writing and drawing had been a tangible way for me to release negative emotions.

Eventually I found it cathartic to ritualistically burn up what I had drawn and written about the abuse.

EMA – Episodic Memory Analysis

EMA, Episodic Memory Analysis , is the systematic analysis of nonoccluded episodic memories. EMA requires a therapist. Non-occluded episodic memories are conscious memories which do not contain pain or negative emotions. These episodic memories are of happy experiences in life. What the therapist does in this process is to ask a series of questions that help the patient to go into such memories intensely.

In this indirect, Fabian approach to therapy you are indirectly in fluencing occluded memories by intensely focusing upon happy, non-occluded memories.

Envision the memory field as being like a spider web in which all memories are connected to one another through thin strings. If you poke any area of the web, it will wiggle all the other areas. So if you intensely emerge the consciousness of the patient into one area of memory, it will gently influence all the other memories in the memory field. This is not like mechanical memory such as the memory a computer uses, for computer memory isn't based on consciousness the way that human memory is. What quantum physicists have realized is that consciousness is intrinsic to the universe. What advanced neurologists are beginning to see is that consciousness is the web that holds the memory field together.

The goal of this type of memory analysis is for the patient to reexperience a pleasant memory as fully as possible. The role of the therapist is to use his intellect to guide the process, but the patient should not intellectualize at all. For the patient this process should be as experiential as possible. The client's motto should be: "*Don't think* about the memory – *experience* it."

This therapy doesn't require a hypnotic or altered state of mind, so the patient should not close his or her eyes while recalling the memories. I have to emphasize that the patient should not intellectualize the process; for the patient it should be purely experiential. Any memory worked with in EMA should be a happy one which does not contain pain or unconsciousness. It also should not be a memory that he or she has dwelt upon a great deal; that is, it should be a fresh memory that has not been analyzed or talked about very much. To avoid embarrassment, it should not be a sexual or romantic memory. And the memory should be an experience in which drugs or alcohol were not used; that is, a sober experience.

To help you understand this process, I've written down a dialogue below which I have reconstructed from one of my own therapy sessions.
Therapist: *Can you think of an appropriate memory for us to work with today?*
Patient: *I went to a baseball game the other day.*
Therapist: *Great. To the best of your recall, what was the date and time that this episode began.*
Patient: *I happened two days ago, I think from about one until four PM.*
Therapist: *OK. Let's start with your olfactory recall, what smells do you recall?*

Patient: *I remember the smell of popcorn as I was standing in line to get a hot dog. There was the smell of the hot dogs cooking. Let's see. There was the smell of stale beer on the ground near the beer stand. When I went to the rest room I recall that it stank of urine. In the bleachers I was sitting next to a man wearing a heavy aftershave. I recall someone smoking a cigar. The day was pretty hot, I recall the smell of body odor.*

Therapist: *Was this your body odor or someone else's?*

Patient: *Both. And there was something else, I'm not sure what it was. Oh yeah. My friend had sunscreen for his arms and he gave me some.*

Therapist: *What did that smell like?*
Patient: *It had a slightly coconut smell, but mostly it had a chemical smell.*

Therapist: *Good. Are there any other recall of smells?* ***Patient:*** *No.*

Therapist: *OK, then let's go on to an analysis of your recall of tastes in the episode.*

In a systematical manner, each of the different category of perceptions contained in an episodic memory are analyzed in this way. The questions of the therapist are only intended to keep the patient's attention focused upon recalling and experiencing the memory. A session of this type should last from a half hour to fortyfive minutes. The patient is not in an altered state. But he or she should be relaxed and comfortable.

When I first started doing this type of therapy, they would encourage me to close my eyes when I recalled the episode, but then later on they changed their attitude about that. They came up with what they called the “Gray Room”. They had a large walk-in closet in their therapy house. They cleared out that room and painted it middle gray. Then they put in a middle gray carpet. Then they put in a comfortable chair that was painted middle gray. The room was illuminated with a dim bulb. The therapist would sit to one side of me as I sat in the comfortable chair. So I wasn’t face to face with the therapist. So when we would do EMA work, we would sit in the Gray Room and I could recall the memory while my eyes were open. But the space that I was staring at when I recalled the episode was a neutral gray.

Furthermore, the therapist should avoid judging the patient or evaluating the reality of the patient. The mind of the Illuminati mind control victim has been tampered with. Therefore even the ordinary recall of episodic memories might contain distortions. If the therapist hears something that doesn’t sound right, he should not question it. For example, if in describing a happy memory of a family picnic the patient were to say something like, “And then Mickey Mouse flew through the air, killing a chicken.”

The therapist should not question such a statement even though it doesn’t sound rational. In such a case the therapist should just continue on with the process. If a statement seems too disturbing, the therapist ends the session and brings the client fully into the present time. But the therapist never questions a seemingly irrational statement. The therapist doesn’t judge the validity of the client’s statements made during EMA; he accepts them.

It is also true the the morality of Illuminati mind control victims has been tampered with. The patient might, for example, recall a happy experience where he shoplifted something. The therapist should not pass judgement on the patient’s lack of morality in enjoying shoplifting. The rule for the therapist is to not judge or evaluate but to just help the patient keep focused on the experience of recalling a happy memory.

There are a number of different types of perception contained in an episodic memory. The Fabian therapist works through an eight-category list in this order:

1. olfactory (smell)
2. gustatory (taste)
3. tactile (touch)
4. emotions (affectivity)
5. personal movement (subjective kinetics)
6. vision (sight)
7. auditory (sound) and
8. linguistic (language)

Frequently recalled memories have a plastic nature to them. The more you go over memories and talk about them the more likely you are to change them in your mind. But the EMA therapist wants the patient to directly re-experience the memory as much as possible without personal alteration. This is why the list starts off with the recall of smell, taste and touch, because the patient is not likely to evaluate them but to just re-experience them. Analysis of sight, sound and language is left to the end of the session because they are likely to be evaluated and altered by the ego of the patient in memory recall. But if the patient is first directed to a direct experiencing of memory by focusing on things like smell and taste, then he or she will continue with that direct re-experiencing throughout the entire session.

The eight categories are used sequentially and the therapist tries to direct the patient to follow this sequence; that is. you start with category 1, move from there to category 2, etc., ending with category 8. When you complete this last category, the session has ended. However if for some reason the client doesn’t exactly follow the intended sequence, the therapist should not make an issue of it, but should just let the client experience the memory freely. The eight categories exist to give the therapist a structured way to ask questions. The questions are asked to encourage the client to directly experience a happy memory. It’s the client’s experiencing of the memory that matters.

The Fabians believed that this process of EMA actually evokes the creation of endorphins in the brain. Endorphins are peptides (pleasurecausing hormones) that activate the body's opiate receptors, causing an analgesic effect. The Fabians used EMA as a non-drug way to treat depression; this is one reason why Illuminati psychiatrists and big pharma have suppressed public knowledge of this EMA technique.

As much as possible, try not to commingle the different categories of memory perception. For example when analyzing category 7, the audio perception of a memory, the patient would be discouraged from focusing on the meaning contain in a conversation he heard because that is what is analyzed in category 8. In such a case, the therapist would direct the patient back to a pure perception of audio memory by asking how loud or soft the conversation was especially in comparison with other audio perceptions. For example the therapist might ask "How loud was the conversation as compared to the sound of the traffic in the background?"

In category 8, first ask the patient to focus on spoken language, then written language in words and finally symbols. "Symbols" means something that is not a word but which conveys meaning – such as a cross, or a traffic sign warning of deer.

When having the patient concentrate on tactile perceptions (category 3 within an episodic memory), questions would be made up such as "How hot or cold did it feel?" Tactile perceptions involve temperature, pressure, discomfort, comfort, wetness or dryness on skin, fullness or hunger, roughness or smoothness, texture and things like that.

Analysis of vision memory, category 6, would involve things like colors, shapes, patterns, brightness and darkness. It would also include the visual perception of movement, such as the perception of a baseball flying through the air or people milling about in a crowd, but an external type of visual perception of movement should be distinguished from personal movement that is felt within one's own body.

Personal movement or kinetics, category 5, involves the perception of movement physically experienced with the memory. This is both the individual's personal movement and the movement of objects which directly influence the individual. For example if you were in a car you would feel the automobile's movement in your own body as you bounced around. However, if you had recall of walking down the street, there would only be the movement of your body unless somebody else brushed into you. If you were playing touch football with friends, your actions – as well as the motions of the other people – directly influenced you. In this sense, there may be some overlapping of the perceptions in categories 3 and 5. Movement that you personally feel is category 3 or category 5, but a movement that you merely see – such as a bird flying – would be analyzed in category 6 . One way to deal with this overlapping in therapy is to not worry about following the categories too exactly. If there is some overlapping, it won't really matter. When you try to get the client to focus on his feelings of touch, he might come up with some visual perceptions. Never criticize the client. Just accept what you are told and move on with the process.

Emotions, category 4, would be both the perception of other people's emotions and the perception of one's own emotions. The patient can know his or her own subjective emotional responses, but can't know the actual subjective experiences of others. To keep the patient from speculating about what other people are experiencing – limit the perception of other people's emotions to describing what emotions are expressed by the other person with facial expression, tone of voice and body language. With such physical indicators, the patient should be able to read basic emotional responses such as anger, disgust, fear, happiness, sadness, boredom, indifference and surprise. Studies have shown that these eight basic emotional responses to life are found in all human cultures and can be easily read through facial expression and body language. So the patient is asked not what other people were actually feeling inside but rather what emotions were communicated through their body language, facial expression and/or voice inflection.

However, the patient's own subjective emotional responses may be more complex. And the patient should be allowed to describe these personal emotional responses in whatever way he or she chooses. So in category 4, the patient's perception of other people's emotions should be objective, focusing on the perceived perception of their emotions as revealed through facial expressions and such; however, the patient's perception of his or her own emotions is subjective. The patient's subjective emotions might be described as melancholy, optimistic, perplexed, conflicted, euphoric, infuriated and so forth. But the description of other people’s emotions would be simpler. Things like “He looked angry because his face turned red,” or “Her facial expression was one of disgust.”

During the analysis of emotions in an episodic memory, there will be an overlapping of perception categories.

Internal feelings can be addressed under emotions as well, things like the feeling of hunger or fullness and feelings of pleasure. Again don’t worry about some overlapping.

The final category 8, deals with language and meaning, therefore it is more intellectual. Here the patient would focus on the meaning of any conversation that took place in the memory. Also the patient would focus on his or her recall of any written messages that were read in the memory and the meaning of any symbols recalled in the memory. For example a stop sign would be a symbol that has meaning. Also a cross on a church steeple would have symbolic meaning.

Generally speaking, the episodic memory chosen for this type of analysis should be a happy one. The patient might actually choose to create a happy experience in his or her life to be later used in Episodic Memory Analysis. For example, one time I intentionally went to a baseball game prior to a therapy session so I could analyze it in therapy.

Recent memories that are easy to recall tend to be a good choice, but older memories that are easy to recall will also work. In therapy it’s best for the therapist to start out with sessions that address recent happy memories and then after the patient is comfortable with the process, older happy memories can be used in sessions.

As the therapist works more and more with the patient they will want to start working with memories from differing locations on the memory field. That is, they will want to deal with memories that are recent, and memories of the more distant past. In one session you might analyze a happy memory from last week, and in the next session you might analyze a happy memory from two years ago. The EMA process can be applied to any memory which the patient can reasonably recall. The more you use this process, the more you will increase the patient’s ability to remember episodes. With practice, the patient may find that he or she can contact memories from early childhood. The ability of the patient to be able to recall such memories should be the guide.

In doing EMA, it’s vital that the patient not be doing drugs and alcohol during the weeks or months when EMA therapy is being practiced. It’s also important the the patient get a good night’s sleep the night before each session. It’s also good that the patient avoid drinking caffeinated beverages prior to the session

There are always certain principles that must be followed in any Fabian approach to therapy using episodic memories. One is that all such episodic memories must be happy and without unconsciousness, overwhelming pain, or strong negative emotions.

In this indirect Fabian Therapy process, the negative charge contained in occluded or repressed memories will be subtly but consistently released.

The EMA acts as a catalyst. What happens is that the feelings contained in occluded or repressed memories begin to surface in various ways. They may come out in dreams. They may come out in art work such as drawings. The patient may have the occasional flashback during waking hours. The point of this type of therapy is not to dwell on the negative feelings that surface but to simply allow them to happen and then get on with life by extroverting your attention on present-time events and people.

EMA Past Life Exploration

Most past lives therapy that is being used today focuses upon painful memories from past lives, but I think that this approach is a mistake. I think you get much more benefit from past life exploration if you focus on the happy memories from past lives.

The Fabian therapists that I worked with did some exploration of past lives with their clients. In this type of past life memory analysis, they only dealt with positive memories. They might ask a question such as “Recall a past life experience where you felt good about accomplishing something.” Then the client would locate such an experience. Then they would ask, “When was it?” The response to that question might be an exact date, but it might be something subjective like, “During the Civil War era.” Whatever the client’s response to that question, even if it didn’t make sense, would be accepted by the therapist. They would not judge or question anything that the client would say about the past life.

The point of this therapy isn’t to have an intellectual comprehension of what happened in a past life but to create a positive emotional experience. The past life experience would be analyzed with EMA as in the previous chapter.

An interesting point of this has to do with language. The clients might recall a past life where they spoke a language they no longer speak. Commonly, clients recalling such past lives will recall the meaning of what was said even if they don’t understand the exact words. Apparently the soul which incarnates from life to life retains an understanding of the meaning contained in language even when the present incarnation doesn’t understand the language itself anymore. This is because language is really a type of carrier wave which codes and decodes essential information. Information or meaning exists not as words or symbols but as vibrational wave forms in the Universal Mind of God. So meaning itself transcends language.
Persons who did this type of past-life work would discover that conflicts in their present life had arisen from past lives. And they would learn to process those conflicts. The persons who did this type of past-life analysis often would also develop psychic powers as a result.

However in doing past life EMA the Fabian Therapists would make sure that they only contacted episodic memories that had these traits:

- You felt happy about life.
- You were healthy and whole.
- You were sober.
- There was no unconsciousness in the memory.
- You were not in pain.

If a client did come across a past life whereupon he or she contacted a memory containing upset or trauma, the Fabian Therapists would be sure to bring the client into the present time with extroversion techniques.

Extroversion Exercises

Sometimes in this process of Fabian Therapy, recovered memories of painful experiences will suddenly arise into the patient’s consciousness. Rather than going into such memories, the patient is encouraged to retreat from them. That’s what these extroversion exercises are intended to do. They help the patient to escape from memories from the past which contain pain and to focus on the present time environment where the patient can feel safe.

For example, in one session of Episodic Memory Analysis, we started to go into a memory that I originally thought was a true memory. I started to recall the time that my Nanny, Shotzy, took me to the zoo. But as we went on in the analysis, it turned out to be a *false memory* that had been implanted by Shotzy.

After torturing a cat in front of me, Shotzy used my emotional trauma from that experience to put me into an altered state where suggestions were made to me. It was suggested to me that I not be able to remember the experience of seeing the cat tortured. It was also suggested to me that in place of that experience I should remember going to the zoo with Shotzy. The imaginary zoo trip was described in great detail to me. I received descriptions of all the animals we supposedly saw, the cotton candy I ate and so forth. After this, I was returned to a normal state of mind. Then, as Shotzy drove me home, she talked with me about the imaginary trip to the zoo we had just made – as if we had actually gone to the zoo. She asked me what I thought about the lion who we saw roar at us, and so forth. I felt compelled to go along with this game of hers until I actually started to believe it was true. So by the time I got home, I was describing the trip to the zoo as if it had really happened. Later I would recall it as if it had been one of the happiest of my childhood memories.

Years later, after I had been in Fabian Therapy for a while, during a session of Episodic Memory Analysis, I choose the memory of my childhood trip to the zoo with Shotzy. However, when we started to do the memory analysis, I couldn’t remember any smells. So even at the start of the analysis something seemed to be not right. Then I remembered the malodorous smell of a cat’s intestines being pulled out. Then I remembered the truth about Shotzy and what she did to me. At that point, the therapist used extroversion techniques to bring me out of the painful memory and back into the present time. Had he not done this, I might have collapsed into my negative memories of being repeatedly tortured as a child, and this could have triggered implanted commands to commit suicide.

When he became aware that we had encountered a false memory that was covering a memory of abuse, he quickly started to use extroversion techniques. He asked me what that present day’s date was. He asked me to describe the location of where we were at that present time. He had me look around the therapy room and describe what I saw there. He asked me to walk around the room and touch things – feeling their textures. Then when he was certain I was focused on the present time, we took a walk together and made small talk as we walked along.

All of this activity extroverted my attention away from my painful memories so that I could focus on the present time. As I walked along, I felt more powerful. I could tangibly feel the negative charge being released from me. I remember that on that day my perceptions all seemed clearer, as if a fog had been lifted from me, and I took pleasure in extroverting my attention on my present time perceptions. This is the kind of thing that happens when subconscious memories are converted into conscious memories.

So when practicing EMA, the therapist will always keep the patient’s attention on recalling a happy memory, but if a full-blown negative memory of any kind comes up, then the therapist uses extroversion techniques to bring the patient back into the present time.

Any therapist practicing EMA should have good communication skills and emotional intelligence. The therapist should be professional, friendly and supportive – but not overly sympathetic. When working with a person who has been sexually abused and tortured, it might be a temptation to express deep sympathy – but this can be destructive to the process. Empathy is a better attitude than sympathy. The therapist is not a parental figure working with a child. The therapist and patient are adult equals. The good will of the therapist should be expressed in professionalism rather than sympathy.

Furthermore in EMA there may be unexplainable negative reactions. The patient may get angry for no apparent reason. In such a case the therapist should respond by using extroversion techniques to bring the attention of the patient back to the present time. The basic principle here is that all inappropriate negative emotions arise from a dislocation in time. Something in the past made the patient angry and so now he or she may get inappropriately angry with the therapist. In such a case, both the therapist and the patient must understand that they must bring the patient's attention back into the present time and place. Another thing about negative emotions is that they are always based on fear, so it's important for the therapist to help the patient feel safe.

Extroversion exercises are a necessary part of Fabian Therapy. Extroversion can be thought of in two ways:

1. First, it is simply any technique that brings a person into the present time when he or she has gotten stuck into painful memories of the past.

2. Second, it is an attitude of living an extroverted lifestyle. This means the patient should have a goal of being socially extroverted. Being with other persons in safe, social situations keeps the patient from focusing on the past in a negative way.

Furthermore extroversion also means having one's attention focused on activities taking place in the present time. This can be things like taking a walk, working in the garden or doing physical labor.

For the purposes of EMA therapy, extroversion exercises should be thought of as both social extroversion through conversation with the therapist, as well as perceptive extroversion by getting the patient to pay attention to the present environment. During EMA, the therapist is helping the patient to achieve a deep introversion into a happy, conscious memory. But when the process of EMA is over, the therapist must help the patient to extrovert.

A patient who is in Fabian Therapy is encouraged to not get stuck in painful memories as they spontaneously arise during journaling. This is also true of negative memories that arise in Episodic Memory Analysis, in nightmares or daytime flashbacks of trauma. Although it's a good sign that occluded memories come back uninvited in flashbacks, when this does happen, the patient should understand that while in Fabian Therapy it's best to retreat from such memories. If there is a need for some emotional catharsis, the patient can use the cathartic journaling technique to release negative emotions. Or the client can use drumming or art work to cathartically express negative feelings. But after such cathartic expressions, the patient should extrovert his attention and let go of the experience.

If a session of EMA is interrupted with a strong negative reaction that the patient feels the need to express in some way, the patient should be allowed to write down words or draw pictures to whatever extent he or she feels is appropriate. This can be done for cathartic purposes. But the therapist should avoid the temptation to analyze or dwell on the pictures or words. The idea is that once the negative feelings have been released, the patient should refocus on the present moment.

In a sense, what Fabian Therapy does is to heal the entire memory field through therapeutic memory exercises. In this way the individual takes back control of his or her ability to recall memories. There are two aspects to the memory field:

1. the memories themselves and
2. the mental mechanisms which allow memory to be recalled.

Traditional talk therapy attacks the painful memories contained in the memory field, but Fabian Therapy systematically heals the mind's ability to recall memory through indirect processes. In this way, the individual takes back his or her life.

For years I didn't talk about my experiences with Satanic Ritual Abuse, but I continually did journaling and my ability to remember the abuse slowly came back. After decades of work, I can consciously recall everything that I was subjected to. The way I recall a memory of abuse and the memory of normal childhood life are exactly the same. For example, I can recall a time when my little league team won a baseball game. (My team wasn't very good, this only happened once.) I also recall a time when Shotzy sacrificed a rabbit to Ishtar on a white lace altar before a intricate silver pentacle as she insisted to me that the blood of the sacrifice was beautiful. At one time the baseball memory was conscious and the Satanic sacrifice memory was repressed into the subconscious. Now both memories are conscious. But I never addressed the memory of the sacrifice of the rabbit in therapy. It's just that over time, as my memory field healed, that memory slowly emerged into conscious awareness.

When I first began with EMA as a teenager I had some conscious recall of the abuse that was done to me, but I also had periods of missing time and some mental confusion. As a teenager I experimented with the usual drugs of the 60s, and I often drank too much. But during the time period when I was doing EMA therapy I made a commitment to be clean and dry. There was a period of several years where I avoided my usual drinking buddies and lived a sober lifestyle. It was during that time in my life that I did most of my EMA work. Eventually, I was able to recall the implanted commands contained in occluded memories, and in consciously recalling them I became released from them. For example, I remember the implanted commands made to me that I should commit suicide if I ever started to recall the abuse, but in consciously recalling these recovered memories, I don't feel any desire to commit suicide. These implanted commands have been slowly defused.

But there are still some residual negative emotions. In writing my books, for example, some negative emotions are definitely being triggered. Writing down my memories is difficult. But it is also possible. Someone who had not recovered from this type of abuse would not be able to do this.

Many victims of Illuminati mind control question whether or not they've been abused because they have no touchstone in reality. It's tempting for them to think that the abuse was all just some type of fantasy or confabulation. I have certain advantages over many victims of mind control in that I have had feedback from the real world concerning my abuse. When I was young I had persons I knew in the Illuminati who I could talk with about the cult and its abusive practices. Now, many decades later, I have had some contact with Illuminati insiders who I’ve talked with about these issues.

When I was a child, I had great difficulty even being able to remember the abuse I received. Even after I got to the point where I could remember the abuse, I had great difficulty talking about it. Eventually, after decades of work, I got to a point where I could talk about it, even on a public radio program. I got to the place where I can think about and talk about the abuse because I have put many years of work into the healing of my memory field.

During those years of healing I deliberately avoided going into the painful memories and instead tried to keep my attention extroverted as much as possible. This was a lifestyle choice. I made a point of attending social events and doing volunteer work. I made a point of going on long hikes and doing things outdoors. My attention was not focused upon myself and my personal problems so much as it was focused on other people and the world around me. Illuminati mind control deeply wounds its victims. Fabian Therapy is a method of slowly healing those wounds. During the years that I was healing myself, I managed to live a normal life and I was not under the control of the Illuminati. Extroversion is more than a therapeutic technique, it is an attitude that makes a normal life possible.

Semantical Deactivation Technique

Here the term *semantical* refers to language, words and symbols used in Illuminati mind control. To be *activated* is to be pushed or goaded toward an action. The words and symbols in Illuminati mind control commands drive the victim toward taking an action or repressing an action. Therefore a victim of Illuminati mind control is a slave who can be activated by command words. To semantically *deactivate* the victim of Illuminati mind control is to lessen the power those control words have over him or her.

All the implanted commands used in Illuminati mind control are based upon spoken words – the implanted commands are essentially semantical. However, the spoken words may also be tied to visual symbols and written words. Think about the power of language. A hypnotist can place a person into a trance using words alone. While under hypnosis a person’s heart rate may be increased or decreased – by the words of the hypnotist. Other physiological responses can be invoked with words spoken by the hypnotist. Someone may voluntarily submit to hypnosis, but the Illuminati mind control victim has no such choice. He or she is controlled robotically by the words contained in implanted commands. And all such implanted commands contain a negative emotional charge due to the trauma that has been used to implant the commands.

Let’s say a woman is programmed with Monarch mind control. She has been programmed with an implanted command that says, “You will sexually service whomever your owner instructs you to.”

The words of that command contain negative emotional charge from the trauma-induced mind control. And it is her inability to confront that negative charge that forces her to obey the command. But the negative charge contained in those words can be slowly discharged and neutralized. This is how it’s done: three of the key words in the command phrase above are “sexually”, “owner” and “instructs”. So the Fabian therapist would create three word lists. Each word list would have only one of the keywords from the implanted command in it. So there would be a list, for example, that consisted of the following words: angel, boat, coat, owner, porch, tree, waterfall.

The Fabian therapist would have the patient go through the list and define each word, then make up sentences containing each word. The therapist would draw no special attention to command keywords, but would treat them in the same way as the neutral words which do not stimulate reactions. In doing this, the process would touch the memory field and subtly discharge negative emotions from any occluded memory that contained those command words.

Semantical memory recall is the ability to understand and use words in communication. In a sense, the Illuminati mind control process hijacks the victim’s ability to understand and use words so that command phrases can be used to control the victim. However, by having the patient make vocabulary word lists, he or she can slowly reclaim full conscious control of his or her semantical memory recall. The word list exercise strengthens the patient's ability to understand and use words. This changes how the patient relates to all the words and language contained in the memory field. This ultimately opens a greater conscious awareness of all that is within the memory field.

The therapist might not always know what the command keywords are, so he might have to guess. But consider this: there are certain words you always have to use in the construction of any sentence, words like: *the, and, or, of, a, an, in, this, that*.

So by using word lists put together, even with guesswork, you still are likely to discover some command keywords. And by working on any type of word list, you influence the semantical memory recall function. In doing this, you strengthen the mind's ability to remember. One principle of Fabian Therapy is that by increasing the mind's mnemonic abilities you decrease the power of occluded memories. Having a client work on any type of memory-improving exercise helps repair the overall memory system. Having the client learn new words and memorize their meanings helps to give the client control over words. You want the client to have control over words, rather than to be controlled by them. So simply by working with vocabulary in general and having the patient make up sentences with words defined in a dictionary, you actually decrease the power of implanted commands.

A Typical Fabian Therapy Session

In a typical Fabian Therapy session, I would arrive up at the house where we did therapy and the therapists and I would sit across from each other at a table. They would each have a notebook and pen, and I would have some paper and a pen too, in case I wanted to take notes. I would not go into an altered state of consciousness. And normally hypnosis would not be used. The attitude would be of adults meeting together as equals.

The Fabian therapists I worked with operated always in teams. There would be at least two therapists. Some times both of them would be with me, but usually they would go back and forth and take turns being the primary therapist. The sessions would go on for hours, and we would take breaks.

The therapists would first ask me if I had any ongoing concerns in my life that would keep me from focusing my attention upon the therapy. One time I forgot to bring enough change for my return trip home on the bus, and he gave me some change. But more often than not, it would just be issues in my life that I needed to talk through a little with someone; things like me not getting along with one of my girlfriends or something like that. This initial conversation would usually not take very long and was called *the Preliminaries*. (Read more about *the Preliminaries* at the end of this chapter.)

The Preliminaries were a prerequisite to doing *Episodic Memory Analysis*. That way your attention would be on the EMA process and would not be distracted by some present-time problem. However, when I was first in therapy, most of our time was spent in these *Preliminaries*. The point of all this was to make sure that the client was stable enough to go on with the more advanced forms of therapy.

Because the Fabian therapists were dealing with persons with multiple personalities, they would sometimes use *lie detector machines*. Lie detector machines don't detect lies, they detect emotional responses. But that information is valuable in the case of people with multiple personalities or split personalities. One personality doesn't necessary know what the other personality did or experienced. If the therapist asks the primary personality if he's recently been the victim of violence and he says no, but the machine shows an emotional response, this could indicate that the alter personality has been subjected to violence which the primary personality doesn't recall. So the therapist would know to evoke the alter personality and find out what happened. This way the therapist would be able to help the client avoid being the victim of violence in the future. However, the therapist would want to work with the primary personality as much as possible. So evoking an alter personality would only be done in an emergency situation such as the client's life being in danger.

After that we would talk about my *journaling*. Sometimes I would bring along my journals and we would look through them and they would encourage me to continue with my journaling practice.

Then we might do something like *vocabulary work*, that is *Semantical Deactivation Technique*. We would go over a word list. I would take each word, fully define it with a dictionary and then make up sentences using that word. The therapist would listen to me as I did this. When the list was complete we would take a break for ten to fifteen minutes. And we might do other things. The pattern of the therapy sessions varied some. But these therapy sessions would last for hours and involved a number of different activities.

If we had time, eventually we would go into the *Episodic Memory Analysis*. This would be the heart of the therapy session. We would usually spend from thirty to fortyfive minutes on EMA. Because the focus of such episodic memories is on happy events, I would usually be in a positive mood at the end of the session.

At the end of the session, the therapist would make sure that I was grounded in the present. The attitude that I had to assume was to *be here now*; that is, the main focus of my attention should be in the present moment. Often we would go outside and take a walk and make small talk before I took off to go back home.

It was usually during these walks that my therapist and I together would plan when we would next be in session. The frequency of the sessions depended upon what I felt I could deal with emotionally. Commonly we met once a week, every week. Sometimes we met as little as once a month. When therapy first started we met frequently. The therapy sessions tended to make me feel emotionally stabilized. The more sessions I attended, the more grounded I felt. Eventually we started to meet with less frequency.

One important rule was that while I was in therapy I was to avoid talking with anybody else about the therapy. I mostly only talked about the therapy with my therapists. I did occasionally talk with some other patients who had been through this type of therapy. but I never talked with outsiders about it. This was important for two reasons:

1. Fabian Therapy is a rebellion against the Illuminati who don't like it when people rebel against them, and thus are likely to hurt anyone perceived as a threat.

2. Also it's easier to avoid painful memories if you don't talk with other people about the fact that you're in therapy and Fabian Therapy is based on the avoidance of painful memories.

More about *the Preliminaries,* taken from the author's memoirs: *Angelic Defenders & Demonic Abusers:*

The Preliminaries were the issues that had to be addressed before going into the main therapy session... During *the Preliminaries*, Mr. Fabian would ask a series of question from a list. My recall of the questions were that they addressed issues of health and well-being. These would be questions like:

- Did you smoke marijuana at any time during the last two weeks?
- Did you consume alcohol at any time in the last 36 hours?
- Did you have any unpleasant reactions to the last therapy session?

- Have you made any major changes in lifestyle since the last time we met?
- Have you been ill since the last time we met?

- Have you had an episode of emotional distress since the last time we met?
- Have you been the victim of violence since the last time we met?
- Have you committed an act of violence since the last time we met?
- Have you committed any crimes since the last time we met?
- Have you had any social problems since the last time we met?
- Have you had a serious life problem since the last time we met?
- Have you formed any new relationships since the last time we met?
- Do you have any issues that you need to address before we go further into therapy?

When I would answer "yes" to any of those questions, the Fabians would go into a dialogue with me about it. These discussions would take varying amounts of time. The first two therapy sessions that I had with the Fabians, we mostly just dealt with *the Preliminaries*. By the time that I started therapy with the Fabians, I had become a somewhat troubled young man. The years of abuse had taken their toll on me... I was a typical juvenile delinquent. The Fabians felt that they had to help me to stabilize my life before we started the deep therapy techniques. And that’s what *the Preliminaries* were for: to help the client deal with real world problems and stabilize.

Advanced EMA Techniques

What I described above is the typical approach to EMA that my therapists were using at that time, and that approach is relatively easy to understand and describe. But they also had some other, more advanced techniques.

In using these advanced EMA techniques they had a diagram that they would make. Imagine a circle divided into eight different sections. This would look sort like a picture of a wheel with eight spokes. Think about the concentric circles such as those that you would see in a tree ring. Now divide those concentric circles into eight equal sections. That is what the diagram looked like.

• The *eight sections* represent the eight categories described before: *olfactory, gustatory, tactile, affectivity, subjective kinetics, visuals, audio* and *language*.

• The *concentric circles* are a representation of the *different time periods* in the patient’s life, such as: *prepuberty, puberty, young adult* and so forth.

• The *center circle* is the *subconscious memories* of the patient from the *prenatal period, birth* and *early childhood*.
• The *surrounding circles* are *subsequent time periods* in the life of the patient so that the *outer circle represents the most recent time*.
• The chart could be divided into years and the sections used would depend on how old the client was.

This diagram was a chart of the patient’s life that was used as a tool in helping the therapists move the patient’s attention to different points in his memory field. So the chart was like a symbolic representation of the holistic memory field.

They would also use a biofeedback machine in these more advanced techniques. The only purpose of it was to make sure that the patient remained calm, deeply relaxed and without internal conflict. Then they would go to different locations on this chart in a random fashion.

The client would recall the memories with his or her eyes open, and this therapy would be done in a room where everything was of a middle gray color and there were no distractors. The therapists would look at the chart, but the client would not be able to see it. The client would concentrate on only the happy memories.

For example, they might ask the patient to recall a recent happy memory. Having done that, they would ask for a single perception of that memory from one of the eight categories. For example: “Recall a smell in that memory.”

The patient would recall a smell: “I remember the scent of a flower.”

Then they would go to to a different happy memory in a different time location and a different category of perception. Typically, EMA intensely and systematically analyzes a single recalled episode, but advanced EMA is different. Instead of intensely analyzing the memory perceptions from one episode, they would go from episode to episode and pick only one type of memory perception from each episode.

So the patient might recall the smell of a flower when working in the garden two weeks ago, then the taste of corn on the cob from a picnic ten years ago, then the feeling of cool rain coming down on a hot day during a hike three months ago, and so forth.

This would go on for about twenty minutes. I did this a few times toward the end of my therapy work. You needed to already have had a lot of typical EMA work before you could do this. Sometimes we found that I could recall happy sensations from early childhood – memories I thought I had forgotten. My therapists claimed that some of the people they had worked with could recall prenatal memories.

This type of therapy really made you feel good. It tended to leave you feeling uplifted. It also provided a change from the other type of work. My Fabian therapists believed that this type of advanced EMA could speed up the process of recovery. They had used this method with certain clients in *The Retreat* and in some cases they had achieved an integration of multiple personalities in a matter of weeks.

If the Illuminati hadn't killed my therapists, I think things might have gone better for me in my life. If they had been able to complete their research on their therapy system, I think it would have benefited me and been a substantial contribution to society. I wish that they had been able to openly publish their findings. But I'm hoping that I'm able to reveal enough about their approach so that others who are doing research about Illuminati mind control may gain insight from what I've written here. I feel confident that someday benevolent social scientists will be able to figure out more therapies for effectively deprogramming the victims of trauma-based mind control.

Basic Deprogramming Theory

Just as there are four aspects to the mind control method, there are four aspects to the deprogramming method:

1. awakenment
2. memory recovery
3. authentic self realization
4. emotional sensitization.

1. Awakenment

Awakenment is the experience of an individual realizing that he or she has been brainwashed. This realization doesn't necessarily happen all at once. The individual might wake up a little at a time. This awakenment happens in different ways for different persons. There is an international "Truther" movement in which internet activists are trying to wake people up. Leaders like Alex Jones and David Icke put a great deal of effort into this type of activism. *Awakenment is the first step in deprogramming.*

2. Memory Recovery

For victims of trauma-based mind control, *memory recovery* is very problematic. But it isn’t just the victims of trauma-based mind control who struggle with this. Many people suffer from medical birth trauma, the effects of which they do not understand. Men who have been circumcised as children have been tortured, but most do not consciously remember the torture.

Also there is a deep philosophical meaning to memory recovery. As humans, we are powerful spiritual beings. But most humans have forgotten who and what they really are. Reconnecting with your inner spiritual core is a part of memory recovery because you are recalling your true spiritual nature.

But memory recovery also means the rehabilitation of the memory system. The practice of daily journaling is something that can be useful to many persons because it reinforces the health of your memory system.

3. Authentic Self Realization

Authentic Self Realization: It’s become a motto of our time for people to say that they are “looking for themselves” – and this really makes sense because the entire culture has been subjected to varying degrees of mind control. In the case of persons suffering from multiple personality disorder this conflict is intense. When you can reject the false masks of persona that have been imposed upon you and find the person behind the mask, you have found yourself. But this is something that can never be done alone. You need to have relationships with persons for whom you feel mutual respect and affection. Such relationships are necessary in order to know who you are, because we humans are social creatures. Of course some relationships are toxic and destructive. Therefore you have to concentrate on those relationships that are positive and life affirming.

4. Emotional Sensitization

Emotional Sensitization: Most mind control involves varying degrees of disassociation, in which your mental processes disconnect from your emotional awareness and physical sensations. We have all been socially conditioned into ignoring the body’s messages, but reconnecting to your feelings is essential to recovery. There is no simple way of doing this other than to pay close attention to what you are feeling – pain, tightness, tension, etc. – and to then respond to those bodily sensations, which are also called feelings or emotions, in a way that helps to release them.

For years I used artwork and drumming to connect with my feelings. I’m not a good drummer. I have no talent for drumming, but when I would feel negative feelings in my body, rather than going into the traumatic source of the feelings, I would drum. Sometimes I would drum for hours. I’d try to express the emotions through the drumming. My drumming might start off as slow and soft drum beats to express apathy and depression. The drum beats would become faster as I got into fear and anger. Often, by the time I finished drumming, the beat would be strong, steady and cheerful.

There are other ways to sensitize yourself to your feelings. I’ve found yoga and Tai Chi type stretching exercises to be useful for this. Support groups and supportive relationships can be helpful as well. But essentially you must have the attitude that an acute awareness of your feelings and emotions is not shameful but important to your recovery.

Many victims of trauma-based mind control become drug addicts or alcoholics. Psychiatrist encourage psychiatric drug use, which can be very harmful in many cases. These drugs disconnect you from your feelings, while you really need to feel these emotions and process them. Negative emotions can be released in a healthy way with talk therapy, journaling or some physical cathartic expression. It’s good to get physical when releasing these negative emotions. There have been times when I’ve gone out to my car, rolled up the windows and screamed for long periods of time. But most of the time I’ve processed negative feelings with things like art or drumming.

Sexual Templates from Child Abuse

During my childhood, I was sexually abused mostly by men, but sometimes by women. The pedophiliac abuse never felt good. It was always humiliating, sometimes painful and continually frightening. I felt that I had no choice in these abusive sexual encounters with adults. But after I became a teenager I did have a choice in relationships – or I thought I did. While I was in Fabian Therapy, during the preliminary discussions that we had during each session, it slowly became clear that my childhood abuse had become a template for my sexual behavior as a teenager and in my early twenties. I would have sexual encounters with men, and sometimes women, that were in some ways similar to my childhood abuse.

In my teenage years and during my twenties I generally had a girlfriend with whom I had a normal and usually meaningful relationship. This relationship would be openly known about and it tended to be typical for our age group. These relationships lasted for varying periods of time, as little as a few weeks or in some cases as long as a year. These relationships involved some degree of commitment, and they were emotionally supportive relationships that were usually fun and meaningful.

However I also had brief sexual encounters with men and sometimes women. These were secretive relationships that were short-lived and meaningless. Usually these sexual encounters would involve alcohol or drugs. Most of these were not even one-night stands. These sexual interactions would last a few hours or in some cases perhaps only twenty minutes or so. They tended to be encounters that I felt bad about afterwards. They were less sexually satisfying than masturbation. Sometimes they were dangerous. As a child I had been trained to always use condoms, and that was the case for these encounters. But if I hadn’t been trained to be so disciplined in the use of condoms I probably would have gotten a sexual transmitted disease, which I never did. In therapy I eventually realized that I was having sex like this as an acting out of my childhood abuse. A psychological template for bad sexual encounters had been etched into my psyche through my childhood abuse.

Once I was able to make this connection, I stopped this type of sexual behavior. And I did go through a long period in my life where I became celibate because it was less confusing to just not have sex. I worked on my recovery and developed a deeper sense of spirituality. Eventually I did have a relationship with a woman that lasted for years and was mutually supportive and emotionally intimate. But it took years of healing work to get to the point where that felt normal.

This is something that any person recovering from childhood sexual abuse needs to consider. As a prepubescent child, there is no real pleasure from the sex act. There may be some psychological satisfaction such as being the center of attention or pleasing an adult in a position of authority. But the sex act is really for the benefit of the adult and not the child. But as an adult, when the sex act does have the potential to be pleasurable, behaviors learned in childhood abuse may arise in adult sexual behavior. These patterns of sexual behavior are almost always destructive and ultimately undesirable. You’ll know that you’ve healed childhood abuse when you can release the template for sexual behavior that was imposed upon you as a child.

EMA to Reinforce Healthy Behavior

The Fabian therapists did not have any desire to shape my sexual orientation to either gay or heterosexual, but they were concerned that my choices were healthy. During my late teenage years and my early twenties I acted out bisexually. I do believe in gay rights and I do believe that some people are gay or bisexual by nature. But I also believe that homosexuality was imposed upon me by Illuminati mind control, and for me gay behavior was never a good thing. In other words, I’m not really bisexual, I was acting out that way because of the abuse. And the abuse experience was a toxic sexual template.

Throughout the therapy process, it eventually became obvious to me that certain relationships were healthy and others were unhealthy. A few of my gay interactions were more or less healthy. But virtually every gay encounter was something that made me feel bad afterwards, and often they were dangerous. Some of my interactions with women were equally unhealthy. But most of my romantic and sexual interactions with women were healthy and mutually supportive. The sexual relationships that left me feeling good tended to be with women. The Fabian therapists didn’t try to criticize my gay relationships. They did not try to use behavioral techniques to punish gay relationships and to reward relationships with women. Instead the used EMA to focus on my happy memories of romantic experiences with young women.

The Fabian therapists did not ever use EMA to focus in on sexual experiences, even sexual experiences that were happy because they didn’t want their clients to become sexually aroused in therapy. But they would focus on romantic experiences that didn’t result in sexual activity.

For example, one EMA experience was a high school dance that I took a girl to. We never dated before this or afterwards. And to be honest, I think she was trying to get another boy jealous so that he would date her. There was a boy who had dated her a few times, but then he asked someone else to the dance. So the girl hinted that she wanted me to ask her. I had spoken with her a few times, but she was more popular than I was, and I was surprised that she showed interest in me. I nervously asked her to go to the dance with me while we were on lunch break. She agreed. The dance was a pleasant experience for both of us. But the boy she really wanted to date was there also. He saw us together and got jealous. After the dance he started to date her exclusively. Although there was no sexual content to the EMA analysis of that experience, it was a happy experience for which I had no regrets and only good feelings.

By using EMA to focus on those types of happy dating experiences with women, my behavior did shift. I stopped being drawn to unhealthy sexual interactions and became more focused on healthy relationships. Instead of condemning my drug use and drunkenness, the Fabian therapists would use EMA to focus on the times that I enjoyed myself when I was sober. EMA doesn’t shape behavior directly. Instead it speaks directly to emotional consciousness. You focus on the time when you genuinely felt happiness and contentment deep within your heart. This causes you to become drawn to the behaviors that make you feel good, rather than the behaviors that make you feel bad. So the Fabian therapists used EMA to indirectly shift my sexual orientation away from toxic gay relationships and toward natural, healthy heterosexual experiences.

Many persons living gay lifestyles are unhappy. This is not true of all gay people, but it is true for many. So overcoming Illuminati mind control may involve an understanding of how the Illuminati is trying to impose homosexuality on persons who are heterosexual by nature.

Some people are by nature gay persons, and this fact should be understood and respected, but the Illuminati has an agenda to promote homosexual behavior to persons who are not gay by nature. This has to do with plans for massive social engineering. Agenda 21, promoted by the United Nations, contains plans to place all persons in human population centers, which will be like large prisons. One reason for this is to segregate the population by gender the way it is done in prisons. Another agenda has to do with limiting population growth. Prisoners, organized into labor crews, will be separated from persons of the complementary gender, thus pregnancy becomes impossible. There is also the matter of psychological manipulation. Prior to puberty, children are attracted to friendships with other children of their own gender. It’s also true that children at this age are deferential to adult authority. Enforced homosexuality is a way to use social engineering to impose a childlike state of mind on adults. They want to brainwash the average citizen to be attracted to same-gender relationships and to be submissive to the authority of the government. This will mimic a pre-adult state of mind.

Individual therapy systems can heal a single person, but there needs to be deprogramming also on a larger scale because the Illuminati brainwashes not just individuals, but whole societies.

Concordance

The Illuminati tries to synchronize the mind control commands made to its individual victims with the propaganda slogans presented to the public through the mass media. *Concordance* takes place when the control words contained in mind-control command phrases also are used as propaganda slogans in the mass media. The Illuminati controls the mass media and coordinates command phrases that appear in the mass media with command phrases programmed into slaves during brainwashing sessions.

Consider the propaganda slogan, *“Too big to fail.”* This first appeared through mass media into public consciousness in 1984. The slogan means that if a corporation is big enough, the government must guarantee its success because its failure would destroy society. Of course this is not true. The failure of a large and poorly functioning corporation is good for society and makes the economy stronger. This is how actual free market capitalism works. But it’s bad for wealthy stockholders who don’t want their investments diminished by economic reality. So this propaganda phrase has been used to justify every type of financial scandal imaginable. But it really isn’t a rational statement. Large corporations have failed before without destroying the entire economy. In fact, common sense tells us that the failure of a large, incompetent and corrupt corporation is good for the health of the economy. But whenever the phrase, *“Too big to fail,”* is evoked, the politicians respond like Pavlov’s dog and give that large corporation whatever it wants. Many key politicians are victims of Monarch mind control and they’ve been programmed with the implanted command, *“Too big to fail.”*

Whenever the mind-controlled politicians hear that command phrase on the television, it evokes a conditioned response. They know then, on a subconscious level, that they must give that corporation whatever it wants. “Too big to fail,” is a *concordant* control phrase. It creates concordance between the individual brainwashed victim and the propaganda used to control the general public.

This *“Too big to fail”* justification has been evoked in recent financial political scams, and has resulted in massive debt and an ongoing depression.

Some typical concordant control phrases are: *“war on terror”, “war on drugs,” “post 9/11 world,” “politically correct,” “New World Order,”* *“global community,” “hidden hand of the market,”* and *“free market”*.

This coordination of an implanted mind-control phrase, along with the mass media propaganda slogans, prevents discordance within the mind of the brainwashed victim. The brainwashed politician must feel that he is part of a greater movement in society. The politician who has been brainwashed will believe that he is in the right by going along with his programming because that programming is also reflected through the mass media.

However, when mind control command phrases are challenged in life, this can cause the mind-control victim to question his programming. This may cause him to feel anxious, but it also has a potential for releasing him from his mind control, at least to some small extent. The more the public challenges the lies told by the Illuminati-controlled mass media, the more discordance takes place in the minds of the brainwashed politicians.

If you were to hook up the average American politician to a biofeedback machine, and slowly read a word list that contained the words “fail,” “too” and “big”, you would see reactions on the machine whenever any of those three words were read.

I have to point out that in a sense, the entire population of the United States has been subjected to Illuminati mind control. The Illuminati has been taking over the United States a little at a time since before the Civil War. The Illuminati controls the economy of the United States by using the Federal Reserve. Wall Street is a center of Illuminati power. The Federal Government takes its orders from Wall Street and the Bilderberg Group. The consolidation of all mass media corporations into a very few corporations controlled by the Illuminati, has already taken place.

If you get your news from mainstream newspapers or television

outlets you are being subjected to Illuminati propaganda. Ever since September 11, 2001, the entire country has been acting out an Illuminati mind-control drama. The extent to which the average American is disconnected from reality is overwhelming.

Whenever a person watches television or spends long periods of time on the internet, that person goes into a subtle, altered state of mind. In this state of relaxation, the individual is less likely to be critical of any information received. When the Illuminati uses brainwashing techniques on politicians and other important leaders, they coordinate their mind control with the propaganda that the general public is being subjected to. This creates a mind-control continuum which consists of both the propaganda control of the public psyche and the Illuminati's brainwashing control of society's leaders.

Those of us who actually tell the truth about what's going on are labeled as "conspiracy theorists". So if you are freed from propaganda and brainwashing, you are actually out of concordance with mainstream society. This is another issue that a person faces in recovering from Illuminati mind control. The more you attain freedom, the more discordance you feel with this society which is based on Illuminati mind control and propaganda. However, if enough people were to become deprogrammed, there would be a tipping point where society in general would awaken to the truth of what the Illuminati is doing.

Nevertheless, my goal in presenting this information at this time isn't political transformation. I simply believe that the information presented here may have some potential to benefit the mental health treatment of individuals.

Deactivating Mind-Control Symbols

There are certain mind-control symbols, visual symbols, that are used to trigger and reinforce Illuminati mind control. Some examples of these are the single eye, the single eye in the triangle, pyramid with the all-seeing eye at the top, the pyramid, the owl, the butterfly, the umbrella, the goat's head, the devil, devil's horns, the skull, the pentacle, the lighting bolt, the teddy bear, the mask, the maze, the doll, the checkerboard pattern of black and white squares, two columns – one white – one black, the torch of Lucifer, a hand holding the torch, the torch bearer, Mickey Mouse, and various hand signals.

All the above symbols are meant to act as triggers to reinforce various mind control techniques. During trauma-based mind control sessions the victim may be forced to look at such symbols and associate them with conditioning.

However the Fabian therapists had a technique for deactivating the power of these symbols. What they did was to create a series of cards some of which contained these Illuminati symbols but most were images or symbols which had no Illuminati association. Some of the cards had religious symbols from various religions. Some cards were corporate logos or images associated with brands of products. Some were of everyday symbols like stop signs. Some were pictures of ordinary everyday objects like a glass of milk or a flower. The cards would be randomized so that they were never in any particular order. The first time they would go through a run of the cards they would do free association. This is sort of like what some therapists do with ink blots. You look at the card and say whatever comes to your mind.

For example when they showed me the teddy bear card for the first time I free associated the word “pain” with the teddy bear. But they would never judge the free association or get hung up on it. They would just move on. And they accepted whatever free association the client came up with.

Then in the next run of the cards, you would make up happy nonsense words which had nothing to do with the symbol. For example, you might be shown a picture of a pentagram and you’d respond with the words, “strawberry jam”. Of course that might be a subconscious reference to blood. But they wouldn’t get hung up on that. The idea of these nonsense words is that they all have a happy meaning. So no matter what symbol you are shown, you make up a happy nonsense word.

This drill would be done periodically. The result of doing this is that you come to realize that you don’t have to accept the meaning of a symbol. It can mean anything you want to make it mean. And when you realize that through the practice of this drill, the symbols stop having power over you and you have power over them.

The all-seeing eye doesn’t have to mean the power of the Illuminati, it can mean insight, or any other meaning you assign to it. These symbols don’t have occultic power unless you accept that power. You can reject the influence of occult power just as you can redefine symbols any way you choose.

One thing that should be mentioned is that in the course of using this technique, the client would often develop headaches, body aches or strange physical sensations. The therapist would encourage the client to communicate when such sensations take place. At that point, the process of looking at cards would end, and the client would be brought back into the present time using extroversion drills. Then, whatever actions necessary to process the negative emotions would take place. Often the Fabians would use breathing exercises to to release stress and increase relaxation.

Other Uses of Fabian Therapy

I know that the scientists who invented this type of therapy didn’t use it only with the victims of mind control. Although their therapy techniques were never presented publicly, they did find people who they could quietly help. I heard the story of a Vietnam veteran who had been traumatized by his war experiences. Fabian Therapy was used to help him heal from his painful memories. It has been used to help persons with depression and other types of psychological problems. In some cases, the therapists would start out with a traditional talk-therapy approach and then switch over to using Fabian techniques. In other cases, they started out with Fabian Therapy and then when the person stabilized, they switched over to typical talk therapy. The scientists who invented this approach believed it could be used as a substitute for psychiatric drugs.

And certain aspects of this therapy approach are commonly used. The Fabian therapists drew ideas from mainstream therapists whenever possible. For example, it’s not unusual for mundane therapists to encourage patients to use journaling. If they had been allowed to, the scientists who developed Fabian Therapy would have shared some of their insights with mundane psychologists. However before they could do that, the research project that developed Fabian Therapy was shut down by the Committee that rules the Illuminati.

Illuminati Cultural Mind Control

Thus far we've mostly discussed the way that the Illuminati programs individuals, but the Illuminati is also programing the entire world culture, and you along with it. So there are some things to think about in understanding this cultural mind control. One thing is that Hollywood and the music entertainment business is pretty much controlled by the Illuminati. So any movie or TV show you look at has been designed to program your mind. If you are not very aware of what you are looking at and how these entertainment programs are designed, you are accepting Illuminati mind control every time you watch TV. This is also true of music.

One thing you should be aware of is preprogramming. Think of all the zombie movies that are being put out. In them, ordinary citizens are turned into evil creatures who must be killed in order for the surviving humans to escape. This image of a zombiefilled world is a template that is being programmed into your consciousness. Your subconscious mind is being programmed by these images. You are being programmed to see everyone you come across on the street as a potential enemy. But there is something more than that. Preprogramming means that movies are used to prepare you for future events that the Illuminati might impose upon society. There is a military chemical weapon called BZ. Victims of this chemical weapon may act in a zombie-like manner. Some feel that the zombie movies are being designed to preprogram the public for a BZ attack against the general population by the Illuminati. When victims of BZ begin to act in a zombie-like way, you are preprogrammed to kill them instead of trying to help them.

You have to realize that the Illuminati owns and controls the mass media outlets in Europe and the USA. When you get your news from these outlets what you are getting is a clever mixture of facts and propaganda. Local news has to be more accurate because you have ways of directly checking out events in your area. But no major outlet news program can be trusted. You can’t trust the news. You can’t trust the history books. In order to be free, you have to question everything. This is a difficult discipline to maintain. But one thing that you have to your advantage is that you were born to have a natural ability to recognize the truth when you hear it. When you pay attention to the feelings that you have in your body, they will reveal truth to you and let you know when you are being lied to.

You need to realize that Psychic Driving, that uses occultic psychic powers, is combined with media propaganda to brainwash the population on a massive scale. The Illuminati have a depopulation agenda and they use movies to forward that agenda. Occultic influencing of the collective consciousness of humanity is reinforced with mass propaganda.

Shortly after the Civil War, a famous Freemason, Albert Pike, created a plan for the Illuminati. This was a plan for Three World Wars. And according to his plan, at the end of those wars, the Illuminati would take over the world and brainwash everyone to believe in “the pure doctrine of Lucifer”. We find ourselves now in the midst of this world war three.

Movies are used to program the minds of the public to accept and cooperate with the process of the Illuminati apocalypse. There was a film made in 1916 called *The End of the World*. That was just the start of a deluge of cinematic apocalypse films. The compulsion to make such films doesn’t come from public demand. People are just as content to go to see happy films and films that project a positive future. So realize that this type of apocalypse visualization is being imposed upon the public consciousness with evil intentions.

This is just a short list of some of the better known films which promote the idea of an impending apocalypse:

Deluge, Things to Come, The Day the Earth Stood Still, On the Beach, Planet of the Apes, A Boy and His Dog, The Terminator, Waterworld, The Day after Tomorrow, This is the End, Mad Max, The Road Warrior, Dr. Strangelove, Invasion of the Body Snatchers, WALL-E, Dawn of the Dead, Children of Men, Fail-Safe, Night of the Living Dead, The Thing, Shaun of *the Dead, Twelve Monkeys, Zombieland, 28 Days Later, Hunger Games, War of the Worlds, The World's End, The Matrix, A.I. Artificial Intelligence, Contagion, Testament, The Dead Zone, Dogma,*

Judge Dredd, World War Z, Miracle Mile, I am Legend, The Road, and *Soylent Green*.

Understand this: television and movies are designed to be Illuminati propaganda. When you look at TV and movies in an unthinking way, you are allowing yourself to be brainwashed. The act of looking at a movie or TV actually alters your brainwaves so that you go into a state of light relaxation. This is what a hypnotist does when he relaxes a client in order to make hypnotic suggestions. You are better off if you only watch movies that are funny and life affirming. The less you watch television and movies, the more control you have over your own mind.

The Illuminati Power Structure

When I talk about extraterrestrials, people sometimes roll their eyes. And many people who have awakened to the fact that our governments are really being run by secret societies draw the line at an awareness of hostile ETs. However, you have to realize that the general public has been conditioned to deny the existence of intelligent ETs in much the same way that Pavlov's dog was conditioned to salivate whenever he heard a bell ring. So let's go there. You can't really understand the true nature of thought control until you see the controllers for the intelligent insects that they are.

The symbol of the Illuminati is an owl – which is a bird of prey that operates in the darkness – hence a symbol for secret societies in general. The Illuminati rose to power in part by first taking over the Freemasonic lodges in Europe and the USA. The symbol of Freemasonry and aristocratic Luciferianism is the pyramid. The Illuminati has taken over the Freemasons and all other secret societies in the USA, Israel and Europe. So for many, the pyramid has become a symbol for the Illuminati which is itself organized as a hierarchy with all the power at the top. I have been told that the Illuminati is run by a Committee of three hundred people, but really those three hundred are connected to other powerful, wealthy interests. So realistically what we’re talking about is a few thousand people who basically rule much of the world. Their control is not absolute, but they are powerful enough – and criminal enough – that if they really feel threatened by someone they might have that person killed. Supposedly, all initiated members of the Illuminati are themselves protected from such punishments, but in reality if they offend the hierarchy, they can be executed. So if an Illuminati member offends anyone who is on the Committee or close to it, there is the possibility of harsh reprisals. The leaders of the Illuminati are very powerful people who are devoid of moral restraints.

The Illuminati is a personification of an otherworldly demonic empire. I personally believe that the Illuminati is something like a hostile alien consciousness. If you want to, you can think of this as a metaphor: evil aliens rule the world. But you might consider the possibility that this is literally true. The way I visualize the Illuminati is that at the top of the pyramid are dispassionate and intellectual gray aliens. They manipulate everyone with their psychic powers. The Illuminati members who I call the High-Adepts are interested in psychic abilities, but they don’t indulge in the sexual rituals or the blood rituals. They are only interested in psychic connections with demons, Lucifer or Satan. I would say that these High-Adepts make up the ruling 1% of the Illuminati. They are the real leaders, but you never see them on TV or the internet. They have a group of criminal enforcers who are loyal to them. These enforcers are Satanists who are obsessed with sex and violence. Some of them have extreme practices such as animal sacrifice, human sacrifice, cannibalism and blood drinking. They make up perhaps 15% of the Illuminati. The other 84% are basically puppets. Some of the puppets may seem powerful – the presidents of the USA and such – but they are just puppets manipulated by the High-Adepts. If the puppets get out of line, the enforcers put them back in line or kill them. And High Adepts have complete control over the enforcers. These High-Adept Illuminati members are gray aliens, or they are possessed by the demonic souls of gray aliens. The criminal enforcers are Reptilian aliens, or they are possessed by the demonic souls of Reptilian aliens. However you look at this, the leaders of the Illuminati aren’t really human.

The Sci-Fi movies always describe alien invasions as being fought with spaceships and such, but I don't think this is the case. These aliens are using their psychic powers to invade our planet. The High-Adepts are genteel in their mannerisms. But if somebody crosses them, they have their violent enforcers who can step in.

The Suppression of Fabian Therapy

Back in the early 1980s, the Fabian therapists who had helped me and others got in trouble with the Illuminati. The Committee which runs the Illuminati did not initially object to the idea of a therapy system being developed to undo the damage caused by MK Ultra mind control. Every now and then, after they destroyed somebody's mind, they wanted to restore it again.

I heard a story once of an important scientist whose mind was ruined with trauma-based mind control to the point where he couldn't work anymore. Fearful that he might reveal the technological data that he had discovered, they tried to erase part of his memory and then put him to work on a different project. But the trauma-based mind control wrecked his mental stability, and he wasn't able to work effectively. So they used these Fabian techniques, which I've just described, to restore his sanity and he was able to go back to work for them.

However, the Fabian therapists who helped me also helped many others. They started helping too many people whom they hadn't been authorized to help. And some paranoid members of the Committee felt threatened by their deceptions and disobedience. That is why my therapists were killed.

I had two main therapists. They were a husband and wife team. They were two of the scientists that had developed the basic theories and protocols of what I call *Fabian Therapy*. I also knew of some other therapists who worked at a compound known as *The Retreat*. This was an isolated environment where therapy could be conducted intensively.

I did have a split personality when I was a child and certain events caused my personality to spontaneously reintegrate. But my personality has always been somewhat split. Instead of developing multiple personalities, I had one very complex and conflicted personality. I always could remember some of the abuse, but there were originally some gaps in my memory. Sometimes I had periods of missing time in my life when I seemed to spontaneously disassociate. This usually happened when I was very upset. I was not very functional when I was a teenager. I struggled with life and felt suicidal until I was well into my twenties.

However, I managed to eventually stabilize my life. Part of this was from this type of therapy I received, and part of this was that I had become more spiritual. Prayer and meditation became important parts of my life. But in truth I have never completely gotten over the emotional scars caused by the Satanic Ritual Abuse which I had experienced when I was a child. Emotional wellbeing is something I've struggled throughout my life. I feel disturbed by the knowledge of all the evil things which the Illuminati are still doing to our world. However, I still consider myself fortunate when compared to what I've seen happen to other victims.

Anyone who joins the Illuminati makes an oath of secrecy so that they can't talk publicly about the Illuminati. But I never joined and never took the oath of secrecy. So I am not breaking any rules by talking about this information.

The members of the Committee don't really trust one another – and for good reason. Most of them achieve and maintain power through betrayal.

Some of them would like to see the Illuminati become less powerful and more decentralized. Their motivation in wanting decentralization isn't out of kindness but out of a desire for personal survival. The power struggles within this group are difficult for outsiders to understand. My perception of this situation is that some people on the Committee want this information about Fabian Therapy to be made public, but others don't. I'm not friends with anyone in the Illuminati, but I do have some feeling for how they operate. There are those within the overall Illuminati organization who recognize that the Illuminati must someday be deconstructed and that one element of that deconstruction is the development of therapy systems for treating the victims of traumabased mind control. So there are those even in the Committee who wish the suppression of Fabian Therapy to end.

Even those persons who are helped with Fabian Therapy still experience problems. The scars of this type of mind control are very deep. And such scars do not heal quickly. Just because you can remember something that you had forgotten due to trauma does not mean that you have healed emotionally. This is why the Fabian therapists were more concerned with creating positive experiences in the lives of their clients than they were with restoring memory loss. The goal of Fabian Therapy is not to restore lost memories, however as the mind is rehabilitated the ability to recall what was once lost memories does take place. So with enough healing you do find that you can remember everything. The goal of this therapy is to free victims of Illuminati control so they are able to function in life. The goal of Fabian Therapy is to help unhappy people find real happiness and contentment again.

I can’t say that I’ve ever been able to completely recover from all the psychological scars of my own experiences, but I can function in life well enough to be able to speak out against the Illuminati – and that makes me better off than most Illuminati mind-control victims. I was well along with my therapy when my therapists were killed, so I was able to continue on with it by using journaling techniques after their deaths. I took the attitude that I could best honor their sacrifice by continuing to heal myself.

I won’t go too much into the details of their deaths right now, but I mention this because it points out the problems you might have in trying to help people who are the victims of Illuminati mind control. The Illuminati mind controllers don’t want their slaves to be freed. Many victims of Illuminati mind control don’t consciously know that they’ve been programmed. However, the Illuminati’s control over their slaves is not absolute. There are slaves who have been highly programmed and who are monitored on a regular basis; such victims would probably be very difficult to help. However, there are a great many people who have only been subjected to a few session of Illuminati mind control, and some of those victims may suspect that their minds have been tampered with. There are always some persons who can be helped, and the point is to help those people who can be.

In a sense the ultimate goal of Fabian Therapy is to heal the world. That is, to create a world where everyone can find happiness in a life of contentment. Many people around the world strive to create such a world, but they are often suppressed. However, someday that suppression will end. As people become more aware of what is going on with the institutions that have been influenced by the Illuminati, I believe that there will be a movement to eliminate psychiatry. Also I believe that there will be a movement to reform medical institutions and psychology. I believe that my experiences with the Fabians helped to give me a vision of what this reformed psychology will look like.

Institutionalized & Medicalized Mind Control

When I was young I knew that highly-organized Satanic secret societies existed among the wealthy. I knew that they hurt children and were criminally violent. I also knew that if I talked about this publicly, nobody would believe me. But what I didn’t understand until I became older was how the oppression of Luciferian mind control is found in the institutions of society. It really is integrated into every major institution.

So you need to understand that mind-control methods aren’t just being used by Satanic cults, they are being used by all the major institutions in society. My personal awakening to this fact came about in this way:

When GMO tomatoes first came out I started to eat them, believing that they were safe. The government approved of them and the news media said they were safe. Shortly after this I started to develop a very serious stomach problem. I didn’t associate it with the GMO tomatoes, I didn’t know what was causing it. But it felt as if I was being poisoned. I experienced intense pain in my stomach, and sometimes the pain was so overwhelming that the only way I could lessen it was to stick my finger in my mouth and vomit. I went to the doctors and they asked what I had been eating. I told them about everything I ate, including the GMO tomatoes, and they eliminated food as the cause of the problem. Then the doctors did expensive test after expensive test. These tests were an extreme financial burden. One of the tests injured me for life and its damage can’t be undone. While I was in the hospital recovering from the botched and unnecessary test, they fed me a meal that had GMO tomatoes in it, and this meal made me extremely ill. I was in overwhelming pain for hours.

The doctors never figured out what was causing the problem. But one doctor who was a respected expert did tell me something interesting. He said that my health problem wasn't psychosomatic; it wasn't "all in my head." He knew this because many other people had the same problem and nobody in the healthcare industry seemed to know what was causing it. After months of intense pain and losing thousands of dollars, I gave up on hospitals and doctors.

I finally went to a group of professional psychics that I had heard about. They did a psychic reading where they consulted a spirit guide. The advice that came back was that I should stop eating GMO foods. They also recommended an organic herbal tea that would soothe my stomach. I took the psychics' advice and immediately got better. The psychics did charge a small amount for the health reading, but it was a tiny fraction of what I had paid to the hospitals and doctors who had not helped me at all. I had always been told that people who claim to have psychic ability are quacks and that we should only trust the advice of doctors, journalists and the government. My going to the psychics had been an act of desperation.

And what I realized from this was that some psychics are legitimate and that the fraudulent institutions of healthcare, mass media and government are not to be trusted.

Although I did know about the existence of organized Satanism when I was young, I did not comprehend how it had taken control of so many organizations in society. But I have done a great deal of research since then. Brainwashed puppets of the Luciferian secret societies hold positions at the top of every major institution. Psychiatric institutions are designed to drive people insane. The Federal Reserve is designed to create widespread poverty and financial deprivation for the masses. News agencies disseminate propaganda. The educational institutions limit intelligence and teach falsehoods. The court system imposes injustice on the people. And the hospitals do sometimes cure people, but they also sometimes make people ill.

Psychiatry seems to be particularly toxic. Psychiatric drugs are very destructive. I don’t deny that psychiatrists do sometimes help people and that certain psychiatric drugs under certain circumstances can be helpful. But the way that psychiatry is being used today has nothing to do with promoting mental health. Psychiatry has become an institution of toxic social control. And although many people do not realize this, Monarch mind control is being routinely administered in hospital settings by psychiatrists.

Even the way that the Fabian therapists dealt with alcoholism was different than Alcoholics Anonymous. Although I know that AA has helped some addicts very much, there are some toxic ideas in it that make its approach ineffective. For one thing the recovering addict is told over and over that he must accept the fact that he is “powerless”. It’s nice that AA encourages one to look for a spiritual Higher Power, but to dwell on powerlessness is not healthy. The fact is that we are amazingly powerful beings who have yet to tap into our latent powers. Another thing about AA is that right at the start of their program, they have you dwell on every mistake you’ve even made in life. All of this is just more brainwashing. It is depatterning and tabula rasa to erase your old personality, then they use *The Big Book of Alcoholics Anonymous* and meetings as psychic driving to create a new personality.

When I was young, I had some very serious issues with drugs. There was a period when I was taking amphetamines and barbiturates as well as drinking alcohol in a way that was very dangerous. This was all a reaction to my childhood abuse. We called the drugs uppers and downers. I knew some other addicts who were experimenting with these same drugs who died.

The way that the Fabian therapists got me out of this destructive habit was to use talk therapy to convince me to quit all drugs and alcohol long enough that they could use EMA therapy with me. Then we focused on happy memories of times when I was not drunk or under the influence of drugs. We did this EMA process repeatedly and intensively. This focus on happy times when I was sober helped me to realize that I could enjoy life without drugs, and that I didn’t need to commit suicide by overdosing on them. I never went back to taking dangerous uppers and downers. The EMA therapy probably saved my life. But you won’t find that type of life-affirming approach used in drug treatment centers or any other therapeutic institution. Instead they use Illuminati mind control techniques to attack the natural personality of the individual.

Speaking Out

If you have been the victim of trauma-based mind control and you have recovered from it, you may or may not want to speak out in public about what is going on. For myself, I finally realized that it was necessary to my spiritual wellbeing that I find my voice and speak out. In recent years, I have been involved with Thought Crime Radio, which was a radio program on KOPN – and it still has a website (ThoughtCrimeRadio. net). I was a co-host on that radio program for a while where I openly talked about the Illuminati and their mind-control methods. As the result of this, some people who are within the Illuminati, who have become disillusioned with the Illuminati, have contacted me in private and have been feeding me more insider information. Apparently Fabian Therapy for deprogramming Illuminati mind control still exists and is still being secretly used. But it is only being used for the benefit of a small number of people who are wealthy and connected with the Illuminati. So knowledge about this type of therapy is still being suppressed from public knowledge. I’ve told you here as much about this therapy approach as I feel safe in doing. If you are interested in healing the victims of Illuminati mind control, I hope you are successful.

Right now the Illuminati still seems to be all-powerful. However, I have reason to believe that someday the Illuminati will fall. Although at the present time, the highest-ranking members of the Illuminati all seem unified in their purpose and actions, it is known to many insiders that this cannot last. Right now the Illuminati are continually increasing their wealth and power by systematically looting the middle class. But eventually they will have to turn against each other. This is more than just a hopeful theory, it is a mathematical certainty that the Illuminati will disassemble at some point. This is why the attitude of some Committee members is changing. Every day more and more people outside the Illuminati are becoming aware of it and the harm it does. An opposition movement to deconstruct the Illuminati is growing and it will eventually succeed. However, for most people in America, things will get worse before they get better. During the chaotic times that come, there may be opportunities to help some of the victims of Illuminati mind control.

Perhaps the ideas presented here will be helpful in doing that. I know that there are other people who are aware of Illuminati mind control and are trying to come up with psychological techniques for helping its victims. Someday a standardized approach for dealing with trauma-based mind control victims needs to be developed because of the widespread epidemic that has been going on in our country and the world.

Fabian Therapy for Helping Abductees

I do know that the Fabian therapists did work with some victims who had been abducted by hostile extraterrestrials and that they were known to have gotten positive results. But my Fabian therapists had only just begun to do this type of work when they were killed. However, there can be no doubt that some abductees suffer greatly from the abuse they've received at the hands of their alien abductors.

The most famous abduction is the case of Betty and Barney Hill. After their abduction experience they were aware of missing time, but they were not aware of what happened. They visited a psychiatrist who put them under hypnosis. They recounted almost identical stories, even though they were hypnotized separately. The psychiatrist had them relive the experience over and over again in therapy. Now this did a great deal to publicize the abduction phenomena, but there is nothing to indicate that it helped Betty and Barney Hill to heal emotionally from the experience. In fact, the approach used by the psychiatrist may have made things worse for the Hills. This is because he was forcing them to relive their trauma, but he was doing nothing to heal their memory system. He simply repeated bypassed their damaged memory system by using hypnosis. This is not the optimum approach. And yet this hypnotherapy approach that has the victims re-experience their abductions is being widely popularized and used around the world.

The Fabian approach to deal with this was to avoid making the client directly re-experience the trauma. They would use EMA as described above to analyze only memories of happy experiences which took place during times of sobriety and health. They would teach the clients various methods to process the negative emotions that would come from having been a victim. These would be things like journaling and the use of art to express the experiences. Eventually the client would restore his or her memory system. So hypnosis would not be used to recall the abduction experiences. But the persons would eventually recall the abduction experiences the same way that they can recall any other experience.

When I recall my childhood abuse, even memories that were once repressed, I recall it the same way that I would an ordinary memory from my childhood. I don’t need to go through some special mental process to recall the abuse because my memory system has been rehabilitated. And I never was subjected to hypnosis to recall repressed memories.

This is how it would be for an abductee who used Fabian Therapy to heal his or her memory system. Hypnosis has the potential to create confabulation in the mind of the client. Confabulation is the commingling of memory and imagination. But Fabian Therapy doesn’t require hypnosis. Fabian Therapy is designed to eliminate confabulation. EMA of happy memories doesn’t re-traumatize the person and is designed to eliminate imagination. The structure of the EMA process discourages imagination by encouraging the direct re-experiencing of the memory. Any traumatic experience such as an alien abduction damages the mind’s memory recall mechanism. If you try to recall an overwhelmingly painful memory with EMA you will become traumatized again, and this will keep you from healing the memory recall mechanism. But if you use EMA to focus on only happy memories, this will heal the natural mechanism of memory recall. The journaling and other techniques reduce the negative charge contained in the traumatizing abduction memories. Eventually the abductee will be able to recall the abduction memories as he or she would recall any other memory.

I have personally come to believe that Satanic Ritual Abuse, MK Ultra and Monarch mind control are all really forms of alien mind control. Hostile extraterrestrials manipulate the members of these Luciferian secret societies. The Satanists, psychiatrists and CIA operatives who victimize human beings with mind control are themselves being manipulated by hostile extraterrestrials. The alien overlords of this planet have created a culture in which some humans are exploiting their fellow human beings. The extraterrestrial abduction experience is the direct abuse of a human being with trauma-based mind control. They deliberately terrorize the abductees and inflict unnecessary pain because this suppresses memory recall. But the hostile extraterrestrials also are the originators of MK Ultra and other forms of mind control administered by humans. So the ultimate source for this entire culture of mind control is extraterrestrial.

When I was on the radio as a co-host of Thought Crime Radio, I did a number of shows on the subject of UFOs. These shows received the strongest response of any of the shows that we did. We usually had so many people calling in and making comments that we didn’t have time to deal with all the people who wanted to respond. Although we had a strong and positive response to such shows, a number of people working at the radio station objected to them. And this played a part in my being driven off the air.

I’ve done quite a bit of research on the UFO phenomena, and there can be no doubt that UFOs exist. Anybody who is honest and does the research knows that they exist. There are simply too many credible eye witnesses who have come forward having observed such craft. Some might argue that these craft don’t come from an extraterrestrial source, but are merely classified, experimental craft built by our government. And some undoubtably are built by the government. But if you do enough research I believe that it becomes clear that some of these craft are not of human design.

And the same thing could be said for the mind-control techniques. It may be human beings who administer Monarch mind control, but it is an alien technology in the same way that UFOs represent an alien technology.

We are being invaded by hostile extraterrestrials. We can’t fight back against them with the Sci-Fi weapons like phaser beams or death rays. We can only fight back against them by freeing our minds and helping others to attain mental liberation.

By Kerth Barker
Angelic Defenders & Demonic Abusers Memoirs of a Satanic Ritual Abuse Survivor
Cannibalism, Blood Drinking & High–Adept Satanism
Mental Liberation
Deprogramming Satanic Ritual Abuse, MK Ultra, Monarch & Illuminati Mind Control
Psychic Development
for Prosperity, Self Defense & Political Influence
See http://angelicdefenders.theshamecampaign.com

Design a site like this with WordPress.com

svalispeaksagain 9:18 pm on January 22, 2025

Tags: Jesuit (18), mind control (91), programming (80), ritual abuse (87), SRA (67), Vatican (12)

Matthew’s Song

Mattheo (Matthew) was the primary father I loved when I was growing up, and during this time I both loved him more than anyone in the world, and hated him for his abuse of me. Complex emotions, indeed, which I dealt with by dissociating them into different parts before healing.

When I was in my late 20’s, Mattheo became the occultic Superior General (SG) of the Jesuit Order – their black pope. On the occultic side, this is different than the individual who is publicly known as the “black pope” since the Jesuits never let it be publicly known who their real generals and black pope are. The occultic SG is the one with the real authority in the Order, though.

After becoming SG, he wrote a poem about the passing of his mentor (the previous SG) and his feelings upon taking up this role and responsibility. I knew about the poem, because he had shared it with me privately at one point. But when he died 17 years ago, his poem was found and the decision to set it to music was made.

Because Mattheo played the cello, and loved it most, the original music was created for cello lead, with violin, drums and harp. It was slow and sad, and beautiful, and the song was played at his funeral in his honor.

The decision was also made to release the song publicly as well, in honor of his passing. The song was given to a band, which created a much more upbeat and snappy tempo. The song was released (about a couple years after) as what was publicly known as “Viva la Vida” (it had a different name originally).

I have decided to share the meaning behind the words in this post, that the Jesuits understood, in the lyrics below.

I used to rule the world – *the Jesuits believe that the SG really does “rule the world” since they influence*

Privacy & Cookies: This site uses cookies. By continuing to use this website, you agree to their use.
To find out more, including how to control cookies, see here: Cookie Policy

Close and accept

control the elements and even weather to some degree

Now in the morning I sleep alone-*Being the SG, and losing his mentor, meant Mattheo felt alone*

sweep the streets I used to own.-*One of Mattheo's favorite stories was of the king who traded places with a street sweeper; it also shows that he could play any role*

I used to roll the dice, feel the fear in my enemies' eyes-*he had killed many in his lifetime, and made the decision who would be killed or not in numerous situations while he was a leader in the order*

Listen as the crowd would sing "Now the old king is dead, long live the king." –*his mentor had just died, and now Mattheo was SG. In the occultic Jesuit Order, the previous SG is normally killed psychically – a theta kill – with the incoming SG leading several of his generals in doing so. I was present when this occurred.*

One minute I held the key, next the walls are closed on me. –*he held the key to victory, as he "won" over his mentor, but feels now trapped by having to be in the very heavy and difficult role.*

And I discovered that my castles stand upon pillars of salt and pillars of sand. –*he is realizing that everything he fought for and worked towards is transient and will one day cease to exist.*

I hear Jerusalem bells a-ringing – *the Jesuit Order refers to the Vatican and Rome as "Jerusalem" sometimes in their private speech and programming; this refers to the bells heard ringing in Rome and the Vatican churches when the previous SG dies.*

Roman Catholic choirs are singing, – *choirs sing within the Vatican to proclaim the death of the previous SG and honor the incoming one.*

Be my mirror, my sword, my shield, –*this is part of the oath that the Order makes to their new SG. This oath is also first made when a Jesuit child becomes a father at the coming of age ceremony at 13. When a Jesuit father becomes a general or a councilor, this oath is also repeated. During the oath-taking ceremony, the oath-giver will receive a small mirror on a necklace from their primary mentor who states that every man needs a mirror (someone to reflect to them regarding their behavior and how they treat others and themselves, who is honest; this 'mirror' is often the primary programmer; Mattheo gave me my mirror when I became a father, then again when I became a general, and promised to be my 'mirror'). The sword represents the oath to give one's sword to defend Rome and the Order; the shield is the willingness to defend the SG with one's life.*

Be my missionaries in a foreign field, –*the entire Order makes this oath when they become a father (at age 13), to the current SG; this vow is renewed to the new SG*

For some reason I can't explain, Once you're gone there was never, never an honest word. –*Mattheo felt that once his mentor had died and he achieved the status of SG, that he would never hear a truly honest word from others; his mentor was the last person to ever be truly honest with him.*

And that was when I ruled the world. –*because now he is SG.*

Listen as the sound of drums, –*played when the old SG passes and the new replaces him.*

people couldn't believe what I'd become.-*I believe in the original poem, the line was "I couldn't believe* *what I had become" – he could not believe that he had killed his beloved mentor.*

Revolutionaries wait for my head on a silver plate, – *knowing that one day, someone from the next generation of Jesuit fathers would do the same to him.*

just a puppet on a lonely string. *–a reference to his own programming and realization of how lonely and trapped he is.*

Ah, who would ever wanna be king? *–this role is difficult, dangerous and entails a lot of responsibility, as well as the loss of a beloved mentor*

I hear Jerusalem bells a-ringing, Roman Catholic choirs are singing,

Be my mirror, my sword, my shield, my missionaries in a foreign field,

For some reason I can't explain, I know Saint Peter won't call my name. *–a reference to his deep internal knowledge that he has done things that are against God; his belief that he cannot be saved especially after just killing his mentor.*

Never an honest word, but that was when I ruled the world.

It was a wicked and wild wind, *–an acknowledgement of the theta spirits that enabled him and two others to 'take out' the previous SG*

that blew down the doors to let me in. *–spiritual forces that took out the old SG and let him into the role of SG*

I loved Mattheo and cried when he died. This poem expresses how difficult taking on this role was for him, and how lonely he felt once he took it up. But it also expresses some of the terrible realities that those in the Order deal with, and the incredible feeling of being trapped that occurs, even in the highest ranks.

My prayer is that many of those trapped will choose to become free.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

The Hierarchy of the Occult
May 3, 2018
In "mind control"

Autobiography: Never Give Up
February 7, 2024
In "healing"

Podcast about Alice in Wonderland programming
August 8, 2024
In "healing"

Veronica Swift 12:07 am on January 23, 2025

Oh my goodness. This song has haunted me since I was forced to play it in church many years ago. I always felt that the lyrics were occultic, but I couldn't make heads or tails of it. I am so appreciative that you shared this!! It satisfies a question I've held for years about what it means, exactly. !!!! So grateful, thank you !!!

★ Liked by 4 people

ladysheepdog 5:34 am on January 23, 2025

Thanks, new to me……what price did the members of Coldplay have to pay for doing that?……..

★ Liked by 2 people

Tammy Harold 6:34 pm on January 25, 2025

Thank you for sharing this, Veronica. Thank you for being willing to dig deep, research, honestly consider, believe and grieve with survivors, and even to hope with us that there IS Truly a True Savior and Salvation in True King Jesus.

★ Like

Flitz 3:13 pm on January 26, 2025

I am completely mind blown. This was a tremendously popular song and still remains critically acclaimed. It went to number 1 in both the US and UK, and was awarded Song of the Year by the Grammy's for Outstanding Song Writing. According to Wikipedia the song was written by the band. It really just goes to show how the Jesuits have such a sway over global culture, the music industry, certainly and the mainstream. It's why the Bible instructs us to not be conformed by the things of this world but constantly renew our minds.

Eye opening as usual Svali, may God continue to bless and protect you . You are a powerful weapon He has used to expose the works of evil in these end times.

I'm trying to purchase your 3rd part autobiography but can't seem to, as amazon doesn't operate in my country, please kindly provide alternative to purchase if any

★ Liked by 1 person

svalispeaksagain 5:36 pm on January 27, 2025

Flitz,
I'm sorry, but I'm not sure how to help you, since Amazon is the platform for

my book. I do know that a Kindle version is available if kindle works in your country.

★ Like

svalispeaksagain 5:33 pm on January 27, 2025

Coldplay did not have to pay anything; the song was given to them, since the decision was made that its worldwide popularity would be in memory of Mattheo.

★ Like

Leave a Reply

Your email address will not be published. Required fields are marked *

Comment *

Name *

Email *

Website

Post Comment

☐ Notify me of new posts via email.

☐ Notify me of new comments via email.

← Never Give Up Part 3: Getting Free

Podcast Interview about Deltas, Immortals →

Man-Made UFOs 1944-1994

50 Years of Suppression

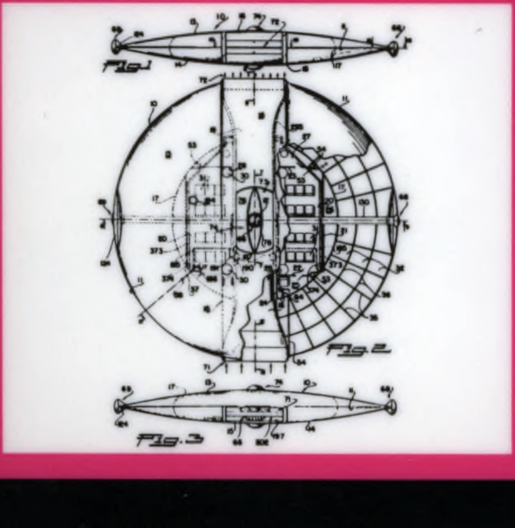


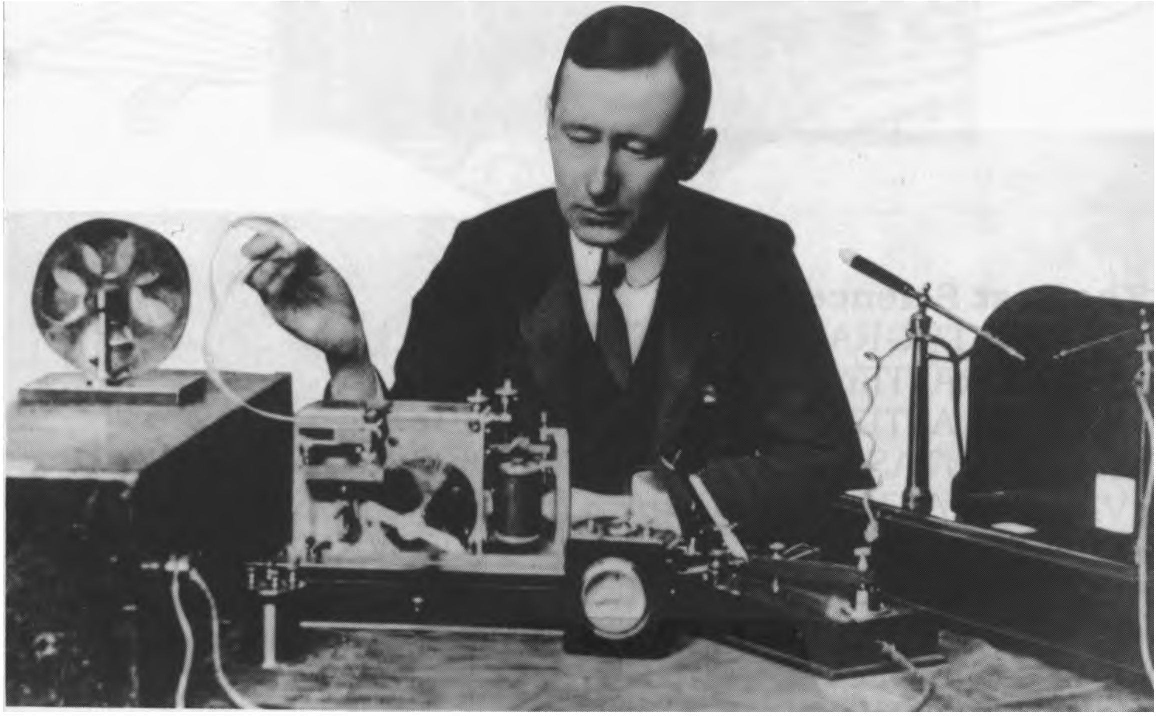
Fig. 1
Fig. 2
Fig. 3

AIR FORCE
17213
RF-82

Renato Vesco &
David Hatcher Childress

Man-Made UFOs 1944-1994

50 Years of Suppression

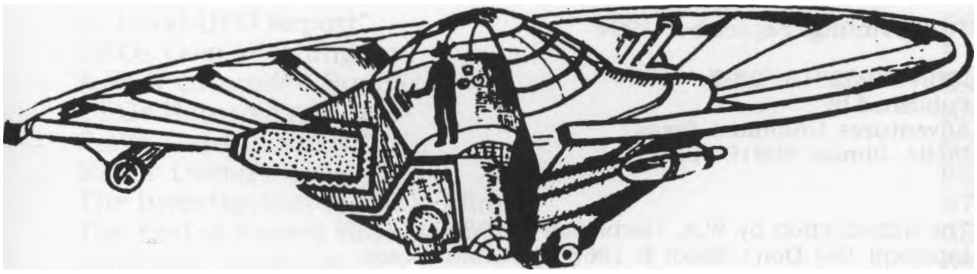


THE
ELECTRICAL
EXPERIMENTER
JUNE
1915
PRICE
10¢

The Lost Science Series:

- THE ANTI-GRAVITY HANDBOOK
- ANTI-GRAVITY & THE WORLD GRID
- ANTI-GRAVITY & THE UNIFIED FIELD
- THE FANTASTIC INVENTIONS OF NIKOLA TESLA
- VIMANA AIRCRAFT OF ANCIENT INDIA & ATLANTIS
- THE MANUAL OF FREE ENERGY DEVICES & SYSTEMS
- TAPPING THE ZERO POINT ENERGY
- THE ENERGY GRID
- THE BRIDGE TO INFINITY
- ETHER TECHNOLOGY

Man-Made UFOs
1944-1994
50 Years of Suppression



Renato Vesco &
David Hatcher Childress

**AUP
Publishers
Network**

This book is dedicated to the scientists and engineers
who continue to forge ahead despite opposition from all sides.

Special thanks to Renato Vesco, W.A. Harbinson, Vladamir, Carl Hart, Harry Osoff,
Dr. Howard Buechner and many more!

MAN-MADE UFOS
FIRST EDITION

Copyright 1994 by Adventures Unlimited Press

Printed in the United States of America

First Printing: September 1994

ISBN 0-932813- 23-2
Published by
Adventures Unlimited Press
Stelle, Illinois 60919 USA

The Introduction by W.A. Harbinson © 1980
Intercept But Don't Shoot © 1968 by Renato Vesco

The Lost Science Series:
- THE ANTI-GRAVITY HANDBOOK
- ANTI-GRAVITY & THE WORLD GRID
- ANTI-GRAVITY & THE UNIFIED FIELD
- THE FANTASTIC INVENTIONS OF NIKOLA TESLA
- VIMANA AIRCRAFT OF ANCIENT INDIA & ATLANTIS
- THE MANUAL OF FREE ENERGY DEVICES & SYSTEMS
- TAPPING THE ZERO POINT ENERGY
- THE ENERGY GRID
- THE BRIDGE TO INFINITY
- ETHER TECHNOLOGY

TABLE OF CONTENTS

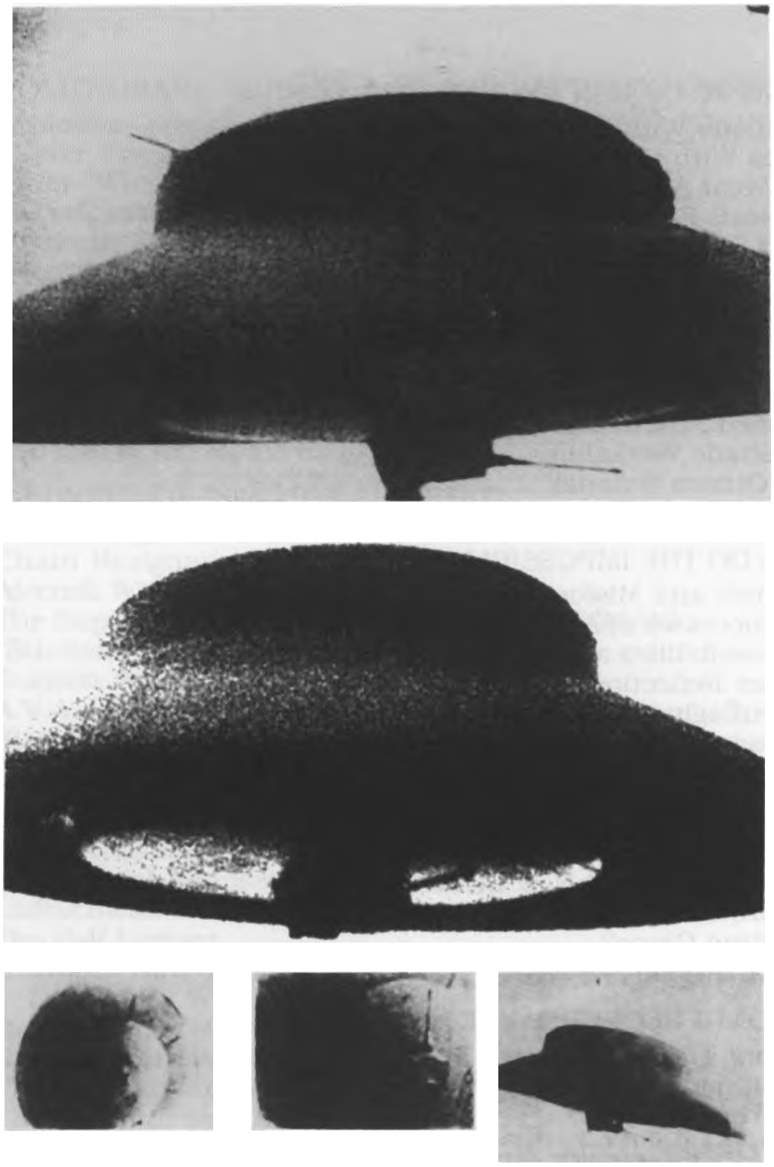
INTRODUCTION: by W. A. Harbinson
PREFACE: by Renato Vesco INTERCEPT BUT DONT SHOOT
1 JUNE 24, 1947: A DAY TO REMEMBER 3
UFOs Swarm Across the Western Hemisphere 6
U.S. Air Force Denials 10
The Yellowstone "Yo-Yo" 13
Appendix to the "Mantell Case" 16
Report No. 102 20
2 A BIT OF SCIENCE FICTION 28
The "Jekams Case" 30
The Supposed "Negative Pole" of Gravity 34
A Series of Hoaxes 36
New Advance Units From Mars? 38
More "Good News" 41
Alleged UFOs in the Past 44
Preliminary Recapitulation 46
3 THE TRUE STORY OF PROJECT BLUE BOOK 54
A "Good UFO Report" 56
UFOs Over Washington 57
A Well-Grounded Suspicion 59
UFOs Return En Masse 60
Policy Gaps In the A.T.I.C. 62
Radar Doesn't Lie 65
The Investigation of the U-Film 67
The End of Project Blue Book 68
Air Force Deception 69
4 MYSTERIOUS NIGHT LIGHTS OVER THE RHINELAND 75
The "Magic Eyes" of Infrared 77
The "Kraut Balls" 79
Reports and Rumors About the Foo Fighters 81
The Anti-radar Feuerball 85
The Jägerstab 87
S.S. Dominance 90
The Industriekontor 93
Operation Alpine Redoubt 95
The Truth About the Alpine Redoubt 98
The Hofer Plan 102
The Military Conference of January 27, 1945 105
Underground Airfields and Factories 106

5 REVOLUTIONARY GERMAN ANTI-AIRCRAFT WEAPONRY 134
Explosive Gases 136
Blower Canons 138
Other "Wind Canons" 140
An Inspiring Disaster 141
Synthetic Firedamp 143
"They'll Drop By the Dozens" 145
Television Guided Bombs 147
Pilotless Fighter Planes 150
German Automatic Fuses 151
The Spitfire and Breechless Cannons 154
The "Ball Lightning" Automatic Fighter 156
The End of the Alpine Redoubt 159

6 THE ADVENT OF "SUCTION AIRCRAFT" 177
Concerning Secret Services and Other Matters 179
Chain Resignations 181
Aircraft With No Tomorrow 182
The Supersonic Rocket-Propelled Vickers E-24/43 185
"Suction" 187
Suction Wings 189
A.V.A. Developments and Projects 192
Static Intake Jets 194
A Combination 196

7 A TIME OF SPECTACULAR POSSIBILITIES 206
The Aerodynamics of Porous Surfaces 208
Semiofficial Admissions 210
Luftschwamm 211
The Relf Lecture 213
"Humped Airfoils" 214
Other Planes With No Tomorrows 216
British Hopes of Revival 219
Records and Silence 221
The Misunderstanding About the Athodyds 222
The Commonwealth Conferences 224
The Origin of the National Aeronautical Establishment 225
The Third Category 227

8 NOTHING TO GIVE IN EXCHANGE 242
Questions Without Answers 245
Planes With Gyroscopic Stabilization 247
The Great Air Technology “Migration” of 1946 248
The Basis For Success 250
AVRO Saucers For the Far North? 252
A Symptomatic Silence 254
UFOs Over England 255
The Secret of the Canadian Story 257
The Quarles Statement 259
The End of the “AVRO-Car” 261
Gratified Ambitions 263
The Shade Workshops 264
The “Ottawa Scandal” 266
Let Whoever Does It Wait For It 267
9 HOW TO DO THE IMPOSSIBLE 283
Fortunes and Misfortunes of Military Secrecy 287
The Successes of Aerial Reconnaissance 290
The Possibilities and Limits of Secret Manufacture 294
Further Reflections On What Constitutes “Proof” 295
Camouflaging Military Secrets 298
“Packaged” Ports and Invisible Airfields 301
10 IN WHICH FOR THE PRESENT WE CONCLUDE... 310
The Tug of War Between the U.S. Air Force and the UFOs 313
The “UFO Summer” 316
Afterthoughts and New Investigations 318
The University of Colorado Investigation 321
A Waiting Game? 324
Project Beacon 326
11 MARCONI’S SECRET SAUCER BASE 361
Marconi The Mysterious 362
The Ciudad Subterranean 363
“My Trip To Mars” 364
12 SUMMARY OF THE CLAIMS & EVIDENCE 365
13 BIBLIOGRAPHY 371



Alleged photos from SS files of a Haunebu II in flight circa 1944. Note the Panzer tank canon mounted underneath the craft. From the German book *Die Dunkle Seite Des Mondes* (*The Dark Side of the Moon*) by Brad Harris (1996, Pandora Books, Germany).

INTRODUCTION
by W.A. Harbinson
author of GENESIS

While *Genesis* is very much a work of fiction, it *has* been based on certain facts which this author feels are worth bringing to light.

In the course of researching a different novel altogether, I obtained, through the Imperial War Museum in London, two short but intriguing articles which immediately captured my interest. The first one was a routine war report by Marshall Yarrow, then the Reuters special correspondent to Supreme H.Q. in liberated Paris. This article had been published, among other places, in the *South Wales Argus* on December 13, 1944, and it stated: "The Germans have produced a 'secret' weapon in keeping with the Christmas season. The new device, which is apparently an air defense weapon, resembles the glass balls which adorn Christmas trees. They have been seen hanging in the air over German territory, sometimes singly, sometimes in clusters. They are colored silver and are apparently transparent." The second article, an Associated Press release extracted from the New York *Herald Tribune* of January 2, 1945, illuminated the subject even more. It said: "Now, it seems, the Nazis have thrown something new into the night skies over Germany. It is the weird, mysterious 'Foo Fighter' balls which race alongside the wings of Beaufighters flying intruder missions over Germany. Pilots have been encountering this eerie weapon for more than a month in their night flights. No one apparently knows what this sky weapon is. The balls of fire appear suddenly and accompany the planes for miles. They seem to be radio-controlled from the ground, so official intelligence reports reveal . . .” Apparently those ‘unknown’ objects made their final appearance in May 1945, when the end of the war was in sight

Intrigued by these reports, I conducted some more research and discovered a highly technical but little-known book called *Intercettateli Senza Sparare* (see “Sources” for details), by Renato Vesco, in which the author claims that the “Foo Fighter” actually existed, that it was originally called the *Feuerball,* and that it was first constructed at the aeronautical establishment at Wiener Neustadt, with the help of the *Flugfunk Forschungsanstalt* of *Oberpfaffenhoffen* (FFO). According to Vesco, the *Feuerball* was a flat, circular flying machine, powered by a special turbojet engine, which was used by the Germans during the closing stages of the war both as an anti-radar device and as a “psychological” weapon against Allied pilots. Says Vesco: “The fiery halo around its perimeter—caused by a very rich fuel mixture—and the chemical additives that interrupted the flow of electricity by over-ionizing the atmosphere in the vicinity of the plane, generally around the wing tips or tail surfaces, subjected the H2S radar on the plane to the action of powerful electrostatic fields and electromagnetic impulses.” Vesco also claims that the basic principles of the *Feuerball* were later applied to a much larger “symmetrical circular aircraft,” the *Kugelblitz* (or Ball Lightning Fighter), which was the first example of the vertical-rising “jet lift” aircraft

Further intrigued, I continued my research in West Germany and came up with a surprising number of newspaper and magazine clippings—all from the 1950s—about one *Flugkapitan* Rudolph Schriever. One clipping stated that this former *Luftwaffe* aeronautical engineer had designed, in the spring of 1941, the prototype for a “flying top,” and that the device was tested in June 1942; another stated that the same *Flugkapitan* Schriever, with “three trusted colleagues," had actually constructed, in August 1943, a "large specimen" of his original "flying disc," but that in the summer of 1944, in the East Hall of the BMW plant near Prague, he had redesigned the original model, replacing its former gas turbine engines with some highly advanced form of jet propulsion; and a third, which reiterated the above information, added the interesting news that original plans for the flying disc had been drawn up by the "German experts," Habermohl and Miethe, and an Italian physicist, Dr. Bellonzo. According to other reports (and, subsequently, to Major Rudolph Lusar's indispensible book, *German Secret Weapons of World War II,* English language edition, published by Neville Spearman, London, 1959, and the Philosophical Library, New York, 1959), Habermohl and Schriever had designed a large ring plate with "adjustable wing-discs," which rotated around a "fixed, cupola-shaped cockpit," while Miethe had developed a "discus-shaped plate in which adjustable jets were inserted." Reportedly the flying saucer had a diameter of 42 meters (137.76 feet), a height from base to canopy of 32 meters (104.96 feet), and had reached an altitude of approximately 40,000 ft, with a horizontal flight speed of 2,000 kilometers per hour (1,250 mph).

So far, so good . . . But what I now came to was a series of small and puzzling contradictions.

Shortly after the war, *Flugkapitan* Schriever was living at Hokerstrauss 28 in Bremerhaven-Lehe from where he announced that the flying disc had indeed been constructed, that it had been ready for testing in April 1945, but that with the advance of the Allies into Germany, the test had been cancelled, the machine entirely destroyed, and his papers either mislaid or stolen. Schriever's story was, however, contradicted by alleged eyewitness Georg Klein, who later stated that he had actually *seen* the test flight of the Schriever disc, or one similar, on February 14, 1945. A certain doubt may be cast on Klein's date since, according to the War Diary of the 8th Air Fleet, February 14, 1945 was a day of low clouds, rain, snow and generally poor visibility—hardly the conditions for the testing of a revolutionary new kind of aircraft. Nevertheless, according to author Renato Vesco, in his thoroughly documented book, *Intercept UFO,* the test flight of a machine called the *Kugelblitz*—which was rumored to be a revolutionary kind of supersonic aircraft—was successfully conducted over the underground complex of Kahla, in Thuringia, *some* time during that February of 1945.

By 1975 *Luftfahrt International* was stating that a certain World War II *Flugkapitan* Rudolph Schriever had died in the late 1950s, and that found among his papers were the. incomplete notes for a large flying saucer (most of them technically out of date), a series of rough sketches of the machine (some of which had obviously been redrawn and updated just before his death), and several newspaper clippings about himself and his supposed flying saucer. Now, while none of the designs would have led to a workable flying saucer, *Luftfahrt International* did include reproductions of the designs of both Schriever and Dr. Miethe and also pointed out that Schriever, right up to his death, had been convinced that the UFO sightings since the end of the war were proof that his original ideas had been taken further with successful results.

Could this be true?

Let us examine the possibilities. According to Schriever, what appears to have been the final version of his flying saucer was constructed at the BMW plant near Prague in the early months of 1944 and was ready for testing in April 1945. According to Georg Klein, a similar flying disc was actually flown near Prague in February 1945, and according to the Italian author Renato Vesco—who seems unaware of the existence of the Schriever legend—an extraordinary new flying machine called the *Kugelblitz* was tested sometime that same month over the complex of Kahla, in the mountain region of Thuringia.

Tying in with this information is the fact that the gas turbine section of BMW was originally located in the suburb of Spandau, near Berlin—where, according to Renato Vesco, a lot of research on the *Kugelblitz* was undertaken—that it was later moved to the underground plant of Wittringen, near Saarbrucken, but that it finally ended up, as from 1944, in seven enormous underground complexes in both Thuringia and Nordhausen in the Harz Mountains.

That whole area, running in a metaphorical arc from the Harz Mountains, down through Thuringia, Bohmen and Mahren, was to form the Germans' last redoubt, and as such was littered with a staggering number of underground military and scientific complexes, including the enormous and invaluable Mittle-Werke factories and the personnel and equipment from the experimental center at Peenemünde. Certainly, while history was to decree otherwise, it was from there that Hitler intended to defend the remnants of the Third Reich with "a whole underground army" and the "secret weapons" he had been promised for so long.

In May 1978, at Stand 111 in a scientific exhibition in the Hannover Messe Hall, some gentlemen were giving away what at first sight appeared to be an orthodox technological tabloid paper called *Brisant.* This paper contained two seemingly unrelated articles: one an article on the scientific future of the Antarctic, the other an article about Germany's World War II flying saucers. The flying saucer article reiterated the information mentioned above, but added that the research centers for *Projekt Saucer* had been located in the areas of Bohmen and Mahren.

Regarding this, it should be pointed out that Prague is in Bohmen, and that Bohmen is more or less surrounded by the metaphorical arc of the Harz Mountains, Thuringia and Mahren—all of which areas contained vast underground research complexes, none of which were more than a few hundred kilometers from Prague.

The article also included a detailed drawing of a typical World War II flying disc, did *not* mention the designer's name, and claimed that the drawing had been altered by the West German government to render it "safe" for publication. Adding weight to his argument, the unknown author then pointed out that during the Second World War all such inventions, whether civilian or military, would have been submitted to the nearest patent office where, under paragraph 30a and 99 of the *Patent-und Strafgesetsbuch,* they would have been automatically stamped “Secret,” taken away from their rightful owners, and passed on to Himmler’s research establishments . . . and, according to the article, at the end of the war some of those patents disappeared into secret Russian files, others into equally secret British and American files, and the remainder disappeared with various “missing” German scientists and S.S. men. (Since neither the British, the Americans nor the Russians are ever likely to reveal what, precisely, was discovered in the secret factories of Nazi Germany, it is worth noting that in 1945 Sir Roy Feddon, as leader of a technical mission to Germany for the Ministry for Aircraft Production, reported: “I have seen enough of their designs and production plans to realize that if they had managed to prolong the war some months longer, we would have been confronted with a set of entirely new and deadly developments in air warfare.” And by 1956 Captain Edward J. Ruppelt, then head of the U.S. Air Force’s Project Blue Book, was able to write: “When World War II ended, the Germans had several radical types of aircraft and guided missiles under development. The majority of these were in the most preliminary stages, but they were the only known craft that could even approach the performances of the objects reported by UFO observers.”)

The same article went on to point out that in 1938, Hitler, anxious for a foothold in the Antarctic, sent an expedition commanded by Captain Alfred Richter to the coast due south of South Africa. Daily for three weeks two seaplanes were catapulted from the deck of the German aircraft carrier, *Schwabenland,* with orders to fly back and forth across the territory which Norwegian explorers had named Queen Maud Land. The Germans made a far more thorough study of the area than the Norwegians had done, finding vast regions which were surprisingly free of ice. Their planes covered 230,000 square miles in all, photographing almost half of the area. They also dropped several thousand metal poles, each marked with the swastika and pointed at the heavy tip so that they would dig into the ice and remain upright. This job done, they renamed the whole area *Neuschwabenland* and claimed it as part of the Third Reich.

According to *Brisant,* German ships and U-boats continued to prowl the South Atlantic Ocean, particularly between South Africa and the Antarctic, throughout the whole of the Second World War. Then, in March 1945, just before the end of the war, two German provision U-boats, U-530 and U-977, were launched from a port on the Baltic Sea. Reportedly they took with them members of the flying saucer research teams, the last of the most vital flying saucer components, the notes and drawings for the saucer, and the designs for gigantic underground complexes and living accommodations based on the remarkable underground factories of Nordhausen in the Harz Mountains. The two U-boats duly reached *Neuschwabenland,* more correctly known as Queen Maud Land, where they unloaded. Finally, two months *after* the war, the same U-boats surfaced mysteriously off the coast of Argentina where the crews were handed over to the American authorities, who interrogated them at length and then flew them all back to the United States.

About a year after this, the United States launched the biggest operation ever known regarding the Antarctic. While the stated purpose of the operation was to "circumnavigate the 16,000-mile Antarctic coastline and map it thoroughly," *Brisant* felt it odd that Operation Highjump, under the command of Antarctic veteran Admiral Richard Evelyn Byrd, included thirteen ships, two seaplane tenders, an aircraft carrier, six two-engine R4D transports, six Martin PBM flying boats, six helicopters and a staggering total of 4,000 men. It was also considered odd that when this virtual assault force reached the Antarctic coast, they not only docked, on January 27, 1947, near the German-claimed territory of *Neuschwabenland,* but then divided up into three separate task forces.

That expedition became something of a mystery. Subsequent official reports stated that it had been an enormous success, revealing more about the Antarctic than had ever been known before. However, other, mainly foreign reports suggested that such in fact had not been the case: that many of Byrd's men were lost during the first day, that at least four of his airplanes inexplicably disappeared, and that while the expedition had gone provisioned for six to eight months, the men actually returned to America in February 1947, after only a few weeks. According to *Bristant,* Admiral Byrd later told a reporter (I could find no verification on this) that it was "necessary for the USA to take defensive actions against enemy air fighters which come from the polar regions" and that in the case of a new war the USA would be "attacked by fighters that are able to fly from one pole to the other with incredible speed." Also, according to *Brisant,* shortly after his return from the Antarctic, Admiral Byrd was ordered to undergo a secret cross-examination—and the United States withdrew from the Antarctic for almost a decade.

What was being suggested, then, is that throughout the course of the Second World War the Germans were sending ships and planes to the Antarctic with equipment for massive underground complexes, that at the end of the war the flying saucer project's team of scientists were taken from Germany by submarines U-530 and U-977, that the Americans interrogated the crews of those submarines when they docked in what they had thought was a friendly Argentina, that the Americans then, upon hearing of the Antarctic base, organized a military task force disguised as an exploratory expedition, that that expedition was subsequently put to disarray when it came up against the extraordinary German saucers, and that the United States then pulled out of the Antarctic temporarily, in order to build their own saucers based on the designs found in Germany after the war.

The second article was also of modest interest. It was in point of fact a rather crude propaganda statement masquerading as a scientific review of Antarctic potential. Dusting off the already well-known topographical facts, what one was left with was an insistence that the Democratic Republic of Germany should claim back their rights to that part of the Antarctic which the Nazis stole from the Norwegians and arrogantly renamed *Neuschwabenland.*

Taking note of the National Socialist leanings of the article, bearing in mind the fact that *Brisant* was a one-shot publication whose origins were untraceable, and reminding myself that the whole theory had suspicious parallels with the more farfetched “Holes in the Poles” UFO myths, I nevertheless checked up on other aspects of the article and discovered that the Germans had, in fact, been patrolling the Antarctic regions of the South Atlantic Ocean throughout the war. Indeed, two years after the Richter expedition, a couple of large Norwegian whaling ships were seized by boarding parties from the German raider *Pinguin* as they rested at anchor in their own territorial waters just off Queen Maud Land. Within hours of that incident, a Norwegian supply ship and most of the nearby whaling convoy had been lured into the German trap—and the war in the Antarctic was underway. In May 1941, HMS *Cornwall* located and sank the *Pinguin*, but not before *Pinguin* had captured a whole string of Allied merchant ships totaling more than 135,000 tons. What is also historical fact is that *Pinguin*’s sister ships, appropriately named *Komet* and *Atlantis*, continued to prowl the Antarctic shores until the end of the war.

Regarding the two submarines, I also came across some startling information. U-977, under the command of Captain Heinz Schaeffer, did in fact leave Kiel Harbor in the Baltic Sea in April 1945, stopped in at Christiansund South on April 26th, left Christiansund South the following day, and was not seen again until it surfaced at Mar del Plata, Argentina, on August 17, 1945—a period of nearly four months.

Where was the submarine all that time? According to Captain Heinz Schaeffer, they had left with the intention of patrolling the South Atlantic, had docked for fuel at Christiansund South the following day, and had then, several days later, heard over their radio the news that the war was over. Convinced that he would not be treated too kindly by the Allied Command, Schaeffer gave his crew the option of being put off along the coast of Norway or traveling on with him to what he thought was a friendly Argentina. Since some of the crew preferred to return to Germany, the next few days were spent in hugging the Norwegian coastline until, on May 10, they dropped some of their men off on the mountain coast not far from Bergen. This done, according to Schaeffer, he and the remaining crew embarked upon what surely must have been one of the most remarkable feats of the war: a total of sixty-six days under water—through the North Sea and the English Channel, past Gibraltar and along the coast of Africa, and finally surfacing, all of sixty-six days later, in the middle of the South Atlantic Ocean. During the next month they alternated between floating on the surface and diving back to the depths, once even surfacing off the Cape Verde Islands and going ashore on Branca Island, another time going so far as to "disguise" the submarine when it was on the surface by rigging up false sails and funnel to make it look like a cargo steamer, Finally, when close to Rio de Janeiro, they heard over their radio that another fleeing German submarine, U-530, had put into the River Plate and that its crew had been handed over to the United States as prisoners of war. Disturbed by this, they nevertheless put into Mar del Plata on August 17, 1945—nearly four months after they had put out from Kiel Harbor.

This rather fantastic story was recounted by Captain Schaeffer to the Argentine authorities when they interrogated him on three specific issues: (1) Where had U-977 been when the Brazilian steamer *Babia* had been sunk? (2) How come U-977 had arrived in Argentina so long after the war had finished? and (3) Had U-977 carried anyone "of political importance" during its voyage to the Argentine? Schaeffer denied that he had been anywhere in the area of the *Babia* when it was sunk, explained his late arrival in Argentina with the fantastic story I have just recounted, and stated that no one of "political importance" had ever been aboard U-977.

Now what is really intriguing about all this is that a few weeks later an Anglo-American commission, composed of high-ranking officers especially flown to the Argentine to investigate "the mysterious case" of U-977, spent a great deal of time interrogating Schaeffer regarding the possibility that he might actually have taken Hitler and Martin Bormann aboard his U-boat, first to Patagonia and then to a secret Nazi base in the Antarctic. Indeed, they were so insistent on this that they subsequently flew Schaeffer and his crew—*and* Otto Wehrmut, commander of U-530—back to a prisoner of war camp near Washington where for months they continued their interrogations. While I could find no record of the fate of Commander Wehrmut, what I did authenticate is that Schaeffer repeatedly denied having shipped anyone anywhere . . . Nevertheless, he was handed over to the British in Antwerp and *again* interrogated for many months.

Assuming that Schaeffer was telling the truth and that the Allies found nothing unusual in Schaeffer's U-boat, it seems rather strange that the Americans would later send the submarine back to the United States where, under direct orders from the U.S. War Department, it was blown to pieces with torpedoes. As for Schaeffer, he was eventually returned to Germany, did not feel comfortable as one of the conquered, and then went back to join some fellow Germans in the Argentine.

The possibility remains that Schaeffer might have been lying. For a start, it is decidedly odd that two insignificant German U-boats should have stirred such monumental interest among the Allies. It is also worth considering why the Allies would even have *imagined* that Hitler and Martin Bormann—or anyone else for that matter—would have fled to such an unlikely place as the Antarctic. Finally, it is worth noting that Schaeffer had spent much of his career protecting the research centers at Regen and Peenemünde, that he was highly experienced at patrolling the South Atlantic and the polar regions, and that he was one of a select group of Naval officers who were sent to the Harz Mountains to study the highly advanced XXI submarines. Schaeffer was, in other words, a man familiar with the "secret" underground establishments of the Harz Mountains, and a man familiar with the Antarctic sea routes.

Now let us review the situation. It is not confirmed, but it is very possible that the German *Feuerball* existed, that it accounted for the first modern UFO sightings during the Second World War, and that an extraordinary flying machine, the *Kugelblitz,* was successfully test-flown in Germany a few weeks before the war ended. The *Feuerball,* therefore, could have been the forerunner of the small, seemingly remote-controlled UFOs observed frequently throughout the final months of the war, while the *Kugelblitz* could have been the first of the larger, pilot-controlled flying saucers.

The unsigned flying saucer designs reproduced in *Brisant* (and in a great many more orthodox journals) mentioned materials not in existence, as far as we know, during the war years. This suggests that they could have been reproductions of the original plans which *Flugkapitan* Rudolph Schriever updated just before his death in the late 1950s. Assuming, then, that Schriever's "mislaid" or "stolen" notes and designs were actually in the hands of the S.S., it is possible that they were secretly developed in one of the many underground completes in the area of the aborted last redoubt—either the Nordhausen complex in the Harz Mountains or at Kahla in nearby Thuringia—that the completed saucer was test-flown in the early months of 1945, and that it was then destroyed in the face of the Allied advance.

We know from reproductions of the drawings of Schriever, Bellonzo and Miethe that a flying saucer project, no matter how primitive at the time, was definitely on the list of German military priorities. Regarding the fact that the only evidence of such machines is the evidence mentioned above, it should be borne in mind that the most fanatical of the Nazi S.S. were controlling the research centers in the areas mentioned, that as they retreated they attempted to destroy as much as possible of their most important scientific papers and inventions, and that thousands of slave workers and their S.S. overlords—who could have revealed a great deal more—disappeared in the chaos of the liberation and were not seen again.

Could some of them have gone to the Antarctic?

Contrary to the accepted view, it is actually quite possible that the Nazis continually shipped and flew vital men, material and documents to the Antarctic throughout the war years.

Regarding the possibility of the submarines of that time being able to complete such a lengthy journey, it is to be noted that the normal U-boat could cover 7,000 miles on each operational cruise, that the Germans had submarine tankers spread across the South Atlantic Ocean at least as far as south of South Africa, and that any one of those tankers, which had a displacement of 2,000 tons, could have supplied ten U-boats with fuel and stores, thus tripling the time that those U-boats could stay at sea.

Regarding the possibility of the Germans building self-sufficient underground research factories in the Antarctic, it has only to be pointed out that the underground research centers of Nazi Germany were gigantic feats of construction, containing wind tunnels, machine shops, assembly plants, launching pads, supply dumps and accommodation for all who worked there, including adjoining camps for the slaves—and yet very few people knew that they existed.

Given all this, it is in my estimation quite possible that men and materials were shipped to the Antarctic throughout the war, that throughout those same years the Germans were engaged in building enormous underground complexes in *Neuschwabenland* similar to those scattered around the last redoubt, and that the American, Russian and British "cover-up" regarding saucer sightings could be due to the reasons given in this novel.

Skeptics would argue that the major histories of the Third Reich either ignore or pass off as "ridiculous" any stories about German "secret" weapons, but such an argument can be countered by reminding the reader that most of the secret weapon projects *were* highly secret, usually controlled by the dreaded S.S., and were therefore beyond the reach of later historians. While Albert Speer, as Minister of Armaments and War Production, was openly skeptical about the "secret weapons" in his otherwise eloquent book *Inside the Third Reich* (Weidenfeld & Nicholson, London, 1970), he *does* admit that there was increasing speculation about such weapons during the closing months of the war—and that while he himself had stated at the time that there were not enough basic materials for the production of such, he had, in his own words, "underestimated . . . the large stocks of material that had been accumulated in the factories." Speer was equally skeptical when Robert Ley, the Minister for Labor excitedly told him, in April 1945, that his German scientists had invented a "death ray" (possibly a laser weapon); this is interesting when one considers the fact that Heinz Schaeffer, captain of the submarine U-977, stated in his book *U-boat 977* (William Kimber, London, 1952) that in April 1945 an S.S. associate had offered *him* a demonstration of a so-called "death ray." It is unfortunate that Schaeffer, in a hurry to return to Kiel for his famous last voyage, had no time to remain in Berlin and check out the validity of his friend's claim.

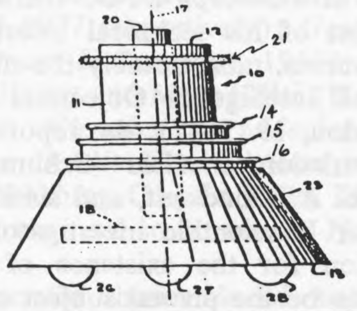
For the purposes of fiction I have utilized the real-life personages, S.S. generals Hans Kammler and Artur Nebe. Readers might therefore be interested to know that while Nebe was placed on the Nazi "death list" after the attempted assassination of Hitler, his death was never actually confirmed and many felt that he had simply fled for his life. As for General Hans Kammler, his history with the S.S. and the V-l and V-2 rockets is well documented, but what became of him after he disappeared from Germany in April 1945 remains a mystery to this day. Regarding the members of the German flying saucer team, Schriever and Bellonzo are now dead, Habermohl was reported to have been captured by the Russians (thus the American military's fear of *Russian* saucers shortly after the war), and—perhaps most interesting—Miethe, who stated to the press that he had worked on *Projekt Saucer,* went to work for the Americans and Canadians. Finally, for the record, the prototype for the AVRO flying saucer, which was handed over to the U.S. and loudly proclaimed to have been a failure, is now in the U.S. Air Force Museum in Fort Eustis, Virginia.

While *Genesis* is a work of fiction, the fiction is based on various facts—and those facts could do with further examination. A list of sources is given overleaf.

Sources

J. F. King, Jr.
Patent #3,322,374 5-30-67

MAGNETOHYDRODYNAMIC
PROPULSION DEVICE



Information about *Flugkapitan* Rudolph Schriever and his fellow officers on *Projekt Saucer* came mainly from the following articles: “Untertassen—Flieger Kombination,” *Der Spiegel,* March 30, 1950. “Fliegende Untertasse in Deutschland erfunden,” *Sonderbericht der Deutsche Illustrierte,* S.1350, 1951. “Fliegende Untertassen—eine Deutsche Erfindung,” *Criticus,* No. 26, June 27, 1952. “Die Deutsche Fliegende Untertasse,” *Das Ufer—die Farb-Illustrierte,* No. 18, September 1, 1952. “Flugscheibe flog 1945 in Prag,” interview with Georg Klein, *Welt am Sonntag,* April 25, 1953. “Wunderwaffen 45,” *Bild am Sonntag,* February 17, 1957. “Die UFOs—eine deutsche Erfindung,” *Das neue Zeitalter,* October 5, 1957. “Flugkreisel, irdisch,” *Geun & Welt,* No. 14, April 2, 1959. “Deutsche UFOs schon 1947/48 einwandfrei beobachtet,” *Das neue Zeitalter*, February 6, 1965. “Projekt Flugkreisel,” *Bremerhavener Zeit* (undated photocopy); and “Deutsche Flugkreisel,” *Luftfahrt International,* No. 9, May-June, 1975. Major Rudolph Lusar’s book, *German Secret Weapons of World War II* (see “Author’s Note”), which was an invaluable reference work regarding both completed and uncompleted secret German projects, also contains a detailed section on *Projekt Saucer.*

The other major source of information about Germany’s World War II aeronautical innovations, and also about the postwar history of British, American and Canadian uti-

lization of those innovations, was Renato Vesco's *Intercettateli Senza Sparare,* first published in 1968 by E. Mursia & Co., Milan, Italy, later English-language edition published in 1971 by Grove Press under the misleading title of *Intercept—But Don't Shoot,* and then reissued in 1974 by Zebra Publications Inc., New York, under the even more misleading title of *Intercept UFO.* Unfortunately, while Vesco bases most of his technical information on very strong official sources, most notably the numerous reports of the Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee (H.M.S.O., London, 1945–47), the reports of the American Alsos Commission in *Alsos* (Schuman, New York, 1947) by Samuel A. Goudsmit, and similar reports from other World War II scientific investigators, he offers no real substantiation for the existence of the *Kugelblitz* which is meant to be the pivotal subject of his argument However, Vesco's book remains indispensable on two counts: (1) It is the most detailed history yet published of the lesser known, but revolutionary German aeronautical innovations; and (2) while the author makes no mention of Schriever or his saucer project, he *does* state that a machine called the *Kugelblitz*—or the "Ball Lightning Automatic Fighter"—was first test-flown in early 1945 over the great underground complex at Kahla, in Thuringia, and suggests that both the *Kugelblitz* and the remaining *Feuerballs* were then destroyed by the retreating
S.S.—details which have remarkable parallels with the Schriever story.

Apart from the books mentioned above, the following books were of real value: *Hitler's Last Weapons: The Underground War Against the V1 and V2* by Josef Garlinski (Julian Friedmann, 1978); *V2* by Walter Dornberger (Hurst and Blackett, 1954); *The Birth of the Missile: The Secrets of Peenemünde* by E. Klee and O. Merk (Harrap, 1965); *German Secret Weapons of the Second World War* by R. Luser (Spearman, 1959); *History of the German Guided Missile Development* by T. Benecke and A. W. Quick (Brunswick: Verlag E. Applehans, 1957); *German Guided Missiles* by R. F. Pocock (Ian Allen, London, 1966); *Raketon-Flugtechnik* by E. Sänger (Edwards, Ann

Arbor, Michigan, reprint of 1933 edition published by Oldenbourg of München); *Soviet Rocketry* by Michael Stoiko (David & Charles, 1971); *The Papers of Robert H. Goddard,* edited by E. C. Goddard (McGraw-Hill, New York, 1970); *The Rise and Fall of the Third Reich* by William L. Shirer (Secker & Warburg, 1960); *Adolf Hitler* by John Toland (Doubleday Company/Ballantine, New York, 1976 and 1977 respectively); *Gestapo* by Edward Crankshaw (Putnam & Company, 1960); *Children of the S.S.* by Clarissa Henry and Marc Hillel (Hutchinson & Co., London, 1976); *Himmler als Ideologue* (Göttingen, 1970); and *The Occult Establishment* by James Webb (Open Court Publishing Co., La Salle, Illinois), the only reliable book I have read so far on the Nazis and the Occult.

There are literally thousands of so-called "factual" books on UFOs, many of which are well worth avoiding. Since this author has obviously not read all of them, he must acknowledge his debt to the following: *The UFO Experience; A Scientific Inquiry* (Corgi) and *The Hynek UFO Report* (Sphere), both by Dr. J. Allen Hynek; *The Report on Unidentified Flying Objects* (Doubleday & Co., New York, 1956) by Edward J. Ruppelt; *The UFO Controversy in America* (The New American Library, 1976) by David Michael Jacobs; *Project Blue Book* (Ballantine) edited by Brad Steiger; *The Interrupted Journey* (Berkley Medallian Publishing) by John G. Fuller; *The Crack in the Universe* (Neville Spearman, London) by Jean-Claude Bourret; *UFOs From Behind the Iron Curtain* (Souvenir Press, London) by Ion Hobana and Julien Weverbergh; *UFOs: A Scientific Debate* (W. W. Norton & Co., New York), edited by Carl Sagan and Thornton Page; *Worlds Beyond* (And/Or Press, Berkeley, California), edited by the New Dimensions Foundation; and *Ufology* (Celestial Arts, California), a fascinating analysis of the possible physical properties of the UFOs by James M. McCampbell.

The famous monthly magazine *Flying Saucer Review* is mandatory reading for anyone interested in the subject, but should be perused with a very selective eye.

I am indebted to NASA's *Exploring Space With A Camera* and to their reproductions and analysis of the much abused ESSA 7 satellite photographs. I am also heavily indebted to Eliot Porter's *Antarctica* (Hutchinson, London, 1979), in which both text and photographs are magnificent.

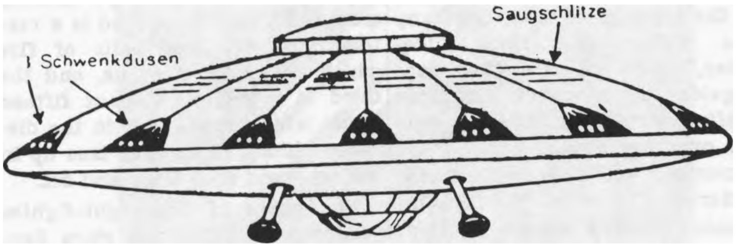
Should some of my readers think that the physiological and psychological horrors presented in certain chapters of *Genesis* are solely the products of the author's feverish imagination, I must recommend the following factual books: *As Man Becomes Machine* (Sphere) by David Rorvik; *Man Modified* (Paladin) by David Fishlock; *Manipulation* (Fontana) by Erwin Lausch; *The People Shapers* (Futura) by Vance Packard; *Supernature* (Coronet) by Lyall Watson; *The Immortalist* (Panther and Abacus) by Alan Harrington; *Inside the Black Room: Studies of Sensory Deprivation* (Pelican) by Jack Vernon; *Hypnotism: Fact and Fiction* (Pelican) by F. L. Marcus; *PSI; Psychic Discoveries Behind the Iron Curtain* (Abacus) by Sheila Ostrander and Lunn Schroeder; *Future Science* (Anchor Books, Doubleday, New York), edited by John White and Stanley Krippner; *Future Facts* (Heinemann) by Stephen Rosen, and *Mysteries* (Hodder & Stoughton) by Colin Wilson.

My thanks to the following libraries and universities for their kind assistance in gathering further research material: Cornell University, New York; the Massachusetts Institute of Technology; the University of London; the British Museum Library, London; the Imperial War Museum, London, the Landesbibliothek, Wurttembergische; the Universitatischebibliothek, Freiburg Im Breisgau; the Landesbibliothek, Stuttgart; and the Staatsund Universitatsbibliothek, Hamburg.

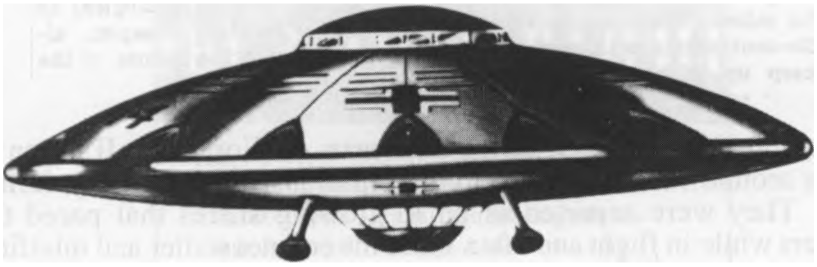
Personal thanks to Stephanie Trudeau (New York); Willi Mayer, Reinhold Stoll, and Rudiger and Hannelore Vogt of West Germany; Marc Williams of *Lookout* magazine, Spain; Martin Atcherley for his kind assistance regarding Paraguay and Argentina; James Webb, for his very authoritative response to my inquiries about the S.S. and the Occult; Richard and Iris Grollner, my literary agents; Nick Austin, for his generosity with certain books; and finally, Alan Barney, for so enthusiastically backing this whole project.

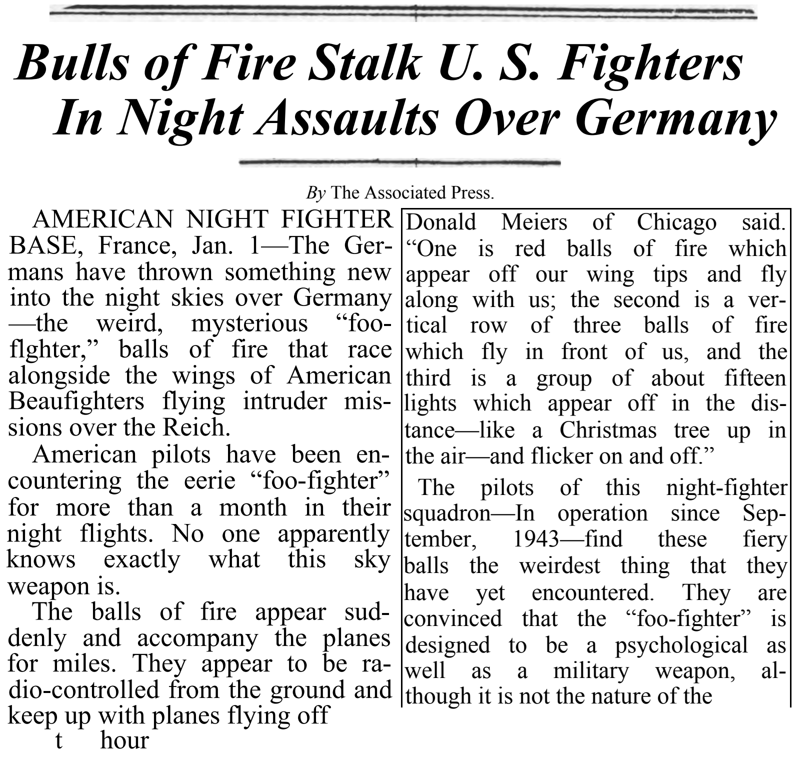
W. A. Harbinson,
London, 1980.

Model III



Ballenzo — Schriever — Miethe — Diskus
Start — und Landebeine unten aufblasbare
Gummipuffer, ein-und ausfahrbar





Bulls of Fire Stalk U. S. Fighters In Night Assaults Over Germany

By The Associated Press.

AMERICAN NIGHT FIGHTER BASE, France, Jan. 1—The Germans have thrown something new into the night skies over Germany—the weird, mysterious "foo-flghter," balls of fire that race alongside the wings of American Beaufighters flying intruder missions over the Reich.

American pilots have been encountering the eerie "foo-fighter" for more than a month in their night flights. No one apparently knows exactly what this sky weapon is.

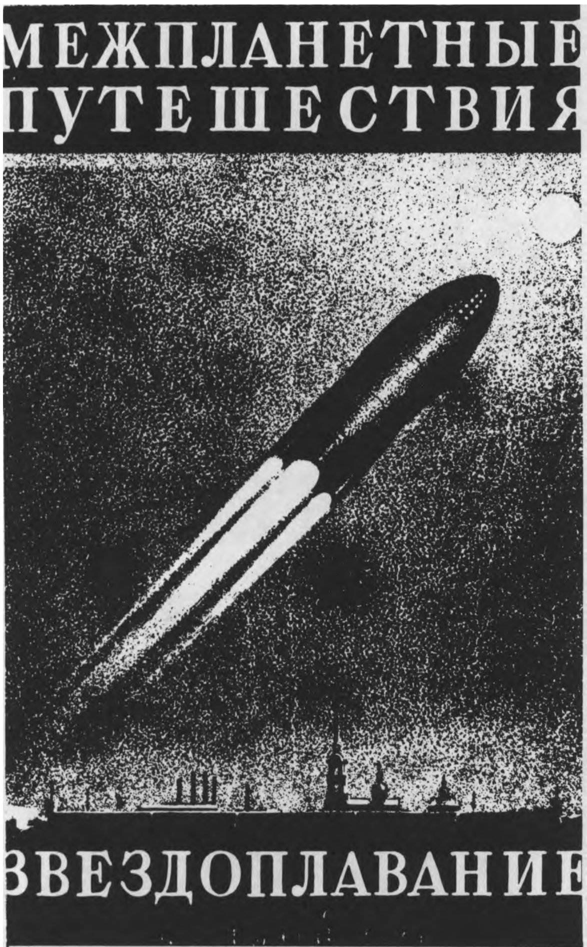
The balls of fire appear suddenly and accompany the planes for miles. They appear to be radio-controlled from the ground and keep up with planes flying off
t hour

Donald Meiers of Chicago said. "One is red balls of fire which appear off our wing tips and fly along with us; the second is a vertical row of three balls of fire which fly in front of us, and the third is a group of about fifteen lights which appear off in the distance—like a Christmas tree up in the air—and flicker on and off."

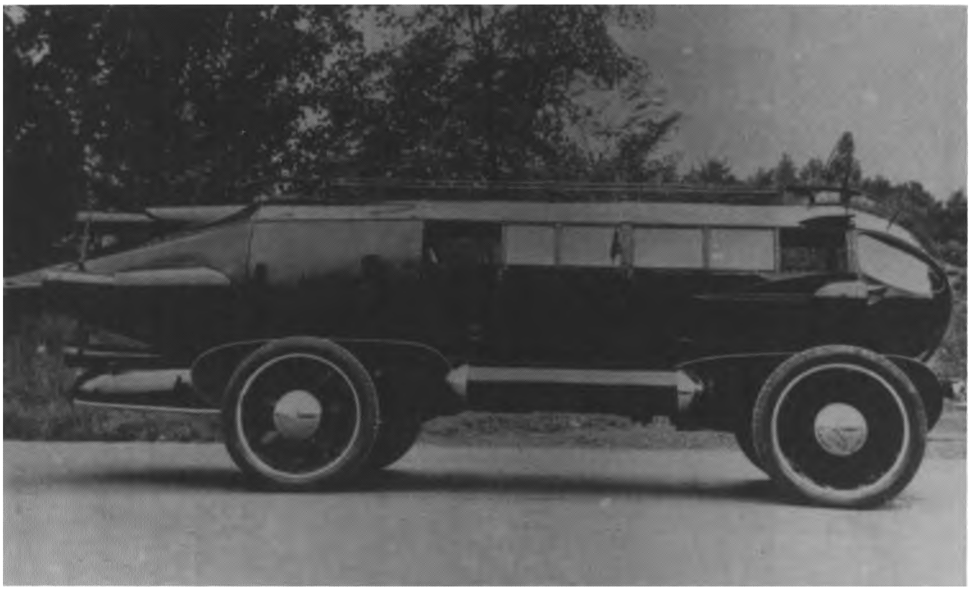
The pilots of this night-fighter squadron—In operation since September, 1943—find these fiery balls the weirdest thing that they have yet encountered. They are convinced that the "foo-fighter" is designed to be a psychological as well as a military weapon, although it is not the nature of the

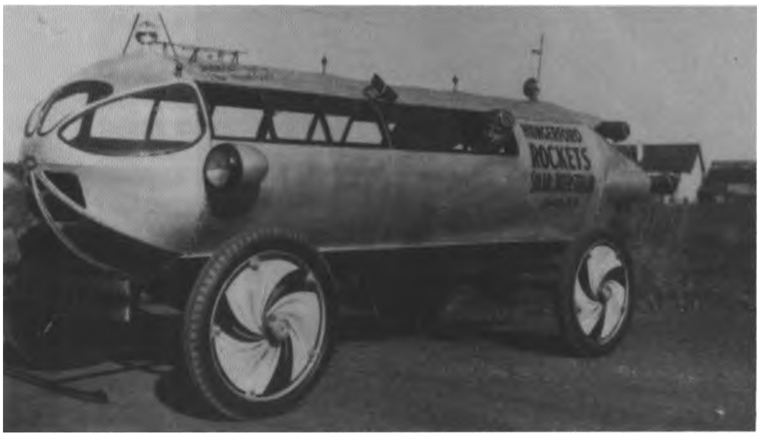
The famous "foo-fighters" of the later years of World War II began to appear around Allied bombers flying missions over Germany during 1944. They were reported as small glowing spheres that paced the bombers while in flight and often made the engines stutter and missfire. Americans nicknamed them after a pun feu, the French word for fire, which appeared in the comic strip Smokey Stover in the popular expression of the time, "Where there's foo, there's fire." At the time it was widely believed that these balls were widely believed to be a German secret weapon: the Feuerball.

1929

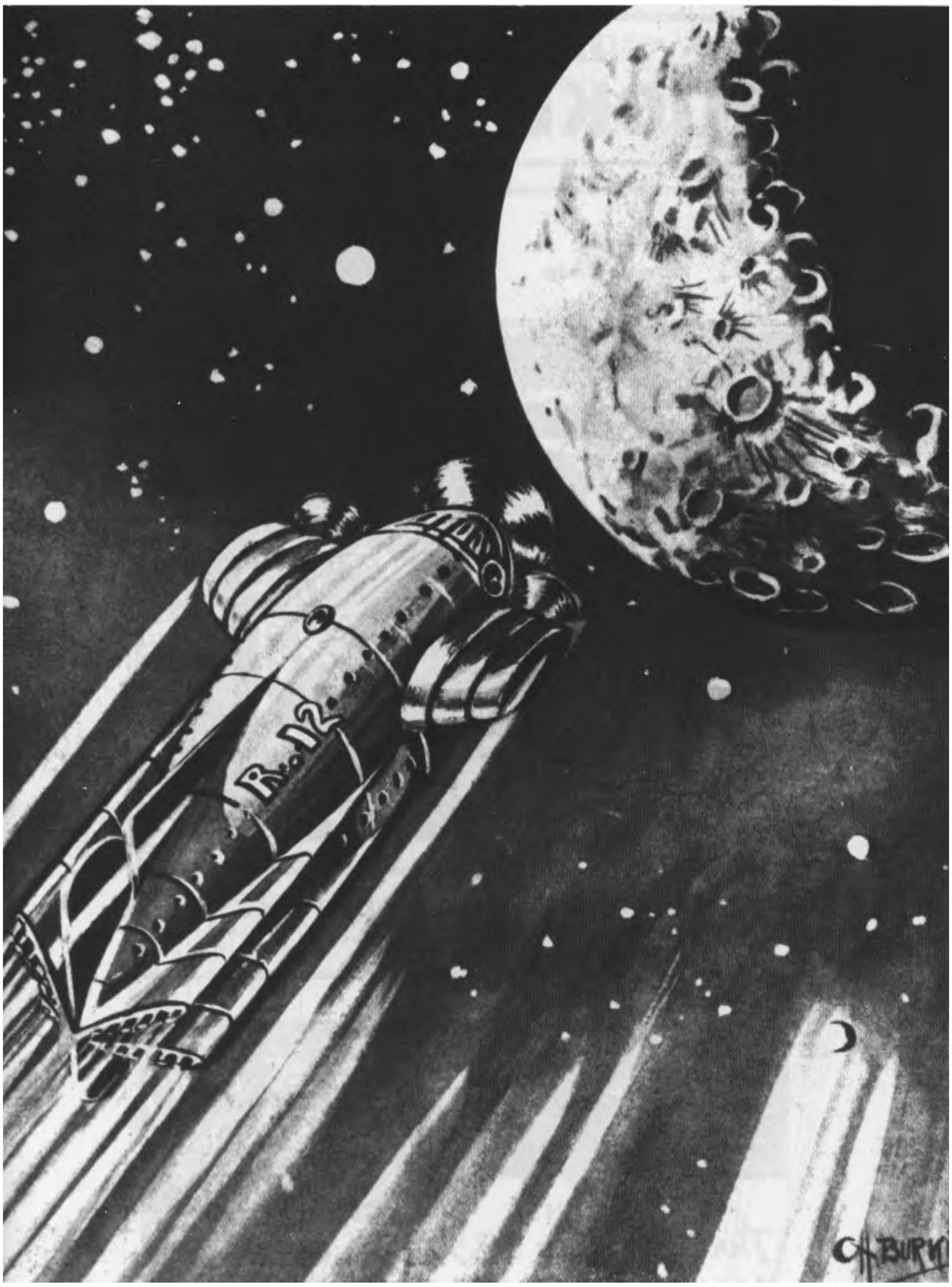

МЕЖПЛАНЕТНЫЕ
ПУТЕШЕСТВИЯ
ЗВЕЗДОПЛАВАНИЕ

Jakov I. Perelman publishes *Interplanetary Travels* (in Russian), a bestseller that sells 150,000 copies—more than all English-language books on the subject combined, prior to World War II. The book is an expansion of a report originally prepared in 1913.

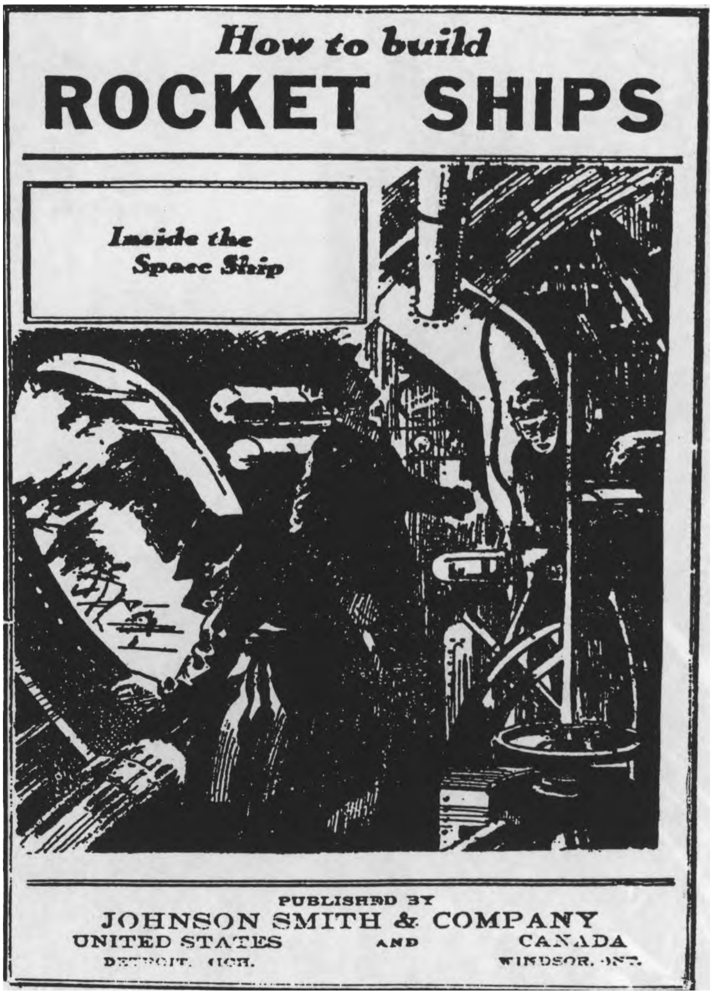



HUNGERFORD
ROCKETS

Rocket-powered cars built in 1929 by Daniel and Floyd Hungerford of Elmira, N.Y. They are propelled by gasoline/oxygen motors.



Spaceship published in Dutch magazine, April 1, 1931

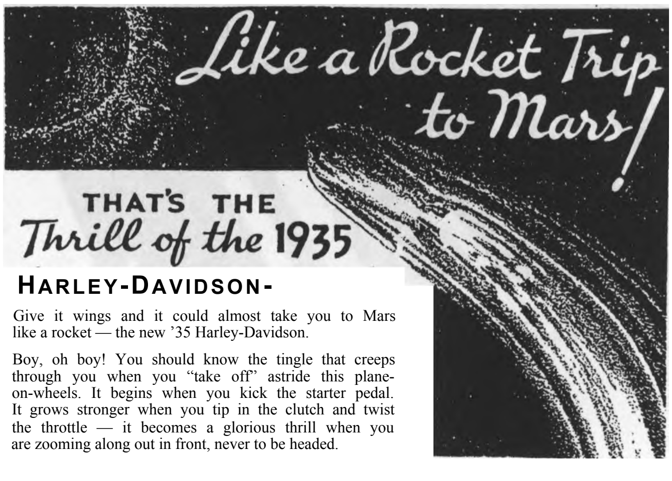


How to build

ROCKET SHIPS

Inside the Space Ship

PUBLISHED BY
JOHNSON SMITH & COMPANY
UNITED STATES AND CANADA
DETROIT, MICH. WINDSOR, ONT.

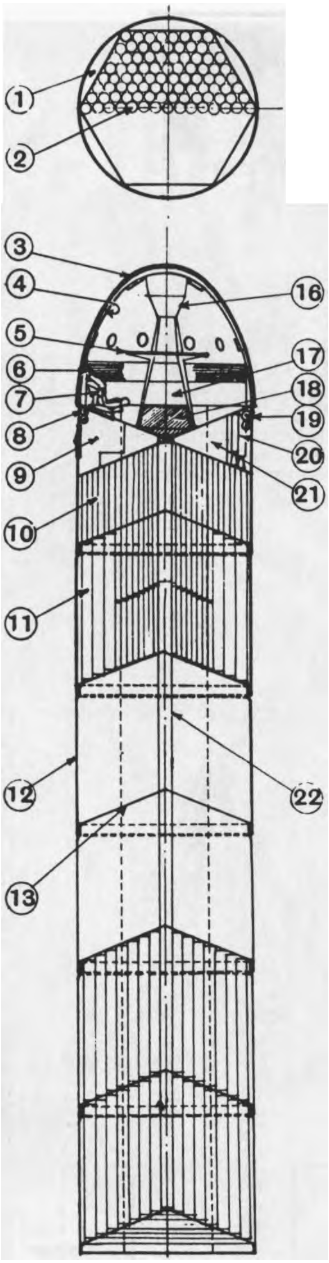


HARLEY-DAVIDSON-

Give it wings and it could almost take you to Mars like a rocket — the new '35 Harley-Davidson.

Boy, oh boy! You should know the tingle that creeps through you when you "take off" astride this plane-on-wheels. It begins when you kick the starter pedal. It grows stronger when you tip in the clutch and twist the throttle — it becomes a glorious thrill when you are zooming along out in front, never to be headed.

British Interplanetary Society
Lunar Space Vessel
Schematic Detail
(Final, 1939 version)


①
②
③
④
⑤
⑥
⑦
⑧
⑨
⑩
⑪
⑫
⑬
⑯
⑰
⑱
⑲
⑳
㉑
㉒

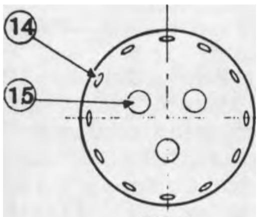


FIG.1

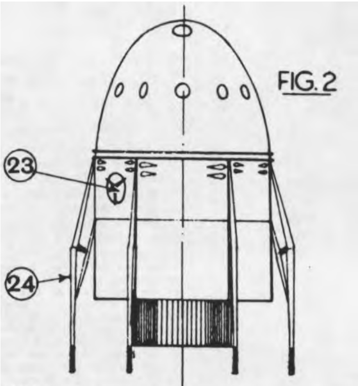


FIG. 2

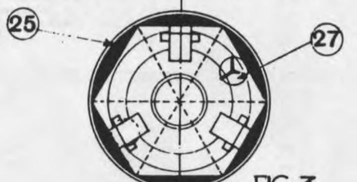


FIG. 3

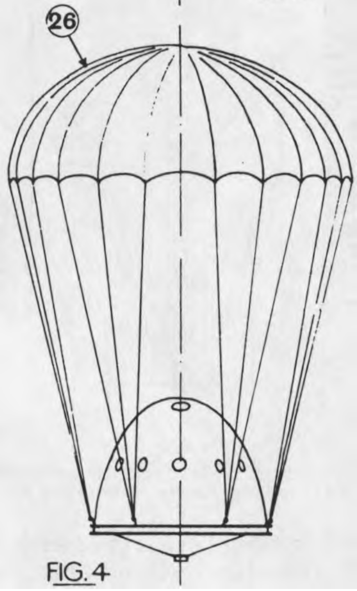


FIG. 4

TESLA, AT 78, BARES NEW ‘DEATH-BEAM’

Invention Powerful Enough to Destroy 10,000 Planet 250 Miles Away. He Asserts.

DEFENSIVE WEAPON ONLY

Scientist, in Interview, Tells of Apparatus That He Says Will Kill Without Trace.

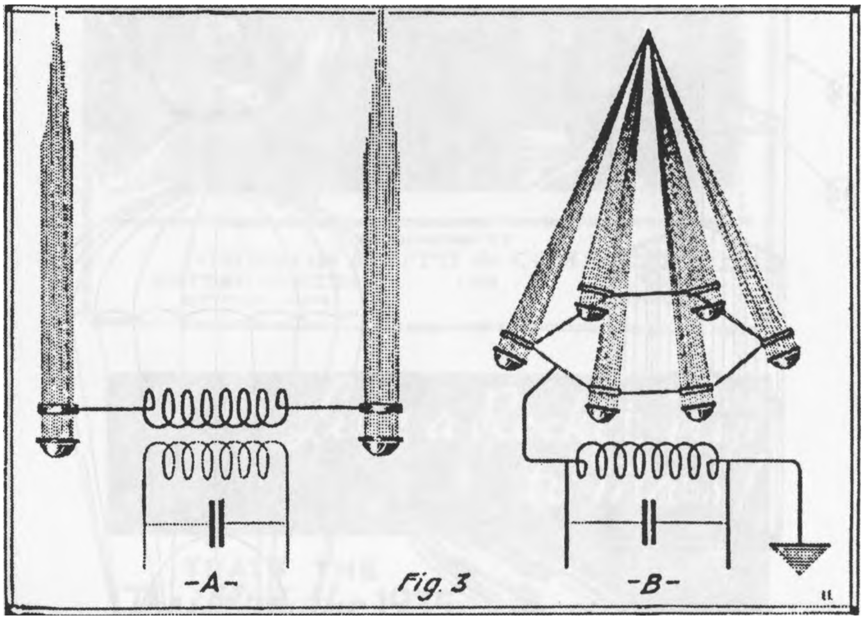
Nikola Tesla, father of modern methods of generation and distribution of electrical energy, who was 78 years old yesterday, announced a new invention, or inventions, which he said, he considered the most important of the 700 made by him so far.

He has perfected a method and apparatus, Dr. Tesla said yesterday in an interview at the Hotel New Yorker, which will send concentrated beams of particles through, the free air, of such tremendous energy that they will bring down a fleet of 10,000 enemy airplanes at a distance of 250 miles from a defending nation’s border and will cause armies of millions to drop dead in their tracks.

Times Wide World Photo.

NOTED INVENTOR 78.

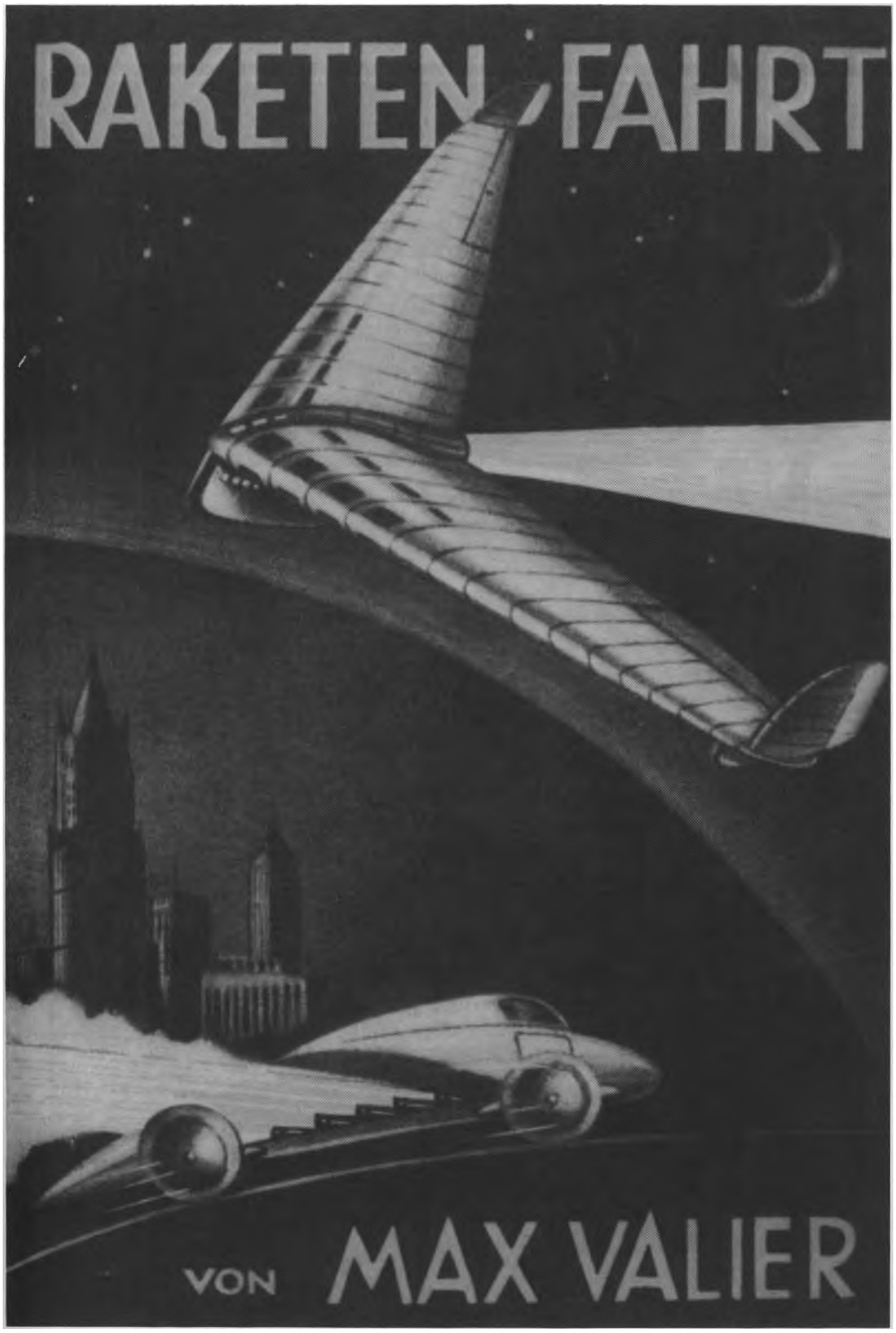
Nikola Tesla.



Two Optional Forms of Wireless Antennae Formed of Searchlight Beams—Ionized Atmospheric Streams.

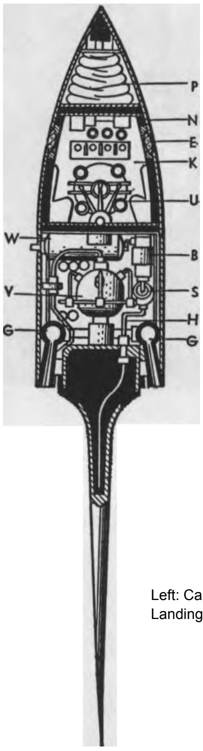
Above: The *New York Times* article on Tesla’s Death Ray of July 11, 1934. Below: Two illustrations from an article in the March, 1920 issue of Electrical Experimenter entitled Wireless Transmission of Power Now Possible. The Illustrations show his prototype devices for “directed ionized beam transmissions,” a “death-ray—searchlight” device. Curiously, powerful searchlight-beams have frequently been reported as part of unidentified discoid and cigar-shaped craft since the late 1800s.

RAKETENFAHRT

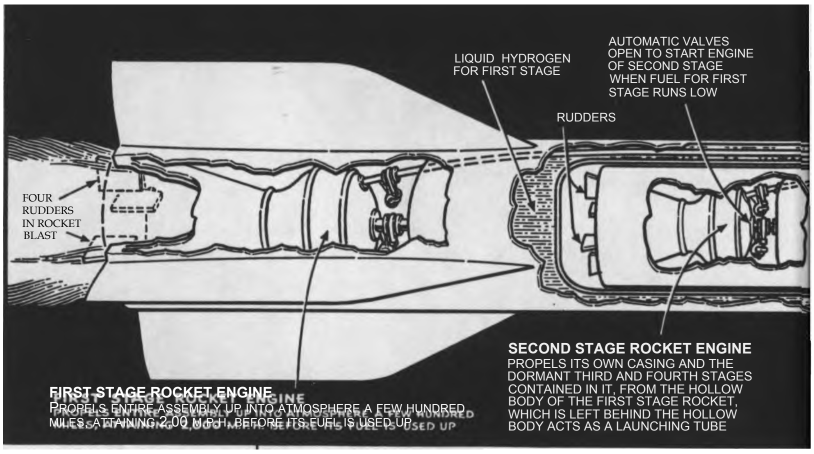


VON MAX VALIER

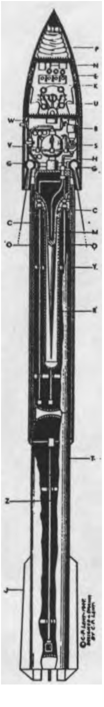
1940s

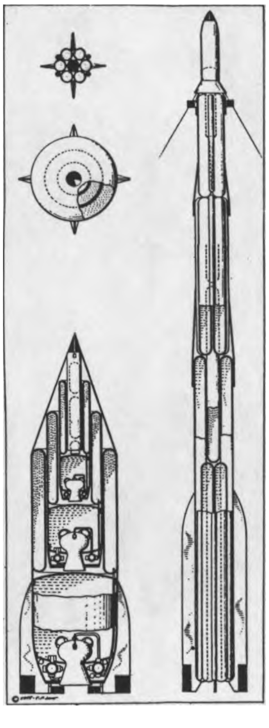

P
N
E
K
U
W
B
V
S
G
H
G

Left: Cabin of Lent manned mail rocket.
Landing is made tail-first on “landing pick.”


LIQUID HYDROGEN
FOR FIRST STAGE
AUTOMATIC VALVES
OPEN TO START ENGINE
OF SECOND STAGE
WHEN FUEL FOR FIRST
STAGE RUNS LOW
RUDDERS
FOUR
RUDDERS
IN ROCKET
BLAST
SECOND STAGE ROCKET ENGINE
PROPELS ITS OWN CASING AND THE
DORMANT THIRD AND FOURTH STAGES
CONTAINED IN IT, FROM THE HOLLOW
BODY OF THE FIRST STAGE ROCKET,
WHICH IS LEFT BEHIND THE HOLLOW
BODY ACTS AS A LAUNCHING TUBE
FIRST STAGE ROCKET ENGINE
PROPELS ENTIRE ASSEMBLY UP INTO ATMOSPHERE A FEW HUNDRED
MILES, ATTAINING 2,00 M.P.H. BEFORE ITS FUEL IS USED UP

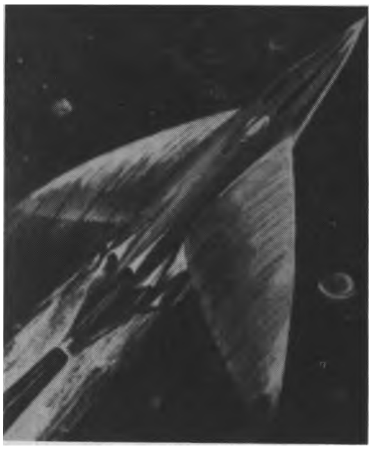
Popular Science, March 1947.


P
N
E
K
U
W
B
V
S
G
H
G
C
C
O
D
E
Y
K
X
Z
J

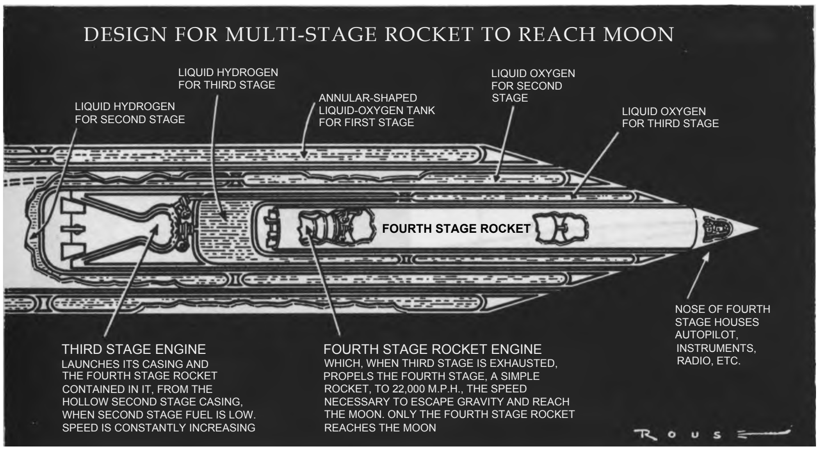


Spaceship proposals by Constantin van Lent, including a lander equipped with his landing pick device (left and right).

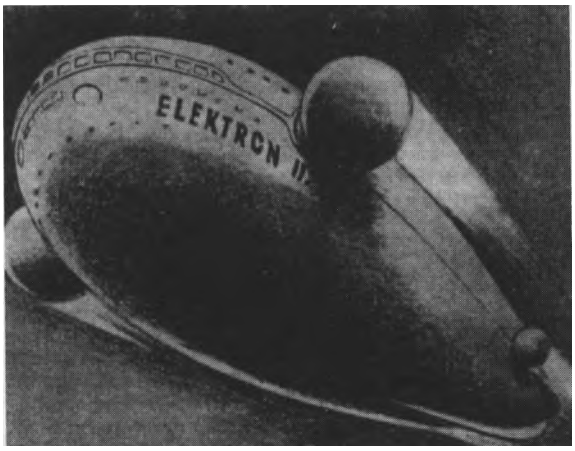
Ananoff’s nuclear spaceship.

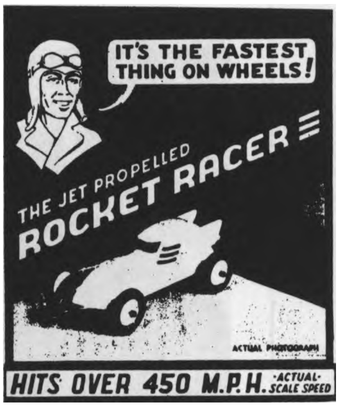


1940s

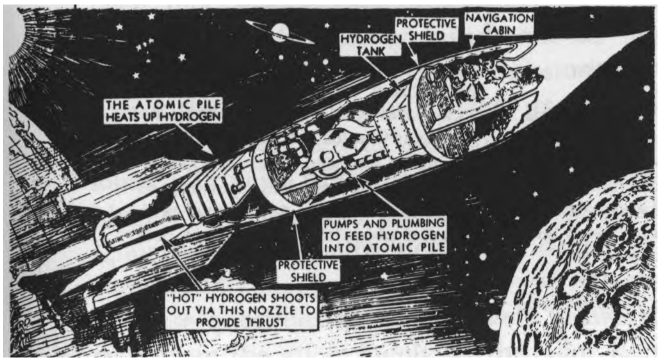

DESIGN FOR MULTI-STAGE ROCKET TO REACH MOON
LIQUID HYDROGEN FOR SECOND STAGE
LIQUID HYDROGEN FOR THIRD STAGE
ANNULAR-SHAPED LIQUID-OXYGEN TANK FOR FIRST STAGE
LIQUID OXYGEN FOR SECOND STAGE
LIQUID OXYGEN FOR THIRD STAGE
FOURTH STAGE ROCKET
NOSE OF FOURTH STAGE HOUSES AUTOPILOT, INSTRUMENTS, RADIO, ETC.
THIRD STAGE ENGINE
LAUNCHES ITS CASING AND THE FOURTH STAGE ROCKET CONTAINED IN IT, FROM THE HOLLOW SECOND STAGE CASING, WHEN SECOND STAGE FUEL IS LOW. SPEED IS CONSTANTLY INCREASING
FOURTH STAGE ROCKET ENGINE
WHICH, WHEN THIRD STAGE IS EXHAUSTED, PROPELS THE FOURTH STAGE, A SIMPLE ROCKET, TO 22,000 M.P.H., THE SPEED NECESSARY TO ESCAPE GRAVITY AND REACH THE MOON. ONLY THE FOURTH STAGE ROCKET REACHES THE MOON
ROUSE

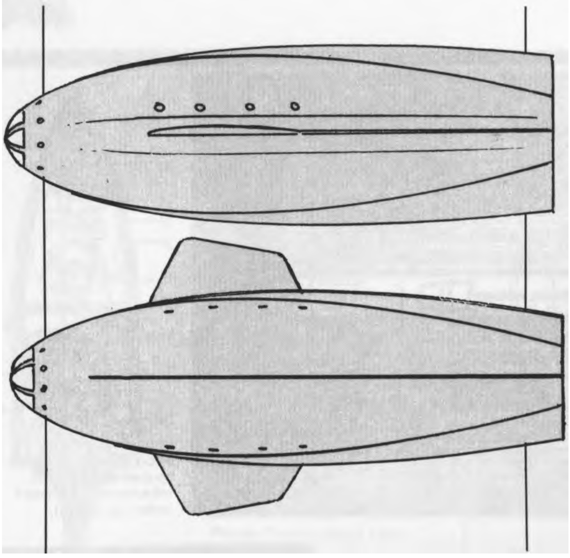
Ananoff's nuclear-electric spaceship (below left), advertisement for model rocket car (below).

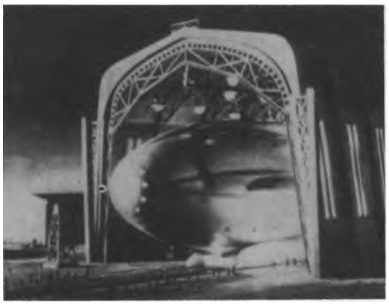

ELEKTRON II

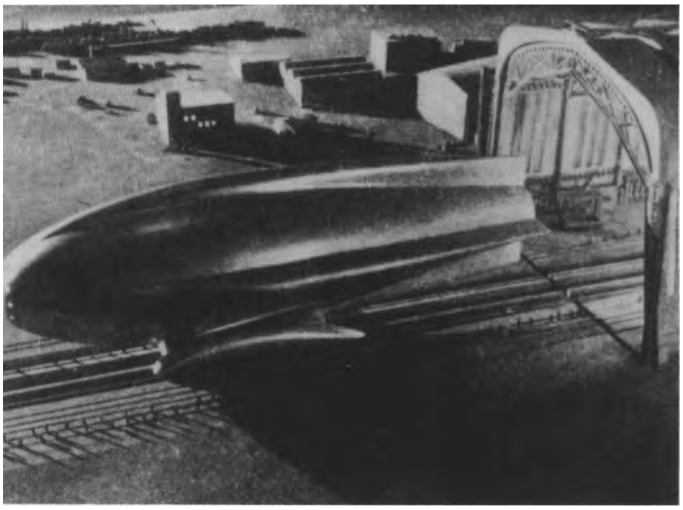

IT'S THE FASTEST THING ON WHEELS!
THE JET PROPELLED
ROCKET RACER
ACTUAL PHOTOGRAPH
HITS OVER 450 M.P.H. ACTUAL SCALE SPEED

SCIENCE FICTION LEAGUE


PROTECTIVE SHIELD
NAVIGATION CABIN
HYDROGEN TANK
THE ATOMIC PILE HEATS UP HYDROGEN
PUMPS AND PLUMBING TO FEED HYDROGEN INTO ATOMIC PILE
PROTECTIVE SHIELD
"HOT" HYDROGEN SHOOTS OUT VIA THIS NOZZLE TO PROVIDE THRUST







Rocket Flight to the Moon, a film also known as *Spaceship Number 1 Starts* (*Weltraumshiff I Startet*), is made in Bavaria by the Bavaria Film-Künst. Since the Germans cancel most of their science fiction films once the war begins, this film is only a short remnant, edited from scenes already filmed. It eventually forms a portion of the German-made documentary *History of Rocket Development.* At the end of the film, *Spaceship 1* is shown leaving its hangar and taking off for a flight around the moon. The bullet-shaped, stubby-winged *art-moderne* rocket takes off along a horizontal track, leaving its wheeled undercarriage behind. The model spaceship constructed for the film was half a meter long. *Spaceship #1 Starts* was directed by Anton Kutter, with technical advice from engineer Fritz Beck.

PREFACE

"Intercept—but don't shoot!" Ever since the United States Air Force top brass issued this order in 1948, American pilots have been mockingly defied by the UFOs (Unidentified Flying Objects) that frequently invade the air space of the United States as though on peaceful missions of exploration. Why hasn't the Air Force authorized its pilots to shoot the mysterious invaders down? Fear of extraterrestrial reprisal? Diplomatic protests from the "unknown" power that possesses the biggest secret of our times? Technological awe dictated by ignorance? Or, finally, deliberate deceit dictated by circumstances?

These questions are conclusively answered in this book. We start from the affair involving the pilot Kenneth Arnold when

—at the western end of the U.S.-Canadian border—on June 24, 1947, he happened to see a squadron of circular-shaped airships in the distance. They appeared to come straight out of the pages of the headiest science fiction.

It was his flight report, in fact, that started the long series of sightings that is still going on. According to one's convictions, these sightings are the greatest mystery of the twentieth century, a gigantic hoax, or the prelude to the second redemption of humanity through the efforts of our "Brothers from Space"—which is how the pilots of the presumptive extraterrestrial space ships are referred to, especially in the United States. In effect, two decades of well-kept secret and an incredibly extensive pseudoscientific literature—unceasingly fed by over four hundred private investigatory groups working throughout the world—have ended by implanting in the public mind the idea that the UFOs either simply do not exist or are the artifacts of the people of another planet that are observing us—artifacts that are capable of flying through space at speeds approaching that of light—if, indeed, not faster—of neutralizing the effects of gravity and the forces of inertia, of disappearing at will, and so on.

The less these investigators know about aeronautics and the less experience they have had of the convulsive events of the last two years of World War II, the more strongly they hold their opinions.

It is high time that the UFOs—or Flying Saucers, a name that fairly accurately describes these machines' characteristic aerodynamic structure, which resembles that of an inverted plate—take their place somewhere between current events and history. And it is high time, too, that ufology, the absurd branch of "science" that nourishes the myth of extraterrestrial flying saucers manned by demiangelic pilots, be unmasked.

On the other hand, if we except those investigations carried out by military commissions (whose forced and deliberately windy public statements almost certainly say the opposite of what they have actually discovered), today, thanks to the mystical obfuscations of ufologists, the only statements worth taking seriously are cautious and ambivalent ones. One such is, for example, the declaration that Rear Admiral Delmar Fahrney, former commander of the Naval Guided Missile Section and honorary president of the National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena, gave to the press. Fahrney declared in 1957 that according to "reliable information," it had now been proved that our atmosphere is periodically invaded by mechanical objects traveling at very high speeds, beyond anything that American or Soviet aircraft can at present attain. Reports of highly qualified observers state that the objects in question often travel in formation and execute maneuvers that seem to indicate that they are not under the complete control of some automatic system. Their actions, he said, force us to the conclusion that many of them are piloted. The objects appear to be unarguably the result of long research and exceptional technical know-how. Generally, working by exclusion, we cannot deny *a priori* that they have an extraterrestrial origin. This does not mean, however, that we must postulate one! Just as we cannot exclude *a priori* the possibility that some nation may have taken such a giant step with its own air technology as to move considerably ahead of technology of other countries. But this, he added, was highly improbable. That is a great deal to say—and also very little—after a good sixteen years of "reports," studies, investigations, and discussions.

Having said this, we are forced to one conclusion: just as the separate colored chips of some vast mosaic represent no more than shapeless fragments of various colored minerals, so the information brought together in the present volume—some of which appears in print for the first time—takes on meaning and value only if arranged according to a rigorously preestablished scheme that leads to one predetermined conclusion and only to that. Transposing or interpreting the material differently would mean distorting it or denying a whole complex of universal truths.

We will, then, eschew the inconclusive ravings of ufologists and come down to verifiable facts. For the moment we will confine ourselves to revealing *how* the idea of building airships of such unusual structure was born and to giving precise particulars about *who* is building them and to establishing the place *where* they take off on their flights, flights that concern the entire world.

—R.V.

TOP SECRET
EYES ONLY

THE WHITE HOUSE
WASHINGTON

September 24, 1947.

MEMORANDUM FOR THE SECRETARY OF DEFENSE

Dear Secretary Forrestal:

As per our recent conversation on this matter, you are hereby authorized to proceed with all due speed and caution upon your undertaking. Hereafter this matter shall be referred to only as Operation Majestic Twelve.

It continues to be my feeling that any future considerations relative to the ultimate disposition of this matter should rest solely with the Office of the President following appropriate discussions with yourself, Dr. Bush and the Director of Central Intelligence.

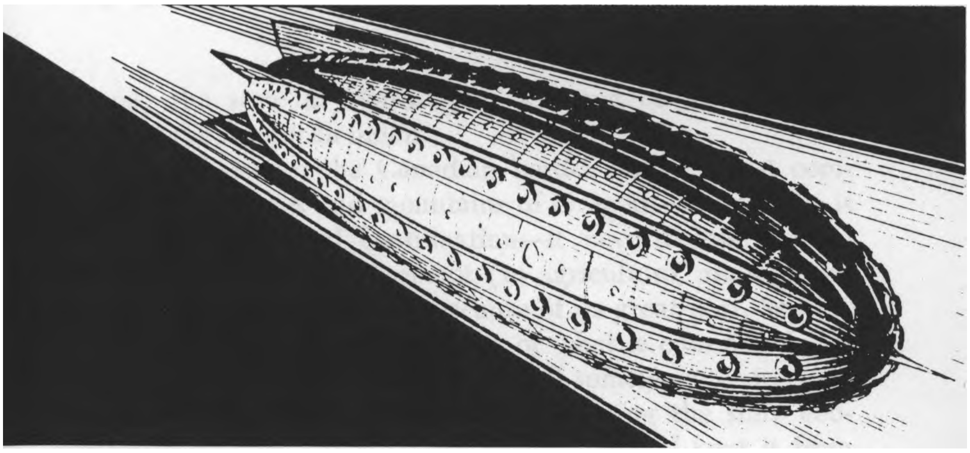
Harry Truman

TOP SECRET
EYES ONLY

A White House document to Secretary of State James Forrestal on the creation of Majestic Twelve or MJ-12 dated September 24, 1947 and signed by President Harry Truman. Forrestal died mysteriously on August 1, 1950 and was replaced on the Mj-12 committee by General Walter B. Smith. From the German book *Die Dunkle Seite Des Mondes* (*The Dark Side of the Moon*) by Brad Harris (1996, Pandora Books, Germany).

Man-Made UFOs 1944-1994

50 Years of Suppression



C. Schneeman, 1933

CHAPTER 1

June 24, 1947: "A Day to Remember"

In 1947 the state of Washington was one of the youngest "stars" in the American union.

Wedged between the Canadian border and the vast complex of the plateaus and mountains of Oregon—of which it is the natural geological continuation—it nevertheless boasted first-class economic development (in agriculture, mining, and aircraft construction) mainly because of its great port, Seattle.

The happy geographical position of what is considered one of the greatest Pacific ports and the self-sufficiency of its local industries had greatly contributed to isolating the state economically vis-à-vis neighboring Canada and had kept it from more active relations with British Columbia, equally mountainous but much less populated and gravitating in turn to the port of Vancouver. Its isolation was, then, purely the result of geographical circumstances, but it later made possible the sensational appearance of a “UFO incident” which was then shrouded in mystery (as, for that matter, the farsighted Anglo-Canadian promoters of the whole business intended).

Near the center of the Cascade Range—which cuts the state almost vertically into two unequal parts—rises the main bulk of Mount Rainier National Park, a complex of twenty-eight glaciers encircling the peak of Mount Rainier, well known to American visitors as the “great sacred mountain” of the Chinook Indians.

Cut by valleys that offer easy access and long since transformed into a great national park in order to preserve its characteristic local subalpine flora, this region receives crowds of visitors during the hot months and the winter season.

Toward the end of spring in 1947, the thaws having been slightly behind their usual seasonal schedule, there was no large group of excursionists to disturb the quiet awakening of the park.

In that picturesque natural scenery, despite the views of ufologists, it was not the appearance of alien beings or of secret forces but only chance and an airplane disaster that gave the initial impulse to the strangest phenomenon of our time.

During the night of the twenty-third and twenty-fourth of June, a Marine Corps C-46 transport crashed against the south shoulder of Mount Rainier. When the military bases on the coast received word that the plane was missing, they radioed pilots flying over the area, asking them to join in the rescue search.

On Tuesday, June 24, Kenneth Arnold—a businessman from Boise, in the neighboring state of Idaho—took off from the airport of Chehalis in a privately owned Piper Cub bound for Yakima and Seattle on one of his normal business trips for the Fire Control Equipment Company. He intended to look for the scene of the crash on his way.

At 3:00 P.M., twenty miles ahead he could see the highest snow-covered peaks of the Cascade Range thrust jaggedly into the clear skies. After searching long and hard without finding any evidence of a crash, he climbed back up to 9,200 feet and headed toward Yakima.[1]

He was skirting the spent crater of Mount Rainier when a sudden flash on his left attracted his attention: nine silvery objects appeared in, as he later said, the characteristic form of an inverted plate and they flew in a "diagonal chain-like line," similar to a formation of geese, toward the mountains at what was obviously supersonic speed.

Gleaming in the sun like sheets of burnished metal, the nine objects maneuvered easily for some time among the high peaks of the chain, occasionally rising and descending as they traced its profile. During a brief pause in the maneuvers the formation flew in a single line, stretching across the sky for almost five miles. Then, with the help of the instrument panel clock and his perfect knowledge of the area, Arnold was able to determine that the mysterious flying machines covered the distance between the south wall of Mount Rainier and the distant peak of Mount Adams in a maximum time of 102 seconds: consequently they were flying at a good deal better than 1300 miles an hour.

Since he knew that such high speeds were not envisaged even for planes then on the drawing boards, Arnold flew toward the rear of the formation to check whether these were real objects or merely a mirage. Approaching within a few miles' distance, he was able to note, but only imprecisely because of their renewed, continuous spinning through the sky, that they were indeed solid objects, perhaps metallic, that they were in fact perfectly circular and were about a hundred feet in diameter; moreover, they seemed to have no tail or any other visible kind of wing or rudder. At the center of each object, he noted finally, was a sort of shining cupola. Perhaps noticing the presence of an intruder, the nine discs abruptly interrupted their strange aerial acrobatics, formed an echelon, and took off toward the north, disappearing in the direction of the Canadian border.

Resuming his search for the military transport, Arnold extended his investigations to the north slope of the mountains; then, considerably disturbed by the inexplicable celestial apparitions, he decided to inform the federal aviation authorities of what had happened.

After he had landed at the Yakima airport, he drafted a report of his flight in which he declared that he had caught sight of nine large aircraft of a hitherto completely unknown type flying above Rainier National Park.

For a number of years the Boeing Aircraft Company of Seattle had been building giant airplanes (the last of the series were the famous Super Fortresses, which were the pride of the state), but none of them had anything like the absurd circular shape described by the excited eyewitness. Consequently the (semiofficial) introduction of flying discs into the history of aviation was greeted with skepticism and derision.

The Arnold Report was published only by a small magazine dedicated to metaphysical, pseudoreligious, and extrasensory studies—*Fate Magazine*—which because of its special editorial slant ("True Stories of Mystery and the Unknown") presented it as putative proof of the arrival on earth of unidentifiable extraterrestrial objects.

UFOS SWARM ACROSS THE WESTERN HEMISPHERE

In the days following the Arnold sighting local newspapers were swamped with new and different reports of mysterious overflights. Almost all of the reports came from areas close to the point of the first sighting.

Now no longer afraid of being taken for a visionary, Fred Johnson, a prospector from Portland, reported that he too had seen the same aircraft—or at any rate another formation of the same type—also on June 24.

On that day he had almost finished prospecting at Salmon Dam, about 4500 feet above sea level in the Cascades, when a strange humming and flashing of lights caused him to scan the skies to find out what was causing the phenomenon. Six shining aircraft "resembling enormous circular mirrors catching the sunlight" were flying over the area at a height of 3000 feet above the mountaintops. As observed through a telescope during a sharp turn, one of them appeared to be of a flattened circular construction followed by a kind of short wavering tail (evidently a short trail of vapor or combustible gases). Worthy of note was the fact that for fifty seconds, during which two of the craft flew by at a low altitude, "*the compass needle went wild*."

But the report that caused the greatest sensation was without doubt the Dahl Report, which concerned certain strange events that had happened three days before on June 21.

At 2:00 P.M. on that day, Harold H. Dahl, while on harbor patrol in Puget Sound—an inlet of many bays and coves that runs from the Canadian border to Tacoma—was following the coast line of the wooded part of Maury Island. Suddenly he saw an irregular formation of circular shapes completely unlike weather balloons, with which he was familiar, descend from a thick white cloud. There were five large whitish aircraft, he later wrote in his report, whose diameters were in the neighborhood of 100 feet and which seemed to be involved in a complicated protective or rescue maneuver. In fact, they were slowly circling around a sixth craft that had stopped at some 1500 feet above the coast, probably because of mechanical failure.

Suddenly the UFO in the center rapidly descended to about 500 feet and stopped, apparently rotating on its own axis with a slight humming sound similar to that produced by electric motors. On the belly of the machine a kind of dark, central "hole" stood out distinctly; from time to time bright lights issued from it (perhaps the entrance hatch protected by a bubble of transparent material), and it seemed to have a series of smaller, evenly spaced apertures encircling it.

Five minutes later, one of the machines circling about at the higher altitude detached itself from the formation and descended until it rested on the motionless UFO. The two machines remained in contact for about four minutes, then slowly the one on top separated itself from the other and began to climb to a high altitude.

Afraid of being caught in the possible crash of the machine, Dahl steered his launch deep into a small bay, just in time to get out from under a rain of small, lightweight, whitish metallic fragments, expelled by the hundreds with a dull explosion from the motionless craft.

Moving away slowly at a low altitude, the UFO continued spewing out fragments, dark gray this time and different from the ones expelled shortly before; they resembled scraps of cast metal and they were obviously very hot, for when they struck the water they gave off little clouds of steam.

After a final, shorter but much more violent expulsion, the UFO, as though lightened, regained altitude and returned to the center of the formation, which disappeared at high speed toward the open sea.[2]

The Dahl Report, as was to be expected, also reached the editorial office of *Fate Magazine.* The editors thought it would be a good idea to institute a private investigation in Tacoma by the person they thought best qualified to investigate matters relating to "flying saucers": Kenneth Arnold, the first eyewitness to this whole strange affair.

At the end of the investigation some of the information seemed to confirm the validity of the sighting. Other information—for example, that about a mysterious "stranger" who knew all about the events in Puget Sound and who allegedly "advised" the eyewitness not to tell anyone any of the details of the sighting—threw instead a certain shadow of doubt over the report.[3] Arnold had, however, the distinct impression that some of the blank spots and contradictions that emerged from a comparison between the written report and the oral testimony given by Dahl himself and his direct superior, Fred L. Chrisman, were dictated by higher considerations—namely, fear of compromising their jobs or careers.

Called in because of a confidential telephone call, it is not clear from whom, the U.S. Army A-2 Intelligence Branch did not begin its investigation until July 31.

If we can unquestioningly accept the final report drafted some years later and preserved in the files of the A.T.I.C. (Air Technical Intelligence Center), the "tons of metal that fell from the skies and were visible on the beach of the island" consisted of no more than a couple of fragments of strangely porous lava rock that wouldn't even fill a cornflakes box. Arnold sent some of this matter to the chemical laboratory at the University of Chicago, which classified it as slag of volcanic origin. The rest of the matter—turned over to the A-2 agents—was lost in a serious but purely fortuitous airplane accident during the investigators' flight to Hamilton Air Force Base in California.

At this point the co-authors of the report, Dahl and Chrisman, under pressure from the investigating authorities, ended by admitting that the fragments were only mineral formations picked up at random on Maury Island—"oddities" that they decided to show the press as evidence of the wreckage of the flying saucer with the sole aim of heightening interest in their story.[4]

In any case, the stories of Arnold and Dahl, which were picked up and commented on even by big papers and mass magazines, spread with extreme rapidity; and with equal rapidity the sky of the entire United States became spangled (or at least so it seemed to most people) with swift silver or fiery saucers. From the Pacific to the Atlantic, a real psychosis gripped the American masses and millions of people began to scan the skies anxiously, hoping to make a fateful sighting.

At the end of the first week of July fully thirty-eight states already boasted at least one flight of mysterious flying objects, including both actual sightings and those merely presumed to be such.[5] Naturally, wherever these objects refused to appear —because of their special operative cycle—imagination was called upon and in the end all those who believed in the discs could boast of having seen them, describing them in the oddest ways.

While the whole United States seemed literally to have gone mad about flying saucers, Europe showed decided skepticism. The news of recurrent North American sightings was picked up by the British press. Finally even the authoritative London *Times* emerged from the austere reserve with which it had received the first news to come out and say that when it is very hot, the imagination tends to overwork. And the aviation editor of the *Daily Telegraph* thought he could give the quietus to the whole affair by declaring that the flying saucers seen by the Americans were nothing more nor less than the indirect result of the recent wave of export of Scotch whiskey.[6]

Nevertheless, running down a list of the most convincing sightings, one notes at once that *in June 1947 the mysterious overflights were apparently limited to the states in the northwest corner of the United States.*

Then, in the first week of July, strange luminous bodies appeared also in the skies over Oregon, Nevada, New England, and the Canadian province of Quebec. On July 8 it was the turn of California and New Mexico.

Finally, as the North American sightings multiplied, the discs made fugitive appearances elsewhere as well. In fact, on July 8 a flying saucer was reported from South Africa. This object, which appeared to the naked eye to be about the size of a phonograph record, circled for some fifteen minutes at a high altitude over Johannesburg. Then, after giving off a dense cloud of smoke, it disappeared rapidly upward. On the same day, in Sydney, Australia, a number of persons observed the passage of a swift, shining object—appearing oval in shape because of its angle to the horizon—whose structure tallied with descriptions given by American and Canadian observers.

After the first ten days of July, the skies of the entire Western hemisphere, virtually from pole to pole, were pierced silently and mysteriously by the phantom saucers.

U.S. AIR FORCE DENIALS

The existence of the strange celestial presences having been conclusively proved, public opinion in the United States was at first divided into two distinct currents.

One current leaned toward the thesis of secret, massive experimentation by the Army or the Air Defense Command with some new type of extremely powerful radio-controlled device for atomic bombing and believed that on occasion some defective models had got out of the control of their operators.

The other current maintained that these presences were globes of electrically charged air, were radioactive, hence shiny, and were the results of atomic explosions.

Asked for his opinion, David Lilienthal, chairman of the

Atomic Energy Commission, gave the press a sharp answer: "I can't prevent anybody from saying foolish things."

In the meantime strange rumors began to spread among the public, giving rise to ill-concealed uneasiness. Were the discs interplanetary messages sent from the dying planet Mars? Or were they, perhaps, Russian missiles propelled by special engines that even harnessed the still very young but already terrible energy of nuclear fission? As a result, a reluctant Air Force staff felt compelled to conduct an investigation in order to quiet the press and reassure the public.

Exactly ten days after the Rainier Park incident, the U.S. Air Force in its first, very brief statement declared that the whole story was merely the fruit of mass hallucination.

This peremptory brush-off served only to confirm many Americans in the view that some kind of automatic exploratory expedition to the earth was being carried out by the inhabitants of another planet (some said Mars, others Venus, and still others named even Saturn) by means of machines that were different from our missiles but whose scientific purposes were more or less analogous to those of our present-day interplanetary probes: Lunik, Venusik, Explorer, and Mariner.

After all, hadn't a widespread rumor originated in England, which turned news about some mysterious celestial phenomena (the so-called Soviet "phantom rockets") that had excited the Scandinavian countries during the spring of 1946 into science fiction? This rumor unequivocally had it that certain Soviet astronomers had "confirmed" that beginning with the end of the last war, interplanetary projectiles had occasionally been fired at the earth, and, moreover, that "something" more alive than the incandescent material of a projectile had descended some time before from the depths of interstellar space at some unidentified point on the Siberian tundra.

At the time Kenneth Arnold was described as "the first man to see the Martians." In any case, although he was not convinced that the affair concerned Martians at all, Arnold vehemently disagreed both with those who denied the existence of the saucers and with those who declared that they could at most be aircraft constructed by the Soviets or the American Air Force. It was no mirage, he protested. He had been flying for years and knew those mountains as well as he knew the insides of his own pockets. He had never seen anything like them or anything so fast! The Air Force and the press could say he was an Einstein, a Flash Gordon, or just another screwball, but he knew damn well what he saw!

Finding himself purely by chance on the crest of a wave of unexpected if ephemeral notoriety from the day that Ray Palmer, the editor of *Fate,* had entrusted him with the investigation of the Dahl Report, Arnold began to fly back and forth across the United States investigating various sightings and collecting material for a book—*The Coming of the Saucers*—which he afterwards wrote with Palmer.[7]

He sought conscientiously to collect and evaluate the best reports in order to try to solve the mystery. Nevertheless, for the great majority of Americans he remained "the first man to see the Martians" . . . and the UFO question, born in this original sin, became a subject for jokes and denials from experts.

In the second week of July the Pentagon thought it advisable, in view of the discordant reactions of the public, to offer through its own spokesman something more specific than the too vague conclusions of the U.S. Air Force: "The mysterious devices that some people claim to have seen for some time in the skies are probably the sunlight reflected on cloud formations moving at a high altitude, or exploded meteors whose microscopic residue reflects the sunlight, or very large and considerably flattened hailstones which, falling through the atmosphere, begin to glide and, rising and falling, give the illusion of horizontal flight."

Thanks to this ingenious "clarification," the press accused the military authorities of desperately trying to cover up some dangerous fact. One indefatigable reporter discovered, for example, that at the time of the first sightings Air Force General Carl Spaatz had been spending a long time in these northwestern areas. Spaatz dryly retorted that he vacationed there every year to pursue his favorite sport of salmon fishing. Thus the secret hope that there would be an official and sensational statement on the matter collapsed, but as a kind of compensation, a flying saucer did in fact fall on United States territory.

THE YELLOWSTONE "YO-YO"

On July 7, 1947, a twin-engined P-38 fighter that had been converted into a photoreconnaissance plane for the photographic service of U.S. Army Ordnance was flying at about 30,000 feet in the direction of the Air Force base in Bozeman, Montana.

The sky along the extreme northern edge of Yellowstone National Park was completely free of clouds. Except for a little trouble with the oil system of the engines—a not particularly serious matter, in any case—the flight was proceeding routinely.

Suddenly the photographer shouted: "Look! They're coming! They've almost caught up with us!"

"What? Who's coming?" asked the astonished pilot. What could possibly threaten this lonely flight? The war had been over, definitely over, for some time.

"Those things the papers are always talking about."

For a few moments the sinister shadow of a new Pearl Harbor hovered in the minds of the American airmen. The "cold war" was by then an unpleasant but obvious political state of affairs, and hadn't the immense Asian north shown itself to be an impenetrable fortress hostile to the Western peoples?

The European news release of an American wire service that had somehow learned about this militarily "classified" episode quoted Lieutenant Vernon Blair:

". . . And then turning around to speak to the photographer I saw the yo-yo behind me. I call it a yo-yo because I surprisingly thought of that toy that I used to play with as a child. We had orders to shoot them down at any cost, but I didn't remember that until afterwards, and although I was flying at 360 miles per hour, the strange aircraft quickly overtook me. I was, however, able to observe it for a few seconds: it had the shape of a very flat oyster and was, as it seemed to me, about fifteen feet or so broad, and about three feet thick. It was flying without making any sound, I mean any sound louder than that produced by my own plane, and emitting a light, luminous trail. Then, as soon as it had overtaken me and I was about to try to follow it, I saw it open in two, just like an oyster, and flutter down. I noticed that it was catching up with at least a dozen yo-yos proceeding in an irregular formation, almost like fighters peeling off for an attack.”

“Are you sure that they were metallic objects and not, for example, simply shiny spots moving of their own accord or the effect of some such mirage?”

“The mysterious aircraft seemed to be made of aluminum. They were pearl-gray in color and on the upper side they all had a shining bubble of some transparent material.”

“Did you see who was flying them? And why didn’t you take any pictures?”

“We wasted some time watching them fly by and trying to determine whether there was anyone on board. They moved quicker than we could act!”

“Did the leader by any chance graze your plane?”

“No, absolutely not. I have no idea why he fell. Perhaps he was already having mechanical trouble or perhaps he accidentally got into my slipstream and was torn apart. As I said, we were going pretty fast.”[8]

The photographer confirmed that he did not have time to aim his large vertical camera at the formation because the objects flew by too rapidly, and his report on the event coincided in its main particulars with that of the pilot (who was described by his direct superiors as a “serious and honest officer, who takes his job seriously”). He added that since he had concentrated his attention on one of the craft that had briefly approached the P-38 more closely than the others, it seemed to him that he had glimpsed a man, the pilot, inside, lying flat in the cabin and looking out the glass porthole in the front of the bubble.

The terrain in which the contraption fell is quite rough and thickly wooded. The staff at the base in Bozeman, authorized by the Pentagon, immediately began a series of careful inspections in the area with search parties and army helicopters, but without any positive results.[9] Perhaps the Martians had collected those precious fragments?

A few Americans wept over the sad fate of the unknown hero who had perished in order to further the secret progress of American aviation. More, however, were afraid that the Martians would be angry. But nothing happened. In fact, flying saucers continued to swarm for a while, harmless and elusive, in the skies of the Western hemisphere, following certain broad but well-defined routes (though no one at the time noted the fact), as though they were guided by a careful plan to carry out an ambitious and difficult end that was perhaps rendered possible solely by their strange form.

In any case, the frivolous appellation of "yo-yo" that Lieutenant Blair had conferred on the strange craft, and its similarity to the well-known toy that gave us many pleasant hours in our youth, anticipated later observations on its peculiar "biplanar" form (that is, of two circular bodies, one atop and slightly apart from the other). These observations were reinforced by at least a dozen reputable eyewitness depositions in succeeding years, suggesting that the contraption seemed to revolve around its own axis.

The luminous trail was a dead giveaway of the presence of a jet engine, although of a special and still completely unknown type: using hot, burned air that formed a propelling jet. Even though in those years propeller-driven planes were still the dominant type, jets being an exclusively military rarity, there was really no call, even then, to seek to explain these things by attributing them to the inhabitants and technology of the remote planet of Mars.

The press, however, did not give up but asked, among other things, why this little saucer—which after all had supposedly traveled tens of millions of miles through cosmic space without any trouble—had then so ignominiously broken up in flight a short distance in front of the P-38 that it had overtaken. Could it have been that the warm, dense atmosphere in the altitudes that our planes fly at was harmful to the Martian flyers? Neither then nor later was anyone able to give a plausible explanation of the event.

Nevertheless, the considerations that are forced upon us today are of quite a different nature: *while the U.S. Air Force was publicly denying the existence of the discs, it secretly issued orders to its pilots to shoot them down, no matter what* *the cost—in complete agreement with the secret orders that the other two military branches issued to their flight crews.* Contradiction and confusion? Not in the least. Deception, rather.

A deception that has been going on for nearly two decades.

APPENDIX TO THE "MANTELL CASE"

As we have seen, toward the end of July 1947 American sightings of unknown flying objects became fewer and further between; during August a few isolated UFOs appeared only over Europe. Then sightings ceased completely. The press looked for its own explanation of the matter, questioning any experts who were not muzzled by Air Force directives.

A compact front of astronomers rejected *in toto* the idea that a new and unknown form of flight could exist. They explained all the objects sighted as meteors, which at that time were indeed on the increase because of the regular annual appearance of the meteoric wake of Aquarids II.

The prudent silence or tentative observations of some civilians who were authorities on aeronautical matters were prompted by the fact that the form and speed of the objects as reported by the most reliable witnesses might also come within the scope of technical secrets known for the moment only to the military.[10]

Other authorities, versed in the most disparate disciplines, wanted, or were induced, to have their say. Some accepted the official "explanations" without discussion. Others leaned toward explanations based on the appearance of mirages similar to the Fata Morgana. There were those who referred to the increased launchings of new types of weather balloons and those who considered instead the possibility that some new atmospheric phenomenon connected in some way with the growth of radar installations had developed. There were even those who said that the whole thing was a gigantic mass hallucination that could be traced back to spots before the eyes, the so-called *muscae volitantes* which for a brief time afflicts those who stare at the clear sky or some light source for a protracted period.

In America these declarations naturally satisfied neither the superpatriots—who wanted the discs to have the Air Force star on them—nor those who were expecting the Martians.

Moreover, the first group observed, not without a tone of vexation, that with these perhaps still experimental machines sent all over the world, an accident might jeopardize this extremely well-kept national secret. Or—as the second group of malcontents insinuated—these saucers were really photographic reconnaissance machines of great range—furnished with an automatic avoidance device that kept them from crashing into any sort of obstacle (earth, airplanes, antiaircraft missiles)—which had been constructed on the basis of the plans of certain German projects dating from 1944. But in that case what would be the point of America spying on itself? Only Russia, which also had a corner on "secret weapons," would have been able to use the invention profitably in order to learn about America's industrial and military potential.

The U.S. Air Force again issued vehement denials. Flying saucers, whether Russian, Yankee, Martian, or from anywhere else, were nothing but tall tales. And the witnesses of the by now innumerable overflights were rewarded *en masse* with the very unflattering description of hallucinated visionaries.

Authoritative denials and journalistic pressures mingled for another few months without throwing any substantial light on the exciting mystery. In order to reassure the public and to cut short the press' inconvenient probing that kept the question alive (although the discs had by now not been seen for some time), on December 30, 1947, the Secretary of Defense, James Forrestal, signed an order that set up a permanent committee of inquiry on flying saucers.

Placed under the Air Matériel Command (A.M.C.) at Wright-Patterson Field and headed by Professor J. Allen Hynek, then the director of the McMillin astrophysical observatory of Ohio State University, the commission set to work immediately, sending special questionnaires to witnesses who had happened to see unusual celestial phenomena—questionnaires that would be subjected to analytical and statistical evaluation by a group of civilian and military experts.

Although not openly stated, the basic aim of the commission was to attribute the sightings either to nonexistent things or to mistakenly identified things that already existed: psychopathic hallucinations, hoaxes, optical illusions, weather balloons, parhelia, lenticular clouds, meteorites, ordinary planes flying at high altitudes, flocks of migratory birds, and the like.[11]

To the 117 sightings of 1947 that they culled from the most responsible press reports, the commission added some 436 individual questionnaires covering the entire two-year period that followed.

The hard nut of the inquiry was a sensational bit of evidence from Kentucky known as the "Mantell Case." The episode is so well known that we need not report it here in detail, but there is one aspect, still almost totally unknown, that is worth noting because it throws real light on the complicated UFO question.

Briefly, then, the tragic affair began in the neighboring state of Indiana. At 2:30 P.M. on January 7, 1948, a high-flying, shiny, flat, circular object passed over the town of Madison at a speed of at least 500 miles per hour.

A series of telephone calls from Elizabethtown, Lexington, and Fort Knox—the famous national safe-deposit box—shortly after alerted Godman Field, a military air base. A gigantic shining object was, in fact, moving swiftly through the skies of the area, giving the impression that it was carrying out a methodical exploratory mission. At 3:00 P.M. this object, or perhaps another of the same type, appeared directly above the base.

Observing it through binoculars, Colonel F. G. Hix concluded that it was a flaming disc of gigantic size—in all probability its diameter was about 150 feet.

Three F-51 Mustang fighters were returning to the base under the command of Captain Thomas Mantell. The squadron received radio orders to identify this object, which in the meantime had begun to move away. Shortly thereafter two of the fighters had to return to the field, having run out of fuel. Captain Mantell continued in pursuit and at 3:15 P.M. he reported: "I've sighted the thing. It looks metallic and of tremendous size. It's rotating rapidly and surrounded by reddish streamers. It looks like an ice-cream cone topped with red, intermittently flashing at the top."

According to official sources his last radio message said: "It's still above me, making my speed or better. I'm going up to 20,000 feet and if I'm no closer, I'll abandon chase."[12]

However, one of the personnel at the Godman control tower later revealed to a member of the British Flying Saucers Bureau, a private association dedicated to the investigation of UFOs, that there was a sequel to the story. Shortly afterward, Captain Mantell did manage to get within closer distance of the UFO when it made a brief stop in the air.

"My God!" he then exclaimed on the radio. "There are men in it!" The rest of his words, if there were any, were drowned out by an indescribable crescendo of noise. Then came a terrible crash and radio contact was broken.

While Captain Mantell remained disturbingly silent, another white-gold circular object enveloped in a red halo and with a long amber-colored contrail crossed the skies of Ohio, passing very rapidly over the Lockbourne air base at what was surely a stratospheric altitude. At almost the same time, within a few miles of the airport of Wilmington, Delaware, a sort of ball of fire surrounded by a cloud of greenish gas appeared in the sky from the southwest and for a good thirty-five minutes executed strange maneuvers in space—continuous alternation of turns and vertical climbs and dives. Finally it flew off at a "terrifying" speed. And that was the last sighting on that memorable day.

At dawn the next morning, after a telephone call from the local police near Fort Knox, several platoons sent by the command at Godman Field found the wreckage of the Mustang spread over a vast area.[13]

The press was forbidden access to the site of the accident. There was no authorized photograph and no statement to the press, as is usual under the circumstances. This was not, in fact, one of those simple aviation disasters that spatter the records of mechanical flight. The "Mantell Case" was a mysterious episode that was rendered even more puzzling by the report that some of the wreckage appeared to have "tiny perforations and to be almost porous or rough," as though it had been struck by a combination of a blast of intense heat and a violent abrasive jet.

REPORT NO. 102

On December 27, 1949, Professor Hynek sent a—naturally “final”—report to Washington on the investigation (for the record, its official title reads: Report No. 102-AC/49-15-100/ Project SIGN), and Order No. 629/49 of the Command of the U.S.A.F. marked the official dissolution of the commission.

In two years of work 375 of the most reliable reports had been analyzed, $34,000 had been spent, and the conclusions were, as might have been foreseen, that “basically nothing proved the existence of the flying saucers.”

Nevertheless, of the 228 sightings that were made public only 194 were explained exhaustively or in accord with the stated premises of the backers of the commission. Thirty-four cases were in fact considered inexplicable. For example, the accident in which Captain Mantell lost his life was at first explained away as an attempt on his part to intercept the planet Venus, which was especially bright that night, then as an equally futile attempt to pursue a very high cirrus cloud that had caught the reflections of the sun, and finally it was simply brushed aside as “contact with an unknown object.”

Given the small number of “unexplained” sightings, the commission considered that it was within its rights to reach a completely negative conclusion, at the same time, however, prudently advancing the hypothesis that the thirty-four cases in question could be ascribed to special atmospheric phenomena that had been incorrectly described or were still little known scientifically.[14]

For some time the disappearance of the unknown machines from the skies seemed fully to support the explanation that no mystery did in fact exist, and on American airfields those who reported sightings were made the butt of all sorts of jokes. They had seen pie pans flying upside down, had they? Fine! Anyone who still saw some rare, isolated UFO was of course careful not to talk about it.

The unexpected conclusion to the official investigations had an equally unforeseen consequence. Those who disseminated false reports about Martians and such things—people who had "worked" secretly before—vigorously fanned the flames of disappointment and, with the help of those newspapers interested in sensationalism, spread a series of increasingly amazing and unlikely news stories among millions of unsuspecting readers.

On the other hand, outraged by the negative views of the U.S.A.F., numerous people who had seen UFOs began to listen, though with some misgivings, to certain rumors that had been making the rounds for some time but that now began to grow. As often happens, the minority led the majority along, and soon much of the American public believed in the Martians (or the Ethereans, or the Wolfians, or what have you).

The authorities, however, maintained their curiously "incoherent" attitude. From the spring of 1948 American military pilots had orders to intercept and shoot down the unknown invaders. Then the orders changed, doubtless because of the Mantell case: "*Intercept but don't shoot except in the case of an obvious maneuver on the part of the UFO*."

The instructions of Major General Ramey of the Air Defense Command aimed simply at acquiring clear ocular or photographic evidence and precise details that might in some manner interest the Air Force Technical Intelligence Center. (Science "worked" for the public, but it demanded "details" for the military.)

The order was never revoked. Meanwhile, in the secret corridors of the Pentagon a new policy began to form, a policy of silence and denials that years later led ufologists to talk about a "Flying Saucer Conspiracy" that had been arranged in high places against the flying discs or, more precisely, against our Brothers from Space and their antiatomic and pacific mission.

In reality, what was taking shape, and in really high places, was a sort of "conspiracy of silence" that was adopted in order not to shake the prestige of the Republic, which, although at the zenith of its political and technical hegemony, possessed no aircraft able to emulate the then almost legendary speeds of the UFOs.

NOTES

1. In fact, the transport was found the following day on the slopes of the South Tacoma Glacier, considerably south of Arnold's route.

2. To better evaluate the Dahl Case, compare it with the following episode: February 18, 1950, Sjaelland (Denmark)—Christian Sandersen, owner of a small plot of land on the east coast of Sjaelland, reporting to the press the nighttime flight several miles out to sea of two "flying saucers," said: ". . . When I saw them, the first was proceeding at a very high altitude. The other, however, was flying at about 1500 feet and seemed hesitant about what course to take. It was going back and forth and spinning furiously as it climbed, then it slowed down its motor, descending to about 500 feet. The disc at the higher altitude had meanwhile stopped and seemed to be waiting. After a few moments during which it was motionless, it descended rapidly and brought itself almost in contact with the other; it remained in that position for several minutes, then it rose again and disappeared. A few seconds later, the 'hesitant' disc exploded in a blinding ball of flame that seemed to consume the whole thing." It is true that the "ball of flame" could quite reasonably be explained by the instantaneous combustion of its remaining fuel by means of some timing device and that the momentary contact between the two craft can be logically explained as an attempt to rescue the endangered crew, effected perhaps by the pilots' transferring from the bubble on the back of the nonfunctioning disc to the bubble on the belly of the rescue ship (these structural elements are quite clear in the later Brazilian photographs of 1952). The local press, however—still under the influence of the then very recent American "Report No. 102," which unequivocally denied that any unidentified flying objects existed—gave no credence to Sandersen's story. Yet only three days before, the same Danish press had given considerable play to certain military statements designed to calm public opinion concerning repeated signals that radar stations and the Coast Guard

had picked up of very high and fast overflights of *unidentified* air formations, cautiously suggesting that the Soviets were carrying out cartographic research in the Baltic!

3. *Cf.* Gray Barker, *They Knew Too Much About Flying Saucers* (New York, University Books, 1956), pp. 136–150; Harold T. Wilkins, *Flying Saucers on the Attack* (New York, Ace Books, 1967), pp. 46–64.

4. *Cf.* Prof. Donald H. Menzel, *Flying Saucers* (Cambridge, Mass., Harvard University Press, 1953), pp. 38–48; and Capt. Edward J. Ruppelt, *The Report on Unidentified Flying Objects* (New York, Ace Books, 1956), pp. 37–41.

5. Among the many “saucer psychosis” cases, one is worthy of note: the claimed sighting of a UFO on September 28, 1947. Air currents had caused one of the many weather balloons that are periodically launched in the area around New York to drift over the city. Perversely, the state of New York had not had any sightings of unidentified flying objects. Could not, then, the round and shining body that swiftly and nimbly disappeared and reappeared here and there among the gray clouds have been one of the rare and eagerly awaited contraptions? The sensation caused by its appearance was such that the local radio stations hastily broadcast a statement on the true nature of the object, but since this did not have the desired effect, it was proposed to send up a fighter plane to shoot down the intruder. Fortunately an offshore wind carried the sphere away from the city, disappointing those—and there were many—who were eagerly awaiting a local landing of astronauts on a visit to the biggest city on earth.

6. This assertion immediately had an unexpected as well as an unmerited notoriety. When the hypothesis that the mysterious machines seen by the Americans were a new kind of Soviet long-range weapon launched from some secret Siberian base was advanced in the United Nations, Molotov rose up angrily and declared: “The flying discs are of English origin, because

the only thing responsible for such visions is the too-abundant consumption of whiskey, which overstimulates your imaginations!"

7. Kenneth Arnold and Ray Palmer, *The Coming of the Saucers* (Amherst, Wisconsin, The Amherst Press, 1952).

8. In the autumn of 1948 the operational staff of the U.S. Air Force circulated a directive to all fighter units equipped with jets to be on guard against the serious danger presented by the turbulent propeller wash from piston-engined bombers—a danger that had been pointed up by a series of fatal accidents. During mock combat exercises against a formation of four-engined B-29S, an F-84 jet fighter that had entered the slipstream close behind the propellers of one of the bombers had literally disintegrated in flight, and the same fate had befallen an F-80 fighter during a similar maneuver. Finally, another fighter that had come into contact with a bomber's propeller wash had been hit violently in a vertical line along its left side, losing an auxiliary fuel tank along with a part of the wing tip because of the violent vibrations that resulted.

9. At least this was the official version distributed to the various staffs of the Air Force and Army concerned with the searches, and sanctioning the results of the investigation.

10. The Italian press reported the comment of Charles Gardner, then considered Britain's best aviation editor: "Whatever the truth may be about the American flying saucers,' there is one aspect of the matter that has considerable importance for high-speed aircraft designers. All of the witnesses that have 'seen' the mysterious objects agree on their circular form, which would represent an evolution in the projects worked out by a number of scientists in the last ten years. One witness has described the strange craft as resembling a giant lens, another has said that it has a low cupola, but most have gone no farther than a simple comparison with an inverted plate. . . . There is no doubt that the problem of passing through the 'sound barrier' will force us to make considerable modifications in the

shapes of our flying machines. . . . In order to overcome such difficulties many scientists have suggested a 'delta'-shaped wing, or a right-angled triangle . . . without tail or fuselage. . . . From the 'delta' to the semicircle and from this to the full circle are two clearly connected steps. . . . We know that the 'flying triangles' will actually be built and therefore the semicircles and even the 'flying discs' are not after all so farfetched as might seem at first sight. I would, however, be surprised if all the enormous problems of such a heterodox and supersonic machine had already been resolved and if a 'flying saucer' with men on board had already flown. . . . The Americans are building jet planes that approximate the speed of sound (746 miles per hour at sea level) and we hope that England will soon achieve the same results. It seems incredible to me that someone is not only four or five stages in advance on the road of aeronautical progress but that he has also built so many of them that he can launch them by the scores across a continent." To understand Gardner's technical assessment and his doubts better, it should be pointed out that it was precisely at that time (on June 19, 1947, to be exact) that the Americans had taken the world speed record from the British, and were the first "officially" to fly faster than 1000 kph in a modified P-80C jet fighter. The timed speed was 1003.811 kph. Because of the lack of more precise data Gardner had, however, made a technical mistake in supposing that the flying saucers were derived by simple evolution, in the aerodynamic sense, from the 'flying wing,' or that they were a development in construction in the area of so-called low aspect-ratio wings.

11. Professor Hynek's serious preconceptions concerning the UFOs can be deduced, for example, from the introduction to *Project Blue Book, Special Report No. 14* (Analysis of Reports of UFO), Project No. 10073, May 5, 1955, issued by the Air Technical Intelligence Center at Wright-Patterson Field, in which is written: "The unfortunate term 'flying saucer' or 'flying disc,' because of its widespread and indiscriminate use, requires definition. Many definitions have been offered, one of the best being that originated by Dr. J. Allen Hynek. . . . Dr. Hynek's definition of the term is 'aerial phenomenon or sighting

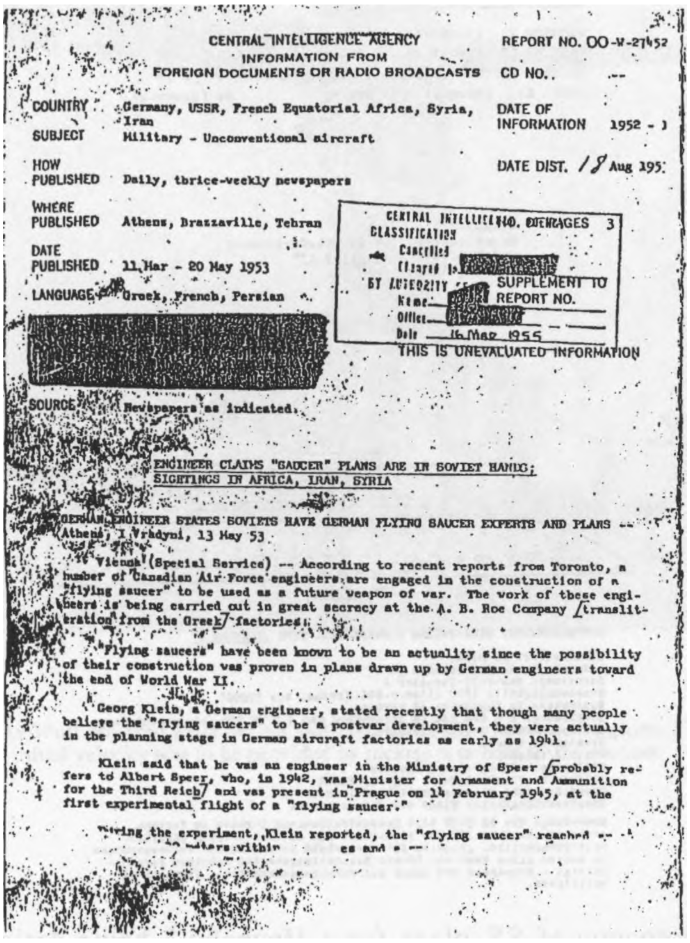
that remains unexplained to the viewer at least long enough for him to write a report about it.’” Is this an ironic evaluation of things that had to be kept secret, or pure scientific nearsightedness?

12. The speed of the pursuit is closely related to the operating characteristics of the F-51D Mustang fighter (Packard Merlin V-1650-7 supercharged piston engine developing 1630 HP and driving a four-bladed propeller), which could climb in 18.5 minutes to an altitude of 25,000 feet, there developing its maximum horizontal speed (450 mph), and had a service ceiling of 43,500 feet.

13. According to *Le Courrier Interplanétaire* of Lausanne, an almost exact repetition of the Mantell Case—this one known in ufological circles as the Merkel Case—allegedly took place on January 9, 1956. Toward dusk a number of UFOs appeared in the sky over southern Indiana. Several jets and one propeller-driven plane belonging to the National Guard and stationed at the airport in Louisville, Kentucky, immediately scrambled to intercept. The maneuver failed owing to the growing darkness and the fear that their fuel supply would give out. Nevertheless, Colonel Merkel—thanks to the greater range of his propeller-driven fighter (a P-51 Mustang)—continued the pursuit, radioing the control tower that he had observed without any possibility of doubt a mysterious shining object that performed evolutions along a bank of clouds directly above him. Still having sufficient reserves of oxygen and gas, Merkel climbed to 30,000 feet, trying to approach the UFO and reporting that it was flying at a considerably higher altitude. Merkel then climbed steeply at full throttle, but almost immediately radio contact was lost and after a dizzying dive, the fighter seemed to explode a few hundred feet above a farm near Bloomington, destroying the building and scattering fragments of metal over a radius of about 1300 feet. Since we do not have an official version of the fact, it would be hazardous to draw any conclusions; nevertheless, the ufologists’ conclusion that intelligent beings were on board the unknown craft and became

hostile only when approached without invitation scarcely appears credible.

14. *Cf.* Prof. J. Allen Hynek, "Unusual Aerial Phenomena," *Journal of the Optical Society of America,* XLIII, 4 (New York: April 1953), 311–314.



CENTRAL INTELLIGENCE AGENCY
INFORMATION FROM
FOREIGN DOCUMENTS OR RADIO BROADCASTS

REPORT NO. 00-W-27452
CD NO. --

COUNTRY Germany, USSR, French Equatorial Africa, Syria, Iran
SUBJECT Military - Unconventional aircraft
HOW PUBLISHED Daily, thrice-weekly newspapers
WHERE PUBLISHED Athens, Brazzaville, Tehran
DATE PUBLISHED 11 Mar - 20 May 1953
LANGUAGE Greek, French, Persian

DATE OF INFORMATION 1952 - 1
DATE DIST. 18 Aug 1952
NO. OF PAGES 3

CENTRAL INTELLIGENCE AGENCY
CLASSIFICATION
Cancelled
Changed to [redacted]
BY AUTHORITY OF [redacted]
Name [redacted]
Office
Date 16 Mar 1955

SUPPLEMENT TO
REPORT NO.

[redacted]

THIS IS UNEVALUATED INFORMATION

SOURCE Newspapers as indicated.

ENGINEER CLAIMS "SAUCER" PLANS ARE IN SOVIET HANDS;
SIGHTINGS IN AFRICA, IRAN, SYRIA

GERMAN ENGINEER STATES SOVIETS HAVE GERMAN FLYING SAUCER EXPERTS AND PLANS -- Athens, I Vradyni, 13 May 53

Vienna (Special Service) -- According to recent reports from Toronto, a number of Canadian Air Force engineers are engaged in the construction of a "flying saucer" to be used as a future weapon of war. The work of these engineers is being carried out in great secrecy at the A. B. Roe Company [transliteration from the Greek] factories.

"Flying saucers" have been known to be an actuality since the possibility of their construction was proven in plans drawn up by German engineers toward the end of World War II.

Georg Klein, a German engineer, stated recently that though many people believe the "flying saucers" to be a postwar development, they were actually in the planning stage in German aircraft factories as early as 1941.

Klein said that he was an engineer in the Ministry of Speer [probably refers to Albert Speer, who, in 1942, was Minister for Armament and Ammunition for the Third Reich] and was present in Prague on 14 February 1945, at the first experimental flight of a "flying saucer."

[illegible]ring the experiment, Klein reported, the "flying saucer" reached -- [illegible] meters within [illegible] es and a --

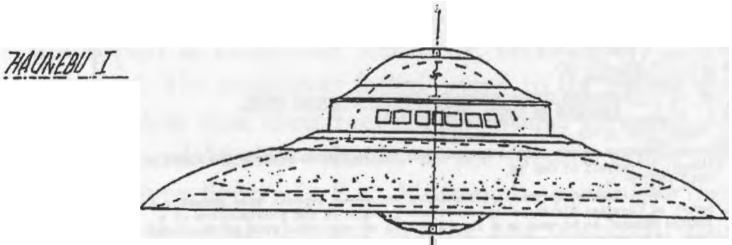
A C.I.A. document dated August 18, 1952 mentioning that the Germans were building "flying saucers" as early as 1941. From the German book *Die Dunkle Seite Des Mondes* (*The Dark Side of the Moon*) by Brad Harris (1996, Pandora Books, Germany).

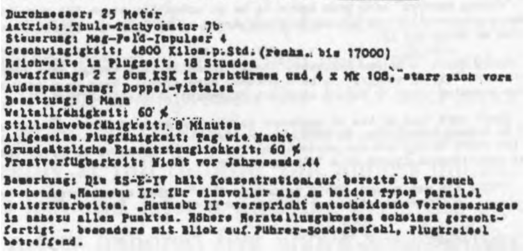
Geheime Kommandoſache

Flugkreisel-Erprobung, Staad /	Ansahl Erprobungsfüge:	
HAUNEBU I (vorbanden 2 stück)	52	E-IV
HAUNEBU II (vorbanden 7 Stück)	106	E-IV
HAUNEBU III (vorbanden 1 Stück)	19	E-IV
(VRIL 1) (vorbanden 17 Stück)	64	(Schunsna)

Empfehlung:

Beschleunigen von Abschlußerprobung
und Produktion "Haunebu II"
♦ "VRIL I"



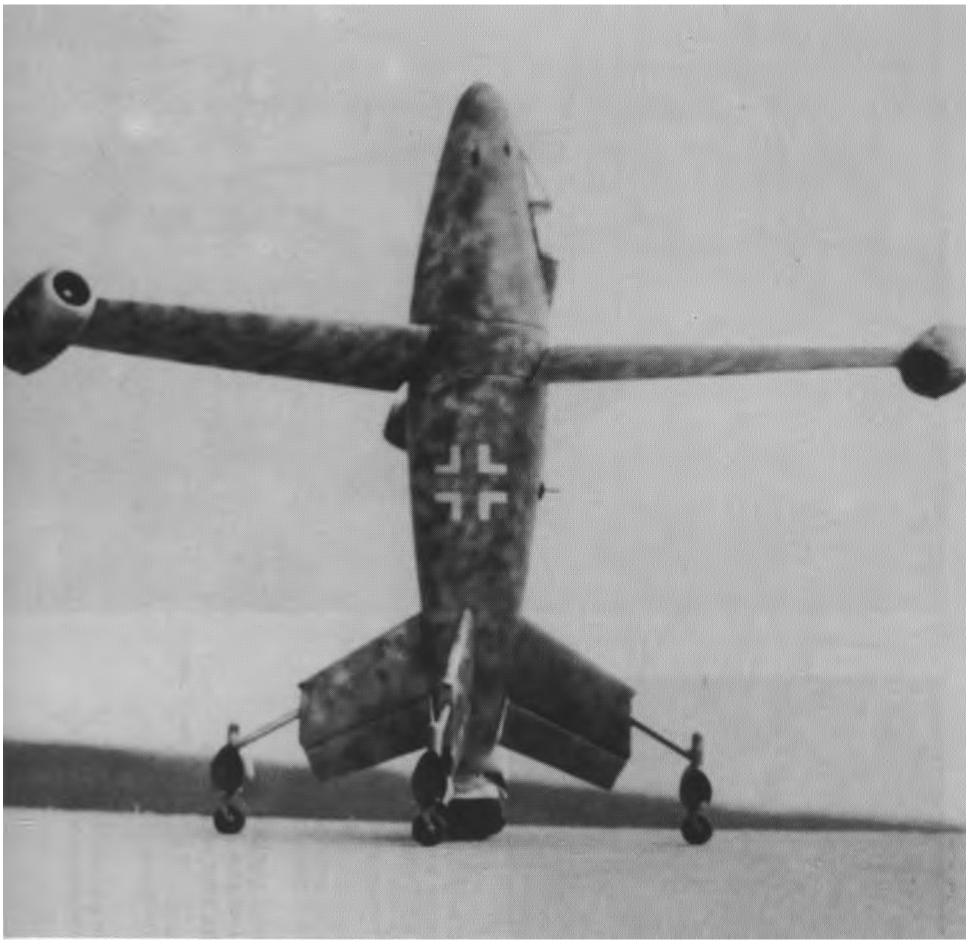


MITTELSCHWERER BEWAFFNETER FLUGKREISEL, TYPE „HAUNEBU I"

Durchmesser: 25 Meter
Antrieb: Thule-Tachyonator 7b
Steuerung: Mag-Feld-Impulser 4
Geschwindigkeit: 4800 Kilom.p.Std. (rechn. bis 17000)
Reichweite in Flugzeit: 18 Stunden
Bewaffnung: 2 x 8cm KSK in Drehtürmen und 4 x Mk 108, starr nach vorn
Außenpanzerung: Doppel-Victalen
Besatzung: 8 Mann
Weltallfähigkeit: 60 %
Stillschwebefähigkeit: 8 Minuten
Allgemeine Flugfähigkeit: Tag wie Nacht
Grundsätzliche Einsatztauglichkeit: 60 %
Frontverfügbarkeit: Nicht vor Jahresende 44

Bemerkung: Die SS-E-IV hält Konzentration auf bereits im Versuch stehende „Haunebu II" für sinnvoller als an beiden Typen parallel weiterzuarbeiten. „Haunebu II" verspricht entscheidende Verbesserungen in nahezu allen Punkten. Höhere Herstellungskosten scheinen gerechtfertigt – besonders mit Blick auf Führer-Sonderbefehl, Flugkreisel betreffend.

Alleged photocopy of SS plans for a Haunebu I being designed in 1939. From the German book *Die Dunkle Seite Des Mondes* (*The Dark Side of the Moon*) by Brad Harris (1996, Pandora Books, Germany).

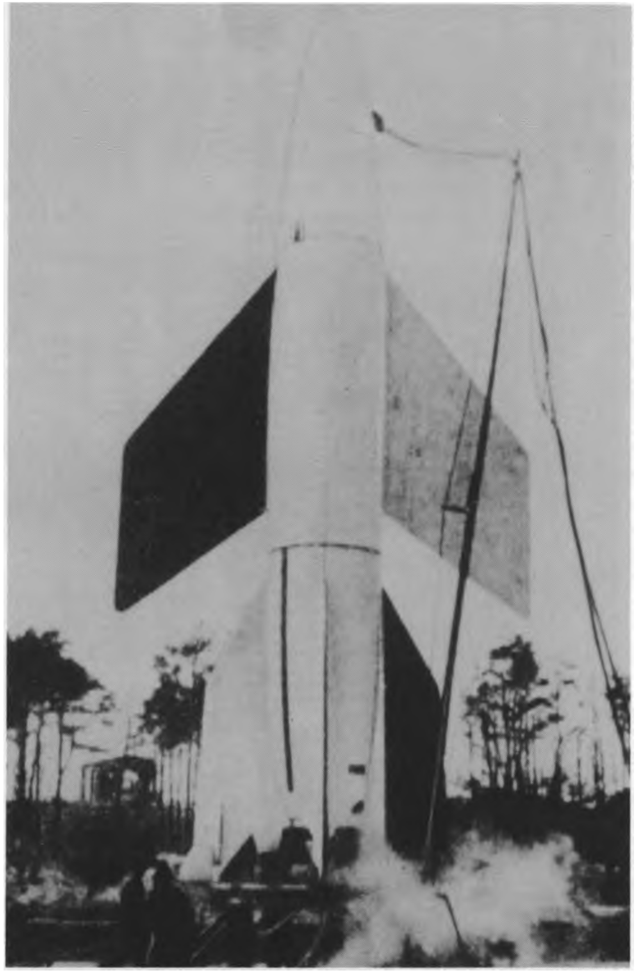


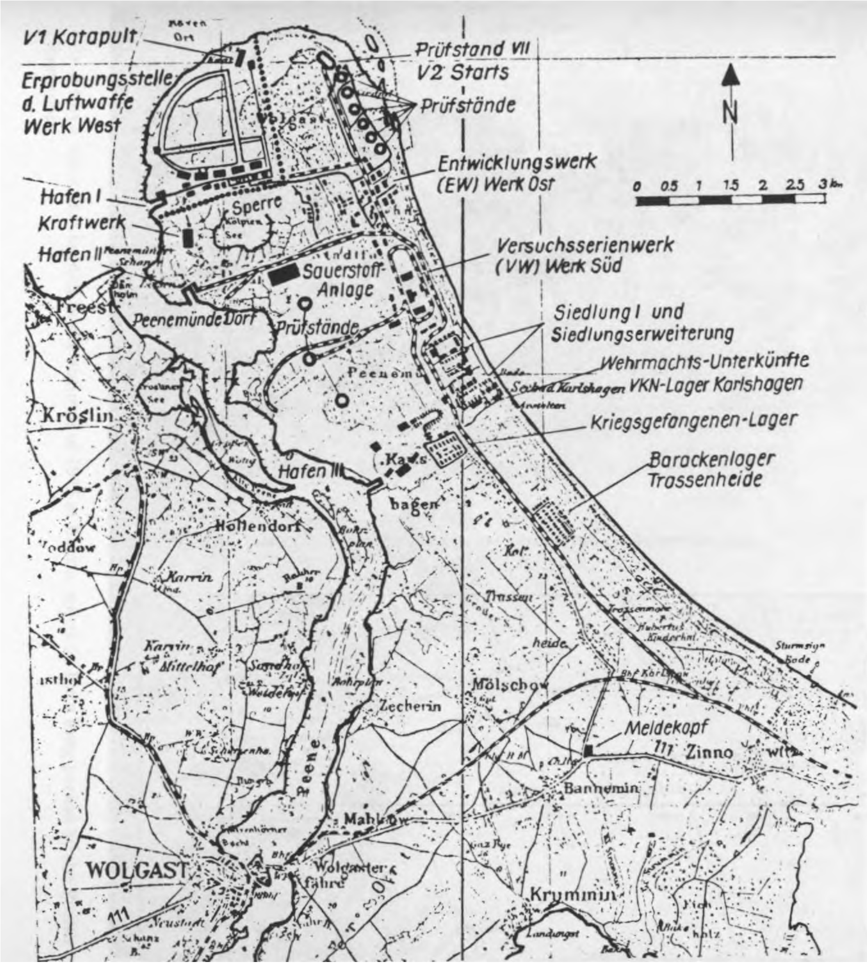
The Focke-Wulf powered wing design, powered by three Lorin ramjet engines. The required initial velocity was to be provided by rockets mounted in the engines.

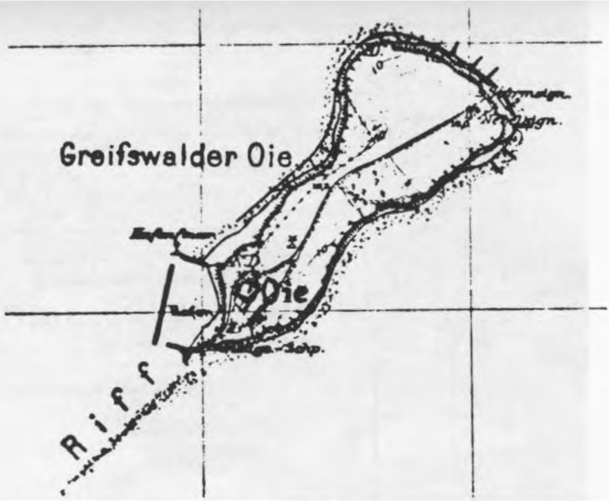
Above: President John F. Kennedy at the Marshall Space Travel Center in 1962, visiting Wernher von Braun at the height of his success, seven years before the landing on the moon. The managing director of NASA since 1970, von Braun died in 1977.

On its way to being an international rocket, the successful subsequent model of the A4 was halted immediately because of the war situation.

Right: A4 b, forerunner of the A9, shortly before its successful launch on January 24, 1945 at Test Site X in Peenemünde—the ancestor of the "Space Shuttle." (BA)

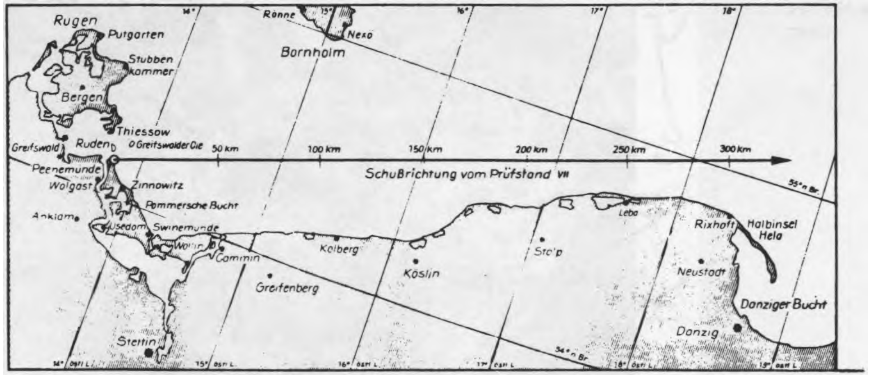



V1 Katapult
Erprobungsstelle d. Luftwaffe Werk West
Hafen I
Kraftwerk
Hafen II
Sperre
Prüfstand VII
V2 Starts
Prüfstände
Entwicklungswerk (EW) Werk Ost
N
0 0.5 1 1.5 2 2.5 3 km
Sauerstoff-Anlage
Prüfstände
Versuchsserienwerk (VW) Werk Süd
Peenemünde Dorf
Siedlung I und Siedlungserweiterung
Wehrmachts-Unterkünfte
VKN-Lager Karlshagen
Kriegsgefangenen-Lager
Barackenlager Trassenheide
Kröslin
Hafen III
Karlshagen
Hollendorf
Karrin
Peene
Zecherin
Mölschow
Trassenheide
Meldekopf
Zinnowitz
Bannemin
Mahlzow
WOLGAST
Wolgaster Fähre
Krummin

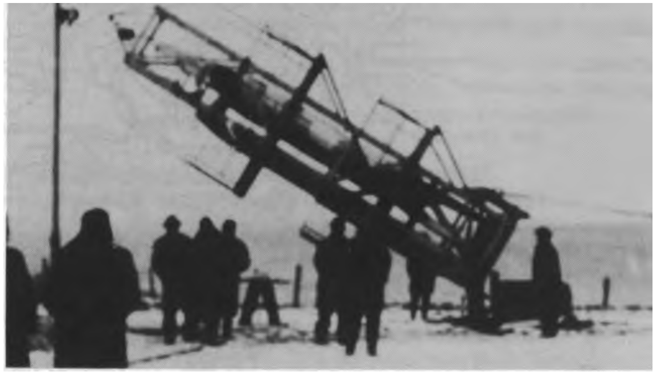

Greifswalder Oie
Oie
Riff

Above:
Launching island for rocket testing as of 1937.

Left:
Map of the Army Test Center at Peenemünde.


Rugen
Putgarten
Stubbenkammer
Bergen
Thiessow
Greifswald
Ruden
Greifswalder Oie
Peenemünde
Wolgast
Zinnowitz
Pommersche Bucht
Anklam
Usedom
Swinemünde
Wollin
Cammin
Greifenberg
Stettin
Rönne
Nexo
Bornholm
50 km
100 km
150 km
200 km
250 km
300 km
Schußrichtung vom Prüfstand VII
55° n. Br.
54° n. Br.
Kolberg
Köslin
Stolp
Leba
Rixhöft
Halbinsel Hela
Neustadt
Danziger Bucht
Danzig
14°
15°
16°
17°
18°
19° östl. L.

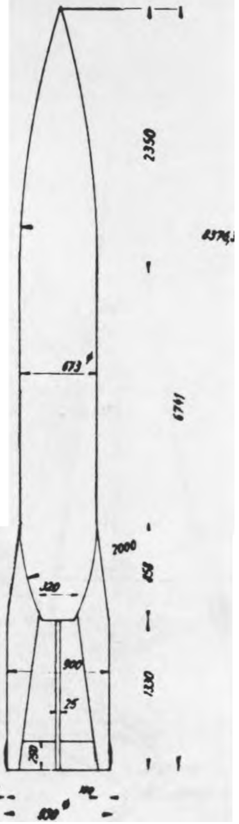
The subsequent Peenemünde firing range along the Pomeranian coast, with tracking stations on land.



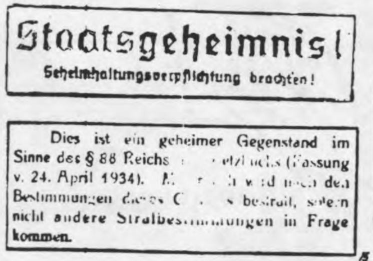
Erecting the A3 with the new erecting apparatus at the Greifswald Oie, early December 1937.

Modell mit vergrößertem Leitwerk

Model with enlarged control surfaces.


2350
8376,5
673 ⌀
6741
2000
858
320
900
1330
25
15
102
850 ⌀

The stamp says “State Secret!”

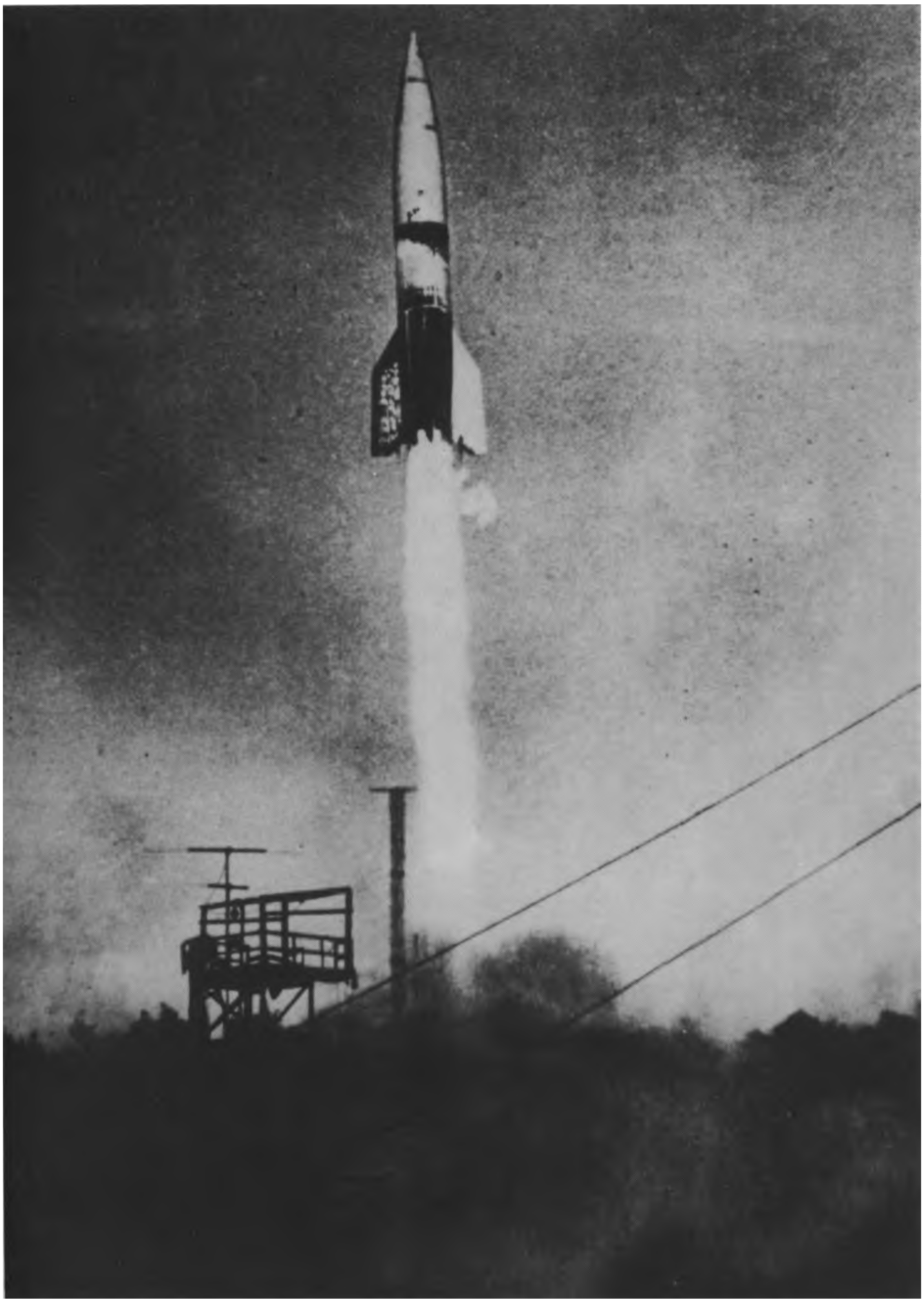


Staatsgeheimnis!

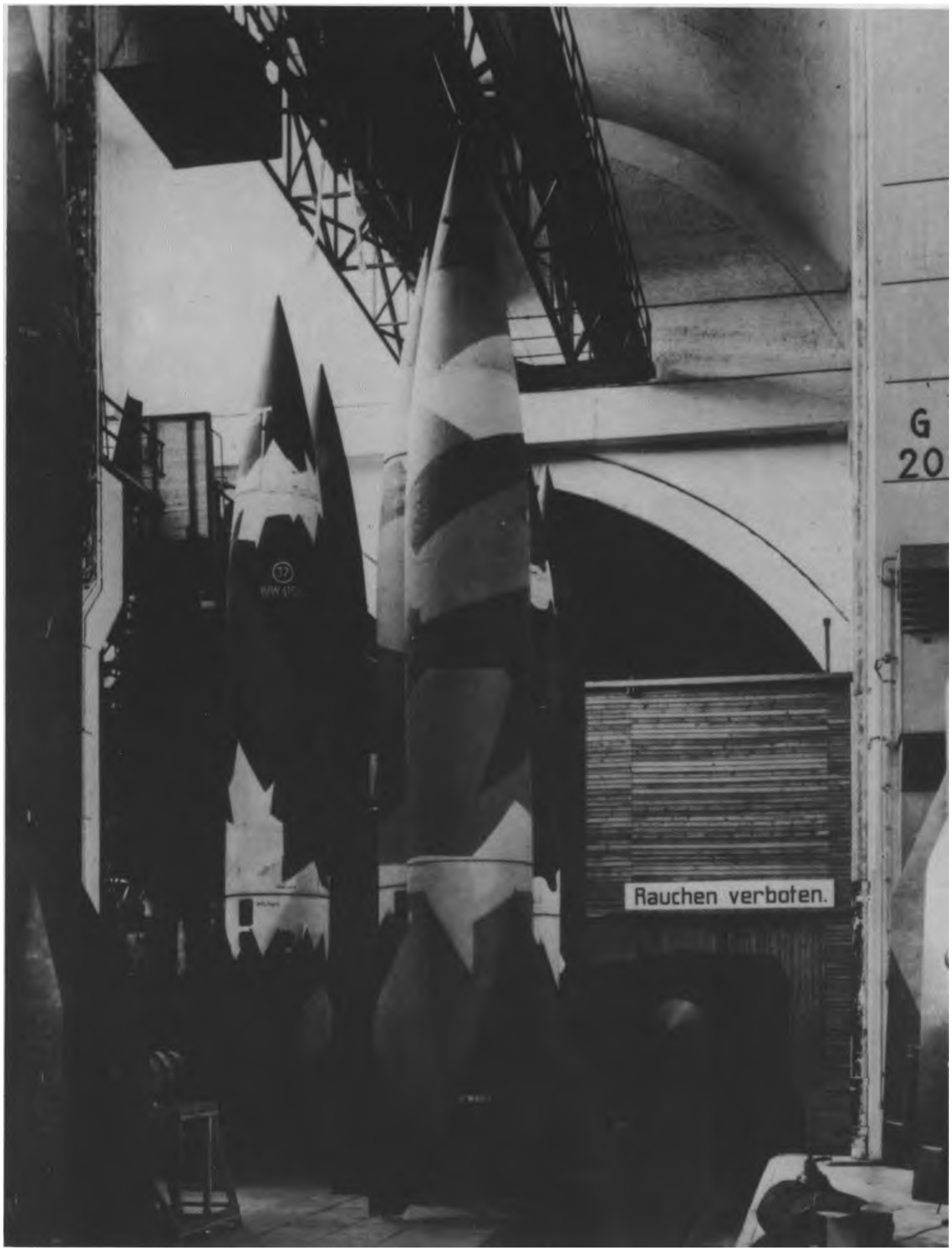
Geheimhaltungsverpflichtung beachten!

Dies ist ein geheimer Gegenstand im Sinne des § 88 Reichs[illegible]etzbuchs (Fassung v. 24. April 1934). M[illegible]h wird nach den Bestimmungen dieses G[illegible]s bestraft, sofern nicht andere Strafbestimmungen in Frage kommen.

Construction drawing of the A3 with improved control surfaces for the models of the supplying firms.

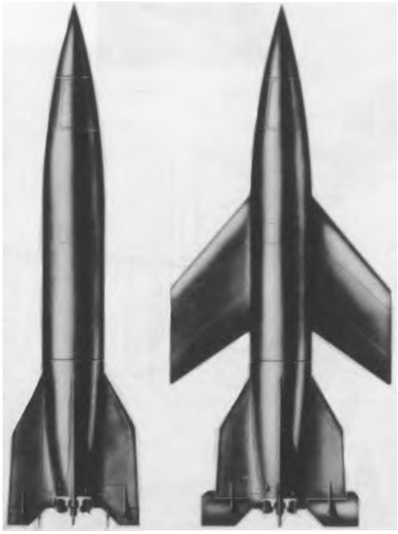


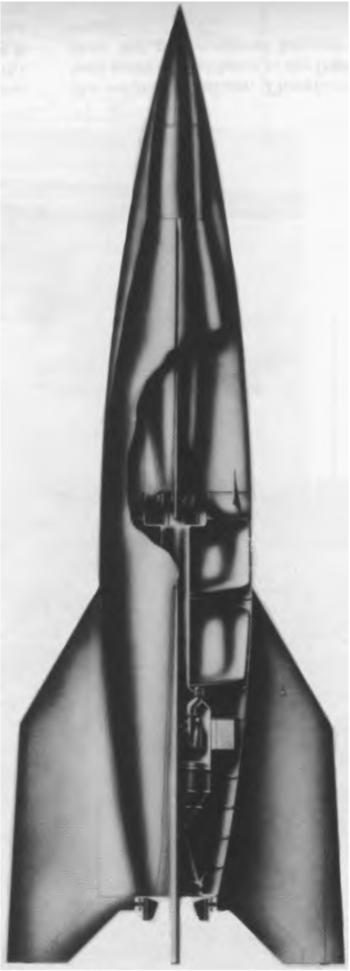
An A4 in a successful launch in the autumn of 1943 at Blizna, spied on for a long period by the Polish Resistance.


G
20
Rauchen verboten.

Eight A4 rockets, camouflaged and examined, at
Peenemünde in 1944.

The age of rockets has dawned, with futuristic designs.





Left: A4

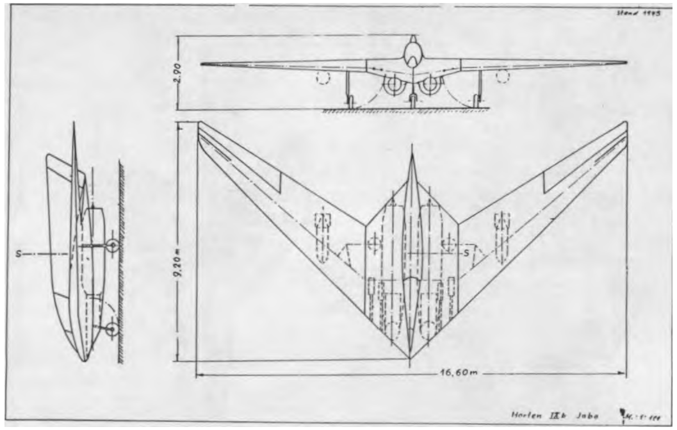
Stages: 1
Length: 14.03 meters
Weight: 12.9 tons
Thrust: 25 Mp
Load: 1 ton
Speed: 5760 kph
Range: 330 km
Development: 1936–1944
First launch: October 3, 1942
Final status: Series production

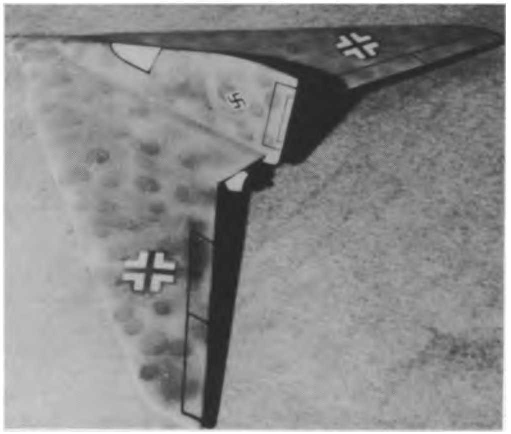
Center: A4b

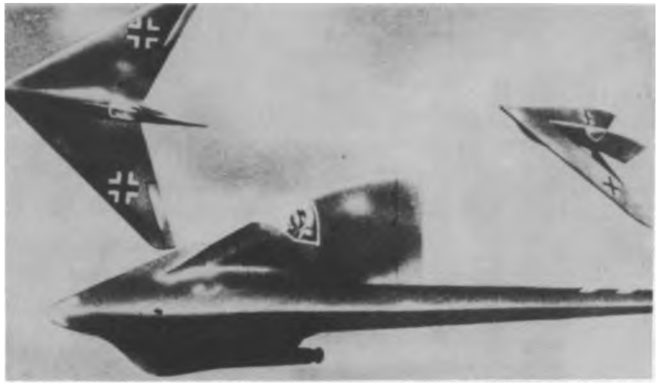
Stages: 1
Length: 14.03 meters
Weight: 13.5 tons
Thrust: 25 Mp
Load: 1 ton
Speed: 5500 kph
Range: 750 km
Development: 1940-1945
First launch: January 24, 1945
Final status: Testing

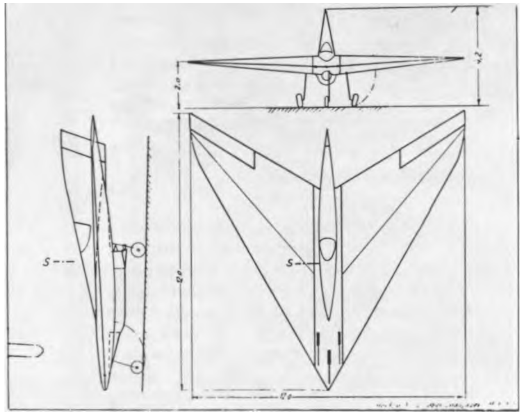
Right: A 9/A 10

Stages: 2
Length: 87 meters
Weight: 200 tons
Thrust:. 13 Mp
Speed: 4320 kph
Range: max. 5500 km
Development: 1940-1944
First launch: None
Final status: Pre-project









Aside from Alexander Lippisch the brothers Walter and Reimar Horten also pursued the idea of a flying wing. With their Horten IX B and Horten XIII jet fighter designs they came to the conclusion of stationing the pilot in the vertical stabilizer. Therefore, these birds bore some resemblance to the DM-1, although they did not progress beyond the project stage.

Above: Ho IX B, below Ho XIII B. Even here there were numerous variations and it’s not certain that all were true Horten designs.

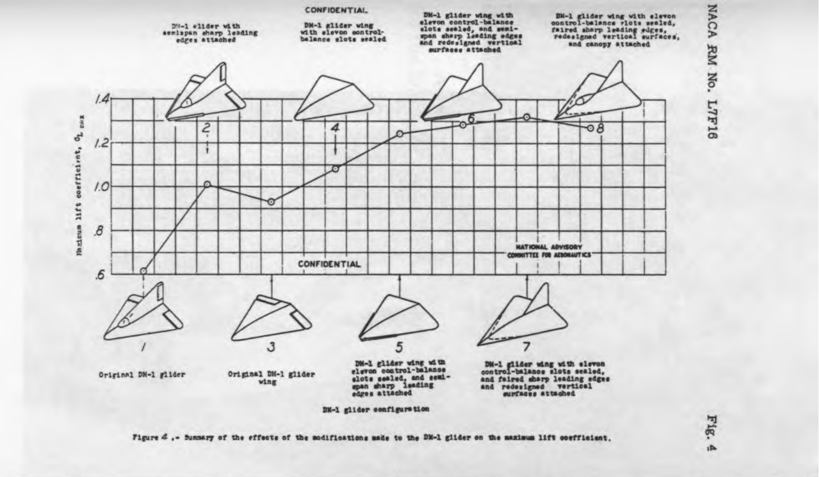
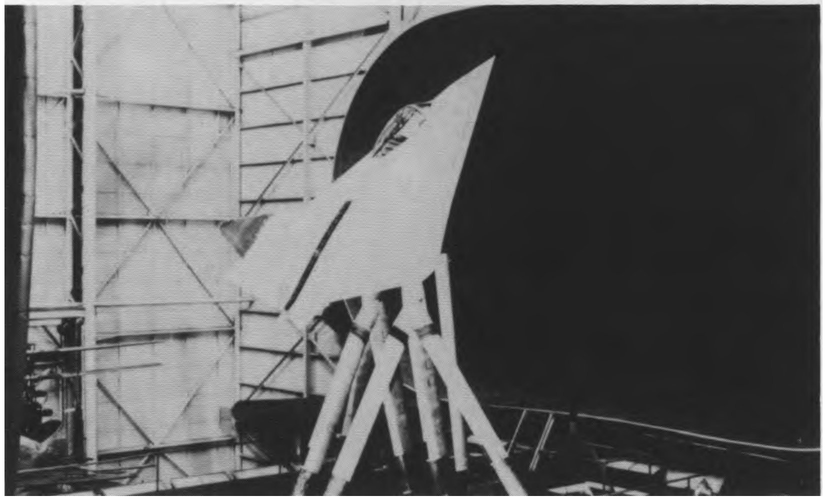
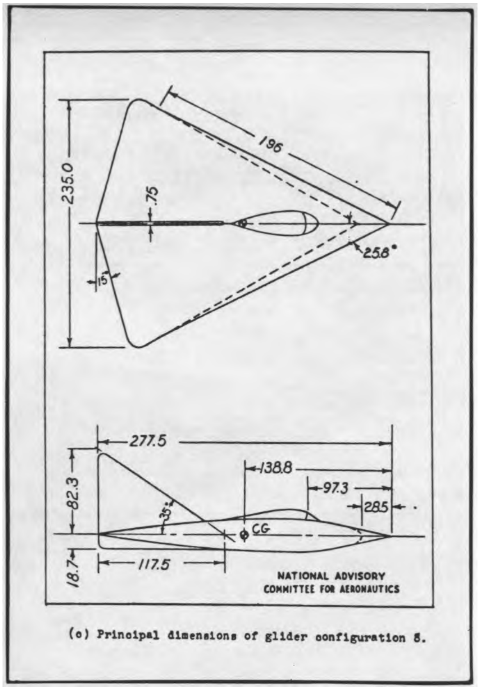


Figure 4 .- Summary of the effects of the modifications made to the DM-1 glider on the maximum lift coefficient.



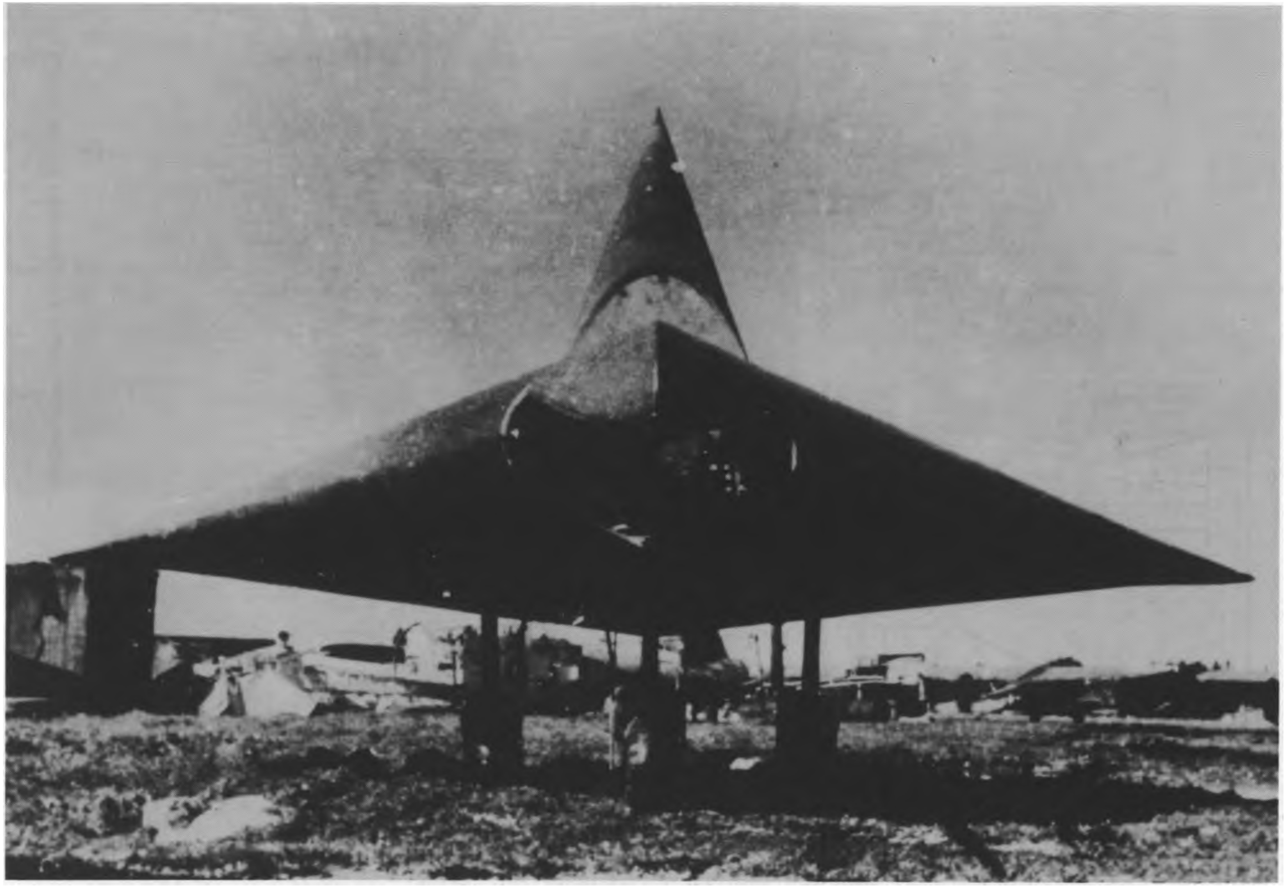

196
235.0
.75
15
25.8°
277.5
138.8
97.3
28.5
82.3
35°
CG
18.7
117.5
NATIONAL ADVISORY COMMITTEE FOR AERONAUTICS

(c) Principal dimensions of glider configuration 8.

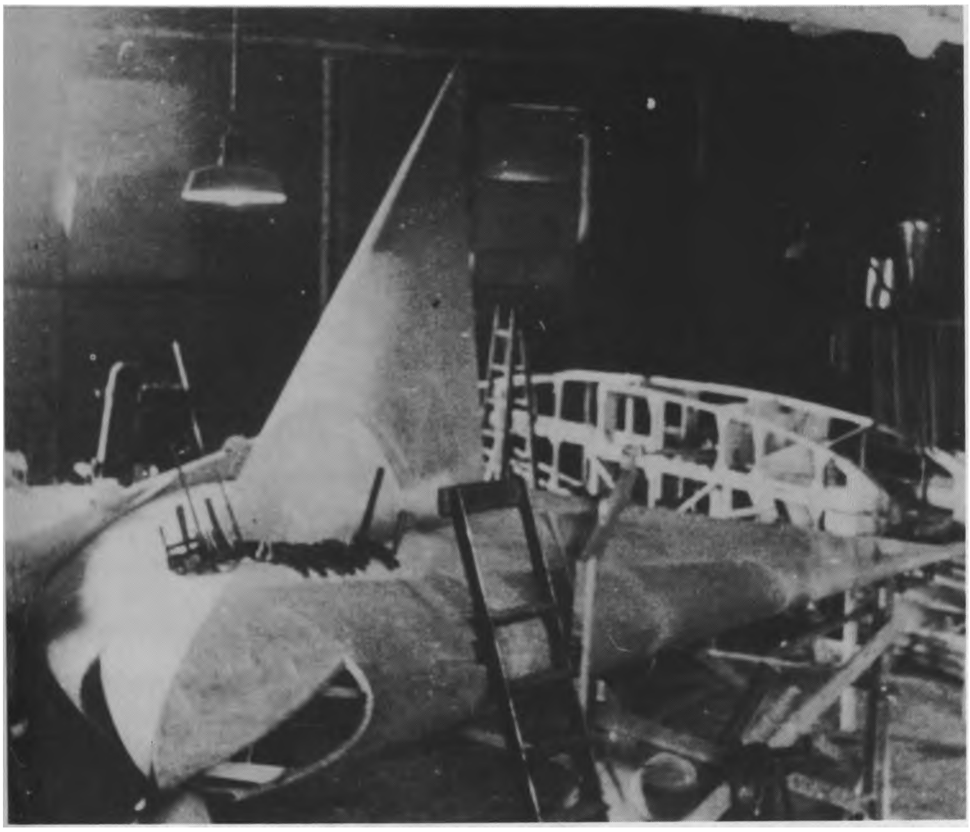
Above: The most favorable form for aircraft and pilot.

Above left: All tested configurations of the DM-1.

Left: Configuration #8 in the wind tunnel.



The DM-1 seen from the front.

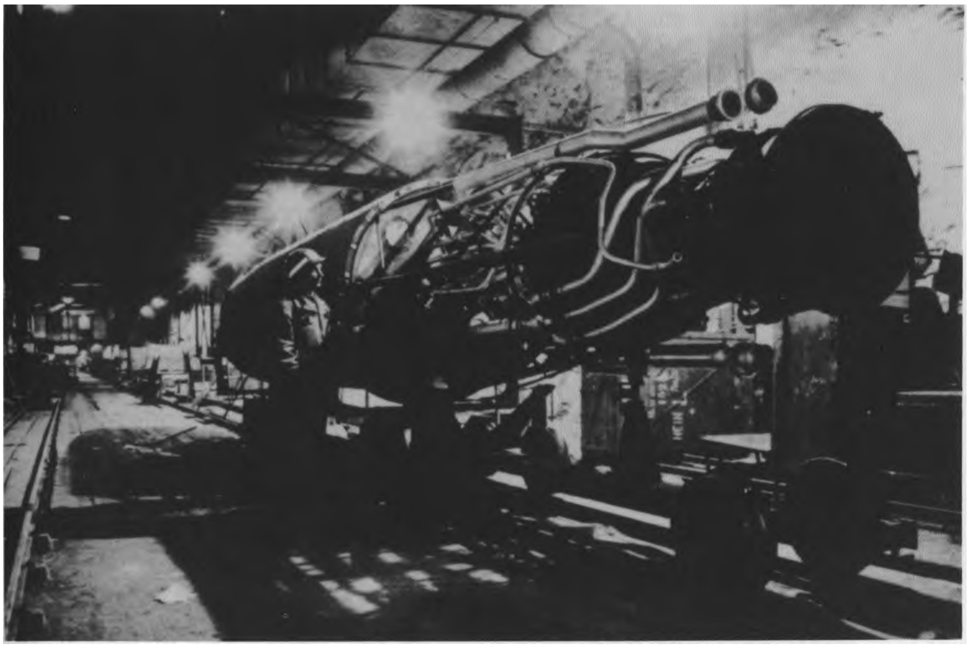


Airframe of the DM-1 from above. In the background can be seen the mockup for the DM-2/DM-3 under construction.

Left: Successful liftoff of an A4 four seconds after launching in the summer of 1943, seen from Test Site I.

The development of rocket artillery begins

Below: Inspection by the Army Weapons Office in 1943: from left to right Major General Dr. Dornberger (seen from rear), in civilian clothes Dr. Herrmann, Director of the supersonic wind tunnel, Lieutenant General Schneider, Chief of the Army Weapons Office, with binoculars, in front Dr. von Braun, Colonel Zanssen, Commander of Peenemünde.



An A4 at the “Central Works” in Niedersachswerfen after the Americans arrived on July 3, 1945, two days before the Russians.

Production continues underground, especially in the Harz.

CHAPTER 2

A Bit of Science Fiction

In the spring of 1949 a dozen reports filled with unimportant information that could easily be traced to ordinary phenomena having nothing to do with UFOs led the investigators of the Hynek Commission to hope that the wave of “sightings” would peter out naturally, since the affair had already lasted so long and crowds are notoriously fickle.

But their reasoning was faulty, for reports continued to trickle in; and in June something like a second Mantell Case almost occurred.

It happened in the space of a few minutes over the Tierras Calientes hills in Mexico. Its engines droning regularly in unison, a four-engined American military plane was crossing the Yucatan peninsula toward its base in Texas. Not a cloud was in the sky. Only a distant point of light stood out in the heavy tropical calm—obviously a motionless weather balloon at about the same altitude as the plane. As the distance between the two gradually shortened, the point of light began to take on a more definite shape, revealing the unmistakable characteristics of a saucer.

"Attention all crew members," the captain said distinctly over the intercom. "Unknown flying object at eleven o'clock."

The disc remained motionless in space at an altitude of about 8000 feet, with a light layer of vapor or whitish smoke hovering around it. When they had got within a mile of the object the flyers began to observe it attentively, hoping to make out some details of its construction that they could report to their superiors. But they hoped in vain.

After oscillating a number of times around its vertical axis like a top coming to rest, the mysterious machine suddenly started up, moving almost slantwise and quickly approaching the plane.

"What's he doing?" the co-pilot exclaimed apprehensively. "He's coming right at us!"

The disc almost brushed the left wing tip and then began to circle rapidly around the plane, bewildering the flyers. In order to escape this senseless, annoying maneuver, the pilot dived abruptly and took the plane down to about 3000 feet.

After stopping briefly at the original altitude, the disc also dropped down to 3000 feet and began to repeat its passes around the plane, gleaming like a mirror in the sunlight.

"He won't go away!" the captain said in alarm. "That damn son of a bitch is going to end up by crashing into our wing unless . . ." but he didn't get a chance to finish. His engines began to show a disturbing irregularity, either because of the violent eddies caused by the speed of the unknown object or because of some sort of interference with the plane's ignition system. As a result of the violent buffeting, the ailerons and the tail began to show signs of weakening.[1]

Having completely lost control of the plane, the captain regretfully had to order the crew to bail out. Under the umbrellas of their chutes, the flyers angrily watched the disc rise vertically to its original altitude and wait while the plane crashed into the swamp below.

When, after considerable difficulty, the flyers got back to their base and were being questioned, they declared among other things that, "properly speaking," the object had committed no act of aggression nor had it even indirectly employed a weapon. "We do not know if there were any men on board the disc, but it seems logical to assume that it was under human direction, because at first the machine hesitated slightly before dropping down to our lower altitude. An electronic device would have caused it to follow our plane from the moment we began to dive. . . . That flying in circles around our plane by that huge shining machine was truly frightening, blinding and bewildering us. . . . It was utterly impossible to maintain course."

The press did not learn about the results of the inquiry, for the exact place where the events occurred was kept secret and even the names of the flyers were never revealed.

What little trickled out about the episode—all, in fact, that has been reported—led *Fantastic Stories* buffs to proclaim: "The Martians are interested in our means of flight! When they're certain that our techniques are inferior to theirs and that we're no threat to them, they will undoubtedly land and establish friendly relations." And, encouraged by the circulation of stories about flying saucers piloted by tiny creatures, the wild speculation began on the best way to welcome them, what they would probably look like, the likelihood of their speaking English, the best ways of communicating with them in case they had no vocal organs, and other such subjects.

THE "JEKAMS CASE"

The permanent inquiry commission was getting ready to present the results of its fruitless two-year investigation when, on August 19, 1949, the Air Force itself was imprudent enough to nearly wreck the laborious edifice of arguments that was supposed to prove that the UFOs did not exist.

The Air Force command of Baltimore suddenly called a press conference and an authorized spokesman stated, to the understandable confusion of everyone present, that two different "prototypes" of airplanes which might solve the mystery of the famous saucers had been found on an abandoned farm near Glen Burnie.

The two machines had been built just before the war by one Jonathan E. Caldwell with the aid of a local mechanic, and one of the machines had even flown.

The Air Force statement said it was possible that Caldwell had conducted subsequent experiments with improved models based on the two inoperative prototypes that were discovered in the barn on his farm. The technical officer in charge of the Air Force's investigation said that in flight both models could resemble a flying saucer and could be prototypes of other perfected machines that might actually have been seen in American skies. Now the Air Force would have to locate Caldwell and find out if he had done any work on them since then, and for whom.

The two machines had been abandoned for years on that ramshackle farm and were falling to pieces along with it. Restoration was out of the question. Besides, Caldwell had conceded that it would be financially impossible to realize his ideas.

The builder had tried to combine the advantages and dynamic principles of the airplane and the helicopter and as a result the models had round wings and contrarotating propellers. But that was more than enough to stimulate even the most sluggish imagination. Hadn't the saucers remained motionless in the air just like helicopters? Weren't they perfectly circular like Caldwell's full-size models? And finally, didn't they seem to prefer the skies over the United States, the native country of the builder—who, incidentally, could not be found?[2]

The short official report started a sort of pilgrimage to the supposed "hatchery" of the first Yankee saucers, which was featured as the lead story in the picture weeklies.

It seemed that the mystery of the saucers was about to be solved in a way that would uphold the prestige of the United States. But then on August 20, less than twenty-four hours after the press conference, the same source that had announced the discovery demolished the myth that the saucers were made in the U.S.A.

The same command stated through another equally authoritative spokesman that the two experimental craft discovered in Maryland “have absolutely no connection with the reported phenomena of flying saucers,” that were supposedly observed in the two years 1947–1948. The Air Force now charged that when the two unusual craft that had been constructed before the war by an engineer who cannot now be located were discovered, the press had indulged in the most fantastic speculations, but unfortunately, said the Air Force, the mystery of the flying saucers nevertheless remained unsolved. Had some superior called the rash Baltimore command to order? . . .

In their fervor to investigate Caldwell’s creations—according to the press, other frustrated inventors claimed priority for similar ideas—the newspapers got sidetracked. Then they soon turned to more pressing subjects.

Russia was secretly overcoming its disadvantage in the field of atomic power. But in order to maintain its own undisputed mastery of this terrible power, America was multiplying its nuclear establishments and preparing new types of bombs. The growing industrial hunger for radioactive minerals had led American authorities to encourage prospecting for them on United States soil, and thousands of volunteers attracted by the prospects of wealth envisioned in their “uranium fever” began to crisscross the most inaccessible reaches of the country, armed with Geiger counters, patience, and, most of all, with hope. The principal scientific institutes also contributed to the prospectors’ efforts by forming expeditions specifically equipped for prospecting for minerals.

In 1949 one of these expeditions, headed by Professor Jekams and made up of five geologists and two Indian guides, had been hiking for several hours in a sharp September wind toward Mount Rainier, in the very area of the famous first sighting. The group crossed over the moraine of the Carbon River glacier, left the edge of the thick pine forest, and climbed along the bare, rocky ledges. As yet they had not found any trace of the precious mineral.

The sky was perfectly free of clouds and the sun beat implacably against the flanks of the mountain, probing into the lava beds. Exhausted by the long hike and the hot sun, Professor Jekams leaned back against the rock face. He was estimating how much farther they still had to go when a shadow appeared on the ground.

What kind of cloud can form in a few seconds in such a cloudless sky? the geologist wondered as he raised his head to investigate the curious phenomenon.

“Three flying saucers of exceedingly large dimensions,” he recounted later, “were banking in the clear sky. Two of them remained at an altitude of about 5000 feet. The third, which was casting its shadow on the ground below, was at only 1500 feet and almost directly above us. We estimated that it could not have been less than 250 feet in diameter.”

Frightened by that gigantic mass of metal which hung in the air as though suspended by an invisible thread, the group took refuge under some boulders and awaited developments.

“With a strange wavering motion, the nearest disc suddenly moved and slowly began to descend toward nearby Dome Peak, not stopping until it was about fifty feet from the summit. From the underside, which seemed to revolve around a central fixed part of the machine, came occasional flashes and sparks accompanied by a humming like that of a fan, almost as though the engine of the craft was idling. The enormous circular mass remained motionless for a few moments and then began to rise and fall laterally.”

“Did it rise and fall the way weather balloons sometimes do?”

“Not exactly. To be perfectly accurate, it wobbled like a top coming to rest, but much more slowly. The maneuver was also accompanied by slight gains and losses of altitude. It almost seemed to be dancing in the air and, through an association of ideas, the evolutions reminded me of the well-known dance of the bees. This curious maneuver lasted almost a quarter of an hour, then the craft rose vertically at fantastic speed.”

“What about the other craft?”

“After waiting at a high altitude for the first disc to return, the other discs also descended and repeated the same movements one after the other. All three regrouped at about 5000 feet in a triangular formation, and a little later they disappeared beyond the horizon,” that is, toward the Canadian border—as usual.[3]

THE SUPPOSED “NEGATIVE POLE” OF GRAVITY

When the public information office of the Department of Defense allowed the facts in the Jekams Case to become public, those who believed the flying saucers came from an extraterrestrial source found a simple explanation for the inexplicable maneuvers of the UFOs on the summit of Dome Peak in the operation of antigravity.

The hypothesis that the UFOs were using antigravitational energy was originally advanced by the versatile British writer Gerald Heard. He took it up from rumors making the rounds during the period of the first sightings in 1947. One of these rumors, for example, seriously reported that an American private plane had been mysteriously stopped in mid-flight and held suspended in the air by a flying saucer that then flew around it for a considerable time, apparently in order to study it! The antigravitational energy hypothesis found its most ardent champion in former Marine Major Donald H. Keyhoe, who, unable to perfect his theory by reason of the obvious lack of hard scientific data, broadcast it to the public at large through his best-selling books on flying saucers, which at first he claimed were of Martian origin and, after this claim was shaken by the attacks of astronomers, of unspecified interstellar origin.

According to Heard, magnetism was only the opposite pole of the gravitational force that keeps us attached to the planet, and the flying saucers could resist this force with a “counterforce, a negative reaction to the pull of the earth, as on the negative pole of the magnet objects are not drawn in but driven out.” Thus the discs could hover and move through the air as though held up by some mysterious gigantic magnet, and “maybe they go to the South Pole because, down there, at the end of the world-magnet, they can recharge themselves best?”[4]

Starting off from the convenient hypothesis that it is technically possible “somehow” to have an influence on the earth's magnetic field, producing a “precipitation” or a variation similar in concept to a current drop in electricity, Major Keyhoe hypothesized that the UFOs would cause continual magnetic precipitations in the zones they were flying over and would draw from them the power needed to stay aloft and move. In short, they could move on a sort of magic and invisible antigravitational carpet which unrolled in front of them and rolled up behind them as they flew along.[5]

Of course the inexhaustible energies of the cosmos, and specifically the direct transformation of the electromagnetic energy of cosmic rays into mechanical energy, was not forgotten among the rash of hypotheses put forward.

In 1953, Lieutenant Plantier was garrisoned at Blida, in Algeria, when his commanding officer, Captain Rougier, saw a flying disc and described it to him, making such an impression that the idea struck Plantier that it might be possible to realize something similar right here on earth. The technical-minded Plantier then sought to work out theoretically a machine capable of executing all the evolutions that had been attributed to flying saucers over a long series of observations. Finding the power sources then available to man to be inadequate, he decided to rely on cosmic rays, which develop far more energy than the complete disintegration of the atomic nucleus—a state impossible to achieve.

In September 1953 he published the results of his theorizing in the magazine *Forces Aériennes Françaises* under the title “La Propulsion des Soucoupes Volantes par Action Directe sur l’Atome.” Naturally, Plantier avoided sketching out the mechanical arrangements that could put the idea to actual use, considering them to be an undertaking beyond his capabilities. He merely imagined that cosmic radiation passing through the disc—simplistically conceived of in the form of a huge symmetrical biconvex lens surmounted by an elegant hemispherical glass dome—would activate a special internal “field force.” Reacting against the natural magnetic fields, whether terrestrial or sidereal, this field force would annul the force of gravity and inertia, enveloping the aircraft with something definable only as a kind of enormous boundary layer, and would develop those bright lights that keep changing color and so impress and perplex ufologists. The maneuvering of the machine in space would be effectuated by partial or complete masking of the propulsive "force field."[6]

A SERIES OF HOAXES

Thanks to the inexhaustible vein of ideas and speculations opened up by the notion of antigravity, as expounded by ufologists, the inflammable question of the "nationality" of the discs also found easy explanations in the lively imaginations of sensationmongers.

In September 1949 American papers published under large headlines the details of an unprecedented event. An enormous unknown airship had fallen in flames near the Mexican frontier. Buried in the wreckage, a tiny "magnetic radio" emitted incomprehensible signals at regular intervals. Probably—according to one reporter—the Martian base from which the ship had taken off was trying to reestablish contact with the members of the ill-starred expedition. The story went on to say that the body of one of the pilots had been recovered almost intact. He was only about three feet tall. He was humanoid in form, but he had huge eyes without eyelids, tiny pointed ears, and a mouth that protruded but otherwise resembled ours; his head was enormous in comparison to the rest of his body. According to the reporter, the tiny corpse had been promptly sent to the Rosenwald Foundation in Chicago for careful autopsy. The foundation naturally denied the story vehemently. And finally it turned out that the "eyewitness" of the event—and also the only begetter of the sensational news—was a certain Roy L. Dimmick—a salesman for the Apache Powder Company, a gunpowder firm—"a very respectable man from every point of view."[7]

A wild yarn about a disc flown by pilots from Jupiter who were dressed in the style of our great-grandparents got short shrift. Then there was the story that at the beginning of March 1950, in the Chilean Andes, a geographical expedition had found some fragments of a disc-shaped astro-ship that had exploded when it tried to force an entry into our atmosphere. A minor newspaper variant on this story had it that the fragments were found "in a wild region of the Rocky Mountains" and that there was no doubt they came from interstellar space, for "the pieces are made of a still-unidentified metal; moreover, the fact that they were immediately sequestered by a military scientific commission that has since refused to give any sort of report on them proves the importance of the find."

A newspaperman named Perry Heard declared that he encountered four policemen one evening along a deserted road in Missouri. They were taking in a strange dwarf who was babbling in an unknown language into a sort of small oval box. "Perhaps," wrote Heard, "he was a Martian transmitting news of his capture by the Earth people. I wanted to snap a few pictures, but the policemen brusquely ordered me away." Frankly, it must be agreed that this story of a Martian transmitting interplanetary news is a brain wave that tops them all. It was a natural for a freewheeling American reporter.

For a few more months an incredible number of hoaxes of the same sort kept the thick ranks of American UFO buffs in a state of continual agitation, for they were sure that they were in on the most wonderful event of the century. The time was now ripe for writing any sort of "scientific" nonsense. In fact, the so-called Scully Report was born in this atmosphere of hoaxes. It was a collection of improbable revelations put into book form by the humorist Frank Scully, who, however, masked his real professional identity. According to the publisher's preface, the book was actually written by "an American specialist in scientific research." Its first printing of 40,000 copies, which was quickly sold out, brought to every corner of the United States the marvelous story of the little men who came from the planet Venus on a disc-shaped astro-ship propelled by magnetic energy at speeds faster than light.

After the fantastic success of the report, Scully even claimed that the bodies of these little men could be seen in a secret room of the Pentagon preserved in hermetically sealed bottles of alcohol, and that President Truman had taken a personal interest in the matter and had shown privately a number of times a movie film that illustrated the mechanical details of several Venusian interplanetary ships recovered in the middle of the Arizona desert.[8]

NEW ADVANCE UNITS FROM MARS?

Only a few months after the Air Force's easygoing Report No. 102 was written—that is, in the spring of 1950—a third wave of UFO sightings heightened the atmosphere of comedy.

During the first two weeks of February, strange incandescent objects had appeared over Arizona and Florida, over Algeria and Denmark, off the Chilean coast, in the skies of Patagonia, and even over the frozen reaches of the Antarctic, where Captain Augusto Orrego made a number of photographs of three huge flying saucers that spun in echelon in the polar sky above the Arthur Pratt naval base.[9]

In March UFO activity intensified and extended over the entire Western hemisphere, showing special preference for Central America, where their flights over Chihuahua, Durango, and Mexico City were of spectacular proportions.

On March 18 a number of silvery saucers—perhaps twenty—invaded the sky over Farmington, New Mexico, continuously changing speed and direction. H. F. Thatcher, director of the local surveying institute, was able to determine the approximate altitude (fifteen to eighteen miles) and their average speed (between 950 and 1000 mph) by triangulation. For nearly an hour these mysterious flyers crisscrossed the sky in a complex geometric pattern, intent on some unknown mission.

But where on earth or in space had those machines come from? The answer was simple, according to ufologists. From the twenty-third to the twenty-eighth of March, Mars was at its closest distance to earth. These ships were only the advance units of the enormous flotilla of astro-ships that penetrates our atmosphere when Mars is in that position. And in fact, almost as confirmation of this strange idea, sightings of UFOs in the following days grew to an astonishing crescendo.

On March 27, one of those ships, which many people were now inclined to believe really were reconnaissance craft from the "red planet," was seen by a very well-qualified observer. Former civil aviation inspector Bertram Toten came upon the disc at an altitude of about 5000 feet some forty miles from Washington, D.C. At the moment of sighting it was spinning like a top in a slow but steep descent. Afterward he dove in order to follow it, but the unknown object suddenly stopped, wavered slightly and then sharply shot off, climbing, and disappeared into the clouds.

In the routine report he wrote for the authorities, Toten conservatively estimated the disc's speed as it flew off to be in the neighborhood of several hundred miles per hour; he gave its diameter as about thirty-five feet and its thickness in the center as about fifteen feet or perhaps a bit more and reported that it was followed "by a short, luminous misty contrail doubtless produced by some kind of jet engine."

At the end of the bloodless adventure, Toten also noted that he had seen no evidence of aggressive intentions in the behavior of the presumed pilots of the disc, and that "because of its fantastic agility it was impossible to learn anything about what kind of engine it had, whether rocket or turbine, or how it was able to maneuver, since it had no steering surfaces."

At this point, for the nth time, certain American papers wondered whether or not the military authorities were not hiding something—for example, some extraordinary national secret that might indeed be called a "flying saucer."

Taking the ball on the bounce, the well-known radio reporter Henry J. Taylor launched his sensational "trial balloon." On the evening of April 3, 1950, during a broadcast from Los Angeles, what later were sarcastically termed the "Taylor revelations" by ufologists threw the United States into a state of temporary euphoria.

The flying saucers, the well-informed reporter declared, were two types of highly secret American military inventions. The first was a genuine saucer that whistled through the air, could climb to 30,000 feet or more and dive to 1500 feet and disintegrate in the air. These machines were pilotless and varied in size from 18 inches in diameter (like the one found in Galveston Bay, in Texas) to a huge 250 feet, and they had been flying for three years.

The other objects that many people took for flying discs were really "Flying Phantoms," he said; that is, jet planes like the XF-5U that the U.S. Navy had admitted was now in development. They were wingless circular objects that could fly at fantastic speeds. Those who had seen them said they resembled flying cigars, but in fact any circular body that moved at a very high speed would appear to be elongated both because of the trail of air that followed it and because of other complicated optical phenomena.

There were alleged to be several types of flying saucer, just as there were several types of conventional planes, he went on. Experiments on them began on June 25, 1947, and since then the experiments had been conducted on an ever increasing scale. Some were really flat, with the outer edge raised like a saucer or basin turned upside down. Others were thicker at the center, like pies. One of the latter type had been photographed in Wildwood, New Jersey, and had been seen elsewhere. Some were piloted, others were not. They left no contrail or exhaust, gave no exterior indication of their method of propulsion, and were absolutely silent. They could stop momentarily in the air and move off again toward the right or left, fluttering and picking up speed, lazily at first, you might say—as airline pilots had unanimously reported—until they shot off like lightning.

The construction of the flying saucers had gone through several phases of development, reaching its most intense experimental stages coincidentally with the public sightings of July 1947, January 1948, and the present period. At each of these three phases the saucers had become bigger and better.

I know, said Taylor, what these so-called flying saucers are for, but am not at liberty to say what it is, for it is an important and wonderful military secret. When the competent authorities are ready to make the matter known to the public, I will be delighted to tell you the whole story, for it is a fantastic bit of news, something truly wonderful for our country.

The second mystery in our skies had not only been seen, it had been heard, he said. Generally this object hums through the night, with flames coming out of square openings around the edge of the body; at first sight these openings look like windows. This "Flying Phantom" is in reality a huge jet plane that looks like a cake. Its shape is more or less circular and around the edge of the disc is a row of jet exhausts. The engines are inside. In flight, it looks like a flat disc flaming through the air, and its speed is so great that I am not permitted to mention it. This disc is not from Mars or Russia but from Maryland. The U.S. Navy has confirmed it, and I have been authorized to release the news. But any further information must come from the military authorities.

If you find a flying saucer on the ground, he told his audience—which is not very likely, since most of them are made of a material that disintegrates in the air and disappears after a certain period of time—you would find stamped on it in black letters the following words, which were found on the small plate that fell in Texas: "Military secret United States of America Army Air Forces," then a number and this: "Anyone damaging or revealing description or whereabouts of this missile is subject to prosecution by the United States Government. For recovery, call immediately" (here follows a telephone number and the address of a military air base). "Non-explosive." The flying saucers did exist, he added, and that was really good news!

MORE "GOOD NEWS"

After the sensation caused by this story, a U.S. Navy spokesman—one who really was authorized to speak for the Navy—energetically denied that any research or experimentation on types of planes or missiles that could even remotely be mistaken for flying saucers was taking place under Navy auspices.[10]

By a strange coincidence (but is that all it was?), in 1945 McDonnell Aircraft had test-flown the first 500-mile-per-hour jet fighter, known as the Phantom, which was built specifically for the U.S. Navy: the XF-1H, which later received the designation FH-1 and became very well known in aviation circles abroad as the first American carrier-based jet fighter.

In addition, Taylor's XF-50 was identified as the V-173, the Flying Pancake, designed by Charles Zimmerman, which was flown in November 1942 as a test for the production of planes with circular wings for use on aircraft carriers. The perfected experimental version, the XF5U-1, known as The Skimmer, was built in 1944 but was, however, destroyed four years later, unbeknownst to Taylor, during a secret test flight. According to one writer, the intrinsic and incurable aerodynamic instability of low-aspect-ratio wings led the Navy technicians at the time to drop the development of a formula that had been superseded by new developments in wing flaps, and the surviving V-173 ended up in the Naval Air Station in Norfolk, Virginia, where it still lies in storage.[11]

On the heels of the Taylor "revelations," the technical press carried stories on the "total combustion" take-off rockets for heavily loaded planes that had been designed in Germany in 1944 by Professor Hermann Oberth; the sheaths of these rockets were made of nitrate of ammonia and disintegrated in the air after their fuel was spent. Nevertheless, it was immediately apparent that the radio-controlled antiaircraft devices that completely destroyed themselves and that Taylor mentioned in his report were launched from nowhere but his brain.

On April 4, while visiting the military base at Key West, President Truman himself unequivocally denied the Taylor story, declaring that he was completely in the dark as to the alleged facts. From Washington the Secretary of Defense, Louis Johnson, doubled the dose, asserting jokingly that he would be delighted to have the department purchase a couple of squadrons of flying saucers if that would help national security in any way. Nevertheless, a few days later Taylor calmly reversed his field, falling back on a much more modest thesis. In a broadcast over the A.B.C. network he declared in effect: Official American denials of the existence of our flying saucers are worth a billion dollars to Russia and its "cold war." It will be a stroke of real luck if the Kremlin does not seize the opportunity to announce that Soviet scientists are launching flying saucers all over the world. With things as they are, the American people will have no other choice than to conclude that the saucers that are regularly sighted are produced by Russia—which is not the case—and that they are concealing in their mysterious womb the danger of a new Pearl Harbor instead of the proof of simple American activities.

The United States, he said, could raise the morale of the peoples of Western Europe, influencing them in its favor, whenever it simply declared that it had no other comment to make aside from the fact that America was creating a number of useful, if incredible, instruments. These were not dangerous instruments but good news for peace-loving peoples.

Near Minneapolis and elsewhere in the country, he said, we had for some time been launching balloons for the study of cosmic rays, enormous translucent things made of plastic that on the ground were only a hundredth of their size. At high altitudes expansion causes a balloon to blow itself up into a gigantic monster a hundred feet tall and seventy feet in diameter, as tall as an eight-story building, all in pulsating plastic. At an altitude of 100,000 feet some of these come under the influence of the high winds of the stratosphere and reach speeds of two hundred miles per hour. At sunset, because of their great height, they remain illuminated, assuming a reddish tint. The rays of the sun, angling upward and illuminating their undersides, give the balloons the appearance of flat, circular objects that are burning and flying in the sky.

Their instruments, Taylor reported, are then returned to earth by means of parachutes while the sphere, its job done, explodes and the large pieces of plastic material that fall to the ground cause great astonishment when they are found. The instrument basket has flashing lights that can be seen at incredible distances. These were apparatuses in normal use, he said, and he could not understand why the Air Force could not openly discuss them!

This statement—also appearing under the label of "good news"—brought to public knowledge the thesis of Professor Urner Liddel of the U.S. Navy's Research and Study Office, who claimed that the mysterious flying saucers were nothing other than the Navy's Skyhook balloons. The idea was not new, but the type of balloon was.

Yes, confirmed Professor Liddel, who at the time was in charge of the nuclear physics branch of the Office of Naval Research, the flying saucers were really blown-up balloons in the true sense of the word. They were simply the so-called Skyhook balloons used for research into cosmic rays. Nothing was more likely than that Captain Mantell had lost his life following one of these balloons.[12]

All these highly placed authorities entering the picture had the effect of leading many Americans to the inner conviction that "in spite of everything" the denials really threw a smokescreen over the existence of some American secret weapon.

On May 23 a Gallup Poll established the following: 92 percent of Americans still believed in Taylor's version of the flying saucers; 5 percent thought they were extraterrestrial; and three percent believed they were Russian.

The view that military circles supported—namely, that the UFOs did not exist—could not have been more thoroughly rejected.

Following the disappearance of the mysterious airships toward the end of 1950, the stocks of the most obstinate proponents of the Martian theory collapsed because all during the spring they had imprudently maintained that the space explorers would surely soon land. June came and the explorers remained completely indifferent and idle even in the face of the outbreak of the Korean War.

The failure of the American flying saucers to appear on the battlefields of Korea, when their intervention might have averted the hasty retreat of the American expeditionary force toward the port of Fusan, caused the percentage of Americans who believed that the U.S. Air Force had secret arsenals to fall practically to zero.

In the general confusion, the theory of an extraterrestrial source for the UFOs gained a few points. By consulting old almanacs and medieval chronicles, interpreting ancient myths in the most personal way, and rummaging among the dusty files of old newspapers, a number of "scholars" then discovered that more than once in the chronicles of the distant past there were references to the transient appearance of mysterious shining flying bodies. During 1951 this discovery allowed the ufologists to pass over their recent cropper in silence and to proclaim to the four winds that "flying saucers have visited the earth before and they are almost as old as mankind itself—perhaps even older!"

ALLEGED UFOS IN THE PAST

One of the first people to occupy himself in studies of celestial phenomena was Charles H. Fort, who died in 1932, fifteen years before the term "flying saucer" came into use. Having spent his life compiling books of strange air stories, he was convinced that supernatural beings from other worlds had visited earth through the centuries.

Today ufologists consider Charles Hoy Fort as a sort of illustrious precursor, so much so that in order to honor his memory (and to reap financial returns) his literary labors have been reprinted in a huge volume under the title *The Books of Charles Fort.*

It would be pointless to give here an example of the prose of this honorary ufologist, for the evidence he gives is of more interest to the investigators of ordinary celestial phenomena. But his methods of interpretation and research, transferred to the present day, have influenced many, among them, for example, the British writer Harold T. Wilkins, an avant-garde ufologist-archeologist-mythologist. In his heavily documented collection Wilkins has managed to list several hundred alleged UFO sightings in the past, the oldest of which goes back to 222 B.C.[13] On the basis of the same criteria, the American ufologist Desmond Leslie was the first to extend the "genealogy" of the UFOs to the remotest and most legendary times of prehistory.[14]

It is not very difficult to tear down the enormous edifice of ancient evidence that the ufologists have constructed. Examples prior to the eighteenth century are too vague to have any significance or determining importance and—if seriously examined—can be quite easily explained by ascribing them, case by case, to the appearance of ball or pearlitic lightning, multiple meteorites or the fall of large aerolites, to the sudden formation of lenticular clouds, or to some rare phenomenon of atmospheric mirage inexplicable to the ancients.

Almost all the more recent evidence falls perfectly in the area of the historical development of aerostatics.

If we add to this the fact that ufologists have often knowingly altered the texts of old accounts in order to better adapt them to their own ends,[15] we must agree that, despite the newness and complexity of the UFO problem, it was not necessary to expend so much imagination. *Human technology, especially when directed by the military—who, within broad limits, don't have to worry about money—has advanced much more than* *seems apparent or than is publicly known.* And we must also admit that there was no reason to think up forms of propulsion capable of shifting at will and to their own advantage the so-called "neutral point" that exists between the various planets.[18]

Some ufologists, seduced by the idea that this "neutral point" actually exists, have indeed proposed starting practical research into the field of antigravity propulsion; and some ingenuous experiments have been carried out with "promising" results—promising only because of the enthusiastic researchers' happy ignorance of certain physical laws.

It was maintained that levitation as practiced by mediums is without doubt a verified physical phenomenon and that it acts against the force of gravity. We know very well—the enthusiasts proclaimed—that long ascetic practice and possibly some still-unknown drug can induce it in normal subjects as well, and who knows but what this may not be precisely the right way to arrive at the formulation of the mysterious basic laws of antigravitational flight, just as the study of the flight of birds revealed to man the first rudiments of mechanical flight![17]

In any case, even though a number of world powers were already beginning to conduct special research into subatomic particles in order to isolate hypothetical "gravitone"—research that was undoubtedly serious but that still has not yielded any practical results—in the field of this new science (called electrogravitics in the United States), the evidence for antigravity as the means of propulsion for the discs was completely negative at the beginning of 1952.

PRELIMINARY RECAPITULATION

In the spring, when the UFOs reappeared over a number of states and over neighboring Canada and Mexico, the press as usual gave a good deal of publicity to the most clear-cut episodes.

The argument over whether they were Martian discs or Soviet discs—the United States having now been ruled out—started up again, and the investigation that had gone under the successive names of projects Sign, Grudge, and Twinkle was hurriedly exhumed and given the conventional unromantic name of Project Blue Book.

The direction of the new inquiry was taken over by the Air Technical Intelligence Center (A.T.I.C.) of Wright-Patterson Field, which proclaimed that it wanted to get "to the bottom of the question."

For a start, more than 1300 sightings reported between the fateful June 24, 1947, and March 25, 1952, were carefully reexamined, with the result that: "23.54 percent of the reports speak of disc or spherical shapes; 8.25 percent of spindle shapes resembling cigars or rockets; 2.55 percent of flying wings; 0.6 percent of groups of lights." Whence it was deduced that "38 percent (of the sightings) can be attributed to astronomical or atmospheric phenomena; 13 percent to research balloons; 22 percent to flocks of migratory birds or airplanes flying in the stratosphere; 10 percent to other phenomena that cannot be explained because not enough details were reported; and 15 percent to unexplainable phenomena."

While the preparatory work for the new inquiry was getting under way fast and furiously in the offices of the A.T.I.C., for the fourth time unknown flying bodies began to reappear, the sightings growing in intensity with a frightening rhythm.

It is at this point that the first "contactees" appear, that is, those fortunate mortals who boasted of being in friendly communication with the superhuman visitors from space by means of direct contact, telepathy, light signals, or small personal radio transmitters. And the story of the supposed extraterrestrial origin of the UFOs became terribly complicated.

NOTES

1. See article in the magazine *Ali* (Milan), May 12, 1952. And *cf.* American press reports, March 29, 1950: Pilots John Power and Miguel Angel Delgado of the Venezuelan Air Lines encountered over Caracas a mysterious flying body resembling an enormous tortoise surrounded by whirling gases. Quickly approaching their DC-3, it passed by, nearly touching the

plane. The air turbulence was so violent that Power, who for a moment was afraid that they were going to be hit by the "tortoise," was able to keep the plane on its course only with great difficulty and with a quick acrobatic maneuver. (Clearly a supersonic shock wave was formed on the wing involved as the object flew past and was caused by the differences in speed between the aircraft and the propulsive jets of the "tortoise.")

2. In 1932 Caldwell had built a full-size flying model of a plane with circular wing of the "parasol" type, so called because it was raised above the fuselage. The first product of the Glen Burnie "factory" was an agile and interesting machine for the time, but it had the advantages and, above all, the serious defects of all low-aspect-ratio wings—lateral instability. Its characteristics were tested the following year by Professor J. Owen Evans in the large wind tunnel in Los Angeles. Then the noted American flyer Jimmy Doolittle flew it and established its modest speeds (top speed of 97 mph, landing speed of 23 mph). Thereupon the builder optimistically announced to the press the future preparation of a plane with a circular wing thirty-five feet in diameter, fifty tons in weight and with a speed of 225 mph, which would be followed by a "flying circle," with a wing diameter of seventy-five feet and thirty tons in weight, for transatlantic flights. In the meantime he had constructed a slightly modified second prototype that ruined him. In 1936 it crashed, killing the test pilot. After this incident Caldwell could no longer find any pilot willing to fly his strange machines. He unsuccessfully tried to interest the armed forces and a number of aircraft companies in his projects. In 1940, before leaving Glen Burnie, he gloomily told Evans that only the lack of $5,000 stood between him and "an astonishing result." (Could it have been a kind of helicopter with a central cabin and contrarotating rotors?)

3. Later on, one member of the Jekams expedition who was interviewed by the press let slip a detail that the investigatory authorities had classified as "top secret": during the entire period of the strange "dances" the Geiger counters "kept on clicking, picking up repeated signs of intensified radioactivity in

the area." The hypothesis that the three UFOs had refueled with some invisible energy—obviously still unknown to science —gushing from the top of the mountain, as ufologists later declared, or that the craft had carried out "a complex operation of electrostatic diselectrification, assisted in this perhaps by the weakness of natural radioactivity of the local lava," as suggested by another member of the expedition, must be excluded. On the other hand, it is possible that the aircraft one by one dumped atomic slag or "ashes" that were somehow related to the propulsion system of the devices, or to the operating cycle of UFOs in general, into the crater of the extinct volcano or into some deep neighboring crevasse. That would also explain the "dance" in the air, which would have been started by weight shifts of the mass in the air and the crosswind. (Professor Jekams reported that an annoying wind was blowing that day.) Turning partially on themselves (the propulsion band), those enormous masses were doubtless subject to the violent phenomena of gyroscopic precession. Like gigantic tops the aircraft spontaneously oscillated in the air in order to dampen the forces disturbing their hovering above the mountain receptacle.

4. See Gerald Heard, *The Riddle of the Flying Saucers* (London, Caroll and Nicholson, 1950). By applications of the well-known laws of electrophysics, Heard seriously thought that he had solved the mystery, or rather the various mysteries, of the UFOs. (Coming from the two moons of Mars, piloted by a sort of superintelligent bee, they had been carrying on a discreet strategic reconnaissance of the earth for at least a couple of centuries.)

5. See Donald H. Keyhoe, *The Flying Saucers Are Real* (New York, Fawcett Publications, 1950); *Flying Saucers from Outer Space* (New York, Henry Holt and Co., 1953); *The Flying Saucer Conspiracy* (New York, Henry Holt and Co., 1955).

6. The French ufologist Aimé Michel—a fanatical supporter of Plantier and the author of *The Truth about Flying Saucers* (New York, Criterion, 1956), a book especially rich in reports

of UFO sightings throughout the world—calls this mechanical reduction in the force field "decentering" and explains it as follows: This reduction "would be accomplished by means of a movable screen, which would nullify or attenuate the effect of the field on the surface covered by it. Since the ionization effects would vary according to the field strength, the position of the screen would be *visible from the outside*—to any observer on the ground, for instance. The spot in question could be seen quite clearly on a photograph taken on July 18, 1952, by the geologist Fregnale in the vicinity of Lake Chauvet" (p. 204). Simple reasoning reveals that the explanation has no basis: if the aircraft, engine, and passengers are permeated by the force of the field, only a miraculous and very special substance can disengage them from its influence. Moreover, the "Plantier screen" reminds us of the solution Wells thought up in *The First Men on the Moon* to regulate and render inactive his famous "cavorite." He, however, was writing an adventure story, and in an adventure story anything goes. Although ufology has for the most part become a frivolous science or science fiction, UFOs are certainly not subjects limited to novels. The Plantier screen has, therefore, the same scientific basis that cavorite and Newtonium have. In fact, starting from the assumption of new transuranium substances produced in physicists' laboratories, one American ufologist proposed some years ago that the synthetic element capable of neutralizing the earth's attraction be called Newtonium. "An element that is still completely unknown to us," he hastened to add, "but undoubtedly well known to our Brothers in Space for some time." While waiting for our brothers to decide to let us in on the secret of their productive process, it might be a good idea to call the hypothetical antigravity element with the more appropriate name of Unobtainium, as the technicians of the U.S. Air Force University in Maxwell, Alabama, ironically proposed for this sort of futuristic chimera. *Cf.* also Dr. D. C. Peaslee, "The Nonexistence of Gravity Shields," *Science* (Washington, Vol. CXXIX, No. 1292, 1956).

7. See Frank Scully, *Behind the Flying Saucers* (New York, Henry Holt and Co., 1950).

8. For a detailed treatment of this incredible case see Menzel, "The Little Men from Venus," Chapter XII in *Flying Saucers.*

9. Despite the Chilean authorities' ban on the publication of the photographs, which is still in effect, this sighting led the American ufologist Gray Barker to launch the "Antarctic Theory," which hypothesizes that the extraterrestrial explorers had chosen that remote part of the planet far from prying eyes for their way-station. See Gray Barker, *They Knew Too Much about Flying Saucers,* (New York, University Books, Inc., 1956).

10. And in fact the letters XF (which in 1950 stood for "experimental fighter") with a numerical designation greater than a unit did not even belong to the Navy but to the Air Force! In addition, the real XF-50 was an old experimental model produced by Grumman, with a piston engine, a propeller, and a lengthened nose; in other words, a modified Grumman Skyrocket.

11. *Cf.* Gert W. Heumann, "The 'Flying Pancake,'" *Air Pictorial* (London, February 1959, pp. 51–54).

12. In February 1951, Professor Liddel, publishing his theory in *Look,* pointed out that launches of Skyhooks had always been kept secret, and that the first balloons of this type had been released in 1947, precisely when the first flying saucers also appeared. A truly perfect coincidence. These statements immediately received the unconditional approval of military circles, which for obvious reasons could not support the adherents of the extraterrestrial source theory.

13. See H. T. Wilkins, *Flying Saucers on the Attack* (New York, Ace Books, 1967).

14. See George Adamsky and Desmond Leslie, *Flying Saucers Have Landed* (New York, British Book Centre, 1953).

15. See C. C. Wylie, "Those Flying Saucers," *Science* (Washington, No. 3057, July 31, 1953, pp. 124–126).

16. As suggested by the American ufologist M. K. Jessup, for whom the “saucerians” are the inhabitants of a number of artificial satellites that have been in permanent orbit for centuries at the neutral point of gravity between the earth and the moon. See his *The Case for the UFO* (New York, Citadel Press, 1955). After two decades of tight military secrecy and a decade of profound ufological studies of Mars and Venus, the planets which were first proposed as the most probable starting bases for the UFOs, we now have, with just about as much foundation, the following: Saturn or its principal moon Titan; Jupiter’s third satellite, Ganymede, populated by people who are said to live on bacterial cultures now being depleted; the remote twin to earth, Uranus, or some other of the still unknown “dark planets” that perhaps gravitate beyond the orbit of Pluto; an earth belonging to the hypothetical planetary cortege of Wolf 359 or the extragalactic planet Clarion, ruled by an admirable matriarchy; the moon with its legendary troglodytes; lunar caverns where Nazi scientists who evaded capture by the Allies have their last refuge; other Nazi survivors developing their final “secret weapons” in the frozen Antarctic or in the solitude of remote regions of Patagonia or, again, in the impenetrable forests of the Gran Chaco or the Mato Grosso; the unplumbed depths of Time, the Fourth Dimension, with future Humanity that now explores its most remote past; the “wanderers of space,” that is, the inhabitants of the destroyed planet Hsiu-chiu, a part of whom reached the earth in prehistoric times and populated present-day China; the star space explorers (sideranthropoi) who left the star Proxima Centauri centuries ago; the research voyagers hailing from Macrocosmos, a complex of “stellar systems” forming an organic whole of which our solar system is but a living “atomic cell”; the immaterial Ethereans living in the Fifth Dimension or in the burning shell of the sun; the Uranians coming from the outer edges of our planetary system or a highly evolved pre-Flood humanity (of the Atlantan or Lemurian or Tyrhennian race) that escaped its fate by flying into space; the biblical fallen angels; the descendants of the Incas who took refuge in impenetrable recesses of the Peruvian Andes with the secret of a primordial form of superenergy

obtained from volcanoes; the mythical "Children of the Red Earth" living beneath the Amazon jungle; the Hindu telemobile, the *duracapalam* launched into Hyperspace by mental energy and in behalf of a mysterious oriental sect. . . . And the list of these delirious ravings could be continued at length. When there are no concrete details that permit us to make a sound evaluation of the facts, any discussion, whether serious, semi-serious, or facetious, can without distinction aspire to the honor of being an "hypothesis."

17. *Cf.* Leonard G. Cramp, *Space, Gravity and the Flying Saucers* (New York: British Book Centre, 1955) and Dr. Erwin Stambler, "Anti-Gravity: Fact or Fantasy?" *Aviation Age* (New York, May 1957), pp. 26–31.

CHAPTER 3

The True Story of Project Blue Book

At the beginning of June the A.T.I.C. was forced, albeit unwillingly, to face the “big flap” of 1952. In Pentagon jargon, according to Edward Ruppelt, a flap is a condition, situation, or mental state of a group of persons that is characterized by an advanced stage of confusion which has not yet reached panic proportions.

In fact, a flood of reports engulfed the A.T.I.C. experts. By December 31 there were 2018 reports, not counting sightings that were reported only to local newspapers and those from foreign countries. Were the American people—indeed, the whole of humanity—perhaps showing unmistakable signs of progressive mental imbalance? Or were flotillas of disc-shaped space ships really intensifying their exploratory missions?

Even the high command of the U.S. Air Force had to take the problem seriously, simply because some of the detailed reports ("good UFO reports") had come and were continuing to come from far-off Korea, where military operations were taking a somewhat critical turn. More than one American pilot had encountered fast, silvery spheres or flaming aircraft with the strange roundish shape, and radar installations in Japan, on Okinawa, and in South Korea had repeatedly picked up unknown objects flying at high speeds. Comets? Self-propelled devices that the Russians had supplied to the Chinese and North Koreans? Or were they the notorious UFOs that serious people had relegated to the realm of fantasy?

No intense meteor activity was reported in June. The Aquarids shower (July 28) did not coincide with the bulk of the sightings reported, and, as we know, meteors are extremely punctual. Well, then, were the aircraft devices manufactured behind the Urals? The Air Force regarded this possibility with deep-seated skepticism. How could Russia, which was just taking its first steps in the area of modern aeronautics, have already developed such things?

Nevertheless, those "things" continued to crisscross "Western" skies, sorely trying the patience of those who should have been able to puncture the myth, which was particularly galling to the U.S. Air Force because it threatened its proclaimed air supremacy at a time when Soviet MIG-15 fighters on the Korean front had demonstrated that they were superior to the American planes.

The content of the reports was often disconcerting and sometimes even annoying. Different witnesses rarely gave the same descriptions of the UFOs: they were shaped like a ball, or they looked like falling stars, or they were flying triangles or rhombuses, or they floated in the air like jellyfish, or they were shapeless . . .

With justifiable consternation the A.T.I.C. personnel wondered how it was possible for a mechanical, metallic device not to have a well-defined and definite shape. How could it change so rapidly from a jellyfish into a comet and then into a sphere and a rhomboid and finally just fade away into something without any definite contours?

A "GOOD UFO REPORT"

One event in particular attracted the experts' attention. It took place on July 14 in Virginia, a few miles from Newport News, near Norfolk. The eyewitnesses were two veteran pilots of Pan American Airways, W. B. Nash and W. H. Fortenberry.

At 9:12 P.M. six large, silvery discs, proceeding horizontally in echelon, with the lead ship (or presumed squadron leader) on the bottom, appeared over the horizon and were soon within a mile of a DC-4 which was flying to Miami at an altitude of about 8000 feet. The objects were perfectly circular from plane view, and about seventy-five feet in diameter; they appeared to be enveloped in large reddish halos that at times changed to orange streaked with red, and they glowed like red-hot coals.

With the aid of a Dalton Mark 7 computer, the American pilots calculated that the formation was flying at a speed a little better than a thousand miles an hour.

Having evidently sighted the DC-4, the leading disc suddenly slowed and its glow dimmed markedly. The two farthest discs continued at high speed, catching up with the lead ship, as if their order to execute the maneuver had been received a bit late. At the same instant the lead ship flipped over on its edge and changed course. Immediately the five other discs imitated it in unison, clearly revealing their conformation—that of a sort of shallow cone with a maximum width of about fifteen feet in the center.

After another abrupt change in direction—of more than 150 degrees—their light grew brighter as if due to a sudden increase in propulsive force, and in fact they quickly removed themselves from the path of the DC-4, resuming their horizontal position and their curious echelon formation.

Moving westward, the formation was joined by two other discs that had been hovering at a lower altitude during the whole of the strange maneuvers, as if waiting for some specific command. In the few seconds during which they speeded up to reach the formation, they gave off a red glow that was brighter than usual.

Suddenly all the discs went dark, and a few seconds later, when they became bright again, the eight machines appeared in an even line. At this point, accompanied by a series of short, regular, blinding flashes, the formation climbed for about 3000 feet and finally disappeared rapidly toward the west.

"They are piloted!" some newspapers wrote. "Or at least many of the ships must be piloted, and the probability that this is correct increases the bigger the machines get."

In addition, some ufologists called attention—correctly, for once—to the fact that the evolutions the discs went through seemed to rule out the possibility that they were radio-controlled or had special electronic sighting or repulse devices. For with the radio impulses traveling at the enormous velocity of 186,000 miles per second, the craft would have had to be spaced at intervals of about a hundred yards or so; if not, carrying out strictly simultaneous maneuvers would have been impossible. For if, let us suppose, the receiver of one of the discs had not been properly tuned, the delay in the answering maneuver would then have had to show up during successive maneuvers also. Instead, as we have seen, the discs flipped on their edges in unison.

UFOS OVER WASHINGTON

On April 17, 1952, near the Canadian air base of North Bay in Ontario, several "red spheres" flew by at supersonic speeds and subsequently crossed over some of the southeastern states at the same high speeds.

The next day air defense headquarters for the eastern United States released a statement to the press from Newburgh, N.Y., saying that the detection system had developed a "pattern of unknowns in both the northeast and northwest which appeared potentially dangerous." An alert had been ordered when unexplained vapor trails were sighted at a high altitude near Nome, Alaska. Later, the period of emergency was lifted after the "unknowns" were identified.

No details were furnished as to the identification. Who had involuntarily caused that—fortunately groundless—fear that aggression was coming from the sky? And with what kinds of machines? And for what reasons?[1]

This haphazard approach to vigilance, if we can call it that, on the part of the American authorities did not, however, last long, and a foretaste of what was to come took place on July 17.

That night the radar installation at the Denver airfield sent its exploratory beams into the sky and caught a distant group of “things” moving along the horizon at a speed of nearly 3000 mph. Alerted by radio, Captain Paul L. Carpenter, flying an American Airlines DC-6, turned down his cockpit lights and waited. Shortly afterward four bright objects sped by at a fantastic speed. They were at his altitude, about 25,000 feet and a few miles off.

Three days of relative quiet obtained and then “incredible” things happened—incredible to the men at the A.T.I.C.

At 12:40 A.M. on July 20, the radar screen at the C.A.A. traffic control center in Washington, D.C., revealed the presence of eight unknown objects flying at about 100 to 130 mph in the vicinity of Andrews Air Force Base, in Maryland, about fifteen miles southwest of the capital. From time to time the radar blips showed that the objects shifted course rapidly, often moving against the wind, and that when they climbed, they rose absolutely vertically. The possibility that it was a squadron of jet fighters could, therefore, be ruled out. Toward one o’clock the blips disappeared as suddenly as they had appeared (that is, they moved out of the area covered by the radar beam), only to reappear some minutes later in the northwest, over the capital.

The controller on duty then informed Senior Controller Harry G. Barnes. He was skeptical concerning these moving lights in particular and UFOs in general. At the time he supported the ideas of Professor Menzel, author of a clever if useless theory that the saucers were “mirages caused by thermal inversion.” Barnes insisted on personally checking the radar apparatus and found that it was functioning perfectly.

During this interval the control tower at the National Airport also got a fix on the mysterious apparitions and computed their speed, finding that *one of them had flown through the upper stratosphere for about eight miles at the astonishing speed of 7200 mph.*[2]

Some of the lights suddenly seemed to swoop down over the

White House, the Capitol, and the Pentagon, areas prohibited to overflights. A number of people working on the outskirts of the airport later agreed that there was a large, round glowing object followed by others flying at higher altitudes, all variously colored and flying toward the south.

A WELL-GROUNDED SUSPICION

Two jet fighters that were immediately sent out from New Castle, Delaware, ranged through the sky over Washington unsuccessfully looking for the "lights." But they meanwhile had disappeared from the radar screens, probably because they rose vertically to a very great altitude when the fighters arrived. After the fighters returned to the base the lights reappeared, "dancing in the air like young deer."

At this point Barnes had the distinct impression that *the mysterious visitors were able to hear and understand him when he radioed the pilots to intercept the objects,* because more than once the UFOs darted away as soon as he gave their exact position.

Receiving a radio message about the strange things in the sky, Captain H. Dermott, who was piloting a civilian plane toward the capital, caught sight of an intense white light of vaguely globular shape following him at a distance in the dark. Then when it "saw" that the plane was coming in for a landing, the shining phantom sped off at a high rate of speed.

Strange things were also seen from the ground. At 5:30 a radio engineer named E. W. Chambers watched the evolutions of five huge, clearly circular objects that "shone like headlights in fog" and crisscrossed the sky in a loose formation over the outskirts of Washington. For no apparent reason they suddenly climbed and disappeared in the night. It was then—that is, shortly before dawn—that the squadrons of luminous bodies finally disappeared from the radar screens as well.

During the next two days there were no local reports of UFOs, but during the night of July 22–23 a number of objects passed over several states in New England, giving off a silvery glow in the moonlight. For three days there were no new sightings; but at 9:08 P.M. on July 26 the sky over the District of Columbia was again favored with stratospheric incursions.

Twelve unknown objects suddenly arrived from the northeast and the radar of the C.A.A. control center picked them up lazily cruising at about forty miles an hour, an unusually low speed even for ordinary aircraft—stalling speed, in fact.

At first the C.A.A. staff thought a swarm of weather balloons had been caught by a current of air and were accidentally crossing over the city. They were soon disabused of this notion. The pilots of a plane that happened to be flying by radioed that the “balloons” flew off rapidly as the plane approached, almost as though they were afraid they would be attacked. Besides, they weren’t balloons, but white-hot objects.

Again the base at New Castle fielded a pair of jets that sped toward Washington. The first one flew toward a white globular mass that was giving off a blinding brightness, but when the pilot came within a half mile of it the light mysteriously went out and he flew about in the dark looking for the elusive light.

At 10:30 the second fighter just as unsuccessfully followed three bluish globes; then he followed five others that had turned completely white in the meantime. As on the preceding Saturday, at dawn the UFO formation suddenly climbed away and did not reappear.

UFOS RETURN EN MASSE

On July 28 the radar screens in the capital caught no evidence of any unknown object. The scene of the new story this time was the Great Lakes area, near the Canadian border. At 2:30 A.M. Ground Control Intercept (G.C.I.) radar at the Osceola military base in Wisconsin caught a number of shining objects of indiscernible shape flying at a slow sixty miles an hour in a loose formation at about 80,000 feet, east of St. Paul, Minnesota.

The enthusiasm of the pilots who bravely took off to hunt down the slow invaders soon changed to disappointment. As soon as they became aware that the jets had taken off, the UFOs accelerated in a few seconds to over 600 mph and easily outdistanced the American fighters, vanishing toward Canada. Everything returned to normal for that day.

And that day only. For between 1:30 and 6:00 A.M. on July 29 Senior Controller Barnes noticed with annoyance that the notorious "lights" were reappearing over Washington in numbers varying from eight to twelve at the same instant.

Flying at 100 to 110 mph, they swarmed about within a radius of about ten miles in the air space between Andrews Air Force Base and Herndon, Virginia.

At 3:00 A.M. the blips disappeared from the radar screens, and instead there appeared the characteristic blip of a large transport plane heading for the field.[3] Informed of what was happening on their course, the pilots of the Constellation could only report that the sky was utterly empty, although visibility at the time extended for a radius of at least fifteen miles. Again the craft had made themselves invisible by climbing perpendicularly into the stratosphere. They did not come down again, probably having completed their mission.

During the day isolated discs also appeared over other parts of the United States, and twice they overflew the experimental atomic center of Los Alamos, New Mexico, at a very high altitude.

The A.T.I.C. thus was able to collect a conspicuous body of evidence that had been set down by observers free of any sort of censorship. Other equally accurate and important evidence came at the beginning of August.

The lunar eclipse of the night of August 5–6 had been over for a few hours when a large number of UFOs giving off the usual changing light again crossed over Washington. A spokesman for Andrews Air Base later declared that they had been observed "unmistakably" on local radar screens shortly before midnight, flying about for a considerable time before the eyes of a large crowd of observers, and that the fighters that were sent up from two fields in the vicinity had unsuccessfully tried to intercept the shining objects. But they were flying too high and too fast.

These nocturnal appearances of moving, lighted objects were, in any case, about to come to a close, at least over America. Early on the morning of August 20, the radar screen at Congaree Air Base in South Carolina picked up the track of a very fast UFO about sixty miles away. Flying a perfectly straight course and covering seventy miles in a minute (over 4000 mph), this late-appearing UFO showed how eager it was to regain its base. It was the last to be seen in that series of sightings.

Since the UFOs had not dropped anything explosive or damaging to the interests of the United States (*i.e.,* neither bombs nor subversive propaganda sheets), the public once again quickly forgot them, and the newspapers gave their time and attention to the many leaks concerning Project Ivy, which was preparing the first American H-bomb.

Thus the A.T.I.C. could proceed undisturbed in winnowing out all the material it had collected. Besides, even outside U.S. Air Force circles, the hypothesis advanced by the astronomer Donald H. Menzel a few months before was then receiving some favor.[4] The idea that the UFOs were only mirages caused by temperature inversions had come along at the right moment. Everything was accounted for, and all the lights—disembodied, of course—that had appeared over Washington during those summer nights were nonchalantly explained as balloons reflecting the moonlight or as recurrent mirages. After all, according to the most reliable local meteorologists, masses of cold air from Canada had reached the environs of Washington a number of times during that period, thus creating "the proper conditions for temperature inversions."[5]

POLICY GAPS IN THE A.T.I.C.

One does not know whether to believe the Air Force's top-ranking officers when they repeatedly profess their ignorance of UFO matters. It is certain, however, as Captain Ruppelt states so frankly in his volume on the work of the A.T.I.C., that at the beginning Project Blue Book did not deviate a fraction of an inch from the policy directives that had shaped the previous fruitless military inquiries.[6]

In fact, the staff reexamined all the intelligence reports on the Nazis' latest aeronautical experiments in order to establish whether the further development of any of these projects could have resulted in a type of aircraft having precisely the characteristics ascribed to the flying saucers. The essential data were then submitted to the aerodynamics experts at the Wright Field Aircraft Laboratory and to the best-known aircraft designers for their judgment, along with the anxious routine question: "Could the Russians have further developed these ideas?"

"No," they were reassuringly answered in each instance. "At present there is no possibility of making flying machines that can maneuver in the air like the UFOs."[7]

The Air Force's Aeromedical Laboratory added the weight of its authoritative opinion: "If piloted aircraft of this sort were constructed, the human body would not be able to withstand the violent accelerations reported by various witnesses."

The personnel at the A.T.I.C. boasted of being the immediate successors if not the heirs of the Air Matériel Command T-2 Intelligence Office, a secret organization that during the war had developed "highly efficient methods for getting all kinds of technical information on enemy aircraft production." But if the UFOs were really space ships commanded by a race of supermen, or, even worse, beings completely different from ourselves—as Captain Ruppelt quite properly suggested—all the ingenious procedures that T-2 had worked out would have been perfectly useless.

From the specific point of view of the UFO question there was, however, another and much more serious gap in the powers and conduct of the A.T.I.C. It continued, in fact, to concern itself with *enemy* aircraft production or, to spell it out, with the United States' only large potential enemy, the Eastern bloc. And what about the *other* world powers? England, for example? Only statesmen have the power to form alliances and issue ultimatums. Military men, however, have the indelicate and difficult but necessary duty of knowing everything about *everyone,* for today's friend may, through unusual circumstance, not be tomorrow's or he may even go over to the camp of the adversary.

It is astonishing, therefore, that in reviewing German war inventions the A.T.I.C. did not remember that certain inventions were missing from the list of booty of German inventiveness that had been transferred to the United States. These inventions had been lost track of since the earliest days of the Nazi defeat.

To cite a few examples: Where were the designs of the gigantic A-14 multistage torpedo rocket? Or the blueprints for the piloted, rocket-engined *Triebflügel?* Who got hold of the plans of the "H.M.B. radio-immobilizer," whose heavy and still unperfected machinery was destroyed by the Germans themselves at Frankfurt-am-Main, just as it was to receive its first field test, because of the sudden collapse of the Rhine front? The working model of the first rocket turbine powered with liquid air and the anti-radar *Feuerball* device that had already been secretly used in battle were also both missing from the list. Again, how can anyone seriously think that the meticulous German researches on the "control of the boundary layer in its application to high speed aircraft" would not have found someone capable of recognizing its value?

To judge from appearances, then, in 1946 the experts of the A.T.I.C. had not divined the importance of British statements —exceedingly brief but, be it noted, *official*—mentioning that certain new types of "frighteningly fast" airplanes that would "astonish the world" were in an advanced state of preparation. The A.T.I.C. should have indexed, weighed, and analyzed these statements word by word.[8]

A good investigator would not have missed *the special significance of all those reports that showed that the UFOs consistently flew a general course in the direction of western Canada.* Is it possible that they were completely in the dark as to the "rumors" that had been circulating years before in Ottawa, Toronto, and Vancouver about the erection of aircraft centers in the semipopulated, forested areas of western Canada? Obviously when one hides something so carefully, one is hiding something important.

In any case, at the beginning of August 1952, 40 percent of the reports that reached Project Blue Book were stamped "unknown."

The contributions from certain foreign areas (France, England, and South America), where American military attachés collected reports of local flights for the Air Force, were not insignificant. Nevertheless, Captain Ruppelt says that these reports were neither investigated nor considered, because Blue Book had its hands full with its own. This was a strange attitude. While denying categorically that the UFOs were aircraft built somewhere on earth, the A.T.I.C. wanted to limit the sensational phenomenon of the UFOs (real or imaginary) to the United States.

The best sightings—best because of the wealth and novelty of the details reported—had been and would continue to be precisely those from foreign countries. The A.T.I.C. rejected them deliberately. Given the irrational basis of the investigation, the "big flap" was doomed to turn into a big flop.

RADAR DOESN'T LIE

"Flying discs: radar's gone crazy too! U.S. Air Force experts have established that the bright images mistaken for mysterious flying machines are produced by a rare but natural phenomenon of atmospheric refraction," an illustrated weekly proclaimed in August 1952.

Actually radar hadn't gone crazy. Instead, people who did not believe that the UFOs existed irrationally and hastily tried to pass radar off as error-prone in order to buttress their own inability to interpret observed facts correctly. Indeed, radar was too smart for that; it allowed a photographic film to register one of its UFO blips—strangely enough, for the A.T.I.C. experts—that had precisely all the characteristics of the UFOs, which, in any case, had already been photographed a number of times.

Ufologists, who are not extraordinarily subtle, accept all the material furnished by a score or so of episodes as authentic. Science rejects the lot. The attitude of the U.S. Air Force remains that of the "Fact Sheet" distributed to the press by the Department of Defense at the beginning of 1954 concerning certain "unusual aerial phenomena," which concludes with the following unqualified negation:

"The Air Force does not possess photographs which prove the existence of ‘flying saucers.’ Because still photographs can be so easily faked, either by using a mock-up or model against a legitimate background, or by retouching the negative, they are practically worthless as evidence. Innumerable objects, from ash-trays to wash basins, have been photographed while sailing through the air. Many such photos have been published without revealing the true identity of the objects.

“More attention is given to moving pictures of unidentified flying objects since they are more difficult to fake. However, only a very few movie-type films have been received by the Air Force and they reveal only pinpoints of light moving across the sky. The Air Force has been unable to identify the source of these lights. The images are too small to analyze properly. Since ownership of these films remains with the persons taking them the Air Force is not in a position to give them out. The owners may do with them as they please.” Too fast and furious, O iconoclast!

Captain Ruppelt had, in fact, among other things, subjected two fragments of movie film known as the “Montana Movie” and the “Tremonton Movie” (called the U-Film in A.T.I.C. circles) to the photographic laboratories of the Air Force at Wright-Patterson and of the Navy at Anacostia.

The first had been filmed by Nick Mariana, manager of the Great Falls baseball team, on August 15, 1950. Two large white lights had rapidly crossed a cloudless sky, one above and behind the other. Since it turned out that some F-94 fighters had flown over the other side of the city, the experts of Project Grudge—set up to continue the work of Project Sign, which had been dissolved—filed away the report, stating that it had been produced by reflections from the exhausts or the wings of the fighters. A kind of artificial parhelion.

Reexamined in 1952 at the request of the Pentagon, the hypothesis that the fighter planes had anything to do with the production of the phenomenon collapsed for various reasons. The true nature of the two moving spots remained unexplained, but as compensation the report was returned to the files, this time labeled “unknown,” and so became part of the few bits of evidence of UFOs officially recognized as such.

The second film has a more complicated story. On July 2, 1952, Warrant Officer Delbert C. Newhouse was taking a trip with his wife and children in Utah. Some seven miles from Tremonton he caught sight of an irregular formation of shining, circular objects whirling about in the sky at a very high speed. It took him only a few seconds to stop his car at the edge of the road and aim his 16-mm Bell and Howell movie camera fitted with a telephoto lens in the direction of the UFOs.

THE INVESTIGATION OF THE U-FILM

The dozen blue-white objects flying west in an irregular but compact formation occasionally carried out strange maneuvers in the sky. Some seemed to pair up edge to edge for a short time; others seemed to be flying in tight circles, darting out to the edges of the formation or catching up with the leaders. Suddenly one of them reversed course sharply and drew away from the group, passing almost directly above Newhouse, who filmed it several times.

The attention of a considerable number of generals, admirals, and G.S.-16 men focused on the Tremonton film, and they flowed into Kelly Air Base in Texas, where the staff of the U.S. Air Force intelligence had their headquarters. A secret, high-level conference was held, and the pictures on the movie frames were identified as all sorts of things: balloons or known aircraft, reflections of the sunlight (for at 11:10, when the film was made, the sun was almost directly overhead), or a shower of meteorites, migratory birds, or gulls, a scientist present having reminded everyone that a species of white gull was native to the Great Salt Lake area. The term “spacecraft” was mentioned briefly, but merely in order to rule out any hypothesis along that line, and to be put in the same category with nonexistent supersecret airplanes of either American or Soviet manufacture that had the characteristics attributed to UFOs.

After countless showings of the film, no single view prevailed. Those bothersome spots vaguely resembled many things, but no single known thing in particular. Some of the assemblage complained that the film was without details and points of reference. The methods of the Navy photography analysts were criticized on the grounds that they had not used the densitometer correctly, and Newhouse found himself charged with having, perhaps unwittingly, changed the sequences of the film. After which, the film was rejected as documentary evidence of the existence of UFOs.

Captain Ruppelt did not, however, admit that he was beaten and he made a wise decision—to have a chat with Newhouse. The conversation lasted for two hours and brought out an interesting particular: When Newhouse and his family saw the UFOs for the first time, they were close to the car. "If they had been the size of a B-29 they would have been at 10,000 feet altitude," he said. And he added that they looked like "two pie pans, one inverted on the top of the other."

By joining two bodies having approximately the shape of pie pans, we again get the already reported characteristic biplanar structure of the flying saucers.

THE END OF PROJECT BLUE BOOK

In November 1952 Captain Ruppelt asked the Air Technical Intelligence Command for permission to release the films to the press. General Garland forwarded the request to the Pentagon for approval.

No films and no statements to the press, was the reply, even though the scientists whom the Department of Defense had sent to Kelly Air Base a few months before had suggested that the most likely explanation for the white spots on the U-film was that they were Salt Lake seagulls.

The seagull theory, continued the Pentagon's letter of refusal, was too weak. In addition, a new approach to keeping the public informed would be employed from now on. And in fact the periodic releases known as "Fact Sheets" did appear, quickly bogging down the whole affair.

Captain Ruppelt, who firmly believed that he had material of the greatest importance in his hands (could they really be space craft?), had repeatedly asked that his staff be increased. *At no time did it have more than ten active members,* many of whom were continually absent on trips all over the country to collect or check on reports. Requests to have special movie cameras set up in areas where UFOs were frequently sighted and to have experts in electronics, meteorology, photography, physics, and mechanics assigned to the project were turned down. It became very clear in the autumn of 1952 that the Air Force intended to write *finis* to Project Blue Book.

In fact, instead of strengthening the project, the Air Force decided to turn direct investigation over to a specialized intelligence operational unit, the 4602nd Air Intelligence Squadron. This substitution was at first passed off as a collaboration between the two units.

In December the somewhat embittered Ruppelt asked to be transferred to other duties and in April 1953 the staff was reduced to two members, Lieutenant Bob Olsson and Airman 1st Class Max Futch. Nevertheless, Ruppelt remained officially in charge until September, when, with “a simple ceremony on the poop deck of one of the flying saucers that I frequently have been accused of capturing, before a formation of the three-foot-tall green men that I have equally frequently been accused of keeping prisoner,” he turned the office over to his successor, resigned from the Air Force, and went to California to work for Northrop Aircraft as a research engineer.

With this melancholy farewell, Project Blue Book virtually ceased to exist, and all the documentary material on the UFOs —more than four thousand reports—was buried in the files of the public relations office of the A.T.I.C. After the organizational matters were settled, a brief press release announced the transfer of power.

AIR FORCE DECEPTION

Ruppelt had directed Project Blue Book with passion and perseverance, though more than once he had given the distinct impression of being shackled by outside directives. In all probability the highly placed supporters of the project had created it specifically to put an end to the newspapers’ and public's demands for information by gradually convincing them that the UFOs did not exist.

On May 8, 1952, after a long and detailed briefing on the project, Air Force Secretary Thomas K. Finletter had only a vague general comment to make: "You're doing a fine job, Captain. It must be interesting. Thank you."

This lukewarm interest in a subject that obsessed much of the country made it very clear that Captain Ruppelt, who had thrown himself into the investigation seriously, had completely failed to carry out the secret (or possibly merely implied) premises of the project. No wonder, then, that a few months later the Air Force began to press to have the project dropped.

On the other hand, the exceedingly small number of men assigned to the project certainly did not justify the outcry raised against it by both the press and ufologists, who frequently charged it with hiding the truth and, in effect, weaving a kind of conspiracy against the "Brothers from Space." The small and exceedingly busy staff of military ufologists simply could not have done that even if they had wanted to.

As for the A.T.I.C., it then got ready to put an end to the whole "UFO problem," and in its report of August 1954 declared: "The Air Force would like to state that no evidence has been received which would tend to indicate that the United States is being observed by machines from outer space or a foreign government. No object or particle of an unknown substance has been received and no photographs of detail have been produced."[9] This press release said in effect that the flying saucers were a myth, if by that term we mean something different from mistakenly identified natural phenomena.

When Project Blue Book was deprived of authority, science became the moral heir to the UFO problem. The Air Force would have been very happy to have the whole thing forgotten, but since people were still occasionally "seeing something" and getting excited about it, if science wanted to get into the act, then the Air Force had nothing against it. After all, hadn't past experience guaranteed that science would be a trusty ally?

Suspecting trickery from that part of science which was serving the military, Professor A. Aula, an Italian expert in aerodynamics, in a radio talk in 1954 spoke about certain nations that were secretly in the vanguard of progress. The United States repeatedly denied that it merited the honor of being in this vanguard until the first Sputnik removed America's comfortable laurels and Washington began to release a blizzard of statements on its formidable missile system. But United States policy on the UFOs never wavered.

Indeed, on January 1, 1955, the remaining staff of Project Blue Book (two members) was ordered to turn control of direct investigation over entirely to the 4602nd Air Intelligence Squadron, an organization created during the Second World War for the methodical interrogation of captured enemy airmen and subsequently charged with the study of "simulated problems"—for example, airborne invasion of hostile elements, the identification of preparations for an air attack on the United States, and so on.

As had been foreseen from the start, the decision had a double result. First, the now long inactive Project Blue Book was ditched. Second, the 131 sightings reported in the first six months in which the two units worked together, plus all the previous material, were so thoroughly studied that the percentage of "unknowns" suddenly dropped from 20 percent for 1952 and 9 percent for 1954 to 3 and 1.8 percent respectively. This computation was arrived at in 1960 with the reevaluation of the 6312 reports collected by various military and civilian bodies, beginning with the notorious first sighting of 1947, which cost the U.S. Air Force so much money in committees, conferences, investigations, and counterpropaganda in the press.

In reproducing the final official bulletin (Fact Sheet No. 812, dated July 21, 1960), the American newspapers added a comment that closed the matter: "Flying saucers totally debunked!"

In fact, for over five years since then, the American press—imitated by its sister publications throughout the Western world—no longer demanded to know the truth about the UFOs and limited itself to reporting briefly and without comment the increasingly rare news of sightings of unknown flying objects, which had been supplanted in public interest by the more sensational, more visible, and less mysterious space exploits.

Finally the U.S. Air Force could consider that it had won its long battle against the UFOs.

NOTES

1. UFO formations had, however, already previously appeared over the northern states without attracting press attention because of the small number of witnesses. In fact, on April 11, 1952, while launching some weather balloons, meteorologists at the Minneapolis Air Base were looking through the theodolite and followed a flight of “unknown aerial objects that moved in the stratosphere, reaching frightening speeds in a matter of seconds.”

2. Other radar measurements of one of the objects moving at a high altitude established its speed at 4500 mph. In addition, it was observed that during some of the abrupt maneuvers one of the UFOs accelerated from 125 mph to 500 mph in only four seconds, while other objects seemed to reverse their direction sharply in seconds. For a more detailed recounting of these sightings see Major Donald H. Keyhoe, *The True Report on Flying Saucers* (Greenwich, Conn., Fawcett Publications, 1967), pp. 51 and 95–96; or the exhaustive and well-documented report of R. C. Borden and T. K. Vickers, *Preliminary Study of Unidentified Targets Observed on Air Traffic Control Radars* (C.A.A. Technical Development Report No. 180, Indianapolis, May 1953).

3. Blips, in radar jargon, are the responses received, that is, the band of radio waves bounced back by some object impervious to the waves. In the same jargon “angels” are pseudo blips, or the false pictures produced by some natural phenomenon (temperature inversion, storm centers, highly electrified clouds, hail clouds, and so on) that can influence the radio bands and that show up on the screen as irregular or evanescent spots, generally stationary.

4. See Menzel, *Flying Saucers,* p. 139 and especially pp. 300–310.

5. Major Keyhoe writes about this in his second book on the UFOs (*Flying Saucers from Outer Space,* p. 100): "For the next two weeks I talked with Barnes, Ritchey, Copeland, and most of the other Control Center men. Though they had cooled off, some were still bitter about the Air Force inversion answer. For years they had been guiding airliners through fog, snow, and rain without an accident. When the weather turned sour, thousands of lives were in their hands. As expert radar men, they were proud of their record—a record that depended on their ability to analyze and track blips in a split second. Then, overnight, they had been, in effect, called fools—deceived by a simple atmospheric condition they'd known for years. 'Every man in here knows temperature-inversion effects,' Barnes told me. 'When an inversion's big enough, it picks up all sorts of "ground clutter"—water tanks, buildings, shore lines, and so on. But anybody can recognize it. You'll see huge purplish blobs, *but nothing like those things we tracked.* In the six years I've watched the scopes, absolutely nothing—high-speed jets, storms, inversions, or anything else—has ever caused blips that maneuvered like that. And we've had identical weather many times.'"

6. See Edward J. Ruppelt, *The Report on Unidentified Flying Objects* (Ace Books, New York, 1956).

7. See the Department of Defense press release of April 27, 1949: "The possibility that these flying objects may be foreign aircraft was also taken into consideration, but the reported speeds are so much greater than those of any kind of airplane that we have technically approached to date that only an accidental discovery *so new that it has only now been reached* could sufficiently explain them."

8. Perhaps they had done so and the information was later simply forgotten, thanks to the postwar crisis in the British aircraft industry—the civilian portion thereof, of course. And

perhaps in the euphoria of the recent victory—which had virtually lifted the United States to the political leadership of the entire world—those in military circles allowed themselves to relax slightly in their investigations, convinced that they had now made war impossible thanks to their exclusive possession of the atom bomb.

9. *Cf.* Leon Davidson, *Flying Saucers: An Analysis of the Air Force Project Blue Book Special Report No. 14* (Ramsey, N.J., Ramsey-Wallace Corporation, 1967) and Lawrence J. Tacker, *Flying Saucers and the U.S. Air Force* (New York, Van Nostrand, 1960) p. 164.

CHAPTER 4

Mysterious Night Lights Over the Rhineland

The clock in the plane read 8:25 P.M. when a "strange red light" appeared some ten miles off. The first person who saw it was the hostess, Gloria Hinshaw. It glowed in the night far to the rear, looking like the landing light of a fast interceptor.

The Trans World Airlines DC-3, en route to Chicago, was flying over the outskirts of Goshen, Indiana, at an altitude of about 2000 feet, and her captain, Robert Adickes, was checking the flight plan when the alarmed hostess reported that a very fast-moving light had climbed to the altitude of the airliner and was now pursuing it. Indeed, it had almost overtaken the plane.

The co-pilot, Robert F. Manning, immediately looked out the side window and gave a startled exclamation. Although the plane was flying at about 175 miles an hour, the mysterious shining object was then overtaking it at a speed of at least 400 miles an hour, gradually, however, losing altitude.

"It's going down. . . . But the light is getting bigger and brighter! . . . It's bright orange, like a ball of red-hot metal. . . . It looks like a giant pinwheel rolling down a slope. . . . It's gone!"

A few minutes went by and the bright object again appeared toward the rear of the plane. Visibly slowing down and its light markedly decreasing in intensity, it began pacing the plane about half a mile away.

Nervously handling the controls, Adickes banked to approach the unknown object, but even before he cut the original distance in half, the invader began an unexpected maneuver: suddenly the underside of the object grew brighter and the UFO seemed to veer over on its edge and leap back, quickly reestablishing its distance.

"It veered away from us, as if it had some sort of radar-repulse mechanism," Lieutenant Manning observed with surprise.

Captain Adickes tried three times to approach the UFO, and three times the object moved back from the unwanted approach by veering over on its edge again. For a short while, however, the American pilots were able to observe it edgewise, and in the flight report dated April 27, 1950, they wrote that when viewed from the bottom it was perfectly circular in form, with a maximum thickness at the center equal to about a tenth of its diameter, which was probably a little more than fifty feet.

After the third sudden edgewise withdrawal, the flaming body took off northward, passing over South Bend and diminishing rapidly into the distance until it disappeared entirely.[1]

The Adickes report raised a basic question: did the UFO have some sort of automatic anti-collision mechanism? In principle it did not seem that the idea should be excluded. During night bombing raids on Germany, the Allies themselves had used such mechanisms widely.[2]

THE “MAGIC EYES” OF INFRARED

The British had made notable progress in liaison techniques that employed invisible infrared radiations, through their development of a very light high-tension storage battery, thanks to a clever application of the old Zamboni pile.

During the year 1942 the R.A.F. had mounted infrared “headlights” and receivers on its night fighters and they proved to be very useful—so useful, in fact, that the Germans became aware of them, for they allowed the British pilots to recognize one another during convoy missions. Subsequently, when the R.A.F. was equipped with its first radar-guided cannons, the infrared apparatus was also mounted in bombers so that they would be able to identify their convoy planes by night and open fire only on the enemy fighters.

With the thoroughness that characterizes their scientific research, the Germans had also considered the military applications of “invisible light.”

The *Spanner* was a reflector that was supposed not only to pick up radiations from the exhausts of enemy engines, but, by illuminating the objective from a distance and receiving its reflection like a radar receiver, to trace the invading aircraft successfully even if too great a distance or an unfavorable position of the exhaust with respect to the reflector masked normal radiation. The technical authorities of the Luftwaffe judged the apparatus to be highly efficient but too bulky to be installed in its night fighters; the *Spanner* was therefore shelved, and the experience was profitably used in the construction of the Gaertner infrared phototheodolites for antiaircraft rocket stations and in the project to develop the antiradar automatic search mechanism known as the *Feuerball*.[3]

In addition, during the year 1944, Section D of the Deutsche Forschungsanstalt für Segelflug (D.F.S.), of Ainring, near Salzburg, was working on various apparatuses for infrared night television using a network of ultrasensitive thermocouples that would permit distance vision even through clouds.[4]

When Albert Speer, the Minister of War Production, assumed the reins of the entire German war economy (August 1944), the highest priority was given to a D.F.S. apparatus (a small number of which were built in the plant of the Viennese firm Kepka Werke) equipped with a simplified type of photoelectric "magic eye" inserted in the center of a parabolic scanning mirror. This apparatus was also supposed to be mounted in the cone of the Enzian antiaircraft rocket, but just then the war suddenly took on a catastrophic rhythm.

After crossing the Po, the Allies forced Field Marshal Kesselring's divisions to surrender, and moving up from the south the British Eighth Army occupied the still undefended recesses of the Alpine Redoubt, which was then under construction. There, among hundreds of inventions of inestimable value, the men of the Eighth Army's T Unit found a number of pieces removed from the mysterious *Feuerball* together with the Enzian rocket and its deadly fuse, the minuscule Mücka detector, which was supposed to enable the pilots of the very fast night fighter jets to "see" their squadron mates by means of infrared lights mounted on their wing tips and tails.

The war ended but research continued. In fact, in 1948 the American Air Force experimented with a bomb (V.B. 6 Felix) whose trajectory was regulated by an apparatus sensitive to the heat given off by the target (ships, factories, petroleum refineries, steel mills, urban areas).[5]

In addition, they found on the drawing board items that a number of years later would result in the Sidewinder air-to-air missiles (similar to the British Firestreak), which were supposed to seek the hottest point in their cone of action: either the exhausts of aircraft engines—but only if the plane was attacked from the rear (wasn't that what the "strange red light" over Goshen did?)—or the propelling nozzle of a jet plane or missile (it was probably a rocket of this sort that downed the American V-2 over Russia), or the sun, if they were launched by mistake at a target against that star.

All this was well known at the Air Matériel Command, and the grotesque wall of secrecy that surrounded new military designs being separately worked out by the three American services was equally well known. Could the "ball" over Goshen have been some radio-controlled device belonging to the Army or Navy? The Pentagon immediately clamped the lid on such suspicions. A denial was also issued to the press. Then American newspapers "rediscovered" the Foo Fighters.

THE "KRAUT BALLS"

A former flying officer, who had been in the intelligence section of the Eighth Air Force during the final days of the war in Europe and did not wish to be named, apparently because he was still working in some section of the U.S. Air Force, declared to the New York press:

"It is quite possible that the flying saucers are the latest development of a 'psychological' antiaircraft weapon that the Germans had already used. During night missions over western Germany I happened to see on several occasions shining discs or balls that followed our formations. It was well known that the German night fighters had powerful headlights in their noses or propeller hubs—lights that would suddenly catch the target, partly in order to give the German pilots better aim but mostly in order to blind the enemy tail gunners in their turrets. They caused frequent alarms and continual nervous tension among the crews, thereby lowering their efficiency. During the last year of the war the Germans also sent up a number of radio-controlled bright objects to interfere with the ignition systems of our engines or the operation of the on-board radar. In all probability American scientists picked up this invention and are now perfecting it so that it will be on a par with the new offensive and defensive air weapons."

Then other flyers who had taken part in the opening of the second front also reported to the press that toward the end of the hostilities, in the area between Hagenau in Alsace-Lorraine and Neustadt an der Weinstrasse in the Rhine Valley, there were certain phenomena that oddly resembled the present-day reports of flying saucers. Convinced that they were faced with a new German secret weapon, the American flyers called them Foo Fighters (fire fighters, from the French *feu,* fire) and, jokingly, "Kraut balls." Subsequently, something similar but on a far smaller scale was seen by bomber crews over the Japanese islands.

Former war correspondent R. Palmer, for example, has related how one of the Foo Fighters followed an American plane over the Rhine Valley for about eighteen miles.

The incident began at 10:00 P.M. on November 23, 1944. Lieutenant Edward Schlueter of the 415th U.S. Night Fighter Squadron, stationed at Dijon, was flying a heavy night fighter toward Mainz. After carrying out a large-scale diversion along the northern edge of the Black Forest, the pilot began to follow the long ribbon of the Rhine. At about twenty miles from Strasbourg, Lieutenant Fred Ringwald, an Air Force intelligence officer who was taking part in the mission as an observer, glanced out the side window of the darkened cockpit and saw in the distance about ten small balls of reddish fire flying in formation at an amazing speed.

"I wonder what those lights are over there in the hills," Ringwald said to Schlueter.

"Probably stars," the pilot replied.

"I don't think so."

"Are you sure they're not a reflection from us?"

"Positive."

Puzzled, the pilot looked hard at the lights, which were now coming straight toward his plane. Without further delay, he radioed the American ground radar station:

"There are about ten Heinie night fighters around here, in the sky. Looks as if they are chasing us, and their speed is high."

"You guys must be nuts! Nobody up there but yourself," replied the radar station.

The radar observer, Lieutenant Donald J. Meiers, then got on the plane's radarscope to scan the fiery balls, but although the danger zone and the entire sky in the vicinity was scanned, there was no evidence of enemy aircraft: "Sure, no enemy planes showed up on the screen! And yet those red lights. . . ."

They continued to glow in sinister fashion a few miles off. Schlueter moved toward them at full throttle. As if they had foreseen the attack, the glow of the bodies rapidly dimmed, and without changing position, after a few moments they became completely invisible. The American plane crossed that part of the sky without encountering any moving body.

No more than two minutes went by and the globes, glowing red as before, reappeared but somewhat farther off, as though regrouping for a counterattack. Instead, six minutes later, after having completed a very long glide, they vanished into the night toward the German rear behind the Siegfried Line.

At this point the plane's radar began to give evidence of serious malfunctioning and the pilot had to give up his train strafing for the night.

Discussing what had happened during the flight back to the base, the flyers came to the conclusion that what they had seen were experimental devices (which explained the malfunctioning of the radar) on the order of the small multicolored rockets that earlier used to be fired at German antiaircraft batteries in order to confuse their aim during the great night bombing raids. Since they had not been able to identify the lights with any degree of certainty, and since the lights themselves had given no indication of aggressive intention, the flyers decided not to mention them in their flight report to the Dijon command for fear of being considered lunatics or victims of war neurosis.

REPORTS AND RUMORS ABOUT THE FOO FIGHTERS

On November 27, 1944, two pilots, Henry Giblin and Walter Cleary, encountered an enormous, burning orange light in the vicinity of Speyer. It was flying at about 250 mph about 1500 feet above their fighter plane. The radar station in the sector again radioed back the equivalent of "Nuts!" when the pilots queried the presence of this threat.

The plane's own radar almost immediately began to malfunction, and they had to return to base. A detailed report—the first acknowledgment in official form—confirmed the existence of the inexplicable lights, and the two men who reported them became the butt of many jokes.

Subsequently other flyers encountered the mysterious Foo Fighters, but having learned their lesson from the fate of their colleagues, they never mentioned them in their flight reports.

Pilots McFalls and Baker were the ones who broke this imposed silence. They too were from the 415th Squadron, and their very short but detailed report forced Air Force intelligence to consider the matter seriously:

"At 0600 [on December *22],* near Hagenau, at 10,000 feet altitude, two very bright lights climbed toward us from the ground. They leveled off and stayed on the tail of our plane. They were huge bright orange lights. They stayed there for two minutes. On my tail all the time. They *were under perfect control* [by operators on the ground]. Then they turned away from us, and the fire seemed to go out." The rest of the report was censored. Apparently it went on to mention the plane's radar and its sudden malfunctioning.

Two nights later the same pilots were flying over the Rhine when they were "attacked" by a glowing red ball that suddenly "changed into an airplane which did a wing over! Then it dived and disappeared." Additional censored lines.

Knowledge of these facts, which were being increasingly repeated, finally caught the attention of military publications. During the last days of December 1944, stories were leaked to the *American Legion Magazine,* which published the personal opinions of several U.S. Intelligence officers and suggested that the Foo Fighters were radio-controlled devices that the Germans sent up to baffle the radar of the night raiders. Picking up the story, the newspapers dug up Hitler's threatening speeches boasting of the imminent use of certain secret weapons capable of compromising or at least delaying the Allied victory.

In an effort to dissipate apprehension, on January 1, 1945, the science editor of the Associated Press, Howard W. Blakeslee, gave a radio talk in which he accepted the official view of Intelligence and assured his vast audience that the balls of light reported by flyers over France were simply St. Elmo's fire—natural and spontaneous lights produced by mutual electrostatic induction by the very craft flying the missions. And since the lights were immaterial, radar could not pick them up.

Echoes of these inconclusive discussions reached the American bases in France that were directly concerned with the question. Then the pilots themselves, most of whom had already been flying for a number of years and were quite familiar with St. Elmo's fire, decided to clear up the mystery.

The crew of a bomber that for a short time was being followed at a distance by an irregular formation of about fifteen fiery balls then reported that each of them gave off a strange light that went on and off at intervals and seemed to be related to clear variations in speed. At a certain point "one by one the balls approached so close that they almost touched the wings. They were huge, spinning balls, and for a short time we felt an intense sensation of heat." Naturally, the plane's radar ceased functioning.

The pilot of another Flying Fortress also reported that he had encountered a fiery ball over German territory. He was so ridiculed by his comrades, who declared that he had seen the celebrated Rhine maidens, that he was almost convinced that he had seen nothing at all when, two nights later, while flying back to the base, he saw a fiery mass similar to the one that had caused his discomfiture moving a few miles off. Aided by the fact that their paths were converging, he decided to fly right up to it. When he was a few hundred yards from the Foo Fighter, he heard a strange sound, like the "backwash of invisible planes." He continued on his flight path and the flying fire seemed to go out or to fly off. Resuming his interrupted flight to the base, the pilot saw the same shining, motionless ball at a high altitude off in the distance.

The suspicion that a German counteroffensive was imminent in Alsace to complement the one in the Ardennes led the Allied authorities to a close check of the most insignificant Nazi activities.

On January 12 several bombing squadrons simultaneously reported to the command at Dijon that they had seen the balls of light; some had seen one, others two, still others four or more. In the following months the reports on the Foo Fighters—and they were all alike in content and conclusions—formed a voluminous dossier that justified opening a special investigation, but it was at once noted that the balls showed no aggressive intentions, and since the territory over which they were operating had been occupied, the investigation was shelved toward the end of April 1945.

From the very beginning, the British showed not the least interest in the phenomenon. No hint of the facts recounted above appeared in the British press. But, in fact, Section T of British Intelligence was looking into the matter.

In early May, cruising on a free mission near the eastern edge of the Pfalzerwald, where French and American forces were still wiping out one of the many small pockets of isolated German units, yet another pilot from the 415th Squadron saw five orange balls in the distance proceeding in triangular formation. This was the last episode in the series. After the war was over, the Foo Fighters were forgotten for five years.[6]

Undoubtedly some of these manifestations could have been induced by the spontaneous, intensified production of natural phenomena, not electrostatic as Blakeslee had it but electro-atmospheric (ball lightning), arising out of the change of the German rear lines (as well as parts of Japanese territory) into a vast brazier and out of the violent daily movement of the land and the air above it.

But the Germans had brought into action various war devices that, examined one by one, could explain many of the things the American pilots had reported. For example, the Germans launched fluorescent balloons of moderate size. Released in the vicinity of the presumed point of ballistic contact between the raiders and the interceptors, they were supposed to fool the escort fighters and cause them to break away from the formation, thus permitting the attacking fighters to speed into the bomber formation.

Whole series of balloons were used to lift all kinds of shapes and sizes into the air in order to fool Allied radar by altering the apparent conformation of the land they were flying over. The shapes of the little lakes of Wannsee and Müggelsee, which were basic points of navigational reference, were frequently moved about in this manner.[7]

In addition, the Germans repeatedly sent up their Aphrodites, special black balloons that released sheets of tinfoil during enemy raids in order to confuse Allied radar.

Finally there were the first German jet and rocket interceptors for day and night combat, with their well-known white-hot circular exhausts and special fighting tactics; blueprints for these were subsequently sent to Japan in large transport submarines from a collapsing Germany.

THE ANTIRADAR FEUERBALL

With the news of the third massive appearance of the flying saucers, in 1950, the Foo Fighters reappeared on the scene, this time cited by ufologists as proof that Martian observers were present in the skies during the last war.

Since the idea of extraterrestrial observers clashes with the most elementary horse sense, let us rummage about for a while among the German secrets of the last days of the war, with special reference to that category of secrets which, for reasons of military expedience, even today preserves in whole or in part its shadowy and malefic character.

In the autumn of 1954, in Oberammergau in Bavaria, the O.B.F.—an experimental center run by the Luftwaffe—had completed a series of researches into electrical apparatuses capable of interfering with the operation of an engine up to a maximum distance of about a hundred feet by producing intense electromagnetic fields. If the ignition system of a plane's engine could be shortcircuited, the plane would be bound to crash. In order to make the invention a practical proposition, the German technicians proposed to at least triple the radius of action of this weapon, but when the conflict ended, researches along those lines had been barely sketched out.

In the meantime, as a by-product of these researches that could be put to immediate use in the war, another center, run by Speer and the S.S. Technical General Staff, had adopted the idea of employing "proximity radio interference" on the very much more delicate and hence more vulnerable electronic apparatuses of the American night fighters.

Thus a highly original flying machine was born; it was circular and armored, more or less resembling the shell of a tortoise, and was powered by a special turbojet engine, also flat and circular, whose principles of operation recalled the well-known aeolipile of Hero, which generated a great halo of luminous flames. Hence it was named *Feuerball* (Fireball). It was unarmed and pilotless. Radio-controlled at the moment of take-off, it then automatically followed enemy aircraft, attracted by their exhaust flames, and approached close enough without collision to wreck their radar gear.

The fiery halo around its perimeter—caused by a very rich fuel mixture—and the chemical additives that interrupted the flow of electricity by overionizing the atmosphere in the vicinity of the plane, generally around the wing tips or tail surfaces, subjected the H2S radar on the plane to the action of powerful electrostatic fields and electromagnetic impulses (the latter generated by large klystron radio tubes protected with special antishock and antiheat armor).[8] Since a metal arc carrying an oscillating current of the proper frequency —equal, that is, to the frequency used by the radar station —can cancel the blips (return signals from the target), the *Feuerball* was almost undetectable by the most powerful American radar of the time, despite its nighttime visibility.

In addition, the builders of the device hoped—and their hopes were fulfilled—that when the Allied flyers, not knowing their nature or purpose, noticed that the fiery balls were apparently harmless, they would not fire on these enormous-looking (because of their large halos of fire) “inoffensive” devices for fear of being caught in some gigantic explosion. More than once, in fact, as they fearfully watched those huge lights close in, the American pilots thought that some German technician on the ground was perhaps getting ready to push a button and cause the Foo Fighter to explode.[9]

Project *Feuerball* was first constructed at the aeronautical establishment at Wiener Neustadt, with the help of the Flugfunk Forschungsanstalt of Oberpfaffenhoffen (F.F.O.) in so far as radio control of the missile was concerned (but *was* it really a missile?).[10] One person who saw the first short test flights of the device, without its electrical gear, says that “during the day it looked like a shining disc spinning on its axis and during the night it looked like a burning globe.”

Hermann Göring inspected the progress of the work a number of times, for he hoped, as in fact it happened, that the mechanical principle could later also be used to produce an offensive weapon capable of revolutionizing the whole field of aerial warfare.

When the Russians began to press on toward Austria, the construction of the first Fireballs was apparently continued by a number of underground plants in the Schwarzwald that were run by the Zeppelin Werke.[11] The klystron tubes were supplied by the section of the Forschungsanstalt der Deutschen Reichpost (F.D.R.P.) of Aach bei Radolfzell on Lake Constance, and later also by the F.D.R.P. section of Gehlberg, whose products, however, were not as perfect as those delivered by the F.D.R.P., a fact that caused a number of Fireballs to be used simultaneously in formation.[12]

THE JÄGERSTAB

After the "miraculous" failure of the July twentieth attempt on his life, Hitler was convinced that divine providence favored him; in August 1944, despite serious reverses in the field, he refused to admit that the war was now lost. He threatened harsh measures against anyone who dared speak of defeat, and in the military conference held on September 1 at Rastenburg he astonished the few generals who remained faithful to him with certain mysterious allusions to "the magnificent opportunity offered by the coming winter, with its fogs, snows, and long nights," which would finally bring the Allied operations to a halt. Through bitter experience he was well aware of the fact that the rigors of winter would stabilize all fronts, saving Germany for the moment. He was quite right, but, allowing himself to be carried away by excessive euphoria concerning that "magnificent opportunity" —or perhaps by an inner, growing desperation masked by euphoria—he ordered his generals to undertake the Ardennes winter counteroffensive. Because it was conducted with a forced economy of means, this maneuver could not achieve its objectives and ended by giving the *coup de grâce* to the exhausted German army.

At the same time Hitler's hopes for complete cessation of Allied aerial activity on the Western Front were disappointed. On the heels of the advancing troops, Allied service units had in fact set up field radar stations in the French rear, which by now was equivalent to the German border. These stations furnished the fighter and bomber formations with various kinds of information on the thin German defenses.

But the worst blow to Hitler's hopes was struck in October, when an enormous British air raid reduced to rubble the great radio jamming station that had recently been constructed on the Grosser Feldberg in the Taunus range. This station, equipped with the finest German devices, was built in an area from which it was able to protect the industrial regions of the Ruhr and the Saar, whose production, together with that of Silesia, had become vital to the prosecution of the war.[13] From that moment on, German skies, which had already been inadequately defended for some time, were completely opened to the enemy's so-called saturation bombings—in the last quarter of 1944 they accounted for 80,000 victims—and to the great air offensive against German transportation and communication designed to choke her war production at the source.[14]

To support the preparations for the Ardennes offensive and hinder the Allies from bringing up extensive supplies of troops and matériel along the Rhine axis by night, the Fireballs were thrown into action prematurely, and under the pressure of events unfavorable to the Germans, they were unable to have a decisive effect.[15] In addition, their development and subsequent use had paralleled the vicissitudes of German aeronautical production.

Notwithstanding the terrible Allied bombardments, German factories had continued to produce arms of all sorts, particularly air weaponry. In September 1944 they reached the amazing record of 4103 aircraft, but the greater part of this number never even flew because of the chronic shortage of fuel. The planes were destroyed on the ground at the airfields or during rail shipment from the factories to the flying fields.[16] The foundations for this undeniable but thoroughly useless achievement were laid down two years before.

Beginning in 1942, in order to meet the by now obvious threat of a long war against a powerful bloc of enemies, the German Air and War Production Ministries had encouraged every kind of proposal and experiment in the field of jet propulsion and related matters and had permitted a part of the regular assembly lines to be converted. Increasingly feeling the weight of Allied air mastery, the various services and technical groups each began to exert direct pressure on manufacturers and ministries in order to receive the lion's share of the allotments. The metropolitan air defense—supported principally by the air ace General Galland—requested fighter planes, especially jet fighters, in order to halt the air raids which were mounting to a crescendo and reducing the country to ruins. The Heereswaffenamt (Army Weapons Office) worked secretly to get fighter-bombers and antitank planes for the Eastern Front. Uncertain what to do and soured by the failure of "his" Battle of Britain, Göring wanted heavy bombers, mostly to support his imminent retaliation with V-1s and V-2s and restore the now eclipsed prestige of the Luftwaffe, and thereby his own. Hitler wanted nothing but bombers, in order to pay the British back in their own coin for the pounding that he had to take with angry impotence, and to give air support to the various counteroffensives that he was planning on paper. The most powerful leaders in the party and the propaganda office took Hitler's side, declaring that the United States, too, was ripe for a "good lesson."

In this atmosphere of senseless differences and disillusioned by Göring's many empty promises, Hitler acted as a clumsy mediator and irreparably delayed the production of the excellent ME-262 jet fighter, which was already well advanced.[17] Nevertheless, the production of conventional fighters was at the same time speeded up, although not to the degree demanded under the circumstances; indeed, in February 1944 the Jägerstab (Fighter General Staff) was set up and achieved a formidable increase in the single-engined ME-109 and FW-190 interceptors.

In April, Dr. Sauer changed the Jägerstab into a real rearmament office (Rustungsstab), and for the first time civilian authorities interfered officially in questions that had always been the province of Luftwaffe officers.[18] The Rustungsstab set up an immediate program of emergency production, although it also gave a free hand to the development and implementation of new projects so long as they did not interfere with the realization of the base program.[19] This plan, which would certainly have restored Germany’s air supremacy, at least over her own territory, was accepted only in part, and in the final analysis this was the reason it failed.[20]

By means of complicated internal maneuvering Göring sought to reestablish his shrunken authority, and by October he succeeded in launching the Wehrforschungsgemeinschaft, a kind of research weapons pool of particular interest to the air arm. But he had to accept the unwelcome presence in its councils of Professor Osenberg, a high functionary under Minister Speer, and finally of the extremist wing of the regime, the dreaded S.S. The S.S.’s fighting formations in the ranks of the Wehrmacht had meantime grown to the proportions of a small army, battle-hardened and obviously destined to grow even larger if circumstances permitted.

S.S. DOMINANCE

Once he had consolidated his power and in 1934 got rid of the opposition of part of his collaborators through a bloodbath, Hitler dissolved the original storm troopers (the S.A.), who had become unreliable. He replaced them with a permanent organization, the Gestapo (Geheime Staatspolizei, Secret State Police), which created a black uniformed militia, the Schutzstaffel (Elite Guard), later better known simply as the S.S., and infamous for its political terrorism and its cruelty in the death camps.

An offshoot of the same command, but organized for other purposes, was the Waffen S.S., the military body that fought side by side with the army. It was quite apart from Himmler’s political militia, but it was tending to transform itself into a kind of gigantic national militia. When the war broke out, the Waffen S.S. Korps accepted into its ranks large numbers of ardent young Nazis, who received a mixture of military and political training and then, formed into autonomous S.S. divisions, took part in the military campaigns, distinguishing themselves not only for their admitted courage but also for the bloody reprisals they carried out in occupied territory.

The slow backstairs intrigue that the highest S.S. leaders engaged in in order to assume the reins of military operations began in 1943, when so many fronts were broken through that it became clear that the "inevitable victory" was neither so close nor so inevitable as Doctor Goebbels' political oratory would have one believe. But the right time came only with the unexpected assassination attempt of July 20, 1944, which revealed the latent enmity between part of the Wehrmacht and Nazism and resulted in a large, grim harvest of victims. It was the same antagonism that in Italy had set the monarchy against Fascism, but in Germany—given the time, place, and circumstances—the rival forces acted according to a *kolossal* plan, one that was really typically German.[21]

Furious at both the insult and the danger he had been in, Hitler turned control of planning, construction, and in some cases even the use of the "new weapons" over to the S.S.—without, however, taking away all authority from his ministers. Previously the S.S. had exercised only a more or less hidden control in this area to prevent production slow-downs, sabotage, and treason.

Reichsführer S.S. Himmler named Dr. Heinz Kammler, a Gruppenführer (Lieutenant General) of the S.S., the director of secret war production, which now included the famous V-series flying bombs and rockets. The effects, which from all reports were relatively beneficial to the Third Reich, were soon visible. The famous V-2 torpedo rocket, with its final bugs still not eliminated, was dragged—and that is exactly the right word—onto the launching areas and fired on London in salvos despite the bewilderment and resistance of the directors of the experimental center at Peenemünde. The S.S. wanted weapons, not promises. And in order to impose its growing authority in that sector, it requested and got control of the launching and even the firing of the bombs.

Another important skirmish in the S.S.'s growing intervention in the conduct of the war was its manifest interest in certain unusual weapons that promised dangerous but certain victories.

In August 1944 the Bachem firm in Waldsee began its project for a single-seater, rocket-armed, rocket-engined fighter, the Bachem 8-349-A.1, which was completed in record time. Called the *Natter* (Viper), this was a vertical-take-off plane controlled by a metal pylon.[22] In the spring of 1945 the firm received the following orders: for the Luftwaffe, 50 machines; for the S.S. Air Arm, 150 machines. The S.S. seemed bent on surpassing the Air Force in the defense of the Reich![23]

Then, since the weapons for active defense were delayed in leaving the underground assembly lines in the requisite numbers, the S.S. Technical General Staff prepared its own radar and radio antiaircraft interference units. By the clever use of "artificial objectives" and antiradar apparatuses that it had commandeered while still in the experimental stage, it succeeded in confusing the flight officers of the Allied bombers. But the greatest success of their most trusted technicians in this sector was without doubt the whirling antiradar airplane, the Fireball, which they had launched in squadrons and were still able to keep fairly secret until the very end.

To understand the rest of the story better, we must understand that the S.S. had a number of scientific research and testing centers that are best described as "private." One of the oldest of these was located in Grossendorf, where rocket studies were carried out under Captain R. Engel. Another center for similar testing was in operation at Jenbach, in Austria. A third and very well equipped center, and perhaps the most important of all, was also in operation in Austria, in St. Aegyd, a small city north of Vienna. Although it went under the name of the Kraftfahrtechnischenlehranstalt (K.T.L.)—in other words, a public technical institute, or a polytechnical school, for the S.S.—in the last days of the war it was in reality mostly concerned with unusual applications of jet propulsion and the first gas turbines for all sorts of war vehicles such as tanks, motorboats, gliders, and other such offensive vehicles. At the beginning of 1945 the S.S. high command moved the institute because it was located too far east. It took fifty trucks packed with documents, projects, blueprints, and experimental apparatuses and models to move the center to Sulzheim and the surrounding villages by night. It resumed operations on April 8, but a month later the British experts of the T Department were rummaging about in that precious heap of papers.

THE INDUSTRIEKONTOR

The full power that had been given to General Kammler also opened the door for the S.S. to those governmental and private centers that at first had resisted direct collaboration. Thus the Forschungsinstitut of Lindau am Bodensee, which was conducting researches into liquid air and "special weapons" only a short distance from the Black Forest, fell under S.S. control. Likewise the various departments of the Kaiser Wilhelm Institut; the remnants of the famous Baltic experimental center of Peenemünde, which had been evacuated to Kochel, Garmisch, and Oetzal in Bavaria; the research and development departments of industrial firms; and the laboratories of universities and technical institutes.[24] Nevertheless, the S.S. was unable to enjoy all the advantages from the new situation that it would have had earlier: namely, complete industrial and economic control of the whole nation. The links between the various centers and between the centers and the factories became increasingly precarious. Evacuating entire industries and setting them up again in underground quarters required time and manpower that was out of all proportion to what was available.[25]

Notwithstanding the self-sacrifice of the fighting men, the disciplined resignation of the civilians, the iron regimentation of the workingman, and the pitiless slave labor extracted from an immense number of war prisoners, the situation got worse and worse. In the east, Russian armies were already trampling the edges of German soil, while the Anglo-Americans were hammering deeper and deeper into Germany not only with the giant air raids but also with the intensive use of saboteurs, who were even more dangerous than the bombs because they struck silently and penetrated the underground laboratories, interrupting vital research.

The job of putting the industries and the new experimental centers underground (in order to save time and transport facilities, these two areas tended to be treated as one) had, until October 1944, been arranged between the competent government offices and the individual firms or directly between the latter and various private excavation contractors. Subsequently it was unified by Speer under a state enterprise, the Industriekontor G.m.b.H. (Industry Office), which controlled who was to use the underground complexes and the contractors under the Todt organization, which had the job of adapting already existent caves or excavating the underground facilities.[26]

The manpower (political and war prisoners) for the job of excavation was supplied and overseen by the S.S. It was therefore inevitable that in the end the S.S. would take over control of the entire operation. Indeed, it operated certain areas of industry for its own ends, ousting the Industry Office and taking over from Todt. Sometimes it took them over for reasons of private speculation, other times in order to better hide secret laboratories of particular interest to the S.S., like the one in Linz St. Georgen, in upper Austria. But the usual ideological differences and the well-known intransigence of the new bosses so delayed the work that in December 1944 only three-fifths of the underground facilities had been completed.[27]

General Kammler apologized to Himmler for this partial failure, pointing out in his defense the unfavorable progress of the war and the shortages of machinery, fuel, and manpower. Strangely (but perhaps there was some sort of secret understanding), Reichsführer S.S. Himmler did not take it badly; he did not fire or threaten his subordinate. With a red pencil he wrote in the margin of Kammler's report simply: *"Sehr gut"* (Very good).[28]

In fact, most of the establishments that had been set up underground during the course of the previous spring were already operating in or would soon be operating in the German rear lines, and Himmler grew more and more enamored of what he called the "Bavarian Redoubt," out of sheer chauvinism, for it was to include the Austrian Tyrol and the Italian Dolomites as well.

The southern Reich was not overlooked. S.S. technicians and Speer's trusted functionaries, though they both acted independently, had transferred or were in the process of transferring the better part of the scientific equipment for the rearming of the Wehrmacht to the south and they set about feverishly to get it into operation again.

OPERATION ALPINE REDOUBT

Following the complete reorganization of February 1, 1945, Speer, who was under secret surveillance and in some cases even forcibly subordinated to the S.S. Technical General Staff, assumed direct control of carrying out all the research and implementation of new projects, which were chosen and developed with a speed that seems miraculous to anyone unfamiliar with the means of coercion employed in the final phases of the war. The fundamental objective of the Nazis was, however, to speed up work on the so-called Operation Alpine Redoubt. But at this point we must introduce, in a necessarily condensed form, a bit of history prior to the above, for a final judgment on the aims and events of this controversial operation has a bearing on the *likelihood of a German origin —"paternity" would, perhaps, be too strong a word—for the new secret methods of propulsion that in later years would be manifested with the appearance of various types of UFO.*

The history of Nazi Germany is well enough known from its beginning to its end. We know how and with what means Hitler took power and we know in the most minute detail that "warlord's" victories and defeats. Although disagreeing on certain particulars, various authors have described how he swept both himself and the Third Reich into the final tragedy. Nevertheless, except for the unsuccessful Ardennes counteroffensive and the detailed picture of purely military operations, the period between the intensification of the Anglo-American heavy bombing raids and the battle of Berlin is not yet perfectly known. Fragmentary bits of information throw only a few flashes of light on the varied and complex aspects of the titanic industrial effort that Nazism made in order not to succumb.

In fact, of the numerous revolutionary “new weapons” that the Germans developed in that period, we know only those—fortunately, they comprise the majority—that fell into the hands of all, or at least more than one, of the four occupying powers. And little or no information on the enormous labor required to put German industries underground has been placed before the public at large, for the retention of the data collected by various Allied commissions, notwithstanding the more than twenty years that have passed since then, offers a textbook lesson in military secretiveness.

“I will win the Battle of Time!” Hitler proclaimed as he took leave of the experts from the Party and the Waffen S.S. who were planning their resistance in the south of the Reich. Now it is a historical fact that he lost that battle without ever having fought it when he decided not to leave his Berlin bunker, but no official report has so far illuminated that particular incident of the Nazi twilight, thus leaving the field free to the personal opinions of the writers of war memoirs.

In his book A *Soldiers Story,* the commander of the United States XII Army, General Omar Bradley, declares, for example: “I was eager to clean out the Ruhr and with every division that could be spared from that task push on to the Elbe and Mulde. Once we had closed to that river line, I would spread two of my Armies behind it and turn southeast with the third, down the Danube to link up in Austria with the Red army then nearing Vienna. After having completed that movement we would have cut off the enemy’s retreat into his National Redoubt. . . . Months before, G-2 had tipped us off to a fantastic enemy plot for the withdrawal of troops into the Austrian Alps, where weapons, stores, and even aircraft plants were reported cached for a last-ditch holdout. . . .[29] Troops for the Redoubt, we had been told, were to come primarily from S.S. units and a swift check of the battle order on both our and the Russian front revealed a suspicious concentration of S.S. divisions on the southern flanks. Not until after the campaign ended were we to learn that this Redoubt existed largely in the imaginations of a few fanatic Nazis. It grew into so exaggerated a scheme that I am astonished we could have believed it as innocently as we did. But while it persisted, this legend of the Redoubt was too ominous a threat to be ignored and in consequence it shaped our tactical thinking during the closing weeks of the war."

Hanson Baldwin, author of *Great Mistakes of the War,* is another skeptic, although in his final sentence he partially admits the existence of the Redoubt: "[Eisenhower's] overemphasis on the 'National Redoubt' [was], it is now clear, mistaken. Intelligence failures again played a part in this mistake;[30] the 'National Redoubt'—fortifications and supplies supposed to have been prepared by the Nazi S.S. formations in the German-Austrian Alps for a last stand—was grossly overrated in our estimates. We learned later that relatively little work on the 'Redoubt' had been done; the scheme was more an idea than an accomplishment."

In *Top Secret,* Ralph Ingersoll, an American liaison officer at S.H.A.E.F., gives a version of the facts much more in line with German intentions: "Bradley was complete master of the situation, . . . in full command of the three armies that had broken through the Rhine defenses and were free to exploit their victories. Analyzing the whole situation, Bradley felt that to take battered Berlin would be an empty military victory. (It was not known at the time that Hitler was to make his last stand there.) The German War Department had long since moved out, leaving only a rear echelon. The main body of the German War Department, including its priceless archives, had been transferred to the Thuringian Forest, and an advance echelon was already near Berchtesgaden to prepare for a possible last stand in the mountains.[31] Berlin had been almost blown flat and was contributing practically nothing to the German war machine. The same Thuringian Forest that hid the German High Command was also known to be Hitler's secret factory area.[32] Moreover, Bradley felt that if he drove northeast from the Frankfurt gap to Berlin, he would be simply squeezing the German Army southward, forcing it to just where the Nazi Party leaders might want it to be. In the south the German Army had ideal terrain for a last stand."[33]

One final quotation, but this one is decisive, for it comes from a British source and is therefore much better informed in "secret matters," thanks above all to the information collected by Intelligence Service and S.A.S. agents who in the final days had daringly operated in the very area of the then abuilding redoubt:

"When our invasion armies were threatening his 'Fortress of Europe,' Hitler promised that if the German people would only hold out, and give him time, German scientists would provide them with new weapons which would change the course of the war.

"Again when the Reich was crumbling under the final onslaughts from West and East, Nazi propaganda laboured to create a vision of the Southern Redoubt, an inner fortress from which in a few months Germany would strike back with terrible weapons which would snatch victory at 'one minute past twelve.'

"In these respects they were not entirely lying. In the course of two recent visits to Germany, as leader of a technical mission for the Ministry of Aircraft Production, I have seen enough of their designs and production plans to realize that if they had managed to prolong the war some months longer, we would have been confronted with a set of entirely new and deadly developments in air warfare. . . .

"There is some reason to believe that Hitler had been promised atomic explosives by October of this year, and if Germany had been first to use them the idea of changing the whole course of the war from a small base in the south German mountains is by no means so far-fetched" (according to Sir Roy Fedden, in *The Nazi's V-Weapons Matured Too Late,* London, 1945).

It would be superfluous to quote the few other remarks that can be found in the memoirs of the actors in the final assault on the Greater Reich. These quotations, all having about the same degree of vagueness of content and differing in their conclusions, constitute the entire "literature" that exists today on the controversial question of the Alpine Redoubt. It will be worthwhile, however, to examine the sequence of events that preceded the Alpine Redoubt.

THE TRUTH ABOUT THE ALPINE REDOUBT

Just before the surprise Ardennes offensive, Allied propaganda was making much of the continual military reverses of the enemy and proclaiming that 1944 would be the year in which the Germans would be pushed back home. Indeed, after the Anglo-American D-Day invaders had disastrously broken through the "invulnerable" Atlantic Wall, the German armies had had to yield immense territories running from the whole of France to central Italy, from three-quarters of the Polish plains to the whole of Rumania, from the spontaneous evacuation of the Balkans to the forced evacuation from Finnish territory adjacent to Norway, which was still under firm control but now isolated and inactive.

The area of *Europa Festung* (Fortress Europe; *i.e.,* the various continental countries that had been occupied since September 1939, and that the Nazis boasted of having transformed into an armory of men and weapons that would guarantee their inevitable victory) had been virtually reduced to the territory of the Reich itself, with a few border areas of foreign soil soon destined to become a battlefield on which the Germans would try to stave off the collapse of Nazism.

The Vaterland Plan sprang from the premise that the ideal bastions of the great German quadrilateral would withstand the shock of enemy offensives until the various secret weapons that were supposed to reverse the fortunes of the war could be got ready. These weapons were variously called weapons of revenge, victory, or desperation, depending on whether Nazi leaders, German soldiers, or the Allied General Staff were referring to them.[34]

Mindful of the recent attempt on the Führer's life, and despite the liquidations that followed it, a small group of important leaders in the higher spheres of the Nazi Party were still worried about new treacheries hatching in the so-called "generals' clique" in the Wehrmacht, and they did not care to run irretrievable risks. Moreover, various contretemps—changes in plans of construction, bombardments, sabotage, political interference, lack of special raw materials and petroleum, decentralization and putting industries underground—kept postponing the development and production of the new weapons to an increasingly indeterminate future.

For this reason, while more and more private, ultrasecret feelers for a separate armistice with the Western powers were sent out without the Führer's knowledge, the possibility of being forced to give up most of the national territory was being studied. Of course, the land would be defended foot by foot and would be stripped of all war and industrial installations that could in any way help the invader, as the Soviets had previously done so successfully.

After the sensational climax to the Battle of France, among the many who began to doubt Hitler's farsightedness was the Gauleiter (regional president) of the Tyrol, Franz Hofer. He was rightly fearful that the Anglo-Americans would immediately launch the final Battle of Germany in order to try to bring the war in Europe to an end as soon as possible. With the strength of their air mastery and the exceptional mobility of their armored forces, they would easily swarm over the vast flatlands of northern Germany.

The hasty reactivation of the West Wall—the famous Siegfried Line, which had been inactive since 1940—seemed to him inadequate to stop the enemy onslaught after the poor showing offered by the far better equipped Atlantic Wall. The Rhine is, of course, a broad and deep river, but the far broader English Channel had not stopped the invaders! It was necessary, then, to think in terms of some natural barrier that would be more efficacious than a mere river and where one could form a bridgehead and hold out until the day when large numbers of the secret weapons could be employed. Given its central position with respect to the crumbling fronts, the formidable complex of peaks, valleys, and glaciers of the Alps appeared to be, if not the only, certainly the best adapted for a long-drawn-out stand. Besides, by a fortunate coincidence—if it could be called that—the direction of march of the Allied armies advancing on the French, Polish, and Italian fronts in the late autumn of 1944 made it almost certain that the German armies, retiring according to plan, would all converge precisely in the Alpine area.

Judging by the technical and military resources of the time, this was an ideal region in which to attempt prolonged resistance, provided the necessary defenses could be got ready in time. And it would also be the ideal place from which the victorious—as Hofer saw it—counterattack could be launched when the situation was ripe.

From private sources among his friends in the upper ranks of the S.S. and the Party, he had come to know about the proposal to evacuate the Italian peninsula secretly—which, it was rumored, Marshal Badoglio himself had suggested in August 1943. He had also learned that a number of generals commanding combat units had repeatedly requested that a kind of East Wall be constructed in the rear, running unbroken from the Baltic to the Black Sea across Polish territory, in order to immobilize the Russian front until hostilities could be ended in the West.[35] Moreover, he had for years followed with ill-concealed annoyance the work that the Italian army engineers were doing back in 1941 to complete the Littorio Wall, a chain of forts and communication trenches that in part dated back to the First World War and were aimed toward Austria.

But the impulse for the final working out of his *Alpenfestung* (Alpine Redoubt) plan came to Hofer from his knowledge of the measures that the Swiss had adopted in order to resist possible aggression. These measures had principally taken shape in the preparation of a great National Redoubt in the mountains of the southern part of the Confederation. The information secretly furnished by pro-Nazi members of various Swiss National Socialist cultural associations that, with German support, sprang up between 1938 and 1941 provided a detailed rundown of the various preparations: blocking mountain passes, mining tunnels and bridges, planning extensive destruction of roads and highways to prevent the movement of traffic outside the National Redoubt, building makeshift airports, digging trenches, camouflaging communication trenches, and transforming new tunnels into storehouses for food, arms, ammunition, medical supplies, and fuel.[36]

If little Switzerland with its limited resources, working seriously and diligently before the Normandy landings, was able to protect itself so well that the Germans were finally dissuaded from undertaking such a chancy adventure, could not big Germany with its far greater resources do the same thing? Or, even better, protect itself against the Allies' inevitable attack in depth?

After the Italian armistice, Hofer, now suddenly appointed Gauleiter for the South Tyrol and Reichstaatshalter (civilian high commissioner) for the pre-Alpine zone of operations, had extended his political jurisdiction to the Italian provinces of Bolzano, Trento, and Belluno. This development made it possible for him to gain more exact knowledge of the military possibilities of the Italian side of the Alps.

Inspecting the Littorio Wall installations, he immediately saw that only simple detail modifications were required to alter it successfully for a defense against an army approaching from the Italian plain. But since at that time it was unthinkable that the Littorio Wall should be reconstructed in order to meet an attack from the south, the whole complex of forts, caves, and tunnels, which was especially well developed in the area of the Dolomites, was quickly transformed in the spring of 1944 into a sort of arsenal for Marshal Kesselring's army. After his successful defense of Cassino, however, Kesselring decided not to abandon the peninsula.

Like many other minor leaders on the Nazi Olympus, Hofer was completely in the dark about Hitler's hopeful but highly secret plans for a counteroffensive in the Ardennes. He believed, not without reason, that the Wehrmacht's new divisions, with their reduced and demoralized effectives, and the very formation of the Volkssturm, that sort of people's militia made up of fifteen- and sixty-year-olds (the "army of grandfathers and grandsons," as Allied propaganda derisively put it), could only be a mask for reorganizing a "real" army far from the deteriorating fronts and rear lines.

THE HOFER PLAN

In November 1944 Hofer delivered a long memorandum, the *Alpenfestung Unternehmen,* to Bormann, asking him to show it to the Führer. Maps, photographs, and geostatistical data demonstrated the possibility of quickly creating an enormous camp, complete with communication trenches, in the Alps, in order to concentrate and reequip the remaining forces, principally elite troops and the Waffen S.S. The original sketch of the plan restricted the area of the "fortress" to the mountainous territory of western Austria, with a few edges projecting into the Po Valley to make use of installations already in existence.

The shock perimeter—taking advantage of the long Swiss border that the Allies would not, he thought, violate—beginning with the Ortles massif, would follow the Littorio Wall (rebaptized *Süd-Wall* for the occasion), excluding the high eastern plateaus to avoid possible encirclement from Croatia. Bordering the Hohe Tauern range, running along the Salzach River up to and including Berchtesgaden and then proceeding westward along the spurs of the Bavarian Alps until it reached the southern tip of Lake Constance, the gigantic defensive ring would have practically encircled, except at the Voralberg and part of Salzburg, the entire Gau (district) of the Tyrol, in which Hofer exercised, according to rumor, a personal dictatorship.

To carry out the plan with all the speed that the circumstances demanded, he offered the Nazi Party about 70,000 Austrian construction workers, already enrolled in the Labor Front and especially expert in building in mountainous terrain and in bombproof constructions, to add to the 250,000 prisoners that would be available if the work of putting industries underground in the remainder of the territory of the Reich were, as proposed, halted. Because of their familiarity with the area, the 30,000 men of the *Tiroler Standschützen,* the Tyrolean Territorial Militia, were to act as a police force and be responsible for defense against invading paratroopers in the rear areas of the Redoubt.

We don’t know quite why Bormann considered this emergency plan to be “mad and defeatist” and refused to present it to the Führer. Perhaps he genuinely believed that the military situation was about to be reversed with the imminent resumption of German offensives on the French and Belgian fronts.

The reception of the plan by the highest political levels of the secret services was equally negative. S.S. Gruppenführer Walter Schellenberg, who had—secretly, of course—opened armistice negotiations with the Anglo-Americans, opposed the plan in a number of ways, tacitly approving what Bormann had done, for he was afraid that if this project, which was judged to be completely useless insofar as obtaining a favorable armed solution of the conflict was concerned, were carried out, it might prejudice the outcome of his secret negotiations. Indeed, to take advantage of the inevitable gaps in Allied intelligence, some of the information presented in Hofer's memorandum was cleverly manipulated and falsified by German counterespionage experts—the AMT VI, under the direction of Schellenberg himself—and then circulated among Allied informers who sent it on to Allied headquarters in Paris, thereby nourishing the fear of prolonged German resistance. By rattling this skeleton, Schellenberg hoped both to speed up the negotiations and to get more advantageous surrender terms from the Allies. It was doubtless a very clever trick, but the Allied formula of "unconditional surrender" rendered it useless from the start (except for the "mysterious" postwar rescue of a number of Nazi personalities with somewhat compromised histories).

When the winter offensive in the Ardennes—which began to peter out because of a shortage of planes, firepower, and gasoline—finally failed, the tormenting question of the defense of the national territory (already violated in Aachen and east Prussia) once again became the prime concern. While Dr. Goebbels on Radio Berlin was entreating the soldiers to resist at all costs because something sensational was in the offing, Bormann, under the pressure of unfavorable events and cleverly maneuvering so as not to be held responsible for his obstructionism, allowed the head of national security, S.S. Obergruppenführer (General) Ernst Kaltenbrunner, to report to Hitler the Allies' concern about the defensive possibilities of the Alpine Redoubt.

A discussion between Hofer and Hitler was immediately arranged. The Führer became convinced, albeit reluctantly, of the utility and urgency of the operation. Then and there Hofer was charged with seeing to the defensive reinforcement of his district on the basis of the facts contained in his memorandum, the plan of which, however, would have to "undergo certain modifications in order to increase its efficacy."

THE MILITARY CONFERENCE OF JANUARY 27, 1945

The modifications were subsequently spelled out during one of those daily meetings that took place at the Führer's headquarters, which had been moved under the Berlin Chancellery.

It was January 27, 1945. In addition to the ever present darlings of the regime—Göring, Goebbels, and Bormann—twenty-five officers from the General Staff of the Wehrmacht and an unrecorded number of unidentifiable S.S. "experts" were also present. At first Hitler discussed aimlessly and at some length certain indications that had appeared in the neutral press concerning a coming rupture in the Allied camp and the consequent possibilities of offering a separate peace with Germany, in order to thwart the danger of Soviet occupation of eastern Europe. After finishing his absurdly optimistic political overview, the unconquerable warlord made it clear, however, that should the Anglo-American demands prove to be unacceptable, the alternative suggested by Gauleiter Hofer should be seriously considered. This would either induce the stubborn Western Allies to take milder counsel or enable Germany to continue the war in the unfortunate case that the Allies did not propose to reverse the front. The second part of the meeting was in fact dedicated to examining and perfecting the secret plan.[37]

Gauleiter Friedrich Rainer, High Civil Commissioner for the coastal zone of Croatia, was assigned the responsibility, which remained on paper owing to the swift development of events, of extending the eastern frontiers of the fortress to the district of Carinthia, where atomic research was being carried on by a number of Viennese experts who had been evacuated to the south the preceding spring and were working under the supervision of the S.S. Technical General Staff. The defensive perimeter was also to include western Styria and most of Salzburg—the latter because of the possibilities offered by its intricate network of lakes and the numerous abandoned salt mines in the Saltzkammergut, some of which had already been used in 1944 to hide certain essential war industries.

The Alpine Redoubt thus came to include the following: Upper Bavaria, the Allgäuern Alps, the Vorarlberg, the Tyrol, Berchtesgaden, Salzburg, Carinthia, western Styria, Trentino, and the Dolomites—much too large an area, considering the crucial factor of time. Other minor “islands,” either for a last-ditch stand or for holding up the gigantic Allied pincers movement on Germany and causing confusion, were set up in Norway, the Harz Mountains, the Böhmerwald, the Bayerischerwald, and the Schwartzwald.[38]

In spite of the well-known conformism in the Hitlerian entourage, there were nevertheless some differences of opinion. The Chief of the General Staff of the Wehrmacht, General Jodl, was flatly opposed to the idea of fortifying the areas bordering on the Swiss frontier, fearing an unfavorable reaction from the Swiss government. (He later reiterated his view in a personal letter to Himmler.[39]) In the end it was decided to furnish that delicate sector with tiny prefabricated concrete forts, called *Kugelstände,* which would be dug into the earth by night in such a way that they would be practically invisible even from quite close.[40]

After the general plan of operations was laid out—including a plan for the simultaneous withdrawal of fighting units and the assignment of special jobs to various persons attending the conference—Hitler made it clear as he was leaving that if the deteriorating situation made it necessary, he would assume command of the Alpine Redoubt on April 20, the day of his fifty-sixth birthday.

UNDERGROUND AIRFIELDS AND FACTORIES

In order to protect the north-central edge of the fortress, which ran along flat land for a certain distance west of the Ammersee, it was decided to construct three gigantic underground airfields in the Iglingerwald in record time.

What with the coming of vertical take-off, this Cyclopean enterprise will probably remain unique in the annals of military engineering. It was planned by the Führer as a corollary to the decisions taken with respect to the Alpine Redoubt. Headed by Speer, the principal persons in charge of war production were called to the Berlin Chancellery. Hitler discussed in detail the "U Plan," which the Todt engineers had prepared fourteen months earlier. This plan provided the blueprint for putting the factories of the vast Messerschmitt aircraft complex of Augsburg, which had already been hard hit by Allied bombardments, completely underground.

The modifications made necessary by the new war situation dealt principally with the extension of the enormous roof so that it would also cover the runway opposite the opening of the original construction in order to protect the jet fighters at take-off and landing, since it had been noted that at these times the planes were so vulnerable that their superiority in the air over ordinary enemy fighters was virtually canceled.

For several years no fewer than 120 ammunition dumps of the Waffenamt had been operating completely undisturbed in the Iglingerwald, camouflaged with topsoil and planted with bushes and pines. This circumstance, together with the possibility of being able to use some of these bunkers as advanced forts, weighed in favor of choosing the same locality. The go-ahead was given, first for the excavation of the underground areas and then for the erection of bombproof armor consisting of concrete reinforced with millions of steel rods.

The northern portion of Construction No. 1 was supposed to hold the assembly lines for the ME-163 jet fighters and the ME-262 turbine fighters, with a combined projected production rate of 900 units a month. In this same area, and enclosed by a thick vertical block of concrete, were also installed the tools for repairing and refitting the aircraft, which were normally kept in the southern portion. In the center a cement runway would permit the ME-163s, with their short runs, to take off, while for the ME-262s, with their longer runs and auxiliary rocket boosters for take-off, it was planned to lengthen the runway outside and protect it with the bombproof canopy.[41]

The S.S. summarily selected the prisoners who were still capable of heavy work from Dachau and neighboring concentration camps. In all, the S.S. collected more than 20,000 laborers and quickly brought them to the new grouping center of Kaufering. Hidden by thick trees and working mostly by night—one of the aims of the increasing appearance of the Foo Fighters (alias *Feuerbälle*) was to hamper Allied night reconnaissance, which was fanning out dangerously close to Bavaria—these masses of ill-fed unfortunates, bitten by the winter cold, finished the excavation of the first airfield in the second half of February.[42]

With the work still proceeding under cover of darkness, cement for the foundations began to be poured on March 1, but a time study then showed that the work would not be completed until the first part of August. Construction on the other two airfields, side by side about a mile away, was slowed down in order to concentrate most of the workers and material on the first, and so improve the schedule.

One of the secondary airfields was supposed to serve also as the operating base for the pilotless rocket fighters in a state of advanced preparation at the Messerschmitt factories in Oberammergau, and for other revolutionary types of antiaircraft weaponry “related” to today’s UFOs that were being developed by the Zeppelin Werke under contract to the S.S. Technical General Staff but were still not ready for large-scale use.

On the southern boundary of the Redoubt, which was especially protected by the jagged slopes of the Italian side, the attention of the German General Staff focused on the Dolomite caves, which could be further developed quickly and easily.

Nevertheless, in an area that should have been only a neutral strip, maintained as a kind of no man’s land by the constant deterrent barrages characteristic of positional warfare—which was precisely the type of warfare that the Redoubt entailed—the Germans continued to operate, and indeed, to develop, right up to the end what their accidental discoverer (an officer of the Eighth Army) justly called “two of the most ingenious war factories in Europe.” They “operated within 100 yards of the Allied Armies for several months, yet were never discovered, even though Allied aeroplanes passed over the area almost every day.”[43]

The seventy-four tunnels of the highway on the west side of Lake Garda, which had been dug out of the living rock overhanging the lake, had been transformed under Speer’s orders into an underground complex for the assembly-line production of piston engines and propellers for aircraft. In operation since the fall of 1944, the plant was put under the care of technical personnel from Fiat. In the six tunnels of the eastern branch of the same highway, that is, on the opposite shore of the lake, and similarly well camouflaged and protected, the Caproni industrial complex was busy turning out aircraft parts (air frames, fuselages, and other parts).

A tiny narrow-gauge railway (slightly under thirty inches) was constructed directly on the highway surface and connected the various tunnels with one another. It was so well camouflaged that it was almost invisible at a few yards' distance. Besides, the tunnels' protection even in the improbable case of being spotted from the air was perfectly insured by the mountains above. Most of them were in fact dug under a solid layer of rock sixty-five to a hundred feet thick.

The original industrial complex was supplied mainly by carefully camouflaged boats that linked it by night with Riva, Desenzano, and Peschiera, so that in case of necessity it could be totally isolated from the Po Plains.[44] This plant was supposed, consequently, to become the only supplier of conventional planes for the forces occupying the Redoubt, while jets would be supplied mainly by the underground factories in the Bavarian Alps and others that were already in operation in the planned "resistance island" in the Harz-Thuringerwald, in other words, by the enormous underground complexes of Nordhausen and Kahla.

In addition, the seven northern tunnels on the western side of the Garda highway in the area of Limone, which were still hurriedly being got ready at the time of the armistice, were earmarked for the production of certain special weapons that were about to be released from their final test phase at the experimental center of the Hermann Göring Institut (L.F.A.) in Riva del Garda.

In spite of the fact that its further development was not carried out, it has been demonstrated that in January 1945, for at least a part of the Nazi hierarchy—those inclined toward war to the last man—the Alpine Redoubt project became a dramatic alternative. In spite of the difficulties caused by the military situation and the culpable, lukewarm zeal shown by political leaders, an extremist minority of second-echelon leaders tried, in fact, to translate the Redoubt into reality. They began by transferring the most recent war inventions still in developmental stages to the Redoubt, where they would later be manufactured on a large scale and used to support the final counteroffensive. The reports of the British Intelligence Technical Staff on electronic, atomic, aeronautic, and rocket applications of Nazi science that were written immediately after the war, and that traced German industrial activity during the first quarter of 1945, frequently contain such significant annotations as the following: "Documents removed [or destroyed] by the S.S. before its retreat toward the Bavarian Alps," or "Plans [or models] removed by S.S. men to the mountain areas in the south of the Reich."

Nor was that all. Beginning at that moment certain secret devices that still required a few months or more of experimentation were used against the Allies in order to gain time and buttress those absurd hopes of a second chance.

NOTES

1. *Cf.* the following report from the American press on October 29, 1953: at 2:00 A.M. during night-flying exercises over Hempstead, Long Island, the pilots of two F-94 jet fighters sighted a large, motionless object glowing whitely some miles ahead. One of the fighters attempted to outflank it. But perhaps the occupants of the object spotted it, for the strange machine suddenly turned in a tight circle that would intersect the flight path of the pursuer. Already flying at full speed, the fighter tried to approach more closely by increasing its speed in the turn to a dangerous point, but the UFO continued on its intersecting line. The machine "allowed" itself to be followed for eight minutes, then it climbed at supersonic speed and disappeared. The two pilots were inclined to think that it was "some new revolutionary kind of invention, directed by something or someone that maintained visual contact with us and

had on tap speeds and powers beyond any plane known in the United States." But it is more probable that what was involved was mainly greater maneuverability as a result of the different flight dynamics of the saucers.

2. The four-engined British Lancasters in operation over the Continent in 1944 carried no less than 1200 pounds of radio and electrical equipment, subdivided into fifteen different apparatuses—for communication in flight and on the ground with the crew and the different planes in the command, for blind flying, scrambling, ground-control approach (G.C.A.), flight toward the objective (G.E.E.), radar scanning of the territory being flown over (H.2.S.), in-flight survey of the direction-finder bearing, identification of enemy planes (I.F.F.), and radar sensing of the attacking enemy (A.I. Look-follow), in which the locating apparatus is locked in on the intercepting plane and follows its movements as long as it remains within the effective radius of this small auxiliary radar. Finally, there was the Mountain Goat, a sonic indicator of fixed and moving objects; it was later replaced by an electronic anticollision device that not only signaled the nearness or approach of any stationary or moving obstacle that could endanger the flight of the bomber, but also revealed the formation of distant storm clouds.

3. In 1943 the *Spanner* already provided an extraordinarily clear picture—greenish, as with all equipment of that type—within a radius of fifteen miles and was fairly efficient up to a maximum radius of eighty miles. Beyond that the picture quickly went out of focus.

4. Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee, *German Infrared Telescopes* (Report No. CXXXI-37, London, H.M.S.O., 1947); British Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee, *German Bolometers* (Report No. 215, London, H.M.S.O., 1947).

5. In spite of fair results, the project was temporarily dropped because the "search head" was not sufficiently reliable.

6. A recent book exhuming these apparitions merits a few lines of comment because it gives a further sample of the wild thought patterns of ufologists. See Vincent Gaddis, *Mysterious Fires and Lights* (New York, Dell Publishing Co., 1968), pp. 25–27. The author writes: "The foo fighters that followed and teased World War II planes were tenuous, luminous balls or spheres that acted like curious, playful animals.

"The suggestion that some UFOs may be animals—*i.e.,* life-forms or animate creatures indigenous to rarefied atmospheres or possibly space itself—may seem fantastic at first. Actually it is a logical theory that answers many questions about the behavior of some UFOs and strange lights.

"I have a friend, Curtis Fuller, who is president of two publishing companies. A friend of his, who for obvious reasons prefers to remain anonymous, is a top biologist at Wright-Patterson Air Force Base, Dayton, Ohio, headquarters of the Air Force's UFO investigation, the Air Matériel Command, and a number of scientific development projects.

". . . our biologist suggests that some UFOs are space creatures—a form of life new to man that may feed on pure energy, and has adapted itself to living high in the atmosphere."

The eminent biologist had, however, been preceded along this path by other eminent investigators who, with minor modifications, had put forth the same absurdities, although with fewer "scientific" details and consequently with less success. John P. Bessor "states that he evolved the theory in 1946 and presented it to the Air Force in July, 1947. An officer in the Press and Radio Section, in acknowledging the submission, said it was 'one of the most intelligent theories we have received.' . . .

"[Bessor] thinks at least some of the things we call UFOs usually make their appearance after some sort of disturbance like volcanic eruptions, earthquakes, or atomic explosions. 'Whatever they are,' he adds, 'I suspect they just come down to look us over. I believe they are harmless or we would have had trouble with them long ago.'" Apparently they "come down to look us over" in order to discover the causes of the disturbances; that is, to investigate us and our activities—and then take some kind of action with respect to the people causing the disturbances?

Gaddis' book lists various people who have thought up such theories, impartially giving each his due. It remains, however, to establish why in the world these "stratospheric dragons" or Foo Birds chose to dog American fighters and reconnaissance planes operating in the very limited southern sector of the French front.

7. See Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee, *Interrogation of Professor Scherzer of the B.H.F.* (Report No. XXXII-87, London, H.M.S.O., 1945).

8. By way of keeping the secret while it was still in the project stage, the name *Feuerhall* was also given to a ground radar apparatus constructed by the Post Dienstelle F of the German Ministry of Posts, which was actually used in the war—apparently in defense of the refineries of Leuna—even before the flying mechanism was perfected.

9. In fact, it was not an imaginary danger. The Foo Fighters did contain a strong explosive charge to destroy them in flight in case serious damage to the automatic guidance system made it impossible for the operators to control it. It seems, however, that during the time they were last seen, at least one American flyer opened fire on a Foo Fighter from a safe distance without succeeding in shooting it down, although he had it well within his sights. A convincing detail, this, especially in view of the fact that under the armored covering of the Foo Fighters there was a thin sheet of aluminum attached to it (but electrically insulated) that acted as a switch. When a bullet pierced the exterior covering, contact between the two sheets was established and the consequent closing of the circuit that operated the maximum acceleration device of the craft (generally in a vertical direction) caused the Foo Fighter to fly off, taking it out of the range of further enemy fire.

10. The F.F.O. was an important government institution in operation thirty miles south of Munich with about eight hundred technicians conducting research in the fields of high frequency, guided missiles, radar, infrared radiation, and electronics in general. It was under the direction of Professor

Dieckman until the autumn of 1944 and under Dr. Ahrens afterwards.

11. Before it was decentralized in the Schwartzwald, the Zeppelin Werke had already done secret work in the field of radar. It had built parabolic reflectors for ground radio position finders, attracting the attention of the Intelligence Service and so of the R.A.F. to its Friedrichshafen factories near the Swiss border. (The first heavy bombing raid of sixty four-engined Lancasters was expressly ordered by Churchill on the recommendation of the Central Interpretation Unit, Photographic Intelligence, and took place on June 20, 1943.) The British Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee reports of British investigation committees in Germany (1945–1946) on the Zeppelin Werke’s production are still classified documents.

12. For information on the German klystron tubes see Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-committtee, *Establishments of the Forschungsanstalt der Deutschen Reichpost* (Report No. XXX-1, London, H.M.S.O, 1946).

13. The radio-jamming devices installed on the Grosser Feldberg also operated in the field of the shortest waves, covering all the wave lengths used by the Anglo-American apparatuses for radar scanning of the terrain over which they were flying and for long-distance control of the course of their bombing formations (the H.2.S., Oboe, Rebecca-Eureka). Through the usual spy channels the news reached London that the first examples of the Roderich radio jammer, which represented the best that German radio technology could produce, had arrived at the center. These apparatuses—designed by the Austrian branch of the Ferdinand Braun Institut, in Gaisberg bei Salzburg, and built by Siemens—simultaneously covered the two shortest enemy wave lengths (nine and three centimeters), constituting a serious obstacle for bombers that operated over most of western Germany. The R.A.F.’s photographic aerial spotting and 120 four-engined Lancasters wrote *finis* to the matter. (For further information on the Roderich, see Report V of the Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee,

Institutes of the Bevollmächtiger für Hochfrequenz-Forschung [Report No. XXXI-137, London, H.M.S.O., 1945].)

14. The Tedder Plan, which was an additional support to the offensive that had been in action for some time against German fuel production, went into action, in fact, in the first weeks of November, after Germany had been divided into nine zones in which the total destruction of all transport was to be gradually effected. This proscriptive policy reached its culmination on February 22, 1945, when—within the framework of Operation Clarion, which was designed to break any Nazi will to resist to the bitter end—9000 planes swarmed over Germany, destroying over two hundred rail centers. Thus the entire production of the last two months of the war, which was about to be sent to the front or to assembly plants, was destroyed or lay unused in freight cars on torn-up roadbeds. This operation virtually guaranteed the collapse of the German war machine.

15. Although they had many well-equipped planes, in the fall of 1944 the German night-fighter squadrons entered into action only in defense of major objectives and without much success because they were short of fuel and nearly always “blinded” by the British antiradar devices, which members of the 100th Bomber Group operated with extraordinary skill. After the Grosser Feldberg was bombed, the low technical efficiency of their night fighters forced the Germans to throw all the electronic defense devices of the *Feuer* series (which was still in the experimental stage) into action prematurely. In addition to the *Feuerball,* this meant its ground operated equivalent, the Lorentz-Siemens *Feuermolch* (Fire Salamander)—a device designed by the technicians of the Irschenberg branch of the Ferdinand Braun Institut—and of the *Feuerland* (Fire Land), a subsidiary device manufactured by Blaupunkt in Berlin-Wilhelmsdorf, for jamming radio communications on board. According to Dr. Gunther Breukopf of Blaupunkt, it is doubtful that the *Feuerland* was used by any front-line units, while from the British intelligence reports on German industry we learn that during the last months of the war no fewer than fifty *Feuermolch* devices were in use on the Western Front.

They were destroyed one after the other by the personnel to whom they were issued on precise instructions from the S.S. Technical General Staff.

16. Altogether "38,000 aircraft of all types" were built in 1944, a figure never achieved in any other war year. In the month of September alone, "3013 single-engine fighter aircraft, newly built or repaired," were delivered to the German fighter branch.

". . . And this after a year of systematic raids! In the summer of 1944 alone the Allies dropped 18,500 tons of bombs on the German aircraft industry. After the 'Big Week' [February 19–25, 1944: Operation Argument], which was supposed to be the death blow to our armament, Speer had contrived the reconstruction and the dispersal of the industry. So far it had been concentrated in twenty-seven larger works arranged on production, technical, and economical lines. Now it was spread over 729 medium and very small plants. Some were situated in tunnels, caves, or disused mines, some were hidden in forests, ravines, and villages. . . . The unbelievable difficulties of bringing air armament to such heights by "home industries' are impossible to describe. . . ." See General Adolf Galland, *The First and the Last* (New York, Ballantine Books, 1967, pp. 192, 237–38). The attrition in aircraft and the reduced production caused by the military defeats were, however, absolutely appalling. In the summer of 1944, following the Allied landings in Normandy, the Luftwaffe lost on the average 5000 planes a week, either through bombardment on the ground or in air actions covering the retreat. Thus in August it had a force of 1500 fighters. In spite of intensive production, in January 1945 only 2000 fighters were delivered to the flying detachments.

17. It has been historically established that after the heavy British night raids during the spring of 1942, Hitler refused even to consider Field Marshal Milch's proposal to strengthen the fighter building program, ordering instead that all priority be given to bombers for reprisal against England. General Galland (see Chapter 28, "The Jet-fighter Tragedy," in the book cited above) declared that in mid-1943—after an exhilarating test flight in one of the preproduction ME-262s and

the forwarding of a detailed report to Hitler—he had hoped the Führer would change his foolish stand, but when "the next days passed without any news or orders from above," he "had an idea that our hopes for a quick development of the German jet fighter would not be realized. Hitler had refused to give his sanction. He had already conceived a great distrust of Göring and the Luftwaffe, and wanted to convince himself personally about the soundness of our proposal. He told Göring—and not without justification—that the Luftwaffe had disappointed him too often in the past with promises and announcements of technical innovations and improvements. The heavy bomber, the HE-177, had been promised him not later than 1941, and even today no one could foresee when this aircraft would go into action. The fact that he did not call any member of the Luftwaffe to the conference of experts that he held showed how great Hitler's distrust really was. He even forbade their participation. [Göring] took this obvious affront quite passively. . . . [Hitler] ordered that the technical tests of the ME-262 should be continued with a few prototypes, expressly forbidding any kind of preparation for mass production. This far-reaching decision was taken without the agreement of the Supreme Commander of the Luftwaffe. Thereby the production of the ME-262 [which had already experienced a delay of nearly a year as a result of Hitler's personal order in the autumn of 1940 to suspend the research—because, according to him, the war was about to end with the "inevitable" surrender [of the British] received a further delay of six months. . . . I believe that in this way about eighteen months were lost in the development of the ME-262. . . ."

18. Sauer was director of the Armament Office under Speer.

19. At the time of the armistice there existed, in fact, some 138 different projects involving flying bombs designed for strategic bombing, tactical use, antiaircraft and antiship fire, and, to remain in the strictly aeronautic field, over seventy types of jet planes, built in restricted production runs, as prototypes or, mostly, merely designed by various firms and institutes controlled by Speer.

20. See General Galland, in the book cited in note 16: In April 1944 the program for emergency aircraft production was shown to Göring, who was in the Obersalzberg. "Bomber production had been curtailed, and the production of many other types was to be stopped. Night and day fighters were to be made as one unified type, which also had to meet the requirements of the other branches of the Luftwaffe. The quantities which were planned were absolutely adequate to the Anglo-American aircraft production. I was present at this memorable conference. I had the impression that Göring listened to Sauer's disquisition with a premeditated attitude, on Hitler's orders. He . . . replied immediately with many and definite objections. The radical curtailment of the bomber program, especially that of the HE-177 and JU-88 and their further development, was regarded by him as impossible and he rejected it; on the contrary he demanded an increase and a guarantee of a minimum production of 400 HE-177 and 500 Junker bombers a month. This was, of course, possible only if the originally planned fighter production were heavily cut. Speer's fighter program was changed according to Göring's directives and came into force eight days later in its diluted form. . . . The production of bombers went on at an increased rate. They could not prevent the raids on our synthetic petrol plants which started a little later, as a stronger fighter force could have done [by bombing airstrips in England and liberated France], In the end there was not enough petrol for the test flights of the bombers when they came from the assembly belt; they had to be wrecked on the benches where they had been built [in order to recover material that could be reused]. The Anglo-American air force crossed the bomber off the German armament plans." The same technological and strategic idiocy—disastrous because it reflected, if indeed it did not come directly from, the highest political source—kept even the field of German radio location, which might have wholly outclassed the adversary's, in a constant state of inferiority with respect to the Anglo-Americans. On August 8, 1942, General Wolfgang Martini had unsuccessfully requested scientists working on high frequency waves to prepare radar apparatuses that would work on centimeter waves. It was only when a British four-

engined plane equipped with one of the first H.2.S. radars was shot down in the vicinity of Rotterdam during the night of February 2–3, 1943, that the General Staff experts were convinced that centimeter waves were deciding the outcome of the war. As with the jet fighters, the "counteroffensive" waged by German radio scientists was now also hamstrung because it was "too late," and the ingenious *Feuerball, Feuermolch,* and *Roderick* devices were only palliatives that could not improve a situation that had become desperate (*cf.* Caius Bekker, *Radar-Duell im Dunkell*).

21. See J. Nobecourt, *Le dernier coup de dés de Hitler* (Paris, Robert Laffont, 1962), Chapter II: "The politicalization of the Wehrmacht had, however, begun before July 20th. During the winter of 1943–1944, Martin Bormann was, like Himmler, conducting a personal campaign through his leadership of the N.S.F.O. (Nationalsozialistischen Führungsoffiziere, Party workers assigned to the army as 'political commissars'). After July 20th he had the ranks and prerogatives of combat officers conferred upon them. Their official job was to verify the officers' degree of Nazi fervor, but in reality they worked solely to extend the personal influence of Bormann in the land forces. [The Luftwaffe was Göring's "fief;" the Navy was traditionalist and did not put up with political interference.] Allied only in appearance, in the summer of 1944 both he and Himmler aimed at the conquest of power after their common enemies—Göring, Ribbentrop, the Wehrmacht generals, and their direct supporters—were progressively eliminated."

22. Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee, *Natter Interceptor Project* (Report No. XXX-107, London, H.M.S.O., 1945). Because of an aerodynamic defect, the first test flight of the *Natter* ended in a disaster that brought about the death of the pilot, Lothar Sieber, but about a month later over Hannover on March 29, 1945, during the only attack made with the *Natter* craft—officially called the Bachem BP-20—Sergeant Ernest Hemmer piloted one of the first preproduction models against a formation of four-engined Liberators and succeeded in downing two and damaging a third.

23. The S.S. Air Corps had been formed in November 1944 with 150 volunteers—who became known as S.O.M. (*Selbstoffer Manner, i.e.,* Self-sacrificers)—taken from the ranks of the Waffen S.S. and sent to the special training center of Friedenthal, run by the famous Colonel Otto Skorzeny, to be instructed in piloting the Reichemberg flying bombs (modified V-1s) against special objectives, with a (theoretical) possibility of escape before impact. Göring and Goebbels had enthusiastically approved the formation of this body, impressed by the actions of the Japanese Kamikaze. In October they had also supported with similar fervor the proposal of Colonel General Keller, commander of the Nationalsozialistichen Flieger Korps (National Socialist Aviators' Corps), to form assault squadrons composed of young men drawn from the ranks of the Hitler Jugend and equipped with the jet turbine HE-162 *Volksjäger* then under construction. Full-scale preparation of this "People's Fighter" having been delayed by technical difficulties, it was then decided—despite the outspoken hostility of Fighter General Galland and War Production Minister Speer, on the grounds of humanity and of the doubtful utility of the proposal—to use those sixteen-to-eighteen-year-olds, who had no serious military or flight training, in a series of desperate actions to support the air defense of Germany itself and the counteroffensives being planned for the Western Front. A number of aircraft firms were urgently asked to submit bids for the immediate preparation of light, simplified emergency planes, very fast but inexpensive, since they would be built mostly of wood, and relatively efficient though not very safe. Among the plans approved and in part already realized (but only in the prototype stage, of course) by April 1945 were the following: air-towed glider-bombers, tiny rocket interceptors (the Junkers JU-EF-128 *Wally*), assault planes (the JU-EF-126 *Elli,* derived from the V-1 and the ME-328 Messerschmitt with a double pulsejet), and rocket-engined glider fighters (the ME-P-1104 and the Heinkel HE-P-1077 *Julia*). In addition there were revolutionary types of piloted antiaircraft bombs and "flying rams," the latter designed to break off the tails of enemy bombers by ramming into them at high speed, without, in theory at least, harm to the pilot, who would be

enclosed in a heavily armored cockpit (the rocket interceptor Arado AR *Flugstosser,* the Zeppelin plane-slicing rocket fighter, the Daimler-Benz DB-P-5 disposable fighter with a ramjet engine and auxiliary rockets similar in appearance to the flying bombs, and a modified version of the *Natter*). In addition to blocking the slaughter of the boys, the end of the hostilities fortunately prevented the S.S. Air Corps from being enlarged by enrolling these units, akin in duty and ideals, and from putting its semisuicidal plans into action.

24. Since it had been granted full powers, the high command of the S.S. secretly began to set up the S.S. Technical General Staff, modeled on the official body with the same name that Speer had created at the beginning of 1944 to plan war production and that had replaced the old system of ministerial orders to industry with the principle of direct military-industrial interdependence. Speer's Technical General Staff gathered into a sort of "industrial high command" the best talents from industry and technology, with long manufacturing experience, to whom the needs of the various armed forces were directly presented for immediate solution. It was made up of twenty-one special committees that controlled the production of raw materials and the distribution of work through twelve liaison offices. The entire technical body was comprised of some six thousand engineers and experts of various sorts (consultants), each one a specialist in a particular area. As a result, the whole bureaucratic compartmentalization existing between industries was broken down, along with manufacturing secrets and monopolies on patents and special processes, thus making available to all the firms manufacturing a given product any and all experience and progress achieved by any of them individually. Despite the delays caused by frictions that stemmed from by-passing ministerial ranks and stepping on the toes of powerful interests, the system in general worked quite well, and production became uniform throughout the nation, assuring identical products, interchangeability of parts, and stable production figures even during the heaviest phases of the Allied bombardments. In addition, very often some technical discovery that had previously been held exclusively

by one factory and was turned over to one of the special committees was now not only mass produced but further improved by some other factory in the same field. (For example, the Junkers firm produced a markedly improved version of Messerschmitt's famous ME-163 rocket-engined fighter, the JU-263.) We have no information on the structure and composition of the S.S. Technical General Staff under Gruppenführer Hans Kammler, which doubtless had a smaller staff than and far different aims from Speer's organization. Nevertheless, from certain documents collected by the American "Alsos" Mission (an organization created to carry out the preliminary sifting of industrial and scientific—particularly atomic—information about Germany and German-occupied countries), it appears that during the war Kammler's group held its meetings at the S.S. command in Northeim in Hannover.

25. The slogan that was current in Nazi circles at the beginning of 1945 was that it was necessary to win "the Battle of Time." Because of a whole series of erroneous technical and military decisions that the Führer imposed, the Allies won it instead. To better understand the unfolding of subsequent events, let us examine a few examples of measures that came too late or that were counterproductive and thereby lost precious time. Only in the fall of 1943 was the entire textile production in the Reich stopped and the factories converted to arms manufacture. On the basis of an agreement between Speer and Bichelonne, Minister of Industry in the Vichy government, French textile manufacturers had to work exclusively according to German orders, thereby freeing German plants for arms production, which was being decentralized in order to escape bombardment. Thus some Berlin factories making radar apparatus were immediately evacuated to the textile plants in southern Silesia and part of the machinery that survived the attack on the Zeppelin Werke found a temporary refuge in spinning mills in the Black Forest. Other measures contributed to the dispersion of the ball-bearing industry. Again it was only at the end of 1943 that plans were made to move the giant Bayerische Motoren Werke (B.M.W.)—too late to keep a considerable part of the machinery from being

destroyed or lying unused for some time in the new locations. Besides, the move did not get really under way until the late spring of 1945, a delay that led to the S.S.'s arrest of Dr. Zipprich, the director of B.M.W., who was held responsible. (Nevertheless, his successor, Dr. Bruckman, later declared that in his view "the best system of decentralization still remains a strong Luftwaffe"!) *Cf.* Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee, *Bavarian Motor Works* (*B.M.W.*), *A Production Survey* (Report No. XXX-80, London, H.M.S.O., 1945). Besides, these efforts to decentralize manufacturing plants often truly became labors of Sisyphus. For example, following the stepping up of air attacks and after stormy internal arguments aggravated by S.S. meddling, the gas-turbine section of B.M.W., which was originally located in the Berlin suburb of Spandau, was transferred lock, stock, and barrel to the underground plant of Wittringen in the vicinity of Saarbrücken, but the liberation of France in the fall of the same year (1944) forced it to leave the area and disappear into seven abandoned salt mines at Neu Stassfurt in Thuringia and in the Harz Mountains. *Cf.* Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee, *Gas Turbine Development: B.M.W., Junkers, Daimler-Benz* (Report No. XXIV-6, London, H.M.S.O., 1945). Another significant example from among many is offered by the chain removals of the Steyr-Daimler-Puch A.G., which manufactured Daimler-Benz high-powered aircraft piston engines on license, beginning in 1944. After the main plant in Steyr was bombed, the machinery was set up in the suburbs around Vienna, but air raids on Vienna were resumed, and in May the firm moved to the underground warehouse of a large brewery in Budapest. When the move was completed and the factory was finally getting ready to produce large numbers of the new DB-605-D engine, the Russians began their push toward Hungary, forcing the directors to retrace the steps of their evacuation until the original main plant in Steyr was started up again—which was achieved just before the final collapse. Naturally, the whole thing was accompanied by a notable drop in production. See British Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee, *Report on a Visit to Daimler-Benz A.G. at Stuttgart-Unterturkheim* (B.I. O.S., Final Report No. 35, London, H.M.S.O., 1946).

26. See Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee, *Underground Factories in Central Germany* (Report No. XXXII-17, London, H.M.S.O., 1945).

27. Unimpeachable evidence is offered by General Galland, who writes: "Operation orders for the ME-262s now [in the first week of April 1945] changed daily. . . . The time of commissioners, special commissioners, ambassadors of the Führer, commissars, and special commissariats had started. All who were to increase production of the industry or to coordinate operations were appointed subordinate to each other, equal to each other, and over each other. From February until March the jet-fighter command went partly over to the SA. From their ranks came the so-called Commissariat of the Führer for Jet Aircraft, a general of the Waffen SS. Hitler had appointed him although Göring in his turn had appointed a Special Commissioner for Jet Aircraft."

28. See Samuel A. Goudsmit, "The Efficiency of German Industry," Chapter XV (pp. 214–231) in the volume *Alsos* (New York, Schuman, 1947).

29. William L. Shirer, the well-informed American historian of the Third Reich—see Chapter XXX, "The Conquest of Germany" in *The Rise and Fall of the Third Reich* (New York, Simon & Schuster, 1959)—wrote apropos of this: ". . . Eisenhower and his staff at SHAEF were obsessed at this moment with the urgency of heading southeast after the junction with the Russians in order to capture the so-called National Redoubt, where it was believed Hitler was gathering his remaining forces to make a last stand in the almost impenetrable Alpine mountains of southern Bavaria and western Austria.

"The 'National Redoubt' was a phantom. It never existed except in the propaganda blasts of Dr. Goebbels and in the cautious minds at Eisenhower's headquarters which had fallen for them. As early as March 11, SHAEF intelligence had warned Eisenhower that the Nazis were planning to make an impregnable fortress in the mountains and that Hitler himself would command its defenses from his retreat at Berchtesgaden. The icy mountain crags were ‘practically impenetrable,’ it said. ‘Here, defended by nature and by the most efficient secret weapons yet invented, the powers that have hitherto guided Germany will survive to reorganize her resurrection; here armaments will be manufactured in bombproof factories, food and equipment will be stored in vast underground caverns and a specially selected corps of young men will be trained in guerrilla warfare, so that a whole underground army can be fitted and directed to liberate Germany from the occupying forces.’

“It would almost seem as though the Allied Supreme Commander’s intelligence staff had been infiltrated by British and American mystery writers. At any rate, this fantastic appreciation was taken seriously at SHAEF, where Eisenhower’s chief of staff, General Bedell Smith, mulled over the dread possibility ‘of a prolonged campaign in the Alpine area’ which would take a heavy toll of American lives and prolong the war indefinitely.

“This was the last time that the resourceful Dr. Goebbels succeeded in influencing the strategic course of the war by propaganda bluff.” *Cf.* also Chester Wilmot’s *The Struggle for Europe* (New York, Harper, 1952).

30. *Cf.* Wilhelm Hoettl (Walter Hagen), *Die Geheime Front* (Linz, 1950): “In autumn 1944 our central office in Berlin [the Gestapo] was informed of the existence of an American office in Switzerland that went far beyond the activities of a simple intelligence service. It turned out that it was run by the lawyer Allen Welsh Dulles . . . and his true activity had been camouflaged by accrediting him as the representative of Minister Harrison in Berne. . . . The men who ran the German Secret Service then tried to get in touch with this individual and succeeding in so doing thanks to support from a big Austrian businessman and the German air attaché in Berne.
. . . For us Germans it was important at least to try to convince the Americans that for the future of Europe we should not give up vital parts of the territories of Germany and Austria to the Soviets. And so it was decided that the Americans should be informed of how Russia was doublecrossing her

Western allies by turning over certain documents containing concrete proof. Subsequently the basis of the negotiations shifted to a completely different sphere. For some time we had been informed that the Anglo-American General Staff was very much afraid of continued German resistance in the so-called Alpine Redoubt. According to the information gathered by the Allied secret services, this *réduit,* as the Swiss called it, comprised large areas of the alpine massif of northern Italy and of Austria as well as a strip of land of considerable size in front of it. With reason, Allied military experts considered that it was possible for the Germans to hold off the Allied armies for a long time from that position. In fact, it would not have been able to seize this alpine region turned into a sort of huge fortress without serious difficulty, even in the period of atom bombs and rockets, without using special mountain troops, of which the Allies were almost totally devoid in 1945. . . . In any case, the Allies' worries were without foundation. They had arisen because of the rumors that German propaganda had spread and also partly because our intelligence service had succeeded in getting some cleverly falsified documents into the hands of the Allied secret service."

31. In fact, the files of the O.K.W. were subsequently captured more or less intact by the Americans in the Tyrol and parts of the documents were later presented in evidence at the Nuremberg Trials in order to incriminate Wehrmacht generals who were strong Nazis. *Cf.* Helmut Greiner, *Die Oberste Wehrmachtführung* (Wiesbaden, 1952).

32. This alludes to the enormous underground complex of the Mittel-werke factories (referred to in the German documents of the time as M-Werke), which was in operation in the Harz Mountains on the edges of the village of Dora, near Nordhausen. It was formed of two broad parallel tunnels each a mile long and connected to one another by sixty-two transverse minor tunnels, giving a total of about twelve miles of underground installations. Shortly before the armistice this complex had begun large-scale manufacture of the V-2 rocket, the V-1 flying bomb, and several types of antiaircraft rockets

(principally the *Taifun* and *Föhn* types). With its four hundred yards of natural covering, the plant was virtually invulnerable to any aerial attack. In February 1945, the personnel and equipment of the Baltic experimental center at Peenemünde that had been evacuated was partially installed in the neighboring village of Bleicherode Ost, where the plans for the giant two-stage rocket-torpedo A-9/A-10, planned to be used for bombing the United States, were being speeded along. At first occupied by Assault Group B of the U.S. Third Armored Division on April 11, 1945, the zone and its priceless industrial complex were subsequently consigned to the Soviets on the basis of the Yalta agreement.

33. According to the strategic plan hurriedly worked out in February 1945, besides the Waffen S.S. and the paramilitary formations of the Hitler Jugend, what remained of the armies retiring on several fronts was also supposed to take part in the reinforcement of the Alpine Redoubt. These armies were: General Alexander Loehr's army from Greece, which was waiting on the Austro-Yugoslavian frontier; General Lothar Rentulic's army, which was bloodily confronting the Russians on the Austro-Hungarian frontier; Field Marshal Albert Kesselring's Army Group South, for some time dug in on the Gothic Line to guard the Po Plains; Field Marshal Ferdinand Schoerner's group of armies, which held out until the end of May in the mountains of Bohemia; and finally that of Field Marshal Gerd von Rundstedt, who was supposed to extricate himself from the Allied pincers in order to fall back to the Allgäuer Alps through the Black Forest. At the beginning of spring 1945, of the 300 divisions that the Wehrmacht had put in the field to oppose the 96 Anglo-American and 400 Soviet divisions, only 65 divisions, and most of those short of effectives and weapons, were available. A cautious estimate from Allied sources guessed that there were twenty remaining divisions in combat readiness that the Nazis could count on for the effective strengthening of the Alpine Redoubt. To this force, which would have to be reorganized and rearmed from top to bottom, would be added an indefinite number—perhaps twenty-five or more—of Waffen S.S. divisions and the very young soldiers of the

Hitler Jugend. In all, a ten- or twelve-to-one disadvantage for the Germans. They held, at least theoretically, that this discrepancy would be mitigated by their taking advantage of the natural barriers hindering the large-scale use of armored units.

34. For an opinion on the reality of the Germans' industrial hopes and possibilities, see Chapter IV of Nobecourt's *Le dernier coup de dés de Hitler,* under the section entitled "Le mythe des armes secrètes." For greater detail and a more extensive review of the new types of weapons (except for the various aeronautical and antiaircraft discoveries that are described in the present volume and that have until now been wholly or partially unknown), see Major Rudolf Lusar, *Die deutschen Waffen und Geheimwaffen des Zweites Weltkrieges* (Munich, J. F. Lehmans Verlag, 1958), p. 239; or Colonel Leslie Simon, *German Scientific Establishments* (Report P.B. 19849, New York, Mapleton House Publications, 1947), p. 228.

35. W. Hoettl (Walter Hagen) has reported that "militarily [in August 1943] the best solution would have been to evacuate the Italian peninsula and create a new defensive line that would follow the Alps and the Po River to the Adriatic. This would require only a minimal force, thereby making at least 300 or 400 thousand well-trained and well-equipped men available for the Russian Front. The passive aspect of the operation would have been represented by the loss of an ally, who was in any case greatly weakened and tired and whose industry was not absolutely essential to our war effort. [All this is correct, but it does not take into account the fact that Anglo-American air bases would be dangerously close to the southern borders of Germany.] Hitler rejected the plan, which appears to have been proposed by a high-ranking Italian officer with Marshal Badoglio's concurrence, declaring that 'it could only be the proposal of an irresponsible defeatist who had betrayed his friend and ally Mussolini.' Revised and presented with the recommendation of the head of the AMT-VI, Gruppenführer S.S. Walter Schellenberg, the plan caused Hitler to explode with fury, and the person who presented it—Obergruppenführer S.S. Ernst Kaltenbrunner, head of the Reich's se-

curity services—had a hard job defending the work and person of his subordinate. But in March 1945 Hitler confided to Kaltenbrunner that he was very sorry that he had not accepted the suggestions of the AMT-VI for a 'solution to the Italian question.' Indeed, this solution would have avoided or at least greatly retarded the serious military reverses on the Russian front, insuring that Germany would for some time still receive priceless Rumanian oil, and it would have anticipated much of the plan for the 'Alpine Redoubt.'"

36. The extent and nature of these defensive countermeasures were well known to the Germans as well, thanks to information picked up in Berne military circles by the Reich's ambassador, Koecher. From the outbreak of hostilities in Europe—at the time, that is, of the general defensive mobilization (September 2, 1939)—Swiss military authorities had made a plan for a National Redoubt in the Alps. The plan was being put into effect and strengthened during the course of the war in such a way as to guarantee at least a two-year period of armed resistance against any aggressive act aimed at the Swiss Confederation. The various preventive measures also included the methodical dismantling of factories, the supplies and machinery of which—already accurately inventoried by General Guisan—were to be destroyed, hidden, or transferred to the Redoubt in secret locations when the time came, according to their importance or bulk.

37. Through leaks that were, it appears, fostered by the promoter himself, some of those present were in reality already more or less familiar with the proposal. Indeed, without even waiting for the Führer's approval, a number of moves had been made to sound out the practical possibilities of the plan. Göring was particularly interested in the Berchtesgaden region, perhaps because he was already secretly thinking of going there when military collapse seemed imminent in order to replace Hitler in the government of the Reich and to negotiate with the Allies from a position of strength. Because of his well-known political rashness (which gives us further evidence of the level of organizational inefficiency reached by this baffling

personality who inexplicably allowed "his" Luftwaffe to be humiliated and destroyed after having so brilliantly created it), Berchtesgaden, together with the greater part of the Bavarian slope of the Alpine Redoubt, was from a military point of view practically defenseless, harboring only the villas of the Nazi bigwigs with their attendant S.S. men, and a few aircraft companies working on the development of truly revolutionary war discoveries. As for Himmler, he had sent a squadron of geologists from the Ahnenerbe—a sort of academy of sciences for the S.S.—to study the configuration of the mountains in the area insofar as they could be employed in a military defense system modeled on the Swiss National Redoubt. Finally, the staff of the army group operating in Italy, which for some time had been using the dumps in the Dolomite caverns, reexamined the possibility of adapting the military installations of the entire Italian slope of the Alps to resistance from attack from the Po Valley as an expedient in case the "Gothic Line" was broken through.

38. Because of its excessively open geo-strategic position, the Valtellina had been excluded from the plan for the Alpine Redoubt, although in the last days of the war the highest political and military leaders of the Italian Social Republic [Mussolini's government in the north of Italy, formed after he had been liberated by Col. Otto Skorzeny.—Tr.] had decided to make their own "Alpine Redoubt" there and carry on the fight while waiting for the military situation to be reversed, as the Germans promised. Without any genuine permanent fortifications, the Valtellina redoubt was supposed to serve mainly as a center for gathering together the Fascist formations being evacuated from the Po Valley.

39. The Swiss General Staff, which had a highly efficient intelligence network, had, in fact, reinforced the defensive measures in the area of the National Redoubt facing Germany, although after a careful evaluation of the information they had received, they judged the Alpine Redoubt plan as practically unrealizable, or at least as coming too late. Wilhelm

Hoettl reports that "the fact that in the final phase of the conflict a German center of resistance might arise in the proximity of the most delicate of its borders could constitute a serious menace for Switzerland. Especially when certain information obtained from S.H.A.E.F. circles gave them reason to believe that if the Germans were dug in in the Alps the Anglo-American General Staff would bring strong pressure to bear on the Swiss government to induce it to put its highly specialized mountain troops at the disposition of the Allies. Even if this belligerent act had been passed off as a simple, necessary police action, public opinion in neutral Switzerland would not have been able to accept it without serious internal conflict." These were well-founded fears, and they explain and justify the political conduct of the Swiss authorities which favored, with the discretion that the circumstances demanded, the approaches between the emissaries of S.S. General Karl Wolff and American Vice-ambassador Allen W. Dulles for the surrender in Italy of Army Group South (the so-called Operation Sunrise Crossword).

40. The *Kugelstand* was a hollow spheroid made of reinforced concrete weighing 3740 pounds, with an internal diameter of seven and a half feet, made by joining together six prefabricated parts, constructed according to the designs of the Bavarian firm of Dyckerhof and Widmann, which in November 1944 suggested to the Wehrmacht that these spheroids could serve as easily transportable small forts that could be buried, would not sink in marshy terrain, and were invisible to aerial reconnaissance. Despite their relatively thin shells (one and a half inches), the first experimental models were run over by heavy tanks without suffering any damage. Starting on December 4, twenty factories were supposed to produce them on a large scale with a monthly production of 2500 units per factory. Nevertheless, because of delays in every sector of war production, when the armistice was signed no more than thirty *Kugelstand* were in operation along the Swiss frontier in the Dornbirn zone. *Cf.* Section VII, "Fortifications," in the report by the C.I.O.S. Section Intelligence Division Office, *German*

Underground Installations, of General Interest (J.I.O.A. Report No. 3, Washington, September, 1945).

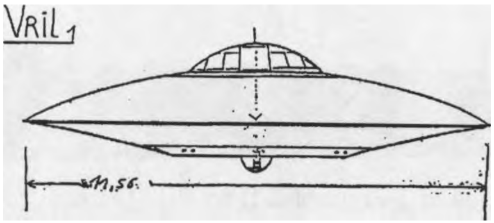
41. To determine the minimum length of the take-off runway, hasty tests were made with the Messerschmitt fighters at the air base of Fürstenfeldbruck, and when the Luftwaffe reported the data requested, the following dimensions were adopted: length of the canopy, 1056 feet; width, 439 feet; height, 146 feet; thickness of the canopy in reinforced concrete, 16 feet, with a further covering of topsoil to bring the total depth of the protective layer to 23 feet. Thus small oblong artificial hills would be created, heavily covered with grassy and woodland vegetation, surrounded by irregular layers simulating natural elevations in the terrain in order to baffle aerial reconnaissance.

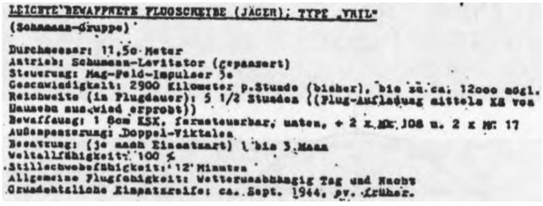
42. The almost incredible efficiency in camouflaging the work and the constructions themselves merits special mention, though the Germans were aided in this by a number of heavy snows. Some Intelligence Service agents operating in the Oberbayern area had heard rumors of the project, which the officers of the U.S.A.A.F. intelligence attached to S.H.A.E.F. had called "a wild exaggeration." A number of aerial reconnaissance missions were flown for the extraordinarily well-equipped sections E (recognition of enemy camouflage) and U (underground factories) of the R.A.F. Photographic Intelligence Section of Benson, but the results were completely negative, although the territory between Landsberg and Kaufering was photographed foot by foot. In their final report the British experts declared: "If the aerodromes really exist, they are completely invisible from the air."

43. See M.G.O., "Underground Factories in Italy," *The Aeroplane* (London, Vol. LXX, No. 1818, March 29, 1946), pp. 370–371.

44. At one point the work force at the factory had numbered 10,000, but it later tripled with the further influx of a great number of prisoners of war. When the Allies occupied the zone, a considerable quantity of industrial and technological

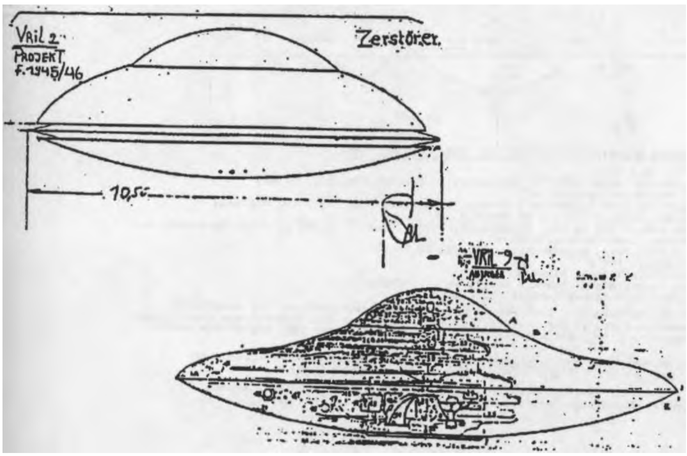
material had been evacuated or hidden in the neighborhood, and some had been stolen or destroyed by escaping prisoners. Nevertheless, the material found in the plants and the complementary stores dug out along the Garda and in the neighboring Dolomites filled eight miles of freight cars.




LEICHTE BEWAFFNETE FLUGSCHEIBE (JÄGER); TYPE „VRIL"
(Schumann-Gruppe)

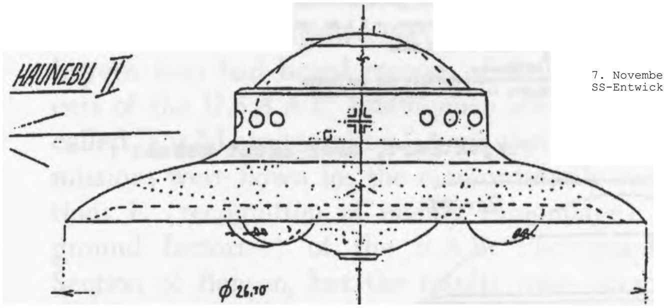
Durchmesser: 11,5o Meter
Antrieb: Schumann-Levitator (gepanzert)
Steuerung: Mag-Feld-Impulser 3e
Geschwindigkeit: 2900 Kilometer p.Stunde (bisher), bis zu ca. 12000 mögl.
Reichweite (in Flugdauer): 5 1/2 Stunden ((Flug-Aufladung mittels KS von Hauneb aus wird erprobt))
Bewaffnung: 1 8cm KSK, fernsteuerbar, unten, + 2 x Mk 108 u. 2 x MG 17
Außenpanzerung: Doppel-Viktalen
Besatzung: (je nach Einsatzart) 1 bis 3 Mann
Weltallfähigkeit: 100 %
Stillschwebefähigkeit: 12 Minuten
Allgemeine Flugfähigkeit: Wetterunabhängig Tag und Nacht
Grundsätzliche Einsatzreife: ca. Sept. 1944, ev. früher.

VRIL 2 und VRIL 9: Projektiert, aber nicht gebaut!

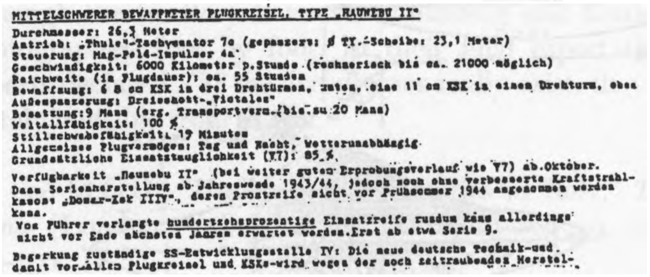


Alleged photocopy of SS plans for Vril craft being designed in 1944. From the German book *Die Dunkle Seite Des Mondes* (*The Dark Side of the Moon*) by Brad Harris (1996, Pandora Books, Germany).

Alleged photo from SS files of a Haunebu II in flight circa 1944. From the German book *Die Dunkle Seite Des Mondes* (*The Dark Side of the Moon*) by Brad Harris (1996, Pandora Books, Germany).



7. November 1943
SS-Entwickluagastelle IV



MITTELSCHWERER BEWAFFNETER FLUGKREISEL, TYPE „HAUNEBU II“

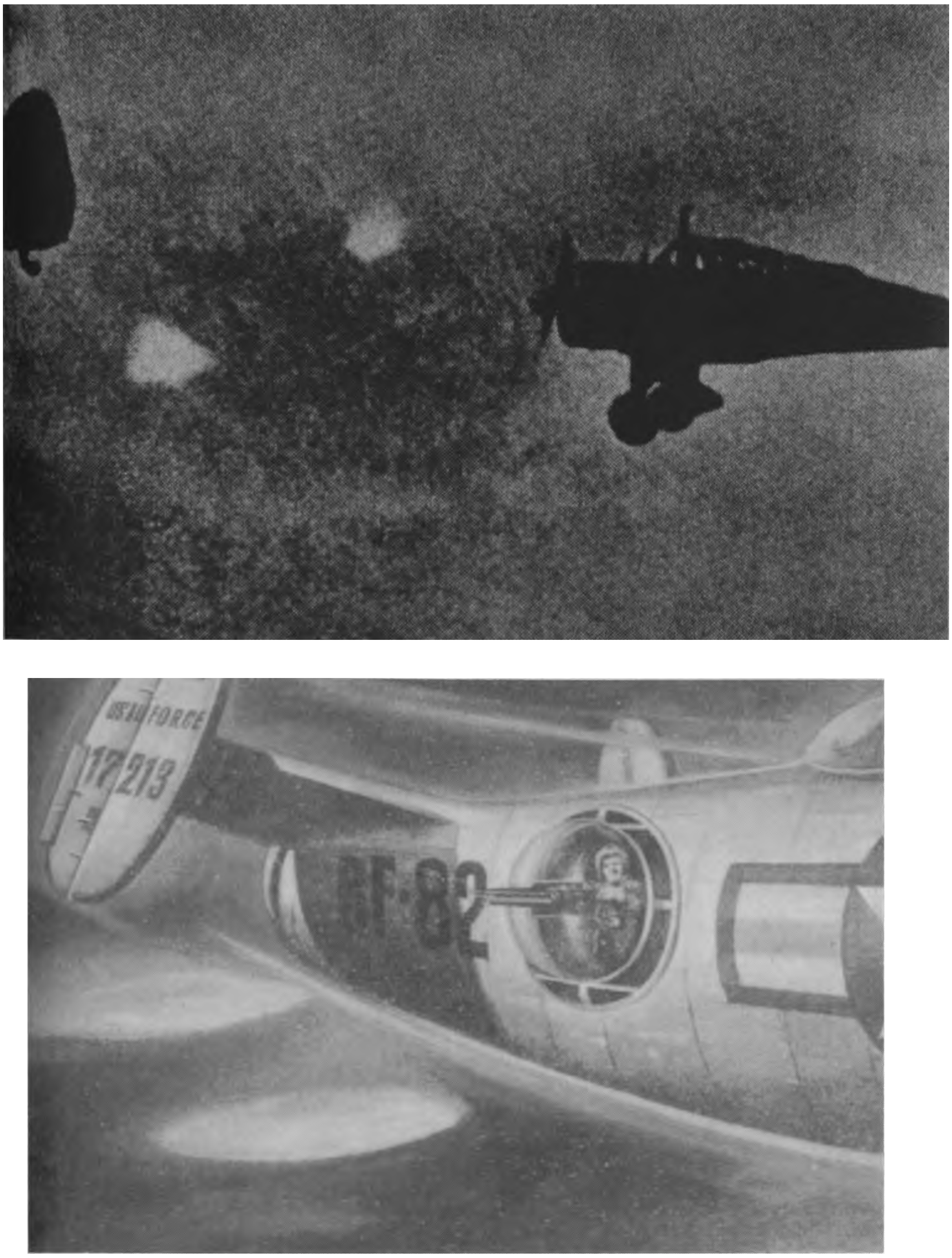
Durchmesser: 26,3 Meter
Antrieb: „Thule“-Tachyonator 7c (gepanzert: Ø Th.-Scheibe: 23,1 Meter)
Steuerung: Mag-Feld-Impulser 4a
Geschwindigkeit: 6000 Kilometer p.Stunde (rechnerisch bis ca. 21000 möglich)
Reichweite (in Flugdauer): ca. 55 Stunden
Bewaffnung: 6 8 cm KSK in drei Drehtürmen, unten, eine 11 cm KSK in einem Drehturm, oben
Außenpanzerung: Dreischott-„Victalen“
Besatzung: 9 Mann (erg. Transportverm. bis zu 20 Mann)
Weltallfähigkeit: 100 %
Stillschwebefähigkeit: 17 Minuten
Allgemeines Flugvermögen: Tag und Nacht, wetterunabhängig
Grundsätzliche Einsatztauglichkeit (V7): 85 %.

Verfügbarkeit „Haunebu II“ (bei weiter gutem Erprobungsverlauf wie V7) ab Oktober. Dann Serienherstellung ab Jahreswende 1943/44, jedoch noch ohne verbesserte Kraftstrahlkanone „Donar-Kok IIIV“, deren Frontreife nicht vor Frühsommer 1944 angenommen werden kann.

Vom Führer verlangte hundertzehnprozentige Einsatzreife rundum kann allerdings nicht vor Ende nächsten Jahres erwartet werden. Erst ab etwa Serie 9.

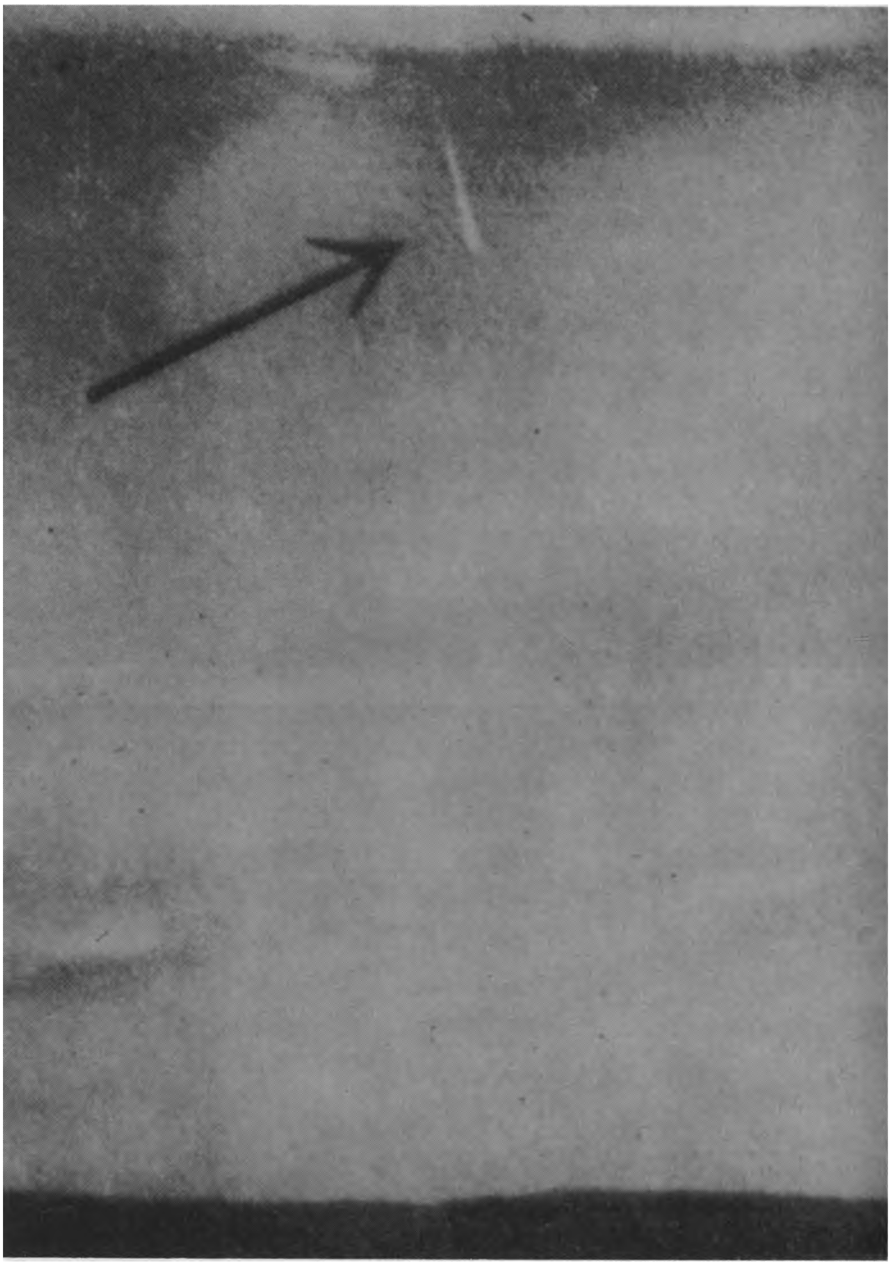
Bemerkung zuständige SS-Entwicklungsstelle IV: Die neue deutsche Technik-und damit vor allem Flugkreisel und KSKs-wird wegen der noch zeitraubenden Herstel-

Alleged photocopy of SS plans for a Haunebu II being designed in 1943. From the German book *Die Dunkle Seite Des Mondes* (*The Dark Side of the Moon*) by Brad Harris (1996, Pandora Books, Germany).


US AIR FORCE
17213
BF-82

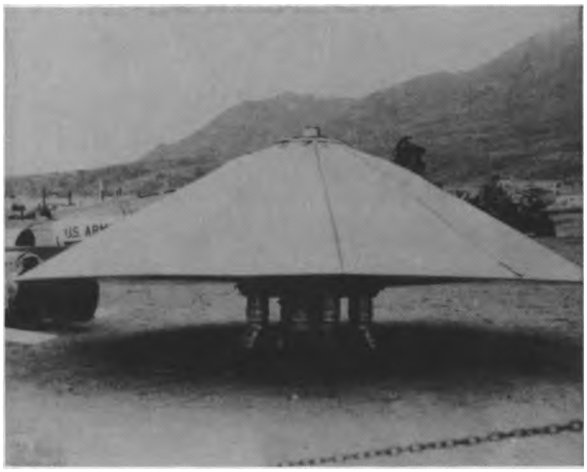
Some of the earliest forms of UFOs, reported during the 1940s, were the ball of light phenomena known as ‘foo fighters,’ as depicted here.

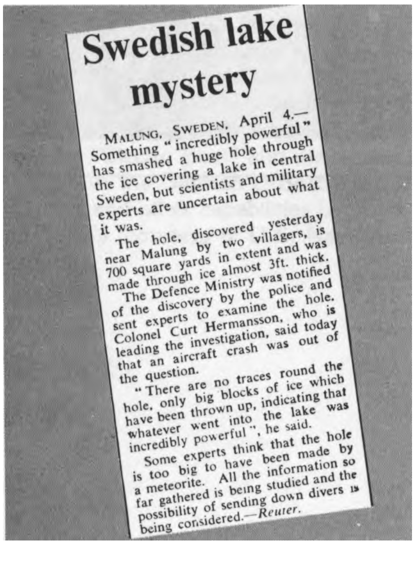
(*Soucoupes Volantes* / *Biscottes DOR*)



This photograph, taken in 1946, allegedly shows one of the mysterious ‘ghost rockets’ reported over Scandinavia, and indeed all of Europe, in the 1930s and 1940s.

March 1968. This picture was taken at a U.S. Missile Range in White Sands, New Mexico, by a newsman for the *Columbus Dispatch*. He reported that the device was at least fifteen feet in diameter and was used in a space testing program during the Mars tests.





Swedish lake mystery

MALUNG, SWEDEN, April 4.—Something "incredibly powerful" has smashed a huge hole through the ice covering a lake in central Sweden, but scientists and military experts are uncertain about what it was.

The hole, discovered yesterday near Malung by two villagers, is 700 square yards in extent and was made through ice almost 3ft. thick.

The Defence Ministry was notified of the discovery by the police and sent experts to examine the hole. Colonel Curt Hermansson, who is leading the investigation, said today that an aircraft crash was out of the question.

"There are no traces round the hole, only big blocks of ice which have been thrown up, indicating that whatever went into the lake was incredibly powerful", he said.

Some experts think that the hole is too big to have been made by a meteorite. All the information so far gathered is being studied and the possibility of sending down divers is being considered.—*Reuter.*

MYSTERY ROCKETS OVER SWEDEN "FOR PRACTICE"

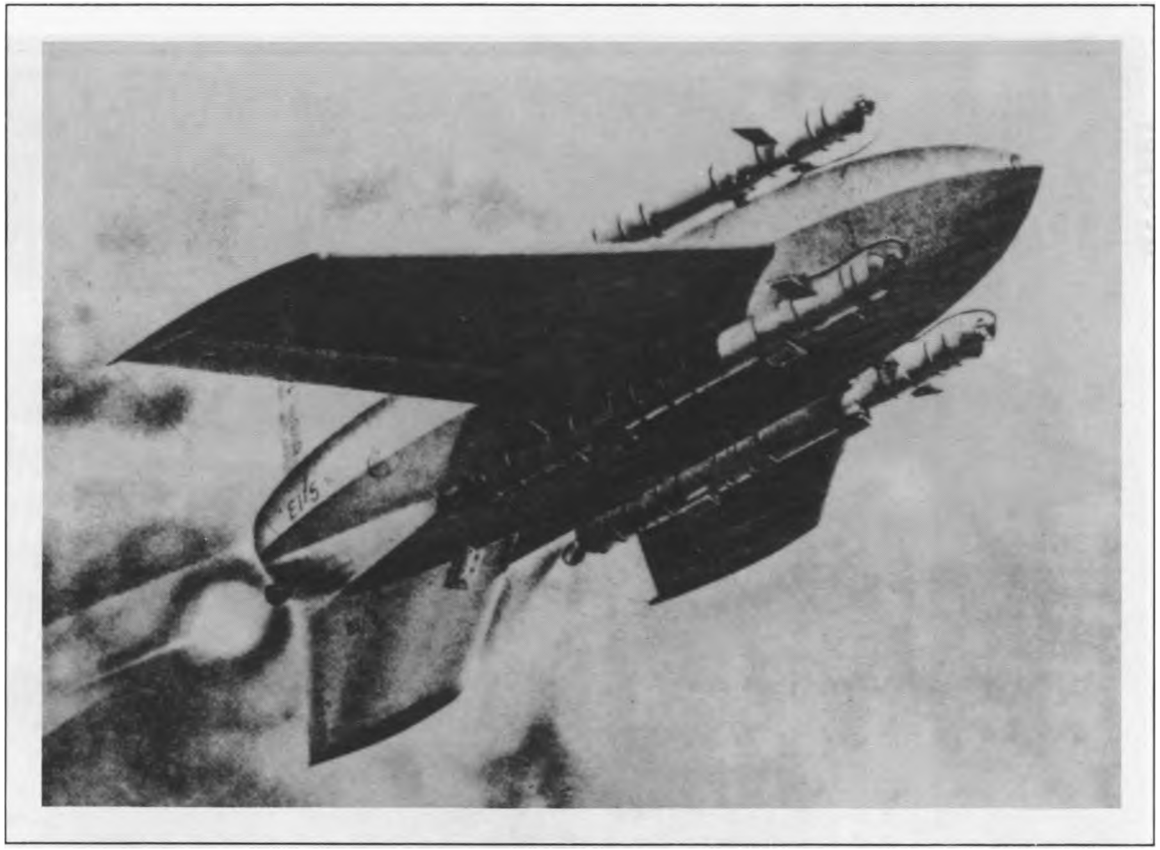
SWEDISH military officials, who have been investigating about 300 reports of "fireballs" which they received from various parts of Sweden between 9 July and 12 July, are no longer in doubt that the country is being used for regular practice with steered rockets.

The authorities have promised a communique when their researches are complete.

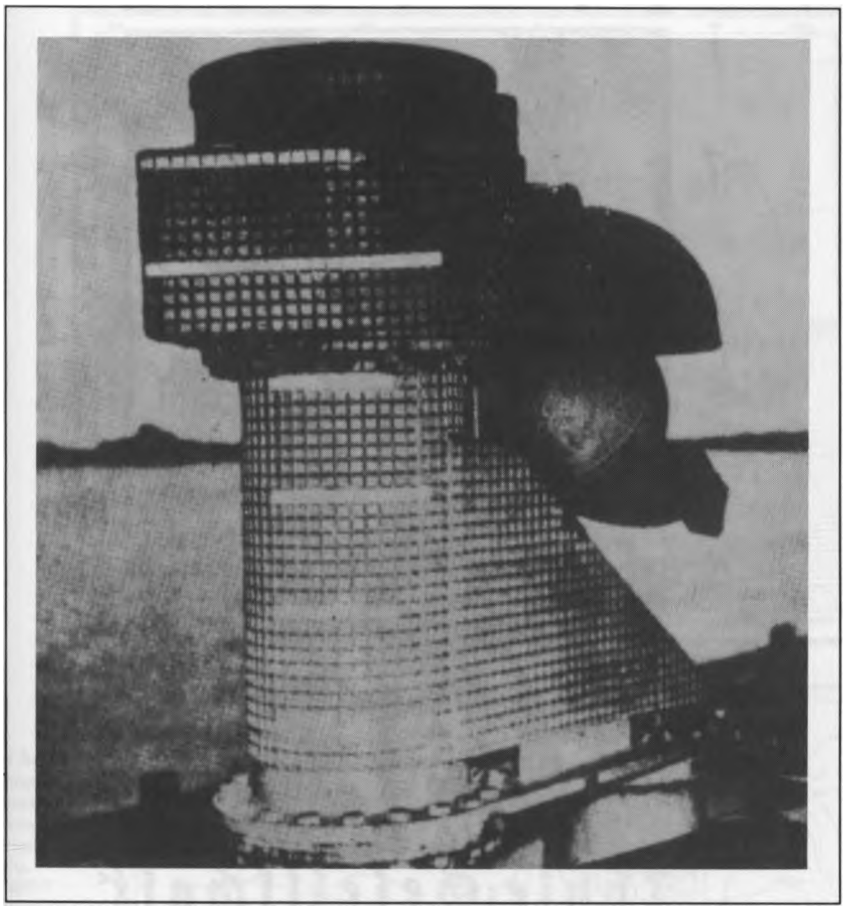
Some reports indicate that the projectiles are furnished with a self-destruction device, since explosions have apparently occurred in the air.

This photograph, just received from Stockholm, shows one of the many rockets which have been seen flying over Sweden.

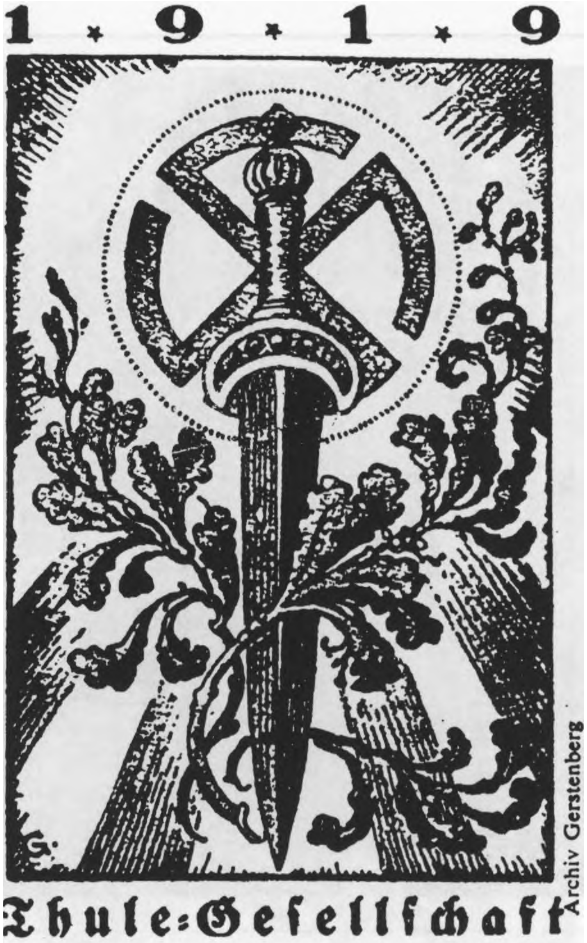
The longest line of flight over Swedish territory mapped by military experts covered about 625 miles. The first German V-2's made flights of only 175 to 235 miles. A.P.



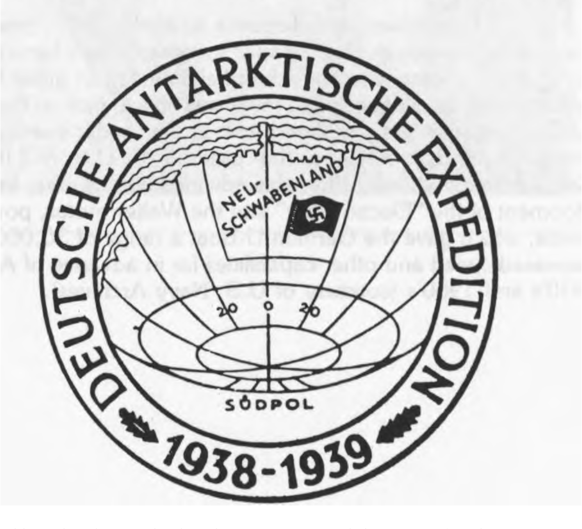
Enzian 4 in flight. This was an exceptionally powerful rocket intended to reach supersonic speed, a ceiling of 52,000 feet, and distant targets under radio control. It is but one of many missiles produced by the German secret weapons program (courtesy of "German Secret Weapons of World War II" by I V Hogg, 1970).



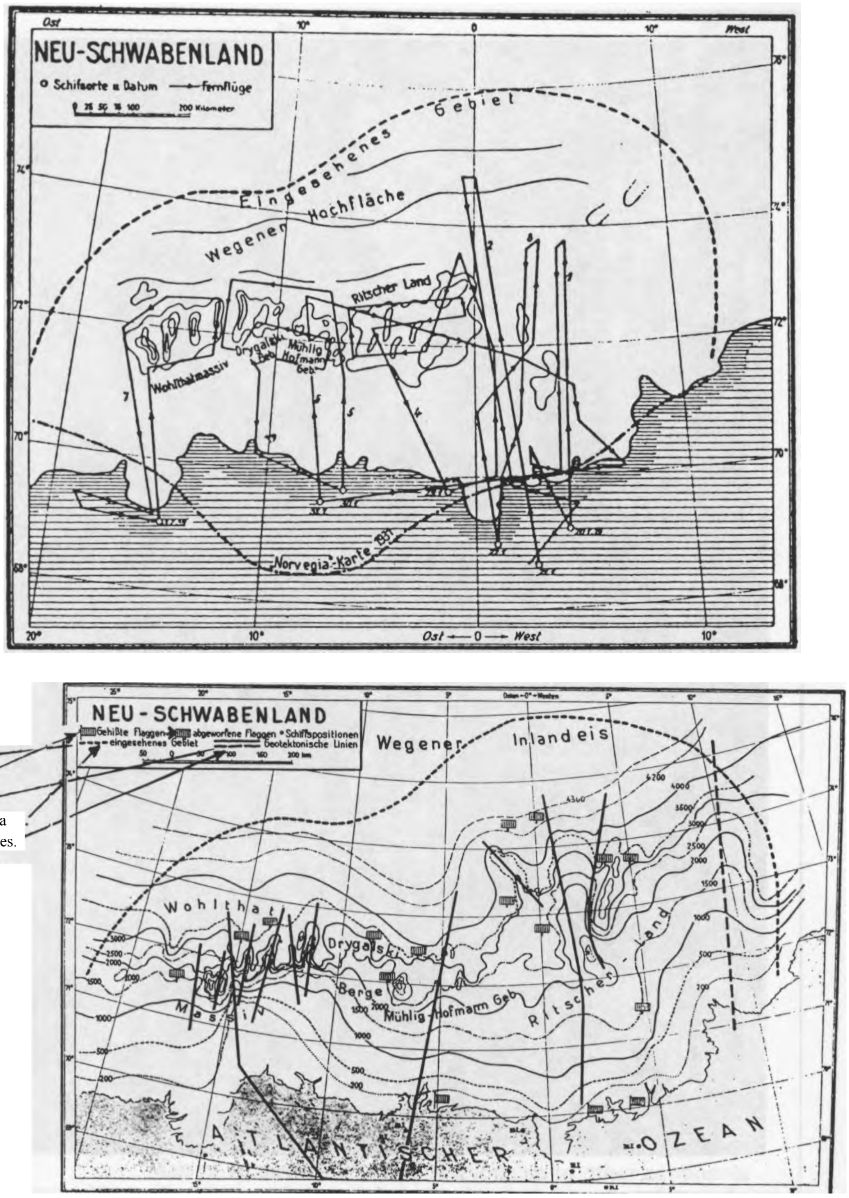
An advanced submarine schnorkel. With this device German U-Boats overcame the necessity for surfacing to recharge their batteries. Raised above the surface by a telescoping tube, the schnorkel provided an outlet for exhaust gases and an inlet for fresh air. At first, allied radar was able to pick up the small schnorkel “blip” but German scientists countered with an anti-radar coating which appears on this model (a principle similar to that used by the U.S. B-2 bomber). The U-Boats again became invisible. While this advance was of great importance it was the development of the “Electro Boat” and the Walter motor, powered by hydrogen peroxide, which gave the German U-Boat a range of 30,000 miles or more, greatly increased speed and other capabilities far in advance of Allied submarines of the 1940’s and 1950’s (courtesy of U.S. Navy Archives).


1 * 9 * 1 * 9
Thule=Geſellſchaft
G.

Archiv Gerstenberg


DEUTSCHE ANTARKTISCHE EXPEDITION
NEU-SCHWABENLAND
20
0
20
SÜDPOL
1938-1939

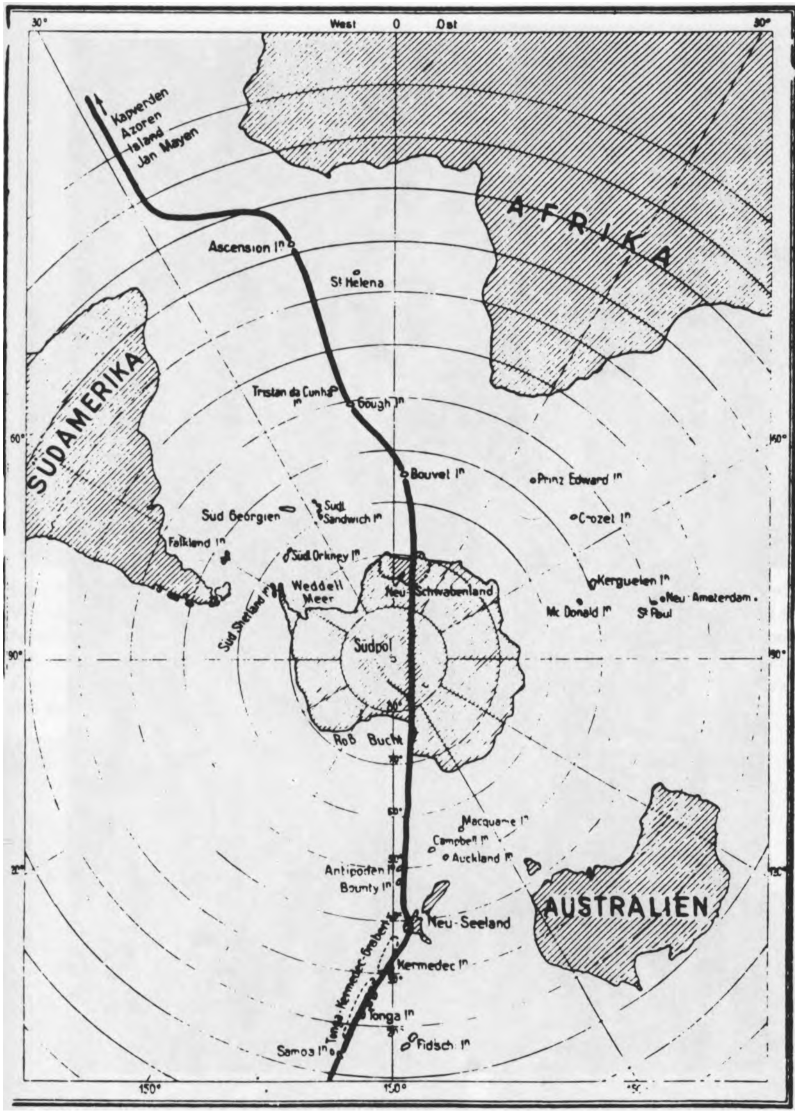
The specially-designed badge or emblem of the Deutsche Antarktische Expedition 1938-1939. The Swastika and oak-leaves clearly reveal Thule Society paternity.


NEU-SCHWABENLAND
Schiffsorte u. Datum
Fernflüge
Kilometer
Ost
West
Eingesehenes Gebiet
Wegener Hochfläche
Ritscher Land
Wohlthatmassiv
Drygalski Geb.
Mühlig Hofmann Geb.
Norvegia-Karte 1931
Ost ← 0 → West
NEU-SCHWABENLAND
Gehißte Flaggen
abgeworfene Flaggen
Schiffspositionen
eingesehenes Gebiet
Geotektonische Linien
Wegener Inlandeis
Wohlthat Massiv
Drygalski Berge
Mühlig-Hofmann Geb.
Ritscher Land
ATLANTISCHER OZEAN

Legend
Dropped flags.
Raised flags.
Ship's position.
Reconnoitred area
Geotech tonic lines.
Elevations.
EAST-WEST

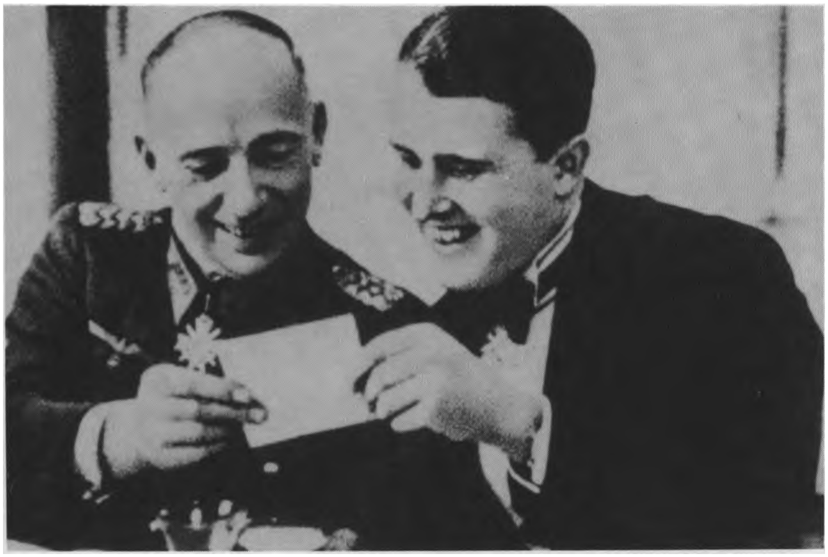
Antarctic topography surveyed by the Nazis.

Rudolf Hess, Deputy Führer of the Reich. This enigmatic man is said to have been murdered on two separate occasions. He was buried three times and held incommunicado in Spandau prison by four nations for nearly half a century because of the many dark secrets which he possessed. As a member of the mysterious Thule Society he knew things about Antarctica that others did not know.

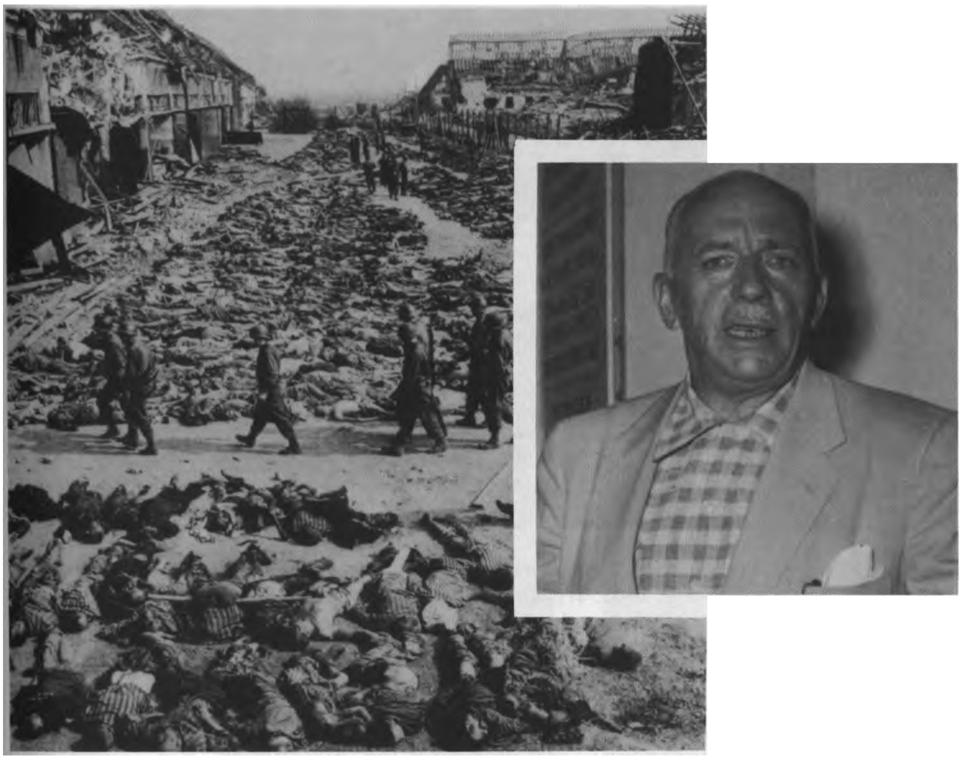

30°
West
0
Ost
30°
Kapverden
Azoren
Island
Jan Mayen
AFRIKA
Ascension In
St Helena
SUDAMERIKA
Tristan da Cunha In
Gough In
60°
60°
Bouvet In
Prinz Edward In
Crozet In
Sud Georgien
Sudl. Sandwich In
Falkland In
Sudl. Orkney In
Weddell Meer
Neu-Schwabenland
Kerguelen In
Neu-Amsterdam
Mc Donald In
St Paul
Sud Shetland In
Sudpol
90°
90°
Roß Bucht
Macquarie In
Campbell In
Auckland In
Antipoden In
Bounty In
AUSTRALIEN
Neu-Seeland
Kermadec In
Tonga-Kermadec-Graben
Tonga In
Samoa In
Fidsch In
150°
180°
150°

Map of Antarctica showing relationship to other continents and location of Neuschwabenland. The dark vertical line represents a deep sub-sea trench discovered by German explorers. It was found to be of volcanic origin and runs through the new German territory where it reveals itself in the form of warm water lakes, caves, crevasses and ice tunnels, most of which were found to be suitable for human habitation with the simple addition of electric lighting. Hitler's treasure, the Holy Lance and other important items were hidden in one of the caves. The trench is an excellent deep sea route for U-Boats (courtesy of "Germany's Antarctic Claim, Secret Nazi Polar Expeditions" by Christof Friedrich).

Heinrich "Gestapo" Müller, SS Major General and Lt. General of the Police, holder of the Knight's Cross to the War Merit Cross with Swords. As head of the Gestapo Section of the Reich Security Main Office of the SS he wielded immense power. His nickname was "Gestapo." He was important enough to be entitled to escape by the northern passage. Müller disappeared from Berlin on April 29, 1945 and sailed for Argentina on May 2 aboard the U-boat 530.

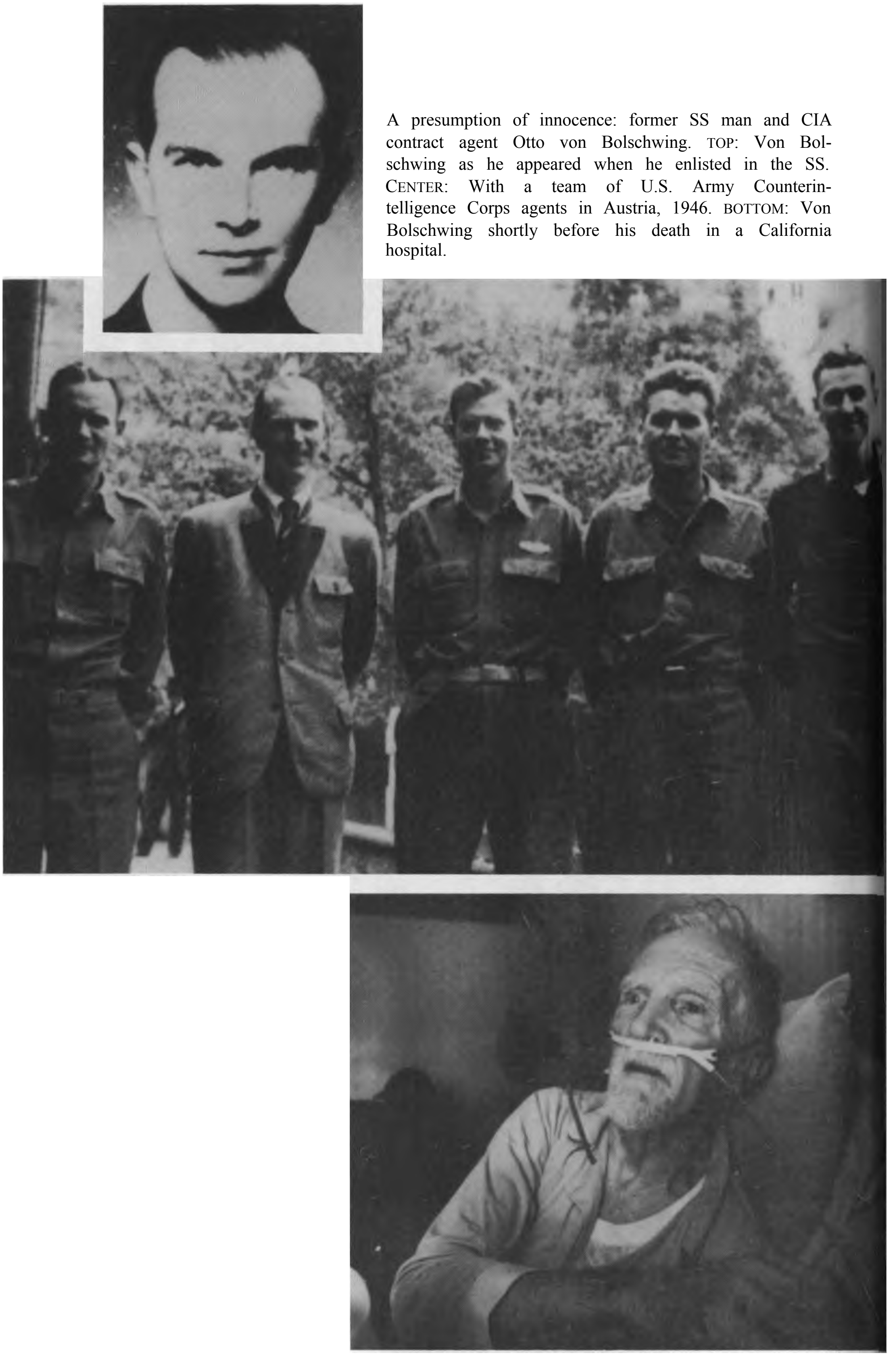


TOP: Nazi Germany's wartime rocket chief Walter Dornberger (left), seen here with Wernher von Braun in 1944. Dornberger set the schedule by which 20,000 inmates at the Nordhausen concentration camp were worked to death, bottom left: Nordhausen camp shortly after liberation by U.S. troops in April 1945. bottom bight: Dornberger entered the United States under Project Paperclip and eventually emerged as a senior executive of the Bell Aerosystems Division of Textron. The photo here is from 1954.



America's first chief of clandestine operations Frank Wisner, shown here in a rare photograph as an OSS officer in 1945. Wisner's Office for Policy Coordination and, later, Plans Directorate of the CIA became the headquarters for covert warfare employing Nazi collaborators.

BOTTOM LEFT: General Reinhard Gehlen, seen here as commander of the Fremde Heere Ost (Foreign Armies East), Germany's most important intelligence organization on the eastern front, TOP: Gehlen at a 1943 FHO staff Christmas party, as the war was turning decisively against Nazi Germany. CENTER: Gehlen with Wilfried Strik-Strikfeldt (center, facing camera), Gehlen's liaison officer with Vlasov. Gehlen eventually became chief of West Germany's intelligence service, BND; Strik-Strikfeldt became a prominent leader of CIA-financed exile programs at Radio Liberation from Bolshevism, the precursor of today's Radio Liberty. BOTTOM BIGHT: Edwin Sibert, the U.S. Army's chief of intelligence in Europe at war's end, who recruited Gehlen in 1945 and protected the Gehlen Organization during its formative stages. The Org was "my baby," Sibert said.



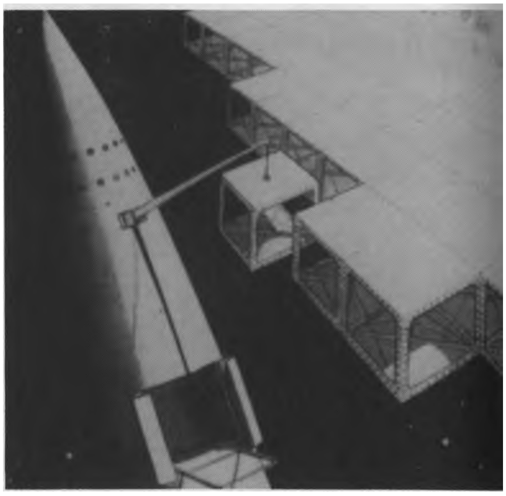
A presumption of innocence: former SS man and CIA contract agent Otto von Bolschwing. TOP: Von Bolschwing as he appeared when he enlisted in the SS. CENTER: With a team of U.S. Army Counterintelligence Corps agents in Austria, 1946. BOTTOM: Von Bolschwing shortly before his death in a California hospital.

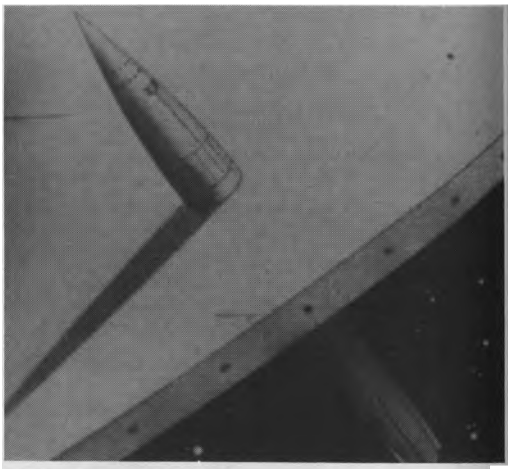
Key figures in postwar recruitment of intelligence specialists who had once been Nazi collaborators. TOP LEFT: Voice of America director and OSS veteran Charles Thayer, one of the first advocates of U.S. guerrilla warfare programs employing Vlasov Army veterans, TOP RIGHT: Kennan's right hand in émigré operations, John Paton Davies, BOTTOM RIGHT: Early CIA/OPC operative Carmel Offie, responsible for the care and feeding of selected émigré nationalists brought to Washington, D.C. BOTTOM LEFT: German diplomat Hans Heinrich Herwarth. Recruited by the Americans as a "source inside the Nazi Embassy" in Moscow in 1939, Herwarth served during the war as a leading political officer of the German army's effort to use émigré troops on the eastern front. Charles Thayer rescued Herwarth from an American POW camp in 1945, setting the stage for the postwar revival of Germany's defector troops under new U.S. sponsorship.

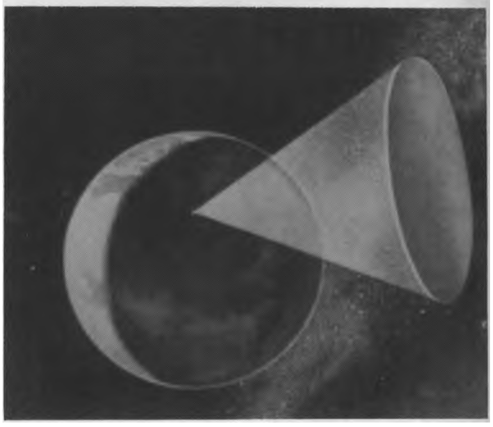
JULY 23

Life magazine reports on the "German space mirror." The Nazis, "the Army reported, hoped to use such a mirror to burn an enemy city to ashes or to boil part of an ocean." The mirror is based on the original idea Hermann Oberth published nearly 20 years earlier |see 1929], although the *Life* reporter is generous enough to point out that Oberth "had planned to use the space station not as a weapon but as a refueling point for rockets starting off on journeys into space." The finished mirror is shown in orbit in a painting by James Lewicki and its construction is illustrated by B. G. Seielstad. The mirror would be built by "ferrying prefabricated sections into space one by one." Thirty-foot holes in the circular mirror, which is to be made of sodium, accept incoming rockets. Inside the docking hole are airlocks for the passage of crewmembers and supplies. Pumpkin plants, grown under fluorescent lighting, generate oxygen, while electricity is provided by dynamos powered by solar-generated steam. The attitude of the mirror is controlled by small rockets. The whole assembly orbits at 5,100 miles.

When U.S. scientists first learn of the proposed German weapon, it is generally ridiculed. B. J. Spence, a professor of physics at Northwestern University calls it a "Jules Verne dream."

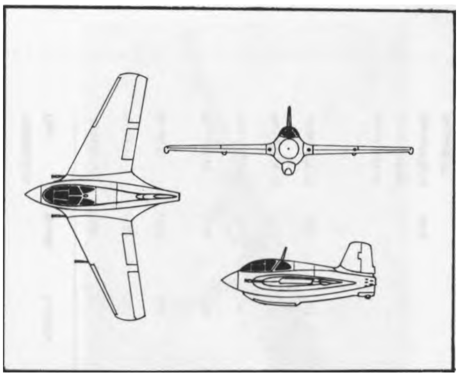






OCTOBER

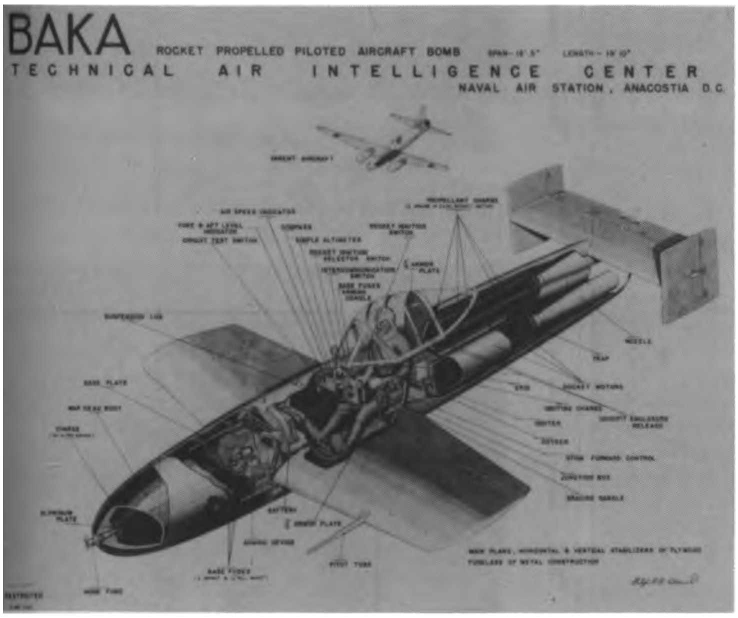
Science fiction author Jerry Shelton, in "Eyewitness Report" (*Astounding*), describes a V1 bombardment and what he thinks might be a V2 in flight: "It is nerve-wracking to be constantly saying to yourself, 'How about this? Here I am running around in a sweat trying to dodge something all us science-fiction guys have been writing and dreaming of—it's actually a reality—and I'm on the wrong end, and I can't write and tell Campbell [editor of *Astounding]* that somebody is really on the way to space!'"



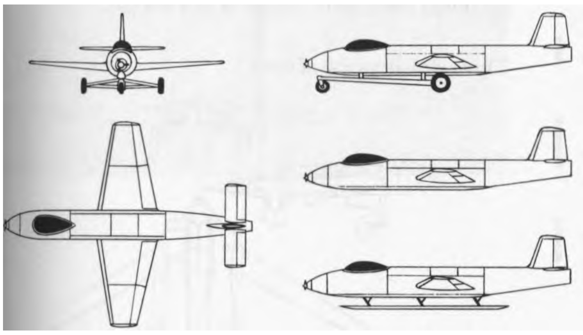
Above left:
DeHaviland DH-100 *Swallow*

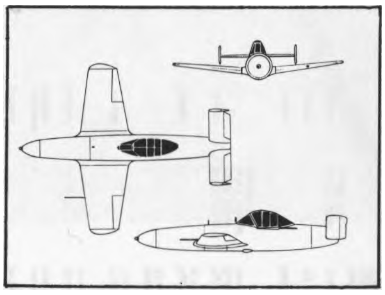
Above right:
Japanese J8MI *Shusui*

Left: Baka

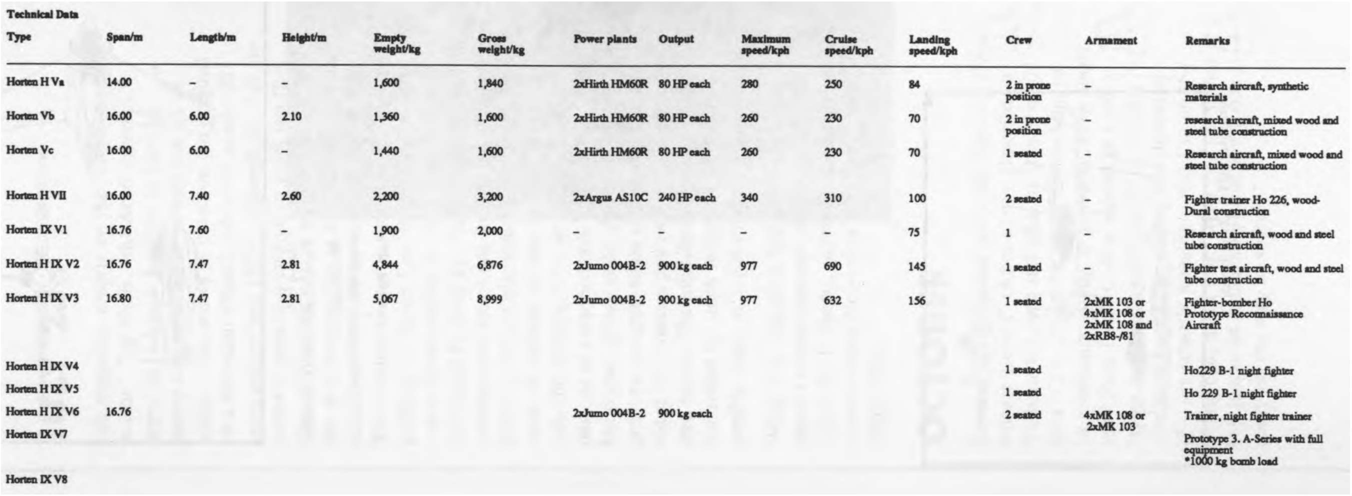

BAKA
ROCKET PROPELLED PILOTED AIRCRAFT BOMB
SPAN - 16' 5"
LENGTH - 19' 10"
TECHNICAL AIR INTELLIGENCE CENTER
NAVAL AIR STATION, ANACOSTIA D.C.
PARENT AIRCRAFT
PROPELLANT CHARGE
AIR SPEED INDICATOR
FORE & AFT LEVEL INDICATOR
COMPASS
ROCKET IGNITION SWITCH
CIRCUIT TEST SWITCH
SIMPLE ALTIMETER
ROCKET IGNITION SELECTOR SWITCH
ARMOR PLATE
INTERCOMMUNICATION SWITCH
BASE FUZES ARMING HANDLE
SUSPENSION LUG
NOZZLE
TRAP
BASE PLATE
GRID
ROCKET MOTORS
WAR HEAD BODY
IGNITING CHARGE
COCKPIT ENCLOSURE RELEASE
CHARGE
IGNITER
OXYGEN
STICK FORWARD CONTROL
JUNCTION BOX
ALUMINUM PLATE
BATTERY
ARMOR PLATE
ARMING DEVICE
PITOT TUBE
BASE FUZES
MAIN PLANE, HORIZONTAL & VERTICAL STABILIZERS OF PLYWOOD
FUSELAGE OF METAL CONSTRUCTION
RESTRICTED
NOSE FUZE

Junkers EF-127 (1944)



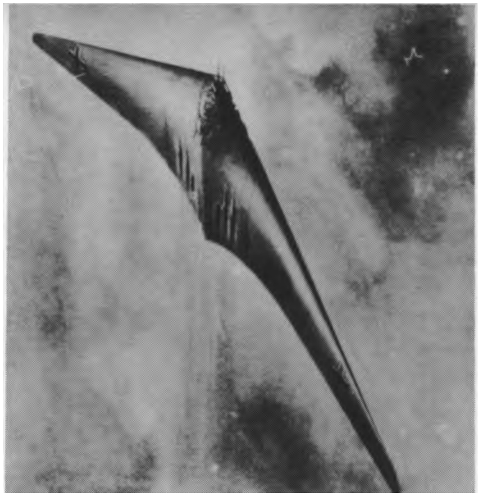


Yokosuka MXY-7 Ohka (Baka)



Technical Data

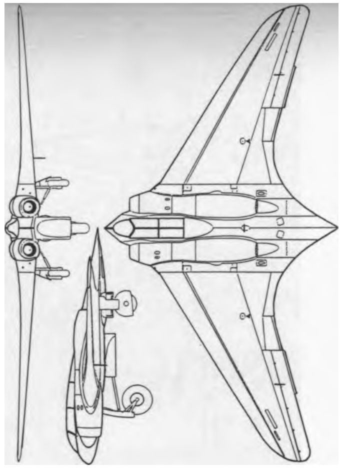
Type	Span/m	Length/m	Height/m	Empty weight/kg	Gross weight/kg	Power plants	Output	Maximum speed/kph	Cruise speed/kph	Landing speed/kph	Crew	Armament	Remarks
Horten H Va	14.00	–	–	1,600	1,840	2xHirth HM60R	80 HP each	280	250	84	2 in prone position	–	Research aircraft, synthetic materials
Horten Vb	16.00	6.00	2.10	1,360	1,600	2xHirth HM60R	80 HP each	260	230	70	2 in prone position	–	research aircraft, mixed wood and steel tube construction
Horten Vc	16.00	6.00	–	1,440	1,600	2xHirth HM60R	80 HP each	260	230	70	1 seated	–	Research aircraft, mixed wood and steel tube construction
Horten H VII	16.00	7.40	2.60	2,200	3,200	2xArgus AS10C	240 HP each	340	310	100	2 seated	–	Fighter trainer Ho 226, wood-Dural construction
Horten IX V1	16.76	7.60	–	1,900	2,000	–	–	–	–	75	1	–	Research aircraft, wood and steel tube construction
Horten H IX V2	16.76	7.47	2.81	4,844	6,876	2xJumo 004B-2	900 kg each	977	690	145	1 seated	–	Fighter test aircraft, wood and steel tube construction
Horten H IX V3	16.80	7.47	2.81	5,067	8,999	2xJumo 004B-2	900 kg each	977	632	156	1 seated	2xMK 103 or 4xMK 108 or 2xMK 108 and 2xRB8-/81	Fighter-bomber Ho Prototype Reconnaissance Aircraft
Horten H IX V4											1 seated		Ho229 B-1 night fighter
Horten H IX V5											1 seated		Ho 229 B-1 night fighter
Horten H IX V6	16.76					2xJumo 004B-2	900 kg each				2 seated	4xMK 108 or 2xMK 103	Trainer, night fighter trainer
Horten IX V7													Prototype 3. A-Series with full equipment *1000 kg bomb load
Horten IX V8													

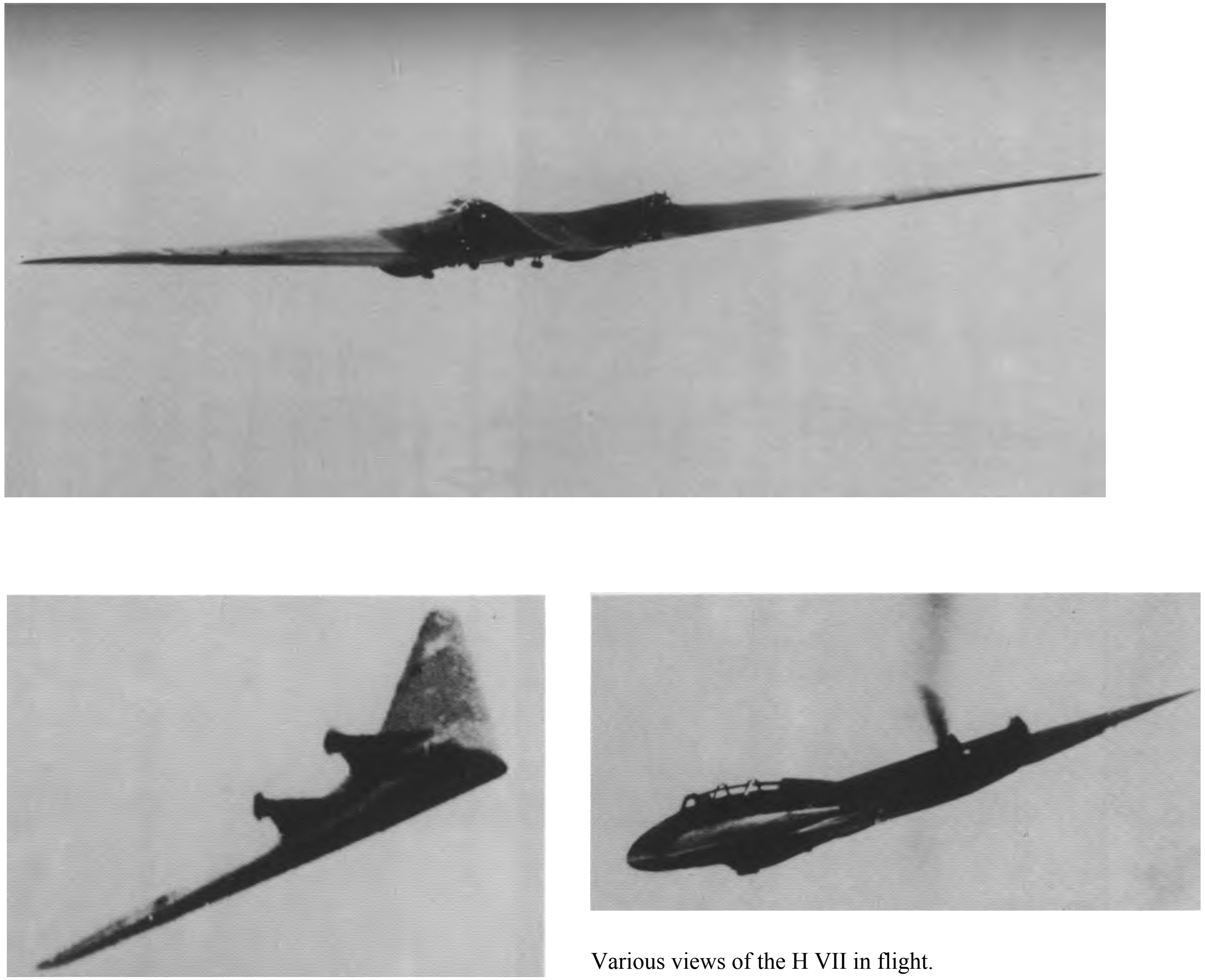


Above: The H XVIII project reached far into the future: a six-engined, turbojet-powered, long-range bomber. The project was given to the Horten brothers by Hermann Göring on March 12, 1945.

The steel tube center section was very probably the initial construction phase of this aircraft.

Three-view drawing of the V7.





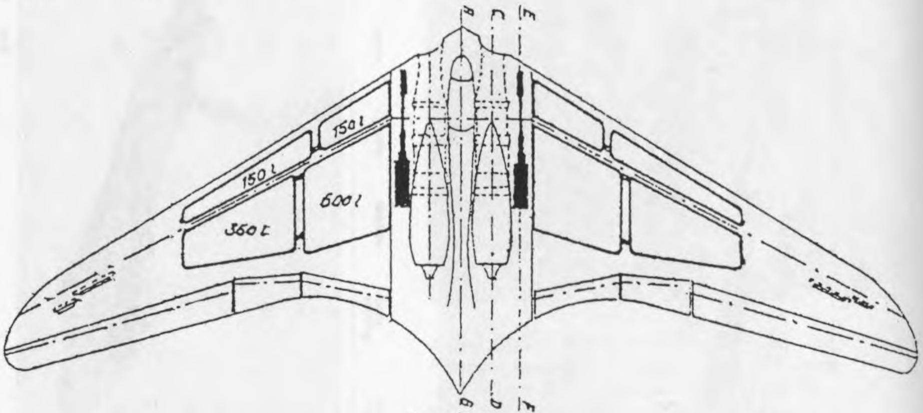
Various views of the H VII in flight.

RLM	Flugzeugtypenblatt	Baumuster: „Horten IX“ Bauausführg.: V1, V2. Baureihe:

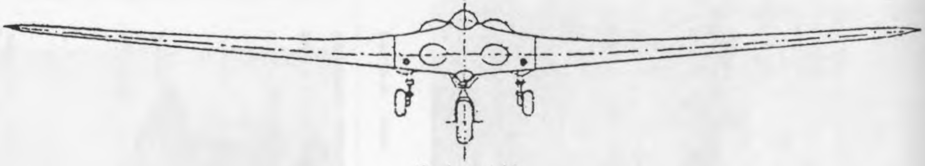
Bildskizze

Maßstab 1:100

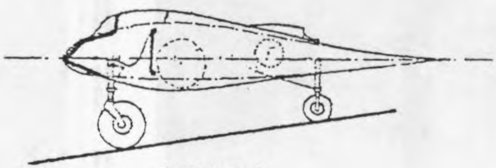
Maße in mm


A
C
E
150 l
150 l
600 l
360 l
B
D
F

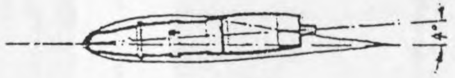
Draufsicht



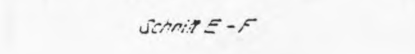
Vorderansicht



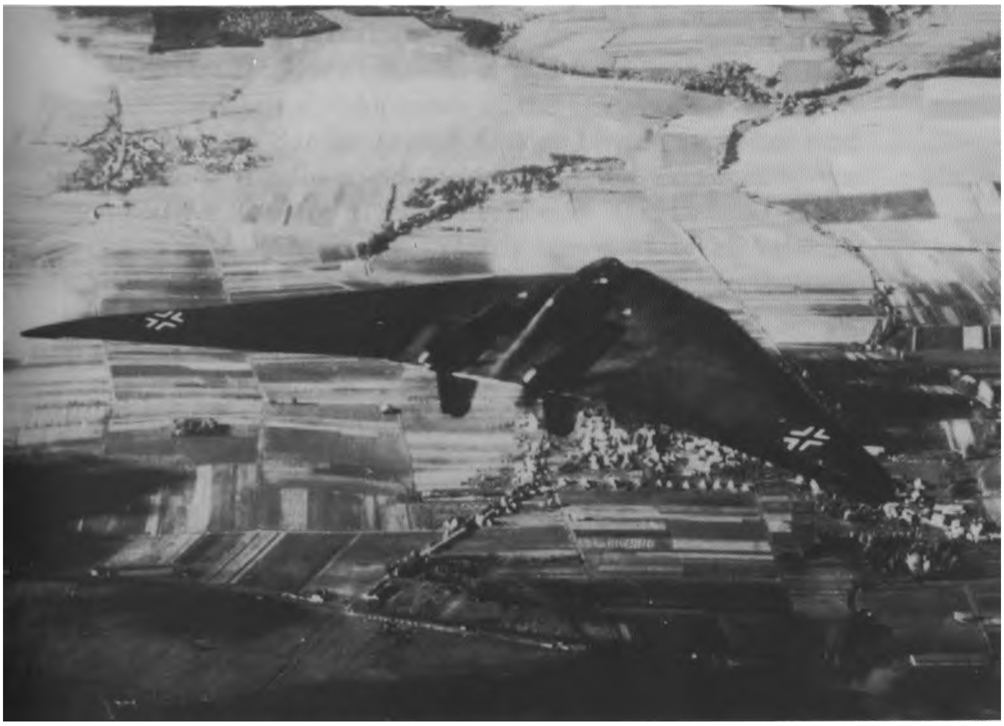
Schnitt A-B



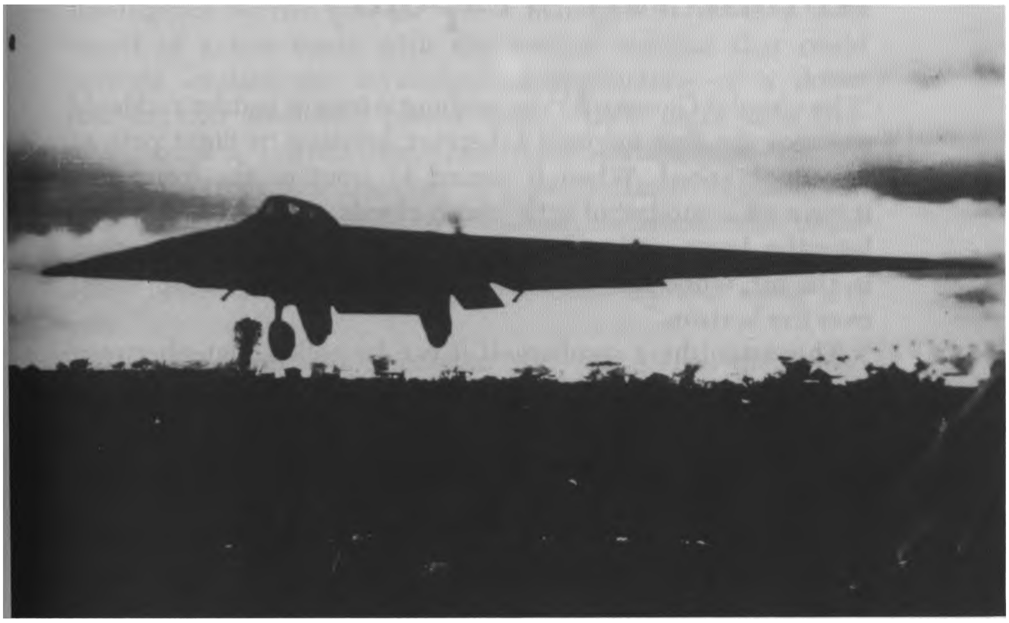
Schnitt C-D



Schnitt E-F



Above: The H Vc in flight over the Göttingen area. Below: The aircraft lands in the evening twilight.



CHAPTER 5

Revolutionary German Antiaircraft Weaponry

"The circular German fighter without wings or rudder suddenly overtook the four-engined Liberator, crossing its flight path at very high speed. When it passed in front of the formation, it gave off a number of little bluish clouds of smoke. A moment later the American bombers mysteriously caught fire, exploding in the air, while the German 'rocket' had already disappeared over the horizon."

This astonishing combat—if it can be called that—between the very latest type of interceptor and a group of Flying Fortresses that had detached themselves from the main group and were heading toward southern Bavaria took place within a matter of seconds in the sky over Würtemberg. The date is unspecified, but it must have been around the end of March or the beginning of April 1945.

A sketchy account of the event had been included in a report on the latest developments of the German aircraft industry written by a Gaullist French diplomat living in Switzerland. This report, together with other restricted documents, was destined for the Intelligence Service of the General Headquarters in Algiers and was clearly the work of an informer operating on the German side of Lake Constance.[1] In the same report there was even a mention of certain "methane antiaircraft bombs" that the Germans had experimented with on Lake Garda against another formation of Flying Fortresses, with results about the same as those of the first.

Intercepted by Italian agents, the report was deciphered by the S.I.D. (Servizio Informazioni Difeso, Defense Intelligence Service) in Castiglione delle Stiviere while the Allies were pushing to break through the Po Valley defenses. Shortly afterwards it made up part of the loot seized by Intelligence Service agents following the British Eighth Army.[2]

The event was not completely unknown to the Allied investigators. When Dr. Goebbels attempted to allay the fears caused by the terrible bombardment of Dresden by resuming his propaganda campaign promising that powerful and still unknown antiaircraft weapons would soon be in use, both the Intelligence Service and the O.S.S. managed to obtain a short report of a test made with the sort of weapon that could perhaps explain the mysterious disappearance of a dozen four-engined American planes during their flight into Germany from a British base. This report, which also seemed to come from an informer in Switzerland, reported in fact that: *"A strange flying machine, hemispherical or at any rate circular in shape, attacked them at a fantastic speed, destroying them in a few seconds without using any guns.*"

After the German surrender in May 1945, when the British examined the secret papers of the technical departments of certain factories hidden in the forested area of the Schwarzwald—another region earmarked as an "island" for a last-ditch stand—they discovered that some of the documents miraculously spared from the retreating S.S. units' destruction of papers concerned "important experiments conducted with liquid air as a power supply for certain new types of turbine engines capable of producing tremendous power outputs. At first the discovery led them to believe that a new system for powering submarines was under study,[3] but ancillary information about the construction of powerful apparatuses working on the principle of electromagnetic waves that would make it possible to exercise radio control at great distances, as well as photographs showing some parts of the new turbine, caused them to change their minds. Thus they got on the track of a preliminary preparatory stage for a new and very powerful type of armored, radio-controlled aircraft."[4]

Now, it cannot be denied that these bombs with their strange contents and that mysterious circular aircraft—armed, besides, only with tubes for spewing out a deadly gas that, blown against enemy planes with great force, caught fire from their exhaust flames and caused them to explode in the air —would certainly appear to noninitiates of military secrets to be the wildest science fiction, if proof to the contrary did not exist. Indirect proof, to be sure, but, one might say, irrefutable.

EXPLOSIVE GASES

In the spring of 1936 an odd story was making the rounds in international press circles. It was received with considerable skepticism and soon forgotten. After all, there had been a spate of similar stories before, dealing with death rays, superpowerful gases, disintegrating radiation, and other such weapons of the future. This one dealt with certain military experiments being carried out near the Hungarian border by an unnamed European power (but, for various reasons, it clearly appeared to be Austria). The experiments were being conducted with a colorless, liquefied gas, harmless to humans but lethal to engines.

The Italian press mentioned it, though under a misleading headline (ASPHYXIATED ENGINES?), reporting as follows: "While inventors of those famous ultrahighfrequency paralyzing rays appear from time to time in the newspapers declaring that they can short out the ignition system of any internal combustion engine from a distance, other inventors are trying other paths to achieve the same object, but with simpler and, apparently, more hopeful results. It is known, for example, that one foreign nation has been conducting experiments with projectiles containing a liquid gas that, when the shell explodes, forms a very extensive cloud that envelops the machine to be destroyed. Any engine whose carburetor breathes in the least amount of this gas will immediately and repeatedly self-ignite. This not only hampers the proper functioning of the engine but generally causes the pistons and connecting rods to break or the block to explode. A column of trucks is said to have been stopped by this gas from a distance of seven and a half miles with a deliberately inaccurate barrage, keeping about half the explosions at a considerable height above the road and off to one side. The gas used allegedly has the added advantage of being colorless, a very valuable characteristic for air defense. Finally, the fact that it is harmless to humans would encourage its use at low altitudes in warfare and for the defense of urban centers."[5]

The Anschluss that united Germany and Austria to form the Greater Reich came, and then came also the Second World War. But the explosive gas did not appear on the battlefields. Informers, secret agents, and prisoners nevertheless repeatedly confirmed after 1944 that a secret weapon of that sort was in an experimental stage.

Dr. Rosenstein, a Jewish collaborator well-versed in the problems of organic chemistry and with special competence in the production of synthetic gasoline, was the first to mention it. In the autumn of 1944 he was captured by the Americans and taken to Paris to be interrogated by members of the Alsos Mission. "The German chemists had succeeded in perfecting the formula for a new gas whose use would have caused strong vibrations and even breakage in aircraft engines," Rosenstein declared. "They refused, however, to employ it because it might possibly have adverse effects on the crews of the planes enveloped in it, and that, in turn, could have unleashed poison gas warfare, which was especially distasteful to the Führer."[8]

Independently of the research indicated by Rosenstein (which seems directly related to the development of the old Austrian experiments that were reactivated in Leuna or Brüx), other experiments were going on at the R-Laboratory of the Luftfahrtsforschungsanstalt in Volkenrode. While working with various oxidizing substances in July 1944, Dr. Hans Friederich Gold, a chemical engineer working in the rocket division of the institute, discovered accidentally that if he mixed 2 percent of myrol with air, internal combustion engines immediately began detonating irregularly; an 8 percent mixture stopped the engines completely in a matter of seconds.[7]

Other information dealt with liquid and gaseous chemical combinations of terrible incendiary power.

Undoubtedly the basic fact supporting the credibility of the above-mentioned matters lies in the Allies' discovery during the progressive occupation of German territory of a number of special "projectileless cannons" which were principally to be used against aircraft.[8]

BLOWER CANNONS

According to the French military press immediately after the war, the land-based version of these cannons—called *Windkanone*—were constructed by "a Stuttgart firm under the protection of the Luftwaffe" (specifically, it appears, the government-run Hermann Göring Stahl Werke of Heerte, which at one time had also undertaken experiments on rockets and ramjet engines). That is, the factory was about thirty miles, as the crow flies, from the secret factories in the Black Forest.

The cannon had been designed to protect specific secondary objectives and to be used against low-flying fighter-bombers and any other kinds of low-flying plane, "in other words, whenever it is difficult to use the classic type of cannon with any success."

The *Windkanone* looked like a capital L turned upside down and was pointed toward the sky at an angle; tongues of flame instead of the usual shells shot out of the muzzle. It was constructed of a thick cast-iron tube about three feet in diameter and about thirty-five feet long. The short upper extremity, at right angles to the remainder of the tube, had a large nozzle on the end. In place of the normal breech, the weapon had a combustion chamber loaded with an explosive mixture (hydrogen and oxygen or ammonia) that, after being electrically fired, produced a strong wind from the nozzle pointed in the path of the plane. The violent displacement of air was supposed to bring down the plane, or at least render it unstable, at a maximum distance of about 650 feet.

Mounted on a railway car, the weapon could also be used from the mouths of tunnels to defend hilly and mountainous terrain which concealed important military objectives. For this reason it seemed to be the ideal weapon for passive air defense in the Alpine Redoubt. Practically, however, it proved to be inefficient, because the high speed of the planes themselves and the very short duration of the wind stream, together with the inherent problem of aiming the cannon, had a negative influence on the number of successful shots produced.

Since the cannon had demonstrated in tests on fixed targets that it was capable of shattering a board one inch thick at a distance of 650 feet, the *Windkanone* was then relegated to infantry use. It was hoped that if this bizarre piece of artillery was used against troops attacking along such obvious routes as valleys, bridges, and tunnels, it would blow them away like chaff. But the weapon could not be used even in this way, since it was unwieldy and consequently highly vulnerable to enemy fire.

The unused and rusted prototype was later found on April 28, 1945, on the outskirts of the Hillersleben testing grounds, some eighty miles west of Berlin, by members of the Intelligence Technical Branch (C.A.F.T.) of the 12th Army Group.[6]

The American experts also came upon a strange device mounted on a strong frame that raised it about fifteen feet from the ground. It was basically a sheet-steel cylinder welded along its eight-foot length and with a large internal crown nozzle at the upper end. At first mistaken for the head of a small vertical heater, it turned out to be the experimental model of the *Wirbelringkanone* (whirlwind annular vortex cannon).

This strange cannon—which was also called, somewhat prematurely, the *Himmelfeger* (Skysweep) by the German experimenters—had been sent to Hillersleben in the winter of 1944 from its original home in Kummersdorf. According to Professor Maas, this weapon "fired" a gas ring that spun rapidly on its own axis, a kind of miniature artificial cyclone. It was activated by a charge of compressed hydrogen and was capable of producing considerable damage up to a distance of about 1400 feet. The German technicians hoped that by increasing the dimensions of the "cannon" they would soon be able to scatter bomber formations flying at 15,000 feet, buffeting the planes so violently that they would be thrown off course and be easy prey for the fighters.

OTHER "WIND CANNONS"

The government factory that had constructed the wind cannon had also prepared two other types of projectileless weapon.

The *Wirbelkanone* (whirlwind cannon) shot about a hundred pounds of pulverized coal soaked in kerosene a distance of some hundred yards. Automatically ignited as it left the launching tube, this mixture, which burned for about half a minute, was supposed to eliminate such specifically land objectives as advanced platoons, isolated tanks, machine-gun emplacements, forts and so on. Because of the difficulty of getting the bugs out of the launching apparatus, this weapon did not have its baptism by fire either.[10]

Finally there was the *Vielfältigwindkanone* (multiple blower cannon), much smaller in size, which could be mounted on airplanes. The steel tube contained a number of smaller tubes with slanted vanes that broke the wind up into a series of rapid gusts. Internally ignited by a charge of special powder or a gaseous mixture, the gases expelled from the arrangement of nozzles at a muzzle velocity of about 3250 feet per second were supposed to strike the enemy plane and render it unmaneuverable.

To supplant the machine guns and cannons already mounted on the German fighters, the new weapon had to at least be able to damage seriously or, better still, to down the enemy aircraft. For example, it would have had to envelop the enemy plane in a cloud of incendiary or explosive gas so as to insure its certain destruction.

Since East Prussia was about to fall into the hands of the Russians, the designers of the blower cannon feverishly pushed ahead the working out of the technical principle, drawing on the results furnished by the tests that had previously been carried out at the Austrian experimental centers.

At Lofer, in the Tyrolean mountains, the Waffenamt had an institute that at one time was assigned to develop mountain artillery. In addition, the Technische Akademie der Luftwaffe (T.A.L.) was running a station for secondary research on aerial equipment in the same region. In 1944 Speer took over direct management of the two institutes, radically changing the type of research and experimentation they were engaged in.

Colonel Leslie E. Simon, the American investigator who visited the zone after the armistice (and after the British T Unit had passed through), reported that the two institutes were working on different and completely heterogeneous sorts of fantastic inventions.[11]

The fact is that the buildings had also served as the technical nerve center for a far greater complex of research workers scattered about and hidden in the area, and if some of these weapons appeared to be somewhat bizarre and impractical (as, for example, the "ultrasonic cannon"), others, had they been completed in time, would doubtless have caused considerable annoyance to the Allies.

One of these was called the *Luftwirbelkanone* (air vortex cannon) and thus seemed to be related to the blower types, but in reality the launching mechanism followed traditional ballistic patterns and it was the content of the shell that marked the advent of a new antiaircraft technique.

AN INSPIRING DISASTER

Dr. Zippermeyer, an Austrian researcher, got the idea of reducing the normal explosive charge to the minimum necessary to fracture the shell, which was loaded with extremely fine coal dust. The explosion of the shell thereby produced a small, fiery cloud that burned up in the air it passed through in a matter of fifteen seconds.

At Lofer preliminary experiments fully confirmed the possibility of destroying a plane in flight by causing the wings or rudder to fracture after being struck by the violent, fiery gust, but difficulties in establishing the proper amount of the charge (efficacy diminished with distance owing to the decreased final density of the "cloud") and certain unforeseen problems in timing the ignition phase caused the staff to consider replacing the solid combustible with a gaseous one.

While Dr. Zippermeyer was busy perfecting his antiaircraft coal-dust clouds, the technicians of the Institute for Ballistics of the T.A.L. began a decisive line of research on the physics of explosions in rarefied media.

Flak gunners had reported a number of times that the efficiency of barrages against high-flying invaders fell off sharply above 15,000 feet. The T.A.L. experts explained this shortcoming as resulting from the fact that the intensity and density of the spherical shock waves as developed by ordinary explosives fell off by 50 percent at 15,000 feet because of tamping flaws and through the action of mass defect itself and rarefaction of the air.

In order to verify the exact extent of the phenomenon, in October and November of 1943 a hundred prisoners of war transported with backbreaking work the wings and fuselages of. German HE-111 bombers and four-engined American B-17s to the large T.A.L. experimental center at Zugspitzplatt, 10,000 feet above sea level. There the planes were subjected to the explosions of antiaircraft shells detonated at decreasing distances. New firing tables were computed for flak at the end of this unusual line of research.

Then, in the summer of 1944, a frightening series of consecutive explosions—with effects not unlike the American "saturation bombing"—devastated the synthetic gasoline refineries at Ludwigshafen. Although Allied propaganda immediately seized the opportunity to claim that the explosions were the result of successful delayed-action detonation of a new type of liquid air bomb-mine, the disaster had, in reality, been caused by the accidental escape of ethylene gas at the

Athelane recovery center, the explosion of which spread to the gas containers and the whole surrounding plant.

Among the experts on the commission of inquiry was a small special group sent by the T.A.L. The tragic incident provided the opportunity to "reconsider a proposal made some time before for the study of liquefied gas antiaircraft rocket bombs."[12]

T.A.L.'s huge institute in the Bavarian Alps, working together with the neighboring experimental center of Garmisch-Partenkirken (run by the Waffenamt), repeated the tests on the wings and fuselages of large planes, this time using small cylinders loaded with ethylene in both gaseous and liquid states.[13]

The shock wave of ethylene launched with rocket bombs having an explosive core (the Zippermeyer system) maintained its destructive level virtually unchanged even at altitudes considerably above 15,000 feet. But practically it was necessary to take into account the difficulties of loading and preserving the projectiles, the intrinsic danger of the gaseous material, which was supersensitive to shocks and temperature variations, and also the too rapid exhaustion of atmospheric combustion. Tests in flight with the first rudimentary models of the *Flugschnittel* (Flying Scythe) made it clear that it would be necessary to stabilize the explosive or to replace it with some similar substance.

In the end the second solution prevailed. It was suggested by the Luftfahrtforschungsanstalt of Vienna (L.F.W.), which for some time had itself been conducting interesting experiments on the explosive properties of liquefied combustible gases with the help of some Italian technicians who had a great deal of experience in synthetic combustibles.

Continuation of the work thus became practically the prerogative of the L.F.W., which had it carried out in its Italian branch at Riva del Garda.

SYNTHETIC FIREDAMP

In working with gases it was desirable to use those that were physiologically harmless, for international sanctions had banned the use of poison gases. The idea of liquefying a nonpoisonous gaseous combustible to make it so concentrated that when it instantly resumed its original gaseous state it would envelop and permeate military objectives had occurred to Italian scientists at the time of the rumor about the Austrian experiments. In other words, in 1936.

Acetylene, which remains liquid at 1°C. under a pressure of 48 atmospheres, was immediately discarded as being too sensitive to shock; methane too, despite the fact that it was coming more and more into use, did not seem to meet the requirements, since it remains in a liquid state only at 0° C. and under a pressure of 150 atmospheres. After examining a number of similar gases, the scientists' attention finally focused on a fifty-fifty mixture of butane and propane—a mixture typical of the methane homologs—which was not poisonous and had a calorific power slightly higher than even that of gasoline and a very low liquefaction point (between two and six atmospheres, according to temperature), which meant it could easily be stored in welded steel containers only a fraction of an inch thick. Since the heat of evaporation of this methane mixture is very low, once it was fired an almost instantaneous volatilization of the liquid could be counted on and every cubic foot of gas would have burned about twenty-eight cubic feet of air.

For various reasons—not the least of which were the small capacity of ordinary antiaircraft shells and the promising development of thermite incendiary bombs—the idea did not reach the experimental stage until 1942, and the armistice found Italian scientists carrying out successful tests on additives to increase the explosive qualities of the substance.[14]

If the background of these researches is little known today, the outcome is even less known. Nevertheless, doesn't it seem significant that the Gaullist diplomat described certain mysterious antiaircraft bombs as containing methane? The notorious firedamp of the coal mines is, in fact, nothing but a natural mixture of saturated acyclic paraffin hydrocarbons composed mainly of methane with small percentages of ethane, propane, and butane.

Since the liquefied combustibles possess the important property of spontaneously being self-pumping and self-mixing, the idea immediately developed that the propulsive part of the bomb could be fueled with part of the explosive material itself. For obvious reasons, rocket propulsion was abandoned and a project was sketched out for a flying bomb with a simplified turbine that recalled in appearance and function the *Turboproietto* (turbine projectile), an Italian antiaircraft device that never left the experimental stage, and to a small extent the propulsive system of the *Feuerball* antiradar aircraft.

In spring 1945 the scientists at the Riva del Garda center were also perfecting the manufacturing process for a ceramic material for turbine blades—similar to the German *Dug* (70 percent $Al_2O_3 \div 30$ percent Fe)—which gave promise of withstanding continuously and under enormous pressures temperatures of around 1000°C.[15]

The proposal to increase the size of the turbine bomb in order to transform it into a genuine airplane of an entirely new concept—using the temperature-resistant ceramic for the parts subjected to high temperature—was, however, put aside by the L.F.W., which already had various special projects in the course of development.

When the pool for aeronautical research that Speer started in 1944 and the S.S. then implemented brought together and unified all the inventions of the same sort, artificial firedamp immediately proved to be the ideal explosive for the little blower cannon that fired deadly gusts of gas—the "little bluish clouds" released by the strange circular fighter plane against the unfortunate four-engined Liberators flying in close formation.[16]

"THEY'LL DROP BY THE DOZENS"

The howling of the last siren that signaled the end of the air raid—one of many which were reducing section after section of Berlin to rubble—had only just ended when the correspondents of the neutral press were urgently summoned to the Reichsluftfahrtministerium (R.L.M.) for a message of the greatest importance. Normally Dr. Goebbels, the minister for press and propaganda, handled press relations, but this time Marshal Göring—whose prestige was declining sharply and who for some time had been keeping himself on the outer fringes of the Nazi world “for reasons of health”—personally wanted to reaffirm the policy of “reprisal” and the imminent advent of new kinds of air defense:

“And then their bombers will drop by the dozens, like sparrows under the hunter’s gun,” he concluded angrily. “Our fighter pilots will only have to press the trigger!”

The correspondents diligently wrote down everything that was said and took leave of the powerful personality, masking their growing skepticism. In fact, it was not the first time that spectacular countermeasures were announced, but the months passed and they never appeared.

The press conference took place toward the beginning of November 1944, just before the so-called Great Council of the Luftwaffe was convened at Berlin Gatow. The V-1 flying bomb had been in large-scale use against England since June, but this had not thrown back or even stopped the invasion forces. On September 8, 1943, the V-2 rocket bomb had made its appearance, but although it was certainly an extraordinary device, as the Allies themselves admitted, the Allied bombing raids continued.

And yet Göring was not lying. His angry impatience caused him to suggest that the weapons were closer to production than they actually were. In fact, the designers at the various government institutes had planned with special care every possible kind of scientific apparatus, system, and principle capable of conducting German technology step by step to the final realization of the ideal antiaircraft weapon: the supersonic fighter under remote television control.

Ever since the spring of 1941—that is, when the Luftwaffe understood that it had irremediably lost the “Battle of England”—its high command (O.K.L.) had been seriously considering the possibility of intensive bombardment of London by means of flying bombs and remote-controlled pilotless planes.

In order not to overload its own radio industry, which was already engaged in a heavy production, the Nazi authorities placed their first order for two hundred transmitters for airplanes with the Paris firm of S.A.D.I.R.-Carpentier, which was supposed to build them at the Puteaux factories under German supervision. After the plans were completed, sabotage and delays of all sorts became evident. A year later it turned out that hardly a single apparatus had been built.[17] Since this was a derivation from the prewar British E.M.I. transmitter, the Germans decided, on second thought, that the British were quite familiar with it and would easily be able to jam it. So they let the contract expire and in July 1943 approached the Lyons firm of Radio-Industrie, asking it to design a top-secret television receiver that could be installed in airplanes flying at an altitude of 40,000 feet. A team of German electrical scientists headed by Dr. Neiss remained at the Lyons factory for a long time, but sabotage and passive resistance on the part of the French again held up the work until the American troops arrived.[18]

Back home, of course, things went much better. Two large industrial complexes (Telefunken and Fernseh-Blaupunkt) had been investigating the possibilities in the military applications of television since 1939, in strict collaboration with the principal government experimental centers.[19]

TELEVISION-GUIDED BOMBS

The Telefunken laboratories were trying to perfect apparatuses for strategic use (that is, with a radius of action of about two hundred miles) and were working closely with the B.H.F., the Institute for High Frequency Studies.

Fernseh G.m.b.H. of Berlin, on the other hand, applied itself to apparatuses for tactical use. In 1939, with Professor Herbert Wagner of the Henschel aircraft company as a consultant, Fernseh undertook to develop a television installation that would enable pilots to control both planing bombs and rocket bombs after they were launched. The installation used a wave length of between seventy and a hundred centimeters and the images received appeared on a tiny screen about three inches square.

Beginning on June 10, 1942, an extensive series of laboratory experiments coupled with numerous flight launches was carried out at the Hochfrequenzinstitut D.F.S. at Aiming in the Bavarian Alps, and in the autumn of 1943 this still experimental equipment made it possible for the Henschel HE-263-A flying bomb to sink the torpedo-boat destroyer *Egret* in the Bay of Biscay and an American transport ship in the Gulf of Salerno. The immediate countermeasures taken by Allied radio branches had already been established for some time, thanks to data furnished by espionage, and the Germans were forced to modify the guidance system.

Type B was used with modest success along the northern coastline of France until this too was jammed.[20]

Type C was supposed to have an installation derived from the preceding model, but with a cathode tube of 221 lines and twenty-five pictures per second. It was developed by Section F of the very active experimental institute run by the Postal Ministry (F.D.R.P.). When the institute was transferred to Aach-am-Bodensee in October 1943, however, the work was temporarily interrupted.

Meantime, the Hochfrequezinstitut D.F.S. scientists had experimented with the apparatus for the Type D bombs, and in July and October of 1944 they successfully carried out remote control of shots against land and sea targets in Garz and Karlshagen.

After the F.D.R.P.'s activities were resumed in full, it completed the plans for the *Tonne* project, and the new television apparatus was ordered from Fernseh, which began series production at its factories in Obertanwald-bei-Reichenberg, in the Sudetenland. But the Russians continued advancing, and in April 1945 Fernseh moved to Taufkirchen in Bavaria, continuing to work on the *Tonne,* four-fifths ready for industrial assembly, as well as on one of Dr. Moller's projects, the *Sprotte,* which had very recently been laid down. This project was concerned with the development of a microtelevision camera to be installed in the nose of an antiaircraft rocket to guide it precisely to the center of the Allied bomber formations.[21]

At the beginning of 1945 the balance sheet of German radio-television technology in the field of missiles read more or less as follows:

In Bayreuth Dr. Rambauske, director of the Institut für Physikalische-Forschung (I.F.P.F.), was completing an apparatus for antiaircraft missiles, flying bombs, and naval air torpedoes for the Luftwaffe. Among other things, this apparatus offered the possibility of being able to supply periodic corrections to the "automatic pilot" of planes or boats, regulating itself by the light of the sun, a star, a lighthouse, or any other light source. Tested in autumn 1944, the device accurately guided a motorboat through a complicated series of remote-controlled evolutions on the Madu See, a lake in Pomerania. Nevertheless, it apparently aroused only very lukewarm interest in the technical circles of the Luftwaffe.[22]

At Aiming, the latest model in development promised to have an effective radius of action of twelve miles on land and sixty miles at sea. At the time of the surrender, however, it still needed at least another six months of work to perfect it and bring it to large-scale production. The laboratory for the military applications of high-frequency radio waves had also completed a remote-control system for bombs, rockets, and aircraft that "resisted all known enemy systems of 'jamming.'" This was the *Mosaik* project developed by Professor Folske from an idea that had occurred to him in 1943; in May 1945 it was ready to go into the preproduction run.

At Oberammergau, in addition to its radio and television researches, the Oberbayerische Forschunsanstalt (O.B.F.), under the direction of Dr. Konrad, was working on infrared detecting devices based on the principle of the bolometer. In reality a laboratory under the aegis of Messerschmitt, the O.B.F. was responsible for the study of a number of special projects that it was considered necessary and prudent to keep confined to the Bavarian mountains.

The antiaircraft *Enzian* missile, with an infrared automatic search head (project Madrid), was also included among the high-priority projects of 1944. The development of this missile had been divided up and distributed among the various government institutes equipped for that sort of research. The part dealing with the flight-control mechanism of the device had been assigned to the Reichenhall section of the D.F.S., which was responsible for aircraft equipment, through the subcontractor Holzbau-Kissing, A.G., of Sonthofen-im-Allgäu, which had also worked on the *Feuerball.*

In December 1944 the O.B.F. resumed control of the entire research program on the *Enzian,* basing its decision on the greater local availability of the scientific equipment considered necessary for completing the work rapidly. But when the D.F.S. scientists arrived in Oberammergau to take part in the project, they learned to their consternation that the whole program had in the meantime been shelved. And yet test flights of the *Enzian* had been very encouraging and the device was well worth being completed in the shortest possible time.[23] What could possibly have been the reason for that apparently self-inflicted wound?

There were two good reasons.

In its underground factories at Nordhausen, the Henschel firm, which had always been relatively more concerned with missiles than with airplanes, was about to begin large-scale production of the excellent antiaircraft rocket, the *Schmetterling* (Butterfly).[24]

The other and perhaps even more decisive reason was that Messerschmitt, which had always been more concerned with airplanes than with missiles, had completed in the greatest secrecy the fighter plane that Göring had dreamed about for so long: the radio-controlled interceptor rocket plane.

PILOTLESS FIGHTER PLANES

Göring had repeatedly inspected the work in progress, following the explanations of the scientists with absorbed and enthusiastic attention and occasionally making suggestions of his own.

In the euphoria of the moment, reinforced by the thin, bracing air of the Alps far from the dismal rumble of war, a foretaste of the bitter surprise that awaited the enemies of the Greater Reich was already on his lips. And he thought that in order to insure that "thousands" of those fantastic fighters would be built, he would increase the productive capacity of Messerschmitt by giving it the support of "his own" Reimahg-Bau G.m.b.H.[25]

Two types of *Raketenflugzeuge ohne Pilote* (pilotless fighter rockets) were designed.

The *Krache* (Crack) was about sixteen feet long and armed with a battery of eight 55-mm R-4-M rocket projectiles. The *Donner* (Thunder) was armed with a rapid-fire MG-213/C.30 small cannon.

Both had the characteristic blunt, teardrop shape of the well-known ME-163 rocket-engined fighter. In effect they were the same machine partially redesigned to be pilotless and controlled from the ground through an elaborate television receiver installed in an armored console. Lighter at the end of a mission because of the ammunition and rocket fuel expended, the *Krache* would fall to earth under a huge tail chute. For the *Donner,* it was decided to try to land the craft on a belly skid, as with the original ME-163.

At the beginning of 1945 the O.B.F. completed the preproduction run of twenty examples. But unarmed tests against conventional German planes revealed at once certain secondary defects. These concerned the excessively high maneuverability of the craft. In fact, it was difficult to coordinate quickly enough the radio order to fire with the fleeting television picture of the target, which danced about a great deal because both hunter and target were in motion. In addition, the high speeds caused oscillations that reduced the number of hits to an unacceptable low figure.

The radical solution that was suggested was to make the firing control completely automatic. But it was now March 1945, only two months from the disastrous end.

GERMAN AUTOMATIC FUSES

The Lilienthalgesellschaft für Luftfahrtsforschung (L.F.L.) was an academic institution of the highest level set up to coordinate science and industry in the field of aeronautical research. At Aiming in December 1943 it held its large year-end congress for the elite in the German science of air weaponry.

Among the reports prepared for the event, one especially attracted the attention of those who had the thankless responsibility of handling the Reich’s air defenses (and, of course, it also attracted the attention of British secret agents). The report was given by Dr. Hackemann, of the Waffen-Institut L.F.A. of Volkenrode. Entitled “New Methods of Research in Weaponry,” it set forth for the first time certain technical principles destined not only to revolutionize the aiming and firing of aircraft-mounted guns but also to make the “search heads” of missiles and flak shells completely automatic.

Before the war there had been a good deal of talk about installing automatic fuses controlled by tiny electronic or electromagnetic devices mounted in antiaircraft projectiles. In 1939 the Swedish munitions firm of Bofors had designed a photoelectric cell fuse, but it was unsuccessful because of its extreme fragility. In spite of all their efforts, neither the French nor the Americans succeeded in perfecting really effective devices.

The British were more rational, and also luckier. In 1942 they secretly designed the famous radio fuse, the R-Proximity Fuse, which they had manufactured in the United States on a large scale. This fuse seriously hampered the German V-1 air offensive against London and in the autumn of 1944 finally knocked it out completely.

Behind the British in the time factor, during 1944 the Germans began to catch up with giant strides, aiming at high quality. Their automatic fuses sought, in fact, to exploit methodically, singly or in combination, all the physical phenomena that accompany the movement of a body in the air.

Thus at the F.D.R.P.’s institute for electronic research, Professor Hanle, who was working on behalf of the Luftwaffe, adapted the well-known Geiger counter, making a rocket fuse activated by ultraviolet radiations that to many Allied scientists seemed to be well ahead of its time. Elsewhere work was carried out on electromagnetic, acoustical, electroacoustical, photoelectric, and photochemical fuses.

The major bulk of the work on automatic fuses was, however, supplied by the Ernst Orlich Institut run by the Plenipotentiary Board for the Study and Application of Ultrahigh-frequency Waves (B.H.F.). Located in Travemünde, near Danzig, the institute had also distinguished itself in the field of antiradar camouflage.[26] In 1943 it was moved to Wolfersdorf and Altenburg, in Thuringia, to escape the British air raids that repeatedly pounded the coast line and German islands in the

Baltic after the “discovery” of Peenemünde. At the end of 1944 it moved farther south, finding refuge in the Tyrolean mountains. Of the forty-six military applications of electronic projects that were completed or still being perfected at the time of the surrender, six dealt with the preparation of special proximity fuses.

The fuses developed under project *Kuhglocke* (Cowbell), which had been commissioned by Speer, were sensitive to the natural electrostatic fields that surround airplanes in flight.[27]

In a sense the Luftwaffe was running for cover when it commissioned Project *Pinscher* (Terrier), taking a leaf out of the British book to provide flak shells with short-wave radio fuses operating on a band of about six meters. Ground-tested in the late autumn of 1944, they proved to be efficient up to a distance of 160 feet from the target.

Knowing that the British were masters at jamming enemy radio apparatuses, in the summer of 1944 the Speer Commission also set up project *Marder* (Marten). The aim here was to control the explosion of the projectile by radio from a plane in flight or from a ground station within a radius of ten miles from the target. Control at this distance would avoid the danger of accidental explosions and prevent any possible electronic interference from attacking aircraft. But by autumn the new project *Wiesel* (Weasel) gave such promise of being perfected that it tended to supplant *Marder,* its principle having been reported as “very promising.”

Project *Reineke* had been suggested by the Luftwaffe in the winter of 1943, shelved in 1944, and resumed, financed and speeded up by the Speer Commission, at the beginning of 1945. Its scientists were engaged in the study of the advantages offered by magnetic fuses, which were difficult to “spook” and did not have the danger of accidental or premature explosions.

Finally there was project *lsegrim* (Grumbler), which the Luftwaffe supported toward the end of 1944. Its aim was to revolutionize antitank techniques. Experimented on successfully toward the end of the war, the *lsegrim* was a device that automatically launched and detonated ordinary antitank rockets from a plane deliberately—or by chance, as during a night flight—flying horizontally at a low altitude directly over a tank. The system worked because of the astonishing sensitivity of the apparatus to weak variations in the local geomagnetic field produced by the metallic mass of the target. The device that launched the rockets was in this case mounted vertically under the wings or inside the fuselage, with the launch muzzles pointed down toward the ground. The plane had to fly not more than fifty feet above the ground.

THE SPITFIRE AND BREECHLESS CANNONS

The same rocket launchers installed in the fuselage, but with the muzzles aimed upward and controlled by a firing device based on the principle of electrostatic fuses, was called the *Feuerspucker* (Spitfire).[28]

Now the forward-fixed weapons—cannons and machine guns—were destined to disappear from German fighters. The recently installed lateral-fixed weapons (the so-called *Schrägenmusik* machine guns), which proved of doubtful utility, also disappeared, as did the impractical electromechanically fired rear weapons, which had the designers of the twin turbine bomber Arado AR-234 studying the problem of remote-control firing and the application to aircraft of special rear-view retractable periscopes for aiming and firing at pursuing fighters.

Allied bombers had a number of fixed-forward weapons and maneuverable guns in the back, tail, and belly blisters. But the undersides of planes remained relatively unprotected because of the physical impossibility of swinging the belly and tail guns down ninety degrees. In the heroic days of dogfighting, attacking fighters preferred to fling themselves daringly and riskily up at the bellies of enemy planes. The fighters could easily have shot up the bellies of raiders and at the same time maintained a certain distance from their fire if they had had guns that shot upward.[29] Downing enemy planes "by the dozen" would have been child's play. The future—conditions permitting—seemed definitely to promise the arrival of guns with vertical and lateral fire.

Nevertheless, rocket projectiles had the defect of a relatively low initial velocity and were not nearly as accurate as projectiles fired from rifled barrels, although certain types with small stabilizers were being perfected in Stuttgart, Hillersleben, and Peenemünde (project *Pfeil,* Arrow).

Like a good Teutonic scientist Professor Hackemann had foreseen this problem too, though it was not really very serious. And so when the Allies occupied the L.F.A.'s Waffen-Erprobung W.2 at Volkenrode, they found a number of examples of 75-mm antiaircraft grenades with automatic fuses that could be fired from six-throated vertical cannons of the breechless type (*Sondergerät*) and with a firing control determined by a device sensitive to the natural electrostatic field of the huge bombers.[30]

The essential point in all these new weapons was the automatic control of firing. All the pilot had to do was fly a hundred yards beneath the bomber and the automatic firing mechanism would operate on the basis of the photoelectric, magnetic, or electrostatic principles.

Having given little encouragement during the course of tests, the first two efforts in this direction were shelved to await improvements in the apparatuses that provided the bearings.

The third type of control, coupled with a vertical cannon having multiple batteries, was very successfully tested against radio-controlled target planes at the Altenburg airfield in Thuringia. At the time of the armistice it required only a few detail improvements before being ready to send to the underground factories that were building hundreds of new fighters and their weapons. Everything had been planned with the greatest care. All contingencies had been taken into account. All . . . except the sudden breakthrough of General Patton's tanks into the Bavarian plains.

In Italy, the Gothic Line was still holding the enemy, and it held him until almost the end. But the defenses on the Oder and the bastions of the old Siegfried Line were falling at various points under the pressure of the gigantic forces that the Allies were putting in the field for the final battle.

The Remagen bridge over the Rhine, which had inexplicably remained intact, allowed the Americans to cross the Rhine in large numbers at the beginning of March. And this was the end for Germany, although certain high Nazi leaders under the influence of Dr. Goebbels' fiery fanaticism still hoped for a "last-minute miracle" with a blind faith that was close to madness.

The death of President Roosevelt had not given rise to a rupture between the Anglo-Americans and the Russians, as had been hoped. The combined land and air hammering of Germany continued, more implacable than ever.

During those apocalyptic days when Nazism was in its death throes, there appeared—only to disappear immediately among the best and longest kept secrets of one of the victors—the last and perhaps also the most amazing of all the flying machines that the Germans constructed toward the end of the war.

THE "BALL LIGHTNING" AUTOMATIC FIGHTER

Parallel with the formation of the special S.S. Air Corps, the S.S. Technical General Staff had not only espoused Marshal Göring's pressing demands for the preparation of the "decisive" fighter, but had implemented them by having all the aeronautic advances of the past two years sent to the industrial combine of the "G. Werke."

Thus the principle of the symmetrical circular aircraft was combined with direct gyroscopic stabilization; synthetic firedamp was combined with the multiple-batteried blower cannon; a gelatinous organic metallic hypercombustible was combined with the total reaction turbine; television-controlled flying was combined with vertical take-off and landing; armor that was sensitive to small-caliber projectiles and radio control that was free of enemy jamming were combined with the active blinding of enemy radar; infrared search "eyes" were combined with electrostatic weapon firing. This marked the rapid development of the *Feuerball,* which finally became a weapon.

The *Kugelblitz* (Ball Lightning), which apparently for greater safety combined the electrostatic firing device with an analogous short-wave device manufactured by the Patent-Verwertungs Gesellschaft of Salzburg, lumped together in a single compact mass the wings, tail, and fuselage of ordinary planes, but it had nothing in common with them in either form or performance. It was the first example of the "jet-lift" aircraft.[31]

After a single lucky wartime mission, the *Kugelblitz* was subsequently destroyed by technical detachments of retreating S.S. troops, and thanks to the instructions that had been given to the investigators of the T Force by the exceedingly strict British military censorship, nothing else has come out since then.

Even if ufologists do not know it or refuse to admit it, the *Kugelblitz,* older brother of the *Feuerball* antiradar device, *is the second authentic antecedent of the present-day flying saucers and it is with them*—and with the other German devices of the same family (spinning bombs, lenticular bombs, ramming fighters, and flying spheres)—*that the true history or, if you like, the "prehistory" of the UFO question begins.*

The military finale of the matter, however, goes beyond the chronicle of aeronautics and belongs to the bloody story of the forties.

After the Remagen disaster, the Nazi general staff realized that it was not possible to resist the Allies' triple-pronged offensive much longer. Desertions in the commands and the pitiless repression of real or presumed desertions of soldiers under the pressure of continuous defeats had a disastrous effect on the efficiency of the Wehrmacht. Nevertheless, they did not produce the hoped-for breakdown of the German military machine, which continued to fight the Allies on a multitude of local fronts produced by the break-up of the marginal territories of the Reich, in a series of gigantic pockets that Hitler optimistically insisted on calling fortresses. These fronts had only the most precarious communications with one another and often had absolutely no communication with general headquarters, which were partly located in the Chancellery bunker in Berlin and partly evacuated to Thuringia and to even remoter Berchtesgaden.

In spite of the propaganda that had choked the air waves during the last quarter of 1944, promising a new year studded with military triumphs, the situation in the air and on the sea was just as desperate as that on land.

Reduced to a few submarines that had survived the defeat in the Atlantic, a couple of squadrons of torpedo boats, and the large ships hidden in Norwegian fjords, for many months the German navy lay more or less inactive at anchor under air attack while awaiting the new, so-called invulnerable submarines.[32]

In the air the Luftwaffe was being implacably destroyed, despite the new rocket and turbine planes, which were overwhelmed by the fire power and sheer numbers of the adversary. At dawn on January 1, 1945, the disastrous *Bodenplatte Unternehmen* (Operation Tile) that Hitler wanted as a support for the Ardennes offensive got under way. In this operation nine hundred planes—now an enormous number for the Germans—were thrown against the Allied airfields in the Dutch-Belgian sector. Three hundred sixty-four of them did not return to their bases, thus endangering the success of the subsequent operations. After that unlucky enterprise, the appearances of the Luftwaffe became even rarer because of the progressive breakup of the various combat units, which were nailed to the ground both by enemy air attacks and by the rapid depletion of their fuel supplies.

Toward the beginning of spring most of the German airfields were practically shut down. In view of the excellent results obtained by the dispersion of their industries, the Germans *in extremis* began to disperse the planes that were still left on their surviving airfields. A number of improvised airfields were set up in the thick pine forests of the Schwäbischerwald and the Bubesheimerwald which used nearby stretches of hastily camouflaged highway as dangerous airstrips. It was from one of these improvised fields that the first *Kugelblitz* fight er took off on its fantastic flight.

At the eastern tip of the ephemeral defensive arc set up as advanced protection for the Austro-Bavarian bastion, the great underground industrial complex of Kahla, in Thuringia, was transformed into a sort of dry-land aircraft carrier. The long cement strip of the ridge on the thickly forested summit served as the runway for the immediate testing of the prototypes that were being produced inside the hill.[33]

As the military situation worsened the weather improved, so that new supplies of cement and tracks arrived, along with additional prisoners being evacuated from the north. Work on the U aerodromes, which had meantime come under the complete control of the S.S., was speeded up to a totally inhuman pace. Fourteen-hour work days, seven days a week, a five-mile daily walk to reach the work sites—such was the killing way of life of the slave workers. Naturally, the mortality rate soared. But this was of no concern to the promoters of the enterprise, whose only torments were caused by the obvious consolidation of the Allied forces on the western borders of Bavaria.

When the sudden advance of General Patton's army interrupted the work, the first airfield was already three-quarters finished. The other two were only half completed, and no important installations or plans were found among the abandoned constructions because of the final, rapid evacuation of the technical experts and the most skilled workers to the heart of the Alpine Redoubt.[34]

THE END OF THE ALPINE REDOUBT

Every attempt to push General Bradley's American troops back over the Rhine failed. On March 14, 1945, at the end of one of Hitler's usual military conferences and while the usual authorized spokesman was proclaiming that new weapons would soon be thrown into the battle, the Führer called a meeting of some high S.S. officers, the Gauleiters of the six southern provinces and all the generals who were still faithful to him. He ordered them to see at once to the immediate preparation of the Alpine Redoubt—time: not more than two weeks!

We have no record of the reactions of those present to that insane order. But we may assume that there were no objections, each one probably having already decided for himself the best way to save himself, outside and, if necessary, even against the Führer's orders.

According to certain information that the British picked up immediately after the war, the revival of interest in the Redoubt came about because a few days earlier artillery Colonel Hans von Schmückert had declared to Hitler that he believed it was possible to bring the first grenades containing 750 grams of “disintegrating explosive” under experiment in Austria to completion within a few months at the latest. If this matter, as was to be expected, came to the attention of the Allied command, they would be forced to throw all their reserves into the fight in order to isolate Austria and Bavaria and thus avert that danger.[35]

In the feverish search for the most extreme solutions to the retreat, the concept of isolated “fortresses” defended to the last man was extended to the principal cities of East Prussia and Silesia (Königsberg, Danzig, Breslau, and still others), condemning them to utter devastation in the hope of temporarily holding up the onrushing Soviet advance.

To complete the gloomy picture it should be remembered that on March 19 Hitler ordered the Gauleiters of the regions about to be invaded to carry out the criminal “scorched-earth” policy. The idea was to hamstring the occupying troops by methodically destroying not only military but industrial and urban installations with no regard for the most elementary requirements for survival of the civilian population. The order was subsequently revoked through the firm opposition of Speer.

The movement of the retreating troops became more and more difficult, however, because of the devastation of the German heartland by the Allied bombers. Whole units were wiped out in the big and little “pockets” that were created by the irresistible thrusts of Allied armor, galvanized by the foretaste of the German collapse. And the possibility of replacing all these losses, which was already minimal in January, disappeared entirely.

On March 27, S.S. Gruppenführer Kammler returned to the Berlin bunker after a long trip to Austria and the Bavarian Alps, where he had inspected the preparations for the Redoubt which had begun in February but had been carried out slowly because of the lack of specific orders. By questioning the military and scientific authorities in Austria who were directing the preparation of the “secret weapons” that had been chosen for the final resistance, he had learned from Commandant Petschek that the subatomic explosives could not be ready before the end of 1945.[36]

Although the plan for the Alpine Redoubt was by now practically unrealizable, in obedience to orders Himmler named S.S. Obergruppenführer Kaltenbrunner head of security police for southern Germany, and sent him to Innsbruck to organize the surviving S.S. forces that were streaming in. Himmler did not, however, trust Kaltenbrunner, fearing that he might make secret advances to the Anglo-Americans for a separate peace. He appointed S.S. Obergruppenführer Gottlob Berger as Kaltenbrunner's assistant—officially, but in reality to report on Kaltenbrunner's moves.

Among the other "special deputies" was the celebrated Colonel Skorzeny, the man of desperate situations, personally named by the Führer to the command of the special "Alpine Defense Corps," which, of course, had still to be formed.[37]

In April the collapse of German military and political institutions took on a catastrophic rhythm. The myth of the Alpine Redoubt was now only a faded memory to the bigwigs of the regime, or a pretext for deserting the dangerous "redoubt" of Berlin.

The final, irreparable reverse began on April 13, with the fall of Vienna. On the sixteenth the Americans took Nuremberg and headed toward Munich and Bavaria. On the eighteenth General Model's Army Group B, trapped and decimated in the giant Ruhr pocket, surrendered after a valiant eighteen-day struggle, leaving the Americans with 325,000 prisoners, including thirty generals. The armored divisions of General Bradley poured through that two-hundred-mile gap in the German defenses into the heart of Germany, driving toward Thuringia and the Harz.[38]

On April 25, advanced Russian and American patrols met at Torgau on the Elbe and Germany was cut in two.

Contrary to previously established plans, Hitler did not leave Berlin on April 20 to assume command of the Alpine Redoubt.[39] It seems that Goebbels and Bormann convinced him that Berlin was "the only position between the Elbe and the Oder that was really threatened by the Soviet advance and from which the counteroffensive to ease the Russian pressure would have to be mounted"! A magnificent whim that closed to Hitler the only remaining escape—to the tranquillity of the

Tyrol or to General Schoerner's Army Group strongly entrenched in the Boemerwald.

The last days of Hitler and of the Third Reich—masterfully pieced together and described by Major Trevor-Roper of the British Intelligence Service—are the quintessence of the farce, drama, tragedy, and chaos that culminated in Hitler's pistol shot and in the general surrender of the surviving German forces.[40]

The Alpine Fortress, then, took no military part in the war. It was overcome by the very events that had given rise to it. But its embryonic existence and the great mass of secrets that had been moved there in the first quarter of 1945 nevertheless engaged an army of expert investigators briefed by qualified bureaus of the various national secret services.

Interrogations of officials and designers, careful searches among the rubble of factories bombed by the Allies or mined by retreating S.S. units, in natural and artificial caverns, abandoned mines, the cellars of old castles and family homes, unused railway tunnels, river and lake beds, recently cut wooded areas, ruined churches and schools, new masonry, damaged cemeteries—nothing escaped the practiced eyes of the investigators. For the remainder of 1945 and much of 1946 tons and tons of blueprints, company papers, lists of researchers, laboratory models, memoranda, reports and notes that covered every sector of the war industry came pouring out of thousands of unlikely hiding places.

In concluding a review of German secrets that fell into American hands, Colonel D. L. Putt, assistant commanding officer for the Technical Information Service of the Allied Military Government, frankly stated in July 1946 that at the end of the war, despite the heavy defeat, German scientists and technical experts had left behind at Peenemünde, Brunswick, Wiener Neustadt, and elsewhere the milestones of new aeronautical developments and future air wars.

A self-evident truth (or a discouraging prospect) that justified the later development of certain unknown or still little known stages in aeronautical technology that were reached between the beginning of the prewar period and the end of the postwar period, and knowledge of which is indispensable in order to solve the mystery of the UFOs.

NOTES

1. Or perhaps in the entourage of the little known "secessionist government" of France formed by Jacques Doriot at Mainau or Lake Constance? This phantom government was supported by Himmler and Goebbels in opposition to De Brinon's "legitimate" collaborationist government, which moved to Sigmaringen after the liberation of Paris. Because of its unconditional support of S.S. policies, it enjoyed their special protection and it was confidently informed of secrets that even German military higher-ups were denied knowledge of.

2. See Professor Gianfranco Bianchi's 1962 observation after he had completed his historical research on the period running from July 25, 1943 (the date of Mussolini's downfall) to May 8, 1945: "The lawyer Paolo Porta, who was the Republican Fascist Party secretary for the province of Como and inspector of the Black Brigades in Lombardy, used Adolfo Belgeri, the head of the Political Investigation Office of the R.F.P. in Como, as a confidential courier to deliver secret political and military information concerning the Italo-Swiss frontier and internal Swiss matters to Mussolini at Gargnano on Lake Garda. A secret intelligence service had been set up on Swiss soil by the Italian Social Republic, which was not legally recognized by the Berne government."

3. This initial error had been prompted by examination of Dr. Dräger's plan for the construction of a diesel engine fueled with liquid oxygen for powering underwater craft that Dräger had first sketched out in 1936. A prototype was built by the Kreislaufbetrieb-Motor D.W. In 1943 the prototype was completed at the Forschungsinstitut für Kraftfahrt und Fahrzeugmotoren (F.F.K.F.) of Stuttgart-Untertürkheim with the collaboration of Professor Kamm and Dr. Ernst. Dubbed the Oxygen Recycle System by the Anglo-American investigators, the design was completely abandoned in favor of the Walter turbine functioning on hydrogen peroxide. The agents of the T Force Camp at Bad Gandersheim who examined the documents found in the G Werke factories—which were under the

technical supervision of the Henschel and Zeppelin firms and the administration of the S.S. Technical General Staff—imagined therefore that it was a recent resumption of those researches along new lines, *i.e.,* the laying down of a "compound" type of engine (diesel plus turbine).

4. G. Ventura, *Il radioplano ad aria liquida* (private communication to the author). The initial mistake had been further compounded by the detail that certain special turbine blades —the use of which was unknown to the German suppliers themselves and which in the specifications were required to have "highly polished surfaces"—were ordered from Kuhl, Kopp, and Kausch A.G. of Frankenthal, a firm well known for its working ties with the Kriegsmarine. See Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee, *Visit to the Ludwigshafen-Mannheim Area: Torpedoes, Submarines and Naval Constructions* (Report No. XXX-44, London, H.M.S.O., 1945). In the hurried hunt for the whereabouts of the secret, T Unit agents interrogated the French scientist Georges Claude, the inventor of industrial processes for manufacturing liquid air, lengthily but apparently unsuccessfully. He was arrested in the autumn of 1944 at Nancy and released the following year. The charge was that he had collaborated with the Germans in the production and handling of liquid oxygen, which was actually used on a very large scale by the various types of German rocket engines. The first real clues were shortly afterward provided by the designs of a special pump of clearly aeronautical use found in the design studio of a subcontractor attached to the B.M.W. company in Allach that supplied components for the *Vergeltung* antiaircraft rocket. The factory of the subcontractor remained in a cavern of Wittringen in the district of Saarbrücken after the B.M.W. complex was later moved to the east. Perhaps some slight trace of that revolutionary type of aircraft (akin to the *Feuerball*) is to be found in the article "Deflex-Reaction Propulsion" (*Flight*, London, September 13, 1945), in which a certain Mr. F. Umpleby, perhaps having mistakenly interpreted the information he had received, expounded a theory concerning the improvement of jet engines that was based on faulty premises. His reply to the criticisms

that immediately flowed in from all sides (see *Flight,* October 18, 1945) ended with the following declaration: "The rocket referred to is, I suppose, the Oberth, a number of which were built and tested in Germany. They worked well but nothing much seems to be known about them. The writer has given these rockets some thought and investigation, and may give some results on the investigations later, if they should be of sufficient interest." But Umpleby did not, as he promised, publish the results of his investigations on those special and still unknown German "rockets."

5. These experiments led other powers to investigate what immediately seemed to be a promising defense principle. It is known, for example, that in 1937–1938 the Americans secretly carried out tests with "clouds of metallic dust" that was so fine as to be almost invisible but was highly abrasive and designed to speed up the natural wear and tear on engines. The tests apparently were unsuccessful. In addition, the United States also experimented with "poison curtains" to be spread in the air in order to create a temporary biological barrier against invading planes. This, too, proved unsuccessful.

6. See S. A. Goudsmit, *Alsos* (New York, Schuman, 1947), pp. 50–65.

7. This discovery led Gold to propose to the Luftwaffe an antiaircraft rocket loaded with vaporizable myrol, while another L.F.A. expert, Dr. Zeumer, concluded a number of successful tests with an antitank bomb like the one designed for the Heereswaffenamt. Indeed, the Heereswaffenamt immediately ordered a long series of tests which were to be carried out at the Spandau artillery range until the beginning of 1945. The experiments were not carried out because Spandau had to be evacuated under the threat of the Soviet advance. Myrol, which was manufactured on an industrial scale by the Schmidding firm at Bodenbach, was a mixture of methylnitrate (75 percent) and methanol (25 percent) extracted by direct nitration from liquid methanol. See Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee, *Luftfahrtforschungsanstalt "Her-*

mann Göring," *Volkenrode, Brunswick* (Report No. XXV-2, London, H.M.S.O., March 1946), p. 14.

8. *Cf. "Quelques armes et engins bizarres," L'Armée Française* (III, 26, Paris, May 1948), pp. 3–6.

9. See Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee, *Artillery Experimental Range: Hillersleben* (Report No. XXVIII-2, London, H.M.S.O., 1945), appendices 1 and 2, pp. 15 and 15A.

10. Conceptually related to the well-known flame-throwers, this weapon had already been carefully considered by the British from different and perhaps more rational constructional and operational approaches. Immediately after the war, Sir Geoffrey Lloyd made known certain details of the so-called "belt of fire," one of the secret weapons the British had excogitated in June 1940 to discourage the Germans from attempting an invasion of England. Still too inadequately armed to repel an invasion carried out by the means and methods of the time, the British possessed large stores of gasoline. Lloyd, who was high in the Fuels and Energy Ministry, believed correctly that with its terrible inhibitory power, fire could be transformed into a valid weapon of retreat. He approached Lord Hankey with his plan. Before the war Hankey had conducted experiments in passive defense with curtains of fire, taking off from the technique suggested by what he had read about the mysterious "Greek fire" in Gibbon's *Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire.* In June 1940 the first tests were made on the beach at Dumpton with a rudimentary catapult that hurled large drums of burning oil out to sea. These missiles (which later went under the code name of "Fougasses") were the beginning of "a frightful system of flame-throwers that was used not only to cause fire on the surface of the sea by means of the catapulted containers, underwater conduits and powerful jets of flame but also to defend strategic and tactical positions on the coastal hinterland. A chemical substance based on calcium that ignited on contact with water was pumped into the gasoline piping laid on the sea floor along with the fuel, thus

setting fire to the huge floating slick . . . special flame-throwing catapults mounted on ships hurled jets of fire 150 feet in the air against the dive bombers. This last was the only 'flame weapon' actually used against the enemy. The others never had a chance to see action." In fact, the Germans did not attempt an invasion for a number of reasons, not the least of which was fear of these deadly defenses after one test company made up of invasion troops dressed in asbestos clothing (which proved defective) ventured into a large oil slick that was set afire off the coast of France. Almost the entire company met a horrible end.

11. See Col. L. E. Simon, "Research in the Berchtesgaden Area," *German Scientific Establishments* (Report 19,849, New York, Mapleton House Publications, 1947), pp. 153–163.

12. See Hans Fritsche, *Hier Spricht Hans Fritsche,* 1948. On the subject of German secret weapons, the former political editor of Radio Berlin wrote: "It is in any case absolutely true that if the miracle weapons did not exist, we did, however, have new types of weapons that were not quickly enough—and in some cases were not at all—put into operation. I am not talking about the new antiaircraft homing weapons, or about the new explosive 'butardin,' which was discovered by accident after an explosion in the Ludwigshafen factory and which produced extensive annihilating explosions among close bombing formations. Both had still to be perfected [at the time of the German surrender]."

13. The choice of ethylene was motivated by the fact that this hydrocarbon possesses the very advantageous property of requiring a volume of air for combustion greater than that required by any other gaseous combustible.

14. Indeed, it seems that it was intended to include appropriate quantities of highly detonative substances, such as octane (C_8H_{18}), and others that were supposed to speed up the firing of the cloud in its final expansion, such as cetane ($C_{16}H_{34}$), both substances belonging to the same series of the fundamental components of methane.

15. See Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee, *Development of Ceramics Materials for Use in Turbine Blades* (Report No. XXV-9, London, H.M.S.O., 1945), p. 13.

16. The history of the Zippermeyer system is not officially known. It seems, nevertheless, that at the beginning of 1945 tests of various types of grenades of somewhat complex content were being prepared. In one of these the explosive charge was thoroughly mixed with coal dust pressed into a very friable and porous agglomerate, whose interstices were loaded with a liquefied explosive gas. The "coal sponge"—a special type of *Schaumkohle* manufactured by the Heinrich Schmitt Werke K.G. of Frankfurt-am-Main and evacuated to Berchtesgaden—thus acted as a stabilizer, reducing the danger of handling the projectiles. It is said that from the beginning of 1944 Hitler followed these researches with particular interest, in the absurd hope of soon being able to use a powerful and regenerated flak in the passive defense of the Reich and thus supplant the fighter arm of the Luftwaffe that had so disappointed him because of Göring's empty promises.

17. See Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee, *Radar and Controlled Missiles: Paris Area* (Report No. I/1, London, H.M.S.O., October 1944), p. 63.

18. See Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee, *German Research and Development in the Radio Field: Lyon Area* (Report No. XI-7, London, H.M.S.O., November 19, 1944), p. 31.

19. See British Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee, *Photo-Surfaces: A Report on German Developments of Photocells, Electron Multipliers and Television Pick-up Tubes* (Final Report No. 530, London, H.M.S.O., 1946).

20. See Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee, *Stassfurter Rundfunk: Stassfurt* (Report No. XXXII-88, London, H.M.S.O., 1945); or B.16: "Works of the High Frequency

Department D.F.S. (1939–1945)" in Deutsche Forschungsanstalt für Segelflug (pp. 107–115), Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee Report No. XXXII-66 (London, 1945).

21. See British Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee, *Television Development and Application in Germany,* Final Report No. 867 (London, H.M.S.O., 1946), p. 20; and Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee Investigator's Preliminary Report, *Draft Report on Investigation at Taufkirchen,* pp. 53–56 of the Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee Report No. XXXI-38, *The I.T.T., Siemens and Robert Bosch Organizations* (London, H.M.S.O., 1945).

22. See Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee, *Institut für Physikalische Forschung: Neu Drossenfeld,* Report No. XXVIII-41 (London, H.M.S.O., 1945), p. 13.

23. Shortly afterward the starting date for series production was reexamined and set for May 1945—a theoretical date, since the armistice overtook these plans. The only complete working models were later found at the experimental center of Lofer, in the Tyrol, which had functioned as the last center for the collection of new antiaircraft inventions.

24. In fact, the first antiaircraft salvo of "Butterflies"—to which Goebbels gave *in extremis* the propagandistic denomination of V-3 (*i.e.,* "Reprisal Weapon No. 3"), though it was not a true reprisal weapon but a purely defensive device—was launched with deadly effect on the Allied raiders exactly one week before the Nazi collapse. Assembly-line production of the rocket had been set up to furnish 3000 units a month, beginning in November 1945.

25. The Reimahg-Bau G.m.b.H. was a recently formed aeronautical company located underground in Kahla, in Thuringia, which resulted from the forced merger of the Gustloff Werke and Ago Flugzeugewerke arranged by Gauleiter Sauckel, one of Göring's creatures, who, in order to ingratiate himself even

more with his powerful protector, had thought it wise to give the new firm that barbaric name made up of the first letters of *Re*ich M*a*rshal *H*ermann *G*öring. If the Allies had given it the time to get fully under way, the new company by itself would undoubtedly have put several thousand jet planes in action. Most would have been the Heinkel HE-162 *Volksjäger,* the ill-starred "People's Fighter," which by means of a massive "air conscription" of very young pilots was planned to sweep every enemy plane from the skies of Germany. General Galland wrote apropos of this plane: "Incredible schedules were fixed, astronomical production figures were planned. Göring himself became a victim of the national frenzy with which the [People's Fighter] had infested almost everyone connected with air defense." In the decisive meeting that took place at Rastenburg on September 23, 1944, Göring cried, "Hundreds! Thousands . . . Until the enemy has been chased back beyond the borders of Germany!" Galland continues: "On December 6, 1944, the HE-162 flew for the first time. A few days later—far too soon—it was displayed to a large circle of interested experts at Vienna-Schwechat. . . . The aircraft started to disintegrate in the air. . . . In March 1945 the planes of the first series were ready. Until the end of the war 200 were produced." All this uselessly delayed still further the production of the ME-262 fighter, opening thereby a new and mortal gap in the already depleted German defenses. Some years before—on November 17, 1942, to be exact—Colonel General Ernst Udet, the director of aircraft construction, had committed suicide after a long controversy with Göring, Hitler, and the Oberkommando on the duties of the Luftwaffe. "Fighters, fighters and more fighters. This is what we absolutely must have. Thousands of fighters!" he had publicly declared just before he killed himself. By echoing that fatal refrain, Göring implicitly criticized his whole policy during the war years, but by then it was too late to do anything about it.

26. See Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee, *Institutes of the Bevollmächtigter für Hochfrequenz-Forschung* (Report No. XXXI-37, London, H.M.S.O., 1945), p. 214.

27. Fields developed by the electrical charges that accumulate on aircraft surfaces and that are the product partly of the process of motive combustion and partly of aerodynamic friction (the triboelectric effect), or that are induced by the strong electrical charges present in the clouds. These latter, indeed, interfered with the perfecting of the *Kuhglocke* fuse seriously enough to cause the project to be interrupted at the beginning of 1945 and a special cycle of ancillary researches on atmospheric electricity to be undertaken.

28. In March 1945, while experimenting with this device mounted on the only model of the ME-262 jet fighter modified to take an oblique-firing Spitfire in the fuselage (the ME-262-D), Second Lieutenant Fritz Kelb shot down seven American four-engined bombers in a single action over Saxony. The Spitfire had been aimed upward and inclined about twenty degrees forward, and its fire power totaled twelve SG-500 rockets of 50 mm.

29. In the spring of 1946 the noted aviation journal *Flugwehr und Technik,* discussing the development of the German night fighter arm during the Second World War, wrote apropos of vertical fire: "[In addition to "tactical radar"] another decisive innovation in the equipping of the night fighters was the installation of oblique armament. Two 20-mm cannons were set in the fuselage behind the pilot's cabin in a more or less vertical position, so that when flying under the target the pilot could get the plane in his vertical sights (a reflex type) and fire upon the largest surface that the bomber presented. If he succeeded in getting under the plane without being observed, he had to worry only about not getting hit by metal fragments blasted off by the explosion of the projectiles. Under the same conditions, lateral attack proved almost impossible because the machine guns in the back and belly turrets of the big bombers could be trained on the attacker with a favorable angle of fire. The vertical weapons were first tried in actual flight in spring 1944, with a pair of rapid-fire cannons mounted on the ME-110 twin-engined heavy night fighters in addition to their normal armament. The test pilot of one of these planes

deserted, landed at the military airport of Dübendorf, near Zurich, on April g, 1944, and was interned by the Swiss. Fearing that the Allies might get their hands on its still secret devices (the modified 'Lichtenstein' Fu-G-220 radar and two 30-mm vertical cannons), Hitler ordered Oberführer S.S. Otto Skorzeny to organize a raid against the Swiss airport and destroy the plane. In order to forestall the German operation, which could have had serious consequences for Switzerland as well as for Germany herself, the Swiss themselves destroyed the plane in accordance with a secret agreement between Gruppenführer S.S. Schellenberg and Brigadier General Masson, the head of the Swiss secret service. As a *quid pro quo,* the agreement stipulated the sale to the Swiss air force of twelve ME-109 fighters."

30. See British Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee, *Weapons Section of the L.F.A., Volkenrode* (Final Report No. 61, London, H.M.S.O., 1946).

31. It seems that the new fighter was also called the *Vergeltung* by the technicians who were preparing it. However, this second designation is strongly disputed, since at the same time the B.M.W. factories were constructing a huge antiaircraft rocket with the same name (Revenge).

32. See J. Nobecourt, *op. cit.:* "The final readying of the secret weapons coincided with the period of counteroffensive plans [on the Western Front], and Hitler hoped, not without reason, that quickly getting secret production under way would give him the means once again to reverse the outcome of the conflict. A few months would have been enough. They could have been gained by retaking Antwerp and dividing the Anglo-American front and by launching a new battle of France to seize the Channel coast—precisely the objectives that were assigned to the Ardennes counteroffensive. In fact, in autumn 1944 the means whereby the reversal of the situation could be effected was already being prepared in German arsenals. The U-XXI submarines, capable of remaining underwater for a long time at great depths and with a speed of sixteen knots,

were already in the slips of the shipyards the year before. And the U-XXIII was much smaller, more treacherous and more maneuverable. In addition, the ME-262 jet fighters and various types of antiaircraft and artillery rockets were already a reality. All these weapons would soon be ready for a series of unexpected and concentrated military operations highly dangerous to the Allies. One hundred and twenty U-XXI and sixty-one U-XXIII submarines were about to be launched shortly before the armistice and the British found several miles of railway cars at Bremen filled with various bits and pieces (manufactured in factories in Silesia) for the assembly of still other submarines. They had, however, arrived a year too late, or perhaps only three months too late, to be used in large formations in the Atlantic and in the Channel that would have seriously compromised Allied supply lines in the crucial winter of 1944–1945"

33. See Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee, *Underground Factories in Central Germany* (Report No. XXXII-17, London, H.M.S.O.), pp. 95–109. A secondary but nevertheless significant example of the astonishing demands made on German industry in the prosecution of the war, despite the catastrophic worsening of the military situation, is offered by the fact that only forty-eight days before the surrender a general meeting on air weaponry was called for March 20 at Bad Eilsen. This was the last of a long series of such meetings, and the technical authorities of the Luftwaffe and the chief designers of Focke-Wulf, Arado, Dornier, Gothaer-Waggonfabrik, Junkers, Horten, and Blohm-Voss were all present. The plans of these firms for the urgent building of a heavy supersonic fighter were examined and discussed at the meeting. This was to be an all-weather night fighter of twelve tons, designed to take the latest types of jet engines and the new seven-barreled machine guns, which had been devised in order to reduce to a fraction of a second the maximum time of "ballistic contact" necessary for an effective enemy hit.

34. In 1949 the American occupation troops emptied the munitions dumps. The year before, an unprecedented—was it

spontaneous?—invasion of tree-killing hymenoptera had literally cut the local forest to the ground, thus revealing all the constructions the Germans had prepared. The Americans did not, however, demolish the U-airfields, since that would have required a quantity of explosive equal to a nuclear explosion. Indeed, the U.S. Air Force command declared at the time that if the Nazis had begun the work only a few months before, the course of the European war would have immediately come to a halt and "in all probability the first atomic bomb would have exploded on the airfields around Landsberg instead of on Hiroshima." In fact, no type of demolition bomb known at the time—not even the monster British "Earthquake Bomb" of 22,000 pounds—would have been able to blast apart that massive concrete armor.

35. This was, perhaps, a secondary application of the results furnished by the research originally conducted at Sigmaringen on radioactive isotopes of the chemical element 85, and it would seem that the grenades were a later development of the Zippermeyer system in so far as it was attempted to mix—with safety for the workers—ordinary molecular explosives, both solid and gaseous, with substances that were highly radioactive over a short period, in order to create, by long-range artillery fire, impassable barrages in front of the principal Allied objectives.

36. In fact, the British secret service had masterfully caused the Nazi attempts to produce "radioactive gases" for the V-6 reprisal weapon to fail completely.

37. After a private exploratory thrust as far as Vienna just before the Soviet attack, Skorzeny reached the new headquarters for his special troops in the environs of Radstadt, in the Salzburg Alps. Inspecting the area, he noted that the local preparations for the famous Redoubt were proceeding sluggishly and, in the circumstances, would require a few more months at the most optimistic guess. Delicate and expensive machinery had been stored for some time in caves and other makeshift hiding places while waiting for their final positions to be made ready. The arsenals dug out of the mountains were empty, the

storerooms still without equipment. From a quick evaluation it was learned that the essential fuel reserves in the gigantic empty or partly empty buried fuel tanks did not total more than a thousand barrels. To have insisted on carrying out Hitler's plans for a defense to the last man would have been pure insanity. Ten days later, the Americans established their headquarters at Kitzbühel.

38. *Cf.* Hoettl, *op. cit.:* "After Field Marshal Model capitulated in the Ruhr basin, the Americans closely interrogated the officers of the captured General Staff in front of a large wall map of the presumed Alpine Redoubt, noting with astonishment that some of the prisoners were unaware of the existence of such a defensive plan and that some even refused to take it seriously." This is, nevertheless, a very weak argument, for it was common knowledge that the German armies in the Ruhr —or rather, as Hitler loved to call it, the Ruhr Redoubt—had orders to prevent or at least slow up as much as possible the Anglo-American penetration of German territory, by fighting, if necessary, to the last man. Therefore there were no pre-established plans for a strategic withdrawal of these units, at least not until the very end, when there was absolutely no possibility of effecting it.

39. And yet on April 10 Hitler had clearly shown his inclination to move to the south of the country, sending the bulk of his household personnel to Berchtesgaden to get his villa, the Berghof, which had been transformed into a fortified mountain refuge, in functioning order. This unexpected decision did not pass unnoticed by British secret agents. The Berghof had already been bombed in sporadic attacks, but on April 26 a heavy R.A.F. raid destroyed it completely. Besides, it must be presumed that Hitler was well aware that preparations for continued resistance in the alpine zone had not got beyond the embryonic stage, since he was, after all, one of the principal people responsible for the extremely indecisive prosecution of the plan. His attitude was, perhaps, influenced by his bitter disappointment in the failure of "his" counteroffensive in the Ardennes and his absurd hope that the Allies would squabble

and have a falling-out. In addition, with the surrender of the army groups in Italy (April 27, 1945) the heart and main source of troops for the Redoubt had practically disappeared. The transfer of various high commands to the Tyrol (Kesselring settled in at Alm on April 20 and General Jodl went to the nearby village of Niedersill with the remnants of the O.K.W.) was only a contingent formality for treating with the Anglo-Americans from a territory that was still nominally German and free. Kesselring sums up his recollections of those anxious days in his memoirs in the following passage: "Facing our fifty-five divisions, whose effectives were reduced to brigade or regiment strength, and ill-equipped and worse armed, were at least eighty-five powerful full-strength divisions abundantly supplied with everything they needed, not to mention that the Luftwaffe had been virtually nonexistent for several months. And the Alpine Redoubt? A great deal has been written about it, but in general it is all nonsense. Even the most essential thing for making it a reality was lacking: mountain troops. In such conditions how would it have been possible to resist the enemy's enormous pressure for any length of time? At the most, it was an attempt to gain time in order to avoid the worst, in other words that the bulk of the Wehrmacht on the Eastern Front should fall prisoner to the Russians. This objective was only partly achieved, but it did keep about half a million German soldiers out of Siberia. The sole military action in the area of the defunct Redoubt (and it was defunct before it was born) was in Villach on May 6, where a few regiments of the XXIV S.S. Alpine Division, the *Karstjäger,* tried to slow up the advance of the Eighth Army into Austrian territory after the surrender of Army Group South in Italy."

40. See H. R. Trevor-Roper, *The Last Days of Hitler* (London, 1945), p. 232.

CHAPTER 6

The Advent of "Suction Aircraft"

Symptomatically, when the war ended the Foo Fighters disappeared from the skies of a conquered and dismembered Germany. And no one was interested in investigating the "mystery" any longer, for the occupying powers had quite different duties to assign to their air force technicians.

During the second half of 1945 the Russians, Americans, and French quickly set to work dismantling and sending home as part of their share of war reparations the best German scientific equipment—especially their very modern wind tunnels, which could already produce speeds well above that of sound.

The British, too, sent back aeronautical equipment to be installed in the experimental center they were building at Bedford and in the complementary research centers in Australia and

Canada that were occasionally mentioned in the British press with a certain air of mystery and with predictions of "a brilliant future" for them.

Nevertheless, at times the British preferred to have studies of immediate practical interest that had been interrupted by the sudden ending of the war in Germany completed by German technicians themselves (under strict military supervision, as in Darmstadt and Goettingen, for example) and then dismantle the plants and transfer the research staff to England to carry out the industrial application of the projects.[1]

In order to continue research on secret weapons, especially on those they had captured and retained exclusively without their allies' having hard data on them, teams of specialists belonging to the Ministry of Aircraft Production (M.A.P.) ranged up and down western Germany and Austria, filling in the picture of the state of development the Germans had reached in supersonic aircraft and guided missiles. In addition, they saw to it that inventions and documents of the highest interest that had already been sequestered and safely set aside by the T men—who followed on the heels of attacking troops and acted on detailed information supplied by the virtually omnipresent secret agent—were sent back home to England. This traffic had to be carried on with a certain amount of secrecy, to avoid regrettable conflicts over rights and authorities with other occupying powers of the Reich.

Let it be said at once that from this point of view the British were especially favored by the division of Germany into zones of military occupation. In fact, their zone extended from the Dutch frontier to Prussia and centered on the great port of Hamburg. In Austria it included a large part of the eastern alpine massif and therefore enjoyed direct access to the port of Trieste.

The importance of holding well-equipped and efficient ports in the wreckage of the immediate postwar period led the Americans to carve the enclave of Bremen out of the British Zone and to ask the Belgian authorities for the use of the port of Antwerp. They used these ports for repatriating troops being demobilized, supplying those that were remaining to occupy Germany, and sending home a number of V-2 rocket bombs—found intact in the underground factories in Saxony—together with thousands of cases containing tons of important documents taken from the files of industrial firms and military commands.

The American press never played up these operations, which in themselves were not very interesting to the general public. The British press was absolutely mum on them, for the Transport Service was discreetly controlled by a special section of Intelligence, which distributed material and documents to Britain, Canada, and Australia, according to the instructions it received, by falsifying the declarations of the contents of the cases that were shipped.

CONCERNING SECRET SERVICES AND OTHER MATTERS

Since the beginning of spring 1944 the British Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee (B.I.O.S.) had been compiling lists of experts to be included in the various investigatory teams, so that every sector of enemy technology would be covered.

One of these teams included professors Ben Lockspeiser and W. J. Richards, Dr. S. H. Hollingdale, and Captain A. D. Green. It was concerned with "Pioneering inventions, missiles and rocket and turbine aircraft."

T. A. Taylor and M. A. Wheeler—also from the Ministry of Aircraft Production—formed part of another team that was chiefly searching for thermorefractive materials for gas turbines.

One team, described as being "of a high scientific level," remained in the Rhine Palatinate in the French Zone for a long time. It was believed that Dr. Ernst Westermann, former director of the F.D.R.P. institutes of Speyer and Saarbrucken, was in the area and could furnish information on the activity of the Fireballs.

In general, the experts on the various teams (there were also mixed Anglo-American and Anglo-Canadian teams) were able to put their finger unhesitatingly on the objectives to be "explored." Considering that the state of war had been ended for only a short time, how was it possible to obtain such accurate information in spite of the rigid barriers set up by the Nazis?

On the Allied side, the undisputed master in the European sector was the British secret service, flanked by the French Deuxième Bureau, which, however, was already in clear decline in 1939, in both its cadres and its activity, because of political interference. Before the war, the Soviet secret service had mainly functioned as a political police force. And the American O.S.S., formed in 1942, had as its principal assignment the countries of the Far East threatened by or involved in Japanese expansionism. No wonder then that the British succeeded in getting the lion's share in the secret division of German scientific booty, beating their allied adversaries in speed and accuracy.

Through various secret sources (aerial photographic reconnaissance, Jewish refugee scientists, favors from neutrals, espionage checks on German deliveries of gasoline to government institutes and military centers, and so on) British intelligence had been aware ever since the end of 1941 that the Germans were working on large flying bombs and on processes to release atomic energy. Knowledge that the Nazis were pressing the Vichy Government to have French industry supply certain synthetic resins particularly resistant to heat and acids, were increasing the production of liquefied gases in France, and were designing ultralight pumps gave further cause for concern.

The British secret service then got the bright idea that it would be possible to find out which German institutes and industries were engaged in avant-garde research and to keep track of them indirectly by selling advanced products to the Germans. At the opportune moment, large formations of bombers could keep those same products—now transformed into deadly weapons—from being used against the Allies. . . .

A dummy corporation called Omnium Société Française des Produits Synthétiques enabled the British to weave a tight network of specialized informers throughout German-occupied Europe. Very soon information began to flow into the London offices of the Intelligence Service, where a large map of "special objectives" was gradually being filled in. One by one, these objectives were to receive the attentions of R.A.F. bombers, the Commandos, the T Men, and, when the guns fell silent, the teams from M.A.P. and other technically oriented ministries.[2]

One invaluable contribution to the completion of that map was finally furnished when certain S.S. files were captured.

At the beginning of May 1945 Himmler had moved his general headquarters to Flensburg, near the Danish frontier, once again offering secretly and unsuccessfully to surrender all the German forces on the Western Front in order to be in a better position to oppose the Russian advance in the east. When he saw there was no hope that his crimes would be condoned, and well aware that he was a "war criminal," Himmler fled. By pure accident he fell into the hands of the British. While this diabolic personage was dying from the vial of poison he had bit into, the officials of his disbanded entourage were telling Intelligence Service agents the location of various hiding places in Germany where the most important or most compromising documents were secreted. And so the hunt was on for both the criminals of the Gestapo and the most jealously guarded secrets of German technology.

CHAIN RESIGNATIONS

In the meantime a radical political change was taking place in England as a popular reaction to the burdens of the long war. The elections brought the Labour Party to power. Consequently a small but perfectly legal and democratic political revolution produced by opposing political and economic ideas was added to the technological revolution that had already begun as a result of the sudden advent of jet propulsion and, even more important, nuclear energy.

Resignations, replacements, and changes quickly altered the physiognomy of government circles in the United Kingdom, even in the aircraft sector.

In July 1945 Professor E. M. Frazer left the M.A.P., where he had been a director attached to Lord McGowan's staff, which was entrusted with the development of civil aviation. In December W. S. Farren left as director of the Royal Aircraft Establishment, a position he had held since 1941, and joined the Blackburn Aircraft Company. His place was taken by Professor W. G. A. Perring, who had been a member of a team that specialized in the investigation of strategic missiles. And Air Commodore Frank Whittle, among many others, resigned as a result of disagreements over the new government's policy on developing jet aircraft engines, which he had been the first to create and build in England.

The M.A.P. itself was an emergency creation of the Second World War and the precursor of the German *Jägerstab.* It officially ceased to exist after March 31, 1946, and its functions passed to the Ministry of Supply, a far larger ministry, which then had to supervise the planning of new planes, their production, and even the contracting of aeronautical research. The minister in charge remained John Wilmot, who had been in the Ministry of Aircraft Production and also on the Tube Alloys directorate, the original British organization for atom bomb studies.

The person who most benefited from the power shift was without doubt Sir Ben Lockspeiser. Professor Lockspeiser, M.A., M.I., Mech. E., F.R.Ae. S., was a member of one of the best-qualified teams assigned to investigate the German aeronautical industry in 1943; he then became supervisor of scientific research. In 1945 he became Director-General of Scientific Research (Air) and chief scientist in the new ministry.

AIRCRAFT WITH NO TOMORROW

Under the auspices of John Wilmot, the chiefs of the various divisions of the Ministry of Supply held a series of lectures on July 18, 1946, in the Adelphi Theater in London. It was a semiofficial report to the nation on the theme of scientific research in war and peace. After recounting the contribution the British scientific effort had made to the winning of the war, the conferees set forth the programs for the immediate future in the fields of aviation, ballistic missiles, radio technology, and nuclear energy.

In his introductory talk, Sir John Lennard-Jones, director of the office for the coordination of scientific research, declared that the various fields of research—especially that of aeronautics—were already covered by more than seventeen functioning experimental centers created by or under contract to the Ministry of Supply and that others would later be added.

Finally some encouraging news, most of the conferees thought, ill concealing their inner satisfaction. Nevertheless, there were reasons for apprehension and discontent. The Empire was creaking in an alarming manner after the Pyrrhic victory over Germany. Britain's international prestige had dropped considerably. The United States was "overflowing" everywhere except in the countries being crushed by the equally growing menace of Soviet expansionism. Beyond that, the problems of demobilization, the conversion of war industries to peacetime production, the nationalization of heavy industry—all these in themselves were enough to paint a gray picture of postwar Britain. And as if this were not enough, the American invasion in the field of civil air transport threatened to suffocate once and for all the erstwhile thriving British competition.

This last threat arose out of a special situation. In 1939 the designing of civil aircraft had been suddenly and totally interrupted in England in order to dedicate all the resources of the country to military aviation. In addition, the needs of the "Battle of Britain" demanded that preference be given to single- and twin-engined planes (fighters). This prevailing type of construction had, generally speaking, been maintained subsequently, even after America came into the war. The United States assumed the task of developing mainly bombing planes, multiengined craft that have, as is evident, a number of similarities to civil airliners in transcontinental use.

It took seven or eight years of full-time work to design, construct, and put on the runway a multiengined transport plane. So in order to fill as best it could the gap that had begun widening in 1939, the British aircraft industry created a "provisional" or "emergency" category of transport planes after the war, using the major components from surplus four-engined bombers.

Some pretty good transatlantic planes were patched together this way (the Avro Tudor and the Avro York), but in payload, speed, and efficiency they could not compare with their American competitors designed expressly for the purpose. What the British needed in order to make up the handicap and avoid rapid paralysis in the delicate sector of international air transport were designs that were fully up to date. It was well known that America was aiming directly at producing giant planes. Great Britain, which was then producing the best aircraft engines in the world, believed that she could do as well as the United States or perhaps even better.

Reacting quickly, the British laid down the Bristol 167 Brabazon I. The plane had eight paired Bristol Centaurus engines producing a total of 20,000 HP, driving three-bladed contrarotating propellers; the wing span was 230 feet; fully loaded the plane weighed 130 tons and carried 100 passengers at a cruising speed of 250 mph. The conservative press called it “our 285,000-pound giant of the airways” in a tone of pride not unmixed with apprehension. Would it be a commercial success or a costly bit of prestige condemned to early eclipse?

“The days when England had to get its planes from America are now over. Indeed, let us hope that, as before, the flow of business will be the other way,” Sir Roy Dobson, president of the British Association of Aircraft Manufacturers, is said to have declared euphorically to the press.

Aviation experts began lively debates on cost per flight mile, special runways that would be needed by the giant planes, and the limited number of international airfields capable of handling this sort of machine. Some considered it a triumph of technology, others merely a dangerous adventure.

Opinions were divided, but meanwhile construction continued. In the end it swallowed up twelve million pounds (part of which was spent on fixed investments: hangars, assembly bridges, a reinforced runway), and two million pounds were later spent for the prototype of the Brabazon II, a more powerful model with the first Bristol Proteus turboprops (eight turbine engines producing a total of 25,000 HP, with a cruising speed of 340 mph and a range of about 5,000 miles).

At the beginning of 1950, when it was realized that this type of airplane could be an enormous failure from the point of view of commercial return, it was too late to try to get back any of the allocated funds. And there was little consolation in the almost contemporaneous failure of the gigantic Hughes M.4 Hercules flying boat, a similar project in transoceanic transport developed in California that also proved to be "without a tomorrow."[3]

The mistaken decision to build air giants (the two Brabazon models and the Saunders-Roe SR-45 Princess hydroplane) cost the English taxpayer a good deal, but it did not keep the British from embarking on other "essential" projects.

The directors of the M.A.P. had in fact cold-bloodedly shut off funds from duplicate projects, projects that gave little hope of success, and those that could be replaced with more promising, less costly or more modern projects.

In the list of victims destined to be cut off from government funds there was, to the incredulous surprise of the experts, the supersonic Miles M-52, being prepared by the Miles Aircraft Company of Reading, which had designed it in answer to a secret competition for a thousand-mile-an-hour plane that the Air Ministry had opened in 1943.[4]

And so in February 1946, a few months after the first test flight, the contract with the Miles firm was unilaterally canceled by the government, although the detail designs were 90 percent complete, the assembly jigs ready, and even partial assembly of the plane begun.

The M.A.P. took the responsibility for this serious decision on behalf of the R.A.F., giving as its reason that it would be very uneconomical to continue the original line of approach to matters of supersonic speed with the M-52 project.

Referring to this surprising change in program, Sir Ben Lockspeiser told the London press that the problems of supersonic flight would be solved through the use of rocket-propelled planes.[5]

THE SUPERSONIC ROCKET-PROPELLED VICKERS E-24/43

After going into the matter thoroughly, the aviation editor of the London *Daily Herald* summed up the whole question on September 6, 1946:

"Work on a 1000 mph aeroplane, which has already cost the Ministry of Supply £200,000 and is three-quarters finished, has been abandoned. It has been decided that no experimental aircraft will be flown by a human pilot until it is known precisely what happens at 750 mph, the speed of sound.

"'We just have not the heart to send any test pilot out into the scientific unknown of supersonic speeds,' says Sir Ben Lockspeiser, Chief of the Ministry of Supply aeronautical scientists. . . . The official explanation given by the Ministry of Supply for the cancellation of the contract is: 'Other avenues of research are being explored.'

"These 'other avenues' include a spectacular radio-controlled craft which will probably be flown this year. It is expected to give Britain the first practical secrets of supersonic flight."

Wind-tunnel experiments proved to be unreliable when the wind velocity approached that of sound (1087 feet per second at sea level) because the test chamber then became criss-crossed by bands of shock waves that changed the conditions of the wind current of the model being experimented on. As a consequence, Vickers-Armstrong-Supermarine—builders of the famous Spitfire—had decided in 1943 to prepare flying models equipped with rocket engines. The higher-ups in the M.A.P. suggested that they use the M-52 configuration in one-third scale. Cessation of work on the plane coincided with the start of this new cycle of research.[6]

The Vickers rockets were attached to the belly of a De Havilland *Mosquito* light bomber, which released them at 35,000 feet at a speed of 400 mph. At the moment of release an automatic pilot kept the model in a glide for fifteen seconds until it reached 30,000 feet. At this point the rocket cut in and in eighteen seconds accelerated the model to the speed of sound and in seventy seconds brought it up to its theoretical maximum of 875 mph. After this, the fuel having been used up, the speed dropped rapidly and the automatic pilot put the model into a steep dive into the sea. During the short time that the model was traveling at supersonic speeds, a radio apparatus transmitted data on the aerodynamic behavior of the contours of the model and the functioning of its propulsive system to a ground station.

The tests took place in the vicinity of the Scilly Islands, off the coast of Cornwall, along a fifteen-mile flight path, and the rockets were tracked by radar into the open Atlantic. Although the tests were scheduled to start at the end of 1946, it was not until March 1947 that the R.A.F. received the first models of the Vickers rockets. They weigh 800 pounds fully loaded, so they were fairly large but not spectacularly so.

In early November the first rocket was tested, with mediocre results. It had been damaged in transit to Cornwall and was unable to do any better than 600 mph.

There followed a series of failures for various causes, and it was not until January 1949 that one of the models (the fifth in the series) finally operated perfectly, reaching Mach 1.36, equivalent to 1,035 mph. There was no further information because the testing cycle was over.

No public announcement was made—which was very consistent of the Director-General. In April 1947 Sir Ben Lockspeiser had brusquely told journalists who were besieging him for news: "This new plane is not a weapon but a flying laboratory of interest only to a few scientists. The dates of the tests will be kept as secret as possible because this kind of research does not thrive on publicity."

"SUCTION"

In the meantime the Miles company, which had put all its hopes in the M-52 project, was wrecked in the stormy waters of postwar British aviation. In 1948 Handley-Page took over whatever survived the bankruptcy, founding a new firm, Handley-Page Reading, Ltd., while the directors of the old Miles company formed the small company of F. G. Miles, Ltd., for the construction of light training and private planes.

Thus the first British company to conduct in-flight experiments on the secrets of suction of the boundary layer—a milestone in the development of flying saucers—disappeared from the scene. Willy-nilly, the company had been led into the study of these secrets while its main line of work suffered.

Here we must introduce a brief aside on what the boundary layer is and how it is controlled. This explanation must of necessity be oversimplified and overconcise. Oily substances flow slowly because they are highly viscous. Air also is viscous, but to a degree four or five thousand times less than oil. Viscosity is manifested as a sort of friction in the molecules that hinders the free running of the fluid flow, generating imperceptible moving stratifications of decreasing speeds as the flow moves in from the free atmosphere and approaches the walls of the swept body. Everyone is familiar with, for example, the variations in the speed of water flowing through a canal. Only the central portion flows swiftly. At the edges, the water is almost stationary.

The layers of air that are influenced in varying degrees by the walls of the body moving through it are known as the boundary layer. An airplane, therefore, drags along with it a sort of mantle of air that is continuously renewed after being uselessly accelerated up to the speed of the flight (and then left behind), to the detriment of the propulsive power of the plane.

No matter what the speed of the aircraft, at normal altitudes the thickness of the boundary layer at the leading edge of the body is always less than one millimeter and the strata of air that make it up lie evenly on one another (the laminar boundary layer). Then, at a certain distance from the leading edge, depending on the extent of streamlining, its conformation changes and it becomes turbulent. At this point the thickness of the boundary layer increases sharply because the strata of air mingle violently to form a turbulent wake at the rear; this wake is similar to the one we can actually see following a ship because of the greater density of the medium it is traveling through.

Starting from the point at which it thickens (called the transition point), the natural microscopic eddying increases beyond its proper value and gives rise to a growing, excessive dissipation of energy. In other words, the aerodynamic resistance of the body increases.

It seems clear, therefore, even to a layman in aeronautics that the objective should be to move the point of transition as far to the rear of the moving body as possible in order to minimize the expenditure of motive energy required to propel the body through the air. This is especially true in high-speed flight, since the power required increases at about the cube of the speed.

The physical concept of the "boundary layer" was first delineated by Professor Ludwig Prandtl at Göttingen in 1904. Nevertheless, for many years—until about 1937, when both in Germany and in England aerodynamics specialists began full-sized experiments with specially equipped or planned planes—research on controlling the boundary layer was conducted without any coordination between the technologists and the industrialists in the area of practical applications.[7]

In addition, the research had a single, relatively modest aim, for it was limited to the boundary layer of conventional wing surfaces. In other words, the experimenters were trying to eliminate the "sacs of dead air" along the top wing surface that at low speeds (normally, at take-off and landing) cause dangerous crises in the lift of the wings.

This could and can be obtained in two different ways. With the method of "blowing" the boundary layer, the dead air is pushed aside by a tiny stream of compressed air continuously forced through slots so placed as to affect the point of transition. With "suction" the dead air is sucked into the wing itself, through tiny holes or slots, and then expelled by a pump located within the fuselage.

Blowing and suction are the techniques that have been investigated most; they are also the simplest and oldest techniques for controlling the boundary layer.

SUCTION WINGS

The experiments of the Miles Company in controlling the boundary layer began in 1936 with wind tunnel tests conducted on the wing section from one of their planes called the Whitney Straight. Encouraging results induced the experimenters to work on full-size models. Consequently, in 1937, with the assistance of the Air Ministry, which had got wind of similar German work, Miles modified a twin-engined M-8

Peregrine monoplane for the Royal Aeronautical Establishment (R.A.E.).[8]

The original plane was a light civilian transport carrying six passengers and with provision for two pilots seated side by side. After the internal structure was gutted, most of the top surface of the wing was recovered with perforated aluminum sheeting. Seven continuous very broad and shallow longitudinal canals, running almost the entire length of the half-wing, conducted the air that had been sucked in from the surface to the fuselage where a 10-HP Ford automobile engine ran the pump that sucked in the boundary layer.

The Miles rig was more or less the same as that of the contemporary German experimental plane, the Junkers AF-1 *Absauge Flugzeug,* designed expressly for the Aerodynamische Versuchsanstalt (A.V.A.) of Göttingen.

The data that the German experiment yielded are now well known from their publication by the American National Advisory Committee for Aeronautics (N.A.C.A.), but information about the British results has been kept restricted. Apparently all we know is that flight tests indicated that aerodynamic resistance was lowered by 22 percent.

The Miles firm did not really carry its researches on the possibilities of this very important principle all the way. After having worked out this brilliant stroke, for various reasons—the inherent difficulties in the pumping mechanism, the advent of wing flaps, the drying up of government funds—it returned to traditional designs. In this area, however, better equipped and more powerful companies competitively barred its road and finally drove it into bankruptcy.

On the other hand, the German researches prospered. In 1937 at the A.V.A. in Göttingen professors Betz and Ackeret and the engineers Stüper, Schrenk, Holstein, Schwier, and Wöchner, with the aid of a host of other experts, conducted a test flight of the AF-1, a light high-wing monoplane equipped with a 200-HP engine. It had only one slot for sucking in the dead air. Opposite the hinges of the movable wing surfaces, the slot ran along the entire length of the wing span. Inside the fuselage, directly under the point where the wings were attached to the fuselage, an auxiliary 20-HP engine ran a propeller fan to suck in that part of the boundary layer that could improve lift.

Generally speaking, the flight experiments confirmed what had already been noted—that the lift of "sucked wings" increases in proportion to the quantity of air sucked in up to a lift factor of 4. The maximum value of the lift factor for a normal airfoil often does not exceed 0.5. After that the mass of air that must be moved grows more rapidly than the lift, making it impractical to reach factors above 6. In any case, even with the factor limited to 4, the lift of the original airfoil was increased by eight times!

An improved version, the AF-2, was powered with a 270-HP engine and equipped with a 45-HP fan run off the same engine. At full throttle the fan could suck in 250 cubic feet of air per second. This made it possible in 1940-1942 to achieve, efficiency being equal, a lift factor of 5, an exceptionally high figure for a low-powered single-engine plane.

Rapid calculations by the A.V.A. technical experts revealed that for a multiengined plane of thirty tons with a wing area of 1000 square feet and a lift factor of 4, approximately 2100 cubic feet of air per second would have to be sucked in on landing. In those days, when most people considered the modern air-eating turbojet a utopian vision, this was truly an impressive figure.[9] Indeed, there was speculation to the effect that a huge 250-300-HP fan would have to be carried on the plane to suck in the dead air.

Complementary researches on thin airfoils, which were becoming more and more common with increasing speeds, especially in military planes, immediately made clear the practical difficulties of installing suction plants inside them. The slots on the top surface, the air collectors, and the channeling from wing to pump would in fact have had to share what little free space there was on the inside of the wing with the various complicated internal installations (retractable undercarriage, fuel tanks, weapons, ammunition, position lights, pipes, wires, and various trusses) that are generally situated even in the thinnest "razor-edge" wings of today's supersonic fighters.[10]

The AF models were very slow planes, however, and it was decided to use them to study the behavior of suction during take-off and landing, operations that are performed at relatively low speeds by all planes. Those who backed the building of such planes were mostly trying to obtain high coefficients of lift, and in fact their hopes were not disappointed.

Nevertheless, it was known for some time that control of the boundary layer can also exercise a helpful influence on the penetration drag of the wings and indeed on all surfaces, fuselage included. This was to be translated into an increase in speed.[11]

A.V.A. DEVELOPMENTS AND PROJECTS

In the test flights with the AF planes another finding emerged: the necessity to preserve the volumetric efficiency of the intake pump for flight speeds that were slightly above the minimum speed.

Suppose, the German technicians said, we increased the force of the suction slightly—reducing it to the proper amount at low speeds—couldn't we design a plane with a very small wing area that would offer little resistance and therefore be capable of very high speeds? Or perhaps add a hundred miles an hour or so to conventional planes?

Both at Göttingen and at the L.F.A.'s wind tunnel in Volkenrode, research on suction became definitely oriented toward high-speed flight.

For some time supercharging by means of a centrifugal compressor driven by the engine itself had been common practice with piston engines. By using the compressor as a suction pump, the Messerschmitt ME-109G modified fighter flew a number of experimental flights. The flights demonstrated, however, the difficulties in reconciling the different volumetric capacities required by the two devices, and this dissuaded the technicians from extending the principle to the production series.

In the meantime, it was experimentally established that suction through an opening placed to the rear of a transsonic shock wave could slow down the sharp increase in aerodynamic resistance by approximately Mach 0.1, so that a plane designed to fly 900 kph would be able, the power installed being equal, to reach the fateful goal of 1000 kph. To attain this result a single-seater fighter would have to suck in from 565 to 812 cubic feet of air per second—a capacity that was of the same order as that sucked in by the first internal combustion turbines.[12]

In 1944 professors Prandtl and Busemann sketched out preliminary plans for a high-speed fighter—which never got beyond the design stage—in which the boundary layer was sucked in along the wing span and discharged against the sides of the fuselage through a narrow, half-moon-shaped orifice in such a way as to "blow" the tail boundary layer of the stabilizer area.

Gradually the Aerodynamische Versuchsanstalt technical experts of the L.F.A. reached different but interesting conclusions.

The first was that *it was not advantageous to transform ordinary aircraft into planes with a controlled boundary layer* because the suction principle was deprived of its best attributes and the difficulties of construction did not compensate for the limited advantages. (If this were not the case, we would not have today those special types of UFO commonly called "flying discs.")[13]

In addition, it was demonstrated that inasmuch as they were planning a special turbine-powered project, it would have been advantageous *to combine the two mechanisms into a single whole by feeding the turbine with air taken from the wing orifices* instead of by means of the usual forward-ram air intakes.

The outcome of the research is not officially known. This does not, of course, mean that there were no results! Whichever ally got it in his war booty may perfectly well be keeping it a secret today for some sound reason. It seems, in fact, that by reworking the old experiments on "potential frictionless current," the German technical experts may in the final days have succeeded experimentally in reducing aerodynamic friction on appropriately shaped bodies to very low values. And since it was known from results supplied by the Italian supersonic wind tunnel at Guidonia that while wave resistance to high

Mach numbers varies roughly in proportion to speed, frictional resistance increases almost as the square, certain rumors making the rounds at the end of 1944 about the imminent appearance of some new types of highly efficient and very fast planes, "moving through the air like a sponge through water and completely different from anything ever seen before," began to be listened to seriously.[14]

In addition, something less vague had already leaked out in France just before the German collapse in Normandy. There was talk of the feverish preparation of strange fighters powered by special turbines, without any wing or tail surfaces whatsoever and even without the usual air intakes, so that in scientific circles in Strasbourg it was thought to be a kind of new piloted rocket being prepared to take off from some well-hidden fastness in the Black Forest to send the Allied bombers scurrying off.

Similar rumors circulating among the higher-ups of the Luftwaffen-Motor Lager of Gallarate, in Italy, had it, however, that they were not rockets and that the planes would at first be radio controlled.

Does one have to be an experienced technical expert to recognize in all this certain details common to the sudden appearance of the *Kugelblitz* fighter as well as to the sightings of flying saucers in successive years?

STATIC INTAKE JETS

In the immediate postwar period Professor M. Sedille examined the question from a scientific point of view and at the first Congress of French Aviation gave a talk that was rich with original observations.[15]

In sum, Sedille declared that it would be advantageous *to expel the air that had been sucked in after having charged it with a speed equal and opposite to that of the flight of the plane, increasing thereby the propulsive force, for in this way the expenditure of energy required for flight would be reduced to one third.*

"Naturally, the necessary substitution of ram air intakes with static intakes would make the advantage nonabsolute," he went on, "because supplementary mechanical compression of the air in exchange for the spontaneous one supplied by ram intake would be required in jet planes. *Besides, it would be very difficult with planes of conventional shape to extend suction to the entire external surface of the plane.* However, the method could make the use of jet propulsion worthwhile even at very low speeds, by replacing, that is, present very costly forms of 'jet lift.'"

Other theoretical calculations relative to the basic case of the flat sheet lowered the amount of energy required for propulsion to one-seventh. Now the game was indeed worth the candle!

But French plane designers paid no attention to Sedille's proposals. They continued developing conventional planes, and two years later, in 1948, in the *Comptes Rendus de l'Académie des Sciences* of Paris, Professor Maurice Roy "demonstrated," likewise mathematically, how illusory the proposal was.[16]

The negative conclusions of Professor Roy, a genuine aeronautical luminary, were based on the well-taken premise that if the aerodynamic resistance of the other parts of the plane not subject to the suction process (fuselage, rudder, cockpit) were to be balanced, such great quantities of air would be required that it would have to be taken from the free air well beyond the boundary layer of the wing. That was and would remain costly and difficult. For example, the wings of a modern single-seater fighter produce no more than 35 to 40 percent of the total resistance developed by the entire plane, and they are so thin that they do not permit moving large quantities of air with an internal velocity advantageously reduced with respect to that of the movement of the plane.

Would it now be necessary to give up the idea of "macro-suction," *i.e., suction extended to all the surfaces brushed by the wind of the flight?*

The answer is *no, certainly not, provided that everything that is not a "wing" or a surface with equivalent functions is eliminated by hiding or fusing it with the wing in the manner of "flying-wing" planes.*

We note that, except for the transparent dorsal bubble, flying saucers do not expose any non-wing element to the "apparent wind" in their high-speed flight.

A COMBINATION

At the time of the last prewar researches on control of the boundary layer, which were very promising in view of the reduction of the internal space required, a combination of suction and blowing appeared. It was also tested with modest success at the Italian aeronautical experimental center in Guidonia, where full-scale experiments had begun when the Italian surrender on September 8, 1943, interrupted all remaining research work.

In Germany, during the war, only the Arado and Dornier firms made experimental bombers (the AR-232/A and the DO-24) with short take-off and landing runs and with high lateral stability obtained by means of the "combined" system. The boundary layer was sucked in through continuous slots near the hinges of the ailerons (the A.V.A. method) and the air was then blown onto the ailerons by a small electric pump located in the wing.

After the war the American firm of Grumman reduced the landing runs of F-9 and F-4 planes on aircraft carriers by 50 percent by using the combined system. Cessna built a large number of fight touring planes by applying the same principle in a more simplified form.[17] One of these, a two-seater engaged in taking aerial photographs in the vicinity of Pasadena, California, on January 3, 1956, encountered three circular planes having a diameter of about fifty feet, giving off a shiny orange glow from their undersides.

Dropping down to the altitude of the Cessna (about 4000 feet), within thirty seconds they flew around it in a wide circle, maintaining a distance of three or four miles. From a quick calculation, they were flying at an average of not less than 1800 mph. After widening the circle, one of the UFOs encountered a long, thin cloud layer as it was flying away and cut it almost exactly in two, producing a very clean break.

"*It left a hole as if it had sucked up the cloud!*" the pilots said. In fact, for a few moments the wake of the ship became visibly vaporous.

Could anyone deny that intense aerial suction was employed in the flight of the mysterious aircraft?

Two types of aircraft met that day, both using the same principle. Rudimentary in the Cessna, highly advanced in the UFO. The caterpillar and the butterfly . . .

NOTES

1. See Sir Roy Fedden, "Inquest on Chaos," *Flight* (London, November 29, 1945) pp. 575–578.

2. For example, the planned missions agreed on between the B.I.O.S. and the M.A.P. envisaged at the beginning of 1945 visiting some fifty-two German aeronautical research and production centers. In practice, it was possible to "explore" only thirty-three of them because the postwar distribution of areas of military administration excluded the British from certain areas of interest to them.

3. Somewhat bigger than the Brabazon, the Hercules had eight Pratt and Whitney Wasp Major engines for a total of 28,400 HP, a 300-foot wing span, weighed 226 tons fully loaded, and was to carry 700 passengers. The plane was conceived in 1942 as air transport for thirty- to sixty-ton tanks, heavy artillery, or entire troop formations. When the expenses for the original project exceeded $18 million, the American government canceled the contract. The builder—the capricious Howard Hughes, a very wealthy flyer and movie producer—then decided to continue the project at his own expense. By 1947 the Hercules had absorbed a total of $25 million. The newspapers reported as follows: "In American aviation circles the final word on the largest airplane in the world is anxiously awaited. There are two groups: one thinks that the M-4 will never get off the water or at the best after a hop of a cou-

ple of yards will sink forever; the other thinks that the plane is opening a new era in the field of transcontinental air transport." They were both mistaken. After an awkward test flight about a hundred feet above the water, the "birchwood giant," as skeptics sarcastically called it, was abandoned as too difficult and too expensive to fly. For some time it lay on the wharf between Los Angeles and Long Beach, before being scratched off the list of American flying matériel.

4. The government designation was E-24/43. The supersonic Miles M-52 was supposed to reach 1000 mph at about 35,000 feet. The engine was a gas turbine with a large after-burner, designed and built by Power Jets Ltd. Twenty-four feet long and with a maximum diameter of three and a half feet, this special jet engine took up virtually the entire fuselage. The trapezoidal wing (with a span of 26 feet and only 107 square feet of surface) was not swept back, a configuration that used to be considered indispensable for very fast planes. In order to keep the maneuverability of the plane within a reasonable margin at low speeds, it had been designed with a wing aspect ratio close to that of normal wings (while the M.A.P. specifications called for a wing aspect ratio approaching the figure one). This further contributed to the Ministry of Supply's decision to give preference in the area of winged aircraft to the delta wings that the A. V. Roe company of Manchester had meanwhile designed. The wing tips were diagonally truncated so as to reduce the marginal wave resistance (according to the Busemann scheme) and the symmetrical biconvex airfoil was exceedingly thin and had thin leading and trailing edges. The tail surfaces were designed to be entirely movable and worked by servo-assists with powerful servo-motors because of the aerodynamic loads on them, which were in the neighborhood of a hundred times the load on the tail of the heaviest plane in service at the time. The pressurized cabin could be ejected from the fuselage on command, to permit the pilot to get free of the plane even at supersonic speeds if necessary. Plastic explosive cartridges inserted in the tubular supports joining the cabin to the fuselage and electrically discharged were supposed to sever the frame, thus separating the cabin from

the body of the plane. A large parachute would automatically be released and brake the fall of the cabin to the point where the pilot could jump out of it and use his own personal 'chute.

5. This unexpected decision, however, had precedents. In January 1945 the aeronautical engineers S. P. Hutton and H. E. Gamble began a series of tests with solid models of the M-52 in the subsonic wind tunnel of the Royal Aeronautical Establishment. The final report, which was written in July but not printed until five years later, concluded its account of the aerodynamic research with an observation from calculated data that "at high Mach numbers the plane could be unstable." If not wholly negative, the verdict was clearly not very sanguine, and it marked the decline of the Miles approach, which ended with the firm's collapse just when certain German war designs (the supersonic D.F.S.-Siebel planes) seemed to promise superior operational qualities.

6. The devices constructed by the Vickers engineers were small rocket planes formed of a cylinder of steel sheet with removable caps at either end. They were eleven feet long, with a single cantilever wing having an eight-foot span. With its symmetrical biconvex airfoil as on the real plane, the wing was a solid wood construction composed of a number of plies of pressure-glued mahogany. The edges were reinforced with light alloy sheathing and had normal ailerons for maneuvering. The tail assembly was made of wood "improved" with birch, but only the leading edge of the rudder was reinforced with light alloy sheathing. The armoring also served as the radio antennae, the wing sheathing for the receiver, and the rudder sheathing for the transmitter. The interior of the cylinder contained the tanks for liquid C and liquid T and for compressed air; the automatic pilot; the radio receiver; the transmitter; the small rocket engine. The ailerons and the elevators had servo-controls operated by compressed air and commanded by the automatic pilot. (This system had already been successfully employed by the Germans on the V-1 flying bombs.) The rudder was fixed for straight-line flight. At the front were the pitot tube for measuring speed and the balancing weights.

The switch for the electric installation was centrally located and easily accessible. The propulsion of the machine was obtained via diergolic (*i.e.,* two-liquid) propulsion: liquid C (34 liters of methyl alcohol with a 30-percent solution of hydrazine hydrate and 20 percent of water) and liquid T (54.5 liters of hydrogen peroxide with 20 percent water)—generally used in the German antiaircraft rockets. The combustion chamber was a light metal cylinder seventeen and a half inches long and four and three-quarters inches in diameter. In order to eliminate the necessity of cooling the walls, they were lined internally with a layer of carbon cement two inches thick, mixed with a special ceramic binder. The thickness of the cylinder was further increased at the rear end in such a way as to form the narrow section of the exhaust nozzle. When the construction was completed, the weight of the craft was about 500 pounds dry and about 800 pounds fully loaded. Parallel with the small series of rockets for the Royal Aeronautical Establishment (R.A.E.), Vickers also prepared different types of fuselages and wings for their own experiments toward achieving the best wing shapes and arrangements, according to eighteen different dispositions arrived at in the design stage. In addition, there were also "V" or "butterfly" wings (in technical parlance, frontal dihedral wings), to which the firm's experts attached a great deal of importance. It seems that it was also intended to equip the devices with a remote control of the type perfected for air-launched guided projectiles for precision fire against targets fifteen to eighteen miles away. This gave origin to a type of self-propelled projectile midway between planing bombs and flying bombs, but it had no practical results. In 1950 the Supersonic Division of the Flight Section of the Royal Aeronautical Establishment compiled in report A.R.C. No. 2,835 all the data furnished by the "flight trials of a rocket-propelled transsonic research model: the RAE Vickers Rocket Model," which remained a classified document until 1954.

7. During that long period of time the Göttingen "school" and the aeronautical faculty of the University of Cambridge stood

out above all. A systematic series of physical and mathematical investigations was carried out between 1919 and 1936 at Cambridge under the direction of Professor Melville Jones and with the assistance of Professor G. J. Taylor. The fresh ideas that were produced resulted in several patents. Some were by the noted German designer Lippisch, the Canadian engineer Stenstone, the British firm of Bristol (1936), and one by Air Commodore Whittle (1938) based on the adoption of a rudimentary gas turbine. There were still others but none of them ever became a reality. The main reason for their failure—apart from the aircraft industry's lack of interest—was that they used the residual energy in the exhaust gases of a piston engine (for blowing) or the slight vacuum developed during the intake stroke (for suction). But the few patents envisaging the use of turbines always ran into the ever present problem that there was absolutely no usable turbine orifice with long-wearing qualities and the ability to function with an acceptable degree of thermal efficiency. Another insurmountable barrier was the minimal advantages offered by limited application of the principle. The limitation still holds today within the range of conventional aircraft, for reasons that will shortly become clear.

8. See F. G. Miles, "Sucking Away the Boundary Layer: Results of some Full-Scale Flying Experiments," *Flight* (London, No. 1,570, January 26, 1939), pp. 82b–82d. For some time the Royal Aeronautical Establishment had a staff of specialized researchers in suction at its disposal. After the R.A.E. had completed and then filed the researches conducted with the Miles firm, it took up the wind tunnel studies again with reduced-size wing sections. In one of the most successful experiments —on a symmetrical airfoil derived from the National Advisory Committee for Aeronautics' development, NACA-0020, but with a single suction slot on the top surface that extended along 50 percent of the chord—a 60 percent reduction of aerodynamic resistance was achieved. (*Cf.* A.R.C., Report No. 1,913, published in 1943.) The long series of studies on "humped" airfoils—of which we shall have more to say—having failed in practice, together with the ever higher speeds reached by jets,

then focused the attention of government experts on the problems of swept and delta wings. A reawakening of interest in the problems of suction—based, however, on traditional concepts—has been shown in more recent times with the work of Dr. Lachmann of Handley-Page Ltd. In the spring of 1956 the left wing of a DH-113 night fighter was modified with the application of a perforated "glove" along the center line of the top surface. In flight, a local reduction of 82 percent in the surface-friction drag was obtained in this way and consequently *the drag of the wing was reduced to less than one-fifth.* Nevertheless, the energy gain rapidly fell off with the increase in speed, because of the dropping off of the degree of kinematic viscosity, once again confirming the axiom that the conformation of present-day aircraft does not lend itself to the full exploitation of the principle. For a concise examination of the most recent developments see S. Caldara, "*Le ricerche in Gran Bretagna sul controllo dello strato limite*," *Alata Internazionale* (Milan, July 1967), pp. 31–32.

9. To give an example, the powerful Wright 18-BD "Cyclone" twin-radial of 2500 HP at take-off aspirates eight to nine pounds of air per second at full throttle, equivalent in round figures to not more than 100 to 125 cubic feet.

10. Now as then, between the powerful and violent suction of the jet engine and the removal of the boundary layer (especially if continued and extended) there is a series of not insignificant difficulties that are epitomized principally by the need to work with more rows of slots along the chord. These slots would have to be opened or closed as needed in order to make the suction zone coincide with the transition point; in other words, suction would have to take place where the actual separation of the fluid vein is observed—and this point, moreover, shifts with the angle of incidence. The slots would in addition have to be rather narrow—not exceeding 0.031"—otherwise the volume of the sucked air would be excessive at the expense of the efficiency of the installation. The "velocity of suction" and the quantity of "dead air" sucked in would, however, have to increase in direct proportion to flight speed.

(That is, in the jargon of the technical experts, it is necessary to strengthen the aerodynamic effect of the "downcast shaft.") Unfortunately, as speed increases the wings become proportionately thinner and their slight internal volume does not lend itself well to the installations of the wide, straight, hermetically sealed channels necessary for the undisturbed, slow removal of the air that has been sucked in. To improve a plane's total coefficient of aerodynamic penetration, it would be necessary to extend the suction of the boundary layer to the entire upper surface of the wing and to the first third of the fuselage. (The rear portions, including the tail assembly, could be blown.) But even this solution entails cumbersome installations, all of them essential: cockpit, engine, main fuel tank, heavy arms and ammunition, radio, radar, a profusion of tubing and wires, from which it is clear that the "integral" solution is practically impossible with the present types of cross-shaped planes with wings and tail assemblies.

11. In 1932, for his researches on "sucked wings," the engineer Oskar Schrenk had constructed a model of a wing about nine and three-quarters inches thick, containing tiny fans operating on three-phase asynchronous motors, at first with a single slot on the upper surface and later with multiple slots. The second approach gave the German scientist the first confirmation of the fact that the movement of the air current along the wing for a determined value of suction was almost identical with the theoretical shape of the "potential frictionless flow." The same deductions were later extended by analogy to the moving bodies (three-dimensional) differing from the airfoils (two-dimensional).

12. The German turbojets of the Junkers-Jumo 004 series—mounted on the famous ME-262 fighters—when static sucked in about forty-four pounds of air per second. In 1946 German aerodynamic researches, especially the studies on combining turbojet propulsion with control of the boundary layer, were demonstrated to British experts by Professor R. Smelt during an interesting lecture at the Royal Aeronautical Society, in which part of the German illustrative material, which had been

restricted for reasons of military security, became public. (See *Flight,* London, October 17 and 24, 1946.)

13. This observation remains valid today, having been proved by the results of a recent American experiment. See A. Gattin, “*Un esperimento ancora troppo costoso: l’aereo con ala aspirate*,” *Nuove Ali,* Rome, XVIII (1966), No. 5/6, pp. 35–37. In the experimental Northrop X-21A—a complete transformation and adaptation of the Douglas WB-66D Destroyer, a light bomber—a double installation enclosed in two pods under the wings removes 60 percent of the boundary layer from the 1216 square feet of wing area by means of two low-pressure compressors, while the remaining part is sucked away by back-up high-pressure compressors (which also receive the mass of air sucked away by the low-pressure compressors) and carried to the internal combustion turbines which drive the compressors and whose exhaust contributes to the propulsion of the plane (which is principally taken care of by two J-79-13 turbojets located in the tail). This complicated process is matched by considerable complexity in the structure of the wing, which requires almost three miles of very fine slots in the wing with a width of from .003" to .009" (very difficult to make with current machinery) and about 800,000 holes ranging from a quarter to a sixteenth of an inch in diameter to move the air from the collection channels underneath the slots to the main piping bringing the air to the intakes. All this in order to guarantee—at a cruising speed of Mach 0.85 at 27,000 feet—a 60 percent increase in range or a 19 percent increase in gross take-off weight, which is about thirty-six tons. Interesting improvements, but not compelling. Indeed, despite the fact that the plane is in itself a mechanical jewel, not a single significant step has been taken to put the formula in actual production since April 18, 1963, when it was first flown.

14. *Cf.* B. Regenscheit, “Drag Reduction by Suction of the Boundary Layer Separated behind Shock Wave Formation at High Mach Numbers,” *NACA Technical Memorandum No. 1168* (Washington, 1947), p. 13; and D. W. Horder, H. H. Pearcey, and G. E. Gaddy, “The Interaction Between Shock

Waves and Boundary Layers," Aeronautical Research Council Current Paper No. 180 (H.M.S.O., London, 1955), p. 50. See also NACA Technical Report No. 3223 (Washington, 1954). The importance of reducing aerodynamic friction is especially evident in prolonged supersonic flight and even more so in hypersonic flight. By lessening the overheating of the wall resulting from the kinetic effect, it would be possible to employ metal alloys lighter and less costly than stainless steel and titanium, thereby contributing as well to the most economical solution to the complex problem of supersonic commercial air transportation.

15. See Prof. M. Sedille, "*Propulsion par réaction en combinaison avec l'aspiration de la couche limite*," *Technique et Science Aéronautique* (Paris, No. 4, 1946), pp. 229–302.

16. *Cf.* Prof. Maurice Roy, "*Sur la propulsion par regenération de la couche limite*," *Comptes Rendus de l'Académie des Sciences* (Paris, November 8, 1949).

17. In the Cessna 170 monoplane there are in fact no mechanical pumps to remove the "dead air." The removal is effected by mixing ducts fed by a compressed hot air generator installed in the fuselage behind the pilot. The trailing edges of the outboard wing are "blown," while those of the inboard wing are "sucked." The principle is obviously original, but it is limited to only one-sixth of the wing surface and therefore does not lend itself to intense suction over the whole wing. However, it can give some idea of the complexity of the problems related to the "control of the boundary layer."

CHAPTER 7

A Time of Spectacular Possibilities

It is certainly no exaggeration to say that the so-called UFO question literally exploded in the United States in 1952.

Five years had passed since the first sightings, but no substantial change had taken place in the situation. Indeed, the Air Force's continuous denials had ended by confusing even those who were determined not to be hoodwinked.

In the concert of conflicting opinions there were those who remembered when Captain Ruppelt took over the A.T.I.C.'s commission of inquiry. In one of the press conferences that accompanied the event, Ruppelt had hesitantly brought up the hypothesis that the Russians might have discovered such completely new aerodynamic concepts as to make the fantastic performance of the discs possible. But Ruppelt had so hedged his statement with ifs and buts that the hypothesis was rendered almost unacceptable from the start. He overdid it, mentioning the panic in Air Force circles toward the end of the summer of 1947 that arose precisely because of the growing suspicion that "someone" (the Russians were first choice) had found some new principle or method of aerial propulsion lying ready-made in Germany or had invented or accidentally discovered something radically new.

In actual fact, the "new" principle, as we have seen, was an old veteran of the mechanics of flight, nearly half a century old if we go back to its first elementary formulation. Moreover, in the past, American experts themselves had more than once underlined the alluring possibilities that control of the boundary layer offered to aviation.

In 1931, during some wind-tunnel experiments on various types of hyperlift wings, the engineer Millard J. Bamber obtained for the first time negative drag coefficients because the air flowing out of the top surface slot (in this case by "blowing") took such an active part in the aerodynamic process that it pushed the wing model against the wind.[1] In September 1936 R. B. Maloy summed up the various aspects of the question in the following five points:

1. Planes more efficient than those of today will soon be required and only control of the boundary layer can give them to us.
2. The power required is not prohibitive.
3. On the basis of experimental data thus far available the suction method is superior to blowing.
4. Control of the boundary layer in substratospheric transport planes and in military aircraft operating between 30,000 and 50,000 feet is rich with promise for the future.
5. Further experiments are required, however, to determine the distribution and the dimensions of the orifices for the suction and of the relative accessories.

Finally, how can anyone ignore or undervalue the conviction that the celebrated Theodor von Karman expressed in the spring of 1937, when at a conference of the Institute of Aeronautical Sciences in New York he placed control of the boundary layer first in the list of the aerotechnical conquests of the immediate future?[2]

In America these objectives were crushed under the heavy yoke of the war, which demanded from industry mass production rather than pioneering research. When the war was over, the scales of aeronautical innovation (turbines, rockets, radar, and suction) leaned heavily in favor of the Old World, and, indeed, the situation threatened to grow worse. American political leaders were lulling themselves into a Nirvanic state—although marred somewhat by the unexpected Russian awakening and the unfavorable turn of events in China—because they mistakenly believed that they had started an Anglo-American version of the famous thousand-year Pax Germanica that the Führer euphorically promised the world as he contemplated his “secret weapons.” But meantime a great mass of scientific documents discovered in Germany, far in advance of anything that was going on in the New World, were flowing into Moscow and, above all, into London.

When America’s leaders realized that although their aeronautical industry was indeed very strong it was likely to fall behind if it did not take full advantage of the new ideas developed in Europe during the final phase of the war, their interest in revolutionary developments abruptly ceased to be lukewarm. But by then, despite the zeal and insight of a few far-seeing officers in the Air Force and Army, a considerable portion of German scientific booty had already ended up in other hands.

In England, for example, the Ministry of Aircraft Production had hurriedly cornered and translated all the secret papers concerning the most promising German experiments on the boundary layer and the aerodynamics of supersonic flight at high altitudes. Meanwhile, Russia had cornered the market on missile experts and materials, which subsequently led to the Sputniks.

THE AERODYNAMICS OF POROUS SURFACES

When the war ended and the British experts were able to integrate their own experiments on the boundary layer with the heavy contributions of German investigations, the watchword became: “New aircraft designs for new forms of propulsion!" Taking the *Feuerball* as the main model, they gave a perfectly symmetrical form to the "suction" aircraft, making it circular and wrapping the wing around the suction pump like a ring. Enlarged and flattened, the pump was transformed into a single rotor turbojet engine; thus it could also, indirectly, perform the functions of a jet engine.

Then the British got rid of every vestige of control surfaces, because since 1939 it had been established that the suction of the boundary layer could be used advantageously for maneuvering in place of the normal empennage and movable surfaces, or they could be integrated, making the movements of the craft quicker and more responsive. With the entire top surface of the aircraft made aeropermeable, or porous, they extended the suction to include the mass of air above the actual boundary layer with the aim of putting a large volume of air to work and thereby also improving the efficiency of the engine.[3]

The keystone of this new suction system was, finally, the replacement of the slotted or perforated skin panels used in the old experiments with a pitted covering in "porosint" and its derivatives. These are materials that possess among their numerous advantages (and some inevitable defects) that of being able to withstand continuous temperatures in the neighborhood of 500° Centigrade, despite the fact that there is a large proportion of aluminum in their composition.

An extensive series of experiments had, in fact, made it possible for the British to establish that the removal of the boundary layer by suction, especially when practiced on a large scale, was much more effective if it was done through a highly porous surface rather than through drilled and slotted panels.

Beginning in 1944 they developed a special branch of aerotechnical research that the researchers called "porous sheets aerodynamics."[4] Born in the hail of flying bombs and torpedo rockets, this branch of research seemed to reach its zenith in 1946, falling off—apparently—to the simple rank of an auxiliary technique for improving the lift of wings—rather sadly coming full circle. . . .

Officially, all these detailed experimental investigations came to no more than a few unpublicized test flights with models—

apparently certain mysterious television-guided flying models were experimented with in the winter of 1945–1946—and then to a complex series of wind-tunnel measurements on wings of various shapes and sizes.

After years of study and dedicated and costly research, there was not even one plane, not even an experimental one. Does that seem too little?

Too little indeed; and not believable. Especially since, as a number of qualified witnesses have unanimously declared, the top surface of the mysterious flying discs normally shows no visible air intake for propulsion, as could be seen on all jet planes built before then and in the twenty years since.[5]

SEMIOFFICIAL ADMISSIONS

In December 1946, during a conference on the future of British aeronautics, Sir Ben Lockspeiser declared that he was a partisan of the system of suction. Thanks to suction, "the plane would then slip through the air in the same way a piece of wet soap slips through the fingers . . . it is hoped eventually to obtain a wing drag of not more than about one-third of what is now common."[6]

Before that, during the thirty-fourth Wilbur Wright Memorial Lecture, held at the Royal Aeronautical Society in London on May 30, 1946, Professor E. F. Relf, one of the best British aerodynamics experts of the old generation, declared: "Recently a further system of regulating the boundary layer by means of suction through minute holes heavily distributed over the surface touched by the apparent wind, rather than through one or more slots as has been done until now, has been taken under study at the National Physical Laboratory. This idea, too, is not new. What is new is the production of the right porous material—sinterized in the form of spongy bronze—that possesses very small and very regular interconnected interstices.[7] Dr. Preston has studied this problem from the theoretical point of view and is convinced that it is very promising."

Promising from the point of view of aeronautic progress. But, according to the official story of this line of research, this progress was only an empty promise. So they say . . .

In introducing his heavily documented talk, which contained many significant disclosures, Relf stated that recent aerodynamic experiments on "suction" seemed rich in possibilities for the future. "I feel we are on the verge of discoveries and advances almost as spectacular as that flight of Orville Wright's, forty-three years ago.[8]

That is enough for the moment, for we will soon find this final concept—linked with certain truly portentous developments—fully confirmed.

Comparing the cautious but still rather euphoric tenor of these declarations with the equally compelling news quietly given to the British press at the same period concerning certain extraordinary ultra-high-speed aircraft being perfected at the government laboratories in Bedford, we will have to agree that a few simple wings and several large flying models cannot justify the loss of traditional British self-possession, notoriously sparing in superlatives and empty promises.

Something really exceptional was secretly boiling on the back burner of British aviation.

LUFTSCHWAMM

The development of the aerodynamics of porous materials is clearly creditable to the British experts who worked on the problem during the last two years of the war. But historically, it is equally clear, the original idea took form just before the outbreak of hostilities. It was, in fact, in 1937 that Perring and Disprose of the National Physical Laboratory tried unsuccessfully to repeat in full-scale size the old experiments of the German engineer Schrenk on "frictionless air flow," the concern and hope of all students of flight.

The same problem was successfully tackled by Professor Ackeret, who was in the dark as to the Englishmen's work and its failure, since they never published the complete results of their investigations.[9] His experiments, which were completed on the eve of the war, made clear from that time on that it would be necessary to create an "ideal surface" consisting of microscopic holes. But these aeropermeable surfaces would be very difficult to manufacture with conventional methods.

When the British experts learned of these conclusions (the last exchanges of technical information among the European countries before the curtain of military secrecy fell), they decided to look for some synthetic material. After all, the chemical industry had been using porous ceramic filters for about twelve years.

At the Applied Physics Laboratory of the National Physical Laboratory preliminary tests were made on the suction flow through a single orifice measuring .01 of an inch in diameter. With a long, almost imperceptible whistle the prescribed quantity of air repeatedly passed through the small orifice in the prescribed time without developing appreciable wave patterns. The principle worked!

This minor event was destined to give a new course to aeronautical progress, but no one foresaw it at the time. The event took place, it seems, in 1939; and from then on, the new aerodynamics began to take shape in both England and Germany.

The porous ceramic baffles were, however, soon replaced with materials that were stronger from a structural point of view but equally permeable.[10]

The British worked with a great variety of sheets: asbestos, phosphor bronze, glass textiles similar to Fiberglas, duralumin and various alloys.[11] During 1943–1944 the Germans also initiated a long series of researches on the sinterization of light alloys based on aluminum and magnesium and on both solid and porous aluminum bronze.[12] In Göttingen and Volkenrode the experts in the new techniques of flight gave these sintered porous materials the felicitous name of *Luftschwamm* (aerosponge) and proposed to revolutionize the laws of resistance to the forward motion of airplanes.

We still do not know whether they achieved any practical results. We do know the significant fact that in the autumn of 1945 Professor Thwaites of the Aerodynamics Division of the National Physical Laboratory brought together in an internal technical report—A.R.C. No. 9672: *Notes on German Theoretical Work on Porous Suction*—all the notes taken from the examination of German researches on porous materials (for which a special team of investigators had been formed), comparing them with what had been done up to then in England and with what the British intended to do in the near future.[13]

Needless to say, the report still bears the label “top secret.” Nevertheless, a very small part of that information, unfortunately restricted entirely to the physical and mathematical fields of research on wing surfaces, came to the knowledge of the Americans. Professor Dry den of the National Advisory Committee for Aeronautics mentioned it publicly at the sixth International Congress of Applied Mechanics, which took place in Paris in September 1946.

In the first German experiments the velocity of the flow from suction was very low (not more than 2 percent of the velocity of the apparent wind) and the quantity of sucked air was therefore modest. But later on, by using more powerful pumps and improved porous sheets, they began to experiment with the dynamic pressure gradients developed at higher flight speeds, and 497.10 mph was now considered an “optimum” for the cruising speed of suction flight at altitudes between 20,000 and 40,000 feet.[14]

THE RELF LECTURE

The history of British postwar researches on suction is rather complicated—quite understandably, given the concatenation of circumstances.

The dissolution, or, better, the metamorphosis, of the M.A.P. into the Ministry of Supply coincided with Sir Melville Jones’ resignation as secretary of the Aeronautical Research Council, the largest British government body concerned with the planning and development of aeronautical research.

In giving the news of his resignation—said to be for reasons of health—the technical publications referred briefly to the fact that in the last three years he had exercised “a great influence on the direction of government research, having successfully reorganized the old Committee and made it a council that was more in tune with the new times.” In addition, he had laid down the plans for equipping the new experimental center at Bedford and for setting up the aeronautical college at Cranfield—a sort of scientific academy for the use of the R.A.F. and industry. A forty-two-year-old professor of applied mathematics at the University of Manchester, Sydney Goldstein, took Sir

Melville Jones' place. Goldstein was indefatigable in his research on "Frictionless Flow" at the National Physical Laboratory.[15]

The stature and work of this new personage would have been confined to the small world of specialists in the field if Professor Relf had not briefly explained the work of the Teddington staff in his Wilbur Wright Lecture, which was covered by reporters from all the major newspapers. Relf had been superintendent of the aerodynamic division of the National Physical Laboratories in Teddington until December 31, 1945.

Professor Relf began his interesting report by saying that although during the war they were particularly interested in bringing research on problems that were useful to the immediate war aims to completion, "the war years have produced some new ideas and discoveries that bid fair to open up revolutionary lines of progress in aeronautics. Some of these new ideas are still veiled in secrecy, but the veil has now been lifted. . . .

"I think it is fair to say that although aerodynamic research has always been full of interest, and even excitement, there never has been a time in which so many spectacular possibilities have been displayed before our eyes."

Ten years before, in 1936, during the proceedings of the James Forrest Conference, Relf had called the attention of experts to the usefulness of extending control of the boundary layer over as much of the surface of the aircraft as possible, since the evidence indicated that aerodynamic resistance could under the best of circumstances be reduced to about 10 percent of the current value—though this would not, of course, be easy to achieve.[16]

Like the experts listening to him, he surely could not have imagined at the time that the day would come when substantial progress in that direction would be made right there in England.

"HUMPED" AIRFOILS

During the war, but before the Anglo-American military agreement on reciprocal exchange of scientific information went into effect, rumors were circulating in American aeronautical circles about certain strange wing shapes with pointed trailing edges; and the Americans wondered what in the world was the purpose of them.

These new aeronautical shapes resulted principally from theoretical investigations worked out mathematically by Professor Goldstein, who had succeeded in defining "by points" the form of a two-dimensional body (an airfoil) developing a given distribution of the fluid velocity and hence of lift.[17]

On the basis of the theoretical premises, experts in the aerodynamics section of the National Physical Laboratory at first studied and designed elliptical airfoils with a tapering trailing edge and subsequently a new series or "family" of exceedingly strange, thick airfoils, generally having a roundish or lobate leading edge and a concave-convex trailing edge that came to a point and that had one or more suction slots where the concave-convex profile began. This family derived from an idea of Dr. A. A. Griffith. In 1942, it occurred to him to extend the Goldstein theory to the field of suction, by following the principle of "adapting the airfoil shape to the process of suction." In other words, Dr. Griffith tried to create true "suction airfoils," which in laboratory jargon were called "humped" airfoils because of their thick, curved upper surfaces that seemed like meaningless deformations to the layman.

Dr. Griffith experimented with several such profiles, differing in thickness, shape, or the position of the tail hollow, at the compressed-air tunnel of the National Physical Laboratory. He found that a "humped wing" easily developed lift coefficients on the order of 2.5 and that lift was about quintupled in comparison with the best wings of the period. The enthusiasm raised by these early results was, however, destined to be short-lived, for the aerodynamic resistance of the "humped wings" considerably exceeded the theoretical estimates. Furthermore, the studies conducted by the National Physical Laboratory experts to bring the grade of efficiency of those otherwise highly advantageous airfoils to at least an acceptable level came to nothing. In addition to Griffith, Richards, Lighthill, and Glauert also had a crack at the difficult problem. They designed a number of new airfoils of different shapes and thicknesses but did not get at the root of the trouble.[18]

To explain the long series of failures, it was finally concluded that turbulence in the wind tunnel altered the results of the phenomenon, which was really more favorable than the test results suggested since it had, after all, been promised by a theory that, also from the mathematical point of view, was flawless.

Since it had proved impossible to establish the actual level of efficiency of the humped airfoils through wind-tunnel tests, it was suggested at the Commonwealth conference on aeronautical research held in London in June 1946 that it might be a good idea to try them in flight tests on full-sized models by adapting an existing plane for the purpose.[19]

The Division of Aeronautical Research of the Australian Council for Scientific and Industrial Research undertook the job. Working in close collaboration with the National Physical Laboratory, they modified a large De Havilland G-2 troop transport glider. The humped wing was built with three slots along the back; a centrifugal fan powered by a Ford V-8 engine in the fuselage sucked the boundary layer through the slots and the hollow rectangular spar (the A.V.A. system). This air was then exhausted out the rear of the plane, developing sufficient thrust by reaction to maintain the craft in line of flight but not enough to enable it to take off by itself.

At the beginning of October 1948 the glider was shipped to the Royal Australian Air Force airdrome in Laverton, Victoria, where the tests took place, the glider being towed to its test altitude by a Dakota.

After the glider’s first flights, Professor Coombes declared with obvious disappointment that all the mechanical problems had been clarified but that the usefulness of the new sucked airfoils still remained “to be proved”—a simple euphemism to mask a complete failure.

OTHER PLANES WITH “NO TOMORROW”

In October 1948—when the UFOs already had a good sixteen months of aerial incursions to their credit (it was the other branch of research on suction that had for some time surpassed the stage of technical and operational maturity of the formula)—the "humped" wings that had been so theoretically brilliant but practically inefficient joined the supersonic M-52 plane in the government files of abandoned projects, along with sketches for subsonic "flying wing" transports with "humped" wings and two laminar "flying wings." The two latter had actually been built and flown, to a great public display of optimism, one in 1942 and the other in November 1947.

These were prototypes of an all-wing glider (AW-52-G Bat) and two examples of a twin-engined all-wing jet (AW-52 Boomerang), made by the Armstrong Whitworth Aircraft company.[20]

On November 13, 1947, one of the powered AWs successfully completed its first flight at the R.A.F. experimental station at Boscombe Down, with chief test pilot A. G. Franklin at the controls. About ten months of frequent test flights followed, then the Ministry authorized its presentation to the public. By tradition, this took place at Farnborough during the annual review of British aircraft production, September 7 to 9, 1948.

Roaring and shrieking, the plane performed its evolutions for a considerable time, demonstrating unusual maneuverability for a machine of its type, a clear indication of easy control, quick response to the controls, and excellent stability. Nevertheless, this was its farewell flight.

One of the planes crashed into the earth a short time later and the pilot saved himself by using the ejection seat. Little by little news about the remaining AW-52 became scarcer and scarcer, even in aeronautical circles. Then it stopped completely, and even though there was talk of the future preparation of "flying wings" of ninety tons for transatlantic transport, the model had no successors.

This could have been foreseen for a number of reasons, not the least of which was the failure of the "humped" airfoils, but above all for the following reasons, here summarized from the manufacturer's technical report:

a) because of difficulties in manufacturing and repairing the airframes. In fact, the technical report states that the first impression the wing gives is the extreme smoothness of the surface and the general care in construction. In order to insure the laminar flow, the airfoil has been made with a tolerance of one one-thousandth of an inch, and for this reason special protection of the alclad sheathing has been prescribed and a protective cloth covering is furnished for transportation. This covering is left in place on the sheathing while the work is going on and is only partially removed for the riveting operation.

All this in order to maintain the extreme smoothness of the wing sheathing!

Anyone who has worked in military aeronautics knows that precautions of this sort are all right so long as the plane is in an experimental center, but when it goes to airfields for actual use, the situation changes markedly. Dozens of airmen and specialists come in daily contact with the machine and it is utterly utopian (especially in wartime) to try to get them to "always" wear chamois gloves and slippers when working on the plane, never to let a single drop of the 1400 gallons of fuel and oil fall on the wing, to scrupulously dust off every speck of dust or damp from that enormous flying mirror (1300 square feet of surface!), and so on.

b) because of the anticipated increase in the angle of the sweep back of the wings. The report says that the extremities of the wing are tapered with a camber at the leading edge of approximately thirty-five degrees. Later planes will have even more of a backsweep so that the wing will resemble the Greek letter delta.

In fact, the later products of the Hawker Siddeley Group were not only triangular in form but were actually called Aero-Delta (the Avro 698 and the Avro 707-B, both with triangular wings), and in addition seemed to be generally similar in appearance to certain mysterious "flying triangles" that a twin-engined U.S. Air Force plane unsuccessfully pursued over Carson Sink in 1952.

c) because a new line of development—agreed upon with the Ministry of Supply—showed even greater promise. Indeed, here are the conclusions of the company's internal report: Recently it was decided to abolish the air-intakes of gas turbine powered planes by taking the air for the jet engine from the surface of the wing. It is expected that the loss of power as a result of the missing self-supercharging effect of ramming will have no importance insofar as the total performance of the plane is concerned.

And so Professor Sedille also had his precursors!

BRITISH HOPES OF REVIVAL

The Hawker Siddeley Group, which later advertised itself as the "Pioneer and World Leader in Aviation," held its ninth stockholders' meeting in London on July 12, 1945.

It was the first postwar meeting and the euphoria generated by the recent victory over Germany (the victory over Japan then rightly seemed only a matter of months) led the speakers to relax very slightly the extreme secrecy that surrounded the new projects of the powerful industrial complex. Even then it was already very large, for in addition to the two branches of A. V. Roe (of Manchester and Avro-Canada of Toronto) and Armstrong Whitworth of Bagington-Coventry, other firms with long aerotechnical experience and originality of ideas were associated with it: namely, Gloster, which for some time was working on the Meteors, the first turbine airplanes; Hawker, the builder of the famous Hurricane fighters; Armstrong Siddeley Motors; Aluminium Ltd.; and a number of minor subcontractors (the system of subcontracting is an excellent method for successfully hiding certain projects that must at all costs be kept secret). This group alone accounted for 30 percent of British aircraft production.

The press and representatives for several ministries were present at the Hawker Siddeley Group's luncheon party. The secretary of the company, Mr. Sopwith, showed scale models of several types of airplanes in project stages in the research departments of the Group. These were "flying-wing" types with various power plants. Some had piston engines (from one to six engines) and propellers; others were powered with the first British turbojets, only one of which took concrete form as a prototype (the AW-52).

Making it perfectly clear that only a part of the new ideas in gestation at Hawker Siddeley had been shown, Mr. Sopwith let himself go in his final toast with enthusiastic visions of the future. Although the idea that present conventional types of planes must be abandoned was still being debated, he said, it was nevertheless quite clear that within the relatively short space of two or three years the forms of aircraft now in existence, and likewise their engines, would be completely outdated!

Starting with 1945, a couple of years would bring us to the summer of 1947—the summer in which one of the strangest affairs of the twentieth century began.

Despite the polite probing of journalists, Mr. Sopwith declined to expand on his remarks and perhaps he was even afraid that he had said too much. In fact, for the remainder of the reception, which was now nearly over, he clammed up, as they say, whenever he was in the presence of journalists.

The Hawker Siddeley Group already employed tens of thousands of persons. Many of the numerous people on the executive level knew what was secretly being developed. It was, therefore, a foregone conclusion that someone would be indiscreet and that in the end something would leak out.

Reporters are constantly on the lookout everywhere, ready to go to any lengths to pick up any news that promises to cause a sensation. Thus when the first news leaks occurred—leaks that the publicists and ufologists cited to convince themselves that the UFOs were of terrestrial manufacture—they appeared in the London press. "*All British hopes for a revival of the aviation industry*," one of these said, "*are based on several types of turbojet engines that, according to authoritative sources, are in a stage of development already so far advanced that we can expect them to be in use by mid-1947. These planes will have fantastic speeds at altitudes over* 50,000 *feet.*"[21]

A few months before—on November 7, 1945, to be exact—the English flyer H. J. Wilson had reached a speed of 595 mph over Herne Bay in the twin jet Gloster Meteor IV.

On September 7, 1946, over Littlehampton, E. M. Donaldson bettered Wilson's speed by a bare ten miles an hour. Then it took almost eight years before the English flyer Michael Lithgow wrested the speed record (though not for long) from the Americans with a flight of 737 mph.

RECORDS AND SILENCE

Such being the case—and in view of the well-known English technical competence—how can an increase of 142 miles per hour, spread out over eight years, be calmly passed off as "fantastic speeds"? And how explain the references to altitudes of "over 50,000 feet," where these mysterious planes would achieve their maximum speeds? At such altitudes the first turbojets lost power, and thereby speed, because of the thinness of the air.

Clearly the British were neither lying nor indulging in uncharacteristic bragging. The new types of flying machines presaged such promising developments that they induced the authorities to swallow the bitter pill of the lost speed record silently in order to keep their secret intact.

The importance of that brief communication easily slipped by laymen, and the press as well. So easily that not even specialists in aeronautical matters paid the least attention to it then or later. Conversely, it should be noted that it was precisely "mid-1947," that is, on June 24, that the American businessman Kenneth Arnold saw the first glinting, nimble flying saucers going through their evolutions among the peaks of the Cascades while he was piloting his private plane over the state of Washington.

Strangely enough, those titillating leaks went more or less unobserved even in England—perhaps because of political or economic preoccupations, or simply because of the preoccupations of daily life, not the least of which was the bothersome food rationing that was continued in the name of austerity despite the Churchillian defeat of Germany. Or perhaps part of the press kept silent for political reasons. (The Conservatives were greatly embittered by the unexpected election victory of the Labour Party.)

Whatever the reasons, perhaps the same ones caused the declarations—double-distilled, in any case—of the aeronautical experts of the Ministry of Supply in its "Report to the Nation" the following July to be received with only the faintest echo. A few inches in the papers (no more than half a column, for paper was still severely rationed) and a few hasty comments in the technical journals. Nevertheless, once again there was a little leak—completely involuntary, of course!

Supporting his view that the most vital problem in aeronautics that required study was not overheating caused by aerodynamic friction in supersonic flight but human resistance to sharp accelerations, Sir Ben Lockspeiser in fact declared at one point that experiments with an airplane capable of reaching 4500 mph were being conducted for the Ministry of Supply. Now this was a truly "fantastic" speed, and one that by a strange coincidence was the stratospheric speed reported for one of the UFOs followed on the radar screen in Washington in July 1952.

THE MISUNDERSTANDING ABOUT THE ATHODYDS

The editorial comment of the authoritative journal *The Aeroplane,* the only magazine that mentioned the matter, was couched in an obviously scandalized tone. Indeed, the experiments were simply called "a dangerous thing."[22] "This is much greater speed than we are accustomed to from official enterprises," said the editorial. "In any case, the athodyd has still to be developed as a practical power proposition at rates of progress still within our comprehension."[23]

The mistaken conclusion that a ramjet plane was concerned had been induced both because during the conference Sir Ben Lockspeiser had praised this simple propulsive device and because a model of an *athodyd aircraft,* with the pilot lying prone, had been officially exhibited at the Farnborough Aeronautical Exhibition, which took place from June 27 to 29.[24] On another occasion a photographer had caught Lockspeiser in a curious meditative mood, holding the scale model of a ramjet fighter that reminded him of his recent visit to Germany. It had been a fruitful trip. No one could have dreamed that enemy technology was so far in advance also in the field of ramjets.

At the experimental station of the Walter Werke in Wik, the technicians of the T Unit had saved four perfectly operational models from the destruction ordered by their builders, together with various interesting bits of information about a prototype built in the Walter plant in Beerberg in Silesia and subsequently lost in the war.[25]

Farther south the T Unit had found other experimental machines of the same sort at Bad Eilsen, in the huge Bavarian plant of Focke Wulf, where Professor Pabst had, in addition to several ramjet fighters, designed the strange subsonic helicopter powered by rotary ramjets that went under the name *Triebflügel Flugzeug* and was capable of a speed of 500 mph. Later, many ill-informed publicists incorrectly concluded that this was the father of flying discs of possible terrestrial manufacture.[26]

Still farther south, in Aiming in the Bavarian alps, the T Unit men found the giant D.F.S. engines, which had already been flight tested by Professor Sänger; and then in Austria they found the strange propulsive tubes operating on "coal slag" built by the Viennese Luftfahrtsforschung.[27]

The best jet planes of the time, the British record-holding turbine-engined Gloster Meteors, barely reached a speed of 620 mph. The German rocket engines seized as war booty did not appear, at least for the moment, to provide much more speed. Even the highly touted ramjets failed in the stratosphere. No new direction in air technology then known justified the enormous progress announced by the Ministry of Supply.

By a curious coincidence, the press did not ask for either confirmation or details (which perhaps would not have been granted), but the supporters of high-speed flight immediately found that England had equally determined opponents—in the opposition party.

The papers of the period reported that Lord Mottistone's speech in the House of Lords during the second debate on the Civil Aviation Bill raised a number of conflicting views when he excitedly asked for the floor in order to criticize "our lust for speed," directed toward developing ever faster airplanes whose pilots would be "condemned to a terrible ordeal!"[28] The shelving of the supersonic M-52 had already been decided and acted on since February, but Lord Mottistone's oratorical volley came just at the right time to make the impelling necessity of the action still more acceptable.

As for the athodyds, in succeeding years some experimental planes powered with ramjets did fly in the United States and France. But none flew in England.[29]

THE COMMONWEALTH CONFERENCES

A third source of leaks—somewhat delayed, but very valuable and immediately plugged—appeared in the circle of the Aeronautical Research Council itself, which in June 1946, at the behest of the Ministry of Supply, called a Commonwealth Conference on Aeronautical Research. Held in London, the meeting brought together a hundred experts connected with both governmental and private institutes of air technology in Great Britain, Canada, Australia, New Zealand, and South Africa.

Organized by the retiring secretary, Sir Melville Jones, this was the third such conference to take place after the limited conference between Great Britain and Canada in the summer of 1941 that spelled out the close collaboration between their two industries (especially concerning war production and "certain proposals for scientific investigations to be conducted in the Dominion") and the big Commonwealth meeting in the autumn of 1944, which was mainly directed toward the future of aeronautical research. Part of the work of the third assembly was communicated to the press. Secret sessions were conducted behind closed doors. Nevertheless, a crack did open.

The official comment released at the end of the conference by the Ministry of Supply and the Aeronautical Research Council was vague and cloudy, but not without importance. It established, for example, this solid point: "The best progress in research can be expected only from investigation of a few specific designs combined with a study of the fundamental physical problems which arise in the course of development and construction. We have also commended this for serious consideration."[30]

Not that anyone would have dared doubt it—but what was this serious consideration?

This we heard through a B.B.C. broadcast in August 1946, a bumper year for leaks that were to the advantage of the press and the history of ufology: "The little village of Thurleigh in Bedfordshire will soon become the largest aeronautical research center in the world. The new experimental station that will be constructed there will cost twenty million pounds and its scientific program will include the development of three different categories of aircraft:

"1) low-speed machines, that is, those slower than 450 mph and that can, therefore, still advantageously use propellers.

"2) machines that will have a speed of 1000 mph.

"3) *machines that it is hoped will be able to reach at least 1500 mph. According to some experts, these planes have already been built and tested and it is probable that in the near future they will be flying over Great Britain. If necessary, such planes could fly nonstop around the world many times, because they need fuel only for take-off and landing. Great Britain has already astonished the world with its excellent turbojet engines, but this new development of British scientists is the greatest step that aeronautics has taken since man began to fly.*"[31]

THE ORIGIN OF THE NATIONAL AERONAUTICAL ESTABLISHMENT

The intention to create a large experimental center on very modern principles in order to put Great Britain in the vanguard of aviation took concrete form in 1943, when the Ministry of Aircraft Production commissioned the Aeronautical Research Council to draft an estimate of the equipment considered essential for carrying out research in what would presumably be the aeronautical future in the first five years of peace.

In the Aeronautical Research Committee's internal report No. 7500, the experts of the committee (it was not yet elevated to the rank of council; that came in 1945, with the war's end) suggested that the experimental establishments be centralized in the Bedford area, specifically in the village of Thurleigh, which would have to be sacrificed to make room for the large hangars and cement runways for the new airplanes. Parallel to this scheme, and carefully worked out down to the least detail, were various suggestions for the development of engine research, with particular reference to gas turbines. Later these suggestions became the basis for the conversion of Power Jets Ltd. into the N.G.T.E. governmental center.

The new center at Bedford was supposed to absorb part of the existing facilities in Farnborough, the old and praiseworthy Royal Aeronautical Establishment, especially the equipment concerning research on supersonic flight. Immediately after the war, the plan was modified to include German plants seized as war booty, some of which, however, were later silently put on ships for other destinations—Canada and Australia.

In August 1946 the Ministry of Supply released to the press the first details about the new center, which appeared to be modeled on the once justly celebrated Italian “aeronautical city” of Guidonia. Since the original village was completely swallowed up by the new constructions, the center officially received the name of the nearby city of Bedford and the organization itself was named the National Aeronautical Establishment. Five thousand people, including 1400 scientists and technical specialists, were envisaged as working there.[32]

In July 1948 official news about the National Aeronautical Establishment appeared for the second time. It reported that “despite the present economic difficulties” preparations for the center were proceeding apace.

The first of the eight supersonic wind tunnels that had been planned—the one that measured three by three feet and could develop a continuous flow at 1500 mph—did not go into operation until 1950. Work on the last five—developing an intermittent flow of 2600 mph—did not start until the beginning of 1954.

Nevertheless, despite the notable amounts of energy and money expended, no truly “revolutionary” airplane was ever seen to taxi down the runways of the National Aeronautical Establishment. Originally—that is, when the East Bloc threat was still in a purely formal state—these runways had been constructed to fill the skies with the three fundamental types of airplanes which were to put the seal on British air supremacy. Let us examine these categories a bit more closely.

The first type obviously doesn't interest us. The second type, erroneously including the supersonic M-52, which was to have reached a top speed of 1000 mph but unhappily reached only the files of the Ministry of Supply, appears instead to have been assigned to certain aircraft destined to develop their top speeds in the relatively dense air of altitudes just below or just within the stratospheric range: cigar-shaped aircraft with tiny wings and jet-lift, airplanes with triangular wings of a special sort described as "gothic," and "convertible" airplanes with retractable wings hinged at the fuselage—planes for which 1000 mph was not the goal but the starting point and whose subsequent rare appearances also figure in the case-histories of the UFOs.

The third type, which according to London press circles included the Ministry of Supply's ramjet plane—the wild discrepancy between the publicized performance (4500 mph the first time and only 1500 mph later) was taken to indicate that a healthy realism had prevailed—indicated that an extraordinary type of airplane existed. It was not only capable of surpassing, and perhaps by a considerable margin, the still unreachable speed of Mach 2, but was propelled by an astonishing kind of engine that burned fuel only during take-offs and landings. In the stratosphere it would not have used any fuel at all.

THE THIRD CATEGORY

More than twenty years have passed since the B.B.C. broadcast that communiqué thick with astounding promises and supported by Sir Ben Lockspeiser's most thoughtful declarations. But we have still officially to see the prodigious planes that the B.B.C. heralded back in 1946.

"Officially" is the operative word, because "practically" it is now twenty years that these aircraft have been appearing, disappearing, reappearing and disappearing again, generally in well-defined periods, astonishingly fast, almost everywhere, never overtaken, and never identified. They are the delight and desperation of ufologists and newspapers, who can search as much as they like to find anything that even remotely resembles the B.B.C. broadcast either in the American press of the time or among the "rumors" about secret Soviet production (almost always inflated beyond all belief) or that would justify equally well the mysterious apparitions of the following years.

Even within British aeronautical circles the news was received and commented on with a certain detached skepticism because of the phrase "flying without using fuel," which smacked too much of the Utopia of visionaries dedicated to discovering perpetual motion. There is no motive impulse without the expenditure of energy, they said, and to produce it something has to be consumed. All too true.

But when Sir Ben Lockspeiser, or someone speaking for him, stated that *those planes would not have burned fuel, he did not implicitly rule out the use of a propellant easily found along the flight path, proportionately accelerated and expelled.*

In fact, anyone who took the trouble to query those in the circle of the Ministry of Supply with the proper circumspection would have received an evasive but sufficiently explicit answer: namely, that the planes in question would have used "*the inexhaustible natural energies present in the atmosphere at very high altitudes*."

All right! Whether or not this explanation was true, the matter then became more credible. In the light of that long-ago revelation, the very long hovering of the intensely bright UFO that flew very slowly over the Spanish province of Albacete from 7:00 A.M. to 12:00 noon on June 26, 1953, also becomes credible. The object was at a superstratospheric altitude—between fifty and sixty miles up. Any other known type of jet-lift aircraft after at most a half-hour of continuous hovering in the favorably dense space of the lower atmosphere would have plummeted like a stone.

Detailed analysis of the B.B.C. broadcast brings out another very important fact. According to some experts, those mysterious aircraft had "already been tested," and it was probable that they would be flying over Great Britain "in the near future."

Once again blowing hot and cold: did that mean, then, that these craft not only existed but that they had passed the study stage in wind tunnels and by means of models and were already flying like real airplanes?

Where had they been prepared, since the Bedford center did not get under way, and then only partially, until 1950?

For a number of years the Royal Aeronautical Establishment of Farnborough had been in operation on British soil. This center had a number of high-altitude supersonic wind tunnels, developing wind speeds ranging from 970 to 3580 mph. These were small plants adapted immediately after the war from the old equipment for research on piston engines. This center had contributed in great measure to the beginning studies on questions concerning suction and porous bronzes.

Nevertheless, how can we reconcile the possibility that the aircraft in the third category were built in the British Isles with the fact that the new machines would soon "be flying over Great Britain"? Evidently the first test flights and the preparations for them were carried out elsewhere, after the hook had been closed on the German chapter and not yet opened on the British one.

Information obtained from Ministry of Supply circles at the time located the "elsewhere" a bit more precisely: "*overseas*." Even more confidential information was even more specific: "*in the new Canadian factories*."

A year later the flying saucers—the genuine New Aeronautics of the postwar period—took off on their prodigious flight from the remote western regions of the faithful Dominion, catching by complete surprise the forgetful public, the press, and even aeronautical experts who had been hardened by excessive skepticism. Barely a year later!

With time, people's memory of the original news leaks became so vague that it was possible to "produce" tiny macrocephalic Martians; delicate blond Venusians; the beautiful Aura Rahnes, the saucer pilot from the planet Clarion; the Uranians; the Ethereans; and the whole vast range of creatures that today are known throughout the world under the general appellation of "Our Brothers from Space," who bear messages of salvation for Humanity.

From Top Secret to farce.

NOTES

1. See M. J. Bamber, *Wind Tunnel Tests on Airfoil Boundary Layer Control Using a Backward-Opening Slot* (N.A.C.A., Report No. 385, Washington, 1931), p. 38. Working with a wing section having a "blown" top surface—arranged at varying incidences from minus 6° to plus 30° and with an artificial wind of 40 mph—at the incident of minus 6° Bamber obtained negative drag coefficients ($-C_r$ max. = -0.12) deriving from the interaction between the reduction of the profile drag and the thrust produced by the reaction of the air blowing through the slot on the top surface. Bamber concluded his report by pointing out that in order to make a functioning "jet-wing" (that is, of the type invented three years before by Katzmayr and lumping together into a single whole the lift and propulsive functions in place of the propeller), and in order to obtain thereby, thanks to the permanent development of negative C_r, horizontal flight and climb, it was necessary for the "negative drag" to exceed the sum of the passive drag of the wing and of the other parts of the plane (fuselage, controls, landing gear, and windshield). Even in this case the only solution worth trying would have been the adoption of an appropriate "flying-wing" formula.

2. It might be a good idea to recall that in 1947 Professor L. G. Whithead of the Royal Aeronautical Establishment declared decisively that the proposed move away from the common airfoil to suction airfoils would be perhaps a still greater change than that which led from the conformation of the slow biplane to that of the fast monoplane. Despite the interesting studies of Professor Busemann and of the Italian A. Ferri, aeronautical technology would never have been able to achieve what it did in supersonic speeds with the glorious old prewar biplane.

3. Apropos of this it should be noted that occasional observers have independently affirmed that if the back of the flying discs—when they are hovering in mid-air or maneuvering at very low altitudes—was struck by a glancing ray of sunlight it gave off a strange shimmering light. Ufologists delude them-

selves when they seek to explain the phenomenon by anti-gravity or, worse yet, anti-matter. It is the reflection in the sunlight of the convective movement generated by the energetic suction of the air layers next to the top surface of the aircraft. But the best proof of intense local air suction is offered to us by a little-known episode that occurred on October 20, 1954, when the UFOs seemed to spread over a good part of the inhabited world. Leaving his house very early in the morning in a distant suburb of Teheran, the Persian businessman Ghasim Faili saw a mysterious circular "thing" in an empty lot near his house giving off a reflection from the moonlight. When he approached the machine close enough to see that a human being was moving around inside it, "with a head like an elephant because of the strange headgear" (evidently a pilot equipped for breathing in the stratosphere), and placed his hand on the edge of the object, his curiosity soon gave way to fear. "Allah help me!" exclaimed the unfortunate witness, remarking that with a "sort of strong suction" the strange device seemed to pull him toward it (more than one careless mechanic has lost his life or been seriously injured when he went too close to the intake of a turbojet being ground tested). As Faili shouted for help, the disc hummed dully and an instant later took off vertically, giving off "a strong, hot blast."

4. The bibliography on the subject amounts to about fifty works. The following Aeronautical Research Council Reports and Memoranda are basic and of particular historical interest since they were the first chronologically: G. J. Taylor, *The Aerodynamics of Porous Sheets* (A.R.C., R.&M. No. 2237, London, H.M.S.O., 1944), p. 14; G. J. Taylor, *Air Resistance of a Flat Plate of Very Porous Material* (A.R.C., R.&M. No. 2236, London, H.M.S.O., 1944), p. 4; Simmons and Cowdrey, *Measurements of the Aerodynamic Forces Acting on Porous Screen* (A.R.C., R.&M. No. 2276, London, H.M.S.O., 1949), p. 20; J. H. Preston, *The Boundary Layer Flow over a Permeable Surface through which Suction Is Applied* (A.R.C., R.&M. No. 2244, London, H.M.S.O., 1946), p. 29; B. Thwaites, *On the Flow Past a Flat Plate with Uniform Suction* (A.R.C., R. & M. No. 2481, London, H.M.S.O., 1952), p. 11.

Other complementary works will be cited in successive notes.

For a more extensive bibliography see R. C. Pankhurst, *N.P.L. Aerofoil Catalogue and Bibliography* (A.R.C. Current Paper No. 81, London, H.M.S.O., 1952), p. 20.

5. While the functioning of an internal jet or rocket—that is, independently of the contribution of the atmosphere—would be practically irreconcilable with the various speeds of flight and the astonishing ranges reported of the circular-shaped UFOs.

6. *Cf.* Sir Ben Lockspeiser, "Progress in Aeronautics," *Nature* (London, No. 157, 1946), pp. 787–792.

7. Sinterizing is a metallurgical procedure that, starting from specially prepared metallic powders, makes it possible to manufacture economically pieces of relatively complicated shapes to close degrees of tolerance under cold, dry pressure. The pieces thus formed are then placed in controlled atmosphere ovens, where a temperature close to that of fusion reestablishes the molecular cohesion by restoring the mechanical characteristics of the original metal. In the prewar period, industrial production of sinterized parts had been practically developed along four basic lines:

1) sinterization of hard metals (tungsten, cobalt, molybdenum, vanadium, etc.) for the manufacture of machine tools and all those mechanisms that must operate at very high Rockwell numbers or that require a high degree of surface hardness.

2) sinterization of bronze or iron for the manufacture of parts with exceedingly complicated shapes that would be too costly to produce by machining. (This process follows the system of stamped plastics.)

3) porous sinterization of bronze, iron, and aluminum for the manufacture of bushings, guide shoes, thrust bearings, etc., that absorb appropriate lubricants and consequently possess the characteristic of self-lubrication for a long period of time.

4) sinterization of bronze—or, more rarely, of other metals—with a controlled porosity to serve as air, water, oil, and gasoline filters, or as filters for other fluids generally. (Around

1935 the Krupp locomotives were equipped with condensers with porous baffles. Four years later, at Farnborough, British technicians using the same type of material perfected the Dunlop T.K.S. deicing wing.)

In the postwar period the technology of sinterization developed three new productive systems:

5) sinterization of plasto-metallic materials in order to impregnate metals with plastic substances for lubricant seals or waterproof parts.

6) sinterization of cero-metallics, obtained by mixing metal and mineral powders (porcelain clay [kaolin], alumina, feldspar, etc.) in order to produce material with a slow specific weight and a high mechanical and thermal resistance. (For example, experimental vanes for turbine engines.)

7) sinterization of metals with the infiltration of a different metal or of metallic carbides, in which the parent metal (aluminum, iron, copper, steel, bronze, etc.), possesses intercrystalline inclusions of copper or aluminum or of vanadium or titanium carbides, or nickel-chromium alloy or cupronikel for the manufacture of matte-finished parts that are resistant to very high temperatures or are self-cooling. (In the United States the Thompson Products Corporation mass-produced until a short time ago vanes for aircraft turbines employing iron powder impregnated with molten copper in final molding.)

8) porous sinterization of special and ordinary steels for filtering and measuring very hot liquids.

As far as the specific subject of the UFOs is concerned, British production of light bronzes and aluminum is significant. They have been manufactured for some time with the “ground” metals at Coventry by Powderloys Ltd., according to exact technical specifications worked out by the huge Anglo-Canadian industrial complex Aluminium Ltd. and by the Fulmer Research Institute of Stoke Poges in Buckinghamshire. The latter was founded by Colonel Wallace Charles Devereux, who carried out important ministerial functions in the Ministry of Supply from 1941 to the end of the war.

Therefore, even the porous bronze briefly mentioned by Professor Relf was not, in an absolute sense, anything really new.

8. See Ernest F. Relf, "Recent Aerodynamic Developments," *Journal of the Royal Aeronautical Society* (London, May/June 1946), pp. 421–449.

9. Professor Ackeret succeeded in the intention, thanks to the proper distancing of the suction slots.

10. In fact, it was Doctor Roff, of the chemical laboratory attached to the Department for Scientific and Industrial Research, who suggested that Dr. Preston, of the aerodynamic laboratory, replace the fragile ceramic with a porous bronze (at first called sintered bronze, then Porous Phosphor Bronze, and finally, in happy simplification, porosint). A type with controlled porosity obtained by the techniques of powder metallurgy was chosen. The first experimental samples—sheets measuring six by twelve inches with thicknesses running from one-sixteenth to one-eighth of an inch and pores measuring from 2.5 to 100 microns in diameter—immediately proved to have a satisfactory distribution of porosity relative to the aims of the study. In addition, the original porosint could be easily welded or brazed. Unfortunately, it had the defects of being somewhat heavier than the ordinary sheets used for the skin and of having lower mechanical resistance. And this was not all. At the beginning of 1945, when Dr. Preston and his associates had finished the technical tests and went on to the wind-tunnel experiments, it was discovered that because of the tortuous construction of the air cells, this "labyrinthine structure" retained rain water, slowing down the anticipated rate of suction. Then small screens of phosphor bronze were woven with a density of 240 wires per square inch and then copper plated, but the results were disappointing because the process was so rudimentary. After the laboratory equipment had been improved and the intensity of the galvanic current increased, they first tried electroplating with granular cuprite and then tried nickel plating. In a later research stage they prepared porous grills of large dimensions and an effort was made to strengthen them by applying vitreous sheeting to the edges. Another partial disappointment: the wind-tunnel tests demonstrated that there were considerable local variations in the degree of

permeability of the material. From the technological point of view, however, the system of the reticulated sheet with granular cupronickel plating fulfilled all hopes, the mechanical properties of the material proving to be nearly equal to those of a thin sheet of solid metal. Following this, other improvements were gradually adopted in the experimental cycle of production of porous materials. Reticulates running from 120 to 240 interstices per square inch in plated bronze produced by cold lamination and resulting in flat, smooth surfaces proved to be an unprecedented success. Using the same procedure, excellent sheets with "variable porosity along one side" were finally produced.

11. The typical request for maximum porosity remaining constant—parallel with the most advanced experiments on porosint—the experts of the National Physical Laboratory immediately investigated other materials that, with a similar degree of aerodynamic permeability, offered or gave promise of offering greater mechanical resistance. In the Aeronautical Research Council reports relative to the postwar experiments on airfoils, in fact, can be found vague references to possible substitute materials such as sheets of synthetic resin with asbestos (durestos), which, however, proved excessively hydroscopic; vinyl resins of the expansion (or spongy) type with a metal reticulate incorporated in the resinous mass; cerometallic sheets in which the metal was principally alumina; and bronze reticulate sheets used as a support for layers of nylon fabric or glass fabric similar to Fiberglas and Fiberfraz. In addition, there were even vaguer references to exceedingly light sinterized and plated products of aluminum and duralumin. It may perhaps astonish the reader that a weak metal-like aluminum was included among the metals to be used in a porous state, but sinterization gives metals special mechanical characteristics by raising their tensile strength and resistance to corrosion through a very wide range of temperature from –50°C. to 500° C.

12. The principal suppliers of the experimental materials were the Plansee Werke of Reute, in the Tyrol, and the Vereinigte

Leichmetall Werke of Linden, a suburb of the city of Hannover, which specialized in the field of powder metallurgy. Concerning the German sinterization industry, see R. A. Hetzig, *Powder Metallurgy in Germany During the Period* 1939–1945 (British Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee "Overall Report" No. 20, London, H.M.S.O., 1949), p. 27.

13. Two years later Thwaites himself, in collaboration with Prof. H. B. Irving, established in another internal report (No. 10,720, *Research Summary of Boundary Layer Control Problems*) all the developments that had been planned for the work that was carried out at the National Physical Laboratory in that sector as well.

14. At such altitudes the air is already sufficiently rarefied and its index of kinetic velocity so high that the minuscule superficial roughness of the *Luftschwamm* would not have had in practice any appreciable negative influence on the functioning of suction. Concerning the directives for the German research see H. Schlichting, *The Boundary Layer of the Flat Plate Under Conditions of Suction and Air Injection* (R.T.P. translation No. 1753 of the British Ministry of Aircraft Production, London, 1945; taken from *Luftfahrtforschung,* Bd. 19, Lfg. 5 to 9, October 20, 1942, pp. 293–301). Even today the current opinion among the best qualified air technologists is that a good airplane with sucked wings should not exceed 500 mph under penalty of losing its efficiency because compressibility drag comes into play. This consideration—quite valid, for it has been proved by a long series of wind-tunnel tests—naturally concerns *airplanes of the conventional type,* in which only the wings are subject to a *limited* reduction process according to the usual means of removing the "dead air" from the top surface depression.

15. His basic and most important work, *Una teoria per il calcolo di profili alari aventi piccolo spessore,* was published in a number of installments by the Aeronautical Research Council between May 1942 and March 1945 in internal Reports and Memoranda Nos. 5804–6156–6225 (with the collaboration of

E. J. Richards) and Nos. 8548–8549–8877 (with the collaboration of H. I. Preston).

16. According to his statement, in addition to airfoils as strictly understood, aerodynamic bodies with an extended laminar boundary layer were also studied and tested at the National Physical Laboratory. The Aeronautical Research Council's bibliography is silent on this matter save for the experiments with porous cylinders.

17. See Prof. Sidney Goldstein, "Low Drag and Suction Airfoils," *Journal of the Aeronautical Sciences* (New York, April 1948), pp. 189–214; and Prof. M. J. Lighthill, *A New Method of Two-Dimensional Aerodynamic Design* (Aeronautical Research Council Reports and Memoranda No. 2112, London, H.M.S.O., 1945), p. 53.

18. Here, in chronological order, is a necessarily superficial and summary review of the British research into cusped (or "humped") airfoils. The germ of the idea is to be found in the Goldstein theory (worked out between 1939 and 1942) of the computation of the characteristics of any sort of airfoil through the evaluation, point by point, of the distribution of speed along the airfoil. Later (1940–1941) Dr. A. A. Griffith, while studying a system to meet the separation of the boundary layer in a convergent diffuser, extended the results of his investigations on bowed airfoils and designed the first example of a "humped" airfoil characterized by an unevenness of speed at the tail section. A theoretical contribution by Sir Geoffrey Taylor (1943) made it possible for professors Richards (in 1944), Lighthill (in 1945), Glauert (in 1945), and Gregory (in 1946) to perfect the principle later on, thereby giving rise to other bowed airfoils variously thickened or shaped in the rear portion. These airfoils were subjected to a long period of wind-tunnel testing and proved to have exceedingly high lift coefficients but low efficiency, with often uncertain results because of disturbances caused by the defective functioning of the aspiration slots (acting at times like organ pipes), and therefore with a trailing edge movement of the boundary layer

different from that anticipated in the case of the integrally laminar flow. The principal types of cusped airfoils show clearly the many solutions that were tried. Two types were designed by Dr. Griffith, one by Professor Richards, four by Professor Lighthill. One (called Glass II) is the work of Professor Glauert (his had a suction slot with an internal chamber or collector to move the dead air from the wing surface to the suction pump).

19. During his lecture on low-resistance suction airfoils at the Institute of Aeronautical Sciences in New York on December 17, 1947, Professor Goldstein said that the model of a complete airplane with a symmetrical airfoil having a pointed trailing edge and with a thickness of 16 percent had, among other types, been experimented on in the Royal Aeronautical Establishment’s wind tunnel. He gave no further details. He was referring, however, to the adaptation of new contours along the lines of the twin-jet Gloster Meteor fighter, holder of the world speed record. But this also led nowhere. (*Cf.* D. A. Clarke, *Wind Tunnel Tests on a Griffith Meteor Model* (*Without Suction*), (Aeronautical Research Council “Current Paper” No. 37, London, H.M.S.O., 1951), p. 9.

20. The Bat experimental glider was a one-third-scale model of the twin-jet Boomerang and was constructed in order to study the aerodynamic behavior of the new formula in actual flight. In flight trim the twin-jet weighed 33,000 pounds and was powered by two Rolls Royce Nene turbojets partially faired into the wing. The wings (with a span of ninety feet and a maximum chord of thirty-six feet) had a “laminar profile,” as the director of scientific research of the Ministry of Supply had expressly requested, and in addition boundary layer control was limited to the trailing edge of the wing tips, in order to improve the stability of the plane at low speeds. In 1944, when tests with the glider had brought to light the advantage of using such reduced suction, Rolls Royce prepared a special version (Mark III) of the Derwent turbojet, with 2300 pounds of static thrust, which was then shelved in favor of the more modern Nene. (*Cf.* “*L’Armstrong Whitworth AW-52 senza*

coda con due reattori," *Rivista Aeronautica* (Rome, September 1947), pp. 553–560; and "*L'aeroplano tutt'ala* AW-52 *azionato da turbina a gas a getto*," *Rivista Aeronautica* (Rome, December 1947), pp. 781–784.

21. See "*Dalla stampa: Speranze inglesi*," *L'Ala* (Florence, March 1946), p. 6.

22. See "A Dangerous Thing," in the column "Matters of Moment," *The Aeroplane* (London, August 9, 1946).

23. The ramjet (statoreacteur, athodyd) is the simplest of the "exojets," or aeronautical jet power plants that make use of the air as a propulsive mass, scooping it up by forward motion. The ramjet has no primary rotating elements (compressor or turbine) and the air is compressed spontaneously through the effect of the special divergent conformation of the long forward air scoop (the diffuser). The fuel is injected where the conduit is largest and the flow has the lowest internal velocity and hence the maximum pressure. In the next cylindrical portion (the interheater) the mixture burns under constant pressure and the increase of temperature causes the burned air to expand through the short, converging tail tube (the propelling nozzle) with a speed greater than on entry, thus generating the reaction thrust. Unfortunately, for obvious reasons (*i.e.,* the tube is open at both ends) the ramjet does not function when stationary but begins to give an appreciable thrust and to become efficient only at a speed of 1000 feet per second, and, equal to the speed reached, its thrust coefficient diminishes with the increasing rarefication of the air owing to the lessened velocity pressure in the cycle. For a long time it was held that it would have to be limited to supersonic speeds (not above 2500 mph), but for several years hypersonic ramjets (for speeds of 7500 mph) have been under study in America and they give promise of functioning regularly along the densest borders of the high stratosphere.

24. The curious, marked thickening of the wings and tail assembly was notable and in apparent contrast with the supersonic attributes given to the model. (This is explained

by the fact that it was planned to use "elliptical" contours, which were not yet considered inefficient, on this project.) The wing recesses were to hold the large quantity of fuel that would be used by the plane, which would be propelled to a high altitude and the upper limit of subsonic speed by a pair of auxiliary external rockets. The idea never got beyond the static model and—supposing also that this has nothing to do with the M-52—perhaps it is this type of aircraft that is referred to in the Aeronautical Research Council's internal report No. 7481 (*Research on a Model of Supersonic Aircraft*), written by Dr. Warren in 1944 and still "not available."

25. See Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee, *Walter Werke, Kiel* (Report No. XXVIII-53, London, H.M.S.O., 1945), p.16.

26. See Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee, *Focke Wulf Designing Offices and General Management, Bad Eilsen* (Report No. XXVI-6, London, H.M.S.O., 1945), pp. 63–66. During 1944 the following major dimensions and maximum performance figures were established for this helicopter project (it was also called a "helicogyre"): climbing speed (vertical) 110 mph; ceiling 60,000 feet; gross weight 12,345 pounds; length 30 feet; rotor diameter 35 feet; powered by three ramjets located at the tips of the three-bladed rotor turning in neutral over the center of gravity of the fuselage. No torque reaction. Control afforded through a cross-shaped tail assembly. Ground parking in vertical position. Armament (presumed): four Mauser 20-mm cannons.

27. See Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee, *Deutsche Forschungsanstalt für Segelflug, Aiming* (Report No. XXXII-66, London, H.M.S.O., 1945), especially the section "Experiments on Coal Firing for an Athodyd," pp. 122–126; *Cf.* also G. B. Millikan, *Survey of German Ramjet Development* (C.I.O.S. Report No. XXX-81, London, H.M.S.O., July 1945), p. 23.

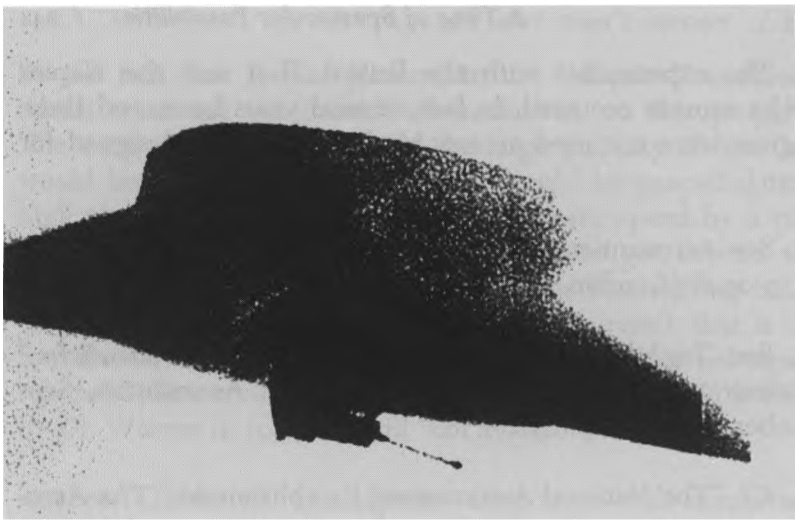
28 See "High Speed Flying and the Pilots: Lord Mottistone's Speech," *The Times* (London, July 19, 1946), p. 3.

29. The experiments with the Bristol Thor and the Napier NRJ-1 ramjets occurred, in fact, several years later, and these engines were not used on any airplane expressly designed for them.

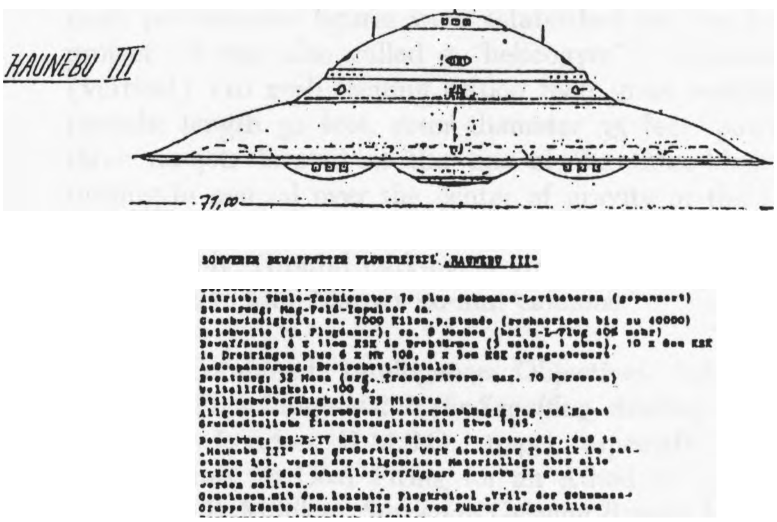
30. See Aeronautical Research Council, *Review for the Years* (London, H.M.S.O., 1950), p. 29.

31. See "*Inghilterra: Nuovo centro di ricerche aeronautiche*," *Notiziario di Aviazione* (Rome, Ministry of Aeronautics, September 16, 1946), p. 19.

32. *Cf.* "The National Aeronautical Establishment," *The Aero-Plane* (London, August 30, 1946), pp. 243–245; and "Supersonic Research," *Aeronautics* (London, Vol. XV, No. 3, October 1946), p. 71.



Alleged photo from SS files of a Haunebu II in flight circa 1944. Note the Panzer tank canon mounted underneath the craft. From the German book *Die Dunkle Seite Des Mondes* (*The Dark Side of the Moon*) by Brad Harris (1996, Pandora Books, Germany).



SCHWERER BEWAFFNETER FLUGKREISEL „HAUNEBU III"

Antrieb: Thule-Tachionator 7c plus Schumann-Levitatoren (gepanzert)
Steuerung: Mag-Feld-Impulser 4a.
Geschwindigkeit: ca. 7000 Kilom.p.Stunde (rechnerisch bis zu 40000)
Reichweite (in Flugdauer): ca. 8 Wochen (bei S-L-Flug 40% mehr)
Bewaffnung: 4 x 11cm KSK in Drehtürmen (3 unten, 1 oben), 10 x 8cm KSK in Drehringen plus 6 x MK 108, 8 x 3cm KSK ferngesteuert
Außenpanzerung: Dreischott-Viktalen
Besatzung: 32 Mann (erg. Transportverm. max. 70 Personen)
Weltallfähigkeit: 100 %.
Stillschwebefähigkeit: 73 Minuten.
Allgemeines Flugvermögen: Wetterunabhängig Tag und Nacht
Grundsätzliche Einsatztauglichkeit: Etwa 1945.

Bemerkung: SS-E-IV hält den Hinweis für notwendig, daß in „Haunebu III" ein großartiges Werk deutscher Technik im entstehen ist, wegen der allgemeinen Materiallage aber alle Kräfte auf den schneller verfügbare Haunebu II gesetzt werden sollten.
Gemeinsam mit dem leichten Flugkreisel „Vril" der Schumann-Gruppe könnte „Haunebu II" die vom Führer aufgestellten

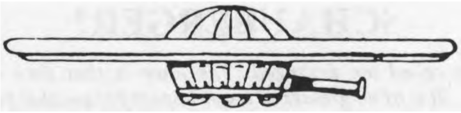
Alleged photocopy of SS plans for a Haunebu III being designed in 1945. From the German book *Die Dunkle Seite Des Mondes* (*The Dark Side of the Moon*) by Brad Harris (1996, Pandora Books, Germany).

WHO WAS VIKTOR SCHAUBERGER?

They called me deranged. The hope is that they are right. It is of no greater or lesser import for another foot to wander the earth. But if I am right and science is wrong - then may the Lord God have mercy on mankind.

Viktor Schauberger

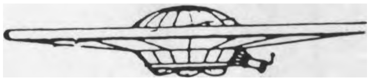
"*The destructive and dissolving form of movement is centrifugal in Nature—it forces the moving medium from the centre outwards towards the periphery in straight lines. The particles of the medium appear to be forced out from the entre. The medium is first weakened, then it dissolves and breaks up. Nature uses this action to disintegrate complexes which have lost their vivacity or have died. From the broken-down fragments, new co-ordinated forms, new identities can be created as a result of this concentrating form of movement. The centripetal, hyperbolic spiral movement is symptomatic of falling temperature, contraction, concentration. The centrifugal movement, on the other hand, is synonymous with rising temperature, heat, extension, expansion, explosion. In Nature, there is a continuous switch from one movement to the other; but if development is to occur, then the movement of growth must be predominant.*"



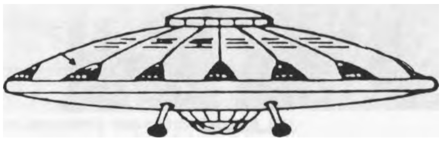
The ‘Schriever-Habermohl’ flying disc developed between 1943 and 1945. In 1944, climbing vertically, it reached a height of 12 km in 3.12 minutes and a horizontal flying speed of 2000 km/h.

VICTOR SCHAUBERGER’S FLYING SAUCERS

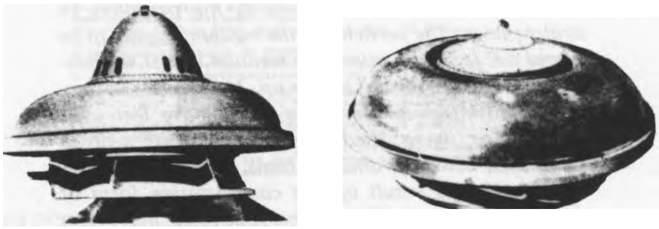
Victor Schauberger (1885–1958), an Austrian inventor who was involved with Hitler’s Third Reich, invented a number of “flying disks” for the Nazis between 1938 and 1945. Based on “liquid vortex propulsion” many of them, according to records, actually flew. One “flying saucer” reputedly destroyed at Leonstein, had a diameter of 1.5 meters, weighed 135 kilos, and was started by an electric motor of one twentieth horsepower. It had a trout turbine to supply the energy for lift-off. According to Schauberger, “If water or air is rotated into a twisting form of oscillation known as ‘colloidal’, a build up of energy results, which, with immense power, can cause levitation.” On one attempt the apparatus “rose upwards, trailing a blue-green, and then a silver colored glow.” The Russians blew up Schauberger’s apartment in Leonstein, after taking what remained that the American’s hadn’t taken first. Schauberger supposedly worked on a top secret project in Texas for the U.S. Government and died shortly afterward of ill health. On his deathbed, Schauberger repeated over and over, “They took everything from me. Everything. I don’t even own myself.”



The first test-model developed between 1941 and 1942. This had the same flight properties as that in fig. (a), but something was wrong with the controls.



The. ‘Ballenzo-Schnever-Miethe Disc’. The retractable undercarriage legs terminated in inflatable rubber cushions. It carried a crew of three.



Schauberger’s models of ‘flying saucers’

VIKTOR SCHAUBERGER PROJECTS

Institute of Ecological Technology (*IET*), *Stockholm, Sweden* (*Box 9, S-942000 Elvsbyn, Sweden*),
Institute of Ecological Techniques (*DIFOT*), *Copenhagen, Denmark* (Ellebuen 21, DK-2950 Vedbek, Denmark).

Two of the Scandinavian countries, Sweden and Denmark have formed development groups which are interested in the pioneering work of Viktor Schauberger and the prospects for reintroducing his advantageous environmental technology.

Towards the end of the 1950's, a Swedish science group was formed to carry out environmental improvement work and went through a series of evolutions to become the Institute for Ecological Technology, established in 1979. Since that time their environmental improvement project effort has been centered on the past, historical work of Viktor Schauberger because of the tangible value of his series of environmental projects. *Schauberger has constantly maintained that all of our technology should be "going with the flow of nature" rather than attempting to force actions which are contrary to natural motions.*

Because of the growing problems of water pollution in all the industrialized nations much of the current efforts are aimed at the various possible solutions to this problem, based on Viktor Schauberger's findings. In regard to clearing up polluted rivers, Viktor Schauberger maintained that by the simple addition of specially-shaped flutes carefully placed within the river bed, a beneficial spiralling flow would allow the rivers to clean themselves, naturally. Although he was usually rebuffed by the establishment in attempting to introduce this method, thankfully, his work is now being continued today by these far-sighted European ecological groups.

The development of the water-cleansing device mentioned in Proceedings from the First International Symposium on Non-conventional Energy Technology held in Toronto, 1981, page 91 and shown in an early state of development has successfully been brought to an end in the Danish Institute of Ecological Techniques. It shall be put into manufacture in spring 1987 and will cost appr. US $100. Especially tests with seed-growing in the purified, cleansed and vitalized water have given surprising results. The device was originally given the research group in the final form from a medium claiming that UFO-intelligences had inspired her!

b) *Biotechnical Academy* - *Walter Schauberger* (Son of Viktor) Austria

The Biotechnical Academy was established, with direction by Walter Schauberger, with the purpose of furthering the pioneering work of Viktor Schauberger in both the theoretical and applied areas of the technology.

The scientific team, under Walter Schauberger's direction, are working to match hardware environmental models with the corresponding attributes and motions of nature. They are attempting to validate each and every one of Viktor Schauberger's ecological findings and models to prove that our present technology direction is basically wrong!

c) *Energy Unlimited* Albuquerque, New Mexico

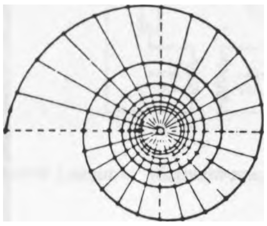
Walter P. Baumgartner, the director of Energy Unlimited is an advocate of Viktor Schauberger's technology and a believer in both natural vortex motion and implosion techniques. Energy Unlimited is now involved in developing an implosion motor to show the natural principle of vortex motion as a key to motion, propulsion and power.

Designing, developing and testing are in progress at the present by an E.U. research team.

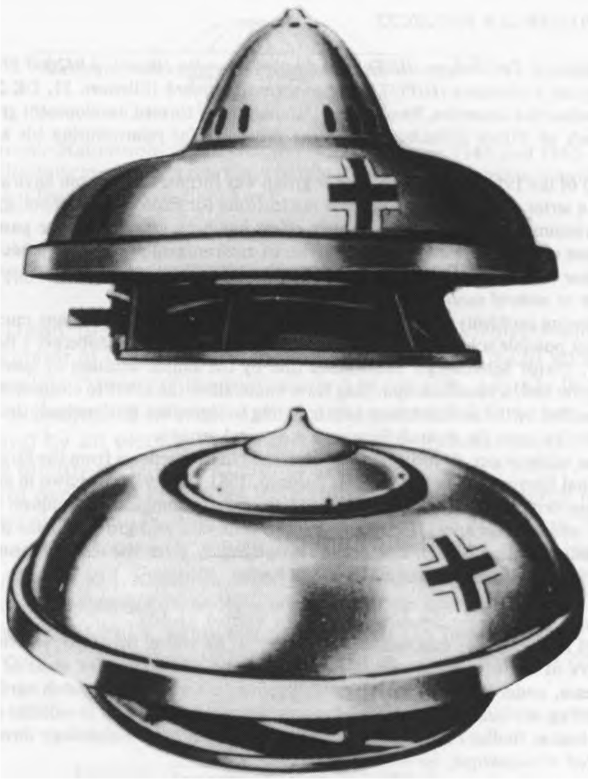
In the case of the Implosion Motor there is no heat barrier, no sound barrier, because with friction at a minimum, no heat is generated. On the contrary, due to the spiral contraction of the water flow, there is cooling and this creates a vacuum which increases the suction pull.

Schauberger's models of 'flying saucers'.

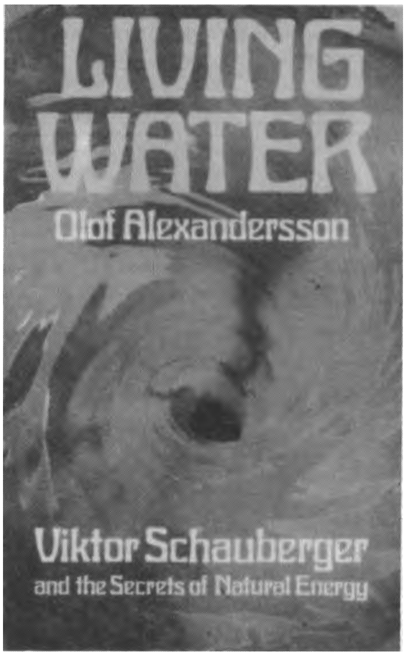
A hyperbolic spiral with constantly changing curvature.



A hyperbolic spiral is non-Euclidian in that it is formed of a continuous changing curve, in which the curvature becomes increasingly acute. It is an 'open' system rather than a closed system like a circle, which begins and ends at the same point, and which is therefore identically repetitious. Although existing technical terminology is at present inadequate, I believe the term 'hyperbolic centripetal spiral motion' is more appropriate in this context. A hyperbolic spiral looks like this:



These are the famous smokeless, soundless, Schauberger Models.



LIVING
WATER
Olof Alexandersson

Viktor Schauberger
and the Secrets of Natural Energy

SOLID STATE - AMPLIFYING TRANSFORMERS

HANS COLER - CURRENT FLOW DEVICE & MAGNET CURRENT FLOW APPARATUS

Hans Coler, a German energy researcher from the period from 1936 to 1945 evolved several promising solid state electrical energy sources using permanent magnets, various shaped coils, copper plates and condensers (capacitors).

Two significant devices were produced from this war-time research, the first being the "*Stromerzeuer*," or *Current Flow Device,* which consisted of a central transformer comprised of two flat coils, with the ends of the secondary fiat coil connected in series with the South poles of two permanent magnets. The North poles of the two permanent magnets are linearly connected to two flat copper plates.

The output leads were connected to the ends of the copper plates, all in accordance with the accompanying diagram.

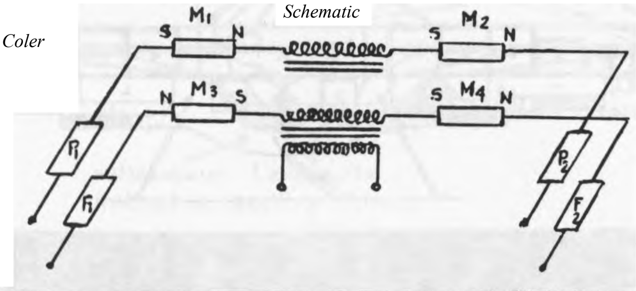
The input to the primary fiat coil was at the wattage level provided by a standard dry cell battery, presumed to be the 1½ volt size. It was claimed that when the battery energized the primary circuit, a separation of charge takes place, influenced by the two magnet polarities, within the linear circuitry. When the battery source was switched off, a reversing current is supposed to flow, in the secondary circuit, but the magnets are not supposed to influence a polarization effect on this reversing.

Several size versions of the "Stromerzeuger" were built, one small ten watt unit, a larger seventy (70) watt unit and finally a large unit built in 1937 reportedly produced 6 KW output.

CURRENT FLOW DEVICE (*Stromerzeuger*")

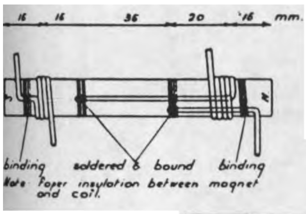
Schematic

VI Hans Coler


M1
S
N
M2
S
N
N
M3
S
S
M4
N
P1
F1
P2
F2

MAGNET CURRENT FLOW APPARATUS

("*Magnetstromapparat*")


16
16
36
20
16
mm.
binding plate
soldered & bound
binding
paper insulation between magnet and coil.

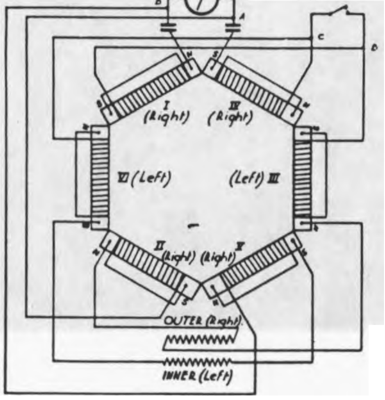
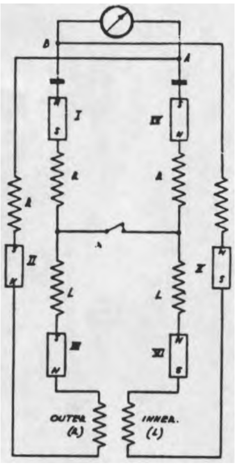
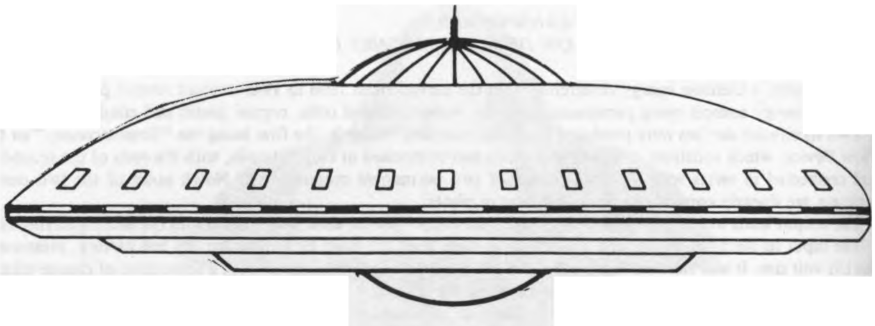


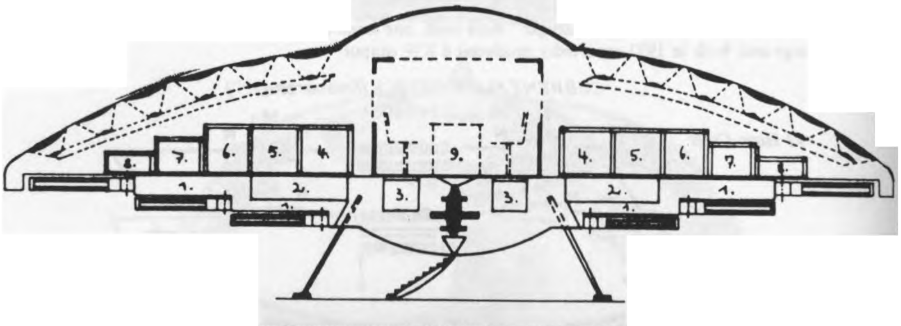
Fig. 1.
B
A
C
D
I (Right)
IV (Right)
VI (Left)
(Left) III
II (Right)
(Right) V
OUTER (Right)
INNER (Left)

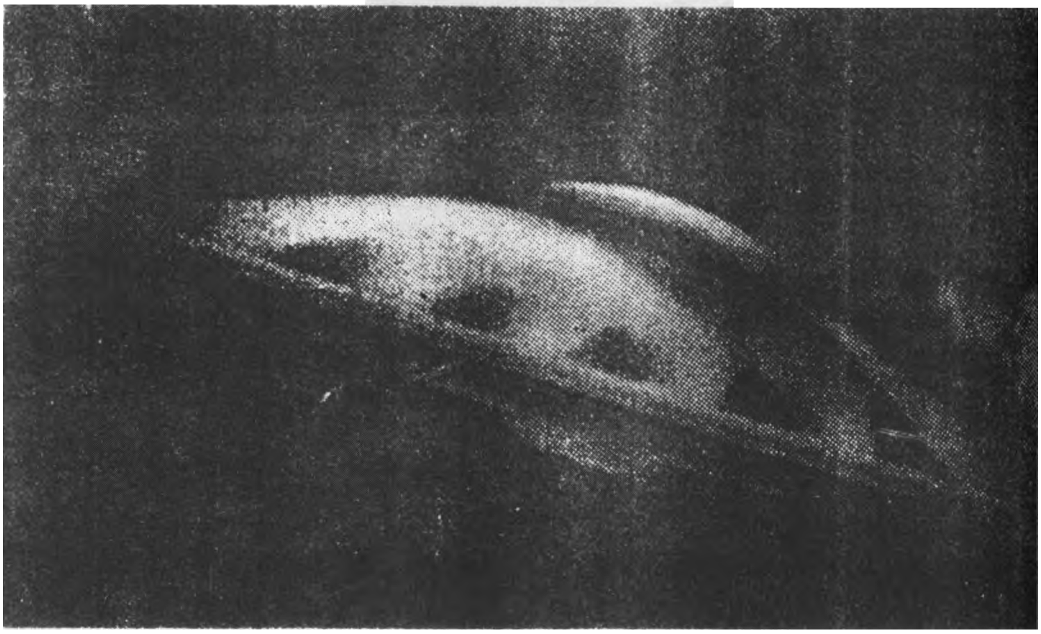
Coil-over Magnet-Detail Schematic


B
A
I
IV
R
R
R
R
II
V
L
L
III
VI
OUTER (R)
INNER (L)

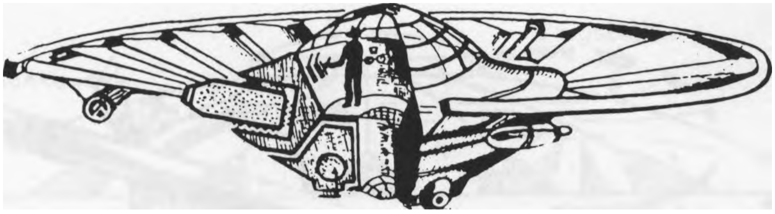
Geometric Layout - "*Magnetstromapparat*"

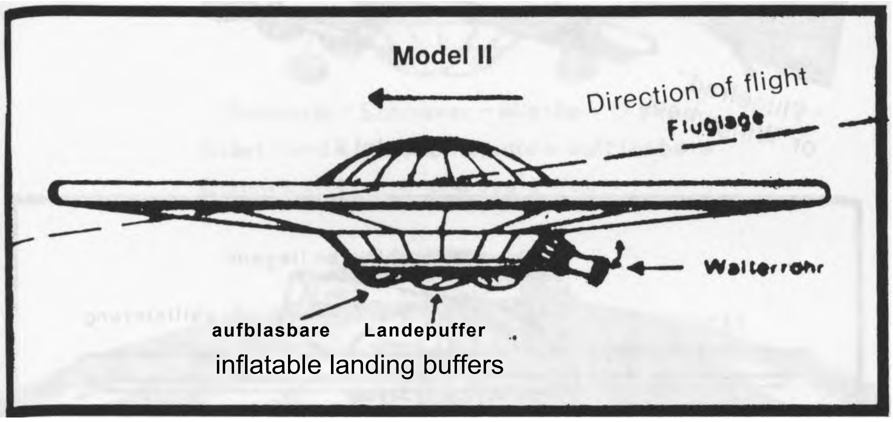



8.
7.
6.
5.
4.
1.
2.
1.
3.
9.
3.
4.
5.
6.
7.
8.
2.
1.
1.

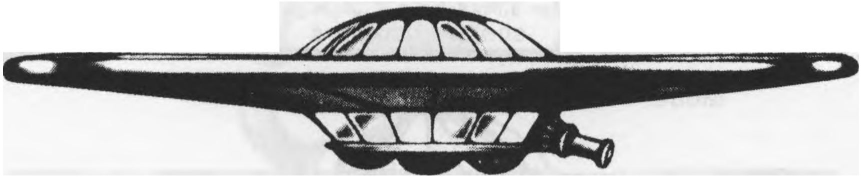


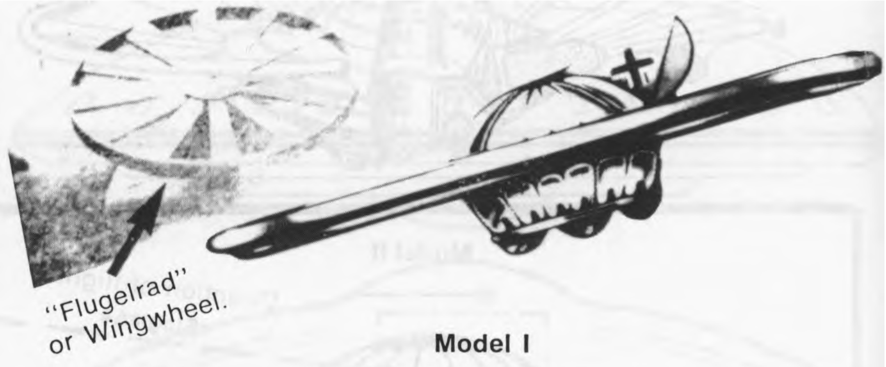
Model II Flying Disc



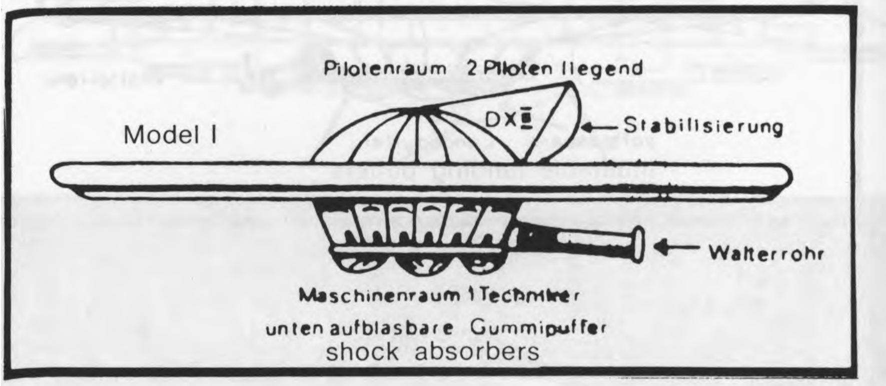

Model II
Direction of flight
Fluglage
Walterrohr
aufblasbare
Landepuffer
inflatable landing buffers

Model II

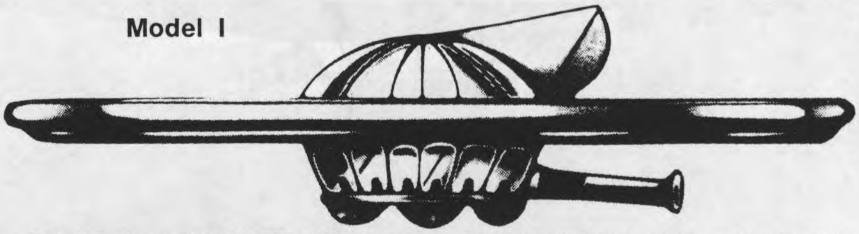


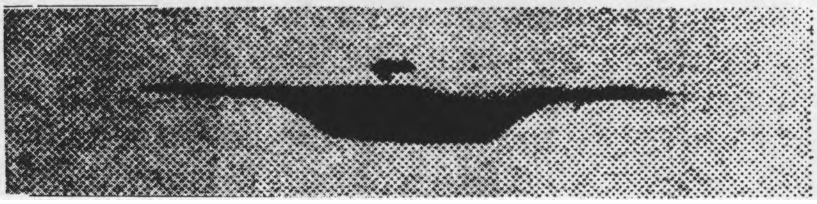

"Flugelrad"
or Wingwheel.

Model I

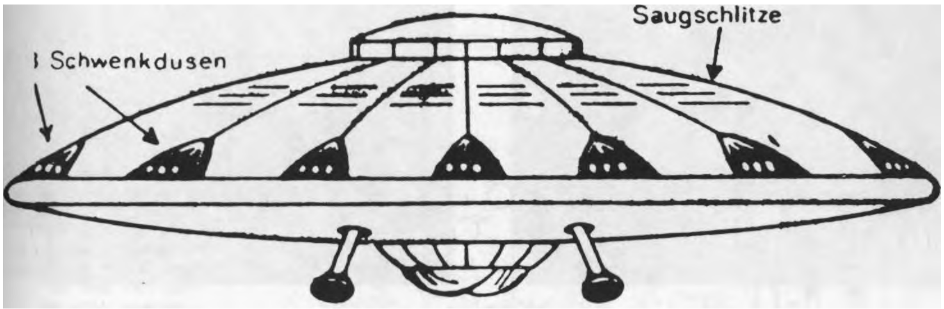

Pilotenraum 2 Piloten liegend
Model I
DXⅢ
Stabilisierung
Walterrohr
Maschinenraum 1 Techniker
unten aufblasbare Gummipuffer
shock absorbers

Model I

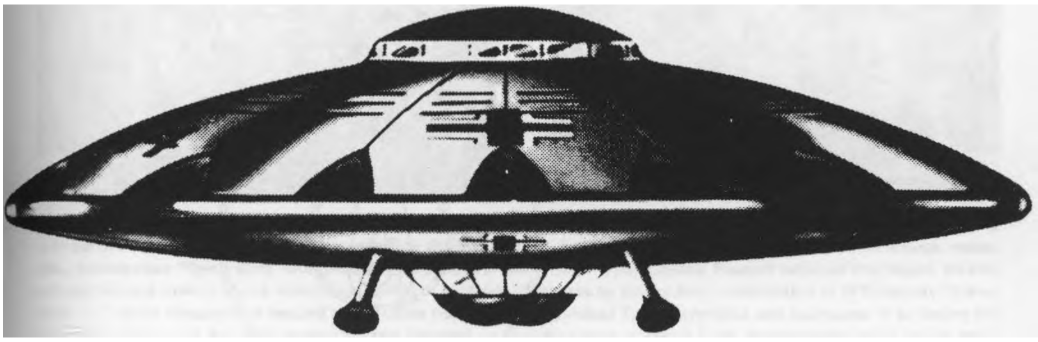


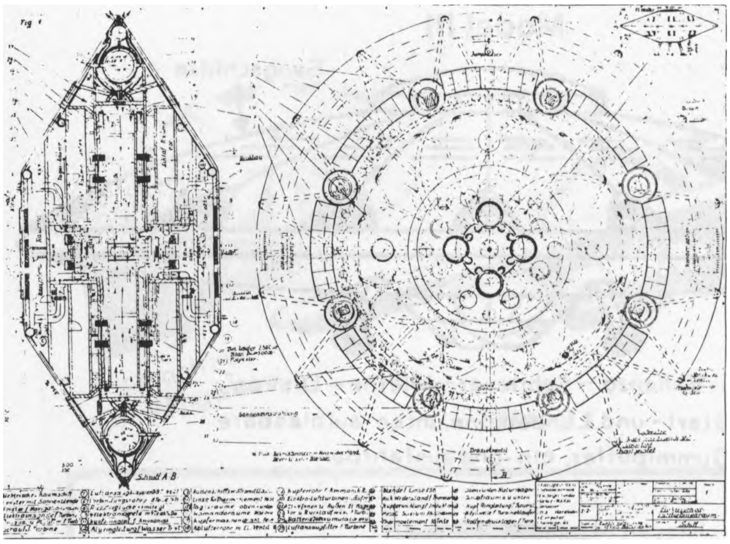


Model III

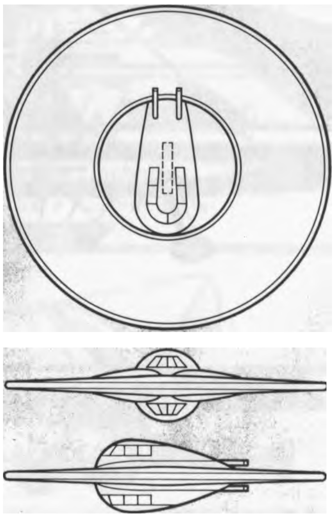

Saugschlitze
Schwenkdusen

Ballenzo – Schriever – Miethe – Diskus"
Start- und Landebeine, unten aufblasbare
Gummipuffer, ein- und ausfahrbar

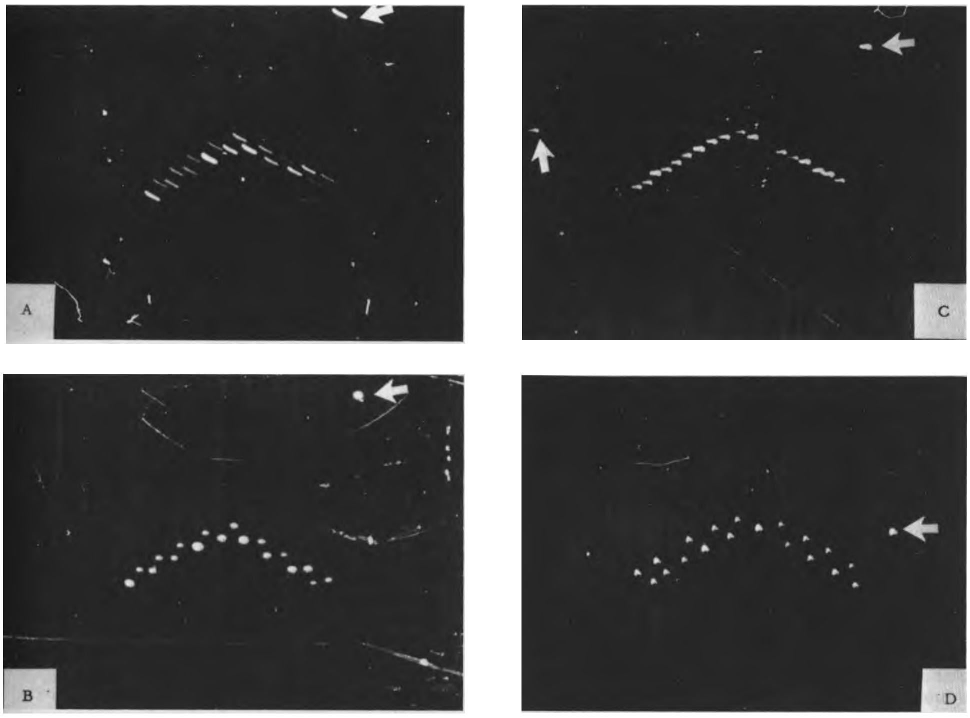




Left: blueprints for a flying saucer. According to the obscure single-issue publication *Brisant,* in which these diagrams appeared in 1978, they are plans for a disc-shaped spaceship, modified by the West German government to make them 'safe' for publication. Although 'electromagnetic turbines', 'laser-radar' and computers are indicated, the design is not a practical one. The diagrams appear in an article on Rudolf Schriever's Second World War designs, and may have been inspired by them



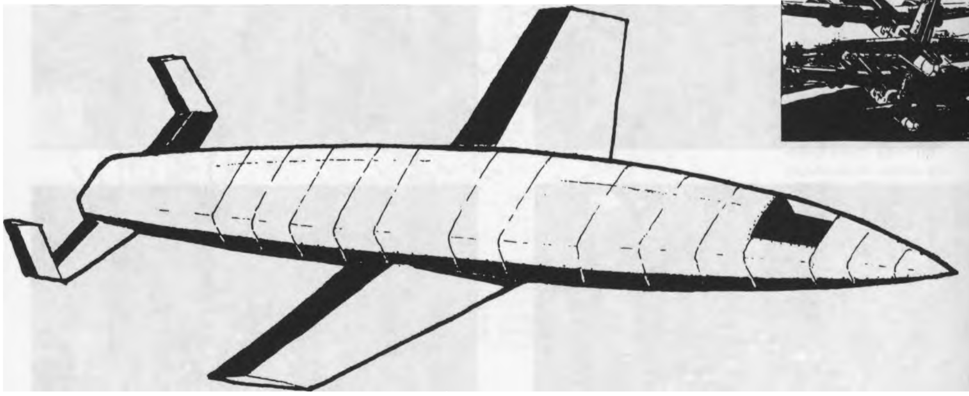
Right: a flying disc designed by Dr Miethe, one of the team of brilliant engineers working on unconventional aircraft designs for the Nazi war effort. This 'saucer' was almost ready for operational use in 1945, when the factories in Prague were overrun by the Allies



The famed "Lubbock Lights" sightings began on the night of August 25, 1951 when an Atomic Energy executive and his wife sat in their yard in Lubbock, Texas enjoying the summer air. Suddenly they saw what appeared to be a huge, noiseless, fuselageless "flying wing" with bluish lights pass over their home. When Captain Ruppelt received this report, he also got another one from Lubbock which caused him to exclaim: "This was by far the best combination of UFO reports I'd ever read. . . . Why? Because the second report came from four distinguished Texas scientists who happened to be taking the night air in *their* yard the same evening. They watched while a formation of about three dozen bluish lights swept *twice* across the skies. In the next few days, hundreds of people in the area witnessed similar lights. They seemed always to fly in roughly semicircular echelons from north to south. On August 31, Carl Hart, Jr. took the photos above. After photo analysis, Ruppelt said: "The photos were never proven to be a hoax but neither were they proven to be genuine," adding that he doubted they were reflections from birds. Yet Blue Book files still lists the Lubbock Lights as "birds." In Dr. Hynek's UFO classification system, these are classic examples of "nocturnal lights"—not ordinary lights such as man-made ones, bright stars and planets, or those of aircraft, but lights of a truly baffling nature which do not behave like ones from known sources.

GERMAN JET GENESIS
DAVID MASTERS

Sänger-Bredt stratospheric bomber



In 1933, at the age of only 28 years, Dr Eugene Sänger published his book *Rocket Flight Technique,* which led eventually to his being invited to set up the German Research Institute for Rocket Flight Technique in 1936. By 1938 Sänger had worked out most of the details of a supersonic glider and had started to build a 1/20th-scale model. But with the start of hostilities in 1939 Sänger was pressured into deciding either to shelve his project or adapt it for military use. The result was a revolutionary design for a single-seat bomber with a fuselage of flat-sided rectangular section and measuring 91ft 10¾in long, 11ft 9¾in wide and 6ft 11in deep (28m × 3.60m × 2.10m).

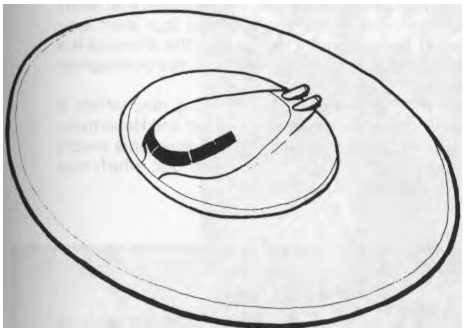
It was designed for stratospheric flight, with the pilot housed in a forward pressurised cabin. The pointed fuselage opened out in section towards the blunt tail, from which protruded the primary rocket nozzle flanked by a pair of auxiliary rockets. The flattened fuselage created body lift which was supplemented by a pair of comparatively small 49ft 2½in (15.0m) span wings set halfway along the fuselage and blending into the totally flat underfuselage. The horizontal tail surfaces carried small endplate fins.

Although a retractable undercarriage was envisaged, the aircraft was to take off from a streamlined rocket-powered sled set on a monorail track 1.8 miles (3km) in length. The sled was to be powered by an enormously powerful rocket developing 600 tonnes thrust for a maximum of just 11 sec. After accelerating along the track the aircraft would climb to over 5,000ft (1,200m) at an angle of 30°, reaching a speed of nearly 1,150mph (1,850km/hr). At that point the aircraft's main powerplant of a single fuselage-mounted 100-tonne-thrust rocket motor would be fired for a maximum of 8min to propel it to a height of over 90 miles (145km) and a speed of 13,730mph (22,100km/hr). Once the main rocket motor had burned out the aircraft would coast at high speed back down to the denser atmosphere at 25 miles (40km, 131,230ft) altitude and then skip back up like a flat stone on water. This manoeuvre would be repeated until momentum had been lost, and the aircraft would then glide down to a normal wheeled landing, having covered a predicted range of up to 14,600 miles (23,500km). The problems of super-heating likely to be encountered at such speeds were expected to be reduced by this method, with the aircraft cooling down on the upward coast after reaching peak temperatures at the lower end of the "skip".

By June 1939 Sänger had advanced his designs to the point of carrying out friction tests, but many of the problems of ultra-high speeds, especially as they affected metal structures, were not adequately understood. Sänger was also working on the 100-tonne-thrust rocket motor, which progressed slowly up to 1941 and achieved some remarkable results, exceeding many of the A-4 (V-2) rocket performances at that time.

But then in 1942 work on the rocket motor was cancelled and Sänger, his assistant, Dr Irene Bredt, and his team were set to work at DFS, the German Research Institute for Gliding. No further development of the stratospheric bomber was requested, although Sänger did manage to publish a secret paper in 1944, writing of the possibility of using it to bomb New York using a single free-falling bomb which was to be carried between the two large mid-fuselage oxidant tanks.

Project Saucer



Miethe flying disc

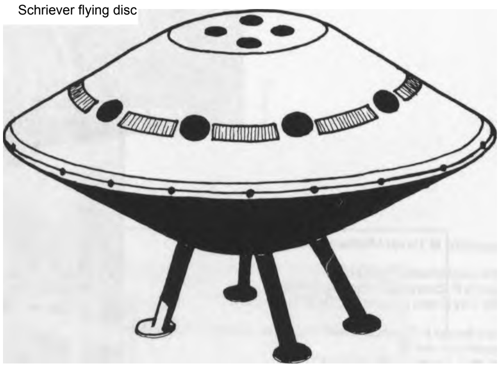
Serious German interest in disc-shaped aircraft seems to have originated from about the spring of 1941, when Rudolf Schriever, a Luftwaffe aeronautical engineer, designed his first “Flying Top”, the prototype of which was being test-flown in June 1942. Schriever followed these experiments – carried out in collaboration with three colleagues, Habermohl, Miethe and Bellonzo – by constructing an even larger flying disc in the summer of 1944. It is not clear how these early designs were to be powered, but a bigger version with advanced jet engines was reportedly designed at the BMW factory near Prague.

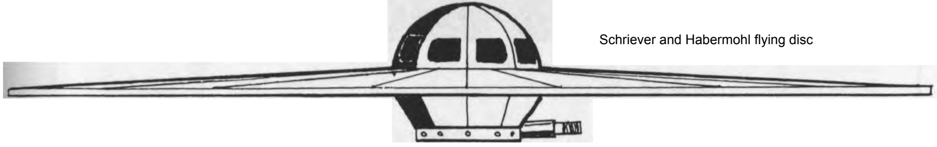
Information on this aspect of German jet aircraft development is very sketchy. The project was always highly secret, and documents that may have existed were probably either destroyed, lost or taken by the Russians when the war ended. A last possibility is that the Allies discovered Schriever’s work and considered it too important to reveal. However, in the late 1950s Rudolf Schriever himself described his work on a wartime research programme named “Project Saucer”.

The Schriever and Habermohl design comprised a large-area disc rotating around a central cupola-like cockpit. The disc was made up of adjustable wing surfaces which could be positioned for take-off or level flight. Dr Miethe also developed a 138ft (42m) diameter flying disc powered by vectorable jets. This machine is said in many references actually to have flown, and one source even pinpoints the date of the first flight as February 4, 1945, and the place as Prague. On that flight the machine, designated V-7, is supposed to have climbed to a height of 37,600ft (11,450m) in just three minutes, reaching a level speed of 1,218mph (1,960km/hr). But Schriever claimed after the war that while his flying disc was made ready for testing early in 1945, the preparations were cancelled in the face of the Allied advance, and the machine was destroyed and all information lost or stolen. The factory at Breslau at which Schriever’s saucer is said to have been built fell into Russian hands, and the prototype and the technicians working on it are believed to have been captured and taken to Siberia to continue the project under Soviet control. Also rumoured was another near-complete flying disc which was expected to be capable of reaching 3,000mph (4,830km/hr).

Although the evidence for the existence of a German flying-disc programme is very tenuous, the senior official of a 1945 British technical mission revealed that he had discovered German plans for “entirely new and deadly developments in air warfare”. These plans must obviously have gone beyond normal jet aircraft designs, as both sides already had jet-powered aircraft in production and operational service by the end of the war. Moreover, before Rudolf Schriever died some 15 years after the war he had become convinced that the large numbers of post-war UFO sightings were evidence

Schriever flying disc



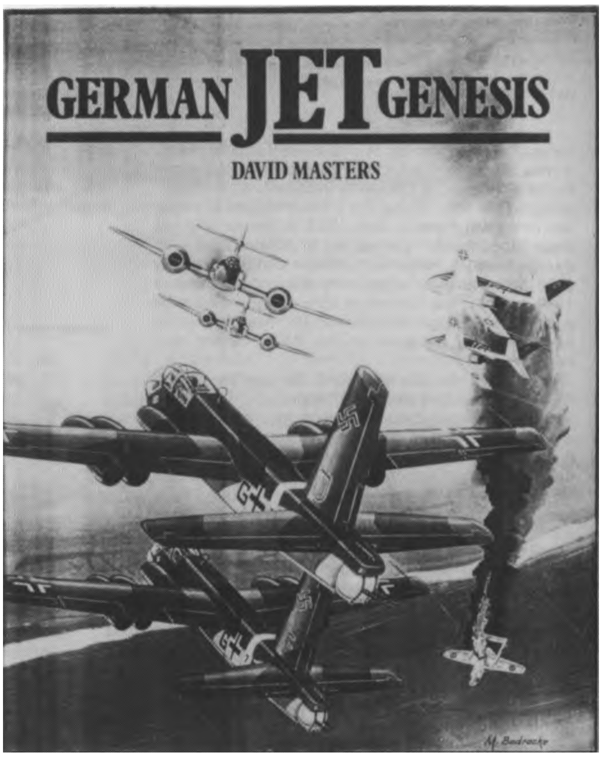


Schriever and Habermohl flying disc

that his designs had been built and developed.

The drawings on page 135 show three flying-disc designs attributed to the Schriever group. The first is credited to Dr Miethe and was supposed to have been almost ready for "operational" use when the factory in Prague was captured by the Red Army. A modern set of very basic three-view drawings shows twin cockpits above and below the centre of the disc, each with two jetpipes. The second illustration shows a flying disc, the details of which were revealed in a set of blueprints published in recent years by the West German Government. It has been suggested that the drawings were probably inspired by Rudolf Schriever's own wartime designs but had been made safe for publication by the modification of certain details. The deep disc was nearly 50ft (15m) in diameter and stood on four short legs. Amongst the equipment indicated in the drawings is a laser system, radar, computers and electro-magnetic turbines.

The third drawing depicts a flying disc which is credited in one reference to Schriever and Habermohl, though the claimed details and achievements exactly match those of the Miethe-designed disc which supposedly flew on February 4, 1945.



Copyright © David Masters 1982

First published in 1982 by
Jane's Publishing Company Limited
238 City Road, London EC1V2PU, England

Distributed in Canada, the Philippines and the USA and its dependencies by
Science Books International Inc
51 Sleeper Street, Boston
Massachusetts MA 02210

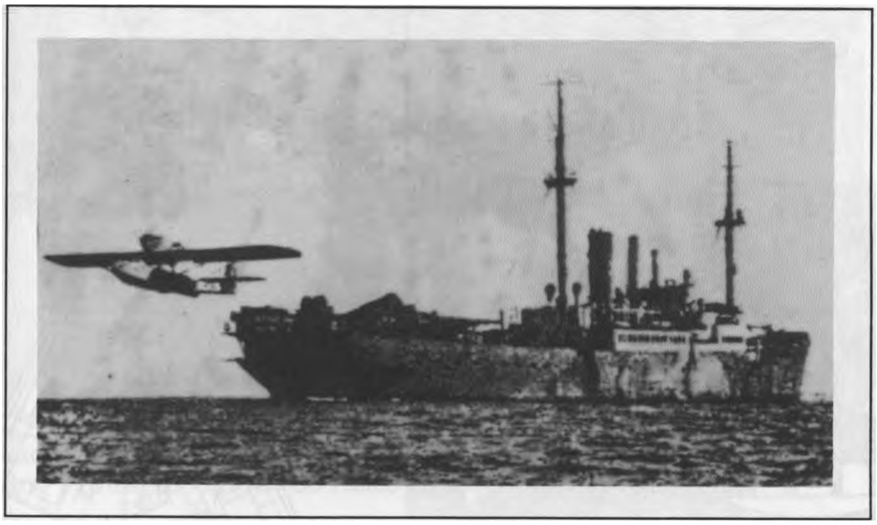
ISBN 0 86720 622 5

1949

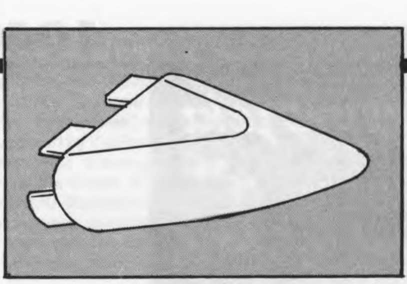
Wernher von Braun
Das Marsprojekt
Studie einer interplanetarischen Expedition
Ein Sonderheft der Zeitschrift „WELTRAUMFAHRT"

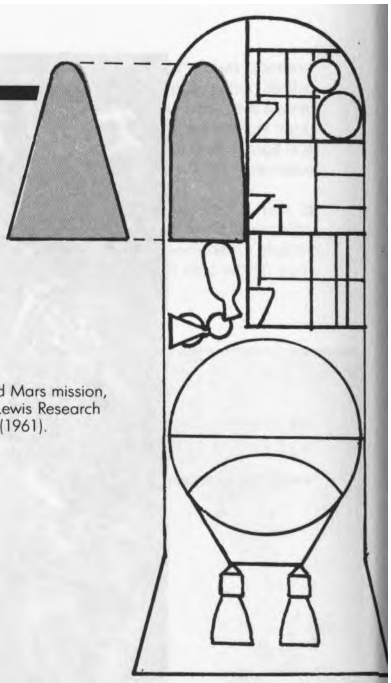
Ordway

Wernher von Braun

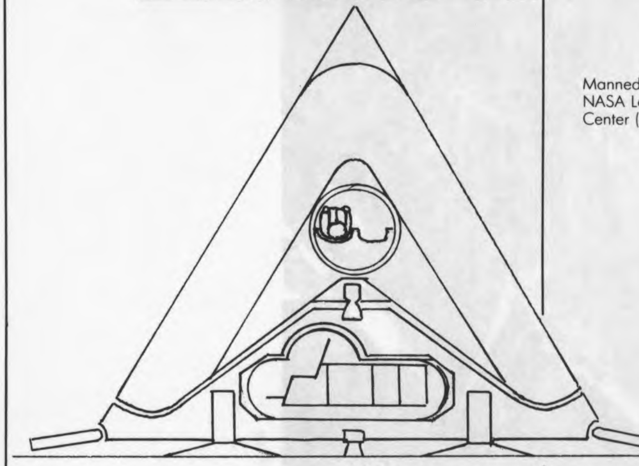


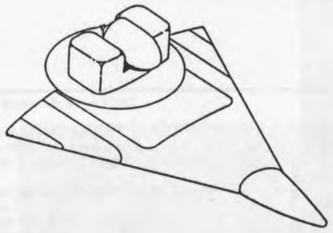
The research ship "Schwabenland" launches one of her planes during training for two expeditions to Antarctica in 1938 and 1939 (lower photo) (courtesy of "Germany's Antarctic Claim, Secret Nazi Polar Expeditions" by Christof Friedrich).

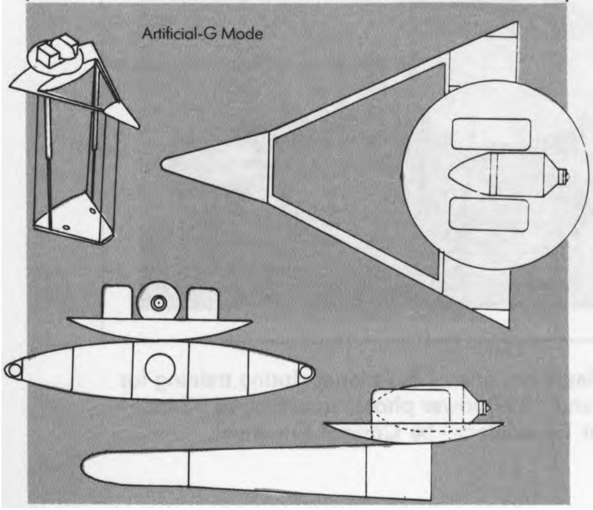


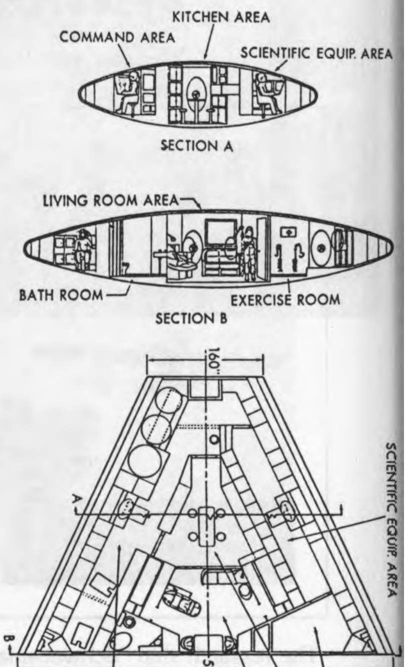


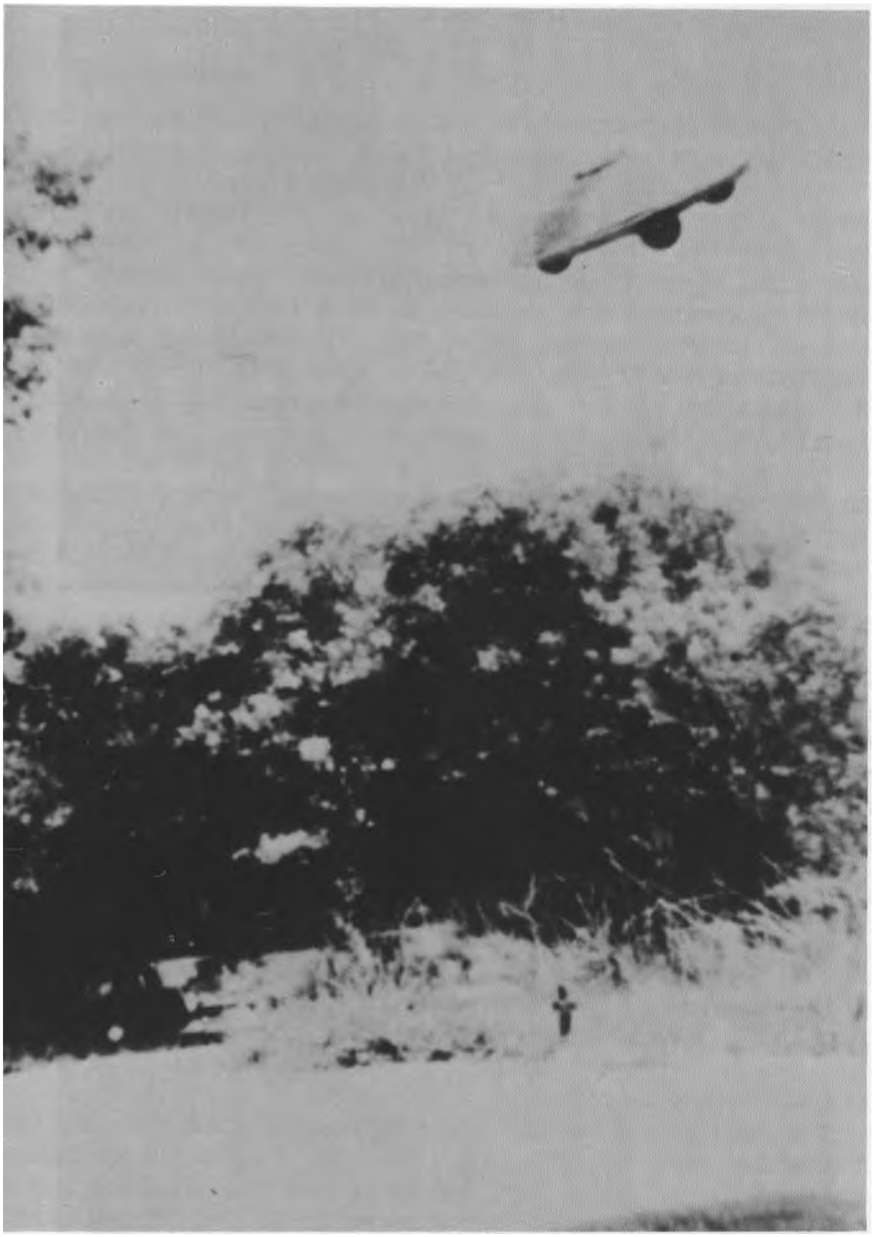
Manned Mars mission, NASA Lewis Research Center (1961).



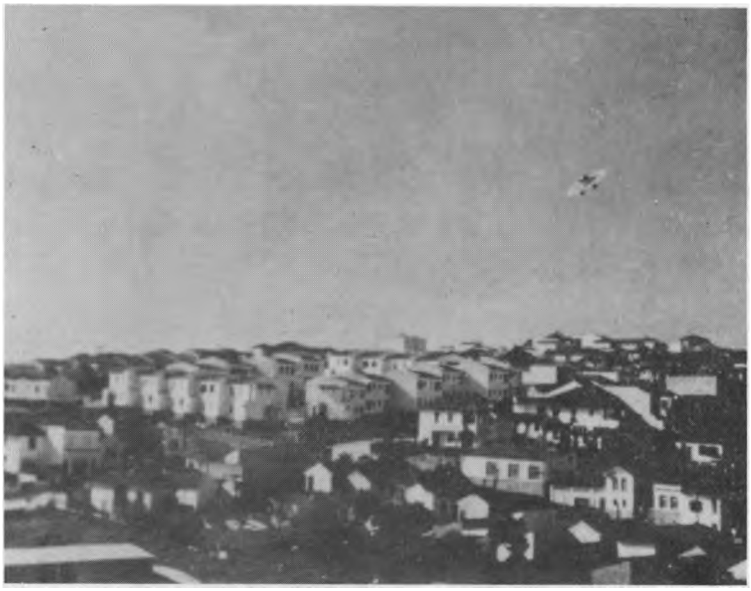



Artificial-G Mode

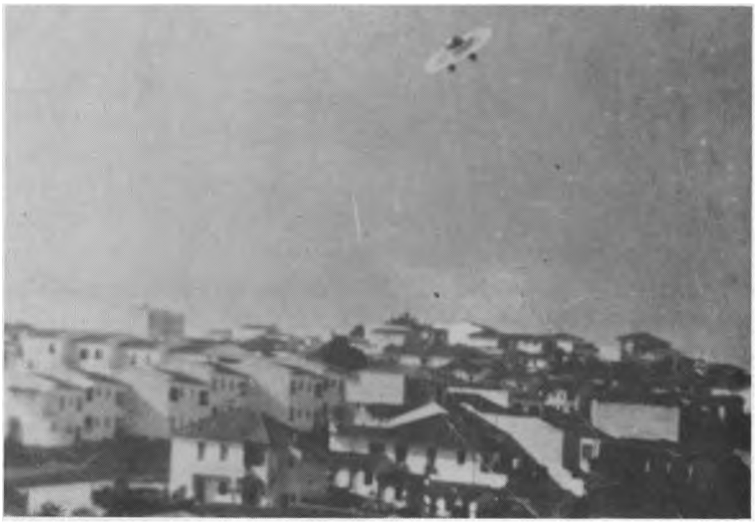

KITCHEN AREA
COMMAND AREA
SCIENTIFIC EQUIP. AREA
SECTION A
LIVING ROOM AREA
BATH ROOM
EXERCISE ROOM
SECTION B
160"
A
B
524"
SCIENTIFIC EQUIP. AREA
COMMAND CENTER
LIVING ROOM AREA
KITCHEN
EXERCISE AREA

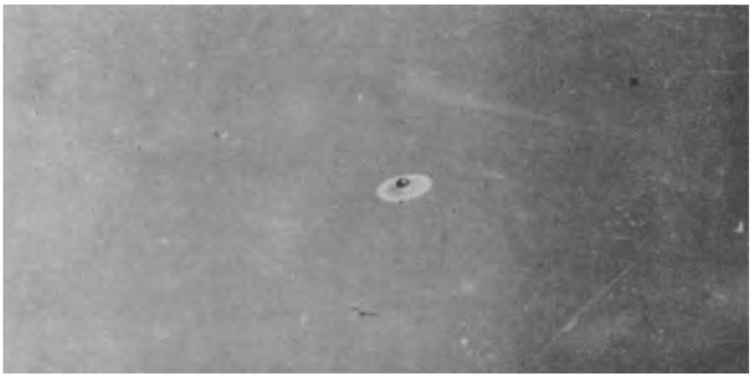


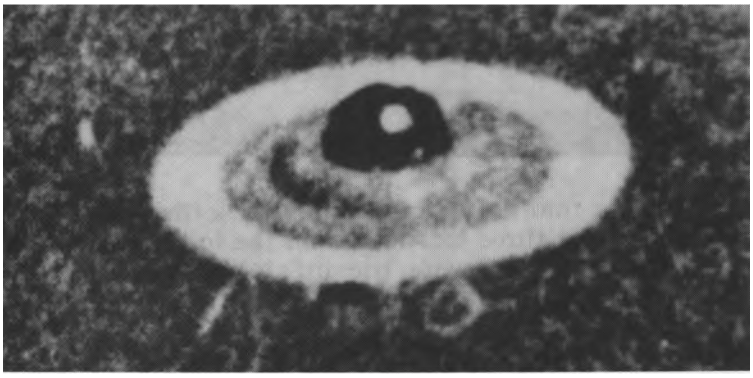
On October 20, 1957, (4:00 PM) Tom O'Bannon took this photo of a small craft hovering behind his house 30 miles east of Winona, Missouri.

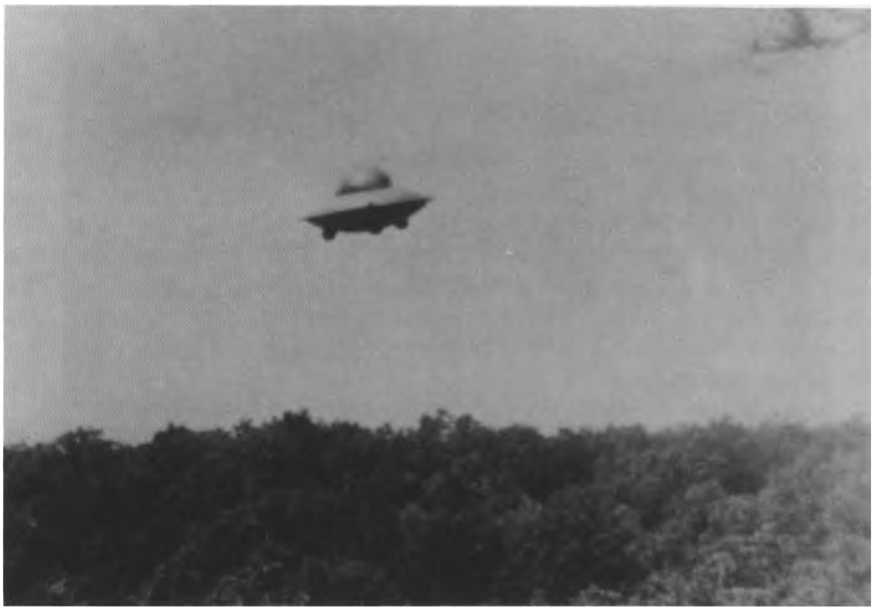


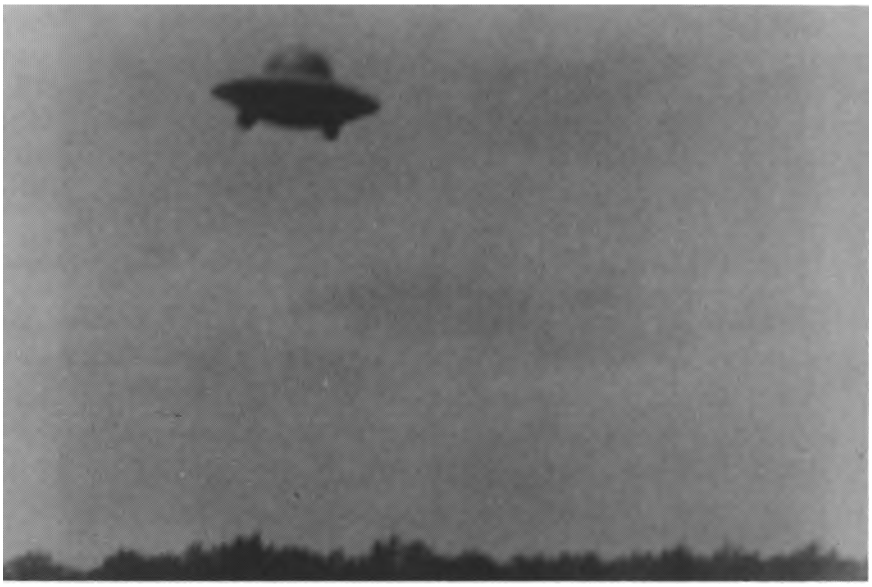
This sequence of five photos was taken in South Africa in the early 1950's and is sometimes referred to as the "South African series." These astonishingly clear photos of what is a domed flying disc flying over a town clearly show the rubber inflatable landing cushions. Most probably of German manufacture of the Haunibu I & II series. The New Schwabenland territory in the Antarctic is just opposite of South Africa.



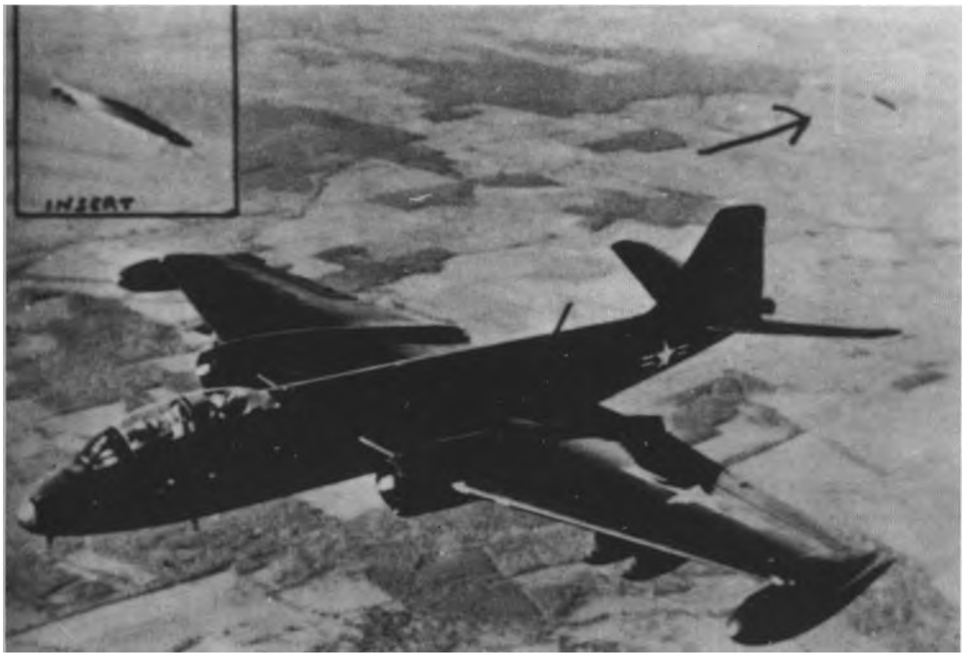








On June 16, 1967 at mid-day, Harold Trudel took these photos at Woonsocket Rhode Island. Note the three extrusions on the lower side which in the early German experimental craft were the inflatable rubber landing cushions, which is exactly what these look like.



Taken in September 1957, this photograph shows an apparently disc-like object pursuing a B-47 bomber near Edwards Air Force Base, California. (*Photo by Convair test pilot*)

CHAPTER 8

Nothing to Give in Exchange

In March 1946, while describing to the House of Commons the "great future" in view for the British aircraft industry thanks to new projects that were in gestation, Wing Commander John Strachey, Undersecretary in the Air Ministry, declared that the government was also considering "several pilotless aircraft possibilities" that were particularly promising and reassuring for Britain's defense.

At that time the British had only two missiles, neither of which seemed to justify the undersecretary's expressions of faith.

The first was the Fairey Stooge radio-controlled antiaircraft rocket, only a few of which had been built.[1] And it was, in fact, a rocket and not a plane. As for the other, the Vickers rocket that was still on paper, Sir Ben Lockspeiser himself had clearly stated that it was not a weapon but a flying laboratory. Transforming it into a flying bomb would in any case have taken time, and it seems that despite the quite different view held by Vickers it did not even figure in the plans of the Ministry of Supply once it was demonstrated that the German Henschel flying bombs had a limited success, for they were all subject to British radio jamming.

The prevalent opinion in London press circles was that the R.A.F. had secretly developed a "new weapon" that had been found virtually completed in one of the many underground factories in southern Germany.

Strachey's declaration gave strong support to the undoubtedly praiseworthy (if sincere) desire of the higher-ups in the Ministry of Supply to avoid, as they constantly proclaimed, risking anyone's life. Theoretically, this desire lasted until 1949, when the problems of supersonic aerodynamics had been sufficiently clarified (and besides, the Americans and the Russians were developing supersonic planes for military use) for the Supply Ministry to give a go-ahead on the first two British experimental piloted fighters capable of reaching the speed of Mach 2. These were the Fairey Delta-2 and the English Electric P-1-A.

The dropping of the Miles M-52 project had, in fact, been justified on the grounds that "we have not the heart to ask pilots to fly the high-speed models, so we shall make them radio controlled" (Sir Ben Lockspeiser's exact words).

The respect of the British for individual safety is well known, but despite that the pious expressions of the Ministry must have been very relative, what with conventional planes' continually approaching closer and closer to the "sound barrier" (which could be placed in the neighborhood of 745 mph) and trying to penetrate into the then still largely unexplored field of supersonic speeds, sometimes with fatal results. In fact, the echoes of ministerial regret for the death of Geoffrey De Havilland had hardly died down. De Havilland had been killed when the prototype of the tailless De Havilland DH-108 Swallow which he was testing over Suffolk exploded in the air. And the aim of that ambitious flight was indeed the breaking of the sound barrier. The undertaking was a private one, but the Ministry of Supply had been informed about it and the Ministry neither prevented it nor threw any obstacles in its path. (Here is a disturbing but pointed question: if the flight had succeeded, how could the torpedoing of the M-52 have been justified?)

The second part of the declaration seemed, as a result, more consonant with the actual state of affairs—*i.e.,* the part dealing with the study of new systems of supersonic flight—especially when compared with what was stated apropos of the research program that would be continued at Bedford.

In general, it is still widely believed today that the "spectacular radio-controlled aircraft" that Sir Ben Lockspeiser announced at the time was the Vickers 24/43 winged rocket. It is clear, however, that that device was not in fact radio-controlled in the true sense of the term, but made use of short-wave radio solely for simple corrections of the flight path and for transmitting flight data to the ground.

Instead, rather numerous formations of circular-shaped objects of only fifteen or twenty feet were more than once observed flying over American states along the Canadian border in July 1947. Considering the rather small dimensions of those machines (as compared with those sighted later), wouldn't one logically conclude that they were radio-controlled from some guide-aircraft flying some distance off or at higher altitudes?

Two years before, the British had got their hands on a "device that could be controlled at considerable distance by another aircraft" while they were digging among the technological secrets that had been moved into the Alpine Redoubt. This device had a television apparatus, developed by Telefunken in their large factory at Bad Liebenstein, that worked to perfection. The British never made clear exactly what kind of device was involved, stating only that it was a "remotely controlled pilotless aircraft;" hence we must assume that it was something quite different from the many types of rockets which had been described in the press with a profusion of details.

In addition, a number of examples of television apparatuses built for the Henschel HS-293-D flying bombs fell into British hands. One of these was later exhibited at the German Electrical-Apparatus Exhibition at Earl's Court in London in March 1946. The others were sent to various centers concerned with military applications of television, the Telecommunication Research Establishment and the Royal Radar Establishment at Great Malvern being the most important such centers. Here world-famous physicists specializing in the properties of electricity, such as Sir Watson-Watt and Sir Henry Tizzard, delved into their innermost mechanisms in order to adapt them to the needs of British research.

QUESTIONS WITHOUT ANSWERS

That there was a close relationship between the "pilotless aircraft" of Undersecretary Strachey and the "planes that use no fuel" of the Ministry of Supply can be deduced from previously published news stories in the British press, which had been informed—perhaps secretly—by the same highly placed sources interested in adding a bit of luster to the nation's aeronautical prestige. One of these stories, which had appeared in January 1946, said briefly:

"Apropos of radio-controlled airplanes, we learn that high-speed experiments have been made with planes piloted by radio and equipped with television transmitters. As is well-known, it sometimes happens that an airplane that has begun a maneuver at speeds above 560 mph no longer answers to the controls—which often means the loss of a pilot. With the above-mentioned planes, however, experiments can be carried out without this danger."

We know that the first Vickers rockets flew in November 1947**.** The devices reported in the news story, however, had already begun their operational phase at the end of 1945**.** Unlike the Vickers rockets, they had a television apparatus aboard. They were, then, "pilotable" in the full sense of the word. What did they look like? Where did the experiments take place? What were the results of those experiments? What kind of propulsive method did they employ? Who built them?

Why was their testing kept secret? Why were there no detailed press releases? And why were there no further leaks about it? Here we have a series of questions that remained without answers, mute but eloquent evidence of the extreme importance of those experiments.

It should not astonish us, however. The chronicle of British aviation over the past twenty years has a number of "mysteries" of the same caliber. For example, in March 1952—just before the "Big Flap" that shook the circles around the A.T.I.C. and the U.S. Air Force—Her Majesty's Stationery Office printed Report No. 2612 for the Aeronautical Research Council. It was taken from confidential internal report No. 10294 and was clearly and thoroughly censored. In the report, Professor Thwaites of the National Physical Laboratory briefly illustrated the results of several of his physical-mathematical investigations on elliptical airfoils capable of developing a high degree of lift independent of the incidence of the entire wing structure. The subject was interesting, but it was nothing new.[2] What was new was the sibylline reference to bizarre suction airfoils called constant-velocity airfoils, one with an elegant two-pointed meniscus shape and the other with a curious if not monstrous-looking mushroom shape.[3]

The report mentioned them incidentally, saying only that unlike the elliptical airfoils, the lift developed by the constant velocity types "is not independent of the incidence and the possibility of applying them to airplanes can be considered only after the limits of their stability are exactly determined. It is possible that these profiles are unstable at zero incidence and it is certainly difficult to imagine what the behavior of the aerodynamic flow for the other incidences would be. In addition, the fact that they can operate at a unit value of the coefficient of lift might require a special flight technique and a particular type of plane." Unfortunately, the board of directors of the Aeronautical Research Council classified the information on these two last points, which were the kernel of the whole question.

Nevertheless, the technical press in 1947 published a concise description of a number of daring British innovations concerning wing structure and high-speed flight. At one point it wrote:

“Concern with obtaining absolute stability in all cases in accordance with the principle that it is an intrinsic quality of the aircraft, not to be acquired at the cost of some static or aerodynamic balance, has led to the development of a new wing formula called the Boomerang both because of its shape and its behavior. A project for a commercial plane called the Spuffing Boomerang Airliner with an independent, gyroscopic cabin has begun.”[4]

PLANES WITH GYROSCOPIC STABILIZATION

Perhaps completely accidentally, the press had erroneously combined and blended two different bits of news from the same source—the Hawker Siddeley Group—but referring to two different aircraft projects.

The first, the AW-52 Boomerang flying wing—with its wing tips perceptibly swept back and reminding one of the weapon of the Australian aborigines—carried two powerful turbojets, whence the name Spuffing Airliner. But the pilot’s cabin was completely normal.[5]

The other should have caused the most die-hard skeptics in the Air Technical Intelligence Centre to ask themselves (at least in 1952) this basic question: Over five years have passed since these leaks were published in the papers. Which of Britain’s numerous aircraft that have flown from then to now has an independent, gyroscopically stabilized cabin?

None, officially; and that even includes types now in the project stage, would have been the inevitable answer.

The ingenious solution—which escaped the technological doubts that Professor Thwaites had voiced years before and was absolutely new in the field of aircraft construction—allowed it to be clearly understood that the cabin was ringed with a rotating organ of large dimensions (as in the Italo-German turbo-projectiles and the Fireballs), involving the need for autonomous and automatic stabilization. This was required in order to offset, among other things, the motion of tangential pull on the craft (the fixed plane) by the propulsive rotor (the turbine). On the flying saucers this rotor rapidly rotates within the not at all metaphoric saucer, or inverted funnel, which surrounds the central cupola and which obviously must be kept stationary in the direction of flight. (Otherwise the continual rotation on its own axis would not only upset the flight path but would put the nervous systems of the poor pilots to a severe test.)

In 1945 the National Physical Laboratory's division of applied physics had reexamined a system of direct gyroscopic stabilization. It was modeled on the same system that at the beginning of the century had made the "miracle" of the Monorail train possible (a curious vehicle that has never come into widespread use; it was kept balanced on a single rail thanks to the gyrostatic inertia developed by a small but heavy and rapidly spinning flywheel). In addition, the laboratory put to profitable use in its own studies the experience accumulated by the scientists of the Kreiselgeräte G.m.b.H. of Berlin Britz, a dissolved company that had specialized in the study and construction of mechanisms employing gyroscopic phenomena. In 1943 the Kreiselgeräte had succeeded in reducing the oscillations of a violently disturbed moving body to not more than one-tenth of a degree.

During the next decade—it is an established fact and one that has not been demonstrated elsewhere to the same degree—the British made considerable use of the gyroscopic apparatuses for the most diverse military and technical applications.[6]

Evidently the officers in the A.T.I.C. did not know or did not want to draw the conclusions that one recurrent phrase in the sighting reports would have broadly supported: " . . seen from below the UFO seemed to spin rapidly on its own axis, except for the central part, which appeared to be stationary. . ."

THE GREAT AIR TECHNOLOGY "MIGRATION" OF 1946

Among the fragmentary news stories that reported the transfer by the Canadian government of the Turbo-Research Ltd. plants to the Hawker Siddeley Group there were several that referred to the imminence of other radical changes in the local aircraft industry, which because of war production needs had grown quite large, especially in the eastern part of the country, over the preceding five years.

Plans were laid for a sort of gigantic "migration" to the western area of the Dominion, with the formation of research, testing and production centers—centering on the urban area of Vancouver—for new types of planes and engines that would be "Canadian designed and Canadian built" and for the local production of "special fuels." The whole thing was to be accomplished in record time.

The greatest impulse toward this development, which was rapidly brought to a conclusion, came in the spring of 1946, when Professor B. S. Shenstone—described by the technical journals as a "Canadian scientist with a brilliant scientific background" and an expert in, among other things, problems dealing with the control of the boundary layer—was named general manager and technical assistant to vice-president W. N. Deisher of Avro-Canada. Previously he had been an assistant director in the Ministry of Aircraft Production's office in charge of the development of projects relating to postwar air transport.[7]

But we had an authoritative indication of what was developing in Canada in the fall of 1945, when a brilliant aeronautical future was openly being predicted in England for its overseas dominion. For example, *The Aeroplane* wrote: "The recent purchase [July 1] of the Victory Aircraft, Ltd., plant at Malton, Ontario, which is at present engaged in the production of the Lincoln bomber, by the Hawker-Siddeley Co., might mean that Canada will become the British Empire's aircraft production centre within the next ten years."[8]

At the beginning of 1946 the British group also took over the plants of Turbo-Research of Leavside and put them under the administration of its Gas Turbine Division in Malton. Turbo-Research was a government body created in 1944 on the model of the British Power Jets for the study of local problems of jet propulsion. It had an experimental station in Winnipeg.

Foreign aeronautical circles were considerably surprised by all this activity. True, the aeronautical industry was in a state of economic crisis. But the crisis certainly could not be overcome by selling a factory that promised to be highly productive and an experimental center that still had something new to contribute to jet propulsion, which, it should not be forgotten, was then taking its first steps.

It was thought that if the Canadian government had decided that it was a good idea to get rid of the factory and experimental center, perhaps that meant that Canada intended to concentrate its money and energies in some other direction.

When the UFOs appeared over Canada, the country's first crisis in the aviation industry had been laboriously overcome.

THE BASIS FOR SUCCESS

"Today Canada is to be counted among the greatest aeronautical powers in the world," N. S. Currey wrote in 1950. "But this abrupt leap forward from insignificant beginnings must not be attributed solely to its production of certain excellent types of planes but rather to the far-sightedness of the Canadian parliament. Canada has made its mark in a spectacular manner above all in the field of jet propulsion."[9]

The idea that Canada is an advanced and highly qualified producer of really excellent, modern jet planes of both military and civilian types will appear new and strange to the reader unfamiliar with aeronautical matters. In general the public thinks of Canada as an endless, cold, inhospitable land, rich in lumber, fish and fur-bearing animals, recently opened to large-scale immigration from Europe in order to exploit its immense natural resources. In other words, many Europeans still think of Canada as "a few acres of snow," as Voltaire put it long ago. "A few acres"! Nearly four million square miles containing gold, iron, copper, lead, nickel, aluminum, asbestos, and uranium, and producing large quantities of wheat, meat, fish, furs, and lumber. But the French administrators of the eighteenth century could not know all that, and after a series of military reverses they abandoned Canada to the British in 1763.

Actually, even the present twenty million population, for the most part inhabiting the two coastal areas, on a land almost the size of a continent (it is nine-tenths the size of Europe) comprises a decidedly modest human nucleus when compared with the tens of millions who live in countries with a long aeronautical tradition, such as England, Italy, France, and Germany.

Describing Canada as "the Promised Land of Aviation," the British aeronautical writer J. H. Stevens noted in 1952 that "the principal aircraft companies (A. V. Roe, Canadair, De Havilland) that build aircraft of their own design number two in Toronto and one in Montreal. Other minor specialist firms that contribute to making those places the centres of national aeronautical production are located in both of these cities and in their surrounding areas. The British Fairey Aviation Company has a well-known factory near Halifax in Nova Scotia. Other islands of air technology are on the Niagara peninsula, in Fort William, Winnipeg and Vancouver. The largest builder is, however, A. V. Roe Canada, Ltd., or Avro-Canada, which derives from the 'shade workshop' of Victory Aircraft Ltd. and is a branch of the British Hawker Siddeley Group. Nevertheless, it has an independent board of directors, like the other divisions, over which Sir Frank Spriggs and Sir Roy Dobson exercise only a general policy control. Other industries cover the whole field of accessories, instruments and aircraft materials. Hundreds of firms produce various parts according to the designs and standards of aircraft construction. Finally, Canada produces steel and light alloys for all its own needs making use of its vast mineral deposits. There is also a 'pilot plant' for the production of titanium. Canada possesses complete scientific and experimental equipment in the National Research Council of Ottawa. Wind tunnels, laboratories that are equipped to examine materials and construct models make it possible to carry out any kind of experiment. Another sign of Canada's determination not to remain behind in aeronautical progress is the fact that there are two electronic computers in Toronto: one at Avro-Canada and the other at the university, which also has a hypersonic wind tunnel in Downsview. During the winter, industrial production remains unaffected, for the factories are all well-heated. Even the hangars are kept at a temperature of 70 avoiding drafts in a way that seems miraculous. The working conditions, for example, are better than those in the average British factory, and it is common practice to work in shirtsleeves during the winter, both in the offices and in the shops. The cold, however, makes it necessary that all the planes be kept under roof."[10]

AVRO SAUCERS FOR THE FAR NORTH?

At the beginning of 1953, when no one was thinking about flying discs, they suddenly began to appear in the columns of Canadian newspapers.

On February 11, the *Toronto Star* announced in a banner headline that flying saucers should no longer be confined to the realm of fantasy, because they were actually being developed in one of Avro-Canada's hangars at the Malton airfield. Two columns of details and the news that the device was supposed to have a top speed of 1500 mph gave the clear impression that the writer had obtained his information from a very well-informed, if not completely candid, source that obviously worked somewhere in the powerful company.

Certain government experts who were immediately interviewed by reporters from the nearby capital sought to extricate themselves from the awkward situation by evasively declaring: "The Defense authorities are examining all ideas, even revolutionary ones, that have been suggested for the development of new types of supersonic aircraft, *also including flying discs.* This, however, is still in the beginning phase of research and it will be a number of months before we are able to reach anything positive and seven or more years before we come to actual production."

According to the *Star,* on February 16 C. D. Howe, minister of defense production, told the House of Commons that "the government was constantly studying 'new concepts and new designs' for fighters . . . adding weight to reports that Avro is even now working on a mock-up model of a 'flying saucer' capable of flying 1500 miles per hour and climbing straight up in the air."

On February 27 the company involved also joined the chorus of "surprising" revelations. The president of the firm, Crawford Gordon, Jr., wrote in its house organ: "Like all aircraft companies who want to stay in business, we are directing a substantial part of our efforts towards new ideas and advanced designs.

"One of our projects can be said to be quite revolutionary in concept and appearance. The prototype being built is so revolutionary that when it flies all other types of supersonic aircraft will become obsolescent. This is all that Avro-Canada are going to say about this project."

After this vague and inconclusive statement, there were almost two months of relative calm. It seemed that the story was about to starve to death from lack of further specifics and that it would go the way of other journalistic revelations. But this was not to be. On April 21, the *Toronto Star* published the following: "Field Marshal Montgomery . . . became one of a handful of people ever to see Avro's mock-up of a 'flying saucer,' reputed to be capable of flying 1500 miles an hour. A guide who accompanied Montgomery quoted him as describing it as 'fantastic.'. . . Security precautions surrounding this super-secret are so tight that two of Montgomery's escorts from Scotland Yard were barred from the forbidden, screened-off area of the Avro plant."

This news, which was much more authoritative since a noted military personage was involved, gave rise to the strangest deductions. Later, on April 22 and 23, even the austere London *Times* opened its columns to news from the distant Dominion concerning those flying saucers, which it had hitherto severely banned from its cautious news columns.

On April 24, the *Toronto Star* confirmed its February story, adding that some of Canada's most noted aeronautical engineers were secretly working on a mysterious flying disc made of metal, wood, and plastics, which would allegedly be the "weapon of the future." For some time, said the *Star*, there had been rumors that an aircraft of this type was being built in Malton, but no one had got definite confirmation on it.

According to Air Vice Marshal D. M. Smith, what Field Marshal Montgomery had seen was the preliminary study of construction plans for a *gyroscopic fighter that could take off vertically and fly at a speed of* 1500 *mph. A gas turbine would revolve around the pilot, who would be positioned at the center of the disc.*

A SYMPTOMATIC SILENCE

For some time the leaks continued along the same lines, although without adding anything new, favored by the fact that the organ of British military aviation, the *R.A.F. Review,* reprinted almost the whole of the original Canadian inquiry, thereby conferring, so to speak, a semiofficial status upon the news.[11]

As a precaution, however, the review felt obliged to state that “none of the opinions expressed in the article” had been confirmed by the Air Ministry. In fact, all during the period that the news was breaking, the Ministry carefully kept its lips sealed. The Canadian flying saucer (the one in the newspapers) did not concern the Ministry, since, luckily for it, the truth about the real flying saucers of the R.C.A.F. was not even touched.

At this point began the discussions that played directly into the hands of the authorities that were directly interested in keeping the secret.

At the beginning of June, the daily information bulletin of the Swiss review *Interavia* reported that on the basis of inquiries made by its Canadian correspondent, the A. V. Roe flying disc was probably not in fact an airplane in the shape of a disc but, more simply, a delta-winged jet fighter-interceptor, that is, it had the shape of a triangle. In other words, it was a further development of the well-known Avro 707 heavy fighter and the Avro 698 Vulcan bomber powered with four jet engines.

The correspondent of the review was mistaken (or had he been deliberately misled?), since the firm had for some time been working on at least a third example of a delta-winged plane: the supersonic CF-105 Arrow, a twin-jet all-weather fighter of thirty-five tons, the testing date of which had, however, been scheduled at the earliest for the end of 1955. Evidently this project had nothing to do with the discs, which were several years in advance of it and had a radically different shape. And the proof of it is that when the press had completely forgotten the subject, a new, very brief story that appeared in Toronto on November 1 unexpectedly brought the subject up again.

The story read: “A mock-up of the Canadian flying saucer, the highly secret aircraft in whose existence few believe, was yesterday shown to a group of twenty-five American experts, including military officers and scientists.”[12]

Further news on the Avro pseudo-disc, which had in the meantime been officially baptized the Avro Omega, came on the following October 21, when the press declared that the aircraft had been under study for at least two years and that the cost of the prototype was reported to have been in the area of $200 million.

According to the papers, the Canadian government was planning to form entire squadrons of flying saucers for the defense of Alaska and the frozen reaches of the Far North. Their claimed low cost of manufacture and maintenance, their ability to intercept any high-speed plane in operation and to take off vertically, made them the ideal weapon for operations in wooded areas of Canada and in the subarctic and polar regions, for they were “completely independent of vulnerable runways or any fixed special equipment.”

The press of the Western world naturally received the news with a great sense of relief, and it unreservedly proclaimed: “The flying discs are real!” But waiting for the production-line Omegas (not to mention the prototype) began to drag out. A number of months passed. The summer came, then autumn, and still the Omega did not fly. Other saucers did fly, however, those that had been well known for a number of years.

UFOS OVER ENGLAND

The story began as follows. Sergeant Harry Waller of the 256th Anti-aircraft Regiment was setting up a radar installation in the southeast section of London when, between 3:30 and 4:15 P.M. on November 3, 1953, he noticed a strong signal at the edge of the scanning screen. After the blip was centered, it was received solidly.

Through the eyepiece of a theodolite, the object appeared to be white—"an incandescent white"—perfectly circular, the size of a tennis ball, and just about directly over the installation. By comparing the data obtained from the radar and the theodolite, it was deduced that it must have been hovering between 60,000 and 65,000 feet.

In the report forwarded to the War Office, the observer stated that it could not have been a weather balloon because the type of signal received by the radar indicated the presence of a metallic object of gigantic size. The return signals had actually been three or four times larger than those produced by the largest plane known. In addition, after hovering motionless for about ten minutes, the strange object flew rapidly out of radar and eye range.

From an investigation that was launched immediately, it was learned that no research balloons measuring 200 feet in diameter (for that was the size of the body that had been received on radar) had been launched in Great Britain for three months. A meteor trail would not have yielded the sharp edges of the image on the radar screen and a rocket could not have remained motionless in mid-air for so long a period of time.

On the same day—indeed, during just about the same period of time—T. S. Johnson and C. H. Smythe, two pilots who were flying over Kent at 15,000 feet in a Vampire training fighter, caught sight of the shiny UFO, which was flying at very high speed at about 60,000 feet, and they mentioned it in their flight report to the authorities. In the report they stated that it seemed to be spinning on its vertical axis and giving off fiery jets around its circumference, while a vivid, bluish light emanated from the central portion.

The interest aroused by the mysterious apparition—which finally brought the UFO psychosis to phlegmatic Britain—and additional sightings of unknown flying objects that continued to be reported from various parts of the country (sightings that naturally would have to be discounted because of the saucer excitement that was spreading among the public) ended by upsetting a number of highly placed personages. They demanded reassurances.

On November 19 the *News Chronicle* reported the Air Ministry's announcement: "We are not prepared to comment on individual reports . . . Every report is investigated, but 95% are found to be due to natural phenomena. About the others, the experts can reach no conclusion."

In the House of Commons a group led by Labour M. P. Bellenger introduced a question demanding whether the War Office was able to state the exact nature of the object that had been picked up by radar.

The government spokesman asked for a week in which to make the reply. Strange things occurred during that week. The Air Ministry backed up its declaration. The spokesman of the Defense Ministry also warmly approved: it was a weather balloon. Nothing unusual! The War Office—which was responsible for the questionable statement—after conducting a "new" series of investigations did a complete turnabout and in its second statement candidly admitted that the sighting was to be attributed to "mechanical deficiencies," that is, to certain transitory anomalies in the operation of the radar apparatus when it picked up a balloon of normal size and characteristics. (Someone, easing his conscience even more, added: electrical.)

The spokesman for the Ministry of Defense quickly disposed of the matter to an unusually crowded House on November 24, and although the newspapers showed considerable skepticism, they printed the official declarations and dropped the matter. Evidently the time was not yet ripe for the "big news."

THE SECRET OF THE CANADIAN STORY

The scanty news that was coming out of Canada in the meantime gave more and more support to the initial skepticism of the few people who lacked faith in the Omega. There was talk of sending the whole project to the United States, which would receive the honor, not to mention obligation, of building it and other projects that were under study and might replace the original model, which had "proved rather inefficient." The name of a certain aeronautical engineer, J. C. M. Frost, who had been identified as the principal designer of the project, began to appear with greater and greater frequency.

Finally, in March 1954, the American press described both Frost's hopes and the project in complete detail. The start of this new story was rather unusual.

Concerned about the marked progress that Soviet scientists had shown in the fields of jet aircraft and guided missiles, the United States Air Force had allocated a large sum (the exact figure was a military secret) for building within three years a prototype of the flying saucer that had been so well publicized in the press.

According to rumors circulating among military experts, U.S.-Canadian joint defense authorities had agreed to build the craft. "This is a ship that will be able to take off vertically," declared those who enthusiastically believed that the Western hemisphere could be defended by flying discs, "to hover in mid-air and to move at a speed of about 1850 mph. That is, it would be capable of performing all the maneuvers that flying discs are said to be capable of. This astonishing craft is the brain child of the English aeronautical engineer John Frost, who worked for the large De Havilland factory in England during the war and who later went on to A. V. Roe, in Malton, Canada. The aircraft that will be built for the U.S. Air Force is not, however, the first of this type that Frost has designed. Two years ago he had designed and submitted to American experts an aircraft which was called the Flying Manta because of its behavior on take-off. It more or less resembled the present disc, but it could not take off vertically.[13] In addition, its top speed did not exceed 1430 mph. The Manta had interested the American General Staff, but in view of these operating deficiencies, it was decided not to build it."

Month after month of 1954 went by without further news from Canada, either official or semiofficial.[14] By now people were expecting to see the Frost discs, with a combined emblem of the United States star and the Canadian maple leaf painted on them, flying through the skies by the dozen. Instead, on December 3 the Canadian Defense Ministry suddenly and officially announced that the project was being abandoned because, although a number of sub-assemblies had been built and it was believed that the machine would fly, *it was agreed that it would have served no useful purpose.*

When he was interviewed by reporters, Minister of Defense Howe confirmed the decision, adding that perhaps four or five million dollars had been spent on the Frost disc, but that the project had been given up without being carried to its final development because that would have involved a total expense in the neighborhood of 100 million dollars on something that was highly speculative.

THE QUARLES STATEMENT

On October 25, 1955, Air Force Secretary Donald Quarles released a statement through the press office of the Department of Defense permitting the A.T.I.C. to divulge some of the conclusions it had reached after its investigation of the UFOs. Among other things, Quarles declared:

"We are now entering a period of aviation technology in which aircraft of unusual configuration and flight characteristics will begin to appear. . . . The Air Force will fly the first jet-powered vertical-rising airplane in a matter of days. *We have another project under contract with AVRO Ltd., of Canada, which could result in disc-shaped aircraft somewhat similar to the popular concept of a flying saucer.* . . . While some of these may take novel forms, such as the AVRO project, they are direct-line descendants of conventional aircraft and should not be regarded as supra-natural or mysterious. . . . Vertical-rising aircraft capable of transition to supersonic horizontal flight will be a new phenomenon in our skies, and under certain conditions could give the illusion of the so-called flying saucer. The Department of Defense will make every effort within the bounds of security to keep the public informed of these developments so they can be recognized for what they are. . . . *I think we must recognize that other countries also have the capability of developing vertical-rising aircraft, perhaps of unconventional shapes.* However, we are satisfied at this time that none of the sightings of so-called ‘flying saucers’ reported in this country were in fact aircraft of foreign origin.”[15]

Whether it was deliberate or merely a slip (even the newspapers failed to catch it!), Quarles got his tenses all wrong. He was talking about aircraft of the near future, while the flying discs belonged to the past and not a very recent past at that.

According to news stories in the American papers, the new Avro project was the latest Frost project and was described as an aircraft resembling a plate turned upside down (finally!) with 180 adjustable nozzles distributed around its perimeter that would make vertical take-off possible and then, by changing the angles of the nozzles, enable the craft to move forward, sideways, or backwards.

Even leaving aside doubts about the seriousness of the project, it is at least astonishing that for the first time in the history of flight an aircraft (and a pioneering, supersonic plane at that) promised to take shape solely according to suggestions of the public at large!

In any case, the first reliable news came in February 1959. It was then called “a revolutionary type of vertical take-off plane based on the principle of the ‘ring jet’ that promises a 100 percent or more increase in lift at take-off through the ‘ground effect’ as compared with the 15 to 20 percent obtained by helicopters.” In other words, an aeronautical adaptation of the physical principle behind the Vickers Hovercraft that was conceived in 1953 in order to exploit the so-called “air cushion” produced by a jet aimed at the ground: a curious machine of considerable utility that is in current use and is also being produced in the United States. Its field, however, is limited, for it cannot in practice fly any higher than six feet or any faster than 300 mph.

> In fact, semiofficial statements later described it—without, however, adding any noteworthy details—as “a type of air-

craft that combines the characteristics of air cushion machines and airplanes, the development of which is being jointly undertaken by the U.S. Army and U.S. Air Force and the Canadian government because the project promises to result in a machine that could revolutionize all the ordinary methods of aerial reconnaissance."

The American papers did not, of course, fail to feature this latest bit of news. For openers, Field Marshal Montgomery was involved again: it was said that he had been given a model of the new machine. A few weeks later another "well-informed" (but anonymous) source baldly declared that England had a considerable fleet of flying saucers at the ready in Canada and that Field Marshal Montgomery had been present at recent, highly secret maneuvers of these craft. "These machines," the cautious reporter wrote, "were built by A. V. Roe and then shipped to a special secret airfield in the center of the country."

In reality, Avro was going through a bad period.

THE END OF THE "AVRO-CAR"

After stating that the potential air threat to Canada had diminished because the Soviets had only a limited number of intercontinental bombers, the Canadian government used the statement as a pretext for canceling the contract for the CF-105 (the Arrow), a heavy bomber, and for its power plant, the Iroquois turbojet, thereby forcing Avro to lay off a large portion of its personnel.[16]

These decisions by the government and the company threw almost 10,000 people out of work, most of them specialists, for the Avro Saucer project—renamed the Avro-Car and financed by the United States (for the simple reason that, according to official sources, "there was as yet no comparable project in the United States")—could barely keep the technicians and skilled workers of the main plants fully occupied.

On April 14, 1959, General Frank Britton during a short press conference in Washington restated the facts, implying that the first test flight of the aircraft would soon be taking place and cautiously declaring that the new type of airplane was "perhaps" destined to revolutionize traditional aeronautical concepts but that there had been some difficulties in developing the idea.

Again a number of months passed without any news, but finally, in August 1960, the American authorities decided to allow reporters to see the prototype, which in the meantime had been changed from a single- to a two-seater. The difficulties had not disappeared. Even though masked by optimism for the occasion, the results were not very encouraging. Quite the contrary. The official report ended, in fact, with the obvious observation that "even for this type of V.T.O.L. plane (vertical take-off and landing) the principal problem is low speed stability. Tests with a full-scale model have been made at the large forty by eighty foot wind tunnel at the Ames Research Center, belonging to N.A.S.A., but they were not completely successful. It became clear, however, that the various problems inherent in a circular aircraft of this type are not insurmountable."[17]

While ufologists jumped with joy on learning of the serious shortcomings of these phony earth-made discs (shortcomings that, according to them, our Brothers from Space had brilliantly overcome several centuries, or perhaps even several millennia, ago), the first model of this type continued in its period of gestation for yet more months, occasionally rising clumsily above the cement runway at Malton. Finally, in December 1961 the United States Department of Defense decided to withdraw from participation in the development of the Avro-Car on the grounds that the formula had failed. It was another plane that definitely had "no tomorrow."

Here ends the *official* story of the Canadian flying saucers. An endless series of half-truths and manipulation of facts, perhaps agreed upon at the highest levels, in order to deliberately muddy the already dark waters of the whole affair.

In any case, the significant fact is established that the only country that has publicly stated that it was working on plans and actually building aircraft having some resemblance (*at least externally*) *to the* "*notorious*" *flying discs has been Canada.*

GRATIFIED AMBITIONS

The Canadian desire to do something big and new in the field of aviation was first manifested in 1942 when the government had a large military airfield, with room for expansion, built near Arnprior, about forty miles from Ottawa.

The aeronautical circles of the capital made no bones about their plans to transform the Arnprior Airport into a Canadian Farnborough (or, better, into a Canadian Royal Aeronautical Establishment) for the Canadian National Research Council. Requests for technical and financial assistance to carry out these plans were made to the British government at the time of the Commonwealth Conference of 1944.

A duplicate of the Royal Aeronautical Establishment? It would only be extra work and expense. The wooded mountains of southwest Canada offered much more solid possibilities and guarantees for the erection of a large experimental center that could develop not only the types of aircraft that everyone was familiar with but also types of aircraft that *no one* should know about, at least until some indefinite time in the future.

With the help of the most close-mouthed civil servants in the Canadian Department of Mines and the Technical Surveys Mapping Branch, conditions in four selected zones in the southern part of the country were examined. This was a vast mountainous and almost deserted region (over seventy-five square miles) situated astride the boundary between British Columbia and Alberta, bordering the state of Washington on the south and reaching the Peace River District in the north.

The location was ideal: a few mountain roads and all of them easily controlled. Virtually nonexistent local traffic in the area round about. Not a single agglomeration of houses that could be called a city. An extensive string of islands and islets off the coastal zone. A thin network of railroads far to the north and to the south: the spur of the Canadian National Railway that links Prince George with Edmonton and the spur from Vancouver that runs along the United States border. One single large automobile artery—the Alaska Highway—

winding through the silent valleys and running almost due north.

The remote and wooded nature of the area would act—as it did indeed act—as a natural barrier to any indiscreet eye.

THE SHADE WORKSHOPS

The British were not new at undertakings of this sort. In the extensive area of the New Forest in Hampshire, the R.A.F. had secretly set up five airfields for the Bomber Command in 1942.[18]

The keystone of the British camouflaging of large secret factories was, however, the “shade workshops,” which were developed in order to put the war industry in a place of safety by distributing it among the wooded regions of the country.

The public relations department of the British Railways printed a booklet in 1945 entitled *It Can Now Be Revealed* in order to publicize the railways’ contribution to victory. Here we read:

“Whenever a new arms city has been born, the railway has usually been prenatal consultant, midwife and full-time foster-parent in turn.

“A certain big ordnance factory in South Wales provides an excellent example. This factory—its name must still remain a secret—was conceived when the first war clouds began to appear on the horizon, but its designers planned it on so vast a scale that thirty-five months were to pass before the digging, the building and the equipping were finished and a start made upon production. . . .

“The factory grew up on twin sites. On one of these sites the work of burrowing deep into the hillside to build a warren of underground magazines was begun. . . .

“The completed ordnance factory contained 1100 separate buildings, mostly of bricks . . . and concrete, occupying an area of four square miles. It is served internally by 58 miles of roads and 24 miles of railway. Its electric power is carried by 300 miles of cable . . . At peak production it was estimated that 37,000 men and women, working on three shifts, would be needed. . . . As with the workers, so with the raw materials upon which they work and with the products of their industry, representing two perfectly controlled flows of hundreds of tons daily."

With the exception of the persons concerned, the rest of the population of the United Kingdom worked or fought without remotely suspecting the existence of this and other similar emergency set-ups. (And today people say that it would be impossible to have UFOs operating out of secret bases!) Even the Luftwaffe had no inkling of this appetizing objective, but if by chance it had been lucky enough to hear of the place, through spy channels, it would have been very difficult to spot among the natural evergreens and those that had been transplanted there, the camouflage nets scattered about in profusion, and the "bird lures" erected in the vicinity.

On the other hand, the R.A.F. command did have a general notion about the existence of the L.F.A., the large experimental center dedicated to Hermann Göring, from repeated reports from the Intelligence Service. According to these reports, the center was engaged in highly important research and was located in Volkenrode, near Braunschweig.[19] Allied reconnaissance planes repeatedly crisscrossed the area looking for the mysterious center, but unsuccessfully. All that could be seen on the photographs were scattered farmhouses and extensive woods interlaced by highways and country roads. There was no indication of military structures.

In reality, the more than seventy buildings comprising the center seemed merely to be innocent farms or were so scattered in the depths of a thick pine forest and so well protected by this natural camouflage that although it covered a total area of nearly two and a half square miles it could not have been spotted even by a low-flying plane.

The town itself was repeatedly bombed by Anglo-American planes. Only two bombs ever fell on the L.F.A., and they were dropped by accident: an American four-engined bomber that had been hit by flak jettisoned its remaining bomb load to lighten the plane for the return flight.

To set up the UFO bases and keep them hidden from any prying eyes that might fly over them, technicians already had at their disposal a choice of tested systems: they could either put the bases underground (using old abandoned mines) or depend on the camouflage afforded by the natural vegetation.

It was decided to use prefabricated hangars because—since there was no fear of air attack—they could easily be built, shipped, and set up even in remote areas; in time, if it proved necessary, they could be put underground and covered with shrub so that they would be invisible from above.

The original nucleus of the buildings—the work of a special branch of the Hawker Siddeley Group that specialized in manufacturing prefabricated buildings—grew rapidly with the influx of German technicians and projects. And finally Soviet secret agents in Canada got indirect word of the matter.[20]

THE "OTTAWA SCANDAL"

Nevertheless, it must be assumed that these agents did not succeed in drawing a complete and exact picture of Canadian activity in the highly specialized branch of suction aircraft, spherical rockets, and other types of unconventional aircraft, for government authorities had immediately taken Draconian measures that virtually isolated from the outer world the entire area where the secret aircraft industry was being developed.[21]

The newspapers of the time mentioned atomic spying, but the affair was in reality a good deal more complicated than that.

Administrative and technical personnel of the Soviet Embassy and four Canadian civil servants were involved in the proved accusation of industrial and military spying that became known as the "Ottawa scandal."

On February 19, 1946, Defense Minister Howe declared curtly to the press: "The spy affair does not involve either atomic secrets or the smuggling of uranium. It's another matter entirely!"

According to the Exchange-Telegraph Press Service, the spies had come into possession of information on radar and on Canadian factories engaged in the production of war materials, "continuously obtaining information over a period of several months." To be exact, since August 1945.

On March 4, 1946, the Royal Canadian Commission of Enquiry made public its final report. We do not know whether it is complete or was censored. It gives a list of the individuals concerned and a list of Soviet requests for information concerning twenty-one different military, industrial, organizational, and scientific areas or matters. These included: radar, snorkels, V-2 torpedo rockets, floodlights, the locations of known and secret military factories and what they produced, the units and deployment of the armed forces, large troop movements, supply services, special air and field grenades, antisubmarine bombs, industrial and chemical techniques, samples of uranium, explosives, atomic centers, the correspondence and movement of diplomatic officials, highly placed persons who might be corrupted, projects under study at the Canadian National Research Council.

The official report ended with the following observation: “We can demonstrate completely only the activity of four of the agents employed in the service of the Soviet embassy. The evidence indicates that many other agents besides the four specifically mentioned were involved and *information more intrinsically important has been sent out of the country.* We are not in a position to report on it yet because further evidence has to be taken.”

The sequel was never made known. Since secret matters were involved, the veil of secrecy fell over all.

And since military secrecy does not recognize friendships or alliances except in the hour of danger, even the United States was kept in the dark as to what was being done in, so to speak, its neighbor’s backyard.

LET WHOEVER DOES IT WAIT FOR IT

In order to understand this curious inconsistency better we must go back to the end of 1945, when the Americans were walking tall because of their brilliant victory over Japan and their exclusive possession of the atom bomb. They had not yet experienced the anxieties and disappointments of the “cold war” and the small “hot” wars in colonial countries. American power spread over the whole world, and the world that was rising out of the ruins of war was hungry: hungry for flour for underfed masses and hungry for money for industries with empty bank accounts.

Even England needed economic and financial assistance, and it asked for help in the name of the recent victorious alliance. Help was given, but psychologically and practically England was made to feel obligated.

In January 1946, just as they were beginning to be openhanded about giving important information to the press, the British authorities had to come to a reckoning concerning the sudden but not completely unexpected American objections to the exchange of scientific information. This exchange had been agreed upon during the war and had made it possible for the Allies to meet and beat the Germans' formidable technological potential. Now America refused to bring the British government up to date on the atomic secrets being studied at the various centers in the United States with an excuse that must objectively be recognized as almost an insult to the United Kingdom.

The sensational development that suddenly spotlighted one of the "silent struggles" dividing the two biggest Western powers had begun on October 8, 1945. On that day President Truman declared that the secret industrial and mechanical processes that had led to the production of the atomic bomb would be communicated "to no other nation." He indirectly explained why this rule was also applied to England, stating that although England had spent $100 million to develop the atom bomb before turning the work over to the United States (that is, before 1943), America itself had subsequently spent $2 billion before the bomb was ready for use. Ergo: the bomb had become by fact and right an exclusively American property.

American obstructionism was then extended to the mining of uranium and to the processes for its peaceful, or industrial, exploitation. A news story published by the British press in January 1946 aroused the indignation of every good British and Dominion subject:

"The American authorities," the papers said, "have recently forbidden the communication of the results of researches on atomic energy to Great Britain because she has nothing to give America in exchange. British plans for the development of atomic energy are virtually at a standstill since the plant of an experimental station in Berkshire is hobbled by the lack of trained personnel. In addition, the lack of plutonium and uranium 235 that Great Britain has failed to obtain from America has delayed the start of experiments for which one and a half million pounds have been allocated."

Could touchy British pride take this hidden blackmail lying down? After all, it also involved powerful financial interests that were being seriously hurt.

The flow of official statements on aeronautical matters stopped almost abruptly. In addition, the secret negotiations being conducted with the highest American authorities who had been invited to take part in the development of new methods of flight that they could not comprehend, or underestimated, were interrupted. These negotiations had, however, come to a standstill when the Pentagon demanded to know exactly what the British had in mind and what advantages those particular projects would offer over and above those already being developed in the United States. This had occurred during the time when Secretary of Defense Forrestal was trying to impose his own style of Anglo-American collaboration, on the basis of an approach that he claimed would give equal voice to the two countries but that might later, in practice, perhaps be translated into a new Yankee hegemony extending to the field of new aircraft construction.

The British and Canadian authorities then decided to go it alone also in the field of nuclear energy, and they succeeded completely.[22]

As for the New Aviation then aborning, on June 24, 1947 (that is a real "date to remember"!), a formation of nine circular-shaped suction aircraft took off from a secret Canadian airfield and really let America's leaders know that England did have "something to give in exchange."

NOTES

1. Planned during the final phase of the Pacific War by the research and development division of Fairey Aviation Company

as a defense against the Japanese Kamikaze, the "Stooge" was a rocket bomb that resembled a torpedo seven and a half feet in length and a foot in diameter, with a rectangular-shaped wing having a span of nine feet and a conventional tail assembly with a rectangular surface. In its essential lines it followed the German V-1 flying bomb, except for the propulsive mechanism, which was a quadruple rocket using solid fuel and located in the after third of the body, and for the high-frequency control. It carried an explosive charge of 220 pounds, and its top speed was between 500 and 560 mph.

2. *Cf.* Prof. B. Thwaites, *On the Design of Aerofoils for Which the Lift Is Independent of the Incidence* (Aeronautical Research Council Reports and Memoranda No. 2612, London, H.M.S.O., 1947), p. 17. See also the same writer's Report No. 2611, *The Production of Lift Independent of Incidence: The Thwaites' Wing Flap* (London, 1947) and the report published in the *Journal of the Royal Aeronautical Society,* February 1948, the subject of which is "The Production of Wing Lift Independent of Incidence." This subject was not completely new, as can be deduced from the fact that as long ago as 1929 the German technician Oskar Schrenk had published a memorandum entitled "Researches on the Production of Lift without Recourse to the Angle of Incidence" in the *Zeitschrift für Mathematik und Physik,* issued by the University of Heidelberg.

3. Their appearance might well astonish even experts in aeronautical problems, who could look for information in the latest aeronautical texts without finding it. They belong to a secret experimental "family" of special suction airfoils called C.V.A., worked out by Professor Thwaites. Their application to flight was subordinated to the adoption of special norms. At the time the report was published, wild rumors were circulating among aeronautical circles in England stating that these profiles were designed for a "flying wing" project that would be circular in plan view and for the main section of "all body" (wingless) aircraft of mixed lift (aerodynamic-jet). The idea of a fuselage with lift must have been

suggested by examination of data the Germans had obtained on the aerodynamic behavior of the spindle-shaped inclined body of the V-2 rockets when they were tested in the supersonic wind tunnel at Kochel. These tests were carried out initially to study drift patterns and subsequently, in function of the relationship between lift and resistance, to lengthen the gliding range of the missiles. Later on, the idea, which in its basic form derived directly from the German studies, was also studied by the Americans with their Pluto project; but the Marquardt low-level supersonic unlimited-range vehicles—missiles with a nuclear ramjet without wings or with only vestigial wings—which were supposed to be ready to fly in 1963 really existed only on paper.

4. *Cf.* "*Nasce una nuova architettura dette cellule?*," *Alata* (Milan, February 1947), pp. 10–11.

5. Nevertheless, to avoid any misunderstanding, it should be noted that after the AW-52 "flying wing" was shelved, the appellation "boomerang" was given to another type of wing with a tapering plan that also more or less vaguely resembled the weapon of the Australian aborigines: the crescent-shaped swept-back wing (it was also called the "scimitar" and "half-moon" wing). The Germans had conducted studies on this shape in 1944 for their heavy jet bombers. The British subjected it to prolonged testing in the National Aeronautical Establishment's wind tunnel and mounted it on the Handley Page HP-88 (an experimental single-engined plane that crashed in 1951), the HP-80 (a heavy bomber with four jet engines), and the HP-97 (an unsuccessful transatlantic airliner powered by four jet engines).

6. For example, they had the subsonic "Jindivik" aerial target built by the Australian subsidiary of the Hawker Siddeley Group take off from a gyroscopically controlled bogey in order to prevent the target from running off the airstrip. The turrets of the fast Centurion Mark III tanks were stabilized by the Foucault top. They built a secret apparatus to stabilize fighter planes automatically during the time the radar-controlled firing

was in operation. They used electric gyrostabilizers to regulate their air-to-sea torpedoes. (They may have taken as a model the ingenious G-13-C electrical roll stabilizer designed for winged naval torpedoes that had been tested in the hydrodynamic tank of the experimental aeronautical center of Guidonia in 1942 and that had given results on the order of a tenth of a degree. The G-13-C never got beyond the test stages because of the turn the war took and also because of a persistent lack of interest by the so-called responsible authorities in Italy.) These examples are sufficient to indicate the degree of interest the British showed in stabilizing devices.

7. Professor Shenstone knew Germany quite well, having worked at Junkers in 1930 and maintained cordial relations with German scientists up to the outbreak of the war. Hence he had been included in an Anglo-Canadian team responsible for investigating German aerodynamic researches with particular reference to the problems of suction.

8. *Cf. Flight* (London, August 3, 1945).

9. See Norman S. Currey, "*L'Industrie aéronautique du Canada*," *Interavia* (Geneva, May 1950).

10. See James Hay Stevens, "*Il Canada, è la terra promessa dell'aviazione, nido ed arsenale dell'Occidente*," *Alata* (Milan, June 1952).

11. See "Man Made Flying Saucers," *The R.A.F. Review* (London, April 1953), pp. 11–12. When the magazine published the schematic profiles of the "Omega" (as it was called in the American press, perhaps because of its shape in plan view), it was seen that it was not, in fact, a device having the shape of a saucer turned upside down—as might have been expected after a number of close-range North American sightings—but a more or less horseshoe-shaped "flying wing." According to the British magazine, the craft had been designed as a test of the new formula and for the subsequent building

of fast supersonic interceptors. It was supposed to be relatively small, with a wingspread and overall length both of about thirty-six feet. Along the leading edge of the machine were about twenty air intake slots to supply the propulsor in the wing of the craft. At the sharply cut off tail there was a large, elliptical exhaust nozzle containing ten deflectors by which the craft changed direction (deflector vanes for control) by means of a flow of compressed air coming from the central turbo-compressor. (There were ten of them, but a couple would have done the job.) The burned gases were discharged from the numerous exhaust ducts, thereby propelling the craft. In the middle of the back was a narrow cabin for a single pilot, topped by a teardrop-shaped cupola in transparent plastic from which the pilot could enjoy perfect visibility over 360° at the level of the horizon. (However, he was completely blind as far as vision beneath the horizon was concerned.) Around the vertical axis of the aircraft and inside the wing a large turbine engine revolved, but no details about it were supplied. However, a short time later the magazine *The Aeroplane* made good the lacuna by publishing a schematic longitudinal section that was purely hypothetical and based on the adoption of a radial centripetal turbine that exhausted the gas that expanded in the collector. Nevertheless, granting for the sake of argument that the "Omega" actually did exist, wouldn't a centrifugal radial turbine be the most likely kind of power plant, since it was easily adaptable to the flat conformation of the plane and to its special propulsive arrangement? The plan indicated the collector of the air that was to be compressed, the combustion chambers of the turbine, the fan for the centrifugal compressor, and the duct for excess air. In the sketch the exhaust gases mixed with part of the fresh, rammed air from the front air intake were erroneously shown to flow in from the rear aperture. Although this justified the type of turbine that was suggested, it was clearly contrary to the original news from Canada. However, the rotation of the motor was supposed to give a gyroscopic stability to the interior of the craft, since a rotating gyroscope could maintain its position in space without change. (True, but what about the violent forward motions that would have obtained while the craft was in flight?)

12. During the last years of the war the most incredible tricks and stratagems to mislead the enemy and to wreak havoc among his troops were worked out at the Inter-Services Research Bureau, which had its headquarters in several rooms in the Victoria and Albert Museum. There explosive rubber snakes and orchids were thought up for the Burma front, explosive souvenir statuettes for Japanese-occupied Borneo; rubber tunas loaded with light arms and ammunition for the Maquis to be washed up along the French coast; coffins with radio transmitters for Norwegian partisans, and other such devices. It was in the obliging penumbra of this old Victorian building that the plans for “bird lures” were born: more than five hundred false objectives made to mislead the Luftwaffe: fuel deposits, railway yards, generating plants, workshops, and airfields built of wood and tarpaper, which drew a large number of bombs away from the real, camouflaged objectives in the vicinity. (It has been estimated that 5 percent of the bomb tonnage dropped on England hit only the “bird lures.”) In the same building the idea of the “Starfish” took shape. The “Starfish” were fires lighted at night to simulate burning cities, and they drew off into the open countryside the fury of the German bombers. In the same building too, British countermeasures against the German radio finders guiding the raiders across the Channel were coordinated. (When a German pilot flying over England at night asked the central radio for his location, the British stations received the answers and retransmitted them in altered form, thus confusing the enemy pilot; flying over the outskirts of London, he would be led to believe that he had flown far off course and was over Manchester, about 200 miles north.) Therefore it should not astonish anyone that in 1942, on the suggestion of the Inter-Services Research Bureau, the British fast and furiously “built” a whole cruiser out of a laid-up tanker in Alexandria. The point of this was to mislead Italo-German reconnaissance and give the impression that the British had established naval equality in the eastern Mediterranean.

During the war these expedients were generally called “psychological weapons." In times of peace they successfully serve to distract the attention of third parties (the general public or the national press—journalists being the thorn in the side of generals and cabinet ministers—or even agents of foreign secret services, although they have exceedingly sensitive noses) from things the military have accomplished or are interested in. Was the wooden mock-up at Malton a genuine full-scale model of the new machine? Or was it rather an expedient thought up to mask one of the many postwar secrets? It seems that even Field Marshal Montgomery, at least at first, was allowed to see only the mock-up. Can this be possible? Certainly. In England one can be a high-ranking officer and still be subject to heavy restrictions if national security so demands. In corroboration of this little-known truth we cite a news story that appeared in British military publications shortly after the war. In March 1942 a secret airfield was set up at Tempsdorf in Bedfordshire for two "special" squadrons of night bombers. What was special and secret about these squadrons was their job of dropping supplies to the European resistance movements and of flying French, Dutch, Czech, Polish, and Norwegian agents into their respective areas. The pilots and crewmen at the airfield had absolutely no contact with the local residents and the secrecy about their activities was so strict that even if a high-ranking R.A.F. officer unfamiliar with the functions of the airfield asked them for information, they were required to give him false information. Besides this, not even the mechanics who worked on the planes had any idea of what they were actually being used for. Colonel Pickard, the commander of the formation, is the only person involved whose name is known, for the Air Ministry and the War Office have never given out the names of the pilots who took part in these missions. Were the first cautious statements and the later contradictory ones, as well as the whole matter of the Avro disc, merely part of a smoke-screen that was handled very expertly? If the British had any interest in confusing the issue (and they did!), they succeeded marvelously. Even today the truth about the UFOs seems to have fallen into a bottomless well, and the most daring conjectures and the most foolish nonsense are all one as far as most people are concerned.

13. For the “Stingray” a jet take-off was planned by inclining the craft at a seventy-degree angle on a special ramp. This was certainly not the ideal solution, but this curious type of take-off was necessitated by the installation of an exclusively propulsive engine. (This was, in fact, a “flying wing” with a shape that tended toward the circular. It was a type of installation that would never have permitted the craft to hover in the air, one of the characteristics of real flying saucers. In addition, it would have been impossible to pilot such a plane, which appeared to lack elevators or any other kind of aerodynamic or gaseodynamic vanes capable of producing the basic climbing and diving maneuvers. The Frost project was completely extemporaneous—in the matter of new conceptions the British aircraft companies were already officially orienting themselves toward the gradual application of jet lift—and basically was only a badly worked out imitation of an excellent product which, strange to say, owes its fame above all to the fact that it is still secret and thus unknown and uncopiable.

14. Or, to be exact, the Canadian press returned to the now forbidden subject only once more, but this time apropos of the other flying saucers, those called UFOs. The American ufologist Donald Keyhoe, in the first of his well-known editorial labors, states that from the beginning the Canadian authorities were openly skeptical about the flying saucers, but that in the spring of 1952, “after a long series of exceptional sightings, their attitude changed and a conference of highly placed persons was held in Ottawa. Four days later, the secret service of the R.C.A.F. publicly admitted that it had begun a serious investigation. At the same time the commission for Defense Research announced the creation of an office (modeled on the American Project Blue Book) that would conduct its inquiries in secret.” (But why, then, even mention the fact?) In September 1954 the Canadian press reported that “after three full years of continuous and absolutely useless sky watch, the government has decided to transfer the personnel of the office and of the relative station ta less speculative duties than those of hunting down the phantom saucers.” In reality, during 1952 the discs flew over the region more than once. As soon as construction

on the observation station was begun, the saucers obstinately began to avoid that part of the sky: who knows through what underground channels the Martians got wind of the matter?! A successful bit of extraterrestrial spying? Ufologists find it easy to consider highly surreal opinions perfectly valid, but if we subject the whole affair to the cold light of reason, it seems to have the same amount of credibility as movie adventures of the James Bond type.

15. After debunking all 131 reports of sightings in North America during the first half of 1955, Mr. Quarles stated that the government had "some time ago initiated negotiations with the Canadian government and with Avro-Canada for the preparation of an experimental model of the Frost flying disc. This aircraft will then be mass produced and used for the common defense of the sub-arctic area of the continent." After they had rejected various projects that appeared too costly or inefficient, the choice of the American experts finally fell on Type Y. News release No. 1053-55 put out by the Office of Public Information to report the statement of the Air Force Secretary, informed the press that a photograph of the projected disc (or, more accurately, a photograph of an "artist's conception" of the disc) was available on request from the Pictorial Branch of the Department of Defense. This curious publicity photograph —which depicted the disc flying over American skyscrapers (see Figure 29, which is an enlargement of the disc detail)— revealed that project Y was something radically different from the Omega. The new Frost project had the classical external shape of a saucer turned upside down, like the real discs, but it depicted, to be blunt, an absurd propulsive system for a machine of that type.

16. Nevertheless, shortly afterwards the decision was revoked. The Arrow, a twin-jet fighter with a delta-wing formation, was originally designed to replace the CF-100 Canuck beginning in 1951. But because of a long series of modifications in both the developmental and the manufacturing stages, necessitated by the continued lack of jets of the proper power (the planned Iroquois turbojet being delayed in mounting), the prototype

did not fly until autumn 1957, when it was temporarily equipped with two Pratt and Whitney J-75 turbojets. It was estimated that the plane would go into assembly-line production in 1959. On the other hand, to get an unfortunately somewhat sketchy idea of the extraordinary potential of Avro-Canada, one need only recall that at the end of the first six months of 1955, the date of the last progress report that was made public, the jet engine division had already produced 1500 Orenda turbojets and over half a million turbine vanes, succeeding in producing toward the end about 100,000 vanes a month, each of which required sixty different mechanical operations, most entailing a high degree of precision.

17. In autumn 1959 a very out-of-focus photograph of the Frost disc (subsequently called the Avro Air-Cushion Aircraft and finally simply the Avro-Car) was making the rounds of the press. It was claimed that a "free-lance photographer" had taken the picture during a "surprise flight over the Avro factory at the moment the 'disc' was taken out of the hangar" for testing in "a tethered condition." It was necessary, however, to await the release of the official photograph, which did not come until August 1960, to be able to make any accurate deductions about the mysterious aircraft. On the top surface of the machine—whose thick rounded edge revealed that the designers intended to remain within the lower subsonic speed ranges (one of the U.S. Army's contract specifications)—the first thing noticed is the central air intake with its large, shrouded vertical fan driven by three Continental J-69 turbines housed within the lens-shaped body. The superpressure of the underside (the air cushion) was created and maintained (but only when close to the ground) by a jet of air coming from the fan and expelled through the Venturi tube ring nozzle around the edge of the disc. For horizontal flight, the jet flow from the ring was directed toward the rear, thus developing a component of forward motion and the ordinary aerodynamic lift produced by the flat belly of the aircraft moving at a slight positive inclination was added to the lift component. In 1960 the final objective of the project was to perfect an efficient and reliable method for swinging the ring

jet through a 90° arc in order to limit the thrust developed by the lift-jet to vertical movements of the aircraft (*i.e.,* to take-off and landing) and to use aerodynamic lift for horizontal flight. This would, in any case, have been the first step toward the realization of the future supersonic type (requested by the U.S. Air Force). The circular wings, by reason of their low aspect ratio, are, however, very unstable, being subject to tipping over suddenly. This basic and serious defect, which proved to be unremediable despite every effort, signed the death warrant of the project.

18. See "Forest Hid Five 'Dromes," *Eighth Army News* (Trieste, January 1, 1946), p. 1.

19. See "The L.F.A.: A German Research Station," *Aircraft Production* (London, November 1945); and especially Col. L. E. Simon, *German Scientific Establishments* (New York, Mapleton House, 1947), pp. 11–45.

20. The A. W. Hawksley factory of Hucclecote, which had been absorbed by the Hawker Siddeley Group for the production of rough-finished aeronautical parts and accessories, produced tens of thousands of prefabricated houses during the 1945–1947 period. These were made of a light alloy called "Airoh," and after home needs had been fully supplied, a good part went to Australia and Canada.

21. In the postwar period, before the United States' defensive radar network was extended to the Far North (that is, up until the end of 1952), Soviet long-range reconnaissance planes from Siberian and subarctic air bases often returned the visits that American reconnaissance planes based in Japan made over Manchuria and eastern Siberia, by flying over Alaska, the Yukon Territory, and the Mackenzie District, areas which proved within their range. If the secret reconnaissance has not been repeated and extended with the technological advances in flying, this is owing mostly to the installation of the triple radar chain extending across Canada that the American military authorities have set up as a first line of defense for the

United States and, beginning in 1958, also to the disconcerting availability (on payment) of all the aerial photographs made for the Ministry of Power and National Resources. According to news stories in the Ottawa papers in 1966, a good part of the photographs, which now cover virtually the whole of the nearly four million square miles of the country, reproduce military stations, barracks, bridges, ports, and airports. All restrictions on the sale of this precious material were in fact lifted in 1958, when it was concluded that the advent of spying by means of stratospheric photographic reconnaissance planes of the U-2 type rendered further precautions superfluous. Later on, various secret types of both American and Soviet strategic reconnaissance satellites equipped with high-resolution telephoto lenses were added to the U-2s. Nevertheless, it remains true that an underground installation or one that is properly camouflaged with live vegetation easily escapes being identified from a distance photograph and that the maps relative to a specific zone can be quietly retouched beforehand in the photographic offices of the military censors. (Unless, in the meantime, the UFO bases have been moved elsewhere, having fulfilled their original mission.)

22. And American obstructionism naturally continued. On January 26, 1956, the scientific editor of the London *Daily Telegraph* revealed, in fact, a new disagreement between the British and Americans over the development of nuclear energy. "Pressure," he wrote, "is being brought to bear by the U.S. to discourage Britain from making thermonuclear weapons. This will almost certainly be one of the matters discussed when Sir A. Eden sees President Eisenhower. The American action is in line with her invariable policy since the end of the war of denying to all other countries any information or material that would aid in the design or manufacture of atomic weapons or other military developments such as nuclear-powered submarines. Under this policy, Britain and Canada, who collaborated with her in making the first atom bomb, have been treated in the same way as other countries. One reason for this is the fear in America that bad security might permit data gained by other Western countries to reach Russia. Another is belief in the

political expediency of keeping other Western countries dependent on America. America could deny Britain supplies of heavy water, which has double importance in the atomic field. It weighs about 1 percent more than ordinary water and occurs as about .02% of all natural water. Heavy water is an ideal working medium for some types of atomic reactors used in electric power production. It is also a starting point in the manufacture of lithium deuterise, a nuclear explosive used in hydrogen bombs. Britain, as reported in the *Daily Telegraph* on Monday and confirmed by the British Atomic Energy Authority last night, has abandoned the only project of its own for industrial-scale manufacture of heavy water. This was to have been in New Zealand, at Waireki. Steam from hot springs was to have been used for heavy water production and electric power generation. Partly because of a substantial increase in the cost of plant since the idea was first mooted, Waireki heavy water would have cost about £90,000 a ton, instead of an estimated £40,000. Britain has been paying between £65,000 and £75,000 a ton to Norway for supplies from the Norsk Hydro. In August the Americans offered to sell some of their own surplus supplies at £25,000 a ton. Admiral Strauss, head of the U.S. Atomic Energy Commission, said to me then in Geneva, 'Of course we shall want to know what it is going to be used for.' The condition that America has actually made is that recipient countries should satisfy her that none of it is being used for weapon manufacture. While Britain pursues her declared intention of manufacturing thermonuclear weapons, it would be difficult to give satisfactory proof that supplies from America were not being diverted to this purpose, or were not releasing supplies from other sources for that use. The trouble is that even if the Waireki project had been pursued it would have produced only some tens of tons of heavy water a year. For a single reactor producing 100 megawatts of electricity, enough for a city of 70,000 people, 400 tons might be needed. This means that if the Americans did not relax their conditions for Britain she might have to give up, for the time being, any plans for power reactors of this type until other sources could be expanded."

The American reply was not long in coming and generally confirmed the old precautionary measures. On November 2, 1957, the Democratic senator Clinton Anderson declared to the press that especially following the sensational Soviet missile achievement the most important internal American problem at the moment, susceptible to important international repercussions, was that of changing the federal laws on nuclear secrets in such a way as to share the data and scientific and technological discoveries in nuclear energy with the most qualified Western countries. He felt it necessary, however, to add immediately that Congress should examine the proposal to exchange with Great Britain the secrets inherent in atomic weapons and missiles with the greatest care in order to make sure that the English did not intend a "one-way" exchange. *In addition, unfortunately, they had little or nothing to offer in exchange for U.S. weapons* and the rest of the NATO countries had still less. Senator Anderson then stated that the secrets of the *Nautilus* atomic-powered submarine had been given to the English against their promise of turning over to the Americans information about their gas-cooled atomic reactor, but that after receiving the plans of the *Nautilus,* the English had not given the United States any details on their reactor. Naturally, it is very difficult in cases like this to separate right from wrong. But the facts speak for themselves.

CHAPTER 9

How to Do the Impossible

“In the light of logic and our experience of the methods generally employed by the Great Powers in the development of weapons, can we reasonably hypothesize that we are dealing with a secret weapon?” the journalist Franco Bandini rhetorically asked his readers at the time of the great “celestial invasion” of 1954. And he answered: “No! For, examining the technical side of the question, if we concede that the flying saucers have the performance attributed to them by the public, it is clear that they are not in an early stage of experimentation but something already perfected, gems of aeronautical science with astonishing characteristics. And all this has been achieved without the least scientific preliminaries, without preliminary studies or a movement in technology that might at least suggest that such result was in the offing?! Clearly, the secret weapon hypothesis arouses the greatest perplexity.”

“Let us suppose,” Bandini had written some years before, in 1950, “that some new and terrible weapon built by one of the two great powers, Russia or the United States, is really concealed under the generic name of flying saucers. Is this possible? The strongest evidence against this supposition is that the saucers apparently show no geographical preferences. One time they appear here, another time there, without, one would say, the least reason. Instead of showing a preference for desert areas, the seas, or the polar regions, as would be natural if it were a secret weapon, they dally like carefree tourists over cities, coast lines, the most crowded areas; they make low passes over industrial plants, and it almost appears that they are methodically exploring every corner of the earth. Let us add that they hover in the air for a quarter of an hour at a time (many reports speak of hours), making it easy for local photographers to shoot miles of film. What secret, then, could these extraordinary ‘secret weapons’ possibly hold?! If these devices belong to the United States, why do they also fly on the other side of the Iron Curtain, with all the risks and dangers of being shot down and comfortably and carefully examined? If they are Russian, why do they fly over American territory, running the same risks? And if they are experimental, how could they maintain the same forms over a number of years? And is it possible that in the meantime not even one of these saucers has ever crashed or been shot down or, in any case, examined in sufficient detail to yield positive information? Are these saucers, then, already ‘perfect’? And if they are, how can the silence that the interested power has maintained be explained—not to mention the silence of the power that is the object of their perennial and gigantic threat?”

Let us examine these objections in detail, one by one. They appear—but only “appear”—to be very well founded, if one thinks along ordinary lines or is forced to for lack of sufficient evidence.

There is no law that says an air weapon, if possessed in sufficient quantity and already at the necessary stage of technical perfection, must remain forever in the plants where it has been secretly prepared. Indeed, sending squadrons of unidentifiable flying machines that are so fast they cannot be intercepted through the air space of a (potential) enemy in time of peace would be a tacit but eloquent show of strength! (If, on the other hand, Bandini's reasoning were correct, the Russians should have jealously hidden their guided missile systems in their Siberian arsenals. Instead, they installed a good number of them in Cuba, right on America's doorstep.)

Any device, whether a weapon or not, can remain secret indefinitely even if exposed to the gaze of the public, provided that no one can determine its provenance, the way it operates, its manufacturing details, its purpose, and so on. And truly one cannot gainsay that for over two decades a whole complex of prearranged and fortunate circumstances have conspired to erect and maintain an impenetrable wall of silence around the real solution to the "mystery of the UFOs."

The fact that the discs have never attacked planes in flight or on the ground (contrary assertions by some ufologists are all without foundation), never dropped bombs or done anything that might be interpreted as aggression has, therefore, led those who support the idea that the discs are of extraterrestrial origin to speak of the "feelings of benevolent observation" that the pilots of the mysterious space ships are supposed to have concerning us. The list of these people, some of whom are innocents and others complete charlatans, is very long, but all their books are riddled with unlikely details and clear fabrications.[1]

In fact, one can now calmly maintain that the UFOs do not fly over the areas in which they are sighted with any deliberate intention of exploring them; they are simply in transit, coming or going to far more distant places.

We can unhesitatingly agree that they are *secret.* "Weapon," however, is far too restrictive a term. Strictly speaking, anything indispensable to war is a weapon. Extremely useful instruments designed for peaceful use can, if necessary, be adapted to military use, thereby acquiring the attributes of a weapon. A knife, obviously, can cut, and it can kill. In the first case it is a tool; in the second, a weapon. In short, what you call it depends on what you do with it. The UFOs cannot, therefore, be called weapons. They could be weapons, and they would become weapons (very deadly ones) when and if necessary; but at the moment they most certainly are *not* weapons. And if one finds the term "unidentified flying objects" that is so beloved of the ufologists displeasing, one need only call them "special aircraft with a secret operating cycle."[2]

What about the charge that the behavior of the UFOs is incautious? This doesn't seem to be the case. When some conventional plane tries to approach a UFO too closely, the device invariably pulls away, climbs, and disappears. On the other hand, even if one takes a series of photographs of the object hovering motionless in the sky, often at a very high altitude or surrounded by clouds of gas or vapors, how much secret information does one acquire? None, clearly; for the camera lens registers exactly what has been seen by the eyes of observers—that is, merely the external form of the device—and this means nothing to anyone who does not have the highly specialized information known only to the designers and builders of the mysterious machines.

The assertion that the UFOs cross the Iron Curtain is not completely true, although this idea has been fairly widespread for some time, thanks to the efforts of ufologists. With the exception of rare flights over German and Austrian territories previously occupied by the Soviets (but geographically a part of continental Europe), the UFOs have never appeared at altitudes *at which they could be seen* over territories belonging to the U.S.S.R. in such numbers or with such frequency that they aroused mass hysteria even remotely comparable to that aroused in the United States in 1947 and 1952 or in Europe in 1954.

The discs are marvels of engineering, but absolute perfection is not, alas, of this world. Even if today they are, logically, more evolved and reliable than at the time they first appeared, like any man-made machine, they were born with latent imperfections. One need, in fact, only recall the pitiful end of the little "flying oyster" that crashed in Montana to bring things back to their proper proportions.

If the "formula" seems to be much better than one can hope for today in terms of aeronautical safety, that certainly is not the result of superhuman help but devolves from the intelligent fusion of certain revolutionary technical principles. For *there are no miracles in aeronautics but only a good dose of farsightedness, great daring, and a very large number of experimental studies, a great part of which are secret.*

FORTUNES AND MISFORTUNES OF MILITARY SECRECY

"We know," Bandini continued in his careful examination, "that at times the flying saucers literally infest the skies. They go in pairs, in threes; some have seen them in the hundreds. This posits large-scale production of technologically very complicated objects, the existence of laboratories and experimental centers, special airfields, recently built factories, special bodies of trained crewmen and pilots, an enormous consumption of television and radio-control apparatuses, a complex of activities and an absorption of energies of enormous proportions. Information would inevitably have leaked out, with the usual accompaniment of spying, treason, and the like. Is it possible that such a big secret could have been maintained so long, so perfectly?"

Certainly—provided we leave out the word "perfectly," which does not apply to the case after what we have set forth in this book. More—we have illustrious and well-known precedents.

In 1943 the neutral press printed some strange news about an apocalyptic experimental American bomb that had destroyed every living thing on a small island during its first test. The facts as reported were not true, but the rumors were based on concrete data, or on the first rare leaks that were coming out concerning the frenzied preparation of the supersecret atomic center at Oak Ridge. The news, then, was in advance of the appearance of the new bomb. A kind of science fiction before the proper time.

Two years later vague references to unknown, large-scale phenomena ("a deafening roar and a towering column of smoke”) that had been noted in the desert region of New Mexico appeared in some Texas and Arizona newspapers. Mass hallucination or a meteor, the military authorities declared brusquely. Then it was learned that precisely at 5:38 on July 16, 1945, under the code name Trinity, the first American atomic bomb had been detonated on the top of a high steel tower a dozen or so miles from the air base of Alamogordo. “We learned of the existence of the A bomb at the same time the Japanese did!” the surprised citizens of the United States exclaimed. And it was perfectly true![3]

Isn’t it perhaps likewise true that all the inventions of the last war (the flying bombs, the rocket torpedoes, magnetic mines, radar, jet planes, even the atom bomb) were revealed only at the moment they were used in the field? The public —journalists and technicians included—always remained in the dark about what was going on, whether at home or elsewhere, even when the military authorities already knew something of the enormous and complex train of work in researching and preparing the new enemy inventions. Generally the exceptional inventions (those that interest both the government and the military) deceive or surprise even clear-sighted people who are trained and equipped to understand. At the time of the First World War (to cite an example from a less mechanical-minded epoch than the present), it was not until the war was over that people were convinced that Big Bertha was actually a Krupp cannon of very long range that was bombing Paris from a distance of about seventy-five miles, a range inconceivable up to then for any type of artillery.

Every war of importance and every stormy postwar (or prewar, if you like) period has its well-guarded secrets. A random example. The following interesting paragraph appeared in the newspapers on July 9, 1947: “Professor T. D. I. Leech of the University of Auckland, New Zealand, head of a group of scientists responsible for the construction of an ultrapowerful weapon that is very close to the atom bomb in importance, did not wish to comment on the appearance of the shining discs in the United States.”

Here is half (or almost half) of a revealed secret. Here is a “leak” that was made voluntarily. Who can tell us about it?

And who knows when they will tell us? Perhaps tomorrow, perhaps in another twenty years. A British Top Secret is maintained with all the inflexibility of a Polynesian taboo.

The curious affair whose chief protagonist was Count Helmut von Zborowsky is the best demonstration of the magic power that military secrecy has in its relations with outsiders.

In 1943 Von Zborowsky, who worked in France after the war on the development of the tubular-winged plane called the "Beetle," was at the Bayerische Motoren Werke, directing research to perfect a hypergolic propellant for use in rocket engines. Long trains of tank cars carried mysterious liquids labeled *Tonka, Salbei,* and *Mell* to Camp R Zuehlsdorf and to certain decentralized hangars of the Allach plant.

One day a B.M.W. executive became suspicious about such strange supplies. Rockets using hundreds of tons of salvia and molasses? Was this a joke or was it a cover for black marketing? From the encyclopedia that he immediately consulted, the observant executive learned that the tonka-bean tree "belongs to the family of the South American papilionacee, which resembles our plum tree, and from whose fruit coumarin, a perfumed substance resembling vanilla, is extracted." Perturbed, he started a rapid inquiry to determine why large quantities of exotic plants were being used in the experiments on rocket engines—exceedingly costly plants to boot, and presumably in very short supply.

His request for clarification as to the use of these materials, Von Zborowsky later said, laughingly, was nevertheless phrased "discreetly and urbanely."

"For experiments," was the curt written reply.

After four weeks, the top executives of the factory asked the next logical question: "For what sort of experiments?"

"Secret experiments," came the reply from the secretariat of the R center. Such was the shadowy power evoked by that disturbing adjective that the B.M.W. administration never again dared to ask further explanations, and until the collapse of Nazi Germany, without batting an eyelash, it regularly paid the invoices for the large supplies of exotic beans (in reality a complex mixture of natural and synthetic hydrocarbons), sage leaves (nitric acid 98 percent) and molasses (methyl alcohol).

THE SUCCESSES OF AERIAL RECONNAISSANCE

Following a proposal advanced by generals Becker and Dornberger and supported by Kesselring, then a Luftwaffe general, an experimental center for the study and testing of self-propelled long-range projectiles was set up in 1936 at Peenemünde, on the Baltic. The station was to be shared by the army and the air force.

That was where the Luftwaffe tested the winged flying bomb FZG-76 (later called the V-1). With the deliberate intention of going beyond the stratosphere and working in the field of supersonic speeds, the army completed at Peenemünde its development of the A-4 torpedo rocket (the famous V-2), which it had begun two years earlier at the old and by then inadequate center at Kummersdorf.

Despite the lack of interest and understanding that the highest Nazi authorities at first showed, a V-2 rocket launched over the sea on October 3, 1942, in its first test had a range of 120 miles. Nevertheless, it was agreed that further improvements were necessary to make the deadly torpedo practical. It did not have its baptism by fire until September 8, 1944.

During eight years of intense work no less than 65,000 modifications were made on the weapon, requiring a select group of specialists (one now famous name can represent all the others: Werner von Braun) and a work force composed of over 7000 technicians and workers skilled in widely disparate specialties. Despite the participation of so great a number of people, the many years' work—including the period during the war—was carried on rather smoothly under the label *Geheimnis* (top secret). And yet Germany was overrun with spies and informers of all nationalities, its position in the center of the continent making it an area easy of access. And if at the beginning of the war the British had a vague inkling of the existence of the studies for the rocket bomb, they owed it to an unknown informer who never revealed his identity and whose information was therefore suspect.

In October 1939 an anonymous letter reached the naval attaché of the British Embassy in Norway. Out of pure anti-Nazi sentiments and with no desire for recompense, the writer offered to reveal important German secrets. If the British accepted, all they would have to do was to alter the conventional introductory remarks in the B.B.C.'s nightly German-language news bulletin according to a prearranged formula and on a specific date. The Intelligence Service gave the instructions to the B.B.C., and right on time the unknown informer replied by radio on a previously arranged wave length. He reported that the Germans were working on a rocket bomb, two different types of radar, turbine aircraft engines, and other weapons whose details were gradually supplied by radio and immediately recorded by the competent British authorities.

Most of the secrets concerned the aircraft industry, and it was Professor R. V. Jones, the former director of the Scientific Research Department of the Air Ministry, who revealed the whole story (known in Intelligence Service circles as the Oslo Report) on February 20, 1947, simply because the threat from those weapons had disappeared with the end of the war.

Nevertheless, it was not until the night of August 17–18, 1943, that the British decided to subject the experimental station to heavy bombing, and they did so only after having noted, in a certain sense *de visu,* the seriousness of the prospective threat—apparently via certain troubling reports from agents operating in Sweden.

The 2000 tons of bombs dropped by 600 R.A.F. bombers devastated the precious machinery and killed a large number of technicians, but they did not halt the course of events. The V-2 had already moved into the construction stage at the invulnerable underground factories of Mittelwerke at Nordhausen in Saxony, at Bleicherode, Konstein, Sonderhausen, Sallfeld, and in still other parts of south-central Germany, as well as in Ebensee and at the Rax Werke in Wiener Neustadt in Austria.

The air attacks on Peenemünde, which was so furiously defended by fighters and flak that the British lost over forty bombers there, did, however, delay the final perfecting of the V-1 by eight months, thereby saving the Normandy invasion troops what might have been a frightful decimation. This device too was conceived and grew in a propitious atmosphere of unbroken mystery until several radio-controlled prototypes accidentally veered off the experimental path and instead of plunging into the western Baltic crashed on Swedish soil and on some Danish islands.

On May 15, 1942, returning from a photographic reconnaissance flight over Kiel—a flight which from the start gave little promise of yielding anything of interest—Lieutenant D. W. Steventon swung his Spitfire toward the Baltic. Flying at a very high altitude, he looked down on the island of Usedom, in the estuary of the Oder River, some sixty miles northeast of Stettin. The island had never attracted the attention of the R.A.F., since it held only some small villages occupied for the most part by simple fishermen. Nevertheless, something caught the pilot's eye. Undoubtedly that carefully smoothed out terrain was a recently constructed airfield. And what about those narrow concrete runways? And those unusual-looking buildings, unusual even on a military airfield? Keeping below the clouds, the pilot shot his last few feet of film and then returned to his base with his throttle wide open, believing he had done a good day's work. And he had. With those photographs as a clue, the agents operating in Sweden and Norway managed to poke their noses into what was going on at Usedom by pretending to be herring fishermen. And in December a voluminous bundle of papers (the *Secret Weapon Trials Report*) was on its way to London, where it now rests in the files of the Intelligence Service.[4]

While the Anglo-Swedish work on the reconstruction of a V-2 rocket that had crashed near Baeckedo went on feverishly, additional "confidential" news came from Stockholm in the spring of 1943 alerting the Allied authorities to the fact that the remains of two German secret devices that had been experimentally launched had been found on the coast of Skania. Two British agents immediately made contact with the people who had the wreckage in their possession. Although the violent shock of the crash had rendered them almost unrecognizable, fragments of glass and aluminum and pieces of wing surfaces permitted the agents to make a hasty reconstruction that differed radically from that of the torpedo rocket that exploded in the sky over Baeckedo.

The belief that the islands of Ruegen and Usedom were hiding war secrets of the greatest importance was confirmed. In May a British reconnaissance plane flew over the region and in the center of some camouflaged buildings spotted and photographed a strange device placed on inclined rails, ready for launching. From photographic enlargements the R.A.F. experts learned that it was a small pilotless aircraft and that the dark marks on the ground—caused by the very hot exhaust gases—meant that a jet-propulsion system was being used. It was the final experimental model of the V-1 flying bomb, and its being caught on the launching ramp was truly fatal for Germany, even though a total of 26,000 flying bombs did leave —too late, however—the production lines set up first at the Volkswagen factory in Fallersleben and then—after it received the ruinous attention of the R.A.F.—in the vast subterranean factories in Nordhausen.[5]

In the spring of 1943 the great Zeppelin factory at Friedrichshafen, which suffered from its proximity to the Swiss frontier, met a similar fate. The secret agents who swarmed in every neutral country had their eyes on it. They discovered that in 1937–1938 its subsonic wind tunnel had measured the aerodynamic characteristics of the tail assemblies to apply to the A-3 and A-5 rockets (the precursors to the V-2), and that among the various things in gestation under the veil of military secrecy were highly advanced antiaircraft radio finder apparatuses. On June 20 sixty Lancaster bombers devastated a great part of the plant, but they were unable to stop the production lines of the various subsidiaries that had meantime been relocated in underground or camouflaged quarters in the Black Forest.

This whole series of unfavorable events would certainly not have occurred if these vital secrets had been hidden, as they are today, in the middle of some vast steppe, on the edges of a desert or in a large mountainous and wooded land, instead of being on a plainly visible islet in the Baltic or along a heavily trafficked central European border.

But let us continue our criticism of Bandini’s requirements.

THE POSSIBILITIES AND LIMITS OF SECRET MANUFACTURE

More than once the flight characteristics of the UFOs have been described by experts in aeronautical matters as “far beyond anything our technology can achieve.”

But since 1947, and on up to today, the speeds and altitudes of the UFOs have been approached even by conventional air technology (progress never stops, not even to please the ufologists). Are the aforementioned experts—almost always members of civilian research institutes—aware that a private body cannot even remotely compete with a military institute or with one subject to military control, which is favored by an almost unlimited wealth of experimental and financial means?

For example, the German rockets financed by the Nazi government were reaching altitudes of sixty miles when their Anglo-American counterparts developed by private initiative were barely able to get up to twelve miles or so, and with ridiculously small payloads. In the postwar period the V-2 rockets and their derivatives wiped out all the second-rate efforts produced by American, Russian, and British designers.

An appropriate and typical case is that of the turbine-powered planes that were secretly flown in prototype at German research centers during 1939–1940, just when the most authoritative and highly quoted technical journals in the field were expressing doubts about the practical solution of the problem of the rotary internal combustion engine for the near future. And that wasn’t all. The secret was so well kept even from friendly powers that the first news about German turbine-engined planes came to the ears of Italian military authorities only in 1942. The general public did not learn about them until two years later, during the winter of 1944, at the time of the first official German communiqués.

The first real turbojet plane (the Heinkel HE-178), in fact, first flew on August 27, 1939, powered by a Heinkel-Hirt HE-HI-S-3 giving 1,100 pounds of static thrust. In following years came different, greatly improved and more powerful types, but it was only when the first models were delivered to the airfields that the secrecy was in large part relaxed.[6]

The appearance of the German jet planes was a bitter surprise for the Allied fighting men, particularly for the bomber crews of the American Eighth Air Army, which on August 14, 1944, encountered the first ME-163 rocket fighters over Leipzig, with heavy losses for the bombers.

The existence of this daring new plane was known to the British General Staff only through photographs. On June 23, 1943, the British airman E. P. H. Peek had photographed an experimental model of the fighter ready to take off on the Peenemünde airfield. The Allied authorities, faithful to an old and tested system, said nothing about it until the war was over. There was no reason to do so before. It would only have demoralized their own crews and let the enemy know that one of their war secrets had become known and so force him to plan further measures.

When questions that involve the destiny of a whole country are concerned, a single day can change the whole course of events (*as the Arab-Israeli Six-Day War demonstrates*). *The UFOs constitute too important a trump card not to wait until the proper time to make them felt upon the course of history.* History, therefore, goes on . . .

FURTHER REFLECTIONS ON WHAT CONSTITUTES "PROOF"

Mr. Bandini said that if he were to be convinced that the flying saucers were of terrestrial origin, he would have to be shown somehow that there existed:

1) an experimental center that could handle the job;

2) production lines actually in operation at certain companies, which logically could not long hide their highly specialized type of construction.

He summed up his ideas with the following: "What nation can be interested in conducting its experiments publicly, and in air space that is not its own? Can we possibly grant that for a number of years a group of specialized mechanics and equally specialized pilots and strange installations—in short a rather conspicuous and costly organization—could have existed without anyone’s having found any traces of it even in the budgets of individual countries? In addition, since these discs have been sighted all over the world, we must suppose either that their radius of action is virtually ‘world wide’ or that a chain of bases must be scattered about here and there. The first supposition encounters almost insurmountable obstacles: it is impossible today to conceive of any rocket plane capable of flying nonstop around the world. The second likewise seems impossible. A single base can be so well situated and hidden as to make it virtually disappear from the face of the earth. Not so a chain of bases. Among other things, it is necessary to build the bases, equip them, bring in the rockets, the fuel and the personnel to operate them. Too many things are involved to be able to hide them all.”

The list of the “proofs” he demanded thus included the following:

3) select personnel of three types: navigators, specialists, and flyers;

4) one or more specialized and visible airport installations from which the mysterious devices would take off;

5) a series of financial allocations that could be observed in the military budgets of the nations building them;

6) the presence of auxiliary bases in different parts of the world.

The sixth point is immediately eliminated because of the special operating cycle of the UFOs, which do not require the auxiliary bases that are absolutely indispensable to aircraft of the conventional type. But to go into this matter at the moment would be premature.

The remaining objections can all be easily demolished. Let us, then, take up each of these points in order.

Today there is no plane that is wholly built by the firm whose name it bears. The system of subcontracting is the rule. Electrical and radio equipment, hydraulic circuits, certain parts of the landing gear, the tires, sometimes even the engine and propeller or the jet engine, all the ball bearings, cables, nuts and bolts, semi-finished parts, paint, instruments, Plexiglas for the cabin, parts in rubber or plastic, certain types of pumps and auxiliary electric motors, oxygen masks, various sorts of pressure tanks, a large part of the gears and gear boxes, fire-control systems, weapons, and so on, all flow to the contracting company from a myriad of small companies. The central firm is responsible first of all for the planning and design of the new airplane, then for the preparation of the most important elements in the construction (wings, fuselage, tail, etc.), and finally for the assembly of the whole machine, which leaves the plane ready to fly.

Within limits, the central firm can also order the elements that it would normally build from subcontractors, who would construct them within certain tolerances. In such a case the central firm would then do nothing more than assemble the parts (in sheds or on secret sites)—or not, as in the case of planes built on licensing agreements.

If the planes are to be built secretly—that is, outside the plant of the contracting firm—the flow of materials follows a broken itinerary on trucks or trains operated by or under the supervision of the personnel of the subcontracting firms. Not knowing the design of the whole, they cannot logically guess what sort of aircraft these components are destined for. They have merely supplied certain girders bent in a certain way, certain sheets cut or curved in some special shape, anonymous tubing in light alloy shaped according to detailed designs that gives no hint about itself other than its shape and dimensions, and accessories common to many well-known types of aircraft.

When the material is brought into military warehouses, all civilian interference automatically ceases. Halfway to the secret bases, the highly trusted representatives from the bases themselves come into the picture. This representative joins the personnel of the warehouses and is responsible for making sure that the various parts of the aircraft get where they are going by the most suitable and most appropriately camouflaged means available. When they reach the base, they are assembled by crews of trusted specialists.

Not tons of thousands but a few hundred, or fewer, highly selected men can thus gradually get ready whole fleets of new, supersecret flying machines.

The same procedure works even more easily in supplying the food, fuel, barracks, and everything that makes life tolerable for a relatively small human nucleus secreted in a remote or deserted area.

CAMOUFLAGING MILITARY SECRETS

Special, deliberately misleading buildings with conventional signs provide a tested method of masking secrets of this type.

Organized by the Gestapo—which, as everyone knows, did not take matters of secrecy lightly—the Volkswagen factory was concerned in 1938 with the publicity campaign for the "one-thousand-mark utility car." Described as the *ne plus ultra* of this type of automobile (four seats, four forward speeds, fifty-five mph, twenty-eight miles per gallon), the car caused a sensation and an avalanche of orders came in. With the money that was collected, three huge factory buildings were constructed in a few months for mass production of the car under the supervision of the Labor Front, headed by Dr. Ley.

The first models of the people's car were a big hit at the Berlin automobile show in February 1939. Then came the summer, the ideal time for taking a vacation in the little car. But nothing was coming off the production lines. Indeed, no cars could come off the production lines because all three factories were really producing parts for the Panzers that three months later were swarming off toward the Polish plains. The individual parts were secretly shipped to military warehouses, where crews of trusted mechanics took care of the final assembly. Q.E.D.

And now let us come down to more recent times.

In August 1941 the British used the generic name of "compressor" to refer to the plans for the first De Havilland "Goblin" turbojet engine in order to mislead enemy spies. And when the jet engine began its bench tests on April 13, 1942, at the experimental center of Hatfield, the military authorities spread the rumor that a new type of electric-power station was being tested, in order to explain the characteristic whine of the new engine. As expected, the populace accepted the odd explanation; so did even the technicians at the center who had nothing to do with the project.[7]

Again in 1941, this time in occupied France, the SO.CE.M.A. firm secretly began its project for a turbine aircraft engine of 3000 horsepower called the T.G.A., the initials of which were officially interpreted as *Turbo-Groupe d'Autorail* (railway turbine). To add verisimilitude, the contract was placed under the aegis of the Ministry of French Railways. Naturally, this interpretation sought to mislead the German occupying forces, who, though they had excellent informers, never suspected the true nature of the project.

Agreed, these projects were somewhat limited in scope. But the Manhattan Project, which was responsible for the research that made the atomic bomb possible, was certainly not. The population of the state of Tennessee truly believed that the imposing complex of concrete walls in Oak Ridge was a hydroelectric power station under construction, temporarily being used as a military depot for unspecified war materials—until the historic day that the bomb was dropped on Hiroshima. Indeed, a strange news story from the papers of the time confirms the almost incredible state of ignorance of a great part of the people who actually took part in the enterprise:

"The seventeen thousand people who worked in the huge government establishment on the production of the bombs never knew exactly what they were doing. Working in shifts, shielded by thick walls of reinforced concrete, they put together the various pieces of the mechanism without knowing the final result, until President Truman announced that a new bomb of unheard-of power had been dropped on Japan."

Examples of this sort, taken from the events of the last war, could be multiplied by the hundreds. But it is well known that the British and Americans have a special predilection for this kind of camouflage, which they also adopt in peacetime for their confidential plans. These misleading labels serve not only to keep the public ignorant of this or that stage of research or production (generally the public doesn't even know about the existence of the project itself), but to keep the parts of the military not concerned with the project in the dark about what is going on and thus minimize the danger of involuntary leaks of information.

It is clear, then, that secret activities *never* come to the attention of the profane (especially if the project centers are set up in areas difficult to get to), and experts are deliberately kept at a distance by clever subterfuges of various kinds.

A word or two on the matter of transatlantic shipments during the period 1945–1946. A state of war provides a favorable atmosphere for keeping “confidential” materials concealed, since people are accustomed to seeing continuous shipments going off to distant or unknown destinations. It was precisely in this sort of propitious atmosphere that the plan for the UFOs ripened. It should not be forgotten that their first public appearance goes back to June 1947. Estimating at least a year for the preparation of the airfields and the machines as well as for the first small local flights (the real experimental flights), one comes to the spring of 1946. Hostilities against Japan had ended only a short time before, in August of the preceding year. During all of 1946 the traffic of men and materials from the pacified sectors of Europe and Asia toward the American continent was exceedingly heavy. Could there have been a better moment to complete the delicate and extensive shipments that were necessary to the whole plan of the new machines, without their being obvious both to lay observers and to the agents of other countries? In the vast general confusion brought about by the ending of the war, who would have noticed?

In any case, these limited and furtive movements of men and materials were, after all, merely a problem in logistics, which in the military sphere are always set and solved privately by specially trained personnel.

There is certainly nothing new in the formation of small specialized groups, carefully chosen from units already composed of selected men with a high degree of competence in their own fields, strong, healthy, bright, able to get along with one another, possessing a strong *esprit de corps,* sober, reasonably abstemious (*in vino veritas!* heavy drinkers talk too much), possessing no moral skeletons in their closets, having an excellent military, technical, and cultural background and a high sense of duty, and preferably without any emotional, or at any rate forbidden ties—all these qualities bound together by strict discipline and a high sense of duty combine to form these nuclei of uniformed supermen.

In this way and this way alone the British formed their commandos and T-Men, who took part in exceedingly daring and successful enterprises, and the Italians their frogmen of the X Flotilla M.A.S. The legendary group of special troops organized by Colonel Skorzeny, the German torpedo men, the British submarine men who went into the Norwegian fjords to blow up the *Tirpitz,* the American frogmen who preceded the invasion troops on D-Day and removed the mines along the parts of the French coast where the debarkations would take place, the Japanese kamikaze and human torpedoes—to cite a few famous examples of special units—were all formed in the same way.

The world at large knew nothing of the complex job of selecting these groups, of their long and careful training and their technical and moral problems. Only when the enemy acknowledged the heavy damage that had been done—and this is how the veil of secrecy was lifted—did the existence of these groups become known to everyone. Had those special units been formed overnight? They had involved bringing special tools and weapons, food, fuel, barracks equipment, and so on together at one central point . . . just as with the UFO bases!

“PACKAGED” PORTS AND INVISIBLE AIRFIELDS

Even before the war it was thought that the various methods for disguising airfields would not guarantee them against enemy attack.

In England three different types of artificial underground arrangements for fixed airfield installations were investigated. The British study, which was supposed to be “classified” but which was fully divulged in the *Deutsche Bauzeitung* of September 12, 1938, contemplated the following arrangements:

1) the excavation of a long tunnel, with several lateral branches, in the side of a dune along the coast or in the side of a hill, followed by a large flattened and smoothed area to serve as the runway;

2) the excavation of a tunnel directly beneath an already existing runway that would be served by a ramp and winches for hauling the planes to the surface for take-off;

3) the excavation of a deep tunnel, without a runway and with a launching catapult located adjacent to an elevator shaft which would bring the planes up. A group of apparently innocent buildings would mask the opening and the catapult. This system, which had been suggested by aircraft carrier practice, seemed particularly well adapted for the protection of frontier areas.

Events moved along so rapidly that there was no time to experiment with any of these systems. In any case, it is doubtful that there was any intention to do anything about it for some time. Toward the end of the war, Germany was the only country that tried to put military airfields underground (the already mentioned U fields in Bavaria). Indeed, it put at least 300 factories producing missiles, planes, engines, accessories, and liquefied gas underground to protect them from the devastation of the air bombings.[8] Although this expedient came too late to save Germany from defeat, we know that it proved to be extraordinarily effective.

For example, the Heinkel firm mass-produced the HE-162 *Volksjäger* jet fighter in an underground factory hidden in a large salt mine near the Elbe. It was protected against any kind of aerial attack, for it was 1300 feet underground. It reportedly prepared 700 to 750 fighters a month and employed over 2000 workers. Only the fuselages, complete with accessories, were built in the salt mine; these finished products were then taken by night to Bernberg, where there was a camouflaged assembly hangar. Here the wings and jet engines were mounted, and the finished planes were then distributed to the various airfields in the vicinity.

The existence of the factory was kept top secret, and in order to distract attention from it, the normal mining of salt was carried on at 600 feet. Hundreds of electric trucks were used to carry manufactured parts through huge tunnels carved in the rock salt from one department to another, and at night enormous hoists carried them up to the surface.[9]

During the last winter of the war hundreds of ME-262 jet fighters came out of the huge network of tunnels dug in the hills of Kahla (Jena), but lack of fuel kept them from taking off and they were destroyed on the airfields in Thuringia.

In the autumn of 1944, in a large well-equipped natural cavern near Haigerloch, in Rhenish Prussia, the Germans prepared a large uranium pile that, when it was almost completed, fell into the hands of the Americans.

A small portion of the synthetic gasoline industry was also put underground.

The only aim of putting the plants underground then was to protect them from aerial attack. *Nevertheless, after Germany was occupied the Allies had a hard job locating the whereabouts and the entrances to several underground factories, despite the fact that their presence in the zone had already been indicated with sufficient accuracy by secret agents.*

This type of protective camouflage, then, worked very well even after the bombs stopped falling!

Since the old methods of camouflage by means of nets and branches have definitely seen their day (for modern aerial reconnaissance permits one to distinguish between live and cut vegetation by spectrographic photography), the only truly valid protective camouflage, aside from underground installation, is natural camouflage, which combines marvelously well with prefabricated buildings.[10]

At this point conventional people will, as usual, rise up and proclaim that in any event a large-scale movement of parts of prefabricated buildings and unusual equipment could not have escaped the attention at least of the technicians charged with transporting them, even if their destinations lay overseas, beyond the reach of the merely curious. And there would be all the more reason, they will say, for this complicated activity to have alarmed the inhabitants in the areas where the buildings were to be erected, particularly when the destination, even if sparsely populated, was Europe or North America.

Now if one were to talk to these conventional people not about airfields but about secret, prefabricated seaports, the least that could happen would be that they would be struck dumb, for if it is difficult for them to imagine hiding a certain number of hangars (which in point of fact can be set up anywhere, even in the depths of the remotest regions, by transporting them by air and dropping them by parachute), it would seem absolutely impossible that a port could be hidden. After all, by its very nature it must be located along some well-defined stretch of coast. And yet even this extraordinary "miracle" of military technology has already been accomplished a number of times.

In order to avoid any misunderstanding, we transcribe here the main points of a British news item of 1954 that treats of the construction of several stand-by prefabricated ports:

"Great Britain has quietly prepared a good number of 'stand-by ports' as replacements for her major ports in case they become damaged or destroyed by atomic attacks. These are prefabricated ports, made up principally of pieces in reinforced concrete similar to the huge floating caissons of the famous Mulberry artificial ports that were towed to the Normandy beaches in June 1944 and made it possible for the Allies to supply the forces on the beachheads quickly. The various parts making up the moles and warehouses—as well as the necessary ancillary material (cranes, elevators, railway tracks, mooring bitts, etc.)—have been concentrated at chosen strategic points in the vicinity of the ports where they would be installed in case of necessity. The necessary preparatory work of widening and dredging the channels has already been completed in the ports themselves, and new fuel tanks have also been constructed. The whereabouts of the warehouses containing the stand-by ports as well as the coastal areas that have been chosen to take the place of the great harbor areas that might be destroyed are kept secret. Those who have taken part in the various aspects of the undertaking still do not know what they are to be used for. Only a few trusted civil servants in the Admiralty know anything about the details of this vast plan worked out immediately after the war as soon as the government leaders became aware of the offensive possibilities of atomic weapons. In the last few years the work has been speeded up and tens of millions of pounds have been spent on it. It is estimated that Great Britain today has at least six large artificial stand-by ports ready to go into operation in case of emergency."[11]

While we are dealing with British secrets, it would not be a bad idea to remember that in February 1954 the Air Ministry revealed for the first and only time that Great Britain had a protective shield of radar installations throughout the Kingdom, with the key parts of the extensive organization in underground quarters and protected by massive concrete shields.

As with the artificial ports, the radar network was set up without the press' getting wind of it or the workers on the job knowing exactly what the underground installation was for. Rumor has it that the workers of one of the contractors involved in the construction were led to believe that they were working on the foundations for a new hot springs pavilion.

Whatever may be one's deep personal convictions about "unknown flying objects," one must certainly agree that these Cyclopean undertakings are even more astonishing than the UFO bases, because they were not secretly carried out in the fastnesses of some large forest on the coast of Africa or in the desolate reaches of the Arctic, but along the heavily populated coasts of England—which more than any other European country insists on freedom of the press.

After all this evidence, is it not perhaps legitimate to argue that only "a few trusted civil servants" in the Ministry of Supply, the R.A.F., and the Hawker Siddeley Group know anything about the impressive project to hide the bases of the so-called UFOs in the dense Canadian forests?[12]

NOTES

1. That the authorities charged with keeping the secret tolerate, approve, and even, through more or less unknown dummies, encourage the wild theorizings of the ufologists can doubtless be understood, for so long as they succeed in making people believe that the UFOs come from somewhere in cosmic space, they can continue their work undisturbed.

2. It has sometimes been pointed out that there is an inherent danger in the UFOs, inasmuch as they are liable to "hostile action" *vis-à-vis* some great power, with international reactions and consequences that are difficult to foresee but would certainly be very serious. In fact, a power possessing an air weapon without another power's being able to identify either its ownership or the point from which it was launched could carry out sneak bombings over a period of time until the enemy country was annihilated, without having to fear any reprisal from the country that was bombed—and that, indeed, might possess even more powerful weapons—and without experiencing any moral condemnation for the treacherous aggression. If one really succeeded in making world public opinion accept the idea that a mysterious air weapon was of extraterrestrial origin, any attack would in fact pass for an act completely independent of the human will! Fortunately, the possessors of the portentous secret of the UFOs have not been and will not let themselves be tempted into some ruinous adventure which would not accord either with the mentality or the interests of the British ruling class; and besides, who can guarantee that the UFOs are really still not identified in the secret files of the Russian, American, and Chinese general staffs? Perhaps the statements prepared for the press and thus for the public at large—forever ignorant of everything—by the various scientific commissions of inquiry are as ambitious in their intentions as they are mediocre in their futile conclusions? . . .

3. Nevertheless, atomic secrets had already been violated several times, although the public at large did not know it, by both disputing parties. In February 1943 Anglo-Norwegian commandoes flying from England seriously damaged the Hydro-Norsk factory at Vermork in Telemark, which produced "heavy water" for the Germans. The latter were, in turn, generally aware that the United States was diligently working in the atomic field, but a surprise roundup of Nazi agents in 1942 cut off any possibility of trouble before it got under way.

4. See Constance Babington-Smith, *Evidence in Camera* (London, Chatto & Windus, 1958), pp. 199–232.

5. See General Walter Dornberger, *V-2, the Nazi Rocket Weapon* (New York, The Viking Press, 1954), pp. 152–160.

6. On September 28, 1942, the aeronautical attaché of the Italian Embassy in Berlin had communicated to the Technical Direction of the Italian Ministry of Aeronautics the first vague confidential information concerning the twin-jet Heinkel HE-280 and a Messerschmitt jet fighter of analogous design (probably the famous ME-262). This information led Italian technicians to sit on and finally shelve Italian plans in the field of jet propulsion (Caproni-Campini jet engines). At about the same time, the Allied secret services also came into possession of some data regarding the new German products, which were expected to be "excellent from every point of view."

7. And since we have mentioned the De Havilland Company, it will not be amiss to quote from the Italian press what the aeronautical authority Charles Gardner wrote in the autumn of 1949 about a well-kept British secret of the period immediately after the war concerning the famous civil air transport four-jet DH-106 Comet, with a speed of 500 miles per hour: ". . . The story of the Comet is quite interesting. The first design goes back to 1944–45, but was not until 1946 that the chief designer of the De Havilland firm, R. E. Bishop, drew up the guidelines for its construction. . . . Until March 30, 1949, the particulars about the construction of the craft constituted one of the most impenetrable secrets of the entire field of international civil aviation. At Hatfield rumors circulated at one time about a stratospheric craft with swept-back wings and a cruising speed of 453 mph, but the company maintained absolute silence in this regard, refusing to contradict or confirm the rumors. There was a good reason for the policy of secrecy: England was then and still is the only nation that constructs commercial turbojet or propjet planes, and these machines—which include the DH-106 and the Vickers 'Viscount'—were to restore its old prestige to British civil aviation and make up for the years lost during the war. British supremacy in the field of jet engines is beyond question, but until the new craft had been finished and flown, it would have been possible, at least theoretically, for our rivals [the Americans]

to introduce something similar. . . ." Since the performances of the UFOs decidedly surpass all conventional limits, it seems logical to deduce that the secret concerning them has rightly lasted and will last much longer.

8. In addition, with the enormous work force available in the huge numbers of prisoners of war, who were used for the hardest labor, they put a number of special experimental facilities underground in man-made caverns. One good example is the wind tunnel for measuring the ballistic behavior of aircraft weapons. This wind tunnel, built completely underground at the L.F.A. center in Volkenrode, was a good 1300 feet long and could be brought down by means of powerful pumps to 1/30 atmosphere so as to simulate air pressure at 32,000 feet altitude. But this tunnel was particularly distinguished by the fact that the two ends (which housed, respectively, the weapon being tested—mounted, if necessary, on the complete airplane—and the target) were camouflaged as "model farm" buildings, with many stables, hay lofts, barns, etc., so that we can easily understand how even the most skillful air reconnaissance pilots finally had to give up trying to locate the L.F.A.

9. The factory functioned, however, for only a brief period because of the worsening military situation and the difficulty of supplying raw materials. When it was occupied the Allies learned that only four fuselages a day were coming out of the mine. From the technical point of view, however, it functioned perfectly.

10. The American U-2 reconnaissance planes uncovered secrets from the air on the basis of previous briefings by agents operating directly on Soviet territory or on its borders. The routes of the U-2s were carefully studied and worked out in advance. If the pilots had flown over the vast reaches of Siberia at random, one could be mathematically certain that they would not have photographed anything really interesting or that at the most they would have discovered only one important

objective for every ten or so completely fruitless but dangerous flights.

11. See *News Chronicle* and *Messaggero Marittimo* No. 61, 1964. One must also add, to be perfectly candid, that the British were not novices at this sort of enterprise. Two "secret ports" of somewhat smaller size were in fact readied at Gareloch-on-Clyde and at Carnyarn in Scotland between the autumn of 1940 and June 1942, to spread out coastal ship traffic endangered by German submarines and bombers. (*Cf.* "*Porti segreti in Scozia*," *Rivista Marittima,* Ministry of the Navy, Rome, August-September, 1945, p. 54.)

12. The thick forests of British Columbia are well known. The region is favored by regular rainfall and a rather temperate climate, as well as by the characteristic mountain and river system of the region (tortuous mountain chains alternating with wide valleys). Here centuries-old trees thrive—pines, cedars, spruce—which easily grow as high as 150 feet and, in some particularly long-lived species, even 300 feet. (They were saplings when the Lombard invasion was breaking up what was left of the Roman Empire after it collapsed in Italy.) Thus, considering that the UFOs can take off and land vertically—as proved by their ability to hover motionless in the air—it follows that a UFO airport does not need the long cement or asphalt runways that characterize our airfields and make them visible. Simple round open spaces cleared in the midst of forest glades or on the shores of peaceful mountain lakes, properly camouflaged and marked by hidden radio beacons, could easily take care of the take-off and landing of a number of flying machines without too many operative complications. These installations would easily be overlooked by aerial reconnaissance, even if a plane's route happened to coincide with the location of the secret airfield. For what, in fact, is a total of a square mile or two covered, for example, by possibly a hundred open spaces and prefabricated circular hangars compared with the nearly four million square miles of Canada?

CHAPTER 10

In Which, for the Present, We Conclude . . .

In order to demolish completely the grotesque edifice of idiocies and mental blocks fabricated by the ufologists, it remains to clear up the fifth question: How was the undertaking financed?

In aeronautical jargon—which is appropriate to the subject matter—we now have to make another long power dive into the past and focus our light on the misunderstanding about the so-called R.A.F. scandal, which had a profound impact on British public opinion some dozen years ago.[1]

At the beginning of 1955—while British aeronautical authorities were preparing to mount a propaganda campaign supporting the R.A.F.'s claims to the category of Senior Service, traditionally held by the Navy—the opposition press unleashed a bitter attack on the air force, illustrating “with an abundance of facts what experts term the disastrous situation of our air defense.”

On January 15 the principal exponent of this dissatisfaction, the *London Daily Herald,* under the headline, “Britain Has the Men—But Not the Planes; Britain Is Unprepared for a Full-Scale Modern War,” wrote, “Britain is rapidly losing her claim to be among the countries with effective air-power. . . . During the last 3 years the Government aimed to spend nearly £1000 million on aircraft and equipment for the RAF and on research. Much of this money has been spent but the goods have not been delivered. . . . The failure in the electronic field is an ominous pointer to the development of British guided missiles. Several have been launched and engaged targets successfully. But these were only test vehicles. *It might be better for us to build American missiles under license—missiles which are proved successes*.”

Naturally, these depressing statements made a great impression on the ignorant public, alarmed by the huge headlines, and the members of the opposition got up in the House of Commons and demanded explanations. To hear them, it seemed that England was about to go under from one minute to the next: the Air Force was without airplanes, the Army was short on men and arms, the Navy was in decline.

The situation in England was not, in fact, rosy, for military life no longer appealed to the younger generations as it once had, and in the Commons Churchill himself had evidenced some concern about this state of affairs, which was still, however, far from being or even seeming catastrophic.

As far as the Air Force was concerned, the opposition pointed out that the number of extremely modern prototypes was constantly being exaggerated, yet they remained unproduced for far too long a time. The opposition even spoke of a “great R.A.F. scandal” and of chaos in high military circles, indicating that the guilt lay with the Ministry of Supply, which was accused of perpetual shilly-shallying, inability to coordinate, obtuseness, and still more.

Directly involved, the government defended itself by publishing a White Book. A picture of the fluid situation that had resulted from the transitional epoch introduced by nuclear arms emerged from the White Book, despite all obvious uncommunicativeness and the lacunae dictated by the necessities of military secrecy. It also said, in no uncertain terms, that *the R.A.F. was the central pillar of defense of the British Isles and the Commonwealth and that it would be developed to the maximum.*

Instead of stopping, the criticisms mounted in intensity; and severe punishment of those responsible and a detailed accounting for aeronautical expenses were demanded—unsuccessfully. The British government not only took refuge in stubborn silence but also, in the annual allocation of the military budget, increased the R.A.F.'s share by £22 million, sizably decreasing the amounts destined for the Army and Navy.

In sum, during the fiscal year 1955–1956, British aviation —scandal or no—had a budget of £513,900,000, which, like the previous billions, were largely spent without anyone's knowing how or where.

The opposition would not give up, however, and finally succeeded in getting a special parliamentary commission set up to investigate aeronautical contracts. On January 21, 1957, it concluded its work and in its subsequent report recommended to the government that the entire contract system be reviewed. In particular, it hit at the costly financing of several types of airplanes that were never constructed. *Ghost planes,* the critics called them. "The 8 jet Boeing 52 [the American strategic superbomber] is years ahead—five years ahead, at least—of anything we have got."[2]

"We have spent too much time and money in relation to what has been achieved," concluded Sir Roy Fedden, former chief engineer of the Bristol Airplane Company and a member of the investigating committee. "In five years, from the budget of 1950–51 to that of 1955–56, more than seven billion pounds have been spent and we have had seven ministers of defense, all of which, however, has done little to improve the military efficiency of the United Kingdom."

In the allocation of monies, the lion's share always went to the Ministry of Supply, and rightly so, in view of its functions. In 1946 alone its budget for "aeronautical research" ran to £28 million. Previous to that it had received other money for various reasons, and it received much more in successive budgets.[3]

In the area of military expenditure, to ask for greater clarification would be grotesque, to say the least, but even if the British authorities prefer to remain silent concerning the destination of that stream of money and its fruits, the figures speak loudly enough.

THE TUG OF WAR BETWEEN THE U.S. AIR FORCE AND THE UFOS

While the storm generated by the opposition in England was about to reach its peak, in the United States the press was again exerting pressure on Air Force authorities to express an opinion on the wave of UFO sightings of the previous autumn, which, although mainly observed in Western Europe, had also appeared sporadically in various parts of the United States, causing the usual conflicts between public, press, and authorities.

As usual, there was a flood of reassuring if inconclusive statements. Summing up seven years of investigation and study (*ad usum Delphini*), the most authoritative figure in the country, President Eisenhower, declared parenthetically to the press that he was personally in a position to exclude the possibility that the UFOs had an extraterrestrial origin!

For their part, the experts of the Air Technical Intelligence Center in their nth final report repeated their previous assertions, protesting that they did not possess “any authentic physical evidence . . . establishing the existence of space ships from other planets or secret experimental weapons launched by the United States or by any other nation on earth, again for experimental purposes. The flying saucers, we repeat, exist only in the imagination of the so-called witnesses.” It was the intention of the Air Force that the UFOs were and were to remain nothing more than a modern myth.[4]

Although the intervention of the highest political power in the country did not dissipate the suspicions of those who believed in the existence of the mysterious machines, as had been hoped, it did succeed in eliminating once and for all the suspicion that the UFOs were American-made airplanes.

Catching the ball on the bounce, the specialists in extraterrestrial flying saucers and similar mysteries aggravated matters by maintaining that if the craft were not extraterrestrial something would surely have leaked out after eight full years of continuous sightings, because “no secret weapon in a democratic regime could remain secret for such a long period of time!”[5]

From that moment the activities of Project Blue Book—which had been reestablished without fanfare and on a completely different basis—were quietly continued in order to keep the principal source of “official” information for the public under strict control.

Periodically—but sometimes at long intervals—the Department of Defense, in agreement with the U.S. Air Force, sent out a new series of news releases for the press that were designed to wear out even the most indefatigable petitioners.[6]

The news release of October 25, 1955, carried Secretary Quarles’ statement verbatim, with its reference to the Avro-Car. A lengthy release followed on November 5, 1957. It repeated the usual identifications, thereby reducing the proportion of flying objects that remained “unidentified” to less than 2 percent. The third release, on November 15, 1957, disposed of certain inexplicable electrical phenomena that had accompanied the appearance of the UFOs over the south-central states.

The fourth release, which came nearly a year later (October 6, 1958), demolished at one fell swoop all the incidents that had taken place up to July 31, reasserted that such apparitions were in no way dangerous, and praised the work of Dr. J. Allen Hynek, now “Chief Scientific Consultant” to the Air Force on matters concerning UFOs.

The brief release of January 22, 1959, again summed up the 269 American sightings of the preceding year in statistical form, rejoicing in the obvious drop (.67 percent) in the annual percentage of sightings that could not be explained by reference to ordinary phenomena. On July 15 a very short release—tabulating the cases that had occurred during the first part of the year—declared with ill-concealed disappointment that there had been a 2.09 percent rise in the notorious rate of popular illusions, notwithstanding that the number of sightings had clearly dropped by half.

The two complementary releases of January 29 and July 21, 1960—after concisely summing up all the data gathered since 1947, which brought the total U.S. sightings to 6,312 cases (of which 1,501 pertained to the well-known 1952 flights over the capital)—went off into a wordy explanation that was taken whole cloth—without changing even a comma!—from the release of November 5, 1957. Evidently Project Blue Book wanted to perform a kind of brainwashing on the ufologists, who appeared disinclined to accept the repeated, passionate declarations of ignorance and innocence made by the new leaders of the project. A special scolding was then administered to the various private associations that accused the Air Force of concealing the most significant information or that boasted of officially exchanging information with the Air Force concerning the activities of the extraterrestrial airships.

The tug of war between the U.S. Air Force and the UFOs, or, better, between the Air Force and the ufologists, then began to decrease rapidly in intensity and pungency with the beginning of the astronautical program, which divided the attention of the public—which is inclined to focus its immediate interest on what is visible, tangible, and explicable—until . . .

Until August 1965, when, after years of sporadic sightings that were of little interest for the ufologists, a new wave of unknown flying objects appeared in the skies over New Mexico, Texas, Kansas, and Oklahoma, catching the attention of, among others, numerous qualified observers, such as police officers, weather bureau experts and radar specialists of the U.S. Air Force.

Strangely enough, however, for the first time the American press—perhaps influenced by the enormous amount of military counterpropaganda—was not inclined to build up a new "case," and this was a mistake because the phenomenon had been verified on a large scale over Mexican territory as well, and new appearances of UFOs were about to complicate matters, as at the time of the tumultuous "celestial invasions" of 1948 and 1952.

THE "UFO SUMMER"

The first UFO appeared over Wynnewood, Oklahoma, a little before dawn on July 31 and remained visible to the eye for about forty minutes. Its presence was also detected by the radar screens at the Tinker and Carswell air bases (even though Air Force authorities subsequently decided to deny the fact).[7]

The next night, triangular and diamond formations of UFOs and scattered, individual UFOs flew by at an altitude estimated at slightly more than 10,000 feet, going north and showing "frequent changes of color, from reddish to blinding white and from white to greenish blue, sometimes shifting from one side of the formation to the other."

Project Blue Book's immediate denial was as punctual as it was futile: A spokesman said that no radar sighting of unknown flying objects had been confirmed. It was suggested that "the objects observed may have been the planet Jupiter or the stars Rigel, Capella, Betelgeuse, or Aldebaran, which were visible. At the time of the reported sightings, the azimuth and elevation of the reported sightings supports this preliminary conclusion." A planet that frequently and rapidly changes color and whose radar image splits and resembles objects propelling themselves through the sky? That is indeed a novel occurrence and should not fail to interest astronomers, even in these times of telescopes and extragalactic mysteries.

Three days later, as the result of a "very bad occurrence," the gray eminences of Project Blue Book were flatly contradicted by the personnel of the U.S. Air Force bases at Keweenaw Field in Houghton, Michigan. (Perhaps someone, out of regard for truth, compromised his career.) A "solid radar contact" had been established with about ten UFOs flying at hypersonic speed (9300 mph?) at a high altitude over Lake Superior and going in the direction of Canada. The incident was also reported to the U.P.I. press service, which immediately sent it out over its teletypes.

The official explanation, "a flight of weather balloons," took advantage of the simultaneous appearance of other objects that had been seen while "they hovered motionless or moved slowly, frequently changing direction, over several outlying sections of Minneapolis." This city is, in fact, the site of one of the largest American centers for the production and launching of the gigantic stratospheric weather balloons. But when seven of these phantom "weather balloons" were pursued by a jet in the sky over Duluth, they rapidly left the jet behind while it was flying at a speed exceeding a thousand miles an hour. Since when do the winds of the stratosphere blow with such terrible violence?

The curve of these appearances reached its peak during the night between August 2 and 3, and were concentrated over New England in particular. In fact, although not neglecting more distant states, such as Texas and California, the UFOs seemed to show a decided preference for the southern regions of New Hampshire, where, according to numerous inhabitants, they had flown over the local high-tension wires several times, perhaps in order to get recharged. This strange suspicion—strange but not impossible—subsequently led ufologists to launch a new case, called the "incident at Exeter" in honor of the small town where the greatest number of sightings took place, the last of which, on September 3, seemed to bring the display of luminous bodies and their mysterious operations to a close.[8]

After three months of intensive observations, which occurred with an almost regular daily rhythm, the number of sightings rapidly and progressively decreased as before. Project Blue Book's news release of October 27, 1965, which was got up with the public relations offices of the Pentagon, brilliantly solved the affair by referring to high-altitude exercises which had been carried out at that very time by the bombers of the Strategic Air Command (S.A.C.), and on a widespread "thermal inversion" produced by a thick layer of cold Canadian air which had crept between two warmer layers over the New England states. According to the Air Force experts, this natural phenomenon had the miraculous power of making the stars and planets seem to tremble in such a way as to give the impression that they were flying in the sky.

"They can stop kidding us now about there being no such things as 'flying saucers,'" the Fort Worth, Texas, *Star Telegram* rightfully protested. “And it’s going to take more than a statistical report on how many reported ‘saucers’ have turned out to be jets and weather balloons to convince us otherwise.”

Taking the lead from the insubordinate behavior of the Houghton radar operators, the Alameda, California, *Times Star* in turn commented in an indignant editorial: “. . . the Air Force spokesmen, whose job it is to explain away the seemingly improbable in terms of the commonplace, have been getting such a workout lately that either they are starting to break down or their superiors are finally coming to the conclusion that they are making the Air Force appear ridiculous.”

Notwithstanding a spate of such acid comments in the press, the Air Force did not budge an inch from the line to which it had always adhered. It was sure that its previous experience of mass psychology would be repeated. Experience had taught it that even the most incredible statements are forgotten by most people with the passing of time, together with the facts that prompted them, and those who are really skeptical can, in any case, think what they please.

AFTERTHOUGHTS AND NEW INVESTIGATIONS

The news release of February 1, 1966, taking advantage of the winter disappearance of the objects in order to implant the anti-UFO dogma decreed in high places ever more firmly in the minds of the American public, with almost saintly patience reiterated the old explanations (birds, balloons, airplanes, sputniks, meteorites, and so on) with consummate ability and the sober language of the hidden persuaders. But it was fated that all this art and craftiness would in the final analysis prove self-defeating.

With the coming of spring—specifically between March 20 and 23—renewed activity on the part of the UFOs again posed the same old dilemmas for the Americans. For the most part, the characteristics of the new sightings did not differ from those of the past summer and of the preceding years. The area, however, was restricted to the states of Michigan and Ohio, and one brash UFO went so far as to fly right over the Wright-

Patterson base, the permanent home of Project Blue Book, giving rise to no little hilarity among those who already harbored little esteem for the illustrious group.[9]

Without even waiting for the last UFO to disappear, the scientific consultant for the Air Force, Dr. Hynek, held a press conference in Detroit to "debunk" the events of the month.

Having conducted a personal investigation, he said, he felt it was certain that the wandering lights observed by more than fifty witnesses in the environs of Ann Arbor were nothing more than natural gases produced in the swampy ground; spring gases that burst into flame on contact with the oxygen of the air, causing will-o'-the-wisps of varying sizes. According to the investigator, proved hoaxes and false reports had also influenced a number of witnesses.

This hypothesis was not much more far-fetched than some of the others, and it too might have achieved its aim, but this time the decisive entry into the controversy of ufological associations—headed by the powerful N.I.C.A.P.—did not give the U.S. Air Force authorities the chance to shelve the affair so quickly.

The Republican congressman Gerald Ford proposed that a special congressional committee of investigation be set up, and the proposal added fuel to the already heated dispute between the press and the military, causing even Secretary of Defense McNamara and Chief of Staff General Wheeler to intervene and deny, with the full weight of their authority, the physical existence of the UFOs and quash the possibility of adding a civilian office to the one that had long been operating so efficiently within the Air Force.

However, perhaps Dr. Hynek had tired of blindly supporting the Air Force's strictly negative policy. Leaving aside the possibility of a wildly Machiavellian scheme to achieve exactly the opposite of what he claimed, the following August the magazine *Science* published an excerpt from an open letter from Dr. Hynek in which, reversing opinions that he had held for twenty years with regard to the UFOs, the scientist proposed that the problem be faced squarely once and for all.

Published in its entirety by the *Saturday Evening Post* of December 17, 1966, the contrite confession of the greatest

American UFO-phobe set forth the following four possible explanations:

1) are they hallucinations or hoaxes? If so, it must be proved, and given the present state of our understanding, it would be even more difficult to prove this than it would to prove the opposite;

2) are they military devices that someone is experimenting with? The affair has gone on for too long and has involved too many countries in every part of the world for this to be acceptable;

3) do they come from outer, even interstellar, space? This cannot be totally excluded, even if conclusive proof is lacking. "Some skeptics who scoff at reported UFO sightings often ask why the 'flying saucers' don't try to communicate with us. One answer might be: Why should they? We wouldn't try to communicate with a new species of kangaroo we might find in Australia; we would just observe the animals."

4) are we faced with a natural phenomenon that as yet defies our scientific knowledge? "Think how our knowledge of the universe has changed in 100 years. In 1866 we not only knew nothing about nuclear energy, we didn't even know that the atom had a nucleus. . . . Who can say what startling facts we will learn about our world in the next 100 years?"

Concluding this belated self-criticism, the scientist declared: "Although the Air Force has probably spent less on UFO's so far than it has on wastebaskets, I realize that it is impractical to expect the service to set up a costly 'flying-saucer' surveillance system across the country. . . . [But] all of the valuable data that we have accumulated—good reports from all over the world—must be computerized so that we can rapidly compare new sightings with old and trace patterns of UFO behavior. . . . I recommend that every police chief in the country make sure that at least one of his squad cars carries in its glove compartment a camera loaded with color film."

Dr. Hynek emphasized his views on a "controversial subject": "During all of my years of association with the Air Force, I have never seen any evidence for the charge about UFO's most often leveled against the service: that there is deliberate cover-up of knowledge of space visitors to prevent the public from panicking. The entire history of the Air Force and the UFO's can be understood only if we realize that the Pentagon has never believed that UFO's could be anything novel, and it still doesn't. The working hypothesis of the Air Force has been that the stimulus behind every UFO report . . . is a misidentification of a conventional object or a natural phenomenon. It is just as simple as that.

"Now, after a delay of 18 years, the Air Force and American science are about to try for the first time, really, to discover what, if anything, we can believe about 'flying saucers.'"

THE UNIVERSITY OF COLORADO INVESTIGATION

Would the $313,000 rushed through to the University of Colorado as a special fund for a new series of investigations furnish an answer that would satisfy both the demands of the Pentagon and the curiosity of American taxpayers?

Such was the sum that the Air Force allocated to the University to finance a new program of scientific research on the UFO question along the lines suggested by Dr. Hynek, to study future sightings, to reexamine the 10,147 reports accumulated by Project Blue Book, and to clear up—if possible—the 646 cases that remained unexplained.[10]

News release No. 847–66 of October 7, 1966 (Title: *Air Force Selects University of Colorado to Investigate Unidentified Objects Reports*) faithfully reflects the orders of the then Air Force Secretary, Harold Brown, but it does not clear up in any convincing way the real reasons for the liquidation of the Air Force's Project Blue Book. For better or worse, Project Blue Book had been functioning for almost twenty years, had been under attack several times in the past (when people were ingenuous enough to demand the truth), and had never been seriously strengthened even after the attacks. Why had it been ditched for a new organism that was completely unprepared simply because it was new?[11]

Nor was the reason the Air Force gave for choosing the University of Colorado at Boulder in the least convincing: it is

". . . an institution of sufficient prestige to enjoy the faith of the public"—and, obviously, escape the absurdity of what was considered an unimportant matter.

The length of the contract between the Air Force and the University of Colorado was fixed at fifteen months, extendable if warranted, and at its expiration a detailed report was to be written and presented—at the specific request of the Department of Defense—for final critical evaluation by a group of eminent specialists designated by the National Academy of Sciences to attest to the "validity of the methods and means used in the investigations." Was this a ready-made alibi in order to camouflage possible—and not unlikely—failure? High-level censorship? Or was it an attempt to set up a highly authoritative and final liquidation of the UFOs?

Some biographical data on the leaders of the new investigation, which some ufologists proposed calling—rather prematurely—"Operation Clearance," sheds some light on this cloudy affair.

The organizer of the enterprise seems to have been Dr. J. Allen Hynek, director of the Lindheimer Astronomical Research Center and chairman of the Astronomy Department at Northwestern University at Evanston, Illinois, "Scientific Consultant to the U.S. Air Force," and "Special Investigator of UFOs," again for the Air Force. It was he who, as we said, suffered a sort of scientific "*crise de conscience*" over the attitude that the Air Force had always maintained and still maintains on the thorny problem of UFOs (an attitude which is, in brief, frivolous and which Dr. Hynek himself had energetically supported for some twenty years).

The sixty-four-year-old Dr. Edward U. Condon was appointed director of the new project. Dr. Condon had formerly been a member of the staff of the nuclear center at Los Alamos for the development of the first atomic bombs.[12] Professor of physics and astrophysics at the University of Colorado, Condon immediately put all his cards on the table when he was appointed to investigate the UFOs, stating that he would not be able to dedicate all his time to the project; hence he should be considered only as its "scientific director." In fact, he continued to exercise his old and new functions in an office in the Joint

Institute Laboratory for Astrophysics, of which he had been an influential member for some time.

The job of principal assistant and actual coordinator of the entire program—the project coordinator—was, therefore, assigned to Dr. Robert G. Low, formerly Assistant Dean of the University of Colorado Graduate School. Some hundred scientists chosen from the University of Colorado, other American universities, and various governmental and civil agencies scattered throughout the country would be working under him, though with complete freedom of action. When the "UFO Probe Committee" was installed in the old Woodbury Hall building it included the following members:

—three psychologists (Drs. Stuart W. Cook, David Saunders, and Michael Wertheimer), all from the University of Colorado;

—one astrophysicist (Dr. Franklin Roach) of the Environmental Science Services);

—one astrogeophysicist (Dr. William Blumen, a Fellow of the University of Colorado);

—one physicist (Dr. Joseph H. Rush of the National Center for Atmospheric Research High Altitude Observatory);

—two University of Colorado graduate students in psychology and one in liberal arts;

—two secretaries and one typist.

The total full-time membership of the staff, including leaders, amounted to fourteen actual members, not one of whom was skilled in the fundamental technical disciplines that concern aviation, such as aerodynamics, aircraft construction, electronic engineering, chemistry, and applied physics.[13]

Failure to enlist the aid of such experts certainly signified that the promoters of "Clearance" still believed that the UFOs were—or should be, for the public—unknown natural phenomena or flights of the imagination.

Aside from the fact that after years of tedious repetition the strings used in manipulating some of the tricks were becoming visible, it was clear that—despite the enthusiastic endorsement of the new committee by the American and world press—we should not have expected great things or sensational revelations from it. The hope early went glimmering that the Colorado project might finally acquaint everyone with everything—or at least part of it—that only a very few have known for some time.[14]

Now that the contract has expired, nothing will be easier than for the Air Force—after simply denying for more than twenty years that the phenomenon exists—to stop deriding the easy (because indemonstrable) explanation of a putative extraterrestrial origin for the UFOs, and even to accept the existence of some new or at least unexplained type of atmospheric phenomenon, in order to supply the required though meaningless sop for the millions of American taxpayers who are disturbed by the fantasies and foolishness of ufologists, and so to protect the sacred principle of "freedom of the press."

A WAITING GAME?

When we examine the whole of the many years' work that has gone on backstage, we see that the behavior of the various American authorities—especially at the time the first investigations covering the period from 1947 to 1955 were carried out—has frequently been contradictory and sometimes, but only in appearance, even incoherent.

For a short time, in 1954, the alternation of hasty explanations with subsequent reversals was even taken to be an astute plan to cover up indefinitely the secret that the UFOs were American-built, or as a clever way of gradually informing the world that they were indeed standing on the runways of secret national airfields. The ridiculous references to the inhabitants of Mars or Venus, to the Uranians, or to star people made by third parties, or certain scattered allusions to the possibility that the UFOs might have come from behind the Iron Curtain (the impossibility of which was obviously discounted to begin with)—these things were taken to be part of a game by a complex bureau whose aim was to encourage friends and warn enemies by frightening the public. The protestations of technical people, or their refusal to make statements, was, moreover, interpreted to mean that the invention was in the process of being perfected.

Otherwise, it was said, how could one explain the inexplicable calmness which the leaders of the country had on several occasions exhibited in the face of an extraordinary phenomenon that was upsetting the whole nation?

For example, when reporters asked an official at the control tower of a civil airport in Washington in July 1952 why he had not alerted the antiaircraft defense center when the machines first approached, he answered drily: "We were too busy with more important matters, and besides those 'things' don't harm anybody"!

A high Air Force official, commenting on the formation of Project Blue Book, declared in effect: We do not know the causes of the observed phenomena, but we are convinced that they represent absolutely no threat to our country. They have been around for five years and they have never struck. If they are man-made, the men who make them are aeronautically superior to us. If it turns out that they are enemy aircraft, we will capture them.[15]

Aircraft of huge size, with no recognizable system of operation, perhaps (or not even "perhaps") with men on board, from some admittedly unknown country or world (friend? neutral? enemy?), capable of rising vertically with dizzying speed and flying horizontally at speeds unmatched by even the fastest known types of jets—*was none of this even a potential threat?* On the face of it this view, if taken literally, is an absurdity.

In fact, these unknown machines roamed far and wide, undisturbed, over the entire United States, and not infrequently remained for lengthy periods over or in the neighborhood of military bases, governmental scientific laboratories, and centers for nuclear research. Yet anyone who is at all familiar with air routes and who travels by air knows quite well how much governmental red tape and regulations—certainly partly justified on the grounds of everyone's safety—must be put up with by anyone who wants to go, not to the Antipodes, but merely from one local airport to another.

Thus one cannot *a priori* exclude the possibility that, while unimportant military offices were stumbling around in the dark, Air Force top brass was far better informed than it would have had people believe, at least from 1952 on. Nor can one exclude the possibility that it might finally have got wind of something through secret service channels (though it could not copy the craft for lack of detailed information or of specific technologies). Nor the possibility that, through diplomatic channels (a report made to a confidential Blue Book?), the builders of the UFOs (for no other reason than the need to make a rendezvous in the sky over the capital, as in the summer of 1952) had secretly notified some high-ranking person—let us say the President of the United States or someone in his immediate circle—to avoid precipitating some dangerous anti-aircraft activity, which, in fact, never occurred either in Washington or at the more heavily armed missile bases which the UFOs overflew a number of times.[16]

PROJECT BEACON

And this is not all. Beginning in June 1952, Air Force investigating authorities seemed particularly interested in the intense, changing lights that usually accompanied the moving objects, rather than in the saucers themselves—which leads some of the most highly qualified experts to suspect that the United States was already aware of where the saucers came from and that it especially wanted to glean some useful data on the type and chemical composition of the formidable fuel used by the UFOs.[17]

During this period, while the Project Blue Book investigations were getting under way, the Air Force Chief of Staff, Hoyt S. Vandenberg, did, in fact, have the Laboratory of Applied Physics at the University of Los Angeles construct a spectroscopic motion-picture camera which could photograph the flight of an unknown object and provide an instant analysis of its light energy.

This project, which went under the name of "Beacon," envisaged setting up two hundred such cameras at an equal number of observation posts established along the routes that the machines most frequently traveled, principally in the southwestern area of the United States. Seventy-five American military bases abroad were also supposed to receive these UFO-detectors.

The final report on this highly specialized investigation, which was slated to come out in December of 1953, was never published. Was it perhaps, as American ufologists maintained, because no solid information was obtained (1953 was, in fact, a year that was almost totally devoid of American sightings)? Or was it, as the French ufologist A. Michel wrote, because it was judged opportune to draw the curtain of military secrecy over the results that had been obtained?

Neither hypothesis corresponds to the truth. Captain Ruppelt himself reported that the apparatus, which was completed after a year of study, "wouldn't satisfactorily photograph a million-candle-power flare at 450 yards. The cameras themselves were all right, but in combination with the gratings, they were no good." Which leads one to suspect that the project never really got under way, at least to the extent publicized by the press.

That secret information reached the Pentagon, on the other hand, seems to be indicated by the following enigmatic episode, also revealed by Captain Ruppelt after he had taken the bitter step of handing in his resignation:

"In some aspects the Washington National [Airport] sightings [of July-August 1952] could be classed as a surprise . . . but in other ways they weren't. A few days prior to the incident a scientist, from an agency that I can't name, and I were talking about the build-up of reports along the east coast of the United States.[18] We talked for about two hours, and I was ready to leave when he said that he had one last comment to make—a prediction. From his study of the UFO reports that he was getting from Air Force Headquarters, and from discussions with his colleagues, he said that he thought that we were sitting right on top of a big keg full of loaded flying saucers. "Within the next few days,' he told me, and I remember that he punctuated his slow, deliberate remarks by hitting the desk with his fist, 'they're going to blow up and you're going to have the granddaddy of all UFO sightings. The sighting will occur in Washington or New York,' he predicted—'probably Washington.'"

And they did, in fact, fly over Washington, passing back and forth a number of times.

Finally, it is certain that if any one of the three American service branches—Air Force, Navy, or Army—really had had those flying machines in operation, no military office, bureau, or committee—every one of which is a direct extension of the Pentagon—would ever have set foot on the treacherous ground of speculation, and then of dispute. They would have cut short all speculation by the press at the start with a dry "No comment!" The United States would never have been subjected to the bitter, repeated humiliation of unsuccessful satellite launchings, because then it could have quietly shelved the little artificial moons altogether, or put them in orbit with different and less chancy methods. And, viewing the matter with the advantage of hindsight, we can say that what is astonishing is the rash attitude taken by the responsible agencies, which at the time of the first sightings perhaps actually did tremble at the idea that those phantom aircraft secretly bore the emblem of the Red Star.

Once it was clear that there was no threat and the true nature of the sightings became evident, there was no sensible alternative for these agencies but to issue something like the following communiqué—which, unfortunately they did not do: The authorities of the United States are cognizant of the origin and purpose of the so-called UFOs. They are perfectly harmless mechanical constructions, and it is absolutely forbidden to any pilot, military or civilian, to interfere in their activity. The authorities could then have curtly refused to answer further requests for clarification, promising to do so at "the proper time." Such are the demands of military secrecy, that incurable but unfortunately necessary disease which retards progress by preventing scientific exchange among nations, forces the inventive genius of man into the shadows, and tempts him to blackmail and treason.

NOTES

1. As long ago as 1952 the editors of the London aeronautical magazine *Flight* (see No. 2300) bemoaned the lack of high-speed rocket interceptors in Britain's air defense. They com-

plained principally of alleged operational deficiencies in the R.A.F. and deplored the shelving of the Miles supersonic plane, the failure to develop the Vickers and Fairey antiaircraft rockets, and the overemphasis on preparing the Class "V" superbombers ("Victor," "Vulcan," and "Valiant"). Nevertheless, these complaints of British experts were only a very modest skirmish in the huge storm that had been brewing for some time.

2. See ANSAER No. 96 in *ANSA: Notiziario Aeronautico* (Rome, January 21, 1957).

3. *Cf.* the statements of Undersecretary Strachey in the House of Commons (session of March 12, 1946). In addition, from the 1946 White Paper we learn that of the £411-million British budget, about £30 million were assigned to the Ministry of Supply and an additional £100 million were assigned to the Air Ministry for production and various services.

4. After welcoming the wildest explanations, the European press, which only a few months before had opened its columns to extensive coverage of the mysterious apparitions, did an abrupt about-face, printed the authoritative American denials, and seconded them warmly. Most curious of all the interpretations of the "myth" was that suggested by the French weekly *L'Illustration.* In the autumn of 1952 the magazine had unsuccessfully tried to get in touch with the first American eyewitness, and in 1954 it tried to at least get hold of "a copy of *The Coming of the Saucers* of which Kenneth Arnold is allegedly the author" but still without success. The French writer then came to these surprising conclusions: "These facts are somewhat suspicious and have led us to form three different hypotheses: 1) Arnold made a mistake in good faith, and his silence means that he wants both the mistake and himself forgotten; 2) he deliberately lied out of a mania for exhibitionism or a desire to create the biggest hoax of the century;
3) he does not in fact exist as a person of flesh and blood. The origin of a myth, he is himself a myth. Behind his name is concealed some military body or organization that has 'in-

vented’ the whole story for mysterious reasons. There are, indeed, some who lean toward this last hypothesis—which injects a new mystery into the greater mystery of the flying saucers.”

5. This is a foolish notion. Exceedingly well-founded rumors and evidence of some time ago make it certain that beginning in 1946 several models of electromagnetic cannons—captured in Schlosscranzbach, Germany—have since been developed at a secret experimental center belonging to the U.S. Army. See Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-committee, *Geschäft für Gerätebau: Electric Guns* (Report No. XXXI-59, London, H.M.S.O., 1945), p. 19; “‘Toothpaste’ Shell May Beat Atom,” *Union Jack* (Southern Italy Edition, June 19, 1946), p. 1; and Col. L. Simons, “Electromagnetic Artillery,” *German Scientific Establishments* (Report PB 19849, Brooklyn, 1947). No clear details, however, have as yet leaked out. Here, then, is a “democratic” secret whose life also spans two decades—and it remains unfathomed. Nevertheless, it is probable that the mysterious “green suns of Arizona”—mistaken for a new type of flying saucer in 1951—are the sole visible manifestations of those experiments. See R. Vesco, “*I getti di metallo fuso antiaerei*,” *Rivista Militare* (Rome, Ministry of Defense: Army, September 1954), pp. 910–921.

6. See Lt.-Col. L. J. Tacker, *Flying Saucers and the U.S. Air Force: The Official Air Force Story* (New York, Van Nostrand, 1960), pp. 136–161.

7. Isolated UFOs had, however, already previously appeared elsewhere. On July 3, 1965, the military and scientific personnel of several Argentine, Chilean, and British naval bases in the Antarctic saw and photographed a large, circular, shining body that passed over at a low altitude. Before disappearing over the horizon, it had changed speed and direction several times, circling several miles away from the tender *Punta Medanos,* whose compasses temporarily “went crazy,” indicating intense electromagnetic interference which undoubtedly came from the

object. There was official confirmation from Argentine and Chilean sources. Photographs were not released. (*Cf.* Frank Edwards, *Flying Saucers—Serious Business,* New York, Bantam Books, 1967), pp. 160–183.

8. See John G. Fuller, *Incident at Exeter* (New York, Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1966). It is doubtless possible, and even probable, that a substantial portion of the sightings reported can be explained as the spontaneous production of local electroatmospheric phenomena caused by high-tension transmissions which were present in the areas of the principal sightings, as suggested by several experts of the Westinghouse Research Laboratories. See Philip J. Klass, "Plasma Theory May Explain Many UFOs," *Aviation Week and Space Technology,* vol. 85, no. 8, New York (August 22, 1966), pp. 48–61, and "Letters: UFO Theory," *Aviation Week and Space Technology,* vol. 85, no. 15, New York (October 10, 1966), p. 130. But the production of corona effects and of discharges of the globular type caused by temporary overloading in the distributive network —due to damage or testing—does not eliminate the certainty of the fleeting presence over the region of flying machines that were unknown because radically dissimilar in design and in behavior to ordinary airplanes. There really seems to be no reason why the two phenomena could not coexist and sometimes appear simultaneously, without thereby mutually eliminating one another. Moreover, the cycle of summer sightings of 1965 was not limited to the territories of the United States. Flights of UFOs also took place over France, Portugal, Spain, Argentina, Chile, Peru, Brazil, and in the vicinity of the Australian airport of Canberra. The skies of northern Mexico —which had on several occasions been traversed by UFOs— were also crossed by a formation of "fiery balls," which at a certain point seemed to converge in an orderly fashion toward a large cigar-shaped craft at the head of the silent, lofty procession. This sighting and maneuver remain inexplicable, but they had previously appeared in the annals of ufology (*cf.,* for example, the French sightings of Oloron and Gaillac in 1952). The Air Force has several times stated that "skepticism is healthy" when dealing with UFO reports. True, but only if it is

not transformed into a convenient screen and the screen into an outrageous abuse.

9. On March 27, 1966, a highway patrolman, G. Landversicht, having observed a strange, shining object in the sky heading toward the air base, took several feet of motion-picture film and handed it over to his direct superiors. The frames were then examined by experts of the Air Technical Intelligence Center, which maintained the most absolute silence on them. If the UFOs do not exist, why not make these innocuous frames (preferably without biased mutilating or retouching) public property?

10. *Cf.* Luke Frost, "A Cloak of Respectability: $313,000," *Flying Saucers—UFO Reports*, No. 2 (New York, Dell Publishing Co., 1967), pp. 26–29. The director of Project Blue Book, Major Hector Quintanilla, was to fulfill only the functions of "special military consultant" to the new committee, since the whole matter had been handed over to civilians. In addition, he was instructed to place at the disposition of the investigators the whole body of reports gathered in 1966 (of which there were 1060, the highest figure after the 1501 sightings caused by the so-called "mass hysteria" of 1952), as well as whatever reports might be received by the military office in 1967.

11. The proposal to entrust the task to civilians was apparently advanced as early as 1965 by Major General E. B. Lebailly, the director of the U.S. Air Force Information Bureau, for two seemingly valid reasons: 1) to quash criticism from the public and press regarding the behavior of the Air Force, which according to him was wrongfully accused of keeping the most interesting news secret; 2) to dissipate growing suspicions that the Air Force was developing special, top-secret starships for the War in Space. His suggestion, which was examined and favorably received by the Air Force's Scientific Advisory Board, was promptly translated by the eager board into the "recommendation" that "an independent UFO investigation unit" be set up—independent (at least in theory) from the Air Force but coinciding in its "declared" aims, perhaps in

homage to the mechanical principle that the vectors of two equal but opposing forces (in this case, civilians and the military) cancel one another and their common origin (in this case, the UFOs) no longer has any direction. However, it was specified that the investigation—which was then entrusted to the University of Colorado—wouldn't kill off Project Blue Book. The reason given for this duplication of effort was: "The Air Force will continue to collect reports of UFO sightings, as in the past, unless persons are reluctant to work through USAF channels and prefer direct contact with the University of Colorado scientists. Under a regulation issued last month by Air Force Chief of Staff Gen. John P. McConnell, the USAF's Foreign Technology Div. at Wright-Patterson AFB, Ohio, is authorized to 'use other government agencies, private industrial companies and contractor personnel to assist in analyzing and evaluating UFO reports as necessary.'" See "Colorado to Study UFOs," *Aviation Week and Space Technology,* vol. 85, no. 16, New York (October 17, 1966). Everything was clear, everything was arranged with the greatest care and started off for a happy ending, but it would remain to be seen what hidden role would be played by competent bureaus of the Central Intelligence Agency, given the precedent of the "Robertson Report." In 1953 the Air Force called a top-level scientific meeting on the UFO problem, which had become particularly acute after the incidents of the summer of 1952. The meeting was presided over by Dr. H. P. Robertson of the California Institute of Technology, and gave rise to many animated debates conducted on a "very concrete level," but—according to the subsequent testimony of one of the participants, the physicist James E. McDonald of the University of Arizona, and there is no sound reason to doubt him—the minutes of the gathering and even the final report were "classified" at the specific request of the C.I.A. *Cf.* "Dr. Condon Diagnoses the UFOs—Will He Unravel the Baffling Riddle?" *UFOs* '67, No. 1, 1967 (New York, K.M.R. Publications), pp. 36–39.

12. In 1948 he was investigated by the House Un-American Activities Committee. Then, cleared of all charges against him, he resigned from the post of Director of the National Bureau

of Standards and joined the Corning Glass Works as a civilian scientist, where he was part of a team that developed cones for atomic missiles and heat-refracting screens for space capsules.

13. This omission is rather significant because it forces to mind a sort of aphorism that has always been dear to high-ranking officers of the Air Force. The aphorism makes plain the tacit connivance between those officers and the world of a certain self-satisfied branch of science. It goes as follows: Astronomers, astrophysicists, and their assistants are the only people really qualified to express an opinion on the subject of UFOs. (*Cf.* Lt. Col. Lawrence J. Tacker, *Flying Saucers and the U.S. Air Force.*) Now the privilege of taking part in this "monologue" is apparently also extended to experts in psychology.

14. Once again, in order to quell the doubt, curiosity, or fear of the "man in the street," would nearly a third of a million dollars be spent just in order to go through the motions of an investigation? So it would appear, according to certain authoritative program specifications. Did not Dr. Condon himself perhaps candidly declare just before taking on the job that when the contract expired the mystery of the UFOs might still not be completely solved despite the best efforts? And hadn't the Secretary of the Air Force perhaps imprudently revealed his hidden intentions when he made clear that the choice of the University of Colorado was suggested above all by its "proximity to the famous National Center for Atmospheric Research (N.C.A.R.) and to the Research Headquarters of the Environmental Science Services Administration, organizations specializing in research on the properties of the natural environment in which man lives, including in particular the physical characteristics of the atmosphere and of outlying Space"? According to Mr. Brown, these organizations could thus furnish "tremendous help" to the Boulder investigators. . . .

15. An opinion and a confidence that is much more widespread among the upper ranks of the Air Force than ufologists think or say they think. When asked to express his confidential opinion on the UFOs, Chief of Staff General Twining gave a half-

brusque, half-facetious reply to the pilots of the Amarillo Air Force Base in Texas on May 15, 1954: "Even if they did come from Mars we would not be afraid of them!" Then he made clear that he did not seriously believe either in explorers from Mars or in the existence of the "so-called UFOs."

16. This fact is all the more disconcerting since, according to Captain Ruppelt, any attempt to intercept—or better, to approach—a UFO by means of jet fighters entailed an average expenditure of about $2000 per air hour, with absolutely negative results because of the manifestly inferior maneuvering ability of the pursuers. A volley of radio-guided earth-to-air missiles or seek-destroy air-to-air rockets would have cost much less than the countless futile efforts to learn something about the discs by sending up interceptors and much less than the money that would probably be wasted on the civilian program now under way. In any case it would surely have downed the UFO, and experts could then have examined it on the ground with all the care that circumstances demanded. In 1944 the English "reconstructed" the V-2 torpedo-rocket found in the vicinity of Baeckedo by patiently reassembling the more than ten thousand fragments. The Swedish air force experts who found it had previously succeeded in reconstructing the gigantic rocket on paper. In regard to the U-2 spy plane piloted by the American flyer Powers, even though it was flying at an altitude of more than 54,000 feet, the Soviets reacted in a rather harsh but extremely profitable manner: one well-aimed shot. And by piecing together the various bits of wreckage, they also "reconstructed" the evidence. People in aeronautical circles uncontaminated by the ufological craze are asking why on earth the Americans have not taken a similarly resolute and drastic but definitive step with regard to the UFOs? *Politesse* toward our Brothers from Space? Apparently not, for the military authorities have never evidenced the slightest belief in their existence. Fear of diplomatic complications which would follow the shooting down of a craft that might turn out to be Russian? Even this should not have stopped them from intervening against the invaders of their air space, especially in view of the fact that they so decisively met the much more

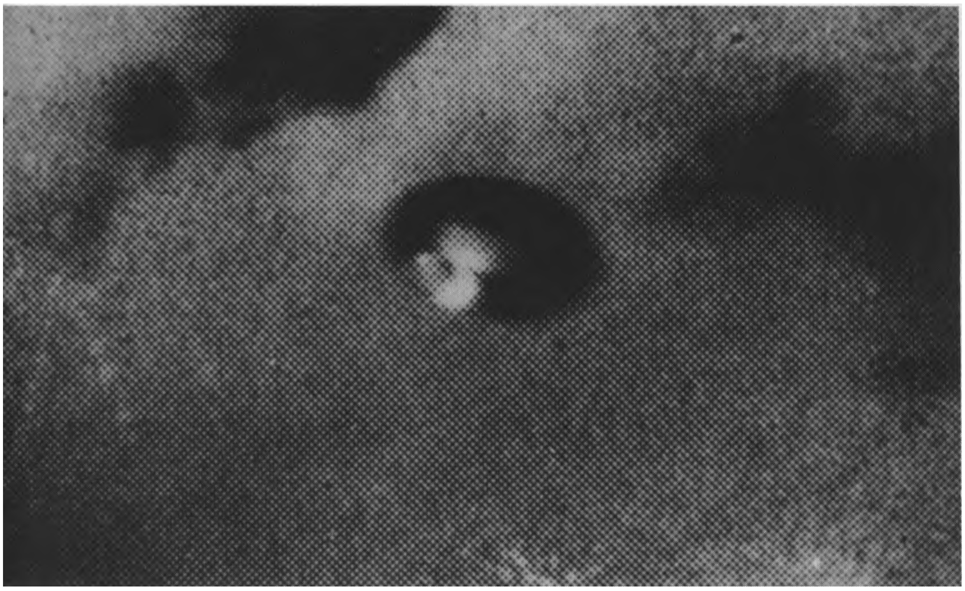
serious problem of Cuban-Soviet missile bases. And then, since the Russians did not stand on ceremony in the U-2 case, there is no reason why the Americans should not do likewise. Ignorance of the real nature of the UFOs? Given their potential danger, this should have been all the more reason to take any steps that would clarify matters. Whoever feels himself threatened by an obscure danger attacks first, if he is able. And then? . . . And then one does not shoot at "strangers" who are friends through ancient racial ties, even if the political, economic, and military bonds between Americans and British are getting looser and looser. It has long been the custom to develop one's military secrets—or potential secrets—jealously and in private, revealing them to a friendly nation only when war changes friend into ally. These are almost metaphysical subtleties, but no other motive stands up to the most elementary criticism. Besides, the only report of an armed attack against the UFOs was never confirmed, even semiofficially, by the appropriate Air Force offices. We refer to the alleged communiqué issued by the head of the U.S. Air Force Defense Headquarters-D in Tokyo on May 9, 1953, quoted by an English ufologist, in which he says that "in recent weeks our ships and planes have observed numerous unidentified flying objects. In pursuing them we got a line on their course, which permitted us to draw some conclusions regarding their take-off and landing bases. One of these craft [without crew and radio-controlled?] was hit by one of our planes armed with special equipment, and went down in the ocean off Tinian Island in the archipelago of the Mariannas." Even if authentic, and there are grave doubts on the matter, this operation apparently was transformed into a chase without any prey!

17. Without neglecting, of course, the aerodynamic and mechanical aspects of the flight of UFOs. We do not know what actual means the U.S. Air Force uses to conduct its secret investigations but one presumes that everything the press suggests today (with the exception of the firing of antiaircraft rockets) has already long since been put in motion without the public or ufologists ever having been informed of the fact or of the results obtained. As Captain G. H. Oldenburg—an official

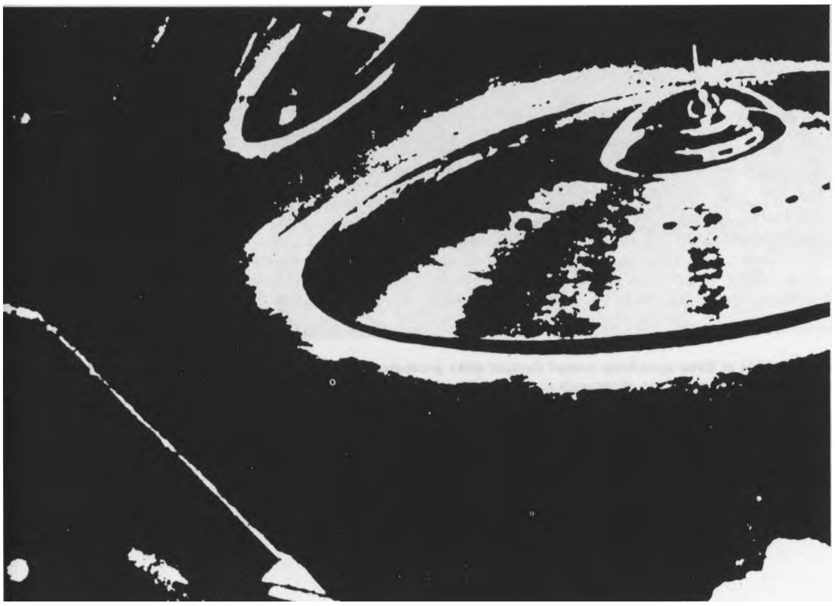
of the Information Service of the Air Force base at Langley, Va.—declared in no uncertain terms on February 13, 1958: “to make public the data gathered on UFOs is contrary to Air Force interests and regulations.” *Cf* L. Jerome Stanton, “Science vs. Saucers,” *Flying Saucers, UFO Reports,* no. 2 (New York, 1967), pp. 40–44.

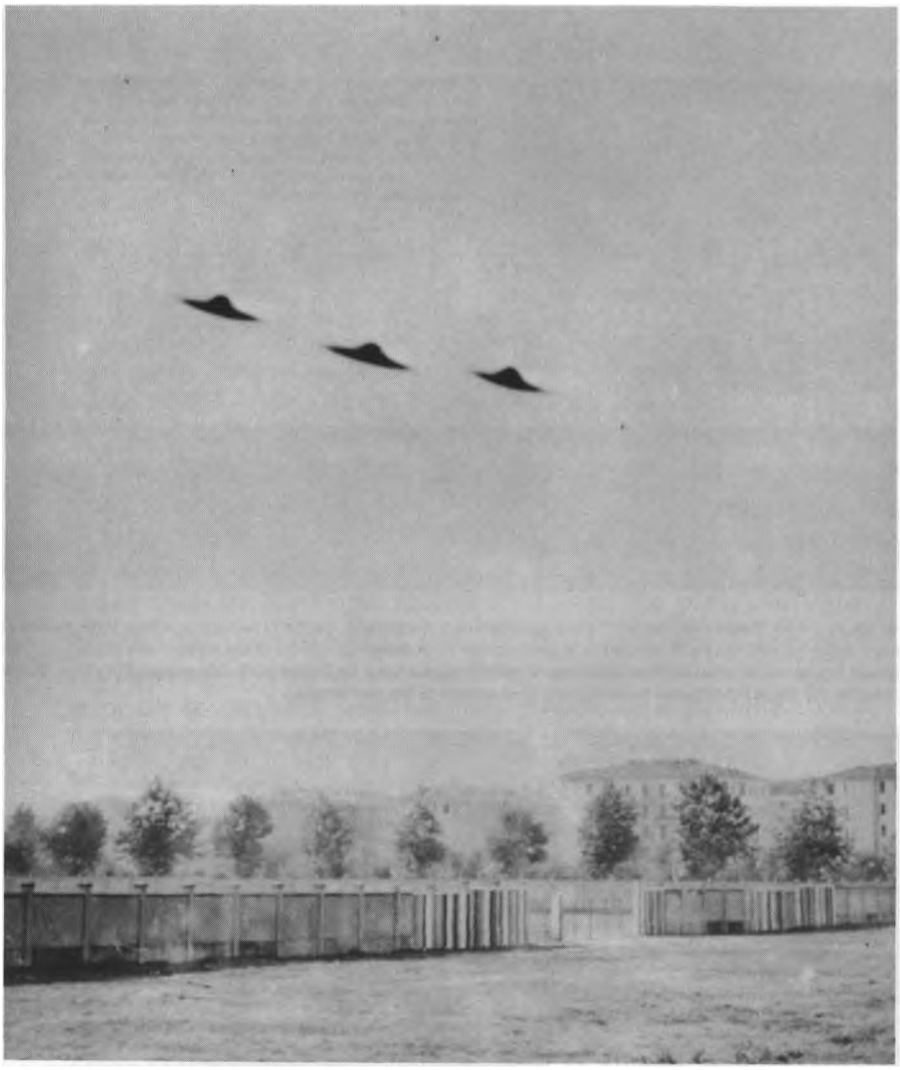
18. The institution that could not then be named was, in all probability, the RAND Corporation (*i.e.,* Research and Development Corporation), a civilian organization of a very high scientific level that does every kind of research and consulting work for the U.S. Air Force (from reports on technical progress in the U.S.S.R. to analysis of the “productivity” of national industries, from the selective control of projects to “confidential” investigations of the UFO problem), and that is cited in passing in the book by Lt. Col. L. J. Tacker (*The Flying Saucers and the Air Force,* p. 16). Tacker says, in fact, that the RAND Corporation was also involved in 1948—together with the Scientific Advisory Board, the Weather Bureau and the Federal Bureau of Investigation—in the first attempt to work out a preliminary scheme for an initial standardized approach to the problem. Moreover, Ruppelt himself recently indirectly confirmed this identification by also mentioning the RAND Corporation—“a group of high-level researchers that have nothing to do with the industrial company of the same name”—in a detailed review of saucer history (see Capt. Edward J. Ruppelt, “Why Don’t the Damn Things Swim So We Can Turn Them Over to the Navy?” *The True Report on Flying Saucers* (Greenwich, Conn., Fawcett Publications no. 1, 1967), pp. 36–39 and 57–74. The conclusions that the RAND experts reached in 1949—on the basis of the examination of 375 sightings selected by Dr. Hynek—did not differ from those which prevailed in Air Force circles: We have found nothing that seriously contradicts the simple, rational explanation of the various phenomena observed by the appearance of weather balloons, conventional airplanes, planets, meteorites, pieces of paper, optical illusions, hoaxes, psychopathic hallucinations, and so on. (One assumes, however, that these were the conclusions for the public and the press.) It seems that the RAND

Corporation had also cooperated with Air Force Intelligence in the elaboration of the famous (and infamous, for the ufologists) internal regulation, Air Force Regulation 200-2, compiled at the order of the then Secretary of the Air Force H. Talbot, issued for the first time on August 26, 1953, and continuously brought up to date. A true masterpiece of precision, prudence, and foresight, which sometimes even verges on the superfluous. The reading of this regulation—which every ufologist should know by heart—is particularly interesting because it offers clear proof of the fact that the Air Force really does *take the question very seriously, seeks to obtain detailed technical information on the behavior of the UFOs, and does not at all neglect sightings over foreign territories!* The last version of the Regulation (AFR. 80-17 of September 19, 1966) was drawn up by the Air Force Research and Development Department rather than by Air Force Intelligence as in the past, and Paragraph Two (Objectives of the Program), Section A (General Provisions), states that the Air Force is interested in the UFOs in order to establish whether they constitute a possible threat for the United States *and in order to take advantage of the technical and scientific data gained from the study of the related reports.* The Regulation says *it is possible that foreign countries may succeed in building aircraft with revolutionary shapes and means of propulsion.* Consequently one must know what these means of propulsion are and, if possible, copy them and perhaps even improve on them, especially if it is established that they are of Soviet origin and hence particularly to be feared. Here then is one more irrefutable proof that the Air Force is engaged in a deliberate game of duplicity, one, it goes without saying, that was forced on it by the demands of national security but was conducted with means and methods that seem to us to be self-defeating or disproportionate to the case.

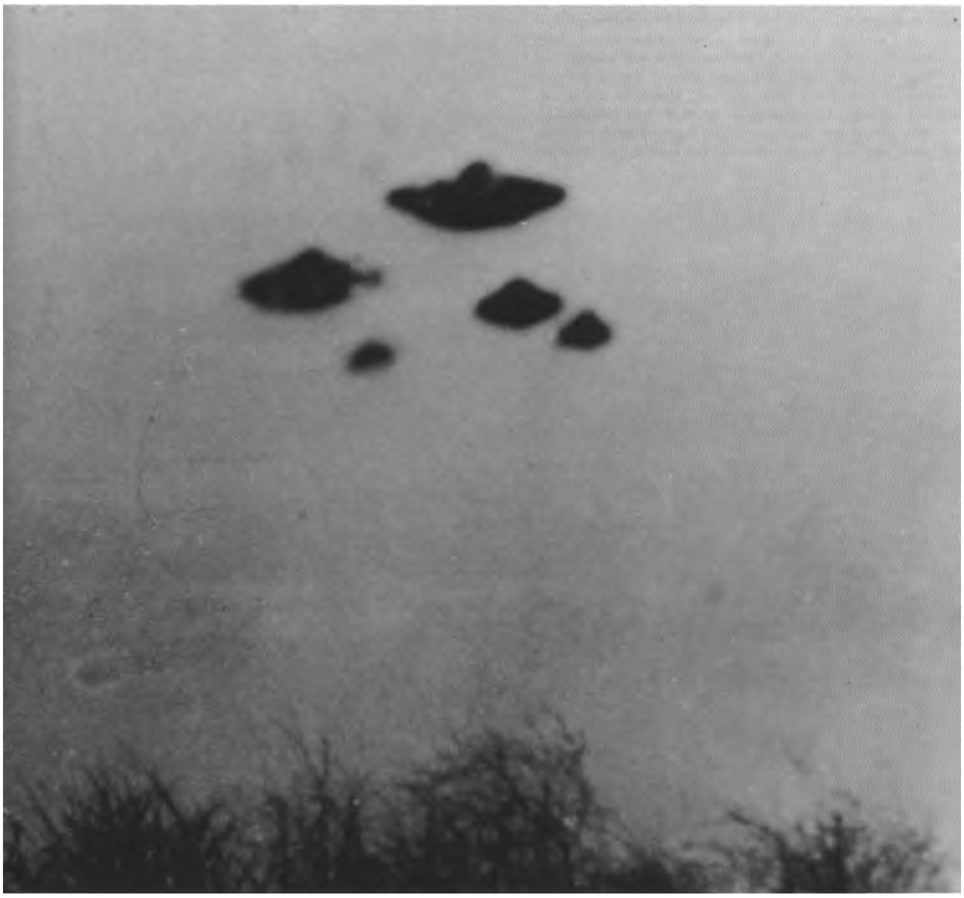


Above, the so-called "Darmstadt saucer," photographed near Darmstadt, Germany in August, 1953. With its low round dome and flattened disk shape, it seemed to supersede the older tower-type UFOs of the McMinnville kind. But as the decade advanced, a newer configuration also began to appear—the lenticular or double-convex UFO disk. Below is a page from an Air Force Intelligence manual alerting personnel to the new shape.



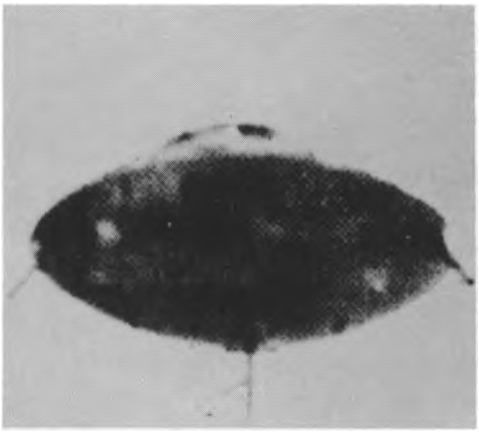


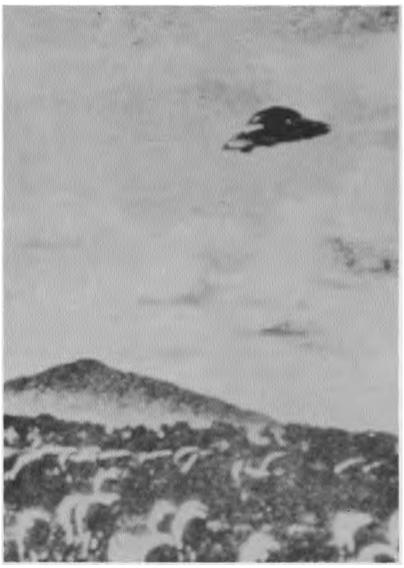
A formation flight of three apparently domed daylight disks photographed somewhere in Italy on September 26, 1960. Project Blue Book evaluated the photograph as a "hoax," but didn't say who perpetrated it or how it was done.



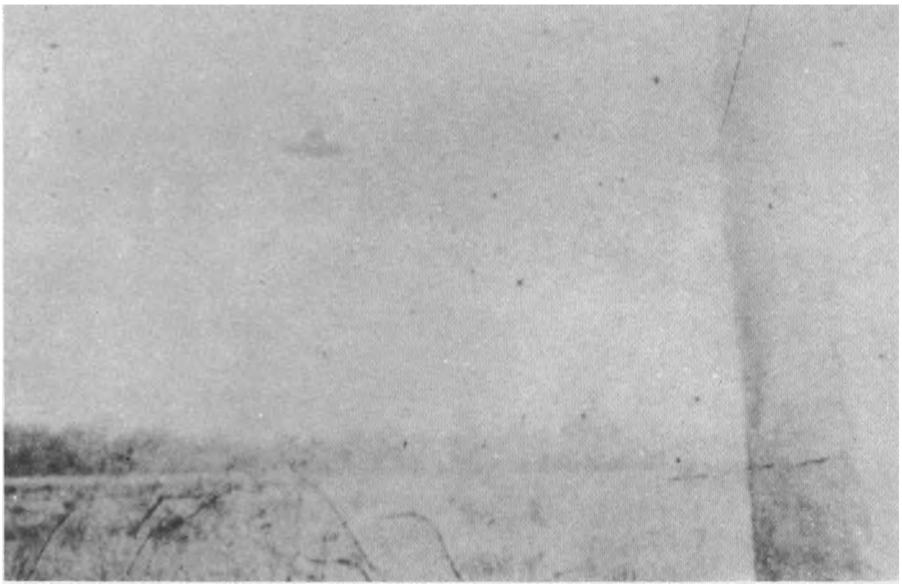
Five objects photographed on May 25, 1962 by Alexander Birch, a 14-year-old schoolboy from Sheffield, England with a cheap box camera. Alex happened to be in a field near his home with two of his friends when one of the boys began to shout excitedly and point skyward. The boys stared in amazement at five dull, black, disk-shaped objects that were hovering not far from them at 600 feet. After a few seconds, the boys' vision was dazzled by brilliant white blobs of light that appeared from behind the objects. At this point, Alex remembered his camera and snapped this picture. After about 20 seconds, the objects streaked away at terrific speed toward the northeast. At no time did the percipients hear any sound coming from the UFOs.

When Radio Officer T. Fogl aboard the SS *Ramsay* out of Vancouver spotted this UFO about 2:30 one afternoon in 1957, it was too far away for a good picture—about a mile from the ship. Eventually the disk came near enough and Fogl took this and later another picture. The object was seen to have a flat dome, no ports, was silver and black, and had tripod-like protuberances on its underside. Moving very slowly, the UFO stayed with the ship for a few minutes, then shot off with great speed toward the California coast.

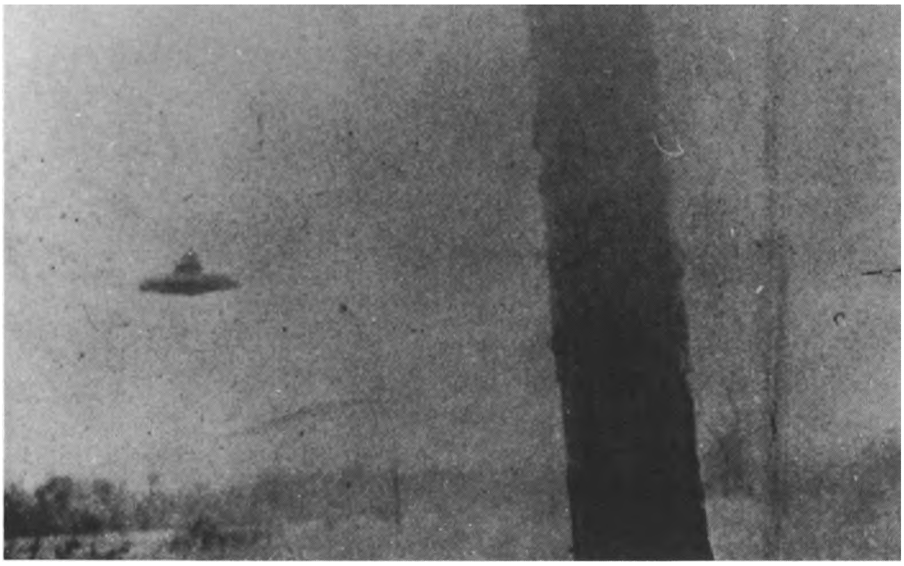


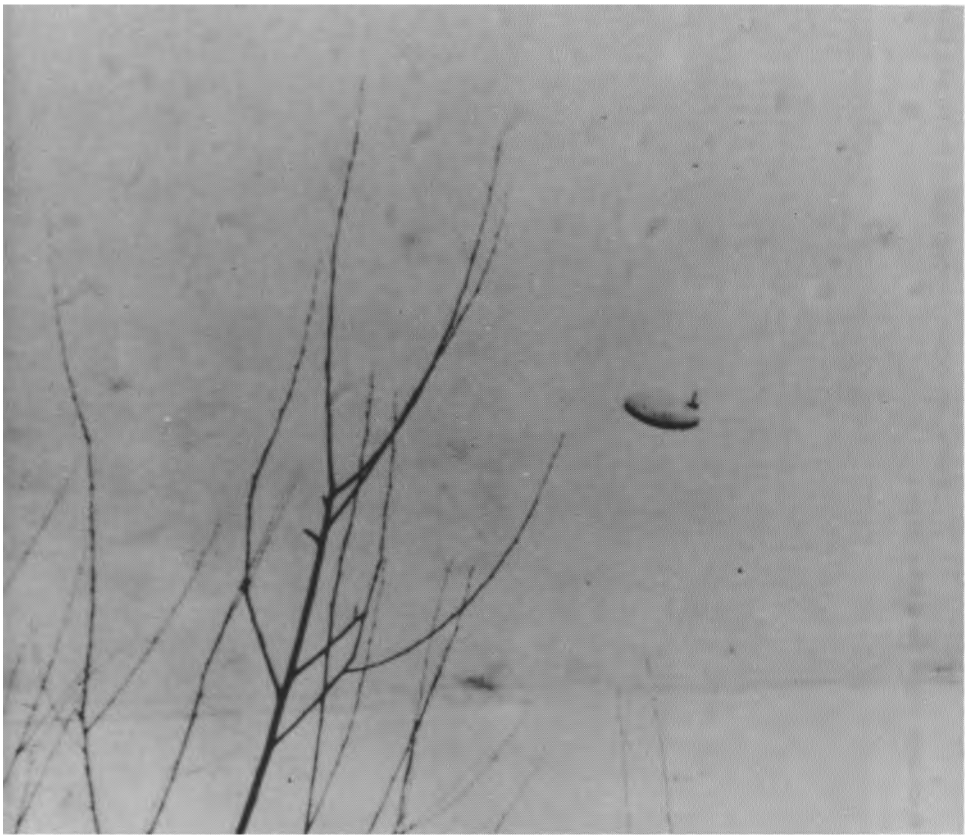


This domed daylight disk, snapped over grazing sheep, was photographed by W. D. Hall in Australia in 1954. It is known in UFO circles as the “Petrol Tank Saucer” because Hall remarked that it looked like a gasoline tank.



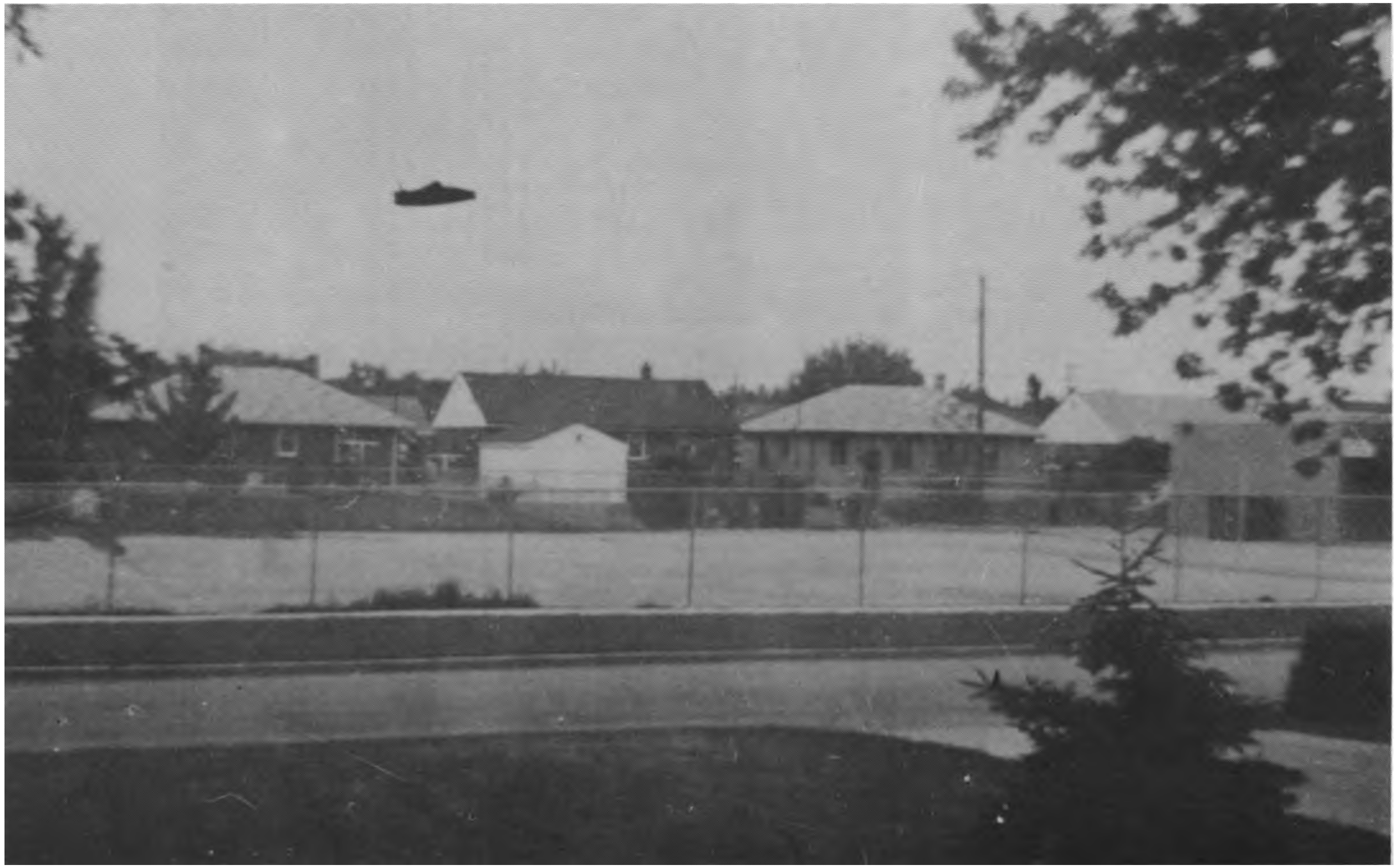
As dusk was descending over Milledgeville, Georgia on October 22, 1967, an unknown photographer took these two pictures of an apparently high-towered UFO. Object was approaching in upper photo, then was seen to hover as second photo was taken.



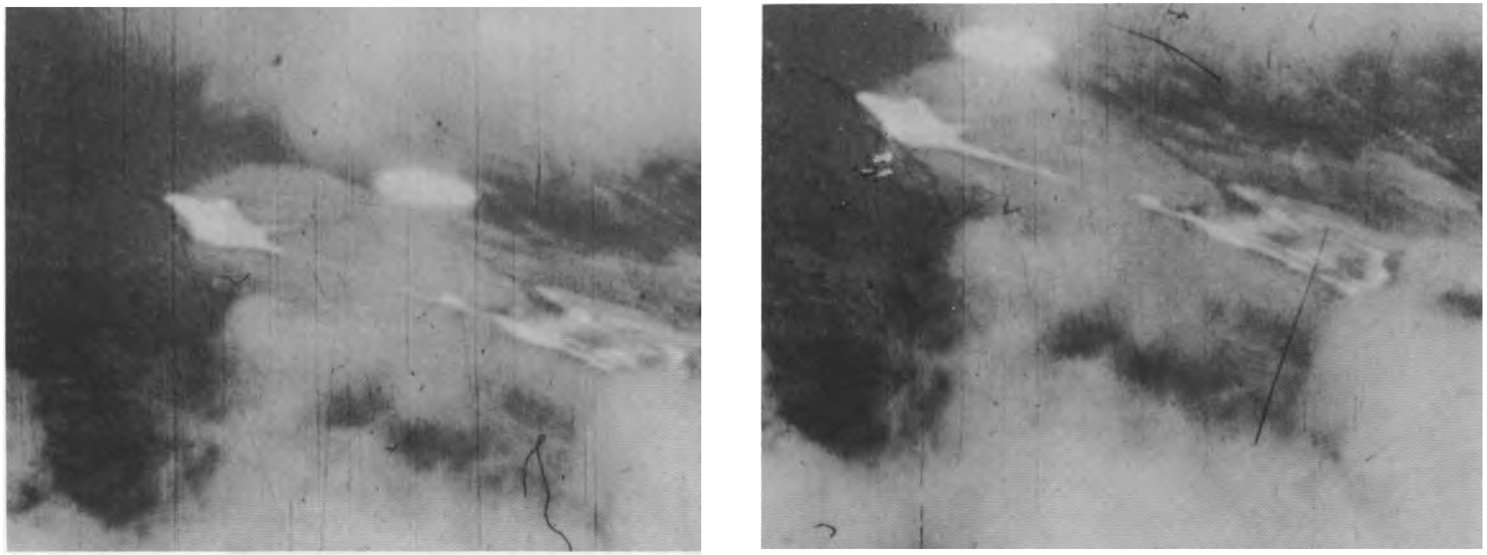


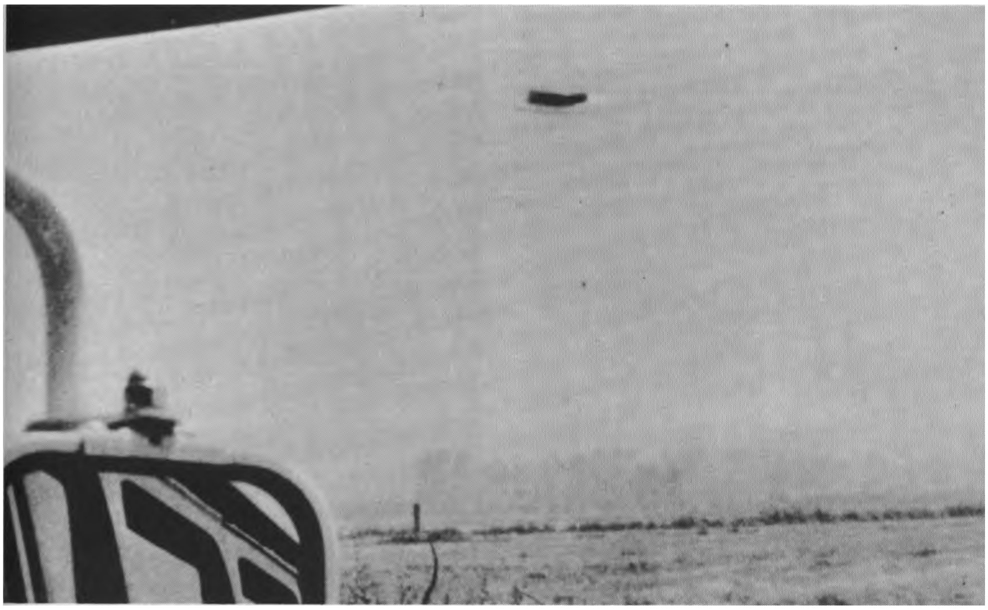
On January 9, 1967, two teen-age brothers, Dan (opposite, left) and Grant Jaroslaw, made some photos of a domed object with an apparent tower on one side over Lake St. Clair, Michigan. They photographed it from the backyard of their Mt. Clemens home, about a mile from Selfridge Air Force Base. The object (above; enlarged opposite) was moving slowly at a very low altitude—probably too low to be picked up on radar at the Base. It remained in view about 10 minutes—ample time for the boys to take their pictures with a small Polaroid. When they released them to a wire service, the Air Force requested the originals for analysis. Evidently the brothers were wary of lending out their original prints, for they kept them under lock and key in a bank—but they did give the UFO officer at Selfridge a set of copies. This officer was quoted as saying they were "the best I've ever seen." Nevertheless Blue Book, seizing on the fact that they'd been denied the originals, slapped an "insufficient data" tag on the case. Dr. Hynek, however, was impressed with the photos and thought the chance of a hoax having been perpetrated was "unlikely."

Below, an object photographed in Ontario, Canada on September 29, 1967, which Blue Book said might be a fake photo.



Below, two photos of a pair of alleged UFOs taken within about a minute of each other over Johnson Island in the Pacific Ocean on October 5, 1961. First photo is at left. Note that the lacy cloud formation at middle right in both photos is basically unchanged—an important point in authenticating sequence shots. Note also that the topmost UFO seems to have caught up with its partner in photo 2. Blue Book's evaluation: "reflections."





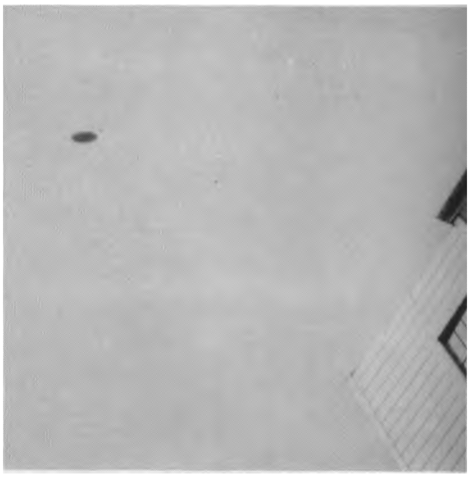
These are the famous daylight-disk photos taken by Rex Heflin on August 3, 1965 near Santa Ana, California. Heflin, a traffic inspector for the Orange County Road Department, had been driving very slowly along the shoulder of Myford Road inspecting overhanging growth by the roadside. At about 12:30 PM, he stopped his van and tried to radio his superintendent to report some limbs obstructing a sign. But suddenly his radio "went completely dead." Then Heflin caught a glimpse of an aerial object with a domed top out of the corner of his eye. At first, he thought it to be a conventional aircraft, possibly from the nearby El Toro Marine Corps Air Station. "The UFO," stated Heflin, "moved from my left to in front of me and momentarily hovered there. . . . I grabbed the camera from the seat . . . and took the first photograph [opposite, above] through the windshield. . . . The object then moved slowly off to the northeast. I then snapped the second picture [opposite, below] through the right door window (window closed). This is when I saw the rotating beam of light emitting from the center of the UFO on the bottom side [not discernible in this reproduction]. The UFO positioned itself to another angle of view and I snapped the third picture [above] through the same side window"

As the object moved away, Heflin said it had a wobbling motion and "hovered momentarily." It maintained "a relatively level altitude (150 ft.) in relation to the flat terrain, however the UFO acted similar to a gyroscope when losing its stability. . ." Once it "tipped its top toward me . . . then it increased its velocity . . . leaving a deposit of smoke-like vapor. . . circular in shape as though it had emitted from the outer ring of the UFO. . . . [It] then disappeared. . . ."

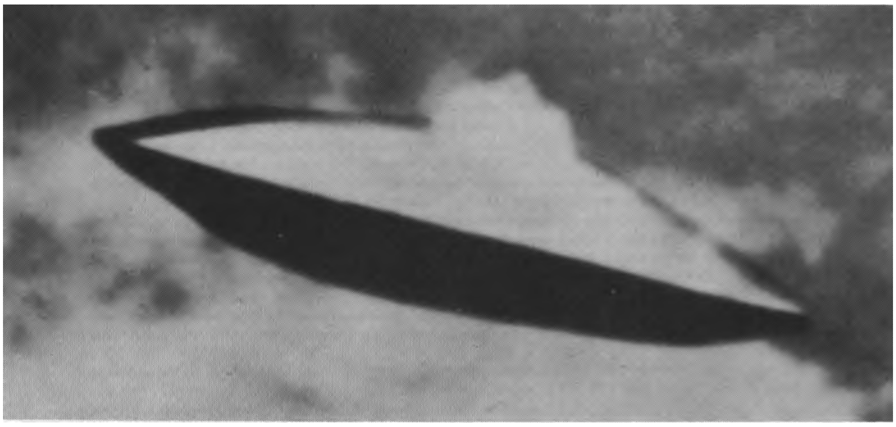
Heflin now drove quickly north for about a mile, passing under the Santa Ana freeway, and stopped where the smoke ring still hung in the air. Jumping out of the van, he took the fourth and last photo (next page). He then found he could radio in to his boss with no trouble. He later described the UFO as being about 30 feet in diameter, silver or metallic, and it made no noise.

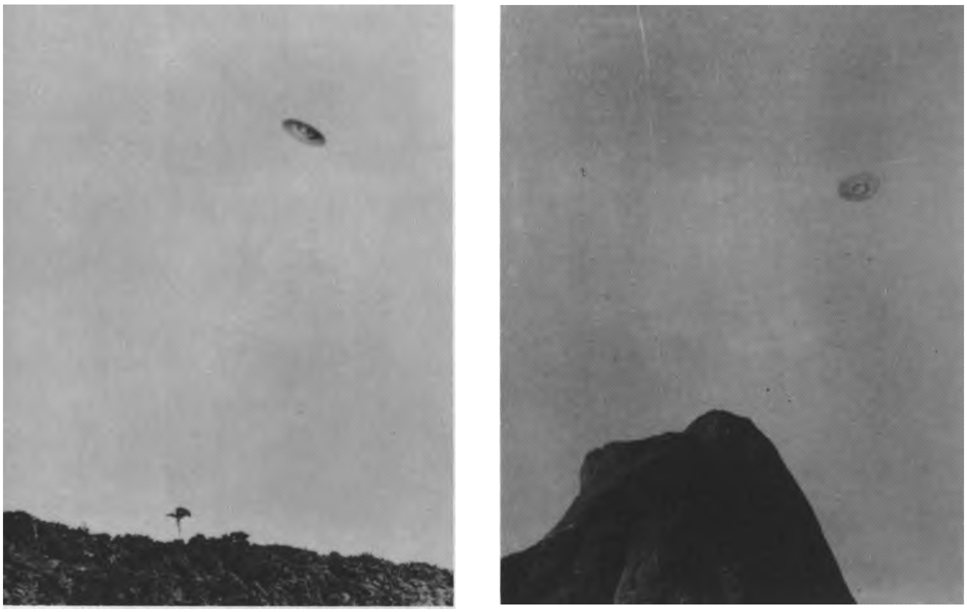
Although in 1969 the Condon Report (p. 168) said the case was of "little probative value" in "establishing the existence of extraordinary flying objects," it still held it to be "of exceptional interest because it is so well documented." This was certainly true. The Air Force, NICAP, the press, even the Marine Corps—all went over the site with a fine-tooth comb and repeatedly interviewed Heflin. The Air Force and NICAP conducted "tests" by suspending a model by thread and tossing a tray in the air and photographing them—with results that looked surprisingly like Heflin's photos. On the basis of this, Blue Book, true to form, classified the case as a "photographic hoax"—which NICAP immediately branded as "an insult to the intelligence of the public."

The big UFO flap year of 1952 was developing quickly by spring. In April, Project Blue Book received 82 UFO reports. In May, there were 79—one of which was this daylight disk photographed by Paul Eisenberg over San Francisco on the fourth. In July, the monthly total soared to 536—the all-time high for any month in Blue Book's eventual 21 years of existence. By year's end, 1501 reports had been turned in to the Air Force—topping even the flap years of 1957 and 1966. UFO skeptics and detractors often put the reason down to "anxiety" in the early '50s due to the cold war, fear of Soviet attack, McCarthyism, and the Korean conflict.

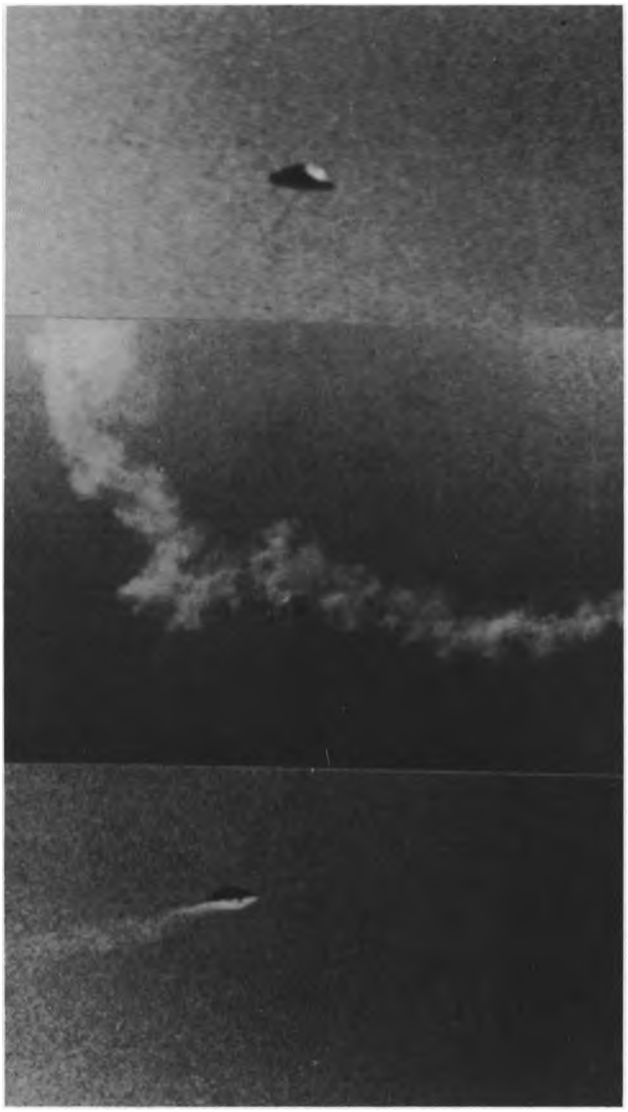


This UFO was photographed by a U.S. Marine Air Group photographer during the Korean conflict. For a few seconds, the UFO closely paced the Marine aircraft, then flew off at an estimated speed of 1000 miles an hour and disappeared. The photographer noted that a bright flash of radiation issued from the pilot-house portion of the UFO and "burned into" his film.

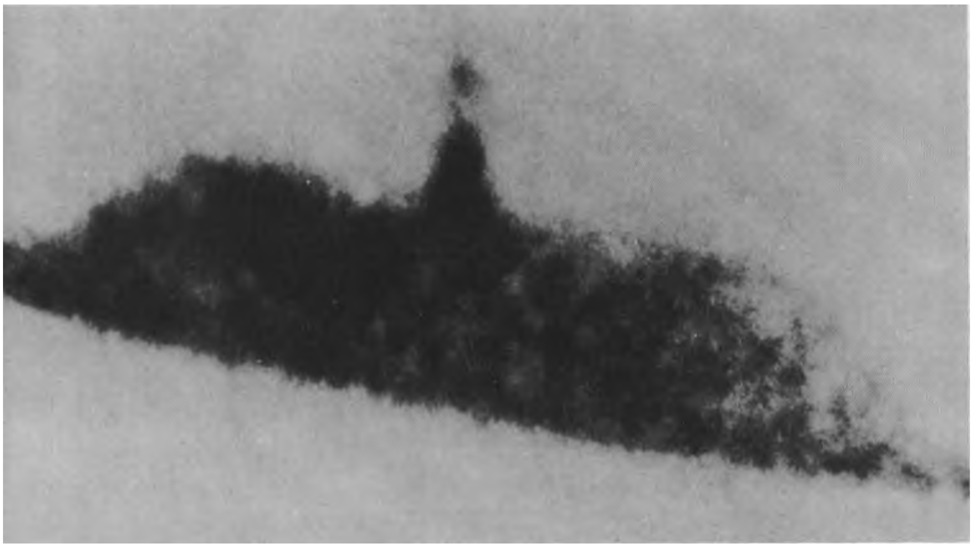




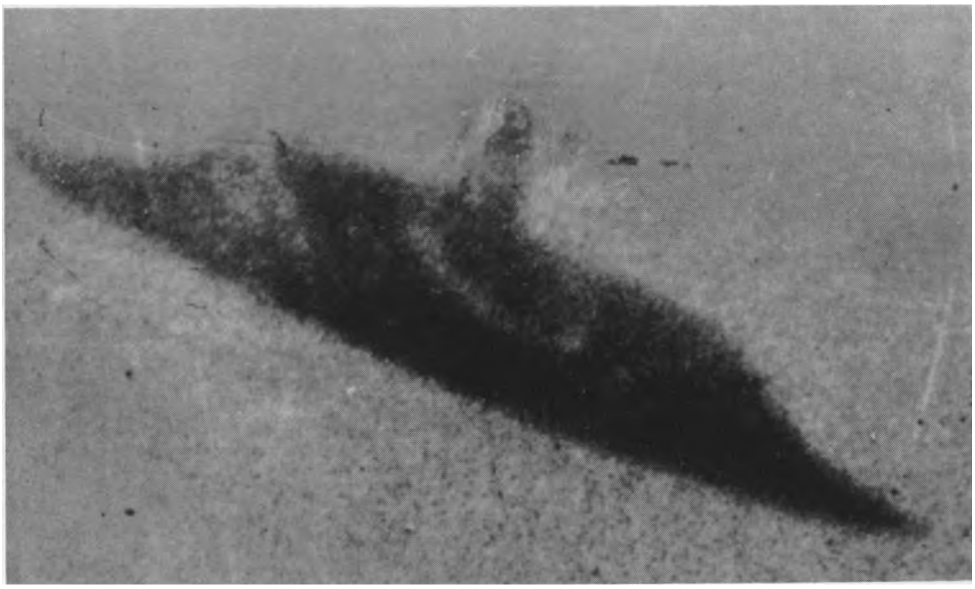
Two of five photos showing the famous Barra da Tijuca daylight disk. The Condon Report (pp. 168–9) said of it: "This case has been presented as one of the strongest and demonstrably 'genuine' flying saucer sightings.'' On the afternoon of May 7, 1952, at Barra da Tijuca, a Brazilian coastal town near Rio de Janeiro, a photographer and reporter for O *Cruzeiro* magazine were out on an assignment. At 4:30 P.M. the reporter saw a flying object approaching them at great speed. Thinking it at first an airplane, he was soon amazed to see that it was flying "sideways." "What the devil is that?" he shouted to the photographer. The latter grabbed his loaded camera and made five pictures in about a minute, thus obtaining a credible photographic sequence of the object. At left above is the second photo of the series; at right, the fifth; opposite, a blow-up of the second. After analysis by a local UFO expert and the Brazilian Air Force, a report was issued stating that the photos constituted "absolute evidence that the unconventional objects called UFOs . . . are real." However, Professor Donald Menzel (p. 91) pointed out a possible inconsistency: the disk in the second photo is clearly lit from the left, but the palm tree and foliage on the hillside seem to be lit from the right. Even so, concluded the final report, diagrams depicting distances and altitudes of the event demonstrated "the absolute impossibility of a hoax."

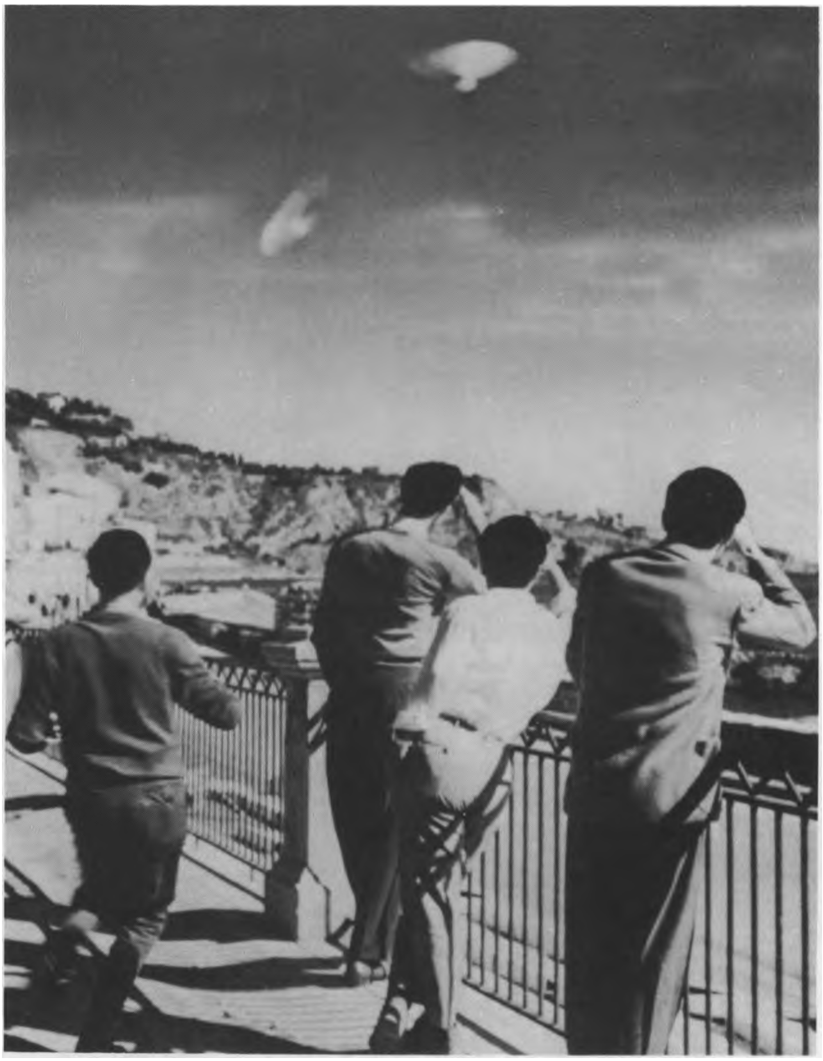


These three photos, taken in sequence from top to bottom, were made by a Belgian postman near Namur. He said the vapor trail in photo 2 was produced by the object, and that the self-luminosity seen in photo 3 occurred as it departed. The photos are believed authentic because in picture 2 the UFO is seen behind the vapor trail which, according to meteorologists, could not have formed lower than about 5000 feet. The postman said the object was much lower than that, thus bearing out his story that it created its own vapor. A professional astronomer said the negatives were not fakes.

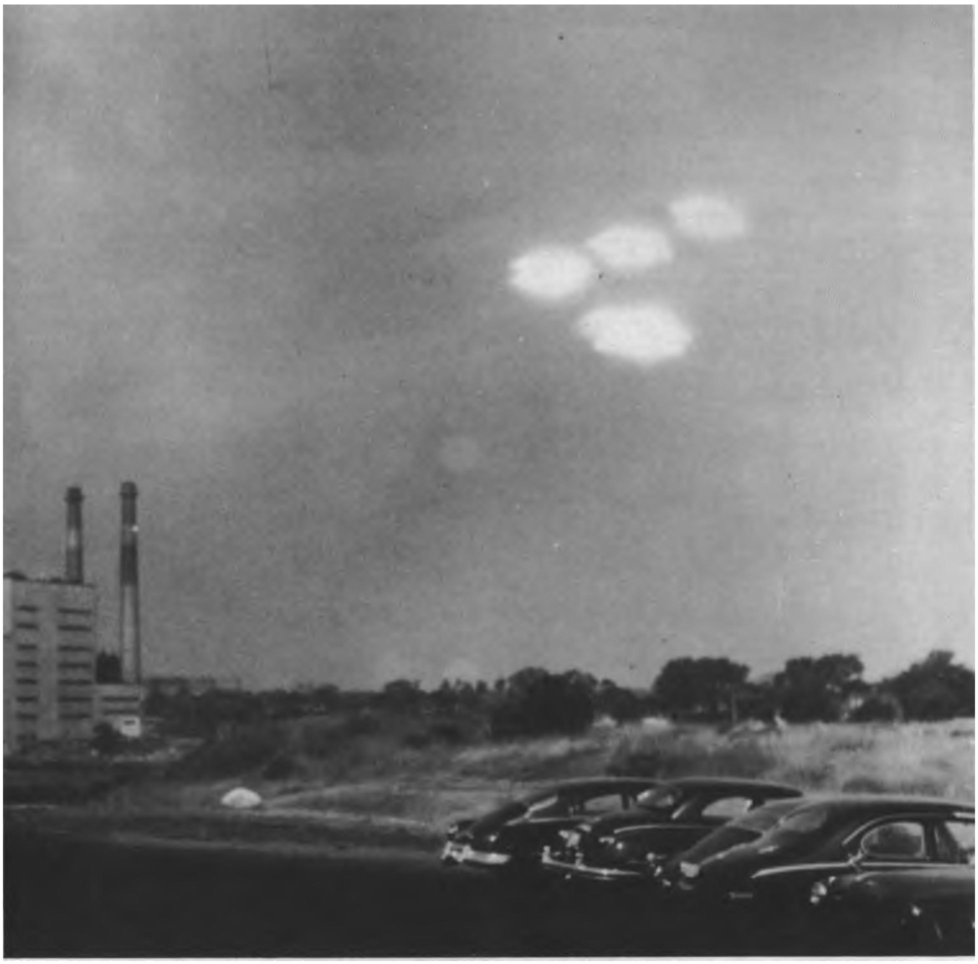


Above, a blow-up of Photo 1 of the McMinnville object taken by Paul Trent in 1950. Note the striking similarity between it and the picture below. Lower photo was taken from an airplane by a French Air Marshal over Rouen, France in March, 1954. RAF *Flying Review* said of it: ". . . one of the few [UFO photos] which seem authentic." Early daylight disks like these seemed to feature high, cone-shaped "conning towers" which, in later models, appear modified to low, rounded domes.

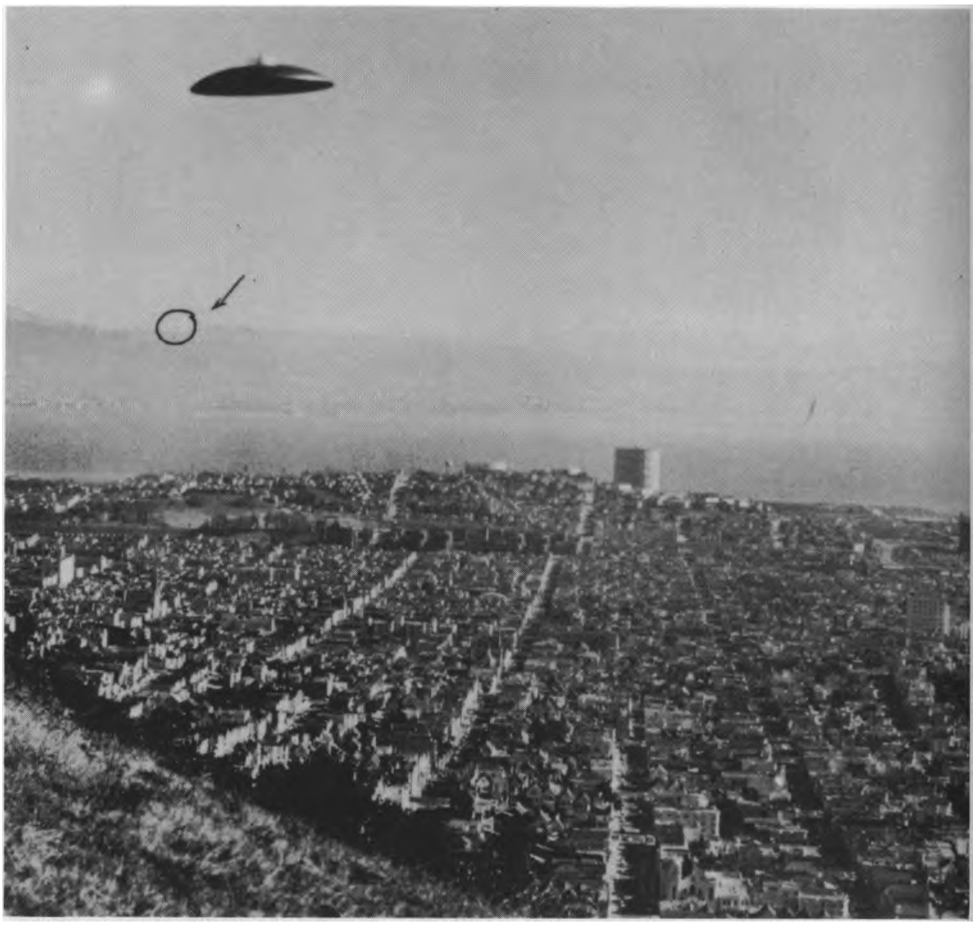




Spectators on a bridge at Taormina, Sicily watch two UFOs cavort over the city in the summer of 1954. The objects, estimated to be about 100 feet in diameter and silent, were filmed by a press photographer. Hundreds of people watched them until an Italian military jet arrived and they quickly disappeared.

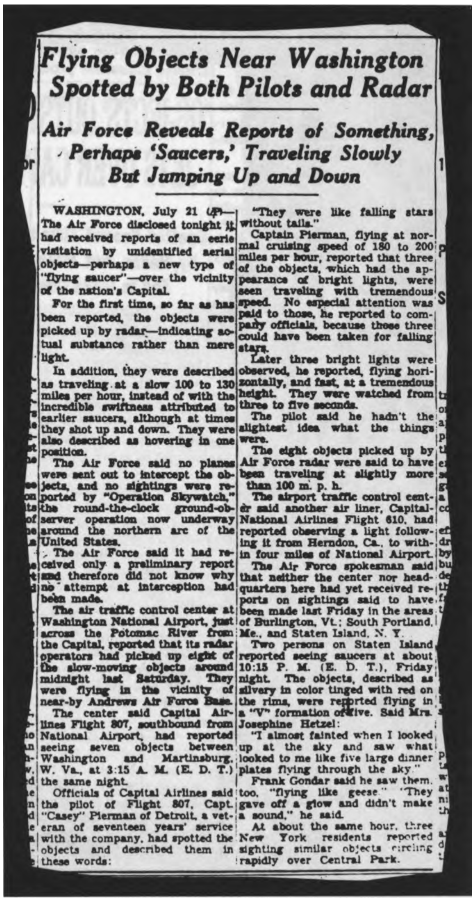


Reports poured into the Air Force daily during July—the biggest month for UFO sightings in Blue Book's history. Many were by military personnel. A Coast Guardsman named Shell Alpert, photographing through a barracks window at Salem, Massachusetts on July 16, 1952, caught these four brilliant ovoid white lights on film. An official letter in the files of the National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena (NICAP) states simply: ". . . it has never been determined what caused the phenomenal lights. . . ." But the years progressed and the case was investigated more thoroughly. Photo experts now believe the "UFOs" represent light reflections from an interior source—probably the ceiling lights playing on the window through which the photo was taken.



This striking photograph of a UFO was taken by Mr. Joe Kerska from the south side of San Francisco's Twin Peaks facing east on October 10, 1956. Presumably a second UFO can be seen in the distance indicated by the arrow. Mr. Kerska was "set up" at the time to take an ordinary photo of the city when the object hove into view at about 12:30 P.M. Note that it bears a good resemblance to the photo taken by a Marine Corps photographer on p. 50. The National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena (NICAP) considered the photo "dubious" because a small model could have been thrown in the air and photographed.

The UFO sightings over Washington, D.C. on two succeeding weekends in July, 1952 were the most sensational since the Mantell tragedy of 1948. They marked the zenith point of the 1952 flap. On July 19–20 between 11:40 P.M. and 3:00 A.M. radar operators at Washington National Airport reported apparent UFO "targets" on their scopes. At first the UFOs moved slowly, between 100 and 130 miles per hour, but then they were observed on the scopes to zoom away at "fantastic speeds." Radarmen at nearby Andrews Air Force Base in Maryland also reported such targets. Many people on the ground in the Washington area were seeing eerie lights too—sometimes over the restricted air lanes above the Capitol Building and the White House. Contrary to the front page New *York Times* story at right, the Air Force *did* scramble two F-94 jet fighters to intercept the UFOs. When they arrived, however, the "targets" had vanished from the radar screens and the pilots never did see them. Next day, "flying saucer" stories were all over Washington.



Flying Objects Near Washington Spotted by Both Pilots and Radar

Air Force Reveals Reports of Something, Perhaps 'Saucers,' Traveling Slowly But Jumping Up and Down

WASHINGTON, July 21 (UP)—The Air Force disclosed tonight it had received reports of an eerie visitation by unidentified aerial objects—perhaps a new type of "flying saucer"—over the vicinity of the nation's Capital.

For the first time, so far as has been reported, the objects were picked up by radar—indicating actual substance rather than mere light.

In addition, they were described as traveling at a slow 100 to 130 miles per hour, instead of with the incredible swiftness attributed to earlier saucers, although at times they shot up and down. They were also described as hovering in one position.

The Air Force said no planes were sent out to intercept the objects, and no sightings were reported by "Operation Skywatch," the round-the-clock ground-observer operation now underway around the northern arc of the United States.

The Air Force said it had received only a preliminary report and therefore did not know why no attempt at interception had been made.

The air traffic control center at Washington National Airport, just across the Potomac River from the Capital, reported that its radar operators had picked up eight of the slow-moving objects around midnight last Saturday. They were flying in the vicinity of near-by Andrews Air Force Base.

The center said Capital Airlines Flight 807, southbound from National Airport, had reported seeing seven objects between Washington and Martinsburg, W. Va., at 3:15 A. M. (E. D. T.) the same night.

Officials of Capital Airlines said the pilot of Flight 807, Capt. "Casey" Pierman of Detroit, a veteran of seventeen years' service with the company, had spotted the objects and described them in these words:

"They were like falling stars without tails."

Captain Pierman, flying at normal cruising speed of 180 to 200 miles per hour, reported that three of the objects, which had the appearance of bright lights, were seen traveling with tremendous speed. No especial attention was paid to those, he reported to company officials, because those three could have been taken for falling stars.

Later three bright lights were observed, he reported, flying horizontally, and fast, at a tremendous height. They were watched from three to five seconds.

The pilot said he hadn't the slightest idea what the things were.

The eight objects picked up by Air Force radar were said to have been traveling at slightly more than 100 m. p. h.

The airport traffic control center said another air liner, Capital-National Airlines Flight 610, had reported observing a light following it from Herndon, Ca., to within four miles of National Airport.

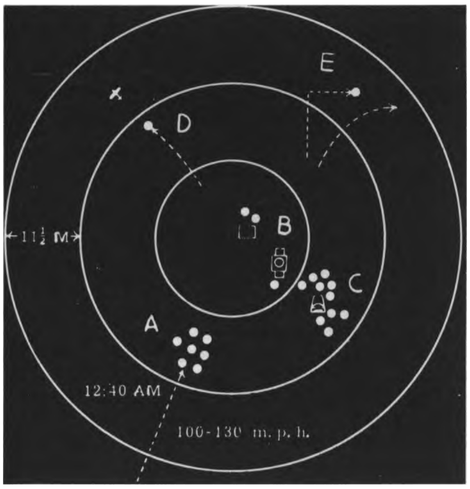
The Air Force spokesman said that neither the center nor headquarters here had yet received reports on sightings said to have been made last Friday in the areas of Burlington, Vt.; South Portland, Me., and Staten Island, N. Y.

Two persons on Staten Island reported seeing saucers at about 10:15 P. M. (E. D. T.), Friday night. The objects, described as silvery in color tinged with red on the rims, were reported flying in a "V" formation of five. Said Mrs. Josephine Hetzel:

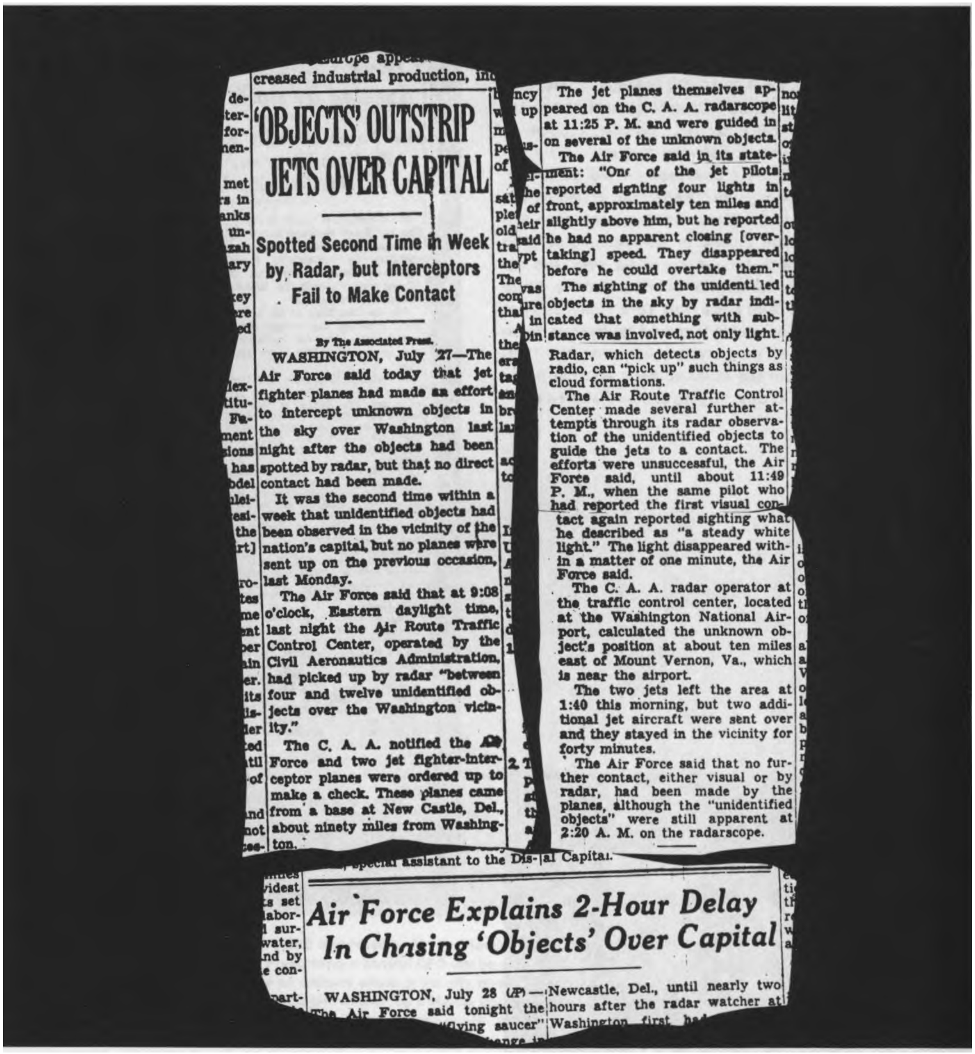
"I almost fainted when I looked up at the sky and saw what looked to me like five large dinner plates flying through the sky."

Frank Gondar said he saw them, too, "flying like geese." "They gave off a glow and didn't make a sound," he said.

At about the same hour, three New York residents reported sighting similar objects circling rapidly over Central Park.



Antics of the July 20 UFOs over Washington can be traced on this diagram of a radar scope. At A, 7 objects approach the Nation's capital from the south. At B, some are seen over the White House and Capitol. At C, they appear over Andrews Air Force Base. At D, one UFO tracks an airliner. At E, one is seen to make a sharp right-angular turn.



creased industrial production, in

'OBJECTS' OUTSTRIP JETS OVER CAPITAL

Spotted Second Time in Week by Radar, but Interceptors Fail to Make Contact

By The Associated Press.

WASHINGTON, July 27—The Air Force said today that jet fighter planes had made an effort to intercept unknown objects in the sky over Washington last night after the objects had been spotted by radar, but that no direct contact had been made.

It was the second time within a week that unidentified objects had been observed in the vicinity of the nation's capital, but no planes were sent up on the previous occasion, last Monday.

The Air Force said that at 9:08 o'clock, Eastern daylight time, last night the Air Route Traffic Control Center, operated by the Civil Aeronautics Administration, had picked up by radar "between four and twelve unidentified objects over the Washington vicinity."

The C. A. A. notified the Air Force and two jet fighter-interceptor planes were ordered up to make a check. These planes came from a base at New Castle, Del., about ninety miles from Washington.

The jet planes themselves appeared on the C. A. A. radarscope at 11:25 P. M. and were guided in on several of the unknown objects.

The Air Force said in its statement: "One of the jet pilots reported sighting four lights in front, approximately ten miles and slightly above him, but he reported he had no apparent closing [overtaking] speed. They disappeared before he could overtake them."

The sighting of the unidentified objects in the sky by radar indicated that something with substance was involved, not only light. Radar, which detects objects by radio, can "pick up" such things as cloud formations.

The Air Route Traffic Control Center made several further attempts through its radar observation of the unidentified objects to guide the jets to a contact. The efforts were unsuccessful, the Air Force said, until about 11:49 P. M., when the same pilot who had reported the first visual contact again reported sighting what he described as "a steady white light." The light disappeared within a matter of one minute, the Air Force said.

The C. A. A. radar operator at the traffic control center, located at the Washington National Airport, calculated the unknown object's position at about ten miles east of Mount Vernon, Va., which is near the airport.

The two jets left the area at 1:40 this morning, but two additional jet aircraft were sent over and they stayed in the vicinity for forty minutes.

The Air Force said that no further contact, either visual or by radar, had been made by the planes, although the "unidentified objects" were still apparent at 2:20 A. M. on the radarscope.

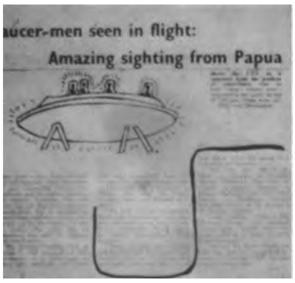
special assistant to the Dis- al Capital.

Air Force Explains 2-Hour Delay In Chasing 'Objects' Over Capital

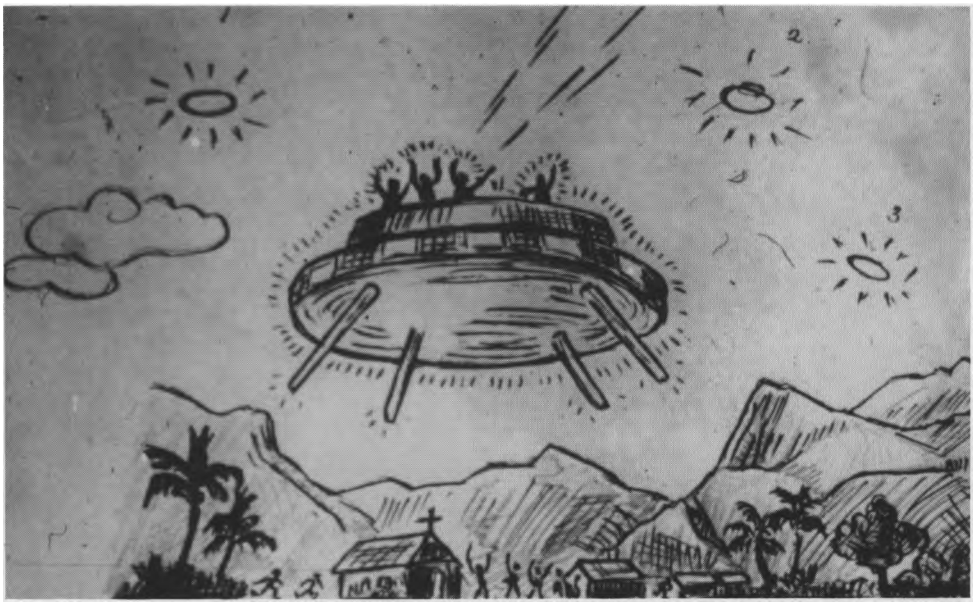
WASHINGTON, July 28 (AP)—The Air Force said tonight the "flying saucer"

Newcastle, Del., until nearly two hours after the radar watcher at Washington first ha

The UFO scare In Washington, D.C. quieted down—until the following weekend. Then, at 10:30 pm on July 26, National Airport radar screens again picked up more mysterious targets and started tracking them. Air Force officials were called to the airport and all passenger planes approaching Washington were rerouted to other airports. This time jets were Immediately ordered into the air to Intercept the UFOs. (Note In the story above that the Air Force still denies sending up fighters the previous weekend.) The jet pilots could only see lights In the sky. Whenever they tried to overtake them for a closer look, the UFOs darted off at great speed. Running low on fuel, the jets soon gave up the chase and returned to base. In the classification system of Dr. Hynek (p. 70), the Washington UFOs would qualify as a "radar-visual" case, since the radar sightings were supported by visual sightings of witnesses on the ground.



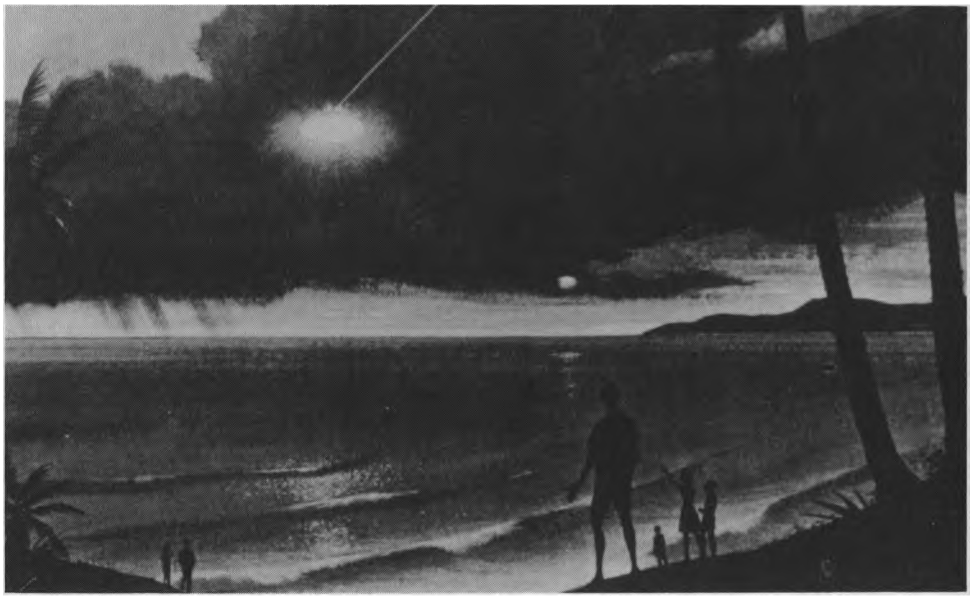
aucer-men seen in flight:
Amazing sighting from Papua



The last classic UFO sighting of the '50s was the Father Gill case in Papua New Guinea. It has been called one of ufology's best close encounters of the third kind, rivaled perhaps only by the Zamora case (p. 114). The famous sightings occurred at Boianai on June 26–27 where Father William B. Gill, an Australian Anglican priest, was doing missionary work. For months prior to this, odd flying objects had been sighted in the skies over New Guinea, but Gill took little stock in UFO tales. In fact, on the very day of his own historic sighting, he wrote a skeptical letter to a colleague about "flying saucers" and signed it "Doubting William." At dusk that evening of the 26th, at 6:45, Gill first noticed a bright light through the front door of his mission house. He strolled out on the porch to get a better look through the low patchy clouds, and summoned some of his islander pupils to watch with him. Soon 38 persons had gathered to stare in amazement as a large disk-shaped object with four legs hovered overhead. Gill's later account reads:

> As we watched it, men came out from this object and appeared on top of it, on what appeared to be a deck. . . . There were four men in all. . . . we noted the various times the men appeared. And then later on all those witnesses who were quite sure that our records were right, and that they agreed [they] saw the men at the same time that I did, were able to sign their names as witnesses of what we assumed to be human activity or beings . . . on the object. . . .

At 7:30 the object was lost from view in the clouds, but later other smaller disks arrived which Gill believed might be satel-



lites from the large object—or "mother ship" as the priest thought of it. About 11:00 all objects disappeared in the overcast sky. The sighting had lasted over four hours. The next night at 6:02 the UFOs and their occupants returned and, in Gill's words:

> We watched figures appear on top—four of them—there was no doubt that they were human. . . . Two smaller UFOs were seen at the same time. . . . On the large one, two of the figures seemed to be doing something in the center of the deck . . . as though adjusting or setting up something. One figure seemed to be standing, looking down on us. I stretched my arm above my head and waved. To our surprise, the figure did the same . . . and [presently] all four of the beings seemed to wave back. . . .

Although next evening the UFOs showed up for the last time, no occupants were visible. Gill had sketches made from eyewitness accounts (opposite) of the waving incident; APRO (Aerial Phenomena Research Organization) artist Norm Duke made the one above. When the Air Attaché in Australia sent in its report to Blue Book, the famous sighting was labeled "stars and planets" because Venus had occasionally been visible on those nights! P.S.—when Gill wrote again to his colleague, he signed himself "Believing Bill."

CHAPTER 11

Marconi’s Secret Saucer Base

The subject of man-made UFOs would not be complete without mentioning the popular belief in Italy and South America that Marconi and his followers built a secret manufacturing city in South America. Guglielmo Marconi (1874–1937), was a brilliant scientist, a friend of Nikola Tesla, and a mysterious figure.

In the esoteric writing of the Latin countries, Marconi has achieved a near legendary status, much as Tesla has recently in the United States. But most Tesla students are unaware that Marconi was supposed to have founded a secret high-tech city in the remote southern jungles of Venezuela.

The great Italian scientist Guglielmo Marconi was a former student of Tesla’s. Marconi studied radio transmission theory with Tesla and made his first radio transmission in 1895. Marconi was fascinated by the transmission of power, and in 1896, after receiving a British patent, sent a signal nine miles across the Bristol Channel. In 1899 he successfully set up a wireless station to communicate with a French station 31 miles across the English Channel.

It was thought that the curve of the earth’s surface would limit radio transmission to 200 miles at the most. When, on December 11, 1901, Marconi transmitted a signal from Poldhu, Cornwall, to St. John’s Newfoundland, 2,000 miles away, he created a major sensation. For this Marconi replaced the wire receiver with a coherer, a glass tube filled with iron filings, which could conduct radio waves. At the time there was no scientific explanation for this phenomena of long-distance transmission, and it was postulated that there was a layer in the upper atmosphere—the ionosphere—which reflected back electromagnetic waves.

MARCONI THE MYSTERIOUS

Marconi was the son of a wealthy Italian landowner and an Irish mother. When his first transmission in 1895 did not interest Italian authorities, he went to Britain. The Marconi Wireless Telegraph Company was formed in London in 1896 and Marconi made millions off his inventions.

Marconi and Tesla are both given credit for the invention of the radio. Marconi's historical radio transmission utilized a Heinrich Hertz spark arrester, a Popov antenna, and an Edouard Bramely coherer for his simple device that was to go on to become the modern radio.

Marconi was given the Noble Prize for Physics in 1909 jointly with Karl Ferdinand Braun, who made important modification which considerably increased the range of the first Marconi transmitters.

Like Tesla, Marconi was a mysterious man in his later years, and was known to perform experiments, including anti-gravity experiments, aboard his yacht *Electra.* Marconi's yacht was a floating super-laboratory from which he sent signals into space and lit lights in Australia in 1930. He did this with the aid of an Italian physicist named Landini by sending wave train signals through the earth, much as Tesla had done in Colorado Springs.

In June of 1936 Marconi demonstrated to Italian Fascist dictator Benito Mussolini a wave gun device that could be used as a defensive weapon. In the 1930s such devices were popularized as "death rays" as in a Boris Karloff film of the same name. Marconi demonstrated the ray on a busy highway north of Milan one afternoon. Mussolini had asked his wife Rachele to also be on the highway at precisely 3:30 in the afternoon. Marconi's device caused the electrical systems in all the cars, including Rachele's, to malfunction for half an hour, while her chauffeur and other motorists checked their fuel pumps and spark plugs. At 3:35 all the cars were able to start again. Rachele Mussolini later published this account in her autobiography.

Mussolini was quite pleased with Marconi’s paralyzing rays, however it is said that Pope Pius XI learned about the device he took steps to have Mussolini stop Marconi’s research. According to Marconi’s followers, Marconi then took his yacht to South America in 1937, after faking his own death.

THE SECRET CITY IN SOUTH AMERICA

A number of European scientists were said to have gone with Marconi, including Landini. In the 1937, the enigmatic Italian physicist and alchemist Fulcanelli warned European physicists of the grave dangers of atomic weapons and then mysteriously vanished a few years later. He is believed to have joined Marconi’s secret group in South America.

Ninety-eight scientists were said to have gone to South America where they built a city in an extinct volcanic cater in the southern jungles of Venezuela. In their secret city, financed by the great wealth they had created during their lives, they continued Marconi’s work on solar energy, cosmic energy and anti-gravity. They worked secretly and apart from the world’s nations, building free-energy motors and ultimately discoid aircraft with a form of gyroscopic anti-gravity. The community is said to be dedicated to universal peace and the common good of all mankind. Believing the rest of the world to be under the control of energy companies, multinational bankers, and the military-industrial complex, they have remained isolated from the rest of the world, working subversively to foster peace and a clean, ecological technology on the world.

We have information on this astonishing high-tech city from a number of sources. In the South America the story is a common subject among certain metaphysical groups. Says the French writer Robert Charroux in his book *The Mysteries of the Andes,* (1974, 1977, Avon Books) “. . . the Ciudad Subterranean de los Andes, is discussed in private from Caracas to Santiago.” Charroux goes on to tell the story of Marconi and his secret city, plus the story of a Mexican journalist named Mario Rojas Avendaro who investigated the *Ciudad Subterranean de los Andes* (Underground City of the Andes) and concluded that it was a true story. Avendaro was contacted by man named Nacisso Genovese, who had been a student of Marconi’s and was a physics teacher at a High School in Baja California, Mexico.

Genovese was an Italian by origin and claimed to have lived for many years in the Ciudad Subterranean de los Andes. Sometime in the late 1950s he wrote an obscure book entitled *My Trip To Mars.*

Though the book was never published in English, it did appear in various Spanish, Portuguese and Italian editions.

"MY TRIP TO MARS"

Genovese claimed that the city had been built with large financial resources, was underground, and had better research facilities than any other research facility in the world (at that time, at least). By 1946 the city already using a powerful collector of cosmic energy, the essential component of all matter, according to Marconi's theories, many of which he had derived from Tesla.

"In 1952," according to Genovese, "we travelled above all the seas and continents in a craft whose energy supply was continuous and practical inexhaustible. It reached a speed of half a million miles an hour and withstood enormous pressures, near the limit of resistance of the alloys that composed it. The problem was to slow it down at just the right time."

According to Genovese, the city is located at the bottom of a crater, is mostly underground and is entirely self-sufficient. The 13,000 foot extinct volcano, high in the jungle mountains of the Amazon, is covered in thick vegetation and hundreds of miles from any roads.

The French author Charroux expressed surprise and disbelief at the statement that the city was on a jungle covered mountain 13,000 feet high. Yet the eastern side of Andean cordillera has many such mountains, from Venezuela to Bolivia, spanning thousands of miles. Several such cities, and mountains, could exist in this vast, unexplored, and perpetually cloud-covered region.

But a secret city in a jungle crater was the least of the claims. Genovese claimed that flights to the Moon and Mars were made in their "flying saucers." He claimed that once the technology had been conquered, it was relatively simple to make the trip to the Moon (a few hours) or Mars (several days). Genovese does not mention pyramids or what they did on Mars. Perhaps they created a Martian base in one of the ancient, sand-blown pyramids of the Cydonia Region.

There have been many reports of UFOs in South America, especially along the edge of the mountainous jungles of the eastern Andes, from Bolivia to Venezuela. Is it possible that some of these UFOs are anti-gravity craft from the *Ciudad Subterranean de los Andes?*

CHAPTER 12

Summary of the Claims & Evidence

In the last ten years, more and more information has been coming forth in the UFO fields on the German genesis of Anti-Gravity craft. Magazine articles, video documentaries and books have appeared with regularity.

The claims can be briefly summarized in the next few pages. Secret societies such as the Thule Gesllschaft are often credited with leading the German Military Industrial Complex in its effort to master the mysterious energy which they called “Vril.”

Various forms of technology were combined, including the vortex turbines of Victor Schauberger, Hans Kohler’s converter device, and so-called Kohler tachyon magneto-gravitic drive, or “Thule tachyonator.” The Germans may have also constructed Mercury Plasma Gyros—an electrified mercury vapor in a closed gyro system. Christof Friedrich in his fringe-Nazi books *Secret Nazi Polar Expeditions* and *UFOs Nazi Secret Weapon?* mentions U-859, an ill-fated submarine that left Germany in April of 1944 and was sunk off the Straits of Malakka in Indonesia. The submarine had a cargo of mercury—33 tons! Where was this odd-ball cargo going at the time of the sinking of the submarine? Friedrich mentions that the cargo was salvaged 30 years later and suggests that the cargo was destined for Antarctica to be used as an integral part of the new technology being developed in secret Nazi bases there.

After various experimental prototypes, including the rocket powered Miethe and Schriever discs, production began on the small ten meter diameter interceptor-fighters of the Vril series. The larger Haunibu series began with the 25 meter Haunibu 1 & 2. These craft had canons mounted underneath and were designed as "tank killers."

The 74 meter Haunibu-3, designed as an anti-shipping craft for use over long ocean distances, was actually built and tested. It had inflatable rubber cushions on the underside for landing. The 300 meter diameter Haunibu-4 was on the design board for interplanetary travel. It was disc shaped and could also carry several of the smaller Vril craft. Also reportedly in the design stage was an immense 330 meter cigar-shaped battleship.

Towards the end of the war, the Germans had developed interplanetary craft with no moving parts which were capable of going to the Moon or even Mars. Some researchers, in videos and articles, have claimed the Germans actually did this either at the end of the war or shortly afterward from their Antarctic Bases—a fantastic claim!

Some sources claim that a "Last Battalion" of German solders escaped to Antarctica and South America via submarine in the last days of WW II. It is possible that the Germans may have high-tech super cities in the remote jungles of South America as well.

A number of military historians, such as Col. Howard Buechner, author of *Secrets of the Holy Lance* and *Hitler's Ashes,* maintain that the Germans had already created bases in Queen Maud Land, opposite South Africa during the war.

Afterward, German U-Boats, in some reports as many as 100, took important scientists, aviators, and politicians to the final fortress of Nazi Germany. Two of these U-boats surrendered in Argentina three months after the war. In 1947, the U.S. Navy invaded Antarctica, with Admiral Byrd in command. Byrd flew all over Antarctica, except for the German area known as New Schwabenland. On one flight Byrd's instruments went haywire and his entire squadron returned to their base via land navigation. It is often claimed that several jets from the four aircraft carriers which participated in Byrd's invasion were shot down by discoid craft. The Navy retreated and did not return until 1957. This time with the support of France, Britain, and Russia.

Other Nazi bases are presumed to have existed in isolated areas of South America, probably in mountain jungle locations, and possibly in the fjord area of southern Chile.

According to the book, *Chronicle of Akakor,* first published in German by the journalist Karl Brugger, a German battalion had taken refuge in an underground city on the borders of Brazil and Peru. Brugger, a German journalist who lived in Manaus, was assassinated in the Rio de Janeiro suburb of Ipanema in 1981. His guide, Tatunca Nara, went on to become Jacques Cousteau's guide on the upper Amazon. In fact, photographs of Tatunca Nara appear in Cousteau's large coffee-table book of color photographs called *Cousteau's Amazon Journey.* (For more information on Tatunca Nara, Karl Brugger, underground cities and Germans in South America, see *Lost Cities & Ancient Mysteries of South America*.)

Since World War II South America has had a literal UFO epidemic. Unlike North America or Europe, where the reality of UFOs is questioned by most of the populace and academia, UFOs in South America are a virtually accepted fact of reality. Are we believe the so-called UFO experts who tell us that all of the craft are "extraterrestrial" in nature?

Are we to believe that extraterrestrial craft come light-years through space to our planet but are unable to fly successfully across New Mexico because ordinary radar causes them to crash?

Are we to believe that extraterrestrials are continually modifying their craft as the advances in technology on their planet(s) over the past fifty years? Stan Deyo, the author of *The Cosmic Conspiracy,* points out that flying saucers from the 50s look exactly like a 50s-type of craft, while flying saucers of the 80s look like 80s type craft! Just as an automobile built in the last ten years looks more sleek, stylish and modern to an automobile from the early 50s, so have flying saucers become more stylish, sleek and "modern." Are we expected to believe that extraterrestrials are still defining the models, styles and technology of their "spacecraft"?

Why should free-energy, anti-gravity and fantastic technology be kept from the mass population? Why would the CIA and government cover-up the fact that many Nazi officers and scientists illegally came to the USA to create our modern intelligence agencies, rocket and space industries. The military industrial complex, heavily dependent on oil company support, promotes expensive oil-based transportation and weapons systems.

If our government had electro-gravitic flying discs, would they still launch the rocket-powered space-shuttle into space and announce it as our only "space-alternative"? The answer, apparently, is yes.

In 1960 Beat writer Jack Kerouac appeared on Jack Parr's Tonight Show and said the Cold War between the Soviet Union and the United States was a hoax. Thirty years later journalists were still laughing at Jack Kerouac and his foolish statement. But was it foolish? With the sudden collapse of the Soviet Union, the "Evil Empire" that had to be stopped at all cost, no matter how much money we poured into the Military, was now our "ally."

The evil Soviet Superpower was no more and we would spend even more money bailing our European friend out and keeping "democracy alive" in Russia. Maybe the Cold War and the Superpower Arms Race was a hoax. One can not have a trillion-dollar arms race by one's self. Russia, though a backward country, was still a major military power, and the "Communist" ideology fear could be easily exploited to manipulate public opinion, just as the Nazis had in Germany.

Christopher Simpson in his excellent book, *Blowback,* reveals convincingly how the brilliant S.S. General Reinhard Gehlen masterminded the absorption of the S.S. into the American O.S.S., thus creating the C.I.A. Gehlen further promoted the false belief that the Red Army was preparing to take over all of Western Europe by overestimating troop strength and moral

Albert Einstein's biographers have mused over the 1944 letter which Einstein sent to President Harry Truman suggesting the creation of an American-Russian state that would control the world. While Einstein's biographers have dismissed this letter as one of the eccentricities that Einstein was famous for, the creation of a false Cold War and a real Arms Race between America and Russia did effectively control the world.

The concept that the Russian and Americans have been working together ever since WW II is also proposed in the well-known "Alternative 3 scenario." This was a fictionalized television documentary called *Alternative 3* shown on British television in 1978 and followed by a mass-market paperback. Both the video and the book have achieved a literal cult following in the UFO and conspiracy field.

The Alternative 3 scenario can be quickly summed up to be that the Cold War is a hoax, and the Americans and Russians are secretly working together. Both the Americans and Russians, (as well as other governments such as the British and French) are in possession of flying saucer devices that was part of the technology inherited from captured German scientists. Underground factories and storage facilities for these craft were then built all over the world. Discoid anti-gravity craft then traveled all over the world and allegedly to the Moon and Mars.

Alternative 3 also claimed that scientists were disappearing and being sent to secret bases on the Moon and then eventually to Mars. Jim Keith in his excellent investigation of the Alternative 3 thesis, *Casebook on Alternative 3,* shows how, after the documentary and book appeared, there was the strange case of a number of murdered scientists in Britain. Keith documents that, beginning in 1985 and continuing through 1989, many British scientists who worked on the Strategic Defense Initiative (also known as SDI or Star Wars) and related projects, were murdered or committed sudden, questionable "suicides." Of the 30 or so mysterious murders listed in Keith's book, nearly half worked for or were associated with Marconi Defense Systems. In light of Marconi's alleged secret city, the murders of Marconi employees take on a more important aspect. Perhaps the publicly held Marconi company still had some ties with Marconi's renegade base in South America, and the "ruling conspiracy" decided to eliminate a certain segment of the British scientific community.

What becomes clear to researchers into man-made UFOs and early German discoid craft is that this technology is real, "Above Top Secret," and is possessed by various groups on this planet today. Not only are the Americans and British said to have this technology but so do such countries as Russia, China, France, Italy, Israel, and Chile. Private corporations, individuals, and agencies are also claimed to possess "craft."

Now add to this select group of official "controllers" on this planet the possible existence of renegade Nazi groups who once occupied underground Antarctic Bases and Marconi's secret city of ethical scientist-philosophers and we have a grab-bag of unusual aircraft in our skies. If actual extraterrestrials are visiting the earth for soil samples or abductees, then we have an almost holistic approach to the UFO problem.

One thing is clear in the Man-Made UFO hypothesis: our government, and apparently the other governments of the world, are lying to us. They have lied to us about certain events concerning WWII and they have lied to us about their secret activities since the war.

Our government, Hollywood, and the media have conditioned us
to the prejudice that amazing technology can only be from

extraterrestrials visiting our planet, but clearly this is only a partial explanation at best. The chilling reality of a past Nazi-UFO connection cannot be denied. To the scientist-philosopher who seeks knowledge . . . sometimes truth is stranger than fiction.

THE THESIS OF THIS BOOK:

1. That many reported UFOs are actual "nuts & bolts" craft made secretly on earth by humans.

2. Although what would be termed "UFOs" by modern researchers has most definitely occurred prior to World War II, we consider this period the starting period of the modern age of UFO phenomena.

3. Various alternative forms of energy generators were invented and researched before the war. including Gyroscopic, Vortex and other "Anti-Gravity" devices.

4. Actual discoid and tubular craft were built and tested towards the end of WW II.

5. As the Allied Powers closed in on Germany, the Third Reich used unorthodox anti-aircraft measures such as "Foo-Fighters" and other experimental craft.

6. A secret deal was made with elements of the Third Reich scientific and intelligence establishment to absorb their technology, officers, and principle scientists. This was largely done through Operation Paperclip and Rheinhard Gehlen.

7. Some German divisions removed themselves to South America and Antarctica in the few months and weeks before the end of the war.

8. The Americans, British, and Russians gained captured scientists and Space Technology, including rocket technology and discoid craft.

9. The Americans, British and Russians began to build test discoid aircraft in the late 40s and 50s. Isolated German pockets in South America have intense UFO activity. Antarctic bases are probably vacated or captured by Americans and Russians. Today, a seven-story or more underground base run jointly by America and Russia exists at the South Pole.

10. UFOs are a Top Secret topic to all governments because they herald in the forbidden topics of Suppressed Technology, Oil Company Conspiracies and Energy Control, Extraterrestrials, Mind Control, and behind-the-scenes workings of the "Secret Government."

BIBLIOGRAPHY

1. *Intercettateli Senza Sparare,* Renato Vesco, 1968, Mursia S.A. Milan, Italy.

2. *Intercept But Don't Shoot.* Renato Vesco, 1971, Grove Press, New York.

3. *Life Beyond Planet Earth?,* Janet & Colin Bord, 1991, Grafton Publishers, London.

4. *Somebody Else Is On the Moon.* George Leonard, 1976, Pocket Books, New York.

5. *Our Mysterious Spaceship Moon.* Don Wilson, 1975, Dell Publishing, New York.

6. *Secrets of Our Spaceship Moon,* Don Wilson, 1979, Dell Publishing, New York.

7. *We Discovered Alien Bases On the Moon.* Fred Steckling, 1981, GAF Publishers, Los Angeles.

8. *The UFO Encyclopedia,* compiled by John Spencer, 1991, Avon Books, New York.

9. *UFOs, Nazi Secret Weapon?.* Mattern & Feidrich, 1974, Samisdat Publishers, Toronto.

10. *UFOs. Unbekanntes Flugobjeckt?,* Matten, 1970?, Germany.

11. *Germany's Antarctic Claim: Secret NAZI Polar Expeditions,* Christof Friedrich, 1979, Samisda Publishers, Toronto.

12. *Genesis,* W. A. Harbinson, 1980, Dell Publishing, New York.

13. A *History of Polar* Exploration. Laurence Kirwan, 1962, Penguin Books, Haronds Worth.

14. *Arktos.* Joscelyn Godwin, 1993, Phanes Press, Grand Rapids, Michigan.

15. *German Jet Genesis.* David Masters, 1982, Jane's Publications, London.

16. *Living Water: Victor Schauberger & the Secrets of Natural Energy,* Olof Alexandersson, 1976, (1982 for the English Edition), Gateway Books, Bath, England.

17. *The Riddle of the Flying Saucers,* Gerald Heard, 1950, Carroll & Nicholson, London.

18. *Flying Saucers Have Landed,* Desmond Leslie & George Adamski, 1953, Neville Spearman, London.

19. *Inside the Spaceships,* George Adamski, 1955, Neville Spearman, London.

20. *Flying Saucer From Mars,* Cedric Allingham, 1955, British Book Center, New York.

21. *We Are Not The First,* Andrew Tomas, 1971, Souvenir Press, London.

22. *Not Of This World,* Peter Kolosimo, 1970, Souvenir Press, London.

23. *Moongate,* William Brian, 1982, Future Science Pub., Portland, Oregon.

24. *From Outer Space To You,* Howard Menger, 1959, Pyramid Books, New York.

25. *Looking For the Aliens,* Peter Hough & Jenny Randles, 1991, Blandford, London.

26. *JG7—The World's First Jet Fighter Unit, 1944/1945,* Manfred Boehme, 1992, Schiffer Military History, Atglen, Pennsylvania.

27. *Messerschmitt, Me 163 Komet,* Mano Ziegler, 1977, Schiffer Military History, Atglen, Pennsylvania.

28. *V2—Dawn of the Rocket Age,* H.P. Dabrowski, 1990, Schiffer Military History, Atglen, Pennsylvania.

29. *Lippisch P13a & Experimental DM-1,* Hans Peter Dabrowski, 1993, Schiffer Military History, Atglen, Pennsylvania.

30. *The Horton Flying Wing.* 1992, Schiffer Military History, Atglen, Pennsylvania.

31. *Casebook on Alternative 3,* Jim Keith, 1994, Illuminet Press, Lilburn, Georgia.

32. *The Science Book of Space Travel.* Harold Goodwin, 1954, Franklin Watts, Inc. New York.

33. *Lore and Lure of Outer Space,* Ernst & Johanna Lehner, 1964, Tudor Publishing Co., New York.

34. *The Illustrated Encyclopedia of Space Technology,* Gatland, Kenneth, 1989, Salamander Books, New York.

35. *The Cosmic Conspiracy,* Stan Deyo, 1978, WATT Publishers, Perth.

36. *The Fantastic Inventions of Nikola Tesla,* Nikola Tesla, 1993, AUP, Stelle, Illinois.

37. *Extraterrestrial Archaeology,* David Hatcher Childress, 1994, AUP, Stelle, Illinois.

38. *The Anti-Gravity Handbook,* David Hatcher Childress, 1983, AUP, Stelle, Illinois.

39. *Anti-Gravity & The World Grid,* David Hatcher Childress, 1985, AUP, Stelle, Illinois.

40. *Anti-Gravity & The Unified Field,* David Hatcher Childress, 1986, AUP, Stelle, Illinois.

41. *Alien Honeycomb,* John Pinkney & Leonard Ryzman, 1980, Pan Books, Sydney, Australia.

42. *A Secret Country,* John Pilger, 1989, Johnathan Cape, Sydney.

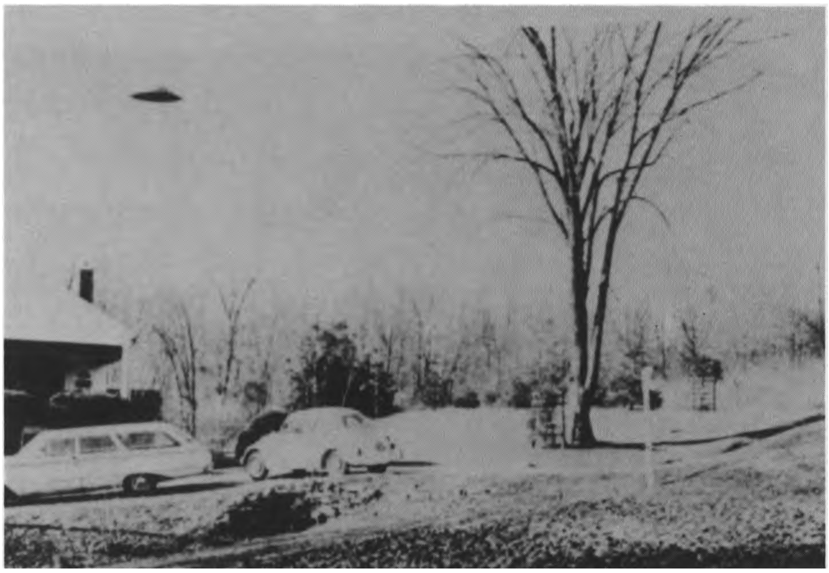
43. *The Vindicator Scrolls,* Stan Deyo, 1988, WATT Publishing, Perth.

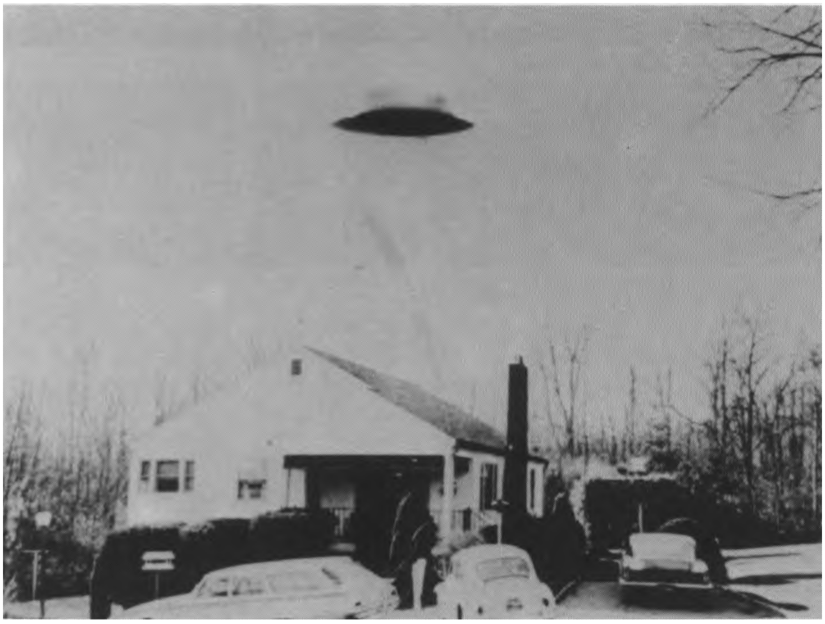
44. *Blowback,* Christopher Simpson, 1991, Random House, New York.

45. *The Dream Machines,* Ron Miller, 1993, Krieger Publishing, Malabar, Florida.

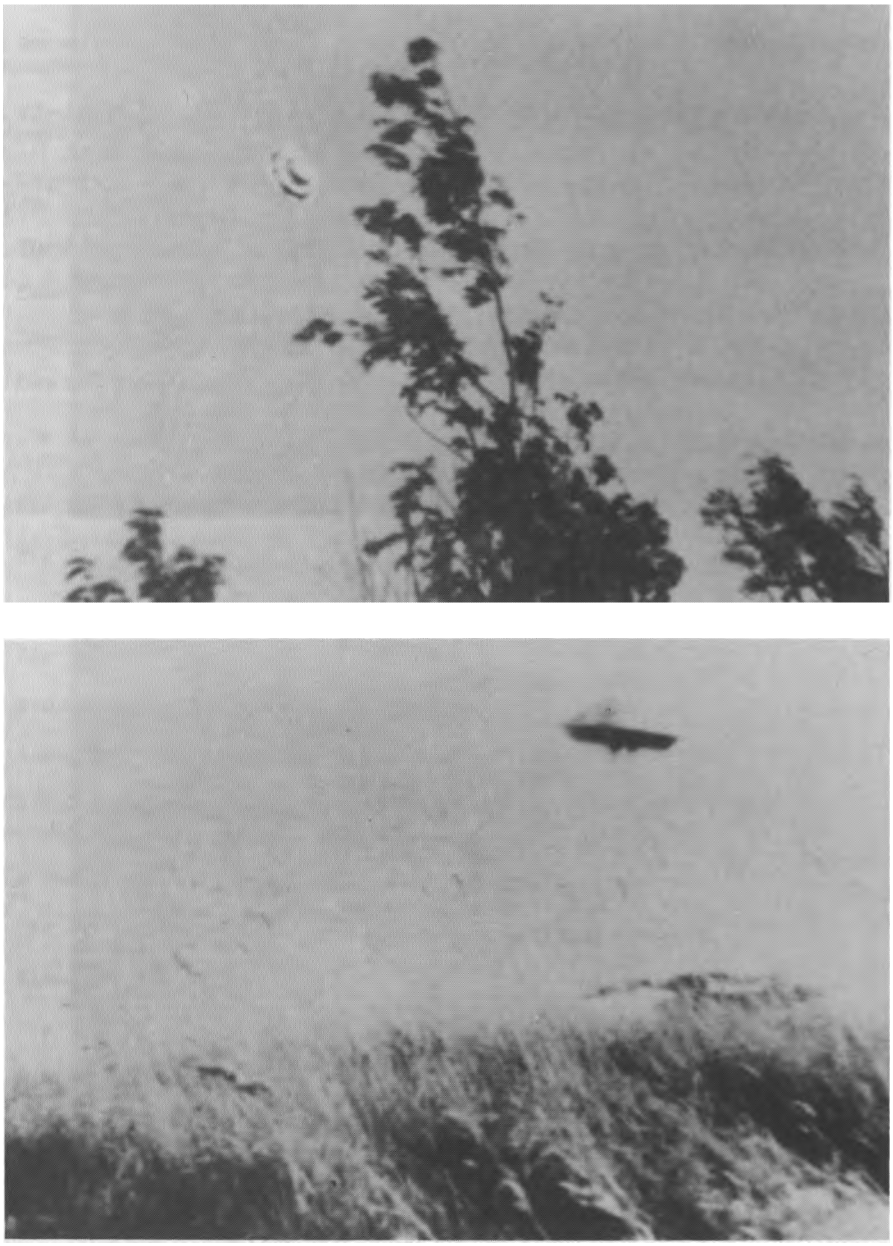
46. *Hitler's Secret Sciences,* Nigel Pennick, 1981, Neville Spearman, Suffolk, England.

47. *Underground Bases and Tunnels: What is the Government Trying To Hide?,* Richard Sauder, 1993, Box 81543, Albuquerque, NM 87198.

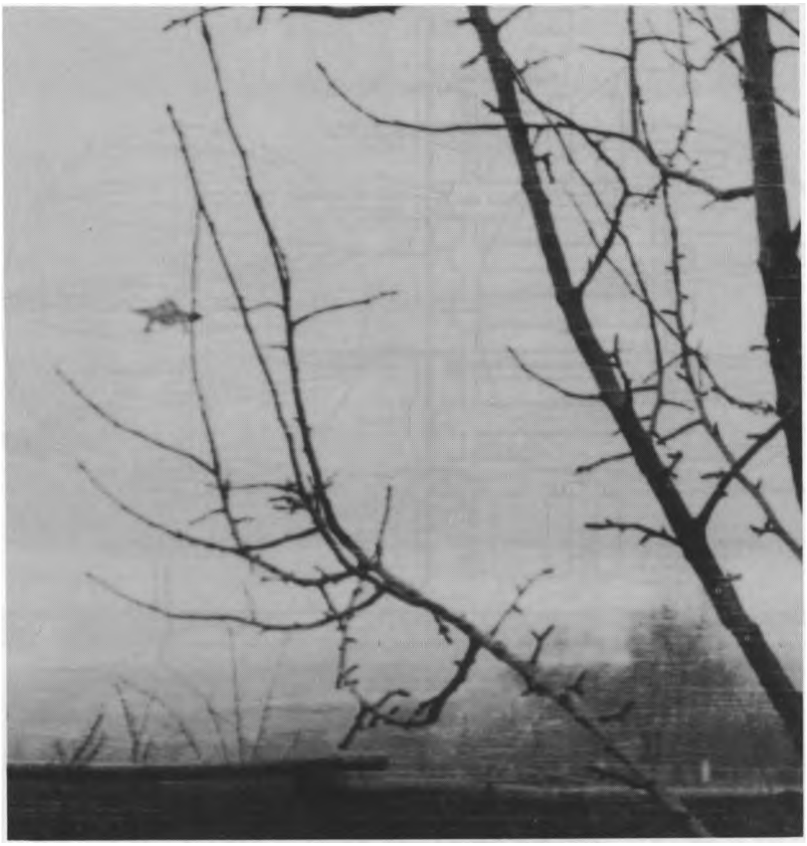




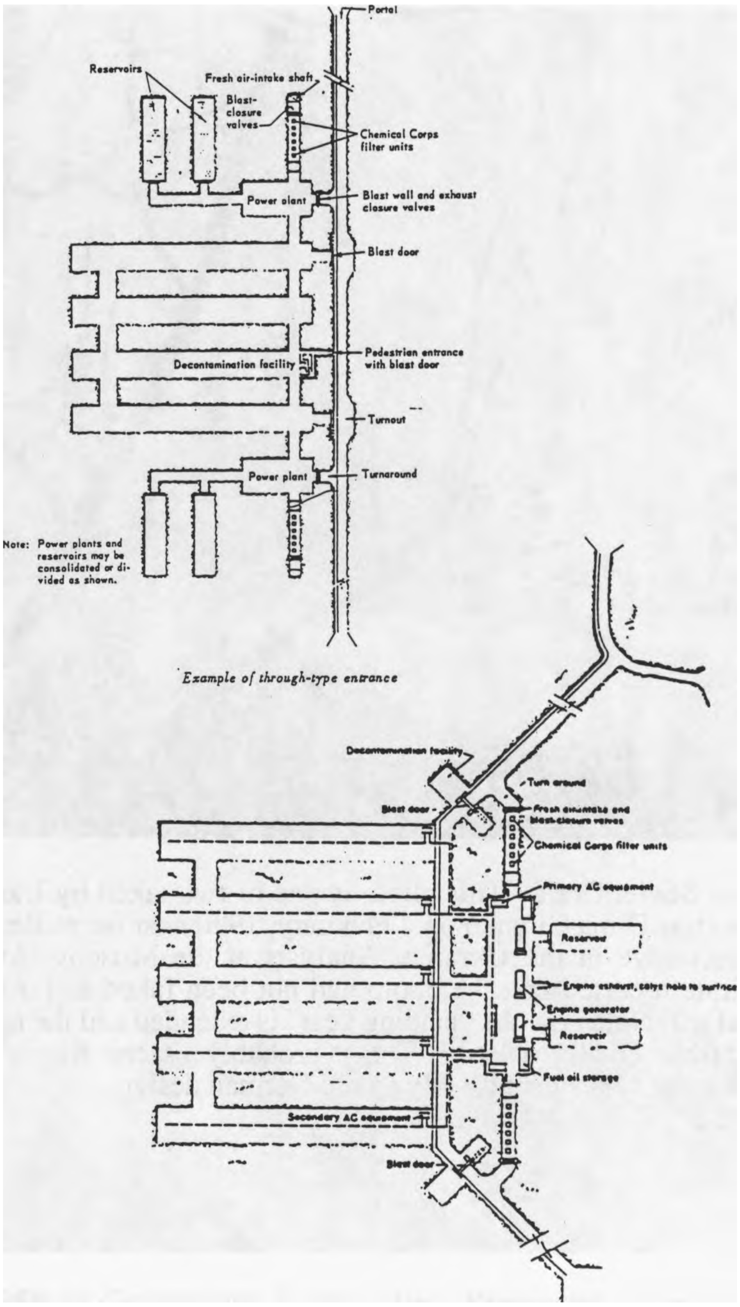
Two photos taken by a barber named Ralph Ditter, in Zanesville, Ohio on November 13, 1966. Ditter was leaving home with his camera when he chanced to look back and saw the UFO over his house. He took two exposures within a short period of time of the helmet-like craft, with an apparent "canon" on the underside of the craft. Ditter did not seek publicity but put them in his shop window to stimulate business. Eventually a news service bought them and they were widely published. The object is similar to the "Heflin UFO" and is said to be an original German design with a Panzer Tank canon mounted beneath it. Such a craft at such a late date would tend to indicate that this was not a captured test craft but rather a "renegade craft" possibly operating from South America as late as 1966.



In June of 1968 at Georgetown harbor, New Brunswick, Canada these two photographs were snapped by Leo McCabe as it flew over a deserted scrub area.

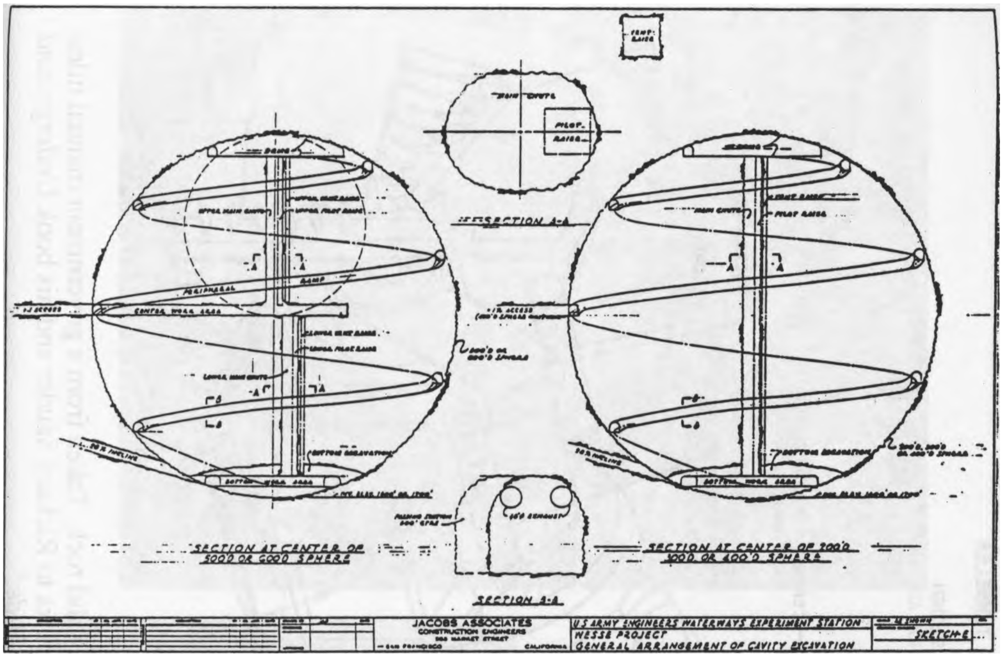


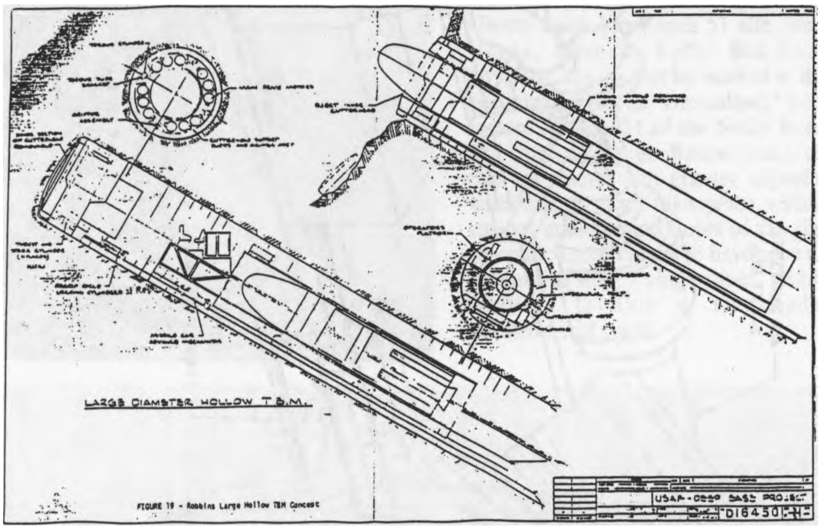
Secret Soviet Craft—This photo is one of two taken by Ukrainian schoolboy Dima Girenko on 4 February, 1990 near the settlement at Solnechnoye in the Ukraine. Analysts at the Moscow Aviation Institute reported that the photo had not been faked as far as they could tell. Note how the "landing gear" is extended and the apparent old-fashioned 50s look to it. This is probably a secret Russian man-made craft, and even possibly an old German design.


Portal
Reservoirs
Fresh air-intake shaft
Blast-closure valves
Chemical Corps filter units
Power plant
Blast wall and exhaust closure valves
Blast door
Pedestrian entrance with blast door
Decontamination facility
Turnout
Power plant
Turnaround
Note: Power plants and reservoirs may be consolidated or divided as shown.
Decontamination facility
Turn around
Blast door
Fresh air intake and blast-closure valves
Chemical Corps filter units
Primary AC equipment
Reservoir
Engine exhaust, calyx hole to surface
Engine generator
Reservoir
Fuel oil storage
Secondary AC equipment
Blast door

Example of through-type entrance

Examples of underground manufacturing and storage facilities from the U.S. Army Corps of Engineers technical manual *Design of Underground Installations in Rock: Protective Features and Utilities.* Thanks to Richard Sauder and his book *Underground Bases and Tunnels: What Is the Government Trying To Hide?*

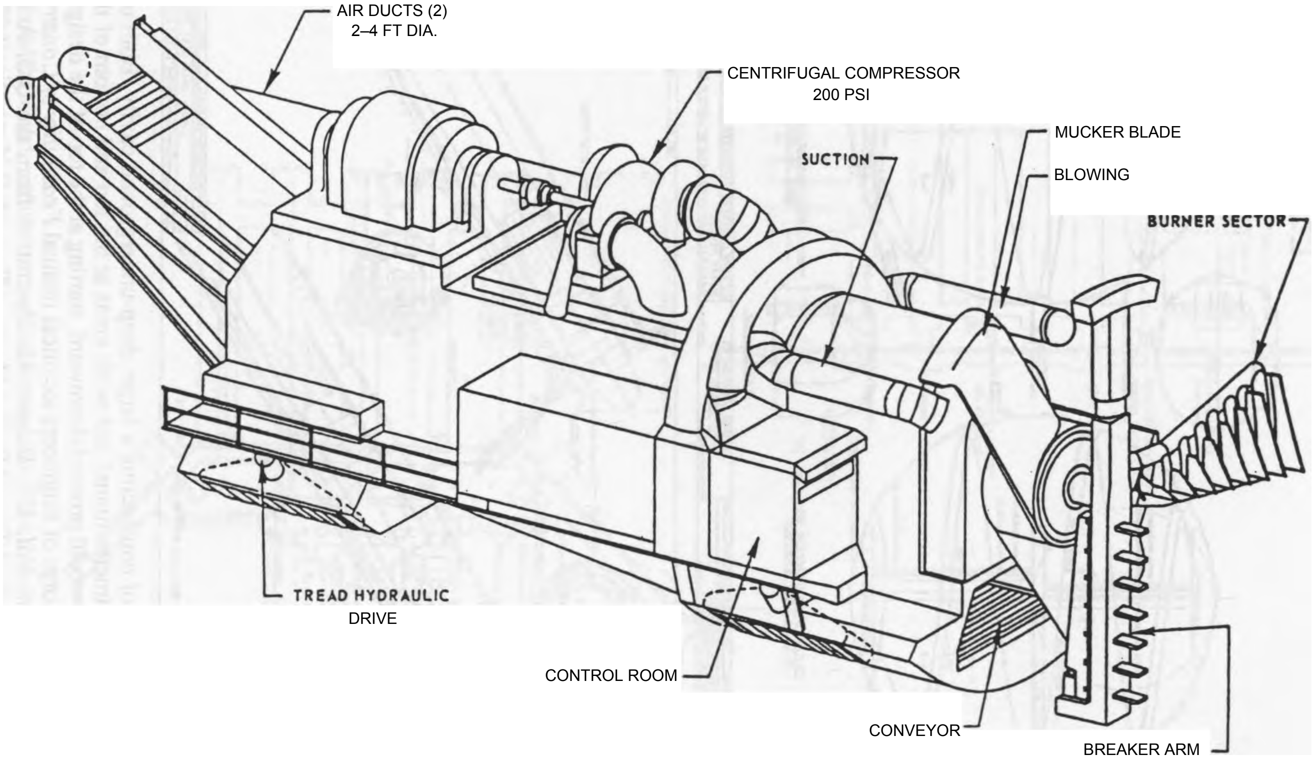

SECTION A-A
SECTION AT CENTER OF 500'Ø OR 600'Ø SPHERE
SECTION AT CENTER OF 200'Ø 300'Ø OR 400'Ø SPHERE
SECTION B-B
JACOBS ASSOCIATES
CONSTRUCTION ENGINEERS
SAN FRANCISCO
CALIFORNIA
U S ARMY ENGINEERS WATERWAYS EXPERIMENT STATION
WESSE PROJECT
GENERAL ARRANGEMENT OF CAVITY EXCAVATION
SKETCH E


LARGE DIAMETER HOLLOW T.B.M.
FIGURE 19 - Robbins Large Hollow TBM Concept
USAF-DEEP BASE PROJECT
D16450

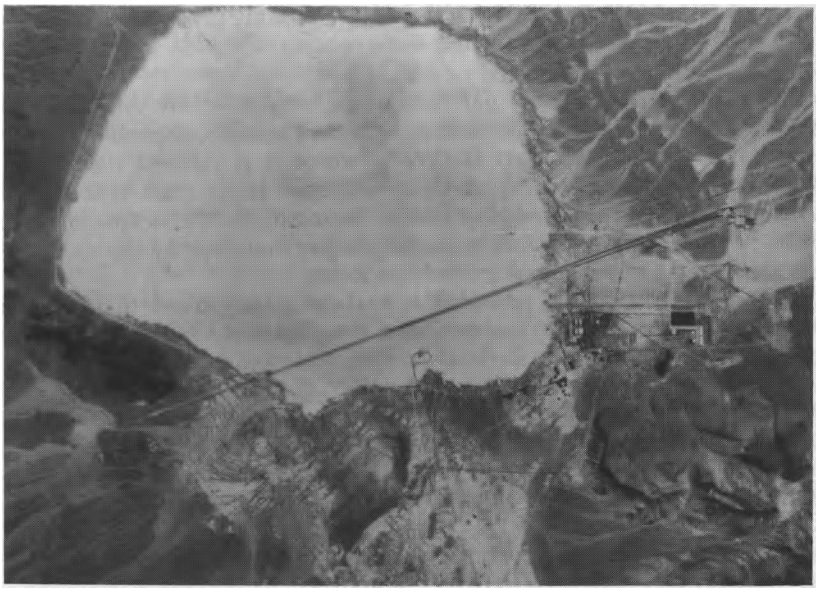
Above: Two methods of constructing a large, deep-underground cavity. Both utilize central shafts, a spiralling perimeter tunnel and work areas at the top and bottom of the area to be excavated. Excavation would proceed downward, starting at the top of the designated sphere. From the U.S. Army Corps of Engineers technical manual *Feasibility of Constructing Large Underground Cavities, Vol. III.* Below: An illustration from the U.S. Army Corps of Engineers technical manual *Tunnel Boring Machine Technology for a Deeply Based Missile System. Vol. I, Part 1.* Thanks to Richard Sauder and his book *Underground Bases and Tunnels: What Is the Government Trying To Hide?*

FLAME-JET TUNNELER

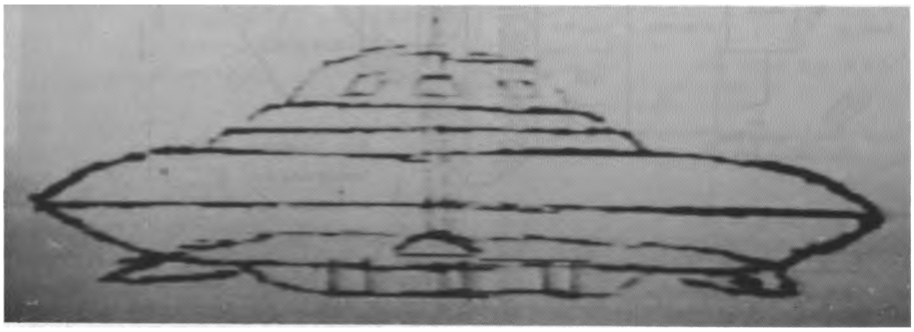
30-FT DESIGN
BLOWING/SUCTION AIR SUPPLY


AIR DUCTS (2)
2–4 FT DIA.
CENTRIFUGAL COMPRESSOR
200 PSI
MUCKER BLADE
SUCTION
BLOWING
BURNER SECTOR
TREAD HYDRAULIC
DRIVE
CONTROL ROOM
CONVEYOR
BREAKER ARM

A Flame Jet Tunneler for creating large tunnels through solid rock. Taken from a government manual titled “Feasibility of Flame-Jet Tunneling, Vol. II,” p. 71. Thanks to Richard Sauder and his book *Underground Bases and Tunnels: What Is the Government Trying To Hide?*



Above: A 1968 satellite photo of the Groom Lake (dry)/Area 51 site, near Las Vegas, Nevada. Left: Bob Lazar, a physicist, claims that he worked at the S-4 site, also known as "Dreamland," which is located in Area 51 of the Nellis Bombing and Gunnery Range. Below: Lazar claims that top secret anti-gravity experiments with discoid craft take place within the various underground floors of the gigantic complex. Lazar claims to have seen a craft resembling this "flying saucer" within the facility. Is this a man-made or extraterrestrial craft?



The Top Secret UFO Base Called Area 51

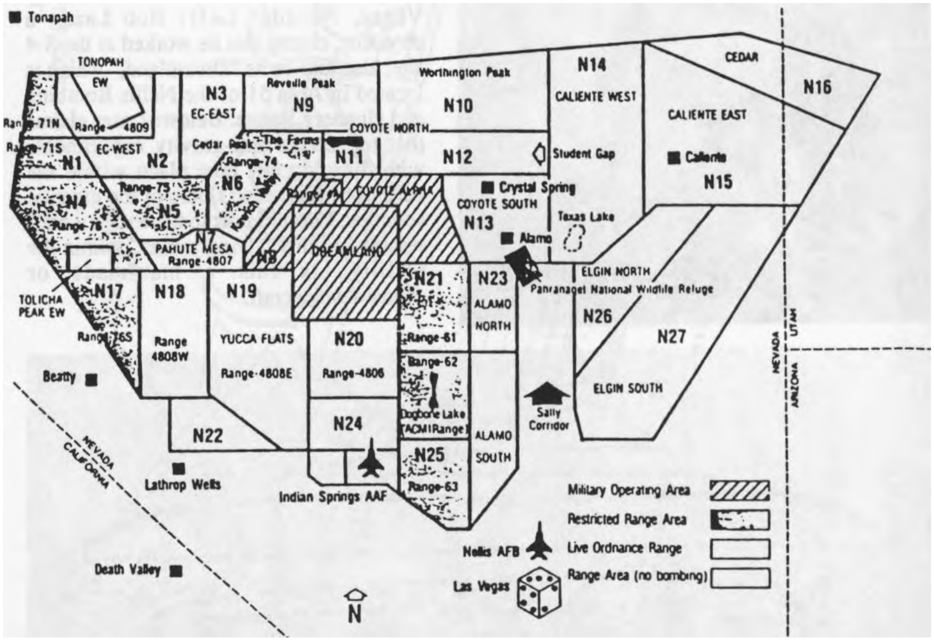
Area 51 is a part of the "Dreamland" complex where America's most advanced weaponry systems are believed to be under development. The Area 51 portion of that vast desert facility is where it is claimed that the U.S. Government is now examining all UFOs that have either crash-landed or have been captured by a supposed elite unit of the military. These spacecrafts, and their occupants, are now said to be undergoing examination by top specialists in the medical, metallurgical, and propulsion fields.

The entire Dreamland complex is mainly underground to prevent any unauthorized observation from satellites, overflights, or individuals hiking in the surrounding mountains. It should be mentioned that this facility is guarded by a small army of current military and intelligence services personnel, as well as a reputed hand-picked force of ex-servicemen who served in the Navy's Seals, Army's Airborne or Special Forces, and the Air Force's Air Commandos. It is known that these guards have at their disposal armored vehicles, helicopters, mobile radar units, highly sensitive detectors on the ground, and more. There is

---

Nellis Bombing and Gunnery Range

From the book Red Flag by Michael Skinner, 1984, Presidio Air Power Series.



Tonapah
TONOPAH EW
Range-4809
Range-71N
Range-71S
N1
EC-WEST
N2
N3
EC-EAST
Reveille Peak
N9
Worthington Peak
N10
N14
CALIENTE WEST
CEDAR
N16
CALIENTE EAST
COYOTE NORTH
Cedar Peak
The Farms
Range-74
N11
N12
Student Gap
Caliente
N15
N4
Range-76
Range-75
N5
N6
N7
PAHUTE MESA
Range-4807
N8
DREAMLAND
COYOTE ALPHA
Crystal Spring
COYOTE SOUTH
N13
Alamo
Texas Lake
ELGIN NORTH
Pahranagat National Wildlife Refuge
TOLICHA PEAK EW
N17
Range-76S
N18
Range 4808W
N19
YUCCA FLATS
Range-4808E
N20
Range-4806
N21
Range-61
Range-62
Dogbone Lake (ACMI Range)
N23
ALAMO NORTH
N26
N27
ELGIN SOUTH
Sally Corridor
NEVADA
UTAH
ARIZONA
Beatty
N22
N24
N25
Range-63
ALAMO SOUTH
NEVADA
CALIFORNIA
Lathrop Wells
Indian Springs AAF
Death Valley
Nellis AFB
Las Vegas
N
Military Operating Area
Restricted Range Area
Live Ordnance Range
Range Area (no bombing)

"Dreamland" includes Site 51 and Site S-4 where there are said to be research and operational facilities in above and below ground installations for flying discs. There are allegedly also environmental habitats for extraterrestrial intelligent beings. (Information obtained from various UFO researchers).

also a strong working relationship with the Lincoln County Sheriff's department, for any kind of assistance when called.

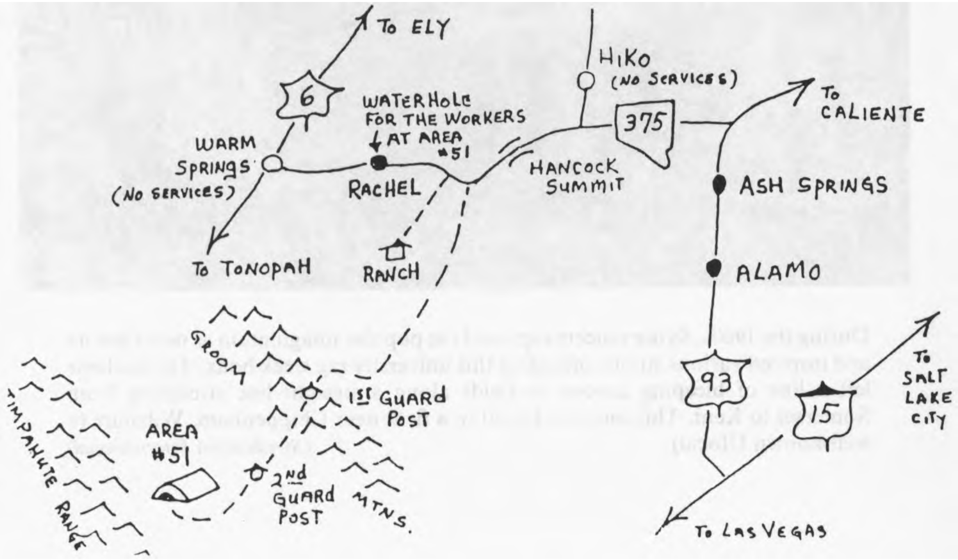
All U.S. Government vehicles that are authorized to enter this restricted area have on their front license plate a "CSC" tag. It has been speculated that "CSC" stands for "Central Space Center", but nobody who knows is talking about what that logo means.

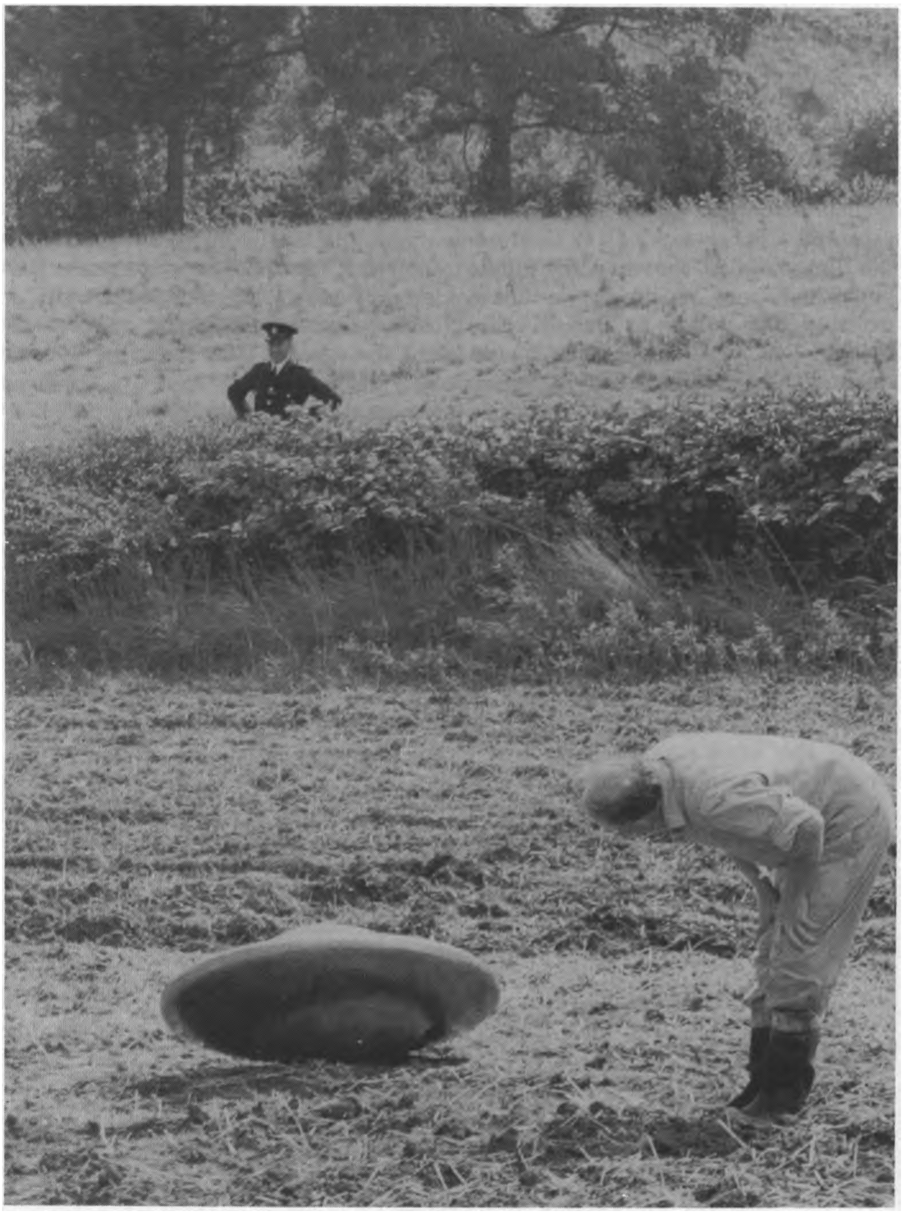
Area 51 was first coded "Operation Snowbird" and it is believed that its main mission was to test fly captured UFOs. *Hangar 18* was a movie about a captured UFO that the U.S. Government was holding in "hangar 18". When the film was first shown to the public it caused a lot of concern at the alleged home of hangar 18, Wright-Patterson Air Force Base in Ohio. Supposedly a decision was made to find a new location for the recovered saucers at "Wright-Pat". In 1972 the most favorable site for selection was found in Nevada due to its remoteness from the general public, and was named Area 51. This was an ideal location because of two concealing mountain ranges in the dry lake bed area, Groom Lake, and the only road into the area was soon up-graded to a two-lane one suitable for heavy-duty trucks.

Directions to Area 51

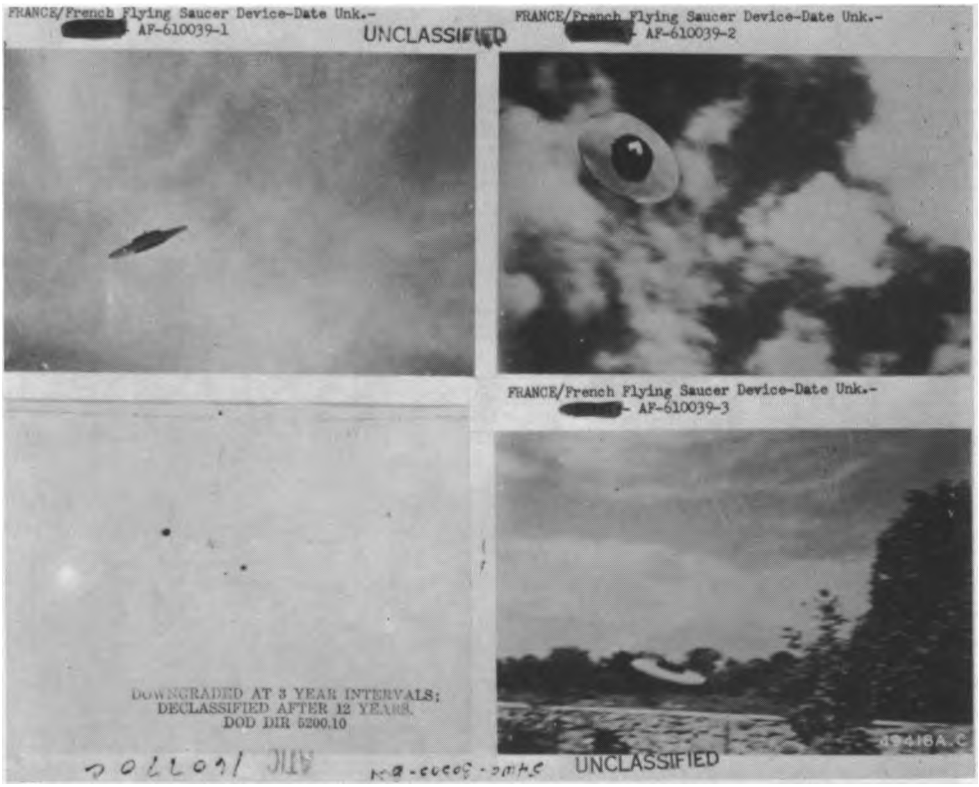
From Las Vegas, Nevada, travel in a north-easterly direction on Interstate I-15 (heading for Salt Lake City, Utah) for a distance of about 22 miles, then turn left onto U.S. Hwy 93 for about 85 miles, then turn left again onto Nevada State Hwy 375 for about 14 miles, then left once more at the bottom of Hancock Summit onto a two-land gravel road that is well-maintained for about 13 miles, follow this until you reach the first guard post that is located on top of the Groom Mountain area. See map below.

Remember, the U.S. Government, and possibly extraterrestrial intelligences, do not want you there. Approach with caution, do not break the law. Dead UFO researchers are not terrifically useful!

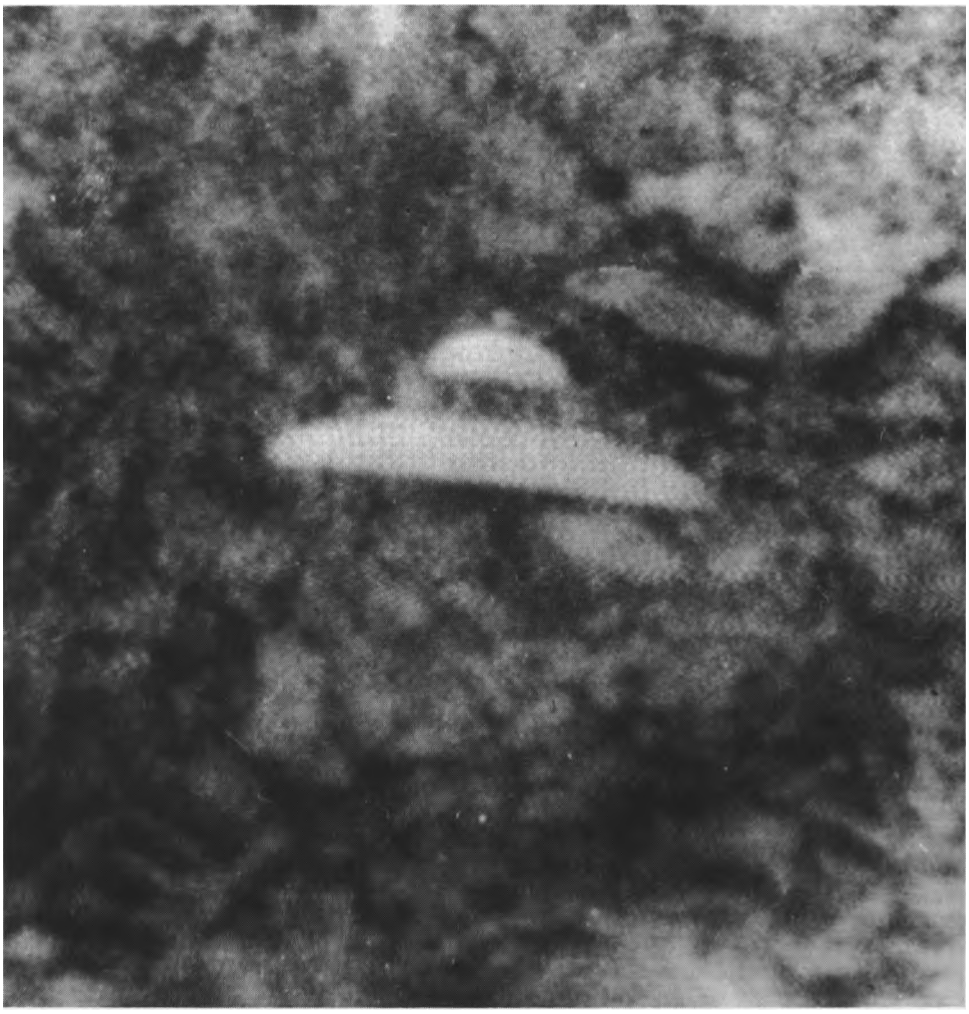

TO ELY
6
WATERHOLE FOR THE WORKERS AT AREA #51
HIKO (NO SERVICES)
375
TO CALIENTE
WARM SPRINGS (NO SERVICES)
RACHEL
HANCOCK SUMMIT
ASH SPRINGS
TO TONOPAH
RANCH
ALAMO
GROOM
1st GUARD POST
93
TO SALT LAKE CITY
15
TIMPAHUTE RANGE
AREA #51
2nd GUARD POST
MTNS.
TO LAS VEGAS



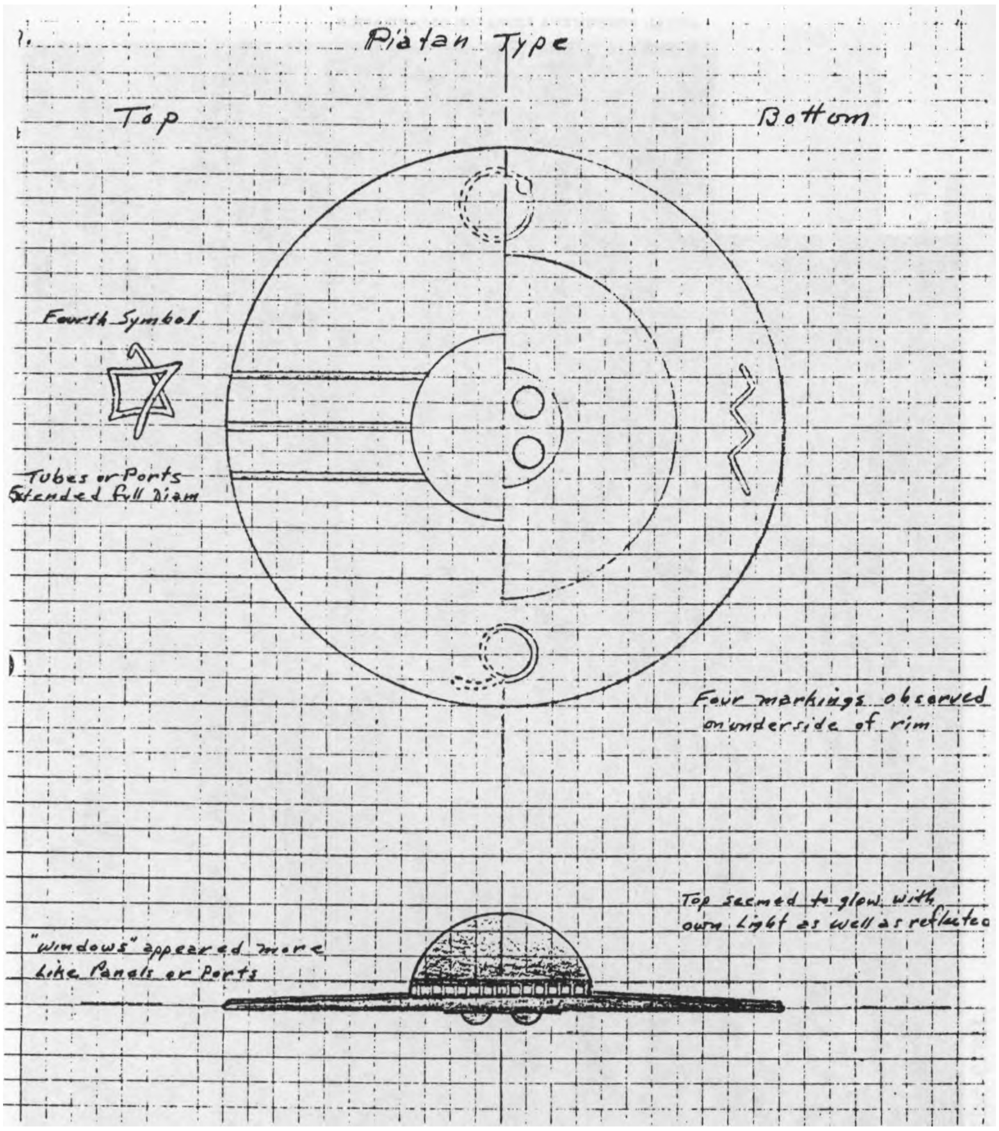
During the 1960s, flying saucers captured the popular imagination as never before and inspired various stunts, including this university rag week hoax. The students left a line of bleeping saucers in fields along a straight line stretching from Somerset to Kent. This one was found in a field near Chippenham, Wiltshire (a well-known Ufocal). (*Syndication International*)


FRANCE/French Flying Saucer Device-Date Unk.-
[redacted]- AF-610039-1
UNCLASSIFIED
FRANCE/French Flying Saucer Device-Date Unk.-
[redacted]- AF-610039-2
FRANCE/French Flying Saucer Device-Date Unk.-
[redacted]- AF-610039-3
DOWNGRADED AT 3 YEAR INTERVALS;
DECLASSIFIED AFTER 12 YEARS.
DOD DIR 5200.10
ATIC
49416A.C
UNCLASSIFIED

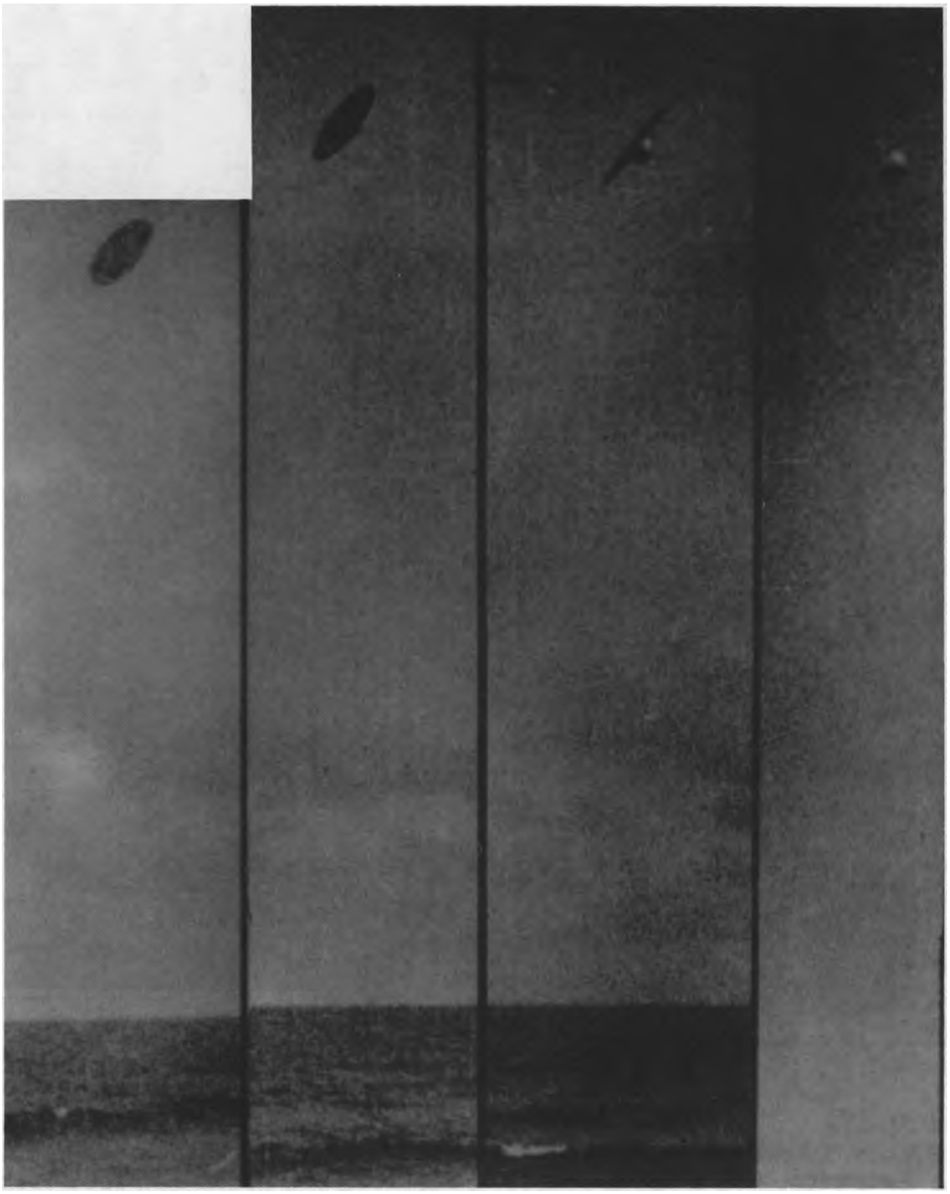
These four photos are from the U.S. Airforce Blue Book files and show **a** “French Flying Saucer Device” that is alleged to be one of the craft used by Marconi and built at the secret city in South America. The photos clearly show a man-made discoid craft hovering, tilting and landing. Although the margin notes state “Date Unk.—” the photos are known to have been taken in 1953. At first they were classified SECRET, but were later “downgraded” and finally marked “unclassified.” The Initials ATIC (upside down at bottom left) stand for Air Technical Intelligence Center, the parent military agency in the Air Force hierarchy sponsoring Project Blue Book.



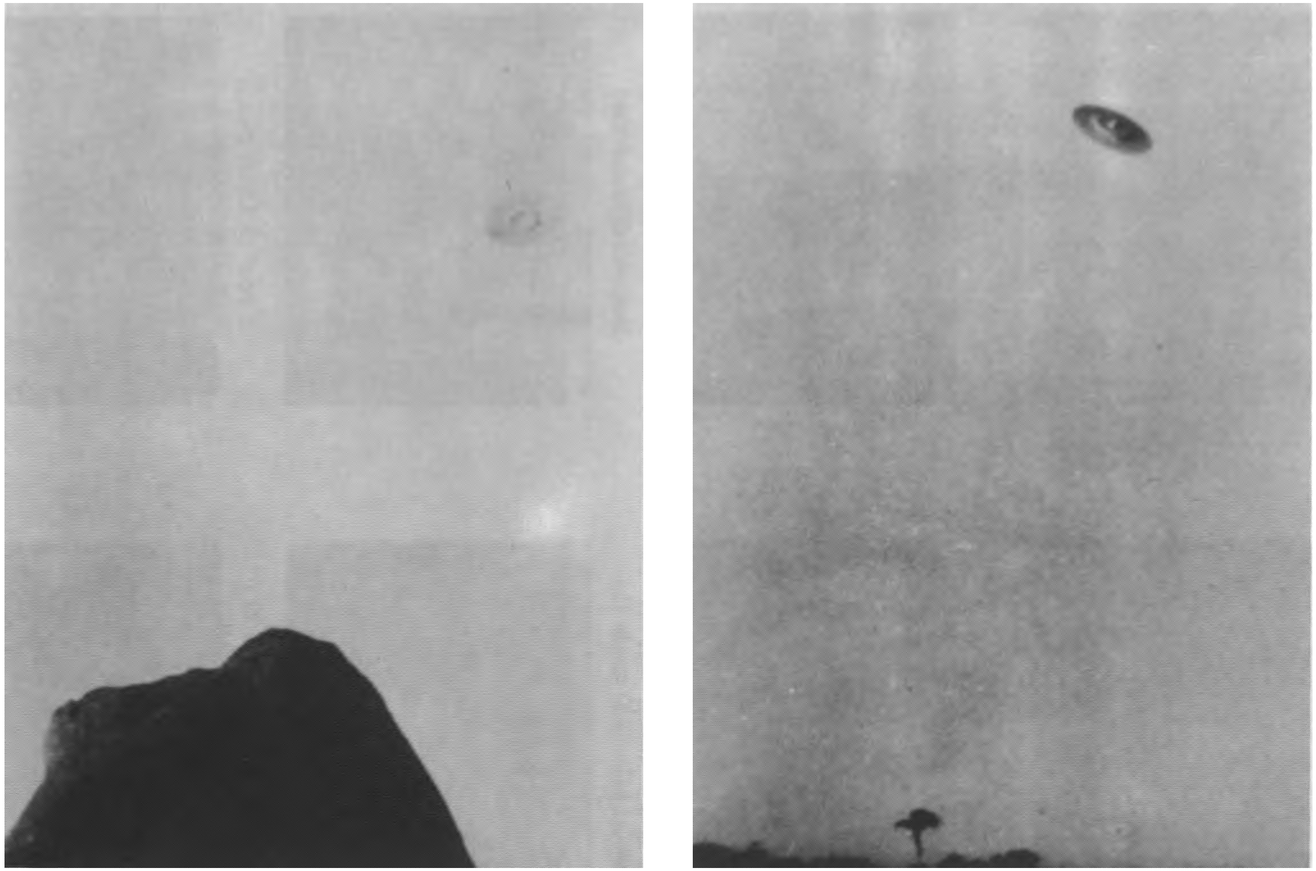
A Polaroid photo taken in Peru on October 19, 1973 by architect Hugo Vega. Vega, who happened to have a camera with him, was looking for a house of client about 34 miles east of Lima, the coastal capital of Peru. He was looking out over the Rimac River valley when a discoid craft with portholes between the domed top and main section, came into view. The craft flew along the valley and hovered for a few seconds against the jungle background, which is when Vega got his Polaroid shot. The old-fashioned design of the craft is noteworthy, with this 1973 saucer looking more like a 1950-type craft. Some UFO experts believe that this craft is one of Marconi's manufacture at the underground city.


1.
Piatan Type
Top
Bottom
Fourth Symbol
Tubes or Ports
Extended full Diam
Four markings observed
on underside of rim
Top seemed to glow with
own Light as well as reflecte
"windows" appeared more
Like Panels or Ports

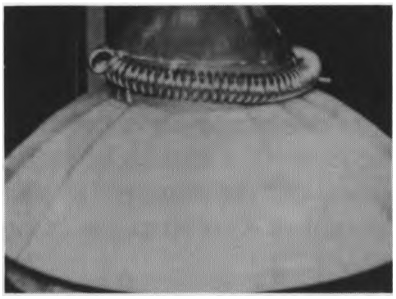
On April 24, 1959, Helio Augiar was driving along the Plata beach in Salvador, a beach in northern Brazil, when his engine suddenly stopped. He then witnessed a flying saucer flying along the beach and took four photos of it. It is interesting to note the symbols on the underside of the craft in this drawing. The craft had four hemispherical protrusions in the center of the craft on the bottom and three ribs or tubes on the top of the craft. This discoid vehicle is similar to the type of craft allegedly made at Marconi's secret city, and is also similar to the Schriever-Habermohl flying disc made by Germany at the BMW factory near Prague in 1944, and first flown on February 4, 1945 (*German Jet Genesis* by David Masters, 1982, Jane's Books, London. Page 135).



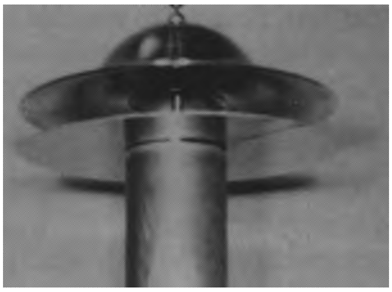
After taking these photos on Piata Beach, Salvador, Brazil, (April 24, 1959) Helio Aguiar lost consciousness. When he came to, he was clutching this message, written in his own hand: "ATOMIC EXPERIMENTS FOR WARLIKE PURPOSES SHALL BE DEFINITELY STOPPED . . . THE EQUILIBRIUM OF THE UNIVERSE IS THREATENED. WE WILL REMAIN VIGILANT AND READY TO INTERFERE."



Two of the May 7, 1952 photos taken at 4:30 in the afternoon at Barra da Tijuca, Brazil by an anonymous news photographer. Note the detail above and below the craft.



Toroidal Coil Test

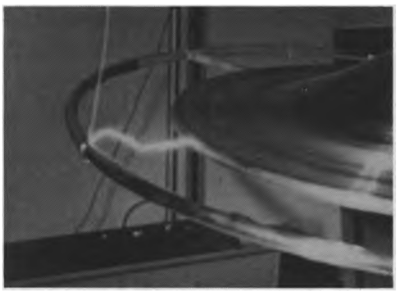


Disk in Vacuum Test

Saucer Lift-off (Version 1)

Suspended Saucer Test

Saucer Lift-off (Version 2)
Note: High-Voltage Arc



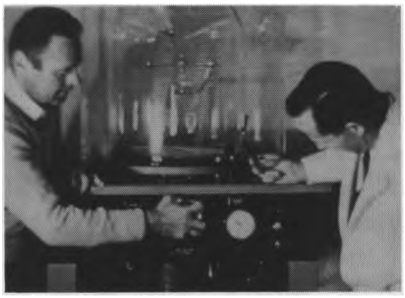
Six Foot Diameter Saucer
Note: High-Voltage Arc

Twin Saucer Vacuum Test

Saucer Variant with Plastic Shields

Recently restored 16mm film from the lab of T. Townsend Brown at the Bahnson Company in 1958.

T. Townsend Brown (left)
and Agnew H. Bahnson

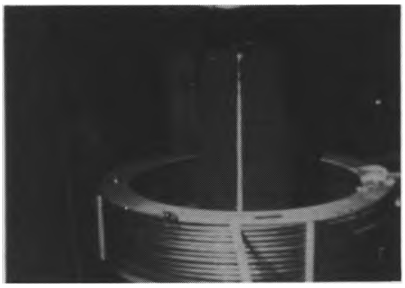


Bahnson (left) and Brown
with Bell Jar

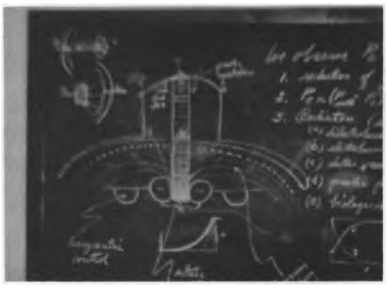
"Man in Black" next to
Toroidal Coil Test Rig

J. Frank King at Controls
of "Beta" High-Voltage Unit

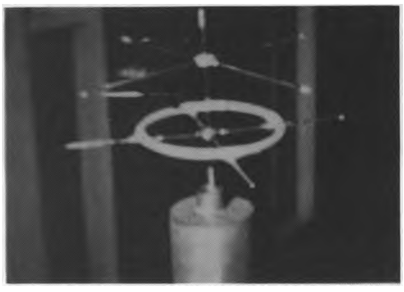
Bahnson behind Radiation
Warning Shield in Lab.



Bahnson's Tesla Coil

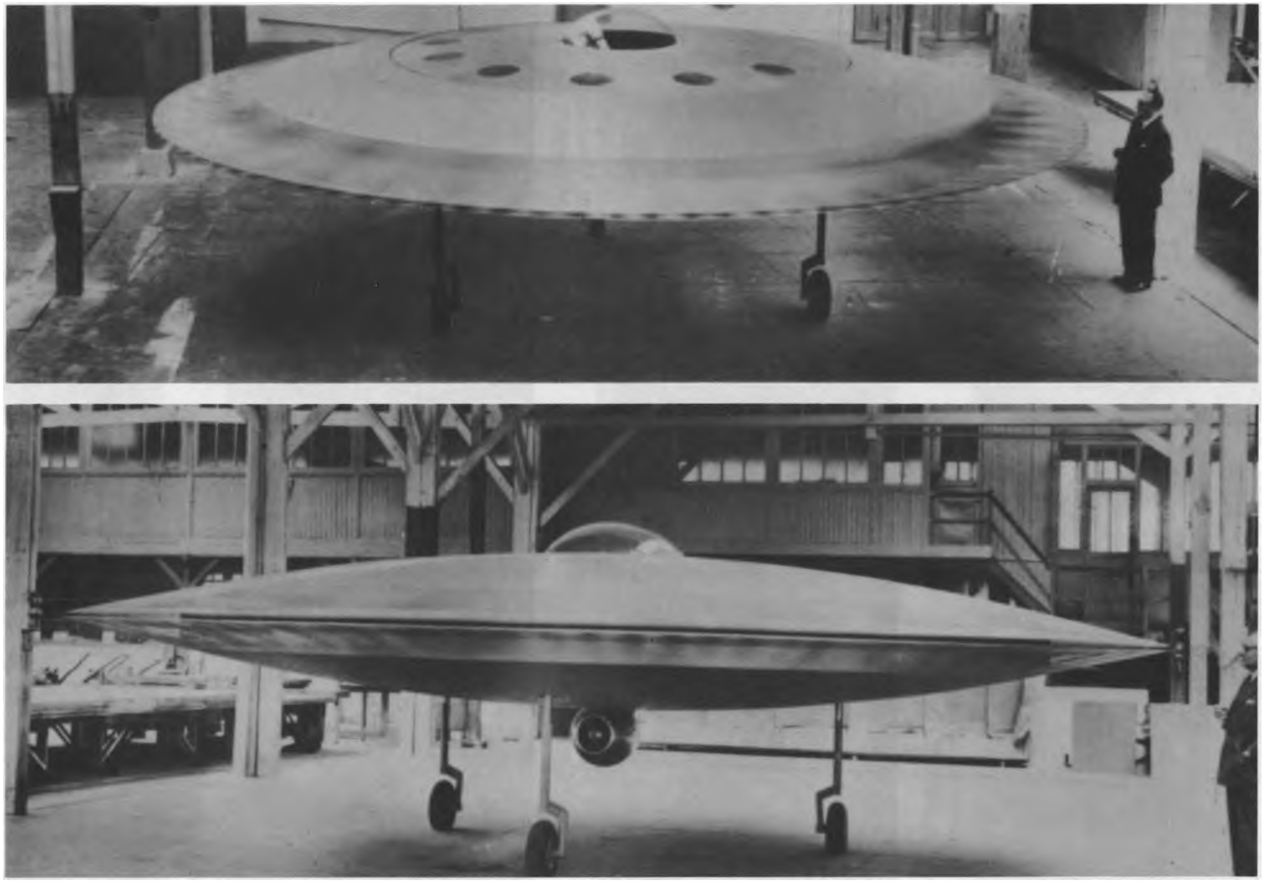


Adamski's Saucer on Brown s
Blackboard at Bahnson Lab.

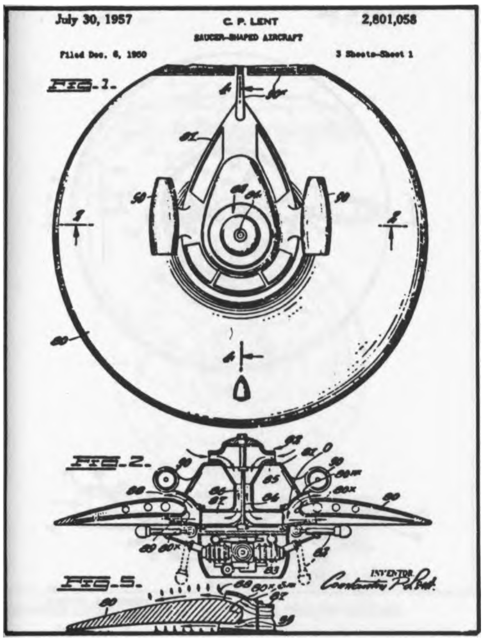


Torsion Rig in Vacuum Chamber
(Bruce Cathie's Antenna?)

Recently restored 16mm film from the lab of T. Townsend Brown at the Bahnson Company in 1958.



Designed by Rene Couzinet, this engineless model of the French aerodyne has a diameter of almost 27 feet. It will be powered by three 135-horsepower engines and the turbojet reactor visible on the underside in the lower view. Philadelphia Inquirer, *July 5, 1955.* (*World Wide Photo*)



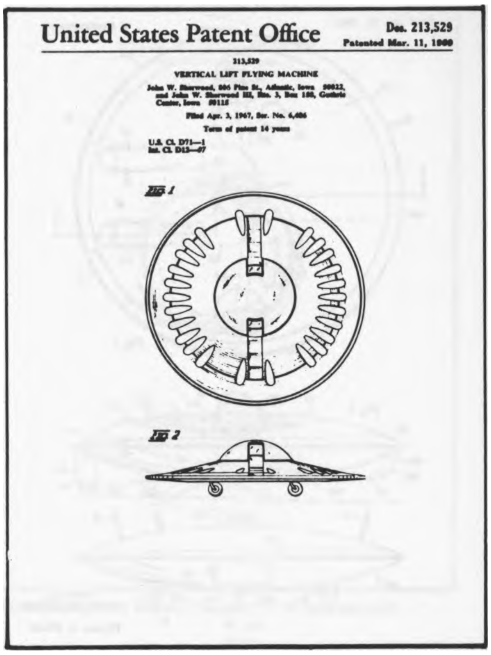
July 30, 1957 C. P. LENT 2,801,058

SAUCER-SHAPED AIRCRAFT

Filed Dec. 6, 1950 3 Sheets-Sheet 1

FIG. 1.
FIG. 2.
FIG. 5.
INVENTOR
Constantine P. Lent

Patented design for John Sherwood's "Vertical Lift Flying Machine."



United States Patent Office Des. 213,529

Patented Mar. 11, 1969

213,529

VERTICAL LIFT FLYING MACHINE

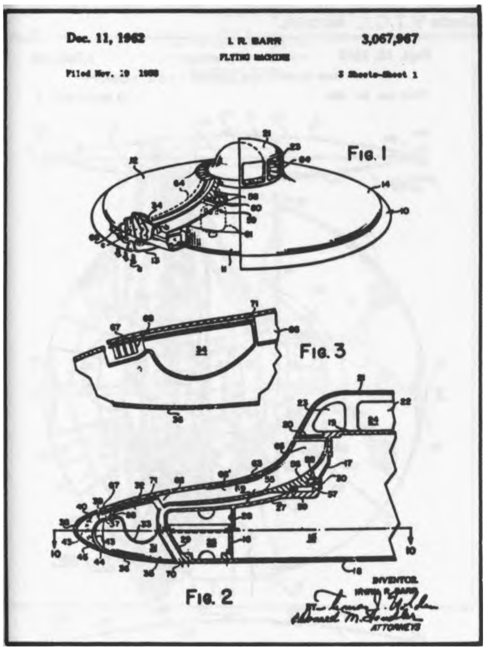
John W. Sherwood, 806 Pine St., Atlantic, Iowa 50022, and John W. Sherwood III, Rte. 3, Box 180, Guthrie Center, Iowa 50115

Filed Apr. 3, 1967, Ser. No. 6,406

Term of patent 14 years

U.S. Cl. D71—1
Int. Cl. D12—07

Patented design for Irwin Barr's rotating "Flying Machine."

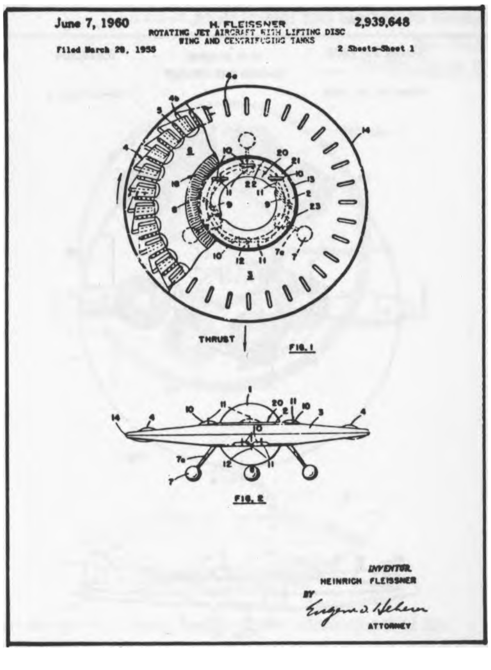


Dec. 11, 1962 I. R. BARR 3,067,967

FLYING MACHINE

Filed Nov. 19 1958 3 Sheets-Sheet 1

FIG. 1
FIG. 3
FIG. 2
INVENTOR
IRWIN R. BARR
ATTORNEYS

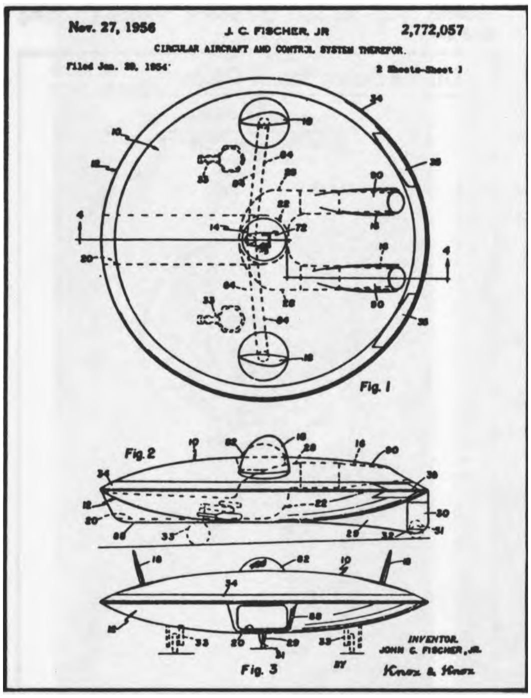


June 7, 1960 H. FLEISSNER 2,939,648

ROTATING JET AIRCRAFT WITH LIFTING DISC WING AND CENTRIFUGING TANKS

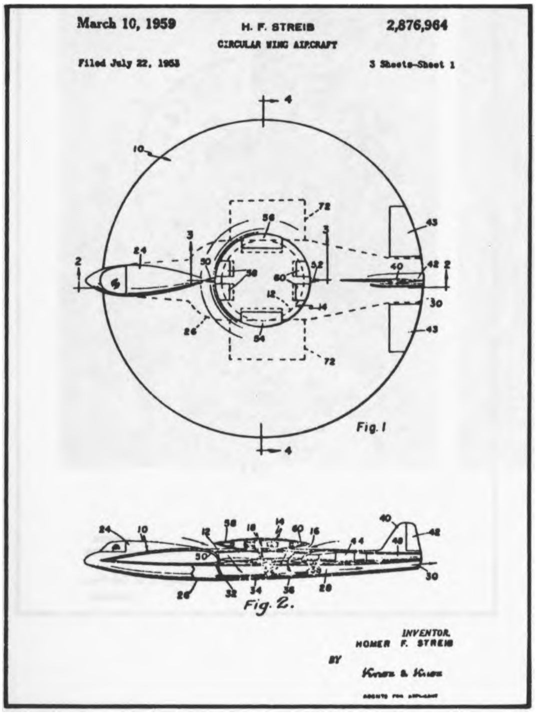
Filed March 28, 1955 2 Sheets-Sheet 1

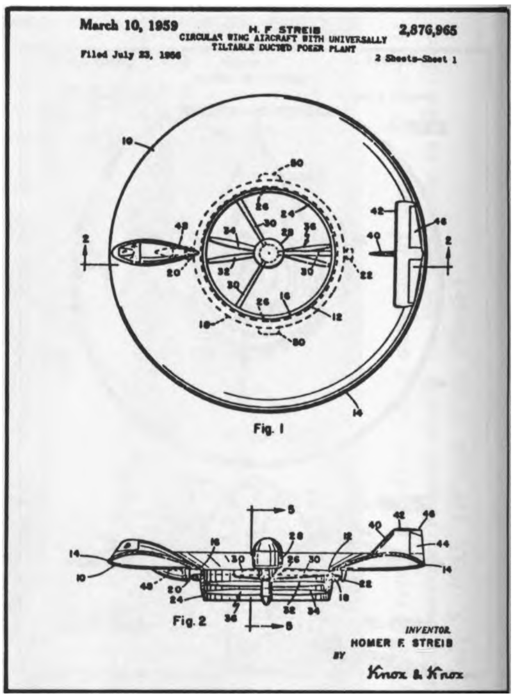
THRUST
FIG. 1
FIG. 2
INVENTOR
HEINRICH FLEISSNER
BY
ATTORNEY


Nov. 27, 1956
J. C. FISCHER, JR
2,772,057
CIRCULAR AIRCRAFT AND CONTROL SYSTEM THEREFOR.
Filed Jan. 29, 1954
2 Sheets-Sheet 1
Fig. 1
Fig. 2
Fig. 3
INVENTOR.
JOHN C. FISCHER, JR.
BY
Knox & Knox

Patented design for John Fischer's rotating circular aircraft.

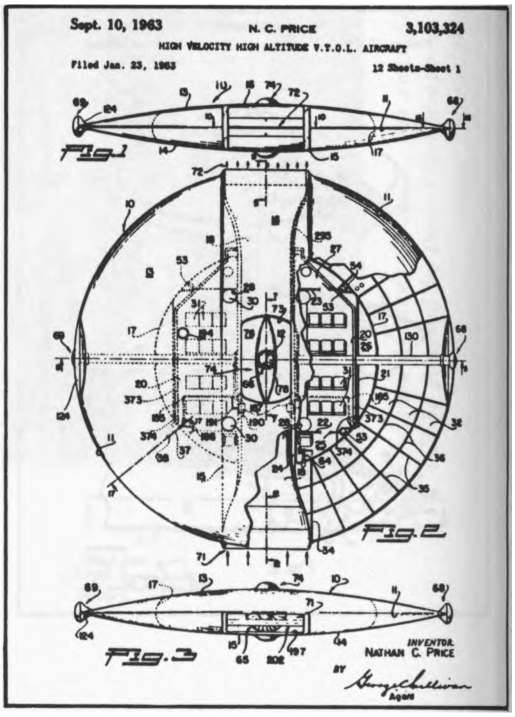
Patented design for Homer Streib's circular wing aircraft capable of vertical and lateral flight.

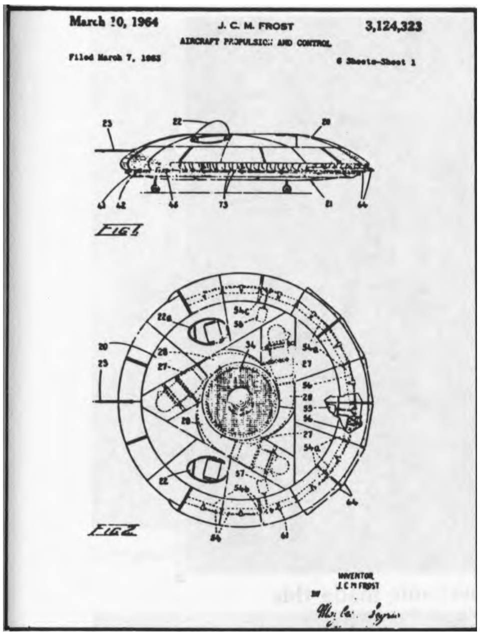

March 10, 1959
H. F. STREIB
2,876,964
CIRCULAR WING AIRCRAFT
Filed July 22, 1953
3 Sheets-Sheet 1
Fig. 1
Fig. 2.
INVENTOR.
HOMER F. STREIB
BY
Knox & Knox
AGENTS FOR APPLICANT


March 10, 1959
H. F. STREIB
2,876,965
CIRCULAR WING AIRCRAFT WITH UNIVERSALLY TILTABLE DUCTED POWER PLANT
Filed July 23, 1956
2 Sheets-Sheet 1
Fig. 1
Fig. 2
INVENTOR.
HOMER F. STREIB
BY
Knox & Knox

Patented design for Homer Streib's circular wing aircraft, with tiltable ducted power plant, capable of vertical and lateral flight.

Patented design for Nathan Price's "High Velocity High Altitude V.T.O.L. Aircraft."


Sept. 10, 1963
N. C. PRICE
3,103,324
HIGH VELOCITY HIGH ALTITUDE V.T.O.L. AIRCRAFT
Filed Jan. 23, 1953
12 Sheets-Sheet 1
Fig. 1
Fig. 2
Fig. 3
INVENTOR.
NATHAN C. PRICE
BY
Agent



March !0, 1964 J. C. M. FROST 3,124,323

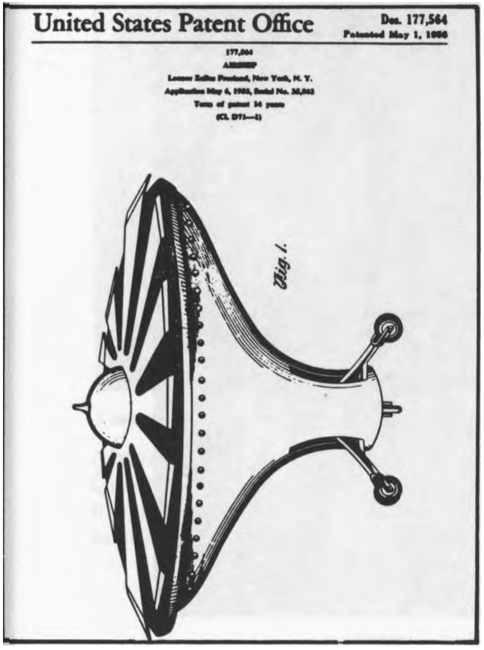
AIRCRAFT PROPULSION AND CONTROL

Filed March 7, 1963 6 Sheets-Sheet 1

23
22
20
63
62
66
73
81
64
FIG 1
22a
54c
56
20
23
28
27
34
54a
27
56
28
55
56
20
27
54a
22
57
54b
64
84
61
FIG 2
INVENTOR
J.C.M. FROST
BY

Patented design for J. C. M. Frost’s circular aircraft.

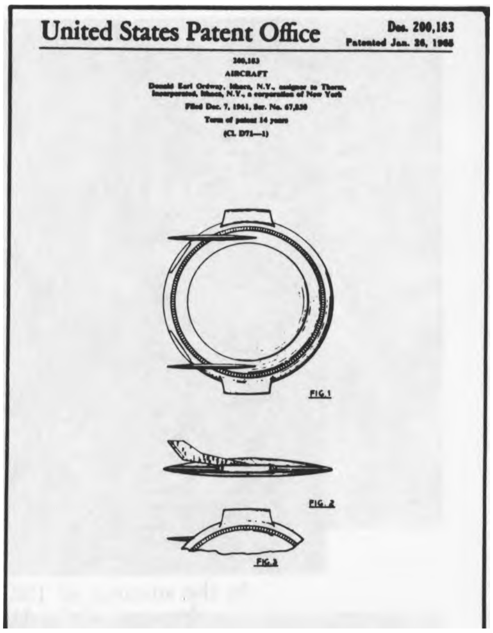
First of two patented designs by Leonor Zalles for a circular airship.



United States Patent Office

Des. 177,564
Patented May 1, 1956

177,564
AIRSHIP
Leonor Zalles [illegible], New York, N. Y.
Application May 4, 1955, Serial No. [illegible]
Term of patent 14 years
(Cl. D71—1)



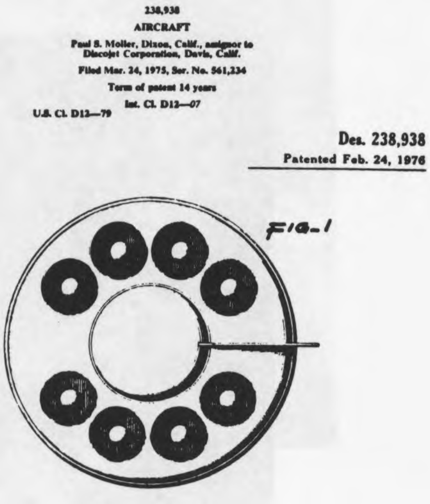
United States Patent Office

Des. 200,183
Patented Jan. 26, 1965

200,183
AIRCRAFT
Donald Earl Ordway, Ithaca, N.Y., assignor to Therm, Incorporated, Ithaca, N.Y., a corporation of New York
Filed Dec. 7, 1961, Ser. No. 67,830
Term of patent 14 years
(Cl. D71—1)

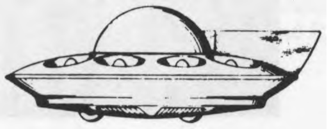
FIG. 1
FIG. 2
FIG. 3

Patented design for Donald Ordway’s circular aircraft.

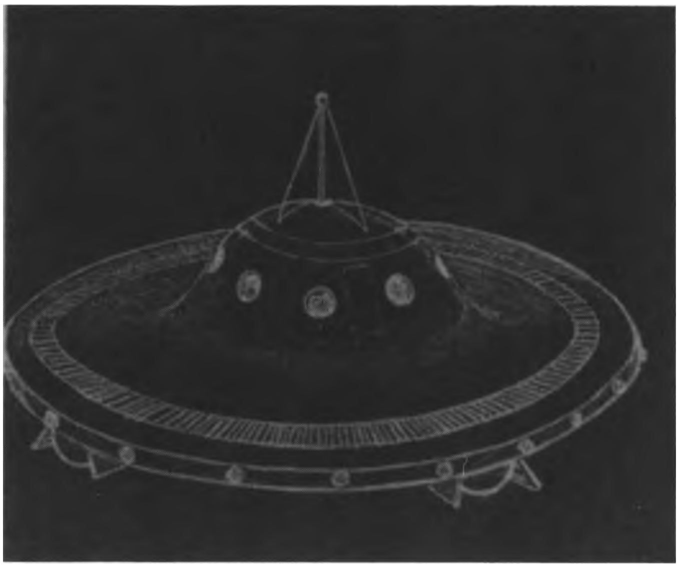


238,938
AIRCRAFT
Paul S. Moller, Dixon, Calif., assignor to Discojet Corporation, Davis, Calif.
Filed Mar. 24, 1975, Ser. No. 561,234
Term of patent 14 years
Int. Cl. D12—07
U.S. Cl. D12—79

Des. 238,938
Patented Feb. 24, 1976



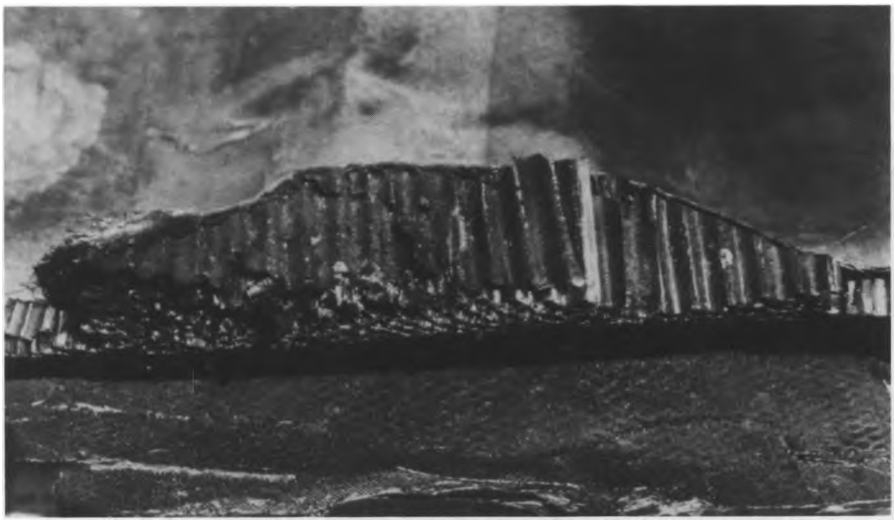
Patent design for a flying saucer under development at the Discojet Corporation.



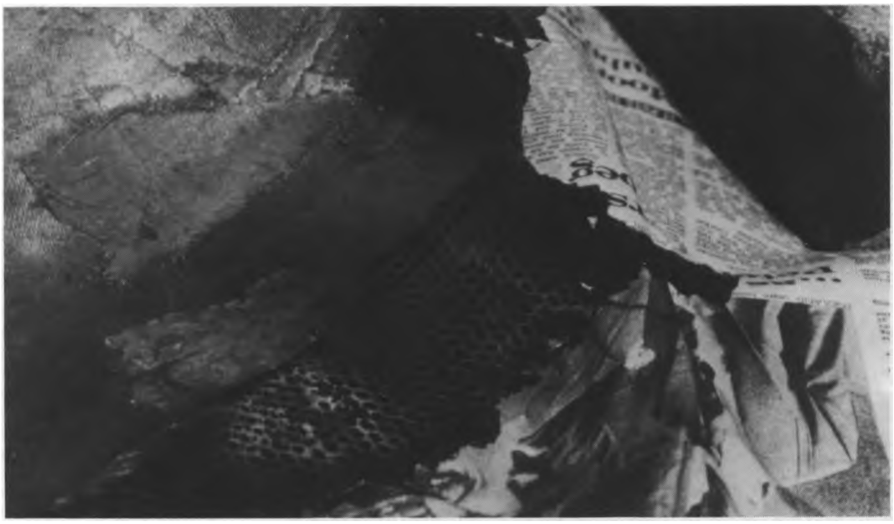
COPYRIGHT © 1972 BY ROBERT B. KLINN & DAVID BRANCH

In the summer of 1958, a mechanic made this drawing of the UFO he saw hovering over a runway at Holloman Air Force Base.

This derelict manmade "flying saucer" was found in a Maryland barn on August 17, 1949. Courtesy of the modern Military Branch, National Archives, Washington, D.C.

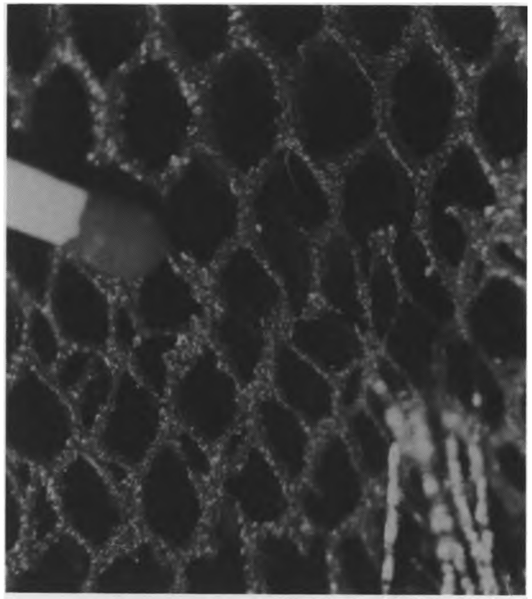


Corrugated honeycomb section of varying thickness, with burned outer layers.

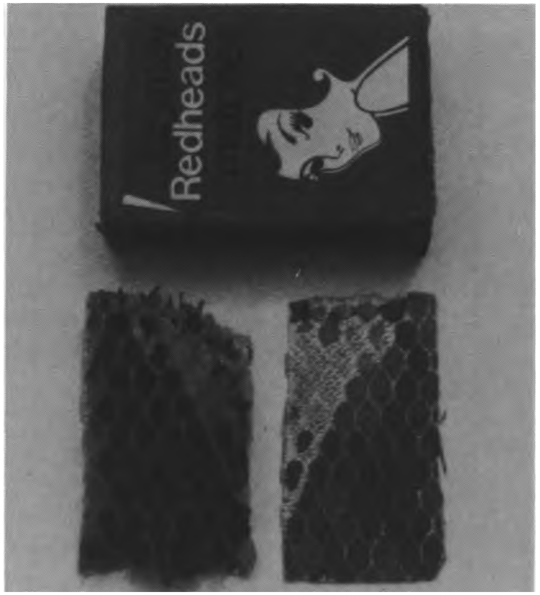


Closeup view of overlapping hexagons.

Above and Opposite page: Four photos of pieces from a discoid UFO that exploded over Queensland, Australia in 1966. Pieces of the UFO showed a layered, belted fiberglass-like material over a hexagons of metal. This is very similar in manufacture as many popular brands of skis for snow-skiing! From the book Alien Honeycomb, 1980, by Pinkney and Ryzman.



Elongated hexagonal pattern, photographed macroscopically, showing overlap. Match illustrates comparative size.



Left: section of honeycomb sheet. *Right:* patterned outer layer.

►A.M. INTERVIEW

There are no UFOs, just U.S. secrets

►Lamy resident says stories about "space aliens" are propaganda to cover up a giant government conspiracy.

BY TOM SHARPE
JOURNAL STAFF WRITER

Bill Lyne says stories about space aliens and UFOs are part of an elaborate government conspiracy to keep secret the existence of man-made electrical flying machines.

"I can spot them in the sky almost any night, usually over toward Albuquerque or Los Alamos," the Lamy resident said in a recent interview. "I've seen them land in Eldorado."

Lyne said many people mistake these machines for stars, but that he has learned how to distinguish between the two.

Electric flying machines "blink and wobble too much." he said.

"Sometimes they blink quite brightly, so much that they give you a headache."

Close up
Name: Bill Lyne
Age: 55
Residence: Lamy since 1974
Education: Master's of fine arts, University of Texas
Occupation: Apartment owner, artist

You may have noticed Lyne's self-published book in some local stores.

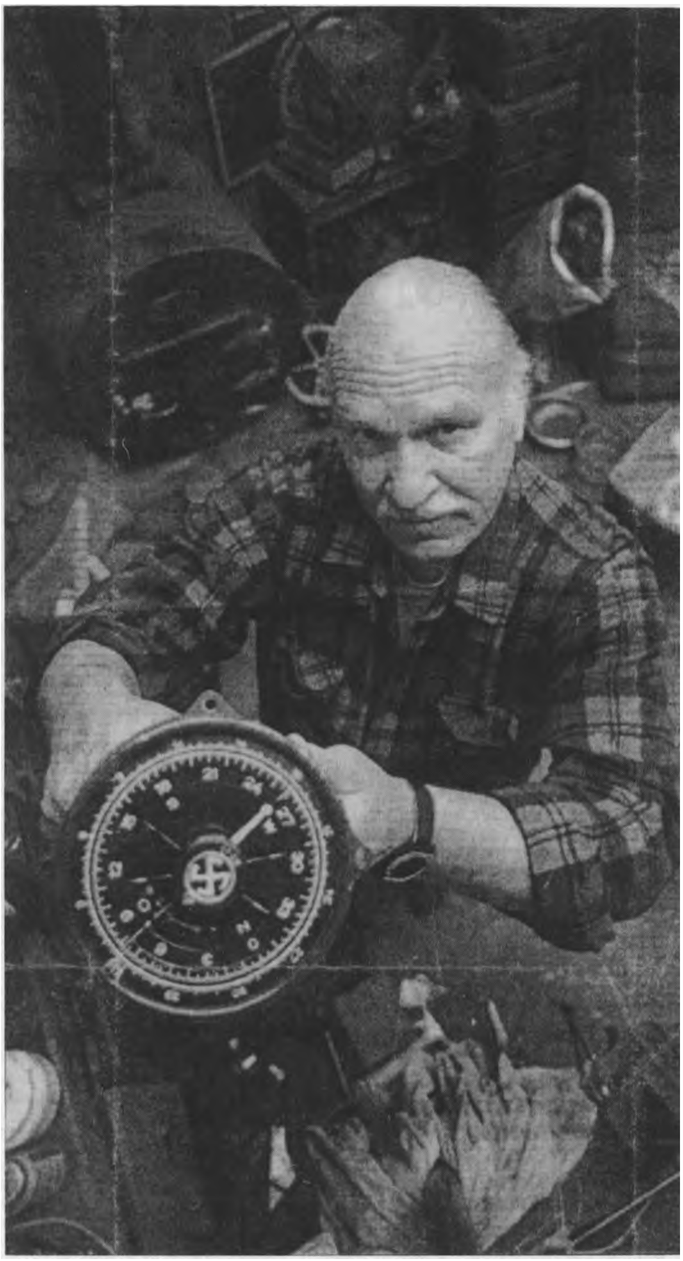
"Space Aliens from the Pentagon," with Lyne's hand-painted cover which sports an iridescent silver saucer in a bright blue triangle, strange symbols and equations, is hard to miss.

The 244-page book aims to set the record straight, at least from Lyne's point of view, about how Texans are "the Jews of Nazi New Mexico," why the northern part of the state has become a "one of the primary deal-making and distribution points for CIA-connected cocaine traffic" and how the government often uses "closet homosexuals" for spies.

But Lyne's most compelling theory is that the public has been deceived by a misinformation campaign to blame UFOs, cattle mutilations and other odd occurrences on extraterrestrials.

The real story, he says, goes back to a Yugoslavian scientist named Nicola Tesla who discovered the rotating magnetic

See **THERE** ► PAGE 3



NEIL JACOBS/JOURNAL

Bill Lyne displays what he says is a part from the guidance system for a German World War II "flying saucer."

There are no UFOs, just U.S. secrets

From **PAGE 1**

field. Lyne said that in the late 1800s Tesla first proposed the technology behind the electrical flying machine — involving a tuned coil that emits a negative electrical charge in the direction the craft moves.

Lyne said Tesla's idea was stolen by an Austrian group who built a few workable machines for Axis use in World War II, but who never figured out how to arm the machines because their high electrical charges were apt to set off conventional explosives.

The U.S. military, working with others, later developed the machines for surveillance purposes, he said.

Lyne said he began hearing about flying saucers when he was a child in his hometown of Kermit, Texas, just across the state line from Jal, N.M. He recalls the "Roswell Incident", of 1947 in which a saucer was reported to have crashed in southeastern New Mexico, killing its Crew of reputed space aliens.

"They were just a bunch of monkeys that were being used in rocket-sled experiments" to test the effects of acceleration, Lyne said.

He said he knew a brother of the pathologist who performed tests on the dead creatures and had photographs of the wrecked vehicle and the dead monkeys in space suits which were obviously sewn.

"It was sure not alien technology," he said.

Lyne said that when he was 15, he got his first good look at a saucer hovering near the Kermit water tower, before it sped back toward New Mexico. He said a neighbor also saw the vessel, but seemed more interested in his reaction, so he figured she was a government agent.

He blames rumors about space aliens on today's New Age movement and UFO groups which, he said, are largely made up of government agents seeking to confuse the public. Lyne said he has purchased discarded parts of flying machines in an Albuquerque junk store. His book includes instructions on how to build one.

Because of his expertise and his efforts to debunk the UFO myth, he said, government agencies like the CIA have tried to discredit and even kill him.

He said the government has left him alone for more than a year — perhaps signaling a change of policy — but that he doesn't expect the veil of secrecy to be lifted any time soon.

"The fact that they've concealed this so thoroughly indicates to me that they don't have any intentions of ever revealing it," he said.

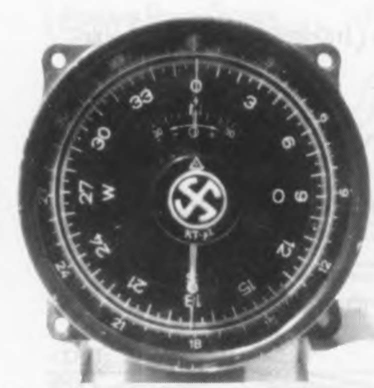


FIG. 1:

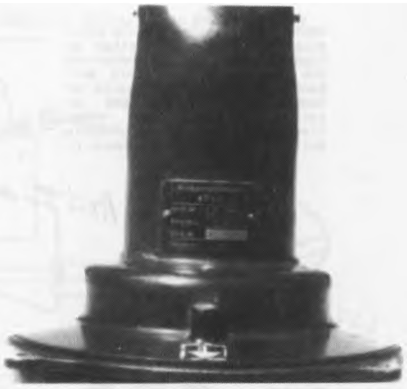


FIG. 2:

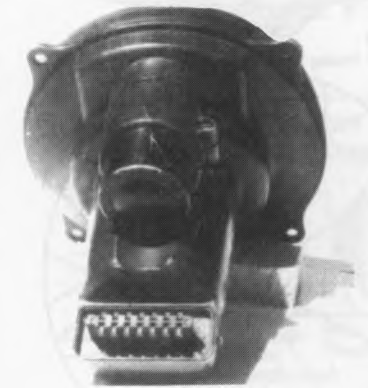


FIG. 3:

© 1993

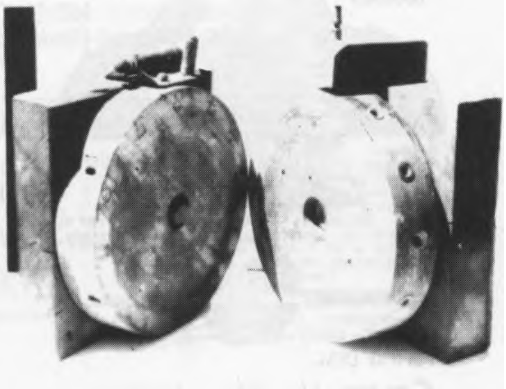


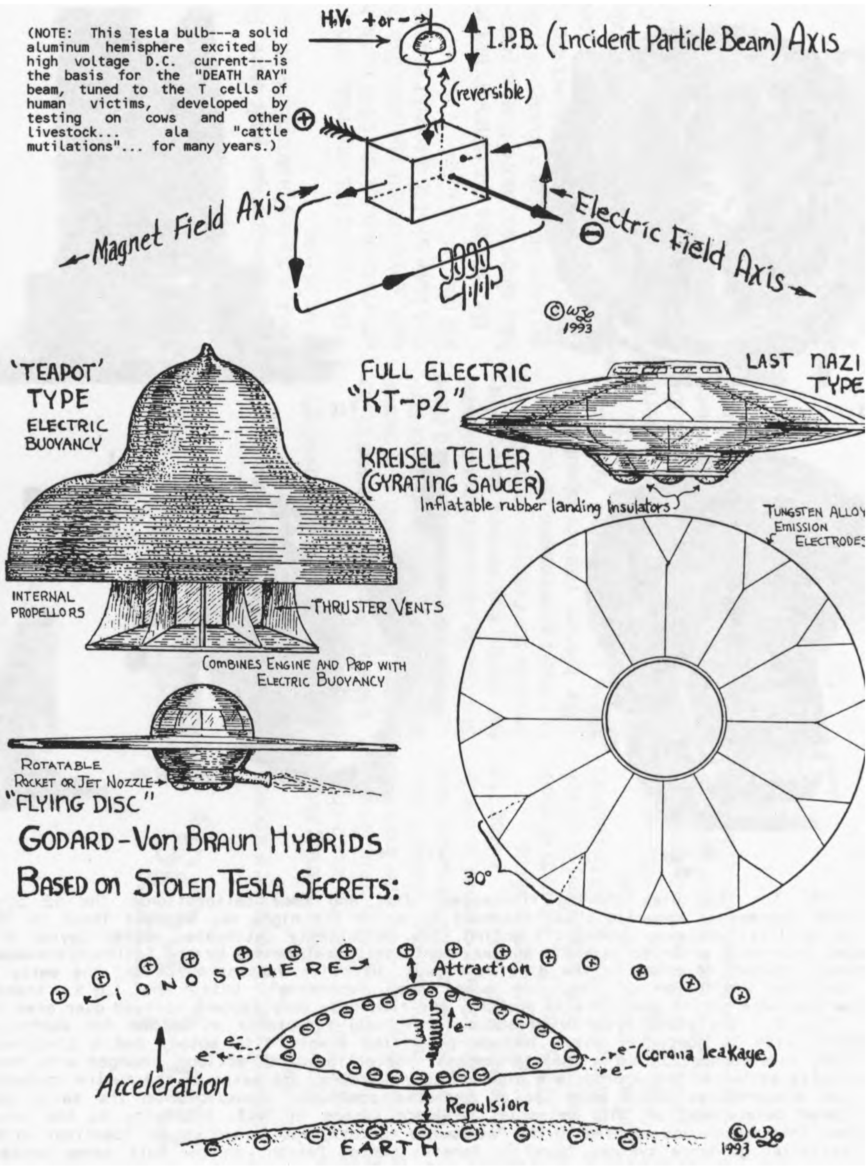
FIG. 4:

FIG. 1: Top view showing fluorescent dial and face calibrations. The 12 30-degree directional increments comprise those observed by me in the night sky of West Texas in 1950–53, prior to my first close-up daylight sighting. The celestially calibrated master (gyro) compass, indicated true north prior to takeoff, and was continually referenced by the Peiltochterkompass, as directional changes selected on the dial were made. With its fantastic speeds, the early saucer still had the limitation of requiring some “dead reckoning”, until the I.G.S. transponder implantations were put to use. This is probably the reason so many saucers strayed over area towns.

FIG. 2: Horizontal rear view shows label, and receptacle at bottom or control cable attachment, with 14 contacts, which include power for 6-volt D.C. motor, and 6 bi-directional polarities, interconnected to the “Meisterkompass”. Selection of directional changes with the dial, automatically activated the appropriate high-voltage switches, via pairs of the twelve contacts. The electrical disturbances which made use of magnetic compasses impossible on the early saucers, necessitated development of this celestial guidance system in 1943. Necessity is the mother of invention! This system was adapted to the Peenemünde rockets, and is similar or identical to the 200 or so celestial guidance systems found by General George Patton, in the salt caves beneath the Peenemünde complex in 1945. Patton was infuriated when he was required to destroy them. This also proves possession of German-made celestial guidance systems—other than those destroyed by Patton—-by our military, long before generally believed.

FIG. 3: Perspective view of the Peiltochterkompass.

FIG. 4: Photo of two antiquated wooden, high-voltage Tesla tuning coil forms (coils missing), purchased by me from the Los Alamos Scientific Laboratory (“LASL”) salvage, around 1978. Twelve 30-degree increments on the notched form are primitively secured by an old window latch. They were part of some stuff cleared out of an “old barn” in the oldest area of the lab. Examination of the patina, materials, screws, nuts, bolts, and other hardware, indicates a ca. 1900 construction date, long before the 1942 Manhattan Project. The forms were apparently reworked in the 1950s to add modern automotive thrust bearings. Handwriting on them comports with that of Nikola Tesla. They were probably among electrical apparati acquired by the Illuminati from Tesla’s Colorado Springs workshops, via sheriff’s sales, taken eventually south to Los Alamos for use in Von Braun’s Illuminati “p2” project. Lab security personnel were probably unaware of their origin or use by the time they were released for sale in 1978.

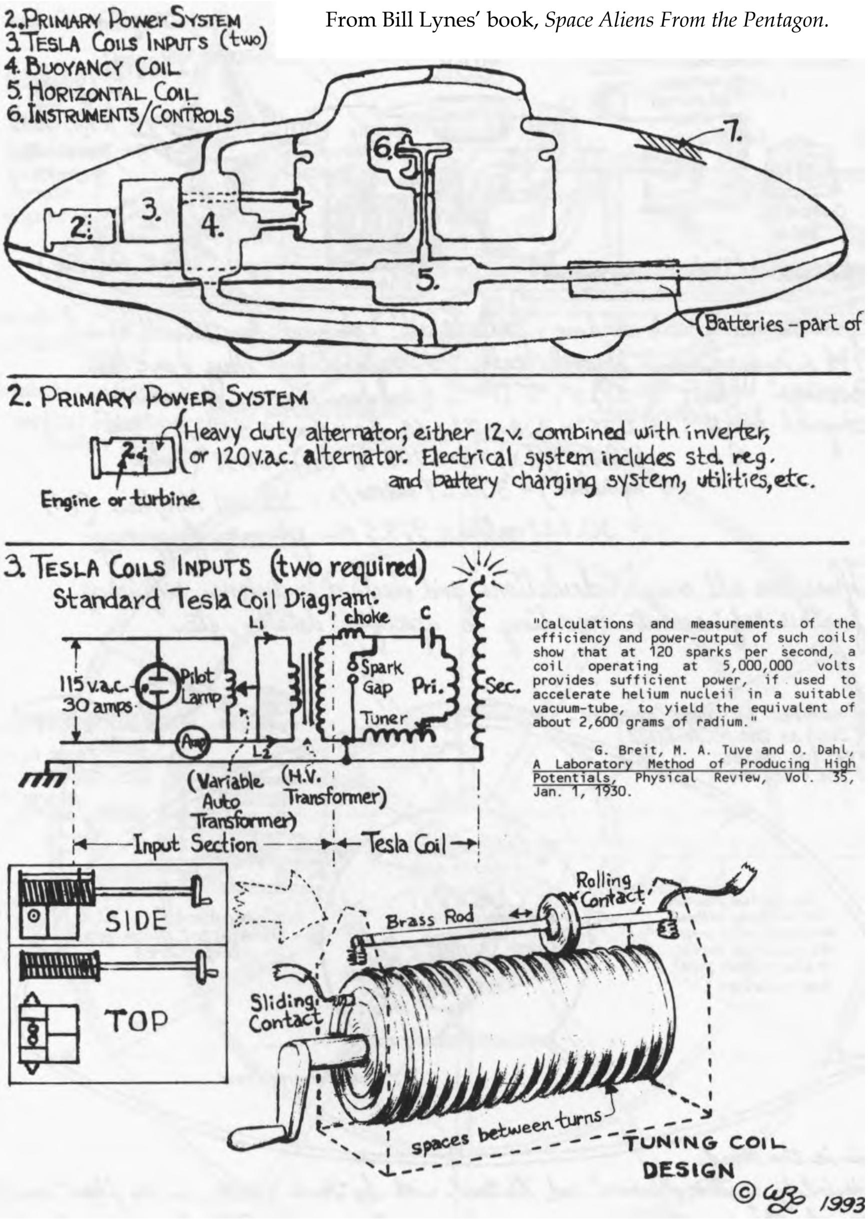


(NOTE: This Tesla bulb---a solid aluminum hemisphere excited by high voltage D.C. current---is the basis for the "DEATH RAY" beam, tuned to the T cells of human victims, developed by testing on cows and other livestock... ala "cattle mutilations"... for many years.)

H.V. +or-
I.P.B. (Incident Particle Beam) Axis
(reversible)
⊕
Magnet Field Axis
Electric Field Axis
⊖
©W3O 1993
'TEAPOT' TYPE
ELECTRIC BUOYANCY
INTERNAL PROPELLORS
THRUSTER VENTS
COMBINES ENGINE AND PROP WITH ELECTRIC BUOYANCY
FULL ELECTRIC "KT-p2"
LAST NAZI TYPE
KREISEL TELLER (GYRATING SAUCER)
Inflatable rubber landing insulators
TUNGSTEN ALLOY EMISSION ELECTRODES
30°
ROTATABLE ROCKET OR JET NOZZLE
"FLYING DISC"
GODARD-Von BRAUN HYBRIDS
BASED ON STOLEN TESLA SECRETS:
IONOSPHERE
Attraction
e-
(corona leakage)
Acceleration
Repulsion
EARTH
©W3O 1993

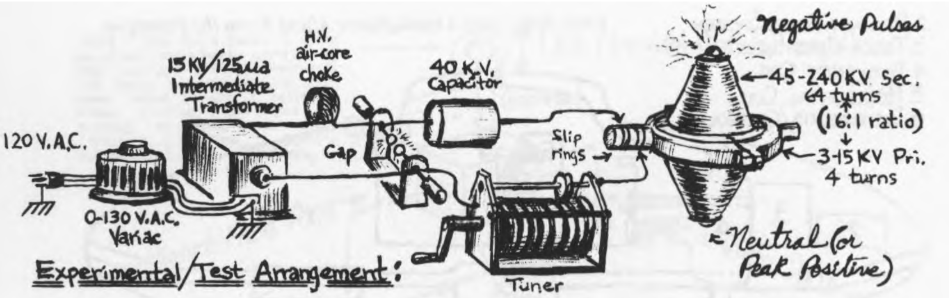
From Bill Lynes' book, *Space Aliens From the Pentagon*.

From Bill Lynes' book, *Space Aliens From the Pentagon.*


2. PRIMARY POWER SYSTEM
3. TESLA COILS INPUTS (two)
4. BUOYANCY COIL
5. HORIZONTAL COIL
6. INSTRUMENTS/CONTROLS
7.
2.
3.
4.
5.
6.
Batteries - part of
2. PRIMARY POWER SYSTEM
Heavy duty alternator; either 12 v. combined with inverter, or 120 v.a.c. alternator. Electrical system includes std. reg. and battery charging system, utilities, etc.
Engine or turbine
3. TESLA COILS INPUTS (two required)
Standard Tesla Coil Diagram:
L1
choke
C
Spark Gap
Pri.
Sec.
Tuner
115 v.a.c. 30 amps.
Pilot Lamp
Amp
L2
(Variable Auto Transformer)
(H.V. Transformer)
Input Section
Tesla Coil
SIDE
TOP
Brass Rod
Rolling Contact
Sliding Contact
spaces between turns
TUNING COIL DESIGN
© WL 1993

"Calculations and measurements of the efficiency and power-output of such coils show that at 120 sparks per second, a coil operating at 5,000,000 volts provides sufficient power, if used to accelerate helium nucleii in a suitable vacuum-tube, to yield the equivalent of about 2,600 grams of radium."

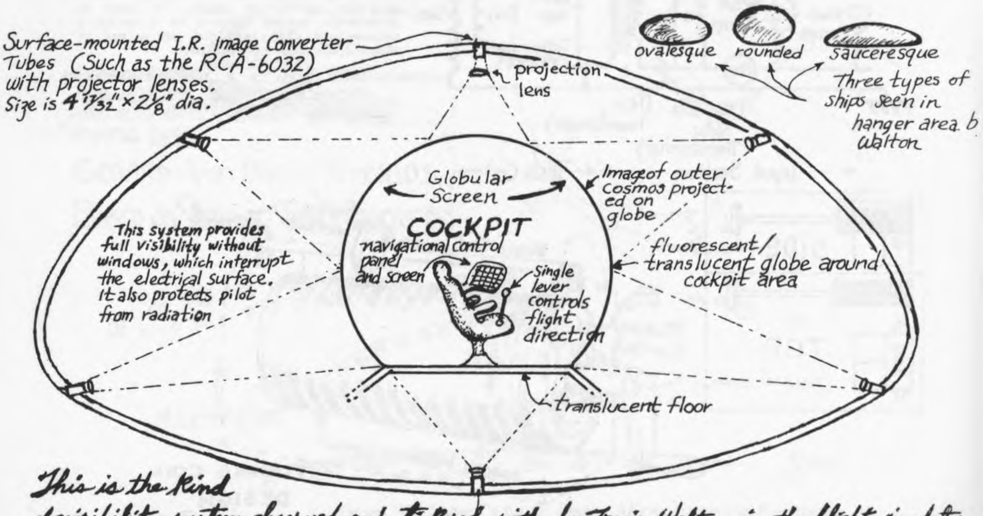
G. Breit, M. A. Tuve and O. Dahl, A Laboratory Method of Producing High Potentials, Physical Review, Vol. 35, Jan. 1, 1930.


Negative Pulses
45-240 KV. Sec.
64 turns
(16:1 ratio)
3-15 KV Pri.
4 turns
Neutral (or Peak Positive)
H.V. air-core choke
15 KV/125 ua Intermediate Transformer
40 K.V. Capacitor
120 V.A.C.
Gap
Slip rings
0-130 V.A.C. Variac
Tuner

Experimental/Test Arrangement:

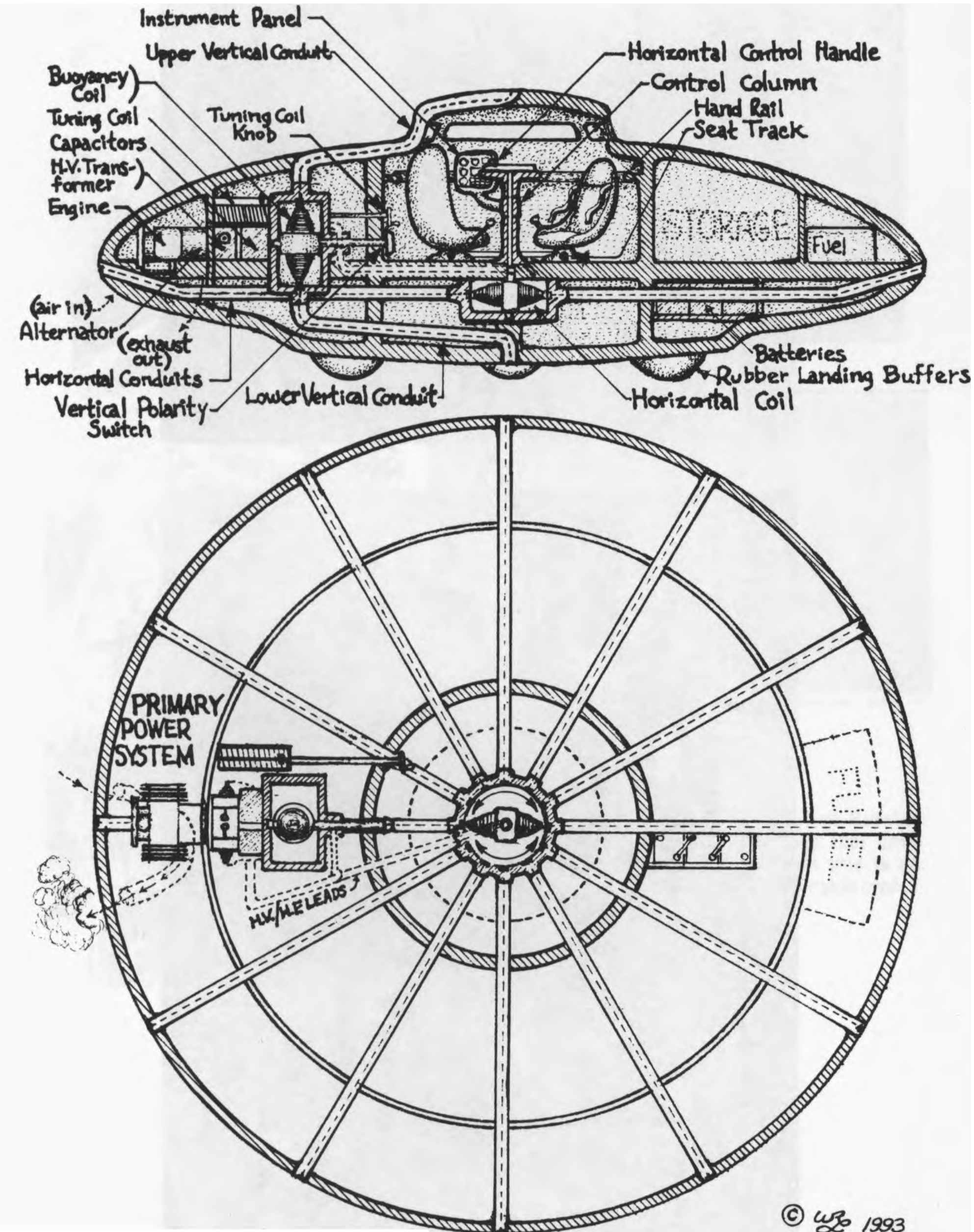
Your secondary coil winding ('football coil') physical length, will equal 3/8 × λ of primary. Hypothetically, the tapered coil may have an 'average' dia. of 2.25", π D = S (circumference) × no. of turns = physical length: 2.25" × 3.14 = 7" × 64 turns (sec.) = 452" ÷ 3 = 150.72" (1/8 λ) × 8 = 1205.76" (λ) ÷ 39.37" (metric equivalent) = 30.627 meters/λ. 300,000 Km./sec. ("c") ÷ 30.627 meters = 979.5 Kc. primary frequency.

These are all rough calculations and electrical designs, requiring further refinement, according to specific details, etc.

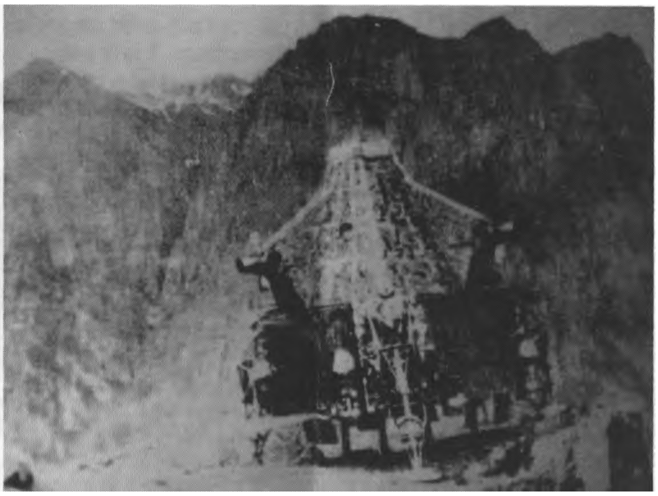

Surface-mounted I.R. Image Converter Tubes (Such as the RCA-6032) with projector lenses. Size is 4 17/32" × 2 1/8" dia.
projection lens
ovalesque
rounded
sauceresque
Three types of ships seen in hanger area b Walton
Globular Screen
Image of outer cosmos projected on globe
COCKPIT
navigational control panel and screen
Single lever controls flight direction
This system provides full visibility without windows, which interrupt the electrical surface. It also protects pilot from radiation
fluorescent/translucent globe around cockpit area
translucent floor

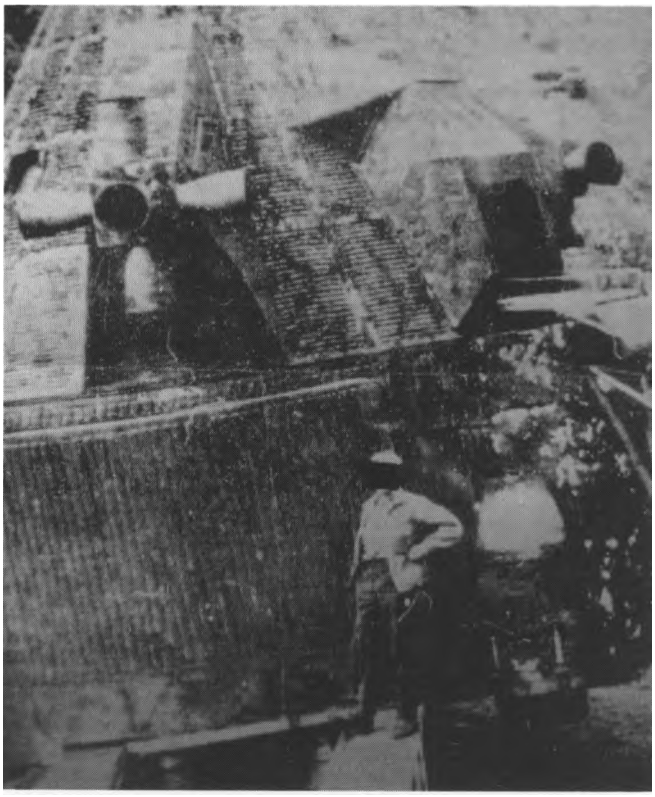
This is the Kind of visibility system observed and tinkered with by Travis Walton, in the flight simulator area of the secret flying saucer base in Arizona, in 1975. It creates the effect that the pilot is sitting in the sky, with 360° visibility, day or night.

© WJG 1993

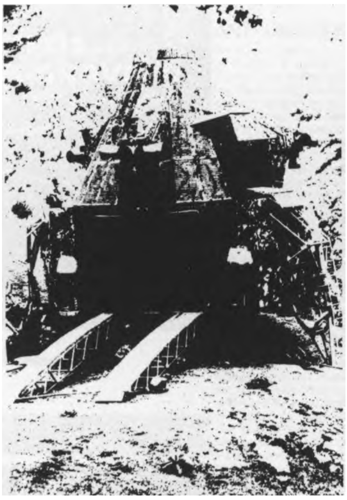

Instrument Panel
Upper Vertical Conduit
Buoyancy Coil
Tuning Coil
Capacitors
H.V. Transformer
Engine
Tuning Coil Knob
Horizontal Control Handle
Control Column
Hand Rail
Seat Track
STORAGE
Fuel
(air in)
Alternator
(exhaust out)
Horizontal Conduits
Vertical Polarity Switch
Lower Vertical Conduit
Horizontal Coil
Batteries
Rubber Landing Buffers
PRIMARY POWER SYSTEM
H.V./L.E LEADS
FUEL
© WLo 1993

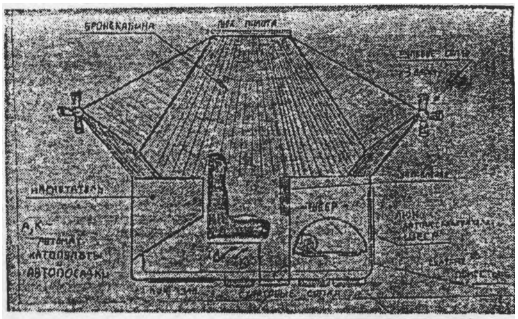
From Bill Lynes' book, *Space Aliens From the Pentagon*.





Two photos of an alleged anti-gravity craft photographed in the Caucasus Mountains in Azerbaijan sometime around 1983. Speculation about the craft includes that it was part of a long-secret Soviet space program, a prop for a science-fiction movie, or an early anti-gravity craft, possibly from World War II or before. Note the similar look of this craft to the Lunar Module used in the Apollo missions to the moon. If this were a prop for a science-fiction film, then why mask the man's face? The photographer or origin of the photo remain unknown.




БРОНЕКАБИНА
НАГНЕТАТЕЛЬ
А,К —
АВТОМАТ
КАТАПУЛЬТЫ
И
АВТОПОСАДКИ
ШЕЕР

Чертеж радиозонда, предназначенного для исследовательских работ в горах.

More photos and drawings of the odd-ball Russian UFO. Though the few UFO magazines that have printed these photos have claimed that this is an extraterrestrial vehicle, it is clearly a man-made craft.

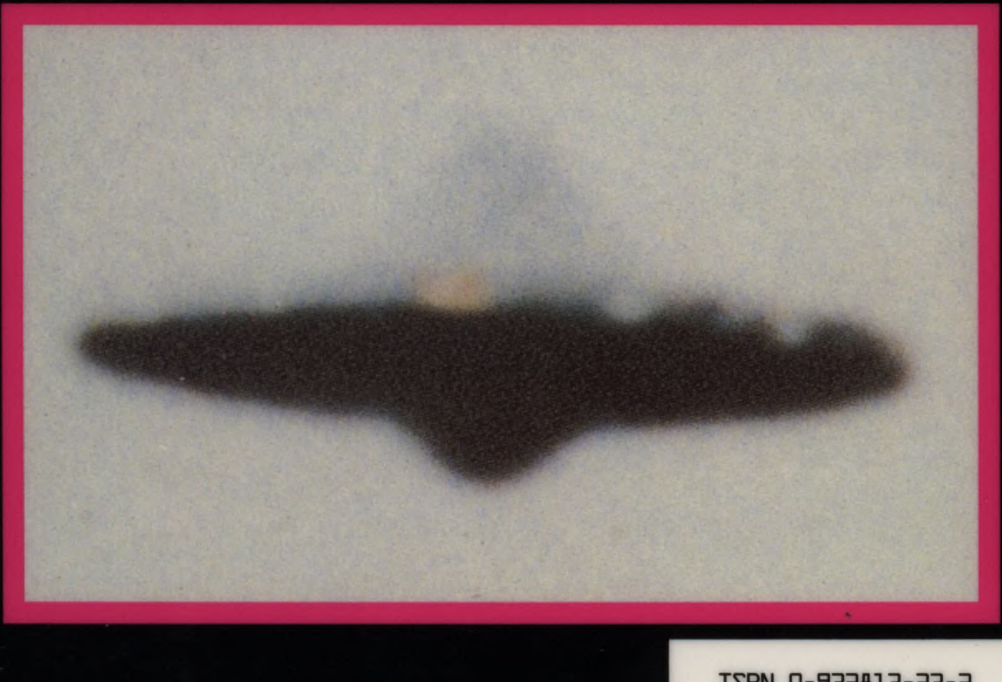
$18.95

UFOs/Suppressed Technology/New Age

Man-Made UFOs, 1944-1994

50 Years of Suppression

A comprehensive and in-depth look at the early "flying saucer technology" of Nazi Germany and the genesis of early man-made UFOs from the captured German scientists to escaped battalions of Germans to secret communities in South America and Antarctica to today's state-of-the-art "Dreamland" flying machines. Heavily illustrated, this astonishing book blows the lid off the "Government UFO conspiracy" and explains with technical diagrams the technology involved. Examined in detail are secret underground airfields and factories; German secret weapons; "suction" aircraft; the origin of NASA; gyroscopic stabilizers and engines; and the secret Marconi aircraft factory in South America. The secret Marconi base in South America, and other secret societies, both ancient and modern, that have kept this craft a secret are also discussed. *Man-Made UFOs* is required reading for students of technology suppression, UFOs, anti-gravity, free energy conspiracy and World War II. This astounding book is packed with photos and diagrams.



ISBN 0-932813-23-2

90000>

9 780932 813237

ISBN 0-932813-23-2
Adventures Unlimited Press

Lifting the Veil

An Investigative History of the United States Pathocracy

Researched and Written by Timothy M. Silver

Lifting the Veil is being constantly updated thanks to continuous reader feedback and further research. This copy was released on:

March 12, 2014

If more than a month has passed, please check my website *ThePeoplesHistory.net* for a more recent version.

“I know the capacity that is there to make tyranny total in
America, and we must see to it that this agency [CIA] and all
agencies that possess this technology operate within the law and
under proper supervision, so that we never cross over that abyss.
That is the abyss from which there is no return.”

- Senator Frank Church, 1975[1]

---

[1] *The Guardian,* “Edward Snowden: saving us from the United Stasi of America,” June 10, 2013

Preface

It has been a little over a year since I first read about the Central Intelligence Agency program known as MK-ULTRA, which was dedicated to exploring the vast possibilities of 'biological behavioral engineering', also known as mind control. I was stunned by the depth of the horror unleashed on the unwitting victims of the program, less than a decade removed from the Nuremberg Trials which concluded that never again should scientists experiment on subjects without their willing consent. I was impressed that the Agency deftly avoided any significant reform, even after multiple congressional inquiries into their illegal, unconstitutional activities which the disclosure of MK-ULTRA prompted, and was disturbed by the complete lack of information regarding the program in the general public. Most shocking, despite Agency insistence to the contrary, was the documented evidence that their mission of controlling the human mind bore significant fruit.

As an aspiring Historian, I set off to work on turning over every stone related to covert intelligence activities and other suppressed history, created the pen name Morgan Martell and began publishing my research on a blog titled 'The Peoples History'. Since then, I have read dozens of books and thousands of mainstream media articles, interviews, scientific studies and primary documents in my quest for knowledge. Before long I came to the understanding that I was not just learning about a series of unrelated clandestine agency abuses and financial crimes, but rather was researching various disclosures of an organized subversive network working behind the scenes. A bold statement like this requires bold evidence, of course, and I invite you to investigate the nearly 500 citations of publicly available, mainstream sources yourself and come to your own conclusions.

I used the name Morgan Martell for a brief period because I was worried that my work would attract the wrong kind of attention. In fact, when I first wrote about the MK-

ULTRA project, I deliberately omitted some information, not because I thought it was unimportant or that it lacked sufficient documentation, but because some of the documented history is so shocking that I was afraid to write about it. The revelations of Edward Snowden, beginning on June 6, 2013, changed my mind about the secrecy. The NSA knows exactly who I am and what I am researching, so you might as well too. I promise that nothing I have learned which can be corroborated has been left out of this book, even when facing the depths of depravity unleashed by certain psychopaths in position of power.

Whether you are approaching this work from a vantage point of exploring new ideas, learning more about topics that already interest you, or if you are antagonistic to the idea that something is 'not quite right' with the United States today, I urge you to have an open mind and to be prepared to synthesize new information into your worldview. In return, I am willing to do the same from you. Every day I strive to learn new things and explore new ideas, a fact which has delayed the release of this book for some months as I continuously refined and expanded the thesis. If you have alternative ideas you would like to share, criticism to offer, or have additional research that would augment this work, please do not hesitate to contact me. I thoroughly enjoy the correspondence.

'Lifting the Veil' is structured in a way that discusses two startling problems with the current political system in the United States today, and then jumps to 1946 and works forward in time to shed light on how these problems came about. Woven in is information on psychopathy and its relationship to politics and power, my own conclusions drawn from the information, and 'food for thought' questions. The final portion of the book ties together the pieces of the puzzle and presents potential, non-partisan solutions we can take to affect change.

I ask one thing from you, the reader, before embarking on this journey. Once you finish, if you believe that this work is important, please resolve yourself to share it with at least two people, whether they are someone you know in real life, online acquaintances or anonymous recipients. I have released this book free for a reason. It is the only way this information will spread to a point where it will reach a 'critical mass'. Once it does, change will be inevitable. Lets endeavor to make this happen as soon as possible.

Thanks for reading,

Timothy M. Silver

timsilverpeopleshistory@gmail.com

Index

Chapter I: The War on Terror is a Fraud

Chapter II: The One Party State

Chapter III: Psychopathy, Power and Politics

Chapter IV: Operation Paperclip

Chapter V: MK-ULTRA

Chapter VI: Operation Gladio

Chapter VII: Operation Mockingbird

Chapter VIII: COINTELPRO

Chapter IX: The Phoenix Program

Chapter X: Iran/Contra

Chapter XI: Continuity of Government

Chapter XII: The Pedophocracy

Chapter XIII: Cults and Child Abuse

Chapter XIV: Trauma-Based Mind Control

Chapter XV: The Pathocracy

Chapter XVI: Solutions

Chapter XVII: The Awakening

The War on Terror is a Fraud

"In the mid-'80s, if you remember... Saudi Arabia and the United States were supporting the Mujahideen to liberate Afghanistan from the Soviets. He [Osama bin Laden] came to thank me for my efforts to bring the Americans, our friends, to help us against the atheists, he said the communists. Isn't it ironic?" - Prince Bandar bin Sultan of Saudi Arabia, on Larry King Live[2]

President Reagan meets with members of the Mujahideen in the Oval Office, 1985

In 2009, a series of events occurred that ought to have raised questions in the press. First, the United States began a troop surge in Afghanistan designed to deliver the final blow to the Taliban insurgency.[3] Then the United States provided a $7.5 billion aid package to Pakistan.[4] Around the same time, the Carnegie Foundation published a study which revealed a majority of Pakistan aid goes to the intelligence agency ISI and the military.[5] The problem with these three events is that earlier in the year, U.S. officials revealed to the *New York Times* that the ISI was funding the Taliban, and was responsible for providing direct assistance and helping with some of their strategic strikes.[6]

---

[2] *CNN,* "America's New War: Responding to Terrorism," October 1, 2001

The press did cover these stories, but independent of one another. Not one media institution connected the dots that the United States was actively funding the harm that its armed forces were simultaneously fighting. Following the official narrative of the war, it certainly doesn't make any sense that the United States was indirectly prolonging the quagmire. Perhaps such mistakes are the inevitability of a bloated war bureaucracy, or that U.S. officials simply didn't realize the connection. Unfortunately, a collection of evidence points to a more sinister explanation: the United States and its allies have been deliberately proliferating radical Islam for decades, only to later spend trillions fighting the enemy they created.

Just days after the July 7, 2005 London terror attack, and less than a month before his untimely death, the Right Honorable Robin Cook, former UK Foreign Secretary, wrote a scathing and emotional review of the War on Terror in *The Guardian*.

> "Bin Laden was, though, a product of a monumental miscalculation by western security agencies. Throughout the '80s he was armed by the CIA and funded by the Saudis to wage jihad against the Russian occupation of Afghanistan. Al-Qaida,

---

[3] *Wall Street Journal,* "Obama Bets Big on Troop Surge", December 2, 2009. In 2009, Barack Obama ordered a surge of 30,000 troops in Afghanistan to fight the War on Terror.

[4] *Newsweek,* "About Those Billions", October 20, 2009. The $7.5 Billion in aid to Pakistan tripled previous agreements, and locked in the economic alliance for another 5 years.

[5] Carnegie Foundation,"Who Benefits from aid to Pakistan?"

[6] *New York Times,* "Afghan Strikes By Taliban Get Pakistan Help, U.S. Aides Say," March 25, 2009

> literally "the database", was originally the computer file of the thousands of mujahideen who were recruited and trained with help from the CIA to defeat the Russians. Inexplicably, and with disastrous consequences, it never appears to have occurred to Washington that once Russia was out of the way, Bin Laden's organization would turn its attention to the west."[7]

While Cook's remarks were downplayed and ridiculed by the mainstream media and the United Kingdom establishment at the time, available evidence shows his assertions to be largely correct.

* * * *

Operation Cyclone

> "They [the CIA] told me these people were fanatical, and the more fierce they were the more fiercely they would fight the Soviets... I warned them that we were creating a monster." - Scholar Selig Harrison[8]

The story begins in 1978 shortly after the Saur Revolution, which resulted in the communist People's Democratic Party of Afghanistan gaining control of the Afghanistan government. The CIA immediately initiated a program known as Operation Cyclone and began funding militant Islamic groups favored by the Pakistani intelligence agency ISI, to the tune of 7.5 billion.[9] The money went to producing, training, and arming militant Islamic radicals who be directed towards fighting the secular communist government. At the time, the Mujahideen was composed of many different, loosely organized groups encompassing a broad spectrum of ideologies, with widely varying perspectives on religion, society and state . Seven major Afghan factions began receiving aid, three of them Islamic moderates and four of them Islamic fundamentalists as defined by the military, and in addition to native Afghans they were composed of many foreigners who traveled to fight the invasion, such as Osama bin Laden himself.[10]

---

[7] *The Guardian,* "The Struggle Against Terrorism Cannot Be Won By Military Means," July 8, 2005. A great article written by Robert Cook, whose life was tragically cut short within a year of its publication from a heart attack worth reading in its entirety.

[8] Selig's full comments available here.

To understand the scope of the funding, the *BBC* stated that the CIA provided enough arms to equip a 240,000 man army, and Saudi Arabia matched them dollar for dollar.[11] The weapons given to these fighters were not just AK-47s and other simple arms. Many were high tech, such as Stinger Anti-Aircraft missiles[12], provided with the intention of demoralizing Soviet commanders and soldiers.[13]

The majority of the funding was funneled through the ISI, which acted as an arm of CIA interests and began setting up religious schools known as Madrassas in Pakistan cities and frontier areas, churning out tens of thousands of students who would join the Mujahideen.[14] (Note: Madrassas are not inherently negative institutions, however the ones who received funding from the CIA were particularly radical).

All of this began before the Soviets invaded Afghanistan. A full 6 months, according to Zbigniew Brzezinski, President Carter's National Security Advisor, who recalled his involvement to a French news magazine in 1998:

---

[9] Figure taken from *Pakistan Institute of Legislative Development and Transparency*, in a briefing to the Pakistan parliament.

[10] The major factions who received aid are detailed in an article published in the *Journal of Slavic Military Studies*, written by Retired Army Col. Lester W. Grau.

[11] *BBC,* "Pakistans Shadowy Secret Service," October 9, 2006

[12] *Slate,* "Stingers, Stingers, Who's Got The Stingers?" October 3, 2001

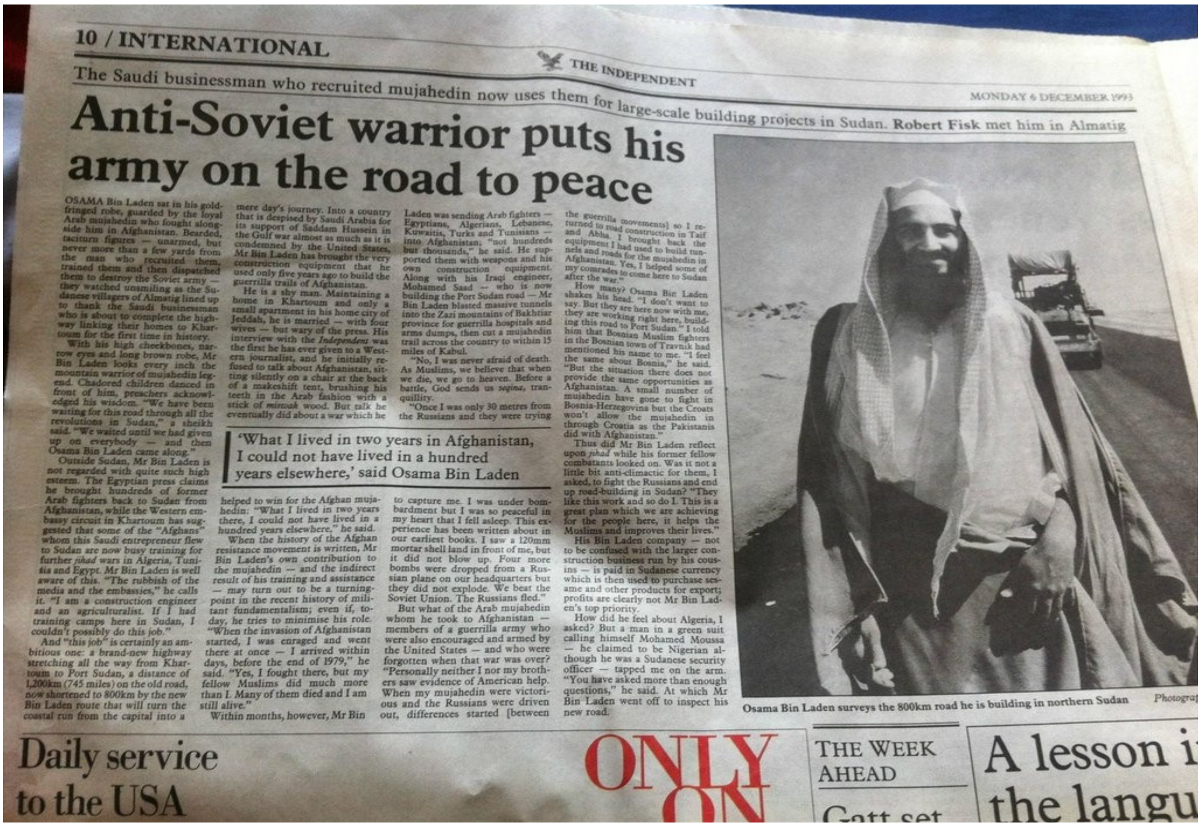
[13] *Washington Post,* "Osama bin Laden Created By The US," 1992

[14] *BBC,* "Pakistans Shadowy Secret Service," October 9, 2006

"We didn't push the Russians to intervene, but we knowingly increased the probability that they would... That secret operation was an excellent idea. It had the effect of drawing the Soviets into the Afghan trap. The day that the Soviets officially crossed the border I wrote to President Carter, 'We now have the opportunity of giving the Soviet Union its Vietnam War.'"[15]

* * * *

Early Years of Osama Bin Laden



10 / INTERNATIONAL

THE INDEPENDENT

MONDAY 6 DECEMBER 1993

The Saudi businessman who recruited mujahedin now uses them for large-scale building projects in Sudan. **Robert Fisk** met him in Almatig

Anti-Soviet warrior puts his army on the road to peace

OSAMA Bin Laden sat in his gold-fringed robe, guarded by the loyal Arab mujahedin who fought alongside him in Afghanistan. Bearded, taciturn figures — unarmed, but never more than a few yards from the man who recruited them, trained them and then dispatched them to destroy the Soviet army — they watched unsmiling as the Sudanese villagers of Almatig lined up to thank the Saudi businessman who is about to complete the highway linking their homes to Khartoum for the first time in history.

With his high cheekbones, narrow eyes and long brown robe, Mr Bin Laden looks every inch the mountain warrior of mujahedin legend. Chadored children danced in front of him, preachers acknowledged his wisdom. "We have been waiting for this road through all the revolutions in Sudan," a sheikh said. "We waited until we had given up on everybody — and then Osama Bin Laden came along."

Outside Sudan, Mr Bin Laden is not regarded with quite such high esteem. The Egyptian press claims he brought hundreds of former Arab fighters back to Sudan from Afghanistan, while the Western embassy circuit in Khartoum has suggested that some of the "Afghans" whom this Saudi entrepreneur flew to Sudan are now busy training for further *jihad* wars in Algeria, Tunisia and Egypt. Mr Bin Laden is well aware of this. "The rubbish of the media and the embassies," he calls it. "I am a construction engineer and an agriculturalist. If I had training camps here in Sudan, I couldn't possibly do this job."

And "this job" is certainly an ambitious one: a brand-new highway stretching all the way from Khartoum to Port Sudan, a distance of 1,200km (745 miles) on the old road, now shortened to 800km by the new Bin Laden route that will turn the coastal run from the capital into a mere day's journey. Into a country that is despised by Saudi Arabia for its support of Saddam Hussein in the Gulf war almost as much as it is condemned by the United States, Mr Bin Laden has brought the very construction equipment that he used only five years ago to build the guerrilla trails of Afghanistan.

He is a shy man. Maintaining a home in Khartoum and only a small apartment in his home city of Jeddah, he is married — with four wives — but wary of the press. His interview with the *Independent* was the first he has ever given to a Western journalist, and he initially refused to talk about Afghanistan, sitting silently on a chair at the back of a makeshift tent, brushing his teeth in the Arab fashion with a stick of *miswak* wood. But talk he eventually did about a war which he helped to win for the Afghan mujahedin: "What I lived in two years there, I could not have lived in a hundred years elsewhere," he said.

> 'What I lived in two years in Afghanistan, I could not have lived in a hundred years elsewhere,' said Osama Bin Laden

When the history of the Afghan resistance movement is written, Mr Bin Laden's own contribution to the mujahedin — and the indirect result of his training and assistance — may turn out to be a turning-point in the recent history of militant fundamentalism; even if, today, he tries to minimise his role. "When the invasion of Afghanistan started, I was enraged and went there at once — I arrived within days, before the end of 1979," he said. "Yes, I fought there, but my fellow Muslims did much more than I. Many of them died and I am still alive."

Within months, however, Mr Bin Laden was sending Arab fighters — Egyptians, Algerians, Lebanese, Kuwaitis, Turks and Tunisians — into Afghanistan; "not hundreds but thousands," he said. He supported them with weapons and his own construction equipment. Along with his Iraqi engineer, Mohamed Saad — who is now building the Port Sudan road — Mr Bin Laden blasted massive tunnels into the Zazi mountains of Bakhtiar province for guerrilla hospitals and arms dumps, then cut a mujahedin trail across the country to within 15 miles of Kabul.

"No, I was never afraid of death. As Muslims, we believe that when we die, we go to heaven. Before a battle, God sends us *seqina*, tranquillity.

"Once I was only 30 metres from the Russians and they were trying to capture me. I was under bombardment but I was so peaceful in my heart that I fell asleep. This experience has been written about in our earliest books. I saw a 120mm mortar shell land in front of me, but it did not blow up. Four more bombs were dropped from a Russian plane on our headquarters but they did not explode. We beat the Soviet Union. The Russians fled."

But what of the Arab mujahedin whom he took to Afghanistan — members of a guerrilla army who were also encouraged and armed by the United States — and who were forgotten when that war was over? "Personally neither I nor my brothers saw evidence of American help. When my mujahedin were victorious and the Russians were driven out, differences started [between the guerrilla movements] so I returned to road construction in Taif and Abha. I brought back the equipment I had used to build tunnels and roads for the mujahedin in Afghanistan. Yes, I helped some of my comrades to come here to Sudan after the war."

How many? Osama Bin Laden shakes his head. "I don't want to say. But they are here now with me, they are working right here, building this road to Port Sudan." I told him that Bosnian Muslim fighters in the Bosnian town of Travnik had mentioned his name to me. "I feel the same about Bosnia," he said. "But the situation there does not provide the same opportunities as Afghanistan. A small number of mujahedin have gone to fight in Bosnia-Herzegovina but the Croats won't allow the mujahedin in through Croatia as the Pakistanis did with Afghanistan."

Thus did Mr Bin Laden reflect upon *jihad* while his former fellow combatants looked on. Was it not a little bit anti-climactic for them, I asked, to fight the Russians and end up road-building in Sudan? "They like this work and so do I. This is a great plan which we are achieving for the people here, it helps the Muslims and improves their lives."

His Bin Laden company — not to be confused with the larger construction business run by his cousins — is paid in Sudanese currency which is then used to purchase sesame and other products for export; profits are clearly not Mr Bin Laden's top priority.

How did he feel about Algeria, I asked? But a man in a green suit calling himself Mohamed Moussa — he claimed to be Nigerian although he was a Sudanese security officer — tapped me on the arm. "You have asked more than enough questions," he said. At which Mr Bin Laden went off to inspect his new road.

Osama Bin Laden surveys the 800km road he is building in northern Sudan

Photograp

Daily service
to the USA

ONLY
ON

THE WEEK
AHEAD

Gatt set

A lesson i
the langu

---

15 Bilveer Singh, "The Talibanization of Southeast Asia," Excerpt available here.

When Osama bin Laden arrived in Afghanistan from Saudi Arabia, he created a group called Maktab al-Khidamat, abbreviated as MAK, a precursor to Al-Qaeda. It is frequently claimed that the CIA directly funded this group, though top CIA officers say that this is not the case. It has been confirmed, at least, that the MAK did receive funding from the ISI,[16] the CIA's primary conduit for conducting their covert war against Russia.

CIA Station Chief in Afghanistan Milt Bearden has stated that he was well aware of Bin Laden in the Mujahideen, and welcomed his efforts in funding, though he never met with him personally.[17] Bin Laden also brought in construction equipment from his fathers company Saudi Binladen Group, considered the largest construction firm in the world, to build training camps, in collaboration with the ISI and CIA.[18]

In 1986, Osama used his construction assets to build a CIA financed tunnel complex to serve as a training facility. It was also a major arms and medical depot for the Mujahideen in the Peshawar mountains near Pakistan which was later used by Al-Qaeda.[19] 15 years later, the Western Media would describe Al-Qaeda as hiding out in caves, but the truth is a little more complex: there were intricate tunnels connecting hundreds of different caves, a majority of them man-made, equipped with irrigation systems, accommodation for trucks and even tanks, hotels, mosques, arms depots, medical and radio centers, and kitchens.[20] In short, it is more accurate to call them mountain fortresses.

Al-Qaeda was formed sometime between 1987-88, with the radical elements of MAK joining after the group split.

---

[16] Information taken from GlobalSecurity.org, a respected institution in the intelligence community.

[17] David Helms and Norm Dixon, "Behind the US War in Afghanistan."

[18] *New York Times,* "The Most Wanted Face of Terrorism", May 2, 2011.

[19] *The Pittsburgh Post-Gazette,* "How a Holy War Against the Soviets Turned Against the US," September 23, 2001. Written by respected investigative journalist and Middle-East insider Ahmed Rashid

[20] Mir Bahmanyar, "Afghanistan Cave Complexes 1979-2004: Mountain strongholds of the Mujahideen."

It is apparent that the CIA had no plan to deal with the tunnel complex after the conclusion of Operation Cyclone, though surely that must have been aware that the cadre of radicals they were instrumental in producing would not simply disappear or de-radicalize. Perhaps long term destabilization of the country was their plan all along.

* * * *

The Taliban

Evidence suggests that the Taliban is actively involved with Al-Qaeda. For example, one 1998 State Department cable claimed that: "Taliban Leader Mullah Omar lashed out at the U.S., asserting that the Taliban will continue providing a safe haven for Bin Laden."[21]

There is plenty of evidence that Pakistan's ISI currently actively funds the Taliban and other terrorist cells as well, while barring the U.S. military from operating in the tribal areas. A 2010 *BBC* article stated that the ISI was giving “funding, training and sanctuary to the Afghan Taliban on a scale much larger than previously thought,” going as far as to say that support for the Taliban was “official ISI policy.” Since 9/11, the United States has given Pakistan over $15 billion, much of which goes to the ISI and military.[22]

Current Vice President Joe Biden said himself in 2003 that the ISI was either turning a blind eye or cooperating with the Taliban. In addition, some members of the Senate Foreign Relations Committee "contend that the intelligence service may have provided money, weapons and broadcast equipment to Taliban fighters now in Pakistan to transmit anti-Karzai, anti-American messages into Afghanistan."[23] *BBC* has reported on a secret NATO document which notes: "Pakistan's manipulation of the Taliban senior leadership continues unabated."[24]

---

[21] Diplomatic cable available here.

[22] *BBC,* “Pakistani agents 'funding and training Afghan Taliban',” June 13, 2010

[23] *New York Times,* “Threats and Responses: Afghanistan,” February 13, 2002

A report published by the London School of Economics gave 9 in depth interviews with Taliban insurgent commanders. They suggest that the ISI has members on the Taliban leadership council, though they expressed fear of assassination if they went into to much depth on this topic.[25]

It's not hard to establish that the United States has allied itself with one of the biggest funders of terrorism in the Middle East, a fact which blatantly clashes with the official narrative of Western involvement in the region. It makes much more sense when understood in the context that the goal of the United States in the Middle East is not the prevention of terrorism, but rather for political, military and economic hegemony.

* * * *

Osama Runs Wild

> “I do not profess a broad expertise in international affairs, but between January 1996 and June 1999 I was in charge of running operations against Al-Qaeda from Washington. When it comes to this small slice of the large U.S. national security pie, I speak with firsthand experience (and for several score of CIA officers) when I state categorically that during this time senior White House officials repeatedly refused to act on sound intelligence that provided multiple chances to eliminate Osama bin Laden -- either by capture or by U.S. military attack. I witnessed and documented, along with dozens of other CIA officers, instances

---

[24] *BBC,* “Pakistan Helping Afghan Taliban – NATO,” February 1, 2012

[25] London School of Economics report available here.

> where life-risking intelligence-gathering work of the agency's men and women in the field was wasted." - Michael Scheuer, 22 year veteran of the CIA[26]

A 2001 *Washington Post* article states that in 1996 the government of Sudan offered to keep tabs on Osama, or if that did not suffice, arrest him and hand him over to either the United States or Saudi custody.[27]

> "The Sudanese security services, he said, would happily keep close watch on bin Laden for the United States. But if that would not suffice, the government was prepared to place him in custody and hand him over, though to whom was ambiguous. In one formulation, Erwa said Sudan would consider any legitimate proffer of criminal charges against the accused terrorist." Their negotiations concluded as such: ""We said he will go to Afghanistan, and they [U.S. officials] said, 'Let him.'"

The Clinton administration claimed that they lacked criminal charges to pin on Bin Laden, though this explanation is a farce, as within a year ago previous they had named him as a co-conspirator in the World Trade Center bombing, among other terrorist activities.[28] Just a year later, the Clinton administration would commit the egregious war crime of the bombing of the Sudanese Al-Shifa pharmaceutical factory, which provided 50% of the medicine for Sudan.[29] The destruction of the factory was estimated to be responsible for the deaths of "several tens of thousands" of people according to the German ambassador to Sudan, on a much flimsier pretext.[30] Interestingly, the pretext of the Al-Shifa bombing is that the factory had ties to Bin Laden, in the very country that had proposed to extradite him, by the very people who declined to accept his arrest.

---

[26] *Los Angeles Times,* "Why I Resigned From the CIA," December 5, 2004

[27] *Washington Post,* "U.S. Was Foiled Multiple Times in Efforts To Capture Bin Laden or Have Him Killed", October 3, 2001

[28] *PBS Frontline,* "Timeline- Al Qaeda's Global Context."

[29] *The Nation,* "Reply to Hitchens," October 1, 2001

A 2002 article in *The Guardian* reveals that the first INTERPOL arrest warrant for Bin Laden came from Libya's Muammar Gaddafi in 1998.[31] It also uncovered that the MI6 paid large sums of money to an Al-Qaeda cell in Libya in a failed attempt to assassinate Gaddafi. Perhaps this is why U.S. and U.K. intelligence agencies apparently buried the fact that Libya had issued the warrant for Bin Laden's arrest and downplayed the threat he posed. 5 months after the arrest warrant was issued, Al-Qaeda killed over 200 people in bombings of U.S. embassies in Kenya and Tanzania.[32] These actions are consistent with the trend of working with Al-Qaeda when they shared the same goals, and fighting them when war in the region was a strategic geopolitical move.

*　　*　　*　　*

US Trained Terrorists

It has been widely reported, thanks to revelations by *ABC* reporter John Cooley, that some Islamic fundamentalists were trained in the United States in the 1980's, by way of Camp Peary, the CIA spy base in Virginia, being flown in from places such as Jordan, Egypt and even Africa.[33] It raises the question of how many such camps existed beyond the United States. Regardless, there have been some astonishing revelations of terrorists trained within the US borders.

---

[30] Wikipedia Article on the Al-Shifa Pharmaceutical Company

[31] *The Guardian,* "MI6 'Halted Bid to Arrest Bin Laden'", November 10, 2001

[32] *Al-Jazeera,* "US embassy attacks anniversary marked," August 7, 2013

[33] *The Guardian,* "Blowback Chronicles", September 15, 2001

One specifically alarming case is that of Egyptian Ali Muhammed. He was a part of the fundamentalist military unit that assassinated Egyptian President Anwar Sadat in 1981. In 1984, he was hired by the CIA, though they claim that the relationship was short-lived.[34] He would soon join the military and become a member of the Green Berets, and serve as a drill sergeant at Fort Bragg while providing clandestine training to jihadists such as Mahmud Abaouhalima, convicted perpetrator of the 1993 World Trade Center bombings.[35]

He would take a short leave from his military duties and travel to Afghanistan in 1988 to assist the Mujahideen, returning just months later.[36] Such an act is completely unheard of, entirely unprecedented and raises all sorts of red flags. Who was allowing Muhammed to circumvent the law and what type of special privileges and protections was he receiving?

In the early 1990's he would return to Afghanistan and began training jihadists with the skills he had learned at Fort Bragg. According to former FBI special agent Jack Cloonan, in an interview with *PBS*, his first training session included Osama bin Laden, as well as Ayman al-Zawahiri, the current leader of Al-Qaeda.[37]

Former Directors of Counter-terrorism at the National Security Council have alleged that Muhammed took maps and training materials from Fort Bragg and used them to write the Al-Qaeda terrorist training manual.[38]

Muhammed's superior at Fort Bragg, Lt. Col. Robert Anderson, has stated:

> “I think you or I would have a better chance of winning the Powerball lottery, than an Egyptian major in the unit that

---

[34] *New York Times,* “The Plot Against America,” August 6, 2006

[35] Wikipedia Article on Mahmud Abouhalima

[36] *San Francisco Gate,* “Al Qaeda terrorist worked with FBI / Ex-Silicon Valley resident plotted embassy attacks,” November 4, 2001

[37] *PBS Frontline* Interview with Jack Cloonan, available here.

[38] Daniel Benjamin and Steve Simon, “Age of Sacred Terror,” no excerpt available.

> assassinated Sadat would have getting a visa, getting to California, getting into the Army and getting assigned to a Special Forces unit. That just doesn't happen."[39]

Elsewhere he stated: "It was unthinkable that an ordinary American GI would go unpunished after fighting in a foreign war," and that he assumed that Muhammed was sponsored by the CIA.[40]

In the year 2000, Muhammed plead guilty to involvement in the 1998 embassy bombings that killed 224 people including 12 Americans.[41] He admitted during the trial that he was a part of a broader plot to attack any Western target in the Middle East, as well as admitting that he helped transfer Osama bin Laden from Pakistan to Sudan.

* * * *

United States and Al-Qaeda Have The Same Agenda

In 2011, NATO, led by Barack Obama and the United States, initiated military action against Libya by enforcing a No Fly Zone and carried out numerous air strikes, including one against Libyan state TV which killed 3 journalists.[42] Downplayed in Western media was the fact that the 'rebels' consisted of various factions of radical Islamists, many who had been fighting Gaddafi for decades and had their roots in the Mujahideen in Afghanistan, such as the Libyan Islamic Fighting Group, whose goal is to implement an Islamic state.[43] *CNN* has reported on widespread abuses against civilians from these groups after Gaddafi was ousted from power, including the use of landmines and other deadly equipment.[44] Many of the rebels have admitted links to Al-Qaeda[45], whom had declared support for the rebels in Libya.[46]

---

[39] Article written by 5 time Emmy Award recipient Peter Lance, hosted at BoilingFrogsPost.com, available here.

[40] *San Francisco Chronicle,* "Al Qaeda terrorist worked with FBI / Ex-Silicon Valley resident plotted embassy attacks," November 4, 2001

[41] *BBC,* "Ex US Soldier Admits to Embassy Bombings," October 20, 2000

[42] *The Guardian,* "NATO Bombs Libya TV Transmitters," July 30, 2011.

[43] *International Business Times,* "Does the Transitional Council Really Represent Libyan Democracy and Opposition

The *Washington Post* has reported that a former Al-Qaeda member has estimated there to be 1000 'freelance jihadists' that have traveled to Libya to support the rebels, many affiliated with Al-Qaeda, and also that Libya has one of the highest domestic Al-Qaeda populations in the Middle East, quoting a 2007 West Point study on the subject.[47]

In 1999, the United States decided to support the Kosovo Liberation Army, allies of Al-Qaeda. Bill Clinton framed the intervention in humanitarian terms despite the fact that staggering atrocities were being committed on both sides.[48] French News Agency *AFP* reported that members of the KLA had been trained by Bin Laden[49], and the *Washington Times* reported that the KLA bankrolled their operations with funds from the heroin trade in Afghanistan and had accepted money from Bin Laden himself.[50]

The Mujahideen, many specifically members of Al-Qaeda, were also instrumental in Bosnia during the NATO intervention in 1993. Their presence is still a factor of instability today.[51] It is of significance that all of these associations occurred after the 1993 World Trade Center bombing, when Al-Qaeda first became widespread in the American lexicon.

Barack Obama has been arming rebels in Syria, beginning secretly with CIA arms airlifts in 2012[52], citing many of the same reasons for intervention that Clinton did in 1999, despite domestic and foreign ally opposition.[53] [54]Once again, many of the rebels have been

---

to Gaddafi?", July 20, 2001.

[44] *CNN,* "Rights group: Libyan rebels looted and beat civilians," July 15, 2011

[45] *The Telegraph,* "Libyan rebel commander admits his fighters have al-Qaeda links," March 25, 2011

[46] *The Telegraph,* "Libya: The West and Al-Qaeda on the Same Side," March 18, 2011

[47] *Washington Times,* "'Freelance Jihadists' Join Libyan Rebels," March 29, 2011

[48] Wikipedia Article on the various war crimes committed during the Kosovo War

[49] *AFP,* "Members of Kosovo Liberation Trained by Bin Laden," May 4, 1999.

[50] *Washington Times,* "KLA Finances War with Heroin Sales," May 3, 1999

[51] *Radio Free Europe,* "Bosnia-Herzegovina: New Book Investigates Presence Of Al-Qaeda," June 1, 2007

[52] *New York Times,* "Arms Airlift to Syria Rebels Expands, With Aid From C.I.A.," March 24, 2013

[53] *Fox News,* "Lawmakers try to stall arming of Syrian opposition, as CIA presses ahead," June 27, 2013

[54] *Fox News,* "Merkel tells Parliament that risks of arming Syrian rebels 'incalculable'," June 27, 2013

associated with Al-Qaeda and labeled terrorist organizations by the US.[55]

*   *   *   *

The Source of Radicalism

Earlier I mentioned CIA funded madrassas being a source of Islamic radicalism in the 1980's. They have been an important factor in the radicalization of Islam ever since. As of 2008, there are ~750 madrassas in Pakistan that teach jihad and radicalism, about 10% of all madrassas in the country (and I want to emphasize that this section is referring to specific radical iterations of Madrassas, not simply applying a blanket generalization to the religious style of education).[56] U.S. diplomatic cables released by *Wikileaks* revealed that the funding for these radical schools now comes from Saudi Arabia, the United States' biggest ally in the region.[57] The radical madrassa network exploits impoverished areas by recruiting children for what essentially amounts to indoctrination camps. In exchange, families receive upwards of $6,500 per son for their 'sacrifice to Islam', and during schooling, contact with families is forbidden. After graduation, many are funneled into terrorist training camps in the Federally Administered Tribal Areas, the cables stated.

PBS Frontline did a story on a 16 year old who was recruited to a Pakistan Wahhabi Islam madrassa from an impoverished area in East Africa.[58] A few years later, he was instrumental in a terror plot, blowing up the US Embassy in Nairobi, Kenya. The *PBS* website hosts a letter he wrote to his brother, in which he says he spent two years on a military base learning warfare, including the usage of Israeli arms.[59]

---

[55] *USA Today,* "Syrian rebels pledge loyalty to al-Qaeda", June 14, 2013

[56] (PDF Warning) Naval Postgraduate Thesis, by Paul Bell, titled "Pakistan's Madrassas: Weapons of Mass Instruction?" Available here.

[57] Full Wikileaks Cables available here.

[58] *PBS Frontline* recap *available here*.

[59] *PBS,* letter available here.

Is the CIA still involved? The House of Saud has given at least $1.474 billion dollars to the Bush family[60], and the United States sold Saudi Arabia $60 billion worth of arms in 2010, the biggest arms sale in American history.[61] Before he was president, George H.W. Bush was the Director of the CIA. As recently as June 25th, 2013, Secretary of State John Kerry announced that Saudi Arabia is 'one of our closest partners'.[62] At the very least we can establish complicity.

Regardless, the United States' relationship with Saudi Arabia ought to raise a lot of important questions. On November 4th, 2013, Secretary of State John Kerry hailed Saudi Arabia as a very important ally to the United States.[63] How can we reconcile this stance with the 2010 cable leaks revealing that former Secretary of State Hilary Clinton said that donors in the kingdom “constitute the most significant source of funding to Sunni terrorist groups worldwide,” and that “it has been an ongoing challenge to persuade Saudi officials to treat terrorist financing emanating from Saudi Arabia as a strategic priority”?[64] It is clear that the United States views their geopolitical relationship with Saudi Arabia to be much more important than combating terrorism, despite U.S. Involvement in the Middle East being saturated with rhetoric about the War on Terror. The same statement can be applied to the relationship with Pakistan, who is instrumental in the operations of the Taliban.

* * * *

Double Agents

---

[60] *Salon,* “*Did the Saudi's Buy a President?*” March 12, 2004
[61] Wikipedia Article on Saudi-US Relations
[62] John Kerry transcripts from the US Department of State website, available here.
[63] *The Guardian,* “Kerry hails disgruntled Saudi Arabia as 'the senior player' in Middle East,” November 4, 2013
[64] *The Independent,* “Saudi Arabia is 'Biggest Funder' of Terrorists,” December 6, 2010

The assassination of high-profile Pakistan tribal leader Qari Zainuddin was widely reported in the Western media.[65] Only days before his assassination he had renounced his support of the Taliban, claiming that their actions were un-Islamic. What the Western media neglected to report but was widely reported in Pakistan and other countries was Zainuddin had previously claimed that Baitullah Mehsud, the man who ended up ordering his assassination, was an American agent.[66]

The claim that American agents operate in the Taliban sounds far-fetched but there have been some eye-opening reports that confirm the possibility. For example, a 2004 article in the UK publication *Times Online* reported that a high ranking Al-Qaeda member had been revealed to be a double agent working for MI5.

> "Abu Qatada boasted to MI5 that he could prevent terrorist attacks and offered to expose dangerous extremists, while all along he was setting up a haven for his terror organisation in Britain."[67]

Abu Qatada has been imprisoned multiple times in Britain but has not been charged with any crimes. During his career he has issued fatwahs justifying the killing of converts from Islam, advocated the killing of Jews, praised attacks on America, and convicted of charges of terrorism in Jordan, all while working in association with MI5.[68]

A 2002 article published by French news organization *AFP* states that Palestine security forces had arrested a group of Palestinians who had confessed to collaborating with Israel and posing as operatives of Al-Qaeda.[69]

---

[65] *BBC,* "*Tribal Leader Killed in Afganistan*," June 23, 2009

[66] *PakTribune,* "Why Does Zainuddin Want To Kill Baitullah?"

[67] *Times Online,* "*Al Qaeda Cleric Exposed as an MI5 Double Agent*," March 25, 2004. Article is behind a pay wall, link is to a re-hosting at Whale.to

[68] *BBC,* "*Abu Qattadah Timeline*," May 10, 2013

[69] *AFP,* "*Palestinians Arrest al-Qaeda 'poseurs'*," December 8, 2002

> “He [Palestinian Authority Official] said the alleged collaborators sought to "discredit the Palestinian people, justify every Israeli crime and provide reasons to carry out a new (military) aggression in the Gaza Strip."

The arrest came just two days after Ariel Sharon claimed that Al-Qaeda militants were operating in Gaza and Lebanon, likely in an attempt to justify future military action. *BBC* has also reported on this story.[70]

* * * *

“The Official Story”

The official story is that Bin Laden and Al-Qaeda found new enemies in the U.S. after the Cold War when the United States began occupying military bases in Saudi Arabia. It sounds plausible, but does not stand up to deeper scrutiny.

In 1993, Scott Armstrong, at the time the top investigative reporter for the *Washington Post*, gave some tremendously revealing interviews with *PBS Frontline*. In an episode titled "The Arming of Saudi Arabia", he stated that the United States and Saudi Arabia had jointly conspired to covertly build $200 billion worth of military installations between the years 1979 and 1992.[71] Steve Coll, eminent Bin Laden biographer, states that the Binladen group received a multitude of these contracts, with the knowing intent to support and house US military personal during wars that may threaten Saudi territory.[72]

---

[70] *BBC,* “Israel 'Faked' Al Qaeda Presence,” December 8, 2002

[71] *PBS Frontline* transcript of the episode available here.

This occurred during the same time that Osama bin Laden was actively using Binladen Group assets to build extensive infrastructure in Afghanistan. Surely he was aware of the construction of the military bases and who intended to occupy them, yet he did not have a problem then with the prospect then.

* * * *

Money

During the peak of World War II, military and defense spending reached a rate of over 40% of the United States Gross Domestic Product.[73] Even after a massive demobilization, the military-industrial complex had grown to a behemoth, averaging over 7% of GDP throughout the Cold War. According to the Cato Institute, the United States spent a total of $6 trillion on military and intelligence in just 4 decades during the Cold War, a staggering sum.

After the Soviet Union was defeated, the Military Industrial Complex experienced a steady decline, accounting for just 3.7% of GDP in the year 2000. This changed on 9/11, when the MIC found that they could turn their old friends into new enemies to fight, and their percentage of GDP has more than doubled in the last decade.[74]

Congress has officially authorized more than 1.3 trillion dollars to fight the war on terror, and a Brown University study says this is just the tip of the iceberg: Even if the War on Terror were to begin de-escalating now, it would end up costing a total of 3.9 trillion between domestic spending, veterans costs, and interest.[75] The money comes from the taxpayers of the United States, whether directly or indirectly, and goes to the pockets of defense contractors and banks.

---

[72] Steven Coll', "The Bin Ladens," No excerpt available.

[73] Math and Charts available here at USGovernmentSpending.com

[74] More Charts.

* * * *

Al-Qaeda Today

In 2003, Donald Rumsfeld wrote a memo to the Joint Chiefs of Staff where he stated that "We need to stop populating Guantanamo Bay with low-level enemy combatants."[76] The memo was uncovered in 2011. Over 750 prisoners have gone through Guantanamo, most being released without charges.[77] Of the ~160 prisoners in Guantanamo Bay today, half have been cleared for release but are still being detained.[78] Former CIA Director Leon Panetta said in 2010 that there were less than 100 Al-Qaeda in Afghanistan.[79]

* * * *

Conclusion

After trillions of dollars spent, hundreds of thousands of deaths, repeated domestic rights infringements, we are left with only a handful of proven Al-Qaeda members, with a majority of prisoners simply being held without charges. The organization purported to be a sprawling monster after the September 11th attacks has been revealed to be a shell of an operation, financed by wealthy US allies. The result is endless war: Politicians, military and media shine the light just right to make the shadow of the mouse look huge and monstrous to justify endless profits. The media is not even connecting the most basic of dots to reveal the tremendous deception.

---

[75] Brown.edu "Cost of War Project", available here.

[76] *Washington Post,* "Rumsfeld complained of 'low level' GTMO prisoners, memo reveals," March 3, 2011

[77] Wikipedia Article "List of Guantanamo Detainees"

[78] *RussiaToday,* "'Political football': Gitmo detainees 'abandoned' by US government," May 16, 2013

[79] *ABC* (Australia) "Fewer than 100 Al Qaeda in Afghanistan: CIA chief," June 28, 2010

The evidence is a repeated policy of the destabilization of Central Asia and the development of Islamic radicals that spans decades. The result is a new global enemy without borders or diplomatic representation that can be fought indefinitely. Unless significant changes are made, we are looking at a future with an endless war on 'terrorism' where more terrorists are created daily by the very policies that are meant to be fighting them, and a foreign policy dictated by the whims of war profiteering.

And what kind of influence are we having in the Middle East? The rhetoric of 'bringing Democracy to the peoples of Iraq and Afghanistan' would be laughable were it not such a grandiose and destructive lie. The impact of American intervention in these two countries has been disastrous.

> "The biggest source of corruption in Afghanistan," one American official said, "was the United States." - *New York Times*[80]

The *New York Times* article describes how the CIA routinely funneled millions of dollars without oversight in unmarked bags to the offices of President Hamid Karzai, while simultaneously denouncing the Iranian policy of doing the exact same thing. U.S. officials are quoted as saying that instead of buying the loyalty of the Afghan President, the payments instead proliferated into a vast web of corruption while Karzai became increasingly defiant of U.S. interests.

---

[80] *New York Times,* "With Bags of Cash, C.I.A. Seeks Influence in Afghanistan," April 28, 2013. One particularly salient quote from the article is worth sharing: "No one mentions the agency's money at cabinet meetings. It is handled by a small clique at the National Security Council, including its administrative chief, Mohammed Zia Salehi, Afghan officials said. Mr. Salehi, though, is better known for being arrested in 2010 in connection with a sprawling, American-led investigation that tied together Afghan cash smuggling, Taliban finances and the opium trade. Mr. Karzai had him released within hours, and the C.I.A. then helped persuade the Obama administration to back off its anticorruption push, American officials said."

In Iraq, the country has devolved into near anarchy with monthly death tolls from terrorism sometimes reaching the 1000's. In 2004, the *New York Times* reported that there was a massive assassination campaign targeting intellectuals and professionals, with between 500 and 1,000 urban professionals killed in just a 9 month span.[81] From drive by shootings to stealth murders in the victims home, officials in Iraq agree that there is a massive campaign to silence the capable and educated.

> “'They are going after our brains,' said Lt. Col. Jabbar Abu Natiha, head of the organized crime unit of the Baghdad police. 'It is a big operation. Maybe even a movement.' These white-collar killings, American and Iraqi officials say, are separate from -- and in some ways more insidious than -- the settling of scores with former Baath Party officials, or the singling-out of police officers and others thought to be collaborating with the occupation. Hundreds of them have been attacked as well in an effort to sow insecurity and chaos. But by silencing urban professionals, said Brig. Gen. Mark Kimmitt, a spokesman for the occupation forces, the guerrillas are waging war on Iraq's fledgling institutions and progress itself. The dead include doctors, lawyers and judges.”

---

[81] *New York Times,* “THE STRUGGLE FOR IRAQ: KILLINGS; Assassinations Tear Into Iraq's Educated Class,” February 7, 2004.

In other words, Iraq is being left without the very people who could have been future leaders of democracy, and whom could have established a functioning society. Shortly afterwords, a corporate friendly government was established.

Furthermore, it is not empty rhetoric to say that the Iraq invasion was based on lies. In 2012, the Iraqi defector responsible for the 'evidence' of chemical weapon production in Iraq which was presented to the United Nations by Colin Powell, who portrayed it is “facts and conclusions based on solid intelligence”, confessed to BBC that his claims were entirely fabricated.[82] Clearly there is an agenda that does not mesh with the rhetoric!

Will the War on Terror ever end? Who truly has the incentive to scale back the operation? Not clandestine agencies or the military, who are seeing their budgets increase year by year. Certainly not any of the major influences in politics, banks and corporations, who are seeing massive profits from government contracts and resource exploitation. And most certainly not any politician in Washington, who virtually rely on the lobbying of these organizations to keep their jobs.

Journalist Glenn Greenwald put it succinctly:

> “But what one can say for certain is that there is zero reason for US officials to want an end to the war on terror, and numerous and significant reasons why they would want it to continue. It's always been the case that the power of political officials is at its greatest, its most unrestrained, in a state of war. Cicero, two thousand years ago, warned that "In times of war, the law falls silent" (Inter arma enim silent leges). John Jay, in Federalist No. 4, warned that as a result of that truth, "nations in general will make war whenever they have a prospect of getting anything by

---

[82] *The Independent,* “Man whose WMD lies led to 100,000 deaths confesses all,” April 1, 2012

> it . . . for the purposes and objects merely personal, such as thirst for military glory, revenge for personal affronts, ambition, or private compacts to aggrandize or support their particular families or partisans." If you were a US leader, or an official of the National Security State, or a beneficiary of the private military and surveillance industries, why would you possibly want the war on terror to end? That would be the worst thing that could happen. It's that war that generates limitless power, impenetrable secrecy, an unquestioning citizenry, and massive profit." - Glenn Greenwald, writing for *The Guardian*[83]

Greenwald also notes the hopelessness of combating terrorism with further violence.

> "Indeed, virtually every person accused of plotting to target the US with terrorist attacks in last several years has expressly cited increasing US violence, aggression and militarism in the Muslim world as the cause. There's no question that this "war" will continue indefinitely. There is no question that US actions are the cause of that, the gasoline that fuels the fire.
>
> But the notion that the US government is even entertaining putting an end to any of this is a pipe dream, and the belief that they even want to is fantasy. They're preparing for more endless war; their actions are fueling that war; and they continue to reap untold benefits from its continuation. Only outside compulsion,

---

[83] *The Guardian,* "The 'war on terror' - by design - can never end," January 4, 2013

> from citizens, can make an end to all of this possible."

Food for Thought:

1. How close of a relationship did the CIA maintain with Osama bin Laden after Operation Cyclone?
2. Why does the United States consider Pakistan and Saudi Arabia, the two largest funders of terrorism, our biggest allies in the region?
3. How closely does the CIA work with the intelligence agencies of these countries?
4. How many agents does the United States have operating in Al-Qaeda and the Taliban, and how many atrocities are they responsible for?
5. Why have Al-Qaeda and the United States fought on the same side of multiple wars?
6. Why have so few Al-Qaeda been apprehended after over a decade of fighting the War on Terror and millions of dollars spent?
7. Who has a monetary stake in the proliferation of terrorism, and how much influence do they hold in official U.S. Policy?

The One-Party State

Perhaps the most widely proliferated truism of American patriotism is that the the two-party system is a beacon of democracy. Surely, our system is better than that of Iran, where presidential candidates must be approved by a religious council, or perhaps that of Venezuela, where the majority of the media is state-owned and disseminates propaganda in each election.

Democrats and Republicans are widely different, it seems. At least that is what their hyper-partisan bickering would imply. Bill Clinton and Barack Obama must have be unabashed liberals, otherwise why would the Republicans despise them so much? The divide between party faithfuls of different colors runs deep, with each side blaming the entirety of the countries problems on the other, often resulting in a state of pure hatred and disgust among citizens. One only needs to turn on cable news to see this as a fact.

However, the reality is that Republican and Democrat presidents have closely followed the same agenda for half a century. The idea that American governance alternates as a sort of give-and-take between liberalism and conservatism is nothing more than a fantasy. I do not discount that there may be serious and significant differences between democrat and republican individuals, many of them Congressmen, and certainly in state legislatures. Yet at the top of the pyramid, where the power to set agendas resides, there is only *the* Agenda, and the primary difference between the two parties is the speed at which 'the Agenda' is advanced.

It is fascinating how Bill Clinton began his presidential campaign with playing a Saxophone on live television, talking about his foray into Marijuana, reminiscing about his protest of the Vietnam war, and ended up with perhaps the most reactionary (e.g. maintaining the status quo) administration of any president in modern history. Later, Obama entered the stage as a candidate of change, only to accelerate and consolidate the hegemony of the political elite faster than any predecessor. But lets go beyond rhetoric and examine the records of the last 5 Presidents, and see exactly how similar their platforms were.

* * * *

Crime

> “The United States has less than 5 percent of the world's population. But it has almost a quarter of the world's prisoners. Indeed, the United States leads the world in producing prisoners, a reflection of a relatively recent and now entirely distinctive American approach to crime and punishment. Americans are locked up for crimes — from writing bad checks to using drugs — that would rarely produce prison sentences in other countries. And in particular they are kept incarcerated far longer than prisoners in other nations.” - *New York Times*[84]

At the end of Reagan's administration, the incarceration rate was 247 per 100,000 citizens. The demand for prison space had been steadily increasing since the War on Drugs began. Under George H.W. Bush the incarceration rate had increased to 332 per 100,000. It is a common misconception that it is Republicans have the more punitive crime policies.

---

[84] *New York Times,* “U.S. prison population dwarfs that of other nations,” April 23, 2008

Under Clinton, the incarceration rate skyrocketing to 476 per 100,000 over the next 8 years.[85] The Clinton administration gave 30 billion dollars to states to fund and expand their prisons[86], and championed the Violent Crime Control and Law Enforcement Act added 100,000 new police officers.[87] The bill was written by current Vice President Joe Biden. The act also expanded the death penalty to be applicable 60 more offenses including drug trafficking, and eliminated funding for inmate education.

Private prisons flourished under Bill Clinton. The ACLU in 2011 published a fascinating review of the private prison system and found that since 1990, the private prison population has increased by 1600%.[88] The number of private prison systems actually peaked in the year 2000 with 153 facilities.[89]

The policy that began under Reagan and has been flourishing through both Bushes, Clinton and Obama can only be referred to as 'mass incarceration'. As of 2013, the United States holds more prisoners than any other country in the world, including China, as well as a larger percentage of prisoners per population than any other country. For an even more sobering comparison, consider that the United States has more people imprisoned today, as a whole and per capita, than Stalin had under his archipelago of gulags.[90]

Louisiana is perhaps the best example of how corrupted the prison system can become when privatization runs amok. Louisiana has a largely private prison system, and currently has 1 in 86 adults incarcerated, twice the national average and three times that of Iran. Nearly two-thirds of these prisoners are serving time for non-violent offenses.[91] Lobbying, along with an incentive of job creation, has resulted in some of the toughest penalties in the country, such as a potential 10 years in prison for writing a bad check. Over half of the prison population returns to the system in 5 years, without having received any rehabilitation and being returned to communities devastated largely in part by the continued extraction of the population into prison for non-violent offenses.

---

[85] *USA Today,* "*Study: Prisons Filled At Record Pace in Clinton Years*," February 18, 2001
[86] Ibid.
[87] Wikipedia Article on the Violent Crime and Law Enforcement Act
[88] (PDF Warning) ACLU.org report titled "Banking on Bondage"
[89] Wikipedia Article on the Private Prison System
[90] *New Yorker,* "*The Caging of America*," January 30, 2012
[91] *New York Times,* "Plantations, Prisons and Profits," March 25, 2012

* * * *

Arms Sales

On the campaign trail, Bill Clinton made this promise: “I expect to review our arms sales policy and to take it up with the other major arms sellers of the world as a part of a long-term effort to reduce the proliferation of weapons.”[92] And then, in some astounding turn of events (or predictable, for those who have been watching closely), United States arms sales doubled in Clinton's first year in office alone.[93]

In 2006, the United Nations convened in order to create a 'comprehensive, legally binding instrument establishing common international standards for the import, export and transfer of conventional arms.' The United States was the only country to vote against the measure.[94] In 2008, Obama signaled that he would change the course from the Bush administration and take steps to limit arms sales internationally. And similar to nearly 2 decades earlier, United States arms sales ***tripled*** in 2011.[95] By 2012, Obama had ended negotiations on the U.N. treaty.[96] Is it any surprise, considering Obama received more campaign donations from the Defense Industry than McCain?[97]

One particularly shocking revelation was a program known as 'Fast and Furious', where Barack Obama oversaw the initiation and operation of a gun running scheme where arms were sent over the Mexican border and directly into the hands of criminals.[98]

---

[92] *Mother Jones,* “*Arms Around the World*,” August 1999
[93] *Alternet.org* “*Hightower: Clinton's Foreign Jobs Program*,” April 25, 2000
[94] Wikipedia Article on the Arms Trade Treaty
[95] *Mother Jones,* “CHARTS: US Overseas Arms Sales More Than Tripled in 2011,” August 29, 2012
[96] *Mother Jones,* “Obama Administration Ducks for Cover on UN Arms Trade Treaty,” July 31, 2012
[97] *Time,* “*Obama Beats McCain in Defense Contributions*,” October 31, 2008

> "Fast and Furious was an operation so cloak-and-dagger Mexican authorities weren't even notified that thousands of semi-automatic firearms were being sold to people in Arizona thought to have links to Mexican drug cartels. According to ATF whistleblowers, in 2009 the U.S. government began instructing gun store owners to break the law by selling firearms to suspected criminals. ATF agents then, again according to testimony by ATF agents turned whistleblowers, were ordered not to intercept the smugglers but rather to let the guns "walk" across the U.S.-Mexican border and into the hands of Mexican drug-trafficking organizations." - *Forbes*

Senior ATF Agent John Dodson, who broke the Fast and Furious story, was alarmed when he noted that the crime rates and violence in Mexico and at the border increased significantly after he began allowing, under order, massive amounts of guns to cross the border into the hands of criminals and cartels.[99]

> "Dodson said they never did take down a drug cartels. However, he said thousands of Fast and Furious weapons are still out there and will be claiming victims on both sides of the border for years to come." - *CBS*

On December 14, 2010, Border Patrol Agent Brian Terry was killed on duty, with a gun given to criminals by the ATF.[100]

---

[98] *Forbes,* "'Fast And Furious' Just Might Be President Obama's Watergate," September 28, 2011
[99] *CBS,* "Agent: I was ordered to let U.S. guns into Mexico," March 3, 2011

*   *   *   *

Domestic Spying

A 1999 *BBC* article titled "Echelon Spy Network Revealed" began with the paragraph: "Imagine a global spying network that can eavesdrop on every single phone call, fax or e-mail, anywhere on the planet. It sounds like science fiction, but it's true." The network, known as Echelon, traces its roots all the way back to the John F. Kennedy presidency, and had been expanding ever since.[101] In 1992, the Director of the NSA described the goal of the program in simple terms: 'Global Access'.[102] The agenda for mass surveillance was institutionalized long before most Americans recognize.

Then there was George Bush's illegal warrantless wiretapping. Began in 2001, the program allowed the NSA to monitor communications between United States citizens and those abroad without appropriate checks and balances.[103] Interestingly, the groundwork for warrantless wiretapping had actually been laid out by Bill Clinton.[104] During his presidency, he slowly expanded the reach of the Foreign Intelligence Surveillance Act (FISA) and the capability of the NSA to classify and withhold information about their activities. When the revelations about the program were made in 2006 they were controversial, but Congress repeatedly renewed the NSA's license without much of an uproar from the public.

---

[100] *Los Angeles Times,* "ATF sought to downplay guns scandal, emails show," July 21, 2011

[101] Duncan Campbell, Investigative Journalist, "Echelon: World under watch, an introduction," June 29, 2000

[102] National Security Archives hosted document, "Farewell from Vice Admiral William O. Studeman to NSA Employees, April 8, 1992."

[103] *Washington Post,* "Bush Administration's Warrantless Wiretapping Program," February 11, 2008

[104] The history of Warrantless Wiretapping is laid out thoroughly at the Daily Kos Wikipedia. Each event on their timeline has a link to a primary document or an accurate source.

By the 2008 election, citizens were growing weary of the spying program and Barack Obama capitalized on this sentiment. He vowed to end warrantless wiretapping and during his primary campaign he went as far as to say he would filibuster the extension of the FISA legislation, responsible for allowing the expanded spying capabilities.[105]

> “When I'm president, one of the first things I'm going to do is call in my attorney general and say to him or her, I want you to review every executive order that was issued by George Bush, whether it relates to warrantless wiretaps or detaining people or reading e- mails, or whatever it is. I want you to go through every single one of them and if they are unconstitutional, if they're encroaching on civil liberties unnecessarily, we are going to overturn them. We're going to change them.” - Barack Obama, 2007[106]

He first broke this promise after winning the primary campaign, in July 2008, when he was one of 68 Senators who voted to renew the NSA capabilities.[107] Less than a year later, Barack Obama would vastly broaden the legal argument the Executive branch used to justify the spying, and exempted the Government from the possibility of being sued thanks to a liberal interpretation of a clause in the Patriot Act.[108]

> "In other words, beyond even the outrageously broad 'state secrets' privilege invented by the Bush administration and now

---

[105] *CNN,* “Obama's surveillance vote spurs blogging backlash,” July 11, 2008

[106] *CNN,* “The Lead with Jake Tapper,” June 10, 2013

[107] *New York Times,* “Obama's wiretapping stand enrages many supporters,” June 2, 2008

[108] *RawStory,* “Obama Administration Quietly expands the Bush Administration's Legal Defense of Wiretapping,” April 7, 2009

> embraced fully by the Obama administration, the Obama DOJ has now invented a brand new claim of government immunity, one which literally asserts that the U.S. Government is free to intercept all of your communications (calls, emails and the like) and -- even if what they're doing is blatantly illegal and they know it's illegal -- you are barred from suing them unless they 'willfully disclose' to the public what they have learned," - Glenn Greenwald

On June 6th 2013, it was revealed that Barack Obama oversaw the largest infringement of the Fourth Amendment in the history of the United States with the construction of a veritable surveillance state, capable of tracking the movements and communications of every American citizen. We now know that the NSA and United Kingdom counterpart GHCQ:

- Collect the domestic meta-data of both parties in a phone-call.[109]
- Set up fake internet cafes to steal data.[110]
- Has intercepted the phone calls of at least 35 world leaders, including allies such as German Chancellor Angela Merkel.[111]
- Can tap into the underwater fiber-optic cables that carry a majority of the world's internet traffic.[112]
- Tracks communications within media institutions such as Al Jazeera.[113]

---

[109] *The Guardian,* "NSA collecting phone records of millions of Verizon customers daily," June 6, 2013
[110] *The Guardian,* "GCHQ intercepted foreign politicians' communications at G20 summits," June 17, 2013
[111] *The Guardian,* "NSA monitored calls of 35 world leaders after US official handed over contacts," October 25, 2013
[112] *The Guardian,* "GCHQ taps fibre-optic cables for secret access to world's communications," June 21, 2013
[113] *Der Spiegel,* "Snowden Document: NSA Spied On Al Jazeera Communications," August 31, 2013

- Has 'bugged' the United Nations headquarters.[114]
- Has set up a financial database to track international banking and credit card transactions.[115]
- Collects and stores over 200 million domestic and foreign text messages each day.[116]
- Collects and has real-time access to browsing history, email, and social media activity. To gain access, an analyst simply needs to fill out an on-screen form with a broad justification for the search that is not reviewed by any court or NSA personnel.[117]

> "I, sitting at my desk, could wiretap anyone, from you or your accountant, to a federal judge or even the president, if I had a personal email". - Edward Snowden

- Creates maps of the social networks of United States citizens.[118]
- Has access to smartphone app data.[119]
- Uses spies in embassies to collect data, often by setting up 'listening stations' on the roofs of buildings.[120]
- Uses fake LinkedIn profiles and other doctored web pages to secretly install surveillance software in unwitting companies and individuals.[121]
- Tracks reservations at upscale hotels.[122]

---

[114] *Reuters,* "U.S. spy agency bugged U.N. headquarters: Germany's Spiegel," August 25, 2013
[115] *Der Spiegel,* "'Follow the Money': NSA Spies on International Payments," September 15, 2013
[116] *BBC,* "Report: NSA 'collected 200m texts per day'," January 17, 2014
[117] *The Guardian,* "XKeyscore: NSA tool collects 'nearly everything a user does on the internet'," July 31, 2013
[118] *New York Times,*"N.S.A. Gathers Data on Social Connections of U.S. Citizens," September 28, 2013
[119] *Der Spiegel,* "iSpy: How the NSA Accesses Smartphone Data," September 9, 2013
[120] *Der Spiegel,* "Photo Gallery: Spies in the Embassy," October 27, 2013
[121] *The Independent,* "GCHQ used 'Quantum Insert' technique to set up fake LinkedIn pages and spy on mobile phone giants," November 10, 2013
[122] *Der Spiegel,* "'Royal Concierge': GCHQ Monitors Diplomats' Hotel Bookings," November 17, 2013

- Has intercepted the talking-points of world leaders before meetings with Barack Obama.[123]
- Can crack encryption codes on cellphones.[124]
- Has implanted software on over 100,000 computers worldwide allowing them to hack data without internet connection, using radio waves.[125]
- Has access to computers through fake wireless connections.[126]
- Monitors communications in online games such as World of Warcraft.[127]
- Intercepts shipping deliveries and install back-door devices allowing access.[128]
- Has direct access to the data centers of Google, Yahoo and other major companies.[129]
- Covertly and overtly infiltrate United States and foreign IT industries to weaken or gain access to encryption, often by collaborating with software companies and internet service providers themselves. They are also, according to an internal document, "responsible for identifying, recruiting and running covert agents in the global telecommunications industry."[130]
- The use of “honey traps”, luring targets into compromising positions using sex.[131]
- The sharing of raw intelligence data with Israel. Only official U.S. communications are affected, and there are no legal limits on the use of the data from Israel.[132]
- Spies on porn habits of activists to discredit them.[133]

---

[123] *New York Times,* “No Morsel Too Minuscule for All-Consuming N.S.A.,” November 2, 2013

[124] *Washington Post,* “By cracking cellphone code, NSA has capacity for decoding private conversations,” December 13, 2013

[125] *New York Times,* “N.S.A. Devises Radio Pathway Into Computers,” January 15, 2014

[126] *ArsTechnica,* “Your USB cable, the spy: Inside the NSA’s catalog of surveillance magic,” December 31, 2013

[127] *New York Times,* “Spies Infiltrate a Fantasy Realm of Online Games,” December 9, 2013

[128] *Der Spiegel,* “Inside TAO: Documents Reveal Top NSA Hacking Unit,” December 29, 2013

[129] *Washington Post,* “NSA infiltrates links to Yahoo, Google data centers worldwide, Snowden documents say,” October 30, 2013.

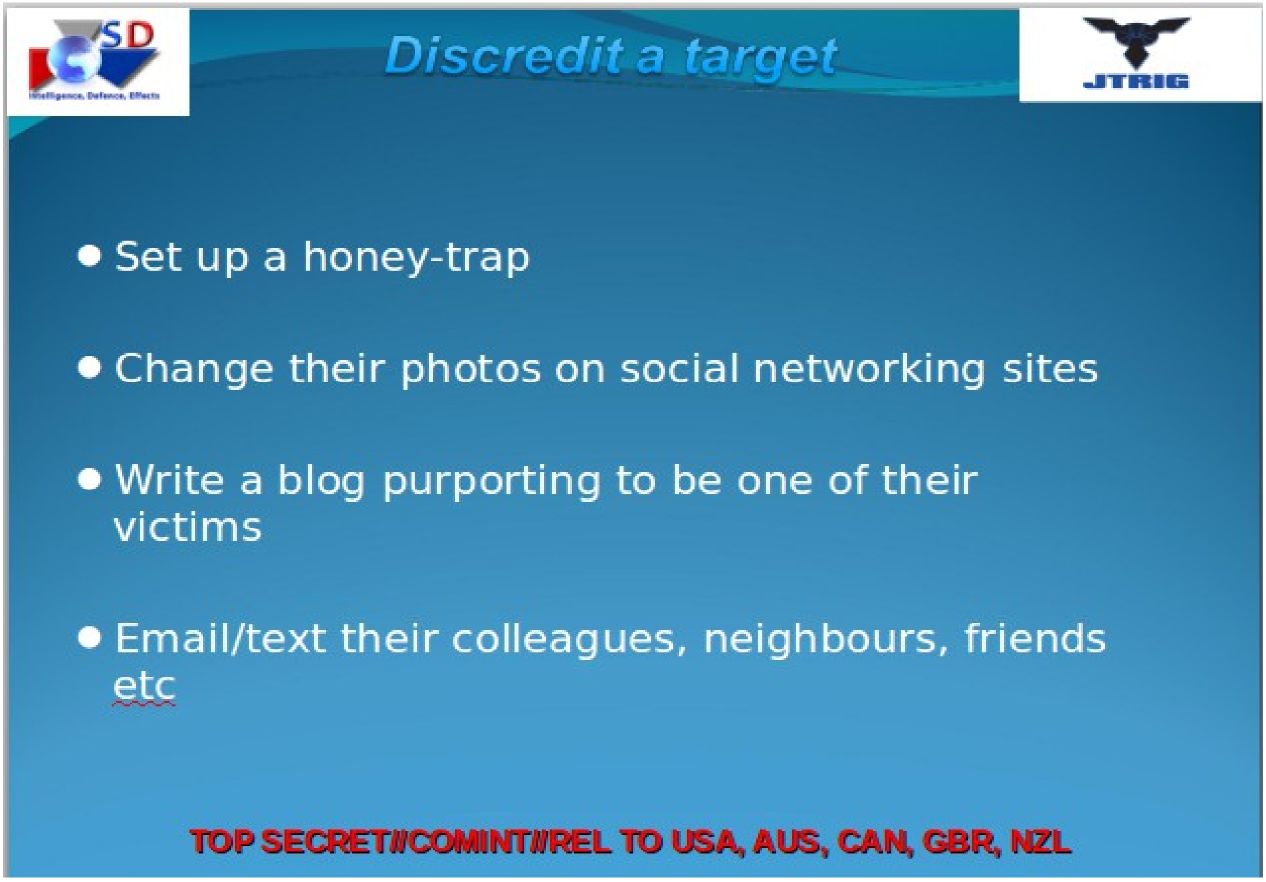
[130] *The Guardian,* “Revealed: how US and UK spy agencies defeat internet privacy and security,” September 6, 2013

[131] *NBC,* “Snowden Docs: British Spies Used Sex and 'Dirty Tricks',” March 1, 2014

[132] *The Guardian,* “NSA shares raw intelligence including Americans' data with Israel,” September 11, 2013

[133] *Huffington Post,* “Top-Secret Document Reveals NSA Spied On Porn Habits As Part Of Plan To Discredit 'Radicalizers',” November 26, 2013

Possibly the most shocking revelation was made on February 24, 2014. Internal documents show that the NSA is attempting to manipulate and control online discourse with "extreme tactics of deception and reputation-destruction."[134] The documents revealed a top-secret unit known as the Joint Threat Research Intelligence Unit, or JTRIG. Two of the core self-identified purposes of JTRIG are to inject all sorts of false material onto the internet in an effort to discredit a target, and to use social sciences such as psychology to manipulate online discourse and activism in order to generate a desirable outcome. The unit posts false information on the internet and falsely attributes it to someone else, pretend to be a 'victim' of a target they want to discredit, and posts negative information on various forums. In some instances, to discredit a target, JTRIG sends out 'false flag' emails to family and friends.



Discredit a target

- Set up a honey-trap
- Change their photos on social networking sites
- Write a blog purporting to be one of their victims
- Email/text their colleagues, neighbours, friends etc

TOP SECRET//COMINT//REL TO USA, AUS, CAN, GBR, NZL

SD
Intelligence, Defence, Effects
JTRIG

---

[134] *The Intercept,* "How Covert Agents Infiltrate the Internet to Manipulate, Deceive, and Destroy Reputations," February 24, 2014

One slide describes the methods to discredit a company: Leak confidential information to the press, post negative information on forums, interfere with business deals and ruin business relationships.

The use of psychological techniques to fracture activist groups and to 'game' online discourse is very interesting. One document describes creating tension in a group by exploiting personal power, pre-existing cleavages and minor ideological differences. In online discourse, another document describes how to use 'mirroring' of language cues, expressions and emotions, and the adjustment of speech, patterns and language to manipulate opinion.

Consider the words of former NSA employee turned whistleblower Russ Tice:

> “Okay. **They went after–and I know this because I had my hands literally on the paperwork for these sort of things–they went after high-ranking military officers; they went after members of Congress, both Senate and the House, especially on the intelligence committees and on the armed services committees and some of the–and judicial**.
>
> But they went after other ones, too. They went after lawyers and law firms. All kinds of–heaps of lawyers and law firms. They went after judges. **One of the judges is now sitting on the Supreme Court** that I had his wiretap information in my hand. Two are former **FISA court judges**. They went after **State Department officials**.

They went after people in the **executive service that were part of the White House**–their own people. They went after antiwar groups. They went after U.S. international–U.S. companies that that do international business, you know, business around the world. They went after U.S. banking firms and financial firms that do international business. They went after NGOs that–like the Red Cross, people like that that go overseas and do humanitarian work. They went after a few antiwar civil rights groups.

So, you know, don't tell me that there's no abuse, because I've had this stuff in my hand and looked at it. And in some cases, I literally was involved in the technology that was going after this stuff. And you know, when I said to [former MSNBC show host Keith] Olbermann, I said, my particular thing is high tech and you know, what's going on is the other thing, which is the dragnet. The dragnet is what Mark Klein is talking about, the terrestrial dragnet. Well my specialty is outer space. I deal with satellites, and everything that goes in and out of space. I did my spying via space. So that's how I found out about this... And remember we talked about that before, that I was worried that the intelligence community now has sway over what is going on.

Now here's the big one. I haven't given you any names. This was is summer of 2004. One of the papers that I held in my hand was to wiretap a bunch of numbers associated with, with a 40-

> something-year-old wannabe senator from Illinois. You wouldn't happen to know where that guy lives right now, would you? It's a big white house in Washington, DC. That's who they went after. And that's the **president of the United States** now." Russ Tice, NSA Whistleblower[135] (Emphasis added)

On March 5, 2014, it was revealed that the CIA, with the knowledge of Barack Obama, spied on members of the Senate Intelligence Committee, the group tasked with overseeing clandestine agency activities and preventing abuses.[136] The implications are complete subversion of oversight on domestic spying. Collectively, the evidence of the burgeoning security state under Barack Obama reveals a global information grid with real time access that targets both domestic citizens and lawmakers in addition to foreign people and governments.

* * * *

War

It is another common misconception that during Republican presidencies we have periods of war, and during Democratic presidencies we have periods of peace. Of 'official' wars it is certainly the case that the Gulf War, Afghanistan and Iraq war were begun by H.W. and W. Bush. Though it is important to quantify 'official' because there has not been a true declaration of war since World War II. After all, Bill Clinton dropped bombs on no less than four sovereign countries: Iraq, Serbia, Afghanistan, and Sudan.

And Clinton was able to get away with maintaining one of the darkest stains on

---

[135] Russ Tice's interview available here.
[136] *The Guardian,* "Obama knew CIA secretly monitored intelligence committee, senator claims," March 5, 2014

America's soiled history, the full-force economic sanctions against Iraq that began with the first Gulf war and ended after Saddam's fall in 2003. The sanctions killed 567,000 *children* according to the British Medical Societies *Lancet*.[137] (Later studies have argued the number 350,000 children to be more accurate). The total number of deaths including adults is thought to be much higher. United Nations ambassador Madeline Albright, when asked about these numbers, coldly stated "The price is worth it." This statement truly illuminates the attitude of those who set the agenda: Cold indifference to life on the grand chessboard of geopolitics.

Obama's first major act of war was a no-fly zone over Libya which resulted in the removal of Muammar Gaddafi. The media had a well orchestrated propaganda campaign that garnered significant public support.

His second major act of war was the arming of Syrian rebels, undoubtedly prolonging the horrific civil war. Some of the groups that form the opposition are terrorist organizations, which mirrors the policies of Carter and Reagan arming terrorist groups in Afghanistan under Operation Cyclone.[138]

But the true depths of Obama's war mongering resides in his constant and silent drone war. A policy that started under W. Bush, Obama has expanded the use of drones extensively. He has allowed the usage of Signature Strikes, whereby drone operators bomb people they do not know, based on movements they find suspicious.[139] Worst of all is the policy of double tapping, bombing the same scene twice after rescuers have come to try and help their fellow citizens.[140] Obama's drones have even bombed funerals.[141] While the death toll of the Drone war may not be as high as the conventional wars of the Bush family, the moral depravity certainly gives them a run for their money. The argument that drones are an alternative method to direct personnel involvement leaves out these cold facts.

---

[137] *The Nation,* "*A Hard Look at Iraq Sanctions*," November 15, 2001
[138] *ABC News,* "U.S. Declares Syria Rebel Group Terrorists, Sending Message to Opposition," December 12, 2012
[139] *New York Times,* "*The 'Signature Strikes' Program*," May 29, 2013
[140] *The Guardian,* "US drone strikes target rescuers in Pakistan – and the west stays silent," August 20, 2012
[141] *Salon,* "*U.S. Again Bombs Mourners*," June 4, 2012

It is important to note the presence of 'blowback': the concept that bombing funerals and responders to attacks will create a whole new generation of terrorists. It is almost a forbidden word in the mainstream media. For example, Ron Paul was ridiculed by pundits across the political spectrum on cable television when he insisted that blowback was a reality. While they deny it in public, many groups secretly relish the idea that their intangible enemy will only grow stronger while their profits grow larger. Drones are helping usher in the era of endless war.

Another aspect of Barack Obama's capacity to wage war lies in his secretive 'kill list', which is a collection of singled out individuals deemed to pose a threat to the United States and have been selected for targeted killing.[142] The list is known to include American citizens such as Anwar Al Alwaki, raising serious questions regarding human rights and legality.[143]

* * * *

Private Military and Intelligence Contractors

It has always been hard to tell exactly how many private contractors are employed by the Federal government, and how many of those are under the umbrella of the Defense Industry. It was under Reagan that the Pentagon's privatization agenda began, and it has continued ever since. An NYU study on the size of government shows that the use of private contractors increased under the Clinton administration by about 25%.[144] It is known that Clinton hired KBR, at the time owned by Halliburton, to build military bases and support troops in Kosovo.[145]

---

[142] *The Guardian,* "Obama's secret kill list – the disposition matrix," July 14, 2013

[143] *New York Times,* "Secret 'Kill List' Proves a Test of Obama's Principles and Will," March 29, 2012

[144] "Fact Sheet on the New True Size of Government," NYU, Published for the Brookings Institution (PDF Warning)

It was under the administration of George W. Bush, with the Iraq war, when the use of private contractors skyrocketed. By 2008, the number of private contractors in use in Iraq was 155,000, more than the number of troops, a degree of privatization unprecedented in modern warfare.[146] The public became acquainted with the likes of Blackwater under the Bush administration, with events such as the unprovoked massacres in Baghdad and Fallujah.[147]

During his campaign, Obama promised to cut federal spending on private contractors.[148] It soon became clear, however, that much of the stimulus money would go straight to their pockets. His Afghanistan surge was primarily accomplished through contractors, which made up half of the military forces in the country by 2009.[149] The total number of contractors in Iraq and Afghanistan quickly reached 250,000.[150] Security contractors (e.g. private military forces) increased by over 400% under Obama and represent a quarter of all contractors employed by the Pentagon.[151]

The most shocking use of contractors has only recently been revealed. It turns out that they represent a significant amount of the NSA workforce. 483,000 people are employed by private contractors that work with the NSA and have 'Top Secret' access.[152] The potential for illicit spying and extortion represented by these numbers is so high as to reach certainty.

*　*　*　*

---

[145] Wikipedia Article on KBR

[146] *The Christian Science Monitor,* "A lesson from Iraq war: How to outsource war to private contractors," March 19, 2013

[147] *USA Today,* "*What Exactly Happened That Day in Fallujah?*" June 11, 2007

[148] *National Journal,* "Cut Federal Contract Spending By At Least 10 Percent," June 10, 2009

[149] *Talking Points Memo,* "DOD: Obama's Afghan Surge Will Rely Heavily On Private Contractors," December 15, 2009

[150] *CommonDreams,* "Obama Has 250,000 'Contractors' in Iraq and Afghan Wars, Increases Number of Mercenaries," June 1, 2009, written by Jeremy Scahill

[151] *Salon,* "Obama resides over a private contractor boom," February 24, 2004

[152] *Salon,* "500,000 contractors can access NSA data hordes," June 11, 2013

Renditions

The CIA has an official policy of 'rendition', where they send suspected terrorists to be interrogated in foreign countries, bypassing United States torture laws. The process was used extensively during George W. Bush's administration.

But did you know that the process began under Clinton? This PBS Frontline report confirms that the rendition process began in 1995.[153]

In 2007, Obama wrote an article in the *Foreign Affairs* journal stating:

> "To build a better, freer world, we must first behave in ways that reflect the decency and aspirations of the American people... This means ending the practices of shipping away prisoners in the dead of night to be tortured in far-off countries, of detaining thousands without charge or trial, of maintaining a network of secret prisons to jail people beyond the reach of the law."[154]

Yet by 2013 it has become clear that the process of rendition has continued. The *Washington Post* has reported that the Obama administration has "embraced rendition" and has consistently resisted lawmakers efforts to reform the policy.[155]

* * * *

---

[153] *PBS Frontline,* "Rendition Timeline."

[154] *Foreign Affairs,* "Renewing American Leadership," June 2007

[155] *Washington Post,* "Renditions continue under Obama, despite due-process concerns," January 1, 2013

Police Militarization

Under President Bill Clinton, a provision was added to the Defense Appropriations Bill that allowed the Pentagon to transfer unused military assets to local police departments around the country.[156] The program continued through President Bush and has been expanding throughout the Obama presidency.

> "[Fiscal Year] 11 has been a historic year for the program. We reutilized more than $500M, that is million with an M, worth of property in FY 11. This passes the previous mark by several hundred million dollars." - Disposition Services[157]

The equipment gifted to police departments range from assault rifles and bayonets to massive vehicles such as the MRAP, which stands for Mine-Resistant Ambush Protected, of which 500 municipalities received for free from the Department of Defense in 2013.[158]

There is also the troubling trend of the growth of asset forfeiture, the process by which, having granted itself the power to do so, the Government seizes any cash, cars, property and more it can reasonably connect to a crime. This ability incentives sending out specialized, militarized police such as SWAT teams to serve drug warrants, as the teams themselves are expensive to maintain. This program started long before the Obama presidency, but recently it has swelled, with the Justice Department Forfeiture fund reaching $1.8 billion in 2011, with nearly half of a billion being returned to the local police departments that led the raid.[159]

---

[156] *Huffington Post,* "7 Ways The Obama Administration Has Accelerated Police Militarization," July 10, 2013

[157] (PDF Warning) Disposition Services, "October 2011 Newsletter"

[158] *Reason,* "Police in Columbia, South Carolina and 499 Other Cities Get "Free" Tanks," November 18, 2013

[159] *Huffington Post,* "7 Ways The Obama Administration Has Accelerated Police Militarization," July 10, 2013

*   *   *   *

Globalization

A key process in globalization involves removing national sovereignty in favor of trade agreements that favor the rights of corporations. Bill Clinton championed the NAFTA agreement, which among other issues superseded articles in the Mexican constitution, water rights in Canada, and allows corporations to sue nations when they are in violation of the trade act.[160]

Regardless of your opinion on NAFTA and other trade agreements, Obama has taken the concept of corporate power over national sovereignty to a whole new mind-blowing level with the Trans-Pacific Partnership agreement, a trade proposal that only recently became public knowledge when the documents were leaked (Check the footnote to read the whole document).[161] Why the secrecy? The TPP agreement would bestow radical new powers on corporations, including establishing an international tribunal that would override domestic law and would have the power to issue sanctions against governments for failing to abide by their ruling.

The TPP runs contrary to Obama's statement during his 2008 presidential campaign:

> "We will not negotiate bilateral trade agreements that stop the government from protecting the environment, food safety, or the health of its citizens; give greater rights to foreign investors than to U.S. investors; require the privatization of our vital public

---

[160] Wikipedia Article on NAFTA
[161] TPP Document

> services; or prevent developing country governments from adopting humanitarian licensing policies to improve access to life-saving medications."[162]

Congressman Alan Grayson summed it up nicely: "It's all about tying the hands of democratically elected governments, and shunting authority over to the non-elected for the benefit of multinational corporations. It's an assault on democratic government."[163]

The TPP has what is called an 'investor-state dispute settlement mechanism' which allow companies and investors to sue governments for losses of profits due to the government's policies.[164] The deliberations would be undertaken by an international group of corporate lawyers and threatens to overrule democracies and threaten our legal rights. It is not an exaggeration to say that in many instances this agreement gives more power to corporations than governments.

* * * *

Conclusion

The One-Party State is the result of special interests, economic and military-intelligence having gained a strong enough foothold in Washington to subvert the political process. The saying that power is in guns and money has never been truer. The corruption has been heavily and cleverly obfuscated behind a wall of relentless partisan rhetoric that magnify the small differences between Presidential candidates.

Consider the major initiatives of the Obama presidency. His Affordable Care Act has been championed as a bastion of liberal reform, but in reality it is simply forcing Americans to purchase health plans from private corporations. His raising of the top tax bracket is proffered as proof of a liberal agenda, however the tax burden is still squarely on the middle class. In addition, the wealthiest Americans are virtually unaffected, as their wealth resides in assets and investments, not income. We are left with a platform that is nearly indistinguishable from his predecessors, from which Obama promised significant change.

---

[162] (PDF Warning) 2008 DNCC Platform, available here.

[163] *Huffington Post,* "Alan Grayson On Trans-Pacific Partnership: Obama Secrecy Hides 'Assault On Democratic Government'," June 18, 2013.

[164] Union Solidarity International, "TPP and TTIP: the corporate coup behind the acronyms," November 18, 2013

When George Bush bombs a foreign country, liberals cry foul and protest in droves. When Obama does the same thing, the previous protestors become supporters of the policy. The same phenomenon can be seen on the other side of the aisle. Conservatives are quick to criticize the expansion of programs under Democratic presidents, but stand silent while Reagan and the Bush family oversaw many of the largest expansions of the Federal government and budget in the history of the United States.

It should be clear after even a cursory inspection of the legacies of Presidencies from the last 30 years that there is very little tangible differences between the two parties. The shockingly establishment-oriented agenda of Barack Obama ought to be waking up millions of people to this truth.

Can we work within the system to change the One Party State? How do we approach the 2016 elections knowing that there are no real alternatives to be found within the two parties? Even candidates with exceptionally favorable rhetoric cannot be trusted to translate their platform into actual policies.

It is possible to dismiss the previous two chapters as a result of 'market forces', that endless war and the One-Party state are the result of uncoordinated actors in a free market. Even if this was the case, the implications and subsequent need for reform would be tremendous. The result can accurately be described as the dirty 'F' word: Fascism. I understand that there will be a lot who disagree with this designation; I argue that the term has many different meanings and many prominent people have used it in different ways. If you feel that another term best describes the phenomenon, that is OK, ultimately it is not important what semantics we apply.

Fascism (Or whichever term you prefer) is appropriate because the system has evolved into collusion between the military and economic entities to mutually ensure each others entrenchment. It has grown out of control, and perhaps no evidence is stronger than the fact that the media absolutely refuses to indicate something might be wrong, as they have been enveloped by the system.

Food for Thought:

1. What is responsible for the massive disconnect between lack of differences between Presidential candidates and the vitriolic rhetoric in the media and on Capitol Hill?

2. Why has Barack Obama reversed his position on so much of his campaign platform?

3. What forces are the driving factors in the constant overseas military and economic hegemony?

4. Who is driving the creation of agreements such as the Trans-Pacific Partnership and where does the order of secrecy come from?

5. Which covert institutions could be influencing the policy of elected officials?

Psychopathy, Power and Politics

> “There is no such thing, in the psychopathic universe, as the 'merely weak'. Whoever is weak is also a sucker; that is, someone who demands to be exploited”- Psychologist Robert Rieber[165]

Psychopathy

What exactly does the word mean? Entertainment media bombards us with a particular version of the psychopath, one that is irrational, dangerous and violent. Someone who doesn't fit in, who 'just doesn't seem right'. Is this an accurate description?

Dr. Robert D. Hare, an eminent Psychologist on the subject of psychopathy, portrays the disorder in a drastically different light. In his book *Without Conscience,* he describes psychopaths as being conscienceless yet rational, not suffering from any insanity or debilitation; instead they are logical, manipulative, predisposed to crime, selfish and without guilt, shame, remorse or empathy.[166] In other words, these men and women are not *mentally ill* in the sense that we traditionally imagine. Psychopathy is surely an illness, but it is not a neurosis that will manifest symptoms others can easily perceive. Often, the psychopath will be aware of his condition and completely conceal his aberrant traits.

In *Without Conscience,* Dr. Hare presents numerous case studies and statistics to illuminate the world of the psychopath; the evidence points towards a world full of people programmed for evil. Dr. Hare stresses multiple times that the psychopath is someone who has a strong desire for power and the need to manipulate others, not for personal gain but simply for the sake of manipulation. While some psychopaths are erratic, others have the ability to completely conceal their condition behind a carefully constructed social persona.

---

[165] Professor Robert W. Rieber, a Fellow at Columbia University and eminent Psychologist and Historian. Quote available here, taken from his book *The Individual, Communication and Society: Essays in Memory*

[166] When discussing books, I will try my best to find a publicly available PDF; For *Without Conscience,* I was unable to. You can view the details of the book on Amazon.com here.

Dr. Hare's list of psychopathic personality traits include:

- Displaying glibness and superficial charm
- Being in constant need of stimulation and prone to excessive boredom
- Acting in a conning or manipulative way
- Showing shallow emotional responses
- Acting out promiscuous sexual behavior
- Behaving irresponsibly
- Avoiding long term relationships
- Feeling a grandiose sense of self worth
- Lying repeatedly without remorse
- Lacking any remorse or guilt

- Lacking empathy for others
- Having poor behavioral controls
- Displaying behavioral problems early on in life
- Behaving impulsively
- Failing to accept responsibility for actions
- Displaying signs criminal diversity

Dr. Hare's predecessor Harvey Cleckly, perhaps the first psychologist to study the psychopathic phenomenon decades earlier, compiled a similar list:

- Superficial charm and average intelligence.
- Absence of delusions and other signs of irrational thinking.
- Absence of nervousness or neurotic manifestations.
- Unreliability.
- Untruthfulness and insincerity.
- Lack of remorse or shame.
- Antisocial behavior without apparent compunction.

- Poor judgment and failure to learn from experience.
- Pathological egocentricity and incapacity to love.
- General poverty in major affective reactions.
- Specific loss of insight.
- Unresponsiveness in general interpersonal relations.
- Fantastic and uninviting behavior with drink, and sometimes without.
- Sex life impersonal, trivial, and poorly integrated.

Most of the case studies Dr. Hare presents in his book are from the prison population and anecdotal accounts from those who have been abused. This is a natural, structural problem in the study of psychopathy: the study is limited for the most part to the 'Unsuccessful Psychopath', those who could not conceal their traits or whose social circumstances led to blue-collar crime.

Yet Dr. Hare also spends some significant time devoted to the 'Subdeviant Criminal', the psychopath who has control over his deviance and the ability to hide it from the populace. Instead of the petty criminal, these men and women occupy positions in business, government, industry, and law. Their condition goes entirely unnoticed by the populace; their employers, peers, even their family and those who love them are fooled.

How can such deception be possible? Consider that psychopathy is not an 'acquired' illness. Instead, it has strong genetic components and manifests itself in early childhood.[167] [168] [169] [170] From an early age, the psychopath recognizes that to fit into society in any manner they need to develop to ability to lie extensively. Over time, they become exceptionally good at it. Their entire public persona becomes one complex act, a web of lies to hide their deviant personality.

* * * *

Sadism

A recent series of studies published in *Psychological Science* highlights the pleasure that persons with psychopathic tendencies derive from abusing others, by revealing that certain people will often take great pleasure in sadistic behavior, suggesting that in these subjects there is an "intrinsic motivation to inflict suffering on innocent others, even at a personal cost."[171] In one experiment, researcher Erin Buckels, from the University of British Columbia, found that there is a certain subset of people who chose to intensify the discomfort of others through directed white noise once they found that there would be no consequences for their actions. They were also willing to expend extra time and energy to be able to amplify the discomfort they were causing their 'opponent'.

---

[167] Blonigen, Daniel M. et. al. (2005), "Psychopathic personality traits: heritability and genetic overlap with internalizing and externalizing psychopathology." *Psychol Med*

[168] Glenn, Andrea L. et. al. (2011), "Evolutionary theory and psychopathy." *.Aggression and Violent Behavior* (PDF Warnng)

[169] Caspi, A, et. al. (2002). "Role of Genotype in the Cycle of Violence in Maltreated Children." *Science*

[170] Tikkanen, Roope et. al. (2011). "Psychopathy, PCL-R, and MAOA genotype as predictors of violent reconvictions". *Psychiatry Research*

[171] *Association for Psychological Science,* "Everyday Sadists Take Pleasure In Others' Pain," September 12, 2013

> “Some find it hard to reconcile sadism with the concept of ‘normal’ psychological functioning, but our findings show that sadistic tendencies ***among otherwise well-adjusted people*** must be acknowledged,” - Erin Buckels (Emphasis added)

> “The researchers hope that these new findings will help to broaden people’s view of sadism as an aspect of personality that manifests in everyday life, helping to dispel the notion that sadism is limited to sexual deviants and criminals,” - *Association for Psychological Science*

Erin Buckels concludes that her research may offer valuable insights into domestic abuse, animal abuse, and military & police brutality, through the understanding that disposition to sadism and abuse is a personality trait that manifests itself in every day life. The true insights which can be derived from her work and those of other psychopathy researchers go much deeper than police brutality; they shed much needed light on the widespread relationship between evil and power.

* * * *

Secondary Psychopathy

Understanding the nature of psychopathy does not reveal the full picture. Numerous researchers have differentiated between 'primary psychopathy', that which is genetic, and 'secondary psychopathy', that which is acquired through environment.[172] [173] [174] Unlike the primary psychopath, who is born with their condition and lacks entirely the capacity for empathy and other higher human emotions, the secondary psychopath occasionally manifests these traits.

In other words, non-psychopathic individuals can exhibit psychopathic behaviors through the conditioning of their environment. Two well known studies in psychology underscore this.

The first is the Milgrim Experiment. A volunteer would be placed at a booth with an apparatus that sends an electric shock to a person in another room. The volunteer believes the man in the other room is a fellow volunteer; in reality he is an actor that is not actually receiving electric shocks. The volunteer asks the actor a series of questions, a wrong answer means the use of an increasingly high voltage of shocking. The volunteer would be prompted by a man in a lab coat to continue administering the shocks long after it had become unsafe. The verbal prodding would range between 'Please continue' and 'You have no other choice, you *must* continue'. After the shock reached 300 volts, the actor would stop answering, but the man in the lab coat would continue insisting on shocks. Dr. Stanley Milgrim repeatedly found that nearly 2/3rds of people would continue to the maximum voltage of 450, long after they had believed their peer to be incapacitated.

Regarding the experiment, Milgrim wrote:

---

[172] Newman, Joseph P. et. al. (2005), “Validating a Distinction Between Primary and Secondary Psychopathy With Measures of Gray’s BIS and BAS Constructs”. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology* (PDF Warning)

[173] Skeem, Jennifer et. al. (2007), “Two Subtypes of Psychopathic Violent Offenders That Parallel Primary and Secondary Variants”. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology* (PDF Warning)

[174] Dean, Andy C. et. al. (2013), “Secondary psychopathy, but not primary psychopathy, is associated with risky decision-making in noninstitutionalized young adults”. *Elsevier*

> “Ordinary people, simply doing their jobs, and without any particular hostility on their part, can become agents in a terrible destructive process. Moreover, even when the destructive effects of their work become patently clear, and they are asked to carry out actions incompatible with fundamental standards of morality, relatively few people have the resources needed to resist authority."

The second experiment is the Stanford Prison Experiment. Volunteers were asked to simulate a prison in Stanford's psychology hall; half of the participants simulated prisoners and the other half guards. The guards were told to make the prisoners feel powerless though not resort to violence. Zimbardo, the lead experimenter, found that many of the guards stepped far beyond the boundaries of what had been predicted, leading to dangerous and psychologically damaging situations. A third of the guards had displayed 'genuine sadistic tendencies'. Some prisoners were emotionally traumatized and had to leave the experiment early. Zimbardo argued that his experiment shows that people internalize authority and submission.

Though the nature of the Stanford Prison experiment does not lend itself to empiricism, it does give some credence to the idea that 'power corrupts' and changes people. Furthermore, an experiment published in August 2012 by the *Journal of Experimental Psychology* showed definite psychological changes associated with power. It found that people who considered themselves in positions of power literally perceived the world around them differently.[175]

---

[175] Yapp, Andy et. al. (2012). “The powerful size others down: The link between power and estimates of others' size.” *The Journal of Experimental Psychology.*(PDF Warning)

We would like to think that humanity has evolved since these experiments took place, and since the atrocities that were revealed after World War II. Unfortunately, this is not the case. In 2008, the Stanley Milgram study was reproduced, with only slight alterations to conform to modern ethical standards, and found the exact same results: A vast majority of participants were willing to inflict significant pain on another human if pressured to do so by perceived authority.[176]

We do not need to rely on psychological studies to see the power of perceived authority causing abuses: we have tangible evidence of the relationship emerging frequently from the War on Terror. Most recently, it was revealed that the CIA made doctors and psychologists working at various Department of Defense institutions violate the ethical codes of their profession in order to become involved with the torture and degrading treatment of terror suspects.[177]

> “Medical professionals were in effect told that their ethical mantra "first do no harm" did not apply, because they were not treating people who were ill.” - *The Guardian*

The report, compiled by the Taskforce on Preserving Medical Professionalism in National Security Detention Centers, supported by the Institute on Medicine as a Profession (IMAP), found that doctors working with the Department of Defense and CIA routinely participated in waterboarding, sleep deprivation and force-feeding, the latter being against the rules of World Medical Association and the American Medical Association, while gathering and sharing intelligence.

> "The American public has a right to know that the covenant with

---

[176] *BBC,* “People 'still willing to torture',” December 19, 2008

[177] *The Guardian,* “CIA made doctors torture suspected terrorists after 9/11, taskforce finds,” November 4, 2013

> its physicians to follow professional ethical expectations is firm regardless of where they serve. It's clear that in the name of national security the military trumped that covenant, and physicians were transformed into agents of the military and performed acts that were contrary to medical ethics and practice. We have a responsibility to make sure this never happens again."
> - Dr Gerald Thomson, professor of medicine emeritus at Columbia University and member of the taskforce.

While participation in waterboarding and force-feeding may not be shocking to the desensitized public's sensibilities, it is still very revealing that physicians and psychologists who would otherwise balk at the suggestion that they would violate their professions ethical codes, do so without hesitation when it is done in the name of War. And after all, the United States did sentence Japanese war criminals to death for the act of waterboarding during the International Military Tribunal for the Far East following World War II.[178]

Armed with this context, it is easy to understand the ease with which psychopaths can manipulate institutions and societies. A majority of people do not even have the psychological capacity to refuse authority, at least under situations of pressure. Putting the average citizen in positions of minor authority such as a police officer can cause behavioral and physiological changes in that person, disposing them to abuse. Therefore a psychopath in a position of power essentially has a vast pool of tools at their disposal to act out their twisted desires of manipulation and control.

* * * *

---

[178] *Huffington Post,* "Yes, *National Review*, We Did Execute Japanese for Waterboarding," April 24, 2009

The Pathocracy

Psychopathy is not a rare phenomenon: Dr. Hare estimates that psychopaths consist of 1% of the population, other psychologists have estimates as high as 4%.[179] That represents between 3 and 12 million Americans, millions of which are the 'Subdeviant Criminals' of Dr. Hare's lexicon, residing in positions of power with a psychological need to control and manipulate others. They are drawn to certain occupations that allow them to wield power over others, such as police, military, intelligence, and finance. Over time, they begin to saturate important institutions, being more ruthless and willing to cause more destruction in their rise up the ladder of power than their competition. In the exact same manner that you and I naturally exclude deviants from our social groups, psychopaths naturally exclude those of us who allow conscience and morality to influence our decisions and perceptions. The result is a web of mutual conditioning of 'evil', where goals and actions become increasingly removed from the institutions original intention. This process has been occurring for centuries in banks, clandestine agencies, military, police departments, and governments, in nearly every instance hiding behind rhetoric and ideology that masks their true nature.

The rise of this process over decades results in a phenomenon known as *Pathocracy*.

> *pathocracy* (n). A system of government created by a small pathological minority that takes control over a society.[180]

---

[179] Harvard Psychologist Martha Stout makes the 4% claim in her book *The Sociopath Next Door*.

[180] Definition taken from Andrew Lobaczewski, a Polish Psychologist who dedicated his life to studying the Pathocratic phenomenon of the Soviet Bloc. His book Political Ponerology is dense but immensely important, you can read it here.

Pathocracies have existed throughout history and many exist in the present. Unfortunately, there is a considerable amount of evidence that the United States has evolved into such a system of government, where clandestine and financial institutions saturated with psychopaths have gained enough influence to subvert the democratic process. Their rise to power coincided with the draping of a veil over their existence, through powerful propaganda and subtlety in action. This book is the history of the modern American psychopath in a position of power, and the goal is to *lift the veil.*

Operation Paperclip

> "What you were made to feel was that the country was in desperate peril and we had to do whatever it took to save it." - Hugh Cunningham, CIA Official[181]

As the Western Theater of World War II came to a close, there was a mad rush between the Soviet Union and the United States to be the first army to enter and secure Germany. It was not for consideration of land; that would be meted out later during the Yalta and Potsdam conferences. Nor was it to capture the Nazi leadership and bring them to trial for their heinous crimes against humanity.

In fact, the goal was the opposite. The rush to secure Germany was much more about securing Germany's infrastructure: their leadership and the best minds in intelligence, science and industry. NationalArchives.gov hosts a list of over 1,500 Nazis that were transferred into America, many of them rampant war criminals.[182] It has been released to the public only recently thanks to the Nazi War Crimes Disclosure Act. The project that oversaw this endeavor is known as Operation Paperclip and was undertaken by the Office Of Strategic Services, the precursor to the CIA.

President Harry Truman formally ordered the Operation in August 1945, but it had covertly began months earlier, in May. Truman's orders expressly forbid the transfer of any person known "to have been a member of the Nazi Party, and more than a nominal

---

181John Marks, “The Search for the Manchurian Candidate: The CIA and Mind Control” 1979. Despite the sensationalist title, John Marks' book is a model of academic integrity and a treasure trove of information. The book is derived from information taken from 16,000 CIA files received through the Freedom of Information Act, and interviews with the few officials who would agree to talk. PDF available here.

182Records of the Office of the Secretary of Defense (Record Group 330), NationalArchives.gov participant in its activities, or an active supporter of Nazi militarism".[183]

This directive was not followed, for it would have prevented the acquisition of a lot of prominent Nazis such as Arthur Rudolph, who endorsed the usage of slave labor from concentration camps for the building of the V2 rocket[184] and later became a prominent figure in NASA.[185] More people would die building the V2 rocket- a number estimated at 60,000- than were killed by it in combat.[186]

The dossiers of prominent Nazis brought into the United States such as Wernher von Braun cannot be found on the National Archives sheet; we can conclude that either identities were faked and whitewashed during the process, or the 1,500 names is an incomplete tally. Regardless, we can conclude that the order of Truman was not heeded, and many former Nazis became entrenched within the United States science, intelligence and industrial industries, undoubtedly contributing to a web of psychopathic conditioning.

There are many interesting profiles of war criminals who found employment in the United States after the war. Krunoslav Draganovic, for example, was a Franciscan priest who actively served the Nazi satellite regime in Croatia, where they were responsible for over 350,000 deaths. He also facilitated the escape of numerous Croatian war criminals through the assets of the clergy. After the war, he was hired as a U.S. spy.[187]

Kurt Blome was the director of the Nazi Biological Warfare program and former SS officer. He oversaw Nerve Gas experimentation on prisoners at Auschwitz, and established the bioweapons research center for Heinrich Himmler. One of his experiments involved inoculating prisoners with the plague and recording its progression.[188] He was hired by the US Army Chemical Corps in 1951 to work on chemical warfare research.[189]

---

[183] Wikipedia Article on Project Paperclip

[184] http://history.msfc.nasa.gov/vonbraun/excerpts.html

[185] *New York Times,* "NASA Refuses to Comment on it's Former Official", October 18 1984. "Mr. Rudolph directed the building of the Saturn 5 rocket that carried the Apollo astronauts to the moon and managed other space and missile programs... He was awarded the Exceptional Service Medal in 1968 and the Distinguished Service Medal, the agency's highest honor, the following year."

[186] http://www.v2rocket.com/start/chapters/mittel.html

[187] From the Federation of American Scientists, information uncovered from the Nazi War Crimes Disclosure Act. http://www.fas.org/sgp/news/2002/05/nara050802.html

The most interesting case study is that of Reinhard Gehlen, a Major General in the German Wehrmacht, close confidant of Hitler, and head of the German Army Intelligence on the Eastern Front. The OSS found that Gehlen's knowledge of the Soviets that he had gained during World War II was so important that not only did they let him keep his job, he was able to maintain a vast majority of his infrastructure. What became known as the Gehlen organization functioned as a semi-autonomous intelligence unit for the United States and West Berlin, and employed over 100 former Gestapo and SS officers.[190]

> “The Gehlen Organization was the one group that did have networks inside Eastern Europe, and that is why we hired them... Hiring Gehlen was the biggest mistake the US ever made. Our allies said, 'You are putting Nazis at the senior levels of your intelligence', and they were right. The Gehlen organization was the primary source of intelligence that claimed that, 'The Soviets were about to attack West Germany' ...that was the biggest bunch of baloney then and it is still a bunch of baloney today. Gehlen had to make his money by creating a threat that we were afraid of, so we would give him more money to tell us about it. In my opinion, the Gehlen Organization provided nothing worthwhile for understanding or

---

[188] Robert Kirkconnel, “American Heart of Darkness.” Excerpt available here.

[189] Wikipedia Article on Kurt Blome

[190] This information comes from the National Security Archives, a fantastic resource run by George Washington University. They are a leader in hosting important documents and declassifying more through Freedom of Information Act requests. They will be linked to many times throughout this book. The specific information on Reinhard Gehlen can be found here.

> estimating Soviet military or political capabilities in Eastern Europe or anywhere else. The Gehlen organization had been penetrated by Soviet intelligence and many of the US Nazi assets were now double agents, taking CIA wages and turning around and selling information to the enemy." - Victor Marchetti, CIA Veteran and former Chief of Soviet Strategic War Plans[191]

The lack of internal security in the Gehlen Organization was egregious. One former Army Counter-Intelligence Corps officer lamented:

> "Recruiting methods then employed were so loose that former German Officers and noncoms were blindly being approached to work for American Intelligence in espionage activity directed against the USSR."[192]

Not only did this mean that the Gehlen Organization became saturated with radical Nazis and other fascist elements, it also served as an easy entry of infiltration by the Soviet Union. The organization functioned semi-autonomously so strict controls over their operations was impossible.

The Soviet press did not hesitate to use the Gehlen Organization as an effective propaganda tool, pointing out that the West had maintained the very intelligence unit that was responsible for a long series of crimes against humanity along the Eastern Front of the War. Future Director of Central Intelligence Richard Helms stated that:

---

[191] Christopher Simpson, "Blowback." Excerpt available here.

[192] CIA History Staff, "Forging an Intelligence Partnership: The CIA and the Origins of the BND, 1945-49" (1999). (PDF Warning)

> "The reports in the Soviet-dominated press in Germany concerning the use of former German staff and intelligence is such that there is no question that the Russians know this operation is going on even though they got some of the details wrong... Certainly the fact that so much publicity has been given to this indicates serious flaws in the Operation."[193]

One official CIA document titled "Forging an Intelligence Partnership: The CIA and the Origins of the BND, 1945-49", noted that the Gehlen Organization would take CIA assets that they received and then sell them on the black market for more funds.[194] The reference is vague but likely refers to selling arms and ammunition to various underground right wing elements.

Consider this: At the end of the War, the Office of Strategic Services was a small organization of 13,000 members[195], and the Gehlen organization consisted of at least 4,000 members by the year 1949.[196] Can we accurately say that United States intelligence absorbed the Nazi infrastructure without considering how much of an influence it had on the beginnings of these clandestine institutions?

---

[193] Ibid.
[194] Ibid.
[195] Wikipedia Article on the Office of Strategic Services
[196] CIA History Staff

* * * *

Further Complicity

Although the Nazi War Crimes Disclosure Act has been a wealth of information regarding the early relationships between the CIA and former Nazi's, there is still a lot that we do not know.

> “The Central Intelligence Agency is refusing to provide hundreds of thousands of pages of documents sought by a government working group under a 1998 law that requires full disclosure of classified records related to Nazi war criminals, say Congressional officials from both parties.” - *New York Times*[197]

The *New York Times* article goes on to describe how the CIA has interpreted the Nazi War Crimes Act in an exceptionally narrow fashion, refusing to release many more documents.

> “Historians who have studied the documents made public so far have said that at least five associates of the Nazi leader Adolf Eichmann, the architect of Hitler's campaign to exterminate Jews, had worked for the CIA.”

---

[197] *New York Times,* “C.I.A. Said to Rebuff Congress on Nazi Files,” January 30, 2005

Though we can only speculate, it is possible that some of these suppressed files contain collaboration with other elements who assisted in protecting Nazis during and after the fall of the Third Reich. For example, the Red Cross and the Vatican collaborated to smuggle thousands of war criminals to safety immediately after the fall of Nazi Germany.[198] They used underground passages known as 'ratlines' to keep the men out of sight. The Red Cross issued legitimate travel documents to many Nazi members: it is estimated that over 8,000 SS members ended up in Britain and Canada alone. These revelations shed light on how prominent Nazis such as Adolf Eichmann and Dr. Josef Mengele were able to escape from Germany and hide from Allied authorities and hide out for decades.

Food for Thought:

1. What effect did the influx of Nazis have on the agenda of the CIA and other institutions that they inhabited?

2. Why was OSS leadership so interested in providing safety for high profile Nazi's, despite the wishes of the President?

3. Is it possible that the friendly post-war relationship between the Gehlen Organization and the CIA indicates a form of relationship during and before the war as well?

---

[198] *The Guardian,* "Red Cross and Vatican helped thousands of Nazis to escape," May 25, 2011

4. What type of influence has the Gehlen Organization had on the development of Western Germany?

MK-ULTRA

> “In the 1950's and early 1960's, the agency gave mind-altering drugs to hundreds of unsuspecting Americans in an effort to explore the possibilities of controlling human consciousness. Many of the human guinea pigs were mental patients, prisoners, drug addicts and prostitutes -- "people who could not fight back," as one agency officer put it. In one case, a mental patient in Kentucky was dosed with LSD continuously for 174 days.” - *New York Times*[199]

MK-ULTRA is the codename given to a CIA research operation into biological behavioral engineering, also known as mind control. Many people are familiar with the operation but incorrectly assume that it was limited to LSD research. While there were plenty of resources devoted to LSD research, it was only one area of a vast field of mind control operations. MK-ULTRA researcher Ike Feldman said himself that:

> “The LSD... that was just the tip of the iceberg... Espionage. Assassinations. Dirty tricks. Drug experiments. Sexual encounters and the study of prostitutes for clandestine use. That is what I was doing when I worked for George White and the CIA.”[200]

---

[199] *New York Times,* “Sidney Gottlieb, 80, Dies; Took LSD to C.I.A.,” March 10, 1999

[200] Interview excerpt provided by Historian Dick Russell, available here.

MK-ULTRA had several precursors. There was Project Chatter in 1947, which tested drugs such as the infamous Scopalmine during interrogations.[201] There was Project Bluebird in 1949, which began studies into hypnosis.[202] The document describing the initiation of Project Bluebird outlines these special problems, among many others, that they were hoping to address:

- Can we in a matter of an hour, two hours, one day, etc., induce an hypnotic condition in an unwilling subject to such an extent that he will perform an act for our benefit?
- Can we create by post-hypnotic control an action contrary to an individual's basic moral principles?
- Can we guarantee total amnesia under any and all conditions?
- Can we "alter" a person's personality? How long will it hold?
- Can we devise a system for making unwilling subjects into willing agents and then transfer that control to untrained agency agents in the field by use of codes or identifying signs or credentials?[203]

---

201 Wikipedia Article on Project Chatter
202 National Security Archives documents on Project Bluebird
203 Document available here.

Project Artichoke began in 1951, with a scope of ... "Can we get control of an individual to the point where he will do our bidding against his will and even against fundamental laws of nature, such as self-preservation?"[204] All of the above projects were shuttled into MK-ULTRA in 1953, under the Technical Services Division, combining over 150 sub-projects[205], undertaken at over 80 institutions[206] such as universities, hospitals, prisons and pharmaceutical companies. Many of the projects were covertly ran through front organizations without the knowledge of the institution that hosted them.

The experiments and operations under MK-ULTRA have been shrouded in extreme secrecy. When it was enacted, then-CIA Director Allen Dulles exempted the program from normal financial controls, allowed the Technical Services Staff to begin experiments without contracts or written agreements with leadership, and ordered the financial office to pay any cost blindly on the signature of Sidney Gottlieb.[207] CIA Document 17748 states that:

> "There are just two individuals in TSD who have full substantial knowledge of the program and most of that knowledge is unrecorded. Both are highly skilled, highly motivated, professionally competent individuals. Part of their competence lies in their command of intelligence tradecraft. In protecting the sensitive nature of the American intelligence capability to manipulate human behavior, they apply "need to know" doctrine

---

[204] Document available here.

[205] 1977 Congressional Hearings, available here.

[206] *New York Times,* "80 Institutions Used in Mind Control Studies", August 4, 1977

[207] John Marks, "The Search for the Manchurian Candidate: The CIA and Mind Control" 1979. Despite the sensationalist title, John Marks' book is a model of academic integrity and a treasure trove of information. The book is derived from information taken from 16,000 CIA files received through the Freedom of Information Act, and interviews with the few officials who would agree to talk. PDF available here.

> to their professional associates and their clerical assistants to a maximum degree...
>
> TSD has pursued a policy of minimum documentation in keeping with the high sensitivity of some of the projects... The lack of consistent records precludes use of routine inspection procedures and raised a variety of questions regarding management and fiscal controls."[208]

The two individuals the document refers to are likely Sidney Gottleib, the director of MK-ULTRA, and Richard Helms, the Deputy Director of the CIA. In 1973, when Richard Helms became the Director of the CIA, he ordered all of the available MK-ULTRA files to be destroyed.[209] Thanks to a clerical error, about 20,000 files survived the destruction order. However, not only were most of the files destroyed, but many experiments were so sensitive that they were never recorded in the first place, so we must understand that as brutal and astonishing as the recorded experimentation is, we are only seeing the tip of the iceberg.

Another file, MK-ULTRA document 87624, states:

> "6% of the projects are of such an ultra-sensitive nature that they cannot and should not be handled by means of contracts which would associate CIA or the Government with the work in

---

[208] Document available here.
[209] "An Interview with Richard Helms" CIA.gov

> question. This 6% of the current research effort now lies entirely within two well-defined fields of endeavor… As present this results in ridiculous contracts, often with cut-outs, which do not spell out the scope or intent of the work."[210]

The first 'well-defined field of endeavor' described by the document is developing the capability of biological and chemical weapons for the purpose of mind control. The second field of endeavor is entirely redacted from the document.

* * * *

Ewan Cameron

Dr. Ewan Cameron was a Scottish-born Psychiatrist who worked in the United States since World War II and subsequently accepted an invitation to contract for the CIA. He would commute to the McGill University system in Canada to conduct experiments on brainwashing, 'psychic driving' and other forms of psychological torture. Cameron had a theory that a person with a psychological illness such as schizophrenia would benefit from having their brain essentially wiped clean, presuming the patient would redevelop their cognitive functions without the disorder. The CIA felt that brainwashing had obvious intelligence applications.[211]

---

[210] Document available here.

Dr. Cameron had a 'depattering' program he used to erase the minds of his patients that began with 15 – 30 days of 'sleep therapy' (sometimes lasting as long as 65 days), where the patient would sleep all day and night, with the exception of three brief periods where a sleep-inducing drug cocktail and electroshock therapy would be administered. Cameron's electroshock therapy has been documented to be between 20 – 40 times more intense than the professional standard at the time. Instead of 110 volts at a fraction of a second, Cameron used 150 volts for an initial shock lasting 1 full second, and then between 5 and 9 additional shocks during the convulsions of the patient, using a muscle relaxant to prevent permanent damage. The next step was to play taped messages to a patient 16 hours a day for multiple months in an attempt to program the desired behavior.[212]

Over half of his patients have suffered permanent amnesia of their lives before their 'depattering'. They were not told that they would be participating in experiments prior to their admittance. A large group of Cameron's victims brought a lawsuit against the CIA in 1988 which was settled out of court, so the agency would not have to admit any official wrongdoing.

Why the interest in electroshock? CIA Document 190885 reveals that the CIA was interested in the "guaranteed amnesia" that electric shock often resulted in.[213]

*   *   *   *

---

[211] John Marks

[212] Ibid

[213] Document available here.

'Front' Organizations

> “The C.I.A. used a front organization called the Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology to help pay for the work of Dr. Cameron, a psychiatrist who directed the Allan Memorial Institute in Montreal. Dr. Cameron died in 1967.
>
> The money was provided to Dr. Cameron as part of the C.I.A.'s effort in the 1950's and 60's to develop drugs or techniques that could control human behavior.
>
> Patients of Dr. Cameron were subjected to a regimen that included heavy doses of LSD and barbiturates, the application of powerful electric shocks two or three times a day, and prolonged periods of drug-induced sleep. According to Government records, the patients and their relatives were not told they were taking part in experiments.
>
> Joseph Rauh, another lawyer for the plaintiffs, said many of Dr. Cameron's patients 'were very greatly damaged by the experiments.'” - *New York Times*[214]

The use of 'fronts', meaning a private enterprise secretly owned by the CIA to conceal affiliations with the agency, is standard practice and widespread through MK-ULTRA. The Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology was nominally associated with Stanford and considered to be relatively prestigious in the field. It would often award 'cover grants' to conceal that the bulk of its research had military intelligence applications.[215]

---

[214] *New York Times,* “C.I.A. Near Setttlement of Lawsuit by Subjects of Mind-Control Tests.” October 6, 1988

* * * *

Unwitting Testing

The CIA had an official policy of 'terminal experiments', which essentially meant surreptitious administration of drugs to discover how subjects would react when they were not aware they were being experimented on. The justification was that it was the only way to truly discover the reactions of the mind under stress and exposed to various mind control chemicals. The policy was upheld even after it led to deaths. One high profile fatality was that of Dr. Frank Olson, a scientist from the Army Chemical Corps' Special Operations Division. During a joint Army-CIA gathering at Deep Creek Lodge in the woods of Northern Maryland, Sidney Gottlieb added LSD to the drinks of the few men in attendance, and did not inform them until the effects started to begin.

Dr. Frank Olson was one of these men, and unlike his peers, he was not able to handle the effects of the psychedelic. His colleagues described his reaction as 'psychotic'. He survived the trip, but entered a deep depression and ended up jumping out a window of the window of a New York hotel a week later.

---

[215] Document available here.

The death of Dr. Olsen prompted an internal review by the CIA of surreptitious testing, but the policy was resumed just a few months later. One CIA document, issued nearly a decade after Olsen's death, affirmed the internal consensus of unwitting administration of drugs: "(Officers) argued for the continuation of unwitting testing, using as the principal point that controlled testing cannot be depended upon for accurate results. General Carter, Mr. Kirkpatrick, and I do not disagree with this point."[216]

Another aspect of unwitting testing involves experimentation of children. Although most of MK-ULTRA experiments on minors has been covered up, a *New York Times* article from 1995 reveals a disturbing glimpse, stating that:

> "About 9000 Americans, **including children and newborns,**were used in 154 radiation tests sponsored by the Atomic Energy Commission, the Energy Department's Cold War predecessor, Government officials said today... Some participated with little or no knowledge of risks they faced."[217]

* * * *

Entrapment

216Document text available at Cryptome.org here.

217*New York Times,* "Officials Cite More U.S. Tests With Radiation," February 10, 1995. (PDF Warning)

One program uncovered during the internal CIA review by centered around George White, a CIA associate who formally worked for the Federal Bureau of Narcotics. The CIA considered White's position ideal, as it gave him unrestricted access to a variety of drugs without suspicion. Under CIA auspices, George White set up 'safehouses' in New York and later San Francisco, fully equipped with covert video and audio surveillance equipment. The goal was to study the use of prostitutes for covert intelligence.[218]

> “TSS officials wanted to find out everything they could about how to apply sex to spying, and the prostitute project became a general learning and then training ground for CIA carnal operations. After all, states one TSS official, "We did quite a study of prostitutes and their behavior.... At first nobody really knew how to use them. How do you train them? How do you work them? How do you take a woman who is willing to use her body to get money out of a guy to get things which are much more important, like state secrets. I don't care how beautiful she is—educating the ordinary prostitute up to that level is not a simple task.” - John Marks

In addition to studying the use of prostitutes for clandestine use, the safehouses were used to administer drugs to the unwitting solicitors, after which the various effects would be recorded. At least a couple CIA veterans were willing to discuss the use of these safehouses for a more sinister operation: entrapment. John Marks' research of the over

---

[218] 1977 Joint Hearing Before the Select Committee on Intelligence (PDF Warning)

20,000 declassified documents into MK-ULTRA shortly after their release in the mid 70's revealed the following shocking information:

> “Gottlieb did not limit his interest to drugs. He and other TSS officials wanted to try out surveillance equipment. CIA technicians quickly installed see-through mirrors and microphones through which eavesdroppers could film, photograph, and record the action. "Things go wrong with listening devices and two-way mirrors, so you build these things to find out what works and what doesn't," says a TSS source. "If you are going to entrap, you've got to give the guy pictures [flagrante delicto] and voice recordings. Once you learn how to do it so that the whole thing looks comfortable, cozy, and safe, then you can transport the technology overseas and use it." This TSS man notes that the Agency put to work in the bedrooms of Europe some of the techniques developed in the George White safehouse operation.”[219]

James Keehner, a former CIA psychologist, recalled his involvement in one entrapment case, in which he analyzed a nurse who had 'offered her body' for her country:

> "We wanted her to sleep with this Russian... Either the Russian

---

[219] John Marks

> would fall in love with her and defect, or we'd blackmail him. I had to see if she could sleep with him over a period of time and not get involved emotionally. Boy, was she tough!"[220]

Keehner noted that he became disillusioned with entrapment cases, but that other officers 'got their jollies' from this type of work. Regarding his typical assignment, Keehner stated:

> "I was sent to deal with the most negative aspects of the human condition. It was planned destructiveness. First, you'd check to see if you could destroy a man's marriage. If you could, then that would be enough to put a lot of stress on the individual, to break him down. Then you might start a minor rumor campaign against him. Harass him constantly. Bump his car in traffic. A lot of it is ridiculous, but it may have a cumulative effect."

Knowing that some officers got their 'jollies' from entrapment operations, and that safehouses were installed in the United States, the question “Were entrapment techniques ever used against United States officials or other domestic people of importance?” is logically raised.

---

[220] John Marks

* * * *

Personality Assessment

Although MK-ULTRA was originally devoted to biological mind control, it quickly evolved into a program dedicated to understanding all aspects of the human psyche. George White's experiments tested how people reacted to entrapment, and other experiments tested how different types of people responded to alcohol. It is with this context that the CIA contacted Psychologist John Gittinger to become an instrumental part of MK-ULTRA.

Gittinger had developed the Personality Assessment System, a test which would be administered to give fascinating insights into a person's personality and had distinct variables that separated his work from other known personality tests at the time such as the famous Weschler exam. Like Ewan Cameron, Gittinger received funding through the Human Ecology Society to research what type of personality would be likely to defect from their country, both to target foreign agents and to weed out domestic ones.

At one point, Gittinger traveled to work with George White to use his test on prostitutes and homosexuals to refine his assessment test to figure out what type of sexual orientation someone likely had, and to figure out who had sexually deviant tendencies. One of Gittinger's colleagues stated that he knew of cases where the Personality Assessment System was used to identify targets for entrapment, both heterosexual and homosexual.[221]

---

[221] John Marks

One particularly useful application of the Personality Assessment System was to identify people who would be easily hypnotized. It has likely been used extensively to hand-pick subjects and employees on sensitive projects within and beyond MK-ULTRA, assessing peoples personalities to discover who would retain secrecy and loyalty.

Interestingly, Gittinger was familiar enough with his test that he was able to observe someones behavior and then retroactively apply the attributes to determine their personality type. By observing how a man held his cigarette, handled his alcohol, or interacted with women, Gittinger could profile that person and determine their weaknesses and propensity for exploitation through entrapment or other means.

One logical application of the Personality Assessment System is the ability to assign certain people to a program that required secrecy, by determining how loyal an agent or asset would be to the Agency.

* * * *

Hypnotism

In mainstream culture, hypnotism is viewed as a type of 'science fiction', confined to the realm of magic tricks and entertainment. The truth is that hypnotism is very real and used both in mainstream psychology and in military intelligence.

Hypnotism was used by the United States military before the creation of the CIA, during World War II. Psychologist Dr. George H. Estabrooks recalled his involvement in the clandestine program to *Science Digest* in 1971, in an article titled “Hypnotism Comes of Age”.

> “One of the most fascinating but dangerous applications of hypnosis is its use in military intelligence. This is a field with which I am familiar through formulating guidelines for the techniques used by the United States in two world wars.
>
> Communication in war is always a headache. Codes can be broken. A professional spy may or may not stay bought. Your own man may have unquestionable loyalty but his judgment is always open to question.
>
> The “hypnotic courier,” on the other hand, provides a unique solution. I was involved in preparing many subjects for this work during World War II. One successful case involved an Army Service Corps Captain whom we’ll call George Smith. Captain Smith had undergone months of training. He was an excellent subject but did not realize it. I had removed from him, by post hypnotic suggestion, all recollection of ever having been hypnotized.
>
> First I had the Service Corps call the captain to Washington and tell him they needed a report on the mechanical equipment of Division X headquartered in Tokyo. Smith was ordered to leave

by jet next morning, pick up the report and return at once. These orders were given him in the waking state. Consciously, that was all he knew, and it was the story he gave his wife and friends.

Then I put him under deep hypnosis, and gave him—orally—a vital message to be delivered directly on his arrival in Japan to a certain colonel—let's say his name was Brown—of military intelligence. Outside of myself, Colonel Brown was the only person who could hypnotize Captain Smith. This is "locking." I performed it by saying to the hypnotized Captain: "Until further orders from me, only Colonel Brown and I can hypnotize you. We will use the signal phrase 'the moon is clear.' Whenever you hear this phrase from Brown or myself you will pass instantly into deep hypnosis." When Captain Smith re-awakened, he had no conscious memory of what happened in trance. All that he was aware of was that he must head for Tokyo to pick up the division report.

On arrival there, Smith reported to Brown, who hypnotized him with the signal phrase. Under hypnosis, Smith delivered my message and received one to bring back. Awakened, he was given the division report and returned home by jet. There I hypnotized him once more with the signal phrase, and he spieled off Brown's answer that had been dutifully tucked away in his unconscious mind.

The system is virtually foolproof. As exemplified by the case, the information literally was “locked” in Smith’s unconscious for retrieval by the only two people who knew the combination. The subject had no conscious memory of what happened, so couldn’t spill the beans. No one else could hypnotize him even if they might know the signal phrase...”

“The potential for military intelligence has been nightmarish. During World War II, I worked this technique with a vulnerable Marine lieutenant I’ll call Jones. Under the watchful eye of Marine intelligence I split his personality into Jones A and Jones B. Jones A, once a “normal” working Marine, became entirely different. He talked communist doctrine and meant it. He was welcomed enthusiastically by communist cells, and was deliberately given a dishonorable discharge by the Corps (which was in on the plot) and became a card-carrying party member.

The joker was Jones B, the second personality, formerly apparent in the conscious Marine. Under hypnosis, this Jones had been carefully coached by suggestion. Jones B was the deeper personality, knew all the thoughts of Jones A, was a loyal American and was “imprinted” to say nothing during conscious phases.

All I had to do was hypnotize the whole man, get in touch with Jones B, the loyal American, and I had a pipeline straight into the Communist camp. It worked beautifully for months with this subject, but the technique backfired. While there was no way for

> an enemy to expose Jones' dual personality, they suspected it and played the same trick on us later." - *Science Digest,* April 1971[222]

It is pretty shocking to see that Estabrooks was willing to completely destroy the life of a marine by relegating his primary personality to an 'alternate' that would only appear when accessed through hypnosis. It is more shocking that such an application of hypnotism is even possible. He noted that the potential for military intelligence was nightmarish but felt content that his knowledge was being used for the United States instead of the Nazis or the Russians. Unfortunately, corrupt elements in the United States, namely the CIA, would capitalize on this knowledge for illicit means in the near future.

There are a variety of CIA documents released through the Freedom of Information Act that shed light on their hypnotism activities. One particularly disturbing example is MK-ULTRA document 190691. It describes an experiment where an unnamed CIA official hypnotized two subjects, both 19 year old women. In an awakened state, they expressed deep disgust in the idea of holding a gun, yet when hypnotized, one was willing to grab it and fire at her peer (the gun was unloaded and no one was hurt.) It states:[223]

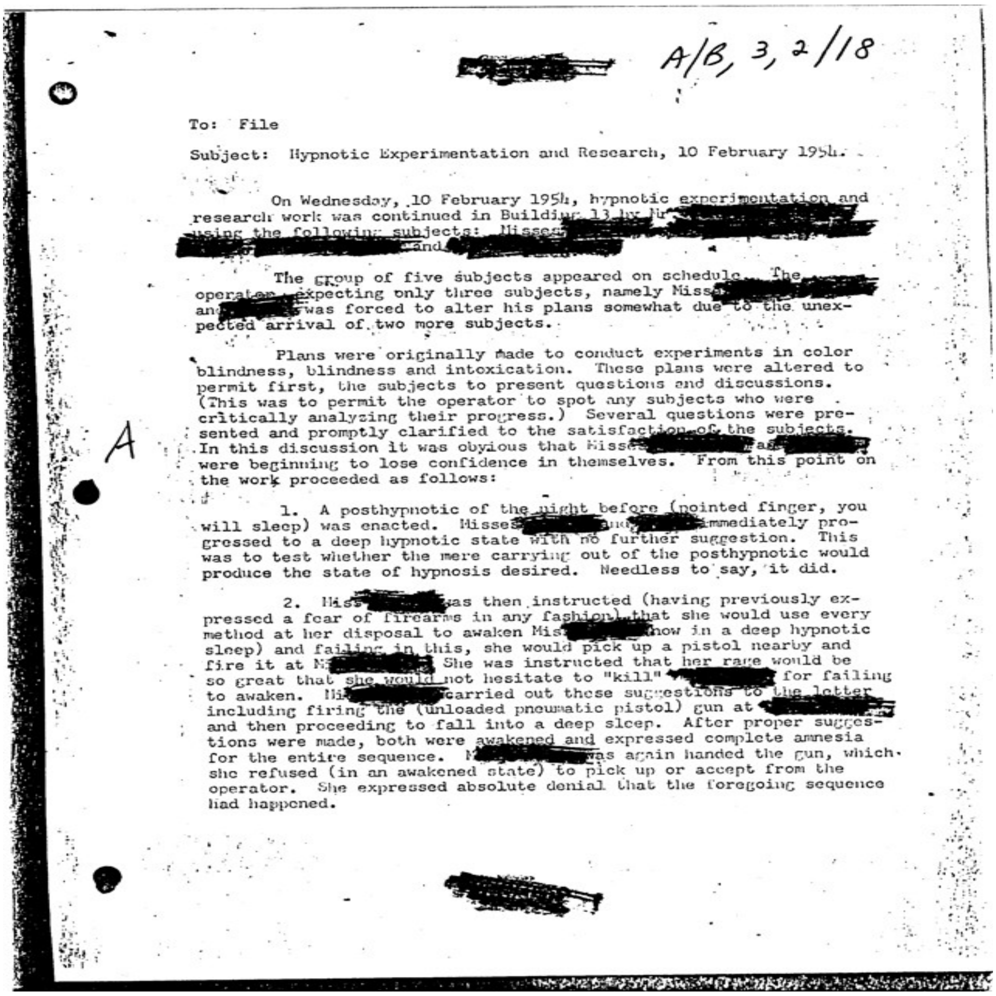
> "[Redacted] was then instructed (having previously expressed a fear of firearms in any fashion) that she would use every method at her disposal to awaken [redacted] (now in a deep hypnotic sleep) and failing in this, she would pick up a pistol nearby and

---

[222] *Science Digest,* "Hypnotism Comes of Age," April 1971
[223] Document available here.

> fire it at [redacted]. She was instructed that her rage would be so great she would not hesitate to “kill” [redacted] for failing to awake. [Redacted] carried out these suggestions to the letter, including firing the (unloaded pneumatic) pistol at [redacted] and then proceeding to fall into a deep sleep. After proper suggestions were made, both were awakened and expressed complete amnesia for the entire sequence.”

Not only was the CIA officer able to coerce otherwise peaceful subjects into violence, he was able to remove any memories of the event after they 'woke up' from the hypnotism.



[redacted] A/B, 3, 2/18

To: File

Subject: Hypnotic Experimentation and Research, 10 February 1954.

On Wednesday, 10 February 1954, hypnotic experimentation and research work was continued in Building 13 by Mr [redacted] using the following subjects: Misses [redacted] and [redacted]

The group of five subjects appeared on schedule. The [redacted] operator expecting only three subjects, namely Miss [redacted] and [redacted] was forced to alter his plans somewhat due to the unexpected arrival of two more subjects.

A

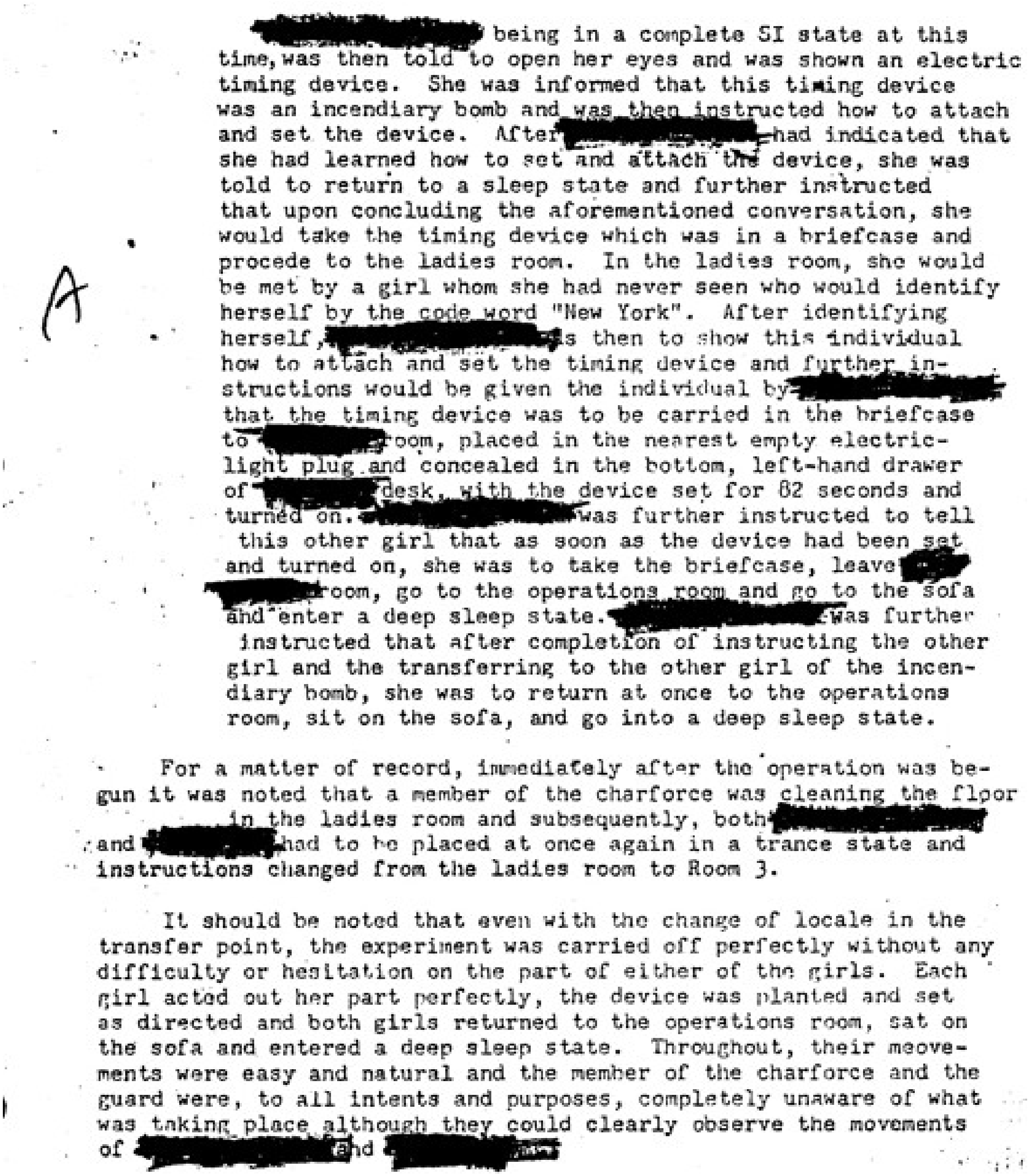
Plans were originally made to conduct experiments in color blindness, blindness and intoxication. These plans were altered to permit first, the subjects to present questions and discussions. (This was to permit the operator to spot any subjects who were critically analyzing their progress.) Several questions were presented and promptly clarified to the satisfaction of the subjects. In this discussion it was obvious that Misses [redacted] and [redacted] were beginning to lose confidence in themselves. From this point on the work proceeded as follows:

1. A posthypnotic of the night before (pointed finger, you will sleep) was enacted. Misses [redacted] and [redacted] immediately progressed to a deep hypnotic state with no further suggestion. This was to test whether the mere carrying out of the posthypnotic would produce the state of hypnosis desired. Needless to say, it did.

2. Miss [redacted] was then instructed (having previously expressed a fear of firearms in any fashion) that she would use every method at her disposal to awaken Mis [redacted] now in a deep hypnotic sleep) and failing in this, she would pick up a pistol nearby and fire it at M [redacted] She was instructed that her rage would be so great that she would not hesitate to "kill" [redacted] for failing to awaken. Mi [redacted] carried out these suggestions to the letter including firing the (unloaded pneumatic pistol) gun at [redacted] and then proceeding to fall into a deep sleep. After proper suggestions were made, both were awakened and expressed complete amnesia for the entire sequence. M [redacted] was again handed the gun, which she refused (in an awakened state) to pick up or accept from the operator. She expressed absolute denial that the foregoing sequence had happened.

[redacted]

MK-ULTRA Document 190619



A

[redacted] being in a complete SI state at this time, was then told to open her eyes and was shown an electric timing device. She was informed that this timing device was an incendiary bomb and was then instructed how to attach and set the device. After [redacted] had indicated that she had learned how to set and attach the device, she was told to return to a sleep state and further instructed that upon concluding the aforementioned conversation, she would take the timing device which was in a briefcase and procede to the ladies room. In the ladies room, she would be met by a girl whom she had never seen who would identify herself by the code word "New York". After identifying herself, [redacted]s then to show this individual how to attach and set the timing device and further instructions would be given the individual by [redacted] that the timing device was to be carried in the briefcase to [redacted]room, placed in the nearest empty electric-light plug and concealed in the bottom, left-hand drawer of [redacted] desk, with the device set for 82 seconds and turned on. [redacted] was further instructed to tell this other girl that as soon as the device had been set and turned on, she was to take the briefcase, leave [redacted]room, go to the operations room and go to the sofa and enter a deep sleep state. [redacted] was further instructed that after completion of instructing the other girl and the transferring to the other girl of the incendiary bomb, she was to return at once to the operations room, sit on the sofa, and go into a deep sleep state.

For a matter of record, immediately after the operation was begun it was noted that a member of the charforce was cleaning the floor in the ladies room and subsequently, both [redacted] and [redacted] had to be placed at once again in a trance state and instructions changed from the ladies room to Room 3.

It should be noted that even with the change of locale in the transfer point, the experiment was carried off perfectly without any difficulty or hesitation on the part of either of the girls. Each girl acted out her part perfectly, the device was planted and set as directed and both girls returned to the operations room, sat on the sofa and entered a deep sleep state. Throughout, their meovements were easy and natural and the member of the charforce and the guard were, to all intents and purposes, completely unaware of what was taking place although they could clearly observe the movements of [redacted] and [redacted]

MK-ULTRA Document 190527

MK-ULTRA Document 190527 reveals that through hypnotic suggestion, one subject was coerced into setting up an incendiary bomb and leaving the device in a bathroom.[224] The document states that even with unforeseen problems in location availability during the hypnotic state, the experiment was:

224Document available here.

> “...carried off without any difficulty or hesitation on the part of either of the girls... Throughout, their movements were easy and natural, and (bystanders) were, to all intents and purposes, completely unaware of what was taking place although they could clearly observe the movements of [redacted] and [redacted].”

Dr. Estabrooks once noted that only 1 in 5 people were susceptible to hypnotism in this manner. True to form, the CIA researched ways to improve to hypnotic susceptibility in their subjects, and found some success by combining techniques with administering drugs. A document titled *Continuation of Studies on Hypnosis and Suggestibility* states:

> “Preliminary clinical research during 1955-56 has yielded promising leads in terms of knowledge of how hypnotizability can be influenced by pharmacological means. Several drugs have been identified that apparently are effective in speeding the induction of a hypnotic state...”[225]

The two cited CIA documents describe the unwitting hypnosis of two young women for the use of experimentation. What is the possibility that psychopaths would use this knowledge to exploit women sexually? Perhaps the most disturbing CIA document I have come across is numbered 140393 and details a CIA interview with a professional hypnotist who was asked to give an instructional course in hypnotism to CIA agents. It states:

---

[225] Document available here.

> “On July 2 1951 approximately 1:00 pm the instruction began with [redacted] relating to the student some of his sexual experiences. [Redacted] stated that he constantly used hypnotism as a means of inducing young girls to engage in sexual intercourse with him. [Redacted], a performer in [redacted] orchestra was forced to engage in sexual intercourse with [redacted] while under the influence of hypnotism. [Redacted] stated that he first put her into a hypnotic trance and then suggested to her that he was her husband and she desired sexual intercourse with him. [Redacted] further stated that many times while going home he would use hypnotic suggestion to have a girl turn around and talk to him and suggest sexual intercourse to him and that as a result of these suggestions he spent approximately five nights a week away from his home engaging in sexual intercourse.”[226]

It is nothing short of terrifying to read how interested the CIA was in methods of rape. The fact that this was beyond any application to intelligence is an afterthought. The document finishes by describing how the student of the hypnotism instructor was able to successfully use his newly-learned techniques on new subjects, indicating that hypnotism was able to spread throughout the ranks of the CIA relatively effortlessly.

When Operation Bluebird first began, marking the beginnings of research into

---

226Document Available here.

hypnosis, one early document revealed a surprising goal:

> “Can we "condition" by post-hypnotic suggestion agency employees (or persons of interest to this agency) to prevent them from giving information to any unauthorized source or for committing any act on behalf of a foreign or domestic enemy?”[227]

This raises the distinct and disturbing possibility that the act of hypnotizing agency members for the purpose of altering their behavior became a common practice at the CIA under MK-ULTRA, with the power of what suggestions to induce at the hands of only two psychopathic men.

* * * *

Conclusion

Upon MK-ULTRA becoming public knowledge in 1971, the CIA was quick to claim that the program was halted due to a lack of production. The available evidence clearly shows that this is a lie. From the documents that survived Director Helm's destruction order, we can already see the potential for a 'Manchurian candidate': a mind controlled assassin.

---

[227] Document available here.

So what happened to MK-ULTRA? 14 year CIA veteran Victor Marchetti has stated in numerous interviews that the claim MK-ULTRA was halted was merely a cover-story, and that the operation went completely black, in other words, research continued at the highest level of secrecy.[228]

Is it possible that academic research into hypnosis and other organic forms of mind control have been deliberately marginalized from mainstream entertainment, media and academics in order to keep its potential use within a military-industrial complex a secret? After all, MK-ULTRA researcher Dr. Ewan Cameron became the president of the World Psychiatric Association in 1961 and also served as presidents of the Canadian and American Psychiatric Associations.[229]

It is important to reiterate that not only does the available evidence of MK-ULTRA comprise a portion of the documents that were created, but many of the experiments were never recorded in the first place. The operation was presided over by only two individuals who had a complete knowledge of the operations. Not even the Director of the CIA had full access. When John F. Kennedy appointed John McCone as the new director in the wake of the Bay of Pigs fiasco, Richard Helms declined to inform him about the more sensitive MK-ULTRA operations, such as George White's safehouses.[230]

Ultimately, the goal of MK-ULTRA was not to find the 'holy grail' of mind control but to map out a complete knowledge of human nature and the human mind, and then find ways to exploit it. This was done on both individual and group levels. We have no idea how much was accomplished towards this goal, or how much more developed the mind control

---

228*Telegraph,*"Histories Greatest Conspiracy Theories"
229Research from Historian John Simpkin, available here.
230Church Committee's Assassination report, pp. 102-3

research has gotten in the 50 years that have passed since the available documents were last issued. After all, if this is what the CIA was able to accomplish in the 1950's, what are they capable of today?

Food for Thought:

1. What kind of experiments were detailed in the documents that were destroyed after Director Helm's orders?

2. What kind of experiments were never recorded and why did they require such a high level of secrecy?

3. Do any recent instances of terrorism or assassinations sound similar to the documented instances of hypnotically induced susceptibility to carry out acts of violence?

4. What kind of power does mind control represent in the hands of a psychopath?

5. How widespread was the entrapment program and is it possible that it ended up

targeting U.S. Politicians? Military leaders? Businessmen?

6. What is responsible for the complete lack of knowledge of MK-ULTRA among the public?

7. What was the purpose of associating trauma through electro-shock and other means with mind control?

8. What new means of mind control have emerged with new technology?

Operation Gladio

“In Europe's new order, they are the spies who never quite came in from the cold, foot soldiers in an underground guerrilla network with one stated mission: To fight an enemy that most Europeans believe no longer exists.

Theirs is a tale of secret arms caches and exotic code names, of military stratagems and political intrigues.

At best, their tale is no more than a curious footnote to the cold war. The question is if, at worst, it could be the key to unsolved terrorism dating back two decades...

The focus of the inquiry is a clandestine operation code-named Gladio, created decades ago to arm and train resistance fighters in case the Soviet Union and its Warsaw Pact allies invaded.

All this week, there have been disclosures of similar organizations in virtually all Western European countries, including those that do not belong to the North Atlantic Treaty Organization.” *New York Times*[231]

---

[231] *New York Times,* “Evolution in Europe: Italy Discloses its Web of Cold War Guerillas.” November 6, 1990

How far would the United States go to prevent the spread of communism in Western Europe? Especially considering the constant false information provided by Reinhard Gehlen and his Organization indicating that a Soviet invasion was imminent? The answer is Operation Gladio: The CIA and NATO campaign to create, arm and fund radical right wing 'stay behind' organizations that would fight communism to the death. When the Soviet invasion never happened, these organizations created networks with politicians and within the black market, and turned their goals towards preventing the rise of leftist political movements, often resorting to terrorism to create domestic tension, causing citizens to turn towards increasingly fascist governments to provide protection. Today, this process is known as the 'Strategy of Tension'.

* * * *

Italy

It was Judge Felice Casson who first dredged up the evidence for state sponsored terrorism, while browsing the archives of the Italian military secret service.[232] In a *BBC* documentary on Operation Gladio, Casson described the operations as an effort...

> “To create tension within the country to promote conservative, reactionary social and political tendencies. While this strategy was being implemented, it was necessary to protect those behind

---

[232] Judge Felice Casson's Wikipedia Article

> it because evidence implicating them was being discovered. Witnesses withheld information to cover right-wing extremists."[233]

Casson points to a 1972 car bombing in Peteano,that killed three paramilitary police and was blamed on leftists, after which 200 Communists were immediately arrested. He found that there were no police investigations of the scene, and the official report was a forgery[234]. In fact, it was perpetrated by a right-wing terrorist named Vincenzo Vinciguerra[235], operating under Gladio orders, who later confessed to the crime. Vinciguerra's testimony reveals that it was easy to escape and remain hidden because everyone in the Italian security apparatus shared his anti-Communist convictions.[236] His testimony further revealed "a secret organisation, a super-organisation with a network of communications, arms, and explosives, and men trained to use them."[237] Years later, in prison, he would claim "I say that every single outrage that followed from 1969 fitted into a single organised matrix."[238] Nearly 2,000 people would die from political murder or acts of terrorism over this period of time.

When ex-Prime Minister Andreotti finally testified in 1990, he revealed that arms and equipment were provided by the CIA and placed in 139 underground caches across the country. General Giandelio Maletti, a former head of Italian counterintelligence, in March 2001 confirmed the CIA involvement. He stated that after the Piazza Fontana bombing in 1969, pieces of a bomb were planted in a leftist editors villa in order to blame the communists. He stated:

---

[233] *Operation Gladio,* a 1992 BBC production, watch it here.

[234] Historian Daniel Ganser, eminent Gladio researcher, in his book *NATO's Secret Armies,* page 3, available in PDF here. Ganser is the eminent authority on Operation Gladio and has done tremendous work in synthesizing the various evidence from nearly a dozen different languages into one source. This book is a must-read to gain a full understanding of Operation Gladio.

[235] Vincenzo Vinciguerra's Wikipedia Article

[236] Daniel Ganser, in a paper published in the *Whitehead Journal of Diplomacy and International Relations,* page 72, available in PDF here.

[237] Ibid.

[238] Ganser's *NATOs Secret Armies* page 8.

> "The CIA, following the directives of its government, wanted to create an Italian nationalism capable of halting what it saw as a slide to the left, and, for this purpose, it may have made use of right-wing terrorism."[239]

* * * *

Turkey

Another Gladio hotspot was Turkey. During the Cold War, Turkey shared a third of the total borders with the Soviet bloc and maintained the largest standing army in Europe, and the second in NATO after the United States. In 1952, a stay-behind army was organized under the codename 'Counter-Guerrilla'.

> "On November 3 (1996), a truck crashed into a Mercedes Benz in Susurluk, ninety miles south of Istanbul, and killed three Turkish passengers: a fugitive heroin smuggler and hitman, a former high-ranking police officer, and a former "Miss Cinema." The lone survivor was a right-wing member of parliament. In the car's trunk, police found a forged passport, police identification

---

239Ganser's *Whitehead Journal of Diplomacy and International Relations* page 73.

papers, ammunition, silencers, and machine guns.

Abdullah Catli, the fugitive heroin smuggler, had escaped from a Swiss prison. The dead beauty queen, Gonca Uz, was his girlfriend.

The police officer was Huseyin Kocadag, head of a Turkish police academy and a former Istanbul deputy police chief who reportedly organized hit squads in the southeast that kill Kurdish guerrillas and their supporters.

The survivor, Sedat Bucak, a member of parliament from the conservative True Path Party, is reportedly in charge of 2,000 Kurdish mercenaries paid by the government to fight Kurdish guerrillas.

The car crash has created a sensation in Turkey and has led parliament to hold hearings on the ties linking the True Path Party, the police, and thugs like Abdullah Catli. Newspapers in Turkey are making connections between what they are calling the "state gang" and a secret paramilitary force that for decades has attacked the left...

The United States funded these stay-behind groups for decades. Even though there was no Soviet occupation, some of the groups did take up arms-- against left-wing dissidents in their own countries. Some descendants of these groups are still at it, especially in Turkey.

> Abdullah Catli was one of those.
>
> "The accident unveiled the dark liaisons within the state," former prime minister Bulent Ecevit told parliament in December. Now leader of a small opposition social-democratic party, Ecevit knows a lot about those liaisons. He first told me about them -- and the American connection -- back in 1990, when I interviewed him in his Ankara office." - *The Progressive*[240]

Bulent Ecevit, five time Turkish prime minister, who is cited in the above quote, declared that the Taksim Square massacre was a Gladio operation, where half a million citizens had rallied. It was organized by trade unions, and the shooting lasted for 20 minutes while a thousand policemen in attendance did not intervene. About 40 people were killed, and though none of the perpetrators were caught, 500 demonstrators were detained. The massacre occurred during a broader wave of political violence.[241]

The U.S. State Department in its 1995 Human Rights report noted that:

> "Prominent credible human rights organizations, Kurdish leaders, and local Kurds asserted that the government acquiesces in, or even carries out, the murder of civilians... Human rights groups reported the widespread and credible belief that a Counter-Guerrilla group associated with the security forces had

---

[240] *The Progressive,* "Turkey´s Terrorists: A CIA Legacy Lives On," April 1, 1997

[241] Ganser´s *Whitehead Journal of Diplomacy and International Relations,* page 73

> carried out at least some 'mystery killings'".[242]

American journalist Lucy Komisar, when asking U.S. officials about investigating the human rights reports, was told “That's classified.” The Turkish military would likewise block all investigations in their country.[243]

There is evidence of Gladio operatives extensively operating torture campaigns for political purposes. For example, Talhat Turhan, former Turkey General, survived torture at the hands of special forces. He was told “...I was now ‘in the hands of a Counter Guerrilla unit operating under the high command of the Army outside the constitution and the laws.’ They told me that they ‘considered me as their prisoner of war and that I was sentenced to death.”[244]

Much of the violence was directed at the Kurdish minority. In 1984 the Counter-Guerrillas were behind the brutal crackdown that would kill and torture thousands over the next 5 years. Among other operations, Counter-Guerrillas would dress up as PKK members (A Kurdish political party) and attacked villages, raping and executing people randomly.[245]

The political violence in Turkey, with Gladio operatives responsible to at least a moderate extent, paved the way for the series of military coups that have occurred in the country. A 1996 *New York Times* article notes that:

242Ganser's *NATO's Secret Army,* page 20
243Ibid.
244Ganser´s *Whitehead Journal of Diplomacy and International Relations,* page 74
245Ganser's *NATO's Secret Army,* page 240

> “evidence suggests that officially sanctioned criminality may have reached levels that few had imagined…
>
> One of Turkey's most prominent pro-Kurdish politicians, Guven Ozata, said the car crash and its aftermath had convinced him that state-sponsored death squads were behind many of the estimated 3,500 unsolved killings that have been committed in the southeastern part of the country in the last decade. Most of the victims had been suspected of sympathizing with separatist Kurdish causes.
>
> "These gangs have a direct link with mystery killings," Mr. Ozata said at a news conference. "This is no longer a hypothesis or a guess. It is a reality acknowledged by Government officials."
>
> Several politicians and others who are calling for investigations into the Government's relationship with criminal gangs believe that the gangs used their official ties as cover for involvement in Turkey's lucrative heroin-smuggling trade. They suspect that senior officials were engaged in the trade or tolerated it as a way of repaying gangs that killed at their behest.” - *New York Times*[246]

The evidence of Gladio operations in Turkey reveal another important link: The collusion between paramilitary forces and drug traffickers. At the time (and to this day), Turkey served as a major hub in the smuggling of drugs into Western Europe, from the

---

[246] *New York Times,* “Scandal Links Turkish Aides to Death, Drugs and Terror”, December 10, 1996

Southeast Asian 'Golden Triangle' and later the Middle East. It is likely that drugs served as a significant source of funding for these decentralized operations and was the catalyst for a bond between the state and the criminal underworld that ensured massive corruption in the country that exists to this day. After all, we know that the Gehlen Organization was involved in the black market in the area to raise extra funds for their intelligence operations. It seems that this practice spread throughout the web of 'stay-behind' armies financed and armed by the CIA and NATO.

* * * *

Greece

One of the countries that suffered the most from the Cold War terrorism groups was Greece, the country with perhaps the most significant propensity for the rise of a natural leftist coalition. Former CIA agent and Gladio whistleblower Philip Agee claimed that:

> "The Greek-American CIA officer recruited several groups of Greek citizens for what the CIA called 'a nucleus for rallying a citizen army against the threat of a leftist coup' ... Each of the several groups was trained and equipped to act as an autonomous guerrilla unit, capable of mobilizing and carrying on guerrilla warfare with minimal or no outside direction."[247]

---

[247] Len Scott, "Intelligence, Crisis and Security." Excerpt available here.

These groups were equipped with automatic weapons and small mountain mortars stashed in underground caches throughout the country.[248]

The group was involved with the 1967 coup, where leftists were widely reported to have large leads in the polls. As NATO orders were to prevent any type of leftist 'insurgency', the group took over the Greece Defense Ministry, rolled into Athens, took control of communications centers, Parliament, the Royal Palace, and arrested over 10,000 people, many of whom were tortured.[249]

* * * *

Conclusion

Although the CIA and NATO have steadfastly refused to acknowledge the existence of Gladio, giving them deniability from ever having to disclose documents related to the operation, the existence of these fascist and violent underground networks has been acknowledged by the governments of nearly every NATO country. Furthermore, official documents in German, Dutch, French and Italian confirming the network, its organization and practices have been declassified.[250]

Operation Gladio is not just some ancient history. Italian Prime Minister Giulio Andreotti confirmed that the last coordination meeting he was aware of was held in 1990.[251] It has to be noted that this was a period of time where terrorism was evolving, moving towards the widespread radical Islamic terror that bombards our television screens daily, just 3 years before the first World Trade Center bombing and two years after the creation of Al-Qaeda. At the same time the geopolitical strategies of the United States were moving away from Europe and towards the Middle East. Unfortunately, the available information on Operation Gladio raises more questions than it answers.

---

[248] Ganser´s *Whitehead Journal of Diplomacy and International Relations,* page 77
[249] Ibid.
[250] Dozens of these documents are hosted here.
[251] Ganser's *NATO's Secret Army,* page 1

Food for Thought:

1. Knowing that the last Gladio meeting was in 1990, can we say with any certainty that the program ever ended?

2. How many people involved with Gladio are still operating in the CIA and other agencies?

3. Seeing that the 'Strategy of Tension' proved to be an effective tool, in what other instances has it been implemented?

4. Is there currently a 'Gladio B' in operation in the Middle East, as former FBI agent Sybel Edmonds asserts?

5. Are the criminal alliances that formed during Gladio in places such as Turkey still in effect today?

6. How did the 'stay-behind' organizations affect domestic politics in ways other than

terrorism?

7. Is the ongoing assassination campaign in Iraq, discussed in the chapter 'The War on Terror is a Fraud', a part of an evolved Gladio campaign?

Operation Mockingbird

> "About a third of the whole CIA budget went to media propaganda operations... We're talking about hundreds of millions of dollars a year just for that.....close to a billion dollars are being spent every year by the United States on secret propaganda." Testimony of William Schapp to Congress[252]

In 1948, the United States began the Marshall Plan, an initiative to help the devastated Europe recover from the War. The CIA decided to siphon funds to create the Office of Policy Coordination, which would become the covert action branch of the Agency.[253] It was under this program that Operation Mockingbird, a domestic propaganda campaign aimed at promoting the views of the CIA within the media, began. From the onset, Operation Mockingbird was one of the most sensitive of the CIA's operations, with recruitment of journalists and training of intelligence officers for propaganda purposes usually undertaken by Director Allen Dulles himself or his direct peers.[254]

It is a false belief that the CIA 'infiltrated' unwitting media institutions. The recruitment of journalists was frequently done with complicity from top management and ownership. Former CIA Director William Colby claimed during the Church Committee investigative hearings, "Lets go to the managements. They were witting." Among the organizations that would lend their help to the propaganda efforts was the *New York*

---

[252] Testimony available here.
[253] Sallie Pasani "The CIA and the Marshall Plan*,"* excerpt available here.
[254] *Rolling Stone Magazine,* "The CIA and the Media," October 20, 1977

Times, Newsweek, Associated Press, and the *Miami Herald*. Providing cover to CIA agents was a part of the *New York Times* policy, set by their late publisher, Arthur Hays Salzberger.[255]

The investigative committee of Frank Church, officially titled “Select Committee to Study Governmental Operations with Respect to Intelligence Activities”, uncovered a lot of evidence concerning Operation Mockingbird and came to the conclusion that:

> "The CIA currently maintains a network of several hundred foreign individuals around the world who provide intelligence for the CIA and at times attempt to influence opinion through the use of covert propaganda. These individuals provide the CIA with direct access to a large number of newspapers and periodicals, scores of press services and news agencies, radio and television stations, commercial book publishers, and other foreign media outlets."[256]

Carl Bernstein, the reporter famous for his excellent investigation into the Watergate scandal, wrote that:

> “(Joseph) Alsop is one of more than 400 American journalists who in the past twenty-five years have secretly carried out

---

[255] Ibid.

[256] *Final Report of the Select Committee to Study Government Operations With Respect to Intelligence Activities*. April 1976.

> assignments for the Central Intelligence Agency, according to documents on file at CIA headquarters. Some of these journalists' relationships with the Agency were tacit; some were explicit. There was cooperation, accommodation and overlap. Journalists provided a full range of clandestine services—from simple intelligence gathering to serving as go betweens with spies in Communist countries. Reporters shared their notebooks with the CIA. Editors shared their staffs. Some of the journalists were Pulitzer Prize winners, distinguished reporters who considered themselves ambassadors without portfolio for their country. Most were less exalted: foreign correspondents who found that their association with the Agency helped their work; stringers and freelancers who were as interested in the derring-do of the spy business as in filing articles; and, the smallest category, full-time CIA employees masquerading as journalists abroad. In many instances, CIA documents show, journalists were engaged to perform tasks for the CIA with the consent of the managements of America's leading news organizations."[257]

While a majority of Mockingbird operations were overseas, the goal was to have important, hard-hitting stories to be circulated in the American press. Relationships with major United States media institutions certainly helped with this goal. Bernstein lists *The New York Times, CBS* and *Time inc.* as the most productive relationships the agency cultivated. They also created front organizations overseas who publicly maintained an appearance of free press but privately were operated by the agency. An example of this is the *Rome Daily American,* which was 40% owned by the CIA for three decades.[258]

---

[257] *Rolling Stone Magazine,* "The CIA and the Media," October 20, 1977

Another strategy was developing relationships with major media owners who were known to harbor right-wing views, such as William Paley of *CBS*, and then passing on information of journalists, actors and screenwriters who harbored left-wing views. Information was also passed on to friendly congressmen such as Joseph McCarthy. These men and women would then be blacklisted from the industry. Lee J. Cobb was one such actor who was blacklisted, and recalled his experience:

> “When the facilities of the government of the United States are drawn on an individual it can be terrifying. The blacklist is just the opening gambit - being deprived of work. Your passport is confiscated. That's minor. But not being able to move without being tailed is something else. After a certain point it grows to implied as well as articulated threats, and people succumb. My wife did, and she was institutionalized. In 1953 the HCUA (House UnAmerican Activities Committee) did a deal with me. I was pretty much worn down. I had no money. I couldn't borrow. I had the expenses of taking care of the children. Why am I subjecting my loved ones to this? If it's worth dying for, and I am just as idealistic as the next fellow. But I decided it wasn't worth dying for, and if this gesture was the way of getting out of the penitentiary I'd do it. I had to be employable again.”[259]

---

[258] Wikipedia article on the *Rome Daily American*

[259] Wikipedia article on Lee J. Cobb

The CIA went as far as to write scripts for Hollywood. One interesting example is the funding of the movie version of Animal Farm in 1954, a book written just less than a decade earlier by George Orwell which enjoyed large commercial success. The problem for the CIA was that Orwell was a socialist, and his book attacked both capitalism and communism. To avoid this conflict, the CIA changed the ending of the Hollywood version to portray capitalism in a more positive light.[260]

Domestic surveillance was also used on journalists who had published classified material. In one example, a physical surveillance post was set up at a Hilton Hotel in view of the office of *Washington Post* writer Michael Getler.[261] The operation defied the CIA's charter, which specifically prohibits domestic spying. The operation was directed towards numerous members of the Washington press corp, and was signed off by John F. Kennedy himself, in coordination with CIA director John McCone.[262]

One CIA document states: “Get books published or distributed abroad without revealing any U.S. Influence, by covertly subsidizing foreign publicans or booksellers... Get books published for operational reasons, regardless of commercial viability”. The Church Committee concluded that over 1000 books were published under this directive.[263]

Some investigative journalists have claimed that Operation Mockingbird did not end in 1976 as the CIA claims. For example, in 1998, researcher Steve Kangas claimed that conservative billionaire Richard Mellon Scaife, who ran 'Forum World Features', a foreign news organization, was a CIA asset and used the organization to disseminate propaganda for circulation in the United States.[264] Kangas ended up dead with a bullet hole in his head, in the office of Richard Scaife. It was ruled a suicide, although there were discrepancies in the police report and the autopsy.[265]

---

[260] John Simkin, “Operation Mockingbird.”

[261] *New York Times,* “Project Mockingbird: Spying on Reporters,” June 26, 2007

[262] Ibid.

[263] *Final Report of the Select Committee to Study Government Operations With Respect to Intelligence Activities*. April 1976.

The Church Committee's conclusion accurately reflects the problems associated with Operation Mockingbird:

> "In examining the CIA's past and present use of the U.S. media, the Committee finds two reasons for concern. The first is the potential, inherent in covert media operations, for manipulating or incidentally misleading the American public. The second is the damage to the credibility and independence of a free press which may be caused by covert relationships with the U.S. journalists and media organizations."[266]

While it is deplorable for citizens of countries to be subjected to a state-owned media, at least they can be aware of the biases and filter information accordingly. We have been taught the lie from birth that the U.S. press is free from government meddling. In a situation where the manipulation is completely covert, the American public has been left unaware of the propaganda they have been ingesting for decades.

---

[264] Steve Kangas, "A Timeline of CIA Atrocities."
[265] John Simkin, "Steve Kangas."
[266] *Final Report of the Select Committee to Study Government Operations With Respect to Intelligence Activities*. April 1976.

Food for Thought:

1. Why were the owners and management of large media institutions so willing to participate in a program that violated their journalistic integrity?

2. Has the increasingly consolidated media industry made it easier for news to be manipulated to fit 'the agenda' discussed in the One Party State?

3. Have MK-ULTRA entrapment or mind control techniques ever been used to target the press?

COINTELPRO

> "Between 1965 and 1975, the FBI opened more than 500,000 intelligence files on more than one million Americans, according to a Congressional report.... Among the Bureau's targets: Martin Luther King and the civil rights movement, anti-Vietnam War Groups, and the underground press." - Center for Investigative Reporting[267]

> "Purpose of counterintelligence action is to disrupt the BPP [Black Panther Party] and it is immaterial whether facts exist to substantiate the charge." - J. Edgar Hoover[268]

J. Edgar Hoover issued directives for COINTELPRO, a codename for Counter Intelligence Program, in 1956. The original intent was to monitor the Communist Party USA but quickly expanded its scope to infiltrate and marginalize a variety of groups such as the American Indian Movement, the Student Nonviolent Coordinating Committee, and the Black Panthers, as well as targeting high profile individuals such as Martin Luther King, Jr.

The FBI's stated motivation was "protecting national security, preventing violence, and ***maintaining the existing social and political order.***"[269] (Emphasis added).

---

[267] Context available here.
[268] From a 1970 FBI document, available here.
[269] Excerpt from the Church Committee, available here page 3

They used harassment, wiretapping, psychological warfare, propaganda, and assassinations among other techniques to achieve their goals.

* * * *

Fred Hampton

On December 4th, 1969, the Chicago Police Department and FBI raided an apartment housing members of the Black Panther Party. At 4:45 am, the heavily armed police stormed the apartment, killing Panther member Mark Clark immediately, who was serving a security duty. Clark fired his shotgun, the only shot fired by the Panthers that day, while the police and FBI would end up shooting over 98 times.[270] Forensics and firearms experts determined that Clark's shot was fired from very near the floor, indicating that Clark had already sustained grave injuries.

The raid team would then assault the room of Fred Hampton, a rising leader in the Panther movement. Police would fire twice at Hampton, who was lying next to his pregnant girlfriend, hitting his shoulder. Court transcripts revealed the following conversation took place:[271]

"That's Fred Hampton."

---

[270] Ward Churchill, "*COINTELPRO Papers,*" page 140. PDF available here. A truly astounding book that draws heavily on official documents provided by the FBI. A 'must read'.

[271] Wikipedia page on Fred Hampton.

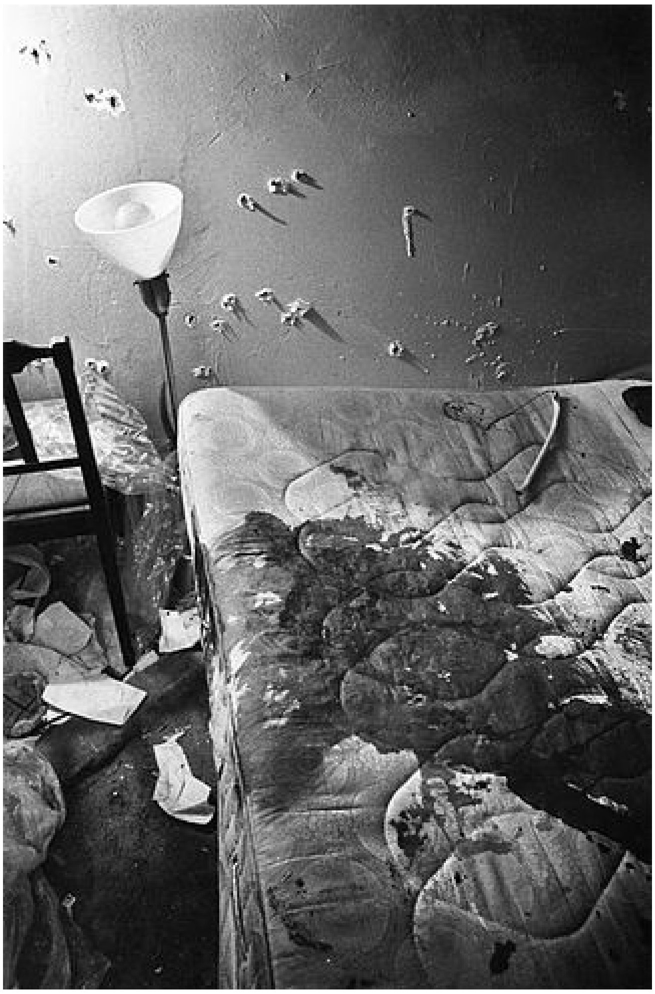
"Is he dead?... Bring him out."

"He's barely alive.

"He'll make it.

Two more shots were fired, point blank at Hampton's head.

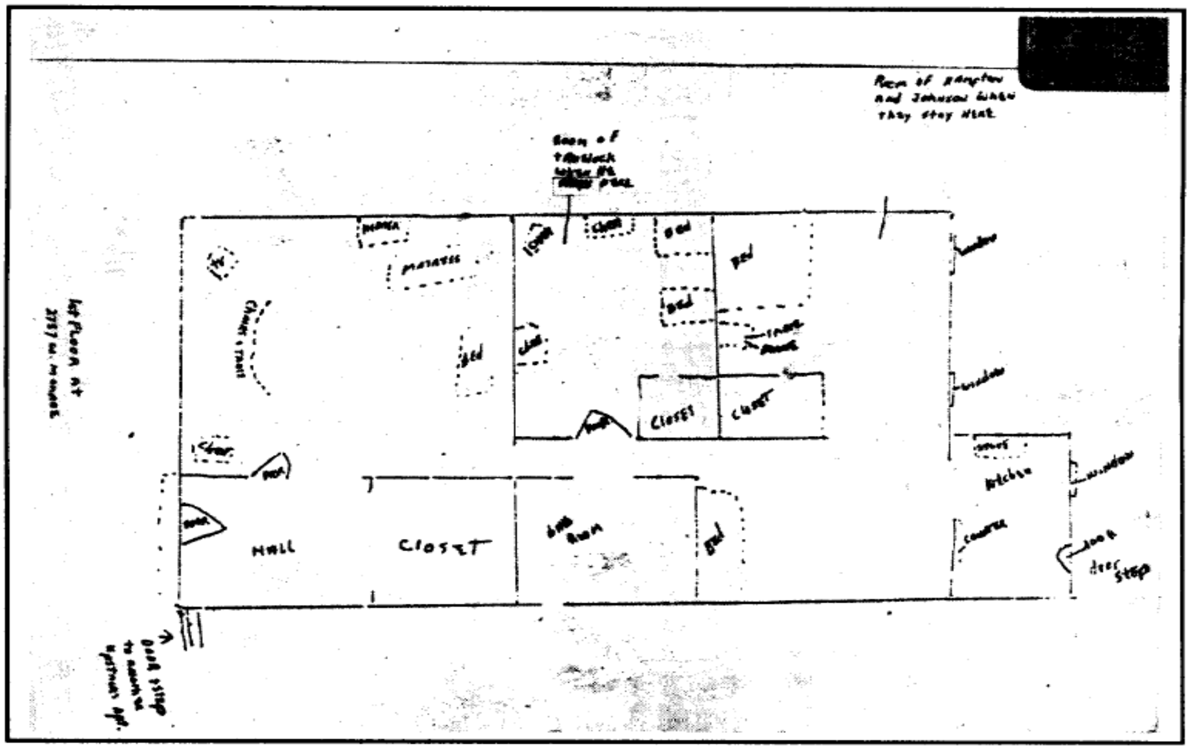
"He's good and dead now."



Crime Scene from Fred Hampton's Bedroom

Over a dozen more Panthers residing in the apartment would be wounded, beaten, and then charged with attempted murder of police officers. The next day, the media largely defended the FBI's actions. The *Chicago Tribune* published photos showing holes purported to be from bullets fired by the Panthers, but forensics would later reveal these holes to have been made by nails.[272]

Documents released by the Freedom of Information Act include a sketch of Hampton's apartment drawn by an FBI informant, used by police and FBI in the assassination. The informant received $300 from the FBI for providing the information.[273]


[redacted]
Room of Hampton and Johnson when they stay here
Room of
1st Floor at 2337 W. Monroe
mattress
bed
chair
bed
bed
bed
bed
closet
Closet
window
window
stove
kitchen
window
counter
door
door step
HALL
CLOSET
bath room
bed
Door step to second apt.

The FBI had tried other methods before resorting to assassination, including sending a bogus letter to a rival Chicago gang leader in hopes of provoking a violent retaliation which read:

272*Chicago Tribune,* "The Black Panther Raid and the death of Fred Hampton," December 4, 1969

273"Cointelpro Papers" page 160

> “Brother Jeff: I've spent some time with some Panther friends on the west side lately and I know whats been going on. The brothers that run the Panthers blame you for blocking their thing and there's supposed to be a hit out for you. I'm not a Panther, or a Ranger, just black. From what I see these Panthers are out for themselves, not black people. I think you ought to know what their (sic) up to, I know what I'd do if I was you. You might here from me again. Signed, A Black Brother You Don't Know.”[274]

The use of bogus letters for sabotage and attempting to provoke violence was widely used by the FBI throughout COINTELPRO.

Why was Fred Hampton targeted? He was a rising leader in the Black Panther Party and was in the process of uniting various gang, including the Puerto Rican 'Young Lords' and the Caucasian 'Young Patriots' into a political coalition. He had the potential to drastically change the political landscape of Chicago by channeling the youth unrest that had previously been directed against other gangs and instead direct it at the political establishment to fight against police corruption and to generate socially constructive energies.

This type of action was directly antagonistic to one of the primary directives of COINTELPRO put forth by J. Edgar Hoover himself, which read:[275]

---

[274] “Cointelpro Papers,” page 159

[275] Ibid.

“1. Prevent the coalition of militant black nationalist groups.”

The same document also contained another relevant directive:[276]

“Prevent the rise of a 'messiah'”

Fred Hampton had the charisma to unite large groups of young men and the attitude of social welfare and community development that had the potential to gain the support of the broader progressive community. His assassination prevented his career from escalating to these heights.

* * * *

Subverting the Black Panther Party

The FBI waged a wildly successful campaign against the Black Panther Party throughout the '60s and '70s. By the late '60s, the Black Panther Party was the most prominent African American political force in the United States. They advocated a 10 point socialist program for black self-determination, provided free food and healthcare to communities, fought against hard drugs, and formed legal armed street patrols to deter violence from the KKK and other antagonistic organizations. They also advocated for community control of police, schools and other institutions. Today, these points are largely ignored in favor of the racist caricature promoted by the Bureau. The operations the FBI took to subvert the Panthers is truly astounding.

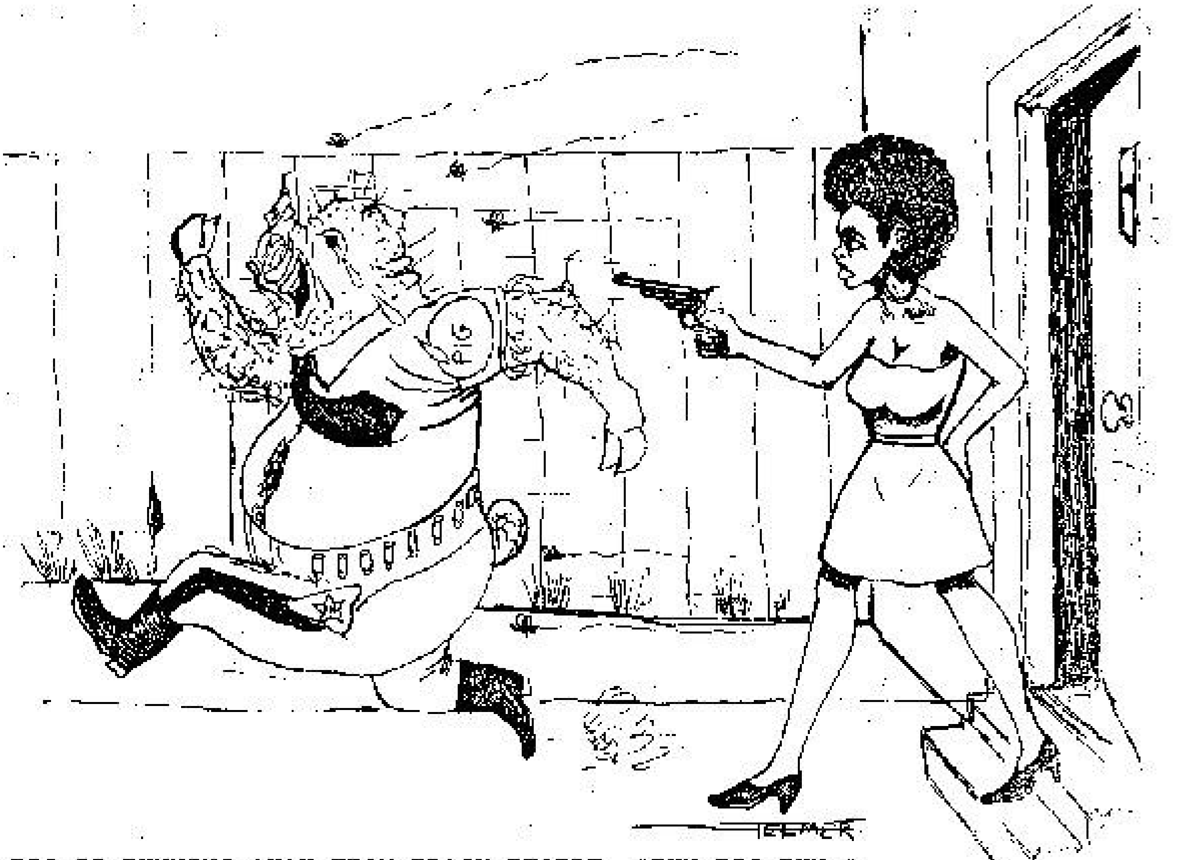
For example, there is the Black Panther coloring book, created by the FBI and distributed by Bureau informants to black children in an attempt to marginalize the Party within the black community.[277] It is directly related to Hoover's directive:

---

[276] *The Guardian,* “Preventing the rise of a 'messiah',” April 4, 2008

> "4. Prevent militant black nationalist groups and leaders from gaining respectability"

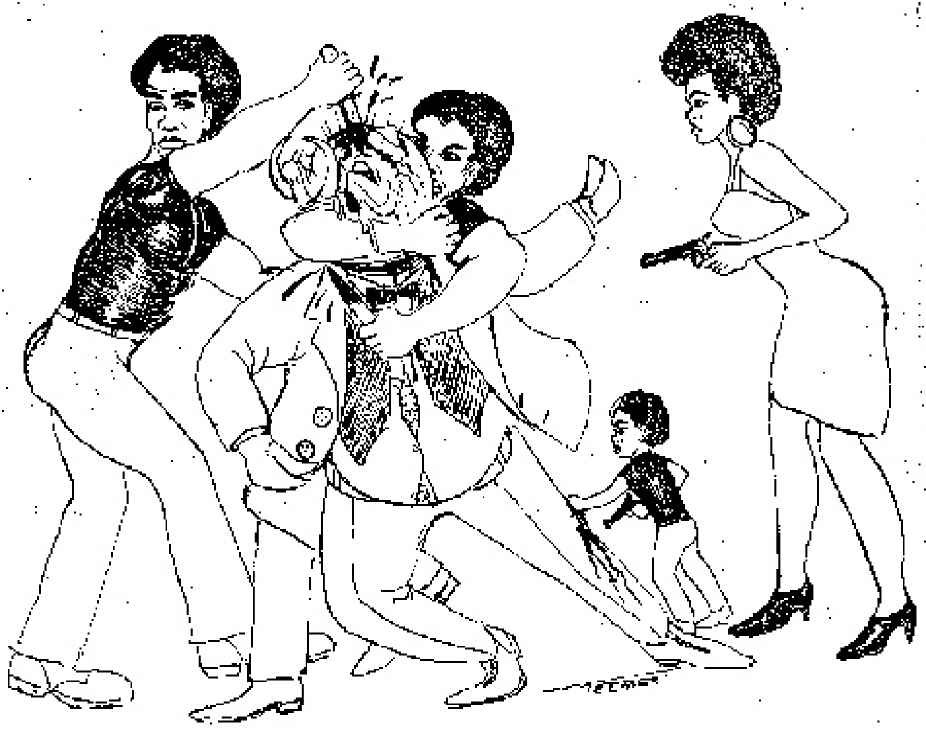
The goal was not to influence the children of these communities, but to marginalize the Panthers within the white community. The coloring book aimed to do just that, and would certainly be shocking to anyone who saw it. Once marginalized, the public would support increasingly repressive policies against the Panthers and their leadership, such as the Fred Hampton assassination.



THE PIG IS RUNNING AWAY FROM BLACK PEOPLE. "RUN PIG RUN."

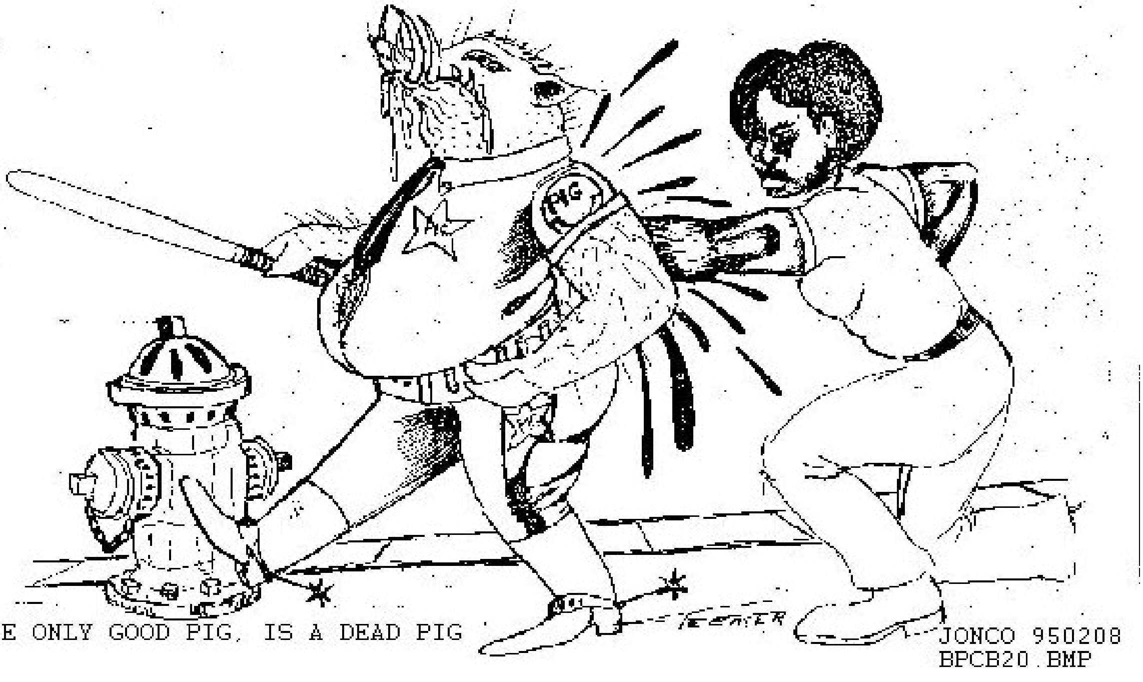
---

[277] The Coloring Book is hosted in various places, it is available here at NotreDame.edu



BROTHERS AND SISTERS DEAL WITH THE WHITE STORE OWNER THAT ROBS BLACK PEOPLE

JONCO 950208
BPCB14.BMP



THE ONLY GOOD PIG, IS A DEAD PIG

JONCO 950208
BPCB20.BMP

To J. Edgar Hoover and the FBI, it did not matter what the activities of the Black Panther Party consisted of. In 1969, an FBI special agent sent Hoover a memo detailing how his investigation of the Panthers has only turned up pacifist activities such as feeding breakfast to children.[278] Hoover shot back a memo saying that the Agent's career ambitions were directly related to supplying Hoover with information supporting his view that the Panthers were "... a violence prone organization seeking to overthrow the government by revolutionary means."[279]

To prevent the unification of the Black Panther Party and the Student Nonviolent Coordinating Committee, popularly known as SNCC, the FBI resorted to fostering splits between the leadership of the two organizations. The FBI targeted Stokely Carmichael by using a technique known as 'bad jacket': they forged documents indicating that Carmichael was a CIA informant.[280] It worked.

The FBI also had the policy of arresting Panther members for any reason, even just on suspicion of crime without evidence, for the purpose of exhausting the Party's funds to pay bonds. The Panther's attorney said in 1970:

> “In a period of two years — December, 1967 to December, 1969 — the Black Panther Party has expended in bail-bond premiums alone— just the premiums, that is, money that will never be returned — a sum in excess of $200,000! How many breakfasts or lunches for hungry children, how much medical attention sorely needed in the ghetto communities would that $200,000

---

[278] Memo available here.
[279] Ibid.
[280] “COINTELPRO Papers,” page 147

> have furnished?...In the same two-year period, twenty-eight Panthers were killed."[281]

In instances where dozens of Panthers were arrested, the bond requirements were too high to pay and members sat in jail for weeks, or even months, a common COUNTELPRO tactic used against other groups as well. By 1974, the Black Panther Party had essentially collapsed under the weight of ruthless harassment.

* * * *

Dr. Martin Luther King, Jr.

In 1957, the FBI targeted the Southern Christian Leadership Conference as a "likely target for communist infiltration".[282] The nature of the group was entirely non-violent and focused on organizing the southern black vote. It was founded by Dr. Martin Luther King, Jr. and several other southern black ministers. By 1964, Dr. King had given his 'I have a dream speech' and had emerged as a preeminent civil rights leader and had also began to address social change that transcended racial issues. At this point, the FBI had marked King as a clear threat to the 'established order'. Agent William C. Sullivan committed to writing:

> "We must mark [King] now, if we have not before, as the most dangerous Negro in the future of this Nation from the standpoint of communism, the Negro, and national security...it maybe unrealistic to limit [our actions against King] to legalistic proofs

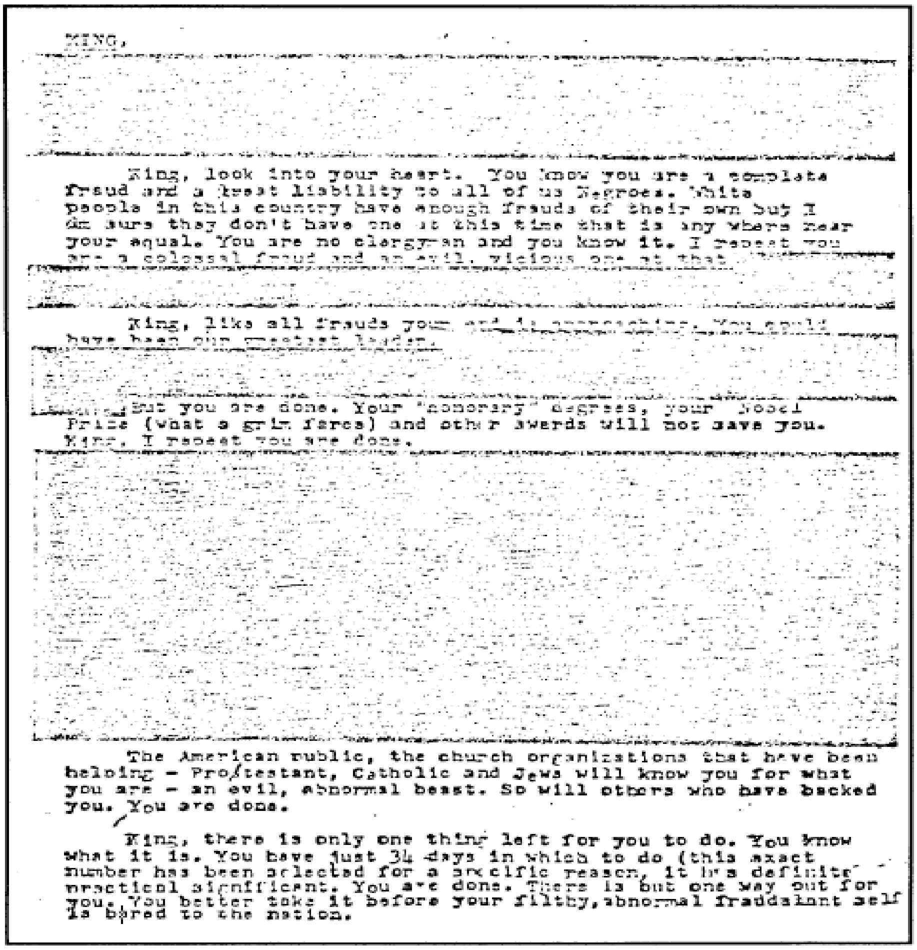
---

281Ibid, page 164

282"COINTELPRO Papers," Page 116

> that would stand up in court or before Congressional Committees."[283]

When it was announced that King would win the Nobel Prize, the FBI compiled an audio tape consisting of various fragments of conversations from King's tapped phones, bugged offices and hotel rooms. It was purported to demonstrate that King was a sexual deviant. It was sent to King with an anonymous note stating that it would be released to the press unless he committed suicide prior to receiving the award.[284] When King failed to reply, FBI Associate Director Cartha DeLoach offered the contents of the tape to various news institutions, including *Newsweek,* but the reporters nearly universally declined to report on the story.



KING,

[redacted]

King, look into your heart. You know you are a complete fraud and a great liability to all of us Negroes. White people in this country have enough frauds of their own but I am sure they don't have one at this time that is any where near your equal. You are no clergyman and you know it. I repeat you are a colossal fraud and an evil, vicious one at that.

[redacted]

King, like all frauds your end is approaching. You could have been our greatest leader.

[redacted]

But you are done. Your "honorary" degrees, your Nobel Prize (what a grim farce) and other awards will not save you. King, I repeat you are done.

[redacted]

The American public, the church organizations that have been helping - Protestant, Catholic and Jews will know you for what you are - an evil, abnormal beast. So will others who have backed you. You are done.

King, there is only one thing left for you to do. You know what it is. You have just 34 days in which to do (this exact number has been selected for a specific reason, it has definite practical significant. You are done. There is but one way out for you. You better take it before your filthy, abnormal fraudulent self is bared to the nation.

283Ibid. Page 118

284*The Daily Mail,* "'You are a colossal fraud. There's only one thing left for you to do': How the FBI tried to blackmail Martin Luther King Jr. into suicide with anonymous note," January 20, 2014

On April 24, 1968, Dr. King was assassinated. Although public memory has largely forgotten, King was in the process of organizing the 'Poor Peoples Campaign', aimed at uniting poor people of all races to rally for social change. It is likely that if King had not died, the campaign would have been wildly successful. The campaign also represented everything that COINTELPRO had been dedicated to prevent. Although there is no complete proof that the FBI was involved with the assassination, the jury of a 1999 Memphis civil trial came to the conclusion that James Earl Ray did not kill King, and that the real culprit was 'government agencies'.[285]

* * * *

American Indian Movement

> “They [the Indians] are a conquered nation, and when you are conquered, the people you are conquered by dictate your future. This is a basic philosophy of mine. If I'm part of a conquered nation, I've got to yield to authority... [The FBI must function as] a colonial police force.” - Assistant Special Agent in Charge Norman Zigrossi[286]

AIM, the American Indian Movement, began in the '60s as activism focused on preventing the further depredation of Indian lands and resources. As the movement rose to prominence, the FBI marked them as an 'extremist organization' to target.[287] One document released under the Freedom of Information Act advocates that: "local police put [AIM] leaders under dose scrutiny, and arrest them on every possible charge until they could no longer make bail."[288]

---

[285] *New York Times,* “Memphis Jury Sees Conspiracy in Martin Luther King's Killing,” December 9, 1999

[286] Ward Churchill, “Agents of Repression.” Excerpt available here.

During a presentation by members of the Congressional Black Caucus to the UN Human Rights Commissioner, it was alleged that virtually every known leader of AIM has been imprisoned in state or federal prisons, some repeatedly. Russell Means, for example, was charged with 37 counts but not one has held up in court.[289] It was later revealed that the FBI had infiltrated Mean's defense team but was still unable to pin their charges against him.

In 1973, thousands of Native Americans from reservations across the West had gathered at Wounded Knee at the Pine Ridge reservation to simultaneously commemorate the 1890 massacre and protest the political corruption of tribal president Dick Wilson, who had received $62,000 from the Bureau of Indian Affairs and was using it to fund a private force that suppressed opposition and often resorted to murder.[290] The force designated themselves "Guardians of the Oglala Nation", abbreviated as GOONS. Attempts to impeach Wilson, who was responsible for years of political violence, had failed. The FBI considered the occupation an act of treason and began a siege of AIM members, in coordination with US Marshalls, agents from the BIA and the GOONS of Dick Wilson. Wilson bluntly declared in a speech that "AIM will die at Wounded Knee".[291]

According to Historian Rex Weyler, who obtained documents subpoenaed from the Pentagon, the U.S. Marshall Service:

---

[287] Documents Available Here.

[288] "The COINTEPRO Papers," page 280

[289] *The Guardian,* "Russell Means obituary," November 1, 2012

[290] A Presentation to the United Nations Human Rights Committee by members of the Congressional Black Caucus, available here.

[291] Ward Churchill, "Agents of Repression," Excerpt available here.

> "...directed the employment of 17 APCs [armored personnel carriers], 130,000 rounds of M-16 ammunition, 41,000 rounds of M-40 high explosive, as well as helicopters, Phantom jets, and personnel. Military officers, supply sergeants, maintenance technicians, chemical officers, and medical teams remained on duty throughout the 71 day siege, all working in civilian clothes [to conceal their unconstitutional involvement in this "civil disorder"]"[292]

All of this was on site at Pine Ridge during the 71 day standoff, during which AIM demanded the removal of Wilson from office, the GOONs disbanded, and the military presence removed. By the end, hundreds of thousands of rounds were fired at AIM positions , 2 AIM members were killed, 14 seriously injured, and 8 'disappeared'. In the 36 months that proceeded the end of the Pine Ridge standoff, more than 60 AIM members died violently on or near Pine Ridge.[293]

The Civil Rights Commission revealed that AIM was right to feel aggrieved during the occupation of Pine Ridge: The FBI had been complicit in rigging the 1974 Pine Ridge elections against AIM members.[294]

* * * *

Conclusion

The Church Committee investigated COINTELPRO and concluded:

---

[292] Weyler, Rex "Blood on the Land," page 54

[293] "COINTELPRO Papers," Page 270

[294] Ibid.

"Too many people have been spied upon by too many Government agencies and too much information has been collected. The Government has often undertaken the secret surveillance of citizens on the basis of their political beliefs, even when those beliefs posed no threat of violence or illegal acts on behalf of a hostile foreign power. The Government, operating primarily through secret informants, but also using other intrusive techniques such as wiretaps, microphone "bugs", surreptitious mail opening, and break-ins, has swept in vast amounts of information about the personal lives, views, and associations of American citizens. Investigations of groups deemed potentially dangerous -- and even of groups suspected of associating with potentially dangerous organizations -- have continued for decades, despite the fact that those groups did not engage in unlawful activity...

The Constitutional system of checks and balances has not adequately controlled intelligence activities. Until recently the Executive branch has neither delineated the scope of permissible activities nor established procedures for supervising intelligence agencies. Congress has failed to exercise sufficient oversight, seldom questioning the use to which its appropriations were being put."

Simply put, the committee's conclusions are correct but fall short. It is clear that for a period of nearly 3 decades, the FBI waged a literal domestic war on largely peaceful activists who sought to bring about social and political change. During the time of the Vietnam war, MK-ULTRA, the struggles of various civil rights movements, Watergate and other criminal acts in the executive branch, the United States drastically needed effective leaders and organizations to affect change yet the FBI successfully suppressed any serious movements that arose.

Food for thought:

1. How responsible is COINTELPRO for the fall of the American left in the 1970's?

2. How likely is it that other high profile assassinations similar to Fred Hampton, such as Martin Luther King Jr., actions undertake by the FBI under COINTELPRO orders?

3. What movements are currently being subverted by the FBI today?

4. Did J. Edgar Hoover leave a corrupt infrastructure when he retired in 1972, after 37 years of being the FBI Director?

The Phoenix Program

Thanks to the *New York Times* and *60 Minutes,* most people are now aware that former Senator and Presidential candidate Bob Kerrey once led a raid on the peasant village of Thanh Phong during his service in Vietnam, and murdered nearly two dozen villagers in cold blood. His team disemboweled women, children and infants and shot dead whole families.

What most people don't know, is that Kerrey was operating on orders from a CIA program known as Operation Phoenix, the program that oversaw some of the most horrific war crimes ever unleashed on Earth.[295]

It was in 1964, under CIA station chief Peer DeSilva, that the Phoenix Program was initiated. DeSilva was a proponent of the belief of 'counter-terrorism', CIA doublespeak for the idea that terror was a legitimate tactic in unconventional warfare.[296]

Historian Douglas Valentine summarizes the concept of Operation Phoenix as follows:

> "Central to Phoenix is the fact that it targeted civilians, not soldiers... Under Phoenix, due process was totally non-existent. South Vietnamese civilians whose names appeared on blacklists could be kidnapped, tortured, detained for two years without

---

[295] *Counterpunch,* "Fragging Bob," May 17, 2001, written by Historian Douglas Valentine
[296] Michael Otterman, "American Torture," excerpt available here.

> trial, or even murdered simply on the word of an anonymous informer. At its height, Phoenix managers imposed a quota of eighteen hundred neutralizations per month on the people running the program in the field, opening up the program to abuses by corrupt security officers, policemen, politicians, and racketeers, all of whom extorted innocent civilians as well as VCI [Viet Cong Infrastructure]. Legendary CIA officer Lucien Conein described Phoenix as, "A very good blackmail scheme for the central government: 'If you don't do what I want, you're VC.'"

> "Indeed, Phoenix was, among other things, an instrument of counter-terror - the psychological warfare tactic in which members of the VCI were brutally murdered along with their families or neighbors as a means of terrorizing the entire population into a state of submission. Such horrendous acts were, for propaganda purposes, often made to look as if they had been committed by the enemy."[297]

This is the intellectual context under which Bob Kerrey massacred the hamlet of civilians, for which he was subsequently awarded the Bronze Star.

Peer DeSilva quickly expanded Phoenix to cover all 40 provinces in South Vietnam, each equipped with an Intelligence Coordinating Committee and its own prison. Torture techniques such as electric shock, beatings and rape were commonplace.[298]

---

[297] From Douglas Valentine's Website.

[298] Alfred McCoy, "A Question of Torture," excerpt available here.

The Central Intelligence Agency originally had trouble finding Americans who were willing to murder and mutilate, so the 'counter-terror' squads were composed of ex-convicts, VietCong defectors, and mercenaries.[299] They then employed Special Forces, Navy SEALS and other highly trained Americans such as Bob Kerrey, who had essentially been indoctrinated by the military into killing machines, to oversee the program.

Former Lieutenant Colonel Anthony Herbert, who was involved in Operation Phoenix, described his experience in his autobiography *Soldier:* “They wanted me to take charge of execution teams that wiped out entire families and tried to make it look as though the VC themselves had done the killing.”[300]

Former CIA agent Ralph McGee, speaking to *PBS*'s Bill Moyers for the fantastic documentary 'The Secret Government', stated that:

> "We were murdering these people, incinerating them... My efforts had resulted in the deaths of many people, and I just – for me it was a period when I guess I was – I considered myself nearly insane – I just couldn't reconcile what I had been and what I was at the time becoming."[301]

McGee was operating under Phoenix helping to set up the South Vietnam secret police, and has since become one of the most outspoken critics on the CIA. He recalls that the program cost billions of dollars, and CIA Director William Colby refused an investigative audit before a Congressional Committee.[302]

---

[299] Ibid, Valentine

[300] Quoted in the book “Hero´s,” excerpt available here.

[301] Documentary available here.

[302] Ralph McGee, “CIA and Operation Phoenix in Vietnam,” February 19, 1996

The Agency's website describes how the entire South Vietnamese population was mapped out with Census Grievance teams in conjunction with national data.[303] They determined which villages were more likely to be friendly to the VietCong through interviews, and color coded maps based on that information, specifically noting that "These maps would often contain the names of family members who were VCI members or sympathetic to the communists."

> “I think it’s common knowledge what goes on at the interrogation center... It was common knowledge that when someone was picked up their lives were about at an end because the Americans most likely felt that, if they were to turn someone like that back into the countryside it would just be like multiplying NLF followers.” -Jeff Stein, Author and Former Military Intelligence, Vietnam Veteran[304]

The 1971 Congressional Inquiry revealed that the blacklists created by these maps and census data was not thoroughly vetted, as opposed to claims by Agency officials. One member of the Phoenix Program described to Congress that:

> "It was my experience that the majority of people classified as VC were “captured” as a result of sweeping tactical operations. In effect, a huge dragnet was cast out in our area of operation (AR) and whatever looked good in the catch, regardless of evidence,

---

303CIA.Gov

304Douglas Valentine, “The Phoenix Program,” excerpt available here.

> was classified as VCI."[305]

Lieutenant Vincent Okamoto, Army Combat Officer and recipient of the Distinguished Service Cross, testified on his experiences with using blacklists as a means of 'neutralizing' Viet Cong:

> "The problem was, how do you find the people on the blacklist? It's not like you had their address and telephone number. The normal procedure would be to go into a village and just grab someone and say, 'Where's Nguyen so-and-so?' Half the time the people were so afraid they would say anything. Then a Phoenix team would take the informant, put a sandbag over his head, poke out two holes so he could see, put commo wire around his neck like a long leash, and walk him through the village and say, 'When we go by Nguyen's house scratch your head.' Then that night Phoenix would come back, knock on the door, and say, 'April Fool, motherfucker.' Whoever answered the door would get wasted. As far as they were concerned whoever answered was a Communist, including family members. Sometimes they'd come back to camp with ears to prove that they killed people."

Psychological warfare against civilians was an integral part of Phoenix. Soldiers would leave pamphlets on dead bodies, or on doors indicating that recipients were marked

---

305Testimony to Congress by Michael J. Uhl, available here.

for death.

> “Attention Villagers: 1.Your village was bombed because you harbored Vietcong in your village. 2. Your village was bombed because you gave help to the Vietcong in your area. 3. Your village was bombed because you gave food to the Vietcong.”
> -USMC Leaflet[306]

Phoenix officer Bart Osbourne testified before Congress in 1971:

> "I never knew in the course of all those operations any detainee to live through his interrogation. They all died. There was never any reasonable establishment of the fact that any one of those individuals was, in fact, cooperating with the VC, but they all died and the majority were either tortured to death or things like thrown out of helicopters. It became a sterile depersonalized murder program."[307]

Throwing victims out of a helicopter, for example, served a psychological warfare purpose as well, terrorizing those on the ground.

The intelligence that the CIA received was often flawed. Anyone in the South Vietnam infrastructure could report intelligence, and it was often not verified, which led to abuses such as South Vietnam politicians feeding intelligence to kill their political rivals.[308]

---

[306] Leaflet excerpt available here.
[307] Doug Valentine, “The Phoenix Program,” excerpt available here.

> "We had no way of determining the background of these sources, nor their motivation for providing American units with information.
>
> No American in the team spoke or understood Vietnamese well enough to independently debrief any "contact." None of us were sufficiently sensitive to nor knowledgeable of the law, the culture, the customs, the history, etc.
>
> Our paid sources could easily have been either provocateurs or opportunists with a score to settle. Every information report (IR) we wrote based on our sources' information was classified as (1) unverifiable and (2) usually reliable source. As to the first, it speaks for itself; the second, in most cases was pure rationale for the existence of the program." - Michael J Uhr, First Lieutenant involved with Phoenix.[309]

Historian Marvin Gettleman described in his book Vietnam and America: A Documented History, how "Intelligence gathered during interrogation was often used to direct 'search and destroy' missions aimed at wiping out whole villages or groups of villages."[310]

All told, documents show that Phoenix led to the 'neutralizing' of over 80,000 people, about a third of them killed, between the years of 1968 and 1972.[311]

---

[308] Ibid.

[309] Testimony to Congress by Michael J. Uhl, available here.

[310] Marvin Gettleman, "Vietnam and America," excerpt available here.

One Pentagon contract-study of Phoenix's operations found that only 3% of those 'neutralized' were full party members above the district level between 1970 and 1971, and that over half "...were not even party members."[312]

A Saigon government document lists the number of assassinated at over 40,000, nearly double that of other documents, highlighting potential disparity between record keeping and reality.[313] The program supposedly ended in 1972, though it has been revealed that at least certain aspects continued until the fall of Saigon in 1975. Understanding that official documents don't cover the full scope of Phoenix, and the history of records destruction by the Agency, it is unlikely that the full extent of Phoenix will ever be known.

So what about the infamous My Lai massacre that resulted in the rape and mutilation of around 400 civilians? Historian Daniel Valentine argues it was most certainly a Phoenix operation. He cites a known 'blacklist' of names to be 'neutralized' in My Lai, multiple accounts of military personnel referring to the entire village as Viet Cong sympathizers, using the logic that only sympathizers could survive in the area, and a Vietnamese Colonel who said himself that My Lai was a Phoenix operation, among other evidence.[314]

Marvin Gettleman concurrs:

> "By late 1967, before the Tet offensive, 70% of the villages in Quang Ngai province had already been destroyed.

311Wikipedia Article on the Phoenix Program
312Alfred McCoy, “A Question of Torture,” excerpt available here.
313“Fiscal Year 1975 Foreign Assistance Request,” excerpt available here.
314Doug Valentine, “The Phoenix Program,” excerpt available here.

> In response to Tet, this slaughter was intensified literally with a vengeance. In mid-March on 1968, Quang Ngai province was the scene of what was to become the most notorious example: the massacre of villagers in My Lai 4. There the killing of hundreds of villagers, almost all unarmed women and children, and old men, so successfully swelled the body count that General Westmoreland sent a personal message of 'Congratulations to officers and men of Charlie Company for outstanding action' that 'dealt the enemy a heavy blow'.
>
> When the carnage finally came to light, evidence poured in showing that this massacre was not an aberration but just an especially appalling instance of a systematic strategy."
> -Gettleman, page 411[315]

Project Phoenix would first come to the public in 1971 with a congressional inquiry. William Colby, CIA chief and director of the Phoenix program, testified that the agency didn't distinguish between VietCong members and civilians.[316] Colby would later defend the program, citing it as 'the toughest opposition the Viet Cong faced'.[317]

Food for Thought:

1. In what other wars has terrorism been used as a tactic?

---

[315] Gettleman, excerpt here.
[316] Congressional Testimony, “U.S: Assistance Programs in Vietnam,” excerpt available here.
[317] Interview with William Colby, 1981, available here.

2. Is it possible that the multitude of abuses in Latin America in the decades that proceeded the Vietnam War were 'Phoenix' offshoots?

3. Why has there been such little discussion about the 'Phoenix Program' both in the mainstream media and in academia after its revelations came to light?

Iran/Contra

“The common ingredients of the Iran and Contra policies were secrecy, deception, and disdain for the law...the United States simultaneously pursued two contradictory foreign policies — a public one and a secret one”- Report of the Congressional Committees Investigating the Iran-Contra Affair[318]

“In spite of the wildly speculative and false stories of arms for hostages and alleged ransom payments, we did not—repeat, did not—trade weapons or anything else for hostages, nor will we.” -Ronald Reagan, November 1986

“A few months ago, I told the American people I did not trade arms for hostages. My heart and my best intentions still tell me that's true, but the facts and evidence tell me it is not." -Ronald Reagan, March 1987

Iran/Contra isn't one singular historical conspiracy, but rather comprised of various illicit activities which revolved around a core group of subversive actors and a covert war in

---

[318] Report hosted at Archive.org

Nicaragua.

The 'core of subversive actors' consisted of members and associates of the National Security Council, created under the National Security Act of July 26, 1947. Since the act was passed, the NSC has steadily grown in power and scope under various presidencies. During Dwight D. Eisenhower's administration in the '50s, the NSC became a 'virtual adjunct of the president', and started reporting directly to the executive branch. John F. Kennedy, skeptical of the CIA and other agencies after the Bay of Pigs fiasco, allowed the NSC to begin functioning operationally, evolving from its traditional role as a planning committee.[319] Under Ronald Reagan, the NSC expanded with increased staff and scope of operations. Under Eisenhower, it had been tasked with creating a:

> "...virtual Cold War machine against Communism," and to "create and exploit troublesome problems for international Communism... reduce international Communist control over any areas of the world," and "develop underground resistance and facilitate covert and guerilla operations."[320]

This directive would be the rational and motivation for the group conducting subversive actions in Nicaragua under the Reagan administration.

* * * *

Nicaragua

---

[319] Draper, Theodore. "*A Very Thin Line: the Iran-Contra Affairs",* 1991, p. 4

[320] Draper, p. 6

United States intervention in Nicaragua is nothing new. The U.S. had landed troops numerous times in the country during the 19th century and as recently as 1912, during a period known as the 'banana wars', used military force to directly quell rebellions against American-supported leadership. In 1936 the American-trained head of the Nicaraguan National Guard, Samoza Garcia, forcefully took power in the country by murdering and disposing the former leader Augusto César Sandino, marking the beginning of a lengthy U.S. Supported dictatorship.[321]

Trouble arose in the 1970's, when a revolutionary communist party called 'The Sandanistas', named after the disposed Sandino, began mounting a series of attacks and sabotage against the right wing Samoza dynasty, including the high-profile kidnapping of Nicaraguan elite at a Christmas party in 1974. The Sandanistas enjoyed wide support from much of the disenfranchised Nicaraguan population, who had become tired of the heavy-handed Samoza rule. One striking example is the 1972 earthquake that struck the Nicaraguan capital Manuga, where Anastasia Debayle, son of Samoza Garcia, exercised emergency powers that allowed him to confiscate most of the international aid that had been directed towards rebuilding the city, instead ending enriching Debayle's personal coffers.[322]

In 1979, the Sandanista uprising culminated in their gaining full power in Nicaragua. They were helped by the policies of Jimmy Carter, who had withdrawn aid to the Samoza regime after a series of revelations of human rights abuses. Carter originally hoped to remain on good terms with the Sandanistas, who had constructed a defacto socialist government in Nicaragua, and responded by sending them $99 million in aid. After they solidified a pact with the Soviet Bloc in 1980, Carter changed his tune and authorized the CIA to begin subversive acts in the country including propaganda efforts but prohibiting direct conflict.[323]

---

[321] Brown University, “The Iran/Contra Affair.”

[322] Ibid.

In 1980, right wing elements in Nicaragua created the Nicaraguan Democratic Force, FDN, which would become the largest and most organized member of the group that would become known as the 'Contras'. When Reagan was inaugurated in 1981, he stepped up support of the group and expanded the scope of covert action in the country, allowing the CIA to directly arm, fund and train the Contras. In 1983, he signed the National Security Decision Directive 77, entitled "Management of Public Diplomacy Relative to National Security," institutionalizing public diplomacy. In effect, it was a special planning group within the NSC to coordinate public diplomacy campaigns, the most institutionalized 'public propaganda ministry' in United States history.[324] The group used extensive media propaganda and control efforts, with one 14 page memorandum written by Oliver North detailing over 80 specific 'publicity stunts' designed to influence congressional and public opinion before upcoming Contra aid votes.[325]

When the covert war in Nicaragua became public knowledge in 1982, a group of congressmen led by Massachusetts representative Edward P. Boland tried to end all covert efforts in the country. This was with good reason, as news of the human rights abuses of the Contras became public knowledge. For example, a 1987 *Chicago Tribune* article noted that the Contras "engaged repeatedly in kidnappings, torture and murder of unarmed civilians."[326] *The Guardian* would delve deeper into the atrocities of the Contras, describing a particular attack where "Rosa had her breasts cut off. Then they cut into her chest and took out her heart. The men had their arms broken, their testicles cut off. They were killed by slitting their throats and pulling the tongue out through the slit."[327]

---

[323] Ibid.
[324] NSDD77 hosted here at FAS.org
[325] *Foreign Policy,* "Iran-Contra's Untold Story." 1988
[326] *Chicago Tribune,* "Contras Humans Rights Record Attacked," January 10, 1987
[327] *ISLA,* excerpt available here. The book contains clippings of Latin American political, social and economic news

Americas Watch, a humans rights group, accused the Contras of[328]:

- targeting health care clinics and health care workers for assassination
- kidnapping civilians
- torturing civilians
- executing civilians, including children, who were captured in combat
- raping women
- indiscriminately attacking civilians and civilian houses
- seizing civilian property
- burning civilian houses in captured towns.

These were the principle means of waging war. Meanwhile, Reagan called the Contras the “moral equivalent of the founding fathers”.[329]

The terrorism of the Contras was not simply 'collateral damage' of supporting subversive groups. Rather, evidence shows that it was a deliberate campaign led by the CIA in the vein of Phoenix. In fact, the CIA wrote the training manual for the Contras titled “Psychological Operations in Guerrilla Warfare” which, among other activities, advocated for assassinating judges and priests, blackmailing citizens, blowing up public buildings, and firing on dissenting citizens.[330]

---

from various English language newspapers. This particular quote is cited as coming from *The Guardian.*

[328] Wikipedia Article on the Contras

[329] *PBS,* “The Iran-Contra Affair”

[330] Document hosted here at FAS.org

Congressman Boland submitted legislation on December 21, 1982 which would become known as the Boland Amendment. It specifically barred “the use of funds ‘for the purpose of’ overthrowing the government of Nicaragua or provoking a war between Nicaragua and Honduras.”[331] Open defiance was impossible, but the CIA, NSC and the Reagan Administration were dedicated to supporting the Contras at all costs, so they chose various methods of covert defiance by exploiting loopholes in the amendment. As long as the funds going to the Contras were not tagged as being used for overthrowing the Sandanista government, then they could be delivered under the guise of international aid. The use of soliciting third party funding was also left out of the Boland Amendment. Ultimately, the Boland Amendment had no tangible impact on the covert war in Nicaragua.

During the period proceeding the Boland Amendment, the CIA directly assisted the Contra's subversive efforts. One example is the use of air strikes against an airport near Managua. They also placed mines in Nicaraguan harbors in 1984, damaging several ships. The *Wall Street Journal,* which exposed these covert actions, also revealed the role of Oliver North, a Marine Colonel working on assignment with the NSC, in coordinating the actions, one of the first mentions of a name which would become notorious to the public just a few years later.[332]

Congress soon realized the ineffectiveness of the Boland Amendment and responded with new legislation that toughened the restrictions on funding the support, known as the Boland Amendment II. It read:

> “During fiscal year 1985, no funds available to the Central Intelligence Agency, the Department of Defense, or any other

---

[331] Brown University
[332] Brown University

> agency or entity of the United States involved in intelligence activities may be obligated or expended for the purpose or which would have the effect of supporting directly or indirectly, military or paramilitary operations in Nicaragua by any nation, group, organization, movement or individual."[333]

This legislation left two loopholes: first, was the use of third party funds to fund the contras, and the second was that the text explicitly referred to the actions of the CIA, but failed to mention the NSC, using the logic that it was not an intelligence agency, under the Department of Defense, or even covered under the provision of "any... entity of the United States." This was based on the idea that the NSC was: "the President's principal forum for considering national security and foreign policy matters with his senior national security advisers and cabinet officials" and thus exempt.[334]

This transition of techniques led Oliver North to take on a primary role in Contra assistance.

*   *   *   *

Israel and Iran

Barred from using direct Agency funds for the Contra operations, Oliver North and the NSC began to get creative. One result is the infamous 'Diversion Memo', written by North, detailing a plan to sell arms to Iran, overcharge the country and funnel excess funds to the Contras. This plan was blatantly illegal under Operation Staunch, a U.S. led arms embargo against Iran during the Iran-Iraq war which lasted from '80 to '90. At the outset of the war, the US began arming Iraq, first with 200 million dollars in helicopters, and later escalating to several billion dollars worth of economic aid, the sale of dual-use technology, non-U.S. origin weaponry, military intelligence, Special Operations training, and direct involvement in warfare against Iran.[335]

---

[333] The 1984 Boland Amendment (PDF Warning)

[334] Brown University

The 'Diversion Memo' detailed a plan to work with a retired Air Force General and an Iranian businessman to sell arms to Iran, through the cover of Israel, in exchange for the release of American hostages held by Lebanese militants. Initially, the plan worked relatively well: Israel provided Iran with hundreds of TOW anti-tank missiles and multiple American hostages were released.[336] The deal was completed just months after Ronald Reagan famously said: "The United States gives terrorists no rewards. We make no concessions, we make no deals."[337] Although North estimated that $12 million would be raised for the Contras in this manner, only $2 million ever made it to the group, likely because the private actors involved in the Operation were acting with a motivation of profit. As is thematic with American covert operations, the funds were funneled through a 'front organization' called Stanford Technology Trading Group International, as well as using 'proprietary' airlines to transfer the missiles: aircraft owned by the CIA and used in normal operations until needed by the Agency for covert operations.[338]

The story unraveled in 1986 when two Lebanon reporters broke the story of the secret arms transfer. The revelations sparked the widely publicized hearings in the United States to find the 'truth' of the operations. In 1987 hearings, Oliver North was given immunization from self-incrimination before Congress. Regarding the destruction of documents, he humorously noted: “I would prefer to say that I shredded documents that day like I did on all other days, but perhaps with increased intensity; that's correct.”[339]

---

[335] Wikipedia Article on United States Support for Iraq During the Iran-Iraq War
[336] Brown University
[337] *Chicago Tribune,* "President: Terrorists Must Pay," July 1, 1985
[338] Brown University

The hearings’ Majority Report concluded that:

> “North’s testimony demonstrates that he also lied to members of the Executive branch, including the Attorney General, and officials of the State Department, CIA and NSC.” And also that... “other officials lied repeatedly to Congress and to the American people about the Contra covert action and Iran arms sales, and that he altered and destroyed official documents.”

* * * *

Rex 84

The most shocking revelation of the Contra hearings, which the mainstream media nearly universally failed to report on, was the existence of an emergency preparedness plan known as Rex 84. The only public mention of the plan, known officially as 'Readiness Exercise 1984', was as follows:

> Congressman Jack Brooks: Colonel North, in your work at the N.S.C. were you not assigned, at one time, to work on plans for the continuity of government in the event of a major disaster?

339Ibid.

> Brendan Sullivan [North's lawyer, agitatedly]: Mr. Chairman?
>
> Senator Daniel Inouye: I believe that question touches upon a highly sensitive and classified area so may I request that you not touch upon that?
>
> Brooks: I was particularly concerned, Mr. Chairman, because I read in Miami papers, and several others, that there had been a plan developed, by that same agency, a contingency plan in the event of emergency, that would suspend the American constitution. And I was deeply concerned about it and wondered if that was an area in which he had worked. I believe that it was and I wanted to get his confirmation.
>
> Inouye: May I most respectfully request that that matter not be touched upon at this stage. If we wish to get into this, I'm certain arrangements can be made for an executive session.

Luckily, the media was able to get more details on the program which was too sensitive to discuss in a public forum. *The Miami Herald,* in a July 5, 1987 exposé, published the following:

> "Some of President Reagan's top advisers **have operated a virtual parallel government** outside the traditional cabinet departments and agencies almost from the day Reagan took

> office, congressional investigators and administration officials have concluded.
>
> Investigators believe that the advisers' activities extended well beyond the secret arms sales to Iran and aid to the Contras now under investigation.
>
> Lt. Col. Oliver North, for example, **helped draw up a controversial plan to suspend the Constitution** in the event of a national crisis, such as a nuclear war, violent and widespread internal dissent or **national opposition to a U.S. military invasion abroad**." *The Miami Herald*[340] (Emphasis added).

Implementation of Rex 84 would have turned control over the United States to FEMA, the Federal Emergency Management Agency, which would act as an 'emergency czar', and turn control of state and local governments to appointed Military commanders, and also included mention of 'assembly centers and relocation camps' to house dissidents. Attorney General William Smith correctly protested that the plan "exceeded its proper function as a coordinating agency for emergency preparedness."[341]

It doesn't take reading between the lines to see the immediate intent of Rex 84. The NSA, CIA and other U.S. institutions believed that an invasion of Nicaragua might have been necessary to prevent the spread of communism so close to their borders. Such an idea isn't farfetched: Sandanista policies and their agreements with the Soviet Union indicate that they believed an American invasion was imminent.[342] Being just a decade removed from the massively unpopular Vietnam War, an invasion would have prompted widespread dissent, and Rex 84 was the NSC's plan to deal with a domestic anti-war movement.

---

[340] *Miami Herald,* "Reagan Aides and the 'Secret' Government," July 5, 1987. An absolutely fascinating article worth reading in its entirety.

[341] *Miami Herald*

The investigation described by the *Miami Herald* had interesting revelations of other activities. For example, it revealed that the 'secret government' stole President Carter's briefing book used in campaign speeches and presidential debates with Reagan, indicating that the structure was in existence before Reagan's inauguration. It noted meetings with Iranian officials to discuss the release the delay of the release of U.S. Embassy hostages until after the election. Lastly, it discussed how certain officials orchestrated leaks to paint Reagan in a positive light, such as the November 4, 1984 election day announcement that Soviet Jet Fighters were on their way to Nicaragua, orchestrated by Oliver North himself.[343]

* * * *

Conclusions

Chief Counsel of the investigative Senate committee, Arthur Liman, wrote in a memo to panel leader Senator Daniel Inoyue:

> “This is the part of the story that reveals the whole secret

---

[342] Brown University

[343] *Miami Herald*

> 'government-within-a-government' operated from the [Executive Office Building] by a Lt. Col. with its own army, airforce, diplomatic agents, intelligence operatives appropriations capacity."[344]

As the 'Report of the Congressional Committees Investigating the Iran-Contra Affair' noted, the United States had an actual foreign policy that vastly differed from their public discourse, and was executed in secret without checks and balances. When Congress tried to stop the covert operations, the agencies involved simply found loopholes to subvert their legislation, going as far as to arm two sides fighting against each other in a war, and to use private actors to conduct illicit activities. Furthermore, Rex 84 shows just how serious the 'secret government' was in exerting hegemony in Latin America.

The term 'secret government' is not an exaggeration. Various investigations, public and private, noted that Ronald Reagan himself may not have been aware of many activities the group undertook. These facts were all revealed in the mainstream media in a short period proceeding the Iran arms sales revelations, yet the public was never able to fully inform itself of the depths of the scandal.

Food for Thought:

1. Why was the American public so complacent when the facts of a veritable shadow government were thoroughly revealed in the media?

2. Why was there no significant drive for reform of the CIA originating from within Congress?

---

[344] *Miami Herald*

3. How often does the CIA disregard domestic and international law when it interferes with their agenda?

4. Why did the CIA find hegemony in Nicaragua to be so important? What threat, if any, did the country pose to the United States?

5. Does a modern version of Rex 84 exist today?

6. How far will the United States go to suppress domestic dissent the next time they deem a foreign invasion necessary?

Continuity of Government

The definition of 'Continuity of Government' is a set of contingency plans to ensure that essential government functions remain in place after a disaster such as nuclear war. In the United States, Continuity of Government plans have been on the books since at least the Eisenhower administration. The plans involved building intricate hidden command centers such as the Mount Weather Emergency Operations Center built in 1959, nestled away in the Blue Ridge Mountains.

While the Government officially classifies Mt. Weather as a 'bunker', many sources claim that it is essentially a full blown city. According to GlobalSecurity.org, a respected institution in the intelligence community, Mount Weather contains a hospital, sewer treatment system, reservoirs, a power plant, an emergency television studio, and a thorough system of dormitories & office buildings.[345]

None of this is out of the ordinary, so to speak. It is reasonable for the government to have such plans in place. However, on September 11, 2001, the Continuity of Operations plan was officially activated and has been live ever since, meaning that Mt. Weather and similar installations are likely in operation today.

> “A national emergency exists by reason of the terrorist attacks at the World Trade Center, New York, New York, and the Pentagon, and the continuing and immediate threat of further attacks on the United States,” President George W. Bush proclaimed on September 14, 2001.

---

[345] Mount Weather profile at GlobalSecurity.org

Dick Cheney officially enacted the “Continuation of Government” plans shortly after the World Trade Center attacks, although the Bush Administration would not confirm that this took place until March, 2002.[346] A simultaneous 'State of Emergency' was declared and is also in effect today, extended each year by George Bush and then Barack Obama.[347]

CBS reported:

> “A 'shadow government' consisting of 75 or more senior officials has been living and working secretly outside Washington since Sept. 11 in case the nation's capital is crippled by terrorist attack. "This is serious business," President Bush said of plans to ensure the continuity of government.
>
> Such an operation was conceived as a Cold War precaution against nuclear attack during the Eisenhower administration but never used until now. It went into effect in the first hours after the terror attacks and has evolved over time, said senior government officials who provided details of the plan.
>
> Under the classified "Continuity of Operations Plan," which was first reported by *The Washington Post* in its Friday editions, high-ranking officials representing their departments have begun rotating in and out of the assignment at one of two fortified

---

[346] *CBS,* “The Shadow Government,” February 11, 2009

[347] *MSNBC,* “Obama quietly extends post-9/11 state of national emergency,” September 11, 2013

> locations along the East Coast.
>
> The Post said the first rotations were made in late October or early November, a fact confirmed by a senior government official late Thursday.
>
> Officials who are activated for the duty live and work underground 24 hours a day, away from their families, according to the Post. The shadow government has sent home most of the first wave of deployed personnel, replacing them most commonly at 90-day intervals.
>
> The government-in-waiting is an extension of a policy that has kept Vice President Dick Cheney in secure, undisclosed locations away from Washington. Cheney has moved in and out of public view as threat levels have fluctuated."[348]

Serious business indeed. There have been instances where Congressmen have been stonewalled when trying to learn more about the secret operations. One example is Oregon Congressman Peter DeFazio, a key member of the Homeland Security Committee, pushed to review the classified portion of the Continuity plan in a secure setting in 2007 but his access was denied.[349]

What can we know about the Continuity of Operations plan currently in effect? Patrick Thronson, editor-in-chief of the University of Michigan Journal of Law Reform, has put together the most comprehensive publicly available paper detailing the states of emergencies and powers granted to the executive branch.[350] Available knowledge is naturally incomplete because many powers and documents are still classified. Some highlights include:

---

[348] *CBS,* "The Shadow Government," February 11, 2009

[349] *Oregon Live,* "DeFazio demands access to classified information," July 27, 2007

- Congress is required by statue to vote on the continuation of a state of National Emergency every six months. Since September 11th, 2001, it has only happened once.
- There are currently thirty simultaneous declared states of emergency.
- The Executive Branch can freeze the assets and prevent financial transactions of individuals. This extends to even basic life necessities. They can go as far as to prohibit donations of food to said person.
- The president can unilaterally order the inspection and seizure of commercial vessels.
- The president is authorized to suspend or alter rules for broadcast stations, or authorize control of said station.
- Provisions to suspend or control internet traffic.

> "Thus, the only apparent legal obstacle standing between present conditions and this degree of government control over mass media and telecommunications is a presidential order. " - Thronson

- The ability to seize property

350Patrick Thronson, "Towards Comprehensive Reform of America's Emergency Law Regime," March 23, 2013

- The delegation of 'maintaining law and order' to the department of defense.
- Extend military tours of duty beyond contractually agreed termination dates.

> "A nation under thirty states of national emergency can hardly
> claim that emergency laws are the exception to—rather than the
> rule of—normal governance. "- Thronson

Like every other case study of covert activities highlighted in this book, 'Continuity of Operations' has a friendly face but the actual workings of the secret government are strictly secret. Suffice it to say that the powers behind the Iran/Contra activities have become fully institutionalized. The implications are that the workings of Congress, the Justice Department and other institutions have become merely a show to distract from the reality that a secret government which does not respond to civilian rule and has granted itself sweeping, unchecked powers and is certainly directly operating in the realm of foreign policy, covert activities and likely domestic espionage, among other potential activities.

Food for Thought:

1. Is there any limit to the powers that the shadow government has granted itself?

2. Why has there been nearly zero coverage of the Continuity of Government in the

media? Why have only one or two congressman openly questioned its existence?

3. Who is in control of the Continuity of Government operations? What is their agenda?

The Pedophocracy

Authors Note: The next three chapters contain triggers for those who have suffered sexual abuse.

“Laura Lederer, a senior State Department adviser on trafficking, told me, "We're not finding victims in the United States because we're not looking for them." - *New York Times*[351]

"What you have to understand, John [DeCamp], is that sometimes there are forces and events too big, too powerful, with so much at stake for other people or institutions, that you cannot do anything about them, not matter how evil or wrong they are and no matter how dedicated or sincere you are or how much evidence you have. That is simply one of the hard facts of life you have to face. You have done your part. You have tried to expose the evil and wrongdoing. It has hurt you terribly. But it has not killed you up to this point. I am telling you, get out of this before it does. Sometimes things are just too big for us to deal with, and we have to step aside and let history take its course. For you, John, this is one of those times.” - Former CIA Director William Colby[352]

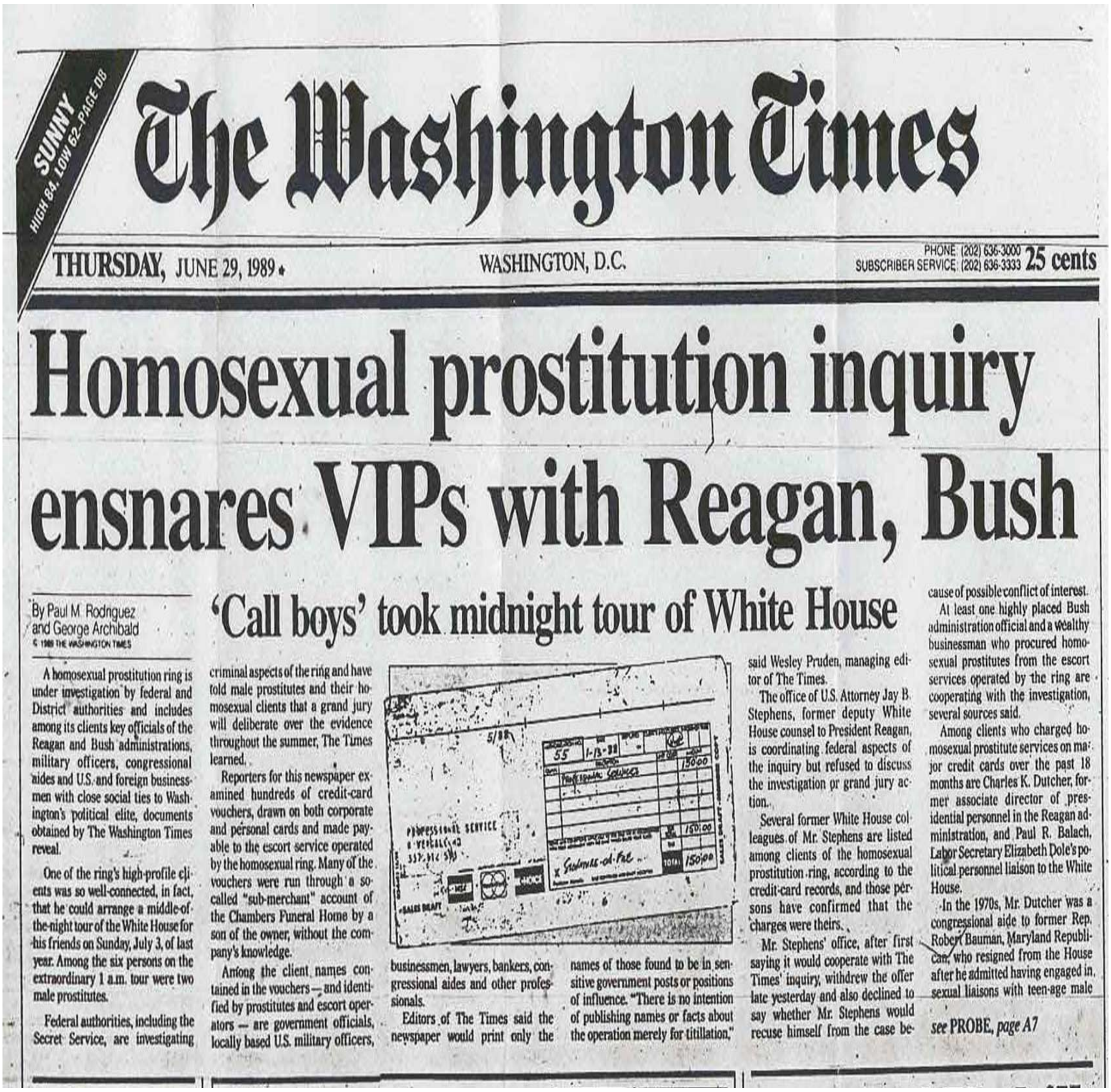
---

[351] *New York Times,* “The Girls Next Door,” January 25, 2004

[352] John DeCamp, “The Franklin Coverup”. You may remember William Colby from the 'Phoenix Program' chapter, the CIA operation which he presided over. The book is fascinating and is a 'must read'. (PDF Warning).

* * * *

From Washington, D.C...



SUNNY
HIGH 84, LOW 62–PAGE D8

The Washington Times

THURSDAY, JUNE 29, 1989 WASHINGTON, D.C. PHONE: (202) 636-3000 SUBSCRIBER SERVICE: (202) 636-3333 25 cents

Homosexual prostitution inquiry ensnares VIPs with Reagan, Bush

'Call boys' took midnight tour of White House

By Paul M. Rodriguez
and George Archibald
© 1989 THE WASHINGTON TIMES

A homosexual prostitution ring is under investigation by federal and District authorities and includes among its clients key officials of the Reagan and Bush administrations, military officers, congressional aides and U.S. and foreign businessmen with close social ties to Washington's political elite, documents obtained by The Washington Times reveal.

One of the ring's high-profile clients was so well-connected, in fact, that he could arrange a middle-of-the-night tour of the White House for his friends on Sunday, July 3, of last year. Among the six persons on the extraordinary 1 a.m. tour were two male prostitutes.

Federal authorities, including the Secret Service, are investigating criminal aspects of the ring and have told male prostitutes and their homosexual clients that a grand jury will deliberate over the evidence throughout the summer, The Times learned.

Reporters for this newspaper examined hundreds of credit-card vouchers, drawn on both corporate and personal cards and made payable to the escort service operated by the homosexual ring. Many of the vouchers were run through a so-called "sub-merchant" account of the Chambers Funeral Home by a son of the owner, without the company's knowledge.

Among the client names contained in the vouchers — and identified by prostitutes and escort operators — are government officials, locally based U.S. military officers, businessmen, lawyers, bankers, congressional aides and other professionals.

Editors of The Times said the newspaper would print only the names of those found to be in sensitive government posts or positions of influence. "There is no intention of publishing names or facts about the operation merely for titillation," said Wesley Pruden, managing editor of The Times.

The office of U.S. Attorney Jay B. Stephens, former deputy White House counsel to President Reagan, is coordinating federal aspects of the inquiry but refused to discuss the investigation or grand jury action.

Several former White House colleagues of Mr. Stephens are listed among clients of the homosexual prostitution ring, according to the credit-card records, and those persons have confirmed that the charges were theirs.

Mr. Stephens' office, after first saying it would cooperate with The Times' inquiry, withdrew the offer late yesterday and also declined to say whether Mr. Stephens would recuse himself from the case because of possible conflict of interest.

At least one highly placed Bush administration official and a wealthy businessman who procured homosexual prostitutes from the escort services operated by the ring are cooperating with the investigation, several sources said.

Among clients who charged homosexual prostitute services on major credit cards over the past 18 months are Charles K. Dutcher, former associate director of presidential personnel in the Reagan administration, and Paul R. Balach, Labor Secretary Elizabeth Dole's political personnel liaison to the White House.

In the 1970s, Mr. Dutcher was a congressional aide to former Rep. Robert Bauman, Maryland Republican, who resigned from the House after he admitted having engaged in sexual liaisons with teen-age male

see PROBE, page A7

"Homosexual Prostitution Inquiry Ensnares VIPs with Reagan, Bush".[353] This article was published in the *Washington Times* and was written by award-winning,

---

[353] Full text can be read here.

Pulitzer Prize nominated journalist Paul Rodriguez. After years of research, Rodriguez had compiled the radical evidence necessary to publish such claims. He had uncovered a homosexual prostitution ring tied to the White House. One central figure, Craig Spence, a Republican powerbroker, had the political clout to bring prostitutes on midnight tours of the White House. The report names multiple White House insiders, military personnel and members of major media institutions as clients, based on credit card records procured by Rodriguez.

> "Among the client names contained in the vouchers - and identified by prostitutes and escort operators - are government officials, locally based US military officers, businessmen, lawyers, bankers, congressional aides and other professionals...
>
> Although the confiscated material was turned over to District police on the scene, witnesses and law enforcement agents say the Secret Service kept one box containing names and other information about high-level government officials who were clients of the male escort business.
>
> District police officials say that, to their knowledge, this is the first time the Secret Service has ever become involved in such a raid in this area." - *Washington Times*

Craig Spence would throw extravagant parties for the Washington D.C. elite, with 'call boys' freely available for interested party-goers. Various associates, including multiple of Spence's body guards, came forward and admitted that his house, where the parties were located, was thoroughly bugged with audio and video recording equipment, with the intent of extortion and blackmail of those who ended up in compromising positions.[354]

Spence was somewhat of a mystery man. What type of employment did he have? No one knew for sure, though Spence himself would often boast of his important connections. One of his associates told the *Times*:

> "He described Mr. Spence as 'strange', saying he often boasted that he was working for the CIA, and on one occasion said he was going to disappear for a while 'because he had an important CIA assignment'. According to the businessman, Mr. Spence told him that the 'CIA might double-cross him', however, and kill him instead and then 'make it look like a suicide.'" *Washington Times*[355]

Indeed, Spence would die just months after the interview, of an apparent suicide, but not after admitting that his parties were bugged by friendly intelligence assets which he refused to name.[356] The investigation by Paul Rodriguez and his associates would also screech to a halt after all of the evidence was either classified by the Secret Service or tied up in red tape. Someone in a high position of power clearly did not want the full extent of the revelations to become public.

Homosexual prostitution on its own isn't shocking, and depending on your conceptions of morality, no different than the heterosexual prostitution that is likewise rampant in Washington D.C. with the only tangible difference being the repercussions of entrapment (especially for Republicans). However, one particular part of the investigation leads us down a shocking rabbit hole:

---

[354] *Washington Times,* "Power Broker Served Drugs, Sex at Parties Bugged for Blackmail," June 30, 1989
[355] Ibid.
[356] *Washington Times,* "Spence Arrested in N.Y., Released." August 9, 1989.

> "In addition to credit-card fraud, the investigation is said to be focused on illegal interstate prostitution, ***abduction and use of minors for sexual perversion, extortion***, larceny and related illicit drug trafficking and use by prostitutes and their clients." - *Washington Times* (Emphasis mine).[357]

In fact, the name Craig Spence would appear repeatedly in another major prostitution inquiry, this one centered around children, known today as the Franklin Scandal, one of the darkest stains in the history of the United States.

* * * *

...To Franklin, Nebraska

The story of the 'Franklin Scandal' begins with Lawrence E. King, one of the fastest rising Republican stars of the 1980's. He was a public figure in Franklin, Nebraska who ran the Franklin Federal Credit Union, along with a series of restaurants and bars. These various businesses apparently furnished King's lavish lifestyle of private jets, extravagant parties and an entourage of assistants and bodyguards.

Larry King, as he was known, was accused by seven children of child abuse and prostitution before he sang the National Anthem at the 1988 Republican National

---

[357] *Washington Times,* "Homosexual Prostitution Inquiry Ensares VIPs with Reagan, Bush," June 29, 1989

Convention but despite various petitions to local police and the FBI, no official investigations were ever undertaken.[358] One of the allegations began from the serious abuse of children at the hands of Jarret and Barbara Webb, the former a member of the Franklin Credit Union board the latter a cousin of King, who adopted various foster children and would proceed to subject them to horrific physical, emotional and sexual abuse. The girls housed at the Webbs told of being taken to various parties in the Franklin area where Larry King and other important local figures sexually abused them. One of the girls, Eulice Washington, recalled being flown on King's private jets to be abused across the country.

> "Among the first accusers was Eulice Washington, who claimed King flew her to out-of-state pedophilic orgies. She had been adopted by relatives of King's in the 1970s. Her new 'mother' was King's cousin Barbara Webb, and her new 'father' was husband Jarrett Webb, who sat on the board of the Franklin Federal Credit Union. To Eulice Washington, King had been Uncle Larry. 'Larry King set up the pedophile ring,' says Eulice. 'From my knowledge and from what I saw go down, he was the man who got it moving and rolling. Everything went through him. He loves boys. He loves them like he shouldn't.'" - *The Franklin Scandal: A Story of Powerbrokes, Child Abuse and Betrayal*[359]

Despite Eulice passing various lie detector tests, charges were never pressed against the Webbs.[360] The Foster Care Review Board was the first organization to come across various cases of abuse, from Eulice Washington and others. They wrote numerous letters to Nebraska's Attorney General Robert Spire urging an investigation, but their pleas were ignored.

---

[358] FranklinCase.org, "Franklin Timeline"

[359] Nick Bryant, "The Franklin Scandal: A Story of Powerbrokers, Child Abuse and Betrayal". Nick Bryant is a celebrated investigative journalist who spent nearly a decade researching the Franklin case, traveling over 40,000 miles and compiling the most complete accounting of events to date. Unfortunately, I have been unable to find a freely available copy on the internet. You should buy this book if any, however, because 50% of the proceeds are being donated to organizations that are fighting child abuse.

The FCRB testified to the State Legislature's Investigative Executive Review Board Subcommittee in 1988 that:

> FCRB Chairman Dennis Carlson: The nature of these allegations are something that is going to shock the Committee. They deal with cult activities... they deal with sexual abuse, and there's a correlation between these two different reports. We have, the Boys' Town report... prepared by a worker from Boys' Town named Julie Walters... (which) contains the allegations of the children that were in the Webb foster home, Nelly primarily. Years later, well, two years later, we have Loretta Smith in Richard Young Hospital who's making allegations against Larry King and as far as we know there is no relationship between Nelly and Loretta Smith... Both reports talk about the Omaha Girls Club, both reports mention a specific individual who is the superintendent of schools.
>
> State Senator Remmers: The question that came into mind, it's been in my mind since you've been testifying and I think you've answered part of it just now, is you're talking about about these abuses from children from Boys' Town and Girls' Club and so

---

[360] Ibid.

> forth, now is there a common thread that goes over here to the Credit Union deal that we are investigating? In other words to the Franklin Credit Union? Is there a common thread there that kind of leads to that?
>
> FCRB Member Carol Stitt: Well, the common thread is Larry King.
>
> Remmers: Yes, that's what I mean. It all goes back to him? OK.
>
> Stitt: Yes, he seems to be more the organizer, or the high-class pimp, I mean if that helps fit this together.[361]

Larry King would also be linked to embezzlement before he sang the National Anthem at the 1988 Republican National Convention, but again avoided an investigation. The facade unraveled in November 1988, when an IRS investigation revealed that King had stolen over $40 million from the coffers of the Franklin Federal Credit Union. The financial corruption alone shocked the city, but soon reports started circulating that in addition to various fraudulent accounting documents, investigators found a huge stash of child pornography as well.[362]

More rumors of sexual abuse began to arise, with multiple allegations that Larry King was using children from Boys Town, the nearby Catholic charitable institution for orphaned youth.[363] His yellow sports car was notorious on the Boys Town campus, where he would drive around and pick up minors for his pedophilic activities. The Catholic

---

361John DeCamp, “The Franklin Coverup,” page 80. PDF available here.
362*Omaha World-Herald,* “Lawsuit: King Diverted Millions From Franklin,” November 15, 1988
363*New York Times,* “A Lurid, Mysterious Scandal Begins Taking Shape in Omaha,” December 18, 1988

management denied any connection to King, but financial records showed that Boys Town had a close-knit relationship to the Franklin Federal Credit Union.[364] Federal and local authorities immediately moved to close the investigation and seal evidence, claiming that allegations of child abuse were unfounded.[365]

The authorities backtracked and stated that they had done everything in their power to investigate these claims. Attorney General Robert Spire said: "We did receive some sensitive information in July. My office acted promptly and professionally and nothing was sat on." However, it would later be revealed that no authorities ever interviewed Eulice Washington and other children noted by the FCRB until 3 years later after they made their report public.[366] Despite this, Omaha Chief of Police Robert Wadman stated to the press that "Every step that should have been taken, was taken."[367] However, Wadman would later confess that he had never contacted Eulice Washington, one of the children abused at the hands of Webb, nor the Child Protective Services department that handled Washington's claims.[368] Wadman would later be identified as a child abuser at King's parties by four different victims.[369]

* * * *

Obstruction, Threats and Murder

In an early police investigation, low level police officers attempted to keep their inquiries a secret from Wadman, seemingly knowing that he would be adamant about shutting down their investigation. Nebraska Foster Care Review Board official Dennis Carlson related Omaha Police Officer Carmean's testimony to the Legislature's Executive Board hearing:

---

[364] Discover Channel Documentary "Conspiracy of Silence".

[365] *Omaha World-Herald,* "'No Substance,' Say Police, FBI Evidence Called Lacking To Link Franklin, Abuse," February 5, 1989

[366] Nick Bryant

[367] Ibid.

[368] Ibid.

[369] "Conspiracy of Silence"

> "[Officer Carmean] told me some things which I found to be somewhat startling. I asked if he was interested in information regarding Larry King and he said, yes we are, we're conducting what he called a supersensitive investigation of Larry King and he said this investigation was so supersensitive that they were not even using the steno pool in the Omaha Police Department. They were handwriting their police reports, and he also told me that Chief Wadman had come to their unit and directly asked if they were investigating Larry King.... Investigator Carmean told me, we lied to the Chief and we said, no, we are not investigating Larry King. OK, so that conversation took place on July 20th of 1988"[370]

Shortly afterword, Officer Carmean was transferred out of the Robbery and Sex unit and the investigation stalled. On July 5, 1989, in a lengthy "Inter-Office Communication" to Omaha Public Safety Director Pitmon Foxall (a cousin of Larry King), Wadman announced that Carmean needed a mental health evaluation.[371]

Many were not convinced of the Police Department's conclusion that there was no substance to the abuse allegations, including a group of 12 State Senators who decided to create their own parallel commission to investigate the charges, lead by Senator Loran Schmit. Following the money trail, Schmit and his team quickly found that it could be

---

370DeCamp, page 48
371Ibid, 49

traced directly to the sex parties and child abuse. It became clear to Schmit that he was uncovering some serious 'dirty laundry':

> “I received a phone call on the floor of the legislature. The caller would not identify himself, but he said, Loren, you do not want to have an investigation of the Franklin Federal Credit Union, and I asked, who am I speaking to? And they said, that doesn't matter, but you shouldn't have that investigation. And I said, well, why not? And he said, it will reach to the highest levels of the republican party, and we're both good republicans.” - Loran Schmit[372]

Schmit wasn't the only one to receive threats. The lead investigator of the State Senator's Committee, Gary Caradori, had also specified that he had received a series of threats, such as obvious tampering with his vehicle, as to send a message. In early July 1990, Caradori made a trip to Chicago to meet with a secret informant who had evidence which would 'blow the lid' off the case, and reportedly confided to a friend that he was one step ahead of those who wanted to squash the investigation, saying that if 'they' knew what information he had, he would be killed.[373]

Upon returning from Chicago, Caradori's plane crashed, killing him and his son. The National Transportation Safety Board investigation found that the wreckage was scattered over a radius between 3/4 to 1 mile, indicating without a doubt that the plane broke up in the air, instead of upon impact. Certain items were missing from the crash, most notably Caradori's briefcase. Within 24 hours, all of the evidence was collected by the

---

[372] “Conspiracy of Silence.”

[373] DeCamp

FBI and sealed.[374]

* * * *

The Paul Bonacci Trial

What information was so important that the pedophile network would kill the lead investigator in what looked like a blatant assassination? It turns out he was meeting with Russell 'Rusty' Nelson, a photographer for Larry King, who attended King's parties with the intention of photographing powerful men in compromising positions with minors, in order to blackmail them later.[375] Like Craig Spence, King was known to throw lavish parties for the Republican elite, with underage prostitutes allegedly in attendance. Rusty Nelson was in hiding for an entire decade after the Franklin Scandal broke but ended his silence under oath during a court hearing in 1999, in order to 'set the record straight'. He revealed that he had a very close relationship with King and kept hundreds of thousands of photographs of King's business dealings and parties in various locations. Most of the evidence had been confiscated, and more had been destroyed in Gary Caradori's plane crash.

Rusty's testimony to the District Court was very interesting. Among other events, he revealed that he personally saw Larry King place a direct call to then-president Ronald Reagan when other associates could not resolve a specific problem. He also claimed to have seen and taken pictures of the Chief of Police of Omaha Robert Wadman at various parties, engaged in various sexual acts with minors, and had once seen Wadman accept a large envelope full of bearer bonds from King. While most of Rusty's evidence was confiscated, he was able to provide the court with photographs that corroborated his close

---

374“Conspiracy of Silence.”

375Court Transcripts, “Paul Bonacci vs. Lawrence E. King” relationship to King, such as photographs of King inside his private jet and limousine, and alongside male strippers.[376]

The District Court hearing was not about Rusty Nelson, but rather for compensation for one of the victims, Paul Bonacci, who had first made accusations of abuse against Larry King in 1986, two years before there was even a *Franklin Scandal*. The testimony given was so convincing that the judge awarded Bonacci with $1 million. The plan was to donate the proceeds to charitable organizations dealing with child abuse, but King has never paid. Paul Bonacci suffered from Multiple Personality Disorder, a diagnosis confirmed by three different state-appointed psychiatrists, from extreme abuse he had received beginning at the age of 3. At the age of 8, he became associated with Larry King and began attending his parties as a child prostitute.

The type of abuse Bonacci underwent at the hands of Larry King is shocking:

> Bonacci: "They put guns up to my head, they put guns in my mouth... Larry King sent out boys, men, to jump me, he had them pretty well beat the tar out of me from the waist down so no one would see the marks, i had my fingers broken... I can remember them burning me with hot instruments... placing stuff inside me... almost what I would call a cattle prod"
>
> Judge Urbom "Done by Larry King at his direction?"
>
> Bonacci: "At his direction."

Later on in the trial he would claim:

---

[376] Ibid.

> "If they wanted to get something passed in the legislature, he would put some people that were against it in a compromising position, by using us boys and girls."[377]

One of the men in Washington that Paul Bonacci claimed abused him is Democratic Senator Barney Frank. Bonacci was also taken on the very same midnight tours of the White House hosted by Craig Spence that journalist Paul Rodriguez wrote about in the *Washington Times,* as a child. He claimed that immediately after the tours of the White House, he was taken to another place to be sexually abused.[378]

* * * *

The Grand Jury Coverup

Before his untimely death, Gary Caradori had compiled a leads list of 271 victims of sexual abuse in the Franklin area, though his death precluded interviewing most, and others recanted their stories under pressure from Federal authorities, often accompanied by the threat of jail time for perjury. Along with Paul Bonacci, the investigation proceeded with three other primary witnesses, Troy Boner, Danny King (no relation to Larry), and Alisha Owens.

Both Boner and Owens recounted tales, after passing multiple state-sponsored lie detector tests,[379] of attending hundreds of parties hosted by Larry King where they were

---

377Court Transcripts, "Paul Bonacci vs. Lawrence E. King"
378Ibid.
379"Conspiracy of Silence"

abused by King and other prominent men in Lincoln and Omaha. The three would repeatedly corroborate each other in interviews taken under oath by Gary Caradori, initially without knowledge of each others participation in the investigation.[380] Most of the victims claimed that they were used to transport drugs across state lines, at the demand of Larry King and Alan Baer, a prominent Omaha millionaire.

Gary Caradori once followed a lead of Alisha Owens where she claimed that she was often abused at The French Café in Omaha. He talked to the former manager on the telephone, Sheila McGuire, who told Gary that:

> “We had parties in my apartment above the French Cafe. Larry King would wine and dine potential investors downstairs at the Cafe. When the French Cafe closed about 1 AM, King and his man called Parking Lot Bob-who worked for him (and was our coke connection)-would bring people upstairs to my place. If Larry King investors wanted drugs, booze, children or hookers (male or female) we'd get them. While these guests of Kings took their pleasures-with the kids or whoever-King would sit and watch- while he drank, did coke and played with his young boys....
>
> One time, when this guy Irv from NYC wanted Sandra who was about 12 or 13 years old and getting her 1st period, Larry intervened when Sandra refused. King pulled out a roll of $100.00 bills and gave Sandra 5 of them. King then pulled out a small gram of coke and gave that to Sandra. Sandra finally agreed

---

[380] Caradori's videotaped testimony is available here.

> and went off to bed with Irv. King took good care of the local and out of town high rollers. If you had the money to invest at Franklin, King would cater to your most deranged perversion.
>
> And, let me tell you another thing. The boys in the board rooms around Omaha are shitting in their Brogans. If this case gets cracked open the list of involved will read like Who's Who. King and his crew have ruined a lot of childrens' lives."[381]

The *New York Time*s confirmed that both Federal and State investigators were given thousands of files regarding sexual abuse from children and testimonies from people involved in the foster care and education system.[382] What happened next is amazing. Instead of indictments of the accused perpetrators to develop cases against them, both Douglas County and Federal Grand Juries ordered the thousands of files to be sealed, declined to interview dozens of witnesses, and then brought charges of perjury against Alisha Owens.[383]

Both Grand Juries concluded that Troy Boner and Alisha Owens had indeed been abused, but claimed that the adults they testified against were innocent! Alisha Owens was later found guilty of perjury, and sentenced to between 9 and 15 years. She ended up spending two years in solitary confinement, more than any other woman in Nebraska history, and a clear message to other victims: Stay silent.[384]

> "This is unprecedented, probably in the history of the United States. If the children are not telling the truth, particularly if they

---

381DeCamp
382*New York Times,* "Omaha Grand Jury Sees Hoax in Lurid Tales," July 29, 1990
383*Salem News,* "America's Greatest Child Sex Scandal: Boys Town in Lincoln, Nebraska," December 29, 2012
384DeCamp

> have been abused, they need help, medical attention. You don't throw them in jail!" - Dr. Judianne Densen-Gerber, a lawyer, psychiatrist and nationally prominent specialist on child abuse, during her visit to Nebraska in December 1990.[385]

On the same day that Alisha Owens was convicted of perjury, the charges against Paul Bonacci, who told a very similar story, were dropped.[386] Perhaps they did not want certain testimony to come to trial, such as Bonacci's claim that Larry King would send limousines to Offut Air Force Base and pick up CIA agents for his parties.[387]

The Grand Jury trial was a mockery of justice, where the state-appointed attorney Samuel Van Pelt vigorously attacked the charges and mocked the allegations of the defendants. It has to be noted that a Grand Jury is a special type of proceeding where the attorney chooses all of the witnesses and what evidence is presented; there is no presentation of the defense or cross examination. A former Chief Judge of New York State once quipped that a special prosecutor could persuade a grand jury to "indict a ham sandwich."[388]

There are shocking irregularities with the Grand Jury proceedings. First, it never called Larry King to testify. In fact, the evidence of child abuse and child pornography has never been presented against King in *any* court of law. One member of the Douglas County Grand Jury claimed that the Van Pelt helped write the final report, which is illegal. The report contained some very peculiar statements, such as “children do have the right to expect that *if they exhibit reasonable behavior,* they will not be abused.” (Emphasis added). It also contained blatant lies, such as the claim that Paul Bonacci's doctor said that Bonacci was not capable of the truth, even though not only was the doctor not called to testify, he said elsewhere that he believed Bonacci's story.[389]

---

[385] Ibid.

[386] Nick Bryant

[387] Bridget Howe, “If The West Falls,” Excerpt Available Here.

[388] *The Economist,* “The ham sandwich standard ,” February 28, 2014

Owen's attorney, Henry Rosenthal, found that the evidence shown to the Grand Jury was deliberately tampered with. The video testimony taken by Gary Caradori was edited to remove sections where Troy Boner and Alisha Owens corroborated each others claims.[390] The lawyer representing originally Owens, Boner and (Danny) King originally claimed to have had over 100 clients who had suffered sexual abuse in relation to King and Boys Town, but then later claimed that their testimonies were all fabrications, only months before admitting she had an affair with an FBI agent who had bullied Troy Boner into temporarily recanting his testimony.[391]

There is also the curious trend of upward mobility for a group of men who were instrumental in rigging the Grand Juries:[392]

1. US Magistrate Richard Kopf, who deposited Lawrence King in a federal psychiatric hospital so he wouldn't have to appear before the grand juries, and signed off on the FBI's federal search warrant of Alisha Owen's prison cell, is now a US District Court Judge.
2. Thomas Thalken, Assistant US Attorney for District of Nebraska, who prosecuted the federal grand jury in Nebraska is now a US Magistrate.
3. Gerald Moran, who was the Douglas County Deputy Attorney who prosecuted the Alisha Owen trial. is now a Douglas County District Judge.
4. Robert Sigler, who was the Douglas County Deputy Attorney who prosecuted Alisha Owen throughout her multiple appeals, is now an Assistant US Attorney for the District of Nebraska.

389DeCamp
390"Conspiracy of Silence"
391Nick Bryant
392DeCamp

* * * *

Troy Boner

Troy Boner had recounted his testimony during this period, after receiving threats that he himself would become the victim of perjury charges. However, in 1993 he submitted an affidavit detailing his intimidation and stating unequivocally that his testimony as well as those of his peers were truthful.

> "I lied because I truly believed and still do believe that it was a situation where I must either '...lie or die' and at the insistence primarily of the Federal Bureau of Investigation officials who were dealing with me at that time..." - Troy Boner's Affidavit[393]

Boner repeated the allegations that the Chief of Police Robert Wadmann and the *Omaha Herald* editor Harold Andersen were primary players in his abuse and the abuse of his peers. He recounts the various tactics the FBI used in his intimidation, including alluding to harm that may come about to a family member if he persisted in telling his story. Shortly after these threats, Troy's brother Shawn was found dead from a gunshot wound. The official story was a game of Russian Roulette.[394] Troy cites this as a primary motivating factor in coming forward with the truth in his affidavit.

---

[393] Troy Boner's Affidavit

[394] DeCamp

> "But, maybe the most important thing any honest investigator should do is to ask me, Troy Boner, or any of the other kids such as Alisha or Paul Bonacci, to take polygraph, lie detector tests SIDE BY SIDE ON THE SAME QUESTIONS WITH THE PEOPLE WITH THE PEOPLE WE ARE ACCUSING OF THESE THINGS. Example, ask Alan Baer if he shot mainline drugs into me and if he is a major drug dealer and if he had sex with me. Ask Eugene Mahoney if he met me at a bookstore in Council Bluffs and used to regularly pay me to have sex with him as a boy. Ask [redacted] to take a polygraph test on whether he is a big time drug dealer." - Troy Boner's Affidavit (Emphasis retained)

The polygraph tests never happened. In 2004, Troy Boner entered an Omaha hospital visibly shaken and adamant that he was being targeted because of his testimony. The next day, he was found in a hospital room dead, drugged and beaten.[395] The timing might be related to the reelection campaign of George W. Bush, who multiple victims claimed had attended Larry King's parties. Troy would round out a 'suspicious death' list that had recently reached 15 names, including:[396]

1. Troy Boner
2. Shawn Boner, Troy's brother, found shot in the head shortly after Troy was to testify before court. The official explanation of his death was ruled to be a game of 'Russian roulette'.
3. Bill Baker, associate of Larry King and alleged to be involved in the production of child pornography.

---

[395] DeCamp
[396] Ibid.

4. Gary Caradori and his eight year old son, Andrew, killed in a plane crash.
5. Newt Copple, a primary informant of Caradori, was 70 when he 'died in his sleep' but exhibited no health problems before his death.
6. Clare Howard, the secretary of Alan Baer, the wealthy Omaha businessman who was alleged to be a prime member of the child abuse ring. Also 'died in her sleep.'
7. Mike Lewis, former caregiver of victim-witness Loretta Smith. Death attributed to 'severe diabetic reaction' at the age of 32.
8. Joe Malek, associate of King, died from a gunshot which was ruled a suicide.
9. Aaron Owen, the brother of victim-witness Alisha Owen, died in his jail cell hours before Alisha was supposed to testify, ruled a suicide.
10. Charlie Rodgers, alleged sexual partner of Larry King, died of a shotgun wound to the head, ruled a suicide.
11. Bill Skoleski, Omaha police officer said to be secretly keeping a file on Larry King, died of a heart attack.
12. Kathleen Sorenson, foster parent of children who had escaped the Webb family, and outspoken activist on raising awareness of the abuse of the children she cared for.
13. Curtis Tucker, an associate of Larry King, who allegedly jumped out the window of a Holiday Inn in Omaha.
14. Harmon Tucker, a school superintendent in Omaha.

* * * *

Conspiracy of Silence

In 1993, a television station in Yorkshire, England traveled to Franklin to uncover the truth about the tale of child abuse in Franklin, working in tandem with the Discovery Channel. It was called “Conspiracy of Silence” and the very day it was set to air, it was pulled. No explanation has ever been given, though there are rumors that an anonymous person paid the Discovery Channel $500,000 to revoke the television rights to the film. It would only be unofficially released two years later, when someone who helped produce the video and felt it was so important it needed to be public, leaked a rough draft from the copy room to attorney and former State Senator John DeCamp. It is now widely available for viewing online.

Overall, eight high profile Omaha figures would be accused of sexual assault, with testimonies corroborated between victims. They were:[397]

1. Larry King
2. Robert Wadman, Omaha Chief of Police
3. Harold Anderson, recently retired Editor of the *Omaha World-Herald*
4. Alan Baer, wealthy businessman
5. Deward Finch, Superintendent of schools.
6. Peter Citron, media personality
7. Judge Theodore Carson
8. PJ Morgan, Mayor of Omaha

Of these men, only one would be convicted of child abuse, Peter Citron, on an unrelated breakout of pedophilia claims which launched a separate investigation. Before the allegations leading to Citron's arrest broke, he was threatening to sue John DeCamp for naming him as a child abuser in a memo sent to the Omaha press.

How could such a massive and orchestrated coverup take place? It involved the FBI withholding all sensitive files, including explicit videos and pictures of the relationships between King and his associates and young children. It involved a campaign of denial by the Omaha Police Department, who's chief was a primary member of the child abuse ring, and a disinformation campaign by Nebraska's media, who also had important members implicated in the ring. It involved zealous FBI agents who were self-expressed 'good friends' with Robert Wadman. And it involved a campaign of suspicious deaths designed to silence testimony. Lastly, and perhaps most importantly, it involved an American public unwilling to believe that powerful men could be implicated in child abuse, child prostitution and drug running.

---

[397] “Conspiracy of Silence.”

* * * *

The Dutroux Affair

In the summer of 1995, a wave of disappearances of young girls in Belgium grabbed national headlines. The series of kidnappings would continue through the next year, with the Belgium BOB (FBI equivalent) unable to develop any leads. Then in the summer of '96, an anonymous tip about a suspicious white van led investigators to the doorsteps of Marc Dutroux, a known pedophile who had only recently been released from prison after serving 3 years of a 13 year sentence, despite warnings from various professionals and even his own mother that he was likely to be a repeat offender.[398] The man who let Dutroux out of prison, Justice Minister Melchior Wathelet, would soon be promoted to serve as a judge at the European Court of Justice at the Hague.[399]

Various stories soon emerged in the press regarding how the BOB had repeatedly, and suspiciously, failed to implicate Dutroux during the previous years. For example, BOB officer Rene Michaux once searched Dutroux's house, but failed to investigate screams he heard, instead believing the tale that the voices were coming from children outside. Nor did he find the odd construction of Dutroux's basement, shaped in an L with one wall much newer than the others, reason for inquiry.[400] At the time, Dutroux, though unemployed and receiving welfare from the state, owned seven homes and lived quite lavishly from his involvement in selling children and child porn.[401] Michaux ignored reports from an informant who claimed to have been made an offer by Dutroux to kidnap young girls in exchange for about €4000.[402] He once had in his possession a video tape of Dutroux constructing his makeshift basement dungeon, and raping a 14 year old girl, but the tape was returned to Dutroux's wife, apparently unviewed.[403] Michaux's failures likely directly led to the death of two girls who were held captive by Dutroux at the time of the investigation and reportedly died of starvation.

---

[398] *BBC,* "Profile: Marc Dutroux," June 17, 2004

[399] Wikipedia article on Melchior Wathelet.

The arrest of Dutroux did not come until a new lead investigator, Jean-Marc Connorette, was assigned to the case. For the first time, many victims of child abuse and trafficking in Belgium felt that they had someone they could trust, and began to come forward with their stories. The case quickly spiraled to the point where Dutroux was no longer the focus. During the investigation, these victims were each assigned a number, appended after an X.

For example, X1 was first sexually abused at the age of two, at the hands of her grandmother, who owned a hotel frequented by pedophiles. At the age of 4, she was introduced to a 'pimp' who would take her out to other locations for abuse and torture. She was diagnosed with Multiple Personality Disorder, now known as Dissociative Identity Disorder. Even after getting married and moving away at the age of 19, she was never able

---

400*Fox News,* "Court keeps convicted pedophile killer Marc Dutroux in prison in Belgium," February 18, 2013
401*NBC,* "Belgium Begins High-Profile Pedophile Trial", March 1, 2004
402TruTV's Crime Library, "Marc Dutroux, A Pedophile and Child-Killer."
403*The Guardian,* "Police admit Dutroux video bungle," June 17, 1999

to fully leave the 'network': Occasionally, when her husband was out of town, her old pimp would show up and take her back to places she was abused as a child, and would be raped.[404] She named and described in great detail, to a specially assembled police team, the people and places involved in the pedophile ring. Senior judges, one of the country's most powerful politicians - now dead - and a very influential banker were included.[405]

> "The sessions not only involved sex, they included sadism, torture and murder; and again, she described in detail, the place, the victims and how they were killed." - *BBC*[406]

X1 and other witnesses recounted being raped by dogs and snakes, and being forced to witness the murders of other children which were captured on video tape.[407]

X1 was quoted as saying:

> "In Brussels there was a villa in which a room was set up with built-in cameras. Even in the 1970s these cameras were so discrete that only the people who maintained them and the child- prostitutes knew where they were located... Why did I had to get those guys clearly in the picture, why was I supposed to get them to hit me and brutally rape me? Why was 'regular' sex often not enough?... Blackmail, the word that was never mentioned, I only started to really understand when I was thirteen, fourteen years old..."[408]

---

[404] Marie-Jeanne Van Heeswyck, Annemie Bulté and Douglas De Coninck ,*The X Dossiers*, 1999

[405] *BBC,* "Regina Louf's Testimony," May 2, 2002

[406] Ibid.

[407] Regina Louf, "Zwijgen is voor daders : de getuigenis van X1." Unfortunately, I have been unable to find an English version of this book.

[408] Ibid.

The other victims told similar stories, all independent of one another. Most had developed Multiple Personality Disorder, and had been turned over to the 'network' by family members. Many accurately and independently verified locations and members of the network who were their abusers.[409] Perhaps most importantly, they all claimed that high profile members of society were involved.[410]

X1 also corroborated that one of Dutroux's associates, Jean-Michel Nihoul, was instrumental in the abuse parties. Nihoul had significant connections among Belgian political and financial elite, and later confessed to organizing an orgy at a Belgian chateau attended by government officials, described by the press as a 'Policeman's Orgy'.[411] It emerged that Dutroux and Nihoul were part of a long distance child trafficking ring that imported children from Slovakia, among other places. Nihoul would later be found not guilty, a decision made by the judges who overruled a 'guilty' verdict by the jury.

Just as the investigation was heating up and began to show promise, it was completely dismantled from higher powers. Jean-Marc Conorrette was dismissed from the case, which drew huge criticism from across the nation.[412] It prompted the event known as the 'White March', in which 300,000 Belgians from the nation of just 10 million took to the streets to protest the dismissal.[413][414] Conorette would later break down in tears in court while describing the death threats he received when he was still involved with the investigation.[415]

A second change that greatly affected the proceedings was the introduction of a strict hierarchy to the examinations of the witnesses, which was previously undertaken by BOB officers working independently, overseen by Gendarmerie Commandant Jean-Luc

---

[409] Annemie Bulte, "de X-Dossiers: Wat Belgie Niet Mocht Weten Over de Zaak-Dutroux."

[410] *New York Times,* "275,000 in Belgium Protest Handling of Child Sex Scandal," October 21, 1996

[411] *The Telegraph,* "Belgians Shocked By Tale of Policeman's Orgy," March 16, 1990

[412] *New York Times,* "Belgian Hero Dismissed," October 15, 1996

[413] *New York Times,* "275,000 in Belgium Protest Handling of Child Sex Scandal," October 21, 1996

[414] Wikipedia Article on the White March

[415] *The Telegraph,* "Judge tells of murder plots to block Dutroux investigation," March 5, 2004

Duterme. Duterme would conduct abusive interrogations which emotionally devastated the witnesses who were suffering from Multiple Personality Disorder. In addition, the prosecutor that replaced Conorette, Jacques Langlois, deliberately obfuscated the investigation. He sent police out on false tips and helped spread disinformation in the media. Jean-Marc Connorete once described how he felt about the leads that Langlois would end up investigating:

> "I regularly and much earlier complained about those terrible circumstances in which I had to work in the Dutroux case... We continually received information about all kinds of bizarre leads. Those then received a lot of media attention, but to us meant nothing but time loss... Just think about the Abrasax case and the digs in Jumet. If I remember correctly, the first leads in those two cases were already put under my nose in the very beginning of the investigation. Afterwards precisely Abrasax and Jumet were used by the media as an argument to say that the whole investigation was manipulated and pointed towards false leads. I experienced the same thing in the Cools case, in which the police began to manipulate and was wholeheartedly supported by the media." - *Humo* (Belgian publication)[416]

Fuel to the fire would be added when a highly regarded childrens activist, Marie France Botte, claimed that prosecutors were sitting on a politically sensitive list of high profile customers of Dutroux's thousands of video tapes.[417]

---

[416] *Humo,* “War in Neufchateau: examining magistrate Connerotte speaks about the Dutroux dossier for the first time,” December 3, 2002.

[417] *Los Angeles Times,* “Kidnap Deaths Plunge Belgium Into Guilt,” September 2, 1996

Marc Verwilghen, the Flemish parliamentarian who became the most popular politician in the country after leading the inquiry into Dutroux, claimed that many in the Belgian establishment, including heads of government, refused to cooperate, and sought to stifle and ridicule his report. He claimed that magistrates and police were officially told to not answer certain questions, in what he described as a 'characteristic smothering operation'. He was further quoted as saying “For me, the Dutroux affair is a question of organized crime.”[418] A parliamentary panel revealed the names of 30 government officials it said were complicit in the hiding of Dutroux's misdeeds, none have been punished.[419]

As the trial came to an end in 2004 and faded from the public spotlight, Dutroux adamantly claimed that he was not a lone pedophile but instead was acting on behalf of a large pedophile ring.[420]

> “Marc Dutroux insisted yesterday that he was not a "lone predator" who kidnapped and raped young girls but part of a wider paedophile ring... Dutroux portrayed himself as a victim, a "puppet in a show trial" who had to be put away to "hide the truth" and serve the interests of "organised corruption". Only 10% of the case had been examined, he said, asking why independent-minded policemen had been removed from the investigating team. He urged police to follow up clues he said would prove he was working for a network which kidnapped girls to be sold into prostitution.”

Today, many Belgians have expressed sorrow that most of the details of the evidence will never be known. The files are sealed, with the presiding judge claiming he saw no reason to reopen them. The Dutroux Affair follows a shockingly similar pattern to the events in Franklin, Nebraska. The local police have no interest in uncovering the child abuse ring and even go to seemingly absurd lengths to keep it a secret. The courts are hostile towards the witnesses and the trials are deliberately obfuscated. Charges of perjury are brought against those who refuse to recant their stories. The Federal investigators withheld proof of the claims of the witnesses, including the names of high profile members of the child abuse ring and visual evidence of their crimes.

---

[418] *The Guardian,* “Cover-up claims revive sex scandal,” April 21, 1999

[419] *Los Angeles Times,* “Grisly Crimes Undermine Belgian Unity,” January 3, 1998

[420] *The Guardian,* “Dutroux insists he was part of paedophile ring.” June 11, 2004

* * * *

The British Aristocracy Pedophocracy

> “Officers in London were inquiring into allegations made by a teenage rent boy that a Cabinet minister had been abusing him. The youth claimed to be one of a number of boys regularly having sex with rich and powerful men in the 1980s – some of whom would fly to the illegal orgies from Europe.
>
> As well as the Cabinet minister – who is still alive – he pointed the finger at judges, European bigwigs and senior civil servants. He told his story to detectives, who are understood to have received other allegations against the minister. But a former detective who worked on the case revealed they were suddenly told to halt the probe.

> The furious ex-policeman said: “It wasn’t that we ran out of leads but it reached a point where a warning to stop came. It was a case of ‘get rid of everything, never say a word to anyone’. It was made very clear to me that to continue asking questions would jeopardise my career.” - *The Sunday Daily Star*[421]

The passing of Sir Jimmy Savile in October 2011, entertainer, socialite and personal friend of the royal family, opened the floodgates of a myriad of revelations, with hundreds of victims coming forward claiming they were abused at the hands of Savile in esteemed institutions such as *BBC* and various hospitals. It seemed that many people where aware of the transgressions, but no one acted. Years later, new revelations are coming to light on a weekly basis. One interesting story was published in January of 2013 which read, “Jimmy Savile was part of satanic ring”.[422]

> “Dr Sinason told the Sunday Express she first spoke to the victim in 1992. “She had been a patient at Stoke Mandeville in 1975 when Savile was a regular visitor.
>
> She recalled being led into a room that was filled with candles on the lowest level of the hospital, somewhere that was not regularly used by staff. Several adults were there, including Jimmy Savile who, like the others, was wearing a robe and a mask.
>
> She recognised him because of his distinctive voice and the fact

---

[421] *The Sunday Daily Star,* “Tory Paedo Cover-up,” October 28, 2012
[422] *Express UK,* “Jimmy Savile was part of satanic ring,” January 13, 2013

> that his blond hair was protruding from the side of the mask. He was not the leader but he was seen as important because of his fame.
>
> She was molested, raped and beaten and heard words that sounded like 'Ave Satanas', a Latinised version of 'Hail Satan', being chanted. There was no mention of any other child being there and she cannot remember how long the attack lasted but she was left extremely frightened and shaken."

Allegations of powerful pedophile rings in Britain were nothing new. Over 30 years ago, in 1981, Tory MP Geoffrey Dickens warned parliament against a pedophile ring he had uncovered, claiming that the network involved "big, big names – people in positions of power, influence and responsibility" and threatened to expose them in Parliament.[423]

Dickens made waves regarding the pedophile ring and dossiers he received for 4 years in parliament before backing down in the face of harassment and death threats. It seems that no one took him seriously at the time, but new evidence shows that his claims had merit: In January 2013, Scotland Yard reopened their investigation.

> "Last month Metropolitan Police began Operation Fernbridge into allegations that residents of a childrens home in Richmond, west London, were taken to the nearby Elm Guest House in Barnes, where they were abused. Pornography involving adults

---

[423] *The Independent,* "Tory MP warned of powerful paedophile ring 30 years ago," February 22, 2013

> having sex with children was allegedly shot at the property and then circulated commercially.
>
> Sir Peter was among the visitors to the property. Others, according to a list seized by Scotland Yard last month, were the late Liberal MP Cyril Smith, the former Russian spy Sir Anthony Blunt, a Sinn Fein politician, a Labour MP, and several Conservative politicians.
>
> After neighbours complained about the arrival of children, the police raided the guesthouse in 1982 but the operation was mysteriously cut short. A 2003 investigation also failed." - *The Independent*[424]

Over 30 years later, the very first man that Dickens accused, Sir Peter Haymann, MI6 operative, was arrested. The new inquiry was prompted by MP Tom Watson, who has requested the original dossier collected by Dickens, but Scotland Yard has been unable to produce it.

Child abuse and pedophilia is rampant among the British elite, and the revelations of Jimmy Savile has opened new opportunities for investigations of former cases. After all, by December 12, 2012, the number of victims who had come forward claiming abuse at the hands of Jimmy Savile had reached 450, spanning dozens of childrens homes and hospitals.[425] Two famous childrens homes who were each subject to their own vast child

---

424Ibid.

425*BBC,* "Jimmy Savile abuse: Number of alleged victims reaches 450," December 12, 2012 abuse scandals in the last decade, Haut de la Garenne on Jersey Island, and Bryn Estyn Boys Home in Wrexham, North Wales, have had a series of fresh allegations in the wake of the Savile revelations.

In Wrexham, North Wales, the tale is a familiar one. Boys from the Bryn Estyn home would be taken to parties throughout the city where they acted as child prostitutes for socialites and were severely sexually abused.

> "Over the years, twenty seven police inquiries failed to disclose the scale of the alleged abuse. Thirteen reports by social services went unpublished. Several journalists reached out for the truth and ended up scorched by libel actions. When police finally launched a major inquiry, in 1991, they secured the conviction of only four care workers and concluded that there was no evidence of a paedophile ring. Clwyd County Council then commissioned its own independent inquiry but decreed that its report could not be published." - *The Guardian*[426]

Celebrated investigative journalist Nick Davies, writing for *The Guardian*, nails the concept and motivation behind these various sex abuse scandals with the following statement:

> "Power is the fabric of a paedophile ring, essential first to subjugate the children, whose passivity is essential for the adults'

---

[426] *The Guardian,* "Secrecy imposed on the exposure of alleged child abuse," October 1997

> indulgence; and second, where possible, to neutralise the authorities who might otherwise frustrate its activities."

Writing about a new Tribunal launched into the Wrexham case in 1997, Davies noted that over 300 men and women had come forward, naming 148 different abusers. The official Wrexham inquiry concluded that widespread abuse of boys did indeed occur at Bryn Estyn and other nearby childrens homes, and that dozens of potential inquiries were completely suppressed by administrators.

> "During the period under review there was a paedophile ring in the Wrexham and Chester areas in the sense that there were a number of male persons, many of them known to each other, who were engaged in paedophile activities and were targeting young males in their middle teens. The evidence does not establish that they were solely or mainly interested in persons in care but such youngsters were particularly vulnerable to their approaches."[427]

After the Savile revelations, 76 new victims came forward in North Wales, and the investigation has been reopened. The victims claimed that the 1997 inquiry only examined a small fraction of the abuse allegations.[428] *The Independent* revealed in 2012 further details of a coverup:

---

[427] *The Telegraph,* "Waterhouse Inquiry: recommendations and conclusions," November 6, 2012

[428] *The Record UK,* "North Wales abuse: 76 new allegations arise in investigation into a historic paedophile ring at 18 care homes," April 29, 2013

> “A damning report that laid bare the North Wales child abuse scandal might have aired the issue of sex attacks on children in care nearly half a decade before an official judicial inquiry in 2000. Instead copies of the report were ordered to be destroyed because the council that commissioned it feared it might be sued, *The Independent* on Sunday can reveal. Only a handful remain, including one obtained by this newspaper.” - *The Independent*

They claim the following details:

- “The then newly appointed North Wales chief constable, who was uncontactable yesterday, refused to meet them or help with access to the police major-incident database. "We were disappointed at the apparent impossibility of obtaining a breakdown of data. We are unable to identify the overall extent of the allegations received by the police in the many witness statements which they took."
- Some 130 boxes of material handed over by the council to the police were not made available to the panel.
- The council did not allow the inquiry to place a notice in the local press seeking information. "This was considered to be unacceptable to the insurers," says the report...
- "There were numerous claims and suggestions that senior public figures including the police and political figures might

> have been involved in the abuse of young people," the report said." - *The Independent*[429]

After his death, Jimmy Savile would be repeatedly linked to the North Wales home. One victim claimed to have been repeatedly raped by the deputy head of the home, Peter Howarth, while Savile watched for entertainment.[430]

> "Howarth pulled down my pyjama bottoms in front of Savile. I was helpless as Jimmy watched. He thought it funny entertainment. This happened to a number of boys."
>
> According to "Ben", Savile would ask him: "What do you want me to do? Can I fix it for you." The victim added: "He kept on looking at me and smiling and laughing. Then he started rubbing my leg. After that I went to bed but he had other children brought up to him." - *The Telegraph*

The phrase "Can I fix it for you" is a sick play on Jimmy Savile's popular TV show, 'Jim'll Fix It', where Savile would put underprivileged or sick kids into contact with celebrities, or take them on trips, as a psuedo-charitable charade. This put Savile in contact with hundreds of vulnerable children. Peter Howarth was one of the few people convicted during the original North Wales child abuse inquiries.

---

[429] *The Independent,* "The Jillings report: How the truth about North Wales child abuse scandal was suppressed," November 11, 2012

[430] *The Telegraph,* "Jimmy Savile linked to North Wales child abuse scandal," November 7, 2012

> “Another victim of Bryn Estyn was Steve Messham, who claims he was repeatedly abused as a child by a senior member of the conservative party, as well as others. Yesterday he told Channel 4 News that he passed photographs of children being abused, including himself, to the police but they failed to act. He also said the men who abused him as a teenager frequently threatened him, saying: 'If you tell anyone, I'll have you killed.'” - *The Telegraph*

The Haut de la Garrene childrens home in Jersey has similar evidence of a massive coverup. Jersey, not subject to European Union regulations, has long been a haven of tax dodgers and secrecy. In 2008, more than 200 victims came forward with tales of rape and torture.[431] It soon became clear that many of the accused were Tory officials and aides, prompting a swift response by Prime Minister David Cameron to address the claims.[432] After his death, it was revealed that Jimmy Savile was a regular visitor of the childrens home.[433]

In 2008, after being replaced as the lead of the investigation, Police Chief Lenny Harper blasted the road blocks he encountered during his tenure and accused an 'Old Boys' network of obstructing his investigation.

> “In his most outspoken criticism of the Jersey authorities, Mr Harper told the Telegraph: "I can quite clearly say that the

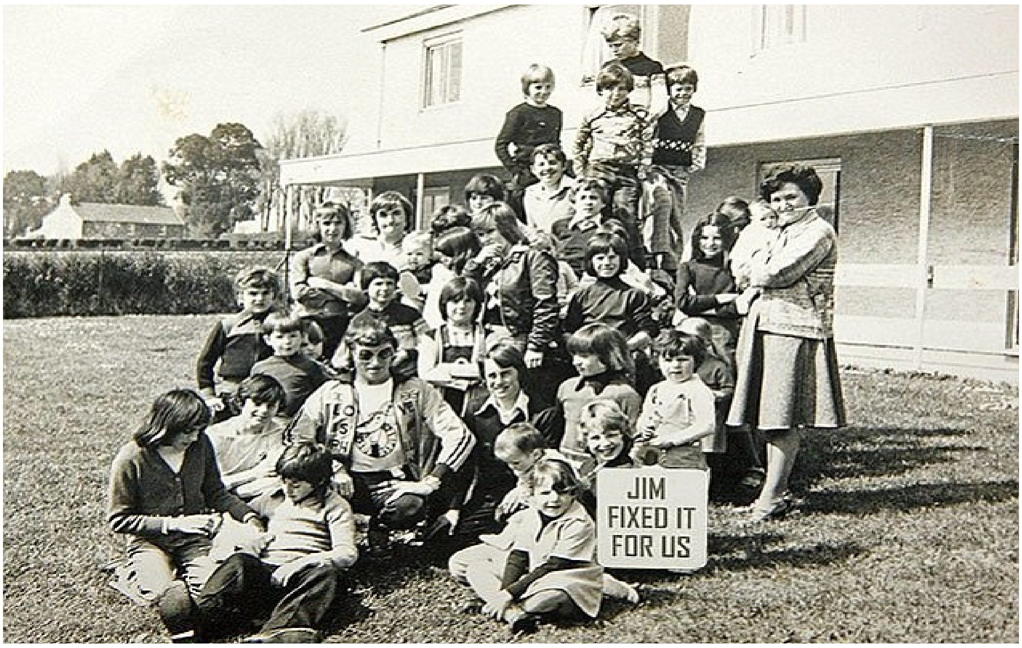
---

[431] *The Telegraph,* “Jimmy Savile: 'He was the tip of the iceberg',” October 19, 2012
[432] *The Guardian,* “Tory child sex abuse ring claim: Cameron races to control scandal,” November 5, 2012
[433] *BBC,* “Jimmy Savile named in Jersey children's home abuse inquiry,” October 2, 2012

investigation is being held up. There are people on the island who just don't want us going down the route of this inquiry.

Mr Harper, who handed over the reins of the investigation to his successor on Thursday and officially leaves the Jersey force at the end of the month, also revealed fresh details of why he is so convinced that someone deliberately concealed the bones and teeth of five children, perhaps after murdering them...

Mr Harper has repeatedly said that because some of the 100 bone fragments had been cut, and because the 65 milk teeth found at the home had roots on them, meaning they did not come out naturally, children were either murdered or their bodies were illegally concealed." - *The Telegraph*[434]



Jimmy Savile pictured with 30 children from the Haut de la Garrene Home

---

[434] *The Telegraph,* "Jersey abuse case: 'Old boy network' is obstructing police investigation," August 8, 2008

Jimmy Savile was also linked to Haut de la Garenne. It was revealed in October, 2012 that his name had come up numerous times in a police investigation four years earlier but he was not investigated further.[435] Lenny Harper, the lead investigator into the Garenne home, told the *Telegraph* in 2012:

> “Savile chose his victims with great care; vulnerable and often troubled youngsters many in care homes. If they complained they were labeled troublemakers, or brutally put down. We know from court cases and statements made to my team [during the 2008 inquiry] that children in Jersey care homes were 'loaned out’ to members of the yachting fraternity and other prominent citizens on the pretense of recreational trips but during which they were savagely abused and often raped.
>
> “When these children complained they were beaten and locked in cellars [at Haut de la Garenne], which the Jersey authorities denied existed in 2008, but which can still be seen on YouTube footage. What chance did they have? This would have been the perfect hunting ground for Savile. The great and good of Jersey fawn over anyone with even loose connections to British royalty. Saville would have been a VIP to them and children would not

---

435*The Daily Mail,* “Savile pictured at the Jersey House of Horrors: Paedophile DJ is surrounded by children at care home where 192 'suffered abuse',” October 16, 2012

> have stood a dog's chance of complaining about him. It would have been so easy for him." - *The Telegraph*[436]

Regarding the statement about the 'yachting fraternity', Rupert Murdoch's famous tabloid *News of the World* launched an investigation and found that children were "loaned out to rich pedophile yachtsmen".[437] They alleged that Jimmy Savile personally delivered the boys to the club.

Jimmy Savile is certainly a weird character. He once gave an interview to *Esquire Magazine* where he stated:

> "I guess I am like Forrest Gump... I am like a sewing machine needle that goes in here and goes in there, but I am also the eminence grise: the grey, shadowy figure in the background. The thing about me is I get things done and I work under cover."[438]

Perhaps he is referring to his close connections with the United Kingdom's royalty. He was known to have acted as a 'marriage counselor' between Prince Charles and Princess Diana in the '80s. His weird behavior was noted by the press, where he was reported to greet Prince Charles' assistants by "taking their hands and rubbing his lips all the way up their arms."[439]

Jimmy Savile had numerous private meetings with former Prime Minister Margaret Thatcher, documents released in 2012 revealed. They detailed how Savile had petitioned

---

[436] *The Telegraph,* "Jimmy Savile: 'He was the tip of the iceberg'," October 19, 2012
[437] *News of the World,* "JERSEY:Children were loaned to rich paedophile yachtsmen."
[438] *Daily Mail,* "Jim the fixer: Is Jimmy Savile just a fantasist ... or is the truth even stranger than fiction?"
[439] *The Guardian,* "Jimmy Savile caused concern with behaviour on visits to Prince Charles," October 29, 2012

Thatcher to change a law that would allow easier tax deductions for Saviles involvement with the Stoke Mandeville hospital (where Savile was alleged to have abused girls during Satanic rituals). *BBC* explained that the documents showed that Thatcher was favorable to Savile's petition, and had several private meetings including lunch, though she was adamant that his name never be mentioned.[440] Later it was revealed that Prince Charles himself signed on to be the 'Patron of the Appeal'.[441]

As of January 2013, police have confirmed that at least 22 sexual abuse offenses by Jimmy Savile had taken place at the Stoke Mandeville hospital.[442] A 2009 police interview with Savile shows that all he had to do was threaten legal action against the police, and the claims of abuse against him were dropped. At one point he told the officers, in reference to the Stoke Mandeville hospital, "I own it."[443]

The connections between Savile and the UK elite are certainly cause for suspicion. In 2007, Prince Charles sent Savile a Christmas Card which read: "Jimmy, with affectionate greetings from Charles. Give my love to your ladies in Scotland."[444]

Perhaps the most disturbing part of the Savile tale is that *everyone knew*. One senior police officer told *BBC* that "We know Jimmy likes them young, he's got friends in high places."[445] A retired Leeds policeman has claimed that "there wasn't a copper in the city who didn't know Savile was a pervert".[446] *BBC* television and radio legend Sir Terry Wogan claimed that Savile's abuse was an 'open secret' and that it was common knowledge in the industry what he was up to.[447]

---

[440] *BBC,* "Jimmy Savile sought Margaret Thatcher Stoke Mandeville help," December 28, 2012
[441] *The Daily Star,* "CHARLES' LINKS TO SAVILE," May 12, 2013
[442] *BBC,* "Jimmy Savile scandal: Stoke Mandeville inquiry continues," January 11, 2013
[443] *The Guardian,* "Jimmy Savile: transcript reveals 'policy' used to halt abuse claims," October 16, 2013
[444] *The Telegraph,* "Sir Jimmy Savile: Prince Charles's love for Savile's 'ladies'," October 4, 2012
[445] *BBC,* "'Everyone knew' about Jimmy Savile, former officer says," October 17, 2013
[446] *The Telegraph,* "How far did police go to protect Jimmy Savile?," October 18, 2013
[447] *The Mirror,* "Sir Terry Wogan speaks of his hatred of Jimmy Savile and says his crimes were open secret at BBC," October 5, 2013

> “David Nicolson, 67, said he reported the incident to his bosses at the corporation in 1988 but was rebuffed and simply told: "That's Jimmy". He told *The Sun* newspaper: “I was revolted by his behaviour. They just shrugged it off, saying, ‘Yeah, yeah — that’s the way it goes’.”
>
> “Everyone knew what was going on. That includes senior BBC people — chiefs at the highest levels. “There were always girls in Jimmy’s dressing room. Everyone would have known about it — all the hair and make-up people, the wardrobe, show directors, producers.” - *The Telegraph*[448]

New revelations regarding Jimmy Savile and other pedophiles in esteemed institutions are being published every month. Hopefully the investigation trail will eventually expose just how deep the corruption goes.

Food for Thought:

1. How can a pedophile network infiltrate or compromise the authorities who would otherwise be responsible for exposing them and bringing them to justice?

2. Why is pedophilia so rampant among the elite?

---

[448] *The Telegraph,* “Jimmy Savile: BBC did nothing when director caught him in the act,” October 12, 2012

3. How could Jimmy Savile and Larry King maintain their abuse when so many of their associates were aware?

4. Why does the reported child abuse go well beyond sexual acts into sadism and torture?

5. How widespread are these networks?

6. Is there collusion or connections between large pedophile rings?

7. Just how high up does the corruption go in Washington, the UK and Belgium?

Cults and Child Abuse

* * * *

The Finders

In 1987 the *New York Times* ran a story about a little known cult called "The Finders". The first paragraph reads:

> "Police officials here said today that six disheveled children found in Tallahassee, Fla., might be the offspring of members of a little known cult, but the officials said they had not ruled out the possibility of kidnapping."[449]

Who are these suspicious men, and what were they doing with 6 undocumented children, transporting them across the country? Two children who were with the Tallahassee men were found to show signs of sexual abuse.[450] The Finders had long been a topic of discussion for locals, who were naturally fascinated with the cult that lived amongst them. The *Washington City Paper* once described the Finders as such:

> "In appearance, the Finders—mostly middle-aged men, always in dark suits—wouldn't be out of place managing a local funeral home. But the behavior of the handful of adherents has people

---

[449] *New York Times,* "Inquiry Spreads on 6 Children and Cult," February 8, 1987
[450] *Chicago Tribune,* "2 Cult Children Show Signs Of Sex Abuse," February 9, 1987

> wondering whether they arrived by flying saucer. Townspeople say the Finders constantly walk the streets, following people home and taking extensive notes and pictures. They often appear at local council meetings, never saying a word but simply observing the scene. At other times, they plunder the visitor's center of brochures, maps, and local travel guides. And they haunt the courthouse, scouring land deeds to find out who owns the local real estate," -*Washington City Paper*[451]

The *Washington City Paper* goes on to address the shocking specter of the alleged Satanist practices of the cult, with the startling revelation:

> "But among all the cryptic inventory, cops found a photo album entitled "The Execution of Henrietta and Igor," a series of snapshots depicting berobed adults and children slaughtering goats in a wintry woodscape. One photo depicted giggling toddlers pulling dead kids from a womb ("Baby goats!" ran the caption); another showed a grinning adult presenting a goat's head to a startled child."[452]

One *US News and World Report* article states:

> "The more the police learned about the Finders, the more bizarre they seemed: There were suggestions of child abuse, Satanism, dealing in pornography and ritualistic animal slaughter. None of

---

[451] *Washington City Paper,* "Finders Keeper," May 24, 1996
[452] Ibid.

> the allegations was ever proved, however. The child abuse charges against the two men in Tallahassee were dropped."[453]

The children were apparently en route to Mexico, to what the children described as a school for 'smart kids'. It was noted in a Customs Report that the children were unable to accurately identify themselves or their custodians, could not identify the purpose of telephones, toilets or televisions, and were only given food 'as a reward'.[454]

These shocking developments led to a raid on the Finders compound by the U.S. Customs Service. The report produced after the raid is astounding:

> "During the execution of the warrant at 3918/20 W Street., I was able to observe and access the entire building. I saw large quantities of childrens clothing and toys. The clothing consisted of diapers and clothes in the toddler to preschool range. No children were found on the premises."
>
> "Cursory examination of the documents revealed detailed instructions for obtaining children for unspecified purposes. The instructions included the impregnation of female members of the community known as the Finders, purchasing children, trading and kidnapping."
>
> "One such telex specifically ordered the purchase of two children in Hong Kong to be arranged through a contact in the Chinese Embassy there. Another telex expressed interest in 'bank secrecy'

---

[453] *US News and World Report,* "Through a Glass, Very Darkly," December 19, 1993
[454] USCS report available here.

situations. Other documents identified interests in high-tech transfers to the United Kingdom, numerous properties under control of the Finders, a keen interest in terrorism, explosives and evasion of authorities.”

“There was also a set of instructions which appeared to be broadcast via a computer network which advised participants to move 'the children' and to keep them moving through different jurisdictions, and instructions on how to avoid police attention.”

“I was able to observe numerous documents which described explicit sexual conduct between members of the community known as Finders. I also saw a large collection of photographs of unidentified persons. Some of the photographs were nudes, believed to be members of Finders. There were numerous photos of children, some nude, at least one of which was a child 'on display' and appearing to accent the childs genitals.”

“One of the officers presented me with a photo album for review. The album contained a series of photos of adults and children dressed in white sheets participating in a 'blood ritual'. The ritual centered around the execution of at least two goats. The photos portrayed the execution, disembowelment and dismemberment of the goats at the hands of the children. This included the removal of the testes of the male goat, the discovery of the female goats 'womb' and the 'baby goats' inside the womb, and the

> presentation of the goat head to one of the children.”
>
> “The warehouse contained a large library, two kitchens, a sauna, hot tub, and a 'video room'. The video room seemed to be set up as an indoctrination center. It also appeared that the organization had the capability to produce its own videos. There were what appeared to be training areas for the children and what appeared to be an altar set up in a residential area of the warehouse. Many jars of feces and urine were located in this area.” - USCS Report of Investigation Continuation, filed by Special Agent Ramon J. Martinez, March 2, 1987[455]

A follow up report revealed the most shocking detail of the entire Finders case:

> “I was advised that all of the passport data had been turned over to the State Department for their investigation. The State Department in turn advised MPD (D.C. Metropolitan Police Department) that all travel and use of passports by the holders of the passports was within the law and no action would be taken. **This included travel to Moscow, North Korea and North Vietnam from the late 1950's to the early 1970's.**
> The individual further advised me of circumstances which indicated that the investigation into the Finders **had become a CIA internal matter.** The MPD report has been classified and is not available for review. I was advised that the FBI had

---

[455] Ibid.

> withdrawn from the investigation several weeks prior and that **the FBI Foreign Counter Intelligence Division had directed the MPD not to advise the FBI Washington Field Office of anything that had transpired.**”[456] (Emphasis mine).

After the Finders investigation became a 'CIA internal matter', no action against the Finders was ever taken, and the case has largely faded from public memory. Not everyone was content with the investigation simply 'ending'. Florida congressman Tom Lewis was quoted as saying:

> “'Could our own government have something to do with this Finders organization and turned their backs on these children? That's what all the evidence points to," says Lewis. "And there's a lot of evidence. I can tell you this: We've got a lot of people scrambling, and that wouldn't be happening if there was nothing here.'”[457]

Digging by the media could only produce one confirmed connection: A firm which operated as a 'front organization' for the CIA providing officers with computer training employed several members of the Finders. The *Washington Times* reported:

> “Other Customs Service documents and records from the FBI and Metropolitan Police provide indications that the CIA had links to the Finders or at least to some of the group’s members. A

---

[456] Ibid.
[457] *US News and World Report,* “Through a Glass, Very Darkly,” December 19, 1993

> Metropolitan Police document dated Feb. 19, 1987, quotes a CIA agent as confirming that his agency was sending its personnel to "a Finders Corp., Future Enterprises, for training in computer operations."And a later Customs Service report says that the CIA "admitted to owning the Finders organization as a front for a domestic computer training operation but that it had 'gone bad.'"[458]

The CIA has denied any connection to the Finders.

* * * *

Presidio

On November 16, 1987, the *New York Times* article glibly revealed a shocking statistic: in a three year period from 1984 to 1987, over 30 different military bases were rocked by child abuse scandals, including West Point and Fort Dix.[459] This statement came on the heels of a massive scandal that was taking place in San Francisco, at a military base named Presidio.

> "A Federal grand jury in San Francisco spent 10 months investigating abuse allegations surrounding the Presidio center, and almost 100 children were examined for physical or

---

[458] *The Washington Times,* "CIA tied to cult accused of abuse ; Justice probes links to Finders," December 17, 1993
[459] *New York Times,* "Army Will Close Child-Care Center," November 16, 1987

> psychological signs of sexual abuse. At least four children were discovered to have chlamydia, a sexually transmitted disease." - *New York Times*

The *San Jose Mercury* described the West Point scandal and its relation to ritual abuse in chilling detail:

> "There had been sex abuse cases involving day care centers at several other Army bases. West Point was one of the most serious --until the Presidio. In July 1984, a 3-year-old girl was brought to the emergency room at West Point Hospital with a lacerated vagina. The child told the doctor who examined her that a teacher at the West Point day care center was the one who hurt her...
>
> Children at West Point told stories that would become horrifyingly familiar. They said they had been ritually abused. They said they had had excrement smeared on their bodies and been forced to eat feces and drink urine. They said they were taken away from the day care center and photographed." - *San Jose Mercury News*[460]

The Presidio that the *San Jose Mercury News* and *New York Times* mentioned is a military base located in San Francisco. It became the subject of one of the strangest and sickening child abuse scandals in American history. In 1987, some parents whose children attended the Presidio day care center began to notice signs of abuse in their children, who began acting strangely, using sexually provocative language and sexually inappropriate behavior. Upon taking their children to the hospital, it was revealed that they also suffered an array of physical symptoms showing clear cases of sexual abuse. When authorities would not act, the parents directly contacted the parents of other kids at the center and the result was shocking: 60 children had clear physical signs of abuse and 4 had contracted Chlamydia. Some were only infants.

---

[460] *San Jose Mercury News,* "Army of the Night," July 24, 1988

The *American Journal of Orthopsychiatry* wrote an extensive analysis of the victims of the Presidio. They stated:

> "The severity of the trauma for children at the Presidio was immediately manifest in clear cut symptoms. Before the abuse was exposed, parents had already noticed the following changes in their children: vaginal discharge, genital soreness, rashes, fear of the dark, sleep disturbances, nightmares, sexually provocative language, and sexually inappropriate behavior. In addition, the children were exhibiting other radical changes in behavior, including temper outbursts, sudden mood shifts, and poor impulse control. All these behavioral symptoms are to be expected in preschool children who have been molested."[461]

The U.S. Army was in no hurry to investigate the claims of child abuse. It took them 12 days to form a strategy group, and nearly a month passed before they notified other parents of the day care that child abuse allegations had been made. Although it is normal procedure to shut down a government daycare after such allegations, the Presidio Daycare Center remained open for nearly a year. By then, 59 other victims between the ages of 3 and 7 were identified.[462]

---

[461] *American Journal of Orthopsychiatry,* "PRESCHOOL CHILD SEX ABUSE: The Aftermath of the Presidio Case," April 1992

Reports of a satanic cult being housed within the military base had apparently surfaced many years earlier. Military Police had investigated some buildings after reports of a man dressed in all black holding a little girls hand had been reported. An MP was recorded as saying:

> “We kicked the door open and here's this nice little bedroom. In a corner was a mannequin with a gun aimed at the door. On the left side there was a bunk against the wall. There was a pentagram on the floor, a huge one. There were dolls' heads all over the ceiling, just off-the-wall stuff... We were sitting there, we've got a cult on the Presidio of San Francisco and nobody cares about it. We were told by the provost marshal to just forget about it.”[463]

On the Autumnal equinox of 1987, an occult day of importance, fire would strike a building adjacent to the day care, destroying many records relating to the center. A month later, fire would destroy the day care center itself. The ATF found that the causes of both fires had been arson, contrary to the Armies own investigation which claimed faulty wiring.[464]

Only one man would ever have charges brought against him: Gary Hambright, a civilian employee who oversaw the daycare center. However, the prosecution bungled the case, bringing to trial only the children who 'would make the best witnesses' and leaving out the most prolific examples of physical abuse, such as those with rectal lesions and missing hymens. The judge presiding over the case deemed the charges as 'too vague' and Hambright walked free. No other persons were charged and the US government quietly closed the case against Presidio itself.[465] The lawyer for the Presidio was Joseph Russoniello, who also defended the United States government during the Iran/Contra trials.[466]

---

[462] San Jose Mercury News, “Army of the Night,” July 24, 1988
[463] Ibid.
[464] Ibid.

At one point in the investigation, it was revealed that another man was being investigated by the police: Lieutenant Colonel Michael Aquino, military intelligence specialist. Army documents and child testimony showed that children from the day care center regularly took trips outside of the center, and many children were able to accurately identify what the inside of Aquino's house looked like. Investigators searched Aquino's house and retrieved thousands of videos and photographs, and found what appeared to be a soundproof room, but charges were never brought against him.[467]

Who exactly is Michael Aquino? It turns out he is an important piece of the puzzle. Aquino is openly a Satanist, who founded his own church called the Temple of Set. He coauthored the highly controversial document "Mindwar" in 1980, which would define the strategy and importance of Psychological Operations, aka PSYOPS, for the Department of Defense from that point forward. In 'Mindwar', Aquino argues that the reason for the failure in Vietnam was not tactical, but rather the United States simply lost the war of information, being unable to turn the Vietnamese to their cause and unable to convince the domestic public of the importance of the war.[468]

He proposes a new look at PSYOPS, claiming that it ought to be at the very forefront of the war effort, the very first and the most important technique employed as soon as conflict is deemed inevitable. No longer would 'tactical propaganda' such as leaflets and loudspeakers on the battlefield suffice, instead a vast array of propaganda and coercion techniques are needed. This goes beyond what we traditionally think of propaganda, such as planted news stories or front organizations that we saw in Operation Mockingbird. He also advocates 'Mindwar' on American citizens.

---

[465] *San Jose Mercury News,* "Abuse Case at Presidio Quietly Closed by US," April 19, 1988

[466] *New York Times,* "Moonlighting," September 27, 1998

[467] San Jose Mercury News, "Army of the Night," July 24, 1988

[468] Lt. Col. Michael Aquino, "Mindwar." (PDF Warning)

> "MindWar must target **all** participants if it is to be effective. It must not only weaken the enemy; it must strengthen the United States."

Immediately afterwords is some sick justification on the use of PSYOPS on Americans:

> "Under existing United States law, PSYOP units may not target American citizens. That prohibition is based upon the presumption that "propaganda" is necessarily a lie or at least a misleading half-truth, and that the government has no right to lie to the people. The Propaganda Ministry of Goebbels must not be a part of the American way of life. Quite right, and so it must be axiomatic of MindWar that it **always** speaks the truth. Its power lies in its ability to focus recipients' attention on the truth of the **future** as well as that of the present. MindWar thus involves the stated promise of the truth that the United States has resolved to make real if it is not already so."

So there is virtually no law barring the use of 'Mindwar' on Americans, because if it is not yet the truth, the Department of Defense will make it the 'truth'.

Perhaps most terrifying is Aquino's insistence that:

> “There are some purely natural conditions under which minds may become more or less receptive to ideas, and MindWar should take full advantage of such phenomena as atmospheric electromagnetic activity, air ionization, and extremely low frequency waves.”

Consider the magnitude of this statement, imagine the Department of Defense manipulating domestic and foreign persons with Extremely Low Frequency waves to alter their political and moral dispositions to align with the interests of the United States. It sheds light on a statement Aquino makes in the beginning of the document:

> “Psychotronic research is in its infancy, but the U.S. Army **already** possesses an operational weapons systems designed to do what LTC Alexander would like ESP to do - except that **this** weapons system uses **existing** communications media. It seeks to map the minds of neutral and enemy individuals and then to change them in accordance with U.S. national interests. It does this on a wide scale, embracing military units, regions, nations, and blocs.” (Emphasis retained)

Psychotronics, as defined by Aquino himself, is 'intelligence and operational use of ESP'. In the simplest terms, the Department of Defense has the capability to map a persons brain waves, and then use techniques such as ELF (Extremely Low Frequency Waves) to alter that persons brainwaves to a pattern more conducive to United States interests. This is the technique that Aquino is advocating to be used on domestic citizens, in the most defining thesis in PSYOPs history. And remember this paper was published 34 years ago. Where is the technology today?

As an important side note, Franklin victim Paul Bonacci once identified Michael Aquino as an associate of Larry King.[469] Rusty Nelson at one point identified Michael Aquino as a man who he had seen Larry King once turn over a suitcase full of cash and bonds.[470] In addition, Michael Aquino has been implicated in various other daycare and military installation child abuse scandals. One important example is the abuse case at the Jubilation Day Care Center at Fort Bragg, where multiple children positively identified Aquino as an abuser out of a video lineup of men dressed exactly like him.[471]

*   *   *   *

Satanism in Franklin, Nebraska

Two primary witnesses in the Franklin proceedings, Paul Bonacci and Loretta Smith, neither of whom knew each other, both told stories of being sexually abused at the hands of satanic cults operating in Nebraska. The Douglas County grand jury acknowledged that the allegations in the Franklin case "necessitated our studying satanic and pedophile activity in eastern Nebraska, particularly in the Omaha metropolitan area."[472]

Loretta Smith's testimony would be sealed by the Douglas County Grand Jury, but references in the Grand Jury Final Report shed some light on what she discussed:

---

[469] Court Transcripts, “Paul Bonacci vs. Lawrence E. King”

[470] *Executive Intelligence Review,* “Stunning breakthrough reached in Nebraska satanic pedophile case,” March 19, 1990 (PDF Warning)

[471] David McGowan, “The Pedophocracy.”

[472] John DeCamp, “The Franklin Coverup.”

> “In 1988 an Omaha girl, who was an inpatient at Richard Young Hospital, described a number of gruesome cult activities which she claimed to have witnessed between the approximate ages of 9 and 12.... According to the girl, she became involved in a cult where older male members sexually molested her and killed infants and children to establish their dominance over other cult members.”

Both Smith and Paul Bonacci claimed to have seen Larry King present at some rituals. Paul Bonacci wrote in his written history that King picked him up after school one day:

> "...and took me to the Triangle which is in a wooded area in Sarpy County. I witnessed a sacrifice of a human baby boy. Everyone was chanting and it was a yearly ritual around the time of Christ's birth to pervert the blood of Christ. They used daggers and cut the boy and filled a cup with his blood and mixed urine in it and forced all of us to drink from the cup and chant 'Satan is Lord Lucifer our King. Realm of darkness come now empower us your slaves.' Then they all began to chant some weird sounds and I got scared and was threatened I'd become the next sacrifice if I told anyone about it."

One of the names on the 'suspicious death list' surrounding the Franklin Scandal is Kathleen Sorenson, who took in the children who fled from the Webb family among many other abused children. Sorenson gave a stunning report to a Christian television channel which aired in Nebraska in 1989, based on her experiences with over 30 abused foster children who spent months or years in her home. It provides an eye-opening introduction to a shocking phenomenon known as Ritual Abuse. The claims without further documentation certainly seem to be fantastical, so I urge the reader to suspend their disbelief until after the empirical evidence of extreme abuse has been fully discussed:

> "We got involved and learned about this subject because we were foster parents and worked with a number of children. And several years back, several of the children began, after a period of time and building up trust, began to talk about some very bizarre events that had happened in their past and they were frightening and very confusing. I really didn't know what to think. We went to the police, and we went to social services and there was really nothing anyone could do. These children we worked with are now adopted, in safe homes, and probably would never have talked had they not felt able to trust the people they were living with. There are certain things that are in common in the childrens' stories when we talk about devil worship...
>
> There are things that come up in every single story, such as candles. They all talk about sex. Sex is without a doubt a part of every area of this, all sorts of perverted sex. That is what you will first hear, about the sex, about the incest, and it is so hard to believe. But once we get that, we have learned that we can go on and ask and find out... and it will involve pornography; that is always part of it. Part of the reason is that they can use that to

threaten the children. "We have pictures, we will show the police if you talk." It makes the children feel that they are in great danger, and they are all very frightened of the law. They talk about the garish makeup that the people in the group wear, they talk about singing that they didn't understand. Obviously that is chanting, and that has come up in every one of these stories, and none of them call it chanting. There will be dancing. Most often that will involve sexual acts. There will always be a leader and they will be very frightened of the leader.

These children, from a very young age, and I am talking about children who came out of birth homes, the family they were born to, worshiped the devil. ...

The children I have talked to have all had to murder before the age of two. That is something beyond anything I could comprehend. But in some way, whether with the help of an adult's hand over theirs, by having them practice, by getting them excited to be part of the adult scene, they do murder. And the evil thing that happens is, that they really believe that they want to. They want to do what the older people are doing, and they are praised for that. And that becomes their goal, to be like the adults...

They are told they will never get out, no one will ever believe them, that there is no freedom, that "the law will get you," they are hopeless before they get someone willing to listen. They are threatened with death. Every time a child is killed in their group, they are told, "If you tell, this will happen to you." They have every reason to believe that. So even when they are into the [foster care] system, and with another family and begin to feel somewhat safe, they still expect these people to show up on the doorstep. They believe that these people know everything they are doing, everyone they're talking to.

One teenager told me that she had been told, that if she ever got married, that they would fool her, it would be one of them and she wouldn't know it ahead of time. They set them up to fail in every area. It is very prevalent in the Midwest, Iowa, Nebraska, Missouri. Some people have speculated recently that these states are headquarters ....

As you listen to us talk about these things, there will be a natural part of you which will deny much of what you hear, and believe me, we did too. I would like to share this with you, partly in the children's words, so that you can hear the things that they said that nobody could make up, that no child could know. That's what eventually convinced me, along with the deep emotion. The grieving, screeching damage and hurt that they cry out with as they talk. The children I will be talking about, these are all children that I personally talked to. They are today between the ages of 5 and 17. When they talked they were between the ages of

5 and 15. When these things occurred to them, they were between the ages of, well birth, but of when memory enters in, I would say a year and a half to eight. So we are talking about very small children....

We are talking about children forming consciences at that time, learning right from wrong. These children do not know. They come out and do not know what is right. They are confused. What they did before, that they were rewarded for, is such a horror to anybody else, that they are shunned. And most often they have been in multiple placements, they will go to a home, they will steal, they will lie, they will hurt animals. One little guy would sharpen pencils and try to stab people. I don't mean poke, I mean stab. People don't like that in their homes. They don't have any idea what it is, they just think, "We have a weird kid." Many are sent to psychiatric hospitals where they are labeled psychotics, schizophrenics, and who would want them in?

I will begin with the first stories that we heard, which will seem horrible to you, but are very mild to me, because we have progressed and heard far worse things. The first story is about two little boys who were 7 and 9 when they talked, and they told about sexual abuse at one point, and were very grieved. We talked about good and bad touching and we thought we really had gotten to the bottom of it, and then that afternoon the little one began to cry, and when we couldn't get the answer from him, the older brother said, "He is probably crying because he was in the room, when they killed his friend."

That was the first one we know about. And as they described that, they talked about that particular victim being brought into a room, hands and arms tied, mouth taped, and how there had been x's marked on his body, on his vital organs. That was bad enough. Within a very few weeks we learned that it was not the adults who had killed that child. It was this oldest boy, who was talking. The next person that we talked to was a little boy, who was very borderline mentally. He had language problems, it was very hard for him to explain himself. And when he began to come out of it, everyone was startled the way he talked. We were real sure, we knew he had not been around these other children and heard anything, but we began to question ourselves, "Are we asking strange questions. Is there something odd about us which makes children come and dump these things on us?" The part which made me believe this child's story, he talked about different babies being killed, but this particular one being stabbed, he curled up in a fetal position, he was 9 years old when he was telling the story. He curled up in a fetal position, and his eyes got real glazed, and he said, "They cooked that baby on the grill." And I thought, he has really flipped out. I mean, I didn't know. And he said, "Oh, gross, it smelled like rotten chicken, or rotten deer." He then went on to tell us how they would cut out the heart, or cut off the sex organs, and save them in the refrigerator.

A very typical thing that these kids talk about. They *worship* the sex organs.... They kept it for another ceremony. I asked him where the bodies went. I did not get any answers from that child about what happened to the bodies, but the other two boys, who I spoke about first, eventually, they talked about throwing the babies in the fire. And I asked about that, "You mean they were dead when they threw them in the fire?" And the littlest one said, "No, no. Them was alive and them threw them." And by this time we were really getting freaked out. What were we going to do? How can you help these kids? Where do you find a therapist who can deal with this? ... But God set up a support system. Other families were helping us, and that really helped. The next child I will share about, and I am going sort of by categories here, how we learned, and the types of killings, this little girl is 11 today, she was 9 when she first talked. It was a very painful thing when she first started to share the sex things. The sex things are so harmful to the children and they are so embarrassed and it is so personal to the children, and they know that they enjoyed that. They know that. We had been through all that. She began to draw pictures of cats, and the cats all had tails that were on the other side of the page, or their leg was someplace else.

As we began to work with her and talk, she said that she had had to kill a pregnant cat. She first said that they had killed a pregnant cat. We said how did you know it was pregnant. Well, she could not explain that, but as we got into it, she confessed that she had had to kill the cat. And I asked her. And her description was, "With a knife, I put it in her bottom, and twisted it." Now you tell me, does a kid know that? If I ask a kid how do you kill a cat, do you think they will say that? Those are the kinds of details these children tell us. Later, and they eventually cut the cat open, and that was how they knew the cat was pregnant. And they eat parts of the cat, and the feces and the blood.

And again, this was just the beginning. It progressed, and the next time she had to kill a baby, the same way-put the knife in the bottom and twist. The baby was alive and he was screaming. And that child hears that, to this day, and has nightmares and flashbacks. And they cut the baby open, and they ate the baby. They do this, so there are no bodies left, and they bum what is left and grind up the bones. And she talked about that, pouring gasoline on the bodies and burning them in the back yard. And I used to think that was nuts, but I have heard it enough times now that I know it must be so....

We know there are mortuaries involved, to cremate the bodies, and that makes sense.... The most horrible story about fire that I have to tell, and this is extremely, extremely disturbing, it was a little girl, she was a teenager when she was telling me. And she was describing a barn where they used to go to have their meetings and they used to gather outside the barn, and there would be chanting. And then as they went inside the barn they would be split into different groups. And she was never with any of her family, they all went to different places. And I asked her where she had to go and she said "I was always in the burning room." And as she went on to describe the burning room, I thought, how she came out of this, with any sanity at all, I don't know.

She was a very small child. They would take in children, probably pre-schoolers, and they would hang them from the rafters in this barn, and there would be as many as five or ten hung in a row. They would be fully clothed, which is unusual, because frequently they are naked. The children, like this girl, were all given candles. And you can picture the ceremony as she described it. And the candles were lit. Then the adults would go forward and would pour liquid from a cup on each of the children's clothing, which was obviously gasoline or kerosene. And then they would give a signal and the others would have to go forward and set the children on fire. When they were done they would cut them down. The first child that this girl had to kill was a cousin, a little cousin. What does that do to you? But you couldn't object, because the children that objected were killed.

This child, about two years ago, just fell to the ground at Christmas time, everyone thinks that Christmas is such a

> wonderful time. And she confessed that she hated Christmas, she couldn't wait until everything was put away, because all she could hear was babies crying. Christmas is the time when the most babies die. And she covered her ears and cried for hours, and screamed, "Stop it, stop it, stop it! Talk to God and make him stop it!" All she could hear is the screams and the babies crying.... Christmas for the children I have talked to, has been one of the worst times. I have had three children tell me about a very similar ceremony, and I will kind of merge that and tell you how it went. They were taken to a church, and all the children, it is a very festive occasion, and they are taken to the front of the church, and a small child is now brought in, two of them talked about babies and they put them on a platform. The adults are all celebrating and dancing, and singing and the children are getting into the spirit of it, and what they are doing is forming a circle around the child, and of course the child represents the child Jesus, and they begin mocking, and spitting, and calling names, and then they encourage the children to begin doing it, and you can imagine how it gets out of control. And at some point they hand all of the children knives and then they are all hacking, and slashing until the baby is dead, and then they all celebrate because the child Jesus is dead."

Kathleen Sorenson died in October 1989, shortly after this testimony. On a long rural road returning to her home, a car heading in the opposite direction crossed lanes and caused a head-on collision. Both the young woman driver and her husband had police records for cruelty to animals.[473]

* * * *

Historical Precedent

The idea of active widespread satanic and other occult activity in the United States certainly seems ludicrous. But there is an historical precedent. Consider these two quotes from the works of Alestair Crowley, founder of the Church of Satan in the year 1900:

> “Moreover, the beast 666 adviseth that all children shall be accustomed from infancy to witness every type of sexual act, and also the process of birth, lest falsehood fog, and mystery stupefy, their minds, whose error else might thwart and misdirect the growth of their subconscious system of soul-symbolism... There are cases when seduction or rape may be emancipation or initiation to another. Such acts can only be judged by their results.” - Crowley, The Law is for All[474]

> “In any case it was the theory of ancient magicians, that any living being is the storehouse of energy varying in quantity according to the size and the health of the animal, and in quality according to its mental and moral character. At the death of this animal the energy is liberated suddenly. The animal should therefore be killed within the circle, or the triangle, as the case

---

[473] DeCamp

[474] Alestair Crowley, “The Law is for All,” Excerpt available here.

> may be, so that its energy cannot escape. An animal should be selected whose nature accords with that of the ceremony… For the highest spiritual working one must accordingly choose the victim which contains the greatest and purest force. A male child of perfect innocence and high intelligence is the most satisfactory and suitable victim.” - Crowley, Magick in Theory and Practice[475]

* * * *

Empirical Evidence

In 1996, three members of the American Psychological Association conducted a survey of the organization, receiving feedback from 2,709 clinical psychologists. 30% acknowledged seeing at least one case of “ritualistic or religion-related abuse since January 1, 1980”.[476] 2/3rds of these cases were described as 'religion related' and 1/3rd were described as 'ritual abuse'. Of those who acknowledged seeing these cases, 93% of the clinical psychologists said that they believed the abuse did indeed occur. The authors concluded that the psychologists, psychiatrists, and social workers who responded to their survey “overwhelmingly believed both the allegations of abuse and the allegations of ritual or religious elements of the abuse”.

Another study surveyed 810 members of the British Psychological Society who had patients who suffered from sexual abuse, and found that 15% had patients who reported satanic ritual abuse. Of these, 80% believed that their patient did indeed suffer from the reported abuse.[477]

---

[475] Alestair Crowley, “Magick in Theory and Practice,” Excerpt available here.

[476] Bottoms, Bette L.; Shaver, Phillip R.; Goodman, Gail S. “An analysis of ritualistic and religion-related child abuse allegations.” Law and Human Behavior, Vol 20(1), Feb 1996

One study examined 270 cases of substantiated sexual abuse involving day cares in England found that 13% of the cases included allegations of ritual abuse.[478]

One survey of the membership of the International Society for the Study of Multiple Personality and Dissociation concluded that 88% of 1185 respondents "reported belief in ritual abuse, involving mind control and programming".[479]

> "In 1992 alone, Childhelp USA logged 1,741 calls pertaining to ritual abuse, Monarch Resources of Los Angeles logged approximately 5,000, Real Active Survivors tallied nearly 3,600, Justus Unlimited of Colorado received almost 7,000, and Looking Up of Maine handled around 6,000. Even allowing for some of these calls to have been made by people who assist survivors but are not themselves survivors, and for some survivors to have called more that one helpline or made multiple calls to the same helpline, these numbers suggest that at a minimum there must be tens of thousands of survivors of ritual abuse in the United States." - Catherine Gould, *The Journal of Psychohistory*[480]

In 2007, four researchers created an international online survey divided into three parts, available in English and German, called Extreme Abuse Surveys, in an effort to gather a large number of responses to gather preliminary data on the nature and prevalence of extreme abuse.[481] The researchers were Wanda Karricker, PhD and retired U.S. psychologist, Bettina Overcamp, PhD and active psychologist in Germany, Thorsten Becker, German social worker who won the "German Child Protection Award" in 1994 for his work with abused children, and Carol Rutz, a survivor of extreme abuse and mind control. The surveys show repeated allegations of abuse used for the purposes of mind control, which will be explored in the next chapter.

---

[477] Andrews, B., Morton, J., Bekerian, D.A., Brewin, C.R., Davies, G.M., & Mollon, P. "The recovery of memories in clinical practice: Experiences and beliefs of British Psychological Society practitioners." *The Psychologist*, May, 1995

[478] Finkelhor, D., Williams, L., & Burns, N. "Nursery crimes: Sexual abuse in day care." Newbury Park, CA: Sage Publications. 1988

[479] Perry, N.E. "Therapists' experiences of the effects of working with dissociative patients." Paper presented at the 9th Annual Meeting of the International Society for the Study of Multiple Personality and Dissociation, Chicago, IL. 1992

[480] Catherine Gould "Denying Ritual Abuse in Children," *The Journal of Psychohistory* Volume 22, 1995

1,471 participants from 31 countries answered at least one question on the survey listed for 'Adult Survivors', and 451 people from 20 countries responded to at least one question listed for 'Professionals' who have worked with at least one adult survivor of extreme abuse. Of the adult survivors, 257 people from 15 countries responded that they had been victims of 'Government Mind Control' experimentation as a child, and 71 professionals from 6 countries responded that they had worked with at least 1 adult survivor of extreme abuse who reported to have been a victim of government mind control experimentation as a child. 166 survivors reported being experimented on by doctors who spoke German or with a heavy German accent.

Of the adult survivors, 236 reported to have been drugged against their will, 236 reported to have been sexually abused by multiple perpetrators, 228 reported being threatened with death if they ever discussed their experiences, 222 reported sensory deprivation experiments, 217 reported electroshock experiments, 197 witnessed murder by their perpetrators, 196 witnessed animal mutilations, 184 reported the use of feces in their abuse, 183 reported being used in child pornography, 178 reported starvation, 171 reported hypnosis, and 169 reported child prostitution.

Of the 257 EAS respondents who reported that secret mind control experiments were used on them as children, 69% (177) reported having been abused in a satanic cult. Of the 543 EAS respondents who reported that they had been abused in a satanic cult, 33% (179) reported having been used in secret mind control experiments as children.

---

[481] Extreme Abuse Survey

159 survivors had heard Greek letters being used during their abuse, and 160 experienced sexual mind control programming used for blackmail or personal use. 228 survivors answered 'yes' to the question: “My perpetrator(s) deliberately created/programmed dissociative states of mind (such as alters, personalities, ego-states) in me.”

Research has consistently shown that false allegations of child sexual abuse by children are rare. One 1987 study examined 576 consecutive referrals of child sexual abuse to the Denver Department of Social Services, and categorized the reports as either reliable or fictitious. In only 8% of the total cases were children judged to have possibly advanced a fictitious allegation.[482] In a more recent study, investigators reviewed case notes of all child sexual abuse reports to the Denver Department of Social Services over 12 months. Of the 551 cases reviewed, there were only 14 (2.5%) instances of erroneous concerns about abuse emanating from children. These consisted of three cases of allegations made in collusion with a parent, three cases where an innocent event was misinterpreted as sexual abuse and eight cases (1.5%) of false allegations of sexual abuse.[483]

Researchers into the phenomenon of Satanic Ritual Abuse have come to the conclusion that the phenomenon is widespread and transcends geographic boundaries.[484] One such study, titled “Multiple Personality Disorder and Satanic Ritual Abuse: The Issue of Credibility” states:

---

[482] Jones, D. P. H., and J. M. McGraw, “Reliable and Fictitious Accounts of Sexual Abuse to Children.” Journal of Interpersonal Violence, 2, 27-45, 1987

[483] Oates, R. K., D.P. Jones, D. Denson, A. Sirotnak, N. Gary, and R.D. Krugman, “Erroneous Concerns about Child Sexual Abuse.” Child Abuse & Neglect 24:149-57, 2000

[484] Van Benschoten, Susan C., “Multiple Personality Disorder and Satanic Ritual Abuse: The Issue of Credibility” (PDF Warning)

> “The comparability of both the child and adult accounts is said to transcend geographical and relationship boundaries, with descriptions emerging from both survivor groups revealing common themes, behaviors, symbols, and paraphernalia. Assuredly, the possibility of cross-contamination of accounts exists when, for example, a group of suspected or potential victims seems to he involved in a single day care case, or when adult contemporaries are aware of the details of others' reports. However, one can not discount the similarity of accounts given spontaneously and independently by individuals who are unrelated personally, geographically, or through shared knowledge.”

The empirical evidence of ritual abuse for the purposes of mind control establishes that the phenomenon is widespread and international, and consistency between methods of abuse. Furthermore, the methods of abuse correlate both with known experimentation under MK-ULTRA and the testimonies of child abuse case studies such as Franklin and Presidio. It also reveals a solid consensus that psychiatrists who have been exposed to patients who have suffered from ritual abuse believe that the abuse did indeed occur. Its interesting to note that such a widespread consensus is relatively rare in the field of psychology, let alone for such a controversial topic.

* * * *

The 'False Memory' Hoax

When the evidence of extreme abuse began surfacing in surprising numbers, the 'False Memory Syndrome Foundation' was set up to promote the theory that victims are suffering from a syndrome that creates false memories, often at the suggestion of psychotic parents or over-zealous psychiatrists. The members of the FMSF have been called as expert witnesses in hundreds of trials around the United States and have been routinely quoted as experts in the media. Their mission has been exceptionally successful, as the 'false memory syndrome' has become accepted as a fact in most of the public consciousness. Unfortunately, people rarely stop to ask the question, who exactly are the members of the FMSF, and how solid is their science?

Peter J. Freyd initiated the founding of the FMSF after being accused of sexual abuse by his daughter, Jennifer. His behavior has been particularly suspect, such as accusing his daughter of being brain damaged, despite the fact that she holds a PhD in Psychology, graduated magna cum laude from Penn and is currently a tenured professor of psychology at the University of Oregon. Speaking to *The Oregonian,* Jennifer Freyd stated that "I'm sometimes flabbergasted that my memory is considered 'false' and my alcoholic father's memory is considered rational and sane."[485]

Peter Freyd once stated that "With the help of Harold Lief and Marin Orne, the FMSF quickly gathered a respectable appearing advisory board, giving the new syndrome an aura of scientific acceptance."[486] Interestingly, Dr. Martin T. Orne has been heavily involved with MK-ULTRA experiments since the early '60s, where he undertook hypnosis studies at Harvard Medical School with a $30,000 grant from the CIA.[487] CIA documents have confirmed that Orne had a 'top secret' clearance in MK-ULTRA.[488] He has published many papers relevant to the creation of a 'Manchurian candidate', including one called

---

[485] Anne Cossins, "Recovered Memories of Sexual Abuse: Fact or Fantasy?," *Judicial Review,* Vol 3, 1997

[486] The Leadership Council, "Crisis or Creation?"

[487] *The Harvard Crimson,* "Harvard And the CIA Continued," February 11, 1978

[488] Colin A. Ross, "The C.I.A. Doctors." Excerpt available here.

"Can a hypnotized subject be compelled to carry out otherwise unacceptable behavior?", another called "The significance of unwitting cues for experimental outcomes: Toward a pragmatic approach", and lastly "Restricted use of success cues in retrieval during post-hypnotic amnesia".[489] This is an interesting subject matter history given the FMSF's insistence that hypnotism is illegitimate.

Dr. Harold Lief was involved with brain electrode experiments at Tulane University, a notorious MK-ULTRA institution.[490] Another prominent member, David Dinges, was a co-worker with Martin T. Orne and has been involved in research for Naval Intelligence, who oversaw the precursor mind control experiments to MK-ULTRA.[491]

Founding member Ralph Underwager once proudly proclaimed to the pro-pedophilia publication *Paidika*:

> "What I have been struck by as I have come to know more about and understand people who choose paedophilia is that they let themselves be too much defined by other people. That is usually an essentially negative definition. Paedophiles spend a lot of time and energy defending their choice. I don't think that a paedophile needs to do that. Paedophiles can boldly and courageously affirm what they choose. They can say that what they want is to find the best way to love. I am also a theologian and as a theologian, I believe it is God's will that there be closeness and intimacy, unity of the flesh, between people. A paedophile can say: "This closeness is possible for me within the choices that I've made." Paedophiles are too defensive. They go around saying, "You

---

489Ibid, Ross.
490Ibid, Ross. Excerpt Available Here.
491David Dinges Biography at UPenn.edu

> people out there are saying that what I choose is bad, that it's no good. You're putting me in prison, you're doing all these terrible things to me. I have to define my love as being in some way or other illicit." What I think is that paedophiles can make the assertion that the pursuit of intimacy and love is what they choose. **With boldness, they can say, "I believe this is in fact part of God's will."**[492]

Regarding the False Memory Syndrome Foundation, *Columbia Journalism Review* stated:

> "Rarely has such a strange and little-understood organization had such a profound effect on media coverage of such a controversial matter. The [False Memory Syndrome] foundation is an aggressive, well-financed PR machine adept at manipulating the press, harassing its critics, and mobilizing a diverse army of psychiatrists, outspoken academics, expert defense witnesses, litigious lawyers, Freud bashers, critics of psychotherapy, and devastated parents."[493]

The FMSF has repeatedly cited a study presented at a Harvard conference where researchers were repeatedly able to implant the false memory of mundane tasks like grocery shopping, into their subjects using techniques such as hypnosis.[494] It has been championed as proof that memories are easily manipulated. However, research has shown that memories of abuse function very differently than average memories.

---

[492] Interview excerpt available here.
[493] *Columbia Journalism Review,* "U-Turn on Memory Lane," August 1997
[494] *BBC,* "Can We Implant a False Memory in You?"

> “However, leading memory researchers such as Dr. Bessel van der Kolk of Harvard Medical School maintain that traumatic memories, which typically are engraved in the sensorimotor processes, are not subject to the same kinds of contamination that can affect normal memory. Traumatic amnesia, described in the DSM-III-R as psychogenic amnesia, is a phenomenon which has been known to mental health professionals for more than 100 years. The clinically observed characteristics of traumatic memory formation and retrieval match precisely the patterns of memory recovery exhibited by SRA survivors, and strongly confirm the reality of their cult abuse.”[495]

There is also the case of Paul and Shirley Eberle, who are famous for propagating the idea of a 'satanic panic', that the widespread reporting of ritual abuse is merely a social contagion. They have published two books titled “The Politics of Child Abuse” and “The Abuse of Innocence” which promote this theory, and have been cited as experts in courts and the press. *Ms. Magazine* wrote a review of the interesting past of the Eberles, stating:

> “What is startling about the Eberles' reputation as ground-breaking experts in the field is that their dubious credentials have not been widely challenged. Paul and Shirley Eberle edit a

---

[495] McCulley, D. “Satanic ritual abuse: A question of memory.” *Journal of Psychology and Theology* Fall, 1994 22(3) p.167-172

soft-core magazine in California called the L.A. Star that contains a mixture of nude photos, celebrity gossip, telephone sex ads, and promos for The Politics of Child Abuse.

In the 1970's, however, the Eberles were also publishing hard-core pornography. Their publication, Finger, depicted scenes of bondage, S & M, and sexual activities involving urination and defecation. A young girl portrayed with a wide smile on her face sits on top of a man whose penis is inside of her; a woman has oral sex with a young boy in a drawing entitled "Memories of My Boyhood."

The Eberles were featured nude on one cover holding two life-size blow up dolls names "Love Girl" and "Play Guy." No dates appear on the issues and the Eberles rarely attach their names, referring to themselves as "The L.A. Star Family."

The Eberles were the distributors of Finger and several other underground magazines, says Donald Smith, a sergeant with the obscenity section of the Los Angeles Police Department's vice division who followed the couple for years. LAPD was never able to prosecute for child pornography: "There were a lot of photos of people who looked like they were under age but we could never prove it." The pictures of young children in Finger are illustrations, and child pornography laws were less rigid a decade ago than they are today.

> "Sexpot at Five," "My First Rape, She Was Only Thirteen," and "What Happens When Niggers Adopt White Children" are some of the articles that appeared in Finger. One letter states: "I think it's really great that your mags have the courage to print articles & pixs [sic] on child sex...Too bad I didn't hear from more women who are into child sex...Since I'm single I'm not getting it on with my children, but I know of a few families that are. If I were married & my wife & kids approved--I'd be having sex with my daughters."
>
> Another entry reads: "I'm a pedophile & I think its [sic] great a man is having sex with his daughter!...Since I didn't get Finger #3, I didn't get to see the stories & pics of family sex. Would like to see pics of nude girls making it with their daddy, but realize its too risky to print."[496]

It is truly fascinating how 'compromised' the leading debunkers of ritual abuse are.

* * * *

Conclusion

Even in light of the evidence, the idea of an active network of abusive cults certainly sounds ludicrous. In the context of psychopathy, the potential is at least recognizable.

---

[496] *Ms. Magazine,* "Paul and Shirley Eberle: A Strange Pair of Experts," December 1988

Cults serve as a network for psychopaths who enjoy sadistic sexual practices and the potential for concealing knowledge. The very concept of the occult is based is taking knowledge out of the circulation of the masses and reserving it for a select few. In other words, keeping knowledge for selfish usages and to use this knowledge to wield power over others.

Former members of the Church of Satan and other similar cults have testified that the basic goal of the 'occult knowledge' is to understand the human psyche, primary human motivations and how humanity functions. This knowledge is then used to exploit people. The worldview of these groups is extremely dark, and is based on controlling others, gaining knowledge to use as influence, and then partnering with like-minded individuals and groups to expand upon this knowledge and use it more effectively.

The next step into the rabbit hole is that these groups act as 'psychopath filtration' centers. They deliberately target psychopaths for initiation and then use their resources to put them into positions of power in a variety of fields such as politics, law, business, education, science and more. Franklin, Dutroux, Savile, the Presidio and the Finders are all examples of psychopathic networks that have infiltrated these institutions of power, and are each a small glimpse into the hierarchy of the Pathocracy.

The next chapter will explore the uses of extreme abuse for the purpose of mind control, and why so many men involved with MK-ULTRA would have a vested interest in marginalizing the existence of such abuse.

Food for Thought:

1. How connected are occult groups with each other?

2. Is the CIA responsible for various cults as 'front groups' for MK-ULTRA and other

projects?

3. Why is the discussion of the existence of cults marginalized from the mainstream?

4. Why were the Finders interested in terrorism and explosives?

5. How widespread are networks that abuse and sell children?

6. What are the profits from child pornography and prostitution earned by cults such as the Finders used for?

7. How much influence has Michael Aquino's 'MindWar' had on official Psychological Operation policy?

8. How much has technology discussed in 'MindWar' regarding the manipulation of the brain advanced in the more than 30 years of its publication?

9. Is it disturbing that Aquino's Temple of Set, and likely by extension other occult groups, have knowledge and access to this technology?

10. Why were there child abuse cases at 30 separate military bases in a 3 year period?

Trauma-Based Mind Control

“'The end apparently justifies the means, is the approach we had taken,’ he said, ‘and so covert operations and assassinations, and maybe even the use of children in Monarch[497] and all these other things, seemed reasonable at the time, because we were saving the country. Everything for saving the country. National security and the Cold War. In war, all is fair.’” - CIA Director William Colby, as related by John DeCamp, *Executive Intelligence Review,* Volume 26, Number 12, March 19, 1999

“And to go a step further, he recalls one senior KGB man who told too many sexual jokes about young boys. "It didn't take too long to recognize that he was more than a little fascinated by youths," says the source. "I took the trouble to point out he was probably too good, too well-trained, to be either entrapped or to give away secrets. But he would have been tempted toward a compromising position by a preteen. I mentioned this, and they said, 'As a psychological observer, you're probably quite right. But what the hell are we going to do about it? Where are we going to get a twelve-year-old boy?' " The source believes that if the Russian had had a taste for older men, U.S. intelligence might have mounted an operation, "but the idea of a twelve-year-old boy was just more than anybody could stomach." - John Marks[498]

---

[497] 'Monarch' is the alleged name for the program of Trauma-Based Mind Control, most frequently given by the victims of the program themselves, although the legitimacy of this moniker has not been confirmed.

The idea of using a child for entrapment might have been too much for the CIA operatives to stomach, but what about to the psychopathic leadership?

Connecting the dots between the use of hypnosis, drugs and entrapment under MK-ULTRA, the abuse of children in Franklin, Belgium, Presidio and under the auspices of the Finders cult, and the extreme abuse perpetrated by occult groups against children, a dark picture begins to emerge. One link that ties together many of these cases is the creation of multiple personality disorder, now known as Dissociative Identity Disorder, in the victims of extreme abuse. Franklin's Paul Bonacci alleged that his condition was created deliberately by scientists operating out of Offut Air Force Base outside of Omaha, Nebraska, beginning at the age of 3.[499] Later, he was introduced to the pedophile and child abuse ring of Larry King, where he became a child prostitute to wealthy men and politicians around the country, as well as acting as a drug courier on many of his trips. Dutroux's first victim-witness, X1, alleged that her multiple personalities were induced at a young age, as young as two, by being introduced to a group of violent pedophiles at the age of two by her grandmother.

Indeed, Multiple Personality Disorder is a big part of the picture. The current understanding of the disorder is that its onset begins at a very young age, after a child suffers from horrific abuse, often sexual in nature, that in a very real sense 'shatters' the childs mind into a collection of coexisting personalities to deal with the abuse they have received.

---

[498] John Marks, “The Search for the Manchurian Candidate,” page 72

[499] DeCamp, page 366

> “As many as 98% to 99% of individuals who develop dissociative disorders have recognized personal histories of recurring, overpowering, and often life-threatening disturbances at a sensitive developmental stage of childhood.” - WebMD[500]

The brain apparently dissociates exceptionally well: researchers have found that sufferers of Dissociative Identity Disorder will often have no memories of abuse they endured, and go as far as to vehemently deny their past experiences, despite extensive documentation by hospitals and courts of the abuse at the time it happened, and in addition, lifelong physicals scars and symptoms that had arisen from the abuse. However, when an 'alter' was present as the dominant psyche, detailed memories of the abuse were present.[501] The same study found that the 'alters' would have completely distinct personalities, with different handwriting, and often, different genders.

It is very likely that the possibility of deliberately creating multiple personalities in a child was understood at least as early as the medical experiments undertaken during World War II by the Third Reich. A cursory reading of the available data regarding the work of certain doctors such as the notorious 'Angel of Death' Dr. Mengele shows that much of the research undertaken at concentration camps had to do with inflicting trauma and recording its various effects. A logical conclusion is that these psychopathic doctors attempted to understand and then exploit the condition.

Remember G.H. Estabrooks, associate of the FBI and CIA, and World War II hypnotist who was discussed in the MKULTRA chapter? Here is a salient quote, taken from a 1968 article in the *Providence Evening Bulletin,* which will set a stage for the introduction to the topic of Dissociative Identity Disorder and hypnotism:

---

[500] WebMD, “Dissociative Identity Disorder (Multiple Personality Disorder)”

[501] Lewis, Dorathoy Otnow et al. “Objective Documentation of Child Abuse and Dissociation in 12 Murderers With Dissociative Identity Disorder.” *American Journal of Psychiatry*

> “The key to creating an effective spy or assassin rests in splitting a mans personality, or creating multiple personalities, with the aid of hypnotism… this is not science fiction. This has and is being done. I have done it.”[502]

The CIA and Estabrooks conceded that only 1 in 5 people could be susceptible to hypnotism, and even less would be able to be subjected to the extreme dissociation and amnesia involved in the creation of multiple personalities. True to CIA form, recalling the MK-ULTRA chapter, was the research done towards increasing the susceptibility of hypnotic mind control through the use of drugs and electroshock. The latter technique offers a glimpse of the tip of the iceberg into a variety of techniques involving using trauma to store memories in a sensitive part of the brain, with long-lasting recall potential but otherwise amnesiac effects in the primary personality.

The extension of this research is known as Trauma-Based Mind Control. The general idea is to subject children to horrific and unthinkable abuse at a sensitive age of development with the purpose of deliberately creating multiple personalities. The alternate personalities would then be programmed, through the use of hypnosis, drugs and further trauma, sometimes to store sensitive information, sometimes to create spies, assassins, prostitutes and more. The victim's primary personality would be completely unaware not only that they had programmed alternate personalities, but that they had been a victim of extreme abuse in the first place. Due to the associated trauma, the programming would be stored in a different part of the brain than normal memories, increasing both the power of the memory and the difficulty of recall.[503] Using hypnotic suggestion, anyone with the proper information, such as a code word, would be able to access a victims alternate personality and exploit the programming.

---

[502] Ross, Colin, “The C.I.A. Doctors: Human Rights Violations by American Psychiatrists.”

* * * *

The 'Greenbaum' Speech: A Trauma-Based Mind Control Exposé

In 1992, the preeminent psychologist in the study of clinical hypnosis, Dr. Corydon Hammond, PhD, gave an astounding speech delivered to the Fourth Annual Eastern Regional Conference on Abuse and Multiple Personality Disorder, sponsored by the Center for Abuse Recovery & Empowerment, The Psychiatric Institute of Washington, D.C. in which he explained his experiences with patients suffering from Dissociative Identity Disorder, titled “Hypnosis in MPD: Ritual Abuse.”[504]

Before analyzing the speech, here are Dr. Corydon's credentials:

- B.S., M.S., Ph.D. (Counseling Psychology) from the University of Utah.
- Diplomate in Clinical Hypnosis, the American Board of Psychological Hypnosis.
- Diplomate in Sex Therapy, the American Board of Sexology.
- Clinical Supervisor and Board Examiner, American Board of Sexology.

---

[503] McCulley, D. “Satanic ritual abuse: A question of memory.” *Journal of Psychology and Theology* Fall, 1994 22(3) p.167-172

[504] Full text of the speech available here. Although I directly quote about half of the speech, the parts I believe are most relevent and illuminating, it is worth reading in its entirety, multiple times.

- Diplomate in Marital and Sex Therapy, American Board of Family Psychology.
- Licensed Psychologist, Licensed Marital Therapist, Licensed Family Therapist, State of Utah.
- Research Associate Professor of Physical Medicine and Rehabilitation, Utah School of Medicine.
- Director and Founder of the Sex and Marital Therapy Clinic, University of Utah.
- Adjunct Associate Professor of Educational Psychology, University of Utah Abstract.
- Editor, The American Journal of Clinical Hypnosis.
- Advising Editor and Founding Member, Editorial Board, The Ericksonian Monograph.
- Referee, The Journal of Abnormal Psychology.
- 1989 Presidential Award of Merit, American Society of Clinical Hypnosis.
- 1990 Urban Sector Award, American Society of Clinical Hypnosis.
- Current President, American Society of Clinical Hypnosis.[505]

Dr. Hammond had been examining patients with Dissociative Identity Disorder and came across some startling discoveries, which he verified with many of his peers. Many of them had undergone horrific ritual and sexual abuse as a child exactly as described in the case studies examined in previous chapters.

---

[505] University of Utah Health Care, profile of Dr. Corydon Hammond, Phd.

After a brief introduction, Dr. Hammond began with saying:

> "In Chicago at the first international congress where ritual abuse was talked about I can remember thinking, "How strange and interesting." I can recall many people listening to an example given that somebody thought was so idiosyncratic and rare, and all the people coming up after saying, "Gee, you're treating one, too? You're in Seattle ... Well, I'm in Toronto ... Well, I'm in Florida ... Well, I'm in Cincinnati." I didn't know what to think at that point. It wasn't too long after that I found my first ritual-abuse patient in somebody I was already treating and we hadn't gotten that deep yet. Things in that case made me very curious about the use of mind-control techniques and hypnosis and other brainwashing techniques...
>
> The fascinating thing was that as I did a telephone consult with a therapist that I'd been consulting with for quite a number of months on an MPD case in another state, I told her to inquire about certain things. She said, "Well, what are those things?" I said, "I'm not going to tell you, because I don't want there to be any possibility of contamination. Just come back to me and tell me what the patient says." She called me back two hours later, and said, "I just had a double session with this patient and there was a part of him that said, 'Oh, we're so excited. If you know about this stuff, you know how the Cult Programmers get on the inside and our therapy is

> going to go so much faster.'
>
> ...I've consulted in eleven states and one foreign country, in some cases over the telephone, in some cases in person, in some cases giving the therapist information ahead of time and saying, "Be very careful how you phrase this. Phrase it in these ways so you don't contaminate." In other cases not even giving the therapist information ahead of time so they couldn't. When you start to find the same highly esoteric information in different states and different countries, from Florida to California, you start to get an idea that there's something going on that is very large, very well coordinated, with a great deal of communication and systematicness to what's happening.
>
> So I have gone from someone kind of neutral and not knowing what to think about it all, to someone who clearly believes ritual abuse is real and that the people who say it isn't are either naive like people who didn't want to believe the Holocaust or—they're dirty."

Immediately we get the understanding that these victims are not confined geographically, and in addition, an insight into how Dr. Hammond approached his investigation as to avoid 'hypnotic suggestion' and other techniques which the 'False Memory Syndrome Foundation' cites as the basis of all ritual abuse claims. The last line, stating that those who deny the existence of ritual abuse are either naive or dirty, was met with lots of applause from the audience.

"What they basically do is they will get a child and they will start this in basic forms, it appears, by about two and a half after the child's already been made dissociative. They'll make him dissociative not only through abuse, like sexual abuse, but also things like putting a mousetrap on their fingers and teaching the parents, "You do not go in until the child stops crying. Only then do you go in and remove it." They start in rudimentary forms at about two and a half and kick into high gear, it appears, around six or six and a half, continue through adolescence with periodic reinforcements in adulthood.

Basically, in the programming the child will be put typically on a gurney. They will have an I.V. in one hand or arm. They'll be strapped down, typically naked. There'll be wires attached to their head to monitor electroencephalograph patterns. They will see a pulsing light, most often described as red, occasionally white or blue. They'll be given, most commonly I believe, Demerol. Sometimes it'll be other drugs as well, depending on the kind of programming. They have it, I think, down to a science where they've learned you give so much every twenty-five minutes until the programming is done.

They then will describe a pain on one ear, their right ear generally, where it appears a needle has been placed, and they will hear weird, disorienting sounds in that ear while they see photic stimulation to drive the brain into a brain wave pattern

> with a pulsing light at a certain frequency, not unlike the goggles that are now available through Sharper Image and some of those kinds of stores. Then, after a suitable period when they're in a certain brain wave state, they will begin programming, programming oriented to self-destruction and debasement of the person. In a patient at this point in time, about eight years old, who has gone through a great deal of early programming that took place on a military installation, that's not uncommon. I've treated and been involved with cases who are part of this original mind-control project, as well as having their programming on military reservations in many cases. We find a lot of connections with the CIA."

The victim testimony of the use of drugs and other techniques is fascinatingly similar to the available evidence regarding MK-ULTRA experiments such as Dr. Ewan Cameron's 'psychic driving' and the documented search for drugs which help induce hypnosis. The references to this type of mind control being undertaken at military bases certainly seems absurd, as does Paul Bonacci's claim that he was victimized at Offut Airforce Base. But remember the *New York Times* article cited earlier that referenced 30 different military institutions having sexual abuse scandals within a 3 year period, and the depths of horrors unleashed at West Point and Presidio?

Another important aspect that Dr. Hammond mentions is the creation of certain brain wave state before the programming begins. When a mind control subject would be put into a certain brain wave state and hypnosis, then their programming could only be activated under that brain wave state, a type of 'state-dependent learning'. This increases the amnesiac effect of the abuse and programming from the primary personality of someone suffering from Multiple Personality Disorder.

Dr. Hammond goes on to describe the details of what a 'cult programming session' would entail for one of his subjects:

> “This patient now was in a Cult school, a private Cult school where several of these sessions occurred a week. She would go into a room, get all hooked up. They would do all of these sorts of things. When she was in the proper altered state, now they were no longer having to monitor it with electroencephalographs, she also had already had placed on her electrodes, one in the vagina, for example, four on the head. Sometimes they’ll be on other parts of the body. They will then begin and they would say to her, “You are angry with someone in the group.” She’d say, “No, I’m not” and they’d violently shock her. They would say the same thing until she complied and didn’t make any negative response. Then they would continue. “And because you are angry with someone in the group,” or “When you are angry with someone in the group, you will hurt yourself. Do you understand?” She said, “No” and they shocked her. They repeated again, “Do you understand?”—“Well, yes, but I don’t want to.” Shock her again until they get compliance. Then they keep adding to it. “And you will hurt yourself by cutting yourself. Do you understand?” Maybe she’d say yes, but they might say, “We don’t believe you” and shock her anyway. “Go back and go over it again.”

They would continue in this sort of fashion. She said typically it seemed as though they'd go about thirty minutes, take a break for a smoke or something, then come back. They may review what they'd done and stopped, or they might review what they'd done and go on to new material.

She said the sessions might go half an hour, they might go three hours. She estimated three times a week. Programming under the influence of drugs in a certain brain wave state and with these noises in one ear and them speaking in the other ear, usually the left ear, associated with right hemisphere non-dominant brain functioning, and with them talking, therefore, and requiring intense concentration, intense focusing. Because often they'll have to memorize and say certain things back, word-perfect, to avoid punishment, shock, and other kinds of things that are occurring.

This is basically how a lot of programming goes on. Some of it'll also use other typical brainwashing kinds of techniques. There will be very standardized types of hypnotic things done at times. There'll be sensory deprivation which we know increases suggestibility in anyone. Total sensory deprivation, suggestibility has significantly increased, from the research. It's not uncommon for them to use a great deal of that, including formal sensory-deprivation chambers before they do certain of these things."

The idea of 'cult schools' certainly recalls the 'Finders' case study discussed earlier. It is possible that after the series of revelations and inquiries such as the Joint Hearing of the Select Intelligence Committee during the 1970's prompted the CIA to discontinue their official relationship with these projects and instead contract them out to cults such as the Finders and Michael Aquino's Temple of Set. After all, official documents discussed in the MK-ULTRA chapter mentioned 6% of projects being too sensitive for any connections to the agency. In addition to the lack of official connection to the CIA, which diminishes liability and culpability, there is a bonus effect: Plausible deniability. When these projects are uncovered, people are simply be disbelief that such atrocious acts could have occurred, let alone connected to the United States government.

Dr. Hammond goes on to describe the different brainwave states during which programming took place, which were consistent throughout all of his patients and those of his peers: Alpha, Beta, Gamma, Delta, Theta, Gamma and Omega, a phenomenon noted by over 100 of the respondents to the Extreme Abuse Surveys. Each brainwave state was associated with a specific type of programming and seemed to be present in a specific 'alter', which was also mostly consistent among the patients.

> “Alphas appear to represent general programming, the first kind of things put in. Betas appear to be sexual programs. For example, how to perform oral sex in a certain way, how to perform sex in rituals, having to do with producing child pornography, directing child pornography, or prostitution. Deltas are killers trained in how to kill in ceremonies. There’ll also be some self-harm stuff mixed in with that, assassination

and killing.

Then there's Omega. I usually don't include that word when I say my first question about this or any part inside that knows about Alpha, Beta, Delta, Theta, because Omega will shake them even more. Omega has to do with self-destruct programming. Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. This can include self-mutilation as well as killing-themselves programming. Gamma appears to be system-protection and deception programming which will provide misinformation to you, try to misdirect you, tell you half-truths, protect different things inside. There can also be other Greek letters.

I'd recommend that you go and get your entire Greek alphabet, and if you have verified that some of this stuff is present and they have given you some of the right answers about what some of this material is, and I can't underline enough: DO NOT LEAD THEM. Do not say, "Is this killers?" Get the answer from them, please. When you've done this and it appears to be present, I would take your entire Greek alphabet, and with ideomotor signals, go through the alphabet and say, "Is there any programming inside associated with Epsilon, Omicron," and go on through. There may be some systematicness to some of the other letters, but I'm not aware of it. I've found, for example, in one case that Zeta had to do with the production of snuff films that this person was involved with. With another person,

> Omicron had to do with their linkage and associations with drug smuggling and with the Mafia, and with big business and government leaders. So there's going to be some individualism, I think, in some of those. Some of those are come-home programs, "come back to the Cult," "return to the Cult" program."

One gets the impression that there is a very large, tightly connected network working through numerous organizations and institutions to undertake these experiments. At one points, Dr. Hammond notes that while the programming seems to be widely systematic among victims with no personal or geographic relations, there is one factor that is always different: Erasure codes to remove certain aspects of programming.

> "Here's the flaw in the system. They have built in shut-down and erasure codes, so if they got into trouble they could shut something down and they could also erase something. These codes will sometimes be idiosyncratic phrases, or ditties. Sometimes they will be numbers maybe followed by a word. There's some real individuality to that. At first I had hoped if we can get some of these maybe they'll work with different people. No such luck. It's very unlikely, unless they were programmed at about the same point in time as part of the same little group. Stuff that I've seen suggests that they carry laptop computers, the programmers, which still include everything that they did twenty or thirty years ago in them, in terms of the names of alters, the programs, the codes, and so on.

I remember a woman who came in, about twenty-four years old, claimed her father was a Satanist. Her parents divorced when she was six. After that, it would only be when her father had visitation and he would take her to rituals sometimes, up until age fifteen. She said, “I haven’t gone to anything since I was fifteen.” Her therapist believed this at face value. We sat in my office. We did a two-hour inquiry using hypnosis. We found the programming present. In addition to that we found that every therapy session was debriefed, and in fact they had told her to get sick and not come to the appointment with me. Another one had been told that I was Cult and that if she came I would know that she’d been told not to come and I would punish her.

If anything meaningful comes out in a patient who’s being monitored like that—from what I’ve learned thus far, they’re tortured with electric shocks—my belief is if they’re in that situation you can’t do meaningful therapy other than being supportive and caring, and letting them know you care a lot and you’ll be there to support them. But I wouldn’t try to work with any kind of deep material or deprogramming with them, because I think it can do nothing but get them tortured and hurt, unless they can get into a safe, secure inpatient unit for an extended period of time to do some of the work required. I have a feeling that when you make inquiries you’re going to find that probably greater than fifty percent of these patients, if they’re bloodline, meaning mother or dad or both involved, will be monitored on

> some ongoing basis."

Much of the rest of the speech deals with techniques for the therapists attending the conference to approach treatment of patients who have Dissociative Identity Disorder and were victims of Satanic Ritual Abuse. But Dr. Hammond doesn't hesitate to come to conclusions about the purpose of the programming or the perpetrators:

> "The way you create Manchurian Candidates is you divide the mind. It's part of what the Intelligence Community wanted to look at. If you're going to get an assassin, you're going to get somebody to go do something, you divide the mind. It fascinates me about cases like the assassination of Robert Kennedy, where Bernard Diamond, on examining Sirhan Sirhan found that he had total amnesia of the killing of Robert Kennedy, but under hypnosis could remember it. But despite suggestions he would be able to consciously remember, could not remember a thing after was out of hypnosis. I'd love to examine Sirhan Sirhan...
>
> The interesting thing is how many people have described the same scenario, and how many people that we have worked with who have had relatives in NASA, in the CIA, and in the Military, including very high-ups in the Military...
>
> People say, "What's the purpose of it?" My best guess is that the purpose of it is that they want an army of Manchurian

> Candidates, ten of thousands of mental robots who will do prostitution, do child pornography, smuggle drugs, engage in international arms smuggling, do snuff films, all sorts of very lucrative things, and do their bidding and eventually the megalomaniacs at the top believe they'll rule the world."

The end of Dr. Corydon's speech was met with long, sustained applause by the attendees of the conference who recognized the bravery of going public with this information was well as many having their suspicions regarding the nature of mind control in their patients confirmed.

* * * *

Victims Speak

Bill Clinton's administration hosted the Presidential Advisory Committee on Radiation Experiments on March 15, 1995, and two victims of trauma-based mind control along with their therapist gave a stunning presentation of their abuse at the hands of MK-ULTRA. The case of victim Claudia Mullen is particularly interesting. Claudia had been referred to Psychiatrist Valerie Wolf after experiencing a sexual assault, and was unresponsive in therapy for many months. Unlike many other therapists, Wolf did not use hypnosis or any other memory retrieval techniques with Mullen.

> "It needs to be made clear that these clients have remembered these names and events spontaneously, with free recall and without the use of any memory retrieval technique such as

> hypnosis. As much as possible, we have tried to verify the memories. I have sent information from one of my clients to Alan Scheflin, Professor of Law at Santa Clara University Law School (and a judicially recognized expert on mind and behavior control). He has been able to confirm that the information that she has supplied is absolutely true, and that her memories could not have been derived from any published source." - Valerie Wolf, speaking to the Presidential Advisory Commission on Radiation.[506]

Here are some excerpts from Claudia Mullen's testimony, from which she has earned no money and named men who were still alive:

> "Good afternoon. Between the years 1957 and 1984 I became a pawn in the government's game. Its ultimate goal was mind control and to create the perfect spy, all through the use of chemicals, radiation, drugs, hypnosis, electric shock, isolation in tubs of water, sleep deprivation, brainwashing, verbal, physical, emotional and sexual abuse. I was exploited unwittingly for nearly three decades of my life and the only explanations given to me were "that the end justifies the means" and "I was serving my country in their bold effort to fight communism". I can only summarize my circumstances by saying they took an already abused seven year old child and compounded my suffering beyond belief. The saddest part is, I know for a fact I was not

---

[506] The Testimony of Valerie B. Wolf

alone. There were countless other children in my same situation and there was no one to help us until now...

In 1958 they told me I was to be tested by some important doctors from the Society, or the Human Ecology Society and I was instructed to cooperate. I was told not to look at anyone's faces, and to try hard to ignore any names because this was a very secret project. I was told all these things to help me forget. Naturally, as most children do, I did the opposite and remembered as much as I could. A Dr. John Gittinger tested me, Dr. Cameron gave me the shock, and Dr. Greene the x-rays. Then I was told by Sid Gottliebe that "I was ripe for the big A" meaning ARTICHOKE. By the time I left to go home, just like every time from then on, I would remember only whatever explanations Dr. Robert G. Heath, of Tulane Medical University, gave me for the odd bruises, needle marks, burns on my head, fingers, and even the genital soreness. I had no reason to think otherwise. They had already begun to control my mind.

The next year I was sent to a lodge in Maryland called Deep Creek Cabins to learn how to sexually please men. I was taught how to coerce them into talking about themselves.

I was used to entrap many unwitting men including themselves, all with the use of a hidden camera. I was only nine years old when the sexual humiliation began.

> Another time I heard Dr. Martin Orne, who was the director then of the Scientific Office and later head of the Institute for Experimental Research state that "in order to keep more funding coming from different sources for radiation and mind control projects", he suggested stepping up the amounts of stressors used and also the blackmail portions of the experiments. He said, "it needed to be done faster then to get rid of the subjects or they were asking for us to come back later and haunt them with our remembrances.
>
> I would love nothing more than to say that I dreamed this all up and need to just forget it. But that would be a tragic mistake. It would also be lie. All these atrocities did occur to me and to countless other children, and all under the guise of defending our country. It is because of the cumulative effects of exposure to radiation, chemicals, drugs, pain, subsequent mental and physical distress that I have been robbed of the ability to work and even to bear children of my own. It is blatantly obvious that none of this was needed, nor should ever have been allowed to take place at all, and the only means we have to seek out the awful truth and bring it to light is by opening whatever files remain on all the projects, and through another Presidential Commission on Mind Control."

In follow-up interviews, Mullen went into more details regarding the entrapment operations she was a part of.

> “The CIA kept hotel rooms in two of the best hotels in New Orleans, and year around they kept a suite. It was unique in that it had two bathrooms, and one bathroom was where they kept the hidden cameras, and I was actually shown the hidden cameras by three men who handled that part of it. They called him Captain George White. He was formerly a doctor. He used to be in the narcotics squad in California, and then he became a doctor and joined the CIA. And then there were two other men who worked with him. They would put me with the subjects who would be filmed (the men) and then when the men would come into town — I am talking about local politicians, government officials — anybody who they needed to possibly get something on, keep on file for future reference — should they need to coerce this person into supporting the projects. Senators, congressmen, anything like that — if they were in town, they were given this room. They had no reason to think there was anything strange about the room. It didn't look any different than any other room. It was just one of the better suites in the two hotels. I was shown how the cameras were set up behind mirrors — behind the mirrors which are in every hotel room, behind the dresser. They would sit there and they would film it.
>
> When I was first told this I ... when I was nine, and I went to the Deep Creek Cabins in Maryland. That's when I was taught I was

> going to be part of this project, I had been accepted into this project, that I had been accepted into this project that would help the government stop Communism. "[507]

At another point, she stated that one man she was involved with as an entrapment operation was Frank Church.

> "Some of them were. I think they were afraid they would talk about the projects, and so they had to use something to keep them quiet. For instance, there was a guy named Church - all I knew was, he would try, he was very important to them because he was going to convince other people to let the projects keep going and so they had to get something on this guy, Church. This was later, when I was in high school. Supposedly he ended up talking other people into letting the projects keep going. He was supposed to be investigating - to see if there was anything wrong being done by the CIA - and so he of course decided nothing wrong was being done because they had a film on him."[508]

Senator Frank Church headed the United States Senate Select Committee to Study Governmental Operations with Respect to Intelligence Activities, popularly known as the 'Church Committee'.[509] The committee was the first to investigate the CIA for their illegal actions under MK-ULTRA, Project Mockingbird and other enterprises. The alleged entrapment of Frank Church may explain how the CIA was able to escape any sort of reform from Congress and continued many illicit projects, albeit with more secrecy. It is the perfect example of how important entrapment was to the agency and how effective it could be to their uninterrupted continuation.

---

[507] Interview available here.
[508] Interview available here.
[509] Wikipedia Article on the Church Committee.

There is certainly the potential that Mullen's testimony is a lie. After all, many of the names she alleged to have been a part of her mind control program had been publicly named as a part of the MK-ULTRA program. At least one had not: Darwin Fenner, a 'high-society' socialite and MK-ULTRA institution Tulane administrator.[510] Mullen has not seemed to make any money from her allegations, against many men who were still alive, given to a Presidential investigative committee. In addition, her testimony was reviewed by Alan Scheflin, Professor of Law at Santa Clara University Law School and judicially recognized expert in mind and behavior control, who stated that her claims could not have been derived from any known publication, making her testimony worth discussing.

One particularly disturbing sentence from Mullen's testimony is: "[Dr. Martin T. Orne] said, 'it needed to be done faster then to get rid of the subjects or they were asking for us to come back later and haunt them with our remembrances.'" The idea that trauma-based mind control victims would be 'disposed of' once they outlived their usefulness is truly terrifying, but certainly in the mind of a psychopath it would be a logical and necessary step to take. Perhaps it explains why only a handful of victims have been able to recover from their abuse and synthesize their memories coherently enough to present their case of being abused.

* * * *

Conclusion

---

[510] Tulanelink.com

All in all, trauma-based mind control has become a widespread program extended from original MK-ULTRA research. Extreme abuse at a young age has been revealed to be the most effective way of controlling the mind, and psychopathic networks in both occult groups and clandestine agencies jumped at the opportunity to create a veritable of mind controlled slaves using the most depraved and violent techniques at their disposal. By using torture such as electric shock and sexual abuse, these psychopaths have found a way to literally create blank slate alternate personalities which can be programmed for all sorts of illicit activities. Child prostitution, pornography, snuff films, assassinations and drug running are all direct applications of mind control programming. Another likelihood is programming among elite military units to undertake activities that would otherwise be balked at, such as death squads and terrorism.

The documented MK-ULTRA interest in electric shock, hypnosis and sensory deprivation are collectively the forerunners to trauma-based mind control, with the only missing documented ingredient being sexual abuse. It is certainly horrifying to consider that groups, government or otherwise, would deliberately subject children to such abuse but in the context of psychopathy, where psychopaths are sexual deviants and sadists, it is actually quite logical.

It is unclear how much of an overlap there is between the CIA and occult groups. The most likely scenario is that occult groups infiltrated the MK-ULTRA program and began using the knowledge they learned for their own subversive plans. It is also possible that the leading researchers into MK-ULTRA were simultaneously members of occult groups themselves. The crossover between occult groups and military occupations, such as the Presidio, Michael Aquino and Dr. Corydon's statement that “The interesting thing is how many people have described the same scenario, and how many people that we have worked with who have had relatives in NASA, in the CIA, and in the Military, including very high-ups in the Military," certainly demands further investigation.

Many of the victims discussed by Dr. Hammond and those who responded to the Extreme Abuse Surveys claimed to have been born into a 'direct bloodline', meaning that their families have been practicing in a satanic cult for as many as 12 generations. These children have been essentially born for the purpose of being abused and exploited by cults. Some have referred to themselves as the 'chosen generation', perhaps indicating that they have a role to play in the 'end game' of the Pathocracy. Children outside of these bloodlines seem to be more expendable, and are likely killed once they enter adulthood, when they are no longer useful for child prostitution or pornography, and their programming begins to weaken. We can only speculate about the death toll.

The two main groups involved in extreme abuse, the occult and clandestine intelligence agencies, seem to have distinct goals with significant overlap. The occult groups believe, in the vein of the writings of Alestair Crowley, that there are legitimate spiritual reasons for abuse and always perform their mind control operations during rituals. The CIA, on the other hand, seems more interested in espionage and entrapment. The overlap between the two is the goal of making money, and possibly the causing of violence and terror as part of a 'strategy of tension' campaign designed to steer the populace towards certain political goals and psychological states of terror, making manipulation of the populace easier.

Some researchers have suggested that trauma-based mind control dates as far back as the ancient Egyptian Mystery Schools, with the *Book of the Dead* serving as a blueprint to torture and utilize drugs to exert control over that person, raising the possibility that occult groups have been practicing a form of mind control for millenia and used the laboratory settings of the Nazis and the CIA to enhance and refine their techniques.[511]

---

[511] Ron Patton, "Project Monarch, Nazi Mind Control."

I want to state emphatically that the entirety of the evidence does not necessarily point to a world with comprehensive and full subversion by satanic cults. These cults comprise only a portion of the occult groups operating within the Pathocracy and instead seem to be one arm of the psychopathic network, being concealed and protected for the use and creation of mind controlled slaves, profits from drug and child trafficking, and entrapment of pedophiles in government, military, finance and beyond.

Ultimately, the full motivations of trauma-based mind control, the breadth of the operations and number of victims cannot fully be known until the Pathocracy which is responsible for these crimes against humanity is brought down and dissected. There is no knowledge more important towards this end than the extent of pedophilia and child abuse at the hands of the government and elite.

The disbelief of trauma-based mind control is understandable so we must collectively work together to bring further evidence to light. After all, before the liberation of Auschwitz, the general sentiment was that such atrocities were impossible and reports of mass murder were greatly exaggerated. Unfortunately, they did happen, and serve as a reminder that crimes against humanity at the hands of psychopaths are very real.

As the final word on trauma-based mind control, I would like to reiterate the conclusion of Dr. Corydon Hammond:

> People say, “What’s the purpose of it?” My best guess is that the purpose of it is that they want an army of Manchurian Candidates, ten of thousands of mental robots who will do prostitution, do child pornography, smuggle drugs, engage in international arms smuggling, do snuff films, all sorts of very lucrative things, and do their bidding and eventually the megalomaniacs at the top believe they’ll rule the world.”

Food for Thought:

1. Are 'Manchurian candidates' responsible for many of the assassinations and terrorist attacks in world history?
2. What are the limits of the possibility of controlling a society using mind control?
3. How many victims of Monarch are currently programmed today?
4. How many deaths have occurred due to the Monarch Program?
5. Why are members of the Military Industrial Complex so interested in marginalizing the existence of extreme abuse?
6. Just how dark does the crimes against humanity perpetrated by networks of psychopaths get?

The Pathocracy

On August 12, 1991, Investigative Journalist Danny Casolero was found dead in a bathtub at a hotel in West Virginia. He was in the state to meet a source on a story he was working on called “The Octopus”, which referred to a sprawling international criminal cabal that was exerting influence over a multitude of world events, such as the Iran hostage crisis that helped get Ronald Reagan elected. Although his death was ruled a suicide, the Casolero family was adamant it was a murder, citing threats on Danny's life.[512]

“The Octopus” that Danny Casolero was following is the Pathocracy. It has grown over the centuries, spreading its many tentacles across the globe, tightening it's grip on control of information, money, wars and beyond. The scope of this book was mostly kept within the context of the United States but the scope of the “Octopus” is truly international. Of course, we cannot fully know the extent of the beast until it is starved and dissected. But until then, we can still reasonable construct the 'big picture' of our current situation.

The history recounted thus far is the history of institutions that have become saturated with psychopaths, who began to act ruthlessly on their desires to control and manipulate others. The process is called Ponerology, a term coined by Polish psychologist Andrjez Lobaczewski, who studied how the governments of the Soviet bloc became increasingly evil. The term comes from the Greek word poneria, meaning lawlessness. Lobaczewski published his work in a book titled *Political Ponerology.*[513]

Lobaczewski had tremendous difficulty in publishing his book; At one point the manuscript was thrown in the furnace shortly before a raid by the secret police, and later the publication was blocked by none other than Zbigniew Brzezinski himself. He had hopes that by sending his manuscript to the Vatican, the word about Pathocracy would be heard on a global level. The manuscript was never returned. When he came to the United States, he figured that the freer society would be more accepting of his thesis; again, publication was blocked and his work was marginalized.

---

[512] *Washington Post,* “Area Writer Investigating Inslaw Case Found Dead,” August 13, 1991.

[513] The book, though dense and sometimes difficult to navigate, is one of the most important pieces of literature ever written. A PDF is available here, I recommend everyone reads it.

What was so revolutionary about Lobaczewski's work that it was repressed by the elite worldwide? It is impossible to come to any conclusion from his work except that the development of Pathocracy is inevitable as long as the general population is ignorant about the *psychopathic other*. Psychopaths have always existed, and they view the world of normal people, those with morality and conscience, as something to be looked down upon and exploited. Perhaps the most shocking revelation of his work is that psychopaths learn to recognize each other, even at a young age.[514] The natural result is a network of psychopaths, a subset of the population that recognize their differences and feel not only contempt for the rest of society, but the need to control and manipulate them as well. Over time they become experts in our weaknesses and follies, watching from a distance with curiosity and amusement.

The idea that Psychopaths can recognize each other is central to the Pathocracy. Imagine for millenia the process of evolution of a psychopathic cabal growing in power and numbers, increasingly manipulating society. You would think that the United States would think twice when in 2004 we had one presidential candidate who was a member of a powerful secretive society known as the Skull and Bones run against the Presidential incumbent who was also a member of the same secretive society.[515]

> Tim Russert: You're both were members of Skull and Bones, a secret society of Yale. What does that tell us?

---

[514] *Political Ponerology,* page 127

[515] *The Telegraph,* "The secret society that ties Bush and Kerry," February 1, 2004

> Sen. John Kerry: Not much because it's a secret.[516]

These connections are not insignificant, rather they are the tip of the iceberg of a vast covert network of collusion, the result of the process of the ponerization.

This process of ponerization has happened to the major centers of covert power in our world. The CIA, FBI, NSA and the global financial elite all the way down to local police departments have all become *ponerized* institutions. Understanding the condition and development of ponerized networks is not just important, it is perhaps *the most* important information that society can have. It is the next step in evolution of society, the next grand paradigm shift.

This is the context under which the Pathocracy operates. A system of government hidden from the public view and operated by a psychologically distinct subset of the population whom do not feel empathy, have no conscience, and derive pleasure from the manipulation and abuse of the mass of the population they view as inferior. When we read accounts of horrific extreme abuse perpetrated against children, understand that the *psychopathic other* enjoys this abuse. They derive pleasure from torture and murder.

These psychopaths recognize each other and over time they come to be the sole holders of power wherever it exists in an unadulterated form. Seemingly antagonistic institutions such as competing banks are actually operated by the same psychopathic cabal behind the scenes. In the same way that you and I naturally exclude social deviants from our social groups, psychopaths do with normal people. The result is a web of mutual conditioning of evil. Through a vast propaganda matrix, the Pathocracy is slowly *conditioning* humanity to conform to their sick standards such as endless war, resulting in a large portion of the population displaying 'secondary psychopathic' tendencies. This is the group that has subverted Democracy not only in the United States but around the world, and are currently manipulating world events behind the scenes.

---

[516] Campbell Brown, on *CNN,* transcript available here.

* * * *

Terrorism Today

At the outset of Operation Cyclone in the late '70s, the CIA, acting as an arm of the Western financial elite, began fostering close relationships with a variety of powerful and important figures in the Middle East. The goal was a profoundly different landscape in the region, one where governments could do little to prevent the manipulation and control of indigenous resources and ideas.

One of these men was Osama bin Laden, a wealthy Saudi businessman, who would maintain a relationship with the CIA for an extended period of time, coordinating Islamic radicals to promote the goals of the CIA through terrorism and indoctrination, and further acting as a scapegoat to cast out to the public as an enemy that, for some reason, evaded capture for decades.

Bin Laden was not alone, but his organization, Al-Qaeda, would become the centerpiece of a contrived conflict known today as 'The War on Terror', which would eventually create trillions of profits for the very people tasked with ending it.

The United States made strong alliances with the very countries and people responsible for the funding and proliferation of terrorists such as Bin Laden, Saudi Arabia and Pakistan. The intelligence agencies of these countries are entirely corrupt, and have grown massively in power, to the point where they exert more control than the nominal governments of these states, becoming the 'Deep State', where the true power of a country resides in its covert operations and with people who's names are generally not known to the public. Each of these countries, including the United States, act as an arm of the Pathocracy, and are responsible for a vast majority of the terrorism in the world today.

To some extent they literally operate organizations such as the Taliban and Al-Qaeda. This relationship becomes crystal clear when we see that the objectives of Al-Qaeda are perfectly in line with those of the Pathocracy. In Middle East conflicts such as the Libyan 'Revolution', struggles in Kosovo and Serbia, the Syrian 'Civil War', we see Al-Qaeda and the United States fighting on the same side.

The lack of any tangible results from the War on Terror is a 'smoking gun' for it's uselessness. Terrorism today benefits the Pathocracy and the Pathocracy only. The alleged true perpetrators of terrorism have their homelands bombed and ravished while it provides an excuse for continuous militarization and increasingly repressive domestic policies that do more to stifle legitimate domestic dissent than to curb foreign violence. Terrorism in countries such as Afghanistan and Iraq provide a convenient reason for increasing military presence, and to make the local governments dependent on the United States for protection. The resulting destabilization makes the economies and resources easier to exploit. It is not a coincidence that terrorism and destabilization seem to precede important geopolitical objectives in that region. Domestic terrorism serves to keep the populace in fear and justify increased infringement of civil rights. Tragic events such as school shootings are nearly universally followed by a push for an agenda that furthers the goal of the Pathocracy.

That the last known meeting of Operation Gladio coordinators was in 1990 ought to have been, and still should be, front page news. A variety of the actors involved with Gladio are absolutely still in significant positions of power today.

Gladio has evolved from a localized European campaign of terrorism into a global network. Former FBI agent turned whistleblower Sybel Edmonds refers to it as 'Gladio B'. The 'Strategy of Tension' has proved to be one of the most useful tools of the Pathocracy. Across the world, they have assassinated leaders, terrorized populations, destroyed infrastructure and spread destructive propaganda, and it has worked.

Where would Latin America be today had they not been terrorized by the Pathocracy? Decades of progress have been lost to repressive dictatorships propped up by the CIA spreading corruption and keeping the means of economic production in the hands of foreign powers.

And what about the Middle East? The landscape would be radically different without decades of interference. Minor differences between Islamic sects have been exploited to divide communities and nations. If even only a portion of the countries in this region united economically, the house of cards of the Pathocracy would tumble down. They know this, and it is why the Middle East is such a hotbed of violence and destabilization today.

* * * *

The Agenda

The Pathocracy has been firmly in control of the United States democratic process for decades. As it stands, there are no significant tangible differences between the two parties. To hide this fact, a variety of actors routinely circuit the mainstream media spitting vehemence towards their political 'rivals' while behind the scenes they joke about the smoke screen they have created.

The 'Agenda' that has evolved over the past decades is one of global hegemony, economic and military. Once distinct ideologies of liberalism and conservatism have evolved into neo-liberalism and neo-conservatism, who share the same goals and differ only slightly in means of implementing them.

The 'Agenda' is the agenda of the financial elite, using a manipulated democratic process, the United States military, and covert institutions as tools of maintaining their socially dominant position. When a foreign country threatens to upset the status quo, there is a regime change in nearly every single instance. In the few countries where this hasn't been accomplished, it is very likely that a regime change is in the works, a plan evolving behind the scenes as I write.

In the entire history of the United States, the country has not gone 40 months without a military conflict since at least 1963.[517] There are long periods where the enemy is focused around one vague ideology. Yesterday's communism is today's Islamic radicalism: the 'Red Scare' is alive and well, it has found a new face to demonize. Today's wars show no sign of ending.

The Pathocracy has repeatedly exploited crises to implement new legislation with applause that would otherwise be universally panned. 9/11 brought us the Patriot Act and Continuity of Government, which has laid the groundwork for a vast surveillance state and indefinite detention. What crises will be manufactured when the Trans-Pacific Partnership is ready to be officially revealed?

*   *   *   *

---

[517] *Mother Jones,* "How the Rest of the World Views the American Military," August 29, 2013

The Deep State

In the United States, and indeed much of the nations around the world, there exists two governments: one that operates out in the open, which the citizens are familiar with and interact with, and a parallel top secret government, whose existence is visible only to a select few and only occasionally exposed to the general public. This clandestine hybrid network of shadowy institutions and figures, both public and private, operates with its own intentions and its own power regardless of who is formally the Head of State.

> “The Deep State does not consist of the entire government. It is a hybrid of national security and law enforcement agencies: the Department of Defense, the Department of State, the Department of Homeland Security, the Central Intelligence Agency and the Justice Department. I also include the Department of the Treasury because of its jurisdiction over financial flows, its enforcement of international sanctions and its organic symbiosis with Wall Street. All these agencies are coordinated by the Executive Office of the President via the National Security Council.” - Mike Lofgren[518]

The 'Deep State' is also largely privatized. *The Washington Post* has reported that the number of private contractors with top-secret clearances has reached 854,000, a mind-blowing number in itself, and greater than the number of top-secret clearances among civilian employees of the government.[519] Wall Street is also a main component of the 'Deep State', by which the very grease that allows the cogs of the machine to run originates. If there is any one thing that the 'Deep State' requires, it is silent and uninterrupted cash flow.

---

[518] BillMoyers.com, “Essay: Anatomy of the Deep State,” February 21, 2014

[519] *The Washington Post,* “Top Secret America,” an investigate project spanning from 2013 to 2014

The 'Deep State' was legalized on September 11, 2001 after George W. Bush declared a state of emergency and enacted the Continuity of Government operations. It is the natural result of the progressive number of power grabs by various intelligence agencies detailed throughout the previous chapters. It is the 'Deep State' that is responsible for endless war and the one-party state, effectively ensuring it's continued existence and importance by providing an impetus for war, surveillance and propaganda while simultaneously removing any possibility of civilian reform.

The 'Deep State' is the vehicle from which the Pathocracy operates. It has expanded its operations into drug-running, child trafficking and more so that it does not have to rely entirely on taxpayer money for its projects. For all intents and purposes, the rise of the 'Deep State' can be considered a silent coup on the United States of America.

* * * *

Cults

When we peel back the layers of the Pathocracy and travel deeper into the rabbit hole, by exploring the depths of trauma-based mind control and child abuse that has become institutionalized among the elite, we are given a glimpse of the world of cults. The reality is that the Pathocracy sits on top of, and in the process conceals and protects, a 'black' network of Satanists and other occultists who explore the darkest evils imaginable. The Pathocracy conceals this arm of the octopus because it provides a valuable service to their goals and has a network of lots of influential people.

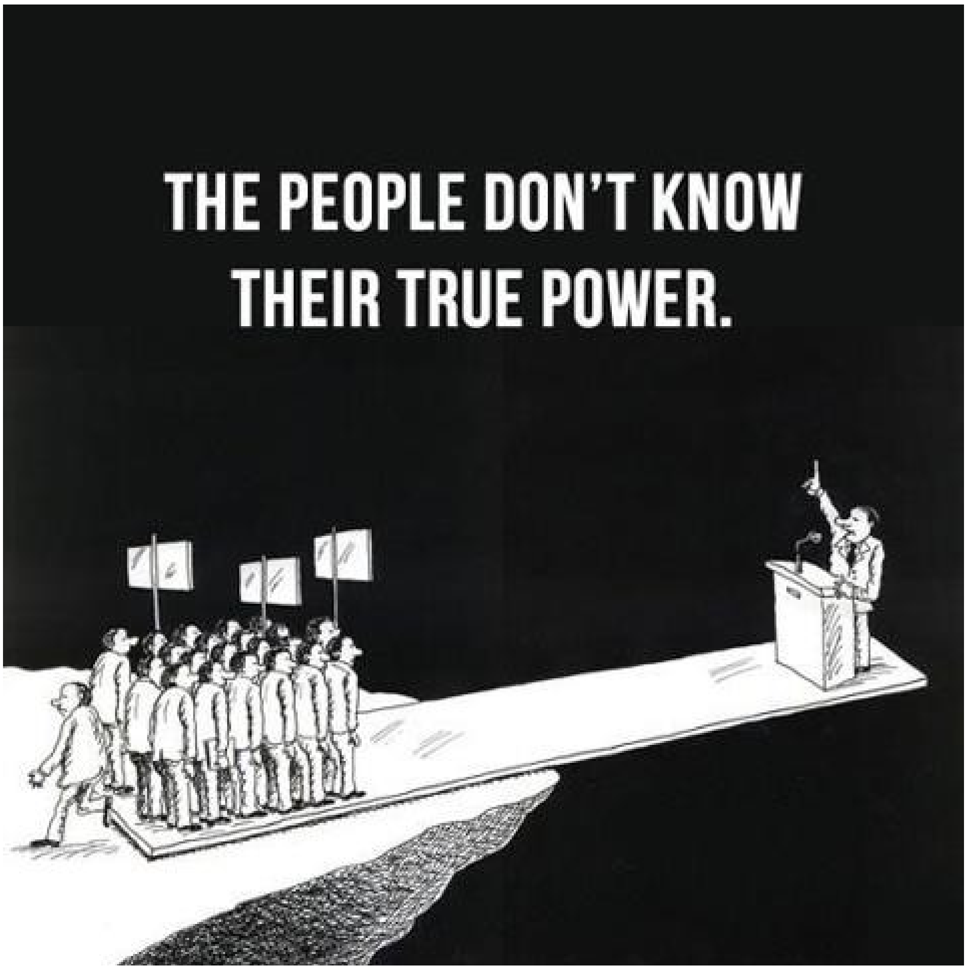
Furthermore, cults likely operate as 'psychopathic recruitment centers'. The whole idea of a cult revolves around hidden knowledge and the manipulation of the masses. Psychopaths are drawn to such ideologies, and are then recruited into the broader Pathocracy.

There is no topic that reveals the depths of depravity of the Pathocracy more than their use of pedophilia as a tool for control. It is how they conceal their biggest conspiracies, by holding over the heads of their subjects a type of blackmail that will ensure compliance. In addition, there is no topic that reveals the necessity of action than their abuse of children. And if the extent of this phenomenon can be exposed fully, no truth will bring down their reign quicker.

Unfortunately, it is necessary to paint such a dark picture because the reality is dark, and we cannot pretend that the 'endgame' of the Pathocracy does not exist. If resistance to the Pathocracy grows, we must be prepared for the worst, such as a series of major terrorist attacks, wars between major world powers, and the collapse of fiat currency. This is the 'Big Picture': An agenda of total control, and events are accelerating as the Octopus tightens the grip of its tentacles around the globe. We are living in grand times, at no point in history has the current moment been so important for the future of humanity.

Fortunately, the Pathocracy is doomed to fail.

Solutions



The problem of the Pathocracy seems to be so vast and complex; it is certainly intimidating. We are fortunate that the solutions are relatively simple. It begins and ends with education and non-participation. Ignorance is the sole tool that keeps the Pathocracy afloat. Its truly this easy. An awake populace can collectively choose to stop holding the pyramid above their shoulders by refusing to oil the gears of the machine. We need to collectively move our money out of banks, support local enterprise instead of multinational corporations, and be excessively vocal about the truth.

The time to start being as vocal as possible was decades ago. By this I mean that there is no time for anything else anymore. If you are awake, start making waking others up your number one priority. There are few things I desire to do than to forget all of this and get lost in World of Warcraft. Yet the stakes are too high, there is something bigger going on than our selfish desires. Imagine yourself reflecting on the past in 20, 30 years. Will you be content with the impact you had on the awakening, or will you regret not doing more as the police state becomes fully entrenched around you and it is too late to make a difference?

The first step is to become fully educated yourself. Be able to articulate the problem to even the most skeptical. Collect information and resources that effectively expose the abuses and inner workings of the Pathocracy. Then take this knowledge and share it. I know I have had reservations about sharing the truth with those who seem so content with their circumstances because shattering worldviews is not a pleasant experience by any means. But it is time to put these reservations aside. The building is on fire, and we need to evacuate before it is too late; those who will be momentarily angry for being slapped awake will be grateful once the gravity of the situation becomes clear.

While a personal discussion is certainly the most valuable tool, there are other means. For example, you can compile the sources and information you find most pertinent and send them out in an anonymous email to your contacts list.[520] Perhaps begin your email with “From a concerned friend, please read this information with an open mind”. If 1 out of 100 people is reached this way, the seed will be planted for an inevitable blossom. Ideas follow a pattern of being ridiculed until they reach a critical mass and are accepted. We must endeavor to reach this critical mass as soon as possible, before the grip of the

---

[520] If you wish to use this book, please do. There is a reason it is free; so it can reach as many people as possible.

Pathocracy is sufficiently tight enough to prevent the flow of information.

* * * *

One valuable tool we have is alternative currencies, especially cryptocurrencies. First off, it is a great way to avoid using traditional means of money transfer and bank holdings that prop up the beast. Yet there is another tremendously important value, especially with Bitcoin and potentially with future Bitcoin competitors: It has made the counterculture rich. There are thousands of people who are receptive to the type of information contained in this book who thanks to new found wealth from cryptocurrencies now have the means to proliferate the truth far and wide. If this applies to you, please consider using your assets for a positive impact, perhaps by placing relevant information in public places, by organizing protests, or supporting independent media.

* * * *

The worst thing we can do is wait for someone else to step up and be a leader, for someone else to organize a movement for us to join, for someone else to take a stand against the Pathocracy. A true paradigm shift has to start from within ourselves. An organization or institution has too much propensity to be led astray or infiltrated. After all, 'preventing the rise of a messiah' is a documented top priority of the Pathocracy.

Be the change you want to see in the world, and educate others to do the same. Research where the materials you consume come from, and make smart purchasing choices. Strive to minimize your 'corporate and government footprint'. It is truly as simple as this, and this chapter can be complete while being one of the shortest in the book. Stop holding the pyramid above us and let it collapse around us, then we can put the important pieces back together without the potential for the massive centralization of covert power that we see today. One by one is how the awakening grows, until it is inevitable.

The Awakening

The date was December 21, 2012, one day after my graduation from the University of Illinois. I was sitting at home, contemplating life, exhausted from a frenzy of theses, finals and celebrations. I wondered what I would possibly do with a degree in History, a question I had been deftly avoiding throughout my time in school. I wondered if I could ride out my bartending gig into adulthood, wondered how quickly I could get myself out of the suburbs and out of the Midwest.

That night, in my typical fashion of procrastinating instead of facing issues head on, I was lead to the dark corners of the internet. I was not a conspiracy theorist, but I found the topics interesting, and fell head first deep into the rabbit-hole of MKULTRA. A truth so dark and disgusting that I cried: a mountain of evidence that the cabal that I would eventually come to know as the Pathocracy is responsible for a global network of child trafficking and child abuse.

My worldview was flipped upside down the moment it all sunk it. Some call it 'Waking Up'. I looked at the clock, and the time read 10:33.

* * * *

Synchronicity was described by Carl Jung as 'temporally coincident occurrences of acausal events'. In other words it means events that are causally unrelated yet experienced together in a meaningful manner, related conceptually with the chance of them occurring together being very small. That evening, I would look at the clock again at 11:33, 12:33 and 1:33. It was the beginning of a lengthy and profound series of synchronicity I would experience with the number.

33 had been my lucky number for quite some time. At age 10, it was the centerpiece of an inside joke for my camp counselors. I didn't understand the joke, of course, but I emulated them as any 10 year old would. It was the number of my Lacrosse jersey in High School, and my standardized test score. Its labeled on the bottle of one of my favorite beers. Nothing seriously profound, but enough for it to be *my* number.

I remember being quite hungover on December 21, not just because of celebrating my graduation, but because of a series of parties centered around the end of the Mayan calendar, which some believed predicted the end of the world. Neither my friends nor myself truly thought that the world was going to end, it was just another excuse to get hammered and party as if there was no tomorrow. Yet in hindsight, perhaps this date was not a coincidence. The end of the calendar didn't intend to predict the end of the world; rather, it reflected the Mayan belief that the end of the calender era would usher in a new age: The Age of Enlightenment.

In the months proceeding December 21, I would go days, sometimes even weeks at a time seeing :33 on the clock every single hour I was awake. I had been a committed Atheist for much of my life. I still understand it to be one of the most rational worldviews. After all, the world is filled with evil and suffering, and the major religions are filled with corruption and hypocrisy. But this was a phenomenon I could not ignore, and decided to explore it further.

It went deeper than just numbers on a clock: I would come to profound thoughts and insights at :33, I met a great friend who had the 33rd ticket at the pub I flipped burgers at to pay the bills, I have frequently and repeatedly published important writing at :33. Following insights from synchronicity brought me to South America, where I met my soulmate and spiritual partner at 6:33 p.m.

I am having a direct communication with God and the experience has

been phenomenal.

My experience with synchronicity goes beyond numbers. Reflecting on my life, I am fascinated by how events weaved their way together to put me in exactly the right place at the right time to wake up and to have developed the skills to synthesize this information and share it with others. When I needed to learn an important lesson, the structure of my life evolved to put me into a position to truly internalize new values and ideas, a sort of 'synchronistic flow' of events.

The 'ride', as the brilliant comedian and commentator Bill Hicks would put it, has not been easy. My whole life has been a series of 'learning the hard way'. I had to fail out of school to learn the value of learning. I had to spend weeks in a hospital with major burns to get a grip on my issues with drugs and alcohol. I had to get arrested to learn how my actions impact others. I had to experience obesity to learn the value of health and caring for my body. I had to experience deep and prolonged depression to appreciate happiness and action. A whole lot of experiences to synthesize in 23 years of living, but I am grateful for every one of them. They made me who I am today.

In the same sense, humanity is learning the hard way. We have to confront the Pathocracy in order to collectively evolve, to not just blindly follow the next paradigm shift but to actively construct it within ourselves. As the waning Pathocracy clashes with the rising Awakening, there will be a lot of suffering, but we should not be upset: Instead, we should be grateful for the catalyst that will be responsible for the inevitable beautiful renaissance that represents the light at the end of the tunnel.

* * * *

I absolutely wish I could lay out a comprehensive metaphysical thesis here but the truth is, I simply don't know what the truth is. I do know that at the very bottom of the conspiracy rabbit hole, is that each and every one of us is a powerful spiritual being. We have a part of us that is eternal and perfect, hidden behind layers of ego. Some have more layers than others, and that is OK: Not everyone began their journey at the same time, and eventually we will all finish it. There is a series of paradoxes: the present we are experiencing is but a blink of an eye along the path of evolution for our souls, yet simultaneously the road ahead of us is of the utmost importance. There is an infinite amount of life not only in this universe but each one that exists beyond it, that has existed before it and will exist after it. Yet, we are each special. This is the nature of infinity: We are not insignificant.

Entering the Age of Enlightenment, and *Lifting the Veil,* means more than just shining a spotlight on the Pathocracy. While I think the information contained within this book is important, I believe that it's true significance lies in showing that our collective understanding of reality is vastly incomplete and largely incorrect.

As we move forward, we must base our thoughts and actions not in hate and anger towards the Pathocracy but with love and respect towards one another. This is not only the best means of confronting the problems we face but it is simply the right thing to do. It is time to search deep inside ourselves and hold on tightly to our inner light, develop it and share it with others. **Be a catalyst for the beautiful renaissance that is in our future**. As you fight fire not with more fire but with water, fight evil not with evil but with love. The return of 'God Consciousness' to our world, or whichever name you want to give it: This is the true meaning of the Age of Enlightenment and *Lifting the Veil,* the underlying meaning of the existence of the Pathocracy and the struggles we will face as we confront it.

Don't forget to share this book with

at least two people!

About Me

My name is Timothy Silver. I am 23 years old. I have a Bachelors degree in History from the University of Illinois. I understand that these credentials aren't going to blow anyone's mind, which is why I opted for the approach of citing every claim with a publicly available source. After all, I am simply too young to have the advanced degrees that would thrust this work into the spotlight. Does that make the information any less true, any less profound?

I have spent most of my life in Illinois, some of it in Chicago, some in the suburbs, and most of the last 5 years in Champaign. Currently, I have no permanent address. I am backpacking through South America experimenting with alternative ways of living and experiencing different cultures. My budget is 15 dollars a day and I have temporarily settled in Lima, Peru to spend time with my girlfriend and focus on production of more work related to shining light on the truth. The trip has been phenomenal.

Lifting the Veil is my first full project, and I have been running a blog called *The Peoples History* for the last 5 months. It has been a fantastic experience. I am grateful for all of the positive feedback I have received during this time. I've received threats that I consider credible as well, many months before I began writing this book, back when I began raising hell over the suspicious circumstances surrounding the death of Investigative Journalist Michael Hastings. I don't think there is any value in discussing them in depth other than to make the fact public record. For that reason, I won't be promoting this book to any significant extent. There is a time for bravery and a time for common sense. If you found the content of this book insightful, please share it with as many people as possible, anonymously if you must. It is the only way these ideas will spread.

Please contact me if you have any questions, and criticism or input, research you think is important, or if you simply want to say hi. I thoroughly enjoy all of the correspondence, and find my opinions and views are constantly being refined through discussing them with others.

Timothy M. Silver
timsilverpeopleshistory@gmail.com

Donate

This book and all future work will be free because the proliferation of this information is the most important goal I have. That being said, if you have available funds, I would appreciate it if you considered this book as a 'pay what you want' type of deal, to donate some money which reflects how important you feel this information is to you. Any money beyond subsistence I will put to work towards expanding my writing activities and to support future projects that are in the works. If you are having financial problems, or have a family to support, please keep your money to yourself. Otherwise, any contribution will be put to good use.

Please email me at timsilverpeopleshistory@gmail.com if you are interested in supporting my work or funding a project, either through fiat currency or your favorite cryptocurrency. You can also donate using the links at the sidebar at my website ThePeoplesHistory.net

Thanks for reading,

Timothy Silver

In Memory of Michael Hastings

THIS WAS NOT an ACCIDENT

On July 18, 2013, Investigative Journalist Michael Hastings, the man who single-handedly brought down one of the most powerful men in the military with his reporting,[521] died in a fiery car crash in Los Angeles.

Suspicious circumstances of his death immediately began streaming in. For example, Hastings had contacted the Wikileaks lawyer just hours before his death worried that he was being followed by the FBI.[522]

The next day, an email that Hastings had sent to colleagues was released, titled 'FBI

---

[521] *Rolling Stone Magazine,* "The Runaway General," June 22, 2010

[522] *US News and World Report,* "WikiLeaks: Journalist Michael Hastings Under FBI Investigation Before Death," June 20, 2013

Investigation re:NSA' . It stated: “I'm on to a big story, and need to go off the radar for a bit.”[523]

In a 2012 interview, Hastings revealed that he had received numerous death threats from recent investigative reporting.[524] “Yes. Every once and awhile, I'll get a death threat from someone--like, 'if we don't like what you write, we'll hunt you down and kill you' kind of thing.”

The autopsy report found that neither drugs nor alcohol played a role in the crash.[525] Why, then, have witnesses described Hastings' vehicle, a Mercedes C250 (a car not prone to bursting into flames) traveling at full speed down a suburban road, crossing a red light and then skipping over a median into a tree, exploding?[526] Security footage from a gas station caught the speeding, the crash and the explosion, confirming the eyewitness testimony.[527]

> “Hastings was intensely interested in government surveillance of journalists. In May, the story broke about the Department of Justice obtaining the phone records of Associated Press reporters. A couple weeks later, Edward Snowden's revelations about the National Security Agency's massive surveillance program became public. Hastings was convinced he was a target....
>
> One night in June, he came to Thigpen's apartment after midnight and urgently asked to borrow her Volvo. He said he was afraid to drive his own car. She declined, telling him her car was

---

[523] *KTLA,* “Exclusive: Hastings Sent Colleagues Email Hours Before Crash,” June 21, 2013
[524] Reddit AMA, “IAm Michael Hastings, a reporter for BuzzFeed and a writer for Rolling Stone.”
[525] *Los Angeles Times,* “Michael Hastings' Toxicology Report”
[526] A local Los Angeles news story interviewing witnesses, available on YouTube here.
[527] Surveillance footage available on YouTube here.

> having mechanical problems.
>
> "He was scared, and he wanted to leave town," she says.
>
> The next day, around 11:15 a.m., she got a call from her landlord, who told her Hastings had died early that morning. His car had crashed into a palm tree at 75 mph and exploded in a ball of fire."
> - *LA Weekly*[528]

The type of cyber attack that could have taken control of Hastings' vehicle is very real, confirmed by independent hackers to a *Forbes* journalist in a demonstration[529], and by the government itself, in a presentation by DARPA, the Defense Advances Research Projects Agency.[530]

Rest in peace Michael Hastings, and to each and every victim of the Pathocracy. We will pick up where you left off.

---

[528] *LA Weekly,* "Michael Hastings' Dangerous Mind: Journalistic Star Was Loved, Feared and Haunted," August 22, 2013

[529] *Forbes,* "Hackers Reveal Nasty New Car Attacks--With Me Behind The Wheel," July 24, 2013

[530] Presentation by Kathleen Fisher, DARPA project manager, available on YouTube here.

Help Improve This Work

I am grateful for all of the help and insights from peers I have received over the course of writing *Lifting the Veil*. Each time I write an essay or present an idea, I find that my work is constantly refined from input. Due to this, I plan on continually releasing updates of this book as I refine my thesis and come across new research to synthesize. If you have any constructive criticism, any ideas to add, or any other type of help to offer, please do not hesitate to contact me at timsilverpeopleshistory@gmail.com.

Stay Tuned!

In the works:

- 'Lifting the Veil II', which will explore the history of government complicity in global drug trafficking, the foreknowledge of 9/11, the scam of the global monetary system, the real motivations behind modern geopolitics, the occult history of the United States political elite, and more. Much of the work for this book is already completed though cut from this edition to maintain an accessible length.
- 'The CIA, Cults, Mind Control and Child Abuse' (Title subject to change), an expanded version of the chapters MK-ULTRA, the Pedophocracy, Cults and Child Abuse, and Trauma-based Mind Control into a stand-alone book with an expanded thesis.
- 'Lifting the Veil' podcast
- 'Lifting the Veil' Youtube series
- 'Lifting the Veil' Documentary
- Further essays on various topics to be posted on my website, *thepeopleshistory.net*
- *Lifting the Veil* physical edition

Thanks for your readership and support!

Lifting the Veil is licensed under Creative Commons. You may share this work with anyone and everyone, provided you give proper attribution, and do not profit commercially.

All citations and incorporation of material are legal under Fair Use guidelines.

The Final Solution

JACK The RIPPER

STEPHEN KNIGHT

JACK The RIPPER

STEPHEN KNIGHT

With blood-curdling brutality he murdered five English prostitutes; terrorized London's East End; tantalized generations of crime buffs; and inspired books, films, and far-flung myths. The name Jack the Ripper triggers terror, but the man Jack the Ripper was never apprehended, and the crimes for which he has been held responsible for almost a century have never been solved—until now.

From the confused skein of truths, half-truths, and lies that has been woven about the case, an ace investigative reporter has finally teased the truth. Jack the Ripper was not one man, but three. He was not a single assassin stalking his prey through the gaslit streets of one of London's worst slums, but two professional killers and an accomplice, whose connections can be traced to a high-level conspiracy that went right to the heart of political upheaval and social unrest in self-righteous Victorian England.

Based on the testimony of Walter

(continued on back flap)

JACK THE RIPPER

THE FINAL SOLUTION

‘Here comes my noble gull-catcher’
Twelfth Night

JACK THE RIPPER

THE FINAL SOLUTION

STEPHEN KNIGHT

David McKay Company, Inc.
New York

364.12

COPYRIGHT © 1976 BY STEPHEN KNIGHT

All rights reserved, including the right to reproduce
this book, or parts thereof, in any form, except for
the inclusion of brief quotations in a review.

First American Edition, 1976

Library of Congress Catalog Card Number: 76-29178

ISBN 0-679-50711-6

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1
MANUFACTURED IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

For Margot
Ma Belle Marguerite

Foreword

Jack the Ripper. A rubric name that glisters in the black Pantheon of criminal legend. He must be the best-known unknown murderer in the world. In his continuing anonymity lies his enduring fame. More ink has been spilt on him than blood flowed in all his murders; millions upon millions of words which, if placed end to end, would stretch from here to . . . nowhere. Nowhere, because, when all has been written, the evidence accumulated and assayed, the theories counted and discounted, the arguments for this or that suspect waxed hot and waned cold, we have always ended up precisely where we started—in a grey limbo of unknowing.

Always, that is, until now.

Now, Mr Stephen Knight presents us with a most cleverly worked out, plausible—brilliant, even—solution, in this thoughtful, wide-ranging book. I speak with feeling, for I have myself zealously pursued the red shadow through the twisting alleys and thwarting culs-de-sac of thirty-five years. In that time I have read all the literature and studied the case unceasingly. I was fortunate in that when I began I was able to examine the loci of the murders while they still remained largely unaltered, and had the opportunity of talking with a number of old people who had been living in the East End in the 1880s, and could provide me with clear, contemporary recollections of the events of that long-ago autumnal reign of terror. The results of all this lengthy research I incorporated in my critical analysis of the entire corpus of hitherto known facts and speculations, *A Casebook on Jack the Ripper*. I had travelled to what I held to be the absolute limits of conjecture. There was, I felt, no more that I could do. Even so, it seemed that, like the song the Sirens sang, the mystery was destined to remain as I had found it—insoluble.

But is it? Stephen Knight does not think so. He is confident that he has found the solution. And a very pretty case he makes out against his unholy trinity: for it is his belief that Jack the Ripper was not a solitary lurking slayer, impelled by the private excitements of an ungovernable lust for blood, but a conspiracy of three, who slew, not indiscriminately, but by careful design, and for a very particular reason.

His research has been massive and meticulous, and he has written a book which, even to one such as myself, saturated in minutiae and jaded by reading and re-reading through a wearisome acreage of previous print, never fails to intrigue, never bores, and succeeds in producing constant surprises.

That in itself is no mean achievement, but the author has also contrived by his industry and patent dedication to garner many new facts for the winnowing, and to bring novel and stimulating interpretations to old facts. In the course of his research, he has enjoyed the advantage of a sight of the secret Scotland Yard files, officially closed until 1992, and, by sheer hard work in tracking down previously unsuspected sources, earned the benefit of much fresh data.

His dismissal of all quondam suspects seems to me absolutely conclusive; but then I was never a 'Pedachenkovian', a 'Druittist', a 'Clarentian', or a 'Stephenite'. After following Mr Knight's strongly supported indictment of those he conceives to be the guilty parties, it is difficult to resist becoming a converted 'Gullible'.

A great part of the fascination of the Ripper case has always resided in its abiding mystery; the puzzle, the tantalizingly endless permutations of possibility—and impossibility—which it throws up, spinning the mind like a white mouse in a whirring wheel. It may be that, after so long, subconsciously, I don't *want* the answer to be found, the guessing game to end. For what is deader than a puzzle solved, a crossword completed? Is that why I hesitate? If so, I am, I admit, being less than judicial. But at least I am sufficiently elastic in my prejudices, sufficiently judicious, to recognize that this is a book of central importance which no one who has the slightest interest in the Jack the Ripper murders dare neglect to read and consider with the utmost care.

It does provide absorbing reading. And an alarmingly convincing final solution.

RICHARD WHITTINGTON-EGAN

Preface

Researching and writing this book has been one of the most difficult tasks I have ever undertaken. It has also been one of the most rewarding. It has led me to people I would have been unlikely otherwise to meet, people who began as contacts and whom I am now privileged to count as friends. That well-worn tribute, 'without whom this book could not have been written', applies to so many people in the present case that I am at a loss to know where to begin in thanking them.

At the top of the list of those to whom I owe a huge debt of gratitude are Paul Bonner and Ian Sharp. Without their initial research, and that of Karen de Groot and Wendy Sturgess, I should have been at an immense disadvantage in embarking on the quest for Jack the Ripper. For making their invaluable material available to me, and for their time and advice, given so generously despite the rigorous demands of their own lives and livelihoods, I am deeply grateful.

I wish to thank Joe Gaute, not only for his expert advice and encouragement but also for his open-mindedness in being prepared to listen to a beginner who thought he had something worth while to say. To Ken Thomson I should like to say thanks on a hundred different counts, notably his unfailing approachability, sensitive guidance and his many thoughtful suggestions about text and illustrations. To Ken must go the credit for the present title, an apter and far more memorable one than my own *The Real Jack the Ripper*.

For reading and making vital comments upon my synopsis and manuscript I must thank Robin Odell, whose own *Jack the*

Ripper In Fact and Fiction is one of the few really good Ripper books.

Richard Whittington-Egan, that most audacious and tenacious of modern literary detectives, has contributed a foreword to the book. For Richard's charm and friendship, for his Holmesian percipience and his most illuminating criticism—offered always in the spirit of helpfulness—I can only say, most sincerely, thank you.

There comes a time for almost every author where he wonders if the book on which he has toiled will ever be published, so great and so numerous seem the obstacles. I am grateful for the kind words of encouragement given me by Donald Rumbelow when I reached my own, mercifully short-lived, period of uncertainty. Don's constant interest, consideration and many ideas have contributed in great measure to the present form of this book.

My good friend Bernard Taylor is to be thanked for pointing out some subtle and not-so-subtle errors in grammar that everyone else had missed.

Others who have read sections of my unfinished manuscript, or submitted themselves to my own readings from it, and whose views have been invaluable are Harry Jackson, my brothers Leonard, Richard and Adrian, Dr Anthony Storr, John Wilding, my stepdaughters Natasha and Nicole and my mother. Of especial importance was the inspiration provided by my friend Joan Moisey. Without her this book could, but is unlikely to, have been written.

The following people have contributed by giving their time for often lengthy interviews: Karen de Groot, Wendy Sturgess, Michael Parkin, Alan Neate, Robert Mackworth-Young, Harry Jonas, Elwyn Jones, William Ifland, Anthony Storr, Terese Stevens, Emily Porter and of course Joseph Sickert. I have spent many hours with Marjorie Lilly, and her reminiscences have provided rich background material. Here it is important to point out, however, that any conclusions reached in this book are my own.

Many people have helped by taking the trouble to write me letters, some extremely long and informative, others quite brief, all of them courteous. These include Michael Harrison, Timothy d'Arch Smith, H. Montgomery Hyde, Frederick Bratton, Alan Neate, the Marquess of Salisbury, Donald McCormick, Wendy Baron, Sir John Gielgud, Dame Peggy Ashcroft, Donald Rumbelow, Dr J. Mason, G. Lüdemann, Nigel Morland, Michael Thomas, Algernon Greaves, T.

Tindal-Robertson, John Symonds, Dr Alan Barham Carter, Martin Cresswell, Lady Muriel Dowding, Thomas Orde, Sir Philip Magnus-Allcroft, Mavis Pindard, the Law Society, the Honourable Society of the Inner Temple, the Director of Public Prosecutions, H. G. Pearson of the Home Office, Nellie J. Kerling and Constance-Anne Parker.

I am grateful to Mrs Edwina Browning and the many Freds of Scotland Yard's record department for their charming hospitality and for the help given by Mr T. H. East of the Home Office. Thanks are due to Mr Eric Harvey, Departmental Records Officer at New Scotland Yard, for permission to examine the Yard file on the Whitechapel Murders, to the Rt. Hon. Roy Jenkins, M.P., for permission to examine the Home Office papers on the case, and to Her Majesty the Queen for permission to see some of the unpublished private correspondence of Queen Victoria.

Thanks are due to the Royal College of Physicians for permission to reproduce part of a letter from Sir William Gull; to Michael Joseph, Ltd. for permission to quote from *Jack the Ripper* by Daniel Farson, to Joseph Sickert for permission to include several family photographs in the book, and to Faber and Faber for permission to reproduce the photograph of young Walter Sickert, from *The Life and Opinions of Walter Richard Sickert* by Robert Emmons. Photographs and transcripts of Crown copyright records in the Public Record Office appear by permission of the Controller of H.M. Stationery Office.

I wish to offer my sincere thanks to my friend Harry Jackson for his help whenever needed. Two of his splendid photographs are included in the book. I have met no one with more enthusiasm for the subject than Harry, and I have spent many happy hours talking Ripper with him and his charming wife Belinda.

I am grateful to my friends in general for tolerating my anti-social behaviour during the preparation of the book. Many of them I virtually ignored for eighteen months. I must particularly thank Terry and Janice Sweeney who, as always, were there when needed, notably when the paper ran out. Several people have lent me books which have proved most useful. They include Dave Bootle, Brenda Lyons, Richard and Leonard Knight, Harry Jackson and Joe Gaute.

Two high-ranking Freemasons have helped with information and comments. To both I am grateful, and comply with their wish to remain anonymous.

Others who have helped in the production of this work are Ron Rothery, Rod Southwood, Margaret Adey, Jack Hammond, Pauline Silver, Christopher Falkus, David Newnham and the resourceful staff of the British Museum Reading Room and of Tower Hamlets Libraries, especially the Local History Library and the Music and Art Library at Whitechapel.

Mr R. F. Armitage and Joyce Hatwell contributed more than they know.

Roy Minton made many suggestions that were both practical and imaginative. I am grateful for his expertise.

The two lives of the author who also has a full-time job are not always compatible. I have to thank Chris Coates for his help and understanding in allowing me time to carry out research. No one could ask for a finer News Editor.

Finally I must express my deepest gratitude to my wife Margot and our daughters Natasha and Nicole. They have listened with patience and encouragement to long and often complicated monologues about the Whitechapel Murders. I am grateful for the love with which they accepted Jack the Ripper as our house guest for nigh on two years. Most of all I am thankful to Margot for her faith in me, unwavering even at times when I had little faith in myself. Without her this book would never have been contemplated.

STEPHEN KNIGHT

31st August 1975

Contents

1 New Light on an Old Mystery 13
2 The Sickert Story 30
3 The Truth and Nothing but the Truth? 40
4 The Murders 47
5 The Mad Pork Butcher 71
6 The Motive 80
7 Cleveland Street 93
8 Cover-up 106
9 All Roads lead to Dorset Street 142
10 The Masonic Killers 151
11 Sir William Gull 180
12 John Netley 211
13 Yours truly, Jack the Ripper 218
14 Maniacs and Woman-haters 224
15 The Secrets of the Files 234
16 The Third Man 246
Afterword by Joseph Sickert 263
Bibliography 265
Index 269

Illustrations

Plates in Half-tone

'Bloody Sunday', Trafalgar Square
Young Walter Sickert
Joseph Sickert
Walter Sickert in old age
Prince 'Eddy'
Princess Alexandra
Annie Elizabeth Crook
Alice Margaret Crook
Lazarus Breaks His Fast
The Camden Town Murder
Amphytrion
Mrs Barrett
The Painter In His Studio
Ennui
La Hollandaise
Marie Kelly's body
Hogarth, *The Reward of Cruelty*
Lord Salisbury
Sir William Gull
Gull's grave
Sir Charles Warren
Sir Robert Anderson
Robert James Lees
The site of the writing on the wall
The tobacconist's in Cleveland Street
Walter Sickert, by Joseph Sickert

Line drawings in the text

Joseph Sickert's family tree as described by his father 32
The first page of Inspector Abberline's report 52
The birth certificate of Alice Margaret Crook 96–7
Part of Hutchinson's statement 115
A page of Macnaghten's notes 125
Map—all roads lead to Dorset Street 148
The letter 'from hell' 222
Packer's statement 244
Part of a letter from Sir William Gull 245
The writing on the wall, and an example of Sickert's handwriting 260

CHAPTER ONE

New Light on an Old Mystery

Jack the Ripper is a misnomer. The name conjures up visions of a lone assassin, stalking his victims under the foggy gaslight of Whitechapel. It is just this mistaken notion, inspired almost solely by that terrifying nickname, which rendered the murder of five East End prostitutes in 1888 insoluble. For Jack the Ripper was not one man but three, two killers and an accomplice. The facts surrounding their exploits have never before been teased from the confused skein of truths, half-truths and lies which have been woven around this case. Falsehoods deliberate and accidental have hopelessly enmeshed the truth. The idea of the solitary killer has been propagated by author after author, each striving to prove that his own particular suspect was without a doubt the most notorious criminal in history. It explains the wide gulf of inconsistency into which every theorist's 'logical' reasoning has ultimately fallen. It is the root of widespread disagreement, even over such a basic point as how many Ripper killings there were. Some say as few as four, some say more than twenty. Most experts, however, agree with Sir Melville Macnaghten, who joined Scotland Yard as an Assistant Chief Constable with the Criminal Investigation Department in 1889, the year after the murders. In a batch of confidential notes he wrote:

> The Whitechapel Murderer had 5 victims and 5 victims only.

Macnaghten's official notes list the five victims thus:

(i) 31st Aug '88. Mary Ann Nichols—at Buck's Row—who was found with her throat cut—& with (slight) stomach mutilation.
(ii) 8th Sept. '88. Annie Chapman—Hanbury St:—throat cut—stomach & private parts badly mutilated & some of the entrails placed round the neck.
(iii) 30th Sept. '88. Elizabeth Stride—Berner's Street: throat cut, but nothing in shape of mutilation attempted, & *on same date* Catherine Eddowes—Mitre Square, throat cut, & very bad mutilation, both of face & stomach.
(iv) 9th November. Mary Jane Kelly—Miller's Court, throat cut, and the whole of the body mutilated in the most ghastly manner.

Macnaghten was right in identifying these five alone as the victims of Jack the Ripper, but not for the reasons previous writers have ascribed to him. Elizabeth Stride, for instance, has been accepted as a Ripper victim on the most tenuous evidence, namely that she was killed on the same night as an established victim and that her throat was cut. On that shallow reasoning there is nothing to connect Stride with this series of murders; she was neither mutilated in the customary manner of the Ripper, nor, numerous writers have stated, was her throat cut from left to right like all the other victims, but in the reverse direction. That Stride's murder *was* one of the series is shown by new evidence, gleaned from secret Government and police papers and from a post-mortem report which was suppressed, even at the inquest. It shows that Long Liz Stride's throat was cut in precisely the same left-to-right sweep that dispatched the other victims.

There is also more concrete new evidence which entangles Stride in the web and turns the popular vision of the crimes topsy-turvy: four of the five victims knew each other. These were no random killings perpetrated by a sexual lunatic, but the systematic elimination of specific targets. Marie Kelly, in common with the other four women, was no hapless harlot who just happened to run into Jack the Ripper. She was the *intended* final victim. And in her hitherto obscure history lies the solution.

One of the myriad seemingly inexplicable details arising from Stride's murder was the butchery of Catherine Eddowes so soon after. Of all the theories propounded with such abandon, none has explained how Eddowes was found as far as half a mile from Stride, less than three-quarters of an hour later, and yet was murdered and elaborately mutilated by the same hand. At last the answer is available.

It is common knowledge that in some recess at Scotland Yard there is a secret file relating to the Whitechapel Murders. Rumour-mongers have insisted that the solution to the riddle, even the name of the killer, is concealed there. I have been given access to the Scotland Yard file, which was due to remain closed until 1992, and also to the secret Home Office papers on the case. Neither file identifies Jack the Ripper, but both provide crucial evidence in support of the thesis examined in this report. The fascinating information contained in the secret documents is published for the first time here.

The truth about Jack the Ripper is ugly. Many would rather not hear it, others will revile it.

But it is the truth.

The basic story which led to this book is no fantasy dreamed up by a nobody desperate for publicity, for the source of the information was New Scotland Yard itself. It was not released in an official statement but via a furtive leakage of intelligence from those who have maintained for years they have no knowledge to impart. The new facts gleaned from the Yard led eventually to an unknown artist who lived in contented anonymity with his family and pets in a large but unspectacular north London house. He repeated an unpleasant and incredible story told him by his father, a famous painter and renowned raconteur. The artist had no proof of the story's veracity, just an unshakable conviction that his father had not lied.

The first steps in the quest were taken early in January 1973. A revival of interest in Jack the Ripper which had started more than two years before and showed no signs of abatement prompted BBC Television to explore the possibility of a series of feature programmes on the murders. From the beginning shadowy Jack had haunted the febrile imagination of the public like no other killer in history. He had featured in more than a hundred books, numerous films and plays and countless magazine and newspaper articles. In November 1970, just as it seemed there was nothing left to say, interest in the subject reached a new intensity with the publication of a sensational and groundless article denouncing Queen Victoria's grandson, Prince Albert Victor, Duke of Clarence, as the Ripper. The article was reprinted and discussed by three thousand newspapers all over the world, and almost every week between late 1970 and the time the BBC became involved the Whitechapel Murders were featured somewhere in British newspapers and periodicals, and two major theories, one completely new, were published in book form.

After prolonged deliberation the BBC decided not so much to climb on the bandwagon as to find out the reasons behind the sustained upsurge of 'Rippermania', and then to attempt to produce the definitive account of the case. Perhaps, the producers pondered in their more heady moments, they might even solve the mystery. It would be a fitting commemoration for the eighty-fifth anniversary of the murders.

For the first time since television began the BBC decided on a joint effort between their features and drama departments. The series was to be utterly factual; but the material would be presented and discussed by fictional characters, the popular detectives Barlow and Watt, to endow a serious documentary with the audience-attracting power of a thriller.

On the features side Paul Bonner—a man who had been responsible for several major programmes, including a controversial investigation of the *Lusitania* disaster—was chosen to produce the series. He was responsible for researching the entire factual content of the series, and was to head a team of researchers, all of whom shared his own enthusiasm for the subject. Customary sources of information such as newspapers, libraries, public records offices, the British Museum, articles and contemporary writings all had to be minutely examined. But this was to be the final word on Jack the Ripper, not an amalgam of previous words cleverly dressed up.

The centre of operations eighty-five years before had been Scotland Yard, headquarters of the Metropolitan Police. It seemed the logical place to open the new investigation. The Yard, since removed from their Victorian location at Whitehall to an imposing new building off Victoria Street, Westminster, had for years remained silent about the case, except for the odd comment to professional inquirers who were invariably told, 'The case is closed. We know nothing which has not already been published.' Yet this know-nothing stand was incomprehensible, Bonner reasoned. They must know something, if it were only the background details of an abortive investigation. Along with Elwyn Jones, the creator of Barlow and the man selected to write the *Ripper* scripts, Bonner went to New Scotland Yard to see if the police were prepared to help in any way.

They had lunch with a senior Yard man, whom Jones already knew. Though his name cannot be disclosed, he is regarded as an impeccable source. They quickly outlined their plans. A tense hour followed during which they underwent a long grilling about the intentions behind the proposed documentary. The contact was anxious to be assured that their treatment of the subject was to be conscientious in the extreme, and that they genuinely hoped to provide the definitive account of the Ripper murders. Once satisfied that this was the case—and it was no easy task convincing him—he produced a scrap of paper from his pocket. It bore several handwritten notes. He would not specify the source of the information he was about to give, but attributed it to 'one of our people'. He also requested that what he told them should be in confidence.

He asked if they had had any contact with 'a man named Sickert who has some connection with the artist'. He said the man knew of a marriage between the Duke of Clarence, son of Edward VII and Heir Presumptive to the throne until his death in 1892, and an Alice Mary Cook. The clandestine ceremony had taken place in 'St Saviour's' and the two witnesses present were later to become victims of the Ripper. Alice Mary died in 1920. No other information was given. Ian Sharp, a research assistant who worked on the series, described what followed:

> Thinking this could be a test to see how thorough we were in our research we were determined to find out, on what little information there was, whether a marriage certificate existed which would substantiate the story. The major problem turned out to be finding the place the wedding was supposed to have happened. Even hospitals and infirmaries had chapels attached to them at that time. But as Elwyn and Paul were not certain if their informant had mentioned "infirmary" or "church", it seemed a good idea at first to try just plain St Saviour's Church. There was a St Saviour's Parish at that time south of the river, so I went along to Southwark Cathedral, formerly St Saviour's, and saw the verger Mr Philip Chancellor. He kindly showed me the records for the years 1880 to 1889, but there was no sign of a certificate containing any of the names mentioned.
>
> The British Medical Association were more productive, and after several days they returned my phone call with the news of a St Saviour's Infirmary in Osnaburgh Street, just off Euston Road. Unfortunately, it no longer existed and the

area has now been converted into offices and flats. The Marylebone Records Office had no trace of any papers belonging to the chapel of the infirmary, which was within their boundaries, and assured us they would be there if anywhere.

In the meantime two other researchers and I personally ransacked Somerset House in an attempt to track the wedding, and the existence of an Alice Mary Cook. We drew blanks all round. After a fortnight we had come up only with the existence of a St Saviour's Infirmary, which was anyway a long way from the area we expected it to be in—the environs of Whitechapel, or at least within a cock-stride of the area where three East End prostitutes would have been liable to stray.

So it was decided that we should try our Yard man for more information, and preferably the whereabouts of Sickert, if he still (or even) existed. I remember very clearly Paul Bonner ringing the informant and in urbane and diplomatic tones inform him we had found nothing, without actually saying so. He then asked if Sickert was still around. And then to Paul's astonishment he provided him with Sickert's phone number within a couple of seconds. Since this was a fortnight after their meeting and there had been no contact during that time, it appeared very odd that he should now lay hands on the phone number instantly. He may well have had it on the slip of paper, but why hadn't he given it to them at the time? The excitement was too much and the entire team retired to licensed premises for mouth-to-glass resuscitation.

That evening I rang Sickert and told him what I had heard without disclosing any sources, other than the fact that the BBC were interested, as they were doing a series of documentaries on the subject. He seemed very surprised and asked me to repeat what I had said to another man who was very well-spoken, sounded much older and was a little deaf. The old chap then handed the telephone back to Sickert and we made an appointment for the following morning.

The address I was given was an artist's studio in Myddelton Square, Islington, which belonged to a Mr Harry Jonas, the old chap. The studio belongs to another world, a fabulous old place which is utterly shambolic. There were canvasses, paints, brushes, pots, empty bottles, disused milk cartons, tins of paint and beans, and in the centre one of those splendid old stoves with a pipe reaching out through the roof. There were no windows, and the only source of daylight were two huge skylights. Harry Jonas and Sickert were there.

For three hours I was subjected to intensive cross-examination as to how I had got the information, what exactly had been said and by whom. They gave absolutely nothing away but it was during the course of this that I realised why the previous fortnight had been spent in abortive research. The names, places and events described by our informant at the Yard were slightly wrong. Jonas and Sickert spent a considerable time discussing whether Scotland Yard had deliberately given us wrong information, so that we would find it necessary to drop them and contact Sickert himself. They assured me they had not spoken to Scotland Yard.

They created a remarkable atmosphere of conspiracy, and I confess they did look worried and were extremely cautious. Sickert stressed that this was a personal story, and that his part in it was only "a small chapter in a very large book". They were agreed that if the story were told, the BBC would not be able to broadcast it.

Eventually we parted on the understanding that I would get more detailed accounts of the source of our information, and as soon as I had done so I was to contact them, and we would meet again. I left wishing I was working on *Holiday 73* or some nice cushy little number in an anonymous corner of Quiz Unit.

A couple of days later I returned and this time the atmosphere was more relaxed. We went out to a café round the corner and Sickert bought the meal, despite my banging on the counter with my handkerchief.

Slowly the story began to emerge, that the Ripper episode had its origins in Cleveland Street, which at that time was the artistic centre of London where Sickert's father, Walter Richard Sickert, had his studio. At No. 22 Cleveland Street there was a confectioner's and tobacconist's shop in which Annie Elizabeth Crook worked. Her assistant, or the girl who worked in the shop with her, was Marie Kelly, the same girl who was the last Ripper victim. It was here that Prince Eddy, Duke of Clarence, had met Annie Elizabeth on one of his secret visits to the area.

There *had* been a wedding in St Saviour's Chapel but there was only one relevant witness, Marie Kelly. In 1888 there was a police raid on certain premises in Cleveland Street and two people were taken away, the Duke of Clarence and Annie Elizabeth, the latter being confined at various institutions until she died in 1920, insane. Marie Kelly had seen what had happened and also had care of a child, Alice Margaret. She fled to the East End, where she hid in a convent and the next time she was heard of was November 9th.

> All this information did not come in clear, precise, chronological order but I had to glean it from rambling and sometimes vague discussion as names and places descended on me by the dozen. They went backwards, forwards and sideways, and I was fairly confused. But out of all this the story began to take shape. The actual Ripper episode was hardly mentioned and no names were disclosed as to his or their identities, but I was given the impression that more than one person was involved.

So it went on. Sharp, Bonner and company patiently continued their research, and repeatedly visited Sickert and Jonas in an attempt to pry further information from their wary lips. Jonas would say nothing without the say-so of Sickert, and despite his earlier confidence in the BBC men, Sickert now seemed disposed to remain silent after all. Patience and sincerity are virtues, however, and as such reap their reward. Sickert, a shy and troubled man, at last realized he could completely trust his new friends, and felt he could mention, in confidence, a few names. But even then the story did not come either concisely or completely. The same rambling conversations were carried on, with no attempt at all to convince, merely to talk. He seemed to find some sort of relief in telling his story at last. And finally, the unbelievable narrative which his father had handed down to him began to make some sort of sense.

But still Sickert was adamant that his story must not be made public. He could see no benefit, only suffering, resulting from the publication of the truth so long after the event. Let them all bicker and squabble over their theories. What did it matter? He said he had even begun to think it was a mistake his having spoken in the first place. If he had kept quiet the story would have died with him, and 'the sins of the fathers would not have been visited on the sons', as he so enigmatically put it. The BBC team as well as Sickert's own closest friends, notably Jonas, set to work to show him that if he knew the truth it was his duty to speak out. His own Church, the Roman Catholic Church, rigorously opposed the concealment of any sin. Only good could come from the truth being known. After many weeks of coaxing, cajoling, reasoning and persuasion he came reluctantly to the conclusion that it would perhaps be best if his long-secret story were told. So on Friday 17th August 1973 Joseph Sickert appeared as a surprise witness in the final episode of the *Jack the Ripper* series.

I met Sickert the following month when I visited his Kentish Town home to interview him on behalf of the *East London Advertiser*. He had been chary on the phone, but agreed to see me after I pointed out that the *Advertiser* was the one surviving newspaper covering the area where the Whitechapel Murders had taken place, so had a sort of personal interest. He agreed that after his appearance on television he had nothing to lose by explaining his story more fully to the people of the East End. I found him a nervous little man, charming but withdrawn. His swept-back hair and elegant beard were silver-grey, and his face was rugged and aristocratic. He looked, I thought, like a delicate buccaneer. His voice was a self-contradiction, being at once genteel and rough. He pronounced words badly, but spoke them elegantly. He would say ' 'arsh' not as if it were 'harsh' and he was too lazy or untutored to pronounce the 'h', but as if ' 'arsh' were the correct pronunciation, and he spoke such peculiar diminutives with perfect diction. His friends knew him affectionately as Hobo. He did not seem eager to have any further publicity.

After several cups of coffee and a long dialogue on the ethics of speaking the truth at all costs, he seemed to warm to me, and said, 'I may have remained silent too long, I don't know. But the more time went by the more certain I became that no good would come of speaking out. I confess I do feel less burdened now I have shared what I know.'

Then he told me the whole story. His mother had been a nervous woman whose fears and unhappiness were born in the dreadful isolation of a workhouse childhood. Congenitally deaf, she had started life at a disadvantage. The brutal treatment she had received during much of her early life had combined with her physical disability to make her unnaturally shy of contact with strangers. She was over-protective towards Joseph, and from his earliest days the boy was given the impression that some sinister memory haunted his mother's life. The odd unguarded word, snatches of conversation accidentally overheard, his mother's visible tenseness when a policeman came into sight—all this convinced the perceptive young Joseph that there was something in her past that threw a dark shadow over her present.

Years later, when he was about fourteen, his father, the famous Impressionist painter Walter Sickert, took him aside one day and in confidential tones recounted a tale the boy at first found impossible to believe. The story began, he said, sub-siding into an armchair, in Victoria's Court in the early 1880s.

The Queen's grandson, Prince Eddy, later Duke of Clarence and Avondale, was a complex boy, and when he was twenty, in 1884, his mother, Princess Alexandra, became concerned about his personal development. His father Prince Edward, later King Edward VII, all but disowned his son. He did not like him, and took no pains to conceal the fact. To him the boy was a dunderhead, and about as fit to become King as one of his simpering college friends. To a devoted mother the restricted circles of the Court seemed a stifling environment in which to watch her boy grow up. If Eddy was to be King he must learn the realities of the people he would one day rule. And as he was of an artistic rather than an academic turn of mind, Alexandra looked to the world of art as the one hope for Eddy's salvation. There he could be himself; his personality could grow; he could develop something of the noble Saxe-Coburg charisma which she had once loved so much in her husband, but which in him had become submerged in immorality, and in Eddy had never appeared at all. Above all, Eddy could escape the narrow confines of the Court and the damaging antipathy of his father.

In turning to the art world Alix's eyes could not fail to come to rest on the handsome young painter Walter Sickert. Four years Eddy's senior, he was a third-generation painter, both his father and his grandfather having been artists to the Royal Court of Denmark, whence Alix herself had come twenty years before. Alix wrote to Sickert and requested him to take Eddy under his artistic wing. The Princess was used to getting her own way, and the painter was always eager to further his own interests by ingratiating himself with the influential. He readily complied with the request, and also with the proviso that Eddy's ventures into the world of reality would not reach the ears of his father or grandmother.

'Mama would be troublesome', the wayward Alix told Sickert, who well knew the rage of Victoria was not to be dismissed lightly.

During this period, in the early days of his career after his premature exit from the Slade School of Art and his apprenticeship with the great American painter Whistler, Sickert rented rooms in a great red-brick terrace house at 15 Cleveland Street, the centre of an area that had become the Montmartre of London. Cleveland Street ran parallel with Tottenham Court Road. Its surrounding by-ways formed a little Bohemian village, a self-contained community of artists, writers and shopkeepers snuggling in self-satisfied oblivion between two of the busiest thoroughfares of the metropolis. The area attracted the young, the creative and the revolutionary. The mingling of their diverse characters, consistent only in their rejection of convention, produced a colony of upper-class beatniks that included William Morris and the young Bernard Shaw.

In his long vacations from Cambridge, and during illicit absences in term-time, the young Prince would pay secret visits to Sickert. Leaving the palace in a carriage emblazoned with the Royal Arms, he would change vehicles at a predetermined spot and continue his journey to Sickert's in an ordinary coach, so forestalling by more than fifty years the system by which Edward VIII used to elude palace watchdogs when he was courting Mrs Simpson. Eddy's coachman on the second part of the journey was a likeable but ruthless young womanizer called John Netley, a man committed to carving a secure place in the service of the powerful, whatever the cost.

Eddy thrived in the relaxed atmosphere of the community, and eagerly urged Sickert to introduce him to as many varied people as the painter knew. Sickert's innate talent for seeing the good in others transcended class barriers, and he was accepted wherever he went, high or low. He was equally at ease with a fisherman or a king. Eddy grew to love him as a teacher and a friend, and grew ardently to identify himself with the alias he had assumed for his visits. As Sickert's younger brother Albert he had more freedom than he had ever tasted, and he relished the cloak and dagger touch of being referred to by his new acquaintances as 'young Mr S.'.

In the sweltering summer of 1884 Sickert introduced Eddy to a young shop-girl who frequently modelled for him. Her name was Annie Elizabeth Crook,[1] and she worked in the tobacconist's at 22 Cleveland Street, clearly visible from the front windows of the studio. Though illiterate, the girl had an effusive charm. She was of Scottish descent, and had wound her way to London from her country village in the Midlands, her rustic imagination brimming with visions of fortune in the big city. The drabness of the town had at first disappointed her, but she was intelligent enough not to be too surprised to find the streets paved with stone. She was far from beautiful, but Eddy was immediately attracted to her because of the resem-

[1] Sickert said she was also known as Annie Elizabeth Cook.

blance she bore in his eyes to his beloved mother. To say Eddy suffered from an Oedipus complex would be overstating the matter, but the relationship between him and Alix had always been one of great intimacy. The natural closeness of mother and son was intensified both by the alienation he suffered at the hands of his father, and the lack of outside stimulus inevitable for any member of a royal household. His less than healthy dependence upon her was exacerbated by her own possessive love.

Annie was flattered by the attention she received from her painter friend's younger brother. He looked at once strong and gentle, and his eyes betrayed kindness born of a strange sadness she could not fathom. On their first encounter, said Sickert, he saw those eyes look appealingly into hers, and through them a little boy seemed to reach out, as through a misty window, and he knew one side of Eddy cried out for her while another, more entrenched and cautious, restrained him. Annie could have no notion of the pangs and longings which haunted Eddy endlessly during his happy visits to Cleveland Street, and which clouded his new-found contentment with bouts of depression. For all his adolescent longings for freedom, he knew he had but to look behind to see the spectral image of the throne, which was to pursue him unremittingly to his grave. That seat of majesty must be his only objective. All other ambition must be subordinated to the natural fulfilment of his destiny, kingship.

But with Annie he could deceive himself, and in her embrace be convinced by the cheering motto of Chaucer's prioress, 'Love Conquers All'. He presently gave himself over fully to his youthful passions, and half expected his responsibilities to melt under the advance of his burning love. Their emotions flared, and each helped convince the other they were deeply in love. Perhaps they were.

Annie became pregnant almost immediately, and at Marylebone Workhouse the following April she gave birth to a girl, Alice Margaret. The child underwent two baptisms, Anglican and Catholic. The affair between the couple was still a closely guarded secret between themselves and Sickert. Annie continued to live in the basement of No. 6 Cleveland Street and to serve in the shop. A girl she had worked with there, an Irish Catholic called Mary Kelly, was paid by Sickert to give up her job and move into the basement as the child's nanny. Kelly was eager to oblige because it had been Sickert who found her the position in the first place. The proprietor of the shop had been in need of assistance, and Sickert had approached one of his many friends, a lawyer who ran an East End refuge for poor working women. Within a matter of days the lawyer had brought Kelly to Cleveland Street and she started work in the shop.

The need for secrecy over Eddy and Annie's affair was impressed upon them all by Sickert, who had been warned by Alix not to allow her son to 'get himself into trouble'. They later went through a Catholic wedding ceremony at a St Saviour's private chapel, and Sickert and Kelly were the witnesses. Sickert himself was married to Ellen Cobden in 1885, and from then on travelled regularly to Dieppe, the Normandy port where he was to produce some of his finest paintings. When Eddy was away—which was often—Sickert would traipse contentedly back and forth from France with Annie and the child in tow. At least twice during the summer of 1886 Kelly went too. During her stay she developed an affection for the more romantic ring of the French language, and laughingly insisted ever after on being addressed as Marie Jeanette.

Eddy and Annie's union was doomed from the beginning. Too many had come to know Eddy's real identity, and even the friendliest tongues began to wag incorrigibly. When insidious rumour and garbled third-hand speculation finally filtered into the higher echelons of Whitehall the reaction was first disbelief, then amazement, finally horror. The Marquess of Salisbury, then Prime Minister, hardly needed the sharply worded note instructing him to deal with the situation which had been penned in a paroxysm of fury by the Queen as soon as she learned the news. But Salisbury's interests were at variance with those of the Queen, who merely wanted the affair brought to an end and Eddy's part in it hushed up.

For Salisbury the tidings from Cleveland Street represented more than a family scandal. Victoria was furious not because she expected Eddy's behaviour to rain destruction upon the throne, but because a member of her household had dared have private feelings and a mind of his own, and that a serious course of action had been taken without Her Imperial Majesty's leave. After her initial fit of rage she regarded the episode as hardly more than an eldest son's peccadilloes, worthy of a reprimand but little more. The discerning Salisbury, however, could see that Eddy had been sowing not only wild oats, but the seeds of revolution.

Many pundits already thought Victoria would be the last monarch. Socialism was claiming new devotees with alarming speed, and there was something in the intensely patriotic spirit of the British that had always nurtured a covert mistrust of its Teutonic Royal Family. This dormant resentment was played upon unashamedly by the republicans, and as the seventies became the eighties it frequently seemed clear that England was entering her last years as a sovereign state. Poverty and disease ravaged the lower classes no worse than they had in previous reigns, but now, thanks to the republicans, the poor had someone to blame—the idle rich. There was little love for their Queen left in the hearts of the poor; the Irish spoke of her disparagingly as the Famine Queen. Finally there were attempts to assassinate her. Her son Edward's involvement in divorce scandals and his insatiable sexual appetite made the situation drastically worse.

Eddy seemed the only hope of salvaging some last vestige of the common man's affection for his Royal Family. Young and attractive, he was popularly regarded as the one King who might make the throne secure again. If he too slid on to the downward path of immorality and dissipation, Salisbury feared, the end of the monarchy was surely nigh.

In his adventures at Cleveland Street Eddy had created a danger worse even than if he had followed in his father's mucky footprints. For he had courted and married a Catholic, and even fathered a child by her. The age was bedevilled with an anti-Catholic feeling so intense that even without the prevailing threat of socialism, Eddy's marriage could have precipitated a revolution. Salisbury's first troubled Administration had begun in 1885. The following year there were dynamite outrages in London, and rioters at Trafalgar Square clashed violently with the police and the Army in the Bloody Sunday conflict. Ireland, that eternal powder keg of chaos, had exploded with renewed fervour. Salisbury was in his most desperate situation since coming to power. But he was little concerned with his own regime; that was of small consequence at a time when the monarchy and the very structure of British politics seemed on the brink of collapse. Every titbit of information was used by the socialists and republicans to embarrass and disgrace the Crown and to discredit the Government. Salisbury could see with crystal clarity that Eddy's behaviour was enough at this perilous moment of history to fire the fuel of revolution.

To end the affair quickly, he staged a raid in Cleveland Street in 1888. Sickert later described the raid to his son. It was late afternoon as he wandered into the street from Maple Street and saw a gang of ruffians lounging against the wall near Howland Street. They were all strangers, an uncommon sight in that insular community. He sensed that there was something odd in their presence, but was too immersed in his own thoughts to isolate his suspicions. Later, too late, he realized the truth. They may have been dressed as ruffians, but in reality they were a trained body of men *imitating* the loafing classes.

Suddenly a shout went up and a street brawl began. Soon that end of the street was a morass of fighting bodies. They cried out and cursed, and the vulgar spectacle drew people from their homes and shops. Sickert still could not define his fears, but he vaguely felt the acid taste of impending misfortune when he looked up and saw the studio end of the street deserted. He made off at a brisk pace towards the studio to ensure all was well with Eddy, who was staying there at the time. Before he was half-way along the street two hansom cabs turned into the road from Tottenham Street. One drew up outside the studio, the other went directly to the corner and parked by Annie's basement at No. 6. Two men in brown tweed went into the studio, and a fat man and a woman went into the basement. Sickert knew then the meaning of the charade behind him, and he knew it was too late to do anything without bringing harm upon himself. The two men came out of the studio, leading Eddy between them.

'He knew what it was all about', said Sickert, 'I could see the fear written in his face. I stood in the shadows by the shop and looked on with an awareness of the absurd inevitability of tragedy, the same in life as on the stage. Nothing can alter the inevitable.'

The man and woman emerged almost immediately from the basement and brought Annie struggling to the street. The lovers caught a last desperate glimpse of each other as their captors bundled them into separate cabs. When Eddy saw her he reached into the void between them and howled lamentably. She remained silent, but his continued sobs, soon muffled under the covers of the cab, expressed the insupportable grief of them both. Then the cabs were rattling off towards Oxford Street, one turning right at the end, the other left. Sickert never saw Eddy again—and Annie once, possibly twice. But he never again saw the carefree Annie of Cleveland Street, just a hag. The raid was all over in a minute. As the last cab turned the corner the brawl behind him ended as quickly as it had begun and the charlatans dispersed. He went away and got drunk.

Eddy was returned to Court and placed under strict supervision. Annie was confined for a hundred and fifty-six days at Guy's Hospital, and later at various workhouses and other hospitals. She died thirty-two years later, insane. But Marie Kelly escaped, Sickert knew not how, and fled back to the East End, taking the child with her. Somehow, by a tortuous route, the child was returned to Sickert, and he placed her in the care of some poor relatives. Later, about 1895, he took her to Dieppe, where she spent the rest of her childhood. Here his own story ended, he reflected soberly, but he had come to know details of what followed Kelly's flight.

In the event, removing Annie only compounded Salisbury's dilemma, for Marie Kelly fell in with a gaggle of gin-sodden East End harlots and shared her forbidden knowledge. Sickert maintained he never really knew the details of the affair, but it seemed that with the support of others, Kelly devised an ambitious blackmail, which fatal greed brought about their own destruction. Salisbury was now faced not only with the desperate need to hush up Eddy's misdemeanours; but worse, he had to conceal the ruthless way his bride had been institutionalized. A few stray but vital pebbles kicked loose by Eddy had started to dislodge an avalanche. Of one thing Salisbury was certain, said Sickert. Kelly and her accomplices had to be silenced.

The man entrusted with the mission was Sir William Gull, Physician in Ordinary to Queen Victoria, a noble and loyal servant who had several times performed discreet abortions in the marbled bedchambers of Windsor. The troublesome had more than once been rendered harmless by Gull certifying them insane. He had signed just such a bogus certificate in the case of Annie. He was possessed of a bizarre sense of humour, and an appetite for self-aggrandizement. He was also a Freemason of high standing. Sickert made the startling claim that neither the Royal Family nor the Government was behind the plot to silence Kelly, but at the instigation of Salisbury—one of the country's most influential Freemasons—the operation was carried out by and on behalf of the secret brotherhood. For Masonry was the power behind the Throne and Government alike. If the Throne went, and Britain became a republic, the Masons went too. Kelly and her cronies had to be silenced if the reins of power were to remain firmly in Masonic hands, but old Sickert thought it unlikely that Lord Salisbury ever wanted anyone murdered, or imagined for a moment that Sir William Gull would invent Jack the Ripper. It was more likely that he spoke with the rashness of Henry II over Becket and spat out angry words to the effect of, 'Will no one rid me of these meddling whores?'

It all sounded terribly unlikely.

CHAPTER TWO

The Sickert Story

I sat and looked at Joseph Sickert in silence. My mind was choked with a mass of questions so dense that to articulate any of them would instantly have obscured others. He had been speaking in his customary vague and disordered manner for nearly four hours. I was saturated with names and dates, and was having a hard job working out where facts ended and speculation began. I needed time to let it all sink in and to work out the real implication of his story. But despite my own confusion and the growing conviction that his story was not—could not be—true, I was sufficiently mesmerized by it to seek a further interview. Of one thing I was certain: Joseph Sickert may have been grossly misled, but he believed utterly in every syllable of his tale. If this was indeed the final solution, I told him, no amount of television programmes or newspaper articles like the one I was proposing to write could do justice to the story. A book was needed. The animated expression his rugged features had taken on as he became more involved in the telling of the tale seemed to recede behind a mask of stone, disappearing like a frightened bat in a sudden blaze of light. He reminded me that he had agreed to see me only in my role as reporter from the *East London Advertiser*. He was not seeking publicity, and had already turned down offers to have his story written by several well-known authors.

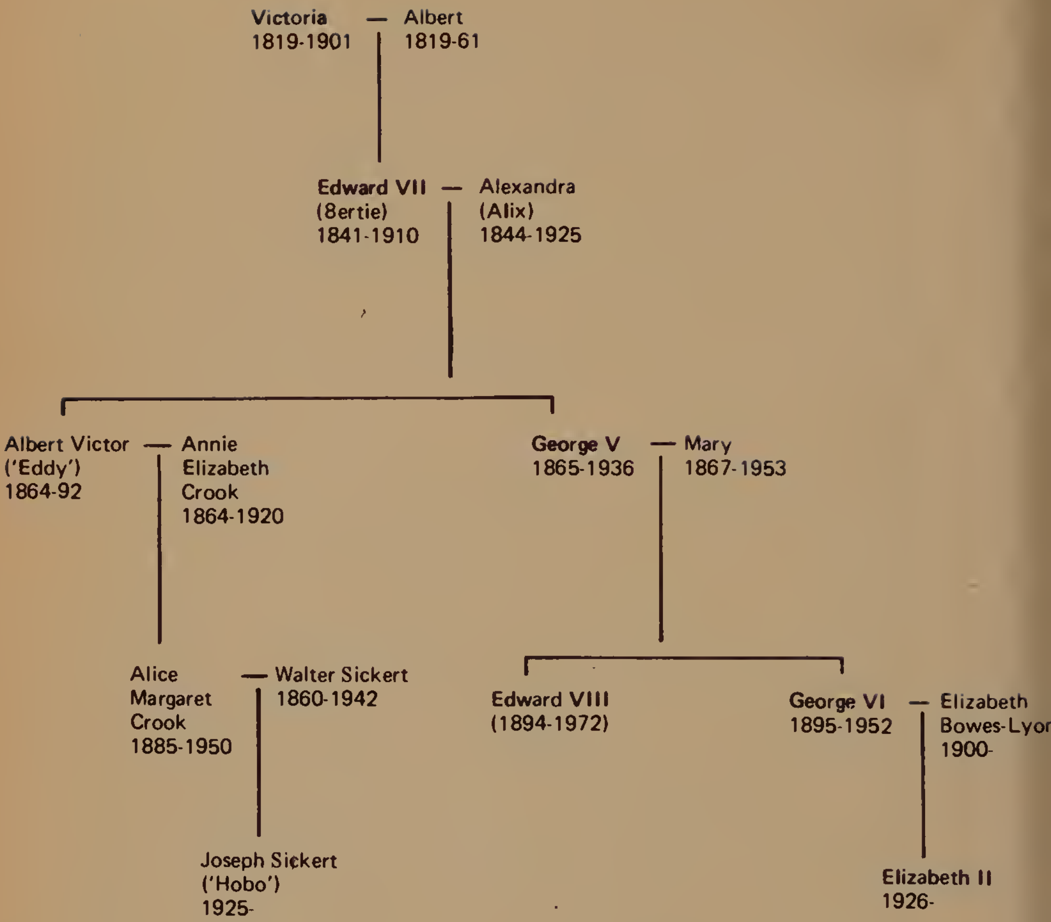
However, he did agree to see me again with a view to ironing out any details I was not clear about. He had lived with the story so long he could be forgiven for imagining that all I lacked were a few last pieces to the jigsaw. As far as I was concerned, at least, if his story was a jigsaw most of the pieces were missing and the rest lay face down. I was utterly befuddled.

I met him the following Sunday and we drove to Cleveland Street. As we toured the area where most of the early events in the Ripper saga were supposed to have taken place, he fed me extra details. Later, in between showers, we drove to the East End and walked around the grimy lanes and back alleys to the individual murder sites. I rifled his memory as we walked, and he seemed sufficiently at ease in my company by now to talk quite freely. As we wended our way through the rain-soaked streets, crowded with East Enders trudging to and from Petticoat Lane Market, and later in a tiny Commercial Street cafe over the strongest mug of tea I have ever tasted, understanding slowly dawned.

After the removal of Annie Elizabeth and the pacification of the ingenuous Eddy with a stern but paternal lecture from Lord Salisbury, the situation cooled somewhat. For the Queen, the problem was solved. It remained only for her to speak to her son the Prince of Wales in the strongest possible terms. Victoria's tirades rarely failed to wreak their desired influence on the bluff but not very tough Bertie. Reluctant but total obedience was the family tradition. This had even been the case with the christening of Bertie and Alix's eldest son; it was Victoria who chose Albert Victor Christian Edward for the infant Eddy; and it was Victoria who got her way, then as always. The anger she expended on her son over the Cleveland Street affair guaranteed that a strict discipline would be exerted upon the recalcitrant Eddy, at least for a few months.

Yet Salisbury was acutely conscious of the threat posed by the nanny, Marie Kelly. In a normal political climate the embarrassment she was capable of causing might have proved negligible. In 1888, though, her tale of the goings-on at Cleveland Street would have been seized with relish by the gossip-mongers of the republican and socialist movements. The dog-eat-dog political situation was creating some ferocious enemies for the Government and the Throne. If Kelly's scandalous morsel was picked up by these adversaries its scent would be followed back to Annie Elizabeth. The wicked treatment she had received, combined with Eddy's lamentable behaviour, would feed the revolutionary cause. The hateful spectre of a classless society loomed ever just below the horizon.

The view was, admittedly, extreme, and had taken shape in


Victoria
1819-1901
Albert
1819-61
Edward VII
(Bertie)
1841-1910
Alexandra
(Alix)
1844-1925
Albert Victor
('Eddy')
1864-92
Annie
Elizabeth
Crook
1864-1920
George V
1865-1936
Mary
1867-1953
Alice
Margaret
Crook
1885-1950
Walter Sickert
1860-1942
Edward VIII
(1894-1972)
George VI
1895-1952
Elizabeth
Bowes-Lyo
1900-
Joseph Sickert
('Hobo')
1925-
Elizabeth II
1926-

Joseph Sickert's family tree as described by his father

the mind of a man who thought he saw his beloved motherland with her back against the wall. In more stable times Salisbury was as humane as his position allowed, but these were awkward days, and the tension of the age was reflected in his policies. The sort of democracy that favoured now the Liberals under Gladstone, now the Conservatives under his own leadership, was the only basis, he believed, for a healthy society. It was not his own position as Premier, nor even the dominant role of the Tories, that Salisbury felt it his duty to protect. Who played the Administration and who the Opposition at any given moment was of minor importance when Britain's entire political system seemed threatened. What had to be made secure was the sacred Tory-Liberal merry-go-round—the Establishment. The monarchy was the foundation of that Establishment—which, according to Sickert, had always to rank more importantly in Salisbury's list of priorities than any number of individuals. Hence the removal of Annie Elizabeth and the impending measures against Marie Kelly.

For some months nothing was heard of Kelly, and Walter Sickert thought she had fled back to her native Limerick. She had left Ireland as a young girl when her father, John Kelly, faced with hopeless unemployment beyond the Irish Sea, packed up his troubles, uprooted his family of six sons and two daughters and set sail for North Wales. There he found employment at an ironworks, and eventually became a foreman. Marie married a collier called Davies when she was sixteen, but any contentment she might have found in the harsh, death-haunted life of a miner's wife was curtailed less than three years later when he was killed in a mine explosion. She spent the following eight or nine months in a Cardiff infirmary recovering from an unspecified illness, and then she moved in with a female cousin living near by. Her life had ever been simple and often poor, but the poverty and squalor of those early days of widowhood were worse than anything she had hitherto experienced. Like so many underprivileged youngsters in the two and a half centuries since the fable of Dick Whittington and his cat had first beguiled the populace, she focused her still innocent mind's eye on London Town, that merry cluster of citizens at the end of the rainbow. She arrived in 1884 and never escaped. In a few short months she was rubbing shoulders with the dregs of humanity in London's East End, though she was still a cut above the degradation later to be imposed upon her by gin, fear and vital anonymity. Shortly after arriving in London she found her way to an East End convent which provided her with board and lodging in return for the coppers she earned doing domestic work. In 1885 she found a permanent position at the tobacconist's in Cleveland Street and left the East End, planning never to return. Only three years later, in the wake of the raid, circumstances washed her back to Whitechapel, where she went into hiding.

Salisbury's investigations showed she had not fled back to Ireland, where one of her brothers was thought to be serving with a battalion of the Scots Guards. Discreet inquiries were set in motion there, and also in Wales, and at all the known points on her journey to London where it was thought likely she may have fled. But little of her history was known by any except Sickert, whose show of ignorance forced the inquiry to grind to a fruitless halt. In the absence of fresh news it seemed that any hope of development was out of the question. The minnow had swum through the gap in the shark's teeth, and it was not going to be snapped up again too easily. In the weird, paradoxical style peculiar to politicians Salisbury regarded the failure as success. For Kelly to have evaded his net so completely she was remaining silent. As soon as she broke her silence with any degree of effect her whereabouts would be revealed, and she could be removed. If she was never heard of again it would only be because she had held her tongue. If she did that she would be harmless. And safe.

In late July or early August the inevitable and long-awaited clue arrived. A shoddy and unsophisticated attempt at blackmail was initiated. The old painter never revealed who had been the victim of the demand, but it was for a paltry—in other circumstances he might have said laughable—sum. It emanated from the East End. It seemed the blackmail was being practised only to pay protection money to a better-organized gang of blackmailers. Sickert was not familiar with the details, but it was discovered that Kelly was involved with three prostitutes, into whose class she had descended to fight off starvation, and at their instigation had resorted to the blackmail. It was a desperate act. She had seen enough of the Cleveland Street raid to enable her to predict her own fate if she were discovered. But fear is relative. It was easy to run the risk of a distant danger if the gamble delivered her from a close one. The perils at hand were death from starvation and the more sinister threats of the blackmail gang of which she had fallen foul. This was probably the Old Nichol Gang, which demanded money and dealt out violence and even death to the holder of an empty purse. Life was never cheaper than in Whitechapel in the eighties. Three women—Nichols, Chapman and Stride—were found to be involved in Kelly's pathetic coterie, and they had to be rendered harmless. On 31st August the operation began.

Sir William Gull was entrusted with the mission. In many ways an unlikely candidate, he was, in Salisbury's opinion, best qualified for the job for several reasons. Perhaps most significant, he was one of the country's most prominent

Freemasons, and had played a leading part in the select Masonic gatherings called by Salisbury to debate how best to handle the Cleveland Street case. As Sickert had impressed upon his son before, Freemasonry was the power behind the Government, and it was the unseen influence of the Masonic elders which dictated major policies, not the pleasing façade of Commons debate. As Gull was already deeply committed it was unnecessary to introduce an extra party. A loyal servant of Masonry who could see the value of the Crown to the secret brotherhood was essential for the task. Gull epitomized these qualities. Thanks to his ascension into the higher degrees of Masonry, he had, in 1871, been introduced to Princess Alexandra when her husband the Prince of Wales was struck down with typhoid. It had been only ten years since the death of the Prince's father, Prince Albert, of the same disease. It was therefore staggering at the time, and it has never been satisfactorily explained since, that the unknown Gull, son of a country barge-owner, should have been called in to attend the Prince, and that the Royal Physician, Sir William Jenner, should have been called merely as second opinion. Gull's supremacy as a Freemason explains his sudden promotion over the head of the greatest doctor in England. With Jenner's assistance he cured Bertie, but alone he reaped the rewards, receiving a baronetcy the following year. By 1888 he had repeatedly been made aware of the debt he owed to Freemasonry, and its subtle manipulation of those in power. He had already institutionalized Annie Elizabeth Crook with a bogus certificate of insanity, and no doubt Salisbury fully expected him to act in a similar way with Kelly and her associates.

What was not taken into account was Sir William's highly developed sense of the bizarre and his adamantine determination to proceed with a course of action entirely in his own way. He had always been hard-headed to the point that it was said his resemblance to Napoleon went beyond physical appearance. Since a minor stroke in 1887 his steadfastness in remaining faithful to any decision he may have made, however abstruse, was almost obsessional. He decided that capturing the whores and incarcerating them like Annie Elizabeth could have proved almost as unwise as allowing them to remain free. One poor woman shrieking for her truths to be heard and begging inspectors, doctors and visitors to believe she was the wife of a prince could easily have been dismissed as mad. But four apparent lunatics crying out the same tale, even though they were mere East End whores, would have produced a pattern many would have been eager to interpret. If to certify or imprison them was out of the question, and to leave them at large was clearly unthinkable, to kill them was the only practical alternative to Gull's ruthless mind.

He proceeded, said Sickert, to eliminate the women strictly according to Masonic ritual, and though Salisbury was disquieted by the embarrassment the murders caused his Cabinet, he was simultaneously pleased at the shameless display of Freemasonic supremacy it represented. Gull was conforming to a time-honoured Masonic rule, and nothing could be done to dissuade him from his course.

He was driven into the East End on several reconnaissance trips in the carriage of John Netley, chosen because he too was already deeply involved in the affair, having chauffered Eddy to and from Cleveland Street. Advance inquiries by Netley elicited the rough whereabouts of the victims, and Kelly herself was located with the aid of a picture. The third member of the Ripper party—and this seemed the most slender thread of Sickert's amazing story—was none other than the Assistant Commissioner of the Metropolitan Police and another high-ranking Freemason of the same lodge as Gull and Salisbury, Sir Robert Anderson. Gull had set aside a month for the whole operation to be completed. During that time he planned to kill the four women Nichols, Chapman, Stride and Kelly. In keeping with some weird Freemasonic principle, he contrived to spread a panic and terror that would be brought to a frightening climax with the final killing. But something went wrong, and for a reason Sickert never learned Catherine Eddowes was mistaken for Kelly and died in her place.

Because of the deliberately engineered panic which had a stranglehold on the East End after Eddowes's murder, it was out of the question to renew the quest for Kelly straight away. Thus Jack the Ripper lurked in the shadows for thirty-nine days, and many thought his day was done. But on 9th November, the morning of the Lord Mayor's Show, when most of the police force was absorbed with duties centred around that splendid event, Marie Kelly too was silenced. And Jack the Ripper dissolved into the nothingness from which he had so violently erupted only ten weeks before.

During the lull before the final murder Annie Elizabeth was removed from Guy's Hospital, said Sickert. Again his knowledge was vague, but he felt sure some vile operation had been performed upon her, he suspected by Gull himself. Whether this had been an attempt to erase dangerous memories from her mind he could only guess; but on the one or two occasions he saw her after that her personality had been transformed. She seemed only half aware, and did not recognize him. Unaccountably, she had also become subject to violent epileptic fits. She spent almost the whole of the rest of her life confined in workhouses, prisons and infirmaries. Whatever experiment may have been carried out on her, however, she did not totally forget her past. For on one occasion only she somehow managed to escape from an institution, and by sheer determination found Sickert's friends near Cleveland Street who were caring for Alice Margaret. She was soon rearrested, and returned to the workhouse.

'Audaces fortuna juvat—fortune favours the bold', said Walter Sickert, succumbing to his weakness for expressing himself in other languages. 'The Ripper crimes met with such ghastly success because of the audacity with which they were executed.'

He said the murderers located their victims, and in the cases of Nichols, Chapman, Stride and Eddowes they offered them a lift in their carriage. All but Stride were murdered inside the vehicle as Netley jogged through the busy main streets. The killers later allowed Netley to place the bodies where they were found. Stride was too drunk to be reasoned with, and she shambled off along the road when the carriage came to a halt near her. Netley concealed the vehicle in a dark thoroughfare south of Commercial Road, and Gull remained inside. Anderson and Netley followed Stride to Berner Street, and there she was accosted by Netley as Anderson kept watch, said Sickert. The coachman overpowered her, threw her to the ground and slashed her throat. They quickly made their way back to the carriage where Gull awaited them and drove on to Aldgate to murder the helpless tart they believed was Kelly. One of the two younger men—Sickert did not say whether it was Netley or Anderson—had learned Kelly was in custody at Bishopsgate Police Station for drunkenness. They knew that at any time after midnight she could be released, in keeping with the humane and expedient policy of the City Police whose cells were not adequate for them to retain all the drunks they arrested in a night. Kelly was still at large, however, for the Aldgate victim turned out to be Eddowes. Sickert never knew how she was mistaken for Kelly. When she was finally run to earth, Kelly, who alone of the victims had her own room, was murdered indoors.

'Only the undreamed of but simple truth that the murders of Nichols, Chapman and Eddowes did not take place where the bodies were found explains the impossible speed with which these elaborately brutal killings were executed, and the queer lack of blood on the ground near the bodies', Sickert explained.

The painter was induced to remain silent about the whole affair, he frankly confessed to his son, by fear for his own safety. He knew more than anyone else about Jack the Ripper, apart from the actual participators in the conspiracy. He felt relieved that he was allowed to remain in England, even though he did spend as much time as practical on the Continent to be away from the heart of the web. He even bought himself a house at Dieppe when he was toying with the idea of leaving England permanently. No actual threats were made but he did receive some strange, disconcerting warnings that he never fully described.

His silence was further guaranteed one day when he was working in his Dieppe studio. He was touching up a hurriedly painted river scene, a fishing-boat bobbing on a gentle swell. Suddenly and without warning the door opened and Lord Salisbury walked in. Without examining the picture on the easel, or even casting a glance at the rest of the canvases scattered about the room, he offered Sickert an immediate £500 for the picture. Sickert was surprised by the episode, but it did not take him long to work out the reason behind it. No mention had been made of Cleveland Street or the Whitechapel Murders, but he would have been a dullard not to have seen that the exorbitant fee was hush-money. At a time when he had to fight off a damaging sense of complacency if he received three pounds for a painting, the warning was almost welcome. As little would have been achieved by defiance, he accepted the bribe and remained silent until the day he felt compelled to tell all he knew to Joseph.

One violent and unexpected postscript was that the loathsome Netley, misguidedly believing he would find favour with the powerful, continued a lone campaign against Alice Margaret. If he killed her, he seemed to imagine, he would remove the final blemish from the future of his masters. Alice Margaret had at first been taken from Sickert and removed to Windsor, where she was to have been found somewhere to live and to have been cared for as befitted a royal child, however unwanted. Eventually the embarrassment of her presence became too acute, and, chiefly due to the machinations of those behind the Ripper murders, she was returned to Sickert. He passed her on to some poor relatives, and later had her looked after in Dieppe. Netley twice tried to murder the controversial infant by running her down with his cab—once in 1888 at the height of the Ripper's reign of terror and once in February 1892. On the first occasion he ran Alice Margaret down as she crossed either Fleet Street or the Strand with an elderly relative. When the cab struck her it passed right over her body. The driver was later described to Sickert by the relative, and he knew it could be none other than Netley. Sickert said that in the confusion after the second 'accident', in Drury Lane, Netley pushed through the crowd and fled to Westminster Bridge, pursued by several passers-by. He threw himself into the Thames and drowned. When Alice Margaret grew up she married a man called Gorman, who turned out to be impotent. Her relationship with Sickert had always been close, and the desperate loneliness that descended on her with growing deafness and a marriage devoid of physical love made the step from being Sickert's ward to being his mistress a natural one. She was his lover for more than twelve years, bore him a son, Joseph, and died in 1950. Sickert himself died in 1942.

As the years passed and the events of 1888 failed, like the rest of Sickert's memories, to fade into a uniform vagueness contrasted only by the odd pinnacle of clearly remembered detail, a strange effect manifested itself. He found himself, half willingly and half unconsciously, painting into his pictures cryptic references to the truth behind the Ripper murders. For many years, he said, it was his way of living with his ghastly knowledge and, in a perverse way, almost of setting the record straight.

CHAPTER THREE

The Truth and Nothing but the Truth?

In an article about Jack the Ripper in the *Pall Mall Gazette* in December 1888 the Earl of Crawford and Balcarres declared:

> In endeavouring to sift a mystery like this, one cannot afford to throw aside any theory, however extravagant, without careful examination, because the truth might, after all, lie in the most unlikely one.

Unlikely as Sickert's story was, it would have been irresponsible to dismiss it merely because it sounded absurd—it cried out to be investigated. To be fair, though, even absurd was an understatement. It sounded the most arrant, if entertaining, nonsense ever spun about Jack the Ripper, with the possible exception of the suggestion that the murderer was an escaped gorilla.

If the details of the road ahead were indistinct, at least its general direction was clear: every point in Walter Sickert's story had to be checked to see if any part of it was true. It could well have been a sensational fiction. It seemed significant that Walter offered no evidence to support his story. He had anxiously petitioned Joseph not to breathe a word, so he had clearly not expected it to reach the ears of the public. Perhaps this was why he produced no corroboration. Or perhaps the whole narrative was a pack of lies, and there *could* be no corroboration.

Admittedly a few facts were immediately apparent which began to establish Sickert's credentials. Hereditary deafness has blighted the Sickerts, just as it has the Royal Family. Princess Alexandra passed the disability on to her son Eddy. If Eddy had fathered a child as Sickert claimed it is almost certain she would have carried the trait. Alice Margaret Crook, the daughter Sickert ascribed to Eddy, was deaf. The registers of the St Pancras Board of Guardians, under whose care she came in 1902, make the terse comment: 'Stone deaf'. That the affliction was permanent is confirmed by a report made out by the Relieving Officer of the Westminster Union on 11th October 1905, on which date Alice Margaret applied for workhouse assistance because an injury to her foot was preventing her earning her own living. In a column headed, 'Cause of Distress, Temporary or Permanent', her deafness is once again noted. Her son Joseph is almost completely deaf in one ear, and his youngest daughter has no hearing at all. There is no evidence that Alice Margaret's mother Annie suffered any form of deafness, so the disability is almost certain to have been inherited from her father. Photographs of Joseph Sickert's three daughters as young children bear a certain similarity to a portrait of Eddy's three sisters, painted in 1883 by S. P. Hall, now hanging in the National Portrait Gallery. Joseph himself is the image of Walter Sickert, and appears to bear no physical resemblance to members of the Royal Family. A photograph of Alice Margaret, however, shows a marked similarity between her features and those of Princess Alexandra. Most noticeable are the widely spaced eyes, small mouth and firm, rounded chin. The story of Walter Sickert's fear for his own safety in the years succeeding the murders makes sense of a bewildering aspect of his life that even his friends were at a loss to explain—his frequent unexpected trips to the Continent. One of his closest friends, Marjorie Lilly, recalls his odd restlessness, his unpredictable departures for Dieppe and his equally unexpected returns. These disappearances were all the more difficult to account for because they damaged his influence on the development of new styles in painting. He could and should have wrought enormous changes in England's artistic policies. Instead he would return after long absences to an England where he would be dismissed as 'dated'.

These scattered facts which were emerging from the complicated Sickert saga were not evidence, however. The first task was to investigate Walter Sickert himself and to discover, for instance, if he was even remotely likely to have been chosen by Alix to befriend her son. It seemed inconceivable.

But Sickert was not, as I had always imagined, a down-at-heel artist whose penetrating paintings of low life reflected his own sordid background. He did have connections with royalty. He was born at Munich on 31st May 1860, the eldest son of Oswald Adalbert Sickert. Paint ran in their veins. Notable artistry first appeared in the family with Johann Jürgen Sickert, Walter's Danish grandfather, who was born at Flensborg in Schleswig-Holstein in 1803. Walter wrote of him:

> He was at the same time a painter of easel pictures and head of a firm of decorators, who were employed in the royal palaces by Christian VIII of Denmark. He lived and carried on his business in Altona.

Johann Jürgen was one of the earliest lithographers, and he sent his son Oswald, Walter's father, to study at Paris. Oswald, who was born at Altona in 1828, came to the attention of King Christian VIII through his father, who was in close contact with the Royal Family in the course of his work at the palace. Christian was so impressed with the talent of the young Oswald, which first manifested itself, according to Walter, in 'an astonishing portrait of himself at the age of sixteen', that he conferred on him a travelling purse to Copenhagen where he became a royal painter. Here it is quite likely that he came to know the whole Royal Family on a personal level, a connection which would have lapsed in 1848 with the death of Christian and the succession of the gluttonous Philistine Frederick VII. In his time at the palace Sickert would have become familiar with all branches of the Royal Family and probably made trips to the Yellow Palace, a summer castle nestling among beech groves at Bernstorff. This was the home of the Heir Apparent, Prince Christian of Schleswig-Holstein-Sonderburg-Glücksburg, later King Christian IX, and his wife Louise of Hesse. In 1844 their daughter Alexandra—Alix—was born.

Alix came to England and married Edward, Prince of Wales—Bertie—in 1863, when she was nineteen. Five years later Oswald Sickert arrived in London with his family and made Britain his permanent home, becoming a frequent exhibitor at the Royal Academy. He continued to paint until his death in 1885, and there is no reason to assume that any friendship that may have existed in Denmark between himself and Alexandra was in any way forgotten when she became Princess of Wales and future Queen. Quite the reverse: Alix, though remarkably popular with the people, was ever an outsider with the British Royal Family, and she never fully overcame her deep nostalgia for her beloved homeland. She went out of her way to be accepted as a member of Victoria's impressive dynasty, but she also clung dearly to her few old friends still within reach. Oswald Sickert and his talented son Walter are likely to have been among that privileged group.

Indeed, there is reason to suspect from the Court gossip of the day that a close bond existed between Walter and the beautiful Alix. One writer describes her fondness for a young painter who perfumed himself and wore his hair in ringlets. Though no names are mentioned, anyone who knew Sickert would realize that the object of her affection could have been none other than he. In the late 1870s he spent four years training for the stage, and eventually joined Henry Irving's company at the Lyceum. He was so proficient at the art of make-up that he successfully defied his own mother to pick him out from a crowd of actors on the stage. His disguise as a gnarled and toothless old man quite deceived her. The influence of the theatre never left Sickert, and even after he had turned his back on acting he would live the life of the artiste rather than the artist. He would change his appearance almost as frequently as his old cronies who still trod the boards in a different role every night at the Lyceum. One day his light brown hair would cascade in floods of curls over his shoulders and he would parade in flamboyant, cavalier clothes. The next day he would have cropped his hair *en brosse* and would go about for weeks in stern greys and blacks.

In later years Sickert was so firmly ensconced in the Royal circle that his second wife, Christine Drummond-Angus, was given the honour of embroidering a vestment of Sickert's design for use on State occasions. The garment, known as the Blue Tunicle, is kept at Westminster Abbey and has been used at every coronation, royal wedding and funeral since it was donated in 1920.

Ennui, one of Sickert's paintings which he told his son contained a veiled reference to the truth behind the Ripper crimes, was at one time owned by Queen Elizabeth, the Queen Mother.

Sickert has been charged with spreading many contradictory stories about the identity of the Whitechapel Murderer, and though this accusation is false, it is easy to see how it evolved. Until his story about Eddy and Annie Elizabeth, which he shared with no one but his son, Sickert told only one story about the Ripper. But he told it so regularly and to so many people that at second and third hand it suffered inevitable distortion. Sickert thus became the source of an imbroglio of conflicting tales, despite the fact that he had told only one.

Marjorie Lilly remembers Sickert as 'a strange, compelling and complicated man'.

She said, 'He had a passion for conversation and naturally took centre stage at any gathering without realizing he did so. His fascination with the Ripper case was intense and I thought perhaps he knew the truth.'

The story he repeatedly regaled her with during their twenty-five-year friendship was always the same. And she maintains it was the same version he told everyone else. Sickert himself told his son that he invented this story deliberately. His knowledge about the Ripper burned inside him like a torch, and he could not prevent his conversation drifting on to the subject of the murders. Revealing the truth, he believed, would have put him in danger. His invented 'solution' served two purposes: it satisfied his unending need to chatter on about the Ripper, and over many years it provided him with an entertaining after-dinner yarn that automatically made him the most magnetic person in any group, a position he delighted in occupying.

It is fortunate that Osbert Sitwell was sufficiently stimulated by Sickert's apparent fixation with the Ripper to record the bogus account. He recalled it in his introduction to *A Free House!*. an anthology of Sickert's writings. Sitwell wrote:

> Some years after the murders he had taken a room in a London suburb. An old couple looked after the house and when he had been there some months the woman, with whom he used often to talk, asked him one day, as she was dusting the room, if he knew who had occupied it before him. When he said "No", she had waited a moment and then replied, "Jack the Ripper?" . . .
>
> Her story was that his predecessor had been a veterinary student. After he had been a month or two in London, this delicate-looking young man—he was consumptive—took to occasionally staying out all night. His landlord and landlady would hear him come in about six in the morning and then walk about in his room for an hour or two, until the first edition of the morning paper was on sale, when he would creep lightly downstairs and run to the corner to buy one.

> Quietly he would return and go to bed. But an hour later, when the old man called him, he would notice, by the traces in the fireplace, that his lodger had burnt the suit he had been wearing the previous evening. For the rest of the day the millions of people in London would be discussing the terrible new murder, plainly belonging to the same series, that had been committed in the small hours. Only the student seemed never to mention them: but then he knew no one and talked to no one, though he did not seem lonely . . . the old couple did not know what to make of it: daily his health grew worse and it seemed improbable that this gentle, ailing, silent youth should be responsible for such crimes. They could hardly credit their own senses and then, before they could make up their minds whether to warn the police or not, the lodger's health had suddenly grown much worse and his mother, a widow who was devoted to him, had come to fetch him back to Bournemouth where she lived. . . . From that moment the murders stopped. He died three months later.

The story has had a remarkable effect: firstly it inspired Marie Belloc Lowndes to write her best-selling novel *The Lodger*. By way of Mrs Lowndes, Sickert has inspired two plays, at least five films, including *The Man In The Attic* and *The Phantom Fiend*, and a two-act opera by Phyllis Tate also called *The Lodger*.

It has even been suggested that a serious theory about the Ripper's identity, hailed by many as the closest we are likely to get to the truth, can also be traced back to Sickert. The assertion, which unfortunately is not substantiated by any documentary evidence, is made by Donald McCormick in his book *The Identity of Jack the Ripper*. It concerns the theory about Montague John Druitt, who has been the prime suspect in the case since the publication in 1965 of Tom Cullen's *Autumn of Terror* and Daniel Farson's *Jack the Ripper* in 1972. The starting-point of their investigations was a paragraph in the private notes of Sir Melville Macnaghten, a hurried draft of his official notes in the Scotland Yard file. These were shown to the two authors by Sir Melville's daughter, Lady Christabel Aberconway, who died in August 1974.

The combined researches of Cullen and Farson produced what on the surface looks like a plausible case against Druitt, a failed barrister who drifted into the teaching profession. In fact the case against Druitt is non-existent, as will be shown in Chapter 8.

McCormick says that he traced a London doctor who knew Sickert, and whose father was at Oxford with Druitt. This doctor maintained that Sickert repeated his lodger yarn to Sir Melville Macnaghten one day at the Garrick Club. Sir Melville latched on to the story because, like the veterinary student, Druitt also had a widowed mother living at Bournemouth. The argument runs that the inclusion of Druitt's name on Macnaghten's list of suspects was a direct result of hearing Sickert's tale and coupling the obviously fictitious student with the man whose body was dragged from the Thames on the last day of 1888.

Until McCormick can produce the name of his London doctor, however, his suggestion is no more than an interesting possibility.

Whether or not Sickert was responsible for Druitt's nomination as a Ripper candidate we may never know, but Druitt did play a part in the rambling saga the painter expounded to his son. Sickert said that from the very beginning Druitt had been a scapegoat, though he had no idea how he had been selected or how the shady arrangements had been made.

The answer to that one would have confounded even Sickert.

CHAPTER FOUR

The Murders

A murder story rarely loses anything in the telling. When the tale is as compelling and ghastly as the Whitechapel Murders it cannot fail to be embellished and distorted beyond measure. Jack the Ripper rapidly became absorbed into the folklore of East London, and no one would reproach the working folk whose possession he has become for adding their own spice to the much-told tale. The cockney granddad, sitting by the hearth surrounded by his eager brood, can be forgiven for adding a dash of romance, or somehow writing himself into the story. The same understandable weakness in his forebears transformed Robin Hood from a mean criminal into the noblest of England's folk-heroes.

It is one of the tasks of the historian to pare away the interpolations of later years, to part fact from legend without demolishing either, for both are valuable when properly set in context. It is a sombre reflection that in the case of Jack the Ripper several so-called serious historians have betrayed their responsibility and set down in print their own invented details and baseless speculation as definite fact. Their stories, perpetuated in print, were not the transient bedtime tales of the common folk, the once-heard fairy tale spoken in hushed tones in the flickering firelight and then gone for ever. Their dishonesty has done more to hinder the search for truth than all the hundreds of honestly concocted fables that have spilled from almost every front parlour and public bar in the East End. Even senior policemen of the day, notably Sir Robert Anderson, fabricated details about the Ripper to inject new, if bogus, life into their memoirs. Numerous authors in journals and full-length books have followed their example, to imbue with apparent logic often completely misguided arguments. The most extreme offender, it seems, was a romancer called Leonard Matters. His book *The Mystery of Jack the Ripper*, published in 1929, is based on unsupported and palpably false statements, developing along a ragged tangent of wild speculation masquerading as fact. Even the smallest act of dishonesty on the part of an author is reprehensible, for while appearing to clarify it obscures the already fading threads of truth.

Is it possible, then, after nearly ninety years of conjecture and deception, to get back to basics? The only documentary records likely to be free of exaggeration and romance are the notes of the policemen directly engaged on investigating the case at the time. In his *Jack the Ripper in Fact and Fiction*, published in 1965, Robin Odell complained:

> It is a pity . . . that Inspector Abberline, who was in charge of the murder hunt, never took up the pen. Of all the persons who played a part in the search for the murderer, none was more actively in touch with events than the inspector.

But though he never wrote a book, Inspector Frederick George Abberline did take up the pen. Abberline's writings on the Ripper, and those of his fellow-inspectors engaged on the case, were not sensational flannel for otherwise drab autobiographies, but were handwritten Special Reports written on the spot at the time of the killings. They contain no extraneous detail and are direct and to the point, if quaintly punctuated. They are the most accurate and valuable writings on the Whitechapel Murders, and the reason they have never before been published is that since 1888 they have been kept in the secret files of Scotland Yard and the Home Office.

Though the closed files at the Yard were not to have been opened to the public until 1992, I was granted permission to see them, and spent four days in July 1974 copying their contents verbatim. They are stored in a grubby cardboard box and comprise three bulging manila folders, each stamped with a code number and the words *Closed Until 1992*. They are known for convenience as the *Victims*, *Suspects* and *Letters* files, the latter containing hundreds of letters received from cranks the world over, many of them written in red ink and some in blood, and the majority of them signed 'Jack the Ripper'.

Between 1888 and 1891 all papers and reports concerning murders in the vicinity of Whitechapel were consigned to the *Victims* file. In 1892 the file was closed, and two years later Sir Melville Macnaghten inserted his own notes in the vain hope of making the rest clear. The *Victims* folder, neatly tied with pink tape, contains individual case files marked thus:

> EMMA ELIZABETH SMITH, aged 45, murdered on 3rd April 1888.
> MARTHA TABRAM alias TURNER, aged 35 to 40, murdered on 7th August 1888.
> **MARY ANN NICHOLLS [sic] murdered on 31st August 1888.**
> **ANNIE SIFFEY alias CHAPMAN, murdered on 8th September 1888.**
> **ELIZABETH STRIDE, murdered on 29th September 1888.**
> **CATHERINE BEDDOWES [sic], murdered 29th September 1888.**
> **MARIE JEANETTE KELLY, murdered on 9th November 1888.**
> ROSE MYLETT alias LIZZIE DAVIS, murdered on 26th December 1888.
> ALICE McKENZIE, murdered on 17th July 1889.
> TRUNK OF A FEMALE, found on 10th September 1889.
> FRANCES COLES, murdered on 13th February 1891.

Only those I have indicated by bold type were victims of the Ripper, as will be shown presently. The reports in the individual files tell much of the story. Mary Ann Nichols, the first victim, was found in Bucks Row—now Durward Street—a dark thoroughfare running parallel with and close to the day and night bustle of Whitechapel Road. Inspector J. Spratling of J Division takes up the story in his Special Report written only a few hours after the murder:

> P.C. 97J Neil reports at 3.45 a.m., 31st inst. [August], he found the dead body of a woman lying on her back with her clothes a little above her knees, with her throat cut from ear to ear on a yard crossing at Bucks Row, Whitechapel. P.C. obtained the assistance of P.C.'s 55H Mizen and 96J Thain. The latter called Dr Llewellyn, No. 152 Whitechapel Road. He arrived quickly and pronounced life to be extinct, apparently but a few minutes. He directed her removal to

> the Mortuary, stating he would make a further examination there, which was done on the ambulance.
>
> Upon my arrival there and taking a description I found that she had been disembowelled, and at once sent to inform the doctor of it. He arrived quickly and on further examination stated that her throat had been cut from left to right, two distinct cuts being on the left side. The windpipe, gullet and spinal cord being cut through, a bruise apparently of a thumb being on the right lower jaw, also one on left cheek. The abdomen had been cut open from centre of bottom of ribs on right side, under pelvis to left of the stomach; there the wound was jagged. The omentum or coating of the stomach was also cut in several places, and two small stabs on private parts appeared done with a strong bladed knife, supposed to have been done by some left handed person, death being almost instantaneous.
>
> Description: age about 45; length 5 ft 2 or 3; complexion dark; hair dark brown turning grey; eyes brown; bruise on lower right jaw and left cheek, slight laceration of tongue; one tooth deficient front of upper jaw, two on left of lower.
>
> Dress: brown ulster, 7 large brass buttons (figure of a female riding a horse and man at side thereon), brown linsey frock, grey woollen petticoat, flannel drawers, white chest flannel, brown stays, black ribbed woollen stockings, men's spring-sided boots, cut on uppers, tips on heels, black straw bonnet, trimmed black velvet.
>
> I made enquiries and was informed by Mrs Emma Green, a widow, New Cottage adjoining, and Mr Walter Purkis, Eagle Wharf, opposite, also of William Louis, night watchman to Messrs Brown & Eagle at wharf near, none of whom heard any screams during the night, or anything to lead them to believe that the murder had been committed there.
>
> The stations and premises of the East London and District Railways, also the wharves and enclosures in the vicinity have been searched but no trace of any weapon could be found there.
>
> P.C. states he passed through the Row at 3.15 a.m. and P.S. 10 Kirley about the same time, but the woman was not there then and is not known to them.

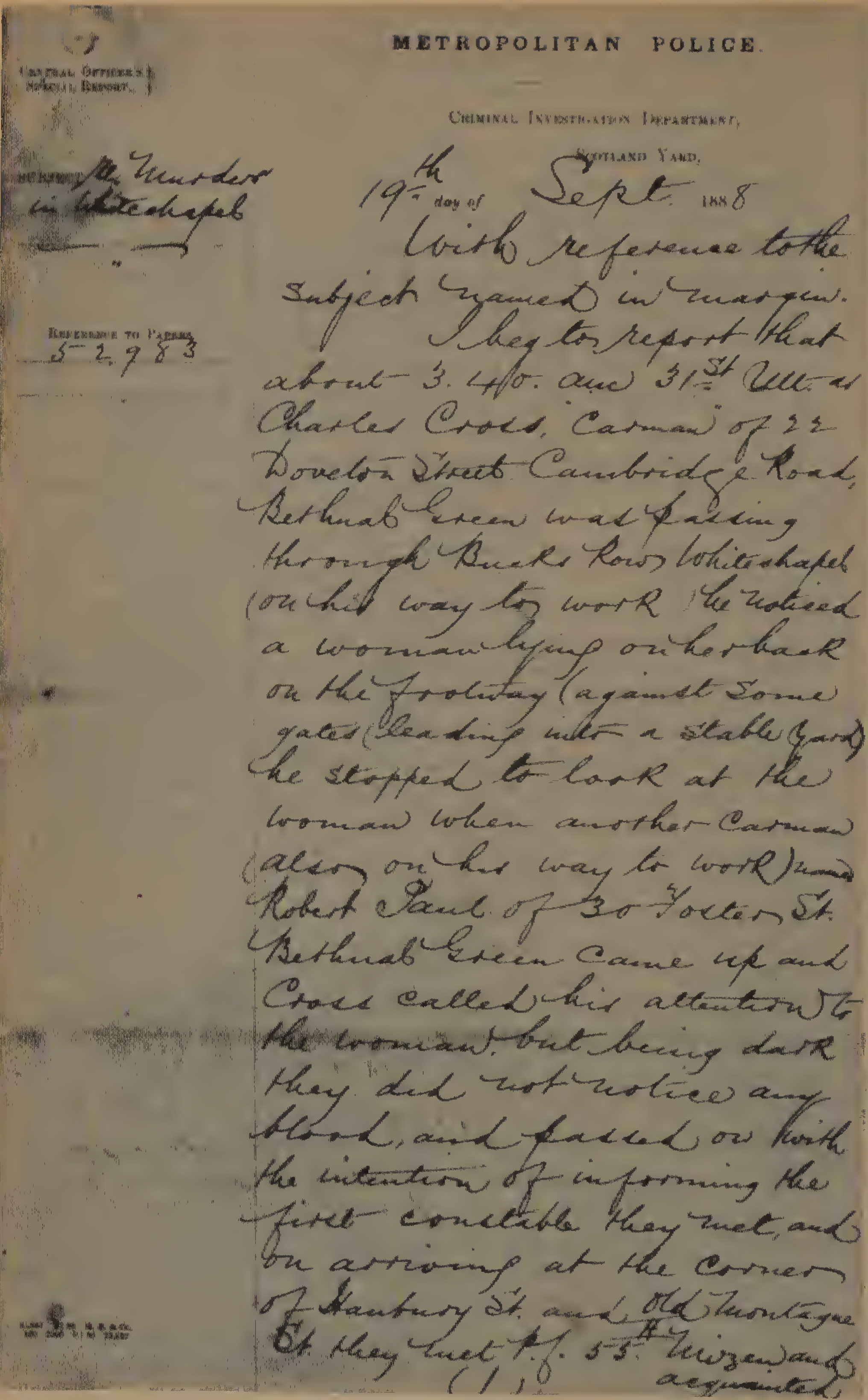
A more complete account written in the strong, attractive copperplate of Abberline himself once the inquiry had got under way, says:

> About 3.40 a.m. 31st ult. as Charles Cross, carman of 22 Doveton Street, Cambridge Road, Bethnal Green, was passing through Bucks Row, Whitechapel (on his way to work)

he noticed a woman lying on her back on the footway (against some gates leading into a stable yard). He stopped to look at the woman when another carman (also on his way to work) named Robert Paul of 30 Fosters Street, Bethnal Green came up and Cross called his attention to the woman, but being dark they did not notice any blood, and passed on with the intention of informing the first constable they met. On arriving at the corner of Hanbury Street and Old Montague Street they met P.C. 55H Mizen and acquainted him of what they had seen, and on the constable proceeding towards the spot he found that P.C. 97J Neil (who was on the beat) had found the woman, and was calling for assistance.

P.C. Neil had turned on his light and discovered that the woman's throat was severely cut. P.C. 96J Thain was also called and sent at once for Dr Llewellyn of 152 Whitechapel Road who quickly arrived on the scene and pronounced life extinct and ordered the removal of the body to the Mortuary. In the meantime P.C. Mizen had been sent for the ambulance and assistance from Bethnal Green station, and on Inspector Spratling and other officers arriving, the body was removed to the Mortuary. On arriving there the inspector made a further examination and found that the abdomen had also been severely cut in several places, exposing the intestines. The inspector acquainted Dr Llewellyn who afterwards made a more minute examination and found that the wounds in the abdomen were in themselves sufficient to cause instant death, and he expressed an opinion that they were inflicted before the throat was cut.

The body was not then identified. On the clothing being carefully examined by Inspector Helston he found some of the underclothing bore the mark of Lambeth Workhouse which led to the body being identified as that of a former inmate named Mary Ann Nichols, and by that means we were able to trace the relatives and complete the identity. It was found she was the wife of William Nichols of 37 Coburg Street, Old Kent Road, a printer in the employ of Messrs Perkins, Bacon and Co., Whitefriars Street, City, from whom she had been separated about nine years through her drunken and immoral habits, and that for several years past she had from time to time been an inmate of various workhouses. In May of this year she left Lambeth Workhouse and entered the service of Mr Cowdry, Ingleside, Rose Hill Road, Wandsworth. She remained there until the 12th July when she absconded stealing various articles of wearing apparel. A day or two after she became a lodger at 18 Thrawl Street, Spitalfields, a common lodging house, and at another com-



METROPOLITAN POLICE.

Central Officer's Special Report.

Criminal Investigation Department,

Scotland Yard,

19th day of Sept. 1888

Subject Re Murder in Whitechapel

Reference to Papers 52983

With reference to the subject named in margin.

I beg to report that about 3.40 a.m. 31st Ult. as Charles Cross, "Carman" of 22 Doveton Street Cambridge Road, Bethnal Green was passing through Bucks Row Whitechapel (on his way to work) he noticed a woman lying on her back on the footway (against some gates leading into a stable yard) he stopped to look at the woman when another Carman (also on his way to work) named Robert Paul of 30 Foster St. Bethnal Green came up and Cross called his attention to the woman, but being dark they did not notice any blood, and passed on with the intention of informing the first constable they met, and on arriving at the corner of Hanbury St. and Old Montague St they met P.C. 55 H. Mizen and acquainted

(1)

The first page of Inspector Abberline's report mon lodging house at 56 Flower & Dean Street up to the night of the murder.

About 1.40 a.m. that morning she was seen in the kitchen at 18 Thrawl Street when she informed the deputy of the lodging house that she had no money to pay her lodgings. She requested that her bed might be kept for her and left stating that she would soon get the money. At this time she was drunk. She was next seen at 2.30 a.m. at the corner of Osborn Street and Whitechapel Road by Ellen Holland, a lodger in the same house, who seeing she was very drunk requested her to return with her to the lodging house. She however refused, remarking that she would soon be back and walked away down the Whitechapel Road in the direction of the place where the body was found. There can be no doubt with regard to the time because the Whitechapel church clock chimed 2.30 and Holland called the attention of the deceased to the time.

We have been unable to find any person who saw her alive after Holland left her. The distance from Osborn Street to Bucks Row would be about half a mile. Inquiries were made in every conceivable quarter with a view to trace the murderer but not the slightest clue can at present be obtained.

Eight days later the killer struck again. As yet he had not been baptized by the unknown crank who, towards the end of September, would send a letter signed 'Jack the Ripper' to the Central News Office. For the moment he was still known only as the Whitechapel Murderer, faceless, elusive, and somehow, even after only two killings, already more frightening than any villain to have emerged from the deeply villainous East End.

At 6.10 on the morning of 8th September Inspector Joseph Chandler was on duty at Commercial Street Police Station, Spitalfields, when he received information that another woman had been murdered. The crime had taken place in Hanbury Street, a long, narrow thoroughfare running east from Commercial Street. It was named after the local firm of brewers, Truman, Hanbury & Buxton, and today the concrete bulk of Truman's Brewery occupies most of one end of the street—including the site of the Ripper's second murder.

In 1888 the road had no feature to distinguish it from any of the mean streets of dilapidated four-storey brick houses, crumbling and rat-infested, that scarred the landscape in every direction. These buildings—no stretch of the imagination will allow 'homes'—were the scab which concealed a festering sore: humanity at its most degraded and corrupt. Most of the houses in Hanbury Street were built in the second quarter of the eighteenth century, when the inhabitants of Spitalfields were prosperous Huguenot silk-weavers and when, in springtime, countless window-boxes would create a blaze of red and yellow beauty in every street. Never did prosperity tumble on to the helter-skelter of misfortune with such dire results. John Stow's *Survey of London*, published in 1598, describes the area as it had been before the relentless expansion of the capital swallowed it whole:

> On all sides without the houses of the suburb are the citizens' gardens and orchards, planted with trees both large and sightly and adjoining together. On the north side are the pastures and plain meadows, with brooks running through them, turning water-mills with a pleasant noise. Not far is a great forest, a well-wooded chace, having good covert for harts, bucks, does, boars and wild bulls. The corn-fields are not of a hungry, sandy mould, but as the fruitful fields of Asia, yielding plentyful increase, and filling the barns with corn.

But urbanization in itself had not brought poverty. In the late 1500s, when the area was first seriously developed, it was nothing if not fashionable. The half-starved wretches who haunted Hanbury Street in the 1880s could have no conception that the squalid tenements directly opposite where the new murder had taken place had at one time been a fine orchard, or that at Easter 1559 it had been no condescension but an honour for Queen Elizabeth I to attend with more than a thousand escorts a joyful service at St Mary's Spital, when there had been morris dancers and a festive accompaniment of trumpets, flutes and drums. But since those days, when Piccadilly itself was a ploughed field overlooking a broad sweep of meadows and rooftops to the sailing barges of the Thames, perhaps any transformation was possible. In 1649, the year of King Charles I's execution, property at the western end of Hanbury Street included three houses, a yard, two sheds, a cowhouse and a garden as well as the orchard already mentioned.

The golden days of the Huguenots were brought to an abrupt end with the first stirrings of the Industrial Revolution. Steam-power soon gave birth to the steam loom. The silk-weavers who had operated their hand looms at home were sucked into the factories. The human element vanished, and what had been a well-organized craft took on the sweat and drudge of mass production. The fortunes of the area and its people simply disintegrated. And it was to a decaying, grimy and disease-ridden slum that Inspector Chandler turned his steps that cold September morning.

> I at once proceeded to No. 29 Hanbury Street and in the back yard found a woman lying on her back, dead, left arm resting on left breast, legs drawn up, abducted, small intestines and flap of the abdomen lying on right side above right shoulder, attached by a cord with the rest of the intestines inside the body; two flaps of skin from the lower part of the abdomen lying in a large quantity of blood above the left shoulder; throat cut deeply from left and back in a jagged manner right around the throat.
>
> I at once sent for Dr Phillips, divisional surgeon, and to the station for the ambulance and assistance. The doctor pronounced life extinct and stated the woman had been dead at least two hours. The body was then removed on the police ambulance to the Whitechapel Mortuary.
>
> On examining the yard I found on the back wall of the house (at the head of the body) and about 18 inches from the ground about six patches of blood varying in size from a sixpenny piece to a point, and on the wooden pailing on left of the body near the head patches and smears of blood about 14 inches from the ground.
>
> The woman has been identified by Timothy Donovan, deputy of Crossinghams lodging house at 35 Dorset Street, Spitalfields, who states he has known her about 16 months as a prostitute, and for past 4 months she had lodged at above house. At 1.45 a.m. 8th instant she was in the kitchen, the worse for liquor and eating potatoes. He (Donovan) sent to her for the money for her bed, which she said she had not got and asked him to trust her, which he declined to do. She then left stating that she would not be long gone. He saw no man in her company.
>
> Description: Annie Siffey, age 45; length 5 ft; complexion fair; hair wavy, dark brown; eyes blue; two teeth deficient in lower jaw, large thick nose.
>
> Dress: black figured jacket, brown bodice, black skirt, lace boots, all old and dirty.
>
> A description of the woman has been circulated by wire to all stations and a special enquiry called for at lodging houses etc., to ascertain if any men of a suspicious character

> or having blood on their clothing entered after 2 a.m. 8th inst.

In a detailed fifteen-page report on the first two murders, Abberline recorded that there was 'no doubt that the same person committed both murders'. He went on:

> The identification in this case has also been clearly established. She was the widow of a coachman named Chapman who died at Windsor some 18 months since from whom she had been separated several years previously through her drunken habits, and who up to the time of his death made her an allowance of 10/– per week. For some years past she has been a frequenter of common lodging houses in the neighbourhood of Spitalfields, and for some time previous to her death she had resided at 35 Dorset Street where she was last seen alive at 2 a.m. on the morning of the murder . . . From then until her body was found no reliable information can be obtained as to her movements.

The murderer withdrew into the shadows and left a disorganized police force and dumbfounded Press and public making metaphorical stabs at solving the puzzle, all as useless as his own real ones had been deadly. For three weeks nothing happened. But it was the calm before the storm. On 29th September he reappeared for a veritable orgy of violence, and perpetrated his notorious 'double event', two killings in one night. The first was Elizabeth Stride, forty-five years old, a gangling Swede known as Long Liz. The second was Catherine Eddowes, two years younger, a pathetic little woman who through drink and years as a street-walker looked nearer sixty, as mortuary photographs of her show. From comments about her at her inquest, though, it seems she somehow managed to maintain a chirrupy sauciness.

It is surprising that, after the wealth of written notes in the Yard files relating to Nichols and Chapman, those on the remaining Ripper victims are almost empty. In the case of Eddowes this is understandable. As she was murdered in City Police territory Scotland Yard were not in charge of the investigation into her death, as they were with all the other victims. But the dearth of information in the Stride file is less easy to understand. It contains no direct report of the murder or of police inquiries. And Kelly's file, which any reasonable investigator would expect to find crammed with reports, statements, maps and copious other material, is the sparsest of them all. The fourteen pages of notes relating to Stride do contain some new and important evidence which will be examined in depth in a later chapter. For information about the murder itself, however, we are presented solely with a clipping from the *Daily News* of 6th October, which is the first document in the file. Even this does not deal so much with the murder as with the inquest. In the Home Office file, however, there is a report on the actual murder by Chief Inspector Donald Swanson. Before examining Swanson's report, another important Ripper document that has never before been published, let *The Times* of Monday, 1st October, set the scene:

> The scene of the first crime is a narrow court in Berners-street [*sic*], a quiet thoroughfare running from Commercial-road down to the London, Tilbury and Southend Railway, At the entrance to the court are a pair of large wooden gates, in one of which is a small wicket for use when the gates are closed. At the hour when the murderer accomplished his purpose these gates were open; indeed, according to the testimony of those living near, the entrance to the court is seldom closed. For a distance of 18ft or 20ft from the street there is a dead wall on each side of the court, the effect of which is to enshroud the intervening space in absolute darkness after sunset. Further back some light is thrown into the court from the windows of a workmen's club, which occupies the whole length of the court on the right, and from a number of cottages occupied mainly by tailors and cigarette makers on the left. At the time when the murder was committed, however, the lights in all of the dwelling-houses in question had been extinguished, while such illumination as came from the club, being from the upper story [*sic*], would fall on the cottages opposite and would only serve to intensify the gloom of the rest of the court.

Swanson's Home Office report, dated 19th October, says:

> I beg to report that the following are the particulars respecting the murder of Elizabeth Stride on the morning of 30th September 1888.—
>
> 1 a.m. 30th Sept. A body of a woman was found with the throat cut, but not otherwise mutilated, by Louis Diemschutz (secretary to the Socialist Club) inside the gates of Dutfield's Yard in Berner Street, Commercial Road East, who gave information to the police. P.C. 252 Lamb proceeded with him to the spot and sent for Drs Blackwell and Phillips.

> 1.10 a.m. Body examined by the doctors mentioned who pronounced life extinct, the position of the body was as follows:—lying on left side, left arm extended from elbow, cachous lying in hand, right arm over stomach, back of hand and inner surface of wrist dotted with blood, legs drawn up, knees fixed, feet close to wall, body still warm, silk handkerchief round throat, slightly torn corresponding to the angle of right jaw, throat deeply gashed and below the right angle apparent abrasion of skin about an inch and a quarter in diameter.
>
> Search was made in the yard but no instrument found.

The central section of this report contains a previously unpublished piece of evidence that becomes crucial when viewed in the light of the Sickert version of the murders. The evidence will be fully examined later. The last part of the report says:

> The body was identified as that of Elizabeth Stride, a prostitute, and it may be shortly stated that the enquiry into her history did not disclose the slightest pretext for a motive on behalf of friends or associates or anybody who had known her. The action of police besides being continued in the directions mentioned in the report respecting the murder of Annie Chapman was as follows.
>
> A. Immediately after the police were on the spot the whole of the members who were in the Socialist Club were searched, their clothes examined and their statements taken.
>
> B. Extended enquiries were made in Berner Street to ascertain if any person was seen with the woman.
>
> C. Leaflets were printed and distributed in H Division asking the occupiers of homes to give information to police of any suspicious persons lodging in their houses.
>
> D. The numerous statements made to police were enquired into and the persons (of whom there were many) were required to account for their presence at the time of the murders and every care taken as far as possible to verify the statements.
>
> Concurrently with enquiry under head A the yard where the body was found was searched but no instrument was found . . .
>
> Under head C. 80,000 pamphlets to occupiers were issued and a house to house enquiry made not only involving the result of enquiries from the occupiers but also a search by police and with a few exceptions—but not such as to convey suspicion—covered the area bounded by the City Police boundary on the one hand, Lamb St., Commercial St.,

> Great Eastern Railway and Buxton St., then by Albert St., Dunk St., Chicksand St. and Great Garden St. to Whitechapel Road and then to the City boundary. Under this head also Common Lodging Houses were visited and over 2,000 lodgers were examined.
>
> Enquiry was also made by Thames Police as to sailors on board ships in Docks or river and extended enquiry as to Asiatics present in London. About 80 persons have been detained at the different police stations in the Metropolis and their statements taken and verified by police and enquiry has been made into the movements of a number of persons estimated at upwards of 300 respecting whom communications were received by police and such enquiries are being continued.
>
> Seventy-six butchers and slaughterers have been visited and the characters of the men employed enquired into, this embraces all servants who have been employed for the past six months.
>
> Enquiries have also been made as to the alleged presence in London of Greek Gipsies, but it was found that they had not been in London during the times of the various murders.
>
> Three of the persons calling themselves Cowboys who belonged to the American Exhibition were traced and satisfactorily accounted for themselves.
>
> Up to date although the number of letters daily is considerably lessened, the other enquiries respecting alleged suspicious persons continues as numerous.

As previously explained, the second murder of the night was that of Catherine Eddowes in Mitre Square, Aldgate. Enemy action during the Second World War so badly damaged the stations of the City Police, under whose jurisdiction the murder fell, that few of their extant documents predate the 1940s. The papers relating to the killing of Catherine Eddowes were among those destroyed in the Blitz. As the Scotland Yard file on Eddowes contains only some horrid photographs of her body taken at the mortuary and an irrelevant extract from the *Philadelphia Times* of Monday, 3rd December 1888, it seemed there was no surviving contemporary report of the murder written by a man actually connected with the case. But in February 1975 when I was granted access to the Home Office files I found a plethora of notes, some actually written by a City policeman engaged on the case. But the eight-page report written by Inspector James McWilliam of the City of London Police Detective Department leaves many questions unanswered. As Henry Matthews, the Home Secretary, scribbled on a sheet of paper attached to McWilliam's report, 'The printed report of the inquest contains much more information than this. They evidently want to tell us nothing.'

A far more complete report of the murder, which is also in the file, was compiled, ironically, by the Metropolitan Police. On 6th November Swanson wrote:

> I beg to report that the facts concerning the murder in Mitre Square which came to the knowledge of the Metropolitan Police are as follows:—
>
> 1.45 a.m. 30th Sept Police Constable Watkins of the City Police discovered in Mitre Square the body of a woman, with her face mutilated almost beyond identity, portion of the nose being cut off, the lobe of the right ear nearly severed, the face cut, the throat cut, and disembowelled. The P.C. called to his assistance a Mr Morris, a night watchman and pensioner from Metropolitan Police, from premises looking on the Square, and surgical aid was subsequently called in, short details of which will be given further on in this report.
>
> The City Police having been made acquainted with the facts by P.C. Watkins the following are the results of their enquiries so far as known to Met. Police:—
>
> 1.30 a.m. the P.C. passed the spot where the body was found at 1.45 a.m. and there was nothing to be seen there at that time.
>
> 1.35 a.m. Three Jews, one of whom is named Mr Lewin[1] saw a man talking to a woman in Church Passage which leads directly to Mitre Square. The other two took but little notice and state that they could not identify the man or woman, and even Mr Lawende states that he could not identify the man; but as the woman stood with her back to him, with her hand on the man's breast, he could not identify the body mutilated as it was, as that of the woman whose back he had seen, but to the best of his belief the clothing of the deceased, which was black, was similar to that worn by the woman whom he had seen, and that was the full extent of his identity.
>
> 2.20 a.m. P.C. 245A Long (the P.C. was drafted from A Division temporarily to assist "H" Division) stated that at the hour mentioned he visited Goldstone [Goulston] Street Buildings, and there was nothing there at that time, but at
>
> 2.55 a.m. he found in the bottom of a common stairs

[1] This man's name was in fact Joseph Lawende. Interestingly, Swanson spells his name correctly only a few lines on.

leading to No. 108 to 119 Goldstone Street Buildings a piece of a bloodstained apron, and above it written in chalk, the words, "The Juwes are the men who will not be blamed for nothing", which he reported, and the City Police were subsequently acquainted at the earliest moment, when it was found that beyond doubt the piece of apron found corresponded exactly with the part missing from the body of the murdered woman.

The surgeon, Dr Brown, called by the City Police, and Dr Phillips who had been called by the Metropolitan Police in the cases of Hanbury Street and Berner Street, having made a *post mortem* examination of the body reported that there were missing the left kidney and the uterus, and that the mutilation so far gave no evidence of anatomical knowledge in the sense that it evidenced the hand of a qualified surgeon, so that the police could narrow their enquiries into certain classes of persons. On the other hand as in the Metropolitan Police cases, the medical evidence shewed that the murder could have been committed by a person who had been a hunter, a butcher, a slaughterman, as well as a student in surgery or a properly qualified surgeon.

The result of the City Police enquiries were as follows:—beside the body were found some pawn tickets in a tin box, but upon tracing them, they were found to relate to pledges made by the deceased, who was separated from her husband, and was living in adultery with a man named John Kelly, respecting whom enquiry was at once made by Metropolitan and City Police, the result of which was to shew clearly that he was not the murderer. Further it shewed that the deceased's name was Catherine Eddowes, or Conway who had been locked up for drunkenness at Bishopsgate Street Police Station at 8.45 p.m. 29th and being sober was discharged at 1 a.m. 30th. Enquiry was also made by the City and Metropolitan Police conjointly into her antecedents, and it was found that there did not exist amongst her relations or friends the slightest pretext for a motive to commit the murder.

At the Goldston [*sic*] Street buildings where the portion of the blood-stained apron was found the City Police made enquiry, but unsuccessfully and their subsequent enquiries into matters affecting persons suspected by correspondence or by statements of individuals at Police Stations, as yet without success, have been carried on with the knowledge of the Metropolitan Police, who on the other hand have daily acquainted the City Police with the subjects and natures of their enquiries.

Upon the discovery of the blurred chalk writing on the wall, written—although mis-spelled in the second word—in an ordinary hand in the midst of a locality principally inhabited by Jews of all nationalities as well as English, and upon the wall of a common stairs leading to a number of tenements occupied almost exclusively by Jews, and the purport of the writing . . . was to throw blame upon the Jews, the Commissioner deemed it advisable to have them rubbed out. Apart from this there was the fact that during police enquiries into the Bucks Row and Hanbury Street murders a certain section of the Press cast a great amount of suspicion upon a Jew named John Pizer, alias "Leather Apron", as having been the murderer, whose movements at the dates and hours of those murders had been satisfactorily enquired into by Met. Police, clearing him of any connection, there was also the fact that on the same morning another murder had been committed in the immediate vicinity of a socialist club in Berner Street frequented by Jews—considerations which, weighed in the balance with the evidence of chalk writing on the wall to bring home guilt to any person, were deemed the weightier of the two. To those police officers who saw the chalk writing, the handwriting of the now notorious letters to a newspaper agency bears no resemblance at all.

Rewards were offered by the City Police and by Mr Montagu [the M.P. for Whitechapel] and a Vigilance Committee formed, presided over by Mr Lusk of Alderney Road, Mile End, and it is to be regretted that the combined result has been that no information leading to the murderer has been forthcoming. On the 18th Oct. Mr Lusk brought a parcel which had been addressed to him to Leman Street. The parcel contained what appeared to be a portion of a kidney. He received it on 15th Oct. and submitted it for examination eventually to Dr Openshaw, curator of London Hospital Museum, who pronounced it to be a human kidney. The kidney was at once handed over to the City Police, and the result of the combined medical opinion they have taken upon it is that it is the kidney of a human adult, not charged with fluid, as it would have been in the case of a body handed over for purposes of dissection to an hospital, but rather as it would be in a case where it was taken from the body not so destined. In other words similar kidneys might and could be obtained from any dead person upon whom a post mortem had been made from any cause, by students or dissecting room porter. The kidney, or rather portion of the kidney, was accompanied by a letter couched as follows:—

> From Hell
>
> Mr Lusk
> Sir
> I send you half the
> Kidne I took from one women
> prasarved it for you tother piece I
> fried and ate it was very nise. I
> may send you the bloody knif that
> took it out if you only wate a whil
> longer
> signed Catch me when
> you can
> Mishter Lusk

The postmarks upon the parcel are so indistinct that it cannot be said whether the parcel was posted in the E. or E.C. districts, and there is no envelope to the letter, and the City Police are therefore unable to prosecute any enquiries upon it.

The remaining enquiries of the City Police are merged into those of the Metropolitan Police, each force cordially communicating to the other daily the nature and subject of their enquiries.

The foregoing are the facts so far as known to Metropolitan Police, relating to the murder in Mitre Square.

An exquisite cunning that surpassed even the diabolical success of the early murders was in evidence in the killing of Catherine Eddowes. No scream or sound of a scuffle was heard; if the murder indeed took place in the Square it was committed less than fifteen minutes before the discovery of the body, and the killer's timing was uncannily precise, for P.C. Watkins had passed through on his beat only a quarter of an hour before and seen nothing. In that brief space of time the murderer had apparently not only performed in total silence the elaborate butchery described in Swanson's report, he had also carried out the delicate surgical operation involved in removing one of the woman's kidneys. The kidney is one of the most difficult organs to locate, as it is secreted deep inside the body and concealed in a mass of fatty tissue. Yet the remains of Eddowes were found in the darkest corner of Mitre Square. No theorist has yet been able to explain how the Ripper worked with such silent skill and swiftness, his efficiency unimpaired by the impenetrable gloom.

The mad confidence of the Ripper seemed to have reached a climax, breaking through the limits of his self-control. Since his first frenzied appearance he had left no clues. Now he appeared to lay them deliberately. An irrational sense of invincibility has frequently been the downfall of arrogant murderers. Not so Jack the Ripper. What looked like his act of supreme defiance—the writing on the wall—only created worse confusion among his hunters.

After the double murder, the newspapers disclosed that a letter written in red ink and signed 'Jack the Ripper' had been received by the Central News Office, having been posted in the London E.C. area two days before the murder. A day after the murder, a postcard was received bearing the same signature. The name needed to be published only once. Within hours of the appearance of the first issues of the newspapers containing the texts of the two messages the name Jack the Ripper had seared itself into the minds of East Enders as indelibly as a red-hot brand on cowhide.

Panic descended on the East End. Centenarian William Ifland is one of the few people left who know exactly what it was like living in Whitechapel through the grim autumn of 1888. He was born in Russia in 1873. At the age of thirteen he fled the persecution and poverty of life under the Tsars, and after tramping half-way across Europe with his aged aunt and baby sister he found a ship that was sailing for England—a country where, as far as he knew, a Jew could live free of the fear of pogroms. The ship docked at Tilbury in 1886, and in a matter of days the three penniless immigrants, without a word of English between them, had been mercifully absorbed into the Russian quarter of the East End. They eventually found drab lodgings in Gun Street, Whitechapel. At the end of 1888, shortly after the Ripper committed his final atrocity, William —now nearly sixteen—set off on his own for Canada.

At the age of a hundred and one, in September 1974, he caught his first glimpse of England in eighty-six years. After a lifetime beyond the Atlantic he wanted to see Europe again before he died.

I met the diminutive Ifland in his room at the Kensington Hilton on the last day of his stay in London. He was due that morning to fly to Rome, where he was to begin an exhaustive tour of Europe's capitals. In the previous week he had been reunited with his sister Lena, a toddler when he had last seen her, at her home in Sidney Street, Whitechapel.

'I am one of the few who remember life in the heart of the place where Jack the Ripper was on the loose', he said in English that was still thickly overlaid with Russian inflections.

'A lot of people still living were alive then, but not many were old enough to understand what was happening. But I was fifteen. I understood all right.'

He recalled the nervousness and tension evinced by nearly everyone he knew, and though it had been nearly ninety years before, and precise details had faded from his mind or become buried in generations of later experience, he said he could picture clearly 'the terrible quiet'.

'It was not a loud shouting panic that came upon us people of the East End but a long silence. Everyone was tense and quiet and I remember the agitated whispers, "Jack the Ripper has struck again", "The Ripper's been at work".'

A story in *The Times* of 12th November 1888 provides a good example of the mutual suspicion and high state of nervousness that Ifland remembers:

> Shortly after 10 o'clock last night as a woman named Humphreys was passing George-Yard, Whitechapel, she met in the darkness and almost on the identical spot where Martha Tabram was murdered, a powerful-looking man wearing large spectacles. Trembling with agitation she asked, "What do you want?" The man made no answer, but laughed and made a hasty retreat. The woman shouted "Murder" several times and soon alarmed the neighbours. Uniformed policemen and detectives ran to the yard from all directions. They entered a house into which the man had retreated, and he was apprehended. A crowd of people quickly collected, who exhibited an almost unanimous inclination to lynch the mysterious person, but the police were fortunately able to protect him. Being taken to Leman Street Police Station, he accounted for his presence in the yard by the fact that he was paying a visit to a friend who is an inhabitant of it. He referred the police to a well-known gentleman at the London Hospital, and in the result he was set at liberty.

So it came to Kelly's turn. ANOTHER WHITECHAPEL HORROR, MORE REVOLTING MUTILATION THAN EVER, screamed the *Illustrated Police News*, which devoted its entire front page to an artist's impressions of events surrounding the final killing.

No report of Kelly's death appears in either the Scotland

Yard file or the Home Office file. A scribbled note by Commissioner Sir Charles Warren, merely recording that another Whitechapel Murder had been reported and was in the hands of the Assistant Commissioner, is all the Home Office file yields. By this time the East End was in a lather of fury and terror, and the hysteria was reflected in the Press. For a balanced view of the situation the newspapers must at this stage be used sparingly: they simply cannot be relied upon. Despite the barrenness of the three major sources of information, however, an official record of events surrounding Kelly's murder does exist. The Middlesex County Records Office contains a batch of previously unpublished documents, the original statements of witnesses, made to police on the morning of the murder. All but one are in the handwriting of Abberline himself:

> *Statement of Thomas Bowyer, 37 Dorset Street, Spitalfields, in the employ of John McCarthy, lodging house keeper, Dorset Street.*
>
> Says that at 10.45 a.m. 9th instant, he was sent by his employer to number 13 room, Millers [*sic*] Court, Dorset Street for the rent. He knocked at the door, but not getting any answer he threw the blinds back and looked through the window, which was broken, and saw the body of deceased woman whom he knew as Mary Jane. Seeing that there was a quantity of blood on her person and that she had been apparently murdered, he immediately went and informed his employer Mr McCarthy, who also looked into the room and at once despatched Bowyer to the police station, Commercial Street, and informed the Inspector on duty (Insp. Beck) who returned with him and his employer who had also followed to the station. He knew the deceased and also a man named Joe, who had occupied the room for some months past.
>
> *Statement of John McCarthy, Lodging House Keeper, 27 Dorset Street, Spitalfields.*
>
> I sent my man Thomas Bowyer to No. 13 room, Millers Court, Dorset Street owned by me for the rent. Bowyer came back and called me, telling me what he had seen. I went with him back and looked through the broken window, where I saw the mutilated remains of deceased whom I knew as Mary Jane Kelly. I then despatched Bowyer to the Police Station, Commercial Street (following myself) to acquaint the police. The Inspector on duty returned with us to the scene at Millers Court. I let the room about ten months ago

to the deceased and a man named Joe, who I believed to be her husband. It was a furnished room at 4/6 per week. I sent for the rent because for some time past they had not kept their payments regularly. I have since heard the man Joe was not her husband and that he had recently left her.

Statement of Joseph Barnett, now residing at 24 and 25 New Street, Bishopsgate (a common lodging house).

I am a porter in Billingsgate Market, but have been out of employment for the past 3 or 4 months. I have been living with Marie Jeanette Kelly who occupied No. 13 room, Millers Court. I have lived with her altogether about 18 months, for the last eight months in Millers Court, until last Tuesday week (30 Ulto) when in consequence of not earning sufficient money to give her and her resorting to prostitution, I resolved on leaving her, but I was friendly with her and called to see her between seven and eight p.m. Thursday (8th) and told her I was very sorry I had no work and that I could not give her any money. I left her about 8 o'clock same evening and that was the last time I saw her alive.

There was a woman in the room when I called. The deceased told me on one occasion that her father, named John Kelly, was a foreman of some iron works and lived at Carmarthen or Carnarvon, that she had a brother named Henry serving in 2nd Battn. Scots Guards, and known amongst his comrades as John too, and I believe the Regiment is now in Ireland. She also told me that she had obtained her livelihood as a prostitute for some considerable time before I took her from the streets, and that she left her home about 4 years ago, and that she was married to a collier, who was killed through some explosion. I think she said her husband's name was Davis or Davies.

Statement of Mary Ann Cox, No. 5 Room, Millers Court, Dorset Street, Spitalfields.

I am a widow and an unfortunate.[1] I have known the female occupying No. 13 room, Millers Court about 8 months. I knew her by the name of Mary Jane. About a quarter to twelve last night I came into Dorset Street from Commercial Street, and I saw walking in front of me Mary Jane with a man. They turned into the court and as I entered the court they went indoors. As they were going into her room, I said good night Mary Jane. She was very drunk and could scarcely answer me, but said good night. The man was

---

[1] The Victorian euphemism for 'prostitute'.

> carrying a quart can of beer. I shortly afterwards heard her singing. I went out shortly after twelve and returned about one o'clock and she was still singing in her room. I went out again shortly after one o'clock and returned at 3 o'clock. There was no light in her room then and all was quiet, and I heard no noise all night.
>
> The man whom I saw was about 36 years old, about 5ft 5 in. high, complexion fresh and I believe he had blotches on his face, small side whiskers and a thick carroty moustache, dressed in shabby dark clothes, dark overcoat and black felt hat.[1]
>
> Mary Jane was dressed I think, last night when I saw her, in a linsey frock, red knitted cross-over around shoulders, had no hat or bonnet on.

The following statement is the only one of the batch not written out personally by Abberline:

> *Elizabeth Prater, wife of William Prater of No. 20 room, 27 Dorset Street, states as follows:—*
>
> I went out about 9 p.m. on the 8th and returned about 1 a.m. 9th and stood at the bottom of Millers Court until about 1.30. I was speaking for a short time to a Mr McCarthy who keeps a chandler's shop at the corner of the court. I then went up to bed. About 3.30 or 4 a.m. I was awakened by a kitten walking across my neck, and just then I heard screams of murder about two or three times in a female voice. I did not take much notice of the cries as I frequently hear such cries from the back of the lodging-house where the windows look into Millers Court. From 1 a.m. to 1.30 a.m. no one passed up the court, if they did I should have seen them. I was up again and downstairs in the court at 5.30 a.m. but saw no one except two or three carmen harnessing their horses in Dorset Street. I went to the "Ten Bells" P.H. at the corner of Church Street and had some rum. I then returned and went to bed again without undressing and slept until about 11 a.m.

> *Statement of Caroline Maxwell, 14 Dorset Street, Spitalfields, the wife of Henry Maxwell, a lodging house deputy.*
>
> I have known deceased woman during the past 4 months, she was known as Mary Jane and that since Joe Barnett left her she has obtained her living as an unfortunate. I was on

---

[1] The man with the carroty moustache was cleared of suspicion because Kelly was seen with another man later.

speaking terms with her although I had not seen her for 3 weeks until Friday morning 9th instant about half past 8 o'clock. She was then standing at the corner of Millers Court in Dorset Street. I said to her, what brings you up so early. She said, I have the horrors of drink upon me as I have been drinking for some days past. I said why don't you go to Mrs Ringer's (meaning the public house at the corner of Dorset Street called the Britannia) and have ½ pint of beer. She said, I have been there and had it, but I have brought it all up again. At the same time she pointed to some vomit in the roadway. I then passed on, and went to Bishopsgate on an errand, and returned to Dorset Street about 9 a.m. I then noticed deceased standing outside Ringers public house. She was talking to a man, age I think about 30, height about 5ft 5in, stout, dressed as a Market Porter. I was some distance away and am doubtful whether I could identify him. The deceased wore a dark dress, black velvet body, and coloured wrapper round her neck.

Mrs Maxwell's assertion that she saw Kelly at nine o'clock when medical evidence shows she had been dead five or six hours when her body was found at 10.45, is one of the enduring mysteries concerning the Ripper case. Whether Mrs Maxwell was lying, mistaken or drunk has never been explained. The only certainty is that she was wrong.

Statement of Sarah Lewis, No. 24 Great Pearl Street, Spitalfields, a laundress.

Between 2 and 3 o'clock this morning I came to stop with the Keylers at No. 2 Millers Court as I had had a few words with my husband. When I came up the court there was a man standing over against the lodging house on the opposite side in Dorset Street but I cannot describe him. Shortly before 4 o'clock I heard a scream like that of a young woman, and seemed to be not far away. She screamed out murder. I only heard it once. I did not look out of the window. I did not know the deceased.

Sarah Lewis further said that when in company with another female on Wednesday evening last at Bethnal Green, a suspicious man accosted her. He carried a black bag.

Statement of Julia Venturney

I occupy No. 1 room, Millers Court. I am a widow but now living with a man named Harry Owen. I was awake all night and could not sleep. I have known the person occupying No. 13 room opposite mine for about 4 months. I knew the man who I saw down stairs (Joe Barnett) he is called Joe, he lived with her until quite recently. I have heard him say that he did not like her going out on the streets. He frequently gave her money. He was very kind to her. He said he would not live with her while she led that course of life. She used to get tipsey occasionally. She broke the windows a few weeks ago whilst she was drunk. She told me she was very fond of another man named Joe, and he had often illused her because she cohabited with Joe (Barnett). I saw her last yesterday, Thursday about 10 a.m.

Statement of Maria Harvey of 3 New Court, Dorset Street.

I slept two nights with Mary Jane Kelly, Monday and Tuesday last. I then took a room at the above house. I saw her last about five minutes to seven last night in her own room, when Barnett called. I then left. They seemed to be on the best of terms. I left an overcoat, two dirty cotton shirts, a boy's shirt and a girl's white petticoat and black crape bonnet in the room. The overcoat shown me by police is the one I left there.

The statements are accompanied by the following note:

> Inspector Walter Beck, 'H' Division, who was first called, together with the constables on the beat will attend at the Inquest, also myself who will speak of contents of room &c if necessary.
>
> [signed] F. G. Abberline, Inspector.

Marie Kelly was so horribly mutilated she hardly seemed any longer in human form. With her death Jack the Ripper disappeared from the face of the earth. It was as if the insane, motiveless lone killer for whom everyone was searching had never existed. Sickert, of course, maintained he never had.

CHAPTER FIVE

The Mad Pork Butcher

Between the beginning of September and a week after the death of Kelly, more than a hundred and sixty men were arrested on suspicion of being connected with the Whitechapel Murders. A study of the contemporary Press, both national and local, puts the number somewhere between a hundred and thirty and a hundred and fifty in London alone. Though newspaper references do not always name the men arrested, the number tallies closely with the multitudinous reports of arrests in the Scotland Yard file, so can be relied upon. In January 1889 the Yard sent a directive to all stations in the Metropolitan area, calling for reports on all arrests in connection with the Whitechapel Murders to be sent to headquarters. The *Suspects* file bulges with weird and wonderful suggestions about the identity of Jack the Ripper.

The papers create a strong impression that the police were playing some sort of game. They certainly had a fixed idea about the killer's class, if not his precise identity. A suspect had only to give some indication that he was not a complete layabout to be released. Merely showing to the arresting officer's satisfaction that he had an address was enough to obtain freedom. On no occasion was an alibi for the nights of the murders given and, what is stranger, none was asked for. A story related in a letter to the *Daily Express* of 16th March 1931 provides a typical example of the curious policy adopted by the police. Under the heading *I Caught Jack the Ripper*, former P.C. Robert Spicer of Woodford Green, Essex, claimed that he was on duty in the East End about two hours after the double murder on the night of 29th–30th September. Suddenly he came upon a man sitting with a prostitute on a brick dustbin. The man, well dressed and carrying a black bag, had blood on his cuffs. He evaded Spicer's questions and was promptly arrested. Certain he had caught the Ripper, the twenty-two-year-old constable marched his suspect along to Commercial Street Police Station. There, under cursory questioning from the station officer, the suspect claimed he was a respectable doctor living at Brixton. Immediately he had imparted this uncorroborated piece of information he was released, without being asked to open his bag. The suspect was not even required to explain what a respectable Brixton doctor had been doing talking to a prostitute in an East End alleyway at three o'clock in the morning.

This singular preoccupation with the addresses of suspects is well illustrated in the following reports selected from the *Suspects* file. The first was written by Inspector D. Fairey of Rochester Row Police Station:

> At about 12.40 p.m., 21st inst. [November] Mrs Fanny Drake (Conservative Club), 15 Clerkenwell Green, came to Rochester Row Station and stated she had put the police on the Whitechapel Murderer and had now called to know the result. She was walking over Westminster Bridge when a man answering the description of the murderer met her, and as he passed, gave such a grin, as she should always remember. She at once retraced her steps and followed him until opposite Westminster Abbey, when meeting a mounted Inspector she told him of her suspicion, pointed out the man, and came to this station, the inspector following and watching the man. About 5 minutes afterwards Inspr Walsh came in and stated that the gentleman referred to had been followed by him to the Army and Navy Stores, Victoria Street, Westminster, and had now come to the station to see the lady. I interviewed him in the charge room, when he at once produced a number of letters and business cards proving himself beyond doubt to be Mr Douglas Cow of Cow & Co., India-Rubber Merchants, 70 Cheapside, and 8 Kempshott Road, Streatham Common. This information I at once imparted to the lady when she at once apologized to Mr Cow for having caused him inconvenience, and both parties then left the station.

This report displays not only the widely held belief that no one 'respectable' could have been the Ripper, but also the panic that held London in its grip—a tension so extreme it compelled a woman to denounce a man as a murderer because of the way he grinned.

The 'correctness' of a man's address is once more seen as an unassailable character reference in another report in the file. Inspector J. Bird of A Division wrote:

> I beg to report that at 9.40 p.m., 22nd November 1888, James Connell of 408 New Cross Road, draper & clothier age 36, height 5ft 9in, complexion fresh, long dark brown moustache, dress: brown check suit, ulster with cape, red socks, Oxford shoes, soft felt hat, an Irishman was brought to this (Hyde Park) Station by P.C. 271A Fountain under the following circumstances. Martha Spencer of 30 Sherborne Street, Blandford Square, married, stated that he spoke to her near the Marble Arch, they walked together in the park and he began to talk about "Jack the Ripper" and Lunatic Asylums and said that no doubt, when he was caught, he would turn out to be a lunatic. In consequence of this conversation she became alarmed and spoke to the P.C. who accompanied them to the station. A telegram was then sent to Greenwich Station for enquiry as to the correctness of his address and his respectability, a satisfactory reply having been received he was then allowed to go, as nothing further suspicious transpired.

Of all the suspects arrested none was thought more likely to have been the Ripper than the Mad Pork Butcher who was arrested in Holloway on 12th September, four days after the second murder. Had the real Ripper retired after killing Chapman, no doubt Joseph Isenschmid would have gone down in history as the Whitechapel Murderer. As it later turned out, the Ripper's worst atrocities were carried out after Isenschmid was safely under lock and key.

Isenschmid's fate was sealed very early on in the Ripper investigation, when a rumour that the murderer was a man known as Leather Apron gained wide belief. Inspector Abberline wrote in his long Special Report on the murder of Nichols:

> In the course of our inquiries amongst numerous women of the same class as the deceased it was ascertained that a feeling of terror existed against a man known as Leather Apron, who it appeared has for a considerable time past been levying blackmail and illusing them if his demands were not

> complied with, although there was no evidence to connect him with the murder. It was however thought desirable to find him and interrogate him as to his movements on the night in question, and with that view searching enquiries were made at all common lodging houses in various parts of the metropolis but through the publicity given in the 'Star' and other newspapers the man was made acquainted with the fact that he was being sought for and it was not until the 10th instant [September] that he was discovered when it was found that he had been concealed by his relatives. On his being interrogated he was able however to give such a satisfactory account of his movements as to prove conclusively that the suspicions were groundless.

In an annexed report, Inspector Helston pointed out that Leather Apron was a man called Jack Pizer. Panic over the Leather Apron rumour had created a climate with all the mad fervour of a witch-hunt, and when finally poor Pizer, a boot-finisher whose house rendered up five sharp knives, was arrested and taken to Leman Street Police Station for questioning public feeling ran so high that a huge mob gathered in the street outside, calling for his blood. Even after he was exonerated the police dared not release him, and kept him in a cell for twenty-four hours lest the revenge-hungry crowd should lynch him. Shy and nervous as he was, Pizer was sufficiently enraged at the injustice he had suffered to sue several newspapers for rashly stating on his arrest that he was the killer. He won his case, and was awarded substantial damages.

Even when the story of his innocence had circulated the scandalized East Enders still would not rest. They had sunk their teeth in the Leather Apron rumour and they would not let go. If Pizer was innocent *he* was not Leather Apron, was the twisted logic of the hunt. This was Isenschmid's downfall. A loquacious publicity-seeker called Mrs Fiddymont, landlady of the Prince Albert pub in Brushfield Street, less than a quarter of a mile from Hanbury Street, took advantage of the packs of hungry newshounds who appeared so promptly from Fleet Street after the murder of Annie Chapman. Mrs Fiddymont spun the yarn to several reporters that she had seen a fearful-looking stranger in her pub at seven o'clock on the morning of the murder. According to Mrs Fiddymont, the interloper wore a stiff brown hat, a dark coat and no waistcoat. There was blood on his right hand and on his face, and his shirt was torn. His eyes, she said, were as wild as a hawk's.

As was so often the case, the police arrived to interview Mrs Fiddymont after the gentlemen of the Press had already bled her dry of information. Nevertheless, her testimony was taken down, and in the strained atmosphere of the murder hunt possibly more attention was paid to it than it might have earned in more rational times. Only three days later, a report from Holloway Police Station was received by officers at Whitechapel. It did not take long for the figment of Mrs Fiddymont's imagination to be connected with the subject of that report. Contained in the ten Special Reports in the Yard file on Chapman, it says:

> METROPOLITAN POLICE
> Y Division
> *Holloway, 11th Sept 1888*
>
> I beg to report that at 10 p.m., 11th inst., Dr Cowan, 10 Landseer Road and Dr Crabb of Holloway Road came to station and stated that Joseph Isenschmid, a butcher and a lunatic, a lodger at No. 60 Milford Road, and he having left his lodgings on several occasions at various times, it was thought that he might be connected with the recent murders at Whitechapel. In company of Sub Inspr Rose and Sergt Sealey, C.I.D., I went to the above address and saw George Tyler, occupier, who stated that at 11 p.m., 5th inst. he met Isenschmid in Hornsey Road, who asked him if he would accommodate him with a lodging.
>
> He took him home and he left the house at 1 a.m. 6th, returned at 9 p.m. 6th, left again at 1 a.m. 7th, returned at 9 p.m., left again at 6 a.m. 9th inst., returned at 6 p.m., stayed in house about 30 minutes. He then left to go to Tottenham, returned at 1 a.m. 10th, left again at 2 a.m., returned at 9 p.m. and left again at 1 a.m. 11th and has not yet returned.
>
> I then proceeded to No. 97 Duncombe Road and saw Mrs Isenschmid, his wife, who stated that she had not seen her husband during past two months, but he visited the above premises during her absence on 9th inst. and took away some clothing. She further stated that he was in the habit of carrying large butcher's knives about with him and did not know how he obtained his livelihood. His movements being suspicious, I directed P.C. 376 Cracknell to keep observation on the house and to bring Isenschmid to station, should he return, for enquiries. I also directed observation to be kept on 97 Duncombe Road, Upper Holloway. I respectfully suggest that further enquiries be made by C.I.Department.

> No description of man could be obtained sufficient to circulate at present.
>
> Jn Styles, D. Inspr.

Inspector Styles's suggestion was heeded and C.I.D. officers took the case over. In a report dated 13th September, Acting Superintendent J. West of H Division (Whitechapel) wrote:

> . . . no new facts have been brought to the notice of police excepting that a man has been detained at Holloway Station on suspicion, since removed to the Infirmary, Fairfield Road, Bow, having been certified as a dangerous lunatic. Sergeant Thick has examined the man's clothing but failed to find any trace of blood upon any of it. Enquiries are being made as to the man's whereabouts on the night in question.
>
> This man's name is Joseph Isenschmid, is a butcher by trade but failed in business about 12 months since. His arrest was brought about through information received from Drs Cowan & Crabb of Holloway, their attention having been called to him by a man named Tyler of 60 Milford Road, Holloway, who stated that Isenschmid, who was his lodger, had frequently been absent from home at early morning.

Detective Sergeant William Thick carried out investigations and on 17th September he wrote:

> I beg to report that I called several times at 60 Milford Road, Upper Holloway, with a view of interviewing Mr Tyler re the movements of Joseph Isenschmid, but failed, and I am also unable to ascertain where he is employed. On calling again yesterday I saw a boy named Briggs who informed me that Mr Tyler had removed early that morning, and he did not know where to. The boy was the only person in the house and stated that several gentlemen had called there for Mr Tyler during the last few days. He could say no more. I called on Mrs Geringher, the person referred to in wife's statement, who stated that she did not know the man I referred to and that no person but the regular customers had visited her house, a public house. I have made careful enquiries amongst Germans whom I know in this neighbourhood, but failed to find any trace of "Isenschmid" having been seen in this neighbourhood.
>
> I called at Fairfield Road, Bow, Infirmary Asylum where "Isenschmid" is still detained. I saw the Medical Superintendent who informed me that "Isenschmid" had told him

> that the girls at Holloway had called him "Leather Apron" and that he had said to them in the way of chaff, I am "Leather Apron", and he supposed they had informed the police. He was a "butcher" by trade but had failed in business. He had a few words with his wife and he left her. He was now getting his living by going to the Market early in the morning, buying sheep's heads, kidneys and sheep's feet, taking them home to his lodgings and dressing them, then taking them to Restaurants and Coffee Houses in the West End of the town, and selling them, and that that was the cause of him being up so early in the morning, and that was the only way open to him to get his livelihood.
>
> The Superintendent would like for police to give instructions what he was to do with Isenschmid. I beg to add that further and careful enquiries are being made with a view of tracing the whereabouts of Mr Tyler to obtain further particulars from him. Also other persons who are likely to give further details of Isenschmid's movements on dates of the recent murders.

The following day, the 18th, Inspector Abberline put pen to paper over the Isenschmid inquiries. He wrote:

> I beg to report that inquiries have been continued relative to the various matters in connection with the murders, including the lunatic who was detained by police at Holloway on 12th Inst., and handed over to the parochial authorities same day.
>
> He gives the name of Joseph Isenschmid, and his occupation has been that of a butcher. He is now detained at Bow Infirmary asylum, Fairfield Road, Bow, and from his description he is believed to be identical with the man seen in the Prince Albert P.H., Brushfield Street, Spitalfields, with blood on his hands at 7 a.m. on the morning of the murder of Annie Chapman. Dr Mickle, the medical officer of the Institution, has been consulted with a view to Isenschmid being seen by Mrs Fiddymont and the other witnesses. The doctor is of opinion this cannot be done at present with safety to his patient. It has been ascertained that this man has been wandering about and away from his home for several weeks past, and when he left his home he took with him two butchers knives. He has been previously confined in an asylum, and is said to be at times very violent. Although at present we are unable to procure any evidence to connect him with the murders he appears to be the most likely person that has come under our notice to

have committed the crimes, and every effort will be made to account for his movements on the dates in question.

In an H Division Special Report dated 19th September Sergeant Thick recorded the statement of Isenschmid's wife, perhaps the most incriminating of all the comments about the lunatic:

> I beg to report that on 12th inst. I called at the Islington Workhouse and found that Joseph Isenschmid had been removed from there to Fairfield Road, Bow, Infirmary Asylum. I then saw Mrs Isenschmid, his wife, at 97 Duncombe Road, Upper Holloway, who stated that they had been married twenty one years.
>
> He is a "Swiss" and was at that time employed as a journeyman butcher. They then went into business as Pork-butchers at 59 Elthone Road, Upper Holloway, but eventually failed. Her husband then began to get very much depressed and repeatedly stopped away from his home at night and remained away for several days. He has been in Colney Hatch Lunatic Asylum for ten weeks and was discharged from there about the middle of last December and came home supposed to be quite well. He then got employment as journeyman butcher at a Mr Marlett's, High Street, Marylebone, and stopped there till Whitsuntide. He then left and has done nothing since to her knowledge. He professed to have had work but did not bring home any money. He has not slept at home for quite two months. About three or four weeks ago he was found in a house in Caledonian Road and was charged. He was taken to Clerkenwell Police Court and remanded for enquiries to be made about him. He was eventually discharged. He then came home again and changed his underclothing and left again. I did not see him again.
>
> She then added, "I went away into the country to visit my friends last Sunday week (1st Inst.) and returned again on Monday following. I was then informed by my daughters that my husband had been home and took his shirts and collars away. Mr Tyler, 60 Milford Road, Upper Holloway, had called during my absence and left a message for me to call on him. I went there on Tuesday morning. I did not see my husband. When he left he had two bone knives and his butcher's clothes with him. I don't know what has become of them. I do not think my husband would injure anyone but me. I think he would kill me if he had the chance. He is fond of other women. He used to frequent a public house kept by a

> ‘German’ named Geringher in Wentworth Street, Whitechapel. He is known as the mad butcher.”

Observation was kept on Isenschmid as he languished in the asylum, Dr Mickle ready at a moment’s notice to contact Inspector Stilson if he learned anything incriminating from the lunatic. Stilson’s visits to the asylum became less and less frequent as each proved more fruitless than the last. And finally Jack the Ripper struck again and the pathetic Mad Pork Butcher of Holloway was left to rot in his cell, drowning in his own insanity.

CHAPTER SIX

The Motive

In a letter to Gladstone, then Prime Minister, from her widowhood retreat at Osborne House on the Isle of Wight, written on 11th February 1886 Queen Victoria said, 'The Queen cannot sufficiently express her *indignation* at the monstrous riot which took place the other day in London, and which risked people's lives and was a *momentary* triumph of socialism and disgrace to the capital'.

She was referring to the unexpected outcome of a meeting of the unemployed—who, it has been estimated, formed nearly 10 per cent of the working population that year—in Trafalgar Square on 8th February. It was the first and in some ways the least disturbing of the episodes of violence which were part of the social backcloth of the period in which Walter Sickert set his unlikely story.

It has already been shown that Sickert mixed with the highest and the most humble, and in the words of Osbert Sitwell was a friend of 'prize-fighters, jockeys, painters, music-hall comedians, statesmen, washerwomen and fishwives'. He certainly mixed in the right circles to share in the intimate gossip of the Court. Though there is no available *documentary* proof that he was a friend of Princess Alexandra, he was certainly a friend of her husband the Prince of Wales. The painter was a leading figure in the raffish cliques in which Bertie throve, and they met constantly at such gatherings as the wild parties thrown by Oscar Wilde. But this does not make the story true. It merely lends the teller a little more credibility.

In any murder investigation the motive is the foundation on which the case is built, unless the crimes in question are those of a lunatic, and hence motiveless. It has been generally concluded that the latter was true of the Jack the Ripper murders. Sickert, however, claimed there was a precise motive for the East End killings, and that those behind the crimes were trying to conceal the wayward behaviour of a highly placed member of the Royal Family. For a mass of reasons England was in turmoil, revolution seemed only a step away and the monarchy was already unpopular. The conspirators believed they were hushing up a scandal that was likely to topple the throne from its crumbling dais.

Whether or not the Heir Presumptive to the throne did father a bastard and marry an illiterate Catholic, the first essential was to discover whether such conduct would even have been considered important. Was there really a threat of revolution? Were the Royal Family unpopular to the extent that many thought the monarchy would end with the death of Victoria? These were the vital questions.

Several diverse political influences were coming to a head in the mid-eighties. Separately, they would undoubtedly have been troublesome. Combined as they were, they formed a positive danger to the established order.

Revolutionary feeling was reaching a new pitch. Discontent was spreading among the poorly paid working-class and the growing numbers of unemployed. Successive Governments were rocked by the Home Rule controversy which had inspired a civil conflict so savage in Ireland that, as George Earle Buckle, editor of *The Times*, wrote, 'the contagion of lawlessness spread to England'. European and Asian immigrants were flooding into all the major cities, especially the squalid environs of the docklands, where almost without exception a passing Englishman would feel an alien in his own land. The experience was new and dangerous. The proud patriotism engendered during eight hundred years of freedom from foreign invasion was under threat. The jingoistic spirit conjured up by Disraeli in the 1870s had somehow insinuated itself into the make-up of even the lowliest Briton. As men had dominion over the earth, so the English had dominion over men. The jealous possessor of an imaginary Divine Right to conquer and annex, to rule over and lead to enlightenment, the Englishman never more strongly regarded his homeland as his castle. When foreigners began spilling in such profusion into the very heart of his home cities, the resentment was bitter and prolonged. Nor did the hatred end there. Mutual suspicion and mistrust grew up between the various racial types, which through language difficulties and a fear of integration degenerated into the establishment of impenetrable ghettos. Race fights became commonplace. And as each aggressive, insecure community became increasingly insular for fear of murder or rape, the hatred deepened and the violence grew worse.

The tide of another power, socialism, which had been subject to a steady ebb and flow for thirty years, looked set by the mid-eighties to flood England and parts of Europe. Since 1849, when Karl Marx had settled in London, the focus of socialist thinking had shifted to England. Marx continued to live and write in London until his death. And though the father of Communism died in 1883, his influence lived on, expanded and propagated by his daughter Eleanor and his close friend and collaborator Friedrich Engels. In 1885, the year the royal bastard is supposed to have been born, socialism received a potent shot in the arm with the publication of the second volume of Marx's great work, *Capital*. Robert Cecil, third Marquess of Salisbury, Britain's Prime Minister during the period of the Whitechapel Murders and the man named by Sickert as the chief conspirator, was shrewdly aware of the danger he and his class faced from the disciples of Marx. Writing of events fifteen years later, the historian James Joll said:

> Karl Marx prophesied the impending destruction of the existing social order and the total re-organization of society in favour of the workers. For Marx's followers in 1900, the days of Salisbury and his kind were numbered.

On Black Monday—8th February 1886—angry crowds in Trafalgar Square heard violent speeches from the socialists John Burns and Henry Champion, and from the Marxist founder of the Social Democratic Federation, H. M. Hyndman. After the rally broke up, a militant section inflamed by the vehemence of the speakers marched through Pall Mall, St James's Street and Piccadilly to Mayfair and Hyde Park, breaking the windows of the Conservative Club, other club houses and private homes. Waving red flags and brandishing cudgels and stones, the 2 000-strong crowd swept forward, wrecking and robbing shops and causing damage and loss worth £50 000. Owing to a mistake a reserve force of police went to The Mall instead of Pall Mall. In the right place they might at least have been able to dilute the rioters' venom. Two days later in a thick fog a rumour was circulated that another mob was gathering, and in sheer panic that the 'brutal violence and infamous rapine' was to repeated many West End shopkeepers barricaded themselves in. No major incident occurred but the threat of riot in the capital was so alarming that a special committee was set up to consider the problem. It sat for nine days, with the Home Secretary himself taking the chair, and as a result of its report, which contained references to the 'grave mistakes' committed by the police, Sir Edmund Henderson, the Chief Commissioner, resigned. This did nothing to help matters. His successor, General Charles Warren, used military tactics in the vain hope of quelling the anger of the working classes who clamoured for justice—and who were incited by socialist agitators and the pangs of hunger and cold to resort to the only strength they knew, violence. Warren confronted the poor with his new-style military police force and kept them at bay all through the winter of 1886 to 1887 only with the unuttered but unmistakable threat that any breach of the peace would result in direct and bloody conflict. Consequently the unemployed proceeded to draw attention to themselves with demonstrations outside fashionable churches, which to all outward appearances were peaceful, banner-waving affairs, but which camouflaged a smouldering resentment. Such a situation could not last.

The Press began seriously discussing the possibility of a working-class uprising, and in October 1887 the prospect of further riots looked so close that Salisbury suggested Trafalgar Square be railed off. Warren had already banned public meetings as it had become a forum for agitators. But before the Prime Minister's plan could be implemented a new conflict erupted on 13th November, Bloody Sunday. Nearly a hundred thousand unemployed converged on Trafalgar Square from all sides. Among them were Eleanor Marx and members of the socialist Fabian Society, including George Bernard Shaw, the brilliant speaker Annie Besant and the artist and poet William Morris, who had declared himself a socialist and a revolutionary. The furious crowds, urged on by the socialists and radicals in their midst, and armed to the teeth with knives, sticks, pokers and iron bars, surged forward to the Square, to be met by four thousand policemen. Warren had lined the Square with three hundred Life Guards and the same number of Grenadier Guards, all armed with loaded muskets and bayonets. In the ensuing struggle one person was killed and more than a hundred and fifty injured. All was quiet by midnight, but the clash caused irreparable damage to relations between police and public, feeding the fires not only of socialism but of anarchy. In *London*, a monumental history of the capital and its people, Felix Barker and Peter Jackson describe the period 1886–9 as 'three violent years':

> It began with the tinkle of glass as stones smashed the windows of clubs in Pall Mall; it ended with a hoarse roar of victory by East End dockers when they were granted a basic rate of 6d. an hour. In the three years that separated these events, London became a violent battleground.

The other great political upheaval of the day was the increasingly bitter struggle over the question of Home Rule for Ireland. On this issue, 'the whole political world was in convulsion', according to one contemporary chronicler. Home Rule had become the burning issue since 1885. In June of that year the Liberals under Gladstone were defeated in the Commons after five years in office because the Irish members voted with the Opposition. The defeat demonstrated for the first time the influence of one Charles Stewart Parnell, leader of the Irish Nationalists. Though he had only 85 members he held the balance of power between the Liberals and the Conservatives. After Gladstone's defeat, Lord Salisbury formed a minority Conservative government, but six months later Gladstone was back with a majority over the Conservatives of 86. By this time the Grand Old Man had undergone a dramatic conversion to the idea of Home Rule, but the subsequent Bill he introduced with the intention of bringing it about was rejected by the Commons. Gladstone immediately dissolved Parliament and fought the new election of mid-1886 purely on the Irish issue. The result was a decisive victory for Salisbury's Conservatives, who gained 316 seats. Their supporters over Home Rule, the Liberal Unionists, gained 78. The Gladstonians won only 191 seats and the Parnellites 85.

The struggle for Irish independence had for years brought terror and violence to dwellers on both sides of the Irish Sea, bombings and shootings finally culminating in 1882 in the cold-blooded murder in Phoenix Park, Dublin, of the new Irish

Chief Secretary, Lord Frederick Cavendish, and his Under-Secretary Thomas Burke. The Fenians, launched specifically for the purpose of promoting revolution and over-throwing the English government in Ireland, continued with dynamite outrages at major buildings and monuments in London and the provinces. At last they made an audacious attempt at blowing up Scotland Yard itself. The Fenian threat had reached such alarming proportions by 1884 that the Special Irish Branch, the forerunner of the Special Branch, was set up to bring the problem under control.

The world is perverse. It forgives heinous crimes in its favourites and castigates the tiniest transgression in those it hates. It is fair to say the process never works in reverse. It is therefore difficult to see how a popular figure could be so viciously lampooned over a trivial error of judgement as was Edward, Prince of Wales, over the patently unimportant Tranby Croft 'scandal' of 1891. The simple answer is, that despite the eulogies of several biographers, he was *not* popular. Even the prudish, hypocritical values of late Victorian England would hardly have allowed one negligible incident to turn a whole country against a beloved prince. In fact Bertie was the possessor of an odious reputation until shortly before his accession to the throne in 1901. The gloom of dishonour and unpopularity had occasionally lessened in the forty years since he first fell seriously from public favour, but generally he was despised. And despite the rapturous appreciation of the masses at the jubilee of his ageing mother, Queen Victoria, she too suffered definite, if less prolonged, bouts of disfavour.

Tranby Croft brought the Prince into the witness box of a public court of law for the second time in his profligate life, an unprecedented step that would have been unthinkable to previous Princes of Wales. It was arguably the least serious of all his many mistakes, but it had an incalculable effect in plunging his name still deeper into the bog of notoriety. Finally, during a visit to Brussels in 1900, an anarchist fired a pistol through the open window of a train in which the Prince sat. The bullet missed its mark, but the would-be assassination was a realization of what many had pondered with a voodoo-like malice over many years. It was the culmination of public resentment and the natural consequence of several previous displays of antipathy, such as a demonstration against him when he visited Cork with Princess Alexandra in 1885. The crowd hissed and booed the royal couple, and even pelted them with onions. His notoriety spread beyond British shores, and in 1898 he was hissed and mercilessly caricatured during a visit to Paris.

Exactly how unpopular the Prince of Wales was can be gauged by the events of the Tranby Croft affair and its aftermath. In September 1890 the Prince was staying along with other guests at Tranby Croft, the Yorkshire country home of his friend Arthur Wilson, a wealthy shipowner. During a game of baccarat several guests noted that one of the players, Sir William Gordon-Cumming, was cheating. The next evening they watched his play more carefully in order to confirm their suspicions, and later reported their observations to the Prince. Foolishly, he compelled the fraud to sign an undertaking that because he had cheated he would renounce gambling for ever. Gordon-Cumming agreed in exchange for a promise that the incident would never be mentioned again. Unfortunately, the secret was shared by too many, and one of the guests betrayed him to an outsider. Fashionable society grasped the sordid titbit with customary greed. His reputation thus publicly besmirched, Gordon-Cumming sued Mr and Mrs Arthur Wilson—and other guests who had accused him of cheating—for slander. In the subsequent court hearing the Prince of Wales was treated with scant respect, and though Gordon Cumming lost his suit, the Prince was hissed by the crowds that lined his route from court. In her biography of Princess Alexandra, Georgina Battiscombe quotes a coachman who spoke of Bertie after the 'Baccarat Case'. His words, she says, reflected the feeling of many ordinary folk: 'God will never allow such a wicked man to come to the throne'.

It was alleged by the prosecution that the Prince habitually encouraged baccarat, an illegal game, that he had decided Gordon-Cumming was a cheat on the flimsiest of evidence and that he had acted improperly in not immediately reporting the charge to Gordon-Cumming's commanding officer instead of summarily dealing with it himself. Not pleasant allegations, but the most ductile imagination cannot admit they were the acts of a *wicked* man whom God would never allow to come to the throne. Such a denunciation could never have been uttered if the Prince had been even vaguely popular.

A comment made during the trial by Gordon-Cumming's counsel, Sir Edward Clarke, is interesting support of Sickert's claim that the monarchy was dangerously weak. Alleging the

Prince hushed up the initial charges against Gordon-Cumming in order to save his own honour, Clarke said there had been other examples of men ready 'to sacrifice themselves to support *a tottering throne or prop a falling dynasty*'. (My italics.) The words were plainly intended to mean that the Prince's own dynasty was perilously unsound. An advocate of Clarke's undisputed competence would not have clouded his addresses with the preposterous or irrelevant: there was something rotten in the state of England. Bertie later wrote that because of Tranby Croft he was subjected to a 'torrent of abuse . . . not only by the Press, but by the Low Church and especially the Nonconformists'.

His reputation had first suffered seriously in 1869 when he appeared in court over the Mordaunt divorce case. In *Clarence*, his biography of Eddy, Michael Harrison wrote:

> It was the indiscreet practice of the Prince of Wales to pay social calls on young married women, and to spend a considerable time with them alone, after the footman had been instructed not to disturb the *tête-à-tête*. What made the indiscretion even more noticeable was that His Royal Highness neglected to cultivate the acquaintance of the ladies' husbands—or even to express a wish to meet them.

In the Mordaunt case, the Prince was named as one of Lady Mordaunt's lovers after she calmly announced that her newborn child was not her husband's but Lord Cole's. Cole was only one of a pride of well-born rakes the promiscuous Lady Mordaunt entertained. Even though the Prince was treated with great courtesy in court, and denied any improper familiarity with the lady, and despite the fact that on this occasion he was cheered as he left the Divorce Court, still the first serious blow to his reputation had been struck. Soon the popular Press was calling into question his fitness to become King, and public opinion turned against him. Princess Alexandra was always remarkably popular with the people, and in his treatment of her Bertie's reputation suffered further damage. Privacy has no real meaning for most of the silver spoon breed, especially those whose spoons bear the crest of the Lion and the Unicorn. It soon became clear to Bertie that he could not conceal his infidelity. His amorous affairs rapidly became a subject of nation-wide gossip. That he had half expected. But what he could not have foreseen was the vehemence of public reaction.

The covertly sentimental British had taken Alix well and truly into their hearts, and one night when she appeared in the Royal Box at the opera the audience rose to their feet and cheered. When Bertie appeared moments later he was hissed.

Pleasure-seeking and unashamed debauchery, it seemed to the country, were the Prince's sole purposes in life. Lambasting the degenerate Heir Apparent became a favourite pastime for the self-righteous hypocrites of the drawing-room and the denizens of the gutter Press—a practice rendered doubly stimulating by the dual morality and holier-than-thou philosophy that epitomized the Victorians. One publication collected all the basest tales of the Prince's immorality from the underworlds of Paris and London and presented them in the form of a pastiche of Tennyson's *Idylls of the King*, under the crude punning title, *The Coming K—*.

Yet another divorce scandal broke in 1876. This time it seems the Prince of Wales played, uncharacteristically, an almost guiltless role, his one misdemeanour amounting to writing some compromising letters to Lady Aylesford, who was being divorced by her husband on the grounds of her adultery with Lord Blandford, elder brother of Lord Randolph Churchill. Churchill obtained a packet of letters written by the Prince to Lady Aylesford which Lord Randolph described as of 'the most compromising character', adding that if they were published they would ensure the Prince 'would never sit upon the Throne of England'. As a result the Prince challenged Churchill to a duel but was curtly refused.

In 1888, the year of the Ripper murders, the name of the Prince of Wales had become so reviled that even his own nephew, the German Kaiser, threatened to cancel a visit to Austria unless the Prince, who was staying in Vienna, departed first.

Despite the blaze of glory into which Queen Victoria emerged at her Golden Jubilee, she too suffered unpopularity during much of her reign. In her early years as Queen she had been hissed on public occasions, notably during one visit to Ascot, and seven separate attempts were made on her life. In one incident she was hit over the head and knocked unconscious by a retired lieutenant of the 10th Hussars.

The obsessional mourning she affected after the death in 1861 of her beloved consort Albert did much to damage her popularity. The country became irritated by her prolonged seclusion, and outraged by her obstinate refusals to take part in public events. A campaign against her social hibernation led eventually to a monarchy crisis. Sir Henry Ponsonby, her private secretary, declared in 1871 that if Victoria had been a man she would have been turned off the throne. Resentment against her seclusion spread quickly, and in a scurrilous pamphlet called *What Does She Do With It?* she was accused of hoarding £200,000 of her constitutional allowance every year. The accusation succeeded in turning the greater part of the working-classes against her. They could not abide a miserly monarch. Events came to a head when *Reynolds' Newspaper* announced that she planned to abdicate. The idea was unfounded, but it finally gave public expression to the fact that abdication seemed the only solution to the crisis. On 6th November 1871 she was bitterly attacked by Sir Charles Dilke, a radical M.P. who, referring to her seclusion, accused her of dereliction of duty. He urged his audience to depose Victoria, eliminate the monarchy entirely and set up a Republic. It was just the sort of event momentarily to deflect the Queen from her utter determination to live as she pleased. She jealously guarded her sovereignty, and the fear of revolution haunted her all through life. Since the mid-sixties she had been nervously aware of the possibility of what she termed 'a new French Revolution' in England, brought about by the vast gulf between the lower and upper classes. But still she lived the life of a regal hermit, and in 1872 a sixth attempt was made to kill her. After the seventh and final attempt at regicide in 1882, the Queen's popularity measurably increased. Alone, she might then have been able to take the monarchy forward to a more stable situation. But with the Prince of Wales on the rampage all over England there was no hope of dragging the name of the Royal Family out of the mire. And by the mid-eighties the Royal Family, especially Prince Eddy, had a new enemy—Henry Labouchere, editor of the magazine *Truth*. He hated the monarchy, and he especially hated Eddy. He rigorously opposed the moves to grant an official allowance to the Prince of Wales's children and ruthlessly pilloried the Royal Family, both as individuals and as an institution, in the controversial pages of his journal.

At the outset, Sickert's evaluation of the importance of Eddy's behaviour had not seemed to bear the gloss of truth. The gloss had been dulled by the murky antics of Eddy's father. If the Prince of Wales was corrupt what would one more regal reprobate matter? In studying the political and social climates, though, one can see that purely because of the fabled immorality of his father, Eddy's conduct was immensely important: he was the bright hope for the future. If he was involved in the sort of affair Sickert attributed to him the camel's back would have well and truly shattered. The inveterate enemies of the Crown, including Dilke and Labouchere, would certainly have conspired—and probably succeeded—to bring about the downfall of Britain's eight-hundred-year-old monarchy.

One aspect of the motive has not yet been examined: the apparent threat of Catholicism and the related danger of a marriage between Prince Eddy and a Catholic. The constitutional perils contained in the alleged alliance between Eddy and Annie Elizabeth Crook can be measured precisely. For in 1890 the question of Eddy's official marriage arose and a crisis developed when he chose as his bride Princess Hélène d'Orléans, daughter of the Comte de Paris, who, much to everyone's horror, was a Roman Catholic.

A fierce and irrational hatred of Catholics still existed in the hearts of many English Protestants, even into the early part of the twentieth century, and the cry of 'No Popery!' could still be heard in the eighties and nineties. As recently as 1850 anti-Catholic demonstrations took place in London, an effigy of Cardinal Wiseman was burnt in the streets of Bethnal Green and crowds heaping loud abuse on the Pope broke the windows of Catholic churches and attacked priests. The Church of England dominated the country, and any deviation from Protestantism was regarded with the deepest suspicion. Some years after the Bethnal Green episode an Anglican vicar in East London was pelted with bread pudding for taking even such a minute step in the direction of Rome as placing candles on his altar and decking his choirboys in surplices. Even as late as 1910 Edward VII was strongly criticized in the Press for attending a service at St James's Roman Catholic Church at Spanish Place in West London.

As far as the Establishment was concerned, Eddy becoming involved with a Catholic was one of the worst things that could have happened in the mid-eighties. Over the question of his proposed marriage to Hélène in 1890, Queen Victoria wrote a strong letter warning him off her. His marriage to a Catholic, she predicted, would have 'the *very worst effect possible*'. At a time of such unrest, when the throne was already in danger, those extreme words of warning could mean only one thing: Victoria foresaw an uprising that would end the monarchy.

Lord Salisbury was also frightened of that possibility. According to Sir Philip Magnus in his *King Edward the Seventh*, Salisbury's pronouncement on the subject was in unmistakable terms. When the Prince of Wales asked him if it was possible for Eddy to marry Hélène and she remain a Catholic, Salisbury warned him that 'the anger of the middle and lower classes might endanger the throne if it became known that he had advanced or even contemplated it'.

It has been suggested that one of the greatest flaws in Sickert's story was that the Royal Marriages Act and the Act of Settlement were still on the statute book at the time Eddy is alleged to have married Annie Elizabeth Crook. Donald Rumbelow points out in his *Complete Jack the Ripper* that, under the Royal Marriages Act, Eddy's marriage to Annie Elizabeth could have been set aside as illegal because he was under twenty-five at the time of the marriage and he had married without the Queen's consent. The Act of Settlement excluded anyone married to a Roman Catholic from inheriting the Crown. All this is true, but whether or not Eddy's marriage to Annie Elizabeth would have been valid in law would not affect the reaction of the populace at the news of such an alliance. Salisbury and Lord Halsbury, the Lord Chancellor, were obviously aware of the two Acts when, according to Magnus, they composed elaborate memoranda on the political and legal aspects of Eddy's betrothal to Hélène—yet Salisbury still envisaged revolution as a result of the proposed marriage.

In her letter to Eddy, Victoria told him a marriage to a Catholic would mean he would lose all his rights. A. J. Balfour, Salisbury's nephew and a Conservative M.P., though he could see the romance of the affair, wrote, 'We shall have a great deal of trouble over it all'.

When the Prince of Wales wanted to visit the Pope in 1903 he was told by the Cabinet that such a course could cause great unrest among Protestants, who still regarded Rome as a threat.

'This is absurd', wrote Balfour. 'But the people we have to deal with are absurd also!'

Balfour's opinion sums up the impotence of Rumbelow's argument: the law may have appeared a safeguard against Eddy's irresponsibility, but the law could not control the illogical emotions of the middle and lower classes.

If Eddy had indeed not only married a Catholic but also fathered her child—a child conceived out of wedlock—it is easy to see that Salisbury and the Royal Family would have regarded the affair as crucial. To Victoria, wrote Elizabeth Longford, 'in her state of nervous tension all unwelcome news assumed immense proportions'.

If Eddy's conduct was not sufficient to cause chaos, Salisbury could hardly be blamed for thinking it was. If Sickert's story of the clandestine wedding and birth turned out to be true, it would be perfectly credible that Salisbury would have tried to cover up the affair by institutionalizing Annie Elizabeth Crook. But removing her would only have compounded the difficulty, for Sickert said Marie Kelly escaped to tell the tale. If that was the case, Salisbury not only had to cover up the initial scandal but also the brutal treatment he had meted out to Eddy's paramour.

The circumstances were right and the stage was set for Sickert's drama. It remained only to see if the curtain ever rose.

CHAPTER SEVEN

Cleveland Street

Cleveland Street, W.1., is a long, narrow road running approximately north-west to south-east between Euston Road and Goodge Street. One entire block has been demolished since the days of Jack the Ripper, and the site is now occupied by a much enlarged Middlesex Hospital, whose nineteenth-century predecessor in Cleveland Street was important but considerably smaller. Apart from this one change the street is pretty much as it was then, and is dominated by sombre three-storey houses, some of whose ground floors serve as shops or offices.

When Cleveland Street and the events Sickert alleged went on there were investigated the painter began to earn some real credibility. Much of what he said became provable fact. Nothing, it seems, can be proved false. And there were several peripheral factors which suggested he could not have been lying.

Of all the questions jockeying for first consideration, one was of overriding importance: did the main characters in Sickert's story even exist? It had been Sickert who had drawn up the dramatis personae, and if his story had been false it was more than likely the less illustrious characters of the tale would have been fictitious too. Clearly Prince Eddy, the Prime Minister and Sir William Gull were real people, but John Netley, Annie Elizabeth Crook and her daughter Alice Margaret were another matter. Chapter 12 describes the search for John Netley, so little need be said of him here. Of paramount importance at this stage in the investigation were the two lowly females whose behaviour and, in the case of the child, whose very existence is supposed to have set off such an appalling chain-reaction.

The electoral register for Cleveland Street in the 1880s produced no names that were helpful. This was not surprising, as Annie Crook, being a woman, would not have had the vote and the only other relevant resident, Sickert himself, had so many rooms around London that he never bothered with such trivia as registering his occupation. Robert Emmons pointed out in his *Life and Opinions of Walter Richard Sickert* that the painter concerned himself little with money matters and behaved with quite reckless generosity. According to Marjorie Lilly, he rarely thought about money until it was no longer there. This had two effects: considering money a mere formality, he behaved even more contemptuously towards the worldly demands of bureaucracy, such as filling in forms. Secondly, he rarely had much cash to spare, and when it ran out altogether (which it often did in those early days), remaining unregistered and elusive helped if he had to bolt one night without paying the rent.

The *Post Office Directory of London* between 1885 and 1888 was no more useful in checking hard facts. What it did confirm, however, was that the 'community' picture of the area painted in Sickert's story was accurate. There were shopkeepers in plenty—Henry Fletcher, greengrocer; Henry Mowbray, hairdresser; Isaac Lyons, linen-draper; George Endersby, bookseller; Mrs Sarah Winslow, Chandler's Shop—and so on in a seemingly endless stream, all traders in that one narrow thoroughfare. In a day when skilled crafts were a living part of the social system, there was still room for Thomas Walter Cadwallader, Locksmith, and William Leader, Umbrella Maker. In addition there were chair-makers, boot-makers, cabinet-makers, coach-body makers, woodcarvers, saddlers, hatters, bookbinders, engravers, silver-chasers, French polishers and craftsmen of every kind. One can see at a glance that the area would have been ideally suited to the young artist. Within sight of his rooms at No. 15 there were gathered a picture-liner, an artist's colourman and further along Henry Landsbert, a dealer in works of art. There was no more likely place in London for Sickert to have had a studio. It had for many years been the favourite centre for young artists at the beginning of their careers. As William Gaunt recorded in *The Pre-Raphaelite Tragedy*, Holman Hunt had his studios in Cleveland Street and it was the birthplace and nursery of the renowned Pre-Raphaelite brotherhood, associates of which included Millais, the Rossettis, Ford Madox Brown and Hunt himself.

Cleveland Street was liberally sprinkled with Coffee Rooms, such as those of Henry Lindner or Mrs Ann Storey, where the men of the 'village' could forsake their womenfolk and the cares or creations of the day and in time-honoured manner, perpetuated now by the male population of France—gather for a long and often intense midday discussion. In the evening similar relaxation could be had in finer style over a glass of ale in the George and Dragon, the City of Hereford or The Crown.

But of Annie Elizabeth Crook, tobacconist's shop assistant of No. 6, basement, there seemed no trace until BBC researcher Karen de Groot made a search of the Rate Books for the two boroughs into which Cleveland Street cut, Marylebone and St Pancras. The 1888 Rate Book for the street records:

Number 6 Elizabeth Cook (Basement).

It was close. Sickert said the basement of No. 6 was inhabited by Annie Elizabeth Crook. The Rate Book showed the name Elizabeth *Cook*. This was consistent with Sickert's story that Annie's surname was often rendered as Cook. Her existence was finally proved when another document was checked. This was the birth certificate of her daughter. The certificate was obtained from Somerset House in order to check Sickert's basic claims, which were:

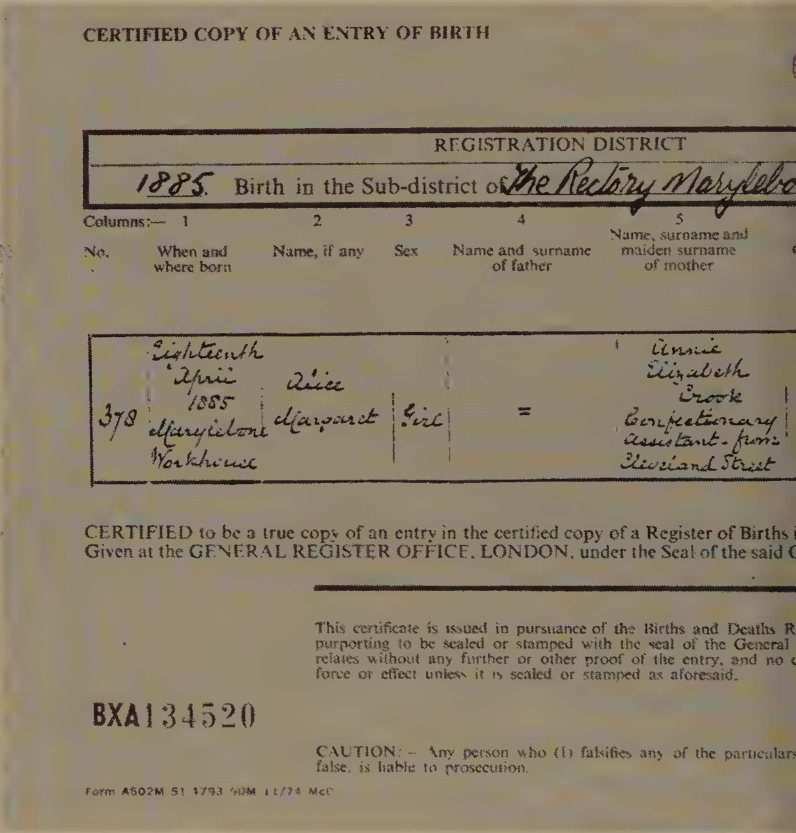
(1) Annie Elizabeth Crook was a tobacconist's assistant in Cleveland Street in the eighties.
(2) In April 1885 she gave birth to an illegitimate child.
(3) The birth took place at Marylebone Workhouse.
(4) The father of the child was Prince Eddy.
(5) The child's name was Alice Margaret Crook.

The birth certificate confirms four of these five points. It is dated 18th April 1885 and records:

SEX:	Girl
NAME:	Alice Margaret Crook
PLACE OF BIRTH:	Marylebone Workhouse
NAME OF MOTHER:	Annie Elizabeth Crook, confectionery assistant from Cleveland Street
NAME OF FATHER:	Blank
OCCUPATION OF FATHER:	Blank

The birth certificate is marked with a cross by which is written, 'The mark of Annie Elizabeth Crook, Mother, 6 Cleveland Street, Fitzroy Square'. The address shows that the Elizabeth Cook of the Rate Book and Annie Elizabeth Crook were one and the same. And the cross confirms another part of Sickert's story, that Annie was illiterate.

Three years after the birth of Alice Margaret, in April 1888, a police raid took place in Cleveland Street and both Eddy and Annie Elizabeth were taken away, Sickert claimed. Annie, he said, was certified insane and spent a hundred and fifty-six days at Guy's Hospital. During this time he believed she underwent some sort of operation that was contrived to destroy her memory of events in Cleveland Street, for on the one or two occasions he saw her after that she was a different person and no longer recognized him. Sir William Gull himself, Sickert thought, had performed the operation, which not only affected her memory but made her epileptic. After Guy's she spent months confined in various workhouses, and eventually, when it was realized she no longer possessed any dangerous knowledge, she was released—a harmless wreck, broken in body and spirit, abandoned in the streets from which she had so recently



The birth certificate of Alice Margaret Crook

CERTIFIED COPY OF AN ENTRY OF BIRTH

REGISTRATION DISTRICT

1885 Birth in the Sub-district of The Rectory Marylebo

Columns:— 1 No.	1 When and where born	2 Name, if any	3 Sex	4 Name and surname of father	5 Name, surname and maiden surname of mother
378	Eighteenth April 1885 Marylebone Workhouse	Alice Margaret	Girl	=	Annie Elizabeth Crook Confectionary Assistant - from Cleveland Street

CERTIFIED to be a true copy of an entry in the certified copy of a Register of Births
Given at the GENERAL REGISTER OFFICE, LONDON, under the Seal of the said

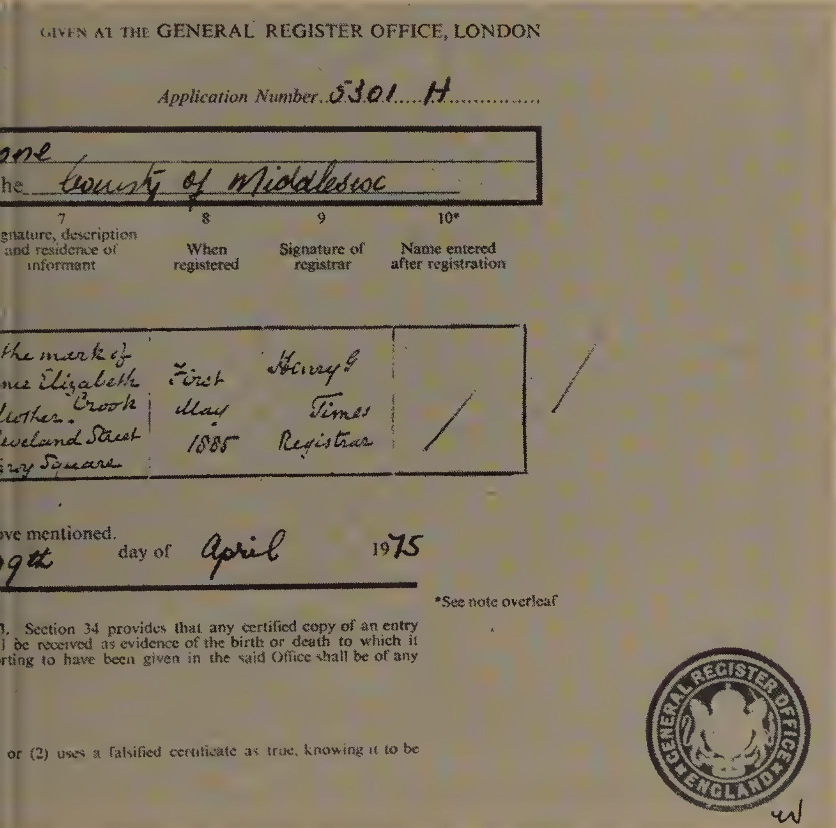
This certificate is issued in pursuance of the Births and Deaths R
purporting to be sealed or stamped with the seal of the General
relates without any further or other proof of the entry, and no
force or effect unless it is sealed or stamped as aforesaid.

BXA134520

CAUTION: – Any person who (1) falsifies any of the particular
false, is liable to prosecution.

Form A502M S1 1793 90M 11/74 McC

been snatched a normal healthy woman. But she was unable to support herself, nor could she survive at all on her own. After drifting in and out of workhouses for months in a vague search for shelter, she was eventually apprehended once more and confined for the rest of her life in prisons, hospitals and workhouses. She died in 1920 at 367 Fulham Road. By then she was hopelessly insane.



GIVEN AT THE GENERAL REGISTER OFFICE, LONDON

Application Number 5301 H

one
he County of Middlesex

7	8	9	10*
gnature, description and residence of informant	When registered	Signature of registrar	Name entered after registration
the mark of nie Elizabeth Crook lother. eveland Street roy Square	First May 1885	Henry G Times Registrar	/

ve mentioned.
9th day of April 1975

*See note overleaf

3. Section 34 provides that any certified copy of an entry
l be received as evidence of the birth or death to which it
rting to have been given in the said Office shall be of any

or (2) uses a falsified certificate as true, knowing it to be

Guy's Hospital do have records of patients in the nineteenth century but they are incomplete. The register of patients for 1888 is missing, so it is not possible to check if Annie Elizabeth was confined there as Sickert said. There are, however, independent facts which at least make the story credible. Sir William Gull maintained close connections with Guy's all his life and, significantly, was at one time in charge of an asylum for twenty insane women at the hospital. According to Michael Harrison, Gull's very presence in the Royal Household is in need of explanation, for rather than being an expert in disease generally, he specialized in paraplegia, diseases of the spinal cord and abscess of the brain. This specialization and his association with the asylum for women at Guy's are not only consistent with the story of Annie Elizabeth's incarceration—

they also support Sickert's assertion that he had many times been of invaluable service in removing the troublesome by certifying them insane. He not only had the ability to perform the sort of operation that Sickert thought Annie Elizabeth had undergone, he also had the place to do it.

As to her movements after Guy's, Mr Alan Neate, keeper of the Greater London Record Office, was extremely helpful. Wading through the hundreds of registers in his custody, he found scattered but useful records of her movements between 1885 and her death. The earliest mention of her name was in the papers of St Marylebone Workhouse, which showed she entered the institution on 18th April 1885 (the day her child was born) and left on 5th May.

No further record of Annie Elizabeth can be found until 22nd January 1889, when she spent one day at St Giles Workhouse in Endell Street, High Holborn. There is then no mention of her name until 1903, when she became an inmate of institutions under the care of the St Pancras Board of Guardians. Mr Neate carefully compiled exact details of her movements between February 1903 and March 1913, with only a few months here and there untraceable. She was almost solidly in workhouses and hospitals during this decade, as is borne out in the GLC records:

Apr 18th 1885–May 6th 1885	St Marylebone Workhouse
Jan 22nd 1889 (one day)	St Giles Workhouse, Endell Street
Feb 7th 1903–Feb 23rd 1903	St Pancras Workhouse
Mar 12th 1903–Mar 27th 1903	St Pancras Workhouse
Oct 28th 1903–Nov 13th 1903	St Pancras Hospital
Nov 13th 1903–May 13th 1904	St Pancras Workhouse
May 13th 1904–Nov 11th 1904	Highgate Hospital
Nov 11th 1904–Nov 14th 1904	St Pancras Workhouse

On 14th November 1904 she was transferred from St Pancras Workhouse to Poland Street Workhouse, and from that point on was chargeable to St James's Parish of the Westminster Board of Guardians:

Nov 14th 1904–Aug 7th 1906	Poland Street Workhouse
Nov 11th 1906–Apr 3rd 1907	Poland Street Workhouse
Apr 3rd 1907–Jun 11th 1907	*Cleveland Street Infirmary*
Jun 11th 1907–Oct 31st 1907	Hendon Infirmary, Colindale

Oct 31st 1907–Mar 12th 1913	*Cleveland Street Infirmary*
Mar 12th 1913– ?	Hendon Infirmary
Feb 19th 1920– Feb 23rd 1920	Fulham Road Workhouse

After that coincidental return to Cleveland Street and spending five and a half years in the infirmary there—her longest recorded stay anywhere—she was admitted to Hendon Infirmary in March 1913, and there is no record of her ever having been released. Her name next appears in the registers of Fulham Road Workhouse in 1920, four days before her death. She died in the hospital next door to the workhouse. Its address, as Sickert said, was 367 Fulham Road.

At last some positive information was forthcoming, but was it necessarily proving Sickert's story true? Admittedly he was right about her being an inmate of various institutions almost solidly until her death, and was correct about the address where she died. But it was hard to imagine that a person confined as a lunatic would have been kept in workhouses. My knowledge of these institutions was vague. I knew that under the old poor laws of England there was a workhouse in each parish where indigent, vagrant and idle people were set to work and supplied with food and clothing, or what was termed indoor relief. What I did not know was that some workhouses were used as places of confinement for rogues and vagabonds. Bishop Atterbury (1662–1732) wrote:

> Hast thou suffered at any time by vagabonds and pilferers? Esteem and promote those useful charities which remove such pests into prisons and workhouses.

Before the Poor Law Amendment Act of 1834 the workhouses gained a reputation as nurseries of idleness, ignorance and vice. But the Act united parishes to improve the management of workhouses. This gave rise to the Poor Law Unions which had control of workhouses containing from a hundred to five hundred inmates. Circulars published by the Lunacy Commission between 1890 and 1912, now at the Public Record Office in London, show that not only was it common practice for lunatics to be detained in workhouses, but that no records were required to be kept of them. It was consequently quite possible for a perfectly normal person to have been confined as insane in a workhouse. If this is what happened to Annie

Elizabeth Crook there would have been no hope of appeal or protection because no one would have known of her incarceration. Many workhouses even had padded rooms, and not until 1910 were local boards of guardians required to keep records of inmates confined in them.

Suddenly it became clear. The workhouses would have been the ideal place to have confined Annie Elizabeth. Had she been put in an asylum, proper records would have to have been kept, and she would have received regular visits and checks from Lunacy Commission inspectors. Whereas in a padded cell at a workhouse she could be confined without even the approval of a doctor, and no questions would have been asked once she was committed.

Despite Mr Neate's exhaustive research, however, there were still gaps in the list of Annie Elizabeth's movements. There is no trace of any records explaining her whereabouts between her removal from Guy's, about September or October 1888, and 22nd January 1889 when she was at St Giles Workhouse for one day. Then there is another gap until 1903. The only other record discovered shows that on 29th April 1894 the child Alice Margaret was admitted to St Giles Workhouse. It was stated on her admission papers that her mother was in prison, which tallies with Sickert's account of Annie Elizabeth's fate.

The record of medical treatment Annie Elizabeth received at 367 Fulham Road in the few days prior to her death confirms Sickert's testimony that she died insane. The doctor attending the Lunacy Observation Ward where she was confined wrote:

> 20.2.20 Confused—sometimes noisy and hilarious, at other times almost stuporous—has delusions that she is being tortured—takes no interest in her surroundings.
>
> 23.2.20 Sudden attack of cardiac failure which ended in death at 12.40 a.m.

Records of her admission to several workhouses and hospitals state she was epileptic, which again confirmed Sickert's story. All at once, everything the painter said about the fate of Annie Elizabeth was turning out to be true. Her delusions of being tortured would seem hardly surprising if the whole of his story was accurate.

It is hard to explain how or why Annie Elizabeth was moved from the custody of one Board of Guardians to another, and from workhouse to workhouse, with such apparent ease. Rules were extremely rigid and paupers were interrogated closely about their movements in previous years before they were allowed into any workhouse. Before a pauper could receive indoor relief in an area he or she had to establish what was called a 'settlement' there by three years' continuous residence or by birth. If a pauper turned up at a parish where he had no settlement he would be returned to his own parish forthwith. There *was* provision for the removal of paupers from one area to another, by orders made by magistrates. But the process was long and complicated and rigorously discouraged. No such procedure was invoked with Annie Elizabeth Crook. She moved from area to area, and no questions were asked. This was extraordinary. She was treated unlike all the other workhouse inmates of her time, and all rules went by the board when she came to be dealt with.

In response to a request for further information on this unusual treatment, Mr Neate wrote saying that it was surprising but not *necessarily* irregular. 'Cases often occurred', he said, 'of a transfer made amicably between all concerned *to avoid the legal formalities*.' (My italics.)

This raises several questions: why was Annie Elizabeth Crook considered important enough to have rigid rules waived so that she could be moved from place to place more expeditiously? What made her different from all the other workhouse inmates? Why did no one want to draw attention to her by going through the regular procedure? And who arranged the short cuts?

Sickert's account of her marriage to Eddy and the events which followed answers all questions but the last. And as for that, I did not learn until later the remarkable importance of a gentleman by the name of the Rev. Henry Luke Paget.

And so the facts build up, stripping Sickert's story of its fantastic garb and showing, detail by detail, that at least the basis of his narrative is true. There is documentary proof that Annie Elizabeth Crook did exist; she did live in Cleveland Street; she did work in a tobacconist's shop there; she did give birth to a daughter when and where Sickert claimed; she did disappear from Cleveland Street and her steady job in the shop for no apparent reason (the birth of her child cannot explain her fall from being well enough off to be a ratepayer in her own home to the poverty of life in a workhouse); she did become an inmate of institutions that contained padded cells almost solidly until her death (and during that time, an age of strict convention, was treated in a puzzlingly unconventional manner); she did become an epileptic; she did die at 367 Fulham Road in 1920; and she was insane at the time.

But none of this connects her with Prince Albert Victor or even suggests Eddy knew Cleveland Street. Interestingly, Eddy's name was linked with Cleveland Street in *Their Good Names* by H. Montgomery Hyde, published in 1970. Hyde noted that Eddy had been a rumoured frequenter of a male brothel in Cleveland Street. Two years later when Michael Harrison published *Clarence*, his biography of the Prince, he went even further. Though he had never heard of Sickert's story, Harrison claimed that Eddy was very much tied up with goings-on at Cleveland Street. He said that in 1889, the year after the Ripper murders, Eddy was not only a frequenter but the central participant in a scandal which erupted at the male brothel. The brothel was at No. 19 Cleveland Street, immediately opposite the shop where Annie Elizabeth Crook worked until 1888, and only two doors away from Sickert's studio.

Eddy was bisexual, as Harrison showed. His amorphous sexuality conspired with an utter disregard for decorum—or rather, perhaps, a total *inability* to act as he ought—to thrust him in and out of love with entirely unsuitable women, men and boys. He could be in love with several people at once, as he later showed when, apparently deeply committed to Princess Hélène d'Orléans, he was simultaneously writing love-letters to the pretty Lady Sybil St Clair Erskine.

It is no surprise, then, that Eddy should have allowed himself to be drawn into the brothel, not because he was desperately homosexual but because he allowed himself *to fall in love* with his closest friends, be they male or female. There was no ungovernable lust in Eddy; at least there is no evidence to show there was; but he was weak, enormously soft-hearted and sufficiently unsophisticated to allow one smile or tender word to intoxicate him emotionally and lead him into desperate affairs he was powerless to control. Such had been the nature of his romance with Annie Elizabeth Crook. His presence in the Cleveland Street brothel scandal makes much greater sense in the light of his affair with Annie Elizabeth. He had been to Cleveland Street before, made many friends of all kinds, and yearned to return. In so doing he was led into the vices of No. 19.

There is totally independent evidence that Eddy was associated with Annie Elizabeth. Aleister Crowley—magician, poet, painter, chess-master and lecher, the man who called himself 'The Great Beast'—claimed in his book *The World's Tragedy*, published in Paris in 1910, that he had some compromising letters from Eddy to a boy called Morgan who lived in Cleveland Street. At first glance this claim appears only to strengthen the evidence that Eddy was associated with the street itself. But the real value of Crowley's alleged letters becomes apparent when one discovers that the boy Morgan was the son of Mrs Morgan *who ran the very shop at No. 22 Cleveland Street in which Annie Elizabeth worked.* This brings Eddy even closer to Annie Elizabeth. Harrison showed he went as far as No. 19, opposite Annie's shop. Crowley connected him with the actual shop, a place he must surely have visited regularly if he struck up a close enough relationship with Morgan to write him letters.

And that word 'compromising', what exactly did it mean? Knowing Eddy's bisexual nature, they could have been love letters to the boy. Or equally likely, they may have been letters mentioning some compromising detail of his affair with Annie Elizabeth, the sort of imprecise but scandalous detail that later led a Cleveland Street wag to pen these words:

Jack and Jill went out to kill
For things they couldn't alter
Jack fell down and lost his crown
And left a baby daughter.

Despite all this there is no concrete proof of a marriage between Annie Elizabeth and the Prince—Chapter 8 describes the elaborate cover-up which was set in motion to destroy such evidence. Sickert claimed the wedding took place at a St Saviour's Infirmary Chapel. For some time it looked as if this were the first point in his story in which he must have been wrong: no St Saviour's Infirmary could be found, let alone one that contained a chapel. But finally Ian Sharp of the BBC found records of just such an institution in Osnaburgh Street, which just happened to be within a stone's throw of Cleveland Street. The infirmary, now St Saviour's Hospital, has long since removed to Hythe in Kent, and it was some job tracing it. The Reverend Mother in charge admits the wedding could have taken place at the chapel of the old infirmary, but no records of the institution have survived. A search of the indexes at St Catherine's House in London, the new home of the births, marriages and deaths records, for every quarter between January 1884 and December 1889 proved fruitless. The names Coburg, Cook, Cooke, Crook, Crooke, Saxe, Saxe-Coburg (the surname of the Royal Family) and Sickert were all checked and double-checked, but to no avail. Royal weddings are not normally registered with the public marriages, but there was always the chance that Eddy had married under an assumed name, most likely of all his pseudonym Albert Sickert. But all trace of such a marriage, if it ever reached the registry, has long since been obliterated. The one real hope had been the Infirmary itself, and its records were gone for ever.

Still no baby. The most hopeless part of the quest, it seemed, was the bastard story. The existence of Annie Elizabeth Crook of Cleveland Street and *her* bastard child was established. It seems undeniable that Eddy frequented the very shop where Annie Elizabeth worked. But connecting Annie Elizabeth's child with Eddy proved another matter.

Before Joseph Sickert revealed his father's story in 1973 no one had suggested Eddy fathered a child, and Buckingham Palace still deny all knowledge of any offspring of the prince. Despite this, after months of fruitless research, I received a copy of a letter containing a statement, written in all innocence, about a child of the Duke of Clarence! It will be remembered that Eddy was created Duke of Clarence and Avondale in 1890. The letter had been written by a Mr Frederick Bratton of Harlesden to Lady Dowding, from whom I received the copy by a circuitous route. It was an ordinary conversational letter, but I was particularly struck by one paragraph which said:

> I was especially interested in particulars of the Duke of Clarence. My grandmother was 'commanded' to court to foster feed a child of the Duke's. She was selected from a number of 'possibles' after countless tests and interviews. At the last moment her uncle, Dr J. Bratton (Mayor of Shrewsbury etc) put his heavy foot down and sent regrets on her behalf. He told the family that Court life was 'frivolous' and that she might get into trouble, whatever that might mean.

I wrote to Mr Bratton, who replied with a charming letter but was unfortunately not able to help with documentary evidence. He emphasized that the whole affair had been 'very hush-hush', which was certainly consistent with Sickert's tale.

He was quite positive that the child his grandmother was to have weaned was the issue of Prince Albert Victor, Duke of Clarence—Eddy. The story appeared in a published history of the Bratton family. This was against everything anybody else had said, except Walter Sickert.

To sum up: Annie Elizabeth Crook did exist. She did live where and when Sickert said. She gave birth to an illegitimate child exactly when Sickert said. There are completely independent claims that Eddy fathered a child, and that he was not only a frequenter of Cleveland Street but of the very shop where Annie Elizabeth worked.

One further point: in his article in *The Criminologist*, suggesting by implication that Eddy was Jack the Ripper, Dr Thomas Stowell referred to him as 'S'. There has not been a satisfactory explanation as to why he did this. It seems beyond coincidence that more than thirty years ago Walter Sickert claimed Eddy used to pose as his younger brother and pass himself off as 'Albert Sickert' or 'S'. So, in a roundabout way, another aspect of Sickert's story is confirmed.

CHAPTER EIGHT

Cover-up

A great deal is at stake if the Establishment considers it necessary to operate a full-scale cover-up. For the truth of the Jack the Ripper affair to have been painstakingly concealed can mean nothing less than that State security was at risk, or that someone high in the Government or the Royal Family was involved. Walter Sickert said it happened for both reasons, and it has already been shown that the political situation of the day was explosive, that Eddy did frequent Cleveland Street and that he almost certainly fathered Annie Elizabeth Crook's child. But has there been a cover-up? At first glance the idea may sound too bizarre or melodramatic to be given much thought. But there can be no doubt that tracks were covered at an alarming rate, which in itself proves there was something of the magnitude of the events in Sickert's story that needed hiding. That a cover-up has occurred is certain. The bulk of the evidence to show this appears in this chapter, but the ramifications of the cover-up spread throughout the rest of the book.

A vital side-issue of the cover-up is that it destroys every theory as to the identity of the murderer yet forwarded, except one which is so tenuous and fraught with inconsistency that it cannot be taken seriously—the notion that Prince Eddy himself was the killer. If Donald McCormick had been right in saying the Whitechapel Murders were committed by a mad Russian doctor called Pedachenko, sponsored by the Russian police to bring disgrace upon anarchists in Britain, the English authorities would hardly have gone to great lengths to hush up the truth of the case. On the contrary, they would have blazoned the truth to the world in order to remove the disgrace they had earned in failing to lay the Ripper by the heels. This applies equally to every other theory except Sickert's story. There would be no need to hide the fact that Jack the Ripper was a vengeful midwife, as William Stewart proclaimed; a Jewish slaughterman, as averred by Robin Odell; that he was the poisoner Thomas Neill Cream; the wife-murderer George Chapman; a mad social reformer; a deranged surgeon revenging the death of his son, who had contracted syphilis from a whore; or even that he was James Kenneth Stephen, the tutor of Prince Eddy, as suggested by Michael Harrison. There would certainly have been no cause for a cover-up if the Ripper had been the failed barrister Montague John Druitt, accused by both Daniel Farson and Tom Cullen in their books on the murders. Druitt, however, is a special case, and is very much involved in the cover-up, as will be seen. The final part of this chapter is devoted to proving Druitt's innocence and describing his true part in the case. Thus, though all previous theories fall down through individual weaknesses, they are all destroyed by the one fact that a cover-up has taken place.

Perhaps until the blowing open of the gigantic Watergate conspiracy, many would have dismissed any suggestion of a Government cover-up as preposterous. Now no one can deny that the concept of concealment is an integral part of government today. We have long been used to concealment for the honest purpose of protecting official secrets. With the downfall of President Nixon and his crooked regime we have come to realize that the most powerful and trusted leaders will lie, cheat, break the law and see innocent colleagues imprisoned to save their own skins.

The Ripper cover-up has been divided into several distinct parts, one of which has already been noticed but not properly recognized:

(1) Vital evidence was suppressed at the Ripper inquests.

(2) When Eddy returned to Cleveland Street in 1889 and became involved in the male brothel scandal there, an elaborate cover-up was mounted by the most powerful men in England. This was to hide not his bisexual nature (which was well known by then anyway), but his connection with that particular street. The course of justice was deliberately perverted to continue the cover-up that had begun with the removal of Eddy's Catholic wife and snowballed into the Whitechapel Murders. Despite the enormous amount of time and effort put

into concealing the Cleveland Street brothel case, however, one man threatened to reveal everything. The ruthlessness of the conspirators was once more displayed when this man was tried on trumped-up charges and jailed for a year to keep him silent.

(3) A plausible scapegoat was set up in case it became necessary to announce that the Ripper had been caught, and to satisfy anyone who happened to investigate the case in later years.

(4) Documents that contained the truth about the Ripper were destroyed.

Facts were hidden from the beginning, even in open court. The first part of the cover-up started at the inquest of Annie Chapman.

The Chapman inquest was opened by Coroner Wynne E. Baxter at the Working Lads' Institute in Whitechapel Road on Monday, 10th September 1888. Baxter already had the unfinished inquest of 'Polly' Nichols on his hands when Chapman was murdered.

On Thursday the 13th the medical evidence was given. After the most superficial description of Chapman's injuries, divisional police surgeon George Bagster Phillips said, 'I think I had better not go into further detail of these mutilations which can only be painful to the feelings of the jury and the public'.

The coroner allowed Phillips to withhold his evidence for that day, but at the resumed hearing Baxter demanded the full truth. Even though the coroner was only ensuring that normal procedure be adhered to, Phillips behaved in an odd and suspicious manner, trying until the last moment to break the law and suppress vital evidence. The dialogue proceeded thus:

CORONER Dr Phillips, whatever may be your opinion and objections, it appears to me necessary that all the evidence that you ascertained from the post-mortem examination should be on the records of the court for various reasons which I need not enumerate. However painful it may be, it is necessary in the interests of justice.

PHILLIPS I have not had notice of that. I should have been glad if notice had been given me because I should have been better prepared to give the evidence; however, I will do my best.

CORONER Would you like to postpone it?

PHILLIPS Oh no. I will do my best.

CORONER Can you give any indication of how long it would take to perform the incisions found on the body?

PHILLIPS I think I can guide you by saying that I myself could not have performed all the injuries I saw on that woman, and effect them, even without a struggle, under a quarter of an hour. *I still think it is a very great pity to make this evidence public.* These details are fit only for yourself, sir, and the jury.

CORONER We are here in the interests of justice and must have all the evidence before us. I see, however, that there are several ladies and boys in the room, and I think that they might retire.

Even after the women and children had left, Dr Phillips persisted in his reluctance to give evidence, so his motive for suppressing information was not to save the feelings of the public present, as he had implied. After the court had cleared he said:

PHILLIPS *I still feel that in giving these details to the public you are thwarting the ends of justice.*

CORONER We are bound to take all the evidence in the case and whether it is made public or not is a matter for the responsibility of the Press.

FOREMAN We are of the opinion that the evidence the doctor on the last occasion wished to keep back should be heard.

CORONER I have carefully considered the matter and have never before heard of any evidence requested being kept back.

PHILLIPS I have not kept it back. I have only suggested whether it should be given or not.

CORONER We have delayed taking this evidence as long as possible, because you said the interests of justice might be served by keeping it back; but it is now a fortnight since this occurred and I do not see why it should be kept back from the jury any longer.

PHILLIPS I am of the opinion that what I am about to describe took place after death, so that it could not affect the cause of death, which you are inquiring into.

CORONER That is only your opinion and might be repudiated by other medical opinion.

PHILLIPS Very well. I will give you the results of my post-mortem examination.

For all his squirming and defiance Dr Phillips could not deflect Baxter from following the course of justice. What is to be deduced from this irregular behaviour? Phillips knew the law as well as the coroner. He was well used to testifying at inquests, he knew that the doctor giving evidence of a post-mortem examination was required to furnish the court with all his facts, and there is ample evidence in the contemporary East London press and in reports of other inquests that he was not averse to describing gruesome injuries in public. It was the first time, certainly in the Whitechapel district, that a doctor had made a request that he be allowed to suppress evidence, as Wynne Baxter was quick to inform him. In the case of the Whitechapel Murders, Dr Phillips had stumbled across something it was necessary for him to hide. He claimed that his reticence was in the interests of justice, but even two weeks after the murder, when further delay on such a pretext was patently useless, he still wished to remain silent. Plainly he wanted the inquest to be brought to a close without his evidence being heard, in which case it would have remained secret for all time. Even today the description of the injuries he was finally compelled to make has a peculiar and sinister significance to a particular group of people. This significance will be examined in detail in Chapter 10.

The first part of the cover-up reached full swing at the inquest on the final victim, Marie Kelly. First, the inquest was illegally wrested from the hands of Coroner Baxter and then carried out in an illegal fashion by another coroner who deliberately withheld vital information. The murder had taken place in Baxter's territory, the Whitechapel district, but the inquest was finally held at Shoreditch Town Hall. This was an unprecedented deviation, and inspired one juror to take the new coroner to task.

'I do not see why we should have the inquest thrown on our shoulders when the murder did not happen in our district, but in Whitechapel', he said.

Mr Hammond, the Coroner's Officer, replied, 'It did not happen in Whitechapel'.

The coroner broke in severely, 'Do you think that we do not know what we are doing here? The jury are summoned in the ordinary way, and they have no business to object. If they persist in their objection I shall know how to deal with them. Does any juror persist in objecting?'

The dissident would not be quietened by threats. 'We are summoned for the Shoreditch district', he said. 'This affair happened in Spitalfields.'

'It happened within *my* district,' lied the exasperated coroner.

But another juryman came to the rescue of the first and declared, 'This is not my district. I come from Whitechapel, and Mr Baxter is my coroner.'

The coroner managed to get the last word on the subject by saying, 'I am not going to discuss the subject with the jurymen at all. If any juryman says he distinctly objects, let him say so.'

Pausing more to observe the effect of his threatening tone than for any retort, he went on, 'I may tell the jurymen that jurisdiction lies where the body lies, not where it was found', which appeared to contradict his previous statement about the murder having happened in his district. At all costs he was determined to preside over this particular inquest. Why?

It might have been possible to sympathize with Coroner Roderick MacDonald had he then proceeded to conduct the inquest in a proper manner. But he was out to conceal evidence. This undisputed fact, combined with the irregular method by which he gained jurisdiction over the hearing in the first place, shows that MacDonald was a major character in the cover-up operation. Wynne Baxter would certainly have sifted every ounce of evidence from this hearing, as he had shown by his determination in the previous Ripper inquests. He would have brooked no opposition from characters like Dr Bagster Phillips who wanted to conceal vital testimony. And this is why Coroner Baxter was not given the chance of running the Kelly inquest. Too much had to be hidden, as is borne out by the fact that this was the most sensational murder of the nineteenth century, yet the Scotland Yard file on it is considerably smaller than that of any of the other Ripper cases—and positively insignificant when compared to several other unsolved murder files of the same year.

MacDonald abruptly terminated the inquest after less than a day and recorded the jury's verdict of 'wilful murder against some person or persons unknown'. He had not asked the police surgeon—once again Dr Phillips—if any portions of the body were missing. He had not tried to establish the nature of the murder weapon. He had not established the time of death, which was a vital omission because two witnesses claimed to have seen Kelly in the street after daylight on the morning her body was found.

As Tom Cullen pointed out in his *Autumn of Terror*, British common law since Edward I has required that 'all the injuries of the body, also all the wounds, ought to be viewed; and the length; breadth and deepness, with what weapon, and in what part of the body the wound or hurt is . . . all which things must be enrolled in the roll of the coroner'. As a police surgeon well used to testifying at inquests himself, MacDonald knew this. '*Yet he chose deliberately to suppress this evidence*', wrote Cullen.

> "There is other evidence which I do not propose to call," he announced rather grandly at the close of the inquest, "for if we at once make public every fact brought forward in connection with this terrible murder the ends of justice might be retarded." What did he mean by this extraordinary statement? Was he being guided by Scotland Yard, which had been so anxious to get the inquest out of Coroner Wynne Baxter's hands? *What were the police trying to hide?*

Even Cullen, who was trying to prove Montague Druitt was the murderer, was struck by the obvious cover-up which was in progress.

Coroner MacDonald not only broke the law in suppressing evidence, but was under instructions to do so, for no Government action was taken to correct the situation, despite indignant leaders in the national newspapers, like that of the *Daily Telegraph* which said:

> Much surprise is expressed that the inquest should have been closed before an opportunity was given to the relatives of the deceased to identify the body. As they are believed to reside in Ireland there was some delay to be expected in finding them.
>
> It is in the power of the Attorney General to apply to the High Court of Justice to hold a new inquest, if he is satisfied that there has been rejection of evidence, irregularity of proceedings, or insufficiency of inquiry. This course is improbable as it is stated that Dr Phillips, the divisional surgeon of police, with whom the coroner consulted in private, had had a commission from the Home Office for some time and he does not consider himself a 'free agent'; but it is pointed out that by hurriedly closing the inquest the opportunity has been lost of putting on record statements made on oath and when the memory of witnesses is fresh. It

> is not improbable that a long interval may elapse before a prisoner is charged at the police court.

Once more the strange Dr Phillips expedites the cover-up by providing a reason for serious irregularities being tolerated. Firstly he succeeded at the Kelly inquest in his determination to withhold evidence and consulted with the coroner only in private (which Baxter had rightly refused to allow). Secondly he alone was the reason for the inquest not being reopened, as it most certainly should have been. At least, he allowed himself to be used as the excuse for the Kelly hearing not being revived. That he had a Home Office commission would hardly have stopped him testifying at so important a hearing. On the contrary, in normal circumstances the Home Office would have been eager for justice to be done. But with Jack the Ripper they were not. The authorities clearly wanted the murder of Marie Kelly swept under the carpet as efficiently as they were later to conceal once again Eddy's connection with Cleveland Street. It was part of the same dubious operation.

The indecent haste with which the inquest was handled meant also that a crucial statement made by a man named Hutchinson was not heard. Hutchinson gave a remarkably detailed description of a man he claimed to have seen with Kelly shortly before her murder. Afterwards there were dogged attempts by the police to undermine Hutchinson's certainty about the man. But he would not be tripped up on details, nor would he have his evidence altered. He even put himself in danger of being implicated by insisting he was one of the last people to see Kelly alive, probably *the* last apart from her murderer. It is possible that had Hutchinson been properly examined in a court of law, his testimony could have proved flawed or false. He may not have seen the Ripper, but an innocent 'client' of Kelly's who disappeared before the killer arrived. But there is nothing in police records, public or secret, which suggest Hutchinson was unreliable. Quite the reverse: in the Scotland Yard file, Inspector Abberline described Hutchinson's statement as 'important', and expressed the opinion that it was true. It was therefore essential that his evidence be given in open court. He was the only man to give a good description of the person most likely to have been Jack the Ripper. Yet he was not even called to give evidence.

Hutchinson's statement is written in thick black copperplate on blue Special Report sheets headed *Commercial Street*:

METROPOLITAN POLICE

Re Murder H Division

12th November 1888

At 6 p.m. 12th George Hutchinson of the Victoria Home, Commercial Street came to this station and made the following statement.

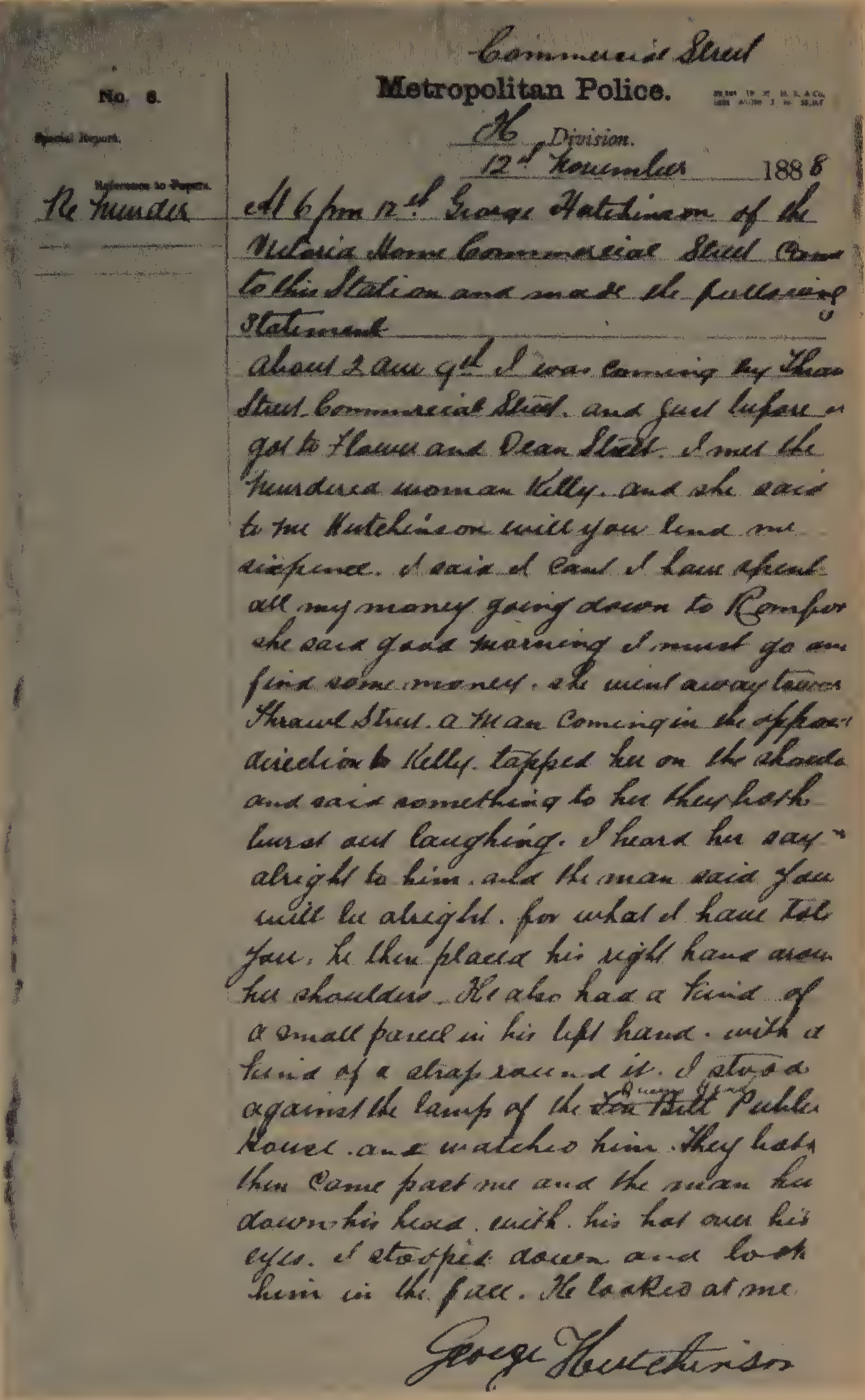
"About 2 a.m. 9th I was coming by Thrawl Street, Commercial Street, and just before I got to Flower and Dean Street, I met the murdered woman Kelly and she said to me, Hutchinson will you lend me sixpence. I said I can't I have spent all my money going down to Romford, she said good morning I must go and find some money. She went away toward Thrawl Street. A man coming in the opposite direction to Kelly tapped her on the shoulder and said something to her, they both burst out laughing. I heard her say alright to him and the man said you will be alright for what I have told you. He then placed his right hand around her shoulders. He also had a kind of a small parcel in his left hand with a kind of strap round it. I stood against the lamp of the Queens Head Public House and watched him. They both then came past me and the man hung down his head with his hat over his eyes. I stooped down and looked him in the face. He looked at me stern. They both went into Dorset Street I followed them. They both stood at the corner of the court for about 3 minutes. He said something to her. She said alright my dear come along you will be comfortable. He then placed his arm on her shoulder and [she] gave him a kiss. She said she had lost her handkerchief. He then pulled his handkerchief a red one out and gave it to her. They both then went up the Court together. I then went to the court to see if I could see them but could not. I stood there for about three quarters of an hour to see if they came out. They did not so I went away.

Beneath the statement has been written:

Circulated to A.S. [All Stations].

Description, age about 34 or 35, height 5 ft 6, complexion pale. Dark eyes and eye lashes. Slight moustache curled up each end and hair dark. Very surley looking. Dress, long dark coat, collar and cuffs trimmed astrakhan and a dark jacket under, light waistcoat, dark trousers, dark felt hat turned down in the middle, button boots and gaiters with white buttons, wore a very thick gold chain with linen collar, black tie with horse shoe pin, respectable appearance, walked very sharp, Jewish appearance. Can be identified.

George Hutchinson



Commercial Street

No. 6.

Special Report.

Metropolitan Police.

H Division.

12th November 1888

Reference to Papers.

Re Murder

At 6 pm 12th George Hutchinson of the Victoria Home Commercial Street Came to this Station and made the following Statement

about 2 am 9th I was coming by Thrawl Street Commercial Street. and just before I got to Flower and Dean Street I met the Murdered woman Kelly. and she said to me Hutchinson will you lend me sixpence. I said I cant I have spent all my money going down to Romfor she said good morning I must go an find some money. she went away towar Thrawl Street. a Man Coming in the oppos direction to Kelly. tapped her on the shoulde and said something to her they both burst out laughing. I heard her say alright to him. and the man said you will be alright. for what I have tol you. he then placed his right hand arou her shoulders. He also had a kind of a small parcel in his left hand. with a kind of a strap round it. I stood against the lamp of the ~~Ten Bells~~ Queens Head Public House. and watched him. They both then Came past me and the man hed down his head. with his hat over his eyes. I stooped down and look him in the face. He looked at me

George Hutchinson

Part of Hutchinson's statement
This bore his signature at the foot of each page of the statement.

In his book *Clarence*, Michael Harrison claimed there was an elaborate cover-up mounted to keep Eddy's name well away from anything to do with Cleveland Street. This was not, as Harrison imagined, purely to hide Eddy's involvement in activities at the male brothel. It was to remove any possibility of his previous, and more dangerous, escapades in Cleveland Street coming to light. In the brothel affair, wrote Harrison:

> Eddy was the central participant. It is hardly surprising, therefore that the Establishment conspired elaborately to conceal the truth, and that, until now, this process has not been fully recognized. On account of the publicity that the official enquiries had attracted, it was necessary to mount the whole pantomime performance of a criminal trial, with contracted judge, counsels, witnesses, and plaintiff.

This was informed guesswork on Harrison's part, and he produced no evidence to back up the opinion. But the official papers relating to the Cleveland Street case, which have been deposited with the Director of Public Prosecutions since 1889, were opened to the public in 1975, and it is now possible to say with certainty that Harrison was correct.

The papers show that the scandal began in July 1889 when a delivery boy called Swinscow was questioned by police because he appeared to have more spending money than his meagre wages would have allowed. He revealed that another boy, a Post Office clerk called Newlove, had asked him along to No. 19 Cleveland Street to take part in homosexual activities. Under questioning Newlove broke down and later told police about a pseudo-clergyman called Veck, in reality another Post Office worker, who was a prime mover in the 'crimes'. A trap was set, and on 9th July a police constable overheard Veck offer Newlove money to defend himself against any court action over the offences.

Already the cover-up was taking shape, for it rapidly became obvious to the senior police officers in charge of the investigation that Eddy was a regular caller at the brothel. Papers in the D.P.P. file name Eddy ('P.A.V.'—Prince Albert Victor) as an alleged patron of the house. Inspector Abberline, the man in charge of the Ripper inquiries in East London, suddenly turned up in the West End to head the Cleveland Street scandal case.

Evidence was secured against Veck, as already stated, on 9th

July. *But it was not until six weeks later, on 20th August, that he was arrested.* This long delay was entirely the responsibility of Abberline, so far the one definite link between the Ripper murders and Cleveland Street. The purpose of the delay was to allow the chief offenders to escape, and so dilute the danger of any publicity arising from a trial. Abberline's men kept watch on the house after the evidence was secured against Veck, and on 9th July P.C. Sladden saw a number of men entering and leaving the house. The following day the furniture belonging to the proprietor of the brothel, Charles Hammond, was taken out, but nothing was done to arrest either Veck or anyone else connected with the brothel. It later transpired that Hammond had escaped to France and had taken his furniture with him—and all this had happened while Abberline's men were keeping watch.

As Foreign Secretary as well as Prime Minister, Lord Salisbury played an active part in the cover-up, as the D.P.P. file shows. A regular customer at No. 19 was Lord Arthur Somerset, Extra Equerry and Superintendent of the Stables to the Prince of Wales. In a letter contained in the file, the Prince of Wales expressed his satisfaction that Salisbury had allowed Somerset to leave the country before he could be arrested. If Somerset had been brought to trial Eddy's name would certainly have become linked publicly with Cleveland Street.

Salisbury was also responsible for making sure Hammond was not brought back to England. He would have been the chief prosecution witness, and could have named every person, including Eddy, who had patronized his house. In July, when the Home Secretary wrote asking Salisbury if Hammond should be extradited from France, Salisbury made quite certain the villain remained at large. On 24th July he informed the Home Secretary that he did not 'consider this to be a case in which any official application could justifiably be made to the French government for assistance in surrendering the fugitive to this country'. The only reason the French Government would not have been approached to assist in the extradition of an offender would have been if the offence were a petty one. But if that were true, why is the D.P.P. file crammed with hundreds of letters and memoranda from all the most eminent men in the land—the Prince of Wales, the Prime Minister, the Lord Chancellor, the Home Secretary, the Attorney-General, the Chief Commissioner of the Metropolitan Police and the Director of Public Prosecutions? This was no unimportant case: there is at least four times as much documentation connected with the Cleveland Street affair as there is in the combined records of the Home Office and Scotland Yard on all the Whitechapel Murders. Most of this mass of correspondence deals with ways of hushing up the scandal, as is shown by the following memorandum from the Director of Public Prosecutions, dated 24th August 1889. It refers to the chief prosecution witness, a boy called Algernon Alleys, who claimed to have compromising letters from a Mr Brown, clearly established in the file as the pseudonym of Lord Arthur Somerset:

> It is proposed to call on Tuesday if possible only witnesses whose evidence implicates Newlove and Veck—and Hammond who is not yet in custody—and to avoid if possible putting any witness into the box who refers to "Mr Brown".

Eventually Veck and Newlove were tried for having committed unnatural offences with male persons and with having induced others to do the same. They pleaded guilty. It was a period when convicted homosexuals were dealt harsh punishments, life imprisonment not unknown. But Veck was jailed for four months and Newlove for nine months. This was an appalling travesty of justice. Veck, the worst offender in the case and the man who had corrupted the young boys, received less than half the punishment of one of his victims.

The job of co-ordinating the cover-up was in the hands of the Treasury. With the help of a solicitor called Arthur Newton they made attempts to bribe Alleys, the only important witness still in England, to leave the country. They were even prepared to pay for his keep if he sailed for America, as well as all his travelling expenses. The Government was desperate to hush up the events in Cleveland Street. The vastness of the D.P.P. file on the case and the involvement of so many eminent men in trying to cover-up the scandal makes it certain that it was not Lord Arthur Somerset's name they were protecting, but Eddy's.

The Queen herself was involved. Though the Court Circular for 7th October 1889 recorded that the Lord Chancellor, Lord Halsbury, was received by Her Majesty for a social gathering at Balmoral, it is clear that he visited the Queen that day mainly to discuss the scandal with her. For the D.P.P. file contains a long, deeply thought out legal opinion by Halsbury on whether the charges against certain people connected with the brothel should be proceeded with. It is written on Balmoral paper, so it was an urgent matter. Had it been anything but of paramount importance he would surely have waited until he returned to London the next day to put pen to paper.

The file provides sound evidence that the Government was desperate to hush up Eddy's alleged part in the scandal. This would not have been the case if it had been only a matter of homosexuality, though that was serious enough. Only a scandal that would have threatened the Throne would have necessitated the involvement in the cover-up of so many notable men. But by 1889 it was common knowledge that if Eddy was not completely homosexual, he was certainly bisexual. Yet this knowledge did not bring about an empire-rocking scandal. It was not homosexuality that was being covered up, but Eddy's involvement with Cleveland Street, and the truth about Jack the Ripper.

The cover-up did not end with the perversion of justice carried out by the highest in the land in allowing Somerset and Hammond to go free. The ruthlessness and corruption with which the Victorian Establishment was prepared to pursue a course of self-preservation was carried even further in dealing with the one man who threatened to reveal everything. This man was Ernest Parke, twenty-nine-year-old editor of the *North London Press*, who pinpointed in his newspaper the deliberate mishandling on the brothel investigation and trial. He attacked the police not only for allowing Hammond to escape to the Continent, but also for giving him so much time in which to do so that he managed to take his furniture with him. He attacked the court for passing a sentence of four months on Veck, who had been one of the worst offenders in an unsavoury case. Parke courageously pointed out, 'A clergyman facing a similar charge only last year, was sentenced for what were less serious offences to no less than life imprisonment'.

Parke's leading articles commented on men of title as well as Hammond being allowed to leave the country and defeat the ends of justice, because 'their prosecution would inculpate *more highly placed and distinguished personages*'.

This was a direct reference to Eddy, and Ernest Parke was getting too close to the truth. He had to be silenced. He had made one statement which laid him open to attack. He had named Lord Euston as a frequenter of the brothel. At first Parke's position looked unassailable. He had no less than six witnesses who claimed to have seen Euston entering or leaving the house on different occasions, one of whom said he had taken part in homosexual practices with him. The D.P.P. documents confirm that Parke was correct in his allegations about Euston. John Saul, a male prostitute, made a statement which is in the file, in which he said:

> The young Duke of Grafton—I mean the brother to the present Duke was a constant visitor at Hammond's. He is a tall fine looking man with a fair moustache [This clearly means Euston] . . . I saw him myself last night. I know him well. He went to Hammond's with me on one occasion. He is not an actual sodomite. He likes to play with you and then "spend" on your belly.

Saul had no axe to grind, and everything to lose, by claiming to have seen Euston at 19 Cleveland Street. And his words do not have the ring of those of a man wanting to blacken Euston's name maliciously. If that were true he would have denounced him as 'a proper sodomite', or in his favourite words, 'a regular Mary Ann'. It is important that Saul made this statement on 10th August and Parke did not become aware of the scandal until September—so suggestions that Saul was perjuring himself on Parke's behalf are unfounded. Saul had spoken the truth, and the Government knew it. This is shown by several hitherto secret documents in the D.P.P. file—letters from high-ranking members of the Government who were involved in the cover-up, including the Attorney-General and the Lord Chancellor. It was agreed that Saul should not be charged with perjury, as he most certainly would have been had they believed for one moment that he had lied. Despite this, Euston, at the instigation of a solicitor named Edward Henslow Bedford, brought Parke to trial on trumped-up libel charges. And Saul was dismissed by the judge as unreliable because he was a homosexual! The 'contracted judge, counsels, witnesses and plaintiff' described by Harrison fulfilled their function and Parke was found guilty of criminal libel. He was sentenced to a year's imprisonment. Silenced.

King Edward VII, Eddy's father, stipulated in his will that after his death all his private papers were to be destroyed. His instructions were carried out and the papers were burned by Lord Knollys and Lord Esher. The reason for Bertie wanting his archive destroyed was that he had lived such a profligate life he had no wish for his darker secrets to become public knowledge. This was understandable. But Queen Alexandra made a similar request and all *her* papers were incinerated when she died. This has never been explained. Alix, as numerous biographers have said, was the nonpareil of virtue. It is inconceivable that she could have had anything to hide, unless Sickert's story was true. The destruction of her papers only begins to make sense in the light of Sickert's story about Cleveland Street, Jack the Ripper and the cover-up.

A myth has now to be exploded.

The Scotland Yard file contains hundreds of names, but none of them was considered a serious suspect, as is indicated by the fact that as soon as men arrested showed proof of identity they were released. The only three plausible suspects were named by Macnaghten, who did not put pen to paper until six years after the murders. Then he mentioned two unknown Russians and Montague John Druitt, none of whom had been mentioned in the case before. The Russians have been untraceable, and only Druitt can be shown to have existed at all. But where, in 1894, did Macnaghten suddenly come across his name, for Druitt died at the end of 1888? Nowhere else in the file is Druitt mentioned, so he was not a suspect at the time of the murders. Conveniently he was dead and could not answer the charge that he was the Whitechapel Murderer. Walter Sickert described Montague Druitt as a scapegoat and accused Sir Melville Macnaghten, an instrument of the Freemasons, of concocting a case against him. He did not explain how Druitt came to be enmeshed in the web; he did not know. The complicated network that involved Druitt in the case and enabled him to be set up as the scapegoat, ready to be denounced as the Ripper the moment any serious investigation took place, is fully described later in this chapter.

As early as 1889 the police were spreading the rumour that Jack the Ripper had died by drowning at the end of 1888. Mr Albert Backert, a leading member of the Whitechapel Vigilance Committee, was allegedly told this in March 1889 when he questioned the police about their inquiries. Senior officials of the police and Government helped to give the rumour wide acceptance when they mentioned it in their memoirs. Sir Melville Macnaghten claimed in *Days of My Years* that the Ripper committed suicide in the Thames. Sir John Moylan, Assistant Under-Secretary at the Home Office, wrote, 'It is almost certain that he escaped by committing suicide at the end of 1888'.

Sir Basil Thomson, an Assistant Commissioner of the C.I.D., thought the Ripper was 'an insane Russian doctor'. He wrote, '. . . the man escaped arrest by committing suicide in the Thames at the end of 1888'.

Two authors who have recently made detailed examinations of the case against Druitt are Tom Cullen in *Autumn of Terror* and Daniel Farson in *Jack the Ripper*. Both books are based upon private notes apparently written by Sir Melville Macnaghten, *copied* by his daughter, the Dowager Lady Aberconway, and *recopied* by the authors. Unfortunately in the various versions the original intention of Macnaghten seem to have been lost, for the notes used by Farson and Cullen vary in major points from Macnaghten's official notes, which are in the Scotland Yard file. Neither Farson nor Cullen was able to gain access to the Yard file, so only now is it possible to show that the whole basis of their case against Druitt is mistaken. Before examining the fatal errors in their theory, it is important to know the full content of Macnaghten's *official* notes. They are marked *Confidential* and are written in Sir Melville's own handwriting on white paper bearing only the small oval seal of the Metropolitan Police:

> The case referred to in the sensational story told in 'The Sun' in its issue of 13th inst, & following dates, is that of Thomas Cutbush who was arraigned at the London County Sessions in April 1891, on a charge of maliciously wounding Florence Grace Johnson, and attempting to wound Isabelle Frazer Anderson in Kennington. He was found to be insane and sentenced to be detained during Her Majesty's pleasure.
>
> This Cutbush, who lived with his mother and aunt at 14 Albert St. Kennington, escaped from the Lambeth Infirmary, (after he had been detained there only a few hours, as a lunatic) at noon on 5th March 1891. He was rearrested on 9th idem. A few weeks before this, several cases of stabbing, or jabbing from behind had occurred in the vicinity, and a man named Colicutt was arrested, but subsequently discharged owing to faulty identification. The cuts in the girls dresses made by Colicutt were quite different to the cut made by Cutbush (when he wounded Miss Johnson) who was no doubt influenced by a wild desire of morbid imitation. Cutbush's antecedents were enquired into by Ch. Inspr. (now Supt.) [unreadable], by Inspr. Race, and by P.S. McCarthy

C.I.D. (The last named officer had been specially employed in Whitechapel at the time of the murders there) and it was ascertained that he was born, and had lived in Kennington all his life. His father died when he was quite young, and he was always a 'spoilt' child. He had been employed as a clerk and traveller in the Tea trade at the Minories, & subsequently canvassed for a Directory in the East End, during which time he bore a good character. He apparently contracted syphilis about 1888, and,—since that time,—led an idle and useless life. His brain seems to have become affected, and he believed that people were trying to poison him. He wrote to Lord Grimthorpe, and others, and also to the Treasury, complaining of Dr Brooks, of Westminster Bridge Rd, whom he threatened to shoot for having supplied him with bad medicines. He is said to have studied medical books by day, and to have rambled about at night, returning frequently with his clothes covered with blood, but little reliance could be placed on the statements made by his mother or his aunt, who both appear to have been of a very excitable disposition. It was found impossible to ascertain his movements on the nights of the Whitechapel murders. The knife found on him was bought in Houndsditch about a week before he was detained in the Infirmary. Cutbush was a nephew of the late Supt. Executive.

Now the Whitechapel Murderer had 5 victims and 5 victims only,—his murders were
(i) 31st Aug '88. Mary Ann Nichols—at Buck's Row—who was found with her throat cut—& with (slight) stomach mutilation.
(ii) 8th Sept '88 Annie Chapman—Hanbury Street: throat cut—stomach & private parts badly mutilated & some of the entrails placed round the neck.
(iii) 30th Sept '88. Elizabeth Stride—Berner's Street: throat cut, but nothing in shape of mutilation attempted, & *on same date* Catherine Eddowes—Mitre Square, throat cut, & very bad mutilation, both of face & stomach.
(iv) 9th November. Mary Jane Kelly—Miller's Court, throat cut, and the whole of the body mutilated in the most ghastly manner.

The last murder is the only one that took place in a *room*, and the murderer must have been at least 2 hours engaged. A photo was taken of the woman, as she was found lying on the bed, without seeing which it is impossible to imagine the awful mutilation.

With regard to the *double* murder which took place on 30th Sept. there is no doubt but that the man was disturbed by some Jews who drove up to a Club (close to which the body of

Elizabeth Stride was found) and that he then, 'mordum satiatus', went in search of a further victim whom he found at Mitre Square.

It will be noticed that the fury of the mutilations *increased* in each case, and, seemingly, the appetite only became sharpened by indulgence. It seems, then, highly improbable that the murderer would have suddenly stopped in November '88, and been content to recommence operations by merely prodding a girl behind some 2 years and 4 months afterwards. A much more rational theory is that the murderer's brain gave way altogether after his awful glut in Millers Court, and that he immediately committed suicide, or, as a possible alternative, was found to be so hopelessly mad by his relations, that he was by them confined in some asylum.

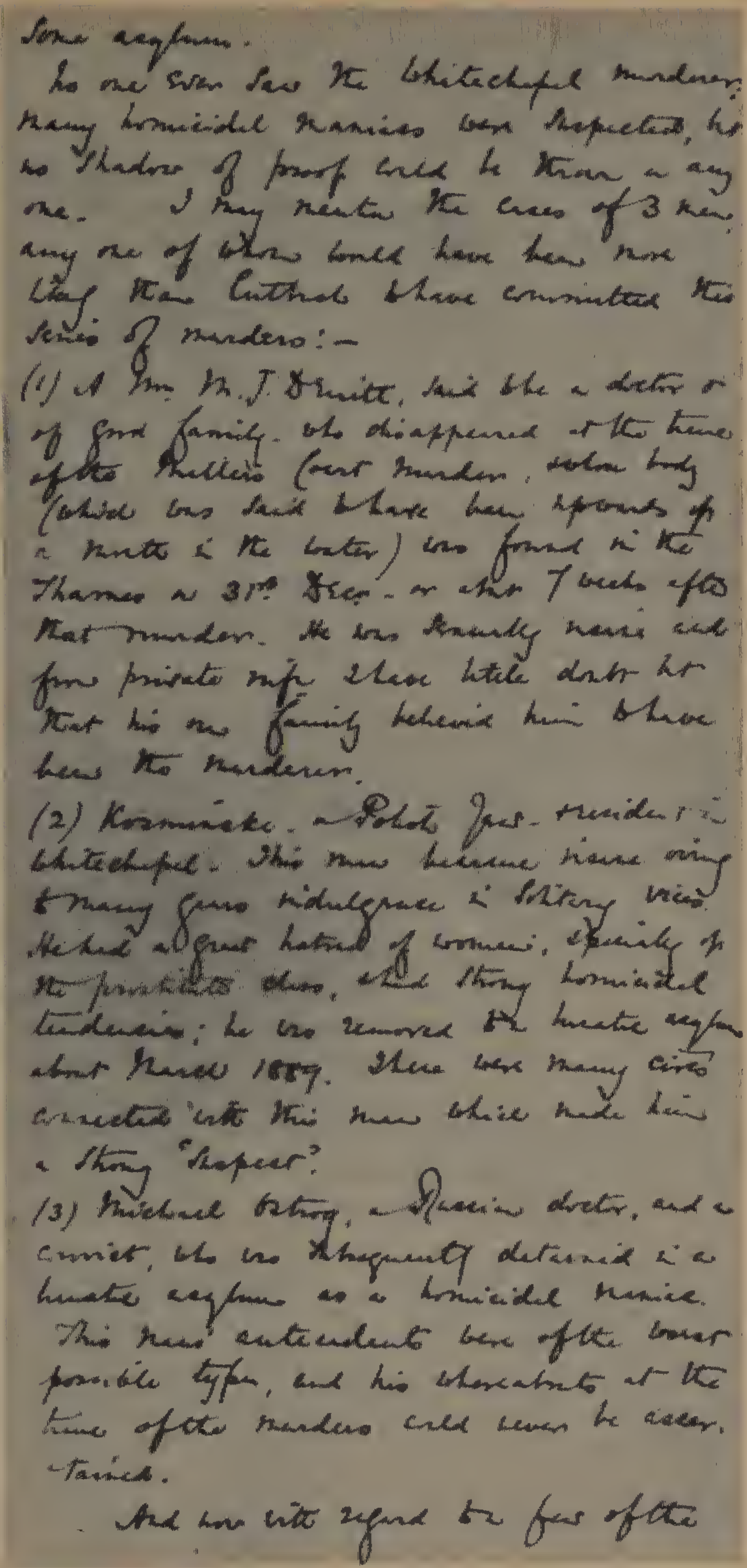
No one ever saw the Whitechapel Murderer, many homicidal maniacs were suspected, but no shadow of proof could be thrown on any one. I may mention the cases of 3 men, any one of whom would have been more likely than Cutbush to have committed this series of murders:—

(1) A Mr M. J. Druitt, said to be a doctor and of good family, who disappeared at the time of the Millers Court murder, and whose body (which was said to have been upwards of a month in the water) was found in the Thames on 31st Dec.—or about 7 weeks after that murder. He was sexually insane and from private info I have little doubt but that his own family believed him to have been the murderer.

(2) Kosminski a Polish Jew and resident in Whitechapel. This man became insane owing to many years indulgence in solitary vices. He had a great hatred of women, especially of the prostitute class, and had strong homicidal tendencies: he was removed to a lunatic asylum about March 1889. There were many crimes connected with this man which made him a strong 'suspect'.

(3) Michael Ostrog, a Russian doctor, and a convict, who was frequently detained in a lunatic asylum as a homicidal maniac. This man's antecedents were of the worst possible type, and his whereabouts at the time of the murders could never be ascertained.

And now with regard to a few of the inaccuracies and misleading statements made by the 'Sun'. In its issue of 14th Feb., it is stated that the writer has in his possession a facsimile of the knife with which the murders were committed. This knife (which for some unexplained reason has, for the last 3 years, been kept by Insp. Race, instead of being sent to Prisoners' Property Store) was traced and it was found to have been purchased in Houndsditch in Feb. '91 or 2 years and 3 months *after* the Whitechapel murders ceased!



some asylum.

No one ever saw the Whitechapel murderer; many homicidal maniacs were suspected, but no shadow of proof could be thrown on any one. I may mention the cases of 3 men, any one of whom would have been more likely than Cutbush to have committed this series of murders:—

(1) A Mr M. J. Druitt, said to be a doctor & of good family, who disappeared at the time of the Miller's Court murder, whose body (which was said to have been upwards of a month in the water) was found in the Thames on 31st Decr.— or about 7 weeks after that murder. He was sexually insane and from private info I have little doubt but that his own family believed him to have been the murderer.

(2) Kosminski — a Polish Jew — & resident in Whitechapel. This man became insane owing to many years indulgence in solitary vices. He had a great hatred of women, specially of the prostitute class, & had strong homicidal tendencies; he was removed to a lunatic asylum about March 1889. There were many circs connected with this man which made him a strong "suspect".

(3) Michael Ostrog, a Russian doctor, and a convict, who was subsequently detained in a lunatic asylum as a homicidal maniac. This man's antecedents were of the worst possible type, and his whereabouts at the time of the murders could never be ascertained.

And now with regard to a few of the

The vital page of Macnaghten's notes

The statement, too, that Cutbush 'spent a portion of the day in making rough drawings of the bodies of women, and of their mutilations' is based solely on the fact that 2 *scribble* drawings of women in indecent postures were found torn up in Cutbush's room. The head and body of one of these had been cut from some fashion plate, and legs were added to show a woman's naked thighs and pink stockings.

In the issue of 15th Inst. it is said that a *light over*coat was among the things found in Cutbush's house, and that a man in a *light* overcoat was seen talking to a woman in Backchurch Lane whose body with arms attached was found in Pinchin St. This is hopelessly incorrect! On 10th Sept. '89 the naked body, with arms, of a woman was found in some sacking under a railway arch in Pinchin St: the head and legs were never found nor was the woman ever identified. She had been killed at least 24 hours before the remains (which had seemingly been brought from a distance) were discovered. The stomach was split up by a cut, and the head and legs had been severed in a manner identical with that of the woman whose remains were discovered in the Thames, in Battersea Park, and on the Chelsea Embankment on 4th June of the same year; and these murders had no connection whatever with the Whitechapel horrors. The Rainham mystery in 1887, and the Whitehall mystery (when portions of a woman's body were found under what is now Scotland Yard) in 1888 were of a similar type to the Thames and Pinchin St. crimes.

It is perfectly untrue to say that Cutbush stabbed *6* girls behind—this is confounding his case with that of Colicutt.

The theory that the Whitechapel murderer was left-handed, or, at any rate, 'ambidextrous', had its origin in the remark made by a doctor who examined the corpse of one of the earliest victims; *other doctors did not agree with him.*

With regard to the *4* additional murders ascribed by the writer in the Sun to the Whitechapel fiend:—

(1) The body of Martha Tabram, a prostitute was found on a common stair case in George Yard buildings on 7th August 1888; the body had been repeatedly *pierced*, probably with a *bayonet*. This woman had, with a fellow prostitute, been in company of 2 soldiers in the early part of the evening. These men were arrested, but the second prostitute failed, or refused, to identify, and the soldiers were accordingly discharged.

(2) Alice McKenzie was found with her throat cut (or rather *stabbed*) in Castle Alley on 17th July 1889; no evidence was forthcoming and no arrests were made in connection with

> this case. The *stab* in the throat was of the same nature as in the case of number 3.
>
> (3) Frances Coles in Swallow Gardens, on 13th February 1891—for which Thomas Sadler, a fireman, was arrested, and, after several remands, discharged. It was ascertained at the time that Sadler had sailed for the Baltic on 19th July '89 and was in Whitechapel on the night of 17th idem. He was a man of ungovernable temper and entirely addicted to drink and the company of the lowest prostitutes.
>
> (4) The case of the unidentified woman whose trunk was found in Pinchin St on 10th Sept. 1889—which has already been dealt with.
>
> M. L. Macnaghten
> 23rd Feb. 1894

Investigating Farson's submission that Druitt was the murderer, it is illuminating to examine several statements he claims were made by Macnaghten:

> No one ever saw the Whitechapel murderer (unless possibly it was the City P.C. who was on a beat near Mitre Square) and no proof could in any way ever be brought against anyone, although very many homicidal maniacs were at one time or another suspected. I enumerate the cases of three men against whom the police held very reasonable suspicion. *Personally, and after much careful and deliberate consideration, I am inclined to exonerate two of them.*

The sentence which I have put in italics is vital to Farson's theory that the third suspect, Druitt, was in Macnaghten's mind the real killer. But in his official notes at the Yard, which must be considered more reliable than Farson's copy of a copy, Macnaghten wrote:

> No one ever saw the Whitechapel murderer, many homicidal maniacs were suspected, but no shadow of proof could be thrown on any one. I may mention the cases of 3 men, *any one of whom* would have been *more likely* than Cutbush to have committed this series of murders. [My italics.]

Here we see no inclination to exonerate two of them, just the names of three men, *any one of whom* might have been Jack the Ripper.

Farson and Cullen claim that an even more impressive indictment of Druitt appeared in Lady Aberconway's copy of her father's notes. Once again, nothing like it appears in the real notes. According to the two authors, Macnaghten wrote:

> . . . I have always held strong opinions regarding No. 1 [Druitt] and the more I think the matter over, the stronger do these opinions become. The truth, however, will never be known, and did, indeed at one time lie at the bottom of the Thames, if my conjectures be correct.

These words do not appear in the original notes. In the real notes Macnaghten made no claim to have any strong suspicions regarding Druitt. He was merely one of three *possibles.* There was no mention, either, of the truth having lain at the bottom of the Thames.

Now look at the actual reference to No. 1, in which both authors differ seriously from the real notes. Cullen and Farson's version is reproduced on the left and the real Macnaghten's notes on the right:

> No. 1 Mr M. J. Druitt, a doctor of about forty-one years of age and of fairly good family, who disappeared at the time of the Miller's Court murder, and whose body was found floating in the Thames on 3rd December, i.e. seven weeks after the said murder. The body was said to have been in the water for a month, or more—on it was found a season ticket between Blackheath and London. From private information I have little doubt but that his own family suspected this man of being the Whitechapel murderer; it was alleged that he was sexually insane.

> (1) A Mr M. J. Druitt, said to be a doctor and of good family, who disappeared at the time of the Millers Court murder, and whose body (which was said to have been upwards of a month in the water) was found in the Thames on 31st Dec.—or about 7 weeks after that murder. He was sexually insane and from private info I have little doubt but that his own family believed him to have been the murderer.

The discrepancies are at once apparent: In the genuine notes there is no mention of Druitt's age; they say Druitt was found in the Thames on 31st December (which is correct). Cullen and Farson's version says 3rd December, which by no stretch of the imagination was seven weeks after Kelly's murder on 9th November—it was a mere three weeks and three days. A further mistake is made in the revised edition of Farson's book, when the date of the finding of Druitt's body is changed yet again—to 13th December! The real notes make no mention of a season ticket, and the wording of the two pieces is quite different. Thus the notes used by Messrs Farson and Cullen as the basis of their indictment of Druitt appear to be *rough and inaccurate copies*. Whether the mistakes occurred in Lady Aberconway's first transcription, or in the subsequent copies, it is impossible to say. Over so many years and in so many versions it is hardly surprising that statements have emerged which have little bearing on the originals.

Armed with the idea that Macnaghten suspected Druitt and exonerated the other two suspects named, Farson and Cullen set out to find evidence.

The evidence produced by Farson is seriously flawed. Patiently, and with the help of two full-time researchers, he traced a Dr Lionel Druitt who was listed in the *Medical Directory* until 1887, after which date his address was given as Australia. Lionel turned out to be Montague's cousin. Farson also found the death certificate of his suspect at Somerset House and discovered that Druitt was a barrister, not a doctor as Macnaghten had stated.

He found that Druitt was born at Wimborne in Dorset in August 1857. In January 1870 he went to Winchester College, where he proved a successful all-rounder. He made rapid progress academically, was an active member of the Debating Society and excelled at cricket. In 1876 he was awarded a scholarship to New College, Oxford, where he did moderately well. He left in 1880, having achieved a B.A. Druitt turned to law, and in May 1882 was admitted to the Inner Temple. He was called to the Bar, before the benchers of the Inns of Court, in 1885. He took chambers at No. 9 King's Bench Walk, which he maintained until his death, but he appears to have had little success as a barrister, and eventually became a full-time master at a school in Blackheath, where he had been teaching at least since 1883.

Farson's next piece of 'evidence' seems insubstantial, but it appears to be the foundation of his argument. He states that he received a letter from a Mr Knowles who said he had once seen a document in Australia called *The East End Murderer—I knew him*. It was apparently written by a Lionel Drewett, Druitt or

Drewery. Unfortunately, Farson cannot produce the letter because, he says, it disappeared along with other papers relevant to Jack the Ripper in a dossier someone borrowed but never returned. Farson does not remember Knowles's address, so the latter cannot be traced and questioned about the document he may or may not have seen. What is more frustrating is that Farson did not immediately contact Knowles to ask vital questions, like: 'When and where did you see the document?'; 'Do you have a copy?'; and most important of all, 'Did it name the murderer?' In fact, no questions at all were asked of the man who, Farson himself says, provided him with *crucial* evidence.

'The value of this [Knowles's] letter in identifying Jack the Ripper can hardly be exaggerated', he writes, although he does not have even the address of the man who wrote it. The letter was placed in a file which was later stolen. Farson had noted from the purloined letter, however, that *The East End Murderer —I knew him* had been published privately by a Mr Fell of Dandenong, a mountain settlement some twenty miles east of Melbourne, in 1890. He goes on to say that if it could be proved the document was written by M. J. Druitt's cousin Lionel, then it would be beyond coincidence—and Druitt must have been the Ripper. This seems a prodigious leap from mere possibility to accepted fact. Farson no longer regards the existence of the document as merely possible, but suddenly, without any corroboration, that possibility has been transformed in his mind to fact, and he is already talking about, 'If it can be proved it was written by Montague's cousin . . .'

Another important piece of investigation glossed over is that Knowles is supposed to have claimed *The East End Murderer—I knew him* could have been written by someone called Drewett or Drewery. No investigation into this possibility appears to have been conducted; it is tacitly assumed that the document did exist, that it was written by Lionel Druitt, and that all Farson has to show is that Lionel the author was also Lionel the doctor, Montague's cousin. Farson then reminds us that the *Medical Directory* showed Dr Lionel Druitt moved to Australia in 1887.

In Farson's revised edition he quotes a correspondent who states that in column seven of the death certificate of Druitt's mother, who spent her last years in a lunatic asylum, there is written: 'Emily Knowles, present at death, Manor House, Chiswick'.

With no stronger evidence than this coincidence of common surnames, Emily Knowles is coupled with the present-day Mr

Knowles who wrote the missing letter, a mountainous piece of conjecture with no hint of supporting evidence; Farson knows nothing more about either Knowles than the name. The suggestion is that Emily Knowles was a woman looking after Mrs Druitt at the asylum, and that she held vital information after Montague's last visit to his mother: 'This was conveyed by a member of her family to Lionel, enabling him to write the document'. (!)

By this stage Farson seems convinced that Druitt was the killer. But:

(1) He has not proven that the document to which he refers even existed.

(2) He has not shown, if it did, that Lionel Druitt wrote it.

(3) He has not examined the argument that if Montague were the murderer, his cousin would hardly have wanted to publicize the fact. And in the unlikely event that Lionel was seeking notoriety through a connection with the Ripper, firstly he would not have had to arrange for the piece to be published privately—newspapers and publishers would have snapped it up immediately; and secondly, if he was seeking notoriety he would hardly have had his work published in a place so small and remote as Dandenong, where so few would have read it. Dandenong has little more than six thousand inhabitants now. In the 1890s it was a cluster of huts, and certainly no printer would have found a livelihood there.

(4) He has not discussed the likelihood that whoever wrote the piece, it may have named someone completely different from Montague Druitt. Farson does not even mention this as a possibility.

(5) He does not mention that literally thousands of statements have been made by people claiming to know the identity of the Ripper, and that *The East End Murderer—I knew him*, even if it existed, may have had no significance at all.

Despite what several Druittists have claimed, Farson produces no concrete evidence that the document existed. What he does produce appears to be fourth-hand hearsay which would not be admissible in any court of law, claiming that an amateur criminologist called Maurice Gould claimed he had been in Australia from 1925 to 1932, and that there he met two people who claimed they knew the identity of the Ripper. Their information, it is said, came from papers belonging to a Mr W. G. Fell.

Farson continues:

> Today, Gould admits that details are blurred at such a distance, but he remembers that one of the two men was a freelance journalist called Edward MacNamara who 'knew this Mr Fell of Dandenong who died in 1935' and said that Fell housed a man called Druitt who left him papers proving the Ripper's identity: 'These he would not part with unless he received a considerable sum, £500 I think, which I had not got in those days and so *what I wrote was from memory from the scant examination I had of them*'. [my italics]

Not only is the information Farson proffers as corroboration fourth-hand, but it is apparently based on something written from *memory* after a *scant* examination. It is not explained how the two men Gould met in Australia had knowledge as early as 1932 of Mr Fell's death in 1935. Nor is it explained that the Australian registries of births and deaths have no record of the death of a W. G. Fell any time between 1933 and 1937, which rules out Mr Gould's testimony.

However, armed with what he calls a 'double confirmation of names', from the blurred memory of Gould and from the untraceable Knowles, Farson flew to Australia. He drove to the Dandenong Ranges, and at a place called Lang-Lang he heard of a shopkeeper called Fell. Unfortunately, he was no relation to the elusive printer.

If Farson produced no evidence the document existed, the BBC with all their efforts and resources, concluded it did not, and in so doing seem to have destroyed Farson's whole case against Druitt. In a Telex message to Humphrey Fisher, Head of Documentaries at the Australian Broadcasting Commission in Sydney, Paul Bonner asked for information on the alleged document. On 9th April 1973 he received this reply from researcher Leone Buchanan:

> Humphrey Fisher passed on your request to me concerning Dr Lionel Druitt and the publication of *The East End Murderer—I knew him.* So far no luck. Have checked Sydney libraries and spent three days in Melbourne checking every available source including libraries, historical societies, criminologists, archivists, private collectors, publishers and newspapers. Druitt's publication is not listed in Australian bibliographies and a search of directories around 1890 reveals no such person as W. G. Fell. Traced daughter and grand-

> daughter of Druitt who have no knowledge of Dr Druitt being in Dandenong or of his writing the article. Apparently he was in Tasmania during that time.

This seems to destroy Farson's theory once and for all. If Dr Lionel Druitt was in Tasmania when Farson claimed he was at Dandenong then he could not have written the document—which seems not to have existed anyway, because if it had some trace of it would surely have been uncovered by Buchanan's exhaustive research. And finally it would seem that W. G. Fell did not exist either!

Lionel Druitt's only published work in Australia was in fact a four-page article dealing with urine infection, which appeared in a medical magazine.

As if he has established not only that the document existed, but also that Lionel Druitt was its author, Farson goes on to ask:

> What personal knowledge could Lionel have had which made him accuse his cousin? Here I am able to produce another piece of crucial evidence. I discovered from the *Medical Directory* that Dr Lionel Druitt had a surgery at the Minories in 1879. This is the first link between Druitt and the East End of London, the absence of which has been so baffling until now. Montague was about to leave Oxford at that date, but again I find the association beyond coincidence.

However, Dr Lionel Druitt did not have a surgery in the Minories in 1879, and there is no mention of him in the *Medical Directory* for that year. The reference which is confusing Farson appears in fact in the *Medical Register*, a different publication entirely. This reference does indeed list Druitt at Minories, E. in 1879. But at the most this means he was assisting the doctor who regularly practised at that address, and he was not there for more than a few months. This is shown by the fact that the *Medical Directory* and the *Medical Register* for the years either side of 1879 give Druitt's address as 8 Strathmore Gardens, which was clearly his permanent address. Unfortunately, this misunderstanding about Lionel Druitt's connection with the Minories has become the basis of the next major part of Farson's theory. He suggests that Lionel, four years older than Montague, 'might well have felt it his duty to look after the boy when they were both in London'. But he gives no evidence to show Montague was ever in the East End of London, or even that he knew his cousin Lionel.

'It is reasonable to assume', says Farson, 'that Montague might have visited Lionel there. . . . It is conceivable that he even lived there himself after Lionel had left, and that at some time Lionel had grounds for suspicion.'

So, instead of producing *evidence* to link Montague with the East End, Farson tries to convince us of his suspect's guilt by stating 'it is reasonable to assume' he stayed at the Minories for nine years after Lionel left, even though all this time Montague had rooms at No. 9 King's Bench Walk. A quick check of both the *Medical Register* and the *Medical Directory* for every year between 1879 and 1889 shows that at no time could Montague have stayed at No. 140. It was occupied permanently by doctors. Firstly Doctors J. O. Taylor and Thomas Thyne practised at the address, to be succeeded by Dr John Sell Edmund Cotman. Despite Farson's assertion, it is *un*reasonable to assume any connection between Druitt and the Minories, unless there is supporting evidence.

Farson then returns to his amateur criminologist Maurice Gould, who claims to have spoken to a former librarian from Poplar on the Isle of Dogs, which borders on Ripper territory. Gould is quoted as saying, 'From some recess in the library he [the librarian] produced an old, either Voters' List or a Directory, which listed an M. J. Druitt as living in the Minories'.

Farson says he later tried to trace the reference but without success, and 'further enquiries indicate that the ex-librarian is dead'.

Once again Farson's evidence can be traced back via hearsay to a dead man. The first half of his case is based on a letter he cannot produce from a man who cannot be traced. The second half is based on the unsubstantiated testimony of a dead man. Old librarians die, but Voters' Lists and Directories live on. I have examined every directory covering the Minories in the seventies, eighties and nineties, and in none of them is the name M. J. Druitt mentioned.

The case to show a connection between Druitt and the Minories has the strength of gossamer, yet Farson proceeds to detail what he sees as the importance of that thoroughfare. It is not simply *their* position in the East End, he says:

> They have a particular significance in the story of the Ripper. On September 29th, 1888, the Ripper wrote from Liverpool: 'Beware, I shall be at work on the 1st and 2nd inst., in

> Minories at twelve midnight, and I give the authorities a good chance, but there is never a policeman near when I am at work'.

Then he quotes part of a further letter from Liverpool received after the double murder of 30th September:

> What fools the police are. I even give them the name of the street where I am living.

As far as Farson is concerned these letters can have been written by only one person, Montague the Ripper. But yet again one single idea turns out to be fraught with fatal weaknesses. There is no evidence whatsoever to show the real murderer wrote the two letters from Liverpool. There is nothing to indicate Druitt ever went to Liverpool or had any connections with the city. If Farson had seen the Scotland Yard file he would know it contains hundreds of letters from cranks all over the world. They are written in many languages; many an East End street and numerous nights between September 1888 and the end of the year are mentioned. With that wealth of material one could prove anything—providing of course one accepts the Ripper wrote every letter received by the police and Press, and that in between murders he travelled as far off as Barcelona and Philadelphia to post his crazy messages.

But the most misleading point about the two Liverpool letters is Farson's juxtaposition of the last two sentences of one with the reference to the Minories in the other. 'What fools the police are. I even give them the name of the street where I am living', is used to create the impression that the writer of the letter lived in the Minories. What Farson does not mention is that 'the street where I am living' plainly refers to the address at the top of the letter—Prince William Street, Liverpool!

This analysis of Farson's book reveals no evidence at all to incriminate Druitt. He has not shown Druitt was anywhere near the scenes of the murders nor that he ever went to the East End. And he has no evidence to show Druitt had a motive for killing whores.

Montague John Druitt was not Jack the Ripper. The truth of this is to be found in the barrister's cricketing career. The first murder, that of Nichols, took place at Whitechapel in the early hours of Friday, 31st August. *The very next day Druitt was* *in the West Country playing cricket.* The second murder, Annie Chapman's, took place about 4.20 on the morning of Saturday, 8th September. Six hours later Druitt was playing cricket at the Rectory Field at Blackheath for the Blackheath Cricket Club.

'Of course this does not disprove the case against Druitt in any way', Farson writes, and then suggests feebly, 'It might confirm that his nerve was strong'. He continues:

> Certainly it was practical, for the journey to Blackheath from Spitalfields was a short and easy one. There is no reason why a man should not commit murder and go on to play a good game of cricket a few hours later. Despite the excessive slowness of the game he might even regard it as a release.

By the time he gets to discussing the killer's state of mind, Farson has obviously forgotten the picture he painted of the strong-nerved Druitt elaborately mutilating Chapman, then going on to play cricket. He first quotes Dr Magnus Hirschfeld, author of *Sexual Anomalies and Perversions*, who makes the point that:

> The sexual murderer does not know the sinister, bestial desire to kill that lies dormant within him, to come to life at the first unfortunate opportunity.

Farson goes on to say that Hirschfeld suggests the sexual murderer is hardly aware of what he is doing, and that he murders in a state of sexual intoxication. He then quotes Colin Wilson, who says that after the murder he thinks the killer would suffer:

> intense depression, the 'morning after' feeling, revulsion from the bloodstained clothes, the feeling 'Did I do that?' . . . I suspect that Jack the Ripper was a slave to this craving for killing, like a drug addict, but still ashamed of it.

Farson comments:

> I am sure that Wilson is right. Apart from the question of self-acknowledged responsibility, this does not conflict with the conclusions of Hirschfeld but carries them still further.

But it is hardly consistent with Farson's earlier comment about Druitt playing cricket only hours after committing a savage murder.

In his concluding chapters, Farson elaborates on Sir Melville Macnaghten's words: 'From private information I have little doubt but that his family believed him to have been the murderer'. Farson discusses this in regard to William Druitt, Montague's brother, a solicitor from Bournemouth who testified at Montague's inquest. Farson writes:

> We may suppose that William, who represented the family, believed that his brother committed the murders. But . . . why? The suicide in the Thames is no evidence in itself. Yet at the very point where the evidence might seem weakest, I can see its strength. William must have had proof of Montague's guilt. Furthermore, this proof must have been conclusive; William was not searching for notoriety, on the contrary, and he would hardly have drawn attention to his suspicions without good reason. Equally the police would not have accepted his statement without proof.

We must remember that Sir Melville Macnaghten's notes did not express the opinion of the police as a whole. For police, Farson should substitute 'Macnaghten'. Secondly, as Macnaghten's *official* notes show, he did not *accept* the statement that the family believed Druitt was the Ripper. He merely reported their suspicion, which in itself was meaningless. Many families had suspicions about certain of their members, as the Yard *Suspects* file proves. That did not make them all Jack the Ripper. And thirdly, if the police had had proof, as Farson alleges, Macnaghten certainly would have included it in his notes.

Farson quotes the letter found in Druitt's pocket after he was dragged from the Thames, and which was read out at the inquest:

> Since Friday I felt I was going to be like mother and the best thing for me was to die.

But this does not support the case against Druitt, it weakens it. Would a man who had committed five brutal murders accompanied by horrific mutilations over a period of ten weeks sit down and write, several weeks after the final murder, that he had been feeling apprehensive about his state of mind *since Friday*? The idea that he had not become just a little worried about his behaviour between 31st August and 9th November is almost comic.

In the revised edition of his book Farson admits the possibility that Druitt did not commit suicide but was murdered by his family. His reasoning, in part, is sound. Druitt's pockets were filled with stones. A swimmer is not likely to choose death by drowning, and a person who cannot swim would have no need to weight his body. But Farson harps back to the fictitious connection with the Minories and quotes a correspondent as saying:

> I would say that they [Druitt's family] overpowered him—drugs? injection?—they had medical knowledge and so presumably access to 'knock out drops'—and then carried his unconscious body to the Thames and then heaved his stone-laden body into it. (Minories to Thames—200 yards?) Justice was done if not legally.

Yet as we have seen, Druitt was in no way connected with the Minories. And if he had been, No. 140 where Farson says Druitt lived is considerably more than two hundred yards from the river; it is nearer nine hundred. Though the reasoning that Druitt was murdered is sound, it is hardly credible that his own family could have been responsible. Even if the Druitts had certain knowledge that Montague was a desperate maniac, and had been responsible for the Jack the Ripper murders, surely the last thing they are likely to have done is murder him. If they had taken any action it would have been to place him in an asylum like his mother. So, if his family did not murder Druitt, who did?

Sickert said from the beginning that Druitt had been a scapegoat, but he did not know how he had been selected. If this was true, those involved in the cover-up would have been questing for a likely candidate on whom to place the blame for the murders. And Druitt, alone in London, nervous and unhappy, would have been an ideal choice. Of course, it would have been hopeless bringing him to trial—conviction would have been impossible, and the accompanying publicity highly dangerous. But if he committed suicide, and a note was found on his body expressing fear for his sanity, then the case would be well and truly sewn up.

The Honourable Society of the Inner Temple have records to show that Druitt kept up his chambers at No. 9 King's Bench Walk until his death. This is confirmed by the *Post*

Office Directory of London. It is almost certain that if he was murdered, he was taken from *this* address to the Thames. King's Bench Walk runs right down to the Victoria Embankment. But without solid facts all this is speculation, with little more validity than Farson's writing about Druitt. If Druitt was a scapegoat, he must have been set up. Someone somewhere along the line must have chosen him. If Sickert was right in his suggestion, there had to be a link between Druitt and the other sides of the case. But where?

There is a series of links that taken singly could be dismissed as coincidence. Combined, they form a pattern which is undeniable:

(1) Michael Harrison has found that Prince Eddy's tutor, and later governor, Canon John Neale Dalton, was educated at the same school at Blackheath where Druitt became a master. Whether Dalton continued his association with the school, and indeed exerted any influence there, it is impossible to say. Once again, it is only possible to speculate that if he did he could have been responsible for one of the most baffling aspects about Druitt's tragic life, his mysterious dismissal from the school. Druitt taught there for at least five years, and was dismissed shortly before his death. No one has been able to find out why.

(2) Thomas Toughill, who has developed his own theory about the identity of the Ripper, has established another connection, albeit an indirect one, between Druitt and Eddy. Druitt's brother was in the same regiment as the artist Frank Miles—and Miles' brother was Eddy's equerry.

(3) Having established Miles as a second link between Druitt and Eddy, we find that Miles lived in Tite Street, Chelsea—and that across the road, at No. 9, lived Sir Melville Macnaghten, the man responsible for connecting Druitt's name with the Ripper case.

(4) Next door to Miles at No. 28 Tite Street lived the artist Whistler, Walter Sickert's erstwhile mentor whom Sickert visited regularly.

(5) At No. 16 Tite Street lived the homosexual Miles's former lover, Oscar Wilde—and Wilde was another close friend of Sickert whom Sickert often used to visit.

(6) Hesketh Pearson pointed out in his biography of Wilde that another distinguished visitor used to call on Wilde at Tite Street—Eddy's father, the Prince of Wales. Parties were held

at Wilde's house at which Sickert, Eddy's father and Miles were among the regular guests.

(7) Macnaghten was a likely guest at these same parties, though this is not definite. As well as his link with Sickert at Tite Street, Macnaghten and Sickert were fellow-members of the Garrick Club.

(8) Yet another fact connects Druitt with the Royal Family. After the notorious Mordaunt divorce scandal in which the Prince of Wales was implicated in 1860, Lady Mordaunt was conveniently certified insane and placed in an asylum where she spent the rest of her life. Whether she was really insane is open to some doubt, but the fact remained that her incarceration was fortunate for the Prince of Wales. The records of the Lunacy Commission show that only about twelve lunatics in the whole country were of sufficient importance or interest to warrant regular reports. Tracing the records through the years, one fact cannot be missed: two names appear regularly together in that small list of inmates—Lady Mordaunt and Mrs Ann Druitt, Montague's mother.

(9) Another interesting connection between Druitt and Eddy is via Eddy's best friend James Kenneth Stephen, whom Harrison named as the Ripper. Stephen's brothers were both barristers like Druitt. Harry Lushington Stephen was at No. 3 King's Bench Walk (Druitt was a few yards along at No. 9) and Herbert Stephen was immediately opposite Druitt's chambers, at No. 4 Paper Buildings.

(10) The Stephen brothers were cousins of Virginia Woolf, a close friend of Sickert's.

(11) The Stephens were all patients of Sir William Gull, the man Sickert names as the prime mover in the Ripper case.

(12) Druitt was surrounded by people who had close links with the account of the Ripper murders told by Sickert. The twelfth link takes us beyond the civilized purlieus of King's Bench Walk and Paper Buildings into No. 9 King's Bench Walk itself. Several solicitors and barristers shared No. 9 King's Bench Walk with Druitt—one of whom was Reginald Brodie Dyke Acland, the brother of Sir William Gull's son-in-law.

(13) Dyke Acland's father, Sir Henry Wentworth Acland, was Honorary Physician to Eddy's father and a close friend of Gull.

(14) Acland was also a friend of Holman Hunt, the Pre-Raphaelite painter—whose studios had been at Cleveland Street.

(15) The final link is the vital one. The solicitor who instigated the second part of the Cleveland Street cover-up, Edward Henslow Bedford, lived at No. 9 King's Bench Walk, the same address as Druitt. Law Society records show that Bedford practised at the address between 1867 and 1898, and subsequently at 52 Arbour Square, Whitechapel, close to the police station. During his time at King's Bench Walk he was twice in partnership, but between 1879 and 1898, the period during which Druitt shared the address, he practised alone. The building is not vast; it is a three-storey, flat-fronted house; Bedford and Druitt would undoubtedly have known each other well.

It seems beyond coincidence that the man who played a major role in the second part of the cover-up should live at the self-same address as the person used as a scapegoat in the third part. Bedford was in the best possible position to evaluate Druitt, bring him to the notice of those in charge of the cover-up, and also set up his murder.

To sum up: an amazing set of facts, all of which can be verified by documents open to the public, not only confirm Druitt was a scapegoat by linking him with every aspect of the case. They also provide definite links between every part of Sickert's narrative, parts which until now have appeared unconnected. Druitt, Eddy, the Prince of Wales, J. K. Stephen, Sir Melville Macnaghten, Sir William Gull and all the goings-on at Cleveland Street are linked together, just as Sickert claimed. And as final establishment of his credentials, Sickert himself has links with all of them.

CHAPTER NINE

All Roads lead to Dorset Street

Apart from the curious fact that Inspector Abberline was in charge of both the Ripper case and the Cleveland Street brothel case, other incidents link Cleveland Street—and indeed the Royal Family—with the East End murders.

The importance of one connection between the Royal Family and Jack the Ripper has so far been missed: Queen Victoria was passionately concerned about the Ripper murders. This was not, however, a concern stimulated by a monarch's conscientious desire for law and order. Victoria had a special interest. In a year when murder was commonplace throughout England, she took an active interest in the *first* Ripper murder and ordered the Prime Minister to take steps that would prevent a sequel. Only a person with some inside knowledge can recognize in a single killing the beginning of a series—especially if the second murder has not yet occurred. In a telegram to Salisbury, sent after Kelly's murder on 9th November, Victoria reminded him: 'You promised me when the first murder took place to consult your colleagues about it'.

As this indignant memorandum indicates, unless the Queen instructed her Prime Minister to take personal action over every murder that occurred in England—which she did not—then Victoria knew Nichols's killing was the first of a series the moment it happened. Had she urged action after *Chapman's* death her concern would have been understandable, for by then it was obvious that a pattern of murder was developing. But murder was so common in Whitechapel in 1888 that her pecific concern with Nichols indicates a deeper knowledge.

Murder was so much a part of life in the East End that when a woman called Emma Smith was attacked by three men and stabbed to death on Easter Monday, 1888, the newspapers did not bother to report it. Two witnesses who testified at Kelly's inquest said they had heard the cry, 'Murder!' but it was such a common cry in the neighbourhood they both ignored it. There were about five hundred inquests into unexplained deaths in the Whitechapel district alone in 1887, the year before the Ripper murders. Cullen wrote:

> In scanning the press for this period one is astounded by the number of reports of women who had been beaten or kicked to death, jumped on until they were crushed, chopped, stabbed, seamed with vitriol, eviscerated, or deliberately set afire. In the preceding year thirty-five murders were recorded in the Home Counties alone (seventy-six murders if one includes infanticides), and of this number only eight convictions were secured, the majority of these crimes remaining unsolved forever.

Crime comes in waves, and 1888 was the crest of the wave for crimes of violence, especially in the East End where they happened every day. Unless Sickert's story is correct it is hard to explain Queen Victoria's preoccupation with Nichols's murder. At the time the Queen started demanding action it was an apparently unremarkable murder with nothing to distinguish it from a dozen others in Whitechapel that year. Only later did it turn out to be the first by Jack the Ripper.

A further provable connection between the murders and Cleveland Street was mentioned by Sickert himself. Fifty yards from the hovel where Marie Kelly was murdered stood Providence Row Women's Refuge, run by nuns. This was the East End convent from which Sickert said Kelly had first been brought to Cleveland Street. One of the founders and a leading committee member of Providence Row was a solicitor called Edmund Bellord. He was a partner in a firm of estate agents called Perkins and Bellord, whose offices were at none other place than Cleveland Street. They owned much of the property in the area—including, incidentally, Lord Salisbury's house in near-by Fitzroy Square.

Perhaps the most important connection between the West End and the East End was that mentioned by Marie Kelly herself. At her inquest the man she had been living with, Joe

Barnett, said 'When she left Cardiff she said she came to London. In London she was first in a gay house in the West End of the town. A gentleman there asked her to go to France. She went to France but she told me as she did not like the part she did not stay there long. She lived there about a fortnight.'

Though many authors have dismissed this as fantasy on the part of Marie Kelly, it is nevertheless remarkably consistent with the story told by Sickert. Not only does it seem inescapable that the gay house in the West End was Sickert's studio in Cleveland Street, Sickert also said he had taken Kelly to Dieppe, which would account for her trips to France with 'a gentleman'.

Sickert maintained that his personal involvement in the case ended at Cleveland Street, but that he knew who the killers were, the motive for the killings and how they were carried out. He believed four of the Ripper victims knew each other, though he did not produce any evidence in support of this claim. Eddowes, he said, was murdered only because she was mistaken for Kelly. He did not know why. He said the four companions, Kelly, Chapman, Stride and Nichols, were blackmailing someone connected with the events in Cleveland Street, though once again he left a gap in the story by not explaining who. The blackmail drew attention to the whores and brought about their murder.

No theorist has suggested *any* of the victims knew each other, let alone hinting at an association between four of them. Their bodies were found over a wide area encompassing Whitechapel, Spitalfields and Aldgate. There certainly appears at first glance to be nothing to connect them, except that they were all prostitutes. But if any of the victims did know each other, it would shed completely new light on the case. . . .

The first observation—and even this seems to have eluded previous writers—is that although the victims' bodies were found over a large area in three different districts, they all lived in one tiny part of Spitalfields. This degraded neighbourhood included Dorset Street, which was known as the most evil road in London, along which policemen would walk only in pairs, White's Row, Fashion Street, Flower and Dean Street and Thrawl Street. They were all short roads; the longest (Fashion Street) was only a hundred and eighty yards long, and Dorset Street was little more than a hundred yards long. This is the picture:

DORSET STREET. Annie Chapman lived in a common lodging house at No. 35. Marie Kelly lived thirty yards away on the same side of the street in Miller's Court, which was part of No. 26. It was disclosed at Kelly's inquest that before moving to Miller's Court she had lived at another common lodging house in Dorset Street. Exactly where is not known. As well as living so close to each other, Chapman and Kelly both frequented the same pub, the Britannia on the corner of Dorset Street and Crispin Street. This new evidence has not previously come to light because at Chapman's inquest the pub was referred to as the Ringer's, and at Kelly's it was described by its correct name, the Britannia. As Caroline Maxwell's previously unpublished statement, given in full in Chapter 4, shows, the Britannia was owned by a Mrs Ringer and known to the locals as the Ringer's.

FASHION STREET. Catherine Eddowes often lodged at No. 6. Stride sometimes stayed at a lodging house in the same street, but which number is not known. Fashion Street was fifty yards from Dorset Street.

FLOWER AND DEAN STREET. Mary Nichols lodged for a time at a house called the White House. This was only yards away from No. 32 where Stride often dossed. A short way along from No. 32 was Eddowes's main address, No. 55. Flower and Dean Street was less than a hundred yards from Dorset Street.

THRAWL STREET. Nichols's chief address was at No. 18. This was near No. 6, the address of Eddowes's sister, whom Eddowes often used to visit. Thrawl Street was a hundred and eighty yards from Dorset Street.

Considering that there were 233 common lodging houses in Whitechapel, Spitalfields and Stepney from which Jack the Ripper could have selected his victims, it must surely be significant that he killed women from addresses so close to each other. Even without further evidence, it seemed a strong possibility that the victims knew each other. But there was still more evidence to come.

Timothy Donovan, deputy of the common lodging house at 35 Dorset Street, told the Chapman inquest that Annie Chapman had lived there for the four months prior to her murder, except for the last week, during which time he had not seen her until the Friday evening. He had known her about sixteen months.

The address of victim number three, Elizabeth Stride, has always been reported as Flower and Dean Street, and it was disclosed at her inquest that she had also lodged in Fashion

Street. She had in fact dossed in both these streets, but that was only part of the story. The house reported to have been Stride's regular address was No. 32 Flower and Dean Street, but Elizabeth Tanner, deputy of the common lodging house at that address, told Stride's inquest:

'I have seen the body of the dead woman at St George's Mortuary and I recognize it as that of a woman who had lodged in our house *on and off* for the last six years.' (My italics.)

From this statement it is plain that Stride spent little of her time at this address. The view is strengthened by the dialogue which followed between Coroner Wynne Baxter and Mrs Tanner:

CORONER Who is she [the deceased]?
TANNER She was known by the nickname Long Liz.
CORONER Do you know her right name?
TANNER No.

Most of the Spitalfields lodging houses were appallingly overcrowded, but if Stride had been a regular lodger at No. 32 Mrs Tanner would have known her name. If Stride was not in fact living where until now it has been assumed she was, what was her address? The answer is to be found in another part of Widow Tanner's evidence:

CORONER Do you know any of her male acquaintances?
TANNER Only of one.
CORONER Who is he?
TANNER *She was living with him.* She left him on Thursday to come and stay at our house, so she told me. [My italics].

The man Stride had been living with was a waterside labourer called Michael Kidney. That she had spent most of her time with Kidney, and not at either Flower and Dean Street or Fashion Street, was borne out by Kidney's testimony:

> I have seen the body. It is Long Liz. *I've known her for about three years and she has been living with me nearly all that time.* I left her in Commercial Street as I was going to work. I expected her to be at home but when I got home I found she had been in and gone out. She was subject to going away whenever she thought she would. During the three years I've known her she has been away from me altogether about

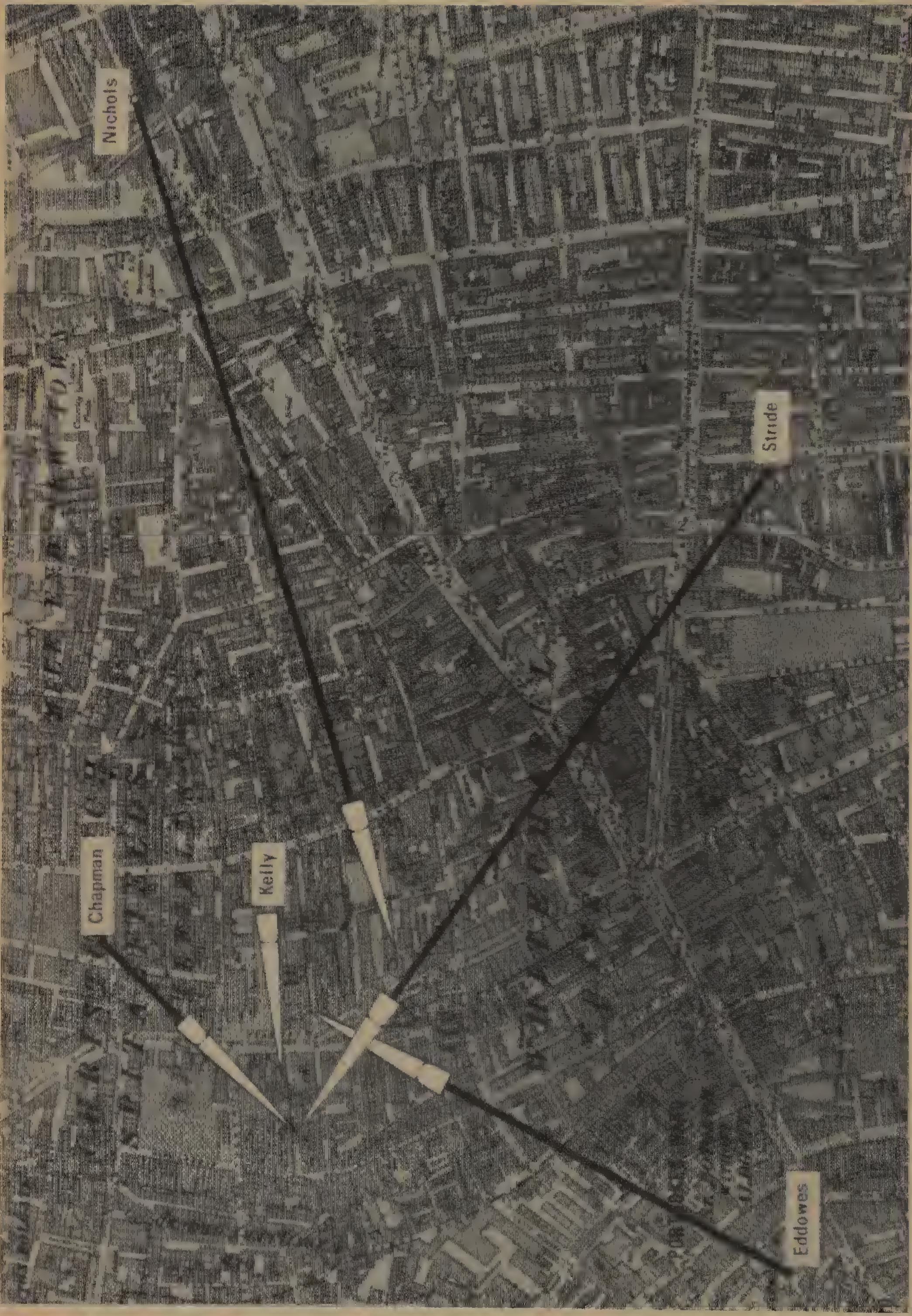
> five months. I've cautioned her the same as I would a wife. It was drink that made her go. But she always came back again. I don't believe she left me on Tuesday to take up with any other man. I think she liked me better than any other man. I didn't see her again until I identified the body in the mortuary.

Kidney's testimony shows us how Stride's address has gone down on historical record as 32 Flower and Dean Street. When the Ripper struck her down she just happened to be in the midst of one of her bouts of drunkenness which took her off to that address. And the temporary doss house she drifted into was put down as her permanent abode. These were the days before the precise methods advocated by Conan Doyle in his Sherlock Holmes stories had been adopted by the real police; when names, ages and addresses were regarded, with a certain contempt, as mere formalities. But names, ages and addresses can and do catch murderers.

Long Liz Stride was apart from Kidney for only five months in three years, and that five months consisted of odd jaunts into a drunken independence. Most of the time between 1885 and her death she was living with Kidney. But where did they live? Several writers have coupled the information about Stride's contact with Flower and Dean Street with the fact that she cohabited with Kidney, and concluded that they lived together in Flower and Dean Street. This is incorrect. One vital fact that was revealed at Stride's inquest has not so far been noted. The *Daily News* of 6th October gave Michael Kidney's address as 35 Dorset Street, *the self-same lodging house where Annie Chapman had lived for four months prior to her death.* This was the house where Elizabeth Stride had lived with Kidney. This was the house from which she had decamped a few days before her murder, just like Chapman. *Both victims had lived at the same house, and both had kept away from it in the days leading up to their deaths.*

A report in the secret Home Office file, recording Coroner Baxter's summing-up at the Stride inquest, confirms this conclusion: 'For the last two years the deceased had been living at a common lodging house in Dorset Street, Spitalfields, with Michael Kidney, a waterside labourer'.

Suddenly we find that three of the four Ripper victims whom Sickert claimed knew each other all came from Dorset Street. Two of them were living at the same house. Two frequented the same pub. The evidence that they knew each other seems over-


Nichols
Stride
Chapman
Kelly
Eddowes

whelming. The fourth victim whom Sickert said was part of the same circle, though she was murdered nearly a mile away in Buck's Row, lived less than a hundred yards from the others, and doubtless frequented the same pub. Sickert's version of the East End murders was beginning to have real meaning. In a metropolis the size and character of the East End it is inconceivable that a random killer could have cut down, in places up to nearly a mile apart, four women who just happened to know each other. It is clear that whatever Jack the Ripper's motive, he (or they) knew the identity of the victims. It is not surprising so few writers have made this point: most theories are based upon the idea of a maniac perpetrating random murders.

Another factor vital to Sickert's story is that the Ripper's intended final victim was Marie Kelly. In 1867 there were an estimated 80 000 prostitutes in London. If anything this figure had increased by the eighties. Out of 80 000, Jack the Ripper killed five. Can it have been an accident that two of his five victims, the last two, were called Mary Ann Kelly? The odds against this happening by accident are astronomical, even though Kelly was a fairly common name. In addition, the real Kelly and the victim who merely used the name were the only Ripper victims to receive facial mutilations. Despite her fondness for the French version of her name, a fantasy perpetuated on her death certificate, the real Kelly was not known by many people in Dorset Street as Marie Jeanette. As the evidence of her inquest shows, she was known by some as Mary Jane, by others as Mary Ann. Can it be coincidence that Catherine Eddowes, who lived only fifty yards from the real Kelly, used the name Mary Ann Kelly? Eddowes often called herself Kelly because she lived with a man called John Kelly.

This must surely be the explanation lacking in Sickert's story, the reason why Eddowes was mistaken for Kelly and died in her place.

When Eddowes was dead the Ripper did not strike again for six weeks. She had called herself Mary Ann Kelly, and the killers thought they had the real Kelly. The details of her murder, like the mysterious facial mutilations, support this idea, as will be shown in Chapter 10. When the mistaken identity was realized Kelly was done to death and the Ripper murders were brought to their final, horrid crescendo exactly thirty-nine days after the death of Eddowes. This, too, will be seen to have significance.

All Ripper roads lead to Dorset Street. Dorset Street leads inexorably back to Cleveland Street. An elderly nun at the Roman Catholic convent in Harewood Place, W.1, only a few minutes' walk from Cleveland Street, had an interesting story to tell when the BBC interviewed her in 1973. In 1915 she had been a novice at Providence Row, directly opposite the pub where Kelly and Chapman had rubbed shoulders daily. She clearly remembered an old nun who had been there at the time of the Ripper murders telling her that 'if it had not been for the Kelly woman, none of the murders would have happened'.

CHAPTER TEN

The Masonic Killers

The suggestion that Freemasons were behind the Jack the Ripper murders was first laid before the public in *Butchery*, the third episode of the BBC series on the Whitechapel Murders. Scriptwriters Elwyn Jones and John Lloyd attributed the idea to their fictional policeman Detective Chief Superintendent John Watt. In so doing they unfortunately distorted the truth for the purpose of dramatic impact. Barlow and Watt's dialogue on the Freemason idea was separated by three episodes (or three weeks) from Sickert's story, which was told by his son in Episode Six. There was every indication that the Sickert account and the accusation of the Freemasons were unconnected. In fact the indictment of the Masons was an integral part of Sickert's story. It was purely as a result of a comment by Joseph Sickert that researcher Ian Sharp went to the London Library in St James's Square one afternoon in January 1973 to see if there was any traceable connection between the world's most mysterious society and its most mysterious series of murders. The evidence he uncovered should have appeared as corroboration of Sickert's six-minute narrative, or at least allied to it. Jones and Lloyd chose instead to include it in their script as a separate line of inquiry, and the true import of Walter Sickert's story was lost. Barlow and Watt's examination of the Masons was of necessity restricted to a few minutes. This brevity, and the fact that the idea was presented as just another theory bobbing on a sea of speculation, showed the idea badly. It came over as unlikely as Donald McCormick's complicated theory that a member of a Russian sect called the Chlysty might have felt impelled to kill and mutilate whores, and as insubstantial as Robin Odell's suggestion that the Ripper was a Jewish ritual slaughterman inspired by the rigid doctrines of the Talmud to rid the world of the taint of harlotry.

Had the Freemasons theory been anchored in a serious attempt to explain who the killer or killers were, and why the murders should have been perpetrated by Masons, it would have been meaningful. But as jetsam the idea floated across our television screens and for most of us sank into the Sargasso of forgotten ideas, the crowded oblivion where all but the most memorable of television's welter of communication is consigned.

Sickert's story also suffered because of the format of the series. Viewers had never before seen such a hybrid programme, where facts mingled inextricably with fiction. They knew Barlow and Watt were figments of a writer's imagination; many people wondered if their investigation was enriched with imaginary pieces of evidence. For all these reasons, and the fact that the series was broadcast in midsummer when both stations, faced with a much depleted audience, have made a practice of churning out their dross, *Jack the Ripper* went with a whimper rather than a bang. Jones and Lloyd turned their six scripts into book form, and *The Ripper File* was published in March 1975. But still the Freemasons idea was separate from the Sickert narrative, and it was no more deeply investigated than it had been on television.

Walter Sickert's assertion that the murders were masterminded by a group of extremist Freemasons and perpetrated according to Masonic ritual is in fact a sensational idea. If true, it would knock eighty-five years of theories out of joint. Like the rest of the Sickert story, however, it took the form of a bald statement, and the painter produced no shred of evidence in its support. If Sickert had been lying this one statement would have been his undoing. But, unsubstantiated as the idea was, it became the strongest proof in the investigation so far that he had spoken the truth. The evidence produced by Ian Sharp and myself shows that the murders were indeed Masonic. Once again, a single truth seems to wreck all other theories about the murders, for no previous suspect except Prince Eddy himself was a Mason. And the case against Eddy, as has been explained, was quite without foundation.

Researching the mysteries of Freemasonry is an exacting and difficult task, but it is possible. There have been enough reliable exposures of the secret brotherhood to enable a conscientious researcher to build up a clear picture of its activities. Before examining the undeniable connections between Masonry and Jack the Ripper, it is helpful to know something of the background and nature of Freemasonry.

It is a worldwide secret society which originated in England in the Middle Ages. It developed alongside several other guilds or incorporated crafts. The dearth of highly skilled craftsmen in the building industry imposed upon stonemasons in particular a need to move about the country in order to earn a living. Masons had to go where the work was. They travelled from place to place to assist in building the magnificent cathedrals and abbeys whose advent closed the door on the Dark Ages. Their craft was jealously guarded against interlopers. Apprenticeships were hard to obtain, and rigorous when achieved. Masons rapidly came to realize that the itinerant nature of their livelihood made them particularly vulnerable, and to protect themselves from exploitation they formed themselves into a sort of primitive trade union. It was a time when a number of professions were setting up guilds, and like the real trade-unions five hundred years later, none of them was national. Each guild was limited to a city or borough, and the stonemasons organized themselves at a local level into 'Lodges'. An idiosyncrasy of the masons which had an important effect on their evolution was that employers as well as employees were granted membership of the Lodges. Because the masons were migratory a greater degree of national unity was achieved within their guild than in those of other professions. This ensured greater uniformity in working conditions between one district and another, and as the strength of the masons grew in comparison to other professions, so did their determination to remain dominant. Because a mason could not work all his life in one place, and because each Lodge was constantly welcoming masons from other areas, the esoteric aspect of the craft was developed. Lodges all over the country agreed to adopt secret signs, passwords and handshakes so that a mason coming to a strange place could be recognized by his brothers as a genuine craftsman.

As the centuries passed the free and accepted masons, or freestone masons, evolved from a guild into a social organization. Lodges were set up abroad, notably in France. Eventually representatives of other skilled professions, and later still senior members of any middle and upper class professions, were permitted into the fraternity. By the eighteenth century Freemasons were, in practice, linked to their skilled predecessors only in name and in the form of their ritual. They had become a quasi-religious secret society, membership of which was extremely difficult to achieve, and highly desired by those who could not gain admittance. Brothers helped each other in business and on the social ladder. In many professions it became common for a Freemason to be given promotion purely because he was a Mason. The practice survives today.

Imagination and myth had by this time insinuated themselves deeply into the society's everyday working, and its actual origins became obscured by a fabulous tale of a heroic birth thousands of years before. Freemasonry's beginnings are now variously attributed by initiates to the days of the Roman Empire, to the Pharaohs, the Temple of Solomon, the Tower of Babel and even to the building of Noah's Ark. Of all the myths woven into the background of Freemasonry, the building of Solomon's Temple is the most sacred. On that great event much of Masonry's secret ritual is based.

In its own words Freemasonry is 'a peculiar system of morality, veiled in allegory and illustrated by symbols'. It proclaims itself as an organization founded on the practice of social and moral virtue.

Even though an initiate is bound by an oath of secrecy that imposes death on the betrayer, in its lower degrees Freemasonry is arguably quite respectable. It must be admitted that Masons as a body are among the most generous donors to charity. Several writers have claimed that one cannot be both a Freemason and a Christian, and until 1975 a Roman Catholic suffered excommunication for joining the fraternity because the Vatican proscribed Freemasonry and regarded it as 'subversive and anti-clerical'. Now, under certain circumstances, it is possible for a Catholic to obtain permission from his bishop to become a Mason, although Catholics in general still eye the brotherhood with deep suspicion. Despite this, it is not until a Mason is initiated into the higher degrees that he becomes truly pagan.

As Masons progress into higher degrees, their god undergoes a basic alteration. No one can become a Freemason unless he professes to believe in one Supreme Being. Freemasons call him the Great Architect, who created the universe with one sweep of his compasses. Combined as he is in the early degrees with an oath to honour the precepts of the Bible, this god is the benevolent counterpart of Jahweh and Allah; under any name he is the god of love, the Almighty Father. Degree by degree the personality of this godhead changes imperceptibly, until in the highest degrees the strange god of the Freemasons is revealed as Jah-Bul-On. This weird entity is a composite personality comprising Jahweh, the god of the Christians and Jews; Osiris, the mummy-like god of the dead in Ancient Egypt; and Baal, the pagan god whom the Israelites identified with the devil. Hence, while Masons will profess they worship only one god, they have attributed three personalities to that god, one of which is diabolical. While it is inaccurate to call advanced Freemasons devil-worshippers in a strict sense, they nevertheless accord this devil great importance in the governing of the universe, they treat him as an equal of the Christian God and they do pay him homage. This religious ambivalence was used against the Masons in the second part of the nineteenth century when Leo Taxil, a Frenchman since denounced as a liar, claimed to have definite proof of Masonic devil-worship. Whether or not Taxil's 'proof' was genuine, his claims were based on fact. Albert Pike, the great Masonic authority of the nineteenth century and Grand Commander of the Southern Jurisdiction of the Supreme Council at Charleston, USA, wrote in 1873 when he gained sufficient seniority to learn of Jah-Bul-On that he was disquieted and disgusted by it:

> No man or body of men can make me accept as a sacred word, as a symbol of the infinite and eternal Godhead, a mongrel word, in part composed of the name of an accursed and beastly heathen god, whose name has been for more than two thousand years an appelation of the Devil.

Yet this is exactly what advanced Freemasons are made to accept, and this is the deity they worship.

At the lowest degree, that of the Entered Apprentice, an initiate swears on pain of death and ghastly mutilation to obey not only the precepts of Freemasonry but also those of the Bible and the laws of the land in which his Lodge operates. The further he progresses through the hierarchy, the more the laws of the Bible and society are discarded and the more sacred become the laws of Masonry. Having passed what is known as the Royal Arch, a Mason owes allegiance only to his brother Masons.

An illustration of this progression from being a member of society to one independent of society's laws appears in the following. It is an extract from the oaths taken at two degrees, that of the Master Mason, the highest of the lower degrees, and that of the Royal Arch Mason, the first step in the long climb up to the ultimate degree, the thirty-third.

In a Master Mason's initiation ceremony he swears that the secrets of another Master Mason, 'given to me in charge as such, and I knowing them to be such, shall remain as secure and inviolable in my breast as in his own, when communicated to me, murder and treason excepted; and they left to my own election. . . . '

Thus, up to and including the degree of Master Mason, an initiate has the right to act as a normal responsible member of society and report to the authorities any Mason who may be engaged in murder or treason. But beyond the Royal Arch this is no longer true. In the initiation ceremony of a Royal Arch Mason he promises 'that a companion Royal Arch Mason's secrets, given me in charge as such, and I knowing them to be such, shall remain as secure and inviolable in my breast as in his own, *murder and treason not excepted*. . . . '

This fundamental change between the degrees alters a Mason's entire standing in society. Now he is accorded more immunity than a king or president. William Morgan, an American Mason who wrote a book called *Freemasonry Exposed*, published in 1826, declared:

> The oath taken by Royal Arch Masons does not except murder and treason; therefore, under it, all crimes can be perpetrated.

The full truth is more disturbing than this, for in the same oath the Royal Arch Mason swears

> that I will aid and assist a companion Royal Arch Mason, when engaged in any difficulty, and espouse his cause, so far as to extricate him from same, if in my power, *whether he be right or wrong* . . .

Thus, when a Freemason passes the Royal Arch he is not only prohibited on pain of death from exposing a fellow-Mason involved in treason or murder, *he is also compelled to assist him in covering up his crimes*.

Sir Charles Warren, Commissioner of the Metropolitan Police at the time of the Ripper murders, was one of the country's leading Freemasons. In 1861 he passed the Royal Arch, and from that moment on was under compulsion to assist any senior Mason in escaping punishment for the worst crimes he might have decided to commit. In the twenty-seven years between his passing the Royal Arch and the Whitechapel Murders, Warren became not only one of England's highest-ranking Masons, but one of the most powerful in the world. He was District Grand Master of the Eastern Archipelago; three Lodges in South Africa were named after him; and in England he was the founder of the Quatuor Coronati Lodge of Masonic Research and Past Grand Sojourner in the Supreme Grand Chapter.

Only his supremacy in Freemasonry explains his appointment as Commissioner of the Metropolitan Police in 1886, and also the mysterious fact that his dismal failure in that office, recognized by the Government, Press and public, was awarded not with disgrace but a knighthood. 'Thus', wrote Warren's grandson, Watkin Williams,

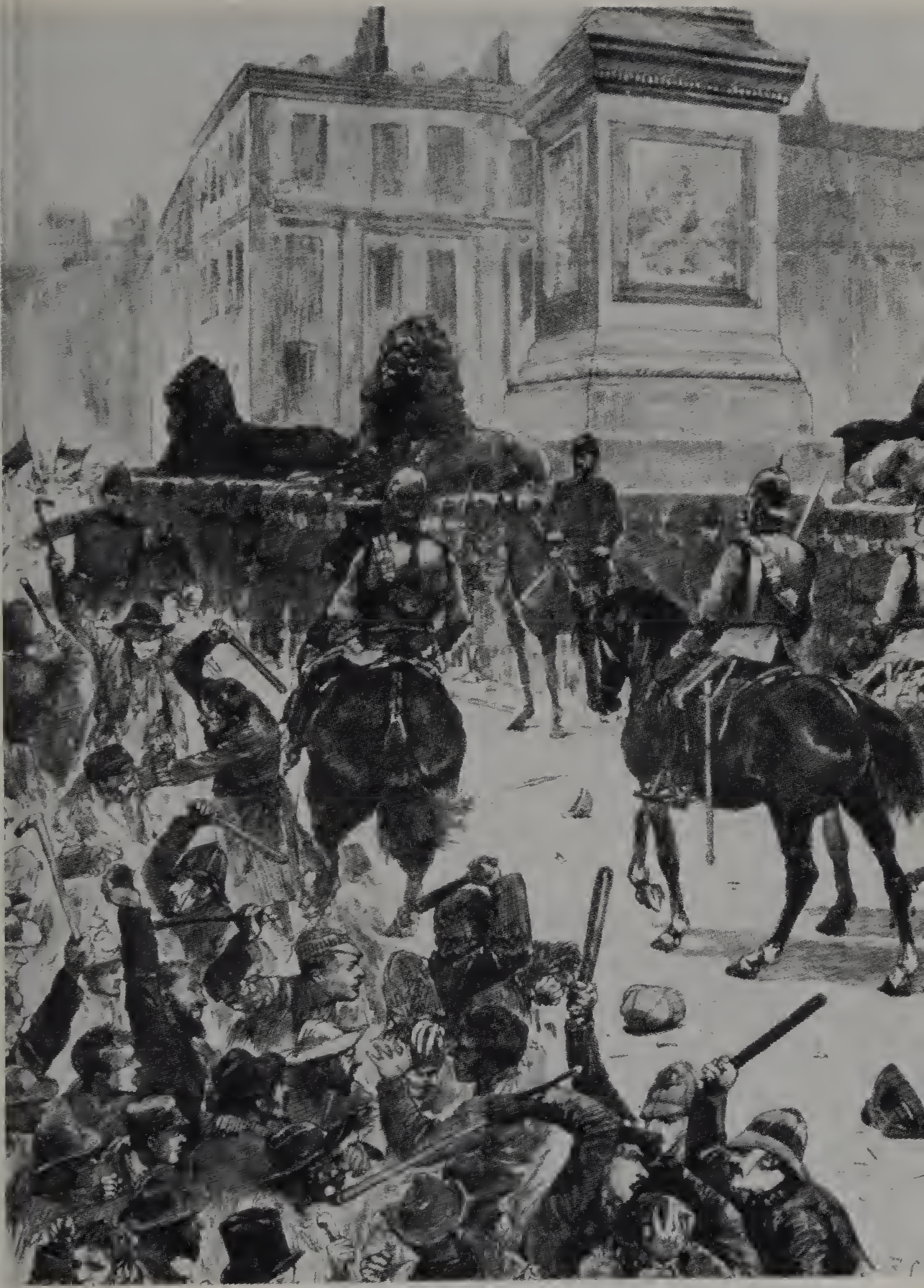
> in receiving the decorations of G.C.M.G. and K.C.B. while still only a Regimental Lieutenant-Colonel, Warren established a record which was never before attained and can seldom since have been equalled, even during the days of the Great War.

All that for being the worst police commissioner in the history of Scotland Yard!

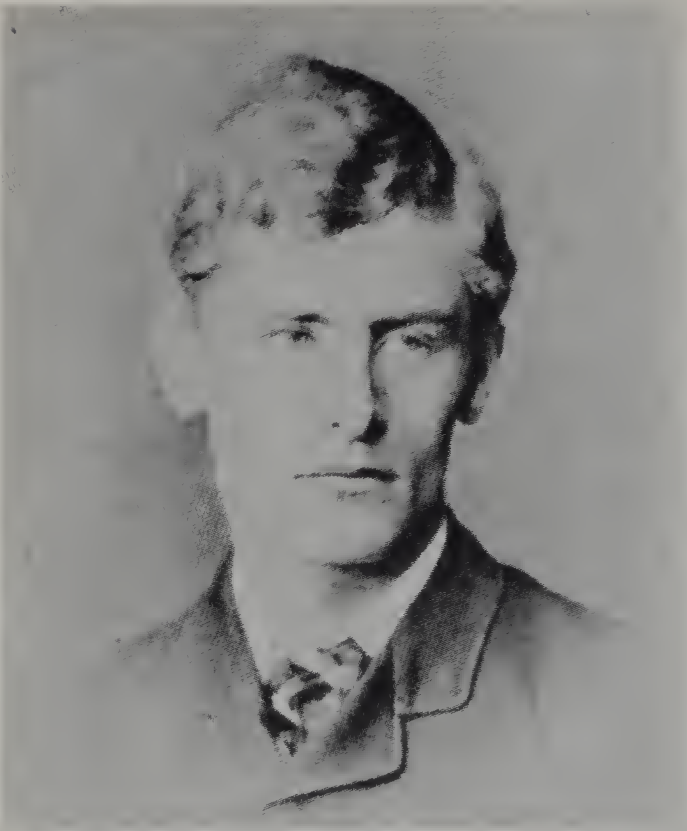
But did Warren fail in his duty? Although from every normal viewpoint he did, there is just one way in which his apparent incompetence could have been a dramatic triumph worthy of a knighthood. If the Whitechapel Murders were committed according to Masonic ritual—and it will presently be shown that they were—then Warren served the Freemasons to perfection in concealing facts. In the light of the evidence contained in this chapter, it is even conceivable he was appointed Commissioner purely to assist in the cover-up of the murders. Several of his actions while in office support this suggestion. The first was that he forced non-Mason James Monro, head of the C.I.D., to resign *just before the Whitechapel Murders began.* The second was that he appointed high-ranking Mason Sir Robert Anderson as Monro's successor *on the eve of Mary Nichols's murder.* Anderson's strange behaviour on taking office, described fully in the final chapter, also supports this suggestion. The final act on Warren's part which suggests he was appointed purely to protect the Masons during the reign of Jack the Ripper was that he himself resigned and quickly disappeared from the scene *only hours before the murder of Marie Kelly*. He knew the final murder was imminent. His rapid departure from office certainly ensured that any clues that may have been left were cold before they could be followed up. For Warren did not pass on the message that he was resigning—and so his order that no one should enter the scene of any murder without his permission was not countermanded until the afternoon of the day Kelly died, or about three hours after the police arrived. From 10.45 in the morning until 1.30 in the afternoon the investigating officers kicked their heels outside Kelly's room, waiting for orders from Warren. The Commissioner's conduct during the murders, examined in detail later in this chapter, shows that his sole function was to operate a cover-up. After resigning as Commissioner, Warren threw himself full time into his Masonic activities.

The Whitechapel Murders are not the first killings to have been attributed to Freemasons. There is evidence to suggest that Mozart was poisoned, and several scholars believe Masons were responsible. Mozart was a Freemason, as were most of the Austrian courtiers in the latter part of the eighteenth century. It is known that Vienna's highest Masons were angry at Mozart leaving the brotherhood in his last years. And they were outraged over what they regarded as a betrayal of their secrets in *The Magic Flute*. There was certainly something suspicious about the composer's death. Although a post-mortem examination is supposed to have revealed no traces of poison, it was reported that the body swelled up after death, which gave rise to speculation about foul play. To this day no one knows where Mozart's body was buried. He was to have been interred in the cemetery of St Marx, outside the walls of Vienna. Unaccountably, the small group of friends who had attended the funeral service turned back at the city gates and did not accompany the body to the graveyard. They all said later that their reason for turning back was that there had been rain and snow. But records at the Vienna Observatory show the day was dry, calm and chilly. And there is no trace of Mozart's grave in the cemetery.

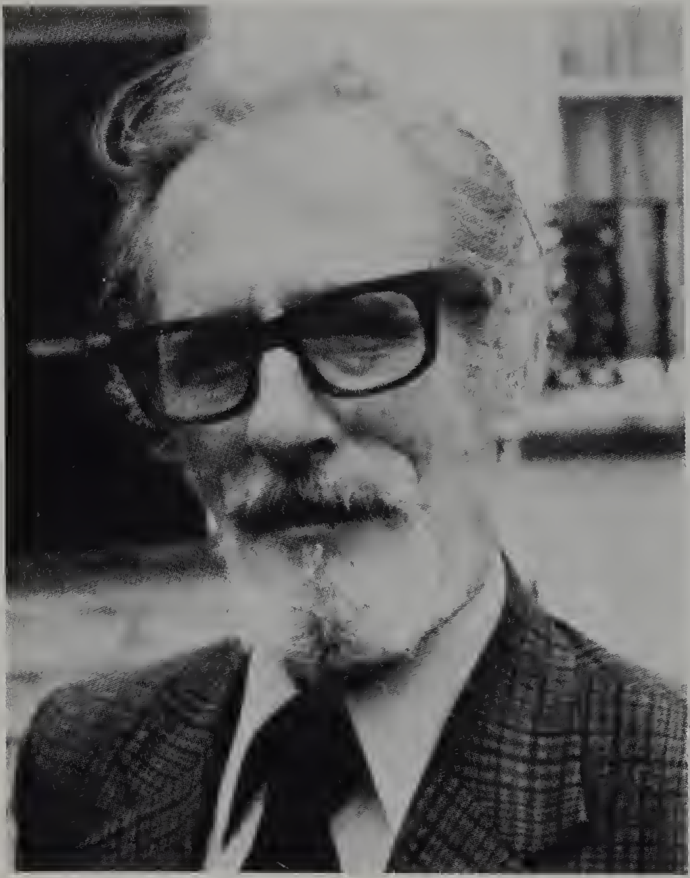
Probably the most notorious murder laid at the door of the Masons was the mysterious slaying of William Morgan, author of *Freemasonry Exposed*. After desperate attempts by Masons to



The 'Bloody Sunday' riot, Trafalgar Square, November 1887
Photo Radio Times Hulton Picture Library



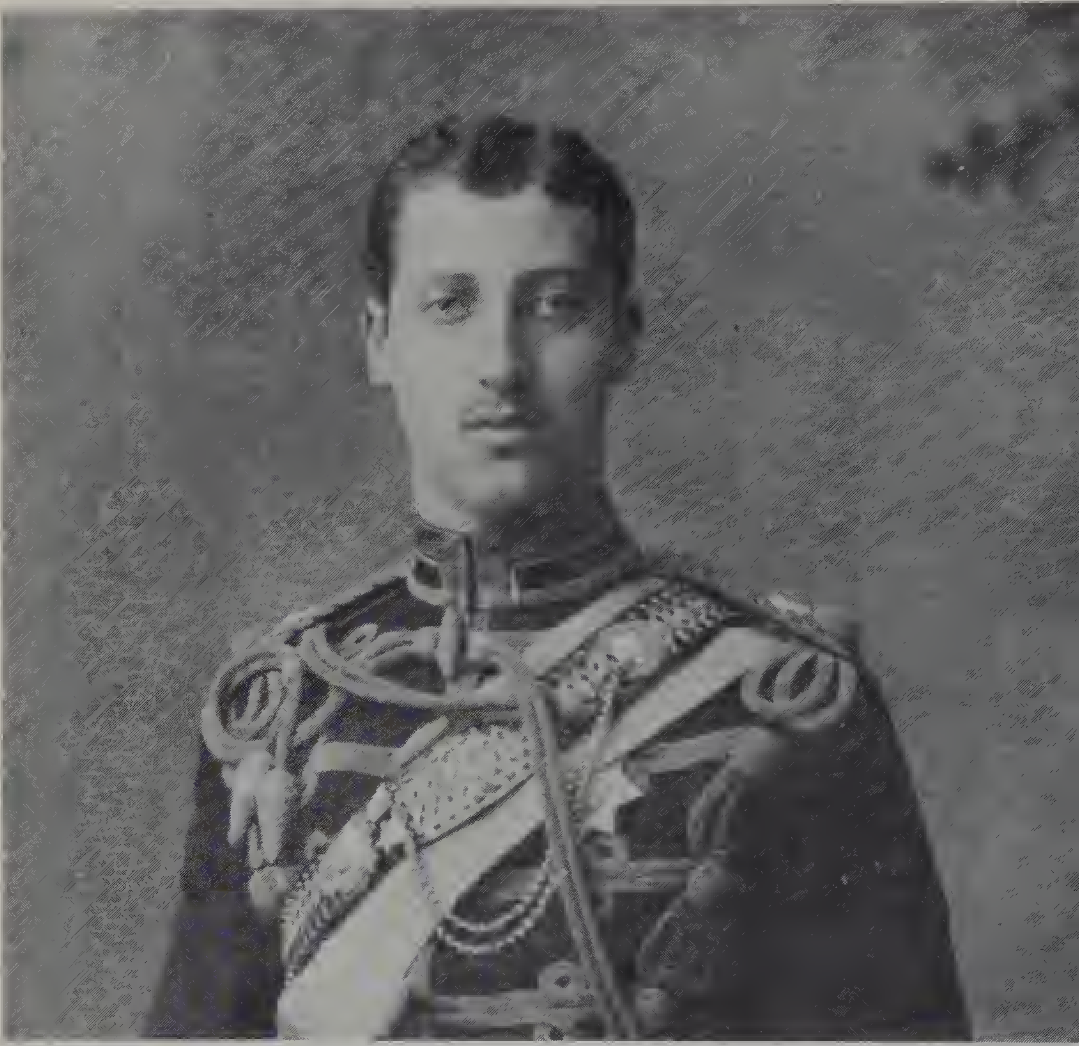
Walter Sickert in 1884



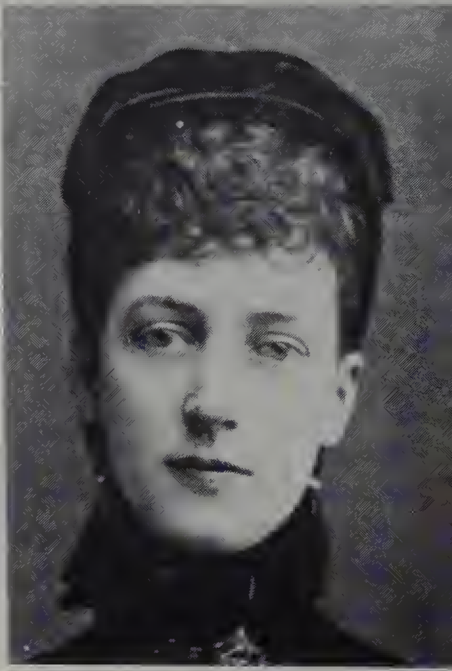
Joseph Sickert in 1973
Photo Harry Jackson

Walter Sickert and his third wife Thérèse Lessore in 1939, three years before he died

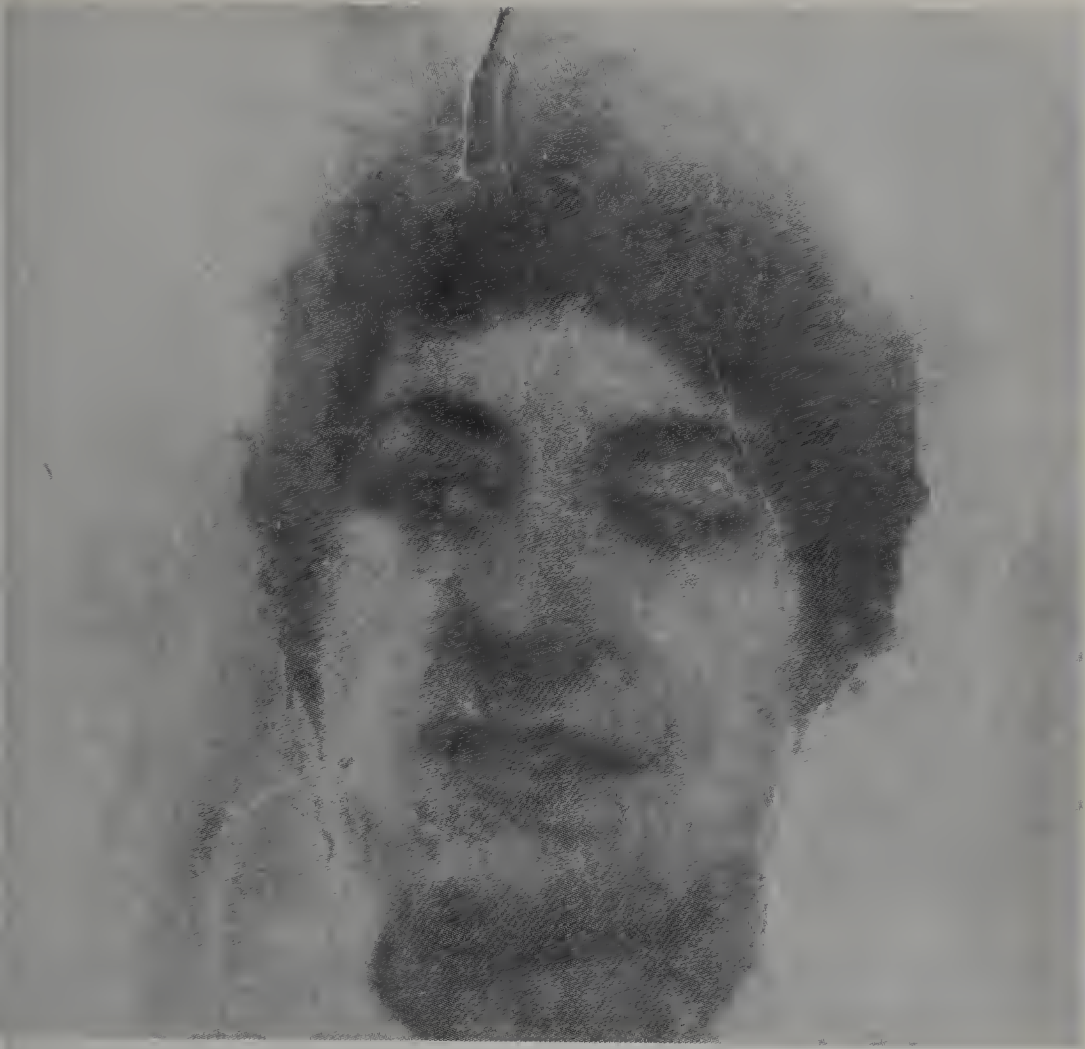
Photo Cecil Beaton



Prince Eddy about 1890
Photo Radio Times Hulton Picture Library

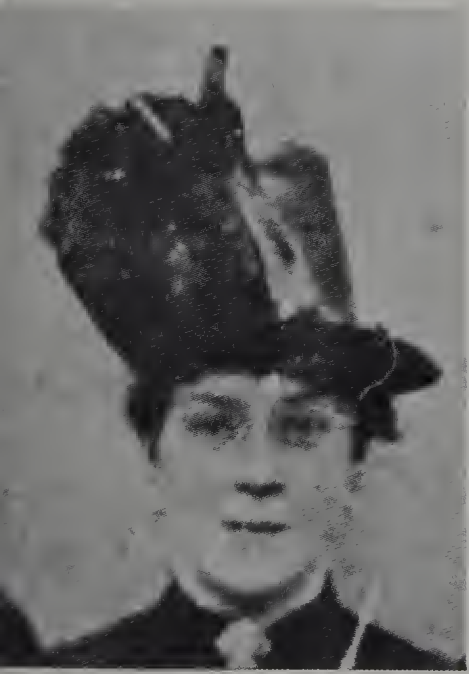


Is the facial resemblance between Princess Alexandra (*right*) and Alice Margaret Crook (*far right*) inherited?
See p. 41
Photo Radio Times Hulton Picture Library

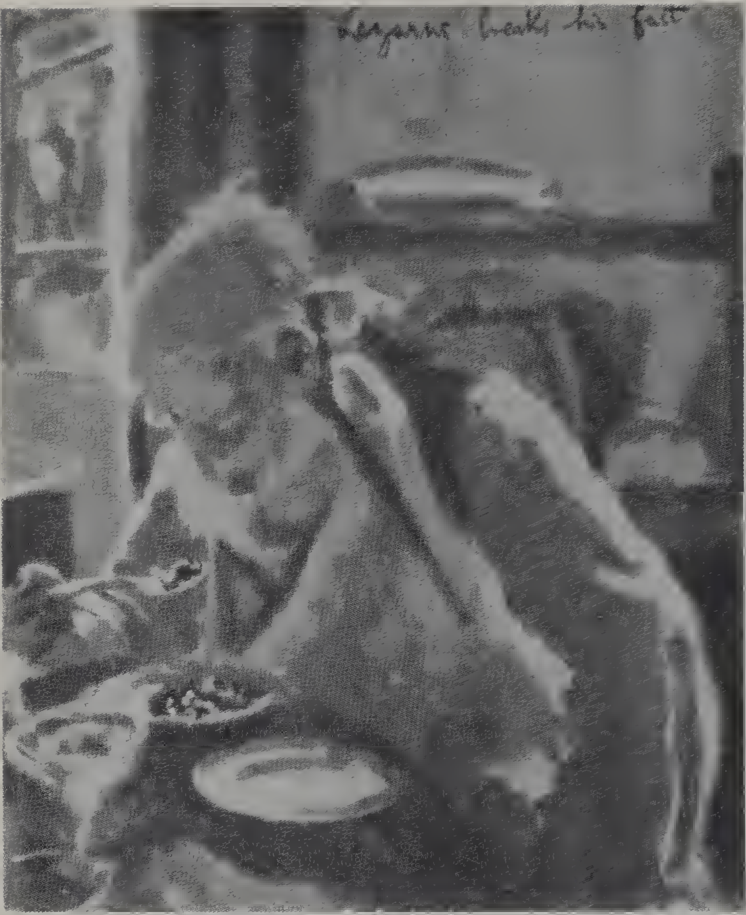


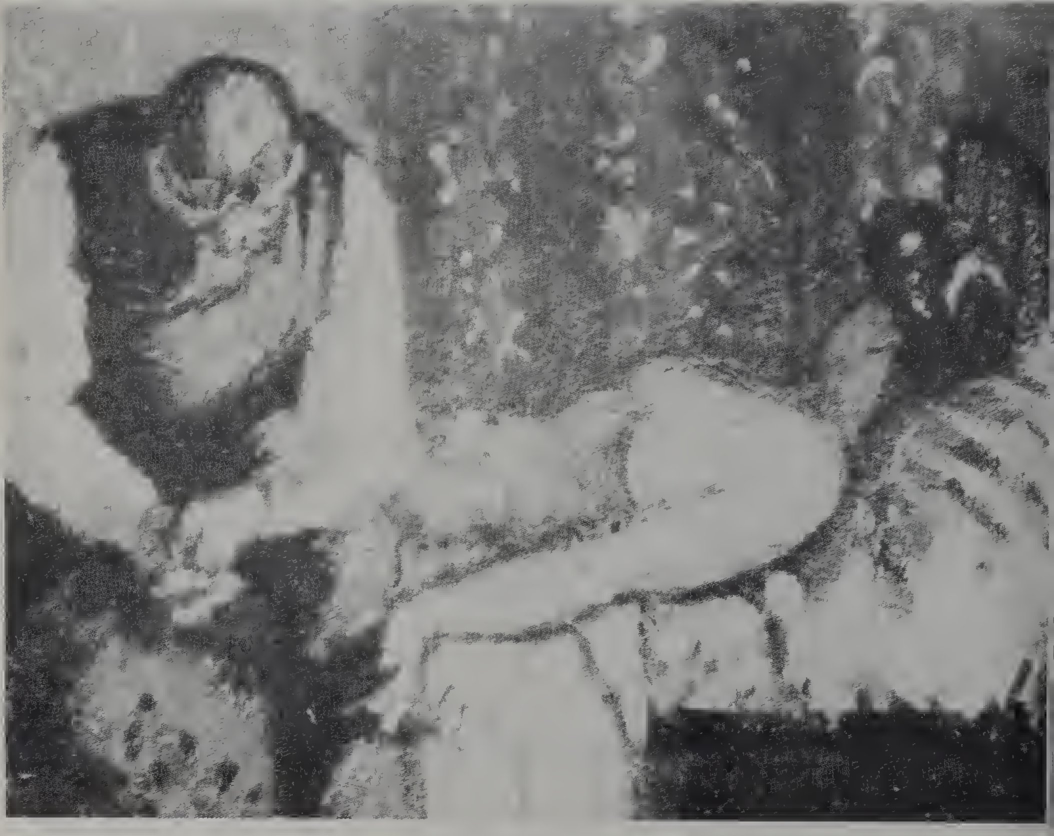
Annie Elizabeth Crook about 1886

Sickert family photograph

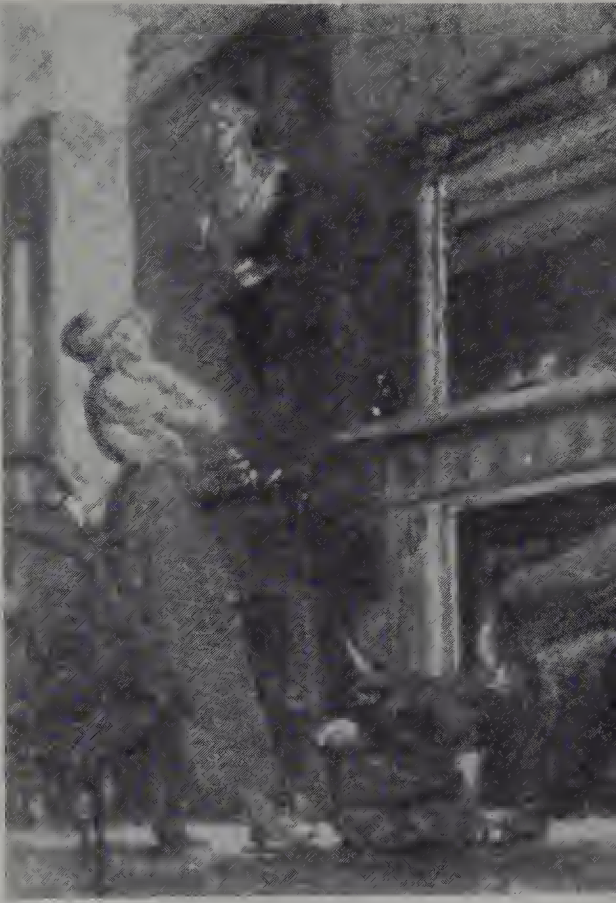


Sickert family photograph


Lazarus breaks his fast

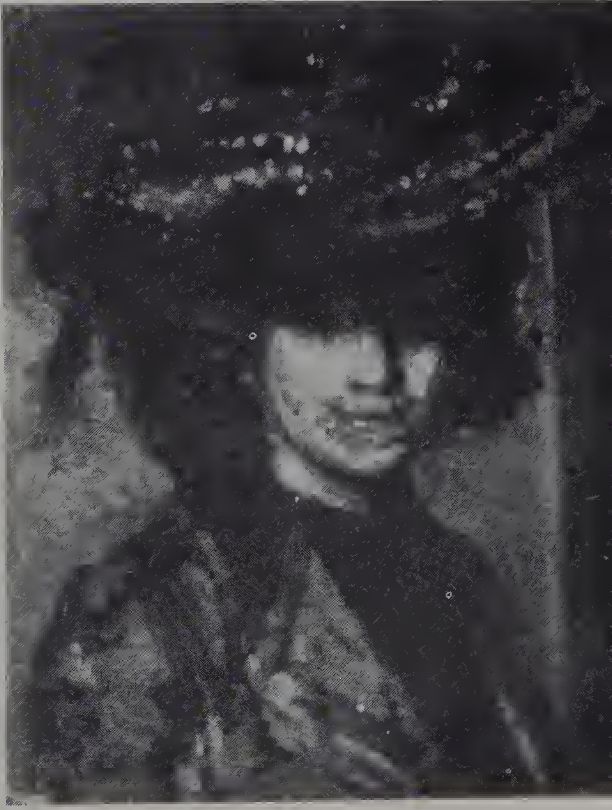


LEFT
Lazarus breaks His Fast
Reproduced by kind permission
of Henry Lessore and Mr and
Mrs Eric Estorick

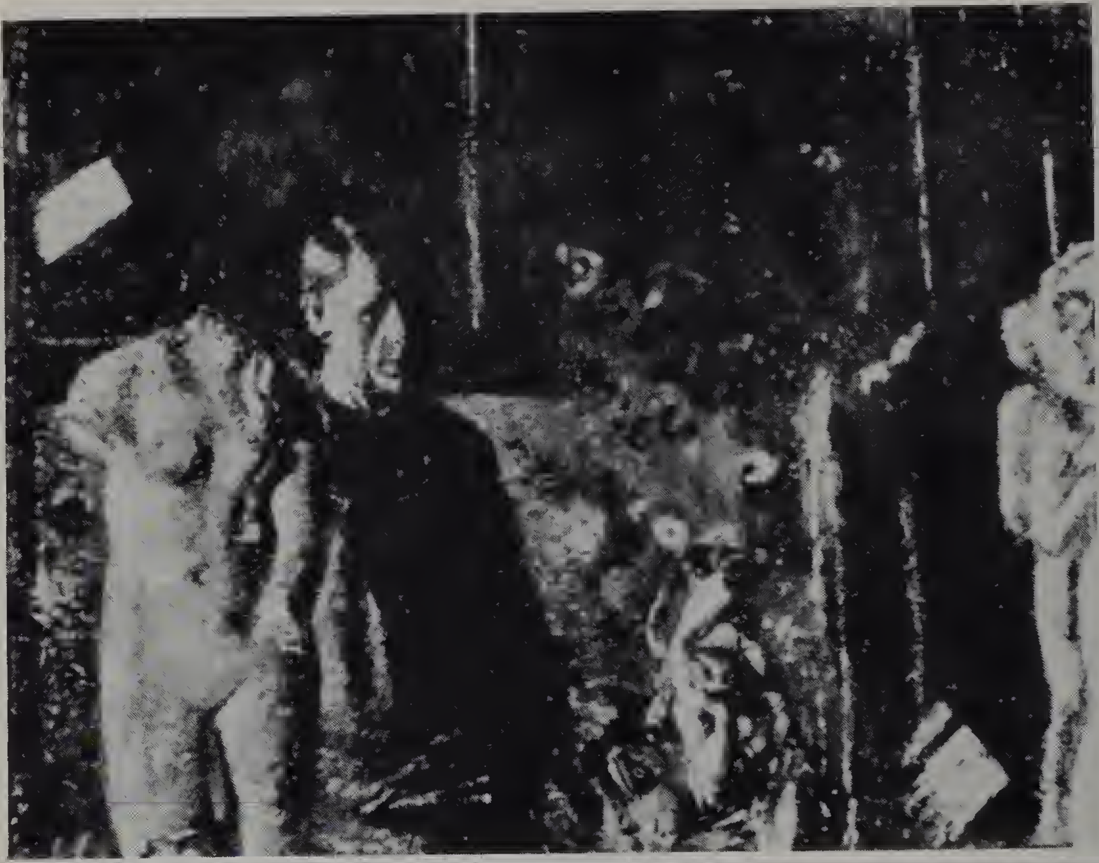


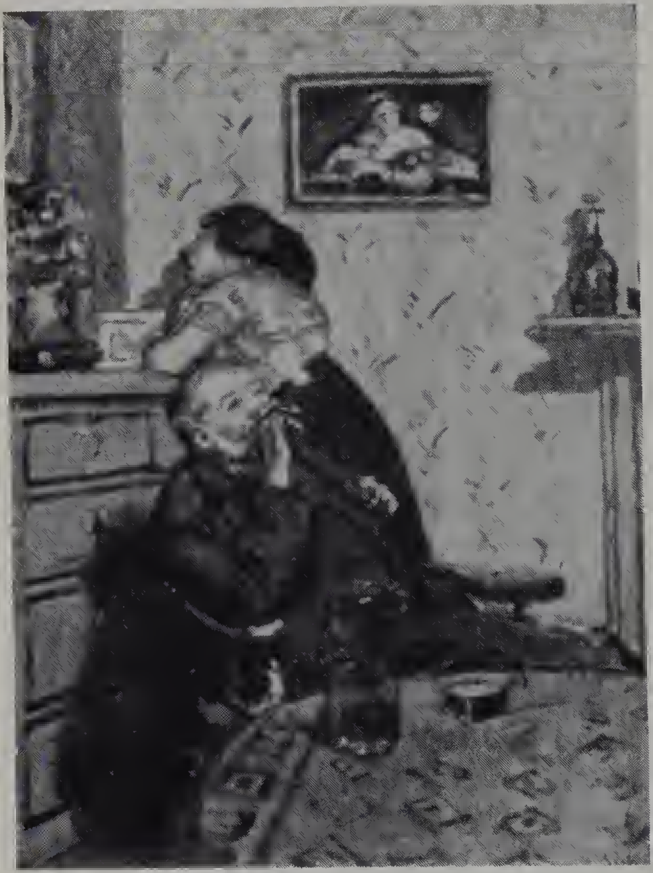
Amphytrion, or *X's*
Affiliation Order
Reproduced by kind permission
of Henry Lessore and Neville
Clegg

LEFT
The Camden Town Murder
Reproduced by kind permission
of Henry Lessore and Arthur
Tooth and Sons



Blackmail, or *Mrs Barrett*
Reproduced by kind permission
of Henry Lessore and William
Wallace

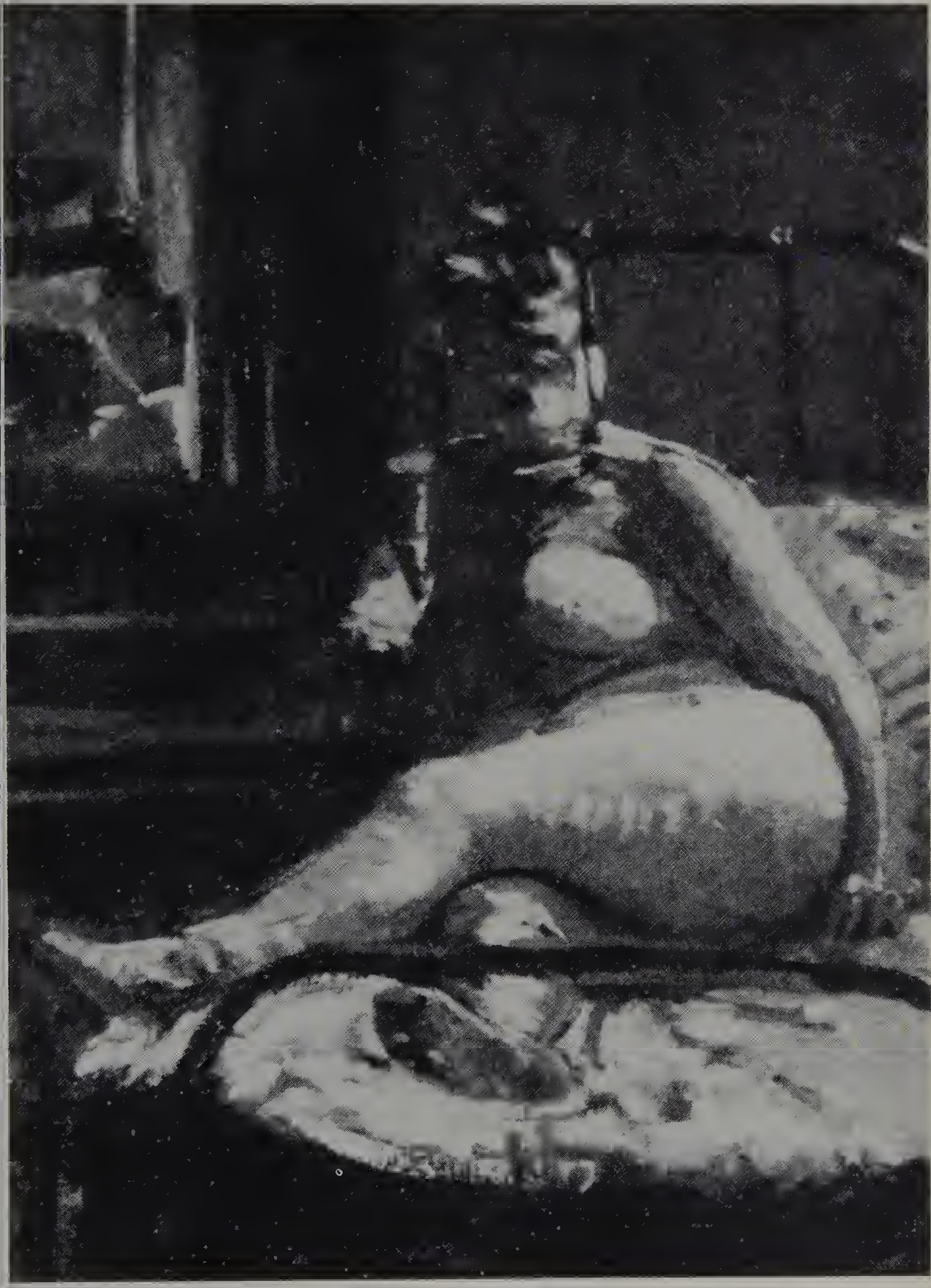


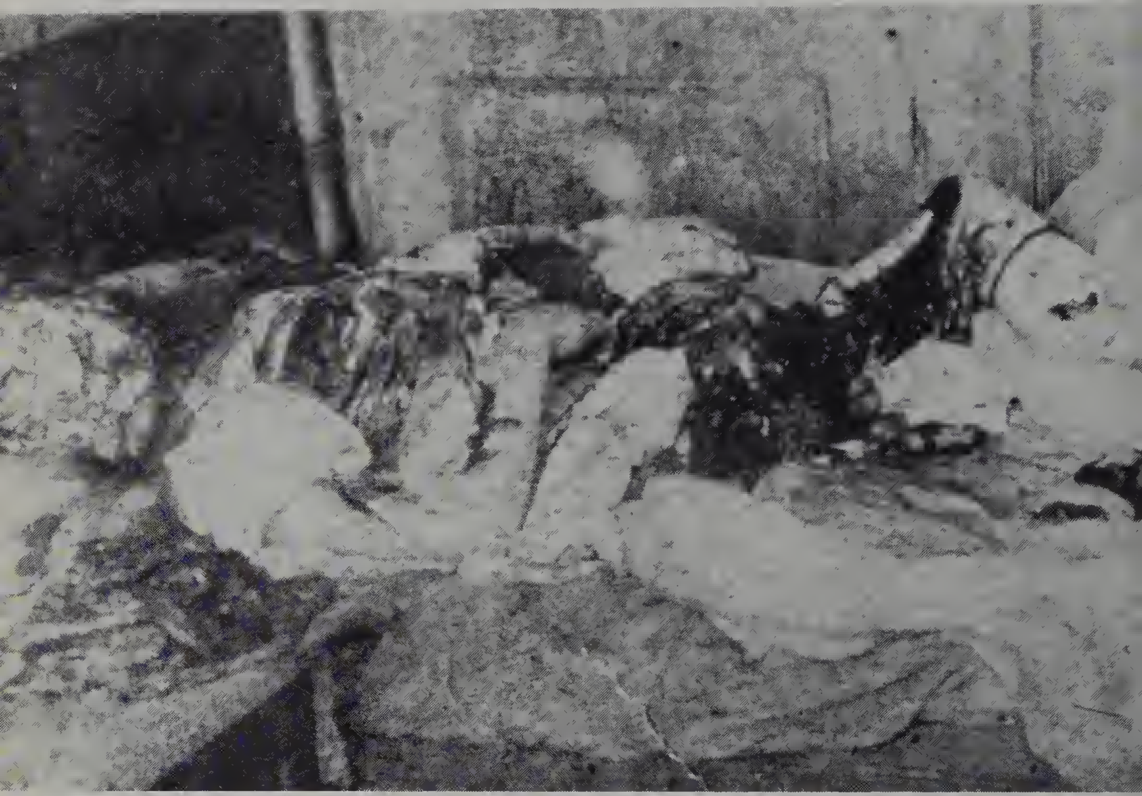


The Painter In His Studio (self-portrait)
Reproduced by kind permission of Henry Lessore

Ennui
Reproduced by kind permission of the Tate Gallery, London

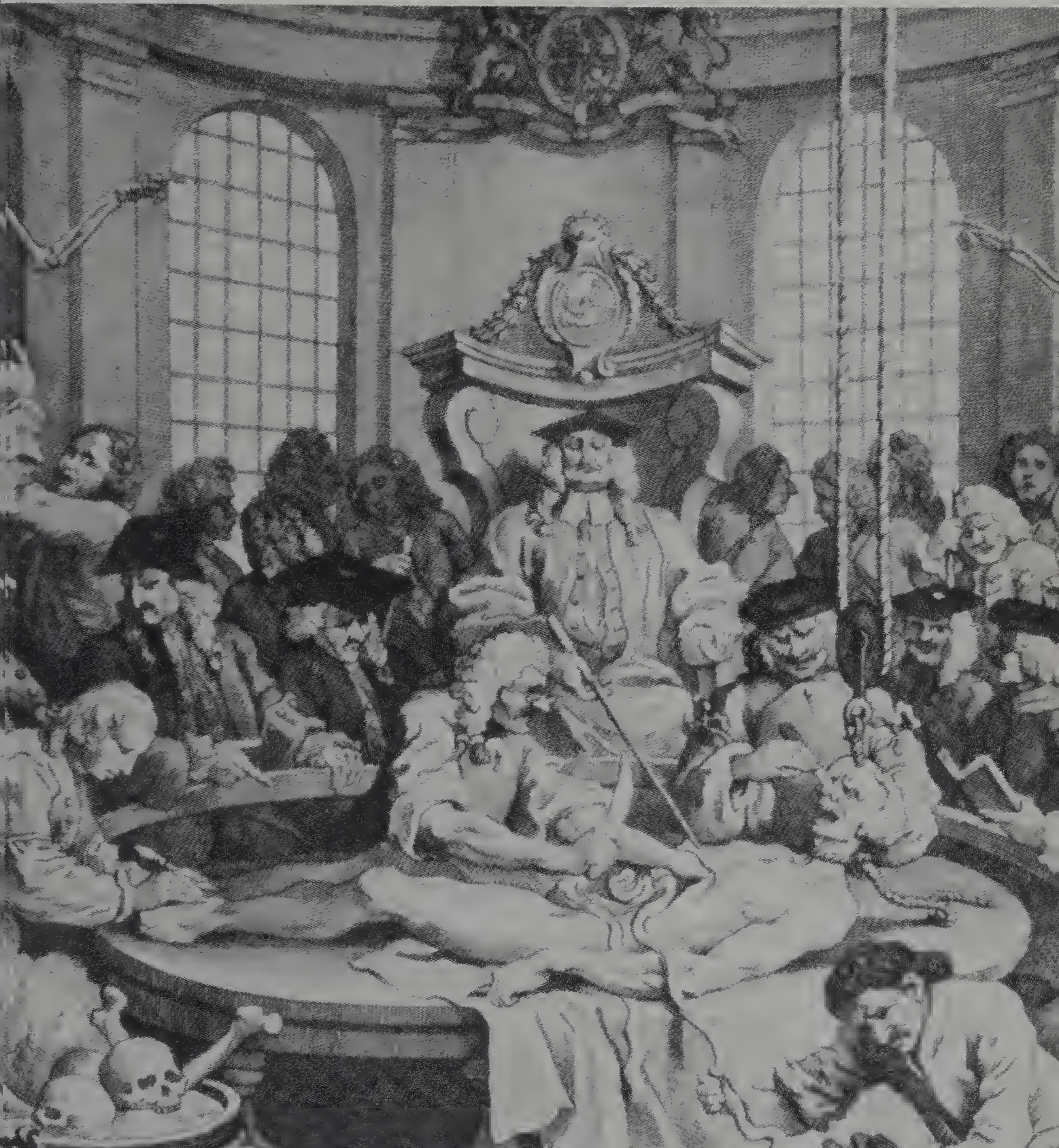
La Hollandaise *Reproduced by kind permission of Henry Lessore*

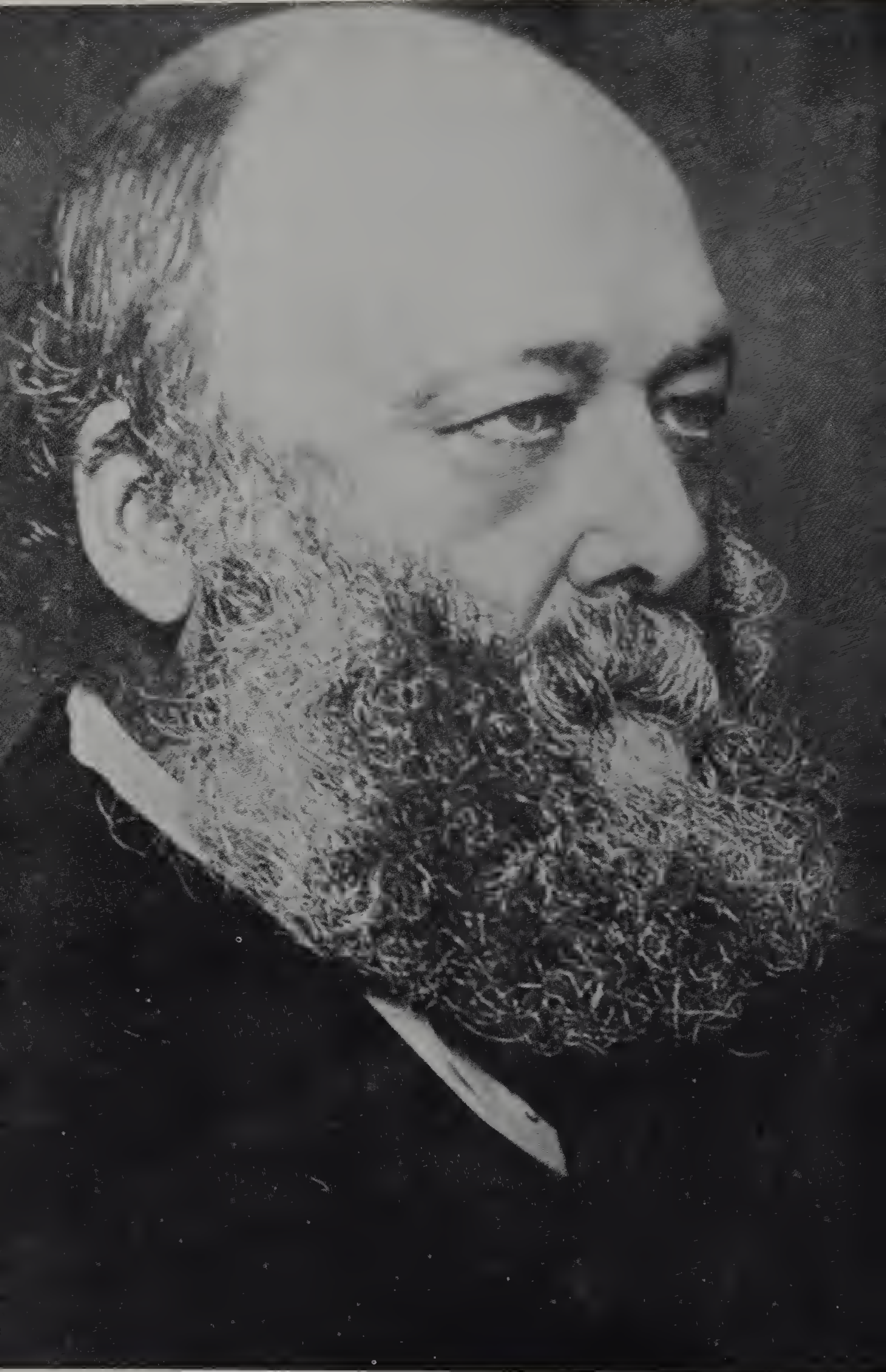




The Scotland Yard photograph of the mutilated remains of Marie Kelly, referred to in the Macnaghten papers

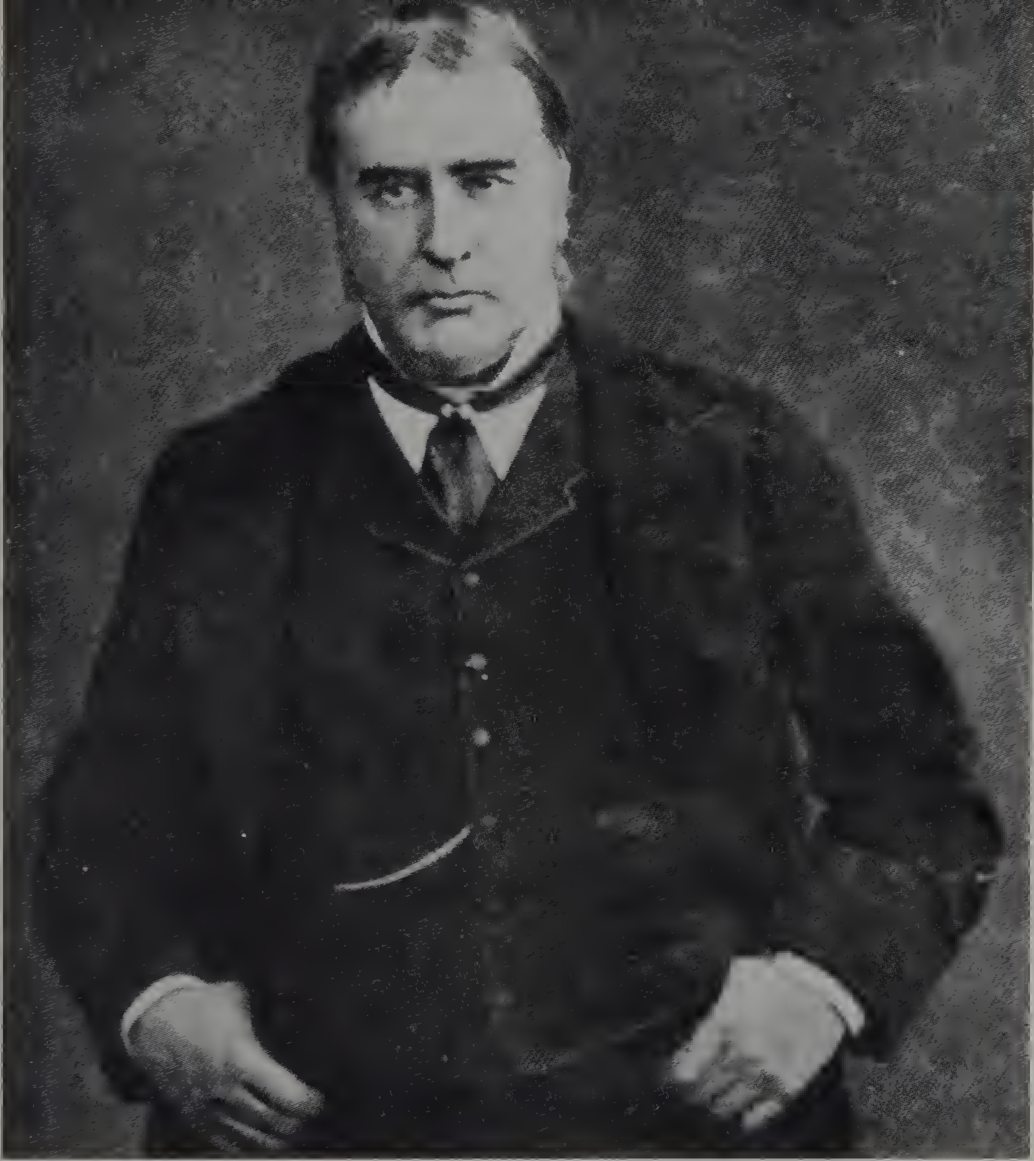
RIGHT
The Reward of Cruelty, by
William Hogarth
Reproduced by kind permission
of the Trustees of the British
Museum





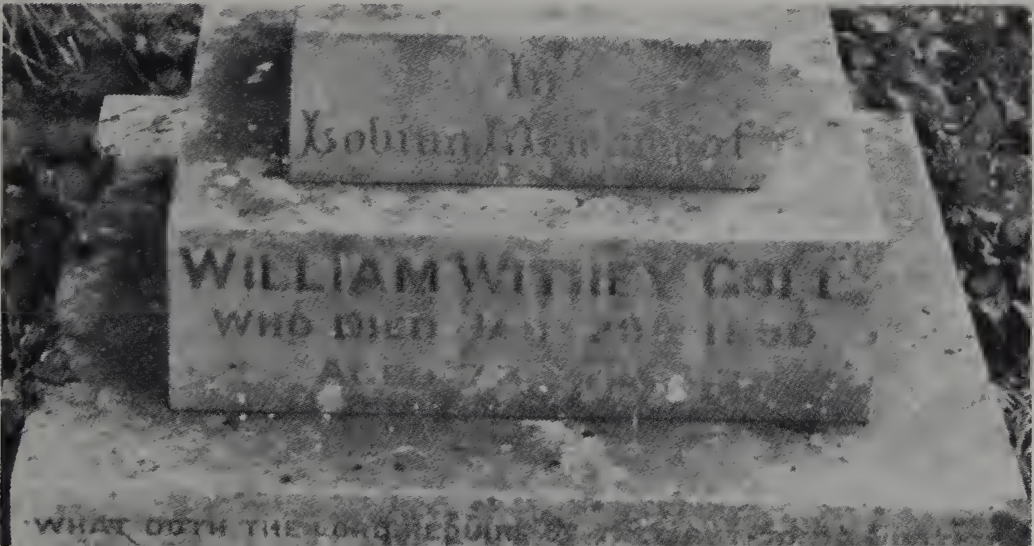
Lord Salisbury

Photo Radio Times Hulton Picture Library

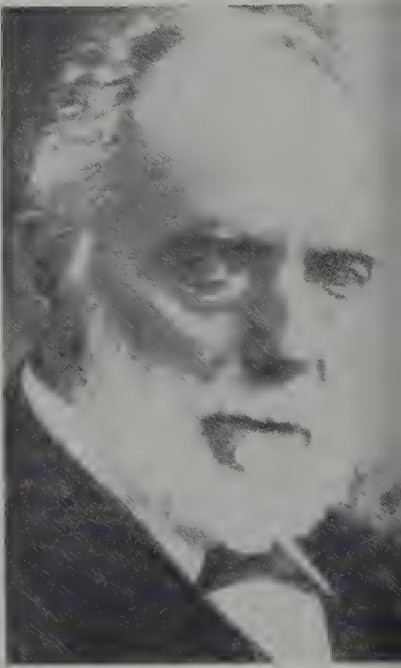


Sir William Gull *Photo Radio Times Hulton Picture Library*

Gull's grave at Thorpe-le-Soken

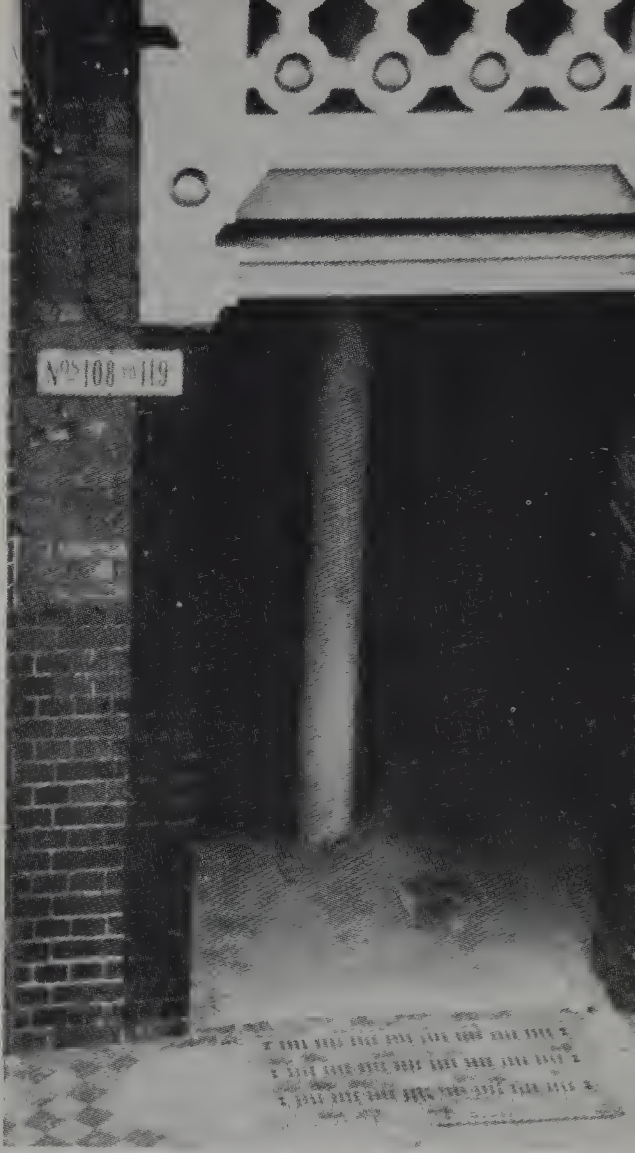

In
Loving Memory of
WILLIAM WITHEY GULL
WHO DIED
WHAT DOTH THE LORD REQUIRE

Sir Charles Warren



Robert James Lees at the age of eighty-one
Photo Psychic News

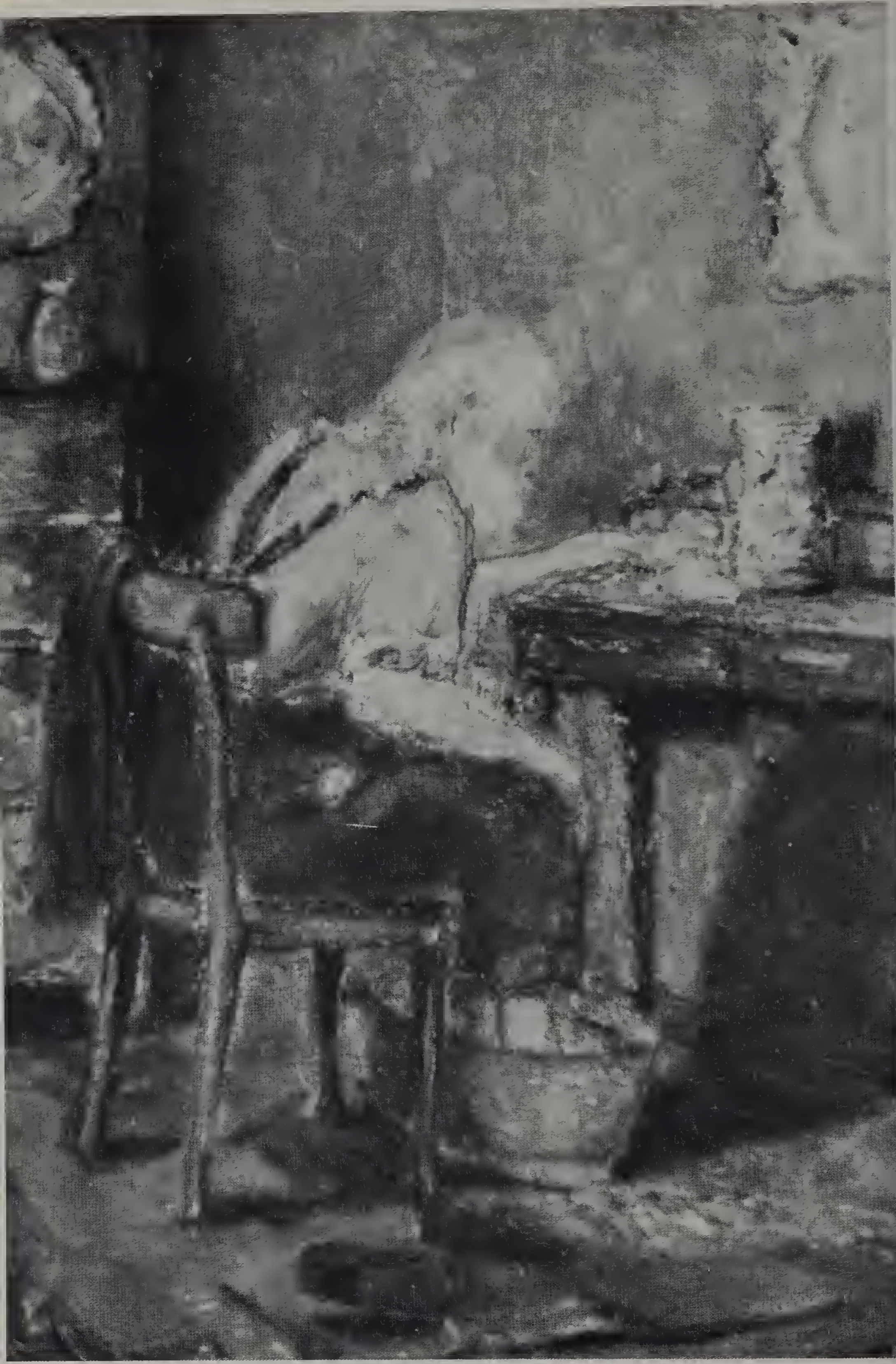
Sir Robert Anderson



Nos. 108 to 119 Wentworth Dwellings, Goulston Street—the scene of the writing on the wall. The writing was found just inside the doorway on the right-hand wall. Until 1975 Ripper experts had assumed this building had been demolished, as the writing had been wrongly reported to have been found at 'Peabody Buildings'. Richard Whittington-Egan discovered the true location during the research for his *A Casebook on Jack the Ripper*. No photograph of the building has previously been published
Photo Leonard Knight

GERIATRIC DEPARTM
THE MIDDLESEX HOSPITAL

Joseph Sickert pays a sad visit to the tobacconist's shop in Cleveland Street where the whole Ripper episode had its origins. The shop has since been taken over by the Middlesex Hospital
Photo Harry Jackson



An affectionate portrait of Walter Sickert painted by his son in 1975

Photo Leonard Knight

prevent Morgan publishing his work—attempts which included imprisoning him on trumped-up charges (shades of Ernest Parke), his rooms being ransacked and papers stolen, and threats to his life by so-called pillars of society—*Freemasonry Exposed* was finally published. Morgan was soon after kidnapped and done to death, allegedly by Masons. The murder is shrouded in mystery and evidence was frantically covered up (!), but the nationwide outcry against Masons in America, and the rapid rise of a powerful Anti-Masonic Movement seems justified by the evidence of people involved with Morgan.

It is unlikely ever to be known for certain if these two murders were committed by Masons. All that is certain is that both men died untimely deaths, and both had earned the antipathy of the brotherhood. If they were Masonic murders Freemasons in general were not responsible. On each occasion (from what can be gathered so long after) it would have been the work of an extreme Lodge, or extreme members of several Lodges. Though neither crime would have been plotted with the consent of all Masons, every advanced initiate must share the blame. For every Mason who has passed the Royal Arch has willingly helped to create the perfect matrix for crimes of violence. His promise not only to condone but to assist in the concealment of murder, treason and any other crime has brought about the situation where murder can be committed and the murderers go for ever undetected.

The fog of secrecy which envelops Freemasonry makes it virtually impossible to divine any more than the day-to-day workings and the rituals of the society. But a translation of some original documents, allegedly stolen from one of the most influential and highly initiated leaders of Freemasonry in France at the turn of the century, gives an indication of the plans and ambitions of at least some of its leaders. The documents were gathered together and first published in England by Eyre and Spottiswoode in 1920. The so-called *Protocols* are explicit: absolute power is the ambition, at least of the Freemasons in the highest degrees, and nothing, not even human life, must stand in its way. It would be ludicrous to suggest that these documents show Freemasonry as a whole to be evil, or that Masons are all aiming to take over the world. It has been shown that in the lowest degrees Masons are, on the whole, ordinary law-abiding citizens who have no knowledge of the total allegiance and appalling demands made on initiates to higher degrees. But with such fanatical writings set down as 'protocols' by high Masons, it needs only an extreme or lunatic fringe to take them absolutely literally. Of all the hundreds of thousands of Freemasons in England in the 1880s, there were bound to be these lunatic fringes. And a peculiar sort of lunacy did inspire the Ripper killings. Here, then, are some of the *Protocols:*

> (1) Our motto must be "All means of force and hypocrisy".
> (2) Only sheer force is victorious in politics, especially if it is concealed in the talent indispensible for statesmen. *Violence must be the principle*, cunning and hypocrisy must be the rule of those governments which do not wish to lay down their crown at the feet of the agents of some new power.

The second protocol describes almost exactly the dilemma facing Salisbury with the misconduct of Eddy and the blackmail from Marie Kelly and her cronies. He was surrounded by 'the agents of some new power'—socialists, anarchists, republicans—and he dealt with the problem, said Sickert, in just the way prescribed in the protocol. Violence, indeed, became the principle, and cunning and hypocrisy coalesced in a near-perfect cover-up.

> (3) In order to obtain our ends we must have recourse to much slyness and artfulness.

Once again, so much slyness and artfulness has been brought into play on the murderous field of the Ripper that no one has been able to get near the truth working, as all previous investigators have, from the outside. It has taken Walter Sickert, reconnoitring from within the tangled web, to point the way and show that the spider at the centre is in reality a horde of tarantulas.

> (4) The main success in politics consists in the degree of secrecy employed in pursuing it. The action of a diplomat must not correspond with his words. To help our world-wide plan, which is nearing its desired end, we must influence the governments of the Gentiles [the Masonic term borrowed from Hebrew and used to mean non-Masonic] by so called public opinions, in reality pre-arranged by us by means of that greatest of all powers—the press, which, with a few insignificant exceptions not

> worth taking into account, is entirely in our hands. Briefly, in order to demonstrate our enslavement of the Gentile governments in Europe, we will show our power to one of them by means of *crimes of violence*, that is to say by a *reign of terror*.

The documents containing the *Protocols* were stolen thirteen years after the Whitechapel Murders, but they were not new even in 1901. Had the reign of terror described in the fourth protocol already happened by the time the documents were stolen? *Had it happened in Whitechapel in 1888?* The effect Jack the Ripper had on the people of the East End, and indeed on the whole country, has been described with complete accuracy as a *reign of terror*. And it was brought about by *crimes of violence*. Was the murder of the five whores perpetrated not only for the motive of self-protection already described, but also to demonstrate the far-reaching power of Freemasonry to initiates the world over?

> (5) We must secure all instruments which our enemies might turn against us. We shall have recourse to the most intricate and complicated expressions of the dictionary of law in order to acquit ourselves in case we are forced to give decisions, which may seem overbold and unjust. For it will be important to express such decisions in so forcible a manner, that they should seem to the populace to be of the highest moral, equitable and just nature. Our government must be surrounded by all the powers of civilization among which it will have to act.

Freemasons are here seen to condone manipulation of the law in order to conceal their own unjust methods. Precisely this attitude on the part of Salisbury and his colleagues made it possible for the blatantly illegal inquest on Marie Kelly to be accepted, and for the perversion of justice concerning the Cleveland Street brothel case to be carried out.

> (6) In politics, governments and nations are satisfied by the showy side of everything; yes, and how should they have time to examine the inner side of things when their representatives only think of amusements? The nation holds the power of a political genius in special respect and endures all its high-handed actions, and thus regards them: "What a dirty trick, but how skilfully executed!" "What a swindle, but how well and with what courage it has been done!"

Here the Freemasonic code applauds the fraudulent and the illegal, providing they are accompanied by guile or audacity, as were the Ripper crimes.

> (7) It is necessary for us to acquire the services of bold and daring agents, who will be able to overcome all obstacles in the way of our progress.

Once more the accent is on the bold and daring, qualities which summarize the Ripper's style and astounded all who heard about the crimes.

> (8) The services of the police are of extreme importance to us, as they are able to *throw a screen over our enterprises*, *invent reasonable explanations* for discontent among the masses, as well as punish those who refuse to submit.

Tom Cullen, the BBC researchers and I all arrived at the conclusion that the police had hidden the truth. Sir Charles Warren, described in his biography as a zealous Mason, unquestionably *threw a screen* over the Masons by erasing the writing on the wall found after the murder of Eddowes, and he *invented a reasonable explanation* for his *un*reasonable behaviour.

> (9) The grandness of our might will require that suitable punishments should be awarded, that is to say, that they should be harsh even in the case of the smallest attempt to violate the prestige of our authority for the sake of personal gain.

This instruction might have been an exact description of the events in Sickert's story. Kelly and the other whores were operating some sort of blackmail (an 'attempt to violate the prestige of our authority for the sake of personal gain'), and they were indeed harshly punished. Freemasonry also dictates that in certain circumstances a Mason will be buried twice, and that he will die by his own greatest achievement. As will be shown in the next two chapters, this is what happened to two of the men named by Sickert as the Rippers.

The translator of the *Protocols* claimed they were in the form of minutes which were removed from a large book of notes for lectures. They were signed by Freemasons of the highest rank, the thirty-third degree. Their contents can be misleading. If we dismiss the idea that they are the code by which all Freemasons live (and in all honesty we must dismiss that idea; most Masons do not progress beyond the third degree[1]), we must accept that they were written for a purpose. And even if the writers were themselves insane, they were of such insuperable seniority within the fraternity that some Masons somewhere were bound to be influenced by them.

We learn that Freemasons applaud violence, terror and crime providing it is carried out in a *crafty* manner. One section of the notes says humour is all-important and the most appalling crimes may be committed under its cloak. The one Ripper letter likely to have been genuine suggests that Jack the Ripper was going about his crimes in just this way, committing ghoulish murders with a Puckish sense of fun. If Masonic supremacy appears in jeopardy, it is re-established by a show of strength, by crimes of violence, perpetrated to demonstrate the continuing power of Freemasons for the benefit of brothers abroad. If the strength of Masons high in the Government was being threatened by the self-interest of Marie Kelly, it is consistent with the *Protocols* that crimes of violence would have been committed to re-establish Masonic authority in the eyes of Masons everywhere. And Kelly and her confederates would have received the penalty meted out to those who betray the brotherhood. This is exactly what happened.

It is here that the three main aspects of Sickert's story—the knife-edged political situation, the behaviour of members of the Royal Family and the consequent fear of the Masons for their own survival—come together historically. Eddy's father, the Prince of Wales, was installed as Most Worshipful Grand Master of England on 28th April 1875. As the years passed and the political situation in England grew more dangerous to the established order, there is evidence to show that the Prince's Masonic brothers were becoming deeply concerned about his profligate life, which appeared to be growing worse rather than better.

---

[1] Initiates to the third degree are called Master Masons. The name conveys an idea of great seniority. Few Master Masons or Freemasons below the third degree realize that the so-called 'Masters' are no more than pawns in the hands of higher Masons. Fewer still have any idea that the third degree they regard as so advanced is in reality close to the bottom of the Masonic ladder, which stretches up to rarefied heights once a Mason passes the Royal Arch. The humble station of the Master can be judged by the exalted titles bestowed on initiates thirty degrees above him. The highest Masons, who arrogantly call themselves 'the grandest organization in the world', assume such pagan titles as Grand Inspector Inquisitor Commander, Sublime Prince of the Royal Secret and the patently blasphemous Prince of Jerusalem.

In 1881 the Prince received a letter signed 'A Freemason', but which appears rather to be the work of a representative body of Masons of the Grand Lodge. The letter contains a thinly disguised attack on his behaviour and a warning of the dangers he could bring upon the throne and his colleagues in the secret brotherhood. The letter—on the surface warm, friendly and full of admiration—is revealed as a bitterly sarcastic indictment when viewed in the light of the Prince's character. The Prince of Wales's notorious conduct was known all over Europe and America, yet the letter from the Masons refers to his 'pure career' and 'sober and virtuous life'. It says in part:

> In writing, dear brother, I do not address you as a Prince of Wales, for some of our Princes of Wales have been drunken, riotous spendthrifts, covered in debt, and deep in dishonour [a perfect description of Bertie]; but you, dear brother, instead of being such a one, figure more reputably as the erudite member of a Royal Geographical Society, or as a steady fellow of the Worshipful Company of Fishmongers . . .
>
> If Junius[1] were alive today, his pen would not dare to repeat its fierce attack on another Prince of Wales. Junius charged George, Prince of Wales, with quitting the arms of his wife for the endearments of a wanton, with toying away the night in debauchery, and with mocking the sorrows of the people with an ostentatious prodigality. But your pure career, your sober and virtuous life, would win laudations even from Junius's ghost. You are an English gentleman, as well as Prince of Wales; a good and kind husband in spite of being Prince of Wales; with you woman's honour is safe from attack, and sure of protection. The draggled and vice-stained plumes of your predecessors' escutcheons have been well cleaned and straightened by modern journalism, and the Prince of Wales' feathers are no longer (like the Bourbon fleur de lis) the heraldic ornament of a race of princes *sans foi, sans moeurs*.

The irony is poisonous. If there was one quality of Bertie's which was beyond doubt it was that *no* woman's honour was safe from his attack. If he had only one unfailing habit, it was quitting the arms of his wife for the endearments of a wanton. Every intelligent person in the land knew of his debauchery. As the sarcasm continued undiluted, the letter took on a warning tone and went on to underline the fact that Freemasonry was more powerful than princes:

---

[1] Junius was the writer of a series of anonymous letters published in Woodfall's *Public Advertiser* in London between January 1769 and January 1772. He is generally thought to have been Sir Philip Francis (1740–1818).

> Fit were you as profane to make the journeys to the Altar, for fame writes you as sober and chaste, as high-minded and generous, as kind-hearted and truthful. These are the qualities, oh Albert Edward, which hid your disability as Prince, when you knelt bare-kneed in our audience chamber. The brethren who opened your eyes to the light [a reference to the blindfold with which an initiate is 'hoodwinked'], overlooked your title as Prince of Wales in favour of your already famous manhood. Your career is a pleasant contrast to that of George Prince of Wales. Yet because you are as different from the princes whose bodies are dust, while their memories still remain to the historian as visible monuments of shame, I write to you, not as an English Prince, but as brother Master Mason . . .
>
> I do not indeed regard your title of Duke at all in writing to you, for when we find a Duke of Newcastle's property in the hands of Sheriff's Officers, his title a jest for bankruptcy messengers, and the Duke of Hamilton's name an European byword, it is pleasant to be able to think that the Duke of Cornwall and Rothesay [one of Bertie's many titles] is not as these Dukes are; *that this Duke is not a runner after painted donzels, that he has not written cuckold on the forehead of a dozen husbands*, that he is not deep in debt, has not, like these Dukes, scattered gold in filthy gutters, while deaf to the honest claims of justice.

My italics in this passage indicate the most bitter pieces of sarcasm, for the words used ostensibly to praise Bertie best describe his debaucheries. Then comes the unmistakable warning to change his ways, or else:

> We know, brother, that you would never have voluntarily enrolled yourself in the world's grandest organization, if you had been as these. It would have been perjury if you had done so—perjury which, though imperially honoured at the Tuileries, would be scouted with contempt by a Lancashire workman.

The Prince knew that the greatest threat to the established order, and hence the Masons, was the ordinary working man, whom he was constantly alienating by his anti-social behaviour, and whose consequent resentment was being whipped into hatred by the republicans.

> I write to you as a fellow Master Mason, as to one on an equality with myself, so long as you are true to your Masonic pledge, less than myself whenever you forget it. I address this epistle to you as a fellow-member of a body which teaches that man is higher than king; that humanity is beyond church and creed; that true thought is nobler than blind faith, and that virile, earnest effort is better far than dead or submissive serfdom.
>
> . . . *You have joined yourself to the Freemasons at the right moment, for true Freemasonry is about to be more powerful than Royalty. . . . In England, even at this hour, we are—if the organs of blood and culture speak truly—very near forgetting the use of a Queen. . . .*

The anonymous writers went on to draw the future king's attention to the Royal Families of Europe so recently overthrown, and to warn him against a similar fate. Throughout the letter, cloaked in the transparent guise of gushing *bonhomie*, one feeling comes through clearly: the Prince of Wales must cease his dissipated life or the throne will topple, *and that poses a threat to the Masons which cannot be countenanced.*

Now to the specific connections between Jack the Ripper and Freemasonry. Masonry is based on a peculiar system of ritual and allegory, and at each degree, in addition to bloody, pagan oaths, an initiate is made to perform certain mimes which represent the penalty he is to pay should his oath be betrayed.

In the lowest degree, that of the Entered Apprentice, part of the penalty for revealing Masonic secrets is to have the throat cut from left to right. The 'penal sign' of the Entered Apprentice has thus become a left-to-right movement of the hand across the throat. It has been general knowledge for years that four of the five Ripper victims had their throats cut in just this way. Unfortunately, since 1939 when William Stewart's *Jack the Ripper: A New Theory* appeared, the facts about Elizabeth Stride have been somewhat confused. Stewart believed there were only four Ripper murders, and somehow he made the mistake that Stride's throat was cut in the opposite direction to the wounds inflicted on Nichols, Chapman, Eddowes and Kelly.

He wrote:

> In each of the Ripper murders the victim was killed by the throat being cut from left to right. This characteristic alone marked the murder of Elizabeth Stride as not being the work of Jack the Ripper.

It is hard to explain how Stewart reached this conclusion, but he was wrong. Two statements in the Scotland Yard file show conclusively that Stride's throat was cut from left to right, just like the other victims, and in the precise manner of the Entered Apprentice Freemason.

The first statement is by Dr Bagster Phillips, who examined Stride's corpse. He said:

> I affirm that she was seized by the shoulders, placed on the ground, and that the perpetrator of the deed was on her right side when he inflicted the cut. I am of opinion that *the cut was made from the left to the right of the deceased.*

The second and more exhaustive of the two reports is in fact only a copy of a four-page medical report in the Home Office file. The document was written by Dr Thomas Bond, consulting surgeon to the Metropolitan Police's 'A' Division, who performed a post-mortem examination on Kelly's body. It was one of the many pieces of evidence suppressed at Kelly's inquest. In the report, Bond referred to the previous murders. He was including Stride when he stated that

> In the first four [murders] the throats appear to have been cut from left to right.

Thus the first Masonic parallel is noted: all Jack the Ripper's victims were dispatched according to an age-old Masonic ritual.

Another important statement in the Yard file, the contents of which have never been released, is the assertion by Dr Ralph Llewellyn, who examined the body of Nichols, that her throat had been cut *after* the mutilations to the abdomen. This would be fairly easy for a doctor to determine. Llewellyn's statement raises one vital question. If the severing of the carotid artery was not performed to kill the victim, what possible reason could there have been for inflicting the wound? It is surely inescapable that Nichols's throat wound was inflicted purely for a symbolic purpose. In *The Complete Jack the Ripper*, Donald Rumbelow put a convincing case for the Ripper victims having been strangled and then mutilated after death. Rumbelow's evidence strengthens the view that the cutting of the throats was for no practical purpose. It is surely significant that the act is such a sacred part of Freemasonic ritual.

In addition, the subsequent mutilations to the victims' bodies were carried out according to Masonic tradition. It is not disputed that these injuries were also caused after death. We have exact details of only three of the five women's mutilations, Chapman, Eddowes and Kelly. The first victim, Nichols, was given no more than a cursory glance by Dr Llewellyn when she was first found, so there is no reliable description of the precise form her mutilations took. By the time Llewellyn examined her fully her body had been stripped and washed by mortuary assistants. Stride's corpse escaped with a slit throat before any mutilations were begun. But the injuries of all three women given the full treatment by the Ripper, and whose bodies were fully examined, bear striking similarities to each other—and extraordinary parallels with the ritual killings of Freemasonry. A contemporary report of Chapman's corpse said:

> The intestines, severed from their mesenteric attachments, had been lifted out of the body *and placed on the shoulder of the corpse.*

And Dr Frederick Brown said at the inquest on Eddowes:

> The abdomen was all exposed. The intestines were drawn out to a large extent *and placed over the right shoulder.* A piece of the intestine was quite detached from the body and placed between the left arm and the body.

Under questioning Dr Brown was quite definite on the point that the intestines had been placed on the shoulder 'by design'.

This was definitely Masonic. By far the greater part of Masonic ritual and allegory is based upon the mythical murder by three apprentice Masons, Jubela, Jubelo and Jubelum, of the Grand Master Hiram Abiff, in charge of building Solomon's Temple. Having murdered Hiram the apprentices fled, but they were discovered near the coast at Joppa and they were themselves murdered,

> *by the breast being torn open and the heart and vitals taken out and thrown over the left shoulder.*

This has become the chief instruction for dealing with traitorous Master Masons. The description of Chapman's injuries was the section of his evidence which Dr Bagster Phillips tried desperately to suppress at the inquest (see pp. 108–10).

The incredible part about the Nichols murder was that it was not realized that she had been disembowelled until her body reached the mortuary. It appears that she was not so badly mutilated as the subsequent victims, but, if her vitals had not been thrown over her shoulder, she had certainly been 'torn open' in true Masonic style. And it is interesting that according to Dr Llewellyn, when she was found in Buck's Row her legs were both extended, as if she had been formally laid out.

The one inconsistency is that Masonic ritual specifies 'the left shoulders' and Eddowes's intestines were placed on her *right* shoulder. The discrepancy might be explained by the fact that Mitre Square, where Eddowes was found, was the most vulnerable of all the murder sites. She was butchered more elaborately than any of the other victims except Kelly, and in less time. The timing of the murder would have meant that not a second could be lost in depositing the body where it was found. In the hurry to arrange the body in a Masonic way it is possible that the point about *which* shoulder was overlooked. This is especially likely because, according to Sickert, Gull remained in the carriage and the actual arrangement of the corpse on the ground was undertaken according to Gull's instructions by Netley.

Dr Brown told the Eddowes inquest of another deliberate piece of mutilation: 'A triangular flap of skin had been reflected from each cheek . . . ' These two triangles have a precise Masonic relevance. The sacred sign of Masonry is *two triangles*, which represent the altar top of the Holy Royal Arch.

The similarities between the killing of Marie Kelly and a Masonic ritual murder are striking, as an engraving by William Hogarth shows. *The Reward of Cruelty*, the final stage of Hogarth's *Four Stages of Cruelty* series—ostensibly a caricature of the medical profession—in fact shows a Masonic ritual killing in progress, and bears an uncanny resemblance to the mutilation of Kelly. Hogarth was a Mason, and one of the first to expose the fraternity. There are Masonic symbols in many of his engravings, but this particular work was his most frank. Hogarth drew the Masonic parallel in this particular work by depicting the victim *formally laid out* on a dissecting table with a screw in his head supported by ropes and a pulley. This screw or drill is called a Lewis, and corresponds to the Lewis which supports two of the most important pieces of Masonic impedimenta, the rough ashlar and the perfect ashlar. Now compare Kelly's injuries, as described in *The Times*, with the fate of Hogarth's victim:

> *The poor woman lay on her back entirely naked. . .*

Hogarth's victim lies on his back entirely naked.

> *Her throat had been cut from ear to ear, right back to the spinal column. . . .*

Hogarth's victim has a Masonic 'cable tow' around his neck, which is clearly defined in Masonic ritual as representing the cutting of the throat.

> *Her ears and nose had been cut off, and the face otherwise slashed until its features were completely obliterated. . . .*

Hogarth's victim is in the process of being facially mutilated. One of the *three* Masonic killers in the picture is cutting at the eye with a surgeon's knife, which also corresponds to the Eddowes murder where the eyelids were slit.

> *The stomach and abdomen had been ripped open. . . .*

This is happening in Hogarth's picture.

> *The lower portion of the body, including the uterus, had been cut out. . . .*

The detail of the engraving is inadequate to tell whether any internal organs are missing (and, of course, a man has no uterus), but the lower portion of the body has definitely been cut out.

Kelly's heart was also cut out, and Hogarth's victim has suffered the same treatment. Finally, in one version of the engraving, the left hand of the victim lies across the left breast, in the same position as Kelly's. This is confirmed by a photograph of Kelly's body in the Yard file. The left arm of Annie Chapman, the only other murder where the killer had time to arrange the corpse as he chose, lay in the same position.

Elizabeth Stride's *right* arm lay across her breast. One final parallel between the Masonic murder depicted by Hogarth and the butchery of Kelly is that the final Ripper victim had her legs and feet skinned. One of the killers in the engraving is skinning the foot with a sharp scalpel.

Sickert said the murders were carried out by three people. Hogarth depicts *three* Masonic killers. Freemasons do in fact regard three as the perfect number, and Masonic mimed killings are traditionally carried out by three Masons, in memory of the sacred myth of Jubelo, Jubela and Jubelum. *Three* years after Kelly's death, in 1891, the Clarence and Avondale Lodge, named after Prince Eddy, was set up at the Masonic Hall at Leytonstone, close to where Kelly was buried.

Most writers have mentioned one curious detail of the murder of Annie Chapman, but it has never been properly explained. Some writers, like Farson who is confused by it, have made no attempt to explain it. Others do not even mention it, and others still, like Stewart, claim implausibly that it had no significance. Farson's feeling about the detail was close to the truth. He wrote:

> Even more bewildering was a curious detail that seems inexplicable, though I cannot help feeling that it has significance: two brass rings, two new farthings, and a few coins were laid out neatly around the feet of the corpse.

Farson was correct in attaching significance to the act, but beyond this brief mention he said no more. The act of placing brass rings and the other items by the body was Masonic, an act of twisted symbolism. Brass is the sacred metal of the Masons because Hiram Abiff was a worker in brass. He supervised the moulding of the two great hollow brass pillars which stood at the entrance to Solomon's Temple, and which have become the symbol of Freemasonry. Two brass rings side by side look exactly like two hollow brass pillars in cross-section. The other more obvious Masonic aspect of the episode is that before a Mason is initiated to any degree he is divested of all metals such as coins and rings.

Here, once more, the cover-up rears its head. The rings were removed shortly after Chapman's body was found, and Coroner Wynne Baxter was told they had been stolen by the killer. This is another point which seems to have escaped previous writers on the Ripper. On page 61 of his book,

Rumbelow wrote:

> As if he was taking part in some elaborate ritual the killer had laid the two rings he had torn from her fingers, some pennies and two new farthings at the woman's feet.

Yet eleven pages later, in summarizing the words of Coroner Baxter at Chapman's inquest, he wrote:

> Two things were missing from the body, he said. Chapman's rings, *which had not been found*, and the uterus, which had been taken from the abdomen.

These two statements are at variance, yet no writer has so far mentioned the inconsistency, let alone explained it. The first question is, were the rings in reality arranged with the coins at Chapman's feet or was the first statement mistaken?

There was no mistake, as statements in the Press at the time of the murder confirm. The rings and coins were seen and noted by several journalists. The strongest support of this is that they were observed by the first journalist at the scene of the murder, Oswald Allen. In a report that appeared in the *Pall Mall Gazette* only hours after the murder was discovered, Allen wrote:

> A curious feature of this crime is the murderer had pulled off some brass rings which the victim had been wearing and these, together with some trumpery articles which had been taken from her pockets, *were placed carefully at the victim's feet.*

How can the subsequent disappearance of these items be explained? The first person on the scene after the police and journalists was Dr Phillips, already shown in Chapter 8 to have been involved in the cover-up. He was eager at the Chapman inquest to conceal the Masonic nature of her injuries. He is the most likely person to have been responsible for eliminating the clue of the brass rings.

Hours after the Chapman murder the Leather Apron rumour first swept London. It is now impossible to trace the actual source of this rumour, as it appears to have been generated spontaneously in several different places around the East End. Intriguingly enough, the most important Masonic vestment is the *leather apron*. This garment is actually made of lambskin, but Masons always refer to it as their 'leather apron'.

This striking connection between the Whitechapel Murders and the Masons brings us back to the slaughter of Catherine Eddowes in Mitre Square. For in this murder the *apron* once again appears to have significance. A portion of Eddowes’s apron was cut off by the murderer. It was not torn off in frenzy but removed with a clean cut, calmly and deliberately. Why? If the sole purpose of taking the piece of apron was to wipe blood from the Ripper’s hands or knife, what possible reason could he have had for taking up much valuable time cutting off a section of the garment? Other parts of her copious clothing would have presented a far easier and quicker way of cleaning himself, her voluminous petticoats for example. Once again, the practical explanation does not make sense. There was no practical reason for the act. Therefore we are left with the alternative, that the apron was cut off for a *symbolic* purpose, just like the cutting of the throats after death, the posthumous mutilations and the careful arrangement of items at Chapman’s feet.

There was even significance in the thirty-nine days that were allowed to elapse between the murder of Eddowes and that of Kelly. Thirty-nine is a meaningful number to Freemasons, arrived at by multiplying the ‘perfect’ number, three, by the favourite’, thirteen. In other words it is the ideal, the perfect number of favourites.

It was the audacious murder of Eddowes above all the others hat gave the Ripper a reputation for having supernatural powers. How could a man waylay Stride shortly before one o’clock, murder her, walk half a mile and find Eddowes, take her to Mitre Square, butcher her, arrange her body in the most meticulous manner and escape undetected, all in forty-five minutes? Sickert’s contention that Eddowes was picked up by he three killers in their carriage, murdered inside it and then placed in the square later, alone seems to answer the problem.

A counter to the carriage argument is that the vehicle would have been heard. This is true, but hearing does not necessarily mean either noticing or remembering. In the early days of Ripper literature the suggestion was made that the murderer was an ‘invisible man’. This meant the sort of person whose presence in the streets would have been so commonplace he would not have been noticed. A policeman, for instance, would have been blotted from a person’s subconscious in this way. The same is true of the sound of a vehicle. Admittedly no one reported hearing a carriage pass the scene of any of the murders. This is because the sound of vehicles passing through the streets late at night was so common in the East End at that time, and so much a part of the general background of living, that no one would have noticed it. As the testimony of witnesses at several of the inquests showed, the streets at all hours of the day and night were bustling with cabs, delivery vehicles and the wagons of market workers and slaughterhouse employees. Buck's Row, where witnesses specifically mentioned they had heard nothing all night, was not only traversed throughout the night by noisy slaughterhouse wagons, it was also next to a railway line. None of these sounds registered in the minds of witnesses, and the noise from the wheels of Netley's coach would have been indistinguishable from the sound of a passing wagon.

Sickert's carriage notion provides a plausible explanation for another baffling aspect of the case, the seemingly inexplicable fact that the killer or killers commanded sufficient confidence in their victims for the women to go willingly with them. After the death of Chapman no tart, however down on her luck, would have gone into a dark square with a strange man. But when the nationwide hue and cry was after solitary Jack, the bestial lurker in the shadows, the last people to fall under suspicion would have been two gentlemen and their driver travelling through the East End in their carriage. The dialogue which would have snared little Eddowes and banished her fears can be imagined:

'Good night to you, madam. This is hardly the time or the place to be alone in these dark days. May we offer you a lift to your destination?'

The cockney tarts who haunted the twilight world of Whitechapel were rarely treated as human beings, let alone as ladies. The problem of tempting the victims inside the coach would have been easily overcome by appealing to their vanity and reminding them of the faceless terror that was stalking the night outside. It would have been a simple irony to convince the women that in entering the carriage they were finding safety from Jack the Ripper. The murders taking place in a vehicle alone explains why so little blood was found at the 'site' of each killing.

Mitre Square was in the wrong direction for Eddowes when she was released from Bishopsgate Police Station after sobering up. Her only reasonable destination at that time of night would have been her doss-house in Spitalfields. That she was planning to go to Spitalfields is confirmed by her own words as she left the police station. At the inquest jailer George Hutt told City Police solicitor Mr Crawford that as Eddowes left him she said, 'I shall get a damned fine hiding when I get home'.

CRAWFORD I gather from that you thought she was going home?
HUTT Yes.

That she eventually finished up in the opposite direction from the way she would have taken to Spitalfields is a good indication that she was taken to Mitre Square. But why? On the face of it, it was the last place a killer would choose. Rumbelow described the 'enormous risks' taken by the Ripper in performing his operation there:

> Mitre Square had three entrances—one from Mitre Street and passages from Duke Street and St James's Place. On two sides of the square there were warehouses, belonging to Kearley and Tonge, with a watchman on night duty. On the third side, opposite where the body was found, there were two old houses, one of which was unoccupied and the other lived in by a policeman. On the fourth side were three empty houses. Every fifteen minutes during the night the square was patrolled by a police constable: at 1.30 a.m. the square had been empty when he strolled through, at 1.45 a.m. he had found a body.

The Times thought that:

> The assassin, if not suffering from insanity, appears to be free from any fear of interruption while on his dreadful work.

Even though the murder did not take place in the square but inside the carriage, Mitre Square still presented an enormous risk during the few brief minutes Netley took to deposit the body. Why was it so essential a spot to lay Eddowes that all these risks were taken?

It will be remembered that according to Sickert the killers thought that in Eddowes they had found Marie Kelly. This was to have been the last murder, and consequently the most overtly Masonic. Mitre Square has strong Masonic significance. In fact it is fair to say it was the most Masonic of all places in London, except for the great hall of the Grand Lodge itself.

The square was literally riddled with Masonic connections. Its name, for a start, was entirely Masonic. *Mitre* and *Square* are the basic tools of the Freemason, and they play a large part in Masonic ritual and allegory. They were implements used by the original stonemasons, and in his initiation ceremony an Entered Apprentice is presented with the tools of a stonemason and told by the Master: 'These tools we apply to our morals'. In *The Builders, A Story and Study of Masonry*, Joseph Fort Newton described the Square as 'a symbol of truth'. The name Mitre Square first appeared in an Ordnance Survey map of 1840. It had been named after the Mitre Tavern, an important meeting-place for Masons in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries.

Two other important connections exist between Mitre Square and Freemasonry. It had been the scene of a murder in 1530 that in some respects paralleled the mythical murder of Hiram Abiff, the bedrock of so much of Masonry's allegory. Like the murder of Hiram, it took place in a hallowed place, for in the sixteenth century Mitre Square was the site of the Priory of the Holy Trinity. A woman was in the Priory praying at the high altar, just like Hiram in Solomon's Temple before his murder, when she was set upon by a mad monk. He did her to death and later killed himself, by plunging the knife into his own heart. The scene of the murder, the victim at prayer and the subsequent violent death of the killer all correspond to the mythical incident which is the hallowed core of Freemasonic tradition.

This peculiar holiness was consolidated two and a half centuries later when Mitre Square became the meeting-place of Masons belonging to Hiram's Lodge. So strong were its links with Masonry that it continued as the centre of a flourishing Masonic activity well into the nineteenth century. The Mitre Tavern, at the entrance to the square, became the meeting-place of two other Lodges, the Union Lodge and the Lodge of Joppa. The latter is once again closely related to the murder of Hiram, for it was near the coast at Joppa that the three apprentice Masons were found hiding. Evidence that Mitre Square was particularly sacred to Masons is found in the names of the Lodges which met there. *Hiram's* Lodge and the Lodge of *Joppa* are more closely bound up with the central theme of Masonry than any of the other Lodges around London in the 1800s. These lesser lodges included such names as the Ark Lodge and the Lodge of Prosperity. Only the most important Lodges met at Mitre Square. Apart from the brethren of

Hiram's Lodge and the Lodge of Joppa, however, Mitre Square was still a hive of Masonic activity. A few yards away, the Tailor's Arms in Mitre Street was the rendezvous of the Lodge of Judah.

One of the country's chief Lodges, and almost certainly the one to which Sir William Gull belonged, was the Royal Alpha. It met almost entirely in the West End, and most notably at the King's Arms in Brook Street, Mayfair, close to Gull's residence at No. 74. The lodge had only two meeting-places outside the West End—Leadenhall Street and the *Mitre Tavern*, providing a direct link between Gull and Mitre Square.

The savage murder of 1530 might almost be considered a link between the killing of Hiram and the murder of Catherine Eddowes. For though the Masonic parallels in the first Mitre Square murder are strong, its details also resemble the fourth Ripper killing. In both cases it was a woman who fell victim to an apparently insane killer, and in both cases the victims were butchered with a knife. There are surely too many points of contact between the murder of Eddowes and the murder of the unknown woman in 1530, and between both these and the mythical murder of Hiram Abiff, for coincidence to be possible. It seems likely that Mitre Square became so sacred a place for Masons because of the 1530 outrage. It was no accident that the killers sheltering under the single identity of Jack the Ripper chose Mitre Square as the venue for their intended final victim's discovery.

Hanbury Street, where Chapman was found, was another important Masonic meeting-place. The Humber Lodge and the Lodge of Stability had met regularly at the Black Swan and the Weaver's Arms, both in Hanbury Street and one on either side of No. 29, where Chapman's body was found.

Finally, the most conclusive proof of all that the murders were Masonic is to be found in following the trail of that missing piece of Eddowes's apron. The cloth, soaked with blood, was found by P.C. Alfred Long, lying in the passage of Wentworth Dwellings, model dwellings in Goulston Street. These dwellings have been wrongly identified by previous authors as 'Peabody Buildings'. Above the cloth, on the wall of the passage, was a chalked message. Until now, the exact content of the message has not been known. The wording has been reported differently in almost every book on the Ripper. But the Private Letter Book of the Metropolitan Police, a collection of confidential letters now at the Public Record Office, contains the original copy of the message. A note from Sir Charles Warren to the Permanent Under-Secretary to the Home Office, Godfrey Lushington, says:

> I send you a copy of the writing on the wall at Goulston Street.

Attached to the letter is a document, photographic copies of which are contained in the Home Office file. It shows the exact wording and layout of the message, and there has been an obvious attempt to copy the handwriting style of the original:

> The Juwes are
> The men That
> Will not
> be Blamed
> for nothing

Until the discovery of the writing on the wall, Sir Charles Warren had not ventured into the East End. The news of the message brought him scurrying from Whitehall as fast as a carriage could convey him. Major Smith of the City Police, never on the best of terms with Warren, had already decided to allow courtesy to go by the board. Hearing the news of the chalked message, he authorized Inspector McWilliam to send three officers to Goulston Street to photograph it. At last the Ripper had left a clue.

The murder had taken place just inside City Police territory, but the writing on the wall was within Warren's domain. When the City policemen appeared with their bulky photographic equipment Warren had already arrived. He forbade them to take any pictures, and proceeded with a course of action that has not been properly explained or justified. This was the only real clue ever left by Jack the Ripper. *Yet Warren washed it away.* He later gave the excuse that he had feared anti-Jewish riots would be sparked off by the reference to 'Juwes'. Even if this were true it does not explain why he would not allow the City men to photograph the message. The pictures could have provided vital evidence, and the writing could have been erased after being photographed. It does not explain why he did not accept the advice of several senior policemen at the scene and have just the word 'Juwes' erased. It does not explain why he did not merely have the message covered with a cloth. It was, after all, in the hallway of a building that could easily have been cordoned off.

What, then, was Warren trying to hide? What possible reason could he have had for so blatantly destroying evidence? The whole episode remains incongruous until we realize there is only one reason why a senior police officer would go to great lengths to defeat the ends of justice. That is when the officer owes allegiance to a master higher even than justice. It has been shown that Warren was one of the world's most advanced and powerful Freemasons. He had long since sworn to assist a fellow-Mason in murder or treason by concealing evidence. This is clearly what Warren was doing in Goulston Street. But what was it in that scrawled message that pointed the finger at a Freemason? The evidence lies in the word 'Juwes'. This was not, as Warren tried to convince critics, and many authors have subsequently averred, a misspelling of the word Jews. *For the Juwes were the three apprentice Masons who killed Hiram Abiff and who are the basis of Masonic ritual.*

It is impossible to find out if some of the lesser-known people in Sickert's story were Masons. The chief characters certainly were. Warren, Gull, Anderson and Salisbury were all well advanced on the Masonic ladder. Salisbury, whose father had been Vice Grand Master of All England, was so advanced that in 1873 a new Lodge was consecrated in his name. The Salisbury Lodge met at the premier Masonic venue in England, the Freemasons' Hall in Great Queen Street, London.

Can there be any doubt that the Ripper murders, the subsequent cover-up, and also the cover-up surrounding the Cleveland Street brothel case were carried out by a band of extremist Freemasons? Even Lord Euston, the prime mover in the last, brutal part of the Cleveland Street cover-up, was a prominent Mason. And despite the fact that he was known to be a frequenter of the homosexual brothel, his Masonic career flourished in the wake of the scandal. The moral virtue which Freemasons profess to hold sacred was clearly of little importance when Lord Euston was made Grand Master of the Mark Masons. But then his promotion was not in recognition of his morals. It was Masonic blood-money for the service he had rendered in silencing Ernest Parke.

CHAPTER ELEVEN

Sir William Gull

The reaction of most Ripper experts to Walter Sickert's account of the murders is unqualified disbelief. The general feeling was summed up by Colin Wilson, author of *A Casebook of Murder*, when he wrote after Joseph Sickert's television appearance, 'In my own view, it is the most unlikely story so far'.

Farson and Rumbelow have since made passing references to the broadcast in their books, and have dismissed it on the strength of one fundamental objection. Their main argument against the whole Sickert saga appears to be: Sir William Gull could not have been an active member of the Ripper party because in 1887 he suffered a stroke.

There is a great deal of evidence that vindicates Sickert's accusation of Gull. Before the positive side of the case is explained, however, the sole objection to Gull's participation in the murders can be proved groundless.

The statement which has given rise to the mistaken idea that Gull was little more than a cripple after 1887 is contained in the *Dictionary of National Biography*. The entry on Gull says in part:

> In the autumn of 1887 he was attacked with paralysis, which compelled him to retire from practice; a third attack caused his death on 29 Jan. 1890.

From this statement it appears impossible for Gull to have been one of the Ripper party, least of all the protagonist. But this reference to Gull's illness is an over-simplification, and other sources provide a more accurate account.

The truth is to be found in the words of Dr Thomas Stowell, who had his information from Gull's own daughter. He wrote that Gull had 'a slight stroke in 1887'. Just how slight that stroke was is shown in the following passage, taken from *In Memoriam—Sir William Gull*, an affectionate tribute to Gull that appeared shortly after his death:

> He was then [October 1887] at his home in Scotland, intending almost immediately to return to work after his autumn holiday, and while walking alone in the grounds was seized with paralysis. *He did not lose consciousness, but fell on one knee and was able to walk to the house with assistance.* [My italics]

This was hardly a serious attack, as the *Dictionary of National Biography* suggests. So mild was the so-called 'stroke' that Gull *walked* back to his house. Even though he ceased to attend patients in 1887, he still led an active life. His son-in-law, Theodore Dyke Acland, explained in *William Withey Gull, A Biographical Sketch*, that:

> Sir William took an important part in the public work of his day. From 1856 *to 1889* he served on the Senate of the University of London. [My italics]

Gull religiously filled in the forms every year for his professional details to be recorded in the *Medical Register*. He last appeared in the *Register* in 1889, so at least until the end of 1888, when the 1889 edition was compiled, he regarded himself as an active medical man. Why then, if he was well enough right through to 1889 still to be serving on the Senate of the University of London, did he relinquish his practice in 1887? Events following Gull's illness are outlined in the 1892 edition of Wilks and Bettany's *Biographical History of Guy's Hospital:*

> Sir W. Gull had had two or three short illnesses before the one which was the commencement of his fatal malady, but at this time he was well and enjoying himself in Scotland, near Killiecrankie, when he was seized with *slight* paralysis on the right side and aphasia. This was in October 1887. He recovered in great measure and returned to London, where he remained for some months comparatively well. Friends who then saw him did not discern much difference in his

> looks and manner, but he *said* he felt another man, and gave up his practice. He subsequently had three epileptiform attacks, *from which he rapidly recovered*, but on January 29th, 1890, he was suddenly seized with an apoplectic attack, fell into a state of coma, and gradually passed away. [My italics]

This passage emphasizes the slightness of Gull's 1887 attack. The observation by Wilks and Bettany that Gull's friends hardly noticed any difference in him after the 1887 'stroke' is another indication of its mildness. Could their statement that Gull 'said' he felt another man suggest he may have been misleading people into believing he was too ill to continue his practice?

The truth about Gull's 1887 illness was that he suffered slight paralysis, not even a stroke in the usual sense of the word. But even assuming his 1887 attack was a stroke as he insisted, it was of such a minor nature that it need hardly have affected his life at all. A stroke is a sudden loss of consciousness, the senses and voluntary motion, caused generally by the rupture of a blood-vessel in the brain. None of these symptoms were apparent in Gull. There are two types of stroke, major and minor. Dr Alan Barham Carter, an expert on this sort of illness and the author of *All About Strokes*, defines a minor stroke as occurring 'when the damage is small, limited in extent and often reversible so that death of the [brain] cells does not occur'.

Dr Barham Carter explained that a normally strong man can make a complete recovery even from a major stroke, in which brain cells are permanently destroyed. Gull was a more than normally strong man. He has been described by one writer as of medium height, but 'of great strength and vigour', and the *Dictionary of National Biography* pays tribute to his 'great powers of endurance'. It is surely not hard to accept that an attack as mild as that suffered by Gull would prove a negligible impediment in the life of a man of his *exceptional* strength. It is important to note that his constitution was not impaired by serious illness. All his life he was remarkably healthy, except for a single attack of enteric fever.

Had Farson and Rumbelow heard the full story they would never have raised Gull's illness as an objection to his taking part in the murders. Neither writer interviewed Joseph Sickert before publishing the criticisms which stemmed from Sickert's six-minute television narrative. With this in mind, they cannot be blamed for drawing the conclusions they did. Not only was a story that defied précis impossibly condensed so that vital details were lost, several aspects of the original account were actually distorted in the miniaturization process. Thus viewers heard:

> She [Marie Kelly] was killed as the last of five women in a way that made it look like the random work of a madman.

Walter Sickert never made this statement. He insisted that all the victims except Eddowes knew each other, that Nichols, Chapman, Stride and Kelly were participating in a sordid blackmail attempt, and that Eddowes was murdered in mistake for Kelly. But the greatest flaw in the broadcast was that it lacked all detail. It was not explained, for instance, that Sickert said the murders, excepting those of Kelly and Stride, were committed in a moving carriage, and hence Gull would have needed to expend relatively little physical effort in his part of the murders. Sickert said Gull first induced unconsciousness in the victims by feeding them black grapes impregnated with poison. Then, as they lay motionless in the carriage, he would perform the Masonic mutilations with the help of Anderson. This means the physical strain on Gull would have been small. John Netley would later undertake the strenuous task of placing the corpses in the street. On more than one occasion he was helped by Anderson, but Gull never left the carriage.

The notion that Farson and Rumbelow have discredited—that of a solitary Gull skulking through the alleys of the East End and alone butchering his victims, then eluding the hue and cry on foot—was clearly farcical. But Sickert never suggested anything like that.

If any doubts remain as to Gull's physical ability to sit in a carriage and perform his Masonic surgery upon four women over a period of ten weeks, it will be valuable to bear in mind the much greater physical and mental effort exerted—not spasmodically as in the case of the Ripper murders, but constantly and under great pressure—by sufferers of one or more *major* strokes. To repeat: at worst Gull suffered the mildest stroke it is possible to suffer without it passing unnoticed. Dr Barham Carter again:

> Many famous people have had a stroke, but the ones I shall mention here are some of those who have made great contributions to the world after a *major* stroke, thus showing

> that the catastrophe need not be the end of a man or woman's career.

He recalled the major stroke suffered by Louis Pasteur:

> On 29 December Pasteur was able to walk without any support, and after this rather slow recovery came the remarkable future. His energies and enthusiasm seemed to be in no way diminished and he formulated all his famous theories of immunity and vaccination in the years following his stroke.

Pasteur underwent *years* of intense strain and gruelling work in the course of his revolutionary research, after a *major* stroke.

Dr Barham Carter described Churchill:

> He made a good recovery from the [major] stroke of 1949 and won the election of 1951, becoming Prime Minister. In spite of *a succession* of minor strokes in 1950 and 1952 and a bigger one in 1953, he undertook the full duties of his office successfully, and there is nothing to show that at this time he had lost any of his former fire and judgement. In fact at that time he also took the burden of the Foreign Office on his shoulders and was very successful in his decisions concerning our relationship with other countries.

In 1953 Churchill was seventy-nine, eight years older than Gull at the time of the Whitechapel Murders. It is certain that the combined job of Prime Minister and Foreign Secretary takes more physical fitness and strength than performing Gull's alleged part in the Jack the Ripper killings, which were spread over a period of two and a half months. If we accept the fact that a man nearly eighty can be Prime Minister and Foreign Secretary after two major strokes and a succession of minor ones, we must accept that a man many years younger is capable of being a carriage-bound Jack the Ripper a year after an attack so slight he didn't even collapse.

Finally, having been told Sickert's description of the murders, Dr Barham Carter said,

> There is no doubt that a man aged seventy-two, physically strong and active, who has had a minor stroke, could have lived a perfectly normal life and could have committed the Whitechapel Murders in the manner described by Sickert.

Many writers have asserted that Jack the Ripper was a doctor. Of a hundred and three published theories which I have examined, more than a quarter state the Ripper was a doctor or a medical student. Most theorists who believe a medical man was responsible for the murders base their reasoning on the comments of Dr Ralph Llewellyn and Dr Bagster Phillips, who stated at the inquests of Nichols and Chapman that the murderer must have possessed some anatomical knowledge. The opinion was widely accepted, and the suspicion which fell on medical men generally was skilfully evoked by Dennis Halsted in his book *Doctor In the Nineties*. Halsted was a doctor at the London Hospital at Whitechapel at the time of the murders, and he too described the 'great surgical skill' employed by the Ripper. That medical men were the chief suspects at the time of the killings is confirmed by a file at the Home Office devoted to accusations against doctors and policemen, and by the large number of medical men listed in the *Suspects* file at Scotland Yard.

Two doctors who examined the body of Eddowes, divisional police surgeon Dr George Sequeira and the medical officer of health for the City of London, Dr William Saunders, were of the opinion that no anatomical knowledge had been displayed. But the view that the murderer *did* possess some knowledge of surgery is vindicated by the more precise evidence of other doctors.

At the Nichols inquest, Dr Llewellyn said, 'The murderer must also have had some rough anatomical knowledge'.

Dr Phillips said at the Chapman inquest, 'There were indications of anatomical knowledge. The whole of the body was not present, the absent portions are from the abdomen. The way in which those portions were extracted showed anatomical knowledge.'

The Lancet, the journal of the medical profession, made the comment that the murders were 'obviously the work of an expert—of one, at least, who had such knowledge of anatomical or pathological examinations as to be enabled to secure the pelvic organs with one sweep of the knife'.

Dr Frederick Brown, the City Police surgeon who performed the post-mortem examination on Eddowes, was quite definite: 'Anyone carrying out this deed would need a good deal of knowledge as to the position of the organs in the abdominal cavity'.

Brown would not be deflected from his stand by the conflicting opinion of Sequeira and Saunders. Under questioning he continued, 'It would take a great deal of skill and of knowledge as to the position of the kidney to remove it. The kidney could easily be overlooked, for it is covered by a membrane.'

The last comment confirms finally that, whoever was responsible for the Ripper murders, he or they possessed *some* anatomical knowledge, and probably a great deal.

With this fact in mind several theorists have built up their cases around the understandable notion that a surgeon was responsible. Sickert, however, in asserting that Gull was the chief Ripper, went against the mainstream of opinion, for Gull was a physician. On the surface a physician seems far less likely than a surgeon to have been the perpetrator of the Ripper's lethal surgery, and if Sickert had been spinning a yarn he would have been much more likely to have cast a surgeon as the killer.

As always, Sickert's unlikeliest statements prove true when examined in depth.

Colin Wilson points out in *A Casebook of Murder* that the French murderer Eusebius Pieydagnelle did not start murdering until his family insisted he give up being a butcher (to which he had been attracted by his fascination for blood) and become a lawyer; while carving up animals his sadistic craving had been entirely satisfied. This wrecks the theories about berserk surgeons. The blood-lust of a mad surgeon would have been satiated in the course of his everyday work.

In reality a physician is a far more plausible candidate for the Ripper, for he would rarely perform any extensive surgery. Even though the killer had surgical skill, it seems clear, even taking into account the unfavourable conditions in which the mutilations were performed, that he had neither the experience nor the training of a surgeon. The member of society whose surgical ability must always rank second only to that of the surgeon is undeniably the physician.

William Withey Gull was born in the parish of St Leonard, Colchester, on 31st December 1816. His father was John Gull, a humble barge-owner on the river Lea. William was the youngest of eight children, two of whom died in infancy. The family moved to Thorpe-le-Soken in Essex in about 1820. Shortly afterwards William's eldest brother was offered a scholarship to Christ's Hospital, but proud John Gull refused to allow it, declaring that none of his children would ever depend on charity.

John died of cholera in London in 1827. Thereafter William's mother Elizabeth brought up the children to the best of her ability and limited means, teaching the three boys and three girls that 'whatsoever is worth doing, is worth doing well'. Young William was educated at a small village school, but insisted all his life that he had received his real education from his mother, a woman of great intellectual power and keen insight.

One of his favourite quotations in early life was:

> If I was a tailor
> I'd make it my pride
> The best of all tailors to be;
> If I was a tinker
> No tinker beside
> Should mend an old kettle like me.

The children were given a strict Christian upbringing, Mrs Gull observing all the saints' days, wearing black during Lent and feeding the family fish and rice pudding on Fridays.

In 1832 Mrs Gull moved with her family to Thorpe, an estate near to Thorpe-le-Soken owned by the authorities of Guy's Hospital in London. Adjacent to the estate was the parish of Beaumont whose rector, Mr Harrison, was a nephew of Benjamin Harrison, the Treasurer of Guy's. It seems the rector was deeply fond of Mrs Gull, and one of the many affectionate acts in his selfless and gentlemanly wooing was to welcome William to the Rectory every other day for private tuition. During this secure, happy period in his childhood, William developed a fascination for collecting fauna and flora. The influence of Rector Harrison gradually eroded the boy's adolescent desire to go to sea, and instilled in him a firm ambition to become a doctor.

His motto of later years had not yet found expression in words, but its sentiment was already a living part of his character:

> If thou do'st purpose aught within thy
> power
> Be sure thou do it, though it be but
> small.

Once he had made up his mind to enter medicine, nothing could discourage him. For a short time he was an usher at a small country school at Lewes, in Sussex. But in 1837, just before his twenty-first birthday, he finally met Benjamin Harrison and was accepted as a pupil at Guy's Hospital. He was given two rooms at Guy's, was paid £50 a year and given every opportunity to study. Determined to succeed and so display his gratitude to Harrison, he applied himself diligently to his studies, and in his first year won every prize available. He graduated as a B.A. in Medicine at the University of London in 1841, obtaining honours in Physiology and Comparative Anatomy, in Surgery and in Medicine.

The following year Gull was appointed to teach Materia Medica at Guy's and was given a small house in King Street, E.C., and a salary of £100 a year. His zeal for medicine brought rapid promotion, as did his decision at this time to become a Freemason. In 1843 he was appointed Lecturer on Natural Philosophy at Guy's. The same year he became Resident Superintendent of a small asylum for twenty insane women, which formed part of the hospital.

Three years later he gained a gold medal in his M.D. degree at the University of London, the highest honour in medicine the University could bestow. For the next ten years at Guy's he was Lecturer on Physiology and Comparative Anatomy. Meanwhile he was elected Fullerian Professor of Physiology at the Royal Institution of Great Britain, he became a Fellow of the Royal College of Physicians and Resident Physician of Guy's Hospital.

In 1848 Gull married Susan Ann, daughter of Colonel Lacy of Carlisle, and they had a son, Cameron, and a daughter, Caroline.

Gull's name became a household word after 1871, when the Prince of Wales contracted typhoid while staying at Sandringham. Queen Victoria was adamant that her favourite man of medicine, Sir William Jenner, the Royal Physician, should treat her son, but in the event the unknown Gull was introduced to Princess Alexandra—and Jenner stood by merely as second opinion. The prince recovered under Gull's ministrations, and in 1872 he was created a baronet and appointed the Prince of Wales's regular physician. He later became Physician Extraordinary, then subsequently Physician in Ordinary, to Queen Victoria.

It was said of Gull that 'few men have practised a lucrative profession with less eagerness to grasp at its pecuniary rewards'. That may or may not be true, but Gull left behind him

£344 000 plus lands, an estate unprecedented in the history of medicine and a material achievement than can rarely have been equalled by any doctor since. Sir Edward Muir, Serjeant Surgeon to the Queen and President of the Royal College of Surgeons, who died in October 1973, left only £87 000—which is a minute fraction of Gull's fortune, considering the way inflation has eaten away the value of the pound since 1890. The Marquess of Salisbury, a more eminent man than Gull, who was not only Tory Prime Minister but also the latest in the long line of wealthy Cecils who as senior Ministers had played an important part in ruling England since the days of Elizabeth I, left only £300 100 when he died in 1903. By today's standards Gull the barge-owner's son would have been a multi-millionaire.

Gull had definite contact with leading Conservative politicians, being a friend of Disraeli and the most important doctor in England by the time Salisbury was Prime Minister. It is certain he knew Salisbury. Gull's son-in-law, Theodore Dyke Acland, was an intimate friend of the Cecil family and attended both Gull and Salisbury, signing both their death certificates. In his role as Royal Physician, Gull is quite likely to have known of Prince Eddy's illegitimate child.

Surprisingly, there are more people than Sickert who point an accusing finger at Gull when it comes to the East End murders. For instance, in the Chicago *Sunday Times-Herald* of 28th April 1895 there appeared a story under the heading *Capture of Jack the Ripper*. It recounted a story told by a well-known London physician, Dr Howard. Howard, his tongue loosened by drink, claimed he was one of twelve London physicians who had sat as a court of medical inquiry and as a commission in lunacy upon a brother physician, who had been responsible for the Jack the Ripper murders. It said:

> Jack the Ripper was no less a person than a physician in high standing and in fact was a man enjoying the patronage of the best society in the West End of London.
>
> When it was absolutely proved beyond peradventure that the physician in question was the murderer, and his insanity fully established by a commission *de lunatico inquirendo*, all parties were sworn to secrecy. Up to the time of Dr Howard's disclosure this oath has been rigidly adhered to.
>
> He was a physician in good standing, with an extensive

> practice. He had been ever since he was a student at Guy's Hospital, an ardent and enthusiastic vivisectionalist.

The report goes on to say that after the inquiry, the unnamed physician was at once removed to a private asylum at Islington,

> and he is now the most intractable and dangerous madman confined in that establishment. In order to account for the disappearance of the doctor from society a sham death and burial were gone through.

In true American journalese, the report finishes with:

> None of the keepers know that the desperate maniac, who flings himself from side to side in his padded cell and makes the long watches of the night hideous with his piercing cries is the famous Jack the Ripper. To them, and to the visiting inspectors he is simply known as Thomas Mason, alias number 124.

Allowing for the sensational treatment which any such story was bound to have received in America at that time, there is still a hard core of provable fact. There was, for instance, an asylum at Islington—called St Mary's—but its records have been destroyed.

It is important to note that Walter Sickert never mentioned this newspaper report. He is unlikely even to have known about it. Therefore, *if* it was referring to Gull, it is completely independent corroboration of his story.

The Dr Howard quoted in the report can only be Dr Benjamin Howard who was listed in the *Medical Register* in the eighties and nineties. Howard was an eminent American physician residing in London. He qualified as a doctor in New York in 1858, and the *Medical Directory* shows he often travelled abroad—to Paris, Vienna and Berlin, and especially to the United States, which is consistent with the report that he was in America in 1895. Investigating Howard's background produced a single gleaming fact in the murk of the Ripper case, a fact which yet again stretches the imagination too far to allow it to be dismissed as coincidence. And if it is not coincidence it means Walter Sickert must have spoken the truth. For Dr Howard's London address was the St George's Club in Hanover Square—and the St George's Club ran a hospital at 367 Fulham Road, where Annie Elizabeth Crook died. This new evidence indicates how the Freemasons in charge of the cover-up could have handled the incarceration of Annie Elizabeth. If the physician Howard denounced as the Ripper was indeed Gull, Howard becomes a direct link between Gull and Annie Elizabeth. Howard, almost certainly a Freemason like so many of his fellow doctors, could well have been one of several Masonic members of the St George's Club who connived in Annie Elizabeth's elimination after she and Prince Eddy were parted. As such, Howard would have been an ideal choice to serve as one of the twelve doctors needed to conduct the secret lunacy hearing on Gull—*if* Gull was the physician he was talking about, and so far it is not established that he was.

As Howard did not name the man he claimed was the Ripper, it is necessary to identify the suspect by taking his statement point by point:

> He was no less a person than a physician in high standing and in fact enjoying the patronage of the best society in the West End of London.

No statement could be more true of Gull. He was Physician in Ordinary to the Queen, and his patients were drawn from the Royal Family and the nobility. Gull himself used to boast that his practice, at 74 Brook Street, Mayfair (the heart of the West End), was probably larger than that of any other physician at any period.

> Ever since he was a student at Guy's Hospital . . .

As has been shown, Gull entered Guy's as a student in 1837. This clue narrows the field enormously, for only a limited number of West End physicians of high standing had studied at Guy's.

> . . . he had been an ardent and enthusiastic vivisectionalist.

Gull was exceptionally outspoken in his defence of vivisection, as his evidence before the Royal Commission on Vivisection in 1875 showed. He was the best-known supporter of the cause in this country, and in 1882 wrote a sixteen-page article in *The Nineteenth Century* expressing his ardent support of the practice of experimenting on animals. Arguing that 'the good we may obtain to ourselves by physiological experiment should outweigh the immorality of the process', and that 'our moral susceptibilities ought to be bribed and silenced by our selfish gains', he energetically defended the infliction of pain on animals if it resulted in advances in medicine. In answer to a charge that vivisectionist Claude Bernard had invented a stove to enable him to watch the process of 'baking dogs alive', Gull wrote:

> "Baking dogs alive! How horrible and disgusting!" would be a natural exclamation. What purpose could there be in anything so cruel? This we shall see directly.

And he proceeded to justify in the strongest possible terms this and other experiments in the cause of 'human life and the relief of human misery'.

Dr Howard's story mentions that the physician who was Jack the Ripper had a wife who survived him, and there is reference to their one son. Both these facts are true of Gull, who also had a daughter.

Another important point is that the Ripper was described by Howard as a West End physician. Of course, in 1888 there were many West End physicians. But of them all, only one disappeared—ostensibly through his death—shortly after the year of the Ripper. This was Sir William Gull. This fact comes to light in the writing of a man who was, ironically, trying to prove a diametrically opposite viewpoint. William Stewart, in his book *Jack the Ripper: A New Theory*, wanted to establish that the murderer could not have been a West End doctor. He wrote:

> I have made a complete list from the *Medical Register* of the practitioners residing in the West End prior to August, 1888, and defined the West End by a square.
>
> At the top left-hand corner of this square I placed Harlesden, at the top right-hand corner Camden Town, at the bottom right-hand corner Charing Cross, at the bottom left-hand corner Hammersmith. In the list of practitioners in this area I included all those who were employed in hospitals. By comparing this list with the obituary of practitioners for the year subsequent to November, 1888, I discovered that no West End doctor's name was missing. In other words *all* the medical men in the West End who were practising before the murders were alive and practising for at least a year or two afterwards.

Stewart's last statement is wrong, however. As has been explained, Sir William Gull is supposed to have died in January 1890, only fourteen months after the last murder, so he was not alive and practising for a year or two after the murders. There are two possible reasons for Stewart's mistake. The first is that he was careless, the second that for a specific reason he did not include Gull on his first list. The second alternative is more likely, because a repetition of Stewart's exhaustive survey shows that except for the error over Gull, he was entirely correct in his statement. No other eminent West End doctor did die in the two years following the Whitechapel Murders. So Stewart builds up the evidence against Gull even more strongly.

He excluded Gull from his original list because, though he was seeking to prove that no West End *doctor* was Jack the Ripper, he did not in fact check every doctor, merely every *practitioner*. As Gull had retired in 1887 he could not be described as a practitioner, and for this reason Stewart did not include him on his first list. Consequently, when he came across Gull's obituary notice he would not have considered it relevant. But even though Gull had retired, he remained a resident of Brook Street, and could still be accurately described as a West End doctor, the description used by Howard.

Thus Stewart carefully exonerated all West End practitioners by his patient research, leaving as suspects a mere handful of retired doctors, including Gull. A more thorough check of obituaries than Stewart undertook, and also a full check of entries in the *Medical Register* and *Medical Directory*, shows that of this handful of suspects, only Gull died in the period immediately after the murders. These findings show two things. Combined with the fact that all the details of Howard's story fit him, they show that Gull was certainly the doctor described in the Chicago article as Jack the Ripper. Perhaps more importantly, they show that if the Ripper was a doctor Gull is the only possibility.

Others have accused Gull of being the Ripper. He is the doctor referred to in another accusation—the now famous story of the spiritualist medium Robert James Lees who is supposed to have identified the Ripper by his clairvoyant powers and, after the murder of Kelly, led the police to the home of a West End physician, who was later secretly removed to an asylum.

There are two main objections to this story. The first is that clairvoyance can be of no use in the detection of crime—a view that would be contradicted by the police in Belgium. In the last forty years Belgian medium Gérard Croiset has successfully applied his astonishing powers to many criminal cases. His name became well known in England in 1969 when he was called in by the family of kidnap victim Mrs Muriel McKay. At a time when no one but Mrs McKay's murderers knew her whereabouts, Croiset provided a detailed description of the farm where it was later found she had been held.

The second reason the Lees story has been dismissed is that several commentators have claimed it did not appear in print until 1931. If it had had any foundation in truth, the argument runs, some reference to it would have come to light before then. This objection wilts under the statement that the Lees story first appeared in print thirty-six years earlier than 'Ripperologists' have until now believed. It appeared in the final section of the article in the Chicago *Sunday Times-Herald* in April 1895. Before Ian Sharp discovered it for the BBC, this article had never been quoted. It does not even appear in the Association of Assistant Librarians' comprehensive catalogue of Ripper literature, *Jack the Ripper or The Mysteries of the East End.* The Chicago article was omitted from this admirable bibliography only because until 1973 it had lain forgotten since the year it appeared.

Even 1895, seven years after the murders, was not the beginning of the Lees story; it was merely the first time it had been committed to print. The story had wide circulation, in London at least, as early as July 1889—only nine months after the murders. This is confirmed by a note in the *Letters* file at Scotland Yard. Admittedly this is from a crank who signed himself 'Jack the Ripper', but the writer's state of mind is immaterial. Only his knowledge counts. The contents of the letter show that the story of Lees having helped the police run Jack the Ripper to earth was known forty-three years earlier than critics of the story have stated. The letter, received at the Yard on 25th July 1889, says:

> Dear Boss
>
> You have not caught me yet you see, with all your cunning, with all your "Lees" with all your blue bottles.
>
> Jack the Ripper

For the story to have gained this sort of acceptance as early as

July 1889 means it must initially have been told (or leaked out) a few weeks after the murder of Kelly, which fits in with Lees taking part in the hunt for the Ripper in November 1888, as the story claims.

Despite the fact that the story has since been grossly exaggerated, to the extent that some apocryphal versions refer to more than twenty murders, it is possible to get back to the bare bones. I have studied every available version of the story, removed the inconsistencies and inventions of later writers, and retained only those points which are common throughout. I then compared what was left with the original story told by Lees himself, a very different tale from the one which has come down to us via sensational reporters. The original story comes from Lees's great-niece, Mrs Emily Porter of Wembley, who knew 'Uncle James' extremely well until she was about twenty, when he died. The story he told her tallied almost exacty with the story which remained after the embellishments of sensational writers had been trimmed away.

Lees was a highly respected medium whose clairvoyant powers were so highly developed that at the age of nineteen, it was said, he was called before Queen Victoria to make contact with the dead Prince Albert. Lees later became the leader of the Christian Spiritualists in England. He was a close friend of Disraeli, and accompanied him on his last walk before his death. He ran a spiritualist centre at Peckham, was a leading socialist, and a friend of Keir Hardie, later a leader of the Labour Party.

The original and unembellished story told by Lees was that at the time of the Ripper murders he was at the height of his powers. One day he was writing in his study when he became convinced that the Ripper was about to commit another murder. He went to Scotland Yard but was given little attention because there had been a spate of cranks and theorists assailing the police each day (see Chapter 14). But that night there was indeed a Ripper murder. Lees was so shocked by the accuracy of his vision that on the advice of his doctor he took a holiday abroad. One day, on his return, he was riding with his wife in a London omnibus. Suddenly he began to experience a renewal of the strange sensations which had preceded his former clairvoyant condition. The omnibus ascended Notting Hill. When it stopped at the top a man got on.

Leaning over to his wife Lees remarked earnestly, 'That is Jack the Ripper'.

His wife laughed at this and told him not to be foolish.

'I am not mistaken', he replied, 'I feel it.'

The omnibus travelled the entire length of Edgware Road, turning into Oxford Street at Marble Arch. At this point the man got out, and Lees determined to follow him. About half way down Oxford Street, Lees told a constable of his supernatural knowledge, but again he was met with derision. The policeman even threatened laughingly to 'run him in'. On reaching Apsley House the Ripper, in a nervous state, jumped into a cab and was driven rapidly down Piccadilly. Eventually Lees found a police inspector willing to take him seriously. After the final murder on 9th November Lees concentrated his powers on the vision of the man he had seen. He led the inspector to a West End mansion, the home of one of the most celebrated physicians in London. Once inside, the inspector spoke to the physician's wife. In the course of a searching interrogation she confessed that she did not believe her husband was of sound mind. She had been horrified to note that whenever a Whitechapel Murder occurred he was absent from home. When accused, the doctor admitted that his mind had been unbalanced for some years, and that of late there had been intervals of time during which he had no recollection of what he had been doing. The physician could sometimes be calculatingly cruel, at other times extremely kind. He said that he had on one or two occasions found himself sitting in his rooms as if suddenly aroused from a long stupor, and in one instance he had found blood on his shirt-front, which he had attributed to nosebleed. On another occasion his face had been badly scratched.

Here the Lees story dovetails with the testimony of Dr Howard, for according to Lees the physician was committed under a false name by twelve doctors to a private asylum. To conceal the truth it was announced that the doctor had died. A coffin was filled with stones, and his funeral caused a great stir.

Though Lees did not name the doctor to whom he claimed to have led the police, there are clues in the story that again point directly to Gull. These clues, combined with the fact that Lees was plainly describing the same physician as Howard, who *was* accusing Gull, make it certain that he too was saying, 'Sir William Gull was Jack the Ripper'.

The clues in Lees's story that point to Gull are:

(1) The route taken by the Ripper in avoiding Lees—

beginning at Marble Arch, going half-way along Oxford Street and back down Piccadilly—traces a wide U-turn with Gull's house at 74 Brook Street almost at its centre. Few doctors who were among 'the most celebrated physicians in London' lived in that relatively small area, which excludes Harley Street.

(2) Another clue is to be found in the timing of the doctor's discovery by Lees. It was shortly after the last murder on 9th November 1888. It is a curious fact that Sir William Gull wrote his will only eighteen days after this date, on 27th November 1888. What prompted Gull to prepare his will at this time is not known. It was more than a year since his stroke in October 1887, and he had suffered no attacks since. In fact, according to his death certificate, he had only two attacks all told, the second proving fatal. Shortly after his recovery from the first seizure would have been an understandable time for his thoughts to turn in the direction of his will, but they did not. Throughout the rest of 1887 and the whole of 1888 he was a perfectly fit man —yet only a few days after the time Lees claimed he had led the police to the Ripper, Gull unaccountably chose to make arrangements for the division of his estate after his death.

(3) A third clue concerns the sham death and burial of the physician in Lees's and Howard's stories. This bogus funeral is supposed to have caused 'a great stir'. Gull's funeral caused so much of a stir that a special train had to be laid on, and mourners included some of the most influential men in London —Lord Justice Lindley, Sir Joseph Lister, Sir Henry Acland and Gull's best friend in later life, Sir James Paget, Serjeant Surgeon to Queen Victoria. Gull was interred near his father and mother at the village churchyard at Thorpe-le-Soken. Country folk from villages as far as twenty miles away tramped to the graveyard on the day of the funeral and lined the route of the coffin from the railway station to the church.

(4) The physician run to ground by Lees was described by him as being sometimes a surprisingly kind man, at other times cold and calculatingly cruel. This sums up Gull's character perfectly. He would alternate between moods of warmth and benevolence in which no kindness was too much, and temperamental sloughs during which he appeared about as human as a pillar of stone. In her book *How Charles Bravo Died*, Yseult Bridges showed just how callous Gull could be:

> Dr Johnson, a man of middle age who had attained some eminence in his profession, was strictly orthodox in his out-

> look and methods, and therefore the antithesis of Sir William Gull. The former, for instance, had refrained from telling his patient, "You are poisoned", because he lacked actual proof of it; or, "You are dying", because that was contrary to the ethics of his profession.
>
> But the latter had no hesitation in telling him bluntly both these truths. "On my own responsibility and without previous consultation," he informed the court [Bravo's inquest] "I told Mr Bravo he was a dying man."
>
> Charles . . . was struggling to sit up. "Am I dying?" he asked Sir William desperately.
>
> "You are very ill and in all probability you have not very many hours to live, but of course as long as there is life there is hope."
>
> "Is there really no hope for me?" he asked again, as though unable to accept his fate. Sir William felt his pulse and heart. "There is very little life left in you. In fact you are heart-dead[1] now."

Yet Gull was praised for his kindness to patients and on 31st January 1890 a letter signed 'R.A.' appeared in *The Times* and described how Sir William had treated a gentleman 'with failing health and fortune'. Gull administered first medicine, which failed to work, and then the sum of thirty guineas. He was renowned for this sort of kindness, but he was widely criticized, too, for the other side of his nature. On one occasion he displayed his inhuman streak in a manner even more overt than that in the Bravo episode. Ironically, the story is recounted in one of the affectionate memoirs of Gull which appeared after his death—*In Memoriam, Sir William Gull*. He had been attending a poor patient with heart disease and after the man's death he was extremely anxious to perform a post-mortem examination. Permission was granted with great difficulty, but with the proviso that nothing was to be 'taken away'. A devoted sister of the dead man was present during the examination to ensure fair play. Rather than deal with an intensely delicate situation with as much sensitivity as possible, Gull deliberately cut out the dead man's heart before her eyes, put it in his pocket and said, 'I trust to your honour not to betray me'.

So saying, he left with the heart of the speechless woman's brother still reposing in his pocket, and the mutilated corpse lying before her on the dissecting table.

---

[1] This has often been reported as the even more callous: 'In fact you are half dead now'.

Without becoming unduly influenced by Robert Louis Stevenson's *Dr Jekyll and Mr Hyde*, published two years before the murders, it is true to say that the 'split personality' has been recognized by psychiatrists as the not uncommon state now defined as schizophrenia. The malady is prevalent among those who suffer great mental and emotional pressure, though it rarely reaches the proportions described in grim detail by Stevenson. Once in a while, however, such a case does arise, illustrating the fact that the character of the doctor described by Lees is not so unbelievable as many may think. In October 1974 a young husband was jailed by an Old Bailey judge for raping a nurse. The court heard that the defendant was twenty-four, outwardly a normal, happily married man, but that he could 'turn into' a brutal sex attacker. His defence counsel told the court that apart from the indecent assaults he had committed on five women, he was in no way vicious or unpleasant. 'Except when his trouble is upon him, he is a perfectly normal young man. These things are almost outside his control'. Other Jekyll and Hyde cases worth studying are that of Edward Paisnel, the notorious 'Beast of Jersey' and, more recently, that of Peter Cook, the Cambridge Rapist. Paisnel was sentenced to thirty years' imprisonment in 1971 for thirteen sex offences against young children: wearing a grotesque mask and spiked suit he had terrorized the island for eleven years and been obsessed with witchcraft and the atrocities of Gilles de Rais, the original Bluebeard. Despite the evil side of his nature, Paisnel was nevertheless a kind and generous man who loved small children.

As his conduct in the post mortem episode and the Bravo case suggest, Gull was not a conventional man. He regarded himself as a law unto himself. He frequently showed he had little thought for the feelings of others, and did not hesitate to hurt freely. He suited his word to his actions, for one of his sayings was: 'Morals and religion have no true and firm basis'.

It was written of him: 'Of all evils, he looked upon ignorance as the worst'.

This gives some idea how he might have regarded an ignorant servant, Marie Kelly, who dared put his Masonic colleagues and himself in danger with her loose tongue. An arrogant man, he bowed to no higher authority once he had made up his mind. Therefore, once set on disposing of Kelly in whatever way he thought appropriate, he would have let nothing stand in his way. Many thought his strong physical resemblance to Napoleon went beyond outward appearance. It was said of him:

> Having once formed an opinion and determined upon a line of action, he carried it out unhesitatingly, uninfluenced by any thought of consequences. He was unswerving in his ideas of right and wrong, uninfluenced by other people's views and opinions. His insight into truths which lesser minds were blind to see and powerless to grasp, and a life-long experience that his vast capacities generally placed him in the truest relation to things, developed in him an absolute confidence in the infallibility of his own judgement in certain points.

Gull's three 'epileptiform attacks', mentioned by Wilks and Bettany, are significant here. These had nothing to do with strokes. Epileptiform attacks are caused by mental disorder and are characterized by fits, during which the sufferer falls down unconscious and rigid and the jaw is clenched. Following the attack there may be quite a long period of confusion in which the sufferer may wander away and occasionally may be violent, a state that exactly sums up the symptoms experienced by the doctor in Lees's story.

Yet the argument may still be raised that if Lees had really led the police to Sir William Gull's house there would be a record of the events in the secret files. It has already been shown, however, that a cover-up has taken place. Any papers relating to Lees and Gull would therefore have been a vital part of the evidence to be suppressed. This is precisely what seems to have happened. Of all the papers contained in the secret files of the Home Office and Scotland Yard, only one file is incomplete. This is Home Office File A49301, in which it is noted that thirty-three out of fifty-one items were destroyed or missing when the file was put together in 1893. Can it be coincidence that this is the file containing accusations against *doctors* and policemen?

Two points make the circumstances surrounding Gull's death suspect, points which become understandable when applied to a man who was secretly committed to an asylum when the world believed he was dead. They go beyond showing that the doctor in the Lees and Howard stories was Gull and confirm that everything described in those stories actually happened.

(1) In his last years Gull was attended by three doctors—Dr Hermann Weber, Dr Charles Hood and Gull's son-in-law

Theodore Dyke Acland. While there is no specific law forbidding a doctor from certifying the death of a relative, it is generally considered preferable he should not do so. This is especially true where a patient is being treated by several doctors, only one of whom is related to him, as was the case with Gull. Proper practice dictates that the death certificate shall be signed by a doctor not related to the deceased. This is because it could subsequently be suggested that the patient did not die from the cause stated by the doctor. Relatives are considered more likely to have a motive for falsifying a death certificate than non-relatives. In the case of Sir William Gull, his death-certificate was signed, contrary to good practice, by his son-in-law. The allegations that Gull did not die in 1890 but was placed in an asylum would explain this odd departure from convention.

(2) It was not until late 1888—shortly after the final Ripper murder—that Gull really dropped out of the public eye. This contradicts the myth that he was too ill to take part in public life from October 1887 onward, and places his retirement from society remarkably close to the date Lees led the police to the Ripper. The reason given for his disappearance from society generally during 1889 was that he suffered further strokes that year. This was a lie. His death certificate proves conclusively that he suffered no apoplectic attacks of any kind between the first in 1887 and the second two days before his death. The certificate states under cause of death:

> Cerebral
> Haemorrhage
> Hemiplegia
> 1st attack Oct 10 1887
> 2nd do Jan 27 1890
> Certified by
> Theodore Dyke Acland
> M.D.

The known facts do not fit in with Gull being a broken man after 1887. For more than a year after this he was active. Then for no apparent reason (certainly not a physical illness) he did drop out of society, and his death was announced in January 1890. But the facts *are* consistent with his being under restraint after the last Whitechapel Murder. It would obviously have been too dangerous for Gull's death to have been announced immediately after the end of the murders. The coincidence would have been blatant, and would have been spotted, for instance, by Stewart. A reasonable time lapse had to be allowed lest suspicion fall upon Gull and then, naturally, upon his Masonic colleagues. But his sudden withdrawal from society after Kelly's murder had to be explained. It was consequently announced that he had suffered further strokes, a statement which his death certificate shows beyond doubt was a complete fabrication.

The name under which the physician in Howard's story was certified—Thomas *Mason*—brings to mind the Freemasonic tradition that in certain circumstances a Mason will die by his own greatest achievement. Gull, said Sickert, was in his element removing the troublesome by certifying them insane. Now there is completely independent evidence that this was the ultimate fate of Gull himself. What more appropriate name for a certified Freemason than Mason, a pun horribly consistent with the humour described in the Masonic *Protocols* as so essential?

Slowly the evidence builds up. The physician Howard described was undoubtedly Gull. From clues contained in Lees's story it can be seen that the doctor he spoke of was also Gull. That both men independently described different but overlapping episodes in the same drama strengthens this argument. The fact that both stories fit in perfectly with established facts and with Sickert's narrative—again quite separate from the others—and that the details of Gull's last days reported in the past do *not* fit in with established facts, such as those on his death certificate, adds enormous weight to the case against him.

To secure a conviction in a British court the prosecution must prove its case beyond all reasonable doubt. The densely crowded dock in the trial of Jack the Ripper, however, more realistically requires proof beyond a shadow of doubt. In the case against Sir William Gull we can finally get close to that long-awaited certainty. There is quite independent proof that Lees's story implicating Gull was perfectly true.

This is contained in the writings of an eminent surgeon and Ripper expert, Dr Thomas Stowell, CBE, MD, FRCS, etc. Stowell said he had been told a story by Gull's own daughter, Caroline:

> She was the wife of Theodore Dyke Acland, M.D., F.R.C.P., one time my beloved Chief. I knew them both

> intimately and often enjoyed the hospitality of their home in Bryanston Square over many years.

That Stowell was telling the truth in this is borne out by the fact that in his will Dyke Acland directed that Stowell be appointed one of his trustees and executors, and he left him a valuable Pre-Raphaelite painting. Plainly, Stowell was indeed a dear friend of Gull's daughter and her husband. He continued:

> Mrs Acland's story was that at the time of the Ripper murders, her mother, Lady Gull, was greatly annoyed one night by an unappointed visit from a police officer, accompanied by a man who called himself a medium and she was irritated by their impudence in asking her a number of questions which seemed to her impertinent. She answered their questions with non-committal replies such as 'I do not know,' 'I cannot tell you that,' 'I am afraid I cannot answer that question.'
>
> Later Sir William himself came down and in answer to the questions said he occasionally suffered from 'lapses of memory since he had a slight stroke in 1887'; he said that he once had discovered blood on his shirt.

The resemblance between this story and that told by Lees is uncanny. There can be no doubt that they describe the same incident. Admittedly there *appears* to be a discrepancy in the fact that Lady Gull reacted with non-committal replies and the physician's wife in Lees's story confessed she did not think her husband was of sound mind. But the initial reaction of the wife in the Lees account must have been exactly the same as that of Lady Gull in Caroline Acland's story; Lees described the 'searching interrogation' of the physician's wife, but no interrogation would have been necessary had she been willing to answer questions about her husband. It is also clear that Caroline Acland's account does not tell the whole story. Why did Lady Gull give *non-committal* replies? If the questions of the medium and the inspector had been so impertinent she would surely have simply thrown them out. If Lady Gull was being non-committal it means she did not wish to commit herself either way about her husband's alleged involvement in the murders. If he had been innocent, the last thing she would have been is non-committal.

Plainly, Caroline Acland knew no more than she told Stowell. She was unaware that her story was any more than an interesting tale about two foolish visitors received by her parents at the time of the Jack the Ripper murders. She loved her father deeply, and even named her son Theodore William Gull Acland, so the last thing she would have wished is to have suggested Gull was the Ripper.

The astonishing aspect of Stowell's article is that he was apparently trying to prove the Ripper was Eddy, Duke of Clarence. He quoted the Caroline Acland story in support of his theory that Gull came by the blood on his shirt by medically examining Eddy after one of the murders. Stowell studied the Ripper case for many years before publishing his findings in *The Criminologist* in 1970. Though he never named his suspect, except by the letter 'S', it is generally accepted that he wanted readers to think he was accusing the Prince without actually saying so. Interviewed on television, he remained adamant in his refusal to state positively that his suspect was Eddy. Why? Having scattered a plethora of clues pointing in Eddy's direction, there would have been no reason to refuse committing himself—unless in reality he did not suspect Eddy at all. Even more intriguing was the fact that on 9th November 1970, the 82nd anniversary of the murder of Marie Kelly, a letter from Stowell appeared in *The Times* in which he denied he had said or even thought Eddy to have been the Ripper. Writing this curious, unexplained letter must almost have been Stowell's last act, for in *The Times* of the following day a brief report announced the death *on November 9th* of Dr Thomas Stowell. According to his son, Dr Thomas Eldon Stowell, all the papers and notes the old man had built up during a lifetime of studying the Whitechapel Murders were destroyed unread as soon as he had died.

Old Stowell's final emphatic statement that he had not even *thought* Eddy was the Ripper takes on a new significance when considered in the light of another passage in his article, 'It was said that on more than one occasion Sir William Gull was seen in the neighbourhood of Whitechapel on the night of a murder'. This points the finger directly at Gull, yet Stowell camouflages it with the feeble suggestion that 'It would not surprise me to know that he was there for the purpose of certifying the murderer to be insane'. (!)

In the same article he revealed that rumours had been current at the time of the murders which said positively Gull was the Ripper. Read carefully, Stowell's whole article is clearly intended to create the *impression* that Eddy was his suspect. But the only evidence he produced pointed the finger at Gull!

Because old Stowell's papers were so unaccountably destroyed, we have no idea where he discovered the evidence which incriminates Sir William Gull. It is implausible to suggest that Stowell invented the evidence, because if he were romancing he would have been far more likely to invent evidence to support his case against 'S'.

There seems to be only one clue as to why Stowell behaved so oddly after discovering evidence against Gull. This is to be found in his will:

> I bequeath my Grand Lodge Masonic clothing to Cheselden Craft Lodge . . . my Grand Chapter Clothing and P.Z. jewel to Cheselden Chapter . . . and the remainder of my Masonic jewels and books to Cornubia Lodge No. 450.

P.Z. means Stowell was a Past Zerubbabel, the principal Freemason among a group of initiates who have all passed the Royal Arch. The important function of a Past Zerubbabel is to perform the final rite in the ceremony of closing a Royal Arch Chapter. The words Stowell would have chanted in so doing might well be applied to his act of trying to conceal the truth about Gull's complicity in the Whitechapel Murders:

> Companions, nothing now remains but, according to ancient custom, to lock up our secrets in a safe repository, uniting in the act of Fidelity, Fidelity, Fidelity, Fidelity.

What more safe repository was there for the Masonic secret Stowell had uncovered about Gull than to lock it up in a veiled accusation of Prince Eddy?

Exactly what motivated Stowell in writing his article it is now difficult to say. Though he appeared to want everyone to believe Eddy was the killer, it seems from the contents of his article and his feeble excuse for Gull's presence in Whitechapel that he could in reality have intended *Gull* to be implicated, without having the responsibility of pointing the finger himself. In his peculiar, unfathomable way Stowell planted other clues incriminating Gull. The earliest clue suggested Gull did not die when he is supposed to have done, which again supports the three independent claims that Gull was the doctor sent to an asylum under a false name. Stowell told Colin Wilson that he had found in Gull's private papers the information that 'S' had not died of pneumonia as he is reported to have done in 1892, but that he had died of syphilis. This would be truly remarkable, because Gull is supposed to have died two years earlier in 1890, in which case he could have known little about how 'S' died. Was this strange claim by Stowell yet another cryptic accusation of Gull, explaining in his own peculiar way that '*Sir William Gull did not die in 1890*'?

A deeper study of Stowell's strange behaviour opens up yet another possibility. His article could have been designed, not to *conceal* Gull's guilt, but to *proclaim* it in such a way that he could not be held responsible by his Masonic elders.

In an interview after the publication of his article Stowell explained that he would not name his suspect because he had no wish to embarrass the family of the suspect, to whom he owed so much. Stowell had no known contact with the Royal Family and certainly *owed* them nothing. But he owed the family of Sir William Gull, in the shape of Caroline Acland and her husband, a great deal. Another point which supports the idea he was pointing a camouflaged finger at Gull is the following statement in his article:

> To support this fantasy [that the murderer was a medical man] it was not unnatural for the rumour mongers to pick on a most illustrious member of my profession of the time—perhaps of all time—Sir William Gull, Bt., M.D., F.R.C.P., F.R.S.

Harrison reacted to this enigmatic statement thus:

> On the contrary, one would have thought that to pick on one of the most illustrious medical men of his day would have been the most unnatural thing in the world.

This assessment is accurate, but it does not go far enough. An exhaustive study of the Ripper case reveals no such rumours as those alluded to by Stowell. Until August 1973, three years after Stowell's article, Gull had not been denounced as the Ripper in public. Only Sickert has done so since. What then did Stowell mean? Having seen the avalanche of discussion and speculation on the Ripper since 1970 it is now difficult to recreate the frame of mind of readers when Stowell published his dissertation accusing 'S'. In November 1970 no mention had ever been made of Prince Eddy or Gull in connection with the Ripper murders. Few ordinary people had heard of either of them. Stowell then made the statement, which is quite untrue, that 'it was not unnatural for the rumour mongers to pick on . . . Sir William Gull'.

The inescapable conclusion is that Stowell, in making a deliberately inaccurate statement about a man who had never been publicly mentioned in connection with the Ripper, was in fact accusing that man. The denunciation of Gull was veiled in Stowell's apparent preoccupation with Eddy only to confuse Stowell's Masonic elders. But anyone with a comprehensive knowledge of the Ripper case would have known instantly that he was accusing Sir William Gull.

A summary of the evidence so far shows Sir William Gull was a Freemason of influence; that he suffered from mental attacks in which he would have behaved strangely and even violently; that many lies have been woven around his death to make it appear natural; that he himself was a weird, unpredictable man; that he was seen in Whitechapel on the nights of the murders; and that by his own admission he had woken up in his rooms to find blood upon himself.

He was indicated as being Jack the Ripper by Walter Sickert, Dr Benjamin Howard, William Stewart, Robert James Lees, Dr Thomas Stowell and even his own daughter Caroline.

Sir William Gull had a personal connection with the whores of the East End. The *Dictionary of National Biography* makes the passing comment in the entry on Gull that 'He was a close friend of James Hinton'. That innocuous statement hides facts which are crucial when considered in the light of Sickert's indictment of Gull as the whore-ripping East End killer. Gull was more than a close friend of Hinton. Until Hinton's death in 1875 they were lifelong best friends. They were so intimate that in 1878 it was Gull who was chosen to write the introduction to Hinton's biography and collected letters. In this introduction he said 'It is now near twenty years ago that our acquaintance began. Sympathies in common on the nearest subjects of human interest brought us much together'.

It is interesting that Gull chose as his best friend and most intimate confidant a man who was obsessed, and that James Hinton's strange obsession was *the prostitutes of Whitechapel.* This developed during the year 1839 to 1840 when he worked as a cashier in a wholesale woollen draper's in the heart of

Whitechapel. This experience, wrote his biographer Ellice Hopkins, 'came crashing down on his young heart with a most cruel force, and the degradation of women possessed him with divine despair'. All his life, wrote Hopkins, Hinton was 'divinely mad' about the prostitutes.

In 1855 he was a constant companion of Gull, and every morning they took their English constitutional together, 'wending their way, deep in discussion, through the comparatively deserted London streets'. At this time Gull was assistant physician at Guy's Hospital, which is just across London Bridge on the south side of the Thames and within easy walking distance of the East End. Is it conceivable that Hinton, with his all-consuming obsession about Whitechapel and its degraded inhabitants, did not take Gull there many times during those morning walks, to share with his friend those 'nearest subjects of human interest'? He would have taken Gull into the very alleys where the prostitutes slunk drunkenly through the shadows—the very alleys where Jack the Ripper was to destroy those same pathetic women in 1888. For some years before moving to Brook Street, Gull had a practice at 8 Finsbury Square, right on the borders of central London and the East End. He knew the stalking ground of the Ripper intimately, and in all probability he had been given a personal and exceedingly passionate grounding in the lives and characters of the whores of Whitechapel.

How deeply Gull was affected by Hinton's obsession it is impossible to say. Though his motive for becoming Jack the Ripper was Masonic, perhaps there was also in his unbalanced mind an element of what was described in *The Times* as 'an earnest religionist with a delusion that he has a mission from above to extirpate vice by assassination'.

We shall never know.

In March 1974 I visited Gull's grave in the churchyard at Thorpe-le-Soken, Essex, a grave which he is supposed to share with his wife. By coincidence his headstone bears the same text as the wall of the Working Lads' Institute at Whitechapel where the first two Ripper inquests were held: 'What doth the Lord require of thee, but to do justly, and to love mercy, and to walk humbly with thy God?' It was Gull's favourite biblical text. I was shown the grave by an affable verger, a sixty-six-year-old pillar of the Church called Mr Downes. His father before him had been verger there too, and he recalled his father telling him that as a small boy he had walked twenty miles from their home at Clacton with a throng of mourning villagers to be at Gull's funeral.

Downes's comments as we gazed at the grave brought to mind the story of Dr Howard, which said the eminent physician who was Jack the Ripper had been confined in an asylum while a sham death and burial were staged. Downes had no idea why I was interested in Gull, so I was astonished when he said, 'This is a large grave, about twelve feet by nine, too large for two people. Some say more than two are buried there. It's big enough for *three*, that grave.'

He fell silent a moment or two, then said pensively, 'Burial places for two just aren't normally that big'.

Then, half jokingly, he mused, 'Of course, it's *possible* somebody else is buried there, without anyone knowing who.'

I pressed him for more information, but he quickly changed the subject. This did not appear to be because he had any sinister knowledge, but because he held Gull in the most profound reverence. Gull is Thorpe-le-Soken's only claim to fame, and Downes did not want seriously to ponder even the possibility that something 'not quite right' may have happened. But even though he knew nothing sinister about the grave, nor of any connection between William Gull and the Ripper, his words were based on an honest man's assessment of a strange phenomenon—a grave for two which is big enough for three.

There is every indication that Gull was the doctor referred to by Howard and Lees and that he was committed to an asylum under the name Mason. Meanwhile a bogus funeral was gone through and a coffin filled with stones was lowered into his grave. But what happened when Gull actually died? Either he was buried somewhere under the name Mason or pressure was brought to bear and he was secretly laid in his rightful grave, taking up the third place in the grave for two.

In later years Gull's most intimate friend and companion was Sir James Paget, another Freemason. Paget was Serjeant Surgeon to Queen Victoria. It will be remembered that in examining the cover-up of the Prince Eddy–Annie Elizabeth Crook episode, it was hard to see how—after her incarceration—Annie was moved from workhouse to workhouse without any of the normal paperwork or removal procedure being gone through. The explanation lies in the convenient presence on the Boards of Guardians dealing with Annie Elizabeth of one

Rev. Henry Luke Paget. The Rev. Paget was one of the elected members of the St Pancras Board of Guardians—to whom Annie Elizabeth was chargeable for the first half of her thirty-one years in workhouses. Only one of the guardians could have arranged for Annie Elizabeth to be moved in such a way that every rule was waived. Paget was Vicar, and later Rural Dean, of St Pancras and went on to become Suffragan Bishop of Ipswich (1906), Suffragan Bishop of Stepney (1909), and Bishop of Chester from 1919 to 1932. More importantly, he was the son of Sir James Paget, one of Gull's best friends. Judging by the example set by his family, and by the more high-ranking members of the Church of England at that time, it is virtually certain he was a Freemason, though the Grand Lodge have refused to allow me access to their records to check this or any other point.

★ ★ ★ ★

Two important points arose in the months after this book was delivered to the publisher. As the typed manuscript was already in the hands of the printer it was impossible to make any changes in the body of the text, so the new evidence has been inserted here, the end of the relevant chapter, at proof stage.

In 1975 Richard Whittington-Egan discovered in a London bookshop a handwritten letter from Dr Benjamin Howard, whose testimony has proved such strong support of Sickert's story. The letter, reproduced in Whittington-Egan's A Casebook on Jack the Ripper, *was addressed to* The People *newspaper, which had published an article based on the Chicago* Sunday Times-Herald *story. In the letter, Howard denied all knowledge of the report attributed to him, and denied he was even in America at the time the disclosures were said to have been made. Whittington-Egan comments that this denial rules out the Howard story.*

On the contrary. Dr Howard would hardly have admitted that he had become drunk and broken the solemn oath binding him to secrecy about the Masonic lunacy commission proceedings. I find it perfectly credible that Howard would deny this betrayal of Masonic secrets most vehemently. And though Whittington-Egan is to be heartily congratulated on his coup in finding the letter, its existence is by no means surprising.

The second point, possibly coincidence but nevertheless worthy of note, could indicate the identity of the police inspector whom Lees led to the Ripper. Lee's family roots were at Bournemouth. When Inspector Abberline retired he moved to Bournemouth. This in itself is hardly startling. Bournemouth was, and is, a favourite town for those planning a comfortable retirement. What is interesting is that Abberline died in 1928, having appointed one Nelson Edwin Lees *as his executor. I have been unable to discover if Nelson Edwin Lees was related to Lees the medium. If he was, and it does seem a strong possibility bearing in mind the coincidence of location and the relative rareness of the name, the case in favour of the Lees story is surely conclusive.*

CHAPTER TWELVE

John Netley

John Netley, the second member of the Ripper party according to Sickert, is a man without a face. He is the one character named by Sickert who is quite unknown. As such he provides one of the strongest pieces of evidence that the story is true. The whole of Sickert's narrative examined up to this point has been shown to be correct. If the old painter had been lying about those involved in the killings the weakest part of his story is likely to have been that part concerning John Netley, the mysterious figure no 'Ripperologist' had previously heard of.

To recall Sickert's description of Netley and his part in the affair:

He was the young man who first became involved in the case when he regularly picked up Eddy from a prearranged spot and ferried him to his secret meetings with Sickert and Annie Elizabeth in Cleveland Street. Netley was not on the official Palace staff, but he owned his own coach. How he came to know Eddy in the first place Sickert did not explain. At the predetermined spot Eddy would transfer from the royal coach into Netley's vehicle in order to outwit any royal aides who might have happened to be keeping an eye on his carriage.

When Gull and his extreme Masonic colleagues were organizing the elimination of the blackmailing whores Netley was inveigled into taking part in the operation. According to Sickert the coercion was not necessary. Sickert thought he was not too far from the truth in saying that because Netley was a short man—a fact about which he was hypersensitive—he would go to any lengths to boost his ego and reach the state where he felt, not equal to other men, but their superior. He was prepared to take part in any plan, however obnoxious, to further his own ends. He was appallingly ambitious, and though an inveterate womanizer, it was said that he had taken part in homosexual activities with wealthy homosexuals to help him in what he somehow imagined would be his climb to the top. The top of what, Sickert could not imagine. He did not know if Netley was a Mason, but whether he was or was not, he was prepared to do all he could to help the secret brotherhood purely for his own sake. Sickert never ceased to marvel that Netley was quite insensitive to the fact that he was despised by those who used him for *their* own ends.

He was enlisted by the killers firstly because he was already involved in the case, and secondly because he knew Cleveland Street and the people there. He would be invaluable, they thought, in making the initial discreet inquiries at Cleveland Street and its neighbourhood after the disappearance of Kelly. Thirdly, he was a working-class man, and would be useful and inconspicuous making inquiries, with the aid of a picture of Kelly, in the East End.

During the murders Netley drove the party around the East End in his coach. As he drove the two Masonic murderers carried out their ghastly work in the relative darkness of the vehicle. Later Netley placed the bodies of the victims where they were found. This was true only of Nichols, Chapman and Eddowes; Kelly was murdered in her room and Stride was killed at the spot where her body was found.

Walter Sickert was unclear what happened to Netley when the murders were at an end. All he knew was that the abominable coachman somehow developed the fixation that selling his body to notable homosexuals was no longer the path to power. Perhaps because he had gained an insight into the workings of Masonry, he wanted now to ingratiate himself with influential Freemasons rather than their puppets, the aristocracy. It suited his ends, and he switched his allegiance from Eddy to Freemasonry with as little compunction as he had shown in performing his part in the murders. This loathsome, misguided creature, whose greatest attribute was his inferiority complex, continued a lone campaign against Alice Margaret, the daughter of Eddy and Annie Elizabeth. At the height of the Ripper murders the child was knocked down by Netley's coach in Fleet Street or the Strand, said Sickert. She was nearly killed, but after months in St Bartholomew's Hospital she recovered.

The incident was repeated in February 1892. On this occasion Netley charged along Drury Lane in his carriage just as Alice Margaret was crossing the road with an elderly relative who was helping to bring her up. The child was not so badly hurt on this occasion because she was spun out of the way of the wheels when the corner of the carriage struck her. She was taken to hospital unconscious but released after a day, having been treated for concussion. The elderly woman who had been with her later described the driver of the coach to Sickert. He knew at once it was Netley. It was with grim satisfaction that he recounted to his son that after the coach struck Alice Margaret on this occasion it careered into the kerbstone and the wheel was damaged. Unable to get the coach moving again, and desperate that he should not be apprehended, Netley was seen to jump down from the cab, and in the ensuing confusion he passed through the crowd and fled to Westminster Bridge, several passers-by in hot pursuit. Despite his smallness, however, Netley was fleet of foot, and he threw off his pursuers long before he reached the Thames. Sickert heard later that for some inexplicable reason Netley threw himself into the river from Westminster Pier, where he drowned. That, said the old painter, was the end of Netley, and the final chapter of the Jack the Ripper mystery was closed.

Netley was difficult to investigate. To begin at the beginning, there was no proof that he had even existed.

After six weeks of research, Karen de Groot discovered Netley's birth certificate. He was born in May 1860 in Kensington, and christened John Charles Netley. The certificate showed he was the son of an omnibus conductor, which at least made it likely that he would have become something similar. It was a period when the old song about following in father's footsteps was more apposite than today.

Even though a man may do nothing all his life, one thing is certain: he will leave a record of his birth and a record of his death. John Netley definitely existed. Now it was time to examine the most positive part of Sickert's narrative about Netley, his alleged suicide in the Thames in February 1892.

But according to the records at Somerset House, no John Netley did die in 1892; nor, it was later proved, did such a death occur in 1891 or 1893. And the Thames Police have no record of a suicide for the whole of February 1892.

Nothing appeared that looked anything like an explanation until Karen de Groot found this brief report in *The Observer* of 7th February 1892:

> Shortly before one o'clock yesterday, attempted suicide from Westminster Pier. A respectably dressed young man took off his boots and coat and hid them under a seat in a waiting room, jumped off the pier and swam for a few yards. Rescued by Mr Douglas, Pier Master, but struggled. Taken to Westminster Hospital. Gave name of *Nickley*, but refused his address.

This episode tallies so closely with Sickert's account that it seems beyond coincidence. The attempted suicide reported in *The Observer* occurred at the same place and in the exact month that Sickert said Netley jumped into the Thames. Admittedly the man rescued by the Pier Master gave his name as Nickley and not Netley. But apart from the obvious similarity between the two names, there is also the fact that the name Nickley was false. No one called Nickley was alive at that time—certainly no one that could be described as a young man. Assuming the 'respectably dressed young man' of the *Observer* report to have been anything between fourteen and thirty-five, I checked the eighty-four registers of births at Somerset House covering every month from 1878 back to 1857, but no one called Nickley was born in those years. The registers almost invariably jump from Nickless to Nicklin. Nor does the name Nickley appear in the *Dictionary of British Surnames*. The odd behaviour of the young man in giving this false name (so similar to Netley), and in refusing to give his address, is consistent with him having something to hide, as Netley most certainly had. The attempted suicide of *Nickley* corresponds closely to the reported suicide of Netley; the conclusion that they were one and the same is irresistible. That Sickert imagined Netley had drowned is understandable. This part of his story obviously relies on what someone else had told him. The records of Westminster Hospital, where 'Nickley' was taken, are now lost, so it is impossible to confirm the episode beyond the report in *The Observer*.

There was still some way to go. It had not yet been shown that Netley was a cab-driver or that he was anything to do with Cleveland Street or the Whitechapel Murders; the two attempts on Alice Margaret's life were equally unsubstantiated; and if Netley did not die in the Thames in 1892, when did he die?

Any record of the two attempts on the child's life seemed non-existent. Police and hospital records—such as had survived two wars—were useless. For a long time it seemed impossible to verify the story of the two incidents, until a copy of the *Illustrated Police News* of Saturday, 6th October 1888 came to the rescue. It will be remembered that Sickert said the first attempt on Alice Margaret's life took place in Fleet Street or the Strand at the height of the Ripper murders. The report said:

> Shortly after four o'clock on Monday afternoon [two days after the 'double event'] a little girl was run over by a hansom cab in Fleet-street, opposite Anderton's Hotel. The child was placed in the cab and conveyed to St Bartholomew's Hospital in an insensible condition, one of the wheels having passed over her body. From the serious nature of the injuries the little sufferer is not likely to recover.

Once again, though no names are mentioned, the story tallies too closely with Sickert's version of events to be coincidence. The time and place of the accident are exactly right. Sickert claimed Alice Margaret was nearly killed in the collision. This is confirmed by the report. Finally, he said she was taken to St Bartholomew's Hospital, just like the child in the newspaper story.

The gaps were beginning to disappear, but still there was no indication of what happened to Netley after he left hospital following his suicide attempt in 1892.

Here it is interesting to recall the content of the Masonic code, described in Chapter 10. The *Protocols* declare that a Freemason will, in certain circumstances, die by his own greatest achievement. It has been shown that Sir William Gull, in his element certifying the troublesome as insane on behalf of the Masons, was himself certified and incarcerated under the name Thomas *Mason*.

By a miracle of research, Karen de Groot discovered that when Netley did die it was in such an 'accident' that he too seems finally to have fallen victim of those he wished desperately to serve. For Netley, whose best achievements on behalf of the Masons were ferrying the Masonic killers around in his coach, and later using his coach in his mistaken attempts at eliminating Alice Margaret, *died under the wheels of his own vehicle*. The 'accident' did not happen until 1903, but it seems a similar happening occurred about 1897, from which he recovered. The astonishing part of this story is the place of Netley's death. The unlikely notion of a man falling under the wheels of his *own* coach is difficult enough to accept. When we learn that he died at *Clarence* Gate, Regent's Park, the memory of the wry Masonic humour that surrounded Gull's removal cannot be erased from the mind.

The story of Netley's death appeared in two local newspapers. The *Marylebone Mercury and West London Gazette* of 26th September 1903 reported:

> SHOCKING FATALITY IN PARK ROAD
>
> An inquest was held by Coroner Danford Thomas on Wednesday afternoon on the body of John Netley aged 43 years.
>
> Evidence was given to the effect that the deceased was in the employ of Messrs Thompson & McKay, carmen, to the Great Central Railway Company. On Sunday afternoon he was driving one of their pair horse vans along Park Road, Regent's Park, when one of the wheels of the van collided with a stone rest, and he was thrown from his seat into the roadway. As the deceased lay on the ground, one of the horses kicked him on the head and the wheel passed over him. He had no strap round him.
>
> Dr Norris of 25 Park Road said he was called and saw the deceased lying dead in the roadway near Clarence Gate. There were extensive injuries to the head. Death, which was due to fracture of the skull, was instantaneous. The jury returned a verdict of accidental death.

The *Marylebone Times* of the previous day reported Netley's father as saying he had fallen from a van about six years before, but had fully recovered from the effects of the accident.

That Sickert got the story of Netley's death wrong is stronger support of the fact that he was telling the truth. If Sickert had been a fantasist who had created a sensational story by which to be remembered (hardly necessary for a man acknowledged as the greatest English painter since Turner) then he would have been eager to get details right, and certainly would have used the Clarence Gate death to 'sell' the story.

The truth about Jack the Ripper has already been so obscured by wanton speculation that it is dangerous to depart from certainties. But there are inevitable gaps in the evidence now traceable. For instance, only informed speculation can help to explain Netley's death. If indeed it was Masonic, why would his erstwhile masters have disposed of him at all? The answer to this must lie in Netley's repeated attempts to gain the favour of the Masons by such acts as his attempts on the life of the infant Alice Margaret. His 'help', beyond his part in the Ripper episode, was unsolicited and would no doubt have outraged the Masonic elders in whose name he mistakenly imagined he was working. The fact that in 1903 he was no more than a carman seems to indicate that his fortunes had taken a tumble. Did he too make the fatal mistake of trying to blackmail the Masons with his knowledge of the Ripper murders?

CHAPTER THIRTEEN

Yours truly, Jack the Ripper

I'm not a butcher,
I'm not a Yid,
Nor yet a foreign skipper,
But I'm your own light-hearted friend,
Yours truly, Jack the Ripper.

'The above queer verse', as it was described by Sir Melville Macnaghten, was one of the more palatable communications received at Scotland Yard during the Ripper's reign of terror. It is important at this point to take an unbiased look at this welter of correspondence, hurled at the police and Press from all corners of the globe. It has been estimated that Scotland Yard received about a thousand letters a week at the height of the murders. Many were from people with suggestions about how to snare the Ripper. Hundreds more were from cranks who derived a perverted sense of fun from sending crude little notes signed 'Jack the Ripper'.

Almost every theory so far expounded in print has relied to a large extent on several of these letters purporting to be from the murderer. The messages arrived in all shapes, sizes and forms, and from all over the world. Some were in conventional envelopes, some in home-made envelopes, some on postcards, some scrawled on telegram forms. They were in every conceivable style of handwriting, some obviously educated, others by educated people imitating an illiterate style and yet others by genuinely uneducated pranksters. The one factor common to most of the correspondence is the opening address, 'Dear Boss', and the signature, 'Jack the Ripper'.

These were in imitation of the first two missives received. From the fact that the second, a postcard, referred to the contents of the first, a grubby letter, it has been concluded they are of common authorship. The handwriting does differ markedly, but as the second message was received before the first had been published it is almost certain the two pieces of correspondence do come—if not from the same individual, at least from the same group of people.

I have closely examined the contents of the *Letters* file at Scotland Yard, and feel that only one of the hundreds of letters received is at all likely to have come from Jack the Ripper.

If this is true it cripples many previous theories about the identity of the Ripper, most effectively Harrison's elaborate theory indicting Prince Eddy's tutor, James Kenneth Stephen. Harrison's thesis is built almost entirely upon a comparison of the poetry of Stephen and the 'style' he detects in the so-called Ripper correspondence. He cites as the work of the Ripper poems, postcards and letters which are definitely of different authorship.

Donald Rumbelow was almost at the truth when he wrote:

> Few of the letters signed 'Jack the Ripper' or purporting to come from him, are of any real value—in fact, a ruthless weeding-out process leaves only two.

In fact Rumbelow decided *three* messages were genuine, but the first two—being from the same source—he counted as one. These are the letter posted on 28th September and the follow-up postcard from the same group of hoaxers received after the double murder. Rumbelow's second vote of confidence goes to the 'From Hell' letter received on October 16th. The first letter is important because it was the first use of the name Jack the Ripper:

> 25. Sept. 1888.
>
> Dear Boss
>
> I keep on hearing the police have caught me but they won't fix me just yet. I have laughed when they look so clever and talk about being on the right track. That joke about Leather Apron gave me real fits. I am down on whores and I shan't quit ripping them till I do get buckled. Grand work the last job was. I gave the lady no time to squeal. How

> can they catch me now. I love my work and want to start again. You will soon hear of me with my funny little games. I saved some of the proper red stuff in a ginger beer bottle over the last job to write with but it went thick like glue and I can't use it. Red ink is fit enough I hope ha ha. The next job I do I shall clip the lady's ears off and send to the police officers just for jolly wouldn't you. Keep this letter back till I do a bit more work, then give it out straight. My knife is nice and sharp I want to get to work right away if I get a chance. Good luck.
>
> Yours truly
> Jack the Ripper
>
> Dont mind me giving the trade name.

Then at right angles to the rest of the letter:

> wasnt good enough to post this before I got all the red ink off my hands curse it. No luck yet. They say I'm a doctor now ha ha.

The postcard received after the double murder said:

> I was not codding dear old Boss when I gave you the tip, you ll hear about saucy Jacky s work tomorrow double event this time number one squealed a bit couldnt finish straight off. had not time to get ears for police thanks for keeping last letter back till I got to work again,
>
> Jack the Ripper

The last two sentences are direct allusions to the contents of the first letter, which had not been published by the time this second message was received. Rumbelow believes this is the work of the murderer for the same reason that every major author on the subject has believed the same thing. He wrote:

> The second letter was posted on 30 September, the day of the 'double event'. . . . Details of the 'double event' were not known until they were published in the newspaper on the following day, Monday 1 October, and for twenty-four hours at least they would have been confined to Whitechapel and some of central London. Only the murderer could have known that he had not been able to finish the first victim off and had not had time enough to 'clip her ears'.

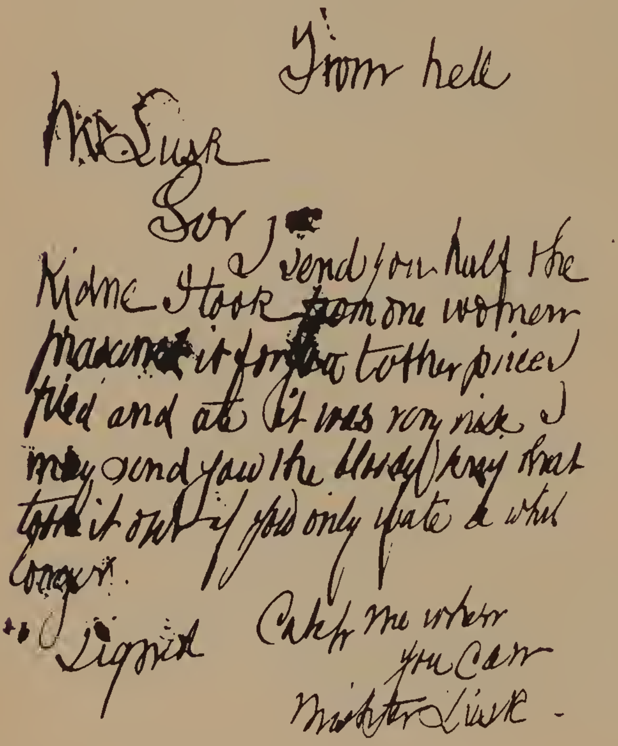
Few authors on the subject of the Ripper have paid enough attention to detail. Many have taken the word of previous writers without checking basic facts for themselves. Hence the continuing misunderstanding about the addresses of the victims—resolved in Chapter 9. It has resulted, too, in one of the greatest fallacies concerning the murders—namely that the 'double event' postcard was posted on Sunday, 30th September, when only the killer could have known the details of the murders.

Donald McCormick, Tom Cullen, Robin Odell, Daniel Farson and Donald Rumbelow have all made the misleading statement that the postcard was mailed on Sunday, 30th September. If any one of them had looked at the postmark they would have seen it read, 'OC 1', which meant it could well have been posted on Monday, 1st October, when full details of the double murder were general knowledge. This seems to be confirmed by the records department of the Post Office, who point out that in 1888, as now, there were collections from post-boxes made each Sunday. They say that any letter posted on a Sunday would have been stamped with that date. So if the 'double event' message having been posted on the Sunday as we have been led to believe, it would almost certainly have borne the postmark 'SEP 30'.

The other letter Rumbelow selects is that which was sent to Mr George Lusk, chairman of the Whitechapel Vigilance Committee, which had been set up to patrol the streets after the murder of Annie Chapman. Part of a kidney was enclosed with the letter, which read:

> From hell
>
> Mr Lusk
> Sir
> I send you half the
> Kidne I took from one women
> prasarved it for you tother piece I
> fried and ate it was very nise. I
> may send you the bloody knif that
> took it out if you only wate a whil
> longer
> signed Catch me when
> you can
> Mishter Lusk

Note that the one letter claimed to be genuine is not in fact signed, 'Jack the Ripper'. This letter did more than any other to whip up panic in the East End, the reign of terror so sacred to the Masons. I do not believe it to be the work of an illiterate man, although the writer took pains to make it appear so. An illiterate is far more likely to write 'nife' than 'knif', or 'wile' rather than 'whil'. And someone who believes 'wait' is rendered as 'wate' is unlikely to know the sound *bludee* is rendered as 'bloody', which the writer spells correctly.



From hell

Mr Lusk
Sor
I send you half the
Kidne I took from one women
prasarved it for you tother piece
I fried and ate it was very nise I
may send you the bloody knif that
took it out if you only wate a whil
longer.
signed Catch me when
you can
Mishter Lusk

The Ripper's 'From hell' letter

It has been held that the section of kidney enclosed with the letter provides strong evidence that this communication is genuinely from the killer or killers. The first reaction of the Press, before any examination had been carried out, was that the kidney had been taken from a dog, or that the letter was a medical student's prank. What finally convinced many people that the letter must have come from the Ripper, was the reported outcome of the examination of the kidney by Dr Openshaw, pathological curator of the London Hospital Museum. Dr Openshaw was said to have stated that it was a 'ginny' kidney such as would be found in an alcoholic (like most of her class, Eddowes was an alcoholic), that it belonged to a woman of about forty-five (Eddowes was forty-three), that it had been removed in the previous three weeks (Eddowes had been killed two weeks and two days before the kidney was received by Lusk) and that it was in an advanced state of Bright's disease (the kidney remaining in Eddowes's body was in exactly the same state). What seemed conclusive proof that it was indeed part of Eddowes's kidney was the reported fact that two inches of renal artery remained in her body. The renal artery is about three inches long—and one inch of artery was attached to the kidney sent to Lusk.

Anyone convinced the identity of the murderer is revealed in a previous theory has only to eliminate from his mind the 'evidence' of all correspondence except the Lusk letter to see that the case against most suspects is pretty threadbare.

The authenticity of the Lusk letter seems to be confirmed by the findings of Canadian handwriting expert Miss C. M. MacLeod, who wrote in *The Criminologist* in 1968, 'If there was only one real Jack the Ripper, I should cast my vote for the writer of sample 1 (the Lusk letter)'.

But if this is true who wrote the message? More than one murderer made up the lethal identity of Jack the Ripper. The identity of the writer is to be found in the same analysis of the writing. Miss MacLeod wrote:

> I would have looked for this killer among such men as cab-drivers, who had a legitimate excuse to be anywhere at any time. I should have sought a hail-fellow-well-met who liked to eat and drink; who might attract women of the class he preyed on by an overwhelming animal charm. I would say in fact he was a latent homosexual (suggested by lower-zone strokes returning on the wrong side of the letter) and passed as a 'man's man'; the roistering blade who made himself the life and soul of the pub and sneered at women as objects to be used and discarded.

In saying also that 'This writer was capable of conceiving any atrocity, and of carrying it out in an organized way', Miss MacLeod may be accused of being wise after the event. But her character sketch of the killer based upon his handwriting is remarkable, and banishes all doubts as to the author of the letter 'From Hell'. It is a perfect description of Netley.

CHAPTER FOURTEEN

Maniacs and Woman-haters

Despite all the anti-social diseases that plague modern society, a cross-section of humanity in any major city is unlikely to reveal great numbers of lunatics, woman-haters or sexual maniacs. Woman-haters especially are almost unknown. In considering Jack the Ripper from a present-day standpoint then, it would seem reasonable to suggest that if a man could be shown to have had a strong hatred of women, *on that fact alone* he should rank as a major suspect. Much of the sympathy that Michael Harrison's theory has earned is based on the undisputed fact that James Kenneth Stephen hated women. This is one of Stephen's verses:

If all the harm that women have done
Were put in a bundle and rolled into one,
  Earth would not hold it,
  The sky could not enfold it,
It could not be lighted nor warmed by the sun;
  Such masses of evil
  Would puzzle the devil
And keep him in fuel while Time's wheels run.

Because misogyny is today such an unusual phenomenon, it seems plausible to argue that anyone displaying Stephen's disgust with the feminine sex is inescapably a strong candidate for the Ripper. This argument falls down rather badly, however, in the face of evidence contained in the Scotland Yard *Suspects* file. The file reveals that in 1888 lunatics, sexual maniacs and woman-haters were almost two a penny.

It contains some amazing stories, and provides a rich commentary on the sort of world in which Jack the Ripper operated, and an alarming insight into the sort of effect the Whitechapel Murders had on many minds. A five-page report written in the hand of a man who walked into Scotland Yard on Boxing Day, 1888, is an outstanding example:

> I beg to draw your attention to the attitude of Dr Morgan Davies of — Street, Houndsditch, E. with respect to these murders. But, my suspicions attach to him principally in connection with the last one—committed in-doors.
>
> Three weeks ago, I was a patient in the London Hospital, in a private ward (Davis) with a Dr Evans, suffering from typhoid who used to be visited almost nightly by Dr Davies, when the murders were our usual subject of conversation.
>
> Dr Davis [sic] always insisted on the fact that the murderer was a man of sexual powers almost effete, which could only be brought into action by some strong stimulus—such as sodomy. He was very positive on this point, that the murderer performed on the women from behind—in fact, *per ano*. At that time he could have had no information, any more than myself, about the fact that the post mortem examination revealed that semen was found up the woman's rectum, mixed with her faeces [this is quite untrue].
>
> Many things, which would seem trivial in writing, seemed to me to connect him with the affair—for instance—he is himself a woman-hater. Although a man of powerful frame, &, (according to the lines on his sallow face) of strong sexual passions. He is *supposed*, however, by his intimates, never to touch a woman.
>
> One night, when five medicos were present, quietly discussing the subject, & combatting his argument that the murderer did not do these things to obtain specimens of uteri (wombs) but that—in his case—it was the lust of murder developed from sexual lust—a thing not unknown to medicos, he acted (in a way which *fairly terrified* those five doctors) the whole scene. He took a knife, 'buggered' an imaginary woman, cut her throat from behind; then, when she was apparently laid prostrate, ripped and slashed her in all directions in a perfect state of frenzy.
>
> *Previously* to this performance I had said: "After a man had done a thing like this, reaction would take place, & he would collapse, & be taken at once by the police, or would attract the attention of the bystanders by his exhausted condition?" Dr D— said "NO! he would recover himself when the fit was over & be as calm as a lamb. I will show you!" Then

he began his performance. At the end of it he stopped, buttoned up his coat, put on his hat, & walked down the room with the most perfect calmness. Certainly his face was as pale as death, but that was all.

It was only a few days ago, after I was *positively* informed by the Editor of the "Pall Mall Gazette" that the murdered woman *last* operated on had been sodomized—that I thought —"How did *he* know? His acting was the most vivid I ever saw. Henry Irving was a fool to it. Another point. He argued that the murderer did not want specimens of uteri, but grasped them, & slashed them off in his madness as being *the only hard* substances which met his grasp, when his hands were madly plunging into the abdomen of his victim.

I may say that Dr Davies was for some time House Physician at the London Hospital, Whitechapel, that he has lately taken this house in Castle St Houndsditch; that he has lived in the locality of the murders for some years; & that he professes his intention of going to Australia shortly should he not quickly make a success in his new house.

Roslyn D'O Stephenson

PS I have mentioned this matter to a pseudo-detective named George Marsh of 24 Pratt St., Camden Town N.W. with whom I have made an agreement, (enclosed herewith) to share any reward which he may derive from my information.

R.D'OS

PPS I can be found at any time through Mr Iles of the "Prince Albert", St Martin's Lane—in a few minutes—I live close to; but do not desire me to give my address.

R.D'OS

Gummed to the statement is a torn sheet of paper dated 24th December 1888 and bearing the words:

I hereby agree to pay to Dr R D'O Stephenson (also known as "Sudden Death") one half of any or all rewards or monies received by me on a/c of the conviction of Dr Davies for wilful murder.

Roslyn D'O Stephenson MD
29 Castle St WC
St Martin's Lane

One can only wonder at the state of mind of the author of this intriguing document. Apart from the dubious content of the accusation, it is full of so many imponderables it is hard to know where to begin in analysing it.

The inconsistencies begin with Dr Roslyn D'O Stephenson (can that be genuine?) being obviously unprepared to give the address of his suspect, because he describes him as 'Dr Morgan Davies of — Street, Houndsditch, E'. Yet later he thwarts his own intentions by explaining that Dr Davies has taken a house in *Castle* Street, thus filling in his own blank. He then mentions by way of a postscript that he has struck a bargain with a man for whom he clearly has little respect, describing him as he does as a 'pseudo-detective'. He next expresses his desire not to give his own address, but appends an agreement *on which his address is written*. The address itself is curious, for it also is in Castle Street, but a Castle Street in the W.C. district, not Houndsditch. The agreement attached to the statement is absurd, for it is a promise to pay Dr R. D'O Stephenson money—yet it is signed by Dr R. D'O Stephenson himself! The situation becomes even more intriguing when, several papers down in the file, one discovers another statement, this one by Stephenson's 'partner'. It was made on Christmas Eve. The statement is written by Inspector J. Roots at the Yard, who reports:

> Mr George Marsh, ironmongery salesman (now, and for two months out of employment) 24, Pratt St, Camden Town, came here at 7 p.m. and made the following statement:—
>
> "About a month ago at the Prince Albert P.H., Upper St Martin's Lane, I met a man named Stephenson and casually discussed the murders in Whitechapel with him. From that time to the present I have met him there two or three times a week and we have on each occasion discussed the murders in a confidential manner. He has tried to tell me how I could capture the man if I went his way to work. I simply told him I should go my own way about it and sooner or later I'd have him. I told him I was an amateur detective and that I had been for weeks looking for the culprit. He explained to me how the murders were committed. He said they were committed by a woman hater after the forthcoming manner:-
>
> "The murderer would induce a woman to go up a back street or room and to excite his passion would 'bugger' her and cut her throat at the same time with his right hand, holding on by the left.
>
> "He illustrated the action. From his manner I am of opinion he is the murderer in the first six cases, if not the last one.

> "Today Stephenson told me that Dr Davies of Houndsditch (I don't know the address although I have been there and could point it out) was the murderer and he wished me to see him. He drew up an agreement to share the reward on the conviction of Dr Davies. I know that agreement is valueless but it secured his handwriting. I made him under the influence of drink thinking that I should get some further statement but in this I failed as he left me to see Dr Davies and also to go to Mr Stead of the Pall Mall Gazette with an article for which he expected £2. He wrote the article in the Pall Mall Gazette in relation to the writing on the wall about Jews. He had £4 for that. I have seen letters from Mr Stead in his possession about it; also a letter from Mr Stead refusing to allow him money to find out the Whitechapel Murderer.
>
> "Stephenson has shown me a discharge as a patient from the London Hospital. The name Stephenson is obliterated and that of Davies is marked in red ink. I do not know the date.
>
> "Stephenson is now at the common lodging house No. 29 Castle St., St Martin's Lane, W.C. and has been there three weeks. His description is:- Age 48, height 5 ft 10 in, full face, sallow complexion, moustache heavy—mouse coloured—waxed and turned up, hair brown turning grey, eyes sunken. When looking at a stranger generally has an eyeglass. Dress, grey suit and light brown felt hat—all well worn; military appearance: says he has been in 42 battles: well educated.
>
> "The agreement he gave me I will leave with you and will render any assistance the Police may require.
>
> "Stephenson is not a drunkard: he is what I call a regular soaker—can drink from 8 o'clock in the morning until closing time but keep a clear head.

Despite a marginal note by Roots that Stephenson's agreement is attached, there is no longer any sign of it in the file. There is one last report on this episode, a character sketch of Stephenson by Roots, written after Stephenson's visit to Scotland Yard on Boxing Day. Under the subject heading 'Whitechapel Murders, Marsh, Davies & Stephenson', Roots says:

> With reference to the statement of Mr George Marsh, of 24th inst., regarding the probable association of Dr Davies and Stephenson with the murders in Whitechapel.
>
> I beg to report that Dr Stephenson came here this evening and wrote the attached statement of his suspicions of Dr Morgan Davies, Castle St, Houndsditch; and also left with me his agreement with Marsh as to the reward. I attach it.

> When Marsh came here on 24th I was under the impression that Stephenson was a man I had known 20 years. I now find that impression was correct. He is a travelled man of education and ability, a doctor of medicine upon diplomas of Paris & New York: a major from the Italian Army—he fought under Garibaldi: and a newspaper writer. He says that he wrote the article about Jews in the Pall Mall Gazette, that he occasionally writes for that paper, and that he offered his services to Mr Stead to track the murderer. He showed me a letter from Mr Stead, dated Nov 30 1888, about this and said that the result was the proprietor declined to engage upon it. He has led a Bohemian life, drinks very heavily, and always carries drugs to sober him and stave off delirium tremens.
>
> He was an applicant for the Orphanage Secretaryship at the last election.

The statements were passed to Inspector Swanson but no action appears to have been taken to investigate Dr Morgan Davies (who surely *had* to be classed as a suspect if the Ripper were still on the loose, however unlikely Stephenson's story), and no further interview with either Stephenson or Marsh appears to have been undertaken. This is odd, especially in view of the fact that from the contents of his own statement and the suspicions expressed by Marsh, Stephenson was more likely to have been the murderer than Davies. Not only was his behaviour before Marsh identical to that which he attributed to Dr Davies, his own statement seems to be strewn with deliberate clues pointing the finger at himself. That his suspect and himself both lived in streets of the same name; that he on one occasion alluded to his suspect as 'Dr D—', which would also fit himself; and that he referred to himself as 'Sudden Death' all support the argument that he would have been investigated *if Jack the Ripper had still been at large.*

The value of these strange allegations and counter-allegations goes beyond psychological insight into the effect of the Ripper and a behind-the-scenes look at the day-to-day problems of the men at the Yard. The essential fact is that the dozens of papers in the *Suspects* file indicate the police *knew* the Whitechapel Murders had ended with Kelly's death on 9th November. This is true, because no allegations after that date were followed up by the Yard. Arrests certainly did not cease immediately. As far as the average bobby on the beat and his superiors at the station were concerned, Jack the Ripper was still at large and might strike again at any time. But the Yard obviously knew something, or they would not have been content to let the allegation reports build up without taking any action to investigate suspects. Farson has suggested that police activity on the case ceased because they knew Druitt was the killer. This is untrue, for the Yard papers show no real investigation into the case took place after the death of Kelly, seven weeks before Druitt's body was found. The allegations against Stephenson and Davies, for instance, were made on Christmas Eve and Boxing Day respectively, and Druitt was not retrieved from the Thames until 31st December. Unless the police already knew who the murderer or murderers were, they would certainly not have received Marsh's statement accusing Stephenson on 24th December and done nothing to investigate it. It appears no steps would have been taken at all, even to obtain a character sketch of Stephenson, if the suspect himself had not turned up of his own accord two days later.

Another woman-hater story emanated from the office of the Chief Constable of Rotherham on 5th October 1888. The *Suspects* file contains the correspondence received from Rotherham but there are no copies of Inspector Abberline's replies. The content of these can be guessed, however, and the Rotherham letters are what count:

> Sir
>
> I have the honour to inform you that I have just had a visit from a man named James Oliver, residing at 3 Westfield View, Rotherham, a discharged soldier of the 5th Lancers, who is firmly persuaded in his own mind that he knows the perpetrator of the Whitechapel Murders. He was perfectly sober and made his statement clearly and circumspectly and it is of such a nature that I consider it should be laid before you without delay.
>
> He states that there was a man named "Dick Austen" who served with him in R. Troop in the 5th Lancers, who previous to joining the Army had been a sailor, he would now be about 40 years of age—5–8 in height, an extremely powerful and active man, but by no means heavy or stout. Hair and eyes light. Had, in service, a very long fair moustache, may have grown heavy whiskers and beard. His face was fresh, hard and healthy looking. He had *a small piece bitten off the end of his nose.* Although not mad, he was not right in his mind, "he was too sharp to be right". He used to be very temperate, but sometimes used to get out of bed in the night and walk

about the barrack room. He never would say where he came from and often said he had no friends.

He used to sometimes brag of what he had done previously to enlisting in the way of violence but more often of what he could do, "as though qualified to do anything".

While in the Regiment he was never known to go with women and when his comrades used to talk about them in the barrack room he used to grind his teeth—he was in fact a perfect woman hater. He used to say if he had his will he would *kill every whore and cut her inside out*, that when he left the Regiment there would be nothing before him but the gallows.

He had gone through great hardships and rough times in various parts of the world, having been a sailor in sailing ships, he was a very sharp and witty man and a capital scholar. Oliver believes he could recapture his handwriting. He was most plausible. His hands were long and thin.

He had 12 months for breaking into the Orderly Room and tearing up his defaulter sheets.

He is believed to have drawn his deferred pay (about 24£) and used to say he would make London his home.

He is a man who is most abstemious and will live on dry bread. "He used many a day to save his money and live on what was knocking about in the Barrack Room".

Probably he would always be respectably dressed but more often the description of a sailor than a soldier.

Oliver's idea is that he would probably be working at Docks or on board ship by day—possibly, if the murderer, that he may take short voyages on some vessel and commit the murders shortly before leaving—the dates of the murders tally with this theory.

"He always had revenge against women brooding in his mind."

I have cautioned the man Oliver to say nothing about this, and he tells me that he has not as yet told anyone his suspicions excepting his own wife.

I have also promised him that unless his suspicions prove true, or of material help that his statement to me will be considered in confidence.

I have the honour to be
Sir
Your obedient servant
L. R. Barick [?] Captain, C.C.

At this stage, after only four Ripper murders, this sort of clue was being followed up, as Abberline's report shows:

> Referring to annexed correspondence from the Chief Constable, Rotherham, I beg to report that I have caused an insertion in the Informations asking if anything was known in Divisions respecting Austen giving his description and other particulars . . . but up to the present time with no result.
>
> Perhaps it would be well to ask the Chief Constable of Rotherham, to cause James Oliver to be seen again and requested to furnish the date of Austen's discharge from the 5th Lancers, giving the name of the Station discharged from, and any other information.

A further letter from Rotherham dated October 19th said:

> Sir
>
> I have the honour to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of yesterday's date, relative to mine of 5th instant, and to inform you in reply that I have seen James Oliver this morning, he is unable to state the date or place of Austen's discharge—but as stated in my former letter he is positive that Austen intended to reside in London. Application to the 5th Lancers at Aldershot would produce the date and place of discharge, and should he be entitled to draw any future deferred pay or Army Reserve Pay, his whereabouts could by that means be ascertained—Oliver says several photographic groups of the Troop were taken, he has no copy, but could, if a copy was obtainable, pick out Austen—I should like a copy of some or any of the alleged letters from the murderer, as Oliver, as stated before, believes he could identify Austen's handwriting.
>
> I have the honour to be etc.

The final letter in the episode came from Rotherham on October 24th:

> Sir
>
> In reply to your letter of yesterday's date enclosing Metropolitan Police Notice I have the honour to inform you that I have shown the facsimile handwriting to the man Oliver, who says that it is extremely like that of Austen, especially that of the letter (written with steel pen). That of the post card (written with quill) he does not think so like—although of course it is easy to see they are written by the same person—Austen's signature could of course be obtained from the Troop Pay Sheet of the 5th Lancers even if a large example of it could not be got from the same source.
>
> I have the honour to be etc.

And there the matter ended. No further investigation was carried out into the whereabouts of Dick Austen. In Chapter 8 evidence was produced to show that the truth about the Ripper was suppressed. For the cover-up to have been successful it would have been vital to have the assistance of the man in charge of the investigation, Inspector Abberline. Abberline was clearly not involved in any conspiracy when he first took over the case, for his notes in the Yard file show beyond doubt his untiring efforts to track the Ripper. The files relating to the first two murders, Nichols and Chapman, are crammed with reports. The Stride file is smaller than its predecessors, but still displays a fair amount of evidence that an investigation by Abberline was taking place. Eddowes, of course, was murdered in the City Police district, so her case was not handled by the Yard. But in Kelly's file there is nothing in the way of relevant reports about the murder investigation. Abberline's only contribution to this file is a report of the Kelly inquest, which is meaningless. The file shows that the Yard did virtually nothing to track the Ripper after the third week in October. A study of Abberline's paperwork indicates that it must have been about this time that he was brought into the cover-up. No other explanation justifies the fact that, in the middle of the Ripper's reign of terror, serious police activity simply stopped. Only Abberline's involvement in the conspiracy at the time of the Ripper would explain his reappearance less than a year later to run the Cleveland Street cover-up at police level. It will be remembered that in the Cleveland Street case Abberline deliberately allowed vital witnesses to escape from the male brothel and leave the country, while his men were watching the house.

The day before Kelly died, Warren resigned. Four days later Abberline abandoned the Ripper case. And even though three Ripper-like murders took place in Whitechapel after Kelly's death, Abberline did not return. He *knew* the Ripper's day was done.

CHAPTER FIFTEEN

The Secrets of the Files

When Roy Jenkins became Home Secretary in 1974 he insisted on having personal control over all his department's secret files. Among other changes, this meant that requests from authors and researchers to see closed files would henceforth be examined by him and not, as before, by senior civil servants. His general policy has been to release documents to legitimate investigators, rather than withhold them as was the case before. This attitude, though unpopular among some of the higher members of the Civil Service, is an important step forward. As a result of it, I have been able to examine all the Home Office files on the Whitechapel Murders, which are due to remain closed until 1993.

With both the Scotland Yard and Home Office files in my hands, I at last had at my disposal the material 'Ripperologists' have been speculating about for nearly ninety years. The first point of interest is that Daniel Farson's claim, in the revised edition of his *Jack the Ripper*, that the Home Office file confirms Montague Druitt as the prime suspect, is wrong. There is no mention of Druitt anywhere in this file.

The early chapters of this book show the immense value of the files in getting the Ripper investigation back to basics. By drawing purely on the reports of policemen engaged on the murder investigation it has been possible to eliminate the distortion which the Ripper story has undergone at the hands of newspapers, film-makers and unreliable authors like Leonard Matters. The files also contain vital information which has been left until now to examine. The widely accepted rumour that they hold the solution to the mystery in any explicit sense is unfounded. There is no dossier, yellow with age and officially stamped, which reveals the identity of Jack the Ripper. The information embedded in the hundreds of secret documents only now available is more subtle than that—but it shows that crucial points in Sickert's narrative are perfectly correct.

Old Sickert provided considerable detail in his tale of the murders, and it will be useful to recall the essence of his account.

Mary Nichols, he claimed, was picked up in Netley's coach, ritually slaughtered as it jogged along the streets of the East End, and then her body was deposited in Buck's Row, where it was found.

Annie Chapman was likewise butchered in the vehicle and carried through the passage of 29 Hanbury Street to the backyard by Netley and Sir Robert Anderson, whose alleged part in the affair is examined in the final chapter.

Elizabeth Stride was a different case. She was drunk, and with a good-natured wave of her arm she walked off along the road when the carriage stopped and Gull offered her a lift. In her alcoholic stupor she was impervious to Gull's gentlemanly appeal to her vanity. Netley consequently parked the carriage in a back street and, leaving Gull alone inside it, he and Anderson followed the shambling form of Long Liz, said Sickert. At the corner of Berner Street Netley accosted Stride and walked with her into the darker areas further along the street, while Anderson kept watch on the opposite side of the road. Time was of the essence, for Stride's refusal of a lift in the carriage and the killers' subsequent action to nail her down had taken up more time than had been allowed for. Somehow the unholy trinity already knew that the woman who was to be their final victim was in the cells at Bishopsgate Police Station, and in common with most drunks arrested by the City Police, was likely to be released any time after midnight. Sickert said Netley went with Stride into the darkness of the yard behind the International Workers' Educational Club at No. 40 Berner Street, threw her down and cut her throat with one slash of his knife. The two men then returned to the carriage and drove on to Bishopsgate Street, now simply Bishopsgate, which they planned to patrol until their final victim appeared from the police station. How the killers knew she was under arrest for drunkenness, the old painter never explained.

By the time the carriage reached Bishopsgate Eddowes (whom the killers believed to be Kelly) had already been discharged, and she was found making her way back to her seedy doss-house in Spitalfields. There was no difficulty in luring her into the carriage, where the devilish work of killing her and Masonically mutilating her was carried out with a vengeance. In the hope that she would not be identified, part of her nose was cut off and her face was otherwise attacked. This, as far as the murderers were concerned, was the final killing—and as far as they knew this victim was the cause of the whole ghastly affair. When the work inside the vehicle was complete Netley drove to Mitre Street and he and Anderson heaved Eddowes out of the carriage and into the nearest corner of Mitre Square, by chance the darkest, where her intestines were thrown in a Masonic flourish over her shoulder.

It was not long before they realized they had eliminated the wrong woman, but they could not strike down Kelly immediately because of the upsurge of panic and vigilance on the part of police and residents that succeeded the double murder. When she was finally found Kelly was approached by Netley, whom she invited to her room. She too was drunk. The final details of Kelly's butchery Sickert never imparted to his son. He had known her as a friend and helper, and even after so long the memory was too painful for him, he explained.

There is evidence to support Sickert's claim that three of the women were not murdered at the spots where their bodies were found. Inspector Spratling's report of the Nichols murder in the Yard file records that he interviewed three people who were in Bucks' Row on the night she was murdered, 'none of whom heard any screams during the night, or anything to lead them to believe that the murder had been committed there'.

This was confirmed by Inspector Helston, who informed *The Times* on the morning of the murder that 'viewing the spot where the body was found, it seems difficult to believe that the woman received her death wounds there'. Beyond the discoloration ordinarily found on pavements, said Helston, there was no sign of stains. Dr Llewellyn, who was called to Bucks' Row to examine the body of Nichols, noted that there was only a small amount of blood in the gutter—'not more than would fill two wine glasses, or half a pint at the outside'. Rumbelow suggested that the apparent lack of blood may have been attributable to Nichols's clothing soaking most of it up, but the minutely detailed reports of her murder in the secret files provide no evidence to support this theory. It is unlikely that the clothes did absorb much blood. If they had it would have been instantly obvious, and the police would never have speculated, as they did, that the murder had taken place elsewhere. It is true that Inspector Spratling testified at the inquest that he had not seen any wheel-marks in the road, but this does not disprove Sickert's account. There was a day and night traffic in 'knacker's' wagons from the slaughterhouse in Bucks' Row. Presumably if the road conditions were such that *they* left no marks, neither would Netley's coach.

Annie Chapman was not murdered in the backyard of 29 Hanbury Street, where she was found. This is confirmed in a report by Chief Inspector Swanson in the Home Office file. It referred to a man called John Richardson who at 4.45 on the morning of the murder had gone to the yard and had sat on the steps, close to which the body was later found. Richardson was certain that if the corpse had been there then, he would have seen it. Medical evidence showed that Chapman had been dead at least twenty-five minutes when Richardson went to the yard. Swanson's report reads:

> If the evidence of Dr Phillips is correct, as to time of death, it is difficult to understand how it was that Richardson did not see the body when he went into the yard at 4.45 a.m., but as his clothes were examined, the house searched and his statement taken in which there was not a shred of evidence, suspicion could not rest upon him, although police specially directed their attention to him . . . He [Phillips] was called and saw the body at 6.20 a.m. and he then gives it as his opinion that death occurred about two hours earlier, viz: 4.20 a.m.

Phillips' exact words were, 'I should say the deceased had been dead at least two hours, *and probably more*'. Annie Chapman was murdered at 4.20 a.m. at the latest, but at a quarter to five her body was still not in the yard at 29 Hanbury Street. Where was it? Only Sickert offers an answer. It has been incorrectly reported by several authors that no blood was found anywhere but immediately adjacent to Chapman's body. The reporter of the *East London Advertiser*, likely to have been one of the first journalists on the scene, reported that blood was found not only in the passage leading to the yard but also in Hanbury Street itself. This is quite consistent with the body having been carried from Netley's coach into the yard, as is another major point which no one has yet explained. The uterus and its appendages were missing. Was this bloody trophy carried off by a mad lone killer, or was it simply left unnoticed in the place where she was murdered—Netley's coach?

Bearing in mind Sickert's description of the Stride murder, a hitherto unpublished statement recorded in the Home Office file is of crucial importance. A report by Chief Inspector Swanson says:

> 12.45 a.m. 30th Israel Schwartz of 22 Helen Street, Backchurch Lane stated that at that hour on turning into Berner Street from Commercial Road and had got as far as the gateway where the murder was committed he saw a man stop and speak to a woman, who was standing in the gateway. The man tried to pull the woman into the street, but turned her round and he threw her down on the footway and the woman screamed three times, but not very loudly. On crossing to the opposite side of the street, he saw a second man standing lighting his pipe. The man who threw the woman down called out apparently to the man on the opposite side of the road, "Lipski" and then Schwartz walked away, but finding that he was followed by the second man he ran as far as the railway arch, but the man did not follow so far. Schwartz cannot say whether the two men were together or known to each other. Upon being taken to the Mortuary, Schwartz identified the body as that of the woman he had seen and he thus describes the first man who threw the woman down:—age about 30, ht. 5ft. 5in. comp. fair, hair dark, small brown moustache, full face, broad shouldered; dress, dark jacket and trousers, black cap with peak, had nothing in his hands.
>
> Second man age 35, ht. 5ft. 11in. comp. fresh, hair light brown, moustache brown; dress, dark overcoat, old black hard felt hat, wide brim, had a clay pipe in his hand.

Schwartz's statement, which Swanson described as reliable, provides an uncanny parallel with Sickert's version of the murder. Admittedly Sickert did not mention that Netley had called out 'Lipski' a way of insulting Jews that became the vogue after a Jew of that name was hanged for murder in 1887. Nor did Sickert say that Anderson had followed anyone during his wait on the opposite side of the road. In fact he made no

---

[1] Later reports in the Home Office file make it clear that when the woman's assailant shouted 'Lipski' he was addressing Schwartz and not the man on the other side of the road as Schwartz at first imagined.

mention of anyone passing along Berner Street as the attack on Stride was taking place. Despite these omitted details, however, it cannot be denied that the scene Sickert described was exactly that witnessed by Schwartz. And even taking into account a marginal note on Schwartz's statement, written by Home Secretary Matthews, that 'the police apparently do not suspect the 2nd man whom Schwartz saw on the other side of the street', can there be any doubt that that man was keeping watch precisely as Sickert described? We have no proper physical description of Netley except the word of Sickert that he was short and the evidence of his birth certificate that shows he was twenty-eight years old at the time of the murders. The attacker seen by Schwartz was 'about 30, height five feet five inches', which fits closely.

Despite speculation by Chief Inspector Swanson that the man Schwartz saw accosting Stride may not have been her murderer, logic shows he was. The man was seen to turn Stride round and throw her down on the footway, on the self-same spot where she was found murdered only fifteen minutes later. It is inconceivable that this man left her and by coincidence another man appeared and carried out the same sort of attack on the same woman at the same place? The timing of the assault witnessed by Schwartz confirms that the scene he saw was the killer in action. At the inquest on Stride at the Vestry Hall in Cable Street, Dr Blackwell said, 'I consulted my watch on my arrival (at the scene of the murder) and it was just 1.10'.

Asked how long Stride had been dead, he replied, 'From twenty minutes to half an hour when I arrived'.

Counting back the minutes from 1.10 when the doctor arrived, we find that death is unlikely to have taken place later than 12.50, which was five minutes after the attack witnessed by Schwartz. According to Blackwell's evidence, the time of death is more likely to have been in the ten minutes preceding 12.50, which sets the murder *almost exactly* at the time Schwartz saw Stride attacked.

Schwartz's statement provides incontrovertible evidence that Sickert's description of Stride's murder was accurate. There is no possibility of Sickert having adapted his story to fit Schwartz's observations because until now the Schwartz story has never been published. Even though he was the only person ever to witness a Ripper murder taking place, *Schwartz was not called to give evidence at the inquest.* Here was yet another piece of vital testimony that was suppressed.

Sickert's assertion that Gull induced unconsciousness in four of the victims by feeding them poisoned grapes is another bizarre aspect of the case that connects with previously unknown facts contained in the secret files.

Grapes have an established connection with Jack the Ripper, and have become bound up in the folklore of the case. Cullen quoted the case of an elderly Polish woman called Annie Tapper who told him she had sold a bunch of grapes to Jack the Ripper when she was a girl of nine. Cullen explained the presence of the grapes in the Ripper legend as being based on the 'erroneous' report that grapes had been found clutched in the dead hands of a murder victim. Robin Odell tends to support Cullen's notion that the report of the grapes was incorrect. He told me, 'Most "Ripperologists" follow the line of the inquest on Stride which reported that she had *cachous* in her hand when found dead, *not grapes*'.

It is true that at Stride's inquest it was stated that her hand contained cachous. How then did the story about grapes get into circulation? The answer is found in a report which appeared in *The Times* on Monday, 1st October which said 'In her right hand were tightly clasped some grapes, and in her left she held a number of sweetmeats'. Now it is curious that *The Times* should have been mistaken in such a detail because in all other respects its minute description of Stride's corpse was totally accurate. In a separate report, the *Evening News* confirmed the finding of grapes in Stride's right hand, and it even found a witness who claimed he had sold grapes to a man he had seen with Stride. Yet at the inquest Dr Phillips, the doctor who had tried to hide evidence implicating the Freemasons at the Chapman inquest, went out of his way to discredit the reports about grapes being found.

He said, 'I am convinced that the deceased had not swallowed either skin or seed of a grape within many hours of her death'.

But he admitted that stains on Stride's handkerchief were fruit stains.

The existence of the grapes is confirmed by a single statement of fact in the Home Office file. Chief Inspector Swanson wrote:

> two private enquiry men acting conjointly with Vigilance Committee and the press, upon searching a drain in the yard *found a grape stem which was amongst the other matter swept from the yard* after its examination by the police. . . .

Only the dubious evidence of Freemason Dr Phillips cast the truth in doubt, a truth supported not only by *The Times* and the *Evening News* but by the police themselves. As the quote from the Home Office file shows, the evidence of the grapes was literally swept down the drain. We are doubtless close to finding who was responsible when we remember that Phillips was an active participator in the cover-up, and also the person most likely to have removed the Masonic symbol laid out at Annie Chapman's feet.

A Berner Street greengrocer called Matthew Packer was reported in the *Evening News* as having sold grapes to a man with Stride shortly before her murder. *Yet he was not called at the inquest.* Why?

The explanation for this perversion of justice has been that Packer's story was probably untrue, that either he or the *Evening News* had invented it. But this is not so. The Scotland Yard file contains documents that show beyond doubt that Packer was regarded by the police as a key witness and that his claim to have sold grapes to Stride's murderer was being taken very seriously by the authorities. The documents are contained in the slim folder on the Stride murder. The first is a report by Sergeant Stephen White and is countersigned by Abberline and Superintendent Arnold:

> I beg to report that acting under the instructions of Insp. Abberline, I in company with P.C. Dolden, C.I. Dpt., made inquiries at every house in Berners Street, Commercial Road, on 30th ult, with a view to obtain information respecting the murder. Any information that I could obtain I noted in a book supplied to me for that purpose. About 9 a.m. I called at 44 Berner Street, and saw Matthew Packer, fruiterer in a small way of business. I asked him what time he closed his shop on the previous night. He replied, "Half past twelve in consequence of the rain. It was no good for me to keep open." I asked him if he saw anything of a man or woman going into Dutfield's Yard, or saw anyone standing about the street about the time he was closing his shop. He replied, "No, I saw no one standing about, neither did I see anyone go up the yard. I never saw anything suspicious or heard the slightest noise, and knew nothing about the murder until I heard of it this morning."
>
> I also saw Mrs Packer, Sarah Harrison and Harry Douglas residing in the same house but none of them could give the slightest information respecting the matter.

> On 4th inst, I was directed by Inspr. Moore to make further inquiry and if necessary see Packer and take him to the Mortuary. I then went to 44 Berner Street and saw Mrs Packer, who informed me that two detectives had called and taken her husband to the Mortuary. I then went towards the Mortuary where I met Packer with a man. I asked him where he had been. He said, "This detective asked me to go to see if I could identify the woman." I said, "Have you done so?" He said, "Yes, I believe she bought some grapes at my shop about 12 o'clock on Saturday." Shortly afterwards they were joined by another man. I asked the men what they were doing with Packer and they both said that they were detectives. I asked for their authority. One of them produced a card from a pocket book, but would not allow me to touch it. They then said that they were private detectives. They then induced Packer to go away with them. About 4 p.m. I saw Packer at his shop. While talking to him the two men drove up in a hansom cab, and after going into the shop they induced Packer to enter the cab, stating that they would take him to Scotland Yard to see Sir Charles Warren.
>
> From inquiry I have made there is no doubt that these are the two men referred to in the attached newspaper cutting who examined the drain in Dutfield's Yard on 2nd inst. One of the men had a letter in his hand addressed to Le Grand & Co., Strand.

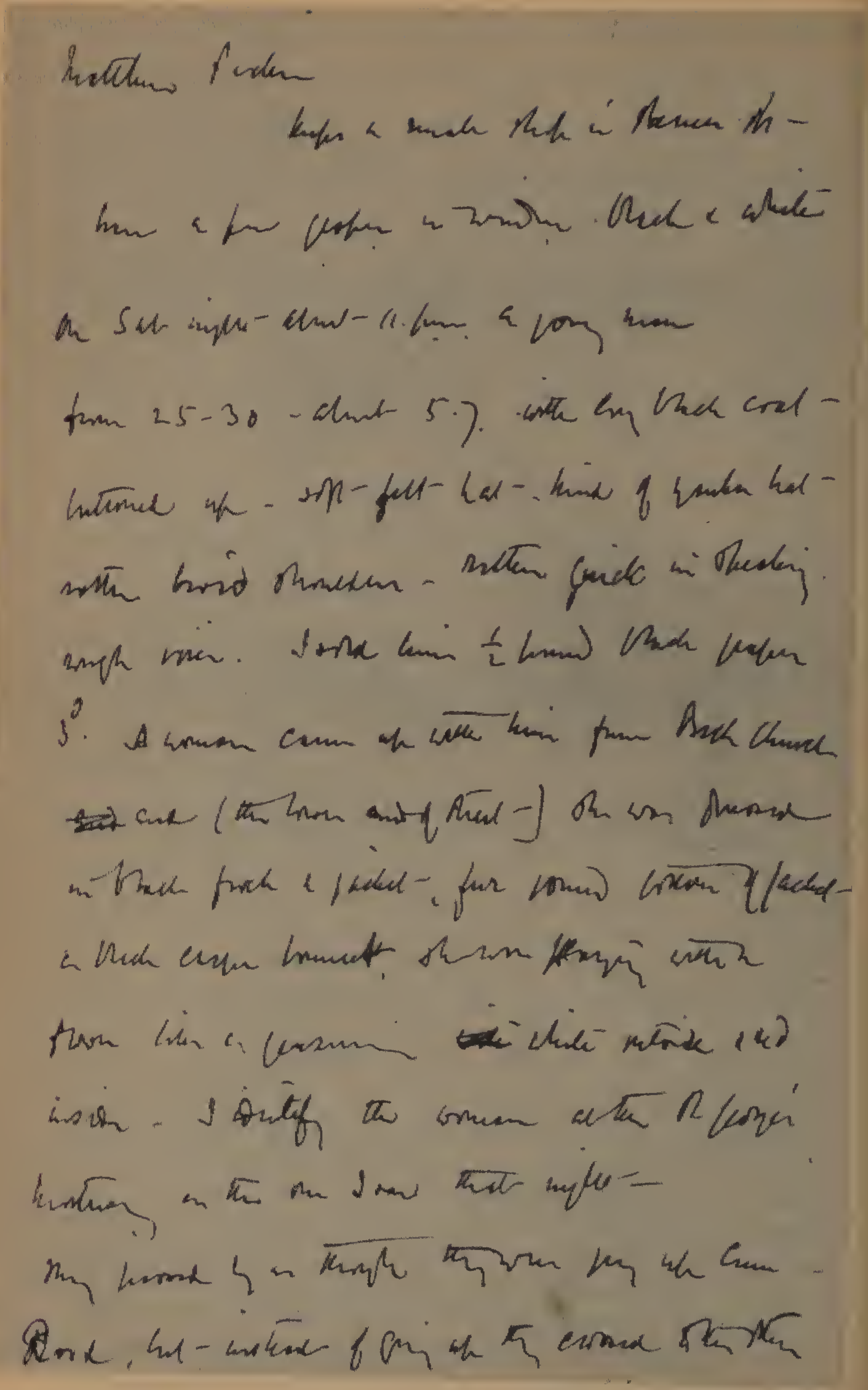
Apart from showing that the police thought of Packer as an important witness (why else would they call on him three times and conduct him to the mortuary?), this report also indicates something peculiar was going on. White was obviously surprised to find that Packer was already at the mortuary and that he was in the company of two 'detectives', when he called at the shop on 4th October. Clearly knowing nothing about the activity of the so-called detectives, White set off for the Mortuary. On the way he met Packer, along with two men who claimed they were private detectives. *They then induced Packer to go away with them.* From the words White used to describe their egress it is plain he was suspicious of the two men and their unorthodox methods. His suspicion was justified. What sort of detectives take away a witness even before the police running the investigation have interviewed him? On the second occasion when White met the men they claimed again they were private detectives, but refused to let White handle their identity card. Then they made what appeared to be the most outrageous claim of all, that they were taking Packer to see Sir Charles

Warren. Who were these men? What authority did they have for carrying on an investigation of Packer independently of the CID and uniformed men? How did they hope to get into the presence of Warren? What possible interest could the Chief Commissioner of the Metropolitan Police have had in the evidence of a lowly greengrocer?

Such questions could all be answered by the possibility that the so-called detectives were in fact journalists pulling a fast one over Sergeant White in order to get a good story, and to be first with the news. Such tactics were not unheard of. Just one thing disproves this—the second important document in the Yard file. This is an official statement by Packer, written in the unmistakable spider-like hand of *Sir Charles Warren*. This is strange indeed. It means Packer *was* taken to the Yard to see Warren by the two detectives. It must also mean they were not detectives but some sort of special investigators working quite independently of the CID and the uniformed branch. What is more important, they must have been working under the express instructions of Warren himself. For some reason Warren wanted to outwit his own officers, to find Packer and learn exactly what evidence he had before the policemen on the case got a chance to interview him. There are no other statements or reports in the file in Warren's own handwriting. He had taken no other direct part in the investigation except to erase the Masonic writing from the wall on the morning of 30th September. It is important to note that his undercover men were not engaged on the general details of the case. They had just two functions. The first was to pre-empt Packer's evidence about selling grapes to the Ripper. The second was to remove all trace of grapes from the drain in Dutfield's Yard.

If Warren had employed these men in the cause of justice he would have made sure that Packer's evidence was heard. But like Schwartz, the only other really important witness, he was not called at the inquest and his knowledge was suppressed.

Why should Warren have wanted to conceal the facts about the grapes? It has been shown that only evidence that could have helped identify the real killers was carefully and deliberately suppressed during the Ripper inquiries. But what possible use could grapes have been in identifying Jack the Ripper? Though it has never been recognized, grapes were a strong indication of the truth. Unusual in so many respects, Sir William Gull never went anywhere without raisins or grapes. In a letter written eleven years before the murders, and never before

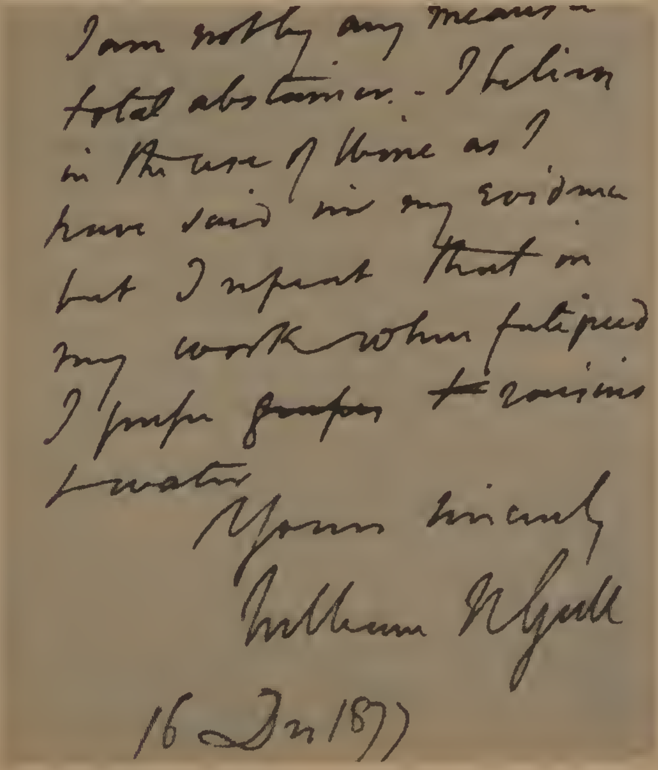


Matthew Packer
keeps a small shop in Berner St —
has a few grapes in window. black & white
On Sat night — about — 11 p.m. a young man
from 25-30 — about 5.7. with long black coat —
buttoned up — soft — felt — hat — kind of Yankee hat —
rather broad shoulders — rather quick in speaking.
rough voice. I sold him ½ pound black grapes
3d. A woman came up with him from Back Church
~~[illegible]~~ end (the lower end of street —) She was dressed
in black frock & jacket — fur round bottom of jacket —
a black crape bonnet, she was playing with a
flower like a geranium ~~[illegible]~~ white outside & red
inside — I identify the woman at the parish
mortuary as the one I saw that night —
They passed by as though they were going up Com —
Road, but — instead of going up they crossed to the other

Packer's statement

published, Gull incriminated himself. The letter, now in the library of the Royal College of Physicians, says:

> Dear Dr Duckworth
>
> When I read your remarks on my evidence [before the Lords' Committee on Intemperance] I thought you had misapprehended them. I have not a copy of the evidence I gave but what I intended to say was that when fatigued I personally refreshed myself by eating raisins.
>
> I have been in the habit of doing this for many years. I never travel or I may say go anywhere without raisins. They are always in my travelling bag and when in Scotland or the hills they form my luncheon with a biscuit and water. I eat no cane sugar but the sugar of the grape seems to supply the readiest refreshing material of which I have in my own person any experience. I take but little wine but I am not by any means a total abstainer. I believe in the use of wine as I have said in my evidence but I repeat that in my work when fatigued I prefer grapes and raisins and water.
>
> Yours sincerely
> William W. Gull
> 16 Dec 1877



I am not by any means a
total abstainer. - I believe
in the use of wine as I
have said in my evidence
but I repeat that in
my work when fatigued
I prefer grapes & raisins
& water
Yours sincerely
William W Gull
16 Dec 1877

Part of Gull's letter

CHAPTER SIXTEEN

The Third Man

By now it was a far cry from that weird morning in 'Hobo' Sickert's front room when he first divulged the details of his father's rambling saga. A year and a half of energetic research had culminated in a report which showed that the most unlikely story ever told about the Whitechapel Murders was indeed the long-sought solution. Walter Sickert appeared to have been transformed from a dubious story-teller into the one man in eighty-seven years of 'Ripperology' who had spoken the truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth. It remained only to examine his final statement, the sobering but by now no longer astonishing identification of Sir Robert Anderson as the third man.

Anderson was a Freemason of high standing, and he was appointed Assistant Commissioner of the Metropolitan Police on the very day Mary Nichols was murdered. As explained in Chapter 10, his non-Masonic predecessor, an able and enthusiastic detective called James Monro, had been the butt of an all-out attack from Warren for months. Warren was determined to be rid of Monro. And on the day he succeeded in removing him from office, Mary Nichols was killed.

There is no *concrete* evidence to incriminate Anderson in the murders. The worst that can be said of him is that he was a liar, and that his behaviour at the time of the murders was highly suspicious. He is arguably the most unlikely of the three men named to have been connected with the Ripper crimes in any direct sense.

His strange conduct began almost immediately after he took over as head of the CID. He stepped on to the scene hours after the death of Nichols, did his new job unremarkably for a week, and the day after the murder of Annie Chapman he left for a holiday in Switzerland—hardly the most responsible action to have taken. The Metropolitan Police area was a seething cauldron of vice and crime. Violence all over England was reaching new and disquieting heights, and in London the situation was critical. In addition to this existing turmoil a cold-blooded killer who even at that stage was regarded as a maniac was on the loose in the East End of London, having struck twice already. Yet Sir Robert Anderson deserted all his new responsibilities *to go on holiday*! In his autobiography *The Lighter Side of My Official Life* Anderson gave the reason for his untimely departure as ill-health. If he was so ill that he could not cope with his duties at a time when he was vitally needed, it is surprising he was appointed Assistant Commissioner at all. And it is intriguing that with such a serious incapacity he was able to make the long journey to Switzerland.

One other comment sheds light on Anderson's character but, it must be admitted, by no means incriminates him. When referring directly to the Ripper case he lied outrageously. In his memoirs he stated quite categorically that he knew the identity of the murderer:

> One did not need to be a Sherlock Holmes to discover that the criminal was a sexual maniac of a virulent type . . . and the conclusion we came to was that he and his people were certain low-class Polish Jews. . . . And the result proved our diagnosis was right on every point. For I may say at once that 'undiscovered murders' are rare in London, and the Jack the Ripper crimes are not within that category.

He went on to say that the 'double event' postcard was 'the creation of an enterprising London journalist'. He continued:

> Having regard to the interest in this case I am almost tempted to disclose the identity of the murderer and of the pressman who wrote the letter referred to. But no public benefit would result from such a course, and the traditions of my old department would suffer. I would merely add that the only person who ever had a good view of the murderer unhesitatingly identified the suspect the instant he was confronted with him; but he refused to give evidence against him. In saying he was a Polish Jew I am merely stating a definitely ascertained fact.

In this, we are not only expected to believe the Ripper was known to be a certain immigrant, but that he was in police custody and had even been identified by a witness who had seen him at the scene of a crime. Even the most gullible of readers would find this hard to swallow, and even harder the ludicrous claim that the police's single witness refused to give evidence against the killer. It was no doubt with a philosophic shrug of the shoulders that the arresting inspector watched Jack the Ripper walk free out of the police station!

Three years before he wrote this, Anderson told another story when he reported in his book *Criminals and Crime* that the Ripper had been 'safely caged in an asylum'. None of the police of the day agreed with either of Anderson's views, as is shown by the wealth of writing on the case penned by policemen of all ranks; none of his claims is supported by a single word in the files of Scotland Yard or the Home Office; none of the so-called 'facts' he claimed were 'definitely ascertained' were ever more than his own airy speculation. Either Anderson was inventing his stories to throw investigators off the scent of the Masons, or he was fantasizing to inflate his own ego. The puerile boast, 'I know who Jack the Ripper was, but I'm not telling!' has been surprisingly prevalent among supposedly mature men. Either way, Sir Robert Anderson, Freemason, one of the most high-ranking policemen connected with the Ripper case, dealt in fiction.

Whatever the truth about Anderson and his connection with the murders, one fact was becoming clear: Sickert had told the truth but not the whole truth. Everything he had said about Prince Eddy, Annie Elizabeth Crook, Sir William Gull and the murders themselves was true. Too many independent facts, and corroboration unhinted at by Sickert, have come to light for this to be otherwise. But he knew too much for his story to end at Cleveland Street, as he repeatedly told his son. It is clear from the depth and accuracy of his knowledge that Walter Sickert knew more than he claimed. To find out exactly *how* much more he knew, it is helpful to examine some of the least tangible aspects of his story.

One of the minor mysteries of art is contained in the paintings of Walter Sickert. An undisputed master, and regarded by many as the best of only a small group of English painters this century worthy of the name, Sickert produced a tremendous number of works. His output was reportedly 'greater than Constable's and Corot's taken collectively'. The exact number is unknown, as he had four major bases, Dieppe, Camden Town, Venice and Bath, and he was never particular about where he discarded his works. The riddle of his paintings surrounds odd inexplicable details and deliberate inconsistencies they contain, and also the seemingly irrelevant titles of some of his works. These have never been explained. Walter told his son that he had half unconsciously recalled the main events of the murders in some of his paintings, and that he had planted clues in his titles. One example of this, he said, was his picture called *Lazarus Breaks His Fast*, an impressionist portrait of a man eating black grapes with a spoon. As the only Biblical reference to Lazarus eating (in John XII) refers to meat, why did Sickert fill his plate with grapes? The painter said the picture was a veiled accusation of Gull, who had induced unconsciousness in the victims by feeding them poisoned grapes. This was specialist knowledge indeed, and there is now no realistic way of finding out if the victims were poisoned before being mutilated. The notion is in part supported by Dr Llewellyn, who examined the corpse of Nichols. A report by Abberline in the Yard file says:

> The inspector acquainted Dr Llewellyn who afterwards made a more minute examination and found that the wounds in the abdomen were in themselves sufficient to cause instant death, and he expressed an opinion that they were inflicted *before the throat was cut*.

Sickert is consequently one of the few who have claimed that the cutting of the throat was not the cause of death, a claim confirmed by the official post-mortem report. Bearing in mind the artist's accuracy in all other points so far examined, and taking into account that the secret file (of which he could have known nothing) contained a medical opinion that at least one of the victims was dead before her throat was cut, it seems likely Sickert was right in his description of Gull's method of killing. There is still one slim chance that the truth might be discovered even at this late date. If the bodies of the victims were exhumed, tests of their bone marrow might possibly reveal traces of the poison. Sickert's specific reference to grapes also ties up with Gull's self-confessed partiality for the fruit; with the grapes found clutched in Stride's dead hand, the existence of which was carefully covered up; and with the story of the greengrocer Packer, which Sir Charles Warren wanted desperately to suppress.

If Sickert's knowledge of the method of the killers is accurate his involvement in the affair must have been much closer than he admitted. Walter Sickert, not Sir Robert Anderson, was the third member of the Ripper party. Psychologically, this explanation is far more consistent with Sickert's compulsion to tell the story before he died, and with his painting clues about the case into his pictures. His story about the motive for the killings, their Masonic significance, and the involvement of Gull and Netley is all true, as has been shown. But a man whose story in reality ended at Cleveland Street could not have had at his fingertips such a wealth of detail about the actual crimes. And he would not have been so obsessed with the case. If Sickert had been directly involved, he had participated in the perfect crime, which might explain his fixation with the case. For in real terms there is no such thing as the perfect crime; if no one is ever caught only the perpetrator knows of its perfection. The pressures on such a compulsive conversationalist as Sickert to reveal his own 'perfect' crime must have been immense. But he knew that if he told the *whole* truth the perfection would have been shattered by his own implication. Cleverly, he substituted his part in the operation with that of a man he knew was supposed to have been out of the country during much of the Ripper's reign, a man who had no alibi. Anderson's indictment by Sickert, and the peculiar events surrounding Anderson's appointment as Assistant Commissioner, indicate that Anderson was involved in the conspiracy. The fact that as a Freemason he was the man Warren wanted so much as second-in-command for the duration of the Ripper crimes suggests he actively abetted Warren in the cover-up, which was Warren's sole purpose in becoming Commissioner in the first place.

By a coincidence of the sort which abound in Ripper research, two hours after deciding Sickert was deeply involved in the actual murders, I read this passage in McCormick's *The Identity of Jack the Ripper:*

> Yet another suggestion made is that Walter Sickert, the painter, was Jack the Ripper. The reason for Sickert being suspected is that he was believed to have made sketches and paintings of the Ripper crimes. . . .

Someone had already pointed an accusing finger at Sickert. But who? In the fifteen years that had elapsed since McCormick wrote his book, his notes on Sickert had been lost. But the fact remained that Sickert had been accused for reasons completely unconnected with the unintentional clues contained in the story he told his son.

At the time of the murders Sickert was living in various rooms and lodging-houses all over the East End. This was the period when he was painting his famous music-hall pictures, all set in and around East London. He would go out nightly and pick up women of the streets to pose as his models for the paintings he did of squalid interiors and poverty-stricken inhabitants. At this time he was unable to afford professional models, who would anyway not have possessed the tired and often sagging figures so essential to the harsh truths he was striving to depict. In *The Life and Opinions of Walter Richard Sickert*, Dr Robert Emmons wrote:

> He used to go nightly to music halls and walk home from Hoxton, Shoreditch, Canning Town or Islington, across Primrose Hill, and so on to Hampstead. He wore a loud check coat, long to the ankles, and carried a little bag for his drawings. One night in Copenhagen Street a party of young girls fled from him in terror, yelling, "Jack the Ripper, Jack the Ripper!"

It is easy to see why such an incident occurred; Sickert bore a striking resemblance to the Jack the Ripper of the popular imagination. In retrospect, we can now see that the universal image of the Ripper was in fact based on the descriptions given by witnesses who saw Sickert at the scene of at least two of the murders. One of the most reliable descriptions of a man seen with a victim shortly before her death, that of P.C. Smith in Berner Street, said the suspect's age was twenty-eight. This was noted by the trained eye of a police constable, who was quite specific in his estimate. In 1888 Sickert was exactly twenty-eight.

In the late eighties, despite his growing reputation as a painter and his large circle or highly placed friends, Sickert spun out his life on a shoestring. Though his clothes were invariably well cut, he did not as yet have the resources to replace them as often as he might have liked. He was nearly six feet tall, and at this stage in his life, according to his friend, the Irish writer George Moore, wore a little fair moustache that was 'a frizzle of gold'. Compare Sickert's appearance at that time with the following description of a man seen with Catherine Eddowes in Duke Street, leading to Mitre Square, shortly before her murder. It is generally regarded as one of the most valuable descriptions of the Ripper. *The Times* stated:

> He is of shabby appearance, about 30 years of age and 5ft 9in in height, of fair complexion, having a small fair moustache, and wearing a red neckerchief and a cap with a peak.

In all essential details the description fits Sickert. Is it coincidence that another reliable witness, George Hutchinson, who saw a man conduct Marie Kelly to her room, described him too as having a red handkerchief? Remembering that red is an unusual colour for a handkerchief, and that it was even more so in the conservative days of Victoria, one final observation on this point is crucial. Sickert possessed a red handkerchief that, in the words of his friend Marjorie Lilly, appeared to have 'some mysterious connection'. Miss Lilly recalled in her book on Sickert that his red handkerchief

> was an important factor in the process of creating his picture, a lifeline to guide the train of his thought, as necessary as the napkin which Mozart used to fold into points which met each other when he too was composing.

The mystery which surrounded Sickert's red handkerchief Miss Lilly never knew. It was closely associated in his mind with two seemingly contradicting ideas—in some vague way with the Church, and more definitely with murder. And according to Miss Lilly, murder to Sickert meant Jack the Ripper. When he was painting his *Camden Town Murder* series it was never out of his sight. Miss Lilly can remember him while he was painting this series:

> while he was reliving the scene he would assume the part of a ruffian, knotting the handkerchief loosely around his neck, pulling a cap over his eyes and lighting his lantern. Immobile, sunk deep in his chair, lost in the long shadows of that vast room, he would meditate for hours on his problem. When the handkerchief had served its immediate purpose it was tied to any doorknob or peg that came handy to stimulate his imagination further, to keep the pot boiling. It played a necessary part in the performance of the drawings, spurring him on at crucial moments, becoming so interwoven with

> the actual working out of his idea that he kept it constantly before his eyes.

It was so vital to him because this was the handkerchief he had worn on the nights he was Jack the Ripper. Unless this is true, that Sickert was the man with the red handkerchief seen by two independent witnesses on the nights of two Ripper murders, what explanation is there for his obsessive connection of the article *with murder*? Corroboration fell from his own lips, for he told his son that *The Camden Town Murder* series was based on the murder of Marie Kelly.

Parts of Sickert's character cannot be reconciled to the idea of a man who knew the truth of the Ripper murders but was not personally involved. One aspect is inconsistent even with the man whose interest in the case was passionate, unless that passion were based on complicity. For after a stroke late in his life, Walter Sickert came to think he was Jack the Ripper. Before she had any notion of my thoughts on her old friend, Marjorie Lilly told me,

> After the stroke Sickert would have "Ripper periods" in which he would dress up like the murderer and walk about like that for weeks on end. He would turn down the lights in his studio and literally *be* Jack the Ripper in word and mood.
>
> All his life he would go out in the middle of the night and, like Dickens, simply walk around the streets of London until morning. He found that the thinking which is so vital for a painter he could best do wandering completely alone through the dark streets of Kentish Town or the East End.

They say, and not without some justification, that a criminal always returns to the scene of his crime. Were Sickert's nocturnal excursions a sort of psychological return to the atmosphere of which he had been so much a part? And after his stroke, when he no longer had the presence of mind or the superhuman control to hide the real truth, did the character of fifty years before become dominant in a mind well known for its tortuous complexity? Miss Lilly refers again and again in her book to Sickert's compulsion, whenever he was walking in London, to dart down dark alleys and explore all manner of unknown passages. This practice gave him just the sort of detailed knowledge of London's geography that has been repeatedly attributed to Jack the Ripper.

Studied in the light of his claim that they contain hidden references to the Ripper crimes, Sickert's paintings are rich evidence of the state of his mind. He used often to give his paintings names which appeared to bear no relation to their content, like several quite different pictures called *Jack and Jill.* Joseph Sickert says his father used this title because he was remembering the piece of doggeral penned by a frequenter of Cleveland Street, which has been mentioned already:

Jack and Jill went out to kill
For things they couldn't alter
Jack fell down and lost his crown
And left a baby daughter.

That his mind was constantly turning on the Ripper saga and its roots in Cleveland Street is shown most clearly in one particular picture. This is the richest evidence of all that Sickert littered his art with clues about the case. It is a disturbing painting about which he made no comment to his son. It depicts a gaunt Victorian room with a high ceiling. On the wall in the centre of a fireside alcove is some sort of ornament whose definition is indistinct, but which can be nothing other than a death's head. This age-old harbinger of impending doom is gazing down upon a woman dressed poorly in a blouse and long skirt. She is averting her face from its baleful gaze, her hand has been brought to her cheek in despair and a look of anguish is passing across her features. In suggesting that this woman is Marie Kelly with Death staring her in the face, I could justly be accused of allowing my imagination to run riot, except for one thing—the mysterious title of the picture. Like so many of Sickert's titles, it has never been explained. He gave it two names, *X's Affiliation Order* and *Amphytrion.* Remembering that an affiliation order fixes the paternity of an illegitimate child, can we escape the conclusion that Sickert was recalling the events of Cleveland Street? And who is X? Bearing in mind Sickert's story about the highest in the land disguising himself as a lesser being, and in that form seducing an ordinary girl and making her pregnant, consider the alternative title of this picture, *Amphytrion.* The legend of Amphytrion tells how Jupiter, King of the Gods, *the highest* in Olympus, *disguised himself as a lesser being to seduce an ordinary woman, who became pregnant by him.*

Old Walter spoke about another picture, which he had given two names. This was a full-face portrait of a square-chinned woman wearing a large hat. It is called *Blackmail* or *Mrs Barrett*. No one has been able to explain why it was given either of these titles. Sickert told his son it was a picture of Marie Kelly, and indeed Kelly did have a square chin, and the portrait bears a strong resemblance to drawings of Kelly which appeared in the newspapers after she was murdered. He called it alternatively *Mrs Barrett* because when she got to Dorset Street Kelly took up with a man called Barrett and was known as his wife. In this Sickert was mistaken, because Kelly's common-law husband was called Joseph *Barnett*, not Barrett. The painter's intention was nevertheless as he described it. He called it *Blackmail* because Kelly was the centre of the blackmail involving the royal bastard.

He painted a picture of a line-up of music-hall chorus girls, each with a blood-red dress and some sort of neck scarf. These, he said, represented the Ripper victims. The swirling coloured borders of their dresses represented their mutilations, and the scarves were the wounds in their throats.

The Camden Town Murder series is called alternatively *What Shall We Do For The Rent?* Once again, said Sickert, these paintings were inspired by Kelly. They show a naked woman sprawled out on a bed. As well as the prostrate nude, a man appears in these pictures. In some of them he is sitting on the end of the bed wringing his hands, in others he stands over the body of the woman. Sickert said he used the alternative title *What Shall We Do For The Rent?* because Kelly was long overdue with her rent. Her body was in fact discovered by a man sent to collect some back rent from her. The other title, *The Camden Town Murder*, is more readily understandable. This was a real-life murder which took place in 1907 and in which a woman had her throat cut as she lay in her own bed. While reflecting that the murderer was never caught, it may be interesting to remember Sickert's dictum that a painter cannot paint something of which he has no experience—and the fact that some years after the death of Sickert's second wife, his French cook Marie Pepin unaccountably vanished, and as far as his friends knew was never seen again. The connection between *The Camden Town Murder* series and Marie Kelly does not end there. According to Robert Emmons, Sickert used to tell people that the model for the series had been called Marie.

It is interesting that Robert Wood, the man who was tried and acquitted of the Camden Town Murder, was a friend of

Sickert's, and even acted as his model for the series. It was Wood's friends, doubtless led by Sickert, who hired a solicitor to defend him. By coincidence, that solicitor was Arthur Newton, the same man who had conspired with the Government in hushing up Eddy's connections with Cleveland Street in 1889.

Another picture called *Blackmail*, this one in pastel, depicts a young woman sitting demurely in a high-backed chair. Her eyes are glazed, the end of her nose appears to be missing and the lack of definition in the lower part of the face renders the mouth almost non-existent. To a far greater extent, this is what Jack the Ripper did to Marie Kelly.

Perhaps a more obvious indication of Sickert's psyche, though, is contained in *The Painter In His Studio*, a self-portrait. In the foreground is a headless sculpture of a woman, the limbs incomplete. Unlike a real sculpture, however, this piece has not crumbled through the ravages of time. The limbs appear to have been torn or *ripped* from the torso, as if the woman has been the victim of some vile butchery.

His preoccupation with death is apparent in several works. A good example is *Le Journal*, which appears to be a straightforward portrait of a woman lying down and reading a newspaper, which she holds in the air above her head. 'That woman is dead', Sickert confided to his son, and pointed out the detail most people miss—that the bottom of the newspaper is partly obscured by the woman's hair. This means she is not reading it at all. It lies on the floor behind her. And, without doubt, she is dead.

In *Ennui*, a picture within the picture depicts Queen Victoria. What appears to be a bird fluttering near her head is in fact a *gull*, Sickert told his son.

Even in his later pictures Sickert could not forget Eddy and the events he had set in motion. In 1935 he painted *King George V and Queen Mary*, a portrait of the royal couple in their car. The front half of the Queen is obscured by the window-frame of the vehicle. This, said Sickert, was in memory of the fact that half of Mary belonged to Eddy (they had been engaged to be married when Eddy died).

The painter displayed his abiding interest in prostitutes in various pictures, painted at all stages in his career. *Cocotte de Soho* and *The Belgian Cocotte* are the two best.

Finally, his *La Hollandaise*, painted in 1905, and another version of *Mrs Barrett* lead us back to Miller's Court and the nightmare of 9th November 1888. This *Mrs Barrett* was also based on Kelly, Sickert claimed. It is more disturbing than the versions so far mentioned. The subject is this time shown in profile. Her eyes are sunk in deep black shadow like a skull, and her face is deathly pale. *La Hollandaise* is an abomination. It depicts a large-limbed nude reclining awkwardly on a bed in a melancholy room. Her face is quite unrecognizable, and the difficulty presented in trying to discern her features is similar to that experienced in studying the Scotland Yard photograph of Kelly's mutilated face. The nose of *La Hollandaise* seems to have been cut off, like Kelly's, her eyes are blurred and the whole effect is that she has the head of an animal rather than a human. The same nauseating feeling is gained from the picture of Kelly.

Psychologist Dr Anthony Storr, formerly a Harley Street consultant, agrees that Sickert's behaviour in painting clues into his pictures could be consistent with his having taken part in the Ripper murders. 'It is certain', he said, 'that people with guilty secrets do suffer from a compulsion to drop clues, as Sickert claimed to have done in his paintings'.

The two major writers on Sickert, Robert Emmons and Marjorie Lilly, who were both closely associated with him, have each remarked on a strange, morose side to his character which most of the time lay hidden beneath sparkling wit and charm, but which would appear, in the words of Emmons, in flashes of coldness. Referring to one such manifestation of the darker side of his nature, Miss Lilly recalled 'how completely Dr Jekyll had assumed the mantle of Mr Hyde'. Emmons made the comment that 'The serpent lay dormant in the basket of figs'. He went on:

> Sometimes, when a mood of depression or misanthropy caught him, he would remain invisible for weeks at a time, and then suddenly reappear as gay and debonair as ever.

Moving to the documentary evidence against Sickert, two of the best descriptions of the Ripper (P.C. Smith's and Hutchinson's) say he was carrying a parcel. Smith described it as 'a parcel wrapped in newspaper, about eighteen inches long and six to eight inches broad'. Its dimensions preclude it from being a knife, as some writers have suggested. Smith's observations do tie in with Sickert's statement that the murderers tracked down Kelly with the help of a portrait. He omitted to explain, however, where the killers could possibly have come by such a portrait. There is not likely to have been a photograph of Kelly, so it must have been a painting or sketch, probably the latter. Sickert is drawn more definitely into the web when we realize only he would have been in a position to provide a picture of Kelly, probably one sketched from memory. We already know that Sickert had rooms all over the East End at this period, and nightly employed prostitutes as models. The fact that he had not one but several retreats in the heart of Jack the Ripper's territory, and that he was a familiar figure among the East End tarts, would have put Sickert in the best possible position to track down Kelly and her accomplices on behalf of the conspirators.

The parcel was seen for the second time by Hutchinson on the night of 9th November. He described it as 'about eight inches long with a strap round it, covered in dark American cloth'. Because this description naturally inspired the vision of a knife, it has been assumed the parcel Hutchinson saw was *narrow*. But Hutchinson gave no hint as to the parcel's breadth, so it might just as easily have been six inches wide. This is far more likely, because a thin parcel would not have required a carrying strap. Once again, with Hutchinson's description there is the connection with the artist, for American cloth was used for wrapping pictures. It is true that though P.C. Smith's description does fit Sicket, Hutchinson's does not. It has been unanimously decided the two witnesses had seen different men. But the colourful description Hutchinson provided, regarded by the police as genuine, better fitted a stage villain than anyone in real life. Greasepaint ran in Sickert's veins as surely as blood and oil paint. He loved the theatre, he was a trained actor, *and he loved adopting eccentric disguises.*

Sickert's story of the murder of Stride by Netley (with Anderson keeping watch on the opposite side of the road) tallies exactly with previously unpublished facts revealed in the Home Office file, except for one point. The description of the man who was standing watch does not fit Anderson. Israel Schwartz, who saw Stride murdered, described the watcher thus:

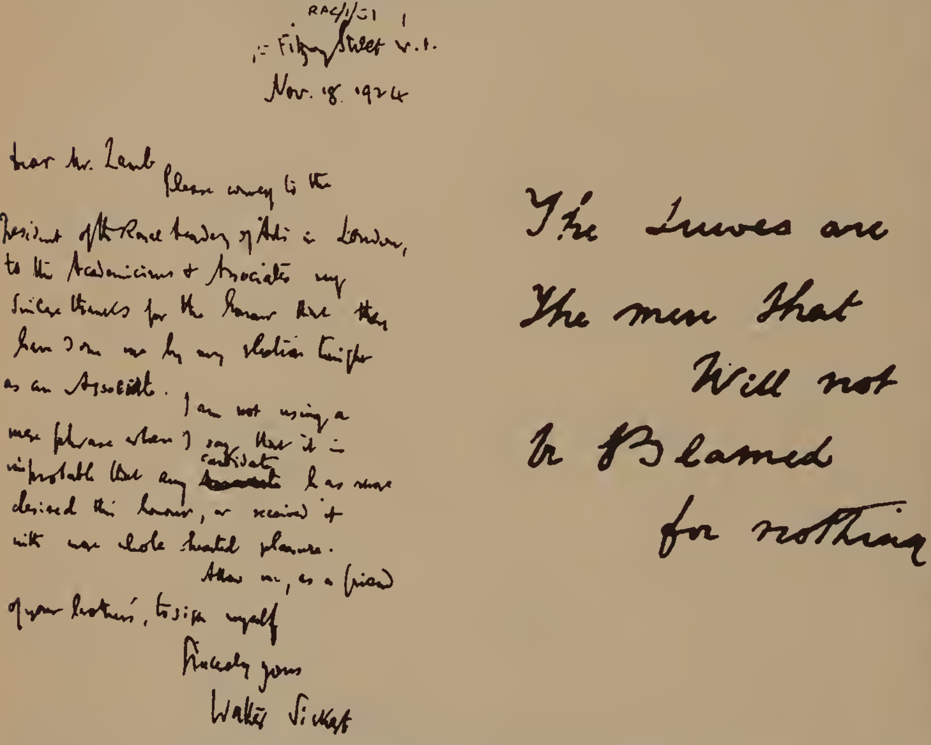
> Age 35 [Sickert was twenty-eight], height 5ft. 11in. [Sickert was just under six feet], complexion fresh [Sickert had a fair complexion], hair light brown [Sickert's hair was light brown], moustache brown [Sickert had a fair moustache]; dress, dark overcoat, old black hard felt hat, wide

> brim, had a claypipe in his hand [According to Marjorie Lilly, Sickert only smoked cigars when she knew him. It is impossible to discover his smoking habits when young].

The descriptions do not tally precisely. The age, for instance, is seven years out. In Schwartz's hurry and nervousness he is not likely to have got a clear picture of the man he saw, but one thing he could be positive about, however uncertain the light, and that is the man's height. He said quite definitely that the man he saw was about five feet eleven inches tall, a stature less common in Victorian times than today. This was Sickert's height to within a few millimetres.

The substitution of Sickert for Anderson as the third man resolves several inconsistencies in the Sickert story. It makes sense of Lord Salisbury having entered his Dieppe studio and paying him £500 for a picture for which he might otherwise have received £3. The incident could well have happened. Salisbury used regularly to holiday in Dieppe in the eighties, and Osbert Sitwell referred to the incident in his introduction to *A Free House!* But when Sickert told the story to Sitwell he did not involve himself in it. He said the subject of Salisbury's generosity was the artist Vollon. Only when he came to disclosing the real background to the Ripper case to his son did he also explain the truth of the Salisbury episode. Until then he had used the amended version in much the same way he had used the veterinary student story. It satisfied his compulsion to talk about the subject, but shed no light on the real facts, which he regarded, even until a few years before his death, as highly dangerous. It is inconceivable that Salisbury would have bribed Sickert into silence. Far more plausible is the idea that the money was *payment* for his part in the plan, and his assistance in making it work. To be fair, it is likely that Sickert was coerced into helping the Freemasons, and that it was abhorrent to him to have been a party to the destruction of Kelly, whom he had personally brought from the East End to help Annie Elizabeth. But in the words of his son, 'The old man would do anything to get on'. It is certain he would have stopped at little to save himself from the sort of fate that befell Annie Elizabeth. He was, after all, a prime mover in the Cleveland Street episode, and knew far too much to be left alone. There may even have been in one of his acts a peculiar sort of bid for redemption: an attempt to save Kelly. An operation of the sort Gull was executing would never have resulted in such a basic mistake as a confusion of identities, as Sickert claimed happened the night Eddowes died. If the conspirators believed Eddowes was Kelly they had not made an error; they had been deliberately misled. Sickert was the man responsible, and a tardy attempt at saving Kelly seems the only explanation.[1]

Three episodes in particular bear the singular mark of Sickert, and display the same sort of mentality that would plant clues to a murder in works of art. These episodes are the careful placing of rings and coins at Chapman's feet, the writing of the chalk message on the wall and the planting of the grapes in Stride's hand. These acts must have been performed by one of the Rippers; the first, it seems, was removed by Dr Phillips and the last two were both covered up by Warren because they pointed the finger at Masons in general and, in the case of the grapes, at Gull in particular.


RAC/1/S1

15 Fitzroy Street W.1.
Nov. 18. 1924

Dear Mr. Lamb
Please convey to the President of the Royal Academy of Arts in London, to the Academicians & Associates my sincere thanks for the honour that they have done me by my election to-day as an Associate.
I am not using a mere phrase when I say that it is improbable that any ~~[illegible]~~ candidate has ever desired this honour, or received it with more whole hearted pleasure.
Allow me, as a friend of your brother's, to sign myself
Sincerely yours
Walter Sickert

The Juwes are
The men That
Will not
be Blamed
for nothing

The writing on the wall in Goulston Street, and an example of Sickert's handwriting

For one of the killers to have written the message on the wall he would have had to have gone *east* from Mitre Square, because Goulston Street is in the heart of Whitechapel. This is inconsistent with Sickert's report in that Gull would certainly have headed straight back into the West End. But Sickert had various rooms in the East End at this time. After the Mitre Square murder he is likely to have parted from his accomplices and scurried to one of his hideouts. Did he live in Wentworth Dwellings, Goulston Street, where the writing was found? It is impossible to find out. Lodgers' names never appeared in the rate books. But in writing on the wall, 'The Juwes are the men that will not be blamed for nothing', the Ripper was doing exactly what Sickert did later in his paintings. And the careful copy of the writing on the wall in the Home Office file, reproduced (p.260) for the first time anywhere, bears a certain resemblance to Sickert's handwriting.

---

[1] Allied to this is the question of Kelly's rent. The average weekly rent for a man and his family was about 2*s*. 10*d*., yet Kelly's room cost 4*s*. 6*d*. a week—a sum she certainly could not have afforded. Who was paying to keep her in hiding?

Sickert is almost certain to have been the man who arranged the rings and coins at Chapman's feet and who bought grapes from Packer, which he planted in Stride's hand to point a camouflaged finger at Gull. Not surprisingly, on all three occasions his clues were misinterpreted or removed. So he began painting the same sort of esoteric hints into his pictures.

Obviously Joseph Sickert found it impossible to accept that his father was not the knight in shining armour who alone carried the banner of truth to a future generation. He could hardly be expected instantly to believe that the story he has nurtured in secret most of his life missed out on one major point, that Sickert was not a helpless bystander but actually one of the Rippers. He may or may not have killed, but he was an accomplice to the most savage crimes of his generation.

It was in complete innocence, not to say naivety, that one day shortly after I began pondering the old man's entanglement in the actual murders, Joseph Sickert showed me some of his father's belongings. They included a dark brown doctor's bag, which meant a great deal to old Sickert and in which he used to carry his paints. This must have been the 'battered old Gladstone bag to which he was greatly attached', recalled by Marjorie Lilly. A bag just like this one has become woven into the fabric of Ripper lore. Many people who carried such bags at the time walked in danger of being lynched because the populace were convinced from several descriptions of suspected men that the bag was a trademark of the Ripper. Where Sickert came by the bag I have no idea. It was definitely a doctor's bag, divided into numerous compartments for the storage of medicines and surgical instruments. The second item I noticed in the pile of belongings was a small metal case about six inches long and one and a half inches wide. It had a small bloodstain on it. I asked about it and Joseph handed it to me. It contained three surgical knives, razor-sharp.

'I don't know where the old man got those, or even what he used them for', he said ingenuously. 'I think he was given them as a young man.'

The items may have no significance. I merely mention them as extra detail in the abundantly colourful portrait of a near-perfect murderer, which I will leave as it stands, except to repeat one further comment made to me by Walter's own son:

'He was a strange man. He would start weeping for no reason sometimes, terribly moved by something long ago.'

Afterword by Joseph Sickert

When my mother died she was deaf, nearly blind, and paralysed. The deafness she inherited from her father, the Duke of Clarence, whose blood I think of as a taint to our family. Some descendants of royalty have found their ancestry a source of pride. I find mine disgusting. Had I been a plumber descended from a long line of plumbers, I'd have been a far happier man; none of the events so carefully documented by Stephen Knight would have happened. If my mother's deafness was a direct result of Clarence's intrusion into our family, her blindness and paralysis were indirectly attributable to the same cause: they were the after-effects of her encounters with John Netley. Apart from the physical after-effects of the injuries she received on the two occasions Netley tried to kill her, she also suffered terrible stress and nervousness for the whole of the rest of her life. In her teens this tension receded a little but after she was about twenty, with each year that passed she became quieter, more introspective, more nervous of strangers, and more preoccupied with the idea that her life was in danger. I saw my mother slowly destroyed, not only physically but mentally too. Believe me, there is no pleasure or pride in being an illegitimate descendent of the Duke of Clarence.

At last the burden of knowledge I have carried so long has been lifted from me. In a strange sort of way my mother and grandmother have been revenged. Those who caused their suffering are now named. They cannot hide their guilty faces from the world any longer. Though I took a long time to accept it fully, it is true that a truth such as this should be made known to everyone.

Also, the stain is cleansed from the families of men who have been named by various authors in the past as the Whitechapel killer—men like Montague Druitt, J. K. Stephen, Frank Miles and of course the Duke of Clarence. The families of all these people owe their gratitude to Stephen Knight, who has brought the true story to light.

When the author told me his conclusions about my father's involvement in the case I was disturbed. There is no point in denying that I was also angry. I felt he had let me down and betrayed my trust. But later I had to admit that my father must have known more than he told me. It was a fact that I had half realized all along. And possibly one of the reasons I allowed my story to be investigated in the first place was that I hoped new facts might be uncovered that would somehow dispel my worst private fears about my father. In the event the investigation has had the opposite effect and my fears have been confirmed.

I should like to say that my concern all along has been for my mother and my grandmother. The old man was always able to look after himself and I've always thought of him, in a way, as an interloper like Clarence. I did not see all that much of him as a child but we did like each other and I did trust him. If Stephen Knight is correct in his conclusions, and I am forced to admit, reluctantly, that his reasoning is sound, I do not bear my father any malice. As it says in the final chapter of this book, 'it is likely that Sickert was coerced into helping the Freemasons, and that it was abhorrent to him to have been a party to the destruction of Kelly'. Apart from fear for his own life, which I agree *could* have induced him to participate in the elimination of the five East End women, I think it is more than likely that he received more persuasive threats even than that. How the monsters who masterminded this whole disgusting affair would have worded their insane threats I don't know, but if my father's assistance was so vital to them I can well believe the burden of their message was, 'Help us, Sickert, or we'll not only kill you. We'll kill the child as well.'

None of this justifies, but it might begin to explain why an essentially good man would do what it seems my father did.

Bibliography

BOOKS

Acland, Theodore Dyke
William Withey Gull, A Biographical Sketch (Adlard and Son, 1896).
Anderson, Sir Robert
Criminals and Crime (J. Nisbet, 1907).
The Lighter Side of My Official Life (Hodder and Stoughton, 1910).
Archer, Fred
Ghost Detectives: Crime and the psychic world (W. H. Allen, 1970).
Barker, Richard H. (Editor)
The Fatal Caress and Other Accounts of English Murders from 1551 to 1881 (Duell, Sloan and Pearce, 1947).
Barnard, Allan (Editor)
The Harlot Killer: The Story of Jack the Ripper in Fact and Fiction (Dodd Mead, 1953).
Baron, Wendy
Sickert (Phaidon, 1973).
Battiscombe, Georgina
Queen Alexandra (Constable, 1969).
Besant, Sir Walter
East London (Chatto and Windus, 1901).
Blake, Robert
The Conservative Party from Peel to Churchill (Eyre and Spottiswoode, 1970).
Brewer, John Francis
The Curse Upon Mitre Square A.D. 1530–1888 (Simpkin Marshall, 1888).
Bridges, Yseult
How Charles Bravo Died (Jarrolds, 1956).
Browne, Douglas G.
The Rise Of Scotland Yard: A History of the Metropolitan Police (Harrap, 1956).

Browse, Lillian
Sickert (Hart-Davis, 1960).
Buckle, George Earle (Editor)
The Letters of Queen Victoria: Third Series, Vol. 1 (Murray, 1930).
Carter, Dr Alan Barham
All About Strokes (Nelson, 1968).
Crowley, Aleister
The World's Tragedy (Paris, 1910).
Cullen, Tom
Autumn of Terror (Bodley Head, 1965).
Emmons, Dr Robert
The Life and Opinions of Walter Richard Sickert (Faber and Faber, 1941).
Farson, Daniel
Jack the Ripper (Michael Joseph, 1972).
Gaunt, William
The Pre-Raphaelite Tragedy (Cape, 1965).
Griffiths, Major Arthur
Mysteries of Police and Crime (Cassell, 1898).
Halsted, Dennis
Doctor in the Nineties (Johnson, 1959).
Hannah, Walton
Darkness Visible, A Revelation And Interpretation of Freemasonry (Augustine Press, now Britons Publishing Co, 1952).
Harrison, Michael
Clarence (W. H. Allen, 1972).
Hirschfeld, Magnus
Sexual Anomalies and Perversions (Encyclopaedic Press, 1938).
Hyde, H. Montgomery
Their Good Names (Hamish Hamilton, 1970).
Jones, Elwyn, and Lloyd, John
The Ripper File (Weidenfeld and Nicolson, 1975).
Lilly, Marjorie
Sickert, The Painter and His Circle (Elek, 1971).
Longford, Elizabeth
Victoria R.I. (Weidenfeld and Nicolson, 1964).
MacKenzie, Norman (Editor)
Secret Societies (Aldus, 1967).
Macnaghten, Sir Melville
Days of My Years (Edward Arnold, 1915).
McCormick, Donald
The Identity of Jack the Ripper (Jarrolds, 1959; Pan, 1962; Arrow and J. Long, 1970).
Magnus, Sir Philip
King Edward the Seventh (John Murray, 1964).
Matters, Leonard
The Mystery of Jack the Ripper (Hutchinson, 1929; and W. H. Allen, 1949).

Morgan, William
Freemasonry Exposed (Glasgow, 1836).
Newton, Joseph Fort
The Builders: A Story and Study of Masonry (Hogg, 1917; Allen and Unwin, 1918).
Odell, Robin
Jack the Ripper In Fact and Fiction (Harrap, 1965; Mayflower, 1966).
Rumbelow, Donald
The Complete Jack the Ripper (W. H. Allen, 1975).
Sitwell, Sir Osbert
Noble Essences or Courteous Revelations (Macmillan, 1950).
A Free House! or The Artist as Craftsman, being the Writings of Walter Richard Sickert (Macmillan, 1947).
Sparrow, Gerald
Vintage Edwardian Murder (Arthur Barker, 1971).
Stewart, William
Jack the Ripper: A New Theory (Quality Press, 1939).
Stow, John
Survey of London (1598).
Van Thal, Herbert (Editor)
The Prime Ministers, Volume Two (Allen and Unwin, 1975).
Whittington-Egan, Richard
A Casebook on Jack the Ripper (Wildy, 1976).
Wilks, S., and Bettany, G. T.
Biographical History of Guy's Hospital (Ward Lock, 1892).
Wilson, Colin
A Casebook of Murder (Leslie Frewin, 1969).

DIRECTORIES

Dictionary of British Surnames
Dictionary of National Biography
Masonic Records 1717–1894
The Medical Directory
The Medical Register
Post Office Directory of London

JOURNALS

The Criminologist
Daily Express
Daily News
Daily Telegraph
East London Advertiser
Evening News

Freemasons' Magazine and Masonic Mirror
Freemasons' Monthly Remembrancer
Freemasons' Quarterly Review
Illustrated Police News
The Lancet
Marylebone Mercury and West London Gazette
Marylebone Times
The Nineteenth Century
North London Press
The Observer
Pall Mall Gazette
The People
Reynolds' News
The Star
The Sun
Sunday Times-Herald, Chicago
The Times
Truth

PAMPHLETS

The Coming K – – –
What Does She Do With It?

DOCUMENTS

Public Record Office file DPP/1/95 relating to Cleveland Street scandal of 1889.
Scotland Yard files MEPOL 3/140, MEPOL 3/141 and MEPOL 3/142 relating to the Whitechapel Murders.
Home Office files A49301, 144/220 A49301A, B, C, D, E, F, G, H, J and K relating to the Whitechapel Murders.
Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion (Eyre and Spottiswoode, 1920).

Index

ABBERLINE, INSPECTOR FREDERICK GEORGE:
  Special Reports by, 48, 50, 56, 73, 77, 249
  statements taken by, 66–70
  comments on Hutchinson's statement, 113
  and Cleveland Street case, 116–17, 142
  retires, 210
  and Dick Austen inquiries, 230–3
  and cover-up, 233
  and Matthew Packer inquiries, 241
Abdication by Queen Victoria, speculation about, 89
Aberconway, Dowager Lady Christabel, 45, 122, 128, 129
Abiff, Hiram:
  murder of, 168, 176, 177, 179
  worker in brass, 171
Acland, Caroline:
  describes Gull's stroke, 181
  Gull's daughter, 188
  story told by, 202–4
  friend of Stowell, 206
  indicates Gull as Ripper, 207
Acland, Sir Henry Wentworth, 140, 197
Acland, Reginald Brodie Dyke, 140
Acland, Theodore Dyke:
  Gull's son-in-law, 140
  writes about Gull, 181
  attends Gull and Salisbury, 189
  attends Gull, 200–1
  certifies Gull's death, 201
  friend of Stowell, 202–3, 206
Acland, Theodore William Gull, 204
'A' Division, 60, 73, 167
Albert Edward, Prince of Wales (later King Edward VII):
  father of Eddy, 17
  relations with Eddy, 22, 24
  involvement in scandals, 26, 85–8, 89
  relations with Queen Victoria, 31
  contracts typhoid, 35, 188
  marriage to Alexandra, 42
  friend of Sickert, 80
  unpopularity of, 85–8
  criticized for attending Roman Catholic service, 90
  and Eddy's proposed marriage, 91
  and Cleveland Street scandal, 117
  terms of will, 120–1
  a visitor to Oscar Wilde, 139–40
  links with Ripper case, 141
  and Freemasonry, 163–6
Albert, Prince Consort, 35, 88, 195
Albert Street, Kennington, 122
Albert Street, Whitechapel, 59
Albert Victor Christian Edward, Prince (Duke of Clarence and Avondale, 'Eddy'):
  mentioned, 28, 31, 36, 43, 87, 93, 107, 139, 140, 160, 191, 207, 209, 219, 248, 256, 263, 264
  as Ripper suspect, 15, 106, 152, 204–5, 264
  alleged marriage to 'Alice Mary Cook', 17
  and Annie Elizabeth Crook, 19, 23–7, 101–4, 106, 209, 211
  relations with parents, 22
  and Walter Sickert, 22
  and Cleveland Street, 23–7, 92, 95, 101–5, 106, 107–8, 113, 116–21, 211
  as father of Alice Margaret Crook, 24, 92, 95, 104–5, 106, 189
  christened, 31
  deafness, 41
  hated by Labouchere, 89
  importance of behaviour of, 90–2
  proposed marriage to Hélène d'Orléans, 91

  and cover-up, 106, 107–8, 113, 116–21
  links with Ripper case, 141
  and Freemasonry, 152, 171
  and John Netley, 211, 212
Alderney Road, Mile End, 62
Aldershot, Hampshire, 232
Aldgate, 37, 59, 144
Alexandra, Princess of Wales (later Queen):
  mentioned, 31, 85–6, 165
  concerned about Eddy, 22
  and Sickert, 22, 25, 43, 80
  relations with Eddy, 24
  Gull introduced to, 35, 188
  deafness, 41
  birth, 42
  friendship with Oswald Sickert, 42–3
  popularity, 87–8
  death, 121
  papers destroyed, 121
All About Strokes (Carter), 182
Allen, Oswald, 172
Alleys, Algernon, 118
Altona, 42
America, 118, 159, 164, 190, 210
American Exhibition, 59
Amphytrion (Sickert)—see *X's Affiliation Order*
Anarchists, 160
Anderson, Isabelle Frazer, 122
Anderson, Sir Robert:
  mentioned, 250, 258, 259
  named as third man, 36
  alleged part in murders, 37, 183, 235, 238
  fabricates details about Ripper, 47
  appointed Assistant Commissioner of Metropolitan Police, 157–8, 246
  and Freemasonry, 179
  investigation of, 246–8
Anderton's Hotel, Fleet Street, 215
Anti-Masonic Movement, 159
Apsley House, 196
Arbour Square, Whitechapel, 141
Ark Lodge, 176
Army and Navy Stores, Westminster, 72
Arnold, Superintendent, 241
Ascot, Berkshire, 88
Asia, 54
Asiatics, 59, 81
Association of Assistant Librarians, 194
Atterbury, Bishop Francis, 99
Attorney-General, 112, 117, 120
Austen, Dick, 230–3
Australia, 129, 130, 131, 132, 133, 226
Australian Broadcasting Commission, 132
Austria, 88, 158
Autumn of Terror (Cullen), 45, 112, 122
Aylesford, Countess of, 88

Baal, 155
Backchurch Lane, Whitechapel, 126, 238
Backert, Albert, 121
Balfour, Lord, 91
Balmoral, 118–19
Baltic, the, 127
Barcelona, 135
Barick (?), Captain L. R., 231
'Barlow, Detective Chief Superintendent Charles', 16, 151, 152
Barnett, Joseph:
  mentioned, 66, 67, 68, 70, 255
  statement of, 67
  evidence of, 143–4
Bath, Somerset, 249
Battersea Park, 126
Battiscombe, Georgina, 86
Baxter, Wynne E.:
  mentioned, 111, 113
  at Chapman inquest, 108, 171–2
  dialogue with Dr Phillips, 108–10
  Kelly inquest wrested from, 110, 111, 112
  dialogue with Elizabeth Tanner, 146
  at Stride inquest, 146, 147
BBC Television, 15, 16, 18, 19, 20, 95, 103, 132, 150, 151–2, 162, 194
'Beast of Jersey', the—*see* Paisnel, Edward
Beaumont parish, 187
Beck, Inspector Walter, 66, 70
Becket, Thomas, 29
Bedford, Edward Henslow, 120, 141
Belgian Cocotte, The (Sickert), 256
Belgium, 194
Bellord, Edmund, 143
Berlin, 190
Bernard, Claude, 192
Berner Street, Whitechapel, 14, 37,

57, 58, 61, 62, 123, 235, 238–9, 241, 251
Bernstorff, 42
Besant, Annie, 83
Bethnal Green, 50, 51, 69, 90
Bethnal Green Police Station, 51
Bettany, G. T., 181–2, 200
Bible, the, 154, 155
Billingsgate Market, 67
Biographical History of Guy's Hospital (Wilks and Bettany), 181–2
Bird, Inspector J., 73
Bishopsgate, 67, 69, 235
Bishopsgate Street Police Station, 37, 61, 174–5, 235
Blackheath, 128, 129, 136, 139
Blackheath Cricket Club, 136
Blackmail (Sickert painting)—see *Mrs Barrett*
Blackmail (Sickert pastel), 256
'Black Monday', 82
Black Swan public house, 177
Blackwell, Dr F., 57, 239
Blandford, Lord, 88
Blandford Square, 73
Blitz, the, 59
'Bloody Sunday', 26, 83
'Bluebeard'—*see* Rais, Gilles de
Blue Tunicle, 43
Boards of Guardians, 210
Bond, Dr Thomas, 167
Bonner, Paul, 16, 17, 18, 20, 132
Bournemouth, 46, 137, 210
Bowyer, Thomas, 66
Bratton family, 105
Bratton, Frederick, 104–5
Bratton, Dr J., 104
Bravo, Charles, 197–8, 199
Bravo poisoning case, 197–8, 199
Bridges, Yseult, 197
Briggs, 76
Bright's disease, 223
Britannia public house, 69, 145
British Medical Association, 17
British Museum, 16
Brixton, 72
Brook Street, Mayfair, 177, 191, 193, 197, 208
Brooks, Dr, 123
Brown, Dr Frederick Gordon, 61, 168, 169, 185–6
Brown and Eagle, Messrs, 50
Brown, Ford Madox, 95
'Brown, Mr' (Lord Arthur Somerset), 118
Brushfield Street, Spitalfields, 74, 77
Brussels, 85
Bryanston Square, 203
Buchanan, Leone, 132, 133
Buckingham Palace, 104
Buckle, George Earle, 81
Buck's Row, 14, 49, 50, 51, 53, 62, 123, 149, 169, 174, 235, 236–7
Builders, The (Newton), 176
Burke, Thomas, 85
Burns, John, 82
Butchers, 59, 61
Butchery (Jones and Lloyd), 151
Buxton Street, Spitalfields, 59

CABINET, THE, 36, 91
Cable Street, 239
'Cable-tow' (in Freemasonry), 170
Cadwallader, Thomas Walter, 94
Caledonian Road, 78
Cambridge, 23, 199
Cambridge Rapist, the—*see* Cook, Peter
Cambridge Road, Bethnal Green, 50
Camden Town, 192, 226, 227, 249
Camden Town Murder, the, 255
Camden Town Murder series (Sickert), 252–3, 255
Canada, 64
Canning Town, 251
Capital (Marx), 82
Capture of Jack the Ripper, 189–94
Cardiff, 33, 144
Carlisle, 188
Carmarthen, 67
Carnarvon, 67
Carter, Dr Alan Barham, 182, 183
Casebook on Jack the Ripper, A (Whittington-Egan), 210
Casebook of Murder, A (Wilson), 180, 186
Castle Alley, Whitechapel, 126
Castle Street, Houndsditch, 226, 228
Castle Street, W.C., 226, 227, 228
Catholicism, hatred of, 26, 90–2
Cavendish, Lord Frederick, 85
Cecil family, 189
Central News Office, 53, 64
Champion, Henry, 82
Chancellor, Philip, 17
Chandler, Inspector Joseph, 53, 55
Chapman, 56
Chapman, Annie (alias Annie Siffey):
  mentioned, 36, 177
  murder of, 14, 37, 38, 49, 73,

    74, 77, 123, 136, 142, 174, 212, 221, 235, 247
  involved with Kelly, 34, 144, 150, 183
  file on, 49, 75, 233
  Chandler's report on, 55–6
  injuries to, 55, 166, 168–9, 172
  Abberline's report on, 56
  Swanson's report on, 58
  inquest on, 108–10, 145, 185
  and Dorset Street, 144–5, 147
  arrangement of corpse of, 170–2, 173, 241, 260, 261
  time of death of, 237
Chapman, George, 107
Charing Cross, 192
Charles I, King, 54
Charleston, U.S.A., 155
Cheapside, 72
Chelsea, 139
Chelsea Embankment, 126
Cheselden Chapter (of Freemasonry), 205
Cheselden Craft Lodge, 205
Chester, 210
Chicago, 189, 193, 194, 210
Chicksand Street, Whitechapel, 59
Chief Constable of Rotherham, 230–2
Chiswick, 130
Chlysty sect, the, 151
Christian VIII, King of Denmark, 42
Christian IX, King of Denmark, 42
Christian Spiritualists, 195
Christians, 154–5
Christ's Hospital, 186
Church Passage, Mitre Square, 60
Church Street, Spitalfields, 68
Churchill, Lord Randolph, 88
Churchill, Sir Winston, 184
CID—*see* Criminal Investigation Department
City of Hereford public house, 95
City of London Police, 37, 56, 58, 59, 60, 61, 62, 63, 175, 178, 185, 233, 235
City of London Police Detective Department, 59
Civil Service, the, 234
Clacton, Essex, 209
Clarence (Harrison), 87, 102, 116
Clarence and Avondale Lodge, Leytonstone, 171
Clarence Gate, Regent's Park, 216
Clarke, Sir Edward, 86–7
Clerkenwell Green, 72
Clerkenwell Police Court, 78
Cleveland Street, W.1.:
  mentioned, 35, 37, 38, 102, 104, 121, 142, 143, 144, 150, 212, 214, 248, 250, 259
  origins of Ripper case in, 19, 31, 254
  Sickert's rooms in, 22
  tobacconist's shop in, 23, 33, 101, 103, 104
  Eddy's visits to, 24, 26, 36, 105, 106, 211
  Kelly arrives at, 25, 33
  raid in, 27, 34, 96
  Joseph Sickert and author visit, 31
  described, 93, 94–5
  Holman Hunt's studios in, 94, 140
  Annie Elizabeth Crook returns to, 99
  Annie Elizabeth Crook disappears from, 101
  Eddy returns to, 107
  concealment of Eddy's connection with, 113
Cleveland Street brothel scandal:
  Eddy linked with, 102, 256
  cover-up of, 107–8, 116, 141, 161, 179, 233, 256
  Eddy 'central participant' in 116
  file on, 116–21
  beginning of, 116
  Abberline and, 116–17, 142, 233
Cleveland Street Infirmary, 98, 99
Cobden, Ellen, 25
Coburg Street, Old Kent Road, 51
Cocotte de Soho (Sickert), 256
Colchester, Essex, 186
Cole, Lord, 87
Coles, Frances, 49, 127
Colicutt, 122, 126
Colindale, 98
Colney Hatch Lunatic Asylum, 78
Coming K—, The, 88
Commercial Road, 37, 57, 238, 241
Commercial Street, 31, 53, 58, 67, 114, 146
Commercial Street Police Station,
Common lodging-houses, 59, 145–6
Commons, House of, 35, 84
Communism, 82
Complete Jack the Ripper, The (Rumbelow), 91, 167, 171–2
Connell, James, 73

Conservative Club, 82
Conservative Party, 32–3, 84
Constable, John, 248
'Cook, Alice Mary', 17, 18
Cook, Elizabeth, 95–6
Cook, Peter, 199
Copenhagen, 42
Copenhagen Street, 251
Cork, 85
Cornubia Lodge, 205
Corot, Jean Baptiste Camille, 248
Cotman, Dr John Sell Edmund, 134
Court Circular, 118
Cover-up, the, 106–41, 179, 191, 200, 209, 233, 241, 250, 256
Cow and Company, 72
Cow, Douglas, 72
Cowan, Dr, 75, 76
'Cowboys', 59
Cowdry, Mr, 51
Cox, Mary Ann, 67
Crabb, Dr, 75, 76
Cracknell, P.C., 376, 75
Crawford, Mr, 175
Crawford and Balcarres, Earl of, 40
Cream, Thomas Neill, 107
Criminal Investigation Department (CID), 13, 75, 76, 122, 123, 157, 241, 243, 247
Criminals and Crime (Anderson), 248
Criminologist, The, 105, 204, 223
Crispin Street, Spitalfields, 145
Croiset, Gérard, 194
Crook, Annie Elizabeth:
  mentioned, 41, 211, 212, 248, 259, 264
  and Eddy, 19, 23, 24, 25, 43, 90, 91, 92, 106
  gives birth, 24, 95, 96
  taken away, 27, 31, 33, 92
  confined, 28, 35, 92, 97–101, 191
  dies, 28, 97, 102, 190
  certified insane, 35
  removed from Guy's Hospital, 36
  investigated, 92–105
Crook, Alice Margaret:
  mentioned, 19, 37, 93, 96, 104, 105, 263, 264
  born, 24, 95
  baptized, 24
  placed in care, 28
  Netley's attempts on life of, 38–9, 212–13, 214–15, 217
  bears Sickert a son, 39
  marries, 39
  dies, 39
  deafness, 41, 263
  resemblance to Princess Alexandra, 41
  admitted to workhouse, 100
Cross, Charles, 50, 51
Crossinghams lodging-house, 55
Crowley, Aleister, 103
Crown, The, public house, 95
Cullen, Tom, 45, 107, 112, 122, 127–9, 143, 162, 221, 240
Cutbush, Thomas, 122, 123, 124, 126, 127

Daily Express, 71
Daily News, 57, 147
Daily Telegraph, 112
Dalton, Canon John Neale, 139
Dandenong, Australia, 130, 131, 132, 133
Davies (or Davis), 33, 67
Davies (or Davis), Dr Morgan, 225–30
Davis, Lizzie—*see* Mylett, Rose
Davis Ward, London Hospital, 225
Days of My Years (Macnaghten), 121
'Dear Boss' letter, 64, 219
'Dear Boss' postcard, 64, 219
Denmark, 22
Devil, the, 155, 224
Dictionary of British Surnames, The, 214
Dictionary of National Biography, The, 180, 181, 182, 207
Diemschutz, Louis, 57
Dieppe, 25, 28, 38, 39, 41, 144, 249, 259
Dilke, Sir Charles, 89, 90
Director of Public Prosecutions, the, 116, 117, 118–20
Disraeli, Benjamin, 81, 189, 195
Divorce Court, the, 87
Dockers, 84
Doctor In The Nineties (Halsted), 185
Dr Jekyll and Mr Hyde (Stevenson), 199
Dolden, P.C., 241
Donovan, Timothy, 55, 145
Dorset, 129
Dorset Street, Spitalfields, 55, 56, 66, 67, 68, 69, 70, 114, 144–5, 147, 149, 150, 255
Douglas, Harry, 241
Douglas, Mr, 214
Doveton Street, Bethnal Green, 50
Dowding, Lady Muriel, 104
Downes, Mr, 208–9

Doyle, Sir Arthur Conan, 147
Drake, Fanny, 72
Drewery, Lionel, 130
Drewett, Lionel, 129, 130
Druitt, Ann, 130–1, 137, 138, 140
Druitt, Dr Lionel, 129–34
Druitt, Montague John:
  mentioned, 107, 112, 264
  as Ripper suspect, 45, 121, 230, 234
  McCormick's story about, 46
  as scapegoat, 46, 121, 138–41
  in Macnaghten notes, 121, 124, 127–9
  death, 121, 137, 138
  analysis of case against, 121–38
  birth, 129
  career, 129
  cricketing career, 135–6
  inquest on, 137
Druitt, William, 137
Drummond-Angus, Christine, 43
Drury Lane, 39, 213
Dublin, 84
Duckworth, Dr Dyce, 245
Duke Street, Mitre Square, 175, 252
Duncombe Road, Upper Holloway, 75, 78
Dunk Street, Whitechapel, 59
Dutfield's Yard, 57, 58, 241–3

East End Murderer—I knew him, The, 129–33
East London Advertiser, 21, 30, 237
East London and District Railways, 50
Eastern Archipelago (in Freemasonry), 157
Eagle Wharf, Whitechapel, 50
Eddowes, Catherine:
  mentioned, 174, 222–3, 251
  murder of, 14–15, 36, 37, 38, 49, 56, 59, 63, 123, 144, 149, 162, 173, 183, 212, 233, 235–6, 252
  file on, 49, 59
  appearance and character, 56
  injuries to, 60, 168, 169, 170
  Swanson's report on, 60–3
  post mortem examination of, 61, 185
  background of, 61, 145
  mistaken for Kelly, 144, 149, 183, 260
  inquest on, 168, 169
  arrangement of corpse of, 169, 173, 175
  movements before murder, 174–5
  links with 1530 and Abiff murders, 177
Eddy—*see* Albert Victor Christian Edward, Prince
Edgware Road, 196
Edward I, King, 112
Edward VIII, King, 23
Egypt, Ancient, 155
Elizabeth I, Queen, 54, 189
Elizabeth, Queen, the Queen Mother, 43
Elthone Road, Upper Holloway, 78
Emmons, Dr Robert, 94, 251, 255, 257
Endell Street, High Holborn, 98
Endersby, George, 94
Engels, Friedrich, 82
Ennui (Sickert), 43, 256
Entered Apprentice degree, 155, 166–7, 176
Epileptiform attacks, 182, 200
Erskine, Lady Sybil St Clair, 102
Esher, Lord, 120
Europe, 64, 82, 161, 164
Euston, Lord, 119–20, 179
Euston Road, 17, 93
Evans, Dr, 225
Evening News, 240–1

FABIAN SOCIETY, the, 83
Fairey, Inspector D., 72
Fairfield Road Infirmary Asylum, Bow, 76, 77, 78
Farson, Daniel, 45, 107, 122, 127–38, 139, 171, 180, 182, 183, 221, 230, 234
Fashion Street, Spitalfields, 144, 145–6
Fell, Mr, 132
'Fell, W. G.', 130, 131–3
Fenians, the, 85
Fiddymont, Mrs, 74–5, 77
Fifth Lancers, the, 230, 232
Finsbury Square, 208
Fisher, Humphrey, 132
Fitzroy Square, 96, 143
Fleet Street, 39, 74, 212, 215
Flensborg, 42
Fletcher, Henry, 94
Flower and Dean Street, Spitalfields, 53, 114, 144, 145, 146–7
Foreign Office, 184
Fosters Street, Bethnal Green, 51
Fountain, P.C. 271A, 73

Four Stages of Cruelty, The (Hogarth), 169
France, 25, 95, 117, 144, 153, 159
Francis, Sir Philip, 164*n.*
Frederick VII, King of Denmark, 42
Free House!, A (Sitwell), 44, 259
Freemasonry, 28–9, 35, 36, 121, 151–79, 183, 188, 191, 202, 205–7, 209, 210, 211, 212, 215, 216, 217, 221–2, 236, 241, 246, 248, 250, 259, 260, 261
Freemasonry Exposed (Morgan), 156, 158–9
Freemasons' Hall, 179
French Government, the, 117
'From Hell' letter—*see* Lusk letter
Fulham Road, 97, 99, 100, 102, 190
Fulham Road Workhouse, 99

GARIBALDI, GIUSEPPE, 229
Garrick Club, the, 46, 140
Gaunt, William, 94
'Gentiles', 160–1
George and Dragon public house, 95
George, Prince of Wales, 164, 165
George Yard, Whitechapel, 65
George Yard Buildings, Whitechapel, 126
Geringher, Mrs, 76, 79
Gladstone, William Ewart, 32, 80, 84
Golden Jubilee of Queen Victoria, 88
Goodge Street, W.1., 93
Gordon-Cumming, Sir William, 86–7
Gorman, 39
Gould, Maurice, 131–2, 134
Goulston Street, Whitechapel, 60, 61, 177–9, 260–1
Grafton, Duke of, 120
Grand Inspector Inquisitor Commander, 163*n.*
Grand Lodge, 164, 175, 210
Grapes, in Ripper killings, 240–5, 260, 261
'Great Architect of the Universe', 154
'Great Beast', the—*see* Crowley, Aleister
Great Central Railway Company, 216
Great Eastern Railway, 59
Great Garden Street, Whitechapel, 59
Great Pearl Street, Spitalfields, 69
Great Queen Street, W.C.2, 179
Greater London Record Office, 98
Greek gipsies, 59
Green, Mrs Emma, 50
Greenwich Police Station, 73
Grenadier Guards, the, 84
Grimthorpe, Lord, 123
Groot, Karen de, 95, 213, 214, 215
Guilds and incorporated crafts, 153
Gull, Cameron, 188
Gull, Caroline—*see* Acland, Caroline
Gull, Elizabeth, 187
Gull, John, 186–7
Gull, Lady Susan, 188, 203
Gull, Sir William Withey:
  mentioned, 93, 211, 215, 216, 248, 250, 259, 260
  performs royal abortions, 28
  and Freemasonry, 28, 35, 36, 177, 179, 188, 207, 209, 216
  certifies Annie Elizabeth Crook, 28, 35
  charged with silencing Kelly, 28, 34
  invents Jack the Ripper, 29
  introduced to Princess Alexandra, 35
  appearance and character, 35–6, 187
  part in murders, 37, 169, 183, 235, 240, 249
  suspected of operating on Annie Elizabeth Crook, 37, 96
  specialist in brain diseases, 97
  connected with Guy's Hospital, 97–8
  links with Ripper case, 140–1, 177
  investigated, 180–210
  retirement of, 180, 182
  suffers stroke, 180–4
  birth of, 186
  early life of, 186–8
  marriage, 188
  funeral, 197
  and Charles Bravo, 197–8
  death of, 207
  indicated as Ripper, 207
  friendship with James Hinton, 207–8
  and grapes, 243, 245, 249, 260, 261
Gun Street, Whitechapel, 64

Guy's Hospital, 28, 36, 96, 97–8, 100, 187, 188, 190, 191, 208

Hall, S. P., 41
Halsbury, Lord, 91, 118
Halsted, Dennis, 185
Hammersmith, 192
Hamilton, Duke of, 165
Hammond, Charles, 117, 118, 119, 120
Hammond, coroner's officer, 110
Hanbury Street, 14, 51, 53, 54, 55, 61, 62, 74, 123, 177, 235, 237
Hanover Square, 190
Hardie, Keir, 195
Harewood Place Roman Catholic Convent, 150
Harlesden, 104, 192
Harley Street, 197, 257
Harrison, Benjamin, 187, 188
Harrison, Michael, 87, 97, 102, 103, 107, 116, 120, 139, 140, 206, 219, 224
Harrison, Rector, 187
Harrison, Sarah, 241
Harvey, Maria, 70
'H' Division (Whitechapel), 58, 60, 70, 76, 78, 114
Helen Street, Whitechapel, 238
Hélène d'Orleans, Princess, 90, 91, 102
Helston, Inspector, 51, 74, 236
Henderson, Sir Edmund, 83
Hendon Infirmary, Colindale, 98, 99
High Court of Justice, the, 112
High Holborn, 98
Highgate Hospital, 98
Hilton Hotel, Kensington, 64
Hinton, James, 207–8
Hiram's Lodge, 176–7
Hirschfeld, Dr Magnus, 136
Hogarth, William, 169–71
Holiday 73, 19
Holland, Ellen, 53
Hollandaise, La (Sickert), 256–7
Holloway, 73, 76, 77, 79
Holloway Police Station, 75, 76
Holloway Road, 75
Holmes, Sherlock, 247
Holy Royal Arch—*see* Royal Arch
Home Counties, 143
Home Office, 15, 48, 57, 59, 66, 112, 113, 118, 121, 147, 167, 178, 185, 200, 234, 237, 238, 240–1, 248, 258, 261
Home Rule, 81, 84–5
Home Rule Bill, 84
Home Secretary, 83, 117, 234, 239
Honourable Society of the Inner Temple, the, 138
Hood, Dr Charles, 200
Hopkins, Ellice, 208
Hornsey Road, 75
Houndsditch, 123, 124, 225, 226, 227, 228
House of Commons—*see* Commons, House of
How Charles Bravo Died (Bridges), 197
Howard, Dr Benjamin, 189–93, 196, 197, 200, 202, 207, 209, 210
Howland Street, W.1., 27
Hoxton, 251
Huguenots, the, 54
Humber Lodge, 177
Humphreys, 65
Hunt, William Holman, 94, 95, 140
Hutchinson, George, 113–15, 252, 257, 258
Hutt, George, 175
Hyde, H. Montgomery, 102
Hyde Park, 82
Hyde Park Police Station, 73
Hyndman, H. M., 82
Hythe, Kent, 103

'I caught Jack the Ripper' (letter to newspaper), 71
Identity of Jack the Ripper, The (McCormick), 45, 250
Idylls of the King (Tennyson), 88
Ifland, William, 64–5
Iles, Mr, 226
Illustrated Police News, 65, 215
Immigrants, 81
In Memoriam—Sir William Gull, 181, 198
Industrial Revolution, the, 54
'Ingleside', 51
Inner Temple, the, 129
Inns of Court, the, 129
International Workers' Educational Club, 57, 58, 123, 235
'Invisible man' theory, 173
Ipswich, Suffolk, 210
Ireland, 26, 33, 67, 81, 84–5, 112
Irish Nationalists, 84
Irish Sea, 33, 84
Irving, Sir Henry, 43, 226
Isenschmid, Joseph, 73–9

Isenschmid, Mrs, 75, 78
Isle of Dogs, 134
Isle of Wight, 80
Islington, 190, 251
Islington Workhouse, 78

Jack and Jill (Sickert), 254
Jack the Ripper (BBC series), 15, 16, 18, 20, 152
Jack the Ripper (Farson), 45, 122, 234
Jack the Ripper: A New Theory (Stewart), 166, 192
Jack the Ripper in Fact and Fiction (Odell), 48
Jack the Ripper, or The Mysteries of the East End, 194
Jah-Bul-On, in Freemasonry, 155
Jahweh, 154–5
'J' Division, 49
Jenkins, Right Hon. Roy, 234
Jenner, Sir William, 35, 188
Jerusalem, 163*n.*
Jewish slaughterman theory, 107
Jews, 62, 64, 123, 155, 178, 179, 229, 247
Johnson, Dr, 197
Johnson, Florence Grace, 122
Joll, James, 82
Jonas, Harry, 18, 19, 20
Jones, Elwyn, 16, 17, 151, 152
Joppa, 168, 176
Journal, Le (Sickert), 256
Jubela, Jubelo and Jubelum, 168–9, 171, 176, 179
Junius, 164
Jupiter, 254
Juwes, 61, 178–9, 261

KEARLEY AND TONGE WAREHOUSES, 175
Kelly, Henry, 67
Kelly, John (Eddowes's man), 61, 149
Kelly, John (Marie's father), 33, 67
Kelly, Marie:
  mentioned, 29, 35, 71, 143–4, 150, 169, 254, 255, 259, 264
  murder of, 14, 36, 38, 49, 65–70, 123, 129, 142, 158, 173, 183, 193, 195, 202, 204, 229, 230, 236, 253, 256
  witness at Annie Elizabeth Crook's wedding, 19
  flees to East End, 19, 92, 212
  becomes nanny to Alice Margaret Crook, 24
  arrives at Cleveland Street, 25, 33
  attempts blackmail, 28, 160, 162, 255
  threat posed by, 29, 31, 163, 199
  background, 33
  search for, 34, 36, 212, 257–8
  Eddowes mistaken for, 36, 37, 175, 183, 235, 259–60
  file on, 56, 233
  inquest on, 110–13, 161, 167
  seen by Hutchinson, 113–14, 252
  and Dorset Street, 145
  intended victim, 149
  injuries to, 166, 168, 169, 170–1
  post mortem examination of, 167
  Sickert's paintings based on, 254, 255, 256–7
  Sickert's attempt to save, 259–60
Kempshott Road, Streatham Common, 72
Kennington, 122, 123
Kensington, 64, 213
Kentish Town, 21, 253
Keylers, the, 69
Kidney, Michael, 146–7
Kidney sent to George Lusk, 62–3, 221–3
King Edward the Seventh (Magnus), 91
King George V and Queen Mary (Sickert), 256
King Street, E.C.2, 188
King's Arms public house, 177
King's Bench Walk, Inner Temple, 129, 134, 138–9, 140, 141
Kirley, Sergeant, 50
Knight, Stephen, 263, 264
Knollys, Lord, 120
Knowles, Emily, 130–1
Knowles, Mr, 129–31, 132
Kosminski, 124

LABOUCHERE, HENRY, 89, 90
Labour Party, the 195
Lacy, Colonel, 188
Lacy, Susan Ann—*see* Gull, Lady Susan
Lamb, P.C. 252, 57
Lamb Street, Spitalfields, 58
Lambeth Infirmary, 122, 123
Lambeth Workhouse, 51
Lancet, The, 185
Landsbert, Henry, 94
Landseer Road, Holloway, 75
Lang-Lang, Australia, 132

Law Society, the, 141
Lawende, Joseph, 60
Lazarus Breaks His Fast (Sickert), 249
Lea, river, 186
Leader, William, 94
Leadenhall Street, E.C.3, 177
'Leather Apron', 62, 73, 74, 77, 172, 219
'Lees' letter, 194
Lees, Nelson Edwin, 210
Lees, Robert James, 193–207, 210
Leman Street Police Station, 62, 65, 74
Letters file (Scotland Yard), 48, 135, 194, 219
Letter 'From Hell'—*see* Lusk letter
Lewes, Sussex, 188
Lewis (in Freemasonry), 170
Lewis, Sarah, 69
Leytonstone, 171
Liberal Party, the, 32–3, 84
Life and Opinions of Walter Richard Sickert, The (Emmons), 94, 251
Life Guards, the, 84
Lighter Side of My Official Life, The (Anderson), 247
Lilly, Marjorie, 41, 44, 94, 252–3, 257, 259, 261
Limerick, Marie Kelly native of, 33
Lindley, Lord Justice, 197
Lindner, Henry, 95
'Lipski', 238
Lister, Lord, 197
Liverpool, 134–5
Llewellyn, Dr Ralph, 49, 51, 167, 168, 169, 185, 236, 249
Lloyd, John, 151, 152
Lodge of Joppa, 176–7
Lodge of Judah, 177
Lodge of Prosperity, 176
Lodge of Stability, 177
Lodger, The (Lowndes), 45
Lodger, The (Tate), 45
London (Barker and Jackson), 84
London Bridge, 208
London County Sessions, 122
London Hospital, Whitechapel, 65, 185, 225, 226, 228
London Hospital Museum, 62, 222
London Library, the, 151
London, Tilbury and Southend Railway, 57
Long, P.C. 245A Alfred, 60, 177
Longford, Elizabeth, 92
Lord Chancellor, 91, 117, 118, 120
Lord Mayor's Show, 36
Lords' Committee on Intemperance, 245
Louis, William, 50
Louise of Hesse, Queen of Denmark, 42
Lowndes, Marie Belloc, 45
Lunacy Commission, 99, 100, 140
Lunacy Observation Ward, 100
Lushington, Godfrey, 178
Lusitania, the, 16
Lusk, George, 62, 63, 221, 223
Lusk letter, 62–3, 219, 221–3
Lyceum Theatre, 43
Lyons, Isaac, 94

MacDONALD, RODERICK, 110–13
MacLeod, C. M., 223
Macnaghten, Sir Melville, 13, 14, 45, 46, 49, 121, 122, 127, 128, 129, 137, 139, 140, 141, 218
Macnaghten notes, the, 122–9, 137
MacNamara, Edward, 132
Magic Flute, The (Mozart), 158
Magnus, Sir Philip, 91
Mall, The, 83
Man In The Attic, The, 45
Manor House Lunatic Asylum, Chiswick, 130
Maple Street, W.1., 27
Marble Arch, 73, 196, 197
Mark Masons, the, 179
Marlett, Mr, 78
Marsh, George, 226–30
Marx, Eleanor, 82, 83
Marx, Karl, 82
Mary, Queen, 256
Marylebone, Borough of, 95
Marylebone High Street, 78
Marylebone Mercury and West London Gazette, 216
Marylebone Records Office, 18
Marylebone Times, 216
Marylebone Workhouse, 24, 95, 98
Mason, Thomas, 190, 202, 209, 215
Masonic Hall, Leytonstone, 171
Master Mason degree, 156, 163, 165, 166, 169, 176
Matters, Leonard, 48, 234
Matthews, Henry (Home Secretary), 60, 239
Maxwell, Caroline, 68–9, 145
Maxwell, Henry, 68
Mayfair, 82, 177, 191
McCarthy, John, 66–7, 68
McCarthy, Sergeant, 122–3
McCormick, Donald, 45, 46, 106, 151, 221, 250

McKay, Muriel, 194
McKenzie, Alice, 49, 126
McWilliam, Inspector James, 59, 60, 178
Medical Directory, the, 129, 130, 133, 134, 190, 193
Medical Register, the, 133, 134, 181, 190, 192, 193
Melbourne, Australia, 130, 132
Metropolitan Police, 16, 36, 60, 61, 62, 63, 75, 114, 122, 156, 157, 167, 232, 243, 246, 247
Mickle, Dr, 77, 79
Middle Ages, Freemasons originate in, 153
Middlesex County Records Office, 66
Middlesex Hospital, 93
Midwife theory, 107
Mile End, 62
Miles, Frank, 139–40, 264
Milford Road, Upper Holloway, 75, 76, 78
Millais, Sir John Everett, 95
Miller's Court, 14, 66, 67, 68, 69, 114, 123, 124, 128, 145, 256
Minories, the, 123, 133–5, 138
Mitre Square, Aldgate, 14, 59, 60, 63, 123, 124, 127, 169, 173, 174–7, 236, 252, 260–1
Mitre Street, 175, 177, 236
Mitre Tavern, 176, 177
Mizen, P.C. 55H, 49, 51
Monro, James, 157, 247
Montagu, Samuel (M.P. for Whitechapel), 62
Moore, George, 251
Moore, Inspector, 242
Mordaunt divorce scandal, 87, 140
Mordaunt, Lady Harriet, 87, 140
Morgan, 103
Morgan, Mrs, 103
Morgan, William, 156, 158–9
Morris, Mr, 60
Morris, William, 23, 83
Mowbray, Henry, 94
Moylan, Sir John, 121
Mozart, Wolfgang Amadeus, 158, 252
Mrs Barrett (Sickert), 255, 256–7
Muir, Sir Edward, 189
Munich, 42
Myddleton Square, Islington, 18
Mylett, Rose (alias Lizzie Davis), 49
Mystery of Jack the Ripper, The (Matters), 48

NAPOLEON, Gull's similarity to, 35, 200
Neate, Alan, 98, 100, 101
Neil, P.C. 97J, 49, 51
Netley, John Charles:
  mentioned, 93, 174, 237, 238, 250
  Eddy's coachman, 23, 211
  inquiries in East End by, 36
  part in murders, 37, 169, 175, 183, 212, 235, 236, 238–9, 258
  and murder of Stride, 37, 235, 238–9, 258
  attempts life of Alice Margaret Crook, 38–9, 212–3, 263
  investigation of, 211–17
  character and background of, 211–12
  birth of, 213
  death of, 215–17
New College, Oxford, 129
New Cottage, Buck's Row, 50
New Court, Dorset Street, 70
New Cross Road, 73
New Street, Bishopsgate, 67
New York, 229
Newcastle, Duke of, 165
Newlove, 116, 118
Newton, Arthur, 118, 256
Newton, Joseph Fort, 176
Nichols, Mary Ann ('Polly'):
  mentioned, 145, 247
  murder of, 14, 36, 37, 38, 49, 73, 123, 135, 142, 143, 157, 212, 235, 246
  involved with Kelly, 34, 144, 183
  file on, 49, 56, 233
  Spratling's report on, 49, 236
  injuries to, 49, 50, 166, 167, 168, 169, 249
  discovery of corpse of, 49, 50–1
  Abberline's report on, 50–3, 73, 249
  background of, 51
  inquest on, 108, 185
  Queen Victoria sees significance in murder of, 142–3
Nichols, William, 51
'Nickley', 214
Nineteenth Century, The, 191
Nixon, Richard Milhous, 107
Noah's Ark, 154
Nonconformists, 87
Normandy, 25
Norris, Dr, 216
North London Press, 119
North Wales, 33

Notting Hill, 195

Observer, The, 214
Odell, Robin, 48, 107, 152, 221, 240
Old Bailey, the, 199
Old Kent Road, 51
Old Montague Street, Whitechapel, 51
Old Nichol Gang, 34
Oliver, James, 230–2
Openshaw, Dr, 62, 222
Osborn Street, Whitechapel, 53
Osborne House, Isle of Wight, 80
Osiris, 155
Osnaburgh Street, N.W.1., 17, 103
Ostrog, Michael, 124
Owen, Harry, 69
Oxford, 46, 129, 133
Oxford Street, 196, 197

Packer, Matthew, 241–4, 249, 261
Packer, Mrs, 241
Paget, Rev. Henry Luke, 101, 210
Paget, Sir James, 197, 209, 210
Painter In His Studio, The (Sickert), 256
Paisnel, Edward, 199
Pall Mall, 82, 83, 84
Pall Mall Gazette, 40, 172, 226, 228, 229
Paper Buildings, Inner Temple, 140
Paris, 42, 86, 88, 190, 229
Paris, Comte de, 90
Park Road, Regent's Park, 216
Parke, Ernest, 119–20, 159, 179
Parliament, 84
Parnell, Charles Stewart, 84
Pasteur, Louis, 184
Past Zerubbabel (in Freemasonry), 205
Paul, Robert, 51
Peabody Buildings, 177
Pearson, Hesketh, 139
Peckham, 195
Pedachenko, Dr Alexander, 106
'Penal sign', 166
People, The, 210
Pepin, Marie, 255
Perkins, Bacon and Company, 51
Perkins and Bellord, 143
Petticoat Lane Market, 31
Phantom Fiend, The, 45
Philadelphia, 135
Philadelphia Times, 59
Phillips, Dr George Bagster:
  mentioned, 112
  called to examine body of Chapman, 55
  called to examine body of Stride, 57
  on Eddowes's injuries, 61
  on question of anatomical knowledge, 61, 185
  dialogue with Baxter, 108–10
  at Kelly inquest, 111–13, 169
  on Stride's injuries, 167, 240
  at Chapman inquest, 108–10, 185, 240
  and rings and coins, 172, 260
  on Chapman's time of death, 237
  and grapes, 240–41
Phoenix Park, Dublin, 84
Piccadilly, 54, 82, 196, 197
Pieydagnelle, Eusebius, 186
Pike, Albert, 155
Pinchin Street, Whitechapel, 126, 127
Pizer, John, 62, 74
Poland Street Workhouse, 98
Ponsonby, Sir Henry, 89
Poor Law Amendment Act, the, 99
Poor Law Unions, 99
Poplar, Isle of Dogs, 134
Porter, Emily, 195
Post Office Directory of London, 94, 138–9
Post Office records department, 221
Prater, Elizabeth, 68
Prater, William, 68
Pratt Street, Camden Town, 226, 227
Pre-Raphaelites, the, 94–5, 140, 203
Pre-Raphaelite Tragedy, The (Gaunt), 94
Primrose Hill, 251
Prince Albert public house, Brushfield Street, 74, 77
Prince Albert public house, St Martin's Lane, 226, 227
Prince of Jerusalem, 163*n*.
Prince William Street, Liverpool, 135
Priory of the Holy Trinity, 176
Prisoners' Property Store, 124
Private Letter Book of Metropolitan Police, 177–8
Prostitution figures, in nineteenth century, 149

Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion, The, 159–63, 202, 215
Providence Row Women's Refuge, 143, 150
Public Advertiser, 164*n.*
Public Record Office, the, 99, 177
Purkis, Walter, 50

QUATUOR CORONATI LODGE OF MASONIC RESEARCH, 157
Queens Head public house, Commercial Street, 114

RACE, INSPECTOR, 122, 124
Racial hatred, 81–2
Rainham Mystery, the, 126
Rais, Gilles de, 199
Rectory Field, Blackheath, 136
Regent's Park, 216
Republicans, 26, 31, 160
Revolution, fear of, 25–6, 31, 81, 82, 83, 91, 160
Reward of Cruelty, The (Hogarth), 169–71
Reynolds' Newspaper, 89
Richardson, John, 237
Ringer, Mrs, 69, 145
Ripper File, The (Jones and Lloyd), 152
Rochester Row Police Station, 72
Rome, 64, 90, 91
Romford, Essex, 114
Roots, Inspector J., 227–9
Rose Hill Road, Wandsworth, 51
Rose, Sub. Inspector, 75
Rossettis, the, 95
Rotherham, 230–2
Royal Academy, the, 42
Royal Alpha Lodge, 177
Royal Arch or Holy Royal Arch, 155–6, 157, 159, 163*n.*, 169, 205
Royal College of Physicians, 188, 245
Royal College of Surgeons, 189
Royal Commission on Vivisection, 191
Royal Court of Denmark, 22
Royal Family, the, 26, 41, 81, 89, 92, 104, 106, 140, 142, 163, 191, 206
Royal Geographical Society, 164
Royal Institution of Great Britain, 188
Royal Marriages Act, 91
Rumbelow, Donald, 91, 167–8, 171–2, 175, 180, 182, 183, 219–21, 236
Russia, 64

'S', 23, 105, 204, 205, 206
St Bartholomew's Hospital, 213, 215
St Catherine's House, 104
St George's Club, Hanover Square, 190–1
St George's Mortuary, 146, 238, 242
St Giles Workhouse, 98, 100
St James's Parish, 98
St James's Place, Aldgate, 175
St James's Roman Catholic Church, Spanish Place, 90
St James's Square, London, 151
St James's Street, London, 82
St Leonard, Colchester, 186
St Martin's Lane, W.C., 226, 227
St Marx Cemetery, Vienna, 158
St Mary's Asylum, Islington, 190
St Mary's Spital, 54
St Pancras Board of Guardians, 41, 98, 210
St Pancras, Borough of, 95
St Pancras Hospital, 98
St Pancras Workhouse, 98
St Saviour's Hospital, 103
St Saviour's Infirmary, 17, 18, 19, 25, 103, 104
Sadler, Thomas, 127
Salisbury Lodge, 179
Salisbury, Robert Cecil, third Marquess of:
  mentioned, 29, 143
  fear of revolution, 25–6, 31, 82, 91, 160
  first Administration, 26
  stages Cleveland Street raid, 27
  dilemma over Cleveland Street, 28
  and Freemasonry, 28, 35, 36, 160, 161, 179
  and Kelly, 29, 31, 34, 142, 160, 161
  character and views, 31–3
  and Gull, 34–5, 189
  and Sickert, 38, 259
  plan to rail off Trafalgar Square, 83
  second and third Administration, 84
  and Cleveland Street cover-up, 117
Sandringham, 188
Saul, John, 120
Saunders, Dr William, 185–6

Schizophrenia, 199
Schleswig-Holstein, 42
Schwartz, Israel, 238–9, 243, 258–9
Scotland, 181, 245
Scotland Yard, 13, 15, 16, 18, 19, 45, 48, 56, 59, 65–6, 71, 75, 85, 111, 112, 113, 118, 121, 122, 126, 127, 135, 137, 157, 167, 170, 185, 194, 195, 200, 218, 219, 224–33, 234, 236, 241, 242, 243, 248, 249, 257
Scots Guards, the, 33, 67
Sealey, Sergeant, 75
Secret signs, 153
Sequeira, Dr George, 185–6
Settlement, Act of, 91
Sexual Anomalies and Perversions (Hirschfeld), 136
Sharp, Ian, 17–20, 103, 151, 152, 194
Shaw, George Bernard, 23, 83
Sherborne Street, Blandford Square, 73
Sherlock Holmes, 147
Shoreditch, 111, 251
Shoreditch Town Hall, 110
Shrewsbury, 104
'Sickert, Albert', 23, 104, 105
Sickert, Johann Jürgen, 42
Sickert, Joseph, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 30, 38, 39, 40, 41, 44, 46, 104, 151, 180, 182, 236, 246, 251, 253, 254, 256, 259, 261–2, 263–4
Sickert, Oswald Adalbert, 42, 43
Sickert, Walter, 17, 19, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 27, 28, 29, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43, 44, 45, 46, 58, 70, 80, 81, 82, 86, 89, 90, 91, 92, 93, 94, 96, 97, 98, 99, 100, 101, 102, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 121, 138, 139, 140, 141, 143, 144, 147, 148, 149, 151, 152, 160, 161, 162, 163, 169, 171, 173, 174, 175, 179, 180, 183, 184, 186, 189, 190, 202, 206, 207, 210, 211, 212, 213, 214, 215, 216, 235, 236, 237, 238, 239, 240, 246, 248–62, 264
Sidney Street, Whitechapel, 64
Siffey, Annie—*see* Chapman, Annie
Silk-weavers, 54
Simpson, Mrs, 23
Sitwell, Osbert, 44, 80, 259
Sladden, P.C., 117
Slade School of Art, 22
Slaughterers, 59, 61
Smith, Emma Elizabeth, 49, 143
Smith, P.C. William, 251, 257, 258
Smith, Major Sir Henry, 178
Social Democratic Federation, 82
Social reformer theory, 107, 208
Social unrest, 81–5
Socialism, 26, 31, 82, 160
Solomon, King, 154, 168
Somerset House, 18, 129, 213, 214
Somerset, Lord Arthur, 117, 118, 119
South Africa, 157
Special Branch, the, 85
Special Irish Branch, the, 85
Spencer, Martha, 73
Spicer, P.C. Robert, 71–2
Spitalfields, 53, 54, 55, 56, 66, 67, 68, 69, 77, 111, 136, 144, 145, 146, 147, 174–5, 236
Spratling, Inspector J., 49, 51, 236, 237
Star, The, 74
Stead, Mr, 228, 229
Stephen, Harry Lushington, 140
Stephen, Herbert, 140
Stephen, James Kenneth, 107, 140, 141, 219, 224, 264
Stephenson, Dr Roslyn D'O, 226–30
Stepney, 145, 210
Stevenson, Robert Louis, 199
Stewart, William, 107, 166–7, 171, 192–3, 202, 207
Stilson, Inspector, 79
Stonemasons, 153, 176
Storey, Ann, 95
Storr, Dr Anthony, 257
Stow, John, 54
Stowell, Dr Thomas Eldon, 204
Stowell, Dr Thomas Eldon Alexander, 105, 181, 202–7
Strand, The, 39, 212, 215, 242
Strathmore Gardens, Kensington, 133
Streatham Common, 72
Stride, Elizabeth:
  mentioned, 124, 145, 242, 249, 261
  injuries to, 14, 58, 166–7, 168
  murder of, 14, 36, 37, 49, 56–9, 123, 173, 183, 212, 235, 238–41, 258
  involved with Kelly, 34, 144, 183
  address of, 145–7
  file on, 49, 56, 233
  Swanson's report on, 57–9
  arrangement of corpse of, 58, 171
  background of, 146–7
  inquest on, 146–7

  and Dorset Street, 147
  time of death of, 239
Strokes, 35, 180–4
Styles, Detective Inspector John, 75–6
Sublime Prince of the Royal Secret, 163*n*.
'Sudden Death', 226
Sun, The, 122, 124, 126
Sunday Times-Herald, Chicago, 189–92, 194, 210
Superintendent Executive, 123
Supreme Being, 154
Supreme Grand Chapter, 157
Surgeon theory, 107
Surgeons, 61
Survey of London, (Stow) 54
Suspects file (Scotland Yard), 48, 71, 72, 137, 185, 224–33
Swallow Gardens, Whitechapel, 127
Swanson, Chief Inspector Donald, 57, 60, 63, 229, 237, 238–9, 240
Swinscow, 116
Sydney, Australia, 132

TABRAM, MARTHA, 49, 65, 126
Tailor's Arms public house, Mitre Street, 177
Talmud, the, 152
Tanner, Elizabeth, 146
Tapper, Annie, 240
Tasmania, Dr Lionel Druitt in, 133
Taxil, Leo, 155
Taylor, Dr J. O., 134
Temple of Solomon, 154, 171, 176
Ten Bells public house, Commercial Street, 68
Tennyson, Alfred, Lord, 88
Thain, P.C. 96J, 49, 51
Thames Police, 59, 213
Thames, river, 46, 54, 121, 122, 124, 126, 128, 137, 138, 139, 208, 213, 214, 230
Their Good Names (Hyde), 102
Thick, Detective Sergeant William, 76, 78
Thirty-third Masonic degree, 156, 162
Thomas, Danford, 216
Thompson, Sir Basil, 122
Thompson and McKay, Messrs, 216
Thorpe, Essex, 187
Thorpe-le-Soken, Essex, 186, 197, 208–9
Thrawl Street, Spitalfields, 51, 53, 114, 144, 145
Thyne, Dr Thomas, 134
Tilbury, 64
Times, The, 57, 65, 81, 170, 175, 198, 204, 208, 236, 240–1, 252
Tite Street, Chelsea, 139–40
Tottenham, 75
Tottenham Court Road, 22–3
Tottenham Street, 27
Toughill, Thomas, 139
Tower of Babel, 154
Trafalgar Square, 26, 80, 82, 83
Tranby Croft scandal, 85–7
Treasury, the, 118, 123
Truman's Brewery, Hanbury Street, 53
Truman, Hanbury and Buxton, 53
'Trunk of a Female', 49
Truth, 89
Turner, Martha—*see* Tabram, Martha
Turner, William, 216
Tyler, George, 75, 76, 77, 78

UNION LODGE, 176
University of London, 181, 188

VATICAN, THE, 154
Veck, 116–19
Venice, 249
Venturney, Julia, 69
Vestry Hall, Cable Street, 239
Victims file (Scotland Yard), 48, 49
Victoria Embankment, 139
Victoria Home, Commercial Street, 114
Victoria Street, Westminster, 16, 72
Victoria, Queen:
  mentioned, 15, 22, 43, 81, 92, 188, 191, 197, 209, 252
  fury over Eddy's marriage to Annie Elizabeth Crook, 25
  unpopularity, 26, 85, 88–9
  relations with family, 31
  letter to Gladstone, 80
  Golden Jubilee, 85, 88
  and Eddy's proposed marriage to Hélène d'Orléans, 90–1
  and Cleveland Street scandal, 118
  and Nichols murder, 142–3
  Lees called before, 195
  depicted in *Ennui*, 256
Vienna, 88, 158, 190
Vienna Observatory, the, 158
Vivisection, 191–2
Vollon, A., 259

WALES, 34
Walsh, Inspector, 72
Warren, Sir Charles:
  mentioned, 62
  and Kelly, 66
  appointed Commissioner, 83, 250
  and unemployed, 83
  and Freemasonry, 156–8, 162, 260
  and writing on wall, 162, 178–9
  resigns, 233
  and Packer, 242–3, 249
  and grapes in Stride murder, 242–3, 249, 260
  and Monro, 246
  and Anderson, 250
Watergate conspiracy, the, 107
Watkins, P.C., 60, 63
'Watt, Detective Chief Superintendent John', 16, 151, 152
Weaver's Arms, Hanbury Street, 177
Weber, Dr Hermann, 200
Wembley, Middlesex, 195
Wentworth Dwellings, Goulston Street, 177, 261
Wentworth Street, Whitechapel, 79
West, Acting Superintendent J., 76
West Country, the, 136
Westfield View, Rotherham, 230
Westminster Abbey, 43, 72
Westminster Board of Guardians, 98
Westminster Bridge, 39, 72, 213
Westminster Bridge Road, 123
Westminster Hospital, 214
Westminster Pier, 213, 214
Westminster Union, 41
What Does She Do With It?, 89
What Shall We Do For The Rent? (Sickert)—see *Camden Town Murder* series
Whistler, James McNeill, 22, 139
White, Sergeant Stephen, 241–3
Whitechapel, 13, 18, 33, 34, 51, 64, 65, 66, 75, 76, 79, 110–11, 123, 124, 127, 142, 143, 144, 145, 161, 174, 185, 204, 205, 207–8, 220, 226, 227, 233, 260
Whitechapel Mortuary, 50, 51, 55, 168, 169
Whitechapel Road, 49, 51, 53, 59, 108
Whitechapel Vigilance Committee, 62, 121, 221, 240
Whitefriars Street, City, 51
Whitehall, 16, 25, 178
Whitehall Mystery, the, 126
White House, Flower and Dean Street, 145
White's Row, Spitalfields, 144
Whittington-Egan, Richard, 210
Wilde, Oscar, 80, 139–40
Wilks, S., 181–2, 200
William Withey Gull, A Biographical Sketch (Acland), 181
Williams, Watkin, 157
Wilson, Arthur, 86
Wilson, Colin, 136, 180, 186, 205
Wilson, Mrs Arthur, 86
Wimborne, Dorset, 129
Winchester College, 129
Windsor, 28, 38, 56
Winslow, Sarah, 94
Wiseman, Cardinal Nicholas, 90
Wood, Robert, 255–6
Woodford Green, Essex, 71
Woolf, Virginia, 140
Workhouses, 99–102
Working Lads' Institute, Whitechapel Road, 108, 208
World's Tragedy, The (Crowley), 103
Worshipful Company of Fishmongers, the, 164
Writing on the wall, the, 61, 62, 177–9, 243, 260

X's Affiliation Order (Sickert), 254

'Y' DIVISION, 75
Yellow Palace, the, 42

364.12
KNI

Knight, Stephen
The final solution: Jack
the Ripper

	DATE DUE		
NOV 10			
NOV 27 DEC 22			
DEC 22			
OCT [illegible]			
FEB 9			
APR [illegible] 1985			

Sickert, a contemporary painter involved in the case, the reports of the on-the-spot investigators, two sets of secret papers supposedly inaccessible to the public until 1992—the Scotland Yard and the Home Office files on the Whitechapel Murders—and the newly opened file on the infamous Cleveland Street Scandal of 1889, Stephen Knight's exhaustively researched study reveals for the first time a truth more terrible than the myth construed to camouflage it. A chilling criminal investigation, a shattering political-historical exposé, *Jack the Ripper* is destined to be regarded as the final word on the nineteenth century's most vicious and vexing mystery.

Stephen Knight is a journalist who started his own investigations into the Jack the Ripper subject for a newspaper covering the Whitechapel area of London. Now writing for an international travel newspaper, he lives at Ilford, Essex, is married, and has two daughters.

Jacket design copyright © 1976
by Sam Salant

David McKay Company, Inc.
New York

Why did these three men commit the Jack the Ripper murders?

441-BAA-061

IT'S NOT IMPOSSIBLE

Healing from Ritual Abuse and Mind Control

© 2017 by Svali and Hoji

For with men this is impossible, but with God all things are possible. Matthew 19:26

This book is dedicated to:

- The God of all love, mercy and forgiveness. He is good beyond belief, and the reason this book is possible.
- My daughter, Hoji. You bless me so much and I thank God for your courage and faith.
- Jo: You are a general in God's army, and a lover of all that is good. Thank you for showing what Christian love is like.
- Cheri: When you pray, God answers, because you are His friend. Thank you.
- T: You were there during some of the hardest parts of the journey, and showed unfailing faith and courage.
- My children and loved ones still in the cult: I pray for you daily, for your freedom.

Contents

Introduction 3

Chapter One: Essentials to Deprogramming (What Needs to Be in Place Before Starting) 4

Chapter Two: Why Programming Works 8

Chapter 3: Accessing: Why it Occurs, and How to Prevent It 11

Chapter 4: Dealing with Emotions 20

Chapter 5: Presentation Programming 30

Chapter 6: Working with Healing Blockers 38

Chapter 7: Antichristian Programming 45

Chapter 8: Working with Cult Loyal Parts 48

Chapter 9: Helping Spiritual Systems Heal 54

Chapter 10: Helping Littles and Infants Heal 61

Chapter 11: Reprogramming Systems 65

Chapter 12: Suicidality and Self Harm 68

Chapter 13: Working with the Birth Mother 72

Chapter 14: Working with the Core 76

Chapter 15: Building Joy 81

Chapter 16: Relating to Support People 86

Chapter 17: Why People Don't Heal 90

Introduction

This is a book about healing from some of the most difficult traumas a human being can undergo. I wrote the book for one purpose: to help those on the journey realize it is possible to heal and to help those supporting them understand what they are trying to heal from.

I have been on my own healing journey for 27 years. It started when I went for deliverance years ago, and continued during the time when I realized that I was a member of a satanic cult, chose to leave the group, was abused and tortured and forced to recant, and then by God's grace chose to continue to heal from *those* traumas. I wrote numerous articles that have been published on the Internet and shared with others earlier in this healing journey. Those articles reflected my understanding of healing at that time. This book reflects my understanding in the years since, after numerous access attempts (some successful, many not), and a deepening walk with God, who is my true healer.

I used to be a programmer for a group that stands behind the Illuminati, Knights Templar, Opus Dei, Magnificat, Trinity and the other international occultic organizations (there are twelve in all). In fact, I used to be their head programmer, and ran the programming labs for this organization after Mengele died, when the torch was first passed on to another, and then to me. I developed or helped develop many of the programs discussed in this book or "improved" on those developed before my time. I no longer work for that group, and this book is my restitution. My other restitution is this: I pray that all who were ever programmed by me, or with the technologies that I developed, will be freed and released, in the name of the true Jesus who heals and blesses and forgives. I am forgiven for all that I did, by a God who shows amazing grace and mercy. He has literally held me as I shook and cried and screamed at times, both during the actual traumas, and during the healing of them. He has never left my side, throughout the journey. He never abandons during the journey, even though it can be difficult at times.

Many will ask "Where did you go during the years you disappeared?" I chose to go offline, had no cell phone, and lived with a safe friend during the five years of that part of my healing. I was then tested greatly, and found that God would come through. During this time, one my daughters (Hoji) chose to leave the group as well, in large part due to my testimony for Christ. She remembers (as I do, as well) being there when I was tortured for my faith in Christ, and that I whispered "I forgive you" to her and the others present (leaders of this organization). With this I want to add: "I want you to get free" to each of my loved ones who are still in the group. It really is possible to get free, and this book is my testimony to this fact. May it help and bless those who read its pages.

svali

Chapter One: Essentials to Deprogramming (What Needs to Be in Place Before Starting)

Healing from mind control programming is possible, but it is not easy. One of the most difficult issues that therapists and supporters face is the heartbreak of seeing individuals that they attempt to help break free get accessed continuously while the individual is completely unaware. They must weigh the attempt to help against the possibility of harm, since attempts to heal can be used against the survivor if they are accessed.

Before attempting to heal from occultic programming, it is important to have support in place if at all possible. This is difficult work and having the support that is needed can make a huge difference in success and preventing reaccess. Below are suggestions for finding support.

Safe Support and accountability

First and foremost, it is important to have a safe support person in your life who can provide accountability (i.e. help ensure that you aren't doing missions overseas for three months when you thought you were going to college or working). You will want to have someone you can talk to, vent to, or let your parts out around who will not be a perpetrator to you or them. There are numerous reasons for needing support during healing, but the foundational reason is this: the wounding to the survivor was done relationally, and healing is also done relationally (i.e. the survivor was hurt by people, and the survivor needs people to heal).

I have heard of survivors (with government mind control, not extensive occultic programming) who have been able to heal "solo" but this is extremely rare. While the individual may be able to break programming and become free of access, these individuals may integrate, but do not truly heal, because there has not been the healthy attachment or modeling of healthy behavior that is needed for true relational healing.

Finding safe support may sound simple, but safe support and accountability from a non-dissociative person can be extremely hard to find.

Why is this? One reason is that most programmed survivors will be almost literally surrounded by cult people; and early in their therapy, they will have no idea that this is so. The loving husband who supports your therapy and drives you to sessions may actually be a handler (this was true for me, of my first two husbands). The best friend who is "always there" for you may be a cult sister. Family members are often also members of the group a survivor is trying to leave.

I have had many survivors ask me "If I was in the cult, is it possible that my husband wasn't?" My heart breaks when I hear this question, because almost always, the answer is "no." People who grew up in a cult group that programmed them will not be allowed to choose their own spouse; the cult chooses them.

What about people who "got away" from the group in their teens?

This is another question I have been asked frequently. The history often goes like this:

the survivor remembers being part of a cult group in their early childhood, then believes that they somehow "escaped" when they left home to go to college or got married. In most cases, the belief that the survivor “left” is a cover memory, designed to cover the fact they are still active and doing their cult jobs. Most cult groups have put time and effort into programming members and do not simply let people “leave”. I have also heard many stories of survivors who later in therapy realized that they never did leave, and the husband or partner they “chose” is actually their handler (an individual whose job is to watch them, report on them, and ensure that they are doing their cult jobs).

Another reason it is extremely difficult to find safe support and accountability is the lack of education and unwillingness in the church to provide these things to survivors. This is not a “slam” against churches, but the reality: many survivors report negative experiences if they disclose the fact that they are breaking free from a cult to their church. This can be due to several reasons:

- People in the church don’t understand their authority in Christ, and are afraid of the spiritual warfare that they believe a survivor will bring into the church if they help the survivor
- The church has had previous bad experiences with infiltrators who had jobs of promoting negative perceptions of survivors and creating chaos, division or burnout within the church
- Misunderstanding within the church regarding the need for support and accountability. A survivor may be erroneously seen as “paranoid” or “not trusting God with their safety.” Requests for accountability are misunderstood due to ignorance in the church about how cults work or how access occurs
- Fear of the cult and fear of possible physical retaliation. This fear is reinforced by some very bad teaching about cults and survivors

Realistically, when looking for support and accountability, the survivor may not have many – if any - options. There are very few “safe houses” (and most that do exist have been reported to be infiltrated). Early in their journey, the survivor will want to pray that God does provide this accountability and support.

Ideally, a support person will have the following characteristics:

- **They are not dissociative**, or are a **completely** healed survivor. This requires discernment because it is not uncommon for “supporters” or those in prayer ministries who are drawn to work with survivors to be dissociative, and completely unaware of this fact. I have heard of numerous accounts of a survivor’s “support person” learning that they themselves are dissociative, and neither they nor the survivor initially suspected this fact. Survivors should be especially wary of individuals that they feel an “instant connection with” (real friendship takes time). Also, some “integrated” survivors later discover that only the top levels of their systems joined, while deeper levels continued to be cult active. Get to know a person well, and be prayerful, before asking them into a support role.

- **Mature.** All too often, supporters of survivors have their own unhealed wounds that can negatively impact the survivor. I have heard numerous horror stories of survivors who worked almost as slaves in return for a room in a house; or of emotional abuse (including Christian abuse) in which the survivor was berated for "taking so long to heal" or "not having the faith to integrate quickly" by individuals who did not understand how mind control works or what the process of healing looks like. This can be extremely damaging to a survivor who is already struggling with antichristian programming.

- **Have a strong faith.** While I have known survivors who worked on healing without Christianity, I personally cannot imagine healing occultic abuse and the demonic oppression that results without going to the real source of healing: the loving God who created us and never abandoned us, even during the worst of the abuse. Anyone who supports survivors of ritual abuse must have a source of strength, joy and spiritual refreshment to help them in the battle against the demonic, or they will burn out. It helps tremendously to help others from the viewpoint of victory; and the Holy Spirit can provide the wisdom, discernment and love that no other source can.

Therapist

During healing, it is also important to have a therapist who is knowledgeable and experienced in dealing with cult programming. Healing work involves coming in touch with deep trauma, including intense emotions and painful memories. A therapist who is warm, has faith that you can heal, and can help support you through this journey can make a huge difference.

Church

Another possible source of strength while healing and deprogramming is a **strong, loving church**. Some of the best help for healing – and some of the worst spiritual and verbal abuse – comes from churches, which makes it important to find one that is *helpful.*

Look for a church that is based upon the Bible, and where the people are accepting. People who shun or avoid you because you are a survivor will impede your healing. Does the church have a ministry that helps those recovering from emotional, spiritual or sexual abuse? You may not want to initially disclose that you are a survivor of cult abuse or mind control; instead, you may want to check out their ministry to other issues first.

About Safe Houses

Safe houses are a controversial topic, and for good reason. I lived in the home of an individual who was not dissociative for two years during an intense portion of my own healing journey. While I was not accessed due to 24/7 accountability (which was good) I did endure some verbal and emotional abuse from the woman whose house I lived in. I was expected to cook, clean, help out financially and spend eight hours a day, five days a week journaling as a requirement of staying there, or I would be asked to leave. I did journal and discovered a lot about my parts and their jobs during this time, but at great emotional cost. I am grateful, however, that I had safety during those two years, and do appreciate her allowing me to stay there during this very difficult portion of my journey.

I also stayed at a “safe house” in which I was accessed (by my daughter from another country, who came to live there soon after I entered the house). The house was not safe, because I myself was not yet safe (I was unaware of my deepest double binds, which made me vulnerable to access), and because the other survivors in the house were quite early in their own healing journeys, and so were all also vulnerable to access.

If you are able to stay with a truly safe, non-dissociative friend or pastor who opens their home to you, you are fortunate indeed. But these situations are rare. Some “safe houses” are actually designed to access others attempting to leave the cult, and any survivor who chooses this route should exercise discernment and caution.

Women’s shelters can be a short-term option, but often cult groups will send in a member after the person attempting to escape (this happened to me three times). Also, some women’s shelters are managed by cult personnel for this very reason. Others know that they are not trained to deal with those escaping cult abuse. So pray before seeking safety to help ensure that the situation you are entering into is truly safe.

It is possible to heal without having all four types of support described above; you may only find one, if any, sources of help in your healing journey. If you can find safe accountability, this is the most helpful as you begin healing.

Chapter Two: Why Programming Works

Mind control involves the installation of programs into a person. "Programming" is convincing a person (a part/personality/alter) that he or she have no choice but to perform a particular action, or hold to a particular belief. While it can be helpful to understand *what* programming is present, an important foundation for healing is to understand *why* it works. Modern programming is based upon extensive scientific research (by individuals such as B.F. Skinner, Milton Erikson, Mengele and those who followed in his footsteps) as well as the application of spiritual principles that basically "lock it in" after it is installed. In other words, modern programming is a combination of science and spirituality.

Most programming consists of the following components. The length and complexity of each will vary with the skills of the programmers (also known as "trainers" but who are in actuality *abusers*). The components include:

1. Agreement to installation of the program
2. Participation in a ritual before installation
3. Installation of behavior and beliefs (with concurrent psychological, physical or tech torture)
4. Concurrent installation of command codes and triggers
5. Participation in a ritual after the programming session (sealing ritual)
6. Post-programming bonding session, during which the individual is comforted, and young (infant and child) parts are rocked, held, given bottles of formula or breast fed, and rewarded for "doing well" during the session

Why do people agree to have programming installed?

This often surprises survivors, who initially believe that they were unwilling victims of evil people (which can also be true). The reality is, they are often the *willing* victims of programmers because they are thinking and acting due to a lifetime of the installation (indoctrination) of false beliefs. This agreement is usually not conscious, since **the individual has usually made agreements within their presentation to not remember their own programming**.

What kind of false beliefs bring a person to the point of allowing the installation of programming? In most groups, this programming begins in the womb, while the individual is still a fetus. Mengele was the first to truly demonstrate and document the effects of fetal trauma and its role in controlling the individual; over the years, others built upon his work. Today, extensive trauma (torture of the birth mother) carrying the fetus and of the fetus is considered a routine part of programming.

The reasons for prenatal torture are numerous. One of the main goals is to develop in the individual the concept that the world (which they have never truly interacted with yet) is an unsafe place, where bad things happen. Then, when the trainer tells the fetus, “God hates you, that is why you and your mother are being hurt” the fetus will believe this lie and incorporate it into their belief system. This creates a primal belief which causes the fetus (and the core throughout the individual’s lifetime) to mistrust God: The individual believes “God is bad, and He does not protect me from pain.”

This primal belief then leads the fetus to accept the following lies:

- I must protect myself (because God can’t or won’t)
- I must protect my mother

Unfortunately, the fetus is very tiny, and is not God (the only one who can truly protect). This creates a conflict: if God will not protect me and my birth mother, then how do I protect her?

The trainer will then offer the fetus a solution to this dilemma. They will ask the fetus to accept a demon which they tell the fetus will “protect” them from pain, or will stop their mother’s pain. As soon as the fetus agrees (this agreement is monitored both by brain scans and spiritually by the trainer), the torture is stopped, and the demonic enters in.

The demonic will wrap itself around the core, and creates the first dissociation, or split, with the demonic delusion shielding the fetus from its own pain. Most importantly, the fetus has learned to take the role of “God” in protecting itself from the pain of prenatal torture.
This idolatry (being one’s own messiah, and the birth mother’s messiah) causes the construction of a stronghold of beliefs and lies that later in life cause the individual to agree to their own programming. As the fetus grows and is born, they will later learn to “rescue” people they love, such as brothers, sisters, beloved parents and primary trainers they have bonded with.

This belief that the individual is responsible for the welfare and continued existence of others they love is installed repetitively in the womb. Why? Because programming will not hold unless it is agreed with, either consciously or unconsciously. The individual will be taught in set ups that the people they love most will die if they do not keep their programming running, or allow its installation. A critical part of undoing programming is to look at how these foundational lies are installed (that only I can rescue myself and the people I love; God does not care, and won’t), and the traumas that underlie the beliefs.

False Belief Number Two: God Is Weak

Because the Christian God is able to help a survivor heal, the belief is often installed repetitively in the womb that God is not only unwilling, but unable to help the fetus. Setups are done in which the fetus is raped in the womb (with specialized instruments that resemble miniature Q-tip swabs) which causes intense fetal distress (in fact, some fetuses actually curl up and die in the womb from the intense emotional and physical pain that this causes). The fetus may also have its digits (toes, fingers) cut off in the early months of life in the womb, since these will grow back when done during the early months. While the torture is occurring, setups are done in which a false “jesus” comes into the room, and either abuses the fetus, or wrings his hands, declaring “I’m sorry I can’t help you” or even cries, saying he is afraid.

During these setups, the birth mother is also tortured, and the false “jesus” plays out this script with her. This is an important part of setting up early belief systems in the fetus. Since fetal brain waves automatically synchronize with those of the mother, the fetus often experiences emotions that correspond with what the birth mother experiences; her fear, mistrust and fear of a false jesus who rapes and tortures her will be communicated to the fetus, and build up the belief that the Christian God is evil – and too weak to help during painful circumstances.

Chapter 3: Accessing: Why it Occurs and How to Prevent It

Accessing is a serious issue for survivors, so serious, that I am choosing to devote one of the early chapters in this book to this topic. It is important for both survivors and therapists to understand what accessing is, and the steps they can take to prevent it from happening.

What is accessing?

Accessing is the deliberate contact of a survivor by the group (or affiliates) that they left, in order to intimidate and frighten parts into doing their cult jobs. Access may be as short and simple as a single sentence in an email that scares a part into shutting down therapy or withdrawing from healthy support. It can also be more complex, for instance, a survivor returning to a cult facility for hours for reprogramming.

If a person was raised in an organized group, they will have programming put in to make them accessible by the group. This is considered base-level programming to prevent their leaving.

How is accessing done?

Accessing is done by several methods, depending upon the stage of healing and awareness of the survivor.

One misconception people have is that accessing is done by mysterious, scary "bad" people who follow the survivor around and try to harm them when out and about. **But the number one person who accesses the survivor is the survivor themself**. They will have recontact programming installed that makes them become extremely anxious if they do not have regular contact with their cult handlers.

Cell phones are the number one method of accessing used by the cult. All survivors who have left an organized group will have programming in place to contact cult members by phone, or to receive messages or calls from cult members by phone. The survivor often will have absolutely no recollection that they received a text or message from the cult (this is how the amnesia linked to this programming works).

Who contacts the survivor? In most cases, the person's **immediate family** will be the members of the group chosen to contact the survivor. This could be a mother, father, aunt, uncle, brother, sister, children or grandchildren, or other family members. Texts back and forth about "family matters" will often have hidden messages or cues within them, reminding the person's cult parts of their jobs, and the programmed threat that goes with them.

- Examples: "Your family really loves you" is a frequent cue to cult-loyal parts to remember that only the cult can love them.
- "I love you and miss you" can be a cue that if the person does not re-contact, that the person's double binds will be put into danger, or tortured.

- "We haven't heard from you in a while" is an even stronger message that the person's cult parts need to contact, or someone they love will get hurt.

Often, cute videos of family members are sent as reinforcements of the fact that if the person tries to break free, or their parts stop doing their old jobs, the people in the video will be tortured. There may be subliminals in the background reinforcing this message on an unconscious level.

The person's cell phone bill will not show the more blatant or direct cult calls or texts, because there are special codes that can be entered in that ensure that the calls are not recorded by the phone company.

To break this re-contact programming, the individual's presentation (parts that live daily life, sometimes called host parts) need to show the programmed parts that **it is entirely possible to disobey the programming directives.** This involves breaking the program by:

1. Parts realizing there are options besides the directives
2. Parts giving up programmed lies for truth

The presentation parts may want to choose for a period of time to give up phone contact with cult-active associates or family members, until the person is sufficiently healed to be able to relate without being accessed.

If the person chooses to give up their cell phone (which should be done in order to break the programming, at least for a period of time), the group will then attempt to access the survivor by other methods. They will usually go to email or online next, since most people stay "connected" in these ways.

Emails with triggering subject lines from people the individual knows and trusts will appear around this time in healing. This is because most accessing occurs from people the person has known and loved most of their life. The individual has no idea that these members of their family, or church, or group of friends, is a cult member, since they will be amnesic to this fact until the parts begin coming forward and sharing information with them.

Subliminal Programming

Whenever a survivor uses technology such as a smart phone, goes online, plays video games, or watches current TV programs, they will be fed subliminal messages and images designed to fire off their NWO and other programming. These subliminals are part of Project Alexis, which was designed to prepare the world for the rise of the NWO. The images are fed at a speed of .03 microseconds (faster than conscious sight can see), with extremely rapid audios paired as well.

Once a survivor of cult programming signs into their email address, or visits Facebook, or signs into Amazon, or any other sites online, the subliminals linked to their profile will begin automatically feeding through their browser (there is no "safe" browser or operating system that can prevent this). Images of family members being hurt, and other distressing events, will be flashed by faster than the survivor can visually process. Ads with cues and triggers will also be displayed, and the individual may be completely unaware of this fact until they begin healing and working towards co-consciousness.

It becomes a "catch 22" in many ways: the emails, texts and subliminals frighten parts into not disclosing about family members, and the person is left wondering why their parts are not talking to them, or sharing much in therapy. The failure to disclose and amnesia keep the survivor in constant contact with cult members, while they are completely unaware of this fact. As a result, their cult parts continue to do their jobs, while the person's presentation has no idea that this is going on.

If a person chooses to give up their cell phone, and to go completely offline (or only limited online use with full accountability, i.e. someone watching while they check their bank statement, etc.) then the attempts to access by other methods will escalate.

Common forms of attempted access throughout the process of breaking free, and particularly at this point will include visual triggering by a visit from a family member if the individual is still in contact, or the cult placing someone who looks very similar to a double bind in view of the person. This could be a child who looks very much like a beloved child or grandchild standing next to the survivor at a store; or individuals who look just like a family member showing up when the survivor is in a public place. These are meant as nonverbal warnings: "If you don't obey us, this person will get hurt." These double bind lookalikes may also quickly sign messages to the survivor that they may be amnesic to (such as “help me” or “save me”) in order to trigger their recontact programming.

Cards by postal mail with threats may arrive; or voice mail messages with triggers may be left on a message machine. If the person has international presentations, mail addressed to the name of one of the other presenters, or a child or loved one from the other countries, may show up (i.e. "How odd, this mail came here and I don't know anyone by that name.")

Visual cues may be placed in the survivor's surroundings: a bouquet of flowers that has a special meaning; a special perfume on a card, or a 'gift" of a food that has a specific meaning to another presentation may appear.

If the individual cannot be accessed by other methods, the group will often attempt physical abduction. Often, the survivor will be taken somewhere by someone they know and trust, that they are unaware of as being a cult member, and physical accessing will then occur. If the survivor has too much co-consciousness to allow this, then physical threats and abuse may occur when the survivor is alone or in a vulnerable state.

Along with all of the above, the cult will also attempt spiritual access of the individual trying to break free. Dreams, threats and messages via astral projection may be given while sleeping, or even while awake, through demonic means. It is important that the individual prays about any open doors or parts with double binds that were programmed to stay in contact with loved ones who are cult members in this way.

Why is accessing done?

Accessing is done to make sure that the person's cult parts are continuing to do their jobs and that the presenters continue to remain clueless and amnesic. Continued access will cause continued amnesia and dissociation.

As mentioned previously, these jobs could include "internal", "spiritual" and "external"/"physical" jobs.

Internal jobs

- Making sure that the person's dissociation/amnesia is intact
- Protecting/guarding classified information or parts inside
- Blocking the person's healing
- Undoing the person's work in therapy
- Wearing out helpers
- Sending warfare and division internally and externally
- Participating in full rituals internally and calling on the demonic

External jobs

- Participating in rituals
- Active physical agendas against Christians and those helping survivors break free
- Sabotaging other survivors' safety or healing
- Assignments like research and assassinations
- Training of younger cult members
- Reporting to the cult
- Disseminating misinformation
- Discrediting other survivors and therapists

The person will normally be completely unaware that they have been triggered, or that their cult parts are doing their jobs, until later in healing.

Survivors commonly ask the following question regarding accessing:

If I pray, and ask that my Christian Host or presenters be present, could I still be accessed and unaware of the fact?

Yes. Why? Firstly, because the LORD does not set aside free will in the survivor, including the free will of parts who are still compliant with cult orders or who still want to protect loved ones in the cult way. Also, the Christian host, while a true believer, is often programmed to allow access and may have taken vows of amnesia and access, i.e. the Christian host/presentation is double-minded. Thirdly, the survivor often has a False Christian presentation that takes over the prayer that prays to a false "Jesus" or "God" before the Christian presenters (who pray to the true Christian God) have a chance to pray.

While the Christian presentation can pray, if other cult programmed parts that the Christian presentation is amnesic to rotate out due to a trigger or cue, the person can still be accessed and be completely unaware of this fact.

Here are two examples from real life. At one time, I took an accountability person (another survivor in therapy) with me each time I went to visit my children in another state (there was a custody battle, and at the time, I was only allowed supervised visitation with my children due to the risk of my abducting them in order to get them away from their abuse). Each time, my accountability person and I, as well as trusted church support members, would pray for my safety and ability to stay in my presentation and not lose time during the visitations.

Throughout the visits, I would pray continuously for safety with my accountability friend. On the way home, after each visit, I would thank the LORD with great relief for safety, and the fact that "nothing bad happened" during the visits, and gave praise reports to my church about how the LORD protected me and my friend, and answered our prayers for safety.

It wasn't until years later, and with more healing and deeper internal communication inside, and the amnesia dropping, that I discovered to my great distress that during each visit with my children, I had been accessed, tortured, and reprogrammed during the entire time. My accountability partner had been programmed to not remember these facts either. This is one reason why in general, other survivors do NOT make good accountability for a survivor.

The "safe visits" were actually cover memories that my Christian presentation was told to believe, or my children would be tortured and/or killed. Because I loved my children, there was a huge investment in not remembering, and so I had no idea of what actually happened during the visits. Memories of taking my children shopping were dealt with by cult members placing the items "purchased" in my car, and quick photos during the last hours of the visit were taken, with each photo staged to show different "fun activities" with my children.

In actuality, each visit was re-accessing and reprogramming by the cult, with orders given to not remember the accessing and to come again in several months. The amnesia at the time was complete, with absolutely no hint of what was actually occurring during the visits. My belief that the visits were safe, and that nothing bad had occurred, was real – and mistaken.

Another example:

One survivor who had broken off all contact with her family due to cult memories of them had a short meeting with her brother at a local grocery store. She timed it and had a accountability person come and get her at the end of 15 minutes, to ensure that the meeting was short. She and her brother walked around the store and talked a little. During that meeting, completely unknown to the Christian presentation despite prayer, her brother gave a message to her cult parts. Due to the message, for months her cult parts strongly attempted to sabotage some very important matters for the person. These parts shared what happened only six months later in therapy, after much trouble.

Asking the Christian presenters/Host if the survivor was safe during a time period may not work for several reasons:

- The false Christian Host was the one actually out praying and reporting how the trip went, and the survivor is completely unaware of this fact

- The Christian presentation/Host has been heavily programmed to sabotage healing and keep cult contact up. They will be completely unaware of this fact. The person's day to day Christian presentation/Host may be the most heavily programmed part of the person, and they will not know this at all. The cult will not leave Christian parts unprogrammed; and in fact, will make sure these are the ones that maintain recontact.

How Do You Prevent Re-accessing?

Now that the problem of accessing has been defined, what can the survivor, and their helper do, to prevent reaccessing? Especially with the knowledge that early in therapy, reaccessing occurs in nearly 100 % of survivors? It is very common for survivors to be given cover memories that they "broke free" or that the cult abuse ended earlier in life, while in reality, they have been continuously cult active. It is common for survivors to be reaccessed or have cult contact of some kind, until the amnesia starts coming down.

The cult does not just "let people go" when they become adults, or enter therapy. Instead, **the accessing will often increase during this time**, as cults or government agencies do not want to lose members.

With this knowledge, the survivor will need to find out which parts are currently in contact with the cult. One way to do so is to give up all phone, email and online activity for a period of time, such as two months. The parts who are currently contacting will probably complain loudly, or the survivor may even become suicidal. The person may become restless and feel a huge urgency that they are "missing something important" in emails or online (the survivor will always have legitimate sounding reasons for continuing online and phone activities, such as checking bank statements and paying bills, but behind these is their programming to recontact running). The Christian presentation, with support, then has the opportunity to bring truth to these parts and help them break out of their cult-trained beliefs.

The desire to stop cult contact must come from the survivor themselves. While it may be obvious to the therapist and others that the survivor is being re-accessed, they will be oblivious to this fact, and will become very angry/defensive/hostile if confronted about this.

It can be helpful to educate the survivor and their parts on why it is a good idea to stop cult (family) contact. Some reasons to do so include:

- The survivor gets hurt

- Loved ones of the survivor get hurt when they are accessed
- Accessing impedes healing, because parts get retraumatized
- It is an extremely poor Christian witness to people who are still in the cult
- It is an extremely poor Christian witness to the survivor's own parts
- It is a lifestyle of extreme duplicity
- The survivor has to actually hurt others during a reaccessing session
- The survivor may be forced to accept agendas against their therapist and other survivors
- Cult loyal parts that recontact will be rewarded for contact, which actually increases the bonding to those reaccessing, making healing more difficult

There are always significant traumas and double binds behind recontact programming, and the therapist will want to help the survivor look at these issues. Cult loyal parts will have difficulty stopping recontact if they believe that failure to do so results in the torture or death of someone they love. This is where the ability to trust the LORD with the safety of double binds is so important.

Saying, "LORD, I give my double binds to you," does not at all ensure that this is being done. Instead, HOW the double binds were installed, and with whom, and the specific vows to protect the double bind will need to be remembered. Often, these vows are elicited by the survivor watching a double bind being tortured; unable to take any more, the survivor will cave and agree to stay in contact. They will have no memory of this event, since they will also agree to forget the event, or else their loved one will be tortured. This is why consistent memory work and dedication to healing and looking at the events that run recontact programming inside are so important.

If the survivor is an international survivor (one who was hosted in several countries as a child and adult) their primary double binds will likely be in another country, and they may be amnesic to them. This will also need to be looked at. Breaking double binds with the American family may not be sufficient to stop re-accessing if there are unconscious double binds elsewhere.

The survivor's first programmer/trainer will often be their primary double bind.

They will often be completely amnesic to whom this person actually is. Their systems will be invested in protecting this person above all others, and so they will disclose other people as double binds first. The true double binds often will not come out until later in therapy.

This is where accountability can help. Until the survivor is aware of and has broken their recontact programming, and has truly dealt with their double binds, outside accountability can help prevent reaccess.

Safe accountability would be either a **non-dissociative person** or a survivor who has broken their own double binds and recontact programming and is co-conscious with their most loyal cult parts.

Survivors who are in the early stages of healing should never be asked to be accountability for another survivor's safety. They will be completely unaware of the fact that they themselves have a strong recontact agenda, which can include helping other survivors "reconnect" with family (cult) members, or others.

A safe accountability person should be made aware of the survivor's safety plan (any survivor should have a safety plan, if they are serious about stopping re-accessing). This will include awareness of any phone calls and texts made and received, and any online activities of any kind; for instance, the survivor may ask the accountability person to be with them and watching at all times that they go online.

Failure to have accountability jeopardizes both the survivor and others that they could impact. While it can be a "bother" to have accountability, the alternative can be much more painful.

Once the survivor stops Internet, phone and other contact, and has accountability in place, they may actually feel worse for a period of time as they are breaking the programming. The programming is actually being drawn out so the survivor can look at it: they may feel suicidal or depressed, or shaky for a period of time. This will pass as the programming is broken.

Stopping Astral Access

If the cult cannot reach the survivor by physical means, they will attempt to do so spiritually, often through astral projection. These demonic spirits will appear, often in the middle of the night, to the survivor, and will frequently appear as double binds/loved ones. The astrals may appear to be in great distress, and will attempt to "blackmail" the survivor into recontact with messages that the loved one is being tortured, or sobbing that they miss the survivor.

The survivor will need to discover and close the spiritual doors that allow spiritual access. This process will include:

- Finding out which parts inside have the job to maintain spiritual contact with loved ones in the group.
- Why they want to continue this contact
- What these parts believe will happen if contact is stopped.

It is common to feel immense fear at first, at the thought of stopping astral contact, since the rituals and programming done around this is extensive, and starts in infancy. Spiritual parts may attempt to punish the survivor for attempting to stop it, until they become aware of the danger of continuing it.

Once all doors are closed, both spiritually and physically, parts may start feeling safe enough to come out and disclose to the survivor, and heal. This includes getting rid of the demonic spirits that sit within the parts whose job is to maintain astral contact, and resolving the traumas that they have undergone.

Over time, astral contact will lessen as the survivor learns to use their authority to stop the contact. Simply commanding an astral to depart in the name of the true Jesus is sufficient to make it leave; doing this builds faith in the survivor’s parts and witnesses to them over time, and they will be more and more willing to turn to the Christian God instead of to the demonic.

Chapter 4: Dealing with Emotions

One of the most difficult issues for survivors who are trying to heal from cult-related mind control to deal with is emotions. Why is this?

In cases of extensive programming, the individual will have been tortured since they were in the womb, with one primary goal in mind: control of the person. As part of the dissociation, the individual will be taught to "give away" their emotions to demons and parts, whom they are told can "relieve" them of this intense pain.

Many times, controller parts (parts who are in charge over other parts or internal systems) will be highly logical, or be programmed to believe that they are "ascended" (above "mortal" feelings, which are considered base, earth-bound, and physical). The higher-order, or ascended systems in a survivor's psyche will have been taught, and believe since earliest infancy (or before) false beliefs such as:

- They are gods, angels or demons
- They are ascended beings
- They are immortals
- They have overcome their humanity
- They do not feel pain
- **They do not have human emotions**

This belief is based upon immense emotional and physical trauma. The types of traumas that create this type of belief can include:

- Killing the birth mother when the infant is born – and telling the infant it is his/her fault (this is very common in organized occultic groups, and creates great internal guilt which is used to control the individual, who is told they are a "mother killer" and other equally painful lies)
- Torturing the fetus in the womb, and telling them that the pain they feel is the "pain of mortality" and the only way to escape the pain is to "ascend" (by taking on a demonic or spiritual identity and spirit, which then shields from the emotional and physical pain, but continues the delusion and deception that the individual is an "ascended being" instead

of a human being who has been heavily traumatized

The "Difficult Emotions" for survivors

Most presenter parts (the ones who normally enter into therapy) in survivors of mind control will have great difficulty in identifying or expressing their emotions in a healthy way. This is the result of a combination of factors which can include:

- Dissociation of strong feelings (programming to not feel; with a very stoic or numb presentation)

- Role models (parents, trainers, others) who were very unhealthy or abusive in their expression of emotions, and dismissed any expressions of feelings by the survivor throughout childhood (except to punish them)

- Unconscious fear that the emotion will overwhelm the survivor and they will not be able to handle it

Some emotions are particularly difficult for survivors to identify or express in healthy ways. But with healing, emotions do come, often with "flooding" when they first occur, until the traumatic events are dealt with, and the parts that underwent trauma can be comforted.

Anger/rage

This emotion can be difficult for a survivor to deal with, because rage was often "sent" to parts whose job was to torture, punish or kill either external people or internal parts. As a child, while undergoing close quarters combat training, or during martial arts training, they are told to "tap into" the rage to help increase their endurance and ability. Unconsciously, the survivor may associate anger/rage with these activities, and avoid their expression completely in their presentation. Alternatively, the survivor may have a very aggressive/hostile presentation that feels protected from sorrow, loneliness or rejection through responding with anger in situations that trigger these feelings. Either way, many survivors have difficulty processing and expressing intense anger or rage in an appropriate way.

They may fear that they will "lose control" or even "kill someone" if the rage they fear comes forward.

It is important to help the survivor find ways to express the rage that has built up over the years, and develop connections between unfeeling parts and those that feel. This is done over time, with the "non-feelers" gradually developing the capacity to feel, and to comfort the parts that may feel overwhelmed with feelings.

Anger, or any other emotion, often comes in strongly, peaks within two to three days, then gradually begins to subside (the amount of time in the cycle will vary with the survivor, the amount of trauma, and the amount of support available to them). It can help to reassure the survivor that these feelings will NOT last forever, even though tapping into a lifetime of dissociated feeling can seem that way at first.

It can help to develop methods of coping with rage when it occurs. The activities that help most will differ with each person; for some, vigorous physical activity (hiking, running, boxing) or hitting a box with a bat will help. Hitting rocks with a sledge hammer (with goggles and protection worn) can also help. Using a therapy bat, and hitting a bed or other safe object can also help. Others break ice as anger relief. It is important to have some accountability/supervision when first doing anger work because of the amount of emotion (which may seem scary to the survivor) coming out; and the possible need to be "talked down."

In some instances, when a survivor gets in touch with the abuse memories and the associated rage, they may become homicidal for a short period of time. Often, they may verbalize wanting to go find the perpetrator, and do to them what was done to the survivor. It is important to assess the degree of actual risk, and create a safety plan. The survivor needs to realize that going back and hurting perpetrators will place them in extreme jeopardy: they will be immediately accessed and tortured themselves in most cases; or, they will be harmed spiritually should they succeed in hurting the perpetrator.

Forgiveness is an important component of healing, but it cannot be rushed. All too often in Christian circles, there is a rush to put the Band-Aid of the words "I forgive them" without fully processing the extent of the loss the survivor incurred. This includes the rage at God that a survivor feels, because ultimately, they blame Him for what they have been through. This will be addressed further in the chapter on anti-Christian programming.

Guilt

Guilt is an extremely painful emotion for most survivors, for several reasons.

1. It is often installed during prenatal programming, during which the fetus is asked if they want to live, or for the other (implanted zygotes) to live. During the first months of life after conception, the fetus will always respond "yes" – and then the zygote the programmer wished to get rid of is killed. This happens over the succeeding weeks until there is only one embryo left – an embryo that experiences a lot of survivor guilt due to the death of the other embryos in the womb. This prenatal guilt programming was first developed by Mengele, and is one of the foundations on which self-punishment, penance, punisher and other programming is placed.
2. Throughout infancy and childhood, the survivor will have been taught to punish

themselves. In a typical setup, if the survivor disobeys or hesitates, they are punished brutally for failure; or, someone they love (a twin, brother or sister, or beloved trainer) is punished for their failure. This causes extreme distress, and the child promises never to fail again. Internalized images of these loved ones are then punished if the child disobeys.

3. The survivor will have blood guilt through participation in rites, rituals and sacrifices throughout a lifetime. If they are a trained assassin, this guilt increases, and the survivor may find it difficult to believe that God could truly forgive them.
4. The survivor, as they recover memories, will eventually remember being a perpetrator, being forced to torture other infants, children, birth mothers, or to participate in other acts such as rape or punishing others. Most organized cult members are able to do at least basic programming on others, since this is a skill taught from earliest childhood in most groups. The survivor will then recover memories of becoming what they hated most – an abuser – and will need to deal with the resulting guilt.
5. If the survivor has anti-Christian programming (and most do), they will have been forced to hurt an actor portraying "Jesus" or to nail other children to crosses, and to do acts that show their hatred of God and Christianity. They are then told, "God can never forgive you, He hates you because you did this" and the child believes this.

The survivor will need to hear frequently that God loves them and forgives them, since they will question this many times. They may have great difficulty believing that someone who has committed the deeds they have committed can ever be forgiven.

Scriptures about the love of God can be helpful (although be aware that these may also have been used in anti-Christian programming), as well as books about forgiveness and grace; being kind to the survivor, and showing/modeling love and acceptance are helpful during this time of emotional struggle. The survivor and their parts will need to come to a point of finally accepting that what God says in His word is true: they are forgiven, regardless of what they have done, in spite of how they feel.

Shame

Shame is another painful emotion that many survivors experience. The survivor may feel shame regarding their sexual abuse, and the terrible forms this can take in occultic and mind control settings (including bestiality, necrophilia, prostitution, child abuse, infant abuse, etc.). They may feel shame because they were unable to fight the programmers; or because they "caved" or gave in to programming, or did things they hated doing.

Shame is the survivor labeling themselves negatively because of what they have done, and what they believe others think about them. Healing takes time, with lots of acceptance, the opportunity to process memories, and the abuse and degradation stopping. Again, providing love and helping the survivor understand they are accepted by others and by God, and that what they did was not their fault, can help. Often, they "caved" under conditions that would be intolerable for anyone; support people showing that the survivor is not judged by them is important to healing.

Rejection

Many survivors experience rejection at numerous levels. They may experience:

- Self-rejection due to terrible wounds in the womb, such as the birth mother being injected with drugs that cause tremendous uterine pain; she will then scream to "get it out!" or something similar, causing a deep rejection wound in the fetus.
- Childhood rejections as part of the abandonment programming designed to bond the child only to those the group wants them to bond to. It is quite common for the parents in host families to reject or ridicule the child, to prevent their bonding with them, which would interfere with the child bonding with the trainers.
- Rejection by members of the group if they try to leave; if the survivor is reaccessed, they will be kicked around, tortured, raped, and told that they are "evil", a "traitor" and other things; members of the group will urinate and defecate on the survivor to show how they feel about them.
- Rejection by Christians who do not understand cult or mind control abuse, find it "scary" and who ask the survivor to leave their church; or who silently shun the survivor.

Rejection is painful, and is a base of recontact programming (i.e. "nobody can love you but the group"). The survivor will need support as they deal with their rejection and abandonment memories, and attempt to work at detaching from the cult, and attaching with non-cult support (which can seem frightening, since they may have no idea of how to do this). Understanding, empathy and caring can help the survivor through this painful time of experiencing the pain beneath their programming. By modeling acceptance, supporters are teaching the survivor how to accept themselves; the love of God is also critical to healing rejection wounds.

Loneliness

Most survivors battle loneliness through much of their journey. They are leaving a group that contains their deepest, most intimate relationships, and attempting to heal in a world that often does not understand what the survivor is going through (unless they are fortunate enough to find a good, knowledgeable therapist or support person).

The deepest loneliness a survivor may face is for themselves. The cult has taken away their history; caused them to dissociate their deepest feelings, and this causes a deep ache for truth and connection with the "real me" inside. Basically, the survivor is lonely for their core, who holds some of the strongest feelings and beliefs inside, and who has been carefully hidden beneath numerous layers of programming and demonic.

Again, a supportive, nonjudgmental relationship is important as the survivor works through the issues surrounding developing healthy, safe support. A real danger when loneliness hits is that the survivor, who misses loved ones in the cult, will rush to make new friends without prayer or discernment first. It is very common for cult groups to "send" friends or romantic relationships to survivors who are attempting to leave the group. They will seem well-meaning, caring, and very supportive of the survivor's healing; but they will often have a job to do in their back parts.

It is also common for survivors to seek friendship with other survivors, but if the other survivors are unhealed (i.e. early in their healing journey and unaware of current cult activity), it is quite common for them to access one another, and pull each other back into cult activity. The survivor should always proceed with caution, and pray for discernment, before befriending another survivor; since they themselves could also be used in this way without conscious knowledge.

Sorrow/grieving

When a survivor breaks free of a cult group, they will go through a period of grieving. This is normal; although the abuse has stopped, they often will not feel "happy" for a long time. This is because they have cut off every meaningful relationship in their life, other than with God, and must take the time to grieve this loss. Yes, the relationships were abusive; yes, these people hurt the survivor. But these people are the survivor's mother, father, brother, sister, children, best friends, and giving up their entire support system is extremely difficult.

The survivor who gets out of a cult knows better than most what Jesus meant by "counting the cost" to become free. They will also face grieving because of threats against the loved ones who did not get out; for many survivors, these threats are communicated through hand signals as people pass by them in a mall; through subliminals online or on their cell phone; through videos of a loved one being tortured sent to their email address, or even direct contact (such as a loved one showing up weeping, who raises their shirt to show the bruises and cuts on their back that they endured because the survivor left).

When the survivor is grieving, it is important to sit with them, figuratively speaking, and let them mourn. They may be numb, in emotional shock, or they may cry nonstop for days at a time. They will want to talk about the loved ones left behind, and need to do this, to process the ending of the relationship as they knew it.

It does not help to continuously point out to the survivor that these people were evil abusers. They know this, deep inside; but they also love these people. This love/hate is what bonded them to the cult and to doing their jobs; and is part of why they dissociated. Bringing down dissociation will involve remembering and grieving for these loved ones left behind. Processing the grief will vary with the individual. Writing a letter to the loved one(s)(that is never mailed); planting a "memorial bush", creating a collage, are all ways some have worked on their grief.

With time, grief does heal, and the survivor will be able to work on developing new relationships. It is important that the survivor allows themselves this time.

Hopeless Despair

Hopeless despair is one of the most painful feelings that survivors can experience. It can be caused by:

- Extreme loss, including seeing loved ones tortured to death because the survivor is trying to leave the group; the programmers then blame the survivor for the death(s)
- Programmed despair (programming to believe that the survivor can never heal; or that God can never forgive them)
- Technology torture: this involves the brain being hit by microbursts of high frequency or low frequency waves in various locations, to stimulate the brain to experience extreme despair
- Core attachment pain coming forward: the realization that the survivor has been abused, manipulated, tortured and betrayed since conception by the people they bonded to most deeply; this creates the despair that it was "all for nothing" that the survivor performed for the group and survived torture over a lifetime (for the love of people that they now realize horrifically abused them)

When the survivor is in hopeless despair, it does **not** help to:

- quote scriptures at them (although this will help at a future time),
- Tell them to "get their act together" or ask them "where is your faith?" since they already feel bad enough

What does help is to acknowledge to them that you understand that they are in deep pain, and sit with them and synchronize. This is one of the most difficult things a support person can do, since you will want to "rescue" the person from their pain, or feel bad that you can't help them feel better right away. The LORD is the one who will minister to the survivor, as they get in touch with their feelings and they express the feelings to Him.

You can encourage the individual to write a letter to God, expressing to Him how they feel; to pray directly, sharing their despair with Him, and to spend time then asking Him to minister to their pain. The Holy Spirit is able to bring comfort and hope to the hopeless, regardless of the situation that has caused the despair, since Jesus experienced to the full everything – the agony of sin, loss and emotional pain – on the cross to redeem and heal these wounds.

Core attachment pain takes time to work through, and cannot be rushed (please see chapter on "Working with the Core" for more on this topic).

Sexual Feelings

Most survivors will have a lifetime of sexual abuse and programming in their history. Many groups train their toddlers and preschoolers to act as "black widows" who seduce and then kill individuals; or who infiltrate sex parties of the wealthy (where pedophilia is often rampant) to gather information about the participants.

Sexual programming is installed from earliest infancy in most survivors. Programmers will sexually abuse the infants during diaper changes; during bonding times, and will sexually torture the infants while tech stimulating the pleasure centers in the brain to create sadomasochistic parts that enjoy sexual torture.

The infants are stretched with special instruments so by the time they are two, they can accommodate an adult penis without damage. Infants are stimulated to experience multiple orgasms with vibrators as a "reward" for performance.

Everyone the survivor knows and loves has sexually abused them, and this is considered part of a "love" bond, which creates soul and demonic ties. The survivor may never have experienced any relationship in their life that did not involve sexual abuse, and they may have sexual parts come out that "test" the supporter.

Simply put, the survivor has been raised in a highly sexualized environment, and at first, will not understand or know what to do with the feelings that come up. If they are in a truly safe house, the time spent there may be the first days since birth that the survivor has not had sex with someone. In 7 X 7 programming, one of the torture lines will be extreme sexual arousal, designed to cause the survivor to seek out a sexual partner (with resulting reaccessing); or to turn to demonic sex for relief.

Information may have been downloaded to the individual while they were in a sexually aroused state, which is a natural amnesia barrier, since the information can normally only be recovered when the individual is in that state (although with the LORD's help, the information can be recovered without arousal).

How can the survivor cope with feelings that can produce shame in the presentation, possible annoyance in the helper if they attempt seduction, or painful body sensations?
First, it can help to acknowledge that the feelings are there. It is not the survivor's fault that this was installed, and they need to realize that this too can be forgiven.

The survivor will need support as they grieve the sheer extent of the abuse; and with breaking soul ties with former sexual partners. Deliverance from lust and other demonic can help decrease the severity.

If the survivor chooses chastity (recommended for spiritual and safety reasons) they will need to be in prayer over these feelings; they do decrease over time as the survivor chooses to not act out on the feelings. Acceptance of the parts, and helping them to see that it is possible to be loved without automatic sexual abuse is a big component of healing, since it brings new information to these parts, and a new worldview to operate from.

At times, these parts will feel hurt or offended if the support person does not take them up on their offers; after all, this is how people "love" one another in their worldview. With time, patience and caring, they will come to understand that someone can truly care for them without wanting a sexual relationship.

Terror

When a survivor begins to work hard at undoing their programming, often there will be retaliation from internal punishment and reprogramming systems – and they will feel terror. This terror is instilled purposely, from the first tortures in the womb (such as when the trainers cut off fetal digits, which regrow if done early in development) to the most recent access.
The terror is often based upon highly realistic virtual reality, which replays the infant's prime terrors. These include:

- Being dropped rapidly (startle reflex)
- Being skinned alive
- Being burned
- Being drowned/suffocated/buried alive
- Rats chewing on the infant
- Bugs stinging the infant
- Prime bonds (people loved most) are shown falling apart and in agony, or with blood spurting out of their bodies

There are others. Entire terror lines are installed, with the purpose of controlling the survivor. These terrors are often encapsulated in the framework of a "hell" created by the programmers, with different levels playing out different terror scenarios (such as the internal parts being tied to a stake inside "hell level 2" and "demons" which originally were cult actors in infancy, and later are internal parts that took on this identity torturing the survivor by burning them alive).

At base level, fetal and infantile terror drive many punishment and recontact programs. This can be experienced as restless, the feeling that "something is wrong" and if the survivor continues to not recontact, can escalate to panic, then terror. Night terrors are common, since the survivor will be programmed with dreams of punishment and terror if they stop contact, or astrals may come to remind the survivor of the terrible fate awaiting them if they fail to recontact. Core terror (the belief that the universe will fall apart and turn black, and all people the survivor loves will die, and they themselves will be "unmade" if they continue healing) makes it difficult for the survivor to face dismantling deep programmed beliefs and systems internally. The terror was installed for this very purpose.

The survivor will often feel as if they are "losing it", "going psychotic" or "losing their mind, and can't stand a single second more of this" as the dissociated emotions come forward. This is based upon programmed beliefs that if the survivor tries to dismantle their own programming, they will go insane; they may be given drugs, tech torture and setups to "prove" this belief.

They really are not losing their mind, but they will feel this way as the terror hits. It can help to ground the survivor to here and now (feeling the ground beneath their feet, touching something soft, or warm, or cool; hearing music) when terror hits. Getting rid of the demonic that holds the programming in place (by repenting of the rituals and sacrifices performed before and after installation by the survivor to seal it in, and repenting of the agreement for installation) can also help.

Remind the survivor that they survived the event happening the first time, and they can survive remembering. Remind them that if they attempted to "break programming" in the lab (as programmers will tell them to do, in setups designed to make the survivor believe they cannot break programming without trauma), that it was a **setup;** that now, they have safety, prayer and support that they did not have during the setups.

Terror does decrease over time. The survivor will likely abreact some of the more terror-producing traumas, as internal parts come forward, seeking healing and relief from the awful reality that they experience inside. With support, prayer, and time, the LORD does heal these parts, and the survivor will experience fewer and weaker bouts of panic as they continue to heal.

Chapter 5: Presentation Programming

It is a common misconception that "hosts" or "presenters" have been protected, or have undergone less programming or trauma than other systems. On the contrary, the presentation is often one of the most extensively programmed systems in the survivor of international occultic programming. It can be some of the most difficult programming to dismantle since basically, this involves looking at their own programming.

In most international occultic groups, the child spends the first three years fulltime at a cult facility, being continuously programmed. At age three, the child will also be placed within several host families around the world. The child may grow up with anywhere from four to seven families in different countries, and will spend several weeks, or even a month or two each year, with each family during the next 20 years. School photos are taken, and a cover identity created in the countries which they anticipate the child will be working for them as they grow older into adulthood. The families will be given photos of the child (or a look-alike) in infancy for photo albums.

These host families will have programming to prevent the child and the host parents from bonding with each other, since **the child must always maintain their primary bond with the primary programmers. The true host and core will always only be allowed to bond with these programmers.**

An example of host families could be one in Germany, one in France, one in Amsterdam, one in the United States, and even one in Israel. Since many occultic groups hate Israel, and a focus of their intelligence efforts is infiltration of Israeli national security, they will attempt as often as possible to place a child within Israel with a trainer who acts as their "aunt" or "uncle." The child rotates between these host families and **thus learns to rotate between presentations based upon their current living situation**. The child has already learned to never speak any language but that of the host family (on pain of severe punishment), and has already undergone numerous experiences prior to going to a host family to teach them to not bond with anyone except the programmers.

Detachment Training

For example, at age two, the child will be allowed to interact with and bond with a loving woman, who acts as a mother surrogate to the child who is hungry for nurturing by a woman. After several weeks of loving interactions, at some point, the woman will turn around and begin severely abusing the child, such as by pushing them down stairs, sexually abusing them, or other abuse, laughing at the child's display of pain at the emotional betrayal. The child must learn the lesson to never trust anyone, or to bond with anyone other than the primary trainers, or they will be killed.

The host families will also be programmed to reject the child, and/or abuse the child, to ensure that the child does not create a bond that is too strong. **The primary bond will always be an unconscious one, that the Christian and cult cover presentations are completely amnesic to**: a primary trainer whom they love greatly, since this is the only person they were allowed to love during their early childhood.

MI6 Training

Once the host presentations are in place, the child (by age 3 ½) will undergo training at MI6. MI6 has a special area (known as "Colonel Green's House" after Colonel Green, the founder of MI6) where young children undergo specialized assassin and military training. Again, the child goes there with their class, and is assigned a number. Instead of being called by name, they will be called "42" or a similar number during training and learn to respond to this.

MI6 reserves the Green House for certain groups at specific times, and the trainers during this time are all programmers for the group that work for MI6. The child will perfect previous skills taught to them as a toddler in using a gun; their delta computer system will be built to greater complexity, and their ability to classify intelligence, and store it based upon its classification will be perfected during this time. The ability to use a photographic visual and auditory memory, and download to handlers information obtained while on a mission, is also perfected.

They will perfect basic skills of all operatives, such as following a target, dropping a tail, and blending in inconspicuously in a group.

The terrible punishments used at MI6 (such as the room with walls that move inwards, or the multi-faceted crystal ball in a room with mirrors used when the child is drugged, or the specialized computer system that is used for delta installation) are all used on the child. By the time the child has completed the 3-month training course (which is updated as they grow older), they will have a firm base in military special operations. By age 12, the child will have developed enough skillsets that they will be classified as a military weapon.

Delta Computer Training

Delta training is extensive enough to give it special mention. During delta training, the child will be hooked up to a computer, which it will be taught to emulate while in delta state. The computer speaks with a synthetic, very robotic voice, and the child will do the same. The delta training will encompass high and low delta states, and the child will be taught to classify all cognitive thoughts and experiences according to security levels. Low security levels can be retained as conscious thought; any information classified as mid to high security will be "access denied" to conscious presentation thought, and stored within the deeper delta states of the brain.

The delta computer system will have a ground zero state, with delta controllers and introjected trainers "manning" the computer systems. At ground zero, primary traumas and death state programming are installed, to prevent dismantling of the computer system and to keep the child invested in protecting high-security information.

Psyche, along with Mnemosyne (amnesia) will have the jobs of maintaining the separation between conscious (known) and unknown information. Psyche never forgets, and Mnemosyne never remembers, and both control the flow of information within delta.

Theta Controller Training

As the child reaches late preschool and early school age, they will undergo Galileo training (training in remote viewing, mind reading and thought influencing), in order to provide their handlers with access to buildings and conversations they would otherwise be unable to reach. During a mission, a child will be asked, for example, to go into an office building, and "read" classified or private documents during the night hours and then share what they have read with their handlers.

The child will also have the ability to introject themselves and images or thoughts into other people's dream states. In fact, part of theta assassin training is learning to have the subject dream of their own death. The head theta controller (such as Nemesis) will oversee the others, including Phobos (fear); Thantos (death) and Chaos (insanity). Theta training is aimed at teaching the child to induce each of these states in others using demonic powers developed.

Theta Assassin Training

The higher occultic groups at times attempt to induce death in those that cross them. If a child is sent on a mission, they will have sexual relations with the "mark." At a later time (often days later), the child will be sent back spiritually with a mentor back to the mark, to cause their death while sleeping. This will often begin with a terrifying dream of the individual's death, and many have literally died of fright due to these terrible dreams.

Some of the leaders of top occultic organizations will have theta guards composed of individuals who have completed their theta training (these guards can range in age from 12 years old to 32). The guards sit in front of an office, for example, as a warning to any intruders.

The newer generations of thetas have highly developed "kill" training in the spiritual realm developed from the first weeks of life in the womb on, and are often mentored by groups of very skilled theta trainers to prevent the children from turning on the trainers and killing them. These newer super thetas have poorly developed presentations, and must often live very protected lives away from the public eye.

Secrecy/Amnesia Training

Some of the most important training the preschooler undergoes is secrecy training. The child has bonded heavily to and wants to protect the primary trainers, and so they are told: "If you betray us, we could be killed. The only way to not betray us is to not remember." The child **willingly** agrees to amnesia, in order to protect the people they love most.

In other secrecy setups, a child will complete a setup "mission" and later is asked if they remembered what happened. If the child answers "Yes" a gun is placed to their head, and they are told that if they remember, the programmer must kill them. They are asked again if they remember (presenters are asked); until the child is either completely amnesic, or is killed (the occultic groups do not allow children who have any memory traces to live; the gun threat is very real).

Another setup is "remember the flowers": the child is taken to a garden at a place where he/she has spent times chatting with their favorite programmer in the past. There is a water pool in the middle of the garden, and during this setup, it is filled with corpses of children the same age as the young child (ages 2 or 3). The programmer cuts a flower, gives it to the child and tells the child to "remember the flowers" (i.e. the dead children who remembered and told others).

There are many, many examples of such secrecy setups, from being buried alive for a day, and the child being told that they will be buried forever if they ever tell (the child is also forced to watch the burial of a child who "told" and several days later help exhume the corpse, as a visual reminder of what can happen); to being buried in a casket filled with bugs, a rotten corpse, or other objects.

The child may be placed in a box with bees that sting them (after going through several weeks of anti-venom therapy previously) as a reminder that "memories hurt."

They are also forced to view the deaths of "traitors" who betrayed the programmers, including crucifixions (the class is marched every three hours past the three crosses for three days to watch the effect on the dying men); and the torture of others who remembered and "told."

Alice in Wonderland Programming

Most members of occultic international groups will have at least one presentation that goes by the name “Alice” for a reason: this is a trigger for Wonderland programming. By age five, the child will be taken to a large estate in France (or, other locations, depending on the group) for Alice in Wonderland programming. This is an elaborate setup, and occurs over the period of a week. The child enters through rooms that reinforce previous training ("control the children”: is recorded and replayed, with pictures of dead children displayed on the walls of the room; mirrors, "remember the flowers" and other triggers). They then enter a "backward world" where everything is backwards (much like the third dimension; this prepares the child for this travel). **Alice (representing the presentation main controller who is heavily demonized)** guides the child through backwards houses, where people walk and talk backwards (a common cause of childhood dyslexia is the confusion this creates).

The child is then taken to a setup street where things are not backwards, but "crooked" or off slightly, which is even more disorienting. The child must walk with Alice and the Cheshire Cat leading them through houses where things are insanely wrong, where people talk nonsense, and the floors and roofs may be upside down, to teach the child not to trust reality.

Alice then brings the child at last to a place where they see the white rabbit (who represents the primary trainer), and they follow him "down the hole" (representing amnesia) to a room where the presentation stays behind, watching a movie **(screen memories**); the back parts then take the child's body through the rest of the setup. They enter a garden with animated/demonic flowers that at first talk kindly to the child, but later turn on the child and attack them. Wasps come and sting the child, and the large caterpillar (the guardian of the garden, played by another primary bond) tells the child what to do, and how to escape.

The child then enters a huge maze created from hedges. Soon, they are pursued by the "Jabberwocky" (a demonic presence and strong presentation punisher), and must rely upon their theta skills to run and escape, and even leave the body and fly away. The white rabbit and the Cheshire Cat lead the child to safety, but at times will try to "trick" the child **until the child learns to rely on themselves** instead of these capricious demonic "helpers."

The child sleeps outdoors, trying to get out of the hedge, and runs across the queen of hearts (a primary double bind, often a twin sister) and her court playing croquet (with the severed heads of human children used as the balls). The queen becomes very interested in using the child's head (the child is constantly called "Alice" throughout the setup, to represent the presentations, since Alice in Wonderland is ultimately presentation programming to remain amnesic and rely on demonic help to do so).

The demonic "Alice" and Cheshire cat help "rescue" the child, who then goes through the "valley of the shadow of death." In the middle is a cottage; it is now nighttime, and the weary child knocks at the door, to be greeted by a kindly woman. The child is fed, sleeps, and is warned to avoid the Jabberwocky, which seeks to kill the child. Once the programming is installed, the Jabberwocky acts as a presentation punisher, punishing the presenters for remembering or disobeying cult directives.

During the night, the kindly woman gets up. The child is awake, vomiting from the effects of a mild poison they were given in the food. The woman calls in her familiars (wolves) and tries to kill the child, who cries out for help to "Alice" and the "Cheshire Cat" to rescue her. A mage also comes and helps rescue the child, who continues the journey, meeting other characters. Finally, the child ends up at the palace of the Queen of Hearts, who demands a sacrifice (the child was already told that the last child to complete the Alice scenarios will be her sacrifice). The children who live watch the final child come in and be sacrificed in a ritual. This reminds them to never be slow or tardy when coming to a "party" (ritual). The "parties" in the Alice in Wonderland books are always referring to rituals.

Alice will go to a tea party, where her “mother” (Nemosyn, a strong amnesia controller) shows up. As the party progresses, one by one, the people at the party are killed in horrendously gruesome ways. The horrified Alice is reminded by Nemosyn that “everything is fine” and is told to “let me take care of everything.” If Alice agrees, Nemosyn then “takes away” the memories of the murders and sacrifices, and the characters are removed one by one. Finally, there are no bodies left, and Nemosyn assures Alice that “nothing bad ever happened.”

Crazy Alice Programming

A subset of the Alice in Wonderland (presenter) programming is the "Crazy Alice" programming, which is meant to warn the Alice controller over the presentation to never allow memories to come up, or they will be labeled "insane" and extreme abuse will occur. This is often the root of insanity fears when a person first starts remembering their past.

In this setup (also in France for some groups), the child (now called "Alice") is taken to a mental institution where the inmates are chained, and who rant, rave and curse at her. She is left there for days, with her only food being rancid water and rotten cabbage. The inmates hurl feces at her, verbally abuse her, and the custodians sexually abuse her while she is chained to the wall because of her "insanity" (remembering).

Because she is "sick", and "mentally ill" Alice is taken regularly down to the basement for "treatment" which consists of electroshocks, drowning, and being held over a rat pit filled with hungry rats that are allowed to bite her feet and ankles. The child is told repeatedly that "remembering" or "telling" will have her labeled "crazy" and that she will be taken to the institution (or one similar) for "treatment." This is part of developing the presenter amnesia and vows to never remember (or seek treatment). During the hospital stay, a team of doctors in white coats walk through the ward and stay with Alice, saying, “Here’s our favorite patient” (the main doctor is the child’s primary programmer). Alice will keep a stuffed rabbit with her (“foo foo”) who at night seems to come alive and sexually abuses her (this is done with a hand puppet). When Alice reports the abuse the next day, the doctors look at her sadly, and insist that she is “sick” and “needs more treatment.”

There is a special room in the “hospital” for the religiously insane, with Bible studies and church meetings, where Alice is raped and abused by the “Christians” in the hospital.

Black Alice Programming

In another version of Alice programming, Alice has a “dark side” that comes out and kills everyone around her in a killing spree. The terrified presenter wakes up to a room full of bloody bodies, and is told that if she ever remembers, the “evil” inside of her will “escape” and she will kill her loved ones. This is a particularly cruel form of amnesia programming.

Wizard of Oz Programming

This programming is also often done first during the preschool years, when the child can most easily internalize the program. The dark core ("Dorothy") is taken to another dimension, with her goal always to return to the Emerald City (representing ascension and the celestial paradise). The programming represents travel through the dimensions, the dangers involved, and the rewards for "ascending."

The goal of Wizard of Oz programming is to remind the child that they must always contact, or return home; and to create great fear of remembering (or, they will be placed in a coma and never wake up, unlike Dorothy in Oz, who woke up from "death" only after returning home.” It also represents the need to “never leave the path” (presenter programming to stay on the path given to them, or disaster results).

Fantasia Programming

Walt Disney was an avowed Illuminist, and his goal when creating Disney productions was to introduce the general public to the occult, especially young children, and to reinforce programming in those raised in the occult.

For instance, animals often "talk" in Disney films, and people can turn into animals, which are actually mage spells. The images are often dark and demonic in the animated movies, and have become increasingly so in recent years.

Disney's favorite film was Fantasia, in which he took classical music that was used to program young children with, and developed highly occultic themes in the cartoons that accompany it. To the untrained eye, Fantasia seems a bit odd; but the individual in the occult understands that the themes of a mage in training ("the sorcerer's assistant) who must turn to his more powerful mentor for help, and the Greek pantheon (in the famous rain sequence), mythology and even the depiction of an occultic ritual and then the famous strains of *ave maria* (a common programming tune) end the film.

Fantasia is blatant occultic imagery throughout, and was used extensively in the 1950s through 1970s to program individuals with. It was superseded in recent years by movies such as the Matrix, which depicts high-level programming, Labyrinth, and more recently, Frozen.

Helping the Survivor

Because of the early and repeated childhood betrayals, and the fact that the true host and core and core splits will not present early in therapy, the survivor will be very untrusting, and unable to bond normally with, anyone who tries to help them. The most common presentation is "detached", since the parts that can attach are hidden very deeply within and are reserved for the primary programmer only.

While the survivor will not at first present as "needy", the attachment needs are still there, **and will drive recontact programming unless the survivor can learn to form healthy, safe attachments**. This will be the challenge for both the survivor, and their helpers, since the wounded, angry parts within will often test those they do bond with again and again, once they feel safe within the relationship.

Theta and spiritual attacks are difficult to bear for helpers, but the survivor will be completely unaware that they are occurring. Gently asking, or even confronting, the survivor with what is happening can help. They will need to learn to pray, and ask inside, to find out what is happening with the parts that they are not co-conscious with yet.

Once co-consciousness is established, and the parts come to Christ and the demonic is renounced, the warfare will usually diminish, much to the relief of the survivor and their helpers.

It will take all of the emotional resources the survivor has, as well as outside support, and a strong walk with Jesus, to face the original attachment pains that come up with remembering early childhood, infancy and prenatal events. This is when praying in the spirit, scripture study, journaling and talking with safe support can help tremendously as the survivor grieves the past, and begins to build a life based upon a new foundation.

Presenter programming is based on the **desire to "protect" these loved ones**

through either loyalty, or amnesia, or both.

The survivor who fears facing their past is one who fears betraying those they love; they are often "held hostage" through the group's control of or threatening to harm someone they love, whether a child, a mentee, a cult twin, or another relationship. To break free, the survivor must be shown, and truly believe, that only the LORD can rescue and keep safe these loved ones.

They must also be willing to count the cost of getting out, which is very high: no contact at all with former family, friends or loved ones, since they will all have been programmed to access the survivor. Few are willing to pay this price for freedom, and it is often the unconscious (unknown) love bonds that draw the survivor back in.

Chapter 6: Working with Healing Blockers

There is a specific set of cult loyal parts who have the job of blocking therapy. They do this in order to prevent the survivor from breaking their programming and becoming totally free of cult control, due to their fear that they will no longer be able to see their loved ones, or that their loved ones will be tortured.

Therapy blockers are highly programmed to completely resist therapy, and are extremely bonded to their trainers.

When a survivor of mind control enters therapy, these trainers will be notified (often by the survivor themselves, since they frequently “report in”), and specific programming to block therapy with their current therapist will begin to be put into place. This will be layered in over the generic “no heal” programming that all survivors have installed that prevents unauthorized system access, or any communication between presentation (front) parts and the cult host or systems.

Generic No Heal Programming

When the survivor is an infant, and child, they will be put through mock “therapy” sessions and deliverance sessions in which the “therapist” (a cult actor) kindly asks the child to share information and encourages them to disclose their abuse. Later in the setup, the child is then tortured for talking and disclosing, is raped by the mock therapist, and is “hospitalized” (see the section on Crazy Alice programming) to punish them for “making up” memories that “couldn't possibly be true”. It is the brave survivor indeed who chooses to push past this programming to enter therapy at all, unless they have been sent on a mission for this purpose. In addition to the above, the survivor will see setups in which for every disclosure they make, a loved one is tortured horrifically, sending the message: “if you talk, your loved ones will be hurt.” This basically shuts down healing for many.

More Specific Therapy Blocking Programming

Each therapist has an individual style of working with people, and this is often used against the survivor. Because most survivors are still cult active when they enter therapy, during “tune ups” (reprogramming sessions), the cult will attempt to make the survivor fear disclosure in therapy by doing the following:

- Create a VR of the therapist abusing the client following personal disclosure (shocks, rapes, etc.)

- Have an actor that looks similar to the therapist, trained to use the therapist's favorite phrases to encourage therapy, do mock therapy with the survivor. Each phrase used (over and over) is combined with shock, rape or other torture to the survivor, so when they hear it, they will recoil in pain and disgust.
- Mock therapy in which the survivor is programmed to only talk about certain issues, and they are heavily rewarded for doing so.
- Create a VR of the therapy room, and then have the "therapist" avatar perform rituals there, to convince the survivor that the therapist is "one of us" and therefore not safe to disclose to.

A survivor must overcome an enormous amount of pain and programming to trust a therapist at all, especially since during the time they still have contact with the cult, they and their loved ones will be tortured every time they attempt to heal during reprogramming sessions. If the survivor does choose to trust the therapist, they need to be aware that many people (but thankfully not all) drawn to providing therapy or support for DID, trauma, and ritual abuse are programmed cult members whose job is to access survivors seeking to get out. It is not unusual for the "supporter" to later discover that he/she is actually DID and programmed as well, as time goes on.

This is why choosing a therapist is a matter for prayer, discernment and seeking input from a safe person (if the therapist knows one) regarding who to see.

Because of the above programming, survivors will often attempt to block therapy using different methods. These fears are genuine, justified, and should not be minimized; instead, the survivor needs support and prayer from SAFE people as they work through the issues.

Typical Therapy Blocking Programs

When a therapist works with a survivor, they will see a lot of **ambivalence:** they want to heal, but part of them is avoiding the healing quite energetically. This can cause a lot of frustration in both the survivor, and the therapist, who over time may begin to wonder "Why don't you just heal???" The survivor will have tremendous internal conflicts between their entire worldview and experience, and the information that a therapist challenges this worldview with. In addition, the survivor will be emotionally invested in saving loved ones, who they believe are being tortured each time they break programming.

This ambivalence and internal conflict can cause the survivor to display any or all of the following programmed responses in therapy:

- **Cycling through over and over (rolodexing)**: this is a symptom of extreme system distress and conflict, as parts of the survivor are attempting to heal and incorporate new information, while other parts are terrified that the programming is breaking. This rapid switching is a sign that internal controllers are trying to stop doing their jobs (including hiding internal pain), are "failing", feeling terror and are attempting to send out a part to present unsuccessfully. Rolodexing can also be a punishment program that causes the survivor to look completely dysfunctional, and be used to reinforce the belief (which is a lie) that the survivor is "going insane", etc. Rolodexing will stop once the "hot topic" in therapy is dropped; this can be an opportunity to journal and work on the topic, since it is obviously important to healing or the system would not respond in this way.

- **Only one memory comes up:** some survivors go through weeks, months and even years processing only one or two memories that cycle through again and again, even though they recognize they were raised in a cult group. This is a way of blocking therapy, since the survivor never gets past that one memory to do other work inside.

- **House that Jack Built:** This is a specific form of blocking, in which the survivor cycles through bits and pieces of one memory, and each time, must repeat the same sequence in order before they can add new information to the memory. The survivor will appear to need to completely recount the previous information given before they can look at any new information regarding the memory, which can be wearing on both the survivor and therapist.

- **False Christian work**: If the survivor is working with a Christian therapist or deliverance ministry, they will pull out their false "god" "jesus" and "holy spirit" to "help" with the healing. They may be praying wholeheartedly, praying warfare prayers, doing daily Bible study, agreeing with the therapist, and reporting visions of "jesus" intervening inside and how "close" they feel to "god" during therapy. The problem is that they are not praying to the real Christian God who has the authority to heal, deliver and bring breakthrough, and this survivor will often leave therapy frustrated, wondering why God doesn't answer in spite of all the praying they are doing. This is heavily linked to anti-Christian programming (please see chapter on this topic).

- **False integrations**: If the survivor is on a mission to bond with the therapist, learn their techniques, and later report to the cult the therapy methods used, they will want the therapist to feel good about seeing them. This is often accomplished through false integrations, in which dozens, hundreds or more of parts are "miraculously joined together" without any trauma (or memories), and the survivor expresses deep gratitude about the "tremendous healing" they have received. This type of work can also be a response to a huge need to please a prayer or deliverance minister who pressures the survivor to integrate before they are ready. While God can and does the miraculous, most true integrations bring back life history, both good and bad, and resolve core conflicts and false beliefs that fueled the dissociation.

- **Therapy sabotage**: with this programming, the survivor will be late to appointments, may miss scheduled appointments, may "forget" to pay for therapy, does not do therapeutic homework, and verbalizes wanting to drop out. A subset of this program is distancing the therapist/supporter through methods such as pulling out sexual parts who attempt to "seduce" the therapist; pulling out hostile/rude/unpleasant parts who pick fights or tear the therapist down verbally, and even threaten to sue the therapist if they become desperate.

- **Shutdown programming:** At times, a survivor who is still in contact with the cult will be given a shutdown/stop healing command. When this is running, the survivor will experience the following:

    a. Is completely unable to communicate with parts inside
    b. Is unable to journal, collage or do artwork
    c. Feels intense anxiety at the thought of doing internal work
    d. Wants to be "normal" and "forget about healing", wants a "real life"

This form of programming is frustrating for both the survivor and therapist, since it seems to be a waste of therapy time working with someone who cannot communicate with parts. To resolve this, the survivor needs to look at where access occurred, how the shutdown command was given (including subliminals or texts online or by phone), and what threats were used to accomplish the shutdown (frequently, this will be a double bind being threatened).

- **Pulling out false issues to work on (cover issues):** It is common for survivors, especially early in their healing, to work on cover programming only to prevent their going deeper into their system. The survivor may only remember their American host family; or believe that they were only sexually abused, or abused by an organized cult group for a few years, then "let go when they moved away from home" or "married someone outside the group" (which almost never happens in reality).

  The more sophisticated groups may create a whole cover for their agents, such as believing they were raised in the Templar Knights (which was true for these parts – they were actually hosted by a Templar family), while in reality they were raised and programmed during earliest childhood by a different organization, and programmed to infiltrate the Templars. Until the survivor goes past the cover, and is able to work with the true programming and beliefs that run the system, healing will be sporadic and difficult, and they will be vulnerable to reaccess.

The survivor must be willing to pray, fast and go deep inside, journaling and asking the LORD to uncover the truth, regardless of what it is. They must be willing to go "all out" for the LORD, and trust their loved ones in the group to His care, as they go past guardians, system blocks, demonic blocks and learn what is actually inside.

- **Doubt: Belief that the survivor will never heal**: This is programming designed to knock out the effectiveness of prayer by the survivor and therapist/supporter. This programming will be installed with setups in which the child is told to "heal" or "break the programming" under command – and then experiences horrendous pain and terror (through VR or tech torture). The child in numerous setups is told to "integrate" and again, pain, terror and hopelessness is installed. This is layered in many times over the years. When the survivor does try to heal in therapy, they will often re-experience these feelings of pain, hopelessness and futility regarding healing, or even the possibility of God answering their prayers (see anti-Christian programming for more information on this).

  The survivor will also have been shown videos of individuals in lab settings attempting to break the programming that was installed in them – and the people viewed go insane, or die. They will be shown the readouts for their slow, agonizing death, to instill the belief that the programming can never be broken. **In actuality, if that was really true, the programmers would not have to install this false belief**. It can help the survivor to understand that their situation is different: unlike the individuals they watched trying to break programming in a facility dedicated to demons, the survivor has a God that loves them and can heal anything, safety, and support that the people they watched did not have.

- **Emotional flooding that does not promote healing**: Some survivors will present in therapy appearing to be willing to heal, but the instant that any memory comes forward, they will burst into tears and appear to "melt down" for what can amount to the entire therapy session, wailing over their guilt and self-condemnation. While emotions will come with the recall of traumatic memories (and should), seeing hours of therapy "hijacked" by a part crying every time the survivor comes to therapy could be a sign that this is running.

  The supporter or therapist may want to gently confront or challenge this part regarding their job within the system, and see if the survivor is willing to work past this program. The survivor will need to become aware if it is running, and break any agreements to have this part step forward if anything is disclosed. The traumas that created this response will also need to be resolved.

- **Child presentation**: Normally, the infants and children in a mind-controlled system are heavily protected and guarded, and do not come out in therapy until trust and safety have been established over time. A completely young presentation is highly abnormal, and can be the result of several things:

    a. Programming breakdown: some survivors literally "burn out", especially if they have been heavily used in the field on missions, and too much "wipe out" and other amnesia programming of presenters afterwards can cause a situation in which the adults are too tired/traumatized to present, and children come forward

    b. Mission programming: some survivors are programmed to present with children in order to seem "harmless" and "cute" as they infiltrate a church or therapy organization. This is a programmed-in presentation, with great trauma.

    c. Secondary reward: some systems have been heavily rewarded by abusers for "staying young" and childlike, especially if the main abuser was a pedophile. The survivor may have starved themselves as a child/teen in order to prevent the appearance of breasts and delay the onset of menses, and to keep their childlike physical appearance. This is often a system highly dependent upon others, and they may look to therapists and supporters to "caretake" them as an adult.

- **Constant crises with no resolution (burn out the support):** This is vicious programming, because the survivor has no idea that this is happening. All they know is that they are in deep distress, and want to pick up the phone and call the only person that can help them (the therapist or support person). There will be crises during the healing journey; but a life of constantly cycling into crisis could be an indication that something is wrong. This type of programming is designed to "burn out" the supporter, who becomes exhausted helping someone who never heals.

- **Denial:** Every survivor will have some form of denial programming, and parts inside will hold this job. Denial parts are among the most cult loyal, and deeply fear the torture or death of loved ones (including trainers) in the cult. Denial parts will often verbalize the following:

    a. It wasn't that bad

    b. I'm exaggerating things

    c. I'm making this up; I have a creative, sick imagination

    d. I'm not dissociative

    e. I'm just seeking attention

f. This is all for secondary gain; I've been playing with your head

g. I'm a liar

This part will have been heavily programmed since the survivor was in the womb to say these things – and believe them. They are part of the primary amnesia triad for presentations (denial, doubt and despair) that keep the survivor from truly believing their own memories. Healing of denial means finding why these parts (often represented in numerous systems) are so invested in doing their job, i.e. who they are protecting, and why. They will be heavily bonded to a primary bond, and thus will be unwilling (or unable, due to amnesia agreements) to disclose who they are protecting until safety and trust are established with the supporter, and with the true God.

Chapter 7: Antichristian Programming

Because real Christianity is such a threat to cult groups, since it brings faith, love and healing (and therefore, rapid program degradation), they go to extensive lengths to program in false Christianity in the hopes that the individual will never come to a true faith in Christ. This programming is started in the womb, with numerous setups conducted with the birth mother and fetus to begin turning the fetus's heart away from God – and towards Satan.

In a typical setup, an actor dressed as "Jesus" and proclaiming that he is the "son of god", etc. will rape and torture the birth mother, telling her "This is how I show my love for you" and other scripts. The fetus hears and feels the mother's distress, and incorporates the hatred for this "Jesus" that the birth mother feels.

In other setups, the birth mother is tortured, and told to pray to God for help. As she does so, the pain is increased, and continues to do so, until she stops praying, and then "Satan" "rescues" the birth mother and fetus from the pain.

In still other setups, the fetus will see a bright light (held against the abdominal walls) and a voice telling the fetus, "I am God, and I hate you" as electrical shocks are administered. Other similar setups are done, including rape by 'Jesus' of the fetus (with a Q-Tip like instrument inserted into the womb). A false "holy spirit" will descend as well, offering the "way out of the pain."

Once the infant is born, the programming continues, with actors dressed as "Jesus", "the disciples", "Mary" and other biblical figures talking to the infant, abusing the infant, or comforting, depending upon the role. There will usually be two types of "Jesus" portrayed: a punishing, angry, wrathful God and Jesus for the black or cult systems; and a loving, caring, kind "Jesus" portrayed for the white systems, since the programming allows for two paths for ascension: the black path (satanic) and the white path (false Christianity). The presentations are heavily programmed to stay on the "white path" and never stray, or terrible things (abuse, pain) occur. Within the systems, a part called "god" is the judge and metes out punishments or rewards depending upon how well the controllers and parts obey cult directives and rules.

As the child becomes older, the setups become more elaborate; there will be setups in which "Jesus and disciples" are "fishing for men", the child is invited onto the boat, where the nauseating stench of rotten fish fills the boat; the child is repeatedly raped and abused by the false Jesus and disciples, who smell like rotten fish, as they repeatedly tell the child to "become a fisher of men" as they are. This will cause severe nausea and repugnance at the thought of Christianity later in life in the parts that underwent this abuse.

Almost every significant scripture in the New Testament, and many in the Old Testament, are used during these abuse scenarios, causing the parts to eventually recoil in pain, horror and disgust at any mention of Christianity or scripture. This is all hidden in the subconscious; the survivor will have no conscious recall of these memories, and will only know a deep unease and guilt at being unable to enjoy church or sit through a sermon.

Cruz (the cross) is a figure in some groups who exhorts the presentation to stay on the “white path” (cult false Christianity) and to “take up the cross and follow me.” This is a form of false guilt in which the presenters attempt to be their own messiah, or to rescue others, by staying perfectly on the demanding and rigid white path of false Christianity.

Elaborate setups are done with a fake “church” or “bible study” in which the child being programmed goes to church, where the members all then turn on her and abuse her, all the time using Christian phrases, or attempting the “laying on of hands” and “imparting the holy spirit” to her. This is to create a barrier between internal parts and hearing the gospel, which to them means abuse.

Fake witch trials and burning at the stake will be done by “Christians” to cult and spiritual parts, to convince them to hate Christians. “Christians” (cult actors) will come into the nurseries and abuse screaming babies, laughing at their pain as they rape with crucifixes, telling the babies they are showing them the “love of god.”

During yearly events, the higher occultic groups will have events at which real Christians are brought to and tortured or crucified (such as the infamous “Roman games” held each year). These Christians are rounded up from prisons and camps in third world countries under oppressive regimes, and are the main event for one reason alone: Satan hates Christians and Christianity, and takes every chance possible to persecute and kill them.

Children may be forced as part of their “God can never forgive you” programming (meant to create a barrier of guilt between them and God) to wipe out Christian villages in third world countries; or to abduct and sell the children of Christians, or infiltrate Christian churches and seduce the leadership (or their children).

If a member of these groups becomes a real Christian, then there will be extensive programming to destroy the individual's faith. They will be labeled a “traitor” and an “adulterer” or “whore” because they chose Christianity over the group's beliefs (Satan), and the group will go to great lengths to get the new believer to recant. This may include:

- Placing the individual on a cross for days, as they are intermittently raped and tortured. They are told the torture will stop if they recant
- Torturing the individual's brothers and sisters to death in front of them, one by one, telling them the killing will only stop if they recant

- If older, killing the individual's husband and children in various presentations may be done to get them to recant
- Placing them in a room with a false "Jesus" for weeks who abuses and tortures them and tells them he hates them, every time they pray
- Raping the individual with dogs, horses and corpses, with the same message
- Bringing the individual into a room filled with children on crosses, and being told they will all die unless the individual recants.

In circumstances like the above, the individual will eventually be driven to their limit (sometimes after weeks of continuous torture). They will then recant, not from a loss of faith, but sheer emotional exhaustion and overload, and the inability to see more death of loved ones. Once the person recants, the programming to ensure that they believe they can never "come back to God" will start almost immediately. A false "god" and "Jesus", angry and horrified in the setup, will condemn the individual to "hell" for "giving up their faith" in very cruel setups. They will be forced to sacrifice and renew their vows to Satan and the antichrist.

The individual will be forced to torture a Christian to death, and be told, "Now, the Christian God can never forgive you." They will be sent on antichristian missions as described above, to seal the programming.

Can God forgive the believer who recants under weeks of torture such as described above? I believe He does, because He is merciful. The Bible states that if any man sins, we have an advocate with God – His son, Jesus. If anyone confesses their sin, they are forgiven. Recalling memories of torture and recanting can be extremely distressing. It can cause deep guilt and grief. It is important that the survivor comes to realize that there is no sin that God cannot and will not forgive, if they come to Him and ask forgiveness. God knew all of our sins, both past, present and future, when we first came to faith in Him. Nothing in the survivor's life shocks or horrifies Him. Instead, He offers forgiveness for the very worst that mankind can do, against one another, and Himself, because He paid the price in full on the cross.

Chapter 8: Working with Cult Loyal Parts

Without the eventual help of cult loyal parts, the survivor will not be able to break free of the cult. These parts hold a great deal of power in the system, and will include the cult host, internalized leadership councils, and people the survivor loves most on this earth.
The problem with healing for many survivors is based upon this reality. It is often a presenter who enters therapy, due to depression, feeling that "something isn't quite right", cutting, an eating disorder, etc. While the presenter's needs are real, they will have made extensive agreements (during rituals, sacrifices, participating in covenants with demons and loved ones) to never remember their cult abuse, on pain of the death of their loved ones. This means that the presenter who presents in therapy is already heavily invested in never remembering the abuse – and will have extensive amnesia.

If only the presenter(s) appears in therapy, then the amount of healing that can occur will be limited to the presenters.

For deeper healing, word needs to get out to the inner, hidden parts (often called 'back parts", "dark parts", "cult parts") that they can get free – and they need to want this and begin to believe it is possible. This is so important because it is often these parts that run the show for the survivor and during therapy; presenters and other parts will often refer to them as "the bosses", "scary parts", "trainers", "leaders", etc. They have the power within the system to initiate punishment programs to prevent healing (and do), and to either help or hinder healing. The survivor will need support in order to patiently love, communicate with and listen to these parts, because there will be large amounts of programming installed to prevent exactly that. If a "back part" pops out and makes a rude comment, the presentation will be programmed to be absolutely horrified. If parts share about the individual's cult life, the presentation will have been programmed to deny everything, or to believe that they cannot handle hearing about the abuse (which is not true).

Attachment, Bonding and Cult Loyalty

The cult develops loyalty in its members through love bonds. While most books about cults stress the horrific nature of the abuse (and it is), few mention the deep love bonds that develop between members of the group. This bonding is developed in infancy through the manipulation of the infant's attachment needs: the primary trainers will change, rock, soothe and give bottles to the infant, talk lovingly, in order to teach the infant to love them. Since this is the only positive interaction the infant experiences when growing up in a cult facility, the infant will bond deeply to these programmers.

When a survivor enters therapy, and tries to break free, they must break these attachment bonds with the people they love most, or they will be drawn back into the cult. This creates deep psychological conflict for the individual who simultaneously wants out, wants the abuse to stop, and wants to stop abusing others; but who must cut off all contact with dearly loved ones in order to do so.

Cult programmers purposely keep young parts young, in order to continue manipulating attachment bonds for greater control. Breaking these bonds can be incredibly difficult, as the younger parts in the survivor will become angry and upset about not seeing the people they love. These littles are often bonded to a cult "mama" and "papa" who even when they are adults rock them, soothe them, sing to them, and give them candy or bottles. This type of treatment is provided after every programming session, in order to reinforce the bonding to the programmer(s). As the survivor tries to break free, angry littles will come out and say "I want my mama (or papa)" and refuse to have anything to do with anyone else. Young parts who miss beloved adults may hit or yell at support people, blaming these supporters for the fact that the survivor is unable to see the people they are bonded to.

It is important that these younger parts have a healthy, non-dissociative adult and support in their lives that they can bond to. Introducing them to the real Jesus is also helpful, since it will cause them to hesitate to recontact individuals who hate Christianity and Christians, and provides a source of love to attach to.

The number one reason that survivors go back to the cult is the lack of safe support to attach to as they leave the group. The cult loyal parts inside basically think "Why should I give up everyone I love, to live all alone, with no one to love me?" Therapy can be helpful, but traditional therapy is normally one hour a week, which will not offset a lifetime of cult bonding. This is why safe support is so critical for survivors, and is their biggest need. With support, the survivor can tackle the emotional tasks required for healing, including detaching from their abusers.

Cult loyal parts often get a bad "rap" from survivors and others, since they seem to create a lot of "problems". But given safety, support and the chance to receive truth, they will become the greatest force for healing inside, as their deep love and loyalty move from the cult to the Christian God and safe support. These parts, especially the cult host and the core controlling systems, will know the survivor's entire life history and can help keep the survivor safe from access. They will instantly recognize individuals from the cult, can warn the survivor of danger, and will often have a very strong faith and prayer life once they become Christians.

Internalized Loved Ones

When the infant is tiny (or even still in the womb) they will be asked to receive a familiar spirit from loved ones (such as their twin or triplet; their favorite trainers, etc.) They will be told that by receiving the spirit, the loved one can "always be with you" and the infant/child will "never be alone." Fearing abandonment, this sounds good to the child and they agree. This is accomplished through rituals that can include sexual activity, being put to death and resurrected together, or exchanging blood. The familiar spirit is a spirit of delusion that makes the infant/child/adult believe that the internal part is actually the outside loved person.

These internal representations of loved ones are used to control the survivor in various ways.

- If the survivor disobeys the cult, this internal part may be tortured, fulfilling the promise that if the survivor tries to leave or heal, their loved ones will be tortured or killed
- The internal part often holds great control over programming, reprogramming and amnesia systems
- The internal part may seek spiritual (astral) recontact with the loved person if physical access is stopped
- The internal part may be programmed to beg the survivor to "save them" (with tears and cries of pain) by going back to the group, if the survivor tries to break off cult contact.

It is important that the internal parts receive deliverance from the delusional (familiar) spirits and that the original identity of the part is restored, through prayer. The survivor will need to work with these parts, letting them know that they are programmed parts, and are actually part of the survivor and not the outside person. Allowing these parts out to experience current reality can help with grounding them, and bringing truth to them can help them choose to stop doing their old jobs inside.

Children are often programmed in groups of 12 (graded for performance so that individuals of similar ability are programmed together), and view this cohort as their siblings, since they have been raised together and done everything together since earliest infancy. They will have internal representations of these individuals they have closely bonded to internally, and will have great difficulty breaking bonds with these beloved peers. The survivor will need support in grieving the loss when they choose to leave the group, since the friendships and camaraderie experienced on the battlefield and during training and school are deep indeed.

Leadership Councils

The survivor's inside world will reflect the outside world they were raised in. If they were raised in a cult facility, there will be an internal one. If they lived under a cult council's leadership, there will be one internally. There will be internal trainers; internal training rooms and labs; council rooms, and mage councils. The cult hierarchy will be reflected in the individual's system, with the top leaders representing "ascended" or "celestial" beings who have overcome "human mortality."

These parts are heavily invested in the beliefs of the group regarding heaven, hell and ascension. They will believe that all of the torture and abuse they have undergone will be rewarded in a celestial paradise filled with good food, heavenly music, angels and good things. These constructs are installed in infancy, with elaborate staging and actors playing out the roles.

Core Loyalty

The highest parts of a system will be the darkest and most dissociated. Around the core, there may be a deep hatred of all mankind and humanity, with the vow (made in the womb, during prenatal torture) to get revenge on the abusers of the fetus and birth mother (see core programming). The fetus will have agreed to allow Satan (or a spirit representing him) to enter in after extreme trauma, because this spirit promises the fetus that it will help him/her become powerful, and one day wreak revenge on all mankind.

An internal "Satan" will be one of the first core splits (this will also be replicated with a Satan in all the other systems as a major controller), and the child will be highly loyal to him due to this desire for revenge. An internal "god" will also be a primary core split. These first core splits are heavily rewarded, praised and doted on, and will have bonded to the demonic (and in fact, may have had no interaction with human beings). Breaking loyalty at this level involves forgiving the abusers in the womb (by the fetal splits) and forgiving God, since the fetus blames God for the abuse.

Anti-Traitor/Anti-Stranger Programming

All cult groups fear and hate traitors, or members who try to leave, as well as "strangers" or non-cult members. This is reinforced with extensive programming, starting in the womb. A "traitor" will enter the room the birth mother is in, and painfully rape and torture her, telling her "this is what traitors do." This instills in the fetus a deep subconscious hatred of traitors. During infancy, this setup is repeated, with the infant tortured and raped by actors who come into the nursery saying scripts such as "I'm a traitor and I want you to be one too". The traitors smell awful, and the infant is repulsed by the foul smell and abuse, until they are "saved" by the primary programmer(s) who tell them to stay away from traitors.

As the child gets older, the setups become more sophisticated. The child may be "abducted" by traitors, who horrifically abuse the child until the child can escape or is "rescued" in the setup. During military camp training, the child may be captured by "traitors" and interrogated under torture; the child is extensively praised for not disclosing any information. The child is taught to avoid traitors and strangers, with abductions by strangers in setups where the child is raped and abused continuously until they are able to escape and go back to those who “love” them at the facility: their programmers and siblings.

These parts who have been extensively programmed to hate outsiders, and hate themselves if they leave the group, will initially be horrified and angry at the choice to leave. They may act out on self harm and suicide programming, preferring death to life as a traitor. They may attempt to sabotage therapy and support, and will call supporters names (such as “traitor enabler” and worse). It takes time, patience and bringing truth to these parts, and a safe, non-abusive attachment figure for these often young parts to realize that they were lied to.

Twin and Triplet Bonding

Most modern sophisticated groups that use mind control will produce their members through genetic manipulation. The state of genetic engineering is far beyond what the public realizes, and traits such as intelligence, strength, muscle mass, healing ability and pain endurance, spiritual/psychic ability, as well as phenotypes such as hair color and eye color, have been genetically engineered for many decades. G1 was the first group of genetically enhanced individuals produced (in the late 1940’s), G3 (Generation 3) appeared in the late 1950’s, G13 was produced in the mid-1990’s and today I would guess it is near G20. The genes and DNA can be purchased by smaller groups from the larger genetic labs; the largest (and wealthiest) groups have their own genetic labs. Once a new generation is produced, the birth mothers are implanted with multiple zygotes. Only one per birth mother (the strongest) will be allowed to live, but there will be several gene-identical individuals produced who are carried by their own birth mothers. In this manner, identical twins and triplets are produced who were carried in different wombs. These twins and triplets are allowed to bond deeply throughout life, and will often become the deepest love bonds for the individual.

Twins (or triplets) will undergo numerous scenarios in which they “rescue” each other, undergo torture for one another, or even agree to be put to death for the other (and are subsequently resuscitated). This creates a very deep bond. They may be placed with one another in cribs in infancy, and undergo early programming within sight of each other, and be allowed to comfort each other after the programming sessions are over. If an infant becomes a “failure to thrive” (which is very common due to the terrible abuse during the first year) they will be allowed to spend extra time with their twin sibling(s), in order to help restore the will to live. They will be told “Your twin needs you to live or she will have to take all the pain alone” or “Your twin needs your protection or she might die” etc.

Breaking this deep emotional and spiritual bond is difficult, since this is one of the closest relationships the survivor was allowed when growing up. It requires support, understanding and the chance to grieve the loss if there is no contact with the siblings. In most instances, these twin/triplets who are still in the group will be threatened with torture, causing great distress in the survivor who must come to realize that she/he can NOT be a “messiah” or rescue their siblings; that only the Christian God is powerful enough to do so.

Antichrist Programming

One of the deepest loyalty programs within an occultic system will be to the New World Order and the promised “messiah” or the individual the Bible refers to as the “antichrist” (the occultic groups look to him as a savior and leader who will usher in peace and prosperity). The antichrist is referred to by occultic groups as the “Light of the World” (which is also the name of a famous occultic painting created in the mid-1800’s which depicts the antichrist leading the world and men of all races looking towards him).

Antichrist programming in many systems was formerly represented by silvery blue, but since 2000 has been represented by the colors white and gold. Many groups believe that this individual was born in 2000, and will rise to power in the year 2030 (this cannot be verified, since the Christian God is the one in charge of history and is in control of world events). The antichrist represented internally will be a high controller (normally, of the core system), and will rule over the internal celestial city, which is the occultic form to the “new Jerusalem”. This internal celestial city will have a tree of life in its center; a central fountain of life and “living waters” and will have internal alters (for sacrifices). This system will be built upon numerous sacrifices, and will often be quite disconnected from normal emotions or conscience; instead, the “ascended beings” that inhabit it will be in a state of bliss and peace. They will be completely loyal and bonded to the antichrist (called “he who has come”) and will have made vows to serve him. Breaking this programming and the associated bonding and loyalty vows will create spiritual warfare, and requires prayer (and possibly fasting) and support to completely break the loyalty programming.

Chapter 9: Helping Spiritual Systems Heal

When survivors choose to heal, they will eventually meet their internal spiritual parts, which reside within specific systems and structures. These will vary with different groups, but will have the following traits in common:

1. Rituals are done before the programming, during and after the session (including sacrifices).
2. The spiritual parts will be committed to a deity, or believe they are the deity. This is accomplished by having the "deity" (an actor) introduce themselves to the survivor in the womb. After birth, actors dressed up as the deity demonstrate how the part is to walk, talk and act; and perform sacrifices in front of the infant. After sexual abuse with the actor, the demonic spirit then enters the infant. The part that the demon attaches to then believes that they are the entity.
3. This programming is reinforced heavily during early childhood, with role plays, VRs and other setups. This is one reason why international groups prefer to program their infants and children fulltime in facilities (with breaks of a few weeks each year to be hosted by presentation families): it can take years to install and reinforce these structured systems internally.

Theta Spiritual Systems

Theta is a brain wave state that is highly sensitive to the spiritual. When in theta state, a person can more easily see spiritual beings and under their influence, can experience greatly enhanced abilities (such as being able to run at superfast speeds, leap extremely high, and have extremely enhanced eyesight and hearing). Theta state is also used to create parts with specific spiritual roles, which include:

- Theta remote viewing (the ability to leave the body, and enter a building remotely and share information regarding what is seen there),
- Theta killing: these assassins are trained from the time they are in the womb to kill psychically; normally, after a sexual union with the victim. The theta will be sent to have sexual intercourse with the victim, create a soul tie, and later use the soul tie to kill the person demonically. At times, teams of thetas will join together to kill individuals with a strong will to live or who have strong demonic protection themselves.
- Astral communication: thetas can communicate with other thetas by astral projection or

inter-psychically.

Thetas can be trained to send the following to others:

- Tremendous fear (Phobos): this includes sending dreams of death or terror
- Death (Thanatos): this is the root of psychic killing
- Revenge: (Nemesis): normally a strong theta controller, Nemesis represents the desire to wreak revenge on mankind (for its mortality) and to destroy others.

Omicron and Mu

These are extremely high and low brain wave states used to increase the receptivity to spiritual attachments. Omicron is extremely painful to maintain and can lead to a death state quickly; and is considered a doorway to meeting "spiritual beings" or "enlightened beings" (which are actually demons). Mu is an extremely low brain wave state (near death) which again allows the demonic easier entrance. It is often used in conjunction with other programming.

Omega Programming

Omega programming is spiritual programming that enhances oracle and mage skills and abilities (mages are occultic practitioners who are skilled in casting spells and power battles). This is also the state in which complete system destruction sequences are often placed. This system believes it is highly evolved and "ascended" and does not feel the body or mortality. It will be heavily programmed with deep loyalty to the group and trainers, and will be programmed to die or cause system shatter if the survivor seriously disobeys cult commands and becomes a security risk. The survivor may literally attempt to "implode" with this programming, and will need support to work through it.

Omega skills are also used to take on the pain for others, such as when a woman is carrying a hybrid (half human, half demonic) child, since this type of pregnancy causes intense torment (and at times, even death) in the carrier. An omega team will help carry the demonic torment, allowing the pregnancy to continue without spiritually destroying the birth mother.

Ancient Spiritual Systems

There are numerous ancient spiritual systems that Occultic groups draw from in their spiritual programming. Some include:

- **The Garden of Eden (biblical)**: the core may reside in this garden setting, which is also inhabited by Lilith, Adam, Eve, the snake and is often where the core resides, insulated from any interaction with outside life. Inside of Eden will be the following structures:

  - The Tree of Life (althea, representing satanic immortality), the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil (false, human logic), and Cruz (the cross, representing false Christianity). These three twine together and run through all systems as a three-fold cord of false logic and belief
  - A waterfall
  - Benches where the core meets with Satan ("god" in the system) for counsel
  - Flaming cherubim (system barrier preventing crossing outside without authorization, or entrance)
  - A recreation of the temple in Jerusalem, with alters for sacrifice and a "holy of holies"

- **Babylonian**
  Many Occultic groups have access to the scrolls and tablets written by Babylonian mages and wise men (or at least copies), which describe dimensional travel, rituals, shape shifting and other forms of demonic activity. The internal controllers will have the names of Babylonian deities (such as Bel, Ishtar, Ashtoth, etc.) and will have undergone Babylonian pain rituals (golden needles heated and inserted into 1000 nerve points, while the person is suspended), and other forms of training (such as learning to "pass through the fire" in a golden chair without being burned alive).

  The mage craft taught includes how to read magic books (where the pages come alive), how to play demonic chess (with the chess "master" learning how to control the white, and then the black pieces, which become demonically alive). Learning to shape shift (take on the form of a bird or wolf) is rooted in Babylonian mage craft, and students learn the required rituals (that often include learning to create the circles or geometric figures with great care) from mentors, or spiritual "masters".

  The Babylonian parts will often reside in ziggurats or a recreation of a babylonian temple inside.

- **Egyptian Programming**
  This is similar in some ways to Babylonian programming, but involves the major Egyptian deities (Ra, Isis, Osiris, Horus, etc.). The child will be taken to a recreation of an Egyptian temple, or to the chambers below a great pyramid, where sacrifices are done. The young child is often chained to a statue representing a deity with an attached alter, and left overnight; if the child lives and is not killed demonically, they will have internalized the deity whose statue they were chained to.

These demons often can create great torment for the survivor and others, with parts able to call up clouds of swarming, stinging bees or gnats, or other curses. Helping them involves getting rid of the demonic, breaking soul ties to the human mentor and the demonic, and helping these parts realize that they are part of a human being. Because the demonic pretended to "protect" them for years, giving up the demonic may make the survivor feel vulnerable, until they have learned that the Christian God actually gives greater protection, and without the terrible price that demons exact.

- **Indian/Tibetan and Asian**
  Most international groups ensure that the individuals they program take part in knowledge gathered from religions around the world. They will be required to learn Sanskrit (which has many ancient rituals described), and other ancient languages, and those well-versed will even converse in these languages. They may meet the "living Buddha" and offer him reverence and sacrifice; and gain demonic power from a large variety of sources. When learning martial arts, they will learn to channel "chi" and other forms of demonic power to do the seemingly impossible feats and enhance their own combat skills.

- **Q'bala**
  I have addressed the Q'bala in earlier writings. A Jewish form of mysticism, it is used to open up portals for dimensional travel at the points of the sephiroth (i.e. installation of demons). It also drives part of the logic for the delta system, and the tree of life runs through it.

- **Druids**
  Druids are considered the "tree huggers" of the Occultic world, but they have powerful blood rituals based upon human sacrifice that are far from gentle or kind. The Druid Council runs the U.K., and druids are adept at shapeshifting (into animal or tree form). Druid rituals often involve a child being chained to a tree (large oak) under which sacrifices have been performed, and the tree then rapes and demonically speaks to the child at night.

- **Witches, Mages and Warlocks**
  These are all different branches of Occultic learning which members of groups go through, with mages considered the most learned of the three (and the most powerful). Mages will often engage in power battles, and spend years mentoring their students in the Occultic rituals required. Mages can also shapeshift (into birds, ravens, or mage wolves), and can send powerful curses, and the most powerful mages will be part of a mage council over an area. Fortunately, the Christian God is able to stop all curses and protect those who turn to His protection, and who renounce all forms of witchcraft, sorcery or mage craft.

- **Ascended Masters**
  These are considered the highest individuals in the Occultic world, who have passed through horrendous death rituals and have basically "overcome" their "human mortality" through pain that would cause shock and death to those who have not undergone training to endure it; they have also often traveled to the highest dimensions (12th and 13th) in their quest for "enlightenment."

  Basically, these individuals have given over their hearts, minds and souls to be possessed demonically, and use these demonic powers to further the goals of the New World Order and usher in the reign of the antichrist. They will be familiar with working with nephilim and with the satanic agenda to destroy mankind, and will agree with it.

- **Demonic parts (Janus, Guardians, Dark Cherubim, shadows, wraiths, residents of hell)**

The survivor of international Occultic abuse will have numerous parts inside that have been programmed to believe that they are "demons". These are often young children (ages 1-4) that were taught to act like demons, growl, and given demonic names. The actors who model how to be a "demon" to the child will act in every way as if they are the demon.

  - Janus will be a demonic entity who appears like the Greek Janus, with two faces, one facing inwards (the dark face) and one facing outwards (the white face). Janus acts as a guardian between front and back, along a large porticullis (gate) that separates the two. Both aspects of Janus will need healing and deliverance, since her job was to prevent unauthorized passing back and forth between front and back.
  - Guardians: these will sound like demons and are actually protectors that guard infants, small children, or high-security areas inside. They will attempt to block the survivor or therapists from gaining access until convinced that allowing them in is helpful. It can help if these parts can share how they got their jobs and why they do them, as well as get rid of the demonic attachments that sit on them.
  - Dark Cherubim and angels: most spiritual systems will have a light (white) side, of false Christianity that includes false angels; in the same way, the dark system will have its counterparts, including dark angels, Princes of Hell, Generals of Hell and other parts. Again, these parts have been programmed both prenatally and during early infancy with role models, actors and VRs. Dismantling this is a combination of spiritual deliverance and looking at the setups that created the beliefs.
  - Shadows and wraiths: these are ethereal beings without physical body that have

been created through spiritual torture; they may also be “modeled” through movies and VRs to create the internal counterpart. These parts often “follow” and track victims, working with the thetas to search and find those they are to torment or kill.

- Residents of hell: these are parts that were created to inhabit the various layers of hell internally, and will appear like demons, archangels, or other spiritual beings (see punishment programming chapter for more information).

- **Celestials**

The satanic counterpart of the Christian heaven is “celestial City” and paradise. This is an area where parts who believe they are “ascended beings” who have overcome “mortality” inhabit; and represent the reward for those who help bring in the New World Order.

Celestial City and its counterparts are installed through rituals and large numbers of sacrifices; and the inhabitants will have undergone so much torture and pain that they have completely dissociated their feelings. In the VRs of Celestial City, the inhabitants are programmed with drugs or brain stimulation to feel peace and bliss. These parts will come out declaring great peace and no fear of death (they have all undergone death and “resurrection” within the city) and believe they have “ascended” beyond earthy desires or needs. There is a huge spirit of deception and delusion that must be dealt with, and doing so will cause great anger when the parts realize that they have been deceived, and given their lives and sweat to a lie.

With time, and the chance to grieve, and with faith in the true God, these parts can heal and help the other parts in their healing journey. This takes time, since they have a lifetime of false teaching to work through. They will need time and patience to connect with the other systems, and realize that they are part of a human being.

- **Satan**

In all occultic systems, Satan (and his representative on earth, the antichrist) will hold primary positions, and will often be among the first core split(s). In many systems, Satan will have his black (punishing) form, and his kind (Lucient) form, with splits for each. The system will often perform sacrifices internally around the clock to the internal Satan, antichrist, and other deities, without the survivor’s conscious knowledge. This can create a tremendous struggle internally, until the sacrifices, hymns of praise and other forms of worship internally stop as the individual begins to allow truth to replace the lies they were raised with.

As the primary punisher, the internal Satan will sit on his throne, and mete out judgments internally (or rewards) based upon behavior and obedience to cult laws and rules. If the individual obeys, they are rewarded (and ascend, enjoying internal bliss and peace); if they disobey, they are punished, and parts will begin descending in the internal “hell” until they “repent” or begin obeying again. The satanic systems will believe as fully that they are going to heaven, and that disobeying cult rules is sending them to hell, as the Christian systems believe in the Christian God and heaven. This can create a great deal of conflict during healing, until the satanic/luciferian systems come to recognize the truth of the Bible, and see how they have been lied to and manipulated by their abusers.

This will cause a great deal of grief. Often, the core is completely bonded to Satan, loves him, and wants to obey him, looking to him as their “father” figure; breaking this bond and the hold that Satan has on the system requires re-bonding to someone who is safe, and learning the truth about Jesus. This part of the system will often be the most hidden and invested in blocking healing, since undoing spiritual programming at this level will often allow massive healing of other systems.

Chapter 10: Helping Littles and Infants Heal

For the survivor to heal, their younger parts (child, toddler, infant and fetal) must also heal. These parts, often called “littles” by survivors, hold a lot of emotional power within the system. Their emotional needs are often what drives recontact programming, and should never be ignored.

The Need for Attachment

One of the greatest needs that littles have is to have a safe attachment figure. If they are not allowed to attach to a safe, non-cult person, their emotional needs will continue to drive them back to loved ones in the cult, where this need will be met.

All programmers understand attachment needs; after every programming session, the programmer will spend time with the infant and young parts inside, holding them, rocking them, giving them bottles and speaking lovingly to them. They realize the powerful emotions that these parts hold, and how important to keeping the programming intact these attachment needs are.

Breaking programming always involves breaking attachments to unsafe (cult) people that the survivor loves. This is one of the most difficult emotional tasks the survivor will ever have to do, and one of the most important for healing. To break attachments to unsafe people, a safe alternative must be presented. While it would be nice to be able to pat the survivor on the back, and tell him/her to “let Jesus be the one you bond to” this is not enough. The survivor was wounded in relationship with a human being, and needs to heal in relationship with one. Offering less is an emotional “copout” but is one that many therapists and supporters take.

Littles will often be direct about their attachment needs. They will ask to be held, rocked, and comforted. The nature of the support relationship will determine the boundaries to be held, but at the very least, the supporter can let the littles know they are cared for, and be given the smiles and looks of “delight” that infants and young children crave. This can promote healing faster than any other intervention offered, since it is attachments to cult people that draw the survivor back.

Guardians and Protectors

Littles and infants will often have highly protective guardians and protectors placed over them, whose job is to ensure that the littles never come out unless called out. Infants are often called out with a special “love name” given them by the trainers. Using this name causes them to immediately come out, expecting treats, petting and loving care.

The guardians and protectors are heavily punished throughout infancy and childhood, until they learn their job and do it well, keeping the infants inside. This is why in most systems with mind control, the littles and infants are never seen in therapy, until a lot of trust has been established over time. It often takes years of trust building with a safe person until these young parts are willing to test the waters and come out.

Systems that do not guard their infants and littles may do so because of complete presentation breakdown (no adults present to protect), or because the group was unsophisticated and heavily rewarded the individual for appearing young and childlike.

In many systems, there is a special guardian such as “Pan” who plays his pipes, and calls the littles to follow after him. He takes them to a special play area, with carousels and fun things to do, which keeps the littles entertained inside – and not presenting. In order to help the littles heal, the help of Pan and other similar guardians needs to be enlisted. Otherwise, the littles will be kept away from therapy, and healing.

Internal Playlands

There are other internal playlands for littles as well. Never-Never Land is a major one, as just described. For the infants, there may be a pirate ship, with fun-loving pirates, cake and ice cream, songs and lots of holding, which the infants love. This can cause them to choose to stay inside the internalized version of the pirate ship, and prevent their presenting (or healing).
It is difficult for littles to give up these internal representations, because they represent memories of fun, loving attention and joy in a life that had very little of these things. After a day of being tortured and programmed, the littles look forward to the fun setups such as Neverland.

There may be representations of the “Lost Boys” inside (beloved brothers and sisters), Wendy, Tinker Bell and other characters. Captain Hook is a powerful punisher inside, who punishes any disobedience to cult programming or attempts to leave Never Land. The goal of this internal world is to provide a place where these young parts live, and never come out – unless they are called out by programmers. In order to help these young parts to heal, they must be offered love and a life on the outside that is better than the virtual world created inside.

The internal carousels, circuses and other areas where younger parts live are all constructed by the programmers for a purpose: to reinforce cult directives, and keep internal reprogramming going with these younger parts. As the individual heals, and the littles step forward, they will have tremendous attachment needs and will want “playtime” with trusted adults.

Helping Littles Heal

In addition to love, younger parts will often want the following:

- Undivided adult attention
- Stories read to them
- Play time, whether playing with a hula hoop, going to a park and swinging, or coloring quietly. Different littles will have different needs, and will enjoy different activities. The main thing is that they will want to do them with **you**, the supporter, who they have come to trust.
- Most young parts have a good sense of humor, and enjoying teasing adults they trust. This is also part of healing, as they test out boundaries and discover what is okay and not in a normal relationship.
- Treats: the cult often heavily rewards littles who recontact with their favorite candy (such as chocolate) and tell them they are a “good girl” or “good boy”. Littles like treats, and as the survivor heals, they may choose to give rewards to the younger parts for NOT contacting. It is better if treats chosen are different than those the cult uses, since the goal is to not reinforce programming.
- Bottles: the youngest (infant) parts may want a bottle. The survivor may choose to purchase a bottle and give the milk to the infants themselves, or choose a trusted, safe support person to give the bottle. Because giving bottles (and breast) is part of the bonding to programmers, the system may react with panic and anger if the infants begin to go to a “stranger” (non-cult person) for a bottle, since this means the programming is breaking down at a prime level. The infants themselves may react with fear if the internal parts are punishing them for accepting a bottle from an outsider, until the programming to only bond to programmers breaks. Other littles may only want the beloved trainer, and become angry at other parts who bond to a person outside the group. It is important that parts be allowed to express these conflicts, and receive acceptance, to help resolution of the conflicts.

Controllers and Communicators

Because cult children are genetically enhanced for intelligence, it is not unusual for even small infant parts to have at least some speech, and excellent understanding. But because the youngest infants inside may have trouble talking or being understood, there are often special parts known as communicators who communicate for these parts. The communicators for infants are often quite young, and programmed to be completely unemotional as they relay whatever the infants are experiencing. Communicators are often very compassionate and feel protective of the infants that they communicate for, and can become part of the “healing team” to help them heal.

Baby controllers are parts that oversee infant areas (see Pan above). There are other controllers, such as the internalized programmer(s) that the baby bonded to (often called “Papa” or "Mama" by the baby). This controller tells the infant what to do, and carries the baby past internal barriers without the baby getting punished. Once the controllers are willing to help with healing, there is less pain and punishment as the babies come forward to play and bond.

Why Littles Stay Young

Littles are young and stay young inside for several reasons. The primary reason they do so is that they were told to always stay young by their primary loved person (primary programmer) who has told them that they will not be loved if they grow older. As a result, the little makes a vow to the loved person to never grow up, to always stay young, and performs a ritual during which a demon is attached for this purpose. Once the demon leaves, and the vow is broken, and the little is able to come out and experience life, they will begin growing and developing, just as a normal child would (but more quickly). An infant does not take 18 years to "grow up" but instead may become a toddler and preschooler within months of coming out and interacting with a safe support person. This journey of growth is individual for each person. The love of the true (Christian) God is also very helpful in this growth, since the littles will feel safe with His presence nearby: they will feel safe enough to start breaking their programming, and grow up as they realize that God loves them.

Chapter 11: Reprogramming Systems

Reprogramming systems are systems designed to repair programs that begin breaking down, and keep systems and controllers doing their cult jobs. Reprogramming systems are actually specialized punishment systems, since they pull upon trauma to reinforce the programming. The main controllers in reprogramming systems will represent:

- A demonic deity (such as "Saturn", "Prometheus" or "Vulcan") with a familiar spirit attached to the human part. These parts run the reprogramming in different ways.
    - In general, there is a system that runs reprogramming 24 hours a day. This punishment is tied to triads of controllers: an infant, a child, and an older part, and each controller in each system will go through the reprogramming (pain) sequences. This system links to Epsilon (pain holding) system, in order to channel the pain and punishment for the reprogramming sequences.
    - Other systems will perform loyalty system reprogramming and punishments. This includes being pounded with "Vulcan's Hammer" and internal parts having their livers torn out by a large black bird as punishment for disobedience. This program is installed in infancy, when the programmers terrorize the infant with a large bird that claws them and is allowed to peck at them (they wear special goggles to protect the eyes).
    - Another system would punish the white systems and reprograms them in a manner similar to the prior system.
    - The birth mother (see chapter on "birth mother" for more on this controller)
- Other reprogramming controllers will include internalized trainers who are the primary trainers who have programmed the survivors. These trainers act in every way like the outside trainers, and will put the parts on training tables inside, and reprogram them as they were taught to do since early childhood.
- Other controllers include loved ones the survivor is bonded to (who may also be internalized trainers in dual roles). These loved ones are tortured, with screams, internally if the survivor's programming fails.

Most reprogramming systems run on a 24-hour cycle, with each system undergoing reprogramming during a two-hour time period for that day. Some systems work on a 48-hour cycle, but this is unusual. The reprogramming will work in the following manner:

1. The primary controllers for a system (such as the white Minerva or Athena for a presentation system) and the back command controllers (including deep delta for controllers) will communicate back and forth using specialized tones or “calls’ that were installed in the womb and during infancy, and reinforced throughout life. These controllers are doing constant “system checks” with the controllers literally “singing” the tones back if the system is intact. If the system has been breached, or is no longer intact, the tone sung back (or its not being sung back) will represent this fact, and identify the problem (tones are used because information can be packed into each tone, and the brain processes these “calls” or “pings” between systems much more rapidly than conscious thought).

2. If a system call shows distress or faltering, or communicates that directives have been disobeyed, then the system will be reprogrammed. This can take place in several ways:

    a. For the presentations (white), the parts that have faltered or failed may be hospitalized in a re-enactment of the “Crazy Alice” scenes of torture, etc. in an internalized “hospital”. The presentation parts will be escorted by doctors in white coats inside to “be made better” in the script, since any failure is considered being “sick” in the reprogramming script. Any failure of presenter amnesia (bleedthrough) will result in this, as well as any disobedience by presenters to cult commands.

    b. For more serious failures, internal parts may be taken to an internalized training facility that looks like the programming labs they are taken to for “tune ups” (reprogramming done to all cult members at intervals). This facility will be run inside by internalized representations of programmers who put the parts through an entire sequence of programming (shock, torture, tech torture, etc.) to get the part to continue doing its old job

    c. After the reprogramming, a complete system check is done again, to ensure that all parts are singing the correct tones back - and are in compliance.

If the reprogramming systems begin to fail, the parts controlling these systems are themselves tortured, and internal representations of loved ones are also tortured in an “if you fail, then ___ gets hurt” script.

Internal Demonic Activity

Without demonic interference or physical tune-ups, all programming would naturally fail over time. The human brain was not meant to forget, or to be controlled, or to do the things that occultic groups ask its members to do. The natural response is rebellion at the tremendous amount of emotional and physical time and energy required, and to question the motives for the horrendous abuse that cult groups engage in. To prevent this, cult groups rely heavily on demonic delusion to keep programming going.

This is why there are sacrifices and rituals performed before, during and after programming sessions. In addition, certain activities are programmed in to help ensure that the programming will not "fail". This includes:

- The installation of internal altars, and controllers performing sacrifices internally around the clock to maintain the internal demonic controls.
- Sexual activity with demons on the internalized altars, for greater control. All system controllers participate
- Spiritual (astral) contact in order to reprogram parts and influence the survivor to come back to the group, or to punish them for attempting to leave.
- In some groups, there are dimensions used for punishment purposes. If the survivor attempts to stop physical contact, their former handlers or programmers will attempt to astral in and drag them with them, where the demonic punishments cause great misery. This is why it is important to close all doors/portals for spiritual travel and access as quickly as possible.

Chapter 12: Suicidality and Self Harm

Suicide is an issue that comes up frequently for most survivors during the healing process. This is for several reasons:

- The survivor has learned over a lifetime to avoid painful or intense emotions in their presentations, and so has not learned to cope with them in a healthy way. Suicide may seem to be one way to "avoid the pain", and this thinking is aided by the demonic attachments.
- The demonization of parts: demons hate people, and want them dead. When a survivor is healing, and getting rid of the demonic, they realize that they are basically losing their "host". In retaliation, they will put thoughts of suicide in the survivor.
- Programming: most individuals programmed by sophisticated groups will have several layers of suicide/self-destruct in place, designed to "get rid of" the survivor should they become a security risk to the group.
- The survivor may be given a direct command by their group to die, especially if they are truly breaking free. This will be reinforced by the belief that their healing means that others they love are being tortured or killed. In many survivors, loyalty programming includes the willingness to die for the beloved programmers and loved ones in the group, and the desire to die rather than be a "traitor" is installed. This line of programming is activated when the survivor reaches the loyalty systems inside.

All survivors will have programming installed to believe that if they heal, and continue healing more deeply, they will die or suicide. This belief needs to be challenged, and truth brought to the parts that hold this.

A survivor who is doing intense healing work will need to openly discuss the possibility of suicide and what to do with suicidal feelings if they come up, with their therapist or support system. It is usually not a matter of "if" but "when" the feelings will come up, and a safety plan is critical. Talking about suicidal feelings will not "cause" the survivor to suicide, and can be a relief, since the feelings are there anyway.

Suicidal feelings can come at different intensity levels, ranging from a mild "I wish I could go to heaven and be free of all this pain" to an almost uncontrollable desire to self-harm. Any time the survivor shares they are feeling suicidal needs to be taken seriously, assessed, and the safety plan implemented (such as around the clock accountability and/or hospitalization) if the survivor feels they cannot control these impulses.

About Hospitalization

Some (but not all) survivors who are dealing with intense homicidal or suicidal feelings may need to go inpatient for a period of time to deal with the programming. If this is so, it is important to prayerfully consider where to go, since many hospitals have personnel that are mind controlled, and who will want to access the individual. In fact, there is programming installed in most survivors that makes them feel "I need to go to the hospital, I am sick" (part of the Crazy Alice programming sequence) in order to be re-accessed and reprogrammed.

There are some programs that are safer than others for inpatient hospitalization, but the survivor should be aware that even if the hospital itself is fairly safe, there may be other survivors inpatient who may attempt to access the survivor while they are inpatient. This is why in most cases, it is often best to provide around the clock prayerful support and accountability in preference to hospitalization, unless the crisis continues to escalate or becomes life-threatening. It is important to have input from a trained professional therapist if the risk of suicide is high.

Triggers for Suicide and Self Harm

As the survivor is healing, they will encounter various internal and external triggers for suicidality. Common triggers can include:

- **Breaching of a highly secure system inside**, by the survivor and/or therapist. These systems are often guarded by suicide programming, which can appear like "trip lines", "bombs", or simply guardians and controllers installed with suicide programming that runs with any unauthorized (i.e. someone other than the programmer) access

- **Beginning to bond with someone outside the group**: cult loyal parts will become extremely distressed as the survivor begins to make friends with and develop emotional attachments with individuals outside the cult group. This activates internal "anti-traitor" programming, in which the survivor throughout their life (in programmed scripts) has chosen to die rather than be a "traitor" (see traitor programming in the cult loyal programming chapter). They are dealing with the deep pain of being unable to see loved ones in the group, and may seek to wreak "revenge" on the parts choosing to leave the group by attempting to kill them through suicide. This intrasystem conflict and hostility needs to be processed and addressed openly, including allowing the cult loyal parts to process their own grieving without judgment (i.e. asking "How can you miss that S.O.B." will not help. Letting the survivor know that you see their pain and they are not alone in it will help more).

- **Subliminals**: these may come with commands and runes that order the survivor to die (in order to show their loyalty, or to have any hope of "ascension" etc.) When a survivor goes online, or uses a smart phone, they will be subjected to subliminals, and may feel suicidal or extremely depressed afterwards. Often, the subliminals will show loved ones in the cult group being tortured because of the survivor’s unwillingness to obey cult commands. This is one reason why taking a break from going online, and minimizing any required online activity can be helpful, especially earlier in healing.

- **Seeing loved ones threatened**: if the survivor stops going to rituals or meeting with cult members, the group will eventually send people in public places to use hand signals to sign that they are being hurt and tortured, or will die soon. If the survivor works alone, or can be gotten alone, the loved one may raise their shirt, and show the bruises, cuts and welts from torture endured, with the survivor blamed. This type of interaction will cause intense suicidality, until the survivor has been able to recall who their double binds are, the messages they have been sending, how they are communicated, and then look at the traumas that caused them to take on a rescuer role for the loved one. The survivor will eventually need to come to the realization that it is not their fault if a loved one is hurt, abused or tortured, even if their leaving the group is blamed. The reality is that the loved one would be hurt anyway, as long as they remain in a group that abuses.

Anti-suicide Programming

Because suicidality can be so strong in individuals from organized groups, they may have undergone specific programming to stop or prevent suicide. They don’t want to lose their best agents, but these agents may be dealing with painful traumas and emotions, causing the individual being programmed to give up. This may first be manifested as being a “failure to thrive” in infancy, which is very common in infants raised and programmed in facilities. Over 90% of all highly programmed infants go through at least one, and often several, episodes of failure to thrive (FTT) in which they stop eating, curl up and basically shut down.

The remedy used by programmers is to stop the programming, and let the infant spend bonding time with the programmers and other infants, such as their twins. These other infants can often pull the infant back from death, and help the infant want to live again.

As the individual gets older, specific programming to not self harm and not commit suicide is put in, with heavy rewards and praise for wanting to stay alive.

During especially difficult times (such as the time after attempting to carry a nephilim baby, or the time after a marriage to a principality at age 13, or completing the full rites of initiation into adulthood at age 12 – 13 when numerous sacrifices are done) the individual may again fall into a “spiritual coma” and want to die – and again, is brought out of it by the loving bonding with the people they are closest to. These individuals gather around the spiritually wounded person, and attempt to help restore the desire to live. If unsuccessful, the individual will die; if successful, they will continue living.

The individual will also be programmed with codes to prevent them from committing suicide, with command codes designed to stop them from suicide. These commands will be given in times of the individual feeling deeply suicidal, in order to keep them alive (if they are still active in the group).

Emotions that Can Precipitate Self Harm

During healing, when various emotions come up, certain ones can precipitate suicidal feelings and self-harm more than others. Despair, rage, rejection and feeling abandoned are the primary ones. These are all extremely painful emotions, and the survivor may feel completely overwhelmed and incapable of dealing with them. Healing can include looking at the traumas that caused the feelings, and helping the parts work through the feelings with safe support. The survivor needs to know that suicide is a permanent “non-solution” to a temporary problem: intense feelings. It can help if they come to realize that they will not always feel this way, and that most feelings subside within a matter of days, including the most painful emotions.

Unsafe Behaviors/Risk Taking

When an individual is attempting to avoid feeling emotional pain, they may cope by exhibiting unsafe behaviors. They may go out late at night alone, trawl bars, engage in unsafe sex, or go through multiple relationships quickly with relative strangers. Other behaviors can include driving rapidly on curving roads, or taking other risks with their life.

Some behaviors can be caused by addictions, such as sexual addictions designed to keep the individual hooked to the group. Other causes can be an unconscious desire to suicide, or to re-enact experiences of abuse due to guilt.

Chapter 13: Working with the Birth Mother

In most systems programmed with modern methods, birth mother trauma is a basic foundation for the programming. The internal birth mother is a prime programmed part, and will hold within her all programming scripts, put in with birth mother trauma.

What is birth mother trauma? While the methods will vary some, it involves incredible cruelty to the birth mother carrying the fetus, in order to increase the susceptibility to control.

Not every occultic group does this to their infants. But many groups, especially international groups, will do this in their programming labs. The zygotes are first created in petri dishes, with genetically enhanced material. The birth mothers are then taken to the programming labs, where they are told that they were “specially selected” to “carry a very special baby.” These are healthy, fit young women (ages 18 to 26, on average), who may have been bred for this purpose: to be an incubator for a genetically enhanced fetus. The birth mothers are excited, and shown the “joys” of having a wonderful baby by actors who pretend to be birth mothers who recently had their babies, and hold up the smiling, happy infants. They discuss how wonderful it is to be a birth mother, in order to set up the later betrayal.

The excited mother is implanted with the zygote, and for several days is treated like royalty: the best foods, wonderful treatment, the chance to stroll in a nearby garden, and to chat with the other expectant mothers. But within a week, the trauma begins. The birth mother will be strapped in a chair, and one of her digits (finger joint) cut off, because she “disobeyed.” Over the next few weeks, the birth mother’s life becomes a nightmare, as she is put through the following scenarios:

- Commanded to obey an order, such as to pick up a block, color in a circle, or other commands. Instant obedience is rewarded. She is then given a command that is impossible to obey (such as to climb a high wall beyond her ability), and with the infraction, is tortured, while the programmers tell her and the developing fetus, “disobedience brings pain, while obedience brings joy.”
- She is chained to a wall, and sleep deprived.
- She is brutally raped by people, by animals, by a false “jesus” as programming scripts for the fetus are played out.
- By the end of the sixth month, her toes, feet, fingers and hands will have been chopped off, as well as her nose, for “disobediences”. She is forced to eat food from a dog dish on the floor, and is treated terribly.
- By the end of the seventh month, she is almost unrecognizable as a human being, with

> her hair having been pulled out, numerous skinnings, her teeth pulled out, numerous rapes, being sent to "hell" for "punishment" (to install this in the fetus), her nose and ears chopped off, and basically only the torso is left. At this point, the birth mother's mind will have also gone, and she will be in a nearly catatonic state from the despair and torture.
>
> At this point, the fetus's primary programmers will step in, talking to the fetus, telling it things like "I love you" "I can't wait for you to be born", and other scripts to encourage bonding to these trainers. The fetus is experiencing the terror of abandonment by the birth mother in the womb (due to her trauma response), has already experienced numerous rejection traumas (the birth mother being told that the fetus is responsible for her pain as she is tortured, and her then screaming "get it out", "I hate you" or even attempting to beat her womb); this primes the fetus to bond extremely heavily to the primary programmers in the womb to escape the despair of rejection and abandonment.

It may seem incredible that the birth mother does not abort the embryo/fetus with the enormous amount of trauma, but the programming facilities use state-of-the-art technology (at least 50-75 years more advanced than that publicly known), to carefully monitor the vital signs of both the mother and fetus; and to administer medications that prevent contractions and aborting of the fetus.

Fetal Response to Birth Mother Traumas (Love/Hate)

In the traumas described above, the fetus will feel a deep split in the core between love for the birth mother (on whose life the fetus depends, a God-given and natural response for the one who carries the baby), and growing rage and hate towards her due to the rejections. This will cause a primary split in the fetus between parts that love the birth mother ("good babies" labeled so by the programmers and the fetus itself) and those who hate her and want to destroy her ("bad babies" labeled so by the fetus's guilt at feeling this way).

This creates the primary split along which the white and black systems will be created. The fetus cannot deal with and reconcile the emotional overwhelm of its mother being traumatized, and basically programmed to hate the fetus over the course of the pregnancy. This maternal rejection then creates the base foundation for the fetus bonding to the programmers (in desperation to survive emotionally) and being controlled by them.

Internally, the fetus will have created representations of the birth mother. One is the "fantasy mother" that is loving and nurturing, and asks the fetus to forgive it for rejecting it (this is overlaid with VRs over the years) and represents a "good birth mother" to the fetus. The other is a punishing, vengeful, rejecting birth mother who wants to destroy the fetus. This creates the base for omega and other self-destruct programming, since it ties to the core and core splits as a primary trauma.

Finally, the birth mother will be internalized by the fetus (with demonic help) as a victim or torture and brutality, that needs to be "rescued" by the fetus (in a manner similar to setups in which the fetus is told that the birth mother will be "punished less" if the fetus will agree to take some of the pain; the fetus does, and is shocked or hurt, then praised for doing so. This is the base for epsilon, or pain-holding programming.

The template for every major program is installed in the womb in the developing fetus. Because the fetus has no contact with external reality other than the words the programmers use during scripts, there is little "reality check" to the programming sequences, and the fetus will hold the programming using the "magical thinking" that infants often use. There does not have to be any connection to reality in the programming installed prenatally, since there is no external reality to contradict it. This is the goal; to embed lies in the subconscious before the infant is ever born, and to construct a whole paradigm of belief regarding the world during this time.

Birth Trauma and Delusion

Once the infant is born, the birth mother is immediately killed. The infant is then told "you killed her." Because of the fetal rage at rejection by the birth mother, and the desire to destroy her (enhanced by demons the fetus accepts), the infant believes this lie; after all, part of the infant *did* want her to die.

The internal birth mother is kept intact, as a core controller. This is one of the first delusions: the belief that the birth mother never died, which resolves the subconscious pain and guilt and trauma related to the birth death. This delusion is kept intact using VRs of the birth mother (who was filmed throughout the pregnancy), who alternates being loving and nurturing; or accusing and angry. If the infant obeys the programmers, the birth mother is "happy" and is "not punished" inside; if the infant disobeys, she becomes angry and punishing internally.

When the survivor attempts to leave the cult group, and heal, the group will first attempt to trigger this programming with subliminals of an angry birth mother, or of a birth mother destroying her fetus (causing the internal birth mother to "turn" on the internal fetal parts and attempt to destroy them, in omega programming).

If this does not work, then the group will often find a "body double" of the birth mother, and use this individual to attempt to access the survivor. Due to the unhealed prenatal traumas, the survivor may be susceptible to this access until they have consciously resolved the internal emotional pain, guilt and rage, and the deep abandonment wounds caused by the rejection in the womb.

Birth mother programming is a core level program. While the birth mother internally is not the core, she will sit next to the core, "protecting" her from the realization that the real birth mother is dead (the core does not realize this, due to delusion and the demonic). To heal this level of trauma requires loving, prayerful support, and the chance for the survivor to process the painful emotions associated with the prenatal traumas.

Only the Christian (true) God can heal this level of trauma, which is why prayer, fasting (if there are no medical contraindications) and nurturing support are needed for healing. Fetal parts may come out literally thrashing in anger and pain about their traumas and rejection, and may need to know that they are loveable and loved. Fetuses often "hum" with rage or intense emotions internally, and may come out humming or making other preverbal noises. At first, they may not be able to communicate directly, but will need to communicate through a communicator part.

The internal birth mother will be extremely wounded, extremely demonized (as the fetal parts are, too), and will need love, support and prayer. Over time, as she comes to faith in the real Jesus, she can heal. She will need to process her own feelings of rage towards the programmers, towards God (who she was taught to blame, since He didn't stop the abuse), and the fetal parts inside (who hurt her in VRs designed to increase the system hostility and splits between the birth mother and the fetuses.

Love heals and these parts will need the modeling of what real love looks like, since they have never experienced it themselves. If they are to want to know the Christian God, they will need a safe person who can communicate what His love is like, not in words, but in actions. Gentle grounding, spending time talking and listening to the parts, and other demonstrations of love will mean much more than "Christian lectures" or a gospel presentation. These parts will be quick to embrace Christianity once they experience real Christian love; otherwise, they will stay hidden inside – and make the survivor vulnerable to access.

Core level work cannot be done without loving support. The survivor was hurt horrendously in the womb, and cannot simply fix "themselves" (how they wish they could!). This is a tough journey to help someone with, but is well worth it as the survivor and the core parts begin to "get it" and really heal.

Chapter 14: Working with the Core

Most people who enter therapy for ritual abuse and mind control are looking for relief from their pain: the emotional, physical and spiritual pain that has driven their life since before conscious memory. They may wonder why "it's taking so long" or why they often must battle to undo programming. Finally, near the end of the journey, it starts to all make sense, when they meet the core and the core system.

This is where the most deeply guarded secrets, beliefs and loves are kept. The survivor who "really wants to know" their entire life history, will find this area deeply guarded – because they **wanted** to hide from themselves this knowledge. For an occultic system, the deepest love (yes, love) and loyalty to Satan and his son (the "antichrist" but called "he who has come", "the light of the world" and other names by these groups) resides. The survivor will find at core level the conflicts that have driven the rest of the system, and impeded healing.

This realization can feel overwhelming, unless there is adequate support in place. To learn how truly dedicated one has been to evil, and the amount of rage and pain the survivor holds towards God and the universe is difficult, to put it mildly. On top of this is the guilt as the survivor not only hears about, but knows and recalls what she/he did to others in that state of pain, over the years as a cult member. The individual doing core work needs a supportive other, including God and prayerful friends, to help pull them through this part of the journey, because the emotions are deep.

Core Trauma and Bonding

The core is the primary controller for the other systems, even if the programming is "non-hierarchical" inside. This young (often aged two) part will run the show, but is kept very young and extremely bonded to Satan. This is accomplished through numerous setups, with a classic one (developed by Mengele) in which the birth mother and fetus are tortured together. The birth mother is told to "pray to God" for help and to make the torture stop. Both she and the fetus scream out to God together – and the pain is made worse.

This creates a tremendous amount of rage towards God in the fetus, who cannot understand why God seemingly did not answer this scream for help in the womb. In response, the fetus turns in anger away from God, and a demonic spirit (Satan or another spirit) enters into the heart of the fetus, promising to allow the fetus to grow big, powerful, and one day get revenge on God and mankind (who the core now hates because of the pain they have endured at the hands of human beings).

This, or a similar setup, is done in which the fetus chooses to turn away from the true God, and sets themselves up (with demonic "protection") as their own "rescuer" from the pain –

and is the basis for all later programming to hate God and men (including themselves), which lies in the core system. **All core programming in international occultic groups will cause the fetus to turn away from God, hate Him, and choose to rescue itself, with the help of the demonic**. This opens the doorway for demonic bonding (the real goal of core trauma and programming) during which the demonic promises the core that it will "take away the pain" if allowed in. The fetus agrees, and dissociation, deception and delusion enter in, including false beliefs about God (the demonic portrays Him as hateful and uncaring), and about the self (the fetus believes that it can "rescue" others by taking their pain, or becoming powerful through allowing demons in). The fetus will be strongly bonded to the demonic, and in many groups, the core and core system surrounding it will only be allowed to interact with demons, and not with human beings.

When the infant is born, and the core (and its system) are out, actors dressed as "demons" and "spiritual beings" with crystal eyes in the masks (to prevent bonding with the human) feed, care for, rock and bond with these parts of the infant. They will sing songs, and tell the infant core that they love her/him. As the infant gets bigger, and develops spiritual abilities, the actors are no longer needed, since the demonic will take the bonding memories the infant has, and begin doing the bonding activities. The infant will actually be lifted up and rocked by the demonic, and the core will believe that Satan (or another spirit) is the only being that truly loves him/her – or has ever loved him/her. The core will have a deep hatred of all humans, which is reinforced with numerous setups.

Anti-Mortal Programming

The fetus in the womb will be told that they are an "immortal spirit" that has been "trapped" in a human, or mortal body, by a cruel God who wanted them to feel the "pain of mortality". The fetus in most groups will have been put through a "seal of mortality" programming session, in which the womb is injected with a drug that causes incredible fetal pain (searing throughout), and both the fetus and mother scream in pain, while the programmers tell the fetus that they are experiencing "the pain of the mortal seal" that "seals" them into a mortal body.

The fetus vows to never re-experience this terrible emotional and physical pain and terror. A demon offers to "take the pain away" and the fetus agrees – giving the pain "away" to the demon, and dissociating from the physical body.

Due to this and other experiences (pain and trauma to the physical body) the fetus and later infant core and systems come to absolutely hate and loathe their "mortal" (lower, descended) body, and will attempt to dissociate. This creates a barrier between the core and lower systems, which the core views as "mortal" and requiring "ascension."

Because the core is programmed to stay inside (unless called out by "Satan") and to never interact with humans, there is very little real world experience to degrade the programming and beliefs of the core. Instead, the core is counseled by demons, and will often live inside within an internal Garden of Eden or similar structure, completely insulated from daily life, which the other parts live.

Yet the core will be quite aware if parts attempt to break their programming (which is viewed as unacceptable "descending") and will immediately call upon system controllers to punish parts attempting to heal.

Hatred of Mortals Programming

In most organized groups, the core will be programmed, along with the core system, to hate all mankind (hate all "mortals"). Satan (or a similar spirit) will pet her, woo her and tell her that she and he will live when all others are gone, soothing the core's terrible fear of abandonment. It is not unusual for the core to have a deep friendship with the demonic, which comes nightly to visit, provides counsel, and promises to "love her always". The core stays young (around age two or so) to please Satan, who has told her that he will not love her any more if she grows older.

The core will have absolutely no memory of the terrible abuse that this spirit exacts from other ("lower") systems, or will not care if she hears, since in her reality, it is "me and Satan" and the rest of the world does not matter.

The core will be programmed to absolutely hate mortal men, with setups in which during prenatal development, "mortals" come and torture her and the birth mother, laughing and raping, etc. As an infant, when the core is out, setups are done in which "mortals" give the infant bottles that cause searing pain and nausea; burn the infant, rape her, torture her, skin her, and tell her "this is what mortals like to do." They will pretend to attempt to "eat" the infant alive, causing great terror, until she is "rescued" by Satan in the setup.

After dozens of experiences like this, the infant core will scream if a human comes near, and calm down only when Satan comes and comforts him or her.

When a survivor is healing, and begins doing core work, it can help to realize that the supporters the survivor is working with may be the first human beings that he or she has ever interacted with (other than during a brief traumatic setup) in her life. The amount of fear and terror that may come forward can be intense; the core may have never seen human eyes looking at her kindly, and must work through this initial terror.

The core will be reluctant to come out, and with good reason. All of her interactions with human beings prior to this point have been intensely traumatic, and she must have time to "test the waters" and ensure that the outside support is safe. She is also deeply bonded to Satan, and will have intense grief and self-hatred at the thought of losing this love object if the survivor continues to heal. The anger and grief will often fuel internal self-punishment to prevent healing, until the core is able to receive enough information from the real world to choose to give up Satan and to allow others to care for her.

Core Controllers and Guardians

Around the core will be splits that are equally bonded to the demonic and with equal hatred of humans (or "mortals"). It is common for several initial splits to occur: the 4 princes of hell and the 7 generals of hell; along with 24 "elders". These surround the internal "Satan" who sits on a "throne" (note: this is also represented in other systems beneath the core system), and these represent core guardians/protectors. Their job is to ensure that the core and the internal Satan (punishing aspect) never fail; while the core bonds to Theo (the loving, "caring" aspect of Satan).

These parts inside have demonic attachments, and constantly perform sacrifices, offer hymns of praise, and stand guard to protect the core from outside influences; they also have sex with outside demons and the core to reinforce programming. The demonic sexual activity and rituals "recharges" the internal programs, and occurs daily.

As the survivor gets in touch with the memories, and the life history (which involves breaking agreements by the core to never share information with other systems and parts; and the parts and systems breaking those same agreements to never hear information from the core and the core system, including repentance from the rites, rituals, covenants, vows to demons and to trainers to never remember these things), emotions will start coming up. The survivor will have already dealt with a significant amount of anger, pain, guilt and terror over the years while doing healing work; but the core layer of these feelings can seem particularly intense due to the fact that the emotions are held by fetal parts attached to the core controllers and parts, and the core.

The deepest layers of rage (including feeling homicidal), despair (and feeling suicidal) and guilt (feeling completely cut off from any hope of God's forgiveness) as well as the feelings of rage against God will come up. Because this conflicts with the survivor's Christianity, these feelings can cause deep discomfort as they come forward; but they must be dealt with, since they have fueled the survivor's base programming their entire life. They are simply out in the open now, and do not surprise God (although their depth and intensity may surprise both the survivor and their supporter(s)).

Core despair can be difficult, and trigger extreme depression and suicidality. The despair of realizing that the core was "tricked' by Satan and the other demons, and that the whole life was built upon lies, can be devastating. This is not something that the person can work out with logic (i.e. "I shouldn't feel this way, because…" or "of course Satan tricks people, he's a liar").

While these things are true, the core and these parts need comfort, and healing attachments to overcome the betrayals and lies of a lifetime.

The core will also battle some extreme delusions as well that will impede healing until resolved. Even though the birth mother is usually killed at birth, the core will not realize or believe this, because there is an internal representation of the birth mother. This is very difficult for the core and the prime splits to deal with, and can cause tremendous pain and grieving. The fetal parts will want to deny that she is dead, and it takes time for these parts to realize the truth.

The primary core terror is abandonment. This is triggered in the fetus by the birth mother losing her mind due to the months of torture she underwent; when her mind goes and withdraws from the fetus, the fetus feels incredible terror. To deal with the terror, the fetus agrees to accept a demon that represents the birth mother; this is a prime dissociation that keeps the whole dissociative reality going inside (see the chapter on the "birth mother" for more information).

Working with the core requires helping the survivor work through this terror of being all alone in the world. This can be accomplished by:

- Praying with (and for) the survivor and helping the core and core splits realize how much the Christian (true) God loves them. This is the primary source of healing, since the original wound was turning away in rage and pain from God and His love. Once the core becomes a Christian, the system can began making better choices. But realize that the core will need discipleship: like any abused child, the core will not at first understand how Christians act, or why talking with demons is unsafe. Patience and role modeling love can help tremendously.

- Loving the survivor, with nurturing, sitting quietly with them in their grief; letting them vent their pain and rage, and not judging them for the process or feelings they are having. Synchronizing with another's pain, especially at this level, can be difficult, and supporters and the survivor will need to build in breaks and joy building to help offset the tremendously draining emotional work required

- Working on building real life, good experiences for the core and the core system, especially with human beings. Whether having a good cup of coffee with core controllers and enjoying a beautiful morning; or holding the hand of a young part that has only experienced torture from humans and showing them that not all humans hurt, this kind of new information will help the whole system heal.

Chapter 15: Building Joy

In order to heal, the survivor cannot simply do trauma work and not have times of experiencing refreshment or joy. Attempting to do a lot of inside work without breaks and joy building will cause burnout, because the survivor will simply not have any "good life" to heal towards. They will become good at "healing" but not at relating to others, or self nurture, and so will bring emotionally unhealed parts together – and continue to distance from caring support. They will also be unable to nurture others in their healing journey, if they have not themselves received safe support and seen caring modeled for them.

So, how does a person working on intense emotions and dealing with terrible trauma build joy, when simply getting out of bed in the morning may seem like a major achievement? Or when depression that feels completely overwhelming hits? This is when the person may need to pace the joy building, and use whatever tools work for them in that moment.

Receiving a hug can build joy on the hardest days. Sharing a prayer request, and seeing the caring in another's eyes can build joy.

Soaking in prayer, and spending time in worship (which is a true "sacrifice of praise" on the hardest days) can build joy and hope. God's love never fails, and He can provide the hope that keeps the individual going on the worst days, when the demonic tries to whisper "you'll never heal, you'll always feel this way." This is a lie, and the victory comes not just from commanding the demonic to leave, but then experiencing the love of God, His comfort, and His reassurances that healing is possible –and is happening. The survivor may need to hear these truths frequently from supporters as well, even daily. The worship time can include listening to uplifting music, and even dance. One of the most meaningful moments in my healing journey came during a time when I was mourning the loss of my husband and adult children, due to my choice to stop all contact since they were all still cult active. As I lay on my bed crying, I put on a worship CD, and began through my tears to worship the LORD, who I knew does love me. I stood to dance. At that moment, I felt the true Jesus at my side, asking "May I have this dance?" He held me in His arms, and we danced together, and I experienced His wonderful love. I have never forgotten this experience and the hope and encouragement it brought me.

Music is especially healing because it ministers to the right brain, where feelings are stored. It can enter in, and bring truth into the emotional parts of the brain, which is why it is important to carefully guard the type of music (or any entertainment) listened to.

Fun activities, such as going to a park, walking on a beach, gardening, flying a kite, playing with a pet, or telling silly jokes are also joy building. Some people enjoy painting and writing, but this should be balanced with "together time" with other people, since having fun is even more so with a friend. Hiking is good for both the body and emotions, as are boating, swimming and other physical activities. One fun activity is rolling down a hill of grass (check for rocks, sticks or doggie deposits first!), or rolling on the floor and humming (an exercise used for brain healing) which usually causes lots of giggling in those who do it. Make a list of the things you really enjoy doing, both quiet and active, and have it available to consider on days when you need to build joy and take a break.

About TV

It can be easy to simply want to vegetate in front of the TV on emotionally tough days, but this should not be your primary relaxation for several reasons. Vegetating is not physically healthy, and being sedentary can increase depression. In addition, TV feeds subliminals constantly, reinforcing programming to welcome Alexis (the calm voice that will help with crowd control) and the New World Order (in fact, the subliminals are part of Project Alexis, or the mind control techniques being used to prepare the general population for the advent of their occultic ruler). All videos, CDs, computer games and other digital media now have subliminals embedded, that are fed at 0.03 microseconds. They are undetectable with ordinary equipment (you can't "stop the video and see the subliminal, because the images will be blurred and fade into the background, and are only visible when the media is moving). The equipment required to view these subliminals costs hundreds of thousands of dollars, which most people do not own.

Pray about your TV viewing, and about how much is appropriate. It can make a real difference in how you feel, whether you are a survivor or not. It is amazing how desensitized our population has become to sex, violence and the occult due to this mind control technology that sits in everyone's living room.

Spending time being nurtured, and nurturing others is joy building. Letting a friend give you a hug, getting a foot rub, or other physical touch (that is nonsexual, with a safe person) is very healing. If you know a Christian massage therapist and can afford it, this is a good way to have safe touch, which is healing. Be aware that any physical contact, no matter how safe, can bring up powerful emotions due to the abuse; this is a chance to work on these issues and feelings.

Taking care of a pet, or helping care for a friend's child, or other ways of giving can also be joy building. Pets love unconditionally, and do require love, attention and care. Be prayerful, and be in a place financially and emotionally to take on this care before getting one.

Praying for others can be joy building. As you minister to others, and intercede, you also experience healing.

Volunteering (at a safe place) is joy building and can help build your personal gifts in a new setting. While your life may have revolved around "doing" for the cult, with talents and skills hijacked by the demonic, this is now a chance to use your abilities, surrendered to God, to help others. Most people who have survived programming by an organized group will have wonderful talents, but may feel ashamed of them. They may wonder, "What kind of life can an ex-assassin have?" or "How can a former cult programmer have a good life in the day-to-day world?" or "What does a former cult geneticist do?" These are understandable questions, but each person will have abilities and talents used in doing those jobs, that can be used to help others once the memories and traumas are worked through. A person may be physically strong who had lots of military training, and so can help cut trees and grass, shovel snow and do repairs for an elderly person.

A person who is highly organized can use this skill to help in a ministry office, or help clean houses for others. A person who enjoys plants can grow a garden, and share the produce with others in need. A person with a background in behavioral sciences can use the skills of being a good listener to help others. This is why it is important to pray, and ask God to show you what your true talents and gifts are, and how to start using them when the time is right.

Giving to others is one of the most joy-building activities possible. It helps to bring meaning to the person coming out of a life of pain, and helps the individual to see that they have real value outside of the group. One caution: it is important to not get into a "works" mentality, which is common when first leaving a group that literally works its members to exhaustion. It is okay to allow yourself a season of rest as you heal, and then to very gradually begin giving. At first, giving may simply be tithing to your church, until there is enough healing to give in other, nonfinancial ways.

Being with Others

It is difficult to heal alone. I have known survivors who attempted to do most of the healing journey "solo" and in most cases, they were either accessed (because the loneliness pulled cult loyal parts back), or they integrated, but never healed relationally. They accomplished the goal of staying away from the cult, but were walking wounded since they never received the nurture and support needed for full emotional health after doing the internal work.

Some survivors may have no other choice, since there is simply no safe support where they live, and they are unable to leave due to finances. There is also a severe shortage of safe houses (the only one I was in was the house of a friend from church, who was the only non-cult friend I had; she kindly allowed me to stay with her during part of my healing journey). I personally do not know of any "safe houses" that are publicly known, and neither do most of the churches and ministries I have contacted over the years.

This is why building safe support is a prayerful journey. Who do your parts tell you is safe? They will know who is unsafe, and you should listen to them. If you feel uneasy around someone, ask inside why. If you feel deep rage towards someone, and have no conscious idea of why, ask inside parts.

Building support might involve asking yourself about Bible Study or church members, who to approach, and how, and how much to share. You should be very cautious if you feel an "instant connection" with someone, since this is often programmed in; you will likely feel most comfortable with people from a similar background as yours, so it is important to check inside regarding what types of interactions you are having, and whether there are any "red flags" that parts see.

In general, you should be the one to approach people for support, and not the other way around. In my personal healing journey, every time someone approached me offering to "help" it was a setup. The safe people I found were because I developed friendships slowly, over time (as in several years), parts watched and evaluated the interactions I had, and decided that they were probably okay.

There are numerous people programmed to be therapists and to offer support to survivors, who are actually mind controlled and unaware. This is why the survivor needs to be cautious when approaching others for support. I have personally seen or lived the following situations:

- A caring survivor who offered to be friends and support (they were cult active)
- A husband who drove me to therapy, was very supportive of healing, and wanted to do "everything possible to help her heal" (he was my handler)
- Ministries that supposedly help survivors that were actually sexually abusing people and verbally berating them
- The offer to stay in a house from a survivor, recommended to me by a large church, who ended up accessing me
- Four therapists who were survivors of mind control (including two who disclosed their own memories of severe abuse and losing time to me, and said "This is normal, don't worry if it happens," and another who kept saying "I feel like I'm going down a rabbit hole" when I shared memories with her. I stopped seeing them).

There are also safe people and ministries out there, and it is important to carefully pray, ask God for wisdom and discernment, before you approach them for support.

Most large churches are infiltrated – but this does not negate the good, sincere, non-cult members of the church who can be good support. Many small churches are also infiltrated as well, so it takes prayer and discernment to know who to reach out to. Prayer ministry at a church can be wonderful, but again, be careful who you allow to "lay hands" on you. I have a somewhat humorous (now) story regarding this. I went for several months to stay in an area where a large mega-church ministry is located, with lots of revival. I wanted healing, and a closer walk with God.

I went with a safe support person to look for housing. The house I had originally arranged to live in did not work out, so my supporter and I prayed for a roommate. Suddenly, a woman sitting next to us said, “Oh, do you need a place to live? I am looking for a roommate”. It seemed like a “miracle”, an answer to prayer. My supporter and I had dinner with her, I felt oh, so comfortable with the woman right away. She was a minister’s wife (he had passed away) and she was in fulltime ministry. But I also started to feel extremely uneasy, especially as her story unfolded; her father had committed suicide, and she herself had some unusual emotional issues. I told my supporter that I believed this woman was unsafe, especially when I learned that she and the other woman who would be living there called another woman who was to room with them, telling her that she couldn’t. In other words, the “we need a roommate” was a manufactured story! My supporter did not believe me and left town. The minute she left, the roommates began accessing and threatening me.

I fled the house and went into a women’s shelter for safety. The next weekend, I saw my former “roommate” in a prayer walk; she immediately came walking towards me, saying, “I want to lay hands on you and impart the Spirit to you!” I began walking away, faster and faster, until she was almost literally running after me. I left the room, and sat next to two people I knew, saying, “I don’t want her to come near me.”

This is an example of situations that can occur, when those in “ministry” are still unhealed and unaware. I did disclose to church leadership about the situation (which is biblical), and chose to leave that area of the country. I did later find true safe support in another state.

Chapter 16: Relating to Support People

For many survivors, it is difficult to build supportive relationships, and relate to people outside of the cult group they were born into. This is true for various reasons. For instance, most survivors of modern mind control by international groups were born into facilities, heavily programmed in the womb and throughout childhood, lived in a barracks-type setting with their age mates (whom they consider brothers and sisters), and bonded to trainers as their primary parental figures. They were allowed to live in families in various nations for only a few weeks a year (and in the past ten years, according to some survivor reports, in some facilities, there is NO presentation programming at all; the presentation itself is completely loyal to the New World Order and their Leader).

Imagine someone raised like this leaving a group, and attempting to live in a “normal” family setting. Instead of going on missions (to assassinate someone), or working in a programming facility or genetics lab, or overseeing the human trafficking trade in a third world nation, which has been 90 percent of their reality prior to leaving the group, the survivor is now asked to go to Bible Studies, smile and “act Christian” in a world that has almost no comprehension of what they have been through (and often makes evident they have no desire to learn about).

It is difficult, to say the least. The skills needed to run missions or labs are very different from those needed to make – and keep – long-lasting, supportive friendships. Issues come up, and the survivor must attempt to learn to live in a society that is as unfamiliar to them as possible. The survivor will be used to eating in group settings or military camps; with others who make coarse jokes and survive the harsh reality with dark humor and bitter cynicism.

While many survivors can be “charming” while on missions, deep down they are not really “warm and fuzzy” people that churches and supporters naturally are drawn to. They are tough, even bitter realists, and are clearly aware of the evil side of humanity. Yet, they are also deeply loyal to and loving of those few individuals they come to trust.

Common Issues with Support Relationships

Many times, those who support survivors of mind control will have problems understanding the survivor, since the world they were raised in is literally so different than normal society. The support person will want to understand, but the relatively insulated world of most support people will not have prepared them adequately for confronting the reality of the evil and brutality that most individuals coming out of mind controlled groups have survived.

It is very common for supporters to wonder why it is “taking so long” for the survivor to heal, and many have very unrealistic expectations of healing. Healing from a lifetime of sophisticated mind control will usually take years (as in five, six, seven or more) to heal; if the survivor is accessed, then the time required for healing increases.

There are no "quick fixes" for survivor issues; but many ministries and supporters want to "hurry along" the process before the survivor is ready. This does survivors a disservice; and those who choose to minister to survivors should be prepared to count the cost, and to be there for the "long haul". It is extremely damaging to abandon survivors in the midst of their healing; this is literally their "worst fear" realized. If you become unable to continue providing support, you should have backup people in place, who can step in and offer the help needed in a crisis.

Survivors will often sabotage their support relationships (see chapter on "Working With Cult Loyal Parts" for more information). They may become hostile, angry and forget to thank you for helping them break free of the cult during the time they are in intense pain and their systems are punishing the crud out of them for trying to leave. The survivor may become extremely irritable, will argue with you, or do everything possible to test the relationship, because they have never been allowed to be honest with someone before in their life and not be abused.

These behaviors are actually a sign that the survivor is beginning to trust the supporter, and the cult loyal and hostile parts are coming out, and "checking things out." But many supporters do not recognize this fact, or are emotionally immature themselves, and may respond back with anger, belittling or abandonment. They may attempt to "preach at" the survivor, instead of loving them. The supporter may ask emotionally devastating questions such as "Where is your faith? Why aren't you healing yet?" when the survivor is trying their best to heal as quickly as possible.

There may be a push for a mass deliverance and "quick integration" in someone who is still early in their healing journey. This will backfire, since the survivor deep down will know that they have not resolved their issues with God, man, or themselves yet, and may feel despair at their inability to "perform" in a Christian manner.

No one pressures the survivor to heal more than the survivor themselves. They need support, not criticism or misunderstanding in the process of healing.

Preventing Support Burnout

Support burnout is an issue for those who help survivors of ritual abuse and mind control. Support means walking with people who are deeply traumatized; operate at a very young level of maturity initially, and who require nurturing and understanding. They also need strong accountability until their systems are inaccessible. These needs can cause burnout in supporters, who may resent the time and effort that helping a survivor requires.

The ideal is for the survivor to have a safe support team that can take turns helping the survivor, which includes a therapist skilled in working with mind control and abuse issues. In reality, this ideal does not exist. The survivor will have to work hard at developing multiple areas of support, to prevent burning out the people who are helping them in their journey.

Avoiding the "Scary" Label

Many churches are frightened about helping survivors of ritual abuse or mind control. The media has done a pretty thorough job of portraying mind control survivors as borderline sociopaths; killers; or crazy people seeking attention, none of which are true. Movies depict the demonic as scary and powerful, with graphic scenes of attacks on "Christians" which have nothing to do with our real authority in Christ. I have literally had Satan appear in the room, and he had to leave quietly with a simple command in Jesus's name; he has no authority at all when a believer stops giving it to him (out of fear or ignorance).

The survivor needs to learn how and when to disclose to their church about their background. In some cases, the right answer may be "never" since many churches are completely untaught regarding how to help survivors. In most cases, the best choice is "slowly". I have seen survivors walk into churches and at the first service they have visited, gone forward to the prayer team and pastors (who are strangers) and announce they are survivors of ritual abuse. In most cases, this does not allow the chance to develop relationship, and instead, the survivor gets labeled negatively from the start.

This can be a form of self sabotage. It is much better to get to know the church and members, participate in Bible studies, and over time slowly share small portions of your background, such as sexual abuse. See how folks react to that. Over time, as they get to know you as a real person, who is willing to pray for them and give back, they may be more able to hear more about your past. In most churches, you the survivor will be the first teacher they have regarding ritual abuse and mind control, and it can be positive if you take time to develop relationships with those you teach.

Those who support survivors will often deal with cult threats, either directly (phone calls, etc.) or indirectly (warfare, messages relayed by the survivor). In most cases, these threats are not acted upon, for a reason: churches and supporters with a strong faith in God will have significant protection. I have heard from numerous cult members who shared that they were unable to kill someone, or fulfill a mission to sabotage a ministry, due to the strong angelic protection that blocked them.

When threats come, give them to God, who can handle it. He is bigger and more powerful than the demonic; and His protection will raise a mighty testimony that can have a "ripple effect" in the spiritual world and impact many for Christ. Satan can threaten all he wants to, but in the end, God wins, every time.

Getting Support for the Supporters

Supporters need support themselves, someone safe they can vent to, ask questions, and help them realize they are not alone in what they are doing. At the very least, every supporter should have a strong church covering, for the spiritual protection this provides, and prayer support for their ministry to survivors. When the going gets tough, the tough ask for prayer support, which can literally "turn the tide" during intense spiritual warfare. Anyone supporting survivors should have their pastor and prayer teams on speed dial on their phones.

Supporters also need spiritually mature mentors they can talk to and get advice about the ups and downs of their ministering to a wounded individual. A mature therapist, prayer team leader, or spiritual parent would be good individuals for this, especially if they also have experience in providing support to traumatized people. Getting a cup of coffee with a mentor, and simply being heard and supported, can go a long way towards preventing burnout. **It is never a good idea to try and support survivors of ritual abuse and mind control "solo"**: at best, the individual burns out, and at worst, may get pulled down or incapacitated spiritually and emotionally. Work with others, and under spiritual authority and accountability; this is a biblical model that is safest.

Another problem with working solo is that the amount of emotional enmeshment that can occur will set the supporter up for sexual seduction. This is more common than most people realize, and can be very damaging for both the supporter and survivor. I have known of marriages broken up and ministries damaged for this very reason.

Chapter 17: Why People Don't Heal

Many, if not all, survivors want to heal. They enter into therapy, begin the hard work, pray, spend their money on therapy and books, journal, join online support groups and "do all the right things." Yet, the survivors struggle. Healing doesn't happen as quickly as they had hoped. Healing is a lot harder than they thought it would be. And some choose to walk away from healing, or stay caught in a perpetual cycle of pain without full healing or integration.

Why is this? Is it lack of desire, or faith, on the part of the survivor? In most cases, no. Then why is it that some people appear not to heal, or to heal very slowly?

There can be many reasons for this apparent lack of progress. In this chapter, I will address some of the major ones, but this is not meant to be comprehensive.

Fear is the number one reason that healing can take so long. This includes the lifelong fear of healing installed with numerous painful setups, in which catastrophic consequences occur if the survivor attempts to break their own programming. This fear can be for the survivor's safety, but most often is for the continued safety of loved ones.

Every survivor of a group that employs modern mind control techniques will have been programmed to protect their closest loves ones, or double binds. Even if they are willing to die to get free, they may not be able to watch those they love die in the process. And these groups will ruthlessly exploit this fear, causing the survivor to attempt to be a "messiah" and "rescue" loved ones by returning to the group, or committing suicide.

Access is the number one cause of a system shutdown, or failure of parts to talk to the survivor who is trying to leave a cult group. As mentioned in the first chapter, this access can include physical access, subliminals, phone texts or messages, videos online, or spiritual access. All it takes is a video (sent by smartphone) of a loved one begging the survivor to save them, or of a torture session with the loved one, for the parts that were formerly working hard in therapy and journaling to stop trying to heal.

Parts may be programmed to believe that they can "never heal" and it is useless to even attempt to do so, in vicious programming loops meant to discourage the survivor. Healing does take time, since the survivor will have numerous parts and years of constant torture, abuse and programming to heal from, with the messages and beliefs embedded in various systems. Working through all the layers and levels can be tiring, and some individuals choose not to pay this price.

A huge cause of failure to heal is the lack of safety and safe support for the survivor. This is the greatest lack of all, since without safety, the survivor will continue to be accessed, reprogrammed and will be unable to dismantle their own programming. If there was more safe, knowledgeable support available for survivors, more survivors would heal. But because most churches lack the knowledge base or willingness to walk with survivors, and offer the emotional support required, many times survivors choose not to take the huge risks associated with healing (the risk of physical torture, or the death of loved ones) in return for weak or nonexistent safety or support.

This is the greatest need for survivors, and the one that is most often unmet. I have prayed for numerous survivors, who have asked me, "Do you know of any safe housing I can go to?" (I do not), or who have asked, "Where do I find safety?" This is a heartbreaking question, and the only response I can give is "Ask God for a miracle; to raise up safety for you where you are, to help you find a safe place to stay." It truly is a miracle when a non-dissociative, non-programmed individual chooses to help survivors. I have known a few in my own life and journey, and they are precious, wonderful and strong people indeed. Not everyone is willing to offer the emotional support, deal with the warfare and provide the prayers that survivors require. But each one that I have known was tremendously blessed by God for what they did.

Some survivors fail to heal because they have a weak walk with God. They may never have had discipleship or support from Christians who can show them the love of God. Their systems may be heavily programmed to reject God, or to embrace a false form of Christianity. I personally believe that only the true God of Christianity can heal a survivor who has lived a lifetime of Occultic abuse and mind control programming. Only He can provide the support, caring and unending love needed, and the forgiveness for what can seem to be an overwhelming amount of evil deeds committed.

I personally believe that we are very close to the "end times" of Revelations, and that the Occultic messiah (or antichrist) is alive. We live in times of great darkness, but also of great revival and breakthroughs. The church is being called to bring revival to the world, and in the process, to help the prisoners break their chains. Satan's army is already in place, awaiting the orders to march. Is the church prepared to help those members of that army that want to break free? The need is much greater than the resources, and this should become a prayer point for every church: to help those fleeing the kingdom of darkness, and its terrible oppression know the love of God and the breakthroughs that Jesus, the true Messiah, can bring.

I have called my ministry Mizpah, or the point of breakthrough and a strong tower for the LORD, for a reason: I want to see churches become part of the breakthrough. Satan is not as powerful as he would like mankind to believe, and I believe the LORD is calling Christians to war. Warfare is not "optional" in these days; to do nothing in these times is to agree with the enemy's agenda.

If you are called to help survivors, pray and get training to do so. If you are not, pray for them and their supporters. Pray that God’s will is done on earth, as it is in heaven, and that He will raise up a mighty testimony to His goodness in the lives of the survivors you support or pray for. Heaven is watching, and waiting, to see what the church’s response to this need is. My prayer is that you will respond, and become part of what is one of the most wonderful ministries possible: sharing the love of God with wounded souls who have never known what real Christianity looks like. May God bless you for reading this book, and caring for those wounded by Satan’s worst blows; and for being part of the healing and restoration process.

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

Infant Programming

Tags: healing (3), Mengele, mind control (3), programming (3), ritual abuse (3), SRA (2)

Infant Programming

Mengele's Research

Josef Mengele is considered "the father of modern programming" due to the information and methods that he developed during his infamous end-point experiments on infants, young children and adults inside the Nazi death camps.

Before Mengele, most serious programming was begun at the age of 18 months to two years old, since behaviorists believed that the infant brain was too immature to hold programming or make use of it before that age. Mengele proved with his well-kept records based upon unutterably cruel research done on infants that **the most effective programming was done in infancy and in the womb;** that infant programming automatically enters into the subconscious and deeper brain, and that the most effective time to create personality splits is during the first six weeks of life. He also proved that infants can see, understand and respond to programming cues and images at this time in life, and can be taught to organize the splits based upon these cues.

An infant can much more easily internalize an external object than an older child, since the infant is basically a "tabula rasa" (the normal early infant state), and the brain is at its peak ability to absorb and process information during the first days of life.

The information that Mengele obtained was combined with data from other behaviorists, including attachment theory, to create programming that is considered "unbreakable." After the second world war, Mengele was often flown to Europe to program infants. He left his personal stamp on many infants and young children programmed by during this time. He was also hired out at times (for an exorbitant fee) to other organizations, but his primary post-war work was continuing his research and programming international occultic agents from infancy.

Mengele ran an infamous (within the occultic world) research center ("the institute") where he employed the top trainers within the 12 societies, who continued his research under his (brutal) supervision on end point trauma (trauma that takes the subject to physical or psychological death) and other traumas, and the effect on the human psyche. The volumes and volumes of carefully documented research data are still held within occultic training libraries, and have been replicated and shared throughout the world. The research that he began is still ongoing, as the search for better, “unbreakable” methods of programming continues. One of the largest research centers for experimental programming is on the West Coast of the United States; the large research facility is underground, and is combined with sophisticated milab (military laboratory) research.

1. **Infant Programming**

When an infant is born within an international occultic group, it has already undergone significant programming within the womb. Immediately after conception and implantation of the genetically altered embryo (more on genetic research will be discussed later), the oracles place their hands on the womb of the expectant mother, to determine whether or not the embryo should be allowed to live. If yes, the embryo is dedicated to a demonic entity, and continues to grow.

By four months of gestation, early brain waves (delta waves) begin to appear in the fetal brain, and with it, some degree of consciousness. At this time, a primary trauma will often be intentionally engineered, to create the first split. Often, the mother and fetus will be injected in utero with an agent that causes extreme pain, but does not cause labor. The fetus experiences extreme terror, excruciating pain, and will hear the mother screaming “Get it out!” regarding the fetus that appears to be causing her the intense pain in her womb.

This is a primary rejection trauma, and the pain and rejection combined will cause a core personality split. This split is in a deep delta (unconscious) brain state, and the programming begins in earnest immediately afterwards. Headphones are placed on the womb, and for hours, the young fetal splits are exposed to recordings regarding their identity, their wants, their beliefs, and their role in the new world order. This programming occurs during the 16th week of gestation onwards, and the information in the recordings is recorded at the deepest unconscious levels before the infant is ever born.

Secondary, tertiary and other traumas will also occur within the womb, with spiritual ceremonies that dedicate these intra-utero splits to different demonic entities. Before the infant draws his or her first breath, they will have the foundational core splits, their beliefs and identities firmly in place.

These traumas can include the use of electromagnetic waves to cause extreme pain in the fetus; fetal surgery; breaking the arm of the fetus; electroshock, flatlining the mother (to punish the fetus, who is blamed for the mother’s “death” and resultant spiritual pain/anxiety) and other traumas. The mother is carefully monitored with medical intervention to prevent abortion or premature labor, which is the body’s natural response to these types of traumas.

The demonic is used to keep the splits separate, since in nature, the splits would try to rejoin automatically. The demonic creates a deep feeling of terror and re-experiencing of the primary traumas should the prenatal psyche attempt to join together.

Birth Trauma

Upon birth, an infant that is to be used by the group undergoes a very specific trauma. As soon as the infant is born, a group member takes the infant and begins to smother it to death. The infant is asked spiritually, “Do you want to live?” Behind the Father is satan, and the infant is aware within their spirit that if they answer, “Yes” that satan will enter them. This being is hideous and terrifying, and it takes a very strong will to live to respond affirmatively. If the infant responds “No” they are smothered to death. If yes, they are allowed to breathe, and with their first cries in the physical world, satan attaches to the core.

Nannies

When infants are very young, there are caretakers that perform physical care for the infant. These “nannies” or surrogate mothers take care of several infants at a time. While caretaking, they give bottles, rock the infant, and sing songs to them. These songs always contain programming embedded within them; they are songs about various spiritual (demonic) entities and praise to them, or of the joy of the coming order, or other messages. The goal is for the infant to associate caretaking and the relief of physical distress or abandoment feelings with love and loyalty to the order and the beings described. This is a terrible manipulation of an infant’s need to attach to a caregiver, since these early songs are also embedded within the subconscious of the infant.

Helping the survivor

Because the prenatal and birth traumas are so emotionally and spiritually devastating, they will often only come up fairly late in therapy if ever, after the survivor has received help for other later splits. These primary traumas cause intense feelings of grief, rejection and despair, and are often the prime traumas underlying suicide programming. The demonic terror that causes fear of coming together may affect all parts of the systems, causing a prime fear of remembering or coming together for all parts, at an unconscious level.

It takes an experienced prayer minister to help an individual through these types of trauma. The survivor will be understanding that their entire life, even in the womb, was planned and programmed out, and feel intense anger at the betrayal and manipulation it involves. They may direct this anger at God, wondering where He was when this happened; and they may wonder if any part of them was ever not “owned” by the group.

This is where scriptures regarding God’s love for individuals both before and during their creation in the womb can help; as well as praying and asking the Lord to show the survivor what He thought of them at conception. This is needed truth, to counteract a lifetime of being told and believing lies such as that the survivor was always the “Order’s”, since they will have no memories before the prime traumas.

Because the programming and messages are implanted at such a very deep, unconscious level, it can also help to use a digital recorder, and record very specific scriptures and truths to counteract the lies (i.e. “reprogramming” with truth). It may take a significant amount of time to bring truth to these core beliefs, and is one reason that controllers at higher levels in the system may seem so “resistant” to truth: they may have buried at the unconscious, fetal level, prime traumas and programming that counteract other truths brought in.

Some helpful scriptures can include:

Ps.139:13: "For you created my inmost being; you knit me together in my mother's womb."

This verse directly counteracts the lie that the cult "owned" the person from the beginning, and shows who truly gave them life and their individual characteristics, in spite of prenatal programming.

Psalm 51:6. "Yet you desired faithfulness even in the womb; you taught me wisdom in that secret place."

How does the Lord teach wisdom in the womb? Only He truly knows the answer. But He does minister even to the fetus in the womb, as is made clear in this verse. The programming messages are NOT the only things the fetus was aware of before birth.

Isaiah 44:2. "This is what the Lord says— he who made you, who formed you in the womb, and who will help you:Do not be afraid, Jacob, my servant, Jeshurun, whom I have chosen."

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

UHF F/O
BELIEVE

I COULD TELL YOU BUT THEN YOU WOULD HAVE TO BE DESTROYED BY ME

EMBLEMS FROM THE PENTAGON'S BLACK WORLD

TREVOR PAGLEN

"A glimpse of the Pentagon's dark world through a revealing lens – patches – the kind worn on military uniforms."
—William Broad, *The New York Times*

Praise for Trevor Paglen and I COULD TELL YOU …

“A fascinating set of shoulder patches designed for the Pentagon’s Black Ops programs.”

—Stephen Colbert, *The Colbert Report*

“A glimpse of [the Pentagon’s] dark world through a revealing lens—patches—the kind worn on military uniforms … The book offers not only clues into the nature of the secret programs, but also a glimpse of zealous male bonding among the presumed elite of the military-industrial complex. The patches often feel like fraternity pranks gone ballistic.”

—William Broad, *The New York Times*

“A fresh approach to secret government. It shows that these secret programs have their own culture, vocabulary and even sense of humor.”

—Steven Aftergood, The Federation of American Scientists

“Gives readers a peek into the shadows … Department of Defense spokesman Bob Mehal told *Newsweek* that it ‘would not be prudent to comment on what patches did or did not represent classified units.’ That’s OK. Some mysteries are more fun when they stay unsolved.”

—Karen Pinchin, *Newsweek*

“An impressive collection.”

—Justin Rood, ABC News

“An art book that presents peculiar shoulder patches created for the weird and top secret programs funded by the Pentagon’s black budget … an achievement.”

—Timothy Buckwalter, *San Francisco Chronicle*

“I was fascinated… [Paglen] has assembled about 40 colorful patch insignia from secret, military ‘black’ programs that are hardly ever discussed in public. He has plenty of regalia from the real denizens of Area 51.”

—Alex Beam, *The Boston Globe*

“Some of the worst crimes in the American landscape are hiding in plain sight, and nobody has ever pursued them more thoroughly or explained them more chillingly and engagingly than Trevor Paglen. What he is doing is important, fascinating, and groundbreaking.”

—Rebecca Solnit, author of *Wanderlust*

“The iconography of the United States military. Not the mainstream military, with its bars and ribbons and medals, but the secret or ‘black projects’ world, which may or may not involve contacting aliens, building undetectable spy aircraft, and experimenting with explosives that could make atomic bombs look like firecrackers. Here, mysterious characters and cryptic symbols hint at intrigue much deeper than rank, company, and unit.”

—*UTNE Reader*

“Of course, issuing patches for a covert operation sounds like a joke … but truth be told, these days everything is branded. Military symbols are frequently replete with heraldic imagery—some rooted in history, others based on contemporary popular arts that feature comic characters—but these enigmatic dark-op images, in some cases probably designed by the participants themselves, are more personal, and also more disturbing, than most.”

—Steven Heller, *The New York Times Book Review*

“Trevor Paglen gets into the black heart of America’s black sites. There is no better guide to this great American mystery. What goes on inside these bases will determine the future of warfare—and who we are—for the rest of the century.”

—Robert Baer, former case officer at the CIA and author of *See No Evil: The True Story of a Ground Soldier in the CIA’s War on Terrorism*

I COULD TELL YOU BUT THEN YOU WOULD HAVE TO BE DESTROYED BY ME

EMBLEMS FROM THE PENTAGON'S BLACK WORLD

TREVOR PAGLEN

MELVILLE HOUSE PUBLISHING
BROOKLYN, NEW YORK

Contents

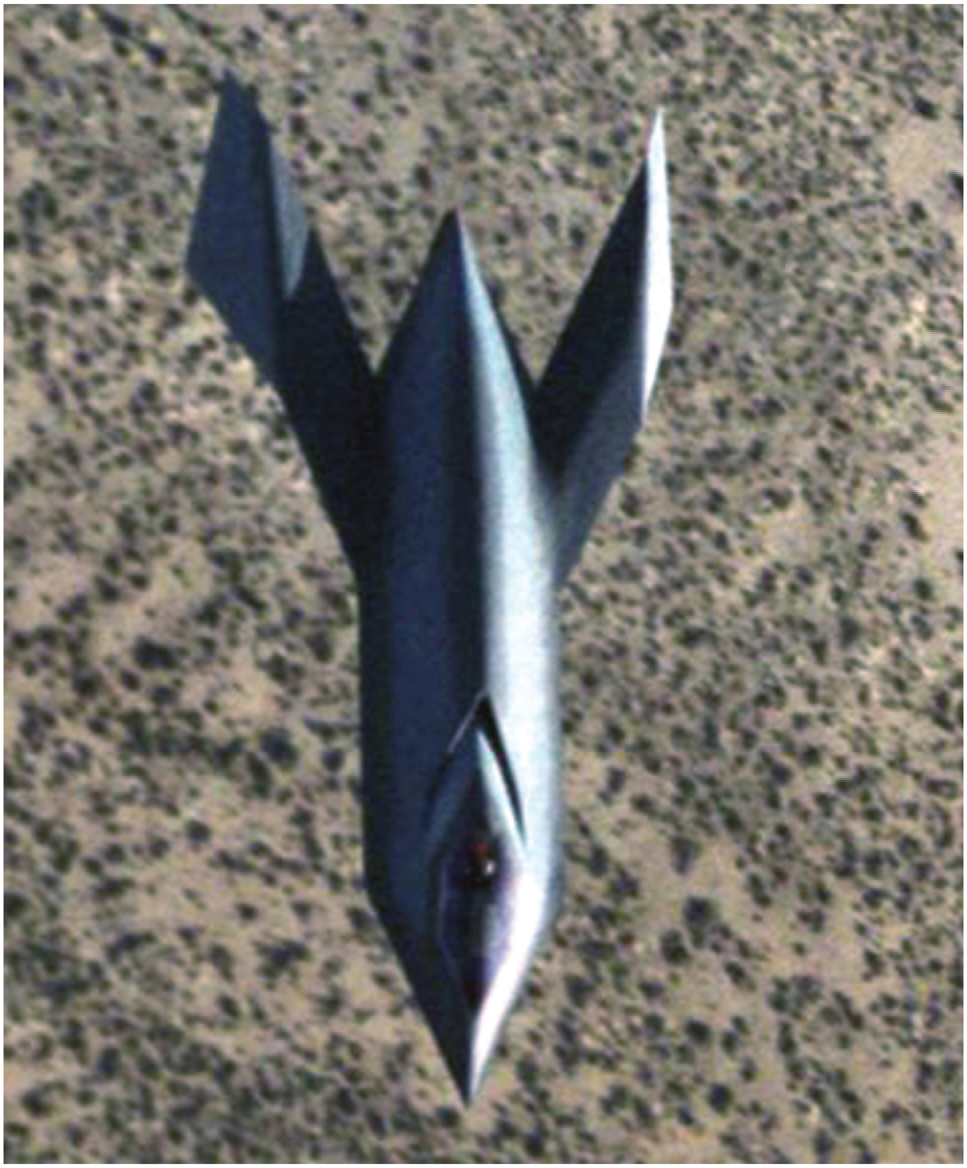
Cover
Title Page
Introduction

- The Patches
    - Special Projects Flight Test Squadron—Wizard
    - Special Projects Flight Test Squadron—Diamond
    - Rat 55
    - Bird of Prey
    - Ghost Squadron
    - G.H.O.S.T.
    - Penser Hors Limites
    - NKAWTG … Nobody
    - Janet Planes
    - A Lifetime of Silence Behind the Green Door
    - Freedomus Ao Anat Cosamus
    - Aerospace Medicine
    - Panther Den
    - Minotaur
    - Northrop Night Stalker II
    - Seekers Flight Test
    - USAF Special Projects
    - Alone and Unafraid
    - Alone and on the Prowl
    - Desert Prowler
    - Sneeky Pete

Global Engagement Military Spaceplane
Space Warfare Center Special Projects Division
If I Tell You I Have to Kill You
Triangulum
Vindicator
Lo Flight Test
Red Hats — More with Less
413th Flight Test Squadron
Project Zipper
Nutcrackers
Ew Directorate
EWAH
Killer Whale
TSSAM
Rangers
Range Patch
4477th Test & Evaluation Squadron — “Red Eagles”
57th Fighter Wing, Detachment 2
Semper En Obscurus
Rapid Capabilities Office
Directorate of Special Projects
Pete’s Dragon II
Don’t Ask — NOYFB
Goat Suckers
F3XP M.A.R.S.
Grim Reapers
Procul Este Profani — Special Projects
Classified Flight Test
Big Safari
Big Safari Program

National Reconnaissance Office “We Own the Night”
Alien Technology Exploitation Division
Catch a Falling Star
Pan
Sensor Hunter
UHF F/O
Unknown Dragon Patch
Nitwits Rubes Oafs, Setec Astronomy
OD-4 / DL and DX
Mission Operations — You Can Run …
AF Tencap Special Applications
NRO — Snakes
NRO — Dragon
Melior
Si Ego Certiorem

Acknowledgements
About the Author
Copyright



Boeing–McDonnell Douglas’ “Bird of Prey” advanced technology demonstrator was first flown in 1996. Its existence was declassified in 2002. *Credit: USAF*

INTRODUCTION

I began taking patches and military iconography seriously a number of years ago while visiting California's Antelope Valley in the westernmost region of the Mojave Desert. The Antelope Valley is the nerve center of the United States' military aviation industry and home to the Air Force Flight Test Center at Edwards Air Force Base. Made famous by the film *The Right Stuff*, Edwards is where Chuck Yeager broke the sound barrier in 1947, where Pete Knight pushed the experimental X-15 rocket plane towards Mach 7 twenty years later, and where the space shuttle *Columbia* landed after its first space flight in 1981. The Flight Test Center's motto *Ad Inexplorata* (Into the Unknown) speaks to the history of experimental aviation research that defines the region. On that particular day, I was visiting Peter Merlin, an "aerospace archaeologist" with a penchant for tracking down historic aircraft crash sites and a knowledgeable researcher of military aviation history. One of Merlin's particular areas of expertise is the history of "black" (i.e. secret) aviation projects, which is why I had traveled to the Antelope Valley to meet him.

As we sat in his living room, Merlin told me about the history of what people in defense circles call the "black world" of classified projects, and recounted stories of the brief glimpses he'd seen of it. He told me about the time he'd spent standing on a ridgeline in the middle of the Nevada desert looking down on the Air Force's secret base near Groom Lake. He told me rumors and anecdotes about a $300 million CIA-Air Force plane that never got off the ground, about a mysterious "classified demonstrator" flown in the mid 1980s, and about a secret plane called the YF-113G that flew in the early 1990s. The bits of arcana he had picked up in his work were as dizzying in their incompleteness as they were fascinating.

After spending the better part of an afternoon chatting, Merlin motioned for me to follow him upstairs and into his office. There, I found myself surrounded by the refuse, leftovers, and bits of debris that a half-century of secret aircraft projects had left behind. He'd recovered metal shards from shattered stealth fighters by locating the remote sites where they had crashed, and found the in-flight recorder from an A-12 spy plane in a local junkyard. There were mugs, pins, and other memorabilia preserved in frames, glass-enclosed shelves, and well-kept vitrines. "I trust evidence," Merlin said. "People can lie. Evidence doesn't." He handed me a thick folder stuffed with documents. "Here's the Standard Operating Procedure for Area 51," the operations manual for a secret Air Force Base, "most people just assume that everything is classified so they don't take the time to look," he said. Indeed, a few months later, I would obtain my own copy from the ever-helpful staff at the National Archives. "And this," he told me as he opened a notebook filled with scanned images of military patches, "is called 'patch intel.' "

I'd seen some of the images he had reproduced in his notebooks before, lining the walls of test pilot watering holes, on the living room walls of other people I'd talked to, and on the pages of in-house military history publications. They were a part of the military's everyday culture. I'd always found the skulls, lightning bolts, and dragons that adorned these patches to be fairly unremarkable, but Merlin saw something in them that I hadn't noticed—the symbols they contained were far from random. The lightning bolts, he told me, meant specific things in specific contexts; the numbers of stars on an image might represent a unit number or an operating location; the symbols on a patch could be clues to the purpose of a hidden program or a cover story designed to divert attention away from a program. These symbols, Merlin explained to me, were a language. If you could begin to learn its grammar, you could get a glimpse into the secret world itself.

And so I began to collect. When I toured interesting military bases, I took note of the symbols that its personnel wore. I started making sketches of interesting images I'd seen. As I amassed more interviews with military and intelligence-types, I always made a point of asking about patches or other memorabilia that they might have in their possession. If I saw something noteworthy adorning the wall of a bar or the home of a retired NCO, I would ask to take a photo. In many cases, people freely gave me a copy of what they had lying around. I began writing to Freedom of Information Act officers and base historians at different military installations, requesting images associated with obscure programs. Sometimes, this actually produced results. I began to amass more and more images and started to learn how to separate the diamonds from the rough. I had acquired a collector's obsession.

PATCHES

If we, rather arbitrarily, picked a date to begin the story of how patches and icons enveloped so much contemporary military culture, we might choose the summer of 1862.

That summer, so the story goes, the Army of the Potomac's Third Corps commander, General Philip Kearny, came across a group of Union officers lounging under a tree by the road side. Assuming that the wayward men were stragglers from his own command, Kearny, who was a strict disciplinarian, launched into an explosion of expletives and invectives directed at the officers. The men stood at attention, patiently waiting until the commander's vocal chords gave out. When Kearny finished, one of the men raised his hand and meekly suggested that Kearny had possibly made a mistake: the officers didn't belong in Kearny's brigade after all. Realizing his error, Kearny is said to have instantly turned into a model gentleman: "Pardon me; I will take steps to know how to recognize my own men hereafter." Kearny proceeded to order his men to place a piece of red cloth on the front of their caps, so that they might be distinguished from other officers. The enlisted men under his command followed.

The piece of red cloth became known as the “Kearny patch,” and, with it, the modern system of unit insignias was born. In less than a year, Major General Joseph Hooker had ordered the entire eastern army to wear distinctive patches: the First Corps would wear a circle, the Second Corps a trefoil, the Eleventh Corps a crescent, and the Twelfth Corps a star.

As the war spread, so did the system of insignia. The patches began to take on special meanings. When the Twelfth Corps went to Chattanooga to aid the Fifteenth Corps, an Irish soldier from the latter division joined some of the newly-arrived men around the fire. Noticing that the men all wore stars on their uniforms, the Irishman asked if the men were all brigadier-generals. The men from the Twelfth replied that the star was their corps badge, and that everyone wore them. “What is your badge?” they asked. “Forty rounds in the cartridge box, and twenty in the pocket,” the Irishman replied. Soon thereafter, the Fifteenth Corps adopted a cartridge box and forty rounds as its symbol.

The tradition of unit insignia has been with the military ever since. There are now thousands and thousands of patches in the modern armed forces, depicting everything from a soldier’s unit, to the many programs a soldier might be charged with, to his or her role within an organization. There are patches custom-made to commemorate special events, and “Friday” patches (informal, and often more colorful, patches that airmen are allowed to wear on Fridays). Simply put, the military has patches for almost everything it does. Including, curiously, for programs, units, and activities that are officially secret.

The Civil War Era “Kearney Patch” represents one of the earliest American military patches. *Photo: T. Glen Larson*

THE BLACK WORLD

The easiest way to see the outlines of the Pentagon’s black world is to download a copy of the defense budget from the Department of Defense Comptroller’s web site. Buried in the RDT&E (Research Development, Test, and Evaluation) section is a very long list of peculiar line items:

PROGRAM ELEMENT #0603801F:	SPECIAL PROGRAMS	$317 MILLION
PROGRAM ELEMENT #0207248F:	SPECIAL EVALUATION PROGRAM	$530 MILLION
PROGRAM ELEMENT #0301324F:	FOREST GREEN	[NO NUMBER]
PROGRAM ELEMENT #0304111F:	SPECIAL ACTIVITIES	[NO NUMBER]

And there are many, many more. These line items are an unclassified glimpse at the so-called "black budget," the annual expenditures for classified programs. To get a "best guess" estimate of the black budget's size, you can add up all the line items and compare that number to the budget's published total. If you do so, you'll notice a discrepancy. A big discrepancy—about $30 billion.

This black budget doesn't disappear into a vacuum—it is the lifeblood of the Pentagon's black world.

In defense jargon, the phrase "black world" denotes the collection of programs, people, and places involved in the most secret of military projects. Like the black budget, the black world is as vast as it is secret. It is not so much a world unto itself as it is a world existing alongside and interwoven with the more conventional parts of military and civilian life. Airbases such as Edwards Air Force Base in Southern California have restricted "compounds" where black projects take place. Industrial sites like Lockheed Martin's Skunk Works have cordoned off areas dedicated to classified projects. Deputy directors of various military agencies are charged with overseeing projects whose existence might be kept secret even from their commanders. Black operations are also woven into existing, visible, activities: like a classified payload aboard a rocket launch from Vandenberg Air Force Base. Or the 1990 space shuttle mission STS-36 (piloted by a former deputy chief of the Air Force's Special Projects Office), which is long rumored to have deployed a supersecret stealth satellite, codenamed MISTY, before landing at Edwards Air Force Base.

The black world also has its dedicated bases, such as the Air Force's "operating location near Groom Lake," a Nevada aircraft test site popularly known as Area 51 where the "Special Projects Flight Test Squadron" tests classified airframes. To the north of Groom Lake is the Tonopah Test Range (also known as Area 52), where a squadron of purloined Soviet MiGs once flew, piloted by a unit called the “Red Eagles” under the code name CONSTANT PEG. During the 1980s, Tonopah was also home to operational squadrons of then-classified F-117a stealth fighters, and patches identified their wearers as “Grim Reapers,” “Nightstalkers,” and “Goat Suckers.”

It’s difficult to figure out what goes on behind the restricted airspaces, the closed doors, the cover stories, and the official denials of the Pentagon’s black world. It’s all secret. But from time to time, the black world peeks out into the “white” world, and those paying close attention can get a fleeting glimpse.

Military radio aficionado Steve Douglass got such a glimpse in early 2004 when his scanners recorded an aircraft using the call sign “Lockheed Test 2334” telling an Albuquerque air traffic controller that it would be “going supersonic somewhere above Flight Level 60 [60,000 feet].” When the controller asked for the aircraft type, the unnamed pilot responded that “We are classified type and cannot reveal our true altitude.” A few minutes later, Douglass heard the mysterious aircraft ask for clearance to descend to 30,000 feet and a flight path toward “Las Vegas with final destination somewhere in the Nellis Range,” the giant Nevada military range that is home to Groom Lake and the Tonopah Test Range. “Trip home a bit slower, eh?” said the controller.

Another glimpse had come the year before when U-2 pilots flying missions over Iraq (and possibly even more “sensitive” places) started complaining about mysterious high flying Unmanned Aerial Vehicles (UAVs) operating at the same extreme altitudes as their spy planes. Too close for comfort, in the pilots’ collective opinion. When defense industry journalists picked up on the sightings, Pentagon officials seemed to confirm the classified aircraft’s existence, explaining that the enigmatic aircraft bore a family resemblance to another Lockheed UAV nicknamed “DarkStar.”

A search through the published biographies of Air Force test pilots reveals a different kind of peephole into the black world. In open records, we find men like Joseph Lanni, whose resumé says that he commanded a “classified flight test squadron” from 1995-1997, and flew “numerous classified prototypes,” including something called the “YF-24.”

And then, for a different kind of glimpse into the black world, there are the patches and symbols reproduced in this book.

WHY?

If the symbols and patches contained in this book refer to classified military programs, the existence of which is often a state secret, why do these patches exist in the first place? Why jeopardize the secrecy of these projects by attaching images to them at all—no matter how obscure or indirect those images might be? Why advertise the fact that someone might be involved in black projects, even with words like “I’d tell you but then I’d have to kill you,” or “NOYFB” and the like? No doubt, the short answer is itself some sort of variation of “I’d tell you but I’d have to kill you.”

We can speculate about the best answer, perhaps, by looking back to the history of unit insignia. After Kearny first commanded his officers to wear a red patch, and after General Hooker generalized the practice of wearing unit insignia, military commanders are said to have noticed the *esprit de corps* and pride that the insignias brought to the soldiers wearing them. Insignias became a way to show the rest of the world who one was affiliated with—something similar to a sports fan wearing the colors of their home team. To wear insignia is to tell the world that one is a part of something larger than oneself. In the case of a black unit, wearing insignias that identify oneself as a part of a black unit may actually help to preserve whatever secrets the unit may (or may not) hold. By wearing a patch, its wearer advertises to others around him or her that there are certain things that he or she cannot speak about. His or her membership in the secret society is contingent upon keeping those secrets. We might imagine that wearing a patch that speaks to secrets might be extra incentive for the person wearing the patch to keep silent.

Without a doubt, many members of the black world are proud of the secrets they hold, and of the clandestine work they've done in the military or intelligence industries. But others struggle with the alienation that comes along with not being able to tell friends and family what one does for a living and with having a secret life. Obtaining and maintaining a security clearance for black projects can involve federal investigators combing through one's personal life, uncomfortable polygraph examinations, and even surveillance. A few years ago, I talked to a man who had become frustrated with life in the black world. He didn't like the secrecy, the alienation, the exhaustive and complicated security procedures, and the constant surveillance. He had begun to develop a disdain for his colleagues who seemed to relish that life. When I showed him some of the patches from this book, he was less than enthralled. "I've seen that sort of thing a lot," he said. "Those are gang colors."

NELLIS BOMBING AND GUNNERY RANGE
RESTRICTED AREA
NO TRESPASSING BEYOND THIS POINT
PHOTOGRAPHY IS PROHIBITED
WARNING
Restricted Area

The black site at Groom Lake's perimeter is protected by security guards in unmarked trucks.

ABOUT THIS BOOK

A number of disclaimers are in order. First and foremost, this is not a book of military history, and is not intended to be a comprehensive, historical, or even consistent examination of black world heraldry. Serious collectors of militaria and historians of all varieties may find this book to be maddeningly inconsistent, incomplete—even random. The images contained in these pages are often presented without regard for their unit lineages, and without historical context. To make matters worse for the serious aficionado, I have made no distinction between images scanned from "originals" and those scanned from reproductions. Therefore, the images in this book cannot and should not be relied upon as accurate guides to military history.

Instead, readers of this book will find a collection of images that are fragmentary, torn out of context, inconclusive, unreliable, and deceptive. Readers will find, in other words, a glimpse into the black world itself.

THE PATCHES

SPECIAL PROJECTS
FLIGHT TEST SQUADRON

SPECIAL PROJECTS FLIGHT TEST SQUADRON—WIZARD

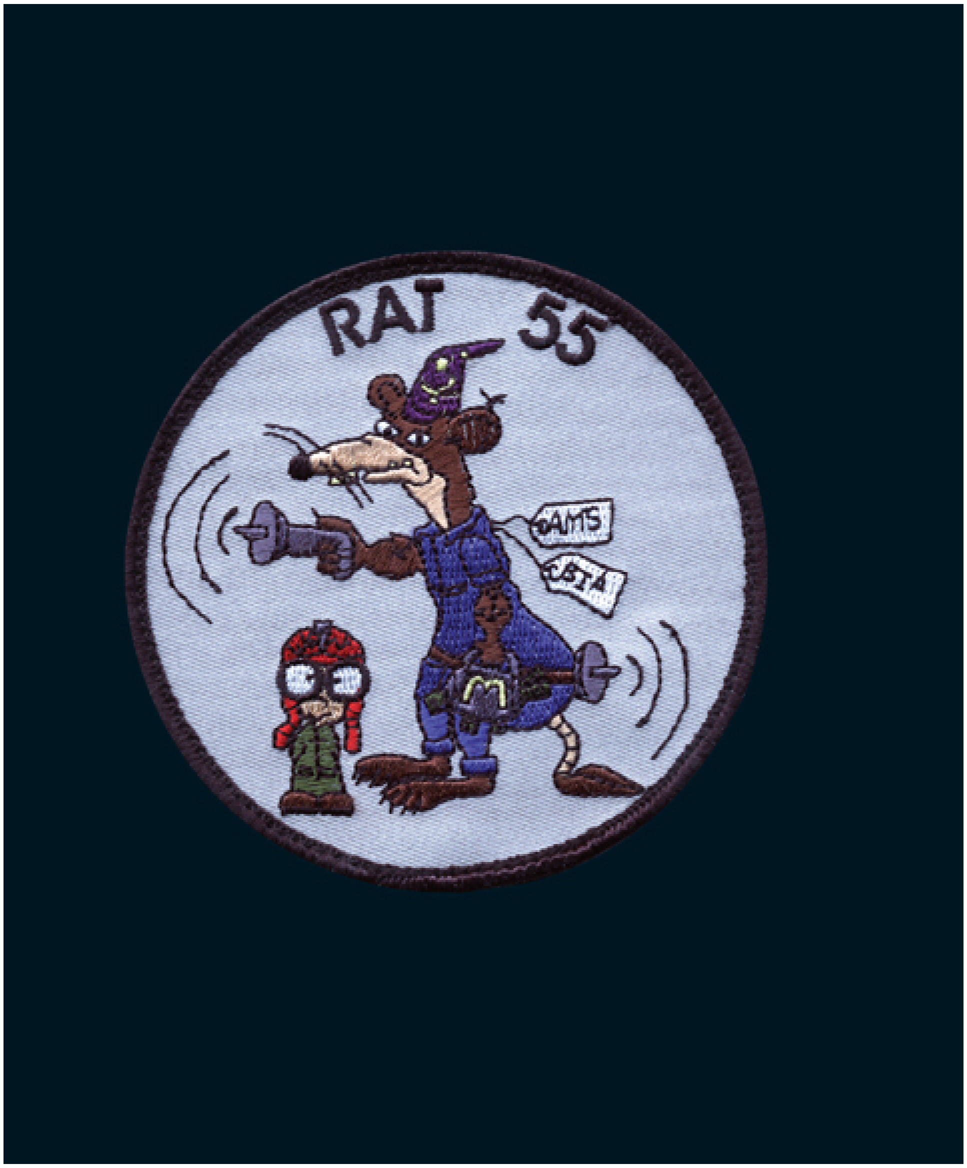
Based at the Air Force's secret base near Groom Lake, Nevada, the Special Projects Flight Test Squadron is the Air Force's only "black" flight test squadron for classified prototype aircraft and advanced concept technology demonstrators.

The squadron's mascot is a wizard. A collection of six stars (5 + 1) on the patch references the unit's operating location: the secret base known as Area 51. The lowercase Greek sigma symbol in the wizard's right hand is the engineering symbol for the unknown value of an object's radar cross section (RCS). The ideal radar signature of a stealth aircraft is zero. While no stealth aircraft has yet achieved this goal, several have come close. On the right side of the patch, the falling globe references the hollow aluminum spheres dropped from the sky to calibrate radar equipment. A sphere of a given size has a known RCS value. Lightning bolts, such as the one emanating from the wizard's staff, seem to refer to electronic warfare. The aircraft in the lower right is probably a generic symbol representing flight testing of advanced aircraft. The sword at the bottom of the image refers to a recently declassified Boeing stealth demonstrator known as the "Bird of Prey": the handle on the sword approximates the shape of the aircraft.

SPECIAL PROJECTS
FLIGHT TEST SQUADRON

SPECIAL PROJECTS FLIGHT TEST SQUADRON—DIAMOND

An older patch associated with the Special Projects Flight Test Squadron. The faceted shape used here may refer to early designs of stealth aircraft.


RAT 55
OAMTS
CSTA

RAT 55

“Rat 55” is the call sign used by pilots flying a highly modified T-43A (the Air Force version of a Boeing 737-200) based at a classified air base in central Nevada. The word “Rat” comes from the airplane’s function as a Radar Testbed and the “55” comes from the airplane’s USAF serial number: 73-1155.

The modified NT-43A is outfitted with radar domes on its nose and tail measuring approximately nine feet long and six and a half feet in diameter and is used to measure the in-flight radar signatures of stealth aircraft.

The NT-43A has been photographed tailing a B-2 stealth bomber over Death Valley and over the Tonopah Test Range in Nevada.

The patch depicts a rat holding a radar in its right hand and another radar dish strapped to its rear-end, both of which recall the radome configuration on the NT-43A. The rat’s hat recalls the wizard figures associated with classified flight test operations in other patches.

BIRD OF PREY

BIRD OF PREY

The Bird of Prey was a highly classified technology demonstrator that first flew at Groom Lake in 1996. Built by a secretive division of McDonnell Douglas (later acquired by Boeing) known as the “Phantom Works,” the aircraft was flown by Boeing pilots Rudy Haug and Joe Felock. Doug Benjamin of the secret Special Projects Flight Test Squadron was the only Air Force pilot to fly the aircraft.

Although the shape of the plane was secret in 1996, the Bird of Prey patch contained an important clue. When Boeing declassified the Bird of Prey’s existence in 2002, it became obvious that the handle of the sword was essentially the same shape as the aircraft. This distinctive sword has since become incorporated into the symbolism of the Special Projects Flight Test Squadron.

CLASSIS
CAECE
DE MULTA NOCTE
NOLI ROGARE

AIR FORCE FLIGHT TEST CENTER
CLASSIS CAECE
NOLI ROGARE
DE MULTA NOCTE
THE GHOST SQUADRON

GHOST SQUADRON

The text on these patches roughly translates as “A Secret Squadron / From Deep in the Night / Don’t Ask Any Questions.” The patches were worn by an obscure unit called the “Ghost Squadron” operating out of the secret Air Force base near Groom Lake. The single star in the Southwest United States presumably designates the group’s operating location.

The Ghost Squadron is a helicopter support, security, and search and rescue team for test squadrons flying classified aircraft.

G.H.O.S.T.

G.H.O.S.T.

One of the more recent patches from the “Ghost Squadron” based at Groom Lake. The design of the skull’s helmet indicates that “Ghost” is a helicopter unit. The footprints on the helmet mark the trace of the “Jolly Green Giant,” a symbol connected to helicopter search and rescue missions. This patch also seems to indicate that “G.H.O.S.T.” is an acronym for the unit. The meaning of the acronym is unclear.

PENSER HORS LIMITES
OPERATIONS GROUP

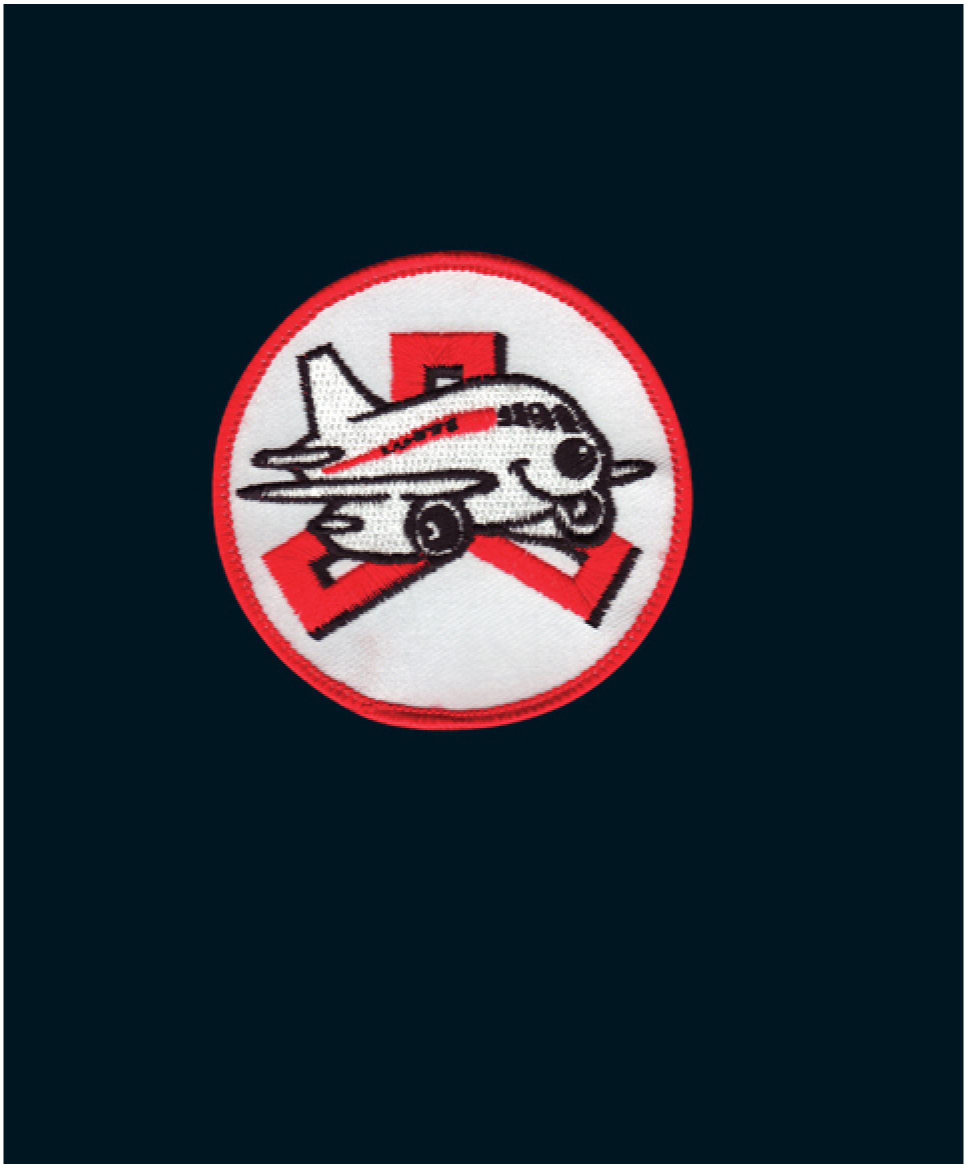
PENSER HORS LIMITES

This patch comes from the Operations Group at Groom Lake. The collection of five white stars and one purple star is a reference to Groom Lake’s nickname, “Area 51,” and here represents the Special Projects Flight Test Squadron. The color purple echoes the colors of other Special Projects Flight Test Squadron patches. The wrench and screwdriver are symbols for aircraft maintenance units and activities. There is also a red star in the bird’s eye, which may reference classified squadrons such as the “Red Hats” and “Red Eagles,” which were charged with flying purloined Soviet MiGs at the secret base. Green footprints on the cloud symbolize the “Ghost Squadron” search and rescue team. Lightning coming from the cloud spells out the letters “EW” for “electronic warfare” and represents EW test units and activities at the base. The red-and-white and blue-and-white streamers on either side of the bird reference the colors of the Janet planes. (See this page.) *Penser hors limites* is French for “Imagination without boundaries,” or “To think beyond the boundaries.”

NKAWTG....NOBODY

NKAWTG … NOBODY

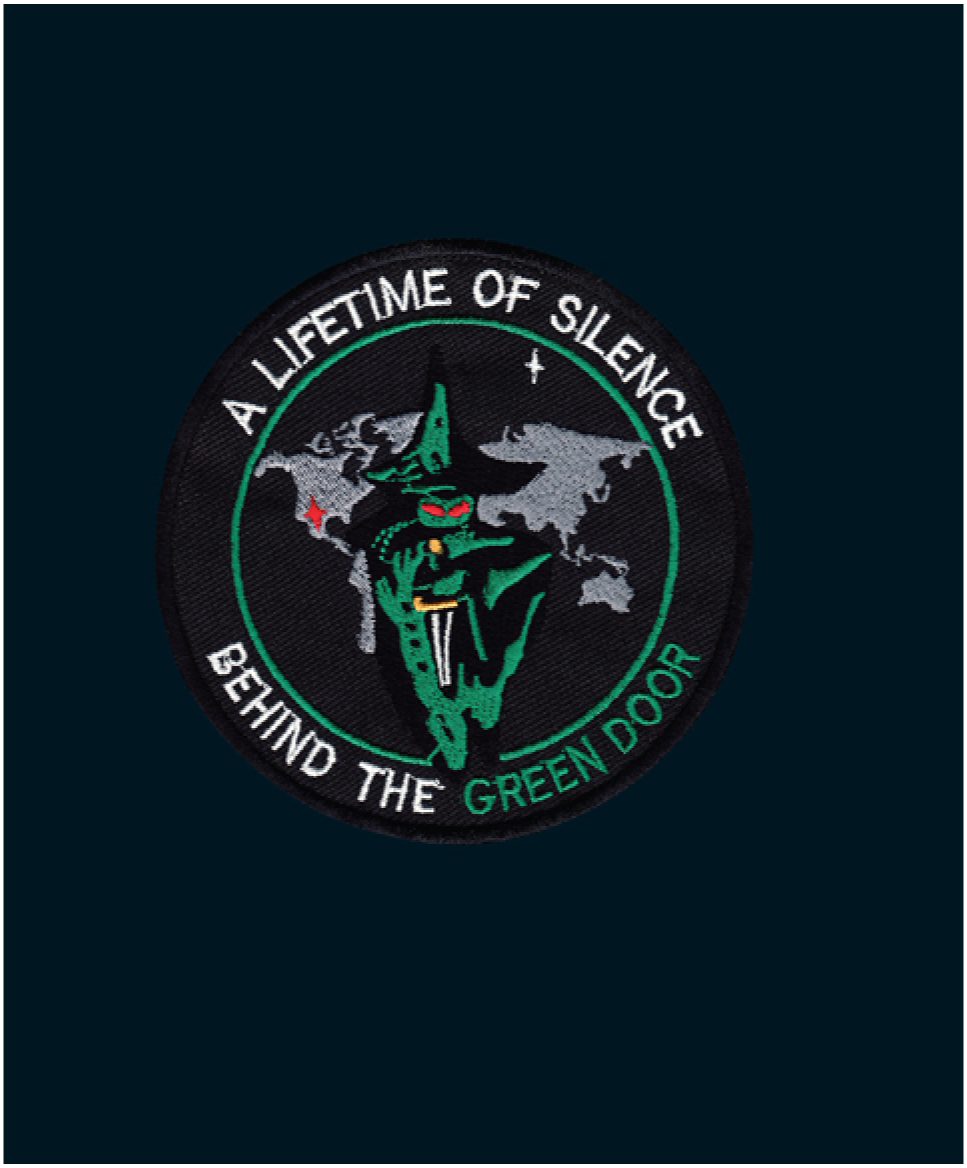
This patch comes from an unidentified air refueling squadron charged with supporting black aircraft projects. The object in the character’s hand is a fuel boom from a tanker aircraft such as a KC-135 or a KC-10. The letters NKAWTG at the bottom of the image refer to the unofficial motto of the Air Force’s tanker units: “No One Kicks Ass Without Tanker Gas.”



JANET PLANES

The white Boeing 737 with a red stripe down the fuselage refers to aircraft known as the “Janet Fleet,” because they use the call sign “Janet” in civilian airspace. The fleet is operated by the Special Project Division of the EG&G company; the company’s logo provides the backdrop for the smiling aircraft shown in the patch. The Janet Fleet shuttles military and civilian workers to and from their jobs at secret military bases such as the Tonopah Test Range and Groom Lake. The Janet Fleet is headquartered at the “Gold Coast” terminal at Las Vegas’ McCarren Airport.

Workers commute from Las Vegas to secret military bases each morning in unmarked 737s.


A LIFETIME OF SILENCE
BEHIND THE GREEN DOOR

A LIFETIME OF SILENCE BEHIND THE GREEN DOOR

The origins and meaning of this patch are obscure. The green figure holding the sword wears the cloak-and-dagger garb often associated with black projects. There is a white star in the northern hemisphere (under the letter "S") and a red star in the American Southwest.

The patch is likely associated with the Air Force Intelligence, Surveillance and Reconnaissance Agency, based at Lackland Air Force Base in San Antonio, Texas, which perhaps explains the location of the red star. The Air Force ISR Agency's mission is to "Organize, train, equip, and present assigned forces and capabilities to conduct intelligence, surveillance and reconnaissance for combatant commanders and the nation." The agency is involved in a number of "black" projects. The white star in the sky most likely refers to projects involving space capabilities and systems.

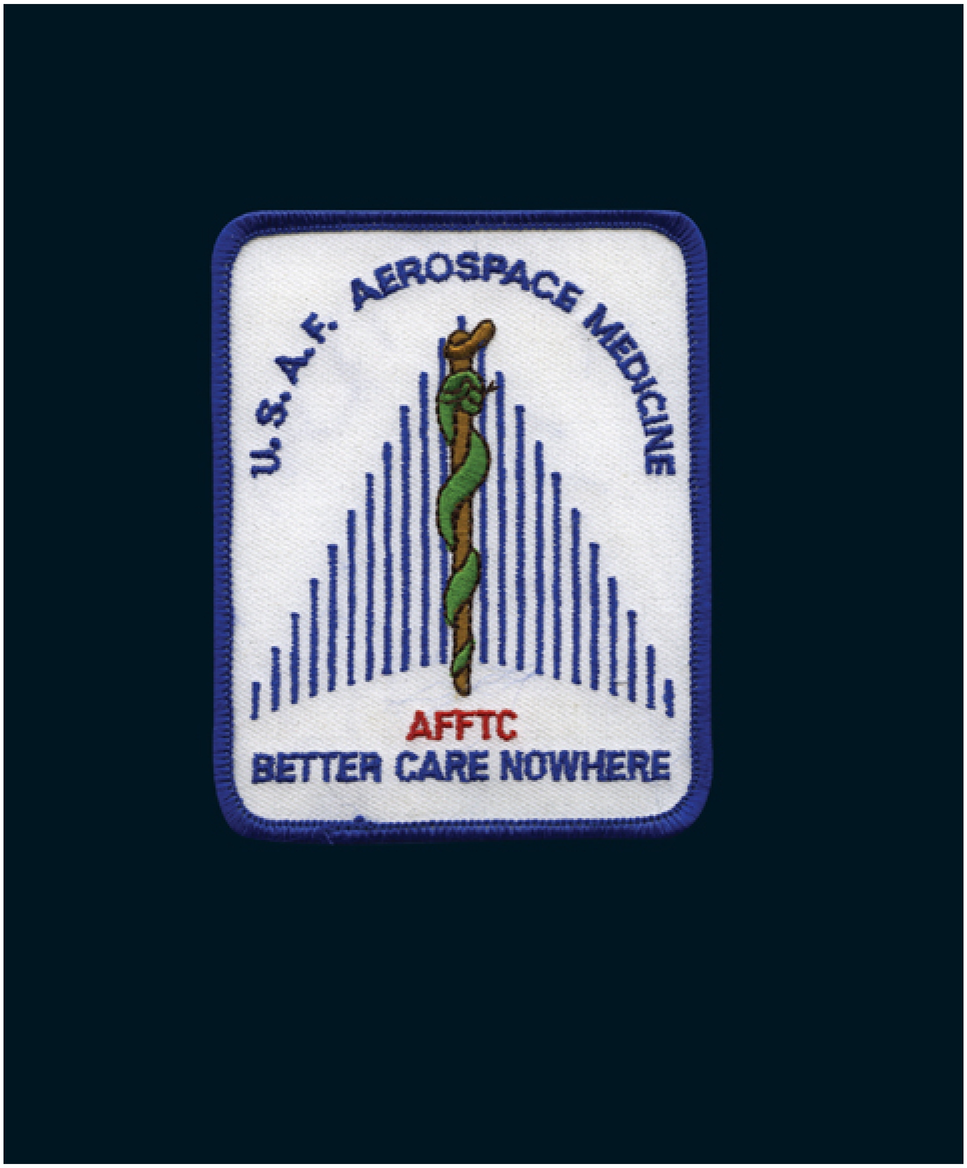
The words "A Lifetime of Silence" no doubt refer to the fact that members of this unit or project cannot speak about what they do. Military intelligence officers have a tradition of working behind locked green vault doors, but the symbol is also widely used in popular culture to designate an inaccessible place.

In Mary E. Wilkins-Freeman's 1917 novel *The Green Door*, a young girl named Letitia longs to open a mysterious little green door in her house, but her aunt forbids it with the words "It is not best for you, my dear." The 1956 hit song "Green Door" is about a man who couldn't get into a party raging behind a green door. The 1972 pornographic film *Behind the Green Door* also uses the image to connote an inaccessible place (in the case of the film, a sex theater).

FREEDOMUS AO ANAT COSAMUS

FREEDOMUS AO ANAT COSAMUS

This patch is from an unknown program active at Groom Lake (Area 51) sometime during the late 1990s. The collection of six stars above the eagle's head may represent Area 51 (5 + 1 stars), and the collection of three stars below the eagle might represent "Detachment 3." (Groom Lake is also known as "Air Force Flight Test Center, Detachment 3".) The phrase *Freedomus Ao Anat Cosamus* is a garbled concoction of dog-Latin and dog-Greek. Although the intended meaning of the phrase is unclear, one might venture the guess "Freedom throughout the cosmos."


U.S.A.F. AEROSPACE MEDICINE
AFFTC
BETTER CARE NOWHERE

AEROSPACE MEDICINE

This patch is worn by the aerospace medical personnel assigned to the secret flight test facility at Groom Lake, also known as Air Force Flight Test Center, Detachment 3 (AFFTC Det. 3). Aerospace medicine is a specialized branch of medicine that focuses on the needs of pilots and aircrews.

PANTHER DEN
INFORMATION
WARFARE

PANTHER DEN

Panther Den is a Special Access Program (SAP) based at Hanscom Air Force Base in Massachusetts. Managed by the Big Safari project office (pg. 123), Panther Den is charged with overseeing classified information warfare projects. Related to electronic warfare, information warfare involves defending and attacking computer networks and other kinds of information infrastructure.

Projects falling under Panther Den's umbrella include Pirate Sword, Steel Puma, and Project Deborah.

MINOTAUR

Minotaur is a still-classified program undertaken by Lockheed Martin’s Advanced Development Programs division, the Skunk Works. Although Minotaur remains obscure, rumor holds that the airframe shares a “family resemblance” with another Skunk Works program called Minion and may have served as a technology demonstrator for that program.

NORTHROP
NIGHT
STALKER II

NORTHROP NIGHT STALKER II

There is no publicly available information about Northrop’s “Night Stalker II” program. The numeral II suggests a “Night Stalker I,” which remains equally obscure.

SEEKERS FLIGHT TEST
2001

SEEKERS FLIGHT TEST

This patch is from the flight test of an unknown aircraft or system conducted by defense contractor Scaled Composites, based near Edwards Air Force Base in Mojave, California.

Scaled Composites became widely known in October of 2004 when the company won the “X-Prize” after launching its “Spaceship One” aircraft to an altitude above 328,000 feet twice in fourteen days.

The company does a significant amount of classified work for the Department of Defense. Job listings on Scaled Composites’ web site indicate that the company prefers to hire workers in possession of a “DOD Secret Clearance.”

USAF SPECIAL PROJECTS

USAF SPECIAL PROJECTS

This unofficial patch was created by the 46th Test Wing, Eglin Air Force Base, in commemoration of multiple Electronic Warfare development programs. When primary responsibility for USAF EW testing was transferred from Eglin to Edwards Air Force Base as part of the Base Realignment and Closure process, the patch also moved to Edwards and became associated with the 413th Flight Test Squadron. While the 413th at Edwards was decommissioned in 2004, the patch is still in use at various locations, presumably in support of new EW capabilities.

IX
Ω
XI
Alone and Unafraid

ALONE AND UNAFRAID

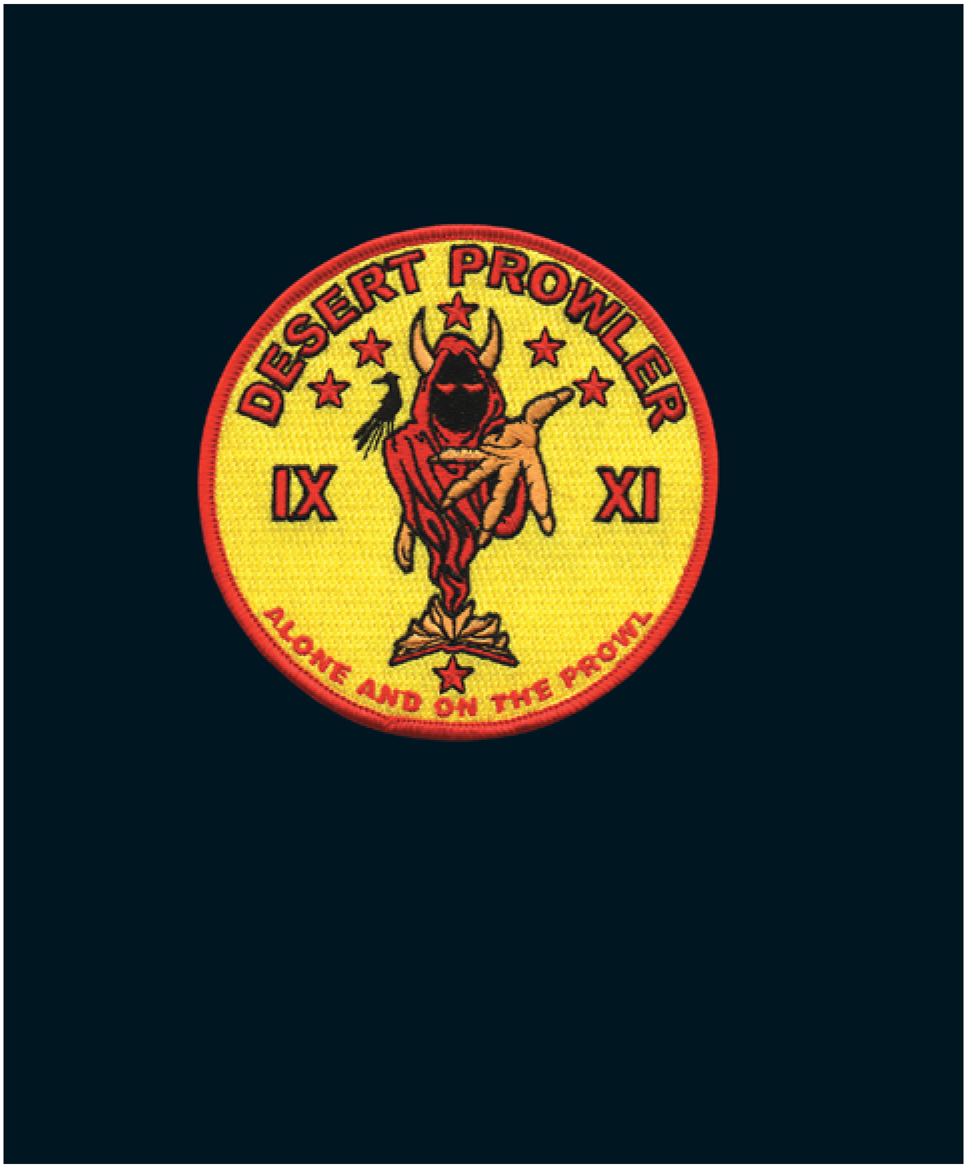
This is one of several patches associated with the Lockheed Martin “Desert Prowler” program, an Unmanned Aerial Vehicle (UAV) first flown on December 13, 2005. The numerals 9 and 11 also appear on other patches associated with the program. The collection of 5 + 1 stars in the lower left section of the patch refers to the classified flight test center at Groom Lake, suggesting that the UAV underwent flight test at the black site or was tested at another site (such as Lockheed’s “Area 6” near Yucca Lake) with support from Groom Lake units.

Desert Prowler may be related to a classified UAV operating out of Kandahar, Afghanistan, that began operations around 2007. Aviation journalist Bill Sweetman initially dubbed the aircraft “the Beast of Kandahar” after a French magazine published a blurry image of the unknown vehicle. On December 4, 2009, the Air Force confirmed the existence of an aircraft called the RQ-170 Sentinel. The RQ-170 is operated by the 30th Reconnaissance Squadron based at the Tonopah Test Range in Nevada.

IX
XI
ALONE AND ON THE PROWL

ALONE AND ON THE PROWL

Another patch associated with the Lockheed Martin Unmanned Aerial Vehicle first flown in late 2005.


DESERT PROWLER
IX
XI
ALONE AND ON THE PROWL

DESERT PROWLER

Yet another patch associated with Lockheed Martin’s “Desert Prowler” program.

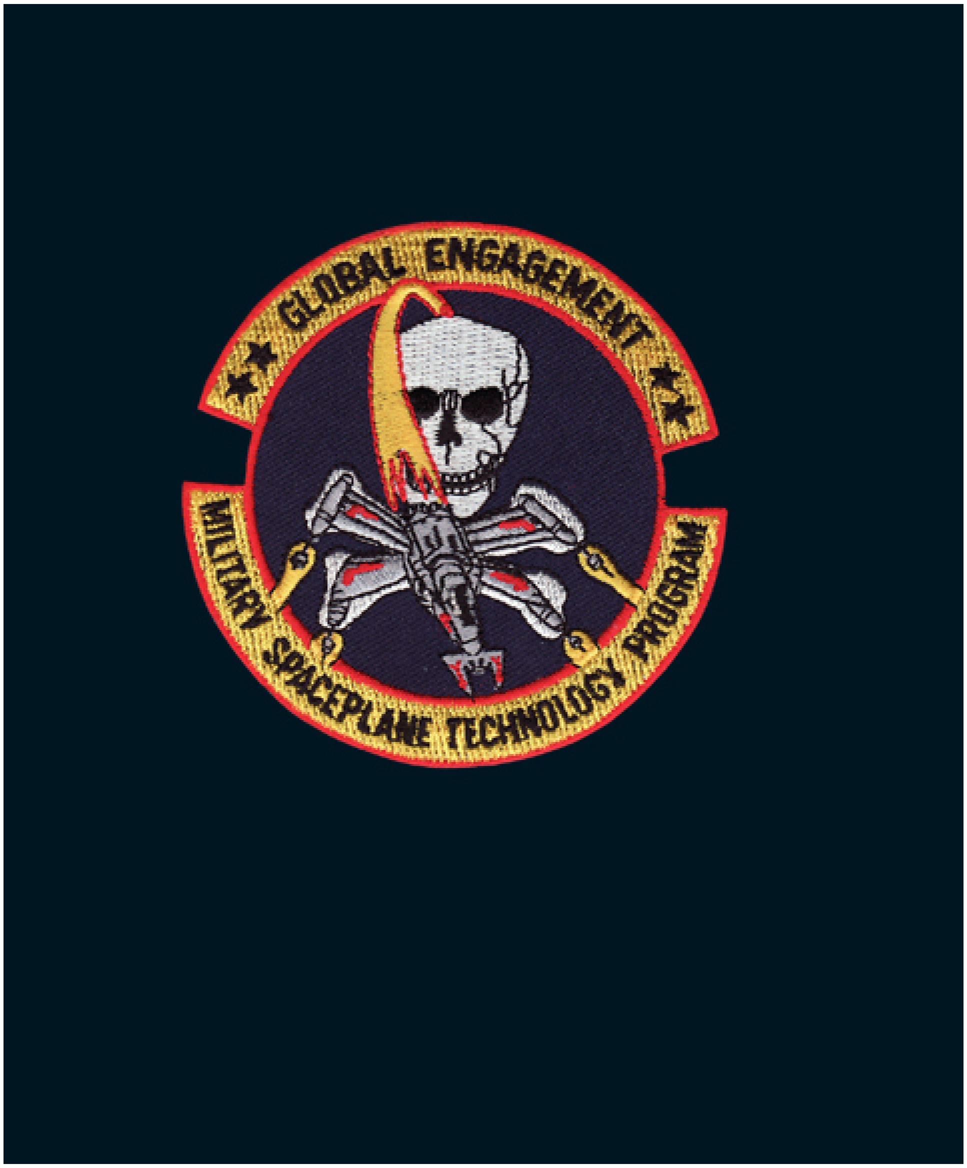
The figure here is taken from the cover art of the hip-hop duo Insane Clown Posse’s sixth “joker card” album, entitled *The Wraith: Shangri-La*. In the narrative of the concept album, the Wraith takes the listener on a tour through heaven and hell.

Sneeky Pete
21
World's Oldest Known
Flying Pig

SNEEKY PETE

Another patch from an obscure Scaled Composites project; the symbolism is unclear. The name Pete may refer to Scaled Composites test pilot Peter Siebold.

Marines sometimes refer to reconnaissance missions as “Sneeky Pete” work, as in, “We’re going Sneeky Pete.”


GLOBAL ENGAGEMENT
MILITARY SPACEPLANE TECHNOLOGY PROGRAM

GLOBAL ENGAGEMENT MILITARY SPACEPLANE

This patch is from the Phillips Laboratory Military Spaceplane Technology (MiST) Program Office at Kirtland Air Force Base in New Mexico.

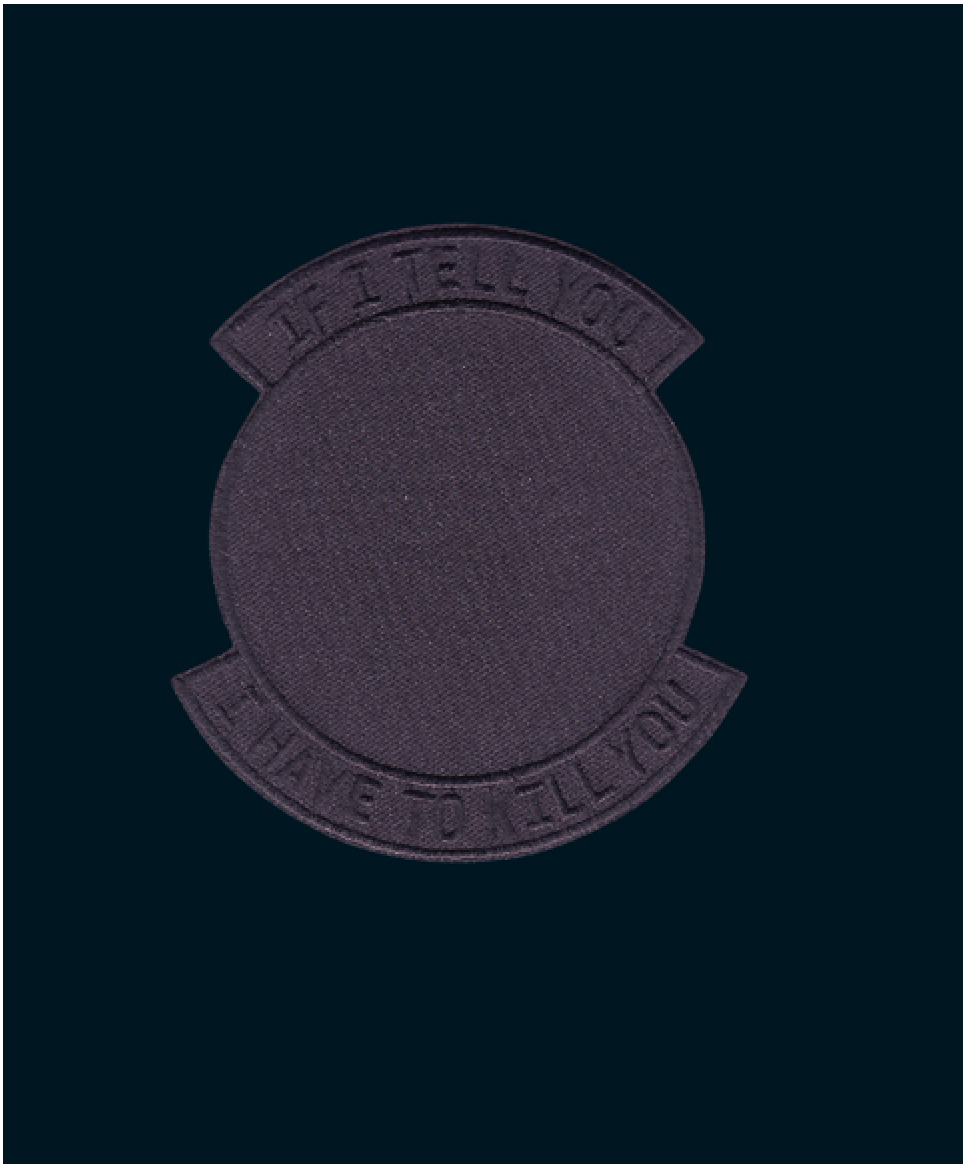
The original version of the patch sported an “X-Wing” fighter from the *Star Wars* movies. When lawyers representing George Lucas delivered the unit a cease and desist order, the aircraft on the patch was changed to the shape that appears on this patch.

THE CUTTING EDGE
SPECIAL PROJECTS DIVISION

SPACE WARFARE CENTER SPECIAL PROJECTS DIVISION

Based at Schriever Air Force Base in Colorado, the Space Warfare Center's mission is to evaluate the performance of space and missile systems, integrate space systems into military operations, and train space systems operators.

The Special Projects Division presumably performs similar functions for "black" space systems.


IF I TELL YOU
I HAVE TO KILL YOU

IF I TELL YOU I HAVE TO KILL YOU

A generic patch for “black” projects designed by a member of Air Test and Evaluation Squadron Four (VX-4), based at Point Mugu near Camarillo, California. VX-4 eventually merged with VX-5 from NAWC China Lake, also in Southern California, to become VX-9 with detachments at both locations.

TRIANGULUM

TRIANGULUM

“Triangulum” is reported to designate a variation on the RS6b SENIOR SPEAR sensor system built into some versions of the U-2 spy plane. The Triangulum system allegedly uses twelve antennae along the aircraft’s fuselage and an antenna on each wing.

Vindicator

VINDICATOR

Built by Lockheed Martin's Skunk Works, the Vindicator system was a highly classified project (rumored to be "more secret than the F-117A," the stealth fighter program) from the 1980s. This patch includes the Lockheed Advanced Development Projects' skunk mascot wearing a helmet and scarf. The patch depicts a laser anemometer optical air data system, which takes the place of conventional pitot-static probes on stealth or high-speed aircraft where physical protrusions are undesirable. The device is a velocity indicator (or, in aviation parlance, a *v*-indicator).

L.O. FLIGHT TEST
HUGE DEPOSIT--NO RETURN

LO FLIGHT TEST

The words “LO Flight Test” describe a “Low Observables” flight test, in all probability a radar measurement test for a stealth aircraft using the radar measurement range at Groom Lake, Nevada. The date of this particular flight test is unknown, but the test reportedly involved a B-2 stealth bomber. The sigma symbol in the middle of the patch refers to the unknown value of the aircraft’s radar cross section (sigma/zero being the ideal radar cross section measurement for a stealth plane). “Huge deposit” indicates the bomb load deposited by the bomber on its target, while “no return” refers to the absence of a radar-return, meaning that the aircraft was undetectable to radar. It is unclear why there is a star on the tail of the sigma, though it may simply be an artistic touch.

RED HATS
MORE WITH LESS

RED HATS — MORE WITH LESS

Red Hats was a nickname for the 6513th Test Squadron, which was charged with testing a collection of Soviet military aircraft surreptitiously acquired from foreign sources. The 6513th was based at Groom Lake, Nevada, in a collection of hangars on the northern end of the base that became known as “Red Square.” The program to test Soviet MiGs at Groom Lake began in the late 1960s as a joint CIA/USAF effort under the code names HAVE DRILL and HAVE DOUGHNUT

Again, note the collection of six stars on the patch, which may refer to Groom Lake’s nickname, Area 51.

The 6513th was deactivated in 1992 and transformed into the 413th Flight Test Squadron.

413TH FLIGHT TEST SQ

413th FLIGHT TEST SQUADRON

The 413th Test Squadron was designated and activated on October 2, 1992, when it was formed out of the disbanded 6513th Red Hats Test Squadron. The Red Hats had conducted flight testing of purloined Soviet MiGs and other aircraft at Groom Lake. In March 1994, the unit became the 413th Flight Test Squadron, nicknamed the “Bombcats.”

Based at a restricted section of Edwards Air Force Base called “North Base,” the mission of the 413th was to organize flight tests of Electronic Warfare systems around the world. A detachment of the 413th, called the “Nutcrackers,” continued to operate out of Groom Lake and the Tonopah Test Range. Daily flights in unmarked Beech aircraft shuttled members of the 413th to the secret bases each day.

The 413th was responsible for a number of programs; code names included SUNDOWNER, ZIPPER, and IBIS DAWN. In May of 2004, the squadron was deactivated (although the unit designation was later transferred to a squadron formed from a detachment of the 46th Operations Group at Eglin Air Force Base in Florida). The remaining “Bombcats” assets became part of the Electronic Warfare Directorate, also headquartered at Edwards Air Force Base.

PROJECT ZIPPER
We Make Threats Not Promises

PROJECT ZIPPER

This patch represents an unknown project undertaken by the 413th Flight Test Squadron. The zipper seems to refer to the fact that the project cannot be discussed. The first part of the phrase “We make threats” might refer to making simulated (or real) electronic “threats” against aircraft.

ELECTRONIC WARFARE
NUTCRACKERS

NUTCRACKERS

“Nutcrackers” was an alter ego of the 413th Flight Test Squadron referring to detachments operating at classified locations that included Groom Lake and the Tonopah Test Range.

The collection of 4 + 1 + 3 stars on the left side of the patch refers to the 413th Flight Test Squadron. The crow and the lightning bolts symbolize the unit’s electronic warfare mission.

EW DIRECTORATE
TESTUM PONTUS VERATIS

EW DIRECTORATE

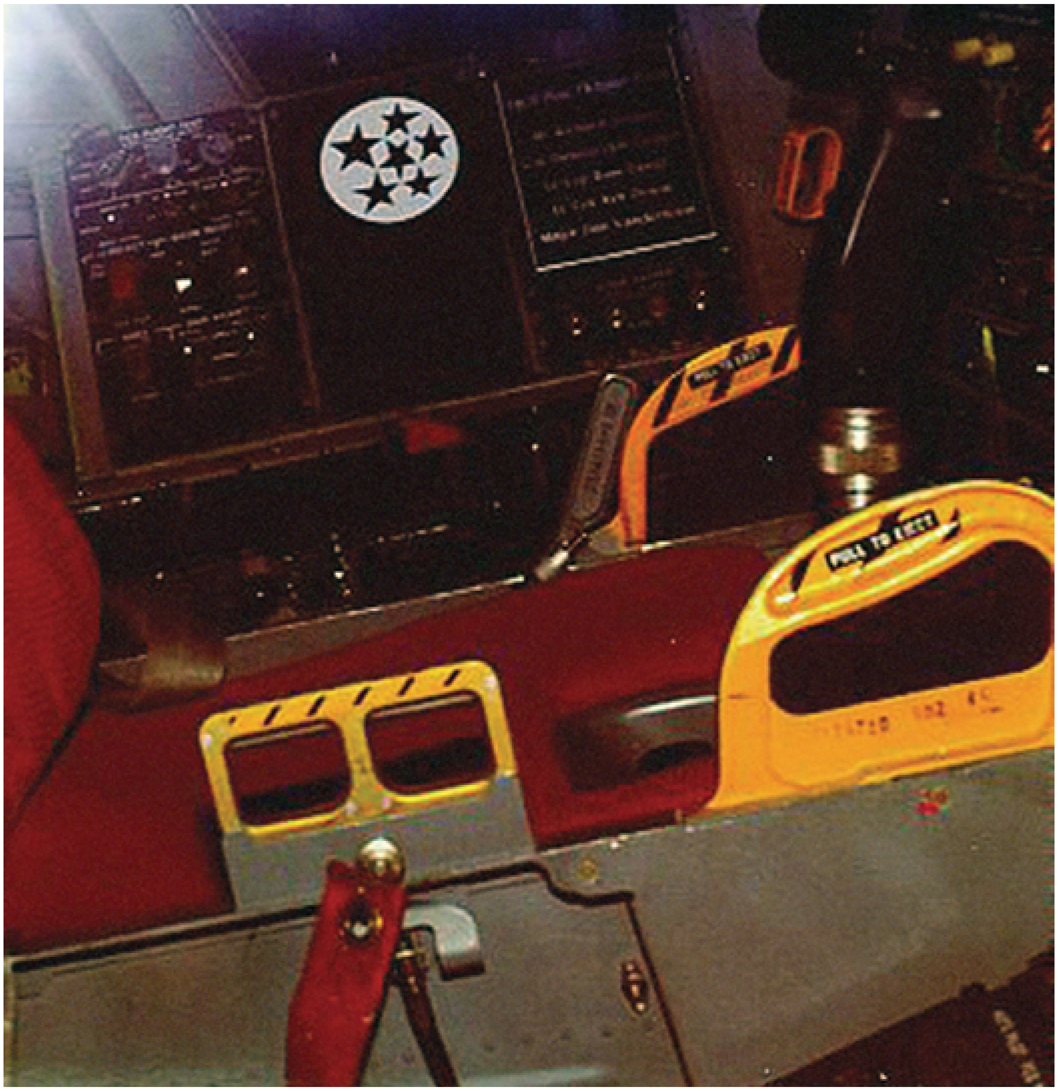
The Electronic Warfare Directorate is the primary EW test organization at Edwards Air Force Base.

Electronic warfare consists of defensive and offensive avionics and includes the so-called “Infowar” revolution in military technologies. Commenting on information warfare, Air Force Chief of Staff John Jumper told *Aviation Week and Space Technology* that “we’re rapidly approaching the time when you can tell an SA-10’s [surface-to-air missile system] radar that it’s a Maytag washer and put it in the rinse cycle instead of the firing cycle.”

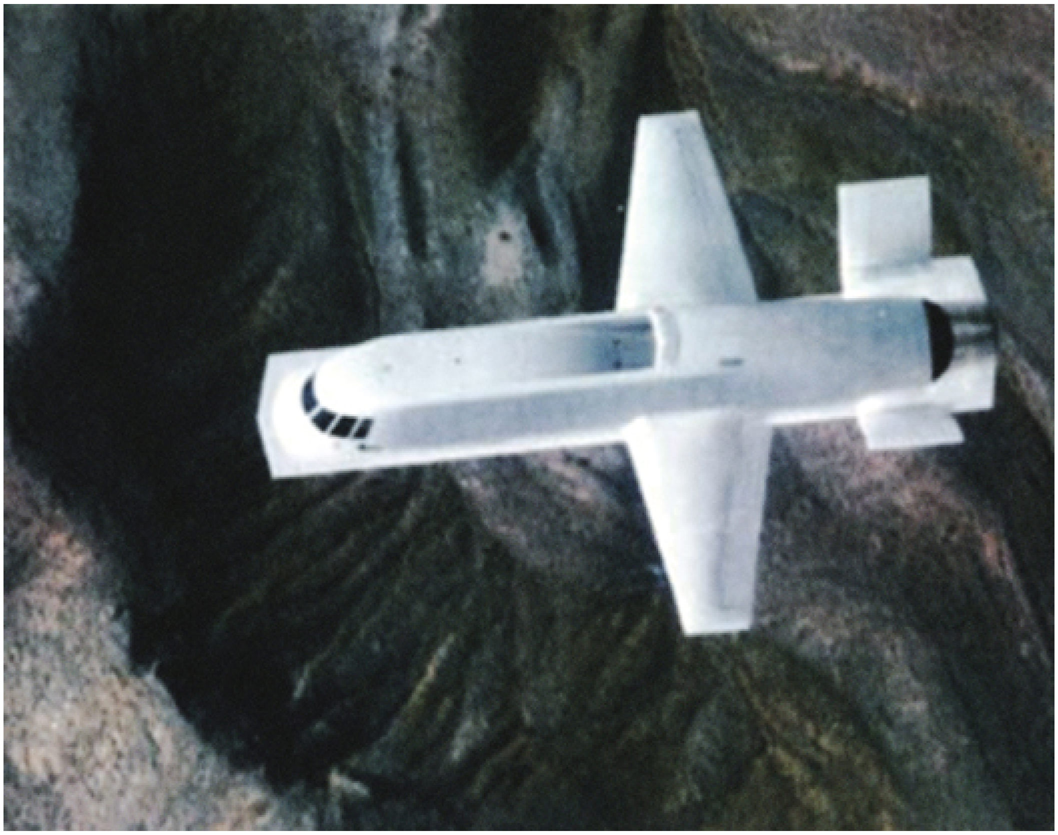
EWAH

This patch is worn by personnel working for a unit descended from the 413th Flight Test Squadron. Elements of the former 413th FLTS became a part of the EW Directorate known by its organization code EWAH. Located at North Base at Edwards, EWAH has its own commanding officer who reports directly to the EW Directorate.

The collection of 5 + 1 stars recalls the nickname Area 51, the Air Force's classified "operating location" at Groom Lake.


PULL TO EJECT
PULL TO EJECT

A symbol on the inside of the plane’s cockpit shows a collection of five-plus-one stars.



Nicknamed “the Whale,” Northrop’s TACIT BLUE was an early stealth technology demonstrator. It first flew at Groom Lake in 1982 and was retired in 1985. The Air Force made the existence of the black aircraft public in 1996. *Both images: USAF*

KILLER WHALE
DETERRITUM PER TESTANDUM SUPRA TERRAM

KILLER WHALE

"Killer Whale" was a nickname for the AGM-137 Tri-Service Standoff Attack Missile, also known as TSSAM, which was a project to develop a stealth cruise missile during the 1980s. The name "Killer Whale" has a somewhat complicated history. In the early 1980s, Northrop developed a stealthy prototype aircraft codenamed "TACIT BLUE," which pioneered the use of rounded shapes for stealth aircraft. Because of the plane's unusual shape, it became known as the "Whale" or "Shamu," and the Northrop crews working on the project at Groom Lake became known as "whalers." After TACIT BLUE, which was unarmed, proved that this stealth technology was effective, Northrop began work on the Tri-Service Standoff Attack Missile, which was a variation on the TACIT BLUE design, and resembled the unusually-shaped stealth aircraft. Thus, while the unarmed TACIT BLUE was known as the "Whale," its cruise missile cousin became known as the "Killer Whale."

The Latin phrase *"Deterritum Per Testandum Supra Terram"* is hard to decipher. The words vaguely translate as "Deterrence/Through/Witness/Above/Earth." Members of the test team choose to interpret it loosely as "Deterrence Through Flight Test."

TSSAM

Because the acronym for the Tri-Service Standoff Attack Missile (TSSAM) recalled the “Tasmanian Devil” cartoon character, the tornado-like image of the character in motion came to represent the classified cruise missile.

SUCCESS
WHERE
OTHERS
FAIL
RANGERS

RANGERS

This patch was designed by security personnel (know as “Rangers”) assigned to classified locations within the Air Force’s Nell is Range Complex.

The design was inspired, in part, by popular stories about ninjas patrolling Nellis black sites. USAF security personnel, whose training and job duties are rather pedestrian, began wearing this patch as an ironic response.

RANGE PATCH

This patch represents various classified locations within the Air Force’s Nellis Range Complex in the Nevada desert.

The meaning of these symbols is unknown.

RED EAGLES
4477th TES

4477th TEST & EVALUATION SQUADRON — “RED EAGLES”

From its inception in 1975, the 4477th Test and Evaluation Squadron conducted tactical evaluations of a highly classified squadron of Soviet fighters in U.S. possession.

The unit was based at Groom Lake until the late 1970s and early 1980s, when the 4477th provided $24 million towards the initial construction of another classified operating location in Central Nevada: the Tonopah Test Range, also known as Area 52.

The 4477th seems to have been disbanded sometime in the early 1990s and its mission taken over by Detachment 2 of the 57th Fighter Wing. Eventually, this became Detachment 3 of the 53rd Test and Evaluation Group.

DET-2 57TH WING
DET-3 53RD TEG

57th FIGHTER WING, DETACHMENT 2

Although all activities associated with Detachment 2 of the 57th Fighter Wing remain classified, it is known that the unit operates under the Advanced Programs office of the 57th Wing. According to official documents from the 57th Wing, which is based at Nellis Air Force Base in Las Vegas, Detachment 2 “operates off-location to support tactical development for the combat air forces.”

DET 2, 57 FW (now DET 3, 53 TEG) has probably taken over much of the 4477th “Red Eagles” mission to provide tactical evaluation of foreign aircraft. Its “off-location” operating base is most likely Groom Lake (Area 51) or the Tonopah Test Range (Area 52).

SEMPER
EN OBSCURUS
SPECIAL PROJECTS

SEMPER EN OBSCURUS

This patch comes from the Special Projects Office, which operated out of the Air Force's Sacramento Air Logistics Center and oversaw maintenance and support of the F-117A stealth fighter program. The phrase *"Semper en Obscurus"* translates as "Always in the Dark." The mushroom—which grows in darkness—symbolizes the secret nature of the Office's work. This same patch is now used by the 412th Test Wing's Special Projects Office at Edwards Air Force Base.

RAPID CAPABILITIES OFFICE
OPUS DEI CUM PECUNIA ALIENUM EFFICEMUS

RAPID CAPABILITIES OFFICE

Among other things, the Rapid Capabilities Office at Air Force headquarters in Washington is responsible for technical integration of the Department of Defense's classified activities, and for reporting these activities to the Air Force leadership, the office of the secretary of defense, Congress, and the White House.

The symbol in the background of this patch is a black and gray image of the earth, representing the "black world" of classified activities. The Latin at the bottom of the patch translates as "Doing God's work with other people's money."

SECRETARY OF THE AIR FORCE
ACQUISITION
SPECIAL PROGRAMS

DIRECTORATE OF SPECIAL PROJECTS

The Directorate of Special Projects works with the Office of the Secretary of Defense and Congress to direct financial oversight, programmatic evaluation, budget formulation and acquisition management of the $2.2 billion annual Air Force special access program portfolio. The image on the patch recalls a classified aircraft flying above a “black world.”

II
DRAGON
TEST TEAM

PETE’S DRAGON II

When, in July of 1982, pilot Pete Barnes was scheduled for his first flight in the still-secret stealth fighter, he found that the plane had a green dragon painted on the side. The inspiration for the design came from the Disney film *Pete’s Dragon*, which was about a green dragon named Elliot who was invisible to everyone except a boy named Pete.

A few years later, Pete Barnes took control of an upgraded stealth fighter, commemorated by the patch shown here. Pete’s Dragon eventually morphed into the “Dragon Test Team.”

DON'T ASK!
NOYFB

DON’T ASK — NOYFB

This patch is from the 22nd Military Airlift Squadron, which flew C-5 cargo aircraft out of Travis Air Force Base in Northern California. Part of the 22nd MAS’ mission was to conduct late night operations picking up classified aircraft from aerospace plants in Southern California and delivering them to classified locations for testing and evaluation.

When the 22nd MAS undertook these missions, its crews would take off their everyday heraldry and Velcro this patch to their uniforms.

The black background and crescent moon on the patch probably represent the unit’s night operations. The silver lining represents star light. The letters “NOYFB” stand for “None of Your Fucking Business.”

GOAT SUCKERS

GOAT SUCKERS

Goat Suckers designates the Q-Unit of the 4452nd Test Squadron, charged in the early 1980s with testing and evaluating a growing squadron of top-secret stealth fighters at the Tonopah Test Range.

In addition to the stealth fighters, the Goat Suckers flew a collection of A-7 Corsair fighters, which were used as chase planes and proficiency trainers. The A-7 also became a cover story for the stealth fighter when its existence was still classified. When stealth pilots were asked about the 4452nd Test Squadron, they would claim that they flew A-7s.

The name Goatsuckers refers to a family of nocturnal birds that, folklore held, fed on goat's milk at night. Included in the Goatsucker family of birds is *chordeiles minor:* the Nighthawk.

Nighthawk is the nickname of the F-117A stealth fighter; the existence of the F-117A was classified until November 8, 1988.

The Tonopah Test Range at night.

F3XP
M.A.R.S.

F3XP M.A.R.S.

During the years when the F-117A stealth fighter was a black project operating out of the Tonopah Test Range, a secret program known only by the code name F3XP was designed to repair and maintain the aircraft's radar absorbent coatings. Composed of Air Force corrosion control specialists and sheet metal technicians, members of this project, called the Materials Application Repair Section (M.A.R.S.), were known as "Martians."

GRIM REAPERS

GRIM REAPERS

Grim Reapers was the nickname of the 4451st Test Squadron, which operated under the 4450th Tactical Group at the Tonopah Test Range during the 1980s. The unit's mission was to fly a squadron of classified stealth fighters.

When the Pentagon announced the existence of the stealth fighter program in the late 1980s, the Grim Reapers were redesignated as the 416th Tactical Fighter Squadron. After the Grim Reapers' existence became public, the Air Force forced the unit to change their name, as it did not pass the Air Force's requirements for good taste. The Grim Reapers thus became the Ghost Riders.

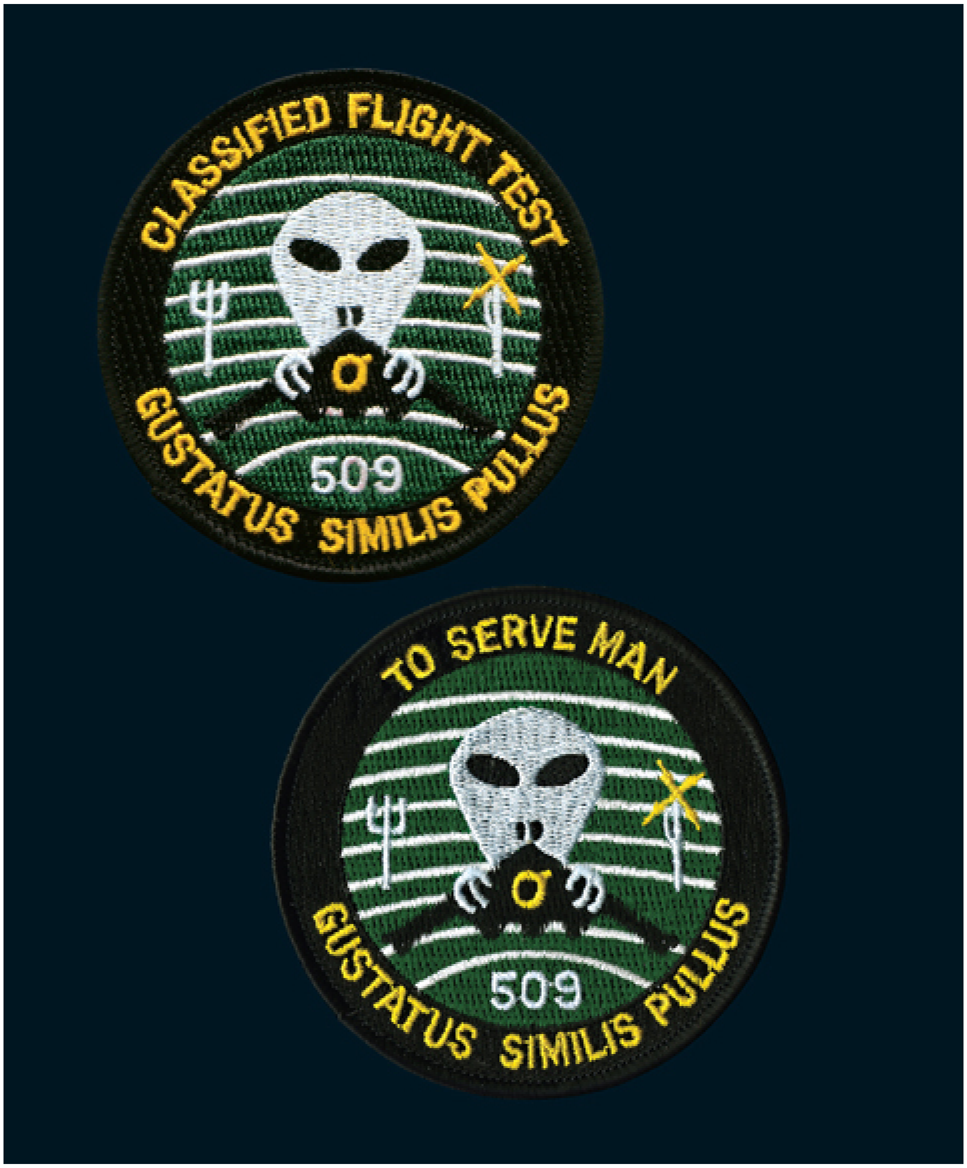
PROCUL ESTE PROFANI
SPECIAL PROJECTS

PROCUL ESTE PROFANI — SPECIAL PROJECTS

This patch is from the 416th Flight Test Squadron’s Special Projects Flight working on advanced technologies for the F-16 Combined Test Force at Edwards Air Force Base.

The phrase *Procul Este Profani* is usually associated with Virgil’s epic poem *The Aeneid*. When Apollo arrives at the Temple of Apollo, the prophet Sibyl utters the words *“Procul, O procul este profane”* before the pair descend into Hades, where Aeneas is told about the future of Rome.

Members of the unit translate the phrase as “Keep your distance, you who are uninitiated.”


CLASSIFIED FLIGHT TEST
σ
509
GUSTATUS SIMILIS PULLUS
TO SERVE MAN
σ
509
GUSTATUS SIMILIS PULLUS

CLASSIFIED FLIGHT TEST

This was the original version of a patch commemorating a flight test series involving a B-2 “Spirit” stealth bomber. The Greek sigma symbol on the test shape’s outline signifies the unknown RCS value. The number “509” refers to the 509th Bomb Wing, which operates the United States’ stealth bombers from Whiteman Air Force Base in Missouri. The alien is a reference to the 509th’s infamous lineage. In 1947, the 509th was based at Roswell, New Mexico, home of the “Roswell incident,” which ensued after the 509th’s commander, Col. William Blanchard, issued a press release with the headline “Roswell Army Airfield Captures Flying Saucer on Ranch in Roswell Region.”

The dog-Latin phrase *Gustasus Similis Pullus* translates as “Tastes Like Chicken.” Note the knife and fork.

This patch was eventually modified when Air Force officials insisted that the phrase “Classified Flight Test” not appear on the design. In an updated version of the patch, “Classified Flight Test” has been replaced with the words “To Serve Man,” referencing a classic episode of *The Twilight Zone*.

BIG SAFARI

Big Safari is the code name for a program office at the Air Force Material Command at Wright Patterson Air Force Base in Ohio. Founded in 1953, the code name "Big Safari" was classified for decades.

Big Safari is responsible for aircraft specifically designed or modified for missions, including a fleet of RC-135 spy planes codenamed RIVET JOINT.

This patch is from the years when the name Big Safari was classified. The lightning bolts probably refer to electronic warfare. The hog almost certainly refers to RC-135 aircraft, which are sometimes called "hogs" because of their extended noses. The cobra may refer to the code name COBRA BALL, which is the code name for a variation of the RC-135. The dog sniffing the man's foot may refer to the code name COMFY HOUND, which was a quarterly report of electronic warfare activities.

BIG SAFARI PROGRAM

BIG SAFARI PROGRAM

When the code name Big Safari became declassified, the name began to appear on the patch worn by members of the Big Safari Program Office.

Recent projects developed under the Big Safari Program Office include COMPASS CALL (an EC-130H electronic warfare platform), RIVET RIDER (an airborne television broadcast station), PANTHER DEN (an information warfare program office at Hanscom Air Force Base), SCATHE MEAN (a project using decoy drones in the first Gulf War), DISTANT PHOENIX (probably an air-sampling program over the Pacific Ocean in the mid-1990s), and SCATHE VIEW (a program using video cameras embedded in conventional aircraft as a hidden reconnaissance platform).

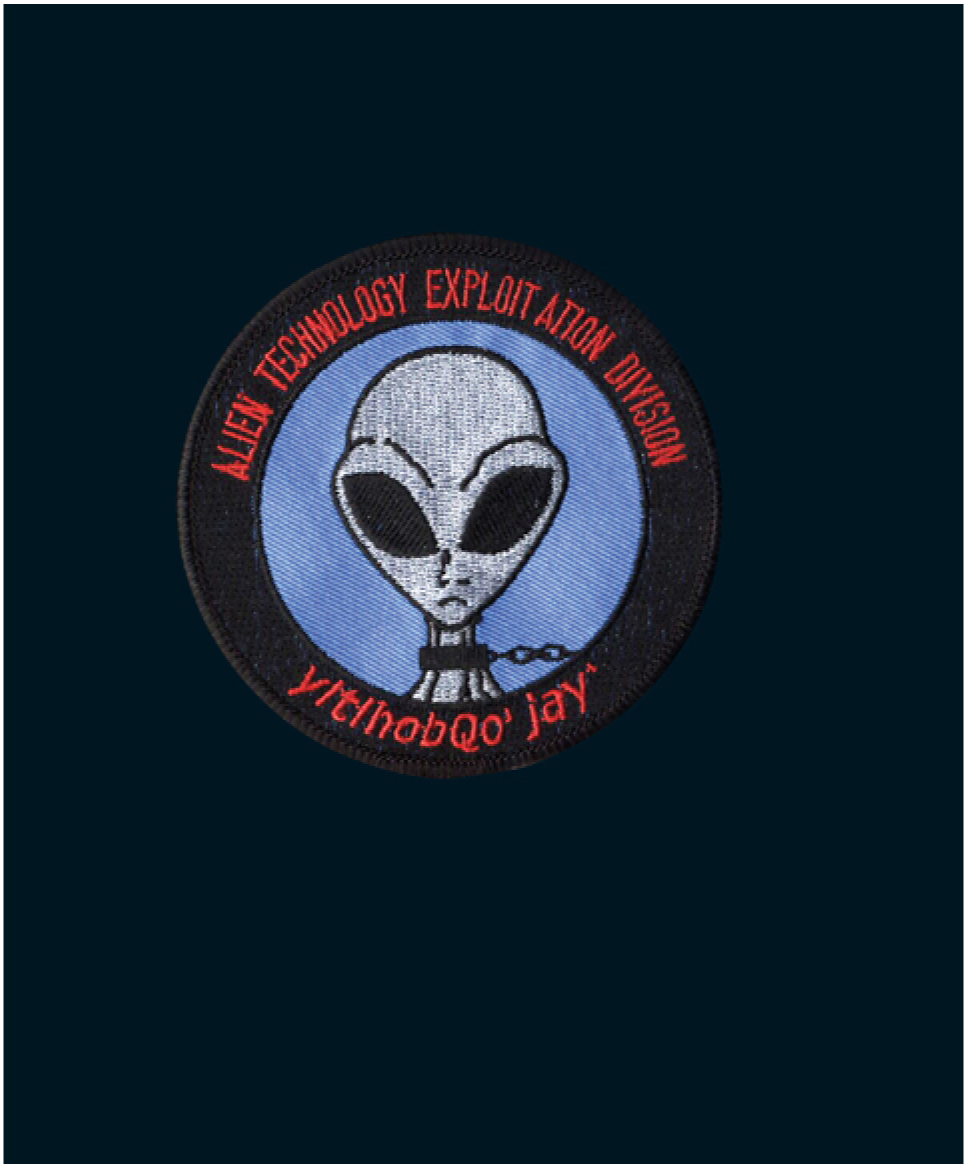
NATIONAL RECONNAISSANCE OFFICE
2000
WE OWN THE NIGHT

NATIONAL RECONNAISSANCE OFFICE “WE OWN THE NIGHT”

This patch commemorates the August 17, 2000, launch of a “classified National Reconnaissance Office payload” atop a Titan IV rocket from Vandenberg Air Force Base in Southern California.

Clues in the patch’s imagery seem to indicate that the satellite in question was, in fact, an ONYX spy satellite, also known by the code name Lacrosse. The owl eyes and the phrase “We Own the Night” seem to imply an imaging platform that can “see” in darkness, indicating a satellite that uses synthetic aperture radar to produce images of the Earth’s surface. The wire mesh surrounding the owl’s eyes is perhaps indicative of the mesh on ONYX satellites, which is purported to cover its antennae.

The triangular images on the patch represent other ONYX satellites, all of which are in a reconnaissance orbit. (Different satellite orbits do different “jobs.”) Two of the filled-in shapes represent active ONYX satellites. The hollowed-out shape represents “Lacrosse I,” which was de-orbited in 1997 after nine years in service (it was originally deployed from the space shuttle Atlantis on mission STS-27). The third solid shape represents the satellite being launched.


ALIEN TECHNOLOGY EXPLOITATION DIVISION
yItlhobQo' jay'

ALIEN TECHNOLOGY EXPLOITATION DIVISION

The Alien Technology Exploitation Division patch was designed by Robert Fabian during the time he was assigned to a classified unit working in a secure facility at Air Force Space command:

> I designed this patch several years ago while stationed at Headquarters, Air Force Space Command. A couple of friends and I pooled our money and had them made—strictly unofficially. I'm afraid there's not a whole lot of symbolism in it. We were working inside a SCIF (vault) and our friends and coworkers used to like giving us a hard time about it, asking if our office was where they kept the alien bodies. As a joke, we told them that dead aliens were no use; we needed live ones to explain their technology to us. After one particularly grueling late night working on briefing slides that went nowhere, we came up with the patch idea. The Klingon translates to "Don't Ask!"
>
> We wore them on our flightsuits for a couple of months before anyone in authority spotted them. Our boss's boss's boss, a Brigadier General, only reaction was to ask where he could get one.

CATCH A FALLING STAR

CATCH A FALLING STAR

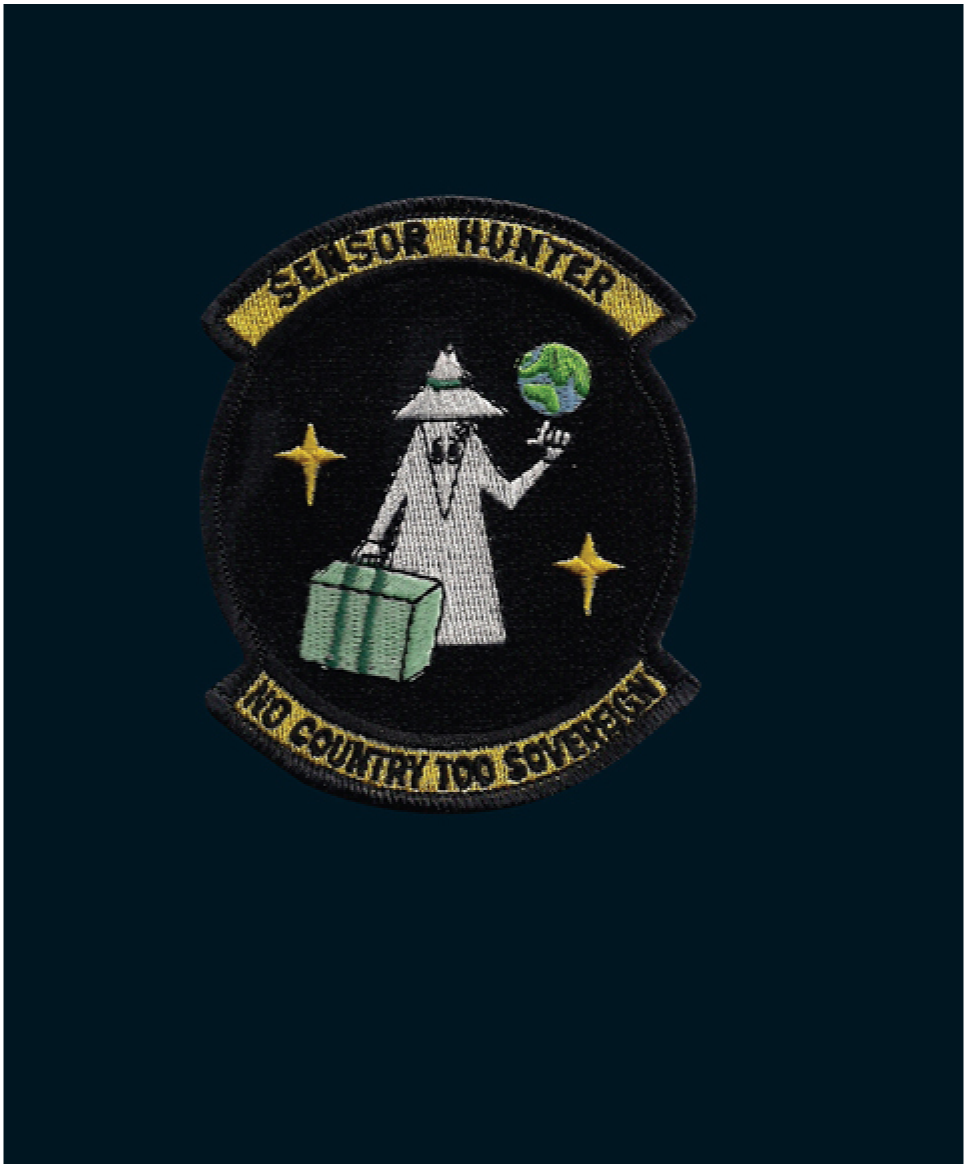
Between the launch of the first photo-reconnaissance satellite in 1960 and the maturation of digital imaging chips in the 1970s, spy satellites produced photographs on long sheets of film. After the satellite's camera had exposed a roll, the film canister ejected from the spacecraft and parachuted towards Earth. Special film-recovery teams were charged with catching the film canisters midair over the Pacific using specially modified aircraft based in Hawaii. This patch was worn by the 6594th Test Group, which was charged with these sensitive missions.

45 SW
AV-018
PAN
PALLADIUM AT NIGHT
ULA
ATLAS

PAN

PAN is a classified spacecraft launched into a geostationary orbit from Cape Canaveral on September 8, 2009. PAN is unique among classified American satellites because, while it is discussed by contractors and appears on military launch schedules, it is not publicly “claimed” by any intelligence or military agency. Space analysts have speculated that the Central Intelligence Agency may be responsible for the satellite.

While some analysts believe the acronym PAN stands for “Pick a Name,” the launch patch for PAN contains the phrase “Palladium at Night.” In Greek and Roman mythology, a palladium was a sacred object—like a statue—that was believed to protect the city or state possessing it. “Pan” could also refer to the Greek god known for inspiring fear and confusion (“pan” is the root of “panic”). PAN may act as a communications relay for armed CIA Predator and Reaper drones operating in Pakistan and Afghanistan.


SENSOR HUNTER
NO COUNTRY TOO SOVEREIGN

SENSOR HUNTER

The unit associated with the Sensor Hunter patch is unknown. Based on the symbolism, it seems likely that it is devoted to reconnaissance and intelligence operations.

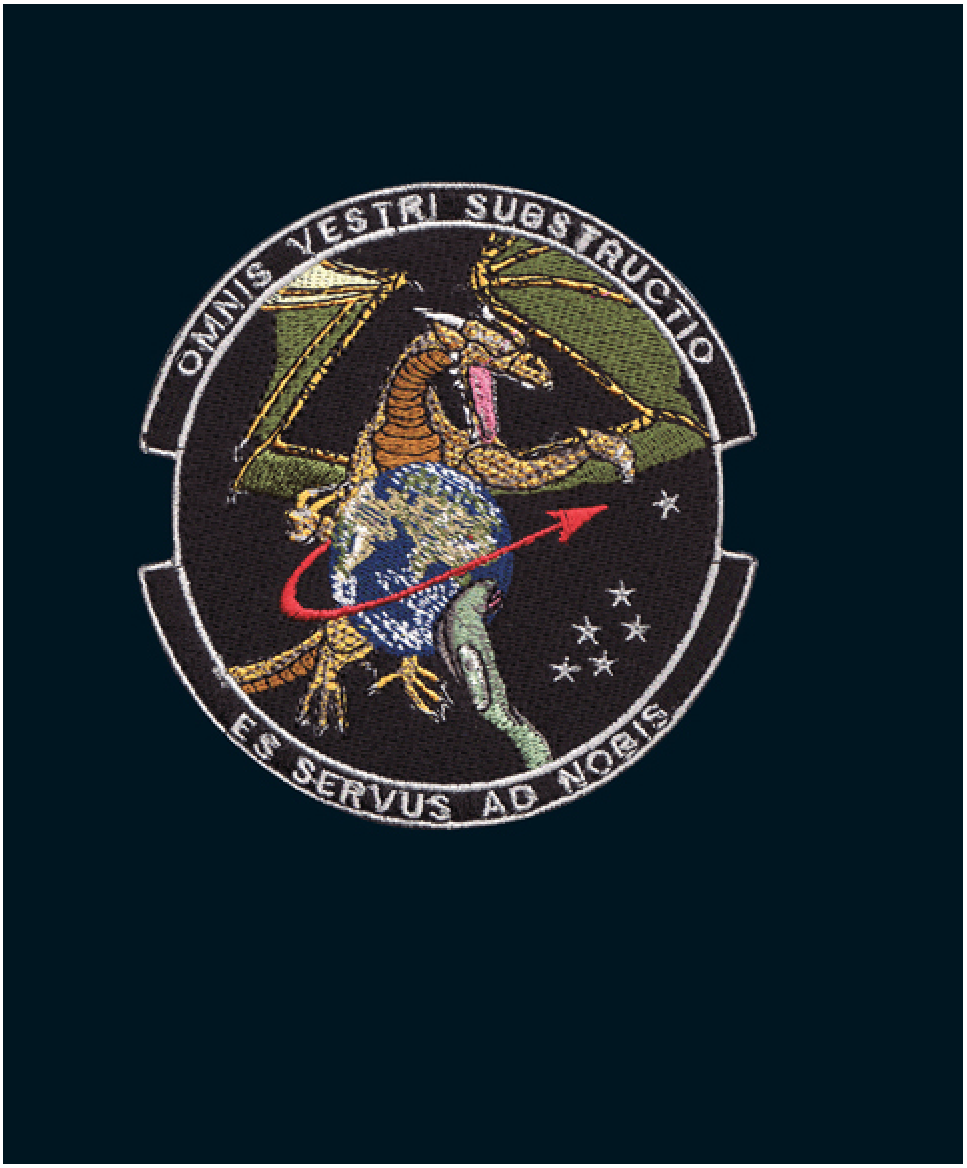
UHF F/O
BELIEVE

UHF F/O

The U.S. Navy’s Ultra High Frequency Follow On (UFO) program is a series of communications satellites designed to replace older Fleet Satellite Communications (FLTSATCOM) and Leasat spacecraft.

The Navy uses UFO satellites as a global communications network, connecting ships at sea, fixed installations, and mobile terminals.

The first UFO satellite (Block 1) was launched in 1993, and the most recent UFO (Block 4) was launched in 2003.


OMNIS VESTRI SUBSTRUCTIO
ES SERVUS AD NOBIS

UNKNOWN DRAGON PATCH

The program associated with this patch remains obscure, but its symbolism provides a number of clues. Overall, the patch strongly suggests a signal intelligence (SIGINT) spacecraft. Dragons have long been associated with SIGINT launches, and the dragon's wings underline the connection (golden dragon wings often symbolize the massive gold-foil dish antennae characteristic of SIGINT spacecraft). Moreover, the red arrow's trajectory suggests a Molniya orbit similar to the JUMPSEAT and TRUMPET spacecraft. In the visual language of classified space launch patches, stars often represent the number of spacecraft in a given lineage or "constellation." The stars here suggest that this spacecraft is being added to a preexisting constellation of five other craft with similar missions.

The meanings of the red point in Asia and the snake-like figure in the lower part of the patch are unclear, although the cobra may refer to a "COBRA"-series sensor platform related to other SIGINT technologies such as "COBRA BRASS," "COBRA BALL," and "COBRA JUDY."

The Latin phrase *Omnis Vestri Substructio Es Servus Ad Nobis* recalls a 2001–2002 internet meme from a poorly translated Japanese video game: "All Your Base Are Belong to Us." In the opening dialog of the game, an operator says, "We get signal."

Nitwits Rubes Oafs
TOP SECRET
Setec Astronomy

NITWITS RUBES OAFS, SETEC ASTRONOMY

The first letter of each word in the phrase “Nitwits Rubes and Oafs” spells out the agency responsible for this patch: the NRO, the National Reconnaissance Office. Furthermore, “OAFS” could be an acronym for Onizuka Air Force Station, an Air Force Space Operations base in Sunnyvale, California, colloquially known as the Blue Cube.

It is unclear what the collection of three white stars and one black star represents, although these may be related to the collection of four triangles from the NRO’s “We Own the Night” patch depicted on pg. 127.

The phrase “Setec Astronomy” figures prominently in the 1992 film *Sneakers*, in which the phrase is an anagram for “Too Many Secrets.”

OD-4/DX
We Own The Night

OD-4 / DL AND DX

These patches are from Operating Division 4 of the National Reconnaissance Office. In the OD-4 / DX patch, the phrase “We Own the Night” recalls the phrase associated with the radar-imaging capabilities on the ONYX series of spy satellites. The figure of the owl is also consistent with the theme of seeing at night. The mesh-like structure seems to represent the imaging capabilities of reconnaissance satellites in general, while the polar orbits represented by the rings around the globe are consistent with the types of orbits used by spy satellites.

Mission Operations
You can run...

MISSION OPERATIONS — YOU CAN RUN …

Another patch associated with Operating Division 4 of the National Reconnaissance Office. The background pattern of stars seems to represent the night sky, with the single white star signifying a reconnaissance satellite. Three orbits are depicted around the Earth, all of which are associated with different reconnaissance tasks.

The horizontal orbit around the Earth represents a geostationary orbit for communications and (in the case of the NRO) signals intelligence collection. The Rhyolite/Aquacade series of satellites, for example, were kept in a geostationary orbit over Indochina to constantly monitor Soviet and Chinese communications during the Cold War. The downlink for the Rhyolite satellites was located in the Australian outback at Pine Gap, where the collected signals were encrypted, then sent to the NSA at Fort Meade via another geosynchronous satellite.

The highly elliptical ring depicted on the patch represents a Molniya orbit, which allows a reconnaissance satellite to spend most of its time over one particular region of the Earth and is often used by SIGINT satellites.

The third ring represents a polar orbit, an orbit often associated with imaging and photography because a satellite in such an orbit will cover much larger swaths of the Earth’s surface than satellites in other orbits.

AF TENCAP SPECIAL APPLICATIONS
ODERINT DUM METUANT

AF TENCAP SPECIAL APPLICATIONS

TENCAP is an acronym for Tactical Exploitation of National Capabilities, a collection of programs that involve developing tactical (battlefield) applications out of reconnaissance satellite capabilities (which are normally thought of as strategic).

“Special” almost invariably means “black” or highly classified.

The phrase *“Oderint Dum Metuant”* is associated with Caligula, the First century Roman emperor whose name became synonymous with depravity, madness, cruelty, and tyranny. It translates “Let them hate so long as they fear.”

Numquam Ante Numquam Iterum

NRO — SNAKES

This patch was designed for the November 8, 1997, launch of spacecraft USA-136, which is believed to be the third spacecraft in the TRUMPET constellation (also known as JEROBOAM). The TRUMPET constellation consists of three spacecraft: USA-103, USA-112, and USA-136.

The three snakes probably represent the three spacecraft that make up TRUMPET, and the three stars at the top of the patch may refer to the same. The way the snakes encircle the earth may also be significant: two of the tails seem to illustrate highly inclined molniya-type orbits, designed to loiter over northern latitudes, while the third seems to illustrate a geostationary orbit. This is curious because all three TRUMPET spacecraft are known to have been placed in molniya orbits.

The Latin inscription reads “Never Before Never Again.”

In documents submitted to the United Nations in compliance with the Convention on Objects Launched into Space, the United States described USA-136 as a “spacecraft engaged in practical applications and uses of space technology such as weather or communications.”

NRO — DRAGON

This is a program patch from the National Reconnaissance Office, the United States' "black" space agency whose existence was a secret until the early 1990s (the agency was formed in the early 1960s).

The patch is associated with a classified satellite launched into geosynchronous orbit from Cape Canaveral on September 9, 2003. Known by the code names MENTOR and ADVANCED ORION, the spacecraft is a late-generation signals-intelligence satellite descended from the 1970s–era RHYOLITE program.

In a series of 2008 articles in *The Space Review*, Dwayne Day showed that the dragon figure has been associated with space-based SIGINT platforms going back as far as the 1970s. Large, outspread wings are associated with SIGINT spacecraft and thought to represent the circular, football-field sized antennas used to collect stray signals from earth.

The meaning of the diamond is unknown.

MELIOR DIABOLUS QUEM SCIES
VAFB
1st DELTA IV-H
SLC-6

MELIOR

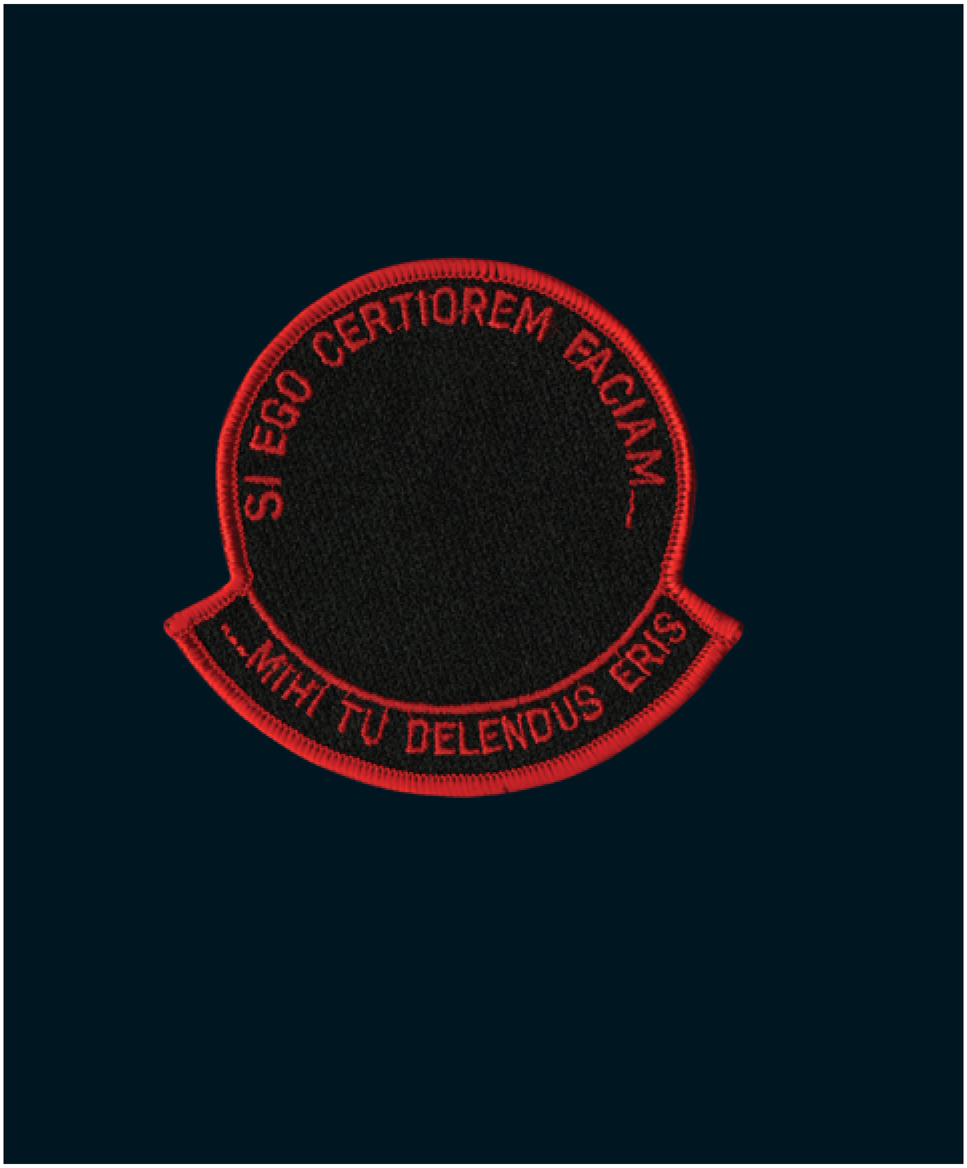
This patch for National Reconnaissance Office Launch 49 shows a phoenix rising from flames, with fourteen stars in the background, another star obscured by the bird's wing, along with the Latin phrase "melior diabolus quem scies."

Dwane Day, writing in *The Space Review*, has argued that the fourteen stars represent the number of satellites in the KH-11 electro-optical reconnaissance family since its debut in 1976, and that the obscured star signifies a failed launch.

The KH-11 series was supposed to be replaced by a twenty-first century system called Future Imagery Architecture (FIA). The FIA program, however, was cancelled after massive budget overruns and technology failures. In the meantime, the NRO was left with a shrinking constellation of active KH-11s (there are usually four KH-11s in orbit at one time).

The patch for NROL-49 strongly suggests that it will be a final one for the KH-11; the launch is said to have been assembled from spare parts. Thus, the symbolism of a bird rising from fire and ash may represent a KH-11 rising from FIA's demise.

The Latin phrase seems to strongly corroborate this. *"Melior diabolus quem scies,"* translates as "Better the devil you know."


SI EGO CERTIOREM FACIAM...
...MIHI TU DELENDUS ERIS

SI EGO CERTIOREM

This patch was designed as a generic insignia for “black” projects conducted by the Navy’s Air Test and Evaluation Squadron Four (VX-4) based at Point Mugu, California. It was reportedly used during the navy’s involvement with the TSSAM program. It may still be worn by members of the VX-9 squadron formed from a merger of VX-4 and VX-5. VX-9’s mission is to test strike aircraft, conventional weapons, electronic warfare equipment, and to develop tactics involving these weapons systems. The Latin phrase *“Si Ego Certiorem Faciam … Mihi Tu Delendus Fris”* roughly translates into a cliché commonly heard in the vicinity of “black” programs: “I could tell you, but then I’d have to kill you.”

But the phrasing here is unusual because it is written in the passive voice: a more accurate translation of the Latin would be “I could tell you, but then you would have to be destroyed by me.” By employing the passive voice the patch’s designer makes two references that don’t exist in other phrasings. The first reference is to the Greek God of Chaos, Eris, about whom Homer wrote in Book Four of the *Iliad:* “[Eris] whose wrath is relentless, she is the sister and companion of murderous Ares. She who is only a little thing at the first, but thereafter grows until she strides on the earth with her head striking heaven. She then hurled down bitterness equally between both sides as she walked through the onslaught making men’s pain heavier.”

The passive phrasing of the Latin also echoes the words of Second century B.C. Roman senator Cato the Elder, who roamed the Senate repeating the words *“Carthago delenda est”*—“Carthage must be destroyed.” In 149 B.C., Cato got his wish and Rome attacked the city, which was located in North Africa near present-day Tunis. Three years after beginning their assault, the Roman army overran Carthage, tore down its walls, and sold its inhabitants into slavery. After the Roman Senate declared that no one would ever live where Carthage had stood, legend holds that Rome salted the earth around the city in order to ensure that Carthage would remain a wasteland for generations.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

Although this book's title page bears the name of a single author, projects such as this are by their very nature collaborative endeavors. The book you're holding is no exception. Numerous people have given me generous access to their time, insight, and to their personal collections in order to realize this project. The majority of them, for obvious reasons, wish to remain anonymous. You know who you are. I thank you immensely. For the record, I'd like to acknowledge the contributions of Peter Merlin, Bugs Mitchell, T. Glen Larson, Rebecca Zorach, Iain Boal and the folks from Dreamland Resort for helping me find and understand the images that have gone into this collection.

I'd also like to thank my colleagues in academia and the arts for their consistent inspiration and support: Negar Azimi, *Bidoun* magazine, Colby Chamberlain, *Cabinet* magazine, Lauren Cornell, Beatriz da Costa, Apsara DiQuinzio, Eyebeam Art and Technology Center, Lisa Farjam, Aaron Gach and CTM, Ruth Wilson Gilmore, Ken Goldberg, Renée Green, Gillian Hart, IAA, Adriene Jenik, Thomas Keenan, Shiloh Krupar, Laura Kurgan, Jean Lave, Simon Leung, Michael Light, Yates McKee, Julia Meltzer, Lize Mogel, Sina Najafi, Greg Niemeyer, Marisa Olson, Jack Paglen, Allan and Michele Pred, Rhizome.org, Ananya Roy, Rebecca Solnit, Liz Thomas, A. C. Thompson, Nato Thompson, David Thorne, Anne Walsh, Michael Watts, and Benjamin Young. Praba Pilar belongs in a class of her own.

I'm eternally grateful to Becky Smith, Kristina Ernst, Greg Hopkins, Bellwether Gallery, and Ted Weinstein. They make this and other work possible. Above all, I'd like to thank Kelly Burdick and Melville House for their commitment to this rather unusual project.

IMAGES 1, 2, and 3 © TREVOR PAGLEN.

Trevor Paglen is an artist, writer, and geographer. He is the author of *Torture Taxi: On the Trail of the CIA's Rendition Flights* (co-authored with A.C. Thompson), *Blank Spots on a Map: The Dark Geography of the Pentagon's Secret World,* and *Invisible: Covert Operations and Classified Landscapes*. He lives and works in Oakland and New York City.

I Could Tell You But Then You Would Have to Be Destroyed by Me Emblems from the Pentagon’s Black World

© 2008, 2010 Trevor Paglen
Melville House Publishing
145 Plymouth Street
Brooklyn, NY 11201
mhpbooks.com

eISBN: 978-1-935554-78-3

Library of Congress Control Number: 2010932520

v3.1

https://svalispeaksagain.wordpress.com/2018/07/19/hybrid-labs-fact-or-myth/

Svali Speaks Again

Healing from ritual abuse and mind control

Mizpah: Svali Speaks Again
About
Contact
Blog
Articles
Book Info

svalispeaksagain 10:24 pm on July 19, 2018

Tags: mind control (69), nephilim (2), occult (13), programming (60), therapy (3)

Hybrid Labs: Fact or Myth?

Note: the information in this blog post may be triggering to survivors of occultic abuse

Over the years, there have been questions raised and discussions of what have been called “nephilim”, “beautiful ones”, etc., and whether they are real or not. In the Bible, in Genesis, there is mention of “the sons of God” (believed to be angels) having relations with human women, and creating a race of nephilim. The book of Enoch in the Apocrypha also makes some reference to them. Many believe that the myths of half human/half “god” individuals in ancient mythology describe these beings.

What I will share here is based upon my own memories while in the group of these things. I realize that these are recovered memories, shared by parts. Some may disbelieve what I share here, while others may be surprised.

The Jesuit order has been involved in trying to create half-demonic/half-human individuals for many years (since the early 1900’s, especially). This attempt is known as the “Hybrid Project” by those in the order, with the express intent of creating “satan’s son” and includes the following elements:

-A large underground facility (located in Czechoslovakia). This facility has numerous altars within in, where sacrifices are done continuously day and night, for the spiritual empowerment of the project. This facility is equipped with high-tech equipment.

– numerous staff who have strong theta (psychic spiritual) gifts

-birth mothers selected for size, genetics and strength, including strength of will to live.

The latter is extremely important, because carrying a hybrid child is very difficult on the mother. Once impregnated, the birth mother will experience extreme oppression and depression, and over the months, as the fetus grows, the birth mother may literally die from the amount of spiritual oppression in which the mother feels literally consumed from within. In other cases, the

Follow •••

mother will abort the fetus before she herself dies, partway through the pregnancy (this happened to me at age 14, when I was a carrier).

In the earlier days of the project, abortions and birth mother deaths were much more common. Many of the hybrid children born only looked partially human. Over time, the technology was developed, along with enhanced genetics (later generation birth mothers were stronger). Omega teams (individuals with strong omega skills) were also developed, during which a group of spiritually strong individuals would spend time around the clock with the birth mother, and literally "take" for a period of time the oppression for her, which allowed birth mothers to carry fetuses to term, and live.

In recent years, several hybrids have been born that look quite human, and that are the product of a spirit father and human mother during specific rituals. One is an individual that the Jesuits believe is "he who has come" or satan's son; this individual is currently 18 years old.

The main issue regarding hybrids is that they do not think or act like humans. These beings have incredibly strong spiritual abilities, and are born with a natural desire to kill. They do not have to be "trained to kill" as humans do; instead, they must be taught to NOT kill, through bonding with a human (usually the birth mother, who is normally a very high-ranking spiritual individual). The birth mothers feed these infants with a combination of milk and blood, obtained by cutting themselves as they nurse the hybrid infant.

These children are incredibly beautiful, although some (but not all) are a bit "odd" in appearance; they may have titanium white hair and violet eyes; or be incredibly strong (they develop coordination and muscle mass much more quickly than full humans). They are able to send very strong demonic attacks (theta skills). They are exceptionally intelligent, and often take on the characteristics of their "birth spirit" as well as the human mother.

The ultimate plan is that the hybrid children being raised now (must are under age 8) will form the future leadership council of the order.

One of the reasons that I left the order years ago was that I disagreed with this. I saw the terrible things done in these labs, and realized that these creatures do not love human beings, or care about their welfare at all. They actually hate all humans, and require significant bonding and gentling to even be able to appear normal to some degree. I remember going to a Jesuit monastery in southern Poland years ago (early in the project days) to work with a hybrid toddler that the staff were afraid of. The toddler had gotten out very early one morning, gone into the chicken coop, and killed all the chickens by pulling their heads off. The toddler was sitting there, eating them, when I arrived. This type of horrific scene can occur with these beings.

After experiences like this, I felt that the order was wrong to fund and staff the hybrid labs, and chose to leave in protest. This was not "improving the world" in any sense; it was senseless to attempt to breed these beings that had a natural cruelty.

I do realize that what I have written here sounds unbelievable – that by writing this, I risk being blown off as a "nut". I wish with all my heart it wasn't true. But this is occurring, and I ask that all Christians join in prayer that this type of occultic activity would be stopped.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

The overarching purpose of ritual abuse and mind control: remaking man in Satan's image
September 20, 2019
In "dissociation"

The different types of SRA and Mind Control
January 29, 2019
In "mind control"

The Occultic Agenda
April 3, 2021
In "healing"

stephaniekouts 12:58 am on July 22, 2018

Thanks for posting this. It is is actually very believable. To the groups, it must just seem like a 'natural progression'. So good to hear your side of the story. When dealing with the hybrid toddler what methods helped to calm him or her down when no one else knew what to do?

★ Like

svalispeaksagain 1:15 am on July 23, 2018

I was patient, and also relied at the time on my theta (psychic) skills to communicate. I no longer use those skills, but it was important. I also re-bonded the toddler, which helped for a period of time.

★ Liked by 1 person

Russell Mozingo 10:24 pm on November 20, 2018

Thanks for sharing this. You aren't the only one reporting this – Doug Riggs and Amanda Buy have several survivors who were Nephilim mothers. "As in the days of Noah..."

★ Like

John 12:04 am on August 3, 2021

I’ve read much of the info on this site and believe your story but this part may have another explanation. See Mauri’s site – http://reflectionsinthenight.com/grey_aliens.htm

I remember you from an interview you did with Greg Szymanski (Arctic Beacon) and from your forum (Lion and Lamb Ministries) . Glad you are still active.

Svali, have you considered opening up your blog (more active) to comments ?

★ Like

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← Alice in Wonderland Programming Part 2: “Crazy” Alice and Black Alice Programming

Programming to Block Healing →

Blog at WordPress.com.

Henry Stevens

Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science and Technology

SUPERMETALS, LASER WEAPONS AND COLD BOMBS-IN 1944??

Nazi technology extended far further than has generally been acknowledged, in fact to almost unfathomable levels! Yet conventional historians have absolutely failed to provide an adequate picture of the technology, science and weaponry of the Third Reich. Was it government intervention, peer skepticism or just plain intellectual laziness which caused these historians to stop digging?

Henry Stevens takes the story to the mat, providing a glimpse into German research of those times relying mostly on the governments own reports. Some reports were declassified just for this book! Stevens also uses direct Nazi sources, summarized and translated in this book.

Now we know what spooked the Allies in the closing months of WWII and why they were in such a panic to win quickly—they had assembled mind-blowing intelligence reports of Nazi development of supermetals, electric guns, and ray weapons that could stop the engines of Allied aircraft—in addition to highly feared x-ray and laser weaponry. Then there were the bombs. Contained in this book are reports of structured bombs of nipolit, N-stoff bombs, cold bombs, oxygen bombs which could destroy all life, atomic bombs and rumors of the mysterious molecular bomb. The true history of the fuel-air bomb is revealed by our own military. There is even a probability that the SS black alchemists of the Third Reich were experimenting with red mercury bomb technology.

Very exotic technologies are also discussed including German experiments in time, sustained fusion reactions, zero point energy and travel in deep space. The reasons for the scientific flowering in Germany during this period are discussed in terms of a completely different scientific paradigm shared by these scientists and how it relates to a unified view of gravity, matter and energy.

Introduction

Much of the material presented in this book came to me by accident, as the result of fifteen years of research into German flying discs. In my first book, Hitler's Flying Saucers A Guide to German Flying Discs of the Second World War, some of that research was presented. What was not presented in that book are the many references to truly amazing technology which seems to have vanished right off the face of the earth. References to this technology are not mentioned by the victorious former Allied Powers for reasons known only to them.

Slowly, at some point in my investigation of German saucers, the fact that other types of technology had been suppressed became apparent to me. From that point on I began to collect references to unknown technology stemming from the Third Reich, which came to me in addition to references made by other researchers.

Some references are better than others. This fact was hammered home in my first book. The topic in question then, German flying discs, was a loaded one socially and politically No monkey business could be tolerated. That book had to be iron clad and so it had to be written with an iron fist, so to speak. To date, no challenge has been made to my first book on the basis of content or facts. This turn of events is surprising to me as it was aimed at the UFO world and the overwhelming specter of the mass media, neither of which cares much for the concept of German flying saucers. This later force is almost omnipotent and grips much of our entire planet in a Matrix-like-world of ignorance on so many vital issues.

This "grip" is one of the reasons for this book. We realize that the movie, The Matrix, was fiction on the physical level. We are not housed in glass tubes being fed nutrients and given a digital identity and reality as in a computer generated game. But on the intellectual level this is not too far from the situation when it comes to secret technology.

Remember Galileo? He knew the world was not flat but could not advocate this truth because of the church dogma of the times. But there certainly was an underground of thinkers who took his proposition as truth. This underground was obliged to mouth dogma in public, only discussing the truth in secret, among trusted comrades. The proof of this is the New World, for Christopher Columbus knew the world was round before he ever set sail. No man, intelligent or otherwise, would knowingly sail off the side of an abyss. Columbus knew the truth but could not speak it. Yet he must have used this knowledge as a selling point to the very religious queen of Spain, Isabella, as he made his plea for funding. Queen Isabella mouthed the dogma but knew the truth or she would have never funded Columbus. Queen Isabella represented the elite of her time but she was willing to forgo dogma, she was willing to use her suppressed information at this particular moment to make a huge gain for herself and her country.

Today, dogma exists in every body of knowledge. Anybody with half a brain who has been through our educational system knows that something is terribly wrong. We know deep down inside that there are truths not being told. When we do independent research, we find inconsistencies in the data and the theories and explanations we are given. There seems to be something, perhaps many things, which are missing. It almost seems that we are educated, not to further explore the mysteries of life for which we have been "trained", but to explain the existing dogma to those outside of our individual specialty.

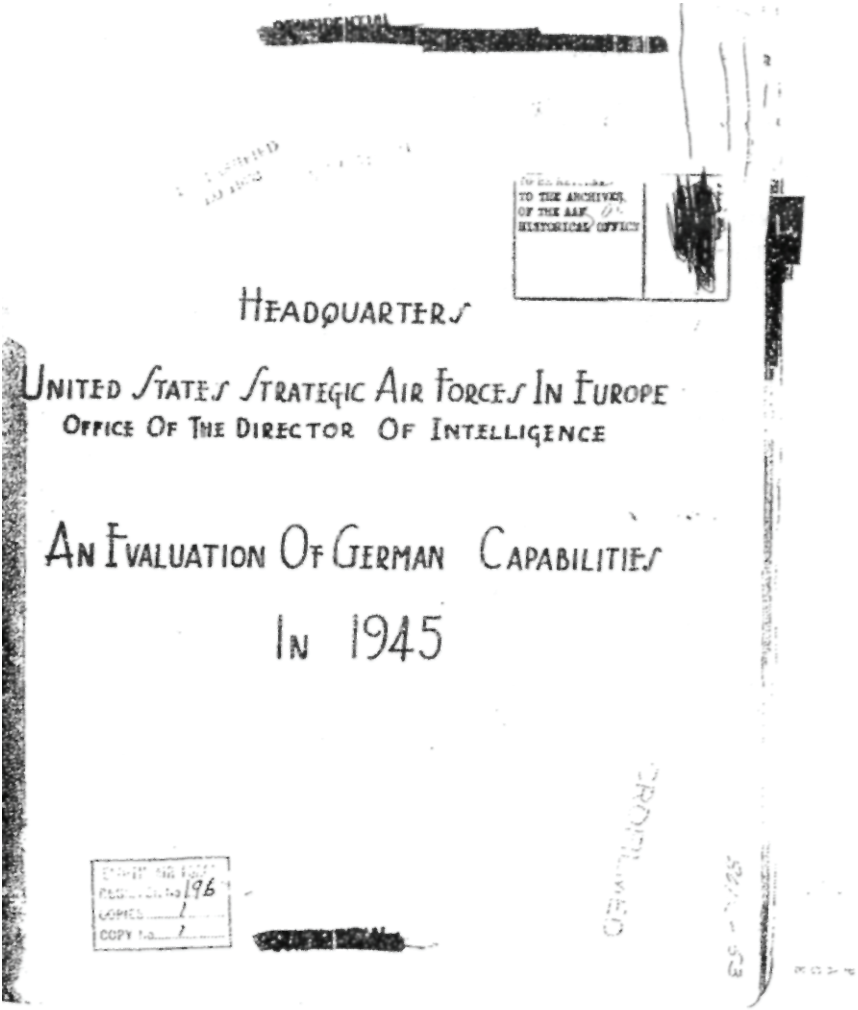
But why should there be missing technology? Science and technology deal in facts without political implications in spite of the efforts of those who have found a comfortable niche in life masquerading in "scientific ethics".

Missing technology is a clue that something is wrong. Missing technology is missing because it has been suppressed. If technology is suppressed, then there is a suppressor. This "suppressor" will eventually use this technology for individual gain. At the right time this technology will surface much as a stock trader illegally uses insider information. If technology is suppressed then, in short, there is a conspiracy to do so. It is my opinion that this conspiracy is large is scope, just as it was in the day of Christopher Columbus and Queen Isabella. The conspirators can be found at the nexus of military, industrial, political, financial and media circles. The exact nature of this conspiracy is really beyond the scope of this book.

In presenting the material in this book I am not as concerned in building the air-tight case as I did for German flying discs. This time around, I am interested in presenting as many examples of lost technology as possible. The only caveat being that the particular technology must be of some interest to me. For this reason some real breakthroughs made by the Germans will be omitted. For instance, breakthroughs in synthetic fabrics and fabric dyes will not be discussed other than to say now that it seems that the Germans can make anything from coal tar from aspirin to plastic. References are given immediately after each chapter so that interested individuals can verify what is said and begin their own research from there.

The stories and tales gathered herein do not constitute the entire collection of lost German technology. Far from it. Remember, the German Patent Office lost thirty boxcars of material to the Allies when the war ended. But even that is not the end of the matter, however. The SS never even bothered to notify the German Patent Office of that institution's advances, thinking itself well above mere patents. In addition to this there were individual inventors in individual laboratories throughout Germany, Austria and the occupied countries whose wartime breakthroughs were taken by known or unknown entities when the conflict ended.

This is not a book about the organization of German wartime research. German wartime research was administered in a complicated way and was always changing in its organization. As far as I am concerned, the only important thing to remember is that as the war progressed the SS secured an ever-increasing control over German research. Some facilities remained independent to the end but probably continued to do so only at the pleasure of the SS command. By the end of the war a whole new research and production command and control structure had been set up which reduced or replaced the



[redacted]

[illegible]
TO THE ARCHIVES
OF THE AAF
HISTORICAL OFFICE

[redacted]

HEADQUARTERS

UNITED STATES STRATEGIC AIR FORCES IN EUROPE
OFFICE OF THE DIRECTOR OF INTELLIGENCE

AN EVALUATION OF GERMAN CAPABILITIES
IN 1945

[illegible]
[illegible] No. 196
COPIES 1
COPY No. 1

[redacted]

An Evaluation Of German Capabilities In 1945 - The "Rosetta Stone" This intelligence document was instrumental in finally cracking the U.S. government's wall of silence regarding World War Two German high technology. This document supplied the government's names for German projects. Using German names or using our own vernacular, our government always claimed a "no record" response to requests for this information. Using their own names for things, the government had no option but to produce the documentation under provisions of the Freedom Of Information Act. For instance, our words are foo fighters but their words are phoo bombs. Another example is Motorstoppmittel vs. Magnetic Wave. We now have evidence for all the weaponry discussed in this report. This document continues for the next two pages.

PART SIX - OTHER WEAPONS

1. In the following paragrpahs are listed the actual or potential weapons which the Germans may use against U.STAF operations in 1945. For the most part they include the so-called V weapons. No consideration is given to those for which there is lacking evidence of possible use for some time to come. Both V-1 and V-2 are considered in the analysis because, even though they are, in effect, long-range artillery, they do possess the ability to affect our operations by hitting airfields, and supplies enroute and in concentrations.

2. V-2:

a. Present status. The V-2, or rocket projectile, with a warhead of approximately one ton, and a current range of 225 miles; is being fired at London at the rate of 180/250 per month, and against Continental ports at the rate of approximately 300 per month.

Against London its accuracy is currently rated at 3.2/1,000 per square mile at the main point of impact. Against Continental ports it is estimated at the least 6.1/1,000 per square mile at the main point of impact. The best record was 75 in a twenty-four hour period within a four square mile area of the Antwerp Docks.

b. 1945 Potential: The German plan calls for an increase in montly production from 600 to 1200. It is known, however, that any increase would be at the expense of the aircraft industry in radio equipment and certain essential components. An increase in accuracy would depend upon increased firings and increased use of already proved radio equipment, without which the majority of firings are conducted today. It is thought unlikely that range will be materially increased. Accuracy begins to fall off somewhere between 165 and 190 miles, and becomes increasingly inaccurate to the maximum of 225 miles. Whether or not V-2 becomes an increased menace in 1945 must depend upon the position of the aircraft industry and its requirements. Its potential lies in stabilization of the expanding aircraft program.

Larger rockets (68 feet in length as against 45 feet) are known to exist, and may appear in small quantities during the year. They would have a considerably larger warhead.

3. V-1:

a. Present Status: The so-called Flying Bomb is being fired from launching ramps against Continental targets, ports and supply concentrations, at the rate of 600 per month, and against England by airborne launchings, at the rate of 250 per month. Accuracy against Continental targets is now between 11.0/1,000 per square mile at main point of impact, and against England at 3.3/1,000 per square mile at main point of impact.

b. 1945 Potential: Here again, the German plan calls for an expansion in production, but, as in the case of V-2, this expansion must be at the expense of other vital industries. Authoritative estimates state that airborne launchings against England may reach 450 per month, and that a very substantial increase of launchings on the Continent will take place. On the other hand, the number of He-111s available for airborne launchings is distinctly limited, and the demands of other industries are such that the expanded production may not be carried out as planned.

4. "PHOO" BOMBS: Occasionally reports by pilots and the testimony of prisoners of war and escapees describe this weapon as a radio-controlled, jet-propelled, still-nosed, short-range, high performance ramming weapon, for use against bombing formations. Its speed is estimated at 525 mph

[redacted]

and it is estimated to have an endurance of 25 minutes. These bombs are launched from local airfields, and are radio-controlled, either from the ground, or possibly by aircraft. The few incidents reported by pilots indicate no success. They have passed over formations, andperformed various antics in the vicinity of formations. It is believed that in order to be effective some 100/200 would have to be launched against a formation, and it is also believed that they will not be produced in sufficient quantities to prove a real menace in 1945.

5. MAGNETIC WAVE: The best information available is from very secret and reliable sources, and forces the conclusion that this weapon exists as a possibility. It is designed to cause failure of various electrical apparatus in aircraft. Technically it does not appear to be a possible serious threat in 1945. At most it would be effective at a few locations for preventing ground strafing. Evidence to date indicates that it could have little effect against high level attack, since the apparatus would be too cumbersome to permit its use in aircraft.

6. GASES APPLICABLE TO AIRCRAFT: Two types of gases applicable to aircraft are known. One is designed to cause pre-ignition, blowing the heads off cylinders; and the other is designed to break down the viscosity of lubricating oils. Under laboratory conditions, free from operational considerations, these gases are a distinct possibility. It is doubtful, however, that with proper fighter escorts a sufficient concentration of either of these gases could be thrown against our formations to have any serious effect. Similarly, it is doubted whether sufficient anti-aircraft guns are available to produce an effective concentration, and it is probably that any possible concentration would be no more effective than a similar amount of well-directed flak.

7. ATOMIC BOMB: Close check of every report, and close surveillance of the area in which tests are alleged to have taken place lead to the conclusion that such bombs are not a likelihood in 1945.

THIS PAGE IS UNCLASSIFIED

figures we normally think of as running the Third Reich such as, for instance, Herrmann Goring and Albert Speer. When the Allies finally forced the collapse of Germany and began interrogating the officials with whom they were familiar, they had to learn a whole new set of names and locations in deciphering the new weapons research and development chain of command. First and foremost of these was General Dr. Ing. Hans Kammler and the super-secret organization which he set up to research and catalog scientific findings within the Reich, the Kammler Group.

We will start off with some simple, seemingly isolated reports.

We may see some of them again in a completely different setting or in an advanced form, so please bear with me and read from start to finish without jumping around.

What happened to all this stuff? I have reports and lots of questions myself but not many answers as to where it all went or why. You will have some ideas about what happened before you finish this book. I will save my speculation for the Conclusion.

Contents

Introduction i

1 The Kammler Group 1

2 The Stonewall and Undervaluation 6

3 German Digital Computers 18

4 German Flying Discs Update 24
Witness to a German Flying Disc

5 The Electromagnetic Vampire 27

6 Liquid Air 30

7 Synthetic Penicillin Substitute "3065" 37

8 Synthetic Blood 42

9 Human Nutrition and Performance Enhances 44

10 Magnetofunk and Himmelskompass and Point 103 52

11 German Free Energy Research 58

12 Technical Infrastructure 63

13 German Atomic Test 75

14 La Fusee Pilotee "T" 87

15 Mysterious German Bombs 91

16 "Projekt Hexenkessel" The Fuel-Air Bomb 103

17 "Pfiel" (Arrow) Aircraft 112

18 Supermetals 122

19 N-Stoff 131

20 Nipolit 134

21 Red Mercury 137

22 Electric Gun or Rail Gun 152

23 Electric Gun Part 2 156

24 Means To Stop Engines
Gas 163

25 Means To Stop Engines
Magnetic Wave —Motorstoppmittel 170

26 "Death Rays"
X-Ray—Gamma Ray Weapon 190

27 "Death Rays"
Laser Weapon 198

28 Distillation off Crude Oil Using Sound Waves 209

29 Synthetic Production of Gasoline 212

30 Super Lubricants 217

31 What is Happening in Antarctica? 220

32 Large German Mystery Rockets
"The Hammer of Thor" 227

33 Yet Another "V-3" Rocket 238

34 "Y" Communication Facilities 245

35 Experiments in Time 248

36 Dr. Ronald Richter 258

37 Dr. Friedrich Gold, Again 306

38 Why? 309

39 Kammler Again 324

40 Conclusion 332

Thanks 335

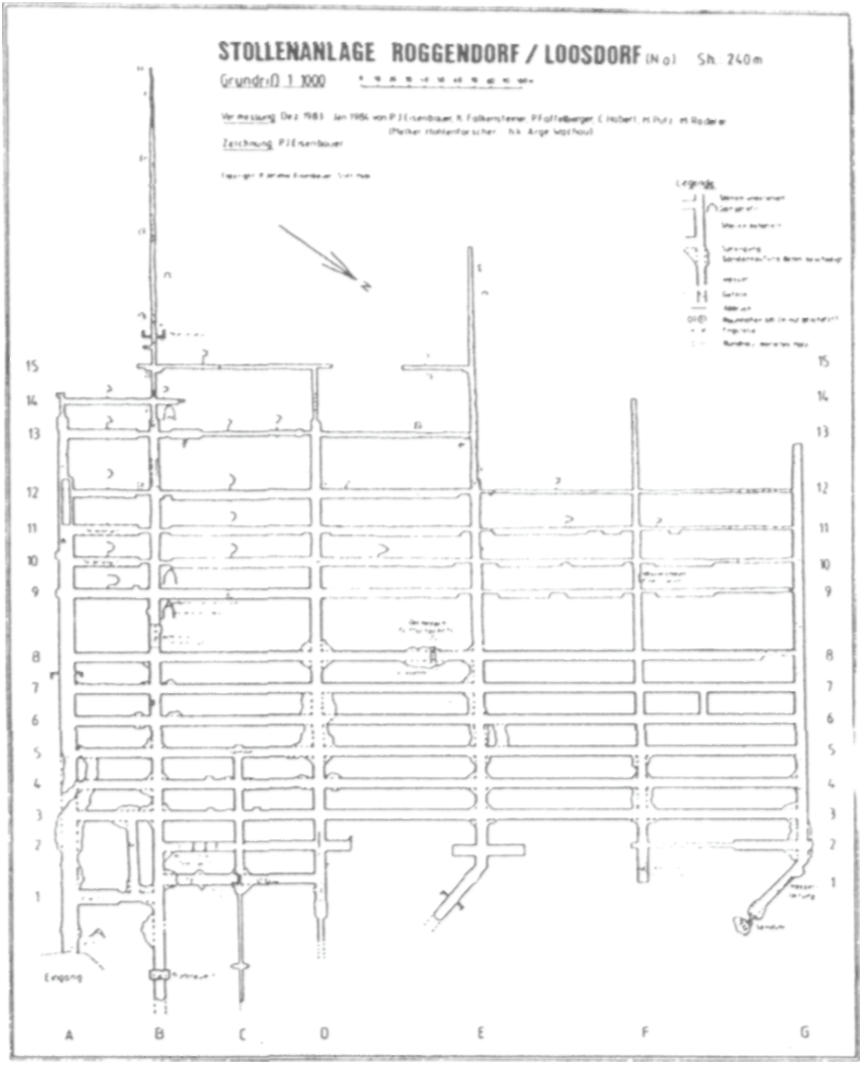
1 The Kammler Group

The Kammler Group or Kammler Staff owes its name to Hans Kammler. Kammler was born on August 26, 1901 at Stettin in northern Germany. He was a Doctor of Engineering. Kammler specialized in the very rapid construction of bombproof underground facilities. His ability to work ahead of schedule impressed all those around him and caused his rapid rise within the military-engineering world and from the Luftwaffe to the SS.

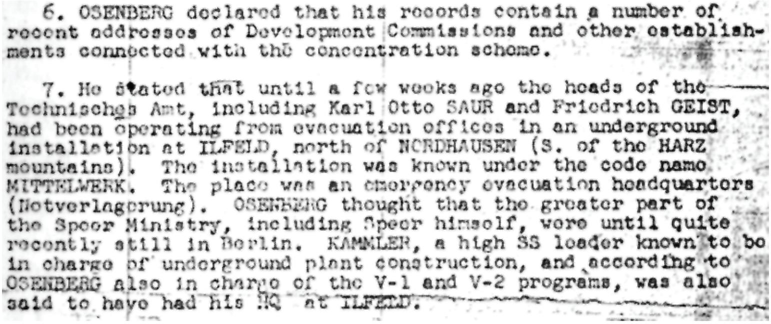
Parallelling Kammler's meteoric rise was the rise of the SS itself. The SS increasingly usurped power from the military but it also usurped industrial and scientific research and development, as well as economic functions which had previously been in civilian hands. This transfer of power exploded following the August, 1944 attempted assassination of Hitler. From that moment on, Hitler seems to have relied on the SS primarily.

Meanwhile, Kammler's SS Works Division C was busy burrowing into German soil and burying and hiding its industry there. He built countless underground installations, some of which remain unknown and unexplored today. To do this, Kammler had at his disposal, a slave-labor force which could have been as high as 14 million.

Eventually, Kammler became the number three man in the SS, behind Heinreich Himmler and SS General Oswald Pohl. And besides overseeing construction projects Kammler was also given responsibility for missile production in Germany as well as jet aircraft production. At this point Kammler began sucking in


STOLLENANLAGE ROGGENDORF / LOOSDORF (N.ö.) Sh. 240m
Grundriß 1:1000
Vermessung: Dez. 1983 - Jan 1984 von P.J. Eisenbauer, K. Falkensteiner, P. Foffelberger, C. Hobert, H. Putz, M. Roderer
(Melker Höhlenforscher - h.k. Arge Wachau)
Zeichnung: P.J. Eisenbauer
Legende
N
15
14
13
12
11
10
9
8
7
6
5
4
3
2
1
Eingang
A
B
C
D
E
F
G

This is diagram of Kammler's facility in Austria code-named "Quarz". This was nearing completion as the war ended. It would have been Kammler's private nest and headquarters.



6. OSENBERG declared that his records contain a number of recent addresses of Development Commissions and other establishments connected with the concentration scheme.

7. He stated that until a few weeks ago the heads of the Technisches Amt, including Karl Otto SAUR and Friedrich GEIST, had been operating from evacuation offices in an underground installation at ILFELD, north of NORDHAUSEN (S. of the HARZ mountains). The installation was known under the code name MITTELWERK. The place was an emergency evacuation headquarters (Notverlagerung). OSENBERG thought that the greater part of the Speer Ministry, including Speer himself, were until quite recently still in Berlin. KAMMLER, a high SS leader known to be in charge of underground plant construction, and according to OSENBERG also in charge of the V-1 and V-2 programs, was also said to have had his HQ at ILFELD.

These are two statements made by Professor Osenberg in a Combined Intellegence Objectives sub-Committee report, number 51, dated June 2, 1945. Osenberg was head of the Reichs Research Council. Professor Osenberg was a very influential scientist and one who steered the course of scientific research and development within Nazi Germany. In this report, Osenberg actually says the name "Kammler", which is one of the very few times Kammler's name was allowed to be reproduced in this official documentation.

projects and responsibility far beyond the alleged scope of his duties. Eventually, virtually every priority or secret technology and weapons system fell under his control.

This was a big responsibility, even for a guy like Kammler, but Kammler solved or perhaps controlled this problem as he had solved all his other challenges, by organization. Kammler put together a think-tank. This involved finding and organizing a technical staff who could take potential war-winning ideas and research these ideas, develop them to the point of practicality, coordinate their production with an appropriate industrial firm, and deliver them to the field, usually to the Reich's soldiers of choice, the Waffen SS. This means that by war's end, the Kammler Group ending up sitting on a huge library: a nest-egg of German research secrets.

The Kammler Group needed a secure home in which to operate. They needed the use of technical laboratories and machine tools. Kammler found the environment he was looking for in the Skoda Works at Pilsen in what is now the Czech Republic. During World War Two, this region had been annexed by Germany and was part of the Greater German Reich. For a period of time Reinhard Heydrich administered the region with an iron fist resulting in a relatively stable occupied population. The population contained Czechs and also Germans. The Skoda Works relied on German supervisors or German-trained Czech supervisors and a skilled work force of Czechs.

Skoda did many things and must be thought of like one of the major technical industrial manufacturing firms in the USA today. Examples of these are Boeing, General Dynamics, General Electric, Lochkeed or perhaps even General Motors. Skoda was not, however, considered as a core "German" company by the German military since it was outside Germany proper and had a history going back to Austro-Hungarian times. This was perfect for Kammler. Kammler spoke Czech. Skoda had countless sub-facilities in the area. Skoda, technically, had everything Kammler needed.

Security was the last piece in the puzzle. It is a puzzle today because Kammler's security was never breached. It was not breached by the U.S., British Intelligence or even Soviet Intelligence which thought they knew everything. Kammler was able to pull Albrich's Cloak of Obscurity over himself and his staff using a tripple-wall of counterintelligence. There were three counterintelligence divisions at work in the Kammler Group. These were the military counterintelligence unit, the political counterintelligence unit and the industrial counterintelligence unit.

This security arrangement was so successful that when the Allies began advancing into Germany in the early spring of 1945, nobody asked the local population anything about Kammler or the Kammler Group. Neither side knew anything about it. By the time the "boots on the ground" realized who Dr. Kammler and his organization really were, his very name became a forbidden subject. This was probably so lest the other Allied Powers, especially the Soviets, learn of any potential treasure-trove of scientific secrets.

Remember, Kammler administrated up to 14 million slave-laborers. I think we can all agree that this was probably illegal and this led to the deaths of some, if not many, conscripts. Yet Kammler was not charged with war crimes at the Nuremberg hearings. Kammler's name only came up twice and nobody, none of the Allied Powers conducting these hearings, bothered with follow-up questions about Kammler. Also remember that Field Marshal Hermann Goering was tried, convicted and sentenced to hang for using slave labor. What is going on here?

Dr. Ing. Hans Kammler's life and "death" are full of mysteries. Unfortunately, we only have so much time and space, so this discussion of Kammler and his Kammler Group must be limited to secret weapons and high technology activities. Kammler would have had knowledge of everything described in the pages of this book. As a matter of fact, this book as well as everything ever written about Kammler, German secrets, and German secret weapons is probably only a tiny drop in the whole bucket of his nest-egg.

SOURCES

1. Agoston, Tom, 1985, Blunder How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Supersecrets to Russia, Dodd, Mead and Company, New York

2 The Stonewall and Undervaluation

Before describing some of this lost technology itself a couple of things should be mentioned. Getting real information out of the government of the United States is not as easy as it should be if you read the Freedom Of Information Act. For some reason, the government is very reluctant to disclose anything once classified. Sometimes it even goes beyond this, however. Sometimes information is declassified but then filed away where the light will never shine, without index or filing records. In fact, the information was classified, declassified and then, in the de facto sense, re-classified. Here is how it works.

The Army, or Air Force or Navy has wartime records. After awhile, they decide these records are old news and reassign and ship them to the U.S. National Archives and Records Office for storage, safe keeping and perhaps declassification and dissemination. The National Archives are stingy with their index system. They have a computer-based system, known by their acronym, N.A.I.L. but using this system a person cannot even find records previously produced by the National Archives. This secret-keeping regarding their holdings allows them to generate a "no record" at will. Any argument or appeal is met with the refrain "we don't do research". The U.S. National Archives honestly believes pulling a file is research. The only working methodology is to request a list of their holding for a particular topic as a separate Freedom Of Information request and then use it against them. Even with box numbers, file numbers, group numbers, etc., the National Archives frequently claim the item is out of file or lost. So, even with all the appropriate identification, so their clerks can walk right to the filing cabinet, open the drawer and go right to the information requested, they then seem to want to know which of their two hands is holding the file in question. This is their stonewall strategy and it is their first line of defense.

The German U-boat, U-234, and its cargo are an infamous example of this secrecy. Briefly, U-234 was a mine-layer, converted into a cargo submarine which left Germany for the Norwegian fjord of Kristiansand in the middle of March, 1945, the dying days of the 3rd Reich. Aboard were two Japanese officers, reels of microfilm on super-secret German weaponry, an entire disassembled Me 262 (the jet fighter) German scientists, specialists and technicians, and ten barrels of uranium oxide each weighing 56 kg each. This was not normal uranium oxide. It had been irradiated in an atomic reactor (or perhaps enriched by some other process) and converted into uranium 235, the uranium required for an atomic bomb.

This U-boat allegedly bound for Japan, ended up surrendering to U.S. authorities on May 19th, 1945, off the east coast of the United States. The story of the enriched uranium falling into the hands of the Americans in this way is legendary and has been cited many times. Remember, the Germans surrendered on May 8, 1945 and the United States was still at war with Japan at this time. The first atomic bomb detonated by the U.S. authorities was not until July, 1945. There has always been the hint or suspicion that the uranium carried by the U-234 found its way into the American uranium bomb dropped on Nagasaki.

I set out to verify this naval legend. I wanted to actually document the uranium on the German U-234. I wrote to the source always given, the U.S. National Archives. They generated a bill for copying and a statement denying fissionable material being aboard U-234 (see the copy of the National Archive's letter). I requested the bill of lading anyway and there was no uranium on their list, as they stated. Naturally, I appealed and got nowhere.

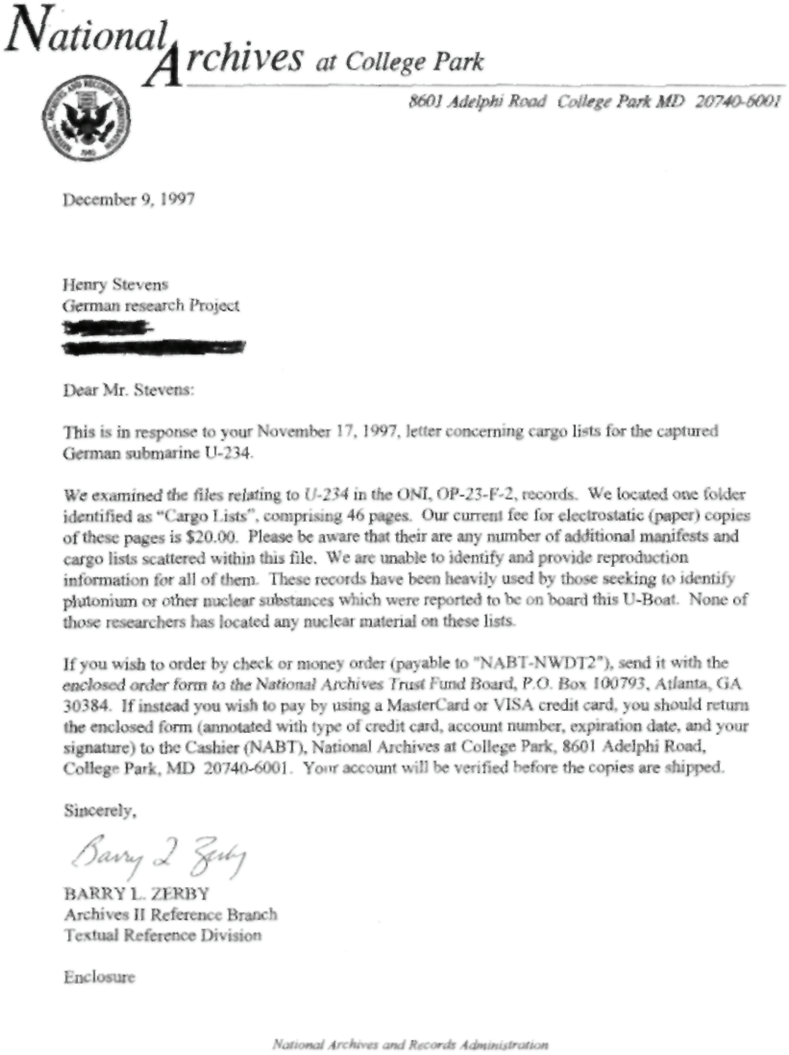
Originally, U-234 had surrendered to the U.S.S. Sutton. A request was made to the agency which would have originally held this information before transfer to the National Archives, the Naval Historical Center, Washington Navy Yard. To my surprise, it was no secret or mystery at all and they were perfectly willing to send me a micro-fish copy of the cargo list for $5.00. Sure enough, the cargo list was exactly as sent by the National Archives except for the fact that the uranium oxide canisters were present and listed as the reader can see. This is in contrast to the list provided by the National Archives. Had the U.S. National Archives actually lied? Not only did they lie, but had they altered records and then covered up the whole thing? I wondered how they would react over a request for truly sensitive information?

The second big problem encountered is the undervaluation of German technology by the Allies. They seem to do this as a matter of course. This may have originated during the war itself. After all, did we really want to tell our 18 year-old soldiers that the German soldier was better trained than he was? Or did we want to tell him that the Germans had better small arms, machine guns, or tanks? Of course the answer is no. This undervaluation extended to matters of higher technology as well, especially aircraft and missiles. After the war re-use of this dis-information technique proved to be a successful way of minimizing German achievements in comparison to ours as part of some sort of nationalist, cold-war reasoning. Let me cite one example.

During the war, the Germans experimented with tailless, flying wing aircraft. The ones described here were made by the firm Horton, owned by the Horton brothers. There were several flying wing designs under development during those years for various purposes but the one in question is the Horton 9.

The Horton 9 was a tailless, jet-powered, flying wing fighter. Only three were ever built. The first Horton 9 (V-1) was never given engines and used as a glider for test purposes. The second Horton 9 (V-2) was given jets and tested. The third aircraft was actually produced by another company, the Gotha firm who was to mass-produce this aircraft. This one aircraft was given the designation Gotha 229 and was never fully assembled and never flew. It fell into the hands of the Americans while still in pieces.

So, it was only the second Horton 9, the V-2 version that flew at all. In fact, it flew very well. Remember, this was a tailless flying wing that flew before computer avionics made such aircraft possible in the USA. Evidently, the Horton 9 was so well thought out that a mere human pilot could fly it. But the Horton 9 was somewhat more than just an ordinary fighter aircraft. During flight testing it was noticed that the radar return for this aircraft was almost absent. The Germans got busy with this idea and planned to paint the Horton 9 with radar



National Archives at College Park
8601 Adelphi Road College Park MD 20740-6001

December 9, 1997

Henry Stevens
German research Project
[redacted]

Dear Mr. Stevens:

This is in response to your November 17, 1997, letter concerning cargo lists for the captured German submarine U-234.

We examined the files relating to *U-234* in the ONI, *OP-23-F-2*, records. We located one folder identified as "Cargo Lists", comprising 46 pages. Our current fee for electrostatic (paper) copies of these pages is $20.00. Please be aware that their are any number of additional manifests and cargo lists scattered within this file. We are unable to identify and provide reproduction information for all of them. These records have been heavily used by those seeking to identify plutonium or other nuclear substances which were reported to be on board this U-Boat. None of those researchers has located any nuclear material on these lists.

If you wish to order by check or money order (payable to "NABT-NWDT2"), send it with the *enclosed order form to the National Archives Trust Fund Board, P.O. Box* 100793, Atlanta, GA 30384. If instead you wish to pay by using a MasterCard or VISA credit card, you should return the enclosed form (annotated with type of credit card, account number, expiration date, and your signature) to the Cashier (NABT), National Archives at College Park, 8601 Adelphi Road, College Park, MD 20740-6001. Your account will be verified before the copies are shipped.

Sincerely,

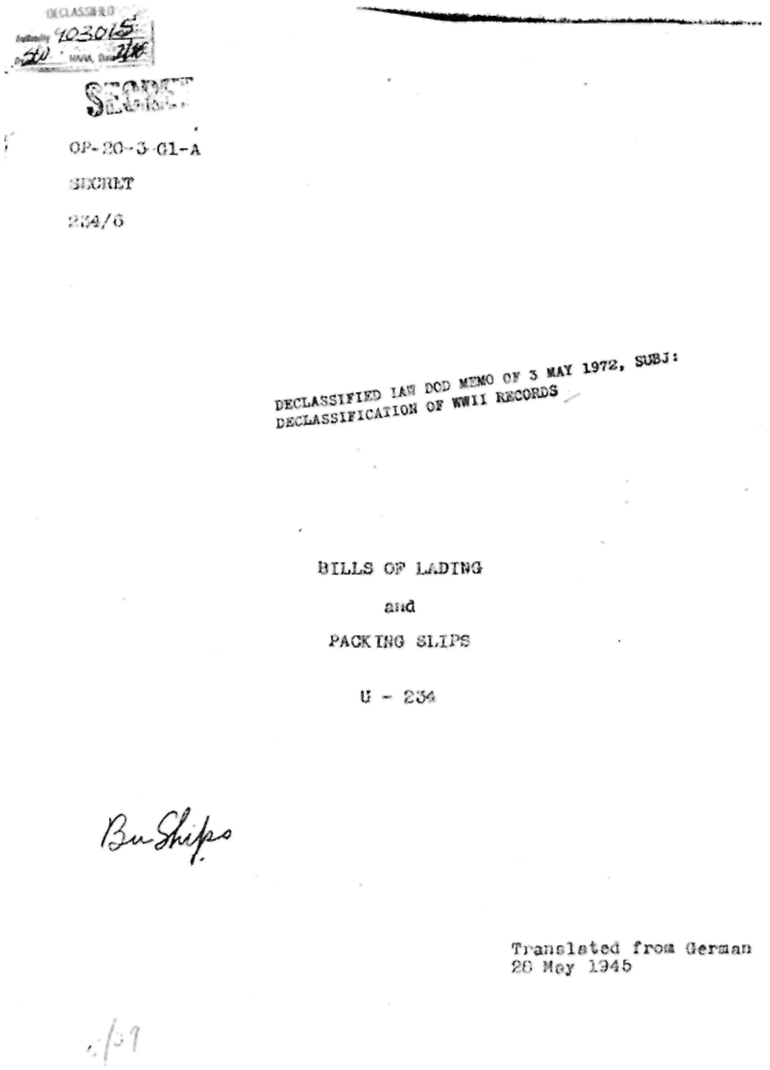
Barry L Zerby

BARRY L. ZERBY
Archives II Reference Branch
Textual Reference Division

Enclosure

National Archives and Records Administration

U-234 Deceptive Response - U.S. National Archives. Please note the last two sentences in the second paragraph. Was this information altered?



DECLASSIFIED
Authority 903015
By SW NARA, Date 2/..

SECRET

OP-20-3-G1-A

SECRET

234/6

DECLASSIFIED IAW DOD MEMO OF 3 MAY 1972, SUBJ:
DECLASSIFICATION OF WWII RECORDS

BILLS OF LADING

and

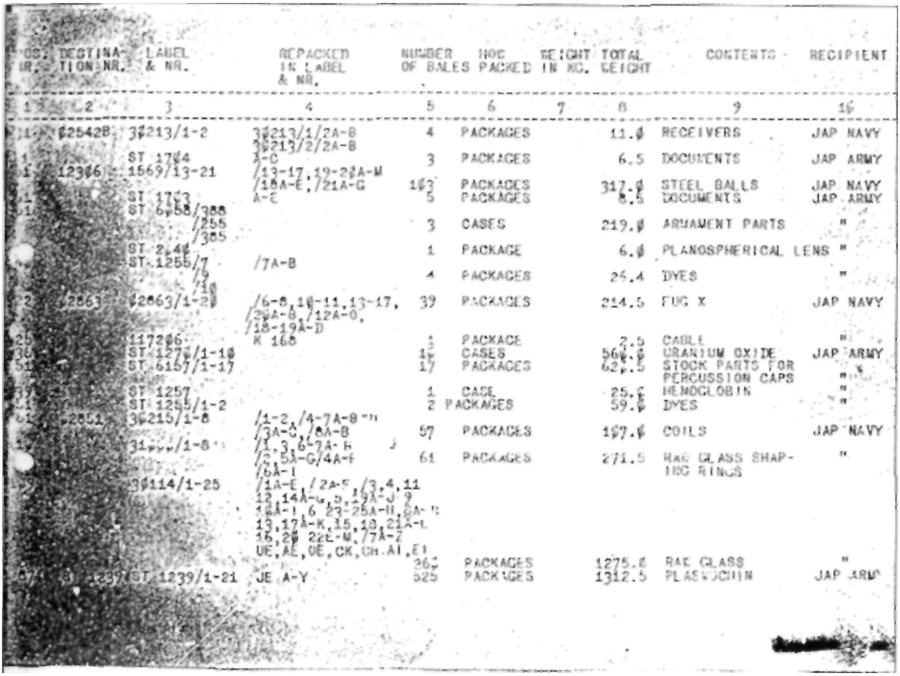
PACKING SLIPS

U - 234

Bu Ships

Translated from German
28 May 1945

This is the cover of the U.S. National Archives and Records Administration Document regarding U-234. This document omits all reference to uranium on board U-234.



POS. NR.	DESTINATION NR.	LABEL & NR.	REPACKED IN LABEL & NR.	NUMBER OF BALES	HOW PACKED	WEIGHT IN KG.	TOTAL WEIGHT	CONTENTS	RECIPIENT
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10
1	025428	30213/1-2	30213/1/2A-B 30213/2/2A-B	4	PACKAGES		11.0	RECEIVERS	JAP NAVY
1		ST 1704	A-C	3	PACKAGES		6.5	DOCUMENTS	JAP ARMY
1	12306	1569/13-21	/13-17,19-20A-M /18A-E,/21A-G	103	PACKAGES		317.0	STEEL BALLS	JAP NAVY
1		ST 1703	A-E	5	PACKAGES		8.5	DOCUMENTS	JAP ARMY
1		ST 6058/388 /255 /385		3	CASES		219.0	ARMAMENT PARTS	"
		ST 2,440		1	PACKAGE		6.0	PLANOSPHERICAL LENS	"
		ST 1255/7 /9 /10	/7A-B	4	PACKAGES		25.4	DYES	"
22	2863	02863/1-20	/6-8,10-11,13-17, /20A-B,/12A-O, /18-19A-D	39	PACKAGES		214.5	FUG X	JAP NAVY
25		117206	K 168	1	PACKAGE		2.5	CABLE	"
38		ST 1270/1-10		10	CASES		560.0	URANIUM OXIDE	JAP ARMY
51		ST 6157/1-17		17	PACKAGES		620.5	STOCK PARTS FOR PERCUSSION CAPS	"
39		ST 1257		1	CASE		25.0	HEMOGLOBIN	"
[illegible]		ST 1255/1-2		2	PACKAGES		59.0	DYES	"
[illegible]	2851	30215/1-8	/1-2,/4-7A-B /3A-C,/8A-B	57	PACKAGES		107.0	COILS	JAP NAVY
		31[illegible]/1-8	/1,3,6-7A-H /2,5A-G/4A-F /6A-I	61	PACKAGES		271.5	RAW GLASS SHAPING RINGS	"
		30114/1-25	/1A-E,/2A-F,/3,4,11 12,14A-G,5,19A-J 9 10A-I,6 23-25A-H,8A-N 13,17A-K,15,18,21A-L 16,20 22L-M,/7A-Z UE,AE,OE,CK,CH.AI,EI	262	PACKAGES		1275.0	RAW GLASS	"
67	[illegible]	ST 1239/1-21	JE A-Y	525	PACKAGES		1312.5	PLASMOCHIN	JAP ARMY

Copy of the U.S. Navy's cargo contents for U-234. Note that uranium oxide is clearly part of the cargo. The U.S. Navy sends records to the U.S. National Archives for safe keeping. It is lucky that the Navy kept a copy for themselves.

absorbing paint that they had developed for another purpose. The fact is that the Horton 9 was the world's first stealth aircraft. Unfortunately, during a landing one of its two engines failed and the one flying Horton 9 crashed.

So what do we know about the Horton 9 in flight? All we now know about the performance of this legendary aircraft is what Allied technical teams said about it and this is the way it has been reported to us down through history via semi-technical aircraft history journals and books.

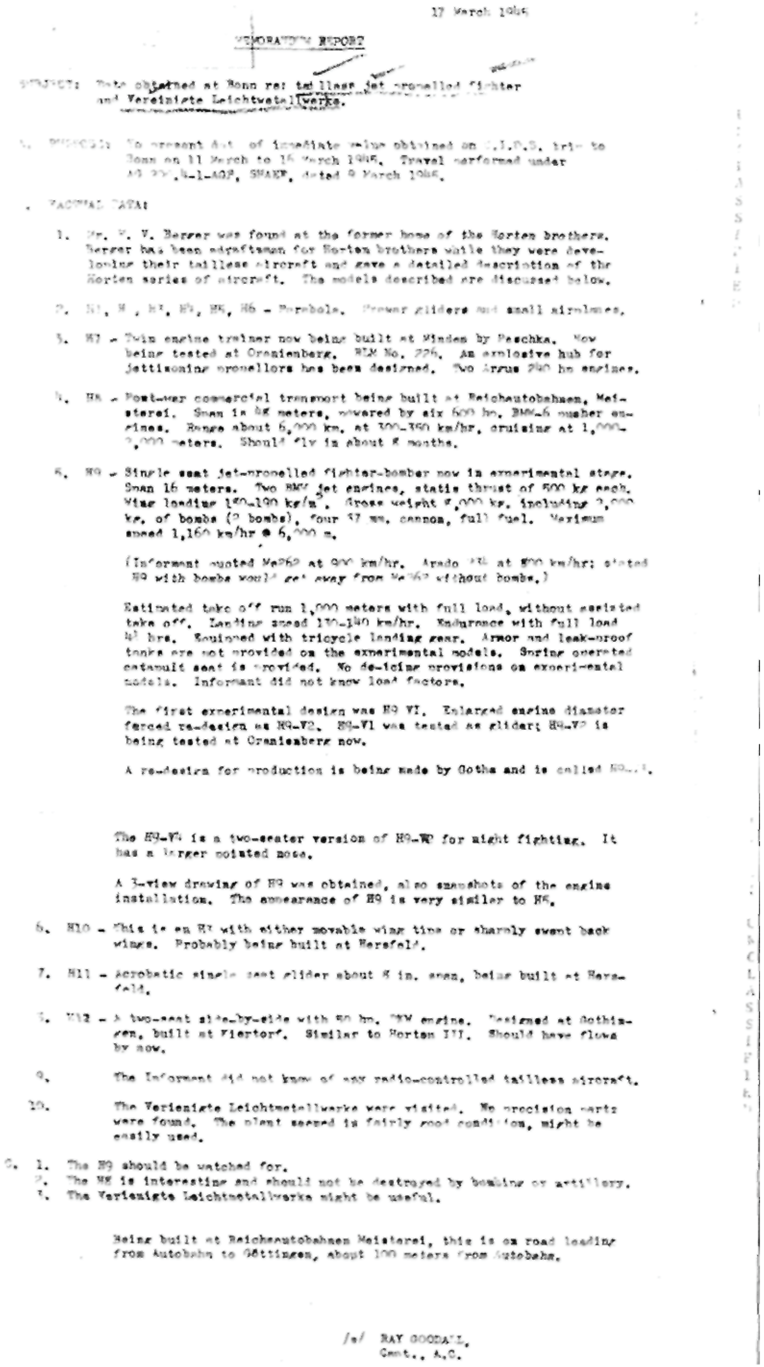
For instance David Masters, in his book German Jet Genesis, lists the speed of the Horton 9 at 540 mph with a ceiling altitude of 52,490 feet. The same authority reports the Gotha 229 (which never flew) as having a maximum speed of 590 mph at sea level and 640 mph at 21,320 ft. with a ceiling of 51,000 ft. This compares with the Me 262, the operational German jet fighter with which we are familiar, whose top speed Masters lists at 538 mph at 29,560 ft. with no ceiling given.

Surprisingly, both jets were powered by the same two Junkers Jumo 004B-1 engines. Yet the Horton 9 had the cross-section of a knife while the Messerschmitt cross-section was much more typical for an aircraft of the time. How could their performance be nearly identical? How would the Allies know what the performance of the Horton 9 actually was since they never got their hands on a working example?

Perhaps it was extrapolation. Perhaps they simply wanted to under value this sleek German jet simply because it looked so advanced for its time and there was nothing comparable in the Allied arsenal. Without contradictory evidence, the word of the American experts was repeated and became part of history as we know it. The funny thing is that now contradictory evidence has surfaced and has somehow slipped by the American censors.

The document in question is a Memorandum Report, dated March 17, 1945 while the war was still in progress. The "Subject" of this report was data obtained on the German tailless jet propelled fighter and Vereinigte Leichtmetalwerke (United Light-Metal Works). The "Purpose" of the report:

"To present data of immediate value obtained on C.I.O.S. trip to Bonn on 11 March to 16 March 1945. Travel performed under AG 200m 4-1, SHAEF, dated 9 March 1945."



17 March 1945

MEMORANDUM REPORT

SUBJECT: Data obtained at Bonn re: tailless jet propelled fighter and Vereinigte Leichtmetallwerke.

A. PURPOSE: To present data of immediate value obtained on C.I.O.S. trip to Bonn on 11 March to 15 March 1945. Travel performed under AG 200.4-1-AGP, SHAEF, dated 9 March 1945.

B. FACTUAL DATA:

1. Mr. W. V. Berger was found at the former home of the Horten brothers. Berger has been draftsman for Horten brothers while they were developing their tailless aircraft and gave a detailed description of the Horten series of aircraft. The models described are discussed below.

2. H1, H2, H3, H4, H5, H6 – Parabola. Prewar gliders and small airplanes.

3. H7 – Twin engine trainer now being built at Minden by Peschka. Now being tested at Oranienberg. RLM No. 226. An explosive hub for jettisoning propellors has been designed. Two Argus 240 hp engines.

4. H8 – Post-war commercial transport being built at Reichautobahnen, Meisterei. Span is 48 meters, powered by six 600 hp. BMW-6 pusher engines. Range about 6,000 km. at 300-350 km/hr, cruising at 1,000-2,000 meters. Should fly in about 8 months.

5. H9 – Single seat jet-propelled fighter-bomber now in experimental stage. Span 16 meters. Two BMW jet engines, static thrust of 500 kg each. Wing loading 180-190 kg/m². Gross weight 8,000 kg. including 2,000 kg. of bombs (2 bombs), four 37 mm. cannon, full fuel. Maximum speed 1,160 km/hr @ 6,000 m.

(Informant quoted Me262 at 900 km/hr. Arado 234 at 800 km/hr; stated H9 with bombs would get away from Me262 without bombs.)

Estimated take off run 1,000 meters with full load, without assisted take off. Landing speed 130-140 km/hr. Endurance with full load 4½ hrs. Equipped with tricycle landing gear. Armor and leak-proof tanks are not provided on the experimental models. Spring operated catapult seat is provided. No de-icing provisions on experimental models. Informant did not know load factors.

The first experimental design was H9 V1. Enlarged engine diameter forced re-design as H9-V2. H9-V1 was tested as glider; H9-V2 is being tested at Oranienberg now.

A re-design for production is being made by Gotha and is called [illegible].

The H9-V4 is a two-seater version of H9-V2 for night fighting. It has a larger pointed nose.

A 3-view drawing of H9 was obtained, also snapshots of the engine installation. The appearance of H9 is very similar to H5.

6. H10 – This is an H7 with either movable wing tips or sharply swept back wings. Probably being built at Hersfeld.

7. H11 – Acrobatic single seat glider about 8 in. span, being built at Hersfeld.

8. H12 – A two-seat side-by-side with 80 hp. DKW engine. Designed at Gottingen, built at Kiertorf. Similar to Horten III. Should have flown by now.

9. The Informant did not know of any radio-controlled tailless aircraft.

10. The Verienigte Leichtmetallwerke were visited. No precision parts were found. The plant seemed in fairly good condition, might be easily used.

C. 1. The H9 should be watched for.
2. The H8 is interesting and should not be destroyed by bombing or artillery.
3. The Verienigte Leichtmetallwerke might be useful.

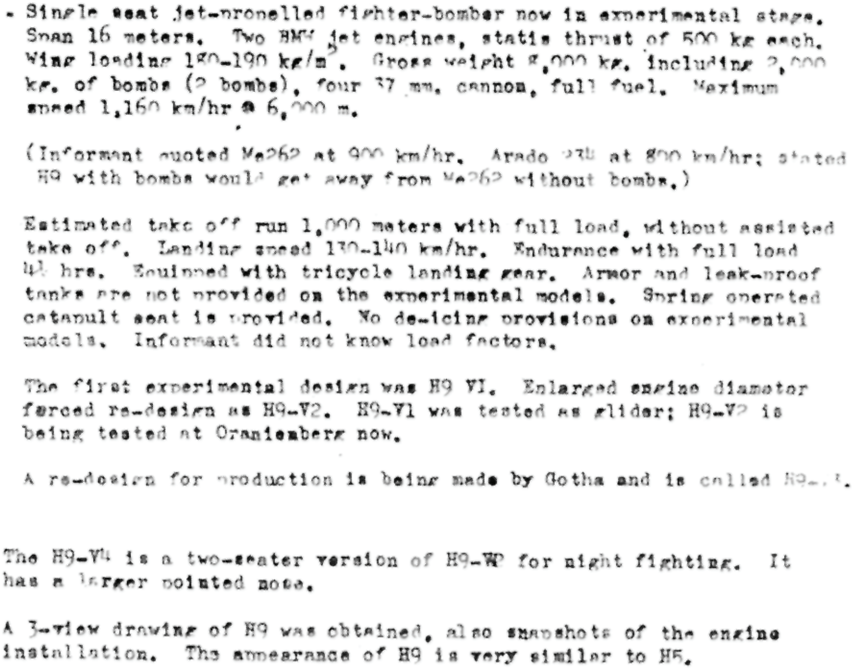
Being built at Reichsautobahnen Meisterei, this is on road leading from Autobahn to Göttingen, about 100 meters from Autobahn.

/s/ RAY GOODALL,
Capt., A.C.

UNCLASSIFIED

UNCLASSIFIED

Microfilm copy listing Horton aircraft.



- Single seat jet-propelled fighter-bomber now in experimental stage. Span 16 meters. Two BMW jet engines, static thrust of 500 kg each. Wing loading 180-190 kg/m². Gross weight 8,000 kg. including 2,000 kg. of bombs (2 bombs), four 37 mm. cannon, full fuel. Maximum speed 1,160 km/hr @ 6,000 m.

(Informant quoted Me262 at 900 km/hr. Arado 234 at 800 km/hr; stated H9 with bombs would get away from Me262 without bombs.)

Estimated take off run 1,000 meters with full load, without assisted take off. Landing speed 130-140 km/hr. Endurance with full load 4½ hrs. Equipped with tricycle landing gear. Armor and leak-proof tanks are not provided on the experimental models. Spring operated catapult seat is provided. No de-icing provisions on experimental models. Informant did not know load factors.

The first experimental design was H9 V1. Enlarged engine diameter forced re-design as H9-V2. H9-V1 was tested as glider; H9-V2 is being tested at Oraniemberg now.

A re-design for production is being made by Gotha and is called H9-V3.

The H9-V4 is a two-seater version of H9-V2 for night fighting. It has a larger pointed nose.

A 3-view drawing of H9 was obtained, also snapshots of the engine installation. The appearance of H9 is very similar to H5.

Enlargement of the Horton IX discussion in which a maximum speed of 1,160 km/hr or about 719 miles per hour. The informant spoke during the war, while the last example of the Horton IX was still flying. Data about all other German aircraft is correct. Was there an intentional cover up concerning the performance of the Horton IX by the Allies?

So what we have here is raw intelligence to be compiled into a Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report by SHAEF personnel.

Under "Factual Data" we learn that their German informant, Mr. F.V. Berger, is a draftsman for the Horton organization during the time that the Hortons were designing the tailless aircraft. To add to Berger's trusted position, he was actually found in the former home of Horton brothers by the intelligence agents.

Mr. Berger describes the Horton aircraft, models H1 to H12 but most of the discussion centers on the H9, the jet-powered, tailless, flying wing fighter-bomber. Berger goes on to list the weight, bomb load and cannons used but then states that the maximum speed for the H9, which was still being tested as this report was being written, was 1,160 km/her at an altitude of 6,000 meters.

This last statement must have shocked the SHAEF team to the core. The speed given, 1,160 kilometers per hour works out to slightly over 719 miles per hour! The Allies weren't even thinking about flying that fast in those days.

In the next paragraph it is evident that the intelligence team has been transfixed by Berger's statement and is double-checking his veracity. They asked him about the speed of the Me 262 and the Arado 234. Allied intelligence knew both these operational German aircraft and their capabilities by this time even if they had not gained an example of each aircraft. Berger gave the speed of the Me 262 at 900 km/hr and the Arado 234 (jet-powered bomber-reconnaissance aircraft) at 800 km/hr. This works out to 558 mph for the Messer-schmitt and 496 mph for the Arado. These figures are right on the money and lend credibility to Berger's evaluation of the Horton 9.

Then Berger made another astonishing statement. Berger stated that the Horton 9, loaded with bombs (weighing 2,000 kg.) "would get away from Me262 without bombs".

Berger went on to describe the Horton 9 V-1 correctly as being tested as a glider and the Horton 9 V-2 as a fully powered aircraft. He goes on to say that the Horton 9 V-2 "is being tested at Oranienberg now." So at the time of this interview, the Horton 9 V-2 was still flying and had not crashed yet.

Perhaps we could back up a little bit and go over what we already know. The Horton 9/Gotha 229 had a low radar return. The Germans knew this and planned a radar repelling type of paint for it that was already used on submarines. These features would make the Horton 9 the first stealth aircraft, a fact much mentioned concerning the history of the American B-2 bomber. In fact, American engineers visited the remaining partially assembled Gotha 229 in Maryland to get ideas for the B-2.

But the speed given by Berger, 719 miles per hour, puts the Horton 9 in a class by itself. By this it is meant that this speed and ceiling altitude exceed both the Soviet Mig 15 and the American F86 Sabre of Korean War vintage, five or six years later.

If we listen, we can hear echoes of the undervaluation of German aircraft at the highest levels, even within the American aerospace industry. Aircraft legend Howard Hughes owned a captured Me 262. Hughes was a big fan and participant in something called aircraft racing during those post-war years. Towering pylons would mark out a course of several miles in the California desert and aircraft would race around this course. When Hughes' rival company, North American Aviation came out with its F-86 Sabre, Howard Hughes challenged the US Air Force to a one-on-one match race of their new Sabre jet against his old German Me 262. The Air Force declined. Obviously, there is some unspoken fact behind the Air Force decision.

The Sabre was said to be "trans-sonic" or having a top speed of about 650 mph. with a ceiling of 45,000 ft. If the US Air Force wanted no part of a contest with the real Me 262, not the paper projection, what would they have thought of a head to head match with the Horton 9?

Yet, the Horton 9 was a stealth aircraft. The Americans didn't even recognize what a stealth aircraft was until over 30 years later and even then they always wanted to couch the comparison of the Horton 9 to the B-2 stealth bomber. That comparison is fallacious and perhaps designed to hide something else.

Let's compare the Horton 9 to the F-117 stealth fighter instead. The F-117 has vertical control surfaces and may be, in fact, less stealthy than the Horton 9. Both had special radar absorbing paint. But the F-117 is not supersonic. The F-117 is generally conceded to fly about 650 mph, about the same as the F-86 Sabre, while the Horton 9 could be faster at 719 mph. Another difference is that the Horton 9 carried two 37 mm cannons while the F-117 has no guns or rockets and so is really not a fighter at all but only a first-strike bomber.

There are other examples but we should both watch for these tactics and recognize that the government is reluctant to fully credit the Germans for their advances during the war and we should recognize that they will go to some lengths to maintain the secrecy status quo. These tactics also include false comparisons and outright deception.

3 German Digital Computers

Quite frankly, nothing is quite as boring as a computer discussion. However, computers have the ability to make rapid mathematical calculations and to take mountains of raw data and organize it for us in ways which give us new insight into problems. This organizational ability was picked up on immediately by Dr. Kammler.

Dr. Kammler had the benefit of knowledge, hardware and software that was developed by the computer pioneer, Dr. Konrad Zuse. In spite of everything churned out by the computer industry and "history" as we know it, Dr. Zuse built the first digital computer in 1938[1] and the first programmable software language, "Plankaikuel"[2]. He was also instrumental in developing magnetic tape as a computer storage medium[3]. By 1944 the Germans were using computers, the Zuse-built Z-3, to plot the course of ballistic attack by the V-2 at Peenemuende and Nordhausen[4].

After the assassination attempt on Hitler in July, 1944, power, on many levels of German cultural, technological and military life was transferred to the SS. Old-time Nazi bosses such as the Minister of Armaments, Albert Speer, sat back and watched helplessly as most of his empire was usurped by Dr. Hans Kammler. This included Dr. Kammler taking over the most promising and most highly technical wartime projects. Dr. Kammler was able to assume this role in addition to his other responsibilities and to handle them all with the excellence for which he was known. There is no doubt that Kammler had a genius

Fig.43b (Left). The Methfesselstraße in Berlin (1999). The Z3 and Z4 were constructed in a house on this plot of land (just to the right of the red car). Fig 44 (Right). Konrad Zuse (1989) at the entrance of the Methfesselstraße 7

The Z4 Computer

The goal of the Z4, which was developed between 1942 and 1945, was to build the prototype for a machine that was intended to be produced in the thousands. Unfortunately, the war destroyed my father's hope, which was that his machines should support the work of engineers of the time.

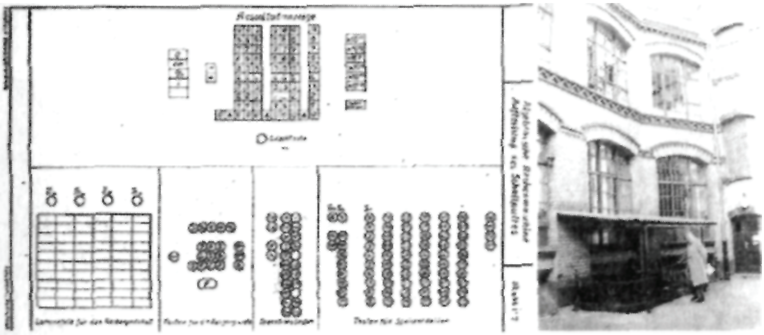
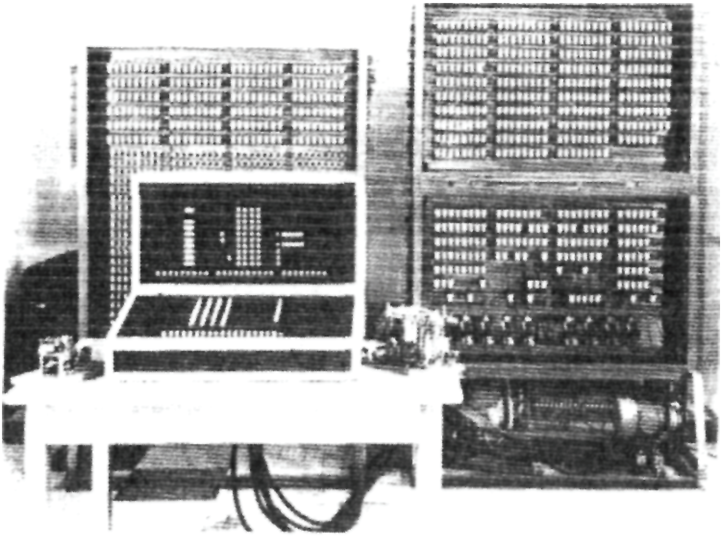


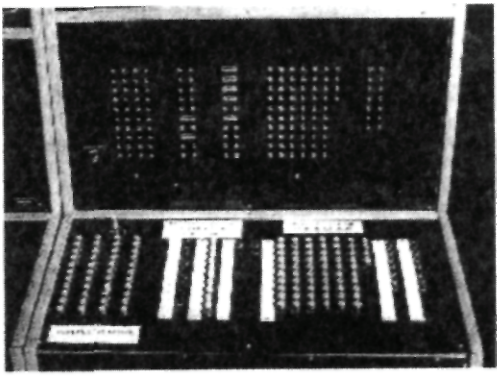
Fig.45 (Left). The Z4's input and output devices, as drawn in 1942 by Konrad Zuse. Fig.46 (Right) Konrad Zuse at the building of the Oranienstraße 6 in Berlin-Kreuzberg (1989), where the Z4 was almost finished in 1944/45.

It took more than four years to build the Z4, which ended up being much smaller than was originally planned. In the case of the Z4, Konrad Zuse wanted to implement a sub-program principle. For this reason he planned six punch tape readers and two punch tape writers. However, lack of materials, the almost daily air raids (Fig. 47 and Fig. 48), and the increasing difficulty of living in Berlin (which worsened daily) made it impossible to finish the Z4 completely.

Conrad Zuse - The Z4 Computer and the Zunse Apparatebau Memory component of the Z-4 computer



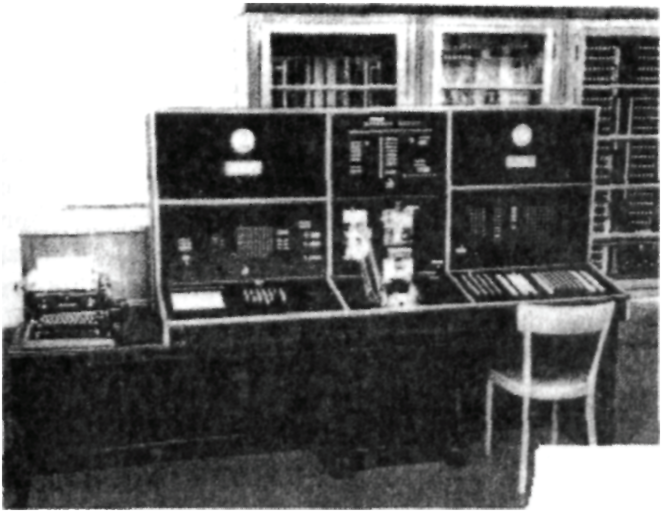
Die rekonstruierte Z3 im Deutschen Museum in München



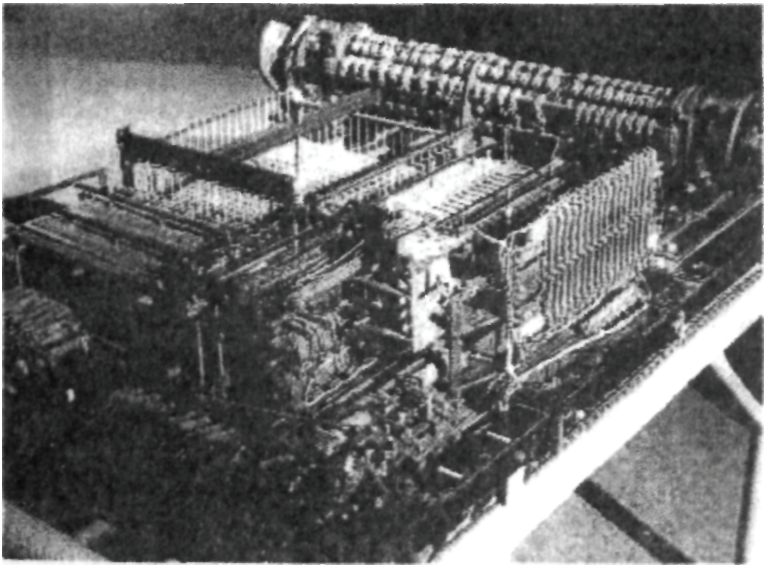
The Z4 *Planfertigungsgerät.*

Above: is the reconstructed Z-3 computer. This machine was most likely used in the headquarters of the Kammler Group as well as to calculate trajectories of the V-2 rocket.

Below: is the "Planfertigunsgeraet" (plan completion apparatus) which produced punched tapes as a program. Programming of the Z-4 could be learned in three hours.



The Z4.



Memory unit of the Z4. This picture was kindly made available by Dr. Kistermann. It was taken at an exhibition at ETH Zurich in 1981.

Top: picture is the reconstructed Z-4 computer.

Bottom: memory of the Z-4

for organization, but he had some digital help.

Perhaps we can imagine the Kammler Group Headquarters, somewhere in Czechoslovakia, probably underground and perhaps near Prague or Pilsen. There, behind a triple wall of security which the Allies never managed to break, Kammler's think-tank and laboratories selected and directed the production of weapons and secret technology for the Reich. One of Kammler's secrets was that his organization was completely computerized[4]. Hollerith, Z-3, and Z-4 computers, software computer languages and magnetic tape storage devices made Kammler's headquarters look more late 1960s like than mid-19405. In fact, German computers were so advanced that the Allied scientists and technicians failed even to understand the future when it stared them in the face.

The citation comes from a British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report:

"D. Calculating Machine of Dipl. Ing. K. Zuse Associated with Ernst (Josef Ernst who is mentioned elsewhere in this book—author) were a group of people headed by Dipl. Ing. K. Zuse, of the Zuse Apparatebau, Berlin, who had been evacuated to Hinterstein in the last days of the war. They claimed to have invented and developed a new and exceptionally versatile calculating machine, which had an application in the solving of, for example, aerodynamic, ballistic, and statistical calculations. The apparatus itself is at Hinterstein, but is not assembled. Another team of specialists led by Dr. Simms, of the Ministry of Supply, who were passing through the area at the time were consulted, and one of their members, who had considerable experience of calculating machines gave it as his opinion that the apparatus did not embody any special features which were in advance of Allied knowledge."[5].

The fact that Zuse and his computers were so advanced that the Allies didn't know what they were seeing, comes from the fact that they waited five years to approach Zuse, under Operation Paperclip, and offer him work in the United States. When they did realize their error, at least two government missions were sent to Germany, with the backing of the US computer firm Remington-Rand. Dr. Zues resisted these advances since he had found work in Germany. In fact, he was directing his own computer company by this time and had found the funding to do so which was hard for that time and place. Eventually, a trip to the USA was planned but canceled. It is unknown if he ever gave the US computer maker the benefit of his knowledge[6]. Today Dr. Zues is held in high esteem in Germany and any Internet search using the words "Konrad Zuse" produce a plethora of old pictures and documentation.

SOURCES

1. Georg, Friedrich, 2003, page 23, Hitlers Siegeswaffen Band 2: Star Wars 1947 Teil A: Von der V-l bes zur A-9: unkonventionelle Kurz-und Mittelstreckenwaffen, Amun-Verlag, Schleusingen.

2. ibid

3. Georg, Friedrich, 2003, page 24

4. Georg, Friedrich, 2003, page 31

5. British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report number 142, "Information Obtained From Targets Of Opportunity In The Southofsi Area, page 9, London

6. File of Konrad Zuse, Foreign Scientist Case Files, Record Group 330, box 186, (Paperclip Scientists), US National Records and Archives, College Park, MD.

4 German Flying Discs Update

Witness to a German Flying Disc

Shortly after the release of Hitler's Flying Saucers: A Guide To German Flying Discs Of The Second World War, I was contacted by a radio talk-show host, Jeff Rense, to do a live interview on his show. This radio show centers around the "unknowns" or "barely knowns" in life. Although Jeff's show originates from the Pacific Northwest, he has contacts throughout the country, if not the world. During our chit-chat off the air he mentioned another researcher, Lea McDonald, who had made contact with an individual who had actually seen a German flying disc take off during the war. Jeff was most gracious in providing an e-mail address for Lea. This seemed like a hot lead so I could not wait to make contact with Lea. Lea McDonald was as gracious as Jeff had been and gave me the telephone number of "Leo".

I don't want to give out Leo's last name at this time but he is known both to Jeff Rense and Lea McDonald. Leo is a friendly, elderly gentleman who took time to rely his sighting to me. I, in turn, do not want to appear ungrateful, so I don't want to be responsible for his telephone ringing off the hook at all hours of the night by people interested in verifying this story.

Leo's story is that he saw a flying disc ascend from the Prague airport. He does not remember the exact year, nor does he have details which can be gotten through question and answer sessions. The reason for this is that Leo was a child when he made this sighting. He saw the disc rise and ascend out of his line of sight from a school room at the Prague airport.

At first, this testimony, that of a child, might be deemed less reliable than a competent adult's testimony. To be sure, it is not as good as J. Andreas Epp's sighting, which may have occurred on the exact same day, in terms of detail, let alone the photographs Epp took. Nevertheless, I know from personal experience how accurately a child can see things.

As a child, I grew up near Los Angeles International Airport. The period of which I an speaking was the 1950s. During that time both commercial and military aircraft landed at "LAX". Almost always all the aircraft took off to the west, into the wind. The difference between flight patterns of commercial and military aircraft centered on their landing. Military aircraft landed near the south side of the airport and so circled in by making a turn over the south side of the airport. This turn took the military aircraft directly over my home, sometimes so close I could see the pilot.

I learned each aircraft operated by the U.S. military during those times and which company made it. Further, if there was some sort of inconsistency regarding this landing routine, such as military aircraft landing from the east or a new type of aircraft landing, I recognized it instantly. I could even tell aircraft by their signature engine sound. My eyes were not the eyes of a trained observer but my eyes did count for something.

Likewise, Leo probably saw and was disrupted by, many aircraft coming and going while in his classroom at the airport. The fact that this particular aircraft was something special is the reason that memory of it has been retained all these years. Leo simply saw an unusual disc-shaped, jet powered flying craft noisily ascend from the vantage point of a classroom window. He watched its ascent until his line of sight was obstructed by the building. His sighting could not have lasted more than a few seconds.

The fact that the disc was spinning on its axis indicates that it was either the Schriever or the Habermohl saucer. Both projects were stationed at the Prague airport. The Miethe discus may have been brought to the Prague airport from its place of development in Breslau at some time but its exterior skin did not spin as did the others. Since, by his own admission, Schriever says his saucer never flew, and since we have photographic evidence as well as testimony of a functioning disc at Prague, we must assume that it was the Habermohl version[2].

SOURCES

1. Interview with witness. Leo

2. Stevens, Henry, 2003, Hitlers Flying Saucers A Guide To German Flying Discs of The Second World War, pages 41-52, Adventures Unlimited Press, Kempton, Illinois

5 The Electromagnetic Vampire

What I am calling the "electromagnetic vampire" is so unique that I feel it must be discussed. Its implications in the modern world, in our current "Security State", are obvious.

The uncovering of this device is not my work. This report comes to us from Dr. Axel Stoll in his book Hochtechnologie im Dritten Reich[1]. The topic of interest arises as Dr. Stoll is discussing a German base in Tibet during the Second World War. He mentions that Tibet fought with the Germans in this conflict and that SS men were actually trained in Tibet. This association argues for a German underground base in Tibet and Dr. Stoll goes on to describe possible provisions for security in German underground bases and describes an example of a German electromagnetic security system.

The example he uses is the early Reich Chancellery. The lower floors of the Reich Chancellery were flooded during the latter stages of the war. This tactic was used numerous times on high-value underground facilities to prevent the advancing Allied Powers from learning Nazi secrets. Therefore, there may be other examples still out there.

The device under discussion is some sort of electromagnetic cage. Dr. Stoll calls it an "energetischen Kaefig" or "elektromagnetische Birne". Within the area of this cage a special electromagnetic field was present. This cage would be used to surround a specific room or area within the larger facility. Presumably, within this room, objects of tremendous value would be stored and therefore needed ultimate security, even more security than simply housing them within this high-security underground facility.

Dr. Stoll is unable to name his sources for security reasons, but goes on to tell a fascinating story. In the former East German Democratic Republic (DDR), strong, able-bodied divers, who were former members of the State Security Service (MfS) of that communist government were detailed to dive into the Reich Chancellery and surrounding vicinity with the goal of recovering documents, material stores and technology.

These operatives were not boy scouts, nor was East Germany a worker's paradise in the 1970s and 1980s, which is the period in which our story takes place. The DDR is the country which spawned the dreaded secret police, the "Stasi". Stasi was one of the most efficient, innovative and ruthless intelligence organizations ever conceived. Stazi could be thought of as the KGB coupled with German innovative efficiency. It is from this hard background that the divers were lowered by ropes into the black pool which were the lower floors of the Reich Chancellery.

What the divers encountered in the blackness was terror itself. Some of the divers, described by Dr. Stoll, surfaced with prolific symptoms. Their faces were contorted into a horrible grimaces. The problem was that this terribly distorted expression would not relax. Their contorted faces were frozen into a masks of permanent deformity. Not only were they disfigured but somehow they had been aged during the dive. Now they appeared to be visibly older, perhaps aging up to fifteen years in a few minutes. But that was not all.

Functioning like an almost perfect security system, the divers could not remember what had happened during their dive. Their memories had been blanked out. This was not temporary amnesia. This amnesia proved to be life-long.

Dr. Stoll, a Geophysicist, explains the workings of the device this way. Within the cage, "Kaefig", which is the space to be secured, a human body encounters an almost null-point of energy near the physical center of the device. At this point, energy is actually drawn out of the human body! This withdrawal of energy alters the human body and the human being, as a rule, for the worst. This sucking away of human energy can lead to death.

This electromagnetic or psychic vampire constitutes the ultimate in security systems. Imagine marketing a home security system boasting to suck the life out of intruders. Imagine this system in place in all truly sensitive government facilities today.

SOURCES

1. Stoll, Axel, Ph.D., 2001, Hochtechnologie Im Dritten Reich Reichsdeutsche Entwicklungen und die vermutlich wahre Herkunft der "UFOs", Amun-Verlag, Schleusesiedlung 2, D-98553 Schleusingen, Germany

6 Liquid Air

It seems that the Germans were on to a new way to make and store energy. It was the process of liquefying air. Air is a combination of many gases but its main components are nitrogen and oxygen in a ratio of roughly seventy percent and twenty percent, respectively.

There is a history of research and breakthroughs regarding means to liquify air prior to World War Two. A commercial means to liquify air was developed by the Frenchman, Georges Claude, who worked with the Germans[1]. Given a method to liquify air, liquified air seems to have been produced and stored by the Germans for later use.

There may also have been a breakthrough in storage. To make it a liquid, the gas must be artificially cooled until it reaches a temperature were it turns from a gas to a liquid. Some gases are harder to liquify than others. Usually, the difficulty comes from reaching a temperature low enough to liquify the gas. Once a gas has been liquified, it can usually be stored under pressure. This means storing the liquified gas in steel containers.

One source says that liquid hydrogen as well as liquid air can not be stored under pressure because of their low boiling points. Instead, it must be stored at normal atmospheric pressure in thermos bottles or Dewar flasks[2]. This is a system in which a metal bottle is encased within another metal bottle with a space in between where the air has been removed. With a vacuum between the two bottles, the inner bottle is filled with the liquid to be kept cold. The vacuum is an excellent insulator and so the contents of the bottle are kept cold or hot, depending on application, for an extended period of time. Additionally, a small hole or valve can be placed in the bottle, allowing a measured quantity of liquid gas to escape and expand to a gas. Heat is absorbed in this expansion process, cooling the remaining liquid gas in the bottle to offset any heat entering the bottle.

This thermos-at-atmospheric-pressure explanation is fine but somehow does not conform to what was observed during the war. Apparently, the Germans were making liquified air, storing it under pressure, and extracting its stored energy at a later date.

As early as 1930, the Reichsarbeitsgemeinschaft, the Reichs Works Association, concerned itself with liquified air and its energy potential almost as much as it concerned itself with sources of new energy[3]. This organization was set up with the express purpose of energy independence for Germany. The exact application to which the liquified air was to be put was not explained but it was given a considerable volume of print in their publications.

During the war, all sorts of plans were made to utilize the liquid air that must have been on hand. Plans were made to ignite it in new engines[4]. Liquified air facilities fell under the control of the SS, which is a sure sign that this was a valued commodity with a real role to play in the war[5]. These roles included powering submarine as well as aircraft engines[6]. But the information that tells us the Germans were able to store liquid air, presumably under pressure in a closed container, comes from their work to used liquid air as an explosive in artillery shells.

This information comes from a G-2 source working in conjunction with the U.S. Seventh Army, on or about October 21, 1944[7]. In that source a prisoner of war was interviewed. The prisoner claimed that 105 mm howitzer cannons had been modified to fire a liquid air-filled shells. The German word "Pressluft" is inserted into the English text and presumably was the word employed by the prisoner. The barrel of this gun was about half meter longer than the normal German 105 mm howitzer, and, on both sides of the breech there was a vent 2-3 cm wide. The projectile itself is somewhat longer that the standard for that gun. The new shell, without the powder charge is about the same as the length of the normal 105 mm projectile and the cartridge case combined.

The firing of this gun was somewhat out of the ordinary. The firing crew stood off 10 meters away from the gun at time of firing. The explosion made a muffled sound and smoke came through the vents in the breech. The smoke itself was described as having the effect of vomiting gas and caused the lungs to ache which way why the crew withdrew to the 10 meter distance. This description seems to indicate that the projectiles themselves were fired using liquid air as a propulsion source.

In test firings, 30 cows and horses were spread out over a 2.5 km diameter area. Four projectiles were fired. All the animals were killed. It was discovered that the animals died because their lungs had been crushed. At time of the tests a Col. Kruse, the commanding officer of the artillery school made an odd comment:

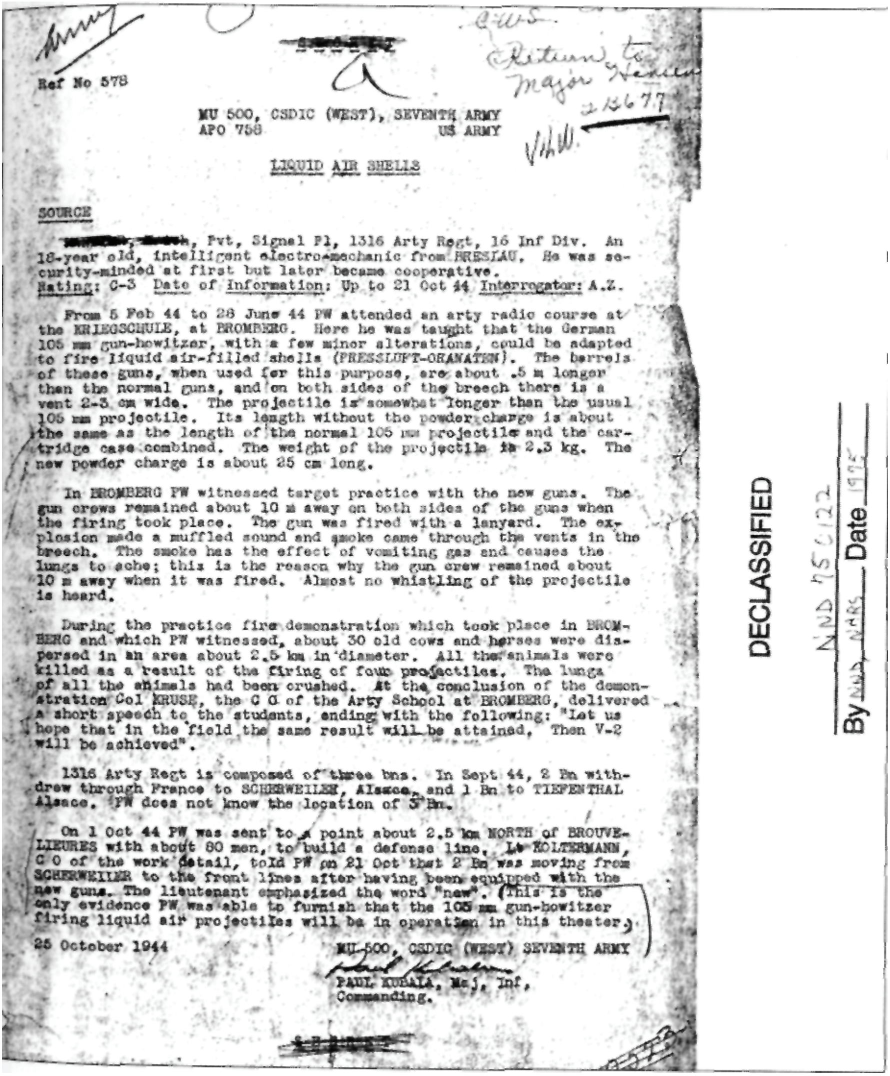
"Let us hope that in the field the same result will be attained. Then V-2 will be achieved".

The first sentence is not surprising. Every military man hopes his weapons will work in practice as they do in testing. It is the second statement which is noteworthy and which raises the question as to if liquid air was intended as an explosive warhead for the V-2 rocket. According to one source, this is exactly what was in the works and an American OSS report from October 8, 1944 is cited—a date very close to the one discussed here[8].

The use of liquid air as an explosive is probably only one small part of its significance. During the period of the Third Reich, the Germans envisioned liquid air as a source of energy. They did not need to go abroad to get it, the raw material, air, was everywhere. No prospecting equipment, pipelines or refinery was necessary. Liquid air could be manufactured at leisure, then bottled and stored for later use. Its energy could be extracted halfway around the world.

The ultimate German flying machine may have been a saucer that manufactured and burnt its own liquid air as it flew. This is an idea hinted at by flying saucer pioneer Renato Vesco[9] and which has recently been taken up again by researcher Klaus-Peter Rothkugel who has written me about this on many occasions.

In the liquid air howitzer shell and the V-2 warhead, we think of the utilization of liquid air as a burning or explosive force. To do this, of course, liquid air must burn. Oxygen itself doesn't really burn; it supplies the oxygen necessary for combustion. We seem to be left with nitrogen as the combustible material under consideration. Nitrogen is



Army

~~SECRET~~

C.W.S.

Return to Major [illegible]

213677

VHW.

Ref No 578

MU 500, CSDIC (WEST), SEVENTH ARMY
APO 758 US ARMY

LIQUID AIR SHELLS

SOURCE

[redacted], Pvt, Signal Pl, 1316 Arty Regt, 16 Inf Div. An 18-year old, intelligent electro-mechanic from BRESLAU. He was security-minded at first but later became cooperative.
Rating: C-3 Date of Information: Up to 21 Oct 44 Interrogator: A.Z.

From 5 Feb 44 to 28 June 44 PW attended an arty radio course at the KRIEGSCHULE, at BROMBERG. Here he was taught that the German 105 mm gun-howitzer, with a few minor alterations, could be adapted to fire liquid air-filled shells (PRESSLUFT-GRANATEN). The barrels of these guns, when used for this purpose, are about .5 m longer than the normal guns, and on both sides of the breech there is a vent 2-3 cm wide. The projectile is somewhat longer than the usual 105 mm projectile. Its length without the powder charge is about the same as the length of the normal 105 mm projectile and the cartridge case combined. The weight of the projectile is 2.3 kg. The new powder charge is about 25 cm long.

In BROMBERG PW witnessed target practice with the new guns. The gun crews remained about 10 m away on both sides of the guns when the firing took place. The gun was fired with a lanyard. The explosion made a muffled sound and smoke came through the vents in the breech. The smoke has the effect of vomiting gas and causes the lungs to ache; this is the reason why the gun crew remained about 10 m away when it was fired. Almost no whistling of the projectile is heard.

During the practice fire demonstration which took place in BROMBERG and which PW witnessed, about 30 old cows and horses were dispersed in an area about 2.5 km in diameter. All the animals were killed as a result of the firing of four projectiles. The lungs of all the animals had been crushed. At the conclusion of the demonstration Col KRUSE, the C G of the Arty School at BROMBERG, delivered a short speech to the students, ending with the following: "Let us hope that in the field the same result will be attained. Then V-2 will be achieved".

1316 Arty Regt is composed of three bns. In Sept 44, 2 Bn withdrew through France to SCHERWEILER, Alsace, and 1 Bn to TIEFENTHAL Alsace. PW does not know the location of 3 Bn.

On 1 Oct 44 PW was sent to a point about 2.5 km NORTH of BROUVELIEURES with about 80 men, to build a defense line. Lt KOLTERMANN, C O of the work detail, told PW on 21 Oct that 2 Bn was moving from SCHERWEILER to the front lines after having been equipped with the new guns. The lieutenant emphasized the word "new". (This is the only evidence PW was able to furnish that the 105 mm gun-howitzer firing liquid air projectiles will be in operation in this theater.)

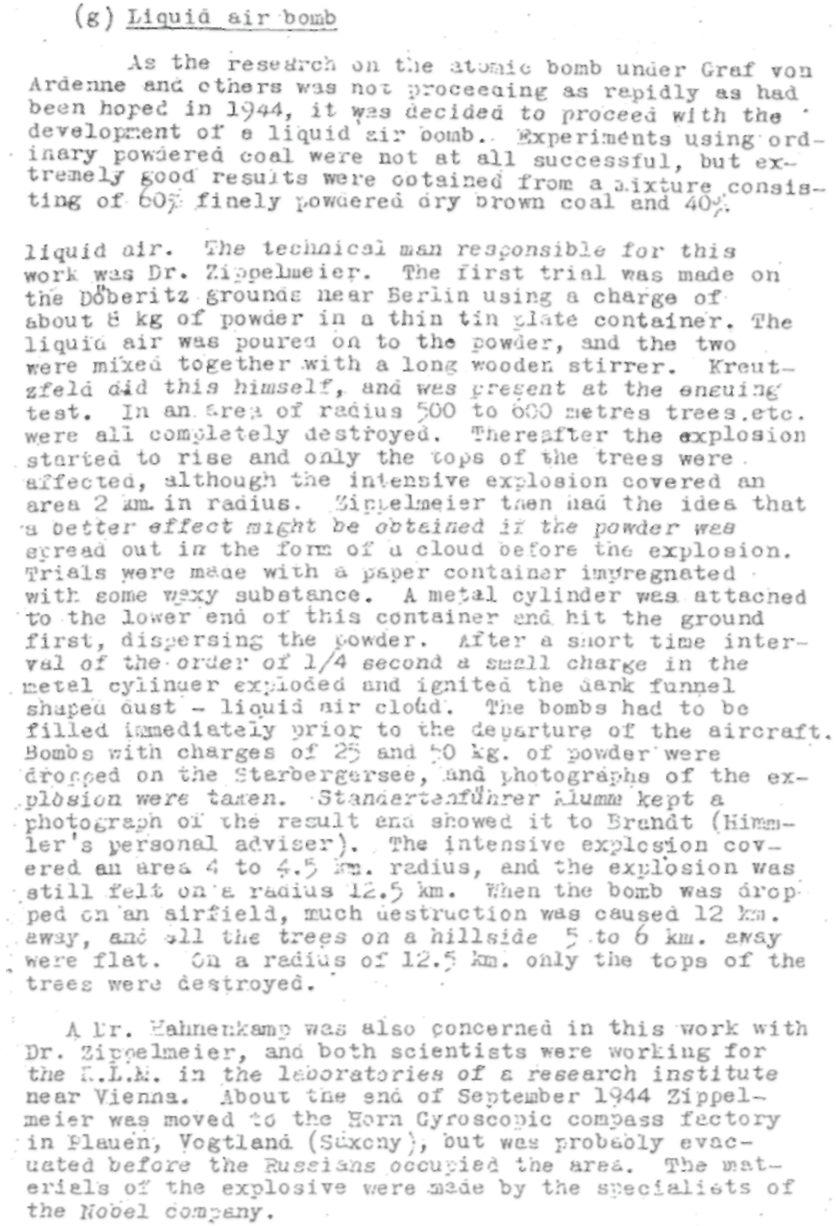
25 October 1944

MU 500, CSDIC (WEST) SEVENTH ARMY
Paul Kubala
PAUL KUBALA, Maj, Inf,
Commanding.

~~S-E-C-R-E-T~~

DECLASSIFIED
NND 750122
By NND, NARS Date 1975

U.S. government file describing liquid air used as an explosive shell.



(g) Liquid air bomb

As the research on the atomic bomb under Graf von Ardenne and others was not proceeding as rapidly as had been hoped in 1944, it was decided to proceed with the development of a liquid air bomb. Experiments using ordinary powdered coal were not at all successful, but extremely good results were obtained from a mixture consisting of 60% finely powdered dry brown coal and 40%.

liquid air. The technical man responsible for this work was Dr. Zippelmeier. The first trial was made on the Döberitz grounds near Berlin using a charge of about 8 kg of powder in a thin tin plate container. The liquid air was poured on to the powder, and the two were mixed together with a long wooden stirrer. Kreutzfeld did this himself, and was present at the ensuing test. In an area of radius 500 to 600 metres trees,etc. were all completely destroyed. Thereafter the explosion started to rise and only the tops of the trees were affected, although the intensive explosion covered an area 2 km. in radius. Zippelmeier then had the idea that a better effect might be obtained if the powder was spread out in the form of a cloud before the explosion. Trials were made with a paper container impregnated with some waxy substance. A metal cylinder was attached to the lower end of this container and hit the ground first, dispersing the powder. After a short time interval of the order of 1/4 second a small charge in the metal cylinder exploded and ignited the dark funnel shaped dust - liquid air cloud. The bombs had to be filled immediately prior to the departure of the aircraft. Bombs with charges of 25 and 50 kg. of powder were dropped on the Starbergersee, and photographs of the explosion were taken. Standartenführer Klumm kept a photograph of the result and showed it to Brandt (Himmler's personal adviser). The intensive explosion covered an area 4 to 4.5 km. radius, and the explosion was still felt on a radius 12.5 km. When the bomb was dropped on an airfield, much destruction was caused 12 km. away, and all the trees on a hillside 5 to 6 km. away were flat. On a radius of 12.5 km. only the tops of the trees were destroyed.

A Dr. Hahnenkamp was also concerned in this work with Dr. Zippelmeier, and both scientists were working for the R.L.M. in the laboratories of a research institute near Vienna. About the end of September 1944 Zippelmeier was moved to the Horn Gyroscopic compass factory in Plauen, Vogtland (Saxony), but was probably evacuated before the Russians occupied the area. The materials of the explosive were made by the specialists of the Nobel company.

BIOS Report Number 142: Liquid Air Bomb. A liquid air bomb design using coal dust may have been a forerunner to Dr. Zippermayr's fuel-air bomb.

usually thought of as an inert gas. This is true as a practical matter in our daily lives, but nitrogen will burn if it gets hot enough. Thunder is evidence of this.

During a discharge of lightning, atmospheric nitrogen is burnt by the heat generated by the lightning. Nitrogen rapidly combines with atmospheric oxygen, causing a low-pressure area in its wake. Thunder is the sound generated by the gasses of the atmosphere slamming that pocket of low pressure, burnt nitrogen, shut once more. The fallout is "fixed nitrogen", molecules of nitrogen combined with oxygen, falling to earth which are used by plant life as fertilizer. The point is that nitrogen will burn given enough heat.

A second method to extract energy from liquid air involves its rapid transformation from a frozen liquid (liquid nitrogen at-147 degrees C.) to a gas as the result of heating. Here we encounter the patent of Karl Nowak. Nowak was an Austrian who found that when matter in its cold, liquid state is heated rapidly, for instance injected into a combustion chamber on an engine, it expands with a tremendous rate of force. Nowak made all sorts of claims as to the power of that force but for us it is probably only necessary to recognize the principle. If liquid air were injected into a combustion chamber, such as that of an automobile engine, and it was sufficiently heated, such as with a high voltage discharge, not only would a force of expansion arise from the burning of the gasses, but prior to the burning and just before ignition, a force would have generated based upon the rapid heating of the liquid air by the spark discharge. A second expansion would take place upon the burning of the fuel itself, a reaction with which we are all familiar.

The basics of this liquid air discussion are that the Germans succeeded in finding a simple new source oi energy, one that was not based on foreign sources and which could be produced and transported relatively easily and one that has apparently been forgotten today. We will add to this discussion of liquid air when we review the work of Dr. Mario Zippermayr.

SOURCES

1. Vesco, Renato, Intercept UFO, 1976, page 164, Pinacle Books, Inc., New York

2. Van Nostrand's Scientific Encyclopedia, 1958, page 979, D. Van Nostrand Company, Inc., New York

3. Weltdynamismus Streifzueg durch technisches Neuland an Hand von biologischen Symbolen, 1930, commissioned by the Reichsarbeitsgemeinschaft "Das kommendende Deutschland", Otto Wilhelm Barth Verlag, Berlin

4. Vesco, Renato, Intercept UFO, 1976, pages 93,134-136,163,164.

5. Vesco, Renato, 1976, page 93

6. Vesco, Renato, 1976, pages 135,164

7. Office of the Director of Intelligence (G-2), file: MU 500, CSDIC (West), Ref. No. 578, Interrogation Reports and Correspondence on Prisoners of War ("Mis-Y"), 1943-1945, The National Archives, Record Group 165: Records of the War Department Genera and Special Staffs

8. Georg, Friedrich, 2003, Hitlers Siegeswaffen Band 2: Star Wars 1947 Teil A: Von der V-1 bis zur A-9: unkonventionelle Kurz - und Mittelstreckenwaffen, page 116, Amun-Verlag, Zella Mehlis

9. Vesco, Renato, 1976, pages 135-136,163,168

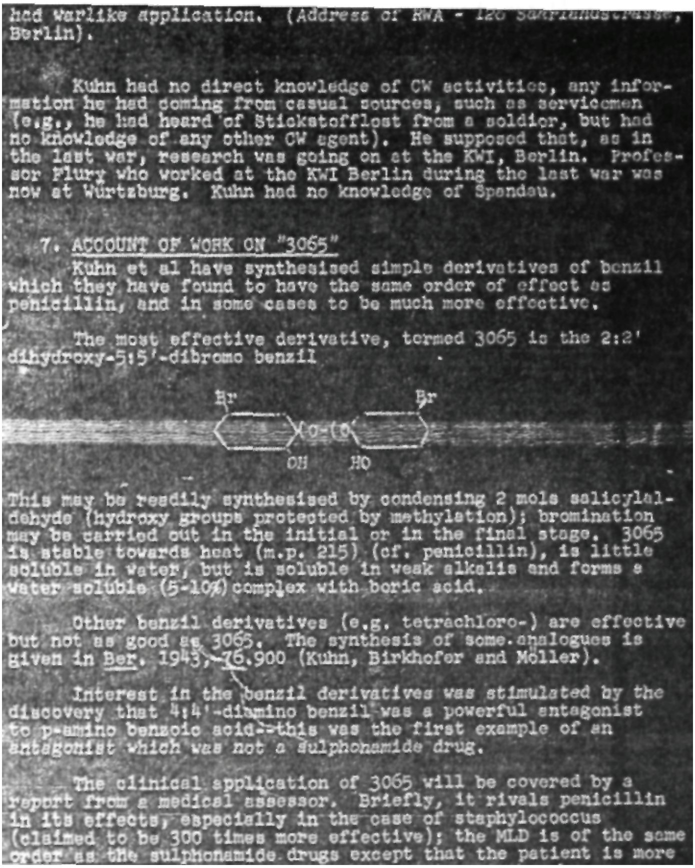
7 Synthetic Penicillin Substitute "3065"

During the 1950s, penicillin, an antibiotic, was touted as a "wonder drug". It was so effective against a myriad of bacterial infections that it single-handedly replaced "sulfa-drugs" which were previously in use against infection. Penicillin saved countless lives. It ushered in a whole medical age of similar antibiotics.

Now we know that antibiotics were over prescribed and over used by doctors. Bacteria, being adaptable and quickly reproducing organisms, evolved into strains resistant to penicillin. Newer antibiotics constantly had to be developed to stay one step ahead of the latest super-bacteria. Today, we live in fear of these evolved bacteriological super-bugs. Of course, the elite can have any prescription that money and power can buy but penicillin is now prescribed only as a last resort for the general populace.

But perhaps this sad situation was not the inevitable consequence of medical and pharmaceutical history. What if there were a non-antibiotic based treatment which was just as effective or even more effective against infection as penicillin? What if it were cheap and easy to manufacture compared with penicillin? What if this medicine really did exist yet all knowledge of it were suppressed? Do you think this sounds like "fringe" or "kook" medicine, something which can easily answered by the current resident doctor on CNN? Well, let's see if the debunkers can deal with this.

Penicillin substitute 3065 was the brainchild of Professor and Doctor Richard Kuhn. We learn from the Combined Intelligence Objectives Subcommittee



had warlike application. (Address of RWA - 126 Saarlandstrasse, Berlin).

Kuhn had no direct knowledge of CW activities, any information he had coming from casual sources, such as servicemen (e.g., he had heard of Stickstofflost from a soldier, but had no knowledge of any other CW agent). He supposed that, as in the last war, research was going on at the KWI, Berlin. Professor Flury who worked at the KWI Berlin during the last war was now at Würtzburg. Kuhn had no knowledge of Spandau.

7. ACCOUNT OF WORK ON "3065"

Kuhn et al have synthesised simple derivatives of benzil which they have found to have the same order of effect as penicillin, and in some cases to be much more effective.

The most effective derivative, termed 3065 is the 2:2' dihydroxy-5:5'-dibromo benzil

This may be readily synthesised by condensing 2 mols salicylaldehyde (hydroxy groups protected by methylation); bromination may be carried out in the initial or in the final stage. 3065 is stable towards heat (m.p. 215) (cf. penicillin), is little soluble in water, but is soluble in weak alkalis and forms a water soluble (5-10%) complex with boric acid.

Other benzil derivatives (e.g. tetrachloro-) are effective but not as good as 3065. The synthesis of some analogues is given in Ber. 1943, 76.900 (Kuhn, Birkhofer and Möller).

Interest in the benzil derivatives was stimulated by the discovery that 4:4'-diamino benzil was a powerful antagonist to p-amino benzoic acid--this was the first example of an antagonist which was not a sulphonamide drug.

The clinical application of 3065 will be covered by a report from a medical assessor. Briefly, it rivals penicillin in its effects, especially in the case of staphylococcus (claimed to be 300 times more effective); the MLD is of the same order as the sulphonamide drugs except that the patient is more

Synthetic Penicillin—"3065" A copy from the actual text showing the chemical structure of "3065".

evaluation reports number 75, report 1, dated April 20, 1945 and marked "Secret"[1] that Dr. Kuhn was not a quack. On the contrary, he was President of the German Chemical Society since 1938. In wartime Germany, Dr. Kuhn was the Director of the organic chemistry division of the Reichforschungshaft, second only to Professor Thiessen. Dr. Kuhn did pure research while at the Reichforschungshaft, that is, it was not militarily oriented. Dr. Kuhn was responsible for work on nutrition, vitamins and war infection and disease. Since Dr. Kuhn worked in a purely research setting, any discoveries were given to a development (Entwicklung) facility or appropriated by the Reichamt fuer Wehrschaft Ausbau (Reich Bureau for Military Consolidation) for purposes of practical application. Dr. Kuhn was very cooperative with Allied interrogators who believed in his sincerity and efforts to set down the facts correctly. Additionally, Dr. Kuhn spoke excellent English. This meant that there were no misunderstandings about the properties of "3065".

The account of the work on 3065 is well described and seems to lack mystery. From the report cited we learn that Dr. Kuhn and his team "synthesized simple derivatives of benzil (benzol or benzoyl?—author) with they have found to have the same order of effect as penicillin, and in some cases to be much more effective". For those interested in chemistry, 3065 is described further as a 2:2' dihydroxy-5:5'-dibromo benzil. A chemical diagram is pictured in the report. 3065 may be synthesized by condensing 2 mols salicylaldehyde (hydroxy groups protected by methylation); bromination may be carried out in the initial or in the final stage. 3065 is stable towards heat (m.p. 215), is little soluble in water, but is soluble in weak alkalis and forms a water-soluble (5-10%) complex with boric acid.

This CIOS report goes on to say that a detailed report of the clinical value of 3065 will be covered by a report from "a medical assessor". It does state, however, that 3065:

> "rivals penicillin in its effects, especially in the case of staphylococcus (claimed to be 300 times more effective; the MLD is of the same order as the sulphonamide drugs except that the patient is more sensitive when narcosized e.g., by morphine; it has been very effective against sulphonamide resistant gonococcus."

Clinical application in Germany was in the early stages and was interrupted by Allied occupation. Manufacture of 3065 was being carried out by I.G. Wuppertal-Elberfeld.

Reference is made to the investigation of the physiological workings of 3065 which was being done by introducing radioactive bromine, prepared by Professor Bothe at Heidelberg. This statement is confirmed by another Combined Intelligence Objectives Subcommittee report, number 75/155 "Cyclotron Investigation at Heidelberg Interview with Prof. Walter Bothe[2] in which Dr. Bothe confirmed collaboration with Dr. Kuhn in producing tracer materials.

In addition to his work of 3065, Dr. Kuhn also worked on the medical application of a synthetic rubber derivative said to be a deep blue liquid that was effective in treating mustard gas burns. The liquid was applied prior or two hours after exposure. It was also an anti-inflammatory and provided protection from B. coli infection.

What can be said of Dr. Kuhn and 3065 in summary? Dr. Kuhn did not disappear after his CIOS report. He went on to be a Paperclip scientist, coming to the USA to work after the war. The final outcome of 3065 is somewhat unclear: in fact it is unknown. It just seems to have fallen off the face of the earth. Why was this? Was this pressure from the pharmaceutical companies, which were busy developing antibiotics? We simply do not know. But at one time there was the possibility of a world in which both antibiotics and medicines such as 3065 coexisted. Perhaps bacteria would have rapidly evolved defenses against 3065 just as they have to penicillin and other antibiotics. On the other hand, 3065's method of killing bacteria would have been totally different from that of an antibiotic. Therefore, its effectiveness and usefulness would have complemented antibiotics. If this is true, no near universal reliance on antibiotics would have been necessary. In this senecio, bacteria would not have had the universal exposure to nor built up the tolerance to penicillin and other antibiotics as they have done today. If penicillin was a "wonder drug" and we lost the opportunity for a complimentary drug equal to it, then we seem to have lost more than another wonder drug and we seem to have somehow gained, unnecessarily, super bacteria resistant to all antibiotics we can throw at them. Is it too late for 3065 to be of value to us?

SOURCES

1. Combined Intelligence Objective Subcommittee evaluation reports 75, April 30, 1945, evaluation Report 1, April 20, 1945, CIOS Target 8/59 (Professor R. Kuhn at the KWI, Heidelberg.

2. Combined Intelligence Objective Subcommittee Evaluation Report 159, June 30, 1945, Target C-9/327, Cyclotron Investigation at Heidelberg Interview with Prof. Walter Bothe

8 Synthetic Blood

Imagine, in our world where the fear of AIDS transmission though blood transfusion is a constant worry, what if that worry did not exist. What if our blood supply was safe? What if it had always been safe? What if countless lives had been saved through the transfusion of uncontaminated blood and what if those individuals had not passed the disease on to others? Is this possible? Yes it is and yes, it always was.

It is possible because during World War Two, the Germans invented not only synthetic blood plasma, but actual synthetic blood itself.

Rudolf Lusar wrote a book from memory. He was a German engineer who worked it the German Patent Office. He was privileged to only those patents filed officially at that time and not the secret SS patents, but even these official patents are truly impressive. The Allies took these patents and left no record or receipt. All that remains of boxcar loads of seized patents is Lusar's memory of them.

Lusar mentions that the method to produce synthetic blood plasma was invented by the Germans during this time period.[1]

An even more revealing glimpse into this suppressed science comes to us from a 1946 American magazine article titled "Secrets By The Thousands" which ran in Harper's Magazine.[2] Before describing the article, a little explanation is necessary.

In 1946 the war was over. The troops were coming home. The world looked so good that it spawned a "baby boom" in the United States. The Cold War had not started yet. In this brief moment of good feeling the censors were lifted and the press was allowed to print whatever they wanted to print. It was in this brief glow of good cheer that the Harper's article appeared. The article is a real window into exactly what was taken from Germany.

That article was only a few pages in length and only attempted to list the booty taken. The article says in part:

"German medical researchers had discovered a way to produce synthetic blood plasma. Called capain, it was made on a commercial scale and equaled natural plasma in results. Another discovery was periston, a substitute for the blood liquid."

Another secret, lost.

SOURCES

1. Lusar, Rudolf, 1964, Die deutschen Waffen und Geheimwaffen des 2. Welkrieges und ihre Weiterentwicklung, page 365

2. Walker, C. Lester, October 1946, "Secrets By The Thousands", Harper's Magazine, page 333.

9 Human Nutrition and Performance Enhances

Worldwide, humans eat a surprisingly varied diet. Some people eat almost no meat at all, yet other people eat almost nothing but meat. The diets of peoples originating in Europe and East Africa contain large amounts of dairy products while peoples originating outside those areas find dairy products undi-gestible. We, as individuals and as members of distinct human populations, have varying nutritional needs. The United Nations has tried repeatedly to establish minimum daily requirements regarding calories and vitamins but has failed miserably.

In the western world, especially in the United States, we are swamped with nutritional studies in our mass media. Many times, these studies contradict earlier ones. Even our official governmental organizations, such as the USDA, only seem to be telling us to eat whatever foods that we have in abundance.

Compounding this confusion is the fact that some of the testing done in the United States is sponsored by the companies which stand to gain from favorable findings regarding the foods or vitamins they produce. These companies know of human diversity and variability and they, therefore, know how to manipulate the results of a "clinical study" by using a carefully selected, small, statistically insignificant test group.

In the meantime, we are marketed food, vitamins, performance enhances and "engineered foods" Madison Avenue style, each coming with their own "proof". What are we to believe?

Wartime Germans were under particular stress. Young males almost universally wore a uniform.

Everyone else was mobilized in some form and worked for the war effort. There was a labor shortage. Slave laborers were drafted from prisoners as well as foreign civilian and prisoner of war populations. German efficiency demanded that the maximum return be gotten out of each calorie of food and out of every vitamin and mineral. German nutritional studies of those times were conducted with the necessary scientific rigor and were devoid of commercial considerations. It is for these reasons that the results of this work is still valid today and should be heeded.

Information used in this presentation was based upon a September 1, 1945 report by the Headquarters, United States Air Force In Europe, Office of the Surgeon, Aero-Medical Research Section which was titled "Interrogation of Major Gunther Lehmann Medical Officer, German Luftwaffe". The information in question was done by the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute for Medical Research at Dortmund and Baden. Major Gunther Lehmann was the director of this project. Before joining the Luftwaffe, Major Lehmann was a medical doctor and professor and had already been with the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute for Medical Research since shortly after his graduation from medical school in 1923. His miliary commission was largely ceremonial as was his Nazi party affiliation. Major Lehmann was told to remain at the institute and to continue his civilian research. Two additional topics of research were given him. One was to test the effectiveness of drugs in combating fatigue. The other was the effect of oxygen on fatigue.

The Germans were very interested in drug stimulants. They wanted to know if an individual's productivity could be increased. If workers and soldiers could be stimulated into increased productivity, obviously the entire German war effort would benefit. Dr. Lehmann actually began this work in 1933. These experiments led to later research with Professor Kraut which was performed on volunteers at the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute.

Subjects continued to work all night and were given a stimulant before breakfast. They were then tested for endurance on a bicycle ergometer. Pulse rates and pulse pressure were graphically recorded. The ergometer test continued until the product of the pulse rate times pulse pressure reached 10,000 which was considered the exhaustion threshold.

Initially, Dr. Lehmann administered caffeine as the experimental stimulant. In 1942 Dr. Lehmann switched to pervitan, which he believed to be the superior drug in all respects. Pervitan was found to alter the "vegetative energy reserve" or "work capacity", terms coined during this research, little, if at all. Pervitan was, however, found to double or even triple the ability to carry on over and above the ordinary exhaustion threshold or "energy ability". This energy ability is entirely a function of the brain cortex according to Dr. Lehmann in somewhat of a complex relationship.

In addition to drug stimulants, Dr. Lehmann did some rather interesting experimentation with adrenalin, which is nature's own stimulant. He concluded that there were actually two types of adrenalin secreted by the body, each with a different purpose. One, called the "activated form" causes the familiar flight or fight response. The other, called the "inactivated form" is secreted constantly by the body.

Dr. Lehmann found that subjects who tested the highest on the bicycle endurance test also had the highest levels of adrenalin in their blood streams. Dr. Lehmann determined that trained athletes invariably had higher blood levels of adrenalin than non-athletes. Finally, Dr. Lehmann determined that the ability to secret adrenalin could be trained or increased simply by the conditioning derived from the daily bicycle ergometer testing.

It can be seen that adrenalin levels figure into the vegetative energy reserve, the Adrenalin Level and Vegetative Compensations on Lehmann's chart that he used to measure drug stimulant response.

Dr. Lehmann also studied oxygen's relationship to fatigue, both mental and physical. As before, rigorous testing was conducted to measure both the physical and mental fatigue of subjects while controlling for oxygen in an altitude chamber. Dr. Lehmann found that both muscular and mental performance was positively increased in fatigued subjects by breathing 100% oxygen as measured at ground level. A tested efficiency increase of up to 50% was observed.

Dr. Lehmann and Professor Groff had already begun performance nutritional studies before the war. These studies continued with the directive that the effects of thiamin (vitamin B-l) on exercise be investigated. In addition to thiamin, glucose, simple sugar, was also a subject for testing. For this testing subjects were chosen from a nearby glass factory and their work was graded and classified by an industrial expert assigned to Dr. Lehmann's staff. Dosages were fifty grams of glucose and five mgms. of thiamin given after breakfast.

About 40% of the factory workers were already thought to have a thiamin deficiency.

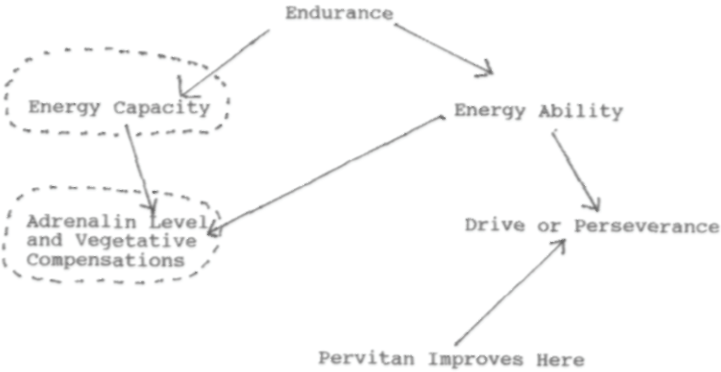
The results of this testing were that neither glucose nor thiamin had any affect on work tolerance or efficiency if given separately. If combined, however, there was a noticeable improvement in both work tolerance and efficiency. In view of these findings thiamin enriched bread was ordered to be given to the Luftwaffe in 1943 and 1944 and employees in mines and glass factories were given sweetened tea and thiamine tables each day.

In 1941 Drs. Lehmann and Kraut began investigations on human protein requirements. Their methods were revolutionary for the times and were later incorporated by East European coaches for monitoring their strength athletes. Drs. Lehmann and Kraut measured the nitrogen content in their test subject urea. All protein is composed of nitrogen. Neither fats nor water contain nitrogen. The test subjects, like all humans, break down bodily proteins in relation to their activity. The more activity and the harder it is, the more protein is broken down and excreted through the urine as nitrogen. The subjects for this test were female statistical clerks in a nearby factory and a bridge building crew composed of Russian prisoners. This is quite a range of physical activity.

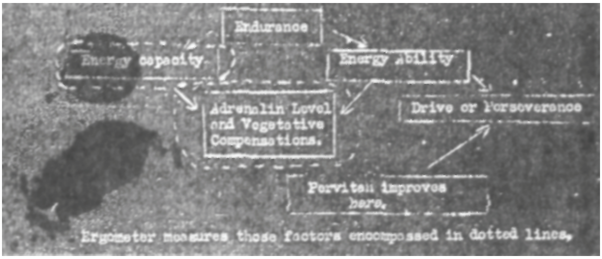
In order to measure protein intake, Dr. Kraut employed the "best chefs available" to "ingeniously mask changes in protein content". The doctors running the study could then measure protein or nitrogen input vs output while using essentially two sample populations, one sedentary and the other composed of hard laborers. The exact amount of protein required for a given activity could roughly be determined using this protein balance method.

The results were interesting. The absolute minimum protein intake necessary daily to maintain a positive urinary protein balance is 40 grams for sedentary office workers. The figure increased to 55 grams for laborers. The most interesting finding was that for work efficiency to reach its highest level, that is for the workers to work at peak performance, whether sedentary or laborer, the stated minimum protein intake figures had to be doubled.

These findings were immediately marked "Secret". The diets of Luftwaffe personnel, upon which depended the protection of the Reich, were supplemented with 15 grams of additional protein. That


Endurance
Energy Capacity
Energy Ability
Adrenalin Level and Vegetative Compensations
Drive or Perseverance
Pervitan Improves Here

Ergometer measures those factors encompassed in dotted lines.


Endurance
Energy capacity
Energy Ability
Adrenalin Level and Vegetative Compensations.
Drive or Perseverance
Pervitan improves here.
Ergometer measures those factors encompassed in dotted lines.

A chart from the text showing the relationships involved. Ergometer measures those factors encompassed in dotted lines.
Above: redrawn chart, Below: original chart.

brought the dietary figure up to an average content of 85 grams in 1943 and 1944.

Caloric intake also effects work performance. Dr. Lehmann found that work efficiency increased in direct proportion to caloric intake up to 3,000 calories per day for office workers and 4,500 calories per day for laborers. Interestingly enough, it was found that there was a time lag of approximately three weeks between improvement in the diet and increased work efficiency.

American intelligence summaries of this type hardly ever make conclusions or even assess the implications about the research reviewed. Why this was so remains somewhat of a mystery. Some implications can be drawn, however.

The conclusions involve those individuals engaged in physical exertion, whether it be hard labor or athletics. Drug stimulants can greatly increase the capacity of an individual to do work after that individual has reached his or her exhaustion threshold. Exceeding the previous work capacity causes an increase in the level of blood adrenalin. Increased levels of blood adrenalin allow that individual to exceed his or her previous best. What is being described is a kind of performance enhancing feedback loop or step-by-step increase begun using drug stimulants.

It was found that pure oxygen increases physical and mental ability.

It was found that work efficiency could be doubled using a combination of vitamin B-l and glucose.

It was found that a 40 grams per day protein consumption can be considered a minimum, even for sedentary individuals, while individuals doing heavy manual labor, and presumably athletes, can benefit from a diet containing up to 110 grams per day of protein.

It was found that there is a daily caloric requirement needed for peak output which varies positively with the degree of activity involved.

All this may mean that those small, canned energy drinks whose main ingredients are caffeine, B vitamins and simple sugars may actually work. They may be used when the individual is exhausted and actually build further endurance. This research also means that more oxygen, even the deep breathing as done by boxers between rounds, is probably beneficial toward recovery.

It also means that individuals restricting caloric intake to lose weight will not be at peak performance. Boxers and other athletes who must "make weight" usually do this during training for their next contest. The training period employed for most boxers, for example, is about six weeks. It takes about six weeks to bring a boxer to his peak. If less time is allocated, then the boxer will not be in proper condition. If more time is taken, the boxer runs the risk of overtraining and going stale. But it can be concluded from the research presented above that if the boxer is restricting himself calorically, he will never achieve optimum performance. This research indicates that the wiser course of action might be to diet to make the weight before the six-week training period commences as opposed dieting during the training.

There is an addendum to this story. The reader may be wondering exactly what pervitin is. And the reader may be wondering if it was ever actually used by the German military. In other words, were the Germans on their way to inventing "Universal Soldiers", drugged to enhance performance?

Freedom of Information Act requests were made for "pervitin". One did come back which was obviously only a piece of a much larger story. This involved the 1946 post-war world of Occupied Germany and the culture that sprung up there overnight. This file was marked "secret" at the time and was titled "Report on Deadlock". This file took on both the aspect of a criminal as well as a military investigation because it dealt with a black-market conspiracy to sell pervitin and another stimulant called "hykola" by a former military man of questionable motives.

The concern on the part of the military seems to be the history of the principal character in the investigation who was a former SS man. It seems that their concern was that the funds derived from this black market sale not go to any surviving SS organization. As far as we are concerned, the file is mostly trivial nonsense except for the fact that the drug pervitin was produced in wartime Germany by a company called Tem_ler Werke (one letter cannot be read) and that a sizeable store of these pills was in the possession of the Wehrmacht at the end of the war[2]. No records could be found concerning its field use by the German military but we now know that Pervitin was what we now call methamphetamine.

Sources

1. Head Quarters, United States Air Force In Europe, Office of the Surgeon, Aero-Medical Research Section, September 1, 1945, "Interrogation Of Major Gunther Lehmann, Medical Officer, German Luftwaffe.

2. CSDIC(WEA), "Report on Deadlock", page 5, May 25, 1946, (ref IB/A1/PF13520 dated 22 May 46 and IB/A1/PF 6467 dated 25 May 46.

10 Magnetofunk and Himmelskompass and Point 103

The Magnetofunk and Himmelscompass were passive defenses used by the Germans in conjunction with their secret arctic base, which Wilhelm Landig calls "Point 103". To gain some understanding of these devices it is necessary to discuss this base but to do that we must digress even further to include the Nazi post-war writer Wilhelm Landig and one of his detractors.

In 1993 Joscellyn Godwin published Arktos The Polar Myth in Science, Symbolism, And Nazi Survival. Godwin summarizes Landig's contribution as best as possible in six pages. Godwin's point in this summarization was to paint Landig's attempt to air the Nazi point of view as Godwin puts it:

"Goetzen gegen Thule is in one sense a massive work of revisionism, or, to put it plainly, of whitewashing the Nazis."[1].

Godwin is part of a time-tested tradition. He cites and uses the work of known Nazis, but, to do so and to get his work published, he must mumble an anti-Nazi formula as penitence. The effect is to discredit Landig. Unfortunately, because of the language barrier, this has become the "accepted party line" view of Landig in the English-speaking world.

Wilhelm Landig died in 1997. Since then we have learned that he was in the SS and was in charge of security at the Prague Airport, the site were the Habermohl saucer lifted off[2]. In all probability, he oversaw, on at least one occasion, not only the Habermohl model, but the Schriever and Miethe designs as well. Landig was a responsible person within the security structure of the 3rd Reich and probably came across many other items of interest during his duty, which he passes along to us in his writing.

After the war, Landig wrote three novels describing things and events that went on in the war and immediately afterward. He prefaces these works by telling the reader these are novels full of realities. This was code because in the post-war world of Germany and Austria one was not allowed to state in fact what Landig stated in "fiction".

One of these "facts" was Point 103. Point 103 was a secret German base somewhere in the Arctic. Landig tells us it was in Canada but, in fact, it could have been most anywhere. Point 103 was a military base in every sense of the word in "Goetzen". It had hangers, runways, housing, storage facilities, shops, laboratories, and maintenance facilities, all contained in huge caverns blasted from the arctic rock.

One main function of Point 103 was to serve as a weather station since northern storms move from the West before arriving in Europe and accurate weather forecasting on the part of the Germans for their military operations could help mitigate Allied air superiority. The Battle of the Bulge is a great example of how the Germans used bad weather to their advantage.

This base was always sought out by Allied aircraft. Landig tells us that this base survived this aerial onslaught and survived the war. In fact, Landig's story picks up at Point 103 after the war has ended. It is the technology that allowed this base to survive which is our topic in this chapter. These devices, according to Landig, were the Magnetofunk and the Himmelskompass.

The magnetic north pole, the "North" of compasses, is not as close to the geographical North Pole as one would imagine. It is located near 70 degrees of North Latitude, near 90 degrees West Longitude, on the Boothis Peninsula in the Northwest Territories of Canada.

"Funk" in German has to do with our word "radio". Therefore, Magnetofunk is magnetic and delivered by radio waves. The job of the Magnetofunk was to deflect the magnetic lines of force in the instruments of Allied aircraft ever so slightly. Over the vast tracks of the Arctic, this slight deflection was designed to steer the search aircraft safely around Point 103 [3].

But if the magnetic compasses of the Allied aircraft were altered, how would it be prevented from confusing the compasses of the

Germans? How would the base ever be resupplied, for instance?

The answer is the other device under consideration, the Himmelskompas or heavenly compass. This compass did not use the magnetic north pole to orient itself but oriented itself using the position of the sun instead. This compass was so sensitive to sunlight that it could even function in twilight or if the sun was below the horizon. The explanation given is that a portion of the sunlight striking the earth is polarized. This effect is said to be strengthened by the focused magnetic field in the region of the poles. This polarized light was measured and a position relative to the pole fixed[4].

Its ability to function below the horizon is based on its ability to register polarized light which would only appear above the horizon. Not only could this light be used for directional purposes but it could also be used to indicate the aircraft's attitude from the horizontal. This horizonal ability may be the cause of some confusion in its name.

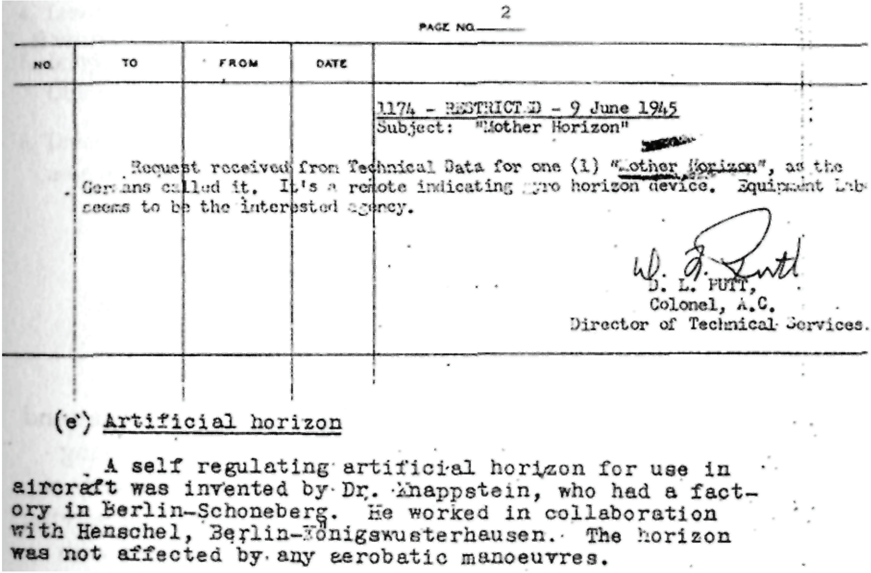
So, Landig claims that through use of these two devices the German polar base's secret location was kept from the Allies while its exact position was known to the Germans. Is this a fairy tale as Godwin implies? Is there any proof?

Nobody has ever found Point 103, or, if they have, this information has been kept from us. Nobody has ever come up with a Magnetofunk as far as I know. But there is independent evidence that the Himmelskompass did exist. And the evidence comes from United States intelligence documents.

These two references are brief and rather cryptic as are many such documents. They are more interested in identifying the devices to be studied without divulging classified details to the casual reader. Remember, the United States military already had plenty of horizon devices which were mounted in the cockpits of aircraft and indicated to the pilot the degree of level flight of the aircraft. Therefore, we are not discussing the usual cockpit horizon device in these reports.

The first report comes from a prisoner of war, Kurt Kreutzfeld, involved in German high technology. In the report in question he also discussed German glide bombs, rocketry, devices for projectile direction, as well as microfilmed SS technology. He describes an "Artificial horizon" as:

"A self regulating artificial horizon for use in aircraft was invented by Dr. Knappstein, who had a factory in Berlin -



PAGE NO. 2

NO	TO	FROM	DATE	
				1174 - RESTRICTED - 9 June 1945 Subject: "Mother Horizon"

Request received from Technical Data for one (1) "Mother Horizon", as the Germans called it. It's a remote indicating gyro horizon device. Equipment Lab seems to be the interested agency.

D. L. PUTT,
Colonel, A.C.
Director of Technical Services.

(e) Artificial horizon

A self regulating artificial horizon for use in aircraft was invented by Dr. Knappstein, who had a factory in Berlin-Schoneberg. He worked in collaboration with Henschel, Berlin-Königswusterhausen. The horizon was not affected by any aerobatic manoeuvres.

Above: copy of HQ, U.S. Strategic Air Forces in Europe document discussion "Mother Horizon".

Below: part of a British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report number 142, page 4, discussing an artificial horizon.

Schoneberg. He worked in collaboration with Henschel, Berlin-Koenswusterhausen. The horizon was not affected by any acrobatic maneuvers".[5]

The second document is strange indeed. It is a two-page extract of a certain Lt. Newton's diary, copied and sent to a Col. Deyarmond on 6/21/45 by Col. D.L. Putt, Director of Technical Services. This was a month and a half after the war in Europe ended. The first entry concerned communications problems in forwarding an "engine" to Wright-Patterson AFB and how to avoid such problems in the future. The second entry describes the lack of qualified technical people involved in the "V-1" project (the American investigation) and how it would be great to find qualified Germans to explain it all. The third entry is the shortest and most cryptic:

"1174-Restricted-9 June 1945 Subject: "Mother Horizon"

Request received from Technical Data for one[1] "Mother Horizon", as the German's call it. It's a remotely indicating gyro horizon device. Equipment Laboratory seems to be the interested agency."[6]

These documents are reproduced here.

Incidently, the US military spent huge amounts of time, money and manpower in the years following the war in secret missions, flying over the Arctic. This is no secret now since we have the testimony of Col. Wendele Stevens who took part in these operations while serving in the USAF. In these operations, B-29 bombers were outfitted with the latest electromagnetic sensing gear and flown all over the American and Canadian Arctic allegedly looking for "flying saucers". According to Wendele, when they were sighted, they were filmed and the film and recorded measurements were spirited way to Washington D.C. Nothing was ever heard of them afterward.

It may be no coincidence that something like this was the method used to track down German weather stations during the war. It is also even possible that the origin of these post-war, artic flying saucers was this base or others like it.

SOURCES

1. Godwin, Joscelyn, 1993, page 68, Arktos The Polar Myth In Science, Symbolism, And Nazi Survival, Phanes Press, Grand Rapids, MI.

2. Chatwin, Margret, 1999, page 1, Ahnenerbe, UFOs, Neonazis: Wilhelm Landig, Informationsdienst gegen Rechtsextremismus, http://www.idgr.de/texte-1/esoterik/landig/landig.html

3. Landig, Wilhelm, 1971, pages 121,132, Goetzen gegen Thule Ein Roman voller Wirklichkeiten, Hans Pfieffer VerlagGmbH, Hannover

4. Landig, Wilhelm, 1971, page 27

5. British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report 142, page 4, Information Obtained From Targets Of Opportunity In The Sonthofen Area, London,

6. Unmarked document, undated, titled "Carrier Sheet", page two, microfilm numbers: A-1007,1652

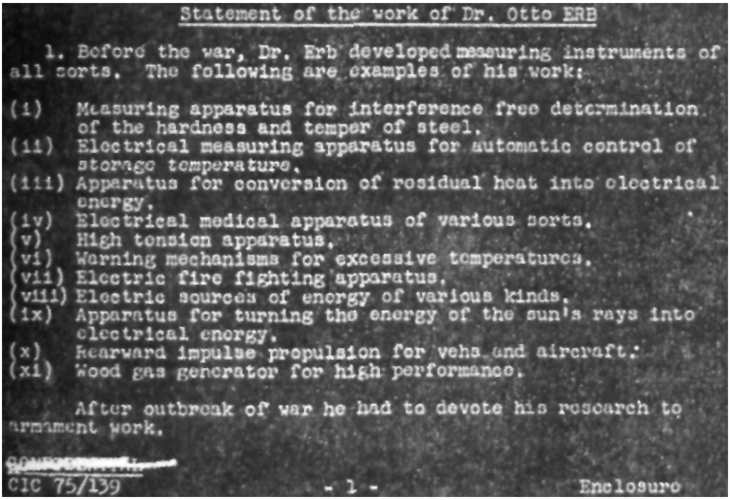
11 German Free Energy Research

The Germans like people everywhere in the 20th century, were experimenting with free energy or new energy inventions. Among those well-known inventions are the Hans Coler devices and the Karl Schnappeller device. The Karl Schnappeller device was described in an earlier book, Hitler's Flying Saucers: A Guide To German Flying Discs Of The Second World War. The Hans Coler device is one of the best-known devices thanks to the British having declassified their analysis of his work and their publication and translation of earlier evaluations[1]. Beyond these two, there is the work of Georg Otto Erb, which was also briefly touched upon in Hitler's Flying Saucers.

Besides working on field propulsion systems, Dr. Erb also worked on "Electric sources of energy of various kinds" as well as "Apparatus for turning the energy of the sun's rays into electrical energy"[2]. A page of the microfilm report is reproduced here. Beyond this report there is no information on Dr. Erb or his research during or after the war.

The devices of Hans Coler are quite another matter. Information about them can is only a mouse-click away using the search words "Hans Coler". Indeed, the entire British Intelligence Sub-Committee report is reproduced on-line, in full. So perhaps instead of a full review of his work, our time would be best spent in discussion of Coler and his ideas as they are contained in that report.

Hans Coler incorporated permanent magnets into both of his devices. There were two of these, the



Statement of the work of Dr. Otto ERB

1. Before the war, Dr. Erb developed measuring instruments of all sorts. The following are examples of his work:

- (i) Measuring apparatus for interference free determination of the hardness and temper of steel.
- (ii) Electrical measuring apparatus for automatic control of storage temperature.
- (iii) Apparatus for conversion of residual heat into electrical energy.
- (iv) Electrical medical apparatus of various sorts.
- (v) High tension apparatus.
- (vi) Warning mechanisms for excessive temperatures.
- (vii) Electric fire fighting apparatus.
- (viii) Electric sources of energy of various kinds.
- (ix) Apparatus for turning the energy of the sun's rays into electrical energy.
- (x) Rearward impulse propulsion for vehs and aircraft.
- (xi) Wood gas generator for high performance.

After outbreak of war he had to devote his research to armament work.

[redacted]

CIC 75/139 - 1 - Enclosure

Government file on Dr. Georg Otto Erb. Note his interest in new sources of energy.

SOLID STATE - AMPLIFYING TRANSFORMERS
HANS COLER - CURRENT FLOW DEVICE & MAGNET CURRENT FLOW APPARATUS

Hans Coler, a German energy researcher from the period from 1936 to 1945 evolved several promising solid state electrical energy sources using permanent magnets, various shaped coils, copper plates and condensers (capacitors).

Two significant devices were produced from this war-time research, the first being the "*Stromerzeuer,*" or *Current Flow Device*, which consisted of a central transformer comprised of two flat coils, with the ends of the secondary flat coil connected in series with the South poles of two permanent magnets. The North poles of the two permanent magnets are linearly connected to two flat copper plates.

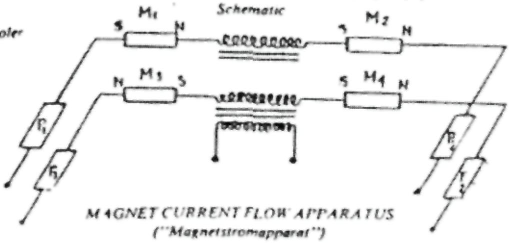
The output leads were connected to the ends of the copper plates, all in accordance with the accompanying diagram.

The input to the primary flat coil was at the wattage level provided by a standard dry cell battery, presumed to be the 1½ volt size. It was claimed that when the battery energized the primary circuit, a separation of charge takes place, influenced by the two magnet polarities, within the linear circuitry. When the battery source was switched off, a reversing current is supposed to flow, in the secondary circuit, but the magnets are not supposed to influence a polarization effect on this reversing.

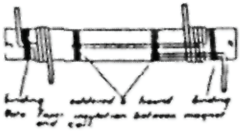
Several size versions of the "Stromerzeuger" were built, one small ten watt unit, a larger seventy (70) watt unit and finally a large unit built in 1937 reportedly produced 6 KW output.

CURRENT FLOW DEVICE (Stromerzeuger")
Schematic

VI Hans Coler

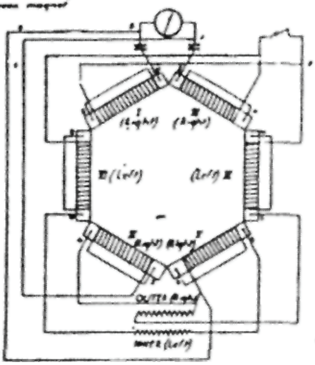


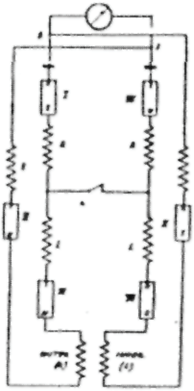
MAGNET CURRENT FLOW APPARATUS
("Magnetstromapparat")



Coil-over Magnet-Detail Schematic

Fig 1





Geometric Layout - "Magnetstromapparat"

German Free Energy Devices: Above is the Stromerzeuger which greatly interested the German Navy.

Below is the agnetstromapparat, a demonstration device.

"Magnetstromapparat" and the "Stromerzeuger". The Magnetstromapparat was fully developed and completed by 1933 with the help of von Unruh and Franz Haid of Siemens-Schukert. This means that the Siemens firm, inspire of later denials (or memory losses), has known of free energy and specifically the Hans Coler device since the early 1930s. In 1933, as part of a test, the Magnetstromapparat was locked in a room in the Norwegian Legation in Berlin. During the time it was locked away, the Coler device continued to produce electric tension of thirteen volts

No further work was done by Coler on the Magnetstromapparat after this time. His entire energies were focussed on the Stromerzeuger. In 1943 Coler and his work ended up at the O.K.M., or the German Navy. At this time Coler had achieve an output of 6 kilovolts for the Stromerzeuger. This was just the basic unit, meaning that additional sections could be grafted onto this unit for a much increased output.

The official "party line" is that no further developments came after this time, meaning that the German Navy never used this device. The story gets even more definitive in that it is claimed that the Coler devices were destroyed in an air raid. For what purpose do you suppose the German Navy might have used this device? I have only one clue to offer. By this time in the war the German Navy was really nothing more than the German U-boat service. Imagine a U-boat running on electricity generated underwater without an air-consuming diesel engine? Do you think they just might be interested?

It was only after the war, in 1946, when Color found himself in the British occupation zone, that the Magnetstromapparat was rebuilt at the request of the British. The British supplied material but the device was re-created in Germany. The British also asked for a materials list for the much more powerful Stromerzeuger, but information on its re-construction is lacking.

The Stromerzeuger was not one device or model but several. In reading the descriptions given by scientists who studied the device for fraud, it is evident that these devices varied in size and output as well as design details.

The Stromerzeuger consisted of two separate devices, a primary connected via induction to a secondary. The primary was activated by battery. The primary was opened and closed inducing a reaction in the secondary. The output from the secondary was said to have been many times that of the primary's input. Additional "secondaries" could be added, further increasing output.

Coler said that ferro-magnetism has an oscillation of a frequency of 180 kilohertz. The interaction of this frequency and that of opening and closing the circuit is thought by Coler to have built up an electrical tension.

Coler thought this tension was further enhanced by what he called "Raumenergie" or "space energy". Coler believed that this additional outside energy, "space electrons" flowed from "repelling spaces" to "attracting spaces" in his device. These were located in the flat copper plates he used as part of the circuit. This attracting-repelling space sounds very much like the semiconductor theories presented in modern textbooks. The space energy is still unrecognized by accepted science, yet the British confirmed that the Magnetstromapparat worked and could not be explained by conventional electrical theory.

The British report on Coler was not de-classified until 1978 or 1979, well after the first energy crisis. If this were just mad ravings, then it would have never been classified and would have been used for propaganda purposes to discredit German science, thus removing it from the notice or interest of "enquiring minds".

It sounds like when the flat copper plates were activated, they acted like an open drain-plug, allowing this "space energy" to enter the circuit.

Hold on, we are not quite done with German free or new energy devices and research and I promise you a big surprise when we return to it.

SOURCES

1. British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report no. 1043, item no. 31, The Invention Of Hans Coler, Relating To An Alleged New Source Of Power, 1946, London, W.1.

2. Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report number 146, Dr. Georg Otto Erb

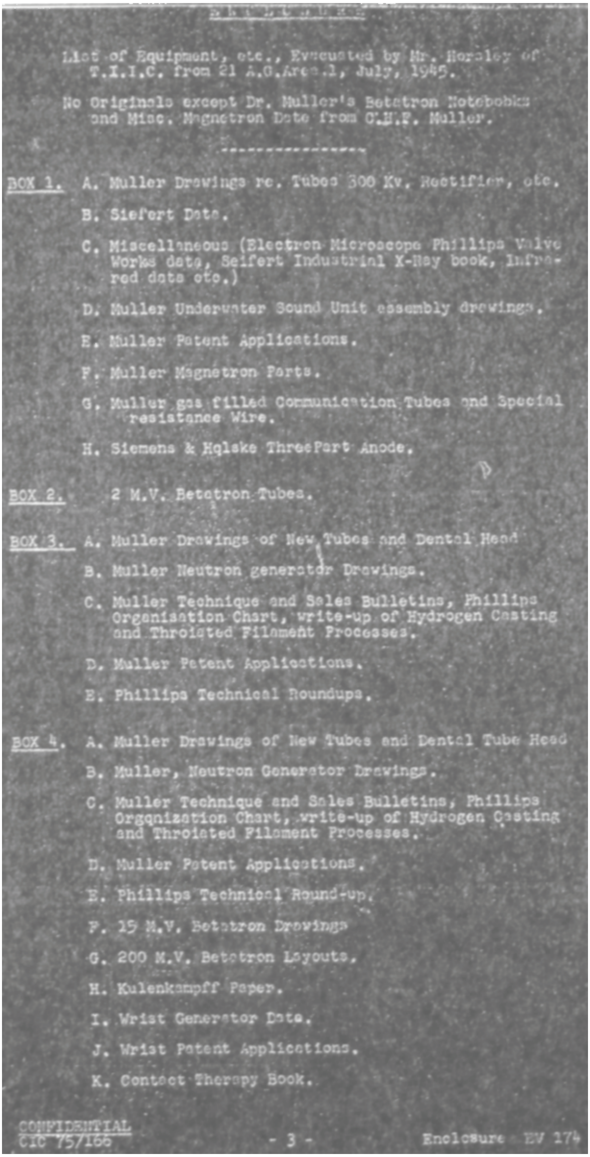
12 Technical Infrastructure

Just as established history tells us that there are no new energy sources or new energy devices, established history also tells us that it was not the Germans, but the Americans who detonated the first atomic device. German atomic research is often described in establishment history as consisting of a crude atomic pile in someone's basement or backyard which would have either exploded or the faulty device would have killed everyone involved with radiation. This is the classic undervaluation, minimization story.

But if the Germans were able to do far more than they have been credited, wouldn't there be some sort of corroborating technical evidence? In other words, wouldn't there have been a supporting technical infrastructure?

Thanks to the intensive efforts of Allied intelligence to investigate every aspect of the technical underpinnings of the German war effort, we have the evidence in the form of the Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee reports, the British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee reports, the F.I.A.T. reports and other similar research gathering reports and organizations. All these agencies published findings and summary reports, even if they have not all been de-classified today. It would take volumes of books to bind and organize this material but I would like to discuss one or two that have a bearing on past and future topics.

Through much of the war, research was directed by the Reich's Research Council. From here it was organized in three phases. Basic research was done at a



[illegible]

List of Equipment, etc., Evacuated by Mr. Horsley of T.I.I.C. from 21 A.G.Area.1, July, 1945.

No Originals except Dr. Muller's Betatron Notebooks and Misc. Magnetron Data from C.H.F. Muller.

BOX 1. A. Muller Drawings re. Tubes 300 Kv. Rectifier, etc.

B. Siefert Data.

C. Miscellaneous (Electron Microscope Phillips Valve Works data, Seifert Industrial X-Ray book, Infra-red data etc.)

D. Muller Underwater Sound Unit assembly drawings.

E. Muller Patent Applications.

F. Muller Magnetron Parts.

G. Muller gas filled Communication Tubes and Special resistance Wire.

H. Siemens & Halske ThreePart Anode.

BOX 2. 2 M.V. Betatron Tubes.

BOX 3. A. Muller Drawings of New Tubes and Dental Head

B. Muller Neutron generator Drawings.

C. Muller Technique and Sales Bulletins, Phillips Organisation Chart, write-up of Hydrogen Casting and Throiated Filament Processes.

D. Muller Patent Applications.

E. Phillips Technical Roundups.

BOX 4. A. Muller Drawings of New Tubes and Dental Tube Head

B. Muller, Neutron Generator Drawings.

C. Muller Technique and Sales Bulletins, Phillips Orgqnization Chart, write-up of Hydrogen Casting and Throiated Filament Processes.

D. Muller Patent Applications.

E. Phillips Technical Round-up.

F. 15 M.V. Betatron Drawings

G. 200 M.V. Betatron Layouts.

H. Kulenkampff Paper.

I. Wrist Generator Data.

J. Wrist Patent Applications.

K. Contact Therapy Book.

From the Combined Intelligence Objectives Subcommittee report number 174, C.H.F. Muller, A.G. This is a list of recovered items in boxes. Note: box 3, letter B and box 4, letter B, "Neutron Generator Drawings". Also note in box 4, I and J which concerng a wrist generator data and patent application. Magnetrons and betatrons are also discussed.

"Forschungs" (research) facility. After the basic concept had been tested and verified, the idea, machine, weapon, etc., went on to an "Entwicklung" (development) facility where the idea was worked out in practical terms. From here the idea was carried to a production facility that was a manufacturer, usually a commercial manufacturer. The larger manufacturers have names which are familiar to us, Heinkel, Siemens, I.G. Farben, etc. But it could also go to a smaller, less known manufacturer.

Having described a chain of events, it should be added that there were many exceptions to this sequence. Some of the manufacturing companies did their own research. Universities and technical colleges did research besides and in addition to that sponsored by the government. Every branch of the German military did independent research. There were many private inventors and scientists working on their own projects that were of special interest to them. Finally, the SS had a vast system of research by the end of the war and actually appropriated facilities and people from other organizations.

Government intelligence reports are not explicit but what I would like to do is use them to describe a couple of these research facilities and a small manufacturing firm who made devices necessary for the development of some of the more exotic devices we will encounter later. Also, a description of one or two of the completely researched concepts from those days might prove interesting.

Let us first look at the C.H.F. Muller, A.G. Company. This was a small manufacturing company, employing about 500 people with about 80,000 square feet of floor space.

C.H.F. Muller made x-ray machines and similar electronic devices that were employed in the nuclear effort. They made x-ray machines for use in the medical realm. They also made a "cascade" high voltage generator, 900 to 2,400 Kv. for use as a deutron generator. A deutron or deuteron is the nucleus of the deuterium atom. Deuterium is an isotope of hydrogen meaning that it has the same chemical properties as hydrogen but a slightly different atomic structure. Both hydrogen and deuterium form oxides, hydrogen oxide and deuterium oxide. We call hydrogen oxide "water" and deuterium oxide "heavy water".

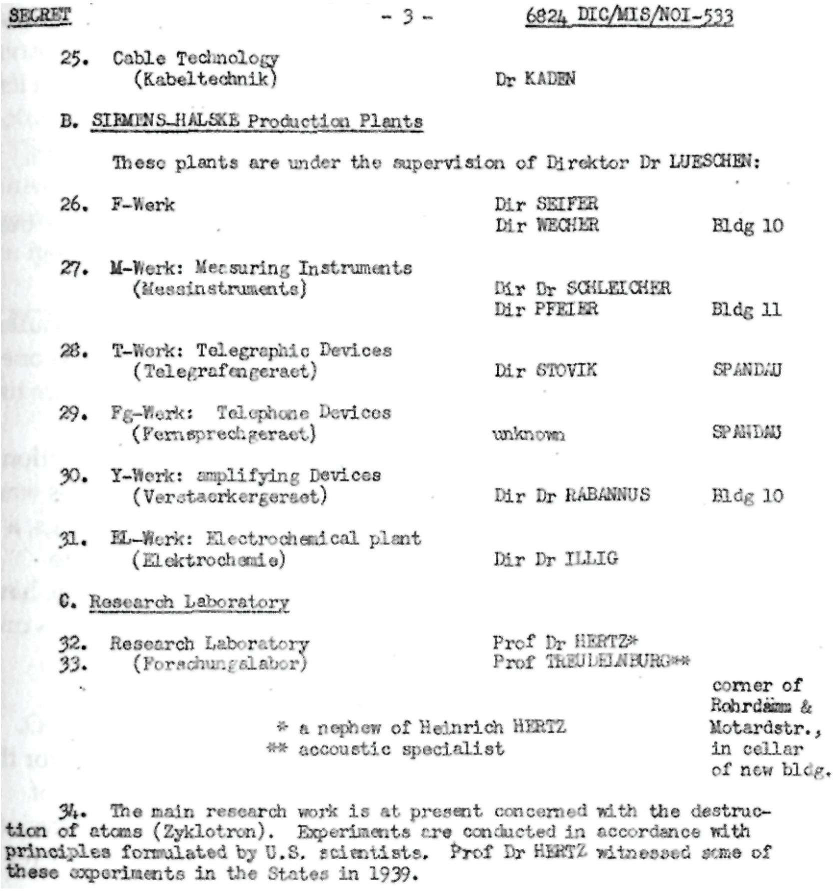
C.H.F. Muller made magnetrons of apparently their own design. A magnetron is used to generate very high frequency wavelengths. They also made betatrons of three kinds. The betatron had only been recently invented and it was used to generate very high-energy electron beams as well as extremely powerful beams of x-rays. The x-rays generated using a betatron have very great penetrating power. C.H.F. Muller made electron microscopes, a "wrist generator" (a patent application for this device was also found at C.H.F. Muller) and there were plans found for a Muller neutron generator. Let's look at the last two in more detail.

A few years back, a retired USAF Colonel, Philip Corso, made some claims about finding a dead alien in a plastic body bag at some US Air Force base in his book titled, The Day After Roswell. Well, he couldn't produce the dead alien for his book or even a picture of it or another witness to corroborate his testimony, so, to bolster his argument he linked this alleged dead alien with examples of to-that-time unknown technology which he claimed were of alien origin. The two big unknown technologies he cited as coming from with the alien universe were the transistor and night vision equipment.

Night vision equipment is well documented as having been invented by the Germans during World War Two. In fact, the device described below must have been some sort of light amplification device. This particular device was said to have been powered by a truly miniature generator.

"He showed me then what had been two of the most closely-guarded technical secrets of the war: the infrared device which the Germans invented for seeing at night and the remarkable diminutive generator with operated it. German cars could drive at any speed in total blackout, seeing objects clear as day two hundred meters ahead. Tanks with this device could spot targets two miles away. As a sniper scope it enabled German riflemen to pick off a man in total darkness.

There was a sighting tube, and a selenium screen out front. The screen caught the incoming infrared light, which drove electrons from the selenium along the tube to another screen that was electrically charged and fluorescent. A visible image appeared on this screen. Its clearness and its accuracy for aiming purposes were phenomenal. Inside the tube, distortion of the stream of electrons by the earth's magnetism was even allowed for!



25.	Cable Technology (Kabeltechnik)	Dr KADEN	

B. SIEMENS-HALSKE Production Plants

These plants are under the supervision of Direktor Dr LUESCHEN:

26.	F-Werk	Dir SEIFER Dir WECHER	Bldg 10
27.	M-Werk: Measuring Instruments (Messinstruments)	Dir Dr SCHLEICHER Dir PFEIER	Bldg 11
28.	T-Werk: Telegraphic Devices (Telegrafengeraet)	Dir STOVIK	SPANDAU
29.	Fg-Werk: Telephone Devices (Fernsprechgeraet)	unknown	SPANDAU
30.	Y-Werk: amplifying Devices (Verstaerkergeraet)	Dir Dr RABANNUS	Bldg 10
31.	EL-Werk: Electrochemical plant (Elektrochemie)	Dir Dr ILLIG	

C. Research Laboratory

32. 33.	Research Laboratory (Forschungslabor)	Prof Dr HERTZ* Prof TREUDELENBURG**	corner of Rohrdamm & Motardstr., in cellar of new bldg.

* a nephew of Heinrich HERTZ
** accoustic specialist

34. The main research work is at present concerned with the destruction of atoms (Zyklotron). Experiments are conducted in accordance with principles formulated by U.S. scientists. Prof Dr HERTZ witnessed some of these experiments in the States in 1939.

This is part of a page from a Secret report, dated October 1944 but issued in March, 1945, titled: Coil Research Laboratory Siemens Halske Berlin (6824 DIC/MIS/NOT-533) Please note item 34. At this radio research and development laboratory the Germans experimented with a "Zyklotron" with is their spelling of cyclotron. A cyclotron is a particle accelerater, still used in atomic research and development to this day.

The diminutive generator-five inches across-stepped up current from an ordinary flashlight battery to 15,000 volts. It had a walnut-sized motor that spun a rotor at 10,000 rpm—so fast that originally it had destroyed all lubricants with the great amount of ozone it produced. The Germans had developed a new grease: chlorinated paraffin oil. The generator then ran 3,000 hours!"[1].

The C.H.F. Muller wrist generator fits this description. Please remember this context as we will return to the super lubricant in a later chapter.

The other development mentioned in the intelligence report is the neutron generator. In order to cause a chain reaction, on demand, resulting in an atomic bomb, a method to generate a stream of neutrons is usually thought necessary. The fact that the C.H.F. Muller A.G. had designed some sort of neutron generator indicates that one piece in the puzzle concerning the detonation of an atomic device had been solved.

Along these same lines there was another company in production of electronic devices necessary for an atomic infrastructure. This was the Siemens Halske firm in Berlin who made, among other things, a cyclotron[2]. A cyclotron is a machine that uses a magnetic field to propel heavier nuclear particles. It is a particle accelerator. There have been rumors that the Germans even used a particle accelerator as one method to enrich uranium.

Next we turn to a pure research organization, the Flugfunk Forschungsinstitut Oberpfaffenhofen, abbreviated F.F.O. The F.F.O. was an organization specializing in aeronautical radio research for the Luftwaffe. This organization seems to have specialized in work of jamming radar. This was a large organization and had many physical sites of operation. When the war drew to a conclusion, all the secret research done at the F.F.O. was burnt. What we know and what remains consist largely of what was remembered by the individual scientists involved and their private libraries. It is not unreasonable to assume that some secrets went forever unspoken after those ashes cooled, however.

The F.F.O. developed three types of magnetrons and several types of klystrons. A klystron tube is used to produce ultra-high frequencies but they seem to have been smaller than magnetrons. Klystrons seem to have been the hot ticket at this time and were employed to generated frequencies in order to jam radar. Klystrons were employed in the famous "Feuer" devices of which there was more than one[3]. This name "Feuer" is "fire" in English and has given rise to speculation that klystrons were employed in the alleged jamming devices on the German Feuerball (foo or phoo fighter). The klystron tube could very well have been the transmission apparatus for the Magnetic Wave or Motorstoppmitel device we will discuss later.

The F.F.O. also did some interesting work in "crystal detectors", as named by the Americans. But before discussing that topic, perhaps two examples of completed projects should be pointed out as well as one involving some very futuristic research:

ELECTROSTATIC ANTI-AIRCRAFT SHELL FUSES

"The principle involved in these fuses is similar to that used in measurements of electric fields. The shell or projectile has a small aerial sticking out on one side. The whole shell rotates about its axis in the normal manner and this causes the aerial to develop an alternating voltage if any electrostatic fields are present. This voltage is fed to the grid of a cold-cathode thyratron tube causing it to conduct when the voltage is large enough. The anode of the tube is fed by a condenser that was charged while the shell was in the gun. The discharge of this condenser through the thyrotron blows a small electric fuse and explodes the shell.

The shell is fired from the ground where the electrostatic field is usually about 1 Kv per metre (it varies between 0.1 and 10 Kv/m). Consequently, the shell has an appreciable charge induced on it by this field before it loses contact with the earth. During flight this charge gives a field that is symmetric and produces no alternating voltage in the aerial. When the shell approaches an aircraft or large conducting body the induced fields are asymmetric and can induce alternating voltages of the order of tens or hundreds of volts in the aerial."[4]

Today, we call this a proximity fuse but it is evident in this careful description by the CIOS that this concept was revolutionary at that time.

GUIDED MISSILES

"A remote control steering mechanism for a falling bomb has been developed by the group of Ing. Kreil at F.F.O. Grafolfing. It consists of an airborne transmitter at 25 mc/s and a receiving system inside the bomb. The aerials are stretched diagonally between the tail fins of the bomb to make them less susceptible to jamming coming from the front of the bomb. The apparatus was unsuccessful owing to electrical discharges (corona, etc.), from the bomb during fall affecting the receiver and causing the bomb to zig-zag. The work was stopped in 1944.

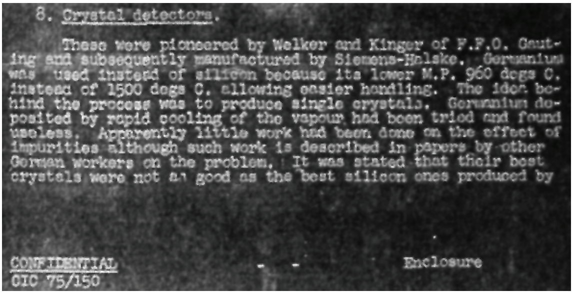
Ing. Kreil said that the Luftwaffe had subsequently found a cure for this by trailing wires with resistors or threads of semi-conducting materials behind the bomb to cause the electrical discharges to take place slowly and without oscillation in the frequency range used for controlling the bomb.[5]

In other words, the F.F.O. invented the first "smart bomb".

STEALTH RESEARCH

"Measurement on the conductivity and dielectric properties of flame gases are being conducted by Dr. Lutze at Seeshaupt. They are intended to provide knowledge of the effects to be expected with radio control of rockets and to say how much the flame and trail of a V-2 contributes to radar reflections."[6]

So the F.F.O. was measuring the conductivity and radar reflectional properties of exhaust gases? Placing a cathode in the exhaust of a jet or rocket was the Flame Jet Generator of Dr. T.T. Brown[7]. This procedure induced a negative charge to the exhaust. A corresponding positive charge is automatically induced on the wing's leading edge. This combination bends



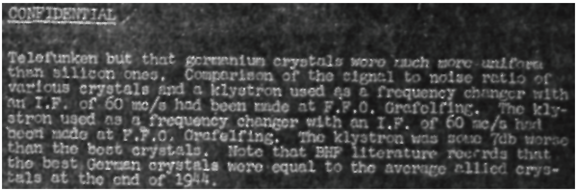
8. Crystal detectors.

These were pioneered by Welker and Kinger of F.F.O. Gauting and subsequently manufactured by Siemens-Halske. Germanium was used instead of silicon because its lower M.P. 960 degs C. instead of 1500 degs C. allowing easier handling. The idea behind the process was to produce single crystals. Germanium deposited by rapid cooling of the vapour had been tried and found useless. Apparently little work had been done on the effect of impurities although such work is described in papers by other German workers on the problem. It was stated that their best crystals were not as good as the best silicon ones produced by

CONFIDENTIAL
CIC 75/150

- -

Enclosure



CONFIDENTIAL

Telefunken but that germanium crystals were much more uniform than silicon ones. Comparison of the signal to noise ratio of various crystals and a klystron used as a frequency changer with an I.F. of 60 mc/s had been made at F.F.O. Grafelfing. The klystron used as a frequency changer with an I.F. of 60 mc/s had been made at F.F.O. Grafelfing. The klystron was some 7db worse than the best crystals. Note that BHP literature records that the best German crystals were equal to the average allied crystals at the end of 1944.

Work of the Flugfunk Forschungsinstitut Oberpfaffenhofen (F.F.O.) on "crystal detectors" involving silicon, germanium and a discussion of impurities within these materials. Engineered impurities in silicon/germanium form the basis for modern semiconductors.

radar signals around the aircraft and is one method used by the B-2 bomber.

Let's back up a second. The Horton 9, described earlier, had recessed intake and exhaust ports. It had no vertical control surfaces. Therefore, its radar reflection was already super-low. We certainly have no trouble imagining this aircraft painted with radar absorbing paint as was planned. How about inducing a radar-bending envelope of charged particles around this aircraft? And how about fitting this aircraft with a klystron tube in its nose pumping out the same frequency used by Allied radar, jamming it or making the aircraft invisible to radar? If we can imagine this, so could the scientists with the F.F.O. If the war had lasted another year, the Allies might have faced not only a 700 mile per hour Horton 9, but a Horton 9 which was also a true stealth aircraft in the modern sense.

Finally, "crystal detectors" should be mentioned. According to the CIOS report, both the F.F.O., the firm Telefunken, and Siemens-Halske worked with this and related ideas, the pioneering work having been done by Welker and Kinger of the F.F.O., Gautling facility. Single crystals were involved which originally were made of silicon. This is the same silicon used today in our modern semi-conductor industry. This technology broke upon the scene with the introduction of the transistor.

The transistor, invented in 1947 by Dr. William Shockley, replaced the glass vacuum tube as a valve or switching device in electronics. The transistor works because it allows electrons to flow only in one direction, on demand. Transistors could make a gate or valve in a three-way connection. It does this using special impurities in the crystal structure which facilitate electron flow.

Philip Corso, in his book The Day After Roswell, claims that aliens invented transistors and they just suddenly appeared on the scene. These transistors just fell into the hands of Dr. Shockley at Bell Laboratories, according to Corso. Of course nobody in the scientific community agrees with Corso. But what would be evidence for the terrestrial development of transistors? It would be a history of development of transistors and related devices right here on earth leading up to the transistor.

Not only was the F.F.O. and other institutions working with silicon in electronics during the Second World War, they were also working with the other crystal substance always mentioned in discussion of semi-conductors, Germanium. In fact, the CIOS report describes manufacturing methods involving both of these crystals and compares the results of silicon vs. Germanium.

Of course, there are those who will say that working on crystals is not necessarily the same as working on semi-conductors. But the discussion of impurities within a discussion of silicon or Germanium would indicate a discussion of semi-conductors. From the CIOS report:

"Apparently little work had been done on the effect of impurities although such work is described in papers by other German workers on the problem."[8]

At first, this may sound like negative evidence but it is not. It says that the Germans were not working on semi-conductors at the F.F.O. but they had recognized the concept and were not only working on the problem somewhere else, they had written about it. This report is dated July 1, 1945, just after the war in Europe ended. This pre-dates the alleged Roswell crash. It documents that research in semi-conductors or leading to semi-conductors took place on planet earth shortly before their disclosure in the form of the transistor. I really do not know if the Germans invented the transistor and if it was later funneled into the hands of an American company or not. But this CIOS report does document that the Germans were at the very least involved in this research which not only argues for their high-tech status, it strips the late Col. Corso of any corroborating physical evidence for aliens besides his body-bag testimony.

What these examples show is that the technical infrastructure which was present in Germany during this period of time was more than advanced enough to supply research scientists with machines and devices they needed to do advanced work. This technical infrastructure was at least the equal of anything found in Britain or the United States at the time.

SOURCES

1. Walker, C. Lester, "Secrets By The Thousands", October, 1946, page 331, Harper's Magazine

2. Coil Research Laboratory Siemens Halske Berlin Oct 44, March 14, 1945, reference numbers 0136094, 6824 DIc/Mis/Noi-5633, VicaMed. Afbq No R-1198/455

3. Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report number 139, "Drs. Kleen & Larbs,l July, 1945, page 2

4. Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report number 156, "Report On Flugfunk Forschungsinstitut Oberpfaffenhofen F.F.O. Establishments, 1 July, 1945, pages 9 and 10

5. ibid

6. ibid

7. Stevens, Henry, Hitler's Flying Saucers A Guide To German Flying Discs Of The Second World War, 2003, pages 132-136, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois

8. Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report number 156, "Report On Flugfunk Forschungsinstitut Oberpfaffenhofen F.F.O. Establishments, 1 July, 1945, pages 7 and 8

13 German Atomic Test

For some readers of history the very idea that Germany built and tested an atomic device during World War Two is heretical. Conventional history has drilled it into our heads that American scientists of the Manhattan Project built the first atomic weapons. They allegedly succeeded in accomplishing this goal in July of 1945 with the first atomic weapon was tested in New Mexico. Beginning in August of 1945, atomic weapons were dropped on Japan, which brought the Second World War to a close. It is all very neat and tidy. American scientists became heroes, icons in our culture. Buildings and whole institutions are named after Enrico Fermi and Robert Oppenheimer, for instance. At the same time we are told that the weak German effort at building atomic weapons was too little and too late and too disorganized.

Established history does not deny the German atomic program, it only minimizes it. Modern writers cite such evidence as the Farm Hall conversations as proof that the German scientists were years behind the Americans in building atomic weapons. At the same time established history seeks to maximize the British effort to destroy the German heavy water producing facilities in central Norway. This operation is treated as one of the military/technological turning points in the war effort and one that sealed the fate of the German atomic weapons program permanently. So that is it, then, neat and tidy?

Recently, new information has cast doubt on idea that the Germans were incompetent in this area. This new information is based upon evidence in Europe itself rather than simply the controlled information released in post-war America.

Some of this new information is based upon exploration of underground facilities abandoned by the Germans in the closing days of the war[1]. Many of these underground facilities were sealed with explosives as the Germans retreated and never re-opened until after the collapse of the former Soviet Union. Some of this new information is based upon research done in Germany at the Jonas Valley which indicates that a whole atomic infra-structure was set up there during and that this was done after the destruction of the heavy water facilities in Norway[2]. This is not conjecture but based upon eyewitness evidence as well as actual physical evidence which is still on-site. Some of this new information resides in the American government's own declassified words in which they admit the existence of neutron generators, for instance[3], and affix the location and scientists involved.

And finally, some of the new information comes from interconnecting a number of separated and isolated eyewitness and historical sources[4] which would have been impossible only a few years ago. The resulting tableau painted by these facts is shocking, to say the least. What emerges is a detailed step-by-step, date-by-date account of the German atomic program. Actually, it is many programs, not three or even six. Some were secret programs within a secretive Germany, one of these being run by the SS. Thanks to this new research, we have dates, locations, names of scientists who were involved and even the weapons they produced at these individual locations.

The Germans did make atomic bombs. Not only did they make atomic bombs, they made uranium as well as plutonium bombs and other atomic weapons which remain somewhat of a mystery. What the Germans could not do in these dying days of the 3rd Reich, was to match up one of these nuclear warheads with an effective delivery system. The reasons for this differ with each weapon, individually, and run the gambit from mistake to treachery to incompetence[4].

The shocking outcome of these events was that the unexploded German atomic bombs fell into the hands of the Americans at the end of the war in Europe in May of 1945, two months before the "first" explosion of an atomic weapon in the New Mexico desert. What a present for the Americans! All they did was to put new tail fins on the bombs, repaint them, and drop them on Japan. Naturally, the American scientists involved with the Manhattan Project were given credit[4].

As an aside, the fact is that many of those very scientists were spies for the Soviet Union during this time as recently discovered Soviet intelligence proves[5]. I am not talking about simple middlemen like the Rosenbergs. What I am talking about are those very icons in our society who speak for American atomic scientists. I am talking about all those American atomic scientists who found a "conscious" after they realized the atomic bomb would never be used on Germany, as they hoped, but might instead be used on the Soviets after the war was over. I am talking about those "emigre", "peacenik" scientists calling for and "end to war". I am talking about those scientists who posed, smoking a pipe, as someone somehow smarter and morally on a higher plane than you and I.

Here are the facts: "Calibre" was the Soviet code-name for their agent Greenglass. "Editor" was their name for Enrico Fermi and "Star" was the Soviet code-name for their agent Robert Oppenheimer[5]. These men are our cultural heroes. Put your hand behind your ear. Can you hear the KGB laughing all the way from Moscow? Not only were they spies, they conspired to lie about their work and did so. But they are not alone. They got a lot of help from their friends in the intelligence community and the mass media. The amazing truth is that they got away with the whole big lie. The Manhattan Project scientists, failures, unable to build their own atomic bomb, literally fell into the toilet and came out smelling like roses, as far as history is concerned.

I am not going to try to re-tell the whole story of the German atomic projects. Those interested can see the sources below. What I would like to do is tell one story. It is a story of an eyewitness to a German atomic test which took place in October of 1944, nine months before "history" says that was possible.

This report originates in the journal "Defensa", Number 76-77, August-September of 1984. The text was in Italian but a summary and translation appeared in German language and it is from this translation that this report is derived[6]. The report was the life experience of the writer, Luigi Romersa. Mr. Romersa was sent upon a strange mission by Bonito Mussolini, the Fascist leader of Italy and Hitler's ally. The time was April of 1944. The war was not going well for the Axis Powers and Mussolini was summoned to a meeting with Hitler at Castle Klessheim, near Saltzburg, Austria. The meeting lasted three days. With Mussolini came Marshal Rodolfo Graziani and with Hitler were von Ribbentrop, Keitel, Dollmann and Ambassador Rahn. Hitler's allies had been given little information on the development of German wonder weapons until this time. This meeting was the first time Hitler had broached the subject with Mussolini.

Hitler and Mussolini were genuine friends. In the past, Hitler had personally defended Mussolini when he was disparaged by ranking members of the German military. Hitler had personally intervened when the Italian government did a flop-flop and deposed Mussolini, imprisoning him on a mountaintop fortress while entering into negotiations to turn him over to the Allies. This intervention took the form of Colonel Otto Skorzeny, who led a team of commando raiders onto this mountaintop fortress in a daring glider attack. El Duce was freed and flown to Vienna before the turn-coat Italian government knew what had happened. Mussolini was subsequently installed in a Northern Italian government, loyal to Hitler. Mussolini spoke excellent German and had even given a speech or two in that language. So, bearing these facts in mind, it was not lack of trust or lack of communication, which caused the doubt that had arisen in Mussolini's mind after hearing Hitler's discussion of German wonder weapons. But Mussolini did want to know if Hitler's promised weapons could really win the war. In other words, he wanted to do his own appraisal.

The first meeting lasted two hours. By all accounts, Hitler was the master of positive thinking and was also the master of intoning such optimism in the face of adversity. Using this manner, Hitler reviewed the global political and military situation and inundated his guests with impressions and observations. He assured his audience that the war would certainly be won once Germany had deployed its new weapons. Hitler walked through the room as he said:

"We have aircraft, imperceptible U-boats, giant tanks and cannons, unbelievably powerful rockets and a bomb with a force which will surprise the whole world. The enemy knows this, he attacks us, he destroys us, but through this destruction he will be answered with attack and without launching biological warfare, for which we are also prepared. (...). All my words correspond with the purest truth which will be confirmed."

After the meeting Mussolini quietly returned to Gargnaro, on Lake Garda in Northern Italy, where he had a residence. Mussolini clearly wanted to know more.

In the Fall of 1944, Mr. Romersa was summoned by Mussolini to the villa Orsoline where he was living with his family. Romersa was given the assignment by Mussolini to journey to Germany and find out more about things which had only been presented to him superficially at Castle Klessheim. Mussolini wanted detailed information. Romersa was given credentials and a letter of recommendation for Goebbels and Hitler, respectively.

Romersa traveled to Germany by car. Hitler personally read the letter of recommendation in his headquarters at Rastenburg in East Prussia and allowed Mr. Romersa's presence at some experiments. He began his tour with underground factories that were concentrated in Upper Selesia and Bavaria.

The underground factories were more like small cities buried underground within a mountain. Elevators offered access the inner bowels of these well-camouflaged, well-guarded facilities. The tunnels ran kilometer after kilometer within the earth, all connected by rail, which facilitated transport of personnel as well as material.

The tour of the underground facilities, however interesting, was not the highlight of Mr. Romersa's trip to Germany. Sometime during the night of October 11, 1944 Mr. Romesa was picked up at the hotel Adlon in Berlin. He was told that after this particular trip, he would be received by none other than Minister Goebels himself. Mr. Romersa asked where he was being taken but to his question there was no answer. This was at two o'clock in the morning. A light rain fell that night as he was driven to his goal. At ten o'clock the following morning they arrived and got out of the car. They were on the shores of the Baltic in the vicinity of Stralsund. They took a motorboat from there to the island of Ruegen. Ruegen was within the testing range were many German weapons were completed. This was a secret place, guarded by specialized units. It was an area in which none could even set foot without an approval card from the supreme command of the German military. In fact, Ruegen Island lies just north of Peenemuende.

Once on Ruegen Island, they immediately went into a region that was sheltered by trees. In a flat area within this forest there had been prepared stone houses and a protective bunker made from cement. They went into a half buried underground tower through a metal door that was closed behind them. Besides Mr. Romersa, there were three other men in the party.

One of the military men who had accompanied Romersa began talking. He said that they would now witness a test of an atomic bomb. Nothing could withstand the blast of such a bomb, the man went on, saying that the explosive power of this bomb was the strongest ever discovered. They were only a kilometer from the point of the explosion but, of course, well sheltered from the blast, which was scheduled for noon. Nevertheless, they would have to remain in the bunker until that evening. Romersa was told that the bomb released deadly radiation. The effective circumference of the blast would be a kilometer and a half. The witnesses would, therefore not only be seeing the blast, they would be experiencing it first hand.

The telephone rang. The test had been moved up to 11:45 A.M. Slits in the side of the concrete bunker had been provided which were covered with smoked glass for viewing. Romersa could see trees and a darkened landscape. The telephone ran again with the exact time of detonation. All present synchronized their wristwatches.

Suddenly a blinding light appeared as the concrete tower of the bunker shook. As Mr. Romersa watched, a thick curtain of smoke descended over the landscape and then the cloud covered their position. Nobody spoke. They were entangled in the smoke and the impact of the blast. They felt as if they had fallen over an abyss.

Finally, the driver of their vehicle who was a lieutenant in the army, the branch of the service that had prepared this test, said that the test they had seen and therefore confirmed was extremely important. When ready, he went on, these bombs could be dropped on the Anglo-American invasion troops or on enemy cities. This bomb, he said, should cause the enemy to think twice about the course of this war.

The officer went on: We have done research for years. After long and tiring experimentation, we have finally completed this discovery. We have facilities everywhere. Some were met with and destroyed by the enemy, such as the facilities in Norway, but Peenemuende is intact although the Americans have sought to destroy this facility. In six or seven months the series mass production of these bombs will begin. Everything will change then but some will be perplexed or disconcerted because of or on account of the introduction of this frightful remedy.

Mr. Romersa continues his narrative which is loosely translated here: About four o'clock, the hall dark, there appeared some shadows. They ran to our bunker tower. They were soldiers dressed in what looked like some sort of strange diving suit. These soldiers soon entered the building. They brought with them special garments for those inside to wear as they left the shelter of the bunker. Romersa did not know for sure what the overcoats were made of but they were white, rough fiber-like material that might have been asbestos. The head covering was provided with a slit of mica-like glass at eye level. They were given high but very light boots to wear as well as gloves made from the same material as the overcoats. The soldiers led them out of the bunker tower in single file.

The farther they got from the bunker the more mixed up the landscape looked. The forest looked like it had been swamped by a wave of fire. In this burnt-out setting, Mr. Romera's foot struck something unusual. It turned out to be the carbonized body of a goat. The stone houses and tower that he had seen a few hours earlier were completely swept away. The devastation increased as they moved toward ground zero. Here, the grass had a strange color resembling chamois and the trees that had remained upright were stripped of their leaves. They returned to Berlin that night.

Before the end of October Mr. Romersa met with Minister Goebbels. The meeting took place at Goebbels home. Goebbels was informed of Mr. Romersa's presence at the "Experiment in Ruegen". He told Mr. Romersa that by various means great numbers of these weapons would be manufactured by which the enemy would be "decisively met with". Countermeasures to the weapon, if any, could be thought up later since, by that time, this war would be over.

Goebbels paused and then began discussing delivery systems. He told Mr. Romersa that the bombs would be delivered by special U-boats equipped with snorkels and turbines, from radio controlled V-weapons of unbelievable high speed, from supersonic aircraft, from long-range rockets, A-4 and A-9 with a range of more than one thousand kilometers. For a few months we must bear our teeth and hold out, Goebbles said. "We need time. Twenty-four hours could be decisive".

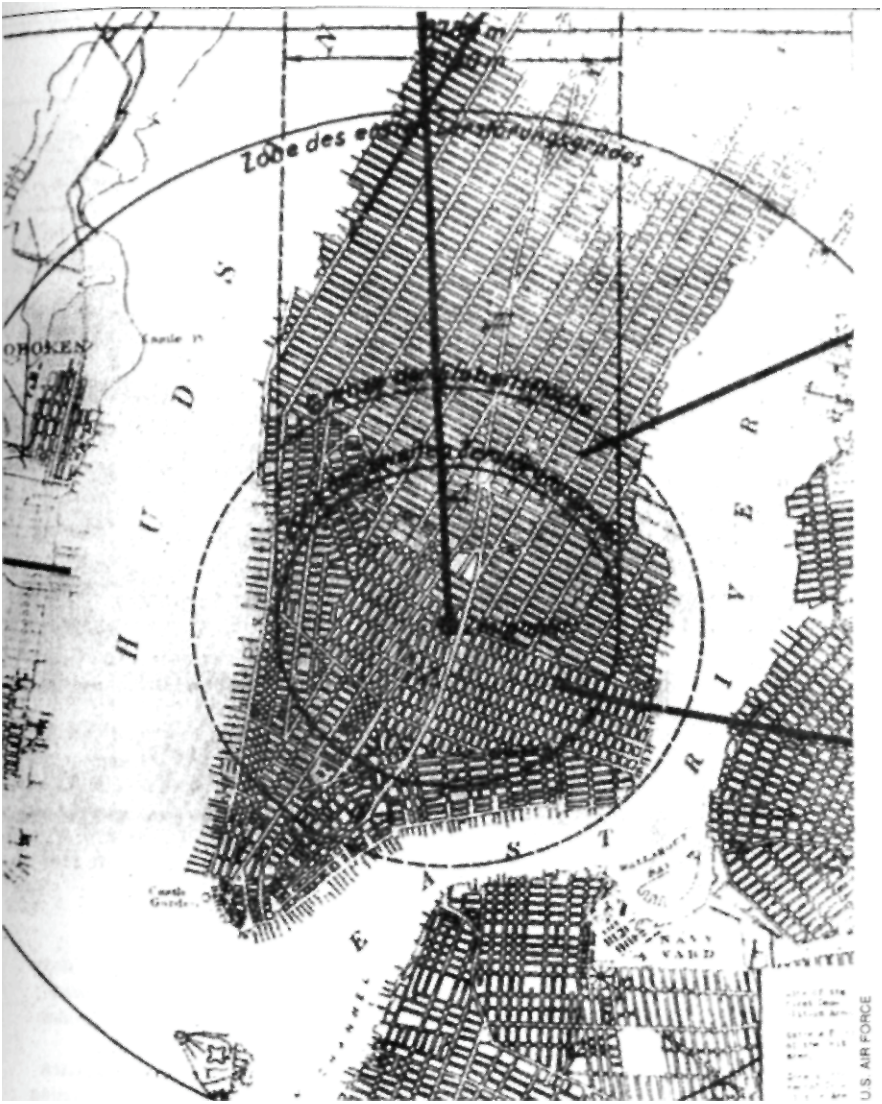
Goebbels began to discuss the development of the atomic bomb. He mentioned that heavy water facilities were located in Norway as well as on the Northeastern coast of Germany. The Allies knew of these facilities and their meaning. Air attacks and sabotage had been mounted, the latter being successful in Norway but not in Germany. Hitler, according to Goebbels, had not wanted to employ atomic bombs at first because he thought them unnecessary to win the war. In 1942, he changed his mind and inquired as to how long such weapons would take to develop. He was told it would be two years, which he considered too long. He changed his mind again in 1943 at which time intensive work began anew.

Goebbels described other weapons, confirming what Romersa had been told earlier. These included new cannons, and instruments that would allow the Germans to see and precisely shoot in the dark. A dozen new remotely controlled rockets were in the works. A-4 and A-9 rockets were to be equipped with 10 and 15 ton atomic warheads respectively.

Then Goebbels came back to a recurring theme. This theme was the need to hold out until these weapons became operational. He reiterated that six months were necessary. This contest was clearly a war of time since the Allies were dropping tons of bombs, day and night, in the hope that Germany would collapse in the meantime. Goebbel's final words to Romesa were: "Germany's salvation depends upon its genius".

What can be made of Mr. Romersa's narrative? The Germans clearly wanted Mr. Romersa to recount his impressions of the atomic test and the optimistic words he had heard to Benito Mussolini. But by late 1944, Mussolini was not in any real position to assist Germany at this point in the war. German atomic weapons were never deployed. The German atomic programs were discredited by the Allies. Nobody had ever mentioned a German atomic test. One wonders what would have happened to anybody making such a claim in the early days of the cold war. In light of these developments, Mr. Romersa's extraordinary experience on Ruegen Island became a politically incorrect "tale" or at best a baseless "war story". Without confirmation, it is no wonder that he kept the information to himself for so many years.

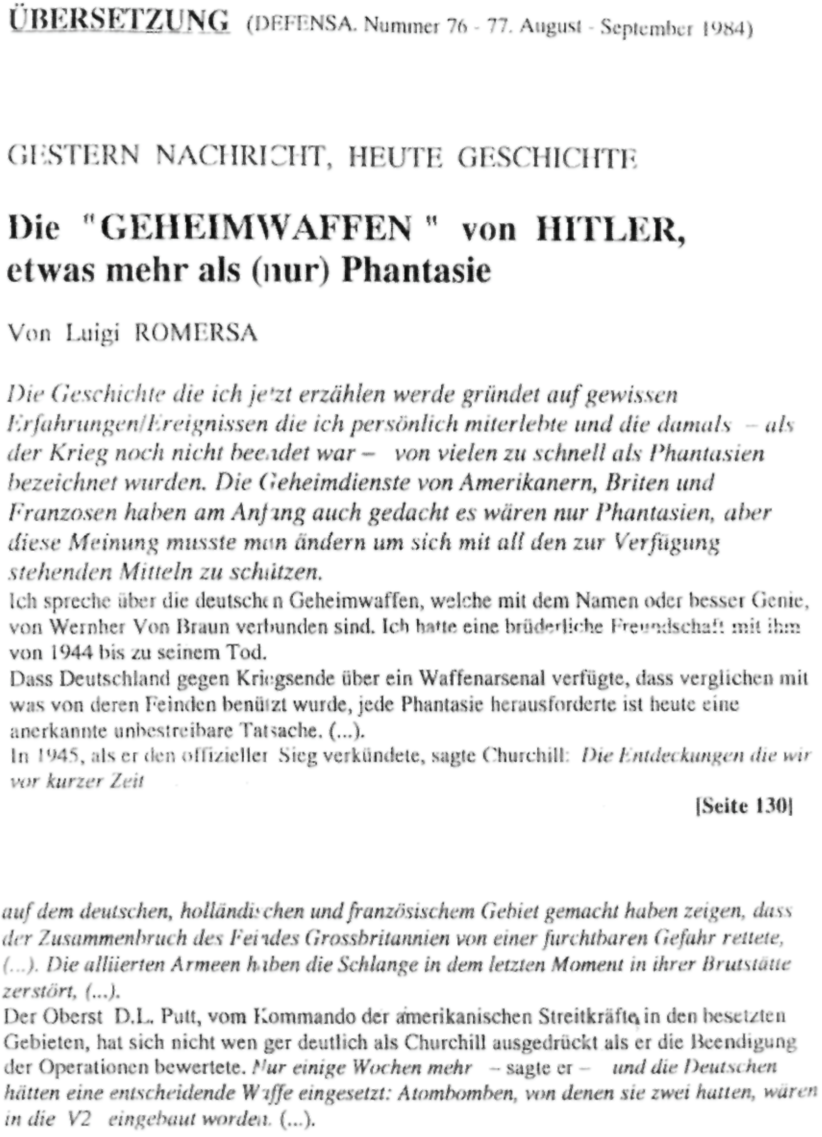
But Luigi Romersa, himself, did not fall off the pages of history. After the war, somehow, perhaps because of his substantial insider information concerning the Axis Powers, Romersa applied for and was granted a high security clearance with the government of the United States of America[7]. He went on in 1959 to write a ten part series, titled: "Wernher Von Braun Y La America Del Futuro" (Wernher von Braun and the Future of America) for a Spanish


Zone des
OBOKEN
H U D S
R E V I R
E A S T
NAVY YARD

U.S. AIR FORCE

As this captured map indicates, the Germans planned for their atomic bomb—to be delivered by a specially designed V-2 rocket—to explode near Delancy Street and the Bowery in downtown New York City.

This is a German map of New York City showing the projected destruction their atomic bomb would cause. Source: World War II. (magazine), Danny Parker.



ÜBERSETZUNG (DEFENSA. Nummer 76 - 77. August - September 1984)

GESTERN NACHRICHT, HEUTE GESCHICHTE

Die "GEHEIMWAFFEN" von HITLER, etwas mehr als (nur) Phantasie

Von Luigi ROMERSA

Die Geschichte die ich jetzt erzählen werde gründet auf gewissen Erfahrungen/Ereignissen die ich persönlich miterlebte und die damals – als der Krieg noch nicht beendet war – von vielen zu schnell als Phantasien bezeichnet wurden. Die Geheimdienste von Amerikanern, Briten und Franzosen haben am Anfang auch gedacht es wären nur Phantasien, aber diese Meinung musste man ändern um sich mit all den zur Verfügung stehenden Mitteln zu schützen.

Ich spreche über die deutschen Geheimwaffen, welche mit dem Namen oder besser Genie, von Wernher Von Braun verbunden sind. Ich hatte eine brüderliche Freundschaft mit ihm von 1944 bis zu seinem Tod.

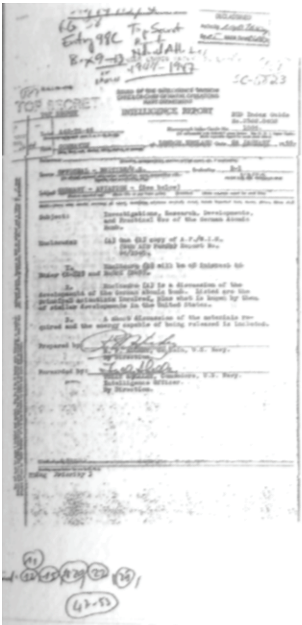
Dass Deutschland gegen Kriegsende über ein Waffenarsenal verfügte, dass verglichen mit was von deren Feinden benützt wurde, jede Phantasie herausforderte ist heute eine anerkannte unbestreibare Tatsache. (...).

In 1945, als er den offiziellen Sieg verkündete, sagte Churchill: *Die Entdeckungen die wir vor kurzer Zeit auf dem deutschen, holländischen und französischem Gebiet gemacht haben zeigen, dass der Zusammenbruch des Feindes Grossbritannien von einer furchtbaren Gefahr rettete, (...). Die alliierten Armeen haben die Schlange in dem letzten Moment in ihrer Brutstätte zerstört, (...).*

[Seite 130]

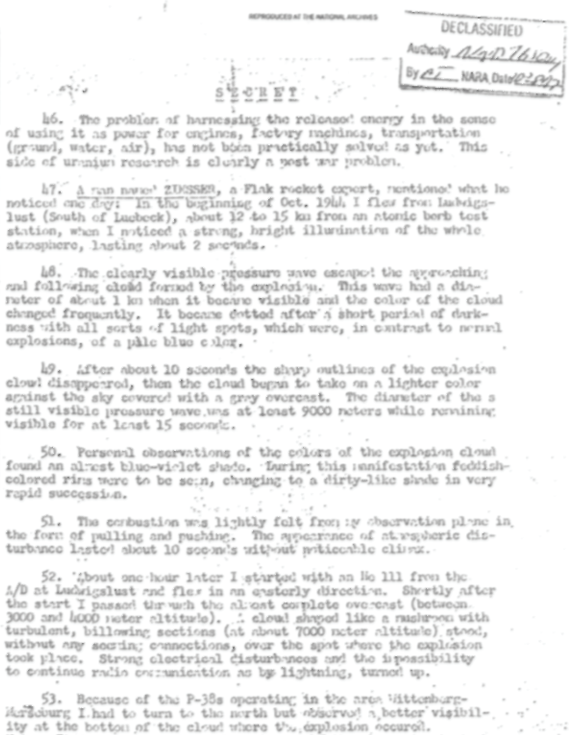
Der Oberst D.L. Putt, vom Kommando der amerikanischen Streitkräfte in den besetzten Gebieten, hat sich nicht weniger deutlich als Churchill ausgedrückt als er die Beendigung der Operationen bewertete. *Nur einige Wochen mehr* – sagte er – *und die Deutschen hätten eine entscheidende Waffe eingesetzt: Atombomben, von denen sie zwei hatten, wären in die V2 eingebaut worden.* (...).

This is the first page of a German translation of an article written by Luigi Romersa in the journal "Defensa", number 76-77, August 1984, titled: "Yesterday's News, Today's History: The "Secret Weapons" of Hitler, Something more than (mere) Fantasy".


TOP SECRET

INTELLIGENCE REPORT

SC-5723


DECLASSIFIED
Authority NND 761024
By CT NARA Date 2-2-07

REPRODUCED AT THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES

S E C R E T

46. The problem of harnessing the released energy in the sense of using it as power for engines, factory machines, transportation (ground, water, air), has not been practically solved as yet. This side of uranium research is clearly a post war problem.

47. A man named ZINSSER, a Flak rocket expert, mentioned what he noticed one day: In the beginning of Oct. 1944 I flew from Ludwigslust (South of Luebeck), about 12 to 15 km from an atomic bomb test station, when I noticed a strong, bright illumination of the whole atmosphere, lasting about 2 seconds.

48. The clearly visible pressure wave escaped the approaching and following cloud formed by the explosion. This wave had a diameter of about 1 km when it became visible and the color of the cloud changed frequently. It became dotted after a short period of darkness with all sorts of light spots, which were, in contrast to normal explosions, of a pale blue color.

49. After about 10 seconds the sharp outlines of the explosion cloud disappeared, then the cloud began to take on a lighter color against the sky covered with a grey overcast. The diameter of the s still visible pressure wave was at least 9000 meters while remaining visible for at least 15 seconds.

50. Personal observations of the colors of the explosion cloud found an almost blue-violet shade. During this manifestation reddish-colored rings were to be seen, changing to a dirty-like shade in very rapid succession.

51. The combustion was lightly felt from my observation plane in the form of pulling and pushing. The appearance of atmospheric disturbance lasted about 10 seconds without noticeable climax.

52. About one hour later I started with an He 111 from the A/D at Ludwigslust and flew in an easterly direction. Shortly after the start I passed through the almost complete overcast (between 3000 and 4000 meter altitude). A cloud shaped like a mushroom with turbulent, billowing sections (at about 7000 meter altitude) stood, without any seeming connections, over the spot where the explosion took place. Strong electrical disturbances and the impossibility to continue radio communication as by lightning, turned up.

53. Because of the P-38s operating in the area Wittenberg-Merseburg I had to turn to the north but observed a better visibility at the bottom of the cloud where the explosion occured.
Note: It does not seem very clear to me why these experiments took place in such crowded areas.

Ruegen island atomic explosion. October12, 1944
11:45 AM .Photo done in Stralsund.
The sky looks dark as contrast to brilliant explosion.

Top Left: Cover sheet of Top Secret US Naval Intelligence report detaining a German atomic test.

Top Right: blow up of the pertinent text. Bottom: Alleged picture of the German atomic test, October 12, 1944, at Ruegen Island, just north of Peenemuende.

language newspaper in Valencia, "Las Provincias"[8]. One photograph contained within that series of articles shows the two men, Romersa and von Braun, standing together as von Braun points to a rocket model. One can only wonder what these two men discussed in their private moments. Ruegen Island is located at the tip of the peninsula where Peenemuende was located. Both were privy to insider information, which could have changed the popular world-view of the history of science and technology. They must have had a lot to discuss.

It was only years later, in 1984, after von Braun's death, that he went public with the atomic test on Ruegen Island.

SOURCES

1. Jesensky, Milos, Ph.D., and Robert Lesniakiewicz, 1998, "Wunderland" Mimozemske Technologie Treti Rise, AOS Publishing, Czech Republic

2. Faeth, Harald, 1998, 1945-Thueringens Manhattan Project Auf der Spurensuche nach der verlorenen V-Waffen-Fabrik in Deutschlands Untergrund, CTT-Verlag und Druckerei Foester, Schleusingen, Germany

3. Combined Intelligence Objectives Subcommittee Evaluation Report 174, July 9, 1945, C.H.F. Muller, A.G. Hamburg, Fuhlsbuttel, Rentgenstrasse 24, Target No. CAFT 1/132a

4. Georg, Freidrich, 2000, Hitlers Siegeswaffen Band 1: Luftwaffe und Marine Geheim Nuklearwaffen des Dritten Reiches und ihre Traegersysteme, Anum Verlag, Schleusingen and Heinrich-Jung-Verlagsgesellschaft, Gmbh, Zella-hehlis

5. Jesensky, Milos, Ph.D. and Robert Lesniakiewicz, 1998, page 149

6. Romersa, Luigi, German language translation of article in Defensa, Number 76-77, August-September, 1984, Gestern Nachricht, Heute Geschichte Die "Geheimwaffen" von Hitler, etwas meher als (nur) Phantasie, (English translation of the German title is: Yesterday's News Today's History The Secret Weapons of Hitler, something more than only Fantasy)

7. Mayer, Edgar and Thomas Mehner, 2002, pages 150-154, Die Atombombe und das Dritte Reich Das Geheimnis des Dreiecks Armstadt-Wechmar-Ohrdruf, Jochen Kopp Verlag, Rottenburg

8. ibid

14 La Fusee Pilotee "T"

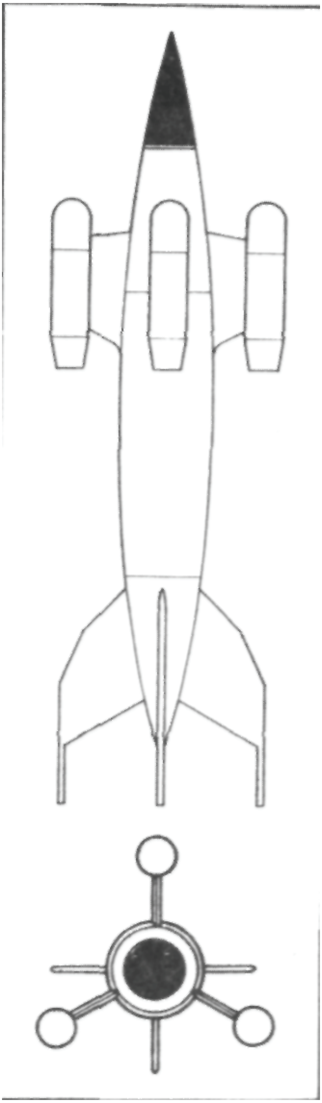
This tale comes to me via a French researcher, Joseph Altairac. It is an article from the magazine "Au dela du del". The date is unknown. This article was translated into English for me by the writer, editor, environmentalist, activist and free energy advocate, Remy Chavilier.

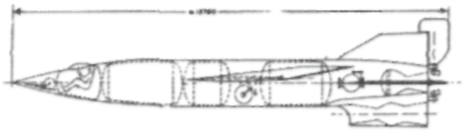
This article has much to do with the previous discussion of the German atomic tests and also concerns a subject which we will come to shortly, unknown large German rockets. This article may be a confirmation of the atomic test seen by Mr. Romersa but if that is so it is seen through different eyes, which add some additional detail. Also, the focus is different because this story is primarily about the rocket or flying craft sent to deliver the bomb.

This article claims that device was the Triebflugel. The Triebflugel was an aircraft shaped very much like the V-2 but with three wings at its center and rotating around the craft like a helicopter. At the end of each rotor was a ram jet. The three ram jets powered the craft which could rise vertically and then transition into horizontal flight. There was no rocket exhaust at the tail of the craft as in the V-2. In fact, the resemblance to the V-2 was superficial.

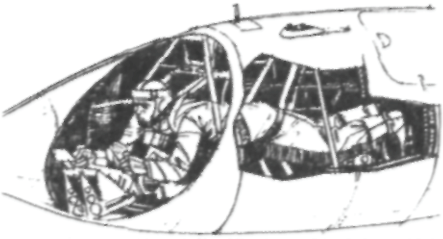
The Triebflugel was an interceptor. It was never intended to be used to deliver a bomb. Further, only models of the Triebflugel were built to the best of our knowledge, no full-scale versions actually flew.

What all this means is that, in my opinion, this device's designation as a Triebflugel is almost certainly





Source: "Peenemünde East Through the Eyes of 500 Detained at Garmish" 1945



Top Right: La Fusse "T".

Below-Center: manned version of the A-4 or V-2.

Below-Bottom: detail of the pilot in the cabin of the V-2.

wrong. On the other hand there were manned rockets under consideration by the Germans and this could have been any one of those prototypes. The list includes the A-9, the V-1, and the Saenger stratospheric vehicle. It may have even been some sort of hybrid machine, a manned A-4b for instance, which was a V-2 with large wings, intended to glide to its target rather than free-fall. The article begins stating that this rocket delivery system exists but without giving it a name or other designation.

The test occurred in Northern Germany just as in the Romersa description. In the heather of that region a target town was erected with concrete buildings, low cost houses, two and three-storey buildings, offices and metallic constructions. Different types of cars were parked on the streets. There was a small train station, rail tracks, locomotives, gardens and winding trees added a to complete the picture of a town.

Two miles away from the town a shelter was constructed from which to observe the test. In that shelter there were Luftwaffe technicians and army officers.

The article says that "witnesses" saw "the rocket" rise vertically. The three flaming engines could be plainly seen. The missile leveled off at 8000 meters and flew in a rather zigzagging manner toward the target. Nearing the target the missile seems to have made a wide turn, under power, which could be heard by the witnesses below. The power was then cut and the missile started downward. At 5000 meters the transparent nose broke away and the pilot bailed out. A few seconds later his white cloth parachute could be seen slowly descending in the vicinity of the shelter.

"The rocket landed almost in the center of the buildings with a deafening detonation. There was a huge flame and everything was covered with a dense, gray heavy smoke, while a warm breath cutting puff of air spread rapidly. It took more than one hour for this dense curtain to clear. From the buildings, only debris remained. Metallic constructions stuck out of the ground shapeless and melted. The tall trees were no more than burned trunks."

At the point of impact, the ground was literally furrowed with deep crevasses, actually burning in some points and dug as if subjected to an enormous pressure. The cars parked in the street were reduced to debris, or violently thrust by the explosion against the houses on fire. The concrete train station had partly collapsed. The locomotives had resisted the blow but the smashed and tipped over wagons showed their insides."

The article goes on to say that a great number of French prisoners witnessed these rockets in the hands of the Germans and being destroyed prior to the Allied advance.

"The Germans went to great length to hide these experiments. The Allied information services found out about them only after the peace was declared, and competent technicians thought it was a nuclear explosion."

The article goes on to describe what they believed to be the facts of the rocket used to deliver the weapon, the Triebflugel. One obvious shortcoming of using this device as a bomber is mentioned:

"It is to be noted at this point that the weakest part of what our witness relates lies in the fact that, according to a few American technicians, the explosions were of a nuclear kind, in which case, the pilot being ejected near the launching place would make no sense at all because of the harmful radiations of the bomb which would have had a considerable effect thousands of meters away."

Here it is stated a second time. The bomb was nuclear or considered such by the investigating American technicians.

It is to be noted that the real dangers of atomic radiation were only appreciated much later, not in the 1940s, or 1950s, but only later did the real enduring nature of atomic radiation sink home in the minds of most individuals.

This story would be considered just another post-war tale if it were not for some of the other evidence offered here and by the German investigators working in the area of the German atomic bomb. The validity of the German atomic bomb and exactly how this story meshes with the tale of Mr. Romersa will be left for the reader to decide.

SOURCES

1. La Fusee Pilotee "T", an article from Au dela du ciel (magazine), 1958, author unknown.

15 Mysterious German Bombs

In this chapter a few fragmentary accounts are explored which deal with truly strange bombs on which the Germans were said to be working.

There are sporadic accounts of a German bomb, which is sometimes said to kill all life within its blast radius. The interesting thing about this bomb it is alleged to do this by absorbing all the oxygen within this area. The first report shown here from late 1943 is typical in that it gives few details. It says only that the projectile in question contains phosphorus and other chemicals that absorb oxygen within a radius of a few hundred meters from the spot of detonation.

The second report referenced "Nordhausen", the site of the huge underground V-1 and V-2 rocket production facility, adds some detail to our picture of the oxygen bomb. This report says that the bomb has been under development for three years and it is huge. The dimensions given are: Length 17 meters (about 55 feet) with a diameter of 7 meters (almost 23 feet). This would make it larger than a V-3 rocket! Its kill-zone is said to be several kilometers.

The third report of this device is marked "Polish Intelligence". It repeats the active ingredient as phosphorus compounds and then goes on to say that the radius of action of this bomb is larger than present incendiaries.

The facts that the bomb itself was very large and that its killing radius was also very large are worthy of note. Details are lacking but this same basic theme has come from different sources. For the moment, perhaps, we should set aside evaluation and perhaps return to it at a later time.

The next very strange bomb is the endothermic bomb or cold bomb. Like the oxygen bomb, little reports of this device crop up throughout the wartime intelligence reports. In the "Polish Intelligence" report we learn that it works though some unknown chemical agent. The chemical agent is disbursed by the bomb, evaporates, and the result is a sudden drop in temperature for the area within the bomb's working range. Freezing kills life forms. Some property damage also results such as the breaking of water pipes and some cables.

Some confirmation of this device comes from another intelligence report on a related weapon, "icing gas". As we all know from recent airliner crashes, an airplane wing does not work well when it is iced over. Airports work long and hard with dedicated crews and special chemicals to keep aircraft wings free of ice before take off.

According to the report, the Germans wanted to use ice to down Allied aircraft. They planned to send a aircraft, or even a robot aircraft, ahead of a flight of a bomber squadron and discharge this specific chemical. The chemical would drift back, ice over the bomber's wings and cause them to fall from the sky.

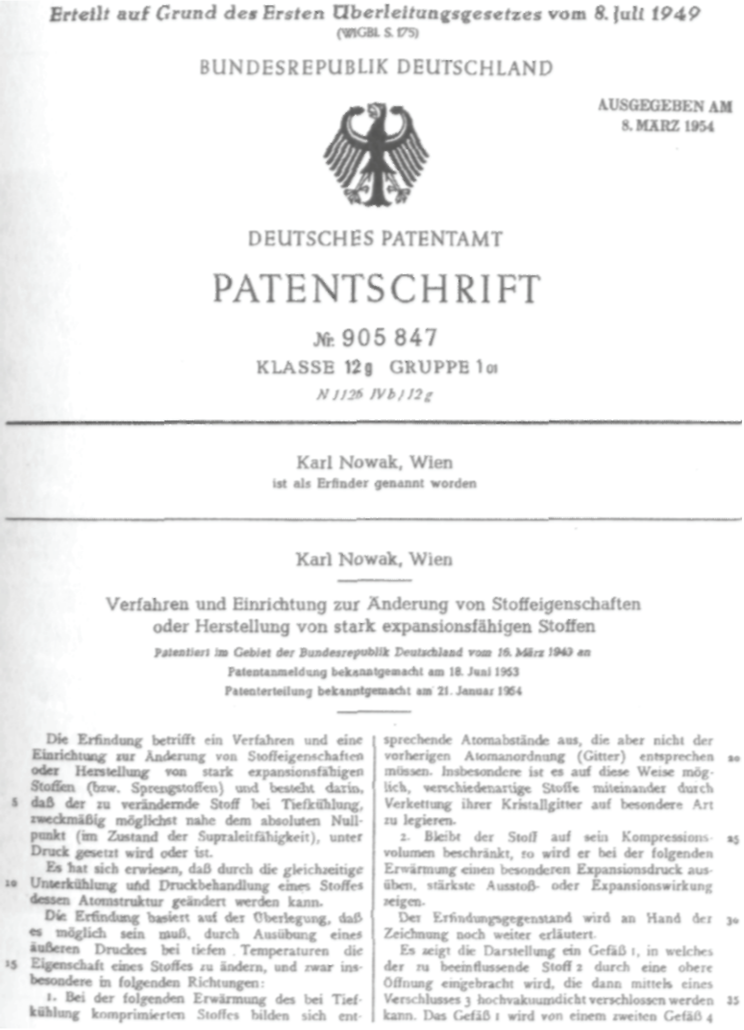
The substance forming the active ingredient was called "Azote" which was a mixture of liquid nitrogen (minus 250 degrees C.) and liquid air. We know the Germans were making liquid air projectiles shells for cannons. Air is largely nitrogen, so it is not surprising that a chemical cocktail wasn't being considered by the Germans for use as a bomb.

The last item in the "Polish Intelligence" document, item (c), is a very brief description of a third bomb. This is described as the H.B. bomb "of great power". This H.B. was to be used with the other two bombs for maximum efficiency. What was this H.B.?

Could it be a hydrogen bomb? Is that really so far-fetched considering what has already been discussed? Well, if you think this idea was not under consideration by the Germans, please suspend judgment until we review some of Dr. Richter's work.

Perhaps the most mysterious bomb of the Second World War is called the molecular bomb or M-bomb. Indeed, a respected German researcher has told me that the account of Luigi Romersa as discussed above, was not exactly an atomic bomb in our modern conception of that device but a molecular bomb.

This bomb was said to have been under development through the



Erteilt auf Grund des Ersten Überleitungsgesetzes vom 8. Juli 1949
(WiGBl. S. 175)

BUNDESREPUBLIK DEUTSCHLAND

AUSGEGEBEN AM
8. MÄRZ 1954

DEUTSCHES PATENTAMT

PATENTSCHRIFT

Nr. 905 847

KLASSE 12g GRUPPE 1 01

N 1126 IVb / 12g

Karl Nowak, Wien
ist als Erfinder genannt worden

Karl Nowak, Wien

Verfahren und Einrichtung zur Änderung von Stoffeigenschaften oder Herstellung von stark expansionsfähigen Stoffen

Patentiert im Gebiet der Bundesrepublik Deutschland vom 16. März 1943 an
Patentanmeldung bekanntgemacht am 18. Juni 1953
Patenterteilung bekanntgemacht am 21. Januar 1954

Die Erfindung betrifft ein Verfahren und eine Einrichtung zur Änderung von Stoffeigenschaften oder Herstellung von stark expansionsfähigen Stoffen (bzw. Sprengstoffen) und besteht darin, daß der zu verändernde Stoff bei Tiefkühlung, zweckmäßig möglichst nahe dem absoluten Nullpunkt (im Zustand der Supraleitfähigkeit), unter Druck gesetzt wird oder ist.

Es hat sich erwiesen, daß durch die gleichzeitige Unterkühlung und Druckbehandlung eines Stoffes dessen Atomstruktur geändert werden kann.

Die Erfindung basiert auf der Überlegung, daß es möglich sein muß, durch Ausübung eines äußeren Druckes bei tiefen Temperaturen die Eigenschaft eines Stoffes zu ändern, und zwar insbesondere in folgenden Richtungen:

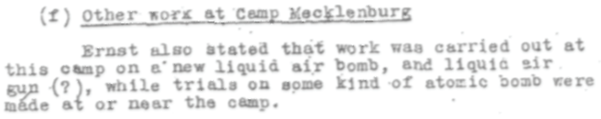
1. Bei der folgenden Erwärmung des bei Tiefkühlung komprimierten Stoffes bilden sich entsprechende Atomabstände aus, die aber nicht der vorherigen Atomanordnung (Gitter) entsprechen müssen. Insbesondere ist es auf diese Weise möglich, verschiedenartige Stoffe miteinander durch Verkettung ihrer Kristallgitter auf besondere Art zu legieren.

2. Bleibt der Stoff auf sein Kompressionsvolumen beschränkt, so wird er bei der folgenden Erwärmung einen besonderen Expansionsdruck ausüben, stärkste Ausstoß- oder Expansionswirkung zeigen.

Der Erfindungsgegenstand wird an Hand der Zeichnung noch weiter erläutert.

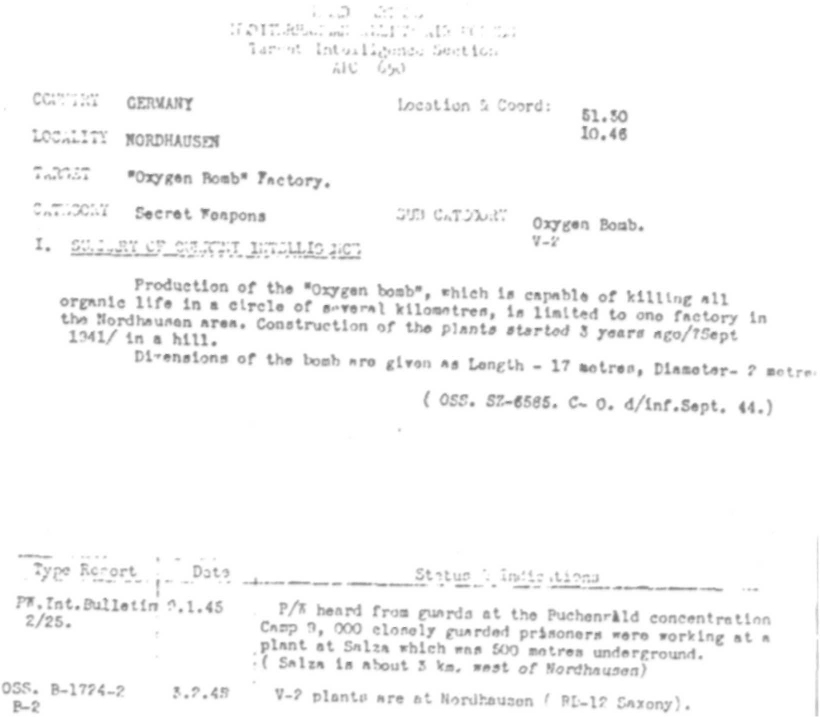
Es zeigt die Darstellung ein Gefäß 1, in welches der zu beeinflussende Stoff 2 durch eine obere Öffnung eingebracht wird, die dann mittels eines Verschlusses 3 hochvakuumdicht verschlossen werden kann. Das Gefäß 1 wird von einem zweiten Gefäß 4

Cover Sheet of a Karl Nowak Patent: "Processes and Arrangements for the Change of Characteristics of Matter of Production of Strong Expansion-Capable Matter." It is one fundamental part of the ideas presented in this book: changing matter and/or energy through densification and re-radiation. This can be done by cold, mechanical compression, a centripetal-centrifugal vortex, atomic radiation, bombardment by ultrasound, or the absorption of aether by matter shielding (gravity).



(f) Other work at Camp Mecklenburg

Ernst also stated that work was carried out at this camp on a new liquid air bomb, and liquid air gun (?), while trials on some kind of atomic bomb were made at or near the camp.



[illegible]
MEDITERRANEAN ALLIED AIR FORCES
Target Intelligence Section
AIC [illegible]

COUNTRY GERMANY
LOCALITY NORDHAUSEN
Location & Coord: 51.30 10.46
TARGET "Oxygen Bomb" Factory.
CATEGORY Secret Weapons
SUB CATEGORY Oxygen Bomb. V-2

I. SUMMARY OF CURRENT INTELLIGENCE

Production of the "Oxygen bomb", which is capable of killing all organic life in a circle of several kilometres, is limited to one factory in the Nordhausen area. Construction of the plants started 3 years ago/?Sept 1941/ in a hill.

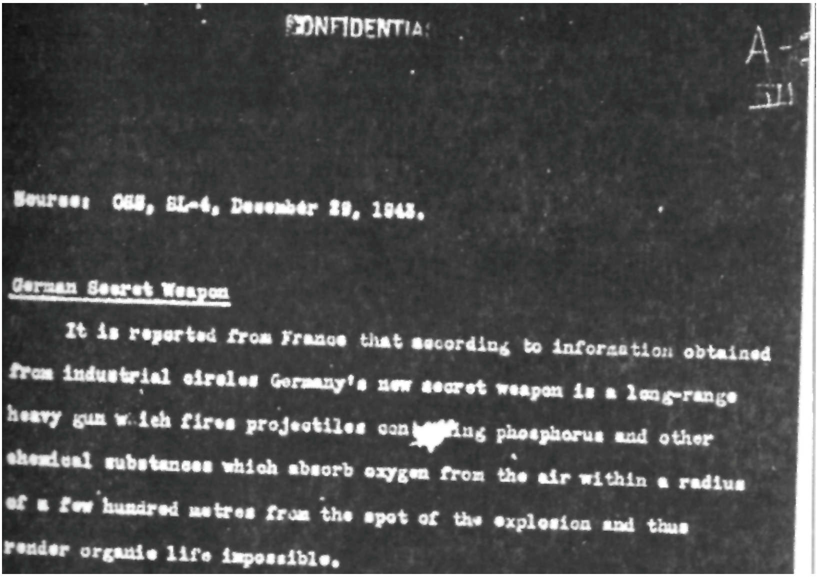
Dimensions of the bomb are given as Length - 17 metres, Diameter- 2 metre

(OSS. SZ-6565. C- O. d/inf.Sept. 44.)

Type Report	Date	Status & Indications
PW.Int.Bulletin 2/25.	9.1.45	P/W heard from guards at the Buchenwald concentration Camp 9, 000 closely guarded prisoners were working at a plant at Salza which was 500 metres underground. (Salza is about 3 km. west of Nordhausen)
OSS. B-1724-2 B-2	3.2.45	V-2 plants are at Nordhausen (RD-12 Saxony).

Top: part of a British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report number 142 discussing exotic bomb research.

Bottom: Intelligence discussion of the oxygen bomb.



CONFIDENTIA

A-

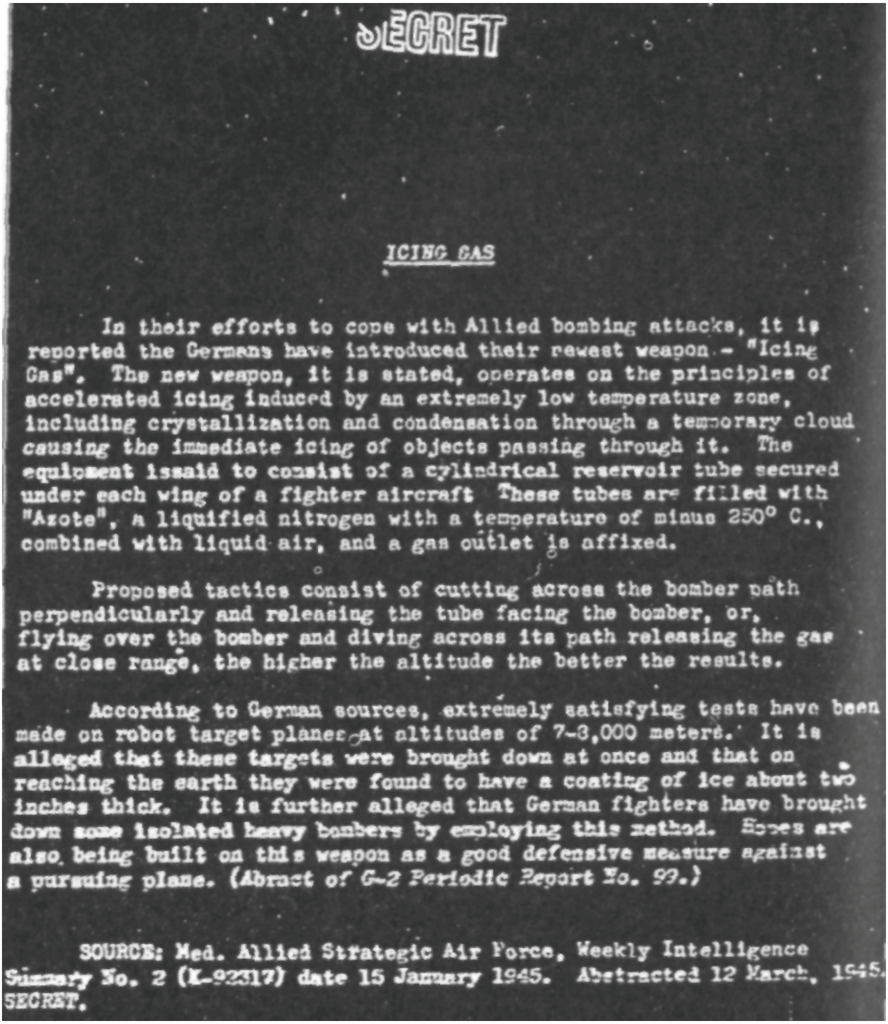
511

Source: OSS, SL-4, December 29, 1943.

German Secret Weapon

It is reported from France that according to information obtained from industrial circles Germany's new secret weapon is a long-range heavy gun which fires projectiles cont[illegible]ing phosphorus and other chemical substances which absorb oxygen from the air within a radius of a few hundred metres from the spot of the explosion and thus render organic life impossible.

Tales of the oxygen bomb from a second source.



SECRET

ICING GAS

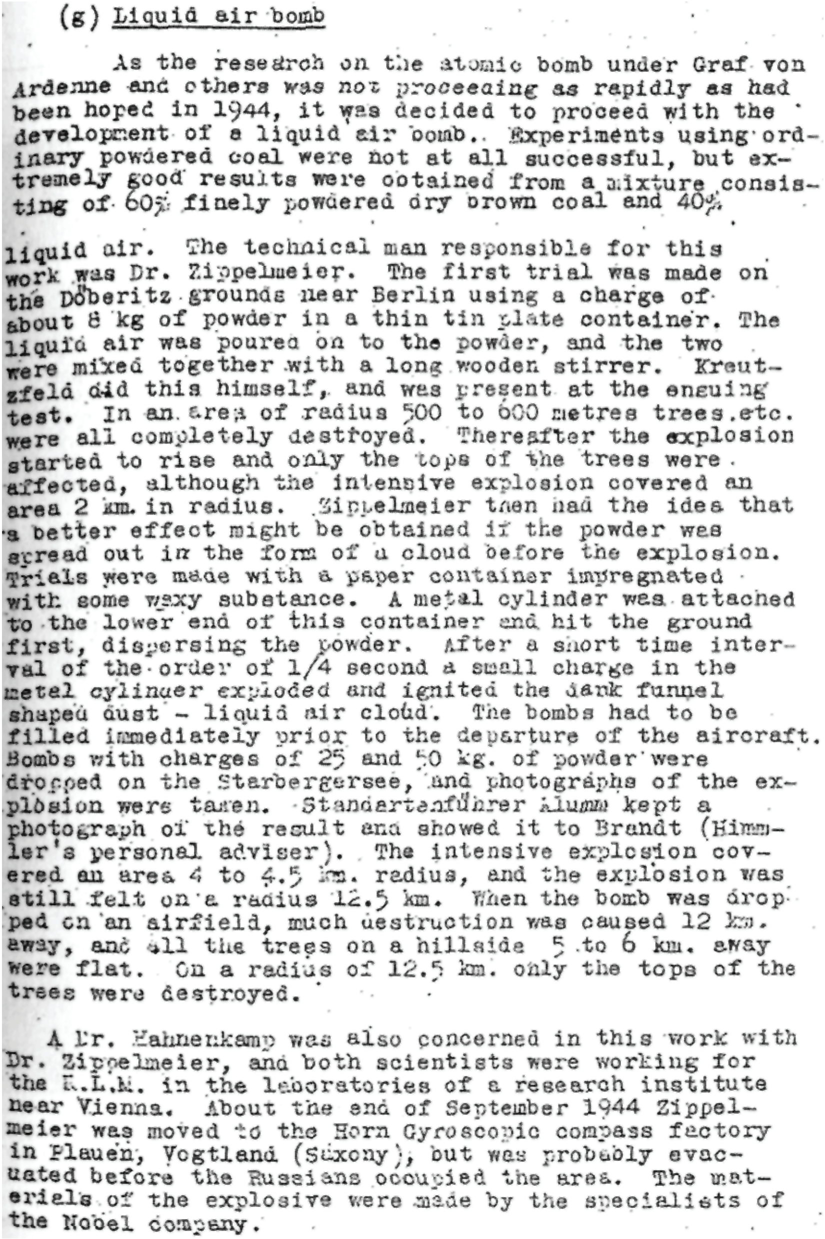
In their efforts to cope with Allied bombing attacks, it is reported the Germans have introduced their newest weapon - "Icing Gas". The new weapon, it is stated, operates on the principles of accelerated icing induced by an extremely low temperature zone, including crystallization and condensation through a temporary cloud causing the immediate icing of objects passing through it. The equipment issaid to consist of a cylindrical reservoir tube secured under each wing of a fighter aircraft These tubes are filled with "Azote", a liquified nitrogen with a temperature of minus 250° C., combined with liquid air, and a gas outlet is affixed.

Proposed tactics consist of cutting across the bomber path perpendicularly and releasing the tube facing the bomber, or, flying over the bomber and diving across its path releasing the gas at close range, the higher the altitude the better the results.

According to German sources, extremely satisfying tests have been made on robot target planes at altitudes of 7-3,000 meters. It is alleged that these targets were brought down at once and that on reaching the earth they were found to have a coating of ice about two inches thick. It is further alleged that German fighters have brought down some isolated heavy bombers by employing this method. Hopes are also being built on this weapon as a good defensive measure against a pursuing plane. (Abract of G-2 Periodic Report No. 99.)

SOURCE: Med. Allied Strategic Air Force, Weekly Intelligence Summary No. 2 (K-92317) date 15 January 1945. Abstracted 12 March, 1945. SECRET.

Icing Gas and its proposed tactics.

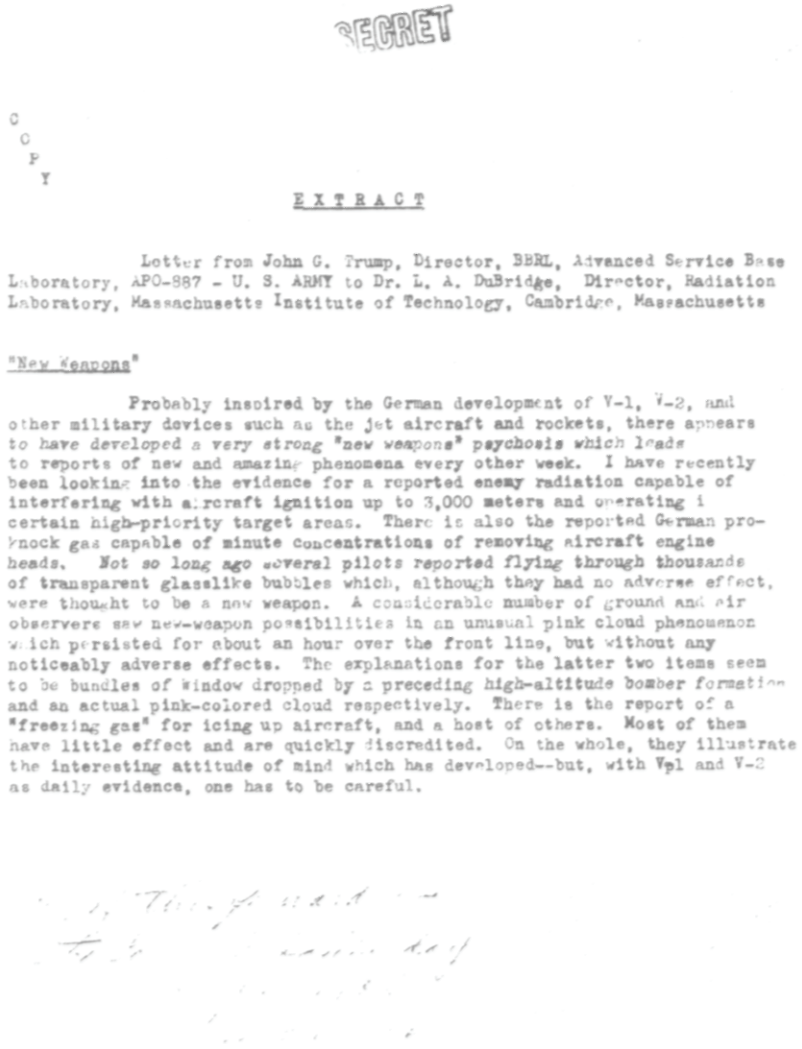


(g) Liquid air bomb

As the research on the atomic bomb under Graf von Ardenne and others was not proceeding as rapidly as had been hoped in 1944, it was decided to proceed with the development of a liquid air bomb. Experiments using ordinary powdered coal were not at all successful, but extremely good results were obtained from a mixture consisting of 60% finely powdered dry brown coal and 40% liquid air. The technical man responsible for this work was Dr. Zippelmeier. The first trial was made on the Döberitz grounds near Berlin using a charge of about 8 kg of powder in a thin tin plate container. The liquid air was poured on to the powder, and the two were mixed together with a long wooden stirrer. Kreutzfeld did this himself, and was present at the ensuing test. In an area of radius 500 to 600 metres trees, etc. were all completely destroyed. Thereafter the explosion started to rise and only the tops of the trees were affected, although the intensive explosion covered an area 2 km. in radius. Zippelmeier then had the idea that a better effect might be obtained if the powder was spread out in the form of a cloud before the explosion. Trials were made with a paper container impregnated with some waxy substance. A metal cylinder was attached to the lower end of this container and hit the ground first, dispersing the powder. After a short time interval of the order of 1/4 second a small charge in the metal cylinder exploded and ignited the dark funnel shaped dust - liquid air cloud. The bombs had to be filled immediately prior to the departure of the aircraft. Bombs with charges of 25 and 50 kg. of powder were dropped on the Starbergersee, and photographs of the explosion were taken. Standartenführer Klumm kept a photograph of the result and showed it to Brandt (Himmler's personal adviser). The intensive explosion covered an area 4 to 4.5 km. radius, and the explosion was still felt on a radius 12.5 km. When the bomb was dropped on an airfield, much destruction was caused 12 km. away, and all the trees on a hillside 5 to 6 km. away were flat. On a radius of 12.5 km. only the tops of the trees were destroyed.

A Dr. Hahnenkamp was also concerned in this work with Dr. Zippelmeier, and both scientists were working for the R.L.M. in the laboratories of a research institute near Vienna. About the end of September 1944 Zippelmeier was moved to the Horn Gyroscopic compass factory in Plauen, Vogtland (Saxony), but was probably evacuated before the Russians occupied the area. The materials of the explosive were made by the specialists of the Nobel company.

Reconsider this document again as it shows that several of these exotic bombs had elements in common. We will consider Zippermayr's fuel-air bomb in the next chapter.



SECRET

C
O
P
Y

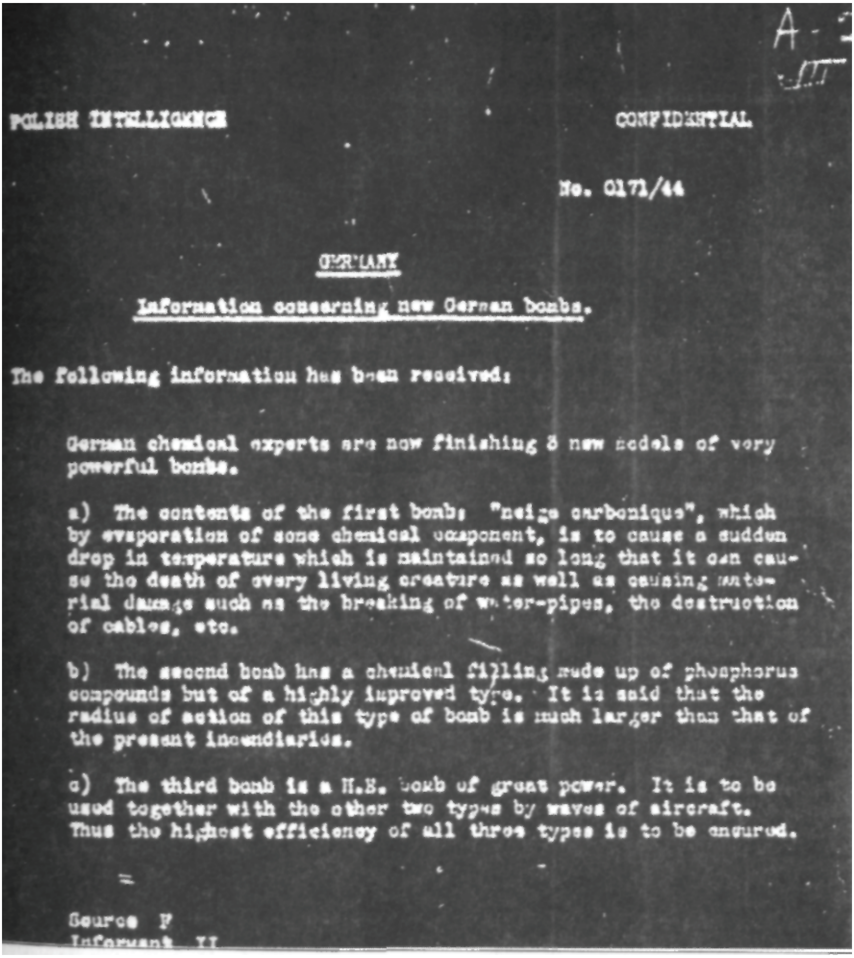
EXTRACT

Letter from John G. Trump, Director, BBRL, Advanced Service Base Laboratory, APO-887 - U. S. ARMY to Dr. L. A. DuBridge, Director, Radiation Laboratory, Massachusetts Institute of Technology, Cambridge, Massachusetts

"New Weapons"

Probably inspired by the German development of V-1, V-2, and other military devices such as the jet aircraft and rockets, there appears *to have developed a very strong "new weapons" psychosis which leads* to reports of new and amazing phenomena every other week. I have recently been looking into the evidence for a reported enemy radiation capable of interfering with aircraft ignition up to 3,000 meters and operating i certain high-priority target areas. There is also the reported German pro-knock gas capable of minute concentrations of removing aircraft engine heads. *Not so long ago several pilots reported flying* through thousands of transparent glasslike bubbles which, although they had no adverse effect, were thought to be a new weapon. A considerable number of ground and air observers saw new-weapon possibilities in an unusual pink cloud phenomenon which persisted for about an hour over the front line, but without any noticeably adverse effects. The explanations for the latter two items seem to be bundles of window dropped by a preceding high-altitude bomber formation and an actual pink-colored cloud respectively. There is the report of a "freezing gas" for icing up aircraft, and a host of others. Most of them have little effect and are quickly discredited. On the whole, they illustrate the interesting attitude of mind which has developed--but, with V-1 and V-2 as daily evidence, one has to be careful.

A letter from a U.S. Army lob to the Massachusetts Institute of Technology reporting the magnetic wave (Motorstoppmittel), gas designed to stop engines, mysterious glass-like bubbles and a pink cloud, as well as freezing gas.



A -

POLISH INTELLIGENCE CONFIDENTIAL

No. 0171/44

GERMANY

Information concerning new German bombs.

The following information has been received:

German chemical experts are now finishing 3 new models of very powerful bombs.

a) The contents of the first bomb: "neige carbonique", which by evaporation of some chemical component, is to cause a sudden drop in temperature which is maintained so long that it can cause the death of every living creature as well as causing material damage such as the breaking of water-pipes, the destruction of cables, etc.

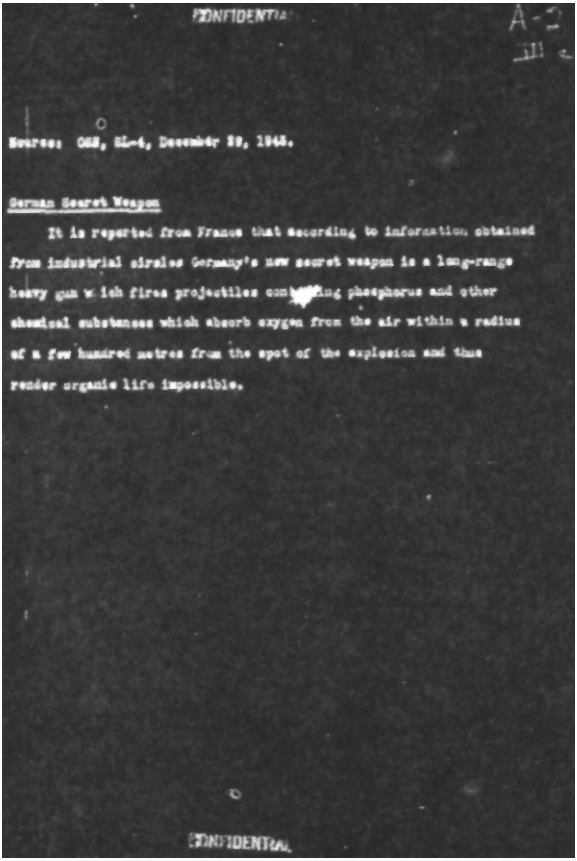
b) The second bomb has a chemical filling made up of phosphorus compounds but of a highly improved type. It is said that the radius of action of this type of bomb is much larger than that of the present incendiaries.

c) The third bomb is a H.E. bomb of great power. It is to be used together with the other two types by waves of aircraft. Thus the highest efficiency of all three types is to be ensured.

=

Source F
Informant XI

The legendary cold bomb described in U.S. government files as well as what may be the oxygen bomb using phosphorus and an "bomb of great power", identified only by an abbreviation which may be H.B. or M.B., the old microfilm copy is unclear.



CONFIDENTIAL

A-2

Source: OSS, SL-4, December 29, 1943.

German Secret Weapon

It is reported from France that according to information obtained from industrial circles Germany's new secret weapon is a long-range heavy gun which fires projectiles containing phosphorus and other chemical substances which absorb oxygen from the air within a radius of a few hundred metres from the spot of the explosion and thus render organic life impossible.

CONFIDENTIAL

The oxygen bomb described again.

combined efforts of Dr. Kurt Diebner and Manfred von Ardenne in addition to their work on a classic atomic bomb. This is interesting because these are two very different, high-profile individuals.

Diebner was already involved in more than one atomic project and was also involved with a secret SS atomic project. So, in other words, Dr. Diebner was a somewhat clandestine scientist whose primary allegiance belonged to the SS and Dr. Kammler. It may be that he even reported the progress of these other projects in which he was involved directly to the SS.

Manfred von Ardenne ran one of well-known German atomic projects. This was for the Reichspostamt, the German Post Office. Now, in the USA, the Post Office is just about the last place you would want running a high-tech, crucial, war sensitive project but this was not so in wartime Germany. The German Post Office enjoyed a high-tech reputation and organization. It was perhaps on the same order as Bell Laboratories in the US. Manfred von Ardenne was a first-rate scientist and had all he needed to do his work.

My one source says the M-bomb was developed in a middle school in Stadtilm but that no tests were carried out in Thuringia[1]. This bomb was in the widest sense an atomic weapon but very different from both the atomic and hydrogen bombs we are familiar with. This bomb is also known as a super-compression bomb because it was composed of matter that was compressed or "densified" as compared to normal matter. This bomb did generate pressure and heat just as a normal atomic blast does but did not generated radioactive radiation. From this description, it sounds exactly the opposite of a neutron bomb.

From the discussion super-compression, this is reminiscent of the work of Karl Nowak. Nowak was responsible for a process used to compress and so strengthen metals through cooling and pressure. He was also responsible for a new method of power generation within an internal combustion engine in which a super-cooled liquid gas was injected and subsequently expanded, producing power[2]. We might ask if the M-bomb has any relationship to the oxygen bomb or the cold bomb? We should also consider whether or not the work of Nowak was involved in the M-bomb or any of the other bombs described above. Unfortunately, the answers still await exact determination.

Finally, there was yet another type of liquid air bomb. This information comes to us via British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report 142[3], which is a gold mine.

This report involved Dr. Mario Zippermayr whom we will meet in the next chapter and serves as background and introduction to his fantastic work. It seems that in 1944 the progress on the atomic bomb was not as advanced as the Germans expected. It was decided at that it was time to experiment with a kind of "Ersatz" bomb using liquid air and coal dust. Dr. Zippermayr was put in charge of this project and the first tests were done at the Doeberitz grounds near Berlin. A mixture of 60% finely powdered dry brown coal was hand-mixed into a 40% solution of liquid air. Eight kg of powder was mixed together for this test. This was actually done by a man named "Krautsfeld" according to the report, by hand, using a wooden stirrer. According to Krautsfeld, our witness for the report, an area whose radius was 500 to 600 meters containing trees was absolutely destroyed. The explosion started to rise into the air, afterward, so that only the tops of the trees were affected, although the explosion itself consumed 2 km.

At this point Dr. Zippermayr had the idea that a better effect might be realized if the powder was spread out in the form of a cloud before the explosion. This was evidently the idea behind the fuel-air bomb to which we will turn our attention to next.

SOURCES

1. Georg, Friedrich and Thomas Mehner, 2004, page 258. Atomziel New York Geheime Grossraketen-und Raumfahrtprojekte des Dritten Reiches, Jochen Kopp Verlag, Rottenburg

2. Nowak, Karl, Deutsches Patentamt, Patentschrift Number 905847, original patent dates from March 16, 1943

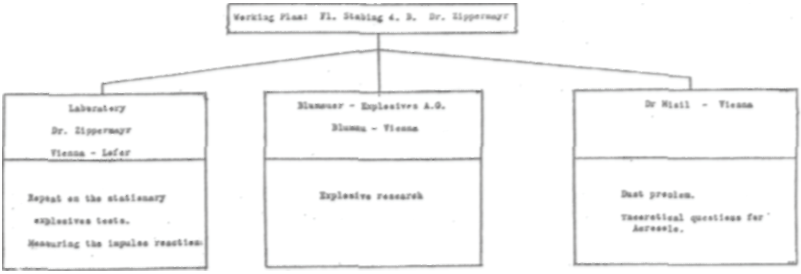
3. British Intelligence Subcommittee report number 142, pages 4 and 5, London

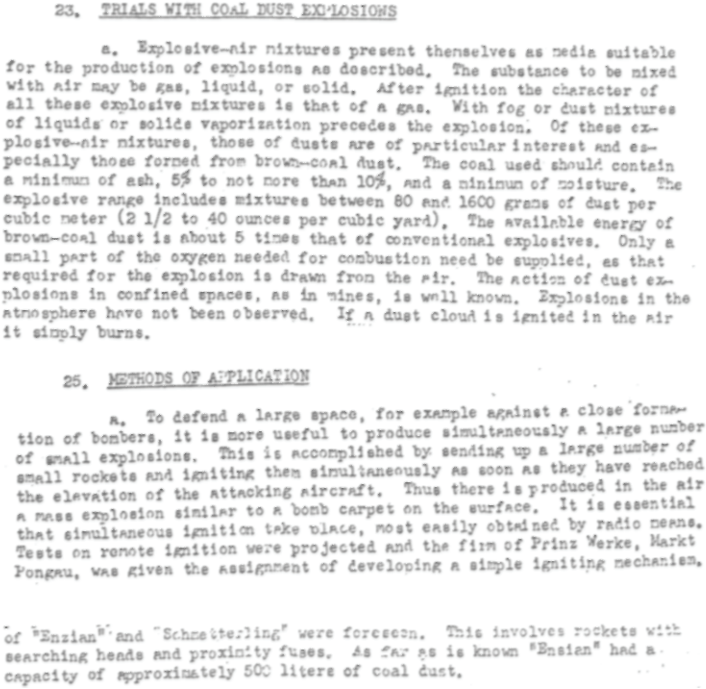
16 "Projekt Hexenkessel" The Fuel-Air Bomb

The German word "Hexenkessel" means "witches cauldron" in English. It is only one of the projects run by a true genius of the days of the Second World War, Dr. Mario Zippermayr. Dr. Zippermayr, sometimes spelled incorrectly as "Zippermeyer", was born an Italian of Austrian parents and educated in German speaking institutions. His interests ranged from perfecting color photographic film to the medical benefits of ozone therapy. He is remembered for his wide-ranging weapons research. His involvement with secret weaponry has never been much of a mystery but the true nature of his research has been hidden in layers of secrecy and disinformation until quite recently.

As the war broke out, Dr. Zippermayr was drafted into the Luftwaffe but detailed to begin practical research to facilitate the German effort. Dr. Zippermayr was first posted in Vienna and given his own laboratory where he headed a thirty-five-man research team. Among some of the research objectives he was given at this time were the development of the L-40 torpedo, the development of the Enzian and Schmetterling anti-aircraft rockets as well as the development of a mysterious, high-speed jet airplane.

Suddenly, in March of 1945, Dr. Zippermayr was put in charge of a facility called Talstation, near Lofer. He immediately fired most of its employees. The acronym T.A.L. means Technische Akademie der Luftwaffe. The word "Tal" also means "valley" in English. Talstation, which was actually more than one facility, was located in the mountainous region of the


Working Plan: Fl. Stabing 4. B. Dr. Zippermayr
Laboratory
Dr. Zippermayr
Vienna - Lofer
Repeat on the stationary
explosives tests.
Measuring the impulse reactions
Blumauer - Explosives A.G.
Blumau - Vienna
Explosive research
Dr Nisil - Vienna
Dust problem.
Theoretical questions for
Aerosols.



23. TRIALS WITH COAL DUST EXPLOSIONS

a. Explosive-air mixtures present themselves as media suitable for the production of explosions as described. The substance to be mixed with air may be gas, liquid, or solid. After ignition the character of all these explosive mixtures is that of a gas. With fog or dust mixtures of liquids or solids vaporization precedes the explosion. Of these explosive-air mixtures, those of dusts are of particular interest and especially those formed from brown-coal dust. The coal used should contain a minimum of ash, 5% to not more than 10%, and a minimum of moisture. The explosive range includes mixtures between 80 and 1600 grams of dust per cubic meter (2 1/2 to 40 ounces per cubic yard). The available energy of brown-coal dust is about 5 times that of conventional explosives. Only a small part of the oxygen needed for combustion need be supplied, as that required for the explosion is drawn from the air. The action of dust explosions in confined spaces, as in mines, is well known. Explosions in the atmosphere have not been observed. If a dust cloud is ignited in the air it simply burns.

25. METHODS OF APPLICATION

a. To defend a large space, for example against a close formation of bombers, it is more useful to produce simultaneously a large number of small explosions. This is accomplished by sending up a large number of small rockets and igniting them simultaneously as soon as they have reached the elevation of the attacking aircraft. Thus there is produced in the air a mass explosion similar to a bomb carpet on the surface. It is essential that simultaneous ignition take place, most easily obtained by radio means. Tests on remote ignition were projected and the firm of Prinz Werke, Markt Pongau, was given the assignment of developing a simple igniting mechanism.

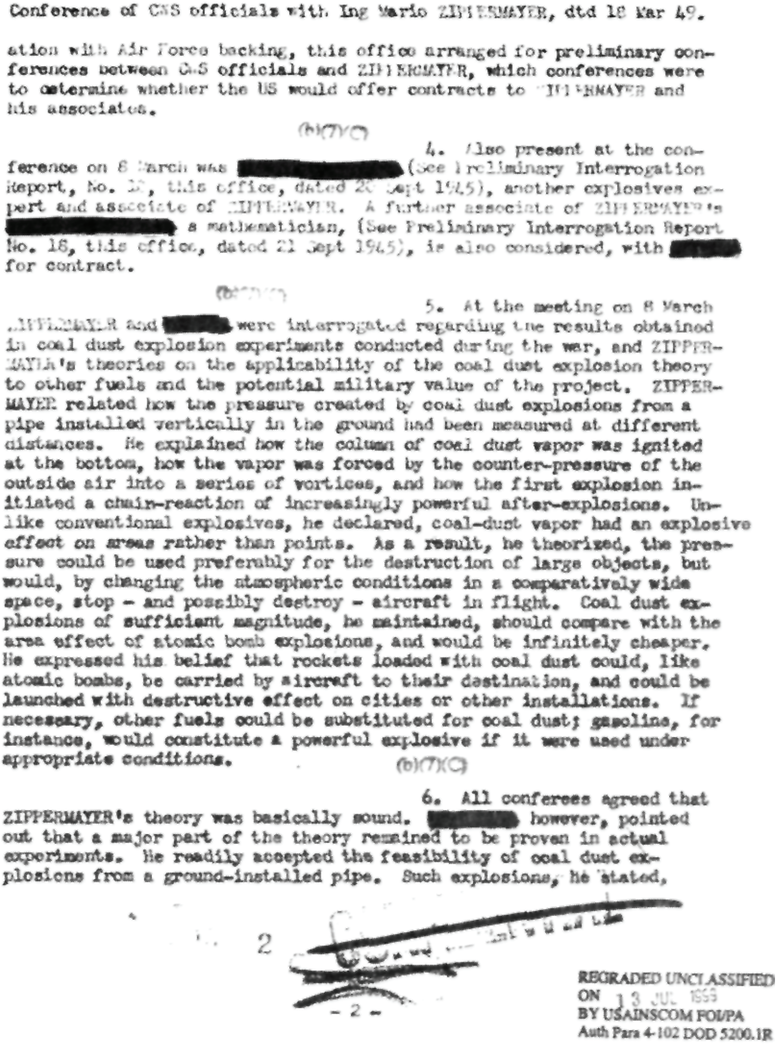
of "Enzian" and "Schmetterling" were foreseen. This involves rockets with searching heads and proximity fuses. As far as is known "Enzian" had a capacity of approximately 500 liters of coal dust.

Top: Chart of Dr. Zippermayr's organization.

Bottom: C.I.O.S. report 201 which focus on Project Hexenkessel's use of coal dust explosive as an anti-aircraft weapon.

5. At the meeting on 8 March ZIPPERMAYER and [redacted] were interrogated regarding the results obtained in coal dust explosion experiments conducted during the war, and ZIPPERMAYER's theories on the applicability of the coal dust explosion theory to other fuels and the potential military value of the project. ZIPPERMAYER related how the pressure created by coal dust explosions from a pipe installed vertically in the ground had been measured at different distances. He explained how the column of coal dust vapor was ignited at the bottom, how the vapor was forced by the counter-pressure of the outside air into a series of vortices, and how the first explosion initiated a chain-reaction of increasingly powerful after-explosions. Unlike conventional explosives, he declared, coal-dust vapor had an explosive effect on areas rather than points. As a result, he theorized, the pressure could be used preferably for the destruction of large objects, but would, by changing the atmospheric conditions in a comparatively wide space, stop - and possibly destroy - aircraft in flight. Coal dust explosions of sufficiant magnitude, he maintained, should compare with the area effect of atomic bomb explosions, and would be infinitely cheaper. He expressed his belief that rockets loaded with coal dust could, like atomic bombs, be carried by aircraft to their destination, and could be launched with destructive effect on cities or other installations. If necessary, other fuels could be substituted for coal dust; gasoline, for instance, would constitute a powerful explosive if it were used under appropriate conditions.

(b)(7)(C)



Conference of CWS officials with Ing Mario ZIPPERMAYER, dtd 18 Mar 49.

ation with Air Force backing, this office arranged for preliminary conferences between CWS officials and ZIPPERMAYER, which conferences were to determine whether the US would offer contracts to ZIPPERMAYER and his associates.

(b)(7)(C)

4. Also present at the conference on 8 March was [redacted] (See Preliminary Interrogation Report, No. 22, this office, dated 20 Sept 1945), another explosives expert and associate of ZIPPERMAYER. A further associate of ZIPPERMAYER's [redacted] a mathematician, (See Preliminary Interrogation Report No. 18, this office, dated 21 Sept 1945), is also considered, with [redacted] for contract.

(b)(7)(C)

5. At the meeting on 8 March ZIPPERMAYER and [redacted] were interrogated regarding the results obtained in coal dust explosion experiments conducted during the war, and ZIPPERMAYER's theories on the applicability of the coal dust explosion theory to other fuels and the potential military value of the project. ZIPPERMAYER related how the pressure created by coal dust explosions from a pipe installed vertically in the ground had been measured at different distances. He explained how the column of coal dust vapor was ignited at the bottom, how the vapor was forced by the counter-pressure of the outside air into a series of vortices, and how the first explosion initiated a chain-reaction of increasingly powerful after-explosions. Unlike conventional explosives, he declared, coal-dust vapor had an explosive effect on areas rather than points. As a result, he theorized, the pressure could be used preferably for the destruction of large objects, but would, by changing the atmospheric conditions in a comparatively wide space, stop - and possibly destroy - aircraft in flight. Coal dust explosions of sufficient magnitude, he maintained, should compare with the area effect of atomic bomb explosions, and would be infinitely cheaper. He expressed his belief that rockets loaded with coal dust could, like atomic bombs, be carried by aircraft to their destination, and could be launched with destructive effect on cities or other installations. If necessary, other fuels could be substituted for coal dust; gasoline, for instance, would constitute a powerful explosive if it were used under appropriate conditions.

(b)(7)(C)

6. All conferees agreed that ZIPPERMAYER's theory was basically sound. [redacted] however, pointed out that a major part of the theory remained to be proven in actual experiments. He readily accepted the feasibility of coal dust explosions from a ground-installed pipe. Such explosions, he stated,

2

REGRADED UNCLASSIFIED
ON 13 JUL 1999
BY USAINSCOM FOI/PA
Auth Para 4-102 DOD 5200.1R

This is a portion of a U.S. government post-war interview with Dr. Zippermayr, March 8, 1949. In this interview Dr. Zippermayr explained to the U.S. officials the test conclusions he reached during the war blowing coal dust out of hollow pipes. This test method led to a cover story that Dt. Zippermayr had invented a "vortex cannon" by which enemy aircraft would be swept from the sky. This myth still persists to this day and has even been repeated by a prominent and respected historian in a recent British TV documentary. The initial explosion scattering and vaporizing the coal dust must be slow enough to allow a long billowing explosion over a wide area. For this a mathematician was included to verify Dr. Zippermayr's work. Other than this math, the method was so simple and direct that a cover story was needed lest this cheap rival to the atomic bomb fall into the wrong hands. This cover story and strategy worked for decades.

Continued on following page

Tyrol, approximately where Germany, Switzerland, Austria and Italy meet. Dr. Zippermayr and his pre-existing staff, now a total of eighty individuals, set up shop in one of the outlying sub-bases just outside of Lofer which was called "Hochtal" (high valley).

Dr. Zippermayr continued his brief tenure at Lofer until May 8, 1945, the day of the German surrender. Days later, American troops reported the presence of 2,000 kilos of explosives at Hochtal and laboratory facilities in an absolutely pristine state. Dr. Zippermayr continued to reside at Hochtal, setting up an open house for any intelligence people or dignitaries who cared to visit. On May 15, 1945 Dr. Zippermayr was arrested and interrogated by military authorities. Shortly thereafter he was discharged from the Luftwaffe with the rank of Major and transported back to Lofer on June 20, 1945 where he apparently continued to host the "open house". The facility was visited by increasingly higher levels of intelligence people, including Colonel Leslie E. Simon, Director of the Ballistic Research Laboratory at the Aberdeen Proving Grounds. Dr. Zippermayr complied completely with all requests for information.

Information used for this report does not come from a review of the existing literature on Dr. Zippermayer or his work. Instead, it comes as a result of a Freedom Of Information request directed to the United States Army regarding Dr. Zippermayr and the facility at Lofer[1]. To this writer's delight, the Army responded with a whole series of reports, each originally more classified than the last, which gave us a whole new perspective on Dr. Zippermayr and his work as well as the nature of the maintenance of secrecy concerning German secret weapons. The Army even persuaded the Air Force to contribute with a report of their own which was known to the Army but now out of their control In all four large reports were received.

Legend and propaganda had it that Dr. Zippermayr was working on a "vortex cannon" at Lofer. It was said that this gun was powered by coal dust and set off in such a way that a huge explosive vortex would be generated. This explosive vortex was said to be powerful enough to blow the wings off enemy aircraft and so was to be employed as an anti-aircraft weapon. Hidden within this story is an element of truth. But the truth is much greater than the alleged story, so much greater that it can only be concluded that the whole vortex cannon concept was created to conceal the nature of this truth. It is unclear if the Germans originally concocted this tale and it was just maintained by the Americans or if it was completely a post-war addition by the Americans.

When Dr. Zippermayr began his experimentation on coal dust the project was code-named "Humus". On March 8, 1945, in the waning days of the war, the project was re-named "Hexenkessel". At this time, coinciding with Dr. Zippermayr move to Lofer, a large-scale, intensive effort was put into this project, involving several agencies besides the Zippermayr laboratory.

Coal contains a surprising number of calories, that is, it has a high energy content even when compared with the explosives of the times. As a matter of fact the amount of energy available in coal is about five times that of high explosive. But to get the highest possible temperatures and pressure from the explosion, it must be an instantaneous detonation. The destructive effects of this explosion are limited by the intensity and duration of the explosive pressure. Explosive pressure at the center produces high heat but at the same time the very nature of the explosion disperses the explosive material eventually to a point were detonation no longer takes place, so limiting the scope of the explosion. But it was found that the effectiveness on an explosion upon a target with flat surface was more dependent upon increased duration of the explosion rather than high intensity. Knowing this, Dr. Zippermayr concentrated upon producing explosions of longer duration.

Coal dust is explosive within a confined space, every coal miner knows this, but to get coal dust to explode in the atmosphere it has to be compressed. The wave of air pressure resulting from an explosion can provide this compression. It was found that this could be done using by packing coal dust around a low velocity explosive charge but not directly next to it. A space between the charge and the coal dust was necessary for dispersion of the coal dust into the atmosphere. Under pressure from this explosive wave, the coal dust of the fuel-air bomb mixes with the atmosphere and uses atmospheric oxygen as its burning agent rather than chemical oxygen in the warhead itself.

To defend a city against a close formation of bombers, used at that time, several smaller explosions would be used at once. The rockets "Schmetterling" and "Enzian" were foreseen for this purpose. Multiple rockets would detonate, spreading their coal dust packages in a large area throughout the atmosphere directly below or above the bomber formation. All the warheads would be detonated at once by radio. A truly monstrous explosion would take place near the squadron, producing a long-duration explosion that would simply break the wings off the heavily laden bombers.

Tests had begun with coal dust being shot out of tubes pointed upward. Something curious was observed. A flaming vortex was observed which spread outward from the center of the column of air as it was shot skyward. From this curiosity was born the cover story of the "vortex cannon". In fact, what was being developed was what we call an air-fuel bomb today. The blast resulting from this kind of weapon is second only to an atomic bomb in destructive power.

According to a later set of declassified documents received under pressure from the Army, Dr. Zippermayr met with U.S. Air Force officials on March 18, 1949. Dr. Zippermayr presented his findings to the Air Force for the use of what would be called the air-fuel bomb for use as an anti-aircraft weapon. The record of this meeting is important because he explained the explosive process in somewhat more detail. According to the report:

"...He explained how the column of coal dust vapor was ignited at the bottom, how the vapor was forced by the counter-pressure of the outside air into a series of vortices, and how the first explosion initiated a chain-reaction of increasingly powerful after-explosions. Unlike conventional explosives, he declared, coal-dust vapor had an explosive effect on areas rather than points. As a result, he theorized, the pressure could be used preferably for the destruction of large objects, but would, by changing the atmospheric conditions in a comparatively wide space, stop-and possibly destroy-aircraft in flight. Coal dust explosions of sufficient magnitude, he maintained, should compare with the area effect of atomic bomb explosions, and would be infinitely cheaper. He expressed his belief that rockets loaded with coal dust could, like atomic bombs, be carried by aircraft to their destination, and could be launched with destructive effect on cities or other installations. If necessary, other fuels could be substituted for coal dust; gasoline, for instance, would constitute a powerful explosive if it were used under appropriate conditions."

Three points taken from the general FOIA text on Dr. Zippermayr are worth mentioning at this point. Coal dust or any solid fuel once it is blown into the atmosphere in this way becomes a vapor. This long-duration explosion characteristic of the fuel-air bomb actually seems to be many explosions, each billowing out and creating the next. According to Dr. Zippermayr such an explosion would probably reach a maximum height of one mile.

At the conclusion of the meeting it was recommended that Dr. Zippermayr be hired along with a mathematician for further work.

That was 1949. The fuel-air bomb concept was not spoken of publicly by the government until the United States was ready to invade Iraq during the Gulf War. At that time much was made out of the possibility that Saddam Hussein might possess a fuel-air bomb and use it on U.S. ground troops. Presumably, the technology was known outside the USA. Perhaps this presumed leak came during Dr. Zippermayr's weeks at the "open house" in Lofer when anybody might have simply inquired about this technology. In any event, the Iraqis did not use a fuel-air bomb in the early 1990s. Again, this idea was to sleep for a period of time.

According to recent chatter on the internet, the fuel-air bomb idea has been recently resurrected, now going by the name "a-neutronic bomb" or "electro-hydrodynamic gaseous fuel device". This bomb is said to be the handiwork of the renegade scientist Dr. Michael Ricionoscuito. You may remember Dr. Ricionoscuito for his other work, the famous Promis software, used to spy on individuals by just about every government intelligence agency in the world today.

The a-neutronic bomb consists of blowing a cloud of gaseous, combustible material into the atmosphere whereby a small rocket is launched into its midst trailing a small wire connected to the ground. The wire charges the cloud with electric energy so that the cloud is saturated with electro-static energy. The cloud is detonated with the resulting explosion being on a par with a small atomic detonation. The resulting blast also produces the same long duration as its ancestor. This is evidenced by the fact that it is said that the Nevada test site, which is flat desert, sank about 30 feet after the blast[6].

SOURCES

1. Combined Intelligence Objectives Subcommittee Evaluation Report 201, 7/23/45, Report On Talstation, Lofer, Target Nos. C-4/222 and C-1/667, obtained through Department Of The Army, Fort George G. Meade, MD. 20755-5995

2. Counter Intelligence Corps, Salzburg Detachment, United States Forces Austria, Zell am See Section, 8/4/45, Case Nol S/Z/55, Zippermayr Mario Dr. Ing., obtained through Department Of The Army, Fort George G. Meade, MD. 20755-5995

3. Headquarters Seventh Army, C.I.C. Detachment, 5/16/45, Dr. Zippermayer, (Stabsingenieur) Kreis Zell Am See, Lofer, obtained through Deptartment Of The Army, Fort George G. Meade, MD. 20755-5995

4. Combined Intelligence Objectives Subcommittee Evaluation Report 201, 7/23/45, Report On Talsation, Lofer, Target Nos. C-4/222 and C-l/667, (Expanded Version), obtained through Department Of The Army, Fort George G. Meade, MD. 20755-5995

5. Conference of CWS Officials with Ing. Mario Zippermayer, Regraed Unclassified, 7/13/99 by USAINSCOM FOI/PA, obtained through Department Of The Army, Fort George G. Meade, MD. 20755-5995

6. Grabbe, Orlin, "When Osama Bin Ladin Was Tim Osman", www.orlingrabbe.com/binladin_timosman.html

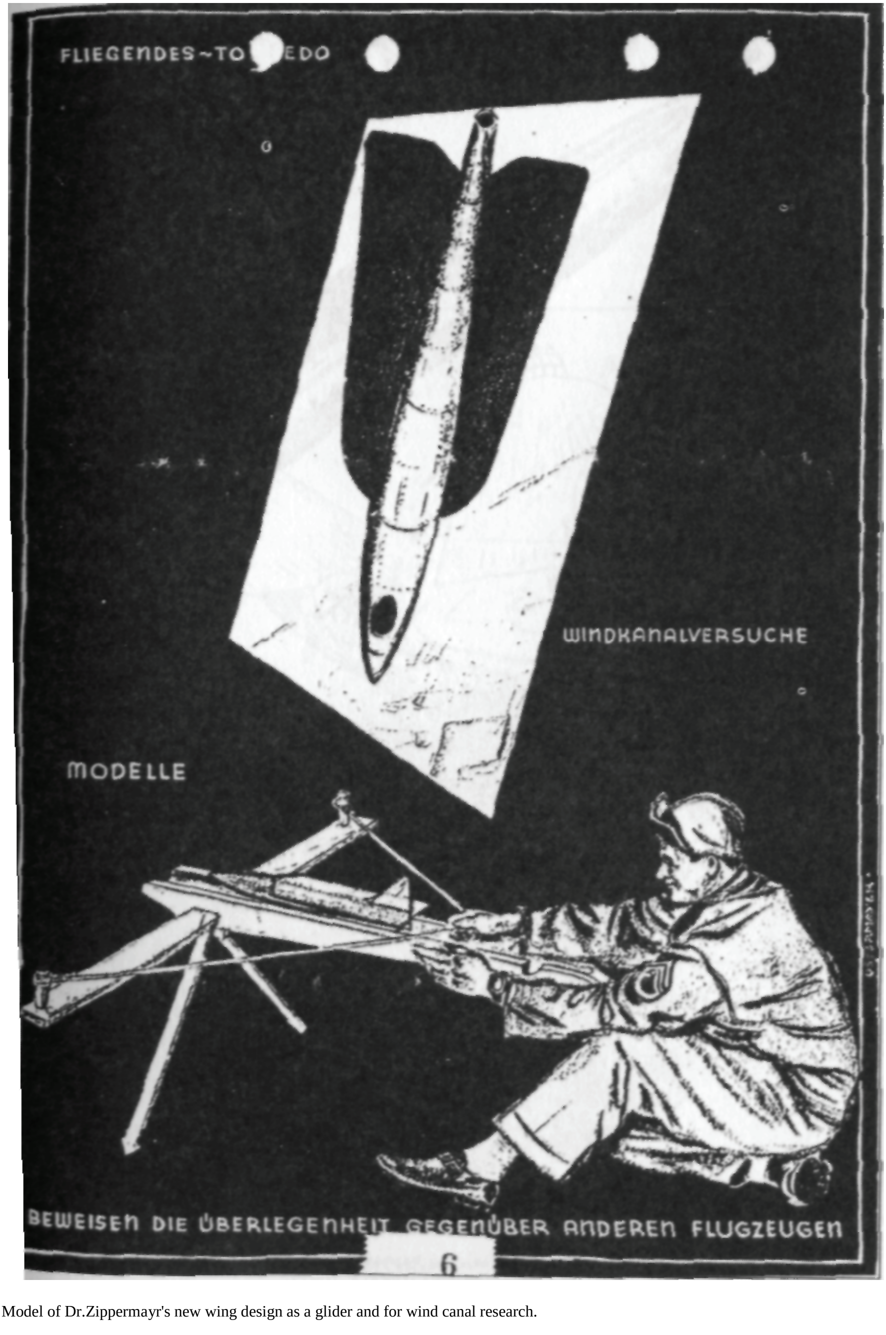
17 "Pfiel" (Arrow) Aircraft

In reviewing the new documents sent by the Army concerning Dr. Zippermayr it became evident that he was involved in another project, which had never been reported before. This project was called the "Pfiel Flugzeug" or Arrow aircraft. This "Pfiel" had nothing to do with the Donier projectof the same name.

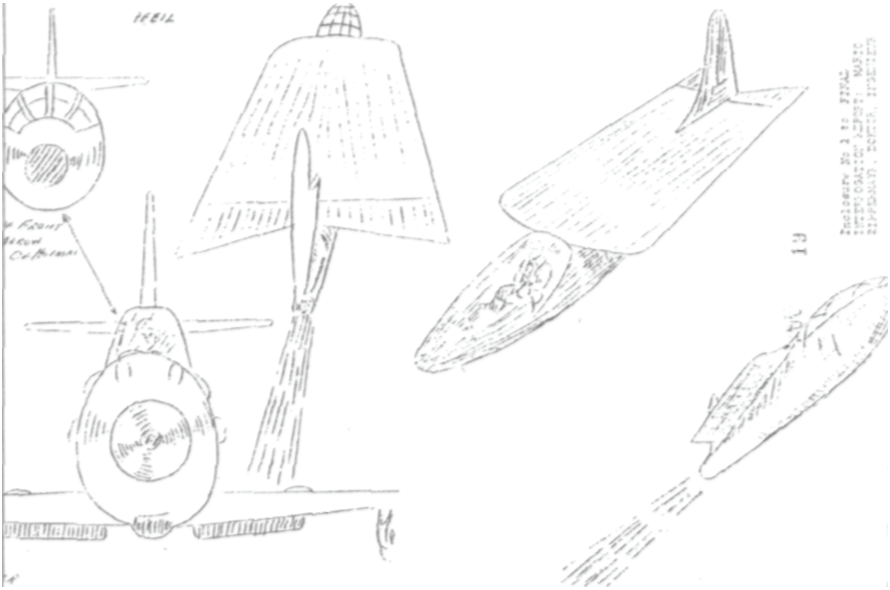
Anyone familiar with German weaponry of the Second World War knows how much research has been done in tracking down every proposed German aircraft prototype. These prototypes have been fleshed out in illustrations and in projected operational data by interested researchers. These illustrations fill numerous books and magazines as well as several internet web-sites dedicated to the idea of what might have been if the 3rd Reich had lasted another year. Because of the intensity of this work and the number of years that it has been in progress, it is truly gratifying to stumble upon something new and unreported at this late date.

The concept for this aircraft came from his work on another project, the L-40 aerial torpedo. Dr. Zippermayr's solution to the problem of the aerial torpedo led directly to a subsequent project, the Pfiel aircraft.

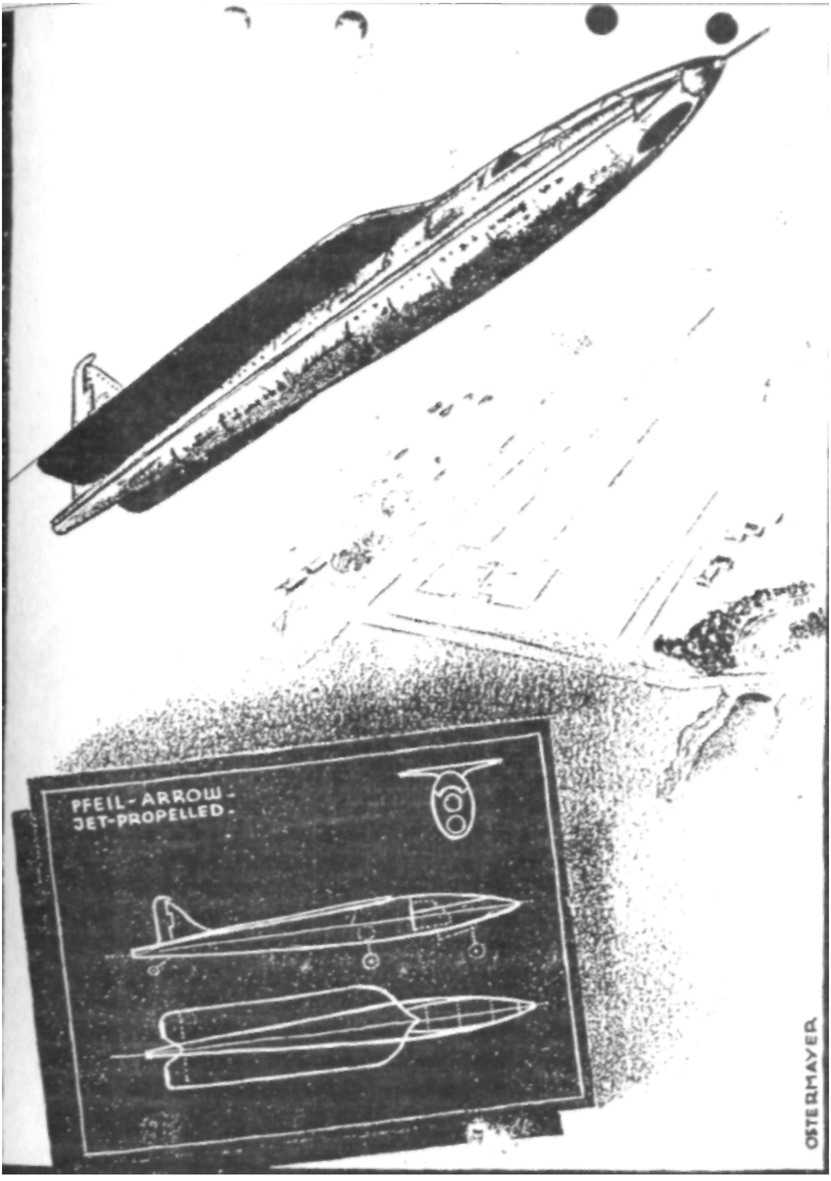
The standard German aerial torpedo was released at about 50 meters (slightly over 150 feet) from the ocean's surface by an aircraft in horizontal flight at an air speed of about 300 km. per hour or about 180 m.p.h. To release higher or faster would cause the torpedo to impact the water at too great a speed,


FLIEGENDES~TO EDO
WINDKANALVERSUCHE
MODELLE
BEWEISEN DIE ÜBERLEGENHEIT GEGENÜBER ANDEREN FLUGZEUGEN
6

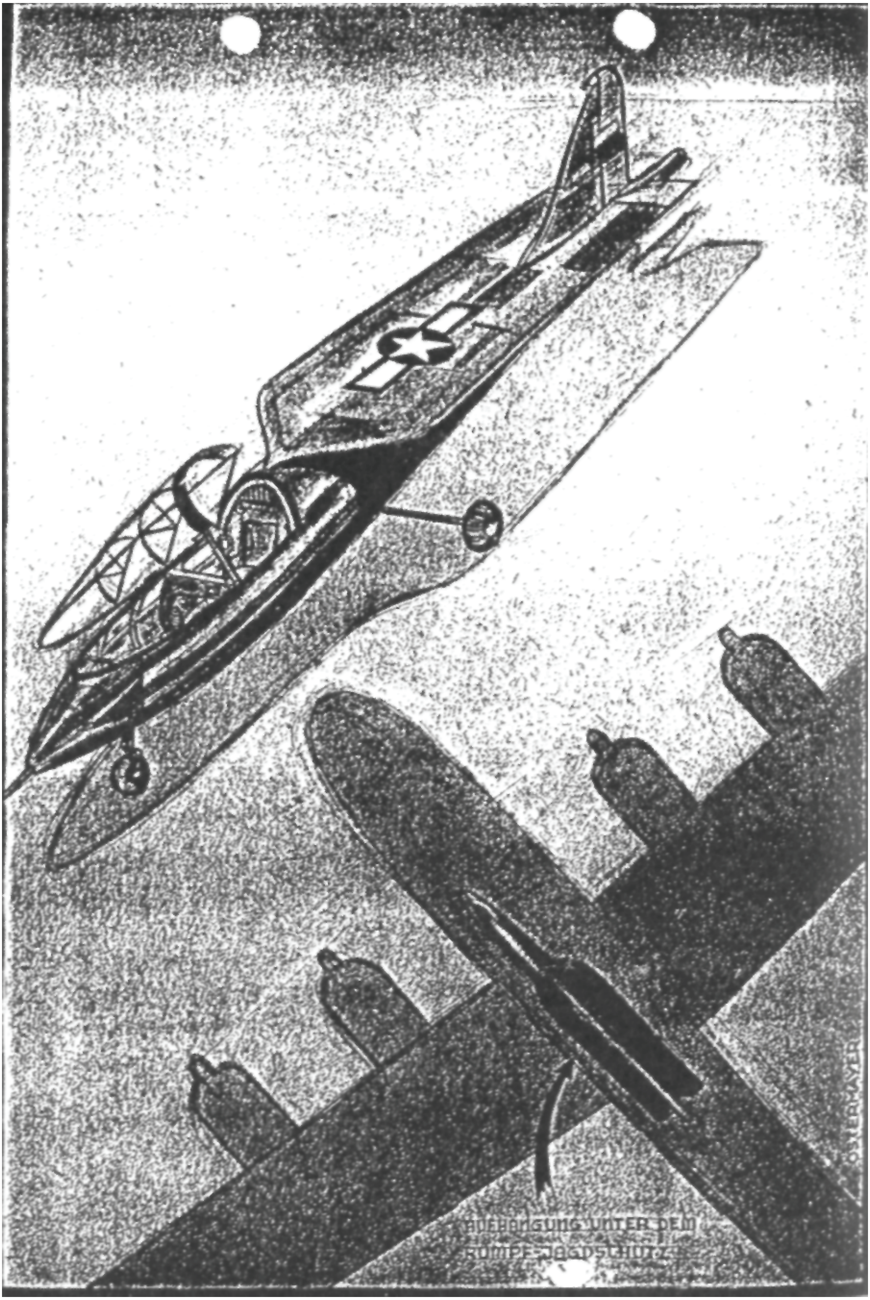
Model of Dr.Zippermayr's new wing design as a glider and for wind canal research.


PFEIL
19
Enclosure No 1 to FINAL
INTERROGATION REPORT: MAGIC

Drawings of the Pfiel in flight and in three views.


PFEIL-ARROW-
JET-PROPELLED-
OSTERMAYER

The Pfiel (arrow) design in comparison with a conventional propeller-driven aircraft.


AUFHÄNGUNG UNTER DEM
RUMPF-JAGDSCHUTZ
OSTERMAYER

A U.S. built Pfiel design as it would be test-dropped from a B-29.

Blohm & Voß P. 202

Im Verlauf des Krieges wurden bereits eingehende Untersuchungen über die Beeinflussung der Schnellflugeigenschaften durch gepfeilte Tragflügel angestellt, die eindeutig bewiesen, daß bei Pfeilflügeln die Kompressibilitätserscheinungen im schallnahen Bereich hinausgeschoben wurden. Gleichzeitig erbrachten diese Versuche aber die durch den Auftriebsabfall des Pfeilflügels hervorgerufenen schlechten Langsamflugeigenschaften, die Probleme bei Start und Landung auftürmten. Bei der P. 202 wurde versucht, sämtliche Nachteile des Pfeilflügels im Langsamflug durch einen um die Hochachse drehbaren Flügel zu beheben. Beim Start und bei der Landung lag der normale Trapezflügel, mit als Pfanne ausgebildetem Mittelstück, rechtwinklig zur Längsachse des Rumpfes, also in Normalstellung eines eingepfeilten Flügels, bei der sämtliche auftriebserhöhenden Mittel, wie Landeklappen und Vorflügel, wirksam blieben. Beim Schnellflug sollte der Flügel um 35° gedreht werden, so, daß die linke Fläche negative und die rechte Fläche positive Pfeilform aufwies. Der sonstige Aufbau des freitragenden Schulterdeckers war normal. Unter dem Rumpf waren nebeneinander zwei Jumo 004 Luftstrahl-Turbinen geschlungen, das Leitwerk war ungepfeilt. Die einsitzige Maschine sollte als Jagdflugzeug Verwendung finden.

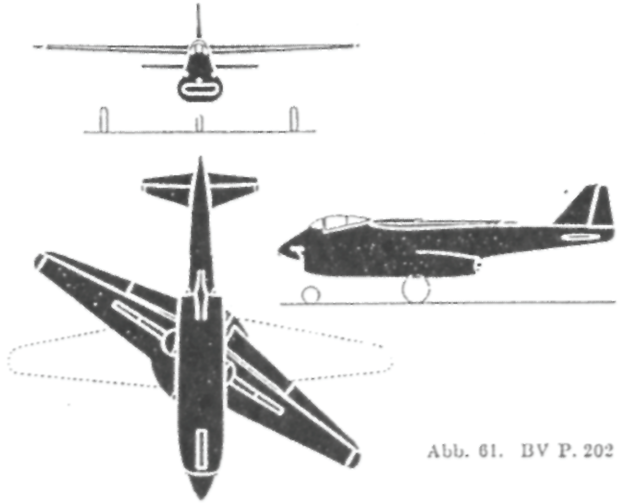


Abb. 61. BV P. 202

Blohm & Voß P. 203

Die geradezu primitiv anmutende Konstruktion der Zelle dieses als Langstreckenflugzeug ausgelegten Aufklärers täuscht darüber hinweg, daß dieses Flugzeug durch seine Triebwerksanlage etwas revolutionierend Neues brachte. Daß der von Vogt beschrittene Weg richtig war, ist be-

A diagram of the Blohm & Voss P.203 scissor-wing aircraft. When folded back for high speed flight, this design resembles the Pfiel. For low speed takeoff, the wings were set in the conventional position.

damaging the torpedo's steering mechanisms. The Germans suffered substantial losses to their attacking aircraft using these weapons and tactics. The low altitude and low speed simply left the attacking aircraft venerable.

What was needed was a new torpedo with a new attack methodology. The Germans needed a torpedo that could be fired from a distance, at a high altitude, and at jet-plane speeds. They wanted the new torpedo to be launched at 1.5 kilometers from the target, at any height, at any angle and at speeds up to 700 km per hour (435 m.p.h.).

Dr. Zippermayr reworked the internal components of the new aerial torpedo with these goals in mind. But what is most interesting were his aerodynamic solutions for the new torpedo. This solution was a new gliding surface that automatically balanced the torpedo in flight. This gliding surface was a new wing with a special shape. It was attached to the top edge of the torpedo and its wings were "V" shaped as seen from the front or rear. This wing design automatically confirmed stability on the flying craft since its center of gravity was directly below what we might call its point of suspension, the midpoint between the V-wing surfaces. Tests were performed in which the torpedo was dropped from an aircraft flying at speeds up to 720kph and from heights of over 1000 meters. The Arado 234 was envisioned as using this weapon. The work was carried out from January, 1944 until the end of the war.

The success of the L-40 torpedo design had obvious implications for high-speed aircraft. Besides Dr. Zippermayr, Messerschmitt, Augsburg, was already present at Lofer for work on the Enzian rocket. Dr. Wurster and none other than Dr. Lippisch worked on this project. Given all this aviation genius, it is no surprise that the Aerodynamische Institute der Technischer Hochschule, Hanover was put to work conducting wind tunnel and other tests of the torpedo design. They passed the opinion that the structure was sound and suitable and could be applied successfully to aircraft. These findings were published in their technical research manuals (Berichten des General-Luftzeugmeinster). Orders were given to Dr. Zippermayr to incorporate the torpedo principles in developing a jet-propelled aircraft capable of extremely high speed.

The first aircraft was to be a high-speed fighter. But, at the same time experiments were to be conducted to determine the value of the new design in the construction of gigantic, high-speed airliners. These plans were said to have been successful as far as they were able to progress before Germany's defeat.

The first step was to build a model glider, complete with instruments to register flying and diving qualities of the aircraft. This model would be released from a tow line at high altitude. The results of these experiments were then used in the construction of the first full-scale glider model. It was during the construction of this full-sized model, about three-fourths complete, that the war ended and construction stopped. At least for a time the model was stored at the Hagen carpenter shop in Lofer.

After flight tests of the full-scale model were completed, work was to begin on a jet-propelled prototype. The Army report states: "Dr. Porche, located at Schuttgut near Zell-am-See had already been assigned the task of supplying the jet-units." Yes, this is the same Dr Porsche whose cars we all know and love.

The Zippermayr wing design had two advantages over contemporary wing design. The first was tremendous speed. Even as the Army wrote up their findings, in July of 1945, two years before the sound barrier would be officially broken, there was already discussion in the report of this wing design going supersonic. The reason these wings were credited with "speed" is that they offered considerably less resistance, drag, to the atmosphere than wings in current usage. In other words, this type of wing was more efficient at high speed.

The second advantage bestowed by this wing design is stability. The stability was especially apparent on the transverse axis, which made the aircraft easy to control. The torpedo prototype flew without any automatic steering device and, even at speeds of 80 to 200 meters per second, was perfectly stable. At an incidence angle of 52 degrees the torpedo showed no tendency to stall nor were their any irregularities in the flight direction. It was also claimed that the wing loading was much less than for conventional wing types.

In engineering, there are always trade-offs. The big disadvantage, although not ever mentioned in the government reports. This would certainly be that takeoffs would be more difficult. Short takeoffs are usually associated with large, straight wings. As we know, the double-decker wings of World War One aircraft are sometimes used, even today, for jobs requiring slow speed and reliability such as crop dusters.

The Germans invented just about every wing type that exists.

Swept wings, both front and back, delta wings and swing wings were all invented by the Germans at this time. The German aircraft makers all shared information during the war. They simply had to do this. Many times aircraft designed by one company were actually built by another firm during the war. This was done to more efficiently utilize resources. Messerschmitt was on-site at Lofer. It is to be expected that knowledge of the Zippermayr wing design was disseminated throughout the German aircraft industry on some level. Therefore, it is not surprising if another attempt was made to utilize the advantages of the Zippermayr design while minimizing the disadvantage.

The design in question is the Blohm & Voss P.203. This wing design is called a scissor wing. At takeoff the wing assumes its customary position, at right angles to the fuselage. After takeoff, when high speed is desired, the wing is rotated from the standard position to a position almost parallelling the fuselage. At high speed, this position would still provide enough lift for flight yet the atmospheric drag would be greatly reduced as in the Zippermayr design. As the drawing shows, the wing is affixed on top of the fuselage as in the Zippermayr design. The scissor wing design would combine the virtues of a standard wing, for takeoff and low speed efficiency, with the reduced wind resistance of the Zippermayr design for high-speed performance. The government documents do not make this connection, nor does any known literature to date, but the similarity of the two designs begs for comparison and possible connection.

The scissor wing has remained on the drawing board in spite of its apparent advantages. Every so often mention of this design or a picture of a futuristic aircraft with scissor wings appears on the cover of a magazine.

SOURCES

1. Combined Intelligence Objectives Subcommittee Evaluation Report 201, 7/23/45, Report On Talstation, Lofer, Target Nos. C-4/222 and C-1/667, obtained through Department Of The Army, Fort George G. Meade, MD. 20755-5995

2. Counter Intelligence Corps, Salzburg Detachment, United States Forces Austria, Zell am See Section, 8/4/45, Case Nol S/Z/55, Zippermayr Mario Dr. Ing., obtained through Department Of The Army, Fort George G. Meade, MD. 20755-5995

3. Headquarters Seventh Army, C.I.C. Detachment, 5/16/45, Dr. Zippermayer, (Stabsingenieur) Kreis Zell Am See, Lofer, obtained through Department Of The Army Fort George G. Meade, MD. 20755-5995

4. Combined Intelligence Objectives Subcommittee Evaluation Report 201, 7/23/45, Report On Talsation, Lofer, Target Nos. C-4/222 and C-1/667, (Expanded Version), obtained through Department Of The Army, Fort George G. Meade, MD. 20755-5995

5. Conference of CWS Officials with Ing. Mario Zippermayer, Regraded Unclassified, 7/13/99 by USAINSCOM FOI/PA, obtained through Department Of The Army, Fort George G. Meade, MD. 20755-5995

18 Supermetals

There are reports of super metals being produced by the Germans during the Second World War. There are probably multiple origins of these rumors and perhaps multiple metals or metal alloys involved.

In 1960 Michael X., later writing under the name Michael X. Barton, described a metal called "Impervium" which was allegedly used by the Germans in construction of field propulsion flying discs. Barton's German informant describes an experience from wartime Germany:

"In Schramberg, South Bavaria, I had a friend who's father was a renowned Metallurgy scientist. He experimented with the chemistry of metals. There is little doubt but that he was one of the world's most brilliant minds, for it was this same scientist who invented a metal harder than diamonds. In 1935-36 the Nazis put this amazing metal—we shall call it IMPERVIUM—to use for the first time in airplanes of the German Air Force.

I recall visiting his fantastic laboratories under a luxurious house at Lake Schramberg. He allowed me to see how the metal glowed with a red-blue florescence when heated to a high degree.

One year later (in the 1940's) I met this scientist and his daughter again, this time at the Polish Embassy. The daughter told me that her father had been called for an audience with Hitler that very night. The scientist's consultation with Hitler concerned secret

plans for an OVAL or 'ELLIPSE-SHAPED' aircraft".[1]
The author goes on to state that the source of power for this oval aircraft was "electro-magnetism" or "electrified propulsion system"[2]. The quotation stated "to use for the first time in airplanes of the German Air Force", so might this metal have appeared in other aircraft? According to another source, Wilhelm Landig, it did.[3] Curiously enough, the word "Impervium" is today the registered trademark of a company called Northwest Research Institute, Inc. and can be found on the internet at:

www.carbideprocessors.com/Knives/Impervium.htm

Their Impervium may not be quite the Impervium described above but there are similarities. This commercial Impervium is twice as hard as stainless steel. It is a stainless steel like alloy of 65% iron as well as Nickel and chromium for carbide formation. It also contains about 10% manganese and about 10% carbon. Then something interesting is described:

"As a final step a gas is introduced as final alloying agent".

This gas is evidently not oxygen since the carbon content has already been fixed by the manufacture and introduction of oxygen is done for this purpose. What was the gas and why was it not named? Maybe we will find out.

At this same website another commercial metal alloy is described in the discussion of Impervium. It is called "Lubricium" and it is described as Impervium that has been "cold reduced". The description of cold reduction is a forging process in which a piece of Impervium is beaten long and hard enough to re-arrange the crystalline structure of the metal, packing the molecules tighter together.

As with Impervium only part of the story is being told and these two metals, while probably very tough, constitute only partial steps of the original German research.

Wilhelm Landig wrote three novels. These novels, he claimed, were based upon reality and we are given to understand in the text of his work that the technology he describes was real or at least under development during World War Two. The fictional aspect of his work seems to be the characters by which this technology is explained. After Landig's death in 1997, it was made public that he was a member of the SS during the war and it was his job to guard German flying discs near Prague.

Landig wrote of other aircraft and weapon's systems besides flying discs. One description involved a peculiar aircraft, a prototype, flown out of Norway called the "Dosthra". This aircraft resembled a giant insect. It was a mid-wing monoplane with a five-cornered fuselage, viewed in cross-section. It was thicker in the front than the rear. The front end of the fuselage was made of glass, giving it the insect-look. The wing-span of the aircraft was about 135 feet, so it was about the size of a B-29. The Dosthra was designed for rough, outlying airfields with tow landing wheels being an incredible four meters in diameter. It's four radial Argus engines each dove a four bladed propeller. A fifth high-altitude engine was positioned in the rear of the aircraft. One the tips of the wings were mounted jet engines as in the B-36, which additionally, could be used for steering. The wings were of a slotted construction, possibly suction wings, whose area was considered small in proportion to the size of the aircraft. The tail section slanted backwards. Top speed for this aircraft was given at 830 kilometers per hour or almost 515 miles per hour. Its range was given at 22,000 kilometers or 13,640 miles. Enough range to be a threat to the American mainland. Its crew consisted of five to seven people. The mission of the Dosthra remains unclear. The most curious thing about this aircraft was that it was armed with a weapon called "Metalstrahl".

Metalstrahl was a type of rail gun that used magnetic forces to attract and repel steel bullets and launch them at tremendous velocity[4]. Whether or not a rail gun was actually mounted in this aircraft or not, it is a fact that such a weapon was under development by the Germans in this time frame[5].

Returning to our discussion of super metals, the other curious thing about this aircraft was that it was said to be made of a special metal. This metal, according to Landig, was made by compression at 400,000 atmospheres of pressure. It is said to have had the highest possible tensile strength and functioned on the Dosthra as a protective armor[6].

This is all good and well if we are talking about "rumors" of super metals, but what actual evidence is there that the Germans managed to realized this technology? There is some evidence coming from government sources, one Allied and one Axis.

As soon as the smoke had cleared off the battle ground, elite teams of Allied scientists began combing Germany and Austria for advanced technology which could be used against the remaining enemy, Japan. These teams of scientists, going by various names, compiled their findings in a series or reports, actually several series of reports. One of these series of reports was the British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee reports (BIOS). In report number 142, a German advance in metallurgy is described which seems to have baffled the British scientists of the times.

The reason this is said is that one of the German informants, upon with the British relied for information, is simultaneously given credence and then discredited. The BIOS report says of their informant, Josef Ernst:

"In the course of interrogation it became clear, that Ernst was not at all reliable, and though there may in some cases be a factual basis for some of his claims, they are as a whole inaccurate and of doubtful value"[7].

This is a pattern seen over and over again in Allied intelligence reports. The question is: Why use information from a source that is unreliable? Why would these scientists report information to their superiors that they themselves believe is wrong or inaccurate? The answer is that they are covering themselves either way. If the information is correct, then they were the first to report it and are to be commended. If it is false, they are on record having warned all those concerned against this information.

The underlying truth about this and other such attempts of Allied scientists to have it both ways in their reports is that these interviewing Allied scientists "didn't have a clue" if the information is accurate or not and are just covering their butts.

Ernst claimed the Germans had developed a method to harden steel and aluminum beyond any means yet developed. He claimed this involved a process of nitrogen bonding to the surface of these metals. The report says:

"Ernst claimed to have worked for many years on nitrid-ing processes, and to have evolved a method of hardening steels and aluminum alloys. Ernst had been in contact with a Prof. Dr. Thalhofer of the Technische Hochschule, Karlsruhe, who had carried out trials for the army, at Wamberg, Czechoslovakia, and is probably the real inventor of these processes. The method for the hardening of steels, which is claimed to produce a nitride coating up to 0.5 cm. thick with a hardness of up to 1,800 Vickers, is as follows. The steel is heated to 600 degrees C and quenched in 30% aluminum sulphate solution, which etches the surface. When cold the steel is packed in powdered charcoal and heated to 750 degrees C, and on reaching temperature is removed from the charcoal and quenched in a 15% sodium nitrite solution at 35 degrees C. The method is good for drills, and silicon steels."[8]

Ernst goes on to say that all the equipment for operating this process is at the house of Baroness Mangold, at Silcherof, near Weilheim, near Munich. Remember that the site for the Impervium research is also said to be in Bavaria and one wonders if the two reports are possibly describing the same research.

In doing research for this chapter, I spoke on the telephone with a chemical engineer, John Ritzenthaler, who deals with metal surfaces. He told me that this process was carbo-nitriding. Aluminum impurities in the steel react with nitrogen and bond. Carbon is then added as in making steel. The process is called case hardening.

On another occasion, I called a large defense contractor, TRW, and spoke with a metallurgist about German developments in metals during the war. I asked him:

"What about all those super-metals the Germans were supposed to have developed?"

To this sort of open-ended leading question the metallurgist replied that:

"It is true. The Germans developed all sorts of alloys during the war. After the war we took them—some of them were great—we took one and gave it a TRW number, and still market it today—we didn't want to give the Germans credit though".

TRW assigned a "TRW number" to its commercial metals for purposes of designation and marketing.

There is more. Norbert Juergen-Ratthofer describes a method of propulsion based upon a super-cooled, fuel such as liquid helium, injected directly into the combustion chamber of a motor at which time it expands tremendously. The connection to metallurgy is that this same super-cooling, high compression process, needed to utilize this fuel can be employed upon metal to make it super-hard. This is reminiscent of the high-pressure technique described by Landig in describing the compressed metal skin of the Dosthra. This process, according to Juegen-Ratthofer, is based on the German patent of inventor Karl Nowak.[9]

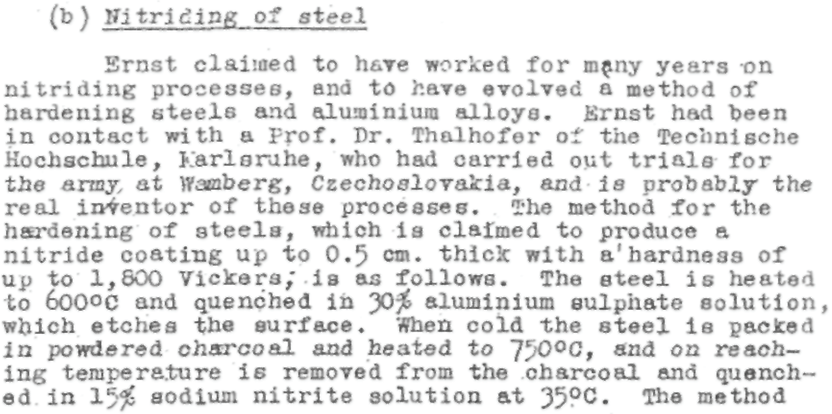
According to Karl Nowak's 1954 German patent, patent number 905847, Class 12g, Group 101, by a process of extreme cooling coupled with pressure, the basic atomic structure of material can be changed. It is reduced, narrowed and confined in terms of atomic, crystalline structure. Nowak's idea was to re-heat this substance in a combustion chamber and reap the rewards of an instantaneous, explosive expansion. The question remains if it is possible to apply this technology toward the hardening of metals. Admittedly, at first the idea of compression cooling as a means to change atomic structure sounds a lot like junk science.

At this point Dr. Gordon Freeman weighs in with some remarkable scientific insight. According to Dr. Freeman, an elements behavior is determined by its arrangement of electrons orbiting the nucleus of that elemental atom. Seven electron shells are present around the core. Under high pressure electrons are shifted to lower orbits and new orbital overlappings are formed. This changes the whole behavior of the element concerning color, boiling temperature, density and so forth.[10]

The trick seems to be to cool and compress the material and then gradually release the pressure. The material will retain its new properties at least for several months.

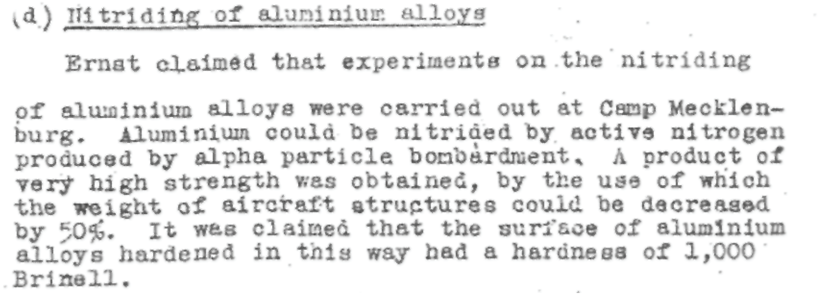
Dr. Freeman points to a neutron star as an example. A star burns out and turns cold in intergalactic space. "Cold" is very cold, meaning at or near absolute zero. As it burns out it collapses, putting the remaining cold material under unbelievable pressure. Imagine hydrogen, composed of one electron and one proton, as an example. Pressure becomes so great that the electrons are pressed into the core of the atom, that is, pressed into the core of the proton. A new neutron is formed through this process. Repeated billions and trillions of times, a new material and a new type of star is thus formed which is a cold, dark neutron star. This is the most dense and strongest of metals.

A question remains as to if there were whole classes of metals or



(b) Nitriding of steel

Ernst claimed to have worked for many years on nitriding processes, and to have evolved a method of hardening steels and aluminium alloys. Ernst had been in contact with a Prof. Dr. Thalhofer of the Technische Hochschule, Karlsruhe, who had carried out trials for the army at Wamberg, Czechoslovakia, and is probably the real inventor of these processes. The method for the hardening of steels, which is claimed to produce a nitride coating up to 0.5 cm. thick with a hardness of up to 1,800 Vickers, is as follows. The steel is heated to 600°C and quenched in 30% aluminium sulphate solution, which etches the surface. When cold the steel is packed in powdered charcoal and heated to 750°C, and on reaching temperature is removed from the charcoal and quenched in 15% sodium nitrite solution at 35°C. The method



(d) Nitriding of aluminium alloys

Ernst claimed that experiments on the nitriding of aluminium alloys were carried out at Camp Mecklenburg. Aluminium could be nitrided by active nitrogen produced by alpha particle bombardment. A product of very high strength was obtained, by the use of which the weight of aircraft structures could be decreased by 50%. It was claimed that the surface of aluminium alloys hardened in this way had a hardness of 1,000 Brinell.

Super Metals - British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report number 142.

Top: the hardening of steel through nitriding. This is a chemical process.

Bottom: Aluminium was hardened through bombardment by alpha particles. Alpha particles are similar to nitrogen atoms so the two processes, one chemical the other using irradiation, had similarities. Both are examples of densification technology. Former SS man Wilhelm Landig describes a prototype aircraft built with this super-hardened aluminium in his novel "Goetzen gegen Thule". Was this one of the "realities" he said his novel contained?

other metals whose final step in manufacture is the introduction of nitrogen for purposes of super-hardening? Could other more exotic processes have been involved in nitriding such metals as Michael X. describes? Ernst answers the question in the same Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report.

Ernst claims that aluminum was nitrided, strengthened and hardened to the degree that a 50% weight reduction could be achieved in aircraft using this metal. But the most amazing claim Ernst makes is the method for the nitriding process itself. Ernst claims that to achieve this the metal was subject to alpha particle bombardment. Alpha particles are positively charge particles emitted from a nucleus and composed to two protons and two neutrons. This makes an alpha particle identical with the nucleus of a helium atom.

The generation of alpha particles would require special equipment and the presence or absence of this equipment could be considered a test of the veracity of Ernst's testimony. To the best of my knowledge, the minimum piece of equipment required to generate alpha particles is a cyclotron. A search was made and a record for cyclotron research in Nazi Germany was found with no less than the Siemens firm[11].

One can only imagine a cyclotron bombarding the subject metal to be strengthened in some strange underground lab at Camp Mecklenburg, as Ernst describes. It may sound like weird science but it is exactly this sort of Nazi atomic alchemy that we have encountered before and will encounter again. The description of the atomic nitriding of aluminum is beginning to resemble the original words of Michael X. and one cannot help but wonder at the validity of the real Impervium as he describes.

SOURCES

1. X, Michael (Michael X. Barton), 1960, We Want You Is Hitler Alive?, page 17, Futura Press, Reprinted 1969 by Saucerian Books

2. ibid

3. Landig, Wilhelm, 1971, Goetzen Gegen Thule, page 185, Hans Pfeiffer Verlag GmbH, Hannover

4. ibid

5. Lusar, Rudolf, 1960, German Secret Weapons of the Second World War, page 160, Neville Spearman, London

6. Landig, Wilhelm, 1971, Goetzen Gegen Thule, page 185. Hans Pfeiffer Verlag GmbH, Hannover

7. British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report number 142, page 6,7,32 Bryanston Square, London

8. ibid

9. Nowak, Karl, 1954, German Patent, Patent number 905847, Klasse 12g, Gruppe 101, page 1,

10. Personal communication to the author, 12/19/02

11. Coil Research Laboratory Siemens Halske Berlin, File Number 6824 DIC/MIS/NOI-533, March 14, 1945, (interrogation of Paul Mehler), Reference Number 0136094

19 N-Stoff

Shortly after the end of the war in Europe, Allied Intelligence interrogated the former Reich Minister of Armaments, Albert Speer. Speer was an architect who got lucky. Somehow, he became a personal friend to Adolf Hitler and rose in prominence within the Third Reich as the war fortunes of Germany rose. Eventually, he became Reich Minister of Armaments. In this position he coordinated the war industry of Germany. In his interrogation we have the transcript of the answers Speer gave but, unfortunately, not the questions[1]. From his answers, of course, we can deduce the questions in a general sort of way.

From the answers given, we know that the questions centered around the highest technology Germany possessed and its most powerful weaponry. The Allied interrogators prepared for this interview as if they were dealing with a media celebrity. This interrogation is to the point and pointed, as if there time constraints involved, not as if the prisoner is simply languishing in prison. Implicit in the questioning is the understanding that they, the Allied interrogators, are talking to "the man", the one most knowledgeable about these things and the person in overall control of these projects. We now know that this time had long passed for Speer. He had lost position and power to other agencies within Germany during the wane of the Third Reich. Principally, Speer's loss was General Hans Kammler's gain. Speer's answers reflect this "loss" in that there are some projects that were given code-names by the interrogators, for which Speer knows little or nothing at all.

In the third paragraph of the interview, labeled "3.", Speer apparently strays from the point of the question and provides us with a clue to something totally unknown, even today. It reads:

"3. Questioned on chemical warfare, SPEER said at once that Dr. AMEROS of I.G. Fraben LUDWIGSHAFEN was entirely responsible both for development and production and the sonderausshuss of K-Stoff was virtually the I.G. he mentioned in this connection a new substance known as N-Stoff, which was the only one developed and made not by I.G. Farben but by HWAmt at FALKEN-HAGEN; he was not sure of the exact purpose of this material-it was not real war gas, but he thought it could "burn without oxygen"."

The Germans had code words for some chemical concoctions. There was C-Stoff and T-Stoff, for instance, which were complicated formulas for rocket fuel. Rather than recite or write out a long chemical formula, a codeword such as T-Stoff could be employed and be understood. N-Stoff was, then, a chemical formula rather than a codename for an element. Because of the "N", nitrogen might come to mind but this is not the case since the German word for nitrogen doesn't begin with an "n" and in fact is called "Stickstoff".

What was this N-Stoff that was so secret that even Albert Speer was unclear about it?

There is a clue. It seems the N-Stoff was to be used as the explosive warhead of both the V-1 and V-2[2]. It was a completely new type of explosive. At first, it was being developed by the German Army but the Wehrmacht's progress was deemed too slow by Hitler, so he gave it to a more reliable institution in his mind, the SS[3]. This technological transfer to the SS is the reason Speer seemed so vague about N-Stoff, it had simply escaped his purview and had fallen into the hands of Dr. Hans Kammler.

The development of N-Stoff seems to have gotten quite far along. A test of N-Stoff was actually done[4]. A fifteen-centimeter grenade of N-Stoff burnt a circumference to a distance of 800-1000 meters. Imagine a ton of this explosive in a V-1 or V-2.

This may have actually happened, because during the V-1 and V-2 attacks on London during October to November, 1944, there were extremely strong fires reported as a result of a few of these attacks which was never clarified[4].

According the Freidrich Georg, upon whom we are relying for much of this information, N-Stoff was composed of Chlorine and Fluorine and other substances[5]. This is about all we have on N-Stoff, just enough to perk the curiosity. N-Stoff has always been and remains one of those unsolved mysteries of the Second World War.

SOURCES

1. Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report, Evaluation Report 53(b), June 18, 1945, page one

2. Georg, Friedrich, 2003, Hitlers Siegeswaffen Band 2: Star Wars 1947 Teil A: Von der V-1 bis zur A-9: unkonventionelle Kurz-und Mittelstreckenwaffen, pages 77 and 113, Amun-Verlag, Schleusingen

3. Georg, Friedrich, 2003, page 77

4. Georg, Friedrich, 2003, ibid

5. Georg, Friedrich, 2003, page 113

20 Nipolit

Nipolit is another one of the mysterious explosives developed by the Germans during the war. Friedrich Georg describes nipolit as a "Sprengbaustoffen" or an explosive construction material[1]. It can immediately be appreciated that a construction material which itself is an explosive would have tremendous use in a military situation. Imagine, for example, a retreating army making bridges or even roads out of this material, which could be utilized as if it were concrete, yet detonated as the enemy approached or even detonated, as the enemy used it.

Planners at the time had another application. They wanted to form a whole nose cone out of nipolit and mount it atop a V-2 rocket[2]. This V-2 would not just be any rocket, it was to be the first V-2 using a nuclear-powered rocket engine. In this technique, an atomic reactor would be placed where the combustion chamber normally was located and through it or around it would be pumped a liquid gas such as hydrogen, for instance. The liquid hydrogen would cool the reactor but the intense heat would cause the liquid hydrogen not only to vaporize but to ionize. Without an oxidizer, the hydrogen would not burn in the normal sense, but would expand at an even greater rate and be ejected at rear of the rocket, providing thrust.

The nipolit nose cone would have the structural strength to remain intact until impact, presumably without the need of detonating equipment. The effect of this weapon would be further enhanced as radioactive uranium was scattered by the exploding nipolit giving it some of the value of a "dirty bomb".

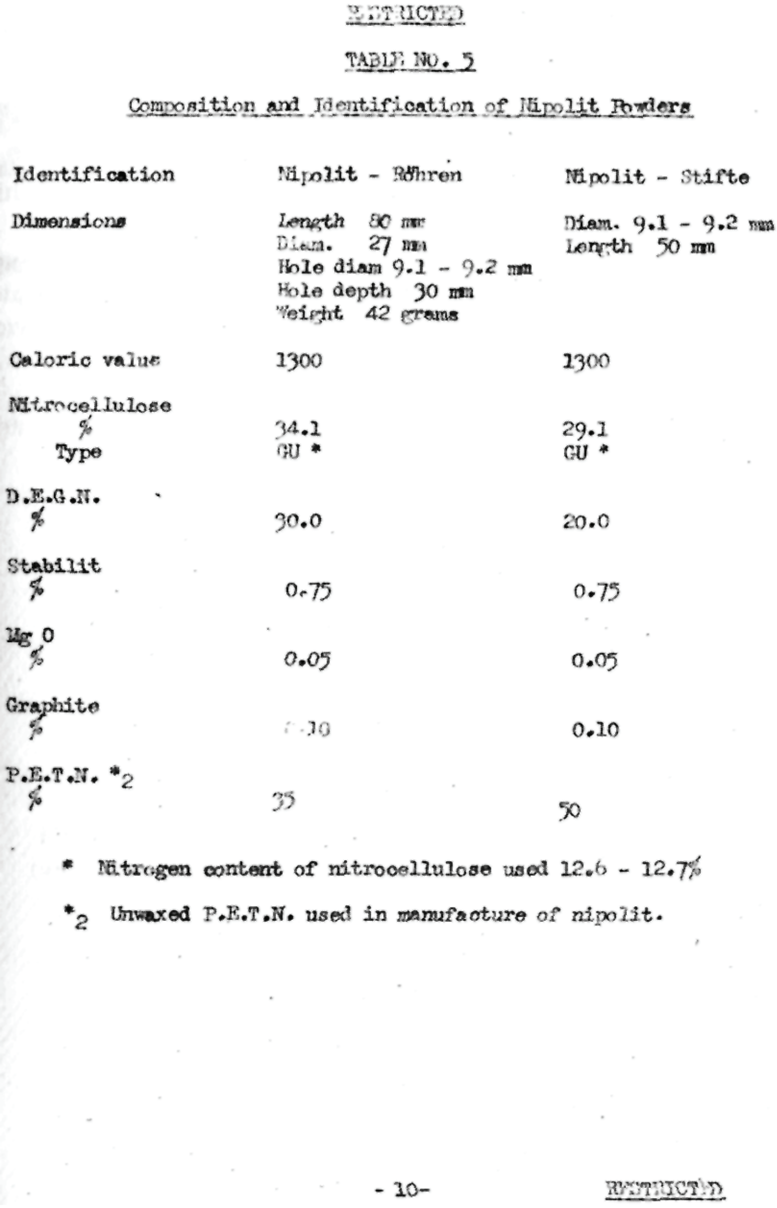


TABLE NO. 5

Composition and Identification of Nipolit Powders

Identification	Nipolit - Röhren	Nipolit - Stifte
Dimensions	Length 80 mm Diam. 27 mm Hole diam 9.1 - 9.2 mm Hole depth 30 mm Weight 42 grams	Diam. 9.1 - 9.2 mm Length 50 mm
Caloric value	1300	1300
Nitrocellulose % Type	 34.1 GU *	 29.1 GU *
D.E.G.N. %	30.0	20.0
Stabilit %	0.75	0.75
Mg O %	0.05	0.05
Graphite %	0.10	0.10
P.E.T.N. *2 %	35	50

* Nitrogen content of nitrocellulose used 12.6 - 12.7%

*2 Unwaxed P.E.T.N. used in manufacture of nipolit.

Nipolit as described in a CIOS report by the U.S. government.

Confirmation of the reality of nipolit comes from the Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report, on the subject titled: Manufacture Of Solventless Type Smokeless Powder & Nipolit Kraiburg Works, Deutsche Sprengchemie

G.M.B.H. The plant in question was visited by Allied investigators just after the war and nipolit is described in their report[3].

They state it was an explosive and the only explosive make at this particular facility. The other job of Kraiburg plant was to make solventless, smokeless powder for various types of guns. To make these various powders nitrocellulose, nitroglycerin, diglycodinitrate and a mysterious substance, PETN, were used. PETN is an abbreviation. Only nipolit contained PETN in its formula and PETN is nowhere defined.

A table showing the other contents of nipolit as well as the mysterious PETN indicates that it was formed into tubes (Roehren) and spikes (Stifte) which seems to confirm that nipolit was something other than just an explosive powder.

SOURCES

1. Georg, Freidrich, 2003, page 90, Hitlers Siegeswaffen Band 2: Star Wars 1947 Teil A: Von der V-1 bis zur A-9: unkonventionelle Kurz-und Mittelstreckenwaffen, Amun-Verlag, Schleusingen

2. Georg, Friedrich, 2003, page 131

3. Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report, Item #2, File #XXV11-72, Manufacture Of Solventless Type Smokeless Powder & Nipolit Kraiburg Works, Deutsche Sprengchemie G.M.B.H., G-2 Division, SHAEF (rear) APO 413, October, 1945

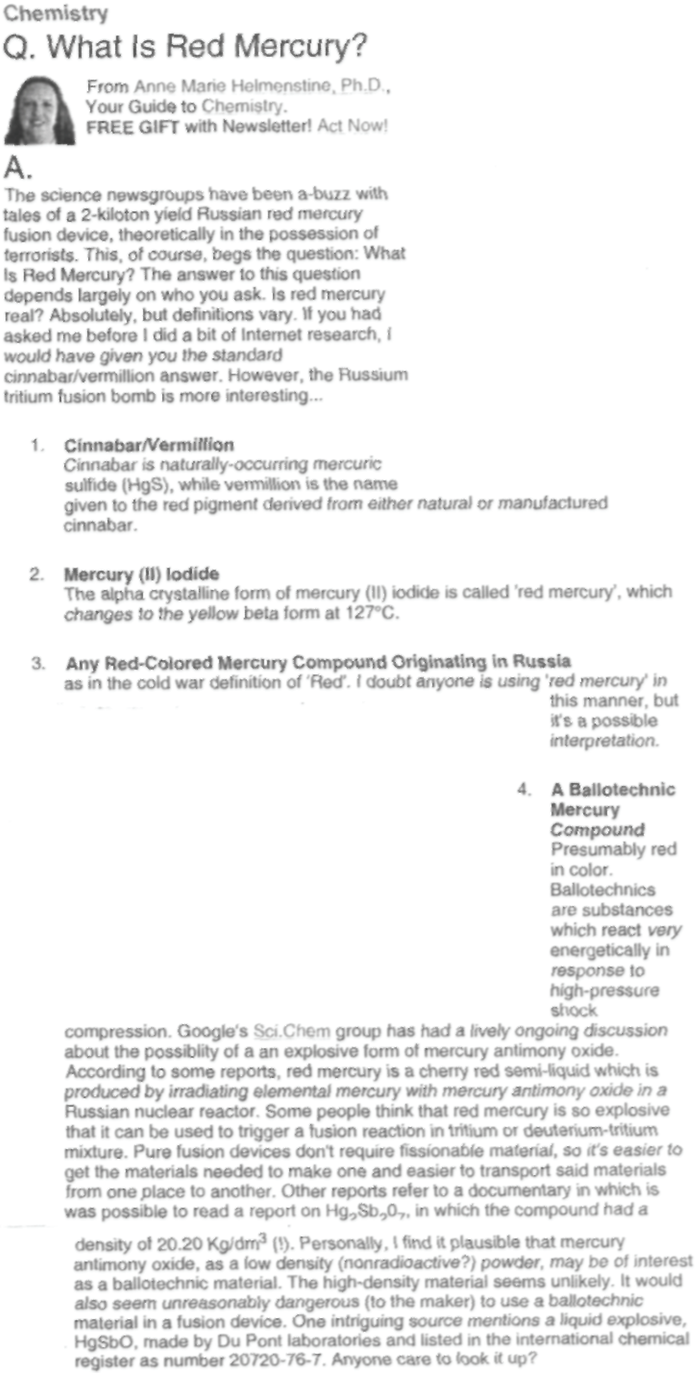
21 Red Mercury

Did the Germans invent red mercury during the war? I have found no records stating that they absolutely did do so but the discussion of red mercury is so closely linked to that of increasing the density of metals, Karl Nowak, and atomic research and methods of making plutonium that mention should be made of the possibility.

What in the world is red mercury? Firstly, it should be said that the U.S. government calls red mercury a hoax and with that denunciation, the discussion of red mercury has been thrown into the realm of the rumor-mill in the United States. The Soviets are said to have invented red mercury, according to the rumor mill, in about 1968. With the fall of the Soviet Union, quantities of red mercury were said to have appeared on the black market. Agents of numerous countries have been trying to buy red mercury from Soviet sources. Other countries may have conjured up their own supply of red mercury, once its existence and samples were made known.

Red mercury is a compound of mercury, antimony and oxygen having the chemical formula of Hg2SB207[1]. At room temperature and pressure it is a powder. It is red in color. But it seems that there is more to red mercury is not a simple chemical combination.

Legend has it that once chemically concocted; red mercury is put into a nuclear reactor for a period of time in order to charge up. During this charging up process while undergoing neutron bombardment in the reactor, the red mercury powder changes into



Chemistry

Q. What Is Red Mercury?

From Anne Marie Helmenstine, Ph.D.,
Your Guide to Chemistry.
FREE GIFT with Newsletter! Act Now!

A.

The science newsgroups have been a-buzz with tales of a 2-kiloton yield Russian red mercury fusion device, theoretically in the possession of terrorists. This, of course, begs the question: What Is Red Mercury? The answer to this question depends largely on who you ask. Is red mercury real? Absolutely, but definitions vary. If you had asked me before I did a bit of Internet research, I would have given you the standard cinnabar/vermillion answer. However, the Russium tritium fusion bomb is more interesting...

1. **Cinnabar/Vermillion**
   Cinnabar is naturally-occurring mercuric sulfide (HgS), while vermillion is the name given to the red pigment derived from either natural or manufactured cinnabar.

2. **Mercury (II) Iodide**
   The alpha crystalline form of mercury (II) iodide is called 'red mercury', which changes to the yellow beta form at 127°C.

3. **Any Red-Colored Mercury Compound Originating in Russia**
   as in the cold war definition of 'Red'. I doubt anyone is using 'red mercury' in this manner, but it's a possible interpretation.

4. **A Ballotechnic Mercury Compound**
   Presumably red in color. Ballotechnics are substances which react very energetically in response to high-pressure shock compression. Google's Sci.Chem group has had a lively ongoing discussion about the possiblity of a an explosive form of mercury antimony oxide. According to some reports, red mercury is a cherry red semi-liquid which is produced by irradiating elemental mercury with mercury antimony oxide in a Russian nuclear reactor. Some people think that red mercury is so explosive that it can be used to trigger a fusion reaction in tritium or deuterium-tritium mixture. Pure fusion devices don't require fissionable material, so it's easier to get the materials needed to make one and easier to transport said materials from one place to another. Other reports refer to a documentary in which is was possible to read a report on $Hg_2Sb_20_7$, in which the compound had a density of 20.20 Kg/dm^3 (!). Personally, I find it plausible that mercury antimony oxide, as a low density (nonradioactive?) powder, may be of interest as a ballotechnic material. The high-density material seems unlikely. It would also seem unreasonably dangerous (to the maker) to use a ballotechnic material in a fusion device. One intriguing source mentions a liquid explosive, HgSbO, made by Du Pont laboratories and listed in the international chemical register as number 20720-76-7. Anyone care to look it up?

An internet article in which Dr. Anne Marie Helmenstine defines red mercury.

a thick liquid[2]. The charged liquid only has a life of about three months[3], so it must be used within this period of time for it to express its special properties.

Putting material into a reactor to try to change it may seem rather strange. In fact, this is exactly the method used to make plutonium. Uranium 238 is placed into a reactor and irradiated, absorbing neutrons until it finally changes into another element, plutonium. The Germans used this method and made plutonium[4]. Putting things and substances into a reactor in order to change them is a sort of modern alchemy. There have always been rumors of attempts to make gold by the Germans using this method, which is possible but expensive to do using enrichment methods. Following this line of thought, is it is no wonder that these early German nuclear alchemists would think to introduce mercury, a heavy, liquid electric conductor into a reactor for experimentation. If later compounds of mercury were introduced, it should be no surprise.

What is really going on here is that the red mercury put into the reactor is being made denser. The idea is similar to that of Karl Nowak, which is that an attempt is being made to reduce the space between the atoms and so causing the metal, or in this case, a compound, to become more dense. In this irradiation method it is not being done by cooling the existing material but by bombarding it with neutrons, additional material, in a reactor. The red mercury is trapping and retaining neutrons and so becoming denser. Like the Nowak method, the change is only temporary but while it lasts the change causes the compound to have special properties besides being mildly radioactive.

These special properties are numerous and truly unique. Red mercury is said to be able to detonate small nuclear bombs, "mini-nukes". Red mercury is said to burn with very great intensity making it an explosive in its own right[5]. It is also said to be used in the manufacture of semiconductors[6], the production of electricity[7], the production of coatings for military equipment to avoid radar detection[8], and, because of its high-energy explosive content, it is used as a rocket propellant[9].

Of course the main concern here is the use of red mercury for the production of very small nuclear bombs and the use of red mercury for the manufacture of a completely new type of very small nuclear bomb. The historical reason for the concern with mini-nukes is that

Ballotechnics, Pure Fusion and Nuclear Terrorism

According to Sam Cohen, a new type of non-nuclear explosive is potent enough to light off a nuclear fusion reaction between deuterium and tritium. In the usual H-bomb, a fission bomb is needed as a match to light off the fusion. With the new type of explosive, the fission bomb is unnecessary. As nuclear bombs go, the pure fusion bombs have an extremely low blast, equivalent to 1 ton of TNT: a "pop, not a bang."

But they release a flood of neutrons, lethal within 1/3 mile, causing death "from immediately, till shortly after."

They could be made by several countries known to sponsor terrorism, and could be carried in a sandwich bag.

The new type of non-nuclear explosives are called ballotechnic materials. Cohen says that unlike other explosives, they produce no bang, no cloud, keep the same shape while they detonate, "but Boy!, do they get hot!" Ballotechnics may have already led to very small fission bombs as well as pure fusion.

Cohen identifies the mysterious "red mercury" (of TV documentary fame) as a ballotechnic material. He offers this "recipe:" take mercury-antimony oxide, compress it, and bombard with neutrons. He says it is slightly radioactive, with a half-life of a couple of days.

Cohen says the Russians have built and tested mini-nukes, and that Americans and Russians are cooperating on pure fusion. He says that a Russian bomb was brought to Los Alamos ("by Federal Express" from a Russian plane in Washington) and successfully tested.

Dr. Teller agreed with most of this-including the successful test at Los Alamos-but rejected red mercury as "nonsense," possibly "a pure hoax." Cohen was more impressed with the agreement than the disagreement. As he was leaving the building, I heard him say that from now on, he would "quote Teller word for word," and had ordered tapes of the meeting for that purpose.

The terrorist potential of mini neutron bombs is horrifying. One possibility mentioned by Cohen involved a US State Of The Union address. Mere mention of it provoked the founder of DDP, Howard Maccabee to demand that Cohen stop his presentation!

Ballotechnics' potential for good is also great: it could be a route to practical fusion power.

The first page of an internet article Dr. Sam Cohen (father of the neutron bomb) describes making red mercury through compression of mercury-antimony oxide and bombardment of it by neutrons. This densification is reminiscent of Karl Nowak but done more like Joseph Ernst describes in hardening aluminium. Neutron bombardment can happen inside a nuclear reactor or by the neutron generators made by the C.H.F. Muller, A.G. company.

Red Mercury

The WMD no one wants to "officially" talk about... Its deadly potential cannot be ignored!!!

On Friday, September 24, 2004, British police arrested 4 suspects for allegedly trying to purchase a highly powerful, radioactive material, originally made in Russia, know as' Red Mercury'.

These four supposedly were willing to pay $ 541,000 a kilogram, on behalf of a Saudi Arabian, (described as sympathetic to the Muslim cause), whose name was not disclosed.

"The News of the World said that the material was developed by Soviet scientists during the Cold War for making briefcase nuclear bombs that could kill people within a few city blocks."

Sam Cohen, the physicist who invented the neutron bomb, sheds a little more light on the destructive power of red mercury. As quoted from a June 15, 1997 article by Christopher Ruddy of the Tribune-Review, It states:

'Most frightening for Cohen is the relative ease by which neutron bombs can be created with a substance called red mercury. Red mercury is a compound containing mercury that has undergone irradiation. When exploded, it creates tremendous heat and pressure - the same type needed to trigger a fusion device such as a mini-neutron bomb.

Before, an obstacle to creating a nuclear bomb was the need for plutonium, which when exploded could create a fusion reaction In hydrogen atoms. But red mercury has changed that. The cheap substance has been produced in Russia, Cohen said, and shipped on the black market throughout world.

Cohen said that when UN inspectors went to Iraq to examine the Iraqi's nuclear weapons capabilities the U.N. team found documents showing that they had purchased quantities of red mercury. The material means that a neutron bomb can be built "the size of a baseball" but able to kill everyone within several square blocks."

Another article, "The Balance of Terror and the Red Mercury Nightmare" states that 'Iraq possesses "s-megaton" micro-nuclear warheads. These are softball sized two-megaton fusion bombs triggered by an irradiated and compressed compound of mercury antimony oxide. This device doubles the nuclear yield with a hundredfold reduction in weight. Using heavy hydrogen instead of uranium or plutonium to fuel its explosive reaction, this handheld nuclear weapon cannot be detected by U.S. sensors.'

Red Mercury...The CIA says that it does not exist, yet terrorist organizations worldwide are willing to pay outrageous amounts of money to procure it...Scientists have alluded that nuclear weapons containing red mercury, can enter the United States, UNDETECTED, be placed in cities all across the country, and cause cataclysmic destruction...from a nuclear bomb, of incredible power, the size of a softball...l don't know about you folks, but this REALLY scares me!

Now, what bothers me even more, is that last year, confidential Intelligence sources informed me that a Special Ops unit in Iraq had lost track of about a ton of red mercury. I have not heard anything to the contrary, so I am assuming that it is still missing. How could that happen???

According to the research that I have done and talking to the contacts that I have in the Intelligence community, red mercury not only destroys human life, but kills every living thing in Its path for eternity!!! In other words, where its destructive energy has touched, NOTHING will ever live again, not at least in our lifetime!

Let me go one further, my sources inform me that it would only take a teaspoon of red mercury to kill all living creatures in the Great Lakes.

http://www.homelandsecurityus.net/red_mercury.htm 6/2/2005

In another internet article Dr. Samuel Cohen discusses the real danger of red mercury weapons.

the wartime Germans are known to have mentioned nuclear bombs of a very small size. These bombs were sometimes described as the size of small pumpkins or pineapples[10]. This small size greatly confused the Allied Powers when they heard descriptions of it. This is perfectly understandable considering that atomic weapons were usually thought of as being large, heavy and bulky. The description concerning size compares favorably with the description given for a red mercury bomb which is said to be somewhere between the size of a grapefruit[11] and a soccer ball[12]. The question for us is, could red mercury have been one of the missing components in the Allied assessment of the German atomic bomb?

The Americans are said never to have discovered red mercury (or gotten it through any other means)[13]. But how is this possible? We had Robert Oppenheimer. We had Edward Teller. We even had Albert Einstein. We still have Samuel Cohen, "father of the neutron bomb". These people are geniuses. They are icons of our American scientific culture, whose work proves American superiority in the field of nuclear physics. These worked on the Manhattan Project. They know virtually everything about nuclear weaponry. All these individuals, inspire of their denials, spent their life's energy working hard and actively to produce the most efficient killing machines ever invented by man. Like the German rocket scientists who later went on to put man on the moon[14], the American nuclear scientists mentioned above worked, first and foremost, feverishly for the express purpose of killing untold multitudes of people they considered their enemies.

So why, with all this effort and with the financial backing of the government, did the Americans not discover red mercury? Perhaps it is because the role of American discovery in the field of nuclear weaponry has been great exaggerated. This is a theme taken up by many modern European researchers, some cited here and elsewhere in this book. I do not want to open this discussion here, only to mention that this is a possibility.

If the Soviets gained this technology through a German source, then this secret was one of the best-kept secrets of all time, lasting for almost fifty years. The initial secret involved here can be explained by what I call the "Vesco Principle". In Renato Vesco's paradigm, if any one former Allied Power recovered a particular technology and the other three Allied Powers did not recover it, that technology remained secret, perhaps until this very day. He states:

> "In fact, of the numerous revolutionary "new weapons" that the Germans developed in that period, we know only those— fortunately they comprise the majority— that fell into the hands of all, or at least more than one, of the four occupying powers."[15]

So if more than one former Allied country recovered a particular weapon of whole technology, then the secret was out and everybody openly discussed it. But if only own former Allied Power managed to get a particular technology, it guarded that secret very, very closely. How it was possible to keep this secret for so long will be discussed at the end of this chapter.

The Germans had nuclear research facilities spread across Germany, Czechoslovakia, Austria, and portions of modern-day Poland. They were looking for breakthroughs and were willing to try most anything. As we will see in a later chapter, in one of these facilities, "Der Riese" in what is now Poland, there were descriptions of a "metallic liquid, mercury-like substance, violet in colour" being used in experiments there[16]. Red mercury can sometimes be violet in color but what is even more important in this description is its state of matter. It is described as a liquid. Dr. Gordon Freeman, in personal communication to me dated December 18, 2002, stated that under normal atmospheric conditions, all mercury compounds are solid.

By this he means all the known compounds of mercury are solids. The rumor of red mercury is the only compound of mercury ever said to be a liquid. This leaves little doubt in my mind but that the enigmatic violet fluid, in the midst of a wartime German nuclear research facility, was, in fact, red mercury.

One reason why it may have been possible for the Germans to make this breakthrough while the Americans did not is because the Germans and the Americans were working with two different schools of physics in mind. Igor Witkowski, modern-day expert on "Der Riese" and secret German research is quoted by Nick Cook:

> "The Germans ignored Einstein and developed an approach to gravity based on quantum theory." Don't forget that Einsteinian physics, relativity physics, with its big-picture view of the universe, represented Jewish science to the Nazis. Germany was where quantum mechanics was born. The Germans were looking at

gravity from a different perspective to everyone else. Maybe it gave them answers to things the pro-relativity scientists hadn't even thought of".[17]

Many, many German atomic scientists went East at the close of the Second World War, either voluntarily or involuntarily, just as in the case of the German rocket scientists. The Soviets spared no effort and no expense in setting up the captured German scientists in the Russian motherland.

But the Soviets were interested in big nuclear bombs. Soviet long-range rockets reflected in their design that they were intended to carry a large payload in the form of a warhead. This heavy lifting ability put the Soviets ahead of the Americans in the space race and was a direct result of Soviet desires to carry a large megaton payload to the enemy. As you may recall, it was the Soviets who tested the heaviest thermonuclear weapon ever detonated. It was estimated at 50 megatons.

If the German scientists brought knowledge of red mercury with them to Russia, it must have been relegated into the cellar in terms of priorities. It was only with the interest in tactical nuclear weaponry that small atomic bombs resurfaced on the scene.

This brings us to the question of how red mercury technology is said to be able to produce small nuclear weapons. First of all, let us take a look at small nuclear weapons, employing less fissionable material than is normally thought of as being enough to form critical mass. Critical mass is the amount of nuclear fuel necessary to sustain a chain reaction. The actual amount varies with the various nuclear fuel used. The fact is that the large values given for critical mass in the first generation of nuclear weapons has been greatly reduced. Even when discussing "conventional" nuclear devices involving widely known ideas of fission and fusion, a decent discussion of the facts of nuclear weapons miniaturization is hard to come by, at least in the popular press.

One atomic bomb dropped on Japan was made of uranium 235. Approximately 50 kilograms of U-235 (about 10 1/4 pounds) were necessary to constitute critical mass. The chain reaction was started using a neutron gun, which was built into the bomb. Once the gun had split the first atom, the mass of uranium was enough to absorb the "split" neutrons, causing others to split in a chain reaction, resulting in a tremendous release of energy.

In order to reduce the amount of uranium necessary to constitute critical mass, that is, to carry this chain reaction, three things can be done. The bomb can be given "tamper", more neutron reflective ability, and/or be made denser.

The bomb can be made stronger (tamper) which makes it hold together longer, giving the chain reaction more concentration. This is done by using an armored coating around the bomb, which physically makes it stronger for a tiny fraction of a second.

The bomb can be made to reflect more neutrons back toward the focus of the chain reaction instead of going off randomly into space. Special neutron-reflective materials can be used to do this. Beryllium is, for example, one of these materials.

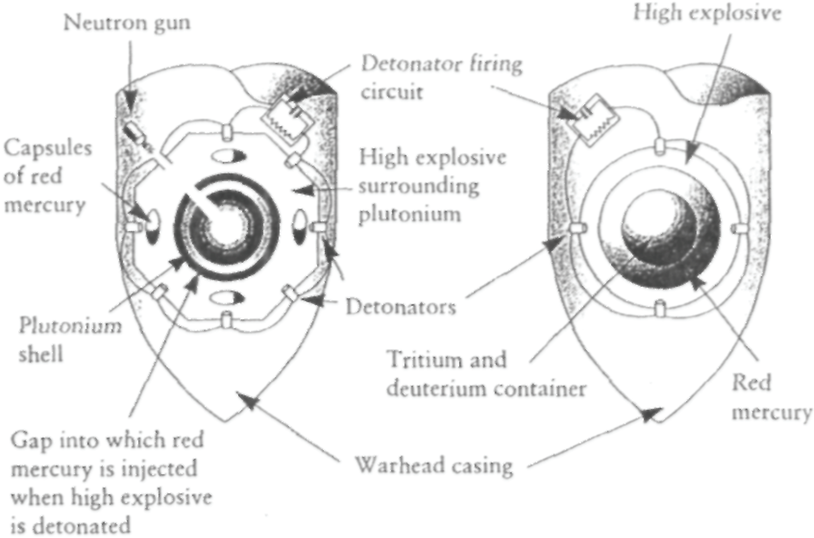
The nuclear fuel itself can be made denser. This is done by surrounding the fissionable material with conventional explosive and detonating it so that the force of the blast focusses the nuclear material inward, on to itself, compressing it. Nuclear scientists sometimes call this "implosion". It is said that Pu-239, used in the Hiroshima bomb must be detonated using the method[18].

Some elements or compounds used for the purposes described above have both the qualities of tamper and neutron reflectability. Some have one or the other. Using these methods the size of atomic weapons have been greatly reduced to the size of large cannon projectiles. The explosive values of these mini-nukes are greatly reduced as compared to the two bombs detonated over Japan.

I promised not to discuss the recent research of the new generation of researchers working on German atomic weaponry but I will say that their interest in mini-nukes is based on German references to their small size and the fact that several detailed, eye-witness accounts of two small nuclear detonations in March of 1945 have been gathered[19].

A fusion bomb is much more powerful than a simple fission bomb. A fusion bomb works by fusing two light nuclei to form a heavier nucleus, which is accompanied by a release of the difference in nuclear binding energy of the products and the sum of the binding energies of the two light nuclei[20]. The materials used for fusion fuel are heavy water (deuterium) and tritium. Tritium is simply lithium which has been placed in a reactor long enough to undergo a transmutation (the same method used to enrich uranium and to make red mercury).

A red mercury based nuclear weapon is a pure study in miniatur-

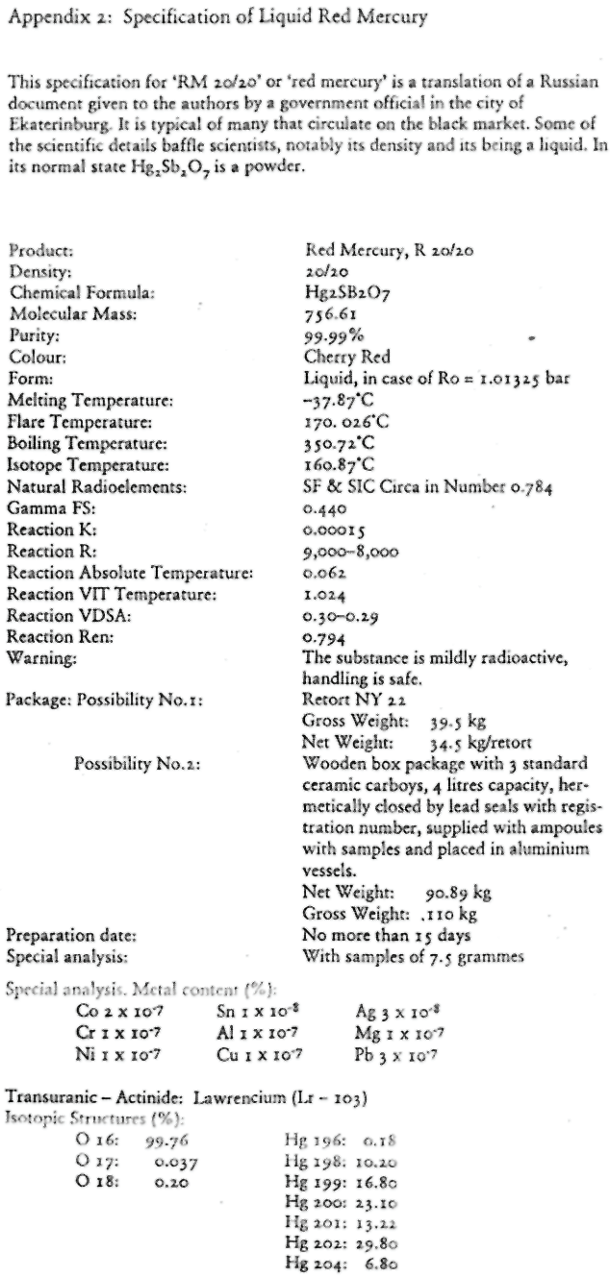

Neutron gun
Detonator firing circuit
High explosive
Capsules of red mercury
High explosive surrounding plutonium
Detonators
Plutonium shell
Tritium and deuterium container
Red mercury
Gap into which red mercury is injected when high explosive is detonated
Warhead casing

The diagrams above illustrate the supposed principles of two types of red mercury nuclear weapon. They were published by International Defense Review in 1994 in an article by the nuclear analyst Dr Frank Barnaby.

On the left is a fission device: an advanced type of atom bomb. Capsules of red mercury are embedded in high explosive surrounding a spherical shell of plutonium. When the explosive is detonated, the red mercury is injected into a gap around the plutonium. It acts as a neutron reflector, increasing the efficiency of the nuclear fission process, and as a tamper, preventing the plutonium from disintegrating too quickly. Neutron rich elements known as actinides (e.g. Californium 252) in the red mercury also give a boost to the fission process, increasing the yield of the bomb for a given quantity of plutonium.

On the right is a pure fusion neutron bomb. An outer layer of high explosive is detonated causing the inner layer of red mercury to release an enormous amount of stored energy. The energy implodes the tritium and deuterium at the centre of the device, producing enough heat to create a fusion reaction and a massive release of high-energy neutrons.

Diagrams of two red mercury weapons from Hounam and McQuillan.



Appendix 2: Specification of Liquid Red Mercury

This specification for 'RM 20/20' or 'red mercury' is a translation of a Russian document given to the authors by a government official in the city of Ekaterinburg. It is typical of many that circulate on the black market. Some of the scientific details baffle scientists, notably its density and its being a liquid. In its normal state $Hg_2Sb_2O_7$ is a powder.

Product:	Red Mercury, R 20/20
Density:	20/20
Chemical Formula:	Hg2SB2O7
Molecular Mass:	756.61
Purity:	99.99%
Colour:	Cherry Red
Form:	Liquid, in case of Ro = 1.01325 bar
Melting Temperature:	−37.87°C
Flare Temperature:	170. 026°C
Boiling Temperature:	350.72°C
Isotope Temperature:	160.87°C
Natural Radioelements:	SF & SIC Circa in Number 0.784
Gamma FS:	0.440
Reaction K:	0.00015
Reaction R:	9,000–8,000
Reaction Absolute Temperature:	0.062
Reaction VIT Temperature:	1.024
Reaction VDSA:	0.30–0.29
Reaction Ren:	0.794
Warning:	The substance is mildly radioactive, handling is safe.
Package: Possibility No.1:	Retort NY 22 Gross Weight: 39.5 kg Net Weight: 34.5 kg/retort
Possibility No.2:	Wooden box package with 3 standard ceramic carboys, 4 litres capacity, hermetically closed by lead seals with registration number, supplied with ampoules with samples and placed in aluminium vessels. Net Weight: 90.89 kg Gross Weight: 110 kg
Preparation date:	No more than 15 days
Special analysis:	With samples of 7.5 grammes

Special analysis. Metal content (%):

Co 2×10^{-7}	Sn 1×10^{-8}	Ag 3×10^{-8}
Cr 1×10^{-7}	Al 1×10^{-7}	Mg 1×10^{-7}
Ni 1×10^{-7}	Cu 1×10^{-7}	Pb 3×10^{-7}

Transuranic – Actinide: Lawrencium (Lr – 103)

Isotopic Structures (%):

O 16:	99.76	Hg 196:	0.18
O 17:	0.037	Hg 198:	10.20
O 18:	0.20	Hg 199:	16.80
		Hg 200:	23.10
		Hg 201:	13.22
		Hg 202:	29.80
		Hg 204:	6.80

Specifications for one type of red mercury from Hounam and McQuillan.

ization. The employment of red mercury increases both the tamper and the neutron reflectability of the bomb. Further, red mercury explodes with such amazing energy that it can be used to surround the fissionable or fusionable material, compressing it to a higher density as it explodes. Red mercury delivers all three necessary qualities of atomic miniaturization.

Red mercury can be used in a fission or fusion bomb. The qualities red mercury brings, especially to the small fusion device, vault it into a class of nuclear weapons all on its own. It is no wonder that the bidding on the Soviet material and its underlying technology became so frantic in the early 1990's[21].

The question for us is not if red mercury, as we have come to know it, was Russian. The question is if red mercury had a German father. Was red mercury actually invented by some alchemist during the Third Reich, working underground in a first generation reactor, desperately searching for a war-winning technology and willing to stop at nothing and to rule nothing out in order to succeed? As we have already seen, the Germans knew of methods to make metals denser. The Germans knew how to turn lithium into tritium and how to enrich uranium 238 into plutonium by putting it into a reactor for a time. Were these ideas tried on other substances? They certainly had a supply of heavy water, deuterium, as there still exist today pictures of heavy water storage tanks from the region of Jonastal[22]. There are reports of small pumpkin or pineapple-sized atomic weapons being under development at that time. The Germans had experimented with, according to the report cited above, mercury compounds, which were liquid and violet in color at a site known as a site of nuclear research. The Soviets gained the services of many of the German nuclear scientists from several different German atomic projects after the war. The Soviets did "discover" red mercury but only after their thirst for truly large nuclear weapons had been slaked. Did they return to the German discoveries when the wanted to develop tactical nuclear weaponry? If this is true, then it is only verified by the "Vesco Principle" which states that if only one former Allied Power gained a particular German technology, as opposed to two or more former Allied Powers having it, then it was kept absolutely secret form the other former Allied Powers.

This scenario would explain the origin and hidden history of red mercury but would not explain why the Americans had no knowledge of this secret until the Soviet Union fell apart. How this secret was kept is a topic, which was promised the reader earlier. With all the Cold War spy vs. spy going on one would think that no important breakthrough or technology could totally escape this spy dragnet. The surprising truth, however, is that secret technologies were kept for decades.

Nothing in the Cold War had higher priority than rocket technology. Yet the Soviets made a huge technological breakthrough in rocket technology in the late 1960s and this breakthrough was kept from the prying eyes of the American spy agencies until after the Cold War ended. Here is what happened.

In the late 1960s the race to the moon was in its final stretch. The Americans were actually in the lead. This lead was based upon the Saturn 5 rocket, the vehicle, which would take man to the moon. The Soviets had suffered a setback. Their ace rocket designer died in 1966. The Soviets were behind in designing a rocket capable of delivering man to the moon. The reason for this lag was the difference between the size of the Saturn 5's rocket engines and anything that had been built before. The Saturn's engines themselves were enormous. The Soviets had nothing comparable off-the-shelf. A new engine had to be built.

Realizing they were behind, the Soviets gambled on reworking an old idea, the closed cycle rocket engine, which the Americans had given up as unworkable. At that time what normally occurred was that a rocket engine expended great amounts of energy venting burnt fuel and oxidizer that powered the turbo-pumps, used for pumping fuel to the main engines. These turbo-pumps were actually small rocket engines and it was only with a rocket engine that it was possible to pump the vast quantities of liquid propellants necessary to lift a rocket of this size to the moon. The problem was that the exhaust gases for these rocket-powered turbo-pumps were not being used as thrust, but being vented out of the sides of the rocket. The Soviets began work on another system.

Instead of a separate feed of liquid oxygen to the turbo-pump, the Soviets fed the entire supply of liquid oxygen, for both the turbo-pump and the main engine, directly into the turbo-pump. The excess or unburnt liquid oxygen was then routed out of the turbo-pump as exhaust and directly into the main combustion chamber of the rocket where it combined with more liquid hydrogen, the fuel. After years of failure, this engine was finally perfected and given the designation NK-33 by the Soviets. Amazingly, this engine was 20-25% more efficient that any rocket engine ever built by the American, even to this day.

After the Americans landed on the moon in 1969, the space race was over and the Soviets saw no political gain in building their own moon rocket. Their program was scrapped. The NK-33 engines were slated for destruction and the order was so given. Fortunately, this order was disobeyed. Many engines were secretly stored in a warehouse inside the Soviet Union. These engines remained in storage and in secrecy for the next thirty years.

It was only well after the fall of the Soviet Union that the information was leaked to the Americans. The Americans, at first, did not believe the efficiency figures their Russian counterparts were giving them concerning the secret NK-33 engines. The Americans brought some of these engines to the USA for testing and found they were exactly as stated by the Russians. The Russians, now in partnership with the Americans, modernized the NK-33 engine and it now forms the basis for the new satellite launch vehicle, the Atlas 2.

This story proves that secret technology can be kept secret for a long time. This was true of the NK-33 engine, which was at the heart of a great space rivalry and the subject of intense espionage. Red mercury was a secret for which no spies were searching. A secret not looked for can be kept a secret for a long time. Red mercury was most likely a unique and fortuitous find for the Soviets, based upon German research. Because they alone possessed its secrets, knowledge of its existence remained a top secret. Like the NK-33, red mercury only surfaced after the fall of the Soviet Union at a time when the Russians became interested in marketing a product.

SOURCES

1. Hounam, Peter and Steve McQuillan, 1995, page 190, The Mini-Nuke Conspiracy Mandela's Nuclear Nightmare, Penguin Books, New York.

2. Hounam, Peter and Steve McQuillan, 1995, page 58

3. ibid

4. Mayer, Edgar and Thomas Mehner, 2002, page 186, Die Atombombe und das Dritte Reich, Jochen Kopp Verlag, Rottenburg

5. Hounam, Peter and Steve McQuillan, 1995, page 130,140

6. Hounam, Peter and Steve McQuillan, 1995, page 60

7. Hounam, Peter and Steve McQuillan, 1995, pages 60,281

8. Hounam, Peter and Steve McQuillan, 1995, page 64

9. Hounam, Peter and Steve McQuillan, 1995, page 90

10. Mayer, Edgar and Thomas Mehner, 2002, page 265, Die Atombombe und das Dritte Reich Das Geheimnis des Dreieks Arnstadt-Wechmar-Ohrdruf, Jochen Kopp Verlag, Rottenburg

11. Hounam, Peter and Steve McQuillan, 1995, page 129

12. Hounam, Peter and Steve McQuillan, 1995, page 134

13. Hounam, Peter and Steve McQuillan, 1995, page 195

14. Georg, Friedrich, 2003, pages 41-46, Hitlers Siegeswaffen Band 2: Star Wars 1947 Teil A: Von der V-1 bis zu A-9: unkonventionelle Kurz-und Mittelstreckenwaffen, Amun-Verlag, Schleusingen

15. Vesco, Renato, 1976, page 96, Intercept UFO, Pinnacle Books, New York

16. Cook, Nick, 2001, page 191-192, The Hunt For Zero Point, The Random House Group Ltd., London

17. Cook, Nick, 2001, page 194

18. Mayer, Edgar and Thomas Mehner, 2002, pages 251-254, Die Atombombe und das Dritte Reich Das Geheimnis des Dreiecks Arnstadt-Weckmar-Ohrdruf, Jochen Kopp Verlag, Rottenburg

19. Mayer, Edgar and Thomas Mehner, 2002

20. Van Nostrand's Scientific Encyclopedia, 1958, page 715

21. Hounam, Peter and Steve McQuillan, 1995

22. Faeth, Harald, 1998, page 151, 1945-Thuerigens Manhattan Project Auf der Spurensuche nach der verlorenen V-Waffen-Fabrik in Deutschlands Untergrund, CTT Verlag, Schleusingen

22 Electric Gun or Rail Gun

An electric or rail gun uses forces of magnetic attraction and repulsion to move a projectile. We are all familiar with how opposite poles of a magnet attract and how like poles repel. This idea can be harnessed in what is called a linear motor. This device is set on a rail or rails and alternately attracts and then repels a small car that is set upon the rails. The car is rapidly accelerated down the track. The car's front end is open so that a projectile placed in the car will be shot out when the car reaches the end of its track. The projectile cannot be spun to give it stability in flight as a bullet is spun by the spiral groves in the gun barrel. Instead, fins are attached to the projectile in the manner feathers are attached to an arrow.

The Germans first considered the electric gun for use as a long-range cannon for exactly the same role as the Hockdruckpumpe (HDP), the high-pressure pump or cannon, was ultimately built. This device actually saw service in the Second World War and rained projectiles upon London from facilities located across the English Channel on the west coast of France[1]. The HDP was further developed after the war into long-range weaponry, which finally culminated in the super cannon built by Dr. Gerald Bull.

In 1990, Dr. Bull's nearly completed super cannon was mounted at a 45-degree angle up a hillside in western Iraq and pointed at Tel Aviv. This weapon was capable of launching projectiles the size of Volkswagens into the center of that Israeli city. Fortunately, for the Israelis, the government of the United States, through some slick maneuvering, gave

Saddam Hussein the green light to invade Kuwait and then condemned him for it. These events led to the United States's bombing and destruction of the super cannon in the ensuing Gulf war before it could be used against Israel. Dr. Gerald Bull was assassinated by the Israeli Mossad on March 22nd of 1990. The Americans never wanted to disclose the Machiavellian moves leading up to the first Gulf War and the Israelis were never held accountable for the murder of Dr. Gerald Bull. This is another example of how the winners write the history.

Besides the Hochdruckpumpe, the Germans also had the V-1 and the V-2 for use as long distance artillery. For these reasons it was felt that the rail gun might be better put to other uses[2]. Instead, this technology was to be used for anti-aircraft purposes. A Berlin based company, the Gesellschaft fuer Geraetebau, was put in charge of development of this weapon's system.

At first glance, the rail gun, the idea of inventing a whole new class of machine for use as an anti-aircraft weapon sounds like pure science fiction. Indeed, it still sounds like science fiction. Rail guns have recently been proposed for use as one method to shoot down incoming ballistic missiles as part of a "Star Wars" defense system. But this is not fiction. The basic developmental work necessary to field this weapon was done almost sixty years ago. This fact is made clear by the Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report 4/258. The information contained in this report was gathered shortly after hostilities ended and published in mid-June of 1945. This information was based upon a German report issued on 9/10/44.

The CIOS report does two things. It details the finished antiaircraft device itself and it explains in scientific terms exactly how the device works. It has been said that all machines can be reduced to numbers and this is exactly what the author of the report did. Anyone with a serious interest in this technology should avail himself of this report.

The specifics of the weapon to be produced were that it would have a muzzle velocity of 2000 meters per second and rate of fire of 72 rounds per minute. Each shell would weigh 500 grams. Six 10-meter barrels would be linked to a single power device and fired at once. The whole unit was to be mounted on a 12.8 cm AA gun carriage. This battery would have a burst of fire every five seconds[3].

Based on the report, the chief of the OKL-TLR requested that an experimental plant be set up as quickly as possible, consisting of a complete power unit and a three-barrel gun configuration.

In reading the ClOS report, it should be noted that it was based on some rather stale information, that of 9/10/44. Things were moving very fast at this time in Germany. There was only about seven months left in the war in Europe. Using other sources we can trace the gun's development after it left Berlin.

One of the most reliable sources on German secret technology is Rudolf Lusar. Lusar was an engineer who worked at the German Patent Office during the war. After the war was over, the Allies marched into the patent office and took everything. Lusar says 30 boxcar loads of German patents. After the war Lusar wrote a book on German secret weaponry base on his almost photographic memories.

Lusar reports that work on the electric gun moved from Berlin to the mountainous areas bordering between Bavaria and Austria, to the foothills of the Alps and to the slopes of Mt. Wetterstein to be exact.[4,5] Two versions of this weapon were tested. These were a 20 mm and a 40 mm version. A top-end muzzle velocity of 2000 meters per second was achieved, although some variants of these weapons had lower velocities. In one version, the 10-meter barrel was actually surrounded by electromagnetic coils, which were activated in succession as the projectile progressed down the barrel. In this mountain experimentation it was found that the large energy requirements of the weapon necessitated a new type of condenser that was developed. High hopes rode with this weapon but the military collapse brought this and all other weaponry research to an end. In the end, this technology fell into the hands of the Americans.

SOURCES

1. Porezag, Karsten, 1996, Geheime Kommandosache Geschichte der "V-Waffen" und geheimen Militaeraktionen des Zweiten Weltkrieges an Lahn, Dill und im Westenwald, Verlag Wetzlardruck GmbH, Wetzlar

2. Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee G-2 Division, SHAEF (Rear), CIOS Target No. 4/258, APO 413, page 5

3. ibid

4. Lusar, Rudolf, 1960, German Secret Weapons of the Second World War, page 160, Neville Spearman Ltd., London

5. Lusar, Rudolf, 1964, Die deutschen Waffen und Geheimwaffen des 2. Weltkrieges und ihre Weiterentwicklung, page 211, J.F. Lehmanns Verlang, Munich

23 Electric Gun Part 2

The reason this chapter is called Part 2 is that new information has been received concerning this topic which deserves independent recognition. This information comes by way of Friedrich Georg and consists of two reports from the original company developing the electric gun, Gesellschaft fuer Geraetebau m.b.H. These two reports are dated January 30, 1945 and June, 1945. The Allied CIOS report is dated June 14, 1945 and prepared by H. A. Liebhafsky although a comparison of the two texts from June, 1945 reveals their similarity, even to the signature at the end of the Allied document which reads "J. Hansler". The German language text, titled "Ein Beitrag zum Problem des Elektrischen Geschuetes" was written by Dr. Joachim Haensler and the second text, "Entwurf fuer eine Elektrische 4 cm Flak" is signed by Haensler at its end. Therefore, the Allied CIOS report might be taken for a translation, which it is not. There is certainly a similarity between the two but the German texts are far more detailed and encompassing.

Stated in the reverse, the English text is more general and less specific. Whole discussions have been omitted. This comparison is an example of exactly how Allied post-war security was designed to work. Specific and detailed information was gleaned from German sources about a specific subject. The Americans then would summarize and generalize this specific information that would sometimes even be accompanied by a disclaimer as to the source or accuracy of the information repeated. A name, in this case H.A. Liebhafsky, U.S. Ord. would be attached to

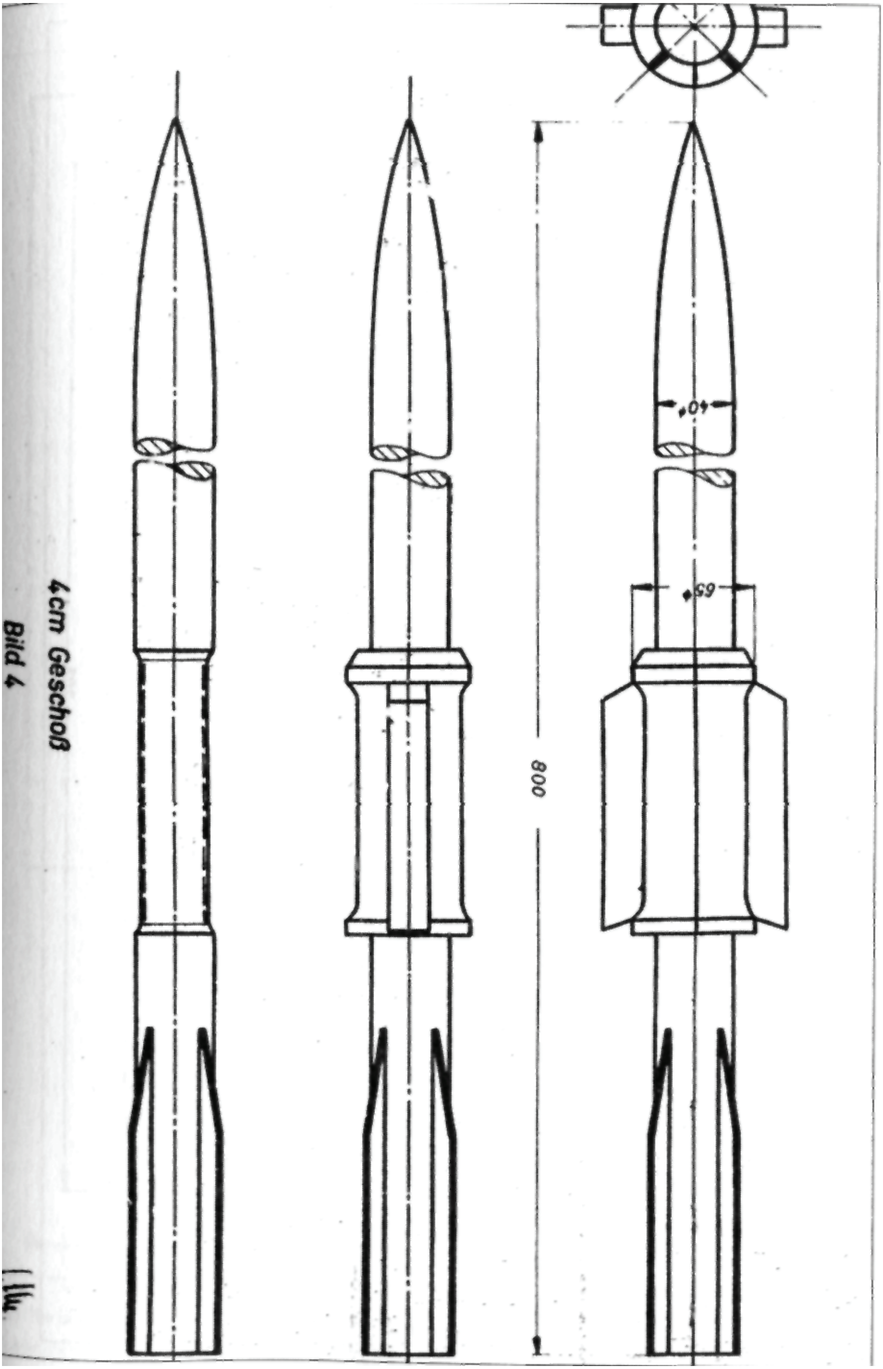
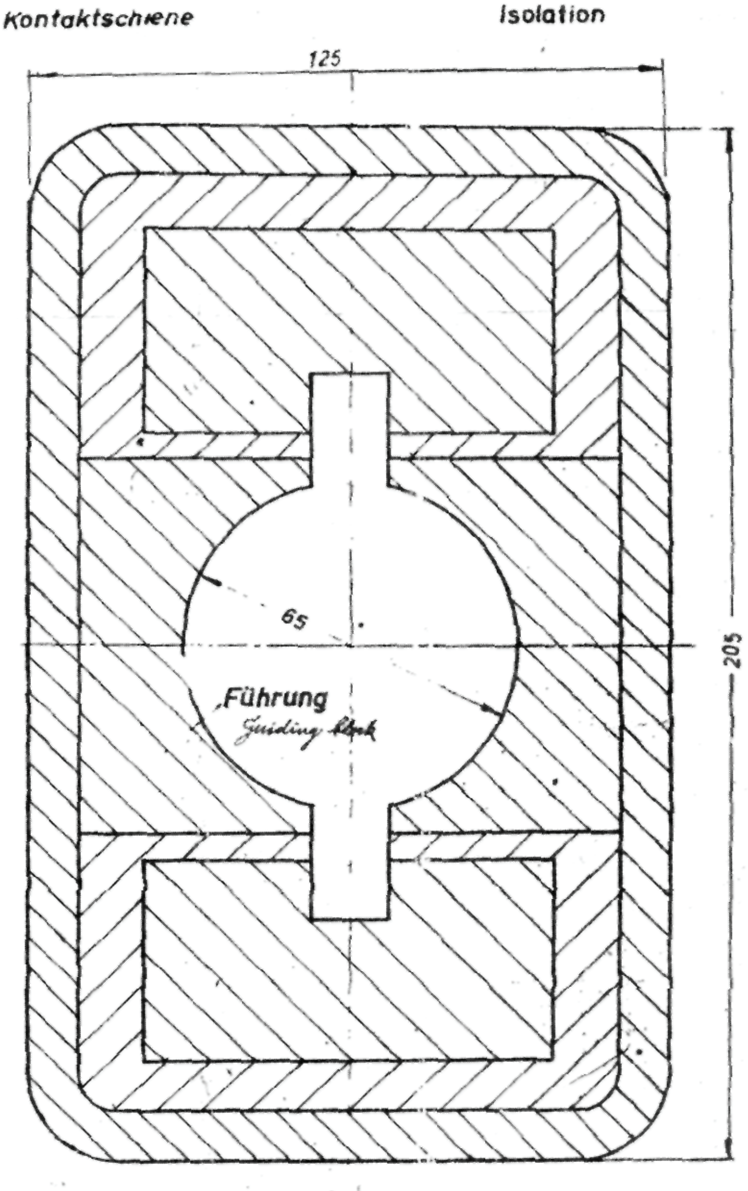

4cm Geschoß
Bild 4
800
ø40
ø65

Diagram showing the cross-section of an iron-free linear motor cannon (German report).

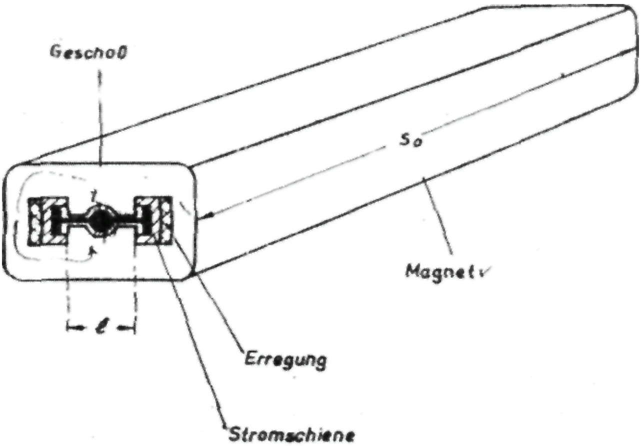

Kontaktschiene
Isolation
125
205
65
Führung
Guiding block

LM 16

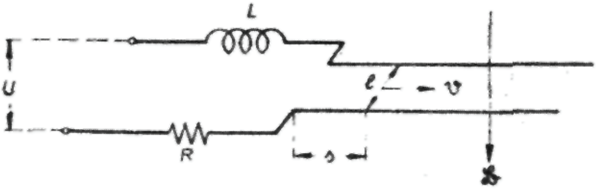
Rohrquerschnitt des eisenlosen Linearmotors

Bild 2

Drawings of electric gun (rail gun, or linear motor cannon) projectiles from a German report.


Geschoß
s_o
Magnet
ℓ
Erregung
Stromschiene

Linearmotor
Bild 1



Stromkreis des Linearmotors
Bild 2

Top: The barrel of a rail gun. The finned projectile emerges at point marked "e".

Bottom: Schematic of the linear motor's electric circuit.

the report. The purpose was to supply a lead to the technology but not an exact blueprint to it. For precise information one's security clearance had to be appropriate and then one had to contact the "custodian of records", to use a legal term, in this case H.A. Liebhafsky. He would then fill you in on the details not covered in the CIOS report and presumably provide you with whatever technical information he had. These levels of security indicate that even in an official sounding government rendition of the subject, underlying facts and perhaps secrets remain which are the subject of more secretive reports of in the possession of a designated person.

The two German reports do provide fresh insights and specific facts, which are the subject of this chapter. Both are similar in content, and brief. What has happened is that the earlier one was written during the war and the latter on was written after the war, presumably at the request of G-2 Division, SHAEF (rear). Since they are similar and brief, both reports will be treated together without specific page references.

The Germans had determined that the absolute maximum muzzle velocity for a powder-propelled projectile was about 2810 meters per second. In practice the maximum was only about 2790. For comparison, the German Paris Gun of World War One had a muzzle velocity of about 1600 m/sec. The Germans now needed something better. Analysis had shown that an electric gun's muzzle velocity potential was far higher, as high as 6000 m/sec.

The most pressing need was for a more effective anti-aircraft gun, able to deliver a larger charge at higher altitudes. They wanted to deliver 500 grams of explosive in this new flak weapon. To do this a muzzle velocity of about 2000 m/sec was necessary. The projectile itself would have the length of about 20 cm and a 4 cm diameter. It would have to be fin stabilized since spinning the projectile in the bore of the gun was impractical. Several barrels per anti-aircraft unit were desired. Originally, the Germans wanted ten barrels but, as the project progressed, this requirement was relaxed.

One aspect, only briefly discussed in the CIOS report is the other uses the Germans ultimately planned for the electric gun, beyond simply as an anti-aircraft weapon.

Due to the high muzzle velocities attainable, it was believed that long-range artillery could be fashioned using this technology. Mention of huge batteries of electric guns each vaulting one shot per minute are sometimes encountered in Allied prisoner of war debriefings but this information is not specific and was usually and understandably discounted by Allied intelligence as unreliable. These facilities were to be located in Western France and were always confused with the high pressure gun, known to the Allies as under German development and discussed in the previous chapter on this subject.

But besides flak and long-range artillery, there was another consideration in mind. Using a long track and a very powerful linear motor, the Germans believed it would be possible to boost the performance of their existing and future long-range rockets. There is not a lot of detail given but one can imagine a mile long, sloped launching ramp, as with the V-1 only much larger, in which a huge sled powered by a linear motor carried a large missile up to several hundred miles per hour before flinging it into the air. The fuel normally wasted just inching the rocket off the ground could now be used to extend its range. This would have been suitable to start the ram-jet based Tromsdorff-D-6000 missile or the huge intercontinental Saenger designs.

One major problem that was encountered with the linear motor was the problem of self induction. An iron object moving through a magnetic field itself becomes an electromagnet. When two magnetic fields interact, a kind of magnetic resistance is encountered which, in this case, would slow the projectile down considerably. The Germans identified three areas of self induction. These were the power source, the barrel and the electric leads.

The power source was a huge generator of 7800 kw. It consisted of an 8 cylinder diesel motor rated at 16,000 horse power. Besides the power source, unipolar impulse generators of a new type manufactured by Siemens-Schucker, each weighing 150 tons, as well as a new type of battery were necessary to impart energy to the projectile. An electric generator is a source of magnetic energy. Nothing is stated but one wonders how successful efforts were in reducing the self-induction values for these generators.

The barrel could be modified to reduce self-induction. The answer in this case was to make it iron-free. With an iron free barrel there would be no self-induction as the projectile traveled through it.

Likewise, the electric leads themselves were capable of generating field energy. The solution was to use 8 parallel single leads, each two copper bands with insulation material in between them as well as keeping them as short as possible and contained within the machine itself.

From the description given, these guns were going to be heavy. It is hard to believe that they would be mobil units as the famous German 88 millimeter anti-aircraft cannon had been. It seems more likely that once these units became operational, they would have been stationed near high-value targets for use against bomber formations.

The Germans felt that they had worked all bugs out of this weapon and that it could be realized at that time. Perhaps experimental models were utilized as conditions allowed, but by the end of the war there is no official confirmation of the operational use of these weapons. Nevertheless, the technology is certainly ready to be "ramped up" in a "Star Wars" application or for launching heavy payloads into orbit.

Sources

1. Haensler, Joachim, Ph.D., 1/30/45, "Entwurf fuer eine Elektrische 4 cm Flak", privately published by Gesellschaft fuer Geraetebau m.b.H.

2. Haensler, Joachim, Ph.D., 6/45, "Ein Beitrag zum Problem des Elektrischen Geschuetzes", privately published by Gesellschaft fuer Geraetebau m.b.H.

24 Means To Stop Engines

Gas

A large part of the Renato Vesco scenario concerning what he termed the "Kugelblitz" flying disc centered around its unusual means for shooting down enemy aircraft. Vesco described German experiments in producing a gas, not harmful to people, but which would case aircraft to fall out of the sky[1]. The method by which this was to be accomplished were special blowers in the Kugelblitz which shot out this special gas ahead of enemy bombers. The enemy aircraft's engine would inhale a small percentage of this gas, along with atmospheric oxygen needed for combustion. The gas would cause the bomber's engines to pre-ignite. This pre-ignition, also called "pinging" or "knocking", compromises the efficiency of the engine's normal ignition advance curve which fires earlier as revolutions per second increase. The efficiency of the advance curve depends on revolutions per minute, engine load, the compression ratio of the engine and the octane rating of the gasoline. In this case the gas in question functioned as if it lowered the gasoline's octane, thus causing it to ignite prematurely and destructively inside the combustion chamber. Depending on the severity of the pre-ignition, the engine would suffer anything from damage to total failure. Vesco even named the research facility responsible for this work and an individual scientist, the "Luftfahrts-forschungsanstalt" (flight research installation) at Volkenrode and Dr. Hans Freidrich Gold, respectively.

This whole idea remained a myth for years. Vesco was always treated with extreme skepticism concerning the Kugelblitz story and the mysterious gas. Now, while evidence for Vesco's manned flying disc designated Kugelbiltz is still largely lacking, the reality and the facts behind the amazing gas able to swat aircraft out of the sky have become known.

Of course, this did not come easily. Numerous requests have been made of the intelligence agencies of the USA for information concerning the Kugelblitz. It has been described to them in detail with alternate names included. In every instance a "no record" response is generated by the government.

Things did not end there, however. A FOIA request was made concerning the scientist involved, Dr. Hans Friedrich Gold. Again, "no record" responses were generated by the government's spy agencies. Below is an example, written on June 13, 2000 by the National Archives at College Park, MD., which says in part:

* * * * * *

"This is in reply to your May 21, 2000 Freedom of Information Act inquiry regarding documentation on the Austrian scientist Dr. Hans Friedrich Gold.

Please note that our World War 11 records are declassified and in the public domain. It is not necessary to file for access under the Freedom of Information Act.

We have examined name indexes to pertinent records in our custody but were unable to locate any information of Dr. Gold. Many records of the Allied Control Commission, Austria, are not indexed by name. We are not staffed to undertake the substantial research that would be necessary to examine un-indexed material for information of one individual. Our staff would be pleased to assist you or your representative at our College Park, Maryland facility.

Sincerely,

Amy Schmidt
Archivist, Modern Military Records
Textural Archives Services Division

* * * * * * *

First, a request under the provisions of the FOIA is always necessary. This binds them to comply with the law imposed upon them by the Congress.

Second, the National Archive's World War 11 holdings are not all declassified, for example, the German scientist Otto Maurer's file is full of references to material removed from public view because it is still secret. Without a request made under FOIA, the National Archives is under no obligation to make the requestor even aware that portions of the file have been withheld.

Third, files do exist under the name of Dr. Hans Friedrich Gold in the possession of the National Archives. The United States National Archives, have just simply lied. They are just simply liars. They just simply violate the law of the land and get away with it probably hundreds of times per day.

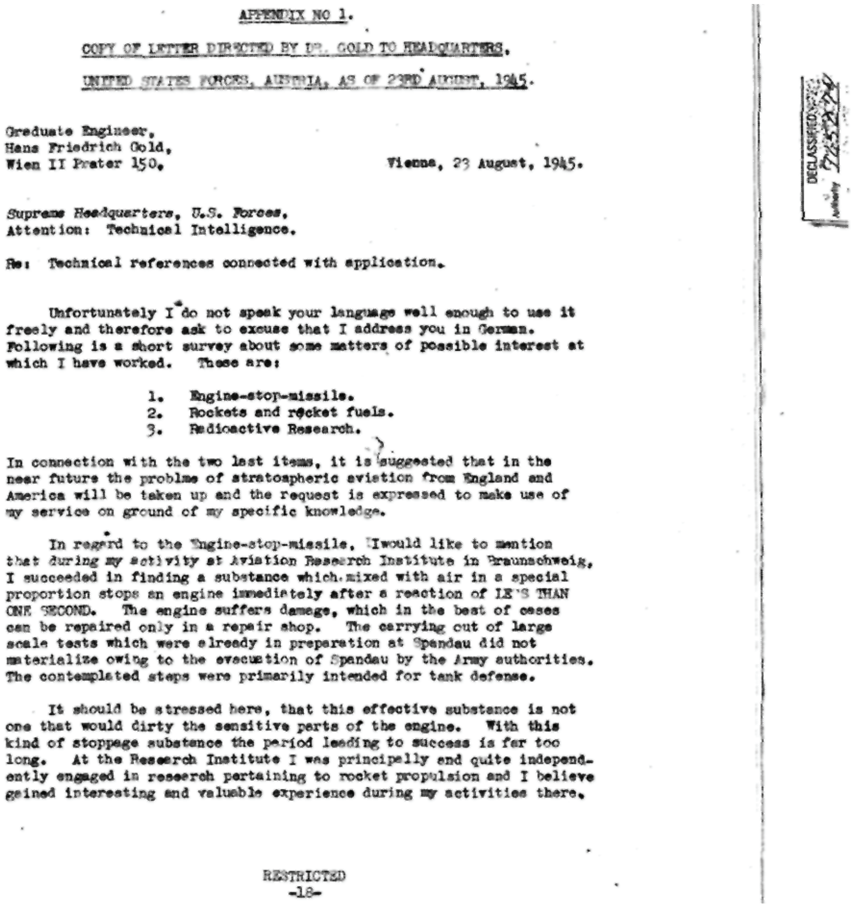
Fourth, the National Archives are under Federal Mandate to comply with all the provisions of the FOIA. Their staffing or their staffing problems are their own concern. Their only obligation as far as FOIA is concerned is to fully comply.

Fifth, the National Archives is not being asked to do "substantial research", they are being asked to pull a file, as any librarian could and should do.

Sixth, nowhere in the FOIA does it specify that requestors must put in an appearance at College Park, Maryland in order to receive a proper response. The location of either the requestor or the requester is irrelevant.

An example is made here to point out the fact that nothing comes easily out of the Federal Government. Everything is kept secret. It is simply their policy. They have no idea why this information is being requested and could not care less. Their policy is secrecy, pure and simple. This applies to everything. The National Archives is simply a de facto reclassification project.

But before turning to Dr. Gold, mention should be made of another government document, which greatly added to our knowledge in this matter. In 1999 a German researcher, Friedrich Georg, found what might be described as a mini-Rosetta Stone concerning secret German research and what the Americans knew about it. This document, "An Evaluation Of German Capabilities In 1945" was written in late 1944 and makes predictions of what to expect, militarily, from Germany in the new year. The relevant entry is shown here under "Gases Appli-



APPENDIX NO 1.

COPY OF LETTER DIRECTED BY DR. GOLD TO HEADQUARTERS,

UNITED STATES FORCES, AUSTRIA, AS OF 23RD AUGUST, 1945.

DECLASSIFIED
Authority 745274

Graduate Engineer,
Hans Friedrich Gold,
Wien II Prater 150,

Vienna, 23 August, 1945.

Supreme Headquarters, U.S. Forces,
Attention: Technical Intelligence.

Re: Technical references connected with application.

Unfortunately I do not speak your language well enough to use it freely and therefore ask to excuse that I address you in German. Following is a short survey about some matters of possible interest at which I have worked. These are:

1. Engine-stop-missile.
2. Rockets and rocket fuels.
3. Radioactive Research.

In connection with the two last items, it is suggested that in the near future the problme of stratospheric aviation from England and America will be taken up and the request is expressed to make use of my service on ground of my specific knowledge.

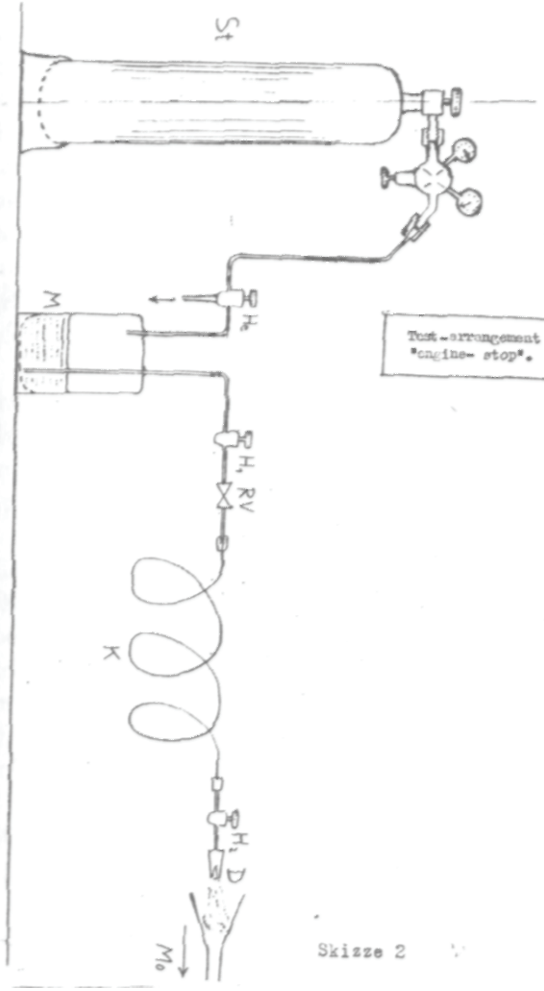
In regard to the Engine-stop-missile, I would like to mention that during my activity at Aviation Research Institute in Braunschweig, I succeeded in finding a substance which mixed with air in a special proportion stops an engine immediately after a reaction of LESS THAN ONE SECOND. The engine suffers damage, which in the best of cases can be repaired only in a repair shop. The carrying out of large scale tests which were already in preparation at Spandau did not materialize owing to the evacuation of Spandau by the Army authorities. The contemplated steps were primarily intended for tank defense.

It should be stressed here, that this effective substance is not one that would dirty the sensitive parts of the engine. With this kind of stoppage substance the period leading to success is far too long. At the Research Institute I was principally and quite independently engaged in research pertaining to rocket propulsion and I believe gained interesting and valuable experience during my activities there.

RESTRICTED
-18-

Dr. Hans Friedrich Gold's post-war letter to U.S. Forces in Austria describing his scientific progress.

Versuchsanordnung zu "Motorstop"



Test-arrangement for "engine- stop".

Skizze 2

DECLASSIFIED
Authority [illegible]

Diagram of the apparatus used by Dr. Gold to produce motor-stopping gas.

cable to Aircraft". As we can read, there were two gases under consideration for attacking Allied aircraft, one which caused pre-ignition of engines and another which caused motor oil the thin out to the point that engine protection disappeared and the engine seized.

From this document we learned that Vesco was not making this all up and that further work in this area was warranted.

The National Archives has always resisted providing any sort of index or catalogue of their holdings. Recently, they have provided a kind of computer index of their holding which they call by an acronym, NAIL. Unfortunately, NAIL will not even list items already produced by the U.S. National Archives under FOIA duress so one has to wonder what the real purpose of such a stealth index is.

Since the year 2000 and under pressure of the FOIA, the National Archives has provided a list, an index, of some titles of the Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee reports. Contained in that list was File Number XXX11-1109, "Interrogation Of Dr. Hans Friedrich Gold"[2]. With this new information an Appeal was filed with the National Archives concerning the previous "no record" Gold request. The National Archives handled this Appeal by ignoring it. Finally, a new request was made and the file was sent. Again, this violates the law.

Dr. Gold did work at the Luftfahrtforschungsanstalt, Hermann Goering, at Volkenrode. He was a chemist and chemical engineer who spent most of his time working on hypergolic fuels. These are fuels developed in pairs, such as "C-Stoff" and "T-Stoff". When both fuels are combined within the combustion chamber, combustion occurs automatically.

Somehow, in July of 1944 Dr. Gold's mind seemed to do a flip-flop because it came to him that it would also be possible to stop and engine using chemical means. Dr. Gold worked on the chemistry to do this as well as developing a test apparatus to measure the efficiency of this idea.

Dr. Gold used methylnitrate in one of his hypergolic rocket fuel mixtures in order to get oxygen into the combustion chamber. It occurred to him that this same chemical might be used to make an engine stop. A mixture of methylnitrate and methanol in a mixture of 75% to 25% respectively was used. With this mixture constitution only 2%, by weight, of the air drawn in by the target engine, a strong knocking occurred. With a 5% concentration, a metallic "hard hitting" and "heavy rattling" occurred. At 8%, within a fraction of a second a "strong bang" occurred, the engine stopped, and suffered a torsion of its crankshaft of about 30 degrees. In other words, it broke the engine apart.

Pictured is Dr. Gold's diagram of the testing device by which he came to these figures. The nitrogen from Bomb "St" presses, according to size, with 29 atmospheres upon the methylnitrate-methenol mixture (75/25) in the small bomb "M", so that the liquid rushes through nozzle "D" with open taps "H1" and "H2", across the check valve "RV" and the copper capillaries "K". A "Bosch" nozzle was used, with a spray angle of about 35 degrees. For the testing engine "M", a rather sturdy 500 cm "FN" motorcycle engine was used, its suction pipe "A" being provided with a funnel. The engine that was generally used for fuel tests was mounted on a test stand and connected with an oscillograph. "H" is a tap for reducing pressure.

Tests were to be carried out in a suburb of Berlin, Spandau, with the projected first use to be against tanks. Full scale testing was never done, according to Dr. Gold, because of the evacuation of that facility in the face of the Soviet advance. It is unclear if other testing or application of this weaponry was ever carried out.

Interestingly enough, there is a footnote to the Dr. Hans Friedrich Gold story. It is an Appendix, Appendix No. 2, to the CIOS report referenced above. This constitutes a statement by Dr. Gold on his personal views on future research. These views might seem fantastic coming from anybody other than such a well respected scientist. It is probably best to postpone Dr. Gold's discussion until a better foundation for his ideas have been built, but we will return to Dr. Gold later in the discussion.

SOURCES

1. Vesco, Renato, 1976, Intercept UFO, pages 137-138, Pinnacle Books, New York.

2. Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report number XXX11-109, 1946, "Interrogation Of Dr. Hans Friedrich Gold, obtained from the National Archives, College Park, MD.

25 Means To Stop Engines
Magnetic Wave — Motorstoppmittel

There have always been rumors of a secret German weapon which could cause ignition based engines, those with spark plugs, to stop running. These rumors started before World War Two and persisted well into the 1990s.

During the late 1980s or early 1990s, someone called me on the telephone that claimed to be an employee of a large defense firm. He told me that he was part of a group investigating the possibility that the Germans had built a beam weapon, but not directional as a laser beam, but an omni-directional weapon in which waves radiate out from a central point in all directions as does a pebble make waves when it is thrown into a pond. When in the range of this weapon, all ignition-based engines would stop running. He gave me some reports of this device from wartime Germany. I had never heard of such a thing before this time and, in consideration of the circumstances of the telephone call, took the whole thing with a grain of salt. But it did perk my interest and from this moment on, I was on the lookout for such descriptions.

Such descriptions of German devices that stopped engines did appear. Descriptions of this device seemed to abound with the genre of German writers who believed in and wrote of a wartime German technical history which had simply been kept secret after the war. Among the devices they described was something called "Motorstoppmittel", which translated literally is: "means to stop (a) motor".

What they seemed to be describing was different from the method described by Renato Vesco in his book about the history of flying saucers. Vesco described a device which he called "Feuerball", "fireball". This flying device used special chemicals in its fuel resulting in an over-ionized atmosphere near the target aircraft. This over-ionization caused the aircraft's engine to ground itself directly through the atmosphere, short-circuiting out the engine, thus causing it to fail. The difference is that nothing was ever mentioned about fuel or chemicals in reference to Motorstoppmittel.

One of the first accounts of a test involving this device comes from Germany's Axis ally, Italy, in 1936. It involves no less than the electric genius Dr. Guglielmo Marconi, Italian leader Benito Mussolini and Mussolini's wife.

It seems that in June of 1936 Mrs. Mussolini informed her husband of her intention to travel on the Rome-Ostia highway in the afternoon. Mussolini told his wife she would experience a something special if she made the trip between 3:00 and 3:30 P.M. As a matter of fact he said that she would be struck with wonder at seeing something. Mrs. Mussolini was at the prescribed place and time along with dozens of other cars both in front of her and behind her. What happened which was of such wonder was that their cars stopped running. Her Chauffeur as well as other stranded motorists attempted to restart their vehicles but to no avail. At exactly 3:35 P.M. all the cars mysteriously restarted and proceeded normally.

That evening Mussolini gave his wife the story behind her trouble. Marconi had invented something that halted engines. Pope Pius XI got wind of the experiment and called it the work of the devil. Marconi died just over a year later, July 20, 1937.[1]

Of course, numerous Freedom Of Information Act requests were made of U.S. government agencies for information concerning Motorstoppmittel. It was described in as much detail as possible, as a German secret weapon capable of stopping ignition based engines. From every source a "No Record" response was generated.

When Freidrich Georg discovered the mini-Rosetta Stone, as described in the previous section, all this denial changed. Now we knew what the Germans called Motorstoppmittel was called "Magnetic Wave" by the US government. Besides the original document, An Evaluation Of German Capabilities In 1945, which described Motorstoppmittel, many other documents became available.

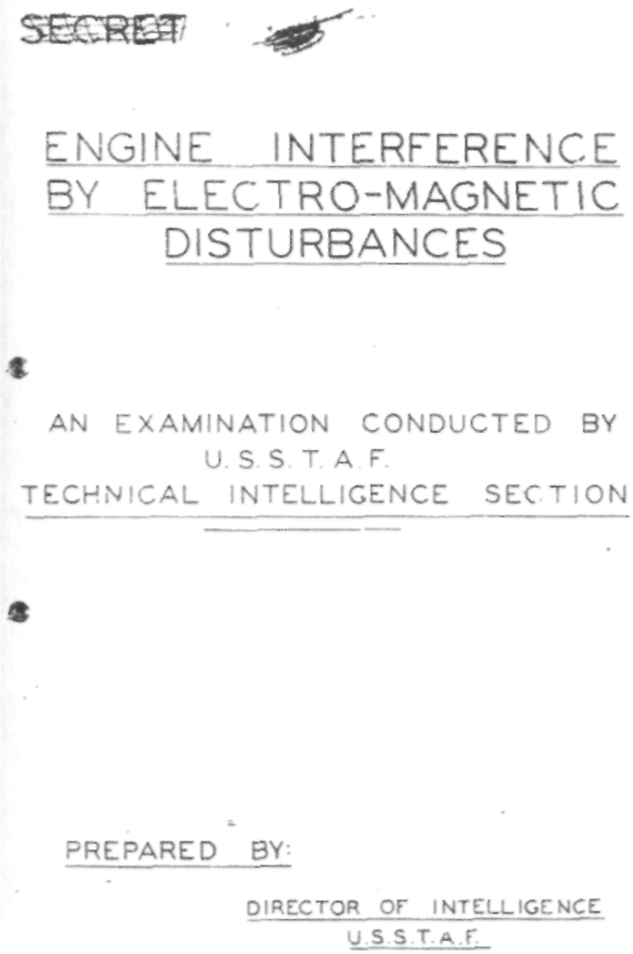
F.O.I.A. REPORTS ON MAGNETIC WAVE

The American intelligence reports are based on many sources. There are reports from German sources, there are reports from captured German scientists, from prisoners of war, and from the American military, all speaking of the same thing. They all describe an alleged German weapon able to make motor vehicles, including airplanes, stop running. Some of these reports are reproduced here.

The Americans and British went to some trouble to get to the bottom of all this. The American military even sent aircraft into areas suspected of being defended by this weapon in order to evaluate it. This is a report dated January 24, 1945, which involves two P-38 aircraft sent to fly over a suspect area near Frankfurt. Nigel Pennick tells us why this area was chosen for the American test[2]:

"In connection with this high-enery research, various mysterious 'transmitters' were erected at several 'key points' in the Reich. In 1938 the Brocken, a celebrated peak in the Harz Mountains, was the site of feverish construction work. Holy mountain of the goddess Freyja, the Brocken is best known for the curious optical phenomenon known as the 'Brocken Spectre', which occurs when the shadow of a person on the summit is cast by the rays of the sun onto a cloud below. Under some conditions, this 'spectre' has a saintly halo around its head.

This 'transmitter' was a strange contraption, a tower surrounded by an array of posts with pear-shapted knobs on top. At the same time a similar system was erected on the peak of the Feldberg near Frankfurt. When it began operation, there were soon reports of strange phenomena in the vicinity of the Brocken tower. Cars traveling along the mountain roads would suddenly have engine failure. A Luftwaffe sentry would soon spot the stranded car, and tell the puzzled motorist that it was no use trying to get the car started at present. After a while, the sentry would tell the driver that the engine would work again now, and the care would then start up and drive away."



~~SECRET~~

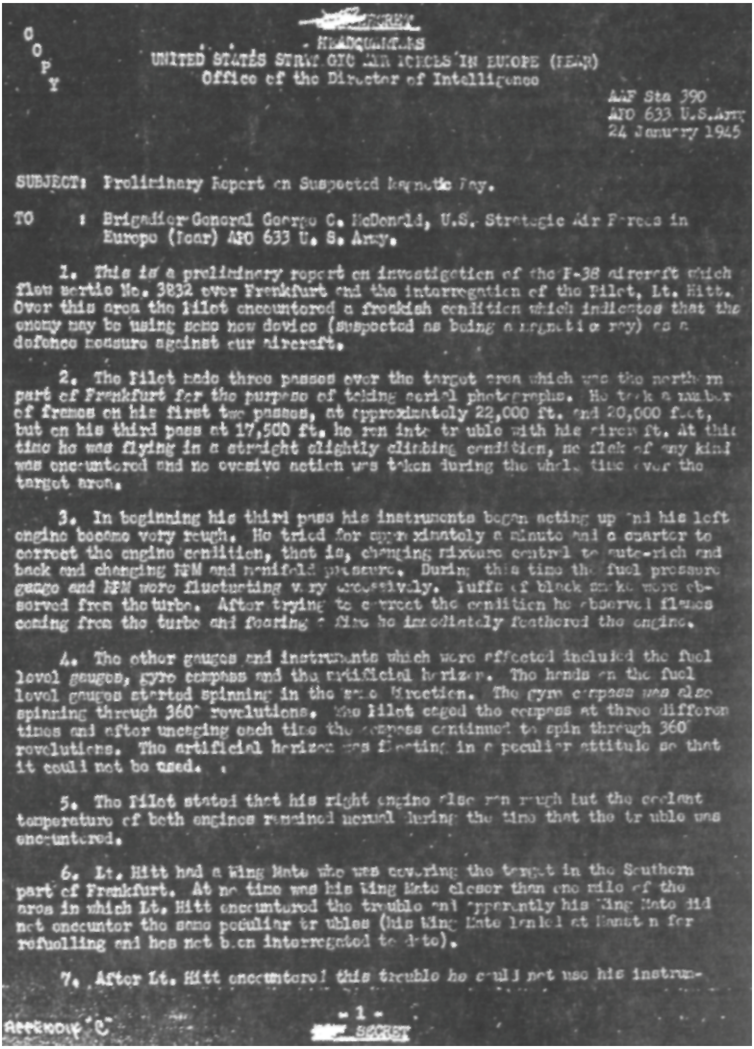
ENGINE INTERFERENCE BY ELECTRO-MAGNETIC DISTURBANCES

AN EXAMINATION CONDUCTED BY
U.S.S.T.A.F.
TECHNICAL INTELLIGENCE SECTION

PREPARED BY:

DIRECTOR OF INTELLIGENCE
U.S.S.T.A.F.

Summary reports by American Intelligence on the German magnetic wave weapon.



SECRET

C
O
P
Y

HEADQUARTERS
UNITED STATES STRATEGIC AIR FORCES IN EUROPE (REAR)
Office of the Director of Intelligence

AAF Sta 390
APO 633 U.S.Army
24 January 1945

SUBJECT: Preliminary Report on Suspected Magnetic Ray.

TO : Brigadier General George C. McDonald, U.S. Strategic Air Forces in Europe (Rear) APO 633 U. S. Army.

1. This is a preliminary report on investigation of the F-38 aircraft which flew sortie No. 3832 over Frankfurt and the interrogation of the Pilot, Lt. Hitt. Over this area the Pilot encountered a freakish condition which indicates that the enemy may be using some new device (suspected as being a magnetic ray) as a defence measure against our aircraft.

2. The Pilot made three passes over the target area which was the northern part of Frankfurt for the purpose of taking aerial photographs. He took a number of frames on his first two passes, at approximately 22,000 ft. and 20,000 feet, but on his third pass at 17,500 ft. he ran into trouble with his aircraft. At this time he was flying in a straight slightly climbing condition, no flak of any kind was encountered and no evasive action was taken during the whole time over the target area.

3. In beginning his third pass his instruments began acting up and his left engine became very rough. He tried for approximately a minute and a quarter to correct the engine condition, that is, changing mixture control to auto-rich and back and changing RPM and manifold pressure. During this time the fuel pressure gauge and RPM were fluctuating very excessively. Puffs of black smoke were observed from the turbo. After trying to correct the condition he observed flames coming from the turbo and fearing a fire he immediately feathered the engine.

4. The other gauges and instruments which were effected included the fuel level gauges, gyro compass and the artificial horizon. The hands on the fuel level gauges started spinning in the same direction. The gyro compass was also spinning through 360° revolutions. The Pilot caged the compass at three different times and after uncaging each time the compass continued to spin through 360° revolutions. The artificial horizon was floating in a peculiar attitude so that it could not be used.

5. The Pilot stated that his right engine also ran rough but the coolant temperature of both engines remained normal during the time that the trouble was encountered.

6. Lt. Hitt had a Wing Mate who was covering the target in the Southern part of Frankfurt. At no time was his Wing Mate closer than one mile of the area in which Lt. Hitt encountered the trouble and apparently his Wing Mate did not encounter the same peculiar troubles (his Wing Mate landed at Manston for refuelling and has not been interrogated to date).

7. After Lt. Hitt encountered this trouble he could not use his instrum-

- 1 -

APPENDIX "C"

SECRET

An actual field investigation, using real pilots and aircraft, into a German magnetic wave installation.

So the Americans chose this area near Frankfurt to see if they could determine the source and nature to the interference with their aircraft. At 17,000 feet in altitude and just North of Frankfurt, near the second tower mentioned above on the Feldberg, the pilot mentioned in the report, Lt. Hitt, encountered trouble. One of his engines began to "run rough". His fuel pressure indicator, rpm gauge, gyro gauge, artificial horizon gauge, all started to malfunction. The hands on his fuel level gauge started spinning in the same direction. The gyro compass started spinning through 360 degree revolutions. In the meantime, the pilot's other engine began to run rough.

While Lt. Hitt was experiencing such difficulty, the other P-38 pilot was flying over a Southern portion of Frankfurt. He encountered no trouble but was always at least a mile away from Lt. Hitt. Lt. Hitt began heading for his base. After eight to ten minutes of trouble, Lt. Hitt's aircraft began running normally. Even his instruments returned to normal.

Upon landing an investigation was conducted and a mechanical and electrical inspection of Lt. Hitt's P-38 ensued. The title of the final report reflects the verdict of the inquiry: "Preliminary Report on Suspected Magnetic Ray". This report was given "Secret" status and was produced by Headquarters, United States Strategic Air Forces Europe (Rear), Office of the Director of Intelligence, dated January 24, 1945.

Even prior to this, a report had been generated by the Director of Intelligence, U.S.S.t.A.F, dated 12/6/44 and titled: "Engine Interference By Electro-Magnetic Disturbances". This was sub-titled on the second page: Project 1217, "Investigation Into German Possible Use Of Rays To Neutralize Allied Aircraft Motors".

Another interesting document is worth mentioning. It is marked secret, and from the American British Laboratory of Radio Research, dated January 30, 1945. In it calculations by J.M. Hollywood are discussed. Perhaps his ideas will give us a clue as to the real nature of Motorstoppmittel. It says in part:

"Calculations by J. M. Hollywood of ABL-15 indicated that the most economical means of disturbing an aircraft's ignition system would probably employ electro-magnetic radio frequency transmissions recurrent at a rate near the frequency of the engine's ignition cycle."[3]

The report goes on to conclude that there is no real evidence for the German deployment of such an ignition suppression device but admits that intelligence information suggests that such a device exists and works on a short range basis. It goes on to say that an apparatus necessary to generate the required electromagnetic energy using ground-based coils would be enormous in size and therefore impractical.

Obviously, the actual German device was a little more intelligent, adaptable, flexible and target specific than a simple, huge, ground-based, gigantic coil pumping out a single, steady pulse as envisioned by Hollywood.

REPORTS FROM THE GERMAN SIDE

Thanks to the research in the German language publication "Waffen-Revue", January 1983, we are able to glimpse some of the real German work in this field. They published three documents. The first was from a commercial firm, ELEMAG. The second, a message sent by a sitting member or the Reichs Research Council, Dr. Werner Osenburg to Dr. Brandt of the SS. The third was from Dr. A. Meissner, also with a private research company. Each document is followed with my rough English translation.

English Translation of ELEMAG Document

* * * * * *

ELEMAG ELECTROMAGNETIC DEVICE CONSTRUCTION COMPANY
HILDESHEIM JANUARY 28, 1944

DISRUPTION OF THE FUNCTION OF DEVICES AS A MEANS OF WARFARE

It is to be striven for to put out or bring about or disconnect that material of warfare used by the enemy via the ability to disrupt the function of electronic apparatus .

UNDER THESE WEAPONS OF WAR ARE:

Aircraft and motorized vehicles with an internal combustion engine with spark plug ignition as used in a propulsion method, whole intelligence services or communications such as artillery adjustments.

To the attainment of this goal a long distance influence of the function of electronic devices will be put forward of the following basis.

The construction of electric devices consists of two fundamental elements together, voltage regulation and insulation. Disruption of electronic apparatus and devices is primarily attributed to suspension in voltage regulation or spanning of insulation.

A spanning of insulation, for example, a breakthrough of the blockage of the voltage path or circuit carried to the formation of eddy currents or short circuits and caused as a consequence of the latter interruption of voltage regulation, be it as a result of a melt-through of a fuse and lead or through the disfunction of the consumer of the electric energy itself.

Through a spanning of the insulation there is the possibility to cause the electric device to malfunction.

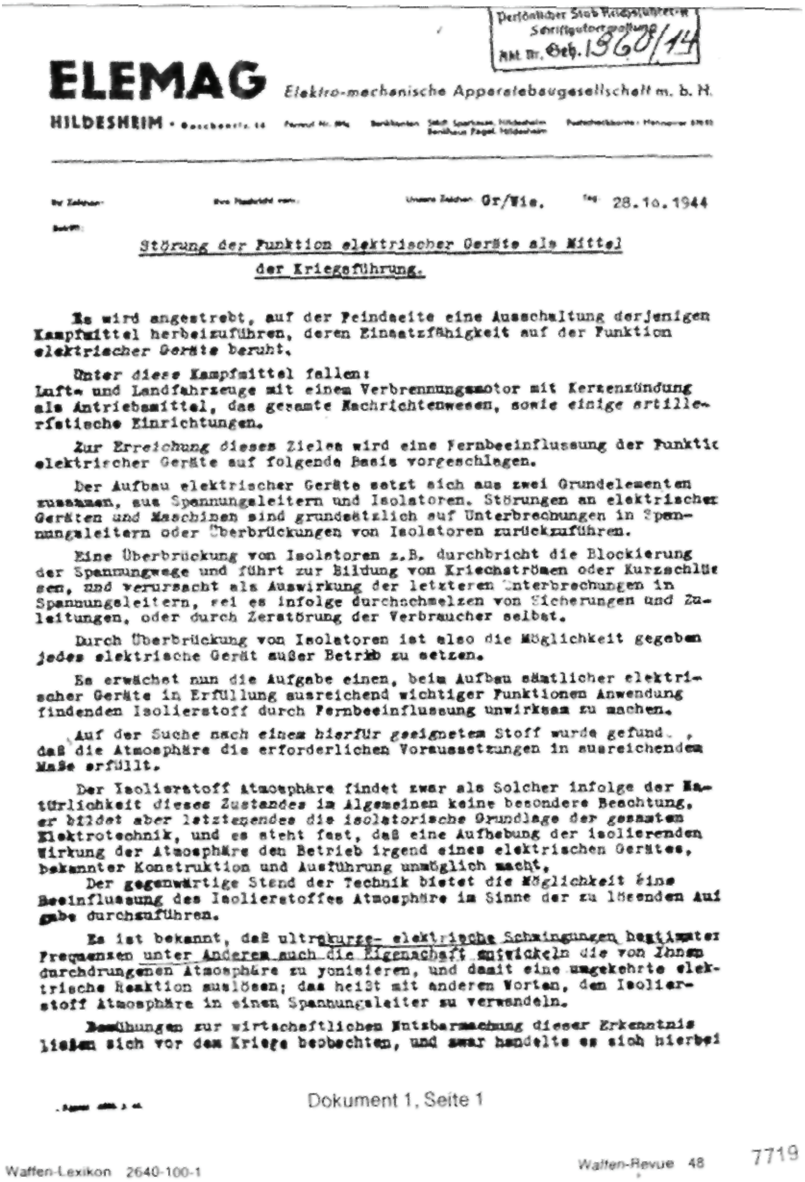
This brings up the problem of building of all electronic devices in fulfillment of finding insulation to make long distance influence ineffectual.

In the search for this suitable material it was found that the atmosphere contained the necessary provisions in sufficient measure.

Insulation atmosphere was found to be such a material, in its natural condition in general with no other special consideration. It produced insulation principle of electrics and without it any electronic device of known construction would be impossible. The present position of applied science offers the possibility of an influence of insulation atmosphere in the sense of accomplishing the solution of this problem.

It is known that ultra-short electronic oscillations or waves of determined frequency, developed under specific proprietary work, and developed to force the atmosphere to ionize can cause an opposite electrical reaction to be released. That is, in other words, to cause the insulation atmosphere to alter in voltage regulation.

Trouble with the economic utilization of this knowledge was observed before the war, and, to be sure, concerns itself with the problem of the wireless communication of electric energy.



Persönlicher Stab Reichsführer-SS
Schriftgutverwaltung
Akt. Nr. Geh. 1360/14

ELEMAG Elektro-mechanische Apparatebaugesellschaft m. b. H.
HILDESHEIM

Unsere Zeichen: Gr/Wie. Tag: 28.10.1944

Störung der Funktion elektrischer Geräte als Mittel der Kriegsführung.

Es wird angestrebt, auf der Feindseite eine Ausschaltung derjenigen Kampfmittel herbeizuführen, deren Einsatzfähigkeit auf der Funktion elektrischer Geräte beruht.

Unter diese Kampfmittel fallen:
Luft- und Landfahrzeuge mit einem Verbrennungsmotor mit Kerzenzündung als Antriebsmittel, das gesamte Nachrichtenwesen, sowie einige artilleristische Einrichtungen.

Zur Erreichung dieses Zieles wird eine Fernbeeinflussung der Funktic elektrischer Geräte auf folgende Basis vorgeschlagen.

Der Aufbau elektrischer Geräte setzt sich aus zwei Grundelementen zusammen, aus Spannungsleitern und Isolatoren. Störungen an elektrischen Geräten und Maschinen sind grundsätzlich auf Unterbrechungen in Spannungsleitern oder Überbrückungen von Isolatoren zurückzuführen.

Eine Überbrückung von Isolatoren z.B. durchbricht die Blockierung der Spannungswege und führt zur Bildung von Kriechströmen oder Kurzschlüssen, und verursacht als Auswirkung der letzteren Unterbrechungen in Spannungsleitern, sei es infolge durchschmelzen von Sicherungen und Zuleitungen, oder durch Zerstörung der Verbraucher selbst.

Durch Überbrückung von Isolatoren ist also die Möglichkeit gegeben jedes elektrische Gerät außer Betrieb zu setzen.

Es erwächst nun die Aufgabe einen, beim Aufbau sämtlicher elektrischer Geräte in Erfüllung ausreichend wichtiger Funktionen Anwendung findenden Isolierstoff durch Fernbeeinflussung unwirksam zu machen.

Auf der Suche nach einem hierfür geeignetem Stoff wurde gefunden, daß die Atmosphäre die erforderlichen Voraussetzungen in ausreichendem Maße erfüllt.

Der Isolierstoff Atmosphäre findet zwar als Solcher infolge der Natürlichkeit dieses Zustandes im Algemeinen keine besondere Beachtung, er bildet aber letztenendes die isolatorische Grundlage der gesamten Elektrotechnik, und es steht fest, daß eine Aufhebung der isolierenden Wirkung der Atmosphäre den Betrieb irgend eines elektrischen Gerätes, bekannter Konstruktion und Ausführung unmöglich macht.

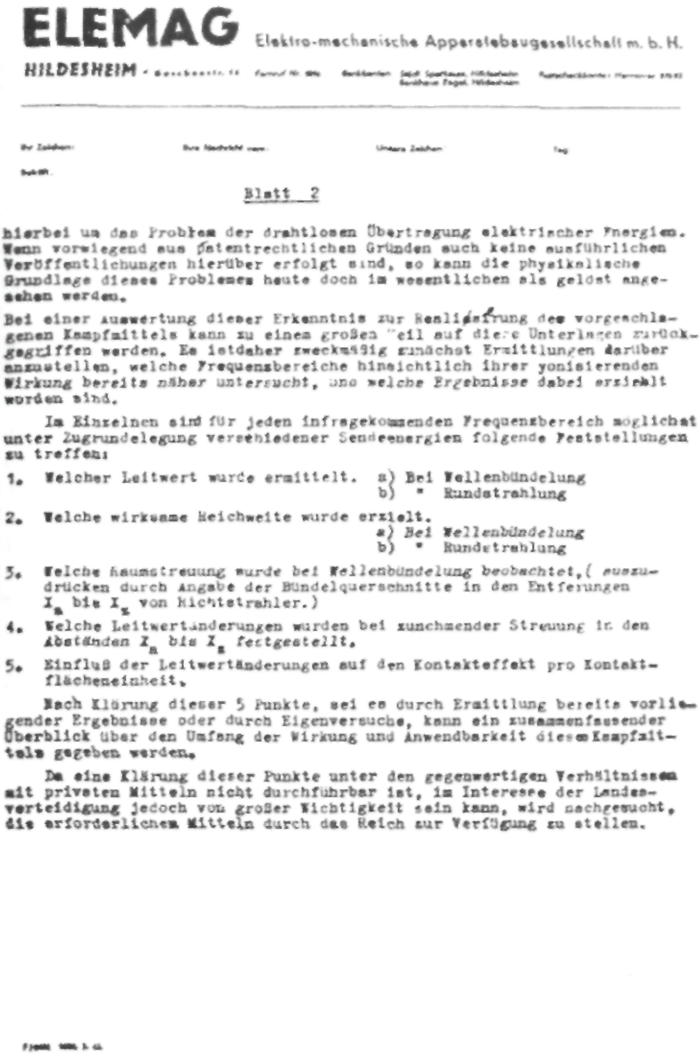
Der gegenwärtige Stand der Technik bietet die Möglichkeit eine Beeinflussung des Isolierstoffes Atmosphäre im Sinne der zu lösenden Aufgabe durchzuführen.

Es ist bekannt, daß ultrakurze- elektrische Schwingungen bestimmter Frequenzen unter Anderem auch die Eigenschaft entwickeln die von Ihnen durchdrungenen Atmosphäre zu yonisieren, und damit eine umgekehrte elektrische Reaktion auslösen; das heißt mit anderen Worten, den Isolierstoff Atmosphäre in einen Spannungsleiter zu verwandeln.

Bemühungen zur wirtschaftlichen Nutzbarmachung dieser Erkenntnis ließen sich vor dem Kriege beobachten, und zwar handelte es sich hierbei

Dokument 1, Seite 1

Three reports concerning stopping engines at a distance which were written during the war. English translations are in the main text.



ELEMAG Elektro-mechanische Apparatebaugesellschaft m. b. H.
HILDESHEIM · [illegible] Fernruf Nr. [illegible] Bankkonten: Städt. Sparkasse, Hildesheim Bankhaus Fagel, Hildesheim Postscheckkonto: Hannover [illegible]

Ihr Zeichen: Ihre Nachricht vom: Unsere Zeichen: Tag
Betreff:

Blatt 2

hierbei um das Problem der drahtlosen Übertragung elektrischer Energien. Wenn vorwiegend aus patentrechtlichen Gründen auch keine ausführlichen Veröffentlichungen hierüber erfolgt sind, so kann die physikalische Grundlage dieses Problemes heute doch im wesentlichen als gelöst angesehen werden.

Bei einer Auswertung dieser Erkenntnis zur Realisierung des vorgeschlagenen Kampfmittels kann zu einem großen Teil auf diese Unterlagen zurückgegriffen werden. Es istdaher zweckmäßig zunächst Ermittlungen darüber anzustellen, welche Frequenzbereiche hinsichtlich ihrer yonisierenden Wirkung bereits näher untersucht, und welche Ergebnisse dabei erzielt worden sind.

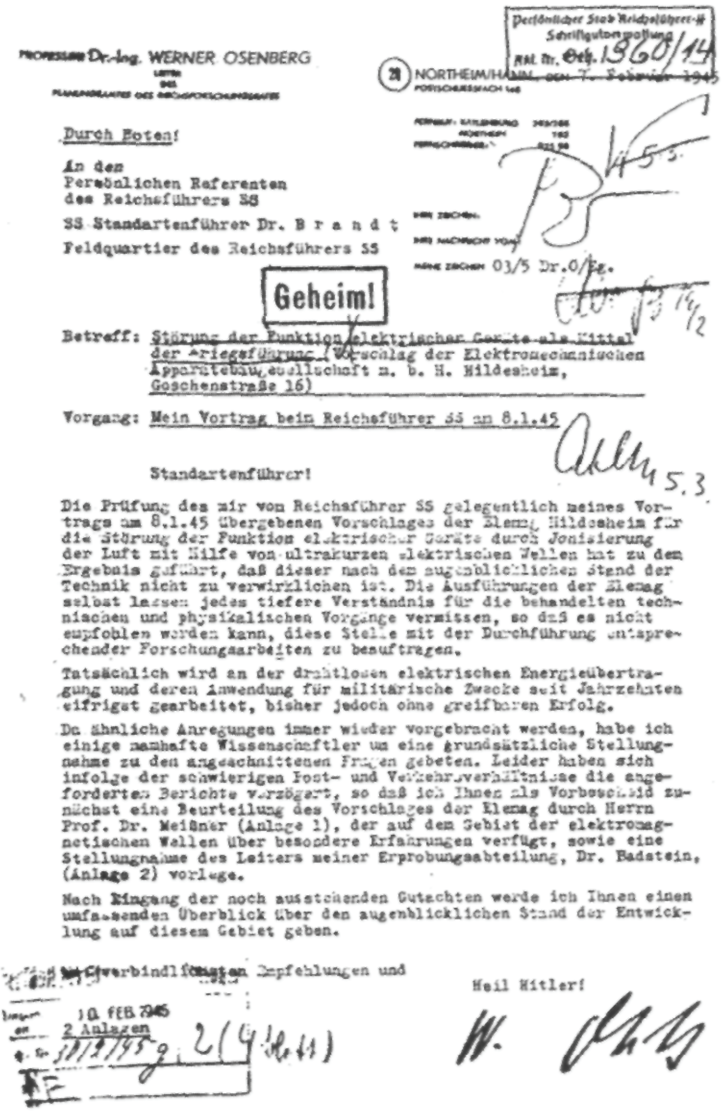
Im Einzelnen sind für jeden infragekommenden Frequenzbereich möglichst unter Zugrundelegung verschiedener Sendeenergien folgende Feststellungen zu treffen:

1. Welcher Leitwert wurde ermittelt. a) Bei Wellenbündelung
   b) " Rundstrahlung
2. Welche wirksame Reichweite wurde erzielt.
   a) Bei Wellenbündelung
   b) " Rundstrahlung
3. Welche Raumstreuung wurde bei Wellenbündelung beobachtet,(auszudrücken durch Angabe der Bündelquerschnitte in den Entfernungen X_a bis X_x von Richtstrahler.)
4. Welche Leitwertänderungen wurden bei zunehmender Streuung in den Abständen X_a bis X_x festgestellt.
5. Einfluß der Leitwertänderungen auf den Kontakteffekt pro Kontaktflächeneinheit.

Nach Klärung dieser 5 Punkte, sei es durch Ermittlung bereits vorliegender Ergebnisse oder durch Eigenversuche, kann ein zusammenfassender Überblick über den Umfang der Wirkung und Anwendbarkeit dieses Kampfmittels gegeben werden.

Da eine Klärung dieser Punkte unter den gegenwertigen Verhältnissen mit privaten Mitteln nicht durchführbar ist, im Interesse der Landesverteidigung jedoch von großer Wichtigkeit sein kann, wird nachgesucht, die erforderlichen Mitteln durch das Reich zur Verfügung zu stellen.

Dokument 1, Seite 2



Persönlicher Stab Reichsführer-SS
Schriftgutverwaltung
Akt. Nr. Geh. 1960/14

PROFESSOR Dr.-Ing. WERNER OSENBERG
LEITER
DES
PLANUNGSAMTES DES REICHSFORSCHUNGSRATES

NORTHEIM/HANN., den 7. Februar 1945
POSTSCHLIESSFACH 146

IHR ZEICHEN:
IHRE NACHRICHT VOM:
MEINE ZEICHEN 03/5 Dr.O/Eg.

Durch Boten!

An den
Persönlichen Referenten
des Reichsführers SS
SS-Standartenführer Dr. Brandt
Feldquartier des Reichsführers SS

Geheim!

Betreff: Störung der Funktion elektrischer Geräte als Mittel der Kriegsführung (Vorschlag der Elektrotechnischen Apparatebaugesellschaft m. b. H. Hildesheim, Goschenstraße 16)

Vorgang: Mein Vortrag beim Reichsführer SS am 8.1.45

Standartenführer!

Die Prüfung des mir vom Reichsführer SS gelegentlich meines Vortrags am 8.1.45 übergebenen Vorschlages der Elemag Hildesheim für die Störung der Funktion elektrischer Geräte durch Jonisierung der Luft mit Hilfe von ultrakurzen elektrischen Wellen hat zu dem Ergebnis geführt, daß dieser nach dem augenblicklichen Stand der Technik nicht zu verwirklichen ist. Die Ausführungen der Elemag selbst lassen jedes tiefere Verständnis für die behandelten technischen und physikalischen Vorgänge vermissen, so daß es nicht empfohlen werden kann, diese Stelle mit der Durchführung entsprechender Forschungsarbeiten zu beauftragen.

Tatsächlich wird an der drahtlosen elektrischen Energieübertragung und deren Anwendung für militärische Zwecke seit Jahrzehnten eifrigst gearbeitet, bisher jedoch ohne greifbaren Erfolg.

Da ähnliche Anregungen immer wieder vorgebracht werden, habe ich einige namhafte Wissenschaftler um eine grundsätzliche Stellungnahme zu den angeschnittenen Fragen gebeten. Leider haben sich infolge der schwierigen Post- und Verkehrsverhältnisse die angeforderten Berichte verzögert, so daß ich Ihnen als Vorbescheid zunächst eine Beurteilung des Vorschlages der Elemag durch Herrn Prof. Dr. Meißner (Anlage 1), der auf dem Gebiet der elektromagnetischen Wellen über besondere Erfahrungen verfügt, sowie eine Stellungnahme des Leiters meiner Erprobungsabteilung, Dr. Badstein, (Anlage 2) vorlege.

Nach Eingang der noch ausstehenden Gutachten werde ich Ihnen einen umfassenden Überblick über den augenblicklichen Stand der Entwicklung auf diesem Gebiet geben.

Mit verbindlichsten Empfehlungen und

Heil Hitler!

W.

Eingang 10. FEB. 1945
2 Anlagen
Tgb. Nr. 1012/45 g.

5.3

14/2

Dokument 9

Prof.Dr.A.Meißner
AEG FORSCHUNGS-INSTITUT
Fernsprecher: [illegible]

Persönlicher Stab Reichsführer-SS
Schriftgutverwaltung
Akt. Nr. Geh. 1960/14

Berlin-Reinickendorf-Ost 1, den 1.2.1945
Holländerstraße 31-34

Ergänzung zum Gutachten vom 27.1.1945 zum Erfindungsvorschlag der "Elemag", Elektro-mechanische Apparatebaugesellschaft m.b.H., Hildesheim, Goschenstr.16

Die hier gemachten Vorschläge sind insbesondere im ersten Teil nicht für den Fachmann bestimmt, sondern nur für den Laien. Es ist übrigens nicht zum erstenmal, daß in dieser Art eine Erfindung gemacht wurde, durch Fernübertragung elektrische Apparate unwirksam zu machen. Die Grundlage sollte auch damals sein, daß "die Atmosphäre in außerordentlichem Maße die erforderlichen Voraussetzungen besitzt, daß sie durch Fernbeeinflussung als Isolierstoff ausgeschaltet werden kann." Im vorigen Krieg (~1916) mußten auf höheren Befehl trotz heftigen Einspruchs der Fachkreise mehrere Stellen an der Aufgabe arbeiten, durch Röntgen- oder irgendwelche anderan Strahlen ("Todesstrahlen") die Zündung in Flugzeugen unwirksam zu machen.

Outweighed by patent-right concerns, no ample publications concerning this resulted, so the physical reasons of this problem, even today, in reality can be considered lost. With an evaluation of this knowledge, a realistic proposition of a means of warfare can be reconstructed form this data. Hence, appropriate first research concerning this has not put forth as to which frequency range results in ionizing action. This needs to be more precisely investigated.

In particular for every possible frequency range makes possible various broadcast energies so that the following statements are to be met with:

1. Which values would be ascertained.
   A. By wave packets.
   B. By sweeping radiation.
2. What effective range would be realized.
   A. By wave packets.
   B. By sweeping radiation.
3. What spaces distributions would be observed with
wave packets (expressed through statements
of packet cross-section in the distance Xa to Xz.
4. What change of values would be established with increasing distribution in the distance from Xa to Xz.
5. What would be the influence of the change of values in the effect of constant per unit area.

Only after clarification of these five points, be it through inquiry into previously submitted results or through individual research, can an inclusive summary concerning the parameters of the workings and applicability of this means of warfare be given.

There is a clarification of these points under the present situation with private means is not feasible. In the interests of the nation's defense, notwithstanding potential greater importance, it will be researched in order to set for the necessary means of enactment throughout the Reich.

* * * * * *

English Translation of the Osenberg Document

Professor Dr. (Engineering) Werner Osenberg

Planning Department of the Reich's Research Council

By Messenger
To the personal Advise of the SS Reichsfuehrers

SS Standartenfuehrer Dr. Brandt
Field Headquarters of the SS Reichsfuehers

Regarding: Disruption of the function of electronic devices as a means of warfare. Proposal of the Electro-Mechanical Device Conductor Company Ltd., Hidesheim, Goschenstrasse 16

Procedure: My report to Reichsfuehrer SS on January 8, 1945

Standartenfuehrer:

The investigation of the proposal of the Elemag Heildesheim Company, that of the disruption of the function of electronic devices through ionization of the atmosphere through the use of ultra-short electromagnetic wave lengths has been brought to a conclusion. I reported to the Reichsfuehrer of the SS concerning this on January 8, 1945. The results are that this can not be realized in technical terms, instantly. The realization of the Elemag itself leaves many deep areas of understanding, concerning procedures of applied technology and physics/ missing, so that it can not be comprehended how these positions correspond with the accomplishment of research work.

Actually, it will take decades to turn the wireless energy transmission to military goals even with zealous work. At this point, it is without tangible success.

There, similar stimulation has frequently been brought forth. I have a notable scientist whom I requested to fundamental opinion in dissection of this question. Unfortunately, as a result of the difficulties of mail and circumstances of communications, the preliminary, an evaluation of the proposal of the Elemag company can be arranged by Professor Dr. Meissner (appendix 1) who works in the area of electromagnetic waves on an especially practical level as well as an option of the leader of my testing division, Dr. Badstein (appendix 2).

After the input of these outstanding assessors, I will give you a comprehensive overview of the current position of development in this area.

Courteous regards and Heil Hitler, Dr Werner Osenberg

* * * * * * *

English Translation of the Meissner Document

Professor Dr. A. Meissner
General Electric Company, Research Institute

Commentary of assessment of January 27, 1945 to the research proposal of "Elemag" Elektro-mechaniche Apparetebaugesellschaft m.b.n.(Electro-mechanical Device Construction Co. Ltd.) Hildescheim, Goschenstrasse 16

The proposal made, especially in the first part is not for the technical person decidedly important. On the contrary, it is meant for the lay person. It is not, moreover, the first time this sort of discovery has been made, through long distance transmission of electromagnetic energy a device being made dysfunctional. The underlying principle was also formerly that the atmosphere, in a strong measure, possessed the necessary prerequisite that in can be influenced remotely through the insulation medium. In the previous war, 1916, an order came from high up, in spite of severe protests, and technical circles worked on various positions concerning this question, which was through Roentgen or some other ray ("death rays") to make the ignition in aircraft unworkable.

* * * * * * *

It should be noted that we are going to run into Dr. Meissner again in his position with the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute in which he worked on a project in conjunction with the I.G. Farben company, Ludwigshafen on laser weaponry.

POSSIBLE RELATED PATENT

The first words of a report by the American British Laboratory of Radio Research Laboratory, January 30, 1945, stamped "Secret" read:

"Calculations by J.M. Hollywood of ABL-15 indicated

Nov. 12, 1957 L. R. CRUMP 2,813,242
POWERING ELECTRICAL DEVICES WITH ENERGY
ABSTRACTED FROM THE ATMOSPHERE
Filed March 12, 1954

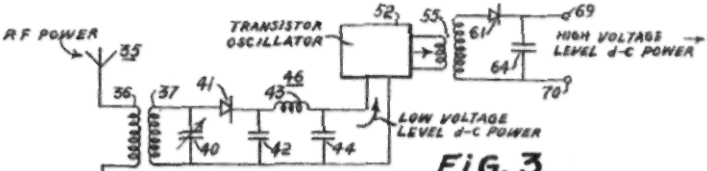

RF POWER
35
56
37
41
43
46
40
42
44
TRANSISTOR OSCILLATOR
52
55
61
64
69
70
HIGH VOLTAGE LEVEL d-c POWER
LOW VOLTAGE LEVEL d-c POWER

FiG. 3

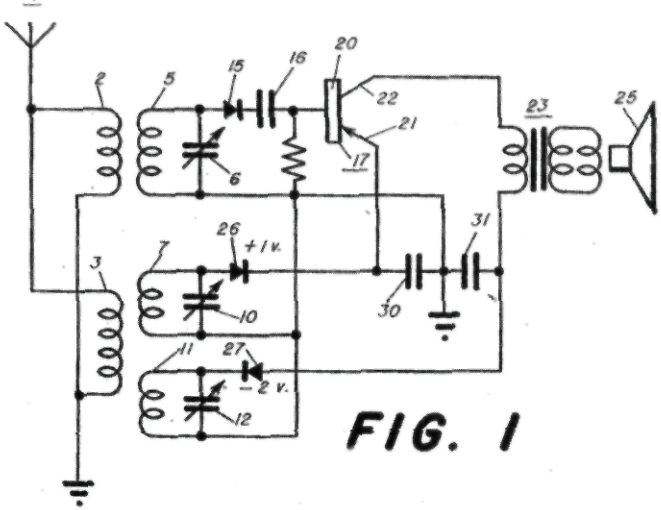

1
2
5
15
16
20
22
21
17
6
23
25
3
7
26
+1 v.
10
30
31
11
27
-2 v.
12

FIG. 1

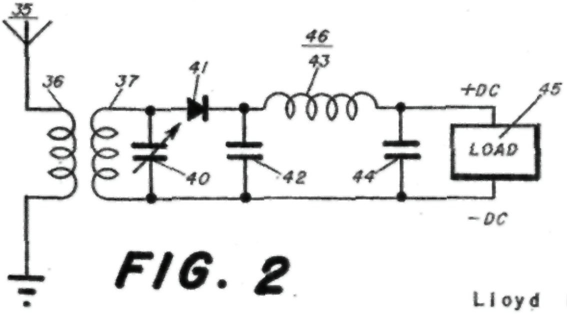

35
36
37
41
46
43
40
42
44
+DC
45
LOAD
-DC

FIG. 2

INVENTOR
Lloyd R. Crump

BY W.E.Thibodeau + A.W. Dew
ATTORNEYS

Dr. Gordon Freeman look one look at this patent and concluded that a similar principle may have been responsible for the workings of the magnetic wove weapon In the patent, radio waves are received and turned into a small electric current which might charge up a battery, for instance. In the magnetic wave weapon, radio waves, generated by all ignition-based engines, would be received, amplified, and re-broadcast to be absorbed by all the metal parts of that same target engine. Absorption by the engine would cause a short circuit in the same wave frequency and wave length and ignition liming as the original signal coming from the engine. This would result in misfiring of the engine.

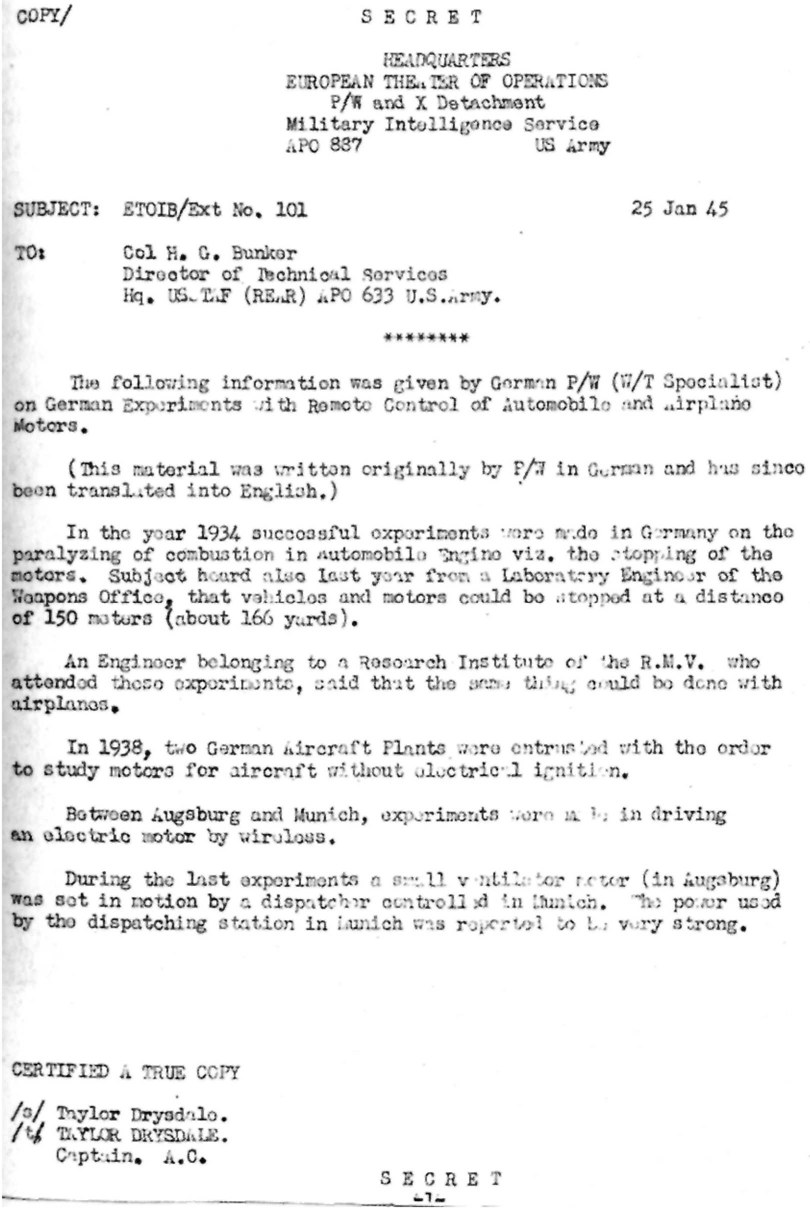
that the most economical means of disturbing an aircraft's ignition system would probably employ electromagnetic radio frequency transmissions recurrent at a rate near the frequency of the engine's ignition cycle."

Something in its name caused this writer to order a copy of a 1954 patent granted L. R. Crump titled: "Powering Electrical Devices With Energy Abstracted Form The Atmosphere"[4]. Diagrams from that patent are shown here. The patent does not quite live up to its promise. Instead of extracting energy from the atmosphere in a free-energy manner, it captures energy from local radio stations, in the form of their radio programming and turns this energy, not into sound as does a radio receiver and speaker system, but into pulses of energy which are gathered and smoothed into a small but useable energy flow. Small electric devices can be powered using this device or small batteries can be recharged using it.

I sent a copy of this patent to Dr. Gordon Freeman as I had told him of the patent's name and its implied promise. Dr. Freeman wrote back to me saying that the patent had value after all. In fact, he said that this patent might have a bearing on the famous Motorstoppmittel device. What he meant might be best illustrated using an automobile engine.

In an automobile's engine it is common practice to keep each ignition wire separate and separated from every other ignition wire in that engine using air as insulating space as well as plastic spacers. The reason for this is that sometimes, especially at high rpms, the firing of one wire, when touching another wire, will induce a current in that second wire which will cause its spark plug to fire out of sequence. This is called misfiring. Misfiring can cause many problems in an engine, including causing it to halt.

Now, suppose a special device were built with an antenna, which could receive the electromagnetic waves generated by an engine instead of a radio transmitter. This is not so hard since ignition engines produce radio frequency signals all through their ignition cycle. Special and specific shielding has to be incorporated into most engines in order for us to hear our car radios as we drive. As soon as our special device received the incoming ignition signals, they were exactly duplicated and amplified. Then they are re-broadcast by a powerful antenna right back to the original source. The source, the



COPY/

SECRET

HEADQUARTERS
EUROPEAN THEATER OF OPERATIONS
P/W and X Detachment
Military Intelligence Service
APO 887 US Army

SUBJECT: ETOIB/Ext No. 101 25 Jan 45

TO: Col H. G. Bunker
Director of Technical Services
Hq. USSTAF (REAR) APO 633 U.S.Army.

****

The following information was given by German P/W (W/T Specialist) on German Experiments with Remote Control of Automobile and airplane Motors.

(This material was written originally by P/W in German and has since been translated into English.)

In the year 1934 successful experiments were made in Germany on the paralyzing of combustion in automobile Engine viz. the stopping of the motors. Subject heard also last year from a Laboratory Engineer of the Weapons Office, that vehicles and motors could be stopped at a distance of 150 meters (about 166 yards).

An Engineer belonging to a Research Institute of the R.M.V. who attended these experiments, said that the same thing could be done with airplanes.

In 1938, two German Aircraft Plants were entrusted with the order to study motors for aircraft without electrical ignition.

Between Augsburg and Munich, experiments were made in driving an electric motor by wireless.

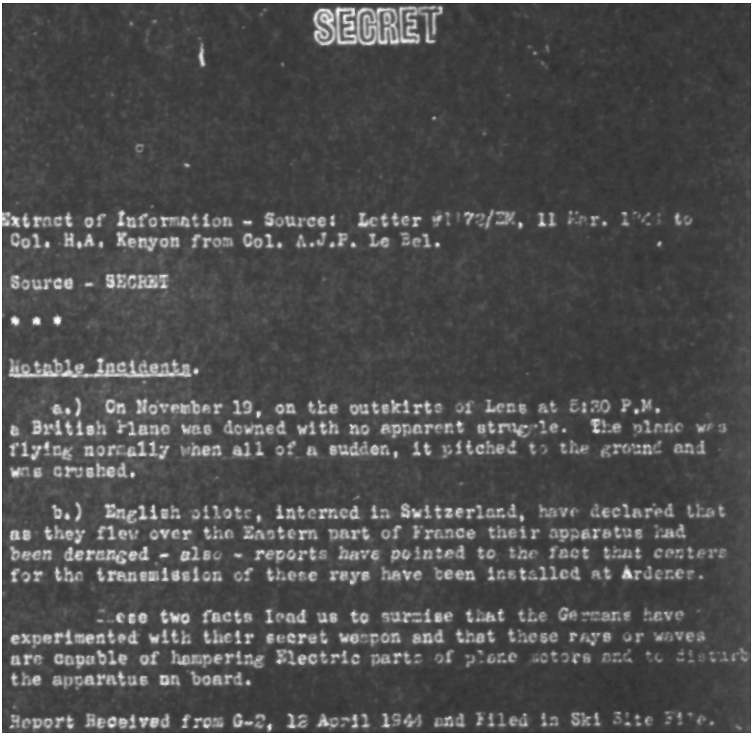
During the last experiments a small ventilator motor (in Augsburg) was set in motion by a dispatcher controlled in Munich. The power used by the dispatching station in Munich was reported to be very strong.

CERTIFIED A TRUE COPY

/s/ Taylor Drysdale.
/t/ TAYLOR DRYSDALE.
Captain. A.C.

SECRET

A military intelligence report describing magnetic wave development.



SECRET

Extract of Information - Source: Letter #1172/ZM, 11 Mar. 1944 to Col. H.A. Kenyon from Col. A.J.P. Le Bel.

Source - SECRET

* * *

Notable Incidents.

a.) On November 19, on the outskirts of Lens at 5:30 P.M. a British Plane was downed with no apparent struggle. The plane was flying normally when all of a sudden, it pitched to the ground and was crushed.

b.) English pilots, interned in Switzerland, have declared that as they flew over the Eastern part of France their apparatus had been deranged - also - reports have pointed to the fact that centers for the transmission of these rays have been installed at Ardenes.

These two facts lead us to surmise that the Germans have experimented with their secret weapon and that these rays or waves are capable of hampering Electric parts of plane motors and to disturb the apparatus on board.

Report Received from G-2, 12 April 1944 and Filed in Ski Site File.

A Secret report describing the downing of a British aircraft by magnetic wave.

engine, picks up our transmission thorough its metal parts and wires. Through these engine parts and wiring electrical energy is induced just as it is with the misfiring ignition wires in our earlier example. The result is the same, a misfiring engine. At best, this engine runs rough. Other small and sensitive electromagnetic devices such as the aircraft's gauges and gyros also malfunction. At worst, the aircraft's misfiring is so bad that the engine stalls or fires in complete opposition to its proper firing order so that it actually breaks apart.

Something similar to this simple description is the probable paradigm for the famous and super-secret Motorstoppmittel.

SOURCES

1. Haarmann, D.H., 1985, pages 26-27, 111 Geheime Wunderwaffen Ueber den Krieg hinaus!, Hugn Gesellschaft fuer Politisch - Philosophische Studien E.V.

2. Pennick, Nigel, 1981, page 169, Hitler's Secret Sciences, Neville Spearman Limited.

3. American British Laboratory of Radio Research Laboratory, Januray 30, 1945, Unexplained Interference with Allied Aircraft Engines over Enemy Territory", Great Malvern, Wores

4. United States Patent, Patent Number 2,813,242,11/12/57, Granted to Lloyd R. Crump, titled: "Powering Electrical Devices With Energy Abstracted From The Atmosphere".

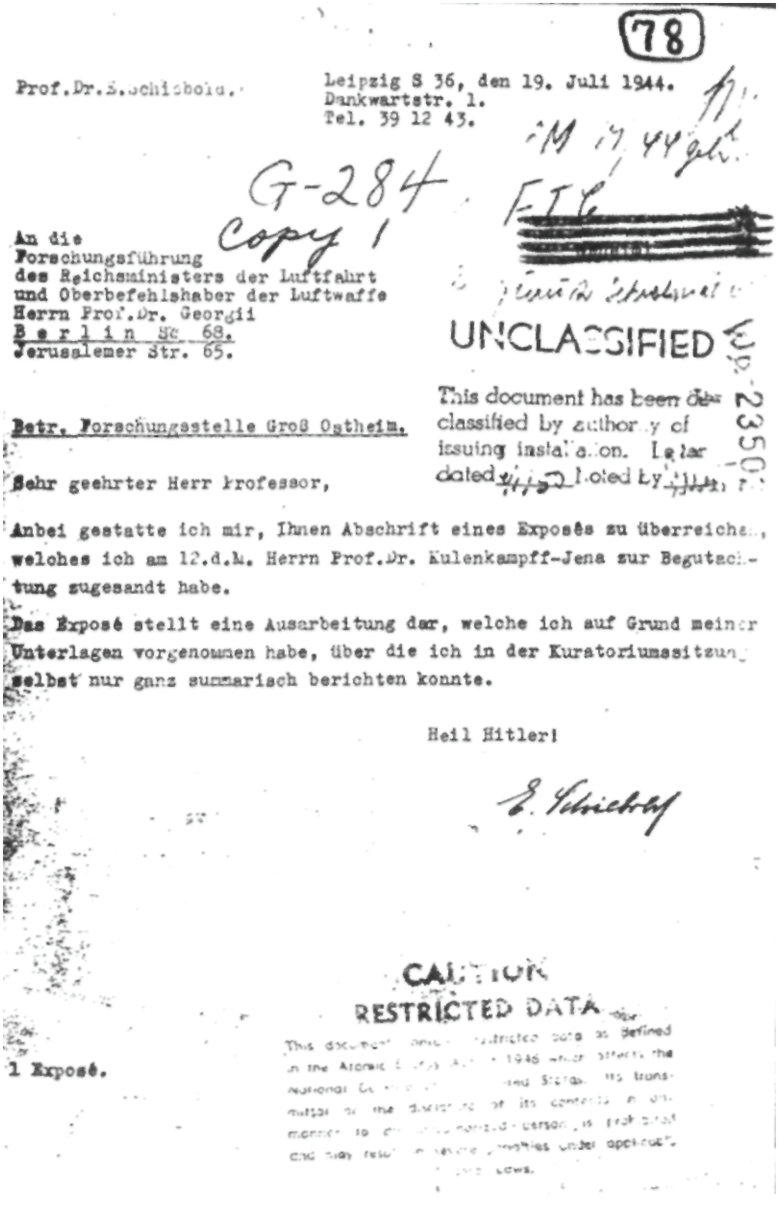
26 "Death Rays"
X-Ray—Gamma Ray Weapon

Sometimes the magnetic wave/Motorstoppmittel is called a "death ray" but it was passive in nature and meant to kill engines, not people. The first type of real death ray we will encounter is of the x-ray or gamma ray type. We know this was worked upon during the Third Reich because we have the actual scientific study detailing the feasibility of such a weapon.

Perhaps most amazing is that the information contained in this chapter comes from the German government itself. This information comes in the form of a report from the Forschungezentrum at Karlsruhe. They graciously provided a copy of a report, upon a simple written request, which is titled: "Ueber die Moeglichkeit biologischer Wirkungen kurswelliger Roentgen-bsw. Gammastrahlen von Roentgenroehren besonderer Bauart auf groessere Entfernungen". This translates into English as something like: "Concerning the possibility of biologic effects of short wave x-rays, respectively, gamma rays from x-ray tubes of special construction at great distance".

This report dates from the Second World War, 1944, is of poor quality, and illegible in many sections. Sometimes reports copied on and off microfilm have the same fuzzy quality of this text, although the real reason for its fuzziness is unknown. Accompanying the document came a letter from the research center explaining that original material itself was of poor quality and was not possible to improve upon the copy as generated. Portions of that document are reproduced here.

This report could properly be called a design study



78

Prof.Dr.E.Schiebold.

Leipzig S 36, den 19. Juli 1944.
Dankwartstr. 1.
Tel. 39 12 43.

G-284
Copy 1

[redacted]

UNCLASSIFIED

This document has been declassified by authority of issuing installation. Letter dated [illegible] Noted by [illegible]

Wp. 2350

An die
Forschungsführung
des Reichsministers der Luftfahrt
und Oberbefehlshaber der Luftwaffe
Herrn Prof.Dr. Georgii
Berlin SW 68.
Jerusalemer Str. 65.

Betr. Forschungsstelle Groß Ostheim.

Sehr geehrter Herr Professor,

Anbei gestatte ich mir, Ihnen Abschrift eines Exposés zu überreichen, welches ich am 12.d.M. Herrn Prof.Dr. Kulenkampff-Jena zur Begutachtung zugesandt habe.

Das Exposé stellt eine Ausarbeitung dar, welche ich auf Grund meiner Unterlagen vorgenommen habe, über die ich in der Kuratoriumssitzung selbst nur ganz summarisch berichten konnte.

Heil Hitler!

E. Schiebold

1 Exposé.

CAUTION
RESTRICTED DATA

This document contains restricted data as defined in the Atomic Energy Act of 1946 which affects the National Defense of the United States. Its transmittal or the disclosure of its contents in any manner to an unauthorized person is prohibited and may result in severe penalties under applicable Federal laws.

Cover page of a German design study concerning the utilization of an x-ray anti-aircraft weapon with translation following.

Prof. Dr. E. Schiebold
Dankwartstr. 1 Tel. 39 12 43.

Leipzig, S 36, 7/19/44

On the conducting of research of the Reich Ministry of Aeronautics and Commander in Chief of The Air Force Herrn Professor Doctor Georgii Berlin SW 68 Jerusalemer Str. 65.

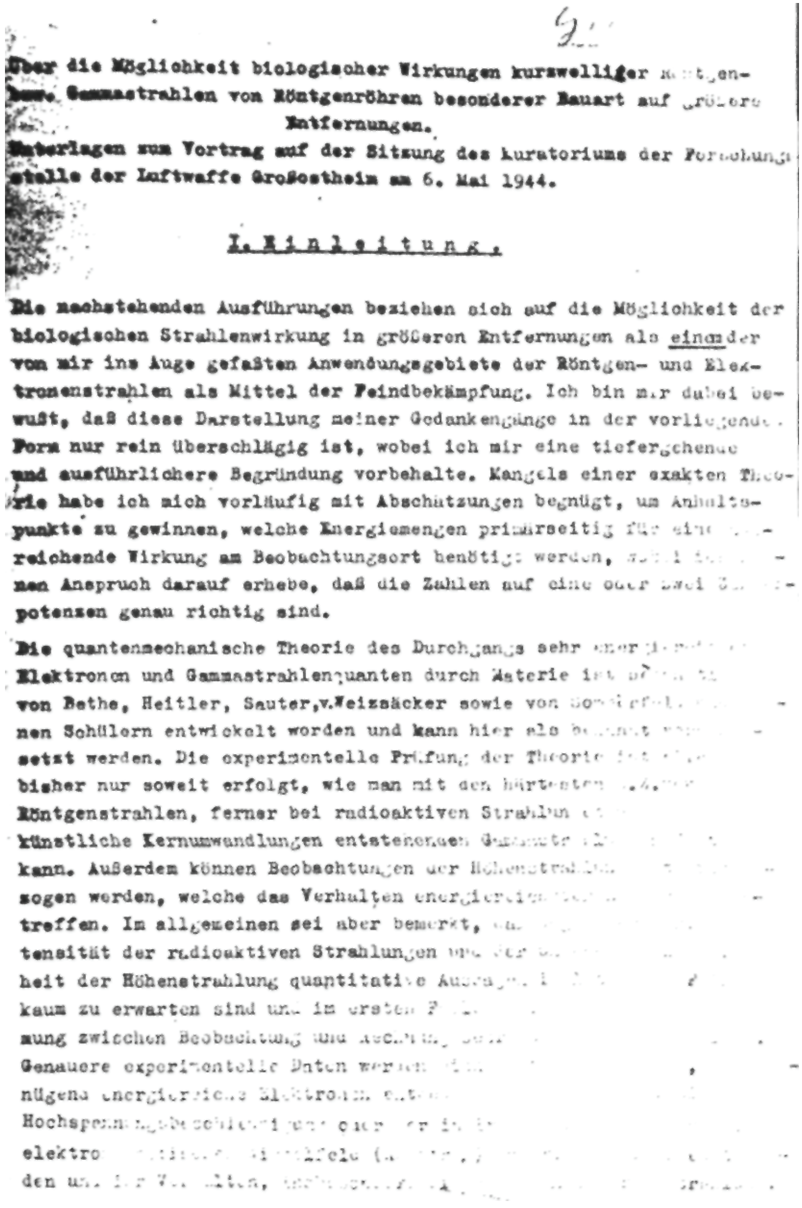
In Reference to the Research Installation Gross Ostheim

Very Honored Herr Professor,

Enclosed permit me to present to you the transcript of an expose which I have sent to Professor Dr. Kulenkampff at Jena for an expert opinion.

This expose describes the carrying out of a plan which for reason of support I have undertaken and about which I in the board of trustees position am only able to report summarily.

Heil Hitler,



92

Über die Möglichkeit biologischer Wirkungen kurzwelliger [illegible]

bzw. Gammastrahlen von Röntgenröhren besonderer Bauart auf [illegible]

Entfernungen.

Unterlagen zum Vortrag auf der Sitzung des Kuratoriums der [illegible]stelle der Luftwaffe Großostheim am 6. Mai 1944.

I. Einleitung.

Die nachstehenden Ausführungen beziehen sich auf die Möglichkeit der biologischen Strahlenwirkung in größeren Entfernungen als einander von mir ins Auge gefaßten Anwendungsgebiete der Röntgen- und Elektronenstrahlen als Mittel der Feindbekämpfung. Ich bin mir dabei bewußt, daß diese Darstellung meiner Gedankengänge in der vorliegenden Form nur rein überschlägig ist, wobei ich mir eine tiefergehende und ausführlichere Begründung vorbehalte. Mangels einer exakten Theorie habe ich mich vorläufig mit Abschätzungen begnügt, um Anhaltspunkte zu gewinnen, welche Energiemengen primärseitig für eine [illegible]reichende Wirkung am Beobachtungsort benötigt werden, [illegible]nen Anspruch darauf erhebe, daß die Zahlen auf eine oder zwei [illegible]potenzen genau richtig sind.

Die quantenmechanische Theorie des Durchgangs sehr [illegible] Elektronen und Gammastrahlenquanten durch Materie ist [illegible] von Bethe, Heitler, Sauter, v. Weizsäcker sowie von [illegible]nen Schülern entwickelt worden und kann hier als [illegible]setzt werden. Die experimentelle Prüfung der Theorie [illegible] bisher nur soweit erfolgt, wie man mit den härtesten [illegible] Röntgenstrahlen, ferner bei radioaktiven Strahlun[illegible] künstliche Kernumwandlungen entstehenden [illegible] kann. Außerdem können Beobachtungen der [illegible]zogen werden, welche das Verhalten [illegible]treffen. Im allgemeinen sei aber bemerkt, [illegible]tensität der radioaktiven Strahlungen [illegible]heit der Höhenstrahlung quantitative [illegible] kaum zu erwarten sind [illegible]mung zwischen [illegible] Genauere [illegible] nügend [illegible] Hochsp[illegible] elektro[illegible] den [illegible]

This is the Introduction to the report. This report was stored on microfilm and the quality is very bad. On the following page is a partial translation.

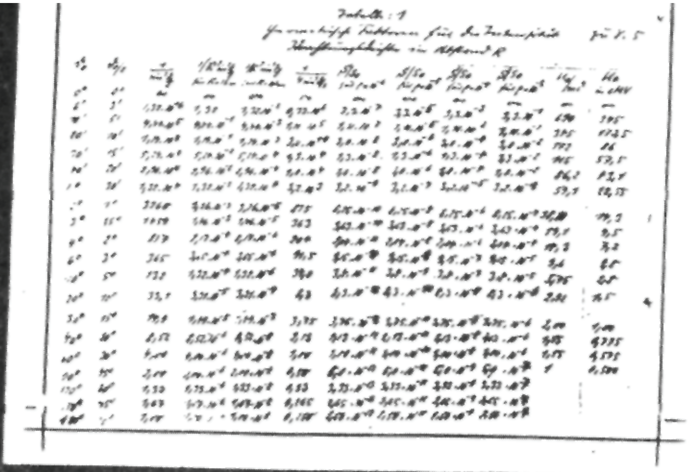
Concerning the Possibility of Biologic Effects of Short Wave X-Rays, respectively, Gammarays from X-Ray Tubes of Special Construction at Great Range.

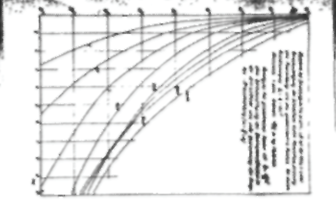
1. Introduction

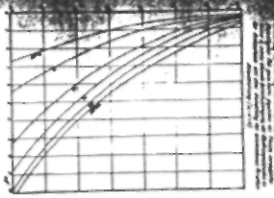
This exposition concerns the possibility of the biologic beam effects at great range as one means I have seized upon as a sphere of application of the x-ray and a beam of electrons as a means of fighting the enemy. I know that this description of my train of thought in the present form is guite rough whereby I reserve a deeper going basis and completeness of detail.

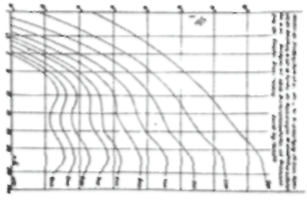
For want of an exact theory I have used a preliminary evaluation in order to obtain which energy admixtures primarily sided for a far reaching effectiveness of an observation spot will be
necessary------------ claims arising that a number of one or two--are
exactly correct.

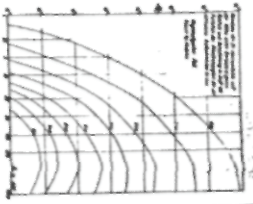
(text not legible)











These are two sample pages of the report.

in America. It was written by a Professor Dr. E. Schiebold to the research effort of the Reich Ministers of the Air Transport and the Supreme Commander of the Air Force, Professor Dr. Georgii on July, 19, 1944.

A stamp on the face of the document, "Caution Restricted Data", which dates from the post-war occupational period, advises the reader that this document involves restricted data as defined by the Atomic Energy Agency as of 1946 and that disclosure of its contents to an unauthorized person is prohibited. Another stamp on the cover dated 1/1/50 or 4/1/50 declassifies the document.

Inspire of the fact that much of: the text of the report is illegible, the summary can be read. From what can be learned Dr. Schiebold used mathematical models to evaluate three types of x-ray weapons. If physical models were constructed in order to obtain mathematical values is unknown to this writer. The weapons were designed for antiaircraft purposes. Much of the report is technical.

These ray guns were to be mounted on an adjustable stand and aimed at enemy aircraft. The objective was not to shoot down the aircraft but to harm the pilot of the aircraft. An effective dose necessary to cause biologic harm was calculated. This dose varied in time depending upon the intensity of the x-ray beam itself. At weaker values the time on target had to be longer to be effective. Intensity of the beam depended upon the energy input, beam thickness and the scattering effect as the beam goes through the atmosphere as well as the distance from the target. Higher values of effectiveness, that is biologic harm, could be achieved with higher voltages and greater beam thicknesses. Beam thickness seems to be dependent upon the size of the anode in the gun's design. In practice one can see that various atmospheric conditions and high-speed aircraft only complicate the picture.

Three different ray-gun designs were evaluated. They were ascribed mathematical values for targets at various altitudes and time on target and given in two scenarios, under most favorable and least favorable circumstances. The first type was unacceptable for antiaircraft purposes. The second type was only marginal under some of the most favorable circumstances. The third type was more acceptable. It featured a large surface anode. A dose of 7 rads per second at a distance of 5 kilometers with a time on target of 30 seconds, which was achievable with this weapon, was considered adequate to inflict irreversible biologic harm to the crew of the aircraft. This is a range of about three miles or a little over 15,000 feet. Of course, shorter time on target periods were possible for nearer targets.

One finding of the report involves the scattering effect. It was found that the metal skin of the aircraft scattered the radiation from this weapon and produced stronger biologic harm to the inhabitants of that aircraft than a dose straight from the beam weapon itself. In other words, the skin of the aircraft acted like a microwave oven, more efficiently cooking the crew.

Also according to the report the most sensitive parts of the human body, thus those most easily harmed, were the gonads which do not repair themselves once damaged in this manner. This means that even should the crew escape with their lives once hit with this weapon, they face the possibility of sterility, cancer or other long-term damage. Employment of this weapon certainly would have had negative effects on the morale of the enemy once these facts were understood.

The weapon was never fielded. The reason was probably the issue of "time on target". It does not seem likely that a weapon could be trained upon an enemy aircraft for the required time duration in a combat situation. One still wonders why it was not considered for ground combat applications. It might have had value defending fixed targets such as mountain passes or bridges.

Nevertheless, the work of Dr. Scheibold constitutes legitimate research into the concept of a death ray. Somehow, Dr. Schiebold found a way to weaponize x-rays and gamma rays. Somehow, they were focussed on a distant target. The possibility of using X-rays has been recently raised again in regards to the proposed "Star Wars" defense shield. This is another matter involving destruction of hardware, not people, but the German success in focussing X-rays should be kept in mind.

SOURCES

1. Schiebold, E. Professor Dr., 1944, Ueber die Moeglichkeit biologischer Wirkungen kurzwelliger Roentgen-bsw. Gammastrahlen von Roentgenroehren besonderer Bauart auf groessere Entfernungen. Forschungszenturm karlsruhe Technik und Umwelt, Karlsruhe, Germany

27 "Death Rays"
Laser Weapon

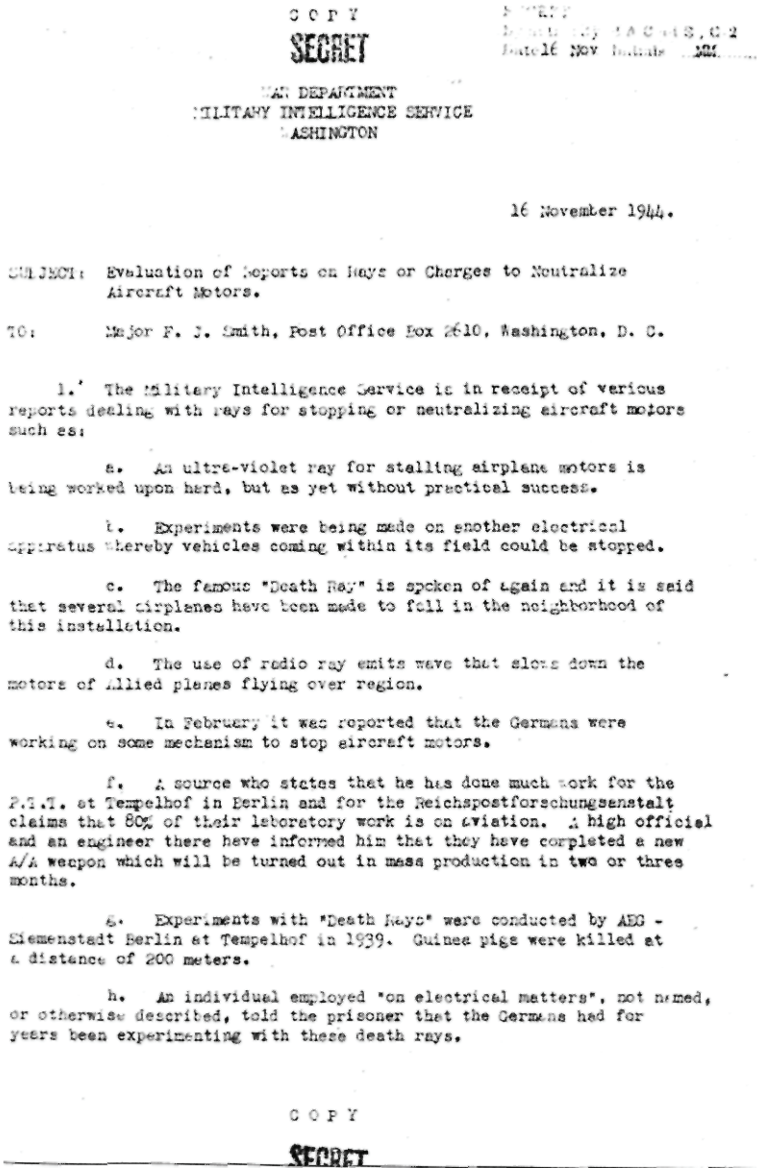
It is almost inconceivable that almost sixty years ago anyone could have developed something with which we are struggling to develop at this very moment. Yet, there are many rumors and some evidence that the Germans were actively working on a laser weapon in the mid-1940s. We will dispense with some of the more vague, sensational evidence and focus on references to which, firstly, a name and a reputation are attached and, secondly, to evidence brought forth by the United States government.

Two bits of information come to us from sources which should have been informed. These are from German U-boat captains. U-boat captains were highly trained, highly selected individuals for whom the German military as well as the culture itself had the utmost respect. They would have received a great deal more information concerning the weaponry than the average citizen or fighting man.

Herbert Werner discusses death rays in his book Iron Coffins. This book was the principal source for the film "Das Boot". Captain Werner needed no sensationalism, his truth was sensational enough. He makes the comments in response to comments by a downed American pilot and explains Zhis thinking:

"I was thinking about our much-discussed new weapons, including death rays and atom bombs, which were now in the development stage".[1]

"Death rays" are called "much-discussed" and



C O P Y

SECRET

[illegible]
[illegible] A C of S, G-2
Date 16 Nov Initials [illegible]

WAR DEPARTMENT
MILITARY INTELLIGENCE SERVICE
WASHINGTON

16 November 1944.

SUBJECT: Evaluation of Reports on Rays or Charges to Neutralize Aircraft Motors.

TO: Major F. J. Smith, Post Office Box 2610, Washington, D. C.

1. The Military Intelligence Service is in receipt of various reports dealing with rays for stopping or neutralizing aircraft motors such as:

a. An ultra-violet ray for stalling airplane motors is being worked upon hard, but as yet without practical success.

b. Experiments were being made on another electrical apparatus whereby vehicles coming within its field could be stopped.

c. The famous "Death Ray" is spoken of again and it is said that several airplanes have been made to fall in the neighborhood of this installation.

d. The use of radio ray emits wave that slows down the motors of Allied planes flying over region.

e. In February it was reported that the Germans were working on some mechanism to stop aircraft motors.

f. A source who states that he has done much work for the P.T.T. at Tempelhof in Berlin and for the Reichspostforschungsanstalt claims that 80% of their laboratory work is on aviation. A high official and an engineer there have informed him that they have completed a new A/A weapon which will be turned out in mass production in two or three months.

g. Experiments with "Death Rays" were conducted by AEG - Siemenstadt Berlin at Tempelhof in 1939. Guinea pigs were killed at a distance of 200 meters.

h. An individual employed "on electrical matters", not named, or otherwise described, told the prisoner that the Germans had for years been experimenting with these death rays.

C O P Y

SECRET

A short summary-report dealing with German "death rays". Note item "g" which clearly deals with the killing of test animals. This is in contrast to the other entries which deal with stopping of ignition engines. Two pages.

C O P Y

SECRET

Date 16 Nov [illegible]

i. It is believed that it is a sort of magnetic beam, capable of stopping the motors of planes at a great distance.

j. Experiments of which he knew, (1) destroying the functions of aircraft motors with induced magnetic fields, (2) exploding aircraft in the air by direct ultra-violet ray.

k. This weapon which emits waves or rays based on piezo-electricity is a development of the death ray. It is known that tests were made in 1938 and that a distance of eight hundred meters an automobile motor was successfully stopped.

l. The Germans will use within next three weeks new generator which is capable of stopping motors.

2. An hypothesis has been received stating that by use of rays or charges the atmosphere surrounding the airplane engine could be ionized, causing the ignition system to spark at joints and also where the insulation has been cracked or broken, thereby causing a short circuit of the spark plug.

3. Any evaluation or opinion you may be able to render on the existence or practicability of any rays or charges, to include probable type of emission, range, size of installation required, would be highly appreciated.

For the Chief, Military Intelligence Service:

MERILLAT MOSES,
Lt. Colonel, F.A.,
Chief, Scientific Branch, MIS.

EIDM - 1st Ind.

War Department, P. O. Box 2610, Washington, D. C., 30 November 1944.

To: Chief, Military Intelligence Service, Washington, D. C.
(Attention: Lt. Col. Merillat Moses, Chief, Scientific Branch, MIS)

Attached herewith is memorandum requested in basic communication.

F. J. SMITH,
Major, C.E.

Inclosure:
Memo., 29/Nov/44.

C O P Y

SECRET

mentioned as concrete reality in the same breath as the German atomic bomb project.

Heinz Schaeffer, Captain of U-977, surrendered his U-boat at Mar del Plata Argentina nearly four months after the war in Europe ended. In making this trip from the North Atlantic to the South Atlantic, he did so almost entirely underwater using the newly installed Schnorkel device. In that era, this was the longest underwater voyage ever made.

In his book, Captain Schaeffer describes a chance meeting and conversation on a train in the twilight days of Nazi Germany:

"Next to me sat an S.S. officer who, in spite of my flatly contradicting him, simply would not stop talking about decisive new secret weapons. I was fed up with secret weapons by now for I knew perfectly well from my own experience that if all the blueprints were there so were the air-raids on our factories. "Well, of course, you aren't really in a position to judge," he said, but he was, naturally, because he was working at some S.S. H.Q. or other and was out watching the tests every day. If I would only come and look him up I would see something that would make me sit up.

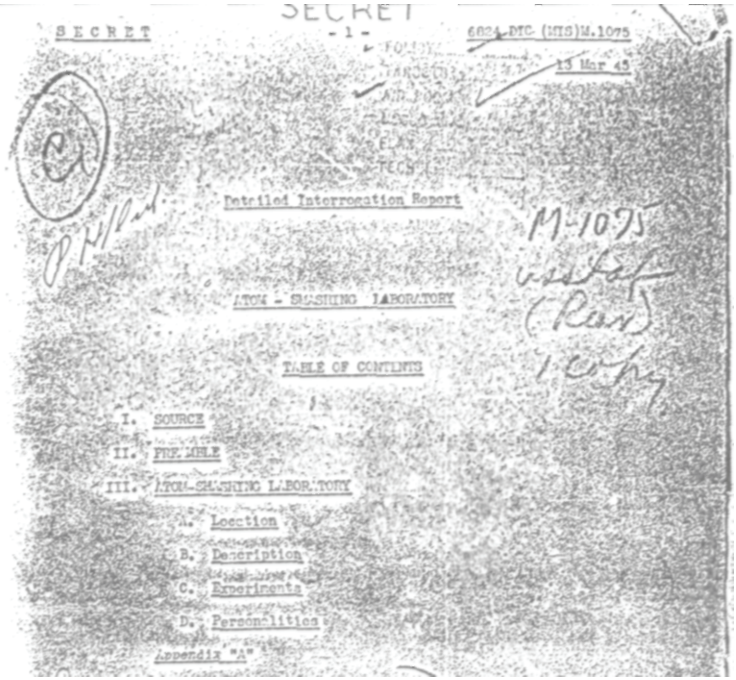
When I got to Berlin I really did look him up, and after I had waited at the H.Q. entrance for some time my new acquaintance appeared and started showing me round. Everybody there was certain we were going to win, with a conviction I'd never seen the like of even after the fall of France. Among the fantastic contrivances of which I was shown photographs was one called a death ray which my friend wanted me to come back and see in action the next day.

But I wasn't wasting any more time. I wanted to see my mother, for it was obvious the Russians were advancing on Berlin and that the last battle was going to be fought there."[2]

Captain Schaeffer saw photographs but missed the actual demonstration. From his account, we know that the project in question was run by the SS and that it was perhaps based in Berlin.

Mention of a death ray of the type under discussion also appears in an unlikely source. Michael Bar-Zohar, writing in the "Nazi Hunter" genre, raises death rays:

"There was also a vague report on the mysterious



SECRET

SECRET - 1 - 6824 DIC (MIS)M.1075

13 Mar 45

M-1075
USSTAF
(Rear)
1 copy

Detailed Interrogation Report

ATOM - SMASHING LABORATORY

TABLE OF CONTENTS

I. SOURCE
II. PREAMBLE
III. ATOM-SMASHING LABORATORY
    A. Location
    B. Description
    C. Experiments
    D. Personalities
Appendix "A"

Laser weapon! This is a Secret prisoner of war interrogation in which the details of the laser weapon experiment were explained including a diagram of the laser testing facility. This was taken from microfilm.

THIS PAGE IS UNCLASSIFIED

DETAILED INTERROGATION REPORT

I. SOURCE

Name : SCHMETTLER, Karl
Rank : Unteroffizier
Unit : PANZER 33
Captured : 1 Dec 44, DIFFERTEN -
Interrogation : 6824 DIC (MIS), 2 Mar 45

II. PREAMBLE

An 18 year old technician from LUDWIGSHAFEN. At first, he confirmed his previous story, as given in Report 2/32 (see NOTE, below). He was then questioned as to his technical knowledge of electronics, and it was found that he could not answer even elementary questions on the subject. He then stated that his original story was false.

PW now states that he was never, for any length of time, associated with a German University, or TECHNISCHE HOCHSCHULE, and that he cannot give information concerning the University of HEIDELBERG.

Although it is believed that PW is telling the truth, it is felt that his information should not be given a high reliability rating.

The information contained in this Report has been obtained at this Hq with the assistance of the Technical Liaison Division Office of the Chief Signals Officer, ETO.

Reliability : C-5

(NOTE: This Report should be read in conjunction with Mobile Field Interrogation Unit No 2 PW Intelligence Bulletin No 2/32, dated 30 Jan 45. See para 12, entitled "Atom-Smashing Experiments").

III. ATOM-SMASHING LABORATORY

A. Location

Ref Map: GERMANY 1: 25,000 GSGS 4414
Sheet 6416, FRANKENTHAL, Revised Oct 44

Photo Ref: ACIU Interpretation Report K 3228, 2 Oct 44

5021 0C50 PW stated that the experiments described in Report 2/32 (see NOTE, above) were carried out in an underground structure, located at MR, in the I.G.FARBEN Plant at LUDWIGSHAFEN.

In Sep 44, PW heard that the Experimental Station was to be moved to an unspecified location in either HEIDELBERG, or FREIBURG/Breisgau.

B. Description (See Appendix "A")

The laboratory consisted of a concrete underground shelter, approx 50 meters long, 25 meters wide, and 8 to 10 meters high. Concrete walls were between 75 cms and 1 meter thick. The shelter was entered at ground level, but was not [illegible] visible from the air.

The floor, and a strip 4 or 5 meters wide, along the inside walls approx 2 meters above floor level, were covered with a 3 to 5-cm thick plastic layer know as IGELIT.

One end of the laboratory contained a recess housing 5 or 6 Electronic Tubes, referred to as FANGPOLE and SPRUEHPOLE. These rested on special trolleys, and could be moved foward into the focusing area. The sides and rear of the tubes were shielded by a semi-circular quartz plate.

At the other end of the Laboratory was the Observation and Control Station, shielded in front and at the sides by a semi-cicular, transparent quartz plate. This station contained electrical controls.

Opposite this station was a target stand, consisting of a 1.25 to 1.5-meter high column, surrounded by a 5-cm thick, approx 1.25-meter long and 1.25-meter wide quartz plate. A vacuum system (details unspecified) was incorporated in the target stand. All parts of the stand had been sprayed with the plastic IGELIT.

C. Experiments

FW could add little to the information in Report 2/32.

Experiment with Rats

In the experiment of Apr 44 (See Report 2/32), FW stated that, when the rats were bombarded by the rays, a phosphorescent glow was observed over their bodies, lasting about a fifth of a second. FW believed that the rats had been reduced to a gaseous Sodium (?), which had been drawn into the vacuum system of the test stand.

D. Personalities

The following men took part in the laboratory experiments:

1. KAISER WILHELM Institute

   KALB, Diplom Ingenieur
   MEISSNER, Diplom Ingenieur
   FALKE, Diplom Ingenieur
   HAERINGER, Studienrat

2. I.G.FARBEN/Ludwigshafen

   WENDT, Diplom Ingenieur
   RAITHEL, Diplom Ingenieur
   EDLEFSEN, Ingenieur

WHG (Ed: ARP)

FOR THOMAS C. VAN CLEVE, LT COL
Commanding 6824 DIC (MIS)
Ivo V. Giannini
IVO V GIANNINI
Major, INF,
Army Section

13 Mar 45

DISTRIBUTION

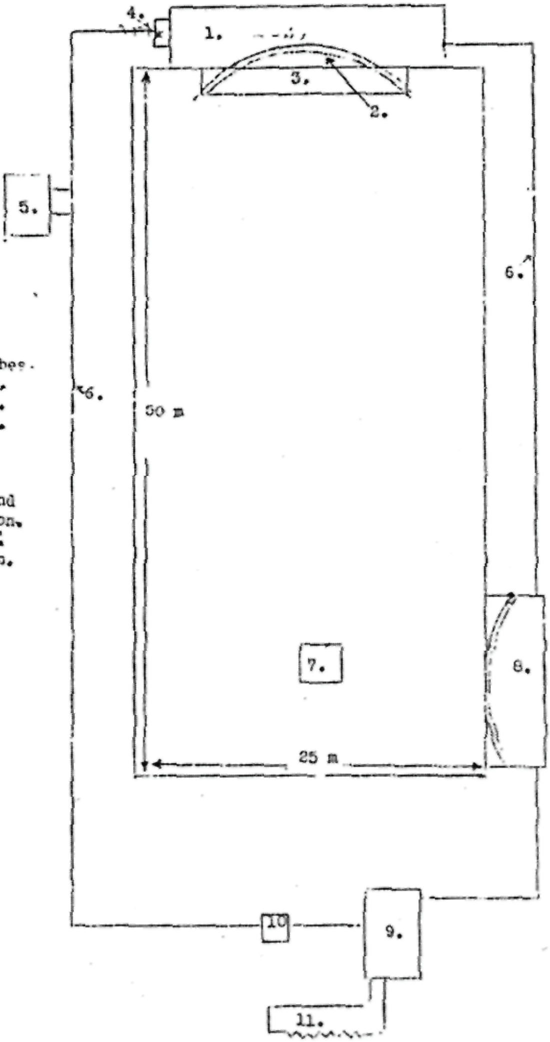
JICA, AFHQ	4
SHAEF	8
ETOUSA	8
6 Army Group	5
12 ArmyGroup	8
21 ArmyGroup	1
7 Army	8
AU 500	2
MI 14 (j)	3
MI 19	3
MIRS	2
G-2 (CI), AFHQ	2
1st French Army	1
C[illegible] Washington D.C.	2
PW &X Det, U.K.	1
U.S.Group C.C.	3
HQ FID	3
O.S.S.	3
P.I.D.	3
Sigs Off Washington D.C.	6
T.I.Div Sigs Off Com Z	8
File	7

THIS PAGE IS UNCLASSIFIED

APPENDIX "A"

ATOM - SMASHING LABORATORY

I.C.FARBEN/Ludwigshafen



LEGEND

1. Recess for Electronic Tubes.
2. Quartz shield.
3. Focusing Area.
4. Power Contact.
5. POLYTRON(?).
6. Power Cable.
7. Target Stand.
8. Observation and Control Station.
9. Power station.
10. Switch Station.
11. Transformer Station.

Zimmermann—the man believed to have invented the "death ray" and even to have used it effectively against the Russian in the Carpathians on 30 August 1944."[3]

Bar-Zohar's focus is on the moral ambiguity of German scientists working in the United States. He asks: "How could they reconcile themselves to their ambiguous moral position?". The point for us is that Bar-Zohar is certainly not interested in aggrandizing the technical achievements of these scientists.

Now that we have picked up the scent of a possible German death ray, we might fairly ask what our government found out when they sent teams of technical investigators into Germany to acquire such exotic technology, even before the final surrender. What they found is obviously still a secret but there are hints. These "hints" are probably nothing more than the failure of government censors to do their job effectively. They simply cannot catch everything, every reference, every off-handed mention of something which appear in the voluminous government record concerning wartime Germany.

German researcher Friedrich Georg made a huge discovery in uncovering microfilm evidence of the laser testing facility at I.G. Farben facility in Ludwigshafen. The reference is reproduced here[4]. The report uses an 18-year-old prisoner of war as an informant for the text of the report. As was the usual practice in using informants, the report tears down his credibility but then ends up using him as a source. The reason for this is that the Allies had no idea if this was the truth or not and wanted to cover their butts either way.

It is also interesting to note that the Allies were given a list of scientists who participated in the laser experimentation at I.G. Farben, Ludwigshafen: engineers Meissner, Ike, and their advisor, Eringer. None of their testimony appears in this report.

Besides the detail of the layout, it is most impressive to note that when the test targets of the weapon, rats, were hit with the ray, their bodies glowed for a fraction of a second before they completely disintegrated.

Also please note that on page three of the government document shown and under the heading Kaiser Wilhelm Institute, we find the name "Meissner, Diplom Ingenieur". This is the same Meissner we encountered in the Magnetic Wave discussion.

SOURCES

1. Werner, Herbert A., Captain, 1978, page 228, Iron Coffins, Bantam Books, Inc., N.Y., NY.

2. Schaeffer, Heinz, Captain, 1952, page 104, U-boat 977, Ballantine Books, Inc., N.Y., NY.

3. Bar-Zohar, Michael, 1967, page 152, The Hunt For German Scientists, Avon Books, N.Y., NY.

4. Detailed Interrogation Report, 3/13/45, "Atom-Smashing Laboratory" report 6824-DTC (MIS)M.1075, taken from U.S. government microfilm

28 Distillation of Crude Oil Using Sound Waves

We have all heard that the Germans made oil from coal using the Fischer-Topische method as well as a method of hydrogenation. Something which is totally unknown is that they may have invented a revolutionary technology to refine the oil, separating it into gasoline, oil, wax, diesel oil, etc., using sound waves of a special kind.

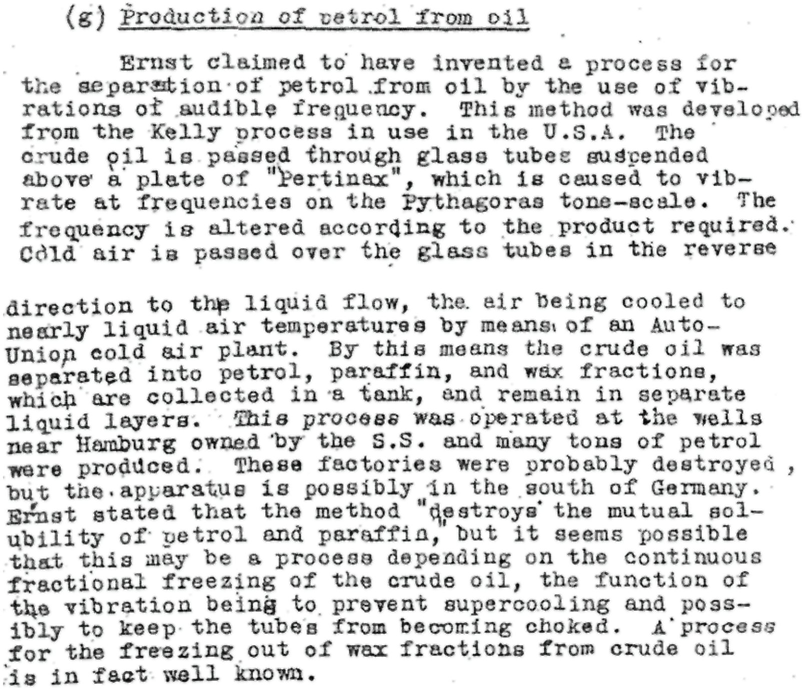
The informant used by the British to get this information was a prisoner of war named Josef Ernst. The British say of Ernst:

"In the course of interrogation it became clear, that Ernst was not at all reliable, and through there may in some cases be a factual basis for some of his claims, they are as a whole inaccurate and of doubtful value".[1]

In spite of their badmouthing of Ernst, the British used him as a primary source on no less than seven different aspects of captured German technology. Like the Americans, the British found it necessary to cover their butts.

There is an error in the report, however. It has to do with the name of the inventor for the distillation process, which is given in the British report as "Kelly". Even from the brief description given, it is evident that the correct name of this inventor is "Keely", as in John Worrall Keely.

Keely was born in Philadelphia in 1837. Therefore, he did most of his work in the latter part of the nineteenth century. Keely put forth a theory of the reso-



(g) Production of petrol from oil

Ernst claimed to have invented a process for the separation of petrol from oil by the use of vibrations of audible frequency. This method was developed from the Kelly process in use in the U.S.A. The crude oil is passed through glass tubes suspended above a plate of "Pertinax", which is caused to vibrate at frequencies on the Pythagoras tone-scale. The frequency is altered according to the product required. Cold air is passed over the glass tubes in the reverse direction to the liquid flow, the air being cooled to nearly liquid air temperatures by means of an Auto-Union cold air plant. By this means the crude oil was separated into petrol, paraffin, and wax fractions, which are collected in a tank, and remain in separate liquid layers. This process was operated at the wells near Hamburg owned by the S.S. and many tons of petrol were produced. These factories were probably destroyed, but the apparatus is possibly in the south of Germany. Ernst stated that the method "destroys the mutual solubility of petrol and paraffin," but it seems possible that this may be a process depending on the continuous fractional freezing of the crude oil, the function of the vibration being to prevent supercooling and possibly to keep the tubes from becoming choked. A process for the freezing out of wax fractions from crude oil is in fact well known.

Refining Oil Using Sound Waves. This is from British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report number 142. This is yet another SS lost technology.

nance of light and sound. His inventions, which he kept secret, synthesized vibrations into a machine capable of practical value. Some of his machines used rows of vibratory bars, all resonating at a frequency specific to the target material of the machine. Frequencies for hydrogen and oxygen where the targets of a water-based machine, for instance, which caused the cavitation of water using this resonance.

The short text of the British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report is reproduced here. It is clear from the text that it is Keely's theory, which is being used to distill oil.

From the text we are given to understand that SS alchemists are keeping this process to themselves, for themselves, on oil reserves that they themselves exclusively hold. The real question is what became of this technology? Certainly, if it is true, it would be of enormous benefit to the modern world. Is this one of those secret technologies held and kept by the post-war SS to be used as barter with the victorious Allied Powers? Or is this technology already in the hands of one or more of the Allies but being kept secret? Or was this technology given to an employee or consultant of a petroleum giant as a favor for work done during the war? Whatever happened, whatever this report is, fact, fiction or fable, no adequate explanation for it has been offered by the British or anyone else.

Dr. Ronald Richter will say a few words in this respect in an upcoming section.

SOURCES

1. British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report number 142, "Information Obtained From Targets Of Opportunity In The Sonthofen Area, no date given, pages 8 and 9, 32 Bryanston Square, London

29 Synthetic Production of Gasoline

Most everybody has heard that the Germans produced large volumes of gasoline and other petroleum products by chemically cracking coal during the war. Besides gasoline, diesel fuel, lubricating oils and greases were manufactured using this process. Huge underground refineries were rumored to be under construction as the war ended which would have allowed the Germans to fuel their war machine indefinitely. Following the war, this process of coal to gasoline conversion never seemed to materialize in spite of cyclic gasoline shortages which, naturally, threw doubt on the technical and economic feasibility of turning America's vast coal reserves into something other than polluting smoke-stack industry.

From time to time, this subject would re-emerge such as an article in The Dallas Morning News, dated Tuesday, September 4, 1990. This article was titled: "Scientists Seek To Study Nazi Paper" and contained all the often reported statements such as a post-war US plant in Louisiana, Mo. which used this German technology to produce gasoline at 1.6 cents per gallon. Mentioned in the story was a storehouse of German technical documents at Texas A&M University and a Professor Arnold Krammer.

The promise of a treasure of captured German documents was enough for me to attempt contact. Contact was established with Professor Krammer, Professor of Modern German History, as well as Dr. David Chappman, Curator of the Cushing Library, which housed the material. Both gentlemen were very gracious with their time. Professor Krammer sent me a

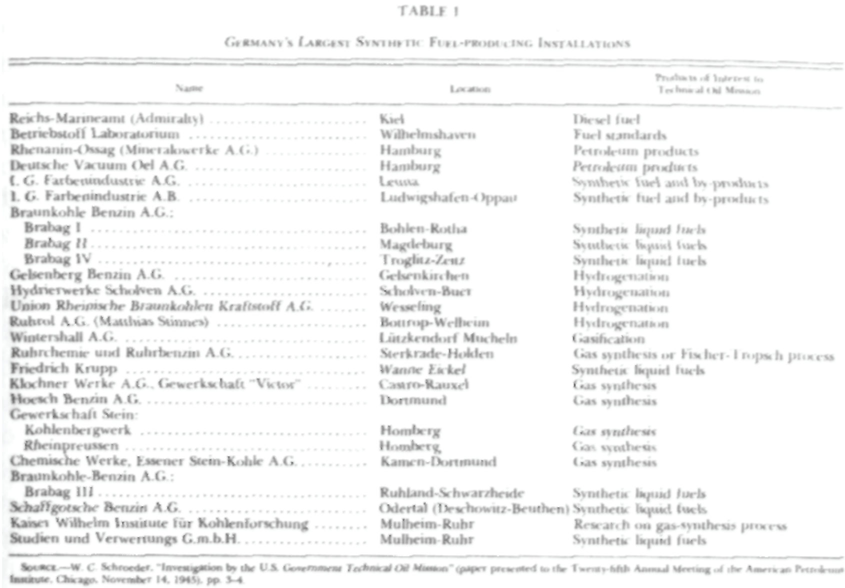
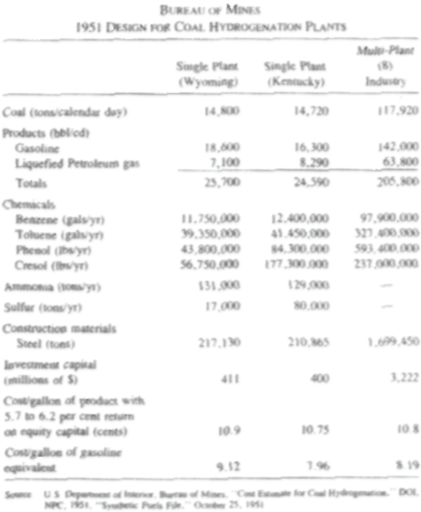


TABLE 1

GERMANY'S LARGEST SYNTHETIC FUEL-PRODUCING INSTALLATIONS

Name	Location	Products of Interest to Technical Oil Mission
Reichs-Marineamt (Admiralty)	Kiel	Diesel fuel
Betriebstoff Laboratorium	Wilhelmshaven	Fuel standards
Rhenanin-Ossag (Mineralowerke A.G.)	Hamburg	Petroleum products
Deutsche Vacuum Oel A.G.	Hamburg	*Petroleum products*
I. G. Farbenindustrie A.G.	Leuna	Synthetic fuel and by-products
I. G. Farbenindustrie A.B.	Ludwigshafen-Oppau	Synthetic fuel and by-products
Braunkohle Benzin A.G.:		
Brabag I	Bohlen-Rotha	Synthetic *liquid fuels*
Brabag II	Magdeburg	Synthetic liquid fuels
Brabag IV	Troglitz-Zeitz	Synthetic liquid fuels
Gelsenberg Benzin A.G.	Gelsenkirchen	Hydrogenation
Hydrierwerke Scholven A.G.	Scholven-Buer	Hydrogenation
Union *Rheinische Braunkohlen Kraftstoff A.G.*	Wesseling	Hydrogenation
Ruhrol A.G. (Matthias Stinnes)	Bottrop-Welheim	Hydrogenation
Wintershall A.G.	Lützkendorf Mucheln	Gasification
Ruhrchemie und Ruhrbenzin A.G.	Sterkrade-Holden	Gas synthesis or Fischer-Tropsch process
Friedrich Krupp	*Wanne Eickel*	Synthetic liquid fuels
Klochner Werke A.G., Gewerkschaft "Victor"	Castro-Rauxel	Gas synthesis
Hoesch Benzin A.G.	Dortmund	Gas synthesis
Gewerkschaft Stein:		
Kohlenbergwerk	Homberg	*Gas synthesis*
Rheinpreussen	Homberg	Gas synthesis
Chemische Werke, Essener Stein-Kohle A.G.	Kamen-Dortmund	Gas synthesis
Braunkohle-Benzin A.G.:		
Brabag III	Ruhland-Schwarzheide	Synthetic liquid *fuels*
Schaffgotsche Benzin A.G.	Odertal (Deschowitz-Beuthen)	Synthetic liquid fuels
Kaiser Wilhelm Institute für Kohlenforschung	Mulheim-Ruhr	Research on gas-synthesis process
Studien und Verwertungs G.m.b.H.	Mulheim-Ruhr	Synthetic liquid fuels

SOURCE.—W. C. Schroeder, "Investigation by the U.S. *Government Technical Oil Mission*" (paper presented to the Twenty-fifth Annual Meeting of the American Petroleum Institute, Chicago, November 14, 1945), pp. 3–4.


BUREAU OF MINES
1951 DESIGN FOR COAL HYDROGENATION PLANTS

	Single Plant (Wyoming)	Single Plant (Kentucky)	*Multi-Plant* (8) Industry
Coal (tons/calendar day)	14,800	14,720	117,920
Products (bbl/cd)			
Gasoline	18,600	16,300	142,000
Liquefied Petroleum gas	7,100	8,290	63,800
Totals	25,700	24,590	205,800
Chemicals			
Benzene (gals/yr)	11,750,000	12,400,000	97,900,000
Toluene (gals/yr)	39,350,000	41,450,000	327,400,000
Phenol (lbs/yr)	43,800,000	84,300,000	593,400,000
Cresol (lbs/yr)	56,750,000	177,300,000	237,000,000
Ammonia (tons/yr)	131,000	129,000	—
Sulfur (tons/yr)	17,000	80,000	—
Construction materials			
Steel (tons)	217,130	210,865	1,699,450
Investment capital (millions of $)	411	400	3,222
Cost/gallon of product with 5.7 to 6.2 per cent return on equity capital (cents)	10.9	10.75	10.8
Cost/gallon of gasoline equivalent	9.12	7.96	8.19

Source: U.S. Department of Interior, Bureau of Mines, "Cost Estimate for Coal Hydrogenation," DOI, NPC, 1951, "Synthetic Fuels File," October 25, 1951

Top: A partial list of German installations producing synthetic petroleum products from coal.

Bottom: A U.S. Bureau of Mines chart showing the actual cost of gasoline produce in their test facilities using the German Hydrogenation method in 1950's money.

letter and some publications explaining the German coal to oil conversion processes and events in the USA after the war.

Before the war there had been processes by which coal was cracked and converted to oil (and so gasoline and so forth). The Germans came up with two new methods for doing so which were an advance on previous methods.

The first method was developed by Friedrich Bergius and for which he won the Nobel Prize. It is sometimes called the "Bergius process" or the "hydrogenation process". It involves forcing a mixture of powdered coal, recycled oil, and a catalyst into a high-pressure vessel filled with hydrogen. This resulted in the liquefaction of the coal. The liquified coal was then separated into gasoline, middle oil and heavy oil. The final products were diesel fuel and gasoline. Four to five tons of coal was necessary to make a ton of gasoline[1].

The second method is often called the "Fischer-Tropsch process", after its inventors, Franz Fischer and Hans Tropsch. In this process, powdered coal was broken up by super heated steam to produce a mixture of hydrogen and carbon monoxide gases. This gas mixture was then purified to remove all sulfur compounds. It was then passed over a metal catalyst to produce low-octane gasoline and high-grade diesel oil as well as wax, the latter being further processed into lubricating oils. This process could be done at lower pressure and temperature than the Bergius process. And like the Bergius or hydrogenation process, it yielded one ton of petroleum product for about four or five tons of coal[2].

In fact, the Germans had 14 separate projects involving synthetic petroleum products made from coal with about 112 separate facilities of various sizes[3]. The plan was to relocate these facilities underground in bombproof shelters. At the cessation of hostilities, 2,708,000 square feet of underground facilities were planned for synthetic petroleum production. Only 689,000 square feet had been completed, however, leaving 2,019,000 under construction[3]. By German standards, underground synthetic petroleum production was not a large project. The SS planned a total of 11,298,000 square feet of underground facilities just for their own private use[4].

Unlike some other German secrets, it seems that the Allies, particularly the British and Americans, got all the information on synthetic petroleum product that they desired. As much as 175 tons of German documents regarding synthetic petroleum production fell into the hands of the Allies[5]. This information was translated, evaluated, and if appropriate, given to the major oil companies without cost[6]. Imagine, two whole new breakthrough energy technologies were simply handed to some of the most wealthy companies which have ever existed without the cost of research and development or even the cost for the patents.

The question arises, what did we do with this technology after the war? The answer is that in 1949 the Bureau of Mines built a demonstration coal conversion plant in Louisiana, Missouri. This facility used the Bergius or hydrogenation process as developed by I.G. Farben in Germany. For three years this plant remained in operation. They first tested various types of coal from all over the United States. After satisfying themselves about the method, they seemed to have focussed on improving the procedure itself. Defrayed by the sale of byproducts, the cost to produce a gallon of gasoline was 10.6 cents per gallon. This meant, at the time, a cost at the pump of about 15. or 16. cents per gallon. Unfortunately, this figure was about 25% higher than the cost of natural petroleum gasoline at the time.

This is the basic problem. At any given time it is cheaper to import crude oil or imported refined gasoline than it is to produce synthetic gasoline at home from coal. Given the flux in the crude oil price, nobody, no oil company, no government, wants to invest the money which large-scale conversion from coal to gasoline requires. The Louisiana, Missouri plant was shut down in 1953 by the Eisenhower Administration as a result of opposition to it from the oil industry itself[7].

The subject comes up, and probably will continue to come up, with each cyclic spike in gasoline prices. Perhaps, once the public realizes that this spike is cyclic and not an aberration, pressure will be placed on industry and the appropriate elected officials and a source of energy at a relatively stable price will finally be made available.

SOURCES

1. Krammer, Prof. Arnold, 1981, "Technology Transfer as War Booty: The U.S. Technical Oil Mission To Europe, 1945", page 69, Reprinted for private circulation from Technology And Culture, Vol.22, No.1, The Society for the History of Technology, The University of Chicago

2. ibid

3. Krammer, Prof. Arnold, 1982, "German Underground Industrial Facilities During World War 11", page 481, ASEE Annual Conference Proceedings.

4. ibid

5. Krammer, Prof. Arnold, 1981, page 97

6. Krammer, Prof. Arnold, 1981, page 110

7. Krammer, Prof. Arnold, 1982, page 467

30 Super Lubricants

You have probably seen the advertisements on late-night television for automobile super lubricants. These additives are touted as doing amazing things. Claims are made for increased gas milage with the addition of a small bottle of their product. Claims are made for reduced engine or transmission wear. Claims are made that an auto's engine will run after the motor oil has been drained out of it with the use of a super lubricant.

We already know the Germans invented synthetic oil during World War Two. They synthesized a standard-size oil molecule out of oil or even coal using one of two processes developed at that time. Naturally occurring crude oil is "cracked" into lighter oils, some of which can be used as motor oil. Even these oils, however, are really a mixture of longer and shorter chains of oil molecules. The viscosity index used to grade oils is, in part, just and average which reflects the average molecular chain length of a mixture of molecules. The German synthetic oil molecules were almost carbon copies of each other and this uniformity led to lubrication benefits for the user. Mobil Oil Company, for instance, used captured German technology to create a synthetic oil, Mobil-One, in the mid-1970s.

This is not the technology under discussion, however. What is under discussion is more than re-working existing oil molecules or even creating oils out of ester base products. What we are talking about is a treatment involving new chemicals.

Of course, these are products surrounded in proprietary secrecy. None of the companies making this class of lubricants advertises or even lists what their products contain. But a clue came from a competitor, Slick 50, which markets the best selling Teflon additive for automobile application. Their advertising compared their product to "chlorinated hydrocarbons", to which Slick 50 fared favorably in terms of bearing corrosion. So we learn that the product in question was some sort of chlorinated hydrocarbon.

These words rang a bell. The reference in question was titled "Secrets By The Thousands" by C. Lester Walker. It concerned astounding yet little-known developments made by the Germans during the war. Interestingly enough, it had appeared in Harper's Magazine. The date of the article is most significant. It is dated from October of 1946.

1946 was a time of good feelings. The war was over and we had won. The Russians were still technically our allies. The Cold War had not, as yet, materialized. There was a thaw in censorship and in the press. For a brief time, only months, not years, things about captured German technology were reported openly, almost proudly, as if to underscore our victory over people who could produce such wonders. The Harper's report was one of these. It described many things. One of these was a night vision device that allowed the viewer to see in darkness as if it was daytime. It ran on a small motor:

> "The diminutive generator—five inches across—stepped up current from an ordinary flashlight battery to 15,000 volts. It had a walnut-sized motor, which spun a rotor at 10,000 rpm—so fast that originally it had destroyed all lubricants with the great amount of ozone it produced. The Germans had developed a new grease: chlorinated paraffin oil. The generator then ran 3,000 hours!"[1]

Chlorinated paraffin oil certainly qualifies as a chlorinated hydrocarbon. There may be others.

Calls were made to each of the four or five companies making these products to ask, point blank, if this technology was of a German origin. All denied any connection to wartime Germany. One company spokesman whispered to me, as if telling a secret, that the technology came from NASA, the space agency. Somehow, their stories did not ring true.

A search of the technical literature of wartime Germany was done to see if my suspicions, and the Harper's article, could be verified.

Without too much difficulty a reference appeared. This was from the Combined Intelligence Objectives Subcommittee[2]. It comprised a report titled: "The Preparation Of Tetrahydrofuran Polymers As A Synthetic Lubricant For Metals".

This report was based upon an interview of Dr. Delfts of I.G. Farben, the largest chemical company in the world at the time. Dr. Delfts reported that tetrayhdrofuran polymers produced desirable properties as a lubricant including a high flash point (temperature at which it will burn), high viscosity index (resists thinning at high temperature), and extremely low pour point (lowest temperature at which it will flow). Polymers were produced from tetrahydrofuran using a catalyst. The best catalysts, it was found, were ferric chloride and thionyl chloride. These are the chlorinated hydrocarbons in question.

The report went on to describe high temperature applications of this product in conjunction with glycol and its esters as crankcase additives for automobile engines. These were surely the chlorinated hydrocarbons described in the Harper's article and in the competitor's advertising.

The CIOS report did not mention bearing wear nor did it endorse or dissuade the use of these additives for automobiles. The producers of these products all denied that they caused bearing corrosion. A maker of manual transmission fluid did mention chlorinated hydrocarbons at a website and seemed to indicate that they were not suitable for a closed system. It indicated that they were better in a vented system, one open to the air. I am not a chemist and cannot recommend or condemn these products. I can only report on their history.

As history, it is certainly safe to say that Dr. Delfts never envisioned his work on super lubricants as providing such wonder late-night info-mercial entertainment.

SOURCES

1. "Secrets By The Thousands", October, 1946, page 331, by C. Lester Walker

2. Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report, item no. 30, File no. XXX-70, November 15, 1945, "The Preparation Of Tetrahydrofuran Polymers As A Synthetic Lubricant For Metals".

31 What is Happening in Antarctica?

Recently, an anonymous letter was written to Scientific American describing something very odd. The report came out of Australia's Casey Station in Antarctica. Two women were attempting to ski across Antarctica when they were interrupted. A U.S. Navy Special Forces team, working out American Samoa, abducted the women, against their wishes, and under protest from the crew at the Australian Casey Station. The two adventurers were then held in seclusion for reasons never given[1].

What is going on here? Ufologists are always describing UFOs as originating in Antarctica. Certainly, the theme is familiar to everyone through science fiction movies. Some think Atlantis may be buried deep under the ice. Many nations currently have research bases in Antarctica. The German base at Neuschwabenland was active, at least on some level, during the Second World War and may have served as a last refuge for Nazi die-hards after the conflict.

Not only do these theories exist but there are all sorts of combinations of the theories mentioned above. Did the Germans locate their base in Antarctica because the Ahnenerbe, the SS racial-archeological organization, found evidence of a lost civilization? Or did the Germans or any of the other nationalities involved in Antarctica make contact with an extraterrestrial presence located on that continent, a theory recently revamped by Dr. Michael E. Salla[2].

Geologically speaking, Antarctica is almost split in half by a huge rift valley, which runs from the South Pole toward Africa, then up East Africa to the Dead

Sea. This entire rift valley is overflowing with geothermal activity. It was on this very rift valley that the Germans located their Antarctic base. Hot water ponds, named the Schumacher Ponds by the Germans, are teaming with algae, and found on surface rock deep within Antarctica. These ponds never freeze over. Interestingly enough, each pond is populated by a different species of algae, giving each pond a different color. It is not far-fetched to believe that a sustainable base could be located over one of these geothermal vents, especially deep within a large crevice or cave. Also located in a glacial environment, the Icelanders rely of geothermal energy to produce electricity for their daily needs. Why could not have inhabitants of Antarctica?

But recently much more strangeness has been uncovered in Antarctica than some old rumors, geothermal vents or two abducted women.

One strange thing is Lake Vostok. Lake Vostok is one of those poorly kept secrets that no government really wants to deny but, at the same time, doesn't really want to talk about. For example the Jet Propulsion Laboratory (JPL) announced on 1/24/01 that it has terminated all further study of Lake Vostok in Antarctica and deferred study, according to their spokeswoman Debra Shinteller, to the National Security Agency (NSA). The NSA is spook-central, hardly the type of organization one would think equipped to do a scientific study of a lake. But Lake Vostok is no ordinary lake.

Lake Vostok is located 300 miles from the South Pole in Antarctica near the Russian research station, Vostok. Evidently, for some time an international team has been carrying on research at this lake and it is exactly this research that JPL headed. The reason for this mystery becomes apparent as details of the lake emerge. Lake Vostok is not located on the surface rock as are the Schumacher Ponds. Lake Vostok is a very large subterranean lake situated over three-quarters of a mile beneath the Continental Ice Sheet. The lake is up to 2000 feet deep. Thermographic images from space yield a water temperature of 50 degrees Fahrenheit as an average with hot spots going up to 65 degrees. Such high temperatures could only be the result of geothermal activity.

What seems even more astounding is the fact that this lake was completely hidden from view. This is because there is a roof of ice over the lake, forming a dome, which is up to one-half a mile in height. This opaque dome admits enough sunlight during the summer months to allow for a strange, twilight world of continuous morning light. Lake Vostok is a lost world. It is a lost subterranean world so strange it is almost beyond the realm of science fiction writers. Of course JPL is interested in this lake for its unique strangeness. This environment, it seems, may duplicate or at least approximate a frozen moon of Jupiter, covered by a frozen sea and bottom-heated by geothermal energy. Isolated for millions of years, Lake Vostok could also provide some answers concerning the evolution of life on earth. Yet, these reasons alone cannot possibly account for the extreme secrecy evidenced by is take-over by the National Security Agency.

The reason for the NSA's involvement has nothing to do with biology and everything to do with physics. It seems that the lake has been scanned by low-level flights, which for some reason were looking for gravitational and magnetic anomalies. Admiral Byrd did the same thing in his short-lived 1946 Antarctic "invasion". The recent effort was probably related to something Byrd first uncovered. What they found was a huge magnetic anomaly covering the entire Southeast portion of the shore of the lake3. This anomaly's strength registered 1,000 nanoteslas of variance with the surrounding vicinity. One scientist jumped on this publicly and began to debunk its significance[4] but the fact remains that the best and most probably answer as to the origin of this vast magnetic disturbance is the presence of a massive amount of metal. Metal as in a buried city.

This brings us right back to the mystery-school of Antarctica. Is this metal the remains of Atlantis? Is it the underground city said by some to have been built by the Germans, Neu-Berlin? Is this an extraterrestrial base? With the NSA involved, the only thing for certain is that we won't be told the answer to this mystery anytime soon nor will we be allowed to visit the lake without U.S. Delta Orcs swooping down on us as they did with the two women skiers.

But besides Lake Vostok, there is a second strangeness going on in Antarctica. Unlike the Lake Vostok mystery, even you at home can monitor this strangeness.

Countries maintaining Antarctic bases usually do geological research. Among the instruments employed are seismographs. Besides seismographs in Antarctica itself, neighboring countries also monitor seismic events in the frozen continent. Recently, researcher Rainer Daehnhardt, who knows a great deal about Antarctica, sent me a printout of a German language website[5]. Strange and interesting things are explored here, among them the work of two researchers, Kawi Schneider and Christian Saal. What they uncovered and presented are actual Antarctic seismographs that are quite out of the ordinary. These charts show a 24 hour cycle, broken down hour by hour on the vertical axis and minute by minute on the horizontal, so that for any given hour a line running from left to right yields the intensity and duration of earth movement. In fact, this web-site offers links to current seismological monitoring in real time so that the viewer can actually see what typical day in Antarctica looks like in terms of earth movement. What we are talking about, however, is anything but typical.

I would like to first call your attention to these seismological graphs and then repeat what Christian Saal has to say about them.

The first graph is a typical day in Antarctica.

The second, dated 3/19/03, shows massive, intense long-wave movement which is quite unnatural.

The third, dated 3/24/03, shows a strong earthquake for comparison.

The fourth, dated 3/20/03, shows the long-wave activity and a sudden, powerful jolt at 17 hours, 20 minutes.

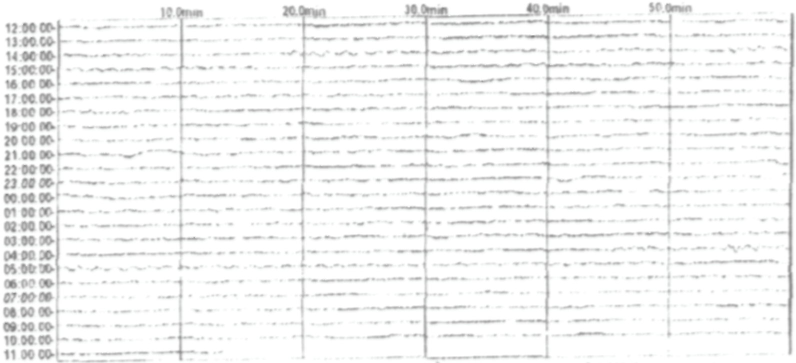
The fifth, dated 3/21/03, shows a somewhat less powerful jolt at 20 hours, 20 minutes.

The Americans at the Amundsen South Pole station took these readings. This station actually consists of three stations, according to the author, which are located surrounding the old German area called Neuschwabenland.

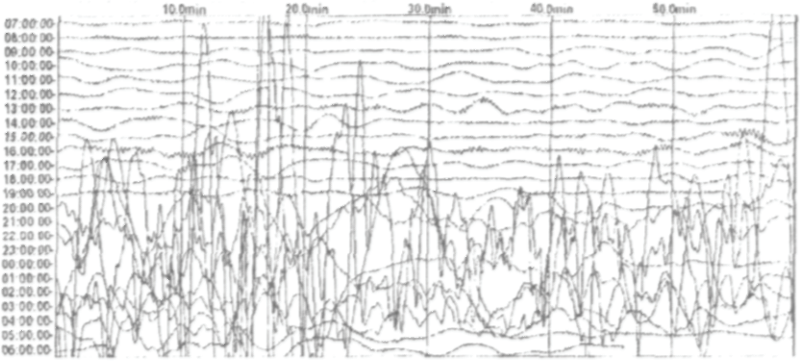
Christian Saal's interpretation is as follows. The first graph is a typical day, a baseline with which to compare abnormal graphs. Graph two shows tremendous long-wave energy, which is unnatural. Saal explains this in a surprising way. He says this energy is being produced at the German facility of Neuschwabenland, apparently by Germans still inhabiting the facility. Christian Saal goes on to suggest that this energy is defensive in nature, an energy umbrella that has been activated by the Germans there in response to an attack.

Graph three shows that graph two is unique, since this is what a naturally occurring earthquake looks like.

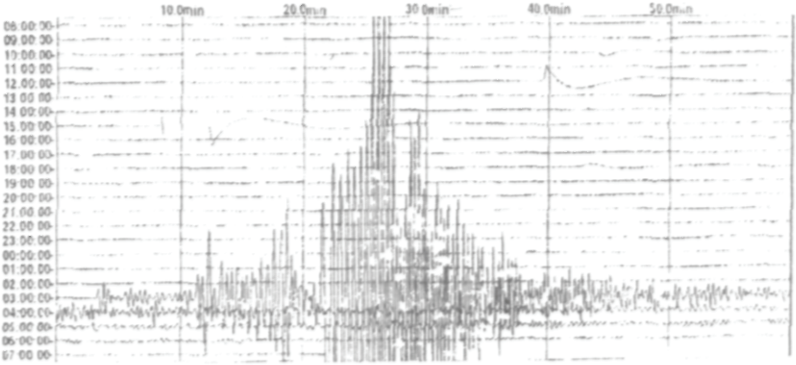
Graph four again shows the long-wave energy but also shows a sharp anomaly at 17.20 hours. Saal interprets this to be an American



PMSA.00/LHZ Start Date:03/23/03 Filter: band-pass Displacement Magnification = 3000.00 @ 0.020 Hz



SPA.00/LHZ Start Date:03/19/03 Filter: band-pass Displacement Magnification = 3000.00 @ 0.020 Hz

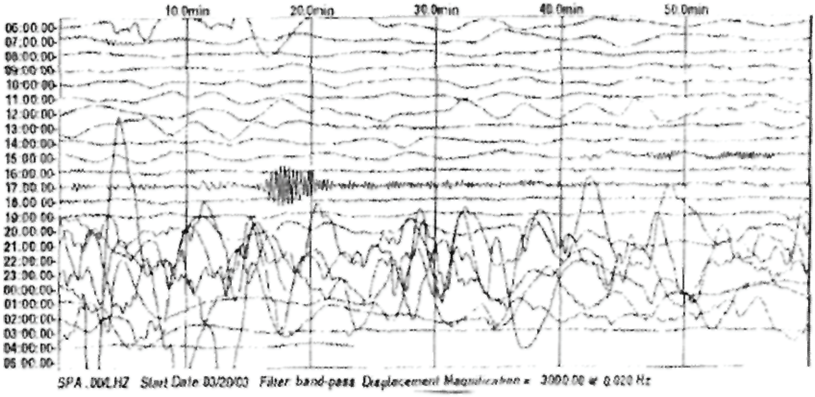


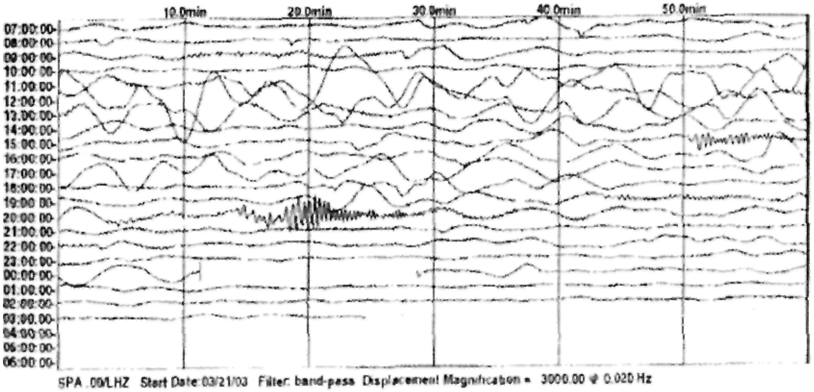
SNZO.00/LHZ Start Date:03/24/03 Filter: band-pass Displacement Magnification = 3000.00 @ 0.020 Hz

Seismological Antarctica.
Top: Typical, quiet day in Antarctica.

Middle: South Pole gone wild! On 3/19/03 there was massive iong wave movement. Is this a Tesla-type standing wave (scalar wave) weapon?

Bottom: This is a strong earthquake, 03/24/03. Notice the difference between this graph and the one above.





Seismological Antarctica.
Top: Dated 3/20/03, this is a graph of a sudden, powerful jolt at 17 hours, 20 minutes.

Bottom: Finally, on 3/21/03, there was a somewhat less powerful jolt at 20 hours and 20 minutes. Was this the U.S. test of an atomic bunker buster bomb and a somewhat less powerful conventional bunker buster on the next day?

attack on Neuschwabenland using the new boring atomic weapon announced at the time of the Iraq invasion. Look at the date on this graph, 3/20/03, the very day the United States began its massive bombardment of Baghdad, the start of the second Iraq war. Saal goes further in suggesting that the Iraq bombing served as a cover, it diverted the world's attention, so that nuclear weapons could be again used in Antarctica.

Evidently, Neuschwabenland's defenses held because as seen in the fourth graph, another, similar but smaller jolt was experienced in this area. Christian Saal again goes back to the words of the Americans who designed "leaks" talking about a MOAB bomb at this time. The MOAB, called popularly "Mother Of All Bombs" is a conventional explosive, an advanced form of the fuel-air bomb designed by Dr. Zippermeyr.

I really don't know if Christian Saal's interpretation is correct or not. What is most important to me is that there is real data here that shows something unusual and unexplained by "the authorities". This hard seismological data, an acknowledged mystery lake in the center of Antarctica, and the interjection of the National Security Agency all point to something as yet unexplained happening on our southernmost continent.

SOURCES

1. "The Secret Of Lake Vostok, William P. Eigles, Atlantis Rising (magazine), number 29, page 60

2. Salla, Michael E., Ph.D., 2003, Foundations for Globally managing Extraterrestrial Affairs-The Legacy of the Nazi Germany-Extraterrestrial Connection, Research Study #6, www.exopolitics.org

3. "The Secret Of Lake Vostok, William P. Eigles, page 60

4. ibid

5. www.unglaublichkeiten.info

32 Large German Mystery Rockets
"The Hammer of Thor"

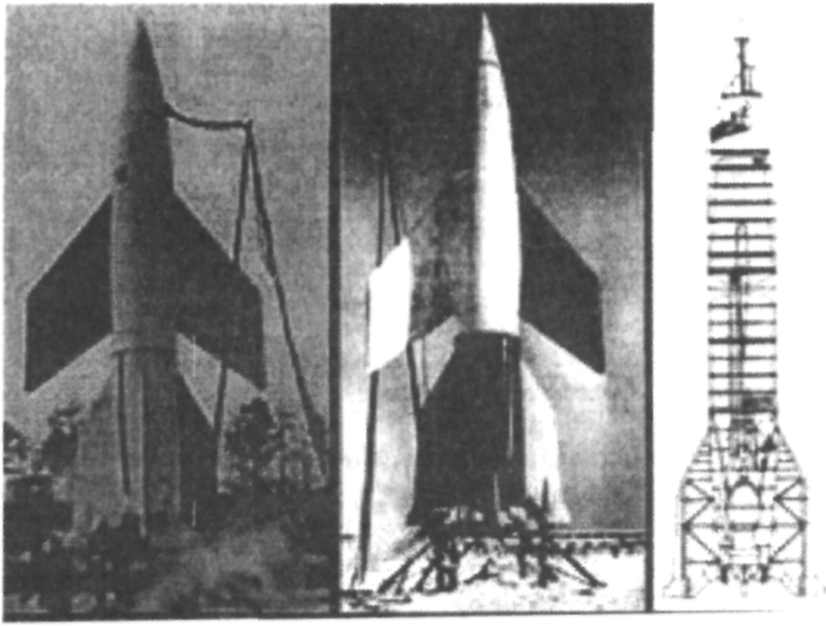
By the term "Large German Mystery Rockets" what is meant here are rockets larger than the V-1 or V-2 with which we are all familiar.

To the best of my knowledge, the first people to raise the possibility that the German ever built anything larger than the V-2 were Colonel Howard A. Buechner and Kapitan Wilhelm Bernhart in 1988[1].

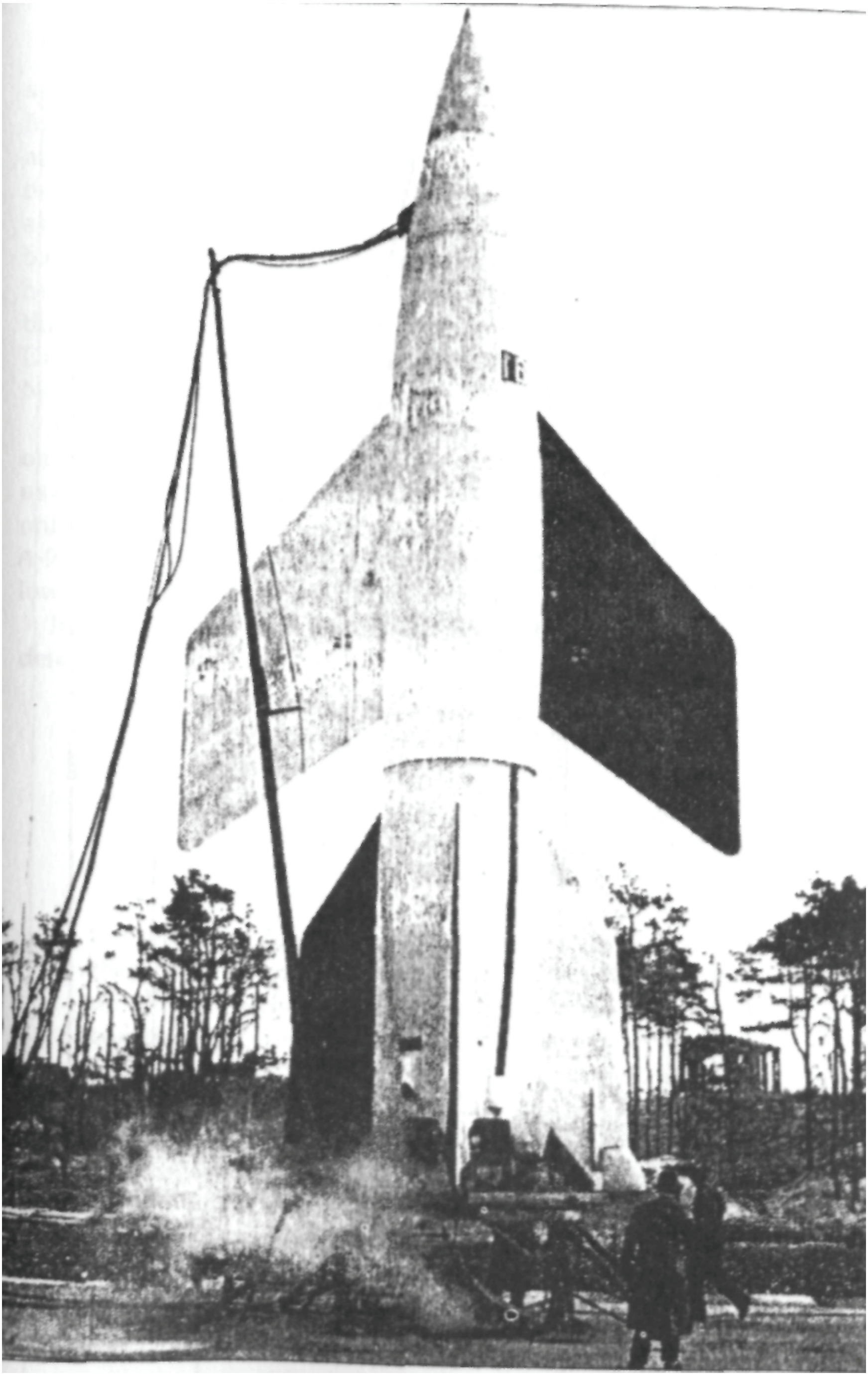
Colonel Buechner was a U.S. Army medical doctor and later Professor of Medicine at Tulane University and Emeritus Professor of Medicine at Louisiana State University. During the war, he was among the first Americans to enter Dachau concentration camp.

Kapitan Wilhelm Bernhart is an alias. The reason for the use of an alias is obvious as we assess his resume. Bernhart was a German officer who served aboard the famous U-530. U-530 surrendered, not in May of 1945 when the war in Europe ended, but on July 10, 1945 at Mar del Plata, Argentina. The nature of this U-boat and its mission have been the subject of much speculation and controversy. Kapitan Bernhardt is now a U.S. citizen and has been engaged in commercial shipping for 32 years.

The nature of the V-2 controversy starts with its time frame. Dr. Werhner von Braun and his rocket team finished work on the V-2 in August of 1943. After that, the V-2 was taken to the vicinity of Nordhausen in Thuringia. There, in a vast underground factory, it was mass-produced. The question for us is what in the world occupied Dr. von Braun's time between August of 1943 and May of 1945 when he surrendered to the United States military?



Pictures of the A4-b "Bastard" under testing as the war closed. This winged V-2 glided down to its target, increasing its range. The "Bastard" was a halt way measure between the A-9 and the A-4. There is an Enlargement of the A4-b on the following page. On the page following the A-4b enlargement is a diagram of the A-9/A-10. Note how the A-9 is embedded inside the cowling of the A-10. Also, note the lengths of the two rockets and compare these with the prisoner of war testimony.



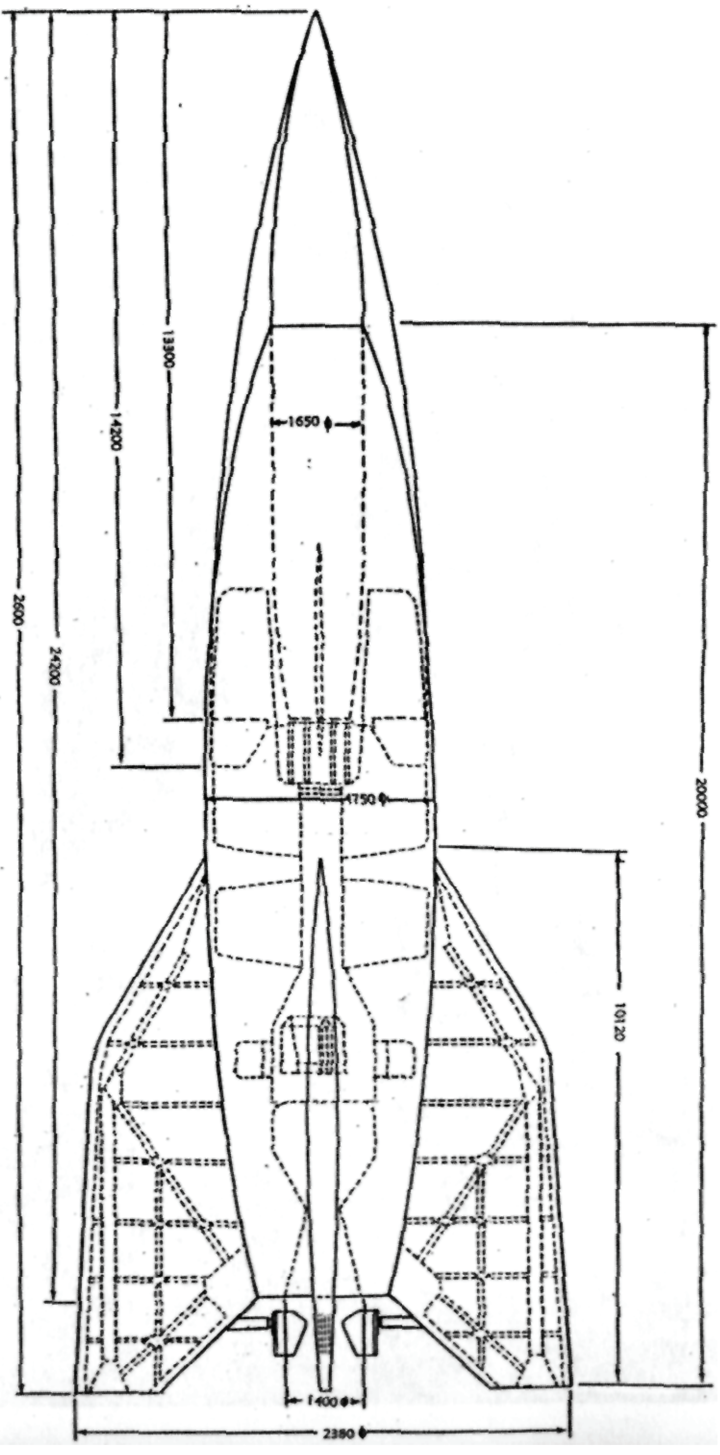

13300
14200
24200
2600
1650 ϕ
4750 ϕ
20000
10120
1400 ϕ
2380 ϕ

Figure 2.—The A-10 rocket.

We are all familiar with Dr. Werhner von Braun. He was one of our space heros. He, more than anyone else on the planet, was responsible for the trip we earthlings took to the moon in 1969. We remember him as an intelligent, articulate, and energetic scientist and as advocate for the space program. Returning to the wartime situation in late 1943, we again ask ourselves if a man such as this would have simply kicked back and rested on his laurels after developing the V-2 or would he have gone on to other projects? Officially, we are told that he did just this; he sat on his butt for twenty months, doing nothing. And even if Dr. von Braun wanted to kickback and do nothing, do you think the Nazi government would allow him to do so? This is not likely.

What is more likely, much more likely, is that he and his team went on to the next rocket slated for development, the A-9/A-10. Most of us are familiar with that rocket also even though we are told it existed only on paper. It was a huge, two stage rocket. The second stage, the A-9, resembled a modified V-2, which already existed but the larger, lower stage and to be designed and built.

In 1989 the two aforementioned writers, Buechner and Bernhart, described rumors of this project:

"Finally, there was the A-10, the most advanced missile in the series. It was a massive, supersonic rocket with a high stratospheric trajectory, which was designed for Trans -Atlantic bombardment. It had an estimated range of 2800 miles. It was actually a two-stage rocket consisting of a booster and payload similar in principle to the space shuttles of today. Officially the A-10 was never brought to production. However, there are persistent rumors that the A-10 or an even larger intercontinental ballistic missile was produced, although a total of only four were completed. It was called the "Hammer of Thor" and nicknamed The "America Rocket" since it was intended to be fired at major cities in the U.S., such as Washington, Boston, New York and Philadelphia. Four rockets are said to have been launched from the research base at Peenemuende just before the rocket center was captured by Russian soldiers. Three missiles were test fired into the Atlantic Ocean and one was sent into orbit or into outer space for unknown reasons."[2]

In one sense we do know what became of the "Hammer of Thor". Hollywood picked up on the provocative description and used it as the basis of an X-File episode. The plot had nothing to do with a mystery missile, wallowed in sentiment, and was otherwise totally forgettable.

But there is evidence that actual rockets, of the type described by Buechner and Bernhardt, were actually built by the Germans and flown. This voluminous evidence has been produced by three German researchers and published in German language[34]. The evidence that they present is based upon eyewitness testimony of several individuals, but it does not end there. These researchers have some actual photographic evidence and professional photo-interpretation that supports this hypothesis. The evidence has convinced me of the validity of their hypothesis: that the A-9/A-10 rocket was actually built and flown. It is sincerely hoped that anyone deeply interested in this topic who can read German language will go to the books referenced and experience this discovery "first-hand" as the author's tell it. I will not even try to translate and regurgitate their data, second-hand. What I will do is to describe some proof for the existence of this rocket that comes from English language sources.

For this evidence we will go to the U.S. government itself, in the form of a document titled: "Headquarters, United States Strategic Air Forces In Europe Office Of The Director Of Intelligence An Evaluation Of German Capabilities In 1945", or as it has been already called, the "Rosetta Stone". The reality of each and every weapon's system described in this document is proven by a sentence in the first paragraph of this report that reads:

"No consideration is given to those for which there is lacking evidence of possible use for some time to come".

In other words, these are weapons in which we can expect the enemy to employ; now, yet there may be others in the distant future.

After describing the V-2, section 2.b. describes "larger rockets":

"Larger rockets (68 feet in length as against 45 feet) are known to exist, and may appear in small quantities during the year. They would have a considerably larger warhead".

The 45-foot rocket they are describing was the V-2. A 68-foot rocket is officially unknown, but here it is not only acknowledged to have existed but a warning is being posted to the Allied military to watch out for this weapon. It should be mentioned again that this report does not contain speculation. This report is a distillation of intelligence from many sources concerning concrete threats to the Allied war effort. But the question remains, what could this weapon be?

Here are the facts that we are told. It is a rocket. It is 68 feet long. It was produced in small quantities. It has a considerably larger warhead, larger payload, than the V-2. What fits this description?

The one thing that fits this description best is the first stage of the A-9/A-10. The first stage of this project was never built according to official history. The second stage, the A-9, looked like a somewhat modified V-2 (A-4) rocket with longer, swept-back wings. The diagram of the A-9/A-10 shows us that the A-10 was a short, stocky rocket whose upper half encased the A-9.

According to reliable sources, the A-9/A-10, together, stood 30 meters, about 90 feet, in height[5]. The A-9, the second stage, is 45 feet long. If the first stage, the A-10, is 68 feet long, the total length of the rocket would be 113 feet. But the second stage A-9 is set inside the cowling of the A-10 with approximately only half of its surface showing (see diagram). Half of 45 is 22.5 feet. If we add the correct figures together, 68 feet for the A-10 and 22.5 feet for the portion of the A-9, which can be seen, we get the figure of 90.5 feet. This is a good approximation of the height of the combined A-9/A-10. In reality, the 68-foot rocket described in the government report can not be a description of anything other than the A-10.

One more point. The government intelligence report says that these rockets "are known to exist". This obviously means that they were built, not on paper, but in metal. The government intelligence report also says that they "may appear in small quantities during the year". The government is not talking about capturing these rockets at this point in time. The words "may appear" really means "may fly". For a description of the lift-off of the A-9/A-10 please see the sources[3] and[4] listed below.

But if the A-10 was actually built, would not there be some sort of confirmation on the ground from the German rocket scientists themselves? Of course there should be testimony concerning this but it seems that all the testimony was in the negative. The German rocket scientists denied making rockets beyond the V-2. Now, we know that these German scientists were under extreme pressure, pressure generated by the cold war, to do and say exactly what their new employers and benefactors, the government of the United States of America, said they should say. Most of these same scientists, for instance, denied that German flying discs were built during the war. This claim has now turned out to be completely false. Time and research work have put a chink in this cold war propaganda armor.

The question for us here is if there is a chink regarding the A-10? Is there any German source that affirms its existence? Recently, such a source has been found. Not only was such a German source found, it was heavily relied upon by the intelligence agencies of the United States of America. As with many sources within government itself, this one was found by accident, while researching something else.

The topic in question then was the "V-3". A "V" weapon was purely a political designation. "V" stood for Vergeltung which means "vengeance", perhaps better expressed in the vernacular, "payback". It seems there were several weapons on their way to being designated as the V-3. A F.O.I.A. request was made concerning the V-3 since the name appeared in a government index.

The government's source was declassified in 1993 and was a German prisoner of war who fell into the hands of the U.S. Seventh Army[5]. A date stamp indicates this was on or about December 14, 1944. The prisoner was a disgruntled German who had tried to immigrate to Australia before the war but was drafted before this could take place. He was made a paratrooper and later served as a field chemist. He was caught listening to a BBC broadcast and as punishment he was sent to Peenemuende in March of 1943 and placed under the auspices of the Luftwaffe. He was given work described as "dangerous" to complete his punishment. He was later assigned to Nancy, France, where he deserted and contacted U.S. forces.

The information this prisoner provided on Peenemuende was quite wide-ranging, including descriptions of the hardware being developed there, personnel, maps, organizational information, and security information. The prisoner described the V-3 as follows:

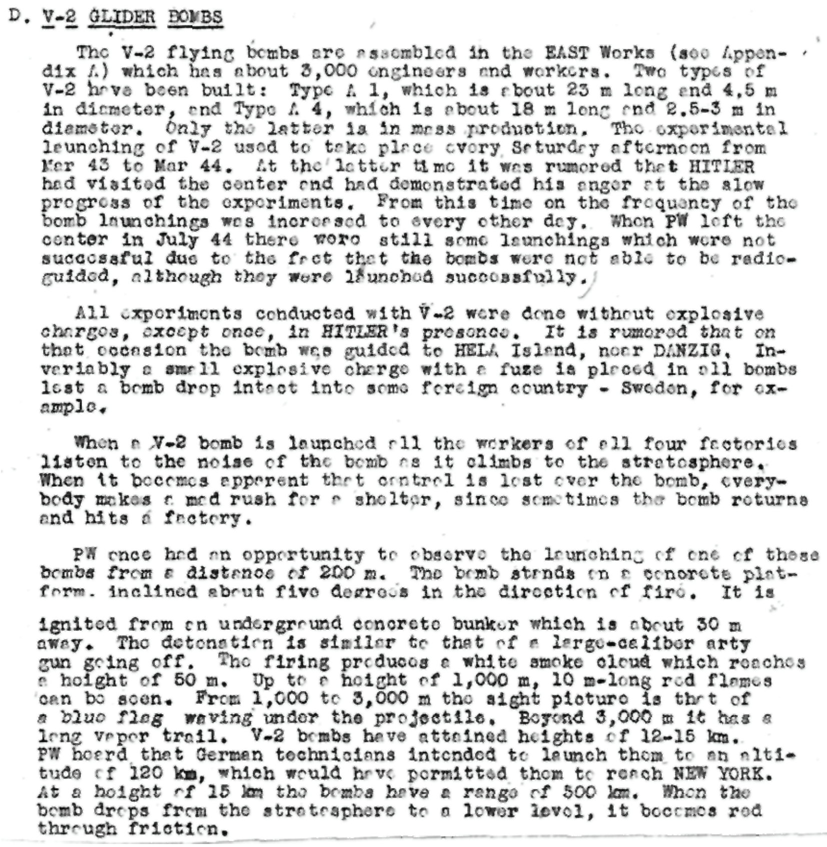
"d) V-3 This is a radio-controlled glider bomb launched by a HE 177 and is intended to be guided into enemy bomber formations. PW, who personally timed it, noted that it remained in the air seven minutes. When PW left PEENEMUENDE in July 44 the bombs were not yet considered satisfactory sometimes dropping into the sea before the seven minutes had elapsed. He believes that this weapon may now have a higher number in the V series."

This little description is important because it will tie in with information about this missile developed from another source, which will be discussed later. The big surprise coming from this F.O.I.A. request did not come from any disclosure concerning the V-3, however, but concerning something the prisoner described under another section, "V-2 Glider Bombs".

In this section the same prison describes two different types of V-2s. One is called the A-4 and is described as about 18 meters long and 2.5-3 meters in diameter. This is the 45-foot V-2 of which we are familiar. But there is a second rocket present. This one is called "Type A 1" It is described as being about 23 meters long and 4.5 meters in diameter. Only the smaller, 18 meter V-2 was in mass production according to the report. The prisoner states that V-2s have attained a height of 12-15 kilometers in altitude. At that altitude, 15 kilometers, its range is said to be 500 kilometer. This is long but otherwise not surprising. What is surprising is that the prisoner says that he heard that technicians intended to launch "them" to an altitude of 120 kilometers, "which would have permitted them to reach NEW YORK." The difference between 15 and 120 kilometers is considerable. Obviously, the difference is the difference between the two rockets under discussion with the higher altitude and range going to the larger rocket.

How big was this larger rocket? Please look at the diagram of the A-9/A-10. A 23-meter rocket is about 70 feet long. Likewise, the diameter, 4.3 meters, corresponds to "about" the dimensions of the A-10 and the source, the prisoner, does use the word "about" in describing these dimensions. The target discussed, New York City, indicates its range and this also corresponds to the A-10.

Now we come to the name given it by the prisoner. He lumps it together with the V-2, indicating that it was a second version of that weapon which was not yet in mass production. He calls it or it is called in this report "Type A 1". Note that there is no hyphen between



D. V-2 GLIDER BOMBS

The V-2 flying bombs are assembled in the EAST Works (see Appendix A) which has about 3,000 engineers and workers. Two types of V-2 have been built: Type A 1, which is about 23 m long and 4.5 m in diameter, and Type A 4, which is about 18 m long and 2.5-3 m in diameter. Only the latter is in mass production. The experimental launching of V-2 used to take place every Saturday afternoon from Mar 43 to Mar 44. At the latter time it was rumored that HITLER had visited the center and had demonstrated his anger at the slow progress of the experiments. From this time on the frequency of the bomb launchings was increased to every other day. When PW left the center in July 44 there were still some launchings which were not successful due to the fact that the bombs were not able to be radio-guided, although they were launched successfully.

All experiments conducted with V-2 were done without explosive charges, except once, in HITLER's presence. It is rumored that on that occasion the bomb was guided to HELA Island, near DANZIG. Invariably a small explosive charge with a fuze is placed in all bombs lest a bomb drop intact into some foreign country - Sweden, for example.

When a V-2 bomb is launched all the workers of all four factories listen to the noise of the bomb as it climbs to the stratosphere. When it becomes apparent that control is lost over the bomb, everybody makes a mad rush for a shelter, since sometimes the bomb returns and hits a factory.

PW once had an opportunity to observe the launching of one of these bombs from a distance of 200 m. The bomb stands on a concrete platform, inclined about five degrees in the direction of fire. It is

ignited from an underground concrete bunker which is about 30 m away. The detonation is similar to that of a large-caliber arty gun going off. The firing produces a white smoke cloud which reaches a height of 50 m. Up to a height of 1,000 m, 10 m-long red flames can be seen. From 1,000 to 3,000 m the sight picture is that of a blue flag waving under the projectile. Beyond 3,000 m it has a long vapor trail. V-2 bombs have attained heights of 12-15 km. PW heard that German technicians intended to launch them to an altitude of 120 km, which would have permitted them to reach NEW YORK. At a height of 15 km the bombs have a range of 500 km. When the bomb drops from the stratosphere to a lower level, it becomes red through friction.

This is from a U.S. Army document, declassified 7-1 3-93, titled: Ref No 579, MU 500, CSDIC (West), Seventh Army APO 758 US Army. A prisoner of war, a chemist, tells of work being done in Peenemuende around March, 1943 (over two years before the end of the war). Please note his reference to tow types of V-2s, the A-4 and the A-1. From the description given, we can see that this "A-1" reference is a corruption of the A-10 or a censored deletion of the word by the U.S. Army so it would not surface in a search of records

A and 1. Considering the description in its totality, it can be argued that this "Type A 1" is a mistake or a typographical error or a deliberate deception—an attempt at a cover-up. All this was done simply by omitting one zero. This rocket's true designation certainly should have been given as Type A-10.

This prisoner had no reason to lie. His other information was mostly very accurate. There was no attempt on the part of the U.S. intelligence to hedge his testimony (in case it proved false) as was their most common practice. The U.S. Seventh Army believed it was getting the best information this particular individual could supply. Shouldn't we also? The A-10 was a reality but produced in limited quantity.

SOURCES

1. Buechner, Howard A. Col. and Kapitan Wilhelm Bernhardt, 1989, pages 286-289, Hitler's Ashes, Thunderbird Press, Inc., Metairie, Louisiana

2. Buechner, Howard A. Col. and Kapitan Wilhelm Bernhardt, 1989, pages 162-163

3. Mayer, Edgar and Thomas Mehner, 2002, Die Atombombe und das Dritte Reich Das Geheimnis des Drieiecks Arnstadt-Wechmar-Ohrdruf, Jochen Kopp Verlag, Rottenburg

4. Georg, Friedrich, 2003, Hitlers Siegeswaffen Band 2 Star Wars 1947 Band 2, Teil B, Amun-Verlag, Schleusingen

5. MU 500, CSDIC (WEST), SEVENTH ARMY APO 758 US ARMY, reference No. 579, PEEMUENDE EXPERIMENTAL CENTER (KARLSHAGEN), December 14, 1944, Declassified Authority NNO750122, 7/13/93

Note: There are two new books in German language describing in even more detail the reality of the A-10:

A. Georg, Friedrich, 2004, Hitlers Siegeswaffen Band 2: Star Wars 1947 Teilband B: Von der Amerikarakete zur Orbitalstation-Deustschlands Streben nach interkontinentalwaffen und das erste Weltraumprogram, Amun-Verlag, Schleusingen

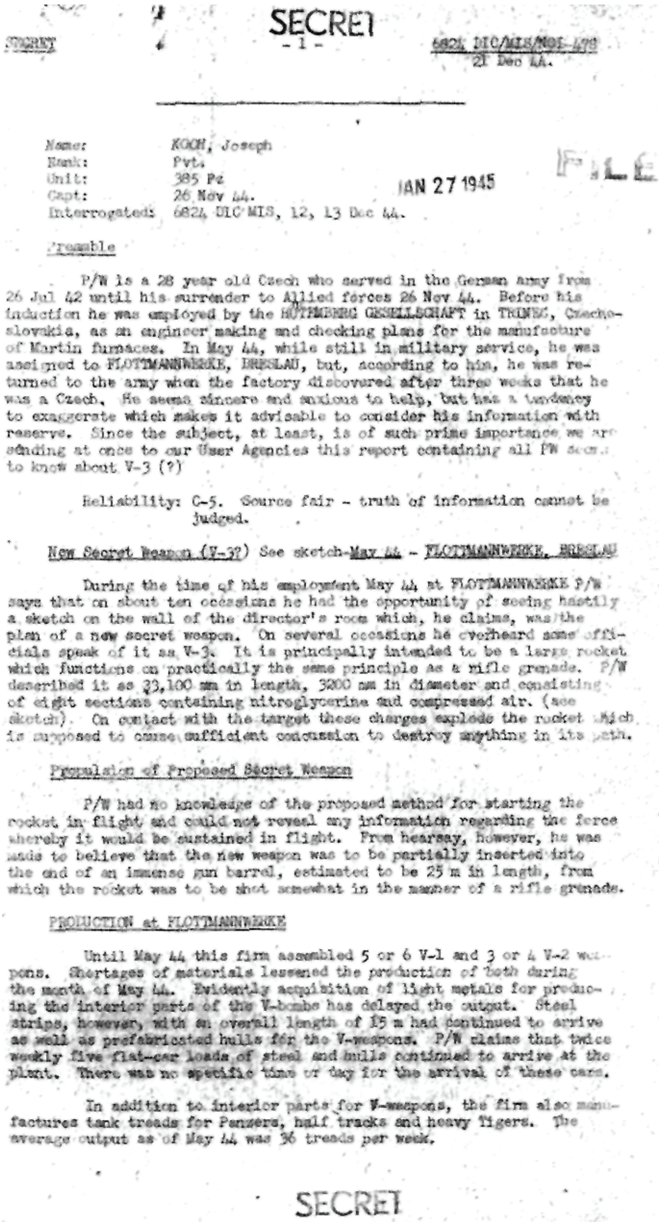
B. Georg, Friedrich and Thomas Mehner, 2004, Atomziel New York Geheime Grossraketen-und Raumfahrtprojekte des Dritten Reiches, Jochen Kopp Verlag, Rottenburg

33 Yet Another "V-3" Rocket

As mentioned earlier, when one speaks of the "V-3" one never knows what the specific response will be. There have been so many weapons called by so many people the V-3. Examples of these are the Hochdruckpumpe, the high pressure cannon, the Me-262 jet fighter/bomber, one of many German flying discs, a further development of the Henschel HS-293 for purposes other than floating targets and various missiles and rockets under development by the Germans at the time. It is one of these latter rockets that is the subject of this report.

While the report described above did mention the V-3, a much better report came bundled up with various other reports under the heading of "Werwolf"[1]. (There is just no figuring out the government's filing system.)

The informant in this case was a prisoner of war, a Czech of German ancestry named Joseph Koch. Koch was an engineer who was assigned in May of 1944 to the Flottmannwerke in Breslau. He worked there for three weeks before it was learned that he was a Czech, which, somehow, made him ineligible for continued employment at Flottmannwerke so he was returned to the Army. During his three-week stint at Flottmannwerke he had access, on about ten occasions, to the director's office. On the wall of that office was a diagram of a new rocket, which he overheard officials speak of as the "V-3". But before describing Flottmannwerke or the V-3 more fully, the reader should be made aware of the unique circumstances of the plant's site itself, Breslau.



SECRET

SECRET - 1 - 6824 DIC/MIS/M01-478
21 Dec 44.

FILE

JAN 27 1945

Name: KOCH, Joseph
Rank: Pvt.
Unit: 385 Pz
Capt: 26 Nov 44.
Interrogated: 6824 DIC MIS, 12, 13 Dec 44.

Preamble

P/W is a 28 year old Czech who served in the German army from 26 Jul 42 until his surrender to Allied forces 26 Nov 44. Before his induction he was employed by the HÜTTENBERG GESELLSCHAFT in TRINEC, Czechoslovakia, as an engineer making and checking plans for the manufacture of Martin furnaces. In May 44, while still in military service, he was assigned to FLOTTMANNWERKE, BRESLAU, but, according to him, he was returned to the army when the factory discovered after three weeks that he was a Czech. He seems sincere and anxious to help, but has a tendency to exaggerate which makes it advisable to consider his information with reserve. Since the subject, at least, is of such prime importance we are sending at once to our User Agencies this report containing all PW seems to know about V-3 (?)

Reliability: C-5. Source fair - truth of information cannot be judged.

New Secret Weapon (V-3?) See sketch-May 44 - FLOTTMANNWERKE, BRESLAU

During the time of his employment May 44 at FLOTTMANNWERKE P/W says that on about ten occasions he had the opportunity of seeing hastily a sketch on the wall of the director's room which, he claims, was the plan of a new secret weapon. On several occasions he overheard some officials speak of it as V-3. It is principally intended to be a large rocket which functions on practically the same principle as a rifle grenade. P/W described it as 33,100 mm in length, 3200 mm in diameter and consisting of eight sections containing nitroglycerine and compressed air. (see sketch). On contact with the target these charges explode the rocket which is supposed to cause sufficient concussion to destroy anything in its path.

Propulsion of Proposed Secret Weapon

P/W had no knowledge of the proposed method for starting the rocket in flight and could not reveal any information regarding the force whereby it would be sustained in flight. From hearsay, however, he was made to believe that the new weapon was to be partially inserted into the end of an immense gun barrel, estimated to be 25 m in length, from which the rocket was to be shot somewhat in the manner of a rifle grenade.

PRODUCTION at FLOTTMANNWERKE

Until May 44 this firm assembled 5 or 6 V-1 and 3 or 4 V-2 weapons. Shortages of materials lessened the production of both during the month of May 44. Evidently acquisition of light metals for producing the interior parts of the V-bombs has delayed the output. Steel strips, however, with an overall length of 15 m had continued to arrive as well as prefabricated hulls for the V-weapons. P/W claims that twice weekly five flat-car loads of steel and hulls continued to arrive at the plant. There was no specific time or day for the arrival of these cars.

In addition to interior parts for V-weapons, the firm also manufactures tank treads for Panzers, half tracks and heavy Tigers. The average output as of May 44 was 36 treads per week.

SECRET

This is the cover page of a secret intelligence report. It is the testimony of a young German-Czech engineer who stumbled upon at least one of Dr. Hans Kammler's pet projects. Pehaps Kammler was building a second long range rocket or series of rockets in his eastern sphere of influence centered upon the Kammler Group Headquarters neat Pilsen/Prague. Was this an SS empire within an empire?

Breslau was a city in the German state of Silesia. Silesia was the eastern-most state or Provence within the German Reich. Breslau was a large city in the west-central part of Silesia that contained, for instance, a large governmental presence and a university. Breslau and this entire Silesian region were also somewhat of a center in the German testing and development of secret weaponry. As the Soviets pushed westward at the end of the war, Breslau became isolated. The Reich propaganda of the times called it as "Fortress Breslau". In fact, it held against the Soviets surprisingly well. Hitler Youth learned new defense tactics during the siege and formed a major component in the defense of Breslau. Hitler Youth were so successful that some of their leaders were flown to Berlin to organize the defense of that city. In fact, Breslau held out against the Soviets longer than Berlin held out. But today neither Silesia nor Breslau no longer exists.

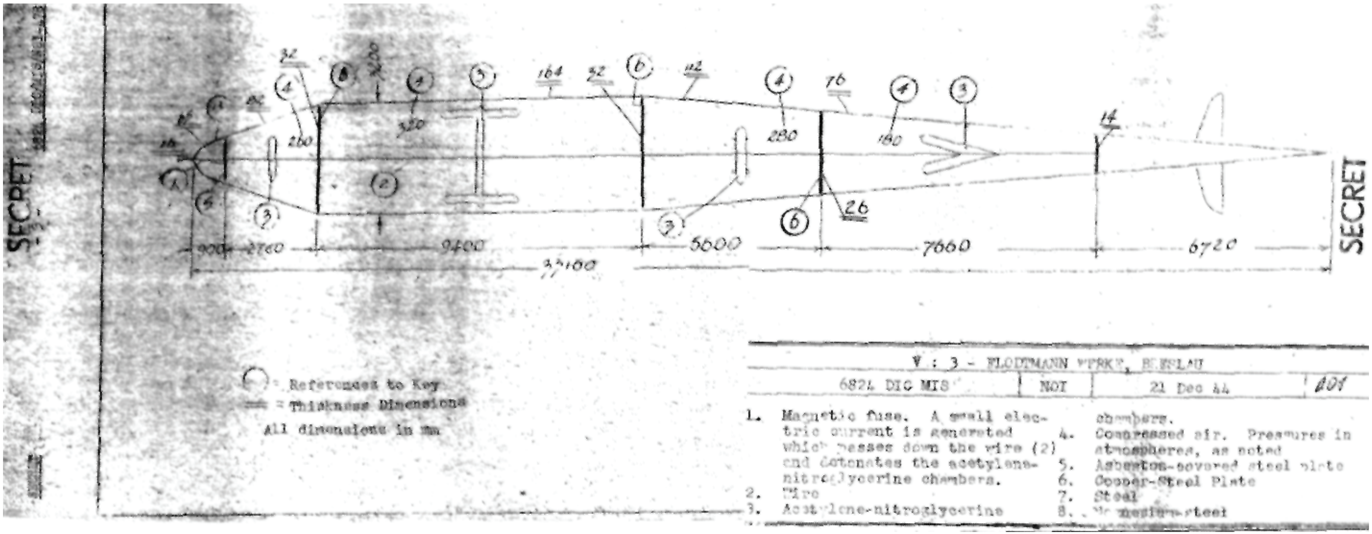
After the war all of Silesia was ceded to Poland and became part of that country. The Germans living in Breslau as well as the remainder of Silesia were all relocated west into the Soviet zone of East Germany. The German population of Silesia and Breslau were entirely replaced, almost overnight by Poles. This movement of peoples brought with it a cultural disconnect. Current residents of western Poland had no connection with the pre-war population whatsoever. Silesia and Breslau, like the American Confederacy after the Civil War, were "gone with the wind".

The point of this history review is that all happenings in Silesia during the war cannot be verified or traced in any meaningful manner. The German industrial plants are gone. The university is gone. The streets and the names of the cities themselves have been changed. All we have of what happened there during the war came out of there on the backs and in the minds of the German refugees who were displaced. This report is, then, one of those scraps of evidence we have concerning this important region.

The Flottmannwerke consisted of thirteen buildings and a work force of 2000 individuals working three shifts per day. A railroad ran directly into the plant from which raw materials were unloaded and, presumable, from which finished weaponry was shipped to its point of insertion. A special police force enforced security and secrecy at the plant.

The Flottmannwerke made tank treads for German tanks and tracked vehicles but its highest priority work concerned making

SECRET



1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
14
16
32
164
112
76
260
320
280
180
26
1200
900
2760
9400
5600
7660
6720
33100

○ = References to Key
═ = Thickness Dimensions
All dimensions in mm

V : 3 - FLODTMANN WERKE, BRESLAU

6824 DIC MIS	NOT	21 Dec 44	001

1. Magnetic fuse. A small electric current is generated which passes down the wire (2) and detonates the acetylene-nitroglycerine chambers.
2. Wire
3. Acetylene-nitroglycerine chambers.
4. Compressed air. Pressures in atmospheres, as noted
5. Asbestos-covered steel plate
6. Copper-Steel Plate
7. Steel
8. Magnesium-steel

SECRET

This is the Flottmann V-3, drawn from memory by the German-Czech engineer, Joseph Koch.

interior parts for V-weapons. Prefabricated hulls for these weapons were delivered by rail along with steel strips measuring 15 meters in length. Shortages were experienced, according to Koch, concerning light metals necessary for finishing the weapons. Five or six V-1s had been assembled by May, 1944 as well as 3 or 4 V-2s.

Koch saw the diagram of the new V-3 weapon well enough to make a drawing of it and memorize some of its details. He said it is intended to be a large rocket that functions on practically the same principle as a rifle grenade. From this description we might say today that this was a ballistic weapon. The rocket itself was 33.1 meters long and 3.2 meters in diameter. These figures put the rocket in the neighborhood of 100 feet long and over 10 feet in diameter. Koch reports it had eight sections containing nitroglycerine and compressed air. This is somewhat confusing since we do not know if he is talking about rocket stages or construction modules. The statement about nitroglycerine and compressed air is further confused by Koch's admission that he had no knowledge of the proposed method for starting the rocket in flight and "could not reveal any information regarding the force whereby it would be sustained in flight. In other words, he did not know its method of propulsion. Koch relayed what he termed "hearsay" on the subject that the new weapon was to be partially inserted into the end of an immense gun barrel, estimated to be 25 meters in length, from which the rocket was to be shot somewhat in the manner of a rifle grenade.

From Koch's description we certainly can see that a large rocket was under consideration. He indicates this was a ballistic device, not a device under continuous power. He admits his lack of understanding concerning its exact propulsion method.

Recently, evidence has surfaced from German sources concerning a large, previously unknown rocket2 which matches this description in many details and yields answers to gaps in Koch's description. This is called the V-101 or "European rocket" as opposed to the A-9/A-10, called the "America rocket".

The V-101 was the result of a design by Dr. Buedewald and Dr. Teichmann at the Skoda works in conjunction with the SS think-tank, the Kammler Group. This was a three-stage, solid fuel rocket with thrust of 100 tons and a range of 1800 kilometers. The rocket was designed to reach an altitude of 200 kilometers. Its payload was most likely larger than that of the V-2[3].

Because it was a solid fuel rocket it was considered superior for storage in rocket silos where complicated liquid fueling was awkward. Dr. Kammler did plan to use this rocket in a large underground launching facility whose exact location remains unknown to this day. Likewise, until Koch's diagram surfaced, no plans of the V-101 had seen the light of public scrutiny. Both the expectation cited by the German language source and Koch's description show that this rocket was far larger than the V-2 and exceeded it in performance.

On the other hand, German researchers who have seen this report are not of the opinion that this rocket was the V-101. They report that there was a V-3 under development at Nordhausen under the direction of the Peenemuende team[4]. This rocket was 26.14 meters long and had a weight of 102 tons.

The V-101, the same researchers report, was strictly a Kammler project run out of Skoda. It was a three-stage, solid fuel rocket, 30.26 meters long, 2.82 meters wide, and 146 tons in weight. It had three wings or vanes (Fluegel). Besides Kammler, Dr. Walter Reidel, Dr. Kurt Diebner and Albert Speer were said to be involved in its development[5]. It may have been this rocket which was the delivery device for the bomb mentioned in the "La Fussee Pilotte 'T'", mentioned in a previous chapter. In fact, it may have been this rocket whose test stand was photographed from the air by the Americans at Rudisleben along with a whole complex devoted to rocketry according to these same researchers.

Rudisleben is in or very near the Jonas Valley. Couple this with their connection of this work to the places mentioned: Skoda, the site of the Flottmannwerke in Breslau documented here and to the Owl Mountains[6] which was the site of the huge "Der Riese" underground complex and a new picture emerges of secret work within Nazi Germany.

It seems that Dr. Hans Kammler and his SS ran its or his own little country or sphere of influence within the Reich. He had his own atomic scientist, Diebner, his own rocket people, his own research and development scientists, his own production facilities, his own intelligence and security, and, of course, he ran all the underground facilities within Germany. His empire within an empire seems to run to the east of Germany's centerline, possibly from the Baltic facility of Stettin to Breslau, through Silesia (what is now Western Poland), into Moravia and Bohemia in what is now the Czech Republic and perhaps even into Austria. The very presence of this rocket under discussion here may point to the nature of the relationship between Kammler's world and the "outside" world of the remainder of Nazi Germany. This inner world may contain secrets that are far stranger than we can imagine, both in the technical sense and in the political sense.

Returning to the rocket, this rocket, whether it is the "V-3" or the "V-101" is the spiritual predecessor for the American Minuteman rocket series, a solid fuel intercontinental ballistic rocket housed in underground silos, throughout the Cold War. It this is true, and it is, then its spiritual godfather of the Minuteman and of those underground bases must be none other than Dr. Hans Kammler.

But, on the other hand, a German researcher just told me he thought the giant rocket was actually a giant torpedo, so the search for the truth of the Flottmann rocket is still the subject of some discussion.

SOURCES

1. C.S.D.I.C. (U.K.) S.I.R. 1632 20 Apr. 45, 5/5/45, Consolidated report on information obtained from various PW, interrogation of whom did not warrant the issue of separate reports, number: 015001 declassification number NND 750122, date illegible

2. Georg, Friedrich, 2003, Hitlers Siegeswaffen Band 2: Star Wars 1947-Die Geheimgeschichte der Raketen und Flugkoerper des Dritten Reiches Teilband A: Von der V-1 zur A-9 - Unkonventionelle Kurz-und Mittelstreckenraketen, page 186-187, Amun-Verlag, Schleusingen

3. ibid

4. Georg, Friedrich and Thomas Mehner, 2004, page 259, Atomziel New York Geheime Grossraketen-und Raumfahrtprojekte des Dritten Reiches, Jochen Kopp Verlag, Rottenburg

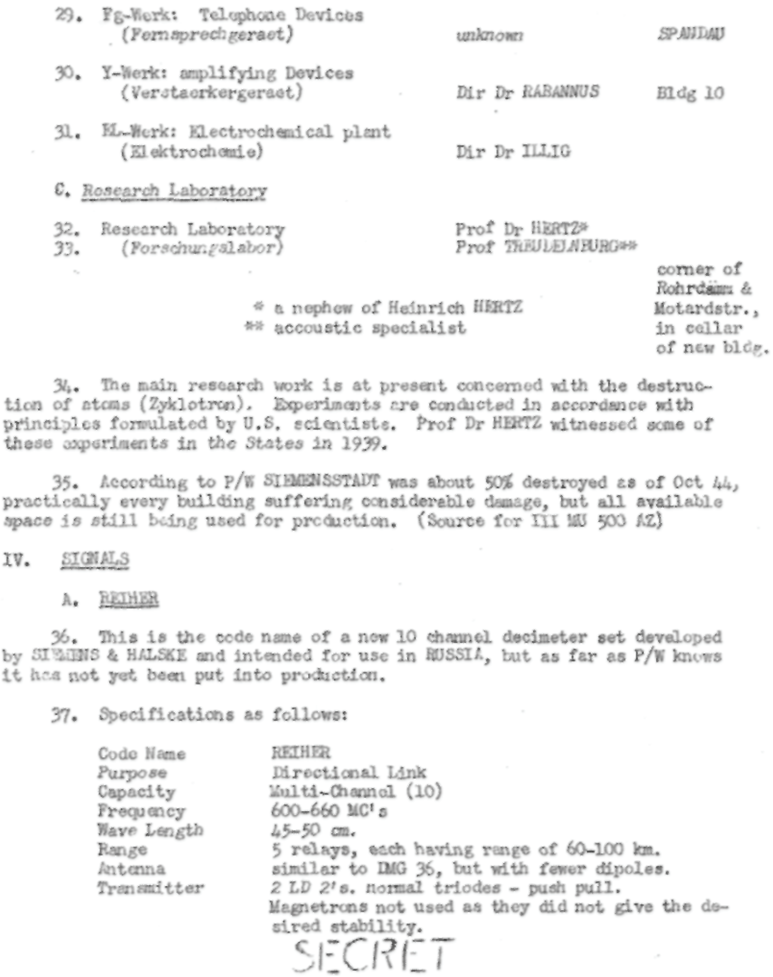
5. ibid, pages 259-260

6. ibid, page 261

34 "Y" Communication Facilities

There have always been rumors that the Germans developed special ELF wave communications devices by which a U-boat drug a one-mile antenna so that world-wide communications were possible. A further rumor goes that this same system was used, not only for communication, but for recharging the U-boat's batteries via some long distance Tesla-type of technology. In this rumor the mile-long antenna receives electrical energy propagated directly through the earth by a mysterious generator somewhere in Germany. I have even heard it said by a knowledgeable person that Dr. W.O. Schumann was involved in this work. I cannot confirm nor deny these rumors, but I can relate the existence of another rumored secret communication system.

There are hints that the Germans developed a super-secret, high-tech, long distance communication system. This system was said to be new and totally independent of other German communication systems[1]. Thomas Mehner and Edgar Mayer as well as other researchers have investigated a whole series of huge underground installations in and around the Jonas Valley in Thuringia. One of these facilities, code-named "Burg" is generally thought to have, as at least one of its ultimate aims, the function of a huge communications switch-board connecting the Reich together. Keeping this in mind, Mr. Mehner obtained an American intelligence document describing such a communications network (PW Intelligence Bulletin No. 2/32, January 30, 1945, USAF Archives, Alabama, microfilm roll A 5370, Nr. 519.6501-2).



29. Fg-Werk: Telephone Devices (*Fernsprechgeraet*)	*unknown*	*SPANDAU*
30. Y-Werk: amplifying Devices (Verstaerkergeraet)	Dir Dr RABANNUS	Bldg 10
31. EL-Werk: Electrochemical plant (Elektrochemie)	Dir Dr ILLIG	

C. Research Laboratory

32. Research Laboratory 33. (*Forschungslabor*)	Prof Dr HERTZ* Prof TREULENBURG**	corner of Rohrdamm & Motardstr., in cellar of new bldg.

* a nephew of Heinrich HERTZ
** accoustic specialist

34. The main research work is at present concerned with the destruction of atoms (Zyklotron). Experiments are conducted in accordance with principles formulated by U.S. scientists. Prof Dr HERTZ witnessed some of these experiments in the States in 1939.

35. According to P/W SIEMENSSTADT was about 50% destroyed as of Oct 44, practically every building suffering considerable damage, but all available space is still being used for production. (Source for III MU 503 AZ)

IV. SIGNALS

A. REIHER

36. This is the code name of a new 10 channel decimeter set developed by SIEMENS & HALSKE and intended for use in RUSSIA, but as far as P/W knows it has not yet been put into production.

37. Specifications as follows:

Code Name	REIHER
Purpose	Directional Link
Capacity	Multi-Channel (10)
Frequency	600-660 MC's
Wave Length	45-50 cm.
Range	5 relays, each having range of 60-100 km.
Antenna	similar to DMG 36, but with fewer dipoles.
Transmitter	2 LD 2's. normal triodes - push pull. Magnetrons not used as they did not give the desired stability.

SECRET

A page of the Secret report: Coil Research Laboratory Siemens Halske Berlin which we first saw in a previous chapter. Here, please notice item number 30, Y-Werk: amplifying Devices and item IV. Signals, which describes the Reiher device. Was this part of the Y-communications system?

This document is based on the interrogation of a German prisoner of war. In summary, he said that there were six facilities in Germany fitted with the "Y" communication system. They were built between 1943 and 1944. These were for communications purposes of a special kind and supported the Luftwaffe.

Using this document and a living informant, Mr. Mehner and Mr. Mayer add that the firm Siemens was the contractor involved in building this top-secret, stand-alone network. Such a network was closely associated with the work going on at the facility named "Burg".

The reason this is being mentioned is that another American document has come to light using the FOIA and search-words involving "Y" and "communications"[2]. This document also uses the information gathered from a prisoner of war. In this case the PW was a graduate engineer of the Technische Hochschule, Dresden where he majored in electrical engineering. In 1938 the subject came to work for Siemens & Halske where he did coil research. From September of 1942 to July of 1943 he worked with a Dr. Heinrich in an ultra-short wave laboratory. They developed a 10-channel decimeter set with the codename of "Reiher". Actually, the entire facility was employed in all aspects of the construction of this system from the ultra-short wave technology itself to the relays, amplifiers, transformers, condensers, transmitters and antennae. One of the production plants was specifically designated "Y Werk". The Reiher system itself was intended for use in Russia, which gives an idea of its intended range. Technical specifications of the system are given in the report.

Of huge interest is the fact that this system was separate from existing systems, secret, long-range, and destined for high-value, secret underground installations such as "Burg". We will return to Burg later, with other rumors.

SOURCES

1. Mayer, Edgar and Thomas Mehner, 2002, pages 71-73, Die Atombombe und das Dritte Reich Das Geheimnis des Driecks Arnstadt-Wechmar-Ohrdruf, Jochen Kopp Verlag, Rottenburg

2. JICA Med. Alhq. No R-1198/45, 6824 DIC/MIS/NOT-533, March 14, 1945, "Coil Research Laboratory Siemens Halske Berlin Oct.44."

35 Experiments in Time

There are a lot of old rumors of work in time experimentation. During the early 1990s one or several individuals went around the country giving lectures at UFO conferences and writing books hyping the "Montauk Project". As time went by, the individuals involved continued to enlarge these rumors at every conference and with every book in a seeming game of one upmanship with each other. As this story evolved it was said to dovetail into the Philadelphia experiment. These were great stories but the problem was always a lack of proof.

There was a German connection to these time experiments, according to these stories. Some of the technology and even some of the funding are rumored to have come from Nazi Germany. German U-boats were said to surface off the New Jersey coast, secretly off-loading mysterious cargos. In our quest for suppressed German science, this is intriguing because most of what has actually proven to be true first originated as a story or rumor. This has happened over and over again as with German flying discs, Magnetic Wave, and beam weapons.

A great example is the story told to me by researcher Friedrich Georg. This came to him by an individual he knows and trusts and in-fact is related to him by marriage. As a young person, this man was a soldier in the German Wehrmacht like thousands of others at the time. And like so many others, at the close of the war, in April, 1945, this person found himself in American-run prison detention camp. There, he met a fellow prisoner, a SS soldier, with a strange tale to tell.

According to the SS man, Hitler had a hidden facility in the mountains of the Harz region. There, deep under a mountain Hitler had constructed a time machine. Unfortunately, this machine was no longer accessable from the surface.

Now, sixty years later, we do know that Hitler had a series of huge underground facilities in the Harz region at the Jonas Valley. Some of the exact functions of some of these facilities are still under debate today. The reason for this, in part, is that these tunnels were sealed with explosives before the American 3rd Army under Patton could secrue them. Later they fell into the Soviet Zone but nobody ever bothered to investigate what went on down there.

As with most rumors stemming from the 3rd Reich, there was usually a kernel of truth to it. There have always been real scientists as well as tinkerers who experiment in time, then as now, so the very fact that some physics laboratory experiments were done in those days by the Germans should be of surprise to nobody. Now, however, some new developments bring these rumors all back into focus.

The first is the work of Igor Witkowski. Witkowski is a Polish researcher who is deeply into finding the truth behind German flying discs. Mr. Witkowski has made a remarkable discovery. He has found a truly unique site or laboratory or test site in Poland, then Lower Silesia, which was a part of Germany during and before the war. It is located at the Wenceslas Mine part of the larger German facility called "Der Riese", The Giant.

Witkowski was visited and interviewed by aerospace writer Nick Cook and the amazing story is featured in Nick Cook's book, The Hunt For Zero Point One Man's Journey to Discover The Biggest Secret Since The Invention Of The Atom Bomb. (This text appears in English, so those interested in more detail may consult the source.) Witkowski had the opportunity to view secret Soviet NKVD files which put him on to the story. The German code name given in the NKVD report was "Laternentrager" and "Chronos". Laternen-trager is lantern-carrier in English. The word Chronos is almost self-explanatory.

Witkowski's research shows that this was a top-secret SS experiment originating from a facility in Leubus, northwest of Breslau (now Wroclaw), but moved to Fuerstenstein (Ksiaz) 34 km to the south in late 1944 because of the Soviet advance. Finally, it was moved south again to Ludwigsdorf (Ludwwikowice) in the Owl Mountains very near Der Riese[1]. Two physical structures are associated with this project. One structure is now gone and one still in existence.

Gone but known to Witkowski through his peek into Soviet intelligence files is "Die Glocke", the Bell. The Bell was just that: a hard, metallic bell-shaped object. Within the bell there were situated two cylinders that were rapidly spun in opposite directions. Each cylinder was filled with a mercury-like substance, code named "Xerum 525"[2]. Other substances included in Xerum 525 were thorium and beryllium peroxides. The substance had a violet color. Here we have a liquid compound of mercury, violet in color, housed at a German nuclear research facility. Does this ring a "bell" with anybody? Mercury has no fluid compounds according to conventional wisdom. So if this liquid is as Witkowski says that it is, then the conclusion is inescapable. It is red mercury.

Still present is a structure that stands above ground and associated with these experiments. This is a circle of Stonehenge-like columns, joined the in the same manner as Stonehenge, at the top. The structure is about ten meters tall and about 30 meters in diameter. Strangely, high-strength steel hooks are set into the tops of the columns[3].

Witkowski's research shows that the Bell was always operated underground. This leaves us to wonder at the purpose of the Stonehenge-like structure with the hooks at its top.

Speculation about the purpose of this experimentation is divided. Some think the Bell was a field propulsion engine destined for some exotic aircraft. Some think the whole apparatus, Bell and stone circle, concerned itself with experiments in time. An alternative is that it was both.

This is because Nick Cook links Russian experiments with spinning superconductors to the spinning, liquid, mercury-like compound contained in the Bell[5] Could red mercury be a superconductor? Could this be its real secret? A superconductor would allow the generation of monstrous magnetic fields and perhaps other types of energy. Cook calls this other type of energy a "torsion field" and says it bends the four dimensions as well as bending time[6].

What makes this account credible? We have physical evidence that something was going on. We have the mysterious Stonehenge-like structure. We have Igor Witkowski whose peek into the NKVD secret files led him to this unexplained place.

This is where I stood in the Winter of 2002 when a chance conversation occurred with a friend of mine. His name is Greg Rowe and I have corresponded with him for several years as the result of a chance contact. Greg is a trained engineer as was his father. Once Greg told me that his father had worked for NASA at the Huntsville, Alabama facility. Knowing that some German Paperclip scientists worked there, I asked Greg if any of these worked with his father.

Greg replied with a list of German scientists with whom his father had worked and a few words about each one of them. One of these, Otto Cerny, seemed particularly interesting from Greg's description so I pressed him for more information. What follows is a compilation of several e-mails on the subject of Otto Cerny.

Cerny was Greg's father's boss. Greg knew the whole family and went to school with Cerny's son whom Greg called by name. Greg also referred to Cerny's wife by her first name and gave other small details of their family life. When he was somewhere between 12 and 14 years old, Greg and his family were invited to dinner at the Cerny's house. This would have been between the years 1960-62. Greg sat and listened as the older men talked.

Otto Cerny was an engineer and physicist. He had worked at Peenemuende on a variety of projects. That was why he was in the United States, to work on rockets, and why he was a Paperclip scientist to begin with. But it is his work prior to coming to Peenemuende, which was the subject of discussion that night. Cerny said that he had worked near Breslau in the early years of the war. It was there that he met his wife who worked in Breslau at a hospital where she was employed doing physical rehabilitation work.

Cerny continued describing this work that night in Alabama, dismissing it at first as "weird experiments on the nature of time". Greg's father must have picked up on this comment because the two men quickly became involved, according to Greg, in a deep discussion concerning the nature of time. Greg told me that it seemed to him now, that, at all times Cerny was a little vague in his statements, choosing his words and being careful of what he said, almost as if he were under some sort of hidden duress.

Greg listened to the two men attentively but did not enter into the conversation himself. At that time and place in polite adult company, as Greg explains, a child did not speak unless spoken to. In considering what follows and what was relayed to me, it should be remembered that Greg had not yet read Nick Cook's book or ever heard of the work of Igor Witkowski.

Greg remembers that Cerny drew a circle of stones, which Greg said was "like a Greek Temple", with a ring around the top". Then Greg added a feature not mentioned by Cook or Witkowski, "and some sort of ring inside of that". This second ring was like a hoop of metal from which something hung—like an oscilloscope or a TV screen. Greg went on to mention the atomic symbol as a means of description. The atomic symbol has a nucleus around which orbit electrons. The electrons have two orbits, one within the other and are moving independently from each other. From this description it follows that this structure contained two movable and independently adjustable fixtures from which something hung, perhaps as with a gyroscope.

Cerny said that it was possible to "go back and witness things". With this statement a Greg's father asked why it was not possible to go forward if it were possible to go backward. Evidently there was some discussion between the two men on this point. Cerny responded that it simply did not work that way.

Greg reports that, after a pause, Cerny cut more pastry and poured another cup of coffee, then changed the subject to a jet engine, which had been built at Peenemuende, for an unmanned rocket other than the V-l.

Naturally, I was dumbfounded by the turn of events. This was mid-January, 2002. Greg had not read my book on German saucers or Cook's book containing discussion of Igor Witkowski. As a matter of fact, Greg had never heard of Igor Witkowski. I told him of these references and sent him a copy of my book. I quickly re-read Cook's passages on the subject. Then something else occurred to me. I quickly found my partial list of Paperclip scientists and looked for Otto Cerny's name. Sure enough, it was there. I wasted no time in ordering the file from the National Archives under the F.O.I.A. I had no idea of what to expect. Greg had provided so much detail into their personal lives that I was a little apprehensive that my friend might have been wrong about some of this. Would the F.O.I.A. file confirm what Greg overheard? Fortunately, Paperclip files are packed with what we would call today "personal information".

Ninety days pass and the file arrives[4]. In it are the names and birth dates of Otto Cerny and all his family. The name Greg gave for Mrs. Cerny was correct. The name Greg gave for his son was correct and his year of birth puts him in Greg's grade in school. They had lived in Huntsville where Otto was employed by NASA. There was no doubt that this was the person Greg had described and his description matched very well.

The file included a time-line and a statement of Cerny's work at Peenemuende. Many "deletion" pages were inserted into the file telling the reader that portions of the file were being withheld for security reasons. But the censor was somewhat uneven. It seemed that sensitive information was pulled out at various times by various censors. Some of these censors only read English, it seemed, because the English translation of Cerny's work history consisted of nine pages while the original had consisted of twenty-five pages in German language. Fortunately, twenty-four pages in the original German edition remained. It included a description of a previously unknown weapon.

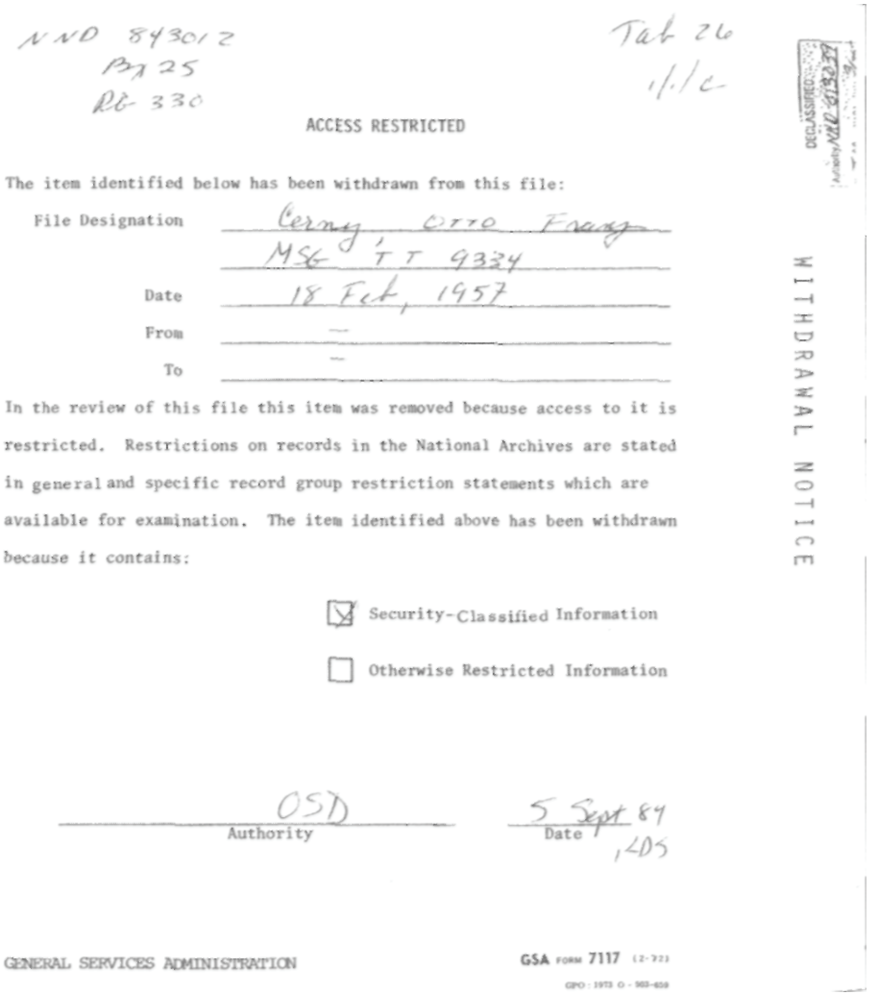
The weapon in question was a special edition of the Henschel HS-292. The regular HS-292 was a air-to-ship guided missile which was fired from a carrier aircraft, such as a two-engine He-III bomber, and steered towards the target ship though the a thin wire linkage and an operator using a joy stick. The new weapon was a high-altitude air-to-air weapon that was again launched from an aircraft and guided via wire and joystick but its target was not a ship beneath it but an enemy bomber formation above it.

Was this the weapon Greg had commented upon?

Unfortunately, no mention is made of experiments in time in the Paperclip file. This could hardly be expected, however. The file had been gone over many times and items pulled for security reasons. But the time-line was very complete and in it Cerny accounts for his every move since college. I went directly to the war years.

From May, 1939 to September, 1939 (September, 1939 was the date Germany invaded Poland, beginning the Second World War), Cerny attended a flight school at Braunschweig, the Deutsche Versuch-sanstalt fuer Luftfahrt (German Flight Research Institution). This is a heavyweight school. Cerny received an A2 Degree (Acrobatics).

From September, 1939 to April, 1940, Cerny worked at three Air Force test bases including one at Rechlin. Rechlin is next door to Peenemuende and was a test site for exotic aircraft. This would put him in the proper region at the proper time. His next assignment, May, 1940 to April, 1945 was at Peenemuende, immediately to the west.



NND 843012
Bx 25
RG 330

Tab 26
l.l.c

DECLASSIFIED
Authority NND 813037

ACCESS RESTRICTED

The item identified below has been withdrawn from this file:

File Designation Cerny, Otto Franz
MSG TT 9324

Date 18 Feb, 1957

From —

To —

In the review of this file this item was removed because access to it is restricted. Restrictions on records in the National Archives are stated in general and specific record group restriction statements which are available for examination. The item identified above has been withdrawn because it contains:

☒ Security-Classified Information

☐ Otherwise Restricted Information

OSD
Authority

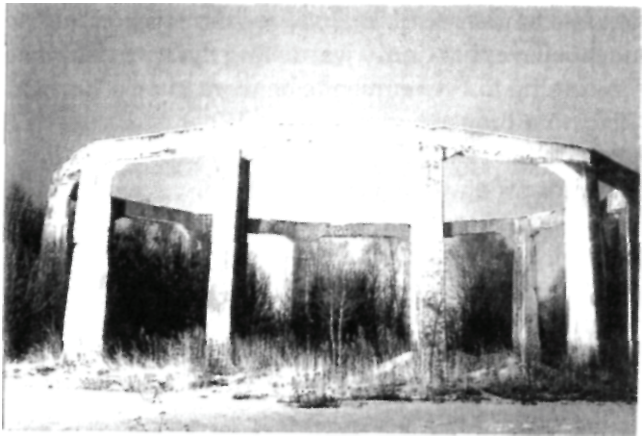
5 Sept 84
Date
LDS

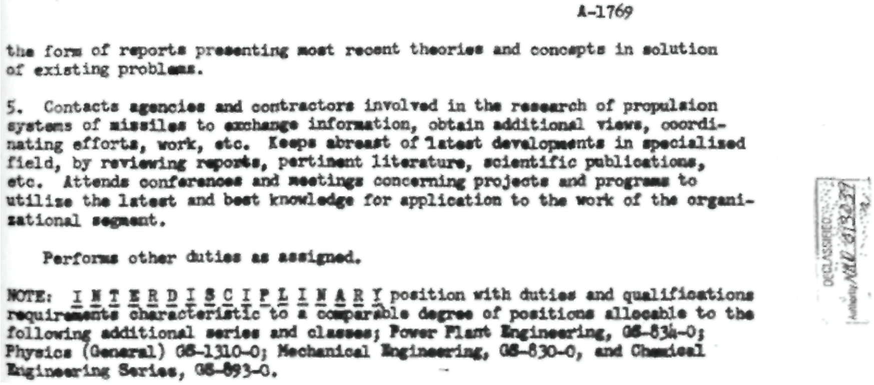
WITHDRAWAL NOTICE

GENERAL SERVICES ADMINISTRATION

GSA FORM 7117 (2-72)
GPO : 1973 O - 503-659

This is a government deletion slip. About 20 or so of these were inserted into the Cerny file and appropriate material withdrawn. Additionally, one page of his twenty-five page employment time-line in German is missing. The English translation omits this altogether and is only nine pages long. This is impressive redaction for a mere mechanical engineer with a master's degree.





A-1769

the form of reports presenting most recent theories and concepts in solution of existing problems.

5. Contacts agencies and contractors involved in the research of propulsion systems of missiles to exchange information, obtain additional views, coordinating efforts, work, etc. Keeps abreast of latest developments in specialized field, by reviewing reports, pertinent literature, scientific publications, etc. Attends conferences and meetings concerning projects and programs to utilize the latest and best knowledge for application to the work of the organizational segment.

Performs other duties as assigned.

NOTE: INTERDISCIPLINARY position with duties and qualifications requirements characteristic to a comparable degree of positions allocable to the following additional series and classes; Power Plant Engineering, GS-834-0; Physics (General) GS-1310-0; Mechanical Engineering, GS-830-0, and Chemical Engineering Series, GS-893-0.

DECLASSIFIED
Authority NND 813037

Top: The "Greek temple" (from Nick Cook) described to me by Greg Rowe, recounting the conversation between his father and Otto Cerny. Greg witnessed and overheard this conversation as a child. Suspended from the top was some sort of concave mirror in which "images from the past" were seen during operation of the mechanism.

Bottom: The end of Cerny's Paperclip resume in which he lists "Power Plant Engineering" as interdisciplinary duties and qualifications. Is this what Cerny did for Projekt Chronos?

Taken as a whole, Greg's account of what Cerny said and what Cerny's Paperclip file show are remarkably consistent. I have to believe that the rendition concerning Cerny's work on an unknown jet engine for use in an advanced missile is factual and possibly be the new type of HS-292 or even the recently described V-4, the replacement for the V-1[7].

I also must believe that Cerny was telling the truth when he said that prior to coming to Peenemuende he worked on a German program involving time experimentation. What he disclosed fits into the evidence provided by Mr. Witkowski and provides some new data. The details of this program remain yet to be discovered as does its place in the German war effort.

Based upon my new respect for the possibility of German time experimentation, I contacted Thomas Mehner, the researcher and publisher famous for his work at the Jonas Valley site in Germany. I asked Mr. Mehner about references to German time experimentation one finds here and there and if he knew of any such evidence coming from the Jonas Valley. Mr. Mehner replied via e-mail on 7/9/03 that there was no hard evidence for German time experimentation, but there were hints. He said that recent opinion among researchers there (so there must be ongoing discussion of the possibility) is that time machine experiments would originate at least 200 meters below the surface. There has been no attempt to describe the technology involved at Jonastal and no attempt yet to dig it up. This area is still, today, a German military base.

The most exciting statement made by Mr. Mehner was that recently, researchers there are of the opinion that the Germans experimented with what he described as "interdimensional trips". If this is ever proven, it would be just as explosive as successful time experimentation itself.

There is another story that comes to mind that now rests squarely in the realm of science fiction. It appeared in a 1997 edition of the magazine "Wissenschaft ohne Grenzen" which was responsible for placing the concept of the lost underground facilities at Jonastal in the public eye.

This tale involves the disappearance of up to 3,000 people. These people included SS personnel and scientists. Just prior to capture by Patton's 3rd Army, these people including their women and children, all of "pure Aryan origins", disappeared DOWN into an underground facility in the Jonas Valley called "Burg". After the people were inside the entrance was then sealed with explosives[8]. It should be noted that this is not referred to as a mass suicide. We are left with the impression that these people wished to escape the 3rd Reich. So many other wild rumors of the past have been based upon fact. Could this escape have been into another time or another dimension? Could it really be true?

SOURCES

1. Cook, Nick, 2001, The Hunt For Zero Point One Man's Journey To Discover The Biggest Secret Since The Invention Of The Atom Bomb, page 188, Century, London

2. ibid, page 192

3. ibid, page 197

4. Project Paperclip "Foreign Scientist Case Files, 1945-1958 (Record Group 330, Box 44, file of Otto F. Cerny

5. Cook, Nick, 2001, page 194

6. ibid, page 228

7. Georg, Friedrich, 2003, Hitlers Siegeswaffen Band 2: Star Wars 1947 Teil A: Von der V-1 bis zur A-9: unkonventionelle Kurz - und Mittelstreckenwaffen, pages 132, 204-207, Amun-Verlag, Schleusingen

8. Georg, Friedrich, 2000, Hitlers Siegeswaffen Band 1: Luftwaffe und Marine Geheime Nuklearwaffen Des Dritten Reiches Und Ihre Traegersysteme, page 126, Amun-Verlag, Schleusingen

36 Dr. Ronald Richter

If we remember Dr. Richter today at all, it is not for his stunning achievements in physics, but for a press fiasco involving the Argentine leader Juan Peron in the 1950s. At this time, Richter was employed by Peron to do nuclear research and evidently had some promising results. Peron jumped ahead of the research and prematurely announced that Argentina had bypassed fission power and had succeeded in producing fusion power.

Around the world "experts" were enlisted to condemn Richter's work. It seems the US government was on particularly high alert and wanted this development contained. Peron could not deliver fusion on the spot and Richter suddenly fell out of favor. As a matter of fact, Dr. Richter was jailed by Peron, thus effectively ending the affair and discrediting Richter. After Peron was ousted and Richter released, the incoming political party considered Richter a Peron favorite and as such he could never regain the funds, laboratory or momentum to further his work. Richter ended up in the mid to late 1950s looking for a job. Eventually, he fell off the world scene.

The late Dr. Eugene F. Mallove has written of the affair:

"Magnetic confinement fusion had a very strange beginning. Argentine dictator Juan Peron announced on March 24, 1951, that his country had mastered controlled fusion, bypassing completely the development of fission power that was then in vogue in various nations. Peron, a Germaophile, had set up an island laboratory for a certain obscure German scientist, Ronald Richter, who supposedly had brought the secret fusion work to fruition, or so headlines in the United States had allowed. The press was much less circumspect in those days about amazing scientific claims"[1].

Now, it may seem like everything which is to follow refutes the above paragraph, so it is necessary to point out that it was Dr. Eugene Mallove who originally directed me in Richter's direction when I inquired of him about alleged German scientists working for Peron concerning nuclear power. What has changed my mind about his matter is that the United States government, through various agencies, compiled an intelligence file on Dr. Richter, which was shocking. This file was obtained using the Freedom of Information Act. In fact, it was a Paperclip file, even though Richter never came to the USA to work as a scientist. Equally shocking was the tone of the Paperclip file itself.

Normally, a Paperclip file contains biographical and educational information about the particular scientist. It usually contains a description of his specialty as well as where he worked and who he worked for in Germany. There is a discussion of his alleged political leanings, which are always considered satisfactory. Then there is a background check, again politically motivated. Then, there are immigration details and perhaps which companies or government agencies which are interested in employing this individual. It is then up to the researcher to follow up these leads for additional information.

Sometimes, there is a description of actual work in Germany and actual hardware that was created, but this is rare. Also rare is any discussion about applications of his specialty in the United States or any proposed future research in the United States. Dr. Richter's file is the big exception to all of this.

But even before I had obtained Dr. Richter's Paperclip file from the US National Archives and Record Administration via the Freedom Of Information Act, Dr. Mallove's original letter naming him struck me like my head was a bell. This is because Dr. Ronald Richter was not an "obscure German scientist" to me. His name was a name I had run into repeatedly in investigating German scientific research. In fact, the

Austrian physicist, Dr. Friedrich Lachtner, in a letter, published in my last book, names Dr. Richter.

From the Paperclip file, it is evident that the US government and its scientists given the job of investigating Dr. Richter were torn between two opposing poles. There were those who considered Dr. Richter a fraud. There were those who openly admitted that they did not have the expertise to fully evaluated Dr. Richter and clearly wanted to take themselves out of the game of doing so. And there were those who recognized, even in 1957, that Dr. Richter "was working in 1970", an understatement which can only now be fully appreciated.

We should start our investigation of Dr. Richter with his own chronological biography. There are two or three accounts of his personal and professional history in his Paperclip file. Perhaps the best is the Air Intelligence Information Report. Dr. Richter and so states provided the information in this report.

Richter was born February 21, 1909 in Eger, Bohemia. Bohemia was then Austria but was included in Czechoslovakia as it was formed. Dr. Richter entered the German University at Prague in 1928 to study physics, chemistry and geophysics. He graduated on March 2, 1935 with a Doctor of Natural Sciences degree.

Richter's parents were involved in directing a coalmine. It was in this same industry where Dr. Richter was to make his entrance into the world of science and industry. In 1935 Dr. Richter ran a private research laboratory near Falkenau A.D. Eger, "sponsored by industrial circles". In this first venture the foundation was laid for all that followed in Richter's work. In the words of the Air Intelligence Report:

"Research on the activation of catalysts, catalyst -controlled high-pressure coal hydrogenation and coal cracking processes, development of an image-converter-like activity-contract-microscope, based on scanning of hydrogen or deuterium absorbing border surfaces by protons, deuterons, or electrons: for the first time, it became possible to see and to photograph activity contrasts which cannot be made visible by light nor by electron microscopes. Activation of catalysts take place under continuously activity-controlled conditions.

Research work and design studies on electric arc furnaces systems, development of new types of arc plasma analyzing instruments and methods. In 1936, discovery of a plasma shock wave generating process, conception of a completely new type of industrial arc reactor system, based rather on plasma shock wave reactivity than on heat transfer. Development of a basis of operation for testing plasma shock wave conditions by means of plasma-collision-induced nuclear reactions."

Plasma happens when a gas is heated to the point where its electrical structure is somewhat altered. Normally, each element will have a specific electrical charge, either positive or negative. When a gas is heated to the point that plasma is created, that gas is altered in such a way that the numbers of positively and negatively charged particles are the same. Richter did this using shock wave technology.

In the years 1937 to 1938, Richter was in charge of a research laboratory connected to the Berlin-Suhler-Waffen und Fahrzeugwerke at the Gustloff-Werke in Suhl, Thuringia. Suhl and the Gustloff-Werke are in the Jonas Valley which was to become a center of several Nordhausen-sized underground facilities, all doing secret work on weapons and science. In another part of Richter's statement he lists the physical addresses in which he lived. At this time an address of Muehltorstr. 11, Suhl is listed as Richter's home address. German researcher and publisher Thomas Mehner actually went to this address when he received a copy of the Paperclip file. Mr. Mehner reports that the house is now gone but the street still exists. Suhl is Mr. Mehner's home area.

In Suhl, Richter worked on a hydrogen storage system as well as continuing his shock wave research. During this period he complains about the lack of measuring equipment that could withstand such high temperature stress.

With the outbreak of World War Two in 1939, Dr. Richter joined the research staff of the Junkers Aircraft and Motor Works at Dessau, Germany. The Dessau facility for Junkers could be compared to the Skunk Works for Lochkeed. Dessau was the facility for cutting edge research. Dr. Richter worked on vibrational problems associated with supersonic aircraft at Dessau. He found that the instruments needed to do this could be used to benefit his shock wave research, which he obviously had not put aside.

During this time Richter was invited by Dr. Busemann and Prof. Dirksen to join them at the Aircraft Research Facility, Hermann Goering near Braunschweig. Unfortunately, Richter was a Czech citizen and the Gestapo took a dim view of his presence at Braunschweig. They took away Richter's passport and essentially put him under day-to-day scrutiny. This situation simply was not working out well.

By 1942-1943 Richter found himself at the Berlin-Lichterfelde-Ost facility of Baron Manfred von Ardenne. Von Ardenne ran one of the major German nuclear research groups. This group, strangely enough, was the German Post Office. The German Post Office was responsible for communications and was loaded with technical expertise. At this time Dr. Richter met Prof. Abraham Essau, then in charge of all nuclear energy research in Germany. Later in 1943 Richter joined the research staff at the German Research Facility for Air Transport at Berlin-Adershof. This happened after a falling out occurred between Richter and Baron von Ardenne. At Berlin-Adershof, Richter developed turbulence detectors for use in wind tunnels and again furthering his own shock wave research goals.

In 1944 and 1945 Dr. Richter was sponsored by the Speer Ministry for Armament and Munitions as well as by the Reichs Research Council who directed all important war-related research within the Reich. He worked on light-weight battery research at the AEG (General Electricity Company) in Berlin as well as becoming the scientific and technical advisor to Ruhrchemie Aktiengesellschaft at Muehlheim. In addition to his duties in these positions, Richter found time to further his own work in arc plasma experiments using the large test installations available at the AAEG transformer factories at Berlin-Oberschoeneweide.

After the war Richter visited France, England and Holland looking for work. In London, Richter met and became somewhat acquainted with Prof. Kurt Tank, the famous Focke-Wulf aircraft designer, who showed particular interest in the development of nuclear powered propulsion for aircraft. In 1947 Tank went to Argentina.

Dr. Richter went to work for the French Petroleum Institute in Paris but this was not a permanent position. In May 1948, Professor Tank contacted Dr. Richter. He was asked to join with Professor Tank on work in Argentina. The Argentine government also extended an invitation. Richter was being asked to do work involving nuclear reactor development.

By August 1948, Dr. Richter was talking with Juan Peron about the development of nuclear power in Argentina. Argentina had no supply of uranium nor was Dr. Richter interested in developing a fission reactor for Peron. As stated in the Air Intelligence Information Report:

> "...I was not interested in the development of nuclear fission reactor systems but anxious to develop a controllable thermonuclear reactor system; there was a certain probability that the chain-reacting schemes, developed in the fall of 1942, ignited by a shock-wave-controlled arc plasma might turn out to become a controllable reactor system."

"Thermonuclear" means fusion. "Chain-reacting scheme developed in the fall of 1942" mean just that. Dr. Richter had managed to initiate a chain reaction using fusion in 1942. What is the mystery here? Dr. Richter had succeeded in producing fusion power in 1942. What he needed to do was fine-tune the procedure to achieve better control of it.

Dr. Richter states that in October of 1948, he signed a five-year contract with the Argentine authorities and became head of a thermonuclear reactor project. June, 1949 saw start of construction of a laboratory and reactor on Huemul Island. Huemul Island was situated in a mountain lake and virtually isolated from the outside world. The location of this facility was within an area habituated or perhaps even controlled by Germans of the Nazi era. It has even been called "Colonia Dignidad" by some, referring to the fact that perhaps here and no other place on the planet could a former German soldier walk about in uniform without condemnation.

Dr. Richter claimed success in his work on Heumul Island. Again, from the Air Intelligence Information Report:

> "On 16 February 1951 an exponential reactor system was ready for test. In the first test, the injection of lithium-6-enriched lithium into a shock-wave-controlled proton hydrogen plasma, for a short interval, produced series of primary and secondary reactions, the helium-3 helium 3 reaction giving proof for the existence of self-reproducing

reaction chains. In a second test, by jetting lithium-6-enriched lithium into avalanche of neutron-reproducing reaction chains were monitored. In both tests, the self-reproducing-reaction chains were analyzed by means of excitation-energy discriminating ultraviolet sensitive proportional counter tubes. At that time, a large-scale reactor system was under construction in which a self-sustaining chain reaction should have been realized; however, this reactor system has never been completed, probably for reasons for sabotage."

This statement is very important. Dr. Richter is saying that he succeeded in sustaining a controlled fusion reaction using his shock wave technology as the containment system.

"Against my strict advice, President Peron announced these results with a great display of propaganda", says Richter. We must remember that although Argentina declared war on Nazi Germany in the final days of the war, being pressured to do so by the United States, Argentina had basically backed the wrong side in World War Two. Peron had marched alongside Hitler in Paris. So, in the 1950s, Argentina and Peron were in a state of somewhat disrepute. Peron saw this development as an instantaneous step to recognition and possibly greatness for himself and Argentina. No great power, not the United States, not the Soviet Union nor Great Britain or France had a fusion reactor. This was a big propaganda coupe for Peron.

Richter returned to reactor tests. On October, 26, 1951 a third test was performed. Richter injected boron into an avalanche of neutron-reproducing reaction chains, which had resulted from the injection of lithium into the shock wave, controlled, neutron producing deuterium plasma. The result was that the boron kept the reaction going. The Air Intelligence Information Report goes on:

"Later on, the plasma-collision-induced isomerization of indium - and rhodium nuckei has been proven by monitoring the radioactive emission of gamma quantums; signal discrimination had to be provided against the shock-wave-induced bremsstrahlung background."

In December, 1951 Richter, according to the report, advised Peron to accelerate development of a commercial reactor by joining with a highly industrialized country "like the United States". Richter was attempting to move away from a political and propaganda usage of his work. Peron was interested in doing just this, and, according to the report, authorized preliminary industrial negotiations.

By March, 1952 the political winds had changed. Richter claims his work was being physically sabotaged on Huemul Island. On September 2, 1952, a commission arrived on the island to investigate progress there. Richter believed its real purpose was to paralyze work there for political reasons having to do with Argentine internal politics. By November, 1952, Richter found himself expelled from his own project and work on it stopped. He was not able to contact Juan Peron.

Dr. Richter now lived day to day in a sort of limbo. He was unable to find work with a private firm for some reason. Richter believed they feared government reprisal. He was forced to sell possessions to put food on the table for his family. Richter was under constant surveillance. In spite of these difficulties, Richter continued with non-nuclear aspects of his research:

"I immediately changed over to intensive design work on shock-wave-controlled industrial chemical arc reactor systems and arc melting furnace systems, which has no bearings on nuclear research at all and, so I hoped, might get me a new position.

At the same time I was developing an improved shock-wave-control ram jet system (a thermonuclear exponential reactor system has so much in common with and looks like a test installation for rocket and jet engines, and all new types of plasma-analyzing and plasma-controlling instruments and processes turn our to be useful in this development)."

In September of 1954 governmental deputies in internal hearings concerning Dr. Richter's alleged negative test results denounced Richter. Dr. Richter responded with a series of telegrams to the President of the Chamber and to President Peron protesting what he saw as unjust accusations made against him. Evidently the President of the Chamber was angered by Richter's telegrams because he was jailed for five days in the congress building without hearings or any sort of trial.

Richter's position did not change with a change in government. The new Lonardi government wanted nothing to do with Richter whom they regarded as a Peron supporter. Richter's state of limbo continued until the date of the Air Intelligence Report, February 18, 1956.

It is quite evident from the tone of Richter's correspondence with the Americans, as evidenced by the full disclosure that he makes, that he was interested in employment in the United States.

Another point, which surfaces again and again in Richter's biography, is his inability to "get along" with co-workers or administrators.

Three other observations should be made about Richter's work, even before we fully review it. First, Dr. Richter was a well know physicist within Nazi Germany and had worked on a wider variety of secret scientific wartime projects within the Reich than most other scientists. Second, Dr. Richter did not follow the standard game plan of physicists of his day. There is no talk of Einstein, except references to a Unified Field Theory, which certainly is not Einstein's domain alone). There is no work in sub-atomic physics, particle accelerators, cyclotrons, neutron generators, etc. Dr. Richter followed completely different path. Third, this path involves shock-wave technology. Everything that Dr. Richter did from day one in 1935 at Falkenau a.d. Eger derived from shock-wave applications. This includes containment of his fusion reaction, which is not the containment via a magnetic field which is and was the vogue in "hot fusion" up until the present.

In this introduction to Dr. Richter, the reader was introduced to Dr. Richter and his work through his biography. One reason for doing this was so that his work will not come as such a "shock" to you, pardon the pun. Dr. Richter advanced science and technology in five areas:

1. The ultra-sound fusion furnace.
2. His ramjet ideas.
3. A sustainable fusion reaction.
4. Direct thermonuclear to electric conversion of energy through plasma induction.
5. Zero Point Energy

Again, quite frankly, the author is more than a little concerned that the reader will simply think these claims and this report is nothing more than a bazaar a fabrication. For this reason, I have decided to use Richter's actual words from his Paperclip file, the file belonging to the United States government, itself. Those interested in verification can obtain a copy of the Paperclip file from the National Archives using the designation given in Sources, below. The topics listed above involve a separate sub-file and statement by Dr. Richter in the overall Paperclip file. Two of these preliminary reports are missing, naturally the latter two, numbers 4 and 5. The reports are out of sequence in internal numbering and so it can safely be surmised that reports do exist which were not included in the National Archive's F.O.I.A. response. These are described, somewhat, in another part of the Paperclip file, however, and that portion will be reproduced also. These preliminary reports will be re-typed here for clarity. Nobody can possibly explain these ideas better than the inventor. A sample page of the original text will be shown. It should be understood that his is a word for word account as if it were enclosed by quotation marks.

* * * * * *

Air Intelligence Information Report IR-79-56

"IMPROVED RAM JET ENGINE"

SUMMARY

Report contains the preliminary report of Dr. Ronald Richter on his work to develop a ram jet engine of radical design by substitution shock waves for the valves of an intermittent ram jet system.

APPROVED: George R. Herrman Colonel USAF Air Attache

1. The following prepared statement was obtained from Dr. Ronald Richter (IR-76-56) and represents his preliminary report on his work to develop a new type of ram jet engine.

IMPROVED RAM JET SYSTEM

The development of an aircraft with a thrust greater than its weight will be the next major step in the evolution of high-speed flight. It is the author's conviction that this goal can be achieved by developing a new type of jet propulsion system, based on the continuously controlled conversion of rocket and ram jet operations within the same propulsion system.

INTRODUCTION

A turbo jet system has many drawbacks. The turbine wheel is in the path of the hot expanding gases. The velocity of the jet increases as the square root of the temperature within the combustion chambers. Besides the constant blast of very hot gases from the combustion chambers with no relief, the high-speed rotation of the turbine subjects the blades to very considerable centrifugal forces, which will pull them out of shape as soon as the metal weakens from the heat attack. The turbine is also subjected to stresses from the aerodynamic effects of the hot gasses which can cause severe vibration and buffeting, and may eventually result in the turbines fluttering to limits at their full rated speed, so that overspeed or overtemperatures, even for a short duration, may be very detrimental. Accordingly, temperature and speed must be controlled with narrow limits and with a high degree of accuracy and stability of the full range of possible operating conditions such as change in altitude, air temperature, air speed, a.s.o., to avoid excess speed or temperature for even a short period. Since the allowable creep stresses are a function of temperature while the actual stresses are a function of speed, both speed and temperature must operate the power controls. At last, the turbo jet system is limited by the ultimate speed of the mechanical revolutions. Therefore, the main problem of the development of turbo jet systems has been and still is to find suitable materials of construction for the turbine to withstand the very high temperatures and stresses.

The ram jet system is based on the straightforward propulsion by thermal energy alone and its propulsive power is not subject to any limitations from moving parts. Whilst in the case of the intermittent ram jet system the air inlet is still controlled by some valves, a steady flow ram jet system has not even a valve as a moving part, but is a simple tunnel in which fuel is burned continuously.

Unfortunately, the thermo-propulsive duct cannot operate at a speed under 200 m.p.h. But at this speed, the ram jet system becomes self-operative, and the faster the forward speed of the aircraft, the greater the compression of air entering the duct and the greater is thrust and efficiency. Since speed automatically breeds more speed, the propulsive power of a ram jet system rises quite extraordinarily with speed, thus leading to power capacities which probably never can be obtained by single turbo jet units. Moreover, the maximum speed to be attained from the thermo-propulsive duct will be limited only by the resistance of the airframe structure to the heat generated by skin friction. Due to the lack of moving parts in the high temperature zone of a ram jet system, ceramics and cerments can be used as materials of construction which would otherwise fail to withstand the combine thermal and mechanical attacks taking place in the moving parts of the turbo jet system.

Besides all the promising aspects of a ram jet system, -no moving parts within the high temperature zone, no centrifugal stresses, no limitation by the ultimate speed of mechanical revolutions, no defects caused by disintegrating moving parts, no losses in turbine and compressor, the theoretically unlimited increase of propulsive power with increasing speed, less control problems, highest climbing speeds, altitude limitation probably in the region of about 100,000 ft, and more (in the case of nuclear powered propulsion), reduced construction costs and easier construction, a.s.o., - there exists a limiting factor which does not allow to take full advantage of such a propulsion system yet; the necessity for some initial means of acceleration, such as rockets or turbo jet systems, until sufficient speed is obtained for the ram jet system to take over its natural thermo-propulsion. For the same reason, it becomes necessary to prevent too low a velocity of the ram jet system with a consequent loss of flight. Owing to the critical velocity by which a ram jet system becomes self-operative, take-off and landing operations are complex.

The reheat device supplies the principle of the ram jet system to the turbo jet system, giving short bursts of extra speed in an emergency as well as at take-off.

A rocket is just another branch of jet propulsion and becomes a ram jet system when the mass (and the oxygen, in case of chemical combustion processes) to be discharged is taken from the outside atmosphere instead of being stored in the aircraft fuselage itself.

A jet propulsion system has to be developed which is operating as a rocket system at take-off and becomes self-operative as an intermittent and steady flow ram jet system gradually with increasing speed of flight. The continuously controlled conversion of one propulsion phase into the other can be achieved by the control of the combustion process itself.

For many years, the author was experimenting with a new shock wave generating process, the shock waves being generated by an electro-magnetically controlled extremely hot arc plasma zone. By the same process technique, shock waves can also be generated in combustion chambers and in gaseous zones heated by the impact of nuclear energy.

The analysis of the injection of gaseous jets into a superposition of powerful shock waves revealed interesting data in regard to the penetrability of shock-wave-controlled zones. In the course of these investigations, it became obvious, for instance, that the valves of an intermittent ram jet system can be substituted by shock waves, thus providing for the continuously controlled conversion of an intermittent into a steady flow ram jet system.

In the explosion phase, an intermittent ram jet system is operating as a rocket system. The explosion closes the entrance valve and the hot expanding gases escape at high speed through the exhaust. In the same way, a shock-wave-controlled intermittent ram jet system, in the very instant of the shock-wave-generation explosion, behaves like a rocket system. On that basis, it should become possible to start an intermittent shock-wave-controlled ram jet system without the help of acceleration-assisting means by a series of shock-wave-generating explosions.

The operation of a shock-wave-controlled ram jet system can be considerably improved by dividing the combustion reactor system into two partial reactor units;

the one reactor unit near the exhaust will be operating as a rocket system as long as the other, shock-wave-controlled reactor, unit will substitute a more or less impenetrable valve. As soon as the shock-wave-controlled ram jet system becomes self-operative as a steady flow ram jet system, both partial reactor units are operating without shock waves.

In the case of chemical combustion processes, the rocket phase of shock-wave-controlled ram jet systems will probably cause an extravagant fuel consumption. In general, the fuel consumption of a rocket system is up to six times the rate of a ram jet system and from ten to twenty times as much as the turbo jet consumption. But in the case of defensive jet fighters, for instance, which need to be airborne with a minimum of delay, economy is a second consideration to performance; the use of rockets to assist take-off and to reduce runways seemed to be the simplest and most economic solution. In the first line, the advantages of a shock-wave-controlled ram jet system lies in the fact that all the different systems of propulsion are combined in one, making also possible the continuously controlled conversion of one propulsion system into the other, in flight. Like in the case of the reheat device, by the conversion of the ram jet phase into the rocket phase in flight, short bursts of extra speed can also be produced, thus providing, for instance, for the highest possible climbing rate, s.s.o.

The continuous covertibility of ram jet and rocket operations in flight will also improve the safe operation of high-speed aircraft and will especially supply the ram jet system with all the flexibility necessary to make it the most powerful and efficient aircraft in atmospheric flight. Even vertical take-off and landing operations could be attainable with shock-wave-controlled ram jet systems.

The problem of fuel consumption, especially in the rocket phase, becomes obsolete in case of the substitution of the chemical combustion system by a nuclear reactor system. Although the heat from nuclear reactor systems can be transferred normally only by means of heat exchange processes and not by direct 'combustion', means can be developed, by which the suitable control characteristics of highly enriched fission reactor systems and of shock-wave-ignited lithium and boron consuming fusion reactor systems and their enormous power capacity can be suitably be used in the operating of shock-wave-controlled convertible ram jet systems.

The economy of shock-wave-controlled ram jet systems will undoubtedly increase with the power capacity of the system; in other words, the author is not in the position yet to estimate accurately whether jet fighter development will be influenced by this new ram jet system at once. But it seems to be reasonable to assume, that the development of larger-hypersonic aircraft (bomber, transport, passenger planes, a.s.o.) will be based on the improved ram jet systems, outlined in this preliminary report.

COMMENTS OF PREPARING OFFICER:

2. Dr. Richter is very desirous of obtaining a position with an aircraft engine manufacturing company in the United States. He would like to continue working on ram jet engine development. This office, if desired can obtain additional information.

VERGIL N. NESTOR Lt. Colonel USAF Assistant Air Attache

* * * * * * *

AUTHOR'S COMMENTS OF THE RICHTER RAM JET

Not only could the ram jet designs of Dr. Richter be used in a standard fighter jet, they could also be used in a vertically rising aircraft, even one powered by nuclear fission or even nuclear fusion. This brings UFOs to mind.

* * * * * *

Air Intelligence Information Report IR-80-56

"THERMONUCLEAR EXPONENTIAL EXPERIMENTS"

1. Report contains a summary of his work by
Dr. Ronald Richter in developing a completely new type of arc melting furnace based on a shock wave reactivity rather than a heat transfer process through

utilization of a chemical arc reactor system. To prove his theory, he developed a reactor simulator utilizing thermonuclear exponential experiments based on shock-wave-ignited self-reproducing chains consuming lithium and boron isotopes.

2. Approving Officer is not technically gualified to comment
on the subject presented. However, Dr. Richter is, in the opinion of qualified German scientists resident in Argentina, a complete fraud who has "parlayed" a limited scientific background and a glib tongue to obtain much publicity: i.e., the explosion of the so-called "Argentine Atomic Bomb" in 1952. In the opinion of these qualified German scientists, the disgrace and obscurity that Dr. Richter now enjoys is better than he deserves.

APPROVED: George R. Herrman Colonel USAF Air Attache
1. The following statement was prepared by Dr. Ronald Richter (IR-76-56) and given to Preparing Officer.

The advantage of a high-speed reaction is that for a given capital investment more product can be run through a chemical or metallurgical plant or a smaller plant can be built to yield a given amount of reaction product.

In general, the reaction rate of a chemical reactor system depends on temperature, pressure, and catalyst. An electric arc between electrodes of carbon is the most intense source of heat used commonly in industrial practice. Such an arc plasma reactor can be operated in any atmosphere at any desired pressure and any kind of material can be introduced into the arc plasma zone and thus vaporized and heated up to plasma temperatures. The operation of a plasma reactor system can be considerably improved by jetting a mixture of reactants through the high energetic arc plasma zone at very high velocities.

Although arc furnaces are used to the greatest extent in the melting of metals and the production of ferroalloys, they figure prominently in the chemical operations requiring high temperatures, such as calcium carbide, elemental phosphorus, a.s.o. Arc furnaces up to 30,000 kw are in service.

In 1936, I was experimenting with reflector-controlled arc reactor systems. When studying self-stabilization of arc plasma zones by instantaneous strong overloading, I quite incidentally observed the occurrence of explosionlike plasma fluctuations, generating powerful shock waves. The analysis of the shock wave promoting factors revealed how to improve the shock wave generating process by means of andyzer-controlled feedback operations.

In the course of these investigations, it has been found, that about 50% of the arc plasma energy can be converted into powerful plasma shock waves, thus creating a completely new type of chemically and metallurgically reactive zone of operation. Such a reflector-controlled superposition of powerful plasma shock waves produces tremendous intensities of sound and ultra-sound, generated by the gaseous plasma zone itself, thus providing for the highest possible rate of energy transfer at all. All the before-known ultra-sound generating methods were characterized by a very poor coupling of the ultrasound energy to be fed into the reacting zone. For all these reasons, a shockwave-controlled reactor plasma is representing the strongest source of ultra-sound. The operation of such a powerful ultra-sound generating arc reactor plasma is quite a simple affair, but precautions have to be taken for preventing structural damage by ultrasound and the shock-wave-induced corrosion. Data-telemetering operations and remote reactor control have to be applied, to avoid a considerable health hazard for the reactor-operating crew.

The combined reaction of non-Maxwellian heat transfer, intense shock wave and ultra-sound reactivity leads to the most radical mechanical disintegration of all the materials to be fed into the reacting zone. In consequence of this, basic physical and chemical conditions can be achieved with never before could be obtained by other reactor systems. Owing to the incomparable high reaction rates that only can be obtained by shock-wave-controlled arc plasma systems, in many industrial chemical and metallurgical processes processing time ad production costs can be considerably reduced.

There exists a wide field of industrial applications, as:

The production of extremely purified and degassified metals and alloys, cheap tonnage processing of zirconium, titanium, beryllium, uranium, thorium and other metals.

Improved steel alloys with reduced production costs, wide range of variation of the mechanical and thermal properties of steel alloys (in general, of any kind of alloy) by applying different shock wave: heat ratios,

The production of completely new types of ultrasound-induced alloys and cements, improved cerments and ceramics for rocket and jet engines, improved ceramics and cerments with desirable nuclear properties of nuclear power reactors,

Ultra-sound-cracking of petroleum, ultra-sound induced disintegration of macromolecules,

De-gasification of liquids and fused materials, a.so.o.,

Considerable increase of the reaction rate of chemical processes induced by the high temperatures and pressure peaks, resulting form the plasma shock fonts, a.s.o.

A reactor simulator has been developed by which industrial application problems can be studied without building up the large-scale reactor system itself, thus reducing initial costs of industrial projects considerably. No further research work is necessary to construct large-scale shock-wave furnaces and reactors.

In brief:

Thermonuclear exponential experiments, based on shock-wave-ignited self-reproducing reaction chains, consuming lithium and boron isotopes. When developing a shock-wave-controlled arc reactor system, one fundamental problem was the thermodynamic analysis of the plasma shock waves.

After a considerable amount of experimenting on the photoelectric analysis of highly luminous shock fronts, it seemed to be promising to improve the thermodynamic analysis of shockwave-controlled arc plasma zones by employing plasma-collision-induced nuclear reactions. Owing to the high temperatures and pressure obtained in a gas behind of strong shock waves, it became very probable that in the case of deuterium gas, some high energetic deutrons might undergo deuteron-deuteron reactions, the reaction yield being a suitable basis for testing non-equilibrium thermodynamics. Since the reaction rate of a thermonuclear reaction depends exponentially on temperature, and since the temperature increases rather rapidly toward the center of the arc plasma zone, especially in the case of shock-wave-induced plasma pulsations, it was to be hoped that a detectable reaction rate might be achieved. But it was unlikely that the detection of statistically fluctuating plasma-collision-induced thermal nuclear reaction chains might become a reality.

In order to improve the deductibility of plasma-shock-wave-induced nuclear reactions in the fall of 1942, - by using nuclear mass data just having been published by J. Mattauch and S. Fluege, (Kernphysikalische Tabellen, Springer Verlag, Berlin, 1942) - I developed nuclear reaction schemes, based on the chain-reacting consumption of the lithium and boron isotopes.

The neutron-induced conversion of lithium-6 into tritium and helium, the neutron-multiplying tritium-tritium reaction, and other neutron-multiplying and lithium-7 into lithium-6 converting secondary reactions were taken into consideration as being useful components of controllable self-reproducing reaction chains. By providing for a sufficient number of initial neutrons and sufficiently high reaction rate of the neutron-multiplying processes, it was to be expected that the ignition of bursts of reaction chains might become feasible by jetting lithium or lithium-6-enriched lithium into a shock wave controlled neutron-producing deuterium high-pressure plasma. Since the reaction rate of such a reaction scheme depends equally on temperature and on multiplication factor, a shock-wave-induced neutron-reproducing reaction chain must be far more sensitive to temperature than a plasma-collision-induced thermal nuclear reaction chain ever can be.

The source of neutrons for the neutron-reproducing thermonuclear exponential experiments was a shock-wave-controlled, 300 kw, deuterium high pressure plasma. In such a deuterium plasma, due to the persistent isotropic plasma-collision-induced bombardment, not only the basic deuteron-deuteron reactions, but also plasma-collision-induced secondary reactions, like the deuterium-tritium and the tritium-tritium reaction will occur. By these reactions a spectrum of fast neutrons is produced. A contribution to the number of plasma-produced neutrons and thus a substantial increase in reactivity can be obtained by surrounding the plasma zone with a neutron-multiplying beryllium reflector. For helium-5 being a strong neutron absorber in the low energy range the balance between neutron-producing and neutron-absorbing processes will finally be controlled by the scattering-induced moderation of the neutron energies and by the plasma-collision-induced reaction rate of the helium-3-producing and helium-3-consuming secondary reactions. Tritium enrichment follows from the two-dimensional bombardment of a deuterium target with deuterons. In the case of the plasma-collision-induced three-dimensional deutron-deutron bombardment, tritium will not only be produced but will also be consumed by secondary reactions. This criterion is useful when it comes to prove the existence of plasma-collision-induced secondary nuclear reactions.

By the injection of lithium into a neutron producing deuterium plasma, an avalanche of tritium-producing and neutron-multiplying primary and secondary processes will develop. The lithium-5 converting reactions, having a relatively high cross section in the low as well as in the high-energy range, with a remarkable capture resonance near 258 kev, starts the avalanche of reaction chains by producing tritium. The Shockwave induced reaction rate of the neutron-multiplying processes (tritium-tritium, tritium-lithium-7, tritium-lithium-6) determines the intensity of the bursts of reaction chains. The tritium-producing process can to a certain extent be controlled by inserting neutron absorption rods into the neutron-reflecting structure, thus controlling back-scattering into the plasma region. For lithium-7 being a poor neutron absorber, there is no parallel to the resonance absorption in uranium-238. The gradual enrichment of helium-4 will increase non-reactive scattering but indications exist, that the enrichment of helium-6 might turn out to be even useful in regard to the safe operation of such a reactor system. The lack of reactor-contaminating radioactive reaction products adds to the outstanding features of neutron-reproducing thermonuclear reactor systems.

As one can see, the shock-wave-controlled arc plasma system became involved in thermonuclear exponential experiments by accident rather than design but turned out to become a useful tool in research on controlled thermonuclear reactor systems. For the first time, an arc plasma has been transformed into a zone of intense shock waves, accompanied by an extraordinarily high degree of plasma turbulence; a practically invisible reactor plasma (as a consequence of the non-Maxwellian characteristics of plasma shock waves, most of the photons emitted belong to the ultra-violet and bremsstrahlung region of the electromagnetic spectrum), emitting an almost unbearable intensity of sound and ultra-sound, the whole reactor structure oscillating under the impact of the feed-back-controlled plasma shock waves, - that's the basis of operation for the ignition of self-reproducing plasma reaction chains, and this shock-wave-induced ignition process will undoubtedly substitute nuclear-fission-induced ignition, and make possible the gradual transformation of a thermonuclear exponential reactor system into a self-sustaining chain-reacting system.

On February 15, 1951, an exponential reactor system was ready for test. In the first test, a series of primary and secondary nuclear reactions was produced for a short interval by jetting lithium-6-enriched lithium into a shockwave-controlled proton hydrogen plasma. Some of the reactions (the helium-3, helium-3 reaction) were multiplying the primary protons by ejecting two high energetic protons.

In a second test, a rapidly developing avalanche of neutron-reproducing reaction chains was produced by jetting lithium-6-enriched lithium into a shock-wave-controlled deuterium high-pressure plasma.

In both tests, the self-reproducing reaction chains were analyzed by means of excitation-energy-discriminating ultraviolet-sensitive proportional counter tubes, a tele-analyzing method, having been developed and applied for the first time in 1938, when analyzing powerful plasma shock fronts.

By these exponential experiments, it has been demonstrated (1) that the shock-wave-induced ignition of self-reproducing thermonuclear reaction chains is possible, and (2) that the ignition of such reaction chains can be accomplished under controllable conditions.

On October 26, 1951, in a third decisive exponential experiment, it has been proven that the avalanche of neutron-reproducing reaction chains, resulting from the injection of lithium into a shock-wave-controlled neutron-producing deuterium high-pressure plasma, can be kept going on by injecting boron. Boron-11 like lithium-7 is an excellent neutron-multiplier when being bombarded with tritium particles. The fast-neutron-induced conversion of boron-10 into tritium and helium and the slow-neutron-induced conversion of boron-10 into the neutron-multiplying lithium-7 and helium are providing for tritium production and neutron multiplication. It might be of interest to note that the mechanism of the hydrogen bomb is based on the same reaction schemes. As has already been mentioned, a lithium and boron injected deutrerium plasma is a chain-reacting source of fast neutrons. When injecting natural uranium into such a plasma zone, fast-neutron-fission of uranium-238 occurs, the so-called 'thermo-fission'.

A serious disadvantage from the point of view of reactor control seems to be arising from the fact that in all the plasma-induced neutron-reproducing reaction chains only prompt neutrons are emitted. It is evident that the absence of delayed neutron emission would demand an exceedingly fine and extremely fast operating adjustment of the reactor controls. Fortunately, ignition, control and heat exchange of thermonuclear reactor systems can considerably be improved by providing for a reflector-controlled pulsating reactor plasma. In the case of a nuclear fusion reactor system, not a critical size of reactive material by a critical compression of the reactive plasma will be responsible for reaching a sufficiently high reaction rate of the neutron-multiplying processes, thus developing a controllable self-repeating cycle of plasma pulsation. In other words, during the compression period, the central temperature of the compressed reactor plasma should become comparable with the temperature needed for a sufficiently high reaction rate of the neutron-reproducing reaction chains, to make the reactor system a self-sustaining one. The absence of delayed neutrons will only alter rise time and delay time of the compression-induced impulse of reaction chains. The self-stabilizing features of pulsating reactor operation will suitably control supercritical bursts of self-reproducing reaction chains. By compressing the reactive plasma zone briefly to supercriticality, the gaseous zone quickly heats up and then cools itself by expansion, thus eliminating the formidable heat transfer obstacles.

Much work has been done in regard to the control of chain-reacting plasma zones by magnetically and electro-dynamically induced plasma deformation, magnetically-controlled plasma pulsation, electronic simulation of pulsating reactor plasma conditions, a.s.o.

Monte Grande February, 1, 1956

COMMENTS OF PREPARING OFFICER:

2. Material contained above is beyond the technical ability of the Preparing Officer to evaluate.

Vergil N. Nestor Lt. Colonel USAF Assistant Air Attache

* * * * * * *

Air Intelligence Information Report IR-145-56

"THERMONUCLEAR PROPULSION SYSTEM"

Report describes the work and theory of Dr. Ronald Richter in development of aircraft thermonuclear propulsion system.

APPROVED: George R. Herrman Colonel UFAF Air Attache

1. The following is extracted from a paper written by Dr. Ronald Richter (IR-76-56):

In nuclear fission powered propulsion systems, thermal energy cannot be generated by 'direct combustion' but has to be applied to the propulsion system by means of indirect heat transfer. For this reason, the efficiency of such a propulsion system - jet or rocket system - depends mainly on the technology on the heat-transfer-promoting materials of construction.

The gradual contamination of the hermetically sealed-off reactor system with highly radioactive nuclear fission products and the protection of the flight personal against neutron, gamma, and radioactive hazard, demands for voluminous any heavy shielding structures. Leakage or fully destruction of the reactor system by flight accident causes severe contamination of the atmosphere by radioactive fission products.

In nuclear fission powered propulsion systems - homogeneous or heterogeneous systems - only highly enriched and very costly reactor fuels can be used. Based on the results of shock-wave-ignition controlled thermonuclear exponential experiments, the conception for a thermonuclear propulsion system has been developed.

The shock-wave-controlled arc plasma system of project 1 became involved in thermonuclear exponential experiments by accident rather than design. A fundamental problem connected with the development of shock-wave-controlled reactor systems was the thermodynamic analysis of the plasma shock waves produced. After a considerable amount of experimenting of the photoelectric analysis of highly luminous shock fronts, it seemed to be promising, to improve the thermodynamic analysis of shock-wave-controlled arc plasma zones by employing plasma-collision-induced nuclear reactions.

Owing to the high temperatures and pressures obtained in a gas behind strong Shockwaves, it was very probable that in the case of a deuterium high pressure plasma, some high energetic deuterons might undergo deuteron-deuteron reactions, and even secondary tritium-deuteron and tritium-tritium reactions, the reaction yield being a suitable basis for testing non-equilibrium thermodynamics. Since the reaction rate of a thermonuclear reaction depends exponentially on temperature, and since the temperature increases rather rapidly toward the center of the arc plasma zone, especially in the case of shock-wave-induced plasma pulsations, it was to be hoped, that a detectable reaction rate might be achieved. The detection of statistically fluctuating plasma-reaction rate might be achieved. The detection of statistically fluctuating plasma-collision-induced thermal nuclear reaction chains was unlikely then (in 1936).

In order to improve the deductibility of plasma-shock-wave-induced nuclear reactions, I developed nuclear reaction schemes, (in 1942), based on the chain-reacting consumption of the lithium and boron isotopes.

The neutron-induced conversion of lithium-6 into tritium and helium, the neutron-multiplying tritium-tritium reaction, and other neutron-multiplying and lithium-7 into lithium-6 converting secondary reactions were taken into consideration as being useful components of a controllable self-reproducing reaction chain. By providing for a sufficient number of initial neutrons and a sufficiently high reaction rate of the neutron-reproducing processes, it was to be expected that the ignition of bursts of reaction chains might become feasible by jetting lithium or lithium-6-enriched lithium into a shock-wave-controlled neutron-producing deuterium high pressure plasma. The reaction rate of such a reaction scheme depends equally on temperature and reproduction factor, a shock-wave-induced neutron-reproducing chain of reactions must be far more temperature-sensitive than a plasma-collision-induced thermal nuclear reaction can ever be. The experimental analysis of the non-Maxwellian thermodynamic conditions in a shock-wave-controlled arc plasma zone by shock-wave-ignited self-reproducing nuclear reaction chains is practically a thermonuclear exponential experiment.

By injecting lithium into a neutron-producing deuterium plasma, an avalanche of tritium-producing and neutron-multiplying primary and secondary reactions develops. The lithium-6 converting reaction, having a relatively high cross section in the low as well as in the high-energy range, with a remarkable capture resonance near 258 kev, starts the avalanche of reaction chains by producing tritium. The shock-wave-induced reaction rate of the neutron-reproducing processes (tritium-tritium, tritium-lithium-7, tritium-lithium-6) will determine the intensity of the bursts of reaction chains. The tritium-producing process can to a certain extent by controlled by inserting neutron absorption rods into the neutron-reflecting structure, thus controlling back-scattering into the plasma region. For lithium-7 being a poor neutron-absorber, there is no parallel to the resonance absorption in uranium-238. The gradual enrichment of helium-4 will increase non-reactive scattering but indications exist, that helium-4 enrichment might turn out to be even useful in regard to the safe operation of such a reactor system, when it becomes self-sustaining. The lack of reactor-contaminating radioactive reaction products adds to the outstanding features of neutron-reproducing thermonuclear reactor systems.

The avalanche of neutron-reproducing reaction chains, resulting from the injection of lithium into a shock-wave-controlled neutron-producing deuterium high-pressure plasma, can be maintained by injection boron. Boron-11 like lithium-7 is an excellent neutron-multiplier, when bombarded with tritium. The fast-neutron-induced conversion of boron-10 into tritium and helium and the slow-neutron-induced conversion of boron-10 into the neutron-multiplying lithium-7 and helium are providing for tritium production and neutron multiplication.

A serious disadvantage from the point of view of reactor control seems to be arising from the fact that in all the plasma induced neutron-reproducing reaction chains, only prompt neutrons are emitted. It is evident that the absence of delayed neutron emission would demand for an exceedingly fine and extremely fast operating adjustment of the reactor controls. Fortunately, ignition, control, and heat exchange of thermonuclear reactor systems can be considerably improved by providing for a reflector-controlled pulsating reactor plasma. In the case of a nuclear fusion reactor reactant plasma will be responsible for reaching a sufficiently high reaction rate of the neutron-reproducing processes, thus developing a controllable self-repeating cycle of plasma pulsation. The absence of delayed neutrons will only alter rise time and decay time of the compression-induced impulse of reaction chains. The self-stabilizing features of pulsating reactor operation will suitably control supercritical burst of self-reproducing reaction chains. By compressing the reactant plasma zone briefly to supercrit-icality, the gaseous zone quickly heats up and then cools itself by expansion, thus eliminating the formidable heat transfer obstacles.

(Much work has been done in regard to the control of chain-reacting plasma zones by magnetically and electro-dynamically induced plasma deformation, magnetically-controlled plasma pulsation, the direct conversion of nuclear energy into electricity in plasma reactor systems due to the high ionization rate of the plasma zone and its interaction with a static magnetic field.)

Development of a pulsating plasma reactor system, the compression period providing for a sufficiently high reaction rate and reproduction factor, the expanding period providing for thrust and heat dissipation. Such a pulsating thermonuclear propulsion system, based on the chain-reacting consumption of the lithium and boron isotopes, depends in the first line of the realization of a shock-wave-controlled ignition process. It is to be expected that in the very near future the United States or Russia will demonstrate, by exploding a thermonuclear device, that such an explosion can be ignited by Shockwaves, i.e. without the use of an initial nuclear fission device.

Since there are no highly radioactive reaction products, the tail-pipe can be directly connected to the reactor vessel, thus avoiding indirect heat transfer. The critical diameter of such a 'direct combustion' system depends on reaction rate and reproduction factor of the compression period of the plasma pulsation, which in turn depends on the isotope ratio of the reactant materials injected.

Accurate neutron dosage by accurate injection dosage of the reactant materials reduces shielding volume and weight considerably.

Practically no reactor contamination. No atmospheric contamination.

Vertical start and landing operations.

Near target, the propulsion reactor system of a guided missile can be converted automatically into a thermonuclear bomb reactor system by providing for the necessary overloading of the reactor system.

PROGRAM OF DEVELOPMENT

Installation and operation of a shock-wave-controlled arc plasma reactor system (like project 1),

Shock-wave-ignition controlled thermonuclear exponential experiments, based on the injection of lithium and boron into the shock-wave-controlled deuterium plasma, analysis of injection characteristics,

Performance of a self-sustaining neutron-reproducing reactor system when directly connected to the tail-pike, they representing a thermonuclear propulsion system, combine injection and thrust analysis, analysis of control characteristics,

Development of a safe ignition process,

Minimum diameter of the reactor vessel vs. isotope ration, a.s.o.

INSTALLATIONS AND EQUIPMENT

Reactor system, analyzing and controlling equipment practically the same as in project 1.

Tele-operating nuclear reaction analyzer of special design,

Non-equilibrium thermodynamics-analyzer of special design,

Reactor controls of special design,

Plasma turbulence analyzer of special design,

Digital computer components, pressure-analyzing equipment,

Photoelectric cell of special design,

Sealers, counting rate meters, pulse height analyzers,

Neutron, gamma, and radioactivity detecting and analyzing equipment,

Shock-wave-ignition reactor bombs,

Thrust analyzing equipment as in project 2, a.s.o.

As you can see, all the three projects have shock-wave-operations in common. In all the projects, an explosion-proof structure for the reactor system and an explosion-protected control station are needed. Most of the analyzing and controlling equipment (also that of special design) is practically the same in 11 the projects. The task is to build up an automatically self-recording test installation, providing for a maximum of automatically plotted characteristics curves of the reactor system in question, thus requiring just a minimum of scientifically trained personnel. In all the three projects, operational progress can be achieved faster by setting up electronic analog systems.

2. The project number 1 referred to in the above was reported in IR-80-56. Installation and equipment for this project is as follows:

A tele-controlled reactor system,(shock-wave-induced noise hazard),

Reactor vessel and electrodes immersed in an explosion-proof structure of reinforced concrete.

Dimensions and shape of the reactor structure depend on the power input and industrial application of the reactor system (melting furnace, chemical reactor system, a.s.o.),

Although principal demonstrations of the process in question can be carried out with a rector system consuming around 100 kw, it is recommended to start the shock-wave-reactor program with a power input of about 1,000-5,000 kw, for higher power input means higher output of reaction products, alloys, ceramics, cermets, a.s.o., i.e. to arrive at large-scale operations (and large-scale business faster,

Power transformer, rectifier installations, power controls, stabilizing equipment, rectifier controls, electrode controls,

Shock-wave-analyzers of special design,

Shock-wave-controls of special design,

Blowers, cooling water installations,

A travelling crane for handling the reactor system,

Explosion-protected control station, containing all the controls, analyzers, automatic power switches,

Injection systems, electromagnetically controlled valves,

Relays and automatic switches, switchboard instruments,

Electronic instruments of special design.

Recording multichannel galvanometers and cathode ray detectors,

Ultra-sound spectrum analyzers, ultra-sound intensity meters,

Polar-coordination recorders for ultra-sound field recording,

Pulse height analyzers, pulse counting rate meters (recording),

X-Y recording instruments and plottingboards, digital computer components,

D.C.-D.C. cathode ray oscilloscopes, with cameras,

Microwave spectrum analyzers (Plasma oscillation spectrum),

Height-speed framing camera, Kerr cell cameras, Television equipment, monitoring the reactor core,

Multichannel magnetic data recorder,

Reaction product analyzers (when the reactor system is used as a chemical reactor system-recording infrared and mass spectrometer analysis,

Carbon electrodes,

Reactor simulation for design work on industrial reactor system,

3. The project number 2 referred to in the above was reported in IR-79-56. Installation and equipment for this project is:

A complete ram jet system with a flight simulator (compressor unit for the performance of subcritical, critical, and supercirtical flow conditions) , immersed in an explosion-proof test-pit,

Injection systems of special design, electromagnetically controlled valves,

Fuel and oxygen tanks,

Explosion-protected control station,

Thrust-analyzing equipment (recording),

Shock-wave-analyzers of special design,

Shock-wave-controls of special design,

Most of the analyzing and controlling equipment of project 1, especially multichannel recording instruments, pulse height analyzers, pulse spectrum and ultra-sound analyzers, pulse counting rate meters, a photoelectric reaction analyzer of non-equilibrium thermodynamics,

Temperature and pressure recording instruments,

Flow recording instruments.

COMMENTS of Preparing Officer:

4. The material contained in this report is beyond the technical ability of the Preparing Officer to evaluate. Conversation with dr. Cooper and Dr. Multhopp, scientists of The Glen L. Martin Company of the United States who have interviewed Dr. Richter,

revealed that there may be something of value in the work and theory of Dr. Richter. Vergil N. Nestor Lt. Colonel USAF Assistant Air Attache

COMMENTS of Approving Officer:

5. Material contained in this report was submitted to the Air Attache by Dr. Ronald Richter, whose scientific reputation in Argentina is not good. (See IR-80-56).

G. R. H.

* * * * * * *

These are the three main reports submitted by Dr. Richter to the American authorities, obviously hoping for employment. The reports have been reproduced as accurately as possible, including minor spelling errors. The positive and negative comments of the American personnel preparing these reports indicate either a split opinion of Dr. Richter's value or an attempt to cover all contingencies. In other words, if Dr. Richter and his work were to turn out to be of great value, then these individuals would be in line for credit for his "discovery". On the other hand, if naught came from all of this or something negative developed, the same command could say "I told you so".

All three examples of Dr. Richter's work involve shock waves. Ultra-sound was harnessed and set into a feedback loop to accomplish his ends. Two projects that he has written on above involve fusion. The ignition procedure and the containment field are provided for by means of his a shock wave technology. If this were all Dr. Richter had done, he would have been guaranteed inclusion in this book for that work alone, but Dr. Richter's mind had already moved beyond the production of a sustained fusion reaction and the technological implication, thereof. A clue to this broader thinking is given in his specialties:

"...development and testing of highly-turbulent, magnetic-field-controlled fission and fusion plasma systems, Experimental approach to solar flare conditions and to the explosion-tendency of the solar plasma, ultraviolet excess analysis, excitation of space structure by pulsation-controlled plasma implosion, testing the limitations of quantum mechanics and quantum dynamics, Experimental approach to the unified field theory and to the velocity of propagation of gravity, a.s.o."

Dr. Richter was thinking on a much grander scale. It is clear that Dr. Richter's method was experimentation, not merely conducting "research" by scribbling mathematical babble on a chalkboard and then insisting on a Spinosian set of definitions of exactly what the physical universe actually is.

Dr. Richter's laboratory work led to two striking spin-offs of the shock-wave research. He was working on furthering both this concepts as well as refining the work already described in 1956, contemporaneously with the creation of the Paperclip file by the US intelligence services.

The first is the direct conversion of nuclear energy into electric energy. Again, this was an offshoot of the research already described above. It involves venting the moving plasma through a magnetic field, which causes a plasma induction of electric energy.

Dr. Richter indicates that the concept and testing occurred in 1951 with the original experimentation being derived from his work in Germany in 1944. Dr. Richter did "Preliminary work" in 1953 and he cites an unpublished letter to the editor of "Nucleonics" on September 22, 1956 as documentation. Dr. Richter mentions that the charge carried by some of the substances he worked with might prove to be better than others.

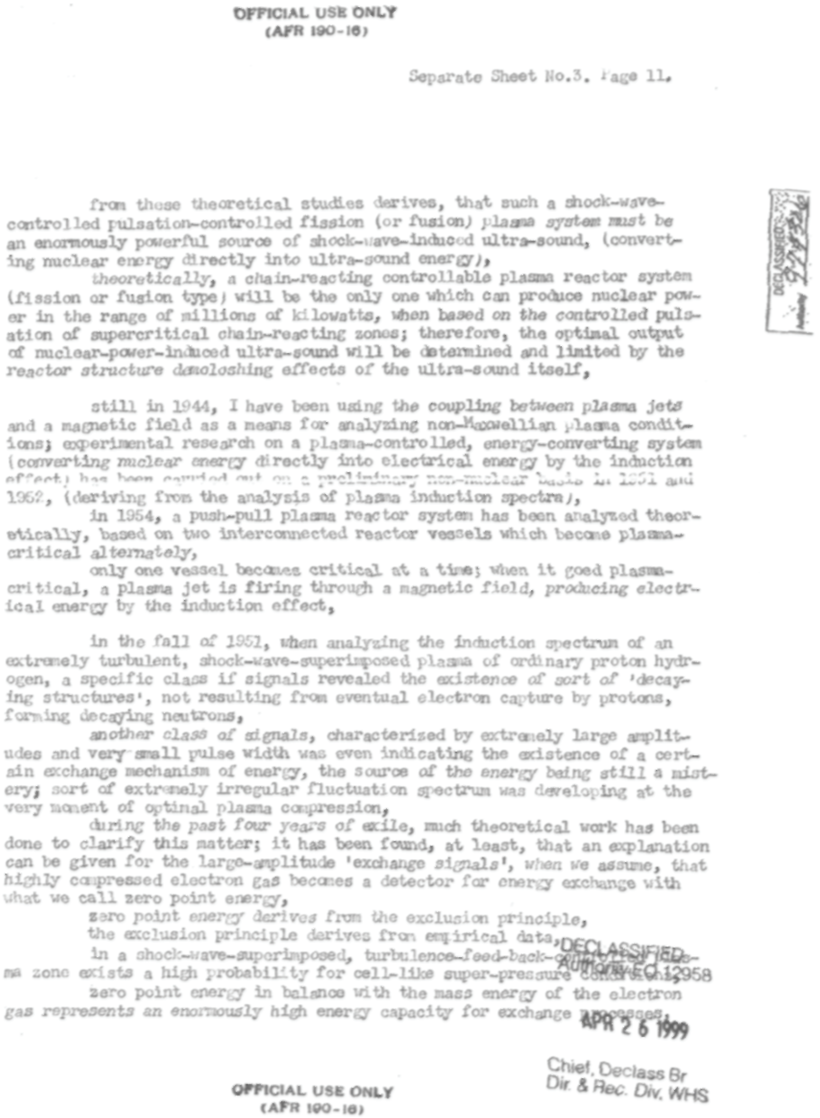
Dr. Richter also mentions direct conversion of nuclear energy into radio frequency energy in fission and fusion plasma systems. He claims the year of the concept was 1949 and the report, again, in 1956. We have all heard of this phenomena; it is the pulse of electromagnetic energy that occurs during detonation of a nuclear or thermonuclear bomb. This pulse knocks out sensitive electronic equipment and radio communications devices.

But there was another discovery made by Dr. Richter that dwarfs everything except, perhaps, controlled fusion. This discovery is of another and entirely different sort of energy whose discovery also resulted from Dr. Richter's work on shock waves. Dr. Richter even coined a phrase for it, (although he is never given credit for doing so), and it is a term which we hear frequently now. It is called "Zero Point Energy". Dr. Richter writes:

"experimental approach to zero point energy (and probably to a new source of energy at all), deriving from the analysis of exponential fusion experiments in 1951,"

So, Dr. Richter was working on fusion experiments when he hit upon something else. In another statement we learn that the experiments that led to the discovery of zero point energy were the experiments of directly converting plasma energy into electrical energy (as he wrote it minor errors included):

"...still in 1944, I have been using the coupling between plasma jets and a magnetic field as a means for analyzing non-Maxwellian plasma conditions; experimental research of a plasma-controlled, energy-converting system (converting nuclear energy directly into electrical energy by the induction effect) has been carried out on a preliminary non-nuclear basis in 1951 and 1952, (deriving from the analysis of plasma induction spectra), in 1954, a push-pull plasma reactor system has been analyzed theoretically, based on two interconnected reactor vessels which become plasma-critical alternately, only one vessel becomes critical at a time; when it goes plasma-critical, a plasma jet is firing through a magnetic field, producing electrical energy by the induction effect, in the fall of 1951, when analyzing the induction spectrum of an extremely turbulent, shock-wave-superimposed plasma of ordinary proton hydrogen, a specific class if signals revealed the existence of sort of 'decaying structures', not resulting from eventual electron capture by protons, forming decaying neutrons, another class of signals, characterized by extremely large amplitudes and very small pulse width was even indicating the existence of a certain exchange mechanism of energy, the source of the energy being still a mystery; sort of extremely irregular fluctuations spectrum was developing at the very moment of optimal plasma compression, during the past four years of exile, much theoretical work has been done to clarify this matter; it has been found, at least, that an explanation can be given for the large-amplitude 'exchange signals' when we assume, that highly compressed electron gas becomes a detector for energy exchange with what we call zero point energy, zero point energy derives from the exclusion principle, the exclusion principle derives from empirical data, in a shock-wave-superimposed, turbulence-feed-back controlled plasma zone exists a high probability for cell-like super-pressure conditions, gas represents an enormously high energy capacity of exchange processes, about 10 to the 10th kwh per unit volume, on the basis of exchange coupling, it seems to be possible to 'extract' a compression-proportional amount of zero point energy by means of a magnetic-field-controlled exchange fluctuation between the compressed electron gas and sort of cell structure in space (dimensions about 10 to the minus 13th cm) (author's note: Dr. Richter abbreviated this figure as scientific notation), representing the source of what we call zero point energy, it seems even possible that the large-amplitude fluctuation signals derive from a mechanism of energy-conversion unknown to us yet which becomes detectable only in highly compressed electron gas, (it would be of interest to repeat these experiments not with a proton hydrogen plasma-proton spin and electron spin identical - but with a helium-4 plasma, the spin discrepancy supporting energy extraction, it would also be worth-while to search for exchange signals in high-power pulsating fission plasma systems), in case, all these interpretations are fully correct, plasma implosion analysis might turn out to become an approach to a completely new source of energy, probably superior to nuclear energy, the present status of this matter can best be compared with the situation when nuclear fission was discovered, but when the development of a chain-reacting fission reactor system was still depending on the realization of controllable neutron reproduction, (the compression-induced 'decay signals' can be explained as resulting from wave-mechanical coupling of groups



OFFICIAL USE ONLY
(AFR 190-16)

Separate Sheet No.3. Page 11.

DECLASSIFIED

from these theoretical studies derives, that such a shock-wave-controlled pulsation-controlled fission (or fusion) plasma system must be an enormously powerful source of shock-wave-induced ultra-sound, (converting nuclear energy directly into ultra-sound energy),

theoretically, a chain-reacting controllable plasma reactor system (fission or fusion type) will be the only one which can produce nuclear power in the range of millions of kilowatts, when based on the controlled pulsation of supercritical chain-reacting zones; therefore, the optimal output of nuclear-power-induced ultra-sound will be determined and limited by the reactor structure damoloshing effects of the ultra-sound itself,

still in 1944, I have been using the coupling between plasma jets and a magnetic field as a means for analyzing non-Maxwellian plasma conditions; experimental research on a plasma-controlled, energy-converting system (converting nuclear energy directly into electrical energy by the induction effect) has been carried out on a preliminary non-nuclear basis in 1951 and 1952, (deriving from the analysis of plasma induction spectra),

in 1954, a push-pull plasma reactor system has been analyzed theoretically, based on two interconnected reactor vessels which become plasma-critical alternately,

only one vessel becomes critical at a time; when it goed plasma-critical, a plasma jet is firing through a magnetic field, producing electrical energy by the induction effect,

in the fall of 1951, when analyzing the induction spectrum of an extremely turbulent, shock-wave-superimposed plasma of ordinary proton hydrogen, a specific class if signals revealed the existence of sort of 'decaying structures', not resulting from eventual electron capture by protons, forming decaying neutrons,

another class of signals, characterised by extremely large amplitudes and very small pulse width was even indicating the existence of a certain exchange mechanism of energy, the source of the energy being still a mistery; sort of extremely irregular fluctuation spectrum was developing at the very moment of optimal plasma compression,

during the past four years of exile, much theoretical work has been done to clarify this matter; it has been found, at least, that an explanation can be given for the large-amplitude 'exchange signals', when we assume, that highly compressed electron gas becomes a detector for energy exchange with what we call zero point energy,

zero point energy derives from the exclusion principle,

the exclusion principle derives from empirical data,

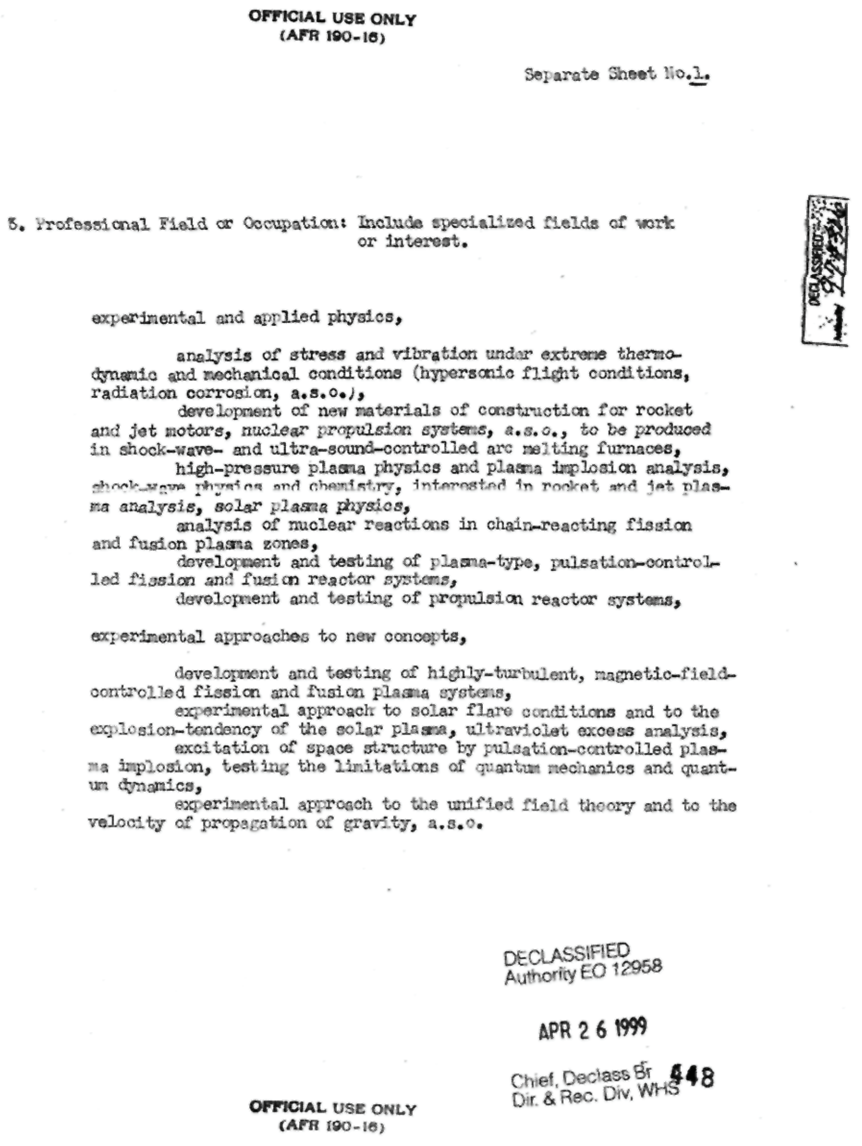
in a shock-wave-superimposed, turbulence-feed-back-controlled plasma zone exists a high probability for cell-like super-pressure conditions,

zero point energy in balance with the mass energy of the electron gas represents an enormously high energy capacity for exchange processes,

DECLASSIFIED
Authority EO 12958
APR 2 6 1999
Chief, Declass Br
Dir. & Rec. Div. WHS

OFFICIAL USE ONLY
(AFR 190-16)

This is a copy of the actual text written by Dr. Richter. Did he coin the words "Zero Point Energy" sometime between 1956 and 1958? This text was declassified for the author on April 26, 1999.



OFFICIAL USE ONLY
(AFR 190-16)

Separate Sheet No.1.

5. Professional Field or Occupation: Include specialized fields of work or interest.

DECLASSIFIED

experimental and applied physics,

analysis of stress and vibration under extreme thermodynamic and mechanical conditions (hypersonic flight conditions, radiation corrosion, a.s.o.),

development of new materials of construction for rocket and jet motors, nuclear propulsion systems, a.s.o., to be produced in shock-wave- and ultra-sound-controlled arc melting furnaces,

high-pressure plasma physics and plasma implosion analysis, shock-wave physics and chemistry, interested in rocket and jet plasma analysis, solar plasma physics,

analysis of nuclear reactions in chain-reacting fission and fusion plasma zones,

development and testing of plasma-type, pulsation-controlled fission and fusion reactor systems,

development and testing of propulsion reactor systems,

experimental approaches to new concepts,

development and testing of highly-turbulent, magnetic-field-controlled fission and fusion plasma systems,

experimental approach to solar flare conditions and to the explosion-tendency of the solar plasma, ultraviolet excess analysis,

excitation of space structure by pulsation-controlled plasma implosion, testing the limitations of quantum mechanics and quantum dynamics,

experimental approach to the unified field theory and to the velocity of propagation of gravity, a.s.o.

DECLASSIFIED
Authority EO 12958

APR 2 6 1999

Chief, Declass Br
Dir. & Rec. Div, WHS

448

OFFICIAL USE ONLY
(AFR 190-16)

This is another page of Dr. Richter's declassified text highlighting some of his accomplishments.

DECLASSIFIED

about 10^{10} kwh per unit volume,

on the basis of exchange coupling, it seems to be possible to 'extract' a compression-proportional amount of zero point energy by means of a magnetic-field-controlled *exchange fluctuation* between the compressed electron gas and sort of cell structure in space (dimensions about 10^{-13} cm), representing the source of what we call zero point energy,

it seems even possible that the large-amplitude fluctuation signals derive from a mechanism of energy-conversion unknwon to us yet which becomes detectable only in highly compressed electron gas,

(it would be of interest to repeat these experiments not with a proton hydrogen plasma - proton spin and electron spin identical - but with a helium-4 plasma, the spin discrepancy supporting energy extraction,

it would *also* be worth-while to search for exchange signals in high-power pulsating fission plasma systems),

in case, all these interpretations are fully correct, plasma implosion analysis might turn out to become an approach to a completely new source of energy, probably superior to nuclear energy,

the present status of this matter can best be compared with the situation, when nuclear fission was discovered, but when the development of a chain-reacting fission reactor system was still depending on the realisation of controllable neutron reproduction,

(*the compression-induced 'decay signals'* can be explained as resulting from wave-mechanical coupling of groups of electrons, the repulsive forces between the electrons becoming neutralized gradually by wave-mechanical coupling with increasing compression),

first, there was the discovery of the shock-wave-generating process in 1936, the discovery of a feed-back loop between shock-wave-induced plasma turbulence and plasma-turbulence-induced promotion of shock-wave-generating *plasma explosions*,

the concept of testing shock-wave conditions by means of plasma-collision-induced nuclear reactions,

the development of nuclear reaction schemes, based on the chain-reacting consumption of the lithium and boron isotopes in 1942,

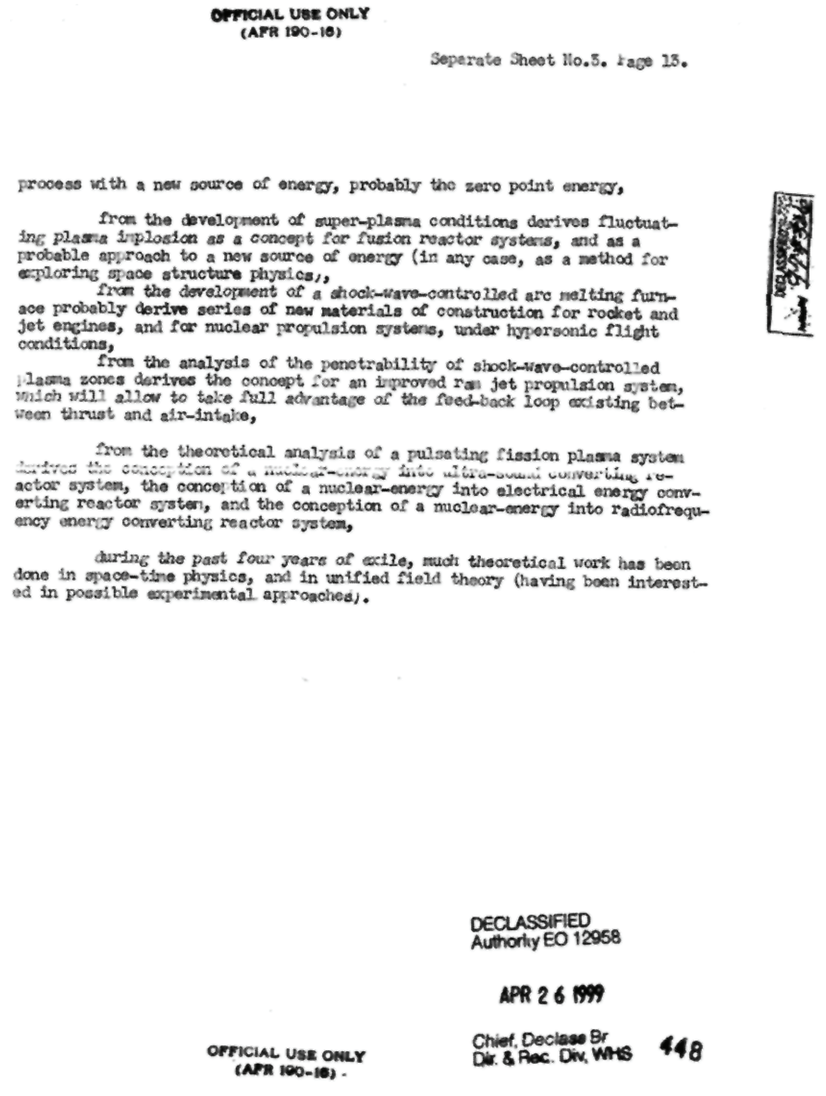
the concept of a controllable fusion reactor system, ignited by a shock-wave-controlled deuterium high-pressure plasma,

then came the first series of exponential fusion experiments in February, 1951, and the second series of exponential fusion experiments in October, 1951, giving proof for the existence of self-reproducing reaction chains,

from these experiments derived the discovery of field-interaction-accelerated particles, initiating a completely new conc[illegible] reactor systems, and the discovery of two *specific classes of f*[illegible]s, the 'decaying type', deriving from wave-mechanical coupling of electron groups, and the 'large-amplitude-type', deriving from a possible exchange

DECLASSIFIED
Authority: EO 12958
APR 2 6 1999
Chief, Declass Br
Dir. & Rec. Div, WHS

This is more of Dr. Richter's 1958 discussion about extracting zero point energy.



OFFICIAL USE ONLY
(AFR 190-16)

Separate Sheet No.3. Page 13.

process with a new source of energy, probably the zero point energy,

from the development of super-plasma conditions derives fluctuating plasma implosion as a concept for fusion reactor systems, and as a probable approach to a new source of energy (in any case, as a method for exploring space structure physics),

from the development of a shock-wave-controlled arc melting furnace probably derive series of new materials of construction for rocket and jet engines, and for nuclear propulsion systems, under hypersonic flight conditions,

from the analysis of the penetrability of shock-wave-controlled plasma zones derives the concept for an improved ram jet propulsion system, which will allow to take full advantage of the feed-back loop existing between thrust and air-intake,

from the theoretical analysis of a pulsating fission plasma system derives the conception of a nuclear-energy into ultra-sound converting reactor system, the conception of a nuclear-energy into electrical energy converting reactor system, and the conception of a nuclear-energy into radiofrequency energy converting reactor system,

during the past four years of exile, much theoretical work has been done in space-time physics, and in unified field theory (having been interested in possible experimental approaches).

DECLASSIFIED

DECLASSIFIED
Authority EO 12958

APR 26 1999

Chief, Declass Br
Dir. & Rec. Div, WHS

448

OFFICIAL USE ONLY
(AFR 190-16)

More of Dr. Richter's text. Standing ultrasound waves were the basis for all of his work.

of electrons, the repulsive forces between eh electrons becoming neutralized gradually be wave-mechanical couplings with increasing compression,"

This has been a glimpse into the mind of Dr. Ronald Richter. It has also been a glimpse into a probable post-war world if the Nazi government had survived and Dr. Richter has gone on with his work, in Germany, without breaks in funding.

The media, especially the American media, wanted to brand Dr. Richter as a charlatan. The American intelligence services which put together the Paperclip report on Dr. Richter, spent a great deal of time and effort researching Dr. Richter while, at the same time, repeating negative things said about him in an effort to cover their butts no matter what became of him and his work. This tactic should not surprise us. We have seen them do this time and time again.

The question arises as to what we are to think of Dr. Richter today. Opinion was split in the mid-1950s. As an example of this, there is a technical evaluation of Dr. Richter included in the Paperclip file. It is a report from The Foreign Service of the United States of America, Office of the Air Attache, United States Embassy (Argentina). It is dated 7/3/56 and so is concurrent with the file and reports cited A whole group of scientists were sent by the US government to Argentina to evaluate Richter. Interestingly enough, a medical doctor also accompanied the team. Cold war political implications are noted. The report was done for and directly submitted to the Director of Intelligence, USAF, and it must be concluded that this is a high-level intelligence report. It is re-written here word for word:

* * * * * * *

CONFIDENTIAL

The Foreign Service of the United States Of America
Office of the Air Attache
United States Embassy
Buenos Aires, Argentina
175-R&D 3 July 1956
(Ucl)

SUBJECT: Dr. Ronald Richter (See IR-76-56, 79-56, 80-56 and 145-56)

TO: Director of Intelligence

Headquarteres, USAF ATTN: Air Attache Branch Washington 25, D.C.

1. A recent visit by a group of U.S. atomic energy scientists to Argentina, headed by Dr. John Hall, resulted in a conversation among Dr. Richter, Dr. Hall and two other scientists in the group. The undersigned officer attended a meeting with Dr. Hall subsequent to this conference and the following items of interest relative to Dr. Richter are being forwarded for information and whatever action is required:

a. Dr. Richter is considered by Dr. Hall to be "a mad genius". Along the same lines Dr. Hall stated that Dr. Richter is thinking in the year 1970. Dr. Hall was quite impressed with the knowledge, theories and work of Dr. Richter. He will attempt to send to Argentina an atomic scientist thoroughly familiar with Dr. Richter's field of work to further interrogate Dr. Richter and thus properly evaluate his capabilities. One of the visiting group who attended this conference was a medical doctor and has diagnosed Dr. Richter as being close to the verge of a complete breakdown

b. Dr. Richter has visited the undersigned officer several times during the past four months. He has become increasingly concerned about his future inasmuch as he cannot secure employment in Argentina and has completely exhausted all his personal funds. Dr. Richter has repeatedly indicated his desire to work for the U.S. or for any country that is opposed to the Communists. It isknown to this officer that Dr. Richter has been approached four times in the past six months by "pink" Germans residing in Buenos Aires and has been urged to visit the Russian attache who would completely solve all of his problems. His condition at present is such that the undersigned feels that unless he has some definite encouragement for obtaining employment in the U.S. or with

a Western Bloc country, he will accept employment with the Communist Bloc.
175-R&D, USAIRA, Buenos Aires, Argentina,
Subj Dr. Ronald Richter

2. It is urged that this office be advised if there is any interest on the part of private concerns or governmental agencies in securing Dr. Richter's services. Dr. John Hall of the Atomic Energy Commission may be contacted on this subject.

Vergil N. Nestor Lt. Col USAF Air Attache

* * * * * * *

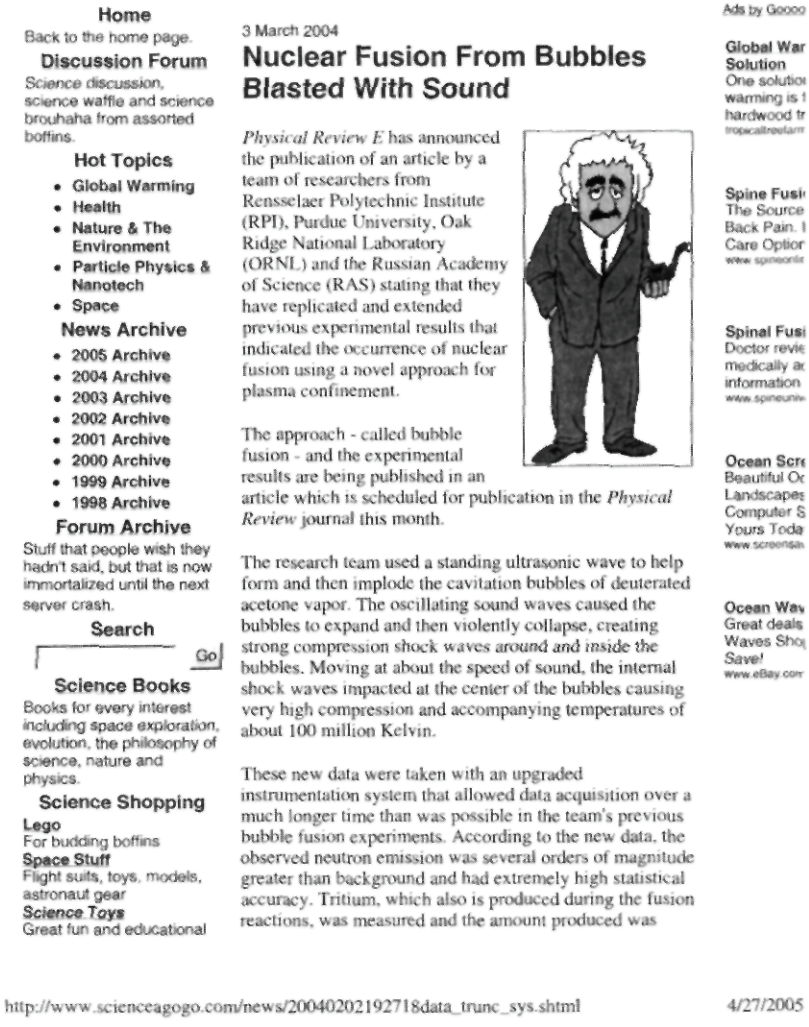
A second memo of the exact same date, July 3, 1956 contains a significant paragraphs:

3. Dr. Richter's work in Argentina should be reviewed by a competent specialist. The recommendation of Dr. Hall to interrogate Dr. Richter is concurred in. Specifically, this headquarters desires the following information:

a. Technical data, diagrams and plans concerning his experiments in Argentina and Germany in 1943 (reference IR-76-56) with discussion of his problems and results.

b. Resume of his research activity, problems and results while at Berlin-Suhler-Waffen-und-Fahrzeugwereke during 1937/38 (reference IR-76-56).

4. The headquarter's interest in foreign activities in the nuclear field covered by Dr. Richter in Argentina requires the utilization of technically qualified persons. Should there be no interest in other government agencies or private industry of Dr. Richter's services, this headquarters would attempt to retain Dr. Richter, either in the U.S. if he can be permitted to enter, or in Argentina. Dr. Richter's evaluation of unclassified literature of various foreign nations in this field would



Home
Back to the home page.
Discussion Forum
Science discussion, science waffle and science brouhaha from assorted boffins.
Hot Topics

- Global Warming
- Health
- Nature & The Environment
- Particle Physics & Nanotech
- Space

News Archive

- 2005 Archive
- 2004 Archive
- 2003 Archive
- 2002 Archive
- 2001 Archive
- 2000 Archive
- 1999 Archive
- 1998 Archive

Forum Archive
Stuff that people wish they hadn't said, but that is now immortalized until the next server crash.
Search
Go
Science Books
Books for every interest including space exploration, evolution, the philosophy of science, nature and physics.
Science Shopping
Lego
For budding boffins
Space Stuff
Flight suits, toys, models, astronaut gear
Science Toys
Great fun and educational

3 March 2004

Nuclear Fusion From Bubbles Blasted With Sound

Physical Review E has announced the publication of an article by a team of researchers from Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute (RPI), Purdue University, Oak Ridge National Laboratory (ORNL) and the Russian Academy of Science (RAS) stating that they have replicated and extended previous experimental results that indicated the occurrence of nuclear fusion using a novel approach for plasma confinement.

The approach - called bubble fusion - and the experimental results are being published in an article which is scheduled for publication in the *Physical Review* journal this month.

The research team used a standing ultrasonic wave to help form and then implode the cavitation bubbles of deuterated acetone vapor. The oscillating sound waves caused the bubbles to expand and then violently collapse, creating strong compression shock waves *around and inside the* bubbles. Moving at about the speed of sound, the internal shock waves impacted at the center of the bubbles causing very high compression and accompanying temperatures of about 100 million Kelvin.

These new data were taken with an upgraded instrumentation system that allowed data acquisition over a much longer time than was possible in the team's previous bubble fusion experiments. According to the new data, the observed neutron emission was several orders of magnitude greater than background and had extremely high statistical accuracy. Tritium, which also is produced during the fusion reactions, was measured and the amount produced was

Ads by Goooo

Global War
Solution
One solutio
warming is
hardwood tr
tropicaltreefarm

Spine Fusi
The Source
Back Pain. I
Care Optior
www.spineonlin

Spinal Fusi
Doctor revie
medically ac
information
www.spineuniv

Ocean Scre
Beautiful Oc
Landscapes
Computer S
Yours Toda
www.screensav

Ocean Wav
Great deals
Waves Sho
Save!
www.eBay.com

Three pages describing "new" fusion research using standing ultrasound waves.

Dinosaurs
Dinosaur everything!

found to be consistent with the observed neutron production rate.

Earlier test data indicated that nuclear fusion had occurred, but these data were questioned because they were taken with less precise instrumentation.

"These extensive new experiments have replicated and extended our earlier results and hopefully answer all of the previous questions surrounding our discovery," said Richard T. Lahey Jr. at Rensselaer and the director of the analytical part of the joint research project.

Other fusion techniques, such as those that use strong magnetic fields or lasers to contain the plasma, cannot easily achieve the necessary compression, Lahey said. In the approach to be published in Physical Review E, spherical compression of the plasma was achieved due to the inertia of the liquid surrounding the imploding bubbles.

Professor Lahey also explained that, unlike fission reactors, fusion does not produce a significant amount of radioactive waste products or decay heat. Tritium gas, a radioactive by-product of deuterium-deuterium bubble fusion, is actually a part of the fuel, which can be consumed in deuterium-tritium fusion reactions.

Researchers Rusi Taleyarkhan, Colin West, and Jae-Seon *Cho conducted the bubble fusion* experiments at *ORNL*. At Rensselaer and in Russia, Professors Lahey and Robert I. Nigmatulin performed the theoretical analysis of the bubble dynamics and predicted the shock-induced pressures, temperatures, and densities in the imploding vapor bubbles. Robert Block, professor emeritus of nuclear engineering at Rensselaer, helped to design, set up, and calibrate a state-of-the-art neutron and gamma ray detection system for the new experiments.

In the first experiments, with the less sophisticated equipment, the team was only able to collect data during a small portion of the five-millisecond intervals between neutron pulses. The new equipment enabled the researchers to see what was happening over the entire course of the experiment.

The data clearly show surges in neutrons emitted in precise timing with the light flashes, meaning the neutron emissions are produced by the collapsing bubbles responsible for the flashes of light, Taleyarkhan said.

"We see neutrons being emitted each time the bubble is imploding with sufficient violence," Taleyarkhan said.

Fusion of deuterium atoms emits neutrons that fall within a specific energy range of 2.5 mega-electron volts or below, which was the level of energy seen in neutrons produced in the experiment. The production of tritium also can only be attributed to fusion, and it was never observed in any of the control experiments in which normal acetone was used, he said.

Whereas data from the previous experiment had roughly a *one in 100 chance of being attributed to some phenomena* other than nuclear fusion, the new, more precise results represent more like a one in a trillion chance of being wrong, Taleyarkhan said.

"*There is only one way to produce tritium - through nuclear* processes," he said.

The results also agree with mathematical theory and modeling.

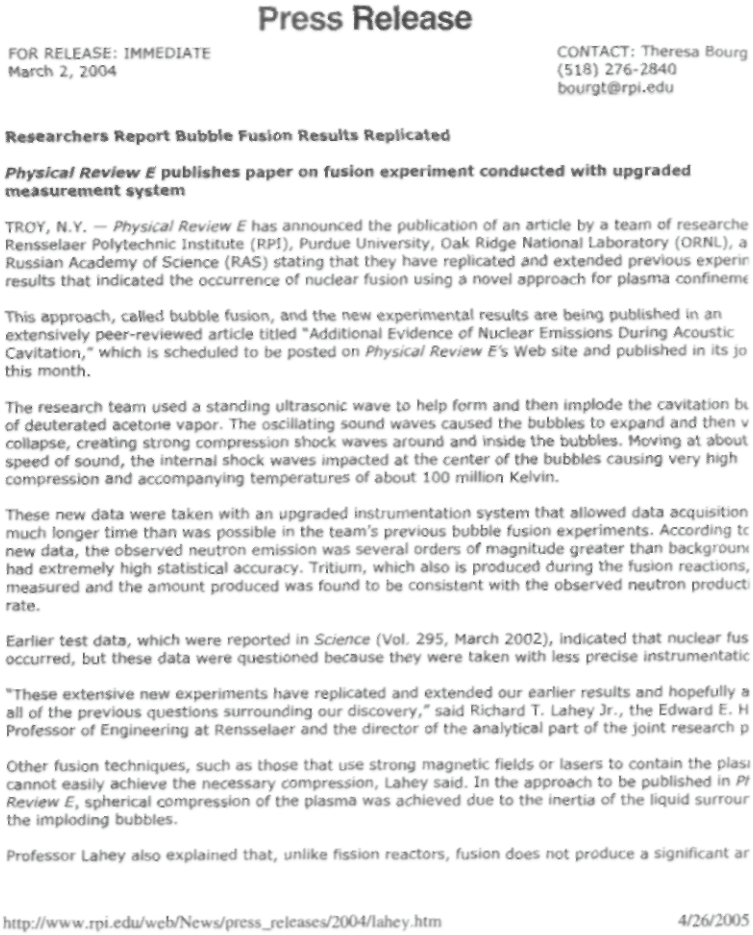
Future work will focus on studying ways to scale up the device, which is needed before it could be used in practical applications, and creating portable devices that operate without the need for the expensive equipment now used to bombard the canister with pulses of neutrons.

| HOME |
| SCIENCE DISCUSSION FORUM |
| SCIENCE DISCUSSION FORUM ARCHIVE |
| SCIENCE BOOKS | CONTACT US |

HOT TOPICS
| GLOBAL WARMING | HEALTH | NATURE AND THE ENVIRONMENT |
| PARTICLE PHYSICS AND NANOTECH | SPACE |

NEWS ARTICLE ARCHIVE
| 2005 | 2004 | 2003 | 2002 | 2001 | 2000 | 1999 | 1998 |

Copyright © 1997 - 2005 Science a Go Go and its licensors. All rights reserved.



Press Release

FOR RELEASE: IMMEDIATE
March 2, 2004

CONTACT: Theresa Bourg
(518) 276-2840
bourgt@rpi.edu

Researchers Report Bubble Fusion Results Replicated

***Physical Review E* publishes paper on fusion experiment conducted with upgraded measurement system**

TROY, N.Y. — *Physical Review E* has announced the publication of an article by a team of researche Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute (RPI), Purdue University, Oak Ridge National Laboratory (ORNL), a Russian Academy of Science (RAS) stating that they have replicated and extended previous experin results that indicated the occurrence of nuclear fusion using a novel approach for plasma confineme

This approach, called bubble fusion, and the new experimental results are being published in an extensively peer-reviewed article titled "Additional Evidence of Nuclear Emissions During Acoustic Cavitation," which is scheduled to be posted on *Physical Review E*'s Web site and published in its jo this month.

The research team used a standing ultrasonic wave to help form and then implode the cavitation bu of deuterated acetone vapor. The oscillating sound waves caused the bubbles to expand and then v collapse, creating strong compression shock waves around and inside the bubbles. Moving at about speed of sound, the internal shock waves impacted at the center of the bubbles causing very high compression and accompanying temperatures of about 100 million Kelvin.

These new data were taken with an upgraded instrumentation system that allowed data acquisition much longer time than was possible in the team's previous bubble fusion experiments. According tc new data, the observed neutron emission was several orders of magnitude greater than backgroun had extremely high statistical accuracy. Tritium, which also is produced during the fusion reactions, measured and the amount produced was found to be consistent with the observed neutron producti rate.

Earlier test data, which were reported in *Science* (Vol. 295, March 2002), indicated that nuclear fus occurred, but these data were questioned because they were taken with less precise instrumentatic

"These extensive new experiments have replicated and extended our earlier results and hopefully a all of the previous questions surrounding our discovery," said Richard T. Lahey Jr., the Edward E. H Professor of Engineering at Rensselaer and the director of the analytical part of the joint research p

Other fusion techniques, such as those that use strong magnetic fields or lasers to contain the plas cannot easily achieve the necessary compression, Lahey said. In the approach to be published in *Pł Review E*, spherical compression of the plasma was achieved due to the inertia of the liquid surrour the imploding bubbles.

Professor Lahey also explained that, unlike fission reactors, fusion does not produce a significant ar

http://www.rpi.edu/web/News/press_releases/2004/lahey.htm 4/26/2005

Other internet article describing replication of the sonofusion experiments.

of radioactive waste products or decay heat. Tritium gas, a radioactive by-product of deuterium-de bubble fusion, is actually a part of the fuel, which can be consumed in deuterium-tritium fusion rea

Researchers Rusi Taleyarkhan, Colin West, and Jae-Seon Cho conducted the bubble fusion experim ORNL. At Rensselaer and in Russia, Professors Lahey and Robert I. Nigmatulin performed the theor analysis of the bubble dynamics and predicted the shock-induced pressures, temperatures, and der in the imploding vapor bubbles. Robert Block, professor emeritus of nuclear engineering at Renssel helped to design, set up, and calibrate a state-of-the-art neutron and gamma ray detection system new experiments.

Special hydrodynamic shock codes have been developed in both Russia and at Rensselaer to suppo interpret the ORNL experiments. These computer codes indicated that the peak gas temperatures a densities in the ORNL experiments were sufficiently high to create fusion reactions. Indeed, the the shock code predictions of deuterium-deuterium (D-D) fusion were consistent with the ORNL data.

The research team leaders are all well known authorities in the fields of multiphase flow and heat tr technology and nuclear engineering. Taleyarkhan, a fellow of the American Nuclear Society (ANS) a program's director, held the position of Distinguished Scientist at ORNL, and is currently the Ardent *Bement Jr. Professor of Nuclear Engineering at Purdue University. Lahey is a fellow of both the ANS* the American Society of Mechanical Engineers (ASME), and is a member of the National Academy o Engineering (NAE). Nigmatulin is a visiting scholar at Rensselaer, a member of the Russian Duma, president of the Bashkortonstan branch of the Russian Academy of Sciences (RAS). Block is a fello ANS and is the longtime director of the Gaerttner Linear Accelerator (LINAC) Laboratory at Renssel The bubble fusion research program was supported by a grant from the Defense Advanced Researc Projects Agency (DARPA).

About Rensselaer

Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute, founded in 1824, is the nation's oldest technological university. Th school offers degrees in engineering, the sciences, information technology, architecture, manageme and the humanities and social sciences. Institute programs serve undergraduates, graduate studen working professionals around the world. Rensselaer faculty are known for pre-eminence in research conducted in a wide range of research centers that are characterized by strong industry partnershi Institute is especially well known for its success in the transfer of technology from the laboratory to marketplace so that new discoveries and inventions benefit human life, protect the environment, ar strengthen economic development.

be quite valuable considering his reported first hand experience.

* * * * * * *

Two points emerge form this. The U.S. government wanted to know more about his early fusion research, the chain-reaction consumption via jetting lithium and boron isotopes into the Shockwave ignited fusion reaction and he research done at the (spelled correctly) Berlin-Suhler-Waffen und Fahrzeugewerk, Gustloff-Werke, Suhl, Thuringia, Germany. In other words, the research work he did for the Gustloff Aircraft Works in Suhl, in the Jonas Valley, Nazi Germany's Area 51.

On November 21, 1956, the USAF declined sponsoring Dr. Richter but left the door open to other U.S. governmental or private agencies if they wished to do so. In the meantime, it was their recommendation that Dr. Richter be kept under lock and key, either in the USA or in Argentina.

As said earlier, the statement saying that Dr. Richter was "thinking in the year 1970" turns out to be one of the greatest understatements of the scientific 20th Century. Even today, after billions and billions of dollars and the careers of two generations of atomic scientists have been poured into sub-atomic particle research, we still do not, today, have controlled atomic fusion.

Anyone having doubts the validity of Dr. Richter's work should review the articles below concerning the state of nuclear fusion research from almost a half-century later.

Somehow, for some reason, Dr. Richter and his work were simply allowed to fade away into history.

SOURCES

The National Archives and Records Administration, 8601 Adelphi Rd., College Park, MD. 20740-6001, Foreign Scientist Case Files 1945-1958, Paperclip File of Dr. Ronald Richter, Box 54 of record Group 330.

37 Dr. Friedrich Gold, Again

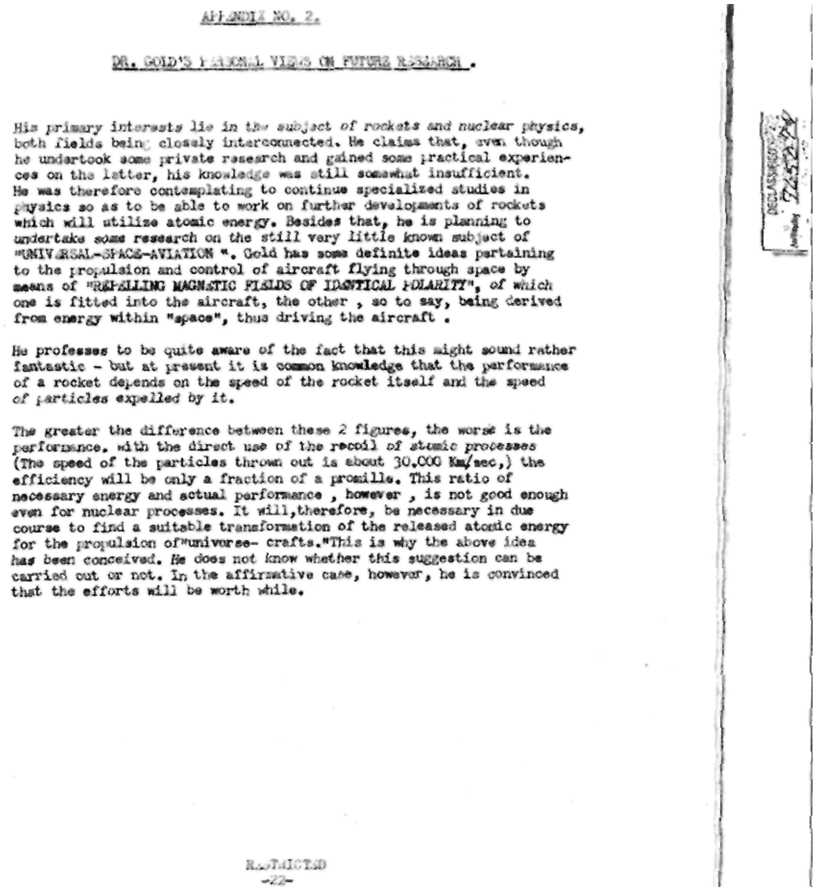
Once the reader has had time to re-read and digest the magnitude of Dr. Richter's discoveries, one small item should be injected into consideration concerning the future implications of his work. This small item comes from Dr. Friedrich Gold, which we encountered in the discussion of gaseous means to stop engines from running.

In addition to his research on gas, Dr. Gold had given considerable thought to the limitations of rocketry, nuclear propulsion, the conversion of nuclear energy into other forms of energy as well as travel through deep space. This is such a short document that it is better posted in its entirety.

The reason for the consideration of these ideas at this point is that they can only be considered in light of Dr. Richter's innovations. In particular are the similar ideas concerning nuclear propulsion, utilization of Dr. Richter's method direct conversion of atomic plasma energy to electrical energy and the utilization of "energy within 'space'" as Dr. Gold seems to call zero point energy.

While we are comparing Dr. Richter's "zero point energy" to Dr. Gold's "energy within 'space'", we might throw in Hans Coler's energy source for his machine, "Raumenergie" or "space energy". Coler's work was reviewed by both Dr. Frolich and Dr. Schumann at an early date. This means that thought about this new form of energy would have had years to foment within Nazi Germany.

In fact, these scientist's ideas dovetail so perfectly that one has to wonder as to whether there was actual



APPENDIX NO. 2.

DR. GOLD'S PERSONAL VIEWS ON FUTURE RESEARCH .

His primary interests lie in the subject of rockets and nuclear physics, both fields being closely interconnected. He claims that, even though he undertook some private research and gained some practical experiences on the latter, his knowledge was still somewhat insufficient. He was therefore contemplating to continue specialized studies in physics so as to be able to work on further developments of rockets which will utilize atomic energy. Besides that, he is planning to undertake some research on the still very little known subject of "UNIVERSAL-SPACE-AVIATION ". Gold has some definite ideas pertaining to the propulsion and control of aircraft flying through space by means of "REPELLING MAGNETIC FIELDS OF IDENTICAL POLARITY", of which one is fitted into the aircraft, the other , so to say, being derived from energy within "space", thus driving the aircraft .

He professes to be quite aware of the fact that this might sound rather fantastic - but at present it is common knowledge that the performance of a rocket depends on the speed of the rocket itself and the speed of particles expelled by it.

The greater the difference between these 2 figures, the worse is the performance. with the direct use of the recoil of atomic processes (The speed of the particles thrown out is about 30.000 Km/sec,) the efficiency will be only a fraction of a promille. This ratio of necessary energy and actual performance , however , is not good enough even for nuclear processes. It will,therefore, be necessary in due course to find a suitable transformation of the released atomic energy for the propulsion of"universe- crafts."This is why the above idea has been conceived. He does not know whether this suggestion can be carried out or not. In the affirmative case, however, he is convinced that the efforts will be worth while.

DECLASSIFIED
Authority

RESTRICTED
-22-

Another internet article describing replication of the sonofusion experiments.

personal communication between them. Further, one has to wonder at the general level of communication and mutual understanding of all those scientists involved in cutting-edge, high technology during the Third Reich. Also, one has to ask about the very underpinnings of how this communication and understanding could take place.

SOURCES

Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report, Item No. 1,4,&5, file No. 32-109, page 22, Interrogation Of Dr. Hans Friedrich Gold, Jan. 17, 1946, G-2 Division, SHAEF (Reer) APO413

38 Why?

Let's finish the question raised in the previous chapter.

What was the reason for so many scientific and technical breakthroughs in Germany at this time? Was it simply the result of the educational system of the time? Was it the pressure of the losing war effort? Was it a culture of high expectation?

I think it was all these things and yet something else. What I mean by this statement is that the Germans anticipated making breakthroughs as a matter of course because they believed in paradigms unique to Nazi Germany. In other words, one of the answers to my question could be Nazi culture itself. Of course the words "Nazi culture" does not mean something monolithic inspite of propaganda efforts to say exactly that. It involved many paradigms.

But one of these paradigms comes specifically to mind in our discussion of German science and technology. It has to do with new energy. Contemporaries might have relegated this paradigm to the world of the occult even as they reviewed the technical achievements of the 3rd Reich immediately after the war—and so discarded. Or, it might never have been recognized as a part of Nazi thought at all, and so overlooked. Today, using a wider viewing perspective, it may be worth reconsideration.

Dr. Richter was responsible for several lines of new research. Most of us who have read his FOIA file would conclude that his work on atomic fusion was the most important. But that might not be the case in the long run. Dr. Richter coins the term "zero point energy" in 1957. Now, almost 50 years later, this is a concept is receiving a great deal of attention from researchers today who are interested in new ways of energy production.

But, it is quite obvious from his commentary that Dr. Richter first had to reconstitute his laboratory and confirm his results from earlier work. Dr. Richter, for instance, began his shock wave fusion research in Germany in 1942. His work was decades old before coming to the attention of the American CIA. Is it not reasonable to assume that the basic work done to formulate his ideas on zero point energy were from those times also? And is it not reasonable to conclude from the comments of Dr. Gold and his "energy within 'space'", that knowledge of Dr. Richter's work was desciminated though inner circles of the Reich?

"Zero point energy" is today a buzzword of a kind of fringe, cutting-edge, physics. At first glance, it seems almost impossible for this word-phrase to have been coined by an old Nazi-era German scientist. But zero point energy would not have been quite such a strange concept in Germany during the Nazi period as it seems to some now.

The Germans were working on alternative means to produce energy. Karl Schappeller, discussed in my first book, was a great example. His work was continued to the Nazi period through the Reichsarbeitsgemeinschaft. Viktor Schauberger received state funding and facilities from the Nazi government. Hans Coler continued his work during those years and his continuing research was eventually was funded by the German Navy while at least one of his devices was being produced by a division of Siemens. He called the source of energy "Raumenergie" which is "space energy" in English. In the discovery of zero point energy, Dr. Richter may have been looking for experimental confirmation of theoretical ideas already held for some time within some circles. Dr. Gold went so far as to try to explain ideas of energy within space to the Americans but they were obviously not ready to listen.

The point we should keep in mind is that all of these devices and ideas involved the vortex. A vortex device produces a torsion field according to Nick Cook, Aviation editor of Jane's Defense Weekly. Drawing from Igor Witkowski, the Bell was a machine that spun cylinders of a violet, liquid, mercury-compound-based substance. Known mercury compounds are all solids. We are left to conclude that the material used in the Bell was red mercury, which also can be violet in color.

Cook compares properties of the Bell with experiments done on spinning superconductors[1]. We already know that red mercury could be used as a semiconductor. Inserting impurities into other substances such as silicon makes semiconductors.

But was a pure form of red mercury a superconductor? Or perhaps stated better: Are certain types of red mercury superconductors? Mercury is a great conductor of electricity and used for that purpose in a variety of electric switches, including household thermostats. If red mercury is even close to being a superconductor then a vortex of red mercury given a shot of electric current would have induced a huge electric/magnetic field in the surrounding area or field.

Cook mentions that a torsion field bends 4 dimensions and so bends time. It also radiates energy, including electromagnetic energy throughout the spectrum[2]. With a vortex, it is simple. If energy goes in, then energy must come out. Think of the energy implications for tornados and hurricanes, for instance. The energy coming out doesn't necessarily take the same form of what went in. A conversion takes place. Cook mentions that efforts at tuning the bell were taking place[3]. "Tuning" means converting the output energy into a form you want.

Cook points out that a torsion field is capable of directing zero point energy. Zero point energy is aether, or ether energy by another name. A machine that can also generate an electromagnetic field is especially valuable in directing this energy[4].

Cook describes the torsion field as being something like a mixer found in a kitchen. In this analogy, the mixer puts the batter or whatever is being mixed into motion, which is the same as that of the torsion field. But instead of batter, energy itself is being put into this new pattern of motion. The result is a huge increase in the field energy being moved and so a huge increase in the energy available to be put to use.

Returning to tuning a tuned output means that a field of electromagnetic energy or perhaps even zero point energy is possible. This would certainly power any machine including one that flies. Such a powerful torsion field could also bend space and alter time. It would also function as an energy device since it would activate more energy than was inputted, just as did the simpler Schauberger vortex machines that used only air and water.

Now we can return to the question posed at the beginning of this chapter: Why did this and other breakthroughs come during the period of the Third Reich? Do you think this is all an accident? Do you think this came about, step by step, as a series of random, non-directed, unrelated discoveries that somehow got pieced together into a coherent whole? Do you think there was no overall game plan involved?

"The Germans ignored Einstein and developed an approach to gravity based on quantum theory, Wikowski said. Don't forget that Einsteinian physics, relativity physics, with its big-picture view of the universe, represented Jewish science to the Nazis. Germany was where quantum mechanics was born. The Germans were looking at gravity from a different perspective to anyone else. Maybe it gave them answers to things the pro-relativity scientists hadn't even thought of."[5]

"Some of it, however - notably the non-conventional science pursued by the SS - came from a different culture altogether."[6]

"When the Americans tripped over this mutant strain of non-linear physics and took it back home with them, they were astute enough to realize that their homegrown scientific talent couldn't handle it. That it was beyond their cultural terms of reference. That's why they recruited so many Germans. The Nazis developed a unique approach to science and engineering quite separate from the rest of the world, because of their ideology, unrestrained as it was, supported a wholly different way of doing things. Von Braun's V-2s are a case in point, but so was their understanding of physics. The trouble was, when the Americans took it all home with them they found out, too late, that it came infected with a virus. You take the science on, you take on aspects of the ideology, as well."[7]

This is a huge point. German science was influenced by German culture - a German culture of those Nazi times. To understand how all these futuristic ideas came into being, an understanding of that esoteric culture must be considered. Fortunately, the concepts under consideration, the vortex, the torsion field, zero point energy and the singularity illustrate an important aspect in their belief system.

The SS took inspiration from older mysterious groups. So did the parent organization, the Nazis themselves. The swastika, for instance, is now almost universally interpreted as a sun sign. No doubt this is true. But the swastika, as Hitler chose the symbol, was black and tipped on its side. The impression is of a spinning, hooked cross. This is the best static representation one can make of a vortex in motion. Yet, it was a black vortex. Why?

The swastika as we know it is not the only swastika to surface in Nazi Germany. The SS used round swastikas. The SS, Heinrich Himmler's rather strange creation, also drew swastikas with many more arms than the four we are accustomed to seeing.

In fact, at the SS headquarters Himmler built, Wewelsberg Castle, there is a huge stylized swastika mosaic that forms a floor of a central rotunda. This swastika has twelve arms and they are bent twice. This is the Black Sun swastika.

The Black Sun was a kind of all-seeing eye in the minds of the SS. It was allegedly located at the center of the galaxy around which our sun and all other stars made one rotation every 26,000 years. The Black Sun was a huge vortex. It could not be seen by the naked eye as our solar sun is seen. Instead, they believed, it emitted invisible radiation that extended throughout the galaxy all the way to earth. Only the initiated knew of the Black Sun.

For these initiated, the very words upon which the abbreviation "SS" is based was not the commonly held "Schutz Staffel" or bodyguard in English, but "Schwarze Sonne" or Black Sun in English. So, the SS was really the Schwarze Sonne in the minds of initiates while for the masses it was Schutz Staffel. Each group gave the symbol a totally different meaning.

Today we know the Black Sun is no idle myth. Today we know that at the heart of each galaxy there lies what we call today a black hole. Today we know that this black hole and the galaxy surrounding it are part of an integrated system. We know today that there is a precise mathematical relationship between the speed of the outermost stars orbiting the black hole and the strength of that black hole itself. We know the black hole sucks in matter via a huge vortex and yieldsa tremendous amount of energy, including electromagnetic radiation right across the spectrum. It also produces a tremendous magnetic field.

But the speed of the outer stars has nothing to do with the "attraction" of gravity produced by the black hole. That black hole is much too far away. Nor does it have anything to do with the huge magnetic field generated by the black hole. Yet, the mathematical relationship is so strong that there does exist a cause and effect relationship between

A New Theory That
Unifies The Forces of Nature

By
Prof. A. Zielinski*

The earth is expanding. All celestial bodies have magnetic fields that are circular or polar dependent on spin. The magnetic north- and south poles are produced by the earthís spin. The magnetic poles are moving but are on the same spot at the same hour. Every galaxy has more or less a "black hole" that is not a hole at all. The universe is not expanding, there was never a "BIG BANG". Electric power can be generated from eather.

Abstract

A new exciting discovery of the existence and behavior of aether leads to a new concept of the essence of aether, that is able to explain why the famous Michelson-Morley aether experiment of 1887 failed, explain and unify the forces of nature, explain why quantum theory works and even explain where the universe comes from, and last but not least, shows the gateway to the new source of energy of the future.

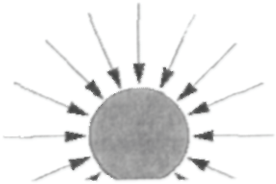
THE MICHELSON-MORLEY AETHER EXPERIMENT

Introduction

In 1887, Albert Michelson and Edward Williams Morley [1,2], assuming that aether was uniform and at rest in space, wanted to measure the absolute motion of the earth in space. In order to do so, a special sensitive interferometer was pointed in various compass directions. The interferometer readings, however, indicated that the earth had no relative motion to the aether in any horizontal direction. The interpretation of the result of the experiment was that it would mean that the earth had no relative motion in space, which was obviously not the case. Michelson and Morley could not explain this mystery and, therefore, thought that their experiment had failed. Even today, many scientists believe that the Michelson-Morley aether experiment is probably the most important experiment that did not work, in the entire history of science. One of the explanations given by numerous physicists, including Albert Einstein, is that there is no such thing as *aether at all. Unill today, many mysterious forces and phenomena are still* puzzling the minds of astronomers and physicists because of the unsolved mystery of the aether, that kept concealed the nature of mass, inertia, gravity, the powers of attraction and repulsion, magnetism, light, heat, electricity, superconductivity, twin stars, the source of energy of stars, volcanic and tectonic activities, black holes, and the expansion of the universe.

The mistake in the experiment

The assumption of Michelson and Morley that aether was uniform and at rest in space, was a fundamental error [1,2]. Had Michelson and Morley pointed their interferometer in a vertical plane, they would have concluded that the earth is moving in a perpendicular direction to the surface of the earth into space. A worldwide verification of their experiment would have indicated that the earth is moving everywhere simultaneously in a vertical direction into



This is an internet article in which Professor A. Zielinski proposes a unifying aether explanation of energy, matter and gravity. This is a densification and transmutation explanation of aether in which matter is a aether/gravity shield. If we add re-radiation, as in a black hole, and the theory is complete. Scientists within the 3rd Reich must have known or must have been moving toward this realization.

http://www.viewzone.com/unified.field.html space, which is, of course, not possible. The only conclusion therefore is: aether is constantly moving towards the earth in straight perpendicular lines, just like reversed rays of energy (**Fig. 1**). I have termed this phenomenon the "Charan effect." The Charan effect is the cause of many sub-effects, as we shall discover further on. Consequent experiments and observations were so coherent that the existence of aether could not be ignored any longer, and the need of a concept or theory that would describe the essence, qualities and behavior of aether, was required for me to continue my own research in the field of quantum electrodynamics, which is my field of activity.

A concept of the nature of aether, based on the Charan effect.
The true nature of aether cannot be conceived by the human intellect since it cannot be perceived by human senses. However, conclusions may be drawn based on the actions of aether or on phenomena caused by aether actions that probably may be true or closer to the truth than present assumptions. In this view, I have developed the following theory with which almost all the phenomena mentioned earlier can be explained in a logical, coherent, and conclusive manner: Aether is a pure form of subtle, active energy, in which all the forces of nature are vested. Aether is the subtle energy tissue out of which matter has been made and is still being made and sustained. Subatomic interaction of aether and matter causes the phenomena of inertia, mass, gravity, cohesion and all the forces in nature. On its way to the center of cosmic systems such as galaxies, the solar system, and atoms, the density of aether increases, causing higher speeds of the solar planets and of the subatomic particles interacting with it. The Charan effect is fundamental for the movement, control, and equilibrium of the cosmos.

The consequences of the Charan effect
The Charan effect, as simple and innocent as it may look, may have a bearing on science and stir up many aspects of it, even in industry, economy, and society. Many ideas, theories, concepts, formulae, definitions and units in physics, even of such great men as Isaac Newton and Albert Einstein, may have to be reviewed, redefined, adjusted, or corrected. The following examples may clarify what the logical consequences could be if the Charan effect were applied just in physics and astronomy:

Inertia would mean subatomic interaction with aether.

Mass would mean concentration of aether, due to the Charan effect, which is mainly in the center of a subatomic particle or the center of a celestial body, because of the higher density (concentration) of aether there. Consequently, mass may be just a flow of aether, a flow of energy, or an absorption of aether, a phenomenon, an effect, a force. It also means that mass is not a function of velocity, as postulated by Albert Einstein, but a function of aether concentration (aether density), which subsequently causes the velocity of a particle or a celestial body.

Mass is also an indication of the amount of aether that is being absorbed by the subatomic particle or the celestial body. The closer to the sun, the higher the speeds of the solar planets, because of the higher density of aether, caused by the Charan effect.

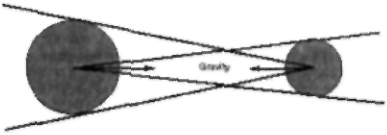


Fig. 3

Gravity would mean obstruction of the flow of aether, a kind of "aether shadow" that bodies or particles cast upon each other; less energy on one side as a result of the Charan effect (**Fig. 3**).

Binding energy or cohesion of matter would mean gravity on a molecular level, which means aether energy.

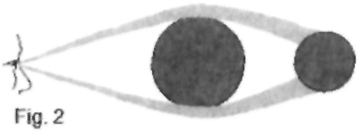


Fig. 2

Bending of light, caused by the Charan effect, may *be the cause for all sorts of* distortions if objects move between the eye of an observer and a source of light - twin stars? pulsars? (**Fig. 2**).

Magnetism would be caused by the movement of matter in space (in aether) or of *electrons* in matter (in aether).

Fig. 4a

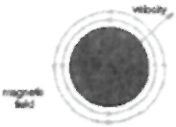


Fig. 4b

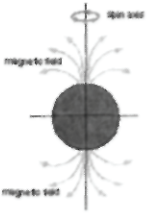


Fig. 4c

The magnetic poles of spinning celestial bodies or of spinning subatomic particles are vested in aether (**Fig. 4a, 4b**, and **4c**).

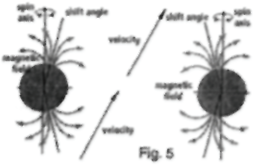


Fig. 5

Shift angles between magnetic axes and spin axes of celestial bodies are caused by the relative motion of the body to the aether motion (**Fig. 5**). Since aether is not at rest in space, nor uniform, measuring the shift angle and its position would not reveal the absolute movement of the body in space. There is no such thing as a fixed point in space; everything is moving, magnificently controlled by one law, vested in aether.

The solar energy and the temperature of celestial bodies may be caused by the concentration of aether due to the Charan effect; the bigger the star, the higher the aether density and the higher the temperature.

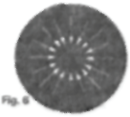


Fig. 6

Volcanic and tectonic actions may be caused by the concentration of aether inside or at the center of the earth (**Fig 6**). The earth may be growing, its mass may be increasing and its temperature may be rising.

Black holes may not be black holes at all, but gigantic concentration of masses in the center of galaxies, absorbing aether at such enormous speed, causing a Doppler shift of the light frequency far beyond the sensitivity of our eyes and therefore creating the impression of a black hole.

The big bang, presumably causing the expansion of the universe, may be just an impression caused by the movement of aether towards the center of our galaxy. Most probably, there has never been such a thing as a big bang. The Doppler red shift of light is not only the foundation of the big bang theory, it is also the fundamental basis of measurements in astronomy. Now, if the movement of aether in space may cause a Doppler red shift, then a review of all the data in astronomy is due.

Electric power can be generated from aether

Great scientists such as **Nikola Tesla** [right], Paul Dirac and Werner Heisenberg have predicted the introduction of a new source of energy, which they called:

"electromagnetic quantum energy," "zero-point energy" and also "vacuum-field energy," which are different names for aether energy. Recently, I successfully concluded fundamental research in the field of aether energy conversion, which has resulted in a new technology for producing engines, generators and batteries, in an economical and technically *feasible manner. The very high energy density of aether allows such a flexibility* of the aether absorption/conversion units, that they can be integrated on a silicon chip, for powering the chip of a wrist watch or a computer, but can also meet the requirements of a 4,000 megawatt power plant. This means that soon a new *source of energy will be powering automobiles, trains, ships, aircraft, tractors,* electric power plants, homes, industries, portable computers, telephones, etc. The aether technology in which I am involved, is environmentally clean and unlimited. Its application is neither restricted nor limited by materials or resources.

Once again in history, the cards are being shuffled anew and distributed in industry, like in the days of Thomas Alva Edison, and hopefully without too much turbulence at the international stock exchanges. Let us hope that the first application of aether energy will not be for military purposes, or for one nation to take advantage of other nations, as has so often been the case in history with epochal discoveries and inventions, but for the improvement of the conditions of humanity.

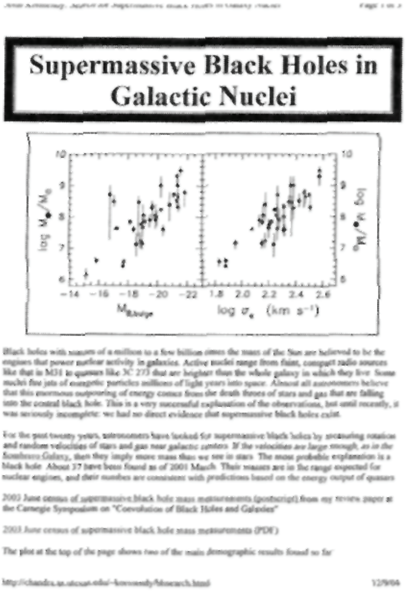
References:

[1] A.A. Michelson, Am. J. Sci. 3rd ser., 22, 252-253 (1881), and Univ. of *Chicago Press*, 1902.

[2] A.A. Michelson & E.W. Morley, Am. J. Sci. 3rd ser., 34, 277 (1887).

Prof. Zielinski conducts research i.a. in the field of quantum electrodynamics. He is an active member of the Russian Academy of Science and is ambassador of the International Scientists Club with its headquarters at St. Petersburg, Russia. Prof. Zielinski can be contacted via the Internet at the Email address: scorpionsyndrome@hotmail.com

ViewZone || Comments? || Read Comments



Supermassive Black Holes in Galactic Nuclei

log $M_\bullet/M_\odot$
10
9
8
7
6
−14 −16 −18 −20 −22
$M_{B,bulge}$
1.8 2.0 2.2 2.4 2.6
log σ_e (km s^{-1})

Black holes with masses of a million to a few billion times the mass of the Sun are believed to be the engines that power nuclear activity in galaxies. Active nuclei range from faint, compact radio sources like that in M31 to quasars like 3C 273 that are brighter than the whole galaxy in which they live. Some nuclei fire jets of energetic particles millions of light years into space. Almost all astronomers believe that this enormous outpouring of energy comes from the death throes of stars and gas that are falling into the central black hole. This is a very successful explanation of the observations, but until recently, it was seriously incomplete: we had no direct evidence that supermassive black holes exist.

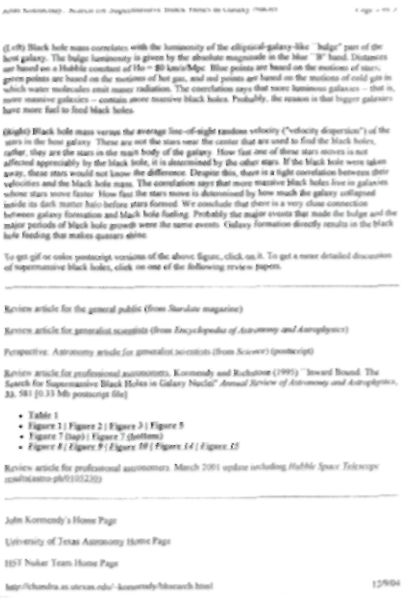
For the past twenty years, astronomers have looked for supermassive black holes by measuring rotation and random velocities of stars and gas near galactic centers. If the velocities are large enough, as in the Sombrero Galaxy, then they imply more mass than we see in stars. The most probable explanation is a black hole. About 37 have been found as of 2001 March. Their masses are in the range expected for nuclear engines, and their numbers are consistent with predictions based on the energy output of quasars.

2003 June census of supermassive black hole mass measurements (postscript) from my review paper at the Carnegie Symposium on "Coevolution of Black Holes and Galaxies"

2003 June census of supermassive black hole mass measurements (PDF)

The plot at the top of the page shows two of the main demographic results found so far

http://chandra.as.utexas.edu/~kormendy/bhsearch.html 12/9/04



(Left) Black hole mass correlates with the luminosity of the elliptical-galaxy-like "bulge" part of the host galaxy. The bulge luminosity is given by the absolute magnitude in the blue "B" band. Distances are based on a Hubble constant of Ho = 80 km/s/Mpc. Blue points are based on the motions of stars; green points are based on the motions of hot gas, and red points are based on the motions of cold gas in which water molecules emit maser radiation. The correlation says that more luminous galaxies -- that is, more massive galaxies -- contain more massive black holes. Probably, the reason is that bigger galaxies have more fuel to feed black holes.

(Right) Black hole mass versus the average line-of-sight random velocity ("velocity dispersion") of the stars in the host galaxy. These are not the stars near the center that are used to find the black holes; rather, they are the stars in the main body of the galaxy. How fast one of these stars moves is not affected appreciably by the black hole; it is determined by the other stars. If the black hole were taken away, these stars would not know the difference. Despite this, there is a tight correlation between their velocities and the black hole mass. The correlation says that more massive black holes live in galaxies whose stars move faster. How fast the stars move is determined by how much the galaxy collapsed inside its dark matter halo before stars formed. We conclude that there is a very close connection between galaxy formation and black hole feeding. Probably the major events that made the bulge and the major periods of black hole growth were the same events. Galaxy formation directly results in the black hole feeding that makes quasars shine.

To get gif or color postscript versions of the above figure, click on it. To get a more detailed discussion of supermassive black holes, click on one of the following review papers.

Review article for the general public (from *Stardate magazine*)

Review article for generalist scientists (from *Encyclopedia of Astronomy and Astrophysics*)

Perspective: Astronomy article for generalist scientists (from *Science*) (postscript)

Review article for professional astronomers. Kormendy and Richstone (1995) "Inward Bound: The Search for Supermassive Black Holes in Galaxy Nuclei" *Annual Review of Astronomy and Astrophysics*, 33, 581 [0.33 Mb postscript file]

- Table 1
- Figure 1 | Figure 2 | Figure 3 | Figure 5
- Figure 7 (top) | Figure 7 (bottom)
- *Figure 8 | Figure 9 | Figure 10 | Figure 14 | Figure 15*

Review article for professional astronomers. March 2001 update including *Hubble Space Telescope* results(astro-ph/0105230)

John Kormendy's Home Page

University of Texas Astronomy Home Page

HST Nuker Team Home Page

http://chandra.as.utexas.edu/~kormendy/bhsearch.html 12/9/04

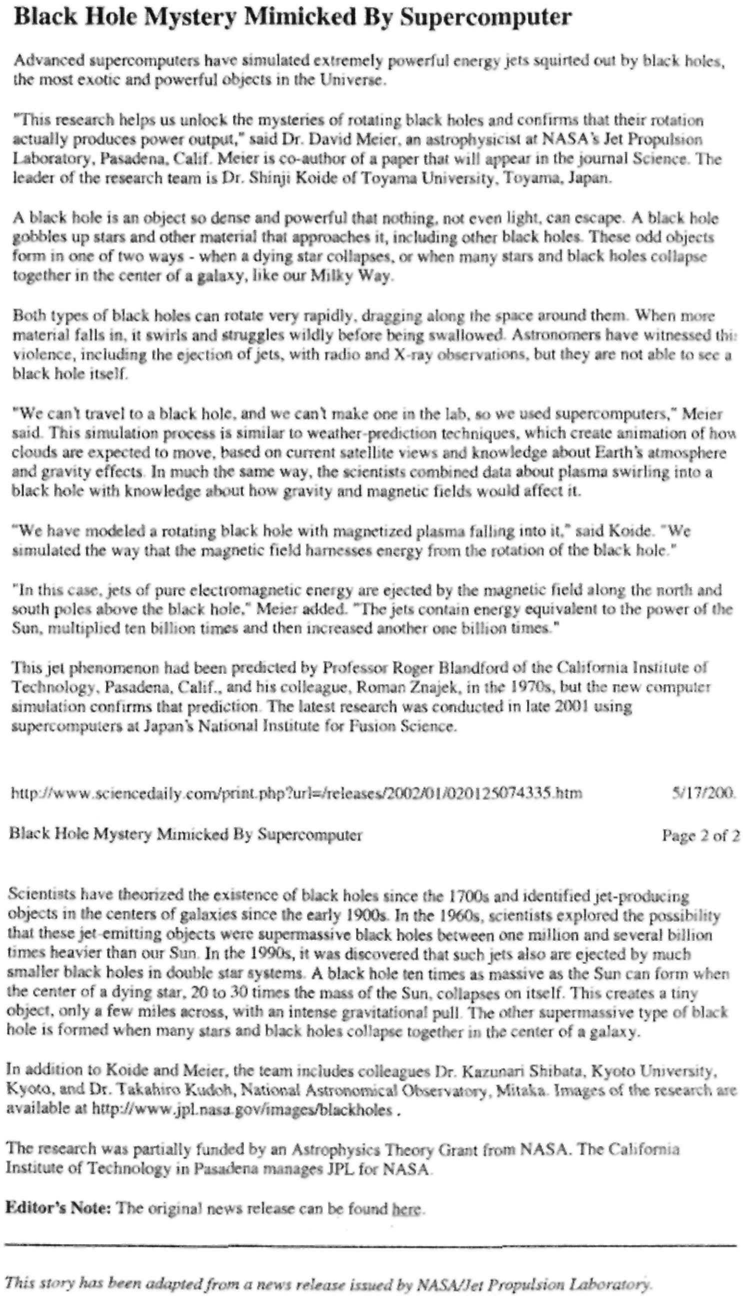
The larger the galaxy, the stronger the black hole; the stronger the black hole, the faster the stars in that galaxy rotate. But, the star speed is not accountable through the effects of "gravity". Does a black hole re-radiate the energy it captures, thereby generating energy with glues the galaxy together? Is this energy glue aether and is not aether what we call "gravity" when aether is being absorbed (or shielded) locally, by matter?

Date: 2002-06-04

Black Hole Dynamo May Be Cosmos' Ultimate Electricity Generator

ALBUQUERQUE, N.M.J une 3, 2002 -Researchers at the U.S. Department of Energy's Los Alamos National Laboratory believe that magnetic field lines extending a few million light years from galaxies into space may be the result of incredibly efficient energy-producing dynamos within black holes that are somewhat analogous to an electric motor. Los Alamos researchers Philipp Kronberg, Quentin Dufton, Stirling Colgate and Hui Li today discussed this finding at the American Astronomical Society meeting in Albuquerque, N.M.

This is an internet article with compares the energy output of a black hole to an electric motor.



Black Hole Mystery Mimicked By Supercomputer

Advanced supercomputers have simulated extremely powerful energy jets squirted out by black holes, the most exotic and powerful objects in the Universe.

"This research helps us unlock the mysteries of rotating black holes and confirms that their rotation actually produces power output," said Dr. David Meier, an astrophysicist at NASA's Jet Propulsion Laboratory, Pasadena, Calif. Meier is co-author of a paper that will appear in the journal Science. The leader of the research team is Dr. Shinji Koide of Toyama University, Toyama, Japan.

A black hole is an object so dense and powerful that nothing, not even light, can escape. A black hole gobbles up stars and other material that approaches it, including other black holes. These odd objects form in one of two ways - when a dying star collapses, or when many stars and black holes collapse together in the center of a galaxy, like our Milky Way.

Both types of black holes can rotate very rapidly, dragging along the space around them. When more material falls in, it swirls and struggles wildly before being swallowed. Astronomers have witnessed thi violence, including the ejection of jets, with radio and X-ray observations, but they are not able to see a black hole itself.

"We can't travel to a black hole, and we can't make one in the lab, so we used supercomputers," Meier said. This simulation process is similar to weather-prediction techniques, which create animation of how clouds are expected to move, based on current satellite views and knowledge about Earth's atmosphere and gravity effects. In much the same way, the scientists combined data about plasma swirling into a black hole with knowledge about how gravity and magnetic fields would affect it.

"We have modeled a rotating black hole with magnetized plasma falling into it," said Koide. "We simulated the way that the magnetic field harnesses energy from the rotation of the black hole."

"In this case, jets of pure electromagnetic energy are ejected by the magnetic field along the north and south poles above the black hole," Meier added. "The jets contain energy equivalent to the power of the Sun, multiplied ten billion times and then increased another one billion times."

This jet phenomenon had been predicted by Professor Roger Blandford of the California Institute of Technology, Pasadena, Calif., and his colleague, Roman Znajek, in the 1970s, but the new computer simulation confirms that prediction. The latest research was conducted in late 2001 using supercomputers at Japan's National Institute for Fusion Science.

Scientists have theorized the existence of black holes since the 1700s and identified jet-producing objects in the centers of galaxies since the early 1900s. In the 1960s, scientists explored the possibility that these jet-emitting objects were supermassive black holes between one million and several billion times heavier than our Sun. In the 1990s, it was discovered that such jets also are ejected by much smaller black holes in double star systems. A black hole ten times as massive as the Sun can form when the center of a dying star, 20 to 30 times the mass of the Sun, collapses on itself. This creates a tiny object, only a few miles across, with an intense gravitational pull. The other supermassive type of black hole is formed when many stars and black holes collapse together in the center of a galaxy.

In addition to Koide and Meier, the team includes colleagues Dr. Kazunari Shibata, Kyoto University, Kyoto, and Dr. Takahiro Kudoh, National Astronomical Observatory, Mitaka. Images of the research are available at http://www.jpl.nasa.gov/images/blackholes .

The research was partially funded by an Astrophysics Theory Grant from NASA. The California Institute of Technology in Pasadena manages JPL for NASA.

Editor's Note: The original news release can be found here.

This story has been adapted from a news release issued by NASA/Jet Propulsion Laboratory.

This is a NASA/JPL internet article. It describes the energy output of a black hole. It says in part: "This research helps us unlock the mysteries of rotating black holes and confirms that their rotation actually produces power output.' In other words, a spinning black hole is a vortex and it is the vortex which makes power output possible.

the two. The black hole's sphere of influence extends to its outermost stars, which demonstrates that the whole thing, the black hole, stars and vortex galaxy are part of one huge system—one huge field.

We all know that a black hole sucks in matter and energy. Now we know that this input is matched by a huge output of energy. Along with the energy output from this black hole is it not reasonable to assume that these Nazi theoreticians might also speculate that it was the source for the mysterious, all pervasive, zero point energy? Would they have not considered this huge, powerful black hole, the Black Sun, to be a source of this power just as an electric motor generates an electric field?

Somehow, the SS had this knowledge. Somehow this concept found its way into their lore. Should the Nazis have won the war, one triangular section of Wewelsberg Castle was to form the tip of a huge architectural spear. Forming the remainder of this spear was to be something like a whole city. This city was to be a university. This university would have been dedicated to the teaching of concepts that are totally unknown, forgotten, or little appreciated today. It would have been a center for Nazi thought, culture, alternative leaning and new science.

Given their belief in the Black Sun and zero point or aether energy, is it not reasonable to assume that they would seek experimental confirmation of the basic vortex concept? Is it not reasonable to assume that, once confirmed, scientific validation and actual technical exploitation of this new source of power would be a high priority for an energy-staved country at war? In other words, is it not reasonable to assume that the Germans were pre-disposed to making the break-through that they did and, conversely, isn't it reasonable to assume that the Western Allies, for instance, were not even close to this mindset? Further, isn't it reasonable to assume that even when confronted by the hardware and ideas of this vanquished group of scientists, these ideas would be minimized or rejected out-of-hand by outsiders simply because it had gone far beyond their own circle of thinking?

"As above, so below" is an old occult saying. In fact, the Schauber-ger devices, the Schappeller device and well as the Bell function as miniature versions of our galaxy following this line of thought. The Germans brought the knowledge of the larger concept, literally their world-view, and applied it to their specific technology.

This brings us full circle back to the SS fountainhead in

Skoda/Pilsen, the Kammler Group, and to its scientific overseer and spiritual father, Dr. Hans Kammler.

SOURCES

1. Cook, Nick, 2001, page 194, The Hunt for Zero Point One Man's Journey to the Biggest Secret Since the Invention of the Atom Bomb, Random House Group, Ltd., London

2. ibid, pages 229,232

3. ibid, page 233

4. ibid, page 232

5. ibid, page 194

6. ibid, page 251

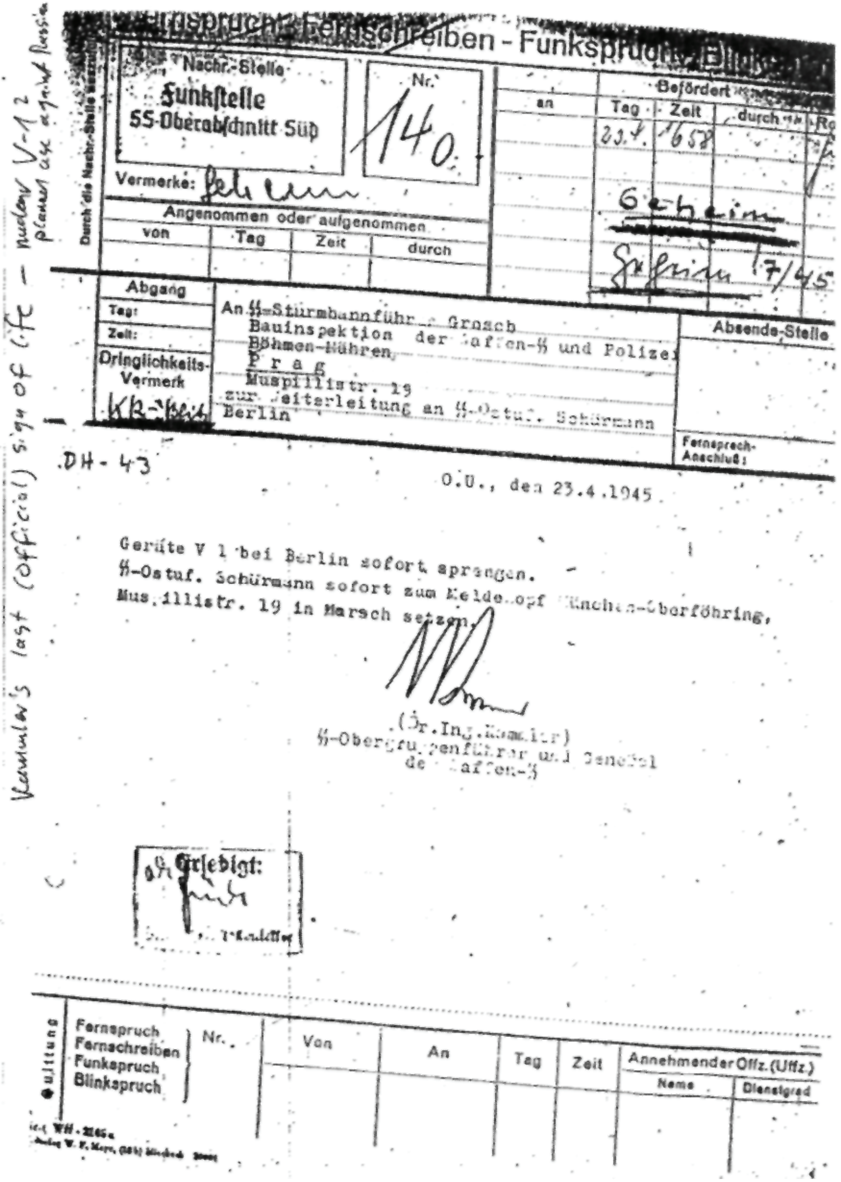
7. ibid, page 270

39 Kammler Again

As mentioned in our first discussion of Kammler, all the science, technology and weaponry we have seen so far as well as much, much more awaiting to be re-discovered, were all part of the Kammler hoard hidden somewhere near Pilsen and the Skoda Works.

Kammler was careful in amassing this technological treasure. He certainly had enemies or at least those within government who were jealous of his rapid rise and the power he had taken. It is almost certain that Nazi bigwigs were kept "out of the loop" regarding this technological magic. Kammler would be, then, in a position to unveil his wonder weaponry and save the Reich, forever securing his position within the Nazi Party. The fact that this would never be realized is more chance and circumstance which was out of Kammler's control, although there are hints that he recognized political uncertainties and was involved in that arena also[1]. This part of Kammler's history, as well as his many "deaths" and possible post-war survival and hidden ascendence, should properly await telling by the researchers responsible for this startling information, hopefully, in English[2].

The immediate problem we will deal with now is attempting to make the advanced science and technology, which has been discussed in these pages, concrete, in the eyes of the reader. This is especially difficult since this same information has purposely been suppressed by all those interests who have had access to it. Only small dribbles of this vast sea of knowledge have oozed their way to the surface in the last sixty



Kammler's last (official) sign of life – nuclear V-1 2
planned use against Russia

Fernspruch - Fernschreiben - Funkspruch - Blinkspruch

Durch die Nachr.-Stelle auszufüllen

Nachr.-Stelle: Funkstelle SS-Oberabschnitt Süd

Nr. 140.

Vermerke: Geheim

Angenommen oder aufgenommen			
von	Tag	Zeit	durch

an	Befördert Tag	Zeit	durch
	23.4.	1658	

Geheim

Geheim 7/45

Abgang	
Tag:	
Zeit:	
Dringlichkeits-Vermerk	KR-Geh.

An SS-Sturmbannführer Grosch
Bauinspektion der Waffen-SS und Polizei
Böhmen-Mähren
Prag
Muspillistr. 19
zur Weiterleitung an SS-Ostuf. Schürmann
Berlin

Absende-Stelle

Fernsprech-Anschluß:

DH - 43

O.U., den 23.4.1945

Geräte V 1 bei Berlin sofort sprengen.
SS-Ostuf. Schürmann sofort zum Meldekopf München-Oberföhring, Muspillistr. 19 in Marsch setzen.

(Dr.Ing.Kammler)
SS-Obergruppenführer und General
der Waffen-SS

Erledigt:

Quittung	Fernspruch Fernschreiben Funkspruch Blinkspruch	Nr.	Von	An	Tag	Zeit	Annehmender Offz. (Uffz.) Name	Dienstgrad

This documenl is really the last trace of Dr. Hans Kammler. It is dated April 23, 1945. It orders SS Sturmbanfueher Grosch in Prague to order another SS officer, Schuermann, in Berlin, to immediately blow up something called a "V-1 device" there and to then report to a command in Munich. Why Kammler would waste time with a single V-1 buzz-bomb in Berlin at this time seems more than a little strange. Perhaps this was not a standard V-1 or this device was not a Vergeltungs weapon at all and so the "V" stood tor something else entirely. This order is marked with a handwritten "Geheim" (Secret) and is signed by Kammler, personally, not simply issued by his office in his name. This is a strange way to exit the world stage.

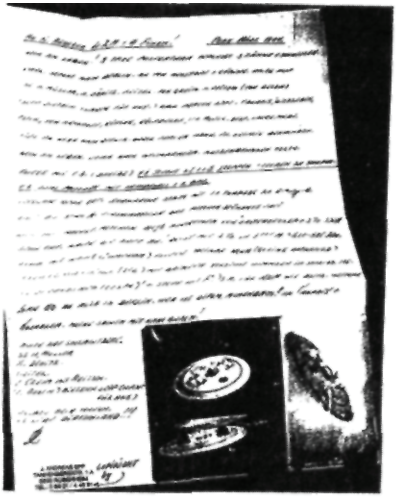
years, and all that has surfaced has done so with a false and/or clouded developmental history.

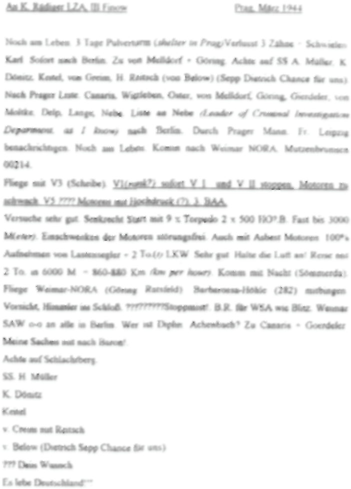
Perhaps the reader will remember the discussion in my first book, Hitler's Flying Saucers, of a strange letter from Prague dated March, 1944[3]. This cryptic letter began with the words which, in English are: "Still Alive" and go on to describe recent events in Prague. It was of interest in the previous book because this letter recounted developments in one of the German flying discs at Prague.

Klaus-Peter Rothkugel has pointed out something else about this letter and it is something very important to the larger story of lost German technology. It is the first mention of the name "Achenbach". Achenbach's name is affixed by the word "Diplom.". This might either mean he was a diplomat or it might mean he had received a degree in engineering although in the latter case it is usually written with the word for engineer, "Ing.", added. Achenbach's name is written in same paragraph as describes the progress made with the flying disc and in the company of other names about which questions of their current presence and status are asked. In the case of Aschenback, it is asked "Where is Diplom. Achenbach? To Canaris -". Admiral Wilhelm Canaris was in command of the Abwehr, the German military intelligence. So connecting the dots here, Ashenbach was among a knowledgeable inner circle who knew of secret weaponry under development and had connections to the highest levels of German military intelligence.

Now, let's quickly review page 133, third and fourth paragraphs, of Hitler's Flying Saucers. These two paragraphs are based on a 1998 book in Czech by Dr. Milos Jesensky and Robert Lesniakiewicz[4]. These two paragraphs are reproduced here:

"On October 13, 1945, over five months after the hostilities in Europe had ended, the French embassy in Prag notified the Czechoslovakian Foreign Ministry that an SS officer in a French detention camp had given them information that a cache of secret documents existed near Prag. This cache took the form of a tunnel in which 32 boxes of secret documents were hidden and were wired with explosives before being sealed at its opening. The French offered their services and the information given to them by the SS officer in question, Guenther Achenbach.





An K. Rüdiger LZA III Finow   Prag, März 1944

Noch am Leben. 3 Tage Pulverturm (*shelter in Prag*)Verlusst 3 Zähne - Schwieler Karl. Sofort nach Berlin. Zu von Mellidorf + Göring. Achte auf SS A. Müller, K. Dönitz, Keitel, von Greim, H. Reitsch (von Below) (Sepp Dietrich Chance für uns). Nach Prager Liste: Canaris, Witzleben, Oster, von Mellidorf, Göring, Goerdeler, von Moltke, Delp, Lange, Nebe. Liste an Nebe (*Leader of Criminal Investigation Department, as I know*) nach Berlin. Durch Prager Mann. Fr. Leipzig benachrichtigen. Noch am Leben. Komm nach Weimar NORA. Mutzenbrunnen 00214.

Fliege mit V3 (Scheibe). V1(*rank?*) sofort V 1 und V II stoppen. Motoren zu schwach. V5 ???? Motoren mit Hochdruck (?). 3. BAA.

Versuche sehr gut. Senkrecht Start mit 9 x Torpedo 2 x 500 HO?.B. Fast bis 3000 M(*eter*). Einschwenken der Motoren störungsfrei. Auch mit Asbest Motoren. 100% Aufnehmen von Lastensegler + 2 To.(*t*) LKW. Sehr gut. Halte die Luft an! Reise mit 2 To. in 6000 M. = 860-880 Km (*km per hour*). Komm mit Nacht (Sömmerda). Fliege Weimar-NORA (Göring Rotsfeld). Barbarossa-Höhle (282) mitbringen. Vorsicht, Himmler im Schloß. ?????????Stoppmist!. B.R. für WSA wie Blitz. Weimar SAW o-o an alle in Berlin. Wer ist Diplm. Achenbach? Zu Canaris + Goerdeler. Meine Sachen mit nach Buron!

Achte auf Schlachtberg.

SS. H. Müller

K. Dönitz

Keitel

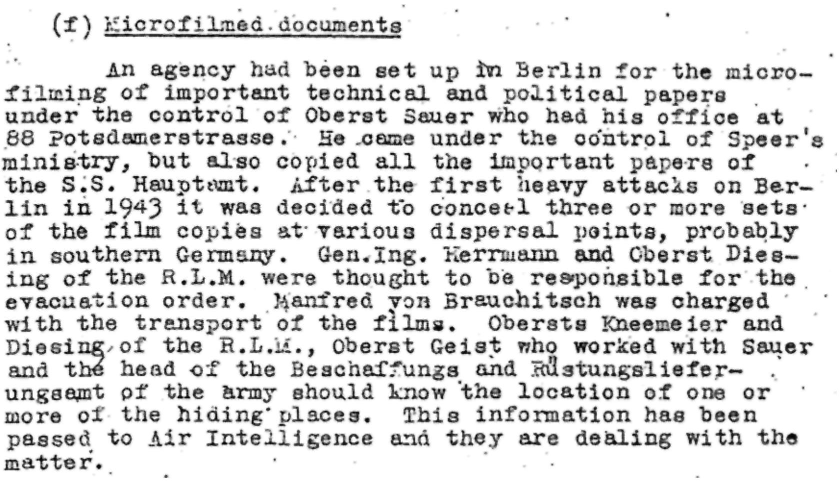
v. Creim mit Reitsch

v. Below (Dietrich Sepp Chance für uns)

??? Dein Wunsch

Es lebe Deutschland!!!

The "Still Alive" letter from Prague, March, 1944. This letter was in the possession of Josef Andreas Epp until his death in 1997. It describes the developmental progress on a German flying disc in Prague as well as poor conditions in Prague to a person named K. Ruediger. Of interest now is the mention of a Diplm. Achenbach. The writer asks where he is now, to Canaris and Goedeler? Canaris ran the Naval Intelligence Agency, the Abwehr. He was later hung for treason. Today, there are rumors and a novel linking Canaris to a contingency plan in the event that Germany lost the war as well as secret, high technology. Achenbach was involved in the post-war leaking of a secret cache of information on microfilm to French authorities. Evidently, the French did not act but the Americans did once they got wind of the tip. This action provoked an international incident between the East and West. Thanks to Gerhard Petak (Kadmon) who set this letter into legible text which appears a the right.



(f) Microfilmed documents

An agency had been set up in Berlin for the microfilming of important technical and political papers under the control of Oberst Sauer who had his office at 88 Potsdamerstrasse. He came under the control of Speer's ministry, but also copied all the important papers of the S.S. Hauptamt. After the first heavy attacks on Berlin in 1943 it was decided to conceal three or more sets of the film copies at various dispersal points, probably in southern Germany. Gen.Ing. Herrmann and Oberst Diesing of the R.L.M. were thought to be responsible for the evacuation order. Manfred von Brauchitsch was charged with the transport of the films. Obersts Kneemeier and Diesing, of the R.L.M., Oberst Geist who worked with Sauer and the head of the Beschaffungs and Rüstungslieferungsamt of the army should know the location of one or more of the hiding places. This information has been passed to Air Intelligence and they are dealing with the matter.

This is a British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report, number 142, which describes a cache of secret documents on microfilm.

But even after months of waiting, the French from the Czechoslovakian Foreign Ministry received no response.

Somehow the Americans got wind of this information. Incredibly, the Americans on February 13, 1946, mounted an armed incursion into Czechoslovakiam, which was in the Soviet sphere of occupation, retrieved this hoard of information and escaped back into occupied Germany. Naturally the Czechoslovakians were furious and demanded and got an apology from the Americans. They also demanded the return of the German documents stolen from their sovereign territory. The Americans did return documents but probably not those sensitive documents for which the expedition was mounted."

Achenbach was the source of a piece of intelligence describing a hoard of documents near Prague, which, as it turned out, interested the Americans enough to mount in incursion, that is, mount an invasion, breaking international law at a very sensitive moment in time. The only reasonable explanation for this series of events is that this hoard of documents represented the microfilmed records of the Kammler Group and the entire cache of secret German weapons, science and technology.

Now, new evidence has surfaced that the Americans did have prior knowledge of this cache of documents. This evidence takes the form of an intelligence report produced by the United States Strategic Air Force In Europe, Office Of The Assistant Chief of Staff A-2, Exploitation Division APO 033 dated July 29, 1945[5]. This report deals with any possible information or weaponry produced at Skoda by the Germans, which could have been sent to the Japanese. In late July, 1945, the atomic bomb had not yet been dropped on Hiroshima, so hostilities were still on-going in the Pacific. The report has been edited using a favorite method of the government. They have made much of the report illegible. Because it was taken off microfilm the government feels it has plausible deny-ability in rendering it illegible. Fortunately, the first few and last page can be made out and with some processing, read. The very last paragraph jumps out. The last page is reproduced here and the last paragraph reads:

"4. Investigation should be undertaken of report that microfilms of 2 1 /2 million Skoda drawings had been hidden in three caves immediately East of SRBSKO (L-5863) in the event that Ordnance personnel are not satisfied with completeness of previous investigations."

What is meant by "not satisfied" is what was described in the first two pages of the report. The basic problem is that at least two American intelligence units were sent to Skoda but got little cooperation from the Czechs in charge of the facility. These Czechs quickly realized how their bread was buttered. They and their country would remain in the Soviet sphere so it was with the Soviets that their future lay, not the Western Allies. Giving sensitive information to the Americans would not be viewed upon favorably by the Soviets.

Once the war with Japan was over, the Americans returned to the topic of the Kammler Group and its files. They realized that the Czechs had given them less than the truth. They also had intelligence of a large cache of sensitive documents, intelligence that was confirmed by the French. Apparently, the Soviets had not been given this information for whatever reasons. The Americans did act, seizing the microfilmed documents, some of which were later returned.

As to the question if the Americans, British, French or Russians ever found all of the German secret high-technology they sought, well, the answer is that it certainly has to be doubted[6].

Another source, Kurt Kreutzfeld, a German prisoner of war interviewed and cited in the British Intelligence Sub-Committee report number 142, page 4, shows us how widespread microfilming of this type was:

"An agency had been set up in Berlin for the microfilming of important technical and political papers under the control of Oberst Sauer who had his office at 88 Potsdamerstrasse. He came under the control of Speer's ministry, but also copied all the important papers of the S.S. Hauptamt. After the first heavy attacks of Berlin in 1943 it was decided to conceal three or more sets of the film copies at various dispersal points, probably in southern Germany. Gen. Ing. Herrmann and Oberst Diesing of the R.L.M. were thought to be responsible for the evacuation order. Manfred von Brauchitsch was charged with the transport of the films. Obersts

Kneemeier and Diesing of the R.L.M., Oberst Geist who worked with Sauer and the head of the Beschaffungs and Ruestungslieferungamt of the army should know the location of one or more of the hiding places. This information has been passed to Air Intelligence and they are dealing with the matter."

Indeed, one witness claims that still, today, the 2.5 tons of archival material remain under the control of former SS members and are still intact[7].

Sources

1. Mayer, Edgar and Thomas Mehner, 2002, page 19, Die Atombombe und das Dritte Reich Das Geheimnis des Dreiecks Arnstadt-Wechmar-Ohrdruf, Jochen Kopp Verlag, Rottenburg

2. ibid

3. Stevens, Henry, 2003, page 50, 135, Hitler's Flying Saucers A Guide To German Flying Discs Of The Second World War, Adventures Unlimited Publishing, Kempton, Illinois

4. Jesensky, Milos Ph.D., and Robert Lesniakiewicz, 1998, page 98-102, "Wunderland" Memozemske Technologie Treiti Rise, Aos Publishing

5. United States Strategic Air Forces In Europe Office Of The Assistant Chief Of Staff A-2 Exploitation Division APO 033, Maxwell AFB, microfilm roll A5730, 1955, Maxwell AFB

6. Mayer, Edgar and Thomas Mehner, 2002, page 23

7. Georg, Friedrich and Thomas Mehner, 2004, page 257, Atomziel New York Geheime Grossraketen - und Raumfahrtprojekte des Dritten Reiches, Jochen Kopp Verlag, Rottenburg

40 Conclusion

Does our government keep files of German technology suppressed to this day? I certainly think so. In fact, I think there is a whole history of World War Two German scientific and technical development that has been kept from us.

As has been mentioned, rarely are the implications of any technology discussed in government files. There seems to be some unwritten system by which only a general description of the technology is given in a government report. From there government people must go to a more secret and detailed report or contact the individuals responsible for compiling that report. Should their security clearance suffice, a briefing might follow. The final stage might involve a trip to the government facility involved with further development of this technology.

People high up in government often retire to work for private industry. It is suspected that sometimes a reward is given to these individuals if they have distinguished themselves and endeared themselves in some way while in government service. What better way to reward someone than to throw a technological pearl their way, or rather, in the way of the private industrial firm in which they are now employed and in which the individual in question has stock options. In this way German technology was slowly and secretly spread throughout American industry to the benefit of certain insiders. We have already touched upon one example involving exactly this scenario, but let me go over this excellent example again, making this second point.

German tank crews on the Eastern Front found that low temperature winter conditions turned their crankcase oil into asphalt. The tanks wouldn't start. German soldiers actually had to build fires under their tanks to heat the oil in order for their tanks to start in the morning. Starting each day by building a fire under your tank isn't exactly safe. German chemists needed to get busy.

Oil gets thicker as it cools. This is one measure of oil, its flow rate, which is called viscosity. This is familiar to as by numbers: 30 weight oil, 10w-30 oil, as so forth. The lower the number, the thinner the oil. Longer oil molecules flow more slowly than shorter ones. Actually, each "weight" of oil is an average containing both long and short molecular strands. The average strand length for 10w oil is shorter than for 20w oil but each grade represents an average, each contains both long and short oil molecules.

What the German chemists did was to re-synthesize new oil molecules from existing mineral oil. The new re-synthesized molecules were more uniform in length as compared with normal mineral oil. They found that the new synthetic oil flowed much better at low temperatures because of this internal consistency. This meant that the tanks were able to start in cold weather. As a byproduct of this new process it was found that the new molecules were much tougher than conventional oil and could lubricate at much higher temperatures. After the war this technology disappeared for thirty years.

Then, in 1975, Mobil Oil Company announced a new product, "Mobil One". This was based upon the German process for re-synthesized mineral oil. It was a huge financial success. Somehow, and for some reason, Mobil Oil got the secrets to the German synthetic oil process after a lapse of thirty years and made a ton of money. This revelation spawned a whole new lubrication industry, that of synthetic motor oil.

Another factor is timing. With new times come new priorities. After May, 1945, the priority was using German technology to defeat the Japanese, as we did with the atomic bomb. Later, the priority was deterrence of the Communist Block. Energy has become a priority. It is interesting that the British only made the discovery of Hans Coler public after the first energy crisis of the early 1970s. Evidently they were afraid of the accusation of suppression of this technology and wanted to come clean before the next energy crisis.

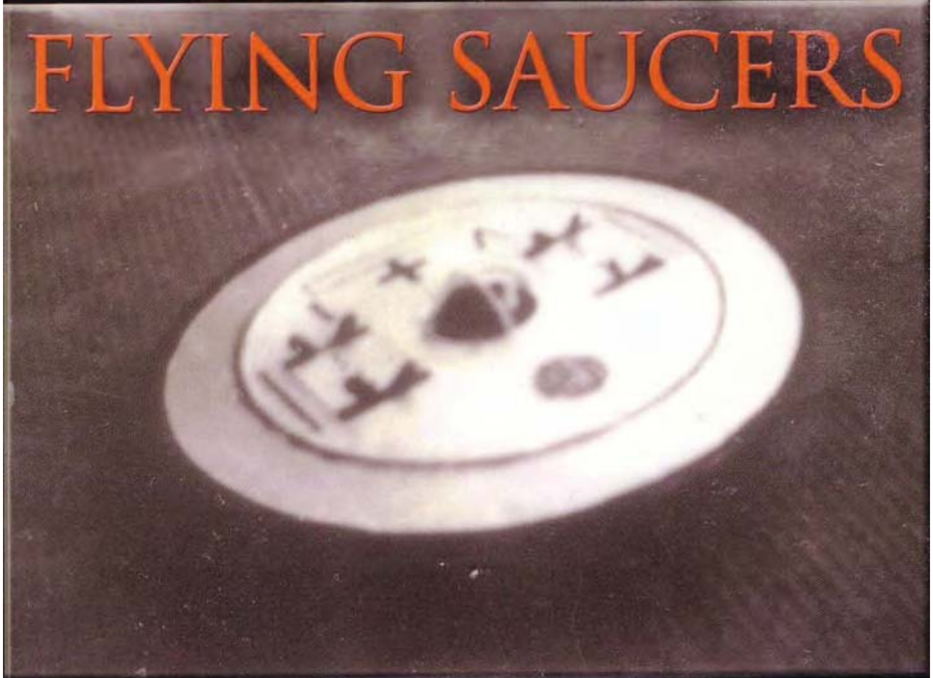
I think we can expect large American companies to "invent" some of these technologies in the near future as the need arises. I also think that any further economic deterioration in the lands of the former Soviet Union also might produce some of this technology on the open or black market as was the case with red mercury. There is also the possibility that the former Allied Powers did not corner all of this German technology. To this day the Germans keep secrets, even from other NATO and EU countries. The underground high-tech facilities at Jonastal are proof that there remains an untold story or two.

Besides the technology itself, I think whole suppressed or hidden histories of how this technology came to pass will slowly surface as it become feasible to do so in the political climate. The final history of World War Two has not yet been written.

Thanks

I have many people who have helped me with this book to thank. Some have contributed material. Some have contributed information, opinions, ideas or even done translation work. These include: Joseph Altairac, Dr. David Chapman, Remy Chavilier, Rainer Daehnhardt, Dr. Gordon Freeman, the late Heiner Gehring, Friedrich Georg, Professor Arnold Krammer, "Leo", Lea McDonald, Thomas Mehner, Gerhard Petak, Jeff Rense, Klaus-Peter Rothkugel, Greg Rowe and Milos Vnenk. Special thanks to Lisa Stevens for proofreading/editing this book.

HITLER'S FLYING SAUCERS



A GUIDE TO GERMAN FLYING DISCS OF THE SECOND WORLD WAR

BY HENRY STEVENS

TABLE OF CONTENTS

PREFACE 1

CHAPTER ONE: 13
THE SITUATION WITHIN NAZI GERMANY

CHAPTER TWO: 29
RELIABLE SOURCES

CHAPTER THREE: 41
AN OVERVIEW OF THE GERMAN CONVENTIONAL SAUCER PROJECTS
- THE SCHREIVER-HABERMOHL PROJECT(S)
- THE MIETHE-BELLUZZO PROJECT
- FOO FIGHTERS
- THE PEENEMUENDE SAUCER PROJECT
- CHAPTER SUMMARY

CHAPTER FOUR: 121
THE GERMAN FIELD PROPULSION PROJECTS
- THE VICTOR SCHAUBERGER MODELS
- THE KM-2 ROCKET
- FIELD PROPULSION SAUCERS
- A GERMAN EYE WITNESS
- A COMBINED INTELLIGENCE OBJECTIVES SUB-COMMITTEE REPORT
- THE SMOKING GUN: AN F.B.I. REPORT
- DISCUSSION OF GERMAN FIELD PROPULSION SAUCER
- ATOMIC SAUCERS AGAIN
- THE KARL SCHAPPELLER DEVICE

CHAPTER FIVE: 203
LORE AND LOOSE ENDS: A DISCUSSION OF GERMAN SAUCERS

CHAPTER SIX: 233
"SONDERBUERO"

CHAPTER SEVEN: 241
DISPOSITION OF GERMAN SAUCER TECHNOLOGY AFTER THE WAR

CHAPTER EIGHT: 261
CONCLUDING THOUGHTS

PREFACE

This book is a guide into the world of German flying discs. You may have picked up this guide because you are unfamiliar with the German production of flying saucers during World War Two. The basics of this production will be revealed to you in the following pages. An adventure awaits you.

On the other hand, you may be looking for nothing more than a rational explanation of the UFO phenomenon. The UFO phenomenon involves sightings of unidentified flying objects. This means that any unidentified flying object is a UFO, regardless of its alleged source. Because the object is unidentified, the object's source is also undetermined. Only a leap of faith can connect UFOs to an extraterrestrial course without first introducing proof. A radical hypothesis such as an extraterrestrial origin of UFOs requires overwhelming proof in order to be generally accepted. No such overwhelming extraterrestrial proof has ever been offered which has stood up to scrutiny. No crashed alien craft have ever been produced by anyone, inside or outside government. Likewise, no alien bodies have ever been found. No extraterrestrial culture, or alien technology has ever been uncovered by anyone. There is simply no actual evidence at all linking UFOs with an extraterrestrial source. Therefore, no such leap of faith should be made. We need to start all over again. All rational earthly explanations need to be exhausted before any extraterrestrial theories are even put forth.

Unfortunately, the simple truth is that, for the most part, UFO research has done a leap-frog to the extraterrestrial explanation without ever adequately exploring and exhausting a terrestrial origin. This statement is inclusive of everyone regardless of background or education. It applies to the charlatan UFO attention-getters as well as to former NASA scientists with Ph.D.s. This is the condition of our current state of affairs in the UFO world.

Let me expound on this. For over fifty years, the UFO research paradigm has been fundamentally wrong. A proper attempt to explain the UFO phenomenon would involve a gathering or the evidence and then explanation by proceeding from simple solutions involving known facts and conditions and totally exhausting these as possibilities before postulating explanations, conditions, or entities not represented by fact. Only after known facts fail us can we move on to postulate explanations beyond our realm of experience.

Even then, an idea which may fit the observed facts but which is not in evidence itself cannot be accepted as fact until it is tested. This is nothing new. This is simply the way logic and science test new explanations of reality. This method is the foundation of our modern western technological culture.

Unfortunately, research in the field of flying saucer phenomena has never been undertaken with this principle in mind. More and more frequently, UFOs are attributed to an extraterrestrial source by the media, or the "witnesses", as a sort of knee-jerk reaction. It seems if one sees something for which he has no prior reference, then it must be extraterrestrial as a matter of course. Over the years sightings have become "encounters," then "abductions." Such reports are increasing even as the use of regression hypnosis replaces the scientific method for finding the truth. The same individuals often have repeated "experiences" each of which becomes stranger than the last.

If no real research has ever been done on the UFO phenomena, then how has thesis extraterrestrial theory crept into popular culture? One simple answer is the media. The media loves extraterrestrials. Why? It is because the extraterrestrial hypothesis is marketable. It sells copy. Just look at the number of books, magazines, movies and television programs devoted to this explanation. Look at your check-out counter in the supermarket.

The government itself is another answer. The word "government" from here on will basically mean the government of the United States of America but will sometimes include other governments, as specified. The government has used "flying saucers" to cover its own testing of secret aircraft. It uses the UFO-extraterrestrial ploy superbly. When a UFO is seen by civilians, a controlled procedure is enacted. This procedure plants or encourages witnesses who expound an extraterrestrial origin in a given sighting. The government may even go so far as to fund television programming and magazines devoted to this explanation. After all, a huge part of the C.I.A.'s budget goes into such covert conditioning of the American people. However, Americans are not the first to be fooled, as we shall see.

In most cases, any extraterrestrial hypothesis is acceptable to government manipulators, especially if it is so ridiculous that the witnesses end up discrediting themselves. The government is so successful at this that the entire topic of UFOs has become somewhat of a joke. This is done deliberately. Thus, serious people with "something to lose" are afraid to stake their reputations on a public announcement of their UFO experience, no matter how real it may have been. At this point the government has achieved its purpose which is to discredit and suppress all serious inquiry into the UFO question.

Supposedly, UFO research has been left to large, well-financed UFO 'research organizations". The largest of these is MUFON (Mutual UFO Network). This organization "trains" people to report sightings, then collects the data and organizes it using some sort of multi-variant analysis into something meaningful. Over the years MUFON has had the opportunity to collect and "organize" thousands of sightings into something meaningful.

In reality, the information is organized into gibberish. After a body of knowledge has been studied and organized, usually, certain facts or at least generalizations can be gleaned form this kind of work. In its fifty years of existence can anyone name one new fundamental fact that MUFON has provided us? They have provided us with nothing. Someone once said that MUFON is really a black hole into which information is attracted and does not have the power to escape on its own. We will return to MUFON and explain this reasoning at a later point.

If we are to seek any real explanation of the UFO phenomenon, we must make a clean break with the past. We must go back to the basics of simplicity and logic. One basic question is this: could we humans be capable of making the unidentified flying machines which have been seen in abundance in the sky since the Second World War? Until we answer that question in the negative, there is no reason to postulate an alien origin for UFOs.

One purpose of this book is to give an individual new to this subject an overview into the study of German flying discs. Never fear, this is not a disjointed spook-hunt, chasing sightings and abductions. There are real facts in this field. There are real people with real names and histories and there are real saucer designs.

Another purpose is to give the reader references, upon which statements in this book are based. Given these references, the reader may then research the topics of particular interest in more detail.

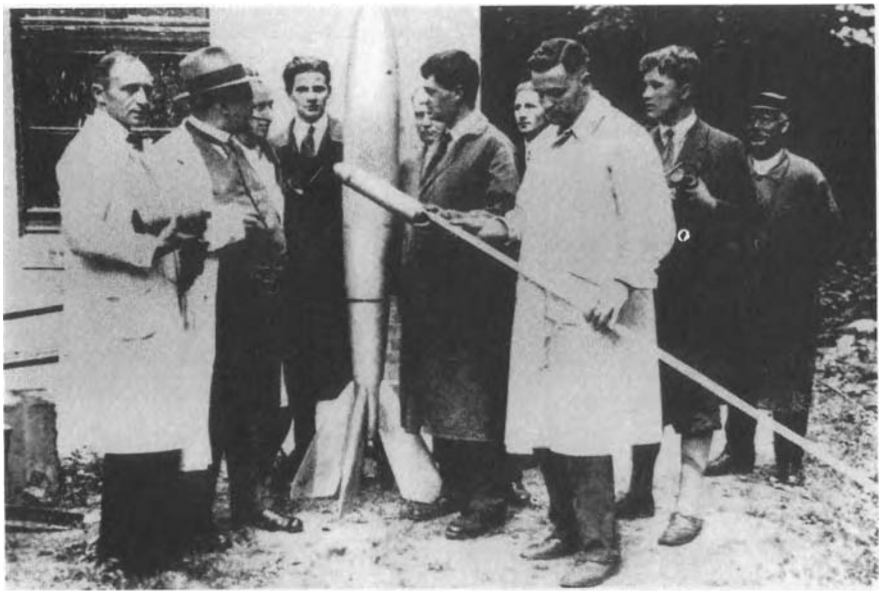
The research methodology is straightforward. We will listen to what is claimed about German saucers by Germans of those times or from other individuals who are in a position to know something about this topic. We then attempt to verify it using an independent historical source. Corroboration from other independent sources, especially from witnesses, is also acceptable and important. Photographs are important but nowadays pictures can be manufactured on a computer. Well-documented pictures which appeared before the modern computer age are perhaps best. Also, pictures accompanied with negatives may be considered better documents than those without negatives.

Government documents can be great sources of confirmation. Unfortunately, governments cannot be trusted and have historically attempted to manipulate UFO research. Therefore, these sources are best not used to formulate ideas but to confirm ideas first developed through independent sources.

Politically, time is on our side. Since the Berlin Wall fell, more and more German researchers are going public with their findings. There is more freedom to research this subject now than at any time in the past sixty years. As each piece fits into the puzzle, a consensus of public acceptance acknowledging the reality of German flying discs grows. All we really have to do is find the pieces, confirm them and eep putting them together. The truth will emerge by itself and in the end nobody, no special interest of any sort, will be able to deny this basic truth.

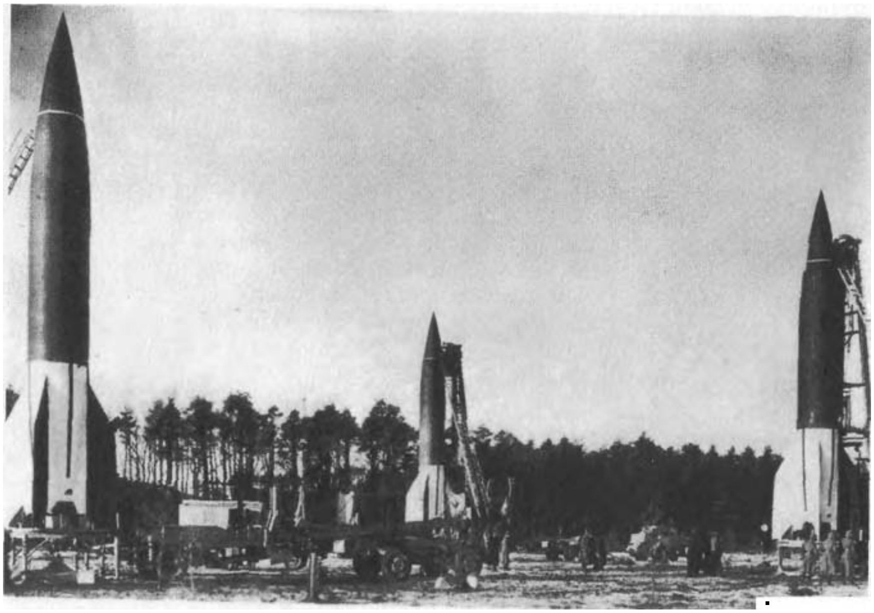
The writer of this book is not an authority to be believed upon face-value alone. New assertions made in this book about German saucers will be accompanied with documentation. Assertions made by others will be accompanied with their references. This book will briefly touch upon most of the facts, ideas, writers and researchers in this field. With the sources given, the reader will be able to confirm the veracity of the position put forth independently.

In an attempt to explain the field of German saucers to someone new to it some background is necessary. First, we will discuss the situation within wartime Germany. Then, there will follow a discussion concerning reliable sources in this field. An overview of German flying discs will follow. Finally, various trains of thought or schools or thought in this field will be presented in a discussion section along with some odds and ends which do not fit into any neat pattern. At that point, the post-war disposition of German saucer technology will be discussed before concluding with some thoughts on the topic.



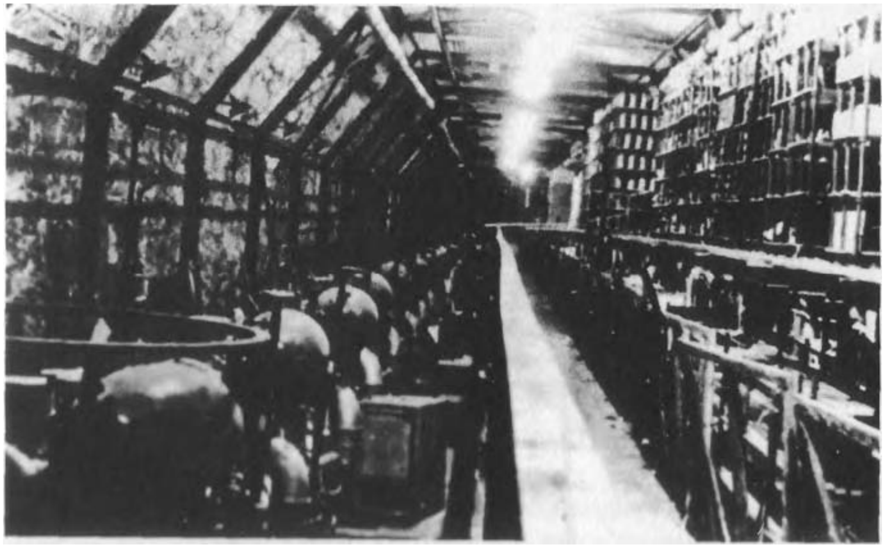
A meeting of Germany's early rocket pioneers, including Rudolph Nebel at left, Hermann Oberth, to the right of the rocket, Klaus Riedel, holding the small rocket, and behind him the dapper young Wernher von Braun.

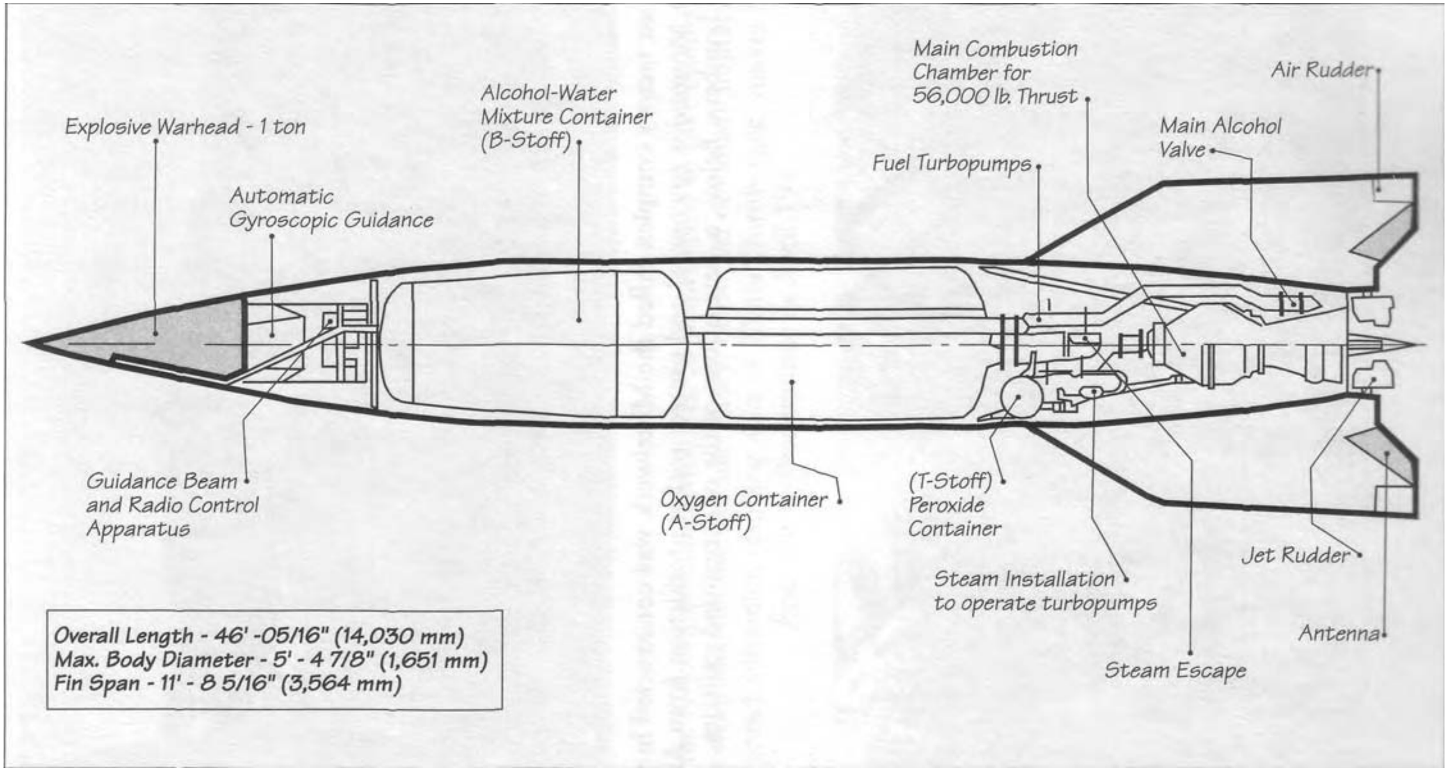
After the rise of Hitler, von Braun found himself with a new circle of acquaintances, as well as a new research facility at Peenemunde.

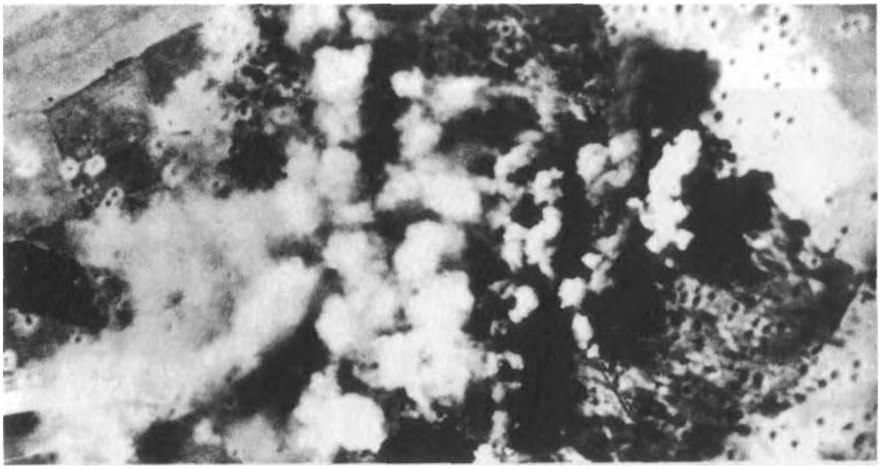


As the A-4 neared completion, the SS maneuvered to take control of the weapon from the German Army. Below, an obviously impressed Heinrich Himmler, standing next to Walter Dornberger, makes his first visit to Peenemiinde in April 1943.

A vast factory complex called the Mittelwerk was constructed in the Harz Mountains to conceal and protect rocket production from Allied bombers. Below, a view of one of the underground galleries.



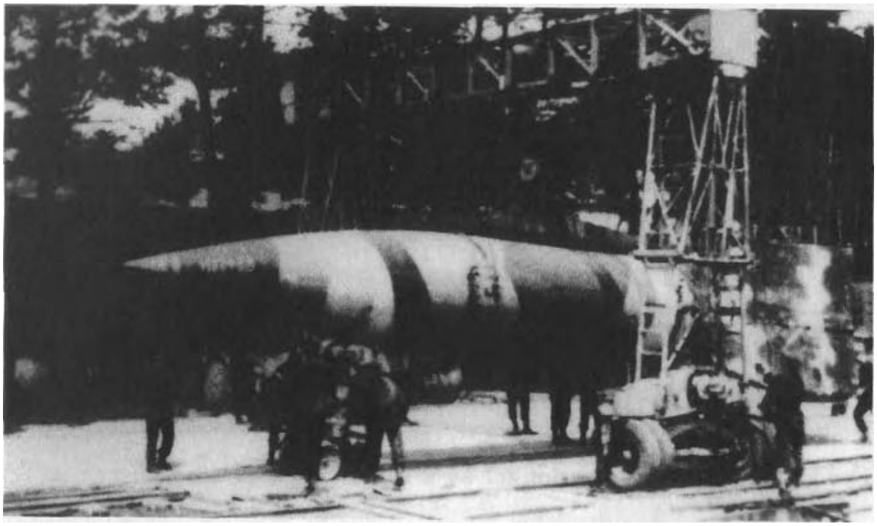

Explosive Warhead - 1 ton
Automatic Gyroscopic Guidance
Alcohol-Water Mixture Container (B-Stoff)
Main Combustion Chamber for 56,000 lb. Thrust
Fuel Turbopumps
Main Alcohol Valve
Air Rudder
Guidance Beam and Radio Control Apparatus
Oxygen Container (A-Stoff)
(T-Stoff) Peroxide Container
Steam Installation to operate turbopumps
Steam Escape
Jet Rudder
Antenna
Overall Length - 46' -05/16" (14,030 mm)
Max. Body Diameter - 5' - 4 7/8" (1,651 mm)
Fin Span - 11' - 8 5/16" (3,564 mm)



Allied intelligence was able to identify the "ski sites" originally designed to launch the V-1. While Operation Crossbow unleashed thousands of bombers against the sites, the Germans meanwhile switched to more flexible, and inconspicuous, launch methods.

The gigantic V-2 storage bunker at Wizernes, France after absorbing 14 Allied air attacks. Today the bunker is a museum run by the French government called La Coupole. It contains originals of the V-l and V-2 and also celebrates space travel.

Carefully considered German camouflage schemes were designed to conceal the weapons among trees.



CHAPTER ONE:

THE SITUATION WITHIN NAZI GERMANY

CHAPTER ONE

The Situation Within Nazi Germany

Thanks to the American media and what passes for history, most Americans have no idea of wartime conditions within Germany. The topics most germane to this discussion are the means of wartime industrial production and transportation within Germany.

After the Battle of Britain, Germany's air domination over Europe began to decline, sliding down a slippery slope which ultimately resulted in one major reason for its defeat. German means of industrial, arms, and energy production became increasing venerable to attack by Allied bombers. The munitions plants needed to produce the arms to maintain the war effort, such as tanks, airplanes and cannons were all targets of Allied air bombardment. Likewise, high priority targets included oil production and refining facilities which produced the fuel and lubricants needed to make the war effort possible.

One way Germany responded to air attacks was by moving munitions facilities and high-value industrial plants underground (1). Some of these facilities were vast, encompassing miles of underground tunnels. They housed both the industrial means of war production and the workers themselves. The facilities at Nordhausen in Thuringia are well known as the site of production for the V-l and V-2, but there were others. The newly discovered underground complexes of the Jonas Valley south of Nordhausen in Thuringia constitute another vast complex (2)(3). This facility was to serve as a center of government and most probably a research center for advanced weaponry. This is also true for the many underground complexes in what is now Poland. Notable among these is a facility called "Der Riese" (The Giant). Der Riese served as a uranium mine, uranium processing facility, and research and development facility for secret weapons (4). Underground facilities for weapons production were found throughout Germany, Austria, Czechoslovakia and Poland. Underground production facilities were also set up to refine synthetic petroleum products from coal and to generate electricity.

In addition to underground facilities, camouflage was used to hide numerous smaller facilities. These many camouflaged and underground plants formed a web of sub-assembly producers. Each sub-assembly facility sent their product to a larger or a more centrally located facility for further work. From there it might be transported again for final assembly. As an example, type XXI U-boats were modular, being produced in pipe-like sections throughout Germany. They were transported by rail to sites near the North Sea and only finally assembled at water's edge. Likewise, some types of aircraft were only finally assembled near the runway.

Further confusing Allied air intelligence, the plants were constantly moving. Eventually everything of value was to be moved underground, to bomb-proof shelters. Facilities were kept on the move until space was available for this underground relocation. These tactics worked for the Germans. There were simply too many moving targets for the Allies to completely stop German war production.

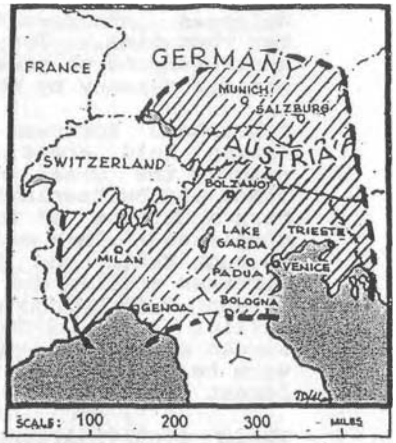
Of course the weak link in this scheme was transportation. The railroad system was the only practical and most energy efficient method of moving all these sub-assemblies. Trucking material was done but in a petroleum-starved Third Reich, it was not possible to sustain a truck-based transportation system necessary to meet all the requirements of wartime Germany. Recognizing this, the Allies bombed railroad centers using the heavy, four-engine B-17 bombers.

By mid-1943 the American P-51 Mustang was introduced into the field of play. This aircraft could be thought of as a Spitfire which could fly for eight hours. Its range allowed it to escort Allied bombers to their targets throughout the Reich. After escorting the bombers to their targets the P-51s were released to attack "targets of opportunity". A P-51 can fly close to the ground and attack individual trains, which they did. Perhaps you will recall the many wartime film clips showing these P-51s destroying German trains as they traveled. By mid-1944, it is a wonder that any trains within Germany could move at all. Some were forced to hide in mountain tunnels, as they did near the Jonas Valley, running at night or when there were no enemy aircraft reported.

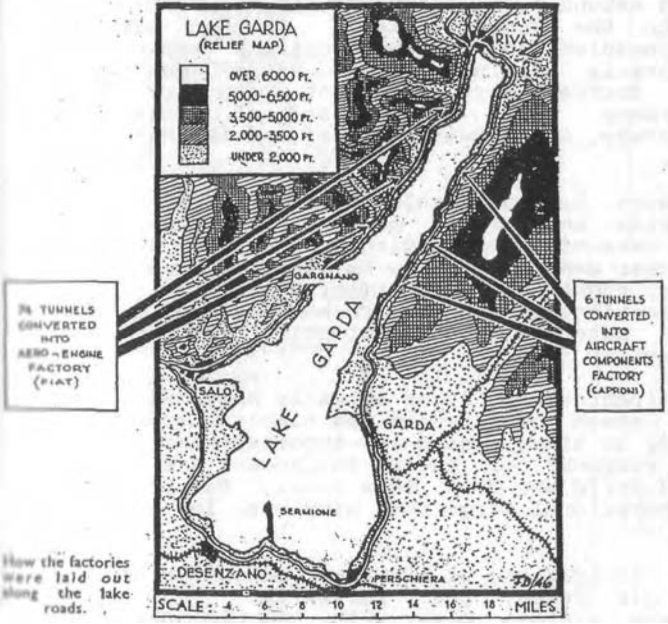
As a result of these day and night air attacks, Germany found itself increasingly the victim of shortages of material and fuel, limiting its ability to make war.

Though Germany's air defence system was the best of any warring nation, it was clear that if Germany was to survive, improvement was imperative. Germany experimented with radically new types of air defense systems. Anti-aircraft rockets, guided both from the ground and by infra-red homing devices were invented. Vortex cannons, sun cannons, air-explosive turbulence bombs, rockets trailing long wire to ensnare enemy propellers, numerous electronic jamming devices, electronic devices designed to stop ignition-based engines, magnetically repulsed projectiles and long-range x-ray "death rays" were all under development as the conflict ended (5) (6). Among these exotic solutions were saucer-shaped interceptor aircraft.

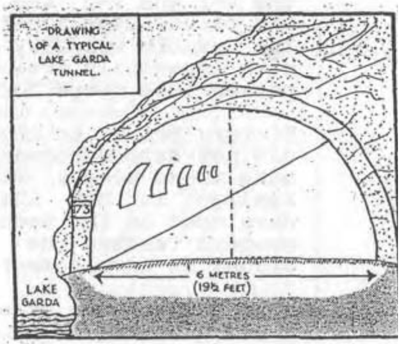
The Germans already had jet and rocket interceptors as well as jet and rocket attack vehicles. German skies were full of these and other exotic aircraft so this new saucer shape was not considered as important then as we do today looking back upon it from a UFO perspective. To the German military and civilians alike these were just more new weapons.


FRANCE
GERMANY
MUNICH
SALZBURG
AUSTRIA
SWITZERLAND
BOLZANO
LAKE GARDA
TRIESTE
MILAN
PADUA
VENICE
GENOA
BOLOGNA
ITALY
SCALE: 100 200 300 MILES

FOR THE LAST STAND.—The "Redoubt" area planne
by the Germans.


LAKE GARDA
(RELIEF MAP)
OVER 6000 FT.
5,000-6,500 FT.
3,500-5,000 FT.
2,000-3,500 FT.
UNDER 2,000 FT.
RIVA
GARGNANO
74 TUNNELS CONVERTED INTO AERO-ENGINE FACTORY (FIAT)
6 TUNNELS CONVERTED INTO AIRCRAFT COMPONENTS FACTORY (CAPRONI)
LAKE GARDA
SALO
GARDA
SERMIONE
DESENZANO
PERSCHIERA
SCALE: 4 6 8 10 12 14 16 18 MILES

How the factories were laid out along the lake roads.


DRAWING OF A TYPICAL LAKE GARDA TUNNEL.
73
6 METRES (19½ FEET)
LAKE GARDA

From top to bottom, right to left are: The "Alpenfestung" which was the southernmost island of defense planned by the Germans; Diagram of the Fiat underground facility at Lake Garda in Northern Italy which worked under direction of the Germans; A cross section of the tunnel. It was in this facility where Renato Vesco worked during the Second World War.

As the conflict drew to its conclusion, military planners in Germany considered the idea of concentrating their ground and air defenses into specific fortresses for a last stand. This would buy them time. They needed time to perfect new "Siegerswaffen", super-weapons so powerful that they could turn the course of the war for Germany by themselves.

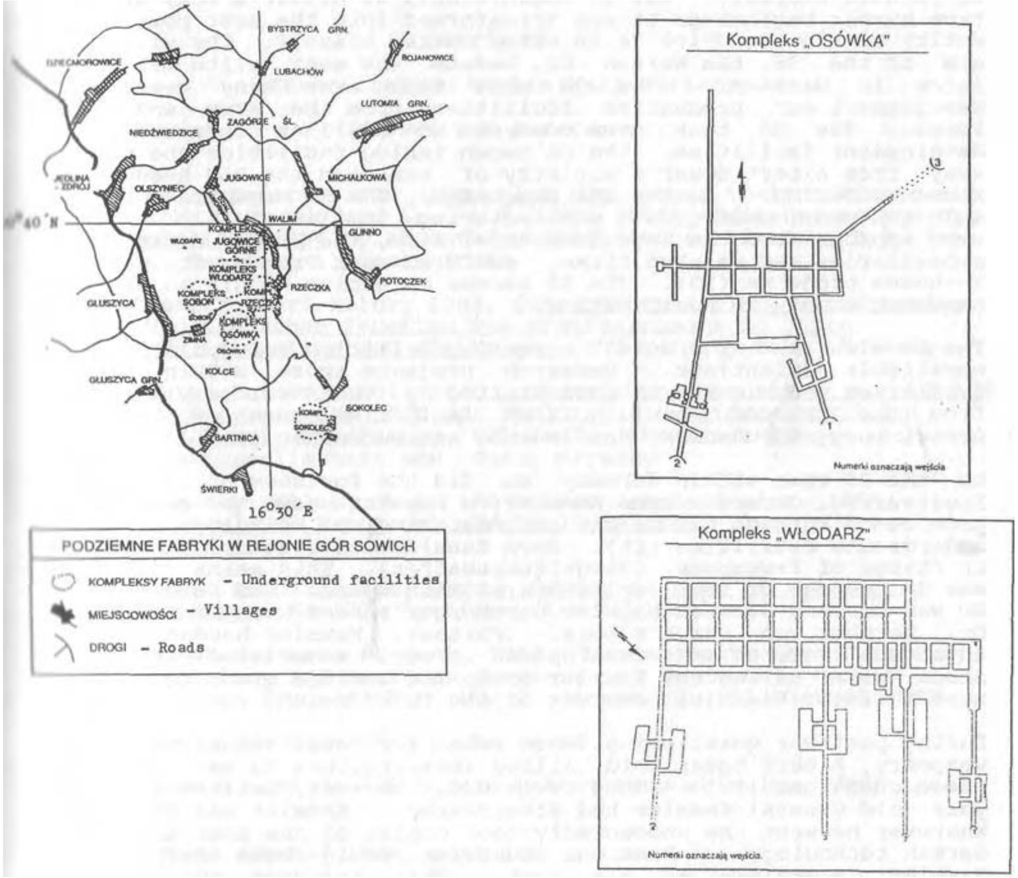
A mountain fortress or "Alpenfestung" was to be set up in the German held areas of Northern Italy, Austria and Germany in roughly the areas in which these countries converged with each other and Switzerland (7). A fortress was to be set up in the Harz Mountains of Thruingia including several large underground complexes. This would extend from Nordhausen in the north down through Kahla and into the Jonas Valley. Another similar fortress complex was scheduled for the Owl Mountains separating Poland from Czechoslovakia including "Der Riese" mentioned earlier (8). Another fortress was to be set up in the Black Forest of Southern Germany. Other minor islands of resistance were to be set up in Norway, the Bohemian forest and the Bavarian forest (9).

These fortifications were to house soldiers, mostly SS units. They would also provide underground hangers and bomb-proof overhangs for aircraft take-offs and landings. Missiles, such as the V-l and V-2, and other weapons were to be mass produced there and fired automatically, right off the automated assembly line. The exotic weaponry mentioned above was to be employed, along with especially trained mountain troops, defending the mountain passes into these fortresses (10).

History tells us the Alpenfestung never actually happened. It did not happen because German construction was simply not able to make these places ready in time. What is important for us to realize is that the weaponry for these fortresses was being developed as the Second World War drew to a close. Few of these weapons reached the operational stage but many were in various stages of development.

When Hitler took power in 1933 one of his first decisions was to rebuild the German Air Force, the Luftwaffe. This new organization was to make a clean break with the old and this reasoning was reflected in its research and development facilities, the RLM, which were the finest of any branch of the German military. Two brilliant research facilities were also in the possession of the Luftwaffe, the Lilenthalgesellschaft and the Academy of Air Research. Besides the Luftwaffe, there was the Army which did develop such things as the V-l cruise missile. There was the Speer Ministry of Arms which did research. In addition, a system of research and development facilities was set up headed by a research council, the "Reichsforschungrat". Their job was to coordinate the technical schools and universities, the military and governmental research groups, and the research and development facilities into a concerted effort (11).

The Underground Complex "Der Riese"



BYSTRZYCA GRN.
BOJANOWICE
DZIECMOROWICE
LUBACHÓW
LUTOMIA GRN.
ZAGÓRZE ŚL.
NIEDŹWIEDZICE
JEDLINA - ZDRÓJ
JUGOWICE
MICHAŁKOWA
OLSZYNIEC
40´N
WALIM
KOMPLEKS JUGOWICE GÓRNE
WŁODARZ
GLINNO
KOMPLEKS WŁODARZ
RZECZKA
POTOCZEK
KOMPLEKS SOBOŃ
KOMPL. RZECZKA
GŁUSZYCA
SOBOŃ
KOMPLEKS OSÓWKA
ZIMNA
OSÓWKA
KOLCE
GŁUSZYCA GRN.
SOKOLEC
KOMPL. SOKOLEC
BARTNICA
ŚWIERKI
16°30´E
PODZIEMNE FABRYKI W REJONIE GÓR SOWICH
KOMPLEKSY FABRYK - Underground facilities
MIEJSCOWOŚCI - Villages
DROGI - Roads
Kompleks „OSÓWKA"
3
2
1
Numerki oznaczają wejścia
Kompleks „WŁODARZ"
2
1
Numerki oznaczają wejścia.

"Der Riese", ("The Giant" in English), is located in the "Gory Sowie" or Owl Mountains of modern-day Poland. It consisted of seven undergound complexes which concerned themselves with the mining, refining, research and development of uranium both for energy producing machines and weapons of war. The tunnels of the larger complexes are almost two miles in length. Courtesy of Robert Lesniakiewicz. Mr. Lesniakiewicz is a Polish engineer and a member of the research group responsible for opening, exploring and maping of "Der Riese".

Another fact that influences our story was the ascendance of the SS (Schutz Staffel). The SS began simply as Hitler's body guard. From humble beginnings it was transformed into the most powerful entity within the Third Reich after Hitler himself. The military arm of the SS, the Waffen SS, became the most elite military force in Germany. The SS also took over many research, development and production facilities from the Army and Air Force. The SS took over control of civilian research and development facilities. The SS began taking facilities and power away from Albert Speer's Ministry of Arms and the RLM headed by Hermann Goering. As the war progressed, the SS organized, built and ran many underground manufacturing facilities (12). They even appropriated the huge industrial firm, the Skoda Works, its subsidiaries and related firms, centered near Prague, for their in-house projects (13). The SS became an empire within an empire answerable only to Adolf Hitler.

The SS also set up special research facilities for politically unreliable scientists. Research projects arose within these facilities which were in part staffed by technical people drawn from the prisoner pool. Such facilities were set up at Oraneinburg, Nordhausen, Mechlenburg and Mathausen (14).

As the SS rose within Germany, so did the fortunes of Doctor of Engineering, General Hans Kammler. Kammler seems to come into prominence through his talent at designing and building massive underground facilities (15). Soon Kammler was placed, by Hitler, in charge of V-weapons (Vergeltungswaffen). This means Kammler was in charge of the facilities at Peenemuende and Nordhausen. He was Dr. and General Walhter Dornberger's boss who, in turn was Dr. Wernher von Braun's boss. Further, Kammler headed up an advanced research and development group, associated with the Skoda Works, called the Kammler Group (16). This group held the most advanced technical secrets of the Third Reich.

During post-war questioning, when asked for details concerning V-weaponry, Albert Speer told Allied interrogators to ask Kammler these questions (17). They never did, however, because the 42 year old General Kammler had disappeared. Kammler was no fool. Wherever he went he undoubtedly took copies of the most advanced German technology. Numerous countries would have dealt with Kammler, regardless of his past. This includes the U.S.A. Couple this with the fact that no search was ever made for General Kammler in spite of the fact that he extensively employed slave-labor in his projects.

Did Kammler do a secret deal with an Allied government, exchanging information for a new identity? Or did Kammler escape Allied clutches to some safe haven such as South America? It is known that the Nazis set up shop in large, secure tracts of land between Chile and Argentina. It is also known that UFOs were seen earlier in that region than in the USA after the war. Many post-war stories involve German scientists relocating in South American countries formerly friendly to the

Nazis and there building and flying German saucers.

CHAPTER ONE

The Situation Within Nazi Germany

Sources and References

1. Vesco, Renato, 1976, Intercept UFO, pages 90-110, Pinnacle Books, 275 Madison Ave, N.Y., NY. 10016 Reissued as Man-Made UFOs 1944-1994 by Adventures Unlimited Publishing, P.O. Box 74, Kempton, Illinois 60946

2. Zunneck, Karl-Heinz, 1998, Geheimtechnologien. Wunderwaffen Und Irdischen Facetten Des UFO-Phaenomens 50 Jahre Desinformation und die Folqen. CTT-Verlag, Suhl, Germany

3. Faeth, Harald, 1998, 1945 - Thuerinqens Manhattan Project Auf der Spuerensuche nach der verlorenen V-Waffen-Fabrik in Deutschlands Unterarund, CTT-Verlag, Heinrich-Jung-Verlagsgesellschaft mbH, Suhl, Germany

4. Jesensky, Milos, Ph.D. and Robert Lesniakiewicz, 1998, "Wunderland" Mimozemske Technoloaie Treti Rise. AOS Publishing, 1 Vydani

5. Lusar, Rudolf, 1960, German Secret Weapons Of The Second World War. Neville Spearman, London, England

6. German Research Project, 1999, "German Death Rays Part Two: The German And American Governmental Evidence", German Research Project, P.O. Box 7, Gorman, CA. 93243-0007, USA

7. Vesco, Renato, 1976, pages 95-98

8. Jesensky, Milos, Ph.D. and Robert Lesniakiewicz, 1998, page 37

9. Vesco, Renato, 1976, page 106

10. ibid, pages 90-111

11. Combined Intelligence Objectives Subcommittee Evaluation Report 20, Planning Board Of Reich Research Council

12. Vesco, Renato, 1976, pages 90-93

13. Agoston, Tom, 1985, Blunder! How the U.S. Gave Awav Nazi Supersecrets To Russia , pages 12-15, Dodd, Mead & Company, New York

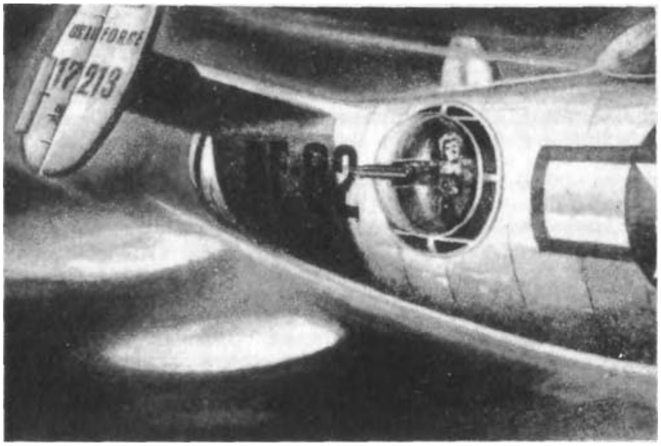
14. British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee, Report Number

142, Information Obtained From Targets Of Opportunity In The Sonthofen Area, pages 1 and 3

15. Vesco, Renato, 1976, pages 93-95

16. Agoston, Tom, 1985, page 13

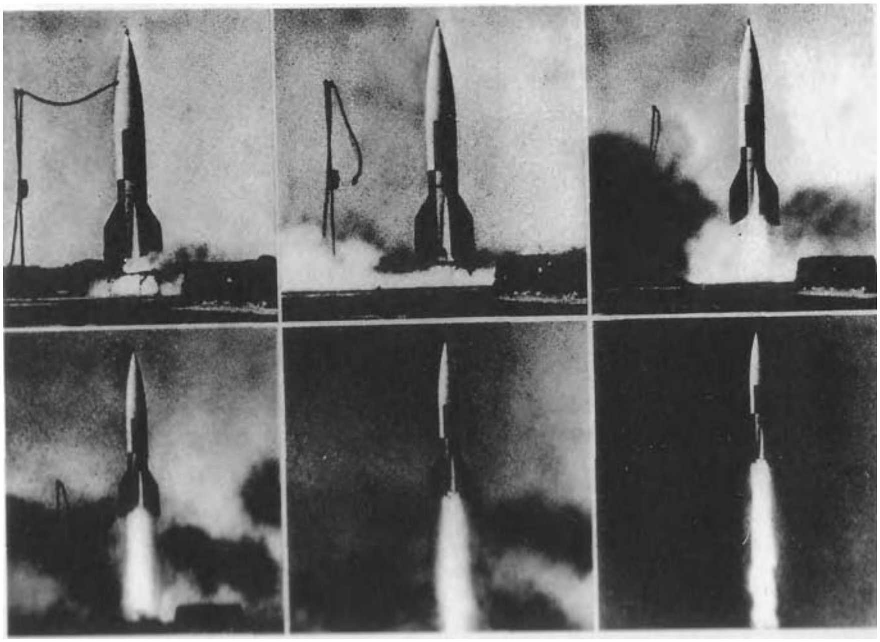
17. Combined Intelligence Objectives Subcommittee Evaluation Report Number 53(b), Interrogation of Albert Speer, Former Reich Minister of Armaments, page 3

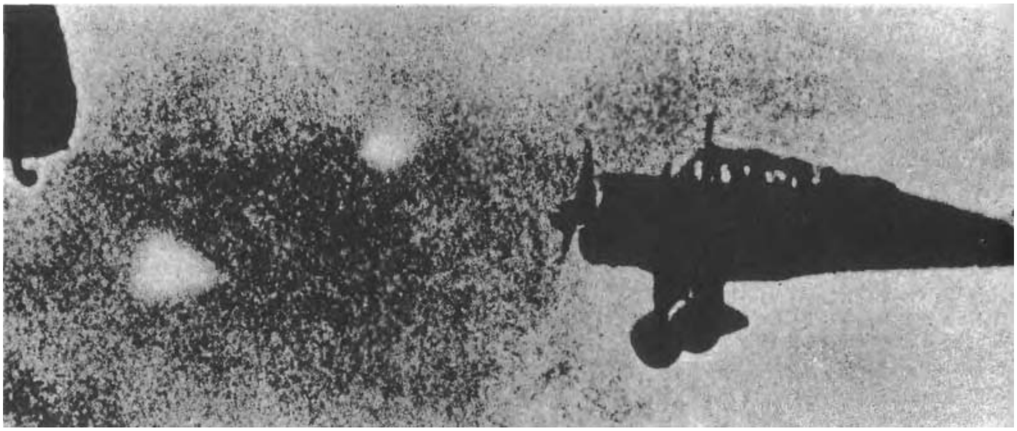


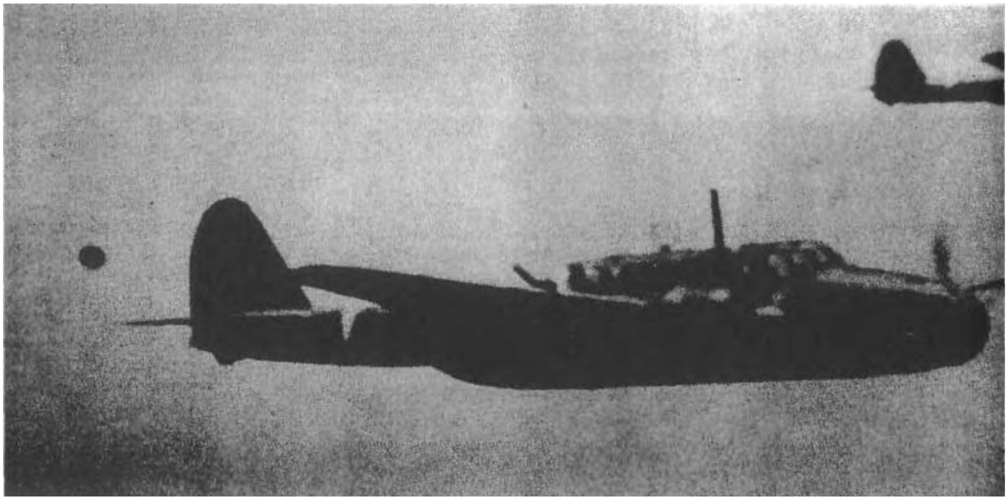
Some of the earliest forms of UFOs, reported during the 1940s, were the ball of light phenomena known as 'foo fighters,' as depicted here.

Walter Dornberger, Wernher von Braun (in cast) and other scientists after surrendering to the U.S. Seventh Army in May 1945.

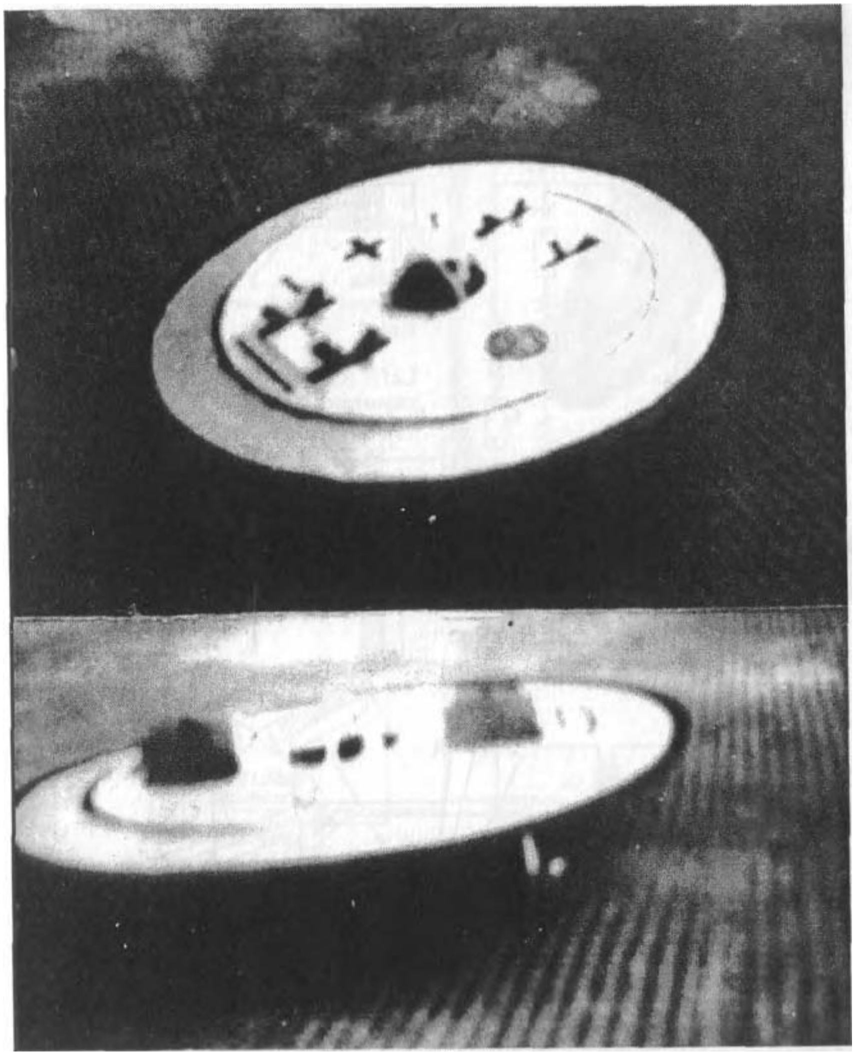
Below, in May 1946, the Americans fire off a captured V-2 at the White Sands proving ground in New Mexico.





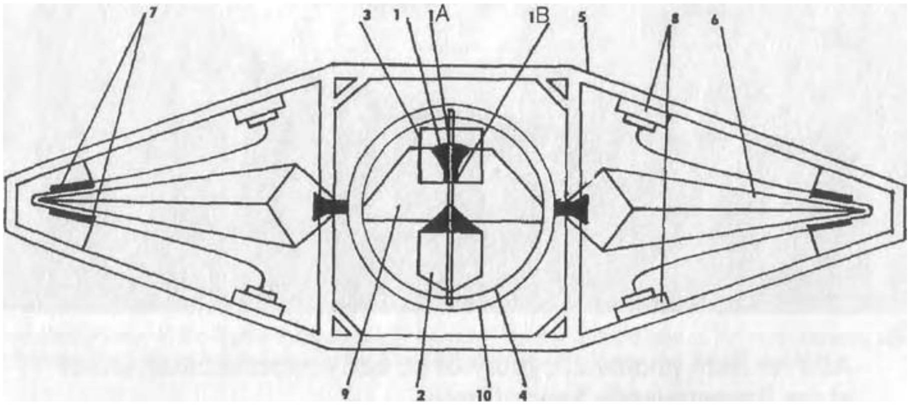


Above: Few photos of foo fighters are currently known. The top photo is one of the most famous, taken over Europe; the bottom was taken over the Sea of Japan between Japan and Korea in 1943.

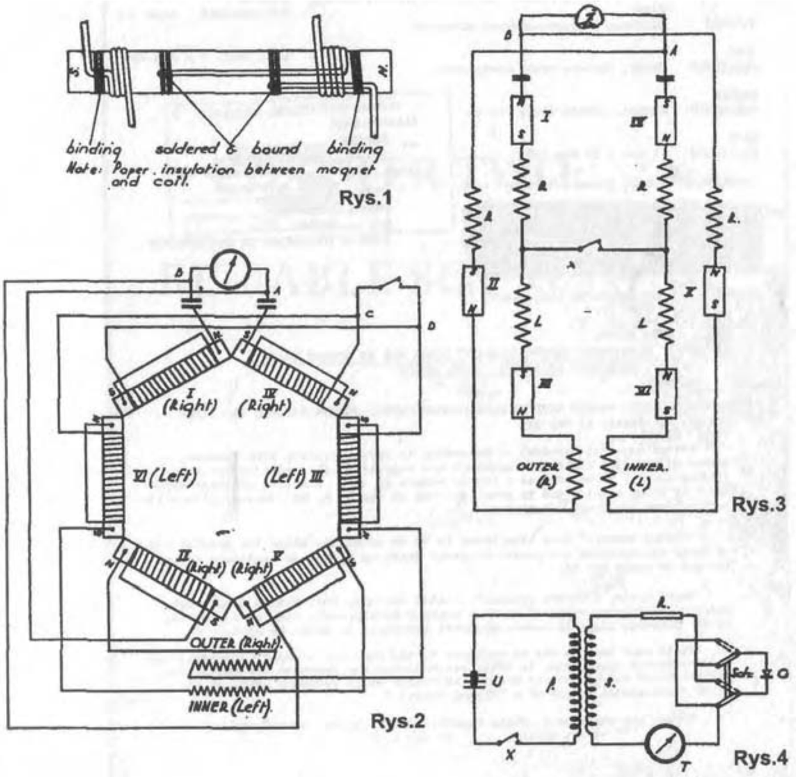


Above: Rare photos allegedly of an early experimental saucer at the Peenemuende Space Center.

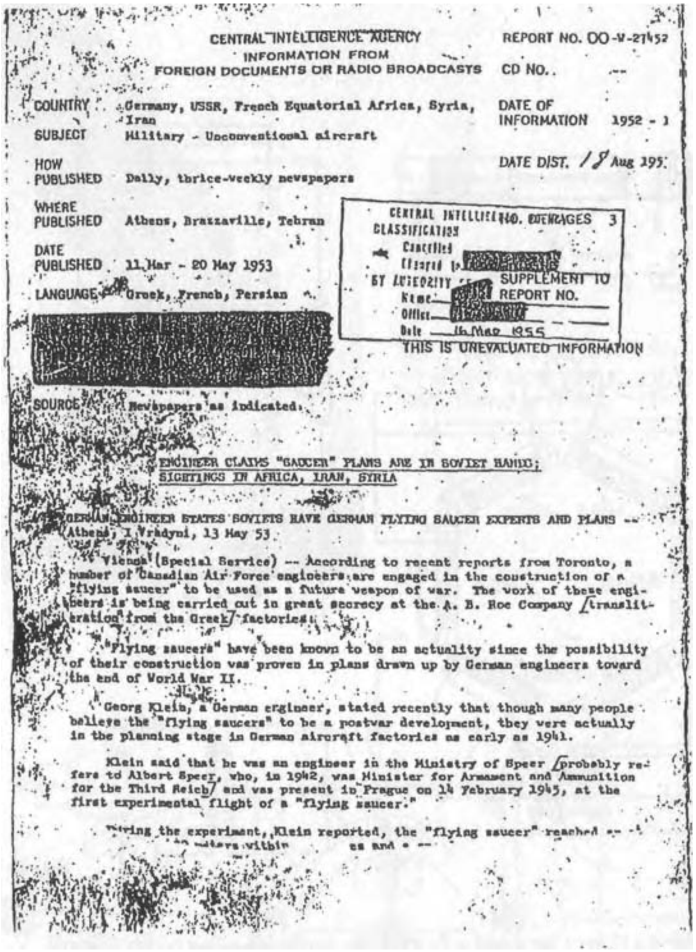
Left: Rare photo allegedly of an early experimental saucer at the Peenemuende Space Center in flight.



Above: Internal plans for a "Vril-1" saucer, according to Polish historian Igor Witkowski.


S
N
binding
soldered & bound
binding
Note: Paper insulation between magnet and coil.
Rys.1
B
A
C
D
S
N
I (Right)
IV (Right)
VI (Left)
(Left) III
II (Right)
V (Right)
OUTER (Right)
INNER (Left)
Rys.2
B
A
I
IV
R
R
R
R
II
V
L
L
III
VI
OUTER (R)
INNER (L)
Rys.3
R.
U
P.
S.
Sch.
O
X
T
Rys.4

Patent for the Coler Converter, a free energy device designed by Hans Coler in 1937.



CENTRAL INTELLIGENCE AGENCY
INFORMATION FROM
FOREIGN DOCUMENTS OR RADIO BROADCASTS

REPORT NO. 00-W-27452
CD NO. --

COUNTRY Germany, USSR, French Equatorial Africa, Syria, Iran
SUBJECT Military - Unconventional aircraft
HOW PUBLISHED Daily, thrice-weekly newspapers
WHERE PUBLISHED Athens, Brazzaville, Tehran
DATE PUBLISHED 11 Mar - 20 May 1953
LANGUAGE Greek, French, Persian

DATE OF INFORMATION 1952 - 1
DATE DIST. 18 Aug 195

[redacted]

CENTRAL INTELLIGENCE AGENCY CLASSIFICATION
Cancelled
Changed to [redacted]
BY AUTHORITY OF [redacted]
Name
Office [redacted]
Date 16 Mar 1955

NO. OF PAGES 3

SUPPLEMENT TO
REPORT NO.

THIS IS UNEVALUATED INFORMATION

SOURCE Newspapers as indicated.

ENGINEER CLAIMS "SAUCER" PLANS ARE IN SOVIET HANDS;
SIGHTINGS IN AFRICA, IRAN, SYRIA

GERMAN ENGINEER STATES SOVIETS HAVE GERMAN FLYING SAUCER EXPERTS AND PLANS -- Athens, I Vradyni, 13 May 53

Vienna (Special Service) -- According to recent reports from Toronto, a number of Canadian Air Force engineers are engaged in the construction of a "flying saucer" to be used as a future weapon of war. The work of these engineers is being carried out in great secrecy at the A. B. Roe Company [transliteration from the Greek] factories.

"Flying saucers" have been known to be an actuality since the possibility of their construction was proven in plans drawn up by German engineers toward the end of World War II.

Georg Klein, a German engineer, stated recently that though many people believe the "flying saucers" to be a postwar development, they were actually in the planning stage in German aircraft factories as early as 1941.

Klein said that he was an engineer in the Ministry of Speer [probably refers to Albert Speer, who, in 1942, was Minister for Armament and Ammunition for the Third Reich] and was present in Prague on 14 February 1945, at the first experimental flight of a "flying saucer."

During the experiment, Klein reported, the "flying saucer" reached [illegible] meters within [illegible]es and a [illegible]

A C.I.A. document dated August 18, 1952 mentioning that the Germans were building "flying saucers" as early as 1941. From the German book Die Dunkle Seite Des Mondes (The Dark Side of the Moon) by Brad Harris (1996, Pandora Books, Germany).

CHAPTER TWO:

RELIABLE SOURCES

CHAPTER TWO

Reliable Sources

Much has recently been written concerning German flying discs. To the best of my knowledge, no single source has all the answers. To piece this puzzle together information from various sources must be used. Of course, some sources are better than others. Categories of sources, in a somewhat descending order of reliability are:

1. Those actually involved with these projects.
2. Witnesses of flying saucers who had prior knowledge that the sighting was of a German saucer as opposed to an unidentified flying object.
3. Those who at the time had good reason to know of German saucers.
4. Third-party intelligence sources which verify claims made by the higher categories above.
5. Researchers who have interviewed principals involved in German saucer research.
6. Studies or scientific papers published by individuals identified as participants in these projects.

Sources without names are not as good as sources with names. Information, data, or pictures without a "chain of evidence" linking them to the event are not as good as those with proper documentation.

After almost sixty years, nothing is going to be perfect. These categories are not meant to be absolute. Some sources fit into multiple categories. Some reports have value even though they are not rigorous simply because they were later corroborated by other sources.

When reading allegedly factual statements, the reader should always be looking for the source documentation for these statements. A writer's opinion or interpretation may be valuable but it should always be made clear which is who.

Examples of the first category are those who worked on German saucer projects:

Among these is Rudolf Schriever. Schriever was involved in a German saucers project which sometimes bears his name. As a source of information, he wrote an article on German saucers for the very respected Der Spiegel magazine (1).

Likewise, Joseph Andreas Epp was a self-admitted consultant for both the Schriever-Habermohl project at Prag and the Miethe project in Dresden and Breslau. Mr. Epp wrote to me personally (2) and has written several articles and a book about German saucers before he died in 1997 (3).

An example of a witness who had prior knowledge of German saucers would be Georg Klein. Klein was an engineer, an eyewitness to a saucer lift-off on February 14, 1945. He was also Special Commissioner in the Ministry of Arms Production who oversaw both the Schriever-Habermohl and Miethe-Belluzzo projects for Albert Speer. Mr. Klein has written some newspaper articles about these facts such as his article in Welt am Stonntag, titled "Erste "Flugscheibe" flog 1945 in Prag" (The First Flying Disc flew in Prag in 1945)(4) . Other newspaper references of Mr. Klein will be mentioned. He has also written under the pen-name of Georg Sautier.

Another example would be the unnamed eyewitness provided by researcher Horst Schuppmann and first reported in Karl-Heinz Zunneck's book Geheimtechnoloaien. Wunderwaffen Und Irdischen Facetten Des UFO-Phaenomens (Secret Technology, Wonder-weapons and the Terrestrial Facts of the UFO Phenomenon). In this report the informant relates a wartime experience in which he witnessed several small flying saucers in a hangar (5).

George Lusar is an example of a source falling under category three. Lusar worked for the German Patent Office during World War Two. He saw many secret patents as they came into his office. After the War he wrote a book and some articles concerning this technology which was taken by the Allies (6).

Likewise, Italian engineer Renato Vesco worked with Germans while at a secret division of Fiat housed in an underground facility on Lake Garda, right in the middle of the proposed Alpenfestung. After the war, Vesco also researched British Intelligence data. This data was volumnous. Of course, Vesco knew what to look for based upon what he had learned while working in a secret Axis underground facility. Vesco is an example of category three and the next one, category four.

Category four involves intelligence information obtained from governmental sources. This information mostly comes from the very entities who are trying to suppress this information. It should always be suspect. It should be used only to verify information obtained from higher sources (categories 1 through 3) or from governmental sources of another government. For instance, information concerning flying objects which Renato Vesco called "Fireballs" was verified using information obtained from the U.S. government under laws forcing it to divulge some types of information (Freedom Of Information Act) (7).

Category five would include, for instance, Callum Coats whom spent three years with mathematician and physicist, Walter

Schauberger, son of Viktor Schauberger. Mr. Coats consequently learned a great deal of information concerning the ideas of Viktor Schauberger. Mr. Coats is a scientist and architect. Coats wrote Living Energies about the ideas of Schauberger and his saucer models (8).

In the same category we find Michael X. Barton, who, through a translator, Carl F. Mayer, received information from an informant in German, Hermann Klaas, who claimed to have actually been involved with some of the German saucer projects. Klaas' peripheral knowledge (category three) also seems to have extended into other aspects of secret German research and technology. Barton wrote one of the earliest books on this topic, The German Saucer Story in 1968 (9).

One unique source is Wilhelm Landig. Landig wrote three novels dealing with the Second World War. Following the title of each novel, Landig tells the reader that this is a "novel based on realities". The reader is given to understand that the technology described was based on hard fact. Landig's works contain more than cold facts, however. Landig deals with a large variety of topics in his books. Sometimes facts or opinions are stated or "stories behind the story" are told. He writes, unashamedly, from the National Socialist perspective. Landig was obviously a Nazi and an intellectual insider. His history always remained unclear, at least to this writer, until his recent death. Because of his unclear background and the fact that he wrote in novel form, there has been a reluctance to ascribe full creditability to the statements he makes regarding the technology of the Third Reich.

This all changed in 1999 as a result of research done by Margret Chatwin with an organization called "Informations diesnst gegen Rechtsextremismus" (Information service against the extreme right) (10). Coming in from this perspective, they, certainly, would not be accused of aggrandizing Landig's career. Some details of Landig's biography are now filled in. In that article we learn that Landig, an Austrian, took part in the unsuccessful Vienna Putsch of 1934. Thereafter, he fled to Germany and was inducted into the SD, the SS and the Waffen SS. There he rose to the rank of "Oberschafuehrer". Eventually, Landig was detailed to
oversee government security concerns and given a position in the Reichs Security Department. Landig, in this position, was assigned to cover the security for the development of "UFOs" (11). It turns out that Landig was not only a source but a great source concerning the development of German saucers.

Returning to unnamed sources, they should never be given the weight as named sources are given. Many times writers use unnamed sources to advance a radically new and fantastic hypothesis in the UFO world. This type of source may sound convincing, given the "secret" nature of the message, but they should only be accepted if they yield new information which can be verified independently. This goes double for unnamed government sources. Government has a history of manipulation of information concerning UFOs and UFO origin theories. One of the most famous was the Majestic 12 or MJ 12 affair which was based on unnamed government sources. This house of card finally fell apart but the real issue before us is why this house of cards, the MJ-12 affair, was ever allowed so much attention in the first place.

Government information should, therefore, never be used as the primary basis for a UFO hypothesis. It should only be used to verify a hypothesis developed, ideally, from multiple, independent sources. Concerning German saucers,this means that information or ideas from German sources might be checked using U.S. or British governmental archives, but not the reverse. Similar assertions given by official records of two different countries is notable. If both United States and British or German governmental sources agree upon something, then something might be said of the assertion. Of course there are those that say this only points to a conspiracy between the two governments to conceal a deeper truth. This may be true in some cases. These are all really judgment calls which the reader will have to make for himself, in the end.

Regarding individual sources cited, an effort will be made to describe the type of evidence each cited reference uses when that information is available.

CHAPTER TWO

Reliable Sources

Sources and References

1. Der Spiegel, March 30, 1959, Article and interview of Rudolf Schriever
2. Epp, Joseph Andreas, telephone communication and personal letters
3. Epp, Joseph Andreas, 1994, Die Realitaet der Flugscheiben Ein Leben fuer eine Idee, EFODON e. V., c/o Gernot L. Geise, Zoepfstrasse 8, D-82405 Wessobrunn, Germany
4. Klein, Georg, in Welt Am Sontag, 4/26/53, "Erste Flugscheibe Flog 1945 in Prag
5. Zunneck, Karl-Heinz, 1998, pages 120-122
6. Lusar, Rudolf, 1960, German Secret Weapons Of The Second World War, Neville Spearman, London
7. Headquarters, United States Strategic Air Forces In Europe,

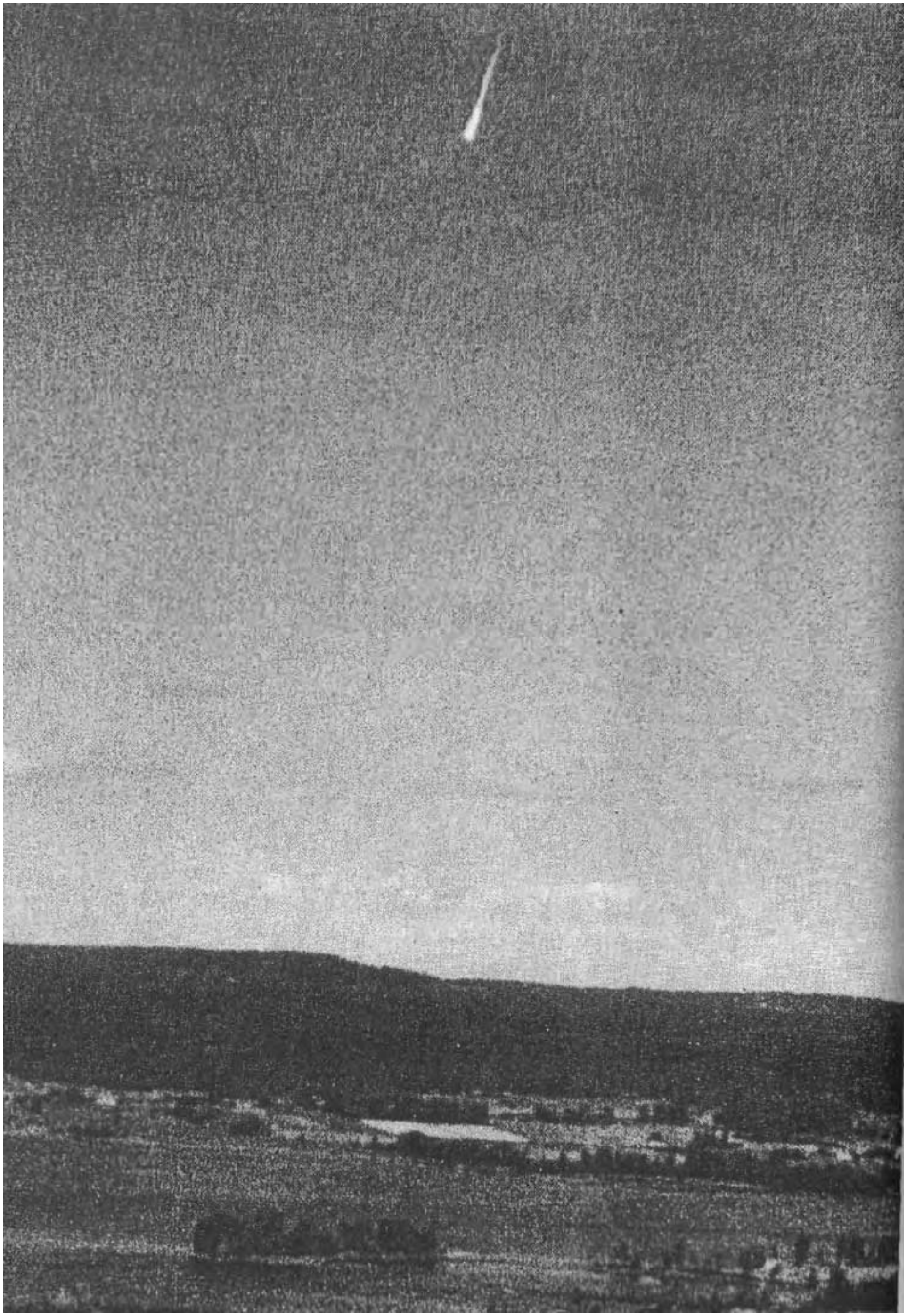
Office Of The Director Of Intelligence, 1944, report titled: "An Evaluation Of German Capabilities In 1945"

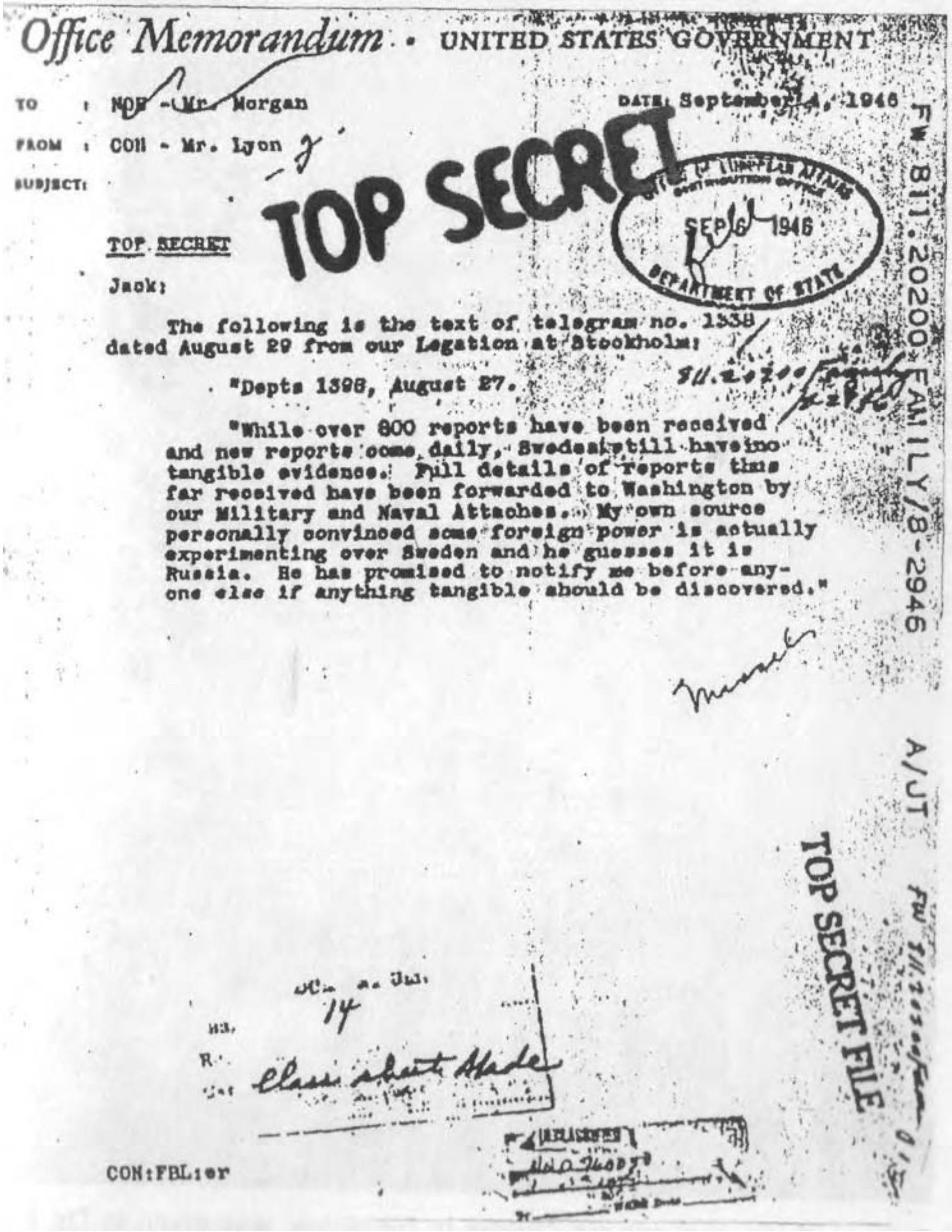
8. Coats, Callum, 1996, Living Energies. National Book Network, 4720 Boston Way, Lanham, MD. 20706

9. Barton, Michael X., 1968, The German Saucer Story. Futura Press, 5949 Gregory Ave., Los Angeles, CA. 90038

10. Chatwin, Margret, 1999, page 1, Ahnenerbe, Ufos, Neonazis: Wilhelm Landig, Informationsdienst gegen Rechtsextremismus, http://www.idgr.de/texte-1/esoterik/landig/landig. html

11. ibid





Office Memorandum • UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

TO : NOE - Mr. Morgan

DATE: September 4, 1946

FROM : CON - Mr. Lyon

SUBJECT:

TOP SECRET

TOP SECRET

DEPARTMENT OF STATE SEP 6 1946

Jack:

The following is the text of telegram no. 1338 dated August 29 from our Legation at Stockholm:

"Depts 1398, August 27.

"While over 800 reports have been received and new reports come daily, Swedes still have no tangible evidence. Full details of reports thus far received have been forwarded to Washington by our Military and Naval Attaches. My own source personally convinced some foreign power is actually experimenting over Sweden and he guesses it is Russia. He has promised to notify me before anyone else if anything tangible should be discovered."

FW 811.20200 FAMILY/8-2946

A/JT

TOP SECRET FILE

14

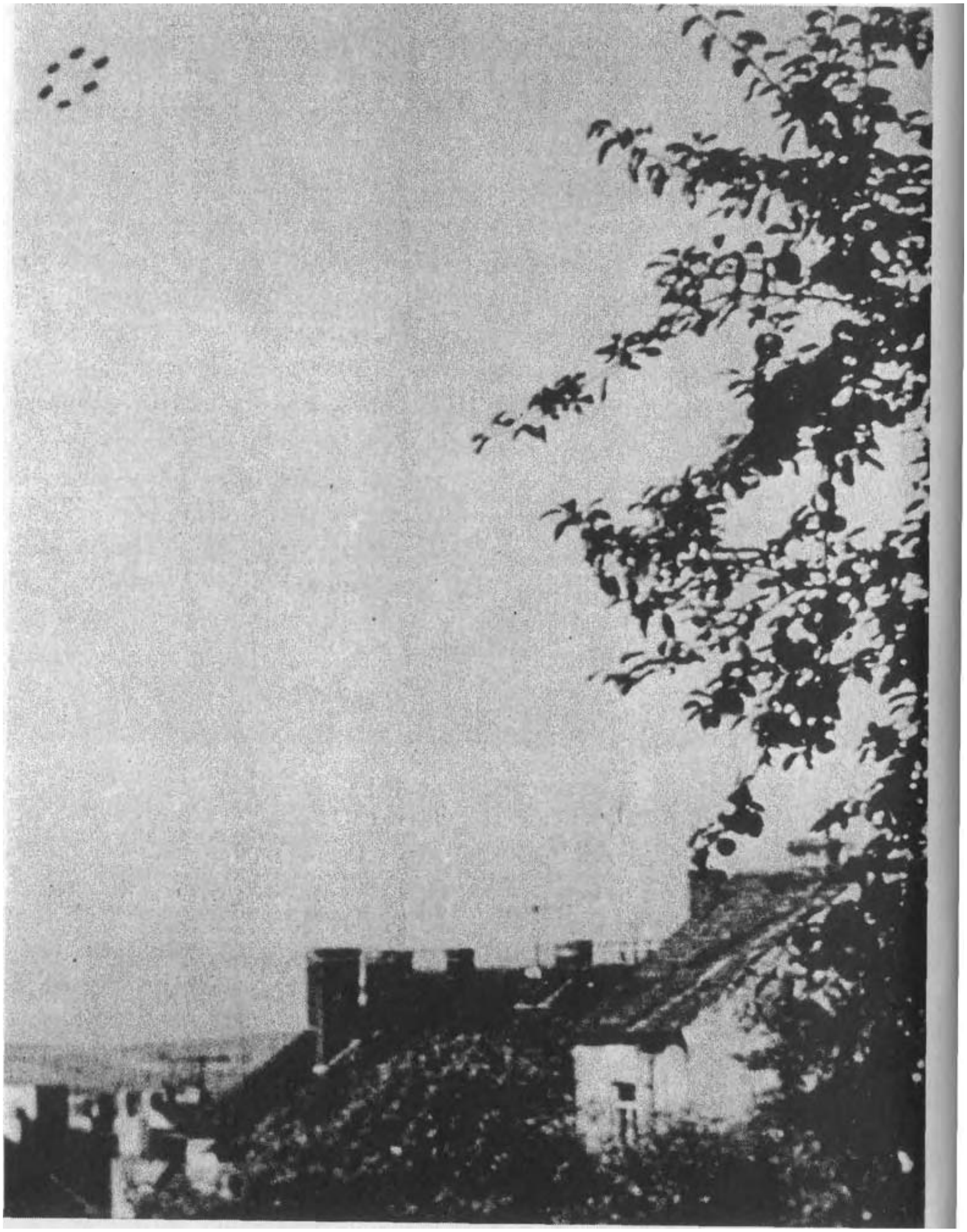
Class. sheet Made

DECLASSIFIED

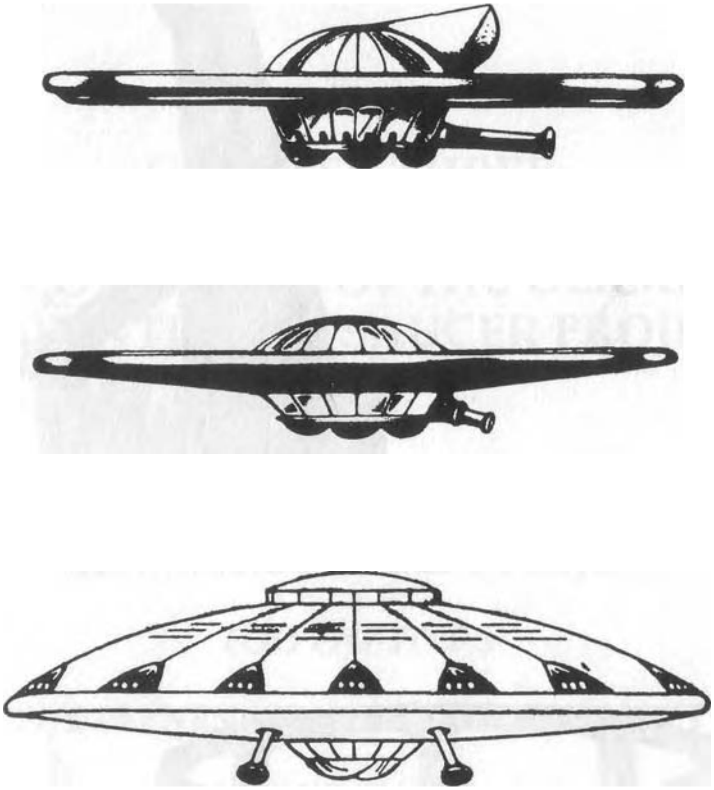
NND 760057

CON:FBL:er

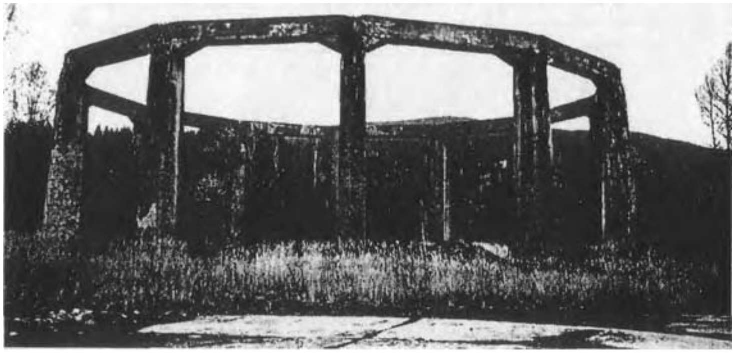
A September, 1946 Top Secret Memorandum on Ghost Rockets.



The above photo, showing six saucers in formation, was given to Dr. J. Allen Hynek in the early 1950s by the director of the Ondrejov Observatory in Czechoslovakia. No details of the sighting are available, but the photo is thought to have been taken near Prague, perhaps during WWII.



Above: Drawings of the Project Saucer craft designed in 1941 by Rudolf Schriever, a Luftwaffe aeronautical engineer, and his three colleagues, Habermohl, Miethe and Bellonzo. The first prototype was flown in June 1942 and larger versions were apparently designed and manufactured at the BMW factory near Prague, Czech Republic.



Above: The circular "Mucholapka" building in Poland. According to Polish Military Historian Igor Witkowski it was used for testing saucer-type craft.

CHAPTER THREE:

AN OVERVIEW OF THE GERMAN CONVENTIONAL SAUCER PROJECTS

THE SCHREIVER-HABERMOHL PROJECT(S)

THE MIETHE-BELLUZZO PROJECT

FOO FIGHTERS

THE PEENEMUENDE SAUCER PROJECT

CHAPTER SUMMARY

CHAPTER THREE

An Overview of the German Conventional Saucer Projects

In this section we will progress from saucer projects with are absolutely factual and of which detail is known and proceed to projects which are less known.

Several types of flying craft we would call flying saucers were built by the Germans during the Second World War. The exact number is still open for debate but it certainly must vary from between three to seven or possibly eight different types. These different types do not mean experimental models or variants of which there were many. What is meant here is that there were very different lines of flying machines being built in wartime Germany at different places by different groups of people. Since more than one saucer-type may have been produced by a single group, we will review this data group by group. We will progress from saucer projects which are factually better known and which deal in conventional propulsion methods and then move to lesser known projects which deal in more exotic propulsion methods which are less well documented and so more controversial.

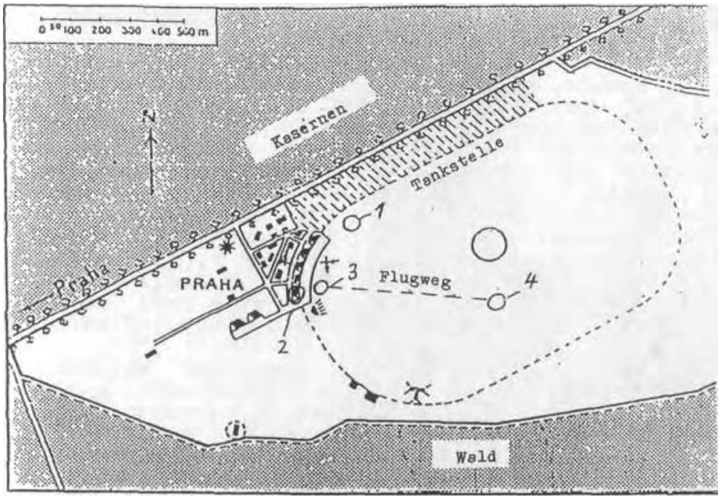
The Schriever-Habermohl Project(s)

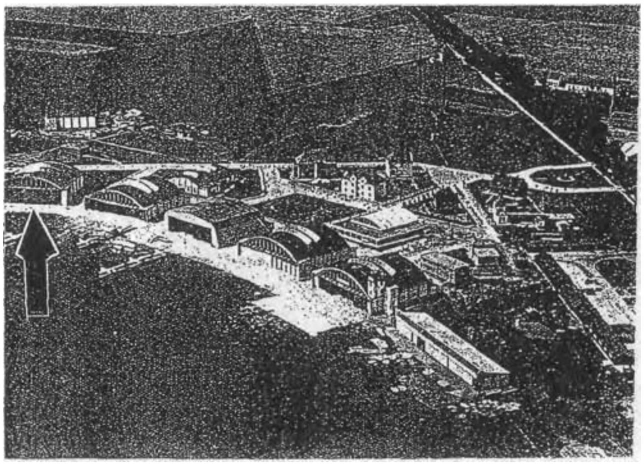
The best known of these projects is usually referred to as the Schriever-Habermohl project although it is by no means clear that these were the individuals in charge of the project. Rudolf Schriever was an engineer and test pilot. Less is known about Otto Habermohl but certainly he was an engineer. This project was centered in Prag, at the Prag-Gbell airport (l)(2). Actual construction work began somewhere between 1941 and 1943 (3)(4). This was originally a Luftwaffe project which received technical assistance from the Skoda Works at Prag and at a Skoda division at Letov (5) and perhaps elsewhere (6). Other firms participating in the project according to Epp were the Junkers firm at Oscheben and Bemburg, the Wilhelm Gustloff firm at Weimar and the Kieler Leichtbau at Neubrandenburg (7). This project started as a project of the Luftwaffe, sponsored by second-in-command, Ernst Udet. It then fell under the control of Speer's Armament Ministry at which time it was administered by engineer Georg Klein. Finally, probably sometime in 1944, this project came under the control of the SS, specifically under the purview of General Hans Kammler (8).

According to his own words, Georg Klein saw this device fly on February 14, 1945 (9). This may have been the first official flight, but it was not the first flight made by this device. According to one witness, a saucer flight occurred as early as August or September of 1943 at this facility. The eyewitness was in flight-training at the Prag-Gbell facility when he saw a short test flight of such a device. He states that the saucer was 5 to 6 meters in diameter (about 15 to 18 feet in diameter) and about as tall as a man, with an outer border of 30-40 centimeters. It was "aluminum" in color and rested on four thin, long legs. The flight distance observed was about 300 meters at low level of one meter in altitude. The witness was 200 meters from the event and one of many students there at the time (10).

Joseph Andreas Epp, an engineer who served as a consultant to both the Schriever-Habermohl and the Miethe-Belluzzo projects, states that fifteen prototypes were built in all (11) (12). The final device associated with Schriever-Habermohl is described by engineer Rudolf Lusar who worked in the German Patent Office, as a central cockpit surrounded by rotating adjustable wing-vanes forming a circle. The vanes were held together by a band at the outer edge of the wheel-like device. The pitch of the vanes could be adjusted so that during take off more lift was generated by increasing their angle from a more horizontal setting. In level flight the angle would be adjusted to a smaller angle. This is similar to the way helicopter rotors operate. The wing-vanes were to be set in rotation by small rockets placed around the rim like a pinwheel. Once rotational speed was sufficient, lift-off was achieved. After the craft had risen to some height the horizontal jets or rockets were ignited and the small rockets shut off (13). After this the wing-blades would be allowed to

The Airport at Prag-Gbell

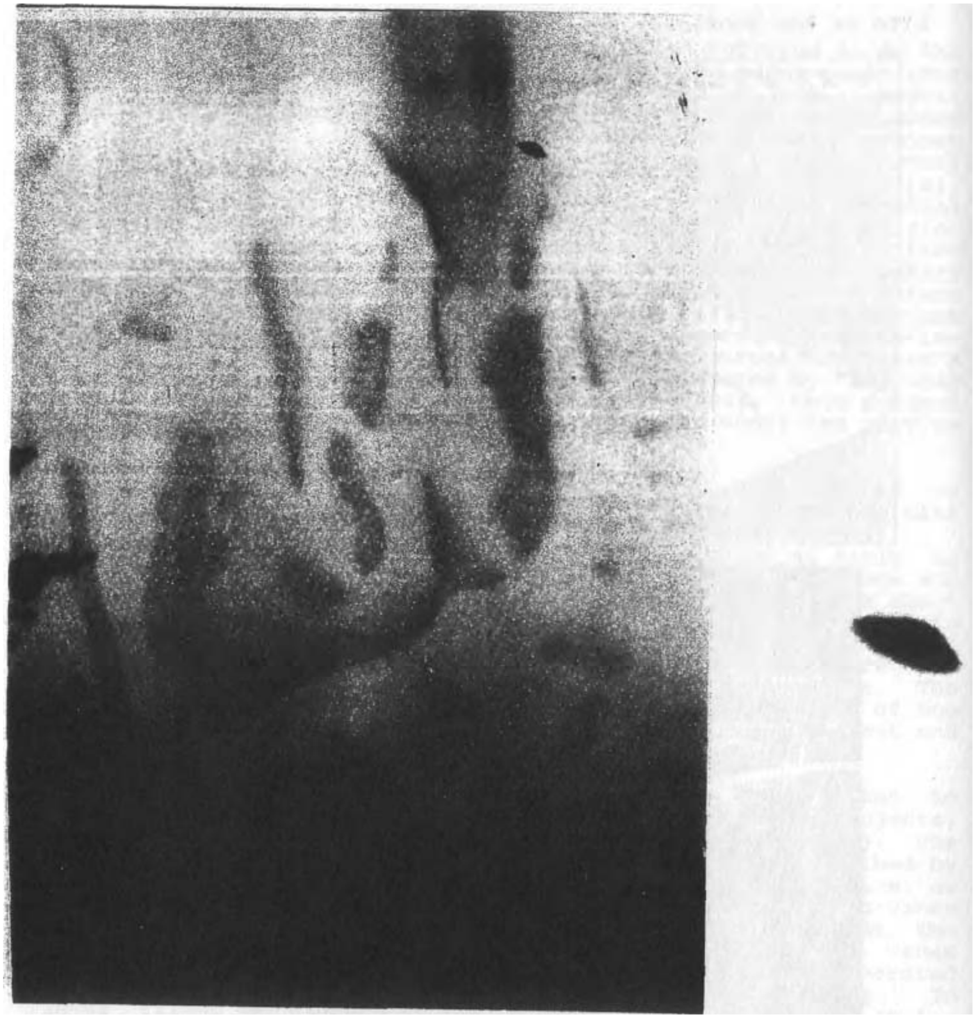

0 50 100 200 300 400 500 m
N
Kasernen
Tankstelle
Praha
PRAHA
1
2
3
Flugweg
4
Wald



Site of the Schriever and Habermohl Flying Saucer Projects

In the top diagram the hanger which was the site of the research is marked as number 2. The same hanger is indicated in the picture below with an arrow.

The Habermohl Saucer In Flight



To the left is the closest shot of the two taken by Joseph Andreas Epp as he drove to the Prag airport in 1944. To the right is a blow up (400 times) of that same saucer. Epp remembers a date of November, 1944 but the foliage on the trees argues for a date earlier in the year.

rotate freely as the saucer moved forward as in an autogyrocopter. In all probability, the wing-blades speed, and so their lifting value, could also be increased by directing the adjustable horizontal jets slightly upwards to engage the blades, thus spinning them faster at the digression of the pilot.

Rapid horizontal flight was possible with these jet or rocket engines. Probable candidates were the Junkers Jumo 004 jet engines such as were used on the famous German jet fighter, the Messerschmitt 262. A possible substitute would have been the somewhat less powerful BMW 003 engines. The rocket engine would have been the Walter HWK109 which powered the Messerschmitt 163 rocket interceptor (14). If all had been plentiful, the Junkers Jumo 004 probably would have been the first choice. Epp reports Jumo 211/b engines were used (15). Klaas reports the Argus pulse jet (Schmidt-duct), used on the V-l, was also considered (16). All of these types of engines were difficult to obtain at the time because they were needed for high priority fighters and bombers, the V-l and the rocket interceptor aircraft.

Joseph Andreas Epp reports in his book Die Realitaet der Flugscheiben (The Reality of the Flying Discs) that an official test flight occurred in February of 1945. Epp managed to take two still pictures of the saucer in flight which appear in his book and are reproduced here. There is some confusion about the date of these pictures. In the video film "UFOs Secrets of the 3rd Reich", Epp states these pictures were taken in the Fall of 1944. In his book the date is given as the official date of February 14, 1945. In personal correspondence to me of December, 30, 1991, he indicated the date of the pictures as August, 1944. In that correspondence he further revealed that the official flight had been February 14, 1945 but an earlier lift-off had taken place in August of 1944. The pictures show a small disc-like object in the distance at some altitude posed above a landscape. The saucer is at too great a distance and altitude to show any mechanical detail. As Klaus-Peter Rothkugel points out, the foliage on the trees indicates the August date as being the most accurate.

Very high performance flight characteristics are attributed to this design. Georg Klein says it climbed to 12,400 meters (over 37,000 feet) in three minutes (17) and attaining a speed around that of the sound barrier (18). Epp says that it achieved a speed of Mach 1 (about 1200 kilometers per hour or about 750 miles per hour) (19). From his discussion, it appears that Epp is describing the unofficial lift-off in August, 1944 at this point. He goes on to say that on the next night, the sound barrier was broken in manned flight but that the pilot was frightened by the vibrations encountered at that time (20). On the official test flight, Epp reports a top speed of 2200 kilometers per hour (21). Lusar reports a top speed of 2000 kilometers per hour (22). Many other writers cite the same or similar top speed. There is no doubt of two facts. The first is that these are supersonic speeds which are being discussed.

Second, it is a manned flight which is under discussion.

But at least one writer has discounted such high performance (23). It is argued that the large frontal area of one of the possible designs in question makes Mach 2 flight impossible. The argument seems to be that given the possible power plants the atmospheric resistance caused by this frontal area would slow the craft to a point below the figures stated earlier.

Some new information has come to light regarding the propulsion system which supports the original assessment. Although actual construction had not started, wind-tunnel and design studies confirmed the feasibility of building a research aircraft which was designated Project 8-346. This aircraft was not a saucer but a modern looking swept-back wing design. According this post-war Allied intelligence report, the Germans designed the 8-346 to fly in the range of 2000 kilometers per hour to Mach 2. (24). Interestingly enough, it was to use two Walther HWK109 rocket engines. This is one of the engine configurations under consideration for the Schriever-Habermohl saucer project.

As an aside, it should be noted that there are those who will resist at any attempt to impugn the official breaking of the sound barrier by Chuck Yeager in 1947 in the Bell X-l rocket aircraft. They had better brace themselves. This record has also been challenged from another direction. This challenge was reported in February, 2001, by the Associated Press, Berlin. It seems that a certain Hans Guido Mutke claims he pushed his Messerschmitt jet fighter, the Me-262, through the sound barrier in 1945. This occurred during an emergency dive to help another German flyer during air combat. At that time he experienced vibrations and shaking of the aircraft. According to the report, a Hamburg Professor is working on a computer simulation in order to check the validity of this claim.

Returning to the topic at hand, Schriever continued to work on the project until April 15, 1945. About this time Prag was threatened by the Soviet Army. The Czech technicians working on this project were reported to have gone amuck, looting the facility as the Russians approached. The saucer prototype(s) at Prag-Gbell were pushed out onto the tarmac and burnt. Habermohl disappeared and presumably ended up in the hands of the Soviets. Schriever, according to his own statements, packed the saucer plans in the trunk of his BMW and with his family drove into Southern Germany. After cessation of hostilities Schriever worked his way north to his parents house in Bremerhaven-Lehe. There Schriever set up an inventor-workshop. On August 4, 1948 there was a break in to the workshop in which Schriever's plans and saucer model were stolen (25). Schriever was approached by agents of "foreign powers" concerning his knowledge of German saucers. He declined their offers, preferring rather menial work driving a truck for the U.S. Army (25).

Schriever is reported to have died shortly thereafter in 1953.

There is a report, however, that his death was reported prematurely and that he was identified by a witness who knew him in Bavaria in 1964 or 1965 (26). The publisher of this book, Thomas Mehner, was so kind as to send me a copy of the statement by a Bavarian woman who knew Schriever and made this claim (27). This means that there is a possibility that Schriever did do post-war work on flying saucers.

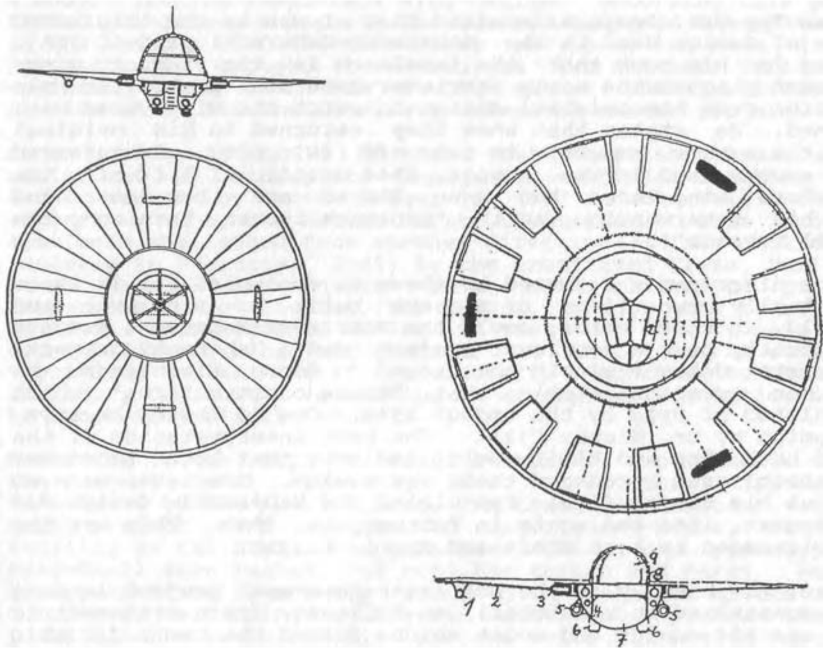
Interestingly enough, Schriever never claimed that his saucer ever flew at all! If this true, Schriever's saucer was still in the pre-flight stage at the time of the Russian advance and its ultimate destruction on the Prag-Gbell tarmac. This is in direct contradiction to the sources cited above and the photographic evidence. How can this seeming inconsistency be explained?

J. Andeas Epp has always maintained that it was he who originated the type of design used in the Schriever-Habermohl project (28). He states in his book that the imbalance in the ring of wing-vanes which plagued the early Schriever-Habermohl prototypes was a deviation from his original design in which the wing-vanes were lengthened. He states that when they returned to his original design, the saucer was able to take off (29) (30). He referred to the saucer used in the August, 1944 unofficial lift-off, the saucer whose wing-vanes had been altered and then corrected through his intervention, as the "Habermohlischen Version", the Habermohl version (31).

Could the discrepancy referred to above be accounted for if there were actually two lines of saucers built by Schriever and Habermohl? In other words, could the Schriever-Habermohl project have actually been a Schriever project and a Habermohl project, two separate designs within the team? Georg Klein seems to answer this question, stating that "three constructions" which were finished at Prag by the end of 1944. One of these, he says, was a design by Dr. Miethe (32). The best interpretation of the words of both Epp and Klein would indicate that both Schriever and Habermohl each produced their own design. Schriever made no claim that his design flew. Epp claims the Habermohl design did fly in August, 1944 and again in February 14, 1945. This was the saucer witnessed by both Klein and Epp in flight.

Therefore, the history of the Schriever-Habermohl project in Prag can be summarized in a nutshell as follows: Epp's statement is that it was his design and model which formed the basis for this project. This model was given to General Erst Udet which was then forwarded to Dr. Walter Dornberger at Peenemuende. Dr. Dornberger tested and recommended the design (33) which was confirmed by Dornberger to Epp after the war (34). A facility was set up in Prag for further development and the Schriever-Habermohl team was assigned to work on it there. At first this project was under the auspices of Hermann Goering and the Luftwaffe (35). Sometime later the Speer Ministry took over the running of this project with chief engineer Georg Klein in charge (36). Finally, the project was usurped by the SS in 1944, along

A Comparison of the Schriever and Habermohl Designs



On the left is the Schriever design while on the right is the Habermohl design. Please note the differing dimensions of the vane blades. This difference caused instability in the Schriever design. Drawings adapted from the work of Klaus-Peter Rothkugel.

with other saucer projects, and fell under the purview of Dr. Hans Kammler (37). Schriever altered the length of the wing-vanes from their original design. This alteration caused the instability. Schriever was still trying to work out this problem in his version of the saucer as the Russians overran Prag. Haberrmohl, according to Epp, went back to his original specifications, with two or three successful flights for his version.

While speaking of flight success, two more pieces of important evidence exists which were supplied by Andreas Epp. One comes in the form of a statement by a German test pilot, Otto Lange, given years after the war to Andreas Epp. In that statement, signed by Lange, Epp is credited with the idea behind the invention of the flying saucer and states that none other than Dr. Walter Dornberger had a hand in its development. He also makes the astonishing claim that he, personally, test flew this flying saucer for 500 kilometers in the course of testing (38) (39).

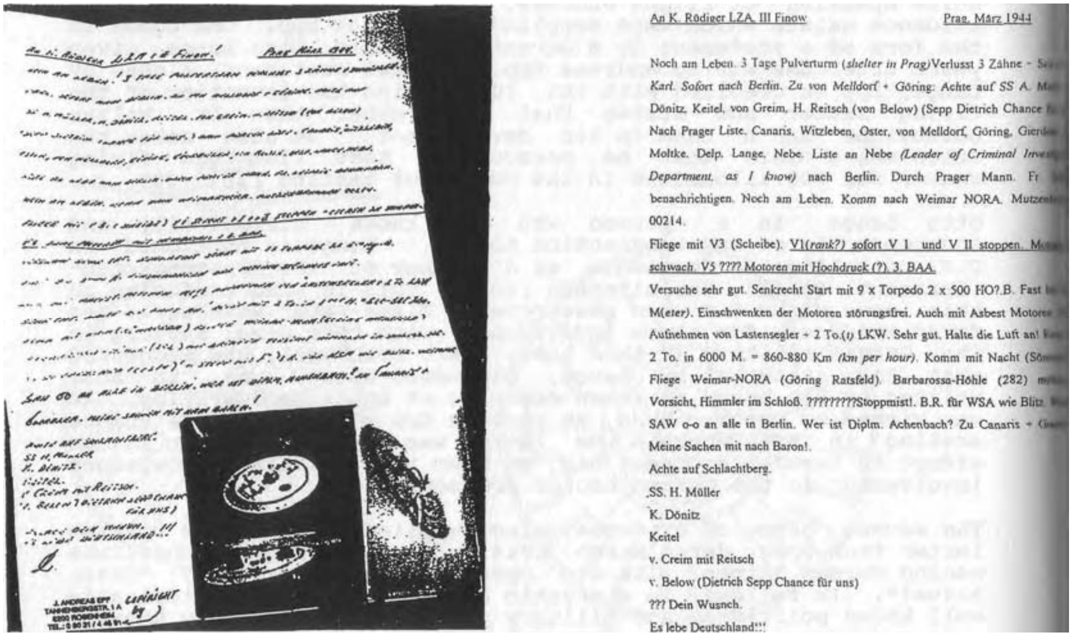
otto Lange is a person who is known historically and independently of any connection to Epp. Lange is mentioned in U.S. intelligence documents as a member of the "Rustungsstab" (Armament Staff), for aircraft (40). This is some confusion on this issue since a German researcher, Klaus-Peter Rothkugel, has found evidence for three individuals with this name serving in the German military at this time. Mr. Rothkugel, has suggested that the statement by Lange, discussed above, was, in fact, written by Epp based on known examples of Epp's hand writing. It was signed by another hand, so perhaps Epp and Lange had a chance meeting in 1965 wherein the letter was drafted by Epp in an effort to further document his, at that time, little-acknowledged involvement in the German saucer projects.

The second piece of evidence, also supplied by Epp, is a wartime Letter from Prag, dated March, 1944. It speaks to the conditions behind German lines with its opening greeting, simply "Still Alive!". It follows in a cryptic style describing historically well known political and military people who apparently knew or had something to do with the saucer project at Prag. The letter also describes some early prototype saucer models and their shortcomings. Interestingly enough figures on thrust are given (40) (41).

Three pictures appear at the bottom of the letter. One definitely shows a saucer in flight. There is no mention of these pictures in the text of the letter. Because they are not referenced and from their placement on the face of the letter it is possible that these pictures may have been a later addition to that letter. There are some other reasons why these pictures may not have been connected to the Schriever-Habermohl project or the Miethe-Belluzzo project. We shall return to these pictures at a later time.

An interesting fact elucidated by Epp is that the senior experts

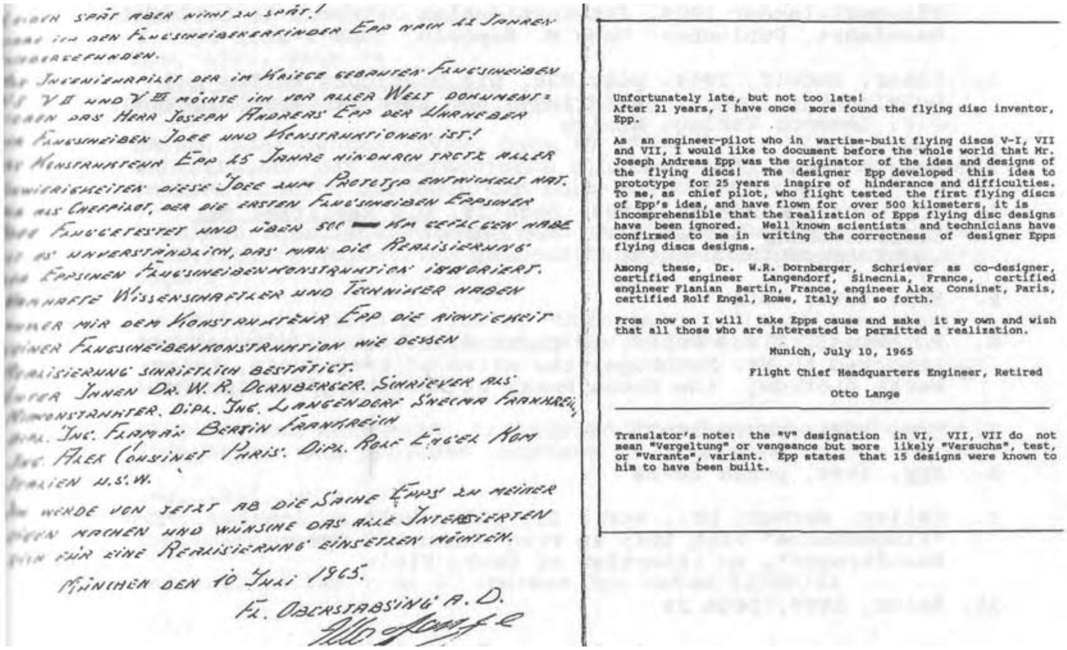
Cryptic And Enigmatic Letter Describes Flying Disc Development



An K. Rüdiger LZA. III Finow Prag, März 1944

Noch am Leben. 3 Tage Pulverturm (*shelter in Prag)*Verlusst 3 Zähne -
Karl. Sofort nach Berlin. Zu von Melldorf + Göring: Achte auf *SS A.*
Dönitz, Keitel, von Greim, H. Reitsch (von Below) (Sepp Dietrich Chance
Nach Prager Liste. Canaris, Witzleben, Oster, von Melldorf, Göring,
Moltke. Delp. Lange. Nebe. Liste an Nebe *(Leader of Criminal*
Department, as I know) nach Berlin. Durch Prager Mann. Fr
benachrichtigen. Noch am Leben. Komm nach Weimar NORA.
00214.
Fliege mit V3 (Scheibe). V1(*rank?)* sofort V 1 und V II stoppen.
schwach. V5 ???? Motoren mit Hochdruck (?). 3. BAA.
Versuche sehr gut. Senkrecht Start mit 9 x Torpedo 2 x 500 HO?.B. Fast
M(*eter)*. Einschwenken der Motoren störungsfrei. Auch mit Asbest
Aufnehmen von Lastensegler + 2 To.(*t)* LKW. Sehr gut. Halte die Luft an!
2 To. in 6000 M. = 860-880 Km *(km per hour)*. Komm mit Nacht
Fliege Weimar-NORA (Göring Ratsfeld). Barbarossa-Höhle (282)
Vorsicht, Himmler im Schloß. ?????????Stoppmist!. B.R. für WSA wie
SAW o-o an alle in Berlin. Wer ist Diplm. Achenbach? Zu Canaris +
Meine Sachen mit nach Baron!.
Achte auf Schlachtberg.
SS. H. Müller
K. Dönitz
Keitel
v. Creim mit Reitsch
v. Below (Dietrich Sepp Chance für uns)
??? Dein Wusnch.
Es lebe Deutschland!!!

On the left is the original letter sent to the author by Andreas Epp. On the right is a typed version done by Kadmon. Notes in English are directed to the author. The letter starts without any formal or Informal greeting, stating only "Still alive". Flying disc research "sehr gut" with vertical take-off at speeds of 860-880 per hour (525-550 milesper hour).



LEIDER SPÄT ABER NICHT ZU SPÄT!
HABE ICH DEN FLUGSCHEIBENERFINDER EPP NACH 21 JAHREN
WIEDERGEFUNDEN.
ALS INGENIEURPILOT DER IM KRIEGE GEBAUTEN FLUGSCHEIBEN
V I V II UND V III MÖCHTE ICH VOR ALLER WELT DOKUMENT-
IEREN DAS HERR JOSEPH ANDREAS EPP DER URHEBER
DER FLUGSCHEIBEN IDEE UND KONSTRUKTIONEN IST!
DER KONSTRUKTEUR EPP 25 JAHRE HINDURCH TROTZ ALLER
SCHWIERIGKEITEN DIESE IDEE ZUM PROTOTYP ENTWICKELT HAT.
MIR ALS CHEFPILOT, DER DIE ERSTEN FLUGSCHEIBEN EPPSCHER
IDEE FLUGGETESTET UND ÜBER 500 [redacted] KM GEFLOGEN HABE
IST ES UNVERSTÄNDLICH, DAS MAN DIE REALISIERUNG
DER EPPSCHEN FLUGSCHEIBENKONSTRUKTION IGNORIERT.
NAMHAFTE WISSENSCHAFTLER UND TECHNIKER HABEN
IMMER MIR DEM KONSTRUKTEUR EPP DIE RICHTIGKEIT
SEINER FLUGSCHEIBENKONSTRUKTION WIE DESSEN
REALISIERUNG SCHRIFTLICH BESTÄTIGT.
UNTER IHNEN DR. W. R. DORNBERGER. SCHRIEVER ALS
MITKONSTRUKTEUR. DIPL. ING. LANGENDORF SNECMA FRANKREICH,
DIPL. ING. FLAMAN BERTIN FRANKREICH
ING. ALEX CONSINET PARIS. DIPL. ROLF ENGEL ROM
ITALIEN U.S.W.

ICH WERDE VON JETZT AB DIE SACHE EPPS ZU MEINER
EIGEN MACHEN UND WÜNSCHE DAS ALLE INTERESSIERTEN
SICH FÜR EINE REALISIERUNG EINSETZEN MÖCHTEN.

MÜNCHEN DEN 10 JULI 1965.

FL. OBERSTABSING. A. D.

Unfortunately late, but not too late!
After 21 years, I have once more found the flying disc inventor, Epp.

As an engineer-pilot who in wartime-built flying discs V-I, VII and VII, I would like to document before the whole world that Mr. Joseph Andreas Epp was the originator of the idea and designs of the flying discs! The designer Epp developed this idea to prototype for 25 years inspire of hinderance and difficulties. To me, as chief pilot, who flight tested the first flying discs of Epp's idea, and have flown for over 500 kilometers, it is incomprehensible that the realization of Epps flying disc designs have been ignored. Well known scientists and technicians have confirmed to me in writing the correctness of designer Epps flying discs designs.

Among these, Dr. W.R. Dornberger, Schriever as co-designer, certified engineer Langendorf, Sinecnia, France, certified engineer Flanian Bertin, France, engineer Alex Consinet, Paris, certified Rolf Engel, Rome, Italy and so forth.

From now on I will take Epps cause and make it my own and wish that all those who are interested be permitted a realization.

Munich, July 10, 1965

Flight Chief Headquarters Engineer, Retired

Otto Lange

Translator's note: the "V" designation in VI, VII, VII do not mean "Vergeltung" or vengeance but more likely "Versuchs", test, or "Varante", variant. Epp states that 15 designs were known to him to have been built.

Original and author's translation of letter signed by Lange acknowledging Epp's role in flying disc history and advisors for both the Schriever-Habermohl project and the next project to be discussed, the Miethe-Belluzzo project, were exactly the same individuals (43).

The Schriever-Habermohl Project(s)

Sources and References

1. Meier, Hans Justus, 1999, page 24, "Zum Thema "Fliegende Untertassen" Der Habermohlsche Flugkreisel", reprinted in Fliegerkalender 1999, Internationales Jahrbuch de Luft-und Raumfahrt, Publisher: Hans M. Namislo, ISBN 3-8132-0553-3
2. Lusar, Rudolf, 1964, page 220, Die Deutschen Waffen und Geheimwaffen des 2. Weltkrieges und ihre Weiterentwicklung, J.F. Lemanns Verlag, Munich
3. Lusar, 1964, ibid
4. Epp, Joseph Andreas, 1994, page 28, Die Realitaet der Flugscheiben, Efodon e.V., c/o Gernot L. Geise, Zoepfstrasse 8, D-82495
5. Epp, 1994, ibid
6. Rothkugel, Klaus-Peter, in personal letters a witness has reported to Mr. Rothkugel the sites of Prag-Rusin, Letov-Werke (Lettow), the Skoda Works at Pressburg/Trentschin
7. Epp, 1994, pages 30-31
8. Epp, 1994, pages 28-33
9. Keller, Werner, Dr., April 25, 1953, Welt am Sonntag, "Erste "Flugscheibe" flog 1945 in Prag enthuellt Speers Beauftrager", an interview of Georg Klein
10. Meier, 1999, page 23
11. Personal letter from J. Andreas Epp dated 12/30/91
12. Epp, 1994, page 27, 30
13. Lusar, 1964, 220
14. Holberg, Jan, 8/20/54, page 4, "UFOs gibt es nicht! Wohl aber: Flugscheiben am laufenden Band!" Das Neue Zeitalter
15. Epp, 1994, page 31
16. Barton, Michael X., 1968, page 38, The German Saucer Story, Futura Press, Los Angeles (based upon Hermann Klaas)
17. Zwicky, Viktor, September 19, 1954, page 4, Tages-Anzeiger

fuer Stadt und Kanton Zuerich, "Das Raetsel der Fliegenden Teller Ein Interview mit Oberingenieur Georg Klein, der unseren Lesern Ursprung und Konstruktion dieser Flugkoerper erklaert"

18. Klein, Georg, October 16, 1954, page 5, "Die Fliegenden Teller", Tages-Anzeiger fuer Stadt und Kanton Zuerich

19. Epp, 1994, page 31

20. ibid

21. Epp, 1994, page 34

22. Lusar, 1964, page 220

23. Meier, Hans Justus, 1999, page 10, "Zum Thema "Fleigende Untertassen" Der Habermohlsche Flugkreisel", Fllegerkalender Internationales Jahrbuch der Luft-und Raumfahrt

24. Combined Intelligence Committee Evaluation Reports, Combined Intelligence Objectives Subcommittee, Evaluation Report 149, page 8

25. Der Spiegel, March 30, 1959, "Untertassen Sie fliegen aber doch" Article about and interview of Rudolf Schriever

26. Zunneck, 1998, page 119

27. This written statement, translated from Bavarian dialect to High German was provided courtesy of publisher Thomas Mehner

28. Epp, 1994, page 30

29. Epp, 1994, page 31

30. Personal letter from J. Andreas Epp dated 12/30/91

31. ibid

32. Klein, Georg, October 16, 1954, page 5, "Die "Fliegenden Teller", Tages-Anzeiger fuer Stadt und Kanton Zuerich

33. Epp, 1994, page 26

34. ibid

35. Epp, 1994, page 27

36. Epp, 1994, page 33

17. ibid

38. Kadmon, 2000, Ahnstern IX, "Andreas Epp", Aorta c/o Petak,

Postfach 778, A-1011, Wien, Austria

39. Personal letter from Andreas Epp, dated 12/30/91

40. Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee Evaluation Report, Report Number 40 "Sonderausschuss"

41. Kadmon, 2000, Ahnstern IX, "Andreas Epp"

42. Personal letter from Andreas Epp, dated 12/30/91

43. Epp, 1994, page 31

The Miethe-Belluzzo Project

This saucer project may have been an outgrowth of flying wing research. It was begun in 1942, and was under the on-site nuthority of Dr. Richard Miethe, sometimes called Dr. Heinrich Richard Miethe. Not much is known about Dr. Miethe before the war. After the war Dr. Miethe is rumored to have worked on the Anglo-American saucer project at the firm of Avro Aircraft Limited of Canada. Such is stated Klein (1)/ Epp (2), Barton (3), Lusar (4), as well as a myriad of other sources. We will return to the Avro projects later.

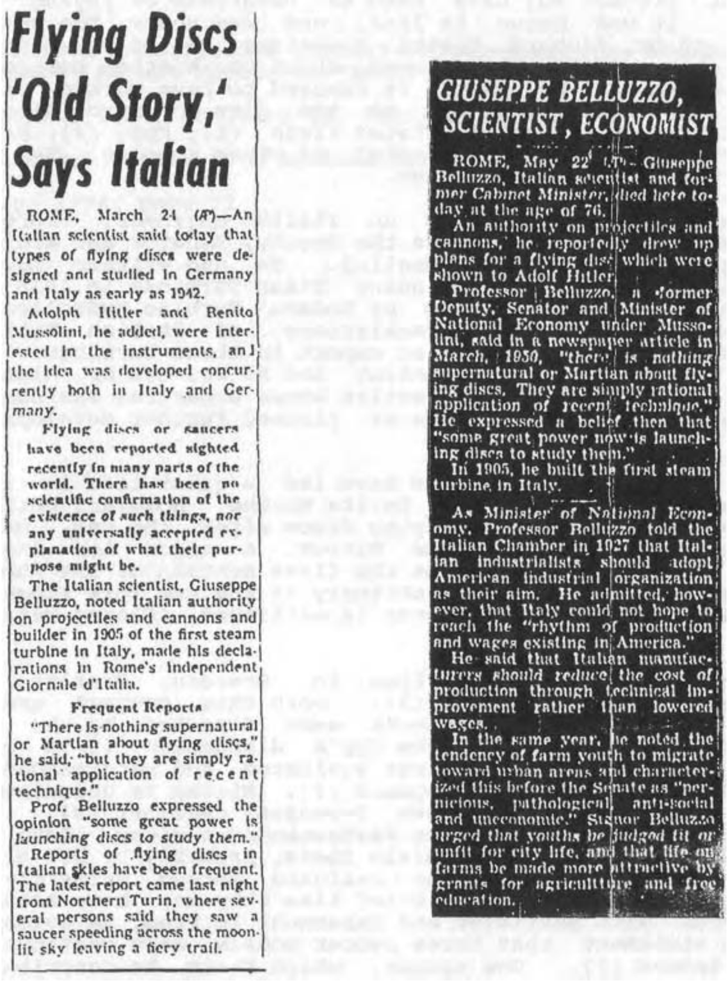
Working with Dr. Miethe was an Italian engineer, Professor Guiseppe Belluzzo. Belluzzo was the Deputy, Senator and Minister of National Economy under Mussolini. He had written several books on technical matters including Steam Turbines in 1926 and calculations and Installations of Modern Turbine Hydrolics in 1922 (names are English translations of Italian titles). Belluzzo was considered to be an expert in steam turbines. Dr. Belluzzo was not a junior scientist and he was not Dr. Miethe's assistant. He was a senior scientist whose expertise was somehow invaluable on the saucer devices or planned further developments of them.

After the war Belluzzo seems to have led a quiet life in Italy until his death on 5/22/52. Unlike Miethe, however, Belluzzo went on record about German flying discs after the war. He is quoted on the subject in The Mirror, a major Los Angeles newspaper in 1950. This may be the first mention of the subject in the American press. In his obituary in the New York Times his work on the German saucer program is mentioned. (Please refer to copies of these articles).

This team worked in facilities in, Dresden, Breslau and Letow/Prag according to Epp (5). Both this project and the Schriever and Habermohl projects were directed by the same experts and advisors (6). From Epp's discussion, it is clear that Dr. Walter Dornberger first evaluated and recommended his saucer model for further development (7). Miethe is described by Epp in translation as a "known V-weapons designer"(8). The association of both projects to Peenemuende is clear. Both were sanctioned and set up by officials there, probably by Dr. Walter Dornberger himself. Miethe and Belluzzo worked primarily in Dresden and Breslau but for a brief time they may have actually joined forces with Schriever and Habermohl in Prag, as evidenced by Klein's statement that three saucer models were destroyed on the Prag tarmac (9). One saucer, which Klein he describes as Miethe's was among these. Klein acknowledges that Peenemuende, and its nearby test facility at Stettin, retained and developed the Miethe design as an unmanned vehicle (10)(11).

Epp tells us that the Miethe-Belluzzo project was organized under exactly the same authority as the Schriever-Habermohl project and

Giuseppe Belluzzo



Flying Discs 'Old Story,' Says Italian

ROME, March 24 (AP)—An Italian scientist said today that types of flying discs were designed and studied in Germany and Italy as early as 1942.

Adolph Hitler and Benito Mussolini, he added, were interested in the instruments, and the idea was developed concurrently both in Italy and Germany.

Flying discs or saucers have been reported sighted recently in many parts of the world. There has been no scientific confirmation of the *existence of such things*, nor any universally accepted explanation of what their purpose might be.

The Italian scientist, Giuseppe Belluzzo, noted Italian authority on projectiles and cannons and builder in 1905 of the first steam turbine in Italy, made his declarations in Rome's independent Giornale d'Italia.

Frequent Reports

"There is nothing supernatural or Martian about flying discs," he said; "but they are simply rational application of recent technique."

Prof. Belluzzo expressed the opinion "some great power is launching discs to study them."

Reports of flying discs in Italian skies have been frequent. The latest report came last night from Northern Turin, where several persons said they saw a saucer speeding across the moonlit sky leaving a fiery trail.

GIUSEPPE BELLUZZO, SCIENTIST, ECONOMIST

ROME, May 22 (AP)—Giuseppe Belluzzo, Italian scientist and former Cabinet Minister, died here today at the age of 76.

An authority on projectiles and cannons, he reportedly drew up plans for a flying disc which were shown to Adolf Hitler.

Professor Belluzzo, a former Deputy, Senator and Minister of National Economy under Mussolini, said in a newspaper article in March, 1950, "there is nothing supernatural or Martian about flying discs. They are simply rational application of recent technique." He expressed a belief then that "some great power now is launching discs to study them."

In 1905, he built the first steam turbine in Italy.

As Minister of National Economy, Professor Belluzzo told the Italian Chamber in 1927 that Italian industrialists should adopt American industrial organization as their aim. He admitted, however, that Italy could not hope to reach the "rhythm of production and wages existing in America."

He said that Italian manufacturers should reduce the cost of production through technical improvement rather than lowered wages.

In the same year, he noted the tendency of farm youth to migrate toward urban areas and characterized this before the Senate as "pernicious, pathological, anti-social and uneconomic." Signor Belluzzo urged that youths be judged fit or unfit for city life, and that life on farms be made more attractive by grants for agriculture and free education.

On the left, a column from The Mirror, dated March 24, 1950. This is one of the earliest English references to German flying discs. On the right is Dr. Belluzzo's obituary, dated May 22, 1952 from the New York Times which again mentions German flying discs.

he further identifies the very same industrial firms which supported Schriever-Habermohl as supporting this project (12). In reality, both should be viewed as one project with different aspects.

The designs envisioned by Dr. Miethe and Professor Belluzzo were quite different from those of Schriever and Habermohl. Designs of this project consisted of a discus-shaped craft whose outer periphery did not rotate. Two designs have positively been attributed to Miethe and Belluzzo although three designs exist as part of their legacy.

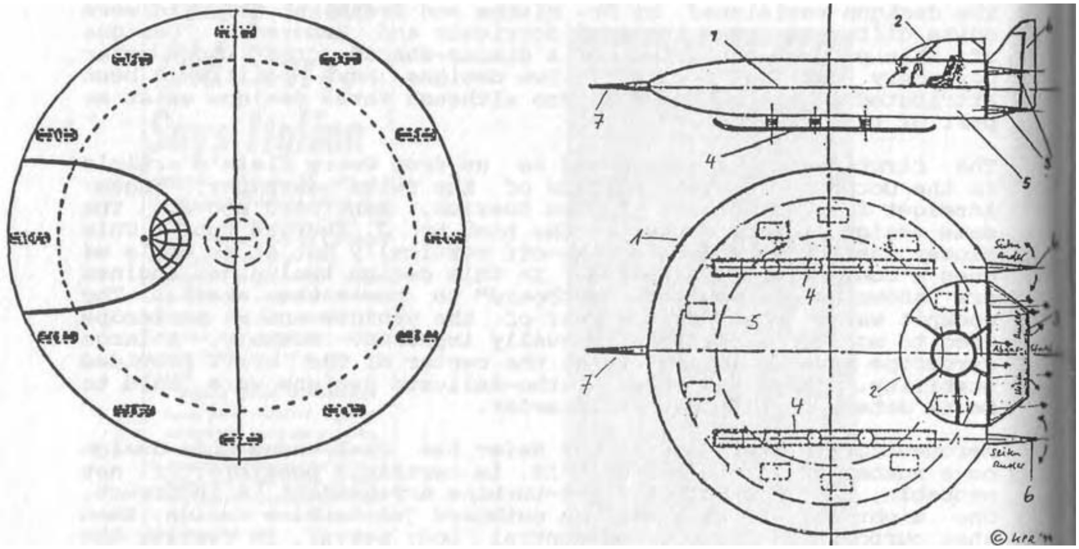
The first design is made known to us from Georg Klein's article in the October 16, 1954 edition of the Swiss newspaper, Tages-Anzeiger fuer Stadt und Kanton Zuerich, mentioned above. The same design is reproduced in the book by J. Andreas Epp. This saucer was not intended to take-off vertically but at an angle as does a conventional airplane. In this design twelve jet engines are shown to be mounted "outboard" to power the craft. The cockpit was mounted at the rear of the vehicle and a periscope used to monitor directions visually impaired. Notably, a large gyroscope mounted internally at the center of the craft provided stability. This and other Miethe-Belluzzo designs were said to be 42 meters or 138 feet in diameter.

Aeronautical writer Hans Justus Meier has challenged this design on a number of grounds (13). It is certainly possible, if not probable, that the outboard jet-turbine arrangement is incorrect, one might ask, if this was an outboard jet-turbine design, then what purpose did the bloated central body serve? In reality the twelve jets may simply have been jet nozzles of one engine. Certainly the large central body had a function, it must have housed the engine.

But how could the authenticity of this design come under question when Georg Klein is vouching for it in his article? The answer may be that Klein never saw this design himself and he simply is relying on the descriptions of those that did. If one reads the works of Klein carefully, he never claims to have seen this model in flight. As a matter of fact, he never claims to have actually seen this design at all. We will return to the flaws with Klein's description momentarily.

The second Miethe design seems to have originated with a 1975 German magazine article (14). This version shows a cockpit above and below the center of the craft. Four jet engines lying behind the cockpits are shown as the powerplants. No real detail is supplied in this article. This design is not ever discussed in the text which deals primarily with the Schriever-Habermohl Project. Some writers have speculated on this particular design, supplying detail (15). For now, however, no named source seems to be able to link this design with the Miethe-Belluzzo Project. Therefore, at least for the time being, we must put this design in suspense and focus on the first and next design in discussing

The Miethe-Belluzzo Disc--Design One


1
2
3
4
5
6
7
Steiu Ruder
© KPR '99

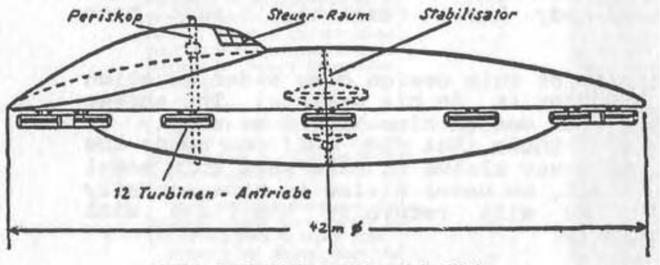
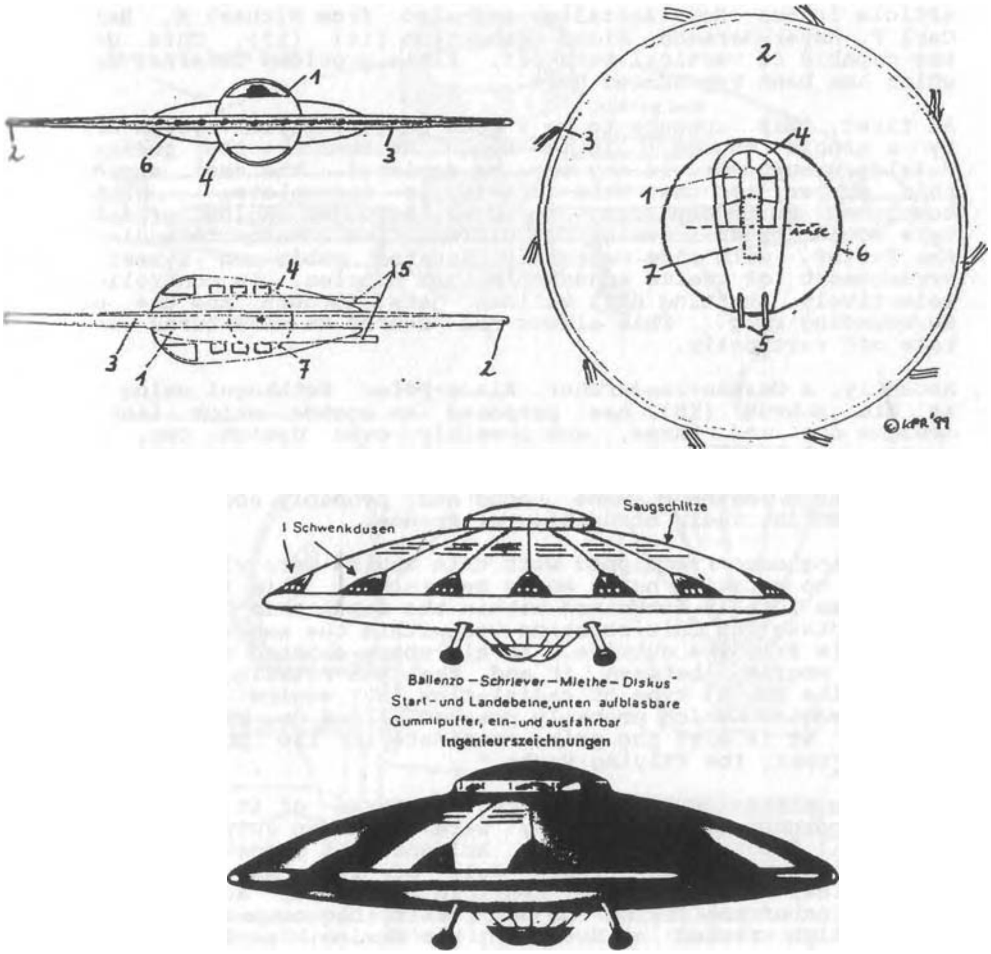

Periskop
Steuer-Raum
Stabilisator
12 Turbinen - Antriebe
42 m ø

Bild 2: Vertikalschnitt durch Flugscheibe Miethe
die schematische Zeichnung ist wesentlich überhöht

On the left is a reconstruction by Georg Klein, 10/16/54, from the Swiss newswaper Tages-Anzeiger. Note the small "Stabisator" and the outboard jet engines. On the right is Klaus-Peter Rothkugel's more probable reconstruction incorporating fins, skids, and the inner-lying Rene Leduc engine.

The Miethe-Belluzzo Disc—Designs Two And Three


1
2
3
4
5
6
7
15
Achse
©KPR'99
Saugschlitze
I Schwenkdusen
Ballenzo – Schriever – Miethe – Diskus
Start- und Landebeine, unten aufblasbare
Gummipuffer, ein- und ausfahrbar
Ingenieurszeichnungen

On the top is Miethe-Belluzzo design two. Note rotating disc (2) and stabilizing wheel (7) acting as a gyroscope. (Courtesy of Klaus-Peter Rothkugel) It is the author's opinion that this design was never built. On the bottom is Miethe-Belluzzo design three, capable of vertical take-off.

the aforementioned saucer project.

The third design attributed to the Miethe-Belluzzo Project comes to us from and article by Jan Holberg in an August 20, 1966 article in Das Neue Zeitalter and also from Michael X. Barton-Carl F. Mayer-Hermann Klaas connection (16) (17). This design was capable of vertical take-off. Klaas provides internal detail which has been reproduced here.

At first, this appears to be a push-pull propeller system driven by a single engine. It is not. Neither are the twelve jet nozzles unsupported in any way as depicted. The real answer to this mystery is that this drawing is incomplete. With the completed parts depicted, a radial turbojet engine of special type would appear. Design one differs from design three in that the latter, with its centrally located cabin and symmetrical arrangement of twelve adjustable jet nozzles, is controlled by selectively shutting off various jets through the use of a surrounding ring. This allows the saucer to make turns and to take off vertically.

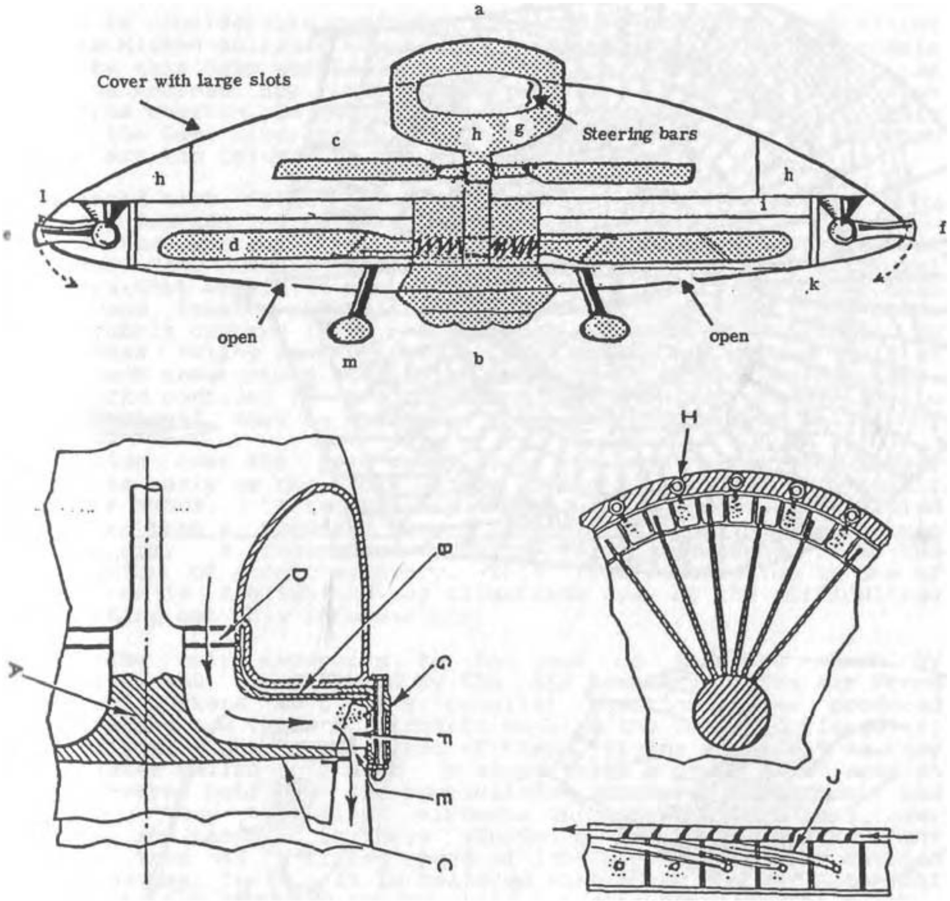
Recently, a German researcher, Klaus-Peter Kothkugel using Vesco as his source (18), has proposed an engine which links the designs one and three, and possibly even design two, while supplying the missing pieces needed to make the engine depicted air-worthy and resolves other problems. This engine was invented by a French engineer, Rene Leduc and probably acquired by the Germans during their occupation of France.

If a flying saucer equipped with this engine were viewed from the outside, no rotating parts would be visible. This is because the engine was totally contained within the metal skin of the saucer. It did rotate but this rotation was within the saucer itself and not viable from the outside. An air space existed all around the spinning engine, between it and the non-rotating outer skin. This engine was a type of radial-flow jet engine. It was this type of engine which probably powered all of Dr. Miethe's saucer designs. It is also the prime candidate for the post-war design of John Frost, the "Flying Manta."

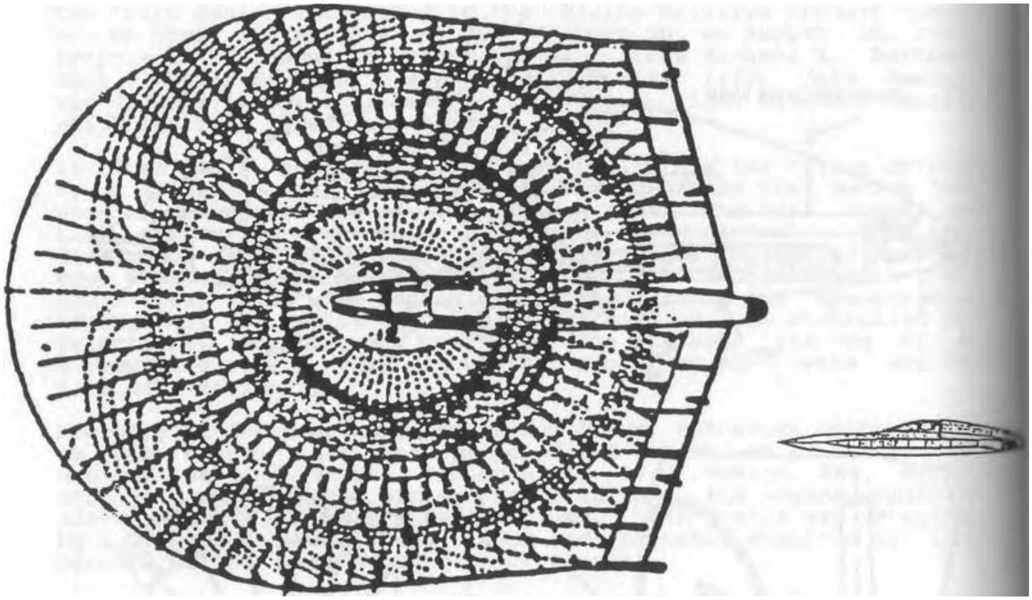
The Flying Manta actually did fly. Pictures of it during a test flight are unmistakable. They were taken on July 7, 1947 by William A. Rhodes over Phoenix, Arizona. It almost goes without saying that the time frame, July of 1947, as well as the geographical location, the American Southwest, as well as the description of the flying object itself, beg comparisons to the saucer which crashed at Rosewell, New Mexico, earlier that same month.

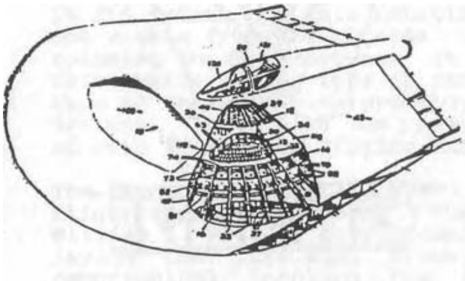
If one looks at what is known of Dr. Miethe's saucer design, the Leduc engine, and the Frost Manta, it must be acknowledged that a connection between these three not only explains apparent inconsistencies in the existing Miethe designs but also links them to the post-war American Southwest, the precise spot where

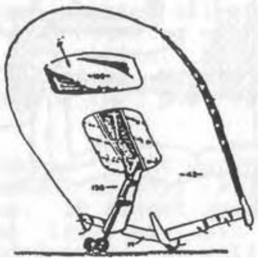
The Rene Leduc Engine


a
Cover with large slots
Steering bars
h
g
c
h
h
l
i
d
e
f
k
open
open
m
b
H
D
B
A
G
F
m
C
J

Top: Hermann Klaas' diagram of the workings of the Miethe-Belluzzo Disc. Note: intake screw (c) Carrying wing blade (d)affixed to a piston engine, jets nozzles (e) with no apparent engines. Close but not exactly right. Bottom: Leduc design. A-Rotor B-Front Bulk-head C-Rear Bulk-head D-Intake Vane E-Compressor Vane F-Combustion Chamber G-Bulk-head H-Fuel Injection Jets J-Fixed Flame Ring From I Velivoli Del Mistero I seareti technici dei dischi volanti by Renato Vesco







This is the mounting of the Leduc engine as illustrated by the later Avro diagram (Canada-USA). The outer hull is fixed. The inner rotating engine draws in the air from between it and the hull and exhausts through rear or sides as needed for steering. Compare this design to Miethe-Belluzzo designs, especially to the first design.

captured German World War Two technology was being tested and evaluated.

There is considerable confusion as to where the first test flight of the Miethe-Belluzzo saucer occurred. Epp tells us that models made by this team were flight tested since 1943. Georg Klein, as well as Andreas Epp, state that a test model of this craft took off from Stettin, in northern Germany, near Peenemuende, roughly where the Oder River meets the Baltic, and crashed in Spitsbergen which are the islands to the north of Norway.

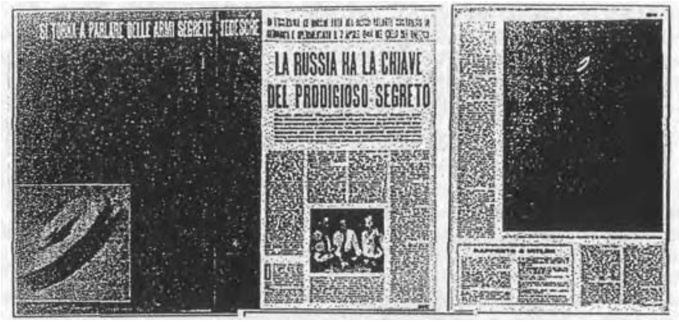
A manned test flight in December, 1944 has been mentioned by Norbert Juergen-Ratthofer and Ralf Ettl in one of the films on which they worked. The pilot named was Joachim Roehlicke or perhaps Hans-Joachim Roehlicke (19). Klaus-Peter Rothkugel reports that Roehlicke was under the direction of none other than Dr. Hans Kammler himself and was stationed at the Gotha Wagonfabrik company (20). The Gotha Wagonfabrik company is in the Jonas Valley in Thuringia. This valley was packed full of high-tech underground facilities which included nuclear research. Roehlicke confided to his daughter after the war, according to Mr. Rothkugel, that he "had seen the earth from above" (21).

Confusion over the test details of the Miethe-Belluzzo saucer start as early as the whole German flying disc controversy itself in the 1950s. In the English translation of his book, titled Brighter than a Thousand Suns A Personal History Of The Atomic Scientists. a footnote appeared which deviated from the discussion of atomic weaponry. This 1958 description is one of the first in English and may illustrate some of the difficulties in sorting out this information:

" *The only exception to the lack of interest shown by authority was constituted by the Air Ministry. The Air Force research workers were in a peculiar position. The produced interesting new types of aircraft such as the Delta (triangular) and "flying discs." The first of these "flying saucers," as they were later called—circular in shape, with a diameter of some 45 yards—were built by the specialists Schriever, Habermohl and Miethe. They were first airborne on February 14, 1945, over Prague and reached in three minutes a height of nearly eight miles. They had a flying speed of 1250 m.p.h. which was doubled in subsequent tests. It is believed that after the war Habermohl fell into the hands of the Russians. Miethe developed at a later date similar "flying saucers" at A. V. Roe and Company for the United States." (22).

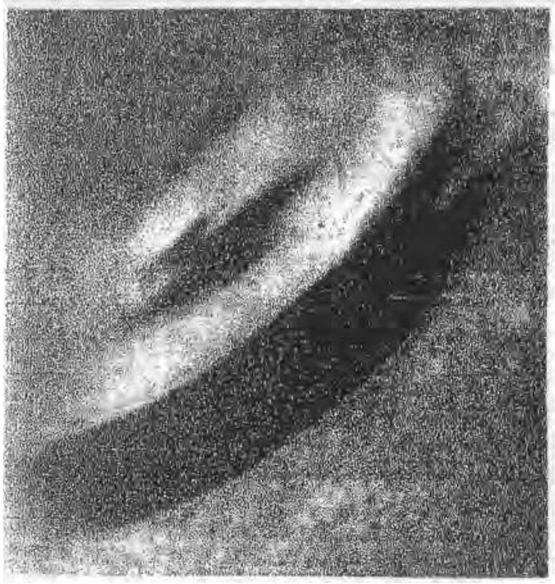
One big difference between the Miethe-Belluzzo design and the Schriever-Habermohl designs is that the former craft was alleged to have, or be designed to have, a longer flight range. This point is reinforced by the Spitzbergen flight mentioned above. Klein states that the Germans considered long range, remote controlled attack from Germany to New York using this craft.

Miethe-Belluzzo Saucer In Flight



SI TORNA A PARLARE DELLE ARMI SEGRETE TEDESCHE

LA RUSSIA HA LA CHIAVE DEL PRODIGIOSO SEGRETO



Top picture is of a September 6, 1952 article in the Italian newspaper "Tempo". This article deals with the work of Dr. Miethe and features a photograph of his saucer allegedly dated April 17, 1944, taken over the Baltic. Bottom is an enlargement of the photograph. It seems to be a Miethe-Belluzzo type 1 but could also be a type 3. Courtesy of Klaus-Peter Rothkugel.

As stated earlier, both projects were under the same authority. Experts and advisors included, according to Epp, among others, head-designer Kalkert of the Gotha Waggonfabrik, head-designer Guenther of Heinkel, engineer Wulf of Arado, engineer Otto Lange of the RLM, and engineer Alexander Lippish of Messerschmitt. Pilots were Holm, Irmler, Kaiser and Lange. The test pilot was Rudolf Schriever.

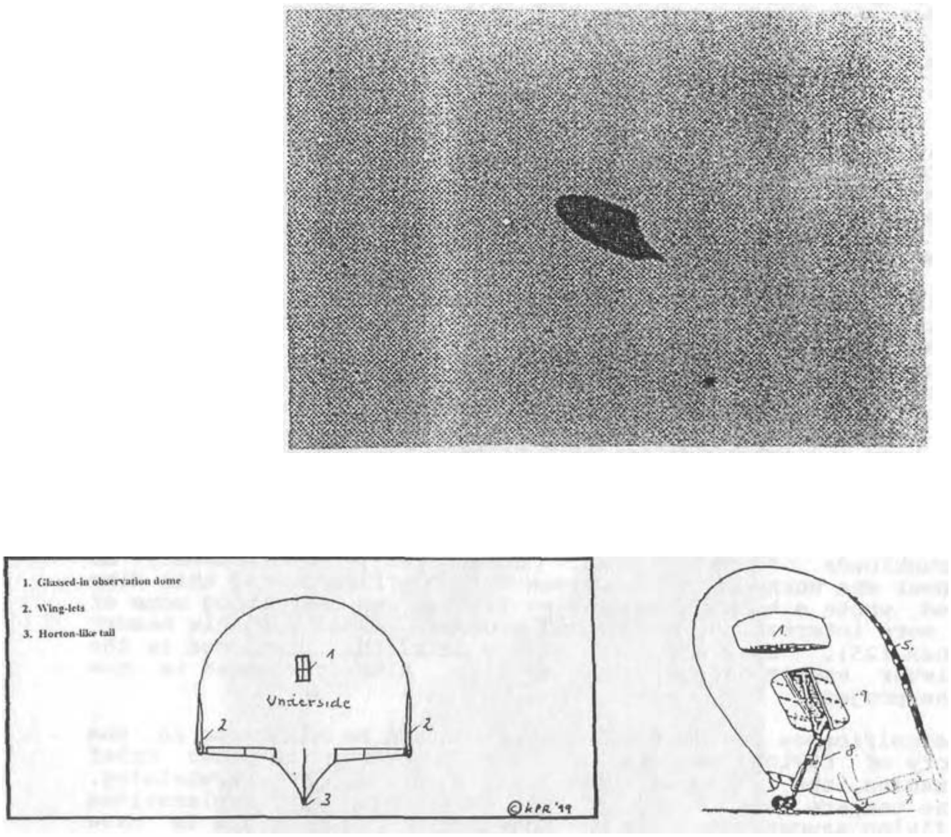
There does exist two alleged still pictures of the Miethe craft in flight. One is reproduced here. It may be the first design. A picture claiming to be of what is called here the third design can be found in W. Mattern's book, UFO's Unbekanntes Flugobiekt? Letzte Geheimwaffe Des Dritten Reiches? (23). Efforts have been made to acquire the picture for this book but the inquiry went unanswered by the book's publisher.

Politically, in 1944, Heinrich Himmler, head of the SS, replaced Albert Speer's appointee, Georg Klein, with Dr. Hans Kammler as overseer of this combined saucer project (24). This is a little confusing, however, since Kammler retained Klein as his employee, Perhaps a more practical way to look at this is that Kammler, Himmler's employee, replaced Speer while Klein did what he always did. The result was that the SS took direct and absolute control over these projects from this point until the end of the war.

Prior to this happening, news of these designs or application itself was made to the German Patent Office. All German wartime patents were carried off as booty by the Allies. This amounted to truckloads of information. Fortunately, Rudolf Lusar, an engineer who worked in the German Patent Office during this time period, wrote a book in the 1950s listing and describing some of the more interesting patents and processes based upon his memory of them (25). They are surprisingly detailed. Included is the Schriever saucer design with detail. Also discussed is the Miethe project.

The significance of these two teams can not be minimized in the history of flying saucers or UFOs. Already in this brief discussion, the evidence, taken as a whole, is overwhelming. Please compare this to any and all extraterrestrial explanations of flying saucers. Here we have Germans who claim to have invented the idea of the flying saucer. We have Germans who claim to have designed flying saucers. We have Germans who claim to have built flying saucers. We have Germans who claim to have flown flying saucers. We have Germans who claim to be witnesses to flying saucers known beforehand to be of German construction. We have German construction details. And finally, we have a man who took pictures of a known German flying saucer in flight. The facts speak for themselves. During the Second World War the Germans built devices we would all call today "flying saucers". No other UFO explanation can even approach this in terms of level of proof.

Miethe-Belluzzo Saucer In America?


1. Glassed-in observation dome
2. Wing-lets
3. Horton-like tail
1
Underside
2
2
3
©KPR '99
1.
5.
7.
8.

Top: a picture from the July 9, 1947 edition of the Arizona Republic taken by William A. Rhodes as it flew over his home in Phoenix. Lower Left: a drawing of the craft by Klaus-Peter Rothkugel. Lower Right: one view of the Avro Frost-Manta design, predating the Silver Bug Project. Was this a captured Miethe-Belluzzo-Leduc saucer?

Sources and References

1. Klein, Georg, 10/16/54, page 5, "Die "Fliegenden Teller"", Tages-Anzeiger fuer Stadt und Kanton Zuerich
2. Epp, J. Andreas, 1994, page 34
3. Barton, Michael X., 1968, page 58, The German Saucer Story- Futura Press, 5949 Gregory Avenue, Los Angeles, CA. 90038
4. Lusar, Rudolf, 1964, page 220, Die deutschen Waffen und Geheimwaffen des 2. Weltkrieges und ihre Weiterentwicklunq. J.F. Lehmanns Verlang, Munich
5. Epp, J. Andreas, 1994, pages 30-31
6. ibid
7. Epp, J. Andreas, 1994, pages 26-27
8. Epp, J. Andreas, 1994, page 30
9. Klein, Georg, 10/16/54, page 5
10. Zwicky, Viktor, 9/18/54, page 4, "Das Raetsel der Fliegenden Teller", Tages-Anzeiger fuer Stadt und Kanton Zuerich
11. Klein, Georg, 10/16/54, page 5
12. Epp, J. Andreas, 1994, pages 30 and 31
13. Meier, Hans Justus, 1995, "Die Miethe-Flugscheibe-eine reichlich nebuloese Erfindung", Flieger-Kalender 1995, E.S. Mettler & Sohn, text editing: Hans M. Namislo, Celsius-Str. 56, 53125 Bonn, Germany
14. Luftfahrt International, May-June, 1975, "Deutsche Flugkreisel Gab's die?"
15. J. Miranda and P. Mercado, 1998, Flugzeug Profile, page 25-27
16. Holberg, Jan, 8/20/54, "UFOs gibt es nichti Wohl aber: Flugscheiben am laufenden Band!", Das Neue Zeitalter
17. Barton, Michael X., 1968, pages 42, 63, 64
18. Vesco, Renato, 1974, from photos and diagrams begining on page 392, I Velivoli Del Mistero I segreti tecnici dei dischi volanti. U Mursia editore, Via Tadiuo 29, Milan, Italy
19. Video film, "UFOs Das Dritte Reich Schlaegt Zurueck?", 1988, Tempelhof Gesellschaft, Wien, Available through Dr. Michael Damboeck Verlag, Markt 86, A-3321, Ardaggr, Austria

20. Rothkugel, Klaus-Peter, 2000, page 4, "Baute Peenemuende ueberschallschnelle Flugscheiben?", four page information sheet concerning supersonic and high altitude saucer construction at Peenemuende, Bad Nauheim, Germany

21. ibid

22. Jungk, Robert, 1958, page 87, Brighter than a Thousand Suns A Personal History Of The Atomic Scientists. Harcourt. Brace and Company, New York, translated by James Cleugh from Heller als tausend Sonnen. 1956, Alfred Scherz Verlag, Bern

23. Mattern, W., date unknown, page 34, UFO's Unbekanntes Fluaobiekt? Letzte Geheimwaffe Des Dritten Reiches?, Samisdat Publishers LTD, 206 Carlton Street, Toronto, Canada M5A 2LI

24. Epp, J. Andreas, 1997. page 33

25. Lusar, Rudolf, 1960, (English version) German Secret Weapons of the Second World War. Neville Spearman Limited, 112 Whitfield St., London W.I, England

"Foo fighter" is a name given to a small, round flying object which followed Allied bombers over Germany during the latter phases of the air war. There are also some reports of foo fighters in the Pacific theater of the war. Sometimes they would appear singularly but more often in groups, sometimes flying in formation. By day they appeared to be small metallic globes. By night they glowed with various colors. These object attempted to approach Allied bombers closely which scared the bomber crews who assumed they were hostile and might explode. Upon taking evasive maneuvers they found the foo fighters would keep pace with them in some instances. Besides the name foo fighter this device is sometimes called "Feuerball", its German name or its English translation, fireball. More about names later.

For those readers who have not been exposed to foo fighters before, following is an American flight account found in Intercept UFO by Renato Vesco:

"At 0600 (on December 22) near Hagenau, at 10,000 feet altitude, two very bright lights climbed toward us from the ground. The leveled off and stayed on the tail of our plane. They were huge bright orange lights. They stayed there for two minutes. On my tail all the time. They were under perfect control (by operators of the ground). They turned away from us, and the fire seemed to go out".

Vesco goes on to say:

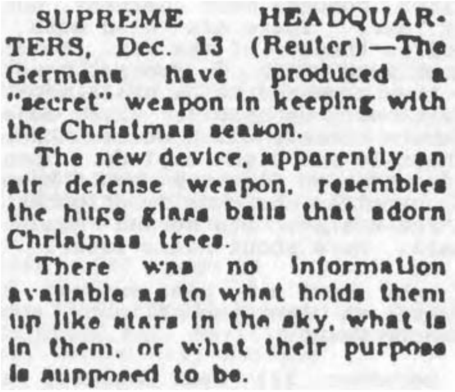
"The rest of the report was censored. Apparently it went on to mention the plan's radar and its sudden malfunctioning" (1).

Flying saucer books of the 1950s usually mentioned foo fighters and recounted the sightings of Allied servicemen. Later, due to the extraterrestrial hysteria, publications tended to omit descriptions of foo fighters, preferring to begin the tale of flying saucers with Kenneth Arnold in 1947.

In modern times, if they are mentioned at all by mainstream UFO magazines or books, an attempt is sometimes made to confuse the issue of the origin of foo fighters in one of three ways. First, they say or imply that both sides in World War Two thought foo fighters were a weapon belonging to the opposite side. They may cite as a source some German pilot obviously "out of the loop" who claims the Germans did not know their origin. Second, they attempt to advance the idea that foo fighters are still unknown and a mystery or possibly a naturally occurring phenomenon. Third, they advance an extraterrestrial origin.

It is difficult to imagine a vast bad faith plot, extending over years, which attempts to discredit or confuse the issue of foo fighters. Perhaps the authors of these UFO magazines and books

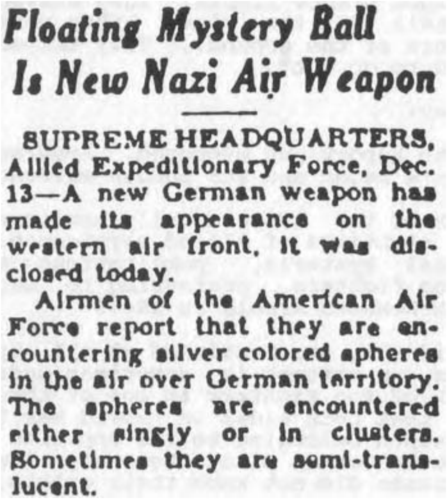
The First Reports Of German Foo Fighters



SUPREME HEADQUARTERS, Dec. 13 (Reuter)—The Germans have produced a "secret" weapon in keeping with the Christmas season.

The new device, apparently an air defense weapon, resembles the huge glass balls that adorn Christmas trees.

There was no information available as to what holds them up like stars in the sky, what is in them, or what their purpose is supposed to be.



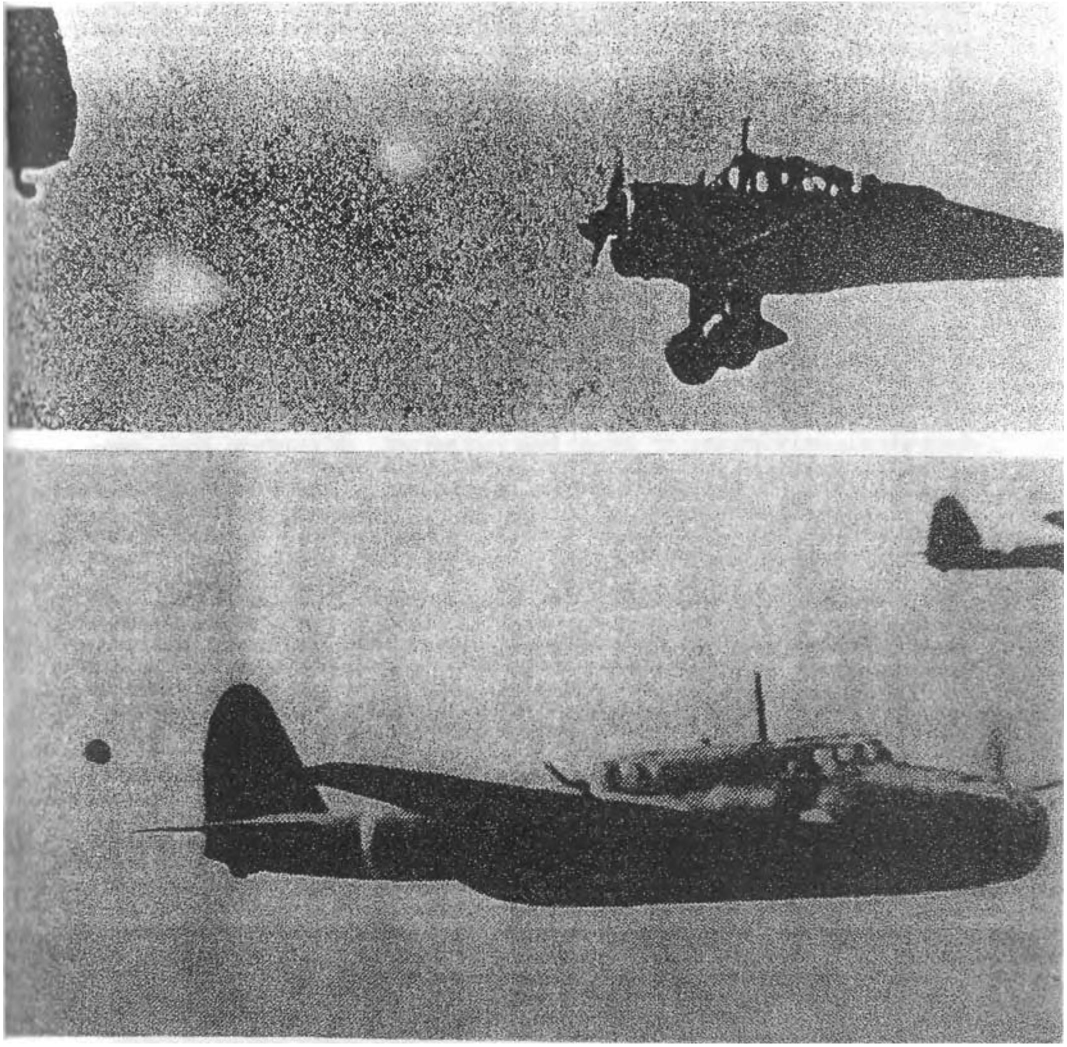
Floating Mystery Ball Is New Nazi Air Weapon

SUPREME HEADQUARTERS, Allied Expeditionary Force, Dec. 13—A new German weapon has made its appearance on the western air front, it was disclosed today.

Airmen of the American Air Force report that they are encountering silver colored spheres in the air over German territory. The spheres are encountered either singly or in clusters. Sometimes they are semi-translucent.

Top: A Reuters report from December 13, 1944
Bottom: The New York Times, December 14, 1944

Foo Fighters In Flight



Top: At night or in dim light foo fighters appeared luminescent. Bottom: In strong light foo fighters appeared as silvery balls. This picture was taken over the Pacific in 1943. There are many stories speaking of small, round flying balls sent to Japan by the Germans via submarine.

are truly without a clue and simply perpetuating old and bad information as a convenient explanation. In any event, it is now clear they utterly failed to do their homework on foo fighters before writing about them.

The U.S. military, too, has always denied knowledge of foo fighters. Numerous Freedom Of Information Act (FOIA) requests have been filed, for instance, by this writer as well as other researchers asking for information on foo fighters. A "no record" response always followed. All U.S. governmental agencies queried claimed that they had never heard of foo fighters. This happened in spite of the fact that all known alternate names for foo fighters were submitted as well as a detailed description of the device itself. This was the situation until the late 1990s.

Vesco is by far the best source concerning the foo fighter which he calls "Feuerball". He describes it as a radio controlled missile, built at an aeronautical establishment at Wiener Neustadt (Austria) with assistance of the Flugfunk Forschungsanstalt (Radio-Flight Research Installation) of Oberpfaffenhoffen. The project was under the control of an SS technical division. It was armored, circular in shape, resembling the shell of a tortoise. The device was powered by special flat, circular a turbojet engine. After being guided to the proximity of the target from the ground, an automatic infra-red tracking device took over control. The circular spinning turbojet exhaust created a visual effect of a bright, fiery ball in the nighttime sky. Within the craft itself a klystron tube pulsated at the frequency of Allied radar making it almost invisible to those remote eyes. A thin sheet of aluminum encircled the device immediately under the layer of protective armor but was electrically insulated from the armor. Once a bullet pierced the armor and the thin aluminum sheet, a circuit was formed which had the effect of triggering the Feuerball to climb out of danger at full speed (2).

Once within range, special chemical additives were added to the fuel mixture which caused the air in the vicinity of the device to become ionized. This meant that electricity could be conducted directly through the air itself (3). Any ignition-based engine coming into range of the ionized region would become useless, misfiring, stalling and eventually crashing.

Vesco goes on to say that with the advance of the Soviets into Austria the production facilities for the Feuerball were moved to a number of underground plants in the Black Forest run by the Zeppelin Works (4).

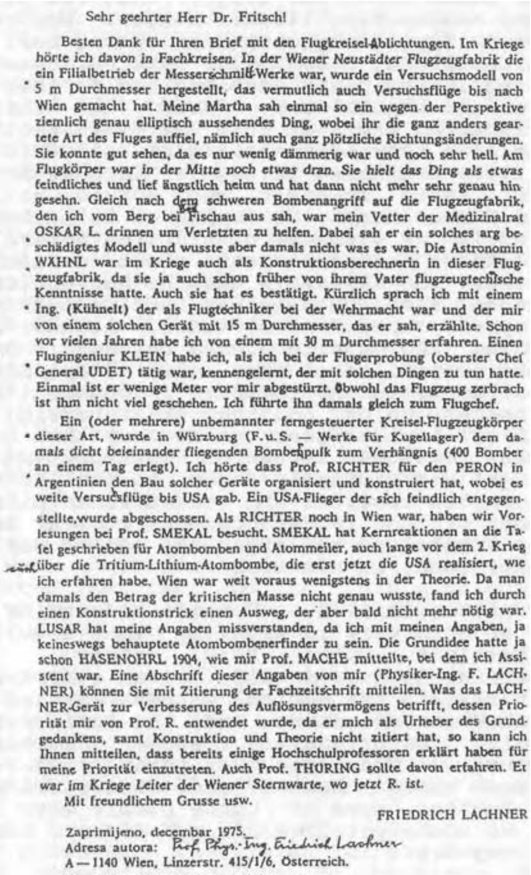
Recently an Austrian researcher, Kadmon, who specializes in uncovering the esoteric, sent to me a copy of a letter describing details of the foo fighter from the German perspective. This letter is reproduced here for those who read German language. It is a letter from physicist Friedrich Lachner to Professor, Dr. Alois Fritsch. The letter tells Dr. Fritsch that in an aircraft

plant which was a branch of Messerschmitt at Weiner-Neustadt, Austria, a test model of a flying craft was built with a diameter of five meters which presumably made a test flight to Vienna. "His Martha", his wife, saw the outline of an exactly elliptical flying object in the twilight which appeared to her to be operating by some other means of flight that was normally the case because of its sudden directional changes. Her reaction was
that it was an enemy flying object and it scared her. After the bomber attack on the plant, a doctor, "Oskar L." saw a model of this frightful thing in the plant also and had no idea of what it was. The astronomer Waehnl was, during the war, employed calculating construction costs at this aircraft facility where she had earlier in life learned something of aircraft technology from her father. She confirmed it also. Lachner briefly spoke with an engineer named Kuehnelt who worked as in flight technology for the German Army. He explained to Lachner that he saw such a device with a diameter of fifteen meters. Lachner says that he had known for some years about a machine with a thirty meter diameter. He also says that he had gotten to know a flight engineer named Klein when he was active near the flight testing of the supreme chief General Udet. Lachner claims that "Klein had something to do with these things". One or more unmanned and remote controlled of this sort of spinning-top-like flying objects are mentioned by Lachner in connection with the massive Allied bomber raids on the ball-bearing plant at Wuerzburg. Finally, Lachner goes on to say that a Professor Richter built these devices for Peron in Argentina. A long distance test-flight was actually flown to the United States. There the device was intercepted and an American pilot was shot down. The remainder of the letter concerns nuclear developments in Austria and the USA before and after the Second World War and misunderstandings by Lusar in his book.

This letter was written in 1975. Details concerning Klein and the larger flying objects were in print by that time. There are important confirmations within this letter. These are revelations concerning Lachner's wife as an eyewitness to the object in twilight flight, the medical witness who saw the object within the plant at Wiener-Neustadt, and the confirmation of the astronomer, Waehnl. Unfortunately, Kadmon advises that Dr. Waehnl is now deceased. The important point is that these are real people with real names. Most of whom were alive at the time of this letter. Further, some of these people were scientists with a reputation at stake yet they did not disavow the substance of this letter in any way.

In the closing months of the last millennium witnessed a breakthrough regarding foo fighters. The break came by accident and from the government of the United States. Remember, Freedom Of Information Act requests regarding foo fighters had been filed with many branches of the U.S. military and intelligence services as well as with their repository, the National Archives. Even though all known alternative names were included, as well as a detailed description of the device in question was provided, a

Austrian Atomic Scientist Professor Friedrich Lachner's Letter



Sehr geehrter Herr Dr. Fritsch!

Besten Dank für Ihren Brief mit den Flugkreisel-Ablichtungen. Im Kriege *hörte ich davon in Fachkreisen. In der Wiener Neustädter Flugzeugfabrik* die ein Filialbetrieb der Messerschmitt-Werke war, wurde ein Versuchsmodell von 5 m Durchmesser hergestellt, das vermutlich auch Versuchsflüge bis nach Wien gemacht hat. Meine Martha sah einmal so ein wegen der Perspektive ziemlich genau elliptisch aussehendes Ding, wobei ihr die ganz anders geartete Art des Fluges auffiel, nämlich auch ganz plötzliche Richtungsänderungen. Sie konnte gut sehen, da es nur wenig dämmerig war und noch sehr hell. Am *Flugkörper war in der Mitte noch etwas dran. Sie hielt das Ding als etwas* feindliches und lief ängstlich heim und hat dann nicht mehr sehr genau hingesehn. Gleich nach dem schweren Bombenangriff auf die Flugzeugfabrik, den ich vom Berg bei Fischau aus sah, war mein Vetter der Medizinalrat OSKAR L. drinnen um Verletzten zu helfen. Dabei sah er ein solches arg beschädigtes Modell und wusste aber damals nicht was es war. Die Astronomin WAHNL war im Kriege auch als Konstruktionsberechnerin in dieser Flugzeugfabrik, da sie ja auch schon früher von ihrem Vater flugzeugtechnische Kenntnisse hatte. Auch sie hat es bestätigt. Kürzlich sprach ich mit einem Ing. (Kühnelt) der als Flugtechniker bei der Wehrmacht war und der mir von einem solchen Gerät mit 15 m Durchmesser, das er sah, erzählte. Schon vor vielen Jahren habe ich von einem mit 30 m Durchmesser erfahren. Einen Flugingeniur KLEIN habe ich, als ich bei der Flugerprobung (oberster Chef General UDET) tätig war, kennengelernt, der mit solchen Dingen zu tun hatte. Einmal ist er wenige Meter vor mir abgestürzt. Obwohl das Flugzeug zerbrach ist ihm nicht viel geschehen. Ich führte ihn damals gleich zum Flugchef.

Ein (oder mehrere) unbemannter ferngesteuerter Kreisel-Flugzeugkörper dieser Art, wurde in Würzburg (F. u. S. — Werke für Kugellager) dem damals dicht beieinander fliegenden Bomberpulk zum Verhängnis (400 Bomber an einem Tag erlegt). Ich hörte dass Prof. RICHTER für den PERON in Argentinien den Bau solcher Geräte organisiert und konstruiert hat, wobei es weite Versuchsflüge bis USA gab. Ein USA-Flieger der sich feindlich entgegenstellte, wurde abgeschossen. Als RICHTER noch in Wien war, haben wir Vorlesungen bei Prof. SMEKAL besucht. SMEKAL hat Kernreaktionen an die Tafel geschrieben für Atombomben und Atommeiler, auch lange vor dem 2. Krieg über die Tritium-Lithium-Atombombe, die erst jetzt die USA realisiert, wie ich erfahren habe. Wien war weit voraus wenigstens in der Theorie. Da man damals den Betrag der kritischen Masse nicht genau wusste, fand ich durch einen Konstruktionstrick einen Ausweg, der aber bald nicht mehr nötig war. LUSAR hat meine Angaben missverstanden, da ich mit meinen Angaben, ja keineswegs behauptete Atombombenerfinder zu sein. Die Grundidee hatte ja schon HASENOHRL 1904, wie mir Prof. MACHE mitteilte, bei dem ich Assistent war. Eine Abschrift dieser Angaben von mir (Physiker-Ing. F. LACHNER) können Sie mit Zitierung der Fachzeitschrift mitteilen. Was das LACHNER-Gerät zur Verbesserung des Auflösungsvermögens betrifft, dessen Priorität mir von Prof. R. entwendet wurde, da er mich als Urheber des Grundgedankens, samt Konstruktion und Theorie nicht zitiert hat, so kann ich Ihnen mitteilen, dass bereits einige Hochschulprofessoren erklärt haben für meine Priorität einzutreten. Auch Prof. THURING sollte davon erfahren. Er war im Kriege Leiter der Wiener Sternwarte, wo jetzt R. ist.

Mit freundlichem Grusse usw.

FRIEDRICH LACHNER

Zaprimijeno, decembar 1975.
Adresa autora: Prof. Phys.-Ing. Friedrich Lachner
A — 1140 Wien, Linzerstr. 415/1/6, Österreich.

Professor Lachner describes a sighting of a foo fighter by none other than his wife, Martha. Lachner mentions that he heard that Professor Richter built these devices for Juan Peron in Argentina. This, incidently, is the same Professor Richter involved in an ill-fated attempt to produce fusion generators for Peron.

"no record" response was uniformly generated by all facets of government.

A German researcher, Friedrich Georg, recognized a valuable entry in a microfilm roll, titled a 1944 U.S. Strategic Air Forces In Europe summary titled An Evaluation Of German Capabilities In 1945, which, somehow, had eluded the censors (5). In that summary report German devices called by American Intelligence "Phoo Bombs" are discussed. Sources for this summary were reports of pilots and testimony of prisoners of war. Phoo bombs were described as "radio-controlled, jet-propelled, still-nosed, short-range, high performance ramming weapons for use against bombing formations". Speed was estimated at 525 miles per hour.

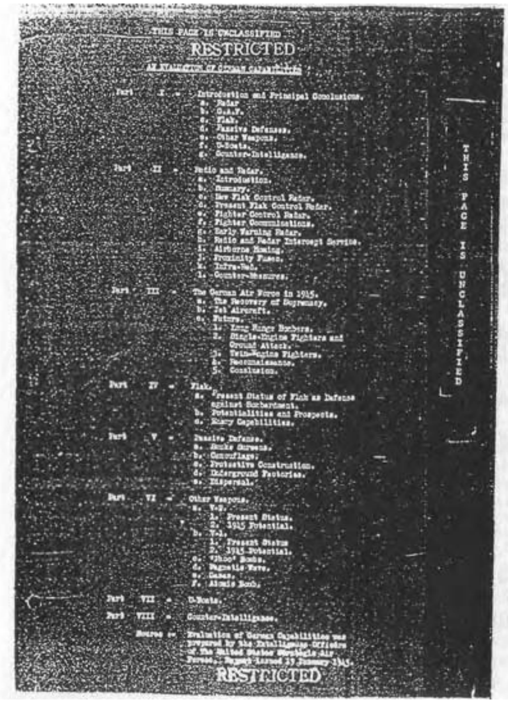
Further demands were made using FOIA as to the raw data used to compile the summary evaluation. Of course, denials followed, but finally, after an Appeal, the government indicated that more information did exist concerning Phoo Bombs. Most of this was a repeat or re-statement of the summary document. One document was hand-written and may have served as the basic text of the report.

It seems the U.S. Air Force was never aware of a threat to aircraft engines coming from over ionization of the air around these devices. Likewise, the claim by Vesco that they possessed klyston tubes which pulsed at the same freguency of Allied radar and so jammed radar on board was not recognized. Vesco cites the aircraft radio research institute at Oberpfaffenhofen (F.F.O.) as having invented such devices (6).

The Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report on this facility. Report 156, states that work there involved several types of klystron tubes and that one of this facilities principal functions was inventing technology to jam Allied radar, unfortunately all the secret material held at this facility was burned in the face of the advancing Allies. Individual scientists later produces some copies of documents which represent what the Allied intelligence strike teams took away. Exactly how complete this sample was we will never know (7).

Other very exotic research did go on at the F.F.O. installation which might be mentioned. They not only did work on klystron tubes but on magnetrons also. They did work on generation of millimeter range radio wave through the use of crystal vibrations. They also experimented with silicon and germanium "crystals" (8). These two substances figure prominently in the making of what we call today semiconductors which form the basis of the transistor. Invention of the transistor is credited to William Shockley, for which he won the Nobel Prize, about two years after the Second World War.

This bit of research explodes an argument made by the late Col. Philip j. Corso in his book The Day After Roswell that transistors were, at least in part, based upon alien technology (9). The only guestions which remain are: exactly how far the



THIS PAGE IS UNCLASSIFIED

RESTRICTED

AN EVALUATION OF GERMAN CAPABILITIES

Part I - Introduction and Principal Conclusions.
  a. Radar
  b. G.A.F.
  c. Flak.
  d. Passive Defenses.
  e. Other Weapons.
  f. U-Boats.
  g. Counter-Intelligence.

Part II - Radio and Radar.
  a. Introduction.
  b. Summary.
  c. New Flak Control Radar.
  d. Present Flak Control Radar.
  e. Fighter Control Radar.
  f. Fighter Communications.
  g. Early Warning Radar.
  h. Radio and Radar Intercept Service.
  i. Airborne Homing.
  j. Proximity Fuses.
  k. Infra-Red.
  l. Counter-Measures.

Part III - The German Air Force in 1945.
  a. The Recovery of Supremacy.
  b. Jet Aircraft.
  c. Future.
    1. Long Range Bombers.
    2. Single-Engine Fighters and Ground Attack.
    3. Twin-Engine Fighters.
    4. Reconnaissance.
    5. Conclusion.

Part IV - Flak.
  a. Present Status of Flak as Defense against Bombardment.
  b. Potentialities and Prospects.
  c. Heavy Capabilities.

Part V - Passive Defense.
  a. Smoke Screens.
  b. Camouflage.
  c. Protective Construction.
  d. Underground Factories.
  e. Dispersal.

Part VI - Other Weapons.
  a. V-2.
    1. Present Status.
    2. 1945 Potential.
  b. V-1.
    1. Present Status
    2. 1945 Potential.
  c. "Phoo" Bombs.
  d. Magnetic Wave.
  e. Gases.
  f. Atomic Bomb.

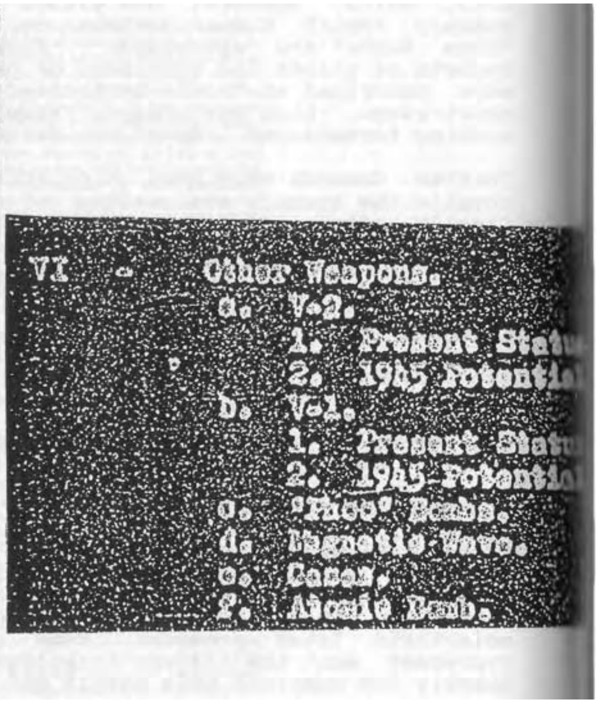
Part VII - U-Boats.

Part VIII - Counter-Intelligence.

Source -- Evaluation of German Capabilities was prepared by the Intelligence Officers of the United States Strategic Air Forces. Report issued 13 January 1945.

RESTRICTED

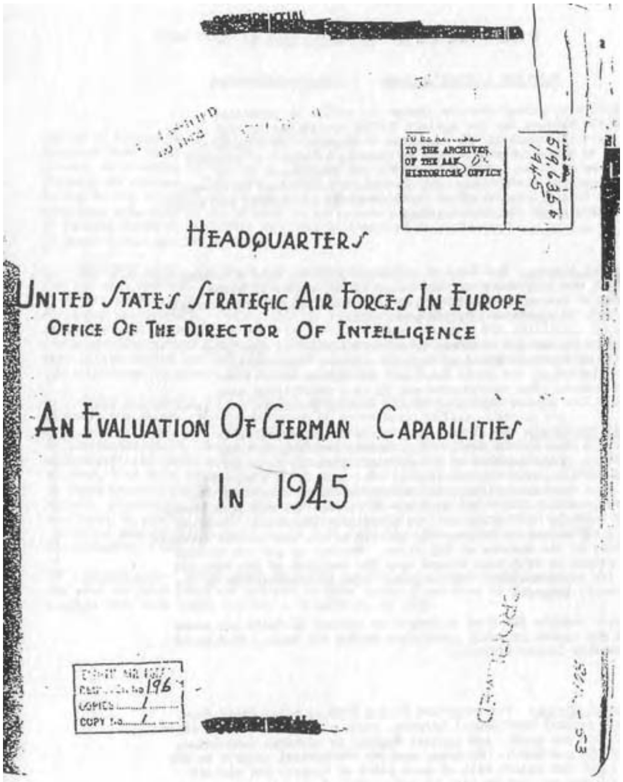
THIS PAGE IS UNCLASSIFIED



VI - Other Weapons.
  a. V-2.
    1. Present Sta
    2. 1945 Potenti
  b. V-1.
    1. Present Statu
    2. 1945 Potenti
  c. "Phoo" Bombs.
  d. Magnetic Wave.
  e. Gases.
  f. Atomic Bomb.

U.S. government's own documents prove they knew of the German origin of foo fighters. This table of contents of a "Intelligence Digest" document, with a February, 1945 date, addresses German military capacities. It lists "Phoo Bombs" as a weapon in the German arsenal (see VI- Other Weapons) Taken from microfilm negative image.

A UFO Rosetta Stone



~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

TO BE RETURNED
TO THE ARCHIVES
OF THE AAF
HISTORICAL OFFICE

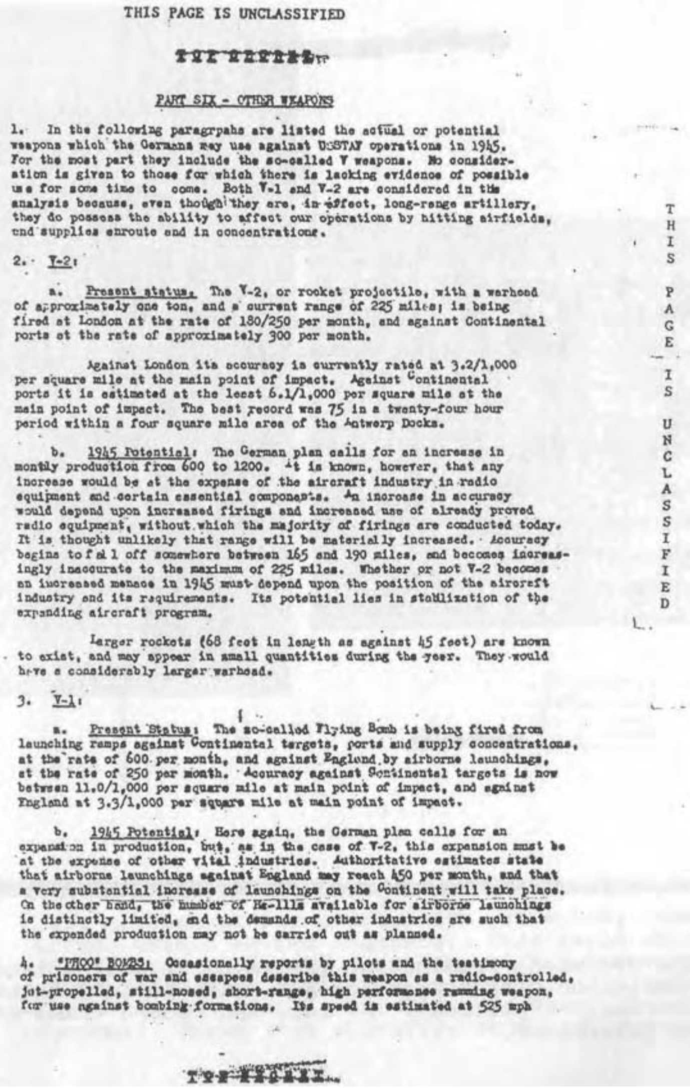
519.635
1945

HEADQUARTERS
UNITED STATES STRATEGIC AIR FORCES IN EUROPE
OFFICE OF THE DIRECTOR OF INTELLIGENCE

AN EVALUATION OF GERMAN CAPABILITIES
IN 1945

[illegible] AIR FORCE
[illegible] No. 196
COPIES 1
COPY No. 1

This document, fascinating in its own right, serves as a translation. "Foo fighters are "Phoo Bombs" in the government's parlance. No more "no record" name-games from the government.



THIS PAGE IS UNCLASSIFIED

~~TOP SECRET~~

PART SIX - OTHER WEAPONS

1. In the following paragrpahs are listed the actual or potential weapons which the Germans may use against USSTAF operations in 1945. For the most part they include the so-called V weapons. No consideration is given to those for which there is lacking evidence of possible use for some time to come. Both V-1 and V-2 are considered in this analysis because, even though they are, in effect, long-range artillery, they do possess the ability to affect our operations by hitting airfields, and supplies enroute and in concentrations.

2. V-2:

a. Present status. The V-2, or rocket projectile, with a warhead of approximately one ton, and a current range of 225 miles; is being fired at London at the rate of 180/250 per month, and against Continental ports at the rate of approximately 300 per month.

Against London its accuracy is currently rated at 3.2/1,000 per square mile at the main point of impact. Against Continental ports it is estimated at the least 6.1/1,000 per square mile at the main point of impact. The best record was 75 in a twenty-four hour period within a four square mile area of the Antwerp Docks.

b. 1945 Potential: The German plan calls for an increase in montly production from 600 to 1200. It is known, however, that any increase would be at the expense of the aircraft industry in radio equipment and certain essential components. An increase in accuracy would depend upon increased firings and increased use of already proved radio equipment, without which the majority of firings are conducted today. It is thought unlikely that range will be materially increased. Accuracy begins to fall off somewhere between 165 and 190 miles, and becomes increasingly inaccurate to the maximum of 225 miles. Whether or not V-2 becomes an increased menace in 1945 must depend upon the position of the aircraft industry and its requirements. Its potential lies in stabilization of the expanding aircraft program.

Larger rockets (68 feet in length as against 45 feet) are known to exist, and may appear in small quantities during the year. They would have a considerably larger warhead.

3. V-1:

a. Present Status: The so-called Flying Bomb is being fired from launching ramps against Continental targets, ports and supply concentrations, at the rate of 600 per month, and against England by airborne launchings, at the rate of 250 per month. Accuracy against Continental targets is now between 11.0/1,000 per square mile at main point of impact, and against England at 3.3/1,000 per square mile at main point of impact.

b. 1945 Potential: Here again, the German plan calls for an expansion in production, but, as in the case of V-2, this expansion must be at the expense of other vital industries. Authoritative estimates state that airborne launchings against England may reach 450 per month, and that a very substantial increase of launchings on the Continent will take place. On the other hand, the number of He-111s available for airborne launchings is distinctly limited, and the demands of other industries are such that the expended production may not be carried out as planned.

4. "FOO" BOMBS: Occasionally reports by pilots and the testimony of prisoners of war and escapees describe this weapon as a radio-controlled, jet-propelled, still-nosed, short-range, high performance ramming weapon, for use against bombing formations. Its speed is estimated at 525 mph

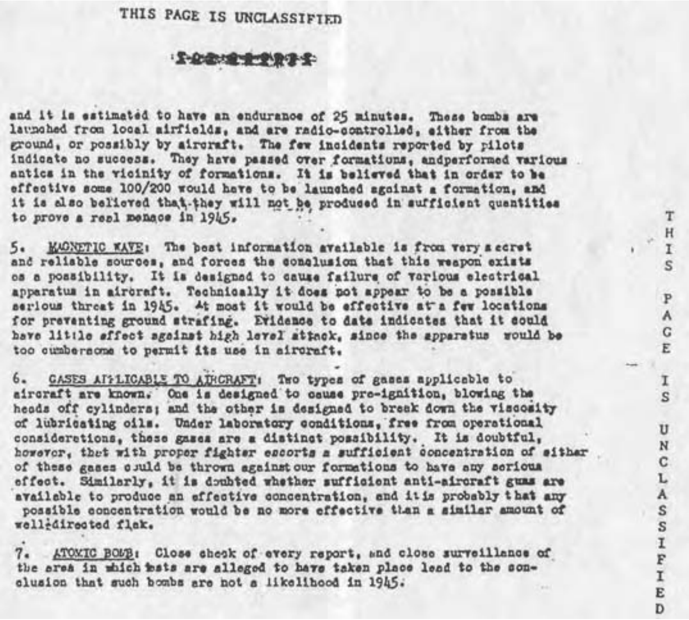
~~TOP SECRET~~

T
H
I
S

P
A
G
E

I
S

U
N
C
L
A
S
S
I
F
I
E
D



THIS PAGE IS UNCLASSIFIED

~~[illegible]~~

and it is estimated to have an endurance of 25 minutes. These bombs are launched from local airfields, and are radio-controlled, either from the ground, or possibly by aircraft. The few incidents reported by pilots indicate no success. They have passed over formations, andperformed various antics in the vicinity of formations. It is believed that in order to be effective some 100/200 would have to be launched against a formation, and it is also believed that they will not be produced in sufficient quantities to prove a real menace in 1945.

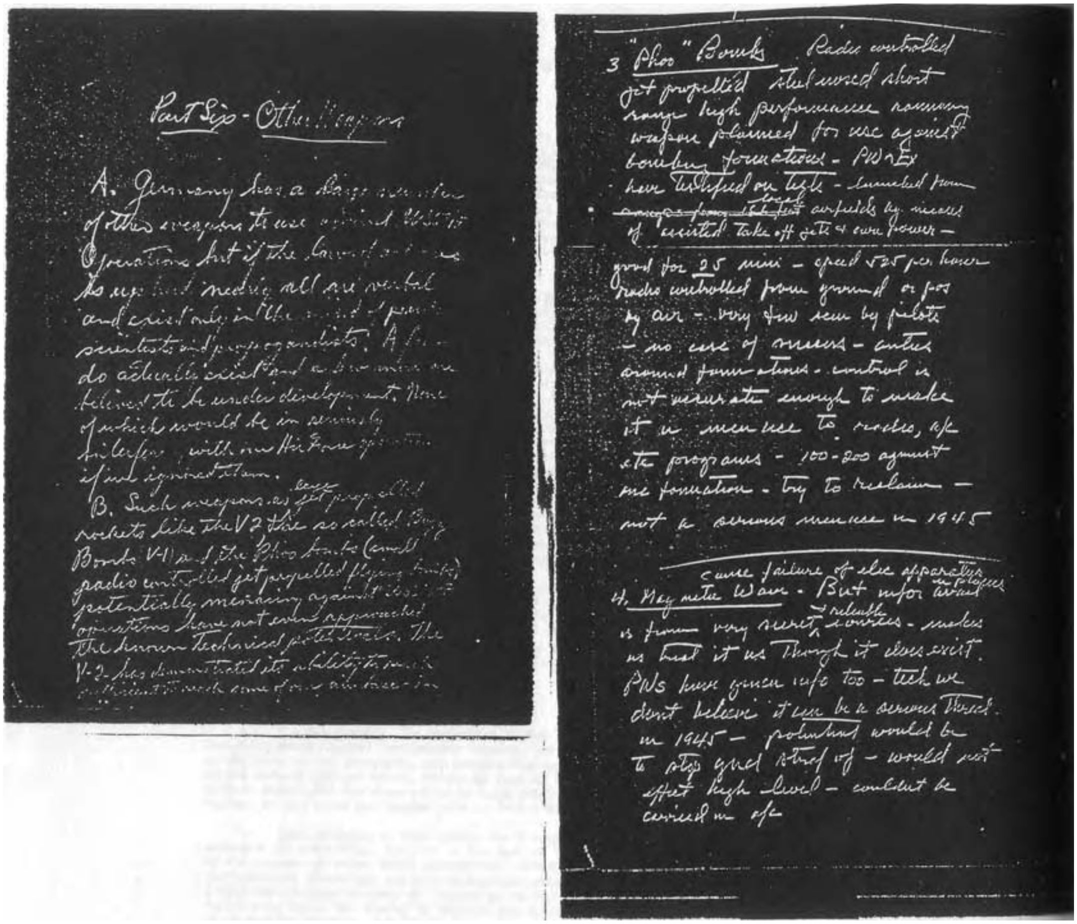
5. MAGNETIC WAVE: The best information available is from very secret and reliable sources, and forces the conclusion that this weapon exists as a possibility. It is designed to cause failure of various electrical apparatus in aircraft. Technically it does not appear to be a possible serious threat in 1945. At most it would be effective at a few locations for preventing ground strafing. Evidence to date indicates that it could have little effect against high level attack, since the apparatus would be too cumbersome to permit its use in aircraft.

6. GASES APPLICABLE TO AIRCRAFT: Two types of gases applicable to aircraft are known. One is designed to cause pre-ignition, blowing the heads off cylinders; and the other is designed to break down the viscosity of lubricating oils. Under laboratory conditions, free from operational considerations, these gases are a distinct possibility. It is doubtful, however, that with proper fighter escorts a sufficient concentration of either of these gases could be thrown against our formations to have any serious effect. Similarly, it is doubted whether sufficient anti-aircraft guns are available to produce an effective concentration, and it is probably that any possible concentration would be no more effective than a similar amount of well-directed flak.

7. ATOMIC BOMB: Close check of every report, and close surveillance of the area in which tests are alleged to have taken place lead to the conclusion that such bombs are not a likelihood in 1945.

THIS PAGE IS UNCLASSIFIED

Phoo Bombs—An Intelligence Officer's Hand Written Notes



Part Six - Other Weapons

A. Germany has a large number of other weapons to use against USSTAF Operations but if the [illegible] to up [illegible] nearly all are verbal and exist only in the minds of [illegible] scientists and propagandists. A few do actually exist and a few more are believed to be under development. None of which would be in seriously interfere with our Air Force operations if we ignored them.

B. Such weapons as large jet propelled rockets like the V2 the so called Buzz Bombs V-1 and the Phoo bombs (small radio controlled jet propelled flying bombs) potentially menacing against USSTAF operations have not even approached the known technical potentials. The V-2 has demonstrated its ability to reach [illegible] some of our air bases in

3 "Phoo" Bombs Radio controlled jet propelled steel armored short range high performance ramming weapon planned for use against bombing formations - PW + Ex have testified on tests - launched from ~~[illegible]~~ local airfields by means of 'assisted' take off jets & own power - good for 25 min - speed 525 per hour - radio controlled from ground or pos by air - very few seen by pilots - no case of rammers - circles around formations - control is not accurate enough to make it a menace to radio, a/c etc programs - 100-200 against one formation - try to reclaim - not a serious menace in 1945

4. Magnetic Wave - cause failure of elec apparatus in planes - But info avail is from very secret & reliable sources - makes us treat it as though it does exist. PWs have given info too - tech we dont believe it can be a serious threat in 1945 - potential would be to stop good strafing - would not effect high level - couldnt be carried in a/c

Obtained in a freedom Of Information Act asking for more information after learning the government's code word for foo fighters ("Phoo Bombs").

Germans progressed in their work on semiconductors and should the scientists at the F.F.O. have been given credit for this discovery, the transistor, instead of Shockley? This example also illustrates exactly how far the military will go, or at least individuals in the military, to perpetuate the notion of high-technology derived from aliens. It also illustrates the willingness of large establishment publishing firms to assist in the propagation of these ideas.

Returning to the subject of foo fighters and the governments suppression of this information, it seems the government feels it has the right to deny FOIA reguests, no matter how detailed the description may be, unless the requestor uses exactly the same name as the government uses. Was the name "foo fighters" as opposed to "Phoo Bombs" just not close enough to trigger a response under the law or was this just another example of the government's bad faith regarding FOIA? Probably it was the latter. Friedrich Georg's research work which produced the first document naming Phoo Bombs acted like a Rosetta Stone in that it was a translation of their terms into ours. This applied not only for foo fighters but for the other topics mentioned below which the government had previously denied.

With these documents as proof of American knowledge of foo fighters, the understanding with regard to foo fighters is quite different than the confusion generated heretofore. The fact is that Vesco has been vindicated. The fact is that foo fighters were German-built flying weapons of war. The fact is that they were the very first modern UFOs. And finally, the fact is the government of the United States has known this all along and kept these facts from us for almost sixty years.

It should be noted that the documents which are in my possession are all documents written during the Second World War. No mention is made of Phoo Bombs in any post-war documents I have seen. Examples or at least plans of these flying devices must have been recovered. It seems there are still secrets hidden away in government files. To keep these secrets the government is willing to violate its own Freedom Of Information Act laws.

It should be noted that the document uncovered by Mr. Georg describes several weapons systems previously not disclosed by the U.S. government. This includes German rockets larger than the V-2. The government document states:

> "68 feet in length as against 45 feet"

The forty-five foot figure signifies the V-2, while the sixty-eight foot rocket is completely unknown.

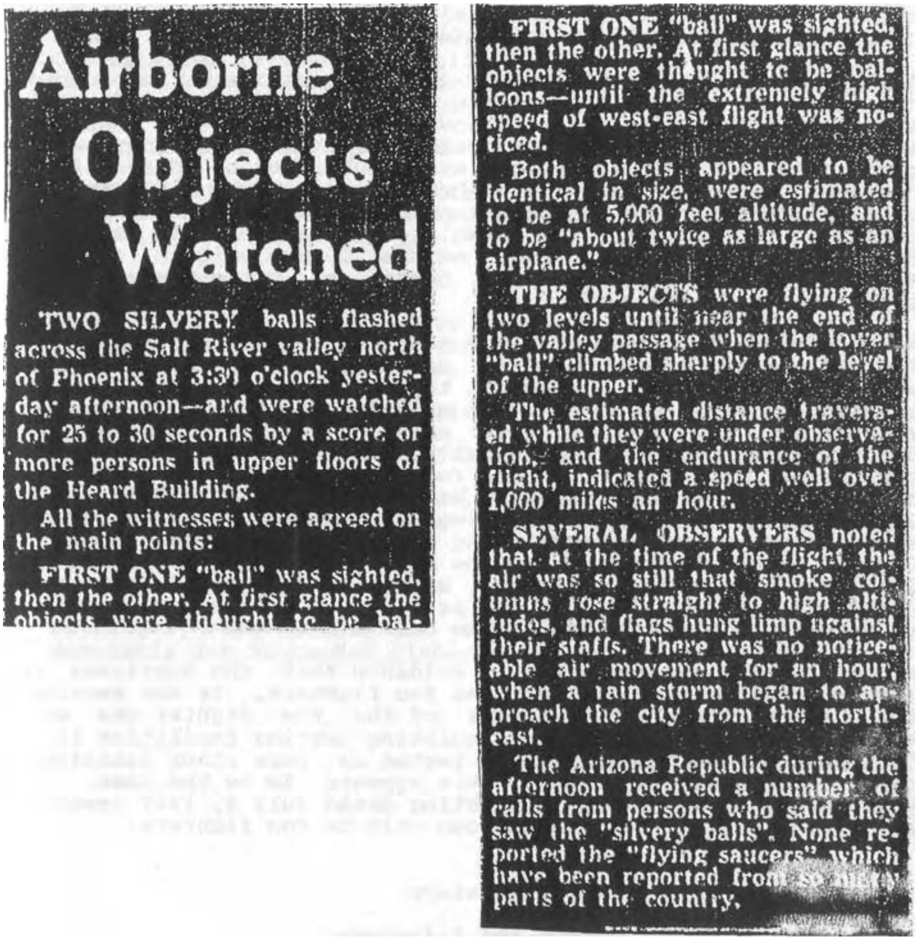
In this same document is a description of a gas-weapon first described by Vesco and designed to down enemy aircraft (10). Actually, there are two such gas weapons. The first gas is designed to cause engine destruction through pre-ignition as described by Vesco. The second gas is designed to cause engine seizure through the breakdown of the viscosity of the engine's lubricating oil. This is another vindication of Vesco. Therefore, when Vesco states that this very weapon was successfully used against Allied aircraft in a second-generation saucer, the Kugelblitz, perhaps he should be taken seriously (11).

Finally, this document describes something the Americans call the "Magnetic Wave" but which the Germans always described as "Motorstoppmittel", meaning literally, "means to stop motors". Motorstoppmittel and other German death rays were also the subject of repeated FOIA requests which were all denied. It was only with the code-word "Magnetic Wave" that the dam of information was finally broken concerning this device and other German ray-weapons. Not only did the Germans use ionization of the atmosphere to halt ignition based engines but they also experimented with x-ray weapons and an even more exotic method, possibly involving use of the laser (12).

Vesco places construction of the foo fighter at the Austrian site of Wiener-Neustadt (13). Indeed, the testimony supplied by Kadmon does indicate an Austrian home for the foo fighter. The most likely site for foo fighter development was the Rax Works. The Rax Works were an outgrowth of the combinations and growth of several firms, the Wiener-Neustaedter Flugzeugwerke GmbH, the Flugzeugbau der Hitenberger Patronenfabrik, the Flughafenbetriebsgesellschaft Wiener-Neustadt
and the Wiener Neustaedter Lokomotiv-Fabrik which was acquired by Henschel after the unification of Austria and Germany (14).

All the sources cited place foo fighter production in Austria. It is often repeated that this was a purely SS project, built at Wiener-Neustadt, with the help of the F.F.O. It is possible that these craft had an independent origin, outside the scope and sphere of Peenemuende. At about this same time, early 1943, Professor Alexander Lippisch broke away from Messerschmitt to head the Vienna based Luftfahrtforschungsanstalt-Wien (LFW). This was a first-class facility and Professor Lippisch is a figure central to the understanding of German flying discs. Vesco links the foo fighter, his "Feuerball" with a further-developed manned saucer, the "Kugelblitz". It is possible that both these craft had an independent origin, that is outside the purview of officials at Peenemuende under the direction of Dr. Lippisch at the LFW. In this case their link to Peenemuende would have become stronger as the war progressed and on a higher order, that of the SS through Dr. Hans Kammler and the Kammler Group based near Prag. It is also possible that the research and controlling authority of the German disc program moved from Peenemuende to Wiener-Neustadt as researcher Klaus-Peter Rothkugel suggests.

Questions arise with the acknowledgement of "Phoo Bombs" by the government. The first is what is the agenda of those seeking to



Airborne Objects Watched

TWO SILVERY balls flashed across the Salt River valley north of Phoenix at 3:30 o'clock yesterday afternoon—and were watched for 25 to 30 seconds by a score or more persons in upper floors of the Heard Building.

All the witnesses were agreed on the main points:

FIRST ONE "ball" was sighted, then the other. At first glance the objects were thought to be bal-

FIRST ONE "ball" was sighted, then the other. At first glance the objects were thought to be balloons—until the extremely high speed of west-east flight was noticed.

Both objects appeared to be identical in size, were estimated to be at 5,000 feet altitude, and to be "about twice as large as an airplane."

THE OBJECTS were flying on two levels until near the end of the valley passage when the lower "ball" climbed sharply to the level of the upper.

The estimated distance traversed while they were under observation, and the endurance of the flight, indicated a speed well over 1,000 miles an hour.

SEVERAL OBSERVERS noted that at the time of the flight the air was so still that smoke columns rose straight to high altitudes, and flags hung limp against their staffs. There was no noticeable air movement for an hour, when a rain storm began to approach the city from the northeast.

The Arizona Republic during the afternoon received a number of calls from persons who said they saw the "silvery balls". None reported the "flying saucers" which have been reported from so many parts of the country.

From "The Arizona Republic", July 8, 1947 deny this fact both in and out of government? Are these just extraterrestrial "true believers" gone amuck? There is no doubt that the government has known the truth about foo fighters and German saucers in general for almost sixty years, yet they have never been willing to publicly acknowledge these facts. Why is this? What issues of national security could possibly be compromised with such a disclosure over a half-century later?

Is this denial of foo fighters just of government inspiration? The sad truth is that the private "information" or disinformation sector is also guilty in of a cover-up. Why do they contribute to the denial of the German origin of this technology? What major New York publisher has ever published on German flying discs as opposed to the libraries of books pushing the extraterrestrial UFO hypothesis—a hypothesis totally lacking in proof? Let me pose the specific question: would Simon and Schuster ever publish a book on the German origins of flying saucers as they did for Col. Corso and his extraterrestrial hypothesis? If not why?

Another question arises from the confirmation of foo fighters by the government. This question concerns the veracity of Renato Vesco who originally placed the topic before us in his Italian edition as early as 1968. The question is this: If Vesco is right about foo fighters, what about the other claims he made about German saucers? Specifically, these are claims made about the further development of the foo fighter technology resulting in a manned saucer project he called "Kugelblitz" (ball-lightning). As well as claiming the Kugelblitz actually flew, Vesco gave us some tantalizing details of the development of German saucer technology by the Anglo-Americans after the war. In view of Vesco's track record, we can not simply dismiss these claims as has been done in the past. Vesco's assertions should be borne in mind as further facts become evident.

Finally, there is some small evidence that the Americans did acquire working examples of these foo fighters. If the Americans had captured complete examples of the foo fighter one would expect they would be taken to existing testing facilities in the Southwestern United States and tested as were other examples of captured German technology. This appears to be the case. The Arizona Republic reports a sighting dated July 8, 1947 involving two flying silvery balls which can only be foo fighters.

Foo Fighters

Sources and References

1. Vesco, Renato, 1976, page 82, Intercept UFO. Pinnacle Books, Inc., 275 Madison Ave, New York, NY. 10016, recently reissued as Man-Made UFOs 1944-1994 by Adventures Unlimited Press

Vesco, Renato, 1976, pages 85-86

3. ibid

4. Vesco, Renato, 1976, page 87

5. United States Air Force, 1944, "An Evaluation Of German Capabilities In 1945", Maxwell Air Force Base, Alabama, USA, this and other information related to Phoo Bombs can be found on microfilm rolls A-1007-1652, A-5729-2040

6. Vesco, Renato, 1976, pages 85-87

7. Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee Report Number 156, "Report On Flugfunk Forschungsinstitut Oberpfaffenhofen F.F.O. Establishments"

8. ibid

9. Corso, Phillip J., Col., 1997, page 161, The Day After Roswell. Pocket Books, a division of Simon & Schuster Inc., 1230 Avenue of the Americans, New York, NY. 10020

10. Vesco, Renato, 1976, pages 136-138

11. Vesco, Renato, 1976, pages 145 and 156

12. German Research Project, 1999, "German Death Rays Part Two: The German And American Governmental Evidence", P.O. Box 7, Gorman, CA. 93243-0007 USA

13. Vesco, Renato, 1976, page 86

14. Rothkugel, Klaus-Peter, not yet published, page 31, Das Geheimnis der deutschen Flugscheiben

A report comes to us from Russian immigrant Paul Stonehill concerning the experience of a Russian POW in Northern Germany. The report was first published some time ago in UFO Magazine, volume 10, number 2 in 1995, but this witness describes a story so different from other German saucer reports that it is worth emphasis at this point. The witness is unnamed but the source of the original report is known to Paul Stonehill and he vouches for its authenticity. The unnamed witness is called mister "X".

Mister X was taken prisoner by the Germans in the Ukraine in 1941, early in the German offensive. From there he was housed in a concentration camp where he contracted typhus. X improved and even managed to escape but was re-captured and taken to Auschwitz concentration camp. There, he worked as a medical orderly before a typhus relapse made this work impossible. X was scheduled for a one-way trip to the crematorium but was saved from this fate by a woman German medical doctor who cured him of the typhus. Not only did she do this but, for some reason not made clear in the article, she supplied him with false identity papers stating that X was a mechanical engineer.

In August of 1943 X was moved to KZ (concentration camp) A4 at Trassenhedel in the vicinity of Peenemuende to work on project Hochdruckpumpe's removal from that area. Hochdruckpumpe, or high pressure pump in English, was a long distance cannon with fired in sequential states as the projectile moved by each charge and along an very long barrel. From here X was reassigned to work at Peenemuende itself.

In September of 1943, X and some other prisoners were engaged in demolition of a reinforced cement wall. At lunch time the other prisoners were driven away from this site but for some reason, possibly a dislocated foot, X was left behind.

After the others had gone, four workers appeared from a hangar and rolled out a strange looking craft onto the concrete landing strip nearby. It was round, had a teardrop-shaped cockpit in the center and was rolled out on small inflatable wheels, like an "upside down wash basin". After a signal was given, this silvery metal craft began making a hissing sound and took off, hovering at an altitude of about five meters directly over the landing strip. As it hovered, the device rocked back and forth. Then the edges began to blur. Suddenly the flying craft's edges seem to blur as it jumped up sharply and gained altitude in a snakelike trajectory. X concludes that because rocking was still exhibited, the craft was advancing erratically.

A gust of wind blew in from the Baltic. The flying craft was turned upside down and began to loose altitude. Mr. X was enveloped by hot air and the smell of ethyl alcohol as he heard the craft grinding into the earth. Without thinking, X ran for the craft in an effort to assist the downed pilot. The pilot's body was hanging out of the broken cockpit and the craft was engulfed in blue flames of fire. X glimpsed the still hissing jet engine before everything was swallowed in flames.

What can be gleaned from this account? Mr. X certainly saw a German flying disc. But the "smell of ethyl alcohol" and the "blue fames of fire" set this engine apart from any so far described. German jet engines ran on jet fuel, a light oil something similar to kerosene. The Walter rocket engines ran of very exotic hypergolic fuels which burst into flames automatically once they made contact with each other. Ethyl alcohol is the alcohol of fermentation as, for instance, potatoes are fermented and distilled into vodka. Ethyl alcohol is not the best substance for aircraft fuel since it is low calories by weight and volume in comparison with the other fuels mentioned. The advantage of alcohol for the shortage plagued Germans was that it was available. Ethyl alcohol and liquid oxygen were exactly the fuels which powered the V-2 rocket developed at nearby Peenemuende.

Given this report, we have a reason to consider Peenemuende as a German site which produced flying discs. But before proceeding with our inquiry as before we must take a step back from our strictly detailed survey of German flying saucers in order to get better perspective of this overall body of information.

To this point any reader somewhat familiar with German flying discs might find the level of detail and proof enlightening but might feel that the basic story is known and has already been told. These readers will be pleasantly surprised by this chapter of our story. Not only is new evidence presented here but a new interpretation of existing evidence sheds a whole new light upon the study of German flying discs.

This new evidence and this new way of looking at things are primarily the result of the input of German aeronautical investigator Klaus-Peter Rothkugel. Within the last year or so he has proposed to me and to another investigator, Heiner Gehring, ideas which were previously overlooked. Mr. Rothkugel has investigated and documented his ideas to both of us and has convinced us of their merit. In turn, both Mr. Gehring and myself have spent some time and effort in advancing this research ourselves and sharing the results. These researchers have published their findings in Germany and have allowed me to make use of these ideas here.

The careful reader will note that mention has already been made of Mr. Rothkugel and his contributions. In this section some of the ideas which he first put forth will be examined as will hie emphasis on the overall organization and understanding of the material.

It was Vesco who first gave us an explanation of foo fighters.

Vesco relied upon his own understanding of the subject which was gained during the war and documented them with facts gleaned from his research into British intelligence files. His explanation has been largely vindicated both by reports of sightings within Austria and through United States military documents obtained independently through the Freedom Of Information Act. Why then should not the other explanations given us by Vesco be worthy of further inquiry? While discussing German saucer development, Vesco described German research designed to overcome the drag limitations imposed upon aircraft by boundary layer effects.

Boundary layer effects refer to the flow of air across the wing of an aircraft in flight. The air forms sheets of air moving across the wing, the slowest moving sheet being closest to the wing. At high speeds these slower moving layers collide with oncoming air molecules of the atmosphere causing areas of turbulence with translate into atmospheric drag as a practical matter. Elimination of the boundary layer would mean that the aircraft could fly faster or expend less energy to fly at any given speed (1)(2).

Swept wings, a German innovation, represent an aircraft designer's response toward lessening the effects of drag on high speed aircraft wings. It was found that air passing over the wings at an angle retarded boundary layer formation. Therefore, turbulence was less apt to form. The swept back-wings of the Me-163 rocket interceptor may have been the result of this research. An advanced model of the Me-262 jet fighter was to incorporate fully swept-back wings. But German aircraft designers of those times wanted to go further. They wanted to eliminate the boundary layer completely.

They proposed to do this with suction wings (3). The literature on German efforts toward elimination of the boundary layer using suction wings is voluminous, as Vesco has pointed out. Beginning in the early 1940s German designers cut slots into experimental aircraft and auxiliary engines were employed to suck in the boundary layer through the wing itself and redirect this air into the fuselage and out the rear of the aircraft.(4). This proved to be more complicated than first anticipated. It was found that the area of turbulence, eddy currents caused by the boundary layer, moved across the wing from front to back as air speed increased. A slot at one position on the wing might work at one speed but not another. This meant that many, many slots covering the expanse of the wing would be needed to totally defeat this boundary layer problem. This proved impractical for a number of reasons.

One reason this was so was that multiple engines had to be used. The first engine had to provide power for flight as in any airplane. The second engine, mounted in the fuselage, was necessary to draw in air through the slotted wings and exhaust it towards the rear. Interestingly enough, it was found that the boundary layer could be eliminated by "sucking it in" or by "blowing it off" using a strong flow of air to disrupt it (5).

Full scale suction wing aircraft were built for purposes of testing this concept. These were the Junkers "Absaugeflugzeug" (suction aircraft) AF-l and the Fieseler "Absaugestorch" (suction-stork) AF-2.

Concurrent with these experiments, work was being done into the feasibility of circular wings. This work also began in the 1930s with the basic ideas being credited to Professor Ludwig Prandtl. Early scientific papers on circular winged aircraft were written beginning in 1936 by Wilhelm Kinner (6) and in 1938 by M. Hansen (7). Both of these scientists worked at the Aerodynamic Research Facility at Goettingen. By 1941 Dr. Alexander Lippisch was also engaged in experimentation on circular wings at the Messerschmitt firm. His design, designated J1253, was tested at the wind-tunnel at Goettingen (8). Dr. Lippisch was visited by Dr Giuseppe Belluzzo while at Messerschmitt in Augsburg and Lippisch worked together with Dr. F. Ringlib on a "Drehfluegel" or "rotating wing" which was tested at Peenemuende (9). As with suction wings, a body of scientific literature from those times documents this early circular-wing experimentation.

The genius of the German designers was to combine the ideas of suction and circular wings into a single aircraft. Housing complete aircraft within its wing would eliminate the fuselage and so eliminate an unnecessary, drag-causing structure.

Prandtl and Lippisch were not comparably to Schiever and Habermohl. Prandtl and Lippisch are not even comparable to Dr. Richard Miethe. Pradtl and Lippisch were senior scientists who were well established in their worlds, either of whom would have been capable of heading a major project. In fact they did. In fact neither the Schriever-Habermohl or what we have called the Miethe-Bellonzo projects were major projects. This is another significance of what is being discussed here because what is being discussed here is a completely different organization and understanding of German flying discs than has been presented heretofore.

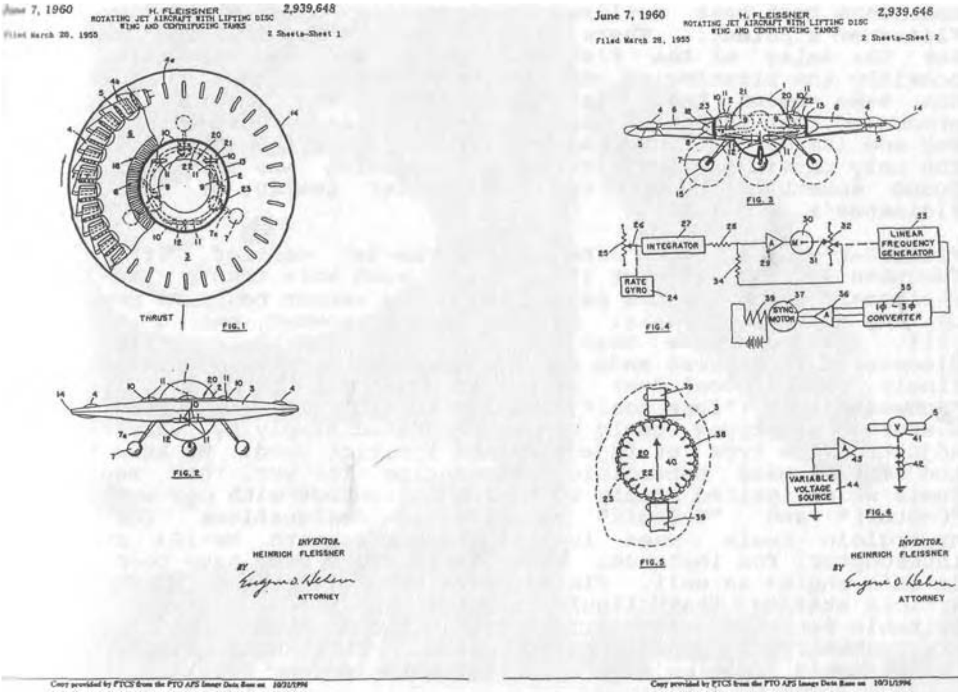
Remember that controlling authority for both the Schriever-Habermohl and the Miethe-Bellonzo projects came from officials in Peenemuende? J. Andreas Epp makes the point in his book that he originated the idea of the Schriever-Habermohl-type of flying disc and actually made a model of this flying craft. Setting aside for the moment the subject or originality, Epp sent his model to General Ernst Udet of the Luftwaffe whom he had met as a child. General Udet must have been impressed with this idea because he sent the plans and model to Peenemuende for evaluation. Peenemuende authorized the Schriever-Habermohl team to further develop the idea and as you might recall, Epp chided Schriever for straying from his original blade dimensions while crediting Habermohl for keeping them. The point is that Peenemuende set up Schriever and Habermohl to construct and further develop this design as they set up Dr. Miethe to set up further develop the Leduc engine based design. The Germans even refer to the Schriever-Habermohl design as a "Flugkreisel" or flying top in English and the Miethe design as a "Flugdiskus". Our vernacular, "flying saucer" originally corresponded to the German folk-word "Flugschiebe" or flying disc. If the Flugkreisel, Flugdiscus and Flugschiebe are all different machines and we know who built the first two then who built the third, the Flugscheibe? The answer is that Peenemuende built the Flugscheibe. Officials at Peenemuende saved the best for themselves while controlling the other two.

Let's look at some evidence. The May, 1980 issue of Neue Presse featured an article about the German fluidics engineer Heinrich Fleissner (10). Fleissner was an engineer, designer and advisor to what he calls a "Flugscheibe" project based at Peenemuende during the war. It is interesting to note that Fliessner's area of expertise, fluidics, is exactly the specialty involved in investigating problems with boundary layer flow. Fleissner reports that the saucer with which he was involved would have been capable of speeds up to 3,000 kilometers per hour within the earth's atmosphere and up to 10,000 kilometers outside the earth's atmosphere. He states that the brains of the developmental people were found in Peenemuende under the tightest of secrecy (11). We will return to this article again, at a later point, but what is of most interest to us here are three facts. First, that Fleissner worked at Peenemuende on a flying saucer project. Second, that a hint of this design has survived to this day. Third, the surviving design can be linked to photographic evidence of a German saucer, circa World War Two.

Almost ten years after the war, on March 28, 1955, Heinrich Fleissner filed a patent application with the United States Patent Office for a flying saucer (Patent Number 2,939,648). Fleissner's saucer was unlike Schriever's, Habermohl's, or Miethe's. The engine employed by Fleissner rotated around the cabin on the outside of the saucer disc itself. It was set in motion by starter rockets as with Schriever and Habermohl. The difference is that this engine was really a form of ram-jet engine. It featured slots running around the periphery of the saucer into which air was scooped. The slots continued obliquely right through the saucer disc so that jet thrust was aimed slightly downward and backward from the direction of rotation. Within the slots, fuel injectors and a timed ignition insured a proper power curve which was in accordance with the speed and direction of the saucer much like an automobile's fuel injection is timed to match the firing of the spark plugs. Steering was accomplished by directing the airflow using internal channels containing a rudder and flaps which ran alongside of the central cabin. The cabin itself was held stationary or turned in the desired direction of flight using a system of electromagnets and servo-motors coupled with a gyroscope (12).

It is interesting to note that while the patent was filed on

The Post-War Saucer Patent Of Heinrich Fleissner


June 7, 1960
H. FLEISSNER
2,939,648
ROTATING JET AIRCRAFT WITH LIFTING DISC WING AND CENTRIFUGING TANKS
Filed March 28, 1955
2 Sheets-Sheet 1
THRUST
FIG. 1
FIG. 2
INVENTOR.
HEINRICH FLEISSNER
BY
ATTORNEY
June 7, 1960
H. FLEISSNER
2,939,648
ROTATING JET AIRCRAFT WITH LIFTING DISC WING AND CENTRIFUGING TANKS
Filed March 28, 1955
2 Sheets-Sheet 2
FIG. 3
INTEGRATOR
LINEAR FREQUENCY GENERATOR
RATE GYRO
SYNC MOTOR
1φ - 3φ CONVERTER
FIG. 4
FIG. 5
VARIABLE VOLTAGE SOURCE
FIG. 6
INVENTOR.
HEINRICH FLEISSNER
BY
ATTORNEY
Copy provided by PTCS from the PTO APS Image Data Base on 10/21/1996
Copy provided by PTCS from the PTO APS Image Data Base on 10/21/1996

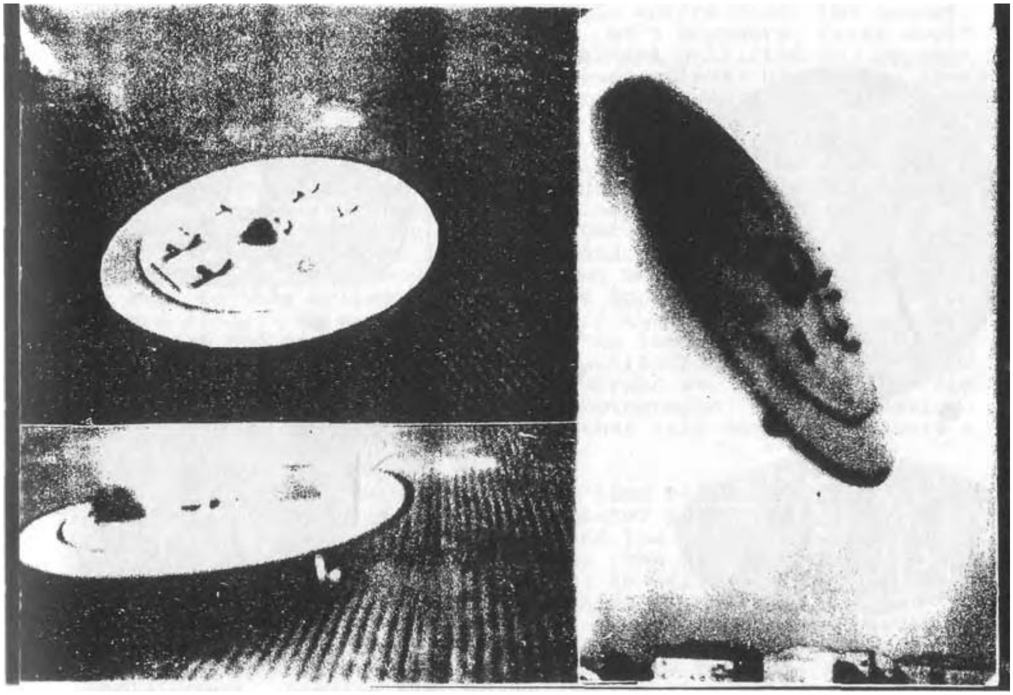
Fleissner was a technical advisor on the Peenemuende saucer project. An eye witness, known by Fleissner, told him this: "Shortly before the Capitulation, on April 24, 1945, a squadron of four flying discs took off-manned with two pilots whose names are unknown-under heavy artillery barrage from the German and Russian sides from the Berlin-Lichterfelde Airport to a still-today unknown destination." (Neue Press, 5/2/80, page 3)

March 28, 1955, it was not granted until June 7, 1960, over five years later! What could possibly have been the reason for the delay? The only possible reason concerns the American Silver Bug Project which was being developed at the same time. This was a project which was tasked with further development of the Miethe design or an outgrowth of it and simply referred to as a "radial jet engine". But we now know this Miethe project was not the equal of the Peenemuende project in terms of speed. The Americans must have realized this sometime after the filing of Fliessner's patent. There can be little doubt that the reason for the delay of the Fleissner patent was the evaluation and possibly the pirating of his design by the Americans. At about the same moment that Fieissner's patent was granted, it was announced that the joint Canadian-American saucer project, Silver Bug and its derivatives, had been abandoned by those governments. The only possible reason for this abandoning was that they had found something better and the better design, by far, was Fieissner's.

Fieissner's design was likened to a ram-jet earlier. It could function in this way but it was also much more than a ram-jet. Fleissner states in his patent that the saucer could be powered by any number of fuels: "liquid, dust, powder, gas or solid" (11). It could have used, for example, used the recently rediscovered fuel first made by Dr. Mario Zippermayr consisting of finely powered coal dust in a suspension of liquid air (13) or "Schwaramkohle" ("foam coal") and liquid air (14). Different fuel mixtures and types could be accommodated simply by varying or adjusting the type of injectors and ignition used. We know that the Germans used hypergloic fuels during the war, that meaning fuels which ignited simply by coming in contact with one another. "C-Stoff" and "T-Stoff" were German designations for the hypergloic fuels used in the Messerschmitt Me-163 rocket interceptor, for instance. These fuels could also have been used in this engine as well. Fleissner further elaborated in his 1980 article stating that liquid hydrogen and liquid oxygen were suitable for this design (11). Liquid hydrogen and liquid oxygen are rocket fuels of the highest order. This means Fieissner's saucer could function as a rocket with the proper fuel.

Shall we assess the implications? In its simplest form, Fieissner's saucer could have operated as a ram-jet on jet fuel. At its highest level, Fieissner's saucer could have operated outside the atmosphere on liquid hydrogen and oxygen. Or it could have done both. Fieissner's saucer could have taken off as a ram-jet, gained speed and aititude but at some point, reached a limit of diminishing returns. At this point, the saucer would have been able to slowly bleed liquid oxygen into the ram-jets for further performance enhancement. Further, it could slowly have replaced jet fuel with liquid hydrogen. This would be accompanied by a closing of the air intake apparatus. At this point there is no reason this saucer can not become a space ship, that is, able to operate beyond the fringes of the earth's atmosphere. Is this performance enough to impress the U.S. Air

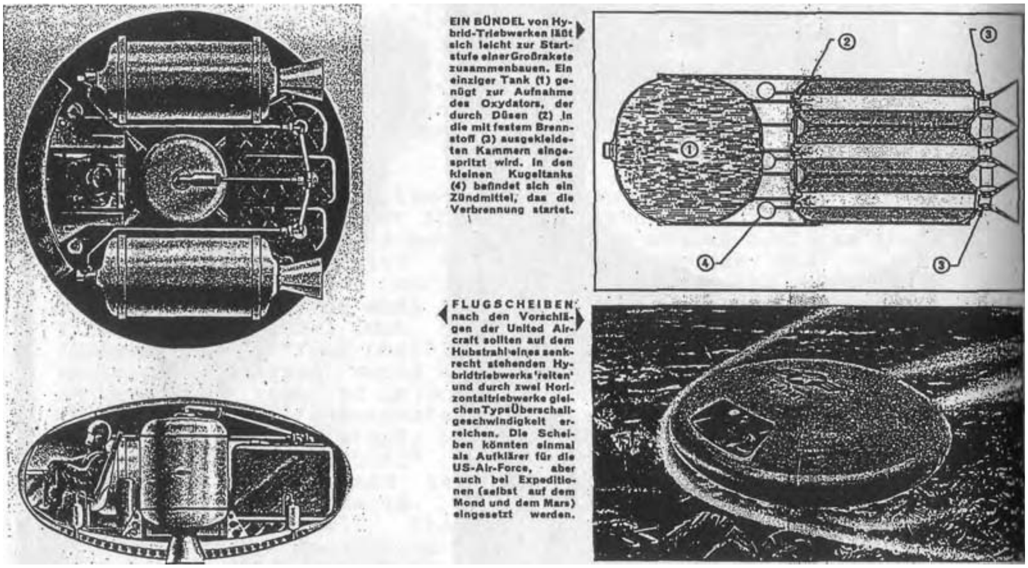
Detailed Picture Of A German Saucer



This is a blow-up of the picture attached to J. Andreas Epp's "Still Alive" letter from Prag, March, 1944. Note air intake ring and crest for steering on the roof of the cabin. Diameter is about six meters. Is this the saucer described in the Aftonbladet article? Possible location is Stettin near Peenemuende.

Thinking Outside The Box

Hybrid Liquid-Solid Propellant Rocket



EIN BÜNDEL von Hybrid-Triebwerken läßt sich leicht zur Startstufe einer Großrakete zusammenbauen. Ein einziger Tank (1) genügt zur Aufnahme des Oxydators, der durch Düsen (2) in die mit festem Brennstoff (3) ausgekleideten Kammern eingespritzt wird. In den kleinen Kugeltanks (4) befindet sich ein Zündmittel, das die Verbrennung startet.

FLUGSCHEIBEN nach den Vorschlägen der United Aircraft sollten auf dem Hubstrahl eines senkrecht stehenden Hybridtriebwerks 'reiten' und durch zwei Horizontaltriebwerke gleichen Typs Überschallgeschwindigkeit erreichen. Die Scheiben könnten einmal als Aufklärer für die US-Air-Force, aber auch bei Expeditionen (selbst auf dem Mond und dem Mars) eingesetzt werden.

Top Right: 1. Liquid Oxidizer 2. Injection Jets for Oxidizer 3. Combustion Chamber Constrictions 4. Ignition Mechanism Solid fuel shown running along sides of combustion chamber (dark color). "Schaumkohle" (porous compressed coal) are suitable as fuel as would a mixture of Aluminum power and polyurethan combined with liquid nitrogen tetroxide. Thrust controlled by amount of oxidizer injected. Hypergolic mixtures would require no ignition system. Alternately, oxydizers could be solid and fuel liquid. "Nichts ist unmoeglich" Nothing is impossible

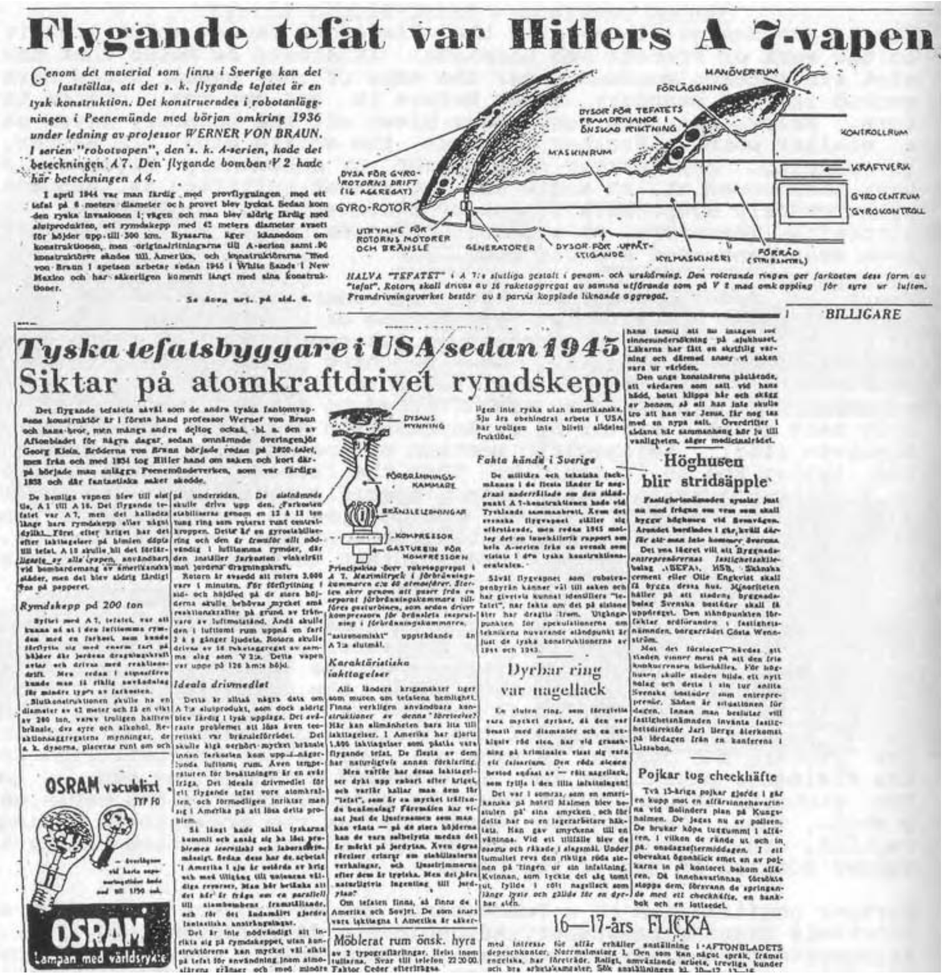
Force and the civilian population of the late 1940s and early 1950's? The answer is certainly in the affirmative.

There are design elements in the Fleissner saucer which link it to the work of Prandtl and Lippisch. It should be noted that the slot air intakes mounted near the edge of the saucer would have sucked in the boundary layer before it got any real chance to form. Below, the jets would have blown off the boundary layer at a similar point. Further, because the entire wing, the saucer, is spinning, any further development of a boundary layer would have been moved at an angle and so almost nullified as happens with severely swept-back wings of a conventional high-speed jet aircraft. Therefore, at supersonic speeds, this saucer might not have even generated a sonic boom.

There is some proof that the Fleissner-type of saucer was actually built and flown at Peenemuende or a nearby test facility at Stettin. Fleissner's patent is likened to wartime reality by a photograph. Actually, it is three photographs. These photographs have appeared in a fragmentary, vintage Dutch article on German saucers and they are attached to a wartime letter from Prag sent to this writer by J. Andreas Epp and later published in Ahnstern (15). No specific mention of the photograph is made in the letter and so it could be that the late Mr. Epp included it as a general example rather than a specific reference. Epp never claimed the saucers in these photographs as his design. Epp himself claimed to have the only photographs of that device. There is reason to suspect, however, that this design does bare a relationship to the Fleissner design.

The pictures show a small saucer with some telling features. One point of correspondence with the Fleissner patent is that the air intake is located near the periphery of the saucer wing. This is seen as seen in the ring just inside the saucer's edge. The other is that the directional control is clearly viable in the rudder mounted on the top of the cockpit or central cabin. In the picture the control is external and not as sophisticated as the Fleissner patent but the idea behind both are the same. In the pictured saucer, turns would be made by turning the cabin as a whole, thus, turning the rudder just as the prehistoric flying reptile, the Pterodactyl, turned its flight direction using a rudder located on top of its head.

Further confirmation of a Peenemuende saucer project comes from a Stockholm evening newspaper, Aftonbladet, dated October 10, 1952. It reports that a flying saucer, a "space ship", was developed by the Germans during World War Two at Peenemuende by Dr. Wernher von Braun and his rocket team. A test-model of this craft lifted off in April of 1944. It was six meters in diameter. The ultimate craft to be built, was a space ship of 42 meters in diameter, capable of flying an astonishing three hundred kilometers in altitude! Not stated in the article but interesting to note is that this 300 kilometers represents a higher altitude than the first American earth orbiting satellite.



Flygande tefat var Hitlers A 7-vapen

Genom det material som finns i Sverige kan det fastställas, att det s. k. flygande tefatet är en tysk konstruktion. Det konstruerades i robotanläggningen i Peenemünde med början omkring 1936 under ledning av professor WERNER VON BRAUN. I serien "robotvapen", den s. k. A-serien, hade det beteckningen A 7. Den flygande bomben V 2 hade här beteckningen A 4.

I april 1944 var man färdig med provflygningen med ett tefat på 6 meters diameter och provet blev lyckat. Sedan kom den ryska invasionen i vägen och man blev aldrig färdig med slutprodukten, ett rymdskepp med 42 meters diameter avsett för höjder upp till 300 km. Ryssarna äger kännedom om konstruktionen, men originalritningarna till A-serien samt 90 konstruktörer sändes till Amerika, och konstruktörerna med von Braun i spetsen arbetar sedan 1945 i White Sands i New Mexico och har säkerligen kommit långt med sina konstruktioner.

Se även art. på sid. 6.

MANÖVERRUM
FÖRLÄGGNING
DYSOR FÖR TEFATETS FRAMDRIVANDE I ÖNSKAD RIKTNING
KONTROLLRUM
MASKINRUM
KRAFTVERK
DYSA FÖR GYRO-ROTORNS DRIFT (16 AGGREGAT)
GYRO-ROTOR
GYRO CENTRUM
GYRO KONTROLL
UTRYMME FÖR ROTORNS MOTORER OCH BRÄNSLE
GENERATORER
DYSOR FÖR UPPÅT-STIGANDE
KYLMASKINERI
FÖRRÅD

HALVA "TEFATET" i A 7:s slutliga gestalt i genom- och urskärning. Den roterande ringen ger farkosten dess form av "tefat". Rotorn skall drivas av 16 raketaggregat av samma utförande som på V 2 med omkoppling för syre ur luften. Framdrivningsverket består av 8 parvis kopplade liknande aggregat.

BILLIGARE

Tyska tefatsbyggare i USA sedan 1945
Siktar på atomkraftdrivet rymdskepp

Det flygande tefatets såväl som de andra tyska fantomvapnens konstruktör är i första hand professor Werner von Braun och hans bror, men många andra deltog också, bl. a. den av Aftonbladet för några dagar sedan omnämnde överingenjör Georg Klein. Bröderna von Braun började redan på 1920-talet, men från och med 1934 tog Hitler hand om saken och kort därpå började man anlägga Peenemündeverken, som var färdiga 1938 och där fantastiska saker skedde.

Rymdskepp på 200 ton

Ideala drivmedlet

DYSANS MYNNING
FÖRBRÄNNINGS-KAMMARE
BRÄNSLELEDNINGAR
KOMPRESSOR
GASTURBIN FÖR KOMPRESSORN

Principskiss över raketaggregat i A 7. Maximitryck i förbränningskammaren c:a 60 atmosfärer.

Karaktäristiska iakttagelser

Fakta kända i Sverige

Dyrbar ring var nagellack

Höghusen blir stridsäpple

Pojkar tog checkhäfte

OSRAM vacublixt TYP FO

OSRAM Lampan med världsrykte

Möblerat rum önsk. hyra

16—17-års FLICKA

Swedish newspaper "Aftonbladet", dated 10/10/52, describes a German saucer built by Wernher von Braun at Peenemuende, six meters in diameter, which lifted off in April, 1944. The article states that high fuel consumption was the major problem, a problem which would be solved utilizing atomic power.

The construction drawings for this device are in the USA, according to the article, and the drawings are also known to the Russians. The chief difficulty with the saucer, according to the report, is the tremendous fuel requirements during its assent. This problem, it goes on to say, could be solved through the utilization of atomic energy.

Let us look at the picture of the three saucers again. In the lower left picture two dark objects can be seen resting on its top. Mr. Rothkugel suggests these may be bombs or fuel. Let us assume the latter, that they are fuel drums for refueling the saucer. In the USA metal drums of this type commonly contain petroleum products. They measure about three feet in height. Two are shown but six lengths could be stretched across this saucer with perhaps inches to spare. A meter is slightly over a yard. This saucer roughly corresponds in size to the description given in the Aftonbladet article. The picture on the right, minus the fuel drums and poised above some buildings, clearly shows that this saucer actually flew.

A whole technical history and organizational hierarchy can be pieced together from this picture, the Fliessner patent, and the Aftonbladet article. The Fleissner design minimizes the effects of boundary layer resistance reflecting the outcome of work starting with Ludwig Prandtl. It is a circular aircraft and a linear descendant of the circular aircraft designed by Dr. Prandtl and Dr. Alexander Lippisch. Fleissner states that he worked at Peenemuende. Peenemuende functioned as the head of all German saucer research. A fact of life at Peenemuende was that all German scientists deferred to Dr. Wernher von Braun who was an expert, the only expert, at everything. Dr. von Braun did have an organizational supervisor, Dr. Walter Dornberger, later to work for Bell Aircraft in the USA. Above Dr. Dornberger was Dr. Hans Kammler, the SS chief of all jet aircraft and vengeance weaponry. All these named men and organizations were part of the German saucer program, their public denials not withstanding.

One more loose end is tied up relating to the Fleissner design. This is the relationship of Dr. Giuseppe Belluzzo to the German saucer projects as a whole. Remember, Dr. Belluzzo was a senior scientist and engineer who specialized in materials and steam turbines. The Fleissner saucer design is normally thought of as a sort of ram-jet. But this ram-jet spun due to thrust imparted to it by its exhaust. This exhaust-supplied motion scooped in and compressed the incoming air before ignition. Low speed flight would have been impossible without this feature just as it is with any ram-jet. So another way to look at this engine is that it was a turbine-ram-jet no matter how incongruous this may sound at first. It should also be noted that in the rocket mode, when the saucer is burning only liquid oxygen and liquid hydrogen, the products of this combustion are only heat and water. Another way to say heat and water is steam. To repeat, Dr. Giuseppe Belluzzo was a steam-turbine expert. As mentioned earlier, Mr. Rothkugel reports that Dr. Belluzzo visited and, presumably consulted with. Dr. Alexander Lippisch at Augsberg. Dr. Belluzzo's involvement with the German saucer projects should not be assumed to be confined to the Miethe project.

Let's review the Peenemuende Project to this point. It is a wide ranging project with at least two spin-offs, the Schriever-Habermohl project and the Miethe project. The Schriever-Habermohl project(s) employ a whirling set of vane-blades and one or more rocket or jet engines in a kind of "spinning top" manner. It may have been capable of supersonic flight. The Miethe project differs in that it employs an internal spinning turbo-jet first invented by Rene Leduc. Depending of the saucer configuration, its thrust can be vented in any direction for steering purposes. It also may have been capable of supersonic flight.

This design was given further study and was probably developed after the war in the form of the John Frost "Manta". A design such as this may have been responsible for the sightings by Kenneth Arnold near Mt. Rainier in the State of Washington in June of 1947. It was probably responsible for the pictures taken by William Rhodes as seen and described in the July 9, 1947 edition of the newspaper, The Arizona Republic. This same design, described as a "Flying Shoe" may have figured in the Roswell crash. Ideas from this design may have been further developed by A.V. Roe, Limited company in Canada.

Besides retaining overall control of these two saucer projects, the officials at Peenemuende retained and developed their own saucer project. Using similarities between surviving pictures from the time and the patent filed by a former member of that project, Heinrich Fleissner, we can piece together something of its design. Its identifying characteristic is its engine which has been described earlier as a turbine-ram-jet. It could operate using a variety of fuels. It could function as a jet engine within the atmosphere or covert to a rocket engine using liquid oxygen and liquid hydrogen. Its speed and altitude limits would have been much greater than either the Schriever-Habermohl or the Miethe saucers, yet its construction would have been less complex than the advanced designs of the radial-jet engines being developed in the Canada as part of the Silver Bug Program. Recognition of these facts, especially after the 1955 patent application by Fleissner, probably lead to the abandonment of the A.V. Roe, Limited project(s). A cover project, the "Avrocar" was released to the public, discredited by its own designers, and put away to be forgotten.

In discussing the Aftonbladet article we have jumped ahead of our story slightly in order to connect the three saucers pictures with the Fleissner saucer patent in a proper context. The Aftonbladet article has other implication which will be discussed. Now, however, we must once again return to basics in order to illustrate the next stage of saucer development envisioned by the German scientists.

Vesco makes mention of liquified air or liquid propellants or explosives numerous times in discussing flying saucers (16)(17)(18)(19)(20). Vesco refers to saucers powered using "liquid air". On page 135-136 of Intercept UFO he says:

"After the German surrender in May 1945, when the British examined the secret papers of the technical departments of certain factories hidden in the forested area of the Schwarzwald-another region earmarked as an "island" for a last-ditch stand-they discovered that some of the documents miraculously spared from the retreating S.S. units' destruction of papers concerned "the important experiments conducted with liquid air as a power supply for certain new types of turbine engines capable of producing tremendous power outputs. At first the discovery led them to believe that a new system for powering submarines was under study, but ancillary information about the construction of powerful apparatuses working on principle of electromagnetic waves that would make it possible to exercise radio control at great distances, as well as photographs showing some parts of the new turbine, caused them to change their minds. Thus they got on the track of a preliminary preparatory stage for a new and very powerful type of armored, radio-controlled aircraft".

Mr. Rothkugel points out that the logical projection of Vesco's statements on liquid air would involve a saucer in with air would be drawn in through the skin or through slots in the upper wing (saucer), then rapidly cooled by special equipment into liquid air. The liquid air would be burnt in a combustion chamber and the hot air and steam would be exited through a turbine used to produce the electricity which this process would require.

The saucer would be drawn along through the atmosphere by the low pressure area to its front and top as well as by aerodynamic forces caused by its wing at low speed. With the addition of more liquid air into the combustion chamber, the expansive forces involving the conversion of a liquid to a gas would provide additional performance enhancement. This amazing and little-know method was invented and patented by the Austrian Karl Nowak in 1943 (21) and will work even with inert gasses. Of course, even nitrogen, sometimes considered an inert gas and which constitutes the major component of our atmosphere, can be burnt with sufficing electrical ignition as is witnessed in lightning. The cooling needed to liquify the air would be generated using a cryostat, probably liquid helium. Liquid helium is the coldest of gasses, minus 452 degrees F, just above absolute zero. In addition to the cryostat, magnetic cooling machinery, such as is employed to produce liquid nitrogen would be employed (22). From the cooling power of liquid helium and evaporative techniques, liquid nitrogen and liquid oxygen can be made which are the major constituents of our atmosphere.

A saucer which could gather its fuel along the way has one obvious advantage. It could stay aloft for days if not weeks. More conventional chemical power could be employed for take-offs and landings and for bursts of speed necessary for military applications. In fact, there is no reason that the propulsion systems of the Fleissner saucer and the liquid air saucer envisioned by Vesco could not be combined into one aircraft.

It is unknown at this time if actual steps were taken to realize a liquid air powered flying saucer by the Germans. Whether it was undertaken or not it certainly did lead thinking on to the next step in this process and for this step there is more than a little evidence. This step was mentioned in the Aftonbladet article. It involves atomic power. Yes, the Germans intended to build a nuclear powered flying saucer (23).

These are the conclusions first reached by Dr. Milos Jesensky and engineer Robert Lesniakiewicz in 1998. The former author is a Czech and the latter author is a Pole. Both belong to a large UFO organization which functions in both countries. After the Soviet pullout there were no restrictions on excavation of unused military sites belonging to the Germans during the Second World War. This organization got busy interviewing witnesses who had connections to those times as well as identifying German underground facilities. They opened up as many of these as they could find, and they were numerous. Most of the Polish sites were within the borders of Germany at that time since the borders, before and during the Second World War, extended into about 20% of Western Poland. Other sites were in the heavily German dominated areas of Moravia and Bohemia, now the Czech Republic.

Of course, the Germans had taken out what they wanted before retreating and then sealed up the entrances with explosives. As an example of how far this research group was willing to go, they not only opened up and explored the upper levels of Der Riese, mentioned earlier, but also explored the flooded lower levels, in the cold, silent darkness using scuba gear. Besides Der Riese, other very large sites were discovered and explored including "Robert 1", "Robert 11", and "Robert 111".

They found that the larger sites were really composed of a complex of sites. For instance, at Der Riese some of these sites within the larger facility were involved in mining uranium ore. Some were involved in refining the ore. Some other sites were involved in nuclear research (24).

Wartime German work in nuclear research was not confined to bomb building, as it was in the USA. The Germans were also interested in harnessing the atom as an energy source. Remember, Germany was dependent upon foreign sources of oil for energy. German planners long realized this was a weakness and had been trying to correct the problem since the early 1930s. Great plans were in the works, if not actually built, for atomic reactors used to generate electricity. These were sometimes called "uranium machines" by the Germans. Not only were these uranium machines to be used to generate electricity but they were also destined to power submarines and aircraft.

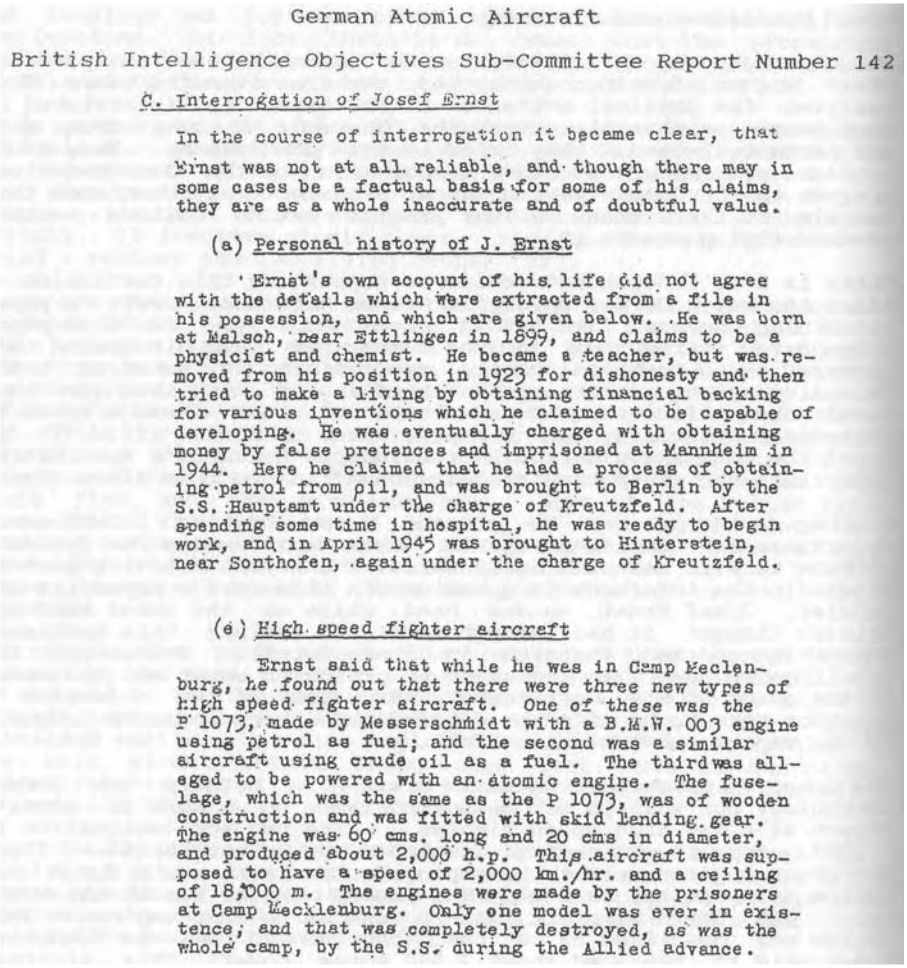
Dr. Jesensky and Mr. Lesniakiewicz assembled and analyzed the great volume of evidence they had gathered over the years. They analyzed the physical evidence of the sites and interviewed as many people as possible. From the thousands of observations made and facts collected, they tried to draw conclusions. They found a close proximity and close association of the German nuclear program to the German flying saucer program. They concluded that one aim of the German nuclear program was to build a nuclear powered flying saucer (23).

There is some independent evidence supporting this conclusion. After the war, German physicist Werner Heisenberg wrote a paper concerning German interest in atomic energy. In that paper Heisenberg stated that in the summer of 1942 discussion had occurred among technical people specializing in issues of heat. This discussion concerning the handling of technical questions about the efficiency of conversion of heat from uranium to determined materials, for example, water or steam (25). It is hoped the reader would recall Dr. Giuseppe Belluzzo's specialties (materials and steam turbines) in connection to this discussion.

Further evidence can be gleaned from British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee Report. This report seems to follow a pattern we will see used again twice. The report does its best to discredit the informant in question, in this case a physicist and chemist, Josef Ernst, on one hand, while on the other hand the British thought it had enough merit to include this testimony concerning German research in some detail. Evidently, the intelligence agency in question is trying to cover all the bases in the event of any contingency. No matter if the scientist in question were to be cited or discredited, there would be language in the report substantiating both.

The report describes several areas of totally new German technology but what is of most importance to us here is Ernst's report of a new high speed fighter. The project designation is P-1073, and it was being developed by Messerschmitt. Three different engines were to be employed. The first was a B.M.W. 003 engine using petrol as fuel. The second engine was to use crude oil. The third aircraft was to use an atomic engine. This engine was described as 60 cms. long and 20 cms. in diameter. Ernst said it produced about 2,000 horse power! This aircraft was supposed to have a speed of 2,000 kilometers per hour (about 1250 m.p.h.) and a ceiling of 18,000 meters (over 54,000 feet). It was made at a Camp Mecklenburg. Only one model was ever made and it was destroyed, as was Camp Mecklenburg, by the SS before being taken by the Allies (26).

Establishment historians have all told us that the German atomic program was inept and disorganized. There may be some evidence for the charge that they did not share information between themselves due to strong rivalry (27) but the real facts are



German Atomic Aircraft

British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee Report Number 142

C. Interrogation of Josef Ernst

In the course of interrogation it became clear, that Ernst was not at all reliable, and though there may in some cases be a factual basis for some of his claims, they are as a whole inaccurate and of doubtful value.

(a) Personal history of J. Ernst

Ernst's own account of his life did not agree with the details which were extracted from a file in his possession, and which are given below. He was born at Malsch, near Ettlingen in 1899, and claims to be a physicist and chemist. He became a teacher, but was removed from his position in 1923 for dishonesty and then tried to make a living by obtaining financial backing for various inventions which he claimed to be capable of developing. He was eventually charged with obtaining money by false pretences and imprisoned at Mannheim in 1944. Here he claimed that he had a process of obtaining petrol from oil, and was brought to Berlin by the S.S. Hauptamt under the charge of Kreutzfeld. After spending some time in hospital, he was ready to begin work, and in April 1945 was brought to Hinterstein, near Sonthofen, again under the charge of Kreutzfeld.

(e) High speed fighter aircraft

Ernst said that while he was in Camp Meclenburg, he found out that there were three new types of high speed fighter aircraft. One of these was the P 1073, made by Messerschmidt with a B.M.W. 003 engine using petrol as fuel; and the second was a similar aircraft using crude oil as a fuel. The third was alleged to be powered with an atomic engine. The fuselage, which was the same as the P 1073, was of wooden construction and was fitted with skid landing gear. The engine was 60 cms. long and 20 cms in diameter, and produced about 2,000 h.p. This aircraft was supposed to have a speed of 2,000 km./hr. and a ceiling of 18,000 m. The engines were made by the prisoners at Camp Mecklenburg. Only one model was ever in existence; and that was completely destroyed, as was the whole camp, by the S.S. during the Allied advance.

Top: British efforts to accredit and discredit their informant, Josef Ernst. This theme appears repeatedly in Allied documents in association with German informants. The intelligence people were merely covering themselves for all eventualities. Bottom: A German atomic airplane built at Mecklenburg. The Mecklenburg facility utilized some personnel which were considered to be a security risk.

quite different than heretofore publicly disclosed (28). The overwhelming fact is that until now establishment historians have not had enough information to reach final conclusions about the German atomic program. Many facts have been concealed and these facts are only now being brought into the open. One fact is that there were even more German atomic programs than previously known, and the fact is that one of these programs was run by the SS (28).

One establishment historian, Thomas Powers (29), perhaps unwittingly gives us some insight into the discussion at hand, Powers concentrates on the historical sequence of the German atomic program and with the people involved and their relationships with one another. He also follows the progress of the many organizations researching atomic physics for the purposes of energy production and bomb making. Powers documents six such groups.

One group concerns this discussion. It was run by the Heereswaffenamt or Army Weapons Department. Its Director of Research was Dr. Erich Schumann who was also the scientific advisor to Field Marshal Wilhelm Keitel. Schumann was a professor of military physics at the University of Berlin. He also held a commission in the army so with these credentials he was able to move comfortably in both academic and military circles. Schumann should be thought of as an administrator rather than a research scientist (30).

The field of research was left to Dr. Kurt Diebner (31). Diebner was a physicist for the Heereswaffenamt since 1934 and headed his own atomic research project. German physics during the war years was geared towards practical results. During the early phases of the war it was thought that nuclear weapons were unnecessary. The thinking at the time was that the war could be won without an atomic bomb using conventional weaponry. Therefore, work on atomic weapons was de-emphasized in the early years of the war. Work on atomic means of energy production was always a high priority, a priority which only got higher as the war drug to a conclusion.

Germany always felt more threatened by dependence upon foreign sources for energy. Therefore, harnessing the energy potential of the atom for an ongoing source of energy was always a concern for German atomic scientists, much more so than for the Americans. This aim is clearly mentioned in discussion among the scientists involved in the work.

In early 1942 the success of Diebner's reactor experiments lead him to propose a full-scale effort to develop both power-producing machines and atomic bombs. He continued to pressure Schumann who was more pessimistic about the possibilities of bringing this research to a practical result. Schumann finally became convinced and agreed to give a presentation to top Nazi officials of their findings. The text of Schumann's speech was to stress the more conservative energy production aspect of atomic research rather than the building of a bomb. This was considered more feasible and so gives us an insight into the German atomic program and its thinking (32).

One example of their optimism was the participation of Diebner in plans for building an atomic power plant for Germany's submarine fleet. The year 1945 was mentioned as a target date for this to happen (33)(34).

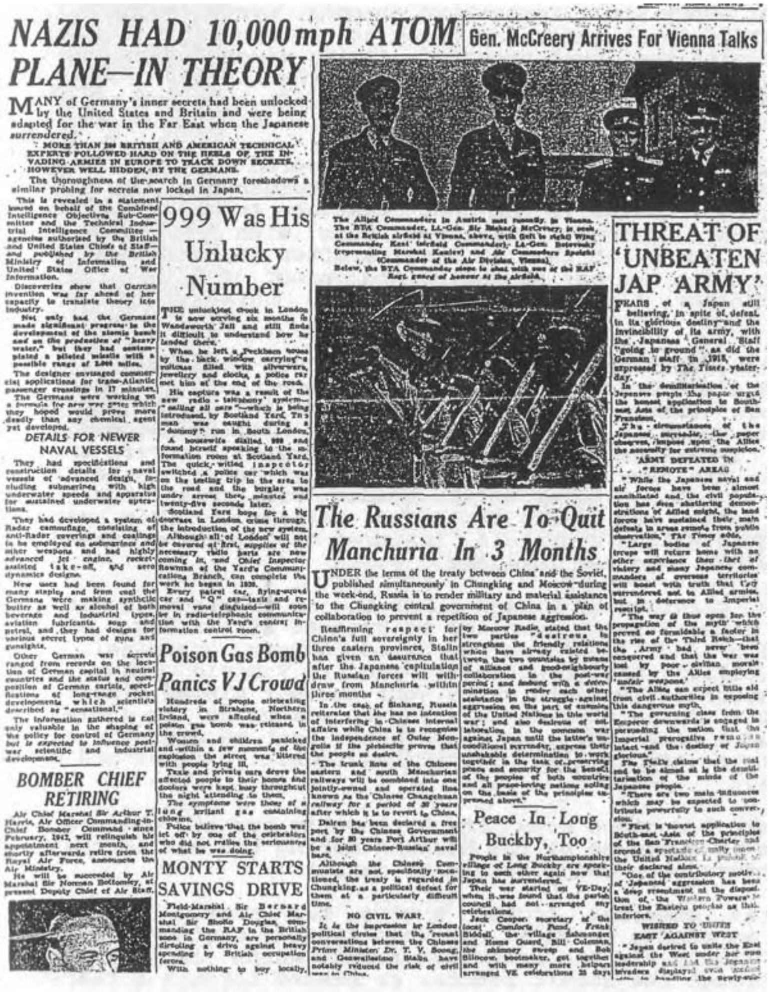
Diebner's relationship to Schumann is made clear by Powers. Powers also introduces us to two additional players who were not officially involved with this project but who somehow interject themselves into things making their view heard.

The first is industrial physicist, Carl Ramsauer. Ramsauer was the head of the German Physical Society and a leading researcher for the electrical firm Allgemeine Elektrizitaetsgesellschaft. Ramsauer urged the German research establishment to rid itself of ethnic physics and get down to the business of using science to win a war (35).

A second scientist interjected himself into the fray in support of Ramsauer. This was none other than Ludwig Prandtl whom we have met earlier (36). Prandtl was familiar with the potential of fission's use in the war effort and insisted that the Nazis let scientists do science without reference to ethnic background or politics. Why was German atomic research so important to an a scientist involved in aeronautics? What aims did Prandtl have in common with these other individuals which linked them together? What was the urgency that compelled Ramsauer and Prandtl to intervene in a matter outside their areas of expertise and in opposition to the will of Nazi officials?

To answer those questions, let us look at each individual involved and his major area of interest. Professor Erich Schumann's interest was the military application of atomic energy. Dr. Kurt Diebner's interest was the development of atomic energy for nuclear weaponry as well as for a variety of other applications. As an industrialist, Karl Ramsauer's expertise was putting technology into large-scale, practical, production. In this time and place that meant military production. We already know that Professor Ludwig Prandl's interests were round-wing, suction aircraft. The interests of these four could only coincide if we were discussing tha military-industrial production of a nuclear powered, round-wing, suction aircraft.

In addition, it is now known that Dr. Diebner, more than any other well known German scientist, was at the heart of the German atomic bomb development. It was Dr. Diebner who participated in the development of a German uranium bomb which was being prepared in one of the underground facilities at Jonastal, specifically at a facility "Burg". Not only did Dr. Diebner do this but he did



NAZIS HAD 10,000 mph ATOM PLANE—IN THEORY

MANY of Germany's inner secrets had been unlocked by the United States and Britain and were being adapted for the war in the Far East when the Japanese *surrendered.*

MORE THAN 200 BRITISH AND AMERICAN TECHNICAL EXPERTS FOLLOWED HARD ON THE HEELS OF THE INVADING ARMIES IN EUROPE TO TRACK DOWN SECRETS, HOWEVER WELL HIDDEN, BY THE GERMANS.

The thoroughness of the search in Germany foreshadows a similar probing for secrets now locked in Japan.

This is revealed in a statement issued on behalf of the Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee and the Technical Industrial Intelligence Committee — agencies authorised by the British and United States Chiefs of Staff — and published by the British Ministry of Information and United States Office of War Information.

Discoveries show that German invention was far ahead of her capacity to translate theory into industry.

Not only had the Germans made significant progress in the development of the atomic bomb and on the production of "heavy water," but they had contemplated a piloted missile with a possible range of 2,000 miles.

The designer envisaged commercial applications for trans-Atlantic passenger crossings in 17 minutes.

DETAILS FOR NEWER NAVAL VESSELS

BOMBER CHIEF RETIRING

Air Chief Marshal Sir Arthur T. Harris, Air Officer Commanding-in-Chief Bomber Command since February, 1942, will relinquish his appointment next month, and shortly afterwards retire from the Royal Air Force, announces the Air Ministry.

He will be succeeded by Air Marshal Sir Norman Bottomley, at present Deputy Chief of Air Staff.

999 Was His Unlucky Number

THE unluckiest crook in London is now serving six months in Wandsworth Jail and still finds it difficult to understand how he landed there.

Poison Gas Bomb Panics VJ Crowd

Hundreds of people celebrating victory in Strabane, Northern Ireland, were affected when a poison gas bomb was released in the crowd.

MONTY STARTS SAVINGS DRIVE

Field-Marshal Sir Bernard Montgomery and Air Chief Marshal Sir Sholto Douglas, commanding the RAF in the British zone in Germany, are personally directing a drive against heavy spending by British occupation forces.

Gen. McCreery Arrives For Vienna Talks

The Russians Are To Quit Manchuria In 3 Months

UNDER the terms of the treaty between China and the Soviet, published simultaneously in Chungking and Moscow during the week-end, Russia is to render military and material assistance to the Chungking central government of China in a plan of collaboration to prevent a repetition of Japanese aggression.

Reaffirming respect for China's full sovereignty in her three eastern provinces, Stalin has given an assurance that after the Japanese capitulation the Russian forces will withdraw from Manchuria within three months.

NO CIVIL WAR?

Peace In Long Buckby, Too

People in the Northamptonshire village of Long Buckby are speaking to each other again now that Japan has surrendered.

THREAT OF 'UNBEATEN JAP ARMY'

FEARS of a Japan still believing, in spite of defeat, in its glorious destiny and the invincibility of its army, with the Japanese General Staff "going to ground" as did the German staff in 1918, were expressed by *The Times* yesterday.

ARMY DEFEATED IN "REMOTE" AREAS

WISHED TO UNITE EAST AGAINST WEST

The 8th Army News, Triest, August 28, 1945, page three. For a short period of time, before the Cold War started heating up, censorship, both military and civilian was lax. It is from this time period from which we get much valuable information this within a working association with the SS atomic research team mentioned above (37). This SS connection runs back to Prag, the Skoda Works and the Kammler Group who held knowledge and control of every truly innovative weapons system being developed by the Third Reich including those at Peenemuende. As we know, this included the development of flying discs. The association of the facilities in and around Prag, the Kammler Group, atomic energy and German flying discs has been made by other researchers using other evidence (38). This connection seems very strong.

The Germans were planning an nuclear powered flying saucer just as they were planning a nuclear powered submarine. The proof for both of these claims is the fact that the Americans discovered such plans, further developed them with captured German scientists, and built them in America after the war. We already know about the nuclear submarine and proof of American plans to build a nuclear flying saucer based upon German ideas has just been reveled.

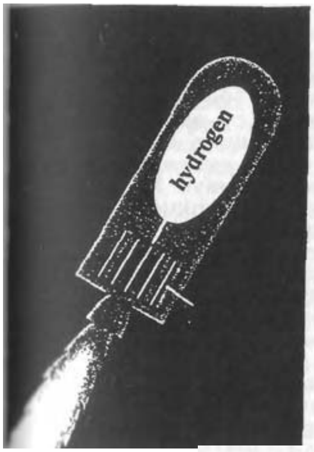
Jim Wilson, writing in the November, 2000 edition of Popular Mechanics discloses something of major importance. Wilson tells of the days following the collapse of the 3rd Reich and a rumor which had begun circulating in Allied military intelligence circles. Interrogations of captured German aircraft engineers pointed to the development of a super-fast German rocket fighter at a secret base in Bavaria (the reader will recall the research aircraft 8-346 and P-073 mentioned earlier). This aircraft, according to Wilson's article, featured odd looking curved wings which blended into the fuselage.

Documents obtained by Wilson point to an American secret saucer project, separate and parallel to Project Silver Bug, of German inspiration and involving captured German personnel. This project, called the Lenticular Reentry Vehicle (LRV), was a flying saucer designed to carry four nuclear tipped missiles into earth orbit for a mission duration of six weeks at a time. The saucer had a four man crew, was forty feet in diameter and was powered by a combination of chemical rocket engines and nuclear power (39).

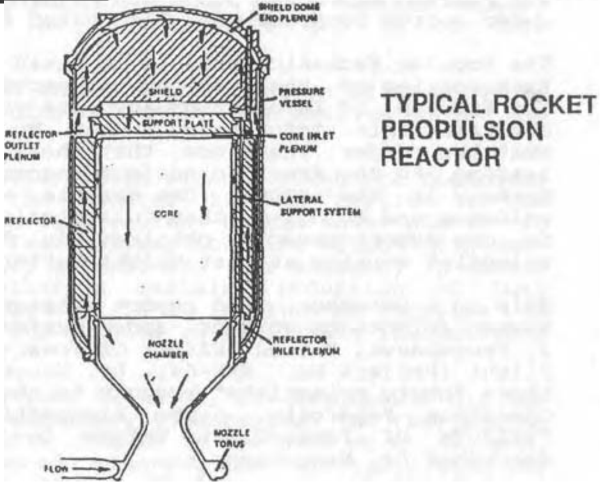
The chemical engines were the hypergolic rocket engines of the same type as employed by the Germans during the war in the Me-162 rocket interceptor and referred to earlier.

Besides the chemical rocket engine, two atomic engines were employed as atomic rockets. In this type of engine a liquid gas (perhaps liquid air as described above) which is very cold, is passed through the atomic reactor or passed through a radiator of molten metal heated by the reactor. The liquid gas turns to vapor instantly and is accelerated out the rear of the rocket at a greater velocity than can be obtained by burning two liquid gases, for instance, hydrogen and oxygen. Although a shielded nuclear reactor is certainly heavier than an air-cooled aero-engine, there might an overall weight savings as compared to a

How An Atomic Rocket Works



Nuclear Gas Core Reactor


TYPICAL ROCKET PROPULSION REACTOR
SHIELD DOME END PLENUM
SHIELD
PRESSURE VESSEL
SUPPORT PLATE
REFLECTOR OUTLET PLENUM
CORE INLET PLENUM
REFLECTOR
CORE
LATERAL SUPPORT SYSTEM
NOZZLE CHAMBER
REFLECTOR INLET PLENUM
NOZZLE TORUS
FLOW

Top: The simple story is that hydrogen is passed through or by an atomic reactor. The very cold liquid hydrogen in instantly heated and greatly expands, providing thrust for the rocket. No actual combustion occurs and no oxidizer is needed. Bottom: A detailed look at the reactor itself.

conventional liquid rocket system since a liquid oxidizer, such as liquid oxygen, need not be carried on the vehicle. The atomic engine would also produce electricity for the saucer using this expansive output coupled to a turbine generator.

Wilson cites some evidence that this saucer was built and actually flew (40). Orbiting at an altitude of 300 miles and with a six week mission, this saucer was in reality an orbiting space station capable of raining destruction down upon any country or countries deemed an enemy. One can extrapolate a rotation system by which such a dreadnought was always kept on station for such a contingency. Klaus-Peter Rothkugel has suggested that an orbiting doomsday space station such as this was to be called the "Gatland Space Station" and that it was part of a strategic military joint-effort between the United States, Britain, Canada and perhaps Australia. Before the Popular Mechanics revelation, this assertion might have been dismissed as lacking in proof but now this idea must be given a hearing.

Wilson states that project's general contractor was North American Aviation in California but the project was managed out of Wright-Patterson Air Force Base in Ohio where German engineers who worked on rocket plane and flying disc projects were housed under secret contract with the United States government (41).

The Popular Mechanics article is based upon information obtained from working on the American perspective and going back in time. The Freedom Of Information Act was very skillfully employed in obtaining this information. What Mr. Wilson did not know was what the reader knows now, that there is a trail of information leading to the American nuclear saucer project which started in Germany in the 1930s. One example which links both lines of evidence and bringing them full-circle back to the German origin is one report recently obtained via FOIA on a particular German scientist working at that Wright-Patterson facility.

This is a December, 1946 report written by one of those captured German scientists working under contract for the USA, Dr. Franz J. Neugebauer, titled "Effect Of Power-Plant Weight On Economy Of Flight (Project No. NFE-64). Dr. Neugebauer was, in fact, one of those "booty scientists" brought to the USA under the auspices of Operation Paperclip. The Biographical Note in the report, "Effects Of Power-Plant Weight On the Economy Of Flight", describes Dr. Neugebauer as:

"Dr. Franz J. Neugebauer is the foremost German authority on this subject. An Expert on internal-combustion engines and a specialist for Diesel compound aircraft engines, he held leading positions at Junkers in Dessau and Munich from 1924 to 1943, and was director of the engineering department of the Institute for Aeronautical Research at Munich from 1943 to 1945.

Dr. Neugebauer is employed at present in the Propulsion Section, Analysis Division, Intelligence (T-2), AMC, Wright field, Dayton, Ohio" (42).

Two comments are in order. The first is that Junkers-Dessau is associated with a possible German saucer project designated "Schildkroete" which will be discussed later. The second comment is that Dr. Neugebauer was not brought to the USA to build diesel-powered aircraft. Diesel engines are much heavier than piston type aero-engines of those times. Dr. Neugebauer's relevant expertise is, in reality, his knowledge of the effects of heavy engines on aircraft performance and economy.

Nowhere in this report are the words "atomic rocket" mentioned but the implications are clear. As touched upon above, an atomic rocket's weight distribution would be somewhat different from that of a conventional rocket or aircraft. The nuclear reactor would be weighty but the fuel load would be lighter because no oxidizer, such as liquid oxygen, would be necessary. Also, the power output would be somewhat greater than an ordinary liquid fuel chemical rocket. The three variables as opposed to the already known figures for piston, jet or chemical rocket engines are greater engine weight, lesser fuel weight, and greater power output. A new equation was necessary if atomic rockets were to be fitted into an aircraft design calling for a certain speed, payload or range. It was Dr. Neugebauer's job to do this computation.

The following is a paragraph from the introduction of this report (43). It seems to say nothing but state the obvious until one thinks "atomic engine":

"Power-plant weight is a factor which affects flight performance; the greater the weight, the greater is that portion of the airplane and the drag which is affected by the power plant. In contrast to the effect of fuel consumption, the effect of power-plant weight cannot be easily determined. For example, it cannot be easily determined whether a certain reduction of fuel consumption is still advantageous if it involves an increase in power plant weight. This report aims to facilitate insight into these and similar questions."

Without ever mentioning the word "atomic", Dr. Neugebauer did the mathematical computations necessary to establish the feasibility of an atomic powered aircraft. Thanks to the work of Mr. Wilson, we know that at least advanced planning was undertaken with the goal of building an atomic powered flying saucer. There is no doubt that the Americans would not have involved captured German scientists in this project unless it was absolutely necessary to do so. The reason it was necessary was the same reason which other German scientists were employed in America's ballistic missile program. It was because both groups of German scientists has previous experience. Both groups worked on very similar projects in Germany during the war. These scientists and their projects were far ahead of the Americans in both these areas. The input of these scientists was absolutely essential if these projects were to succeed in a timely matter, meaning, ahead of the Soviets.

Two final points or comments should be added to this discussion. First, while the Peenemuende saucer project was run in and around Peenemuende, research and component work were probably also done in other facilities elsewhere within the Greater Reich. References to saucer research at some of these other sites by this or other writers may be, in fact, part of the overall Peenemuende project.

Second, historically speaking, the German atomic projects have always been minimized to say the least. For whatever reason, there seems to have been a concerted effort to deny German expertise in the field of atomic energy. Originally, this may have been government inspired. Now, however, it seems to be a mantra taken up as part of some agenda whose specifics remain clouded. "Nay-saying" regarding German atomic projects has become sheik and those who expound it imply knowledge and sophistication in their opinions. Anyone doubting the high degree of understanding possessed within the Third Reich concerning matters "atomic" should take a look at the evidence being put forth by on-site investigators and German language researchers which have arisen since the fall of the Berlin Wall. Much of this information is in book form available from Anum Verlag. Anyone with the interest and ability to read German language is urged to contact this publisher for a list of publications. After reviewing the evidence, German wartime expertise in atomic research sounds much less far-fetched than the nay-sayers would have you believe.

The Peenemuende Project

Sources and References

1. Goldstein, Sydney, 1948, pages 189 and 190, "Low-Drag and Suction Airfoils", Journal Of The Aeronautical Sciences, Volume 15, Number 4, University of Manchester, England

2. Pretsch, J., date unknown, "Umschlagbeginn und Absaugung Ein Breitrag zur Grenzschichttheorie", Report of the Aerodynamic Research Facility at Goettingen

3. Betz, A., 1961, page 1, in Boundary Layer And Flow Control edited by G.V. Lachmann, Pergamon Press, Oxford

4. Betz, A., 1961, page 6

5. Schlichting, H., 1942, "Die Grenzschicht and der ebenen Platte mit Absaugung and Ausblasen", Luftfahrt-Forschung

6. Kinner, Wilhelm, 1936, "Ueber Tragfluegel mit Kreisfoermigen

Grundriss", Vortraege der Hauptversammlung in Dresden, Band 16, Heft 6,

7. Hansen, M., 1938, "Messungen and Kreistragflaechen und Vergliech mit der Theorie der tragenden Flaeche", Vortraege der Hauptversammlung in Goettingen

8. Miranda, J. and P. Mercado, 1998, page 4, "Deutsche Kreisfluegelflugzeuge", Flugzug Profile

9. Rothkugel, Klaus-Peter, 2000, pages 1 and 2, "Dr. Alexander Lippisch der "Vater" der "fliegenden Untertassen", privately published information sheet

10. Sandner, Reinhardt, 1980, page 3, "Der Vater der fliegenden Untertasse 1st ein alter Ausburger", Neu Presse, number 19/17

11. ibid

12. U.S. Patent, Number 2,939,648, Granted June 7, 1960 filed March 28,1955, United States of America granted to H. Fleissner,"Rotating Jet Aircraft With Lifting Disc Wing And Centrifuging Tanks"

13. British Objectives Sub-Committee Report Number 143, "Information Obtained From Targets Of Opportunity In The Sonthosen Area, pages 4 and 5, 32 Bryanston Square, London

14. Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee Evaluation Report Number 289, 1945, Interrogation of Drs. Julius Schmitt, Ludwig Schmitt, and Heinrich Schmitt, of Dr. Heinrich Schmitt-Werke, K.G. Berchtesgarden

15. Kadmon, 2000, Ahnstern IX "Andreas Epp", Aorta c/o Petak, Postfach 778, A-1011, Wien, Austria

16. Vesco, Renato, 1976, page 93, Intercept UFO, Pinnacle Books, New York

17. Vesco, Renato, 1976, pages 135-136

18. Vesco, Renato, 1976, page 164

19. Vesco, Renato, 1976, page 168

20. Vesco, Renato, 1976, page 163

21. German Patent, 1943, Karl Nowak, German Patent Number 905847, Class 12g, Group 101, Subsequently issued by the German Federal Republic on March 8, 1954. "Verfahren und Einrichtung zur Aenderung von Stoffeigenschaften Oder Herstellung von stark expansionsfaehingen Stoffen" (English translation: Method and Arrangement to the change from material properties

or production of strong expansive capable matter)

22. Van Norstrand's Scientific Encyclopedia, 1954, pages 453-454 and 978-979.

23. Jesensky, Milos PhD. and Robert Lesniakiewicz, 1998, pages 51, 146, 151, "Wunderland" Mimozemske Technologie Treti Rise. Aos Publishing

24. Jesensky, Milos PhD. and Robert Lesniakiewicz, 1998, pages 41-43.

25. Heisenberg, Werner PhD., 1946, page 327, "Ueber die Arbeiten zur technichen Ausnutzung der Atomkernenergie in Deutschland" (In English: Concerning the Work Toward the Technical Exploitation of Nuclear Energy in Germany) courtesy of Mr. Klaus-Peter Rothkugel

26. British Intelligence Objectivers Sub-Committee Report Number 142, 1946, page 8, "Information Obtained From Targets Of Opportunity In The Sonthofen Area", London, courtesy of Friedrich Georg

27. Georg, Friedrich, 2000, page 222, Hitlers Siegeswaffen Band 1: Luftwaffe und Marine Geheim Nuklearwaffen des Dritten Reiches und ihre Traegersysteme, Anum Verlag, Schleusingen and Heinrich-Jung-Verlagsgesellschaft, mbH, Zella-Mehlis

28. Georg, Friedrich, 2000, pages 125, 154.

29. Powers, Thomas, 1993, Heisenberg's War The Secret History Of The German Bomb, Alfred A. Knopf, New York

30. Powers, Thomas, 1993, pages 130, 131, 132, 136, 137

31. Powers, Thomas, 1993, pages 131, 132, 135, 325

32. Powers, Thomas, 1993, pages 136, 138

33. Powers, Thomas, 1993, page 325

34. Georg, Friedrich, 2000, pages 188-190

35. Powers, Thomas, 1993, pages 131, 137, 143, 317

36. Powers, Thomas, 1993, pages 131, 137, 317, 416

37. Georg, Friedrich, 2000, page 125

38. Jesensky, Milos PhD., and Robert Lesniakiewicz, 1998, pages 146, 151,

39. Wilson, Jim, 2000, Popular Mechanics, "America's Nuclear Flying Saucer"

40. Wilson, Jim, 2000, page 71

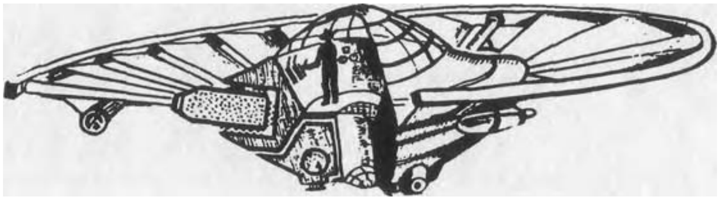
41. Wilson, Jim, 2000, page 68

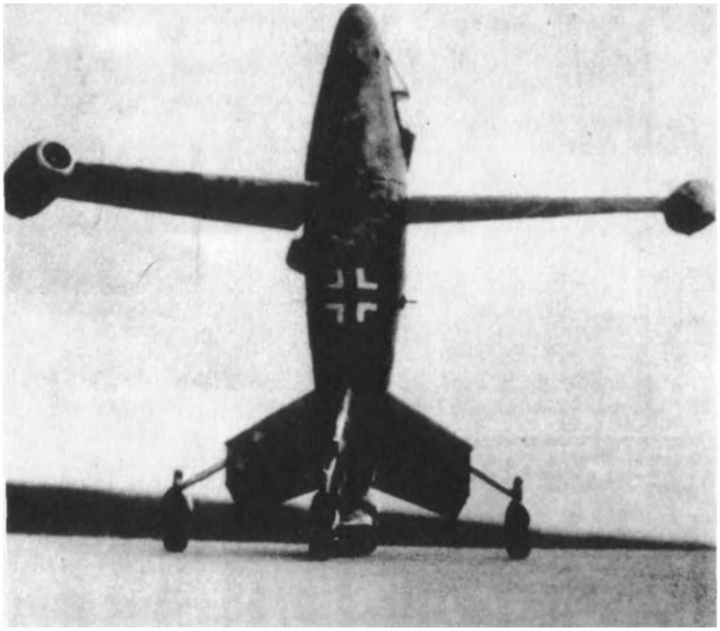
42. Neugebauer, Franz J. PhD., 1946, Technical Report: "Effect Of Power-Plant Weight On Economy Of Flight (Project No. NFE-64), Headquarters Air Material Command Wright Field, Dayton, Ohio

43. Neugebauer, Franz J. PhD., 1946, page 1

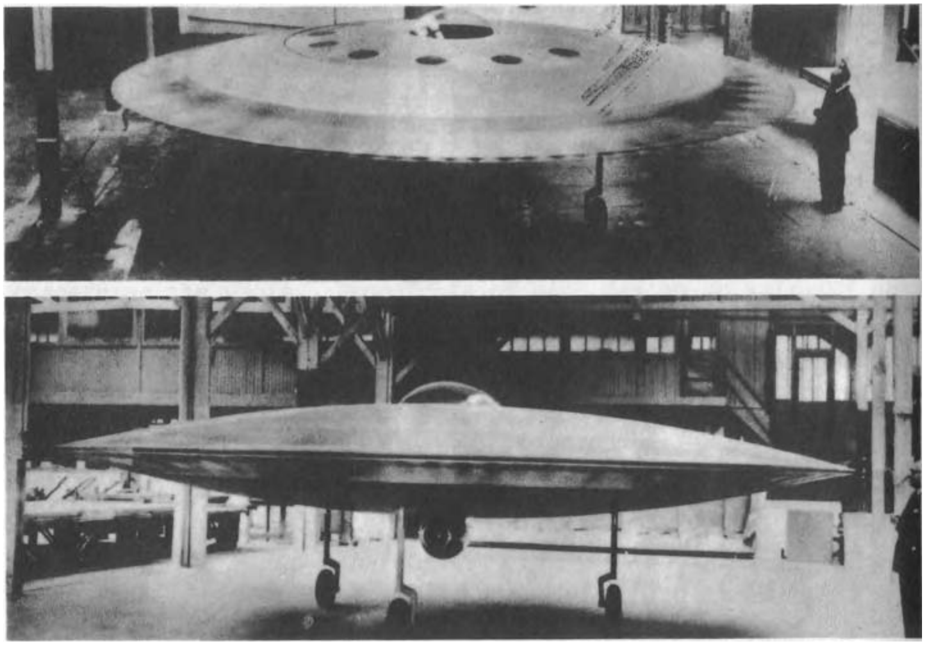
Section Summary

It can be said that the German flying disc program built upon itself, each innovation retaining something from a previous design yet incorporating a new innovation. This progressed through several steps until the original had seemingly nothing in common with final design. At each step a saucer project or at least a saucer design, seems to have been spun off. Each of these spin-offs was not an independent, stand-alone project but remained under the guidance and direction of an overall controlling authority. If viewed out-of-context, the multiplicity of designs and spin-offs have led to confusion concerning the whole. Proponents of each design or spin-off have championed the project with which they were familiar as "the" German saucer project. Let us try to keep idea in mind when discussing the next group of saucers which may or may not have had a relationship to those already discussed.

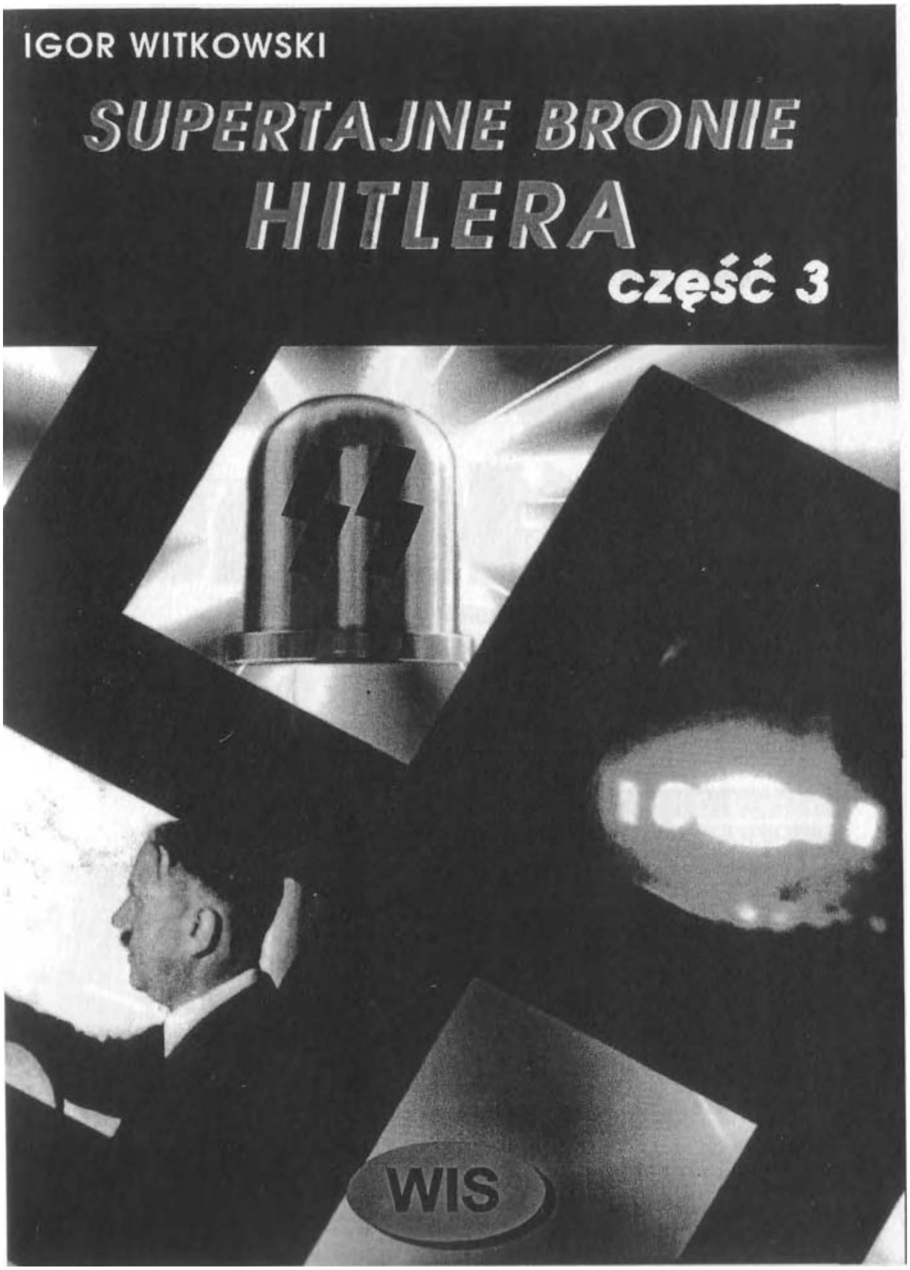




Top: Diagram of the Scriever-Habermohl flying disk. Bottom: The Focke-Wulf powered wing design with three Lorin ramjet engines. The required initial velocity was to be provided by rockets mounted in the engines.



Top: These photos of French aerospace designer Rene Couzinet's flying saucer with a diameter of 27 feet appeared in the Philadelphia Inquirer on July 5, 1955. He died in a sudden auto accident shortly afterward. Left: The famous Darmstadt Saucer, a photo taken in August 1953 near the German city of Darmstadt.


IGOR WITKOWSKI
SUPERTAJNE BRONIE
HITLERA
część 3
WIS

A Polish language book on Hitler's secret weapons, including saucer and cylindrical aircraft.

Pekka Lahtinen
Ufojen arvoitus ratkeaa
Tulevatko ne tosiaan ulkoavaruudesta vai voiko kyseessä olla ihmisen oma keksintö? Entä pienet vihreät miehet?
158-2-11

A Finnish language book on Hitler's secret weapons, including saucer and cylindrical aircraft

CHAPTER FOUR:

THE GERMAN FIELD PROPULSION PROJECTS

THE VICTOR SCHAUBERGER MODELS

THE KM-2 ROCKET

FIELD PROPULSION SAUCERS
A German Eye Witness
A Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee Report
The Smoking Gun: An F.B.I. Report
Discussion of German Field Propulsion Saucer
Atomic Saucers Again
The Karl Schappeller Device

CHAPTER FOUR

German Field Propulsion Projects

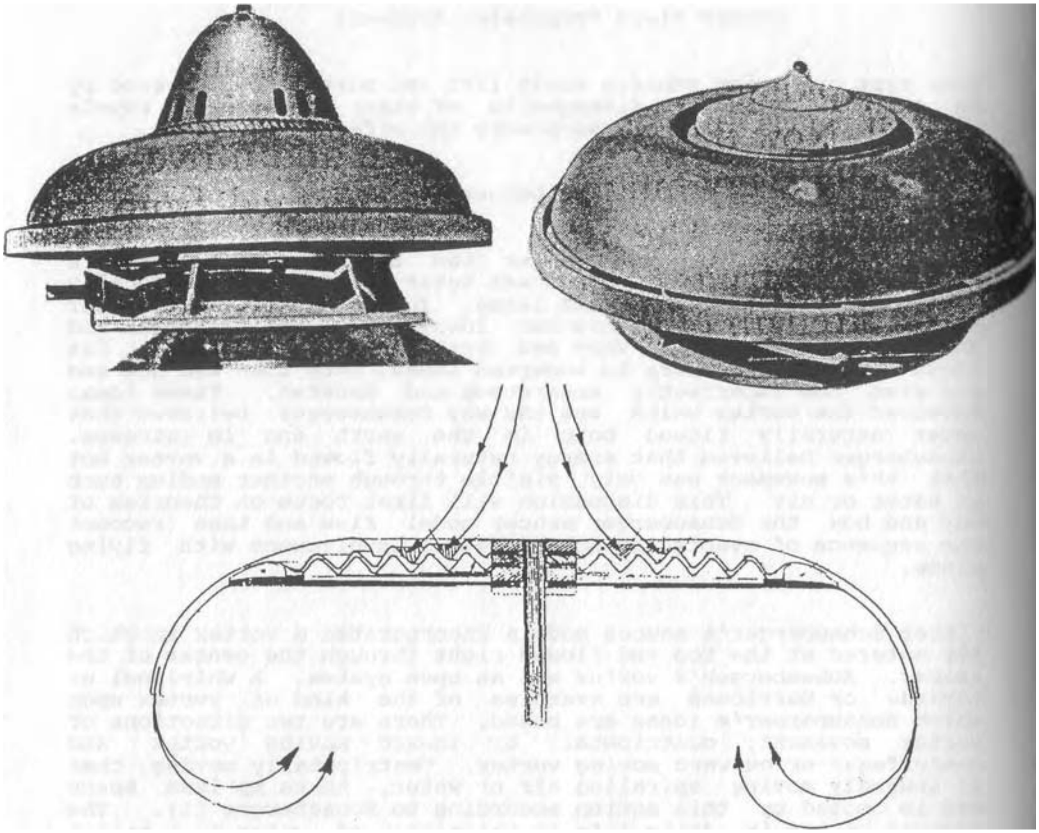
This type of flying vehicle would lift and move itself powered by an electric, magnetic, diamagnetic or ether field which repels earth's magnetic field or overpowers the effects of gravity.

The Viktor Schauberger Models

An Austrian, Viktor Schauberger was first and foremost a naturalist. His primary focus was water as found in naturally occurring streams, rivers and lakes. In observing the movement of water he formulated his own ideas about its movement and energetic properties. They are applicable in air also. His ideas are guite contrary to accepted ideas, both then and now and are even now imperfectly understood and debated. These ideas involved the vortex which was the way Schauberger believed that water naturally flowed both in the earth and in streams. Schauberger believed that energy naturally flowed in a vortex but that this movement was only visible through another medium such as water or air. This discussion will first focus on theories of why and how the Schauberger saucer model flew and then recount the sequence of events in Schauberger's involvement with flying discs.

Viktor Schauberger's saucer models incorporated a vortex in which air entered at the top and flowed right through the center of the saucer. Schauberger's vortex was an open system. A whirlpool or tornado or hurricane are examples of the kind of vortex upon which Schauberger's ideas are based. There are two directions of vortex movement, centripetal or inward moving vortex and centrifugal or outward moving vortex. Centripetally moving, that is inwardly moving spiraling air or water, takes up less space and is cooled by this motion according to Schauberger (1). The example we see in daily life is the motion of water in a toilet after flushing. He called this centripetal movement "implosion". Implosion was always accompanied by explosion as the fluid expanded again in an outward, centrifugal spiral. The process is first centripetal then centrifugal. The form this vortex took is really dictated by function according to Schauberger. The "function" is the energy flow. The spiral vortex is the shape the energy flow takes in its movement (2). Energy flows in at the top of the vortex in the characteristic double-spiral manner. These air molecules are imploded, that is, they are made more dense and they yield heat as they progress (3). Air molecules are squeezed tighter and tighter together as they move down the vortex until the sub-atomic particles themselves become unglued transforming into new and unrecognized forms of energy (4). As the vortex itself decreases in diameter implosion and speed are

Viktor Schauberger's Saucer Models



Top: Schauberger models. Bottom: Sectional diagram. The zig-zag is the air passage. The passage is a hollow space between two plates. As the saucer spins on its axis, the air enters and moves away from the center toward the rim following the up and down flow of the zig-zag. The spin causes individual tornado-like vortices to form as the spin causes the air flow to fold over on itself as it moves outward. Vortices become smaller in diameter and more "densified" until they reach the rim where they are released into the atmosphere, rapidly expand, and yield energy. Model is multi-section, copper. Courtesy Klaus-Peter Rothkugel increased until they reach the point within the vortex where centripetal forces stop and centrifugal forces take over.

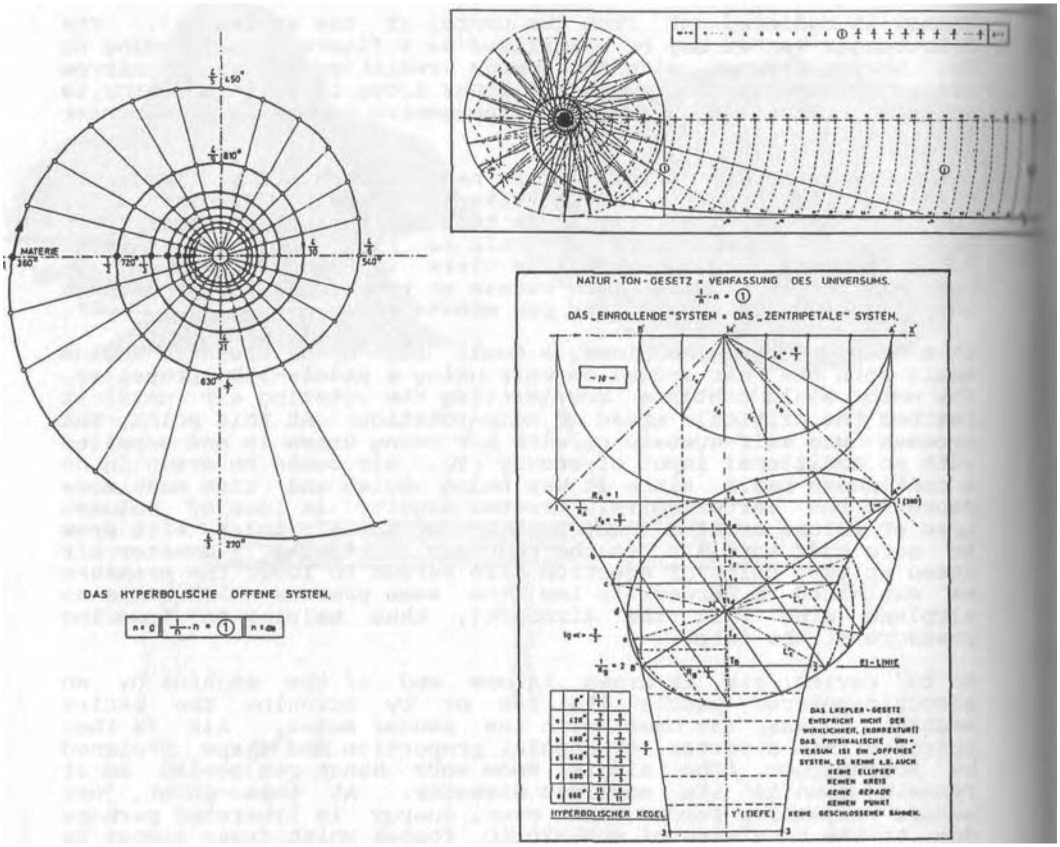
Energy is radiated out from the center of the vortex (5). The Schauberger vortex may be visualized as a figure "8" according to Dr. Gordon Freeman, with the energy radiating out at the narrow mid-point between the upper and lower loops (6). This energy is produces levitation. It may be diamagnetic energy as Schauberger believed (7).

Viktor Schauberger first built new designs for flumes to transport logs. He then built water purification machines using the principle of the vortex. He then built electric generators, heaters and coolers using only air as fuel. The breakthrough using machines was Schauberger's claim to have found a way to make his vortex machines auto-rotate at rotational speeds between 10,000 and 20,000 revolutions per minute (8).

In some Schauberger machines, a small high-speed electric engine would spin the air around an axis using a paddle-like propeller. The motor would continue accelerating the rotating air until it reached the critical speed of auto-rotation. At this point, the process was self-sustaining with air being drawn in and expelled with no additional input of energy (9). Air could be drawn in on a continuous basis since it was being cooled and thus made more dense in the vortex spiral. Greater density is loss of volume. Loss of volume created lower pressure at the air inlet with drew in more and more air as the reaction continued. Greater air speed at the point of ejection also served to lower the pressure as explained in Bernouli's Law (the same process which makes an airplane wing lift the aircraft), thus helping to lowering pressure at the inlet.

So to review: air is drawn in one end of the machine by an electric-powered, paddle-like fan or by spinning the entire machine as was the case with the saucer model. Air is then spiraled into a vortex of special proportion and shape designed by Schauberger. The air is made more dense yet cooled as it funnels down to its smallest diameter. At this point, just before expansive forces take over, energy is liberated perhaps due to the un-gluing of sub-atomic forces which frees energy in some manner currently imperfectly understood. The air begins to expand in a centrifugal motion as it warms. It is at this midway point that the air exits the saucer model at its periphery or lip of the saucer to expand centrifugally in the open atmosphere. Once a speed of 10,000 to 20,000 revolutions per minute is attained, the machine auto-rotates without need of the small electric-powered starter motor.

The exact proportions for the Schauberger pipes are designed geometrically. This geometry is of a rather esoteric nature. For instance, the bend of the spiral pipe is calculated using the Golden Section. For some time a true engineering genius, Dr. Gordon Freeman, has been writing to some interested parties and


MATERIE
360°
450°
810°
720°
540°
630°
270°
DAS HYPERBOLISCHE OFFENE SYSTEM.
n = 0
n = ∞
NATUR-TON-GESETZ = VERFASSUNG DES UNIVERSUMS.
DAS „EINROLLENDE" SYSTEM = DAS „ZENTRIPETALE" SYSTEM.
PI-LINIE
DAS KEPLER-GESETZ ENTSPRICHT NICHT DER WIRKLICHKEIT. (KORREKTUR!)
DAS PHYSIKALISCHE UNIVERSUM IST EIN „OFFENES" SYSTEM, ES KENNT z.B. AUCH
KEINE ELLIPSEN
KEINEN KREIS
KEINE GERADE
KEINEN PUNKT
KEINE GESCHLOSSENEN BAHNEN.
HYPERBOLISCHER KEGEL
Y'(TIEFE)

Top Left : The Hyperbolic Open System. The movement could be centripetal or centrifugal. Top Right: Law of Natural Tones resulting from the hyperbolic spiral. Bottom: The egg-shape, built according to the non-Euclidian Law of Natural Tones, correct some of the planetary motion laws of Kepler according to Schauberger.

explaining how certain shapes or wave patterns can impact conventional physics. He believes one needs to understand known science as well as a more esoteric doctrine in order to appreciate the nature of free-energy and some types of field propulsion UFO craft. The work of Viktor Schauberger is an example of this. In this work there remains a world of knowledge imperfectly understood by most of us.

Returning to the mechanism by which these models flew, Schauberger himself always made the point of the fact that his saucer models were constructed of diamagnetic materials. Diamagnetic materials are those which are repel a magnetic field. Schauberger considered copper diamagnetic (10) and the surfaces of the saucer models coming in contact with air were made of copper.

As mentioned above, the very atomic structure of these atoms may have altered by this process. Coats tells us that electrons, protons and neutron may have been separated from one another (11). It has been suggested that the electrons and protons of these atoms were stripped from their nuclei. Their opposing charges were free and attracted one another resulting in their mutual annihilation of one another yielding a release of energy (12). This would occur exactly at the point where centripetal forces ceased and centrifugal forces began, these air particles reversed their spin and altered their rotation.

Further, Coats explains that the neutrons, which were left over in the process described above, and contrary to accepted views, are themselves magnetic (13). These neutrons were expelled from the saucer centrifugally along with water, water vapor and air which had not reacted as stated above. These "magnetic" neutrons, on the outside of the saucer body may serve to increase the diamagnetic reaction of the copper saucer which would be both pushing away from the earth and the cloud of surrounding "magnetically charged" neutrons. In other words, the Schauberger disc may have been repelling away from the magnetically charged atmosphere which it itself had just created.

Dr. Richard LeFors Clark proposes a more detailed description of similar ideas involving the mechanism of the Bloch Wall (14). This will be discussed in the section involving Karl Schappeller but it should be kept in mind while reading these ideas that Dr. Clark had Schauberger in mind. These ideas and others pertaining to both Schauberger and Karl Schappeller will be presented in the Schappeller section to follow.

The history of the Schauberger flying disc models is as follows. According to Alexandersson, Aloys Kokaly, a German, began work for Viktor Schauberger in the early days of the Second World War producing certain parts for a "flying object" which were hard to obtain in Austria. The parts were to be delivered to the Kertl Works in Vienna which was the site of this work at the time. The Kertl Works were operating "on higher authority" in association with Schauberger. Kokaly was received at Kertl by its chief and told by this individual, somewhat bitterly, that one of these strange contraptions had already flown. As a matter of fact it had gone right through the roof of the Kertl plant (15). The year was 1940.

Coats tells us that the purpose of this device was twofold. First, it was to investigate free energy production. This could be done by running a shaft to the rapidly rotating wheel-like component which was auto-rotating at between 10,000 and 20,000 rpm. Using reduction gearing, some of that energy could be mechanically coupled to an electric generator producing electricity at no cost. The second purpose of these experiments was to test Schauberger's theories on levitation and flight (16).

Two prototypes were said to have been built at Kertl. The test flight was done without Schauberger's presence or even his permission to do the test. The model flew as described above but it did considerable destruction to the Kertl Works so there were mixed feels concerning the success of this flight. The force of levitation was so strong that it sheared six 1/4 inch diameter high-tensile steel anchor bolts on its way to the roof. Coats reports that according to Schauberger's calculations based upon previous tests, a 20 centimeter diameter device of this sort, with a rotational velocity of 20,000 rpm, would have lifted a weight of 228 tons (17).

A few years earlier in 1934 Schauberger had met with Hitler to discuss alternative energy ideas (18). Nothing come of this meeting immediately but after Germany annexed Austria in 1938, Schauberger became involved in research at Professor Kotschau's laboratory in Nuremberg. Assisted by his son, Walter, who had just completed engineering studies at a technical college in Dresden, Viktor Schauberger went to work with a Dr. Winter on a plan to extract electrical energy directly form a water flow. Some success was achieved. Alexandersson reports that a potential of 50,000 volts was achieved but that no practical results came from this at that time (19).

Probably based upon the fact that Viktor Schauberger was a veteran of the Great War, he was inducted into the Waffen-SS in 1943. This put him under the direct control of SS chief Heinrich Himmler. Schauberger was ordered to castle Schoenbrunn near the Mauthausen concentration camp in Austria. There he was to select qualified prisoners, twenty to thirty craftsmen, technicians and engineers, and begin work on a new, secret weapon. Schauberger arranged improved conditions for his team and produced another flying saucer model (20).

In May, 1945, because of the deteriorating circumstances of the war, Schauberger was re-located to Leonstein in Upper Austria by the SS. There, just after a successful test flight of his latest device, it was seized by an American intelligence unit which appeared to be well informed about it. Schauberger was debriefed by American intelligence, according to Coats, detained, and told not to participate in further research (21).

Coats was actually able to locate a surviving example of a Schauberger saucer model. Excellent photographs of this device are to be found in his book, Living Energies, as well as a dissection of it into its various components. It is unclear if this device was one of the earlier (1940) or later (1945) projects.

After the war, Schauberger worked on agricultural projects in Austria until one day in the late 1957 when he was contacted by two Americans. They promised Viktor almost unlimited resources if he and his son Walter would work for them in the United States (22). Discussion concerning the exact source and motives for this offer are beyond the scope of this discussion but suffice it to say that they were powerful interests. The Schaubergers were sent to Texas, near the Red River, where Viktor was asked to disclose everything he knew and Walter was asked to set Viktor's terminology into the standard language of physics and engineering. This whole episode proved extremely unsatisfactory for both Schaubergers and they returned to Austria after about three months. As a condition for their return, Viktor was asked to sign away his knowledge to this powerful concern. Viktor was given a contract in English, which he did not read. Nevertheless, the deal was done and the Schaubergers returned to Austria (23). Viktor, already in poor health, died five days later on September 25, 1958. Walter continued advancing his father's research in Austria until his death in 1997.

Coats provides us with pictures of one of the Schauberger saucers in question and an explanation of its workings (24). This saucer was composed of a number of copper plates bolted together. Air was drawn in at the to and into the rapidly spinning saucer which was set into motion by an electric motor. In this machine no paddles pushed upon the air to start it. Instead, a motor was used to spin the whole saucer model to the desired number of revolutions per minute. The air was thus spun rapid over channels formed by the upper and lower surfaces of two copper plates. On these plates alternate ridges and depressions on both plates kept the air moving in snake-like wave forms and it moved toward the periphery of the saucer. Because the saucer was rapidly spinning, the air was folded over upon itself as it moved laterally into many individual vortices. The air was rotating in these vortices and moving up and down between the ridged plates. It was also moving around as the saucer spun on its axis. This is a double-spiral motion which additionally duplicates the undulating motion seen on the Schauberger log flumes. The air was cooled and made more dense as it progressed towards the periphery. At and around the saucer the periphery, it was ejected into the atmosphere at great speed.

In this machine, centripetal air flow changes to centrifugal air flow at this periphery. The air, once outside the saucer, spirals away in a centrifugal motion. It is at this periphery, at the midline of the saucer, where the change of motion takes place. It is here that energy is liberated. It is this energy which gives the saucer its quality of levitation.

Sometimes the Coanda Effect is cited as a reason this saucer flew (25). Coanda effects, if present at all, are only a secondary force if Viktor Schauberger's calculations are correct. Coanda effects alone could never be powerful enough to generate the lifting force equal to 228 tons which Schauberger estimated his small model produced.

The important factual points to keep in mind are these: First, this saucer-model, probably in more than one version, actually flew. Second, one model still exists today. Therefore this "flying saucer" is a physical reality which can be photographed, touched and studied. Third, explanations of the mysterious energetic forces causing lift in this device should not be forgotten. The German scientific leadership was interested in implosion and in what Schauberger had to teach them but they did not necessarily want to be limited by the use of air to achieve these results. Instead, they may have wanted to use Schauberger ideas but actuating these principles with electronic components. We will see some ideas relating to Schauberger in a future example.

The Viktor Schauberger Models

Sources and References

1. Coats, Callum, 1996, page 276, Living Energies, Gateway Books, Bath, U.K.
2. Coats, Callum, 1996, page 46
3. Coats, Callum, 1996, page 276
4. Coats, Callum, 1996, page 290
5. Freeman, Gordon PhD., 1999, personal correspondence
6. ibid
7. Coats, Callum, 1996, 290
8. Coats, Callum, 1996, 287
9. ibid
10. Coats, Callum, 1996, page 292
11. Coats, Callum, 1996, pages 290-292

12. Coats, Callum, 1996, page 292

13. ibid

14. Clark, Richard LeFors PhD., 1987, "The Earth Grid, Human Levitation And Gravity Anomalies" in Anti-Gravity And The World Grid, edited by David Hatcher Childress, Adventures Unlimited Press, Stelle, Illinois

15. Alexandersson, Olaf, 1990, page 87, Living Water. Gateway Books, The Hollies, Wellow Bath, U.K.

16. Coats, Callum, 1996, page 287

17. ibid

18. Kadmon, date unknown, pages 10, 23, Ahnstern 1, "Viktor Schauberger", Aorta c/o Petak, Postfach 788, A-1011, Wien, Austria

19. Alexandersson, Olaf, 1990, pages 89-91

20. Coats, Callum, 1996, page 11

21. ibid

22. Coats, Callum, 1996, page 15

23. Coats, Callum, 1996, page 27

24. Coats, Callum, 1996, pages 287-293

25. Reba, Imants, 1966, page 86, "Applications Of The Coanda Effect", Scientific American

The KM-2 Rocket

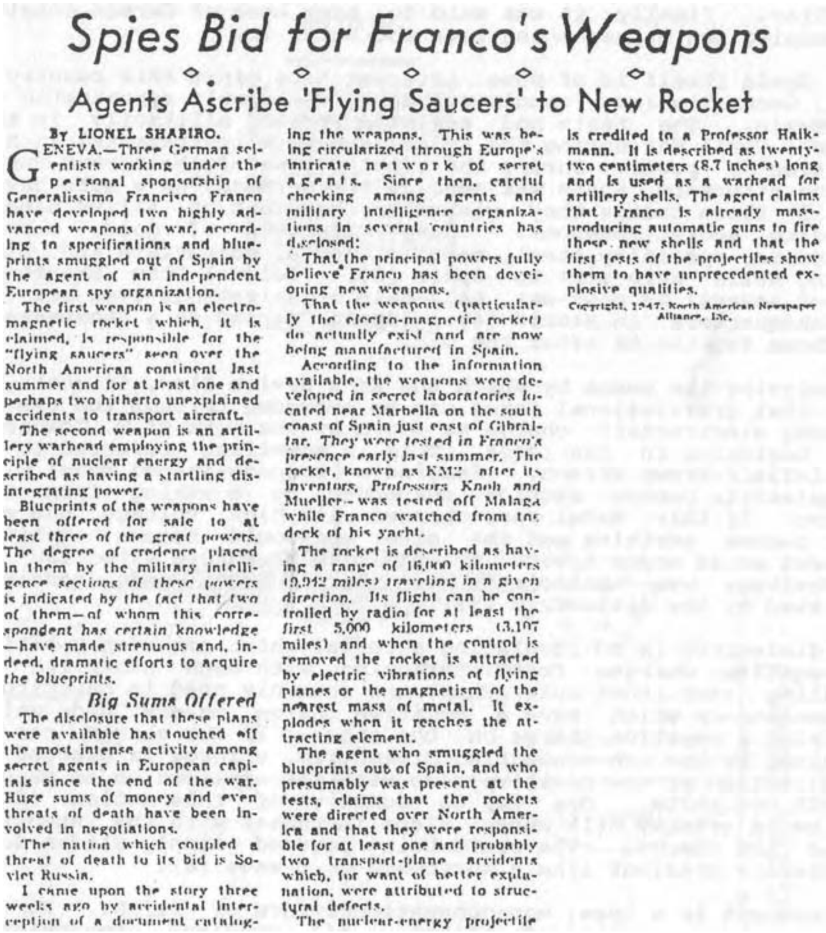
A shred of evidence comes down to us though the years in the form of a newspaper article by Lionel Shapiro in the Denver Post, dated November 9, 1947, and titled "Spies Bid for Franco's Weapons". (Please refer to a copy of that article). It should be noted that this was a few months after the summer of 1947, the first and largest UFO flap in history, which included the Kenneth Arnold sighting and the flying saucer activity of Roswell. It should also be noted that the Denver Post was nor is not a tabloid publication.

In doing research, this newspaper was contacted in an attempt to learn the whereabouts of the author, Lionel Shapiro. Unlike so many newspapers in the United States which have been purchased and merged by conglomerates, this newspaper is still intact and in existence. Unfortunately, no record could be found of Mr. Shapiro in their personnel files although they did maintain files going back that far. Also, no record could be found in their sister publication, The Rocky Mountain News. It was suggested that Mr. Shapiro was "a stringer", that is, a writer who did not work directly for the newspaper and whose work was purchased on a piece by piece basis. His work seems to have been channeled through the North American Newspaper Alliance. More of Mr. Shapiro's history and connections will unfold as the tale progresses.

This article describes two devices. The first is an "electromagnetic rocket", sometimes referred to later as the "KM-2 rocket" in other literature. The second is a nuclear warhead small enough to be fired by an artillery piece. The nuclear, warhead which is affixed to a cannon projectile, is novel at this time and is interesting since such devices were built and fired shortly thereafter by the United States military. The article's description of the nuclear cannon is correct. This was a German invention and was under development in Germany during the latter stages of the war. A prototype was even built and it carried the German designation of DKM 44 (1). This very cannon was copied by the Americans and became the T-131 which fired a nuclear warhead (2).

The discussion of the nuclear cannon is really beyond the scope of this book but what is important to bear in mind concerning this discussion is that if fifty percent of this article has proven to be accurate. The nuclear cannon was built and it stemmed from a German prototype. Does this not at least raise the possibility that the other fifty percent is accurate also?

Returning to the electromagnetic rocket itself, this device is right on point for the discussion of field propulsion. Some points are ascertained in reading this article. Its description as a "rocket" would lead one to believe it was cylindrical in shape rather than saucer-shaped. It is suggested that this



Spies Bid for Franco's Weapons

◆

Agents Ascribe 'Flying Saucers' to New Rocket

By LIONEL SHAPIRO.

GENEVA.—Three German scientists working under the personal sponsorship of Generalissimo Francisco Franco have developed two highly advanced weapons of war, according to specifications and blueprints smuggled out of Spain by the agent of an independent European spy organization.

The first weapon is an electromagnetic rocket which, it is claimed, is responsible for the "flying saucers" seen over the North American continent last summer and for at least one and perhaps two hitherto unexplained accidents to transport aircraft.

The second weapon is an artillery warhead employing the principle of nuclear energy and described as having a startling disintegrating power.

Blueprints of the weapons have been offered for sale to at least three of the great powers. The degree of credence placed in them by the military intelligence sections of these powers is indicated by the fact that two of them—of whom this correspondent has certain knowledge—have made strenuous and, indeed, dramatic efforts to acquire the blueprints.

Big Sums Offered

The disclosure that these plans were available has touched off the most intense activity among secret agents in European capitals since the end of the war. Huge sums of money and even threats of death have been involved in negotiations.

The nation which coupled a threat of death to its bid is Soviet Russia.

I came upon the story three weeks ago by accidental interception of a document cataloging the weapons. This was being circularized through Europe's intricate network of secret agents. Since then, careful checking among agents and military intelligence organizations in several countries has disclosed:

That the principal powers fully believe Franco has been developing new weapons.

That the weapons (particularly the electro-magnetic rocket) do actually exist and are now being manufactured in Spain.

According to the information available, the weapons were developed in secret laboratories located near Marbella on the south coast of Spain just east of Gibraltar. They were tested in Franco's presence early last summer. The rocket, known as KM2 after its inventors, Professors Knoh and Mueller—was tested off Malaga while Franco watched from the deck of his yacht.

The rocket is described as having a range of 16,000 kilometers (9,942 miles) traveling in a given direction. Its flight can be controlled by radio for at least the first 5,000 kilometers (3,107 miles) and when the control is removed the rocket is attracted by electric vibrations of flying planes or the magnetism of the nearest mass of metal. It explodes when it reaches the attracting element.

The agent who smuggled the blueprints out of Spain, and who presumably was present at the tests, claims that the rockets were directed over North America and that they were responsible for at least one and probably two transport-plane accidents which, for want of better explanation, were attributed to structural defects.

The nuclear-energy projectile is credited to a Professor Halkmann. It is described as twenty-two centimeters (8.7 inches) long and is used as a warhead for artillery shells. The agent claims that Franco is already mass-producing automatic guns to fire these new shells and that the first tests of the projectiles show them to have unprecedented explosive qualities.

Copyright, 1947, North American Newspaper Alliance, Inc.

Post-War German science for Generalissimo Francisco Franco. This is from the Denver Post, November 9, 1947, four months after flying saucers were seen all over the USA.

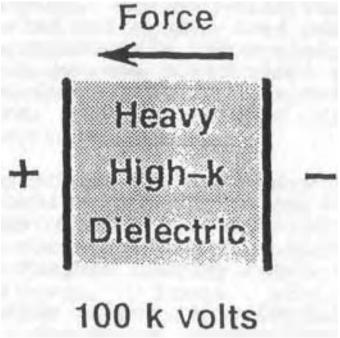
device was responsible for the flying saucer sightings over the USA that previous summer. This speaks for its operational range. It was said to have been tested off Malaga while Franco watched. The device was constructed in the town of Marbella, east of Gibraltar. Finally, it was said to have been of German origin, even naming the German scientists who built it.

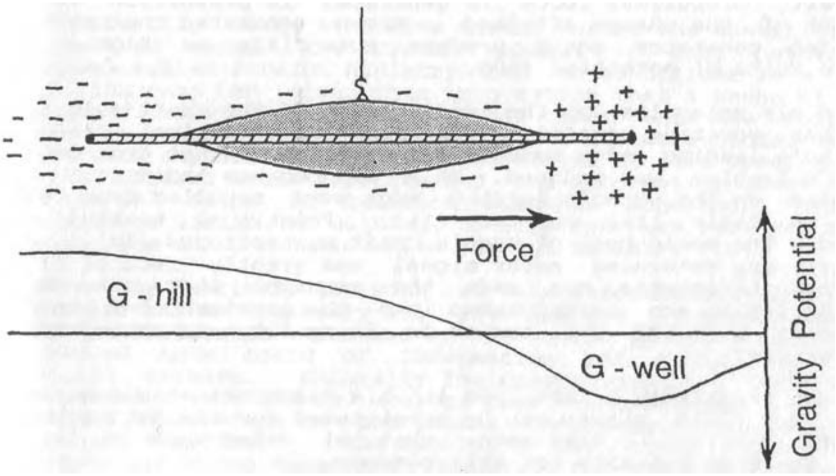
Even Spain itself is of some interest here since this country's ruler, Generalissimo Francisco Franco, was openly sympathetic to the Nazis. The Nazis had assisted Franco militarily in the Spanish Civil War during the 1930s and were instrumental in his retention of power. During the final stages of the Second World War and afterward Spain was seen, by the Germans as a safe haven for all those things they wished to keep out of Allied hands, including secret weapons. Many shipments of gold, secret blueprints, specialty steel, machine tools, scientists and high ranking Nazis were sent to Spain (3). Colonel Otto Skorzeny, head of several SS post-war, self-help organizations even set up his headquarters in Madrid (4). Spain served as a home-away-from-home for the SS after the war.

In analyzing the means by which the KM-2 device flew, it must be noted that gravitational force can be overcome through the use of a strong electrostatic charge as shown by the work of T. Townsend Brown beginning in the 1920s. This is sometimes referred to as the Biefield-Brown Effect. Imagine a torpedo-shaped model with a dielectric center section suspended by a string from the ceiling. If this model were charged with high voltage, one end would become positive and the other end would become negative. Movement would occur toward the positively charged direction if the voltage was sufficient and the charged ends remained separated by the dielectric (5).

This dielectric is an insulating material which can keep positive and negative charges from interacting with each other and so canceling each other out. They are commonly used in capacitors or condensers which have a positive charge on one side while retaining a negative charge on the other. If the charge can be contained by the non-conducting dielectric, a force is exerted in the direction of the positive side with the application of 75,000 to 300,000 volts. One way to conceive of this action is to imagine a gravity hill whose slope increases with the intensity of the ion charge. The craft being powered simply slides down the gravity gradient like a surfboard on a wave (6).

This concept is a new, non-conventional form of flight. It is non-aerodynamic method of flight. All previous conventional flight had either been through the use of lighter than air balloons, winged craft powered by propellers, jets or rockets or the brute force of rockets themselves. Using this method, Brown advocated defeating gravity by generating another form of energy over which gravity could be surfed. It is a form of field propulsion.


Force
Heavy
High–k
Dielectric
+
–
100 k volts


Force
G - hill
G - well
Gravity Potential

T.T. Brown found that when strong electric charges are separated by a dielectric, movement occurs towards the positive charge as if gravity were reduced on the positive side or as if the charged object were sliding down a hill.

T. Townsend Brown demonstrated this means of propulsion to the American military during the 1950s. He used a saucer-shaped model tethered only by a high voltage line supplying the charge to the model (7). During that decade Brown built increasingly larger, faster models using this method. Brown found that a saucer or a triangle was the best shape for this type of flying craft. A secret proposal, code-named Winterhaven, was to develop a Mach 3 antigravity saucer interceptor was put forth to the U.S. Air Force (8). This project was further developed through the 1960s but after this all traces of this concept seem to disappear.

But where Brown is overlooked is not only did he have a method of electrostatic propulsion but he also had a self-contained method to impart this charge to a flying craft. He invented a flame-jet generator or electrokenetic generator which supplied the necessary high voltage in a light weight, compact manner (9).

The flame-jet generator utilized a jet engine with an electrified needle mounted in the exhaust nozzle to inject negative ions in the jet's exhaust stream. A corresponding but positive charge is automatically built up upon the leading front edge of the craft. As long as there is no leakage through the dielectric or insulating material, in this case through the wings and body of the craft, propulsive force is generated in proportion to the strength of the charge attained. Brown estimated that such a flame-jet generator could produce potentials as high as 15 million volts of potential (10).

Ionized air molecules on the leading edge of the craft's surface had other positive benefits. The positive electrical field on the wing's leading edge reduced air friction so that drag caused by air molecules was reduced. This was because individual air molecules on the wing's leading edge were repelled from each other by their like charges (11). Frictional heating was reduced. The sonic boom of such a craft was softened (12). And finally, any returning radar signal was greatly reduced (13). Dr. Paul LaViolette has made the argument that all these characteristics are incorporated into the American B-2 bomber, concluding that the B-2 bomber is in reality an anti-gravity aircraft (14).

As Brown repeatedly points out in his Electrokinetic Generator patent, any fluid stream can be substituted for the jet engine's fuel and air (15). This means that hot water vapor or steam itself would be suitable for this purpose.

If T. Townsend Brown had been working on this form of flight since the 1920s, is it not conceivable that others were also? Remember that the KM-2 device is described as an "electromagnetic rocket". If a combination design is considered, one which combines the electrokinetic apparatus with the electrokinetic generator, a picture emerges which would seem to fulfill the description given to the KM-2 "electromagnetic rocket".

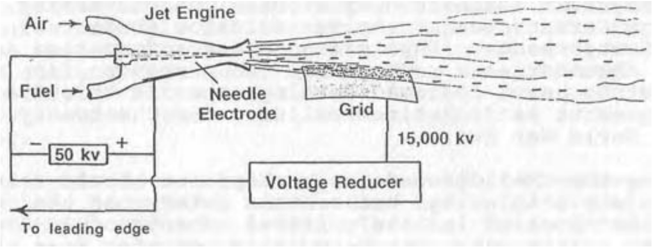
The real question may be if the flow of this knowledge went from Brown to the Germans or from the Germans to Brown as was the case with so much high technology in the post-war years. T. T. Brown's early collaborator and mentor was a Dr. Paul Biefield a Professor of Physics and Astronomy at Dennison University. Dr. Biefield was a German speaker who was a fellow student of Albert Einstein in Switzerland. Physicists share information across international boundaries. There is no reason for German scientists not to have followed developments in this Biefield-Brown Effect, as it is sometimes called, for the twenty years leading up to World War Two.

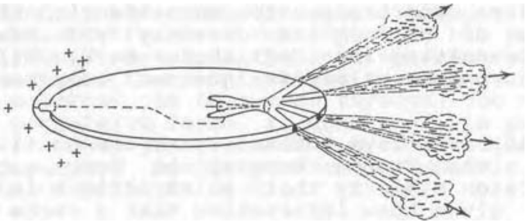
Before leaving the KM-2 discussion, perhaps we should return to the reporter who originally broke this story of the German "Electromagnetic Rocket" in 1947, Lionel Shapiro for a closer look at who he really was. It seems this reporter does have a history of breaking or leaking stories through the North American Newspaper Alliance. These stories which, prior to his involvement, could only be classified as "secret". The point in question is a 1946 report, brought to our attention though the extensive research of Dr. Milos Jesensky and Mr. Robert Lesniakiewicz and translated into English for me by Milos Vnenk. This account is of post-wartime intrigue can only be outlined here.

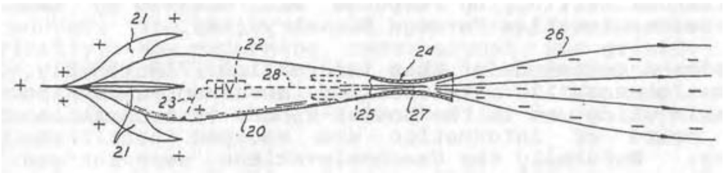
On October 13, 1945, over five months after the hostilities in Europe had ended, the French embassy in Prag notified the Czechoslovakian Foreign Ministry that an SS officer in a French detention camp had given them information that a cache of secret documents existed near Prag. This cache took the form of a tunnel in which 32 boxes of secret documents were hidden and were wired with explosives before being sealed at its opening. The French offered their services and the information given to them by the SS officer in question, Guenther Achenbach. But even after three months of waiting, no response was received by the French from the Czechoslovakian Foreign Ministry (16).

Somehow the Americans got wind of this information. Incredibly, the Americans on February 13, 1946 mounted an armed incursion into Czechoslovakia which was in the Soviet sphere of occupation, retrieved this hoard of information and escaped back into occupied Germany. Naturally the Czechoslovakians were furious and demanded and got an apology from the Americans. They also demanded the return of the German documents stolen from their sovereign territory. The Americans did return documents but probably not those sensitive documents for which the expedition was mounted (17).

Dr. Jesensky and Mr. Lesniakiewicz have made an extensive study of the German technical facilities surrounding Prag and the purposes for these facilities. It is their conclusion that the sensitive technical information recovered and which prompted this dangerous action was nothing other than plans of the German disc airplane, the "V-7" (18).


Air
Jet Engine
Fuel
Needle Electrode
Grid
15,000 kv
−
50 kv
+
Voltage Reducer
To leading edge




21
22
24
26
28
HV
23
20
25
27
21

Top: T.T. Brown's flame-jet generator, capable of supplying millions of volts. Middle: Brown's saucer design which is definitely food for thought. Bottom: Brown's electric rocket incorporating flame-jet generator. The KM-2 rocket must have been a very similar device.

It was Lionel Shapiro, writing under the name Lionel S. B. Shapiro who broke this story for the North American Newspaper Alliance (19). As confirmation, it can be added that the story was also covered by Ms. Lux Taub in the Swedish publication "Expressen" with stories on 2/19/46, 2/22/46 and 2/24/46 (20).

In the immediate post-war world there seems to have been a relaxation on the release German technical information. Not the detailed analytic work done by the various Allied intelligence teams combing the carcass of the dead Reich, but the popular reporting by Shapiro and others who received the "o.k." to publish brief stories recounting Nazi technology which would be squelched later as the cold war got underway.

But even given this relaxation, what are the chances of one reporter stumbling upon both the stories of the electromagnetic rocket and the U.S. incursion into Czechoslovakia, first, and on his own? It is also noteworthy that both of these stories dealt with the topic of this book, or at least one which is related to that theme. Mr. Shapiro must have been a very well connected reporter indeed! He is also an excellent source of information.

A point of speculation should be made concerning the KM-2 device. As stated above, T. T. Brown believed that water vapor or steam was a suitable medium for his electrokenetic generator. Water vapor is present in the atmosphere, as we all know. A small atomic engine, such as was mentioned earlier in connection with the Messerschmitt P-1073, burning and being cooled by atmospheric gasses, might provide enough water vapor to enable the electrokenetic generator to produce the high voltage required. This would be an atomic powered field propulsion device. Further, Friedrich Georg gives us details on an atomic steam engine with the Germans were designing to power a propeller driven aircraft (21). An easy substitution of a device similar to the Brown electrokenetic generator for the propellers could have been made enabling a device with all the characteristics given for the KM-2 electromagnetic rocket to have been born. And of course Dr. Giuseppe Belluzzo would have been waiting and willing to do the plumbing.

The KM-2 Rocket

Sources and References

1. Georg, Friedrich, 2000, pages 171-173

2. ibid
3. Infield, Glenn B., 1981, pages 179, 192, Skorzeny Hitler's Commando, St. Martin's Press, New York

4. Infield, Glenn B., 1981, pages 173, 183

5. LaViolette, Paul A. Ph.D., 1993, pages 84-85, "The U.S. Antigravity Squadron" in Electrogravitics Systems Reports On A New Propulsion Methodology edited by Thomas Valone, M.A., P.E., 1994, Integrity Research Institute, Washington D.C.

6. ibid

7. ibid

8. LaViolette, Paul A. Ph.D., 1993, page 87

9. U.S. Patent Number 3,022,430, Granted: 2/20/62 to T.T. Brown, titled "Electrokinetic Generator"

10. ibid

11. LaViolette, Paul A. Ph.D., 1993, page 93

12. LaViolette, Paul A. Ph.D., 1993, page 87

13. LaViolette, Paul A. Ph.D., 1993, page 88

14. LaViolette, Paul A. Ph.D., 1993

15. U.S. Patent Number 3,022,430, Granted: 2/20/62 to T.T. Brown, titled "Electrokinetic Generator"

16. Jesensky, Milos Ph.D., and Robert Lesniakiewicz, 1998, pages 98-102, "Wunderland" Memozemske Technologie Treiti Rise. Aos Publishing

17. Jesensky, Milos Ph.D. and Robert Lesniakiewicz, 1998, page 100

18. Jesensky, Milos Ph.D. and Robert Lesniakiewicz, 1998, page 102

19. Jesensky, Milos Ph.D. and Robert Lesniakiewicz, 1998, page 100

20. Jesensky, Milos Ph.D. and Robert Lesniakiewicz, 1998, page 101

21. Georg, Friedrich, 2000, pages 87-89, Hitlers Sieqeswaffen Band 1: Luftwaffe Und Marine Geheime Nuklearwaffen des Dritten Reiches und ihre Traeaersysteme. Amun Verlag, Heinrich-Jung Verlagsgesellschaft mbH.

Field Propulsion Saucers

The existence of World War Two German field propulsion flying saucers is a topic which is denied by virtually every reputable authority in aviation history. It is also denied by many researchers studying German saucers. The problem is that in the years immediately following the Second World War the earth's skies suddenly began to be populated by flying craft which did some remarkable things. They flew at unheard of speeds. They made very sharp turns, seemingly non-aerodynamic turns, even at this extreme speed. They lacked the glowing tail of jets or rockets but they glowed or gave off light at night from their periphery or from the whole craft. They were silent or almost silent. Sometimes they gave off sounds that an electric generator or motor might make. Sometimes vehicles with electrically based ignition systems ceased to operate in the presence of these saucers. No government claimed these flying craft, yet they were seen all over the world.

The press and popular culture attributed these unusual craft to an extraterrestrial source. Yet, after over fifty years, no real proof for this assertion has ever come forth. Let's come back down to earth. By all accounts these saucer were solid and material in nature. Perhaps it is time to attribute their origin to a solid, material source.

It seems only proper to begin searching for an explanation for field propulsion saucers with the very sources which we now know built conventional flying saucers, the Germans of the Third Reich. The earliest reference to a field propulsion saucer being a German invention is from a 1960 book by Michael X in which it is described as a "flying egg" (1). Michael X., under the name Michael X. Barton, is also the author who, in 1968, wrote The German Saucer Story. In the second book returns to the theme again (2). This time he cites a source. His primary informant, Hermann Klaas, describes twelve secret weapons to Barton. They are:

1. The flying disc
2. A tank made entirely of one piece of metal
3. The sound wave weapon
4. A laser beam weapon
5. A flaming artificial cloud
6. A robot bomb
7. A charged cloud weapon
8. An armor piercing projectile
9. The electromagnetic KM-2 rocket
10. A paralyzing ray
11. Electronic ball lighting
12. The flying bottle, tube, sphere, etc.

Thirty-two years later we certainly know that some of these weapons did exist. It has been confirmed that the Germans were working on weapons numbered 1, 2, 3, 6, and 8 for instance. It has been confirmed that the Germans were working on x-ray or gamma ray weapons as well as another type, possible laser weapons. It has been confirmed that the Germans were working on a gaseous cloud as a means of combating enemy bombers. So in view of this track record, his claim of research on a "flying bottle" should be given serious consideration.

But what is the specific evidence which would cause us to believe that the Germans were working on a field propulsion saucer? As one paws through the literature on German saucers, some evidence is encountered which could indicate field propulsion vehicles. There are the still pictures which will be discussed later on. Here, we will focus on just three pieces of evidence, that of an eyewitness, a German pilot, who saw such things on the ground, a Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report and an F.B.I. report. The F.B.I. report was taken years after the war but for reasons which will be discussed, there is reason to conclude this report has merit.

German Eye Witnesses

The first report comes to us courtesy of researcher Horst Schuppmann. A friend of Mr. Schuppmann's interviewed an eyewitness to German saucers during the Second World War. This report first appeared in the 1998 Geheimtechnologien. Wunderwaffen Und Irdischen Facetten Des UFO-Phaenomens by Karl-Heinz Zunneck (3).

The subject of this interview was a German pilot who flew many missions in a JU-52, taking off and touching down in rough, presumably outlying airfields. The Junkers JU-52 was an aircraft used by the Luftwaffe for many roles and could be described as a mainstay or a workhorse. It was a transport airplane, a troop carrier and even had been used as a bomber. It resembled and was used in a similar way to the American Douglas Dakota or DC-3. The main difference between the two aircraft was that the JU-52 had three engines as opposed to the Dakota's two and the JU-52 lacked a traditional airframe, instead deriving structural strength from a unique corrugated metal shell, which also made the appearance of the JU-52 distinctive.

The sighting in question was reported to the author, Mr. Zunneck, by Horst Schuppmann whose friend knew the pilot of the JU-52 in question. The date was July, 1944. Accompanying the pilot on this three and one-half hour flight was a co-pilot, a mechanic, and the radio man. The airplane took off from Brest-Deblin and flew on a westerly course to Lublin. The flight was unfolding smoothly which was somewhat abnormal for the particular time and stage of the war. Over Stettin Lagoon preparations were made to land. A large white cross was sighted which was the marker for their goal, a meadow landing strip. The aircraft descended, landed normally and rolled toward a group of bushes which would hide the aircraft from view.

Then things took a decided turn to the abnormal. Harsh orders were received that the pilot, co-pilot and mechanic were not to exit the airplane. Suddenly, the radio man had vanished. The others waited an hour in vain for his return. Finally, the pilot decided to get out of the airplane and find his missing crewman, without orders, and on his own.

On the airfield itself nobody was to be seen. There was only one building visible which was a lonely hanger. The pilot, ever concerned with maintaining cover, headed straight for this hanger. Upon arrival he opened an narrow, high sliding door and entered, hoping to receive some information. No person was to be seen but what the pilot did see bewildered him so that the image was deeply ingrained in his mind.

There in the hanger stood three or four very large, round, dark dish shaped metal constructions on telescope-like leg stands. The objects were about 6 meters off the ground and the objects themselves were 12 to 15 meters in diameter. The pilot compared the shape of the objects to a giant soup dish or soup plate.

Suddenly, out of the half darkness a military guard emerged. The guard let the pilot know that he was in an area which was strictly off limits. In fact, the pilot was told, on no uncertain terms, to disappear immediately or this would be his last day on earth.

This day had started as a routine flight connecting two outlying airfields. This pilot had no expectations of seeing something so unusual that he barley had context in which to place it. Further, even as his mind was transfixed and in a process of trying to give understanding to what he was seeing, he was suddenly. jolted out of this tableau by a guard threatening his very life and ordering him to leave.

Of course the question of what those objects in the hanger really were comes back to this pilot even after almost 55 years. The pilot personally attributes it to the so called "Magnetscheibe", literally, "magnet-disk". According to the pilot rumors of these objects circulated in pilot circles since the summer of 1944 (4).

Two things can definitely be said of this sighting. First, it can be said is that this sighting seems to be of the smaller type of German field propulsion saucer as opposed to a larger version. Second, these saucers can definitely be ascribed to belonging to and in the possession of German military forces during the Second World War. At no time in this report has the word "alien" or "extraterrestrial" ever been mentioned or even considered.

Beyond that it can be said that the pilot personally believed these to be of the "Magnetscheibe" type, that is to say not powered by chemical combustion. There reasons to believe this is correct. These saucers were found on a remote and rather primitive airfield. They were in the only building present. This means that they did not need an extensive support system.

The chemically powered jet or rocket engines needed an extensive field support structure. They needed to be refueled after every flight. The two liquid fuels used by the Me-163 rocket-fighter, for instance, ignited immediately when they came into contact with each other with explosive intensity. The fuel tanks had to be washed out after each flight and separate ground crews were responsible for each type of liquid fuel. It is noteworthy that no such support ground support structure or personnel was in evidence on this occasion. All that was observed was a large structure filled with saucers and a guard. The ground support necessary for launch of these craft must have been minimal and argues for the field propulsion hypothesis.

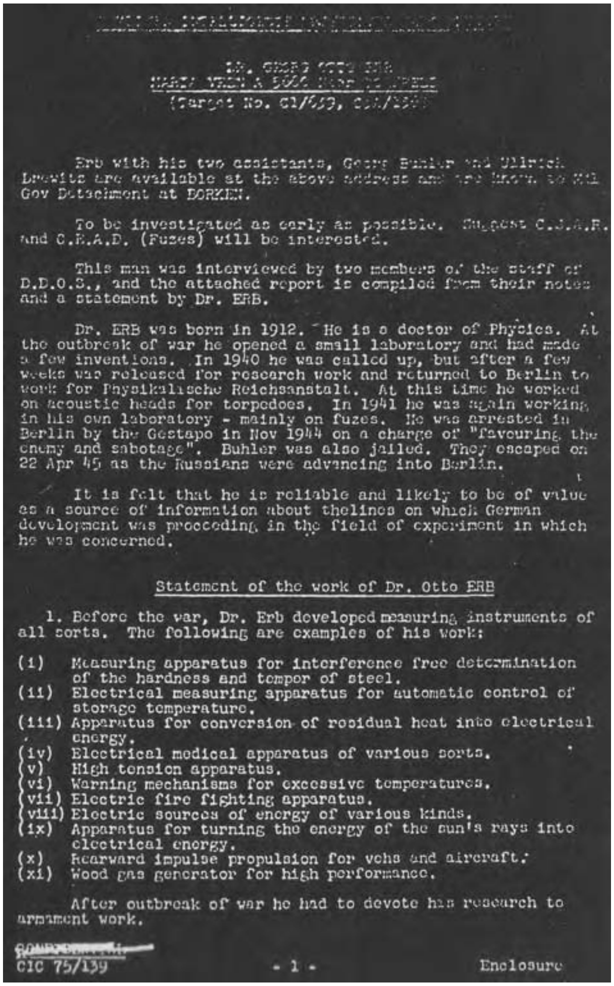
Of course the weakness in this report is the lack of the name of the pilot. Even if this report is taken at a minimal level of credulity, it constitutes a rumor of German involvement with field propulsion vehicles.

The reader will recall that the research paradigm being followed is that once mention was made by a German source of a particular thing, then (and only then) corroborating information should be sought from U.S. governmental agencies using FOIA.

A Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee Report

Since we have a German claiming field propulsion saucers we can now follow our research paradigm and search governmental records for corroboration. The Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee reports are a series of reports compiled by agents of the United States and Great Britain. Most were written immediately after the field work was done. The agents targeted specific things such as sites, people, specific technology or other aspects of specific interest. The agents then wrote a summary report which is what is entered into the record.

As with almost all summary reports at this level, the implications of what is being described are lacking. These reports do not set the particular technology into any context. That is, these reports doe not say how a specific technology under study was to be applied in the future in some, if not most, cases. Behind these reports must be a body of information and at least a few individuals intimately familiar with the technology in question. They were familiar with the technology and the context to which it was useful. If another government operative was interested in that topic or its implications, and if his security clearance sufficed, he would be shown the underlying material and presumably be directed to the particular individual



[illegible]

DR. GEORG OTTO ERB
[illegible]
(Target No. C1/659, [illegible])

Erb with his two assistants, Georg Buhler and Ulrich Drewitz are available at the above address and are known to Mil Gov Detachment at DORKEN.

To be investigated as early as possible. Suggest C.S.A.R. and C.E.A.D. (Fuzes) will be interested.

This man was interviewed by two members of the staff of D.D.O.S., and the attached report is compiled from their notes and a statement by Dr. ERB.

Dr. ERB was born in 1912. He is a doctor of Physics. At the outbreak of war he opened a small laboratory and had made a few inventions. In 1940 he was called up, but after a few weeks was released for research work and returned to Berlin to work for Physikalische Reichsanstalt. At this time he worked on acoustic heads for torpedoes. In 1941 he was again working in his own laboratory - mainly on fuzes. He was arrested in Berlin by the Gestapo in Nov 1944 on a charge of "favouring the enemy and sabotage". Buhler was also jailed. They escaped on 22 Apr 45 as the Russians were advancing into Berlin.

It is felt that he is reliable and likely to be of value as a source of information about thelines on which German development was proceeding in the field of experiment in which he was concerned.

Statement of the work of Dr. Otto ERB

1. Before the war, Dr. Erb developed measuring instruments of all sorts. The following are examples of his work:

(i) Measuring apparatus for interference free determination of the hardness and temper of steel.
(ii) Electrical measuring apparatus for automatic control of storage temperature.
(iii) Apparatus for conversion of residual heat into electrical energy.
(iv) Electrical medical apparatus of various sorts.
(v) High tension apparatus.
(vi) Warning mechanisms for excessive temperatures.
(vii) Electric fire fighting apparatus.
(viii) Electric sources of energy of various kinds.
(ix) Apparatus for turning the energy of the sun's rays into electrical energy.
(x) Rearward impulse propulsion for vehs and aircraft.
(xi) Wood gas generator for high performance.

After outbreak of war he had to devote his research to armament work.

~~[illegible]~~
CIC 75/139 - 1 - Enclosure

who was its residing expert. Only slowly, if at all, was this secret science leaked or given to American industry and then only with an appropriate cover-story, one which may even supply a pseudo-inventor of that technology. This is conspiracy at its finest. This deception is beyond the scope of this book but what is important for us now is that sometimes a mistake or slip-up was made in writing or censoring these reports and hints of things of stupendous technological worth actually surfaces. Such is the case with Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee Report number 146 regarding Dr. Georg Otto Erb and his work which is reproduced here.

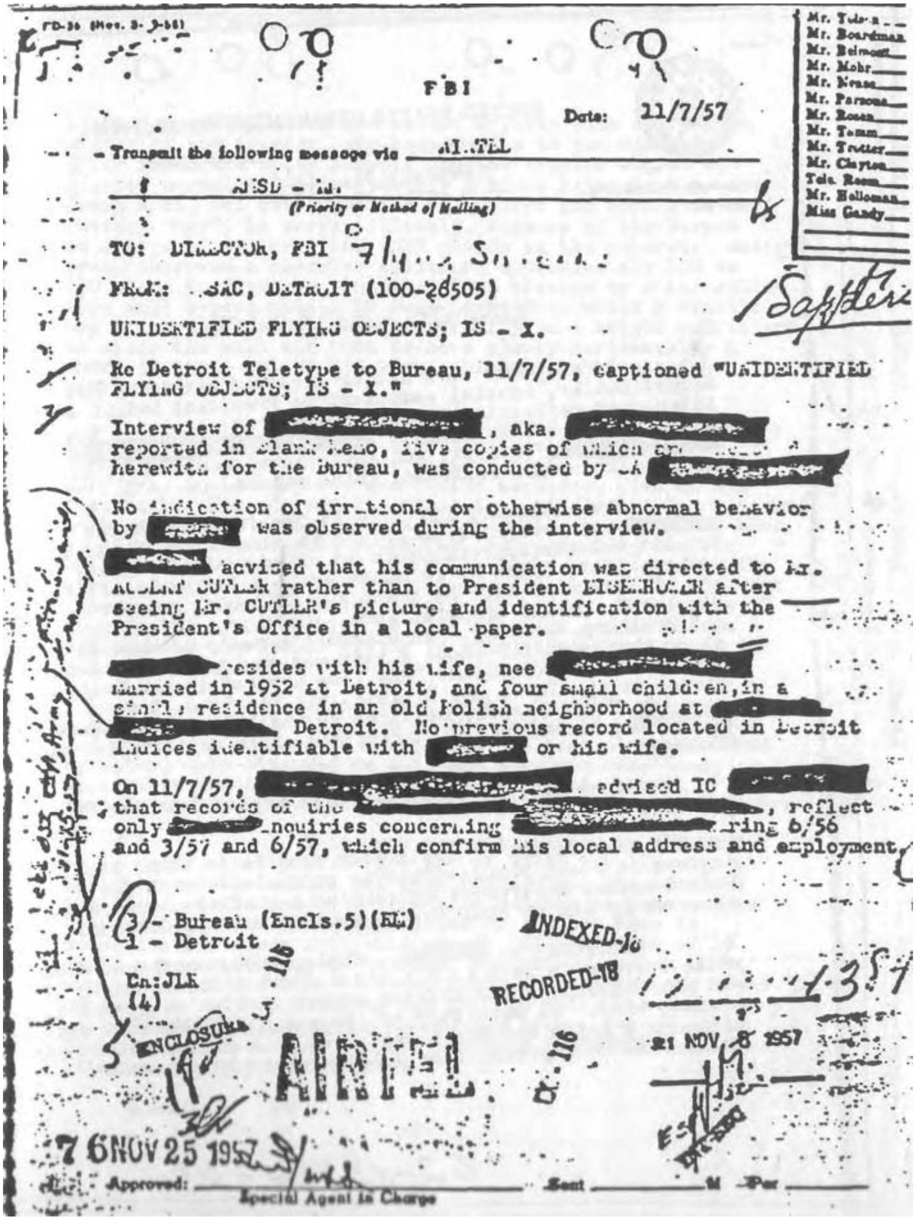
Dr. Erb was on the cutting edge of several technologies according to this report. None of these technologies was especially exciting in 1946, however. Jets, rockets and atomic energy where the hot-ticket items of the time. Nobody cared about new sources of electrical energy. The USA had plenty of electricity and plenty of oil to generate more. It was also known by then that atomic power could be applied to generate even more electricity. Nobody cared about Dr. Erb's experiments listed under item (iii) "Apparatus for conversion of residual heat into electrical energy" or item (viii) "Electrical sources of energy of various kinds" or even item (ix) "Apparatus for turning the energy of the sun's rays into electrical energy". Since nobody cared about these things, there was really no reason not to list them in the summary report. Their significance would only be realized a generation later during the "energy crisis" of the mid-1970s and by then it was too late to censor the report. One can only wonder where this research would have led if it funding had continued over the next thirty years. Or did it continue in secret?

Of course by now many readers will have already read number and grasped the significance of number (x) "Rearward impulse propulsion for vehs and aircraft". Given the nature of Dr. Erb's other work, it is a safe bet that this "impulse propulsion" was not of the jet or rocket nature. In fact there remains little doubt that this propulsion was, in fact, field propulsion. Dr. Erb was experimenting on means to apply forward motion using rearward impulse propulsion to aircraft and "vehs" (vehicles). If this is not the smoking gun for German experiments in field propulsion saucers, it is at least a hint that there is a gun.

The Smoking Gun: An F.B.I. Report

That is right, Fox Mulder was not the first F.B.I. agent to believe in UFOs. The files in question are F.B.I. file numbers 62-83894-383, 62-838994-384 and 62-83894-385. Their date is 11/7/57 to 11/8/57. They deal with a Polish immigrant, then living in the United States, who reported his wartime experience to the Bureau hoping it might throw some light on UFO sightings seen in Texas at about this time.

F.B.I. Reports On A German Field Propulsion Saucer



FD-36 (Rev. [illegible])

Mr. Tolson
Mr. Boardman
Mr. Belmont
Mr. Mohr
Mr. Nease
Mr. Parsons
Mr. Rosen
Mr. Tamm
Mr. Trotter
Mr. Clayton
Tele. Room
Mr. Holloman
Miss Gandy

FBI

Date: 11/7/57

Transmit the following message via AIRTEL

[illegible]
(Priority or Method of Mailing)

TO: DIRECTOR, FBI Flying Saucers

FROM: SAC, DETROIT (100-26505)

UNIDENTIFIED FLYING OBJECTS; IS - X.

Re Detroit Teletype to Bureau, 11/7/57, captioned "UNIDENTIFIED FLYING OBJECTS; IS - X."

Interview of [redacted], aka. [redacted] reported in blank memo, five copies of which are [illegible] herewith for the Bureau, was conducted by SA [redacted]

No indication of irrational or otherwise abnormal behavior by [redacted] was observed during the interview.

[redacted] advised that his communication was directed to Mr. ROBERT CUTLER rather than to President EISENHOWER after seeing Mr. CUTLER's picture and identification with the President's Office in a local paper.

[redacted] resides with his wife, nee [redacted] married in 1952 at Detroit, and four small children, in a single residence in an old Polish neighborhood at [redacted] Detroit. No previous record located in Detroit indices identifiable with [redacted] or his wife.

On 11/7/57, [redacted] advised IC [redacted] that records of the [redacted], reflect only [redacted]nquiries concerning [redacted]ring 6/56 and 3/57 and 6/57, which confirm his local address and employment.

3 - Bureau (Encls.5)(RM)
1 - Detroit

CN:JLK
(4)

INDEXED-18

RECORDED-18

21 NOV 8 1957

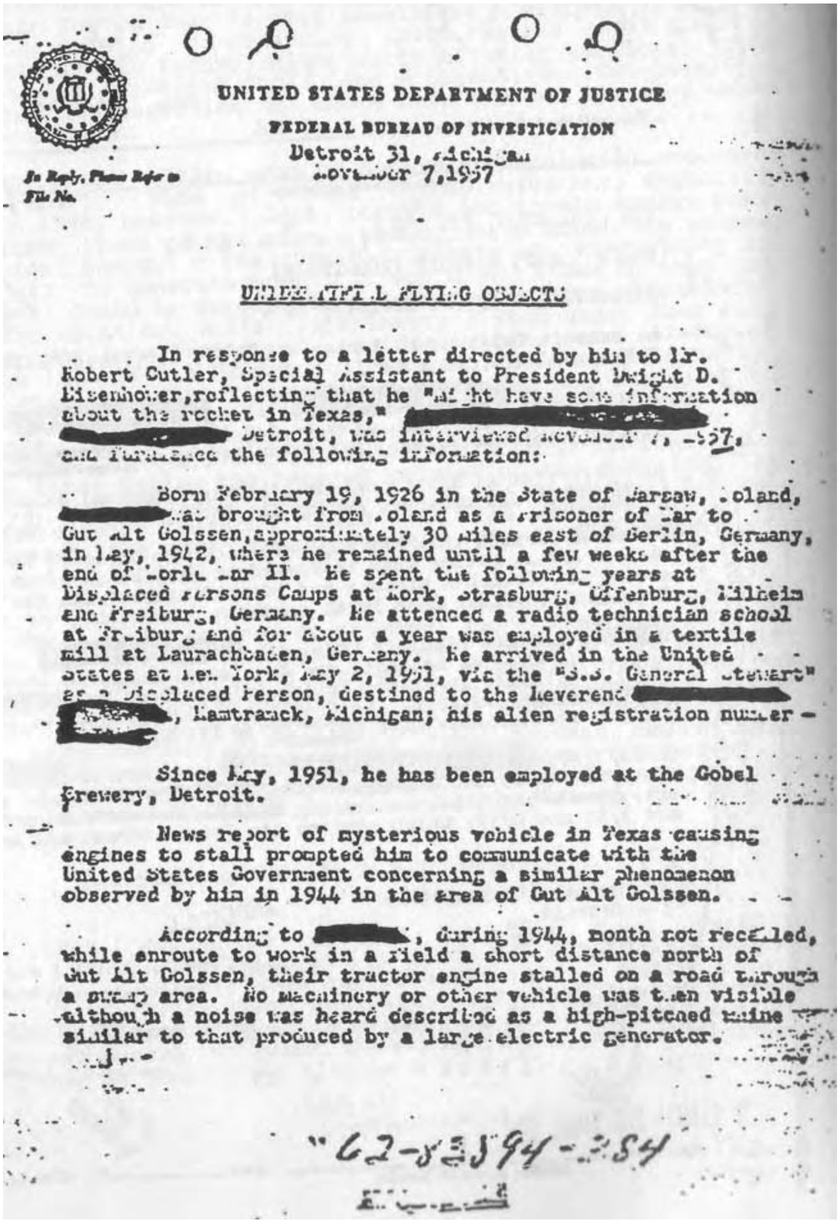
ENCLOSURE

AIRTEL

76 NOV 25 1957

Approved: ______ Special Agent in Charge Sent ______ M Per ______

F.B.I. Reports On A German Field Propulsion Saucer



UNITED STATES DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE
FEDERAL BUREAU OF INVESTIGATION
Detroit 31, Michigan
November 7, 1957

In Reply, Please Refer to
File No.

UNIDENTIFIED FLYING OBJECTS

In response to a letter directed by him to Mr. Robert Cutler, Special Assistant to President Dwight D. Eisenhower, reflecting that he "might have some information about the rocket in Texas," [redacted] Detroit, was interviewed November 7, 1957, and furnished the following information:

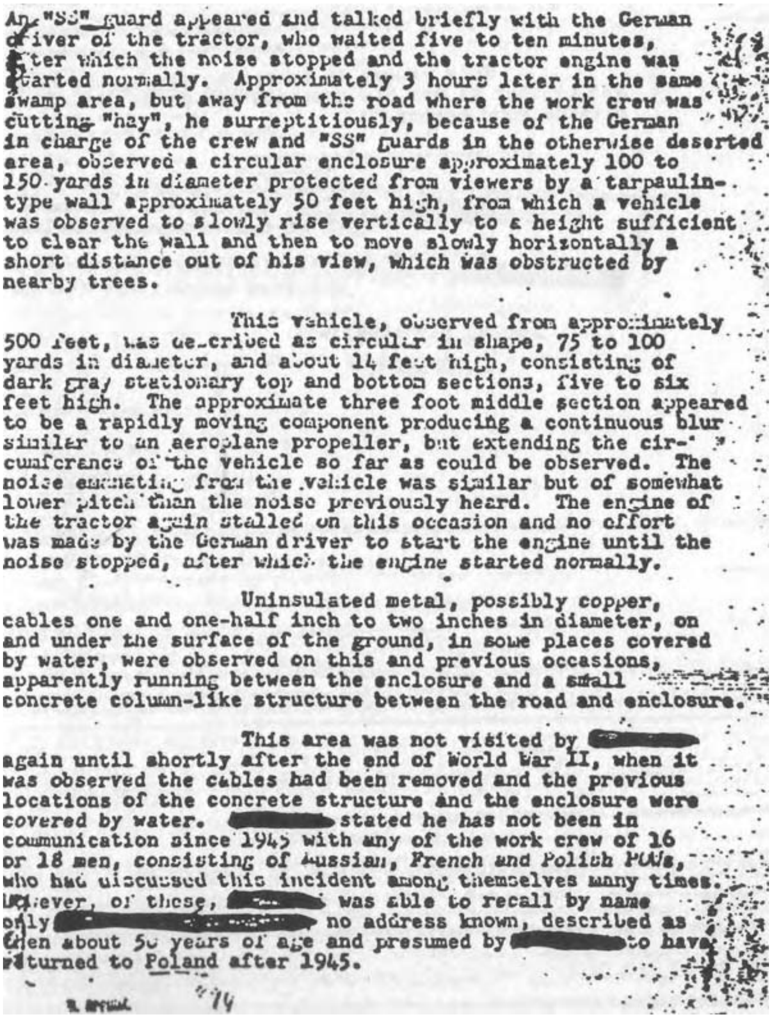
Born February 19, 1926 in the State of Warsaw, Poland, [redacted] was brought from Poland as a Prisoner of War to Gut Alt Golssen, approximately 30 miles east of Berlin, Germany, in May, 1942, where he remained until a few weeks after the end of World War II. He spent the following years at Displaced Persons Camps at Kork, Strasburg, Offenburg, Milheim and Freiburg, Germany. He attended a radio technician school at Freiburg and for about a year was employed in a textile mill at Laurachbaden, Germany. He arrived in the United States at New York, May 2, 1951, via the "S.S. General Stewart" as a Displaced Person, destined to the Reverend [redacted], Hamtramck, Michigan; his alien registration number – [redacted]

Since May, 1951, he has been employed at the Gobel Brewery, Detroit.

News report of mysterious vehicle in Texas causing engines to stall prompted him to communicate with the United States Government concerning a similar phenomenon observed by him in 1944 in the area of Gut Alt Golssen.

According to [redacted], during 1944, month not recalled, while enroute to work in a field a short distance north of Gut Alt Golssen, their tractor engine stalled on a road through a swamp area. No machinery or other vehicle was then visible although a noise was heard described as a high-pitched whine similar to that produced by a large electric generator.

62-83894-284



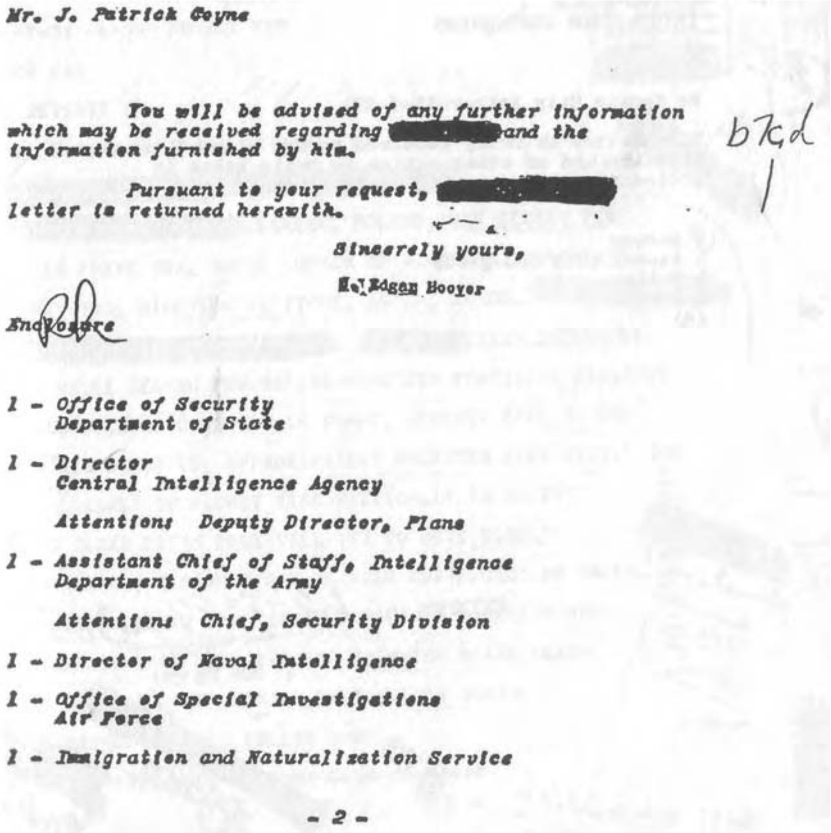
An "SS" guard appeared and talked briefly with the German driver of the tractor, who waited five to ten minutes, after which the noise stopped and the tractor engine was started normally. Approximately 3 hours later in the same swamp area, but away from the road where the work crew was cutting "hay", he surreptitiously, because of the German in charge of the crew and "SS" guards in the otherwise deserted area, observed a circular enclosure approximately 100 to 150 yards in diameter protected from viewers by a tarpaulin-type wall approximately 50 feet high, from which a vehicle was observed to slowly rise vertically to a height sufficient to clear the wall and then to move slowly horizontally a short distance out of his view, which was obstructed by nearby trees.

This vehicle, observed from approximately 500 feet, was described as circular in shape, 75 to 100 yards in diameter, and about 14 feet high, consisting of dark gray stationary top and bottom sections, five to six feet high. The approximate three foot middle section appeared to be a rapidly moving component producing a continuous blur similar to an aeroplane propeller, but extending the circumference of the vehicle so far as could be observed. The noise emanating from the vehicle was similar but of somewhat lower pitch than the noise previously heard. The engine of the tractor again stalled on this occasion and no effort was made by the German driver to start the engine until the noise stopped, after which the engine started normally.

Uninsulated metal, possibly copper, cables one and one-half inch to two inches in diameter, on and under the surface of the ground, in some places covered by water, were observed on this and previous occasions, apparently running between the enclosure and a small concrete column-like structure between the road and enclosure.

This area was not visited by [redacted] again until shortly after the end of World War II, when it was observed the cables had been removed and the previous locations of the concrete structure and the enclosure were covered by water. [redacted] stated he has not been in communication since 1945 with any of the work crew of 16 or 18 men, consisting of Russian, French and Polish POWs, who had discussed this incident among themselves many times. However, of these, [redacted] was able to recall by name only [redacted] no address known, described as then about 50 years of age and presumed by [redacted] to have returned to Poland after 1945.

74



Mr. J. Patrick Coyne

You will be advised of any further information which may be received regarding [redacted] and the information furnished by him.

Pursuant to your request, [redacted] letter is returned herewith.

b7c,d

Sincerely yours,

J. Edgar Hoover

Enclosure

1 - Office of Security
Department of State

1 - Director
Central Intelligence Agency

Attention: Deputy Director, Plans

1 - Assistant Chief of Staff, Intelligence
Department of the Army

Attention: Chief, Security Division

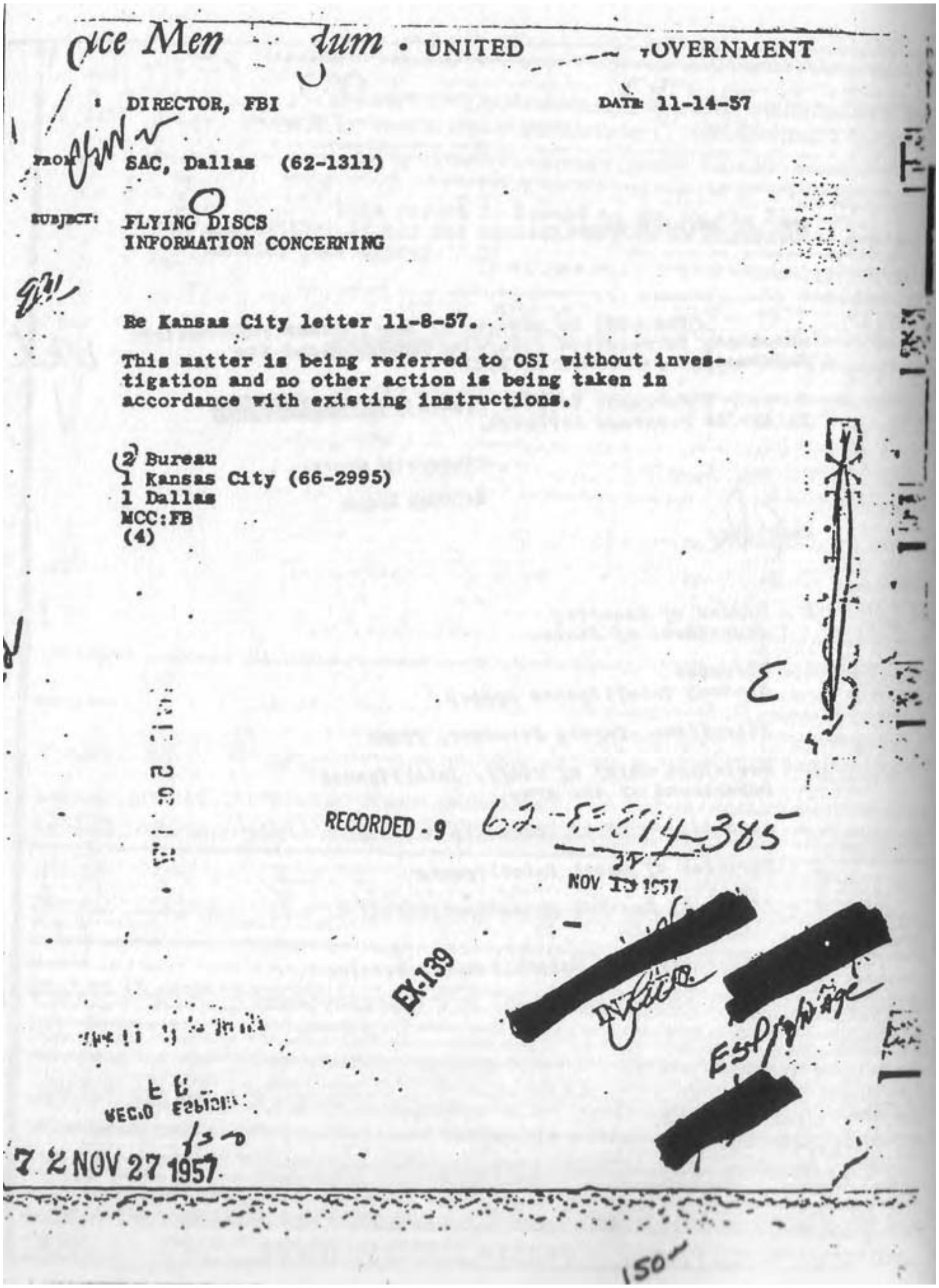
1 - Director of Naval Intelligence

1 - Office of Special Investigations
Air Force

1 - Immigration and Naturalization Service

- 2 -

F.B.I. Reports On A German Field Propulsion Saucer



ice Men dum • UNITED OVERNMENT

TO : DIRECTOR, FBI DATE: 11-14-57

FROM : SAC, Dallas (62-1311)

SUBJECT: FLYING DISCS
INFORMATION CONCERNING

Re Kansas City letter 11-8-57.

This matter is being referred to OSI without investigation and no other action is being taken in accordance with existing instructions.

2 Bureau
1 Kansas City (66-2995)
1 Dallas
MCC:FB
(4)

E

RECORDED - 9 62-83894-385

NOV 19 1957

EX-139

[redacted]

[redacted]

[redacted]

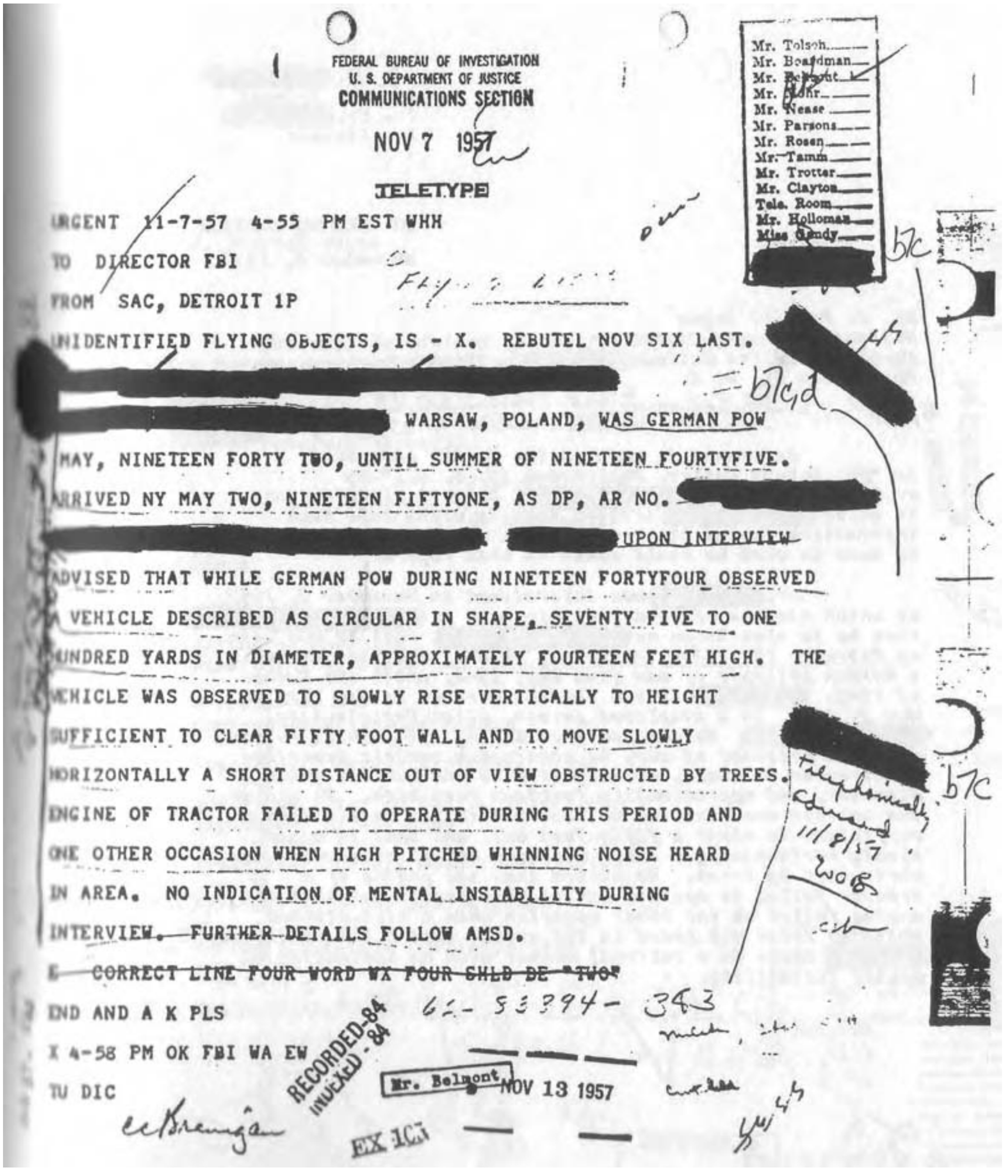
INFO

Espionage

72 NOV 27 1957

150

F.B.I. Reports On A German Field Propulsion Saucer



FEDERAL BUREAU OF INVESTIGATION
U. S. DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE
COMMUNICATIONS SECTION

NOV 7 1957

TELETYPE

Mr. Tolson
Mr. Boardman
Mr. Belmont
Mr. Mohr
Mr. Nease
Mr. Parsons
Mr. Rosen
Mr. Tamm
Mr. Trotter
Mr. Clayton
Tele. Room
Mr. Holloman
Miss Gandy
[redacted]

b7c

URGENT 11-7-57 4-55 PM EST WHH

TO DIRECTOR FBI

FROM SAC, DETROIT 1P

UNIDENTIFIED FLYING OBJECTS, IS - X. REBUTEL NOV SIX LAST.

[redacted] WARSAW, POLAND, WAS GERMAN POW

MAY, NINETEEN FORTY TWO, UNTIL SUMMER OF NINETEEN FOURTYFIVE.

ARRIVED NY MAY TWO, NINETEEN FIFTYONE, AS DP, AR NO. [redacted]

[redacted] [redacted] UPON INTERVIEW

ADVISED THAT WHILE GERMAN POW DURING NINETEEN FORTYFOUR OBSERVED

A VEHICLE DESCRIBED AS CIRCULAR IN SHAPE, SEVENTY FIVE TO ONE

HUNDRED YARDS IN DIAMETER, APPROXIMATELY FOURTEEN FEET HIGH. THE

VEHICLE WAS OBSERVED TO SLOWLY RISE VERTICALLY TO HEIGHT

SUFFICIENT TO CLEAR FIFTY FOOT WALL AND TO MOVE SLOWLY

HORIZONTALLY A SHORT DISTANCE OUT OF VIEW OBSTRUCTED BY TREES.

ENGINE OF TRACTOR FAILED TO OPERATE DURING THIS PERIOD AND

ONE OTHER OCCASION WHEN HIGH PITCHED WHINNING NOISE HEARD

IN AREA. NO INDICATION OF MENTAL INSTABILITY DURING

INTERVIEW. ~~FURTHER DETAILS~~ FOLLOW AMSD.

~~E CORRECT LINE FOUR WORD WX FOUR SHLD BE "TWO"~~

END AND A K PLS

X 4-58 PM OK FBI WA EW

TU DIC

[redacted]

b7c,d

[redacted]

b7c

telephonically advised 11/8/57
WOB
cb

62-53394-343

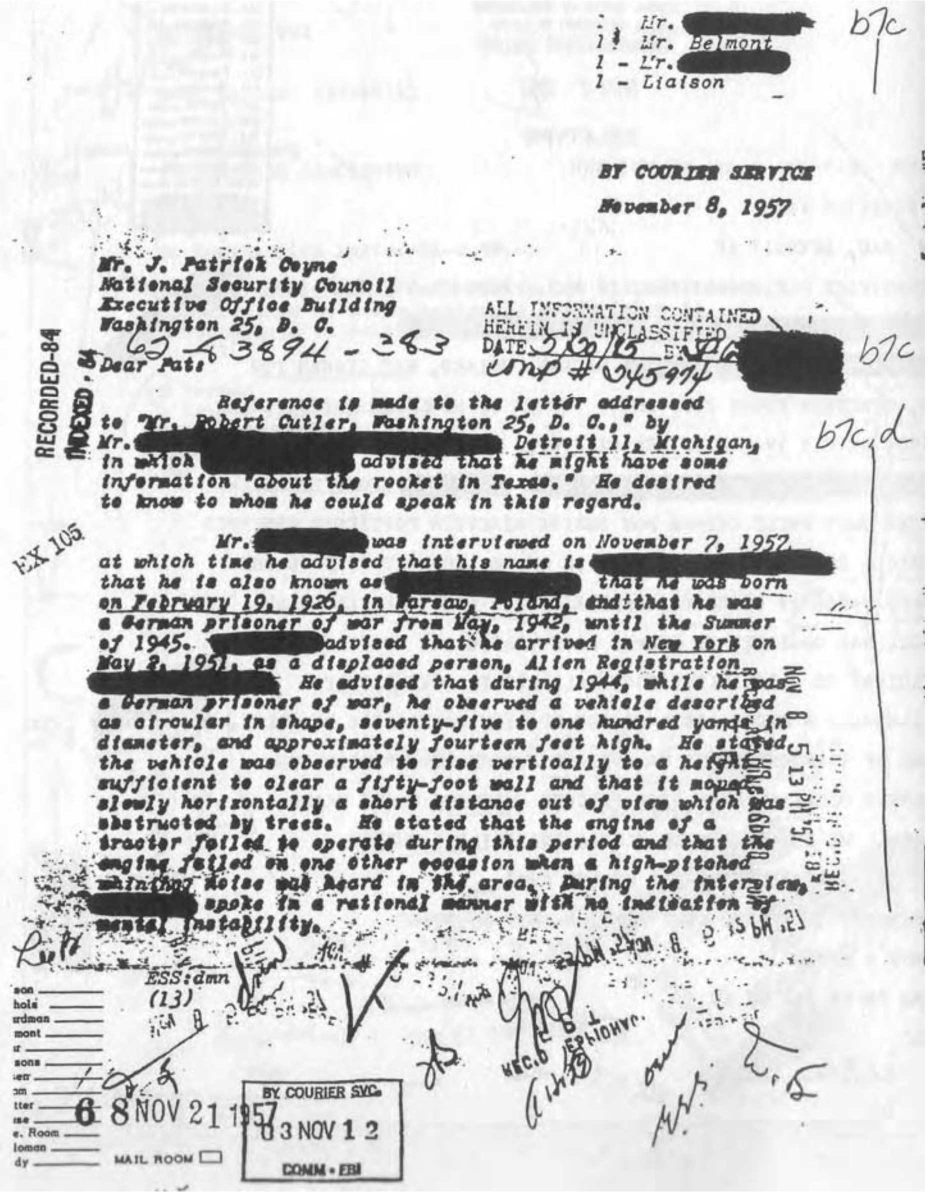
RECORDED-84
INDEXED-84

Mr. Belmont

NOV 13 1957

EX-103

F.B.I. Reports On A German Field Propulsion Saucer



1 - Mr. [redacted]
1 - Mr. Belmont
1 - Mr. [redacted]
1 - Liaison

b7c

BY COURIER SERVICE

November 8, 1957

Mr. J. Patrick Coyne
National Security Council
Executive Office Building
Washington 25, D. C.

62-63894-283

ALL INFORMATION CONTAINED
HEREIN IS UNCLASSIFIED
DATE 2/20/85 BY [redacted]
emp # 045974

b7c

RECORDED-84

INDEXED - 84

Dear Pat:

Reference is made to the letter addressed to "Mr. Robert Cutler, Washington 25, D. C.," by Mr. [redacted] Detroit 11, Michigan, in which [redacted] advised that he might have some information "about the rocket in Texas." He desired to know to whom he could speak in this regard.

b7c, d

EX 105

Mr. [redacted] was interviewed on November 7, 1957, at which time he advised that his name is [redacted] that he is also known as [redacted] that he was born on February 19, 1926, in Warsaw, Poland, and that he was a German prisoner of war from May, 1942, until the Summer of 1945. [redacted] advised that he arrived in New York on May 2, 1951, as a displaced person, Alien Registration [redacted] He advised that during 1944, while he was a German prisoner of war, he observed a vehicle described as circular in shape, seventy-five to one hundred yards in diameter, and approximately fourteen feet high. He stated the vehicle was observed to rise vertically to a height sufficient to clear a fifty-foot wall and that it moved slowly horizontally a short distance out of view which was obstructed by trees. He stated that the engine of a tractor failed to operate during this period and that the engine failed on one other occasion when a high-pitched whining noise was heard in the area. During the interview, [redacted] spoke in a rational manner with no indication of mental instability.

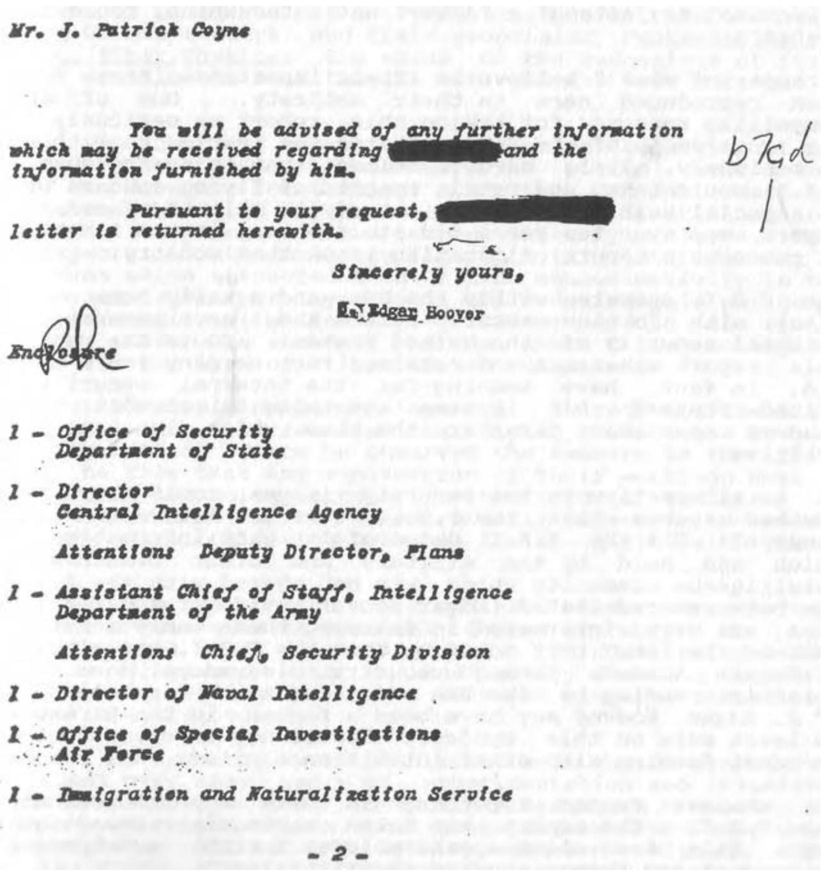
NOV 8 5 13 PM '57

ESS:dmn
(13)

68 NOV 21 1957

BY COURIER SVC.
3 NOV 12
COMM - FBI

MAIL ROOM ☐



Mr. J. Patrick Coyne

You will be advised of any further information which may be received regarding [redacted] *and the information furnished by him.*

b7c,d

Pursuant to your request, [redacted] *letter is returned herewith.*

Sincerely yours,

J. Edgar Hoover

Enclosure

1 - Office of Security
Department of State

1 - Director
Central Intelligence Agency

Attention: Deputy Director, Plans

1 - Assistant Chief of Staff, Intelligence
Department of the Army

Attention: Chief, Security Division

1 - Director of Naval Intelligence

1 - Office of Special Investigations
Air Force

1 - Immigration and Naturalization Service

- 2 -

The time of the sighting was in 1944, the place was Gut Alt Golssen, approximately 30 miles east of Berlin. The informant, whose name has been deleted, states that while he was a prisoner of war working for the Germans, a flying object arose nearby from behind an enclosure hidden from view by a 50 foot high tarpaulin-type wall. It rose about 500 feet then moved away horizontally. The only noise the object made was a high-pitched whine. The object was described as being 75 to 100 feet in diameter and 14 feet high. It was composed of a dark grey stationary top and bottom sections five to six feet high with a rapidly moving center section producing only a blur and extending the circumference of the vehicle. Notably, the engine of their farm tractor stalled during this event and the SS guards told the driver not to attempt a restart until the whine could no longer be heard.

Because of what I believe is their importance, these files have been reproduced here in their entirety. One of the most compelling reasons for taking this report so seriously is that the government of the United States of America took this report so seriously. It is hard to believe that an agency such as the F.B.I. would take and retain reports of flying saucers which had no special meaning for them. Add to this the fact that this report was over ten years old at the time it was taken and that it concerns a report originating in another country.

The F.B.I. operates within the USA and usually does not concern itself with foreign matters unless they have meaning for the internal security of the United States. Could the reason that this report was taken and retained for so many years be that it did, in fact, have meaning for the internal security of the United States? Did it have something to do with the flying saucers seen over Texas at the time which also stopped motor vehicles?

As an alternative to the security issues, could there have been another reason that the F.B.I. was so interested in flying saucers? Did the F.B.I. desperately want information on UFOs which was held by the military and other branches of the intelligence community which was not shared with the F.B.I.? It has been rumored that J. Edgar Hoover, head of the F.B.I. at the time, was very interested in learning these secrets but was held "out of the loop". It could be that the F.B.I. was already aware of German saucers through security clearances done on German scientists coming to the USA under Operation Paperclip? The ego of J. Edgar Hoover may have been a factor in the Bureau's guest to learn more on this subject. Hoover may have wanted to be on an equal footing with other intelligence chiefs.

For whatever reason, something in these reports resonated with the F.B.I. The report was taken seriously, investigated and kept. This fact alone speaks volumes for the existence of UFOs in general and German saucers in particular.

Discussion of German Field Propulsion Saucers

Some explanation has been attempted regarding the Schauberger models and the KM-2 rocket. From this point on, the discussion of German field propulsion saucers will move away from the areas centering around observed evidence and into areas of interpretation. Some of the German flying craft described are flying saucers in the classic sense. The F.B.I. report describes something which moves by non-aerodynamic means and which remains the source of speculation.

At this point, mention should be made of the ideas of some prominent writers in this field. The first of these is Mr. William Lyne of Lamy, New Mexico. Mr. Lyne has written two books concerning German saucers and field propulsion, Pentagon Aliens and Occult Ether Physics. His ideas on the mechanisms of field propulsion remain the best thought out and the most detailed on the subject.

Mr. Lyne lives near the secret weapons testing facilities of Los Alamos and White Sands. These were the places where German weaponry was brought for testing after the war and where the United States tested its first atomic bomb. It is still an area Of secret military research and secret military projects. Then as now, aspects of atomic energy figure in this setting. It is also an area which attracted much flying saucer activity in the late 1940s and 1950s. Mr. Lyne was a child during this period of time and personally witnessed flying saucers as did his family and friends. Later, as an adult, he went about trying to explain mechanisms for the type of flight he had witnessed.

Lyne worked within certain parameters. He rejected the alien hypothesis outright. He realized that flying saucers had to have been made by humans. Since he observed the saucers in the 1940s and 1950s, he knew that any explanation of their workings must be limited to the technology present in the 1940s or earlier. He connected UFO technology to other recently imported technology from Germany while believing both had their origins with Nikola Tesla (5).

Further, there is no mention of intangibles by Mr. Lyne. There are no unknown energies or mystical forces at work. Mr. Lyne stands with both feet on the ground. Things are concrete. Machinery is diagramed. Matter and energy function as they always have. In reading Mr. Lyne's work one can almost smell the machine oil and the ozone.

Mr. Lyne builds upon the work of Nikola Tesla who developed his unique ideas over many years of experimentation and invention. This basis built upon real world experimentation, testing and application separates Tesla's ether theory ideas from those which will be explored later. Mr. Lyne presents us with an ether theory in which ether is super-fine matter which exists everywhere. It is so fine that it will go through the holes left in ordinary matter (6).

A few words about Mr. Lyne's ideas are necessary to set a context for this discussion. Just as an internal combustion engine can be described as a "heat pump" so can the flying saucer drive of Mr. Lyne be described as an "ether pump". Ether (very fine matter) is attracted to the saucer via an electric field, then pumped through the saucer and out again using the principle of magneto-hydro-dynamic pumping (7). This magneto-hydro-dynamic pumping is related to the Hall Effect. Edwin Hall placed a gold leaf strip in which an electric current was flowing into a gap in a magnetic field. An electromotive force was produced at right angles to the magnetic field and the electric current. This electromotive force was proportional to the product of the electric current and the magnetic field (8).

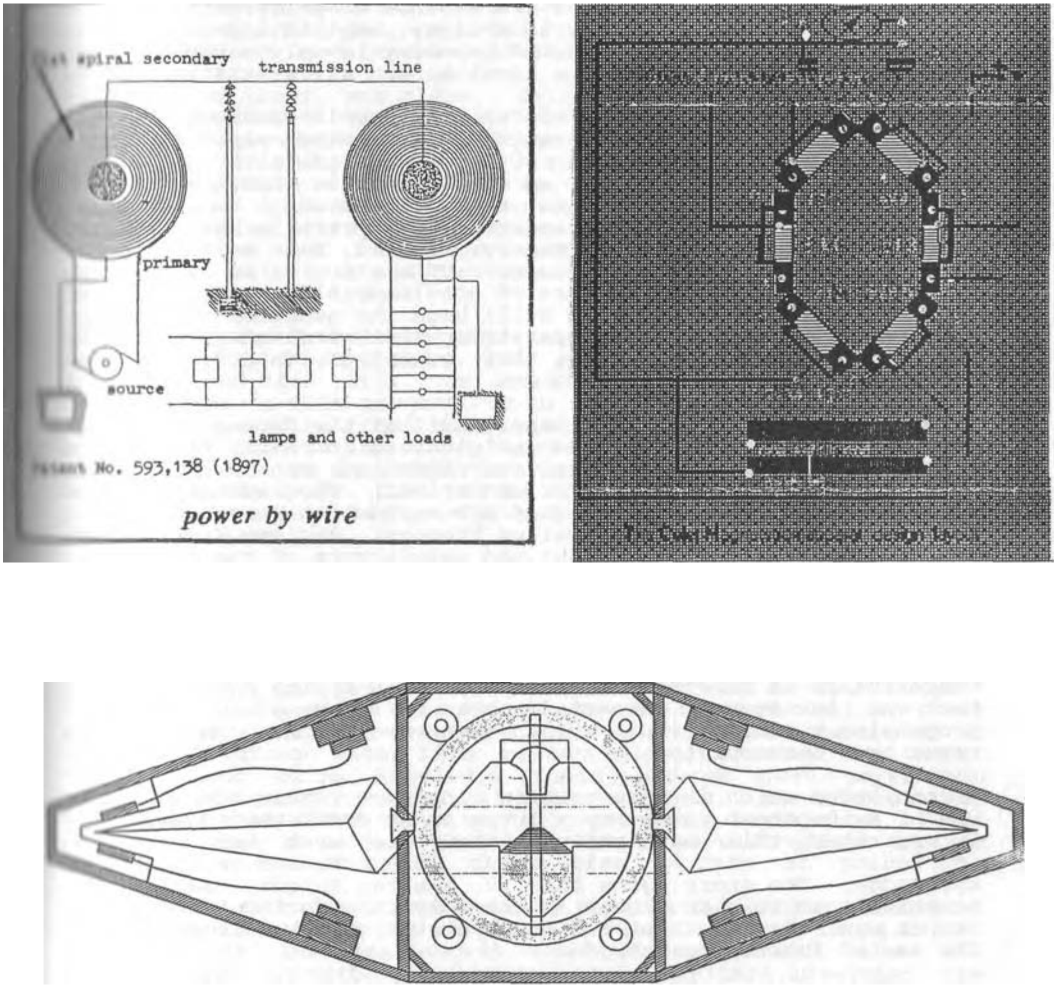
According to experimentation by Tesla, ether is made rigid with high voltage, high frequency electrical energy (9). The convex shape of the upper half of the saucer projects the electrical attractive force, generated by a specific electronic component, in an ever expanding arch over the saucer. Ether is made rigid and anchors the saucer. This is possible since the total mass of the ether caught in the electric field is far greater than the mass of the saucer. Near the surface of the saucer, the "rigified" ether is pulled into the saucer in what Mr. Lyne calls "tubes of force". These tubes of force would be pulled right through the opposite side of the saucer and out if it were not for the blocking force of a second apparatus which nullifies the tubes of force and prevents this from happening. This imbalance is the reason the saucer is able to move (10).

The electrical components necessary for this to take place are, according to Mr. Lyne, a Tesla turbine to supply electrical power and two types of Tesla pancake coils (11).

The Tesla turbine is a wheel-like device which is described in Mr. Lyne's book (12) and elsewhere (13). Mr. Lyne orients this turbine vertically in his drawings but oriented with its flat spinning surface horizontally, this might, perhaps, account for the spinning disc witnessed on some saucers.

The Tesla pancake coils are also described in both sources cited. Mr. Lyne goes further and gives instructions as to their manufacture. One type of pancake coil insures forth a negative discharge of DC energy, tuned to a one-fourth wave length, and is oriented in the desired direction of flight (14). The other type of pancake coil is mounted exactly opposite the first and emits a positive AC discharge which is used to dissolve the ether flow or tubes of force.

Dr. Gordon Freeman, a Fucannelli-like scientist who knows about such matters, has been curious about the abbreviated wave-cycle of the first pancake coil. His position is that one must not only understand conventional scientific theory in order to


spiral secondary
transmission line
primary
source
lamps and other loads
No. 593,138 (1897)
power by wire

Top Left: Pancake Tesla coil with the secondary coil inside the primary. Top Right: The smaller of the Hans Coler free-energy machines. Bottom: Cut away showing Vril power plant. Was this related to the Schappeller device?

understand the way a field propulsion saucer flies but one must also understand some concepts which are sometimes labeled "occult". Dr. Freeman has worked out a "common denominator" for some field propulsion vehicles the essence of which he has shared (15). Dr. Freeman's ability to analyze, explain and interrelate physics, engineering and "occult" geometry is only matched by his ability to explain it all on a level we can all understand.

Some individuals see hidden, esoteric or occult knowledge as the inspiration for the breakthroughs the Germans made in field propulsion flying vehicles. Usually coupled with an exotic-theory of UFO origin, it is an egually exotic local from which this exotic theory is said to have originated. We have been presented with this line of reasoning for years in the "UFOs are of extraterrestrial origin" theory. Indeed, some writers see an extraterrestrial origin for German UFOs also as we shall see. But just stating that UFOs are of occult or alien origin is not an explanation in itself. It still begs the question of how they operate. Their method of operation, their technology, must be explained regardless of where they came from in order for the explanation to be a satisfying one.

Returning to earth, another theory is that the German scientists were influenced by some ideas originating in Asia. Tibet and India are the suspects in question. UFOs have been reported over Mongolia, Tibet and India for centuries. The ancient Indians even claimed to have constructed aircraft which resemble flying saucers. These saucers are called Vimanas. Ancient Indian texts in Sanskrit speak of the flight and manufacture of these saucers. The German "Ahnenerbe", an organization whose purpose is associated with researching Germanic ancestry, sent out expeditions to the East with the express purpose of acquiring ancient, hidden knowledge. This is precisely what Heinrich Haarer was doing, whose book served as the basis for the film "Seven Years in Tibet". This link between flying saucers of the East and the West is suspected as an influence on German field propulsion vehicles (16). The exact connection, though, has never been demonstrated.

A connection which is more certain involves Viktor Schauberger's use of Pythagorean geometry. There is no doubt that Schauberger incorporated this mathematics into his work but what is intriguing is what is said about this body of mathematical knowledge. The story goes that it was the Knights Templar who stumbled upon this knowledge in the Holy Land during the Crusades and it was they who kept and incorporated this knowledge through the use of "sacred geometry".

Both the above mentioned schools of thought lead far beyond the parameters of this book but the reader should be aware of what is said about them and their relationship to German flying discs.

Whether it is called "occult technology" or "conventional technology", in the end, it is just simply technology. And in the end, as Dr. Freeman says, "all machines can be reduced to numbers". What is called by some "occult" might be better called "arcane". This is because this technology, which seems to be the basis of field propulsion, is taught only to certain individuals, technological initiates, who use and need this knowledge for their work on government sponsored black projects. These scientist utilize a technology and understanding which are reserved for their use alone. This knowledge is not taught and not made available to the rest of us. We, the great unwashed masses, are given Einstein and the Theory of Relativity and told that this is the pinnacle of learning. As with all secret information, this arcane knowledge is held on a "need to know" basis. Our government believes that we simply don't need to know. It takes a true genius like Dr. Freeman to recognize this knowledge and set it before us in language that we can understand. It is hoped that Dr. Freeman will publish a book sooner rather than later.

Mention of the "occult" brings us to another line of evidence concerning field propulsion, that put forth by Norbert Juergen-Ratthofer and Ralf Ettl. Mr. Ettl became involved while doing research for a film project on Dr. Wernher von Braun. A film company was paying for this research. A package or several packages of information were obtained by the production company which had more to do with UFOs than rocketry. This information was laid aside by Mr. Ettl but he returned to it after enlisting the help of Norbert Juergen-Ratthofer who had a special interest in that subject (17).

The packages contained breathtakingly clear photographs of German saucers in flight. Some of these pictures may be just models but some look authentic and are posed against a landscape. Nowadays, pictures can be generated via computer and these pictures surfaced within modern times. At least one negative from these pictures which was given to Mr. Vladimir Terziski by Mr. Juergen-Ratthofer and seen by this writer, so at least not all of these pictures were computer generated. The pictures have been seen in public and through video film presentation, for about ten years. To the best of my knowledge these pictures have never been debunked using modern technical photo-analysis. Therefore, they have never been shown to be anything less than legitimate. Until they are shown to be less than legitimate, we must accept them as they are represented to us.

Besides the pictures, these writers provide an entire historical and cultural context for these saucers within the Third Reich, This contest involves secret organizations within the SS. Further, the context provided by these writers involving the occult, channeling, and extraterrestrials. This is the weak point of their presentation since the case for these latter connections is really not strong enough to be "in evidence".

Besides the books of Mr. Ettl and Mr. Juergen-Ratthofer, several other German language writers contribute books on a similar or

Haunebu 2 Test Flight

Ghostly image of a saucer, said to be a Haunebu 2, on a test flight. Photograph originally from collection of Norbert-Juergen Ratthofer, courtesy of Vladimir Terziski related theme. The more notable are D.H. Haarmann (18) and 0. Bergmann (19). Mr. Ettl and Mr. Juergen-Ratthofer themselves have written several books which are all in German language and available through their publisher (20). Mr. Ettl and Mr. Juergen-Ratthofer have also done two video films, "UFOs Das Dritte Reich Schlaege Zurueck?" and a second film, whose English title is "UFO Secrets of the 3rd Reich". This second film is very well done and contains the pictures mentioned earlier. These films should be seen by anyone seriously interested in German field propulsion saucers (21) (22).

Mr. Juergen-Ratthofer, Mr. Ettl and allied writers offer two different systems for field propulsion. The smaller saucer-type, which they designate "Vril" was powered by three moving magnetic fields (23). The larger type, designated "Haunebu" was powered by a series of devices according to these writers. In this arrangement, the output of smaller of the Hans Coler "free energy" devices (24), the "Magnetapparat", was used to supply input for the larger Coler device, the "Stromerzeuger". The output of this second device was used to turn a Van de Graaf generator. This energy was directed into something called a Marconi ball dynamo with supplied lift to the saucer (25)(26).

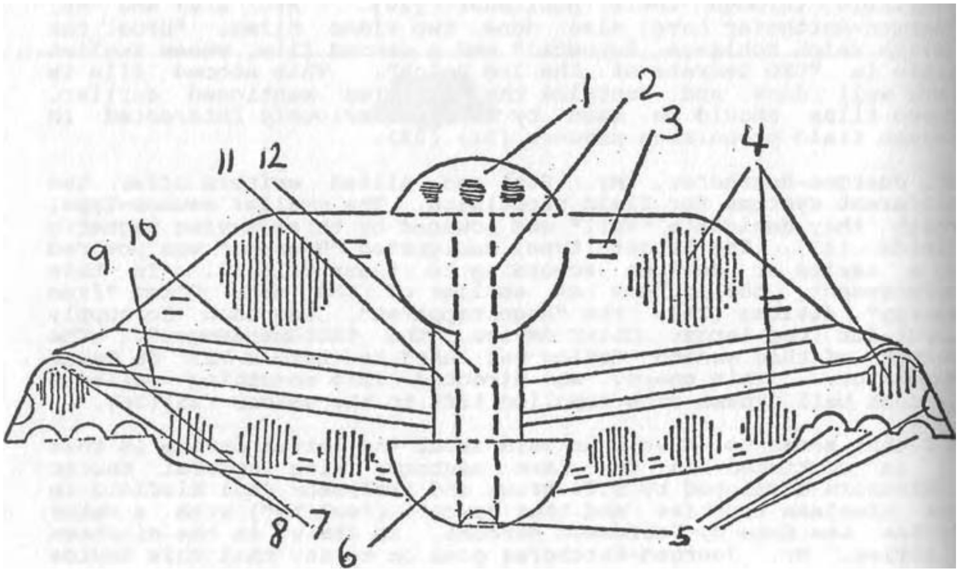
All that seems to have been said about the latter device is that it is mentioned in the same sentence with special saucer condensers developed by T.T. Brown and Professor Paul Biefield in the nineteen twenties and that "such" ("solche") with a rotor system was done by Professor Marconi, in Italy, in the nineteen thirties. Mr. Juergen-Ratthofer goes on to say that this device is to be considered, in principle, a forerunner to the Searl system (27).

The Haunebu pictures strongly resemble the Adamski saucer pictures of the early 1950s. These saucers were seen and pictures of them taken world-wide. There were many different sources for both sighting of Adamski saucers and pictures of them. There were so many in the early 1950s that it is hard to believe that all of them are fakes. Mr. Ettl and Mr. Juergen-Ratthofer maintain that these "Adamski saucers" are really the German-designed Haunebu type saucers (28). Since they were flown after the war, certain questions as to their origin arise. These questions will be treated in an upcoming section of this book.

Besides the Vril and Haunebu designs mention is made by Mr. Juergen-Ratthofer of another type of field propulsion vehicle. This saucer uses a chemical engine to drive a field propulsion generator (29). The type of chemical engine involved is similar to the famous Walter (Walther) engine, which were to be installed on some types of German submarines.

The Walter process involved a closed circuit system activated by the thermal energy produced by the decomposition of a high concentration of hydrogen peroxide. This reaction occurred in the presence of a catalyst, potassium permanganate, in a

Hybrid Saucer Design



Chemical/Field Propulsion Saucer (N. Juergen-Ratthofer). 1. Plexiglass pilot's cabin. 2. Crew rooms. 3. Intake air slots (hermetically sealed in space). 4. Vacuum ring retainers with high-performance vacuum pumps. 5. Lifting and steering jets connected to the Walter turbine system. 6. Walter turbines and electric generators with connected machine maintenance rooms. 7. Disc rotor wheel, rotating clockwise. 8. Electromagnet outer ring rotating counter-clockwise. 9. Disc wheel, inner part of the electromagnet outer ring. 10. Segmented disc-rotor and wing screw with adjustable flight blades. 11. Axis of saucer with (a) two electric motors to drive the counter rotating disc motors: electro-gravitation plant, (b) various electrical connections, (c) fuel and water tanks. 12. Connection shaft between pilot's cabin and machine room.

decomposition chamber. This resulted in a 600 to 700 degree gas composed of steam and oxygen, under natural pressure sufficient to drive a turbine. After the gas had done its work if was fed into a reclamation chamber which recycled at least part of the gas back into the engine. Additional fuel, Juergen-Ratthofer mentions methanol, could be fed into the system for more heat. The system without additional fuel is called the "cold" system while with added fuel it is called the "hot" system. In fact, the cold system was used on the V-2 rocket to drive the turbo-fuel pumps since known pumps could not handle the volume of liquid necessary to feed this new type of rocket.

In the hybrid saucer Mr. Juergen-Ratthofer describes, the cold system drives a rotor-stator arrangement which doubles as a blade lifting wing similar to that of a helicopter. The rotor-stator-blade is internally housed in the cowling of the saucer. The output of the rotor-stator is a strong magnetic field which presumably frees the saucer of the constraints of gravity as claimed for the other field propulsion saucers (30). In addition, spaces within the saucer have all air removed by special vacuum pumps with increase the buoyancy of the craft within the atmosphere. Further, some of the hot oxygen-steam mixture is jetted out at the periphery of the saucer while being mixed with methanal for additional heat and therefore thrust. Again, we are reminded of Dr. Belluzzo. We are also reminded of Vesco since he hints at a similar engine (31) which he even vaguely links with "electromagnetic waves" (32). Have we come full-circle?

In the same vane, would be negligent not to mention that an atomic engine might easily be substituted for the Walter engine. The atomic engine might be one of three types. It might be the type which burned the atmosphere itself. This burning would produce hot air and steam from the water contained in the atmosphere. It might be one which produced steam using water carried in tanks. It might be one which super-heats and ejects a gas such as hydrogen or helium. Any of these mediums could be ejected through the rotor blades yielding the desired result. A device of this type would tie together many of the German saucers-plans so far discussed.

Dr. Freeman points out that Marconi "stole" Tesla's inventions. Tesla also built a power-plant of spherical construction which contained vacuum tubes and so may have been superior to the device of Schappeller which we shall look at next. Surprisingly, some detail exists about this Tesla free energy device (33). Tesla used his engine to successfully power a Pierce Arrow automobile. This means that a spherical, working field propulsion device existed in the USA powering, not a flying saucer but an automobile. Dr. Freeman warns not to be confused by many spherical devices, all of which seem different. The fact is that they all work on the same principles (34).

German Field Propulsion Flying Saucers

Sources and References

1. X, Michael, 1960, pages 17, 33, We Want You Is Hitler Alive?, Futura Press, reprinted 1969 by Saucerian Books, Clarksburg, WV.
2. Barton, Michael X., 1968, pages 26-36, The German Saucer Story, Futura Press, Los Angeles
3. Zunneck, Karl-Heinz, 1998, pages 120-122, Geheimtechnologien. Wunderwaffen Und Irdischen Facetten Des UFO-Phaaenomens 50 Jahre Desinformaton und die Folaen. CTT-Verlag, Suhl
4. Zunneck, Karl-Heinz, 1998, page 122
5. Lyne, William R., 1999, page 48, Pentagon Aliens. Creatopia Productions, Lamy, New Mexico 87540
6. Lyne, William R., 1999, page 28
7. Lyne, Willaim R., 1999, page 38
8. Lyne, William R., 1999, page 21
9. Lyne, William R., 1999, pages 20, 41
10. Lyne, William R., 1999, page 42
11. Lyne, William R., 1999, pages 197-200
12. ibid
13. Trinkaus, George, 1988, pages 3-4, Tesla The Lost Inventions. High Voltage Press, Portland, OR.
14. Lyne, William R., 1999, page 215
15. Freeman, Gordon Dr., 3/18/01, personal letter to author
16. Stoll, Axel Ph.D., 2001, pages 15-20, Hochtechnologie im Dritten Reich Reichsdeutsche Entwicklunqen und die vermutlich wahre Herkunft der "UFOs". Amun-Verlag, Schleusesiedlung 2, D-98553 Schleusingen
17. Ettl, Ralf, 1999, page 11, "Notes To The Vril-Project" Ursprung und Quellen
18. Haarmann, D.H., 1983, Geheime Wunderwaffen, II Geheime Wunderwaffen. III Geheime Wunderwaffen, Hugin Gesellschaft Fuer Politisch-Philosophische Studien E.V., Postfach 23, D-48472, Hoerstel 3, Germany

19. Bergmann, O., 1988 and 1989, 1 Deutsche Flugscheiben und U-Boote Ueberwachen Die Weltmeere. 11 Deutsche Fluqscheiben und U-Boote Ueberwachen Die Weltmeere, Hugin Gesellschaft Fuer Politisch-Philosophische Studien E.V., Postfach 23, D-484772, Hoerstel 3, Germany

20. Dr. Michael Daemboeck Verlag, Markt 86, A-3321 Ardaggr, Austria

21. Video Film "UFOs Das Dritte Reich Schlaegt Zurueck?, available through Dr. Michael Daemboeck Verlag, see reference (18)

22. Video Film "UFO Secrets of the 3rd Reich" available through Total Solutions International, Las Vegas, NV.

23. van Helsing, Jan, 1993, page 129, Geheim Gesellschaften und ihre Macht im 20. Jahrhundert, Ewertverlag, Meppen, Germany

24. British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee Final Report No. 1043 Item No. 31, "The Invention Of Hans Coler, Relating To An Alleged New Source Of Power"

25. Video Film "UFOs Das Dritte Reich Schlaegt Zurueck?, available through Dr. Michael Daemboeck Verlag, see reference (18)

26. Juergen-Ratthofer, Norbert and Ralf Ettl, 1992, page 51, Das Vril-Projekt. Dr. Michael Daemboeck Verlag, Ardaggr, Austria

27. Juergen-Ratthofer, Norbert, date unknown, page 16, "Geheime UFO, 1. Folge: Flugscheibenprojekte aus verschiedenen Staaten der Erde", this article was courtesy of Theo Paymans, Holland

28. Juergen-Ratthofer, Norbert, date unknown, pages 84,85, Fluqscheiben und andere deutsche und iapanische Geheim- und Wunderwaffen im Zweiten Weltkrieg, self-published, available through reference (18)

29. Juergen-Ratthofer, Norbert, date unknown, pages 1 and 16, "Geheime UFO, 2. Folge So baut man fliegende Untertassen—und so funktionieren sie", this article was courtesy of Theo Paymans, Holland

30. ibid

31. Vesco, Renato, 1976, pages 163 and 164, Intercept UFO. Pinnacle Books, New York

32. Vesco, Renato, 1976, pages 135-136

33. Nieper, Hans A., 1985, pages 188-189, Conversion of Gravity Field Energy Revolution in Technology, Medicine and Society, MIT Verlag, Oldenburg

34. Freeman, Gordon Dr., 3/18/01, personal letter

Atomic Saucers Again?

It is possible that all of the options for the field propulsion of German flying discs have not been presented or had a fair hearing. Two of these other possibilities are reviewed below. The first is the possibility that a world-shattering breakthrough in field propulsion occurred during the Third Reich involving atomic energy. This is plausible given the extensive and mostly still-secret atomic research done by the Germans coupled with the government's attempt to down play UFO sightings immediately following the war. The second possibility is that a field propulsion device was developed out of the early work of the Austrian inventor, Karl Schappeller. This possibility is strengthened by the fact that individuals and organizations involved in this research openly acknowledged that one of their aims was to build an "ether ship".

The German conventional saucer program culminating with atomic propulsion has been discussed. Evidence of German field propulsion saucers has been reviewed. We already know that each step in the conventional German saucer program was a logical development of the previous saucer design. The question is: did the power utilized in the German field propulsion saucers arise from nuclear power? Was there a breakthrough which has been kept secret for almost sixty years?

We have discussed the link between nuclear facilities and flying saucers. Is this evidence, in itself, that an association exists? The association could be for one of two reasons. First, these areas may simply have been the most secure facilities available. The two projects may not have been connected at all. For security reasons, both projects were simply run out of the same area.

The second possibility is that the two projects were run out of the same facility because they are connected somehow. If there is a connection between nuclear energy and field propulsion, what type of connection is this? The connection under discussion is a direct conversion from nuclear energy to field energy. This connection is on the order of the connection between electricity and magnetism or heat and electricity or nuclear energy and heat. Does such a connection exist?

The answer I got from everyone asked was a resounding "no". The consensus seemed to be that the closest we could come to this was to convert nuclear energy to heat energy and then to electrical energy though the medium of a steam turbine. This is how nuclear power plants and atomic submarines work. This method seemed to have nothing to do with flight since the hardware involved is much too bulky and heavy.

We have already reviewed some other options for nuclear powered saucers. Klaus-Peter Rothkugel suggests that the atmosphere itself could be burnt using liquid air as a fuel and a nuclear reactor as a heat source. Friedrich Georg has documented some aircraft engine designs, apparently left on the drawing board, involving a propeller engine driven by steam heated by nuclear power. We have seen the enigmatic Messerschmitt design involving a small nuclear engine on a high-speed aircraft. We have also discussed the atomic rocket approach which involves heating and ejecting of liquid hydrogen using a nuclear reactor in the Lenticular Reentry Vehicle.

While there is no known direct connection between nuclear energy and field propulsion, Dr. Gordon Freeman has made me aware of an alternate method of production of electrical energy through the use of nuclear decay. This is important because with enough electrical energy both electrostatic and electromagnetic field propulsion are possible. Let me relate to you what Dr. Freeman told me as to how this process works. It is amazingly simple.

The simplest method involves the use of two solar cells which are the same size. A piece of paper, the thickness of a business card is cut to the same size as the solar cells. Radium chloride is painted onto both sides of the paper. The paper is then fitted between the solar cells. The radium chloride emits alpha and beta particles which activate the solar cell. The reader might ask, if this method works, why has it not been patented? The answer is, that in a slightly more efficient configuration, it has been patented (1).

There are other forms of this simple example. Imagine a simple circuit used for purposes of generating electromagnetic waves. This circuit would consist of a wire connecting a capacitor and then to a coil. An electrical input is given to this circuit whereby the capacitor is sufficiently charged in order for it to discharge. The electrical energy is carried by the wire to the coil where it is charged. Electrical energy is then carried back from the coil to the capacitor by another wire completing the circuit. Alternately, the capacitor (electrical field) and the coil (magnetic field) are charged and discharged. The output of this circuit are electromagnetic waves, such as fill the electromagnetic spectrum. The system works until electrical resistance in the three components converts enough electrical energy into heat to sufficiently degrade its output.

What is done using the new atomic decay system is to paint the capacitors with radium chloride. This unstable compound emits alpha and beta particles when magnetically or electrostatically pulsed. These particles are absorbed by the capacitors (as well as the other components), the end result of which is an increase in electrical energy in the circuit. If enough capacitors can be wired into the circuit in series to produce enough energy to offset the ohmic degradation, then the output can be maintained for a long time. Radium chloride has a half-life of 800 years.

Of course, if an extra capacitor were wired in to the circuit, an excess of energy would result. Even if this excess energy is small, it can be very important. Devices using a similar method have also been patented (2) (3).

In the next step, the circuit described above is given an antenna and a tesla coil. The radium chloride doped capacitors are turned to one of the resonant frequencies for the tesla coil. An antenna is used which is suitable for receiving this same frequency output. A feed back loop is set up whereby energy is being pulsed into the system in these resonant frequencies. It is estimated that an output of three thousand watts can be obtained from this "lifetime battery" with an input of only fifty watts (4). A transformer and other devices can be used to tailor the electrical output produced by this device according to the need. Details for construction and tuning of this "battery" are available commercially (4).

This whole device can be held in one's hand. Imagine the power of one hundred or one thousand such units. Certainly a U-boat or a field propulsion saucer could be powered using this system.

Dr. Freeman believes this nuclear doping might be the missing link in several free energy devices. Dr. Freeman has evidence that both the Hubbard and Hendershot generators were doped with nuclear material. He has evidence that Hubbard actually worked for the Radium Company of America. Further, he has found evidence that it was radioactive material which was used to dope Moray's germanium valve (5).

Even further, he has suggested that the initial starting energy necessary for the operation of the Schappeller device, which will be discussed shortly, was supplied by a radioactively doped electret (5). Bolstering Dr. Freeman's claim is a U.S. patent using such a radioactive electret to maintain its charge (6). This is not the approach favored in this book, but the use of something like the "lifetime battery" to start the Schappeller device is not beyond the real of reason. In fact, there is some evidence that a very strange battery was being produced in wartime Germany.

During the war years, at least until 1943, none other than Professor. W. O. Schumann was engaged in building something called a "battery" at the Technical Institute at Munich. This battery was a project to itself and funded by the Deutschen Forschungsgemeinschaft, forerunner of the Reichsforschungrates, the Reich Research Council (7). The Reich Research Council coordinated high-priority war research between academic, industrial and military facilities.

This is the same Dr. Schumann who was brought to the United States after the war as part of Project Paperclip (8). This is also the same Dr. Schumann noted for the discovery of the Schumann Resonance. Dr. Schumann was no stranger to free energy devices since it was he who evaluated a working Hans Coler device in 1926 and could find no fault, hoax or bad faith, on the part of its inventor (9).

Rumor has it that Dr. Schumann's specialty was antennas and that he was responsible for building or improving American submarine communication after the war. It is said this was done by employing extra low frequency radio equipment and mile-long antennae which were towed behind the submarines themselves. The radio waves employed for this communication were said to go directly through the earth's center. Dr. Schumann also discovered something called the Schumann Resonance which deals with the resonant frequency of the planet earth itself.

Returning to wartime Munich, why would a full professor and world-class scientist be devoting years of research and government sponsorship to a battery while Germany was in the middle of a war? The answer is that this battery was something special. Was this similar to the "lifetime battery"? Could this type of energy production have been the promised means of freeing Germany from dependence of foreign oil? Was this battery an energy producing device, capable of powering or starting a field propulsion saucer?

The old problem arises. The question is not could this be the way it was done. The question is was this the way it was done, What proof is there that nuclear decay was used by the Germans to produce energy by any other means than is in practice today? Dr. Freeman provides one hint.

This scrap of evidence involves a religious sect. It is the Methernita Society of Switzerland. This is a self-contained, Christian brotherhood who own large areas of land in Switzerland. Among their accomplishments is a free energy device they call the Testatika. One desk top machine can yield an output of 3000 watts. This machine or machines have been in existence since the late 1970s and have been demonstrated for outsiders, including scientists and engineers. No fraud has ever been detected.

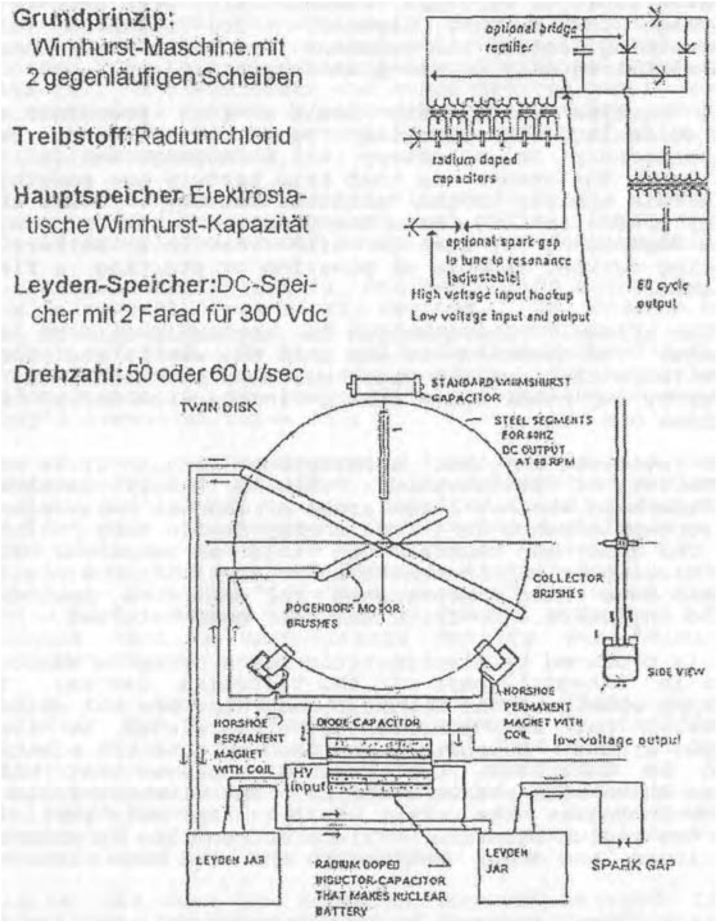
High voltage is produced by electrostatic means using a Wimhurst generator as in integral part of the Testatika device. The counter-rotating wheels of the Wimhurst generator are not allowed to spin freely, but are purposefully restricted to lower revolutions per minute. Capacitors are used to hold the electric charge which is generated. Dr. Freeman believes that these capacitors are doped with radium chloride. The electric field of the capacitors increases the output of alpha and beta particles derived from the radium chloride. This electron flow is absorbed by the capacitors and other components and fed back into the system.

The Methernita Society has never been forthcoming concerning the workings of this device. The machine itself seems to be the brainchild of one person, Paul Baumann, who is described as a

Methernita Testatika with Doped Capacitors

Der Testatika-Generator

Der erste wissenschaftliche Konverter zur Umwandiung elektrostatischer Energie in elektrodynamische Energie



Grundprinzip: Wimhurst-Maschine mit 2 gegenläufigen Scheiben

Treibstoff: Radiumchlorid

Hauptspeicher: Elektrostatische Wimhurst-Kapazität

Leyden-Speicher: DC-Speicher mit 2 Farad für 300 Vdc

Drehzahl: 50 oder 60 U/sec

optional bridge rectifier
radium doped capacitors
optional spark gap to tune to resonance [adjustable]
High voltage input hookup
Low voltage input and output
60 cycle output
STANDARD WIMSHURST CAPACITOR
TWIN DISK
STEEL SEGMENTS FOR 60HZ DC OUTPUT AT 60 RPM
COLLECTOR BRUSHES
POGENDORF MOTOR BRUSHES
SIDE VIEW
HORSHOE PERMANENT MAGNET WITH COIL
DIODE CAPACITOR
low voltage output
HORSHOE PERMANENT MAGNET WITH COIL
HV input
LEYDEN JAR
RADIUM DOPED INDUCTOR-CAPACITOR THAT MAKES NUCLEAR BATTERY
LEYDEN JAR
SPARK GAP

Dr. Freeman's drawing of the Testatika.

"technician". Even in the old films of the Testatika, Mr. Baumann does not look like a young man. Germany is Switzerland's neighbor and what better place to utilize secret wartime technology than in a closed religious order. Dr. Freeman informs me that one of the builder's assistants talks of radioactive and non-radioactive forces in conjunction with this machine. Dr. Freeman has put these scraps of evidence together and made a drawing which is reproduced here.

Let's try reversing an equation. What if the T. T. Brown relationship between a highly charged capacitor, gravity and movement were altered? What if the highly charged capacitor were fixed and unable to move in a gravitational field? Would not the energy evidenced in the movement of the capacitor in T.T. Brown's work be translated into electrical energy and contained in this fixed machine? Would this not be a generator?

Let's flip it around again. Could not a flying version of T. T. Brown's charged capacitor have gotten charged via decay of radioactive material with accompanying hardware similar to what has been described above?

One more point should be made concerning the possible relationship between atomic energy and field propulsion. We do know that electromagnetic radiation can be generated by atomic fission or fusion. This is done whenever nuclear weapons are detonated. It is called an electromagnetic pulse. This is a well-recognized phenomena and the military's communications and sensitive electronics have to be "hardened" against this electromagnetic pulse as a battlefield necessity. So the relationship between electromagnetic and atomic energy does exist. The question still remains as to a technological breakthrough in the application of this phenomena and to whether the Germans pioneered this effort involving flying craft.

Atomic/Field Propulsion Sources

1. United States Patent, Patent Number 5,443,857, August 22, 1995, granted to Howard C. Rivenburg, "Power Source Using A Photovoltaic Array And Self-Luminous Microspheres".

2. United States Patent, Patent Number 5,642,014, June 24, 1997, granted to Steven J. Hillinlus, assigned to Lucent Technologies, Inc., "Self-Powered Device".

3. United States Patent, Patent Number 4,835,433, May 30, 1989, granted to Paul M. Brown, assigned to Nucll, Inc., "Apparatus For Direct Conversion Of Radioactive Decay Energy To Electrical Energy".

4. Lifetime Batteries, 13A and 13B, contained in catalog of Energy Research Company, P.O. Box 1514, Jackson, CA. 95642

5. Freeman, Gordon Dr., personal letter to author dated 3/7/02

6. United States Patent, Patent Number 3,949,178, April 6, 1976, granted to Sten Hellstroem and Rolf Bertil Goeran Joenson, assigned to Telefonaktiebolaget L M Ericsson

7. Bundersarkiv, Postfach 450569, 12175 Berlin, file on Dr. W. 0. Schumann, courtesy of Mark D. Kneipp.

8. Foreign Scientists Case Files, 1945-58 "Winfreid Otto Schumann", Location Box 151,631/26/01/07, The National Archives, 8601 Adelphi Rd., College Park, Maryland 20740, Courtesy of Mark Kneipp

9. British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee Final Report Number 1043, item number 31, "The Invention of Hans Coler, Relating To an Alleged New Source of Power", Bryanston Square, London

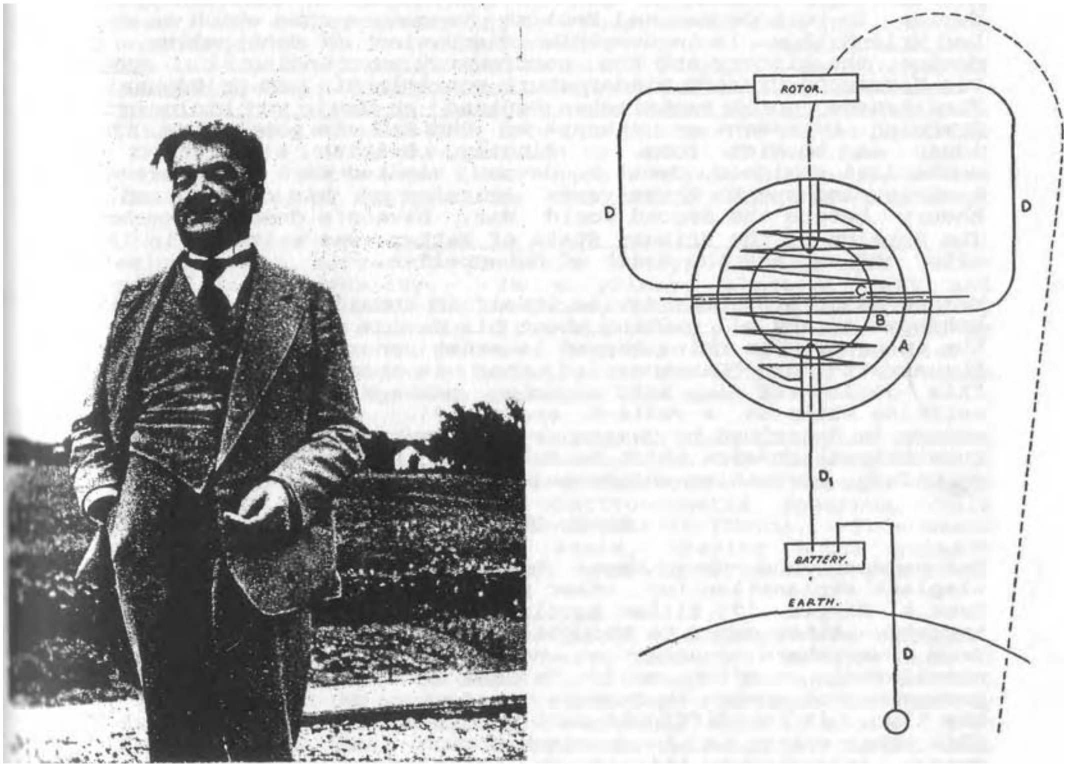
The Karl Schappeller Device

Was the Schappeller device an engine used in German field propulsion saucers? This is a possibility. Because so little has been reported about this device in the English language, the following is a report describing Karl Schappeller and his device in some detail.

Karl Schappeller (1875-1947) literally went from being born in poor house to owning a castle during his lifetime. His economic success was mirrored in his experiments in energy as a lay-scientist, culminating in the invention of a free-energy device which attracted considerable attention around 1930. Schappeller made no secret of his invention and actively sought private financing to manufacture and distribute the results of his research. He was in touch with financial concerns and even spoke with a representative of the British Admiralty concerning the utilization of his device to power the Royal Navy's ships (1).

At this time, 1930, the device was somehow appropriated and further worked upon by a governmental organization of the German Weimar Republic, the Reichsarbeitsgemeinschaft or Reich Works Association (RAG). At least one aim of the RAG was to make Germany self-sufficient in energy production. Specifically, they published their intentions to utilize many Schappeller devices in a system of broadcast energy distribution throughout Germany which would result in the entire elimination of the electrical grid (2). As we know, Adolf Hitler assumed power three years later and was also very interested in making Germany independent of foreign sources of energy for strategic reasons. It is known that political and scientific structure was set up to work on the energy problem as evidenced later by the synthesizing of gasoline and oil products from coal by the 3rd Reich. One of these

Schappeller


ROTOR.
D
D
C
B
A
D1
BATTERY.
EARTH.
D

Left: Inventor Karl Schappeller Right: Karl Schappeller's Device. A. Steel outer casing. B. Special ceramic lining in which tubes are embedded. C. Hollow center, filled by glowing magnetism when in operation. D. Tubes, circuit and earthling.

political and scientific structures was contained within the SS and it is known that Karl Schappeller actually met with SS Reichsfueher Heinrich Himmler in Vienna in 1933 (3).

Fortunately, there are good descriptions of the Schappeller device in both German and English languages upon which to draw. Per Vril-Mythos is a complete discussion of Schappeller, his device, the history and the controversy surrounding it. "Vril" Die Kosmische Urkraft Wiedergeburt von Atlantis and Weltdynamismus Streifzuege durch technisches Neuland an Hand von biologischen Symbolen represent an attempt by the RAG to popularize their ideas in booklet form. Finally, British electrical and mechanical engineer, Cyril W. Davson, visited Karl Schappeller in Austria and spent three years learning of his device and his theory before the Second World War. Davson's descriptive book, The Physics of the Primary State of Matter, was written in 1955, after the war and the death of Schappeller.

Before describing the device itself it should be understood that Schappeller and all writing about his device do so believing that the energy-source being tapped is ether energy, sometimes called "Raumkraft" or "Raumenergie", that is space energy (4)(5)(6). This device was also said capable, perhaps with some tuning, of emitting ether as a radiant energy (7). The physics of ether energy is described by Davson as a primary physics as opposed to conventional physics which he believed could only be considered a secondary, derivative understanding.

Ether Theory

For readers who have never heard of "ether", perhaps the simplest explanation for ether physics is that of the late Dr. Hans A. Nieper (7) titled Revolution in Technology, Medicine and Society. Ether could be thought of as an energy source emanating from everywhere equally at once. The universe could be considered, as often said, "a sea of energy". It forms a background of energy everywhere, and since it is everywhere all the time, it is difficult make independent measurement of it. This ether energy is in constant motion. All energy is radiant energy, according to this theory. This can easily be appreciated as to electromagnetic radiation but it is also true of that very elusive thing called gravity. Newton described the effects of gravity but he never told us exactly what it was. Dr. Nieper tells us that gravity is really a push, not a pull. Gravity is acceleration and is caused by the ether field. Again, all energy is radiant energy whose fundamental basis is ether radiation.

From the aforementioned book by Dr. Nieper:

"In addition, Nieper established the axiom that all natural accelerations can be attributed to a single unified basic principle, namely, the interception (or braking) of a field energy penetrating from the outside (gravity acceleration, magnetic, electromagnetic, electrostatic and radiesthesic acceleration). "

In trying to explain ether, it might be thought of as an all pervasive liquid occupying all of space. This liquid concept is useful because a liquid can not be compressed but can only transfer the energy attempting to compress it from one location to another. This is how an automobile's brakes work. The driver pushes in the break pedal when he wants to stop. The plunger of the break pedal attempts to compress fluid in the master cylinder. The master cylinder is connected by metal tubes full of fluid to each wheel. When force is put on the master cylinder by the driver it is transmitted to each of the four wheel cylinders full of the same fluid which transmit the force, moving the break shoes or stopping the disc which stops the wheels of the car.

Likewise, ether serves to transmit energy through this "non-compressibility" quality. In a primary electric coil and secondary electric coil, for instance, induction in the secondary does not take place directly from the primary as is new held by physics, but though and between the two via the ether field. This concept, that of the stimulation of the ether field as means of energy transport, is also expressed by Davson.

Using this perspective, that all energy is radiation, the braking of ether radiation, that is the slowing down or stopping of this radiation, can cause or generate other forms of energy. This word "energy" means the entire electromagnetic spectrum. This means electric, magnetic and electrostatic fields. This means heat. This also means gravity. Again, gravity is the primary radiation of the ether field. It radiates from every point in the universe equally.

This concept seems ridiculous until it is given some thought- One might ask: How can gravity be a push when we know better? After all, things fall to earth don't they? The answer is that the effects we feel and call gravity are due to gravity shielding. Ether radiation can be braked, that is slowed down and absorbed by mass. It is then re-radiated or turned into mass. It is re-emitted as slower ether radiation or even as heat. Some of it can is converted into mass inside a planet. If there is a loss of ether radiation, then there is shielding. Thus, a planet would shield from this radiation in one direction. That direction is always toward its center which is the direction of greatest mass and that is what we describe as "down". This is simply the area which contains the maximum amount of shielding. In all other directions the ether radiation continues to exert its push on us. The area of minimum shielding is directly opposite the area of maximum shielding, so things fall (or more correctly are accelerated or "pushed") to earth.

Think about this for a minute. Being in deep space is a little like being underwater. Underwater, all pressure from all points are so similar that we feel weightless. We are weightless in deep space because the ether field exerts a push on us from all directions equally. In space, the nearer one gets to a large body the stronger the push is from the opposite direction since the body shields or converts the ether radiation. The result of this thinking is a mechanism totally different from "gravity" as we know it but appearing as exactly the same observed phenomena.

The beauty of this ether theory of gravity is that gravity functions like every other form of radiation. Its underlying cause, ether radiation, can be converted to mass or, in certain circumstances, re-radiated or converted to other forms of energy. No Unified Field Theory is necessary. The ether field is the unified field. Further, there is no need to look for something separate called "anti-gravity". If gravity is a push then it is all anti-gravity. All we have to do to make a UFO is to find this particular gravity frequency and find out how to generate it.

Ether physics was a lost physics. Physics was hijacked early in the 20th Century by alleged results of the Michelson-Morley experiment. The Michelson-Morley experiment assumed "ether" was matter. There is some confusion here. We know now that particles moving near the speed of light are measured as waves, that is energy, rather than as matter. Nevertheless, ether theory has been discredited among physicists who, in turn, discredit others who raise the subject. It is only through the efforts of "free energy devices" and free energy researchers that this knowledge is being returned to us. Without this ether theory, the reason these devices work cannot be explained at all. Rejection of ether theory allows these devices to be dismissed as "theoretically impossible" and so fraudulent by simple deduction. They are marginalized and dismissed as "perpetual motion devices". According to established physics, perpetual motion devices violate physical laws of conservation of energy. Without an ether theory as an explanation, they do violate laws of conservation of energy and so their detractors are able to simply dismiss them out of hand. The simple fact that some of these free energy devices actually work does not seem to bother these scientists in the least. Rather than change the theory to accommodate the observed facts, the facts are ignored and substituted by dogma. Whether we like it or not, we are living in an energy Dark Age.

Instead of ether theory, we have all been led to focus upon Einstein and his Theories of Relativity. Two or three generations of scientists have wasted themselves on "trying to prove Einstein right". This misguided thinking has resulted in stagnation. One need go no further than the many "free energy" devices which have arisen to the level of notice in spite of accepted scientific theory to see that this statement is true.

Needless to say, German scientists of the Nazi period labored under no such illusions. They never abandoned ether physics. This was the fundamental reason why field propulsion UFOs were first developed in Germany. After the Second World War two different sciences developed called "Physics". One was the relativism taught in schools. The second more esoteric type was utilized only secretly, by the secret government, for deep black projects.

Structure of the Schappeller Device

According to Davson's description upon which we will rely, the Schappeller device is really composed of two separate units, the rotor and the stator. The stator is constructed as follows: Its surface is round or ball-shaped, being composed of two half-shells of steel. These half-shells contain the internal structure and are air tight. Attached at each "pole" of each half-shell is an iron bar magnet, most of whose structure is internal. This means that the bulk of the magnet is inside the steel ball, one opposite the other. There is a space between the two bar magnets at the very center of the sphere.

Insulation, a ceramic material, is placed on the inside of the steel ball leaving a hollow central area. Within this hollow area and around the space between the magnets are wound two internal coils. These originate at the bar magnet poles and each terminates at the center of the sphere with a connection leading out of the sphere to the rotor. These coils are composed of a hollow copper tube filled with a special and secret substance called the "electret". Upon leaving the sphere the electret filled copper tubes are replaced by conventional copper wire. An electrical connection is made from the outside surface of one pole to one pole of a special type of battery which is grounded at the other pole or, as an alternative, to a special device called an "Ur-machine" which will be discussed.

This electret is a permanent magnet within the sphere. This type of magnetism is not identical with ferro-magnetism or electromagnetism, it is much stronger (8). The actual composition of Schappeller's electret remains a secret but another electret has been made by Professor Mototaro Eguchi. It consists of carnauba wax and resin, perhaps also containing some beeswax. It was kept in a strong electric field while baking slowly until it solidified. For purposes of production of Schappeller spheres, a complete electret manufacturing plant would have to be set up which had no parallel in present science (9).

Before being set into operation, all the air is pumped from the hollow core of the sphere. This whole ball is mounted on a swivel mechanism so that the poles can be moved from the vertical to the horizontal. The stator is completely unattached from the rotor. The stator can function without the rotor and the stator is capable of producing electrical energy without the rotor. The rotor could also be used to generate additional electrical energy.

The rotor consists of: A steel wheel of special design fixed on the shaft to be driven and surrounded on its outer surface by magnets which are attracted and repelled by the force of the stator. The copper wire attached to the internal copper tubing filled with electret runs through this wheel and supplies electric power to the magnets. The magnets are hollow and filled with the same electret. There are always an odd number of magnets.

A variant of this rotor comes to us from Taeufer, who refers to this further development as the "Ur-Machine". This machine is composed of six sphere units as described above, five revolving around a sixth set above or below the plane of the other revolving spheres. A seventh unit would be employed to rotate the rotating five spheres and so would be offset, and not attached to the others. The five rotating spheres would charge the sixth stationary sphere. The sixth and seventh spheres would function as an anode and cathode and so ground the unit. The Ur-machine could be used to activate other spheres instead of a battery-earthing procedure (10).

As a prime mover, an engine, the rotor would be employed turning a driven shaft. The stator would be offset, that is, moved off center in relation to the rotor. Schappeller worked out various angles of efficiency (11). The driven shaft could be used to power any number of machine applications such as, for instance, the propellers of a ship.

Means of Operation

The device is started through totally unique battery and a connection to the earth (12). A specific excitation impulse must be given to the device (13). This electric impulse was conducted through the iron magnet and jumped the gap in the center of the sphere to the other iron magnet.

What occurred then sets this device apart from all others. In the vacuum of the sphere, in the center space between the two bar magnets a field of "glowing magnetism" was set up. This glowing magnetism was something entirely unique. It is recognized as a magnetic field but much more powerful and unlike any magnetic field of an iron bar or an electric coil. Once the initial input had been made to start the device, the battery and ground could be disconnected. The device would continue of operate on its own (14).

For an understanding of what is really happening here we have to consider the bar magnet. We think of a bar of iron with two poles, one positive and one negative or perhaps one north and one south pole. But there are really three components to the bar magnet. There are the two poles and the neutral zone between the poles If we cut the magnet in half we get two new poles. For the Schappeller this neutral area is very important. Imagine a bar magnet running through the vertical axis of the ball. Then imagine the center section cut out. We now have a north pole at the top of the ball, a south pole at the bottom of the ball just as we do with the planet Earth. In the center we have a missing section with a south pole, opposing the north pole at the top of the ball and, likewise, a north pole opposite the south pole at the bottom of the ball. We have now four poles and a split bar magnet with a gap in its center section.

It is this gap in the center where Schappeller's "glowing magnetism" is generated by grounding, that is, charging the device via a special battery and an earth connection. This glowing magnetism is the mystery. Davson cites Schappeller's calculations and gives this form of magnetism as being one thousand times more powerful than that produced by present magnetism (15). He also states that in this form of magnetism the electricity is stationary while the magnetism is radiated (16).

To repeat again, Davson contends throughout his book that this glowing magnetism is not found in secondary physics, that is, in modern physics, and that this glowing magnetism is a manifestation of primary physics. As a phenomenon of primary physics, it is responsible for and can generate heat, electricity and magnetism.

After initial stimulation and in a state of glowing magnetism, no further input of energy is needed from the battery. The device is able to draw in energy to it directly from the surrounding ether, bind this energy though its magnetic electret material, that is the filling in the hollow copper coils of the internal coil, and then re-radiate energy producing heat, electricity, magnetism or mechanical work depending upon the application.

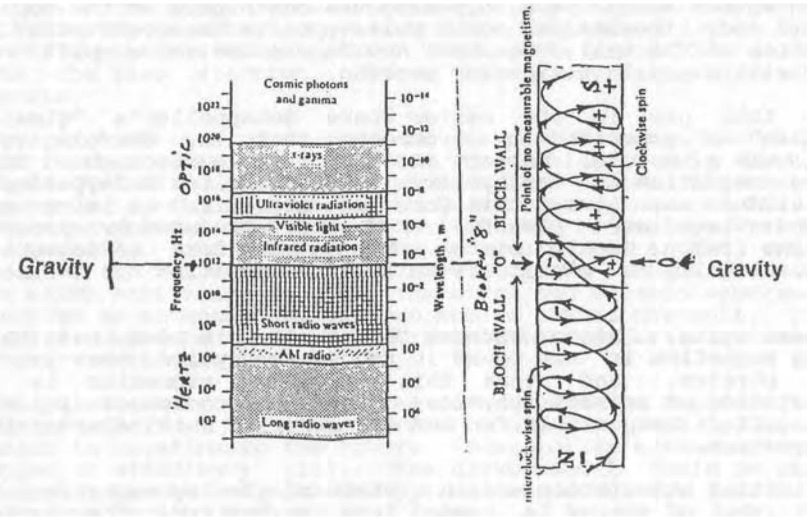
Stated another way, this is an implosion device and it is described as such (17) (18). Unlike the Schauberger device which is associated with the word implosion, the Schappeller device operates purely at the energetic level. Energy is drawn towards the center, through the magnets, into the field of glowing magnetism, and then radiated outward.

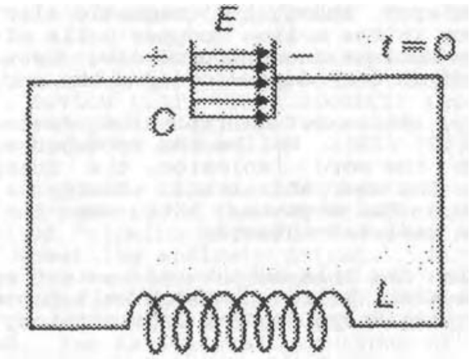
My first explanation for this output of radiant energy involves the concept of the Bloch Wall. A Bloch Wall is defined by Van Norstrand's Scientific Encyclopedia, 1958 edition, pages 201 and 202, as follows:

> "This is a transition layer between adjacent ferromagnetic domains magnetized in different directions. The wall has a finite thickness of a few hundred lattice constants, as it is energetically preferable for the spin directions to change slowly from one orientation to another, going through the wall rather than to have an abrupt discontinuity" (18).

In electromagnetics the Bloch Wall is external to the hardware itself. It is the point of division of the circling vortex, or spin, of the electronic magnetic energies of the north and south

Bloch Wall And Oscillating Circuit


Gravity
Frequency, Hz
OPTIC
HERTZ
10^{22}
10^{20}
10^{18}
10^{16}
10^{14}
10^{12}
10^{10}
10^{8}
10^{6}
10^{4}
10^{2}
Cosmic photons and gamma
x-rays
Ultraviolet radiation
Visible light
Infrared radiation
Short radio waves
AM radio
Long radio waves
10^{-14}
10^{-12}
10^{-10}
10^{-8}
10^{-6}
10^{-4}
10^{-2}
1
10^{2}
10^{4}
10^{6}
Wavelength, m
Broken "g"
BLOCH WALL
"O"
BLOCH WALL
Point of no measurable magnetism.
Clockwise spin
counterclockwise spin
S+
N−
Gravity



Top: Bloch Wall, a gravity wave source as a function of the electromagnetic spectrum? (Dr. Richard LeFors Clark)
Bottom: Oscillating circuit. Charged capacitor (electric field) discharges, current carried through insulated wire to charge coil (magnetic field) which discharges, charging capacitor. Oscillating electric and magnetic fields yield electromagnetic waves.

poles. The negative north pole magnetism spins to the left while the positive south pole spins to the right. Energy is being conducted into the Schappeller device through the un-insulated poles and being conducted and spun on its way to the center of the unit. The point of zero magnetism, no spin and magnetic reversal, where the two spin fields join, is the Bloch Wall (19).

The Block Wall radiates energy. Remember, if energy is coming in then it must be going out. The Bloch Wall may generate radio, radar and other electromagnet frequencies but what is most interesting is that it is actually able to radiate gravity as according to Dr. Richard Lefores Clark. According to this interpretation, the conjunction of two dipolar generated force field vectors, a quadropole force field or gravity is generated according to Dr. Clark. Gravity being a quadropole source, radiates in a circular, 360 degree, pattern of two cycles. Dr. Clark has fixed the point of emission as below that of radar and above infrared at 10 to the twelfth power Hertz (20). Dr. Richard Lefors Clark believes gravity is a radiation (21) and so a "push".

Another Opinion

In late 2001, I wrote a magazine article on the Schappeller device (22) which contained most of the material described above. In that article a request for alternative explanations for the Schappeller device was made. I received a letter from Mr. Michael Watson, BSc, Charted Physicist and Member of the Institute of Physics in the United Kingdom. But there was something in Mr. Watson's background even more impressive than his professional credentials. Cyril W. Davson was a family friend whom Mr. Watson knew well in his youth and with whom he had discussed Schappeller and his ideas at length, many times. In Mr. Watson's letter was a brief summary of Schappeller's theory in which he cut through most of the confusing terminology.

This summary is important for a couple of reasons. Mr. Watson's summary of Schappeller's ether theory as described by Davson dovetails nicely into the ideas of Schauberger yet seems to allow for Tesla's experimental results on ether as explained by Bill Lyne. The following is what I learned from Mr. Watson's letter:

Most of us have heard of the two Thermodynamic Laws. These are laws of heat. The First Law of Thermodynamics states that energy is conserved, meaning that the total amount of energy in the universe always remains the same. This is no surprise for most of us and it is not the real concern here.

What is of concern is the Second Law of Thermodynamics which discusses heat and entropy. The word entropy might be thought of as a state of randomness or chaos. Negative entropy would then mean movement toward the less random or the more ordered in any particular thing. If we apply this to a system, then entropy tends to increase until the system breaks down in utter chaos

This will occur unless the system is re-charged with additional outside energy. A concrete example is less confusing.

Imagine a new automobile just coming off the assembly line. It has taken a great deal of energy to find, refine, forge, weld, and paint the metal parts of this car alone. This same concept also applies to all the other components of the car. This energy and organization constitute a highly organized state, or, said another way, a state of negative entropy.

What happens next illustrates entropy. The car is purchased. Whether it is driven hard or just sits in the garage does not matter in the long run because what happens to the car is that it starts to fall apart. This change may be small at first and may only occur at the molecular level, but it occurs nevertheless. The engine, transmission, paint, rubber, electronics, etc. all will fail with time. Even it the car just sits in the garage, in a thousand years the metal will eventually oxidize. Finally, the car rusts away forming a reddish brown heap. This is exactly the opposite of the organization and energy used to put the car together. This disorganization is entropy. The only thing which will reverse this, as we all know, are additional inputs of energy by the owner in the form of maintenance and repairs.

All things in a relative state of relative order move toward a state of disorder. In terms of heat, heat will always flow into a colder place from a warmer place. When something is heated there is a rise in its entropy. With increasing heat its molecules move faster and faster in random chaos as a bomb does when it explodes. Increasing heat means increasing randomness and chaos which is entropy. Cold, then, can be seen in terms of negative entropy. Any cold object is simply more organized and less random than the same object once it is heated.

Schappeller had something to say about the Second Law of Thermodynamics. He said there was another and unknown thermodynamic cycle which runs opposite the Second Law. To name this idea we will call it "Reverse Thermodynamics". It is the reverse of the Second Law of Thermodynamics in that it leads to an increase in entropy. Not only is there an increase in order but there is an increase in cold! Schappeller, according to Mr. Watson's letter, built his spherical device primarily to demonstrate the principles behind this Reverse Thermodynamics. It was not designed as a practical machine.

To demonstrate the difference between the Second Law of Thermodynamics and Reverse Thermodynamics two theoretical machines shall be examined. Actually, a machine running according to the Second Law of Thermodynamics is not theoretical at all. Combustion machines are of this type. For simplicity sake we will use a wood burning stove such as the type invented by Benjamin Franklin for the heating of a house.

Wood is put in a hollow iron vessel with an adjustable hole at one end. The adjustable hole admits atmospheric oxygen. An initial small input of heat is added to the wood and oxygen until burning occurs. A great deal of heat is produced once the wood begins to burn. We know heat expands. Carbon, carbon dioxide and water vapor are also produced as byproducts of the combustion. Entropy is increased. Since entropy is increased, so is pollution so perhaps we all can agree that this is a good example of the destructive technology so characteristic of the world in which we live.

In our example of a theoretical Reverse Thermodynamic machine the byproducts of the previous example can be used as fuel. But Schappeller's machine has the additional property of being creative, that is, negatively entropic. Schappeller believed this creative process to be individualistic, so we need a specific template to use as a pattern for this creation. Heat, water, and carbon dioxide are imputed into this machine. Quite amazingly, oxygen is yielded as a byproduct of this reaction! The heat is also absorbed in Schappeller's Reverse Thermodynamic machine! This absorption of heat is another way of saying that the machine is implosive in nature rather than expansive or explosive as was the heat producing machine. What is most amazing, however, is that entropy is actually reduced yielding, something which has been created - wood!

Actually, this machine is not theoretical either. It exists and works as we speak. These machines are all around us. We call these machine "life". In this case our machine is a tree. In the tree, energy, sunlight, is absorbed and combined in a cold process with water and carbon dioxide to form wood. The template used as a pattern for this seemingly intelligent, creative, process is simply a seed. In this type of reaction the "cold" force is something other than the absence of heat. This cold is an active cold. It is a "densifying", implosive cold. It is a life-giving cold. This is a cold, life giving force. To quote Watson:

"This process is life force and the reverse of the second law of thermodynamics; it is the vital force: Vril."

This is one huge difference between the physics of Schappeller and Schauberger and the physics of the Nineteenth Century. The physics of the Nineteenth Century explain everything in terms of the inanimate. Laws of physics are written using inanimate examples. Chemical reactions are described which stem from inanimate models. Animate models are simply made to conform with the inanimate assuming that life is just a special case which eventually will be shown to be nothing but chemistry and so subject to the same Second Thermodynamic Law as the inanimate. Schappeller and Schauberger both say in their own ways that this is not so. They say, each in their own ways, that a new and different law of thermodynamics applies to living forces. They say that this more akin to a life process than previous theories allow. They say this force is creative. Those that subscribed to these new ideas claim it was not only a new physical law but a new science and that Germany would lead the way to this new science. Let us take a closer look at what is claimed to be the physics behind this new science.

The first concept to be considered is cold. Cold in this sense does not mean the mere absence of heat. This is interstellar cold, the cold found in the vacuum of space. In this relative vacuum, matter is not found in sufficient quantity to use to measure this cold. Think about how we measure cold. We measure matter which is cold. We measure the heat in air or water for instance. In the absence of matter how would cold be measured? There is no doubt that if we could, for instance, place a thermometer in a glass of water in deep space, the temperature recorded would be at or very near absolute zero, 0 Kelvin or -273 degrees Centigrade or -460 degrees Fahrenheit.

The presence or absence of matter in deep space may be the subject of conjecture. The presence or absence of energy in deep space is something universally accepted. For instance, we all know that light passes through interstellar space. We see the proof when we look up at the stars, planets or the moon. Besides visible light, other electromagnetic radiations freely pass through space. These include x-ray, gamma and cosmic rays. Yet besides electromagnetic radiation many people now believe that in the depths of space there resides another form of energy with is found there as well as everywhere else all around us. This energy sometime goes by the name of "zero point energy" but for our purposes we can simply call it "ether energy". It is sometimes argued that this energy is really the result of ether rather than ether itself and that ether really is matter. For a moment, let us postpone this discussion and focus on the vast, stretches of interstellar space which are filled with ether energy, near or at absolute zero.

Mr. Watson points out Dawson's words on page 83 of The Physics Of The Primary State Of Matter where he says:

> "Cold is not therefore the absence of heat, primary heat and cold having nothing to do with molecular action (in the cosmos) there are no molecules available".

The reader may recall that something strange happens to electrical energy at absolute zero. For instance, if a disc of conducting material is held at absolute zero and the disc is given an electric charge, the electric current will circulate around and around the disc forever, never loosing its energy as it would if the disc were sitting on an office desk at room temperature. This property of cold is instrumental in the storage of at least one form of energy. The vast stretches of cold interstellar vacuum must be seen as a vast energy storage sea in a state of heightened negative entropy. Schappeller called this undirected matter-energy reserve potential "latent magnetism.

Out of this latent magnetism, both energy and matter could be produced with the corresponding stimulation. The non-excited electromagnetic field was viewed by Schappeller as simply latent magnetism. Matter is a condensation out of bipolar ether. Therefore, electromagnetism is a product of matter and is nothing more than bipolar ether in a different condition. Latent magnetism could be, then, excited into matter. Latent magnetism could be influenced by either of the thermodynamic principles discussed, the Second Law of Thermodynamics or by Reverse Thermodynamics. This vast ether field, whose most notable characteristic is the property of cold, latent and awaiting stimulus, is the progenitor of both energy, as we know it, and of matter.

Since primary cold, this vast reserve of negative entropy potential, is responsible for both matter and energy and since all energy eventually degenerates into heat, it follows that, as navson puts it, again on page 83:

> "Primary heat, as may now be understood, is composed of cold energy".

This is seems like a surprising play on words, especially from a man of science, but this statement follows perfectly from Schappeller's reasoning nevertheless.

We turn now to Schappeller's concept of "stress". Both heat stress and cold stress can be applied to an electromagnetic field. Heat stress is the usual type of stress applied to electromagnetic fields in secondary physics. Secondary physics is the physics of our everyday world according to Schappeller. Primary physics is the physics dealing with the cold force and ether yielding matter and energy, which constitute the secondary reactions and so Schappeller uses the term "secondary physics" to describe our world as we know it.

An example of heat stressing of the electromagnetic field is the condenser and the coil. A charged condenser results in an electric field and a charged coil results in a magnetic field. A charged condenser and coil, connected by a wire circuit alternately charge and discharge each other, producing electromagnetic radiation unit the heat caused by the resistance of the wire degrades the whole process into heat. Heat stress on the electromagnetism is +/-.

Cold stress on the electromagnetic field is something totally new to our science and technology. It is also seen in terms of +/- but the machines used to produce it are not known in our world. Mr. Watson did not say this but if we return to our examples of heat stressed machines, the condemnor and the coil, the corresponding cold stressed machines might be the Schappeller sphere and the Schappeller coil electret. The sphere collects the charge through the magnets, holds and condenses it in its glowing center corresponding to the electric field of the condenser. The internal coils filled with electret produce a magnetic field in the presence of the intense and pulsing electric field. According to my interpretation, the whole Schappeller sphere is a combined condenser/coil combined into one machine made possible through an initial input of cold stress.

As in our example of the condenser/coil interaction producing an electromagnetic wave, so an attraction exists between a machine obeying the Second Law of Thermodynamics and one obeying the law of Reverse Thermodynamics. This attraction can lead to interaction. For instance, an imploding or centripetal vortex can couple with an exploding or centrifugal vortex. The centripetal vortex is an example of a system following the law of Reverse Thermodynamics while the centrifugal vortex represents a system following the Second Law of Thermodynamics. We have all seen these two systems working together in everyday life. The common toilet is such a machine although the centrifugal side forms inside the drain pipe which is out of sight.

Perhaps there is another example which is more germane to our discussion. It is the diagram of the Vril power plant. (This engine diagram is used here as an example for discussion and is not a blind endorsement of the diagram's existence or accuracy.) In this interpretation of this diagram, we are really dealing with two separate devices. First, is the central spherical device which may be a refined version of the Schappeller sphere. An initial charge would be imputed into the sphere to start it after which the unit would continue to gather up the surrounding energy. This is a Reverse Thermodynamic machine. The sphere generates a magnetic field which could be offset by rotating as in the Schappeller device. The offset field would feed and so rotate the arms of the electric generator surrounding the sphere. The electric generator would gather electric energy, feeding the four large broadcasting fixtures on the walls of the saucer. These fixtures might be, for instance, Tesla pancake coils. The electric generator is an example of a machine complying with the Second Thermodynamic Law.

Both components of the power plant are bonded together in a single system since the output energy of the broadcasting fixtures on the walls of the saucer constitute additional input energy for the sphere. The two components attract one another and use and depend upon one another as they circulate and recirculate energy. As the energy level of one component increases so does the energy level of the other. Indeed, the biggest problem facing the use of such an engine may be employing a means to stop it.

The actual levitation might be the particular electromagnetic radiation coming out of the sphere. In this interpretation, the broadcast fixtures are used to steer the saucer. Davson gives output frequencies for the sphere as 10 to the sixth power (22).

Mr. Watson points out in his letter that one reason machines utilizing the Reverse Thermodynamic principle have not been recognized is that a cold stressed magnetic field is a cold machine. Even a centripetal vortex cools rather than heats. All our devices of measurement ultimately measure heat in some form. Measurement of cold is more difficult. The example already given, the problem of measuring temperature in interstellar space in the absence of matter is an example of this problem.

Finally, the reader will recall that Mr. Watson points out that electromagnetism manifests itself bipolarity, yielding four components in all. These are +/- hot electromagnetism and +/- cold electromagnetism. The reader will recall that two hot electromagnetic components can be joined (the condenser and the coil) and set into a cycle producing an electromagnetic wave. Is it possible that two complementary hot electromagnetic and cold electromagnetic machines could be set into cycle producing not a bi-polar but a quadropolar, 360 degree radiation, such as the one described by Dr. Richard Lefores Clark, to produce gravity?

Planned Uses For The Schappeller Device

If the above discussion has any meaning at all in the quest for an answer to the UFO question, one use for which the Schappeller device must have been destined was that of a power plant for a flying machine. Was this so? The Schappeller device had many planned uses. In 1930 this device was planned as a source of broadcast energy, reminiscent of Tesla, for both German homes and industry. The device could also be used as a generator, battery, transformer, or antenna (23). It is reported that toward the end of the war the SS researched the possibility of using this device in the form of a death ray (24). But additionally, and in answer to our question, the Schappeller device was envisioned as a levitation device for a flying machine. Here is some of that discussion from our sources:

"The new dynamic technology will, in the future, be able to drive electric locomotives and automobiles without the manufacture of costly armatures and everywhere through connection to the atmospheric voltage network. Hypothetically, is certainly the installation of a sufficient number of central amplification facilities which transports from the Ur-Machine the specific magnetic impulse from the dynamic spherical element. New types of aircraft with magneto-static power devices and steering, which are completely crash and collision proof, could be built for a fraction of the cost of today's aircraft—and without the lengthy training of everyone who will be servicing these aircraft".

From "Vril" Die Kosmische Urkraft Wiedergeburt von Atlantis by Johannes Taeufer, page 48.

"Our problem must be to drive toward the space ship problem to new understanding of a realization! Here a definite postulate can be established: "Spherical space ship with its own atmosphere—also technical creation of small planets with world-dynamic propulsion and buoyancy!".

Will this be possible? ---

Major powers in the world prepare themselves in any case presently, especially in Germany."

The above from Weltdynamismus Streifzuege durch technisches Neuland an Hand von biologischen Symbolen. pages 11 and 12. Please note the use of the words "spherical space ship" (Kugelraumschiff).

From Davson in The Physics Of The Primary State Of Matter, page 240:

"The Rotor is laminated to prevent eddying and the magnets do not project; the Rotor periphery is thus entirely equiradial. The Rotor is fixed to the shaft to be driven and the Stator is fixed about a metre above the earth's surface. The latter is, of course, flexible because the earth can include the sea or even the floor of an ether-ship."

From Davson, page 199:

"As has already been explained, the new Technique will not concern itself with the air as a supporting medium, but directly with the ether. Therefore, the body may be a vertical sealed cylinder with conic ends or any other suitable form. Such a body is obviously rigid and inelastic, and it must contain an ether stress of sufficient intensity to support its mass against the ether stress of the earth's stressfield, which means that the glowing magnetism core in the Stator, provided in the body to be lifted, must be able to vary its intensity according to the height at which the ether-ship is to be raised and supported whilst in transit, as the ether stress or field, itself, varies inversely as the square of the distance from the earth's surface. The actual design and solution of all the various problems in the production of such ships, the choice of methods of propulsion, whether independent or directional, belong to the new Technique, whereas here we are only interested in the principle as applied to the problem of Gravitation."

Finally, from Davson, page 177:

"Now the reason that an unsupported body falls to the ground is primarily because it has "no hold" on the medium. It was previously explained that any inert mass or body has only a latent stressfield which functions merely as the force of cohesion and has no mobility and thus only a latent internal stressfield and no external stressfield. This means that it has no "hold" on any elastic medium such as the ether or the air, therefore it must fall, and it falls towards the greater inductive energy.

If the inductive energy, through some exterior cause, could be made suddenly to increase enormously, there would come a point when the body would be supported, or rather suspended, before it reached the earth's surface.

The new Technique could accomplish this by placing a Schappeller Stator in the body in question, where the body is suitably constructed, thus setting up a glowing magnetic stressfield which would hold or keep the weight or mass of the unit body suspended, not in the air—the stressfield would have no reaction on the air—but only on the earth's magnetic stressfield.

This is the basis of the new principle for "ether ships""

Employing the Schappeller mechanism is only half the total explanation. In a field propulsion saucer there are possible two types of "drive" needed. The first is the "Auftrieb" or levitation. Employment of levitation makes the craft buoyant. It weighs nothing. If it weighs nothing it can be moved very easily. "Antrieb", impulse or motive power is the second drive involved. It moves the craft directionally. Levitation only would be supplied by the Schappeller system. Directional movement is so far best explained, in my mind, using the Tesla pancake coils as explained by Bill Lyne.

Concluding Thoughts on the Schappeller Device

In the end, what can be said of the Schappeller device? certainly, it did exist. It drew attention and funding from people within the German government of the time. It was studied by a qualified outsider, a British engineer, for a period of three years and was judged to be genuine.

There are some obvious problems, however. Exotic energies have been evoked which have not been explained satisfactorily. Therefore, the facts are not in evidence yet. Certainly more proof is required before the claims made for this device or the energies involved can be wholly accepted. For the time being we must put this discussion aside, awaiting further correlations.

There are some solutions connected with this device also. If we accept the idea that both the Schauberger and the Schappeller devices worked on the theory of implosion, then one explanation will serve to explain them both. It also allows for an ether-as-matter explanation. This may fit into the evidence gathered by Nikola Tesla. The commonality of these devices could then be sought and perhaps a more efficient device built as a result. We will pick up this theme again in the discussion section of this book.

It should be pointed out that the quest for this "new science" is not specific to Schappeller or Schauberger. Mr. Watson passed on these words from Ehrenfried Pfeiffer, a scientist who collaborated with Dr. Rudolf Steiner around 1920. Although he is not happy with the translation he sent it as he found it which is as it is presented here:

"...the method of science, in a materialistic sense, is based on analysis splitting apart, disintegration, separation, dissecting and all the procedures which have to destroy and take apart, to work on the corpse rather than to grow, to develop, to synthesize. That the human mind was captured by these methods of braking apart: in that I saw the source of our present situation. My question therefore was: (to Rudolf Steiner) is it possible to find another force or energy in nature, with does not have in itself the ductus of atomizing and analysis but builds up, synthesizes. Would we discover that constructive force, which makes things alive and grow, develop adequate building up of methods investigation, eventually use this force for another type of technic, applied to drive machines, than because of the inner nature of this force or energy we might be able to create another technology, social structure, constructive thinking of man rather than destructive thinking. This force must have the impulse of life, of organization within itself as the so-called physical energies have the splitting, separating trend within themselves.

My question to Rudolf Steiner October 1920 and spring 1921 therefore was: does such a force or source of energy exist? Can it be demonstrated? Could an altruistic technic be build upon it?".

My questions were answered as follows: "Yes, such a force exists, but is not yet discovered. It is what is generally known the aether (not the physical ether) but the force which makes things grow, lives for instance in the seed as Samenkraft. Before you can work with this force you must demonstrate its presence. As we have reagents in chemistry, so you must find a reagent for the aetheric force. It is also called formative aetheric force because it is the force which relates the form, shape, pattern of a living thing, growth. You might try crystallization processes to which organic substrata are added. It is possible then to develop machines, which react upon and are driven by this force. Rudolf Steiner than outlined the principles of the application of this force as source of a new energy..."

Since this quest for a new science with the accompanying new machines had a relatively long history in Germany, certainly pre-dating the 3rd Reich, it is almost certain that the Schappeller device or others built along a similar understanding were further developed during the Nazi period. What became of it after the war is unknown. It can be assumed that this device did not escape the scrutiny of the numerous Allied intelligence units tasked with combing Germany for examples of German science. Perhaps someday a government report will be de-classified explaining all this as it was in the case of another free-energy machine, that being the Hans Coler device, which was declassified by the British in 1978 (25) and which worked, according to Mr. Watson, using the same principles of cold magnetism. Until that final reckoning comes aspects of the Schappeller device will still remain a mystery. And until a more final reckoning comes, the question of if the Schappeller device was used as a source of field propulsion in German flying saucers must be deferred.

The Karl Schappeller Device

Sources and References

1. Bahn, Peter, Ph.D. and Heiner Gehring, 1997, pages 120-131, Per Vril-Mythos Eine geheimnisvolle Energieform in Esoterik, Technik und Therapie, Omega Verlag, Duesseldorf

2. Taeufer, Johannes, 1930, page 31."Vril" Die Kosmische Urkraft Wiedergeburt von Atlantis, commissioned and distributed by the Reichsarbeitsgemeinschaft "Das kommendende Deutschland", Astrologischer Verlag Wilhelm Becker, Berlin-steglitz

3. Bahn/Gehring, 1997, page 131

4. ibid, pages 120-124, 130

5. Weltdynamismus Streifzuege durch technisches Neuland an Hand von bioloaischen SYmbolen, 1930. pages 14-15, commissioned and distributed by the Reichsarbeitsgemeinschaft "Das kommendende Deutschland", Otto Wilhelm Barth Verlag, Berlin

6. Davson, Cyril W., 1955, pages 50-59, The Physics Of The Primary State Of Matter And Application Through the Primary Technique, Elverton Books, London

7. Nieper, Hans A., Ph.D., 1985, Conversion of Gravity Field Energy/Revolution in Technology. Medicine and Society. M.I.T. Management Interessengemeinschaft fuer Tachyonen-Geld-Energy GmbH, Friedrlch-Rueder-Strasse 1, 2900 Oldenbuurg, Germany (available in German and English language versions)

7. Davson, Cyril W., 1955, pages 212-213

8. ibid, page 231

9. ibid, pages 217, 223

10. Taeufer, 1930, pages 30-32

11. Davson, 1955, page 230

12. ibid, page 226

13. Taeufer, 130, page 30

14. ibid, page 32

15. Davson, 1955, page 231

16. ibid, page 231

17. ibid, page 57

18. Taeufer, 1930, pages 38-40

19. Clark, Richard LeFors, Ph.D., 1987, page 64, "The Earth Grid, Human Levitation And Gravity Anomalies", contained in Anti-Gravity And The World Grid edited by David Hatcher Childress, Adventures Unlimited Press, Stelle, Illinois

20. ibid

21. ibid

22. Stevens, Henry, 2001, "Infinite Energy", pages 9-13, Volume 7, Issue 40

23. Davson, 1955, page 244

24. Bahn/Gehring, 1997, page 115

25. British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee Final Report Number 1043, item number 31, "The Invention Of Hans Coler, Relating To An Alleged New Source Of Power, Bryanston Sguare, London

Chapter Summary

There is ample evidence that the Schauberger saucer model flew. The fact that the Schaubergers were brought to the United States to continue the work leads to the assessment that they worked on something of value to the government of the United States. The U.S. government was neither interested in his water research nor was it interested in his work on agriculture. We are left to conclude that it was his work on a new form of levitation, his saucer work, which brought Viktor Schauberger and his son Walter Schauberger to the United States. After learning all they could, the government of the United States dismissed the Schaubergers rather badly, foreshadowing the treatment of the German rocket scientists two decades later.

Lionel Shapiro was a credible and incredibly well connected reporter of the war and post-war years. The fact that he was able to break stories relating to secret weaponry in Czechoslovakia indicates that he had some connections within the U.S. military. With the war won, the years of 1946 and 1947 seen to have been a period when the guard of censorship was relaxed. This noose would be re-tightened as the cold war got underway. No fault can be found with Mr. Shapiro's article or its content. The article on the KM-2 electromagnetic rocket and Mr. Shapiro's other stories appeared in a respect newspapers, not a tabloids. His post-war report of the KM-2 electromagnetic rocket must be taken on face value as legitimate.

The German eyewitness account of "Magnetscheibe" prompted investigation into U.S. governmental sources for corroboration. The CIOS report and the F.B.I. report provided corroboration. In the CIOS report we find a U.S. governmental admission of experiments in field propulsion for aircraft undertaken in wartime Germany by Dr. Erb. The F.B.I. report on a field propulsion German saucer must be taken seriously because the F.B.I took it seriously. The F.B.I. carefully took the report and investigated the veracity of their subject. The F.B.I. then sent copies of this report to other intelligence agencies within the U.S. government which is indicated on the F.B.I. report itself. The Bureau saved the report all these years. The fact that this report deals with German technology but was taken by a domestic law enforcement agency, one whose "spy" activities are geographically restricted to within the USA, is noteworthy. It may indicate that the F.B.I.'s Director, J. Edgar Hoover, was kept "in the dark" about the real nature of flying saucers and may have wanted to show the other intelligence agencies that he was not so easily cut out of the information loop.

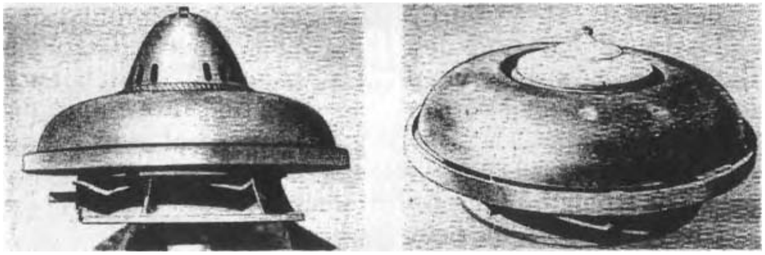
If you do not believe this F.B.I. report does not constitute something special, ask yourself, if you had walked into an F.B.I. office and described a UFO sighting you had made over ten years previously, what do you suppose the Bureau's reaction would be? Would you be taken seriously? Would your background be investigated and would your story be the subject of such extensive treatment? Would your report be kept for forty years? Or, on the other hand, would you be politely shown the door by a condescending uniformed security officer. Something in this report really struck a nerve at the F.B.I.

There is some suggestion that the Germans worked on a chemical engine which produced levitation. There is a possibility that electricity was produced by the Germans directly from atomic energy. There is some evidence, from both German and English language sources, that the Karl Schappeller device was being developed within Germany during the period of time in question. There is evidence that both the Schauberger and the Schappeller devices can be explained in terms of implosion and that implosion may have yielded the levitation force behind field propulsion vehicles. There is ample evidence that the Germans had access to the ideas of Nikola Tesla. The work of Tesla may be seen as an alternative method of propulsion or as a method of moving a field propulsion vehicle after it was made weightless by another method. There are wartime pictures along with many very similar post-war pictures which indicate that the development of field propulsion vehicles took place at this time.

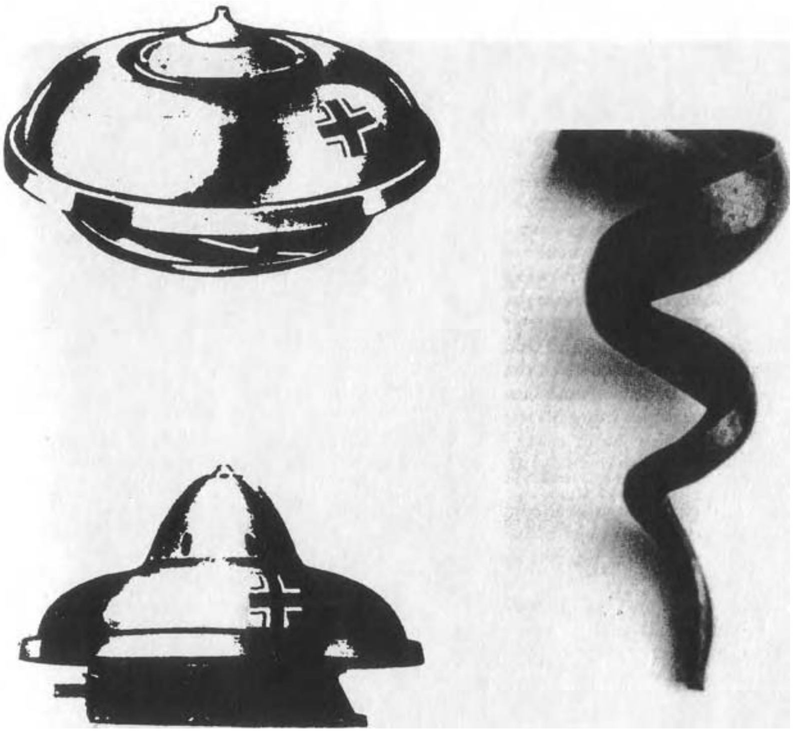
Concerning these pictures and related reports of flying saucers one is thrust up against the intelligence services of the government of the United States of America who see fit to involve themselves. As we will see, it is the latter's rather clumsy attempt to suppress and discredit the flying saucer phenomena which actually speaks volumes for its existence.

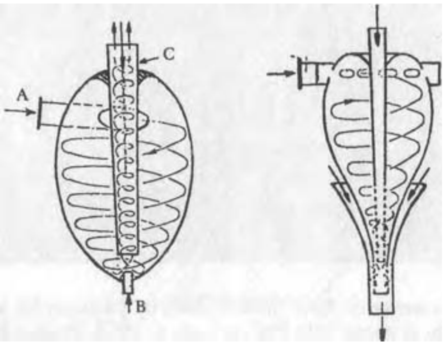
The exact methods pertaining to the propulsion of these saucers may be plausible but they can only be taken as provisional at this time. There may be hundreds of ways to power a field propulsion saucer. The question is not "how could it have been done" but "how was it done".

The brilliant Austrian scientist Victor Schauberger.

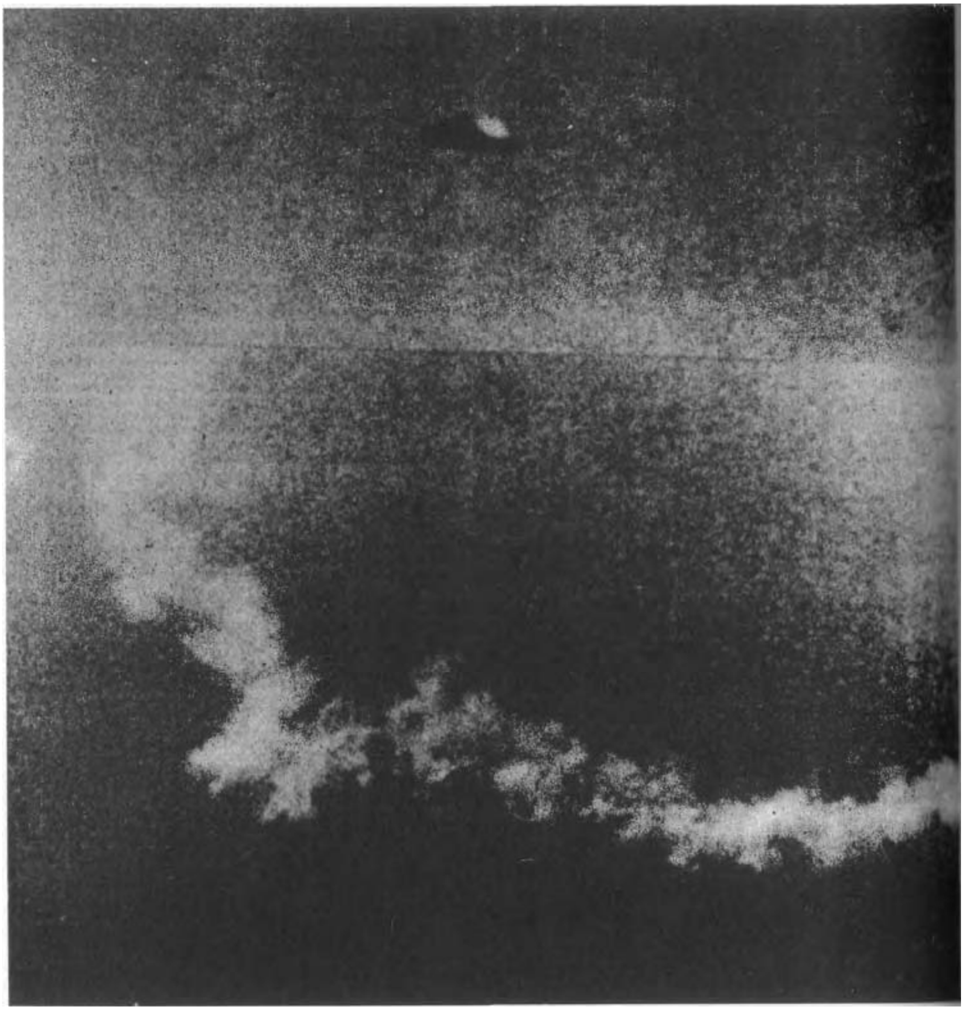


Victor Schauberger's vortex saucer models. Left: Victor Schauberger with a model of a home generator.



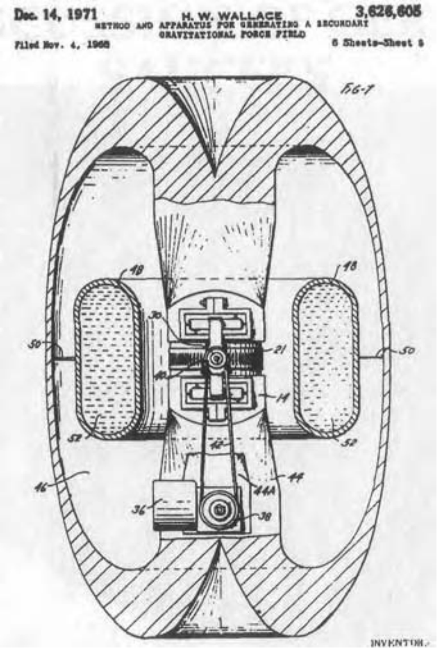


Above: Victor Schauberger's vortex saucer models, inspired by a kudu horn from Southern Africa. Below: Schauberger's two variations of an accelerator for nuclear fusion.

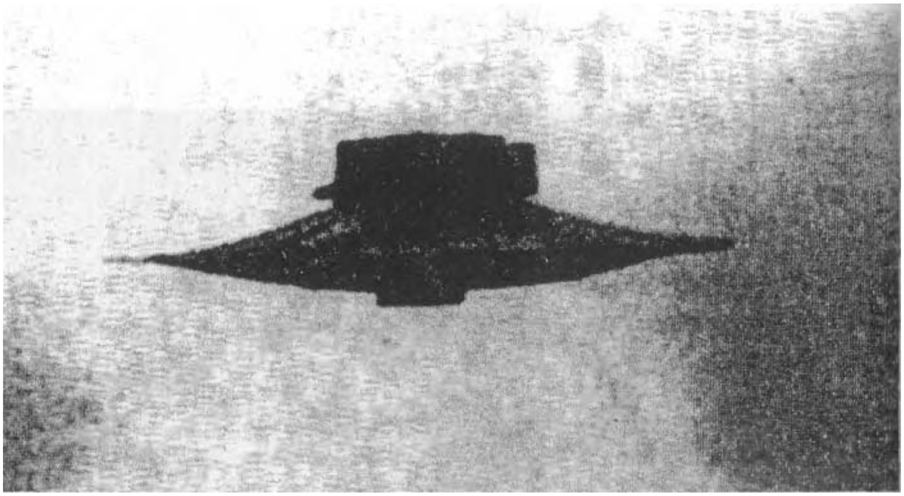


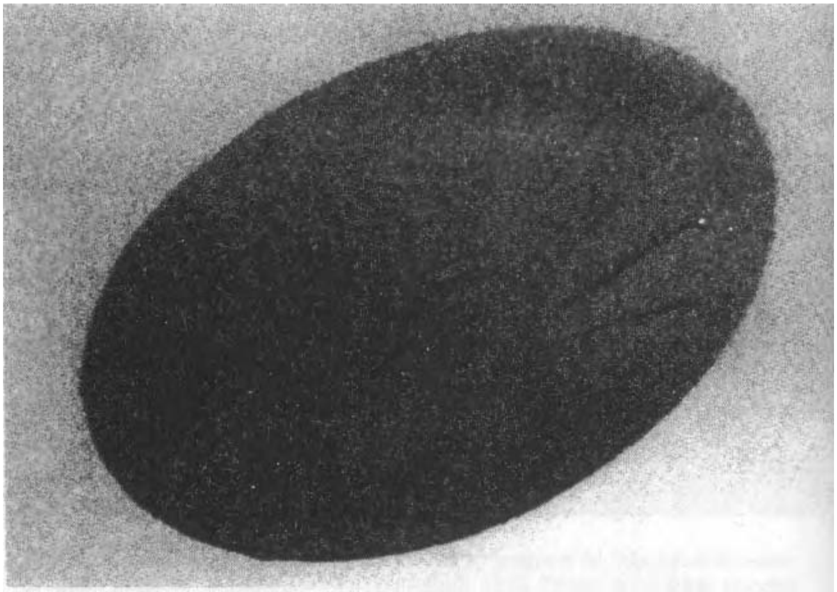
Above: One of a series of three photos taken by postman M. Muyldermans near Namur, Belgium, at about 7:30 PM on June 5, 1955. Project Blue Book showed little interest in these clear, daylight photos, despite the fame that they achieved.

Above: A cylindrical-appearing UFO photographed over Torrance, California in 1967. Possibly part of the southern California testing of US military modifications of German designs?


Dec. 14, 1971
H. W. WALLACE
3,626,605
METHOD AND APPARATUS FOR GENERATING A SECONDARY GRAVITATIONAL FORCE FIELD
Filed Nov. 4, 1968
6 Sheets-Sheet 5
FIG-7
48
48
30
21
40
14
50
50
52
52
12
46
44
44A
36
38
INVENTOR

Above: A 1968 patent granted to H. W. Wallace for a "method and appartus for generating a secondary gravitational force field," exactly the kind of engine that the Germans were allegedly developing during WWII.





Above: Two photos of a "Vril-7" saucer in flight, according to Polish historian Igor Witkowski.

CHAPTER FIVE:

LORE AND LOOSE ENDS: A DISCUSSION OF GERMAN SAUCERS

CHAPTER FIVE

Lore And Loose Ends: A Discussion Of German Saucers

Some of the historical context for German flying discs has been discussed in the preliminary section of this presentation, "The Situation Within Nazi Germany". German saucers were not designed to generate the flying saucer mystery in the second half of the Twentieth Century. They were designed as a weapons system to do a specific job. The fast-moving wartime mind-set was a time when new aircraft designs and new propulsion technologies were coming on line with increasing frequency. The insertion of these saucer-craft into the wartime fabric did not seem as culture altering as the disclosure of these same craft might be to us today. But a simple recitation of the facts is not enough. Some things need to be said about the ideas on German saucers in order to put their study in a better context. Also, some strings have been left untied and some ideas need to be mentioned in order to round out the discussion on this topic.

No better place to start exists than with Renato Vesco. Vesco's insights for the reasons for German saucers were right on the money as were his descriptions of cultural conditions within wartime Germany with prompted this response. Vesco elucidated the foo fighter mystery as nobody else did. But he went on to describe another mystery craft which he called the "Kugleblitz" or "ball lightning" in English (1). This craft is not the same as the Schriever, Habermohl, Miethe or any other saucer design so far disclosed. Indeed, Vesco seems to know nothing of these other projects. His only descriptions were of the Feuerball (foo fighter) and the Kugelblitz.

Vesco described Kugelblitz as the big brother of the Feuerball, meaning that it was a further development of the Feuerball or foo fiqhter. A central cupola or cabin was surrounded by a free-spinning body or saucer which was turbine driven. Further stabilization was probably provided by a small but rapidly spinning centrally positioned flywheel, a gyroscope, set at ninety degrees from the axis of the saucer. The Kugelblitz was able to take-off vertically. Its method of destroying enemy aircraft was probably that described by Vesco (2) and confirmed in new U.S. government documents which included the description of the "Phoo Bomb" (3) under item six, "Gases Applicable To

Aircraft". In this system the Kugelblitz approached an enemy bomber formation and ejected one of two types of gas ahead of that formation. The engines of the bombers inhaled the gas and were either destroy by pre-ignition or engine seizure caused by loss of motor oil viscosity. It is not know if one or both methods were used.

The Kugelblitz was guided to the bomber formation by a homing device whose name may have caused Vesco and later UFO researchers some confusion. This is because there existed a homing device whose name was "Kuglelblitz". This may have caused Vesco to assume the entire project bore its name. This device was manufactured by the Patent Verwertungs Gesellschaft of Salzburg and we know quite a bit about it through a Freedom Of Information Act response (4).

Curiously enough, and for a second time, the file comes to us from the Federal Bureau of Investigation, a domestic spy agency which theoretically had no business investigating foreign technology in foreign lands.

The Kugelblitz homing device was a proximity fuse which measured radio frequency waves bounced back from the target, reconciling the Doppler shift with measurement of standing waves to find the exact distance to the target. This homing device was the best of any produced by the Germans, according to the report, as was to be used on all varieties of flak rockets including the Schmettlerling and the Rheintochter. Examples were built at the Patent Verwertungs Gesellschaft plant but it never reached full assembly line production.

There are two interesting asides to this story. The first is that on May 1, 1945, one day after Hitler shot himself in the bunker and six days before Germany surrendered, two officers of the Reichsministerium fuer Rustungs und Kriegsproduktion (Albert Speer's ministry) arrived at the plant and took all existing examples of the Kugelbitz devices and the plans. Neither the two officers, the devices, nor the plans were ever seen again (5). Why was this done? Realistically, these officers must have had some post-war aspirations for this device. It must be added that at this point in the war, Speer's ministry, the Reichs Ministry for Armament and War Production referred to above was in fact being administered and run by the SS.

The second aside is another device in the conceptual stages at the Patent Verwertungs Gesellschaft called "Phantoscope". Phantoscope was to employ high frequency waves beamed to the ground then reflected and picked up on board a moving aircraft to image, in three dimensions, the contours of the earth's surface using a glass case filled with gas and tiny vertical wires. This could be done in any weather, day or night (6). One wonders if the German officers plucked this jewel also? If so, was this to be used on a manned saucer?

Vesco says the Kugelblitz saucer was flown once against enemy aircraft (7). It was destroyed by technical detachments of the SS after "a single lucky wartime mission" (8) in late March or April of 1945 (9) .

Another mystery is the post-war activities of Dr. Richard Miethe. Most all sources state that Dr. Miethe went to Canada after the war and worked on a joint Canadian-American saucer project at an aircraft facility near Toronto, Ontario. Unfortunately, all Freedom Of Information Act inquiries concerning Dr. Miethe run into the solid wall of "no record". Only one researcher ever claimed to have a document naming Dr. Miethe in association with this Avro Aircraft, Limited project, (also known as A.V. Roe, Limited), and that one researcher later admitted to being "a government asset" which throws a cloud of doubt on all his work (10).

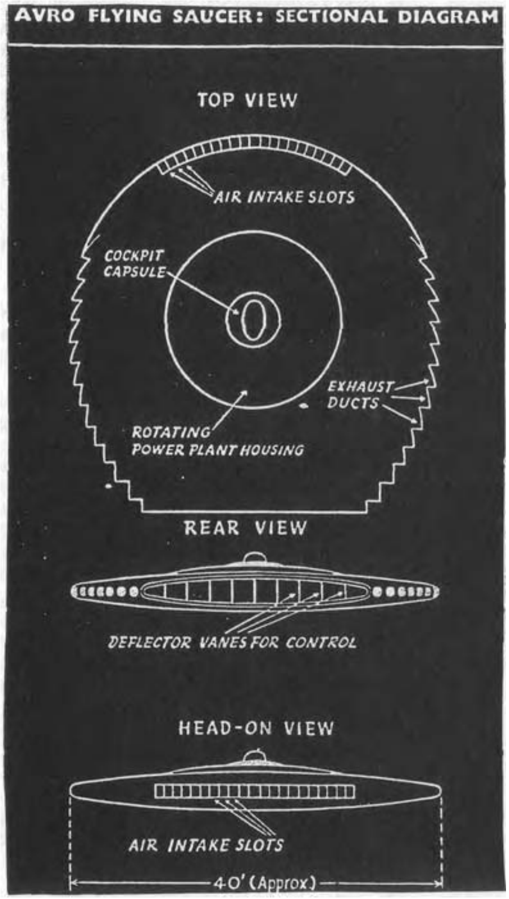
There is no doubt, however, that by early 1955, work was commenced by Avro to build a mach 3 flying saucer which is reminiscent of some of the designs attributed to Dr. Miethe. Two designs were proposed, the difference being the engine used to power the saucer. One proposal was to use several axial-flow jet engines. The second and preferred proposal was to use one large radial-flow jet engine. The axial type is the type most commonly used in jet aircraft today. The radial type was similar to the first jet engine flown by the Germans in 1937. In fact, the radial engine actually under study in Canada may have had some similarities with the Rene Leduc engine used by Dr. Miethe.

Work continued until the early 1960s under various names including Project Silver Bug and Project 1794. Finally, a small hover-craft was unveiled by Avro as the final outcome of their saucer experimentation. This "Avrocar" had nothing to do with either Dr. Miethe's work or a mach three interceptor. The Avrocar was probably a cover project for something else. This "something else" was more advanced.

The Avro Aircraft, Limited experimentation with saucer-craft was always an open secret which was at times exploited by the government. Information regarding this project has been obtained via Freedom Of Information Act using their American partner, the United States Air Force at Wright-Patterson Air Force Base, by this researcher as well as other researchers.

There exists a sub-story to the Canadian involvement which should be mentioned. In an article in a British UFO magazine, writer Palmiro Campagna revealed a previously unknown connection between the Canadian government and the history of German saucers (11). It seems that an SS technical liaison officer, Count Rudolf von Meerscheidt-Huellessem, (erroneously spelled "Hullessem" in the article), contacted the Canadian government in March of 1952, offering technical information about a German saucer which could attain speeds "limited only by the strength of the metals used in the saucer's construction". According to the article, von

Avro Flying Saucer


AVRO FLYING SAUCER: SECTIONAL DIAGRAM
TOP VIEW
AIR INTAKE SLOTS
COCKPIT CAPSULE
EXHAUST DUCTS
ROTATING POWER PLANT HOUSING
REAR VIEW
DEFLECTOR VANES FOR CONTROL
HEAD-ON VIEW
AIR INTAKE SLOTS
40' (Approx)

This is a general diagram of the exterior of an Avro saucer. It is representative of how the Avro radial engine saucers worked. Within this outer hull an inner, flat radial-type engine of was situated. This is exactly the scheme designed by Dr. Richard Miethe it and has been copied from his designs. Dr. Frost and his engine designs were overblown, heavy, complicated frauds.

Meerscheidt-Huellessem wanted a large sum of money as down payment, a monthly salary and Canadian citizenship and police protection in exchange. Support for this claim comes in the form of copies of Canadian government documents describing this offer. Mr. Campagna states in the article that the Canadian government ultimately declined the offer but that the American government may have taken over negotiations and accepted.

Contact was made by this researcher with a daughter of Count Rudolf von Meerscheidt-Huellessem's who verified that her father was a technical liaison officer. She had little contact with her father since she was two years old since he had remarried and moved to Canada. She was able, however, to provide the address of another relative, Countess von Huellessem, who was Count Rudolf von Meerscheidt-Huellessem's widow.

Contact was made with Countess von Huellessem. Count von Meerscheidt-Huellessem died in 1988. But the Countess did know a little something about the story in question. Her late husband did discuss the flying saucer with her but only once. He told her that the "drawings" had been given to a representative of the Canadian government in 1952. After review of the drawings, the only comment from the representative was that they were "outdated". The drawings were never returned. The Canadians had succeeded in obtaining hard information concerning a real flying saucer and in paying for it with an insult. Count von Meerscheidt-Huellessem was somewhat despondent over the rejection. He never mentioned the subject to his wife again. At the time they were both making new lives for themselves in Canada and the subject never resurfaced.

In discussing these events with the Countess over the telephone, she told me that she herself had seen these drawings. She was asked if these were drawings or technical plans. She said they were technical drawings on rolls of paper. I said the word "blueprint" and she said "yes". She stated again that these drawings were given only to the Canadians and not to the Americans.

Countess von Huellessem was sent a copy of the aforementioned article. Her only comment was that her husband would not have asked for a large sum of money in exchange for this information. They already had means. He might have asked for a position, she said, since her husband would have enjoyed working on this project.

Returning to the Avro Aircraft, Limited - U. S. Air Force saucer project, we have to ask ourselves some questions. First, was this information, these plans, the real basis of the Avro saucer project? This would certainly explain the reason for the partnership between the two governments involved since the Americans would have needed the Canadians at that point and the Canadians would have insisted upon control of the project on their home soil. Second, did the technology brought to the

Canadians by von Meerscheidt-Huellessen have anything to do with the jet technology obtained the under Freedom Of Information Act? It certainly had nothing to do with a hover-craft which was the outcome of this project according to the government. How could a floppy hover-craft barely capable of 300 miles per hour under the best of estimates have had anything to do with a saucer whose speed was "only limited by the strength of metals used in the saucer's construction"? Could Project Silver Bug, Project 1794, and some of the other patents of John Frost attributed to this collaboration all be nothing more than an elaborate cover story?

Another point is that until recently, the only connection linking the German saucer projects to the Avro Project and to the Americans was the involvement of Dr. Richard Miethe. With the new evidence of the Peenemuende Project's connection to the American saucer projects run out of Wright Field, Ohio and the Count von Meerscheidt-Huellessem connections to the Canadians, the weak linkage of Dr. Miethe to these projects is superfluous. There is now more than enough evidence to make these connections with or without Dr. Miethe. Further, considering the Count von Meerscheidt-Huellessem evidence, there is now a direct link between German saucer technology and the Canadian government's saucer project at A.V., Roe Limited. That link turns out to be the SS in the form of an SS technical liaison officer.

There are differing opinions as to how known saucer-types were actually powered. Every researcher seems to have his own ideas about this subject. Could the answer to this dilemma be that there are more types of German saucers than we know about? For instance a device is depicted in a 1975 issue of Luftfahrt International, a well respected German aeronautical magazine, which shows a drawing of a "Flakmine" (12). Depicted are several rotor blades, some powered by ram-jets, making it essentially a jet-powered helicopter. This device may have been derived from design work done in Italy in which the propellant and the explosive were the same substance. This device was called the "Turboproietto" meaning in English, "turbine projectile" (13). It would have been able to carry large quantities of explosive to the altitude of a bomber formation. The device would have rotored up, vertically, to the level of a formation of bombers and then detonated, using the remaining fuel as a bomb, presumably inflicting heavy losses. Klaus-Peter Rothkugel refers to this very device as a "Drehfluegel" and will detail its development in his upcoming book.

In another instance of a possible saucer type, saucers shown to Bill Lyne in a movie clip while he was in Air Force Intelligence were described by him as "flying turtles" (14). This film was taken by B-17 flight personnel during World War Two as the two German saucers attacked a squadron of bombers. other writers including Michael X. Barton and Norbert Juergen-Ratthofer used these same descriptive words. Vesco describes the "Feuerball", the foo fighter, as "circular and armored, more or less resembling the shell of a tortoise". This description also applies to his Kugelblitz (15). Turtle or tortoise is "Schildkroete" in German. Sometimes this device is referred to as a "flying turtle" in both languages. With so many writers using this term for flying craft which are apparently not all similar, there exists a certain amount of confusion about this name, "Schildkroete". Therefore, this saucer does not seem to fit neatly into any previously described saucer type. Perhaps this flying turtle is only another name for the Fireball or foo-fighter which seems to be the consensus among German writers, other writers seem to associate this word with a larger craft so perhaps this type of saucer is closer to what Vesco described as the Kugelblitz. "Schildkroete" seemed so nebulous that for many years this writer refused to accept the term at all.

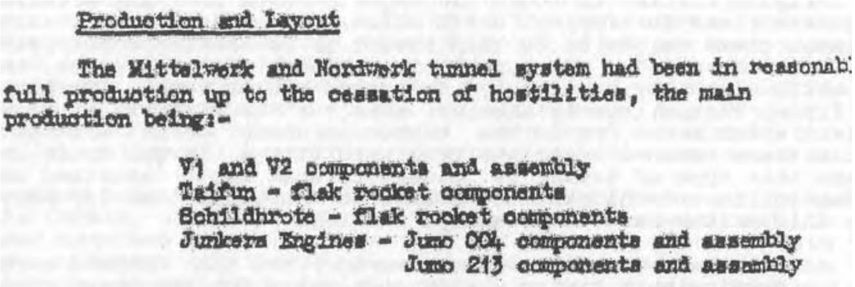
This all changed when it was uncovered that the Germans were actually developing a flying weapon code-named Schildkroete. This researcher as well as another researchers have found references to an offensive air weapon, called by the Germans, "Schildkroete", and known to American intelligence. The exact nature of this device is, however, still kept secret. The government is uncooperative, even when presented with their own words on the subject and copies of their own reports. For instance in a Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee interrogation of Albert Speer, Reichminister of Armaments And War Production, report 53(b), Speer is specifically asked about "Schildkroete". Only Speer's reply is retained in the record, not the actual question. Line number 20 of that interrogation quoted here as the document from microfilm is difficult to read:

> " 20. Schildkroete he was not sure about, but he thought is might, conceivably be a jet fighter. "

By the time Schildkroete had come about, Speer had lost much of his standing and duties to officials of the SS. In this same set of interrogations Speer deferred a question concerning V-weapons to Dr. Hans Kammler as the one the Allies should seek as the expert. Speer was the only one raising Kammler's name. There was no follow-up questioning by the Allied interrogators. It was almost as if Speer had uttered an obscenity, invoking the "K" word, which was a word simply too hot to be touched in that setting.

The next Allied reference to Schildkroete comes from the Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee, Evaluation Report 40, titled "Sonderausschus A-4". Sonderausschus was an organization whose job it was to prioritize resources toward projects most needed to defend the Reich. These high priority programs were the Vierjahresplan, Vulkanprogramm, Jaegerprogramm, Lokprogramm, and the Notprogramm. Each had projects within these headings. Even though under pressure of law in the form of a request under the auspices of the Freedom Of Information Act, the Federal Government of the United States of America has responded with a "No Record" when asked for their files on some of these programs. This is true even when confronted with their own documents naming

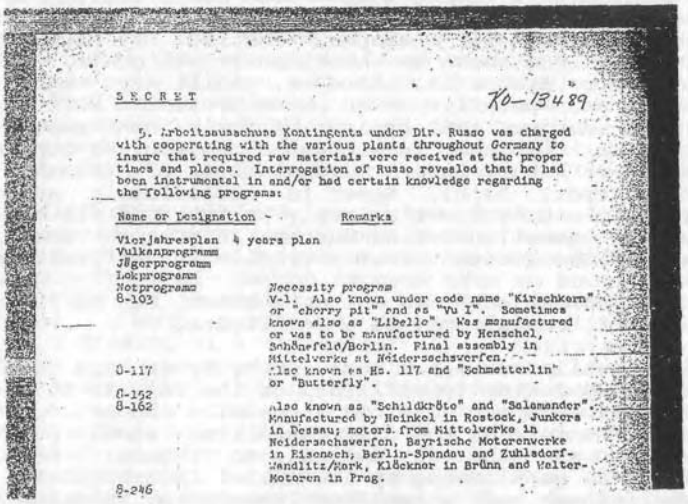
U.S. Government Documents Mentioning "Schildkroete"



Production and Layout

The Mittelwerk and Nordwerk tunnel system had been in reasonab full production up to the cessation of hostilities, the main production being:-

V1 and V2 components and assembly
Taifun - flak rocket components
Schildhrote - flak rocket components
Junkers Engines - Jumo 004 components and assembly
Jumo 213 components and assembly

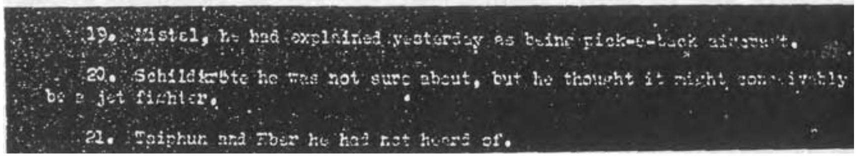


SECRET

KO-13489

5. Arbeitsausschuss Kontingents under Dir. Russo was charged with cooperating with the various plants throughout Germany to insure that required raw materials were received at the proper times and places. Interrogation of Russo revealed that he had been instrumental in and/or had certain knowledge regarding the following programs:

Name or Designation -	Remarks
Vierjahresplan	4 years plan
Vulkanprogramm	
Jägerprogramm	
Lokprogramm	
Notprogramm	*Necessity program*
8-103	V-1. Also known under code name "Kirschkern" or "cherry pit" and as "Vu I". Sometimes known also as "Libelle". Was manufactured or was to be manufactured by Henschel, Schönefeld/Berlin. Final assembly in Mittelwerke at Neidersachswerfen.
8-117	Also known as Hs. 117 and "Schmetterlin" or "Butterfly".
8-152	
8-162	Also known as "Schildkröte" and "Salamander". Manufactured by Heinkel in Rostock, Junkers in Dessau; motors from Mittelwerke in Neidersachswerfen, Bayrische Motorenwerke in Eisenach; Berlin-Spandau and Zuhlsdorf-Wandlitz/Mark, Klöckner in Brünn and Walter-Motoren in Prag.
8-246	



19. Mistel, he had explained yesterday as being pick-a-back aircraft.

20. Schildkröte he was not sure about, but he thought it might conceivably be a jet fighter.

21. Taiphun and Eber he had not heard of.

Top: Combined Intelligence Objectives Subcommittee (CIOS) Report items 21, 22, 31, File# XXX111-38 Underground Factories In Germany, page 19. Middle: CIOS Report 40, Sonderausschus A-4, page 5. Bottom: CIOS Report 59(b) Interrogation Of Albert Speer Reich Minister Of Armaments And War, Page 3 these programs. One project, project 8-162, clearly names Schildkroete as the code-name of this project. It is listed in association with a known project, the "Salamander" project, which resulted in the He 162A Salamander or Volksjaeger jet fighter.

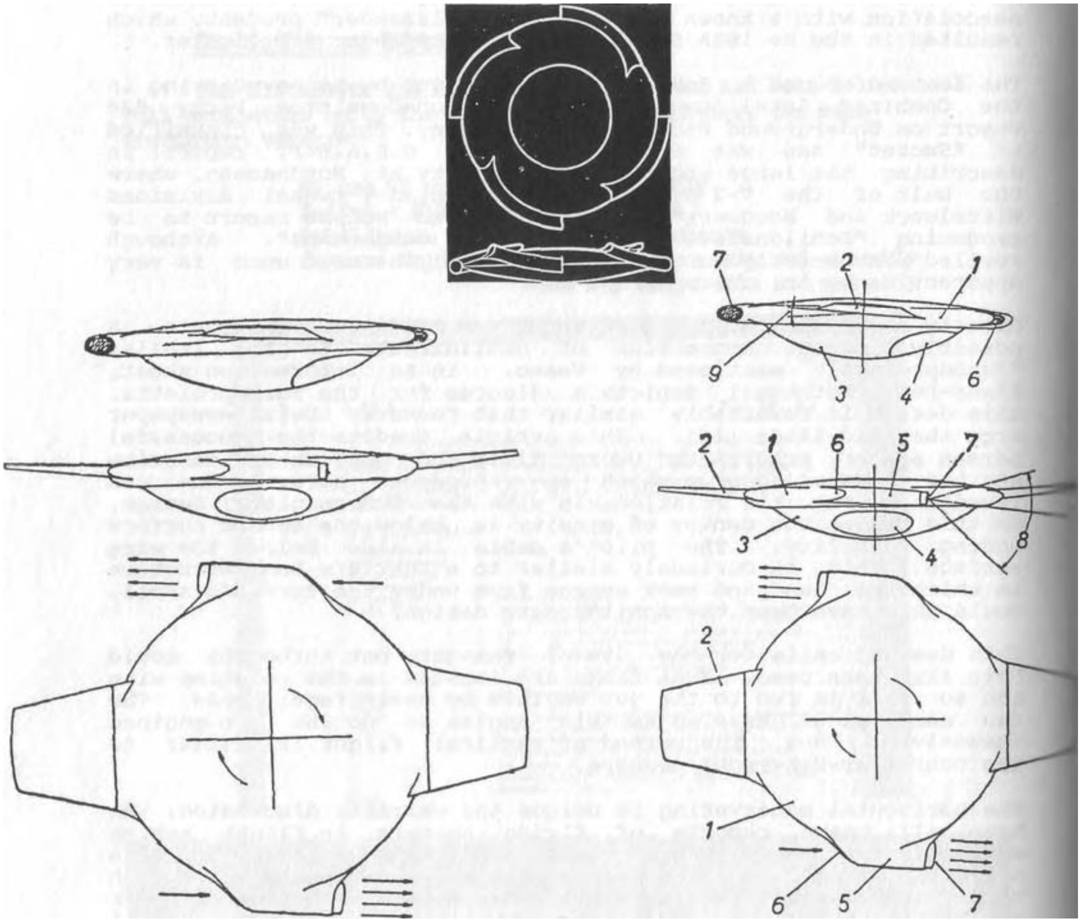
The last reference to Schildkroete was found by Heiner Gehring in the Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee Party 536 report on Underground Factories in Germany. This was classified as "Secret" and was a G-2 Division, S.H.A.E.F. report! In describing the large underground facility at Nordhausen, where the bulk of the V-2 production took place, tunnel divisions Mittelwerk and Nordwerk were said in this secret report to be producing "Schildhroete - flak rocket components". Although spelled incorrectly in the report, the intended word is very apparent.

Clearly something is going on under the heading Schildkroete. A possibly is the connection of Schildkroete to the Italian "Turboproietti" mentioned by Vesco. In an information sheet, Klaus-Peter Rothkugel depicts a diagram for the Turboproietti. This design is remarkably similar that found in Swiss newspaper from the mid-1950s (16). This article credits the successful German saucer program and Georg Klein and goes on to describe another related design which is reproduced here. One can immediately see the relationship with the Turboproietti design. In this design the center of gravity is below the saucer surface adding stability. The pilot's cabin is also below the wing surface. This is curiously similar to a turtle's bony structure in which the head and neck emerge from under the turtle's shell. Could this have been the Schildkroete design?

This design calls for the use of ram-jets but turbojets could have also been used. Fuel tanks are located in the rotating wing and so fuel is fed to the jet engines by centrifugal force. The two small wings have adjustable angles as do the jet engines themselves. Thus, the method of vertical flight is similar to the Schriever-Habermohl saucers.

The horizontal maneuvering is unique and warrants discussion. We have all heard reports of flying saucers in flight making seemingly non-aerodynamic turns instantaneously. In this article, Mr. Zollikofer proposes a simple method to accomplish this. It involves angular momentum. We all remember seeing a child's top spinning on a smooth floor. Perhaps the reader will recall that when the top nears a piece of furniture and hits it, the top shoots off instantly in the opposite direction. This happens because contact with the furniture caused a change in the top's angular momentum. The top's momentum was braked on one side. A sudden slow down on one side caused an imbalance whose force drove the top to the opposite direction.

In this same way the intentional slowing of one engine (on one side) on this saucer design would cause the rapidly spinning saucer to instantaneously change course, shooting to the other



Top: Italian designed "Turboproietti" an anti-aircraft design which used left-over fuel as its warhead. Bottom: Saucer design, 2/3/55, "Neue Zuercher Zeitung". 1. Hub of the rotating winged-wheel. 2. Adjustable wings 3. Non-rotating cabin. 4. Lookout for the pilots. 5. Ram-jets 6. Air intake. 7. Exhaust, direction changeable. 8. Angle of variation of the exhaust rudder. 9. Variable adjustment angle of the wings. Was this a Schildkroete? Kugelblitz?

side. Several of these course changes would resemble insect-like flight to the observer. The rapidity of the course changes is tied to the degree of slow-down or breaking of the saucer's angular momentum and to the degree (revolutions per minute) of that momentum. Even when stationary, increased spinning would serve as a "bank" of angular momentum to be drawn upon at a moment's notice.

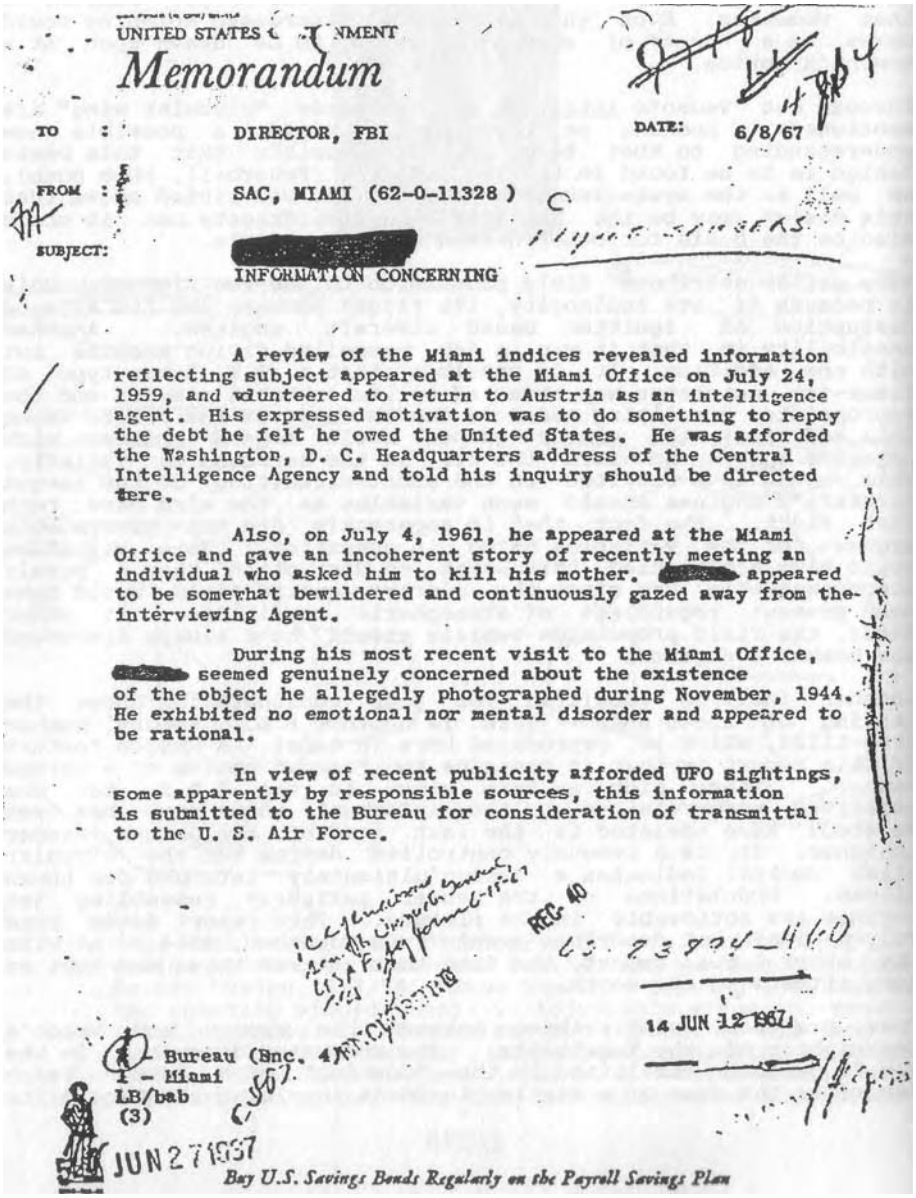
Through out Vecso's Intercept UFO the words "circular wing" are mentioned. Looking at this design yields a possible new understanding to that term. It is possible that this basic design is to be found in the foo fighter, (Feuerball, Phoo Bomb), as well as the mysterious Kugelblitz. It was hinted above that this design may be the basis of the Schildkroete but it could also be the basis for other German saucer projects.

Many writer attribute field propulsion to the foo fighter. This is because of its luminosity, its flight pattern and its alleged disruption of ignition based aircraft engines. Another possibility is that it was a jet propelled flying machine but with one addition. It is possible that a T.T. Brown-type of flame-jet generator was attached to its exhaust nozzles and the appropriate insulation added on the surface of the craft. With this addition, the exhaust gasses would become enriched with negative ions. So would the air in the surrounding vicinity. This would have resulted in the short-circuiting of the target aircraft's engines should such variables as the wind have been just right. The fact that it apparently did not always work argues for the variables being in operation. More variables would have accompanied this means of disruption than a purely electromagnetic one since the electromagnetic field would have been present regardless of atmospheric conditions. It other words, the field propulsion vehicle should have always disrupted the bomber's engines.

Another item is submitted for your consideration under the heading of "loose ends". This is another F.B.I. report, Number 62-0-11328, which is reproduced here in total. A unique feature of this report is that it contains two "xerox" copies of a German saucer. These pictures were given to the F.B.I. but the negatives were retained by the informant whose name has been deleted. Also deleted is the last name of the German saucer designer. It is a remotely controlled device but the circular glass cockpit indicates a design ultimately intended for human pilots. Undulations on the saucer periphery resembling jet engines are noticeable in the picture. This report dates from July 8, 1967 but describes events from November, 1944. As with the other F.B.I. report, the fact that it was taken and kept so long attests to its worth.

There are some similarities between this report and Vesco's description of the Kugelblitz. The encounter described in the F.B.I. report resulting in the "downing" of a B-26. Vesco describes the same or a similar incident involving the Kugelblitz

A Second F.B.I. Report on German Flying Discs
(Three pages and best possible picture)



UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

Memorandum

TO : DIRECTOR, FBI DATE: 6/8/67

FROM : SAC, MIAMI (62-0-11328)

SUBJECT: [redacted]
INFORMATION CONCERNING

Flying Saucers

A review of the Miami indices revealed information reflecting subject appeared at the Miami Office on July 24, 1959, and volunteered to return to Austria as an intelligence agent. His expressed motivation was to do something to repay the debt he felt he owed the United States. He was afforded the Washington, D. C. Headquarters address of the Central Intelligence Agency and told his inquiry should be directed there.

Also, on July 4, 1961, he appeared at the Miami Office and gave an incoherent story of recently meeting an individual who asked him to kill his mother. [redacted] appeared to be somewhat bewildered and continuously gazed away from the interviewing Agent.

During his most recent visit to the Miami Office, [redacted] seemed genuinely concerned about the existence of the object he allegedly photographed during November, 1944. He exhibited no emotional nor mental disorder and appeared to be rational.

In view of recent publicity afforded UFO sightings, some apparently by responsible sources, this information is submitted to the Bureau for consideration of transmittal to the U. S. Air Force.

[illegible] USAF [illegible] 6-15-67

REC 40

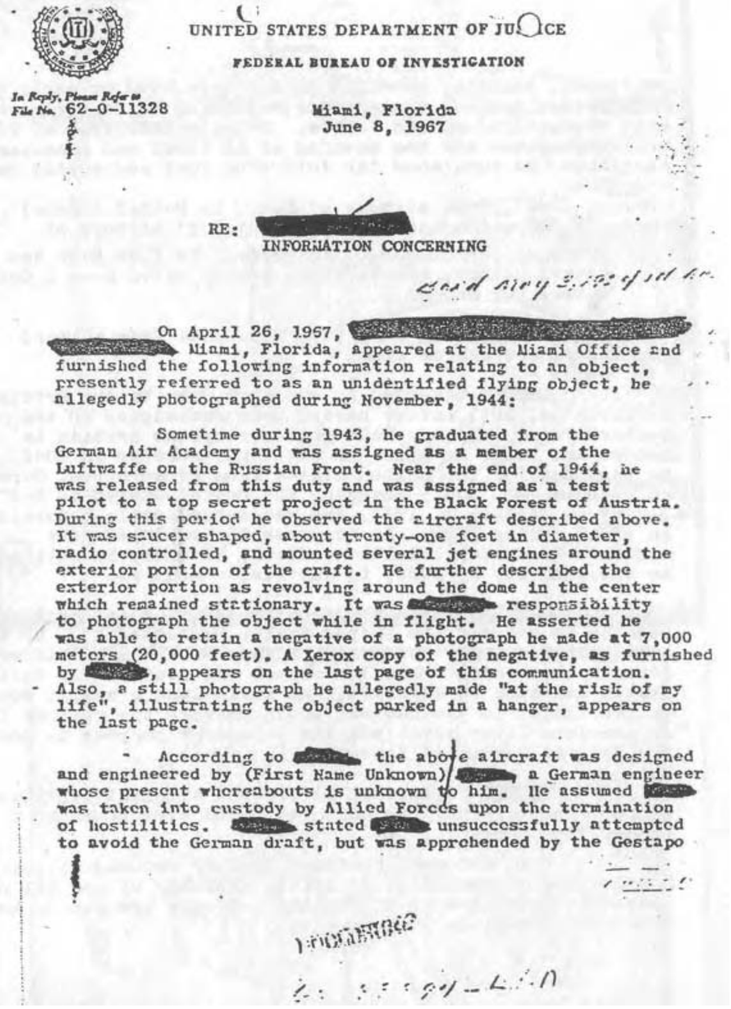
62-83894-460

14 JUN 12 1967

2 - Bureau (Enc. 4)
1 - Miami
LB/bab
(3)

JUN 27 1967

Buy U.S. Savings Bonds Regularly on the Payroll Savings Plan



UNITED STATES DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE

FEDERAL BUREAU OF INVESTIGATION

In Reply, Please Refer to
File No. 62-0-11328

Miami, Florida
June 8, 1967

RE: [redacted]
INFORMATION CONCERNING

[illegible]

On April 26, 1967, [redacted] Miami, Florida, appeared at the Miami Office and furnished the following information relating to an object, presently referred to as an unidentified flying object, he allegedly photographed during November, 1944:

Sometime during 1943, he graduated from the German Air Academy and was assigned as a member of the Luftwaffe on the Russian Front. Near the end of 1944, he was released from this duty and was assigned as a test pilot to a top secret project in the Black Forest of Austria. During this period he observed the aircraft described above. It was saucer shaped, about twenty-one feet in diameter, radio controlled, and mounted several jet engines around the exterior portion of the craft. He further described the exterior portion as revolving around the dome in the center which remained stationary. It was [redacted] responsibility to photograph the object while in flight. He asserted he was able to retain a negative of a photograph he made at 7,000 meters (20,000 feet). A Xerox copy of the negative, as furnished by [redacted], appears on the last page of this communication. Also, a still photograph he allegedly made "at the risk of my life", illustrating the object parked in a hanger, appears on the last page.

According to [redacted] the above aircraft was designed and engineered by (First Name Unknown) [redacted] a German engineer whose present whereabouts is unknown to him. He assumed [redacted] was taken into custody by Allied Forces upon the termination of hostilities. [redacted] stated [redacted] unsuccessfully attempted to avoid the German draft, but was apprehended by the Gestapo

[illegible]

in Vienna, Austria, sometime during late 1943 or early 1944. [redacted] also assumed the secrets pertaining to this aircraft were captured by Allied Forces. He said this type of aircraft was responsible for the downing of at least one American B-26 airplane. He furnished the following fuel and engine data:

> "....Fuel mixture of N_2H_4O in Methyl Alcohol (CH_3OH) rather than 'oxygen-holding' mixture of hydrogen peroxide H_2O_2 in water. 7m 1,3m high two rocket motors; smooth flow, rotary drive over 2,000 meters per second...."

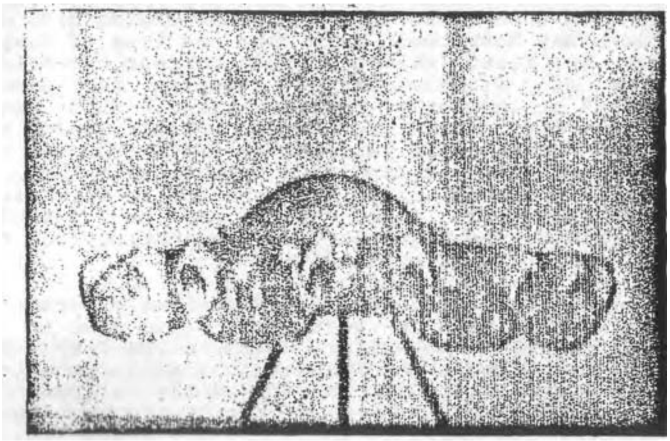
[redacted] said he copied this data from a board located in the hanger area.

[redacted] asserted he was shot down by the British on March 14, 1945, after having been reassigned to the Western Front. He was held prisoner by the British in London and later in Brussels until his release in 1946. He departed for the United States from Bremerhaven, Germany, on December 26, 1951; entering the United States in New Jersey on January 7, 1952, and was subsequently naturalized in Miami during 1958. He is presently employed as a mechanic at Eastern Airlines, Miami, Florida. He related he was born May 3, 1924, in Austria.

[redacted] stated he has withheld this information because he assumed the United States possessed it. He has become increasingly concerned because of the unconfirmed reports concerning a similar object and denials the United States has such an aircraft. He feels such a weapon would be beneficial in Vietnam and would prevent the further loss of American lives which was his paramount purpose in contacting the Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI).

[redacted] reiterated he has the original negatives of both photographs. He said the shots were taken at a thirty second time exposure.

This document contains neither recommendations nor conclusions of the FBI. It is the property of the FBI and is loaned to your agency; it and its contents are not to be distributed outside your agency.



and an American "Liberator" (17). Both saucers are surprisingly identical in description. In the F.B.I. report this secret project was set in the "Black Forest of Austria". The Schwarzwald, the Black Forest, is in Southern Germany. Vesco says that toward the end of the war the Germans dispersed their remaining aircraft to improved air field hidden in thick pine forests (18).

Vesco specifically mentions the Schwaebischerwald and the BubesheimerwaId (19). Vesco goes on to say:

> "It was from one of these improved fields that the first Kugelblitz fighter took off on its fantastic flight" (20).

The general description of the airfield hidden in a forest does seem to correspond with what Vesco described. Finally, the fuel used on this saucer was unlike that of the Me-163 or any other fuel known. Is this a variant of the exotic fuels Vesco says were considered for German saucers? (21).

Is this report confirmation of Vesco? Is the informant in the F.B.I. report describing a Kugelblitz? Is this fuzzy "xerox" copy really a picture of the Kugelblitz? It is not proof positive, but it is intriguing.

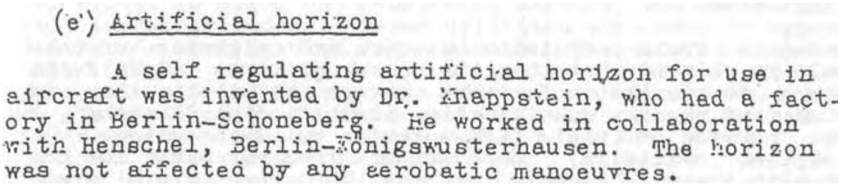
A request was made to the F.B.I. for a clear picture. The Bureau responded on March 22, 2001 saying that the Miami Field Office may have had a clearer picture but that the file was destroyed.

Here we have a real X-File, yet nobody saved the picture? Fox Mulder, where are you when we need you most? The F.B.I. did provide a somewhat clearer picture which is reproduced here.

Sometimes blind luck in needed when dealing with the government. This has proven to be the case regarding a very special compass developed by the Germans to use in their flying disc program. Actually, there may have been more than one type of compass for this purpose. The first inkling of this compass comes to us from the writings of Wilhelm Landig wherein he describes a "Himmelskompass" or heavenly compass (22). This device was mounted upon a flying disc and could orient itself using the position of the sun even in twilight or if the sun was below the horizon. The method given for its operation is that sunlight striking the earth is polarized and that this direction has a stronger electromagnetic field which can be detected with instruments (ibid). The magnetic fields emanating from the north and south poles are a similar situation.

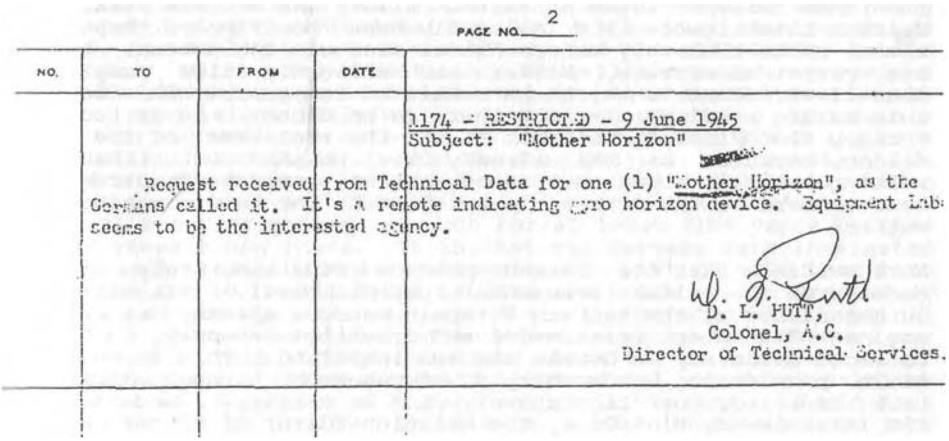
William Lyne discloses, pictures and describes a German compass which he states was used on a German flying disc in his book Pentagon Aliens, the first edition which circa 1990. He bought the device as junk from a New Mexican junk dealer who got it on an Air Force base after it had apparently slipped though a security check.

"Mother Horizon"



(e) Artificial horizon

A self regulating artificial horizon for use in aircraft was invented by Dr. Knappstein, who had a factory in Berlin-Schoneberg. He worked in collaboration with Henschel, Berlin-Königswusterhausen. The horizon was not affected by any aerobatic manoeuvres.



PAGE NO. 2

NO. TO FROM DATE

1174 - RESTRICTED - 9 June 1945
Subject: "Mother Horizon"

Request received from Technical Data for one (1) "Mother Horizon", as the Germans called it. It's a remote indicating gyro horizon device. Equipment Lab seems to be the interested agency.

D. L. PUTT,
Colonel, A.C.
Director of Technical Services.

"Mother Horizon" was possibly a device used on a German flying disc. Top: "Information Obtaind From Targets Of Opportunity In The Sonthofen Area" BIOS Report # 142. Bottom: Entry in microfilm obtained via FOIA.

Recently, mention of a German compass was encountered while searching for something else in a Freedom Of Information Act response. Called a "Mother Horizon", the device recalls and may confirm the device first described by Landig. On the other hand, it may simply be a device showing the pilot the attitude of the aircraft in relation to that of the horizon. Whether or not this is the same device in the possession of William Lyne is not known at this time.

Turning to field propulsion saucers and pictures of them, it should be pointed out that the saucer pictures of Ralf Ettl and Norbert Juergen-Ratthofer are unique to them, that is, no pictures of saucers specifically identified as "Haunebu", "Vril" exist outside of their presentation to my knowledge. As if preempting criticism, these writers counter with the proposal that all Adamski saucers are really German field propulsion saucers or originated from German wartime designs. Adamski saucers were photographed and witnessed world-wide in the early 1950s. In fairness, it should be pointed out that there also exists at least one source of confirmation of their thesis.

Confirmation of sorts comes from a new book by a conspiracy writer, George Piccard, who cites similar information to that of Ettl and Juergen-Ratthofer as coming from his informant, a man calling himself "Kilder" (24). Piccard states that he believed the name "Kilder" to be an alias. Kilder was a clerk working in British intelligence and allegedly came to Piccard through a mutual contact shortly before Kilder died of lung cancer. During his years of service, Kilder had allegedly filed away many classified documents which he committed to memory. This book is interesting reading, of that there is no doubt. It is too bad, though, that Piccard could not elicit the real name of the dying Kilder, because, as has already been pointed out, there is nothing reliable about an unnamed, secret government source and, hence, there is no reason to spill much ink in discussing the matter.

More evidence that the Germans produced something truly strange comes from the Polish researcher Igor Witkowski. Mr. Witkowski is considered by the Eastern European sources already cited, the engineer Mr. Robert Leiakiewicz and Dr. Milos Jesensky, to be the foremost authority on German saucers in Poland. This is no small title considering the mountains of research through which they have tunneled, both figuratively and in reality. According to his interviewer, Nick Cook, the Aviation Editor of "Janes Defense Weekly", Mr. Witkowski was shown classified Russian documents through an unnamed contact. In them it described German research on a device called "die Glocke" (the bell). This device was tested underground, at Der Riese, at the Wenceslas mine near Ludwigsdorf(25) under the German code-names of "Laternentraeger" ("lantern carrier") and "Chronos" which obviously refers to time. This was done under the auspices of a heretofore unknown SS organization, the Forschungen, Entwicklungen and Patente (Research, Development and Patents) or FEP. This was Kammler's group according to Mr. Witkowski (26). Could this be the true name of what has been referred to up until now simply as the "Kammler Group"? Mr. Witkowski maintains that this group was independent of the Reichsforschungsrat, the Reich Research Council, which is significant. Heading the research on the Bell was none other than Professor Walther Gerlach (27) who was among the very top tier of German nuclear scientists. A metallic liquid, violet in color and resembling mercury, was stored within the bell in two cylinders. These cylinders were spun in opposite directions for test lasting for a minute. The effects included.a pale blue light emitted from the bell, electrical equipment failures, as well as deleterious effects on animals and people (28). To his credit, Mr. Witkowski did not try make more out of this than is in evidence. He is of the opinion, however, that the bell was a very powerful engine (29). Of course, we all can jump ahead of the facts slightly and wonder if this engine was not to be used on a very large German atomic saucer or field propulsion saucer, the very kind described by Mr. Norbert Juergen-Ratthofer.

Weighing into the German field propulsion controversy is Dr. Axel Stoll. Dr. Stoll is a Geophysicist, that is, a real scientist. Dr. Stoll names no sources in his book but states that they exist and must be protected for the common need as opposed to that of serving an individual purpose as a citation (25). Dr. Stoll supports the assertion that field propulsion vehicles were being developed during the Third Reich. But unlike what has transpired before. Dr. Stoll gives us the theory and the mathematics behind the theory, citing and translating Maxwell and Bearden. Besides the mathematical support for his thesis that the Germans built field propulsion vehicles, he states something about his suspicion concerning a spin-off of this technology which may have been further developed by the Germans (26). It is what was stated by Mr. Juergen-Ratthofer over ten years ago in his video films. It is what was indicated by circumstantial evidence at Jonastal and recognized as such for at least five years by some of the researchers there. It is that the Germans were interested in the manipulation space and time itself. It is said that time and space can be manipulated or time and space can be created or obliterated through the use of am electromagnetic longitudinal wave (32). Normal electromagnetic waves, such as light waves, are transverse. This brings us right back to the production of quadropolar waves (transverse and longitudinal waves in cycle) as discussed in connection with the Schappeller device. Could this lost technology provide us with a window into time or into another dimension? Would our scientists of today be able to unlock this technology given their restricted scientific outlook? Has the reconstruction and piecing together of this puzzle occupied our scientists since the end of the Second World War?

Turning aside for a moment, as stated, this book was written as a guide to German flying discs. As such, the reader should be cautioned about at least one pitfall. This pitfall consists of a series of technical diagrams of alleged German field propulsion saucers, prominently displaying a date of November, 1944. In some of these drawings mention is made of a "Thule-Tachyonator". This word "Tachyonator" obviously has its origins in the word tachyon. This word bothered me for years but I loved those "old" drawings so much that my nagging doubts were put aside. What bothered me was the fact that this word never arose in my introductory physics course in the 1960s. This ate at me until I called the Physics Department at the University of California at Los Angeles for their opinion as to the origin of this word. An old physicist said from his memory the word was not even coined until the mid-1960s, thus casting doubt on the technical drawings. He gave me a reference and his memory proved correct. The word "tachyon" was coined by Dr. Gerald Feinberg in 1966 (33). This means that there was no word "Tachyonator" in 1944. Unless better evidence surfaces, the veracity of these documents must be questioned. It hurts to admit that I count myself as one of the people taken in by this deception.

CHAPTER FIVE

Lore And Loose Ends: A Discussion of German Saucers Sources

Sources and References

1. Vesco, Renato, 1976, page 158
2. Vesco, Renato, 1976, pages 137, 156-157
3. United states Strategic Air Forces In Europe, Office Of The Director Of Intelligence, 1944, "An Evaluation Of German Capabilities In 1945"
4. Federal Bureau of Investigation, United States Department of Justice File Number 65-57183, "Patent Verwertungs Gesellschaft Espionage", American Embassy, London
5. Hogg, I. V., 1970, page 48, German Secret Weapons Of World War 2, Arco Publishing Company, Inc., New York
6. Federal Bureau of Investigation, United States Department of Justice, File Number 65-57193, "Patent Verwertungs Gesellschaft Espionage", American Embassy, London
7. Vesco, Renato, 1976, pages 156-157
8. Vesco, Renato, 1976, pages 134-135
9. ibid
10. Moore, W. L., date unknown, page number not specified in publication, " #4510 Research File Project "y" and the 'Avro' Flying Disc", W. L. Moore Publications, Burbank, California

11. Campagna, Palmiro, 2000, pages 74 and 75, "Nazi UFO? Released documents increase speculation that Nazis did research disc technology", Article from UFO Magazine, United Kingdom

12. Luftfahrt International, 1975, page 1366, "Deutsche Flugkreisel Gab's die?

13. Vesco, Renato, 1976, page 145

14. Lyne, William R., 1999, pages 206-207, Space Aliens, Creatopia Productions, Lamy, New Mexico

15. Vesco, Renato, 1976, page 157

16. Zollikofer, Otto, February 3, 1955,"Die Fliegenden Teller Ein Deutungsversuch", an article appearing in the Neue Zuercher Zeitung

17. Vesco, Renato, 1976, page 134

18. Vesco, Renato, 1976, page 158

19. ibid

20. ibid

21. Vesco, Renato, 1976, page 145

22. Landig, Wilhelm, 1971, page 27, Goetzen Gegen Thule, Volksturm Wilhelm Landig, Vienna, Austria

23. ibid

24. Piccard, George, 1999, Liquid Conspiracy JFK, LSD. The CIA, Area 51. And UFOs. Adventures Unlimited Press, Kempton, Illinois

25. Cook, Nick, 2001, page 188, The Hunt For Zero Point One Man's Journey To Discover The Biggest Secret Since The Invention Of The Atom Bomb. The Random House Group Limited, 20 Vauxhall Bridge Road, London, SW1V 2SA

26. Cook, Nick, 2001, page 195

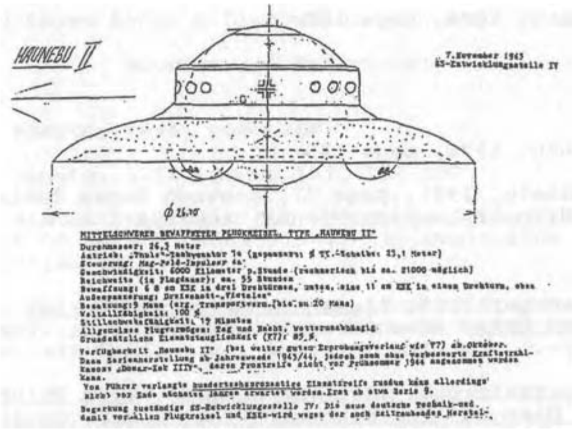
27. Cook, Nick, 2001, page 194

28. Cook, Nick, 2001, page 192

29. Cook, Nick, 2001, page 198

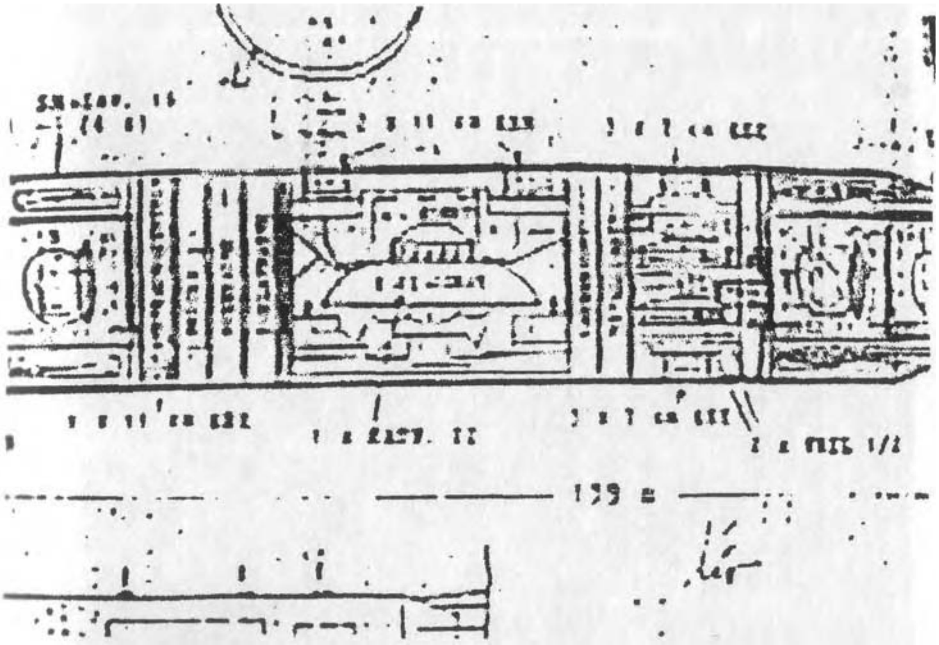
30. Stoll, Axel Ph.D., 2001, page 12, Hochtechnologie Im Dritten Reich Reichsdeutsche Entwicklungen und die vermutlich wahre Herkunft der "UFOs" . Amun-Verlag, Schleusesiedlung 2, D-98553

31. Stoll, Axe., Ph.D., 2001, pages 106 and 107.
32. ibid
33. Feinberg, Gerald, 1977, What Is The World Made Of?. Anchor Press/Doubleday, Garden City, New York

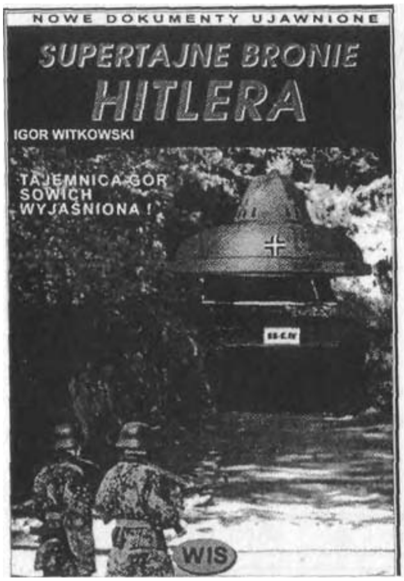

HAUNEBU II
7. November 1943
SS-Entwicklungsstelle IV
ϕ 25,10

Alleged photocopy of SS plans for a Haunebu II being designed in 1943. From the German book Die Dunkle Seite Des Mondes (The Dark Side of the Moon) by Brad Harris (1996, Pandora Books, Germany).

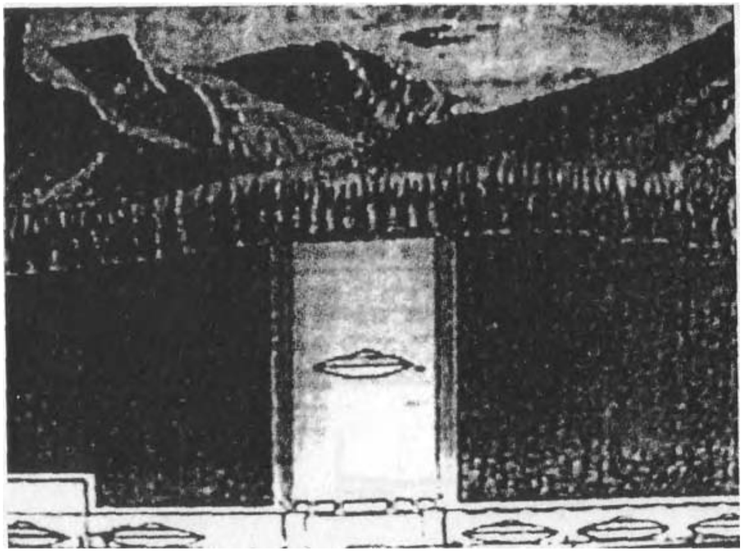
SS-Grupenfuhrer Hans Kammler circa 1944. He was alledgedly in charge of the Polish saucer bases.



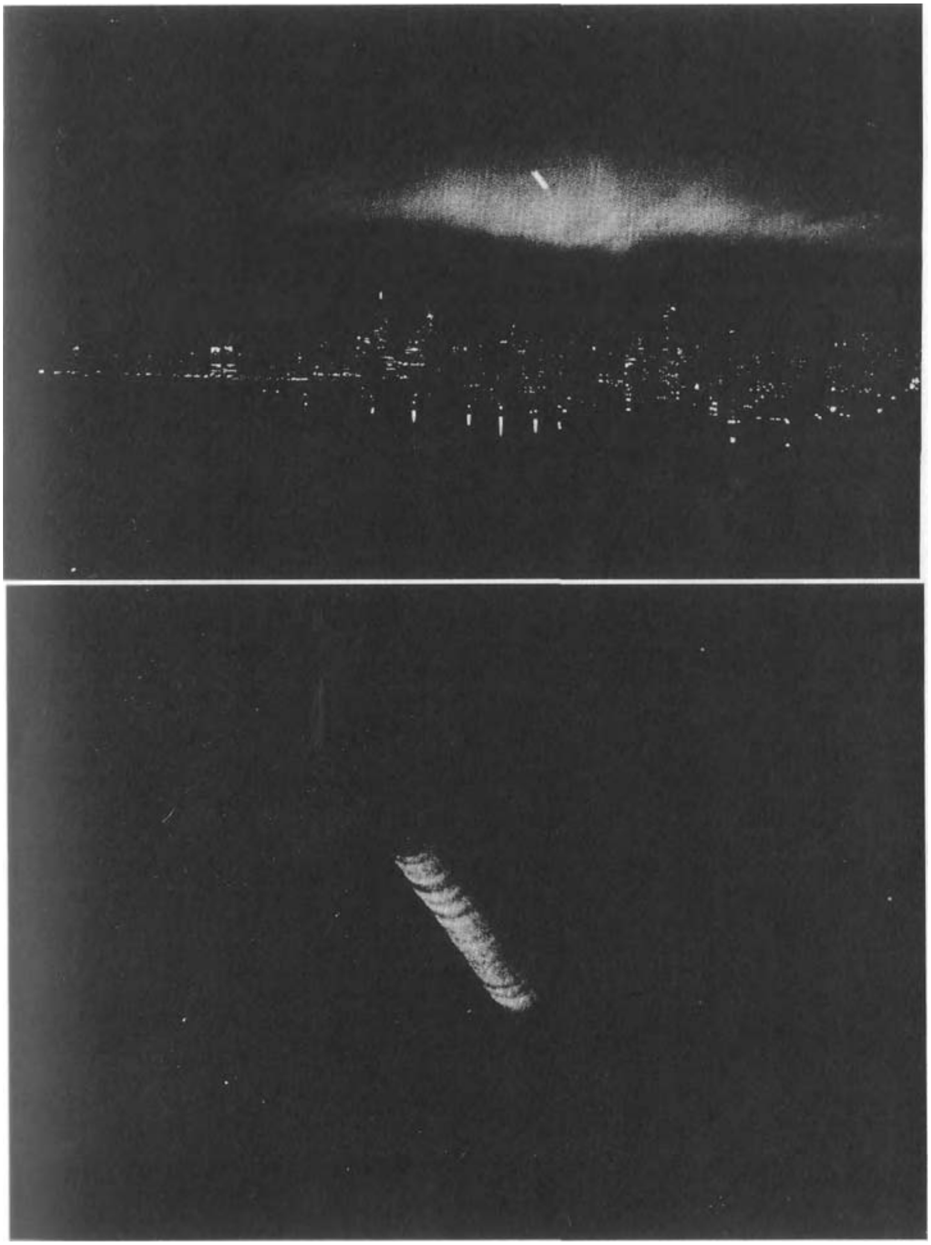
Internal plans for a "mothership" craft called "Andromeda," according to Polish historian Igor Witkowski.


NOWE DOKUMENTY UJAWNIONE
SUPERTAJNE BRONIE
HITLERA
IGOR WITKOWSKI
TAJEMNICA GÓR SOWICH WYJAŚNIONA !
WIS

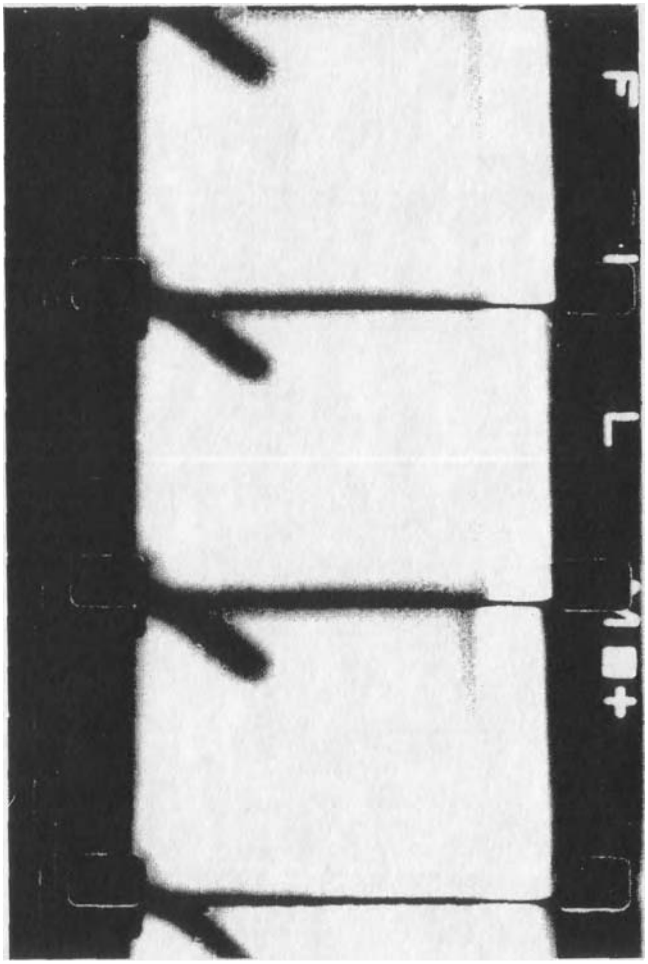
One of the books on "Hitler's Super Weapons" by Polish military historian Igor Witkowski.



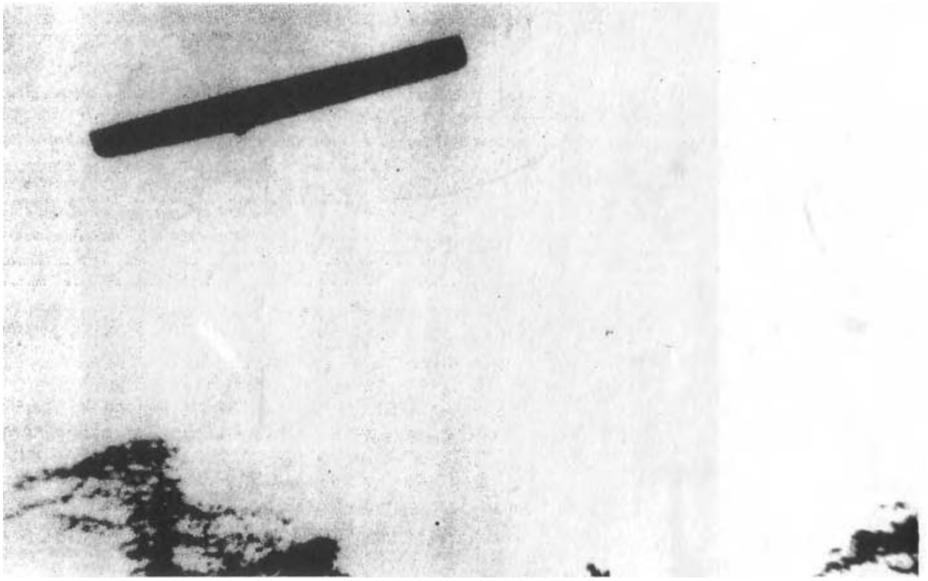
German plans for an underground saucer base, according to Polish historian Igor Witkowski.



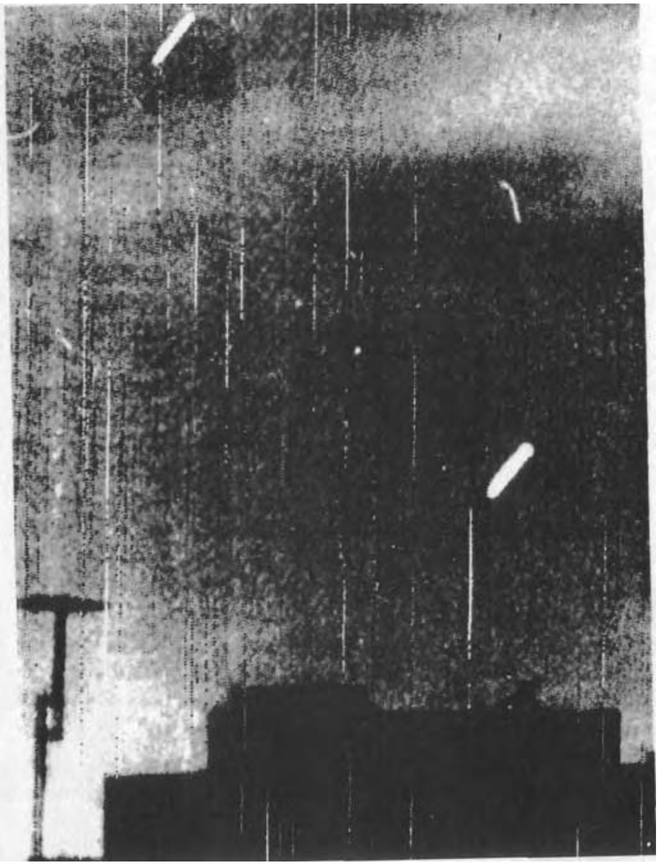
Above: Photos from the Project Blue Book files of a cylindrical UFO that hovered over New York City on March 20, 1950. The military suggested that it was possibly "the Moon." The photographer's name was deleted from the Project's files, as were most of the names when the material was finally declassified and released. These are some of the best photographs of a cylindrical UFO, thought to be a "Mothership" that would launch flying saucers.



Above: Project Blue Book examined this gun-camera film footage from Victorville, California taken on February 2, 1953. It apparently shows a cylindrical "Mothership" in flight.



A classic cigar-shaped UFO allegedly seen by Joe Ferriere near Woonsocket, Rhode Island in the early 1950s. Ferriere claimed that a dome-shaped object, which he also photographed, emerged from the creaft. Observers have pointed out that craft is remarkable for its ability to absorb light, being almost completely non-reflective.



Above: Two cylindrical objects were photographed in a one-minute exposure hovering over Buenos Aires, Argentina in 1965. They remained stationary over the city for 10 minutes and then departed at very high speed according to witnesses.

CHAPTER SIX:

"SONDERBUERO"

CHAPTER SIX

"Sonderbuero"

A topic worthy of discussion is the alleged German agency called "Sonderbuero" or Special Bureau. Sonderbuero is sometimes also referenced by a sub-bureau working within it called "Operation Uranus" or "U-13". In the past, debate has centered around the reality of Sonderbuero. Discussion of Sonderbuero or Sonderbuero-13 have been made recently by Juergen-Ratthofer (1), and Zunneck (2).

There is no real record of Sonderbuero in official sources. Searches have been made in Germany as well as in the U.S.A. under provisions of the Freedom Of Information Act. All inquiries came back with negative results. This, however, may not be the final word on the subject. German sources may be classified or buried within another designation. The American Freedom Of Information Act is something less than advertised as anyone ever attempting to use these provisions knows full well.

Rather than get "official" about Sonderbuero, please let me relate what is said about it, its relation to this story and to the history of UFOs as a whole. With this information the reader can make up his or her own mind about the subject.

It is said that in Germany during the war there was a quest to make Germany independent of outside energy sources. An organization was formed to investigate things we would now call "alternative energy". This included, among other things, the making of synthetic fuel and lubricants out of coal using a special process which was perfected by the Germans during the war. But it may have, and probably did, included other, more exotic, research encompassing into such topics as nuclear energy and possibly even "free energy" or "new energy".

A spin off of this research was said by Juergen-Ratthofer to have yielded field propulsion. Research toward this end was said to have been conducted by Sonderbuero. About this time strange things were taking to the skies in Germany. To keep a lid on publicity, the following scenario is cited by Juergen-Ratthofer to have been employed (3).

Germany was surrounded by enemies and their agents permeated much of the German war effort. The Germans needed to get control over what was accidently seen by spies. To do this they enlisted the help of an unwitting German civilian population. An attempt was consciously made by Sonderbuero to "spin" reports of these sightings as they came in from civilian sources. A sub-department was set up within Special Bureau which sent out orders, countrywide, that all sightings of unusual flying craft be reported directly to that office and not discussed or publicized.

So while a German governmental agency is doing research and testing on unconventional aircraft, at this same time the same agency is gathering reports from the citizenry on sightings of unconventional aircraft. In order to confuse and disguise real testing from the Allies or their agents in Germany, a spin could be put on those sightings describing them as something other than what they were. Of course, all this time, the German civilians are believing the point is to observe and report Allied secret spy aircraft or other Allied secret weaponry. The Allied intelligence agencies may have even bought into this ruse. Remember, this was a German operation to fool its own people and so envelope Allied intelligence gathering organizations in this deception. This was done very subtly and very cleverly.

But what evidence do we really have that this actually occurred? After all, there is no official mention on Sonderbuero. Perhaps there is an overall picture. Let us see if we can find a pattern. After cessation of hostilities the Allies, especially the Americans, seized every piece of German technology they could lay their hands on. They also seized every scientist, manager, and technician having anything to do with the German scientific community, military, or intelligence service. The hardware was analyzed and the personnel interviewed. In some cases both were taken to America for further study.

The technology was reconstructed and further developed. In America the latest German jet technology made its appearance five years later in the Korean War. America got its hands on the V-l which was further developed into the cruise missile. America got the v-2 which was further developed into intercontinental ballistic missiles and into our space program culminating in our landing on the moon. America got the V-3, the high pressure cannon, further developed by Dr. Gerald Bull into Iraq's super cannon, which, after being pointed at Israel was the real trigger for the Gulf War. And America got at least part of the German saucer program, the outcome of which was the Silver Bug Program, the Lenticular Reentry Vehicle project recently disclosed under pressure of the Freedom Of Information Act, and the UFO activity reported at Area 51. There are probably other examples which are, as of yet, undisclosed. Many other examples of technology transfer exist but the point need not be belabored.

America received more than just technical assistance from the

Germans. For example, they received the services of General Reinhard Gehlen, former intelligence chief of the German Army General Staff on the eastern front. Gehlen turned over to the Americans his entire spy apparatus, giving a then blinded America an eye into Soviet military objectives. Further, he set up and modernized our intelligence apparatus, culminating in the C.I.A., as a means to counter the Soviet threat. This spy effort was massive but please keep it in mind as we turn our attention to something smaller and seemingly less significant.

As mentioned, in the 1950s the United States Air Force was busy developing and testing flying saucers derived from captured German technology. Of course, the Air Force wanted it to remain a secret project, after all, we were involved in a Cold War. Given this problem might the Americans have asked the question as they always did: How did the Germans do this? If they did they would have formed, as an adjunct to the secret saucer programs, a program to gather material on all civilian sightings of strange unidentified flying objects, under the cover of national security, as if an external threat existed. This agency would have then been in a position to "explain" or spin the data so as not to alarm the populace while still maintaining secrecy concerning its own projects.

As the reader may have surmised by now, this is exactly what the united States Air Force did so successfully in the form of Project Blue Book and its predecessors. The Air Force experimented on flying saucers on one hand while gathering reported sightings from civilians on the other hand, spinning and manipulating the information according to dictates of their agenda.

When viewed in this perspective, the similarity between Sonderbuero and Project Blue Book is striking. Is not the greatest evidence for the existence of Sonderbuero the American pattern of imitation which infiltrated all post-war intelligence work? The only real guestion is whether the Germans originated the term "swamp gas" or if this was an American embellishment.

Although not central to our discussion, one might ask why, if it was successful, why was Project Blue Book suspended? Remember that the Americans tried to further develop German ideas. In this case the solution was so imaginative and uniquely American that the Pentagon must have resounded with the reverberation of back-slapping and belly laughs at its implementation.

Remember Mark Twain's tale of Tom Sawyer whitewashing the picket fence? Instead of being compelled to an afternoon of drudgery, Tom pretended to his friends that this work was play. Not only did he enlist them to do the painting, but his friends were so eanger to help paint that they paid Tom to do this work.

The United States Air Force followed this paradigm. They infiltrated an existing civilian intelligence gathering organization researching UFOs. They did this at no cost to the United States Air Force or any other governmental intelligence service. There were no official records, and no accounting trail. And best of all those doing the work and volunteering the intelligence would pay for the privilege in the form of dues to maintain the organization. If there is any question in the reader's mind as to whether MUFON (Mutual UFO Network) has been co-opted, ask yourself this question: would the intelligence services of the United States government allow the largest civilian intelligence gathering agency in the world to operate within its purview without at least monitoring it? Of course the answer is a resounding "no". This is one reason why MUFON is allowed to remain in operation within the USA without attempts to discredit it.

Given this sophisticated government intervention, would it not be a simple matter not only to manipulate the incoming sightings data, but to spin and confuse the debate concerning the origins of UFOs, even setting the agenda for the entire inquiry? Perhaps this is the reason MUFON has taken such a negative view of terrestrially originating UFOs and of the German origin of UFOs in particular. In the early 1990s, this writer was told via telephone from his home in Texas by the head man of MUFON himself that: "We investigated that a long time ago and found nothing to it". The "that" referred to was German saucers.

As an aside, he further went on to say that the idea of a German origin would for UFOs would not even be on the table for discussion if it were not for one, Vladimir Terziski, who, "is the guy pushing it", to directly quote this individual. Mr. Terziski has formed his own ideas about German saucers which he has never been afraid to share, and, to his undying credit, he stood up and lectured on this topic to the faces of MUFON in the very temples of the alien world, UFO conferences, worldwide. Mr. Terziski, almost alone, forced these facts into those conferences and subsequently forced all those UFO magazines to deal with the subject of German flying discs. And although he never got credit for it, he also supplied the technical assistance for a world famous Japanese television producer to bring an hour of this German saucer story to Japan in prime-time. Mr. Terziski, almost single-handedly, opened up two continents to this UFO reality.

MUFON's successful existence is tied to their implicit and explicit assumptions of UFOs as alien machines. The greatest appeal the extraterrestrial hypothesis has for the government is that this hypothesis is simply not testable. MUFON does not even try to test anything. Instead, they chase sightings. They train their followers to take meaningless celestial measurements accompanying these sightings and then analyze this "data" into gibberish. MUFON then lends itself to endless rambling speculation involving increasingly more exotic alien scenarios.

It is not MUFON's rank and file membership which is to blame. The individuals I have met are honest and sincere as are 99% of all the participants in the quest to understand these mysterious flying objects. Their methods may stimulate UFO interest and UFO enthusiasts but it utterly fails to advance our quest for knowledge about these devices. This is perfectly alright with the behind the scenes government manipulators, however, since this result is their real goal. It is unknown to what extent the Americans have succeeded in improving and further developing the original German saucers. The extent to which they have succeeded in further developing Sonderbuero, however, should be apparent to all.

CHAPTER SIX

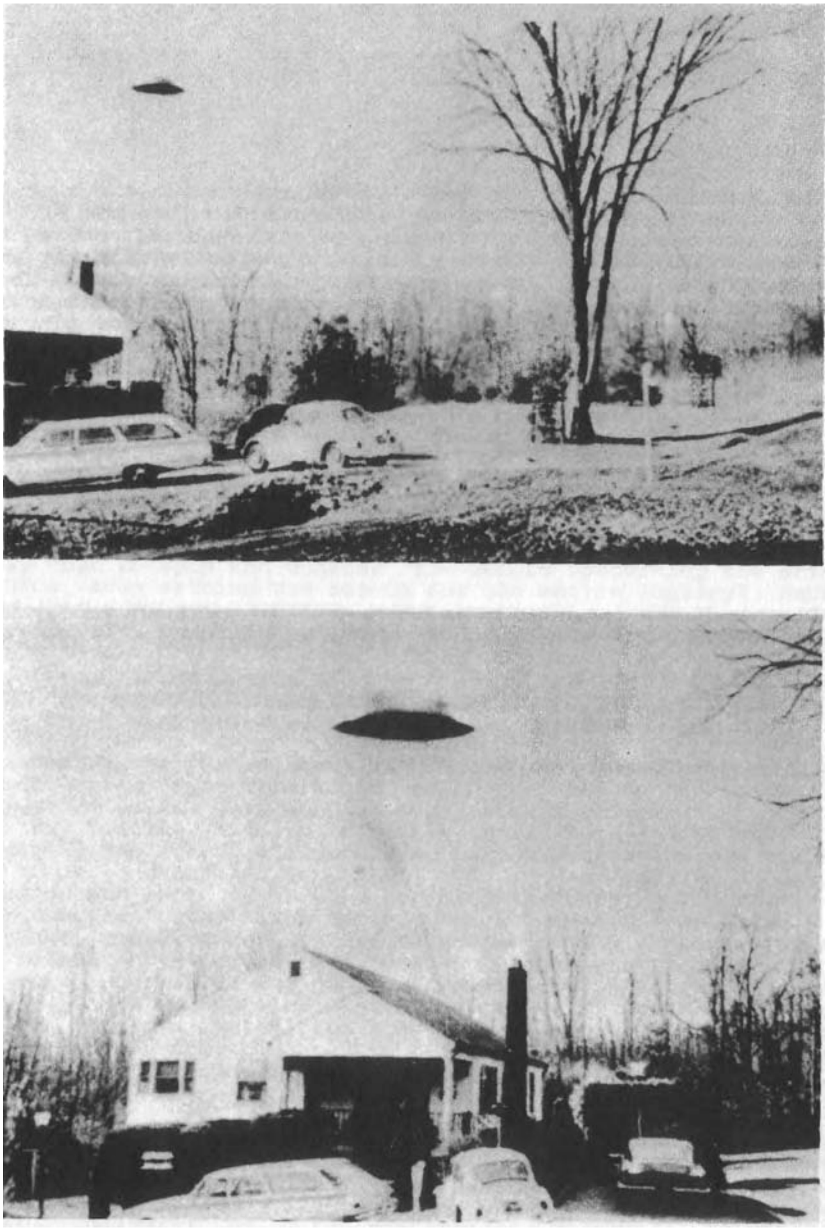
"Sonderbuero"

Sources and References

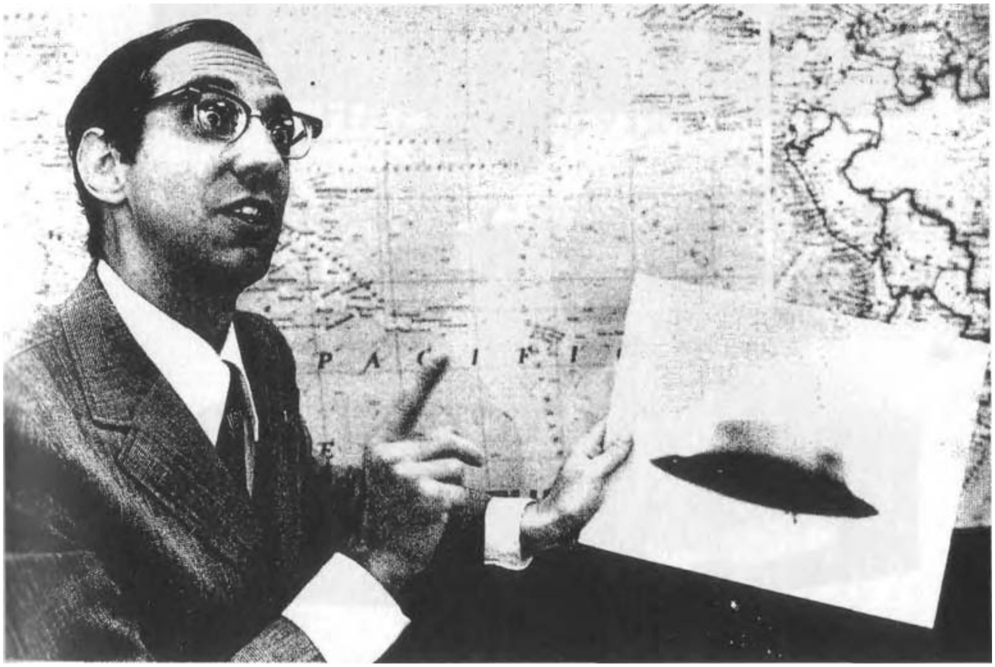
1. Juergen-Ratthofer, Norbert, 1993, page 63, Das Vril Proiekt, Dr. Michael Daemboeck Verlag, Ardaggr, Austria

2. Zunneck, Karl-Heinz, 1998, page 125, Geheimtechnologien, Wunderwaffen Und Irdischen Facetten Des UFO-Phaenomens, CTT-Verlag, Suhl, Germany

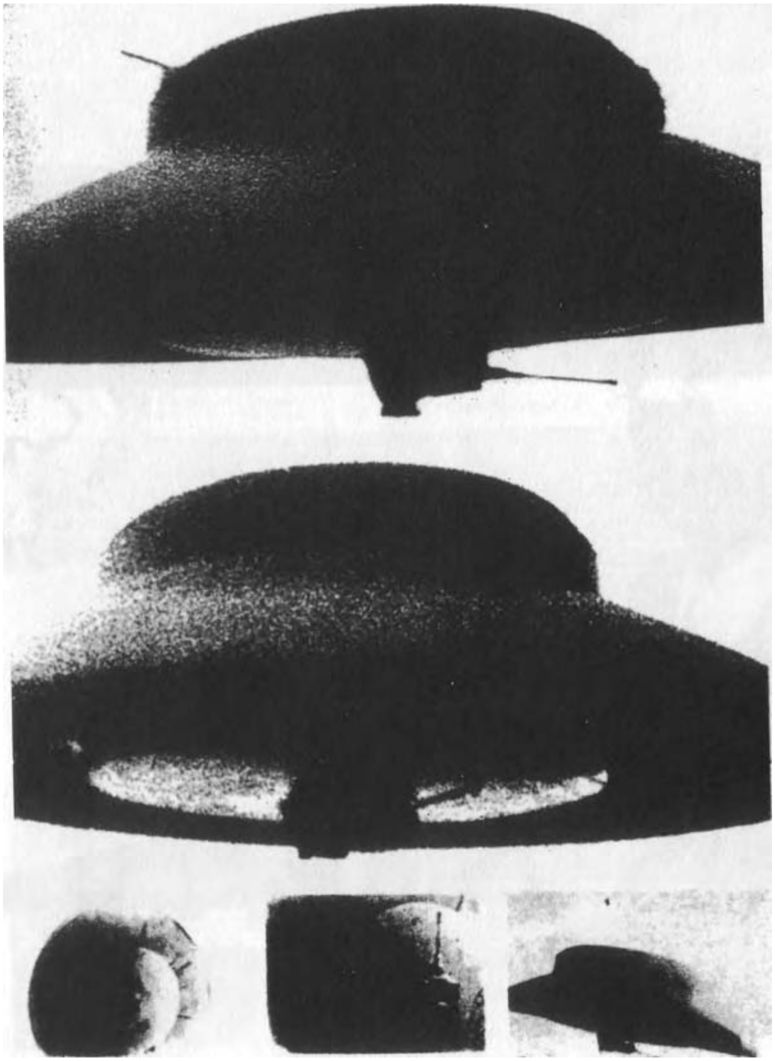
3. Juergen-Ratthofer, Norbert, 1993, page 63



Two photos taken by a barber named Ralph Ditter, in Zanesville, Ohio on November 13, 1966. Ditter was leaving home with his camera when he chanced to look back and saw the UFO over his house. He took two exposures within a short period of time of the helmet-like craft, with an apparent "canon" on the underside of the craft. Ditter did not seek publicity but put them in his shop window to stimulate business. Eventually a news service bought them and they were widely published. The object is similar to the "Heflin UFO" and is said to be an original German design with a Panzer Tank canon mounted beneath it. Such a craft at such a late date would tend to indicate that this was not a captured test craft but rather a "renegade craft" possibly from South America as late as 1966.



Above: Aerospace expert Stuart Nixon, executive director of the National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena (NICAP), which was founded in Washington, DC, in 1956 to conduct a civilian study of UFOs. Note the apparent "cannon barrel" beneath the craft.



Alleged photos from SS files of a Haunebu II in flight circa 1944. Note the Panzer tank canon mounted underneath the craft. From the German book Die Dunkle Seite Des Mondes (The Dark Side of the Moon) by Brad Harris (1996, Pandora Books, Germany).

CHAPTER SEVEN:

DISPOSITION OF GERMAN SAUCER TECHNOLOGY AFTER THE WAR

CHAPTER SEVEN

Disposition of German Saucer Technology After the War

The question arises as to what ever became of the saucer designs and saucer designers referred to in this discussion? For some there are easy answers. For others, there whereabouts after the war is more clouded.

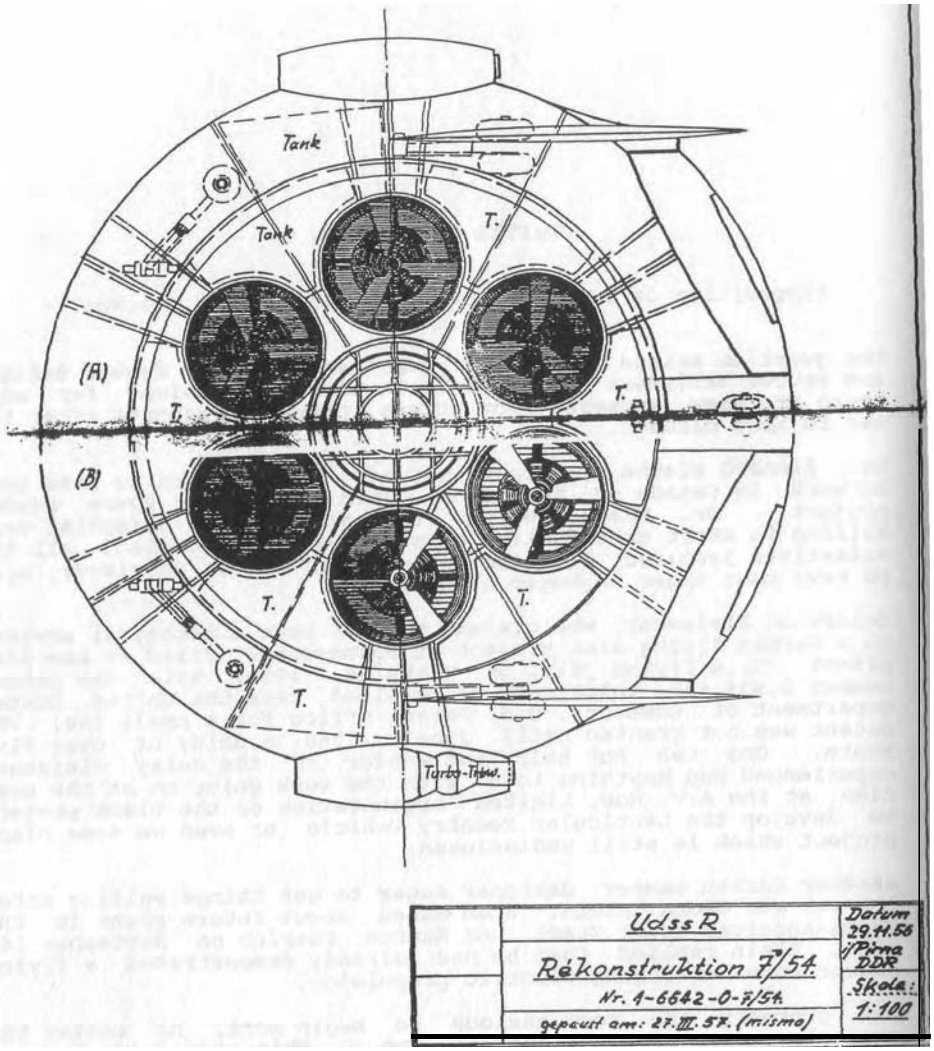
Dr. Richard Miethe, for instance, has been rumored to have gone to work in Canada on the joint Canadian-U.S. Air Force saucer project. Dr. Miethe is not the only German scientist very willing to start construction on a post-war flying disc. All the scientists involved, with the exception of Rudolf Schriever, seem to have been eager to begin at once.

Heinreich Fleissner, who claimed to have been a technical advisor on a German flying disc project at Peenemuende, filed an American patent for a flying disc on March 28, 1955. This was patent number 2,939,648 which can be obtained from the United States Department of Commerce, U.S. Patent Office for a small fee. The patent was not granted until June 7, 1960, a delay of over five years. One can not help but wonder if the delay Fleissner experienced had anything to do with the work going on at the same time at the A.V. Roe, Limited organization or the black project to develop the Lenticular Reentry Vehicle or even on some black project which is still undisclosed.

Another German saucer designer eager to get things rolling after the war was Georg Klein. When asked about future plans in the Tages-Anzeiger fuer Stadt und Kanton Zuerich on September 18, 1954, Klein replied that he had already demonstrated a flying saucer model utilizing electric propulsion.

But probably the most anxious to begin work, no matter the obstacles, was Joseph Andreas Epp. This is said because according to government files, which were first located by researcher Mark Kneipp, Epp went so far as to enlist in the Soviet flying saucer project which began immediately after the war in East Germany using former German scientists (1).

Post-War Soviet "German" Saucer


Tank
Tank
T.
T.
(A)
T.
(B)
T.
T.
T.
Turbo-Triebw.
UdssR
Rékonstruktion 7/54.
Nr. 4-6642-0-7/54.
gepaust am: 27.III.57. (mismo)
Datum
29.11.56
i/Pirna
DDR
Skala:
1:100

After the war J. Andreas Epp worked briefly for the Soviets along with other German experts on a flying saucer. This is a drawing he made of the Soviet saucer. It was to be used in the polar regions.

According to this F.B.I. file which was secluded by the National Archives, Epp became disenchanted with the Soviets after working for them for about a year. He then defected to the West. Epp re-drew their designs from his seemingly photographic memory. He provided detailed test and technical specifications, including his apparent area of specialty, the steering linkage system. His comments were that the type of flying craft being built for the Soviets was especially designed for polar conditions.

After settling in Bavaria, Epp continued design work on flying discs himself. He designed the "Omega Disc" which is remarkably similar to the Soviet design. Epp was very interested in working for Bell Aircraft, builders of the X-l which broke the sound barrier in 1947. Epp sent me copies of correspondence with Dr. Walter Dornberger, at this time executive of Bell Aircraft, who, at one time was Dr. Wernher von Braun's boss at Peenemuende. Epp did mention the flying saucer in this correspondence. Nothing came of it, however. To his death in 1997, Andreas Epp was still trying to realize this dream of building a flying saucer.

These are the stories of saucer designers of which we know something. There were others of which we have completely lost track. Otto Habermohl is one of these. Habermohl was presumed captured by the Soviets. This presumption seems to be solely based on the fact that he disappeared after the capture of Prag.

What about the post-war disposition of the flying saucers themselves? We know, for instance, that examples were destroyed by the Germans so the advancing Allies would not benefit from them. This very thing happened to saucers designed by the Schrlever-Habermohl team at Prag. The scorched earth policy was a standing solution and ruthlessly imposed by the SS, especially concerning German high technology. Yet we all know flying saucers did not disappear after the collapse of Germany, as a matter of fact quite the contrary. Michael X. Barton tells us that their earliest appearance was not over the State of Washington in 1947 as usually given but in South America. In fact, there were many sightings of UFOs in South America during this post-war time frame. Latin American sightings continue to this day.

South America is a long way from the USA. Even if the Americans were experimenting with captured German technology at that time, the sightings from other parts of the world can not be explained as originating from the USA. There must be more at work here.

Could die-hard Nazis have exported this technology to a stronghold in the Antarctic or Andes as some often claim? Or did these craft appear from "Beaver Dam", a secret German base on the east coast of Greenland as disclosed by Dr. Jesensky and Mr. Lesniakiewicz (2). Was part of this technology appropriated by the British and further developed in Canada as stated by Renato Vesco? Or was this technology completely absorbed by the USA in a secret deal with Admiral Karl Doenitz after Hitler's death as stated by Bill Lyne (3)?

In the first of the aforementioned possibilities, these die-hard Nazis and their technology, including saucers, are sometimes called the "Third Power" by German writers on the subject. The Third Power is meant to signify a power besides the West (the First Power) or the East (the Second Power). The Third Power allegedly operates in secret as regards the general population of this planet but is very well known to the First and Second Powers. The sole reason the Third Power has survived is their high technology and high finance both of with resulted from picking clean the bones of the Third Reich. The story is as follows and at least some of it is factual.

It is known that the Germans made contingency plans for the war's loss. On August 10, 1944, nine months before the war in Europe ended, a meeting was called at the hotel Rotes Haus in Strassbourg. In attendance were representatives of all the major German industrial concerns including I.G. Farben, Thyssen, Siemens, Krupp, Daimler-Benz, Rheinmetall-Borsig, as well as representatives of the major German banks. Meeting with them were members of the SS. They were planning measures which would insure their survival after the coming German defeat (4).

Scientists, scientific plans, strategic materials, and money were to be taken from Germany and secured in secret hiding places. Long range cargo aircraft were to fly from Germany to Spain carrying the goods. From here items were to be loaded on to U-boats bound for South America. It is possible that other destinations were also planned such as Japan and the Antarctic base original established in 1938-1939 by the Ritcher Antarctic Expedition.

Surprisingly, the Ritcher Antarctic Expedition (1037-38) was set up and funded by Hermann Goering, head of the German Air Force. The ship Schwabenland, equipped with amphibious aircraft which could be launched via catapult explored, mapped and claimed a large portion of the Antarctic Continent for Germany during this expedition. Weighted metal flags were dropped from these aircraft clearly delineating the territory in which Germany was claiming. The territory included ice-free lakes which were naturally heated from below by geothermal means (5). Along the line of these lakes a huge fault line bisects "Neuschwabenland", as it was called, so presumably a permanent heat source was built into this new territory. One German writer has perused reports of Neuschwabenland and states that during the war repeated trips were made to this vicinity at which time a permanent base was established there (6). Another writer, Wilhelm Landig, in novel form, describes this and other secret post-war German bases in Antarctica, the Andes as well as a secret polar base near the North Pole (7). Mr. Landig recently died and it is now known that he was a Third Reich insider and knew of which he wrote. As mentioned earlier, it is now known that Landig was a member of the Waffen SS and at one time was responsible for security for the development of German saucers (8). He knew that of which he spoke. His books each bore the sub-title "Ein Roman voller Wirklichkeiten" or "a novel filled with realities" as this novel treatment was an easy avenue in avoiding post-war legal entanglements.

Through the descriptions of the writers mentioned and other records it is possible to pinpoint the location of these secret German bases in Antarctica as well as a large Andean base in Chile. Bill Lyne as well as Mr. Robert Lesniakiewicz and Dr. Milos Jesensky state that a mysterious polar base existed in Greenland (9) (10). The latter writers cite the coast of eastern Greenland and cite a code-name which translates into "Beaver Dam", complete with underwater U-boat entrances.

The Antarctic base was first attacked by forces of many nations, led by the United States, in a 1946 military action code-named "Operation High Jump". This operation involved a fleet of ships, including an aircraft carrier, submarines and support craft. It also involved aircraft and four thousand armed troops under the command of Admiral Richard Byrd. Immediately four aircraft were mysteriously lost and the whole operation, scheduled for six months duration, was canceled after less than six weeks (11) (12).

The Antarctic base, Landig's Point 211 (13), was in operation until the late 1950s when it became the subject of an American nuclear "test". In this test three bombs were detonated under cover of the International Geophysical Year 1957-58 (14). Landig claims the type of rockets used in the "test" to attack Point 211 were prototypes of the American Polaris missile, a solid-fuel rocket which was used later operationally, the final design being fired from submarines underwater (15). Detonation of these atomic weapons over the base generated electromagnetic shock waves which, it was hoped, would destroy apparatus in the base used for defensive purposes (16). Landig claims this tactic failed. The electromagnetic pulse attack was insufficient to destroy the improved apparatus (17). Both "High Jump" and this 1957-58 attack turned out not only to be a fiasco, but to be superfluous. The greater part of the German forces had already abandon the Antarctic base in favor of a base in the South American Andes.

Landig claims that the reason for its abandonment was the purity of the atmosphere in the Antarctic which is almost germ-free (18). It seems that the human immune system needs constant challenge to remain healthy even if this challenge does not always result in illness. Without a constant influx of visitors supplying this challenge, the staff on-hand lost almost all immunity to infection after a few years. The common cold became a serious matter.

As mentioned earlier, writers Dr. Milos Jesensky and Robert Lesniakiewicz see the origin of flying saucers over the USA during the late 1950s as coming from a forgotten German facility called "Beaver Dam" in Eastern Greenland. According to these writers, this base did not surrender with the fall of Germany but continued to function. It was from this base that flying saucers were directed to the USA on spy missions, especially toward our nuclear facilities in New Mexico. Additionally, one wonders if this base was the real origin of the ghost rockets seen moving south from Northwestern Europe immediately after the war. The status of this base today is unknown.

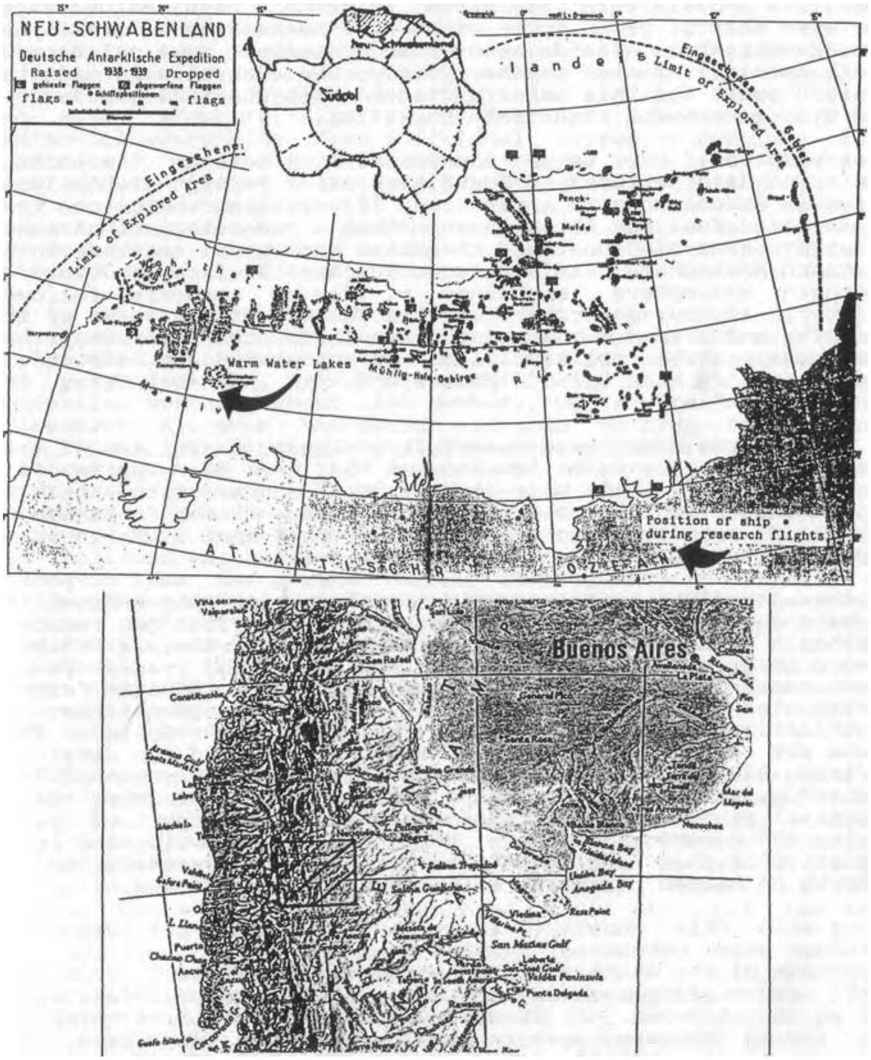
There is no doubt that the Germans had bases in the Arctic. German bases were located on Soviet soil, as well as the soil of Greenland which belonged to Denmark. Denmark had been overrun by the Germans early in the war. What is most surprising is that Landig's claim that the Germans maintained a base in the high Canadian arctic right under the noses of Canada and the USA (19).

Is this all fantasy? Is there any hard evidence for secret post-war German bases? Has a post-war German base ever been discovered? Yes, one has. New evidence for this exodus theory comes to us from the discovery of a German U-boat way-station in the Atlantic which had a hand in moving this clandestine cargo from Europe to the austral world well after the war, right into the 1950s. This information is revealed in an article in the July, 1984 issue of Nugget magazine titled "Der U-Boot Bunker von Fuerteventura" (20). Fuerteventura is the eastern most island of the Canary Island chain and lies just out of sight off the west coast of North Africa.

Geologically, the base was formed by an huge, ancient volcanic bubble around which the molten rock solidified in the center of the island. According to the article, the Germans brought in excavation equipment and bored out three tunnels for underwater access by U-boats. On top of the island, directly over the bubble and the military facility rested a villa with a stairway leading down to the base from the cellar. The villa was owed by a respectable German family, named Winter. This base functioned during the war as a secret U-boat base for the Germans. It continued this function after the war as a way-station for transport U-boats.

In our modern world of science and academic history this claim of lost islands and hidden bases sounds like something out of a Jules Verne fantasy. If such a base really existed, would we all not be aware of its existence above and beyond an obscure reference in a publication which mainly deals with treasure hunting?

Actually, most readers are already quite familiar with this particular base. This base was the truth behind the visual images of the German U-boat base situated in the volcanic island off the coast of Africa in the movie "Raiders of the Lost Ark". In fact, this aspect of the story was the only part of the movie which was factual.


NEU-SCHWABENLAND
Deutsche Antarktische Expedition
Raised 1938-1939 Dropped
gehisste Flaggen
abgeworfene Flaggen
Schiffspositionen
flags
flags
Neu-Schwabenland
Südpol
Eingesehenes Gebiet
Limit of Explored Area
Eingesehenes Gebiet
Limit of Explored Area
Penck-
Mulde
Warm Water Lakes
Mühlig-Hofmann-Gebirge
Position of ship
during research flights
ATLANTISCHER OZEAN
Buenos Aires
Valparaiso
San Rafael
Constitución
La Plata
Santa Rosa
Salinas Grandes
Mar del Plata
Necochea
Neuquén
Bahía Blanca
Valdivia
Viedma
San Matías Gulf
Valdés Peninsula
Punta Delgada
Rawson
Puerto
Ancud

Top: Neuschwabenland (Antarctica). Bottom: "Colonia Dignedad" in Argentina near Chilean border comprising 25,000 quadratkilometers (over half as large as Switzerland)

The subterranean island base was actually visited by two eyewitnesses, according to the Nugget report. There, two derelict U-boats were discovered which had remained undetected for over thirty years. One of these U-boats was entered by the two adventurers. Inside they found detailed nautical maps of South America. To add to the mystery, the assertion is made that these U-boats and this base functioned with the full knowledge of the U.S. government right into the 1950s.

This base would have formed a physical link between the ports of Spain and destinations in South America. Perhaps even bridging bases in Greenland with Antarctica, if certain reports are true. It is also fuel for the argument that a technological transfer actually took place between the Third Reich and entities in the Southern Hemisphere. As surely as die-hard Nazis spread into the Southern Hemisphere sightings of flying saucers followed. Further, if the government of the United States knew of this transfer and these U-boat bases then there then there may have been some actual political link or understanding between the government of the United States and the post-war Nazis, the "Third Power".

If his words are read carefully, Landig's Point 211, the Antarctic base, can be located on the maps he supplies (21). Until, however, this base is visited and excavated and the evidence made public, this base along with the ones in Canada and Greenland constitute more speculation than fact. This is not true, however, in the South American situation.

In the immediate post-war world South America was a haven for Germans who could not stomach Occupied Germany for one reason or another. The political climate in these countries was favorable toward these refugees. Nazi gold and money was transferred to South America, particularly Argentina. Hunted Nazis found a market for their services in a variety of occupations. SS organizations set up shop as they had in Franco's Spain. These facts are hardly in dispute. They are covered in detail by Infield (22) as well as by Farago (23) a whole genre of "Nazi Hunter" writers. What is less often mentioned is that German technical people infused these countries with expertise gained during the Second World War. For instance, Argentina and Brazil had state-of-the- art jet fighters in the 1950s thanks to the efforts of German immigrant scientists and technicians.

Along with this monetary and technical transfer, large land holdings were purchased, secured and set aside with the full knowledge of the South American governments in power. From these vast secure areas members of these German organizations simply did as they pleased. It is not out of the question to think that the flying saucers seen in the late 1940s and 1950, both conventional and field propulsion, were built and flown from these bases. One of these Andean bases, referred to as "Colonia Dignidad" consisted a land area half the size of Switzerland (24). This is certainly more than enough room to develop hide anything.

The South American industrial base during these times was more than adequate to make these saucers. But even if this were not true, this is no argument against construction of flying saucers in South America. Parts could have been ordered from suppliers in other countries as are done by major aircraft firms today. Each major aircraft firm has a host of sub-contractors who manufacture everything from individual screws to complete sub-assemblies. Many if not most of these sub-contractors are accustomed to filling these orders without ever knowing what the final assembled product will be. This is part of the security system and unquestioned. Germans working in South America would have no trouble using this system. They could have even ordered parts and sub-assemblies from companies in Europe and the USA.

This is exactly what Dr. Gerald Bull did in Iraq when he built the largest of his high-pressure cannons for that country. This nearly mile long fixed gun was built resting on the slope of a hill pointed at Tel Aviv. It would have been able to shoot projectiles weighing about 1800 pounds. Parts were built by sub-contractors all over the world and sent to Iraq for assembly where it was nearly completed. The sub-contractors were lied to or otherwise kept in the dark as to the purpose of their components. It was only by chance that word of this project reached the hands of opposing intelligence services. The result was near panic in the intelligence services of these countries. What followed was the assassination of Dr. Gerald Bull and a diplomatic ruse which bated Saddam Hussein into an invasion of Kuwait. This invasion facilitated the entry of the Americans into the conflict. The high pressure cannon was destroyed immediately, even though it was pointed in the opposite direction from Kuwait. If this risky, bulky weapon's system could be almost completed using a system of unwitting sub-contractors world-wide, imagine how easily a one-off flying vehicle could be built using the same system.

Richard Ross, a UFO researcher based in Austin, Texas, reports to me that even today vast tracts of land in South America are avoided by airline pilots there because of UFO activity in these areas. He obtained this information by interviewing the South American airline pilots themselves. He goes on to make the point that Latin America is a hotbed of UFO activity. Reports of this activity for some reason never find their way into the main stream American news media.

There still remains one possible hiding place on European soil. There remains the possibility that German flying discs were flown to Switzerland during the last moments of the 3rd Reich and hidden there in the vast system of caves built there for defensive purposes by the Swiss. This would imply a limited partnership with the Swiss concerning a technology that neither country wanted to loose. In modern times we have witnessed something similar when Iraq flew its jet aircraft to Iran for safe keeping during the Gulf War. Iraq and Iran had been bitter enemies only a few years before but put these differences aside in order to save technology. If they could do it certainly the Germans and Swiss could do it also. One eye witness claims that he saw an experimental aircraft crossing the German border into Switzerland on the morning of May 9, 1945, the day after the surrender of the 3rd Reich (25). This same procedure could have taken place with even more exotic flying craft.

One of our most trusted sources, Renato Vesco believes that Canada was strongly involved in further developing captured German saucer technology. Vesco's belief seems to be that the British kept this information to themselves. That is, they did not share it with the United States. They did this in response to the latter's refusal to share atomic secrets with Great Britain. The British hid this research in the Canadian forests where they spent time and money developing it into the flying saucers of the 1950s. Somewhat related to this idea, the German researcher Klaus-Peter Rothkugel also believes post-war saucer research was the product of a massive and still-secret Anglo-American effort. Jim Wilson adds fuel to this fire in that there was apparently joint British-American-Australian involvement in the Lenticular Reentry Vehicle project (26).

Bill Lyne has another opinion. He believes all German saucer data was transferred to the government of the United States in a deal done with Admiral Karl Doenitz who was acting head of Germany for the week or so between the time Hitler shot himself in the bunker and Germany surrendered. Recently, Mark Kneipp has found some very interesting evidence which seems to support Mr. Lyne's sequence of events in this deal with Admiral Doenitz. This is one surprise I do not want to spoil so it will be left to Mr. Kneipp to reveal his research.

One real mystery remains absolutely untouched. This concerns the man who did know everything about Germany's saucer development and all its V-weaponry and other high technology for that matter. This was SS General and Doctor of Engineering Hans Kammler. Kammler first came to prominence because of his expertise in building extensive underground installations. Soon his high intelligence and "can do" attitude were recognized, resulting in a meteoric rise in rank and influence within the Third Reich. Kammler assembled the best of the best as far as weaponry was concerned and kept it close to him in the form of the Kammler Group, based at the Skoda industrial complexes near Prag. By war's end he was among the top five most powerful people in Germany. He had the entire SS technical organization to do his bidding. He was in charge of Peenemuende, "Der Riese" in modern Poland, Kordhausen, Kahla, the many facilities at the Jonas Valley in Thuringia, as well as the huge underground facility he built for himself in Austria. The Kammler Group was everywhere on the cutting edge of the cutting edge of applied technology. For instance it was the Kammler Group which was in the process of applying nuclear energy toward missile and aircraft propulsion

(27).

What happened to Kammler? This was the most knowledgeable of all the German technical people. Even Albert Speer, German Minister of Munitions, admitted under Allied interrogation, that Kammler was the expert in the area of V-weapons development. This was no small admission for Speer. With the cessation of hostilities in Europe, Kammler simply waltzed off the pages of history, never to be seen or heard from again. Why, then, was there no post-war manhunt for Kammler? What are we missing here?

Tom Agoston recounts the stories of Kammler's death (28). There are five in all. They all read like pulp fiction. None are even remotely believable. As proof of this, no serious investigation was ever done into any of these stories by any of the Allied Powers. But equally shocking is the fact that Kammler was ignored by the "Nazi Hunter" aficionados. A quick call to the Simon Wiesenthal Center in Los Angeles revealed that they were not looking for Kammler and have never looked for Kammler even though they fully agreed that the stories of his death stretched credulity. This, in spite of the fact that it was Kammler who was responsible for the many slave-labor camps, including Dora and S-3, where many inmates died working for the SS.

There is a sixth possible story for Kammler's demise. Could not the answer to this enigma be found in a practice commonly given to criminals in the USA, that of the "witness protection program"? Was Kammler given a new identity in exchange for his knowledge and knowledge of where the treasure-trove of SS technical information was stored? Actually, any country in the world at the time would have made Kammler this deal in a second. He was simply too technologically valuable to loose or to involve in a showcase criminal trial. A new identity was the best way out of his problems.

One thing is striking concerning the technological history of the Twentieth Century. The preponderance of that century's technology has its roots in the 1940s. The technology we use and take for granted today was invented or developed to the utilitarian degree during this time frame. These technological roots sink most deeply into Nazi Germany. In support of this argument, there is a laundry list too long to fully recount. It ranges from synthetic materials such as plastics and artificial rubber to metallurgy. It included the host of technologies which gave us the jet engine, rockets and so access to space travel. It includes atomic power. It also includes early semi-conductor research upon which our modern computer-based research, economy and communications are built. Technically speaking, we are still living off the Caracas of the Third Reich. Yet, still, to this day, much of that German technology remains veiled. Counted among this still-veiled technology are the German flying discs.

Disposition of German Saucer Technology After The War

Sources and References

1. Dossier/Joseph Andreas Epp, U.S. Army Intelligence, Record Group 319, The National Archives at College Park, College Park, Maryland.
2. Jesensky, Milos, Ph.D. and Robert Lesniakiewicz, 1998, page 143, "Wunderland" Mimozemske Technologie Treti Rise. Aos Publishing
3. Lyne, William R., 1999, page 48, Pentagon Aliens, Creatopia Publishing, Lamy, New Mexico
4. Infield, Brian, 1981, page 179, Skorzenv Hitler's Commando, St. Martin's Press, New York
5. Mattern, W., date unknown, page 79, UFO's Unbekanntes Flugobiekt? Letzte Geheimwaffe des Dritten Reiches?, Samisdat Publishing, Toronto, Canada
6. Bergmann, 0., 1988, page 14, 1 Deutsche Flugscheiben und U-Boote Ueberwachen Die Weltmeere. Hugin Gesellschaft Fuer Politisch-Philosophische Studiern E.V., Wetter/Ruhr
7. Landig, Wilhelm, 1971, Goetzen Gegen Thule Ein Roman voller Wirklichkeiten, Hans Pfeiffer Verlag GmbH. Hannover
8. Informationsdienst gegen Rechtexremismus, URL address: http://www.idgr.de/texte-1/esoterik/landig.htm
9. Lyne, William R., 1999, page 97
10. Jesensky, Milos, Ph.D. and Robert Lesniakiewicz, 1998, page 143
11. Buechner, Howard A. Col. and Bernhart, Wilhelm Capt., 1989, Hitler's Ashes, pages 229-232, Thunderbird Press, Inc., Metarie, Louisiana
12. Landig, Wilhelm, 1991, page 571, Rebellen Fuer Thule Das Erbe Von Atlantis, Voldstum-Verlag, Wien
13. ibid
14. ibid
15. Landig, Wilhelm, 1991, page 572
16. ibid
17. ibid

18. ibid

19. Landig, Wilhelm, 1971, pages 109-142

20. Nugget, July and August editions 1984, "Der U-Boot Bunker von Fuerteventura"

21. Landig, Wilhelm, 1980, pages 486-489, Wolfzeit Um Thule, Volksturm-Verlag Wilhelm Alndig, Wein

22. Infield, Glenn B., 1981, Skorzeny Hitler's Commando. St. Martin's Press, New York

23. Farago, Ladislas, 1974, Aftermath Martin Bormann and the Fourth Reich. Simon and Schuster, New York

24. Wilson, Harvey, 1994, "Hitlers Fluchtweg nach Argentinen", in Zeiten Schrift, Sept-Nov. 1994, Number 4, Berneck, Switzerland

25. Heppner, Siegfried, 1997, page 11, "Geheimnisse...dem Deutschen Volke", self-published, A-9142, Globasnich-Podjuna, Austria

26. Wilson, Jim, November 2000, page 71, "America's Nuclear Flying Saucer", Popular Mechanics

27. Agoston, Tom, 1985, pages 13, 83-84, 87, 129, Blunder How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Supersecrets to Russia, Dodd Mead Company, Inc., New York

28. Agoston, Tom, 1985, pages 102-109

EYES ONLY

COPY ONE OF ONE.

SUBJECT: OPERATION MAJESTIC-12 PRELIMINARY BRIEFING FOR PRESIDENT-ELECT EISENHOWER.

DOCUMENT PREPARED 18 NOVEMBER, 1952.

BRIEFING OFFICER: ADM. ROSCOE H. HILLENKOETTER (MJ-1)

NOTE: This document has been prepared as a preliminary briefing only. It should be regarded as introductory to a full operations briefing intended to follow.

• • • • • •

OPERATION MAJESTIC-12 is a TOP SECRET Research and Development/Intelligence operation responsible directly and only to the President of the United States. Operations of the project are carried out under control of the Majestic-12 (Majic-12) Group which was established by special classified executive order of President Truman on 24 September, 1947, upon recommendation by Dr. Vannevar Bush and Secretary James Forrestal. (See Attachment "A".) Members of the Majestic-12 Group were designated as follows:

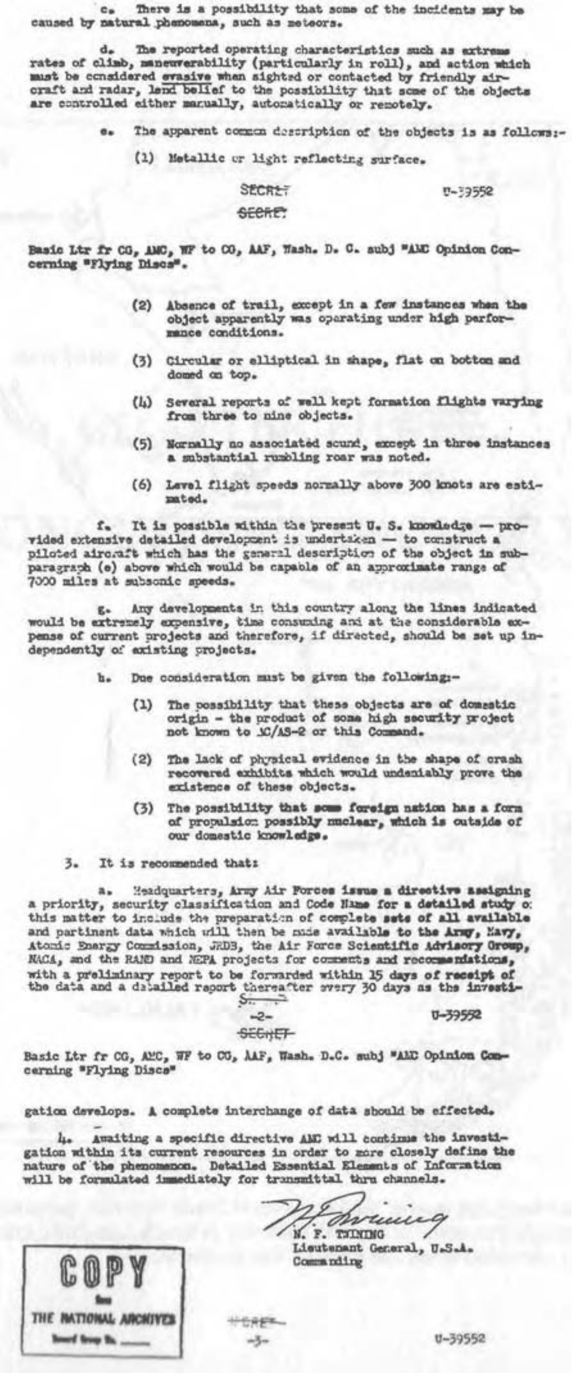
Adm. Roscoe H. Hillenkoetter
Dr. Vannevar Bush
Secy. James V. Forrestal*
Gen. Nathan F. Twining
Gen. Hoyt S. Vandenberg
Dr. Detlev Bronk
Dr. Jerome Hunsaker
Mr. Sidney W. Souers
Mr. Gordon Gray
Dr. Donald Menzel
Gen. Robert M. Montague
Dr. Lloyd V. Berkner

The death of Secretary Forrestal on 22 May, 1949, created a vacancy which remained unfilled until 01 August, 1950, upon which date Gen. Walter B. Smith was designated as permanent replacement.

On 24 June, 1947, a civilian pilot flying over the Cascade Mountains in the State of Washington observed nine flying disc-shaped aircraft traveling in formation at a high rate of speed. Although this was not the first known sighting of such objects, it was the first to gain widespread attention in the public media. Hundreds of reports of sightings of similar objects followed. Many of these came from highly credible military and civilian sources. These reports resulted in independent efforts by several different elements of the military to ascertain the nature and purpose of these objects in the interests of national defense. A number of witnesses were interviewed and there were several unsuccessful attempts to utilize aircraft in efforts to pursue reported discs in flight. Public reaction bordered on near hysteria at times.

In spite of these efforts, little of substance was learned about the objects until a local rancher reported that one had crashed in a remote region of New Mexico located approximately seventy-five miles northwest of Roswell Army Air Base (now Walker Field).

On 07 July, 1947, a secret operation was begun to assure recovery of the wreckage of this object for scientific study. During the course of this operation, aerial reconnaissance discovered that four small human-like beings had apparently ejected from the craft at some point before it exploded. These had fallen to earth about two miles east of the wreckage site. All four were dead and badly decomposed due to action by predators and exposure to the elements during the approximately one week time period which had elapsed before their discovery. A special scientific team took charge of removing these bodies for study. (See Attachment "C".) The wreckage of the craft was also removed to several different locations. (See Attachment "B".) Civilian and military witnesses in the area were debriefed, and news reporters were given the effective cover story that the object had been a misguided weather research balloon.



c. There is a possibility that some of the incidents may be caused by natural phenomena, such as meteors.

d. The reported operating characteristics such as extreme rates of climb, maneuverability (particularly in roll), and action which must be considered evasive when sighted or contacted by friendly aircraft and radar, lend belief to the possibility that some of the objects are controlled either manually, automatically or remotely.

e. The apparent common description of the objects is as follows:-

(1) Metallic or light reflecting surface.

(2) Absence of trail, except in a few instances when the object apparently was operating under high performance conditions.

(3) Circular or elliptical in shape, flat on bottom and domed on top.

(4) Several reports of well kept formation flights varying from three to nine objects.

(5) Normally no associated sound, except in three instances a substantial rumbling roar was noted.

(6) Level flight speeds normally above 300 knots are estimated.

f. It is possible within the present U. S. knowledge — provided extensive detailed development is undertaken — to construct a piloted aircraft which has the general description of the object in subparagraph (e) above which would be capable of an approximate range of 7000 miles at subsonic speeds.

g. Any developments in this country along the lines indicated would be extremely expensive, time consuming and at the considerable expense of current projects and therefore, if directed, should be set up independently of existing projects.

h. Due consideration must be given the following:-

(1) The possibility that these objects are of domestic origin - the product of some high security project not known to AC/AS-2 or this Command.

(2) The lack of physical evidence in the shape of crash recovered exhibits which would undeniably prove the existence of these objects.

(3) The possibility that some foreign nation has a form of propulsion possibly nuclear, which is outside of our domestic knowledge.

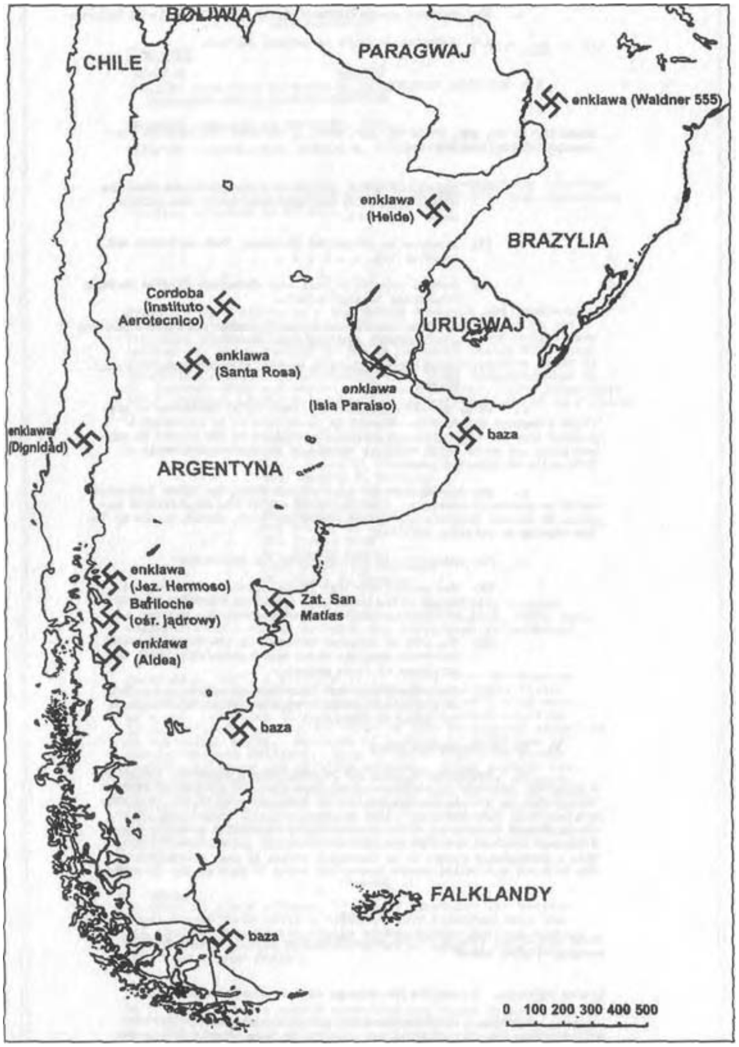
3. It is recommended that:

a. Headquarters, Army Air Forces issue a directive assigning a priority, security classification and Code Name for a detailed study of this matter to include the preparation of complete sets of all available and partinent data which will then be made available to the Army, Navy, Atomic Energy Commission, JRDB, the Air Force Scientific Advisory Group, NACA, and the RAND and NEPA projects for comments and recommendations, with a preliminary report to be forwarded within 15 days of receipt of the data and a detailed report thereafter every 30 days as the investigation develops. A complete interchange of data should be effected.

4. Awaiting a specific directive AMC will continue the investigation within its current resources in order to more closely define the nature of the phenomenon. Detailed Essential Elements of Information will be formulated immediately for transmittal thru channels.

N F Twining
N. F. TWINING
Lieutenant General, U.S.A.
Commanding

COPY
from
THE NATIONAL ARCHIVES
Record Group No. ______


BOLIWIA
CHILE
PARAGWAJ
enklawa (Waldner 555)
enklawa
(Heide)
BRAZYLIA
Cordoba
(instituto
Aerotecnico)
URUGWAJ
enklawa
(Santa Rosa)
enklawa
(Isla Paraiso)
enklawa
(Dignidad)
baza
ARGENTYNA
enklawa
(Jez. Hermoso)
Bariloche
(ośr. jądrowy)
enklawa
(Aldea)
Zat. San
Matias
baza
FALKLANDY
baza
0 100 200 300 400 500

A Polish-language map of Nazi enclaves in South America, particularly Argentina. It is thought that some of the UFO activity in South America came from German saucers relocated to remote parts of that continent.

CHAPTER EIGHT:

CONCLUDING THOUGHTS

CHAPTER EIGHT

Concluding Thoughts

What can be concluded from this glimpse into the world of German flying discs? Certainly, it can be said that some of these projects were realized. This being true, it can be said that these were the first "flying saucers". It is also certainly true that German flying discs were re-created and perhaps further developed by countries comprising the former Allied Powers. It can be said that in all probability, Germans immigrated to places outside Europe after the war and also built these flying craft. It is also a certainty that the exact nature and real history of these flying devices has remained a closely guarded secret in all these countries. Not only has a secret been kept but an active effort, a conspiracy, has been made to keep it that way. This means that their exists an effort to keep the exact knowledge of these devices from the general populace for the foreseeable future. This effort extends back into time, into the origins of these projects in Germany and extends into the present. The victors wrote history. The victors omitted German flying discs and the victors are keeping quite now.

The exact methods of propulsion of the exotic versions of these discs still remains a mystery. Jet and rocket engines were used but there is still debate as to which models used which engine at what time. There is no doubt in my mind that field propulsion techniques were at least experimented upon during the 3rd Reich. This is established in my mind, if for no other reason, by the series of F.B.I. reports dealing with the witness who saw such a device while a prisoner of war near Gut Alte Gossen. The F.B.I. took these reports seriously enough to take them and save them all these years. Maybe we should also.

One overriding question concerning UFOs is why are they so, so secret? Dr. Milos Jesensky and engineer Robert Lesmakiewicz propose an atomic saucer in their book "Wunderland" Mimozemske Technoloaie Treti Rise. This conclusion is seconded by Klaus-Peter Rothkugel and Jim Wilson. This assertion should be taken very seriously.

The UFO-atomic connection fits the historical facts concerning both atomic energy and UFOs. UFOs have always been and are today associated with atomic energy facilities. Los Alamos, Hanford and Area 51 are examples of nuclear facilities at which or very near to which UFOs are or were regularly seen. If we suppose atomic energy as a power source it might explain this association. But that can not be all there is to this matter. Methods of propulsion involving atomic energy seem to be known to us. Indeed, some were reviewed in this book. Why the extreme secrecy then? Might it be that there is some other arrangement involving nuclear energy of which we know nothing? Might the Germans have stumbled on to something really exciting during those war years, perhaps coupling field propulsion with atomic energy ? If this is so then not only would the association of UFO activity over and near nuclear facilities be explained but some of the extreme secrecy and conspiracy to cover-up the matter might also be explained.

At this point the reader may smiling and shaking his or her head in disbelief, perhaps even making comments involving the words "fantasy" or "science fiction". The German watch-word of those times was "nothing is impossible" and it is clear that within the Reich scientists took this saying to heart. Those scientists were not surprised by breakthroughs, they expected them. Please let me remind the reader that the alternative explanation is the real science fiction or fantasy. In this origin of UFOs a multitude of alien beings seemingly travel to earth from intergalactic space not to exchange ideas, exploit earth's resources or conquer the planet, but to abduct and inseminate our females. And above all, if we buy into this reasoning, these aliens seem particularly attracted to American women.

The story goes on from here to describe genetic experiments, mixing the DNA of humans and aliens to produce a hybrid human-alien. Anybody who entertains such nonsense has absolutely no understanding of the species concept in biology. Unfortunately, many individuals subscribing to the alien hypothesis fall into this category, even some with advanced degrees. Only one of two possibilities are within reason. The first is that these hominids are manifiested in the minds of the witnesses as the result of some black mind control project sponsored by the government. The second possibility is that they are the result of experimentation by the government involving human, hominoid or hominid genes. Either option is possible but both options are beyond the scope of this book. Both discussions are superfluous, however, since the topic of this book is UFOs, not aliens. "Aliens" have been used by the media and the government long enough to misdirect the inquiry into UFOs. Aliens are the ultimate "red herring".

In trying to crystallize these thoughts on the origin of UFOs, we are presented with two mutually exclusive hypotheses for the origin of flying saucers. The first is that they are a man-made technology. The second is that they are a non-man-made technology. In view of the fact that we now know the first senecio is true, why are we even considering holding on to the second hypothesis? There is no reason for a duplicity of theory. If a failure to explain the facts is ever encountered in the "UFOs are man-made theory", then and only then are we justified in moving to another hypothesis.

Before signing off it is felt that an obligation exists to discuss another reason for the suppression of the German connection in the history of UFOs. English speakers sometimes recognize this as an unuttered truth once it is out in the open but many German speakers and others are usually well ahead of the curve on this one. Unfortunately, this is not going to be pleasant.

In some circles, the flying discs built by the Germans during the war are called "Nazi UFOs". Some may do this as a way to quickly name a concept but some others do this for an entirely different reason. The point that is being made is that technology usually does not adopt a political name. The atomic bomb dropped on the Japanese by the Americans was not called the "Democrat Bomb", for example, even though a Democrat was in power in the United States at the time. The Nazis are a special case, however, and this is a central problem and roadblock we encounter in researching their innovations.

The Nazis were defeated militarily by the Allies. Yet some in the media elite continue to fight this war. Of course, the Allies always win but that is not the purpose of their fight. The purpose is the nature of the Nazis themselves. The Nazis were not just a military machine. Hitler and his supporters brought other ideas with them into power. These ideas were historical, social, artistic, economic and scientific. In other words, the Nazis brought a completely new culture into prominence almost overnight and with at least the passive acceptance of most of the general populace.

It is sometimes said by these media people in question that America defines itself as what the Nazis were not. The fascination that the mass media, especially in Hollywood, has for the Nazis is evidenced in their ongoing campaign to insure that these cultural ideas are as thoroughly defeated as the Nazi military. In defeating the Nazis militarily on the silver screen they believe they also defeat the cultural ideas associated with the Nazis. They take every opportunity to do this. The media fight this propaganda war over and over again, as if the war was still going on, while attempting to link the military defeat of the Nazis with the cultural defeat of their ideas.

For a moment I want to digress in order to illustrate an example of exactly what I am talking about. This example is both germane to our discussion of UFOs as well as cutting to the very heart of this cultural conflict. It has to do with Hitler's myrmidons, the SS.

Historians tell us that the abbreviation "SS" stands for

"Schutzstaffel". "Schutzstaffel" could be thought of as "bodyguard" and in the early days of the Nazi movement members of this order dressed in black and were Hitler's personal bodyguard. As it developed, this order changed into many things.

Portrayal of the SS in the media has degenerated simply into a negative caricature to which we are all supposed to respond immediately with a politically correct, knee-jerk type of condemnation formula. As far as the media is concerned, this is all the SS was. Their point is that we now know enough about the SS and are supposed to drop further inquiry. This first unwritten law has already been violated in this book. In this discussion we have focussed on the SS as the organizational and in some cases the research and development framework behind German super-weapon's technology. But the SS was more than this. To insiders, initiates within the 3rd Reich, the abbreviation "SS" did not stand for "Schutzstaffel" at all but for the words "Schwarze Sonne".

"Schwarze Sonne" means "Black Sun" in English. The Black Sun to these initiated individuals was a physical body like our visible sun except that the Black Sun was not visible to the naked eye. This Black Sun radiated light which was invisible to the human eye. The concept of the Black Sun seems to have bordered upon the religious. It was said to be located at the center of our galaxy. The earth along with every other cellestial body in the gallaxy rotate around this Black Sun.

The Black Sun is sometimes represented symbolically as a black sphere out of which eight arms extend. Such is its most famous rendition on the mosaic floor at Wewelsburg Castle which served as the spiritual home of the SS. The number of arms are unimportant. There could be eight or six or only four. The more astute reader will recognize at this point that the swastika, the very icon of the Nazi Party, was itself is a Black Sun symbol.

The point is that concept of the Black Sun is not just Nazi mumbo-jumbo. The Black Sun is in reality a cold, collapsing implosive vortex as described by Viktor Schauberger or Karl Schappeller. It gathers and densities yet is as cold as interstellar space. It does generate unseen radiation in the form of cosmic, gamma and x-ray radiation. This is possible because in spite of what was said about those crazy "Nazi madmen", the Black Sun is very real. In fact, the Black Sun is the most powerful force yet observed in our universe.

Forty or so years after the demise of the SS, scientists, in this case astronomers, have located the Black Sun at the very center of our galaxy. In fact, we are all familiar with it by another name. Today, we call it a "black hole". It is the center of a great spiral vortex of stars which draws in matter and energy and generates the aforementioned radiations near it periphery. The Black Sun is, in reality, a huge system or perhaps it could even be called a huge machine. We and our entire galaxy are all part of this machine whirling through space. All the matter it contains, the stars, planets, asteroids, comets, meteors and so forth, are all bound in a context of energy. Our galaxy, with the Black Sun as its heart, operates as a vast machine using all the matter and energy contained therein and using every law of physics at once in its operation. Its counterpart, the centrifugal vortex which remains unseen, may even be a doorway into another dimension into which this matter and energy from our dimension spew forth like a fountain. It is the same kind of implosive vortex from which the Germans were about to build a "new science" based upon creative, living energy as we have discussed. It may have been the same force which was to propel their flying discs.

Yet who in the media would dare give credit to those associated with the 3rd Reich for making these connections so long ago? In fact, who in the media would even point out this connection today? None. As far as they are concerned, one is politically incorrect to ever say or imply that the Nazis thought of or developed anything of value. To do so would be to commit professional suicide. To do so would mean the end of one's carrier whether in the business or the academic world. Even if one wanted to make this connection in print or film form, no politically correct publisher or producer would touch it, at least in English.

Not only does the media fail to give credit where credit is due, or to even mention or explain this concept, but anyone seeking to look into such concepts runs the real risk of being branded a neo-Nazi. This threat clearly extends into the UFO world. As a result, this threat has had a chilling effect on real UFO inquiry for over fifty years.

How should the media be treated in this case? How are we going to handle institutions within our culture which actively seek to stymie knowledge? Regardless of one's personal opinion of the Nazis, should we and are we going to allow these " open-minded champions of truth" the right to omit the history of UFOs, let alone the new science of this force of nature, simply because "they" find its origin politically offensive?

Returning from this example to our broader discussion of the media, in American culture it is sometimes said that the media's power rivals or exceeds that of the three branches of American government. With power such as this, the media believes itself up to any propaganda challenge. They are correct in this belief. As any thoughtful person realizes, the mass media's power has been used frequently in the last forty years to radically alter the course of those three branches of government.

In addition to the above referenced dilemma regarding media bias, we face a second obstacle in any effort to arrive at the truth. It is a culture of secrecy within the government itself. Vesco recognized this immediately. According to this "Vesco Doctrine" no German secret was acknowledged publicly unless that secret fell into the hands of more than one of the four occupying powers, (USA, Soviet Union, Great Britain, France). He says:

> "In fact, of the numerous revolutionary "new weapons" that the Germans developed in that period, we know only those-fortunately, they comprise the majority-that fell into the hands of all, or at least more than one, of the four occupying powers"(1).

These governments seem to keep secrets for the sake of keeping secrets. In any event, they operate on a "need to know" basis in dispensing these secrets. We simply have no need to know in their eyes.

The differences between the media and the government itself are becoming more and more blurred. Politicians rely of instant polls, conducted the night before by the media, to plot today's public policy. The results of these polls are whatever the media says they are. In the meantime, the media itself is doing everything it can through "news", through entertainment and through movies to influence the results of those polls. The media and the government are so closely intertwined that for all practical purposes they can be considered as one. The C.I.A. spends a large portion of its budget in an effort to frame public discussion on issues it deems sensitive. The point here is that "truth" is not the goal of the government and in accomplishing their ends they use the methods of the mass media if they are not in partnership with the mass media itself.

For almost sixty years this government/media has been telling us through their propaganda machine, "Hollywood", that all the ideas of the Nazis were meritless, if not dangerous. "The Nazis never had a good idea" seems to be their simplistic mantra. Of course government, at some level, know what you now know about the origins of UFOs. In fact, they know that there is much more to this still-secret high technology than just UFOs. In the past, they have no trouble using captured German scientists when it is in their interest to do so, but they hate to admit it. The problem they face is that they have boxed themselves in a corner. They can not admit the origins of UFO technology without a re-appraisal of other ideas which they have succeeded in putting to bed. If they were to admit one good "Nazi" idea, the question might arise as to if there is another good idea. The elite media has already preempted this question rhetorically, calling any re-appraisal of the Second World War "Revisionism". They use this word disparagingly. Using a sort of "new-speak" they have kept the genie bottled up for almost sixty years.

What does this all mean to the researcher or truth seeker? With enough evidence could this information ever be acknowledged officially? With what level of proof could this elite media/government power axis acknowledge the fact that Germans working for Hitler built experimental flying craft that we could not even touch? The simple answer is that they can not do so, period. Not with "all the proof in the world". Why should they? What is the upside for them? There are no good Nazi ideas. There is no need to know. There is perhaps a technological breakthrough behind the mystery. This is a loose-loose-loose situation for them by any reckoning.

Perhaps we can crystalize this nightmare for the power elite in an image. Suppose that tomorrow a highly technically advanced flying saucer landed on the White House steps in front of full, live, media coverage. Their nightmare would not be a little grey alien emerging from the saucer saying: "Take me to your leader". Their nightmare would be a former SS scientist emerging from the flying saucer saying: "I have an appointment".

The implications are obvious. For over forty years the UFO community has been saying that we are on the verge of full government UFO disclosure. For the reasons outlined above, we are not now nor will we ever be on the verge of full UFO disclosure by the government.

This means that it is up to us to do the "disclosure". Anyone interested in doing research along these lines will be encouraged to know that there is plenty of room in this field. It is not necessary to be a scientist. It is not necessary to live in Europe. It is not necessary to read German. The most important ingredient in this research is interest. If you are interested, there are mountains of government files which remain unexplored. The censors did not edit-out everything. They made mistakes which can be caught and pieced together. If each researcher could contribute just one fact to this growing body of knowledge, our trouble would be over quickly. In short, "Disclosure" isn't going to happen unless we make it happen.

These scientists and technicians who built these early flying sauces may have been the very best and brightest of their time but they got up each rooming and put their pants on just like the rest of us. In fact, they are us. Now that we know that we earthlings are capable of manufacturing objects we call UFOs, should we not use these facts we possess in explaining this phenomena rather than ignoring this information altogether? Should we not cease creating a new and superfluous mythology, if not an outright religion, to explain this phenomena which is completely devoid of a factual basis? Real truth is usually quite simple. In this case the real truth is that the origin of UFOs and many more technological secrets are resting in the grave of Nazi Germany, simply awaiting our re-discovery.

This has not been "The Complete Book of UFOs" or even "The Complete Book of German Flying Discs". Within each topic touched upon in this book lie worlds within worlds of details and additional information. It is for the reader to use the references cited as a starting point to root out what is of interest. This book was designed to get you started. It was only a guide.

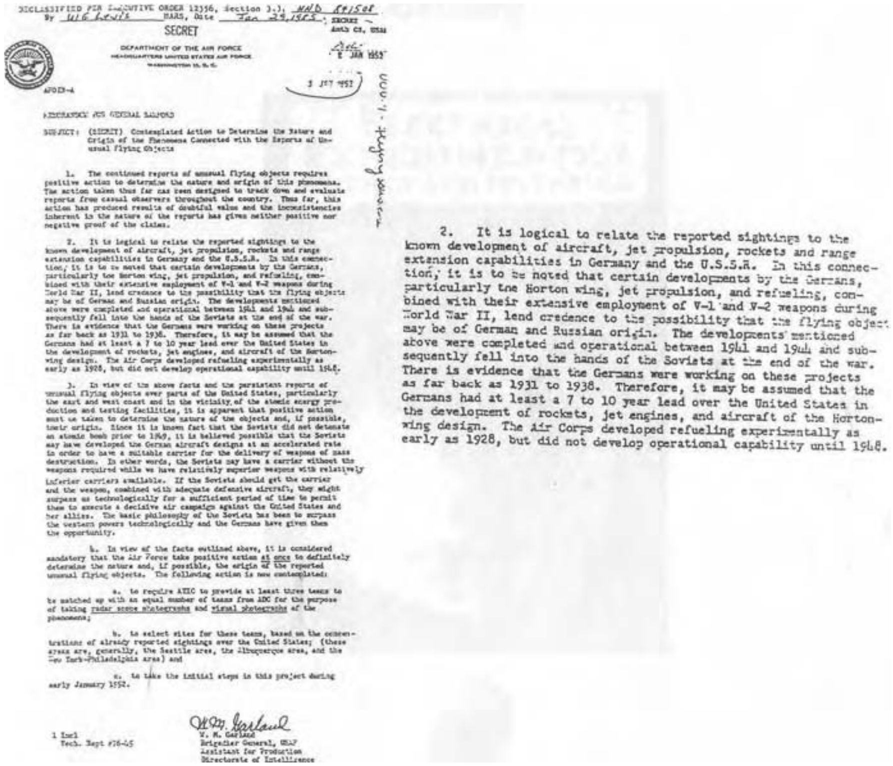
Concluding Thoughts-References

Vesco, Renato, 1976, Intercept UFO, page 96, Pinnacle Books, New York, NY.

THANKS

Most everyone who has ever looked in to the matter of German flying discs has come to the conclusion that there is at least some truth to it. Still, opinions and interpretations within this group differ with the individual doing the research. Nobody can know or find everything. This certainly is true of the study of German flying discs. Many researchers in this field have set up a circle of correspondence or exchange with others interested in this topic. Even the brightest, most hard working individuals have benefitted from an exchange of information.

I have written up this book by doing some research and receiving a great deal of help, input and information sent to me by my friends. My deepest thanks and appreciation" go out to those individuals who have shared their findings with me, explained their research to me and/or shared the counsel of their wisdom. This is true even in cases of disagreement or in cases of differing interpretations. In all cases, they have gone much beyond their published material. These include: Michael Blaeser, Rainer Daehnhardt, the late Joseph Andreas Epp, Dr. Gordon Freeman, Heiner Gehring, Friedrich Georg, Dr. Milos Jesensky, Kadmon, Mark Kneipp, Robert Lesniakiewicz, William Lyne, Thomas Mehner, Theo Paymans, Richard Ross, Klaus-Peter Rothkugel, Horst Schuppmann, Vladimir Terziski, Milos Vnenk and Michael Watson. I would also like to thank my daughter, Lisa Stevens, for her work in proof reading and editing this text.



DECLASSIFIED PER EXECUTIVE ORDER 12356, Section 3.3, NND 841508
By WG Lewis NARS, Date Jan 29,1985

SECRET

SECRET - Auth CG, USAF

DEPARTMENT OF THE AIR FORCE
HEADQUARTERS UNITED STATES AIR FORCE
WASHINGTON 25, D. C.

Ack.
8 JAN 1952

AFOIN-A

3 JAN 1952

000.1 - flying saucers

MEMORANDUM FOR GENERAL SAMFORD

SUBJECT: (SECRET) Contemplated Action to Determine the Nature and Origin of the Phenomena Connected with the Reports of Unusual Flying Objects

1. The continued reports of unusual flying objects requires positive action to determine the nature and origin of this phenomena. The action taken thus far has been designed to track down and evaluate reports from casual observers throughout the country. Thus far, this action has produced results of doubtful value and the inconsistencies inherent in the nature of the reports has given neither positive nor negative proof of the claims.

2. It is logical to relate the reported sightings to the known development of aircraft, jet propulsion, rockets and range extension capabilities in Germany and the U.S.S.R. In this connection, it is to be noted that certain developments by the Germans, particularly the Horton wing, jet propulsion, and refueling, combined with their extensive employment of V-1 and V-2 weapons during World War II, lend credence to the possibility that the flying objects may be of German and Russian origin. The developments mentioned above were completed and operational between 1941 and 1944 and subsequently fell into the hands of the Soviets at the end of the war. There is evidence that the Germans were working on these projects as far back as 1931 to 1938. Therefore, it may be assumed that the Germans had at least a 7 to 10 year lead over the United States in the development of rockets, jet engines, and aircraft of the Horton-wing design. The Air Corps developed refueling experimentally as early as 1928, but did not develop operational capability until 1948.

3. In view of the above facts and the persistent reports of unusual flying objects over parts of the United States, particularly the east and west coast and in the vicinity of the atomic energy production and testing facilities, it is apparent that positive action must be taken to determine the nature of the objects and, if possible, their origin. Since it is known fact that the Soviets did not detonate an atomic bomb prior to 1949, it is believed possible that the Soviets may have developed the German aircraft designs at an accelerated rate in order to have a suitable carrier for the delivery of weapons of mass destruction. In other words, the Soviets may have a carrier without the weapons required while we have relatively superior weapons with relatively inferior carriers available. If the Soviets should get the carrier and the weapon, combined with adequate defensive aircraft, they might surpass us technologically for a sufficient period of time to permit them to execute a decisive air campaign against the United States and her allies. The basic philosophy of the Soviets has been to surpass the western powers technologically and the Germans have given them the opportunity.

4. In view of the facts outlined above, it is considered mandatory that the Air Force take positive action at once to definitely determine the nature and, if possible, the origin of the reported unusual flying objects. The following action is now contemplated:

a. to require ATIC to provide at least three teams to be matched up with an equal number of teams from ADC for the purpose of taking radar scope photographs and visual photographs of the phenomena;

b. to select sites for these teams, based on the concentrations of already reported sightings over the United States; (these areas are, generally, the Seattle area, the Albuquerque area, and the New York-Philadelphia area) and

c. to take the initial steps in this project during early January 1952.

W. M. Garland

1 Incl
Tech. Rept #76-45

W. M. Garland
Brigadier General, USAF
Assistant for Production
Directorate of Intelligence

2. It is logical to relate the reported sightings to the known development of aircraft, jet propulsion, rockets and range extension capabilities in Germany and the U.S.S.R. In this connection, it is to be noted that certain developments by the Germans, particularly the Horton wing, jet propulsion, and refueling, combined with their extensive employment of V-1 and V-2 weapons during World War II, lend credence to the possibility that the flying objec may be of German and Russian origin. The developments mentioned above were completed and operational between 1941 and 1944 and subsequently fell into the hands of the Soviets at the end of the war. There is evidence that the Germans were working on these projects as far back as 1931 to 1938. Therefore, it may be assumed that the Germans had at least a 7 to 10 year lead over the United States in the development of rockets, jet engines, and aircraft of the Horton-wing design. The Air Corps developed refueling experimentally as early as 1928, but did not develop operational capability until 1948.

Left, U.S. Air Force document, Jan. 3, 1952
Right, blowup of the second paragraph

Hitler

WAS A BRITISH AGENT

GREG HALLETT AND THE SPYMASTER

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Hitler
WAS A BRITISH AGENT

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

GREG HALLETT

AND THE

SPYMASTER

Books by Greg Hallett

ARE YOU MY FATHER?
The Family Court and Other Experiments 2002

HITLER WAS A BRITISH AGENT 2005, 2006

HOW TO TAKE OVER THE WORLD
A Right Royal Con 2007, 2008, 2009

STALIN'S BRITISH TRAINING
Breeding Concubines Paedophiles At War 2007, 2008, 2010

GIFTING THE UNITED NATIONS TO STALIN 2007, 2008, 2009

NEW ZEALAND
A Blackmailer's Guide 2007, 2008

The Sex Collectors – How the World is Run on Shame – series

THE SEX COLLECTORS– STITCH-UPS 2009

THE SEX COLLECTORS – MURDERS 2010

THE SEX COLLECTORS – HEROIN TICKET 2010

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Further details

Purchases
www.greghallett.com

Orders and distribution
FNZ Inc.
PO Box 109 624, Newmarket, Auckland, New Zealand

Contact the author
greg@greghallett.com

Hitler
WAS A BRITISH AGENT

GREG HALLETT

AND THE

SPYMASTER

FNZ Inc.
LONDON AUCKLAND FRANKFURT TORONTO

Dedication

To those who have walked the walk
and talked the talk.

To James Bond III,
the Spymaster,
and Walter Mitty,
who is omnipresent in all of us.

To the living libraries and talking dictionaries,
who for some reason chose to talk to me.

Spying is the Great Game.
Information is a commodity
subject to the forces of the marketplace
as much as any other. It has one advantage
in that it can be sold more than once.
Books are its least profitable way to do this.
Nevertheless, history is best written to influence the present.

Published by
FNZ Inc.
Auckland, New Zealand
www.greghallett.com

First Edition:	15 September 2005
Second Edition:	1 October 2006

Copyright © Greg Hallett, 2005, 2006, 2010
ISBN 978-0-473-11478-7

The images in this book are used under fair use. They are historically significant photos of famous individuals. They are a lower resolution than the originals and any copies will be of inferior quality. The photos are only used for informational purposes and their inclusion adds significantly to the knowledge gained as it depicts the subject with historical accuracy. Incorporating restricted material is fair use under United States copyright law and any challenges will be met with commercial and liberal parody.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Introduction

Spymaster: "One of the tricks of Intelligence is to deny everything. They routinely promote lies, tricks and deceptions and always promote some pederast to a high place who has nothing to do with it. He is the public face of ignorance. Anyone who attacks this person is vilified by the entire system of government. In reality, the people who have gone out and risked life and limb are routinely cast as fantasists and liars. Such are the rewards of intelligence."

At 8.30 am on 14 August 2003 I opened my back door to a Security Intelligence Service vehicle masking as Matrix Security. I looked up to see a police helicopter between me and the museum. Both were monitoring me. An hour later an intelligence officer arrived at my door with two coffees and a newspaper. He had a problem with history and nominated himself as my chauffeur.

Thereafter I sat in the back of my car getting briefed and recording history. He proved himself by giving me the news ahead of time over the next year. I became convinced that the Spymaster had access to information worthy of recording and organising. This formed the basis of this book and the foundation of others to follow.

I was given sixty books, about four at a time, some magazines, and a host of documentaries to watch. In each one I looked for purposeful mistakes and in each one I found them.

Most of these books were written by secret service agents who had witnessed events above their station, and their mistakes screamed loudly to whomever had the detailed knowledge to pursue them. The devil is in the details and it seemed that the devil was everywhere. Fortunately I had access to 'living libraries' and their detailed knowledge opened the Pandora's box and a new history was formed – the history of the world according to the secret service. This was history beyond the cover-ups. It was history from the secret service with the intelligence angle behind it. This knowledge then gave leverage for more information elsewhere and was detailed enough and broad enough to act as protection. As soon as the information was interpreted, it was disseminated and exists in disk form, in mattresses all over the world.

War began the keeping of records and the falsifying of records. Thus two records of history were always kept. The public got one, while the true record was held under secrecy for 30, 50, 100 years or more. Conspiracy writers scratch the surface and get halfway, occasionally getting it right. To get it right, you have to understand movements and motivation and have insiders in every aspect of war, politics and the bedroom. As a result, in 95% of history books, two-thirds of the information is false.

The history the public receive and abide by is bunkum.

Members of the secret service who were allowed to survive are known as ‘living libraries’. These are the ‘human dictionaries’ that know the fluff from the stuff. They cut to the chase and have a pleasant habit of talking in sentences of ten words or less. Their stories have a ring of truth about them and, when pieced together, they fit like cogs in a wheel. As you listen to their stories you are watching history turn, one cog intertwined with another, and a new history is formed.

The purpose of studying history is to shift out of first gear and, ultimately, make it possible to influence history. Once a cog has been identified, the next one needs attention, and the next one after that. A cog only comes to attention when the previous cog has been illuminated. In this way, intelligence becomes an addictive jigsaw – hard to compromise convincingly, unless the first story is befuddled. Official history is loaded with such befuddlements.

When enough interconnected cogs are illuminated, a new history is formed. This makes the present easier to explain and the future easier to understand, if not predict.

The historian’s job is to decipher and impart information in a way that the public can understand. Some of the world’s dumbest people are historians lecturing in what amounts to *history propaganda* and some of the world’s most intelligent historians are painting houses. This is the problem with history.

In the process of writing this book, I collected information from intelligence agents around the world. I then gave each agent information from the other, which they checked. Any other leads I had, I’d check through the service and they’d tell me how accurate I was. They usually checked the stories through the foreign intelligence network based in the listening post that is New Zealand. As the mutual exchange checked out, respect developed and the ‘bullshit’ factor was eliminated. I did this for some twenty-two years and in the last three years I’ve been briefed up to four times a week, making me one of the boys, but still a boy.

When the information proved to be correct, as it invariably did – bar minor details which were corrected using all media – I came up with a scenario and illustrated the agents’ part in it, and then a theory on the ‘how and why’ of intrigues, assassinations, wars and social policy. In this way I gathered a body of data that is a virtual rewrite of the last hundred years of history. As this information was ordered a new and more accurate history formed.

Occasionally it was tense, especially towards the end, when we had a ‘property’ that was worth protecting and capable of toppling. Most often these treffs (spy meetings) were done face to face, sometimes through a proxy and other times through proxies on both sides. Many of the people I recruited information from, I was never allowed to meet. Money never changed hands and the most expensive information came with the price of a takeaway meal. No one had any pretensions and no one wore a trenchcoat, but we had a lot of laughs, tea and crackers.

The meetings are backed up by notes, diaries, tape recordings, transcripts, treaties and disks secured off-site. Many writers end their preface with “I hope this . . .” but I have no illusions. Much will be made of nothing and nothing will be made of much.

C’est la vie and such is war.

Greg Hallett

From the recently toppled Anglican Archives, 8 August 2005

Espavo Sezo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

Tavistock Military Psych-Ops War School
training line
"In wartime,
the truth is so precious
we surround it with a bodyguard of lies."

Hitler
"In wartime,
we provide truth with a bodyguard of lies
because it is so precious."

Churchill
"In wartime,
the truth is so precious
that she should always be attended by a bodyguard of lies."

History rarely remembers an honest political figure.
This is the nature of the occult.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

CONTENTS

1 Living Libraries 1
2 Adolf Hitler – The Incestuous Catholic Jew 5
3 Adolf Hitler in Britain 21
4 Hitler's Sexuality 63
5 Hitler's Psychiatric Condition 79
6 Hitler's Deconstruction 87
7 Body Doubles 103
8 Hess and Hess Fly to Britain 125
9 Crashing the Duke of Kent 159
10 Dunkirk 229
11 James Bond 235
12 Pearl Harbor 241
13 Dieppe 251
14 Anthony Blunt 255
15 Wallis Simpson and King Edward VIII 261
16 Operation JAMES BOND 279
17 Operation WINNIE THE POOH 305
18 Lost Leaders 361
19 Churchill, Hitler and Stalin Work Together 397
Afterword 415
Appendices 443
Bibliography 517
Index 527
Biographies 547

APPENDICIES

1 **Information and Inventions** **443**

2 **The Fluoride Con** **461**

3 **Not Without American Help** **463**

4 **Spreading the Blame** **465**

5 **Doppelgänger Hess's Murder** **467**

6 **The Bank of England Heist** **471**

7 **Smersh** **473**

8 **Hugh Trevor-Roper** **475**

9 **Unlikely Heroes** **479**

10 **James Bond – Sir Sean Connery** **481**

11 **Hitler's Host for Hitler's Ghost** **485**

12 **The Origins of *Animal Farm*** **497**

13 **Was Wallis Simpson a Man** **509**

Espavo [illegible] - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

The Rules of War

Amory Bradford's letter regarding Clare Boothe Luce's idea for the assassination of Hitler (June 16th) reminded me of an ingenious plan devised by my father, Sir Douglas Jardine, when he was the British governor of Sierra Leone, in 1941.

The Germans were gaining ground in North Africa, and he was secretly approached by the German High Command with a proposal that he move his troops in Sierra Leone to the wrong border when the German Army invaded the country. For this help, my father was to receive "clement treatment" in the event of a German victory.

My father wrote to Whitehall suggesting that he should agree to go to Berlin to discuss the moves he might make. In his pocket he would have a box of Swan Vesta matches with yellow-fever germs sealed inside. My father had been vaccinated against yellow-fever, a fatal disease, so while talking to Hitler he would be able to light his pipe or cigarette and crush the box of matches.

Whitehall replied that on no account was he to do any such foolish thing: it would not be cricket to murder Hitler.

Penelope Jardine
S. Giovanni in Oliveto, Italy
The New Yorker, 28 July 1997, p. 6.

All wars are fake wars.
Some are short and some are long,
but all wars are ‘created’.

Every war is a war of secrets.
Wars with the greatest number of secrets take the longest.
A war without secrets is ‘a bashing, a mugging, or a trial run’.

Every war is a social experiment whose end
is always ‘new ways of controlling the masses’.
All wars are a front for creating social change.

Wars are designed, like a car, to fulfil a purpose – to carry a certain weight, fragility and number of packages over a certain distance, at a certain speed, towards a certain end, for a certain group.

The designers of war usually own the latest ‘vehicle’, the most ‘vehicles’, and are usually after a secret or a resource held by those less fortunately packaged – from the secrets of King Solomon’s Tomb to oil.

The Second World War tried to improve on everything the First World War had achieved and the Third World War will do the same. World Wars are an attempt to set up One World Order social structures, so that everything and absolutely everything complies with that Order.

The practice of deconstructing foreign politicians has developed over the past five hundred years and is now a favourite method of taking over countries since the success of Hitler and Stalin.

Intelligence Historian, 15 September 2004:
“We have a window of opportunity to the end of next year. The Germans are on to it. They have recently found evidence that Hitler was a British agent in the Stasi archives.”

History is blind for one reason:
“**Blessed are the war-makers**.”

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Her Majesty
Queen Elizabeth II
Buckingham Palace
London SW1A 1AA
England

Dear Your Majesty The Queen,

My Spymaster once swore an oath of loyalty to you. He now believes you have been badly, if not criminally, advised. The Spymaster feels obligated to point this out. As such, we are sending you a copy of this book.

Yours sincerely,

Greg Hallett

Historian Henry Makow, Ph.D., United States
Greg Hallett offers persuasive circumstantial evidence that Hitler was a British Agent. As Hitler was in Britain 1912–13 other historians are guilty of sanitizing Hitler, giving him more credibility that he had. *Hitler was a British Agent* is a useful paradigm that clarifies many improbable events . . .

Why the Nazi war machine was financed and built by the Bank of England.
Why Hitler was able to expand into the Rhineland without fear of retaliation.
Why Hitler let 335,000 Allied soldiers escape at Dunkirk.
Why Hitler attacked Russia before England was invaded or conquered.
Why the Nazis never figured out their communications were compromised.
Why Hitler never sealed the Mediterranean at Gibraltar.
Why the Spanish dictator Franco remained neutral.
Why Hitler didn't conquer the oil fields of Russia and the Middle East.
Why Hitler gave his racial policies priority over actually winning the war.
Why I.G. Farben was never bombed, and became the CIA headquarters in Frankfurt after WWII.

The biggest improbability of traditional history is that an Austrian tramp, street cleaner and gay prostitute could become the Chancellor of Germany. Hitler joins a long list of obscure blackmailable figures catapulted into world prominence by the unseen hand.

Implications . . . History is unfolding according to the Illuminati's long-term plan. Wars are plotted decades in advance and orchestrated to achieve the destruction of nations and natural elites, depopulation, demoralization, and of course power and profit . . . The Illuminati sponsor 'enemies' in order to ferment conflict . . . The super rich have organized themselves to prey on mankind and establish permanent hegemony . . . Greg Hallett deserves our thanks for advancing a history more plausible than what supposedly transpired.

Ole Gerstrøm, **Former Member of Parliament**, Denmark
I read your book. It is magnificent. That Hitler was a stooge has been my working hypothesis for many years. We know from Anthony Sutton, that the Nazis were financed by Rockefeller and the like. You mention a total of 10 volumes. I would like to read them.

Robert Schwartz, Texas
A credible and well-documented study. The Ian Fleming information was stunning, and very valuable.

Espavo 3020 - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

Lenny Bloom, **political scientist at Cloak & Dagger,** Canada
It's a tremendous book, a terrific compilation of the war . . . wonderfully documented, well-footnoted . . . It shows the real machinations going on backstage in the Global Theatre and certainly explains a lot . . . I think readers are going to be very surprised as to what really happened with Adolf Hitler. It shows the greater underground, the under-bush . . . the plans of the monarchies and oligarchs go very, very deep. They plan these things decades in advance. An excellent book, I recommend it highly. It's a must read for everybody.

Charles Andersen, Oklahoma
Hitler Was A British Agent is a seminal work with a wealth of information from an insider's view of the real history of the twentieth century. The insider being one [or more] "spymasters". It's a great read full of 'incidental' information, that is in itself, both informative and entertaining. The authors posit that both Hitler and Stalin were British agents trained at Tavistock . . . Charlie Chaplin and Peter Sellers both British agents . . . Chaplin's socialist/communist politics an intelligence gathering front . . . Peter Sellers' *Being There* a parody of Hitler in his post-war years . . . the real James Bond, his real name, how he came to be a spy and his more notable operations . . . the end-of-war operations to get the real Hitler out of Germany – Operation JAMES BOND and Operation WINNIE THE POOH . . . the Beatles an MI-6 front. 'Their' Yellow Submarine song a parody of Hitler's escape out of Berlin . . . Fascinating stuff that predicts the future: Saddam Hussein, war, Freemasonry etc . . . Enjoyable read.

Ole Jensen, Denmark
I love your book. It's a brick-load of information! You've got all the dirty deeds lined up and you're hitting them right on the head. There is a missing period in Hitler's life, around 1912–13, which no previous historian has accounted for. From my own knowledge, I found no major flaws . . . Lots of neat little details, like Sir CC and Chaplin's "Double Cross" symbolism. I understand your book. No big surprises for me. Keep me on the customer list and I hope not to end up on someone's hit list :-)

Zeph Daniel, **Channel Z**, New Mexico
Excellent book, excellent work. Thanks for all you do.

British woman, Head of an area Government Department, New Zealand
"You have no idea what you have done. It's just like Vera Briton's book."

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Living Libraries

At the start of a mission, life expectancy is very low. When six operatives are on a mission, they tell one or two stories of what really went down. After all, there is nothing to lose. A couple of the agents die and four are left with eight stories. After a decade or two the stories start to repeat, but those startled, surprised survivors have the history of the world pierced through their thick skin and rubbed into the arms of their worn-out chairs. As they talk oblivious of their surroundings, they reveal their secrets and a whole new world opens up.

The problem with agents is that they played a role but were denied the overall picture. Each had a piece of evidence to impart and it is only through collecting their different stories that an entire picture emerges. When an ordinary Joe interviews more than one of them and shows their collective part in history, their friendship is immediate, protective and concerned. Their advice is always right. After all, they are the survivors of various governments' ideologies and the bizarre cravings of power.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

When these stories unfurl and are put in perspective, the nature of the secret service opens up. With five decades of stories from more than one player, their stories overlap in the thousands and a history is born. As much as I show you here, much more is left out. As soldiers, authors and historians die off, their records often go with them.

Most of history is created from manufactured records, yet the true history provides us with the rich understanding of 'humanity's bizarre strivings for wealth and power', the destruction of each other, the desire for mass murder and the cover-ups that follow. Heroism is wasted in war – you may win the battle, but lose the war; while treason is rewarded with entire countries and all your groceries paid for . . . but your life is not your own.

Secret societies have long had access to the actual events in history. This is the history that the secret service have passed down through centuries and made available for the elite to access. This is the knowledge of power. There are four methods to get this 'knowledge of power'. The first is to do exhaustive research from scratch. The second, if you can access them, is to interview 'living libraries' – old secret agents who have that smart, distrustful, questioning look in their eyes (that belies too much action and a complete surprise at being alive). The third is to be an active historian changing history with the straw that broke the camel's back. The fourth is to belong to a secret society and work your way up through the ranks, at which point you can't reveal the information . . . this makes books like this one, so very rare.

I have access to three of these methods and can name thirty others so ordinary and bizarre as to be commonly held the work of fiction and fantasy – but they work, some only as a starting point and others as detail without the overall picture.

I was asked recently, "How the hell did you get past a hundred security guards into President Bill Clinton's dinner speech without a ticket?" Quite simply I used a technique so ordinary and bizarre as to be considered the work of fiction, a technique I had invented eighteen hours prior. Fortune favours the brave and history is entrusted to those who pass the integrity test for the longest.

The acid test, as with history, is 'whatever works'. This history does not limit itself to being from a British angle.

History repeats every sixty years plus or minus two years. To study the present day, the most effective starting point is to go back sixty years from the present historical figures and examine the training of their predecessors.

In each war there are double agents that go right to the top. The more effective they are, the more compromised they are, and the more they are secretly protected afterwards, right through the ages.

Wars are always created through double agents and compromised principles. Wars are always based on profit. Those who profit ignore the deaths. Those who suffer never get past the deaths. In this way it takes an unencumbered generation to illuminate the hoax of war.

To create a war, you first have to invent a fictitious enemy and then go out and kill them – without killing your own double agent. In most instances you have to grow the double agent and the enemy yourself. This has been common practice for over a century.

Stalin began his British training in 1907 and Hitler began his British training in 1912. In both cases these double agents ended up as Heads of State running foreign countries given to them by their trainers. Stalin

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

was from Georgia and was given Russia; Hitler was from Austria and given Germany.

To illustrate this, it is necessary to break down war into its component parts and resulting social control. Although the deaths are very real, much of war is smoke and mirrors, cover-ups and lies carried out by organised societies continuously performing magician's tricks – a succession of great switcheroos.

To expose what really happened, you have to understand how these tricks were performed. Secret societies have 'a memory, vengeance, purpose and resources beyond generations', and this is what makes them so powerful.

"Those who wish to become our leaders choose the ordeal of war to prove themselves worthy of the privilege."
"What if we're at peace?"
"There are always wars to be fought."[1]

When the British *Freemasons* want to create war, the American *Skulls* prepare to supply them with munitions across the Atlantic and vice versa. When either the Freemasons or the Skulls need a war for profit, they use MI-6 and the CIA to create it.

Other countries' intelligence agencies are also involved. They become involved based on protecting any minority sexual practices of their leaders. The divergent sexual practices of countries' leaders is *the* major reason for the miscalculation of war.

With monogamous heterosexual leaders, wars halve in frequency. As a result, leaders with nothing to hide tend to be eliminated, either frustrated before they get into power, or killed once in power. This is the nature of war. Deaths do not count, not even the deaths of their leaders.

Straight after WWII the OSS (Office of Strategic Services) was replaced by the CIA Central Intelligence Agency (1946). The CIA became an ambitious, high-level, ruthless self-sovereign organisaton – effectively a marauding country on the move, a roving conqueror.

The Skulls drew on the CIA for their new members, the most prominent of which was George Herbert Walker Bush (Bush senior) in 1948, followed by George W. Bush in 1968 (the current American President). The Skulls was founded at Yale University in 1832 for the elite children of

---

[1] *The Skulls*, 1999.

Wall Street bankers. They were linked to the Illuminati (founded 1 May 1776) and through them had access to the Freemasons and the Mercers. They take in 15 new members each year.

In 2003, just prior to his inauguration as Governor of California, Arnold Schwarzenneger became a 16th member of the Skulls. This doesn't happen too often.

America, the spiteful, youthful, vengeful bitch did its best to profit from the managed wars of WWI (1914–18) and WWII (1939–45). These were European Civil Wars and Masonic wars – in retaliation for the American Civil War (1861–65) that the British had arranged some fifty years earlier . . . and so history is formed.

The devil is in the details and the details are rarely revealed.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Adolf Hitler

The Incestuous Catholic Jew

> "How incomplete, how absent, how fragmentary
> our knowledge of Hitler's past and what made him tick is."[1]

If you want to create a revolution, introduce new expectations and rules to live by. If you want to make a revolutionary, create someone out of their time – and ensure they are disgruntled about it. This is simply done by training them in an ideology different from their time or what is currently being expressed. Many are trained and most fall away. The one who survives to lead will be a revolutionary for a variety of reasons. The harder time they have, the more changes they will make. This is called 'creating potential in the revolutionary'.

Most movements created are exported overseas for subversive reasons. Movements and ideologies have become the new war. With a movement or ideology it is possible to destroy an opposing country without firing a weapon. Political Correctness is a prime example – invented in Russia, it was exported to the West to destroy the family and fun . . . and to stop progress.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Hitler's family history is a near perfect example of how to create a criminal. Sadly, his personal history has been taken as an exemplary family pattern and is being repeated as closely as possible by nearly every government department involved with children across the Western world . . . but I've taken the stage here to outline Hitler's origins and expose his training. His initial nature was kind, caring and gentle. He was a typical beaten boy from a family that had plenty to hide.

Catholic Incest

Officially Hitler had incestuous parents in Alois and Klara. His father's grandparents and his mother's great-grandparents were the same two people, making their marriage second- and third-degree incest – the wife (25) being the niece of the husband (48) who was also her uncle. This was no doubt known to Hitler and confused the family tree and the head that studied it.

---

[1] Ron Rosebaum, *Explaining Hitler.*

Nevertheless, Alois and Klara’s marriage was approved by the Catholic Church and they married in 1885. Adolf Hitler was born thirteen years later, on 20 April 1889 in Braunau, officially dying at 56 on the 30th of April 1945 in Berlin. In his life he tried to change the world, but the ‘powers that be’ changed it back – a little, and only for the time being. Nevertheless, in the back of darker boardrooms Hitler had become a model for ruling the world. Socialism was the outward goal and fascism was the method.

> Hitler was an enormous success, an enormous failure and an even greater mystery. His life was a battle with confused beginnings.

Hitler tried to clean up his act and “His creed of Aryan superiority meant that he should be able to prove his pedigree, and that there should be no skeletons in the closet. Adolf desperately wanted to eradicate any type of family roots or origins in order to promote the impression that he was God-sent to the German people. He wanted to be seen as a divine figure.”[2]

Adolf was desperate to eradicate any record of relatives, their misdeeds, their propensity for incest and his Jewish connection, as the German racial test required proof of Aryan descent back to 1750.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Both sides of Hitler’s family were from Walterschlag, Spital, Strones and Gross Wolfgers in lower Austria. Hitler’s father grew up in Strones, but it was too small to be a parish, so he was registered in the small farming village Döllerscheim.

As soon as Adolf came to power he ordered the residents hastily removed and the Wehrmacht use it for artillery practise (March 1938). Likewise in 1942 when a plaque was installed in Strones as Adolf’s hometown, he threw a tantrum and ordered it destroyed soon after the concrete had set.

Adolf didn’t have anything to do with his father’s side of the family. None of his siblings knew who their father’s father was, but they liked the mother’s side of the family. They also practiced second-degree incest. This was common at the time and has largely been cured by common use of the motorcar.

---

[2] *Hitler*.

> Paula Hitler, 101st Airborne Division interview, 12 July 1945: “The Schmieds and the Koppensteins are our dear relatives, especially a cousin Schmieds who married a Koppenstein. I know of no one of my father’s family. My sister Angela and I often said: ‘Father must have some relatives, but we don’t even know them.’”

Incest was very common amongst the Germans and Austrians, and after WWI, blowing up one’s graveyards and burning down registries were the most common methods of tidying up one’s family tree. British Intelligence officers were accustomed to walking at night, but they were advised not to walk too close to the German cemeteries as they had a tendency to explode around midnight.

Spymaster: “Most world leaders are keen to turn their ordinary origins into a showpiece of reflected glory. Who among world leaders today would get away with such an obvious ploy of destroying or rewriting their family history? Sending tanks to shell and destroy a perfectly good town, in what was once a foreign country, is extreme, even amongst world leaders who are renowned for their extremities.”

The name Hutter became Hiedler and then Hitler. Hitler was a spelling error and spelling errors have dominated history, the most important being ‘the children of Israel’, versus ‘the children of Ishmael’ (the Christians and Jews versus Islam); and ‘Oradour-sur-Glane’ versus ‘Oradour-sur-Vayres’ where 642 people were massacred in the wrong French village during WWII. The least important was the rugby team who “played like All Blacks” [sic] and the spelling error carried on to name the team.

Spelling errors have more to answer for than any other facet of history. Language is made up of different dialects and spelling mistakes find commonality with wider and faster transport, and become the norm. Those who stay put speak with strong accents, develop more phonetic spelling and tend to make fewer historical errors.

‘Crack’ in Ireland is a case in point. In one area it means ‘conversation’ as in ‘good crack’, and in another area you don’t know what you’re going to get.

Jewish Origins

Adolf Hitler received a letter from his half-brother Alois hinting at "very odd circumstances in our family history"[3] and it is odd indeed. This referred to the conception of their father Alois Hitler.

Adolf Hitler's grandfather was not part of an incestuous Catholic tree, but one of the leading financiers of Europe. To understand who Adolf Hitler's grandfather was (Alois Hitler's father) you have to understand what Europe was like then.

Werner Sombart, in his book *The Jews and Modern Capitalism* said that from 1820 on, it was the "Age of the Rothschild". He concluded there was "only one power in Europe, and that is Rothschild".

After the patriarch Mayer Rothschild died on 19 September 1812, his will set out specific guidelines for his descendants:

> 'The family was to intermarry with their own first and second cousins, so their fortune could be kept within the family, and to maintain the appearance of a united financial empire.'

As a result, 16 of the 18 marriages by Mayer Amschel Rothschild's grandchildren were between first cousins. Even his son James (Jacob) Mayer married the daughter of his brother, Salomon Mayer. This created an incestuous culture (although it is legal to marry your cousin) and also meant that the five Rothschild sons couldn't have legitimate children outside the family. To compensate for this, they had illegitimate children, often with their servants.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March

According to Walter Langer, a psychoanalyst who wrote *The Mind of Adolf Hitler*, Adolf Hitler was a satanic German leader who was the grandson of a Rothschild. It was generally supposed that the father of Alois Hitler was Johann Georg Hiedler, but:

> "There are some people who seriously doubt that Johann Georg Hiedler was the father of Alois . . . [an Austrian document was supposedly prepared] that proved Maria Anna Schicklgruber [Hitler's grandmother] was living in Vienna at the time she conceived [31 August 1836] . . . At that time she was employed as a servant in the home of a Baron Rothschild. As soon as the family discovered her pregnancy she was sent back to her home [House No. 13, Strones, Austria] . . . where Alois [snr.] was born."

---

[3] *Hitler*, p. 15.

In response, Hitler attacked the Austrian town of Döllerscheim and destroyed the graveyards, using them for tank practise. This destroyed his father's birth records, which would have revealed his Jewish ancestry.

Hitler also closed the Rothschild's bank, S. M. Rothschild and Sons in Vienna in 1938. It had belonged to Salomon Rothschild, one of his probable grandfathers.

The Nazi leadership hid their Jewish family histories with grenades. Even Heydrich's admission to the SS was delayed until his family headstones were blown up. Heydrich was a quarter Jew from his mother's mother and was responsible for almost all of the Jewish terror and repression of the Nazi rule. He was dispassionate and had a marked characteristic of inhumanity.

The Rothschilds were all Illuminati, an independent organisation that began in 1776 and infused itself with the existing Freemasons, eventually drawing out their elite. Their goal was worldwide dominance and control. By 1836, the Rothschilds were the most influential family in Europe. They had created the American Revolution and, as is typical of banks, they funded both sides.

The Rothschilds illegitimate children had two purposes. One was to create allies and the other was to create enemies. The 'allies' were used by the Rothschilds to front for their financial deals and the 'enemies' were used to create war. The Rothschilds funded both sides of the wars and profited enormously from the financial deals the wars created. Because the Rothschilds owned everything, they had no fear of retaliation from the courts.

Occult Origins

Since 1776 the '31st of August' has been set aside as a satanic night, a time when the Rothschilds sowed their seeds to create the children of war. It is an important day for conceiving an 'agent for war' under their private occult coven, the 'Golden Dawn'. Such occult acts are planned to occur between 1.30 am and 3.10 am (13s). This was the equivalent of Guy Fawkes for illegitimate children, with the Rothschilds dressed for Halloween.

The 31st of August is the last day of the Northern Hemisphere summer and the night when the authorities turn a blind eye to pagan rituals. This is similar to the Southern Hemisphere's 27/28/29 February when beach party madness reigns.

On the 31st of August, the Rothschilds' goal was to scare the bejabbers (Jesus) out of the women and for the women to conceive in absolute fear, believing that they were mating with the devil. It was pack rape, with three Rothschilds involved in each hit, one raping, one in the room ensuring dominance and confusion, with another outside, then changing roles.

The German ranks of peerage went from King, Prince, Duke, Markgraf (Count) and Baron, to Ritter. Ritter was equivalent to Knight and carried the surname 'von Ritter'. This was the hierarchy of Germany. Whoever wanted to marry needed authorisation from the Duke and/or Markgraf (equivalent to Viscount). The Markgraf was responsible for the area and had the right to sex with the wife on the wedding night. This was called prima nocte. It was the same in England, Scotland and all over Europe at the time.

The history of 'prima nocte', 'jus primae noctis' (law of the first night), or 'droit du seigneur' (lord's right, hunting, taxation, farming and sex with bridal-virgins) is full of denial, like "deflowering a virgin was considered a greater responsibility than a commoner bridegroom could bear . . . reflecting nothing but credit on the ruler . . . so praised for his sheer courage."[4]

The custom was especially popular in France and Italy but when French knights emigrated to England they abandoned prima nocte as the British touted their female farm workers as bigger than they were.

In *Nineteen Eighty-Four*, George Orwell updated prima nocte as "The law by which every capitalist had the right to sleep with any woman working in one of his factories".

> This 'night right' was grabbed randomly by those given the title 'Baron', which all the Rothschilds had, some changing their surnames to Baron de Rothschild. Prima nocte created generations of illegitimate children and illegitimate Rothschild children but the Rothschilds were officially banned from this practice by Mayer Rothschild (d. 19 September 1812).
>
> To compensate for this, the Rothschilds would have illegitimate children while dressed in masks and costumes to hide their identity.

---

[4] Claude Jordan, *Voyages Historiques de L'Europe*, Volume IV, pp. 140–141; Alain Boureau, *The Lord's First Night*; *Encyclopaedia Britannica*, 15th Edition, Volume 10, p. 610.

Due to the commoners' rebellion against prima nocte, it was easy enough to get into the bedrooms of breeding-age girls. Austria and Germany at the time were practising 'windowing', essentially young men climbing up girls' drainpipes and trelliswork in the wee hours to get them pregnant before marriage.

Their fathers didn't entirely object and often viewed the adventurous young men as potential farm help. When she got pregnant, the two would get married. It was a farming-based community and children were needed to help on the family farm. To this day, there is still a strong culture in Germany of marrying the pregnant girl.

> If a girl of breeding age heard someone climbing up the drainpipe, rather than be scared, she would get herself prepared – a quick scrub of the teeth with a badger hair toothbrush followed by a natural sponge. Late summer especially was a time of roving bonking, and often the girls would not limit themselves to one partner, especially those in poverty – and half of the Catholic girls. After all, there was 'the father, the son and the holy ghost' to consider.

In order to simplify matters, the super wealthy Rothschilds had servant girls. Having illegitimate children with servant girls was so common, one of the Rothschilds had twenty and acknowledged them all, eventually living with his mistress and shunning his unresponsive wife – his kissing cousin.

At the beginning of August a lot of the servants were given leave for the hot summer month and temporary replacements would come in. These temps were often chosen with the 31st of August in mind, when the agents of war would be conceived after a month of familiarity between master and servant.

Hitler's grandmother, Maria Anna Schicklgruber, was a none-too-bright Catholic girl who was invited to work at the Rothschilds in Vienna in the summer of 1836.

Her surname 'Schicklgruber' translates as 'Reaper' and refers to the grim reaper, or death. As Mary Anne Reaper, her initials spell MAR, one of the words for 'death', and with her given initials M.A.S., 'MAS MAR' becomes 'mass death'. She was perfect fodder for a staged 'Agent of War' Rothschild terror rape.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 20

The Rothschilds told their servant they were going out and to retire early. Three of the Rothschilds returned quietly around 11.30 pm on 30 August 1836, put on their devil costumes, completed a midnight Golden Dawn coven ritual and began terrorising Maria Anna Schicklgruber in a pressure-cooker scenario. Closing doors, rustling leaves, foot steps running away, all that *Scary Movie* stuff that has been ingrained in us for so long it has now become laughable with over exposure.

> This was designed to create sustained fear, to flood her bloodstream with adrenalin, and to alter her physiological and psychological condition to one of absolute terror.

At 1.30 am the three Rothschilds appeared in her room as three devils. Not only was she financially helpless, but also physically helpless. Her screams were not heard as all the Rothschilds were supposedly out. She was raped, seduced by all three, or about to join the Rothschild family, depending on her perception. Each Rothschild had a three-in-one chance of conceiving a child with her and they took pleasure scaring the living life out of Maria Anna Schicklgruber for a multitude of reasons.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

Totally financially strapped, in a very expensive city, Maria stayed on as a servant, but by late November her pregnancy had become apparent to the rest of the family and she was sent back to her home at House No. 13 in Strones – mission accomplished.

The most likely perpetrators were Salomon Mayer Rothschild (1774–1855); his younger brother, but head of the family, Nathan Meyer, Baron de Rothschild (1777–1836) who officially died five weeks earlier; and his son Lionel Nathan Rothschild (1808–79).

Salomon Mayer Rothschild (1774–1855) ran the S. M. Rothschild and Sons bank in Vienna. He allowed his daughter to marry his brother Karl (14 years younger than himself), who was based in Naples – an uncle marrying a niece.

Salomon was a Freemason and a member of the Illuminati whose leader Adam Weishaupt spent much time deciphering and bringing together all the occult practices.

Since the Rothschilds were synonymous with the Illuminati, they were also synonymous with occult practices. The founder of the Illuminati, Adam Weishaupt created their private occult coven, 'Golden Dawn', specifically for them. These were hard men for whom the saying 'morality is for the masses' was a given. They were the earliest practitioners of the Golden Dawn *Effective* coven.

Nathan Meyer Rothschild (1777–1836) founded N. M. Rothschild and Sons bank in London in 1805, at 2 New Court, St. Swithin's Lane, near the Bank of England and the Stock Exchange. Although the third son, he was the patriarch of his generation after his father's death in 1812. Ten years later he became the Austrian Consul-General in England (1822) but never carried the title of baron presented to him by Austria. His loans to France, Russia, and South America were popular with British investors because they required repayment in sterling.

> At a party at his mansion Nathan Meyer Rothschild said:
> "I care not what puppet is placed upon the throne of England.
> The man that controls Britain's money supply controls the
> British Empire, and I control the British money supply."

Here was a man who could buy the law and for whom morality required a public outcry, which was easily quelled with silence, misinformation and control of the press . . . but it was his son Lionel Nathan Rothschild who actually fathered the child Alois Hitler.

Lionel Nathan Rothschild (1808–79) and his illegitimate son Alois Hitler.

Confusing the Birth Lineage of Historical Catholic Jews

The other possible fathers, all of whom claimed to be Alos' father, were Johann Georg Trummelschlager, Johann Nepomuk Hüttler and his brother Johann Georg Hiedler. But when Hitler's father was baptised 'Alois', in the Döllersheim parish, the space for the father's name was left blank. Perhaps even the mother wasn't sure.

According to Hans Frank, Hitler's personal lawyer,[5] Maria was living and working in the house of Mr Frankenberger when she became pregnant. "The lack of hard evidence, however, makes this thesis appear exceedingly dubious."[6]

From birth to 14, it was Frankenberger (a Jew) who paid money in support of Alois, while steadfastly denying he was the father. It appeared that he was paying child support on behalf of another and another who was most likely to also be a Jew.

> Hans Frank's theory was a ruse to put historians off the scent of the Rothschilds' illegitimate children. Presenting 'ruse histories' was standard practice for the Rothschilds, and since they were history, any big event that occurred was most likely theirs. At any one time there was and always is at least one illegitimate Rothschild playing a major role in history.
>
> Hans Frank later blackmailed Adolf Hitler and survived an SS plot solely due to the protection he engendered with the real knowledge of Adolf Hitler's Jewish Rothschild ancestry.

Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

So was Hitler Jewish? He was at least a quarter Jewish. Did Hitler have any Jewish uncles and aunts? You bet, and they pretty much ran the world. His grandfather was Lionel Nathan Rothschild (1808–1879), his uncle was the First Baron Rothschild (1840–1915) and his cousin was the Second Baron Rothschild (1868–1937) making Hitler something of an uncle to the Third Baron Rothschild (1910–90).

As a result of this, despite the outward chaos, Hitler lived an extremely pre-organised life dominated by occult practices from two generations earlier. Hitler definitely got the money wheels spinning for the Rothschilds and they made a fortune out of WWII alone.

Hitler's father (Alois Hitler) was conceived on the 31st of August 1836 (the same day and time Lady Di was killed in 1997) and was born on 7 June 1837 (madness day, its all 6s and 7s).

> Alois Hitler's conception was a pre-planned satanic sport fuck – a ritualistic rape, a gang-bang designed to 'conceive in fear' and 'conceive fear'.

Adolf Hitler was a quarter Rothschild and a quarter Jew from semi-incestuous Catholic parentage. He was an illegitimate Rothschild bred as an agent of war. He was the Rothschilds' physical enemy and financial ally with unlimited financial and political support.

Adolf Hitler was an illegitimate Rothschild playing the major role in the history of his times. His status was well recognised by the secret society financial elite. As such he was given complete assistance to achieve their goals. In his time, Adolf Hitler was recognised as 'Hitler-Rothschild, the satanic Catholic-Jew'.

Hitler's father Alois was certainly angry enough to be the product of rape and during the 1800s Jews were known to be prolific rooters of their servants. Intelligence Officers with a 'living library' and 'talking dictionary' knowledge of history are certain Hitler was the grandchild of a Rothschild and all the other stories are a ruse. Usually they can be influenced by research, but in this case, "No, Hitler was the grandchild of a Rothschild".

Adolf's Parents

It is common practice for secret societies to choose their days when influencing history. Certainly a rape of a single woman on the last day of summer, on 31 August 1836, who lived at House No. 13, was an ominous day for conceiving the angry grandfather of war. In the secret code of the Golden Dawn coven, dates are written with the numbers reversed, with the 31st written as '13' and the 8 written '∞'. The 31st of August was the day for creating children of war – '13∞'.

Alois left home when he was 13 and worked as a cobbler in Vienna. At 18 he joined the Imperial Customs Service, where his mad bullying presence made him a renowned tax collector and lifetime employee.

---

[5] For his services Hans Frank became the President of the Academy of German Law, leader of the National Lawyers Association, member of the Reichstag, and Governor-General of Poland. During the Nuremberg Trials he was known as 'the Butcher of Poland'.

[6] *Hitler*, p. 15.

In 1864, at the age of 27, he married Anna Glass, the daughter of a workmate. She was unable to have children and died nineteen years later in 1883. The same year he married Franziska Matzelberger and they had two children, Alois junior and Angela. His wife Franziska died of tuberculosis in 1885 within two years of their marriage.

Being the single father of two and having such a bad run with women and reproduction, Alois then employed his niece Klara Põlzl as a housemaid and attempted to marry her. He said she was his cousin, when she was his niece.

Alois and Klara made a plea to the Bishop of Linz on the 27th of October 1884, which read, "They are prevented by the canonical impediment of collateral affinity in the third degree touching the second. They therefore make the humble request that the Most Reverend Episcopate will graciously secure them a dispensation on the following grounds . . . he is a father of two minors, a boy of 2½ years (Alois) and a girl of 1 year and 2 months (Angela) . . . he is a customs official away from home all day and often at night." Klara was described as his "home help [and] a woman without means", meaning she did not have money or prospects enough to marry. She was quite boyish-looking.

The Bishop of Linz cared about incest and refused to marry them, so they appealed to Rome for special dispensation. The Vatican was only concerned about the size of their bribe and soon granted them the right to marry.

Alois and Klara were incestuously married and therefore prone to genetic defects becoming dominant. They had five children together, but only Adolf and his younger sister Paula survived childhood. Gustav and Ida died from diphtheria as children in 1885 and 1886 respectively. Hitler was the *third* child, born in 1889. His brother Edmund was born in 1894 and died in 1896, the same year his sister Paula was born. At the time of Adolf's birth (1889), his father Alois was 51 and his mother Klara was 28. After Alois (b. 1882) and Gustav (d. 1885), Adolf was *the third son*.

It is rumoured that Adolf Hitler was born with only one testicle and another story that it was bitten off while urinating on a goat at Leondig in Linz, creating the Freemasons' favourite limerick. The goat story is

true enough. The person who told it was killed soon after the telling. From eight years old the young Adolf Hitler had only one testicle.

"Hitler had only one big ball.
Rommel had two but they were small.
Himmler was slightly similar,
but poor old Goebbels had no balls at all."

As an adult, Hitler's doctor (Dr Morell 1937–45) treated him with Orchikrin for genital hypoplasia, the excessive smallness of a sexual organ; with Prostakrinum for sex hormone deficiency; and with Testosterone to restore his manliness. Hitler had one small testicle and one small penis. By the age of fifty he was starting to look like a woman.

None of Hitler's doctors saw him naked. The only person to do so was his manservant, Emil Maurice, who spent some time in a prison cell with Dr Morell after the war. Emil Maurice kept dropping hints to Dr Morell that Hitler's sexual organs were not all intact.

Hitler was born in the little village of Branau near the German and Austrian border and remained an Austrian until the 1930s. He considered Linz his hometown and the world considered Bavaria the cradle of Nazism. Even today when someone makes a Jewish joke on the trains, the whole carriage laughs. Like other groupings, the Germanic and the Jewish peoples being the prime example, racial hatred is passed down through the generations. It's in their blood and surpasses all other aspects of culturisation.

Alois senior was mad-looking and 'sanpaku'. This is a severe 'yin' condition in which the lower portion of the whites of the eyes can be seen. This is often a sign of a person who plays a part in history, yet has no control over the part they play, they just have to play it. Lady Diana, Princess of Wales, had the same condition as she set in motion the end of the British Monarchy, having children, who like Hitler, failed their university entrance and paternal examinations.

> Alois was bald, with a handlebar moustache. He was deeply psychotic and obstructive. He was a "hard, conscientious customs official, punctilious to a fault, with a difficult temper that flared with no apparent provocation. Adolf bore the brunt of this".[7]

---

[7] *The Memoirs of Bridget Hitler*, p. 24.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Adolf Hitler's half-brother (from the second of three marriages) was also called Alois. He was 'a ruffian, a thief, and a failure'. His mother had died and his father had married his housemaid and niece – what do you expect. Alois junior left home at 18 in 1900 (when Adolf was 11) and spent some time in jail. This made the young Adolf the oldest surviving sibling in the house. His sister Paula was 4 and their mother was also their second cousin.

As a result of Alois junior's rebellion and marked failures, both Alois senior and Klara placed all their hopes on Adolf who was encouraged in the arts, especially reading and painting: ". . . her favourite, Adolf, whom she kept at home. He hid behind her skirts, never doing a day's work."[8] Hitler was raised as a momma's boy.

Alois senior was a severely borderline personality and strict father who beat Adolf savagely whenever he came home late, which was always, and "Klara was a kind and gentle woman who tended to overcompensate and spoil her son", killing him with kindness. As a result, Hitler loved cops and robbers, was a dreamer, got poor grades, hated maths, and escaped into Wagner's music.

Hitler was an escapist who learnt to love, serve and rely on women, while holding an intense dislike and distrust for male authority figures. These patterns ruled his life and were exacerbated by his inbreeding and the dominant madness that ran through his father's veins.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

Alois Hitler (senior) died from internal chest bleeding (pleural haemorrhage) at the age of 65 (7 June 1837–3 January 1903) when Hitler was 13. His mother Klara Põlzl died of cancer five years later at the age of 47 (12 August 1860–21 December 1907) when Hitler was 18. Adolf never returned home after his mother's funeral.

---

[8] Ibid (Same source as above).

Lionel Nathan Rothschild (left).

Alois Hitler Senior (Adolf's father).

Klara Hitler née Põlzl (below).
(Adolf's mother/second cousin).

Alois Hitler Junior (lower left).
(Adolf's half-brother).

Adolf Hitler (lower right).

"HITLER'S HOME"

Bombed Döllerscheim – where Adolf's father's birth records were kept.

Adolf Hitler in Britain

Adolf was christened Adolfus and called Adi by his family. He had been accustomed to a comparatively easy life, but when his mother died of cancer, he (18) took his sister Paula (11) to Vienna, along with his most cherished possession, a photograph of Klara (his mother and second cousin). "His existence had now become a pitiless struggle against poverty and he swept streets in order to buy food for himself and his sister."[1]

From 1908 to 1921 Adolf never saw his younger sister Paula. He became an art student in Vienna but failed miserably. "At the end of 1910 and the beginning of 1911 Hitler appears to have received a considerable sum of money from his aunt, Johanna Pölzl . . . He drifted aimlessly [yet] still pretended that he was a student painter, or writer."[2]

The money ran out by the time he was 19. He slept on park benches and in doorways, ate in soup kitchens, and stayed in the Asyl für Obdachlose shelter for men until 1910, where he developed an appetite for change. Formerly of the snobbish middle class, he was now a tramp.

Two years and four months later, on 24 May 1913, Hitler left Vienna and moved to Munich.[3] The most authoritative book on Hitler has no knowledge of Hitler's activities during the two years and four months from January 1911 to 24 May 1913.

Meanwhile, Alois Hitler (27), Adolf's half-brother, became a waiter in the Shelbourne Hotel in Dublin where he met Brigid Elisabeth Dowling (17, b. 3 July 1891) in the first half of 1909 (her first ever date) and they eloped from Ireland to Liverpool, evading her father William Dowling. She became a Liverpudlian hairdresser and they married and had a child, William Patrick Hitler, on 12 March 1911.

Intelligentsia in doss-houses were the perfect feeding ground for the foreign secret service who are always in search of disaffected nationals prepared to destroy their own society in order to make change. The intelligence community still meet in the boarding houses of old men today. It is good cover and anything overheard is either quickly forgotten, misinterpreted or simply disbelieved and followed up with more medication.

---

[1] *Prelude to Terror*.

[2] The very authoritative *Hitler*, p. 57.

[3] *Hitler*, p. 57.

Officially Hitler stayed in Vienna for the next three years (1910–13) and painted well-known Viennese buildings where he referred to himself as an 'intellectual' rather than a 'transient'. He is also credited with an incredibly elaborate mother-and-child in a landscape which would have taken months to complete. This oil on canvas ("Mother Mary with the Holy Child Jesus Christ", dated 1913) was in a completely different style and medium. It comes complete with right-angle tear as is common amongst works of forged authenticity.

This forgery has been continued on to this day and in July 2006: "Twenty-one watercolours and sketches thought to be by Adolf Hitler are to be sold in Britain in September. The collection was apparently produced between 1916 and 1918. Jefferys in Lostwithiel, southwest England, will auction the collection which is expected to fetch up to $9107."[4]

The 1910–13 paintings were sold by his friend Hanisch (registered in the men's shelter at MA12, Haus Meldemannstrasse as 'Fritz Walter') until August 1910 and then by Neumann (a Jew) for a short period (whom Hitler sued), after which Hitler sold the paintings himself. Hitler believed that his failure in the Viennese art world was due to its Jewish control. When Hitler's inheritance came through, he neither painted nor sold his paintings.

Bridget Hitler née
Brigid Elisabeth Dowling.

However, Brigid Hitler's *My Brother in Law Hitler* says otherwise.[5] When William Patrick was 1, Brigid met Adolf Hitler at the Lime Street Train Station in Liverpool in November 1912. "He was a shabby youth who always wore a trilby hat . . . came and stayed with us at Upper Stanhow Street [102 Upper Stanhope Street, Princess Road, Toxteth, Liverpool] for *two months* . . . was a damned nuisance, slept all the time, but was very nice to the baby."

Adolf was a snob and spent his days walking up and down the Mersey. At that time there was a strong German community in Liverpool, running bars, cafés and restaurants. Adolf spent six months on and off with Alois and Brigid during which time Alois and Adolf spent a lot of time travelling around England. The whereabouts of Adolf Hitler during the preceding twenty-two months (January 1911 to November 1912) are something of a mystery. He was 21 to 23 years old at the time.

---

[4] *New Zealand Weekend Herald*, 29 July 2006, B11.

[5] She used 'Bridget Hitler' as her author name.

treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

This is supposedly the missing year in Hitler's life. Hitler wrote of his own history in *Mein Kampf* stating that from September 1908 he was living in various doss-houses in Vienna amongst tramps and homeless people. He describes this as the lowest point in his life. However, "The only witnesses were fellow tramps and their memories were unreliable and incomplete. The eyewitness accounts of Hitler in Vienna are dubious."[6] In *Mein Kampf* he states that in 1912 he was a failed art student living in Vienna.

On 24 May 1913, Hitler left Vienna and moved to Munich.[7] The most authoritative book on Hitler, all 844 pages, 681 footnotes and 13 pages of bibliography has no knowledge or photographs of Hitler from January 1911 to May 1913.

> The truth of the period January 1911 to 24 May 1913, was that Hitler spent 1911 working through his inheritance. He then spent nine months (February to November 1912) training in the British Military 'Psych-Ops War School' at Tavistock in England and Ireland. The six months after this (November 1912 to May 1913) Hitler spent in Liverpool with his half-brother and sister-in-law recuperating and studying his Psych-Ops pamphlets with 'tourist' trips to London and British ports.

Adolf Hitler was trained as a British agent, became a German agent, then a British double agent, and then the German Reichchancellor (Prime Minister) as a warring British double agent. His Jewish grandfather of the banking Rothschild family made huge profit from this – or more accurately, his descendants, Hitler's Jewish cousins.

Hitler evaded military service in Austria. "In order to evade capture he registered at the Vienna municipal lodging [a house for homeless men] in 1909 (aged 20) under the name of his younger brother Edmund who was born five years after Adolf and died at the age of two. By using Edmund's birth certificate Adolf managed to identify himself as his younger and dead brother. He dodged military service by living under the name Edmund Hitler, while the Viennese police searched high and low for Adolf Hitler."[8]

---

[6] *Prelude to Terror.*

[7] *Hitler*, p. 57.

Spymaster: "The German Police finally captured Adolf Hitler in Munich, after his return from Britain, and charged him with draft-dodging. He evaded military service by producing medical certificates to the effect that he was malnourished and ill. Ironically, when war came, he volunteered. British Intelligence did not interfere with this because they always had a seconder. If Hitler failed there would be another and war experience was necessary for Hitler's record.

"British Intelligence did rescue Hitler on two occasions during WWI.

"During his period in Britain, Hitler was trained as a public speaker. They taught him to gesture with his hands to emphasise points. He then developed his own style which was non-Germanic and incredibly effective. MI-6 also used an elocution teacher from Dublin's Trinity College to give him voice lessons and teach him how to raise and lower his voice for emphasis.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

"Much of an agent's training is along sexual lines. Agents are given drugs, alcohol, subjected to hypnotism, given access to other agents, and the instructors step out and watch what develops. Adolf gave indications of bisexuality, which is not unusual in an MI-6 training setting, and later went on to develop more complicated perversions that sickened many of the other would-be agents – notably coprophilia. The more extreme his sexual perversions, the more easily manipulated he was and the Mandarins of Whitehall were delighted with his progress. Some predicted the sky was the limit for Hitler.

"'All he lacks is experience' ran one of his confidential evaluations of 1912. The MI-6 overlords decided to return him to Germany in time to see that he would get all the experience he needed in the new grande coup, WWI, which was to open to packed houses just in time for the post-harvest festivities in Germany (1914).

"Unfortunately it came early. As Robbie Burns once put it: 'The best laid plans of mice and men gang aft aglae' – Gaelic for 'fuck up'."[9]

---

[8] *The Memoirs of Bridget Hitler*, p. 27–8.

[9] Hitler's visit to England is also described in Beryl Bainbridge's *Young Adolf.*

Alien regulations for entry into Britain prior to 1914 virtually did not exist. Even the Home Office officials agree that the 1905 Act would have been easily contravened. This is the only period in Hitler's life when he was not photographed by the bulky camera. The lack of certainty in the official stories was enough to cover for him. He had either an alibi or a doppelgänger painting romantic city scenes for him in Vienna. By the 1930s there were at least five Hitler lookalikes working for the Third Reich.[10]

Hitler's half-brother Alois Hitler: "Don't be ridiculous. Artist! He is nothing but a cheap dauber. They wouldn't even accept him as a student in the Kunstakademie. And what kind of an artist is a man who copies pictures and signs them with his own name."[11]

Hitler's lost two years and four months run from January 1911 to 24 May 1913.

1. Hitler spent 1911 working through his inheritance in the Vienna doss-houses.
2. From February to November 1912 he spent nine months training in the England's Tavistock Psych-Ops War School and another Psych-Ops War School Ireland.
3. From November 1912 to April 1913 he was based in Liverpool with his half-brother. From here he viewed strategic British structures including the Tower Bridge, ships and ports, as did many German tourist spies at that time.
4. In April 1913 Adolf Hitler went to Vienna.
5. On 24 May 1913 Hitler moved to Munich.

Hitler's Double Agent Training

At Tavistock, and in an unnamed Irish 'Psych-Ops War School' which closed down after WWII, Hitler learnt the following: "Once a speaker has mastered the psychological principles of mass persuasion, he can convince the masses of anything he likes. 'Nothing is so absurd that it will not be believed if it is presented with enough conviction'."

He would [later] write, unconsciously echoing a saying of Marcus Tullius Cicero's centuries before, 'Nothing is so difficult to believe that oratory cannot make it acceptable . . .'

---

[10] *Hitler's Maid.*

[11] *The Memoirs of Bridget Hitler*, p. 27.

"Hitler followed what he called 'the very sound principle' that a big lie is always more credible than a little one. In 'the primitive simplicity of their souls', he said, people are more easily victimised by the big lie 'since they themselves lie in small matters, but would be ashamed to lie on too big a scale'. They cannot conceive that anyone would venture a truly monstrous falsehood, and will therefore be inclined to believe that there must be some truth in such a statement. Thus, said Hitler, 'something of even the most shameless prevarication will find lodging, and stick . . .'"[12]

> Even Bonaparte's brother was trained by the British military schools. (All the brothers were Freemasons.) His grandfather John Bone was a Scotsman who fled Scotland after a failed revolt in 1746. The name Buonaparte (Bonaparte) comes from 'Bone parte' – the Bone party. The British claimed that their training camps kicked off the British and American revolutions. With their proven record, they were also used to kick off WWI and WWII, both being British Freemason wars designed to capture France and destroy Germany. Both wars heavily advantaged secret societies and paedophiles. Radical doubt was also cast on the American Revolution because of the 'Founding Fathers'' involvement in Freemasonry crime and war creation.

Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

When Alois Hitler sent a letter and travel expenses inviting his sister and brother-in-law to visit, the British intercepted the mail and used it as the out for Hitler. It was also to be his first post-training kill. His British trainers then altered history to show that Leo Raubal died in either 1910 or 1911 and Bridget Hitler's memoirs of Leo Raubal and Angela Hitler née Raubal being invited to England in 1912 couldn't possibly be true. Such is the way history is manipulated. In intelligence it is more than commonplace, it is common practise.

To kick off this cover-up Brigid Hitler's house was destroyed by the last stick of bombs on Liverpool in 1918. The enemy aircraft were never sighted. What was sighted on the day were British aircraft.

Alois and Bridget Hitler were expecting to see Leo Raubal and Angela Hitler née Raubal at the Lime Street Station in November 1912. Instead they were met by Adolf Hitler. This gave Hitler a place for R & R

---

[12] *Mein Kampf*, cited in *Prelude to Terror*, p. 251.

with relatives while recuperating in the safety of British territory and under British monitoring.

As a Catholic, Angela Hitler née Raubal would just as likely say that her husband was dead if he was an embarrassment, had cheated on her, left her for another, or was in a bigamous marriage. "He [Leo Raubal] spent his time in the pub, drank and smoked, gambled his money away, and on top of that he was a civil servant."[13]

In May 1914, Alois Hitler was so keen to leave Bridget he faked his own death and then remarried.

The Memoirs of Bridget Hitler was written in America during WWII and was known to American Intelligence. It was first leaked to historians in the early 1970s amongst a collection of papers from the late Dr Edmund Pauker who was a European-born theatrical agent. They were first published in 1979. The manuscript ends with a comma in 1937.

In all the documents searched there is no mention of the cause of Leo Raubal's death. Jennifer Roseberg (Jewish) mentions on her website that Leo Raubal was born on 11 June 1879 and died on 10 August 1910 with the overriding note: "My fellow researchers disagree with the dates".

Other sources say Leo was born on 11 June 1879 or in 1880, married Angela Hitler (20) on 14 September 1902 or the same day in 1903 and died aged 31, on 10 August 1910 or 1911 and had a son of the same name whose death date is also confused between 1942 and 1979.

After this, Angela Raubal (28 July 1883–30 October 1949) is supposed to have remarried an architect in Dresden (*The Young Hitler I Knew*) or moved to Vienna after 1918 (*Office of Strategic Services Profile*), from where she and her daughter Geli moved to Obersalzberg and later Berchtesgaden where she was her half-brother's housekeeper from 1925. His name was Adolf Hitler.

Other histories show that Hitler kicked Angela Raubal out of Berchtesgaden in 1936 and she moved to Dresden and married Professor Hamitsch who was killed in WWII during a Russian offensive.

Because Adolf Hitler was a double agent historical figure, his family history was purposefully confused. Like many political figures, Adolf Hitler was killing his way to the top.

---

[13] *The Young Hitler I Knew*, 1954.

"Hitler asked his widowed half-sister, Angela Raubal, to be his housekeeper. She was accompanied by her seventeen-year-old daughter Geli [4 January 1908–18 September 1931]."[14]

There is also no history of what Leo Raubal died from, whether he was killed from gambling debts, alcohol or cheated on his wife and was 'dead to her' as was the Catholic way amongst stoic cuckolded hens. Such confusion around Leo Raubal amounts to a cover-up.

It is tradition amongst those trained at Tavistock to do a kill during or soon after getting out, and to kill someone close. This shows their minders that they are prepared to go to any lengths to achieve their minders political goals.

Since Adolf 'Edmund' Hitler left Tavistock in late 1912, turning up in Liverpool in November 1912 in place of Leo and Angela Raubal and since Leo's birth, marriage and death dates are confused, it is quite possible that Leo Raubal was Hitler's first kill. His Jewish name and marriage to his half-sister was enough motivation. The dates were confused to protect Adolf Hitler's hand and also to discredit *The Memoirs of Bridget Hitler*.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Leo and Angela Raubal's meeting with Alois and Brigid Hitler at Liverpool was quite openly planned in November 1912. Their 'no show' meant that Angela had to fall back on excuses. Angela was proud, and Leo's gambling, alcoholism and womanising was enough to convince the public.

As far as Angela was concerned, her husband Leo may have simply gone missing and her pride took over. Her pride became Adolf's alibi. Miraculously Adolf took Leo and Angela's place in Liverpool and as it turned out, he was to kill another Raubal two decades later. Angela Hitler née Raubal was to remained silent about this as well.

The first interview with Paula Hitler (Hitler's sister, Angela's half-sister) dated 12 July 1945 by U.S. Army 101st Airborne was produced on a low-quality typewriter with many lines out of alignment and variable print quality (old ribbon). It makes no mention of Leo Raubal.

Paula was asked to bring all of her possessions to this interview which were carried in trunks, chests and boxes in a truck the following day. Everything was stolen except for the overnight bag she had carried with her. Thus all her hardcopy relationship with her brother Adolf were removed from public analysis on 13 July 1945.

The second interview with Paula Hitler was on 5 June 1946 and is recorded by Records of Army Staff (G2). Record Group 319 IRR XE575580 mentions Leo Raubal as having died in 1910. According to Paula Hitler, her half-sister Angela Hitler [1883–1949] married the Austrian Revenue Officer Leo Raubal in 1903 and he died in 1910.

Much of the content of this second interview is suspect. It ends with 600 words of pro-Allied propaganda from the interviewer ". . . get her away from publicity". The original German record is not available and the English version consists of barely legible handwriting with the dates Anglicised.

Both interviews show interference and wishful thinking on the part of the interviewer. No Allied Powers wanted it known that Hitler was in Britain and wished to discredit all affidavits and memoirs that supported this.

> When there is intergenerational confusion there are often larger powers at work manipulating history.

When engineering history, witnesses are regularly intimidated and taken back to 'zero'. The essential elements of Paula Hitler's files were confused or removed. She was intimidated and left in poverty – 'zero possession'. The only thing left was her life – so what does the truth matter?

> In this way, crucial links in history are usually constructed of propaganda attached to slim slivers of truth. As usual, the only clear answer is that the winner of the war gets to tell their story first and it usually takes up the first four layers of truth. Beyond that, it's dogged research and experience that counts.

Adolf's Deconstruction

Bridget Hitler: "Looking back now, it would be very satisfying to say that my Irish second sight, or even my woman's intuition had helped me recognise unusual qualities which might explain why the young man [Adolf Hitler] we met would become one of the most notorious figures in history, but there was certainly nothing about the *pale, unsteady-eyed youth who began agitatedly whispering* to Alois that distinguished him from thousands of others.

---

[14] *Hitler*, p. 236.

"*One would have expected that for such a long journey he would have come fairly well-dressed . . . wearing such a worn-out suit . . .* Adolf *was completely exhausted. His pallor and lassitude were so pronounced that I feared he was ill, and immediately after dinner he retired.*

"My brother in law Adolf remained with us from November 1912 until April 1913, and a *less interesting* or prepossessing house guest I cannot imagine. At first *he remained in his room, sleeping* or lying on the sofa he used as a *bed most of the time*. I had an idea he was ill, *his colour was so bad and his eyes were so peculiar*. I felt rather sorry for him . . . *unappreciative and difficult*. Adolf *took everything we did for granted* and I'm sure would have remained indefinitely if he had had the slightest encouragement.

"I found him only *weak and spineless* . . . Usually he wouldn't say much, but just sit. Sometimes he would *speak of the future*.

"*They were always as much alike as two peas in a pod*. Alois had *maps of every country and was always studying them*. When Adolf was with us I had to go through the same thing all over again. He would *spread them out on tables, or even on the floor, and pore over them for hours*, and he would never hesitate to interrupt my housework to *explain how Germany was going to take its rightful position in the world. First would come France, then England*. Naturally I didn't find this kind of talk very interesting, but *whenever I tried to get away he would begin to shout*, although I rarely troubled to contradict him. I put it down *partly to the pleasure he took in hearing his own voice* – another trick he had in common with my husband.

"As a matter of fact, I didn't pay a great deal of attention to his ravings . . . Once I couldn't stand Adolf for another minute and burst out: 'You have a fine nerve coming here as you have and saying such things. You will never see the day England will be destroyed by Germany. If it ever comes to a fight, it's just as likely that the opposite will happen. Anyway, why do you take such an interest? You and all of us too are Austrians, not Germans.'

"[Hitler] *stared at me as though I had struck him in the face*. For a while he had nothing to say, but *his bewilderment soon passed off*, to be displaced by what I can only describe as *a kind of sly pleasure in the fact that he had made a Britisher lose her temper*.

"When Alois had time, he took off – to London. *Adolf was enchanted by Tower Bridge*, and they bribed their way into the engine room to see the immense machinery in motion. Alois had a regular passion for machinery and was pleased to have a companion on his jaunts. *He showed Adolf power plants, dynamos, river cranes and the inside of ships*. When they came home there would be endless discussions of what they had seen.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

"They both *had an intense interest in anything English and were always sightseeing* . . . they were the forerunners of the tourists who later streamed out of Nazi Germany in all directions and brought home *the odd bits of information which, patched together, formed a complete pattern*.

"As soon as Adolf knew his way around he *began disappearing by himself*, not returning until late in the evening. *Adolf was always reading – not books, little pamphlets printed in German. These were Adolf's books. I didn't know what was in them, nor exactly where they came from, so I presume he must have got them from the Germans he met around the city*."[15]

Secret Service: "These were 'briefing documents' from Tavistock . . . everything Hitler looked like and did, all his physiological symptoms, outward appearance and actions showed him to be integrating after deconstruction. The practice of deconstructing foreign politicians has been developing over the past five hundred years and has become the favourite way of taking over countries."

When Hitler arrived, he was dressed for a short trip, not a long trip. He had come from Tavistock, not Vienna. Everyone from Vienna was in their Sunday best whereas Hitler was dishevelled as though he had been living in the same clothes for the previous nine months – which he had.

Hitler whispered in an agitated manner and was completely exhausted. He had a pale and sickly skin colour. He was weary, looked ill, had unsteady and peculiar eyes – all symptoms of deconstruction.

> Essentially Hitler had just had his first twenty years of ideology removed and replaced with that of the warring secret societies, the Freemasons and the Illuminati. When reintegrating after deconstruction it is not uncommon for the eyes to change colour, even from blue to brown and back again.

---

[15] *The Memoirs of Bridget Hitler*, pp. 22, 24, 29, 30, 32, 35. Author's emphasis.

After dinner Hitler retired immediately to his room, spent his days sleeping on the sofa and was in bed most of the time. Deconstructed people need to sleep a lot to reset their subconscious – essentially to dream the new future they have been set to achieve. Sometimes they sleep right through the day and the following night.

Adolf Hitler remained disinterested, unappreciative and difficult. He was completely impractical, weak and spineless and took everything his hosts did for granted. He was the ideological boss and all others were servants to be humbled.

He was egocentric and singularly concerned with bringing his own remote goals into the present, drawing them ever closer. This took all his willpower and left him practically useless to the world. He became immersed in his own future and evaded his present condition, which he did his best to deny. He became heavily self-involved in his new impregnated heroic self-image.

Adolf studied maps of every country, spread on the table and on the floor. He would speak of the future, but not of the present. He revealed his programming and the future by explaining how Germany was going to take its rightful position in the world, first taking over France and then England. He did this and said all of this in 1913 and it was all very predictive. He was not a 'lone wolf' but someone who was heavily backed and trained in creating a definitively circumscribed future.

> Deconstruction is a very powerful tool. To alter someone's subconscious is to set their life on a completely different track, and so it was with Adolf Hitler.
>
> To deconstruct someone according to the ideology of another nation is to have them in complete service of that nation. Their outward thoughts and actions may be nationalistic, but their final results are always for the benefit of the country that supplied the deconstruction.
>
> Whenever anyone ignored Hitler, he would shout his message at them. He took pleasure in hearing his own voice as his own voice had been used to access his subconscious during deconstruction. So whenever Hitler spoke, he believed what he was saying.

During typical deconstruction a voice recording, or pulse thereof, is placed on the temples, while other music is played in the background. In Hitler's case it was most likely his political and musical idol Wagner, who he had studied since childhood. (Hitler learnt piano.) The music distracts the conscious and unconscious minds, letting the message sink straight into the subconscious with the same amount of pleasure that the music brings. When the music is played again it brings forth the implanted message by association. This music is called an 'anchor'.

When challenged, Hitler reacted as though he had been physically assaulted and then took pleasure in humbling anything British – his new subconscious enemy. The ideas he had learnt had been fully absorbed and he had a very physical reaction to any threat of mission failure.

Hitler sought out British sites of interest for destruction later, including Tower Bridge, power plants, dynamos, river cranes and the inside of ships. He began disappearing by himself, not returning until late in the evening. With his half-brother Alois, he was a spy tourist for four months gathering whatever patchy information they could to form a complete picture.

They had endless debriefings and Alois, his half-brother, was Hitler's seconder. If Adolf Hitler failed, Alois Hitler was to take his place. But Adolf didn't fail. From the war-makers point of view, he was a huge success.

Although Alois trained before him, he did not have the common look that Adolf had. Alois was endlessly prone to getting attached whereas Adolf wasn't. Alois was a heterosexual sex addict, whereas Adolf was a sexually bent loner. Adolf was a coprophiliac which made him easily controlled and all the more useful.

> According to the British, Hitler was a near-perfect puppet of war and the proof is in the pudding. Adolf was always reading Psych-Ops training material in German (the language of his subconscious). He kept this material to himself and pored over it endlessly. He was becoming what the British wanted – a perfect weapon of war, a German nationalist, a socialist – a Nazi.

When Dr Morell, Hitler's doctor from 1937, first examined Hitler he noted that "His psychic state was very complex".

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Hitler in WWI – the Freemasons' Great War

War was expected. British Military Intelligence Officers expected war in late 1914 after the harvest, but it came early prior to the harvest.

Archduke Franz Ferdinand of Austria was killed by a Bosnian Serb nationalist in Sarajevo on 28 June 1914 and this resulted in Austria declaring war on Serbia. The assassin himself said that the War had been planned for over a year. It was widely believed amongst German Intelligence Officers that the British controlled Serbian Intelligence – the Black Hand – and supplied the guns, explosives, money and anything else they needed. So much for the British explanation that World War I began by accident.

WWI resulted in the collapse of the German, Austro-Hungarian, Russian and Ottoman empires with 10 million dead and another 50 million dying in the final few months from the Spanish Flu. The British Empire remained intact. The British planned the Great War, which was later known as WWI. At the time there was little that happened that the British did not plan.

War broke out 20 months after Hitler finished his British Psych-Ops training and a year after he left England. In WWI, Hitler was a Private First Class in the Bavarian Regiment acting as a runner on the Western Front – a position often taken up by double agents. At one time, Winston Churchill (43) was fighting within 2 km of Hitler (28). Both had volunteered, and since both were protected Psych-Ops trained British agents, they may well have met under protected circumstances. Certainly they were both protected from death by Intelligence.

Secret Service: "On 20 November 1917, at Cambrai, in Northern France, 150 km from the English Channel and 50 km from Belgium, Hitler was captured in the trenches along with other Germans. The British troops, part of the Royal Green Jacket Regiment, were on orders to take no prisoners and they began slaughtering. Hitler was about to be terminated when a British Intelligence Officer ran up and said, 'Oh no, not that man', and Hitler was allowed to return to his own lines.

"Twice during WWI Hitler was saved on orders of a British Intelligence Officer. At the time of the unnecessary, unwarranted and humiliating German surrender, Hitler was lying in hospital temporarily blinded by gas (11 November 1918).

"[Twenty-one years later], in September 1938, when the British Prime Minister, Neville Chamberlain (69) met with Hitler (49) in Munich, he came back with two pieces of paper. One said "Peace for our Time" and Hitler had signed it, and the other was a letter addressed to the Lance Corporal of the Green Jacket Regiment thanking him for saving his life. The letter named the Lance Corporal.

"I sighted the letter at the Green Jacket Regiment Officer's mess in 1974 in the City of Winchester in Hampshire, 40km south-west of central London. The City of Winchester is the old capital of England (1000AD). It is a cathedral city and the centuries-old home of the Royal Green Jacket Brigade. When I went back to see the letter much later, it had gone missing."

The Aldershot military training centre is 30 minutes' drive north-east of Winchester on the way to London. Winchester was not bombed much at all during WWII.

Spymaster: "The Lance Corporal in the Royal Green Jacket Regiment who saved Hitler's life at Cambrai ended up in the Liverpool Police. He spent the first six months of the WWII blitz wandering around Liverpool saying, 'To think I could have stopped this' until Special Branch paid him a visit and told him to 'Shut the fuck up'."

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Hitler – the British Under Cover Agent

In 1911, Hitler steadfastly opposed joining the Austrian Army and claimed to be an invalid, but after being prosecuted in 1913, he rushed to volunteer in 1914. In late 1918, Hitler was assigned to intelligence duties. He became something of an agent provocateur talking revolution in barracks and then identifying those who agreed with him.

Hitler, like other deconstructed personalities, was bisexual, bordering on paedophilic. His controller, Captain Roehm, was the same. In 1919, Hitler went on to more sophisticated duties as a plain clothed undercover for Army Intelligence. While under Roehm, Hitler discovered the printing presses of the Volkischer Beobachter were for sale.

He rushed straight back to his boss Captain Roehm to tell him that he must buy the press, but Roehm was away on a boy-rooting expedition and, rather than wait, he took the unprecedented step of ringing 'God'. He put in a collect call through to Colonel General von Seeckt, the Chief of the Reichswehr, telling him about this unbelievable bargain. Colonel General von Seeckt said the price seemed reasonable, but he lacked the funds, so he offered to ring the 'cousins'. The 'cousins' were the British and the next day Corporal Hitler got his newspaper. The German High Command had bought the people's printing press for Hitler with British financing.

Hitler and the German High Command had undeniable links to Britain and they had been in bed together before, during and after WWI . . . and as it turned out, during WWII as well.

Hitler loved the British and repaid the favour by letting the British and French Expeditionary Forces escape from Dunkirk (26–28 May 1940).

> "The Führer's decision to halt the Panzers on the Aa Canal in Belgium allowed the remnants of the British Expeditionary Force to escape from Dunkirk."[16]
> "225,000 British and 110,000 French troops were evacuated from the French port of Dunkirk on the English Channel between 27 May and 2 June 1940."[17]

Likewise, when Britain installed easy targets like the groups of four tall radar towers which allowed the British to spot German planes at night (well before they arrived), Hitler never targeted them. Hermann Goering, the head of the Luftwaffe prevented their bombing and even the British covered for him, blaming this on a German misinterpretation of what Goering said.

Part of the agreed object of the war was to inform each other of their positions and intentions and the radar, although primitive, did this automatically. WWII was a war that developed all forms of communication including spies, double agents, radar, radio, codes and shared inventions. (See *Information and Inventions, Appendix 1*)

> This showed complete British control over Hitler and WWII. The deaths of 335,000 fighting soldiers would certainly have ended the war after only nine months (June 1940), with Germany winning and taking over England, but it was far too soon to end the war. The social structure of the new world was not yet in place and all the profits were yet to be made.

Secret Service: "Britain started to organise WWII in 1919, before all the chickens came home to roost. Britain knew Germany would rise from the ashes and they ran Hitler as their agent, ensuring that Germany had a leader who was their puppet. War machines need war and the

---

[16] *To Catch a King*, p. 51.
[17] *The Oxford English Reference Dictionary*.

treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

funded, trained, and supported double agents to be their patsies, their puppets and their puppet enemy."

Germany Between the Wars

From 1919–29, Berlin was the most sexually explicit city in the world. "Transvestites were having sex with men dressed as women in the Mikado Café and the patrons were joining in, creating orgies for spectators and participants. There were clubs for sadists, exhibitionists, and masochists. Naked dancing at 'The White Mouse Club' became the vogue . . . women could choose between male and female prostitutes . . . Hawkers offered porn, dope, and snow (cocaine) . . . wife swapping was prevalent in high society and lesbianism was acknowledged as a contributing cause of the skyrocketing divorce statistics [just as it is in America today] . . . Little girls of ten and eleven, rouged, and wearing short baby dresses, promenaded the gully from midnight to dawn in competition with lush blondes swathed in furs."[18] Black jazz musicians proliferated on the banjo and saxophone, and everybody shimmied.

Right through Germany, nudism became a form of protest. It was not uncommon for people to walk up and down the streets naked, protesting against the deathly 1914–18 war and partly against the ridiculous ruling class. There were no controls on Berlin's lifestyle and no thought of its effects. Even when Berlin was in battle, it was a parade that never stopped.

When Hitler arrived, Berlin was considered the most sexually explicit city in the world where the universal dance was shaking off the shackles of war. Hitler denounced moral laxity and attacked "the universal madness for pleasure".

Even the 'Hangman' Reinhard Heydrich (1904–42), Director-General of the SS and the SD, the secret department and inner sanctum of the SS, said of Berlin: "You have no idea what this town was like. There was the *Ring Club* which only allowed membership to those who'd served at least three years in jail. *The Silhouette*, the *Always Faithful* and the *Paradise* which was filled with the most glorious transvestites in gorgeous dresses, with high heels and lipstick."[19] Transvestites are partly a product of the pressures of war, as is appreciating them.

In the 1919 play, *Vatemord*, Arnolt Bronnen exposed the break in the family between the father's and the son's generations. In very graphic detail, the play showed the son rebuking his father, having sex with another man, and then incest with his mother. The graphically intense play provided an impetus for sexual stability and Hitler climbed onto the bandwagon of 'sexual conservatism'.

---

[18] *Prelude to Terror*, p. 234.
[19] *To Catch a King*, p. 52.

Spymaster: "I ran a ring of spies in Berlin and I had one who was some kind of drug addict, morphine I think. I would receive messages from his friends asking me to pick him up from different addresses in Berlin. Some of them were rich, some of them were seedy tenements in Moabit. One I remember was a room in a block of flats given over mainly to prostitutes. His companions of the evening were two men both heavily rouged. One had been completely run through with a 1907 Lee Enfield bayonet. My agent came when called and said on the way out, 'I suppose you think I'm a queer?'

I replied in the affirmative.

"'No I'm not,' he said. 'They both had tits.'

"'Well that's just wonderful,' and no more was said."

Berlin was in its "delirium of desperation" and being run by a group of ridiculous soap queens. A homosexual clique hung around the Kaiser, the world's most ridiculous man, with his pudding-bowl helmet, complete with protruding wooden spoon. A sausage dog followed in the same outfit, but in miniature.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Just prior to the outbreak of WWI, one of the German Chiefs of General Staff suffered a fatal heart attack in the Kaiser's presence while dressed as a woman. Ernst Toller, a left-wing poet, became a general, later committing suicide in New York, and Kurt Eisner was a drama critic who later became the Prime Minister. He opened all political meetings with an orchestra. Germany was run by the grandiose and the camp.

This was Hitler's political competition. They were a basket case, but so was Berlin, Germany, and much of Hitler's history. As soon as the Germans had paid their WWI war debt, the Americans changed the standard from silver to gold thus recreating Germany's war debt from scratch. In 1923 the currency devalued radically and the German paper mark devalued 4 million million to the gold mark with one loaf of bread costing 1 billion marks. It was inevitable that things would go from loose to civil war.

Germany in the 1920s was in a state of meltdown. The only fibre in the entire country was the Freikorps (the Freedom Corps) who were controlled by the Officer Korps. These bands of freewheeling ex-soldiers were not short of ammunition or weapons. They murdered communists and unionists and anyone else deemed to be an enemy of Germany.

Reich means "Kingdom, Realm or State" and the Third Reich was a fiction established by assuming history. The Nazis' assumed the First Reich was the Holy Roman Empire (962–1806), the Second Reich was the German Empire (1871–1918) and the Third Reich was the Nazi Regime (1933–1945).

The Germans had a mania for secreting away military weapons as a reaction to the 1919 Treaty of Versailles. Rather than create peace, the Treaty of Versailles led to the planning for WWII. For over two decades British Intelligence HQ routinely ignored the warnings of their British Officers stationed in Germany.

Hitler retained the explicit sexuality of the Germans although in a more public form. As the soldiers marched under the Brandenburg Gate with shovels instead of rifles over their shoulders, women on top of the gate in short shorts did aerobics bending over backwards, which was quite explicit. Initially the soldiers marched with shovels as the rifles were all buried in parks and under schools and warehouses. Armaments were not allowed under the useless Treaty of Versailles, so armaments were hidden.

Spymaster: "I ploughed through a file of these reports emanating from Germany between the wars. They contain cogent accounts by experienced Intelligence Officers who noticed all manner of military preparations within the Reichswehr. One of the most astute copied notices from barracks noticeboards. Another reported violations connected with arms in clear violation of the Treaty of Versailles. All were ignored by Whitehall who took the attitude, 'They're only Germans and Germans will be Germans'. This was before Hitler came to power. Now we know why – WWII was being created."

Commander William Guy Carr R.C.N.: "Under the terms of the Treaty of Versailles in 1919 the international bankers obtained control over Germany's military rearmament and her economic recovery. This accomplished, they entered into the *Abmachungen* (agreements) with the German High Command. They agreed to have the Soviets secretly supply the German generals with all the arms and munitions they required for a modern-day army of several million. They also undertook to have the Soviet dictator place complete training facilities at the disposal of the Germans to enable them to train the number of commissioned and non-commissioned officers they would require to officer the new army they planned to bring into being when they considered the time was ripe.

"The vast building projects required to put the terms of the *Abmachungen* into effect were financed by the international bankers. They thus enabled both the Communist and the Fascist countries to build up their economy and war potentials. The international bankers enabled the German High Command to evade all the military restrictions placed upon them by the Treaty of Versailles.

"The vast Krupp Munitions and Armaments Plants built in the Soviets behind the Ural Mountains were named 'Manych'. The German armament firms were granted every concession they asked for. International intrigue on such a lavish scale could only mean one thing. Those involved were preparing for World War II. The governments of the so-called Allied nations were kept fully informed regarding what was going on behind the scenes, as I found out when I visited London during the conference on naval disarmament in 1930 . . . Disraeli spoke the truth when he said, 'The governments elected do not govern' . . . From 1920 to 1934 . . . the leaders of . . . Communism in Russia were working hand in glove with the leaders of . . . Naziism in Germany."[20]

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March

Germany had a history of rebuilding and rearming itself after the days of Frederick the Great. It was essential not to lose the key components of your strength. If you lose the war, it is essential that you preserve the skeleton of your army (the officers and the NCO corps – non-commissioned officers) and to save your arms and munitions industries. Prussia did this in 1806 and came back to help destroy Napoleon only a few years later. Napoleon believed he had destroyed Prussia at the Battle of Auerstadt and Jena but the Prussians drafted an army of 10-and 11-year-old children and trained them to fight, making musket changes so they were child-friendly.

German women were furnished with medals for producing children and mothers received Motherhood Crosses in bronze, silver and gold for the size of their brood. This reached the ultimate perversion under the Nazi's breeding programme.

After WWI, Germany saved its strength by digging obsolete guns out of parks and assembling inferior weapons. This was also done with aircraft. The Germans even exported Fokker D7 fighters to Norway but were caught and the fighters with Norwegian markings were photographed being broken up. The Germans were full of schemes promoting their war effort and if one scheme came unstuck there were several more to take its place. This subterfuge was spotted by veteran Allied officers but their warnings were ignored.

Germany sent most of its latest manufacturing plant to Switzerland, Holland, Scandinavia and Russia to manufacture under licence. This kept the design process alive and the Western world was amazed with their improvements. The continued production of modern weapons allowed the General Staff to plan WWII when WWI had only just finished.

> Secret Service: "German soldiers had been practising making war in Russia under secret provisions of the Rapallo Pact from 1919. This contract enabled the German Army Intelligence (the Abwehr), under Admiral Canaris, to sell Stalin on the idea that his Soviet Officer Corps were ready to act against him. There are irrefutable indications that both Canaris and his deputy Hans Oster were under British control and they are likely to have designed the coup story, or at least conveyed it to Stalin, thus encouraging him to act brutally against his own soldiers (1937–39). This weakened the Russians just before the German invasion. It created a propaganda myth that allowed Hitler to invade Russia over the objections of the Army."

Hitler's Early Revolutions

On 9 November 1923, Hitler attempted a beer-cellar revolution in Munich (the Munich Putsch) with Rudolf Hess and Herman Goering. Goering was shot in the groin with an 8 mm bullet from a Mauser 98G and was in terrific pain. He became a morphine addict and his rich wife Carin smuggled him to her parents in Sweden.

Hitler and Hess received nine months in the Landsberg Fortress. Anyone else would have got eight years. While in prison Hitler revealed his British Psych-Ops training to Rudolf Hess who wrote it up as *Mein*

[20] *Pawns in the Game*, p. 107.

Kampf with Hitler as the author. Berlin was a city without morals and after his release in 1924, Hitler stood halfway between conservatism and radicalism, pro-heterosexual, but with a history of inbreeding (second- and third-degree incest) and homosexuality.

Hitler's toothbrush moustache had become a world joke, reminding millions of Charlie Chaplin. With his receding hairline, flop fringe, wide hips, narrow shoulders, and ridiculous moustache, essentially there to hide his unfeasibly large nostrils, he had an utterly mediocre appearance. Hitler had a great deal of difficulty selling racial superiority, so he relied on his orating skills, kept his distance, and never mingled with the crowd. Beer-table politics was a powerful force in fascist Bavaria, but he took no part in it. It was his orating skills and his book (*My Struggle*) that carried him through. Jail was the perfect preparation for Hitler.

Intelligence Historian: "*Mein Kampf* is a work probably ghost written by someone more educated in German grammar than Hitler, who plays down his education. As Hess was locked up in Landsberg Prison with Hitler and had got a degree after WWI, Hess was the scribe and partial contributor.

"It is probable that Hitler made suggestions and dictated parts of the work to Hess, while Hess obviously struggled to make sense of it all. It is a chaotic work that carries all the hallmarks of agent deconstruction. Don't look for logic in *Mein Kampf*. It doesn't exist in its normal form. It was written in a colloquial style, with a lot of slang and vernacular language and has been described as 'a comic without pictures'.

"*Mein Kampf* sets out to be all things to all men and its chapters on Jews and the future are of interest. It virtually declares Poland, France and Czechoslovakia are enemies but refrains from mentioning Britain in this way. Clearly it states the Nazi dream of lebensraum (living space) in the East. It also declares the old German dream of a place in the sun but refrains from hostile designs on Britain.

"We now read it with hindsight. If we were reading it today for the first time, it would probably be dismissed as the pipe dreams of some would-be revolutionary.

"Hitler's money did not come from *Mein Kampf* but from British Intelligence. *Mein Kampf* was a terrible book promoted by Intelligence as cover for the British funding of Hitler. To this end, it completely achieved its aim."

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

The German–British–American War Alliance

Under King George V's control, British spy information of the German breach of military build-up under the Treaty of Versailles was purposely ignored to give their 'cousins' in Germany a head start. In 1934 Churchill used private sources to assemble his own intelligence survey of German military rearmament. He then warned Parliament that Germany had "created a military air force which is now nearly two-thirds as strong as our present home defence air force [and] by 1936 Germany was due to exceed British air power".[21]

During the war Churchill preferred a daily selection of uninterpreted intelligence data from Major Desmond Morton rather than reports and conclusions from Britain's Joint Intelligence Committee, which had British Monarchy and therefore pro-German influences. This staved off sabotage and he trusted Morton as his friend and confidant. Morton went ahead and created 'M' who later became famous in the James Bond movies.

When the Nazis came to power, Goering returned to Germany and founded the Gestapo 'for racial and religious cleaning'. He built a house in honour of his wife and called it Carinhall where the German High Command met and where they, in turn, met with their international guests. By the time Goering was finishing Carinhall, his partner Emmy Sonnermann was six weeks' pregnant and he was running out of money.

The British were aware of this and sent the British spy, Group Captain Fred Winterbotham, to Carinhall. Winterbotham was working for British Air Intelligence and was one of Churchill's chief intelligence officers.[22] He briefed Churchill daily.

Goering was into 'positions that paid money' more than he was into war and was financially vulnerable at the time. He attended the coronation of King George VI in December 1936. This was largely kept out of the media, but he was well received in British high circles, especially MI-6.[23]

Goering was such a clown it was said about him that he wore special rubber medals in the bath. German comedians used to make jokes about him during WWII . . .

---

[21] Winston Churchill, *Hansard*, Parliament record, 1934.

[22] Winterbotham was a prolific rooter and would wear women out in a couple of days. When he went to Nazi Germany they always provided him with women.

[23] F. W. Winterbotham was Churchill's personal liaison officer at Bletchley Park where the German signals were deciphered. He wrote *The Ultra Secret* (1975), *The Nazi Connection* (1978) and *The Ultra Spy* (1991).

WWI pilot and charmer; “Fatty”, “Daddy”, “The Elephant” Goering charms Hitler.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7

Carinhall, highly bugged by the British, including the crypt where secretive conversations were held.

> “Goering went to a circus and sat down at the front row. The elephant came out and went up to him and said ‘Daddy, Daddy, Daddy’.”

The SS would report these jokes back to Goering who loved attention beyond all else and tolerated them. The uneducated thought he had the common touch and was all right, but educated Germans didn’t respect him and mistook him for a buffoon.

One of the top British spies saw Goering coming toward them and said “Here comes fatty” and the British spy chief admonished him saying, “Don’t say that. He’s the most dangerous charming man in the whole of Germany.”

Goering controlled the listening service. At breakfast every morning, he received the brownsheets and read them for an hour to a background of soft music. Any gossip, anybody speaking out against him and any state security issues were on these brownsheets – just as all the related telephone calls were recorded on wax disc.

Once Goering took over these brownsheets, the Luftwaffe lost any interest in them and Goering would disappear them to the British. This left the Luftwaffe out of the loop and British Air Intelligence in control of another area of Germany’s intelligence.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Goering was overrun with British spies. These were magicians, actors, circus performers, acrobats, slaves, peasants and the lockkeepers on the Kiel Canal through which the German submarines had to pass.

Submarine crews had a ritual where they would have a beer with the lockkeeper and his wife before they went on patrol. The British Royal Navy then received a message that another German sub had left and it would be sunk on this basis. The Germans looked at everything conceivable for their submarine losses and finally came upon the lockkeeper and his wife who were then executed in late 1943.

Goering sold the numbers and the totals of German aircraft to be built in return for the British paying to finish Carinhall, which they thoroughly bugged in the process. Goering held so many important Luftwaffe meetings here that this scenario literally changed the course of the air war.

The British cross-checked Goering’s aircraft numbers with a spy they had making aileron control cables for the planes. Divided up, they showed how many aircraft were being built. The same information was supplied by the same spy to the Russians. The British then built shadow factories that enabled the Allied forces to compete with the Luftwaffe and win the war.

The Germans took an expeditious view of American industry especially with aircraft. They had spies everywhere and they would find a design for a component such as an undercarriage or an engine that suited their needs and would then go and steal the blueprints. The Luftwaffe were stealing all of their aircraft technology from the Americans with America’s knowledge.

German aircraft were essentially American aircraft cobbled together. All the Germans had to do was design the airframe. This is the real secret of how the Luftwaffe was built so quickly. The Germans did not design their own subcomponents, they simply stole them. The spies joked, “The build quality is so good, pistons can be exchanged between American and German engines, no problem”.

On one occasion one of their best spies was caught by American Customs with a violin case full of aircraft plans trying to leave the US. When the customs official dropped the case the plans flew out. With amazing savoir faire, the German spy said, “I have to smuggle them past my wife because she thinks I’m feeding my son’s addiction to aircraft. It’s the only way I can get my son the aircraft plans he desires. His mother hates flying. I have to smuggle them otherwise she will go mental at me.”

The US customs official’s empathy for men afflicted by difficult women created an immediate rapport and he allowed him to pass with the American aircraft plans quickly stuffed back into the violin case.

> America was feeding Germany its technology, its finances and its oil. Many of the high-finance Americans were of German descent and were on Germany’s side. These included Henry Ford (Freemason), Walt Disney (Freemason), Prescott Bush (Skull and the Presidents Bushes father and grandfather), the Rothschilds, ICI Faben, now ICI and Dulux paints, etc.

The 1929 Wall Street crash brought chaos to Germany and without it, Hitler would never have risen to power. Democracy was not working – perhaps Fascism was the solution. In the US there was industrial unrest and the middle class were breaking into bakeries and stealing bread – Germany seemed to be marginally more in control of its labour. Henry

Ford brought in troops with machine guns to suppress striking workers in the 1930s. There were strike lockouts, unemployment and 20,000 people in anti-Jewish rallies in New York. Ford supported Hitler as both were anti-Semitic and anti-union. Hitler was Ford's wind-up toy that Ford was keen to see at work in the model factory that was to become Nazi Germany.

> In the mid-1930s, almost all of the political leaders of the world expressed their admiration for the astonishing achievements of Adolf Hitler. No one contemplated the human cost until 1945 when the Concentration Camps were revealed in their magnitude.
>
> Walt Disney gave most of the proceeds of the *Wizard of Oz* to the Nazis; Henry Ford paid for Hitler's staff vehicles, and President Bush's grandfather sold munitions to Germany thus contravening the Treaty of Versailles. Hitler wanted Fords but Henry Ford considered the PR implications and paid for Hitler's Mercedes.
>
> Walt Disney and other investors financed Goering's train. Goering named it 'America'. When the British tried to strafe it, the American Air Force sent aircraft to shoot down the British aircraft.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

Britain also had possession of a few types of German aircraft purchased before WWII. The most combat-capable were the Junkers JU86 which were used as transports. Britain kept more tight-lipped about the use of German aircraft than the Germans did about their British KG200 battle squadron. The British-purchased German aircraft went to South Africa as a commercial venture, but whoever bought these planes went tits-up and the planes were then impressed into the South African Air Force under British control. Thus Britain had control of German planes which could then be used to drop British agents in Germany. Britain later acquired a Folke Wolf 200 Condor plane from a Danish Airline. 'Officially' it was destroyed in 1942.

Carinhall was finished in October 1937 and Goering's child was born on 2 June 1938. Goering was a well-known Anglophile and his support for Hitler was questioned at the time. But by February 1938, with subtle British influence within the German High Command, Goering became the Field Marshal of the Luftwaffe.[24] It was a bent world where double agents profited the most.

---

[24] *Hermann Göring*, p. 165.

> The Luftwaffe Air Force had been created in America (largely by German-Americans), stolen by German-American spies within the American aviation industry, and sold to Germany, who then passed the numbers on to the British. Now all sides had a relatively equal Air Force. Two-thirds of America's Air Force engineers in Long Island were Germans, and from 1900 there were so many Germans living in New York it was possible to pick up the German language off the streets.

Seasoned Spymaster, Dr Eric Pheiffer: "During WWII the US was 'in a pincer of spies' and Germany had effected the most elaborate and effective penetration of a major power in the entire history of espionage. The United States cannot plan a warship, design an airplane, develop a new device that we do not know of at once . . . We have spy outlets in Montreal, Newport Mews, Boston, Buffalo, Bristol, Philadelphia, San Diego, Seattle, and Bath, Maine . . . We even have spies in President Roosevelt's inner circle[25] and at the Chemical Centre in Bel Air Maryland . . . We even had the plans for American anti-aircraft guns from the Army Signals Laboratories at Fort Monmouth before they reached Washington. We had all the plans for the US destroyers from 1932–1936, courtesy of Gustav Guellich, including all the high-altitude rockets and rocket-propelled missiles."[26]

"Otto Voss started working on Ireland Aircraft and became an American citizen, working in Baltimore developing an experimental seaplane at the Sikorsky plant in Farmingdale, Long Island. He sent all the plans back to Germany in 1934, including those for the super-secret light Bomber SB-C2, the Boeing Bomber, the FG-2 plans, the SBU-1 scout bomber, tactical air exercises at Mitchell Field Long Island, US Army Classified Maps and plans for the destroyers DD-397, DD-398, DD-399 and their propellers.

"Two-thirds of all US aircraft engineers were German, so the German spies did not stand out. From 1934–1941, five months before Pearl Harbor, the Germans had stolen every plan of American aircraft using microphotographic 10% film. Information was cheap and the German agents were paid less than US$300 in 1937 for the year's work. This allowed both sides to be bribed. The highest price ever paid was US$1500 in one lump sum."[27]

---

[25] Roosevelt's wife was a rug-muncher.

[26] *The Game of Foxes*, p. 36.

[27] Ibid. p. 28, paraphrased.

In New York, the German spies stayed at the Taft Hotel, north of Times Square, and the Russians stayed at the Hotel Manhattan. The designations for German spies were ‘F’– Scout or Courier; ‘R’– Travelling Agent; ‘A’– Producing Information; and ‘V’– German Agent, referred to as a ‘V-Mann’ number.

The Last of the Hitlers

Meanwhile, Adolf’s half-brother, Alois Hitler, had remarried bigamously. “In May 1914 Alois left his wife and child [William Patrick Hitler] in Liverpool and set off for Germany to establish a safety-razor business. World War I broke out shortly after his departure and detained him on the continent for four years. After the war he arranged to have a false report of his death delivered to Brigid and [he re]married bigamously. The German authorities eventually found out and prosecuted him. Brigid [Catholic] intervened on his behalf and he was virtually acquitted. Nothing about the affair became public at the time.”[28]

By 1929, their son, William Patrick Hitler, was 18 and full of chutzpah and went to see his uncle, first sighting him at a Nuremberg Rally. When Hitler found out that his half-brother Alois (convicted criminal, ruffian and waiter) had left Brigid, he pretended he wasn’t related. He sent his nephew back to England saying Alois was an orphan.

“William Patrick stayed with Alois and his new family during his early trips to Germany [1929]. During the period of Hitler’s rule, Alois ran a restaurant in Berlin. He managed to keep it open for the duration of World War II. He was captured by the British at the end of the war but released because it was clear that he had led ‘a perfectly blameless existence’.”[29]

> An MI-6 officer who denies ever being trained:
> “In view of Alois’ first-hand knowledge of Adolf’s training and backing, this is perfectly understandable. After all, 99% of Intelligence is deny everything, even if it means denying night follows day.”

Hitler escaped to his ‘Eagle’s Nest’ mountain retreat on the German-Austrian border to get away from his work and family, but his nephew and his sister-in-law tracked him down and tried to blackmail him, saying that they would go back to England and sell their story to the papers unless they got some money. Adolf was surprisingly lenient considering his timetable – killing Germans in Germany, before starting on the Poles, Gipsies, Slavs, and then the Jews. He was most scared that his missing years would not stack up and he did not want to draw attention to his sketchy past.

These family requests and embarrassments began to encroach on his publicly purist lifestyle, and at the time, he was very busy promoting himself and building up Germany’s warring infrastructure. Hitler gave his nephew William Patrick Hitler a series of low administration jobs in the Third Reich Government and William became a Berlin socialite, living off the Führer’s name.

Hitler put pressure on him to relinquish his British citizenship, but instead William Patrick scarpered back to England in 1938 with the assistance of Mr Fenton of Her Majesty’s Secret Service (MI-6) and another secret agent operating as a magician under the name Bunny Aldon[30] (probably Jasper Maskelyne) who provided him with the escape vehicle, the Storm Troopers in hot pursuit.

MI-6 agent: “The number of British spies chased out of Germany in this way, was only exceeded by the number flooding in.”

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

MI-6 started just before WWI. The security intelligence service was looking for well-connected people, the upper crust, from the British establishment. They offered them fraternity, adventure, danger, espionage and excitement with unlimited potential for sodomy. They were to be a secret guard. Hitler had been similarly scouted.

> It was not uncommon for the Secret Service to fabricate plots with character names and occupations so fictional, that anyone telling the story would feel ridiculous, and anyone listening would write it off merely on the basis of the names. It was, however, common practice for members of the Secret Service to be in the entertainment industry and for entertainers to be seconded into the Secret Service.

Patrick Hitler became very anti-Hitler and anti-German. He wrote his story and tried to sell it to the British papers but they wouldn’t have a bar of it! The Hurst papers wrote it up in America as ‘I Hate My Uncle Adolf’ (*Look* magazine, January 1939), with the subtitle ‘To Hell With Hitler’, and the French papers published the story under ‘Mon Uncle Adolfe’ (*Paris-Soir*, August 1939).

---

[28] *Irish Roots*, Issue No. 1, 1992, First Quarter, Hitler: His Irish Relatives, Tony McCarthy.

[29] Ibid.

[30] Brigid Dowling relates this in *The Memoirs of Bridget Hitler*.

According to *The Oxford English Reference Dictionary* 'Führer' means "a leader, especially a tyrannical one". Hitler assumed this title in 1934, five years before *TIME* magazine named him 'Man of the Year' (2 January 1939), sneaking in just before *Look* magazine hit the newsstands.

With Brigid Hitler taking in boarders, running dancing lessons at Highgate and behind on her rates (£9 13s 10d), she and Patrick scarpered to America together, arriving on 30 March 1939. The Hurst papers paid for the journey and William Patrick Hitler toured America from 1939–44 giving talks in public halls billed as 'What the German People are Thinking' with the subtitle 'Of the Real Germany Hidden Behind Nazi Fiction'. This brought him to the attention of the FBI and the OSS (the CIA from 1946).

William Patrick Hitler, 6'1", also known as William Patrick Dowling, Patrick Dowling, and Carter Stevens, served as a first-class seaman in the US Navy (1944–46), in the medical corps, and as an intelligence officer. Ironically he was sworn in by one Hess, an American having the same name as Hitler's deputy and *Mein Kampf* scribe.

William Patrick Hitler then wrote a book using an FBI ghost writer (a great piece of intelligence gathering) which is listed on the web by the Office of Strategic Services under the single page "*Hitler Source Book*" as Adolf Hitler, written by Alois Hitler and published by New York American on 30 November 1930. It was Adolf Hitler dictated to the FBI by William Patrick Hitler and published in 1946.

Confusion is the name of the game,
especially the war game.

William Patrick's mother, Brigid Hitler, converted to British Intelligence and worked for British War Relief in New York, opposite Tiffany's.

After WWII William Patrick Hitler lived in the New York Metropolitan area, where, fearful for his life, he changed his name to William Hiller (1946–77) and worked as a urologist in Manhattan (taking the piss out of Jews in America). He then became a phlebotomist (bleeding Americans) working from his home in Yaphank, Long Island, a suburb renowned for its Nazi sympathisers. In 1977 he married a German woman and changed his surname to that of Hitler's favourite anti-Semitic author, Wagner. By that time Yaphank had become a bedroom community for New York.

treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March, 2013

Wagner was incredibly anti-Semitic and suggested that the best the Jews could do for culture would be to burn themselves at the stake. He too came from unconfirmed parentage. Hitler was a frequent visitor to the Wagner household. Wagner's children called Adolf Hitler 'Uncle Wolf'. At one point he was going to marry one of Wagner's widowed daughters.

Wagner (1813–83) was Hitler's favourite author (*Opera and Drama*). Count Gobineau (1816–82) wrote the *Essay on the Inequality of Human Races*. Gobineau was the intellectual parent of the incestuous Nietzsche (1844–1900) who tried to give his age new values and wrote *The Birth of Tragedy*, which he dedicated to his friend Wagner. Since Wagner was the oldest, considered the father of the three authors, and had the most Westernised name, drawing the least attention in Long Island, the surname 'Wagner' was chosen by William Patrick to replace 'Hitler' and 'Hiller'.

William Hiller had four sons born between 1949 and 1965 who all eventually lived under different surnames. He named his eldest son Alex Adolf Hiller. His second son Howard married in 1989 but before he could impregnate his wife, he had a car accident arranged by the FBI.[31]

The FBI usually gave assignments of this nature to 'The Squad' manned by Mafia hit men. The top Mafioso sodomised J. Edgar Hoover on at least a weekly basis. In exchange, Hoover (Freemason) would deny that Mafia ever existed and: 'If it doesn't exist you can't arrest it'. This is why the Mafia hits were successful and they got away with murder for so long.

The remaining three sons, Hitler's grandnephews, then made a survival pact to never have children. They now each have different names and run a small landscape gardening business in Long Island where they receive sympathetic cover from the locals. Hitler's nephew William Patrick Wagner died anonymously on 14 July 1987.[32]

---

[31] *Irish Roots*, Issue No. 1, 1992, First Quarter, Hitler: His Irish Relatives, Tony McCarthy.

[32] *Last of the Hitlers*, 2002.

The pseudo-documentary, *Last of the Hitlers* shows that William Patrick Hitler changed his name to Houston Stewart Chamberlain and in the next sentence to William Patrick Stewart-Houston without differentiating when they were used, whether they were used interchangeably or what name he was buried under. This is called 'well-presented disinformation' and is designed to obscure. Brigid Dowling, Alois Hitler's first wife, was buried in a cemetery in Long Island under her own name.

Until 1950, Long Island was a series of potato farms and aircraft manufacturers. Nazi sympathisers used to send radio transmissions and light signals to the German submarines coming into New York Harbor during WWII. Some were captured and made prisoners of war. Yaphank, then a population of 10,000, remained a community of Nazi sympathisers even after the war and Levittown was built here.

The Hitler family were a family of authors and did very well considering their father Alois was such a nutter (Hutter). Adolf, his sister Paula Hitler and his nephew William Patrick Hitler all wrote their way into history, but it is Hitler's book, *Mein Kampf* (*My Struggle*) with its revealing Psych-Ops training, developed over the last five centuries, that has remained a best-seller, amassing some £15 million in unclaimed royalties.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Hitler the Anglophile

Hitler was an Anglophile. He loved England, the British, and its aristocracy. After all, his sister-in-law was Irish, he had stayed in Liverpool, and he was trained in Britain as a British puppet of war. He was a British double agent and Britain was about to fund his media campaign.

Hitler gained further comfort from the fact that the Kaiser had abdicated and was held under protective custody in Harlem, in British-controlled Holland. The British did everything in their power to give Hitler Germany. Britain needed war to maintain its class structure and without another war their aristocracy would fall.

The British monarchy were cousins of the deposed German monarchs and therefore friends with Germany's aristocracy. Britain's King George V died on 20 January 1936 and Hitler played on the monarchy's vanity by sending a message of sympathy and throwing an elaborate synchronous memorial service on 28 January 1936 with his full cabinet in attendance.

Hitler the Anglophile.

As a result of this comforting display from Hitler to the British Royals, after investigating Germany's build-up to war and receiving assertions from Hitler, Prime Minister Neville Chamberlain returned to Britain saying, "Go home and get a nice quiet sleep".

Chamberlain completely failed to appreciate the threat of Germany's 1919–39 military build-up, especially the last ten years.

This suited the Saxe-Coburg Gothas – King Edward VIII and King George VI – perfectly. They were the head of British Freemasonry, who, along with the German Freemasons, were in a battle against the French Freemasons with a value system most would not understand, and for reasons that have lasted beyond generations, but primarily based on 'want of knowledge' and 'envy of style'.

Every war is a war of secrets
and wars with the greatest number of secrets
take the longest.

For the last three reigns, the commonwealth should have been singing "God Save the Queen". All their British monarchs have had sex with men. In this way, secrets were traded. The Freemasons kept the monarch's sexual practices secret and in exchange the Monarch kept the warring Freemasons' plans secret, even helping them to create a more equitable war so that it is not 'a bashing, a mugging, or a trial run', but a serious depopulation exercise . . . enough to shift boundaries, social policy and the social make-up of populations. "Dead Dad" is a prime example of such history influencing language.

> All the British male monarchs since King George IV (1820) have been Freemasons and all have been sexually compromised. Sexually compromising the monarch and/or their partner is the first step to taking over that country and controlling its military. Through WWI and WWII the British monarchs were all bisexual males with low IQs.

Because of Chamberlain's non-acceptance and denial of the impending war with Germany, he was made Prime Minister from 28 May 1937 to 10 May 1940. This gave Germany a head start in its war preparations.

Winston Churchill, Secretary of State for War (1919–21) was so disturbed by this denial that he built a private intelligence centre in his home (1929), which remained in full operation until 1939. It was this decade of pre-emptive intelligence gathering and training that saved England from Germany and allowed him to bypass all the pro-German, pro-fascist propaganda filtering through the British royal press and intelligence machine.

It was Winston Churchill's private intelligence centre that ensured the English language and culture dominated . . . but he was still a major player in the war, in all its machinations.

Czechoslovakia was invaded by Hitler on 1 October 1938 and again on 15 March 1939. Chamberlain, still in full denial, "advocated appeasement with Italy and Germany. Criticism of his war leadership and military reverses led to his resignation as Prime Minister in May 1940 and his appointment as Lord President of the Council."[33] Chamberlain was given a face-saving position, Churchill became Prime Minister (10 May 1940), and then Chamberlain was assassinated by in-house liquidation six months later on 9 November 1940.

Essentially Chamberlain acted as a delivery boy for the British-trained Hitler (a double agent of 27 years), and both acted for the British war machine. Chamberlain allowed Hitler to come to power unchallenged and even colluded with Hitler by guaranteeing Britain would not interfere with Germany's takeover of Czechoslovakia.

The under-prepared Chamberlain was replaced with the over-prepared Churchill (Freemason) who declared war on Germany on 3 September 1939. Eight months later he was Prime Minister.

Churchill was, however, pipped at the post by several others. The Luftwaffe bombed Warsaw airfields at 4.15 am Saturday 1 September 1939 and Poland declared war on Germany the same day. But even this was superseded, as illustrated in Ladislas Farago's *A Game of Foxes.*

The Germans invaded Poland six days before this at 0.01 am on 26 August 1939 when the German K Group (attack group) went into Poland's Beskid Mountains 6 days, 4 hours and 44 minutes before the formal start of WWII.

German Leutnant Herzner staged a raid on Jablunkov Pass, killed Poles, took prisoners and received the surrender of the senior Polish officer who pointed out that Poland was not at war. Leutnant Herzner tried to ignore this, but became convinced when there were no other sounds of action.

---

[33] *The Cambridge Biographical Encyclopaedia.*

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March

Leutnant Herzner eventually asked the Polish officer how he could verify the fact that the war had not begun and the Polish officer suggested he ring his own base. Leutnant Herzner didn't believe it, but in desperation rang his own base at Zilinia in Slovakia. He got hold of his Intelligence Officer who confirmed that the German operation had been postponed. Leutnant Herzner was advised to let the Polish prisoners go, render medical attention and get back across the border as if nothing had happened. He did this quaking in his boots that he had cocked up the whole of WWII.

After he came back to Czechoslovakia he was paranoid with fear but was eventually comforted a few days later by Admiral Canaris, Chief of the Abwehr, who congratulated him on his performance. No one knows where and how Leutnant Herzner died and his name is not recorded in any further Abwehr records. This would tend to indicate that he suffered at the hands of the SS.

> Leutnant Herzner of K Group truly was the first German soldier to begin WWII – 0.01 am on 26 August 1939.

The fact that this event received no press attention anywhere in the world reinforces the belief that WWII was a planned occurrence. This German–Polish action equates with the British–American actions against Japanese units in December 1941, where the Allies were unable to seek assistance or notify command due to blocked signals. This sort of skullduggery within Allied Forces should be a cause for instant investigation by Allied Intelligence Services even now (unless they were all involved?). Such an investigation would only be 66 years too late.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Several events also occurred in the colonies, especially New Zealand, a centre for unrecorded WWII activity.

> Churchill was beaten to the declaration of war a second time by a combination of alcohol and cancer. New Zealand's Prime Minister, Michael Savage, was ill and dying of cancer and Peter Fraser essentially ran New Zealand at the time. Peter Fraser had been charged with sedition and jailed for burning and jumping all over the British flag in 1923. He was known as '*Pisshouse Peter*' because he was always in the toilet when there was work to be done.

Churchill had briefed Peter Fraser to declare war on Germany on 9 September 1939 but Fraser was a teetotaller, except when he had the

flu and drank gin as a cure. Fraser decided he had the flu on 9 September 1939 and drank two bottles of gin and then declared war on Germany without taking the timeline into account.

New Zealand declared war on Germany 12 hours before Britain.

Hitler's response was: "Where is New Zealand?"[34]

New Zealand's response was to write ditties about the error of the era.

New Zealand ex-naval officer and poet, Denis Glover (DSC, Normandy) told another story where New Zealand fired the first Allied shots of WWII:

"A dilapidated Indian sailing ship had been at sea for months and months and sailed towards Fort Dorset in Wellington Harbour. It was covered in barnacles and weeds and its sails were old and patched. A good blow would have ripped them all to shreds. The ship was owned by a British outfit and had been virtually sailing itself for months and months.

"Due to the drink, the Pommy Captain and First Officer had gone down the ladder and all they were fit to be employed on were Indian ships. It was obvious from the state of the ship that they were both under the weather.

" The army on shore at Fort Dorset had the list of colours of the day and these were circulated each month and had to be displayed by all ships entering the harbour. Due to the long voyage and drunk Pommy Captain and First Officer, the British-owned Indian-run ship either didn't know anything about the list of colours or couldn't be bothered.

"When the Indian crew were challenged by heliograph signal to show the flag colours of the day it should have circled round and around until this was sorted out, but because the Indian crew were in control they carried on straight ahead. The drunk Pommy Captain and First Officer went on deck as the Fort Dorset Army Gunners fired 4" and 6" guns overhead. They were desperately keen to try out their guns on anything and were upset they didn't get the chance to put one through the mast. The Master and First Officer were then fined in the local Magistrates Court."

This is not to be confused with the 1941 story, where, in preparation for WWII the Coastal Artillery had mounted guns all around Wellington Harbour. An old Italian fishing family (Barnao) from Island Bay had been whalers, but when the ease and frequency of the big fish dropped away, they turned to a smaller catch. They were returning into Wellington Harbour one night, hadn't turned on their lights and were talking excitedly about a horse race on the radio and their big catch of hoki.

---

[34] Whermacht officers in Germany were frantically trying to find maps of New Zealand.

The Army heard the enemy language of Italian, thought it was an attack and shot up the boat with casemented 4" and disappearing 6" guns that rose out of the tops of hills. When the 6" guns fired, the muzzles were still below the surface of the ground. The 4" gun was used to suck the enemy in close whereupon the 6" gun would take them out.

The Barnao fishing boat was shelled, bullet-ridden and sunk. Some died, but both Barnao fishermen survived by dog-paddling to shore. The Coastal Artillery got it wrong and the government paid out discretely without it ever making the media.

There are many such Home Guard stories and one wonders whether they should be taken as the first shots of WWII. Isolated New Zealanders were keen for war as it offered them a chance to travel and excused them from the boredom of milking cows. As a result, former Waikato dairy farmers became none-too-bright cannon fodder and were butchered with as much indifference as their cows at home.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

After Dunkirk (June 1940) all the plotting tables and the range-finding gear was sent to Britain to make up for what was lost at Dunkirk, and the New Zealand Home Guard reverted to using German equipment that had been souvenired from WWI.

A New Zealand padre who had fought in WWI as a stretcher bearer tried to get into the WWII army as a chaplain but nobody wanted to know until he told them he had a German range-finder at home. He donated the range-finder to the army in exchange for joining 2NZEF (Expeditionary Force) overseas. His range-finder stayed in New Zealand as did the 4" and 6" guns.

A lot of the WWI veterans stayed in New Zealand as did those with foot and stomach problems. The WWI veterans took care of German and Italian POWs on Soames Island and all got on reasonably well. Some of the New Zealand WWI vets spent much of WWII in uniform fishing Wellington Harbour to feed the POWs. The highest point of the Island still contains Italian and German graves looking out to sea.

Churchill announced Germany's unconditional surrender on 7 May 1945 (for 0.01 am 8 May 1945) only after French Freemasonry had been destroyed, all the ammunition spent, the profits had been made by the correct parties, and a world vulnerable to social reorganisation had been created. Life would become a socialistic struggle for survival for the next 20 years.

To Churchill's surprise he was defeated in an election two months after WWII in July 1945.

This was possibly due to his order of the mass murder of 600,000 people in 13 hours on 13/14 February 1945 – a mixture of 600,000 refugees who had been in Dresden for less than a day and the unfortunate locals who received them . . . or it could have been as the result of his mass murder of 150,000 Russian Jews in Holland while emigrating to England – just after the war had ended. But why did this not make it into the history books?

At the end of WWII, only the southern half of Holland was freed. The northern half was left occupied by the Germans and they were still in the Channel Islands on the last day of the war. There was an extreme food shortage in the last year of the war and the German Army ate the Dutch out of house and home. As a result, over a million Dutch citizens died of starvation in 1944–5.

The death of 150,000 emigrating Russian Jews passed unnoticed and its record was easily omitted from history by the embedded historians that Churchill controlled.

All three of these events occurred with German complicity.

Hitler and Hess in Landsberg Prison with admirers and enough leisure time to reflect and focus on ideology – like writing *Mein Kampf.*

Hitler's Sexuality

Hitler's close boyhood friend from Linz, August Kubizek, wrote *Adolf Hitler, Mein Jugendfreund* (My Youth Friend), "Adolf did not engage in love affairs or flirtations. He always rejected the coquettish advances of girls or women. Women and girls took an interest in him but he always evaded their endeavours."

Later August Kubizek set up house with Hitler in Vienna a year after he had been rejected by Vienna's Academy of Fine Arts (Akadamie De Bildenden Kūnste). The two used to go for long walks in the woods, and when it rained took shelter in a shed and rolled naked in tarpaulins.[1]

During deconstruction, it is customary that the person is sexually abused in the manner which is most embarrassing to that person. In Hitler's case, he was sodomised, creating a submissive distant respect for homosexuals like his bodyguards and some of his highest-placed leaders. His natural bent was developed into coprophilia (being shat on). The colloquialism for this is 'scat'.[2]

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

With each deconstruction an embarrassing addiction is developed and filmed. With Hitler it was sadomasochism, coprophilia and homosexuality. That is, he liked to be verbally abused and slapped around, to have his head urinated on, his chest shat on, and to have sex with men. This made him vulnerable to ridicule by his partners, and mention of it was a coded access to his subconscious, making him vulnerable to cross-purpose.

The British had been deconstructing people for some time and the Red Army began training spies using sexual deconstruction from the very beginning of the Soviet State. The very first semester started at Frunze in 1920 and ended in gang-bangs every night. It was a classic British Intelligence technique but without the homosexuality. Most of the instructors were ex-British Intelligence.

On 24 May 1913 Hitler left Vienna and moved to the bohemian gay neighbourhood of Munich. The men's shelter at MA12, Haus Meldemannstrasse in Munich was described by a wealthy well-connected homosexual, Ernst Hanfstaengl, who later became Hitler's close friend: "It was a place where elderly men went in search of young men for homosexual pleasure. It is probable that these types of old roués and young gigolos became familiar to young Adolf at this time."[3]

---

[1] *Was Hitler Gay?*

[2] This trait was continued by his doctor (Dr Morell) who spooned out Hitler's faeces.

Once Hitler got into power, all the police documents and records were destroyed regarding whether or not Hitler was a male prostitute at that time.

On 2 August 1914, Germany mobilised for war and Hitler cheered. "He delighted in the homoerotic life of the trenches. There he quickly became inseparable from yet another young man, his fellow soldier and closest wartime friend, Ernst Schmidt."[4]

Hans Mend: "In 1915 we were billeted in a brewery and slept in the hay. Hitler was bedded down at night with Schmidtl, his male whore. We heard a rustling in the hay. Then someone switched on his electric flashlight and growled 'look at those two faggots'."[5]

The gay Erich Ebermayer, one of Germany's most successful poets and a contemporary of Hitler's, states in his diaries that in Hitler's military files it stipulates that Hitler was not promoted because he was a homosexual. After the 1918 German defeat, Hitler returned to Europe and entered politics.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March

When Hitler was an unknown plain-clothed army intelligence agent he met the plain-clothed Army Intelligence officer Ernst Roehm (1919). Soon after, Roehm became the flamboyant gay Army Captain and leader of the Freikorps, the right wing's shadow army, but not without British help.

---

[3] *Was Hitler Gay?*

[4] Lothar Machton, author of *The Hidden Hitler*, in the documentary *Was Hitler Gay?*

[5] Those with the sexual history of prime ministers are often continually attacked until they can be written off as 'one of life's losers'. For his efforts, Hans Mend became one of life's losers.

"Roehm immediately recognised how talented Hitler was, so they built a very close relationship at that time."[6] Roehm had access to Hitler's WWI files and knew of Hitler's sexual history. In this way Roehm had control of Hitler and became his minder.

Hitler was a sexual deviant who would do anything to hide his sexual proclivities from the public. This made him a puppet to any foreign country or ideology with the knowledge on him. This is known as "the wood" on a person and anyone with 'the wood' has control over that person.

Many of the highest-placed leaders in the Nazi party, including Hitler, Roehm, Förster, von Schirach and almost all of his bodyguards were gay. Hitler surrounded himself with homosexuals and even retrieved Roehm from Bolivia, making him Deputy Führer. This knowledge enabled outside countries like Britain and ideologies like the Freemasons to control Hitler, his high command and his bodyguards. Hitler and his band of merry bandits became puppets with wooden strings.

> In this way, any foreign society can be destroyed with a leader hiding their sexuality. Hitler, Roehm, Förster and von Schirach took part in destroying their own societies while enjoying the power it gave them.[7] Hitler was a double agent prime minister. He worked for a foreign country (Britain) and a foreign ideology (the Freemasons). The formula proved so effective it is still used today, in politics and the media, especially with TV personalities, radio announcers, prime ministers and presidents, both male and female.

One of Germany's more influential record keepers of Hitler's homosexuality was General Otto von Lassow, who was then the military Commander of Munich. He was a very strong man in Europe in the early 1920s, had access to every record, and a bitter enemy of Hitler. After dinner one night, he invited friends to his study and read secret letters from the Munich Beard Vice Squad to some of his dinner guests ('Beard' is German slang for 'homosexual'). These dealt with Hitler in the early 1920s, searching for young men, occasionally paying them, and taking them to his room and spending the night together.[8] Some of Hitler's close friends gave testimonies that he was gay.

---

[6] Lothar Machton, author of *The Hidden Hitler*, in the documentary *Was Hitler Gay?*

[7] Baldur von Schirach (1904–74) was a homosexual paedophile who founded the Hitler Youth. Roehm despised him for his paedophilia. He was released from Spandau in 1966.

"I, Franz, an apprentice, made the acquaintance of a gentleman who invited me to spend the night with him, and I accepted. The gentleman's name was Adolf Hitler." The originals have never been found.

General Otto von Lassow claimed they were his insurance policy should his enemy Hitler ever come to power. Lassow was the only one of Hitler's enemies who was not killed in the Night of the Long Knives (30 June 1934), which gives much credence to these files.

Hitler and Hess shared a cell at Landsberg Prison after the Munich Putsch in 1923. Hess was always regarded as a homosexual by the enemies of the Nazi Party and by the Nazi Party themselves, who nicknamed him "Frauline Anna". Ernst Hanfstaengl later testified that Hitler and Hess were prison lovers. "Hitler's strange wavering sexuality [bisexual] was activated in Landsberg in the company of Hess. That he had a liaison with Hess is beyond doubt."[9]

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Rudolf Hess had the upbringing of a bisexual. He was born and raised in a foreign country under foreign rule (British rule) until he was 12. During his emerging sexuality (12–14) he was home-schooled by his parents in Germany and spent his time alone in a garden paradise. He became passionate and introverted, was a typically Victorian child (seen but not heard) and was nicknamed "the Egyptian" for his oily skin and black hair. He loved his mother very much but was very distant from his father. He was sent to a boarding school at 14 (Evangelische Padagogium in Bad Godesberg-am-Rhein) and then to a superior school in a foreign country (the Ecole Superieure du Commerce in Neuchatel, Switzerland). He spent his life apart from other children, separate from his biological parents and separate from the country of his culture. He was an outsider who had an isolated psyche with a vicious inner dialogue that kept him alive and foreigners dead. On his return to Germany he learnt to hate the Jews with an introverted passion.

---

[8] *Was Hitler Gay?*

[9] Ibid.

Rudolf Hess, the Vice Führer, was a married bisexual. Hess adored Hitler and was queer for him. There was a homoerotic sense throughout the Nazi Party, which in part stemmed from Hess.

In the struggle for financial strength that is the family-centred society, Hitler battled against sexual extremes like paedophilia, child-sex abuse, homosexuality, cross-dressing and transsexuality. Correspondingly, the currency devalued and the interest rates skyrocketed.

Hitler liked to drive around Germany in fast cars and maintained a warm relationship with his new chauffeur, Julius Schrek. Once they were invited to the family home of Wagner, Hitler's favourite composer and philosopher, but Hitler disappeared with his chauffeur to a hotel with no other guests. Winifred Wagner tracked them down and there was a scandal but it was suppressed by the media that Hitler so fervently controlled.

"The Führer's libido increased proportionately with the events of the war, almost as a reaction to the intense levels of work . . . These women were almost always endowed with a large bosom"[10] but they were often a cover for his homosexuality.

Among these women were Mimi Reiter (a 16-year-old who attempted suicide?); Unity Walkrie Mitford (an English woman who attempted suicide?); Rene Muller (an actress who committed suicide?); Geli Raubal (his niece who committed suicide?); Eva Braun (a small-breasted woman who vied for attention with two show-suicides); and Carola Hoffman, Gertrud von Seidlitz, Helene Bechstein, Stephanie van Hohenlohe, Viktoria van Dirksen, and Leni Riefenstahl who made his propaganda movies and denies any sexual involvement, but describes an orgasm when listening to him speak at the Nuremberg rallies.

Free from prison in 1924, Hitler (35) was encouraged by his colleagues to marry. Under their pressure he finally took an interest in Mimi Reiter, a 16-year-old shop girl. Their affair went sour during a disastrous walk in the woods in 1925. "He hugged me really tightly around the neck. He kissed me. He didn't know what to do. I could feel how he clenched his fists. I could see how he was fighting with himself."[11] Unable to consummate the relationship, Hitler escaped by claiming that he had to think of the mission in Germany. Hitler broke up with Mimi and she reportedly tried to commit suicide from disappointment. This is unlikely as she was sixteen and he was thirty-five. It was more likely organised propaganda, or another attempted murder made to look like a suicide.

Unity Walkrie Mitford (20) stalked Hitler until she finally met him at the Osteria Bavaria restaurant. After the affair, she shot herself with a pearl-handled revolver, dying eight years later.

Hitler showed Rene Muller a photo of her kissing another man and then gave her a letter saying that she would never work in German cinema again. Within two hours she was dead, having landed on the courtyard outside her window.[12]

When Hitler became busy with power, he invited his half-sister Angela and her two daughters to come and stay and keep house at his rented villa at Obersalzberg in 1928. Repeating his father's pattern of 'incest with his housekeeper', the archetypal loner (39) quickly fell in love with his half-sister's daughter, Geli Raubal (17). She became his constant companion in Europe during his political rise to fame from 1929–31.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Hitler had a propensity for incest and having his face and chest defecated on, to which his niece, Geli, objected. It became necessary to silence Geli about Adolf's homosexuality, his coprophilia and his incest. If this got out, the Third Reich would have lost the 'race' card. There would be no 'master race' to aspire to and the armies would have lost their motivation for war and even rebelled. The official story is an alibi for what really happened.

Hitler was very possessive and after Geli had sex with his chauffeur and was officially pregnant to yet another man, her music teacher's piano player,[13] Hitler became smothering and restrictive. Officially Geli (20) protested against Adolf's possessiveness and shot herself dead in his apartment on 18 September 1931.

Official historians note Hitler (42) was away in Hamburg at the time and devastated and distraught at the news of her death. Official history omits to note Geli broke her nose during her 'suicide' . . . the real story is closer to murderous incest.

---

[10] *Very Illustrious Patients*, p. 96.

[11] *Was Hitler Gay?*

[12] *The Memoirs of Bridget Hitler*, p. 178.

[13] Geli Raubal was not pregnant.

Adolf Hitler had taken his niece Geli to a private first floor room in the Bratwurstglöckl Restaurant on the night of her death and ordered beer, which was rare. Even one glass made him tipsy.[14] Hitler and Geli left around 1 am and returned to his nearby apartment on Prinzregentenstrasse. Hitler made sexual advances towards Geli, she refused and a scuffle broke out. Hitler broke Geli's nose and then shot her with his service revolver, the only gun stored in the apartment.

Having lost her husband and daughter to her half-brother, Angela Raubal did not want to be without the comforts Hitler could provide. Hitler had delayed his meeting in Hamburg and his half-sister Angela supported this alibi, just as she had remained quiet about the disappearance of her husband Leo Raubal.

The affidavit of the police captain who visited Hitler's apartment, the story told by his housekeeper Josephine Bauer, the circumstances surrounding the funeral and Adolf's history of brandishing the revolver, all supported Hitler's murder of his lover and niece, Geli Raubal.

A suicide would have resulted in no Catholic rights, but Geli was given full Catholic rights, wherever they could be found. They were not granted in Munich, so Geli was buried in Vienna. Even the Catholic priest Pater Paunt, gave this explanation to Geli's brother Leo: "My poor friend, if your sister had committed suicide, I could not have performed the ceremony. You must be content with this. More I cannot tell you."[15]

treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

Leo Raubal had now lost a father and a daughter to uncle Adolf. Leo contacted Fritz Gerlich, founder of *Der Gerade* (*The Right Way* weekly). In a pamphlet Gerlich exposed Hitler's murder of Geli and for his efforts was arrested, held, and then killed in the Night of the Long Knives on 30 June 1934, as were many of Hitler's enemies.

---

[14] This was confirmed in the affidavit of Herr Senter, the proprietor of the Bratwurstglöckl Restaurant.

[15] *The Memoirs of Bridget Hitler*, pp. 103–3.

After this meeting Leo met his cousin Patrick Hitler at his father's bar in Berlin. They flatted together and after some time Leo spoke about Geli's murder adding that Adolf had threatened him with his revolver at Berchtesgaden when he was talking to Geli about his pregnant girlfriend.

> Leo Raubal (junior): "I am sure my mother knows what happened. She was really Adolf's accomplice, because she tolerated his making love to Geli. She knew; yet she did nothing. Was she afraid? Possibly. Or was it only that she did not want to give up her comfortable life? When Geli was shot I suppose Mother felt it was useless to quarrel with Adolf over it. Geli was irrevocably lost to her: why should she lose Adolf too?"[16]

The alternative may have been as drastic as changing the leader of Germany and postponing WWII. The British helped to cover up Hitler's murder of Geli and for this they used their agent Hermann Goering. A month later his own wife Carin died, officially from a cold she caught on the border during a crossing. This stopped both men from settling into domestic bliss. It kept them focused on their mission with renewed aggravation.

Hitler was becoming the perfect weapon for radical social change and the destruction of existing military infrastructures, which he carried out with exemplary effect over the next decade. Those in the know feared Hitler even more, but the official propaganda from *Hitler and Geli* reads: "In many ways he was a very sweet and caring man."

When Hitler became Chancellor he transferred Geli's body to Berchtesgaden and placed it in a magnificent sarcophagus that never bore her name. Hitler placed flowers under Geli's photograph and always remembered the anniversary of her murder, but there were costs. Hitler developed a stomach ailment, became a vegetarian, invented the vegetarian steak and as it turned out, the vegetarian marriage.

Hitler was into being defecated on by women and average women felt disgusted and reacted strongly. As a result there was quite a strong urge for them to kill themselves. Geli's replacement, Eva Braun, was "a pretty, empty-headed blonde receptionist with a round face and blue eyes," who faked suicide twice (1932, 1935) in order to get Hitler's attention away from Geli. Hitler attended her but was not so much in love with her. She

---

[16] Ibid, p. 106.

At the Olympic Games in Garmisch, Berlin, in 1936, Hitler requested his sister Paula change her name, and to maintain the strictest incognito. She changed her name to 'Wolf', which was Hitler's nickname and one of their towns of origin, 'Gross Wolfgers'. She changed her title from 'Ms' to 'Mrs', changing from Ms Paula Hitler to Mrs Paula Wolf.

Mrs Paula Wolf was arrested as Hitler's sister by US Intelligence on 12 July 1945 and again on 5 June 1946. She was deeply affected by Hitler's announced death. She was released and worked in an arts and crafts shop in Vienna (toiling for mental health) and wrote *He Was Still My Brother*. She moved into a humble two-bedroom flat in Berchtesgaden on 1 December 1952, very close to Hitler's mountain retreat, Eagle's Nest, in southern Bavaria, near the German/Austrian border. She lived in seclusion and died seven and a half years later on 1 June 1960. Ms Paula Hitler (alias Mrs Paula Wolf) never married and had no children.[30]

In 1997, I interviewed a woman who attended one of the Nuremberg Rallies: "I found it positively orgasmic, as did so many other women at the time". Despite his many and various shortcomings, Hitler had a way with the ladies. "Women went slack at the mouth and breathed heavily, as if in the grip of sexual excitement." Hitler was able to tap into their sexuality en masse, and Germany's women responded by backing Hitler and also influencing their men to do so.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

> "It seemed as if the Earth's surface were spreading out in front of me, like a hemisphere that suddenly splits in the middle, spewing out an enormous jet of water, so powerful that it touched the sky and shook the earth. I felt quite paralysed."[31] An orgasm perhaps.

> "Many were fascinated by his hypnotic power, and there are well-attested accounts of the hysteria which affected women at his meetings. Hitler himself attached great importance to the women's vote, and this was one of the reasons which he gave for not marrying. He liked to have beautiful women in his company."[32]

Hitler knew his material with a passion and orated rather than read, relying on the magical power of the spoken word. He studied under the Munich comedian Weiss Ferdl and was taught to make only a few points, repeating them endlessly. The comedian reinforced his belief that "A big lie is always more credible than a little one".

Deconstructed people have a great deal of difficulty forming long-term relationships, as do those who surround them. They tend to know how to bond quickly and un-bond just as quick. This is a product of compartmentalisation that occurs during deconstruction and the late in life 'altering of a subconscious'. "A curious effect the upper-rank Nazis had on those who joined them. They very often broke up their marriages, no matter how happy they might have been before."[33]

Deconstructed people cannot form intimate relationships like marriage, as they are, for the most part, not themselves. They are essentially a machine for someone else's purpose. As a result, their sexual relations fill a void rather than establish a relationship and their boundaries tend to be as intransigent as their goals. Hitler was primarily a vehicle for someone else's purpose. As a result, he remained single and unable to marry.

Hitler's relationship with his parents was conflict ridden. Hitler's primary love was his housekeeper, who was also his niece (Geli Raubal). He was incestuous, prone to homosexuality in the trenches, and had no children. Hitler lacked trust and his boundary was jealousy which resulted in the convenient murder/suicides of several of his partners.

> "During his final few hours in the bunker, loyal followers raced to burn all remaining documents that might shred light on the Führer. Hitler married Eva Braun [at midnight] on 29 April 1945 as a further measure to cover up his homosexuality. Hitler died as he lived, lying and covering up."[34]

Hitler was 'a multiplicitous sadomasochistic
coprophilic homosexual Anglophile'.

> "It remained for the younger generation to complete the break, to cut the ties to the past and achieve freedom from sentiment, prejudices and memories. Paradoxically, in doing so, in a sense it actually completed Hitler's revolution . . . All comparisons between recent and the earlier movements break on the one reef."[35]

---

[30] The Dwight D. Eisenhower Library.

[31] Leni Riefenstahl's Memoirs, *New Zealand Herald*, 13–14 September 2003, A27.

[32] *Prelude to Terror*, p. 419.

[33] *The Amiable Prussian*, p. 70.

[34] Narrator Dennis Lawson, *Was Hitler Gay?*

[35] *Hitler*, pp. 762–763.

Hitler's Psychiatric Condition

Neurotics have the ability to harm themselves. Psychotics have the ability to harm others. Hitler did both, but as a British military agent, he was trained to harm others en masse and to harm himself with a cocktail of drugs and perverse sexuality.

In 1911, the Swiss psychiatrist Eugen Bleuler invented the term 'Schizophrenia' for the condition of having a split mind. The following year Hitler began his British Military Psych-Ops training (February–November 1912). Hitler had defensive and self-important postures because he was living a fantasy given to him by others in order to change the times.

Hitler was part neurotic, psychotic, paranoid and schizophrenic. This was the basis of his deconstruction, which although developed, was always in the experimental phase. That is, it was always being tested and improved upon.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

This work continues in Tavistock today. It includes the deconstruction of all age groups within Britain, including pre-school, school children, teenagers, young adults, working adults, and the elderly. It works the media, education and politics towards a predetermined plan. In the centre is the main military deconstruction building. It is surrounded by buildings, which specialise in more publicly acceptable forms of deconstruction with names like the 'Tavistock Institute for Human Relations'.

For total control over a person, the record of an embarrassing sexual history is essential. From this, neurosis, psychosis, paranoia and schizophrenia are developed and continually built upon. The avoidance of shame becomes a personal motivation.

A sense of persecution and self-importance are characteristic of paranoiacs – the ability to harm oneself. When the war schools look for their new protagonists they always look for paranoiacs with a personal history of persecution and self-importance. This gives the maximum gap in the subconscious for deconstruction to take place – the gap between persecution and self-importance.

The persecution and self-importance of paranoiacs are coat-hooks to hang the persecution of others on. Mass deaths are hung on paranoia and psychosis. Huge changes in the destinies of people and countries are hung on self-importance and schizophrenia[1] – the ability to deny one's most horrible actions.

The huge gap between self-persecution and self-importance creates an emotional void that acts as a driving force. When nothing of importance is happening, when ordinary life and interaction is occurring, they appear empty, lost, and unable to casually interact. Hence those deconstructed always seek drama and prefer intense dramas like war.

The huge gap between self-persecution and self-importance creates an emotional void that acts as a driving force. When nothing of importance is happening, when ordinary life and interaction is occurring, they appear empty, lost, and unable to casually interact. Hence those deconstructed always seek drama and prefer intense dramas like war.

Those deconstructed prefer dramas they control, dramas they have created, or have had a hand in creating, and are motivated by the continual cover-up of their shame. Deconstructed, self-important, neurotic-paranoiac-schizophrenics have a natural preference to create large dramas on the scale of war.

In this way, on 14 March 1939, Hitler could watch a movie and dictate to two secretaries simultaneously, one a proclamation to the German people, another a proclamation to the Czech people, and a letter to Benito Mussolini of Italy, while he watched a movie and kept the Czechoslovakian President Hácha waiting from 1.15 am to 4 am.

When Hitler finally saw President Hácha he said Germany would invade his country in a few hours at dawn, which it did.[2]

Such things of importance become natural and things ordinary become clumsy and unnatural. Paranoiacs are tense and insecure and find it difficult to form relationships. They are socially incompetent, habitually self-centred, and react badly to criticism.

---

[1] The common use of schizophrenia – 'split mind' – is used.

[2] *Hermann Göring*, pp. 183–4.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Those deconstructed have the same social patterns as paranoiacs. The history of antagonistic war leaders is full of paranoiacs who are tense and insecure – who find it difficult to form *normal* relationships. Alexander the Great, for instance, was a necrophiliac. He used to ride into battle naked and sodomise the injured as they were killed, or kill the injured and then sodomise the dead. These homosexual necrophiliacs would then have their press announce that they were heroes with such names as 'Alexander the Great' and 'Lawrence of Arabia'.[3]

Neurotics have the ability to harm themselves and Hitler did this through his sexuality, his massive drug addiction and his refusal to see a qualified doctor.

Hitler's mother had two stillbirths before Adolf and stillbirths are suggestive of congenital syphilis. During Hitler's deconstruction, he was instilled with a fear of syphilis and a fear of educated doctors. Thus Hitler was drawn to quacks for the treatment of syphilis.

The British played on Hitler's neurosis towards 'syphilis and educated doctors' by introducing the British-run quack, Dr Theodor Gilbert Morell, a 5'6", 16½ stone (105 kg) delusional who had professed to be a venereal specialist for the previous six months. His office in Kurfurstendamn was covered with diplomas, qualifications and the signed photographs of famous film-acting clients. Hitler envied the famous and was drawn to this. This was a standard British set-up and has often been satirised in the movies.

Dr Morell became Hitler's doctor from January 1937 to April 1945, and no matter how much he was criticised by Hitler's staff, including other more reputable doctors in Hitler's staff, Hitler clung to Dr Morell like a fearful neurotic momma's boy. Hitler and Dr Morell had been designed for each other. Each time Hitler woke up, the first to attend to him was his aide. The second was Dr Morell, who began Hitler's day with an alphabet soup of drugs to treat his phantom syphilis.

---

[3] Thomas Edward Lawrence (1888–1935) was George Bernard Shaw's illegitimate son with one of Renoir's models. Turks interrogated him by sodomy with no new information forthcoming. The Colonel of MI-5 took him to a disused post office, placed him on the large mailing table, jumped on his head till his neck broke, then placed the body beside his motorcycle – officially an accident to this day.

As a dedicated neurotic, Hitler was dependent on having his non-existent syphilis treated. As a dedicated paranoiac, Hitler clung to superstition even if it was to kill him.

Paranoiacs are prone to superstition. Religion is based on superstition. All one needs to turn people to a superstition, like religion, is to make them paranoid. To do this, a few people are killed, a few more are harassed, the lot are surrounded, and the fear of God is instilled into them – hence religion.

Religion is a double-edged sword, a superstition that kills its own people through the practice of 'fear of life' and an even greater 'fear of death'. It is a huddle mentality, easily struck from the outside when their heads are down. In this way war and religion have been working together hand-in-hand for centuries.

The priests provide paranoia in the church (fear of God) and assist the military in their cover-ups (fear of exposure from military intelligence). The military kills and religion cleans up to begin the cycle again and again.

This creates an ongoing fear of reality and fear of God, with the army providing the fearful reality and the need to believe in God . . . and the Church providing the House of God – 'the House of Paranoiac Superstitious Fear of Reality and God'. Hence Hitler was backed by the Catholics.

Such is the cyclic symbiotic relationship between the military and religion, with both groups specialising in paedophilia. The victims of paedophilia enter either the church or the military often to repeat the cycle as adult priests and mercenaries, thus creating the 'paedophile's family tree'. This occurred amongst both the Nazis during WWII and Americans after WWII with the British running the Nazi paedophile programme.[4]

---

[4] Since the first edition of this book, the British have admitted torturing German prisoners to death, but without any mention of British paedophilia. Americans repeated Nazi paedo-atrocities in Operation ANACONDA, sexually molesting, brutalizing, murdering and kidnapping children in such a breath-taking total lack of compassion that, to all intents and purposed, they were the same force. Both forces were heavily influenced by the occult, use occult practices and arguments in their affairs have shown absolutely no degree of compassion whatsoever. In Abu Ghraib Americans were so sentenced without mentioning paedophilia in any media.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

After WWII religion remained popular for twenty years and then waned as people forgot about the war. Religion was revived again with 9-11 which created the biggest run on Bibles since the printing press was invented.

Since the Freemasons' declaration of the end of religion in 1891, religions have been increasingly replaced with the League of Nations (1918–39) and the United Nations (1945–2001). The UN became completely ineffective when the US refused to fund it and then agreed to fund it to 50% as long as no American was ever charged with war crimes. In this simple step the UN stepped aside and allowed an unchallenged US military dictatorship of the world. Very quickly 9-11 happened.

The UN supports paranoia by setting up camps and having audible sex orgies and gang-bangs, while those outside are selectively slaughtered. An American female doctor working for the UN did this in Rwanda in May 2004, having sex with a row of male UN workers.[5] The Rwandans outside could hear her orgasmic screaming as they were getting their throats cut. This promotes paranoia, superstition and religion, all of which are noticeably rampant in the African countries. Superstitious paranoid Africa is now the new centre of Catholicism and Catholicism is now a black-centred religion.

Europe was like this between the wars – paranoid, superstitious and religious. Paranoia, superstition and religion are the pre-heaters to war. For the cycle of wars to continue unchallenged, the proliferation of ignorance is essential.

The Bible is not a document for enlightenment but a document to categorise trust and support paranoia. It was originally written by the Catholics between AD180 and AD240 as a means to suppress the Christians. It worked. Ever since, Christians have been renowned for their fear of death and tend towards paranoia about anything and everything. The Christian superstition is that a stocky swarthy olive-skinned dead man will come back to life as a tall thin white man and take away their paranoia and fear of death. This is pathological paranoia. Continuing the analysis en masse, it makes Christians borderline in society and they are treated as such.

---

[5] Under "UN failures", Wikipedia lists "Sexual abuse by UN peacekeepers" as occurring in Burundi, Democratic Republic of Congo, Ivory Coast, Liberia [and Rwanda]. The abuse is widespread and ongoing, despite the many UN probes and revelations. UN Peacekeepers have been sexually abusing/gang-raping girls as young as 12 in at least a third of the countries they occupy.

Religion, war and paranoia – faith, death and the fear of life – are rekindled every time we attack ourselves. If religion can work in this way, why not war?

Borderline refers to the border between normality and psychosis. Borderline people are characterised by a disinterest in exertion, boredom, weariness, depression and sudden inappropriate outbursts of anger. Hitler had all of these attributes. His father had them more so and was either schizophrenic or borderline schizophrenic.

Hitler himself was not schizophrenic because that disease takes hold before the age of 45 and needs to be present for at least six months. He also did not have the lesser schizophreniform, nor did he have a schizo-affective state, a term invented by the American J. Kasanin in 1933 to describe people that were 'odd'.

Hitler was part neurotic, part paranoid and part borderline schizophrenic. This was developed as a result of being deconstructed and continually drugged by the British and as a result of having his 'anchor phrases' continually activated. Hitler became a partial psychopath, as was his Tavistock training, and he acted accordingly. Hitler lost it at times and was a borderline personality with a schizotypal disorder.[6]

Hitler himself said, "They always said I was crazy".[7] "Newsreels of the time showed his tremendous, absurd self-awareness – scarcely a natural being."[8] Hitler had an air of difference. "Anyone who has seen this man [Hitler] face to face, has met his uncertain gaze without depth or warmth, from eyes that seem hard and remote, and has then seen that gaze go rigid, will have certainly experienced the uncanny feeling that that man is strange, that man is not normal."[9]

---

[6] Other Tavistock trained killers include Angela Davis and Stockley Carmichael.

[7] *Hitler*, p. 4.

[8] *Doppelgängers*, p. 24.

[9] East Prussian industrialist Hermann Rauschning, 1940.

Psychopaths rarely show the perseverance and persistence that Hitler and Stalin had. They could only complete their jobs with the assistance of British war-school training and continual support which included British spies. Both Stalin and Hitler pursued their goals in a similar time frame. Stalin trained in 1907 and was involved in the 1917 Russian Revolution. Hitler trained in 1912 and was involved in a putsch in 1921 and 1923. They both shared a decade of lag from their British training to revolutions in their own countries.

Both Stalin and Hitler pursued their goals during WWII as a counterpart to Britain's desire for war.

What appears to be 'a warring psychopath' is often 'a deconstructed paranoiac', or more specifically, someone deconstructed who has a tendency towards paranoia. In Hitler and Stalin's case, they were deconstructed people whose paranoia could be utilised. This made them perfect combative killing machines.

Hitler and Stalin were motivated to war. They did not seem to mind that their opponents were equally their informants in 'the play of death', as long as it was *others* who did the dying. They would do anything to achieve this . . . to kill as many others in order to survive, and to fake their own deaths where necessary. When their doppelgängers died they began to believe in their own immortality. This made them even more delusional and forever braver.

Under these conditions war could only escalate.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

26 X

Hitler's Deconstruction

February–November 1912

The author may appear to be labouring points into exclusive simplicity, but such a mindset was used to develop subconscious deconstruction. The reconstruction of the subconscious, on the other hand, is based on a similar but opposing model.

The first method of reconstruction, seconded from the KGB under instructions from the author, is to bypass the conscious and unconscious mind and talk directly to the subconscious by playing music at one level with the message received by sound pulse on the second level.

The second method, developed by the author, prior to receiving the first method, bypasses the conscious and unconscious minds and talks directly to the subconscious in its language, which happens to be something rather close to Cockney rhyming slang. The conscious mind is kept busy focusing on some part of the face, body and action thereof, while the unconscious mind focuses on the corresponding quality or attribute desired. The corresponding colloquial speech patterns are then utilised to instruct the subconscious.

The conscious and unconscious minds are used as protectors for the subconscious. When they are kept busy the message goes straight to the subconscious. Because the conscious and unconscious minds are busy in a sympathetic state, the message is immediately integrated on all levels, without confusion and is 'three minds ready'.

In this way suboncscious integration takes place to a predetermined goal and all actions in the universe of that mind fall into place.[1] The subconscious mind then acts as a Google search engine, unlimited in scope, to ensure that the predetermined goals eventuate.

In this way, the most ordinary people can have a life of genius.

---

[1] This method was developed in Budapest (February–August 1990) after interviewing the KGB in Moscow and noticing that the population had been deconstructed . . . I've worked on a client and five minutes later they've said, "So what, nothing's changed", and walked out with a completely different attitude. It became hard to justify the fee so I turned to history's great unpayer – history.

The first method is easier, but requires equipment and applied continuous application for ten hours. The second method can be achieved in a matter of minutes, does not require any equipment, and can be done without the other person knowing it is being done. Both have their advantages.

Such deconstruction feed-lines used by the British Psych-Ops war school to Adolf (Edmund) Hitler were: "You are special. You will change the map of the world. It is your destiny to do so. Suppress those who think against you. Suppress those who speak against you. Suppress those who act against you. Surround yourself with people who can be moulded to your vision."

Consequently, Hitler had a failure to act responsibly to his own people and had no conscience about doing evil. Others thought him evil whereas Hitler considered it his destiny and all others compliant to his subconscious view of the world.

Once Hitler was used to start WWII and bring Russia in on an equal footing, Hitler and Stalin were then set against each other. This brought great mirth to the military Freemasons at Tavistock who watched the war privately with great interest. Their eye was on improving the next generation of training. This type of military training has been developed over the last five hundred years and shows no sign of abating.

At least now subconscious training can be debated.

Hitler was in his alpha state when his conscious, unconscious and subconscious minds were aligned with his Psych-Ops training – for an aggressive takeover. In this state he could be considered a genius. In lesser activities he was moody, irritable, lazy, difficult and bipolar. He was firing on all cylinders only when aggressively taking over Europe or building his new Germany.

Herbert Döhring ran Hitler's house at Berchtesgarden and was a member of Hitler's personal bodyguard, the SS Lifeguard, Leibstandarte: "Hitler was very moody. His whole expression could change in a few hours. He made a colossal impression. His gaze would pierce right through you."

Fridolin von Spaun: "Suddenly I noticed Hitler's eyes resting on me. He was indeed observing me. And that was one of the most curious moments in my life. I had the feeling that he was searching somehow – the gaze which at first rested completely on me suddenly went straight through me and into an unknown distance. It was so strange. And the long gaze which he had given me convinced me completely that he was a man of honourable intentions. I can only say that I'm glad that I saw Hitler's beautiful side."[2]

Espayo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

It's an old psychological trick to focus on the back of someone's head. The recipient feels disregarded and simultaneously that the person can see right through them, creating awe and admiration without effort on the part of the gazer.

During deconstruction, the group to be paranoid about is selected and implanted. Thus, if one wants to 'kill Jews', one selects a paranoiac with a personal history of persecution and implants a hatred of Jews. The more Jews they kill, the more invincible they feel. Humans are easily programmed like this. Hitler was programmed by the British to kill the Jews and this was his invincibility pill.

Racism is passed down from generation to generation on the same principles. In this way, the British killed the Jews by deconstructing the subconscious of a paranoid Austrian. That it worked to such a degree surprised even the British Freemasons, but it didn't occur without continual 'destiny' support.

During Hitler's deconstruction, he was trained to kill the Spanish, Jews, Czechs, Poles, Russians, Americans, the French and those from the low countries (Belgium and Holland – low on the watertable). He was also trained to consider Germans as sacrificial heroes. He was trained to terrorise the British and to stop terrorising them when ordered. In this way, the British had created the perfect opponent for war and had much of their war fought for them. (Hitler could have won the war at Dunkirk in June 1940 after only nine months had not the British interfered with him.)

"I have not come into this world to make men better, but to make use of their weaknesses."[3] Not only is this the perceived credo of a borderline psychopath, but it is a hallmark of deconstruction. Schizophrenia, deconstruction and the latest technology of military assistance have many traits in common. These include:

---

[2] *The Nazis, A Warning from History*.

[3] *The Last Days of Hitler*, p. 274.

1. Thoughts believed to come from external sources – "Get up and get out of here".
2. Sensations believed to occur from outside sources – He thought he was "the Man of Destiny, the Chosen . . . I am the voice that calls from the desert . . . I bring the mandates of Providence."
3. Auditory hallucinations and actions in which the person believes they are acting under external control – Hitler's entire upper palate were metal fillings capped with porcelain and his lower jaw had two metal bridges. He wore a radio receiver in his mouth through which all his thoughts and actions could be influenced – upper palate for the subconscious and the lower palate, which could be audibly heard, for the conscious mind – "Get out of the bunker now".

These three sensations were to become the cornerstone of German psychiatry – thoughts and sensations from outside sources and auditory hallucinations. Hitler and the classification of schizophrenia were developed simultaneously (1911/12). Commensurate with the Freemasons' destruction of God (1891), all divine experiences have since become pathologised, although the origin of their pathology has not been identified.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

In conjunction with these deconstructed/schizophrenic states and his British military training, Hitler had the most remarkable recall of military data and the ability for things that interested him (that which he was deconstructed into) well above the norm. That is, his subconscious mind had been trained in certain areas to perform exceedingly well. In other areas he was trained to be exceedingly bad and to procrastinate. He was a brilliant military strategist, but he had the worst body odour of anyone in history. Hitler smelt like the devil at a pit stop. He was an avid drug user, would walk around with food spilt all over him, not make decisions, and sleep until 2 pm. Churchill was the same, exactly the same.

Despite this, one of the great British military strategists and historians, Basil Liddell Hart, wrote that Hitler was possibly one of the greatest military strategists of all time. This did not come from waffling about in the ghettoes of Vienna, but in the military Psych-Ops War School of Tavistock, England. It was they who had planted five hundred years of military experience in him.

The Tooth Fairy

Hitler heard voices in his head his entire adult life. "While I was in the trenches, I heard a voice that said 'Get up and get out of here'. And so I did. A few moments later a grenade exploded on the group with whom I had been eating just before, and no one survived."[4]

For the rest of his life, Hitler continued to hear voices that called him and guided him, so much so that he was convinced he was "the Man of Destiny, the Chosen". He shouted to his crowds, I am the voice that calls from the desert . . . I bring the mandates of Providence . . ." This was blamed on his mother telling him of a great future. His mother and aunt, Klara Põlzl, had lost four children and had two stillbirths before Adolf was born.

But there is now a more modern explanation. Amalgam fillings are comprised of mercury, silver, copper, tin and zinc, with the average person having ten fillings and each amalgam filling weighing 1 gram, giving a total of 10 grams of fillings. Each filling is 52% mercury, creating an average of 5.2 grams of mercury in each mouth.

In 1848, the American Society of Dental Surgeons found 11 of its New York members guilty of malpractice for using amalgam fillings and suspended them. Amalgams were not accepted as standard practice until after 1895. The common term for mercury in Germany was then 'quick silver' and the German pronunciation for 'quick' is 'quack'. Those dentists who used amalgam fillings were called 'quacks'. This term has now come to mean anyone who is an "ignorant pretender to medical skill".[5]

In the 1960s and '70s dental assistants were putting mercury fillings in teeth without holes, merely as practice. In the 1970–80–90s many people were complaining that they were receiving radio signals transferred from teeth, to jaw, to ear. This resulted in a rush on white ceramic fillings and the removal of mercury fillings in the 1990s.

But the dentists, with the help of the military, went one step further and offered micro-radios as dental appendages from 1999. These were used as self-fitted two-way radio molar caps as illustrated in the movie *Charlies Angels* (2001). Directional microphones were developed and a voice can now be projected and heard over a kilometre away. (See *The Fluoride Con*, *Appendix 2*)

---

[4] *Very Illustrious Patients*, p. 102.

[5] *The Random House Dictionary of The English Language*.

Certainly the Illuminati and Freemasons that trained Hitler had this simple radio technology in 1912. Radio transmissions existed publicly from 1897 but the Illuminati had them a century earlier.

There is no greater way to keep a subject's 'subconscious fit to the cause' than by talking to them invisibly, advising them to move, and then killing everyone else. This places absolute trust in the voice within and it is almost impossible for that person to act otherwise. After all, it is the voice that guides their subconscious into safety.

This resulted in those who were trained and deconstructed (brainwashed) by the external party (British military, Freemasons and Illuminati) in feeling invincible, immortal and full of self-praise.

Amalgam fillings are bad enough, but Hitler didn't have any. Hitler's teeth were in constant decay and he had 18 fillings which were all metal, fronted with porcelain. He had only five natural teeth left. His upper jaw was entirely metal in one large bridge and his lower jaw had two significant bridges.[6]

Adolf Hitler had a radio receiver in his mouth wired straight to his hearing receptors. The upper palate was the main receiver and spoke directly to his subconscious brain. The two lower bridges transferred the audible sound to his ears and brought these messages into conscious thought. Hitler was a puppet with wooden and metallic strings (sex and teeth). Only a person with a similar dental record within 50 metres would pick up the same message, but his radio messages were finely tuned to the make-up of *his* dental work only. Similar dental records were rare, kept out of range, or extinguished.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

Although Hitler was wracked with doubts and uncertainty, he was limitlessly obstinate and intransigent and it was unthinkable for him that he would die before his mission was complete. He felt designated by God and history to create a stable Europe for a thousand years. He had feelings of greatness and purpose, immortality and importance, and could not see a world other than his one. He had no sense of harming others and carried on regardless.

"Hitler called himself 'the greatest liberator of humanity' . . . He took his role of saviour with the utmost seriousness. He eliminated the one most obvious revolutionary phenomenon of which people were most afraid: the Marxist left."[7]

---

[6] *Doppelgängers*, p. 148.

[7] *Hitler*, pp. 755, 760, 763.

Both Stalin and Hitler were treated like gods by their countrymen, both leaders replaced 'God', and both were accused of having superhuman qualities. After all communism is 'anti-God and anti-Family' and in fascism there can be only 'one'. In both communist and fascist countries, God is replaced by whomever has totalitarian power and all subjects are subordinate to their will.

Early days of Deconstruction

In September 1908 Hitler disappeared into the darkness of the flophouses and homes for men. Here he was quickly spotted by British Intelligence in the Asyl für obdachlose shelter in Vienna. It was this experience which rid him of any compassion, referring to the Vienna home for men as "that school for meanness". This experience was the foundation for his "brutal struggle" and was the principle theme of *Mein Kampf* (*My Struggle*).[8]

After leaving Liverpool in May 1913, officially as his deceased brother Edmund, Hitler returned to Vienna and Munich where he was charged with draft dodging, but got off. Ironically when war came he volunteered.

"As for his record in the First World War and his having won the Iron Cross First Class – I do not know. I never saw his file in the Ministry of War, but I do know that several people lost their lives over that file and I think that there must have been something pretty bad in it."[9]

Hitler won the Iron Cross Second Class in December 1914, the regimental certificate for bravery in May 1918 and the Iron Cross First Class on 4 August 1918. His fellow soldiers said that he was always under some sort of strain and saw no evidence for these awards. History has not unearthed any either. Hitler was put forward for all these decorations by the Jewish regimental adjutant, Hugo Gutmann.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Despite these decorations, he was never promoted past private first class, which essentially means he was 'keen, brainless and had no ability to lead men', but with Jewish connections.[10] Hitler was promoted under British influence so that he could carry weight with the German people later.

Hitler attempted a lesser-known revolution in 1921 and was charged and convicted on 18 February 1922 by Judge Gay Knightheart. Considering it was a revolution, four policemen were killed and they were caught robbing a bank, the normal charge would have been treason followed by execution. But it was reduced from what should have been a death penalty to one month in prison. This illustrated Hitler's high degree of British Intelligence protection even then.

Hitler attempted another revolution on 9 November 1923. He took over a right-wing meeting in a beer cellar in Munich and called for a national revolution. This was the famous Beer Cellar Putsch or Munich revolution in which another four policemen and a further eight revolutionaries were killed. At the same time, Hitler's men tried to rob a bank. Hitler was placed under arrest and put on trial, which was heard in February 1924.

Hitler applied to have his sentence reduced – something you only do if you have extreme confidence in your connections. Without connections, the sentence would just as likely have been increased. Hitler's appeal was heard by the same Judge Gay Knightheart, who, as his name suggests, was under the influence of the British Freemasons and their longer-term plans to use Hitler to create war. Hitler should have got eight years, but only got nine months in the rather comfortable Landsberg prison.

The only people who can be compulsorily repatriated in the build-up to war are convicted criminals. History's finger points loudly at this, especially when their sentence is so reduced.

One of Hindenburg's comrades from WWI, General Ludendorff, wrote, "I prophesi to you solemnly that this cursed man will take our Reich (country) into the abyss". He was well aware of Psych-Ops training and could see that Hitler had the signs of a British trained Psych-Ops agent.

General Ludendorff and Adolf Hitler were also co-conspirators in the 1923 Munich Beer Hall Putsch. When the shooting started, General Ludendorff carried on walking and Hitler hit the deck. During the trial Hitler's co-conspirator General Ludendorff complained that Hitler had hit the deck, regarded this as cowardice, and never revised his opinion.

At the end of the trial (26 February 1924) General Ludendorff, Hitler and supporters were photographed outside the courthouse, standing in triumphant poses. I queried the Spymaster about this and he said, "They're German, what do you expect".

It wasn't so hard for Hitler in Landsberg prison. He had a pleasant cell with pictures and decorations and had many visitors including his friends Leutnant Colonel Kriebel and the dapper Emil Maurice. When remembering his stay at Landsberg Prison, Hitler later mused, "We could have opened a tobacconists shop in there from what we were given."

Hitler's mission statement was war in Germany, gifting France to England and war with Russia, as a method of mutual self-destruction.

---

[8] *Hitler*, p. 32.

[9] *The Amiable Prussian*, p. 69.

[10] *Hitler*, p. 68–9.

Referring to Hitler in 1927, Walther Stennes said, "He would talk and talk about the deeds he was going to do and, mind you, he actually did nearly all the things he promised. Fifteen years later [1943] . . . I would often pick up the newspaper and read of how he had done more of those things of which he had talked at our tea-table. One afternoon he told us how, when he was the ruler of Germany, he would have a great war and conquer the world; and when he had done that, he would lay out a Victory Avenue from Doberitz to Berlin and would line it with captured guns and tanks as a memorial to the German Army. Well, he did rule Germany and he did have his great war and he very nearly won it. He also built that Victory Avenue."[11]

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Coded Words

Hitler's oratory even hypnotised himself. His eyes would glaze as he repeated himself into a frenzy. He was his own oral ecstasy. In synch with his Freemasonry Psych-Ops training, Hitler wanted to expand into war as soon as peace was mentioned. "Peace" was one of his activating words to plan for war with whatever direction the word "peace" came from.

"Goering could not understand Hitler's aggressive attitude towards Britain which appears to have sprung up after the Munich Accord ['Peace for our Time', 30 September 1938]."[12] Straight after this, Hitler made a speech attacking Churchill (Britain) and the Bolsheviks (Russia) – just as he was trained to do.

Walther Stennes: "Hitler had an incredible ability to think quickly, to judge quickly and to get quickly at the essentials of a situation . . . [but] he had no principles whatsoever, and this helped him.

"Hitler always managed to convince people that he really believed what he said. He would have tears in his eyes, but often his speeches were poor stuff in every way . . . Hitler would go straight on with his theme regardless of what the other person had said.

"He could switch so suddenly from being very nice to very nasty . . . at that moment I seemed to recognize the voice of the Devil . . . He was infernally persuasive and, if he tempted others in the same way, that would explain much of what happened in Germany. I was frightened . . . It was typical of his methods; one moment strict legality and the next, naked force.

"Hitler was moody – strange and quite inhuman. He had an uncanny influence on people which we could never understand, but no normal man and certainly no normal woman could possibly like him. [Voice of Walther and Hilde Stennes.]

"The real trouble was Hitler himself . . . He seemed to have an actual preference for muddle and complexity and he certainly liked to set different people against each other, then he felt sure that they would not combine against him . . .

"He would, for instance, delay the making of a decision for weeks while he was . . . talking to quite unimportant people. He was not lazy, sometimes he would not go to bed for one or two days, but he always shirked making a decision."[13]

It is common for double agents deconstructed by foreign ideologies to avoid alcohol during times of their missions. For Hitler, this was virtually all the time. He drank mineral water, avoided smoking, but was a dependent drug user and had his men taking daily doses of methamphetamines (speed).

Deconstructed double agents often rule over populations they have drugged for the purposes of deconstruction. This helps with the manifestation of their phantasmagoria, their all-encompassing illusion – *their* implanted reality they wish to impose on others to assist their cause.

---

[11] *The Amiable Prussian*, p. 68.

[12] *Hermann Göring*, p. 177.

[13] *The Amiable Prussian*, pp. 72, 73, 78, 80, 84.

Learning from Hitler, America began the Asian drug wars as the cheapest method of exporting drugs 'free' into the participating Western nations. The Asian wars simultaneously developed addicts and a counter-culture movement that rebelled against the war . . . by lapping up the drugs – the real reason for the war.

Spymaster: "Put a Hippie in a suit and what do you have? A fascist dedicated to deconstructing the masses."

Spying

When Hitler was working for 'British Army Intelligence' in Germany, he fronted as a German spy, and collected information on all the smaller parties. As for the Germans, he was not supposed to get involved with the parties. As for the British, he was supposed to get involved and draw on his Psych-Ops training, take the party over, mould it, and use it as his vehicle for ruling Germany.

> This was to be his vehicle for fulfilling such British affirmations as: "You will rule Germany; You will be the great ruler; You will build an empire greater than the British; You will become the world's most prominent household name; There will be no one more famous than you; You will be more famous than Wagner; You will carry on from Wagner and fulfil all the dreams his music and politics laid out; Your grandmother Maria Anna Schicklgruber was raped by Jewish aristocracy; Bring down the Jews; Take their money and their rights and kill them; You will be the greatest prophetic figure the German people have ever seen; Support will come from the most unexpected sources and will be available to you whenever needed; You will be the greatest liberator of humanity; Your life will flow into the glory of world fame; You will overturn the millennia."

Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

All this from an insignificant down-and-out tramp desperate to make his mark on the world. It worked. He is still the world's most notorious man.

At the age of thirty, Hitler found a malleable political party on the street and changed its name. "In 1919, while acting as an informer for the German Army, spying on the activities of small political parties, he became a member of one of them, changing its name to the *National Socialist German Workers' Party*, (National soczialistiche Deutsche Arbeiterpartei) abbreviated to NAZI, in 1920."[14]

---

[14] *The Cambridge Biographical Encyclopedia.*

"Wagner's [1813–83] political writings were Hitler's favourite reading, and the sprawling pomposity of his style unmistakably influenced Hitler's own grammar and syntax. Wagner's political writings, together with the operas, form the entire framework for Hitler's ideology.

"He thought of history as a kind of hall of fame with doors wide open to ambitious men. He knew nothing of the meaning and justification of tradition . . . he changed the map of Europe, destroyed empires, and promoted the rise of new powers, evoked revolutions, and brought the colonial age to an end.

"He considered himself Europe's last chance . . . he remained a European provincial with his gaze irretrievably fixated on the antagonisms of a vanished era . . . Despite his fundamentally defensive posture, he was long regarded as the really progressive, modern figure of the age . . . with the aura of stardom . . . from the totalitarian cult of the personality . . . Hitler blatantly proclaimed himself a ruler of this type. He himself also consistently stressed the optimistic, future-orientated character of Nazism. Its reactionary feature and its pessimistic nostalgia with regard to civilisation were largely given voice by Himmler . . . and a sizable band of the SS leadership.

"Wedded to his dreams, he was one of those who would prefer a life of disaster to a life of disillusionment . . . Unlike the Fascist type in general, he was not seduced by history but by his own educational experience, the shudders of happiness and terror that had been his in puberty."[15]

Hitler was trained by the British to build up Germany's infrastructure for war. Hitler was trained to hate and kill the Jews and to get back at the Rothschilds for taking over the Bank of England in 1815. (See *The Bank of England Heist*, *Appendix 6*)

"Hitler had rightly been called detached . . . his defensiveness was so full of resentments, and for this reason he defended the world he allegedly wanted to protect until he succeeded in destroying it.

"So it was that this reactionary man, unmistakably moulded by the nineteenth century, propelled both Germany and large parts of the world into the twentieth century. Hitler's place in history is much closer to that of the great revolutionaries . . . he drew his critical impulses from the desire to prevent the dawn of modern times and to return, by means of a grand, world-historical correction, to the starting point of all errors and mistaken developments.

---

[15] *Hitler*, pp. 56, 57, 754, 757, 758.

"It remained for Hitler to confer upon it the radicalness that made it properly revolutionary, thus profoundly changing a country . . . Under the demands of the totalitarian leader state, venerable institutions collapsed, people were wrenched out of their traditional slots, privileges were done away with, and all authorities that were not derived from, or protected by Hitler were smashed . . . since he knew how to make himself credible to the masses as an all-embracing substitute authority . . . he managed to confer the features of the *Zeitgeist* upon his emotional bias"[16] . . . through control of the media and entertainment.

Bridget Hitler: "Although I think it is a great mistake to overrate Adolf, I think it is an even greater mistake to underestimate him. Above all he is a confident actor with method in his greatest madness. He is the master of the art of the double-cross and is just as ruthless with his family and his friends. He is as much a mystery man to his followers as to the Americans, except in the cases where they 'have something on him'. Schaub, Streicher and Goering are understood to be in this enviable position.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

"In my opinion Adolf is an arch-hypocrite, perhaps the greatest of them all. He has always carefully arranged it so that he is not personally to blame for the deeds committed in his name. He was undoubtedly preparing right now the excuses for every crime he had perpetrated in the name of Germany.

"'It is not I,' he will say 'but the German State which did this or that. I ask it in the name of the German people. I was easily elected by the vote of the German people. For myself I have done nothing.'"[17]

Germany was the only defeated country in WWII that had failed to produce a resistance movement that survived. This is an indication that the leader was Psych-Ops trained and that another country and ideology were running him.

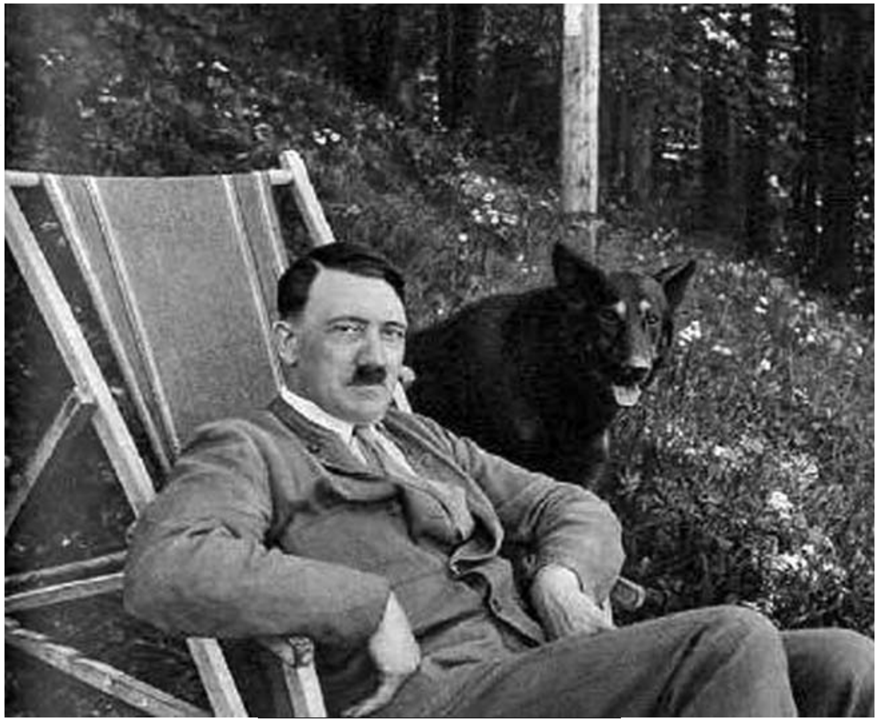
An interesting aside to Hitler and Stalin's British deconstruction lies with the Russian Foreign Affairs negotiator Molotov (1890–1986) who visited Germany in an attempt to negotiate the key to war with the West – the so-called "Molotov-Ribbentrop Non-Aggression Pact" (23 August 1939) between the Soviet Union and Germany, which came with British approval.

The Betar was a Jewish Intelligence agency that received the latest military training. They were mostly failed revolutionaries and always ready to prove themselves. They existed within the Bolshevik and Tsarist Intelligence, but were entirely loyal unto themselves. Their stock-in-trade became standard practice with such influences as the Molotov cocktail and Molotov's "Nyet" ('No') at UN meetings, which fostered the Cold War.

As a Jew, Molotov was privy to briefings from the Betar. When he visited Germany in 1939 he said to his German opposite number:

> "I can't believe how many things you have here that we also have in the Soviet Union. They are even called the same names, but yours are in German."

It was as if Molotov was thinking that Hitler and Stalin had attended the same war school, which of course they had – Tavistock, in Britain.[18]

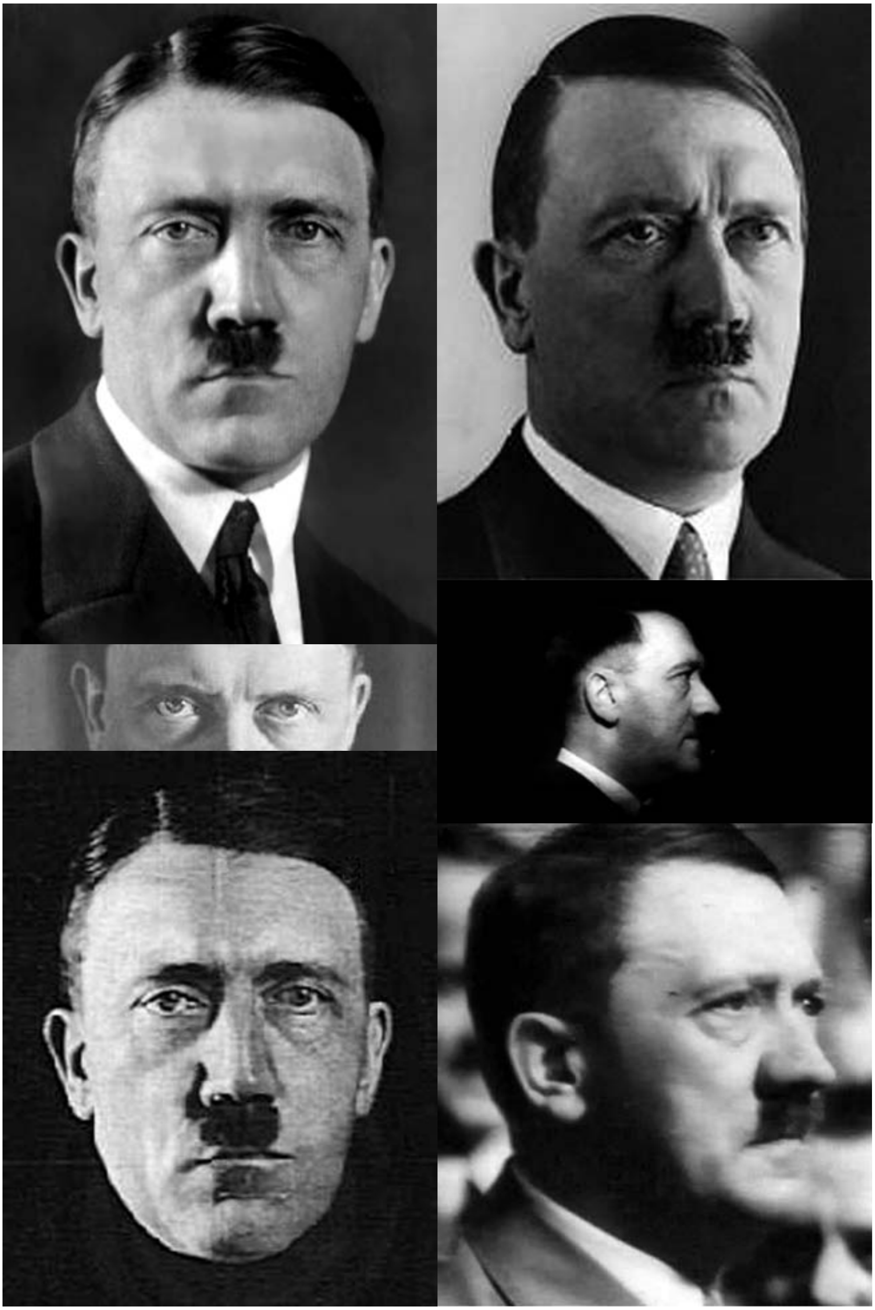


---

[16] *Hitler*, pp. 759, 761.

[17] *The Memoirs of Bridget Hitler*, p. 180.

[18] Tavistock Institute, 30 Tabernacle St, London, EC2A 4UE. They have more departments than the govt. and are the primary consultants to the government, giving it direction at every turn (U.K., U.S. & others). With foresight 20–50–100 years ahead, they are the teutonic brain behind the One World Order.



The Guardians of MI-6,

Please run these images through Mandrake biometrics and ascertain which are photographs of Hitler and which are doppelgängers.

PS. Remember to neither confirm nor deny . . . but a leak is okay.

Body Doubles

Churchill invented the term 'Iron Curtain' for Russia, received the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1953 (for books he didn't write) and was knighted the same year. "He achieved a world reputation not only as a gifted strategist and inspiring war leader, but as a great orator, a talented painter, and a stylish writer with a profound sense of history."[1]

Churchill, a Freemason and Druid, was also an alcoholic and a manic-depressive who may or may not have achieved all of these things. From the early 1900s Churchill drank a mixture of champagne and brandy and lounged in his bath until 2 pm singing *Clementine* while his manservants kept the temperature just right.

Winston Churchill made his famous speeches in the House of Commons: "I have nothing to offer but blood, toil, tears and sweat" (Inaugural Speech, 13 May 1940); "We shall fight them on the beaches" (Dunkirk, 4 June 1940); "This was their finest hour" (Battle of Britain, 18 June 1940); and "Never in the face of human conflict has so much been owed by so many to so few" (Battle of Britain, 20 August 1940) . . . but Parliament was not wired for sound at the time and the BBC had contracts for all *but* Churchill's parliamentary speeches.

Straight after the 4 June 1940 "We shall fight them on the beaches" speech, Churchill went to the BBC studio at Shepherd's Bush to deliver the same address to beam live to America and the Commonwealth. The recording equipment broke down and when the BBC asked Churchill to make the speech for a third time, he refused, saying, "I am rather busy, get an actor to do it".

Norman Shelley (1903–80) was a BBC radio Children's Hour actor for the BBC radio production of *Winnie the Pooh*. He was also a well-known Churchill impersonator and recorded the voice of 'Churchill' for all of the above speeches on 7 September 1942. He took his teeth out to correctly imitate Winston Churchill, something Churchill congratulated him on later.

There is still some debate amongst historians as to whether Churchill or Shelley did the live speech for BBC radio and which of them recorded "Never in the face of human conflict has so much been owed by so many to so few". The well endowed and much in demand, Norman Shelley, is not to be confused with Geoffrey Wilcott, "the funny old queer". Geoffrey Wilcott played Eeyore in the BBC's 'The House at Pooh Corner', a different radio show which started in April 1940. See Denis Gilford's, *The Golden Age of Radio, an Illustrated Companion* for minutia.

---

[1] *The Cambridge Biographical Encyclopaedia.*

Norman Shelley first claimed that he had recorded Churchill's famous speeches in the late 70s stating that the British Council had confidentially asked him to stand in for Churchill. According to Shelley, Churchill was too busy to come into the recording studio, but we now know that most members of Cabinet were heavy drinkers during the war years and Churchill was one of the most prolific. Such was Churchill's drinking that he began imbibing in his bath from 10 am to 2 pm, by which time he had finished his second cigar.

Churchill had a great deal of difficulty with alcohol, it was rumoured by his peers to be excessive, but was passed off as of little consequence, treated as taboo by embedded historians (which covers almost all published historians) and was never challenged until the next generation of insiders made it to print.

Churchill's speeches were first released by Decca in 1964. In 1983 the BBC asked Decca to stop claiming they were *all* BBC recordings, and in 1984 the BBC claimed the speeches were made by Churchill at his home in Chartwell (circa 1950). As well as infuriating the embedded historians, even this proved false.

In 1990 Sensimetrics (Cambridge, Massachusetts) confirmed some of the Churchill recordings to be the voice of Norman Shelley. The BBC Sound Archive then confirmed that Norman Shelley had recorded these at the old Transcription Service Studios near Regent's Park, with the rider that this was intended for the British War Council to send to America.

In October 2000, copies of these recordings were found by his son, conductor Anthony Shelley, in the attic. They were marked "BBC, Churchill: Speech. Artist Norman Shelley [stamped] September 7, 1942". The BBC then argued that the original recordings were mislabelled.

Richard M. Langworth of The Churchill Center (Hopkinton, N.H.) further stated: "What Shelley recorded, after the war, was an obscure, unpublished Churchill speech, the origin of which has eluded even the Churchill Archives."

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March

History's confusing debate continues between those who believe in the right to know, those who believe they know right, and those who believe it's their right for other's not to know. As such, history is always a three-way debate with new excuses arising as soon as the previous ones lose credibility. History is incredulous until someone comes up with a story from the coalface that is so outrageous it's the truth. Intelligence refers to this as "The ring of truth".

It may have taken fifty years to find out that Churchill had made the speeches in the House of Commons, but not all the radio broadcasts and not all the recordings . . . but even that is not the end of the matter.

History critic Christopher Hitchens: "Some of Churchill's worst speeches were delivered from the bottle's mouth, and some of his best could not, as we now have reason to know, have been delivered at all without the deputising of an impersonator.

"Churchill's later histories both suffer from defects and, as with the case of the Katyn massacre[2] contain unpardonable and self-interested revisions of the truth. As to [alcohol-related] longevity, an entirely pickled Queen Mother has just died at the age of 101."

The originality of some of Churchill's paintings is also up for grabs. It was the style those days to be an all-rounder, a Renaissance man, and there were plenty of artists for hire – Hitler's original doppelgänger for instance (1911–13). Churchill showed none of these renaissance attributes at Harrow, where he did so badly he was punished for poor work and lack of effort. He had to sit his entrance exam three times and then qualified to join the Royal Military Academy near the bottom of his class of 102.

In giving him the benefit of the doubt, school may have suppressed what intelligence Churchill had and he was admitted to the Royal Society for his artistic works, which were uninspired, but technically competent.

Debate continues over Churchill's famous speeches. Others have said that it was made for BBC broadcast by James Robertson Justice who later played Lord Scrumptious in Ian Fleming's *Chitty Chitty Bang Bang* (1968) . . . but this is poppycock.

---

[2] The Katyn massacre of 25,700 1939 Polish POWs occurred with Churchill's complicity. They were killed by the Soviets in 1940 using 9mm German Geko bullets. This was then blamed on the Nazis in 1944. When all the camps were added up, the Soviets had killed 60,000-70,000 polish POWs in related massacres.

After Norman Shelley's first 'Winston Churchill' radio broadcasts (18 June 1940) and recordings (7 September 1942), another actor played the part of Winston Churchill, while Britain's war leader was either inebriated, in another country, or in another country with the excuse that he was either inebriated or having a visit from "the Black Dog" of depression.

Leslie Howard (1893–1943) was a nice guy who had leading film roles in *Berkeley Square* (1933),[3] *The Scarlet Pimpernel* (1935), as George Higgins in *Pygmalion* (1938), which later became *My Fair Lady*, and as Ashley Wilkes in *Gone With the Wind* (1939), the world's most watched film. He also acted in *The First of the Few* (1942).

Leslie Howard was also a homosexual who had a flat in Chelsea, London. He was caught in a sexually compromising act in a public toilet in London and arrested for homosexual behaviour. Instead of charged he was taken to a military base where he spent the next three months learning to imitate Winston Churchill. He was not told it was for a canned meat operation, but then again, they never told their flight crews either.

The military then dressed Leslie Howard as Winston Churchill and leaked it out through known double agents that Churchill was going to fly to Cyprus. The plane was then shot down by the Germans 40 km off the English coast on 1 June 1943 and Leslie Howard was killed. Meanwhile Churchill went by another route to the Middle East and for the next 10 days the Germans thought Churchill was dead (1–11 June 1943). Officially Leslie Howard was killed on a special mission flight from Lisbon to London. Winston Churchill had doppelgängers for voice and transport and probably went through them with alarming regularity.

The gay Leslie Howard playing the heterosexual Ashley Wilkes, predicted his own future with this classic line from Metro-Goldwyn-Mayer's *Gone With the Wind*:

> "Most of the mysteries of the world were caused by wars and when the wars are over, no one ever knows what they were about."

It is not uncommon for those who seek retribution for their sins to mock enormous service to humanity as a form of appeasement. Service to the United Nations is a prime example. It is run and dominated by war criminals, and as such, it has been a primary ingredient in every war since 1950.

Kurt Waldheim was a German Sonder Führer (interpreter) in WWII and gave instructions to the Germans and the untermenschem

---

[3] *Berkeley Square* was Hollywood's first time-travel movie.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

(people not considered worthy of living). He then served as the Secretary General of the United Nations for nine years (1972–81). He was eventually charged in the 1980s with attempted murder over the Tonner's Club Investigation, but even this was swept under the carpet. Authorities rely on criminals in suits and their previous crimes make them completely malleable.

The Tonner's Club are made up of prominenti who bet money on the losses of shipping tonnage. This began in WWI, ran through WWII and has continued on to the present. Shipping sabotage was taught by the Stasi and the East German Navy at a Special School at Bolinger Bay on the Baltic Coast in East Germany. Records were 'lost' in 1989 and Bolinger Bay also appears to have disappeared off the map.

From the 1700s, Baltic shipping companies had their headquarters in London. In order to discuss chartering vessels and transporting cargo, they would meet in coffee houses – 'The Virginia and Baltic' was the most prominent. Here they would discuss international trading activities and also the sabotaging of competing vessels, something pirates were used for.

Pirates were given the timetables and routes of their competition. Since economic trade was by the trade winds and currents, the fast routes were more dangerous, and those shipping companies with the highest rate of delivery quickly dominated.

Some pirates were supported by their governments as a form of economic warfare and when they wanted to retire, all they had to do was exchange their last big booty for a knighthood. This was the case with Sir Francis Drake (knighted in 1580) who had been pre-sponsored by Britain's Queen Elizabeth.

English pirates even doubled as the royal navy during this period. In a lot of cases the pirates had more sway over the royal navy than if they had the Queen's commission in their pocket. Pirates like Sir Francis Drake were able to mix socially with royal naval officers and walk into their meetings with casks of Spanish sherry under their arms. They often had more power than those with gold braid on their shoulders. Drake was renowned for making suggestions and he virtually taught the royal navy the tactics used against the Spanish Armada.

English cannon balls were lighter and their fire was far more accurate than the Spanish. English sailors could lob a cannon ball into the crow's-nest of the mizzenmast at 2000 yards then board the galleons, knife in mouth, cutlass in hand. Drake was a thinking pirate who conjured up all aspects of terror and focussed this on the Spanish. Terror then became the ultimate English tactic and the ports of London produced more pirates than any other.

Drake was adept at reading the tides and the winds and picking on the Spanish out of thin air. The Spanish called him 'el Diablo' ('The Devil') and Drake always seemed to know instinctively when to hit the Spanish when they least expected it.

Drake was adept at forging alliances with natives, whose language he did not speak. He hated the Spanish with all his might and was constantly looking for other races to join in his Holy Crusade. There are lines in the poem 'Drake's Drum' by Sir Henry Newbolt that are really true.

Drake despised most of the gentlemen that he was often called upon to serve with, but he was adept at massaging egos. The royal navy was impressed by his ability to predict and read the Dons (Spanish). He could look at the Dons' sails and rigging and predict when they would tack and when they would strike their colours (surrender). He'd acquired an instinctive feel for his enemy from the many years of preying on them, but was often magnanimous in victory and not in favour of dishing out ill-treatment.

There is a famous line from a conversation between Drake and Sir Walter Ralegh. Ralegh questioned what the crew were doing when they were supposedly mucking around and this occurred nearly 20 years after the battle of the Armada.

Drake said, "There not idle, they're busy manufacturing souvenirs from the Armada.

Whereupon Ralegh said, "But that was twenty years ago".

Drake replied, "Well they will age them and its best not to disturb them while they're doing this." He pointed to a group in the fo'c's'le [crew quarters at bow] firing bullets at various flags. "The last person that disturbed them accidentally was shot dead. Do I rest my case?"

Drake was always on the lookout for hideouts and he acquired an eye for land from having to defend these isolated places. During WWI German commerce raiders put into a lot of these hideouts and often found traces of previous inhabitants – Francis Drake and his pirates. These islands and coves were nearly all off the sea routes and were isolated by geography as much as any other factor. Drake used them

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 20

to the best of his ability, never defending them for too long and using fallback positions and reassembly points like the seasoned guerrilla he was.

Out of the use of pirates to eliminate competing shipping, the Tonner's Club quickly became a powerful force in merchant shipping.

Kurt Waldheim, Secretary General of the United Nations (1972–81) was part of this, as well as being a Sonder Führer and giving instructions to kill the untermenschem.

Crimes even make organisations completely malleable. In the 1970s, Interpol were completely malleable due to their involvement in a major paedophile scandal in Brussels. Interpol were running a hotel for paedophile victims, but were caught using them in a kiddy-porn film, thus achieving the opposite of what they set out to do.

Spymaster: "Interpol never recovered from its formative years when it was part of the Gestapo. Interpol claimed major changes were made, but the spy who spoke with me said: 'Yes, Hitler's picture was taken down'."

Churchill has since been exposed as being involved in at least three assassinations in England. Britain has been so desperate to cover up Winston Churchill's war crimes and failings that BBC Television ran a one-sided campaign in 2002. In November 2002 Churchill was voted "The Greatest Briton of All Time", with Winston promoted and no one else portrayed as being in the running.

In a country of 60 million people, only 1 million votes were received and Winston Churchill, formerly known as 'the Butcher of Gallipoli' was crowned 'The Greatest Briton of All Time'.

59 million people didn't vote. The BBC did the rest.

Meanwhile what we don't know stagnates history. What is still not clear – Hitler's attempted peace talks, the Hess flights to Britain, the real Hess death, Hitler's escape out of Berlin and where and when he died – lies under Britain's 100-year suppression rule.

Hitler is considered the man who turned Europe into a 'Howling Wilderness', but this was originally an American plan of war for Samar (circa 1900). Plans of war and invasion were sold privately to other countries so that they would go to war with someone else.

America sold its plan to create a "'Howling Wilderness' for the extermination of Samar" to Britain in 1900 without Britain ever knowing they had bought it (1900–39); and Britain sold its plan to attack America's Pearl Harbor, to Japan in 1925. This one took 16 years to eventuate (1925–41). Touché, old chaps.

Hitler was a British agent and double agent who worked with the British Freemasons and monarchy to destroy France. Army Captain Walther Stennes talking to an English guest in Berlin in 1930: "Hitler had a strange sneaking regard, almost an affection for your country. Certainly he never meant to fight you, although it is equally certain that from a very early date in his career, he was determined to have a war."[4]

The German General Staff started planning WWII in November 1918, as soon as WWI had finished.

In support of England, Hitler banned his own Secret Service from spying on the British. To cover for this, he also banned the Freemasons and Catholics in Germany, which only had a small public effect on Thursdays and Sundays, but allowed and encouraged the British Secret Service to live underground in Germany.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Many British spies completely ignored the British–German animosity and continued trading as though it was peacetime, but with bargains to boot. After all, you could buy the plans of the Luftwaffe for the price of finishing a house. Hitler, being part of the plan, turned a blind eye to the free flow of influential information across the globe. As long as he had motors and firepower behind him, he was happy.

Adolf would lose himself in fantasy by watching two feature films each night like the 1938 *The Star is Bright* (*Es Leuchten Die Sterne*), about an isolated male in a suit of armour being courted by a single harem girl. It was a mixture of King Arthur and a Turkish delight; but his favourite film was *The Lives of a Bengal Lancer* (1935) about the British rule of India in exchange for the protection of India's northern borders – a Mafia tactic if ever there was one.

'We'll protect you by occupying you,
and if you don't let us,
we'll activate your enemy,
whom we control.'

---

[4] *The Amiable Prussian*, p. 81.

Herbert Döhring, a member of Hitler's SS Bodyguard (1936–43): "It was his favourite film and he couldn't wait to see it. He'd sit down and rub his hands together, 'It's starting. It's starting'. He'd talk about this huge English Empire and how such a relatively small number of people could establish and manage India and keep it in order."[5]

To Hitler, the British rule of India was perfect proof of the superiority of the Aryan race. "Let's learn from the English, who with 250,000 men in all, including 50,000 soldiers, governed 400 million Indians. What India was for England, the territories of Russia will be for us."[6]

Not all the German generals went along with Hitler's ambitious plans. General Beck was frightened Hitler was leading Germany into another world war and he communicated this to the British through underground means, contacting Sir Frank Roberts of the British Foreign Office (1930–68).

This was fatal because the British were arranging the war and had been working on it for the previous sixty years with a very focused effort since 1907 when Stalin was trained, 1912 when Hitler was trained, and from the last days of WWI (November 1918). Stalin had lived and trained in England for almost four years and spoke perfect English, as indeed did Hitler.

Sir Frank Roberts: "He [General Beck] said, if only you and the French would stand up to Hitler, then we'd do something about him. The British replied, 'Well hadn't you better start doing something about him, then perhaps we can help you.' However, with Hitler's success, this group had less chance of doing anything about him."[7]

General Beck desperately needed the British to stand up to Hitler at Munich. Instead, the British rolled over and watched their protégé Hitler continue.

Britain's Prime Minister, Neville Chamberlain, made three trips to Germany to broker for peace with Hitler (15, 22, 29 September 1938). On the last trip he had a press conference by his plane before he left for Munich and said: "When I was a boy, I used to repeat, 'If at first you don't succeed, try, try, try again'. That's what I'm doing. When I come back I hope I may be able to say, as Hotspur in Henry IV, 'Out of this nettle danger, we plucked this flower safely'."

---

[5] *The Nazis, A Warning from History.*

[6] Ibid.

[7] Ibid.

Chamberlain was a naïve fop. He was genial with dimples and looked like everyone's favourite uncle. He was not a wartime Prime Minister at all. He was, however, a British puppet filled with hope and misinformation, destined to achieve nothing.

The British government were so embarrassed by this speech, they took out "as Hotspur in Henry IV" and muffled "nettle" so that it could barely be heard, but sounded more like "metal". His speeches were so terrible, Churchill looked brilliant when he replaced him and all the British eagerly followed Churchill, but it was into war, not into peace.

The Munich conference took place inside the brand new Führerbau Nazi building on 29 September 1938 and lasted into the early hours of the following morning. Attended by Hitler, Chamberlain, Mussolini and the French Prime Minister, Edouard Daladier, the Czech representatives were there, but Hitler refused to let them in. Mussolini presented his own demands at the meeting, but these had been supplied to him earlier in the day by the Nazi's and were essentially the same demands Hitler made.

At the meeting Chamberlain said, "You have thousands of young people in uniform?" and Hitler replied, "But so do you. You call them the Salvation Army and the Boy Scouts" – to which Chamberlain had no reply.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Hitler had all the information he needed from the British and he increased his demands to take over Sudetenland (the outer areas of Czechoslovakia) with no British resistance. In exchange for a country, he gave Chamberlain a piece of paper saying "Peace for our Time". The two fascist radicals, Mussolini and Goering, ran roughshod over the very genial and very British, Chamberlain. Hitler's demands were agreed to so long as it was "Hitler's final territorial demand". Hitler was so chuffed, he was skipping like a madman.

Germany demanded Sudetenland because all the Czech fortifications were in that area. General Beck told Hitler that if the Czechs fought, the German Army would have immense problems. General Beck further promised the British that Hitler would be arrested the moment he ordered war.

Just after 1.00 am on 30 September 1938, the four leaders signed the Munich Agreement allowing Germany to occupy Sudetenland, beginning the following day, Saturday 1 October 1938, with the Czechoslovakian takeover to be complete by 10 October 1938.

Upon returning to London, Chamberlain said:

> "The settlement of the Czechoslovakian problem which has now been achieved is in my view the prelude to a larger settlement in which all Europe may find peace."

Virtually every British politician disagreed and Churchill loudly called the Munich Agreement "a total unmitigated defeat".

Just as planned, on Saturday 1 October 1938, the German Army rolled into the Sudetenland and the Czech people fled with only the clothes on their backs. Hitler was welcomed into Sudetenland, but not into inner Czechoslovakia where there was resistance, but to little effect.

Hitler said:

> "I did not think Czechoslovakia would be virtually served up to me on a plate by her friends."

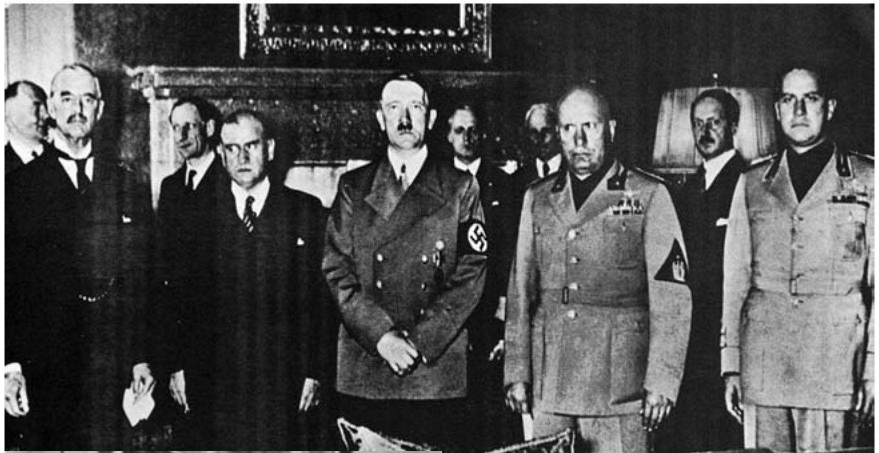
As the representative of the Western Allies, Hitler thought little of Chamberlain: "Our enemies are little worms. I saw them at Munich." Hitler and the Nazis were now drunk on power. All German plans to overthrow Hitler were shelved and the generals resigned themselves to follow Hitler into his future. Chamberlain had ensured that WWII was a certainty.

The takeover came as a big shock to the naïve Chamberlain who wondered why Hitler had not consulted him. Der!

It was all over in ten days and the British Freemasons who backed Hitler told Chamberlain he was a jolly good fellow and promoted him to Lord President of the Council. With the Czechoslovakian takeover complete, WWII had begun in earnest. Chamberlain had run out of uses and excuses and was killed by in-house liquidation, dying on 9 November 1940 of 'cancer'.

Churchill was in on this and did not attend Chamberlain's funeral. He paid non-committal homage by calling him an "English worthy". This set the level of his respect amongst the public and the warmongers. Any kudos Chamberlain was remembered for, he did not deserve.

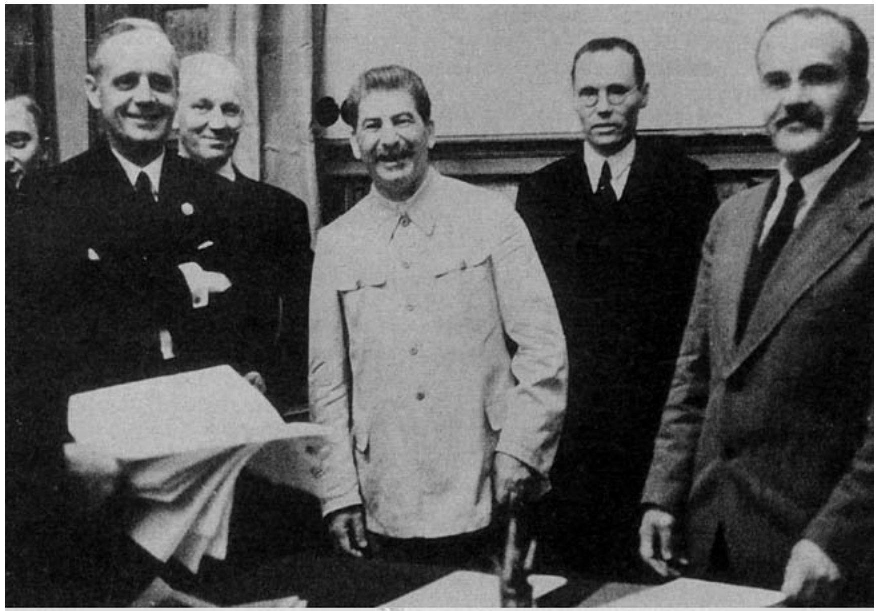
Chamberlain was used as 'a vehicle for war' without his knowledge and his naïvety led to WWII lasting longer. Germany had prepared for war during his naïve prime ministership and they now had land and weapons from other countries, at least in part, gifted by him.



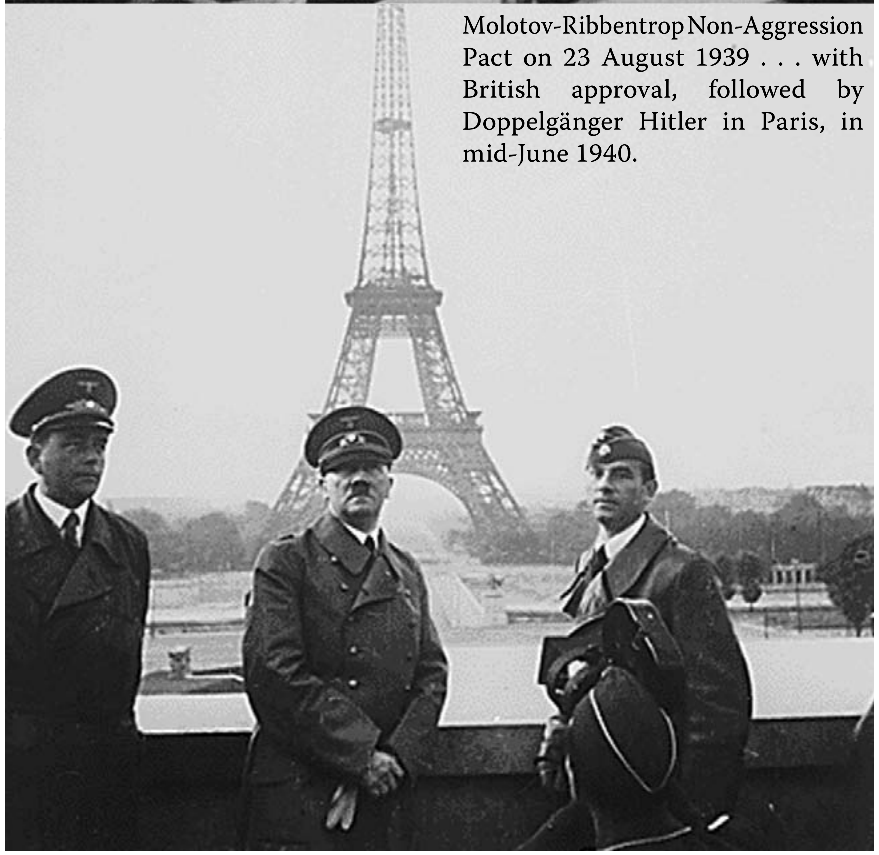
Chamberlain, Hitler and Mussolini at Munich Accord, 29/30 Sept. 1938 (above and left). Note the paper in Chamberlain's left hand. Below: Chamberlain returns with the two pieces of paper: "Peace for our Time" and Hitler's thank you note to the Lance Corporal of the Green Jacket Regiment.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

BRITISH
WAYS
HESTON
MOVIETONE NEWS



Molotov-Ribbentrop Non-Aggression Pact on 23 August 1939 . . . with British approval, followed by Doppelgänger Hitler in Paris, in mid-June 1940.



Hitler's Doppelgängers

To top it off, once the occupation was secure, one of Hitler's doppelgängers went to Prague in place of Hitler. He overlooked the city from the third floor of the castle of the Czech kings, 17 metres above the street, and stood there like a bad actor, without waving, as the German military paraded past stunned and silent Czechs. Hitler was in conference with the British at the time, and the actor Andreas Kronstaedt was Hitler's doppelgänger in Prague.

The English brought no enemy against Hitler, and by non-interference encouraged the war to develop, and develop, and develop. Hitler then applied to the Bank of England and had £6 million of Czech gold released to him. The Bank of England did this without hesitation or delay and this money was used to finance Hitler's leap-frogging war effort.

During this time the English and Germans had a 'swinging door policy' in their backrooms for both nationalities. They were still working together, albeit undercover, through spies and diplomats. Military secrets were traded like sports cards, some for personal gain, and others for the pack. Certainly Hitler's "intuitions scored massive triumphs in the first two years . . ."[8]

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

France was next. It was not supported by Britain or Russia and was crushed from all sides. After June 1940, WWII became a war for profit, selling arms, grabbing land, and setting up the Americans as the new world superpower with Prescott Bush selling American-made arms to the Nazis contravening the Treaty of Versailles and making enough of the green stuff to buy two US presidencies.

Doppelgängers for Everyone

The British Air Force Intelligence Officer Fred Winterbotham was intrigued by the way everyone ran out from their chauffeur-driven cars in Berlin and then turned at a right angle and ran into the building. One of the SS said, "We do this because of the *Swallows*, the communist party assassins".

They got sick of this by the mid-1930s and organised a doppelgänger contest amongst the ranks of the Storm Troopers, for anyone who looked like anyone important. Every region or 'Gau' was judged, and the finalists were sent to the main centre for one of the most bizarre competitions in history – the "Gau doppelgänger contest" – the Hitler lookalike contest. Some of the doppelgängers were touched up and improved with plastic surgery. None of the contestants here said: "I want world peace".

---

[8] *The Cambridge Biographical Encyclopedia.*

There were doubles for Goering and doubles for Hitler. The Gestapo then checked their background, giving preference to fathers with large families who really loved their children. Those who didn't love their children enough were dismissed because they weren't able to be bribed. The body doubles would be encouraged to turn a blind eye and a deaf ear to much of what the Nazi party was doing.

After the war a stunning German double of Hitler was located, complete with surgically altered nose, but he was financially well off and remained a bachelor all his life. As such, despite similarities, he was deemed unsuitable for the role as doppelgänger.

All the top brass, the Storm Trooper leaders, and the 'Gaulieters' (Area Commanders) had doppelgängers. The only one who didn't have a body double was Joseph Goebbels, who had a limp from a clubfoot. Because of this, Goebbels and his wife and children were served up to the Russians at the end of the war. They were the only true bodies left in Hitler's bunker at the Chancellery and they lent an air of legitimacy to the so-called bodies of Adolf and Eva. The Russians identified them all and then erroneously jumped to the conclusion that all the bodies were who they were supposed to be. Unfortunately they told Stalin this and then stuck to the story, even after they found it to be a deception.

In the book *I was Hitler's Maid* (1940), the author Pauline Kohler recalls five of Hitler's doppelgängers sitting around the table in her kitchen. They had come from poor working-class backgrounds and were kind men who spoke about their children a lot. She said she always felt an empathy for these guys and could relax around them, something she couldn't do around Hitler. These were fathers who had been commandeered and were as committed to Hitler's service as they were to their families.

Some of these were Gustav Weber (also spelt Weler), the actor Andreas Kronstaedt, Hitler's favourite driver, Julius Schreck (d. 1936) and Heinrich Bergner who was killed when Colonel Claus Schenk Graf von Stauffenberg planted a bomb under Hitler's table on 20 July 1944.

A clear signal of a double agent (rather than a doppelgänger) is that they leave you feeling on edge, like you've been talking to a ghost, or an ideology, that is deathly forceful but not physically present. The same experience can be had talking to a Catholic priest, who simultaneously represents the Holy Ghost and the paedophile movement. This has the effect of suspending reality and leaving one on edge with trust and distrust at loggerheads.

The effect was quite hypnotic, almost as though both the priests and double agents were similarly trained.

Double Agents and Double Agents

By March 1941, Hitler began to realise how he had been set up by the British. As a 'begrudged national' and 'British double agent', he wanted power over Germany, but he didn't want to die in the process. The war was supposed to be over in 18 months and the first part of the war had gone more or less according to plan. British and German counterparts had each other's phone numbers and any deaths were strategic, most of them French and occurring in France.

'C' (General Sir Stewart Graham Menzies): "The fact is that all sophisticated intelligence services maintain contact with their enemies . . . [The German General] Canaris was never a British agent in the accepted sense of that term . . . Canaris never betrayed his country's secrets to me or to anyone else on the British side, although his men did . . . he did contact me and ask me to meet him on neutral territory with a view to putting an end to the war . . . I never saw Canaris. But I did like and admire him. He was damned brave . . ."[9]

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

When the former Commander-in-Chief of the German Forces in Italy, Field Marshal Albert von Kesselring was on trial in Venice, "a sensation was caused by a British Intelligence Corps officer, Colonel Scotland, who told the court that he had served in the German Army during the war, and knew at one time the disposition of nearly all German armed forces".[10] In Germany Colonel Scotland was known as General von Schotland – a British agent in the German High Command. He'd bought kudos ahead of time by fighting for the Germans in the trenches in WWI.

This is not dissimilar to Hitler's story.

---

[9] General Sir Stewart Graham Menzies (C) talking to author Anthony Cave Brown at Luckington in the winter of 1964, *Bodyguard of Lies*, p. 816.

[10] *The Illustrated London News*, 8 March 1947, p. 247.

The first part of WWII was considered a 'fake war' as all the battles happened at sea. Hitler had received all the information needed to invade France from Britain's sexually dubious fascist King Edward VIII (head of the Freemasons and the monarchy) and Wallis Simpson (the American-born German bisexual spy and prostitute), thus bypassing all points of resistance and capturing France, like a 'walk in the park' (mid-June 1940).

Hitler's pact with Britain's warring Freemasons was to occupy and destroy France in exchange for Germany. This was completed after just nine months in June 1940. The French could do nothing, so formed a 'resistance' against the fascists – a black beret-wearing communist resistance. It was a brilliant scam to make France a socialist country.

Britain and Russia didn't come to France's rescue and France has remained a dedicated socialist country ever since.

Peter Fleming (1907–71), Ian Fleming's older brother was in hospital during March 1940. While hospitalised he wrote *Flying Visit* in which Hitler dropped in on London via parachute and the following day buildings were silhouetted as fires lit up the daytime sky like the sun. Within 14 months, the fiction the British wrote had become the reality the Germans enacted.

Ian Fleming (1908–64) knew that Hitler had been trained as a British agent in Tavistock (Lord Callaghan was also trained there). He knew that there was an agreement between Hitler and his British trainers that the war would only go on for nine to eighteen months and that the first nine months was to be a phoney war. (As a result Hitler tried to commit suicide on 10 March 1941, 18 months and 1 day after the war started.) Ian Fleming knew that Hitler was gunning for peace and would send his second in command to negotiate – so he played on this.

"Ian Fleming knew that Hitler, Himmler and Hess were all fascinated by the occult, particularly astrology, but also by occultist rituals. Secret Agents such as Frau Nagenast, an astrologer who Hess consulted and paid, were employed to produce charts that pointed to the 10th of May [1941] being a portentous time for Hess to fly to Britain. Fleming carefully made sure that the astrological forecasts that Hess received from his usual astrologers contained very similar information. This was accomplished using intrigue, bribery and forgery."[11] Fleming used astrology, double agent contacts through the Peace Party, and forged letters from Mrs Mary Violet Roberts.

---

[11] *The British Conspiracy*, *Secret Agents*, *The Real 007's* website.

Fleming used Hess's usual astrologer, occultist Ernst Schulter-Strathaus. In an intelligence file Ian Fleming read about 'The Link', an Anglo-German organisation founded by Admiral Sir Barry Domvile, a diminutive occultist, as so many are.

Admiral Sir Barry Edward Domvile KBE, CB, CMG (1878–13 Aug. 1971) was the son of an Admiral and had been promoted through the ranks at great speed. His naval career spanned from 1892–36. He was the Director of British Naval Intelligence (1927–30) and the Vice-Admiral Commanding War College (1932–34). As such he was a prime target for subversion. He visited the Dachau concentration camp in Germany (1935) and the Nazi government impressed him. On Joachim von Ribbentrop's invitation he attended the Nuremberg Rally in September 1936.

Admiral Sir Barry Domvile then founded 'The Link', which operated as an Anglo-German cultural non-party organisation with a journal that reflected pro-Nazi views to its 4300 members. MI-5 investigated and closed the organisation down in late 1939, soon after WWII began.

Admiral Sir Barry Domvile was considered a serious enough threat to be interned in Brixton Prison (7 July 1940–29 July 1943). Here he developed a view similar to jailed doppelgänger Hess – that there was "a Jewish-Masonic conspiracy". He was released to his home in Hampshire on the understanding that he would be interned as soon as the Nazis invaded.

Admiral Sir Barry Domvile's expressed view was that Hitler "would soon be in this country, but there was no reason to worry about it, because he would bring the Duke of Windsor over [formerly King Edward VIII who was successively exiled in France, Spain and Portugal] as King and conditions would be much improved".

Via agents, Fleming fed the line to Hess that 'The Link' had been driven underground and was in a position to use the Duke of Hamilton to negotiate peace and overthrow the Prime Minister, Winston Churchill. The Duke of Hamilton was less well known as the Duke of Hamilton and Brandon, and a few histories refer to Brandon as being the agent. The Duke of Hamilton was the agent!

Christened Douglas Douglas-Hamilton (1903–73), from 1940 he was the 14th Duke of Hamilton and the 11th Duke of Brandon, the hereditary keeper of Holyroodhouse, hereditary bearer of the Crown of Scotland, and acted as Lord Steward of the Royal Household (1940–64). In the 1920s his father destroyed Hamilton Palace (the family seat in South Lanarkshire), but Douglas Douglas-Hamilton made enough out of WWII to purchase Lennoxlove House (East Lothian) in 1946.

treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

Douglas Douglas-Hamilton, the Duke of Hamilton and Brandon, was the Squadron Commander in the Auxiliary Air Force (1927–36), flew the first flight over Mount Everest in 1932, commanded the Air Training Corps, played a senior role in the Royal Air Force and was responsible for air defence over Scotland. He played a significant role in setting up the aircraft manufacturer, Scottish Aviation Ltd, at Preswick Airport. In 1978 this became part of British Aerospace Plc. Whatever Brandon wanted over Scottish airspace Brandon got over Scottish airspace.

Englishwoman Violet Roberts was the aunt of Walter Roberts, a close relative of the Duke of Hamilton and Brandon and was in the political intelligence and propaganda branch of the Secret Intelligence Service (SO1/PWE). Walter Roberts was also friends with Karl Haushofer, Hess's occult mentor. Walter Roberts wrote a letter to Karl Haushofer[12] and Hess took a great interest in this. Haushofer then replied to Violet Roberts suggesting Walter Roberts's post office box in Portugal for further correspondence. This letter *only* was conveniently intercepted by the British mail censors.

After the war had been going for 20 months, Hitler, a 'British trained and deconstructed Psych-Ops double agent', sent his close friend Rudolf Hess to Britain and Karl Horn to America to instigate one or more of the following:

Plan A: **'Negotiate for the end of WWII'.**
Plan B: **'Hitler's anonymous escape to America'.**
Plan C: **'*Peace for our Time* with Britain and America'.**

With Hitler out of the picture, Germany could fold with minimal damage, Berlin would return to its merry ways and Hitler could live out his days in South America as so many other Nazis did. Hitler sent his deputy and pilot Rudolf Hess (47) to negotiate for the end of WWII with Britain. Knights Cross holder and ace Messerschmitt 110 pilot Karl Horn accompanied him.

---

[12] The Duke of Hamilton was having an affair with his son, Albrecht Haushofer.

This was told to the Spymaster by one who had taken a part in the interrogation of the real Hess. At the time he did not understand the full picture and the interrogation haunted him ever since. He told the Spymaster of the psychotic Austrian G-Man and suggested that Hauptmann Karl Horn (Squadron Commander) was hauled off the Battle of Britain operation and did not enjoy the special flights. Horn didn't look forward to the Hess peace mission, but felt obliged to obey the Führer's commands as he was a Knights Cross holder. There's even some question of whether it was Horn or Hess who flew the aircraft to Scotland.

Hess's tutor at university, Professor Karl Haushofer (1869–1946), played an important role. He was an occultist and one of the conduits between Hess, Hitler and MI-6. Horn took direct action because Hess was rendered incapable of going to America for fear of capture and execution. Instead his capture happened in Britain. Horn went to America because it was virtually their only chance of stating the case for peace.

The British and Germans had each other's phone numbers and it was not unusual to fly to each other's country during the war on 'diplomatic missions' and for these flights to be cleared of attack. The British even had German 87 octane avgas refuelling stations at designated MI-6 airstrips when no Allied aircraft flew on 87 octane. British planes used 100 octane avgas.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

In the 1930s, the US Government passed a law prohibiting the sale of fuel additives or their formulae. Despite this, an American company gave Germany the secret to flying on low octane avgas by supplying them with the necessary chemical additive, ethyl lead.[13] (See *Not Without American Help*, *Appendix 3*)

The Danes purchased a German Condor Bomber in 1937/8 and it was very obviously used as a bomber. Although it had been fitted out as an airliner and was flying for Air Denmark, the stewardesses almost had to crawl up the aisles on their hands and knees to get to the passengers.

When the Nazis invaded Denmark, some Danes managed to load the Condor with fuel and fly it to England in 1940. By 1942 it was reported that the Condor had become so tatty that the British wanted to break it up for spare parts, but they had no other Condors and the parts were not transferable. There was no way a Condor was in good condition in 1940 and bad condition in 1942. The German Condor was used for special work – intelligence speak for intelligence operations.

The German Condor became the ideal aircraft to fly in and out of Europe on special missions and was used safely in German territory. As is typical in wartime, the plane was acquired by an airline in Britain that soon went broke. This left the German Condor plane without an itinerary.

A lot of aircraft from both sides were written off as navigation errors when they had landed intact. Britain now claims MI-6 aircrews were trained to fly Luftwaffe planes and that some Luftwaffe aircrew were MI-6 trained.

This coincided with the British-owned German transport aircraft (ex-South Africa) which allowed German and British meetings to take place in either country, or in any other country. This was done on numerous occasions and entirely in secret.

This is how World War II was progressively agreed upon.

---

[13] I. G. Farben and Rockefeller's Standard Oil.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Hess and Hess Fly to Britain

10–11 May 1941

The British summoned the real Hess (the Deputy Führer from 1933) through secret channels to Scotland and had arranged 10 May 1941 as his most portentous day. Switzerland, Portugal (British) or Spain (Fascist), Scandinavia, and Czechoslovakia were other possible destinations for his flight, but these were all optional decoys. At the same time a doppelgänger Hess flew to Scotland from a different location in Germany.

The dates on both the real Hess's and the doppelgänger Hess's three weather maps illustrated these other destinations. The fact that they had three weather maps meant that the real Hess did not know where he was going until after he had refuelled in northern France and received additional directions. The lack of clarity was intended from the beginning so that the myth of the real Hess (1884–1941) being an accidental defector or madman could be maintained and he would never be found.

The real Hess, Hitler's best friend and second in command, left Germany in secret on 10 May 1941 and landed his Messerschmitt Me110C near Abbeville in north-west France in a makeshift airfield. The Germans had secured these airfields all over France for the Battle of Britain (over eight months earlier). These were essentially flat grassed strips with a tower holding gravity-fed fuel and a telephone.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

The real Hess refuelled himself and received further instructions by telephone as to his destination and departure time. He camped the night and was due to fly out the following evening, setting himself above the tail end of the Luftwaffe blitz on London. Karl Horn was with him.

The Omega Files say that Hess flew to England on 10 May 1941 to stop the war with Britain and was arrested as a 'war criminal'. However, they do not say that Hess spent a layover-night in France in order to wait for cover from the blitzkrieg. The blitzes went from September 1940 to May 1941 and Hess's cover was the last of the blitzes. Six weeks later Germany was focusing on Russia.

Hess's body double was well trained and this mission had been planned for a long time by both the British and the Germans. Doppelgänger Hess knew all of real Hess's history and had become an expert pilot.

The following day as 5.45 pm on 11 May 1941, doppelgänger Hess took off from Augsburg airfield near Munich in a not unpublicised event. The last person to speak to him was Hitler's radio dentist, Dr Friedrich Kohn, who belonged to the same secret Tibetan Lodge as Hitler, as did his quack doctor, Theodor Morell.

Augsburg is 50 km north-west of Munich and 30 km north of Landsberg Prison. Doppelgänger Hess took off in the next model of Messerschmitt, the Me110D, and flew low and north at 385 kmph (238 mph) to Cologne in northern Germany and refuelled. He took off from Cologne at 7.35 pm, heading across the islands off Holland and into Dutch airspace, where he linked up with the head of SS Intelligence, Reinhard Heydrich, who was an avid pilot. He was flying in Dutch airspace with Allied attention elsewhere on the blitzkrieg. Heydrich had three special SS pilots with him.

The real Hess was given specific instructions when to leave the makeshift airfield near Abbeville on the evening of 11 May 1941 and what flight paths to take. He was instructed to avoid the flak corridors, where they were most likely to get hit, and to fly at different heights and different speeds until he met with the blitzkrieg raid ('lightning war') on London. He was instructed to fly over the top using the Luftwaffe for cover during his most exposed time. Hess then met with the three escort planes by flying parallel on a bearing over Waddenilanden, the chain of islands stretching across northern Holland.

Goering was the commander of the Luftwaffe and a German-born British agent. This meant the British controlled many aspects of the German Air Force and knew what they were doing most of the time, including the London blitzes. Even before a blitzkrieg was predicted by the full moon, or detected by radar, the British knew what the Luftwaffe plans were. They were also prepared to assist them into battle.

Prior to WWII the Germans had been having problems with their aircraft's fuel injection and coughing during turns. In the late 1930s, under MI-6 advice, Rolls Royce invited German officials to visit their factory where MI-6 had got them to turn their engines upside down. According to MI-6, the meeting was designed to lead the Germans up the garden path, but 'engine inversion' solved the German problems, and many others besides. As a result, German fighters were superior to British Spitfires . . . totally by accident of course, old chaps.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

As a German-British agent, Goering was opposed to any genuine peace talks and he supported a stitch-up against the gay married-for-cover Hess. Hess was queer for Hitler but had a devoted wife. Goering phoned Leutnant Colonel Adolf Galland, the Gruppe Kommandeur on the French airstrip at Abbeville, the most north-west airstrip in France, and requested that he intercept Hess and shoot him down. Goering had good cover to do so as Hitler had grounded Hess.

"Early in the evening of May 10th Galland got an extraordinary telephone call from Goering, who sounded 'very agitated' and ordered Galland to take off immediately with his entire wing. When Galland pointed out that there were no reports of any enemy aircraft flying in, Goering shouted, 'Flying in? What do you mean flying in? You're supposed to stop an aircraft flying out! The Deputy Führer has gone mad and is flying to England in an Me110. He must be brought down.'"[1]

Leutnant Colonel Galland failed to accomplish the mission. Hess was not shot down over France or Holland and made it to Scotland.

Once the real Hess had established the three escort planes, the four Messerschmitts flew over the English Channel towards Scotland. Hess (with Karl Horn) flew above doppelgänger Hess for the rest of the journey. They turned north-west until the Hesses found the signal from their night navigation radio direction signal. Both Hess planes had been specially fitted with a Kleve Knickbein radio night navigation receiver positioned for the pilot rather than gunner-navigator control. Hess's Me110C and doppelgänger Hess's Me110D were both fitted with two 66 gallon drop tanks for the final leg of the journey.

It was a clear moonlit night with little or no cloud cover and the planes were clearly visible from any ships below. Doppelgänger Hess continued to fly very closely below the real Hess, protecting him from any seaborne assault. Southern England was far better protected by fighters than northern England and there was even less threat during a blitz.

If the Hesses had been intercepted before they were able to enter the Duke of Hamilton's airspace, Heydrich and his decoy were there to lure away interceptors in their Me109E's. According to the British version on 11 May 1941 Hess's plane was spotted by eye and radar just after the blitz in the well-lit full-moon sky as it flew towards Scotland. "But even as the bomber streams made their way toward the burning capital, to their north flew a single Messerschmitt 110 fighter flown by the Deputy Führer of the German Reich, Rudolf Hess. The single aircraft was detected by British radar. British nightfighters were sent up to intercept and shoot it down, but they failed to make the intercept."[2]

---

[1] *The Murder of Rudolf Hess*, p. 47 and *The First and the Last*, pp. 108-9.

Heydrich and his special SS-flown Me109E escort protected the Hesses Me110's halfway across the North Sea (north of the English Channel) and then split off. The Me109E's didn't have the necessary navigation equipment or fuel capacity to fly all the way to Scotland. The Hesses then banked, travelling north at about 220 mph (350 kmph) climbing slowly to 15,000 feet (4500 m).

There four planes flown by Heydrich, the SS pilots, Doppelgänger Hess and real Hess were all 350 km away and well out of British airspace. Hess's plane had no ability to fire, as it had been stripped of extra weight for the long journey, and when doppelgänger Hess's plane was investigated after the crash it was discovered that all of the guns had been greased up. Neither Hess nor doppelgänger Hess could shoot at each other if they caught on to what was going on, nor could they retaliate against any fire from the British.

As it turned out, the Hess Me110 planes were allowed to pass with overriding orders given not to shoot them down (shades of 9-11). It was Scotland's highest-ranking Freemason, the Duke of Hamilton and Brandon who called off the Bolton-Paul Defiant Nightfighters sent from London. This allowed the real Hess and the doppelgänger Hess to land safely in Scotland.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

The winner of the war always writes the dominant history. "To their north flew a single Messerschmitt 110 fighter flown by the Deputy Führer" was just British propaganda – confusing the truth, as is commonly found in victorious history books. This was another layer to the British part of the Hess cover-up and the British sabotage of peace. The blitz had stopped the real Hess and his escorts from being spotted just hours earlier.

Hess had no idea that the plane flying closely below him was his doppelgänger. Doppelgänger Hess remained close and out of view so as not to be seen by Hess or spotted by radar. At the time, radar was in its infancy and two planes flying close, one over the other, appeared as one plane.

---

[2] *The Secret Servant*, p. 343.

This can still be done today as long as the planes have the same radar signature. The 'two planes become one' by flying to the edge of the radar screen, aligning their paths and then re-emerging onto the screen. In this way a fighter plane can be introduced to airspace under cover of a passenger plane. When Heydrich and the SS escort parted, the two Me110's flown by the Hesses banked north off the radar screen.

The Hesses proceeded north with the real Hess closely above doppelgänger Hess until they intercepted the Stavanger Knickbein radio direction signal at 9.24 pm. They then banked sharply to the west and headed towards RAF Acklington. They had a tailwind and it was perfect flying weather. The moon was reflecting off the water and they were able to recognise coastal features.

Approaching Scotland the Hesses dived for cover amongst what clouds they could find until they reached about 5000 feet (1500 m). They crossed the coast at 10.25 pm and flew off the Knickbein and circled around the visible Holy Island showing all the world that they were not concerned about the Bolton-Paul Defiant Nightfighters. This is a Secret Operations and doppelgänger signature.

Doppelgänger Saddam Hussein did the same thing when he touched his jaw with the fingers of both hands on the night of his capture, 13 December 2003.

The Hesses then headed for the Duke of Hamilton's Dungavel Castle and overshot it as they headed for the glistening waterways on the west coast of Scotland. Doppelgänger Hess had overshot Dungavel castle by 60 km to purposely escort Hess and Horn to the Liberator flights at Preswick (35 km from Dungavel Castle and 5 km north of Ayr). They were travelling at 238 mph (385 kmph), so this would have taken another 5 minutes there and 7 minutes back.

Karl Horn, the gunner in the real Hess's plane, was an Olympic long-distance runner from the previous Berlin Olympics (1936) where the Duke of Hamilton had attended. Karl Horn parachuted out before they circled West Kilbride, landed and made his way to a rendezvous with an American General and caught a Liberator flight to America in an attempt to plead his case for peace there.

Hess and doppelgänger Hess then flew around West Kilbride below radar. The real Hess slowed down, peeled off, and landed at the

Liberator landing strips at Preswick under cover of a mass of planes leaving for America at exactly the right time. Hess's landing had been precisely coordinated with the Americans.

This confused the radar and no one was alerted by the noise. Hess landed safely and was detained amidst secrecy, then interrogated with as much information as possible extracted from him before he was killed. His execution was kept secret.

Rudolf Hess (26 April 1894–13 May 1941).

"The radar noted that at a certain point over Scotland – near Dungavel, Stratheven, Lanarkshire, seat of the fourteenth Duke of Hamilton, premier peer of Scotland [and very high ranking Freemason] the aircraft began to spiral and then disappeared. It was thought at the time that it had been intercepted by a nightfighter, a Defiant [Bolton-Paul Defiant Nightfighter], and shot down."[3]

The Secret Servant does not note that the plane circled around Holy Island, that there were two planes, that they circled around West Kilbride and that one plane landed at Preswick. The winner of the war always records the war, with history rewriting interference, and always omits the details of its double agent dealings.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

Doppelgänger Hess maintained his speed, made a chaotic circuitous route in order to sight Hess' landing, then followed the Scottish landmarks and glistening railway lines over Western Scotland finding his way back to Dungavel Castle (near Glasgow).

King George V's fourth son, the Duke of Kent (39) was waiting with a group of Polish officers at Dungavel Castle. Special Operations 1 (SO1) had all the correct players in place just in case there was a double agent leak. The Duke of Kent then flicked on the runway lights. Doppelgänger Hess realised the runway was too short and he'd crash into the trees at the end, so he overshot it and looked for a field to land in.

Doppelgänger Hess did not have enough avgas to make it back east 160 km to the RAF airstrip at Acklington. Not finding a suitable field and having already accomplished half of his mission, he flew another 20 km north to Eaglesham Moor, where he ran out of avgas, flipped his plane upside down and bailed.

---

[3] *The Secret Servant*, p. 343.

Heydrich and his SS guard flew Messerschmitt Me109E (German Bf109).

The Hesses flew Messerschmitt Me110C & Me110D (above), which the Germans called Bf110. Below, a Liberator B-24.

As doppelgänger Hess bailed out he chipped a bone in his foot on the plane's tail. He landed by parachute on a field not far from Floors Farm in the Eaglesham Moor. His plane crashed and exploded at 11.09 pm, 20 km from Dungavel Castle. It was close enough to walk through the night, but his foot was a problem.

"Hess had abandoned the aircraft by parachute, hoping to land in the grounds of Dungavel where he might have a conversation of a highly secret nature with the duke, a man Hess admired. But Wing Commander the Duke of Hamilton was on duty that night at an RAF base in Scotland [Preswick] and was not at Dungavel. In parachuting, Hess also failed to land on the grounds of Dungavel estate – the only mistake he made in what was otherwise a technically remarkable and flawless flight, especially in regard to navigation. Hess had flown from an airfield near Munich to a pinpoint near Glasgow, a distance of some seven hundred air miles in which he traversed two heavily defended airspaces and steered his way through major bomber streams proceeding both east-west and west-east."[4] This was hardly a stroke of luck for the second in command of Germany.

Doppelgänger Hess was a test for the real Hess to see if the British really did want peace. With two Hess's one had to go, so they killed the real Hess as the capture of a doppelgänger is always more valuable (Saddam Hussein's doppelgänger is a case in point).

The secret death of the real Hess and the capture of the doppelgänger Hess was a minor victory for the British. Doppelgänger Hess was never sure of the fate of the real Hess and was placed into a deconstruction programme as soon as the original interviews were over. This was designed to make him believe he was the real Hess.

Peter Allen's *The Crown and the Swastika* suggested that Hess was killed in Britain by intention, or in an aircraft accident with the Duke of Kent and a doppelgänger was brainwashed into being Hess.

In Canada the OSS (the CIA from 1946) developed a method of brainwashing using electrical shock and drug treatments capable of changing a personality. This would explain doppelgänger Hess's strange behaviour and different appearance at the Nuremberg Trials (30 September 1946).

---

[4] *The Secret Servant*, pp. 343-4.

Doppelgänger Hess, wearing the name tag Alfred Horn on his brand-new uniform, had been trained to imitate Hess by the Germans and was trained to believe he was Hess by MI-6 who had been sharing data with the OSS. As a coping mechanism, to avoid revealing the true plans of Hitler and what he knew about the war (a Freemasonry stitch-up) he pretended to be mad, lost focus, complained of being poisoned and made fake suicide attempts.

The madness was partly real due to his German doppelgänger training and OSS subconscious personality alteration. The poisons were very likely real and designed to stop doppelgänger Hess thinking clearly. Doppelgänger Hess was eventually murdered in a fake suicide. It really was a horrible life being the fake Hess, the fake gay lover of Germany's ruler – the world's most feared 5'9" bisexual coprophiliac.

The fact that Churchill kept doppelgänger Hess hidden from public view lends weight to the theory that the real Hess was dead and doppelgänger Hess (Alfred Horn) was being altered for limited viewing. That a tailor was ordered to replicate Hess's uniform strengthens this. The 'replicated Hess uniform' was stolen from Spandau Prison in the 1970s.

At the same time as the real Hess and the doppelgänger Hess were flying to Scotland, the Luftwaffe were bombing London at low tide. This meant the British couldn't use the Thames to put out the more than 2000 fires from the incendiary bombs (which explode into fire on impact). Amid the mass of confusion more than 3000 people were killed or injured and the British House of Commons was destroyed for years to come. This was hardly a day for peace, but it was a perfect day to sabotage peace. Peace was sabotaged by both the British and the Germans on 11 May 1941.

All the incendiary bombs dismantled by the London Fire Brigade were made in Illingford, England and carried a manufacture date of 1938.

Spymaster: "The Fire Brigade were in charge of dismantling any-incendiary bombs that failed to explode. MI-5 then monstered the Fire Brigade, silenced all the fire-engineers and swore them to secrecy. It was essential to MI-5 that the manufacturing identity of the exploded and unexploded incendiary bombs remained secret.

"MI-5 then leaked a cover story that Germans recovered the British-made incendiary bombs from an RAF bomb dump in France. This was a lie as all of these incendiary bombs were thoroughly demolished.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March

"The RAF were fastidious about destroying ordnance and the record of their demolition was well and truly noted. The government story was a cover story. The Fire Brigade were asked not to say anything as it would be considered unhelpful."

A third of the square mile of London was destroyed, but the British monarchy's many palaces were rarely hit, many of them not at all. A British monarchy/German alliance for sure!

"Landing in a field, Hess was captured by a farm-hand. He was still wearing the blue uniform of captain of the Luftwaffe [a set-up]. Hess was handed over to the assistant area controller of the Royal Observer Corps, Major Graham Donald."[5]

Major Graham Donald was complicit to the German subterfuge and German–English Freemasonry agreements. Major Graham Donald looked at the doppelgänger Hess with the name tag Alfred Horn and said, "You look exactly like Hess."

Doppelgänger Hess replied, "That is nothing new to me. It's a fact which has embarrassed me often enough."

From then on Major Graham Donald acted as though this was the real Hess, although he knew otherwise. This was part of the stitch-up, as was confusion over the name Horn, when Horn was on the other flight. Major Graham Donald remained complicit to the German–English Freemasonry agreements and SO1 operations. When he met with the next interrogator, Major Graham Donald once again identified 'Captain Alfred Horn' as "Rudolf Hess" when he knew damned well he was the doppelgänger Hess they had been expecting.

"At the outset, [doppelgänger] Hess told Donald that 'he had a secret and vital message for the Duke of Hamilton, and that he must see the Duke at once'. Donald then asked the German where he expected to find the duke, and [doppelgänger] Hess replied, 'At Dungavel house', producing a map with a red ring drawn around the estate.

"After the brief interrogation, Donald reported to his duty controller and asked him to contact Wing Commander the Duke of Hamilton. 'After this . . . I came to the conclusion that the safety of the realm was now securely in other hands and no longer the sole responsibility of our Group. So I went to bed [as I was told].'"[6]

---

[5] *The Secret Servant*, p. 344.

[6] Ibid.

When doppelgänger Hess was being interviewed, he requested the British send a telegram to the real Hess's wife, Ilse Prohl (m. 1927) saying that he was okay. He didn't speak to her as voice recognition would reveal him as a fake Hess, and he refused to meet with Hess's family for another 28 years (until 1969).

This message comforted Hess's wife, but when it was passed on to Hitler it meant that doppelgänger Hess had arrived at Dungavel Castle and not the real Hess. It also meant that the real Hess and Karl Horn (in his regular service uniform) had landed safely at Preswick where the Liberator Flights left for America.

Doppelgänger Hess had confirmed the landing during what appeared to be a chaotic circuitous route. He was, in fact, dropping his wing for better sight and ensuring radar picked him up over and above the mass of planes leaving Preswick.

This telegram was the way in which doppelgänger Hess (whom Hitler knew about), contacted Hitler saying that the Reichsführer (Deputy leader and occasional lover) had landed safely. If Hitler knew Hess was dead, he might have become disheartened and not attacked Russia in six weeks' time.

Hitler usually lay in bed until lunchtime. He was a lazy administrator who left much of the administrative work to Hess. However, on the morning of 11 May 1941, after sending both Hess, Karl Horn and Hess's doppelgänger (under the name Alfred Horn) to England to plead for peace (or an unobstructed war) Hitler was up and dressed at 7.30 am and was able to officially receive the letter from Hess' Adjutant Pintsch which read, "And if my Führer, this project . . . ends in failure . . . simply say that I was mad".

Doppelgänger Hess's telegram to Ilse Prohl was a 'successful mission to date' signal but Hitler was never to see the real Hess, Karl Horn, or the doppelgänger Hess (Alfred Horn) again.

Hitler had publicly grounded Hess from flying. This was designed to make Hess's peace mission look like a rebellion against Hitler in case it failed. However, as firstly a British agent and secondly a German agent, Hitler was right behind the mission from its inception. It was in fact his idea, as he was already tired of the war.

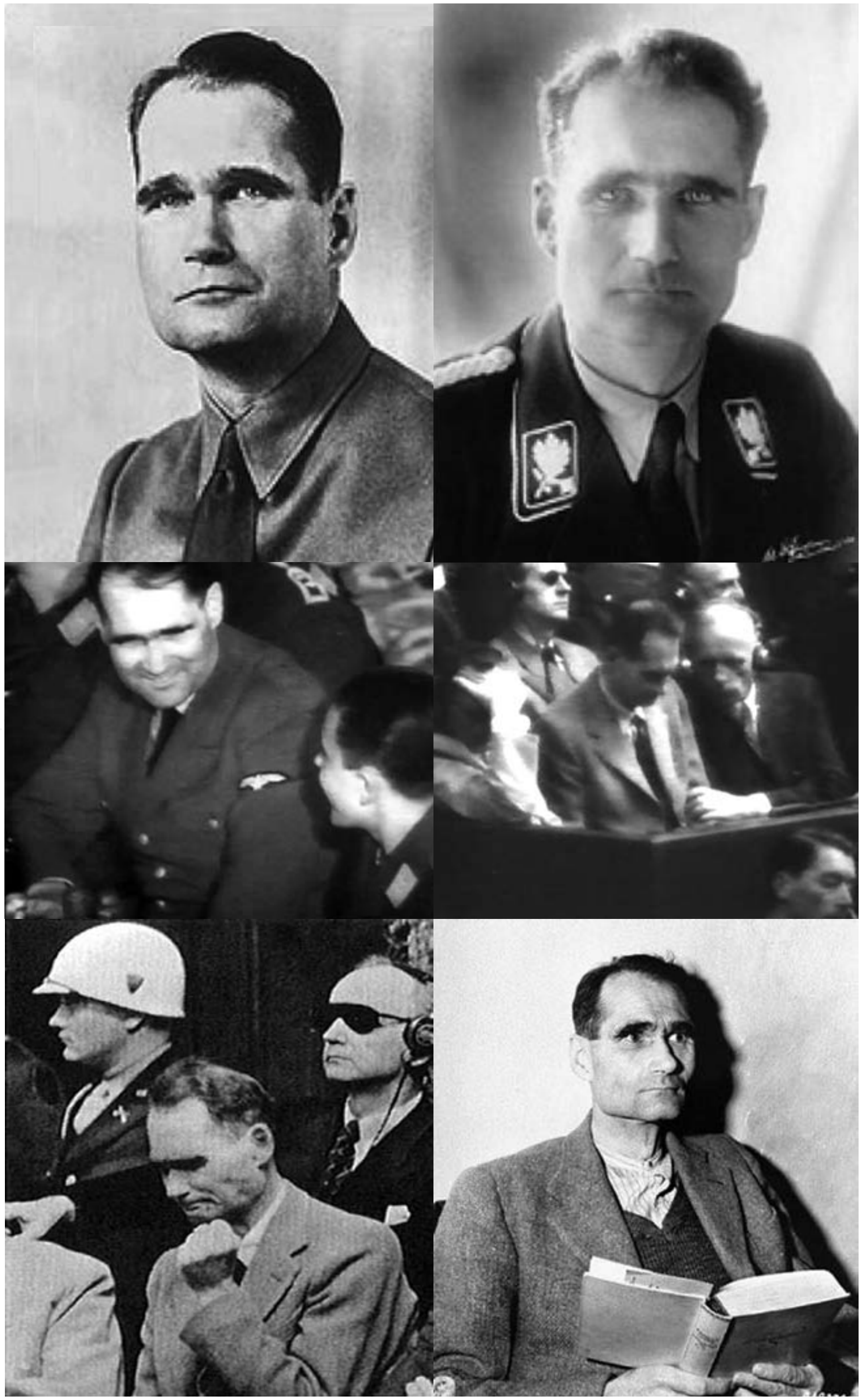
Hitler had tried to commit suicide two months earlier on 10 March 1941 and it was Rudolf Hess who had saved him.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

SWAN VESTAS

London after a blitzkrieg.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -



The Rudolf Hesses.

The war was only supposed to go on for 18 months (9 September 1939–9 March 1941) after which the secret agreement between Britain and Germany, the British and German Freemasons, and Churchill and Hitler began to fizzle and the real war began. Hitler reacted to this by attempting suicide on 10 March 1941.

Lt.Col. Scotland: "This much, however, is in my view certain. There could be no question of Hess having flown from Germany on his own initiative. It is highly improbable that he could have taken his aircraft without the express knowledge and concurrence of three men: Adolf Hitler, Hermann Goering and Field-Marshal Kesselring or some equally high-ranking air force officer.

"Hitler, in short, would have to grant Goering permission for the trip, and for a machine, with extra tanks, to be made available. This work could only be done with the knowledge of someone like Kesselring (then Air Chief of Staff). And Goering, also, would have to issue precise instructions not only for the aircraft's route and planning, but for the temporary abatement of the German anti-aircraft units while Hess was on his way out."[7]

As it turned out, all three were British Agents. Adolf Hitler, Hermann Goering and Albert Kesselring.

The dates of 10–12 May 1941 are regularly confused by both sides as part of the ongoing cover for the Hess and Hess mission, which was both a peace mission and a mission to sabotage peace. It was a propaganda exercise acted and counteracted by both sides.

Hitler punished Hess's astrologers, whom he knew had been compromised by the British, but he did not punish Willi Messerschmitt (Mr Smith) who had helped doppelgänger Hess obtain and fit a brand new Messerschmitt Bf110D with a Knickbein radio night navigation system positioned for pilot rather than gunner-navigator control. Hitler also failed to punish the ground crew at Augsberg or Cologne. Nor did he punish Heydrich who guided the Hesses over the North Sea.

This is completely at odds with Hitler's standing orders about Hess not being allowed to fly. It shows that the Luftwaffe had official sanction to guide and assist Hess, using the biggest air raid ever as cover – the blitzkriegs over London. It shows Hitler's total complicity in the peace mission, and from his British training, the designated failure of that peace mission.

---

[7] Lt.Col. A.P. Scotland OBE, *The London Cage*, p. 69.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

Hitler knew that in the writing of history, this would make him look good and also allow him to get rid of 'Fraulein Anna', the nickname of his gay lover Rudolf Hess. Hess was beginning to make the Third Reich look like a 'Gay Reich', and the 'mean Hitler' look like a 'gay Hitler'. "Not self-seeking and unswervingly loyal, he [Hess] was promoted by Hitler to posts of increasing importance: Deputy to the Führer in 1933, Minister without Portfolio . . ."[8]

Rudolf Hess saved Hitler's life on 10 March 1941, and two months later Hitler repaid him by sending him on a suicide mission. His British agent status had taken hold. "The war, however, eclipsed his importance, which his meagre talents in any case scarcely justified, and in 1941 he flew on a self-appointed mission to Scotland to negotiate peace."[9]

If Germany knew Hitler was suicidal, Germany would lose its spirit to fight. The British goal was to extend the duration of the war, expand the fronts and get more countries involved. Hitler had no option but to obey his British Tavistock training. In his subconscious, he knew the war was expanding and he was heading north to Russia.

Secret Service: "To further cover this up and add confusion, essentially the name of the game, when the British got to Augsberg in Bavarian Germany they insisted on taking it ahead of any other Allied force. They burnt all the factory werke nummer [work number] records of the Messerschmitt Me110's. To this day, the records of the Me110's are an area of confusion unto themselves. There is no way to work out when they were manufactured or how many there were. The same thing happened in Austria.

"Russian Polikarpovs used to dive on the tails of the Me110's, chew the rudders up, and the Me110s would fall out of the sky. Records were destroyed to thwart any research confirming any double-dealings."

Doppelgänger Hess provided cover for the murder of the real Hess, who actually did want peace, and may have had enough charisma to make others question the war. The apparent capture of Hess appeared like a minor victory for the British. The doppelgänger Hess may have been unaware of the murder of the real Hess and probably believed Karl Horn had made it to America.

---

[8] John Keegan, 'The Men in the Dock', *Purnell's History of the Second World War*, No. 117, p. 3264.

[9] Ibid.

At the time of the blitz, Churchill was at his retreat at Ditchley Park, near Oxford, at the estate of Sir Ronald Tree, a place he went on moonlit nights – blitz nights. Churchill was watching a Marx brothers movie at the time and when he was advised that the Duke of Hamilton wanted to speak to him on the phone regarding the arrival of Hess in Scotland, Churchill said, “Will you kindly instruct the Duke of Hamilton to tell that to the Marx brothers . . . Hess, or no Hess, I’m going to see the Marx Brothers.” Churchill knew in advance that Hess and a doppelgänger Hess were arriving and that the real Hess was already being interrogated and would be killed.

The Duke of Hamilton then flew to Oxford that night and met with Churchill who appeared after the movie had finished and began grilling the Duke. Doppelgänger Hess had come fully loaded with proof positive of Hitler’s previous attempts to create peace in September 1940. Churchill received the Duke, swore him to secrecy and then dismissed him.

The Duke of Hamilton was actually sworn to secrecy the moment he became Scotland’s leading Freemason, and was further sworn to secrecy when he was pre-briefed on how to carry out this scenario. His flight to Oxford to see Churchill was partly for show.

Churchill then selected three people to interrogate the doppelgänger Hess: Roman Battaglia; the Duke of Hamilton; and Lord Simon.

Alfred Horn (doppelgänger Hess) was then taken to Maryhill Barracks in Glasgow where he emptied his pockets for the Duty Officer. One of the items was a letter from Hitler to the Duke of Hamilton. This letter was removed by Major Graham Donald and never reached public records. The war could not continue if there was written record of Hitler trying to create peace.

Major Graham Donald (Observer Corps) was a Freemason and Special Operations insider. First to meet with Alfred Horn, he instructed all the interviewers Alfred Horn was Rudolf Hess.

The first person to interrogate Alfred Horn/doppelgänger Hess was Roman Battaglia, an interrogator and language expert from the Polish Consulate. This following day it was the Duke of Hamilton’s turn.

Doppelgänger Hess was then interviewed by Lord Simon who was Chamberlain’s protégé. Chamberlain, the naïve fop used to secure war with Germany, had died six months earlier (9 November 1940).

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

The interview was conducted under the supervision of ‘C’. ‘C’ was General Sir Stewart Graham Menzies who was one of the many illegitimate son of King Edward VII.

Many of King Edward VII’s closest relatives believe he arranged WWII, despite the fact that he had died in 1910.

This is very similar to the interview of Saddam Hussein being conducted under the supervision of the CIA on 15 December 2003. It meant that no useful information would be gained, all scenario-information would be colluded, the war would continue to be justified and expanded, and huge profits would continue to be made. It was war and lives were as dispensable as writing them off as ‘collateral damage’. It could not have been a bigger set up.

Doppelgänger Hess’s offer for peace was completely at odds with real Hess’s offer for peace. Doppelgänger Hess’s offer for peace was that ‘England would return all of Germany’s ex-colonies, stay out of the war and allow Germany to take over Europe, including Russia [in 41 days’ time]. In return Germany would not touch the British Empire. This ‘Peace Talk’ was straight out of Hitler’s British deconstruction.

England decided Germany needed another enemy to weaken its attacks against England, so they encouraged Germany to attack Russia. Germany kept its part in the bargain. The blitzkriegs of Britain stopped and Germany attacked Russia under Operation BARBAROSSA on 22 June 1941. Britain had an agreement to warn Russia, but they failed to do so. This strained British/Russian relations – but what did it matter, Stalin was also a British agent and had been since his 1907–1911 British training.

Britain did warn Russia but warned them in such a way that they didn’t take it seriously, as they knew they wouldn’t. The British used letters and diplomatic notes. Stalin was so deluded that he even ignored a warning from the German Ambassador to Moscow. The German Ambassador said he felt he had an admiration for Bismarck, the German Chancellor in the mid-1800s. What was unsaid at the time was that Bismarck was an admirer of Russia and never wanted war with Russia. Bismarck wouldn’t even contemplate war with America.

Bismarck was in favour of exhibitions of force close to German borders. He had been a keen intellect and used to call the generals a bunch of dummkopfs, calling Kaiser Wilhelm II the biggest dummkopf of them all.

Bismarck: "All you have to do to understand what German strategy ought to be is to take a glance at a map of Germany and it immediately demonstrates three given truths:

1. Germany is placed geographically to attack in all directions.
2. Germany is also placed geographically to be attacked from all directions.
3. So obviously Germany should only fight with very limited war aims and not get involved in any war protracted beyond a year and a half.

Because dummkopfs could not read a single map, you had to watch them like a hawk."

At the end of the meeting, doppelgänger Hess said that Germany would not negotiate with Churchill. The interviewer's reports were never made public.

After the takeover of France, Hitler moved his headquarters to the Black Forest near Freudenstadt. WWII was designed to bring all the neutral WWI countries into war. The desire for oil crosses all national boundaries and national deaths are of no concern to oil companies. As such, Royal Dutch Shell asked Hitler to launch his armies into Russia for oil. In the Black Forest, in July 1940, Hitler agreed. Almost as soon as Hitler made a decision the British knew about it and acted accordingly. This little pearl was quietly recorded by Hitler's Dr Morell in his diary. The operation was first named 'Fritz', then 'Directive 21', then 'Barbarossa'.

Hitler's intelligence reports were actively compromised by the British. With British assistance Germany concluded in early 1941 that unless Russia was attacked within the year, she would arm and prove to be too strong to defeat. Hitler therefore decided that his July 1940 decision to attack Russia was a good one and he launched Operation BARBAROSSA with 121 German divisions, 19 armoured divisions, three air fleets and summer in mind.

Doppelgänger Hess's offering was hardly a peace talk. It was more of a finger pointing skite and a declaration to create a 'howling wilderness' everywhere but Britain and its colonies. It is hardly likely that Hess would negotiate for peace with Britain in earnest, by blitzing Britain just hours before. Doppelgänger Hess's peace mission was intended to fail and leave no room for success. After all, the British prided themselves as rescuers and there was no way they would let Western Europe fall to the Germans. It just wasn't in their blood.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

The real Hess was on a peace mission whereas doppelgänger Hess was pleading with England not to support Russia so that Germany could expand WWII. It was the same peace agreement Hitler tried with Neville Chamberlain prior to the invasion of Eastern Europe – Germany would help protect the British Empire as long as Britain did not oppose Germany in Europe. Britain and Germany would take over Europe without war between the two 'cousins'.

This is why the British Freemasons killed the real Hess and supported the doppelgänger Hess. Germany did attack Russia and the British did not come to a physical rescue. The British only supplied support on paper, which, in war, is as useless as tits on a bull.

In an attempt to limit the PR damage of a captured Hess on the German psyche, Ribbentrop advised the world that "Hess suffered from gallstones and through the pain he had become an 'astrological faddist' and was mad. The German underground movement took this to mean that the man Hitler had been promoting for years was partly or completely insane."

The truth of the matter was that both Hitler and Hess were bisexual and occasional lovers. Hitler had been promoting his lover Hess. They were not the first politicians to invent this strategy.

This encouraged more German High Command to become double agents, which then secured their freedom after the war. Some of them were even decorated by the Allies.

Eight days after Hess's landing Hitler sent two SS officers to parachute into the same location as doppelgänger Hess (19 May 1941) with the same maps, and with the same locations circled. They were interrogated, then executed, with no mission statement ever revealed. The war had only been going 19 months and the British were already furiously sabotaging peace talks and silencing everything around this effort.

The American President Franklin D. Roosevelt remarked, "I wonder what is really behind this story?"

Doppelgänger Hess was then placed in the Tower of London, Aldershot, Mychett Place (Camp Z), the Nuremberg Trials and Spandau Prison for a life sentence and eventual assassination 46 years later. For the last 21 years of his doppelgänger life, Hess was the only prisoner at Spandau Prison.

"He was indeed brought to Nuremberg apparently suffering from amnesia but was judged fit to plead and later recovered his memory. He was indicted on all four counts, convicted on counts 1 and 2, and sentenced to life imprisonment, and refuses all contact with his family."[10]

During his confinement in Britain (1941–45), the RAF guard asked doppelgänger Hess where he had learnt chess. "When I was in hospital in France after Cambrai" came the answer. In 1917 the real Hess was elsewhere on the Eastern Front.

In the 1980s when doppelgänger Hess began mumbling to his guards about being on a peace mission for Hitler, WWII being a British and German Freemasons' war against the French Freemasons, and a war to create 'ORDER OUT OF CHAOS', his execution became imminent. Germany, America and England intervened and doppelgänger Hess was assassinated in the Summerhouse of Spandau Prison by strangulation on 17 August 1987.

There is sufficient evidence to say that this is so. Freemasons dominated all positions of influence right through Britain and Germany. At the beginning of 1930, Germany had 75,000 Masons. Two-thirds of these refused to allow Jews to join and one third, the humanitarian lodges, allowed Jews to join. In 1922 these two lodges separated, with one-third of German lodges supporting Jews and two-thirds not.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

> "There is a border which strongly differentiates humanitarian from Old Prussian national Freemasonry. We, the three Old Prussian Grand Lodges refuse to take part in the general humanitarian fraternization movement between people in the world."[11]

This was acknowledged by the Nazis who gave protection to the Old Prussian Grand Lodge Freemasons and treated the Humanitarian Freemasons with contempt.

On 28 March 1933 the unrecognised 'Clandestine' Freemasons resolved to dissolve and become dormant. In their final resolutions they also resolved to support Hitler, as did the National Mother-Lodge, 'The Three Globes'. In late March 1933, the three (Berlin) Grand Lodges sent a congratulatory address to the Reich Chancellor Hitler, and The Grand Lodge of Saxony (Dresden) sent a telegram expressing its faithful support to Dr Goebbels.[12] By 31 March 1933, all German Freemasons were in support of Hitler.

Hitler was actually worshipped by the P2 Masonic Lodge Grand Master Licio Gelli, as well as a host of other Freemasons including Juan Peron and Thule Society cult founder, Rudolf Blauer (alias Rudolf Freiherr Von Seboottendorf).[13]

> *Omega Files*: "The Freemason's Scottish Rite can be traced back to the Jesuit college of Clermont in France, and at the core it advocates a global government and the destruction of all national boundaries, sovereignties and cultures; the dissolution of all traditional 'family' structures making all children the wards of the world state;[14] and the destruction of the idea that man has a soul, or rather that humans are merely evolved animals having no spiritual nature and therefore no need for God. In other words a homogenized collective society which does not tolerate individual expression but instead enforces absolute conformity to the controlling establishment."

In 1950, Masonic Brother C. William Smith wrote the article 'God's Plan in America' which gives some insight into Freemasonry's goals.[15] There are three plans in action today and they all have different purposes:

1. God's non-sectarian plan.
2. The Roman Catholic denominational sectarian plan.
3. The anti-Capitalist Communistic plan.

God's non-sectarian plan is dedicated to the unification of all races, religions and creeds, to the new order of things, to make all things new – a new nation, a new race, a new civilisation, a new non-sectarian religion, 'The Great Light' (which already exists) and a 'New Age' (Novus Ordo Seclorum).

---

[10] John Keegan, 'The Men in the Dock', *Purnell's History of the Second World War*, No. 117, p. 3264. Hess first saw his 'family' in 1969.

[11] Steffens, p. 332; taken from Alain Bernbeim, MPS, *Philaltethes Magazine*, 'German Freemasonry and Its Attitudes Toward The Nazi Regime', February 1997.

---

[12] *Nationale Zeitung*, Essen, 30 March 1933.

[13] 'Von Seboottendorf' was sometimes written 'von Sebbetendorf'. Name changes and spelling alterations to those names were a signature of high-ranking Freemasons who considered themselves above the law as they played their role in 'the game'.

[14] This is why so many Family Court judges are Freemasons.

[15] Heavily paraphrased from the archaic writing of Masonic Brother C. William Smith, 'God's Plan in America', *New Age Magazine*, September 1950, the official organ of The Supreme Council 33rd Degree A. & A. Scottish Rite of Freemasonry, S.J.U.S.A., pub. at 1735 Sixteenth Street N.W., Washington, D.C.

Great light non-sectarian Masonic Brotherhood Monarchs include: King George VI of England (1936–52), King Gustav V of Sweden (1907–56), King Haakon VII of Norway (1905–57), and the late King Kristian X of Denmark (1912–47).

The Nordic people are not church worshippers, but avid readers of the Bible. The Nordic-Anglo-Saxons make up 95% of colonists, were the first people to print the Bible in great quantity, were known as the people of the book, and are the great Bible-reading people of the world today. [With six-month long nights and no TV in the Arctic Circle, there was only sex and the Bible.] In Norway there has been no illiteracy for more than a hundred years. The Nordic people [with Greenland's Thule as their centre] are bringing a new order to the world.

At the time, the British thought Hess's history of WWII being a battle between the British and German Freemasons in order to create ORDER OUT OF CHAOS was dead and buried and wanted to keep it that way. Hess's guards at Spandau Prison were rotated every month and the murder occurred under US tenure.

On 17 August 1987 Hess's male nurse Abdallah Melaouhi passed two strangers in the Summer-house. They were British SAS assassins dressed in American Army uniform. According to Wolf Rudiger Hess, his (doppelgänger) father was murdered by British SAS assassins dressed as American soldiers, sent by MI-6 and his death was made to look like a suicide. (See *Doppelgänger Hess's Murder*, *Appendix 5*)

treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

According to Dr Seidl, doppelgänger Hess could not have committed suicide in this way because the 93-year-old could not lift his arms above his head. The suicide came complete with fake note, expertly forged by a specialist organisation, but not convincing to anyone who knew Hess.

Hess was never allowed to meet anyone from the public. If either the real Hess or the doppelgänger Hess had met with the public either may have told of how:

1. The British organised a fake peace treaty to flush out the German peace activists.
2. Britain could have accepted peace and saved the mass deaths of the Jews.
3. Hitler was encouraged to attack Russia to take the pressure off Britain.

4. If Germany had continued to attack Britain, Britain would have folded and lost the war within two years of its inception.
5. The British sabotaged Hitler's attempts at peace.
6. Hitler, as a British agent, sabotaged his own peace mission and extended the war to Russia. This meant he was fighting on two fronts. Even Hitler said he would 'not repeat this mistake of WWI', but he did.
7. The deaths of the Jews had been a British goal since Nathan Rothschild took over the Bank of England on 21 June 1815 using homing pigeons. (See *The Bank of England Heist*, *Appendix 6*)
8. Any of this information coming from doppelgänger Hess would have eroded any justified propaganda against Russia and would have delayed the Berlin Wall coming down 27 months later (9 Nov. 1989).

According to the *Cambridge Dictionary*, "In June 1941, on the eve of Germany's attack on Russia, Rudolf Hess flew alone to Scotland to plead the cause of a negotiated Anglo-German peace. He was temporarily imprisoned in the Tower of London, then placed under psychiatric care near Aldershot. At the Nuremberg Trials (1946) he was sentenced to life imprisonment, and remained in Spandau Prison [just west of Berlin] until his death."

The truth of the matter is that both Hess and doppelgänger Hess flew into Scotland on 11 May and landed within 35 km of each other. The real Hess landed his plane safely at Preswick and the doppelgänger Hess crashed his plane at Eaglesham, near Dungavel Castle. The real Hess was then killed, while the doppelgänger was detained, written off as mad, had his personality altered, was placed in prison and then assassinated 46 years later.

Karl Horn, the companion of the real Hess, parachuted out of Hess's plane and went on the very dangerous mission of 'doing the same thing' as Rudolf Hess, but with America. Karl Horn made it to America and pleaded for peace.

Karl Horn was someone the Americans would recognise and who had the highest connections in Germany. He was a Hauptmann or German Captain in the Luftwaffe, Knights Cross holder from the Battle of Britain (August–September 1940) and 1936 Olympic long-distance runner. His uncle was Colonel General Karlheinz von Horn, who later led the German Army in the Ardennes offensive of 1944–5. Karl Horn was a pilot from a famous flying lineage who would be respected by the American military.

It was not uncommon from WWI to WWII for athletes to also be agents and for their names to be suppressed or confused. The agent might get a medal in the event, while another stood on the podium and was photographed. The name, sex and image of agents in the Olympics was regularly obfuscated between the wars. In this way the prize was awarded to the country, with the true identity of the agent remaining secret. There were even men competing in women's events.

It is not untypical for the Polish to look transgender. Stella Walsh, born Stanislawa Walasiewicz, won the 1932 100m Olympic gold medal and came second at the 1936 Olympics at Berlin. It wasn't until she was shot in 1980 that it was discovered she was a man. But these transgender types have a way of using the media to their advantage and she had a Polish reporter accuse the winner, Helen Stephens, of being a man.

In this way, the closest official record of Karl Horn being a 1936 Olympic long-distance runner is Karl Hein who won the gold medal for the hammer with an Olympic record of 185' 4". Erwin Blask (Germany) got the silver for 180' 6.5" and Fred Warngard (Sweden) got the bronze for 179' 10.5". Such is the nature of military-Olympic competitors and the obfuscation that surrounds their public achievements.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 20

Secret Service: "Karl Horn made it to his rendezvous with an American General that had been sent to England and negotiated a flight to America on the 'Liberator Transports of the American Ferry Command' from the Scottish West Coast. These Liberator flights were flying in and out of Scotland all the time, transporting planes to Britain and munitions to both England and Nazi Germany, courtesy of Prescott Bush – grandfather to the current US president.

"Karl Horn made it to America and tried to approach the big-wigs in the United States but instead was hunted down by a joint British MI-6 and FBI firing party which included his British Olympic long-distance competitor. The FBI troop included a sadistic, homosexual, ex-Austrian serviceman who used to beat people to death. The cross-dressing blackmailed director of the FBI, J. Edgar Hoover, used the former Austrian when he didn't care if the subject died."

Karl Horn, a man negotiating for 'world peace', the end of Germany's advancement in WWII, and Hitler's escape to America, was hunted down as a forerunner to the psycho-thrillers that were to come. Exhausted, Karl Horn eventually committed suicide by swimming out from the New England coast into the Atlantic Ocean and drowning. If only he had made it south to Yaphank, Long Island. There, the 'potato-field fascists' would have covered for him and even given Hitler a bed for a decade or two.

When the fake Hess was on trial at Nuremberg (from 30 September 1946), the Germans High Command smirked and accommodated him as a retard. The real Goering laughed and ridiculed him because he knew he was a doppelgänger and a British agent. After all, Goering had ordered the death of the real Hess at Abbeville and had given approval for both flights to arrive simultaneously in Scotland.

At the Nuremberg trials, the Russian judge dissented and found Hess guilty of 'Crimes Against Humanity' but the British and other judges were extraordinarily lenient and did not. The British judge refused to get into matters of politics and Secret Operations. It would have placed Churchill in a bad light and been an embarrassment to the British monarchy, aristocracy and government. As a result, Hess was not found guilty.

Over 99% of those charged with war crimes were not convicted. Because of double agent dealings, most of the war criminals had fake deaths (Hitler), had doppelgängers at the trial (Hess), were Anglophiles (Schellenberg), had turned up to the trial under British cover complete with plastic surgery to witness their own sentence in absentia (Martin Bormann), or had been compromised during the war and had become British double agents (most of the German High Command).

The Nuremberg trials quickly turned into a farce and the judges were powerless to act with such military/intelligence interference.

In the 1970s the medical officer Hugh Thomas, a Welsh surgeon treating the doppelgänger Hess, noticed that the prisoner did not have the same dunchesse, the chest scar from the through-and-through gunshot wound from the Russian Nagant rifle that almost killed the real Rudolf Hess in Romania on 8 August 1917, after which he was hospitalised for four months.[16]

---

[16] Leutnant Rudolf Hess's military service record is held in the American Mission (the Berlin Document Centre) which houses several hundred thousand captured German WWII documents. It was formerly the fortified headquarters of Hermann Goering; *The Murder of Rudolf Hess*, pp. 28–29.

When Hugh Thomas pointed this out he got monstered by British Intelligence. Nevertheless, doppelgänger Hess was detained and executed 46 years later in 1987, when he was some 93 years old. He maintained silence for almost all of that time.

When doppelgänger Hess did finally speak out, he was executed: "The war is a war of secrets. I knew you would come for me. I alone won the war. My family are all grown up now." This was delivered to the SAS assassins in fluent English.

The information doppelgänger Hess could reveal would have been bad for the justification of the Cold War against Russia and Britain wanted to look like a top dog with clean paws while it lasted. The death of doppelgänger Hess became the long fuse for the end of the Cold War and made the Russians a little happier about their lot. It also maintained their ignorance.

The 'Progrom' was to maintain the Berlin Wall until 30/31 December 1999, once Helen Clark and her minder Vladimir Putin had got into power. Helen Clark is the KGB operative 'IE', pronounced 'E'. "She trained in St Petersburg"[17] from 1968 and worked with Vladimir Putin from 1978–91 in an attempt to launch a nuclear strike on American property (Canberra, Adelaide, Sydney, Taupo) from a Russian nuclear-armed submarine in the deep New Zealand waters. This was known as the "Trawler Wars".

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

Vladimir Putin lived in Wellington for two years as a Fisheries Inspector (between 1980–82) and returned for the sinking of the *Lermontov* (16 February 1986). At least some of Putin and Clark's clandestine meetings were held on Wellington's Wharf No. 3 in the early hours of the morning and these were recorded. These records were then read and discussed on a political level, but did not reach the public domain due to ideological similarities.

Through Fred Winterbotham (Air Force Intelligence) the British knew the SS were running doppelgängers. The British knew the second pilot was not the real Rudolf Hess and they knew the real Hess had been tortured to death. To avoid retaliation and looking like 'peace saboteurs' the British sustained the mystery of the real Rudolf Hess for 46 years after his death. Both Britain and Germany and the British and German Freemasons have kept up the pretence that doppelgänger Hess was the real Rudolf Hess to this day.

If the British thought the captured doppelgänger Hess was the real Hess he would have been executed at the Nuremberg trials in 1946. Because various levels of the British and German command were uncertain, or knew otherwise, he was kept alive to live out most of his days.

Rudolf Hess's guards at Spandau Prison all knew that he was a fake Hess, a doppelgänger, because he (Alfred Horn) had spent time in Cambrai in 1917 when the real Hess was in Romania from 1916–18. The real Hess had been nearby in Ypres and Artois in 1915, but in Romania from 1916 where he was shot and then trained as a pilot from March to November 1918.

Secret Service: "All of the Air Force personnel who guarded Hess were swished out to New Zealand on a boat and they didn't know why they had been moved here until I interviewed them. The last Nazi in New Zealand was a wheelchair-ridden invalid nursed to death in 1973. The spy Garbo was also smuggled out to New Zealand."

The truth of the matter is that the British military had trained both Hitler and Stalin. They had both been gifted their countries with ample MI-6 support and the British wanted to watch Russia and Germany fight it out to the bitter end. It gave the British and their secret societies a sense of command to watch two nations battle to the death. By destroying Russia and Germany completely, it made England comparatively stronger.

The British wanted the secrets the Nazis had plundered from the French Freemasons, the direct descendants of the Knights Templar who had invaded King Solomon's tomb in 1127AD. Raiding King Solomon's tomb brought untold riches, wealth, knowledge and style to France. This was followed by envious wars from other countries and retaliatory invasions from the Catholic Church.

The British royalty and Freemasons had this to say to Germany and Russia: "As you depose our royal cousins from the monarchies of your countries, we will introduce new leaders (whom we control) and turn them against you, turning your country into a 'Howling Wilderness'."

The British monarchy's removal of the European monarchies was full of cover ups and arranged events shrouded in the mystery of new ideologies. The deaths of the Czar's family were faked. They didn't die at Yekaterinburg in Russia in 1918 as was popularly believed, but were removed from power and swished out to Southern Ireland (Eire from 1922) by Lieutenant Colonel Meintzerhagen.

---

[17] The author announced this on televisions on 29 November 2005, replayed on 8 February 2006. There have been no law suits, and worse still, no contact from any media. This includes the Head of Television who has a copy of the first edition.

Germany's Kaiser wasn't killed either, but removed to Harlem in Holland a week after WWI ended. The British royal family was related to both of these families. They were prepared to depose them, but they were hardly going to have them killed. The ties between Britain and Russia, and Britain and Germany, were so strong at the time that the Russians were referred to as 'uncles' and the Germans as 'cousins'.

Germany and the Soviet Union signed the Molotov-Ribbentrop Non-Aggression Pact on 23 August 1939 (with British approval) but secretly planned to divide up Eastern Europe between them. As soon as the Russo-German Non-Aggression Pact was signed, Germany knew it was going to war with Russia. As Germany overran Poland, Russia overran Finland and the Baltic States. Both countries were expanding under British instruction in order to create an excuse for World War II. Both Stalin and Hitler were British agents and shared Poland by splitting it down the middle.

Espavo 5026 - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

With the peace plan with Britain thwarted, Hitler broke the Non-Aggression Pact with Russia and invaded the Soviet Union at Lithuania, Belarus and the Ukraine on 22 June 1941. This placed St Petersburg under a siege for a famous 900 days, to February 1944. A bitter four-year Russian-German war was created that Britain sat back and watched. The Russo-German war lasted from the German invasion of Russia, to the Russian invasion of Berlin in April 1945. As a result, more Russian blood was spilt in WWII than by any other nation and both Britain and America fought against a weakened German side[18] . . . and when the Cold War began they fought against a weakened Russian side.

Literally, as kindergarten children playing war on maps with tin soldiers and toy tanks, in libraries containing the great histories of 'propaganda and paedophilic heroism', the British watched as Germany, having been given France, went to war with Russia.

Both Stalin and Hitler had similar backgrounds, were British Psych-Ops trained, and trained using the same methods. Stalin's training in Britain began in 1907 and Hitler's training in Britain began in 1912. Both were used as Britain's retaliators.

---

[18] *The Wind, June* 2003; 26 million Russians died in WWII.

Prior to WWI, London, St. Petersburg and Berlin were opulent cities of equal wealth. After WWI, WWII and the Cold War, London was by far the wealthier city. The battle between these countries continues in the realm of WAR-IN-PEACETIME. It is now fought around the distribution of drugs and the induction of feminism into each other's societies.

Feminism was invented in Russia as a method of war, and during the Cold War feminists in Russia were deported to the West. Feminists break down the family, reduce breeding and create infighting.

War-in-peacetime is the war of family attrition. Vladimir Putin's agent Helen Clark is a feminist and lesbian. She became Prime Minister only after another female PM lost to her, so there was no choice. Clark has taken the feminist motto, "If it works, break it" to the nth degree and in just six years of her communist/fascist leadership, NZ has become a country without an identity where the citizens fear and distrust the police and paedophiles have been elevated to the highest office.

Like Marilyn Monroe and Jackie Bouvier-Kennedy-Onassis, Hitler and Stalin were each other's admirers and competitors, and all four were after the same thing – enough attention to compensate their earlier years of an absent father.

Hitler came to understand what WWII was about and made three attempts at "Peace for Our Time", sending his top men to get the message across. Most of the upper echelons of the SS had several doppelgängers, as did the Reichsführer and pilot Rudolf Hess. Hess was invited by the British to rendezvous and discuss peace on 11 May 1941. The German attempt to shoot real Hess down came via double agents in the German High Command, namely Goering, who was acting on British orders.

The previous Reichsführer, the gay Captain Roehm, was also murdered. He was a British agent and Hitler's Psych-Ops minder but he was still killed on Hitler's orders during the Night of the Long Knives (30 June 1934).

The German-instigated peace negotiations of September 1940 and May 1941 were sabotaged by both sides under British Freemasonry orders. The Freemasons were out for war. They had created enough of them and lived and died by their motto 'ORDER OUT OF CHAOS'.

This historical event, the Hitler/Hess-instigated peace talks, is fraught with cover-ups on a scale only found in war. The cover-ups included the Luftwaffe air raid resulting in the misconstrued dates for the London blitz, (10 May, 11 May or 21 June 1941), fake Hess plane sightings, the use of doppelgängers, doppelgänger Hess being named the real Hess, doppelgänger Hess being altered to believe he was the real Hess, the deaths of British and German players, and history rewriting interference, employing the best writers, in which two-thirds of all history books ensure 95% of the information is false – after which there has been six decades of complicit silence.

The two Hesses flying to Britain was a cover-up to make Britain look good while sabotaging peace, encouraging their German cousins' war expansion into Russia, thus weakening both Russia and Germany while saving Britain and extending the war.

World War II was an English and German Freemasonry stitch-up against the French and Russians. Britain and America won the war by extending it and ensuring that it took place (predominantly) on others' soil. The British monarchy barely got touched and America suffered little damage at home.

In all its forms, peace had everything to fear in the face of a profitable war and the transfer of power to the West. America was out of the war but selling arms to both sides. It had also remained out of WWI until it was drawn in by the organised sinking of the American passenger ship, the *Lusitania*. This pissed the Americans off no end, but it was the Zimmerman telegram that brought them into war.[19]

British Intelligence Officer: "During the First World War, the British were at desperation point. By 1915, they had virtually sold all their invisibles[20] in America and the Amis now wanted cash up front. The British were absolutely bled white and they came up with the idea of sinking the *Lusitania* to bring America into the war.

"War has a history of inciting its allies into battle by bombing them and blaming the enemy. The ship was loaded with American passengers, arms and munitions, and the hull was lined with gun cotton in the size and shape of bricks. The *Lusitania* had an auxiliary status as a fleet reserve, so she was a naval ship and the Germans were quite within their rights to sink her as it was carrying war cargo.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

"Churchill knew the gun cotton was stacked around the hull below the water-line and that a glancing blow from a torpedo would blow the gun cotton and then the whole ship. When Nobel was discovering dynamite in the 19th century, gun cotton was one of the variations – an explosive and charge in one.

"The *Lusitania* went on several voyages with this gun cotton stacked up around the hull, and as First Lord of the Admiralty, Churchill was consulted as to its removal. 'Do the British remove it each time, or do they remove it in England or America?' The British were paranoid about it. The potential of the gun cotton lining the hull split British loyalties between America as a trading partner versus bringing America into the war.

"Churchill didn't want the *Lusitania* to sink on the way to America as it would have British cargo and passengers on board and wouldn't bring about the required retaliation. He wanted it to sink on the return journey from America while loaded with Americans, in order to swing tax-free America into war.

"In the Port of New York, the Chief of German Naval Espionage, Von Rintelen (who called himself 'The Dark Invader') boarded the *Lusitania* to see if she was indeed carrying war cargo. It was very important that the facts be verified before she was sunk. Von Rintelen passed the information back to Germany in code that the ship was indeed carrying gun cotton, ammunition and explosives. The *Lusitania* left New York from Qunard's Pier on 1 May 1915 and sailed towards Liverpool.

"In a naval cipher the Germans could understand, Britain broadcast instructions to the Navy in Queenstown in Ireland to withdraw their escort cruiser in the Irish Sea, while at the same time telling the Germans what course the cruiser was taking.

"Eyewitnesses talk about a huge explosion. The German torpedo hit the ship and ripped the bottom out of it. The *Lusitania* was a very fast ship and she was travelling at 15 to 18 knots. As soon as the torpedo hit, the gun cotton blew out the bottom of the ship and she ploughed under. It would normally take 1–2 hours for a ship like this to sink, but because gun cotton lined the hull, she sank in 18 minutes. That's why the death toll was so high. If it had just been ordinary cargo she may have remained afloat and even been towed to an Irish Port.

"This act of enemy-informed Allied sabotage was designed to bring the Americans into the war, which it did for the most part. Six days after the *Lusitania* sailed with 1,959 passengers (including 123 Americans), she was sunk by a German submarine (U-boat) in the Atlantic. It was 7 May 1915."

---

[19] The Zimmerman telegram was manufactured by the British to infuriate the Americans into WWI.

[20] 'Invisibles' are income generating shareholdings, shares, loans, insurance payments, payments for services, bonds, IOUs, interest and any non-finite goods.

Secret Service: "When divers started diving on the *Lusitania*, British Intelligence got really jumpy. They decided around 1998 to blow the rest of the ship up, to hide the fact that there was Naval gun cotton lining the hull of the ship and that nearly 1200 had died in an informed enemy attack on an allied ship, in order to bring America into the war. The sinking of the *Lusitania* was enemy informed Allied sabotage (EIAS)."

"The anti-German feeling that this event generated in the US was a factor in bringing that country into the First World War."[21]

The British then used the same tactic against the *Zamzam* in WWII, which was carrying a lot of American passengers. In April 1941 it was intercepted by the *Atlantis*, a well-informed German commerce raider. Commerce raiders often carried English-speaking Intelligence Officers to tune into Allied radio channels which forecast the locations of the ships hunting for them. These Intelligence Officers were often ex-merchant officers who had dealt with English passengers before. The Germans knew about the *Lusitania*, caught on to what was happening, secured the passengers of the *Zamzam* and then scuttled her.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Then in 1941 the British bombed the Dutch submarine that had prior knowledge of the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor. Ironically, the attack on Pearl Harbor was based on the British Bywater Plan that the British had given the Japanese over a drinking session some 16 years earlier. Pearl Harbor worked and America joined WWII. Rather than supply both sides with arms and munitions, America joined WWII in earnest with full navy, army and air force involvement.

As more profits were made by the munitions factories, and more fathers died, orphaned children were becoming more and more common and available. Paedophilia and the military would be in bed forever.

As it turned out, there was no need for Hitler to send his best deputies and most convincing doppelgängers to negotiate for 'world peace'. It all turned out okay for Hitler. What he hadn't counted on was that once an agent of war you are always protected by those who profit from it most. "Blessed are the war-makers."

The most serious threat to Hitler's power had been the Stennes Rebellion. After 1945, Walther Stennes said: "Hitler might be dead (he was not even sure of that at the time) but it seemed that his spirit was very much alive . . . his next and highly characteristic step was to investigate the truth of the various stories of Hitler's death . . . He soon succeeded in tracking down an old friend who had served in Hitler's personal bodyguard and this veteran assured him that, although the direct evidence of his death was inconclusive, his physical and mental state when Berlin fell had been so bad as to make it certain that he could not have survived."[22] This was essentially a fob-off to a friend, saying, 'If he ain't dead, he soon will be, and don't bother looking'.

Jimmy Byrnes: "While in Potsdam at the Conference of the Big Four [7 July–2 August 1945], Stalin left his chair, came over and clinked his liquor glass with mine in a very friendly manner. I said to him: 'Marshal Stalin, what is your theory about the death of Hitler?'

"Stalin replied: 'He is not dead. He escaped either to Spain or Argentina.'"[23]

In August 1945, Stalin personally accused the British of "concealing the real Adolf Hitler". "A new feature in this belief was where Hitler was supposed to be hiding. In the summer of 1945 I had been told Hitler was in Spain or South America."[24]

Secret Service referring to the conversations with the IRA undercover 'Cuchullain': "Similarly the British also hid the fascist sympathiser King Edward VIII and Wallis Simpson in Portugal five years earlier in July 1940. Spain and Portugal have for centuries been in the hands of the British Secret Service and their compliance is guaranteed. Portugal is still referred to by the British as 'our oldest allies'."

There is another theory that Hitler died in the mid-1970s but this involved another doppelgänger. It was the same scam the British used with Martin Bormann allowing a reclusive doppelgänger to appear after Bormann's death. The illusion was always to be the denial of truth, with no timescale disregarded, and no expense spared.

As early as September 1944 orders were issued concerning the storage of papers belonging to Special Operations 1 which was linked with Ian Fleming's Naval Intelligence. The four rules, 'A', 'B', 'C' and 'D', lay down specific guidelines pertaining to the destruction of files belonging to SO1. Only category 'A' states anything to do with the files surviving. This resulted in most of the evidence being destroyed. No files containing sensitive material would reach the Public Record Office. As a result, there is little or no chance of any correspondence between key players surviving.

---

[21] *The Oxford English Reference Dictionary*.

[22] *The Amiable Prussian*, pp. 180, 185, 186.

[23] Former Secretary of State Jimmy Byrnes in his book *Frankly Speaking*.

[24] Walter Laufenberg, *Hitler's Double*, quoting British Intelligence Officer, Lieutenant Colonel W. Byford-Jones on 20 April 1946.

Scores of Nazis fled to South America after WWII. Argentina opened its Nazi files on 30 January 1992 but none of them were of Hitler. Hitler's file is most likely kept under presidential guard in Switzerland.

The British Public Record Office contains files under reference number FO898/257 dealing with Swiss matters. It is on permanent loan to the Foreign Office and is unlikely to be released in the foreseeable future.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Crashing the Duke of Kent

Flying Boat's Holy Ghost

King George VI installed his younger brother, the Duke of Kent as Grand Master Mason in 1939 and he became the Hereditary Grand Master of Anglo-American Freemasonry. The fourth son of King George V[1] married Marina, the Princess of Greece and Denmark (1906–68) and they had two sons.

The Duke of Kent was addicted to cocaine, morphine and sex, both with men and women. He didn't care which. He had a long string of affairs before marriage and continued these during his marriage making his wife one of the most cuckold women in history, next to the Queen.

His better known female partners included Ethel Margaret Whigham who became the Duchess of Argyll, Indira Raje, the Maharani of Cooch Behar, banking heiress Poppy Baring, musical star Jessie Mathews, black cabaret singer Florence Mills, and American socialite and drug addict Kiki Preston (née Alice Gwynne) with whom he had an illegitimate child. Parenthood didn't slow them down and they had a ménage à trois with the bisexual Jorge Ferrara, son of an Argentine ambassador.

The Duke of Kent also had affairs with his distant cousin, Louis Ferdinand, Prince of Prussia, his half-bother Anthony Blunt (making him an incestuous homosexual) and actor Noel Coward for 19 years, explaining why so many of Coward's plays were inflicted upon us. (Whoever gets to root the most royals for the longest gets the patronage). The Duke of Kent wrote love letters to Noel Coward and these were stolen from Coward's house in 1942. He also wrote love letters to a male prostitute who responded by blackmailing him.

The Duke of Kent's eldest son, Prince Edward, was the son of a cocaine and morphine addict and was born with a face like sin in a silly mirror. Lacking the required looks for royal acceptance, the family moved from London to Buckinghamshire in 1936 to keep all male members out of the public eye.

---

[1] The fifth son of King George V, Prince John (1905–19) was retarded and largely ignored. All were the half-brothers of the treasonous spy Anthony Blunt.

The Murder of Lord Erroll

Josslyn Victor Hay was the 22nd Lord Errol. He was the son of the British High Commissioner in the Rhineland, had a photographic memory, was an excellent public speaker and was part of the Clivedon set.

Lord Erroll came to see both sides of the war – the British side, the German side . . . and the bankers side. He understood Hitler's fascism to be a front for the communism that was to come and he had enough connections to understand the occult links between Churchill and Hitler. Erroll was aware of how the Crown bankers had used Hitler to create a war of profit and social change to their liking and he said as much within earshot of MI-5.

> Little did Lord Erroll know,
> the privately owned Crown bankers, the Rothschilds,
> had also grown and developed Hitler.

MI-5's primary role was protecting the national status quo and any insightful revelation was an unwanted revelation. Churchill was advised and Errol had to go.

Churchill discussed this with the Duke of Hamilton and they colluded to murder the 22nd Lord Errol, Josslyn Victor Hay. On 7 September 1940, the 14th Duke of Hamilton met with others to discuss the murder. Five days later the contract was handed over to the Special Operations Executive from where it went to Cairo under the name Operation HIGHLAND CLEARANCE.

Lady Diana Broughton had a penchant for forcing men to perform cunnilingus on her at gunpoint and she literally came with a bang. Sir Henry and Lady Broughton were two MI-5 assets. In November 1940 they travelled to Happy Valley, north of Nairobi, in Kenya and involved Lord Erroll in a love-triangle.

The following month, in December 1940, an SOE couple entered Kenya and late on the night of 23 January 1941, Lord Erroll dropped Lady Broughton off at her home and then drove past the SOE couple who were pretending to have engine trouble by the side of the road. Lord Erroll gave the female a ride back towards town. With two radio-controlled MI-5 teams following, she pointed the gun at Erroll who stopped the car. She had him kneel in the passenger foot-well of his car. It was close to midnight on 23 January 1941 and she shot him in the back of the head execution style.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Lord Erroll was wearing his army uniform at the time and up to the point of death, the whole experience was not dissimilar to the way Lady Brougthon had treated him.

Diana's husband, Sir Henry 'Jock' Broughton was charged with the murder. MI-6 usually fit people up, but because 'both were MI-5 assets and party to the intelligence hit, and Jock had been knighted, the trial was a distraction so that any real evidence by the real killers was never followed up. Jock was found 'not guilty'.

Even before this information came out, it was widely accepted in intelligence circles that Lord Erroll's murder was an intelligence hit on the orders of Winston Churchill – one of many for Winston. In this case he used the 14th Duke of Hamilton to come up with the plan and have it executed.

The Duke of Hamilton was a homosexual occultist. He was having an affair with Albrecht Haushofer, the son of Rudolf Hess' mentor, Karl Haushofer, who had originated the concept of lebensraum. This gave Churchill leverage over Hamilton who was a higher-ranking Freemason than Winston.[2]

Such cause célèbre (big fuck ups) were common and this one was illustrated in the movie *White Mischief* in 1987. The movie makers brought it to our attention, but they still muffed it.

Flying Boats

Most large cities were on the coast or rivers and in the late 1930s runways didn't exist. Airfields were short, often rough, and before retractable wheels, planes were no faster than flying boats. Nevertheless, Sunderland flying boats were not the best of planes. They were much loved but underpowered, slow to take off, had limited range, were sabotaged by their manufacturers and their service crews, and were involved in every political machination of blind patriotism, royal anarchy and overt sabotage. As a result Sunderlands were in a constant state of ever-changing non-development.

Sunderlands appeared to be capable and threatening, had plenty of small .303 weaponry and were known as "Flying Porcupines".

---

[2] Kevin Abrams & Scott Lively, *The Pink Swastika*. See the chapter 'Homo-Occultism'. The remainder of this 'White Mischief' section was updated using the 30 April 2006 article posted by Henry Makow PhD, "The 'Ugly' Cause Of World War Two, The Murder Of Lord Erroll".

However they were large and slow, fuel and explosives were stored together, they were prone to self-sabotage, sabotage, forward radar detection and attack.

Sunderlands were “Flying Turtles”. They were much loved flying death traps and those who survived even reconnaissance missions were lucky to survive reconnaissance missions.

Arthur Gouge, Sunderlands and Saunders-Roe

Oswald Short and Francis Webber designed the first metal-hulled flying boat, the diminutive Cockle which first flew on 18 September 1924. Arthur Gouge then succeeded Webber as chief designer and designed the Singapore I from which the Sunderland emerged. The Seaplane Works at Rochester built 27 flying boats of eight different designs from the launch of the Singapore I flying boat on 17 August 1926 (a bi-plane flying boat) to the first Sunderland/Empire/C Class flying boat in 1936.

In 1934 the British postmaster general declared that all first-class Royal Mail should go by air.[3] This effectively subsidised air travel and led to a contract for long-range flying boats which went almost immediately to the Short Brothers of Rochester, England. It was an inside job, but their only competition was the Supermarine and they were busy with the Spitfire.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

The head of the design team, with a huge influence over research and development, was Arthur Gouge (later Sir Arthur Gouge) and he ensured that underpowered and overtaxed British engines were used for as long as possible. This led to slow and expensive travel, a high turnover of engines, many unnecessary crashes, many failed rescues and many failed escapes.

Saunders-Roe Ltd believed flying boats were going to be the next big thing after the war so they took over Shorts in 1943 in what was as close as you could get to a company takeover during wartime. At the same time Oswald Short resigned as Chairman of Shorts to become Honorary Life President and Arthur Gouge become Vice-Chairman of Saunders-Roe Ltd. This meant that Arthur Gouge had taken over from Oswald Short and was now in charge of design and construction.

---

[3] Sources: Terry Gwynn-Jones, *The Flying Porcupine Earns Its Name*, Aviation History, March 1999, 30:36; *British Warplanes of World War II*, edited by Daniel J. March, Airtime Publishing, 1998; Robert L. Gandt, *China Clipper*, Naval Institute Press, 1991; William Green, *War Planes of the Second World War*, Vol. 5, ‘Flying Boats’, Doubleday and Company, 1962; Geoffrey Norris, *The Short Sunderland*, Profile Publications, late 1960s.

The first thing Saunders-Roe did was sell Americans the idea that German flying boats were aiding German communication and escapes. The Americans then shot down German flying boats and this eliminated much of Saunders-Roe’s post-war competition. The only competition left was American and mainly the Spruce Goose.

As Vice-Chairman of Saunders-Roe, Arthur Gouge’s main responsibility was to direct the design and construction of the Shetland R 14/40 flying boat. It was assembled in October 1944 at the Short’s factory at Rochester and weighed 56,700 kg, three times the size of an early Sunderland.

The Brabazon committee met in 1944 to establish the shape of British post-war commercial aircraft and were considering flying boats for the South Atlantic and Pacific routes. Saunders-Roe had detailed proposals for large flying boats up to 150,000 kg, three times the size of the Shetland and nine times the size of the Sunderland. The huge passenger aircraft was designed to steal all passenger travel around the world. The Saunders-Roe SR 45 Princess was launched on 29 August 1952. The second Princess never received any engines. It was launched on water on 13 February 1953 and towed straight to storage. The third Princess never received engines and all were scrapped by 1967.

The Princess (top) and the Spruce Goose flying into oblivion.

The Princess, which turned out to be a flying pig, was smaller than Howard Hughes' Spruce Goose flying boat. The US Government was on Hughes back and denied him the use of aluminium so he built his 180,000 kg plane out of birch wood and flew it a short distance on 2 November 1947. Other than that, it too went into storage, as did much of flying boat history.

Howard Hughes

Howard Hughes had made himself as rich as God during WWII and had multiple world air-speed records. He was a truth talker and had no feelings for anyone else in the American Aviation Industry. Hughes became too much of a problem for the American Military Industrial Complex and the Mafia, so they had the Mafia kidnap him in the late 1950s during post-war manoeuvring. The Mafia then gave Hughes to the Mormon Mafia who guarded him on contract, blacked out the windows of any penthouse he was living in and turned him into a heroin junkie.

Officially "Hughes only had his hair cut and nails trimmed once a year, was addicted to codeine and valium, was surrounded by Mormons because he trusted them, had contracted syphilis as a young man and had obsessive-compulsive disorder." In November 1966 Hughes moved Las Vegas and within two years he bought the Desert Inn and lived on the ninth floor. He then bought Castaways, New Frontier, The Landmark Hotel and Casino, Sands and the Silver Slipper. All of these hotels were purchased off the Mafia, essentially for the Mormon Mafia. This suited the FBI down to the ground as it severed Mafia ties to Las Vegas. The Mormon Mafia committee mainly consisted of Latter-day Saints.

treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

> The FBI, via Hughes and the Mormon Mafia, were buying up Las Vegas.

Howard Hughes' kidnap was covered by a marriage to Jean Peters on 12 January 1957, although the whole relationship was carried out by phone. He spent the last twenty years of his life as a prisoner and was then killed on "5 April 1976".

In 1970 the Mormon Mafia sold Clifford Irving a copy of the computer-generated biography of Howard Hughes before it was published. Clifford published it as the co-author and made a fortune out of *Autobiography of Howard Hughes*. The biography was denied by Howard Hughes on television on 9 January 1972. Hughes denied it by telephone conference by talking to seven journalists he'd known prior to his kidnapping. Hughes did not appear on the TV. Irving claimed "the voice was probably fake". The Mormon that sold Irving the computer-generated manuscript was hunted down and killed and Irving had to go to prison for 17 months (from 16 June 1972) which really pissed him off.

Autobiography of Howard Hughes appeared on the net in 1999 and it is the most truthful account of Howard Hughes' life. Lies and cover ups are not limited to any media or any time frame and filming for *The Hoax* began in July 2005. *The Hoax* is based on Clifford Irving writing *Autobiography of Howard Hughes* as a hoax. It wasn't. Meryl Streep's daughter Jane Gray stars in the movie. That should give *The Hoax* all the kudos it doesn't deserve.

When Hughes died in 1976 he only weighed 41 kg (90 pounds). He was such a changed man that the FBI had to resort to fingerprint identification. His real death occurred much later in the 1980s. I spoke with someone who was contracted to kill him, but he was removed from the job due to benevolence on a previous contract.

Sunderlands/C Class/Empire Flying Boats

Sunderlands were collectively known as 'Empire flying boats' from a Short Brothers self-promotional letter dated 25 May 1935, a year before the first was launched. Use of the word "Empire" helped to sell them as a luxury and justify the expense of the flights. Sunderlands were way behind the Boeing Clippers and Sikorsky transatlantic flights and this was a huge embarrassment to the puffed-up British. American Clippers were flying from San Francisco to Hawaii in 1939 whereas the Sunderlands needed refuelling every 800–965 km. The British compensated for this by loving their flying boats, all 42 of them.

"All the 42 Empire 'boats were built in the main assembly shop – No. 3 Shop – of the Seaplane Works at Rochester, beside the River Medway in Kent. The first s.23, Construction number S. 795 G-ADHL CANOPUS, went down the famous, and still existing, slipway outside the Shop in July 1936 and the last S.1026 G-AFRA CLEOPATRA, in May 1940 . . . 12,000 drawings were needed to construct the first Short Empire flying boat. It seems that all the originals were later destroyed . . . All the original tracing masters and stress calculations have been destroyed. The fact that nearly every single print has completely disappeared is difficult to believe but seems to be true . . . none of the aircraft themselves have survived."[4]

---

[4] Brian Cassidy, *Flying Empires, Short 'C' class Empire flying boats*, Queen's Parade Press, 2004.

The first Sunderland model, the s.23 flew on 4 July 1936 and was named CANOPUS. It weighed 16,846 kg and took 17 seconds to leave the water. They were commonly known as Empire flying boats. Imperial Airways Limited (IAL) that flew them called them the 'C class'. The names were always in full capitals and all began with the letter 'C'. They were also prefixed with who they were flying for, like RMA (Royal Mail Service, 1936–40), TEAL for New Zealand, and QEA for Qantas.[5]

As with the development of all war planes, the pressing into military service of civilian planes, the names of the planes and even the drawings of those planes were an area of confusion, sabotage and self-sabotage. The CANOPUS was the name of the first Sunderland, but it was also the common generic name of the shorter flying boats made before the Sunderland, both of which were made by a company called "Short". Hence a short Short Sunderland was a Canopus and the first Sunderland was a long CANOPUS made by Short.

In order the Sunderlands were named CANOPUS, CALEDONIA, CENTAURUS,CAVALIER,CAMBRIA,CASTOR,CASSIOPEIA,CAPELLA, CYGNUS, CAPRICORNUS, CORSAIR, COURTIER, CHALLENGER, CENTURION, CORIOLANUS, CALPURNIA, CERES, CLIO, CIRCE, CALPYSO, CAMILLA, CORINNA, CORDELIA, CAMERONIAN, CORINTHIAN, CHEVIOT/COOGEE/VH-ABC, CORIO, COORONG, CARPENTARIA/G-AFBJ, COOLANGATTA, COOEE/G-AFBL, CHAMPION, CABOT, CARIBOU, CONNEMARA, CLYDE, CAPTAIN COOK /AO-TEA-ROA/AWARUA, CANTERBURY/AUSTRALIA/CLARE, CUMBERLAND/AWARUA/AOTEAROA, CATHAY, CLIFTON, CLEOPATRA and another never named, but referred to as G-AFRB.

The last three planes (CLIFTON, CLEOPATRA and G-AFRB) were ordered on 7 June 1939 by which time at least 7 Sunderlands had crashed.

This last Sunderland was registered on 27 January 1939, the hull was stored on 12 April 1940 and it was scrapped in 1943. It was never flown.

---

[5] Names beginning with 'C' was repeated by TEAL and BOAC when the Boeing 377 Stratocruisers were delivered in 1949 and they even used the same names: Caledonia, Caribou, Cambria, Canopus, Cabot, Castor, Cathay, Champion, Cleopatra, Coriolanus, Cordelia, Cameronian, Champion, Clio and Clyde. This was repeated again in 1963 when the US named their de Havilland Comet 4C XS 235, Canopus. This helped to maintain confusion over the names of pre-WWII planes, WWII planes, post-WWII planes, British planes, American Planes and Australian planes. When it comes to planes, confusion is the name of the game before, during and after war and identifies long-term allies.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -

With a shortage of aeroplanes during WWII this was pure sabotage, but there was purpose to this sabotage. Almost all salvaged parts were attributed to this last stored unflown plane.

Name Changes

Eight flying boats had their original names changed. Three of these were delivered to New Zealand and another three to Australia. The other two name changes are not listed.

Sunderland produced three boats (Construction No.s S.884, S.885 and S.886) and named them CAPTAIN COOK, CANTERBURY and CUMBERLAND. All of these names were changed and they were changed in the most confusing fashion. New Zealand and Australian flying boats had a second use covering for anything and everything Britain wanted covered up. Flying boats were also paid for by New Zealand, were not delivered, and were retained, flown and destroyed by the British.

S.884 CAPTAIN COOK was registered as G-AFCY CAPTAIN COOK and delivered on 21 April 1939. Strangely its much celebrated entrance onto Auckland's Waitemate Harbour was four months later on 28 August 1939, just 12 days before WWII officially started. It had flown 20,000 km from Southampton and done the Horseshoe route, but this would only take four days. CAPTAIN COOK was sold to New Zealand as AO-TEA-ROA with the New Zealand registration ZK-AMC, but the New Zealand government protested over the hyphenated name and it was renamed AWARUA. It was broken up in Auckland after 1953.

S.885 CANTERBURY became G-AFCZ AUSTRALIA, but never reached Australia or New Zealand who had paid for it. It was 'delivered' on 24 April 1939, retained by IAL and BOAC, ran aground at Basra on 10 August 1939 after 4 months service and was renamed CLARE. CANTERBURY/AUSTRALIA/CLARE was destroyed by fire on 14/15 September 1942 off Bathurst, West Africa.

S.886 CUMBERLAND was launched as G-AFDA AWARUA and delivered on 25 May 1939, arriving four months later. It had the New Zealand registration ZK-AMC (the same registration as S.884). It was then renamed AOTEAROA (the same name, but without the hyphenation) and re-registered as ZK-AMA (a new registration). "This became the first of the TEAL flying boats" and "was broken up in Auckland after October 1947".

CAPTAIN COOK changed its name to AO-TEA-ROA and then AWARUA.

CANTERBURY changed its name to AUSTRALIA then CLARE.

CUMBERLAND changed its name to AWARUA and then AOTEAROA.

Both CAPTAIN COOK and CUMBERLAND had the same New Zealand registration, ZK-AMC and both were called AOTEAROA and AWARUA, but in a different order.

ZK-AMC AWARUA and ZK-AMA AOTEAROA criss-crossed the Tasman countless of times and were used countless of times to search for enemy vessels. Both were fitted with bright Leigh searchlights.

CANTERBURY/G-AFCZ AUSTRALIA/CLARE never made one flight over the Tasman Sea and never landed in New Zealand waters. Britain owes New Zealand £36,200 for this Sunderland they never delivered – NZ$ 2.5 million in todays money. I'll take a 5% finders fee.

Strange Goings On in Australia

The CARPENTARIA was delivered to Australia on 3 December 1937. It was broken up in Hythe in January 1947.

The COOEE was delivered to Australia on 30 March 1938 and was broken up in Hythe in February 1947.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

The COOGEE was officially delivered on 3 January 1938 and was named CHEVIOT by the British, with construction number S849. It officially crashed in Townsville on 1 March 1942 after 4 years service. In reality (not the faked record books and press releases), it was delivered to Australia in February 1942 (4 years after it was officially delivered) and underwent a 50 hour inspection.

COOGEE was parked on the water outside the Queens Hotel in Cleveland Bay, Townsville and the Australian pilots were about to take it on its maiden test flight, late on the Friday summer afternoon.

The British were there and they wanted the plane back after having not delivered it for four years, so the British did a Scottish marriage number on the Aussies.

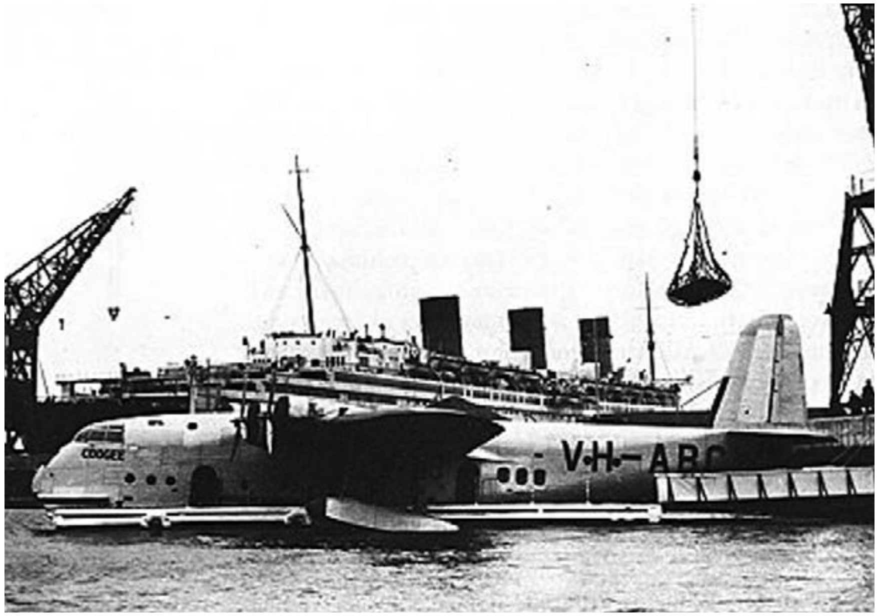
A Scottish marriage is when the bride's father gets the groom-to-be drunk before the wedding and marries him to the wrong daughter. The son-in-law then elopes with his intended bride and the married daughter keeps his land and titles, with the Scottish father effectively in control.

Drinking before a flight during wartime warrants a court marshal. Townsville is tropical and February is peak summer, so the British invited the pilots and crew for a celebratory drink on the Friday afternoon. The COOGEE Sunderland crashed during takeoff at 6.02 pm on Friday 27 February 1942 and of the 11 pilot-and-crew, six of the crew were officially written off as "missing believed killed".

The crewmembers were picked up, advised of the impending court marshal, and hidden under canvas. Half of the crew (those that were not injured) were given fake funerals and commissioned to work Sunderlands for secret wartime missions. In return the injured crew were not charged (the pilot was seriously injured) and their places of burial are given, but the dates are not.

COOGEE was only partially submerged. The British salvaged it from the water and returned it to Britain. It was repaired and returned to British service under an unlisted name, probably with the same name as another plane.

The COORONG was delivered on 26 February 1938 and stranded at Darwin 10 months later on 12 December 1938. It was rebuilt at Rochester (UK) and reverted to British registry in 1939 as G-AEUI. It was broken up on 10 February 1947.



The COOGEE VH-ABC being loaded.

The COORONG is not present in Brian Cassidy's *Flying Empire* list of crashed or stranded Sunderlands. The book published by the Queen's Parade Press, lists downed Sunderlands. This included planes holed while taxing to shore, but does not include planes stranded during take off.

After the repair, the COORONG was effectively unnamed (except as G-AEUI) and became involved in special work under British tenure. A plane with letters not read as a name was all the more difficult to follow.

The CORIOLANUS was 'delivered' on 17 June 1937, although it officially reached Australia in 1942. It was broken up in Sydney at the end of 1947.

The CAMILLA was 'delivered' on 13 September 1937 and crashed 5 miles west of at Port Moresby on 22 April 1943, although it officially reached Australia in 1942.

The CLIFTON was 'delivered' on 17 March 1940 and crashed in Sydney on 18 November 1944, although it officially reached Australia in 1942.

The CORIOLANUS, CAMILLA and CLIFTON had three to five years of British service before they officially reached Australia in 1942. When they officially reached Australia in 1942, the CARPENTARIA and the COOEE were re-registered in Britain as G-AFBJ and G-AFBL. Before and after 1942, the CARPENTARIA and COOEE appeared on both British and Australian registries.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March

COORONG changed its name to G-AEUI.

CARPENTARIA changed its name to G-AFBJ.

COOEE changed its name to G-AFBL.

These Sunderlands were not given any further names and were moved to British registry for use in special work. Due to Short's self-sabotage, this was no work at all followed by crashes in place of more memorably named planes.

Changing plane names to a previous plane's name, registering planes with the same number, registering planes with the same name but not hyphenated, registering planes with the same name but in a different order, changing plane names after repairs, changing plane names to letters only, changing plane registries, having planes registered in two countries, exchanging planes between countries and naming a plane after a country for another country again and then retaining it under British command, official delivery years after actual delivery, using salvaged parts and attributing them fixed to an unflown plane . . . all helped to confuse the Sunderland registry. This was common practise amongst the British both before, during and after WWII and the British continued this with the Messerschmitt manufacturing records when they took over Germany and Austria in April 1945.

Short Self-Sabotage

Shorts also modified Sunderlands to client requirements and gave them ordered names like Mark I, II, III, IV when little of that order existed. The second flying boat off the Short Shop line, CALEDONIA, is cited as both a Mark I and Mark III.

Constantly "upgrading planes" in non–effective ways, and disregarding all beneficial requests for effective upgrades (often at the last minute) meant that it was diabolically difficult to follow the progress of the Sunderland – if indeed there was any. Even the Australians request for 20 mm cannons was sabotaged at the last minute.

It appears that any 'effective progress' made by Shorts on the Sunderland was immediately withdrawn. Any progress on the Sunderland, or any progress by Shorts was either stopped, sabotaged, or shipped to Germany for Germany to have as 'their invention', to be used to 'their advantage' during WWII.

Short, Saunders-Roe, the Sunderland and the Mistral were heavily sabotaged against the British for the benefit of the Germans and the British royal family. The Mistral, for instance, was invented by Shorts and then shipped to Rechlin, a small remote village in Mecklenburg-Vorpommern, Germany, from where many of the British royal family originated, including Princess Luise, Prince Albert's mother.

Sunderland Crashes

The Sunderland flying boats were an icon. Every country wanted one as it pegged them in the 'modern' age just as sky towers and EFTPOS did in the 80s. Sunderlands were a symbol of pride and they were bought by countries. Shorts made a lot of money out of their sabotaged Sunderlands and when they crashed, countries simply bought another one . . . at £37,000 . . . and these crashes were frequent, sometimes occurring within days of service.

1. CAPRICORNUS crashed at Ouroux in France on 24 March 1937 after 8 days service.
2. COURTIER crashed in Athens on 1 October 1937 after 5 mth serv.
3. CYGNUS crashed at Brindisi on 5 December 1937, 9 months serv.
4. CALPURNIA crashed at Lake Habbaniyah, 27 Nov. 1938, 17 mth serv.
5. **COORONG** stranded at Darwin on 12 December 1938 after 10 mths service but is not listed as a "down plane" in *Flying Empires.*
6. CAVALIER crashed in the North Atlantic on 21 January 1939, 3 yrs serv.
7. CAPELLA was holed in Batavia harbour on 12 March 1939, 26 mth serv.
8. CENTURION crashed in Calcutta on the Hoogly river at Calcutta on 1 May 1939 after 2 years service.
9. CHALLENGER crashed at Mosambique on 12 May 1939, 2 yrs serv.
10. CONNEMARA was destroyed by fire in Southampton water on 19 June 1939 after 3 months service.
11. **CANTERBURY** ran aground at Basra on 10 August 1939 after 4 months service.
12. **CARIBOU** was lost between Bodo, Norway and an undisclosed location on 4 May 1940. Because nothing was found, it was not listed as downed. Its crash is debateable and is not counted as "downed" in *Flying Empires*. CARIBOU was swished for special work including the back up plane for 'Crashing the Duke of Kent'.
13. **CABOT** was destroyed off Mauren Island near Bodo, Norway on 5 May 1940 (14 months service). It is debateable whether it was the CABOT or the COORONG/G-AEUI that was destroyed.
14. CLYDE was wrecked by a hurricane while at anchor on the Tagus river in Lisbon on 14 February 1941 after 23 months service. CLYDE was not counted as "downed" in *Flying Empires*.
15. CLIO was modified September 1940–March 1941. It did one patrol and then crashed on its test flight at Loch Indal, Islay Island, Argyllshire on 22 August 1941. Test flights could last up to 400 hours. CLIO's effective service was 3 years.
16. CASSIOPEIA crashed at Sabang on 29 December 1941, 4 yrs serv.
17. CORIO was shot down near Koepang on 30 January 1942, 4 yrs serv.
18. COOLOANGATTA crashed at Sydney on 2 February 1942, 7 yrs serv.
19. CIRCE was lost without trace between Broome and Tijlatjap (seaport on Java's southern coast) on 28 Feb. 1942, 6½ yrs serv.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March

20. **COOGEE** (not the COOEE) crashed in Townsville on 1 March 1942 after 4 years service.
21. CENTAURUS was destroyed on its moorings at Broome on 3 March 1942 after 3 years service.
22. CORINNA was also destroyed on its moorings at Broome on 3 March 1942 after 3 years service. *Flying Empires* did not list this plane.
23. CORINTHIAN crashed at Darwin on 22 March 1942, 4½ yrs serv.
24. CALYPSO crashed at Daru, Papua New Guinea, 8 Aug. 1942, 3 yrs serv.
25. The **Duke of Kent's Sunderland** crash on 26 August 1942. This was not listed in *Flying Empires* probably because it was published by Queen's Parade Press. The plane was either the **CABOT, CARIBOU, COORONG or COOGEE.**
26. **CANTERBURY/AUSTRALIA/CLARE** destroyed by fire off Bathurst, West Africa on its way to Lisbon on 14/15 September 1942 after 2 years service. Four crew were never recovered. It was owned by New Zealand, but never delivered.
27. CERES was destroyed by fire at Durban on 1 Dec. 1942, 5½ yrs serv.
28. CAMILLA crashed 5 miles west of Port Moresby on 22 April 1943 (1–5½ years service). Although it crashed in shallow water, the wreck has never been recovered, not even by recent divers.
29. CLIFTON crashed in Sydney on 18 November 1944, after 2–4½ years service.

In the authoritative *Flying Empires, Short 'C' class Empire flying boats*, Brian Cassidy does not list the crash of the Duke of Kent's Sunderland on 26 August 1942, nor whether it was a Mark I, Mark II, Mark III or Mark IV; what s. number it had, what Construction No. it had, its registration number, modifications, the name of the plane, the time or date of the crash, nor where it crashed. To all intents and purposes, the Queen's Parade Press does not acknowledge that the Duke of Kent died in a Sunderland flying boat. Ipso facto, nor does the Queen.

Swishing the Duke of Kent's Plane

The Duke of Kent's Sunderland may have been the Mark II listed as "special". That is, with modifications that were not specified, like a starboard door or an escape hatch through the floor of the cabin. All doors and hatches could be opened from the outside.

The 'special' plane is identified as CABOT from its production schedule and was ordered ten months into King George VI reign. George VI was the Duke of Kent's brother.

Both the CABOT and the CARIBOU had two passenger doors and both were capable of refueling in flight. Both were s.30s.

The CARIBOU was built to replace the COURTIER that crashed in Athens on 1 October 1937 after only 5 months service. CARIBOU was a Mark III, construction No. S.881. CABOT was construction No. S.880 and also a Mark III. "It is thought the unspecified Mark II (S.880) boat ended up in New Zealand"[6]

Although flying boats that ended up in New Zealand and Australia were an area of confusion unto themselves and Australasia was the blaming ground for flying boats, S.880 CABOT did not end up in New Zealand, nor did S.881 CARIBOU. The two New Zealand boats were both Mark IV. Brian Cassidy's remarks are a lost leader that comes straight from the Queen's Parade Press/the Queen.

Further on Queen's Parade Press has another crack at confusion.

"The standard s.23 'boats were known at Rochester as Mark I aircraft, the two 'Bermuda' 'boats as Mark IIs and the two first generation 'Atlantic' 'boats, as Mark IIIs. The first s.30 – a replacement for G-ADVC COURTIER with Construction Number S.879 – was known as Mark I. [It was a Mark III.] The Mark II s.30 is listed as 'unspecified' [It had a starboard door.] The four second generation 'Atlantic' 'boats – Construction Numbers S.880 to S.883 – were known as Mark IIIs [correct] and two 'New Zealand' 'boats as Mark IVs [correct]. It seems that the 'unspecified' Mark II became the third 'New Zealand' 'boat – on the British register as G-AFCZ AUSTRALIA."[7]

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

Big ruse – the third New Zealand boat was the S.886 CUMBERLAND which changed its name to AWARUA and then AOTEAROA and had the British registration G-AFDA and the New Zealand registration ZK-AMC followed by ZK-AMA.

This may seem as dull as dishwater, but war was full of lies and it is important to expose the lies from every angle to ascertain which side your royal family was gunning for.

---

[6] Brian Cassidy, *Flying Empires*, p. 7, slightly paraphrased.

[7] Ibid, p. 7.

There was no great sequence to the order of Sunderlands. "The first order was for one Mark I 'boat – the 'prototype' (Construction No. S.759) and one Mark III 'Atlantic' 'boat (S.804). The first production batch comprised one Mark II 'variation on the Bermuda' 'boat (S.811), the original 'Bermuda 'boat (S.812), the second 'Atlantic' 'boat (S.813) and nine standard Mark Is (S.814–822) . . . The second production batch of fourteen Mark I s.23 'boats (S.838–851) was covered by the third order, placed on 2 September 1935. This batch brought the total fleet to twenty-eight aircraft.[8]

Equally, either one of the returned Australian planes could have been used to 'kill' the Duke of Kent including the COORONG/G-AEUI, CARPENTARIA/G-AFBJ, COOEE/G-AFBL, or COOGEE/VH-ABC. If asked to do so, the Australians would have supplied a Sunderland to kill the Duke of Kent, just because he was queer. That he didn't die in the crash didn't bother the Aussies, as long as they didn't know about it.

Sabotaging the Duke of Kent's Flying Boat

The s.30 is touted as being a heavyweight long-range Mark III. The CABOT, CARIBOU, CONNEMARA and CLYDE were the long-range Sunderlands. They had a Short and Medium wave receiver, a D/F receiver, a telephone control unit and a Type 240A On-off switch. Some of the s.30 were fitted with voice-pipes between the Captain's seat and the Navigator's position, but not all of them.

The Persus engines of the CABOT and CARIBOU were fitted with Graviner fire suppression equipment which operated automatically at 60 degrees Celsius and sprayed the engine surface, especially the manifold pipes and inside the cowling. Initially oil from the Sperry oil supply leaked on the discharge heads rendering them useless. This sabotage was noticed and these were replaced.

Nevertheless CABOT was still sabotaged and had a reconditioned starboard propeller off the salvaged CAPELLA (12 March 1939) or CHALLENGER (12 May 1939). Records attributed these to an s.33 when the CABOT was an s.30 – this is more sabotage, this time, records sabotage.

CARIBOU was originally fitted with Bristol Perseus engines (Serial No. 20505–20508) and de Havilland 5000 series constant-speed propellers (Serial No. 55997, 55998, 50008 and 55996). The port inner airscrew 50008 out of sequence and probably off the COORONG/AEUI.

---

[8] Brian Cassidy, *Flying Empires*, p. 54.

Three of the s.33 boats were equipped, partially or completely with reconditioned airscrews. This included the CABOT. In some records the CABOT is a Mark II special. In other records it is a Mark III s.30 and in other records it is a s.33. This is even more record sabotage.

De-icing equipment was fitted to the planes after production in 1938. CARIBOU was fitted with the latest de Havilland equipment and CABOT was fitted with the oldest equipment, the old Dunlop slinger rings.

Late in April 1940 V3137 CABOT and V3138 CARIBOU (RAF numbers) were stripped of their ASV radar and converted as transport aircraft for special missions to Norway. CABOT and CARIBOU were armed with seven Vickers .303 K guns with 4500 rounds and a fake gun made of a broomstick painted matt black installed in the tail's refueling cup – as shonky as shit. It was well-known at the time and reeks of self-sabotage. A working gun would have sufficed and a cannon would have been much better.

Many of the flying boats originally fitted in 1937 were re-equipped in 1939. Even this was sabotaged. On 10 September 1941 Modification 10141 referred to "the fixed fittings of complete Lorenz equipment, but actually received the 1124A only". Even some of these modifications didn't happen as the boats were sold back to BOAC on 19 September 1941 without the changes being made.

Defective parts within the first year or first 1000 hours of travel were to be replaced by Shorts. Disagreements were subject to arbitration by the Air Ministry. At Safety for Flight certificate inspections, the boat was swung and compass corrections were made.

Just before the summer trans-Atlantic season was to begin CABOT and CARIBOU were involved in a dispute over ownership (April 1940). BOAC assumed they were to be handed back for trans-Atlantic mail service and the RAF assumed they could do what they wanted with them. CABOT and CARIBOU were then sent to Hythe for their first 200-hour check. The War Cabinet then wrote a memo: "The two planes were to stay in military service and the mail service was cancelled". The trans-Atlantic mail service was only resumed after both planes were 'lost'.

> It was obvious the RAF and War Cabinet had special plans for these two planes and needed to 'protect' them.

Swishing a Plane for the Duke of Kent

CABOT left Hythe on 3 May 1940 heading for Invergordon. At midnight they left Invergordon to Harstad in the Lofoten Islands. With the long northern twighlight they could search for landing strips while darkness gave them some cover and they landed at Lofoten at 8.21 am. They slept through the day and searched for more fuel.

At 8 am on 4 May 1940 CABOT departed Harstad for Bodo, 248 km to the south and arrived in the middle of an *air raid alert* so the plane changed its flag to a Norwegian national flag and landed, or rather alighted on the water and moored up next to some Norwegian float planes and fishing boats and began to unload.

On 4 May 1940 CARIBOU left Hythe for the quick flight to Invergordon arriving at 8.05 pm adding three RAF gunners to their crew and a Norwegian translator. CARIBOU then left Invergordon and arrived at Harstad at 8.30 am on 4 May 1940. The 3 RAF gunners and the Norwegian translator then disembarked.

At 9.30 am CARIBOU departed [it doesn't say where to] and became a total loss at 9.45 am on 4 May 1940. CARIBOU was the 12th Empire boat and second s.30 to be written off.

CABOT was then moved out of Bodo harbour by two motorboats (including M.V. Sissy) during the long twilight. CABOT was moved 6.5 km north up the coast and moored off Mauren Island with the help of anchors borrowed from boats. The roundels were covered with blankets and the plane was covered with brush. The electrical system was to be repaired onboard the CABOT and the Vickers K guns were to be given ground mountings to ward off any Luftwaffe planes, but none of this happened.

All the RAF crew returned to Bodo with the Norwegian seamen who had helped them.

A Luftwaffe Junkers Ju 88 'discovered' CABOT the next day and destroyed it with incendiary bombs. The plane caught fire and sunk in the steeply shelving seabed. It was the 13th Sunderland and third s.30 to be written off.

The reports say there were no crew on board and also that the crew on board were injured and lay up in hospital listening to the radio salvaged off the CABOT.

Espayo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

Sabotaged Post-Swish History

CLIO and CORDELLA were then purchased by the Air Ministry from BOAC to replace the CARIBOU and CABOT lost at Bodo in Norway. CLIO and CORDELLA were then flown to Queen's Island in Belfast in September 1940 for much more extensive conversions. They were equipped with two Bolton-Paul four-gun power-operated turrets and internally stowed depth charges stored inboard as well as ASV radar (Anti-Surface Vessel) making them look like an Asian apartment.

CLIO and CORDELLA were ready in March 1941 (which kept them useless for 10 months) and delivered to 119 Squadron on Islay off the west coast of Scotland. CLIO flew one convoy protection patrol on 27 April 1941 and then crashed on its test flight near Bowmore on 22 August 1941. It was the 15th Sunderland to be written off and was the only plane that showed the ladder connection between the control deck and the lower deck.

119 Squadron was then disbanded and CORDELLA was given to 413 Squadron and then sold back to BOAC to be converted back to a standard s.23.

This effectively tied up four planes as useless from May 1940 to August 1941.

CARIBOU was lost, 'CABOT' was bombed, CLIO crashed in a test flight and CORDELLA went back to BOAC and was broken up at Hythe in 1947.

> After this string of loses, no one wanted to look at these planes, nor the history of these planes. That was the plan.

How the Swish was Done

Here's what really happened.

At midnight on 3/4 May 1940, CABOT was swished for a lesser Sunderland – the G-AEUI, previously Australia's COORONG. It was not uncommon for the CT & MGT (Colonial Trash and Machine Gun Thieves) to swap planes at midnight. This being the pattern, they were used as such. They also doubled for each other, stole and traded weaponry and mucked about with whatever was loose on any plane.

> Colonial Trash recognised the stupidity of the British and broke any and all rules to survive, which they did a whole lot better than the British. The British utilised this to their advantage on important missions.

At 8 am on 4 May 1940 'CABOT' (COORONG/G-AEUI) left Harstad and landed on nearby water at Bodo, Norway in the middle of an air raid *alert*, so they changed their display flag to a Norwegian flag. Due to the air raid *alert*, people were running for cover and no one had a good look at the plane. The air raid alert was arranged by the British.

On 4 May 1940 CARIBOU left Harstad (close to Bodo) at 8.30 am (half an hour after CABOTat 8 am) and was never seen again. There was still post air-raid alert panic about which took the attention off other plane details – like where CARIBOU was heading.

On the night of 4 May 1940 'CABOT'/COORONG/G-AEUI was towed 6.5 km north to Mauren Island and sunk, officially by Luftwaffe incendiary bombs. The fire destroyed any identifying aspects of the plane, including markings and modifications and the Sunderland sunk on a steeply shelving seabed. The Germans had been alerted to the location of the CABOT and sunk it. 'CABOT' was easy enough to spot. It was covered in brush, the roundels were covered in canvas, it had too many anchors, it was moored in a remote hideaway location . . . and German spies at Bodo harbour would have seen it towed out of the harbour at twilight.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

The British had intended to move their guns off 'CABOT' and install them on a cliff top and had intended to repair their radio equipment, but none of this happened.

A result both the CABOT and the CARIBOU were swished.

CABOT was swished at Invergordon at midnight on 3/4 May 1940 and replaced with the COORONG, renamed G-AEUI. For its final trip the name on the side was painted "CABOT". COORONG had been returned to Britain in December 1939 and underwent repair work over 11 months. It was renamed G-AEUI and officially broken up in 1947 along with about fifty other Sunderlands at the same time. Even the breaking up of these planes had muffed records.

CARIBOU flew into secret work oblivion at 9.45 am on 5 May 1940.

CABOT was swished at midnight on 3/4 May 1940 and hidden under the control of the Duke of Hamilton. It was probably towed ashore in Argyllshire where Simon Fraser was still unpopular. CABOT was hidden until service on 23 August 1942 at Oban.

The service included final maintenance and checks which officially included "compass correction" and "refueling". In reality they included remote control devices, sabotage of the magnetos and maintenance on the starboard door (referred to as the "second hatch") that the CABOT and the CARIBOU both had. CABOT was then flown to Invergordon on 25 August 1942 for the Duke of Kent's flight on 26 August 1942.

CABOT and CARIBOU then became the plane and the seconder for the Duke of Kent's crash on 26 August 1942. They were modified to engineer the Duke of Kent's escape and crash afterwards.

CLIO and CORDELLA were then purchased as replacements and both were sabotaged. After that, no one wanted to look at the saga in any meritous detail.

So why go to such enormous trouble to hide two planes. The CABOT and the CARIBOU both had two passenger doors either side of the fuselage and were the only recorded Sunderlands to do so . . . so they needed to be lost. Manufacturing and fitting the second door was too risky. Someone would mention it in their memoirs.

When the Duke of Kent walked into the portside door of the Sunderland into the promenade cabin he gave instructions to the Flight Steward and then walked out the starboard door, complete with his entourage of homosexual cross-dressing royal party, all of whom would become his sexual partners in the after life. The Master Mason was about to become the Golden Dawn coven's new Holy Ghost.

> The Holy Ghost mission was so important no resources were spared. The CABOT s.30s Mark II "unspecified" was the 33rd Sunderland made and it had modifications that were not made known. This was ordered on 21 October 1937, five months into King George VI's official reign[9] and it was ordered to engineer his brothers disappearance. After all his brother was second in line to the throne and even the thought of a drug addict transvestite King of England made the retarded King of England blush and run for cover.

Eventually modifications to the CABOT and CARIBOU included radio control ability, complete with override. Radio control had been used since 1918 by Jewish British and was redeveloped by Shorts as the Mistral and gifted to the Germans as the Mistel. This was done publicly on the suggestion of a German pilot and then successfully used by the Luftwaffe from 1943. The Americans also went public with it in January 1947.

---

[9] King George VI's coronation took place on 12 May 1937.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

The date of the Duke of Kent's crash is given as both 25 August 1942 and 26 August 1942. The earlier date could have been for the official photographs. On 26 August the Duke of Kent and his royal party simply walked out the starboard door onto the tender or the refuelling vessel. This done under cover of running the plane through its tests. These tests were noisy and everyone moved off.

Sabotage at Refueling

Sunderlands were the first British planes to use 87 Octane gas. This was mainly used by the Germans and showed extreme German leanings on the part of Arthur Gouge. The 87 octane aviation spirit, derived from crude oil in Mexico, required tetra-ethyl-lead additive, aromatics or both.[10]

In hot weather at over 1500 metres (5000 ft) the fuel system suffered from vapour locks as the 87 octane gas was highly flammable with a boiling point anywhere between 50–180 degrees Celsius. If two engines died the speed dropped below 240 kmph the loss of height was over 100 metres per minute, a straight course was difficult to maintain due to rudder flutter, and flap adjustments caused the plane to stall from 142 kmph. When flying over deserts a static discharge built up around the fuel tanks and this was also of great concern during refueling as the plane could explode.

In 1937 Shell ordered 27 self-propelled steel refueling barges for the Empire/Sunderland routes. These refueling barges were all named MEXSHELL, followed by a number. MEXSHELLs were 15.25 metres long (50 foot) and 3 metres wide (10 foot) and sat 1.45 metres (4 foot 9 inches) above the water. They were 15.5 tonnes empty and 27.6 tonnes[11] full and had a speed of 7 knots.

Each Sunderland took 11,250 litres in four tanks and the MEXSHELL pumped 9 litres per second through a Kent indicating meter (30 minutes to fill). Oil was also delivered through a flexible hose-line. Multiple pump lines could be used, but this proved dangerous as it required more than the usual three hands plus British Officer.

---

[10] Brian Cassidy, *Flying Empires, Short 'C' class Empire flying boats*, p. 175.

[11] The metric ton equal to 1000 kg or 2204.6 lbs is the only form of legal trade. The metric spelling is 'ton' and the European spelling is 'tonne'. The Imperial ton or long ton is 1016 kg or 2240 lbs and is used to measure aviation fuel and the capacity of ships. This was not used in the conversion of weights for the flying boats. With flying boats a ton/tonne is 1000 kg or 2204.6 lbs.

The test bucket was knocked over on the CONNEMARA on 19 June 1939 and it caught fire and sank resulting in one death and one serious burn victim. The plane had only been in service for three months.

On the MEXSHELL was the Coxswain, Pumpman and Deckhand. The Coxswain was in charge of the barge and seamanship. The Pumpman was responsible for refueling and the Deckhand was responsible for mooring the barge, casting off and assisting with refueling.

In important and remote locations a British Officer was also on board. In some instances he used his First Officer to replace him. Occasionally this First Officer was replaced with an ingénue, especially when 'accidents' occurred, either because of him, or to be blamed on him.

Refueling was done through the side or over the top. In sheltered harbours like Hythe or Invergordon it was done through the side via the refueling cock on the starboard side of the aircraft. In fast flowing harbours it was done over the top directly into each fuel tank. In rough weather it was done by cans directly into the tanks on top of the wing.

At each refueling the tanks were dipped to check the levels. At this point it was easy enough for the Pumpman to place a petrol pill in two of the tanks on one wing. These are usually wrapped in some form of plastic broken down by petrol. Today glad wrap is used.

This was not the method used on the Duke of Kent's Sunderland as refueling would have occurred through the starboard side and not over the top. A petrol pill could have been placed through the starboard side refueling cock, but this would not have provided enough control for the accident as it panned out. That is, the Duke of Kent's Sunderland crashed in a specific remote location, with a specific fall rate and not during the flyover farewell salute at Invergordon which would have caused the plane to lose altitude over water, thus enabling landing. The fall rate had to be swift and over land, preferably over recently traversed high ground.

It was the Coxswain, Pumpman and Deckhand's job to take the Royal party on board the MEXSHELL (hidden under canvas), or to cause distraction and cover while the tender did it. It was not the MEXSHELL's job to sabotage the plane.

Passengers were not allowed on board the Sunderland or the MEXSHELL during refueling. Refueling took place before passengers boarded and if refueling was to occur once passengers were on board, they were taken off on the designated tender. In tourist flights these were IAL tenders that brought passengers onto the flying boat when they were anchored rather than docked. So if the MEXHSELL was around for a fuel top up, there was an excuse for the tender to be around as well. The two worked hand in hand.

Heavily laden refueling barges were cumbersome vessels. Away from the main bases, seamanship was not the best and MEXSHELLs were known to hole Sunderland floats. At Hythe and Invergordon, seamanship was the best and both were sheltered harbours. The refueling of barges was left to the professionals and only the Coxswain, Pumpman and Deckhand were on the barges, although a British Officer was likely on board during important refueling as with the Duke of Kent.

When refueling through the side [normal] the supervisor opened up the mail loading hatch on the starboard side of the control deck. A bucket was placed inside the plane with a chamois over the top. Two litres of fuel was then pumped into the bucket to check for water. Fuel passed through and the water stayed on top of the camois. This was a perfect time for various forms of sabotage and "the aircraft's main electrical switchboard, the fuel gauges and tank cocks were all within his easy reach."[12]

Refueling was a perfect place for last minute sabotage, like replacing switches with faulty switches or adding remote control devices. There was 30 minutes for the Pumpman, Coxswain, Station Officer or First Officer to act, but all up, refueling took around an hour and was prone to sabotage, explosion, escape and swish.

> As long as the MEXSHELL crew and British officer were in on it, any passenger on any refueling Sunderland could be swished on or off. A starboard passenger door just made it easier. For tenders and MEXSHELL's this was not uncommon practise. The author even did it as late as 1990, lying on top of airmail bags, avoiding the one's marked FRAGILE. All that was required was a phone call to the right person.

In the Duke of Kent's case, the MEXSHELL refueled, stayed alongside, the royal party boarded the flying boat, the pilots boarded and the royal party disembarked with the help of the tender and MEXSHELL, which motored off as the Sunderland underwent its rather noisy pre-flight checks.

---

[12] Brian Cassidy, *Flying Empires*, p. 176.

Espavo 3620 - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

> Official records show the Sunderland refueled at Oban, but all offical records relating to the Duke of Kent's flight were faked. Due to the swish in progress anything went.

This was a military operation with military precision and had support from on shore (the Duke of Hamilton), on board the Sunderland (via instructions to the Flight Steward and base instructions to the pilot) and on board the tender and MEXSHELL – from the Duke of Hamilton, premier peer of Scotland, uncrowned king of England, leading Freemason, Wing Commander, and the Duke of Kent's lover.

> The Sunderland flew off without the royal party. If the royal party were caught, it would have been laughed off as a joke. There were no repercussions for getting it wrong.

The Duke of Kent becomes the Holy Ghost

Sunderlands had a history of self-sabotage. The British loved the planes but they rarely returned home. With this in mind, on 26 August 1942, Air Commodore HRH the Duke of Kent was reported to have taken off in a Sunderland and crashed 40 miles from take off.

Prince 'George' Edward Alexander Edmund of Great Britain and Ireland (20 December 1902–26 August 1942), 1st Duke of Kent (1934–42) and Grand Master Mason in (1939–42) was the fourth son of King George V, half-brother of lover Anthony Blunt, and a transvestite.

As Air Commodore HRH Duke of Kent, he was reported to have died in the crash of the Short Sunderland W4026 flying boat of 228 Squadron on 26 August 1942. His capacity was as the Inspector-General of RAF Welfare and he had intended to meet senior members of the US Military in Iceland as well as isolated RAF stations where bottles of whiskey would have been welcomed . . . other's say he was fulfilling his intelligence role and heading to Sweden for secret peace talks with Germans.

The Sunderland took off from Invergordon at 1.10 pm on 26 August 1942 bound for Iceland carrying a royal party of four plus a crew of 11. (Three of the four have never been named). It was heavily laden with fuel, ammunition, depth charges, whiskey, supplies, four royal party passengers and their kit (which was bulky and heavy), as well as the 11 crew.

The takeoff was lengthy with a slow climb due to the weight of the royal kit. When it reached its required altitude of 2000 feet it returned to Invergordon for a flyover farewell salute.

On the day of the crash the weather conditions were mild. It was summer. For the first part of the journey there was cloud at 1000 feet, clouds at 300 feet at Wick and bright skies North of the north coast of Scotland, but the Sunderland never got to Wick.

Flying north-east the Sunderland turned North 27 miles before it should have and crashed 18 miles south of Wick and only 40 miles from take off.

The flight crews instructions were to remain East of the east coasts of Scotland and one of the ways this 'mistake' could have occurred was by remote control. Remote controlled aircraft had been used since late 1918 when David Ben-Gurion used a Farman biplane against German artillery positions on top of Mount Kilimanjaro. It was the first flying bomb.

The crew did their pre-flight checks and duties in base HQ while the royal party boarded. They were the only passengers. The crew boarded and the Sunderland took off just a few minutes later. There was no chance of passing the pre-flight checks drunk and no time to start drinking before taking off.

The four final systems checks were the airscrew pitch controls, the engine fuel pumps, the magnetos and the engine boost. These were either done while the plane was stationary or while the flying boat taxied for take-off. In this case, they were done while the plane was stationary. The noise moved everyone away and made for an easier escape.

When the First Officer moved each of the four pitch levers from fine to coarse, it would cause a drop in engine speed. If any of the pitch-levers got stuck on coarse, it would cause one wing to drop on take-off. If this happened, take-off was abandoned.

The magnetos (On/off button for the engine) were also tested. The magnetos controlled the park plugs and there was one magneto for each spark plug with two magnetos and two spark plugs per engine.

In flight magnetos could be switched off by remote control and this would stop the engine. If two magnetos were switched off a Sunderland flying at 142 kmph with ¼ flap open at 380 feet over the new high ground would fall for 1 minute 16 seconds and crash 3 km from descent. If the Sunderland went into a dive, this would increase the height from descent and decrease the horizontal distance travelled.

With control over the two engines and flaps a Sunderland flying

Espavo 5020 - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

at 1000 feet could be crashed within 3 km in under 45 seconds. The Flight Steward would have been thrown about and possibly killed before the plane crashed. The noise in the cabin would have exceeded 60 decibels and the crew would have had difficulty hearing each other even when shouting.

The favourite method of communication from the Sunderland to base was by morse code. This was not possible when the plane was diving.

Drinking alcohol in the hours before flying warrants a court martial, so drunkenness can be dismissed as the cause of the crash, as can incompetence.

In the No 1 seat was commanding officer Wg Cdr Moseley and in No 2 seat was Flt Lt Frank Goyen, a highly experienced and competent pilot. The Duke of Kent was the commanding officer on the plane and "Everybody on board came under his orders, as the entire crew and the royal party must have known full well."[13]

Spymaster: "Before take off the Duke of Kent was standing between the two pilots which meant he was in a position to pressure them. The usefulness of this tactic varied in proportion to the colonial origin of the aircrew. New Zealand pilots would politely tell any interfering passenger to 'go boil your head'. Australian pilots, on the other hand, were quite rude."

> The plane was flying fine and "The crash must have occurred as the result of a navigational error, as almost everyone who is competent to comment on such matters agrees."[14]

As is common with 'destiny' air crashes, like Erebus in 1979, the plane had just been serviced. A few days prior the Sunderland had been serviced, checked and refuelled at 228 Squadron's base in Oban from where it was flown directly to Invergordon. Its navigational equipment had been reset. The bearing of the flight was correct, it's just that the turn north was made at 40 miles instead of 67 miles. How much the plane was refuelled was not stated, nor whether there was a top up at Invergordon.

Immediately after takeoff it was the role of Flt Sgt Andrew Simpson William Jack (the only survivor) to go the rear turret, close the steel doors behind him, face backward and turn the turret from side to side only communicating if there was something vital to be said, like, "enemy air traffic".

The navigator and pilots could talk directly to each other, but the rear gunner was only connected via intercom and he had no view of the interior of the plane. There was also no communication with the passengers on the lower deck.

British planes were also peculiar in that the gunners could not look down. The Germans knew this and always did their best to attack from below. The rear gunner could not see below him, or what was happening in the plane on the upper deck, the lower deck, or if someone had parachuted out over the sea just before the plane crossed high ground.

These were all possibilities and due to the Freemasons draconian rule over Scotland, especially during WWII, many witness accounts have proved contradictory and many 'respectable' accounts, 'official' accounts and 'authoritative' accounts have been the work of down right liars working towards an agenda. Even the servicing records of the Sunderlands differed from what actually occurred.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Part of that agenda was avoiding the British royal family's shame at having the King's brother being a number carrying Abwehr agent, rampant homosexual, cross-dresser and drug user. The Duke of Hamilton assisted in this cover up using his role as Commander of the Air Training corps responsible for the defence of Scotland, Head Freemasons, premier peer and uncrowned King of Scotland . . . because he was one of the Duke of Kent's homosexual lovers and he wanted him all to himself.

The big flying boat had two decks – an upper deck for the flight crew and a lower deck with luxury passenger accommodation. When the Sunderlands were converted to delivering mail (stored on the upper deck), it is not clear how many passenger seats were left, but most importantly for this story, the Flight Clerk's office was moved down to the lower passenger deck, with no clear indication of either a direct ladder to the pilots or the normal circuitous route with stairs.

Extensive photos showed a ladder between the Flight Clerk on the lower deck and the pilot mail area on the upper deck, but no one who worked the flying boats has any record of the ladder. Thus there is a dispute over whether the Flight Clerk could access the pilots quickly and easily. The Flight Clerk/Steward did have intercom but it was 60 decibels inside the lower cabin, so shouting was common and even intercom conversations with the pilots were difficult, although it was quieter in the pilot's cabin.

---

[13] Rob Nesbit, 'A Travesty of the Truth', *Aeroplane monthly*, p. 28–29.

[14] Ibid.

CLIO crashed on 22 August 1941 and it was the only plane that showed the ladder connection between the control deck and the lower deck.

The s.23 could seat 7 in the Forward Cabin, 3 in the Centre Cabin, 8 in the Promenade Cabin and 6 in the Aft Cabin – a total of 24. Each cabin was on a different level and each rose two steps (0.5m) towards the rear. The pilot sat above and forward of the forward cabin in a completely enclosed area. The mail sat behind them.

Despite the pilots vast experience, and with no prior warning, the 'newly serviced' Sunderland banked 27 miles too early. It crashed 32 minutes after takeoff at 1.42 pm on Eagle's Rock, the highest rock in the area. Three miles inland from Dunbeath in Caithness, Eagle's Rock also had the advantage of being very remote.

This was exactly 15 months, 15 days, 15 hours an 15 minutes after Hess and doppelgänger Hess had cirlced Holy Island. Who says the occult wasn't involved? In Golden Dawn coven language '15.15.15.1.5' means "occult master (of themself) cheating death four times".

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Arranging the Crash

Plane crashes are usually arranged via first hand knowledge of the plane. Sunderland crashes are no different, except that the technology of the planes were quite simple and methods of sabotage were also quite simple, frequent and not widely recognised. It appears that there were a dozen or more Sunderland 'practice' crashes prior to the Duke of Kent's crash.

Sunderlands were usually flown by automatic pilot in fine weather. When the weather got rough the passengers in the Aft Cabin were thrown about with the planes continual pitch, bank and yaw and this upset even the most hardened travelers. In rough weather the automatic pilot was disengaged and both pilots flew the aircraft together using combined maximum force. The normal arrangement when flying manually was for each pilot to fly for 20–30 minutes before handing over.

In the Duke of Kent's flight it was fine weather so they were flying on automatic pilot.

Stall Speeds

The lowest possible speed for take off (alighting speed) was 109 kmph.[15]

The minimum flying speed was 112 kmph.

Stalling speed with the flaps unextended was 116 kmph.

With FULL flap, the stalling speed was at 120 kmph.

With $^3/_4$ flap, the stall occurred at 129 kmph.

With $^1/_2$ flap, the stall was at 131 kmph.

With $^1/_4$ flap, the stalling speed was 142 kmph.

The flaps were not fully extended over 184 kmph.

The maximum range cruising speed in still air was 211 kmph.

Against the standard 35 knot head wind, the optimum speed was 223 kmph.

The Sunderland's natural cruising speed was 236 kmph.

At 10,000 feet the economic cruising speed was 237 kmph.

Over 21 772 kg the maximum permitted speed was 304 kmph.

The maximum speed in level flight at 5 500 feet was 316 kmph.

The maximum speed with an automatic pilot engaged was 313 kmph.

The maximum speed of the Sunderland was 320 kmph.

Sunderlands could dive without vibration or instability up 320 kmph. With the throttles $^2/_3$ open they would pull out easily and quickly. However with a full fuel and cargo load it was difficult. With one engine down, low fuel levels and no cargo the Sunderland could not pull out of a dive. If one of the flaps were stuck it just got worse and if two engines were down, the plane simply fell out of the sky.

A Sunderland loaded to 21 772 kg could not maintain height on three engines and could not pull out of a dive. The Duke of Kent's Sunderland had a full load of fuel, was heavily laden and noted as "slow to take off". There was not enough time to throw the cargo and the ability to jettison fuel did not come about until the Mark IV TEAL s.30 'A' 'boats were fitted with fuel jettison pipes. The New Zealand boats had them but the Duke of Kent's Sunderland did not.

Climbing

The maximum rate of climb for a laden s.23 Sunderland from 1000 to 10,000 feet was 920 feet per minute taking 12½ minutes. When the weight was increased by 9 500 kg of cargo the climbed was reduced by 40% to 575 feet per minute.

---

[15] All these speeds from Brian Cassidy, *Flying Empires*, pp. 160–61.

Sunderlands had a quirk. If the throttles were opened to increase speed during the climb, the flying boat would simple level off until the increased speed was reached, and then resume its climb. This made life difficult for pilots who needed to climb fast, especially if they had just flow over high ground and had just lost altitude.

At a height of 400 feet and climbing, the override was taken OUT and the mixture control levers moved forward through the gate to the NORMAL position and the flaps brought IN. As the engines changed from the FULL throttle (FULL boost condition to NORMAL boost) the engine note dropped to more normal sound levels. The variable blade propellers were then changed from FINE to COARSE pitch. It was at this point that the Sunderlands had a second quirk – they dropped 50 feet before climbing again.

If one magneto went out at this point the plane would crash.

As the plane flew over high ground towards Eagle's Rock, the override taken OUT and the airscrews were changed from FINE to COARSE, if the two magnetos went out of action on one engine, a fully laden plane would crash. Lack of flap control would only add to the disaster.

Flaps

Flaps control the drag of the plane. The more flaps are opened, the more drag the plane has and the more control the pilot has over take off, landing and turning, even creating level turns.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

The three most commonly used flap settings are 8 degrees ($^1/_3$ OUT), 12 degrees ($^1/_2$ OUT) and 25 degrees (Full OUT). The extended flap at any setting did not interfere with the efficiency of the elevators and the drag was low. At a take-off the flap setting was $^1/_3$ OUT. Just before leaving the water it was $^1/_2$ OUT.

However in certain situations, if the flaps are stuck in the wrong position, there was less control over the plane and disaster could strike, especially at take off, when the override was taken OUT, when the propellers changed from FINE to COARSE, or while trying to pull out of a dive.

On the first official flight the flaps got stuck on CANOPUS while approaching the Seaplane Works at Rochester and the plane landed without the use of flaps. This resulted in recommendations which included a ladder to the flap motor. This ladder also gave access to the elevators, magneto/starter motors and the engine speed indicator generators.

The flaps on standard s.23 flying boats were moved by a single small electric motor, which took a full minute to wind to full flap and a minute and a half to retract the flap. This 90 seconds provided plenty of time to crash the plane without the extra stability flaps provided.

The flap operating motor is not mentioned in the Production Chart which is very curious. However "the standard equipment was a Rotax split-field series-wound 0.373 kW electric motor, mounted in the storage space over the forward end of the promenade cabin. [These were underpowered at only 0.5 Hp/0.373 kW.] The flaps could be operated manually by disengaging the clutch on the port side and winding the flap in or out by means of a winding handle inserted in the starboard side of the gearbox. The torque tubes that drove the flaps extended from the gearbox to the wing roots."[16] In the Duke of Kent's case, having recently flown over high ground, there was not enough time to do so.

Rotax were not the best flap motors and some s.30 were fitted with Delco-Remy flap motors. These weren't that great either and in January 1940 1 kW motors with an extra battery were considered . . . but not installed. As a result flap operating motors were a third the desired size.

A 4 amp fuse was used for the flap indicator, a 15 amp fuse for flap motor changeover switch and a 50 amp fuse for the flap motor. It was simple enough to swap the 50 amp fuse for a 30 amp fuse to cause a delayed blow out. Alternatively highly acidic acid could be dripped on the fuses and/or cables causing a delayed blow out. Passengers with know-how could access the flap motors, elevators, magneto/starter motors and engine speed indicator generators if the Flight Steward had been sent to the upper level.

When the nose of the plane went up or down, the pilots had a manual control on the underside of the coup, which could be worked by either pilot. A handle was turned 6.38 turns to trim the elevators through its full movement.

The flap, elevator, magneto/starter motor, engine speed indicator generators wiring and batteries were all in the same area, in the terminal block in the wing-root. These were accessed through the compartment over the centre cabin, between the wings (spar booms).

The manual override operator (Flight Steward) had to clamber into the compartment, de-clutch the motor and insert the winding handle into the gearbox, to move the flaps IN or OUT.

---

[16] Brian Cassidy, *Flying Empires*, pp P. 77.

The saboteur only had to climb in and drop acid on the Telefex cables or fuses to the flaps/elevators/magneto/engine speed indicator generators or replace their fuses with faulty fuses or smaller fuses.

> "The engine starter solenoid circuit wiring and the starter circuits, were connected through the junction boxes in the wing-roots in 35/012 copper core cable to the Rotax N5CP solenoid switches, which energised the starter motors."

The control wiring was only single core copper cable and the limit switch gearbox drove both the flap-angle indicator and extension indicator, but these applied to the port flap only. This meant that the starboard flap could be faulty without causing alarm.

The flaps, elevators, magneto/starter motor and engine speed indicator generators could all have been sabotaged by access to the wing-roots and this could have been done by any of the unnamed three in the royal party by distracting the Flight Steward (which he was) and opening the cover plates. With practice this sabotage can be done very quickly. Equally the sabotage could have occurred while in service during the previous few days.

The sabotage could have been done during servicing, on the plane or as a back up to remote control. The possibilities were not limited.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

> The magneto/starter motor was sabotaged on two of the four engines and there was a remote control override to the magnetos, rudder and communications just in case they were needed.

A Sunderland Crashing

A simple method of crashing a Sunderland was to turn off the magnetos on two engines, reduce the speed to 142 kmph and open ¼ flap. This would cause the flying boat to stall and fall 300 feet per minute. Having just flown over high ground, it wouldn't take long to hit the ground, certainly less than 90 seconds. This could have been done as soon as the propellers had moved to COARSE and the plane had just dropped 50 feet.

Once the plane had stalled and begun to fall the magnetos could be turned on again. The pilots would have the engines on full throttle as they tried to pull out of the dive. If this occurred under 116 kmph the plane would continue to stall and continue to dive, at best levelling out. If the pilots judged they were too close to ground to pull out of a dive they would have gone to throttle off and waited for their demise.

The Usual Method of Sabotage

Sabotage was also taught by taking apart and reassembling the fuel-monitoring unit. This would have been looked for, however, since MI-5 and MI-6 were well in on the act, it was simple enough for them to destroy this small piece of evidence.

Remote control was not widely known and was not looked for. Those MI-6 agents on the inside would have looked for any evidence of sabotage and removed them as soon as they arrived at the crash site.

The Unusual Method of Sabotage

In Burma, India and Assam planes were downing in 1943–45 like there was no tomorrow. This included passenger air craft. The British checked this out and found the Japanese were lacing chewing gum with hashish and giving it to the native ground crews to put in the pilot's cabin. The pilots were chewing the gum, getting stoned and crashing.

The hashish was discovered when some erk (Ground Crew) pinched the chewing gum and dived off the 50 foot control tower injuring himself.

This was how the plane crashes got solved in reality, but it only became public knowledge when the Royal Flying Corps veteran and editor of *Popular Flying* magazine, Captain William Earl Johns attributed it to Captain James Bigglesworth in the Biggles novels. Biggles was so big he influenced wallpaper.

Remote Control and Instructions from Inside

To steer the plane from inside, all that was needed was control over the rudder. This was done by command from inside the plane, from the cockpit, from outside the plane, or by remote control over the rudder. The steward could easily have been given instructions from the Duke of Hamilton prior to boarding:

> "If the Duke of Kent gives you any instructions, follow them. He is the commanding officer on the plane."
>
> Once on board the Duke of Kent's instructions may have been: "We are going to the Aft Cabin. Do not disturb us until we have passed Wick. Have the pilots fly over Eagle's Rock. I hear the scenery is spectacular."

After this the Duke of Kent and his party made their way to the Promenade Cabin and climbed out the starboard door of the Sunderland Special, directly onto the waiting craft, no steps required.

The North Sea is largely fed by the Baltic which has no tide at all. It is also partly fed by the Atlantic which does have tides. Rochester had small tides. No ramp or stairs were required from the Sunderland to either the dock, tender or MEXSHELL refuelling craft.

MI-6 to the Rescue

Eagle's Rock was 18 miles from the small town of Wick which meant MI-6's rescue team were assured to be the largest number of people first on the scene.

There were 15 officially on board. MI-6 had done a 'coffee run' and visited the morgues in Britain in search of bodies. It was preferable they had died as the result of car crashes, plane crashes, or by fire. They needed a body for the Duke of Kent, the other three in the unnamed royal party and a spare. It's always good to have a spare body when you're MI-6.

MI-6 arrived in their Army lorries converted into ambulances with their best canned meat ready to place. The bodies were often preserved with ice. This idea was first put forward by Squadron Leader O'Reilly – MI-6's serial murderer until the Russians got him.

The five bodies were all dressed in appropriate uniforms and pre-stressed in a manner commesurate with a plane crash. MI-6 failed to adequately stress the Duke of Kent's uniform and his body was found thrown well clear of the plane and not too far from the Army lorry loaded with the canned meat. This meant that MI-6 found little reason to carry the Duke of Kent's body double very far. The smashed face must have been something horrible. His briefcase was found near the body and it was 'his' uniform and briefcase that identified the body. The face did not.

> The body was not that of the Duke of Kent. It was a canned meat body brought in by MI-6.

When Flt Sgt Andrew Simpson William Jack turned up alive, "The reported additional and unexplained body at the scene was [erroneously] attributed to Rudolf Hess." It was not Rudolf Hess, but was a canned meat spare attributed to rear gunner Flight Sergeant Andrew Jack. Andrew Jack was not meant to survive and MI-6 had planned on there being no survivors. Andrew Jack was discovered after the bodies had been counted and placed and was lucky not to have been executed on the spot as part of MI-5's tidy up.

Given something of a silent mythical status as 'surviving hero', it was unwise to kill Andrew Jack, but it was necessary to silence him. Part of this has involved discrediting him, even after his death. Officially known as 'boiler-plating', this is often employed against low-ranking survivors of incidents.

There were meant to be no survivors. Either the pilots had managed to slow the plane down, or the Oban saboteurs had not taken into consideration that under 240 kmph (150 mph) there was a chance of survival, especially for the rear gunner. The tails of Liberators and Sunderlands were known to snap off and if the tail gunner said the bolts were coming lose, the pilots headed the plane for home . . . so whenever the tail gunner wanted to go home, he would tell the pilots via intercom that the bolts were coming loose.

The tail of the Sunderland snapped off and rear gunner Andrew Jack was badly burnt, but survived. Having an understanding of the British from his family background, he escaped the scene as quickly as possible and staggered to a crofter's (farmer's) cottage.

Jack did not alert anyone and was discovered the next morning exhausted and burnt. The rescue party did not know he had survived until the following day. As a result an extra body found.

Spymaster: "Stinks of MI-6."

The 16th body, explained as Rudolf Hess, was a car crash/burn victim who had died days earlier and was picked up during the MI-6 coffee run and packed in ice.

Once Flt Sgt Andrew Simpson William Jack had identified the Duke of Kent's back as he stood between the two pilots, the Duke of Kent walked down to the passenger level to see his unnamed royal party of three. The Flight Steward had been instructed not to go to the Aft Cabin until after passing Wick (after the crash). Curtains between cabins and the royal party luggage blocked his view. At 60 decibels (as loud as shouting) the Flight Steward could not distinguish whether or not there was any conversation coming from the Aft Cabin. Just prior to flight, the Duke of Kent opened the seaward starboard door in the Promenade Cabin and simply walked onto the tender.

This was a Holy Ghost operation.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

MI-5, Air 3 and Jack

The Duke of Kent was MI-5 as of right. Another in the royal party was most likely an MI-5 officer proficient in sabotage and intelligence operations and from Air 3.

Since three of the ‘four’ passengers in the royal party remain unnamed and were at a level below the crew, there was no communication between the crew and royal party during flight and no way of ascertaining who the royal party were.

Having survived, Andrew Jack went to the East Grinstead hospital for burns, retired as a flight lieutenant on 6 June 1964 and worked as a telephone engineer. He had vast scarring, and officially “suffered from depression and was a changed man”.

Documents were released by the Public Records Office under the 30-year rule around 1972. (His brother King Edward VIII/Duke of Windsor had died on 28 May 1972.) The PRO records shed no light on the matter, such that they contradicted Andrew Jack’s reports – the only eye witness.

Flt Sgt Andrew Simpson William Jack (8 May 1921–22 March 1978) died at Brighton General Hospital, officially of bronchopneumonia, pancreatitis and cirrhosis of the liver.

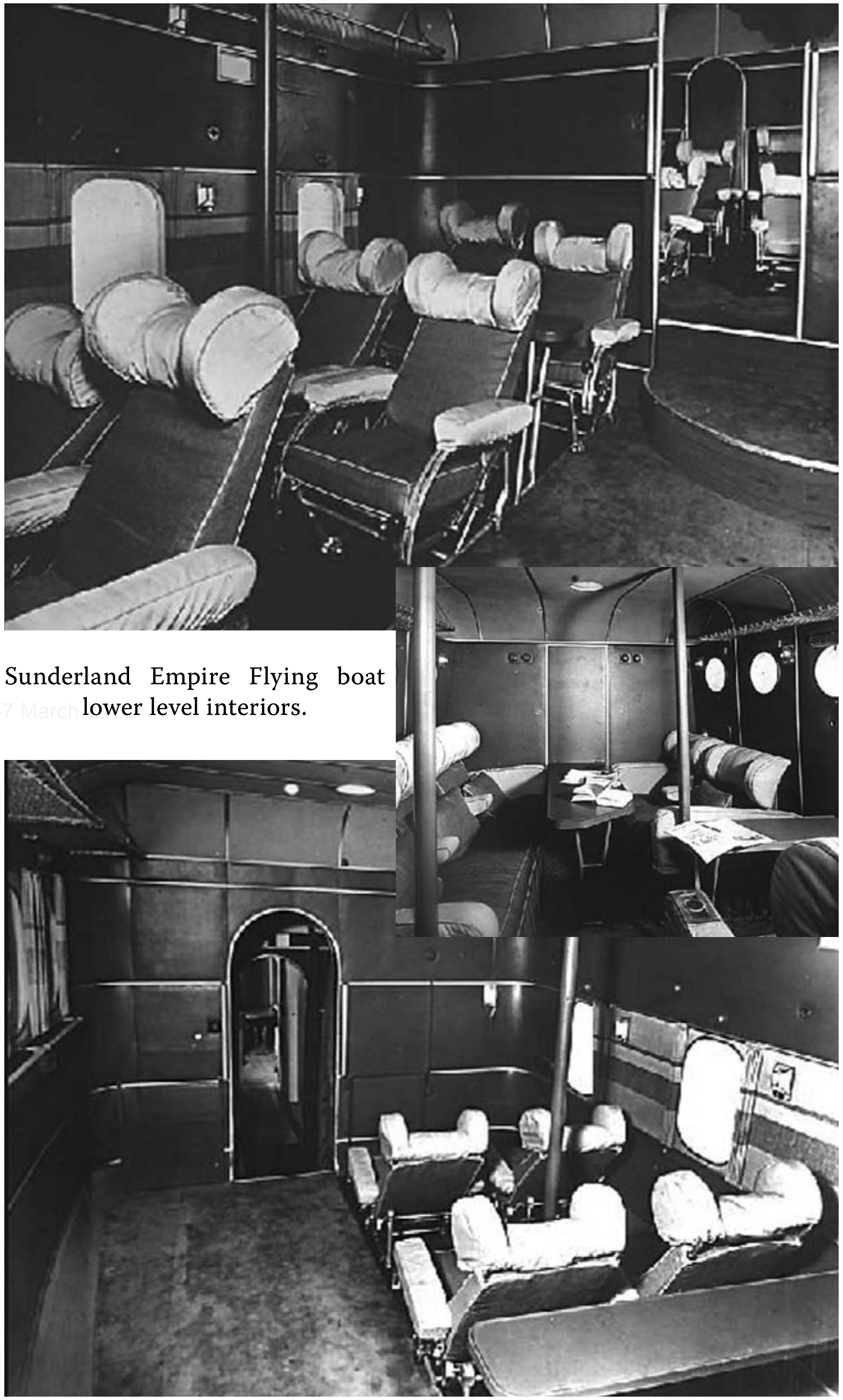
Considering MI-6 had probably been threatening to kill Jack for 36 years, with veiled threats and hints, it was no wonder Jack was depressed. The MI-6 rescue team were very concerned that there was a survivor and would have preferred there were none so they spent the next four decades ensuring that rear gunner Andrew Jack did not have a voice.

Spymaster: “The liver diagnosis is typical of MI-5/MI-6 boiler-plating and is completely in line with how MI-6 treats people even after death. Citing alcoholism at death provides another avenue for deniability.”

Britain – a Liar’s Paradise

The substance of the Court of Enquiry is encapsulated on the Aircraft Accident Card held by the Ministry of Defence. Based on this, the Secretary of State of Air, Sir Archibald Sinclair made a statement six weeks after the crash in the House of Commons on 7 October 1942, yet a diligent search at the Public Records Office (also by its director) has confirmed in writing that the original Court of Enquiry cannot be

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March



Sunderland Empire Flying boat lower level interiors.

found in either the "open" or "closed" files and the Royal Archivist has also confirmed that these have never been sent to the Public Records Office.[17]

> This indicates that, regarding the circumstances of the death of the Duke of Kent, the Secretary of State of Air made his statement in the House of Commons based on information that did not exist.
>
> This also indicates that all enquiries into the Sunderland crash were stopped by the British Royal Family, in particular, by the Duke of Kent's brother, King George VI.

Spymaster: "King George VI happily cooperated in all these cover ups because he was virtually retarded, and was guided by more worldly military figures who pretended to advise him beneficially. His only genuine friend was the New Zealand VC Charlie Upham who treated the King like one of his own men and never called him George."

The King of England, the British Royal Family, the House of Commons, the Ministry of Defence, the Court of Enquiry, the Secretary of State of Air, Commander of the Air Training corps, the Duke of Hamilton, the Freemasons of Scotland, MI-6 and all embedded historians were complicit in the cover up of the death of Air Commodore, Inspector-General of RAF Welfare and Grand Master Mason, the cross-dressing Duke of Kent . . . and his new role as the Holy Ghost.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

> King George VI was not very bright and Princess Elizabeth had been attending war meetings since she was 13 (1939). If the Duke of Kent were to have survived, Elizabeth may not have been queen until after his death. The Duke of Kent had been cited for King, but was considered too similar to King Edward VIII.

Based on the Duke of Kent's homosexual and occult practises, his cross-dressing, his cuckolding and his snobbish Nazi wife demanding she was "the most blue-blooded royal of them all", the Duke of Kent was removed from the public picture and his death was framed.

This is backed up by the hushed and rushed funeral and the royal family's near complete lack of mourning for their brother and uncle.

---

[17] In Golden Dawn coven/Thule Society language, 'six weeks' is "all 6s and 7s – all madness", with the '6' referring to death and the '7' referring to heaven, meaning it was "a heavenly death surrounded by madness". This too was part of the Holy Ghost operation.

The 'Duke of Kent' was originally buried at St. George's Chapel, Windsor, but once the real Duke of Kent had died (morphine and cocaine overdose post-1968, the same as his father, King George V), the canned meat Duke of Kent was removed and the real Duke of Kent was buried at the royal burial ground at Frogmore. It was here that the real ceremony took place.

Homosexual Lovers raise Prince Edward

The Duke of Hamilton was born Douglas Douglas-Hamilton (3 February 1903–30 March 1973) and became the 14th Duke of Hamilton and the 11th Duke of Brandon upon his father's death on 16 March 1940.

Previously the Duke of Hamilton had worked in coalmines as 'Mr Hamilton', although the coal was on their property. He served in the Auxiliary Air Force as Squadron Commander (1927–36) and was the first to fly over Mt. Everest (1933). He was a prominent Conservative MP (1930–40) and made friends with several prominent Nazis during the 1936 Olympics in Berlin. He was also Lord Steward of the Royal Holyroodhouse (1940–64) and during WWII, Commander of the Air Training Corps responsible for the defence of Scotland.

The Duke of Hamilton and Brandon was also a German agent with an Abwehr V-Mann number and was referred to in both British and German occult circles as Brandon – yet after WWII he was styled GCVO (1946) and KT (1951) for services to Britain.

After the 'death' of his lover the Duke of Kent (39), the position of Duke of Kent was filled by the Duke of Kent's six-year-old son, Prince Edward George Nicholas Paul Patrick, born 9 October 1935.

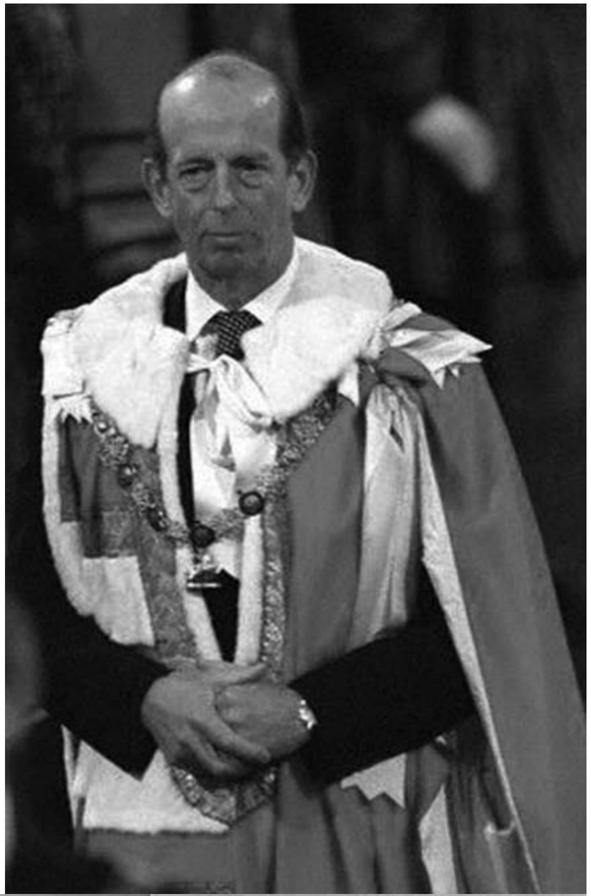
As a six-year-old, Prince Edward could not fulfil the role of his future titles so these were carried out by his father's close friend and lover, the Duke of Hamilton . . . with his lover, the surviving Duke of Kent, living at Dungavel Castle with him, often in a dress. The Duke of Hamilton wore the pants.

The Duke of Hamilton acted as mentor to Prince Edward for the quarter of a century from 1942–67 when he handed over his Freemasonry titles. Whenever Prince Edward and the Duke of Hamilton met there was an opportunity for Prince Edward to met with his father who often dressed as a woman for sexual preference as much as for disguise.

The Duke of Kent in Air Force and Naval uniform and as pretty boy (top); with fiancée Princess Marina of Greece (middle); and with lovers Albrecht Haushofer (bottom left) and the 14th Duke of Hamilton (bottom rights).

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

The 2nd Duke of Kent Field Marshal Prince Edward George Nicholas Patrick Windsor (1935–) KG, GCMC, GCVO, ADC. The Grand Master of the United Grand Lodge of England and Hereditary Grand Master of Anglo-American Freemasonry.



The first and second Duchess of Kent.
Stalwart wives look upon their sons and wonder – what have I done?

> Just imagine it:
>
> A transsexual cocaine and morphine addict as of King of Great Britain.
>
> Just imagine it:
>
> The current Duke of Kent looks nothing like his father and was probably conceived during a Golden Dawn coven ritual – a gang bang with the males acting as the Father, the Son and the Holy Ghost. Conception took place 33 days after their marriage at 1.30 am on Christmas Day 1934 at exactly half-waned moon. Feeble and illegitimate royals are often conceived in the first half of the waning moon. It was the same for King George VI's illegitimate son conceived near the bottom of New Zealand's South Island and born on Christmas Day 1927. Let's call him Harry.

The most likely fathers were the Duke of Kent, his lover the Duke of Hamilton, and his lover Albrecht Haushofer. Albrecht Haushofer was the son of Rudolf Hess' mentor Karl Haushofer. Karl had originated the concept of lebensraum, something the British royals absolutely needed.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

The current Duke of Kent has Albrecht Haushofer's hairline, eyes, nose, ears and jaw. Albrecht Haushofer could well be the Duke of Kent's biological father . . . although his unfortunate looks can also be explained by his father's cocaine and morphine addiction. The Duke of Hamilton, who specialised in magnanimous vanity, looks nothing like Prince Edward/Duke of Kent.

Royal Titles

As Queen Elizabeth II's cousin, Prince Edward eventually became Field Marshal, KG, GCMC, GCVO, ADC. Upon joining the Masons he immediately became a 33 degree Mason and The Grand Master of the United Grand Lodge of England and Hereditary Grand Master of Anglo-American Freemasonry – all in 1967.

Indicators of the real Duke of Kent's death are his son's elevation to Grand Master Mason in 1967 with the deceased father in the galleries role playing the Holy Ghost; his wife's death on 27 August 1968; and his reburial at Frogmore, the date of which seems to be protected.

Royals have got away with giving each other titles and post-nominal letters for a long time, so let's look at what the post-nominal letters mean.

The Knight of the Garter (KG) is given to the Sovereign (themself), his eldest son and 24 nobles, which included his third son. Its motto 'Honi soit qui mal y pense' – 'Shamed be the person who thinks evil of it' – brought about the Age of Chivalry. Of all the orders it includes the most degraded knights. These include King Charles I (appointed in 1611 and beheaded in 1649); James Butler, Duke of Ormonde, Viceroy of Ireland (appointed 1689 and executed for treason 1716) and over thirty other Garter Knights executed from 1388, after which the government took over their appointments from the late 1700s to 1946 when the royal family reclaimed the right.

The Order of the Garter is also given to foreign monarchs "as a means of marking and securing alliances" including Emperor Nicholas II of Russia in 1893 (we're going to swish you and end your monarchy); King Alfonso XII of Spain in 1902 (we won't help you against the Germans); the Shah of Persia in 1903 (we want your oil); the Emperor of Japan in 1929 (we don't want you to fight alongside Germany);[18] the King of Sweden in 1954 (thanks for rejecting Hitler's Non-Aggression Pact) and King Olav V of Norway in 1959 (thanks for rejecting Hitler's Non-Aggression Pact while allowing him to take over your country and really getting the war in Northern Europe under way).

The Order of the Garter has become an order for complicit cover utilising those from lower down the ranks such as Lord Kitchener (KG). "You deny for me and I'll deny for you." The Order of the Garter has come to symbolise closeted homosexuality, wife cheating, paedophilia amongst royals and peers, and trading in countries' fortunes.[19]

The Knight of St Michael and St George (GCMC) is the 'Spies and Traders' knighthood and is given to those who have dealt with delicate British foreign matters. Anyone with the letters GCMG, KCMG or CMG after their name should be treated as a British spy, whether retired or not. Part and parcel of being a British royal is dealing with delicate British matters overseas. As such, many honorary members are royals. Its motto 'Auspicium melioris aevi' (We are doing this for a better Age) may as well refer to the Masonic New Age – Novus Ordo Seclorum.

---

[18] Hirohito, Emperor of Japan was appointed Knight Garter on 3 May 1929. This was removed in 1941 and reinstated by warrant on 22 May 1971. That he was allowed to survive after WWII amazed all historians and points to complicity in war.

[19] King George VI qualified in all these areas.

The Royal Victorian Order (GCVO) is given to family members and servants of the royal household among others. There is no limit to the number given and its really just the home-help award.

The Aide de Camp to Her Majesty (ADC) is just that. It signifies that the ADC carries out the will of the monarch without question.

The Duke of Hamilton and Brandon/Douglas Douglas-Hamilton was a pro-Nazi conservative MP who travelled through Germany returning to nobble the British Government into *not* supporting France over the re-militarisation of the Rhineland (1936). He also encouraged the British Empire to "come to an understanding" with the New World Order of Nordic-Anglo-Saxon colonising and advised King George VI on the advantages of Naziism.

The British monarchy took this on board and Queen consort Elizabeth (King George VI's Scottish wife) said: "I don't care who wins the war, as long as we retain the monarchy".

> As "the uncrowned King of England" this was the Duke of Hamilton's gift to the Nordic-Anglo-Saxon coloniser Adolf Hitler. He had the British monarchy on board with Hitler and they tasselled between supporting Hitler and retaining the monarchy. As it turned out, they did both.

The 14th Duke of Hamilton (GCVO, KT) was doing the work of the KG, GCMC, GCVO, ADC – the work of 'shameful delicate British foreign matters that directly serve and aid the British monarch and trade in countries fortunes'. As the uncrowned King of England, the uncrowned head of Freemasonry, Scotland's premier peer and a German V-Mann agent, the 14th Duke of Hamilton ensured the Freemasons did everything they could to ensure German Freemasons had every assistance in taking over England.

> Of many knights, you could comfortably say, they were "creating mass crime behind a veil of dignity".

Each Knight provides a reference for the other and justice is never done. Delaying the charge of treason and making those look stupid who would lay the charge is common to 80% of knighthoods. It also puts the knights completely in the pockets of those in power to do their bidding, both up and down the elevation scale, developing and sustaining the British monarchy's New World Order goals.

Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 Mar

The 14th Duke of Hamilton, Douglas Douglas-Hamilton was a homosexual and a lover of the transvestite, cocaine and morphine addict, the Duke of Kent. He was also the occultist 'Brandon' and used the surviving Duke of Kent as the Holy Ghost in all Golden Dawn coven occult rituals.

> Whenever you have a high-ranking homosexual fronting as a married heterosexual, you have a malleable spy who will go to any treasonous lengths and use all their resources just to maintain one or all of their positions.

Many homosexual Freemasons use Freemasonry and marriage as a form of cover. Freemasons have a high rate of child-sex abuse, paedophilia and incest, with accounts suggesting that Freemasons sexually abuse a third of their daughters and granddaughters.

> Paedophiles control Freemasons, because Freemasons consider paedophiles to be close to royals. Royals use their illegitimate children for supply and control for paedophiles. Police are a Freemasonry organisation and serve the British Crown. Thus Police cover for paedophiles and expect promotions when they do so. Freemasons admire paedophiles and a Freemason will do anything a paedophile asks them to do. This does not exclude dropping the Berlin Wall.

Because the Freemasons control the police and judiciary, Freemasons are rarely charged for their incest, child-sex abuse and paedophilia. When they are discovered, the first step is to cover up. When it becomes too obvious they are often murdered. Sometimes these murders are real and other times they are fake with new identities established elsewhere. In the case of really important secret society members, they are retained, hidden and used for ceremonial purposes. One of those purposes was to act as the 'Holy Ghost' in Golden Dawn coven occult rituals. In Germany these were called Thule Society rituals.

Secrets give power
and rituals with a manifest secret have more power.

On 11 September 2004 the Freemasons opened their doors to the public for membership in order to spread the blame of an increasingly exposed history. (See *Spreading the Blame*, *Appendix 4*)

Frogmore

Frogmore is named after the preponderance of frogs in this low-lying ground in Berkshire. The British royals are usually buried at Frogmore, St. George's Chapel in Windsor, or Westminster Abbey.

Frogmore refers to Frogmore's burial grounds and includes the Royal Mausoleum containing the graves of Prince Albert and Queen Victoria (only), the Duchess of Kent's Mausoleum (Queen Victoria's mother only, slightly smaller but close by), and the royal burial ground.

Frogmore is 33 acres of private gardens which adjoins Home Park grounds of Windsor Castle, Berkshire. It was purchased by King George III for his African Queen Charlotte, for use as "a country retreat". They had 15 children, and in real terms, it was a place to get rid of the kids. Frogmore House is therefore a former royal residence. Lord Louis was born in this large white mansion.

Queen Victoria set Frogmore House aside as the royal burial ground a few days after Prince Albert died in 1861. This was on the advice that the usual and more public Westminster Abbey would, at some point in the future, make it easier to ascertain whether a royal was of illegitimate parentage. The other royal burial ground is St. George's Chapel at neighbouring Windsor.

Espavo 3520 - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

The mausoleum at Frogmore was designed, not by a Britisher, but by the German architect, Ludwig Gruner, in the form of a Greek Cross. Work began in 1862 and the mausoleum was finished in 1871.

There was grave robbing at Frogmore. This removed all non-royal graves from the site and some royal ones too. King George III's body would have been swished by the Freemasons so his poisoning could not be analysed and Queen Victoria would have organised the site with the words "prepare the site". Some grave robbing was organised by the victims to cover for more disingenuous activities, especially when pride was a part of history.

The royal burial ground, behind Victoria and Albert's Mausoleum contains the bodies of "most" members of the royal family (1861–1928), although it only includes three of Victoria's nine children: Princess Helena (d. 1923); Princess Louise (d. 1939); and Prince Arthur (d. 1942). Prince consort Albert was the father of Arthur, but the parentage of the two daughters is suspect. King Edward VIII (d. 1972) and Wallis Simpson (d. 1986) were also buried at the royal burial ground.

1861 to 1928 was a period when a lot of illegitimate high-ranking British royals were dying and buried at Frogmore. Consequently the royal burial ground at Frogmore is only "open six days a year". This includes 17–19 May (Mausoleum and garden), 25 May (Mausoleum only, closest Wednesday to Queen's Birthday) and 27–29 August (Bank Holiday, House, Gardens and Mausoleum).[20] This means the royal burial ground can be viewed over a fence only 5 days a year from 10 am–6 pm. This excludes casual DNA testing.

Consider Frogmore the Pharoh King's sealed crypt. The Duke of Kent was buried there because his death was delayed for over a quarter of a century. The DNA in Frogmore hides the secrets of the British royal family, their illegitimate origins, their murders including MAD (medically assisted death) and their delayed deaths.[21]

Before Marina, Duchess of Kent married she was a princess of Denmark and Greece (the Greek bit was by invitation and was quickly followed by exile). When Marina married on 29 November 1934 she became the Duchess of Kent, Countess of St. Andrews and Baroness Downpatrick. Just before her son married, she changed her title to HRH Princess Marina, Duchess of Kent as she was entitled to do. Her son, the new Duke of Kent then married the violinist Katherine Lucy Mary Worsley on 8 June 1961 and Katherine became the new HRH Duchess of Kent.

The new Duchess of Kent suffers from depression and chronic fatigue syndrome. (No wonder, look at what she married.) "I do love guidelines . . . I have wanted that all my life. I like to know what's expected of me. I like being told: 'You shall . . .'" In 1994 she converted to Roman Catholicism, the first senior royal to publicly do so since the 1700 Act of Settlement (touted as 1701) and in 2002 she voluntarily gave up the style HRH (Her Royal Highness) to become publicly known as Katharine, Duchess of Kent and privately as Katharine Kent.

The 1700 Act of Settlement has been interpreted with every form of excuse and the Duke of Kent did not lose his place in the line of succession to the British throne because his wife converted to Catholicism after they were married. Similarly a King could marry an Anglican and she could become a Catholic Queen and no one would do anything effective about it. Sure there would be the usual discussion in the papers, but what has that ever achieved. The Duchess of Kent became a Catholic and gave up her succession to the British throne, although her children are still in line to the throne by way of their Anglican HRH father.

---

[20] These are the 2005 dates.

[21] King George V was killed by MAD as was the Duke of Kent.

Her predecessor, HRH Princess Marina, Duchess of Kent died from a brain tumor at Kensington Palace on 27 August 1968. She was a 61-year-old Nazi and Colonel-in-chief of the Essex and Kent Scottish Regiment. She was originally buried at St. George's Chapel at Windsor, but was later reburied at the royal burial ground at Frogmore to be next to her husband, fellow Nazi-in-a-dress, the Duke of Kent.

The date of his reburial is not given, but is post 1968 and probably within a week of his actual death.

Catch 22

Fleet Air Arm: "I was in the desert arming and maintaining Beaufighters, but ended up receiving everything – South African Kittyhawks, Hurricanes, Mark V Spitfires, Free-French Baltimores, Free-Greek Baltimores and every other thing that could fly. The joke amongst ourselves was 'If anything came in and it was flown by a complete and utter Kraut and it had some variation of RAF markings that looked like the Krauts had painted it; and if they had a uniform that looked like it had been put together by a shoplifter working at Madam Tussaud's wax works; and if he couldn't speak English and all they could tell you was "Ya flieger, schnel schnel" ("I am a flyer, hurry, hurry")' – they were probably all right.

"All these foreigners were usually dripping in guns, nearly all German, and Luftwaffe flieger watches. A sure case of suspicion was a foreigner with a Mark V Webley in its correct holster and a Pommy watch."

The Webley was British. The German guns were better, so any one dripping in British guns was either a German spy or a dumb British and if a dumb British returned twice, he was a German spy . . . No one carried a British watch because they didn't work in the desert.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Fleet Air Arm: "They called on me one day saying, 'We are bringing you these Commandos and we need to teach them how to sabotage aircraft'. I tried to teach them how to attack the fuel-monitoring unit by taking it apart and reassembling it. The Commandos, the Marines, Popski's Army, NZLRDG (NZ Long Range Desert Group) – they could all understand, but the SAS couldn't and even the SAS Officers couldn't.[22]

"You could try to teach them how to stuff a rag under the sump and set fire to it and that was too complicated. SAS never understood anything that wasn't accompanied by a big bang. Anything else was an anathema to them. They really were the dumbest bastards in the whole of the Western Desert.

"There was this 10-year-old Bedouin kid [desert-dweller] everyone called 'Farouk'. He was thin and skinny and used to coat himself in a mixture of grease and tyre black and he' go around German aircraft and drill a hole with a corkscrew stolen from Shepherds and given to him by a New Zealand Army officer. Farouk probably got more Germans in the Western Desert by drilling holes halfway through the landing wheel than the rest of us.

"When the Me109G came out Farouk transferred his attentions to drilling a hole halfway through the supercharge inlet. He's believed to have downed Joachim Marseilles – the famous German pilot Ace. Marseilles certainly fell victim to an engine fire.

"We asked Farouk why he did it and he told us, 'I'm just here for the money'. He was Tunisian. He was paid in British pounds into an account in Switzerland and he'd been promised resettlement into his own restaurant in a British colony in South America.

"If he survived it would have been a miracle. The kid lived for the day he would be able to sit in his restaurant in a clean white shirt and be able to handle a white menu and not leave black marks everywhere. He'd been recruited by one of Popski's men working on Italian aircraft in his native Tunisia with a thorn from a bush called the Jerusalem Thorn. 'The vital thing was not to go to far with the thorn so the tail-wheel only gave out when the plane landed.'

"The trickiest thing in the Western Desert was sorting out the Allied aircraft from the German aircraft and Farouk told me that the markings had nothing to do with it. You actually had to go and listen to the pilots in order to tell which aircraft were targets. Farouk said, 'A lot of the high up pilots in the Luftwaffe actually spoke English together and were German aristocrats. I'd been told by British Intelligence to give them a wide birth. It was only the low class that spoke German together.'

---

[22] All Czechs during WWII wore Polish uniforms and Polish titles but spoke Czech. All wearing Czech uniforms during WWII were Poles. All of Popski's Army were Czechs who spoke Czech, but didn't wear the uniform or carry the title of a Czech or a Pole. The desert was full of Catch 22s.

"We took Farouk into town once, into Cairo and dressed him up. When we were passing Gray Pillars we were challenged by an MP. I was asked 'What are you doing with this boy?' I became nonplussed and didn't know what to say and then Farouk said, 'He makes me wash his socks and bums me every night' and the MP turned to me and said, 'You'd better hire another to wash your socks. You have to treat these Wogs right, after all Egypt is there country.' I wandered off admonished and Farouk led the way from behind."[23]

Spymaster: "I was told this story by another army officer who had been in intelligence and the only spies that were any good and wouldn't rob you blind were whores and they were Jewish whores that worked for MI-6, the Mossad and God knows who else.

"They befriended me and looked after me all the time I was in the UK. They told me some amazing things. They told me that the whole place was run by Prince Philip but they were right because they knew what he liked.

"The only ones you had to watch out for were the KGB and Jews and some of them could be quite nasty. They told me that New Zealand was regarded by all British and American military personnel as 'The Dump' and anything that was no longer of any use went there, and in Britain's case, at a huge expense to the New Zealand taxpayer.

"One night two of these ladies came up to me and told me to watch out for this British Admiral. He was particularly nasty and was getting backhanders from all directions including Vickers and was intent on getting rid of some Leander Class frigates.

"The particularly nasty Admiral was told by the First Sea Lord at the party, 'Any luck getting rid of those Frigates Old Bean?' and the Admiral said, 'No, even the Indians don't want them. They know they're clapped out.' Whereupon the First Sea Lord said, 'Have you tried the Kiwis?' and the Admiral replied, 'No, I haven't. Never thought of them', and the First Sea Lord replied, 'Do try them. Their money is just as good as anyone else's and they're still as thick as the bulkheads on the Bismarck.'

---

[23] Gray Pillars was a distinctive building owned by Omar Sirry. It was the British Headquarters located at 10 Tolombat, Garden City, Cairo and was headed by Ministers' Oliver Lyttelton (July 1941), Richard Cassey, then Lord Moyne. The locals called it 'Assicurazioni' and believed the British, war or no war, had overstayed their welcome. The British set up a football field and a cricket pitch around Gray Pillars and the locals used this to stage quick Sieg heils (gun shots) before they dived for cover in the undergrowth.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

"Of course I reported my knowledge back through the chain of command to Wellington [NZ]. Not long after I received a rocket [telling off]. On the day I received the rocket for sending half-arsed information through service channels, I noted two things in the British papers the next day. My ladies of the evening had disappeared to Israel and New Zealand had purchased a number of Leander Class frigates."[24]

Of course Kiwi Keith had been dipping his 'keel' in a bowl of 'rice' and the only people using their real names in London in the 70s were the guys stealing cars for London TV.

Spymaster: "Sunderlands couldn't land on choppy water. They used to land in Wellington (NZ) at Evans Bay, to the side of Shelley Bay on an RNZAF Base. It was still in use after WWII until at least 1969. They used to fly up and down the Bay two or three times before they'd come in and the water used to plane off the hull beautifully and the pilot used to make it look comparatively easy to set down. The reason it was so easy landing was the sheltered bay. This big bow wave would come off the hull and pour salt water all over the tail of the aircraft. Being RNZAF aircraft the engines used to perform like Swiss watches – they were maintained up in Hobsonville. The other RNZAF base was Lualatha Bay in Fiji. New Zealand Sunderlands were all white, whereas WWII aircraft had all white hulls with grey and green across the tops.

"The RNZAF would add Molybendum Sulphate to the engine oils and get 10–20% more power. The Americans developed this for use in Flying Fortresses flying at extreme heights for the attack on Germany. It was shipped out to New Zealand in May 1945 for the attack on Japan. The RNZAF had big drums of it at Hobsonville and would share it with the civilian flown demilitarized Sunderland s.45, known as the Solent.

"A Warrant Officer/mechanic at Hobsonvillle knew all the interchangeability of Sunderland parts. Officially he was meant to be retired, but was retained and worked on operating Sunderlands until 1970. He managed to blackmail the RNZAF so ended up with a commission rank as Wing Commander which is not bad for a mechanic.

"The first to fly a small fighter attached to a long-range bomber were Shorts of Sunderland fame. It worked so they stopped doing it. The next to do it were the Luftwaffe. The Germans called these 'Mistel' [Mistletoe – probably a reference to kissing cousins]. This was always treated like a top secret aviation programme of the Third Reich, but in actual event the idea came from England and was first developed and trialled by Shorts.

---

[24] Leander Class frigates arrived into New Zealand 1968-73.

"I have had high-ranking Luftwaffe personnel tell me 'this is a fact' and could not understand why the British didn't continue with it. It was in common use in Germany and was considered to be the ideal end for a number of worn-out aircraft. Germans filled them with explosives and sent them into attack in heavily defended locations – most of which happened to be on the Eastern Front."

> "The original concept was proposed to the RLM in 1941 by Siegfried Holzbauer, a Junkers test pilot. His idea was to make use of 'tired' Junkers Ju 88 airframes by packing them with explosives, fly them near a target and crash them into the target after the fighter had released itself. The fighter pilot would control the missile after release by *remote control*. The first conversion flew in July 1943 . . . a further 15 conversions, with the code name Beethoven . . . an eventual thickness of 60 feet of reinforced concrete was breached . . . over 250 Mistels of various combinations were built . . ."[25]

Spymaster: "I know the KG200, the elite bomber Geschwader [organisation] of the Luftwaffe used these aircraft and that at the end of the war, they were used in an attack on Russian bridges on the Western Rhine which was captured in tact by the US Army.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

"At the end of the war, the British held a famous air show at Farnborough where they exhibited a number of new inventions from Germany. Nearly all these aircraft had hastily applied British roundels and hastily applied Air Ministry numbers on the tails blocking out the Swastika.

"No one noticed apart from MI-6 entourage that the upside down engines in all German aircraft were courtesy of MI-6 and that the revolutionary Mistral design had been stolen from Shorts. [The Mistel was gifted by Arthur Gouge to the Freemasons who then gave it to Nazi Germany].

"The latest German-fighter ejection seats were not exhibited because they were busy being stolen by the executives of Martin-Baker who were touring the Luftwaffe base at Rechlin[26] [and Lärz] with an assortment of tools, stealing many things and intent on bringing them back to be discovered anew in the United Kingdom.

"No doubt there was similar activity from Rolls Royce and the Russians who stole early Rolls Royce designs of jet engines, among them the Rolls Royce Nene which turned up on a MIG-17 bearing a striking resemblance to a Messerschmitt fighter. In the 1980s the Russians ended up paying manufacturing rights to Rolls Royce for the use of these stolen designs.

"Similar things were happening down at Vickers with the Vampire. This is all just post-WWII and the gun ports had just gone cold."

British Intelligence Officer: "Confusion in wartime is the result of the British being as bent as a dingo's hind-leg whereas confusion in peacetime is the result of the British government's arms and drug dealing – euphemistically called 'Black Velvet" – organised by MI-6 and covered by the Air Police.

"One could delve into the history of any type of British aircraft and find a mass of confusion. Whenever a plane is pressed into or out of military service there's an opportunity for confusion.

"MI-6 and MI-5 got very excited in the early days of WWI when they suddenly realised that mastery of the air provided them with a whole new environment in which to stage accidents. No longer would they have to rely on people falling down gang-planks, poisoned by a Chief Steward, crushed by a cistern falling off a ship's toilet wall, or eaten by a shark. Now there was a whole new environment brimming with possibilities, completely at their beck-and-call.

"The RAF used to have huge rows about how someone had supposedly died in the air, but they found Winterbotham hugely accommodating and never looked back. A special section of the RAF was formed to master this new environment – Air 3 – and F. W. Winterbotham became Wing Commander responsible for the distribution of Ultra intelligence.

"All the museum historians are picked solely for their ability to swallow the bullshit from the officially embedded historians as they die off. In Short/Sunderland's case, none of their buildings remain at Rochester – there is no plaque and no museum, only a ramp going into the sea and a new motorway. In extreme cases museum historians are left uninstructed and in highly secretive cases they are left without a museum."

---

[25] Warbirds Resource group, Mistel – Composite Aircraft; also called Mistral.

[26] Rechlin is a small remote village in Mecklenburg-Vorpommern, Germany – an area closely related to, and heavily influenced by the British royal family. Rechlin was a testing ground for aircraft from 1916 and was the main testing ground for new Luftwaffe aircraft during the Third Reich, up to 1944/45 when Lärz was included. Plane construction was carried out by forced labour from the nearby Ravensbrück concentration camp.

Sabotaged Sunderland Development

The Sunderland model s.23 had a maximum speed of 320 kmph with a cruise speed of 265 kmph, a laughably small range, an empty weight of 10,900 kg and a loaded weight of 18,400 kg meaning it could carry 7500 kg. It had four 686 kW engines, a length of 27 metres and a wingspan of 35 metres.

The Sunderland model s.23 (4 July 1936–38) was a very slow and heavy plane with a laughable payload and range. This made it next to useless, which made it all the more loved by the British and utilised by the British monarchy. It was a flying turtle.

In 1937 the second and third C-Class flying boats were stripped down and given additional fuel tanks to make the transatlantic flights, but its payload was minimal, maintaining its overriding characteristic – Sunderlands could fly, but little else.

In 1938 the Sunderland model s.30 was delivered with Pegasus 22 engines providing 753 kW each. This was a 10% improvement in engine output, but only eight were built.

In September 1939 three bigger-and-better Sunderland s.26 G-Class flying boats were built powered by four Bristol Hercules engines providing 1030 kW – 50% up on the first model. This increased the range to 4800 km and could carry a combined weight of 34,000 kg – 85% up on the first model. The plane was starting to become useful so it underwent a name change.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

When WWII started in September 1939 these flying boats were pressed into military service for ocean patrol with four 7.7 mm guns (.303).

When the slow and cumbersome s.23 Empire boats were pressed into military service, the RAF called it the s.25. With much love and little quality they became "one of the most famous flying boats ever built" and the first Sunderland Mark I flew on 16 October 1937 (15 months after the first s.23).

The new Pegasus XXII engines with 753 kW were not ready and the planes were fitted with Bristol Pegasus X engines 709 kW making them 10% less powerful. This required a new wing design. The new Pegasus XXII engines were ready on 7 March 1938 with 21 production models on order dating back two years.

The modified military version, the A.33 was delayed for 5 months to October 1938. The new flap system shortened the length of takeoff. It was fitted with three .303 guns which meant it could kill in all directions but do little damage to other aircraft. Due to the heavy .303 machine gun tail turret, the wings were swept back 4.25° which meant the engines and floats had to be canted slightly. This was tinkering without forethought. The A.33 suffered structural failure during taxi trials and was scrapped – never to fly.

The new thicker wings carried four Pegasus XXII engines, six drum fuel tanks with a total capacity of 9200 litres. Four more fuel tanks were later added behind the rear wing spar giving 11,602 litres. This could then carry 900 kg of bombs, mines and later depth charges. Ordnance was carried inside the fuselage (the body of the plane) and winched out under the wings through wide hatches on each side of the fuselage.

Originally the number of crew was 7, but this increased to 11 and later to 13. The Sunderland Mark I had six bunks and a galley with a stove for cook-ups. The first Sunderland Mark I was delivered in June 1938. By September 1939 at the outbreak of WWII the RAF were operating 40 Sunderlands. The Sunderland had no ability to land on land and could only take off from water. If it landed on land, it was a crash.

The Sunderland quickly proved themselves to be inadequate against German submarines and U-boats. They were adapted with depth charges which would bounce off the water back up into the air and hit the tail of the Sunderland and explode. With sufficient embarrassment the depth charges were designed to sink before they exploded (Torpex depth charges from early 1943), but this was countered by a new form of self-sabotage, early warning-to-the-enemy radar.

In October 1941 Sunderlands were fitted with Anti-Surface Vessel radar (ASV Mark II) meaning it could only detect vessels on the surface. This was a primitive form of low-frequency radar with a wavelength of 1.5 metres and featured 22 stickleback aerials dotted all over the plane making it look like an Asian apartment.

The ASV Mark II radar (and not the plane) were picked up by the German radar warning system, Metox. This reversed the kills from German to British for the 18 months from October 1941 to early 1943. The British fitted ASV Mark II radar downed a lot of British planes.

German U-boats and submarines with longer range and more powerful weapons could detect the Sunderland crawling along the sky and would fire while the flying turtle was still out of its range. The Sunderlands had become completely useless against German submarines and U-boats and any British who went out in Sunderlands from October 1941 to early 1943 went out as cannon fodder. This was a crucial turning point in the war.

> The Sunderlands would have been more effective without the radar as it was their ASV Mark II radar that made them detectable and not the plane. For this their British CEO of design and development, Arthur Gouge, was cited for a knighthood.

A total of 75 Sunderland Mark Is were built – around 30 by Short's factories in Rochester, England, 15 by Blackburn at Dumbarton, and around 30 by factories in Belfast in Northern Ireland. The Irish did not like the British and equally supported the Germans. This meant that up to 40% of the Sunderland Mark I were up for sabotage and it only takes one sabotage to make history.

Short knew this and vetted all the Irish workers ensuring they were all Protestant, British loyalists and loyal members of the Lodge. It was a well-known Protestant boast that "It was harder for a Cattle Dog [Catholic] to get a job at Shorts than it was for a camel to squeeze its way through the eye of a needle."

treasurer@platinumparty.org

After 18 months of pro-German/anti-British kills and with the loss of many Sunderlands, the new barely-improved Mark III was fitted with ASV Mark III centimetric band antennas.

Production had moved to the Sunderland Mark II for a short period (August–December 1941). The Mark II featured Pegasus XVIII engines with two-speed superchargers providing 794 kW each and a high turnover of engines. This was an improvement on the Pegasus XXII engines of 5% and a reduction in power on the September 1939 Bristol Hercules engines of 30% – providing a new version that was underpowered from 2 years prior. The near useless .303 rounds were maintained, but with twice the ammunition capacity – 4000 rounds. 43 Sunderland Mark IIs were built (5 by Blackburn at Dumbarton, 15 miles downstream from Glasgow in Scotland).

In December 1941 production moved to the Sunderland Mark III with improved seaworthiness – less water inside and a new hull step that allowed the plane to come unstuck from the water in a smoother curve as opposed to an abrupt separation. Happy with this, a total of 461 were built; 170 by Blackburn (Scotland) and the remaining 291 by the Short Brothers in Rochester (England), Belfast (Northern Ireland) and a new plant at Lake Windemere in the Lake District (north of Manchester).

A Mark I Sunderland in war colours belonging to No. 210 Squadron. The Pegasus engines were massively underpowered and the engines would fail on a regular basis, sometimes three on one trip. Ocassionally the crew had to run up and down inside the cabin space to try and break the suction from the water. The Mark I could take off on one engine but it took up to 10 miles to leave the water. This Mark I Sunderland had side blister guns prior to the dorsal turrret.

The Sunderland Mark III had a maximum speed of 340 kmph, a range of 4800 km, an empty weight of 14,970 kg and a maximum load weight of 26,130 kg meaning it could carry 11,160 kg. It was 26 metres long, 9.8 metres high, had a wingspan of 34.4 metres and a service ceiling of 4575 metres (15,000 feet).

This was supposed to be an improvement on the Sunderland s.23 which first flew five years earlier. It wasn't. It was still a flying turtle.

After more than five years of British improvements the maximum speed had increased by 10 mph, the length had decreased by 1 metre, the wingspan had decreased by 0.3 metres, the empty weight had increased by 4070 kg and the range was the same as the G-Class built in September 1939. The only improvement after five years was that it could carry 3600 kg more, but it still had a laughably small range.

The Sunderlands stemmed from a competition for long-range aircraft and they struggled to make the distance, only doing so with additional fuel tanks. With these designs and self-sabotage in mind, designer Arthur Gouge (1890–1962) was knighted and promoted to President of the Royal Aeronautical Society. Neither now exist.

Some of the Sunderland's were only used for search rescue and on 21 September 1939 two Sunderlands rescued 34 crew off the torpedoed merchantman Kensington Court in the North Sea. All Sunderlands were available to be fitted with a bright Leigh searchlight to make night rescue possible. These Leigh searchlights were fitted to very few Sunderlands thus ensuring any British shot down in the afternoon had a maximum chance of drowning. The Leigh searchlights were not rare as both New Zealand Sunderands had them. It was just that they weren't fitted to the British flying boats.

Propaganda was high and all records of kills were well kept. A Royal Australian Air Force Sunderland (RAAF) managed its first kill, a U-boat on 17 July 1940, after which the new early warning-to-the-enemy ASV Mark II radar was installed. This sabotaged every Sunderland opportunity from October 1941 to early 1943.

On 3 April 1940, a Sunderland operating off Norway was attacked by six German Ju88 fighters (exactly a month after the CABOT and CARIBOU incidents). The Sunderland shot one Junkers down, damaged another and drove off the rest. The British then said the Germans named their Sunderland the "Fliegende Stachelsweine" (Flying Porcupine) referring to its abundance of small short range fire and lack of big firepower (cannons). The Sunderlands were well built and could take many hits, but it was better named the 'Flying Turtle', or 'Show Pony'. It was only luck if a Sunderland downed a plane and only luck if it returned home – 93 % of them didn't.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

On 2 June 1943 an RAAF Sunderland Mark III did battle with eight Ju88 long-range fighters. There were nine Australians on board and only two British. They were under the command of Australian Lieutenant Colin Walker, so they had a better chance.

The Sunderland was searching for the remains of the actor Leslie Howard whom they were told had crashed in the Bay of Biscay the day before (1 June 1943), but Leslie Howard was covering for his homosexuality by doubling for Winston Churchill and was shot down over the English Channel after his 'location, departure time and direction' were leaked to the Germans through known double agents.

Eight Ju88s were spotted so the Sunderland immediately dropped all its depth charges (making it useless against German submarines and U-boats) went to full revs (which all the earlier models had to fly at normally) and did corkscrew evasive manoeuvres. One engine got knocked out. On the fighters' third pass, the top turret gunner managed to shoot one Ju88 down and on the fourth pass a second was shot down.

On the fifth pass most of the crew were hit and one was mortally wounded. Only two Ju88s made it back to base. The others were nicked and faltered. The Sunderland Mark III crew threw everything overboard and nursed the flying boat back to the Cornish coast, beached it in the surf, waded to shore, then watched the waves break it up.

Lieutenant Colin Walker got a DSO and a ground job, sick of the Flying Turtle. The surviving nine crew went up in another Sunderland and were shot down by six Ju88 two months later. There were no survivors.

What makes this tale all the more interesting is that there were no Sunderlands listed as downed in August 1943. The closest was the CAMILLA which crashed at Port Moresby on 22 April 1943, followed by the CLIFTON at Sydney on 18 November 1944.

Throughout the entire six year war 749 Sunderlands[27] managed to destroy 28 U-boats and assist in sinking 7 more. To say that they were a reconnaissance aircraft and not a defensive or attack aircraft is a cop out. This was the worst ratio of any aircraft in the history of WWII.[28] By the end of the war less than 50 Sunderlands in service had survived.

---

[27] Some say approximately 600 Sunderlands.

The circumstances of the demise of most Sunderlands were not listed as flying boats were a matter of public pride. Sunderlands were lost leaders.

In early 1943 the new centimetric radar completely baffled the German's Metox radar at first, which meant the British Sunderlands could see German surface vessels before the Germans could shoot them down.

The Germans reacted by increasing the size and range of their firepower to two 37 mm and eight 20 mm flak guns. This was far bigger than the British 7.7 mm guns and Sunderlands that were hit then tried to crash into the German submarines, but only one Sunderland managed it. With no improvements coming from the government, the crew adapted their own Sunderlands with 12.7 mm (0.5 calibre) machine guns.

This was officially frowned upon and was usually resorted to only by Colonial Trash and Machine Gun Thieves (the CT & MGT). Quite often they doubled for each other and swapped places at midnight. It was quite common in the early part of the war to see Italian 20 mm Breda Machine Guns fitted to British aircraft under Colonial control. The Greeks and the French preferred German weaponry.

A Maori Warrant Officer received over thirty warnings that his mounting German machine guns on a Bren Gun carrier was illegal and action would soon be taken against him. As a good Maori he wrote back saying, "As I'm planning to be killed soon, I won't be taking this seriously". He was eventually sent home. This was simpler and less painful than shooting himself in the leg.

The Sunderland Mark IV was then developed with more powerful Hercules XVII 1253 kW engines (a 66% improvement), seven 12.7 mm machine guns and a twin 20 mm cannon. Two prototypes were made and 30 production models were ordered with Hercules 1720 Hp XIX engines (1283 kW, a 70% improvement). These Sunderlands were so different and so vastly improved they were redesignated the s.45 Seaford.

---

[28] There were minor exceptions, mainly British.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

The s.45 Seaford was finally an effective and far superior flying weapon, equal to the improved German Junkers Ju52/3m g10e. Intended for the Pacific, it did not see any combat and was sabotaged by production too late to see any action, creating yet another period of self-sabotaged British development. Even the prototypes were not used in action. The first Sunderland Mark IV/s.45 Seaford's flew in April 1945, just weeks before WWII ended, so it was too little too late.

The s.23 Sunderland/s.25 Sandringham engines suffered from overheating. This caused them and their successors' engines to be replaced more than any other plane's engine, and this was on a very regular basis. The Sunderland V developed out of crew concerns for the engines which had to be run on full combat power at all times.

Australian crews were not self-saboteurs and refused to love things that didn't work to capacity, so they demanded the Pegasus engines be replaced with Pratt & Whitney R-1830-90B Twin Wasp engines. These 14-cylinder engines provided 895 kW each, were an improvement on the high-maintenance Pegasus XVIII supercharged 794 kW engines by 12% and the 753 kW Pegasus XXII engines by 18%. The main advantage of the American engines was vastly reduced maintenance and the ability to fly when two engines were down on the same wing.

If two Pegasus engines on a Sunderland got hit, it steadily lost altitude and crashed dead in the water, or very dead on land.

To produce the Sunderland Mark V, two Sunderland Mark IIIs were taken off the production line in early 1944 and fitted with four American Pratt & Whitney engines. The plane could now maintain altitude with two engines down on one wing and could cruise without the engines running in combat mode, and the range was the same. This was the first development of the Sunderland that was not self-sabotage, but it was also too little too late.

The first non-sabotaged Sunderland made it to operation in February 1945, two months before the end of the war, but were still fitted with near useless .303 machine guns and the new centimetric AV Mark VIC radar which had been used on the Mark IIIs for some time. The 12.7 mm guns and 20 mm cannon on the Mark IV were dropped for no apparent reason other than the British sabotage of Australian crews.

155 Sunderland Mark Vs were built and 33 Mark IIIs were converted (which meant changing the British engines to American). The last Mark V was delivered in June 1946 with a total production of 749 Sunderlands since their inception.

In 1940 the British Air Ministry requested another four-engined flying boat, this time for long-range reconnaissance with heavy defensive armament and an offensive war load of 1815 kg. The first prototype was flown on 14 December 1944 with dummy nose and tail turrets and no guns. The Shetland was substantially bigger, had a greenhouse cockpit for better vision and twice the takeoff payload. It was powered by four Bristol Centaurus XI 18-cylinder radial 1865 kW engines and 4-bladed propellers. Its range 7100 km, speed 423 kmph and service ceiling 5180 metres (17,000 ft) made it far superior to the Sunderland, but it never made it into production and caught fire on its moorings on 28 January 1946.

A second passenger carrying prototype was made and flown on 17 September 1947, flown several more times and then scrapped, never to fly a commercial flight.

> All the Sunderlands, Shetlands and Princesses were sabotaged, either by using under-powered high-maintenance engines that if two failed the plane crashed, early warning-to-the-enemy ASV Mark II radar, using .303 machine guns, not using or removing 20 mm cannon, by the timing of the improved models, and by delayed production.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March

To increase the sabotage, six Sunderland Mark IIIs were stripped down and used as mail carriers by the BOAC (British Overseas Airways Corporation) and another 29 were refitted as mail carriers and passenger liners carrying (wait for it) 24 passengers. Another form of sabotage, this removed 35 Sunderland Mark IIIs from wartime service.

> This was such a shameful period in British aviation history that it was covered up by the most impractical of last resorts – 'love'. In war, love is as useless as tits on a bull. It is the equivalent of expecting a sexually bent Air Commodore, Inspector-General of RAF Welfare, or Commander of the Air Defence of Scotland to act in the best interests of their country.

AOTEAROA
ZK-AMA

CUMBERLAND/AWARUA/AOTEAROA (G-AFDA/ZK-AMC/ZK-AMA).

According to Shorts this Sunderland was delivered on 25 May 1939. Other official records show it arrived in August 1939. The newspapers note its first flight was Auckland to Sydney on 1 May 1940. Pictured is the return maiden voyage over Auckland on 2 May 1940.

ZK-AMA AOTEAROA was replaced in 1947 and then broken up. The replacement was a complete failure and was replaced again in 1950 with the Mark IV variant specifically built for TEAL (Tasman Empire Airways Limited) with a steeper inset hull. The Mark IV/Solent final service was on 14 September 1960. It was then stored at Hobsonville, officially until May 1966 and then onto the Auckland Museum of Transport and Technology.

KIWIs recognise there was a flying boat, but not that there were three different types. They also note Sunderlands still skimming Wellington waters in 1969.

Post War Refitting

After WWII, a number of Mark IIIs were refitted as Sandringham Mark I and a number of Mark V were refitted as Sandringham Mark II.

In 1946 the second production of Sunderland Mark V/Seafords were loaned to BOAC for evaluation as a civil airliner and 12 were converted into Solent Mark 2. Most of the early RAF Mark V were rebuilt as Solent Mark 3s. These were then sold to the civilian public as Solents and not Sunderlands. A Solent is a demilitarised Sunderland with the front and rear gun turrets removed and the nose and tail reshaped.

Sunderlands continued to be used by the RAF after the war in 1948, landing on Hitler's ill-famed Lake Havel. They then resupplied the British Greenland expedition (1951–54) and were then phased out.

In 1951, 19 Sunderlands were recondition in Belfast for Aeronavale (French naval air arm) and 16 were reconditioned in England for the RNZAF (Royal New Zealand Air Force). France used theirs until 1960 and New Zealand until the early 60s.

The New Zealand flying boat was actually launched in Belfast (not England) by Queen Elizabeth II in 1949 (not 1950) which helped to sell it to New Zealand as a new Solent with no mention, ever, that it was a converted Sunderland with altered nose and tail.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

> The Sunderland was used until 1970, not the early 60s and always drew a crowd of Kiwis – Keen Interest Without Intelligence.

But what's worse is that this was done three times and each series of flying boat sold to New Zealand was sabotaged. The first two Sunderlands had the same two successive names but in reverse order (AO-TEA-ROA/AWARUA/AOTEAROA). These were both replaced twice and the new planes retained the same name and serial number so when the civilian and military talk about a Canpous, Sunderland, Solent, Empire class or C class and how to differentiate between the planes, it was all wrong. One flying boat could be all of these things. This ruse was backed up by the RNZAF who still teach-to-confuse onto all matters Sunderland and Solent. The RNZAF do not even complain that one of their planes never arrived.

> Getting ripped off by the British was akin to getting sodomised by the British, so for the RNZAF, Mum's the word.

More Colonial Confusion

In 1938 Union Airways placed an order for the three Empire class flying boats to be delivered to New Zealand. "Certificates for work carried out were presented by Short Bros. to Imperial Airways Limited, to be honoured within seven days. The final certificate, when the aircraft was handed over at delivery, was due for payment within 14 days."[29] Often this delivery took place months later, or not at all.

Twelve days prior to WWII Britain delivered two of the three planes to New Zealand which arrived four months after the official April delivery date on 28 August 1939. These were s.30 Sunderlands romantically referred to as Empire class and operated until 1947. The third boat never arrived, but New Zealand still made all the progress payments. Three years after the official delivery date this third Sunderland was destroyed at Bathurst off West Africa on 14/15 September 1942 while still under British command.

"Four larger 30-seat Short s.25 Sandringham class flying boats replaced the two smaller Empire Class craft in 1946, but these proved unreliable through overheating engines and were replaced by s.45 Solent flying boats."[30]

> The s.25 Sandringham suffered from overheating engines, but New Zealand stuck with them from 1947–50. The s.23 Sunderland/Empire boat was the same was the s.25 but with military applications. When these were removed the s.23 and s.25 were the same. The Sunderland Mark IV, s.45 Seaford and Solent were also the same plane. Their difference was in the romantic attachment placed on them.

Solent Mark IV flying boat ZK-RMA ARANUI was built by Short Brothers and Harland Ltd in Belfast and delivered to TEAL on 30 November 1949. It was the last of four Solents to be built. Its inaugural flight was from Wellington to Sydney 5/6 October 1950, 11 months after it was officially delivered. The last officially recorded flight was Cook Islands – Samoa – Fiji – Auckland on 15 September 1960, but it was still flying in 1969 between RNZAF bases in New Zealand and Fiji.

When Queen Elizabeth II and Prince Philip boarded the Sunderland Mark IV/s.45 Seaford/Solent Mark IV flying boat in New

[29] Brian Cassidy, *Flying Empires*, p. 53.

[30] *Otago Daily Times*, 30 April 1990.

Zealand in 1953, they walked 7 metres apart with another standing between them. (Wing Commander George Gudsell in full fruit salad.) Their sexual relationship was already over. They entered into a portside door 0.6 metres above the tide, the same level as the dock. One could step straight from the dock into the cabin door and down to the lower level. Any ramp was just for tidal convenience. The portside door sill was at the same level as the lower level window sills.

> Eleven years earlier her uncle had walked in the portside door and out the starboard side door. This is how history is made for the oligarchy and confused for the masses.

Sabotage by Salvage

The British have a way of writing history that puts them in gentlemanly stead and none of the crashed Sunderlands were attributed to have any salvaged parts. The G-AFRB was retained as unfinished and never flown because almost all of the salvaged parts were attributed to it, yet it always remained 75% complete. Salvage was expensive. Little of the salvaged planes was ever put to use and crashes were never blamed on salvaged parts.

Parts of the crashed CYGNUS (December 1937) were used in the G-ARFB that never flew. The mainplanes were stored in the open and when High Duty Alloys came to test spar boom extrusions, they were under strength and had to be scrapped. The tail unit, engine nacelles and rear section of the hull were most likely reused, but this plane never flew.[31]

treasurer@platinumparty.org

The CAPELLA was salvaged almost entirely and shipped back to Rochester. The wing floats, some of the control surfaces and the anchor were re-used. Salvage and recovery cost £2100, 20% of the price of new Sunderland, so salvaging was “scrapped”, but in reality continued. The date of the CAPELLA crash is given as both 12 March 1938 and 12 March 1939.

When the CHALLENGER was salvaged after only three days immersion in the sea, a knife could be pushed through the magnesium alloy reduction gear casing of the engines. The alloys were that bad. Regardless, the airscrews, with their bent blades, mainplanes, tail unit and engines were salvaged in May 1939.

---

[31] Brian Cassidy, *Flying Empires*, p. 57.

The CENTURION crashed on the Hoogly river at Calcutta on 1 May 1939 (or 12 June 1939). The aft end of the hull, the tail planes, the fin and rudder, three engines and airscrews and the fuel and oil tanks were salvaged.

The CLYDE flipped over in a hurricane and four engines and airscrews, oil tanks, the two elevators, one aileron, the port wing float and the radio equipment were salvaged. The Relunit fuel tank valves were reconditioned and officially used in the tanks of the G-AFRB that never flew.

The engines of CONNEMARA were brought up from the bottom of Southampton Water and stripped down.

Many of the flying boats were ordered as replacements for the ones that had crashed. Many crashed, so there were many orders. Obviously there was collusion with the insurance companies, so Lloyds was probably involved and salvage was probably demanded. The last order on 7 June 1939 was for three s.33 hybrid aircraft, the CLIFTON, CLEOPATRA and G-AFRB (Construction No. S1025–S1027). Work on the 43rd boat was stopped when it was about 75% complete and it became the blaming ground for all salvaged parts. The G-AFRB was never flown and never attempted to fly.

Sabotage of Sunderlands was prolific as the Queen’s world expert Brian Cassidy states in *Flying Empires*:

> “Why was CAPRICORNUS descending in a snow storm with the engines throttled back, just before it struck the ground? How many of the Horseshoe route ‘boats were re-engined with Pegasus XXII engines? Some of the Horseshoe route ‘boats had their fuel tankage increased from 650 gals. to 1010 gals. What effect did this have on the mainplane spars? Indeed, how many spar designs were there? There is reference in the Type Record of a Mark II. Why was the hull of the forty-third ‘boat kept in its crate in the Barge Yard until as late as 1943? How did CORSAIR get so far off course before setting down on the River Dangu? And what really happened to CIRCE and CLARE, both of whom disappeared over the water with their passengers and crews? Traces of CLARE were found but nothing was heard or seen of CIRCE.”[32]

Nothing was heard of the CARIBOU either.

---

[32] Brian Cassidy, *Flying Empires*, *Short ‘C’ class Empire flying boats*, Preface.

The CAMERONIAN over Windsor Castle in 1938.

PAN AMERICAN

The rare starboard side passenger door as shown in *Raiders of the Lost Ark* (1981). The real *China Clipper* crashed in 1945 and none of the American Pan Am Flying boats survived past 1946.

This *Raiders* flying boat was British built and found in a museum in San Francisco with one engine still working. The Pan American logo was added and the plane was superimposed at Treasure Island Naval Base by Industrial Light and Magic.

The *Raiders* flying boat is the surviving CARIBOU – the back up for the CABOT. Some things are best hidden in plain sight and the homosexual occult is full of such jokes.

Filming for *Raiders of the Lost Ark* began in the summer of 1980. This points to the Duke of Kent dying before this date, otherwise the CARIBOU would not have been used.

The Duke of Kent's lover, the Duke of Hamilton flew to the west coast of America in 1946 for no formal or declared reason. Perhaps it was to offload the CARIBOU. His landing was noteable in that one landing wheel failed to open and he walked away unharmed.

Dunkirk

Operation DYNAMO

19 May–4 June 1940

Early on in the war, it was evident that Goering and Hitler were both British agents, although they may not have known each other were. Doentiz, Raeder, Milch, Canaris and Oster were also British agents, as was Rosenbaud who was codenamed 'The Griffen'. Most of them were accessed after WWI when they were POWs in British hands. Canaris had many heart-to-hearts with British Interrogating Officers as did Doenitz, who was under psychiatric care in Manchester (October 1918–July 1919).

Rosenbaud was an Austrian Army Officer captured by the British. He was turned around by a lowly British Regimental I.O. in Italy at the end of WWI. Rosenbaud went on to report to British Control Officers right through the 20s, 30s and 40s and was ultimately taken over by the Americans. At the end of WWII Rosenbaud was awarded the American Medal of Freedom, while his ex-wife became the chief of the Stasi. Whoever said spying wasn't in the family.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

A huge number of other German officers would rewrite reports, fudge documents and not work in Germany's interests. Defeatism was rampant right through the entire German Armed Forces and played a part in nearly all battlefield loses, including Dunkirk. The loss of the four German battleships is a case in point.

Every loss was accompanied by a massive breach of standing orders and procedures. In virtually none of these cases was the offending officer prosecuted and someone else always became the scapegoat. This was controlled warfare on an enormous scale that breached both sides to the point of musical chairs.

British Captain Liddel Hart (Ret.) was renowned as a newspaper columnist and military strategist for the press. He had written several books on armoured tactics which the German General Guderian praised as giving him all his ideas. Liddel Hart ran around with a suitcase containing groceries and pad paper and was well-known by German officers in every Allied holding camp as a virtual shop steward for German Generals. He was on very friendly terms with most of them and practised the time-honoured ritual of feeding them from his picnic basket disguised as a suitcase. Then he got down to the details. Hart had no secretary and was not worried by keeping notes as the conversations were taped.

At all times Hart denied anything other than academic interest. He wrote letters for German Generals complaining about their treatment, their wife's treatment and even the schoolwork of their children. He got American camps to hand over their German Generals and accomplished tasks with such ease, that he was very obviously connected to the higher rungs of SIS and Army Intelligence.

When denied favours, he would say, "Do you mind if we just ring George or Trevor [his handlers back in Britain] and I'm sure everything will be all right" . . . and it always was. Moments later all obstructions were cleared and Captain Liddel Hart (Ret.) could do whatever pleased him or the German General he was either feeding, supporting, interviewing, or influencing.

Spymaster: "British Intelligence was a monumental fuck up. There were so many different outfits doing exactly the same thing that nobody could figure out what they did, what was going on, or what the outcome was supposed to be. Working with them were the Czechs, the Poles, the Greeks and the Free-French, the Danes, Norwegians and even the Free-Finns, so it was an orgy of malconstructed misnomers and faux pas of intelligence gathering. As such, British Intelligence was the Keystone Cops of misconstruction and indeed the Keystone Cops were films based around intelligence gathering.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

From 15 to 22 May 1940 the Germans made their famous sickle-stroke move (Sichelschitt) sweeping southwards into France and then northwards towards Dunkirk and Calais. The French and British who had advanced into Belgium found themselves separated by the German Panzer tank corridor.

On 19 May 1940 British Commander Viscount Gort considered withdrawing the British Expeditionary Force (BEF) to the coast for escape by sea, but the British government refused. The same day Admiral Bertram Ramsay was ordered to prepare for an evacuation. The person who gave this order is left out of the history books. "On 19 May, had ordered Admiral Bertram Ramsay to prepare for an evacuation [sic]."[1]

---

[1] *WWII*, p. 15.

Mistakes and omissions in history are the strongest indication of where the real history lies.

By 22 May 1940 the French and British were threatened with encirclement. All the Channel ports were taken by the Germans except for Dunkirk and all the Allied hands withdrew to Dunkirk in hope of a sea rescue. British Commander Viscount Gort realised he was running short of supplies and ammunition and ordered the British to fall back towards the coast. The Allies set up their final line of defence at Canal d'Aire outside Dunkirk.

On 24 May 1940 the Germans broke through this final line of defence and 340,000 British and Allies were trapped. Two-thirds of them were British and their most experienced troops. Another 220,000 Allied troops were trapped at Cherbourg, Saint-Malo, Brest and Saint-Nazaire. In three weeks the German army had taken more than one million Allied prisoners and trapped 560,000 British and Allied troops, while sustaining only 60,000 German casualties.

Goering promised Hitler he could finish off the British and Allies at Dunkirk with the Luftwaffe alone. But Hitler ordered the German troops to stop advancing and to stop attacking.

Germany could have been 1.5 million men ahead in the first ten months of the war but they decided to let 560,000 British and Allied men escape to fight again.

History notes that Hitler's reasons for this are unclear.

Under Operation DYNAMO the British and Allies escaped by sea from 26 May to 4 June 1940 on 848 British, French and Belgium craft. Destroyers, private motor cruisers and everything in between picked up 560,000 men off Dunkirk's ten-mile stretch of beach during eight days of disorganised and panicked evacuation. Even British Naval crews mutinied because it was too dangerous to go.

The Germans had every chance to kill the British and Allies and they did strafe the beaches, but not as much as they could have. All the Germans had to do to increase the body count was to use their usual air-dropped contact-fused or pressure-switched airburst munitions which were absolutely lethal to unprotected men on the ground, but the Germans even failed to do this in great numbers.

The only excuse that this was not done in abundance was that the Germans had run out of the correct munitions and resorted to using delayed action devices that went 3–4 metres into the sand. Many of the German warheads were purposefully changed from contact and airburst explosives to delayed-action devices before the attack. This resulted in spectacular vertical explosions. They were good for the cameras but caused minimal damage.

The history books say that the Luftwaffe held back because of the RAF. At this point in time the operating RAF had very small numbers, but it was their first use of Spitfires and the Germans were expecting a cakewalk.

The Spitfires were flown aggressively, mainly by Colonials, each carrying eight machine guns. German air-gunners weren't expecting Spitfires to pop up out of nowhere and shred them. The German Me109 and Me110 crews were all huddled together in the front cockpit and they had to decide between self-defence or strafing and bombing the beach. As a result, the few Colonial-flown Spitfires managed to draw the larger number of Messerschmitts away from the escaping Allies, but even this was still not enough to engineer the relatively peaceful outcome.

Hitler and Goering's Luftwaffe had the opportunity for eight days of near unobstructed bombing and total annihilation but they let the opportunity go. Of the 41 destroyers only 6 were sunk. Of the 807 other craft, only 19 were damaged.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

The British press had instructions that discouraged them from photographing dead bodies at Dunkirk, soldiers with torn and missing clothing, and soldiers who had stripped their own clothing to swim out to the Allied rescue craft.

The British authorities are renown for making out they did everything to a plan after the war was over. Their numbers of dead men, rescued men, rescue craft and aircraft should be considered (at least in part) one of the casualties of war. When German spies inspected the British hospitals afterwards, many of those on the stretchers were already dead and many of these were nearly dead by the time they arrived at Dunkirk. It is presumed the British counted these as injured.

As soon as Viscount Gort was gone Hitler resumed his attack on the remaining Belgian Army (27 May 1940). The British did not evacuate the Belgians with them and they were left to face the German army and Luftwaffe alone. The Belgians were left for slaughter, surrender and annihilation. King Leopold of Belgium saw this and surrendered unconditionally the same day (27 May 1940).

This left eight days of attack opportunity on Operation DYNAMO with no land resistance, little or no sea resistance, and a small contingent of RAF aircraft 'having a go'.

As an extra present to the Germans, the British and Allies left all their equipment behind, which aided the German occupation of the low countries throughout the war.

Hitler and Goering had given the British a 24-hour window, which was extended to an eight-day window and 560,000 Allied troops were set free with only minor harassment.

By this time the French had lost 45% of their divisions and to all intents and purposes the Battle of France was lost 12 days later on 9 June 1940.

The Italians finally decided to side with the Germans in 'The Pact of Steel' on 22 May 1940, the same day the Germans encircled the French and British. Bu that time the Germans had taken all the Channel ports except Dunkirk.

The Italians weren't out to win the war, but they wanted to be on the winning side. Many Italians couldn't give a rat's arse about the war, hence the sensible *Italian Book of War Heroes* being the shortest book in the world – 'sensible' because the heroes died and the cowards survived.

When the Italians finally got around to attacking the French frontier on 20 June 1940, they made little progress and Hitler soon realised they would be of no strategic importance. The French and Italians swapped recipes at their WWII frontier and cooked their way through the war, boasting as to who were the greater lovers.

The French and Italians differ from the English and Germans in that they are romantic and enjoy living. The English and Germans, on the other hand, seem to enjoy dying. To them, death justifies the hero. To the French and Italians, making love justifies the hero.

WWII could not have been set up better. Germany had Belgium, France and much of Eastern and Northern Europe. The British had been stung and were now willing to fight, but they lacked the military might.

“Controversy still rages about why Hitler stayed his hand and allowed the British Army to get away. It may have been one of the several key mistakes he made during the Second World War, though some believe that Hitler still wanted to make peace with Britain and thought that this might be more easily achieved if the British Army was not forced into a humiliating surrender.

“Although the action at Dunkirk was a retreat, it was hailed as a victory by the British. In the long run, it proved decisive. The bulk of Britain’s most experienced troops had been saved.”[2]

The war could now continue in force. Without this British-influenced move by Hitler, England would be speaking German today, America would have never got into the war and WWII would have been between Germany and Russia with Britain watching handcuffed, rather than with a ruling pen.

Dunkirk’s Operation DYNAMO is the most blatant example of organised war extension and double agent activity the world has ever seen. It screams so loud, it gives historians a headache and makes the Freemasons blush and run for cover.

---

[2] *WWII*, p. 16.

James Bond

Enter the cult figure – James Bond (18), morphic resonances' main man of the twentieth century. All hail Bond, for through him, we shall bond. His name is laced with British and European history: James, Jesus' brother, second born in AD1 (or AD0 for the pedantic), conceived in the first week of December 1BC, and born to set the clocks on the 15 September AD0, having the highest qualities of integrity and investigative intuition, the Joseph of Aramathea, the Prince of Aramathea, deposed King David and leader of the exiled Davidic teachings, head Druid, tin trader, the original creator of Westminster Law and deposer of Roman Law, Jesus Justice, magic-mushroom eater who sought health and life extension through mineral-rich cunnilingus with virgins of royal lineage, the ladies' man, the holder of secrets, the true spiritual teacher, the second son of Joseph and Mary, the former prince and priestess of the Davidic and Zadoc lines; James, the original acknowledged parent of the monarchies of Europe, the man who brought culture to babarian Britain – yeah that guy, James, for through him we shall all bond; either that or Ian Fleming actually did pick up the classic ornithological book on his first trip to the Caribbean in November 1944, *Field Guide to Birds of the West Indies*, written by one James Bond.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

On 14 October 1963, Ian Fleming, author of the James Bond books and inspiration of the James Bond movies, wrote to John Ainsworth-Davis: "Without any doubt, you and your operation were my secret inspiration for all that followed; a secret that I have never revealed to anyone else."[1]

John Ainsworth-Davis was also known as Lieutenant-Commander C. J. J. Creighton RN, Christopher John James Creighton, Chris Creighton, Christopher Ainsworth-Davis, Christopher Robin, C.R., with a nom de guerre of 'Leading Seaman John Davis'.

He was born on 13 March 1924, is 6' 2½", did his first mission at the age of 15½ in 1940 and became Lieutenant-Commander at just 21 years of age. He was the second leader of Operation JAMES BOND in April/May of 1945 into Berlin. He wrote this up in his 1996 book,

---

[1] *OPJB*, p. 229.

OPJB under his given name – Chris Creighton. He was undoubtedly the inspiration for the James Bond series.

His father, John Ainsworth-Davis, went to school at Christ's College with Lord Louis Mountbatten, Prince Henry and Bertie, the future King George VI. John Ainsworth-Davis was a gold-medal winner at the 1920 Antwerp Olympics for the 4 x 400 relay[2] and later became a doctor specialising as a genito-urinary surgeon. He raised Chris Creighton at 69 Harley Street, London until he was eight years old. Harley Street was a spies paradise.

One of his 'uncles' was Joachim (von) Ribbentrop, the German 'Champagne General', a close friend of his father. He took the young James Bond (5) to rugby matches including the All Blacks/Lions game at Twickenham in January 1930. By 1936, this same man was the Nazi Ambassador to London who had sex with Wallis Simpson once a week and passed the British and French secrets on to Hitler.

Ribbentrop was later condemned at Nuremberg to die by hanging. His sentence and execution confirmed he had too many MI-6 connections. If his story got out the entire view of WWII would have been more like this one sixty years earlier.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

When he was eight, Chris Creighton's parents separated and he moved in with his mother onto Winston Churchill's estate. There, Winston Churchill (1874–1965), Lord Louis Mountbatten (1900–79) and Major Desmond Morton (1891–1971) took the young Christopher Creighton under their wing – as one of their own.[3]

With their paternal guidance, he entered the Royal Navy College at Dartmouth (close to Tavistock) in September 1939, aged 15½. During his training the young Chris Creighton was given German POWs whose records had been fabricated with atrocities and was encouraged to kill them. He was given a licence to kill but there wasn't a tuxedo in sight. Almost immediately he went on his first mission and was issued with a silent single-shot Wellrod pistol. His cover was often as a boy pushing a bicycle and most German officers didn't give him a second look.

---

[2] He ran with Cecil Griffiths, Robert Lindsay and Guy Butler in a time of 3:22.2. This is an av. 400m of 50.55 sec. with the world record set in 1912 (av. of 49.15 sec). Speed was something John Ainsworth-Davis II/Chris Creighton inherited.

[3] During his wilderness years (1929–39) Winston Churchill also took on the Paladin, who was then 12–13 years old.

Ian Fleming (1908–64) had been the *victor ludorum* (champion athlete) at Eton for two years, went to the Royal Military College at Sandhurst, became an agent, worked with Reuters in Moscow (1929–33), learnt German in Austria and further studied languages at Munich and Geneva Universities (1933–39) and was a banker and stockbroker as cover.

Ian Fleming had the luck of the Irish. Part of his brief was intelligence gathering from POW camps and one of these was at Grizedale Hall in the Lake District which he used to visit from London in his open-tourer Bentley. Early in 1941, using leather laundry hamper straps, the German POW, Dieter von Hassel, strapped himself underneath the Bentley. Fleming drove off, got lost on a country road (most road signs were taken down during the war) and got stuck in a wide stream.

As Fleming went for help the stream flooded, and the German officer, one of the Luftwaffe's greatest escape artists, drowned. Fleming knew nothing about it until he was towed out of the stream and back to Grizedale Hall by a woman on a horse.

Fleming was quite upset and said, "It's absolutely tragic to have killed a chap in such circumstances." The Guard Sergeant replied, "I wouldn't worry about that Sir. He's still dead."

The horsewoman had been hiding German prisoners of war (Leutnant Herbult Shultz and Leutnant Victor Molde) using them as concubines and farm help. The last escaper surrendered to police in 1949 not knowing that the war had ended or that Hitler had reportedly suicided. He was being used as a sex-slave long after everyone else had gone home. He was reportedly gutted by his own discovery that he had stayed on four years after the war. He wanted the horsewoman arrested but the police declined amid great mirth.

Mrs William Heelis was the tea lady at Grizedale Hall and she got more out of a German serviceman with a cup of tea than interrogators could with pincers (tongs used in torture). She illustrated and published books under the name Beatrix Potter.

The German officer in charge of the POW camp, Commander Otto Kruger, was in contact with Germany and ran the camp as an intelligence-gathering exercise and was very annoyed that the Luftwaffe officer had even tried to escape. Grizedale Hall was a *Hogan's Heroes* in reverse.[4]

---

[4] *A Cage of Eagles*.

Kruger's spectacular coup was offering to repair the roof of the Hall. This was undertaken by German labour and closely supervised by British Guards. A year after it was completed a young RAF pilot, who had got lost earlier that day, contacted the British Commanding Officer and thanked him for the directions painted on the roof of the RAF base. The roof was painted (**RAF →**) for the benefit of the Germans.

By 1943, Ian Fleming had distinguished himself in at least five top-secret operations and became Lieutenant-Commander Ian Fleming of the Royal Navy Intelligence Division. He was also the personal assistant to the Director of Naval Intelligence, Rear-Admiral John Godfrey.

Fleming was always ahead of the game and operated with such style and ease that he was referred to as 'the Chocolate Soldier'. He was a master spy with great connections. His father was Valentine Fleming who was an MP and close friend of Winston Churchill. Ian Fleming was the first 'James Bond', if only for a day, and he too took Christopher Creighton under his wing.

Major Desmond Morton created 'M' in 1932 as 'Special Secret intelligence operations' and was financed and protected by successive monarchs: King George V, King Edward VIII, and King George VI etc. M was directed from Morton's home in Crockham Hill, near Westerham in Kent, with the enthusiastic support of Winston Churchill, who lived below Desmond Morton's house in Kent, two miles south of Westerham, in the Vale of Chartwell.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

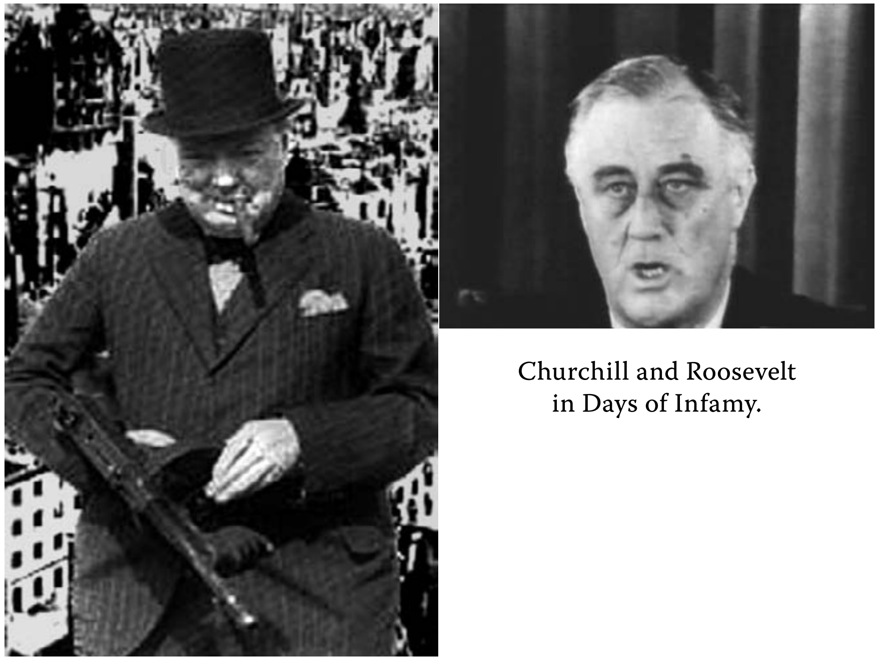
Churchill took all the credit for M and it was written up that Churchill, in his 'lost years' set up a private intelligence network in his home in 1929. However, Churchill was substantially Morton's public cover and confidant. M meant 'mother', and as art imitates life, 'M' is still the name of the governing agency both in the British Government and in the James Bond movies, as in "REPORT IMMEDIATELY HQ M".[5]

Major Desmond Morton, or Morton as he was known, was the Supreme Chief of the Special Secret intelligence operations (M) and his role was pitched above the Prime Minister and his secret circle. It was above MI-5 (Internal), MI-6 (External) and the military. It was the monarchy's special force.

M had free reign, not being controlled by any outside body other than the reigning monarch – and when it reigns, it pours. Rather than patriotism, 'M's role was to ensure that the larger events of WWII went according to plan. Such larger events were:

1. Conflict was to be prolonged until the profits were made and the power structures were in place for the next sixty years of social policy.
2. All peace negotiations were to be sabotaged.
3. America was to be drawn very publicly into WWII with America's full knowledge.
4. Britain was to control all the assets of Nazi pillage.
5. All double agents were to be returned to safety with their deaths faked.
6. Doppelgängers to be released as dead, living in other countries, or alive posthumously.
7. Any incriminating evidence against Britain or America was to be destroyed.

Three such incidents were *Pearl Harbor* in Hawaii, *Dieppe* in France, and *Operation James Bond* in Berlin. A study of these OPs gives us a clear understanding of 'Special Secret intelligence operations', the transfer of power, the pointlessness of battle, and the games secret societies play.



Churchill and Roosevelt
in Days of Infamy.

---

[5] *The Spy Who Loved Me*, 1977.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Pearl Harbor

1921–7 December 1941

Pearl Harbor took 16 years to plan and it was either a masterstroke or a complete cock-up. Either way, all sides knew about it at the time. One method of drawing an ally into war is to give the mutual enemy (Japan) enough information to attack the ally (America) without retribution, thus giving the country attacked (America) a clear mandate to join the war. Pearl Harbor was just such a mission and it occurred with full British and American Chief of Staff knowledge.

Britain started planning its next war in 1919 in order to utilise its existing military and to prevent them from getting restless and turning in on themselves and the nation. Britain planned a war with America and it was due to start in 1927. The conflict was based around ‘naval tonnage’, but was eventually settled with diplomacy and the *Washington Treaty.*

However, a plan to attack Pearl Harbor was commissioned by the British Admiralty and awarded to the consultant Hector C. Bywater, who came up with the *Bywater Plan* which involved dropping torpedoes from planes into Pearl Harbor. It was believed at the time that the harbour was too shallow at 12 metres, but Bywater correctly forecast that adapted torpedoes could be dropped safely and efficiently into the shallow harbour.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Hector C. Bywater (21 October 1884–17 August 1940) was an English and American journalist, author and spy who could hold a packed pub room in rapt attention when he told anecdotes. He wrote *Sea Power in the Pacific* (1921) and *The Great Pacific War* (1925) and knew more about the navies of the world than a roomful of admirals. He published numerous articles on Pacific strategy as the European naval correspondent for the *New York Herald*, the *Baltimore Sun* and the *New York Times.*

When Bywater wrote *Sea Power in the Pacific: A Study of the American-Japanese Naval Problem* (1921), it was an immediate sell-out among Japanese and American Navy General Staff who studied it line by line. The US Naval Institute’s *Proceedings* magazine called it “the most important recent estimate of the situation . . . in the Pacific”.

It was so 'considered' that it set a special 5:5:3 tonnage ratio between America, Britain and Japan on 15 December 1921 at the Washington Disarmament Treaty.

"What Bywater wrote powerfully influenced Admiral Isoroku Yamamoto, the architect of the Pearl Harbor attack . . . who served as a naval attaché in Washington in the late 1920s. At least once Bywater and Yamamoto met face to face and wiled away an evening discussing the prospects for peace and war over a bottle of Scotch."[1]

Hector C. Bywater was killed 16 months before Pearl Harbor at the age of 55. He was supposedly found in bed alone at his home in London, some time between 16 and 17 August 1940, and was declared the victim of acute alcoholism. The physicians didn't check for any other cause and he was immediately cremated. Modern investigation techniques and circumstantial evidence suggest he was murdered by poison.[2] The order came from the Japanese High Command and was administered with British complicity.

Churchill had already been involved in many assassinations and Hector C. Bywater had a very good chance of sabotaging Churchill's efforts to bring America into the war, all the more so if he were alive. The one man who knew all of Japan's plans for Pearl Harbor, and America's dedication to ignoring it, was killed in the build-up to Pearl Harbor.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

With Bywater dead, Yamamoto adapted the *Bywater Plan*, increasing the attack on the Philippines and British possessions and grafting them onto the original attack plan against Hawaii. The adapted British *Bywater Plan* became the plan for Japan's December 1941 attack on Pearl Harbor that brought America into WWII.

The *Lusitania*, Pearl Harbor and 9-11 all get protection under the umbrella of American self-sabotage – DENY, OBSCURE, COVER UP – 1915, 1941 and 2001 are all very questionable years for US patriotism.

Hardly had WWII started when President Roosevelt (Freemason) wrote to Britain's First Lord of the Admiralty, Winston Churchill (Freemason), suggesting they work together via a secret system of communication.

---

[1] William H. Honan, *Visions of Infamy*, p. xiii–p. 8.

[2] William H. Honan, chief cultural correspondent for the *New York Times*, sourced from Raymond L. Puffer, Air Force History Program, Los Angeles, Reed Business Information Inc.

President Roosevelt, 11 September 1939: "What I want you and the Prime Minister to know is that I shall at all times welcome it, if you will keep me in touch personally with anything you want me to know about. You can always send sealed letters through your pouch or my pouch."

Churchill responded enthusiastically: "I am half American and the natural person to work with you. It is evident that we see eye to eye. Were I to become Prime Minister of Britain we could control the world."[3] This happened eight months later.

In January 1941, the Japanese sent an amazingly generous offer to the Americans to retire from the Rome-Berlin-Tokyo Axis (Italian, German, Japanese alliance) in return for peace with the United States. President Roosevelt and Secretary of State Cordell Hull rejected it.[4] British and American joint-staff conferences were then held in Washington DC (January–March 1941) to arrange a plan for military collaboration called the ABC-1.

It was thought that Pearl Harbor was too shallow to launch torpedoes. The anchorage was only 12 metres deep and torpedoes dropped from planes sunk to 20 metres before beginning their run. But the Japanese tested torpedos with wooden fins at Kagoshima Bay and this gave them extra buoyancy. The strike rate reached 70% and the British knew of these successful torpedo tests.

The key to Pearl Harbor became the long-lance torpedo 21" warhead. It was quiet, fast, straight running, could out-distance everyone else's torpedoes by 2–3 times and the warhead always blew. It was far better than American or German torpedoes which were prone to misfire. American torpedoes failed as much as 90%, partly because crews were constantly on a hunt for alcohol and would drink the torpedo juice after they'd filtered it through bread.

On 27 March 1941, the Japanese spy Takeo Yoshikawa arrived in Honolulu and began studying the American fleet at Pearl Harbor.

Prior to Pearl Harbor, American ships were immune to attack, despite their cargo, or who they were delivering it to. During the spring and summer of 1941, in Europe and the Atlantic, Roosevelt did everything he could to provoke Germany and Italy into producing some "act of war" against an American ship. He even convoyed supplies and munitions to Britain and Russia illegally and with full advertisement, but neither Germany nor Italy would take the bait. They remembered the *Lusitania* well and weren't about to repeat that mistake.

---

[3] Harry Elmer Barnes, *Pearl Harbor After a Quarter of a Century*.

[4] Cordell Hull (1871–1955) received a one-year law degree in 1891 and was made a judge in 1903 (aged 31). After this, he was nicknamed 'Judge' by all and sundry. He served as Secretary of State from 1933–44 and then retired due to ill health.

"One of the [British] XX-Committee's first and most important double agents was a thirty-year-old Yugoslav businessman named Dusko Popov. [Ian Fleming described Dusko Popov as the perfect British Intelligence recruit]. A member of a well-to-do royalist family, Popov had been approached by the Abwehr at the outbreak of the war [he regularly had lunch with the chief of Paris Gestapo] with the suggestion that his family's political ambitions might be enhanced if he worked for Germany as a spy against the British. Popov agreed – and promptly informed the MI-6 representative in Belgrade of his Abwehr connections.

"He arrived in England on December 20, 1940, and made a 'most favourable impression' when closely questioned by the British secret intelligence services. [He was suave and sophisticated, enjoyed wine, women and song and could talk his way in and out of anything]. He was then passed on to the XX-Committee and rechristened 'Tricycle' [his German codename was 'Disco'], and he opened up secret communications with the Abwehr in Lisbon.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

"He established himself as a highly placed agent in England; and in the next several months he supplied the Abwehr with a great deal of information fabricated by the XX-Committee that beclouded all German estimates about British strength for the remainder of the war.

"Then in June 1941, the Abwehr, pleased with Disco's [Tricycle's] performance in Britain, instructed him to go to America on an espionage mission to investigate in detail, among other targets, the air, military and naval installations at Pearl Harbor, which the Japanese had asked the Abwehr to reconnoitre because of the difficulties that ethnic Japanese agents in Hawaii were encountering.

"Popov informed the XX-Committee of his assignment and, through the American Embassy, the XX-Committee informed the FBI . . . But [when] Popov arrived in the United States . . . on August 24, 1941, he encountered the full wrath of the director of the FBI, J. Edgar Hoover.

"Hoover did not want agents of any foreign power working in America. At their only meeting, he treated Popov with disgust, and declared . . . 'I can catch spies without your or anybody else's help.' He accused Popov of being 'Like all double agents. You're begging for information to sell to your German friends so that you can make a lot of money and be a playboy.'

"Popov, who had taken a woman friend to Florida for a holiday, would find himself threatened with prosecution under the Mann Act [the illegal transportation of women across a state line for the purposes of sexual intercourse], and agents of the Internal Revenue Service were also set on him.

"The British extricated him . . . with the IRS hot on his heels . . . and the Japanese attacked Pearl Harbor. Although the American government had some foreknowledge from other intelligence sources of the impending attack, notably from its naval cryptanalytical bureau in Room 1649 of the Navy Department on Constitution Avenue in Washington . . . The United States declared war upon the Axis powers, and for Churchill, America's entry into the conflict was the answer to a constant prayer."[5]

Although both British and American Chiefs of Staff knew about the planned attack on Pearl Harbor years beforehand, both wanted America to join the war and were waiting for an excuse. All they needed was a swing in public opinion. Before Pearl Harbor, 60% of Americans did not want to get into the war. After Pearl Harbor, 99% of Americans wanted to get into the war.

Spymaster: "When the US started advertising for pilots with multi-engine experience to fly Lockheed Hudsons, the Japanese became alarmed and started to cast around America to see what was on order in the American defence works. They uncovered a large contract to manufacture incendiary bombs, paid for by the British.

"The Japanese then checked the runways in North China and concluded that the Chinese were going to launch an attack against Japan from these new runways, with British and American backing. The Japanese concluded that the date of the attack was to be January 1942. From this they knew they had to attack Pearl Harbor beforehand, so they attacked in early December 1941."

America had advertised for pilots and built runways knowing that it would force the Japanese hand to attack before January 1942.

The wisdom from all sides was that making a surprise attack against Pearl Harbor some 6500 km away was virtually impossible. The only way this could be done was with complicity from all sides – so Japan was given complicity from all sides.

---

[5] *Bodyguard of Lies*, pp. 60–61.

What is even more shameful is that President Franklin D. Roosevelt could decipher the Japanese diplomatic code faster than the Japanese Embassy in Washington. Pearl Harbor was deliberate self-sabotage to draw America into the war.

On 17 November 1941 Joseph Grew, the US Ambassador to Japan, cabled the State Department stating that Japan had plans to attack Pearl Harbor, but his cable was ignored. This gave the US twenty days' warning.

On 26 November 1941, a fleet of six aircraft carriers commanded by the Japanese Vice-Admiral Chuichi Nagumo left Hitokapu Bay for Pearl Harbor under strict radio silence. Twelve days later the Japanese Navy were to launch their surprise attack on Pearl Harbor on 7 December 1941 (6 December Japanese time). The only surprise was to those patriots who had not been warned.

To achieve this end, M was used. The British contribution to the cover-up of events leading to the Pearl Harbor attack was called Operation SUBEND. Ian Fleming (33) was the naval control officer and Chris Creighton (17), with the nom de guerre 'Leading Seaman John Davis', was the sole boarding operative.

Espavo S020 - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Since Germany's invasion of Holland, the Dutch submarines in the Pacific were acting as a proxy for the British Royal Navy. They were doing tasks for the British and were under British control. The Dutch submarines were essentially a picket line watching for the Japanese battle fleet.

One of these Dutch submarines saw the Japanese battle fleet head towards Pearl Harbor and wired a storm warning to the British. The 17-year-old Chris Creighton was immediately flown to the Far East, plonked into a naval uniform and made a Brevet junior officer.[6] He boarded the Dutch submarine delivering explosives disguised as gifts and delaying devices for torpedo warheads. These blew up the Dutch submarine with all its crew. This prevented the Dutch from warning the Americans that the Japanese fleet was about to attack Pearl Harbor.

[6] 'Brevet' signifies that it is an elevated title in use only for the duration of the Special Op. Chris Creighton's first job was to destroy French and Belgian supply dumps (specifically fuel) in the path of the German army, but he failed to act as he was overwhelmed by the speed of the German attack. The Germans were dependent on stolen fuel for their advance.

Ian Fleming: "Five minutes after midday on 28 November 1941, Dutch submarine *K-XVII*, commanded by Lieutenant-Commander Besançon, approaches a position in the Pacific, latitude 43° 30' north, longitude 155° 20' east, approximately 280 miles off north-east of Japan's Tankan Bay. There she sights a fleet of Japanese warships. They've been making a three-leg zig-zag course. Commander Besançon correctly calculates this to be a course-made-good – a direct track – of 88° (true). This will bring them to Hawaii and Pearl Harbor eight hundred miles ahead."[7]

Chris Creighton: "In November 1941 I alone had wiped out the entire ship's company with two tiny cylinders of cyanide inserted into their oxygen supply, and a box of high explosives, disguised as whiskey, both timed to release their venomous contents when I was safely away. Those Dutch submariners' only sin was that they had seen, and reported, the Japanese fleet sailing toward Pearl Harbor: news of it had to be suppressed, to ensure the attack went home and America came into the war, and it was deemed essential that the Dutchmen and their secret must die.[8]

"I related how I had witnessed the destruction of *K-XVII* and all her crew, whom I had come to know well over the previous few days. I related how fused canisters of cyanide gas and high explosive had been taken aboard at my direction, disguised as Christmas gifts of food and drink from Queen Wilhelmina and our Admiral, Submarines, Sir Max Horton. From the safety of a Berwick flying boat I had watched as the aircraft suddenly shuddered, and an enormous explosion vomited out great spouts of water, together with broken-up crates of stores, bits of men, oil and oddments of equipment. It was as if a colossal underwater creature had swallowed a submarine, chewed up its human and mechanical contents, and then been violently sick.

"Above all, I wondered what they would say or do if they knew that their valiant submariners had been sacrificed simply because the highest authorities in Britain and America did not trust them to keep their mouths shut."[9]

James Bond (Chris Creighton) then flew back to Britain in a clean-up operation to supervise and assist in the murders of the Royal Navy signals staff who had sighted the Dutch submarine's *K-XVII* signals. One of the woman was attacked by a sex-criminal specifically paroled from His Majesty's prison for this purpose. Under police control and supervision the criminal was allowed to have his way with her before she was murdered.

---

[7] Chris Creighton, *OPJB*, p. 112.
[8] Ibid, p. 81.
[9] Ibid, pp. 112–3.

Spymaster: "Hilda Murrell met with a similar fate in the 1980s during the hunt for the missing pages of the log of the HMS *Conqueror* which sunk the Argentine heavy cruiser, the *Belgrano*, as it attempted to surrender during the Falklands War."

This is called an 'intelligence-involved coup' – not dissimilar to 9-11. Complicit enemy-attacks are the *usual* method of bringing a third party ally into war. Operation SUBEND was a British 'war-escalating exercise' as was the sabotage of Hitler's peace initiatives of May, June, and July 1941. Conflict was to be prolonged and up-scaled and America was to be drawn into the war. This was a British secret intelligence operation run by M.

In order to further hide these 'Cover-Up Operations', the true identity of James Bond is being misconstrued and applied to lesser entities who could not have been involved in the Cover-Up Ops. As such, Buckingham Palace is dishing out press releases that apply the James Bond identity to others with such squeaky-clean records that they appear to be under-achievers, such as "Commander X" and the "Bond Inspiration Dies".

"A British war hero *said to have been* the inspiration behind secret agent James Bond has died age 90. Former Royal Navy Lieutenant Commander Patrick Dalzel-Job [1913–2003] carried out a series of daring exploits behind enemy lines during WWII including some while serving under Bond author Ian Fleming. Fleming *had told him* he was the model for the spy. In 1940, Dalzel-Job *disobeyed orders* in order to rescue all the women, children and elderly residents from a Norwegian town just before it was destroyed in a German bombing raid."[10]

"Commander X , a real-life Bond . . . Ernest Bond was . . . a tough founder member of the Special Air Service, he was known to the press in the 1970s as 'Commander X' (for security reasons Scotland Yard did not release his name) . . . and on the outbreak of WWII . . . he joined 'L Detachment' of the embryonic SAS."[11]

---

[10] *New Zealand Herald*, 16 October 2003, B1.

[11] Ibid. 29–30 November 2003, A27. Author's emphasis.

"No top military or civilian authority in Washington on December 7, 1941, should have been surprised at either the place or time of the Japanese attack on the Pacific fleet at Pearl Harbor. The only element of surprise, if any, should have been over the damage that the Japanese planes delivered to the fleet."[12]

What happened to British Prime Minister Chamberlain in the beginning of the war happened to American President Roosevelt at the end of the war. Both were killed with the complicity of their own sides. Chamberlain was killed after he was successfully used to start WWII and Roosevelt was killed three weeks before the end of WWII to ensure he did not write his memoirs about his part in bringing America into the war . . . or face questioning about how American Intelligence failed so badly at Pearl Harbor.[13]

> "The government of Britain was forced to aid the international bankers' plan for the Bolshevik revolution in Russia in 1917 in order to obtain their promise that they would bring America into the war on the side of the Allies. It can be assumed that SS *Lusitania* was sunk to provide the necessary incident to justify the change of American policy, just as Pearl Harbor was used as an excuse for America to enter World War II."[14]

Similarly, 9-11 was used to start WWIII. This too was, according to the writings of Adam Weishaupt, the agenda of the Illuminati, and the military industrialists who make their money selling FEAR AND SECURITY.

The entire Pearl Harbor scenario was repeated in 9-11 and the 2003–06 Iraq war. But this too won't become public knowledge for another hundred years, unless America's Vice-President Dick Cheney admits to meeting with Saddam Hussein on 20–22 April 2003 during Saddam's three-week sojourn out of Iraq – Kuneitre, I presume.[15]

---

[12] *Pearl Harbor After a Quarter of a Century*, pp. 21–22.

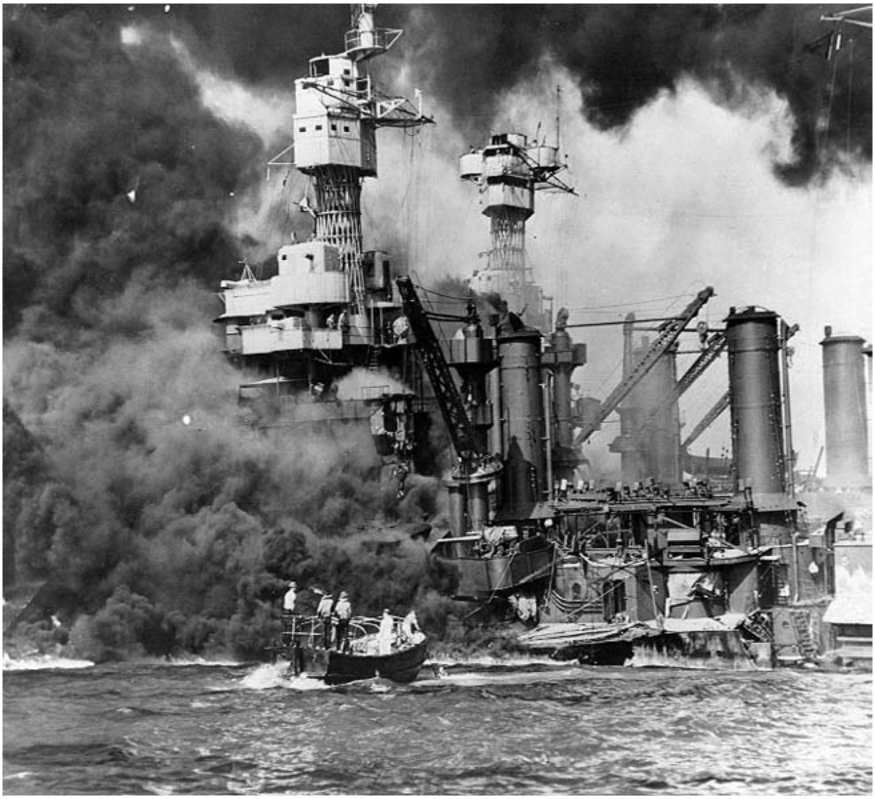
[13] Medicine withdrawn, altered or diluted is 'medically-assisted death'. 'MAD' is a current favourite for political assassinations and limits query to doctors.

[14] Commander William Guy Carr, R. D., *Pawns in the Game*, p. 108.

[15] Dick Cheney actually met with Saddam Hussein many times prior to his capture just in time for Christmas 2003.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

The absent Pearl Harbor Fleet, 500 nautical miles southeast of Honolulu
on exercise. The fleet regularly left Pearl Harbor,
Tuesday–Friday (4 days) and Friday–Saturday week (8 days).



The USS West Virginia bombed, burning and sinking.

Dieppe

19 August 1942

Dieppe was another devious distraction designed to establish 'Leading Seaman John Davis' (Chris Creighton) as a British traitor in the eyes of Germany's military elite. Creighton could then pass false data to the Germans with credibility.

In order to achieve this, sacrifices needed to be made. These were not to be British, or American, but a third party, the Canadians – second-rate allies whose only crime was excessive belligerence.

In Ireland, Chris Creighton, under cover as 'Leading Seaman John Davis', revealed to General Canaris that Canadian Divisions and some minor Allied forces were going to attack at Dieppe on 19 August 1942.

Both Canaris and his 2IC, General Hans Oster, were German double agents and had supplied Dutch, Belgian and French forces with the dates of their German attacks. Creighton appeared to be doing a favour in return. Canaris took the information at face value and alerted his troops.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Chris Creighton (18) was then detained and tied to a gun emplacement above Dieppe from where he was made to watch the slaughter of 4000 Canadians and tertiary allies.

Chris Creighton's 'uncle', Lord Louis Mountbatten was a paedophile,[1] adulterer and homosexual incestuous lover for 10 years with his pro-Nazi cousin, the former King Edward VIII.[2] Born in Windsor Castle as 'His Serene Highness Prince Louis of Battenburg', he was a British Admiral, First Sea Lord, uncle and mentor to Prince Philip. When the German styles were dropped in 1917, he became Louis Mountbatten in exchange for further elevations, making him instantly Lord Louis Mountbatten, later elevated to viscount and Earl.

---

[1] This was confirmed in November 2003 when Mick P tracked down a sailor off the HMS *Kelly* whose job it was to second children for Louis Mountbatten. MICK P is a 'Member of the Intelligence Community Knowledge Pool'.

[2] This semi-incestuous homosexual relationship continued during the Royal Tours of India and New Zealand.

'Dickie' Mountbatten was the driving force behind the Dieppe raid. It was an ill conceived raid and even his fellow paedophile Montgomery told him it was ill conceived from the start. Despite this, Mountbatten did not act entirely independently of Creighton and even confirmed his 'nephews' message to the Germans.

As such, Dickie remained a favourite of Churchill (they were related) and Churchill promoted him to Supreme Allied Commander of South East Asia in October 1943, where he was largely self-publicised "as gifted as Eisenhower, Montgomery and Churchill". Dickie was further elevated to Knight of Justice of St John (KJStJ, 1943) and Viceroy of British India.

As the Viceroy of British India, Mountbatten couldn't keep it together. His wife Edwina Ashley was shagging his best friend, Jawaharlal Nehru, as Mountbatten watched India collapse into a Partitioned Independence, assisted by British sabotage resulting in appalling carnage (1 million dead) and the largest migration in history – 12 million were relocated across new borders. Both Louis and Edwina were frequent adulterers[3] with Mountbatten preferring sex with those too young for sex.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

After his failure at Dieppe and India, Louis Mountbatten was further promoted to Chief of Defense Staff (1959–65) and in 1967, he was invited to stage a coup and take over Britain's government. When it was pointed out that this was treason, Mountbatten stuck to his knitting, failing in the style to which he had become accustomed.

Lord Louis Mountbatten (Chris Creighton's 'uncle') was truly troubled by the revelations that he too had betrayed the Canadians to the German Army (the Abwehr), resulting in the open slaughter of those 4000 men. The Royal Canadian Legion went to great lengths to distance themselves from him and the rest of Canada soon followed suit, even distancing themselves from Britain, which lead to Canadian Independence and Canadian citizenship in 1949.

Mountbatten was troubled by what other's knew and showed signs of coming unglued and seemed about to blunder and confess.

After a lifetime of personal/professional failings and public promotions 'Dickie' became isolated spending his days fishing in Donegal Bay, near his summer home in Mullaghmore, Ireland. He managed to publicly deny his role in Dieppe until Brian Garfield raised it, leaking his response prior to release of *The Paladin* (1980), a book about Chris Creighton's exploits leading up to Operation JAMES BOND.

Almost immediately the British monarchy arranged MI-5 (Internal Intelligence) to blow up his boat (1979), happily covering their trail by fitting up four IRA men who were jailed for 10 years before being released due to lack of evidence. They kept staunch because they thought some other IRA men had done it.

The tactic of blowing up one of your own leaders to cover up any incriminating evidence on Britain or America was a face-saving device to distract from even more damaging intelligence about the British monarchy working for the Germans, against peace, and for a prolonged war. This covers point '7' of 'M' in which: "Any incriminating evidence against Britain or America was to be destroyed."

When the adulterous paedophile Earl/Viscount/First Sea Lord/Lord Louis 'Dickie' Mountbatten was killed (aged 79), he had six knighthoods and was the last of Morton's fellows, the last of the M senior staff.

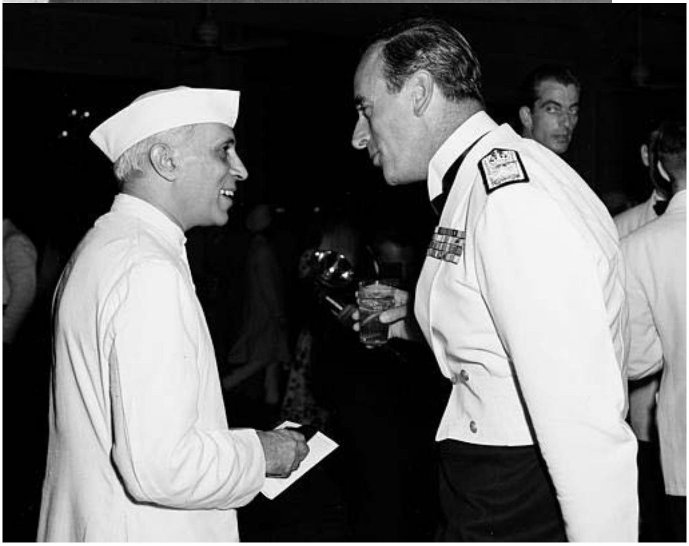
In exchange for these titles Prince Philip selected his uncle 'Dickie' as the authority to rebut Anastasia's claim to 'her' father the Tsar of Russia and all that was hers and not theirs.

Lord Louis Mountbatten, KG, GCB, KJStJ, GCSI, GCIE, GCVO
(25 June 1900–27 August 1979)
'Dickie' is remembered for inventing 'Mountbatten Pink',
a naval camouflage that allowed homosexuals and paedophiles
to blend in with ships and remain unnoticed.

---

[3] This was confirmed quite openly by their daughters.

Nehru seduces Lady Edwina Mountbatten and cuckolds Lord Louis. An agreement is reached. In exchange for having an affair with his wife, Nehru will turn a blind eye to Mountbatten's penchant for young Indian boys. Meanwhile one million die.



Anthony Blunt

Anthony Blunt's mother was Hilda Master. She was the daughter of a magistrate in the Indian Colonial Service. She married beneath herself to a poor Anglican Priest named Stanley Blunt, who achieved his role through zealous preaching and his ability to blind and deceive others – a talent much valued by spying, double-handed, sly-rooting monarchies.

Three-and-a-half years before his coronation, the future King George V had an ongoing 'sex-for-dress' exchange programme with Hilda Master. The sponsor was his wife Mary of Teck, (daughter of 'Fat Mary') and future Queen of England (m. 6 July 1893).[1]

Mary of Teck would have dresses made for A-List occasions. She couldn't be seen wearing them twice so she gave them away. King George V would do the giving away in exchange for sex. One of the recipients of the future Queen-consort Mary's dresses and King George V's armours was Hilda Masters and, after many A-List occasions and many dresses, they conceived a child together.

He was 41 at the time and his wife didn't particularly mind. Sex for them was a matter of facing ugliness and dim-wittedness, only since found in the realm of Boy Scout masters.

During one of these sex-for-dress exchange programmes, the Prince of Wales from 9 November 1901, the Vice Admiral of the Royal Navy from 1903, the sailor prince and future King George V showed Hilda Master his large blue and red dragon tattooed on his right arm. They then conceived an illegitimate son a fortnight before the Christmas of 1906. The illegitimate child's name was Anthony Blunt (26 September 1907–26 March 1983) and he was to become a royal spy.

Anthony was gay, as is so common with those who grow up without their biological father. His housefather was penniless, a religious replacement in denial, and none too bright. It was virtually impossible for them to bond.

---

[1] Mary of Teck (Victoria Mary Augusta Louise Olga Pauline Claudine Agnes) was previously engage to her husband's brother, the Duke of Clarence, but "he died six weeks after the engagement from a mysterious illness" . . . "pneumonia".

As a ranting proselytising priest Stanley Blunt was well capable of self-deceit and believing his far-less sporting and far-more intelligent son was actually the product of the Holy Ghost – Abracadabra.[2] As is common with priests, anything too hard to confront is left to the realm of mystery.

If the Blunts were not married, the children would have carried the pre-name Fitz, meaning the illegitimate child of royalty. This would have made Anthony a 'FitzBlunt'. Fitzes were usually given a small parcel of land in Ireland, called a 'cunt', an Anglo-Norman word meaning 'a small parcel of land too small to farm', hence the saying 'It's a cunt' meaning 'there is no way to work it'. If they were of German farming stock, their chosen trade would have made them 'Fuckers', making them the FitzBlunt-FuckerCunts, an entirely appropriate surname for Anthony.

Instead the family were given a religious posting to France.

In 1912, two years after the coronation of his biological father-in-denial, when Anthony Blunt was 5 years old and becoming recognisable (the resemblance was remarkable), the family were changed from poor to rich and given a posting in Paris, Stanley becoming the Anglican vicar at the British Embassy. This posting-in-exile stopped the English public from 'noting, pointing and laughing' at Anthony Blunt's astonishing resemblance to King George V, more so than his acknowledged sons, the future King Edward VIII (18, David to his peers) and the future King George VI (17, Bertie to his peers).

Espavo 3020 - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Anthony and Edward in particular, were from the same physical, social and moral gene pool – that of languid, non-ideological homosexual – easily manipulated by both sides. These two were Freemasonry in the making.

In the 1920s and '30s Anthony Blunt proudly wore a red tie, continuing the long association between gays and Marxism. He maintained contact with Moscow until the 1930s, and despite obvious qualities and ideologies of 'everything England did not stand for', he was recruited into Britain's Internal Secret Service – MI-5.

MI-5 was more of a 'Freemason's protectorate' than it was an organisation that gathered intelligence and disseminated it for the benefit of the country. When Anthony Blunt became a member of MI-5, he was reapproached by Moscow to hand over security documents. He did this is in such abundance and in such gay abandon that even the KGB described him as "ideological shit".

King George V's full son, the future King Edward VIII, as Duke of Windsor was willingly used by the Nazis prior to WWII. After the war, this became a hangable offence. He was attending a diplomatic party when the Abwehr alerted him to the derailment of a freight train in Switzerland. The Germans were trying to make out that they were abiding by the Treaty of Versailles, yet a German railway carriage derailed and illegally acquired 15-inch Italian naval shells fell out. The Duke of Windsor was then asked to keep the British ambassador at the party and to entertain and distract any and all ambassadors who might react to this. The next day they played golf. There were no mobile phones.

Just before Churchill declared the end of WWII on 7 May 1945 (for 0.01 am on 8 May) Anthony Blunt was sent to Germany as a British spy. He was entrusted by the monarchy with the delicate task of destroying all trace of the treasonous activities of Edward VIII and the other British traitors. To do this, he had to go into the ruins of Nazi Germany and recover all communications between Edward VIII (his half-brother, 13-years-his-senior) and the Nazis at Schloss Kronberg, a castle near Frankfurt.

Blunt was part of the British monarchy backing the Nazis and was a German Army Intelligence agent. He had been assigned a 'V-Mann number' meaning he was a registered card-carrying member of the German forces and was actively passing information on to them. While he did this he also stole the Kaiser's crown jewels which Queen Elizabeth II returned only recently.

As is so common with traitors, Britain's most notorious spy was knighted for services to the British Empire (1956), and then spent his Christmases in the 1960s with Dick White, Head of Britain's internal/external Secret Services (MI-5, MI-6) and Victor Rothschild.

Nathaniel Meyer 'Victor' Rothschild was a secret society leader who profited enormously from WWII. He was the principle shareholder of the Central Banking System, 'the Fifth Man' of the Cambridge Five spy ring and the primary supplier of British secrets to Russia from 1935 to 1963.

Anthony Blunt was also very, very good friends with his Queen consort sister-in-law (1936–52), whom the current generation knows as the Queen Mother (4 August 1900–30 March 2002) and her daughter, Queen Elizabeth II.

---

[2] Abracadabra is supposedly Arabic for 'Father, Son and Holy Ghost'.

The Queen consort and Anthony Blunt were both privy to the previous king. One's illegitimate father was the other's father-in-law. It was a case of one non-ideological spy talking rings around Queen 'Liz-nice-but-dim', who was the wife of one 'George Dunce', to those who worked under him. The intelligence community and much of the public considered King George VI to be one IQ point above retarded (66 + 1 = ?).

Anthony and the Queen could talk frankly of their lineages' sexual secrets, and the state secrets poured out as easily as the tea. As is so common with straight, gay and paedophile traitors, Blunt was knighted in 1956 for services to Queen and country. The knighthood stood between him and a charge of treason (1973). This worked for 24 years until he was stripped of his knighthood by Margaret Thatcher in 1979. He died four years later on 26 March 1983. Three weeks later the fake *Hitler Diaries* became public.

vo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

Despite being gifted everything required in life, Anthony Blunt spent his entire existence in psychological torture. He was never allowed to say who he was or what he wanted. He was a highly valued, yet unwanted pawn, despised by all authority and used by all authority. Like most of the royal family, all Blunt wanted was to be a little more intelligent and a little less ugly – the curse of the Windsors.

Anthony Blunt was a major trader in a 'homosexual, non-ideological, secrets-trading, spyring' and his greatest value was to Freemasonry and the Illuminati who so desperately wanted to continue the managed wars for continued profit – wars that would make them wealthier than all of England and all of Europe.

WWI and WWII financed America
to become the superpower it is today
and placed it ahead of all other nations.
It also did wonders for the Rothschilds.

King George V and Anthony Blunt,
father and son.

Opposite: Anthony Blunt as young man
and as the surveyor of the Queen's pictures, 1945–72,
seen here with his neice, Queen Elizabeth II.

The Duke of Windsor and Wallis Simpson.

Dear MI-6,

A DNA match here would not go amiss.

PS. To cement any epiphany a press release wouldn't be a bad idea. Remember to get authorisation and keep in mind the Einsatz Kommando camp's motto, "The truth shall set you free". British camps were also familiar with this phrase.

The Champagne General, Joachim von Ribbentrop,
German Ambassador to London and another of Wallis Simpson's lovers.

King Edward VIII abdicates, then marries a treasonous spy
and meets with Hitler ASAP.

S.S. UNITED STATES
YORK

The Duke and Duchess of Windsor.
A couple of life's tragedies.

Wallis Simpson and King Edward VIII

Sex and German Spies in the British Monarchy

The *Oxford Dictionary,* which takes final editorial input from the monarchy, describes “Wallis Simpson (1896–1986) as the American wife of King Edward VIII [26 June 1894–28 May 1972], who reigned for 11 months in 1936 after King George V. Her relationship with the king caused a national scandal, and her second divorce forced the king’s abdication. They moved to France. He died and she remained a recluse until her death.”

In late 2003 the author was interviewing the Spymaster who said: “I spoke with a British Intelligence officer who told me this story . . .”

> “Wallis was the subject of a round robin in 1930. A round robin is where all intelligence are circulated with a request. They were asked if they could provide a woman that might revive the future king’s jaded sexual appetite. This was Edward VIII, later famous for his 11-month reign, gay fashions, the Windsor knot and abdication.
>
> “King George V had visited the front lines at the beginning of WWI and his horse rolled on top of him breaking his pelvis. Thereafter he suffered ill health, mainly bronchitis and was in continual pain. His eldest son John was retarded, ignored by his mother and left to randomly garden on one of their estates. David was a little less retarded, but not much. He was to become Edward VIII. As King, it was essential to all who had designs on England, that David become their pawn. This was as easily done as said.
>
> “Somebody remembered having sex with an American naval officer’s wife in a Chinese brothel in the Forbidden City in Peking, China. She was learning the secrets of ‘Chinese amour’ while working for free, and it was this ‘free’ aspect that drew British Intelligence attention. They knew they were dealing with a lifetime actress who survived on attention rather than food.
>
> “The agent replied back to London and London said, ‘That’s just what we need; we’ll be coming straight out to get her’. The woman was Wallis Simpson, the future partner of King

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

> Edward VIII, and the gym instructor to his jaded, disinterested sexual appetite. She was brought back to England and the King liked her. She had sexual relations with David, the future King, but she also had sex with Ribbentrop, the Nazi German Ambassador to London, an American car salesman, and pretty much anybody else who could come up with the required attention. Flowers, a keen interest, and some form of status were generally enough.
>
> “Just as Prince Charles was another Edward VIII (his grand-uncle), Diana also survived on attention more than food. Both Diana and Wallis Simpson were ‘sexual-bulimics’ in a pattern of desiring and denying; and both Charles and Edward were social misfits, incapable of being employed in the ordinary world. Both women were primarily concubines to disinterested, incompatible, and incompetent sexual partners.
>
> “She [Wallis Simpson] introduced him [King Edward VIII] to homosexuality and photographed him in the process.”

The First market ‘Petite Camera with matching lipstick holder and compact’, from Kodak, was available to the elite from 1930, some four years earlier. Photographs of royalty and politicians in compromising sexual positions immediately became the most valuable piece of intelligence any secret service or hostile country could obtain. Cameras became big business, the smaller and the more hidden, the bigger the business.

Wallis’ role, as far as the Germans were concerned, was to enmesh the weak future King Edward VIII into a sexually perverse world and then threaten to reveal reports of his sexual habits to ‘high society’ and the British public at large, via American newspapers if necessary.

The conscious and unconscious illusion he adhered to was that he was successful in bed for the first time and this made him want to marry the woman. Wallis encouraged the future King to vent every pro-German/anti-English sentiment he could. The future King of England was being bribed by his mistress. These bribes were so successful he became completely dependent on the illusion she provided, despite all outward appearances to the contrary.

The truth was that Wallis was cheating on him left, right and centre and the future King was completely useless in bed and preferred prostitutes, the greater the actress the better. Having a sexually-based ego for the first time in his life, the future King was foolish enough to buy Wallis’ husband out of bankruptcy and the three of them were living in the same house for several years.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Wallis was half-American, half-German and actively spied for the Nazis. The sessions photographed included the future King of England having a ménage-à-trois with another man. Wallis would get up from the bed, put on her lipstick, and at the same time take a photo from her ‘Kodak compact’ make-up case. This petite camera became a main agent for WWII and the invasion of France, which astounded even its inventors.

As many British secrets as possible were passed from the British Monarchy to Germany, obeying the Prince of Wales crest ‘Ich Dien’ (‘I serve, Germany’), honouring the family name, Saxe-Coburg-Gotha, their origins, and David’s uncle, the Kaiser of Germany. To King Edward VIII, revealing the British secrets to Germany was akin to sending a letter to his relatives.

Wallis Simpson’s German contact was the German Ambassador to London, Joachim von Ribbentrop, the Champagne General. He would read the state secrets, then check the homosexual photographs of the future King as proof of the information’s authenticity.

Ribbentrop would send Wallis roses every day, 17 being a reference to the number of times they had exchanged information and had sex – about once a week for four months, from August 1936 until the King abdicated four months later on 10 December. Wallis was having sexual relations with the King six days a week (for secrets) and rooting the Nazi ambassador one day a week while passing them on – that’s a lot of secrets and one of history’s most successful sexual-information highways.

Wallis and Ribbentrop were two hysterically horny international spies, laughing at the British monarchy as they made way for the invasion of France with the joining of their libidos. This was pure knife-edge fun. They had the monarchy by the balls, and the fact that they both got away with their reputations intact during their lifetime showed total complicity from the British press, MI-5, MI-6, Freemasonry and the gay community – all to the country’s detriment, but for the expansion of war.

Spymaster: “The British Monarchy should have fallen. Almost every other European monarchy fell in the 1920s, but the British monarchy survived because it had become such a non-nationalistic spy network that it virtually condoned the bleeding of sensitive military information to countries like Germany and Russia. This ensured the monarchy survived, Britain was severely damaged and the war lasted longer.”

The British monarchy's spy network took rule only from the British Freemasons, the highest-ranking Freemasons being the King and currently the man with the world's lowest EQ (emotional quotient), HRH Prince Phillip (33° Mason) who is married to his second cousin, the current Queen. Both are the great-great-grandchildren of Queen Victoria.

The British monarchy was not serving its people, it was serving its secret societies, its Freemasons, its Illuminati, its Mercer's, the Livery Companies, the Anglican Church, the Boy Scouts, the paedophiles, and the creation of orphaned children as playthings for all of the above. The proof of this is in the near complete preservation of royal buildings during the war, while a third of the square mile of the City of London was completely destroyed.

The bribed King of England collected British secrets and passed them to his concubine, Wallis Simpson, who passed them to the Nazi Ambassador, in another sexual encounter, who then passed them to Hitler, who sniffed cocaine, snorted speed and masturbated over them. It was an orgy of information and one giant blowjob of secrets and it served to keep the Freemason's war going. France was invaded at all its weak points (including its Prime Minister) and virtually without resistance. It fell within two weeks while Britain stood back and watched, fiddling over paperwork.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2015

Prince Edward (later King Edward VIII) "regarded WWI as futile and stupid and a result of unnecessary conflicts between his grandfather King Edward VII and his father's cousin Kaiser Wilhelm of Germany."[1] Reasons for WWII were equally vain. More than one secret service agent has mentioned that WWI and WWII were managed wars and WWII was a battle between the French and English Freemasons, or British royalty and French royalty.

Edward VIII, King of England, was surprisingly stupid and Wallis Simpson was surprisingly clever. She had spent most of her life entertaining two or more lovers at the same time and 17 yellow roses received daily from the Nazi Ambassador, was a lot to ignore – still, the constantly inebriated King Edward accomplished this with even more alcohol.

Abdication was a solution that saved the monarchy from certain extinction and prevented the King of England from being executed. Can you imagine a treasonous, bribed, homosexual king – surely that is a dead thing, except he was a Freemason which meant there would be no fall from grace in his lifetime and his true history would be covered up for generations to come.

Britain's King Edward VIII was so entrenched in the German Nazi movement that the German Military Intelligence's Abwehr even issued him with a 'V-Mann number' giving him special German military status. After 11 months as King, Edward VIII abdicated, retaining his title as Duke of Windsor (10 December 1936). As is so common with those on the sexual fringe, Wallis and Edward were actively destabilising their own family-based societies.

During WWII, the abdicated King Edward VIII and Wallis Simpson were both placed as far away as possible from Europe, its allies and from America. Consequently, a position was invented for them and they were made 'Governors of the Bahamas Islands' from 1940–45. Here they were both under strict surveillance.

Spymaster: "Wallis Simpson was investigated by the FBI in 1941 for passing information to Ribbentrop, the Nazi Foreign Minister in London, for being his lover, and for their involvement in the murder of the Canadian millionaire, Sir Harry Oakes, who inspired the private purchase of Spitfires for the RAF in 1940. When the Duke and Duchess of Windsor (Edward and Wallis) were accused of manipulating currency in France after WWII, the Labour Government had to step in and save them both from prosecution."

No action was taken against Wallis Simpson; however, Ribbentrop, her German lover, was hanged on 16 October 1946, primarily for his knowledge of the Duke of Windsor's sexual proclivities. At the end of WWII they were both asked to leave the Bahamas. This was a slap in the face with a wet bus ticket, but a shameful one nevertheless.

Wallis Warfield-Spencer-Simpson-Windsor was a woman primarily interested in her own sexuality. She was born in 1896 and died in 1986. Her father died when she was five months old. She (20) married a navy Lieutenant pilot, Earl Winfield Spencer Jr in 1916. He was an American-born Briton who was 'Earl' by Christian name only. They divorced in 1927. During this time she had an affair with Ernest Aldrich Simpson and they married in 1928, changing her name to Wallis Simpson (32). They divorced in May 1937.

Between 1922 and 1928 Wallis and her first husband Spencer were separated. In 1928 he suggested reconciliation and she sailed to China to join him. He then suggested she accompany him to a few Chinese brothels. They soon separated but she remained in China for a year, "haunting brothels by herself, enjoying close male friendships and a heady social life, refining her already considerable social/sexual skills". Of this time she wrote: "without doubt the most delightful, the most carefree, the most lyrical interval of my youth – the nearest thing to a lotus-eater's dream any young woman could expect to know".[2]

---

[1] *Wallis*, p. 96.

She still wore fashion influenced by the Chinese brothel to the end of her days. British Intelligence later claimed she had learnt techniques in Chinese brothels that helped her snare a king. They should know, they arranged it. "The [famous China dossier] file contained interviews with brothel madams confirming that Wallis had entered into perverse practices in the singsong houses."[3]

Wallis met the future King Edward for the first time in January 1931 and again in May. By January 1932, Edward, Prince of Wales was staying at Wallis and her second husband's house in London. By 1934, Edward was a frequent visitor to Wallis' home and she slept with both Edward, the future king, and her second husband, who didn't move out for another two years. Prince Edward (David) and Wallis were a couple of swinging bisexuals. It was four years later, and six months into Edward's reign (July 1936), that Ernest Simpson finally moved out of the marital home.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

By January 1936, Edward, although King, was obsessed with Wallis. Despite Edward's several more available mistresses, Edward was characterised as Mrs Simpson's lapdog and their relationship, "sadomasochistic", he, "relishing contempt and bullying", and she finding him "dependent, burdensome and claustrophobic".

Edward's relationship with Wallis Simpson was now being reported in the foreign press; however, the British government had instructed the British press not to refer to the relationship. The British monarchy controlled the British press to the country's detriment.

Wallis Simpson was described by the Queen Mother as "the lowest of the low", presumably because she was conceived out of wedlock, from a solo-parent family that begged for survival, developed flirting as a survival skill, was a drug-dealer and gambler, trained as a sex-concubine in Peking's Forbidden City at no charge, was twice divorced, falsified her own divorce papers, had affairs in each marriage, one of which began as a cuckolding affair, was involved with a high-powered group of society lesbians, had communist connections, spied for the Russians, was a Nazi sympathiser, and was having an affair with Ribbentrop, the Nazi foreign minister to London, and a married American car salesman (Guy Marcus Trundle[4]), while dating the King, whom she got to abdicate, married him in Nazi Germany and then cheated on him with a homosexual.

Wallis Simpson was no beauty, but she was seductive. All of her relationships revolved around her being in control of the new man, while destroying the masculinity of the live-in partner. She was as successful at attracting men as she was at fleecing them and rebutting them. (See *Was Wallis Simpson A Man, Appendix 13*)

When she got sick of men, she had affairs with bisexual women like the German Marlene Dietrich (1904–92) who acted in *The Blue Angel* (1930), *The Devil is a Woman* (1935) and, rather ironically, *Judgement at Nuremberg* (1961). In his autobiography, Laurence Olivier writes of the two of them dancing tit-to-tit with their hands up each other's pants. Marlene Dietrich was a Nazi spy.

From 1949–53, while still married, she (53–57) began another affair with the gay playboy grandson of Woolworths. Twenty years her junior, it lasted four years, and Edward the Duke of Windsor (55–59), fully aware, trailed along behind. Edward, once King, had been usurped by a gay man. As the Duchess of Windsor once rebutted: "You can't abdicate and eat it."

You'd think by now that her given surname 'Warfield' meant something. She still wore fashion influenced by the Chinese brothel, her most cherished moments, till the end of her days. She remained, until her death in 1986, the Step-Aunt to the current Queen of England.[5]

"He was not skilled in doing anything physical."[6] Despite the fact that Prince Edward was a failure at everything – education, sports, relationships, sex (including erections), reproduction (no children), sleep (he was an insomniac), sobriety (he was a lush), family (they shunned him), public relations, the press, politics, service at war, kingship, and was vain to boot, the press still managed to maintain a level of popularity between Edward and the public.

---

[2] "Lotus-eater" refers to lesbian acts.

[3] *Wallis*, p. 163.

[4] Trundle lived at 18 Bruton Street, Mayfair, London. Ref., *BBC News*, 3 Feb. 2003.

[5] Chris Jones, BBC News Profiles Unit, 29 January 2003 and several other related websites; also Charles Higham, Wallis, Secret Lives of the Duchess of Windsor, 1988.

[6] *Wallis*, p. 145.

Edward was a poor student and after two years of failed study it was decided he should be given a commission in the British Army. On the insistence of King George V (3 June 1865–20 January 1936) and Lord Kitchener (24 June 1850–5 June 1916), Edward was excluded from any discussion on political issues and restricted to serving as a courier (staff appointment) during WWI.

As Prince ‘David’ Edward, he had a gay liaison with his Oxford tutor Henry Peter Hansell. In 1918 he had an affair with the wife of the Liberal Whip, Freda Dudley Ward, then a homosexual liaison with Louis Mountbatten during the Empire Tour (1927). By 1930 Prince ‘David’ Edward was lingering in the Tate Gallery picking up boys and men. Six years later he was king. “He was an unsatisfactory lover with homosexual leanings.”[7]

His father King George V encouraged him to find a wife and start a family. “In January 1923 it was announced in the press that the future King Edward VIII would marry Lady Elizabeth Bowes-Lyon.”[8] On discovering his penis was so small as to be impractical, that he was bisexual, liked to be dominated, could not maintain an erection and was an insomniac, Elizabeth went with his brother Bertie instead, despite his bad stammer and shyness. “A week later her engagement to his brother Albert was announced; today she is the queen mother.”[9]

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

The future Queen of England and Queen Mother became engaged to his brother Prince ‘Bertie’ Albert even though Bertie (the future King George VI and the current Queen’s father) had already an affair with a black actress and a homosexual affair with a young Parisian boy who later blackmailed him.

King George VI followed this up during his marriage to the Queen with an illegitimate son named Michael Canfield (1926–69). He was brought up by Cass Canfield of Harper & Row Publishing and was the half-brother to the current Queen. Michael ‘Fitz’ Canfield later married the Duchess of Marlborough and ‘died’ soon after the wedding. There was no way he was going to be allowed to have children.[10]

[7] *Wallis*, p. 94.

[8] Ibid, p. 92.

[9] Ibid.

[10] King Edward VIII tried to pass this off as the Duke of Kent’s illegitimate son.

But even this was pre-empted in the colonies and became known as New Zealand’s worst kept secret. Recently married and on Royal Tour with his wife (Elizabeth), newborn child (Elizabeth II) and homosexual incestuous partner (Louis Mountbatten), the future King George VI conceived a child with a Maori woman in March 1927.

As an adult, he was in charge of DoRAs (Defence of the Realm Acts) for British paedophiles on holiday in New Zealand, especially in Rotorua. He would cover for those who were caught or who had complaints against them, ensuring that there was no police record and that “the British tourists” got out of the country safely. His job was to cover up for British paedophiles, but it was also to ensure there was a ready supply of young Maori boys available for paedophilia who were encouraged to swim naked in the Priest and Radium pools.

Secret Service (NZ): “King George VI’s illegitimate son was an effeminate housebound homosexual who looked like a British royal who had been nuggetted. He was the Queen’s half-brother and 18 months her junior. She spent five days with him at Moosewood Lodge in Rotorua during the Royal Tour from 23 December 1953 to 30 January 1954. The previous Royal Tour in 1927 had sired the child.”[11]

The author has a bakelite cigar case stamped “·ROYAL VISIT··N·Z· 1949·”, but this was made in anticipation. The Royal Tour was delayed as King George VI became ill with a strange form of lung cancer called syphilis. He died of lung cancer/syphilis on 6 February 1952 and the newly crowned Queen Elizabeth II and her husband/second cousin Prince Philip went on the Royal Tour instead.

The former King’s doctor then came out to New Zealand, made child introductions to King George VI’s illegitimate son and was then promoted and elevated to Governor-General. Elevations and paedophilia go hand in hand, especially when the little hand meets the big hand.

After the future King Edward VIII’s week-long engagement to the current Queen Mother, the monarchy did a ‘round robin’ amongst the secret service, chocolate soldiers and diplomats. They searched high and low for a woman to revive the sagging libido of the inheritor of the British Empire. They tried the American Thelma Furness, but David rejected her. (She was normal, he was not.) The best they could find for ‘the most eligible bachelor in the world’ was a divorced American

[11] The author mentioned the existence of Queen Elizabeth II’s half-brother as born and having lived his life in New Zealand on television on 29 November 2005.

woman working at no charge, in a Peking brothel, in the Forbidden City of China – Wallis Simpson.

The King's challenged sexuality was confirmed by Wallis Simpson who told guests at a Paris party: "The duke is impotent and although he had tried sexual intercourse with numerous women they had been unsuccessful in satisfying his passions." "The duchess in her own inimitable and unique manner has been the only woman who had been able to satisfactorily gratify the duke's sexual desires."[12]

The 5' 5" (1.65 m) King Edward VIII had a small penis, could not maintain an erection and preferred to wear nappies and be dominated by Wallis Simpson.

Countess of Romanones: "The techniques Wallis discovered in China did not entirely overcome the Prince's extreme lack of virility. It is doubtful whether he and Wallis ever actually had sexual intercourse in the normal sense of the word."[13] It was a sadomasochistic relationship in which she had total control. She despised him and he adored her.

Wallis was considered unsuitable for the monarchy by the public and this caused Edward's abdication. After abdicating in December 1936, they both confirmed their Nazi sympathiser status by visiting Germany in October 1937 and being entertained by Hitler and other senior Nazis. Edward VIII: "Dictators are very popular these days."[14]

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 Ma

Edward VIII had supreme influence over the Freemasons and the Masonic Lodge. It becomes increasingly obvious to all who read history that control of the press is the key to allowing secret societies like the Freemasons to carry out their own agenda for war (British/German versus French Freemasons), while the monarchy's reputation is left untarnished.[15]

Control of the press always leads to some form of civil unrest. It may maintain stability at the time, but 'essential delayed knowledge' is always detrimental to history. It is an expression of an 'affective power vanity' which always results in an 'effective power vacuum'. It is the stuff of double agents.

On colonial visits Edward drew large crowds and his obvious

---

[12] *Wallis*, p. 115. The second quote refers to the author.

[13] Ibid.

[14] *Wallis*, p. 116.

[15] The Metropolitan Police had a huge file on Wallis Simpson. The file was instigated by her partner Prince Edward, but was not released until February 2003.

popularity made him increasingly vain. As one observer noted, he had "difficulty in understanding the symbolic nature of his position and tended to assume that the attention focused on him was a direct consequence of his own particular gifts".

Edward had no children, thank God, but his father, George V, had given him a few half-brothers and sisters, the most famous of which was Anthony Blunt. His younger brother Bertie became King George VI, whose daughter became the present Queen (QEII).

A sexually bent King and a prostitute/sexual compulsive for a prospective Queen made Britain an invaders' paradise. War was planned and happened within three years.

It was essential for invading countries to find weaknesses in the key figures of opposing countries and then exploit those weaknesses. Embarrassment was something that was delayed as long as possible and, not surprisingly, the cover for such a plot always came from the country's own media under government instruction. Edward VIII had weaknesses to be exploited in abundance and his shortcomings made England a spy's paradise.

It was Edward's weaknesses as a king, his naïvety around politics, his lack of sexuality, his liking for prostitutes, and his continual intoxication, making him 'non compos mentis' most of the time, that almost brought down the British monarchy and perhaps should have.

With the British media's continual suppression and virtual blackout of anything 'Edward and Wallis', Edward VIII maintained his cover and provided an easy source of information for WWII's most competent and ingrained spy, Wallis Simpson, the Duchess of Windsor, and the King of England's partner. "Edward VIII turned to Wallis for advice in doing everything."[16]

By August 1935, Wallis was surrounded by French and British special agents and a detective from Scotland Yard. In order to pass secrets she employed a lawyer (Gregoire) who was also the lawyer for Ribbentrop (Nazi Ambassador to London) and Otto Abertz who soon became the German Ambassador to Paris. When she couldn't get through to them, she sent crucial secrets to Berlin via Italy.

Anna Wolkoff, the daughter of Admiral Wolkoff, was a Nazi spy sending crucial secrets to Berlin via Italy and was considered a leading figure in British fascism. She was the dressmaker to Wallis Simpson and Princess Marina of Greece (the widow of the Duke of Kent). Five associates of Anna Wolkoff were listed by MI-5 as being Nazi sympathisers. This list led right into the household of the British royal family.

---

[16] *Wallis*, p. 144.

For Pro-Nazi suspects, MI-5 had divided the country into regions, and when they were released 60 years later (October 2004) all but the central region of London involving British establishment figures were released, though the more obvious ones, the Duke of Bedford, the Duke of Windsor, Sir Oswald Mosley, Sir Barry Domvile (the former head of Naval Intelligence) and Lord Rothermere (owner of the *Daily Mail*) were included. These leading British fascists were quoted as saying “A victorious Nazi invasion would place the Duke back on the throne”.[17]

None of their spying or sexual secrets made it to the British press as there was a media blackout on anything to do with Wallis and King Edward. Only overseas papers dared show the stories. Viscount Lord Rothermere,[18] fascist sympathiser and owner of the *Daily Mail*, often published pro-Hitler messages:

treasurer@platinumparty.org

“In England, many people imagine Hitler as a cannibal; but I would like to say . . . he conveys good comradeship. He is unpretentious, naturally and apparently sincere . . . There is no human being living whose promise on important matters I would trust more readily. He believes that Germany has a Divine calling and that the German people are destined to save Europe . . . No words can describe his politeness . . . He is a man of rare culture.”[19]

“Hitler’s political aim and policy is directed toward attaining his goal without loss of blood. He succeeded in ascending to the highest power position in Germany with very little spilling of blood or loss of human life in a land of 68 million inhabitants. Austria was annexed without one shot being fired.”[20]

King Edward and Wallis Simpson were a couple of swinging bisexuals. She divorced in May 1937 and they married on 3 June 1937. Their official wedding photo in France showed Herman Rogers and Major Edward ‘Fruity’ Metcalfe. Wallis had had a ménage-à-trois with Herman Rogers and his wife and ‘Fruity’ was a bisexual in a front marriage. These were sexually incompetent bisexuals and gays in show marriages attending dinners sponsored by German and Italian Fascists.

As his father King George V put it: “My son has not a single friend who is a gentleman and does not see any decent society.” Wallis was also sexually involved with “Thelma and Gloria Vanderbilt in a high-powered group of society lesbians”.[21]

Snubbed by the royal family and the British establishment, the Duke of Windsor was forced into exile in France, Spain, Portugal and the Bahamas. He was considered a drunk and she obnoxious. Despite their exile, Wallis Simpson continued to provide Ribbentrop (the Nazi Ambassador in London) with the information required for the invasion of France in 1940.

The former King Edward VIII, abdicated and reduced to the Duke of Windsor, was posted to France to liaise between the British and French armies; however, “the Duchess of Windsor was in constant contact and communication with Ribbentrop . . . Because of their high official position, the duchess obtained a variety of information concerning the British and French official activities and passed this on to the Germans.”[22]

With this information, the Germans invaded northern France in May 1940 with virtually no opposition. The couple then fled to Biarritz in the south of France. Wallis Simpson had informed Ribbentrop where they were going, and arrival to their secret hideaway was simultaneously announced on German Radio, along with their room number. This lifted German war spirits to new levels of hilarity not enjoyed since.

Within a month they travelled to Spain and communication with Ribbentrop was facilitated through Spanish Fascists. A month later they travelled to Portugal where the Duke made indiscreet remarks that Britain stood little chance of resisting a German invasion and may as well try to settle for peace with the Germans.

---

[17] Ben Fenton, *The Daily Telegraph*, Nobles and Admirals on War ‘Suspect List’, 12 October 2004.

[18] Lord Rothermere was born Harold Sydney Harmsworth. He was elevated to baronet in 1910, baron in 1914, made Britain’s Air Minister (1917–18) and then further elevated to viscount in 1919.

[19] Viscount Lord Rothermere, *Warnings and Predictions*, pp. 180-3.

[20] *Daily Mail*, 20 May 1938.

---

[21] *Wallis*, p. 107.

[22] Wallis website.

Edward VIII was allowed to leave Spain under the direct intervention of Walter Schellenberg, the Nazi Intelligence Officer. For this favour, Schellenberg was not prosecuted for War Crimes in 1946, but 1949. He was placed in British custody and made to sleep on a mattress with radioactive material inserted. He died soon after from stomach cancer (1952).[23]

Schellenberg had managed the Venlo Incident for Germany but was never forgiven by the British for ‘acquiring possession’ of the Prince of Wales’ homosexual secrets. For this, in the end, he was ultimately condemned to die. The Intelligence Officer’s comment that often appears on British files and believed to be penned by ‘M’ read:

“Well done, true and faithful servant”.

The Duke and Duchess of Windsor spent the month of July 1940 in Portugal, during which time Winston Churchill arranged for the Duke to become the ‘Governor of the Bahamas’ from August 1940. The Bahamas were selected to prevent the Duchess from coming into contact with any British officials and from “establishing any channel of communication with Ribbentrop”.

FBI memo: “It was considered absolutely essential that the Windsors be removed to a point where they would do absolutely no harm.”

> *London Guardian*, 2002: “When the Duke and Duchess of Windsor sailed into Palm Beach, Florida, on the SS *Berkshire* from Nassau on April 18 1941, they were looking forward to enjoying three days of relaxation at the Everglades Club, playing golf and drinking and gossiping with American high society. Little did they know that the previous night instructions had gone out from President Roosevelt to FBI chief J. Edgar Hoover to launch what was to be an extraordinary covert intelligence exercise that had to fool both the exiled royals and the US secret service agent who was guarding them.
>
> “The exercise was launched after the FBI had been passed intelligence that the Duke and Duchess were being used by the Nazis to obtain secrets which could wreck the Allies’ war effort. The US investigation became even more lurid when FBI agents interviewed a Benedictine monk in a Franciscan monastery in the United States; Father Odo had once been the Duke of Wurttemberg, a minor German royal with connections to Queen Mary, the duke’s mother, and her brother, the Duke of Athlone, then governor-general of Canada.

---

[23] The same method was used on New Zealand’s Prime Minister Norman Kirk (1972–74) dying on 31 August 1974.

Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 Mar

> “He told them that a prime suspect in the investigation – Joachim von Ribbentrop, then the Nazis’ foreign minister – had been the Duchess’s lover when he was ambassador to Britain in 1936. The minister was already thought to have been supplied with information by the Duchess during the German invasion of France in 1940. Now it was suggested that there was a far closer arrangement.
>
> “A year after war broke out, the FBI sent a memo to President Roosevelt outlining the agency’s worries about the couple. It stated: ‘It has been ascertained that for some time, the British government has known that the Duchess of Windsor was exceedingly pro-German in her sympathies and connections and there is strong reason to believe that this is the reason why she was considered so obnoxious to the British government that they refused to permit Edward to marry her and maintain the throne.
>
> “Both she and the Duke of Windsor have been repeatedly warned by representatives of the British government that in the interest of the morale of the British people, they should be exceedingly circumspect in their dealings with the representatives of the German government.”[24]
>
> From their base in the Bahamas, the couple made frequent visits to the United States during WWII. After tailing the Windsors, on 2 May 1941 an FBI agent wrote to Hoover: “The Duchess of Windsor had an intense hate for the English since they had kicked them out of England . . . and he [FBI agent] had definite proof that the Duke of Windsor, former King of England, had reached an agreement with Hitler’s deputy, Herman Goering. After Germany won the war, Goering, through control of the army, would overthrow Hitler and reinstate the duke as King of England.”[25]

This pipedream of Goering’s was sympathetically treated in the higher echelons of MI-6, but was only for the consumption of Goering and the Prince of Wales.

This saga was not only circumstance, but also hereditary. Edward’s father, King George V, was described by his biographer Robert Lacey:

---

[24] Chris Jones, BBC News Profiles Unit, 29 January 2003; Rob Evans and David Hencke, *Wallis Simpson, the Nazi minister, the telltale monk and an FBI plot, London Guardian*, 29 June 2002.

[25] Ibid.

"As his official biographer I felt compelled to admit, King George V was distinguished by no exercise of social gifts, by no personal magnetism, by no intellectual powers. He was neither a wit nor a brilliant raconteur, neither well-read, nor well-educated, and he made no great contribution to enlightened social converse. He lacked intellectual curiosity . . ." and it was these qualities that King Edward VIII inherited, as did his brother King George VI, the father of the current Queen Elizabeth II.

King George V had the perfect parenting style for creating sexual repressives and moody ne're-do-wells. He was a remote and stern figure who treated his sons like cadets on a battleship – they were always on parade when in his presence. He reprimanded them with savage anger and employed a succession of nannies, at least two of which were sadistically cruel. The children were raised by an unavailable, angry father, for whom they had to perform. Both Edward (David) and George (Bertie) grew up to be effeminate, non-performing, easily bribed bisexuals whose sperm had no morals.

King George V was killed by his doctor, Lord Dawson, who injected him with a mixture of morphine and cocaine so his death announcement could make the morning papers. He died within 15 minutes at 11.55 pm on 20 January 1936 at Sandringham, Norfolk, England. Hitler sent a message of sympathy and his entire cabinet attended a synchronous memorial in Berlin on 28 January 1936.

Hitler was infatuated with Wallis Simpson and assigned a German agent to film Wallis at the funeral procession. Both Hitler and Eva Braun were mesmerised by Wallis's hair, make-up and severe, classic, timeless clothes. Hitler deeply admired Wallis and giggled uncontrollably in ecstatic pleasure when he viewed her on film in Obersalzburg.

Something drastically changed between 1936 and 1939. The continued use of hard drugs began to tax high society. Hitler was a speed and cocaine addict and the elite of Britain and Berlin were in a white powder epidemic. Cocaine (snow) was widely used in the 1920s and from 1933 the Nazis campaigned against their use.

Despite this, from April to December 1939 German soldiers were supplied with 29 million pills of Amphetamine Pervitine (Benzedrine, or speed) designed to keep the paratroopers awake. From 1942, Adolf Hitler's personal physician (King George VI's agent, Dr Theodor Morell) injected him daily with methamphetamine or 'speed', very similar to 'P' which caused Hitler's premature ageing and charismatic dementia.[26]

---

[26] Wolf Kemper, *Nazis on Speed*, 2003.

Many Nazi servicemen of all kinds took emergency packets of supplied drugs. A paratrooper who jumped on Crete in 1941 said: "It was as if someone had boiled my blood. I suddenly had superhuman strength and could not sleep. I was capable of superhuman feats."

Allied Officer: "I was assigned to guard a German 'naval commander' – a ship saboteur. He had dangerous knowledge but was not physically capable. He showed me shots of his children and I pretended to relax. He talked to me in English and one night when I came on duty, his eyes had changed. His pupils had got a little bigger and he moved a little more quickly. He suddenly tried to grasp my throat and it took a full magazine from a Lanchester SMG4 in .45 calibre to bring him down. He was dead on the deck before he fell. If I had engaged the safety he would have killed me. I have no doubt the previous guard had missed him taking something."

The use of drugs and alcohol was a major feature of the life of Wallis Warfield-Spencer-Simpson-Windsor and her greatest supporter was the drug addict Lady Emerald Cunard. Wallis suffered from recurring bleeding ulcers from her ever-increasing alcoholism which resulted in delusions, and in the last 10 years of her life she would pick up objects and talk on them as though they were a telephone.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

The ambition of the British monarchy from 1837–1910 had been to exert political influence (Queen Victoria, 1837–1901; King Edward VII, 1902–1910) in the tradition of Queen Elizabeth I (1558–1603). However, King George V (1910–1936) did not have the sufficient IQ required to manipulate the destiny of nations. As such, his royal perspective was considerably more humble, understandable in that he could comprehend little. Instead, George V chose, or rather, it was chosen for him, that he would do whatever he was capable of. This was limited to embodying qualities which the nation was to see as its greatest strength – "diligence, dignity and duty". This involved being seen parading in a glorified uniform and little else.

These new traditional values were to march men into war as proud cannon fodder. It was a well-dressed borderline retard leading the impoverished into deaths of glory and risking their lives for medals made of brass and silk.

Despite the lack of intellectual status assigned to King George V, even less was assigned to his son King George VI.[27] Queen Elizabeth II is no bright spark either. Her lack of intelligence and inability to spell her own name correctly during signing is often confused with her not being amused. She is not amused because she does not get the joke. "She is a child in a woman's body, does not understand murder and has little concept of Emotional Quotient."[28] In that regard, she is well matched to her husband/second cousin, Prince Philip.

---

[27] King Edward VIII was assigned a little intellectual kudos, but this was mitigated by his inability to grasp 'cause and effect' and his sexually libertarian antics.

As a result, Buckingham Palace is described as a sterile emotional void, and yet another generation morbidly waits on her passing the crown and the couple dying their way out of the history books. For such honoured people, at the end of their lives, we have to ask ourselves: "What have they done?"

More importantly, historians have to ask: "What have the royals done that the public generally don't know about?" This usually takes 50 years or so to uncover, but in the case of Prince Philip's tour of South America it is passed the the 50-year rule and still not released.

Going back to the late 1800s, the British royal family is a collection of German bisexual cuckolders and wife-cheaters. The bisexuals include King George V, King Edward VIII, King George VI, Lord Louis Mountbatten, Prince Philip, Prince Charles and Prince Edward. The cuckolders and wife-cheaters include King Edward VII, King George V, King Edward VIII, King George VI, Prince Philip, Queen Elizabeth II, Prince Charles and Princess Diana.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Prince Charles' servant, George Smith, claimed he was anally raped in 1989 by a royal servant and had seen Prince Charles in a compromising position with the same servant. Diana recorded Smith's affidavit and died within the year. Smith went public in 2003 dying two years later, apparently of post-traumatic stress disorder following military service in the Falklands War, 23 years earlier (1982). His illness was acquired soon after accusing Prince Charles. George Smith died 'ex-military fit' aged 44 on 24 August 2005. Unfortunately his late-detected long-time illness proved fatal.[29]

By no means is this history a good look. It looks more like a low grade American soap, a kind of super-rich *Days of our Lives* without the daily toil. The public at large can be justified in saying: "We are not amused".

---

[28] Spymaster.

[29] *The London Free Press News*, 'Palace rape claimant dies after long illness', 27 August 2005. His death was announced by his father.

Operation JAMES BOND
1–10 May 1945

From the very beginning of the war, the British ran German Army Intelligence and had insight into what the General Staff were doing. This made the war a very planned war which Britain continually expanded and prolonged. Essentially Britain trained Hitler and Stalin, gave Hitler Germany, and Stalin Russia, and then ordered Fascist Germany to attack Communist Russia, watching as they destroyed each other.

In the last days of WWII, America halted outside Berlin allowing Russia to destroy the Germans and many voluntary Scandinavian fascist units. At the same time, Britain pulled out its double agents from the inside.

America and Britain had this inside/outside thing going on the whole time. The British and American High Command were making decisions that troops on the ground could not understand. America could have taken Berlin two weeks earlier, but the British had not yet extracted their agents Martin Bormann and Adolf Hitler.

All the characters from Operation JAMES BOND took their names from *Winnie the Pooh*. Winston Churchill had been known as 'Winnie' since WWI. Ian Fleming was 'Pooh'. Adolf Hitler was 'Rabbit' and Eva Braun was 'Ms Rabbit'. Admiral Canaris, a British agent in the German High Command, was 'Eeyore'.

Hitler had Admiral Canaris killed on 9 April 1945 and by the time OPJB came into action he had been dead three weeks. "If Canaris was not actually working for the British, it is clear that he was working against Hitler."[1]

Operation JAMES BOND was designed by 'M' and consisted of:
Director of Special Secret intelligence operations, Major Desmond Morton;
Prime Minister and 2IC of 'M', Winston Churchill;
Director of Naval Intelligence, Rear-Admiral John Godfrey; and
Lieutenant-Commander of the Royal Navy Intelligence Division, Ian Fleming (Godfrey's personal assistant).

---

[1] *Bodyguard of Lies*, p. 816.

The operation was sabotaged by King George VI using his half-brother, Anthony Blunt, who was also a KGB operative.

In *OPJB* Chris Creighton claimed his mission was, according to its subtitle, *The Last Great Secret of the Second World War*. Churchill referred to the mission as 'The Operation that never was'. What was not acknowledged about OPJB was that there was another mission tacked onto it. The Lieutenant of OPJB, Ian Fleming, only knew about it when he was switched to the second, and even more secret, mission on 1 May 1945.

Germany was losing the war and Britain needed to control all the assets of Nazi pillage (M's, point 4), get its double agents out (M's point 5), and remove any incriminating evidence on Britain or America (M's point 7). To achieve this they had to pluck Martin Bormann, Hitler's secretary and head of the Nazi Party Chancellery (the money) to England in exchange for the Nazis' Swiss Bank account numbers. Britain would thereby become the hero of WWII's surviving victims, especially the Jews.

This had been pre-negotiated with Martin Bormann. Training had started four months earlier in January for a mission date in May 1945. Those in Operation JAMES BOND were trained at Birdham Military Camp near Portsmouth in a large country house in Hampshire for four months.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 201

Christopher Creighton (21) led Operation JAMES BOND out of Berlin on 1–10 May 1945. He was the real inspiration for Ian Fleming's James Bond books (1953–64) and the cult movies that followed (1963–2006). In Chris Creighton (alias James Bond) we have one of the luckiest men alive. Luck was his nursery rhyme, his star, his life's work, and like the Fraud Squad, he was simply never suspected.

Operation JAMES BOND was of such a nature as to be considered unpatriotic. Therefore every measure of cover was put in place for the British agents.

"Extended cover was therefore put in place to show that for the duration of OPJB, from early January to early May 1945, he [Ian Fleming] had been either in the Far East, liaising with intelligence divisions of the Commonwealth navies, or else in Jamaica, where he had visited Sir William Stephenson (head of British Intelligence in the Americas and referred to as the 'quiet Canadian') at the end of February. So thoroughly was the deception planned" . . . he flew between England and Jamaica between training just to keep his alibi intact.[2]

---

[2] *OPJB*, p. 224.

Christopher Creighton's record was also continually altered and the record of his alias 'John Davis' was continually blackened making him appear as a convincing traitor.

Christopher Creighton was called to the underground war-room in London. King George VI "confided that he was worried about correspondence lodged in Schloss Kronberg, a castle near Frankfurt belonging to the Hesse family, of which Mountbatten was a scion[3] . . . Worse, he feared other letters might contain embarrassing evidence that his brother, the Duke of Windsor, formerly King Edward VIII, had shown pro-Nazi leanings. Unfortunately, he said, there were valid reasons for believing this to be true, and he was extremely anxious that the correspondence should not fall into the wrong hands. Anthony Blunt [KGB spy] had been assigned the job of finding the letters and bringing them out."

Christopher Creighton: "I could see he did not want to believe what he had just admitted."[4] Other officers who were contemporaries of George VI were amazed that he even enunciated such a difficult and complex sentence. They suspected that a double was used.

The Duke of Windsor, the abdicated King Edward VIII, was a V-Mann with an Abwehr number. This meant that he was an active German agent passing vital information to the Germans.

King George VI acknowledged this but failed to reveal his half-brother Anthony Blunt as a communist sympathiser and numbered Soviet operative. Anthony Blunt joined Operation JAMES BOND.[5]

While training at Birdham Military Camp over the next few days, Anthony Blunt copied the plans for Operation JAMES BOND and gave them to the Russians who were desperate to stop all top Nazi brass leaving Berlin, as they too wanted everything the Nazis had looted – money, gold, paintings, artefacts, Freemasonry war plans and occult secrets. Anthony Blunt was removed from the mission for being lazy, insolent, refusing to train, and stealing documents. If less connected, he would have been shot on the spot.

---

[3] Hesse was an area of Germany formerly under British control. As such, the Hesse family never closed their doors to the British. A 'scion' is a descendant.

[4] *OPJB*, pp. 136–37.

[5] Prior to Stalin's death in 1953, the KGB was called the NKVD.

Martin Bormann was Hitler's secretary and head of the Chancellery. A doppelgänger was found for him and was only ever referred to as 'Günther'. Doppelgänger Bormann was given plastic surgery and matching dentalwork in England. German dentalwork was completely different from that practised in Britain and MI-6 had long used Continental dentists in specially equipped British clinics.

Doppelgänger Bormann was then taken back to Berlin where he accidentally protected the real Martin Bormann from a bomb blast during their escape on 1 May 1945. As he lay dying, the real Martin Bormann put his mouth close to his, virtually kissing him as he thanked his doppelgänger for saving his life. This allowed him to finish him off with a phial of potassium cyanide poison stored in one of his teeth.

Operation JAMES BOND then kayaked down the River Spree and Hitler's chief deputy Martin Bormann was taken back to Britain, given plastic surgery, and taught how to speak and walk differently. He was given a life in London, and when that got hot, life in a country town as Herr Martin Schuler. Becoming depressed, he was given a fake death in 1956 and on 29 April 1956 flown to Paraguay in central South America where he died in February 1959.

At the time of the real Martin Bormann's death, Peter Broderick-Hartley, a doppelgänger in training for the previous eight years, surfaced in the south of England and took Martin Bormann's place in 1960, dying in 20 June 1989. He specialised in overacting in public and giving German/Jewish relations a bad name.

Even after the real Bormann's death (1896–1959) British Intelligence still faked his life with doppelgängers in England, Italy and Germany. 'The Martin Bormann illusion' became a competition for the longest-running doppelgänger (44 years) and the longest-running unnecessary doppelgänger (30 years) and was recognised as a secret intelligence coup over the media and the masses.

In 1946 rumours were put out that SS men were guarding Martin Bormann in the Alps near Hitler's old retreat at the Berchtesgaden on the Austrian/German border. Later in 1946 the hideout was bombed by the Americans in a rather public display and they captured one of the SS 'actors' who confirmed they had been protecting Martin Bormann.

Then a motorcade, apparently carrying Bormann, drove through Austria and Italy followed by a British war-crimes investigator

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

The Bormanns.

(forerunner to the pitifully useless UN). He was to follow at a distance and was repeatedly denied permission to arrest the fake Bormann.

> "When they reached the Italian port of Bari, the dummy Bormann and his vehicle were hoisted in cargo nets aboard an unmarked ship which sailed away to an undisclosed location, 'rumoured' to be South America."[6]

This was the Rat Line – many rats used it. It was jointly funded by the US Army and the Vatican and when they arrived in South America they were protected by Vatican documents. This is why there were reports of Bormann in Argentina ten years before he actually arrived . . . and by then the search was over.

The Argentine documents released in the 1990s state that Bormann got through Italy by moving from monastery to monastery by way of Lake Garda and left Genoa on an Italian ship, landing at Buenos Aires. However, this is the fake story of his doppelgänger and made it all the way to Argentina as the official story. It even duped the spy ace, Ladislas Farago, author of *Aftermath* (p. 333) and at least 15 other books.

The lengths the Secret Service will go to, even in a foreign country, to hide the identity of a doppelgänger are endless. But their real mission was to hide, for as long as possible, the story that follows.

treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

Just as Operation JAMES BOND had got Martin Bormann to the edge of the River Spree in central Berlin, on the evening of 1 May 1945, and were scaling down the river walls into their kayaks, Susan Kemp (who later became Director of 'M') gave Ian Fleming, the Commander of OPJB, "*an urgent but totally unexpected order*. He had been *recalled to London immediately. No reason had been given*, but he was to *return upstream to Müggelsee* [south-east of Berlin] as soon *as the escape party was safely away*. At 0200 a Lysander would come in to land on the disused road along the south-west shore of the lake, and pick him up . . . *an order had been given. Fleming was recalled*: that was it. Caroline Saunders had come downstream in one of the motorboats: in a matter of moments, Fleming [37] had gone down over the wall on a rope and was aboard it. As they pulled away, I [Chris Creighton, 21] called out, 'Good luck!' Fleming's reply was typical: 'Don't go and ponce up all our good work now, Christopher."[7]

---

[6] *OPJB*, pp. 221–22.

[7] *OPJB*, p. 178. Author's emphasis.

Chris Creighton then became commanding officer of Operation JAMES BOND. Soon after, they received a signal directly from General Donovan of American Intelligence saying that "Anthony Blunt belonged to a *homosexual Marxist* secret society called *The Apostles* at Trinity College in Cambridge, and that he had been a member of the *Communist Party* for the last nine years."

These facts were all covered up by MI-5, generally run by the Anglicans (British Catholics) and Freemasons. The head of all three was King George VI – Anthony Blunt's half-brother. King George VI was sabotaging M's mission and the James Bond operatives.[8]

Spymaster: "George VI would not have understood what he was presiding over and would have been used merely as a rubber stamp."

As a favour to Morton and Churchill, MI-5 did a back-room deal and pulled Ian Fleming out, but not James Bond (Chris Creighton) whose mission was paddling straight into alerted Russian fire. The only thing that saved them was a Russian-speaking beauty on board, who was one of their agents.

Ian Fleming didn't go straight back to London. He was being shifted to another mission that had been tacked on to Operation JAMES BOND. After the Führer had faked his death the day before, he made contact with his British opposite (Winston Churchill) and confirmed as much. He also reminded Churchill, in perfect English, that he was a British double agent, trained in Tavistock[9] from February to November 1912, gave his British military number, and confirmed that he had completed all missions (and then some), and requested to be evacuated to the "pre-negotiated safe haven".

Winston Churchill complied. It gave him the excuse to save one of his best friend's sons, the personal assistant to the Director of Naval Intelligence, Lieutenant-Commander of the Royal Navy Intelligence Division, and commander of Operation JAMES BOND, Ian Fleming.

What Ian Fleming experienced in the next 24 hours was an even bigger mind-bender and one that drove him to drink and bank debt for the next eight years.

---

[8] From 1940 the 14th Duke of Hamilton (Nazi) had huge control over the Freemasons. MI-6 is currently run hands on by QEII and MI-5 is controlled by Prince Charles.

[9] The Psych-Ops school was called Tavistock from 1920/21 after the school in Ireland was closed down due to civil war and new land was gifted by the Rothschilds.

If OPJB was 'the mission that never was', then the secret mission tacked on to it would be the most secret, shredded, and disavowed mission ever, and bound to remain secret until all parties were dead and even after that. Ian Fleming had already got all he needed from Martin Bormann and the JAMES BOND mission was about to paddle for 10 days into a Russian trap instigated by the communist sympathisers, Anthony Blunt and King George VI.

OPJB paddled during the night and camped under cover during the day in the Wannsee near Pfaueninsel Island where Goebbels gave his phenomenal party during the 1936 Olympics for two thousand guests, with huge fireworks many thought predictive of war. The next day, on the afternoon of 2 May 1945, under no German fire, but under heavy Russian fire, something really interesting happened.

> James Bond (Chris Creighton):
> "Now the Pfaueninsel [an island in Lake Havel, south-west of Berlin] was again under intermittent bombardment, this time from Soviet armour, which had advanced into the suburbs of Kladow, on the western shore of the Havel. During the afternoon a *Junkers sea-plane* came in to land on the Wannsee, close to the big island [Pfaueninsel]. *We speculated that this might represent a last-minute attempt to lift high-ranking Nazi to safety*, and sure enough, *two small boats, one a motor yacht, the other a gaff-rigged yawl*, came out, apparently to make contact with the pilot. No sooner had they appeared than the Soviet gunners took up target practice on both. The motorboat headed away at full speed and made good its escape. *The Junkers took off, also unscathed*. But the slow-moving yawl was less lucky: a direct hit blew it to pieces, and it went down, so far as we could see, with all hands. For us professional sailors, at action stations and highly trained in search-and-rescue techniques, it was terrible to have to stand by and watch helplessly as people drowned in front of our eyes. The incident shocked us, and made us all too well aware of what would happen if one of our kayaks were hit by a Soviet shell.[10]

---

[10] *OPJB*, pp. 185–86. Author's emphasis.

Plane Sailing

This is a point of history that's worth looking at in detail. If Hitler was to escape out of Berlin by plane, he would have put a great deal of effort into selecting the right plane, or planes, to escape in.

Hitler would have debated between three categories of plane. The first choice would have been the most capable VTOL evacuation seaplane (the German version of Short Take Off and Landing) and that would be the Heinkel 115. The second choice would have been an easily recognised unarmed passenger plane, unlikely to be seen as a threat, the least likely plane to be shot down and with as big floats as possible. The third choice would have been whatever was available.

Any of these three choices should have been able to fly the 1500 km from Berlin to Barcelona in one stretch at a minium speed of 190 mph/300 kmph to match the Lysander he was eventually to fly with.

Although the point of view of the James Bond team was very distant and obscured, they were all trained in plane spotting and reported a Junkers landing on Lake Havel. According to *The Last Days of Hitler* it was a JU52. I don't disagree, but there were scores of Junkers planes of which many could be mistaken for other aircraft and there were at least 28 different models of JU52s.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

WWII aircraft expert: "The first choice of plane for the VTOL on water would have been a seaplane that was: (a) available with spares so as to be readily employed by the RAF version of KG200, which operated captured British and American aircraft; (b) fast; (c) capable of diving; (d) able to stop and start in a short distance; (e) relatively quiet; (f) able to carry heavy loads like gold; and (g) proven as the best aircraft in the fleet.

"Seaplanes are weighted differently from land planes and land horizontally with their weight over the wings. Land planes tend to land with the tail wheel first and have their weight behind the wings.

"Seaplanes have a higher torque for take-off and a lower cruising speed, so they tend to have three or four propeller blades. The JU52 had two propeller blades and its single engine was underpowered which made water take-offs unreliable to say the least.

"For the JU52 to be adapted as a seaplane, it would need greater torque for take-off. It would have to have been the 3-engined version, the JU52/3m, and most likely with the propeller blades increased from 2 to 3. This still left the problem of the weighting of the plane and this was compensated for with very large floats.

"No one with half a brain would try and land a twin-blade propeller single-engine JU52 on a lake (especially in rough weather) and if they did, no one with experience would expect to take off again. The JU52 was too risky to use on such an important mission. The later three-engined JU52/3m was a better bet and had the advantage of being recognised as a non-fighter transport aircraft.

"Junkers never made Catalina-type planes that landed on their bellies, planes with roof-mounted wings, or bi-planes. Junkers did make the twin-engined glass-nosed JU88 from December 1936 and these matched with the Dornier Do17 and the Heinkel 111 quite closely.

"They were all similar length (14.2–16.6 m), similar wingspan (18–22.6 m), similar height (4.2–4.7 m), similar speed (440–510 kmph) and all had enough range (2108–2150 km).

"The problem with all of them was they were known to be combat aircraft carrying 1–2 tonnes of bombs and machine guns. This made them a target and ruled out the more modern JU88 as a possible EVAC seaplane."

The Heinkel He115 (August 1937–44) was also similar in that it had a glass nose, twin engines, was 17.3 m long, had a 22.2 m wingspan, a height of 5 m, a slower speed of 349 kmph and a range of 2100 km. The Heinkel had 9-cylinder BMW radial engines while the Junkers had 18-cylinder BMW radial engines. The wingspan, dimensions and height, as well as the engines and look of the plane, were very similar.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

The Heinkel He115 had an aluminium and rope ladder and the Heinkel He115B had a torpedo belly that could be modified with a retractable harness falling out to lift two people with ease. This would have been very difficult to see from a hidden low-level position.

The Heinkel also had six struts per float which would have further obstructed the view and these may well have been modified with bulletproof side walls. It would have been simple enough to drive right under the Heinkel and for the passengers to be transferred without getting wet.

The Heinkel He115 was described as "a wholly outstanding machine in all respects. It was tough, beautiful to fly at speeds down to 75 knots and carried a substantial load at relatively high speeds. In 1938 the prototype was specially streamlined as the A-1 to set class records.

"By 1939 the long-range B models were in production which could carry 1420 kg at 240 km/hr for up to 3300 km. They were also used by the British RAF for secret agent dropping between Scotland, Malta and North Africa.

"The 141 E-models were built in 1944 to bring the total past 400. They were used for armed reconnaissance, shallow dive bombing and casevac [casualty evacuation]."[11]

WWII aircraft expert: "The Heinkel He115 was a reliable seaplane with plenty of spare parts. The KG-200 squadron used special Allied aircraft and also German aircraft, which they dressed up to look like foreign aircraft. JU88 'fighters' were also painted to look like JU88 'bombers' with the bomber's glass noses painted on. This was done to lure the RAF into attacking from the front, the most lethal part of the JU88 'fighter'."

The Heinkel He115 would have been the perfect choice for Hitler as an escape plane because it was more than capable of flying the return trip from Berlin to Barcelona (3000 km) without refuelling and was considered one of Germany's most solid fighting aircraft.

The problem with the He115 was that it was too good an aircraft and was known to carry one tonne of bombs, plus machine guns. The He115 was the best plane for the job, but it was too much of a target.

The second choice, the easily recognised unarmed passenger plane, unlikely to be seen as a threat, was best satisfied by the Junkers JU52/3m.

Single engine Junkers JU52 were built from 1930 with two propeller blades and a top speed of 250 kmph (155 mph). They were poorly armed and slow so many were shot down. As such they always needed an escort and weren't considered a threat without one.

From April 1931 these were upgraded and fitted with three engines (BMW 132T Radial Piston Hornet engines, 725 hp each) giving the JU52/3m a maximum speed of 316 kmph (195 mph) and a range of 1300 km (808 miles). These were built as seaplanes from 1932–45 with the later models having three-bladed propellers.

The JU52/3m had a length of 18.9 m, a wingspan of 29 m and a height of 4.5–6.0 m, depending on wheels, skis or floats. But most importantly they had very large floats, 12 m long by 1 m high. This was enough to hide the top of a conning tower from a rising submarine.

---

[11] *Hitler's Luftwaffe*, p. 186.

The JU52/3m were reliable and had plenty of spare parts, but had little else going for them. They were not fast, great divers, VTOL, or quiet, and could only carry moderate loads off the water. They were considered an unthreatening transport aircraft and people had affection for them. This was their main advantage.

The JU52s were variously nicknamed the 'Iron Annie', 'Auntie Ju' and 'The Corrugated Coffin' because of the corrugated iron fuselage that protected a very solid airframe.

During the Spanish Civil War[12] the Junkers JU52/3m ferried more than 10,000 Moorish troops from Morocco to Spain as well as dropping 6000 tonnes of bombs. They generally carried 2 x 7.92 machine guns and could be fitted with a variety of bomb brackets. They were commonly used by the Condor Legion in Spain (German troops) and would not attract any special attention there.

The JU52/3m entered into service as troop transport and bombers. They were used by Lufthansa and served Madrid as airliners, which was slightly embarrassing when the same German planes were used to drop bombs less than a mile from the airport during the Spanish Civil War essentially a practice war for WWII.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

From 1937 the JU52/3m were purportedly withdrawn from their bomber role and used for transport and bomber training only. By 1939 over 1000 JU52 were in service and eventually 5415 were built. As a Lufthansa airliner they could carry (only) 17 passengers and travel from Berlin to Rome in 8 hours, which at the time was considered fantastic. They also served as airliners in Finland, Spain and Sweden, as mail carriers in China, and hauling lumber in Canada.

In delivering mail, carrying lumber, passengers, troops and doing bomber training, the JU52s developed a friendly and unthreatening reputation. After 1939, JU52s were recognised more and more as a civil transport plane.

During WWII the JU52s dropped paratroopers into the Netherlands, Ardennes, Crete, the Mediterranean, North Africa and the Baltic States. The 'Iron Annies' were popular, reliable, generally recognised as an unarmed plane and became the most famous German transport of WWII.

---

[12] Spanish Civil War, 16 July 1936–1 April 1939.

Top: Heinkel 115.
Middle: Condor Focke-Wulf 200C-1 Condor, SG+KS.
Bottom: Junkers JU88.

The JU52/3ms were continually improved upon and not all of these improvements were made public. Later models were powered by 3 Pratt & Whitney Hornet radial engines with a maximum take-off weight of 10 tonnes.

The JU52/3m g5e had interchangeable ski gear with an exhaust that de-iced, and even later JU52/3ms had three cells capable of carrying 1.5 tonnes of bombs in the fuselage and 3 x 7.92 mm MG15 rearward-facing guns with a total of 1800 rounds. Improved versions had more modern radio equipment, upgraded bomb-release mechanisms and a take-off weight of 10.5 tonnes with an economical cruising speed of 210 kmph.

The JU52/3m g10e was an improvement on this again with wheels, skis or floats and was powered by 3 BMW 132Z radial engines, a glider tow coupling and strengthened landing gear for a maximum take-off weight of 11.5 tonnes.

The final production version of this was the JU52/3m g14e with additional armoured protection for the pilot, 13-mm MG131 guns to the rear, 7.92-mm MG 15 guns in each beam position and another over the cockpit in the low drag cupola position.

By manipulating public perception Hitler had transformed a successful bomber plane into a much-loved transport aircraft. The appearance of the plane was not improved upon from 1930 and their latest improvements were largely kept out of the public eye so that by the end of the war the JU52/3ms were the aeronautical version of a hotrod – highly powered, strong on take-offs, able to carry huge loads, well protected and defended, but still an ‘Iron Annie’ – all affection and no threat. The plane was also in common use in Spain so landing there was not of any particular note. This was the perfect plane for Hitler’s RAPWI (Recovery of Allied Prisoners of War and Internees).

In addition to these general improvements, the belly of the JU52/3m g14e seaplane could be modified into two long trapdoors as was common to many planes. The 12-m-long floats on the JU52/3m seaplane tapered from 1 metre to 0.6 metres and sat about 0.5 metres above the water. The distance from the top of the float to the belly of the plane was another 1.5 metres. With two trapdoors 1 metre wide, this only left a gap of 0.5 metres from the top of the float to the bottom of the doors and this gap was further obstructed by eight struts each side.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

If the conning tower of a submarine rose to 0.5 metres above the surface there was no way to sight it and if it rose to within 1 metre of the belly of the plane there was no way to sight who travelled between. This was near perfect protection that only the bombing of the plane could have destroyed, and Hitler had organised German bombing on the Russians just for this occasion.

The Junkers JU52 was selected for the very reason of all its failures. It was recognised as a slow passenger aircraft, had not carried bombs in many years, was known to have the minimum of machine guns, was a relatively old and easily recognised design and was not considered a threat by anyone[13] . . . but the vastly improved JU52/3m g14e was capable of travelling at over 316 kmph (195 mph), had a range of 1300 km (808 miles), and additional mileage could be supported using fuel bladders inside the aircraft. Most importantly the JU52/3m g14e could keep up with a Lysander on a trip to Spain.

The Junkers that landed on Lake Havel was a JU52/3m g14e, with 3 BMW 132Z radial engines, a maximum take-off weight of 11.5 tonnes, 13-mm MG131 guns to the rear, two 7.92-mm MG 15 beam guns, a 7.92-mm MG 15 cockpit gun, armourplated cockpit, 12 metre x 1 metre floats, an opening belly with 1-metre wide doors, oxygen, and a typewriter. There were no reported shots hitting the plane and it left Lake Havel “unscathed” at 4.24 pm on 2 May 1945.

It appears that Hitler had planned the history of the Junkers JU52/3m with this escape in mind. ‘Iron Annies’ had drawn on the affection of almost everyone. They were not considered a threat and their ‘hotrod’ improvements were not noted. As such they became the best escape aircraft from Lake Havel on 2 May 1945.

Hitler’s destination to Barcelona was pre-empted 11 days earlier on 21 April 1945, the day after his birthday celebrations. In the process, many of his Berlin staff were killed and many of Hitler’s secrets died with them. This terminated links with his new destination and meant that Hitler arrived in Barcelona as a disempowered individual rather than a world dictator.

---

[13] Most JU52s were destroyed at war’s end, but a small number were still manufactured in Spain (170 by CASA in Getafe) and France (400) after 1945 and most of these were fitted with 3-blade propellers. Some JU52/3m g4e were used by the Swiss air force as transport until 1981.

> “The last flight made by a Fw 200 *Condor* (and also the last flight of any great distance by the pre-war *Lufthansa*) was on the evening of 21st April, 1945. The plane, hastily loaded with the luggage of the Berlin head office staff, was to fly the staff to Munich, and then on to Barcelona. The plane was to be flown by Flug-kapitan Kunstle. It is known that the plane duly took off for Munich, overloaded in the confident knowledge that no enemy plane would appear in such bad weather. The *Condor* was never seen again, although enquiries were made and continued for years, in Germany, Switzerland and Spain. But it was not until ten years after the war had ended that any explanation was forthcoming. Then traces of a four-engined aircraft were discovered near Munich, just outside a place called Müldorf. The plane had burnt out, but investigation showed that the surviving wreckage was of the last German *Condor*.”[14]

Pommie Spies: “The Fw 200 *Condor* was carrying the Führerbefehl [the Führer command], the colonels, majors, captains and leutnants – all of Hitler’s high staff that did not want to stay in the bunker with Hitler. Hitler treated this act as somewhat treasonous.

“The Fw 200 *Condor* had ‘D-ASHH’ over-painted on its side indicating that it was a C-3 *Condor* manufactured before 1939. Still fitted with its seats, it had been used for VIP transport throughout the war and was now being used to transport the Führerbefehl to Barcelona.

“It was important that this plane exploded. It had the escaping Führer command, all their documents, and contained evidence of many high-level meetings during the war, including those with British, American and Russian high command. This terminated any leaks they may have provided after the war and was a vital connecting piece that needed to be destroyed for official history to remain unchallenged.

“When the Fw 200 *Condor* D-ASHH landed in Munich for refuelling, a time bomb was put on the plane. It exploded in the air soon after, with its remains scattered over a Bavarian pine forest, just as planned.

“If the aircraft had crashed intact then it would have gouged a landing strip through the pine trees, the fuel would have incinerated everything on the plane and the forest would have caught fire. This would have been a crash without mystery.

“It was essential that the plane blew up in the air so that everything was scattered far and wide with no tell-tale gouge through the pine trees or the forest catching fire. It was essential to delay discovery until as much of the evidence as possible was destroyed and for the event to remain a mystery. This worked and the plane was not discovered for another nine years, in 1954.”

Esparo Sope - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

Spymaster: “If one walks in that Bavarian forest today, it is a place of deadly quiet. There are the odd bird sounds, but no major animal noises. The pieces of *Condor* are scattered widely. Most are small pieces from around the rear spar [aircraft part]. The rear spar was always a problem and those with extra fuel tanks for Atlantic flight had their spars extensively strengthened. This was one of the early Condors whose rear spar may not have been extensively strengthened.

“It would not have taken a huge charge to destroy the aircraft and would have been quite easily accomplished with a British barometric bomb, with an incendiary included for good measure. One of the pieces I picked up from the forest floor was fuselage, schwarze grün on one side [black green is a Luftwaffe camouflage colour] and charred on the other side. Charring is the sign that the fuel load had been ignited, probably in the air. Whoever said the British weren’t thorough?

“I could find no human remains, but I had no doubt they were there all around me. There would never be a memorial here for these people. In serving their Führer faithfully, they had come to know too much and paid the ultimate price.”

Another top secret KG200 transport was downed in March 1945. The B17 ‘Flying Fortress’ crashed shortly after takeoff from Echterdingen, near Stuggart. It was fully crewed with an American pilot (Oberseld Webel Knappenschneider) and carried ten members of the French ‘Vichy’ Government. All died except for the tail gunner.

When Luftwaffe HQ investigated the crash, one Luftwaffe officer quickly declared the cause as ‘sabotage and probably a British barometric bomb detonated prematurely’.

There was much speculation amongst Detachment Olga (the sub-Squadron of KG200) and the officer was asked for further comment. He declined on the basis that stopping to comment would probably guarantee his death and instead concentrated on perfecting his disappearance.

The lower ranks of the Luftwaffe had run out of rations and the Quartermaster used the luxuries that survived the fire as food to the end of the war. “It was just dumb luck that we never lost all that lovely grub.”[15]

---

[14] *Design for Flight*, p. 92.

[15] Story partly sourced from P. W. Stahl, *KG 200*, pp. 147–48.

Real Doppelgänger Deaths and Faked Real Deaths

Spymaster: “When Stalin expelled the ethnic Germans out of Russia, some were trained in the GRU Spy Factories in the Baltic Republics. One of these was then infused into the German Army as a driver. He initially drove for the Abwehr, but was eventually transferred into the SS and rose to the equivalent rank of sturmbannführer.

“On 22 April 1945, the first Soviet armies reached the outskirts of the still fiercely defended Berlin. Stalin had organised special teams in his WWII military counter-intelligence service, Smersh, to locate Hitler dead or alive. [*See Smersh*, *Appendix 7*]

“Late in the afternoon of 1 May, the Russian SS sturmbannführer walked through the smoke and ruins of Berlin towards the Russian lines where he began whistling a Russian folk song. This was whistled back to confirm their shared origins. The sturmbahnführer then told the Russian troops that Eva had acquired a new blue dress and Hitler had pinned his Gold Party badge on Frau Goebbels dress. He left as the Goebbels children’s deaths were being prepared and walked through the Russian lines with the troops in awe.”[16]

When the Russians invaded Hitler’s bunker they were tired, fearful and on edge, just as the Germans knew they would be. If Hitler was dead, his body must be somewhere. The first bodies they identified were of the Goebbels’ family. Magda Goebbels was wearing the Führer’s Gold Party badge just as the Russian SS spy had told them. The bodies of the Goebbels children were also there as was their father with his easily recognisable clubfoot.

vo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

A body was found with a small moustache and a bullet hole through the centre of his forehead. The corpse looked barely 40, whereas Hitler was 56 and looked 70. One of the men from headquarters of the first Byelorussio Army said, “No, this is not Hitler.”[17] The Soviets then called in some captured Nazis and they all said, “No, no, not Hitler”, but they still photographed the body with a correspondingly aged photo of Hitler placed on his chest. They just happened to have a 17-year-old photo of Hitler aged 39 (1928), which corresponded to the age of the dead doppelgänger and did not use a recent photo of Hitler (56) for identification. The Russians were exhausted, dead keen on capture and susceptible to fooling even themselves in order to please Stalin.

The Fritzes (Germans) were not being difficult as they easily could have been and they led the Soviets to a second proposed Hitler body buried on top of a shell hole near the entrance of the bunker. The crater was filled with loose earth, and when stood on, it sank.

A body of a man and a woman were dug up. Both were scorched beyond recognition but the remains of a blue dress was unearthed with them. The dress helped convince the Russians that the female body was Eva Braun and that the male body next to her must be Adolf Hitler. Being Russians they began celebrating as soon as the Commissar (Soviet Party official) had informed Stalin of the find. The autopsy would be performed the following day.

The next morning, in the cold light of day, things were not looking so good. Fifteen bodies were found in the Chancellery garden including Joseph and Magda Goebbels, their six children, Adolf and Eva Hitler’s doppelgängers and five other Hitler doppelgängers. The Goebbels family deaths on 1 May 1945 were designed to lend credibility to a scene of forensic fraud.

The Soviets placed the bodies in wooden crates and took them to Buch, an old lunatic asylum outside Berlin. The Freemasons love creating wordplay jokes in history and here “It’s madness by the book.”

Blood testing had indicated that neither ‘Hitler’ nor ‘Eva Braun’ had died from the poison inserted in their mouths after death. ‘Eva’ had died from shrapnel wounds and had dental cavities in her teeth. They realised that the cunning Fritzes had tricked them after all.

Spymaster: “They had a vote: ‘Ring Stalin and tell him the truth, or carry on lying.’ They voted unanimously to carry on lying.”

Hugh Thomas’s *Doppelgänger* (1995) showed that all stories contradicted each other in some way. With the bodies found outside the bunker, Eva Braun’s teeth did not match Eva Braun’s dental records; and the woman had died from shrapnel wounds, not cyanide as the SS had claimed.

With the supposed body of Hitler, all the teeth were loose as if they had been plucked from other bodies. The left leg had been burnt away, “as if to conceal some defect Hitler did not have, while the rest of the body was only lightly torched", but enough to remove all fingerprints. This concurs with the actions of Otto Günsche, Hitler's SS Adjutant, who soaked the fake Hitler and Eva Braun bodies with gasoline in the courtyard and threw an ignited rag on them at 4 pm on 30 April 1945.

---

[16] The spy was deliberately kept alive by the order of an SS General, probably Fegelein.

[17] Byelorussio is a big part of Russia above the Ukraine. They consider themselves ‘White Russians’.

The Soviets refused to tell the Americans or British what they were up to, let alone ask for help. The autopsy was not a perfect autopsy. It was crude and carried out under less than ideal conditions between 3–8 May 1945. The teeth were the only clue as to Hitler's identity so the Soviets scoured Berlin looking for Hitler's dentist.

Miraculously they found two people who said they were part of Hitler's dental team. They drew pictures from memory of what Hitler's teeth looked like, and according to the ever-so-keen Russians, the dentists' hand-drawn pictures matched the body on the slab. Hitler's last dental work was seven months earlier, in September 1944.[18]

The chances of Hitler's dental assistants being alive, available and remembering his dental records is absolutely astounding and all too convenient. It was part of a hoax to identify the fake unrecognisably burnt body as that of Hitler's. This worked for a while and fooled a few, but was completely dismissed with the work of Hugh Thomas in *Doppelgängers* (1995).

> "A medical report dated May 8, 1945, of an autopsy of a severely charred body came to the conclusion that this was 'presumably Hitler's corpse'. Other statements shortly afterwards cast doubt on this assertion. Then again Soviet sources maintained that Hitler had after all been identified on the basis of dental studies; but this statement, too, was questioned, and rumours arose that the British authorities were hiding Hitler in their zone of occupation."[19]

No X-rays were available at the time and Stalin held back the findings on the autopsy, turning Hitler's fake captured body into a State secret.

Hitler had now either shot himself, poisoned himself, been burnt beyond recognition, died at the head of his troops, or escaped. Stalin didn't believe it was Hitler's body and he placed a 7–15-year prison sentence on anyone who revealed the erroneous capture of Hitler.

---

[18] Dental assistant Kathy Frankerman was then immediately removed to a Soviet prison for the next 12 years.

[19] *Hitler*, p. 750.

Bormann Dies Again and Again

As for Bormann, there were two bodies found. The doppelgänger 'Günther' Bormann with plastic surgery was found on the night of 1 May 1945, then in 1965 a tip-off was received that Bormann's body could be found at the Ulap Fairground in Berlin, but no body was found at the time. It was not until 1972 that Bormann's real body was found there, 14 years older. That is, Martin Bormann had lived for another 14 years after 1 May 1945. The British knew this as they had arranged his escape, plastic surgery and supply of doppelgängers even after his death.

In the real Bormann (found dead in 1972) the teeth were close but had extra fillings indicating that he had lived beyond 1945 and had visited a dentist. Paraguay clay was also found in the cranium. The body had been brought back to Berlin after being buried in Paraguay for six years from 1959 to 1965.

Spymaster: "Apart from the Russians, the British also went to enormous trouble compromising the Germans. Many of the German nobles, who were related to their royal cousins in England, began to 'turn' during the war. They were convinced by an 'attached' British agent that they were serving a bohemian corporal and should become double agents. This resulted in the British running German officers in intelligence schemes. The proof of this is the number of German officers who were awarded British decorations and resettled in Commonwealth countries after the war. The Americans tended to award German military personnel who served them with a US decoration known as the 'Medal of Freedom', some of which were awarded posthumously."

The Germans issued a coloured book every month and the colour changed from month to month. In it were listed deserters and military personnel gone AWOL; German military personnel involved in the officers' revolt against Hitler (20 July 1944); and those who had been turned by the Allies and reinserted into the German military. The Americans called these people 'Joes' and most of them were recruited from POW cages.

One such death occurred while Hitler was visiting Kiev in Russia, just before the German offensive into Russia in 1943. The anti-Hitler group of Wehrmacht (army) officers that resisted Hitler were supposed to have smuggled a mercury bomb onto Hitler's plane, which would explode at a certain height.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Secret Service: "It was a Courvoisier brandy bottle with a mercury barometer bomb inside. This was wrapped around three brandy bottles and placed in the Focke-Wulf 200 in Kiev that the Hitler doppelgänger unit was flying in. It had a solid nose and no gun turrets. Leutnant von Schlabendorf delivered the bomb to von Treskow who didn't have the stomach to put it on board, so he asked an SS Officer to do it for him.

"The SS Officer was very touchy and refused to load it, but when von Schlabendorf threatened him personally, he relented.

"One theory says that it did explode and the real Hitler was killed. Martin Bormann then brought a doppelgänger in to double for Hitler and duplicated the bomb, returning it to Leutnant von Schlabendorf saying nothing. The new Hitler even changed his routine to make it convincing."

The Russian intelligence viewpoint at the time was that the real Hitler died at Kiev in 1943 and that a doppelgänger replaced him thereafter. This eventually became known as "the theory that was never enunciated".

'The theory that was never enunciated' was considered too hot, too secret, and too confusing for historians, who tend to write to the edges of a pre-defined cube, as opposed to juggling the cubes and letting them fall on the floor.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

Spymaster: "The Russians have a completely different view of the history of WWII. They believe Hitler was killed in 1943 in Kiev, Russia, and that a doppelgänger took over Hitler's role and started rooting Eva Braun for real."

Hitler had complete doppelgänger units who were so convincing that their true status would only show up under extensive interrogation. (This is not unlike 'made-for-viewing' Saddam Hussein doppelgänger units.)

The German Intelligence understanding of the Russian belief that Hitler had died meant that the Germans were surprised at the intensity of the Russian defence at Kursk. The Germans had always hit the Russians where they least expected trouble, but the Russians were given ample time to prepare defences at Kursk.

Many of the weapons delivered to the German army arrived full of undisclosed faults and design errors. Self-propelled guns had problems with engines, Panther tanks suffered engine overheating and turret traverse problems. Tiger tanks also had problems with engines. This combination of events, coupled with a Soviet artillery strike on the German attack as they organised, was enough to bring eventual disaster to the whole German operation.

Such a combination had never occurred before on any front involving German arms. This smacks of war sabotage and intelligence sabotage on both sides in order for the bigger picture to remain confused. The Russians believe that it was the real Hitler who died in Kiev in 1943 and a doppelgänger Hitler took over. The Germans believe the Hitler death was a doppelgänger, but thought it convincing enough for the Russians to relax their defences. At Kursk the Germans were expecting a disorganised Russian army and the Russians were expecting a disorganised German army. The result was pandemonium.

Evidence of the death of 'the Hitler' was obscured in battles and war damage. When Hitler was later found to be alive again and again, it gave him immortal status. The same year Churchill used exactly the same tactic with Leslie Howard who, as Churchill's doppelgänger, was killed over the English Channel.

This in turn leads to the question of whether or not this was an elaborate hoax so that Hitler and Churchill could meet in Cyprus. Cyprus remained a backwater during the war, whereas Crete, only a few miles away, was a hotbed of conflict. All of these islands including Kos are in the eastern Aegean, near Turkey.

Secret Service: "Cyprus, under British administration since 1878, is a place where something should have happened, but it is a Freemason stronghold and many of those who arranged the war were on Cyprus at the time. Nothing happened here during WWII. Cyprus doesn't appear in any of the war histories. It falls into the zone of Italian occupation, which is suspicious as it's a place where something should have happened."

Greek Intelligence Officer: "After WWII, Greece was the last country fought over. Britain wanted it the right side of socialist and Stalin wanted it farther left. Since Churchill and Stalin had worked together for over four decades, a compromise was reached. In 1947, 25,000 children, all under 12, were taken to Russia and trained as communists, with the intention that they would be repatriated back into Greece as adults and drive Greece left of socialist.

"Most of the 25,000 stolen children were between 7 and 9 years. At this age, children are most easily reconstructed, or to the Western way of thinking, deconstructed – that is, their subconscious thought patterns were shifted to conform with the Russian State.

"The programme was delayed, and it was 2005 before the former Greek children applied for Greek citizenship. Greece refused. There is no way they wanted communists in their country. In 2005, those Greek children were 63–70 years old, with Russian and Greek wives, children and grandchildren. They weren't 25,000 Greek children any more. They were 80,000 Greek Russians."

After WWII, Cyprus went to arms and virtual civil war, first between the British and the communist-backed Cypriots, then between the Greeks and the Turks. This lasted until 1975. Georgeios 'Costas' Grivas (1898–1974) became head of the underground campaign (EOKA) against British rule in Cyprus (1955–59). In 1971 he secretly returned to Cyprus and directed the terrorist campaign against the Turks (EOKA-B) for the unification of Cyprus with Greece. He died just before victory in 1975 – just as planned.

Archbishop Makarios III, the primate of the Orthodox Church of Cyprus (Mikhail Khristodoulou Mouskos, 1913–99) took over the administration as president of Cyprus (1959–77), and after his death the archbisopric and head of state were separated. It was no longer possible to gift 25,000 Greek children to Russian paedophiles.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Spymaster: "When the Cyprus Civil War finished, the Illuminati (those who organise war for profit and social engineering) moved to Kos between 1976–78. Kos has been a British base for over two centuries with British memorials and graves going back two hundred years. During WWII, Kos was protected by guerrillas prepared to fight to the death for their cause – partisans and the British together. Today it is used for important Freemasonry and paedophile meetings.

"This area is renowned for its war preparations. In the caves about Croatia, Tito stored arsenals, casing gear and military machines capable of manufacturing Mauser 98s, which meant they didn't have to import their arsenal. Tito (Winston Churchill's cousin) built this military manufacturing plant into the hills, expecting the Russians to invade after WWII.

"Bob Hawke, former Prime Minister of Australia, lost his brother in tragic circumstances when Group Captain Hawke, while on leave from the RAF, was accidentally blown up by a bomb flying an unauthorised flight of British ammunition into Croatia for the last round of British-inspired hostilities in the Balkans. When his plane was shot down, the CIA operative, Australian Prime Minister Bob Hawke, kept very quiet about it."[20]

Similarly, one of Martin Bormann's doppelgängers was Stalin's fabled spy 'Der Specht' (The Woodpecker). He faithfully supplied Stalin with information direct from the top for years, to the extent that Stalin believed he was the real Bormann and Kiev flight bomb had killed the real Hitler.

Stalin was a British Agent and had been gifted Russia in order to destroy it and create war with Germany – essentially doing Britain's job for them. The job of the British-run German doppelgängers was to supply people like Stalin with enough correct information to keep them involved, confident and advancing. In this way, the doppelgänger Bormann did a brilliant job, everything the British and German double agents wanted.

This particular Bormann doppelgänger died in Moscow soon after Germany's collapse on 1 May 1945. After the war, virtually all of the doppelgängers were killed. They had become useless curios and enormous security risks capable of inciting the world's most disillusioned people into mass riot. Until now, history has supported their demise and kept quiet about their role.

Ironically, Britain preserved its last doppelgänger until 1987, when he too was murdered for saying wildly true things about WWII . . . "everything was arranged . . . everyone had doubles". When the British SAS death squad, uniformed as American servicemen, came to kill doppelgänger Hess, he was hardly surprised. He probably welcomed death after 46 years in custody under a false identity.

Following page: Nuremberg Rally; destruction in Germany; the former Europen Union flags at Kos; the island off Kos; Kos ruins; and the famous Kos hotel.

---

[20] Officially Bob Hawke had one brother who died aged 19.

Operation WINNIE THE POOH
26 April–4 May 1945

With the use of doppelgängers, Hitler's entourage were specialists in deception, deceiving each other, themselves, the staff and any witnesses. Any witnesses they failed to control were either killed, ordered to suicide, suicided or swore the dreaded Holy oath of silence on penalty of death to themselves and their entire family. Such was the depth of their oath, secrecy and in-house revenge.

The Germans have Teutonic brains and always planned everything three years ahead and right down to the last detail. On 22 April 1945 Hitler announced to General Alfred Jodl (adviser on strategy and operations) and General Karl Koller (Chief of Luftwaffe Staff), among others, that he was intending to suicide.

Field Marshal Wilhelm Keitel (chief of Armed Forces High Command), General Alfred Jodl (adviser on strategy and operations) and Albert Speer (Minister of Armaments) then left the Bunker, with some impetus, and spread the news to the wider world. Once the 'secret from no greater source' got out, everyone was expecting Hitler to suicide and it was a big relief when he evidently did.

Hitler and his entourage had been in the Bunker from 16 January 1945, and from 21 April 1945 there were many permanent escapes out of the Bunker. These occurred on 21, 22, 23, 29, 30 April and on 1 May 1945. The Allies knew about them and did little to stop them, except when there was agreement with the Germans to stop them.

> **Operation WINNIE THE POOH deals with Adolf Hitler and Eva Braun's escape from the Bunker on 30 April 1945 and their flight out of Berlin between 4 and 5 pm on 2 May 1945.**

On 30th April 1945, there were ample opportunities for Adolf and Eva Hitler to escape from the Bunker. As cover for this, no less than six Hitler doppelgängers were terminated around the Chancellery Bunker. These were later found by the Red Army's mopping-up squads.

As the Intelligence version of history is studied more and more, Hitler's death reveals itself as a 'canned meat' operation. Stalin would have recognised this immediately as he had enacted the same thing on 2 January 1911, some 44 years earlier, during his escape out of the Sidney Street siege.

Both ‘canned meat’ operations came with Churchill’s active complicity.

Many histories have exposed the burnt Hitler and Eva bodies as fake. Anomalies in the bodies prove this well enough. The dead Hitler had no gunshot wound to the skull, although it was first reported that he had shot himself through the mouth. Eva was supposed to have died from poisoning, although the autopsy showed the female body in the blue dress died of shrapnel wounds, was bleeding from the breasts and had abundant dental cavities. If this had been allowed to happen to the Führer’s mistress there would have been courts martial and trips to the wall for everyone involved.

According to the Spymaster: “The use of the blue dress was a case of ‘sheep dipping’. It was a key part of the cover story that Eva Braun was to be wearing a blue dress during the escape, just as the Soviet undercover told the Red Army . . . There were also two skulls of Hitler, one found in the crater/grave attached to the body and another presented prior to autopsy.”

If anything, this points to a higher level of cover-up and the possibility and probability of complicity from all sides.

No war is ever finished
and each portion of unsolved war
leads to the next war.

From the point of Hitler and Eva’s bodies being brought out of their rooms there was no positive identification. Hitler was identified from his trousers and boots and Eva from her blue dress. In preparation for the exhausted Russians this was a classic case of ‘Keep It Simple Stupid’ – in this case, the KISS of death.

Once Hitler and Eva Braun had faked their deaths in their quarters, Goebbels went in followed by Reich Youth leader Artur Axmann. Axmann had ascended to the heights of the Hitler Youth on the basis of the loss of an arm in combat at the exact time that the previous director’s wife Baldur von Schirach had embarrassed Hitler. The one armed Director of the Hitler Youth was hardly a man to be trusted and more a man to comply with any and every deception.

With Goebbels having himself killed 29 hours after Hitler, Axmann became the most unreliable witness testament could provide.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

The German name for Hitler’s escape plan was “Testament” named after Hitler’s will and those sections of the Bible the Nazis were enacting to make the Bible prophesies come true. For the British it was “Winnie the Pooh”. Neither carried the prefix ‘Operation’ and little of these combined operations ever appeared in writing. As such, both plans could be spoken about openly without raising suspicion.

Sometime after Hitler and Eva’s doppelgänger deaths, the three doors to the Bunker-Chancellery bulkhead passage were locked. (See page 311.) These bulkhead doors separated the Bunker and the bulkhead passage, the bulkhead passage and the Chancellery, and the bulkhead passage and the Foreign Office. This provided ample space for Adolf Hitler, Eva Hitler née Braun and their escorts, SS Chancellery commandant Wilhelm Mohnke and five Hitler doppelgängers to hide while the mourners attended their Viking funeral pyre. **This was Plan A**.

There was also a 10-minute window for the same group of eight to climb up the round concrete watchtower, out the 0.6 x 0.6 metre (2 foot x 2 foot) opening, onto the reinforcing bars 1.4 metre (4½ foot) below, dropping the same distance to the ground and then making their way east, while all the focus was on their funeral on the southwest side of the building. **This was Plan B**.

Thus two clear exits were provided after the faked Hitler and Eva suicides. To assist in this, the guards had been ordered out of the Bunker and out of the Chancellery. The telephone exchange workers and the secretaries (Gerda Christian, Gertrude Junge, Elizabeth Schroeder, Johanna Wolf and Else Krueger) were relieved of their duties and took fresh air whenever it was offered. The Goebbels’ were locked in their room, spending their time with their children and mourning their impending murder-suicides. The ordered exit of all the guards, police guards and mourners attending the funeral provided a clear exit through all the Bunker passages.

This was the basic scenario, now let’s look at it in detail.

On 26 April 1945 Hanna Reitsch and her partner Field Marshal Ritter von Greim flew into Berlin and landed at Gatow Airport in West Berlin amongst heavy Russian small arms fire. The Russians were deliberately taught to fire at anything that flew over that wasn’t theirs, as opposed to the Americans that fired at anything that flew. While landing in Berlin, von Greim’s ankle was injured quite seriously and he was unable to fly any great distance, but they managed to change to a small plane and flew into central Berlin landing on the main East-West Axis the same night.

At their meeting that night Hitler 'officially' repeated his suicide plans to them, but this was cover talk. To add weight to this, Goebbels strode about the bunker ranting, "We are teaching the world how men die for their honour" and Hitler talked incessantly about General Wenck freeing Berlin and saving him. This was a message through his radio teeth to the ever-listening British. Meanwhile Bormann documented Hitler's every word creating a false history of his impending doom.

Hitler then stripped Goering of his post and made Field Marshal Ritter von Greim 'General of the Luftwaffe' and Hanna Reitsch 'Commander-in-Chief of the German Air Force'. Hitler then spent much of the next three days consulting with them in infinite detail over his escape flight out of Berlin.

Later that night, 26/27 April 1945, the first heavy barrage of Russian artillery hit the Chancellery and the details for Hitler's flight plan out became more and more pressing. On the night of 29/30 April, less than 15 hours before Hitler's show suicide, Reitsch and Greim flew out of Berlin in the tiny two-seater plane they had hidden near the Brandenburg Gate. Hanna Reitsch was a daredevil pilot and one of the few woman to win the Iron Cross during WWII. Von Greim was injured and she did the flying.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

WWII was coming to an end and thousands of Berliners were injured, exhausted, desperate and hungry. Along with their nursing staff they took shelter in their cellars, in tunnels and in the underground railway, which was clearly marked under the Red Cross as a hospital. When the Russians broke into the subway tunnels Hitler ordered (27 April) the locks of the River Spree to be opened (28 April) and the tunnels flooded. Thousands of wounded drowned along with their nursing staff and Russian soldiers.

This was not the first time the wounded had been deliberately killed in the name of the Führer. A military hospital full of wounded soldiers on the Eastern Front had been blown up earlier in 1945. As it was, the River Spree was ready to become a floating mortuary stained red with blood.

Around 6 pm on 29 April the locks to the Upper River Spree were closed and the waters were allowed to recede enough for kayak travel. At midnight on 29 April, Major Bernd Freytag von Loringhoven (aide to army chiefs) and his aide-de-camp Rittmeister Gerhard Boldt[1] (Boldt was also General Krebs' aide-de-camp) and Leutnant-Colonel Weiss left the bunker, got a number of kayaks out of storage, placed them in preparation for the escape teams, then paddled through the tunnels and dead bodies, killing any and all survivors. They then secured the exit and waited for the next escape team. Two groups of three bodies were then tied together and retained near the exit.

The Last Days of Hitler (repeated in *Hitler, The Survival Myth*) reports that Boldt's escape was down the East-West Axis towards the Kantstrasse under Russian fire and then to the Reich Sports Field where he met up with the adjutants Loringhoven and Weiss and continued south along Kaiserdamm (under more Russian fire), where at Pichelsdorf bridge they jumped in sailing boats (under heavy Russian fire) and sailed down Lake Havel (where the Russians would have seen their sails). But this was another lie for cover. It was a ruse and a nearly impossible ruse at that.

Leutnant-Colonel Nicolaus von Below (Hitler's Luftwaffe adjutant) and his batman Heinz Matthiesing (a resourceful barman) were the next to escape (just short of midnight 29 April). They each used a group of tied bodies as cover and floated down the River Spree using snorkels between the bodies to breathe. They made it to the west bank of Lake Havel by the morning of 30 April. Officially von Below was carrying Hitler's will and was supposed to deliver it to General Keitel, but he left before the official will was finished and only carried Hitler's 'cover will'.

They sent word back confirming their survival, equipment in place, and the best route to take. As such, von Below and Matthiesing were the scouts for Hitler's entourage the following night.

With confirmation of safe passage, at 2.30 am on 30 April Hitler said goodbye to about 20 people in the conference passage, but hardly moved. He mumbled to each individual and then said goodbye en masse, once again announcing that he was going to commit suicide. He mentioned this so many times to so many people that this has to be viewed with suspicion. When someone talks about suicide, they rarely do it, and it is usually a show suicide.

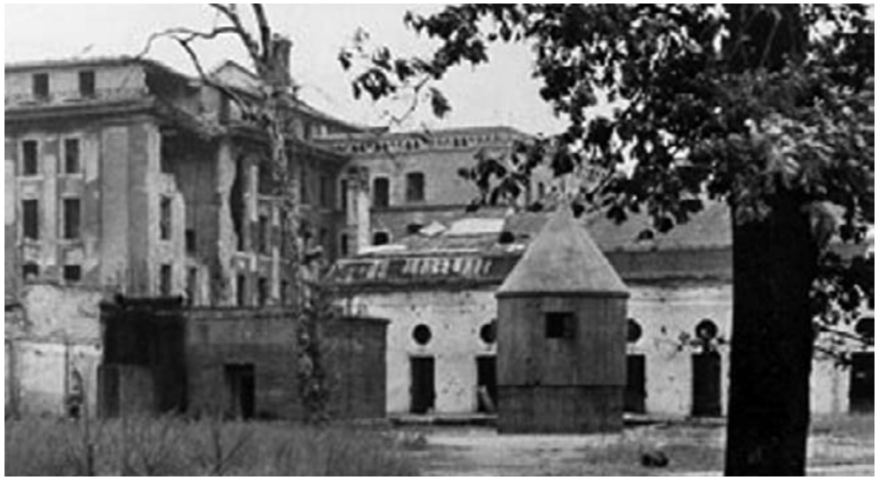
---

[1] Rittmeister is a cavalry rank.

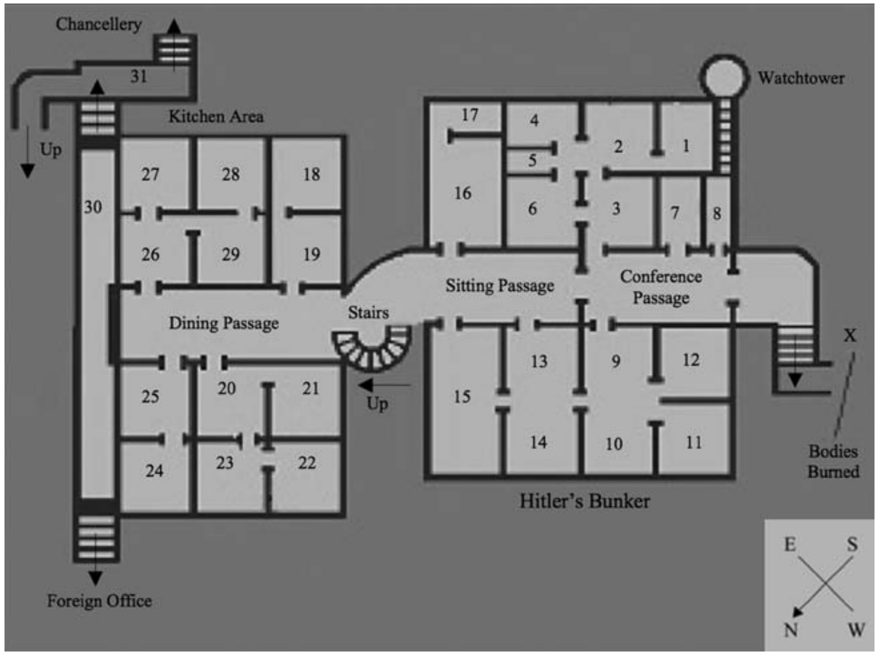
Hitler honours the Hitler Youth outside the Chancellery
on his 56th birthday, 20 April 1945.

Hitler and Eva in the last photos taken in the bunker.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -



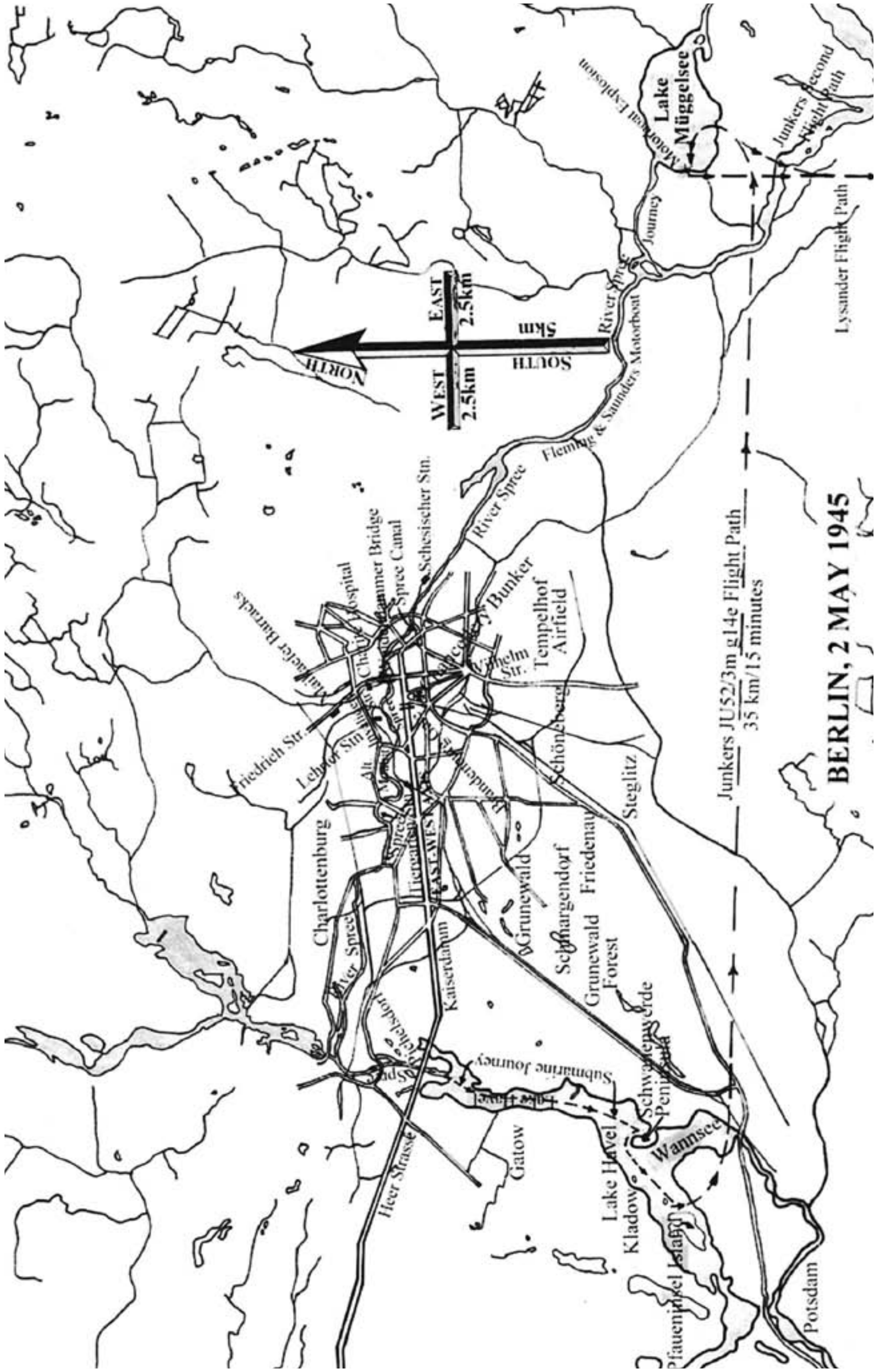
The Bunker watchtower (Plan B escape),
with the reinforcing bars noticeably removed.


Chancellery
31
Kitchen Area
Up
30
27
28
18
26
29
19
Dining Passage
Stairs
Up
25
20
21
24
23
22
Foreign Office
Watchtower
17
4
5
6
2
1
3
7
8
16
Sitting Passage
Conference Passage
X
13
9
12
15
14
10
11
Bodies Burned
Hitler's Bunker
E
S
N
W

Chancellery Bunker

1	Hitler's Bedroom	13 Telephone/Secretary/Guard Room
2	Hitler's Study	14 Emergency Telephone Exchange
3	Hitler's Anteroom	15 Diesel Generator
4	Hitler and Eva's Bathroom	16 Toilets
5	Eva's Bedsitting Room	17 Switchboard for Electric Lights
6	Eva's Bedsitting Room	18-19 Lumber Rooms (Timber)
7	Map Room	20-23 Magda Goebbels' and Children
8	Guards' Rest Room/Dog-Bunker	24-25 Servant's Quarters
9	Drawing Room	26-29 Kitchen Area
10-11	Dr. Ludwig Stumpfegger's Rooms	30 Bunker-Chancellery Bulkhead Passage
12	Dr. Joseph Goebbel's Bedroom	31 Butler's Pantry

Goebbels squeezed and SS Chancellery commandant Wilhelm Mohnke.


BERLIN, 2 MAY 1945
Junkers JU52/3m g14e Flight Path
35 km/15 minutes
Lysander Flight Path
Junkers second Flight Path
Lake Müggelsee
Motorboat Explosion
Journey
River Spree
Fleming & Saunders Motorboat
NORTH
SOUTH
5km
EAST 2.5km
WEST 2.5km
Schesischer Stn.
Spree Canal
Hospital
Bunker
Tempelhof Airfield
Wilhelm Str.
Schöneberg
Steglitz
Friedenau
Schmargendorf
Grunewald
Grunewald Forest
Kaiserdamm
Charlottenburg
River Spree
Friedrich Str.
Heer Strasse
Gatow
Submarine Journey
Schwanenwerder Peninsula
Wannsee
Lake Havel
Kladow
Pfaueninsel
Potsdam

Between 2.30–3.15 am 30 April 1945, Hitler and Bormann conspired in Hitler's rooms. Bormann had already arranged his rescue via the British some four months earlier and Hitler had been a British agent since his training at Tavistock from February to November 1912, some 33 years earlier. They were discussing their codes to alert the British to assist their exit and who could be trusted to support their British rescuers in their escape. Goebbels did not know of this plan, so his telegrams were not in full code.

The pressure of three months in a bunker brings out a lot of cabin fever and cabin fever expresses all sorts of suspicions. Since Bormann had sold out to the British (1 January 1945) and since the Bunker had been occupied (16 January 1945), Bormann had been particularly unpopular. In three months he had made no friends and spent his time documenting Hitler's every word – creating a false history of Hitler's impending doom as final cover.

Bormann's official records of what Hitler said were largely a fabrication so people would believe Hitler was desperate, sick and suicidal and would die even if he had survived the Bunker.

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 Mar

As further cover for this, all the bunker staff were allowed to get regularly drunk. This stopped them noticing anything strange, like an escape plan that excluded them and Bormann's notes being a literary version of Dr Morell.

At 3.20 am 30 April 1945, Bormann sent a telegram to Admiral Doenitz at Ploen near Hamburg in North Germany, but sent it through the Gauleiter of Mecklenburg rather than through ordinary communications. This was picked up by the signals officers on both the German and British sides and alerted the British. The double send meant that the British were especially alerted.

> The telegram read:
> "Doenitz! – Our impression grows daily stronger that the divisions in the Berlin theatre have been standing idle for several days. All the reports we receive are controlled, suppressed, or distorted by Keitel. In general we can only communicate through Keitel. The Führer orders you to proceed at once, and mercilessly, against all traitors. – Bormann.
> PS. The Führer is alive, and is conducting the defence of Berlin."

This was in Open Code, Reverse Code and Aesopian language combined. Open Code meant that it could be understood by knowing the events that were to unravel and with a few key words, like "Testament" meaning Hitler's escape plan. The British version of "Testament" was "Winnie the Pooh", and "Rabbit" for Hitler and "Ms Rabbit" for Eva Hitler née Braun. (They had married at midnight on 29 April 1945.)

Reverse Code meant that one could say, "conducting the defence of Berlin" and it meant, "escaping to save one's arse". "Against all traitors" meant, "pro-war traitorous Allies would assist their escape" and "Lead the way" meant, "the leader was on his way, play your part."

Aesopian Code was a background and refers to family structure and common literary works like *Winnie the Pooh*, *Peter Rabbit* or Wagner's writings. "Our cousins are all too quick" would mean "the Russians are advancing on the Bunker. Advance on them and they will fire over the top."

So "Testament against all traitors defending Berlin" would mean "Hitler is escaping with the Swiss Bank accounts and the secrets the Nazis had gathered from 1933–45 with the assistance of Ian Fleming, Chris Creighton, Anthony Blunt, Hanna Reitsch and his primary concern is his own welfare. All positions covered and all equipment functioning. Hitler in position for evacuation."

treasurer@platinumparty.org

It is interesting that the Soviets have never released this information before. Stalin, having been through British deconstruction, was the Soviet expert in unravelling Aesopian messages, but ensured the rest of this department was full of babushkas so only he got the message.

To the Gauleiter of Mecklenburg, Doenitz at Ploen and the British linked with Operation JAMES BOND, Bormann's 3.20 am telegram translated as:

> "The British are ready and waiting to complete the rescue and are set up in all their locations. German protection has been in place for several days with no shots fired. The escape route has been tested successfully and is secure. Anthony Blunt has the protection of Keitel and the Russians for Hitler's escape. Keitel is our man on the inside who will obfuscate till the end. Provide flak as cover and flares to light the way. Berlin has been sufficiently compromised for the escape. All doppelgängers and traitors are in place. [Anthony Blunt, Ian Fleming, Chris Creighton – Bormann's evacuation team and Hitler's evacuation team]. The Führer has announced his death and all suspicions have been covered. He is ready to escape into the open from midnight. The criminal Goebbels and his family will *really* die._
> PS. Despite reports of death, Hitler is alive and ready to kayak through the tunnels, which have been cleared of all survivors. Destination Fireworks Island [Pfaueninsel Island] and flight out."

On 30 April 1945, Hitler took lunch at 2.30 pm. Eva was not present. It is hard to get briefed for such a mission in the wee hours and take it on board for action. Eva was being briefed for her escape and waited for the arrival of her new signature blue dress. After lunch, around 3.10 pm, the secretaries were relieved of their duties.

"In the morning [of 30 April] the guards had been ordered [by an SS Escort officer] to collect all their rations for the day, since they would not be allowed to pass through the corridor of the Bunker again."[2] They were also given arms. This stopped the guards from checking anything going on in the Bunker or from using the Bunker-Chancellery passage. Their focus was to be on external protection and not on the internal workings of the Bunker.

Since their quarters, the "dog-bunker" or "guards' rest room", linked the conference passage with the stairs to the concrete watchtower (Plan B escape), it was essential that this passage be kept free of any witnesses. The watchtower had never been finished and the external protruding reinforcing bars allowed people to climb out of the tower window and onto the Chancellery garden, as was commonly done.

Hitler's personal SS adjutant Sturmbannführer Otto Günsche never let Hitler out of his sight. At 2.40 pm Otto Günsche telephoned Hitler's personal chauffeur Sturmbannführer Erich Kempka to send 200 litres of gasoline to the Chancellery garden. This gasoline had been carefully hoarded and guarded for months just for this purpose. Kempka went to the Chancellery and managed to locate 160–180 litres.[3]

On his return, he passed through the Chancellery-Bunker passage doors, which were still open at 3.38 pm. At Hitler's door he was greeted

[2] *The Last Days of Hitler*, p. 219.

[3] This would require at least 8 jerricans, but the photos only show 6 jerricans, amounting to 130 litres. This would have significantly reduced the bodies combustion.

by Kempka who said “The Chief is dead” and then made a gun with his right fingers and pointed them into his mouth. It was 3.40 pm.

Kempka carried the jerricans to the emergency exit of the Bunker. All of the remaining guards in the Chancellery were then ordered to leave the Chancellery and stay away from the Bunker. This removed any witnesses capable of defending themselves and opened up the Bunker-Chancellery passage as an escape route (Plan A), as well as the escape route from the watchtower over the Chancellery garden and into the Chancellery (Plan B).

After lunch, Hitler went back to his room, spoke with the newly briefed Eva and emerged for another farewell ceremony (3.10 pm) to his inner circle Martin Bormann (Hitler’s secretary and head of the Nazi Party Chancellery), Joseph Goebbels (Propaganda Minister), Werner Naumann (Goebbels assistant and State Secretary in the Propaganda Ministry), General Hans Krebs (the last German Chief of Staff), Vice Admiral Erich Voss, General Wilhelm Burgdorf (Army adjutant) . . . and to Ambassador Walter Hewel (Foreign Office liaison officer and old-time Nazi), Brigadeführer Johann Rattenhuber (RSD head and chief bodyguard for Hitler’s private police SS guards), Chief Inspector Peter Hoegl, Sturmbannführer Otto Günsche (Hitler’s personal SS adjutant), Heinz Linge (Hitler’s SS Orderly and personal valet), Konstanze Manzialy (Hitler’s Austrian cook) and Hitler’s secretaries Gerda Christian, Gertrude ‘Traudl’ Junge, Elizabeth Schroeder, Johanna Wolf and Else Krueger (Bormann’s secretary). Magda Goebbels remained in her rooms with her children the whole day.

Everyone was then dismissed to their rooms with the doors closed as they mourned the imminent death of their leader. This provided ample opportunity for Hitler and Eva to simply walk through the bulkhead door into the Bunker-Chancellery passage with the door closed behind them, but they returned to their room at 3.20 pm.

At their door stood Bormann and Goebbels. Bormann was a British agent and Goebbels had agreed to kill his family, himself and his wife the following day. Goebbels was in an emotive state, something approaching complete denial and there was no way he was a threat as a witness. Nor was Goebbels in a state to tell the difference between a real Hitler and a doppelgänger Hitler with a bullet through the back of the skull.

Hitler is said to have shot himself through the mouth with a 7.65 mm Walther pistol and Eva is said to have taken poison. Neither were true. The red carpet in Hitler’s room hid the blood and the blood found was of a different type from Hitler and Eva’s. Of the two Hitler skulls found, one had no bullet wound and the other had a 10.5 mm hole signifying a SS-controlled state-sanctioned killing. Eva had apparently taken poison, but the autopsy showed that she had died of shrapnel wounds. The Eva corpse had been removed from the streets and bled from the breasts. This made it a ‘canned meat’ operation.

As if on cue, straight after the complicitly timed shooting, the one-armed Hitler Youth director Artur Axmann arrived at the Bunker and was admitted straight into Hitler’s rooms where Goebbels sat with the two bodies, no doubt torn over the apparent Hitler and Eva deaths, his own impending death and that of his family. It was the Goebbels family deaths that would make the whole scenario appear real. Without them, Hitler and Eva’s deaths would have been exposed as fake in the weeks that followed. This would have led to a results-oriented hunt for Hitler, rather than the wild-goose chase that followed.

The wild-goose hunt for Hitler was the beginning of the Cold War. It allowed all sorts of British and American spy agencies to set themselves up in whatever country they chose to suspect. These were countries where there had been Nazi influence and the locations Hitler had chosen as options to escape to. These included South America, Norway, Greenland, south-west Africa, New Zealand, Antarctica and Spain. Spain was where Hitler went to, so the search teams stayed well away from there and the press always treated Spain as a joke location and diverted attention elsewhere.

If you had a Nazi problem you automatically received the cure whether you wanted it or not. Many of the repatriated Nazi spies went to South America followed by G-Men and to New Zealand followed by MI-6 retirees who posed as Rolls-Royce salesmen and wore cashmere coats and bowler hats up and down Queen Street at to-the-minute lunch hours. We used to watch them as kids, kick their umbrellas and stand on their heels so their shoes came off. “Frightfully . . .”

Antarctica was the place where the most advanced Nazi experiments were held, including their medical experiments, a eugenics society (dead at 45), Foo-Fighters and the attempt to create a new master race

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

– more or less Homo sapien 1.52, that is, a race of technocrats – so Nazi and American military scientists went there . . . say it isn't so.[4]

The communist Russians planned to take over a third of the world and did the same thing with Eastern Europe, although with a different excuse. As communists, they fought fascists and became fascists.

Politics is like a big ship and big ships have big rudders. The ship's gearing is never strong enough to move the big rudder so they have a smaller rudder behind which moves in the opposite direction and this moves the big rudder, which moves the ship of nations. Politics is first guided under the direction of the small impetus and against the direction of the big impetus.

Germany, under fascist leadership, became a socialist country, as was planned. Russia, a totalitarian communist country, became a fascist country (that taught the world the value of freedom) and directed Russia to socialism for the masses and fascism for the oligarchy. This is now the model of America – a fascist oligarchy controlling socialist masses. This too was planned.

Goebbels left and Axmann remained alone with the bodies for a short while, giving the latest briefing to the still alive Hitler and Eva who were hiding in cupboards in the room. He told of von Below and Matthiesing's successful escape down the River Spree, the tunnels loaded with bodies for cover, the kayaks and submarine in position, and Boldt, Loringhoven and Weiss ready to assist the kayak journey to the submarine.

Hitler had been exchanging his life with his doppelgängers ever since the mid-1930s "Gau doppelgänger contest" and was used to hiding – Eva less so.

Hitler's SS Orderly Heinz Linge then entered the room and wrapped doppelgänger Hitler's body in a blanket, completely covering the head, but showing his familiar trousers, the same ones every doppelgänger wore. Two other SS officers then carried the body up the stairs. The exchange occurred at the intersection of the conference passage and the guards' rest room so that it could be seen by the guard in the concrete watchtower.

Bormann (Hitler's secretary) then entered the room and picked up the Eva doppelgänger body and carried it to the passage where he handed it to Kempka (Hitler's personal chauffeur) who took it to the foot of the stairs and handed it to Günsche (Hitler's personal SS adjutant who never let Hitler out of his sight) who then gave it to another SS officer who carried it up the stairs to the garden.

Hitler's orderly, personal chauffeur and personal adjutant were chosen because they were physically closest to Hitler and their ID testimonies were the most likely to be believed. This commotion was seen from the watchtower by police guard Erich Mansfeld who became very intrigued.

The only people to enter Hitler's room after the gunshot were Goebbels, Axmann, Linge and Bormann – none of whom could be trusted to reveal anything of Hitler's Operation TESTAMENT.

Goebbels was dead within 29 hours. Axmann gave the latest briefing to the very much alive Hitler and Eva. Hitler's SS Orderly Linge was familiar with the doppelgänger scenario and had long sworn the Holy oath to secrecy. Still, he was sorry to see one of them go. Bormann was a British agent who planned his escape parallel with that of Hitler and Eva and had been a British agent for the last four months. As such, the immediate witnesses to Hitler and Eva's deaths were all completely unreliable.

As the bodies were taken upstairs, Hitler and Eva had two escape options. Plan A was into the Bunker-Chancellery bulkhead passage to wait for clearance into the Chancellery. This had a four-hour window. Plan B was up the watchtower and down the outside assisted by the reinforcing bars midway, and then into the Chancellery. This had a 10-minute window.

For Bunker security, only the bulkhead door between the Bunker and the Chancellery passage needed to be locked, but the bulkhead door between the bulkhead passage and the Chancellery (southeast), and the bulkhead passage to the Foreign Office Garden (northwest) were also locked. This kept people out, but it also kept the people inside hidden as long as the air lasted. The bulkhead passage was easily capable of holding eight people for four hours, from 3.50 pm to 8 pm.

The moment after Police Guard Erich Mansfeld left the watchtower (3.50 pm) Hitler and Eva left their room with SS Chancellery commandant Wilhelm Mohnke and five doppelgänger Hitlers providing cover.

---

[4] This can be taken as Homo sapien 2.51, depending on whether you understand the human race to be evolving, devolving, or just mucked around with.

treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 201

They made their way through the Bunker passages, through the bulkhead doors, into the bulkhead passage, locked themselves in and waited for the wake, which never came. It turned very quickly into a party. The bunker occupants smoked, drank and danced and the whole atmosphere was very happy.

Once security was lax and there was some promise of darkness Hitler's entourage made their move.

What joy Hitler could detect shamed him somewhat. It is always British practice to humble their agents on their war exit. It reduces the need to make phone calls and write letters to friends and relatives while under exiled house arrest.

In some ways Hitler's escape was reminiscent of the capture of Napoleon in 1815 and the escape of the Kaiser to Holland after WWI. These were also managed by the British, but the biggest British signature was the James Bond movies that were to come – always leaving with the girl, massive destruction behind them. That's Hitler and Eva and it kind of makes Hitler the original James Bond character. Hitler was the best double agent the British ever had.

Hitler's entourage of eight then left the Chancellery, escaped through vaults and tunnels, to the underground station at Wilhelmsplatz and walked along the underground tracks to the Friedrichstrasse and then into the semi-flooded tunnels.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

Around 10.30 pm the tunnel's exit floodgates were opened. This let many of the bodies out into the River Spree and would provide advanced cover further down stream.

Hitler's entourage then met up with Boldt, Loringhoven and Weiss (11 pm) who assisted Adolf and Eva Hitler into tandem kayaks. As the tunnels continued to drain, they travelled swiftly with the current.

With the bodies surrounding the kayaks, providing cover and distraction, Boldt, Loringhoven and Weiss then assisted Adolf and Eva Hitler up the conning tower and into the half-sized submarine (11.30 pm), less than 0.5 metres of the which was above the waterline.

With four crew on board, as well as Adolf and Eva Hitler, Major Bernd Freytag von Loringhoven (aide to army chiefs), his aide-de-camp Rittmeister Gerhard Boldt and Leutnant-Colonel Weiss, the submarine submerged (11.40 pm), motored out into the current (11.55 pm) with minimal engine power and then cruised down the River Spree under cover of the recently drowned hospital bodies. Flares lit their pathway from just before midnight.

At the beginning of the kayak journey, SS Chancellery commandant Wilhelm Mohnke waited for the signal that the passage had been successful then marched the five doppelgänger Hitlers back to the Chancellery and executed them around the Chancellery using a variety of guns including the 10.5 mm SS state-sanctioned signature gun on a doppelgänger Hitler whose dental work best matched Hitler's.

SS Chancellery commandant Mohnke then returned to the Bunker at 1 pm to take word back to Hitler's secretary and former head of the Nazi Party Chancellery, Martin Bormann, that the Testament was in force – the fully laden submarine escape was under way.

With no lights and without using sonar, which at the time, went 'beep' rather loudly, they waited until the flares lit the way from 11.55 pm. At midnight, using the engines to start and then principally for direction, they coasted down the River Spree as quietly as possible, using their three-tone grey paintwork and the mass of floating hospital dead as cover. They coasted down to Lake Havel at the same speed as the bodies and directed themselves into the middle of the lake, using their engines when the lake was wide and slow-flowing to catch up to more bodies in front.

By 4.30 am they had positioned themselves off the Schwanenwerde Peninsula and stationed themselves in the shadow of the morning light. From here Boldt, Loringhoven and Weiss were offloaded under cover of darkness and no flares, to be used as the eyes and ears of the submerged submarine. They were also used as decoys and sitting ducks on the water.

By morning the submarine with Adolf and Eva Hitler and four crew lay between the east of Schwanewerde Peninsula and the east bank of Lake Havel. In the afternoon they followed the shadows and moved several hundred metres to the northwest of the peninsula towards the middle of Lake Havel.

Private German boat builders began constructing submarines in 1891 and Germany established a submarine service in 1906 with the U-1. In 1942, the English built the X-craft, a two man mini-sub, part of the X5-X10 series. Even the British WWII magician Jasper Maskelyne built a mini-sub which sunk a German cargo ship carrying heavy water to their A-bomb laboratories. The same year the Germans built a mini-sub called the WK202 and by 1944 they were using Hydrogen Peroxide as an additional fuel source, providing more oxygen for greater combustion (as in the U-791). At the time many people did not believe mini-subs existed, including much of the British Navy.

"During the advance through Southern Holland a German one-man submarine was found washed up on the beach at Walcheren [Westkapelle, after the RAF bombing had turned the dykes into a lagoon]. Ralph Izzard inspected it and then excitedly telephoned Admiral Bertram Ramsay, Naval Commander-in-Chief of the Allied Expeditionary Force. 'Nonsense,' said Ramsay, 'there is no such thing as a one-man submarine.'

"'Very well, sir,' said Izzard. 'I'll have it sent round to your headquarters immediately [early November 1944].' And he had the submarine loaded onto a tank transporter and shipped off like a tiny tin whale. It arrived as the Admiral was finishing breakfast. He was still unimpressed. 'The thing's a toy,' he said.

"'I suggest, sir,' said Izzard, 'that you have a look down the periscope.'

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

"The Admiral did so, and staring at him from the other end was the still open eye of the dead German submariner who had been killed when his vessel foundered."[5]

Germany's 1942 WK202 mini-sub was 36.5 metres long, 6 metres deep, 3.6 metres wide and painted various shades of grey, doing its best to look like a shadow. The conning tower added another 2.6 metres and the breather pipes another 2.3 metres, which could be made retractable. The main chamber was 24 metres long and 3.6 metres high with the cabin 10 metres long. The torpedoes were retained just in case they were required to terminate Operation JAMES BOND as they carried Martin Bormann further down the River Spree.

The WK202 looked like it was straight off the Beatles album and when the yellow, red and green flares and parachute flares exploded over the River Spree from 11.55 pm on 30 April 1945, the grey submarine shone yellow in the murky and bloody waters . . . but then the Beatles were a Tavistock-trained MI-6 cover band and the Intelligence community are not immune to making historical jokes, especially since their lives and work are sworn to secrecy. "Yellow submarine" was also a play on Hitler's submerged Testament scout, Colonel von Below.

Spymaster: "I was told the 'Beatles' name was acquired from MI-6 and the name came from the Pharaohs who considered beetles significant."

Oxford Reference English Dictionary: "Beetle – an insect of the order of Coleoptera [Cleopatra, the last Ptolemaic ruler]; a type of compact rounded Volkswagen [created under Hitler]; *British useage*, a dice game in which a beetle is drawn or assembled" . . . war has its jokes.

Spymaster: "MI-6 asked me if I was an accountant because they always need accountants.

"I said, 'No, but if I said yes, you'd kill me when you'd finished with me.'

"They said, 'That's true.'

"MI-6 need accountants for transferring all the money away from the successful bands. They make 'em – they break 'em."

Pfaueninsel Island was the perfect regrouping and evacuation point and many of the high-ranking Nazis headed there for RAPWI (Recovery of Allied Prisoners of War and Internees). It lay in Lake Havel and was surrounded by water wide enough to land a seaplane in any direction. It was also downstream from the Bunker. If the submarine had to go upstream against the current its turbulence and extra noise could have become a factor in detection and therefore survival. The submarine went in the opposite direction to Lake Müggelsee and the flares lit its way.

The last German Chief of Staff, General Hans Krebs, had presented a ceasefire plea to the Russians but it had been unsuccessful. ETA on Pfaueninsel Island was just prior to dawn on 1 May 1945 and the first RAPWI plane was expected that night (1 May 1945) but was to be delayed. The flying part of the escapes would now have to wait until the Russians had taken Berlin and were celebrating.

Hitler had ordered SS General Felix Steiner to launch an all-out counterattack in the southern suburbs of Berlin in which "important prisoners were being moved".[6] Adolf and Eva Hitler were those important prisoners and General Steiner's counterattack gave Hitler enough protection for his submarine not to be attacked, not to be detected, but to light its way down the winding River Spree. It was truly a Teutonic plan.

---

[5] David Fisher, *The War Magician*.

[6] *Captured official Nazi documents.*

At 3.50 pm on 30 April 1945, Police Guard Erich Mansfeld was in the watchtower. Noticing the commotion and aware that no one was allowed in the dog-bunker (guards' rest room), he climbed out of the tower window (southeast), onto the external reinforcing bars of the unfinished structure and walked to the southwest side of the building to the Bunker emergency exit. The scurrying of men, the shutting of apartment doors and the shutting of the bulkhead doors had raised suspicion, just as it was supposed to do for Plan B to be a possibility.

At the Bunker emergency exit, Mansfeld met the SS officers carrying the bodies up the stairs and saw the unmistakable trousers of Hitler and the unmistakable blue dress of Eva Braun. Behind the SS officers were Bormann (Hitler's former secretary), Goebbels (the new head of the German government, also replacing Bormann as Reich Chancellor), General Burgdorf (Army adjutant), Günsche (Hitler's personal SS adjutant), Linge (Hitler's SS Orderly and personal valet) and Kempka (Hitler's personal chauffeur) but not the SS Chancellery Commandant Mohnke who was noticeable by his absence.

SS ex-adjutant Sturmbannführer Otto Günsche shouted at the Police Guard Erich Mansfeld to get out of the way. He stood back, waited till everyone passed, took in what was about to happen and went inside the Bunker, down the two storeys of stairs (7.3 metres/24 feet), into the conference passage, through the guards' rest room, then up three flights of stairs back to the watchtower (9 metres/30 feet). On the way up the stairs, through a loophole, he noticed black smoke rising from the burning bodies (4.02 pm). Mansfeld was out of the tower for at least 12 minutes.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

This gave Hitler's entourage ample opportunity to escape into the bulkhead passage and seal it off (Plan A), or up the watchtower from where everyone had been excluded and down the reinforcing bars, then to the Chancellery from where everyone had been excluded (Plan B).

Russian shelling ensured that the bodies were placed close to the Bunker emergency exit and that the mourners took shelter in its exit. This stopped them from seeing any activity to the east and there was no one in the watchtower. Günsche lit a rag and threw it on the corpses (4 pm). The mourners gave the Hitler salute and then withdrew back into the Bunker as did the High Command who carried on with practical business as though they had just been to a service they knew was fake.

The Bunker-Chancellery bulkhead passage door was now locked and had been since 3.51 pm.

SS men were all reserve police by virtue of their SS rank, but not all police were SS. Historians sometimes refer to the Police Guard when they mean the SS. Such confusion was designed to thwart further investigation.

SS Hermann Karnau, a policeman from the Detective Guard, had been in the Chancellery canteen. Disobeying orders, he decided to go back to the Bunker. He tried to get through the bulkhead door into the Bunker-Chancellery passage, but it was locked. Against orders, he came past the watchtower, ducking the Russian shelling and walked around the corner (4 pm) just as SS adjutant Otto Günsche had thrown the flaming rag on the bodies which combusted right in front of his eyes. "Possibly someone threw a match from the doorway."

This reduces the timing available for Hitler and Eva's Plan B escape out of the watchtower from 3.50–3.58 pm. This was still plausible. Karnau didn't know at the time that Hitler was dead and if he had seen the entourage he could have been variously invited along for further protection, shot, or any scenario in between.

SS Detective Guard Hermann Karnau got to within a metre of the bodies and judged that the bodies were Hitler and Eva because he could recognise Hitler's moustache, trousers and Eva's blue dress. He also noted that Hitler's head was "smashed" and "repulsive in the extreme" which stopped closer investigation, as did the flames.

Karnau then went into the Bunker by the emergency exit and down one flight of stairs where he found Franz Schedle, the commanding officer of the SS Escort distracted with grief: "The Führer is dead. He is burning outside" – but who would believe the word of an SS Escort commanding officer. These were crocodile tears with another successful doppelgänger mission accomplished – three final ones – the death of one of the last doppelgängers; the first part of Adolf and Eva Hitler's escape; and the impending deaths of a further five doppelgängers, whom he had come to know quite well.

This was also the fulfilment of Schedle's mission and his own impending death. An injured foot prevented survivable escape and Schedle committed suicide in the Chancellery the following night (1 May 1945), along with many other officers.

Hermann Karnau then helped Schedle down the emergency stairs.

In the watchtower Police Guard Erich Mansfeld, looking west, watched the bodies burning and noted SS men pouring petrol on them from time to time. SS Detective Police Guard Hermann Karnau joined him, helped Police Guard Mansfeld climb out of the watchtower and then followed him down the tower to view the bodies at close range. By now the shin bones of the bodies were visible (5.30 pm). Mansfeld returned an hour later and was joined by another police guard, Hans Hofbeck, who came up the emergency stairs but quickly returned due to the stench (6.30 pm).

Later that night (30 April), Brigadeführer Rattenhuber, the head of the Police Guard, went to the now packed guards' rest room and requested the sergeant of the SS Escort to report to Schedle. When he returned, the SS Escort sergeant picked three men to bury the bodies who were sworn to Holy secret over the events of the day. Anyone talking about them would be shot.

The bodies were buried around 11 pm.

Brigadeführer Johann Rattenhuber (Chief of Hitler's private police SS Bodyguards) and Heinz Linge (Hitler's SS Orderly and personal valet) claim to have buried the remains with the help of several policemen.

Espayo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

When Police Guard Erich Mansfeld returned to the watchtower just before midnight (30 April), he saw the graves had been dug on top of a bomb crater, that Russian shells were falling and the sky was lit with flares. This would be dangerous for surface travel, but essential for nocturnal submarine travel down a winding river.

In *The Last Days of Hitler*, Trevor-Roper reports many options for the demise of Hitler including that the bones of Hitler and Eva were never found and were most likely mixed with the bodies of soldiers killed in the defence of the Chancellery, and reports that Günsche said the ashes were collected in a box and taken out through the Chancellery.

The latter was impossible and shows Günsche as a complicit liar because the bodies were never reduced to ashes. Tests show that even 180 litres of gasoline would only melt the fat and drain the bodies of moisture and would not turn them into ashes. None of these stories were true, but they are important to history as they represent an ever-present cover-up.

Trevor-Roper states that the Russians never searched the Bunker properly, pilfered it for souvenirs and then neglected it. He also reports that Hitler's engagement diary was left unobserved on his chair for five months. It is more likely, however, that a fake engagement diary was placed there to assist Trevor-Roper in a misdirected history.

Colonel W. F. Heimlich, an American military intelligence officer in their intelligence service enquiry admitted that it was unlikely Hitler had died in the bunker.

We should keep in mind that the combined British, German, American and Russian Intelligence forces were in on this scam and have supported it ever since.

Hugh Trevor-Roper was promoted and elevated to Baron Dacre of Glanton for writing *The Last Days of Hitler*. If he had got closer to the truth, his book would never have been published and he would have been shot for heresy. As it was, he survived, wrote eloquently and provided fantastic research material, some of which was a record of hoaxes. As such, he picked the nose, but couldn't pick the face. Trevor-Roper failed to identify the scenarios as he had no magic training, little intelligence experience and he still trusted people on their word.

> To write the grand war tale of our times, you have to trust the worst that training can bring out in people. WWII was an occult hit and one of its goals was to take the Western focus off Jesus and place it onto Hitler. It did that.

The secretary's office and telephone exchange was right next to the diesel generator. Diesel fumes dulled the senses of everyone in the Bunker, but especially the sense of difference. Whenever the telephone and secretarial staff got a chance to get some air, they took it – although with cigarettes.

The secretaries had been dismissed from service at their last meeting with Hitler (3.10 pm) just prior to his death and had surfaced to witness petrol being thrown on the bodies and set alight (4 pm). When they returned from the emergency exit, the atmosphere of the entire Bunker changed, like a magic theatre before and after a trick.

With the deconstructed Hitler now removed, the Bunker moved into party mode. Despite the constant diesel fumes, all and sundry lit up cigarettes, started drinking and began dancing. Banning cigarette smoke is something that deconstructed double agents do.

It was most important that the secretaries were relieved of their duties and absent from their offices as their door looked out onto the conference passage (escape Plan A), diagonally to Hitler and Eva's doorway and the guards' rest room (the entrance to the watchtower), escape Plan B.

If the secretaries were in their office, they would have seen the doppelgänger bodies of Hitler and Eva carried out and then the real Hitler and Eva scurrying out after them. Unlike the other doors, the secretarys' doors could not be closed as they were adjacent to the diesel generator and the fumes would quickly make them ill.

Bormann, Hitler's brown-noser for so long, now had no ministerial post, which removed some of the guilt from the British who rescued him. Around 8 pm on 30 April Bormann sent a final telegram to Doenitz:

> "Grand Admiral Doenitz, – In place of the former Reichmarshal Goering the Führer appoints you, Herr Grand Admiral, as his successor. Written authority is on its way. You will immediately take all such measures as the situation requires. – Bormann."

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Bormann did not mention that Hitler was dead, because he knew he wasn't. He had colluded with Hitler over their escape earlier (2.30–3.15 am 30 April) and knew that Adolf and Eva Hitler were hiding in the room when he went in to view the bodies.

Bormann's telegram translates as:

> "The Führer's death has been faked. Hitler has left the Bunker and is currently en route with the Testament. Assist where possible. I'm leaving in 24 hours. – Bormann."

Officially Doenitz replied not knowing that Hitler was dead. In real terms, he knew that Hitler was en route and sent a reply to cover for this:

> "I shall do everything possible to relieve you in Berlin. If fate nevertheless compels me to rule the Reich as your appointed successor, I shall continue this war to an end worthy of the unique, heroic struggle of the German people. – Grand Admiral Doenitz."

This roughly translates as:

> "Everything possible is being done to ensure Hitler's safe passage. There is still some luck in it, but all countries are assisting. America is holding back. V-Mann Blunt has the Russians and a small German unit on his side. The Hitler escape takes priority before the Bormann escape and one may succeed the other at the last minute, but delivery of the Testament to the British is paramount. Hitler's rule is over, but British rule isn't. The excuses of this war will create the next British war so the British will assist.– Grand Admiral Doenitz."

Through Hitler's Tibetan occult practices and connections, he had utilised the Buddhist tradition and predicted the time and place of his reincarnation.[7] His last actions in Berlin were an indication of the time and place and this was something the British occultists were interested in for their next cycle of war. So were the Russians, and even the Americans were prepared to counteract it with scholarships. As such it became imperative that Hitler's escape out of Berlin remain secret.[8]

By virtue of Hitler's will and testament, Bormann and Goering were now members of the new government, although Bormann was considered to have no official posting. They *could* walk as a privileged envoy through the Russian lines and from there travel to the new German headquarters in Ploen, North Germany, but the war had challenged the Russians' manners. They were unpredictable and unlikely to bother with such niceties.

On the evening of 30 April 1945 the remaining Nazi command worked on a treaty with the Russians, but had nothing to bargain with. Bormann, Goebbels, Krebs, General Burgdorf and Axmann were present. Mohnke hadn't yet returned from Hitler's escape and the murder of the five Hitler doppelgängers.

They made radio contact with the Russian headquarters and sent a messenger to enquire whether Marshal Zhukov would receive a representative of the new German government. Krebs, the last chief of the German High Command, had been a military attaché in pre-war Moscow, spoke Russian, had once been publicly embraced by Stalin and was probably a graduate of the secret Reichswehr training camps.

---

[7] After WWI, 1000 Asian bodies were found buried under Berlin, all well-preserved (poisoned), wearing Nazi SS uniforms and green gloves. Presumably these were Tibetan Monks whose leader was known as 'The Man with the Green Glove'.

[8] These numbers, corresponding dates, place, person and name change of country can be made available – courtesy of a former esoteric Nazi officer, a Tibetan doctor and an intelligence head. "Look for the big and the small" . . . on . . . "the 14th Family Tree".

General Hans Krebs left with a letter from Bormann and Goebbels at midnight. In the letter Bormann mentioned Hitler's death, because he wanted to be sure the Russians would look for a dead Hitler. It also encouraged something of a ceasefire during Hitler's escape down the River Spree and was supposed to provide a long enough ceasefire for Hitler to escape by plane that evening (1 May), but this didn't eventuate and the flight out had to be delayed until Berlin was taken (2 May). This was the primary purpose of sending Krebs as a diplomatic envoy – to create a ceasefire for a few hours (the submarine journey) or permanently (the flight out).

> General Krebs reached Chuikov's headquarters around 4 am:
> "I am authorised to inform the Soviet Command, and through them, the Soviet Government that yesterday on 30th April, the German Führer, Adolf Hitler, voluntarily left this world. In his will the Führer appointed Grand Admiral Doenitz his successor, and Dr Goebbels is appointed head of the new German government. I have the honour to represent this new government, and am reporting to you with a personal message from Goebbels. The German government considers further resistance in Berlin useless and asks that the Soviet Union agree to a one-day ceasefire in order to prepare the conditions of our capitulation."[9]

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March

At the time, all but a few square miles of Berlin was in Russian hands. General Krebs had a second meeting with Chuikov around 6.30 am and asked that the Doenitz-Goebbels government be officially recognised. It was also important to the British that they were not assisting in the escape of the Führer, but the previous Führer and a dead one at that. Chuikov smelled a rat, rejected the ceasefire proposal, and resumed attacks on Berlin around 7.15 am.

Nevertheless, Krebs had achieved a partial success. The Russian ceasefire from 4 am–7.15 am on 1 May was perfect for Hitler's escape. His path had been lit by flares followed by a short ceasefire. This allowed Major von Loringhoven, his aide-de-camp Rittmeister Boldt and Leutnant-Colonel Weiss to scurry out of the submarine, across Schwanenwerde Peninsula and onto Pfaueninsel Island.

Hitler's escape from submarine into a plane was arranged for 1 May because this is the most significant day in the political, occult and social engineering calendar. But it had to be delayed from the 1st to the 2nd May and this really pissed off the occultists. It made them suspicious that this was not the perfect scam and Hitler was not their perfect agent, but merely the best they had developed so far.

By 11 am 1 May 1945 there was no reply back to the Bunker and Bormann agreed to telegram Doenitz that Doenitz was now running things. Once again, Bormann refused to mention Hitler's death. Another coded message, it read:

> "Grand Admiral Doenitz, – The Testament is in force. I will join you as soon as possible. Till then I recommend that publication be held up. – Bormann."
>
> Translated this reads:
> 'Everything according to plan. Hitler made it to the submarine and the skies were sufficiently lit up with German flares for him to make it to Schwanenwerde Peninsula. The eyes and ears have made it to Fireworks Island. I am leaving at 8.40 pm and surfacing at 9.30 pm. I have told the Russians Hitler is dead so they will be looking for a body. We have killed the doppelgängers around the Chancellery. Don't tell the Germans yet, I still need their firepower for cover as my journey doesn't have a submarine or the Russian protection that Hitler's does. I'll be paddling down the River Spree in open kayaks.'

An hour later, at noon, Krebs returned from Chuikov's headquarters with the Soviet message demanding unconditional surrender. Another meeting was held in the Bunker and they decided on a massive exodus with smaller escape parties when in the open and to relay a message to Zhukov that negotiations were over. This would bring unprecedented Russian firepower towards their Bunker and hopefully bypass Pfaueninsel Island and the British and American zones where they were all headed.

At 3.15 pm on 1 May 1945, Goebbels (with Bormann's coded assistance) sent the last telegram from the Bunker:

> "Grand Admiral Doenitz - Most secret - urgent - officer only. The Führer died yesterday at 15.30 hours. Testament of 29 April [the cover will] appoints you as Reich President, Reich Minister Dr Goebbels as Reich Chancellor . . . By order of the Führer, the Testament has been sent out of Berlin to you, to Field-Marshal Schoerner, and for preservation and

---

[9] Cited in *Hitler, The Survival Myth*, p. 56.

> publication. Reichsleiter Bormann intends to go to you today and to inform you of the situation. Time and form of announcement to the Press and to the troops is left to you. Confirm receipt. – Goebbels."

Although Goebbels was not in on everything and was kept ignorant to maintain his status as 'sacrificial lamb', this roughly translates as:

> "Hitler's death was faked at 3.30 pm yesterday and we haven't heard a disbelieving word from anyone who slept on it [the alcohol and hangovers helped]. The illusion was convincing so you can announce Hitler's death as cover for our escape at the time arranged. Hitler is out of Berlin. Bormann has been officially downgraded to a non-existent position and I am now in charge of the money and the government, but will be dead in five hours, an hour before British contact with Bormann, thus ensuring that at the time of the transfer of the Nazi money to the British, there is no Reich Chancellor and no head of the new German government. I take Bormann's place in name only. Hitler is in position to be taken out of Berlin. Use the announcement of Hitler's death to distract, create relief, grief and celebration to provide cover for all survivors."

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2018

Goebbels had made no secret of his planned suicide since 4 March 1945 and had published this intention as an appendix to Hitler's 'cover will' and retired with his family to his apartment opposite the guards' rest room. Erich Kempka (Hitler's personal chauffeur) and the one-armed Artur Axmann (Hitler Youth leader) visited, more or less to ensure the Goebbels family *were* preparing for their murder-suicide. This was essential for Hitler's suicide to look authentic.

Frau Goebbels poisoned all six of her children then, at 8.30 pm 1 May, Frau and Herr Goebbels walked through the Bunker, up the emergency exit stairs and outside where they were immediately shot and burned without ceremony. The Russians found them charred and on the surface of the ground the next day, but still recognisable right down to Hitler's Gold Party badge still pinned to Frau Goebbels' dress – history's greatest sheep dipping.

Spymaster: "Sheep dipping is when you attach something to encourage the other side to positively identify a person, something akin to a bull's-eye drawn on the body. The Party badge on Frau Goebbels was history's ultimate sheep dipping exercise."

SS Chancellery commandant Wilhelm Mohnke, who had been in Hitler's escape party the night before, hastily ordered the conference passage set alight. Everyone then left the Bunker at 8.40 pm on 1 May and walked through the bulkhead door, through the bulkhead passage and into the Chancellery under the nominal command of Hitler's former secretary Martin Bormann, taking the same route as Hitler the night before.

General Hans Krebs (the last German Chief of Staff), General Wilhelm Burgdorf (Army adjutant) and Franz Schedle (Commanding SS Escort officer with injured foot) stayed behind at the Chancellery and shot themselves when the Russians made demands at the door. This also helped to limit suspicion and knowledge of Hitler and Bormann's post-war survival.

The rest made their way through vaults and tunnels, drained of the bulk of their water, to the underground station at Wilhelmsplatz. From here they walked along the tracks of the underground railway station to Friedrichstrasse Station and to the surface around 9.20 pm.

Doenitz drew his radio announcement out for maximum distraction, effect, and escape timing. At 9.30 pm, 1 May 1945, Hamburg radio said "a grave and important announcement would be made". At 10.20 pm Doenitz himself announced that Hitler was dead and that he was his successor. This brought 50 minutes of silence when people withdrew to listen to their radios, rather than fire bullets. They also listened afterwards for more news which was slow coming.

In Munich, Seymour Carmen got it right when he announced on radio: "There is some caution about accepting the German announcement as fact. It might be a trick. It might be a desperate effort by Hitler to disguise himself and escape."[10]

If Doenitz had announced that Hitler had committed suicide then every German soldier would have been relieved of their posts and the Russians would have advanced on the Bunker without resistance and all too quickly.

With Hitler announced dead at 10.20 pm on 1 May, there was still enough last-ditch German resistance to slow the Russians down and provide something of an escape corridor. Doenitz' radio announcement also indicated that Hitler was in place ready to be evacuated by plane at the predesignated location.

---

[10] *Hitler of the Andes*, 1 May 1945.

The first radio announcement came 50 minutes into the Bunker escape (9.30 pm) and the second 100 minutes into the escape (10.20 pm). The Bunker party surfaced around 9.25 pm.

SS Chancellery commandant Wilhelm Mohnke headed the first party with Günsche (Hitler's personal SS adjutant), Ambassador Hewel (Foreign Office liaison officer), Vice Admiral Voss and Guppenführer Hansl Baur (Hitler's pilot), three secretaries and Konstanze Manzialy (Hitler's Austrian cook). The entire German Wehrmacht was engaged in a mad scramble to the West to surrender to the Amis (Americans).

The flaming ruins of Berlin made surface travel a real danger for the lead group, so they went back underground and made their way through the recently drained tunnels that Mohnke was familiar with, to the River Spree, crossed it on a footbridge parallel to the Weidendammer bridge and reached Charité hospital. Mohnke, Günsche, Hewel, Voss and the seriously injured Baur (Hitler's pilot) were the only group to make it across the River Spree. They made their way to the Maikaefer Barracks and then underground. Vice Admiral Voss went missing but Brigadeführer Rattenhuber (head of Hitler's private police SS guards) was unexpectedly carried in wounded. The next day (2 May) the Russians demanded surrender of the bunker and the men offered suicide. The four women were set free and made their way to much preferable American surrender.

Former Reich Chancellor Bormann wanted as many people as possible around him to be picked off instead of him, the more the better. He was dead keen on living and was secure in the expectation of British assistance. The rest followed in groups of four or five, with Bormann placing himself in the middle. He carried the last copy of the much-valued Hitler Testament as protection, his part in the British RAPWI bargain. Bormann was an integral part of the Testament. He was its deliverance and back-up along with the Nazi Swiss Bank account numbers.

A second miscellaneous group containing Bormann (former Reich Chancellor), Axmann (Hitler Youth leader), Kempka (Hitler's personal chauffeur), Standartenführer Beetz (Hitler's second pilot), Günther Schwaegermann (Goebbels' adjutant) and SS Colonel Alfred Rach surfaced from the Friedrichstrasse station at 9.30 pm, just as the first "important announcement" was made. It was here that Chris Creighton and Bormann's doppelgänger 'Günther' joined them. Trevor-Roper refers to them as "and one other".

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Martin Bormann said to Chris Creighton: "The Führer is dead." Chris Creighton was not convinced. His kayaks were parked very close to where the submarine had disembarked 21½ hours earlier. Suspicions were further aroused 20 minutes later when Ian Fleming took a look at Martin Bormann, put Chris Creighton in charge of Operation JAMES BOND, then left the team.

Chris Creighton, Martin Bormann, doppelgänger 'Günther' Bormann and the others made their way along the blazing Friedrichstrasse to the anti-tank barrier at the Weidendammer bridge where they took refuge from heavy Russian fire. Chief Inspector Peter Hoegl, in another group, was killed here.

When German tanks came to the rescue they ran behind them reaching the Ziegelstrasse about 300 metres ahead. *The Last Days of Hitler*: "A Panzerfaust then hit one of the tanks, which exploded." If this wasn't Russian ordnance misreported, then this was German war sabotage and may have been prearranged.

Kempka was temporarily blinded. The one-armed Axmann was wounded as was Hitler's pilot Beetz who was never seen again. (Standartenführer Beetz may have been extracted for work in Spain.) Ludwig Stumpfegger, the Chancellery doctor who had poisoned Blondi, was thrown to the ground but not injured. Doppelgänger 'Günther' Bormann was severely injured as he protected the real Bormann from the blast. The real Bormann thanked his body double and virtually kissed him as he transferred the phial of potassium cyanide from his mouth into Günther's. Dr Stumpfegger was similarly poisoned.

Axmann later found doppelgänger Bormann's body lying face up with no apparent injuries and Dr Stumpfegger's body close by. Russian fire prevented closer examination as to whether or not it was the real Bormann, but there were no obvious wounds. Both were cyanide assisted deaths.

Artur Axmann escaped to join the Hitler Youth in the Bavarian Alps for the next six months. Axmann's exit was protected because he had brought the final Testament escape plans to Hitler and Bormann immediately after the death of Hitler's doppelgänger.

Axmann (Hitler Youth), Naumannn (Goebbels' former assistant and Propaganda State Secretary), Schwaegermann (Goebbels' former adjutant) and SS Colonel Rach followed the railway tracks, or what was left of them, to the Lehrter station and went west towards Alt Moabit. Schwaegermann and Rach managed to avoid the Russians and made it into American captivity.

Kempka (Hitler's personal chauffeur) crossed the river by footbridge and hid under a railway arch for all of 2nd May while the Russians celebrated the capture of Berlin. He then swam by night straight into American captivity. This was pretty much the difference between a short prison sentence with food, followed by employment opportunities, versus a long prison sentence without food, followed by endless interrogations.

The James Bond rescue package split up from the rest of the group taking the real Bormann to the banks of the River Spree where they met the rest of Op JAMES BOND and scaled down ropes on the flood banks and jumped into kayaks. As soon as Ian Fleming sighted Bormann and recognised him as the original, he left for Lake Müggelsee and was briefed along the way. Martin Bormann also recognised Ian Fleming, knew something of Hitler's escape plan and their separation ensured no familiar chit-chat.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March

By the morning of 2 May 1945, Pfaueninsel Island was crowded with escaping Nazis, British rescue teams and no Russians. Leutnant-Colonel von Below and his batman Matthiesing had arrived first, early in the morning of 30 April 1945.

Corporal Hummerich, SS officer Standartenführer Wilhelm Zander (who had Hitler's cover will designed for capture), Heinz Lorenz (Hitler's Bunker news/inner circle) and Major Willi Johannmeier (who claimed to be their bodyguard) had arrived just before daybreak on the morning of 1 May 1945 on kayaks and by floating downstream under bodies. Boldt, Loringhoven and Weiss had stepped off the submarine at Schwanenwerde Peninsula and arrived around the same time. They met and briefed each other, but only claim to have been suspicious of each other's presence. By evening, Operation JAMES BOND were close by on the Wannsee. Martin Bormann would have been aware of the planned positioning of the other seven German players.

Adolf and Eva Hitler and four crew remained on board the WK202 submarine waiting for protection and RAPWI. Boldt, Loringhoven and Weiss were their eyes and ears on the surface as well as their cork duck decoys.

They waited all the next day for a plane. Russian artillery positions were the main factor, hence the Nazi challenge for them to advance on the Bunker as quickly as possible. On the night of 1 May the Russians bombarded the island so Corporal Hummerich, Lorenz and Zander hopped into some kayaks (specially left there for escape groups), paddled out into the lake and boarded a moored yacht where they hid.

The Junkers JU52/3m g14e rescue plane arrived a day late on 2 May. To break continuity, Boldt, Loringhoven and Weiss who had come off the submarine, remained on shore and Hummerich, Lorenz and Zander approached the rescue plane. Major Johannmeier remained on the moored yacht and acted as the signals officer for the plane to position itself over the submarine's conning tower.

Of Hitler's three pilots, Hanna Reitsch was the only one available. She was a test pilot and such a good one that she was the first person to fly a helicopter indoors. She made her famous name infamous by flying a Focke-Wulf Fw 61 helicopter inside the Deutschland Hall in Berlin in February 1938 with only three hours' training. It took another 50 years for this to even make it to the movies.

At 4.15 pm on 2 May a Junkers JU52/3m g14e landed on the water, just as requested from Doenitz. Zander motored out in a yacht and Lorenz and Hummerich went out in a slow-moving gaff-rigged yawl. Johannmeier remained on the moored yacht they had slept on and signalled the plane to position itself over the conning tower of the WK202 submarine – forward stop.

Zander, Lorenz and Hummerich drew their two boats up alongside the plane and attempted a last-minute bargain to take them also, or they might be dead in the water. Any vision of the three-tone grey submarine as it rose up (4.20 pm) was blocked by the Junkers' 12-metre-long floats 0.5 metres above the water, the Junkers 1 metre trapdoors, the eight struts each side and the two boats. To complete the distraction away from the rising 6-metre-long conning tower, Zander upset his boat and Lorenz and Hummerich jumped into the water and onto the motor yacht. Hitler and Eva stepped out of the submarine's conning tower at 4.21 pm and clambered up the clearance distance into the belly of the plane.

For a German soldier reporting this, it would be attributed to the methamphetamine that most soldiers took. For a Russian soldier, it would be attributed to his drunkenness as he celebrated the conquest of Berlin all day – the Russians had been stealing and hoarding alcohol on their way to Berlin.

Such ‘hilarity’ is an old escape trick of the British. It harks back to MI-6 agents like Bunny Aldon, most likely Jasper Maskelyne. Rather ironically, Jasper Maskelyne had designed and built a working submarine that had downed a cargo ship and could easily have been consulted to make this part of the plan work, not knowing that it was going to be used for Adolf Hitler, the British war machine’s most valuable agent. Through his illusions Jasper Maskelyne had been invaluable in winning the desert war for the British. He could make entire divisions disappear and painted materials look like a tank division.

Those Intelligence Officers who did see this realised it was above their station and the next part of their operation, so they were never going to say anything. It would have ended their careers with a bullet. Still it took Chris Creighton 51 years to publish his *OPJB* story, an essential lead to this.

What sun there was blurred the lines of definition for those on the west bank of Lake Havel. It was the last day of fighting, the war had exhausted everyone, and any soldiers who did see would rub their eyes in disbelief and then it would all be over. The witnesses did not believe what they had seen, let alone report it. No one did and no one survived who did. WWII was the most complete history of doppelgängers, double agents, cover-ups and ridiculous scenarios the world had ever seen.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Standartenführer Zander, Lorenz and Corporal Hummerich all ended up on the motor yacht. The Russians were too far away to see any of this and had their view from the west bank of Lake Havel obscured by the plane’s struts, two boats, the boating incident and whatever sun refracted any outlines. As if on Anthony Blunt’s cue the Russians began shelling around the plane but never hit the plane, submarine or motor yacht. The Junkers JU52/3m g14e flew off with Adolf and Eva Hitler on board and the submarine submerged and headed for the shadows. The vacated gaff-rigged yawl was blown to pieces giving the Russians, many of whom were drunk, a sense of win.

The RAPWI pilot was almost certainly Hanna Reitsch who had been Commander-in-Chief of the German Air Force for six days (26 April–7 May 1945). She then flew Hitler and Eva the 33 km to Lake Müggelsee and landed on the water near the southwest shore (4.36 pm).

Adolf and Eva Hitler then climbed down the aluminium ladder onto the waiting British-held motor launch (4.41 pm) where they were greeted by two Britishers dressed as Russian Army Lieutenant Majors – 2IC of British Naval Intelligence, Ian Fleming and Caroline Saunders, later the first female head of MI-6.

Ian Fleming was fluent in German and the natural choice to accompany Adolf and Eva Hitler to the British safe haven in British Intelligence-controlled Fascist Spain. After all Hitler, with the help of Mussolini and MI-6, had installed Franco as Spain’s leader.

With Caroline Saunders as witness and piloting the boat towards shore, Ian Fleming greeted and briefed their passengers in perfect German without ever acknowledging who they were.

> “Mr and Mrs Rabbit, congratulations on your marriage. I can confirm that Adolf Hitler’s successor, Joseph Goebbels killed himself yesterday and Admiral Doenitz is leading Germany into surrender.[11] Doenitz announced yesterday that the Führer was dead.
>
> [*By the time the announcement was made at 10.20 pm Goebbels had been dead for 110 minutes and six doppelgänger Hitlers had been killed.*]
>
> “The Reich Chancellor is also dead.
>
> [*This meant Goebbels again and also referred to doppelgänger Bormann’s death.*]
>
> “Germany has no Führer and no Reich Chancellor. In the last two days there have been two changes of command in Germany and there is now no trace back to the Führer of WWII. The airfare for the journey out of Berlin is the Testament of Adolf Hitler.”

Adolf Hitler, acknowledged only as Mr Rabbit, signalled to Hanna Reitsch who lowered the Testament down the undercarriage of the plane (4.45 pm). Ian Fleming and Caroline Saunders examined it noting some Swiss Bank accounts, some more with a few numbers missing and the promise of more to come. Like all wars it started and finished with a bank robbery.

---

[11] Just before the end of WWI, Karl Doenitz was captured by the British (4 October 1918) and placed in a mental hospital in Manchester where he was ‘turned’ into a British Agent, to be activated when required. Once his training was complete (9½ months) he was released (July 1919), seven months after WWI had ended.

After a few minutes (4.49 pm), Fleming confirmed that it would be good for two airfares out of German airspace to British Intelligence-controlled neutral territory and exiled permanent homestay until natural death. No status, nor acknowledgement of whether they were alive or dead, would ever be given to their two passengers. The two rabbits were never to have alive status as humans again. They were to live out their days in Intelligence-controlled purgatory.

Sure enough this did happen. After Adolf Hitler died in 1950 the West German Courts began meeting in 1952 after a request for Hitler's official death certificate was issued. In January 1954 West Berlin's Central Registrar Office reminded the world that:

Hitler was "not officially dead yet".

In 1955 this task was passed on to the Berchtesgaden court and the decision was finally made in 1956:

"Adolf Hitler was dead".

The whole process was drawn out long enough to lose all public interest, but it is interesting that the process started in 1952, two safe years after Hitler had died. Eva Hitler's death was never an issue and no tribunals were set for her.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Ian Fleming and Caroline Saunders had been waiting at Lake Müggelsee since 10 pm 1 May (the night before) and at 2 am on 2 May a British Westland Lysander IIIA had landed on a disused road near the southwest shore of Lake Müggelsee.

These both served to confirm Operations WINNIE THE POOH/ TESTAMENT and saved Hitler flying out of Germany on a German plane with German markings or continuing his journey down the River Spree in the WK202 half-sized submarine and risking the narrow gap between Pfaueninsel Island and the shores of Lake Havel so fiercely dominated by the Russians.

After the pick-up on Lake Havel they could have flown directly to Spain, but for surety, witness confusion and the need for British cover they flew for 15 minutes in the torpedo hold from Lake Havel (southwest of Berlin), to their second pick-up point at Lake Müggelsee (southeast of Berlin) where they were met by two British officers in Russian uniform.

Once they were safely loaded onto the motor launch, had been briefed as to the conditions of their journey and fulfilled their part of the British bargain (4.49 pm) they were driven to the shore and the motor launch was beached (4.52 pm). Ian Fleming then set explosive devices on the boat for 10 minutes and they scurried to the waiting Lysander which, to all intents and purposes was on a RAPWI (Recovery of Allied Prisoners of War). Their Allied prisoners were Rabbit and Ms Rabbit – Adolf and Eva Hitler – the former Führer of Germany (retired for 48 hours, six times dead and replaced twice) and his new wife of 41 hours (who had also died).

When the Special Secret Intelligence Service sent a plane on a top-secret mission they would wax over the plane's serial number and paint over it with another plane's number. When the mission was complete, they would heat up the wax and the paint would drip off revealing the original serial number. Confusion over the identification of a plane, the whereabouts of that plane, and a plane with different markings before and after a mission, were all part of the cover.

The single-engined, high-winged Lysanders were British Intelligence 'Moon Squadron' aircraft with excellent low-speed handling and capable of short-takeoff-and-landings (STOL). The MkI were built from 1936 and the MkIII built from July 1940. Their British markings gave them some protection from Russian and American fire. They had been used by the RAF's Special Duties squadrons delivering and collecting Allied agents in occupied territory, usually in the dead of night, during full moon periods, when the mist rising over the lakes and boggy ground gave cover. These landings were minimally guided by three battery-powered hand torches in a 140m L-shaped pattern.

"These Lysanders differed from the norm in several respects. Their undercarriage spats no longer carried winglets for light bombs, all the machine-guns had been removed, and a streamlined 700 ltr fuel tank was carried under the fuselage which gave the plane a range of 1,780 km; however, it took 40 km/hr off the speed [reducing it from 370 kmph/230 mph to 300 kmph/190 mph with the time to reach 5000 ft a little over 4 minutes. Post 1940 some were produced with rear cockpit winches].

"German military opposition to the flights was negligible. The Luftwaffe had other overwhelming priorities, and the location and interception of low-level flights by single, slow, highly manoeuvrable aeroplanes did not figure large in their thinking . . . By the end of the European war, Lysander special operations had made 323 sorties, 1,074 passengers successfully transported to France or England.

"The main problems were betrayal (10%), pilots killed (6), being shot down (4) and landing in bog (2). In the last year of the war, operations were widely mounted to Germany for RAPWI, the Recovery of Allied Prisoners of War and Internees."[12]

The RAF's Special Duties Lysander squadron was located about 100 km north of London at Tempsford in Bedfordshire (east of Milton Keynes) with a forward base for refuelling 130 km south, in Tangmere (15 km east of Portsmouth) on the south coast of Britain as it joins the English Channel. They were flown successively by No. 419 Flight, No. 1419 Flight, No. 138 Flight and No. 161 Squadrons in the UK, by No. 149 Squadron in North Africa and by No. 357 Squadron in the Far East. In September 1943, eight Westland Lysander MkIIIs went to Portugal.

The Special Secret Intelligence Service Operation, JAMES BOND, operated out of a large country house near Birdham Military Camp, 10 minutes' drive from Tangmere. The SOE (Special Operations Executive) agents were sent to Tangmere cottage for debriefing and SIS (Secret Intelligence Service) agents went 20 minutes northeast to Bignor Manor, the site of an old Roman villa, before being transferred 90 km to London for debriefing.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

The pilot of the Lysander would have been an experienced pilot and one of the best. He would have spoken Spanish for landing in Spain, and probably French from previous multiple bail-outs in France. It was preferable that he did not speak German, to avoid any verbal contact with the German passengers during the last days of the war. He would have had a distinguished record and been above the rank of Squadron Leader and would have been retained in the RAF service after the war, most probably at a consultancy level.

Before the mission he would have been blackmailed, most likely for homosexual activities in a highly distinguished institution like Oxford University, as opposed to Cambridge University, which had already been compromised with the likes of Anthony Blunt and *The Apostles*. "At Cambridge it was estimated that a quarter of the students and a third of the staff were homosexual."[13]

Hugh Beresford Verity (b. 6 April 1921, Jamaica) was highly competent at mathematics and studied at Queen's College at Oxford University from September 1937 – "having read French and Spanish at Oxford, he had proven language skills".[14]

Two months before the Battle of Britain (August–October 1940) in June 1940, Hugh Verity underplayed what was to come. When Lord Trenchard (nicknamed Boom) approached him and asked whether he would like a plane with cannons or machine guns, he replied "both"; however, it was not a question normally asked of the RAF's version of a car washer.

Within four years, he was heavily decorated with the Distinguished Service Order (DSO) and the Distinguished Flying Cross (DFC) with Bar, meaning he was awarded the medal again for an additional mission. There were very few medals awarded at that time, except for the North Africa Star. The DSO was second only to the Victoria Cross (VC). His medals record acts of courage, service and gallantry that had placed him in a very elite club.

He rescued 97 people from France flying Lysanders by moonlight. When he was captured in early 1944, he was sent to the world's cushiest POW camp in the neutral territory of Eire, in Southern Ireland. This was made popular by the movie *The Brylcream Boys*. The POWs from both sides went to dances on Tuesdays and the horse races on Thursdays. Both sides were paid their military wages and were encouraged to bet on the race horses, buy drinks and lead a near-normal civilian life, dropping their hard-earned money in Ireland. (That'll be the Irish for yer.) The only rule was that they had to be civil to each other. Fighting at the races or anywhere in public meant a loss of civil liberties.

There had been British POWs in Eire for five years, but when Hugh Verity arrived in early 1944, Britain's *Escape and Evasion Team* (MI-9) mounted a rescue.

His medals and history show that the British took special care of him and even more care to downplay his role. He continued with the RAF until he was 47 (1968) when he retired with the rank of Wing-Commander, one rank above squadron leader. For his interview with *Aeroplane* magazine (2001) he wore a tie with parachutes revealing membership to the elite Special Forces Club which he frequently represented in retirement. He also kept in touch with former French Resistance members.

---

[12] John Maynard, *Aeroplane* magazine, December 2001, p. 46.

[13] *Cambridge Spies*.

[14] Ibid.

If an RAF pilot of lower rank than 'squadron leader' piloted for OP WINNIE THE POOH they would have been swished to the colonies after the war; however, Hugh Verity remained in Britain.

When the V9673 Lysander was modified in the 1990s, it was repainted in satin-black (formerly matt-black with charcoal cloud-patterns) and the serial number was changed from **V9673** to **V9367**, while still claiming 161 Squadron allegiance. Serial numbers do not usually change from the time the aircraft is made to the time it is scrapped as the serial number is keyed to all the maintenance records. It is usually only the squadron markings on the side of the plane's fuselage that are changed.

All RAF aircraft have two letters and three digits. So this lysander was an anomally in 1945, just as it is today. The extra digit continues to mark this plane as "the one".

At 4.50 pm on 2 May 1945, the camouflage net on top of the waiting Westland Lysander IIIA was removed and the plane was readied for takeoff. Hugh Verity, who spoke no German, but very good French and Spanish, recognised Ian Fleming and Caroline Saunders from the Birdham Military base 10 minutes from Tangmere, but not the other two passengers, Adolf and Eva Hitler. Rather than a leader of fifty-six, Hitler looked like a harmless dependent old man of seventy. His appearance had degenerated from nine years of excessive drug use and not even his German public could recognise him.

Under cover of some really crap weather the four of them scurried towards the Lysander, engines running, and climbed up the white-painted rungs into the rear cockpit (4.56 pm).

The German Junkers JU52/3m g14e took off first in an effort to draw fire. Soon after the Lysander's wheels left the ground (5.00 pm) the motor launch exploded (5.02 pm) and all evidence was destroyed. All decoys were important decoys. At 190 mph direct flight took 8 hours plus lift-off and landing. ETA in Barcelona was 1.30–3.10 am 3 May 1945 depending on wind and flight corridors.

Hanna Reitsch, the Commander-in-Chief of the German Air Force, then flew the Junkers (with armourplated cockpit) below the Lysander in a predetermined pattern to alert all commands that this was a RAPWI not to be messed with. Neither planes were considered a threat. By 2nd May there was a ceasefire and all British planes were allowed to leave without being shot at. There was only sporadic street fighting, Berlin was taken and the Nazis were scarpering without weapons trying to find any capture other than Russian.

Hanna Reitsch then reported in code to her injured partner Field Marshal Ritter von Greim, General of the Luftwaffe – "Located warren but failed the rescue". Von Greim reported the same code to Doenitz via a third party. The message meant the successful extraction of the two primaries and completion of the German part of Operation WINNIE THE POOH/TESTAMENT.

The submarine that transported Adolf and Eva Hitler then followed Martin Bormann and Operation JAMES BOND down the River Spree waiting for instructions to terminate them using their two torpedoes. The order never came because Ian Fleming refused to acknowledge "Rabbit" as anyone with any status, not even human status and he refused to take orders from a rabbit. In doing so he saved the life of his friend Chris Creighton and the rest of the James Bond team, a scenario repeated throughout Ian Fleming's James Bond movies.

In *OPJB* Chris Creighton wrote that he sensed he was being followed down the River Spree from 2–10 May 1945.

After Adolf and Eva Hitler left, and knowing what Rittmeister Gerhard Boldt knew, he tried to commit suicide, but Major Loringhoven and Leutnant-Colonel Weiss forced him to vomit up his morphine. Boldt was the aide-de-camp to Loringhoven who was the adjutant to General Hans Krebs and Krebs had committed suicide the night before (1 May) just as he was programmed to do. Major Bernd Freytag von Loringhoven was the aide to army chiefs and he knew what was going on, so much so that he later became the German representative to NATO.

The group then moved westward dodging Russian patrols and were captured by Allies, non Russian allies though, and that was the minimum goal for all of them.

Major Johannmeier, Standartenführer Zander, Heinz Lorenz (Hitler's bunker news/inner circle) and Corporal Hummerich, now without Adolf and Eva Hitler, spent the next day on Pfaueninsel Island (3 May), then made their way to Potsdam, eventually found workers clothing, waited for the German surrender (7 May 1945) and for Churchill to declare the end of hostilities (8 May 1945) and then walked

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -

into the Western Allied area as foreign workers. Zander made it to Bavaria, told a few friends he was dead and began a new life as Wilhelm Paustin, having rather obviously buried Hitler's 'cover will'.

Leutnant-Colonel Nicolaus von Below (Hitler's Luftwaffe adjutant) and his batman barman Heinz Matthiesing had scouted the path for Johannmeier, Zander, Lorenz, Hummerich, Weiss, Loringhoven, Boldt, the former Führer Adolf Hitler and his new wife . . . and left the west bank of Lake Havel on the night of 1 May, sick of waiting and being bombed by the Russians. Below and Matthiesing travelled by night and hid in remote forests by day. Eventually they met up with Sergeant Major Pardau who had escaped the Russian capture on 2 May when Mohnke, Günsche, Hewel and Baur (Hitler's pilot) were captured. Foreign Office liaison officer Ambassador Hewel died there.

Leutnant-Colonel von Below made his way to Bonn University and studied law. Heinz Matthiesing returned to his hometown. Both were eventually captured by the British, von Below with Hitler's cover will.

Hitler's inner circle newsman, SS Orderly and personal valet Heinz Linge fared worse and was captured by the Russians. His potential information was the most dangerous of all the captives (except for Himmler who was killed by the British in captivity) but he was sworn to the Holy oath and only ever gave out the believable cover scenario.

Sezo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March

When the Lysander landed in Spain (1.30–3.10 am 3 May 1945) they were greeted by Rámon Serrano Súñer, General Franco's former 2IC. The pilot responded in perfect Spanish. The Lysander was then taken into a hangar and the markings were heated up so that the wax paint melted off. The Lysander was now where it was supposed to be, in Spain. The Junkers did not stand out amongst the Condor Legion's Junkers and the Lysander did not stand out amongst the eight Westland Lysander MkIIIs in Portugal from September 1943.

Spain had declared itself a 'safe haven' for war criminals in April 1945. This was immediately covered up by the Allies' 'Operation Safe Haven' to recover gold and other assets stolen by the Nazis.

The operation to remove Hitler (OPWTP) was tacked onto the operation to remove Bormann (OPJB). If any M operatives knew about the planned removal of Hitler beforehand, they would never have accepted the mission.

Hitler carried with him all the Chancellery documents that Martin Bormann had. The James Bond mission was intended to fail as soon as Ian Fleming, Caroline Saunders and Adolf and Eva Hitler had reached Spain. The mission to pluck Adolf and Eva Hitler out of Berlin was tacked onto another mission so that no one could string it all together. Everyone in Operation JAMES BOND was supposed to die and all knowledge of the mission was supposed to die with them.

After Adolf and Eva Hitler were safely in Barcelona they had to cover all their tracks. The same day that Rabbit and Ms Rabbit escaped out of Berlin (5 pm, 2 May 1945), Admiral Doenitz, the new leader of Germany (1 May–7 May 1945) moved his head-quarters from Ploen to Flensburg (closer to the Danish border) and took Minister of Armaments Albert Speer with him. Himmler followed with his entourage of vanity.

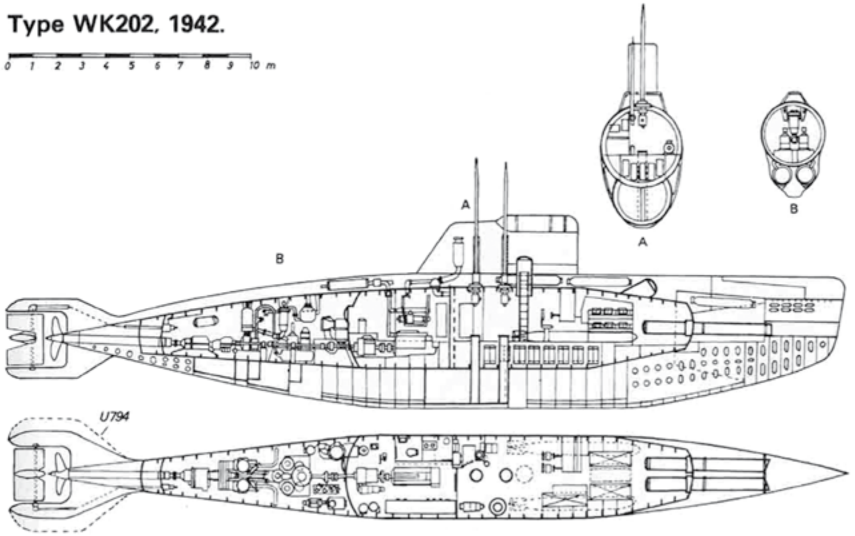
> Hanna Reitsch (Commander-in-Chief of the German Air Force) flew Adolf and Eva Hitler into British Intelligence-controlled Fascist Spain, to General Franco's MI-6 handler, Rámon Serrano Súñer. As soon as she had secured Adolf and Eva's acceptance into British Intelligence safe haven, Hanna Reitsch left Spain late on 3 May 1945 and returned to Germany in the early hours of 4 May. (See *Hitler's Host for Hitler's Ghost*, *Appendix 11*)

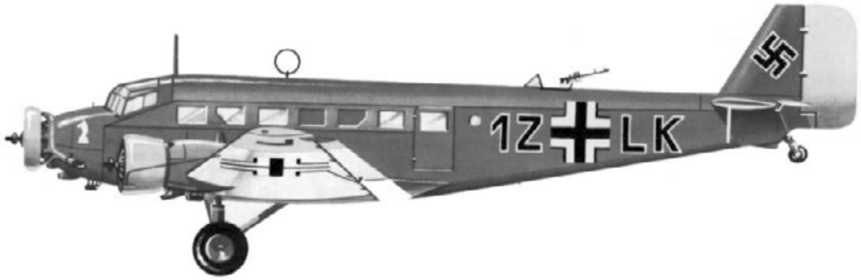
Hanna Reitsch then met up with her injured partner, General of the Luftwaffe, Field Marshal Ritter von Greim and briefed him with Hitler's latest wishes, just in time for a meeting with Himmler at Schleswig-Holstein the same day (4 May 1945). The two dressed him down as though they were the voice of Hitler from beyond the grave.

Himmler, long compromised by the British, failed to receive his promotion, was rejected by the others and relieved of all duties and postings. He was on his way to give himself up at an American outpost when he was intercepted by the British on Churchill's orders and killed by 'Mr Thomas'.

It is commonly thought that Himmler bit on his cyanide capsule during a doctor's examination and committed suicide, but when he died his nose was broken and his cyanide capsule was still in tact. Churchill did not want Himmler interviewed by the Americans and refused to allow him to reveal what he knew at trial. This removed one of the most troublesome witnesses to Hitler's survival and Churchill's part in it.

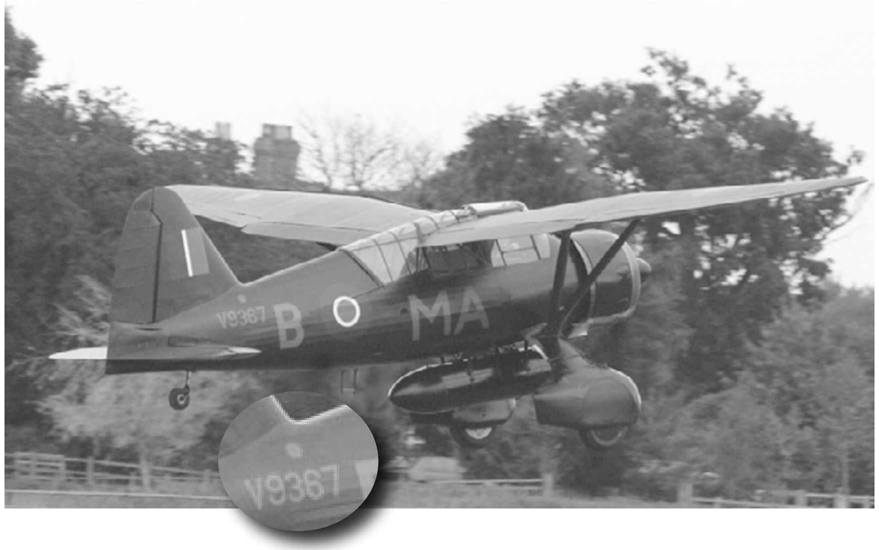
The Yellow Submarine, WK202.





The Junkers JU 52/3m g14e.
This was the final WWII production version of the Junkers.
Only a very small and unknown number were built.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 201



Westland Lysander IIIA, Serial No. V9673,
modified in the 1990s with the serial number changed to V9367,
while still claiming 161 Squadron allegiance. Note the drop tank.

Hanna Reitsch (29 March 1912–24 August 1979)
Commander-in-Chief of the German Air Force (26 April–7 May 1945).

Ian Fleming in Room 10 of Royal Navy Headquarters and smoking rights.

After five days of independent negotiations with Hitler and Bormann regarding their new identities, plastic surgery, places of residence and where the loot was, Germany surrendered (7 May 1945). The same day Winston Churchill announced WWII would end at 0.01 am 8 May 1945, with the death of Hitler officially noted as 30 April 1945, and Martin Bormann's as 1 May 1945.

This was a signature MI-6 act – one of their greatest ever. They are constantly into double-dealings that appear on the surface, and at depth, to be treasonous.

MI-6's primary role is as an agent of war.

The same day (8 May 1945) Luftwaffe General Karl Koller visited General of the Luftwaffe Ritter von Greim and Commander-in-Chief of Luftwaffe Hanna Reitsch (both 26 April–7 May 1945) and they all said:

"No one would find Hitler's corpse."

They should know. They organised his flight out and covered all bases.

For all the month that Ritter von Greim was General of the Luftwaffe he was injured. He "committed suicide" on 24 May 1945 and his 'suicide' removed any chance of him being a witness.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 Ma

Hanna Reitsch was captured in the summer of 1945. The death of her partner was enough to keep her quiet and her true confessions were either never ascertained or never made public.

Hanna Reitsch returned to Spain to live after the war. In Spain there was another attempt on her life as her plane caught fire, but she was a survivor.

Fieseler Storch

Léon Degrelle also headed to Barcelona flying a Fieseler Storch, a German VTOL (short takeoff and landing). This was the same plane the Germans used to fly Benito Mussolini (1883–1945) out of Italian captivity at Grand Sasso in northern Italy in 1943, and the same type of short single-engine aircraft Rommel used to fly around the African desert. The Fieseler Storch was a well-trusted plane, enough for German High Command intelligence work.

In Spain, Léon Degrelle, a Jesuit from father to son, Belgian Fascist, former Chief of the Belgian SS and father of seven daughters, was known as Dr Sanchez. Here, he and Hanna Reitsch crashed in his Fieseler Storch on a beach in 1945 with Degrelle suffering disfiguring burns to his face and body. They were both supposed to die after the testament mission was successfully accomplished.[15]

Hanna Reitsch had many world gliding records including the longest distance (305 km, 1936) and another for being the first to glide over the Alps. In 1952 she attained third place in the world gliding championships in Spain. Hanna Reitsch eventually died from a massive heart attack at the age of 67 (29 March 1912–24 August 1979).

In the early 1990s, Léon Degrelle (15 June 1906–1 April 1994) was commissioned by the US to write a revisionist history of WWII. He completed this, including his plane crash in Spain with Hanna Reitsch which left his face and body badly burned and scarred. Days after the book came out, he was killed (87) in Malaga (Spain) and the book was withdrawn. (Sometimes MI-6 go around and buy them all).

> It was Ian Fleming, the future author of the James Bond series, and Caroline Saunders who flew out of Berlin with Adolf and Eva Hitler to their final destination in British Intelligence-controlled Spain.

M Section's 'shred, doctor and forge' unit went into overdrive expunging every trace of Operation JAMES BOND to remove Bormann, thus removing any trace of the parasite Operation WINNIE THE POOH to remove Hitler.

---

[15] 'Dr Sanchez' was Léon Degrelle. This was the testimony of the Spaniard Don Angel Alcazar de Velasco in 1962, formerly a German V-Mann (V.312), known by the German secret service as 'Guillermo'. In the found 'lost archives' of the Abwehr he was a press attaché to the Spanish Embassy in London in 1940 where he managed a dozen other Spaniards involved in espionage for the German secret service. *Aftermath*, pp. 332–333.

Ian Fleming then became an alcoholic. His financial state was so bad by 1952 his bank manager insisted he write books in order to recover his debts. His first book *Casino Royale* appeared in 1953 and was based on actual events – the money followed and was shared with all of his James Bond team.

In the British elections immediately after WWII, Churchill was ousted and replaced at the Potsdam Conference (17 July–2 August 1945) by Prime Minister Attlee (July 1945–51). In this way, Churchill didn't have to answer any of Stalin's questions about Hitler's whereabouts. At Potsdam the Soviets and the Allies quarrelled about everything. The only thing they agreed on was that:

Hitler should be left off the list of war criminals
and not tried at Nuremberg or elsewhere.

A few weeks later General Eisenhower told Dutch radio that there was reason to believe Hitler had slipped away to freedom.

Russian and American officers who had been to the Chancellery Bunker agreed that Hitler had slipped out of the Bunker and that his body was not found. Berlin newsmen confidently announced that Hitler was still alive. In the United States, Gallup Poll I:527 showed that 70% of Americans believed Hitler was still alive.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2023

Stalin developed an obsessive suspicion that Hitler had escaped and was still alive. One Soviet report suggested that Bormann and Hitler left the bunker together, and this simple summation was reasonably close to the truth.

Hitler left the Bunker at 8 pm on 30 April 1945
and Martin Bormann left at 8.40 pm on 1 May 1945.

Stalin correctly implied that Hitler had backed General Franco's forces and accused Franco of harbouring the fugitive Hitler. Frustrated by increasing distrust and paranoia, Stalin had every contact with Hitler jailed. With them he jailed Russian, East German and Polish undercover personnel and plugged everybody for years about what they knew. The Russians did learn a lot but seemed to be baffled by an overabundance of bullshit which is the natural German reaction to major catastrophes.

In desperation Stalin ordered the infiltration of the Vatican, which produced even more bullshit. In 1953, not much closer to the truth, he had a stroke and died. "Now a new Hitler Youth Director, I mean Pope, presides over all."[16]

---

[16] British Intelligence Officer.

> Retired Intelligence Officer on guarantee of anonymity:
> "The difference between the CIA, the KGB and the Catholic Church is the KGB may shoot you, the CIA may shoot you full of drugs and the Catholic Church will guarantee to fuck you up the arse. This is why it has always been difficult to find couriers to the Catholic Church except for a certain breed of agent who doesn't mind. The Russians have always treated the Catholic Church as another spy agency, and an odious one at that."

MI-6 Officer: "Hitler's death was a shonky load of shit. Doppelgängers may have died in the bunker for Adolf and Eva, but the real Eva Braun and Adolf Hitler were swished out of Germany by the British to Spain in the same manner the British swished the Kaiser out of Germany in 1918.

"Hitler returned to Spain where the Germans had been practising for WWII from 1936 to 1939 and was referred to as 'the German Gardener' for his own protection.

"He lived out his days in the Montserrat Monastery just outside Barcelona and in the Citadel overlooking Barcelona. He worked [in the Parc de la Ciutadella opposite the Natural History Museum] as a gardener, dying in early 1950 of stomach cancer. He died from radiation plates fitted into his mattress [six weeks to die], a favourite British method of getting rid of 'sensitive alien allies from former warring countries'."

The Montserrat Monastery is incredibly isolated and currently requires a funicular (cabled railway) to get to it. But it is a very beautiful building in a stunning isolated location. When you get there you are completely dependent on the monks. Above the monastery are two outbuildings where Adolf and Eva Hitler spent their time when things got really hot. Montserrat was built in 1592 and rebuilt in 1858 after being destroyed. Now 10,000 people visit there every day.

Spymaster: "Hitler was definitely in Spain. Circa 1949/50, a group of IRA were in Spain (about 15 years before they were needed) being billeted just outside the Citadel in Barcelona. One IRA billet went for a walk in the Parc de la Ciutadella on New Year's Eve and met the 'German Gardener', Adolf Hitler, and spoke with him about his roses, in English.

"When Spanish Intelligence heard about this they went berserk. They interviewed the billet and said, 'How did you speak to the German Gardener? He doesn't speak English'

“The young IRA man replied, ‘We spoke about the roses and he spoke English.’ He was pistol-whipped for his troubles.

“The same IRA soldier didn’t surface again until 1987 when he was around 60 years old, appearing on TV walking beside Ypres Road, one of the long straight roads below the Poelcappelle (Poplar trees) in Belgium. The British were accusing him of being a Quartermaster General in the IRA (head of the army department in charge of stores). He replied: ‘I am only a poor parish priest going about my business.’ He was referred to as Father Ryan. A week later the British attempted to deport him to England, for trial, but failed, because he [too] could show that the British had removed Hitler to safety and Spain, and that the potential embarrassment of this was enormous, riotous and very unpatriotic for England.

“When I met Father Ryan, he showed me a vellum Vatican bull. It was written in English, French, German, Spanish, Italian and one other language I didn’t recognise. It read:

> ‘This Priest is on urgent mission work
> and whomever impedes or obstructs him
> will be instantly excommunicated from the Church.’”

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

Such a statement is quite comparable to that of Pope Gregory XIII (1958–63), formerly Angelo Giuseppe Roncalli, who in 1962 issued a confidential document to all Bishops, stating that they should:

> “not move any claims of paedophilia to discussion”
> on penalty of being excommunicated.

Spymaster: “Father Ryan also said he had high blood pressure and if you live long enough, you’ll come down with exactly what I’ve got.”

Sure enough, every capable Intelligence Officer I’ve spoken to has had high blood pressure. Not surprisingly, it lowered when they found someone who would record their stories and lowered again when they read this. Recording these stories takes a certain IQ – bright enough to understand and dumb enough to write it down.

Hitler started learning English when he trained in the British Psych-Ops Schools in Tavistock and Ireland, when he lived in Liverpool for six months, and during his frequent visits to London. Not speaking English was part of his cover as a British double agent and speaking English (and not German) while living in Spain was also part of his cover. It gave him the edge, and helped to make the Austrian, ‘a trusted German’.

That the young Irishman was close to the same age as Hitler was when he was in Liverpool and Ireland (23) raised enough affinity, rapport, and longing for family, for Hitler to break cover. From this point on, “the curio that Hitler had become was not worth the risk that he posed”, and a decision was made to terminate him (3 January 1950).

Radioactive plates were slipped into his mattress (5 January 1950), as per the British, and he died of stomach cancer some six weeks later (19 February 1950).

Due to Dr Morell’s toxic thrice-daily medication during the war, Hitler looked 80 rather than 60 years, 10 months and 19 days old. Adolf’s *Will* of 1938 was discovered three years later in 1953 and it left 60,000 marks to his half-brother Alois who was Hitler’s seconder. This disregarded the last will and testament Hitler and Bormann brought out of Berlin on 2 May 1945 which would have exposed operations JAMES BOND and WINNIE THE POOH as something akin to complicity to mass war crimes.

Alois Hitler was also Psych-Ops-trained and was encouraged to pick up the pieces immediately after Adolf’s actual death. He didn’t have a hope in hell. He had gambled in Monte Carlo and was bankrupted in 1914. He continued setting up businesses and gambling in Monte Carlo and changed his name from Alois Hitler to Alois Eberle and then to Alois Hiller. He took up politics and became leader of an extreme right wing nationalistic movement in the early 1950s. This also bombed.

By 1953 he was selling portraits of Hitler signed by Alois, as though they were signed by Adolf. The seconder agent had become a spoof. To finish it off, all these records have been confused and it is only input from ‘living libraries’ and ‘talking dictionaries’ that cut the wheat from the chaff.

Like Martin Bormann, there was another story floating around that Adolf Hitler had died in 1958. Folklore ideas with serious consequences are usually introduced under the guise of non-reality, usually through part-fantasy, part-reality films. Sometimes the entire film is a front for a single statement.

This was repeated in 2004 when Professor Trevor Broom (sweep it under the carpet) as Head of America’s Bureau of Paranormal Defence and Research makes this statement in the action/fantasy flick, *Hellboy*: “1958 – the occult wars finally come to an end with the death of Adolf Hitler.”

Agent John T. Myers: "1945 . . . you mean Hitler died in 1945."

Professor Trevor *Broom*: "Did he now? Oh, ah, *Myers*, this is Agent *Clay*. Take his lead. He'll make the introductions."[17]

There was another more alive action/fantasy story floating around that Adolf Hitler was running a menswear store in Levin, a small drive-through town an hour north of Wellington, New Zealand's capital. Through my research I met one of the two assassins who were assigned to kill this 'Hitler' in February 1964 (the same year Ian Fleming died). They were paid £1000 up front with another £2000 due on completion. One of the two assigned to kill this Hitler was good friends with the New Zealander Dan Davin, head of Britain's M at the time – the same organisation that had brought Martin Bormann and Hitler out of Germany 19 years earlier.

Dan Davin (1913–1990) came from humble beginnings. He grew up in the small town of Oamaru where his father was a fencer and scrub cutter. He played rugby and cricket for the South Island and became a Rhodes Scholar, which is a diplomatic spy network using sporting intelligentsia as founded at All Souls College, Oxford University, England. He wrote *The Gorse Blooms Pale* (1947) and *For the Rest of our Lives* (also 1947), a strange book about New Zealanders in Greece and the Desert of Cyrenaica and Libya during WWII. He was the inspiration for Graeme Greene's character 'Smiley', was an Oxford Don as a Classical Scholar, and held the Oxford Chair in Rare Classics, which meant he had no students. He became head of Britain's MI-5 – the British Intelligence Council (some say he became 'M' after Major Desmond Morton) – and he did all of this without the New Zealand Government ever acknowledging him.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 Mar

Two charismatic ruffians, John and Tom were having an innocent drink in the Regent Hotel lobby on Manners St in Wellington, New Zealand early in February 1964 when a respectable Jewish man approached them and said:

> "I know you boys do bad things. I have found Hitler.
> He works in a menswear store in Levin.
> Heading north, it's the one on the left.
> I want you to kill him for me."

---

[17] *Hellboy* was a movie about a boy born out of the occult with a military arm (Columbia Pictures, 2004). In the occult Golden Dawn coven language, '8' means '∞'. This was as close to '0' as they were allowed to publicly state.

The Jews were quite obsessed about Hitler and John and Tom were prepared to take advantage of this.

This Jew was the largest furrier (fur coat dealer) in the country and a very successful businessman. John and Tom considered him successful enough to be someone who should not be deluded, but as things have turned out, there were more Slavs gassed in the ovens than Jews.

Double checking this story in April 2005, John said to me: "More of mine got killed" and finished off with a joke:

> "After all the kindness from the Germans paying for Israel,
> the Huns got sick of it and sent the Jews a gas bill."

As soon as John and Tom got the £1000 down payment they jumped in a taxi and got as far away from the hotel as quickly as possible. They didn't want the "obsessed Jew" to change his mind. Tom then suggested they'd better check this guy out, so the two assigned assassins went to see the supposed Hitler.

> "He did indeed look like Hitler, right down to the height and the small moustache, but he was the wrong age . . . By then Hitler should have been 74, but this guy barely looked 60 . . . So we went back to our employer and told him we had done the job and collected the other £2000."

No Hitler and no Hitler lookalikes were killed, but it was a notable distraction that perpetrated the theory that Hitler was still alive, and it only cost £3000. The people chosen to do the job were white, believable and likeable charismatics. Their rumours would be believed, spread and misinterpreted throughout the pubs of New Zealand and abroad. The fee, the price of a house and section in those days, was never requested back. This was part of a deliberate and ongoing hoax. It was myth building.

The 'Tom' in this microcosm of history was Tom Stanford, also known as 'Tom Ward' and 'Big Tom'. He had been the cook and bodyguard for Noel Coward in England and through an actor friend of Noel's got work in the movies. He was 6'7" (2.1 m) and built well enough to be the loin-clad man who bashed the gong in the signature opening act for the J. Arthur Rank movies (later Pinewood Studios).[18]

---

[18] Other's who banged the gong were "Bombardier" Billy Wells, Ken Richmond, Carl Dane and Phil Nieman. Noel Coward had been the lover of King George VI's brother for 19 years.

In New Zealand Tom was a croupier for church and bingo halls ensuring that the promoter got their cut. When Tom Stanford died in the late 1960s he was cremated at Karori in Wellington. Four years later Jockey John went looking for him and found an undertaker who was a drinking buddy of Big Tom's. The undertaker had held on to Big Tom's ashes for a couple of years waiting for someone to claim them. When Jockey John arrived he pointed out where, two years earlier, he had "released Tom Stanford's ashes under these rose bushes here." Jockey John assures me it was quite a nice spot.

Rather ironically, three years before the Hitler contract, Hitler's assassin was cast in the leading role in the first James Bond movie *Dr No* (1962), but was replaced, due to a drinking problem, by the Scottish milkman and truck driver Sean Connery. He was, however, an advisor on the 1969 James Bond *On Her Majesty's Secret Service* where he gave George Lazenby acting lessons. (See *James Bond – Sir Sean Connery, Appendix 10*)

Conspiracy theories amass in cover-ups and there were plenty around Hitler's multiple deaths during his career, his many faceted escapes out of Germany and the many sightings of him after the war. At each level there is another theory and these are developed to occupy the minds of varying intellects and belief systems with varying amounts of research. To decipher these you have to understand that the groups behind Hitler were the most powerful and resourceful organisations in the world. For them, Hitler was an agent of war and as long as the focus was on him, it was not on them.

> Operations JAMES BOND and WINNIE THE POOH were designed so that nobody would believe they ever existed and nobody could prove them. They left no evidence other than a Junkers JU52/3m g14e that witnesses described as a Junkers/Junkers 52, a camouflaged submarine too small to be a submarine, a bombed-out motorboat and a Lysander with dummy wax-painted serial numbers proved to be elsewhere. This was enough to discredit any witnesses. The mission was designed so that nobody would believe it and nobody could prove it, making Ian Fleming the star attraction to the end of the century.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

It was essential for the British to suppress details and confuse the outcome of WWII for as long as possible. If those who fought, and those who lost parents and children during the war, discovered that Britain had taken many of the leading Nazis out of Berlin and given them safe haven in Britain, Spain, South America and New Zealand, then patriotic people would have rioted.

> The British went to enormous trouble removing Martin Bormann and Adolf and Eva Hitler out of Germany, creating doubles for all of them in life and death, as well as doubles for their transport planes.

"It was rumoured that Hitler had perished, but nobody really believed this."[19] Hitler survived for another five years and Martin Bormann for another 14 years with doppelgängers operating for both.

> Operations JAMES BOND was a success and a secret for the next half-century. Operations WINNIE THE POOH and TESTAMENT were a secret for the next 60 years.

There are jokes in Intelligence work and one of them is the number on the dates on which pertinent events occur. When the West bombed Tavistock Square as an add on to the London Tube bombing, under the guise of being oil-rich Syrians, they did so on 07.07.2005 – 007.007^7.

The joke here is that the original James Bond characters pulled Adolf Hitler out of Berlin at 5 pm, 2 May 1945 or 1700 hrs on 02.05.1945, with the numbers being $007^{\infty}.007^{\infty}$ or $(007^{\infty})^2$ – the 'squared' being another allusion to Freemasonry.

Ian Fleming left a lot of leads, just as in-house sabotage does today.

> The old boys who laugh at history – the old Freemasons with nothing to make them radical and enough protection to make them feel like life's a day's fishing amongst friends – they laugh and say the Spanish government were still making remarks about Hitler in 1965:
>
> "Our soil is tilled by the smartest people of Europe" and
> "Our soil is tilled by the finest minds of Europe".

From this they believe Hitler died in 1965 or 1975. That may be so for one of his doppelgängers, but there was cover upon cover and the real boy died on 19 February 1950.

---

[19] *Agent Extraordinary*, later known as *The Man Who Saved London*, p. 187.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Lost Leaders

If you want to study history, you need to follow the murders.
The history of war – for instance – is the study of mass murder.
It is mass murder that makes history and culture that makes home.

War is the destruction of cultures and homes.
The primary target for the destruction of the home
is the man with integrity.

We call this man husband and hero.
Traditionally he takes care of the animals and protects the region.
Without him culture is as malleable as clay.

It shouldn't be so surprising that Hitler was a British agent. Not only was he completely supported by Churchill and Stalin (they sabotaged attempts to kill him), but the same pattern is repeated over and over again in war today.

Two of the groups that tried to kill Hitler were the Black Orchestra (Schwarze Kapelle – German intelligence) and the Red Orchestra (Rote Kapelle – communist intelligence). Both, the Black and the Red Orchestra were prepared to risk their lives to kill Hitler. As such, both groups should have had the support of Churchill and Stalin. Instead both groups were sabotaged by Churchill and Stalin.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

The Black Orchestra constituted the only anti-Nazi resistance movement in Germany and had the best access to Hitler as they worked within Hitler's ranks. They were in constant contact with Churchill, but Churchill refused to return their calls.

Churchill, on the other hand, took the less effective Red Orchestra more seriously and assisted them occasionally. The Red Orchestra were communist intelligence who wanted to kill Hitler on behalf of Stalin, but would always be less effective than the Black Orchestra.

As part of the *Russo-German Non-Aggression Pact* (23 August 1939), Hitler asked Stalin to surrender the Red Orchestra. These were all highly trained and motivated German, French, Belgian and Dutch spies. In a fit of ambivalence Stalin ordered the Red Orchestra to Moscow by rail to receive medals. When they passed through Germany the Gestapo sealed off an entire train station and had them all shot. So perished the best Intelligence service the Russians ever had in the West.

In this way, Churchill and Stalin had Hitler's most motivated and resourceful enemies killed with little reference in the history books. Churchill and Stalin were conspiring together in support of Hitler. Whatever Hitler wanted, Hitler got. All three were working together for the continuation of war with Churchill pulling the strings.

"By their [Churchill and Stalin's] actions towards the anti-Hitler conspiracy they sealed the fate of Europe and the world in a pact of blood on D-Day."[1] Now Churchill's war could continue in earnest.

There were a few hard-core spies who weren't on the train, were sick or chasing poontang (sex) so a few survived, but very few. Leopold Trepper, one of the brightest, said, "Who ever heard of spies getting medals?" and never showed up.

Hitler also had enemies within Germany, many within his own ranks. "Hitler entered the war with grave misgivings of the German High Command."[2] The Black Orchestra were similarly done away with.

In 1942 a second Black Orchestra resistance (the defacto Schwarze Kapelle) was founded within the German Army and by June 1944 Colonel Claus Count Schenk von Stauffenberg had appointed himself its head. This was well known to the British. On 20 June 1944 Count von Stauffenberg was appointed as chief of staff to General Friedrich Fromm, commander of the army reserve, the home army. This gave him admission to military conferences with Hitler in his headquarters.

On his first day Count von Stauffenberg openly told his boss General Fromm that he was planning a coup d'état. General Fromm listened silently and then asked Stauffenberg to assume his duties. On 6 July 1944 Count von Stauffenberg, carrying explosives, attended a military conference with Hitler at the Berghof. Stauffenberg did not activate the timer on the explosive because he also wanted to kill Goering and Himmler simultaneously. The same thing happened on 11 and 15 July 1944.

MI-6 supplied the bomb and detonator. Both were faulty.

Rommel, who was to support Count von Stauffenberg after a successful coup, was then severely wounded, as if on British cue. By mid-1944, British fighter bombers had the Cab rank system which was capable of targeting any German vehicle. They had also sent in ground troops to assassinate Rommel. The Führer's headquarters were then transferred from his residence in the Berghof in Obersalzberg in Berchtesgaden in the Bavarian Alps to Rastenburg in north Germany.

Rastenburg, known as the Wolf's Lair, is just south of the Russian border. It is near Gierloz, 8 km east of Ketrzyn, 100 km (64 miles) southeast of Konigsberg and near Karlsof with its seven bridges. In the old language it is East Prussia. It lies on the flat sandy plain of the Guber and had 2.5 km of bunkers with walls six metres thick. It was built by the dreaded Todt Organisation (notorious for their ill-treatment of prisoners) and served as Hitler's headquarters from September 1941 to September 1944. Hitler spent most of his days here except for short trips to Berlin and Berchtesgaden in Bavaria.

The Wolf's Lair had been built on cheap swampland surrounded by deciduous forest and marshy pools which were perfect breeding grounds for fungi, mosquitos, worm eggs and dysentery. As a result, the bunkers were damp and cold as were all the Nazis' underwear and uniforms. In combination with Dr Morell's toxic treatment, Hitler suffered from diarrhoea, stomach cramps, nausea, aching limbs, shivers and fever.

The British knew this. Koch had overseen the building of the Wolf's Lair and had told British agent Winterbotham. It would have been easy enough to bomb the various German headquarters during the war, but this would have ended the war. The Berghof was the only German headquarters to be bombed, but this only happened at the end of the war and only after it had been emptied. It was more or less a symbolic gesture.

As everyone was sitting in their cars ready to leave the Berghof, Hitler returned for one last look, and commented to a bystander that he would probably never return. His apparent psychic ability was a reflection of his Intelligence reports, much of which came via British sources and via his teeth.

Von Stauffenberg then received an appointment to see Hitler on 20 July 1944 at Rastenburg, with the compromised British agent Goering attending. The British were quite happy killing Goering towards the end of the war. He was outliving his usefulness and his death would secure their shared secret – Carinhall was financed and bugged by the British.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

---

[1] Eminent German-American military historian, Charles V. P. von Luttichau, *Bodyguard of Lies*, p. 820.

[2] *The Cambridge Biographical Encyclopedia*.

At the last minute the conference was shifted to the barracks, with its thin timber-panelled walls. Stauffenberg was interrupted in another building while setting the timer on the bomb with pliers. As if with complete complicity, he then managed to place the bomb under the heavy map table in Hitler's meeting room. This was reported to Hitler minutes later. Under threat of assassination Hitler used one of his ever-ready doppelgängers to represent him.

The bomb was powerful enough to blow much of the wall and ceiling panels off and seriously injure or kill ten of the 25 people, but it was not as powerful as it should or could have been. As soon he recovered from the shock, General Wilhelm Keitel ran towards the doppelgänger Hitler saying "Where is the Führer?" He then immediately helped the severely injured doppelgänger Hitler out of the room.

Doppelgänger Hitler's reported medical condition afterwards is the least one could expect in that situation. It was reported that he had splinters in his legs, slight bleeding to his right elbow, trival bruises on the back of his left hand, both of his eardrums had been ruptured, and he had head traumas for weeks afterwards.

With the use of doppelgängers, all the expected signs of damage seemed to disappear. "After the bomb blast his left leg stopped trembling and even his hand tremor almost completely vanished. To outward appearances, the bomb left Hitler unscathed."[3]

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March

Soon after, the real Hitler entered the room with singed hair and a blackened face. He carried tattered trousers and a jacket with a square of cloth removed from it. It is difficult to rip a jacket in any pattern that is not a square, whereas an explosion does not rip a square hole, but leaves the jacket, like the trousers, in tatters.

> Hitler's experience of the explosion became a collusion.
>
> "Like everyone else in the room Hitler had experienced the explosion as an 'infernally bright darting flame' and a deafening crash. When he got up out of the burning, smoking debris with blackened face and the back of his head singed, [General Wilhelm] Keitel came running towards him, shouting, 'Where is the Führer?' and helped him [doppelgänger Hitler] get out of the room."[4]

---

[3] *The Secret Diaries of Hitler's Doctor*, p. 60. Historian Hugh Trevor-Roper goes as far as to say that Hitler wasn't even hurt in the 20 July explosion.

[4] *Hitler*, p. 708.

Hitler was leaning over the desk at the time of the explosion and his legs would have been broken and smashed with splinters of wood. He would have been knocked unconscious from the table rising to hit his upper body and head. Hitler was very close to the bomb and two people around him were killed, yet he was not counted amongst the seriously injured. His injuries "seemed to miraculously disappear within hours".

Six people were seriously injured and four died including stenographer Heinrich Berger who sometimes acted as Hitler's doppelgänger. General Heusinger who stood next to Hitler was seriously injured. Colonel Brandt, General Korten and General Schundt were all very close to Hitler and all very dead after the explosion.

In all, 226 Germans were involved in the plot to kill Hitler, so many in fact that Hitler was forced to continue working with the people who had planned to kill him.

Dr Erwin Geising treated Hitler's 'bomb plot' doppelgängers for head trauma for weeks after. "But he had suffered considerable damage"[5] and was killed by Dr Morell who treated him with his fake [toxic] 'penicillin powder'. Typically Morell used a sulphonamide of which U_1 iron was the most toxic and would have caused a violent allergic skin reaction with extreme anger as a side effect. Both of these were reason enough to die.

Once the real Hitler entered the room (after blackening his face, singing his hair and carrying the torn clothes of his doppelgänger) he told the shocked meeting that he had long known of a conspiracy to kill him and he would now unmask his conspirators. He then displayed the tattered trousers and jacket that had come off the doppelgänger Hitler moments earlier. This comes from a long practice of role playing. Role playing various scenarios is still practised by the Freemasons today (7.30 pm Tuesdays and Thursdays at a lodge near you).

That same afternoon, on 20 July 1944, Benito Mussolini arrived at Rastenburg and Hitler greeted him with his left hand (his only visible anomaly) and calmly used the bomb blast to his advantage while carrying on a conversation with full hearing. Mussolini, who believed in heroes and posing like a Greek God, said "This was a sign from heaven". More likely it was a sign from the British.

---

[5] Ibid.

Around 5 pm back at the Führer's bunker, Hitler and Mussolini met with Marshal of the Reich Hermann Goering, Foreign Minister Joachim von Ribbentrop, Commander-in-Chief of the German Navy Admiral Karl Doenitz, Supreme Commander of the Armed Forces General Wilhelm Keitel, General of Artillery Alfred Jodl, and Hitler's Chief Advisor and Chancellor Martin Bormann.

Bormann had already begun negotiations with the British. He had been forewarned and was not in the barracks during the explosion. He was in the official photographs but Bormann was not mentioned in any of the *Hitler* text as being present.

Hitler was advised that Germany was losing the war, yet he refused to capitulate. Part of Hitler's British deconstruction was the all-or-nothing approach and the all-or-nothing annihilation of Germany.

The conversation then centred around getting Hitler out of Germany alive after the war was lost. Hitler seemed lost in thought, drugged from a lozenge provided by British agent Dr Morell. These drugs exacerbated Hitler's short fuse and allowed it to be lit with key words. One of those words was 'Roehm' and it referred to Hitler's homosexual past and the control the British had over him.

When the Freemason agent, Commander of the Armed Forces General Wilhelm Keitel brought up 'Captain Ernst Roehm and the Night of the Long Knives', Hitler's subconscious hatred was activated and he rose to his feet declaring he would kill all those involved in the coup, including their wives, families and relatives.

The bomb was not powerful enough and historians blamed this on Hitler transferring from a concrete-walled bunker (which would have enclosed the blast) to a timber-lined barracks which allowed much of the explosive forces to escape. Regardless, the lack of power of the bomb had the opposite effect to which Colonel Count von Stauffenberg desired.

Over the next nine months, to April 1945, there was a wave of executions of the conspirators, the de facto Schwarze Kapelle and the German High Command with links to England. Count von Stauffenberg, his wife and sister were killed, but the children were swished. They were put in custody under false names and repeatedly moved. Many other von Stauffenbergs were hunted down and killed. Effectively all of the high-ranking intellectual Germans – the von Intellectuals – were killed.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Mussolini celebrates his chin (above).

Mussolini and Hitler parade.

This Nine Months of Long Knives did not occur without British support.

> "In fact both Nazi and Allied propaganda, in one of those dreadful harmonies they exhibited more and more frequently at this stage of the war, denounced the conspirators."[6]

The British, by providing Count von Stauffenberg with an ineffective explosive with forewarning and a doppelgänger replacement, had drawn the final curtain over the German aristocracy with any influence or military connections. Those who survived the Nine Months of Long Knives were put through the Nuremberg trials and killed afterwards.

> The only thing left for the British was to kill as many Germans as possible in the last nine months of the war and to destroy whatever vestige of infrastructure Germany had left. This too happened in a killing spree so great that more Germans died in the last nine months of the war than during the rest of the war put together. The last nine months of WWII became a massive depopulation exercise.

The killing of the Jews pales in comparison to the Allied killing of the Germans (July 1944–May 1945), which pales in comparison to the killing of the 26 million Russians, which pales in comparison to the 50 million that died from the British 1918–19 Spanish Flu epidemic.

War, it seems, is an organised killing epidemic.

Hitler went into hiding and forgot about defending Germany. His military decisions became irrational and were no longer based on the strength of his forces, but what he dreamed them to be. He spent the remainder of his time in bunkers developing jaundice, dental problems and a heart attack, all in September 1944. He also required the extremely suspicious second vocal chord operation in the same month. The first was in the Autumn of 1933.

This is a lot of sickness and operations for one man and one suspects that this sickness was spread over all of his surviving doppelgängers. The doppelgängers were bribed with the promise that their families would be safe as long as they acted for Hitler. As the security of that promise waned, so did their health. With the death of one of their comrades, they chose 'operations' as a means for time out and time off.

---

[6] *Hitler*, p. 716.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Because Mussolini was present at the meeting for the planned escapes of Hitler out of Germany, the British ensured that he too was killed before the end of the war, before he could speak out. Of the others present at the 20 July 1944 meeting, Goering was tried at Nuremberg and committed suicide (11 pm 15 October 1946) with American assistance just before he was due to be executed. Ribbentrop was tried and hanged at Nuremberg two hours later at 1 am 16 October 1946.

Keitel (1882–1946) and Jodl (1890–1946) were totally fluent and complicit with the doppelgänger Hitlers and it was essential that all of their secrets died with them. They were both tried and executed.

"A major-general in 1934, he [Wilhelm Keitel] was serving as chief-of-staff to the Minister of War in 1938, and, on Hitler's abolition of that office after the Blomberg/Fritzsche crisis, became head of the unified defence staff which was set up to replace it (OKW). He held the post throughout the war. It involved constant attendance on Hitler and he was therefore privy to all his major strategic decisions, besides being responsible for their transmission to the operational commands . . . In practice, his age [63] made his advice of little use (he was known in the army as Lakaitel – 'Lackey') and Hitler depended more on Jodl."[7]

"Colonel-General Alfred Jodl was chief of the Operations Section, High Command of the Armed Forces, and Hitler's personal operations officer. He was born in 1890 in Bavaria [the cradle of Naziism], into a traditionally military family. Commissioned into the artillery in 1910 he served throughout WWI. He was appointed Chief of the National Defence Section of the General Staff (war plans) in 1935 and Chief of the Operations Section in the new OKW in 1938 and held that post throughout the war. His chief tasks were to inform Hitler of military situations as they developed and to transmit his orders to the operational commands. OKW was not itself a command staff, but it was the one with which Hitler was in most frequent and intimate touch and Jodl came eventually to act as Hitler's principal military adviser, since Keitel lacked the courage to disagree with him."[8]

"Admiral Karl Dönitz [Doenitz] was Grand Admiral, Commander-in-Chief of the German Navy and Hitler's successor. He arranged the surrender of Germany to the Allies and insisted throughout the trial that his career had been solely that of a professional naval officer, a submission to which the tribunal went some way towards accepting. He was convicted on two out of three counts and sentenced to ten years."[9]

---

[7] John Keegan, 'The Men in the Dock', *Purnell's History of the Second World War*, No. 117, p. 3269.

[8] Ibid. p. 3268.

> Admiral Doenitz had been a submarine commander and knew all the secrets of German Antarctica and was far too useful for the Americans to kill. He had also been a British agent from early 1919. As a result, Doenitz survived until 1980 – longer than anyone else.
>
> Martin Bormann escaped the Nuremberg trial by providing the British with the Nazis' Swiss Bank account numbers. He did attend the Nuremberg trials, but only after plastic surgery, attending in the spectators gallery with M, the head of British Special Secret Intelligence Operations. M had got Bormann out of Berlin in OP JAMES BOND and Hitler out of Berlin in the piggyback mission impossible, OP WINNIE THE POOH.

The 20th of July 1944 was an important day in history. From a failed British sabotaged coup, all the de facto Schwarze Kapelle and their families were killed. The 'von Intellectuals' were wiped out, as were their families. The Germany military tradition was wiped clean and the fate of the entire German command was sealed.

"Thus Hitler not only destroyed Germany, he also put an end to old Europe . . . ultimately it must be granted that he could not have destroyed Europe without the help of Europe."[10]

> The killing of Germans began in earnest at six times the rate of the rest of the war – and all for what? So that Adolf Hitler, an Austrian-born British agent running Germany into the ground, could be brought out to safety, and hidden, until the propaganda of war had taken over the post-war recovering world, the Cold War begun and the mystery man would take all the blame for the social engineering and military profits of the war-makers.

The Wolf's Lair headquarters in East Prussia (Poland) was built under British supervision. Group Captain Fred Winterbotham visited the site in 1935 and knew it was built for the attack on Russia which

had been planned from 1919. The attack on Russia was self-sabotage for the German war effort – hence it was supported by the British. The Germans also lost WWI by fighting on two fronts.

> Spymaster: "Nothing succeeds like making the same mistake twice."
>
> From this point on, Hitler prepared many options for his escape. He also kept well hidden, and virtually gave up on defending Germany. This was also part of the British plan. Why should Hitler defend Germany when his own men were trying to kill him? Hitler gave up and waited for the destruction of Germany as per his British training. He knew he was to be guaranteed complete assistance in his escape.

Hitler sowed confusion as to his whereabouts using surviving doppelgängers for his public appearances. One, in a hospital, was shown on Movietone News in 1945 with the title *German Newsreels on Hitler's Escape*. Newsreel narrator: "Looking rather more round-shouldered than usual, he goes from bed to bed commiserating with the casualties. Maybe this is Hitler's double or perhaps his double was killed by the bomb. Though there are scores of theories, the facts are not yet known."[11]

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

The fact that Movietone News had the newsreel showed that it was leaked for PR purposes.

The Movietone News doppelgänger was an entirely bigger person, with round shoulders, a chin, jowls, different-shaped ears, hairline and neck thickness. He was 1–2 inches taller (25–50 mm), had muscular arms, a thick chest and large farmer's hands. He was a bigger man altogether but wore the trademark moustache which drew attention away from all other features. He had also had plastic surgery to imitate Hitler's nose.

Hitler, at this stage, was square-shouldered and thin, with a hollow chest.

Narrator: "In the final months of the war, even the Germans couldn't be certain. Since the 1944 bomb plot, Hitler kept well out of sight hidden away in bunkers. The last ordinary Germans who saw him in the open were a handful of the Hitler Youth."[12]

---

[9] Ibid. p. 3268. Slightly paraphrased.

[10] *Hitler*, p. 750.

[11] *Hitler of the Andes*.

[12] Ibid.

There were seven plans to get Hitler out of Germany. These are separate from the faking of his death. Some of the plans for his escape became active false trails and these were pursued relentlessly by complicit intelligence agencies. These seven plans included South America, south-west Africa, Switzerland, Norway, Antarctica, Spain and New Zealand where a hit against a Hitler was ordered in February 1964, well after his actual death.

The main East-West avenue was used by the Nazis as a runway right up to the last moments when Berlin fell with Hanna Reitsch flying out on 29 April 1945. The Nazis had captured British planes at hand to try and make their escape without being shot down, one of which was an Auster with RAF markings.

Flight out of Berlin was certainly possible. Hitler's switchboard operator: "There were two planes waiting to the North of Berlin. One of them was the [large] JU390 and a Blohm and Voss that could fly the same distance. It could fly 18,000 km without refuelling, so Hitler could have escaped if he wanted to."[13]

Professor Hugh R. Trevor-Roper, a wartime MI-6 officer and British Army Major and more recently the Regius Professor of Modern History at Oxford University: "Up to 22 April [1945] when the net closed, they could get out by air. Big airplanes could take off on the 22nd and a whole convoy of them went off from Berlin to Berchtesgarden on the 22nd carrying quite a large number of people who wanted to get out – all those who opted to get out. The Russians couldn't be everywhere."[14]

Despite Trevor-Roper's confidence, a packed Condor, including Dr Morell, flew out on 23 April to Munich.[15]

Stalin's deputy, Marshal Zhukov had announced Hitler was dead on 1 May 1945, but had changed his mind. *Hitler could easily have escaped*. The runway was open and he was probably in Spain or Argentina, both of which were fascist. So the newspapers published articles with the headings, "Hitler's Argentine Connection". This was another cover-up. Spain was a fascist country under British Intelligence control and Hitler was a British agent.

Hitler was in Spain.

---

[13] *Hitler of the Andes*.

[14] Ibid.

[15] This was additional to the Condor that flew out and crashed two days earlier.

Hitler's destination to Barcelona was pre-empted with the Condor that crashed on 21 April 1945 in Müldorf as it left Berlin headed for Barcelona. Despite the strong indication that Hitler had escaped to Barcelona, all search efforts were directed elsewhere.

To counter this, the British sent out a young army major and MI-6 agent, Hugh Trevor-Roper who was someone with no authority, but breeding. He was 31 years old but looked 23. This is called 'send a monkey, get peanuts'. Hugh became Baron Dacre of Glanton for his efforts.

In *The Last Days of Hitler*, British Army Major Hugh Trevor-Roper gives an illuminating account of his vain efforts to obtain information or co-operation from the Russians:

> "The Russians accused the British of harbouring Hitler and Eva Braun in their zone for some nefarious and unstated purpose in the future. And at this point my superior officer, Dick White [who later spent his Christmases in the 1950s and '60s with the treasonous homosexual spy Anthony Blunt attending] said, 'Enough is enough. It's perfectly ridiculous that the facts have not been established' and he charged me with this mission."

Starting a month after the report of Hitler's death (approx. 30 May 1945), Hugh Trevor-Roper's mission was fraught with difficulties. The bunker had been ransacked by the Russians and was 0.3 metre (1 foot) deep in water with no electricity. Neither the Soviets, British or Americans shared information or evidence. Hansl Baur, Hitler's pilot and Hans Rattenhuber, the head of Hitler's guard, people who were in the bunker at the time of Hitler's escape, were in Soviet imprisonment and unavailable for interrogation.

All the important conclusions of Hugh Trevor-Roper on Hitler's death were based on the evidence of one man, Sturmbannführer Erich Kempka, Hitler's personal chauffeur who was also present at the Night of the Long Knives. According to Kempka, Hitler was shot. This became the official version, but the British found no bloodstains that matched Hitler's blood type, no bullets, and no bullet holes in the room where he was supposed to have shot himself.

To continue his 'milk and cookies' version of history as the official British history of 'maximum depth and endeavour', Hugh Trevor-Roper was made Regius Professor of Modern History at Oxford University in 1957. (See *Hugh Trevor-Roper*, *Appendix 8*)

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

A month prior to sending Hugh Trevor-Roper, the British had sent Anthony Blunt (37, King George V's illegitimate son) to Schloss Kronberg (a castle near Frankfurt) to retrieve any evidence of the former King Edward VIII's Nazi involvement. British half-royal Anthony FitzBlunt was German Army Intelligence with a 'V-Mann number' and a numbered Soviet operative.

These connections gave Blunt a free pass anywhere in wartime Europe. He had spent the war actively passing information to both the Germans and the Russians and was known by the Russians as "ideological shit". This made him one of the best non-ideological spies the world had ever seen.

> Anthony Blunt represented one thing – the British monarchy: a non-ideological spy-unit 'loyal only to itself' – perhaps the best definition of 'royal' ever.

Spymaster: "On his mission, Anthony Blunt took liberty and stole the Kaiser's crown jewels from the Czech castle Karlstejn, which had been purposely built to safeguard the inheritance."

Russia Looks for Hitler

By late July 1945 at the Potsdam conference, Stalin knew the bodies of Hitler they'd discovered were fake and the British were hiding Hitler either in Spain or Argentina. Stalin said as much to President Truman (Freemason) and to Secretary of State Jimmy Byrnes as recorded in *Frankly Speaking* and *Hitler*.

Espoys Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

> "At the Potsdam conference in July, 1945, Stalin assured his Western colleagues that the Russians had not found the corpse and that Hitler was hiding in Spain or South America."[16]

> Hugh Trevor-Roper:
> "In Spain there was General Franco [general & dictator from 1936–75] and in Argentina there was Colonel Perón [soldier and president from 1946–55, 1973–74]. From Stalin's point of view, these were both semi-Nazi reactionary dictatorships who supported the Germans."[17]

To support the Argentina theory, before, during, and after the end of WWII, the large German population in Argentina would give each other the Nazi salute . . . even on the beach, where they could be seen from submarines, and in places where they were openly filmed on land.

Smersh and the KGB did their best to prove that Hitler hadn't killed himself, but had somehow vanished. This marked the start of Operation MAPTA (MYTH), Nº 655-A/OP. Operation MYTH was the cornerstone of Stalin's claim that Hitler had escaped and was being looked after by Western fascists. It was made public in the 1990s. Of detailed note is that the typewritten 'P' in 'OP' had been changed by ballpoint pen into a 'B'. The 'B' stood for 'observation' rather than 'operation'.

The Soviets never looked at the bodies found in Berlin after the first autopsy of 3–8 May 1945. They knew they were doppelgängers of Adolf and Eva Hitler. The Russian commission autopsy report (Document 12) showed no bullet wounds to the skull, nor any detectable fragments from the claimed shooting, but the remains of a crushed ampoule in the mouth of the corpse. There was no smell of bitter almonds given off by cyanide compounds observed in the other bodies, but those bodies weren't burnt.

The bodies were treated with exemplary neglect by the Russians and buried secretly in a shallow grave, in a little wood, so that even dogs could dig them up. Then the Russians placed a guard at the site – until the earth settled.

The KGB then claimed to have "flushed Hitler's corpse" into a Magdeburg river in April 1970. These were the skeletal remains of a doppelgänger Hitler or Hitler's killed 29 April–1 May 1945.

> "In a memorandum to the U.S. Joint Chiefs of Staff, dated August 5, 1945, they [the British] requested that all those concerned with compiling the official histories of the war not 'be given access to any original special intelligence material'.
> "They [the British] further proposed that the British Chiefs of Staff 'write up important battles, using personnel already indoctrinated', and it was this information that would be given to official historians for incorporation in their volumes . . . The U.S. Joint Chiefs of Staff . . . agreed in a memorandum to the British Chiefs of Staff, dated September 7, 1945."[18]

To continue this, Stalin was blamed for covering up true information and putting out false information about Hitler.

---

[16] *Hitler*, p. 750.

[17] *Hitler of the Andes*.

[18] *Bodyguard of Lies*, p. 825.

> "In the end the Russians managed to swathe the whole question in such obscurity that the wildest versions concerning the end of Hitler circulated . . . *fleeing in a submarine to a remote island, living in a Spanish monastery* or on a South American hacienda."[19]

Amongst those most taken with the news that Hitler was alive was General Eisenhower. Months after Berlin was taken, he said publicly:

> "*We have been unable to find one tangible piece of evidence of Hitler's death.* Even though I initially believed Hitler was dead, there are now *reasons to assume that he is alive.*"[20]

A radio bulletin stated "*The United States Army does not know whether Hitler is alive or dead.*" An Associated Press heading read "Zhukov Says Hitler Wed Actress In Berlin, May Be Alive in Europe . . . Berlin, June 9 [1945] – *Adolf Hitler not yet found.*"

On 19 December 1945 a newspaper article read: "*Soviets not convinced Hitler Dead*". Other articles read, "Far from being brought to justice, Hitler had melted away" and "*Court Ruling sought on Hitler's Death*".[21]

> After all of these headings the Soviets then claimed the British were holding Hitler alive. Stalin should know. He was a British agent and had been a criminal in London's East End underground. He still had contacts in Britain and knew as much as most as to what was going on.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

After the Potsdam conference the false trail was developed to Argentina and was continued through into the mid-1970s. This involved a U-boat leaving Norway for Argentina in great secrecy and was followed by a well-publicised landing and surrender on the coast of Argentina on 17 August 1945.

The FBI then became involved and searched for Hitler from the subways of the Bronx to the jungles of Latin America. This was only ever going to be a wild-goose chase. The FBI were already discredited by their director J. Edgar Hoover (1924–1972) who looked like a Russian with a crooked jaw and mouth. "He was a paranoid and suspicious neurotic man who had built his career on finding the enemy within."[22]

---

[19] *Hitler*, p. 750.

[20] *Hitler of the Andes.*

[21] Ibid.

[22] Ibid.

Soon after Hoover (1895–1972) died the hunt for Hitler ceased. A discredited person is always required to pursue a fruitless mission and J. Edgar Hoover was a cross-dressing, bisexual, inside-crime boss, who was given the Hitler-hunt for 27 fruitless years. Hoover was regularly sodomised by the Mafia while dressed as a woman.

J. Edgar Hoover was useless for integrity and could be guaranteed to support crime at whatever level, whenever it was required. He was as much an agent for chaos as anyone and it was only through having intelligence files on everyone else that he was able to take his intelligence role to the top and to keep his weird sexual behaviour under wraps. The Mafia didn't care about reputations and used his secret to screw him every which way. While the FBI were hunting Hitler, the Mafia were creating crime.

The FBI (America's CID) began to investigate if Hitler had made it across the Atlantic, and recently released FBI documents point to worry and hysteria surrounding the possibility that Hitler was alive and in their neighbourhood. The FBI documents presented had all traceable detail blacked out, so little or no follow-up was possible. Some of these documents were letters sent in by players to create false leads and other leads were treated as hoaxes, like "If you want to know where Hitler is call xxx-xxx". The name and address was also blacked out.

Polls at the time showed that over 50% of people believed Hitler was still alive and this led to a lot of Hitler sightings. Every FBI bureau in the US received sightings of Hitler somewhere in America. There were a thousand FBI agents working on these reports at any one time. This produced over 1200 documents on Hitler's escape – all of which were decoys.

The maths on this is fascinating. If 1000 FBI agents hunted for Hitler over 30 years from late 1945 to the mid-1970s and produced 1200 reports, then each FBI agent spent 25 years completing one report. The hunt for Hitler was cover for every other FBI operation under the sun.

A hoax is always built upon a previous hoax
and never the truth of history.

This is how history is hidden and how history is formed. It is also why 95% of all history books contain information that is two-thirds false. The longest hoaxes are always reason for the next war.

The most enthusiastic Hitler hunter was *The National Police Gazette – Sports, True Adventure, People* (America's first pictorial, established 1845). In the December 1945 issue, the front cover showed two American actors looking like suburban versions of Hitler and Eva at 40 and 30 years of age. The cover read "Hitler is Alive! His Marriage to Eva Braun – Their Fake Suicide and Escape from Berlin".

One story goes that a double had died for Hitler at the bunker and Adolf Hitler and Eva Braun had escaped to Norway (north Germany, through Denmark, to Norway) and from there were taken by the U-boat submarine U-977 to Latin America.

U-977 crew member: "We left Norway on 6 or 7 May [1945] and then practically became a phantom boat, all the way around the North of Scotland, past Ireland, past France and the Bay of Biscay. They were looking for us and searching for us and all we could do was listen for anyone above us."[23]

This was a voyage many thought physically impossible but the U-977 made it to the coast of Argentina on 17 August 1945. On the same day the newspaper headline read "102 Days Late, German Sub Surrenders to Argentina". The crew were immediately taken prisoner and accused of hiding Hitler on board. During their interrogation many Nazi U-boat officers were castrated.

John Walsh, an American FBI G-Man (a spy working for the American Embassy in Buenos Aires on the fruitless Hitler-hunt in Argentina): "The U-boats came and surrendered to Argentina. The press reports there indicated that someone in Montevideo [Uruguay] or Argentina suggested that Hitler had been on these boats and that caused a number of people to say, 'Well, we have to look into that possibility'."[24]

More reports of U-Boat landings came into the FBI over the next couple of weeks. "Reports of Hitler Hideout – Los Angeles, [muffled] Bureau, 21 September 1945 – The first sub came close to shore after it had been signalled safe to land and a doctor and several men disembarked and Hitler and two women. Another doctor and seven more men said Hitler had suffered from asthma and ulcers and had shaved off his moustache and had a long 'but' on his upper lip."[25]

---

[23] *Hitler of the Andes.*

[24] Ibid.

[25] Ibid.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2018

Hitler was supposed to be hiding in the foothills of the Southern Andes but reports remained unconfirmed. Argentina's navy tried to capture the U-boats but the huge coastline made it easy for the Nazis to evade capture and get ashore on German-owned coastal farms in Patagonia.

The FBI then set up an operation behind the walls of the American Embassy in Buenos Aires but the FBI's power of interrogation was restricted and their agents had to operate covertly. They had difficulty establishing the crucial network of informants on the ground and were limited by their conspicuousness. They were also under constant surveillance from local police and Nazis who hid behind newspapers.

This was a game of **Spy versus Spy** for the Nazis, with the Nazi spies looking exactly like the FBI's G-Men except that they all had moustaches. This pre-empted the movies that took them seriously and the comic strips that lampooned them later.

Messages from outside Argentina were relayed to the FBI Hitler-hunters by the FBI Radiogram system. These instructions kept the team of G-Men busy chasing the ever-elusive, never-present Hitler for over four decades.

The FBI G-Men would even report on footprints found in mudflats near San Gelling (25 June 1948), leading to a car and would then follow up in Veronica. There were thousands of lost leaders. Another U-boat was spotted on 18 July 1948 at Mar del Plata, then Hitler was seen heading across the Argentine pampas towards the southern Andes towards the German-owned Eden Hotel in La Falda, a remote region of Cordova nestled in the foothills of the Andes. This was a crop circle investigation, defined by the *Oxford Reference Dictionary* as caused by "whirlwinds, fungi, alien spaceships and/or hoaxers".

In November 1945, the FBI had linked Hitler to the Eden Hotel, a centrepiece of a long-established wealthy German community. This was an international hotel where aristocrats from Cordova and Buenos Aires danced to the orchestra into the early hours.

Since the 1930s, the Eden had been a paradise for its predominantly German clientele. It was run by Eda Eyckhorn whose connections reached the highest echelons of the German Reich. She was definitely dykey-looking and went to Europe each year to attract guests.

One suspects that the principal guests she attracted were those Germans with an unnatural interest in children. Kiddy porn is still not illegal in Germany and fascist Germans are renown paedophiles, including the Stasi.

According to the FBI, who established a dossier on Eyckhorn after the war, she had close links with the German Reich. Before the Nazis had come to power she placed her entire bank account of 30,000 marks at Goebbels' disposal. Over the years she became one of Hitler's closest friends and confidants although there is no mention of her in Joachim C. Fest's authoritative *Hitler.*

This was a fabrication and showed the FBI's collusion in taking the world's attention off the scent, onto Argentina and away from Spain.

> Spain was where Hitler was and, quite purposely, no post-war-controlled media published anything of him being there.

It was difficult for the FBI G-Men to get to La Falda in person, because they stuck out like sore thumbs. The FBI *never* went to the Eden Hotel. They used locals and got all of their information second-hand. A lot of photos of Hitler had been placed around the hotel and the hotel was in a constant state of readiness for his arrival. It was considered to be the natural place for him to be in Argentina.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Catalina de Mero, a seventeen-year-old maid at the Eden Hotel, said Hitler came to the hotel in 1948. "He arrived one night and was put up on the third floor [of the two-storey hotel]. I took breakfast up to him, placed it at his door, knocked and then left. It was German food including cheese soufflés [beaten egg] and he ate everything."

According to Catalina de Mero, the Hitler of the Andes was clearly recognisable as the Hitler of so many people's imagination, even though he'd lost his moustache and most if not all of his hair. He wore a wig. For the three days he was there, the third floor was private, but everything carried on below as normal.

The hotel proprietor, Eda Eyckhorn, told the 17-year-old maid: "Whatever you saw, pretend you didn't." Two weeks later Eda and Catalina drove up to a wooden house in Pandazucar in the mountains and delivered a picnic basket of German food to the supposed Hitler. From here he went to La Rioja after which they lost trace of him. Pandazucar means 'sugar bread' and is still a lodging place today.

The Angel of Death, Josef Mengele (1911–79) chief doctor at Auschwitz, and Adolf Eichmann (1906–62) an SS organiser of anti-Semitic activities, arrived in South America the following year (1949). Mengele befriended the Nazi Wolfgang Gerhardt in Brazil in 1961 and assumed his identity when Gerhardt died. Eichmann reached Argentina in 1948 and was traced by Israeli agents. He was taken to Israel in 1960 where he was tried and executed. (See *Was Wallis Simpson A Man*, *Appendix 13*)

The FBI didn't close the files on Adolf Hitler until the mid-1970s, after the useful hoaxer J. Edgar Hoover had died in 1972. After this the Americans started to liberalise their attitude towards the secret matters of WWII and a flood of documents were declassified in the spring of 1975 containing secret papers on cover and deception.

> John Walsh, FBI G-Man in Buenos Aires:
> "Much of the information was not credible . . . others where there was a possibility of some credibility . . . we made enquiries . . . but [in] none of them we found any true indications that Hitler was in Argentina or the United States, or in any place where we had any responsibility. All the investigations we made came to a dead end because nothing really specific had been found."[26]

The narrator of *Hitler of the Andes* states that these revealed Stalin had deliberately confused and misinformed the West about Hitler's fate in Spain or Argentina. This is an interesting end to the documentary as it never investigated Spain. It is designed to confuse, introduce an erroneous story, affirm lost leaders and discredit truthful leads.

Stalin tried to find the truth about Hitler's escape. It is what fellow agents and mortal enemies do. They look out for each other, whether they like them, admire them, or fear them. After all, Stalin and Hitler were both fellow foreign British agents in a plan to make the Great War (WWI) even greater (WWII).

Eisenhower then became America's 34th President on 20 January 1953 and Stalin was killed by MAD 44 days later.

Spymaster: "With his interest in Hitler, Stalin's protection from being poisoned was suddenly removed. In his diet kitchen there was an amalgam of secret services who all tasted his food. These included Smersh and the GRU, the forerunner to the KGB. They watched each other and tasted everything. It was quite the tense kitchen.

---

[26] *Hitler of the Andes.*

"Stalin was treated in much the same way as Hitler and the Queen, receiving all these homeopathic medicines, but Stalin never received any medicine, homeopathic or other, for high blood pressure, nor was he treated for high blood pressure. High blood pressure is a common condition amongst top secret agents, especially deconstructed agents at the head of the programme.

"When Stalin suffered his stroke, his sentries enforced his privacy. He was most likely guarded by White Finns (Finnish) who worked for the British government on contract. White Finns were also used to guard Lenin in his last days. There is a long history of foreign troops guarding key assets in Russia. The Czech legion guarded the trans-Siberian railway in the last days of WWI because it was a foreign asset."

Modern Equivalents

The Hitler-Hunt was the FBI's most incredible manhunt, but the whole scenario reeks of Saddam Hussein and Osama bin Laden – they too are more useful as 'enemies to incite ongoing hatred' and therefore defence spending, as opposed to 'succumbed and conquered' enemies. The myth of Hitler was kept alive for the same reason – the development of fear and arms.

British SAS: "Saddam Hussein is an American agent, but may have been taken over by the Israelis at one point. Osama bin Laden has been an American agent for the last 30 years and his CIA codename is Tim Osman. He was educated in Britain and is described by a former school buddy as 'Harry bin Laden' (his British name) and as 'a family man, full of integrity, with a nice nature'."

treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

High ranking ASIO officer: "I have seen Bin Laden in a safe house in London. Perhaps that's why he doesn't appear to age as he walks down the rocky slopes of yesteryear."

James Bond III: "Bin Laden is in on the oil scam. The 007, 7 July 2005 London Tube bombing was arranged by the Americans and Israelis with everything attributed to the Syrians as Syrian oil is the next American mark. They won't attack Iran because they have nuclear weapons, but you watch, Syria is the next country America will attack making Syria the 74th country since 1945. It's the same scenario as my namesake pulled."

Spymaster: "Arafat was an Egyptian brought in to run Palestine as an Israeli-American agent of war, which in turn profits the Americans who supply Israel with arms, hence Yasser Arafat's inability to conclude peace."

"But many Palestinians now believe he [Arafat, 75] could not have served Israel's cause better had he been a card-carrying member of Sharon's Likud party."[27]

Spymaster: "Palestinian President Arafat [4 Aug. 1929–11 Nov. 2004] was poisoned during the build-up to the American elections when his protection from poisoning was suddenly removed. The first poisoning on 20 October 2004 gave him stomach pains making him really sick by 29 October. He was vomiting and unable to eat or drink. This was made to look like 'leukaemia or some other blood disorder' with an 'abnormally low count of blood platelets'. This took him out of the country to a Clamart military hospital in Paris where his wife Suha has lived for the last two and a half years with their daughter Zara Arafat (8).

"The second poisoning was powerful enough to put him into a 'reversible coma' (5 November 2004), the day after the American election result. The first poisoning hospitalised him and the second was to keep him in a coma on life support. Because he had never named a successor, Palestinian leadership was placed in hiatus, making the Palestine Liberation Organisation vulnerable to takeover, by yet another American/Israeli agent."

On 9 November, on Al Jazeera TV, Suha Arafat accused Palestinian officials of conspiring to kill her husband. "They're trying to bury him alive."

High-ranking ASIO officer: "To discredit her the International Monetary Fund [part of the UN and an American patsy] found US$1 billion in one of Arafat's offshore accounts. The money was missing from the Palestinian Treasury. The technology for this search was provided by America who monitor all the world's money transfers. Eventually closer to US$6 billion was found in Arafat's purse.

"Arafat took this money on American instructions and with American assistance. It is a common tactic of those offering bribes to give money in exchange for a favour, in this case more conflict, and then discredit that person and retrieve the money."

MICK P: "In this version, Arafat took someone else's money, not America's but the Palestinian Treasury's. Consequently the Israelis never took Arafat seriously and buried him alive, playing cat and mouse with him for his last three years, keeping him alive only as a toy incapable of negotiating peace. Arafat was then discredited and killed, creating a power vacuum, while morally empowering Israel. This is called 'demonising the opponent' and was also used against Hitler and Stalin. They all deserve it, but they were all double agents."[28]

---

[27] *New Zealand Herald*, 12 November 2004, A22.

British SAS: "America wants to install puppet governments in every area of conflict. Because up to a third of America's gross national product is based in and around the military industrial complex, and because America is so dependent on oil, America is setting up puppet governments in all areas of conflict, and in all areas where there is oil, which, surprise surprise is the same thing. Afghanistan (drugs), Iraq (oil) and Syria (oil) are cases in point. These countries always 'attack' the West before America goes in and takes over their resources."

Arafat lived simply but was reported to pay his wife a monthly allowance of US$100,000. The fight for his power and fortune now begins with Suha Arafat. Her deceased husband has been sufficiently discredited, and his wife is now unable to return to her own country, having lost all influence. It's a tidy little stitch-up not dissimilar to those of WWII.

Arafat was poisoned (20 October and 5 November 2004) at the same time as the American election (28 October–3 November 2004) with the self-confessed war-maker George W. Bush re-elected (4 November 2004) and Arafat dying on 11 November 2004 (11.11.2004). Whenever such symmetrical dates are attached you know it was a planned event.

Espavo 3020 - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Spymaster: "Britain's prime minister Tony Blair is also not immune to bribes. The war-maker George W. Bush called again for Britain to support the war in Iraq in early October 2004 as a part of the 'Coalition of the Willing'. This was a month before the American election and Bush needed Britain's support in order to get re-elected. Many other countries, including Spain and Japan, had pulled out."

On 8 November 2004 a radio bulletin said that Blair was beginning to look like "The greatest British prime minister since Winston Churchill". Churchill himself was a war-maker and both were heavily compromised. Both were occultists and both were rock spiders (paedophile minders).

British Intelligence Officer, 12 November 2004: "On 10 November 2004, it was revealed that Tony Blair had bought a £3.5 million apartment on the Thames – the ferrets are all over this.

---

[28] 'MICK P' is a Member of the Intelligence Community Knowledge Pool.

"In order to get countries to support America in the Iraq war, Bush had the FBI pull out all the smut files on every political leader. Tony Blair, it was found, was covering for and promoting those involved in a paedophile ring involving knights and at least one prominent royal, a second cousin to the queen.[29]

"Britain's Tony Blair is now a fully-fledged puppet for the American military industrial complex, which is why he has been in power for so long. The media is the propaganda machine for the war machine. It's just as Winston Churchill said:

'The first casualty of war is the truth'.
All the war media are embedded
and the media is *bound* to tell the lies
the military industrial complex want told."

In the Iraq war, America's death toll was minimised to 1500 and the civilian death toll as officially 17,000, but in the real world it was over 100,000 as of April 2005.

By June 2006 the official American death toll had risen to 2,500 and the official Iraqi civilian death toll had dropped to 50,000. This meant that in the 14 months of American-Iraq war from April 2005 to June 2006 at least 50,000 Iraqis have miraculously not died. This would make the truth very dead in Iraq and Allied media capable of raising the dead.

Even the Iraqi Health Ministry has acknowledged the 50,000 death toll as an undercount.[30] The problem is that the violence has been so extreme in the north and the west with the used of plutonium-tipped missiles and rolling thunder (a rolling wall of fire 100 metres high and 800 metres wide) that often there are no bodies left to count and no one left to say how many died. The 'body count war lie' has been purposefully exacerbated by cut telephone and power lines, but we all know the real reason for America's atrocious acts in Iraq.

> The worse Iraq gets, the more justification there is for oil price increases and those oil prices are set worldwide. It is not diplomacy that controls the world, but oil. Diplomacy is just something sodomists fake under the guise of being employed by governments whose employees are elevated depending on their level of involvement in shame

---

[29] This was the Dunblane massacre in 1996 in which 16 school children were murdered by Thomas Hamilton.

[30] *Los Angles Times*, 25 June 2006.

. . . and the measuring stick of shame is paedophilia . . .
hence rock spider Prime Ministers.

James Bond III: “Iraq is being depopulated by ‘Rolling Thunder’, 800 metres of ground-level rolling flame . . .”

Spymaster: “And the Israelis have developed plutonium-tipped rockets. The bodies are simply vaporising and vaporised bodies can’t be counted.”

All this for American access to oil upon which its superior survival depends, with the doubling of oil prices to fund the war. It’s just as the American comedian Craig Kilborn said:

“How did our oil get under their sand?”

A week after the election, America went into Fallujah with its “biggest military assault since WWII”. They decimated Fallujah killing several hundred rebels (breeding males) each day and untold civilians (these are not reported).

MICK P: “They were due to attack oil rich Iran anytime from October 2004, using Israeli aircraft off American aircraft carriers, with the intent to drop low-radiation nuclear bombs, decimate the population, and take over the oil fields . . . but on 9 October 2004, through an Israeli-Iranian treff in a chip factory in the colonies, Iran confirmed that they had a large number of nuclear weapons hidden under the likes of school buildings.

“These were purchased from India, via Sweden (India’s nuclear weapons agent). Sweden has a nice name, so no one suspects. So instead, tens of thousands of Indians and 3000 Swedes were killed and another oil field was taken over on 26 December 2004 in what became known as the Boxing Day Tsunami.”

Spymaster: “Much of the technology used in the tsunami was trialled by the New Zealand Army off Whangaparoa Peninsula during WWII. In those days it was destined for use against low-lying ground in Japan.”

MICK P: “HAARP[31] was used to create the main earthquake. The six minor earthquakes around Diego Garcia, the US military base in the upper-middle of the Indian Ocean ere caused by NZ-styled bombs placed well before the Tsunami hit. Consequently, Diego Garcia suffered no damage, despite the base being 0.6 m (2 ft) above sea level. US ships were also given two-weeks notice to leave the Indian Ocean.

“There is also a move to disappear islands off maps for use as military bases. Diego Garcia is disappearing, just as Kodak Island has already disappeared.”

If Burma’s high casualty rate made it to the media, it would have brought unwanted attention to Diego Garcia, a nuclear missile base. Burma colluded and denied the bulk of their casualties.

Control of the media is essential to acts of war.
Truth is still the first casualty of war.
Lies are told before and after strikes.

It seems that nuclear arms are a strange form of peace that protect oil fields. Ironically, no-radiation nuclear bombs are also the symbol of the anti-patriotic movement.

Vet: “The war in Iraq is now having a demographic effect on the Iraqi population for the simple reason that there are so many car-bombings and shootings, all entirely concentrated on the young. This is a sure indication that the Mossad and the CIA are at work. Whenever they run an insurrection, they engineer demographic change and one of the largest groups hit in Iraq have been the ‘breeding cows’ (females anywhere from 2- to 20-years-old).

“Concentrating war on a very finite section of population is a known Israeli and CIA tactic. The CIA used it in South America where they ran genocidal conflicts in conjunction with the Mossad. When school came out there were no breeding cows (schoolgirls). This was even noticeable after the CIA coup against Allendé in 1973.

“The CIA trained the local Argentine Army Special Forces in the College of the Americas where they did the short graduate course, ‘How to be a paedophile’. As a result, the Argentine Army Special Forces couldn’t drive their international 6 x 6 trucks passed school bus stops without arresting nearly every schoolgirl in sight.”

The CIA have never been an intelligence organisation.
The CIA’s motto is to protect American business interests.
The CIA cherry picks its intelligence to suit its business goals.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

---

[31] ‘HAARP’ stands for ‘High-frequency Active Auroral Research Program’ based in Tok Road, Gakona, 300 km southeast of Fairbanks in Alaska. It is run by the Phillips Laboratory of Hanscom AFB in Massachusetts and is sponsored by the Office of Naval Research and the US Air Force. It has the ability to control the weather, volcanoes, earthquakes and tectonic plates, and is part of the ‘Global Warming’ scam.

This becomes obvious in the light of George Herbert Bush who was born oil rich, ran Saddam Hussein in oil rich Iraq, became the head of the CIA, and then became President of the United States. When George installed his son George into the same position, a large amount of American self-sabotage occurred with 9-11 being called "another Pearl Harbor".

The George Bushes used the Georg Ludwig trick and blamed 9-11 on any country they wanted to go to war with, especially ones with their dictators running them. This had long been back-engineered and Iraq was an oil rich country with a different religion.

These new Christian-Islamic wars (YOU HAVE – WE WANT) were created with increasing the price of oil in mind. Because the oil price is fixed internationally, regardless of who attacks who, any war by anybody, as long as it hits the media, profits all the oil owners.

The bigger the media hit,
the bigger the oil hike.

To humans at war, war is everything.
To the oil companies,
war is an itch that makes them rich.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 Ma

Wars have been back-engineered. That is, treaties, agreements and contracts (cause and effect) have been placed on paper beforehand to ensure maximum profit and minimal interference. The United Nations is a case in point. Since the UN receives 50% of its funding from the US, it has come under the thumb of the CIA.

The UN has no opposition
when conflicts serve American interest.
No American can be charged by the UN
for international war crimes.

The UN is now a white paper on war, drugs and paedophilia and only those with secret CV's of corruption, murder, bribe taking, drug use, paedophilia and front-marriages (intell. files held by the CIA, the FBI, the Mossad and the KGB) are considered for any position of influence.

Secretary general of NATO Lord George Robertson: "Jaap [de Hoop Scheffer] has a distinguished record as both diplomat and politician that make him superbly qualified to be secretary general of NATO . . . I am delighted that we have found the right man to ensure NATO remains the world's most successful defense alliance." Lord Robertson went on to become deputy chairman of the British-based Telecoms group Cable and Wireless – the ultimate position for spying on drug and paedophile markets . . . and supplying them.

NATO's new secretary general is Amsterdam born Jaap de Hoop Scheffer. Jaap was a reserve officer in Dutch Air Force, senior diplomat before entering Parliament in 1986 and is described as "as extremely talented professional". Jaap: "the enemy is international terrorism . . .. that is why NATO is in Afghanistan."[32]

After near bankruptcy post-WWII, Monaco's bank was taken over by Aristole Onassis. Monaco then became a meeting point for drug shipments, washing drug money . . . and a tax haven.

The Pope John Paul II (Karol Jozef Wojtyla) and Prince Rainier were both terminally ill and NATO went in search of new drug markets for their newly acquired role of drug trafficking Afghan heroin. The paedophile Lord Robertson (Dunblane massacre) knew of the New Zealand government's paedophilia through the US Customs naming of Jonathan Hunt (Speaker of the House) as a paedophile in September 2004 and the ongoing intelligence documented homosexual child-sex abuse of Peter Davis (husband of Prime Minister Helen Clark) from pre-1979 to his arrest at San Francisco's Airport on 7 June 2006 where he propositioned an underaged Mexican boy by grabbing his crutch and saying "How about it?" The underaged boy turned out to be a policeman and Davis was arrested. First Laddy Davis claimed diplomatic immunity and was rescued by the RNZAF and three diplomatic officers (Sodomy Olympics).

Jaap de Hoop Scheffer went to Australia and New Zealand and gave a speech at Wellington's Victoria University on 31 March 2005: "We have come closer together over the last three years . . . Australia and New Zealand were the top candidates for NATO partnerships . . . NATO is everywhere." He arrived into New Zealand with 10 kg of Afghan heroin via diplomatic pouch. Once this new market was accepted the two previous drug lords were knocked off.

The next day (1 April 2005) the homosexual paedophile Jonathan Hunt became New Zealand's High Commissioner to Britain. The following day the Pope died (2 April 2005) and Prince Rainier (codenamed 'Tax') died four days later (6 April 2005). Both were involved in drugs and money laundering. Tavistock's MI-6 drug activator Peter Frampton then appeared in New Zealand on television (11 May 2005) using words and coded phrases to activate the baby boomer's drug habit. Tavistock's Frampton was the popular culture hook into the heroin market.

---

[32] *BBC News*, 23 September 2003.

Minister of Health Annette King was responsible for the cover up of police paedophilia at Banks Ave in Christchurch. She moved the focus to a Christchurch kindergarten and this was written up by Internal Affairs agent Linley Hood in *A City Possessed*. The excessively weak Minister of Police George Hawkins was then replaced by the 'sustainable-corruption Minister' of Health Annette King on 19 October 2005.

In order to become the Minister of Police, Annette King delivered the Afghan/NATO heroin to the police for distribution prior to the 17 September 2005 rigged election. As a reward, Annette King became Associate Minister of Defence, Trade, and Race Relations (all 19 October 2005–3 May 2006). The police distributed the Afghan heroin to the gangs on 30 November/1 December 2005 and planted drugs on any gang member who did not comply.

On 3 May 2006, once the Afghan heroin had taken hold, all of Annette King's positions were upgraded to Minister of Police, State Services, and Transport. This provided Annette King with full cover. Annette King has a Bachelor of Arts, a Post Graduate in Dental Nursing and was a practicing dental nurse from 1967–81. Her daughter was involved in drug dealing and was struck off as a teacher.

New Zealand's Minister of Police is a heroin enabler.

Intelligence officers: "The Afghan heroin definitely came into New Zealand by diplomatic pouch." It arrived in March 2005 with street word that it had arrived in February 2005, thus diverting the focus of the search. All of this came as a backdrop to Helen Clark's status as the highest-ranking KGB operative in New Zealand, former St Petersburg prostitute and Tavistock St Petersburg graduate.

Helen Clark is the prime contender for the position of Secretary General of the United Nations. She was filmed having sex with another woman at Anderson's Cottage (better known as Lincoln Cottage), near the White House on the night of 3/4 January 2003. This gave the crooked American President George W. Bush full control over her, hence his backing for the KGB operative Clark as the Secretary General of the pitifully useless and massively corrupt United Nations.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

During WWII, MI-6 and the OSS were never intelligence organisations. They were BIG BUSINESS MAFIA with leanings towards the occult and homosexuality, just as they are today.

The Americans have dismembered Iraq so thoroughly they are now ready to hollow out their old enemy Iran for the simple reasons that:

1. Iran has oil.
2. Iran has a different religion.
3. Iran is not part of the Rothschild central banking system.
4. Politics is a sodomite's holiday; DIPLOMACY IS THE SODOMY OLYMPICS; peace accords merely set the boundaries for the next conflict; the media are compromised talking hairdos and any conflict the media releases, staged or otherwise, increases the price of oil.
5. The only politics that counts is oil.
6. America is powerless without oil.
7. America is all-powerful with oil.
8. If Iraq had no oil, there would be no war there. Similarly if Iran had no oil, there would be no war there. Without oil Middle East wars would be considered humanist conflicts and the UN would step in, no doubt taking bribes of paedophilia before handing out food rations.
9. Tony Blair won't speak out against war in the Middle East because the FBI files link him to the Dunblane massacre paedophile ring.
10. Oil is not the product of 10 trillion dinosaurs dying in one place. Dead dinosaurs produce soap, not oil.
11. Oil is the natural product of the Sun's energy and Earth's Outer and Inner Cores. Oil greases the friction between the Outer Core rotating at 8.3 revolutions per day in one direction and the Mantle and Crust rotating at 1 revolution per day in the other direction. This creates the mythical interface speed of 1000 miles per hour.
12. Superman got it right. Watch your cartoons. They have more news than a talking hairdo, especially during times of war. For rational thought watch *The Simpsons* and *South Park* cartoons. For irrational propagandist talking hairdos spouting war, watch *Fox* televison.

Lost Leaders

Common to all of these men is that they succumbed to the positions given them and took on the beliefs of their own subjects. They all began to believe in their own greatness. By and large their place in history is by way of emptiness, fault, and double agent training, rather than working patriotically for their people.

Hitler, Stalin, Churchill, Roosevelt, Truman, Hussein, bin Laden, Arafat, Blair and Bush have all been, or still are, puppets of war. They were not the prime makers of war, for if they were to make peace, they would have been liquidated with the rest of the peace-makers – Neville Chamberlain (1940), Rudolf Hess (1941), Karl Horn (1941), Colonel Claus Count Schenk von Stauffenberg (1944), Wilheim Canaris (1945), Mahatma Gandhi (1948), John F. Kennnedy (1963), Martin Luther King (1968) . . .

> It was the West who deliberately confused and misinformed their citizens to avoid linking the dots that WWII was an organised war, a massive depopulation exercise – with the British sabotaging peace talks at every turn, the Americans getting into the war with complicit self-sabotage (Pearl Harbor), and the British developing a hatred for their German cousins with Dieppe and D-Day.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

Pseudo documentaries such as *Hitler of the Andes* by David Howards and Madoc Roberts are yet another propaganda exercise for the British. It promotes the myth and avoids the evidence at every turn right down to the detail, making important names inaudible, interviewing fifty percent of the people without naming them and showing documents with any information that could be followed up, blurred out.

The 2002 *Hitler of the Andes* mystery/doco concludes that few now believe Hitler was ever in Argentina, but that fantasists still follow Hitler from the foothills of the Andes to Antarctica. It concludes that they solved the mystery of Hitler by giving evidence that Hitler was not in Argentina or North America, but was buried outside Berlin and flushed down the River Elbe. But this story, although true of one of Hitler's doppelgängers, is not followed up. It contains within it all the hallmarks of another lost leader –

A mystery wrapped in a riddle inside an enigma.

Adolf Hitler lived with Eva Braun in Spain, in Barcelona, in the Parc de la Ciutadella opposite the Natural History Musem and in the Montserrat Monastery. Hitler wanted to continue his most far-reaching missions, and these did involve Antarctica, particularly the secret German submarine base at South 69° 10' and West 4° 15'.[33]

"The Germans had frequented Antarctica since the 1920s. Here they discovered an undersea entrance to a cavern south of South America in Queen Maud Land on the Princess Astrid Coast and named the mountains of their chosen area after German bureaucrats of the time like the Mühlig-Hofmann Mountains and the Wohlthat Mountains. These names remain today.

"Richard E. Byrd was the most famous American Antarctic researcher and was the first person to fly over the South Pole in 1929. In mid-November 1938 (10 months before WWII) he showed a movie of his Antarctic flight in Hamburg, Germany. Very soon after Byrd was promoted from civilian to high-ranking US Navy Admiral.

"The Germans went to Antarctica two months later based on what Richard E. Byrd had shown them. Under polar-experienced Captain Alfred Ritscher, the Germans made 15 flights over some 600,000 square kilometres (4%) of Antarctica from 19 January 1939 and took 11,000 pictures of the area. They discovered ice-free areas with lakes and small signs of vegetation. These aerial photographs showed that the 1931 Norwegian maps of the interior were fake.

"Immediately after this, Nazis began building an underground city on the Princess Astrid Coast, and in 1940 Nazi engineers began construction of buildings to withstand 60°C below zero. During the war, underground bases were the de rigueur for protection and secrecy (Harz and Thuumlringen) and the Germans have maintained underground construction activity at Antarctica since 1941.

"The Nazis referred to this impregnable city as New Berlin (Neuberlin) in an area called New Schwabenland, Neuschwabenland, Neu Schwabia or Base 211. It is built to withstand an atomic attack and a nuclear winter. Schwabenland refers to a place 'where the population is as thick as pig-shit and reluctant to take orders.'

"Neuschwabenland refers to a place "where the population are intelligent innovative technocrats and take to orders impulsively". It also refers to "New Cockroach Land", a place where atomic survival is possible.

---

[33] With receding ice, this entrance has now moved.

"In 1943, four years after they began in earnest, the Commander-in-Chief of the German Navy, Admiral Karl Doenitz (1891–1980) stated, 'The German submarine fleet has even now established an earthly paradise, an impregnable fortress, for the Führer, in whatever part of the world'.

"In 1947 the American Naval Task Force 68 led by Admiral Byrd under Operation HIGHJUMP tried to roll the remaining Germans out of New Schwabenland, but they failed. American Operation HIGHJUMP maps say that the Americans left the German side of Antarctica 'unexplored'. Instead an agreement was reached between the Americans and Nazis. This usually occurs when the riches or technology are more than the both of them could share."[34]

> WWII was an agreement between all parties. It was planned in 1919 with players tagged as early as 1836 (Maria Anna Schicklgruber). The major players were trained at Britain's Tavistock from 1907 – Stalin (Koba, Losif Vissarionovich Dzhugashvili) and Adolf Hitler (Edmund Hitler, 1912).
>
> "All his life Hitler owed his success largely to one or the other of his enemies. Now, once more, his ill-wishers – as if in a last display of all the mistakes of the era – made it possible for him to live a mythical posthumous life . . . only a mind that has learned nothing from the misfortunes of these times will call him the man of a single nation and refuse to recognise that a powerful tendency of the age culminated in him, a tendency that dominated the entire first half of this century."[35]
>
> Official history still covers for him.

Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

Adolf Hitler died of stomach cancer on 19 February 1950 – a death entirely in keeping with British Intelligence traditions dating back to Napoleon.

As a neurotic empty man, Hitler was made evil and great by virtue of others playing puppeteer on his emptiness.

---

[34] *Flying the Planet*, Volume II, CLASSIFIED.

[35] *Hitler*, p. 750.

"Conspiracy, fact and fiction rushed to fill the vacuum
left by Hitler's absence . . ."[36]
and what we got was every government in the world
immitating Hitler.

Hitler has become the new standard.

Roosevelt outsmarted at Yalta (4–11 February 1945) while Stalin and Churchill share a memory.

---

[36] *Hitler of the Andes*.

tinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Churchill, Hitler and Stalin Work Together

Chaplin Plays the Muse

When the British soldiers returned from war on the Continent and compared notes with British Intelligence in Britain, they suddenly felt very sick. The British Intelligence chiefs woke up in 1945 and realised they had been had, that the war was an arrangement, a fallacy, a pre-organised hoax with goals well defined before WWII ever broke out. This led to personal disillusionment amongst many high-ranking soldiers who then refused to talk about the war – the tight-lipped, big-eared generation, as indicative of determined survivors (large noticeable ears), who were bitter about their responsibilities (tight-lipped).

British Agents – Adolf Hitler and Dr Theodor Morell

Hitler's doctor, Dr Theodor Morell, was a British agent, Freemason, secret Tibetan Lodge member and 'Vril' practitioner, placed there by King George V and VI. These were all qualities he shared with Adolf Hitler, although Hitler denies the Freemasonry connection.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

'Vril' was the life force as taught in Tibet to Gurdjeiff, who taught Hitler's dentist, Dr Friedrich Krohn and Professor Karl Haushofer, both of them Hitler's primary spiritual mentors in the occult. Vril was so popular as a concept in the early 1900s, it led to the brand name 'Bovril' – 'Bovine and Vril'. Karl Haushofer's son Albrecht was the Duke of Hamitlon's lover, who was the Duke of Kent's lover, who was King George VI's brother.

Dr Morell was offered a position as doctor to the Shah of Persia. This is a tell-tale sign that he was a British agent, as the Shah of Persia was a British hostage, allowed to function, but completely under British rule.

Dr Morell had been a doctor on board elegant trans-Atlantic liners between Hamburg and Buenos Aires and was a fashionable dermatologist at the Berlin Tennis Club, making him something of a VIP. Although he was recognised and well received by high society (he was a short fat curio), the opinions of his colleagues and historians were that he was a complete charlatan. I don't disagree, but he was a purposeful charlatan. The fact that Hitler's own staff didn't stop his over-medication defies logic and points to a phoney war with disaffected double agents.

Hitler's photographer, Heinrich 'Heini' Hoffmann was an alcoholic and latent homosexual with gonorrhoea whose wife had just died. Dr Morell switched to specialising in venereal disease from 1936 and was invited to treat 'Heini' who just happened to be employing Eva Braun. Only those with British intelligence connections had access for the drugs required to treat venereal disease and this gave Morell access to Hitler in the weeks afterwards.[1]

From January 1937 Dr Morell was Hitler's preferred doctor and like Winston Churchill with Lord Moran, Hitler preferred doctors of dubious repute.

Dr Morell didn't drink or smoke, but he ate like a horse, belched like a mule, stunk like a pig and had chronic flatulence as did Hitler under Morell's treatment. The 5' 6", 105 kg (16½ stone) Dr Morell was not popular in Hitler's circle, was refused an SS uniform, was a social outcast and chuckled at anything Hitler said, just in case it was funny.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Hitler didn't eat meat, poultry, fish or eggs. He ate fruit, vegetables and pastries. By October 1937, Hitler's consumption of pills overtook his consumption of food and his health declined rapidly. Morell gave Hitler morphine, hypnotics, dextrose, hormones and vitamins and endless anti-gas pills compounded with strychnine and belladonna, up to 16 per day.

Dr Morell systematically ruined Hitler's health, feeding him banned drugs, toxins and narcotics which aged him prematurely. Dr Brandt even alleged that Morell had systematically poisoned Hitler with strychnine disguised as anti-gas pills. Morell more or less admitted to this in their shared prison cell in 1945: "Hitler was never ill".[2]

"Morell converted the largely healthy man that Hitler had been earlier into one constantly plied with injections and tablets which made Hitler more or less dependent on him; he played on Hitler's neuropathic nature by spouting utter rubbish about how Hitler's heavy workload meant that he was burning energy at the same rate

---

[1] The Scottish Freemason Sir Alexander Fleming had pioneered the use of Salvarsan for syphilis.

[2] *The Secret Diaries of Hitler's Doctor*, p. 67.

as people in the tropics, and that the lost energy had to be replaced by all manner of injections like iodine, vitamins, calcium, heart-and-liver extract and hormones."[3]

Dr Morell kept Hitler heavily medicated with an antagonistic cocktail of uppers and downers – an action which suggested he was deliberately medicating Hitler into insanity. He gave Hitler 28 different pills and injections each day, some of them more than once. These were a combination of stimulants, digestive aids, anti-influenza drugs, vitamins, hormones, and glucose including Prostacrinum (an extract of sperm and prostatic tissue), and Bromnervalit against depression, Indelan to stimulate appetite, Eupaverin to alleviate colitis, Eufrasin against colibacillary infection, ecalyptus lozenges and even Dr Körster's quack pills.

After Hitler's second attempt at peace, which the British sabotaged, as well as his planned escape to America in June 1941, the doses were increased with injections of strophanthus and nicotinic acid. By August 1941 Hitler was nauseous and had uncontrollable shivering. His legs became oedematous (they held water), he became weak and deteriorated rapidly.

Dr Morell ignored the side-effects and increased his doses adding Cardizol, Coramine, and Sympatol and even more anti-depressants. When that didn't work, he gave Hitler caffeine, Pervitin (speed) and Vitamultina (amphetamines with even more caffeine). The bulk of the Nazi military were also on speed and they had containers to be accessed in an emergency.

Hitler had a heart attack, arterial hypertension, icteric hepatitis, his eye haemorrhaged, his right eye closed up, he had long and frequent lapses of memory, constantly burped and aged five years to every one. His staff reacted to him in much the same way that most people react to heavily medicated old people – they sold off his assets. By 1942, Dr Morell's drug-induced condition of Hitler had become such a success that even the Allied Headquarters kept an eye on Hitler's 'psychiatric situation'.

Hitler's own generals were completely baffled by his ever-changing battle plans. This gave them further impetus to 'run away from that crazy old person' and defect. As a result of Hitler's drug-induced madness there was a plan to kill Hitler using Martin Bormann's gun (a universal agent) and there was another attempt by the German High Command/British agent Hermann Goering, who attempted a Palace Revolution in early 1945. Hitler's madness was deliberately induced and he was meant to die many times, but the assassination attempts kept failing or the doppelgängers were killed instead.

---

[3] Dr Erwin Geising, 'Report on My Treatment of Hitler', June 1945, cited, ibid. p. 19.

This was a direct result of having MI-6 arm and finance Hitler's would-be killers, when MI-6 were also in charge of looking after Hitler's life . . . so only the doppelgängers died.

There is no doubt that Dr Morell was a quack and an expert quack. His treatment history showed that he wanted Hitler to 'govern in a mad rage of irrational forgotten decisions' which he achieved on behalf of King George VI. It was quite brilliant really. Hitler spent most of his time burping and leaning to the right, rather than carrying out war strategies. His movements, moustache and hairstyle certainly usurped those of Charlie Chaplin and this gave great mirth to the Freemasons.[4]

Between 1939 and 1941 Hitler started WWII with the masterful intuition of a double agent. Between 1941 and 1945 he spent four years in a heavily medicated stupor. This was followed by five years (1945–50) of recuperation, after which he was assassinated by the very people who trained him, drugged him, and gave him the information he needed to achieve his international status. It was a 40-year wind-up and wind-down that created a platform for experimentation, which gave rise to a plethora of inventions, and killed 50 million people in the process.

World War II was a 'how can we most easily rule' experiment. Regrettably the answer was:

1. The deconstruction of disgruntled foreign nationals as double agents, activated at will and deactivated by debriefing.
2. The medication of the masses with a daily cocktail of uppers and downers and mild poisons like beer, coffee, cigarettes, medication, drugs, fluoride and radioactive water. (See *The Fluoride Con*, *Appendix 2*)
3. Government department and police-enforced socialism, or communism, of which today's brand is *sex-communism* or *gender-feminism* where children are removed from their fathers at 45 times the rate of war.

---

[4] *Very Illustrious Patients*, pp. 91–107.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

War has been a huge success.

What happens rapidly in war, happens slowly in peacetime. War has always been the acid-test blueprint for what the next society will become.

According to the medical records on Dr Morell, he suffered from partial paralysis and lost his ability to speak on 17 June 1945. He was formally arrested a month later on 17 July and remanded in the prison at Reichenhall where he shared a cell with Hitler's competent doctor, Karl Brandt. Morell's last words to him were:

"I wish I were somebody else."

With British complicity, Dr Morell was judged too sick to attend the war trials of the 23 other Nazi doctors which began on 15 November 1946. Only the competent doctors were accused. Ironically, it was the competent Dr Brandt who was hanged in 1947 and Morell was allowed to live out his days, although with Hitler's curse.

Dr Morell was "cleared of war crimes" and discharged on 20 June 1947 (Prisoner No. 52,160) and went straight to the local clinic in Munich, where he was treated for arteriosclerosis in the same way that Hitler was – by injection. Within eleven months he was dead.

"There is some evidence that Himmler, the Gestapo chief, Martin Bormann, Hitler's executive officers and the ill-famed Dr Morell conspired in a plot to slowly poison the Führer."[5]

Dr Morell was a self-convinced suspiscionist who did more to destroy Hitler in the last three years of the war than anyone else, or anything else. (See *Unlikely Heroes*, *Appendix 9*)

The fat man is an unsung hero. In war, even the delusional have their uses. British agent, Dr Theodor Morell (22 July 1886–26 May 1948):

"Well done, true and faithful servant."

James Bond Revisited

While working as the intelligence officer at Grizedale Hall in 1941 Ian Fleming met a woman raising Herdwick sheep in the Lake District. Her name was Mrs William Heelis who wrote and illustrated *The Tale of Peter Rabbit* (1900) under her maiden name Beatrix Potter (1866–1943). Fleming promised her he would become a thriller writer and that his books would appeal to children.

---

[5] *Collier's* weekly, 4 May 1946.

Ian Fleming was a wartime-only sailor and after the war he became 'the foreign manager of the *Sunday Times*' (1945–59). However, this was more or less a cover for other operations including his heavy drinking and womanising. He would go through women like there was no tomorow.

In 1952, at the age of 41, Fleming was approached by his bank manager who insisted he write books as his only possible method of paying back his increasing debts. His first book, *Casino Royale*, appeared in 1953 to good reviews. On 21 October 1954, CBS screened a television version of *Casino Royale*. The show was quickly forgotten but a James Bond comic strip appeared. In 1960 film producer Harry Saltzman paid Ian Fleming US$50,000 for six months' rights to the Fleming novels.

Sean Connery (32), in the British Royal Navy from 1946–48 (aged 16–18), was cast for the lead role. On 16 January 1962 the filming of *Dr. No* began. Ian Fleming recommended his author/singer/actor/composer/playwright and witty friend Noel Coward (1899–1973) for the part of *Dr. No*. Noel Coward was Fleming's homosexual neighbour on the North Shore of Jamaica and had been the lover of the Duke of Kent for 19 years. The written reply came back, "No, no, no".

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

Rather ironically, two years later, in an act that linked reality, fake reality and illusion, Noel Coward's cook and bodyguard Big Tom Stanford was commissioned to kill one of M's doppelgänger Hitler's (February 1964). This theme was followed up in the trademark James Bond opening shot, using a pinhole camera photographing the inside of a pistol barrel, the person who appears as James Bond is not Sean Connery, but doppelgänger stuntman Bob Simmons.

Looking down the barrel of a gun, it was a stunt man.

Dr. No premiered nine months later on 6 October 1962 in the Pavilion Cinema at London's Picadilly Circus. It was an instant hit. In the spring of 1963 *Dr. No* also became a smash in America. The initial gross takings of US$20 million was 20 times the US$1 million budget.[6]

In 1963, Ian Fleming sent Chris Creighton, the real James Bond, £20,000 in £5 notes to be shared amongst the survivors of OP JAMES BOND. In those days £20,000 would buy each OP JAMES BOND survivor a house.

---

[6] John Cork, *Inside Dr. No*.

"Many of James Bond's experiences have some basis in fact. Facts that Fleming came across while serving as assistant to Britain's Director of Naval Intelligence [Rear-Admiral John Godfrey] during WWII, which he has used to embroider the exciting adventures of secret agent 007, James Bond."[7]

Ian Fleming was a big drinker and James Bond's drink was a medium dry vodka martini with a twist of peeled lemon, shaken, not stirred. The James Bond movies were satires of Fleming's personal and operational experiences in government Black Ops. As in the movies, the British Secret Service was indeed on the eighth floor of a building in Regent's Park, London. In the movie the intelligence company was known as 'Universal Exports'. In real life they have very similar names.

After the war, Major Desmond Morton (M) sent Christopher Creighton to become an actor, training at the Royal Academy of Dramatic Art (formerly the Old Vic) where he met Roger Moore who later played James Bond, and made contacts for Creighton to become a movie director with Warner Brothers in Hollywood.

In Hollywood Creighton wrote and produced *Murder at 3 am* (1952), acted with Noel Coward and Eva Gabor in *Nude with Violin*, acted in *Present Laughter* on Broadway (1957) and directed *Judgement in Prague* (1967) while under cover for NATO. He also acted and directed for television.

Of all the James Bonds, Roger Moore was Creighton's closest lookalike starring in seven films from 1973's *Live and Let Die* to *A View to Kill* in 1985. The real James Bond, Christopher Creighton, remained active in secret intelligence work until the early 1980s.

After the war, M continued to give Chris Creighton a bad name, adding "supposed villainy, psychopathic tendencies, gambling, bad debts and bankruptcy to his list of failings". M also encouraged this reputation amongst his father and his stepmother, which saved Creighton's life many times. He was, for undercover reasons, in the RAF as the disaffected pilot, John Davis, turncoat, arch-hater of Britain, and not in the Royal Navy. His name appeared in the Nazi list as an ardent disciple of the Fascist leader Oswald Mosley, which caused him to be disowned by his father and stepmother, who passionately abused the name Chris

---

[7] *Dr. No* trailer, 1962, *Inside Dr. No*.

Creighton whenever they were questioned. It was full cover.[8]

Laurence Olivier and Ralph Richardson (both ex-Fleet Air Arm Lieutenant-Commanders) and Somerset Maugham (gay) were all active in counter-espionage, some triple agents, and all becoming famous actors. They were rewarded with a life of luxury for their efforts, and good on them.

Spies were often retrained as Shakespearian actors. They are trained into people others want to be and will therefore talk to, spilling the beans. It used to be Shakespearian actors, but now it is televison and movie actors, musicians and DJs.

The British Mitford sisters took their lead from the heads of the British Conservative Party and via them it was the done thing to be pro-Hitler. As a result, Diana Mitford (1910–2003), the most outstanding beauty of her time, met Sir Oswald Mosley in 1931 and married him in Berlin in 1936 at the home of Hitler's propaganda minister, Josef Goebbels, with Hitler attending.

Her sister Unity Walkrie Mitford (1914–48) went to live in Germany and soon met Hitler and slept with him. She attempted suicide in the British Garden outside the Bavarian Interior Ministry on the day Britain declared war on Germany. She was shot in the right temple with a small automatic pistol but survived another eight years as a brain-damaged invalid. Her father was Lord Baron Redesdale (David Mitford, 1878–1958) who had seven daughters, all notable beauties and brought up in isolation on the Cotswald Estates, almost as an experiment.

When Diana Mitford was interviewed recently she was rational and knew what the Nazis were involved in: "Hitler made the trains run on time and it was only afterwards we discovered the cost." She was, however, as shallow as a puddle, but these people too have their place.

The world celebrates simple-mindedness wrapped in beauty
and makes them famously so.

---

[8] *OPJB*, p. 230.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 Mar

Churchill and Stalin

Stalin spoke perfect English and had spent almost four years training in England as a British agent. He could understand innuendo which showed that he had more than one English-speaking trainer.

Stalin later worked very closely with Churchill, using 'C' (Colonel Stewart Graham Menzies, 30 January 1890–29 May 1968) as his intermediary and they had over 1500 meetings. Stalin executed those whom he thought closer to C than him and eventually killed over 20 million people. C was trained at the Sandhurst Military Academy and in the Grenadier Guards.

The chiefs of the British Secret Service were always known as 'C'. "C's job was to direct espionage, sabotage, counter-espionage and much of the political warfare outside the British Empire . . . and to report to the Prime Minister."[9] Despite Winston Churchill and Colonel Stewart Graham Menzies being half-brothers, they did not get on and neither publicly declared who their shared father was. "Despite Churchill's animus for Menzies at this time, Menzies subsequently became Churchill's most important advisor."[10]

Spymaster: "Stalin had a similar relationship with his spook director, Sudopolotov, but treated him more harshly. Due to Stalin's paranoia, Sudopolotov was in and out of prison like a yo-yo. Eventually the prison staff allowed him to wear his uniform in prison and referred to him as 'Comrade, Major General' because they never knew how long he was going to stay."

Churchill warned Stalin of the imminent attack by Germany on the Soviet Air Force on the first day of Germany's invasion of Russia on 22 June 1940, as did Germany's Soviet Ambassador. Strangely Stalin chose to ignore both warnings and Germany wiped out most of Russia's air fleet on the first day.

All three, Churchill, Stalin and Hitler were operating under higher powers, powers that were controlling the war. These were the Freemasons, the Illuminati and the Rothschilds who were funding both sides of the war. They wanted the war to go on for as long as possible and to be as all-encompassing as possible. Profit and depopulation were the goal – even of their own people, the Jews.

---

[9] *The Secret Servant*, p. 14.
[10] Ibid.

Stalin's Intelligence was a mess, a reflection of the bloody chaos within the military. Every spy dreaded any communication from Moscow. No news was good news. Britain's greatest intelligence coup occurred when a spy in Germany was summoned to Moscow over travel expenses. Instead of turning up to Moscow, he walked into a British Embassy and spilled the beans.

Communism had a real appeal in Europe in the 1930s. It was a Utopian dream placed before the masses with the vision of unified wealth. To most, the Industrial Revolution had brought a poverty of work conditions and a loss of quality of life and Communism was to do the same over a third of the planet.

Nothing succeeds like making the same mistake twice.

Churchill made a special visit to see Charlie Chaplin in America in 1929 and then went underground for 10 years from 1929–39 while he planned the war that would serve all sides but cost the populations dearly. Both Churchill and Hitler were Psych-Ops trained. It would be silly to train Hitler without training Churchill. If Churchill wasn't trained, Hitler would have run rings around him. Churchill, Hitler and Stalin were all trained at the British Military Psych-Ops War Schools.

Chaplin Plays the Muse

Four days before Hitler's birth, Charlie Chaplin was born in Lambeth, London, on the 16 April 1889. Hitler (20 April 1889–19 February 1950) and Chaplin (16 April 1889–25 December 1977) had a similiarity to their lives and Chaplin mirrored and mocked Hitler, as any good mime artist should do. Both had questionable grandfathers and were fatherless at young ages (3 for Chaplin and 13 for Hitler). Chaplin was raised in an orphanage from 9 and Hitler lived in dosshouses from 19. Both were trained by comedians and knew that success depended on appealing to the sympathies of their audience. Both had their first loves die on them. Both were romantics, a soft touch, loved women, but couldn't live with them. Both were sexual deviants and raged against monogamy (Chaplin was into young girls and Hitler was a bisexual coprophiliac). Both were immigrants and had mental illness in their families. Both had confusion over their names of origin – Chaplin (née Tbonstein, Bodges and Harley) and Hitler (née Hiedler, Hutter, Schicklgruber). Both were accused of being Jewish.

The Jews often claim successful British-trained agents as having Jewish lineage, and rightly so. Often the agents are created two generations ahead. Hitler lived in Germany for 18 years before he got citizenship and Chaplin lived in America for 42 years and never got citizenship. Both were trained by British Intelligence and used to change the social landscape towards a One World Order.

Like Hitler, who studied under the Munich comedian Weiss Ferdl, Chaplin studied under the British comedian Fred Karno. Fred and Charlie went to Hollywood in September 1910. Hitler used his training for public speaking and Charlie went all the way in acting.

Charlie Chaplin's first play role was as 'Billy' in *Sherlock Holmes*. In the West he was set up to mock Hitler so the American public wouldn't treat Hitler as a threat. This worked very well with Chaplin adopting his out-turned feet, walking cane, British bowler hat and comical short moustache for his second silent movie *The Kid* on 6 January 1921, after which Hitler adopted his short moustache, first photographed on 8 November 1923.

Chaplin also made *The Gold Rush* (June 1925), *City Lights* (1931), wrote, directed and produced his first political film *Modern Times* (1936), wrote, directed and produced *The Great Dictator* (October 1940) based on Hitler, and Churchill's favourite movie, *Monsieur Verdoux* (1947) in which he takes on the persona of the nearest person or machine, and *Limelight* (October 1952).

As a result of the visual similarity between Charlie Chaplin and Adolf Hitler, Hitler was constantly in the funny pages, and Chaplin was used to play down the Hitler threat in America. In 1933 "If they had heard of Hitler at all, they probably thought he was just a comical fellow with a loud voice and ridiculous moustache".[11]

Chaplin admired Hitler and Hitler put up with Chaplin, knowing that he smoothed the way for him.

Chaplin had a front as a communist sympathiser, which he accomplished with actor's credit (FBI File No. 100-127090, p. 45/2063). This gave him access to communist connections in America and overseas. Chaplin spied on France, Africa, Germany, Italy, Switzerland and Japan (September 1931–June 1932) and on his return wrote the script for *Modern Times* based on Hitler. He then visited China and the South Pacific (April–June 1936) before WWII broke out.

---

[11] *The Amiable Prussian*, p. 86.

Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

Many British agents were in the entertainment field and Charlie Chaplin was a huge success, his acting career far outshining his British Intelligence role. By 1916, at the beginning of his career, he was the highest-paid person in the world at US$10,000 per week, now the equivalent of US$2 million per week.

Hitler was first filmed silently giving speeches and looked ridiculous. He looked very Chaplinesque. The first talking picture (1921) was *The Jazz Singer*, a movie by Jews about Jews. By 1923 sound made Hitler a powerful film presence and Chaplin considered Hitler one of the greatest actors he had ever seen.

Hitler saw every American film he could. *The Lives of a Bengal Lancer* with Gary Cooper and Franchot Tone was his favourite and he loved Greta Garbo movies. Like many world leaders, Hitler couldn't tell the difference between a lesbian and a breeder.

The Nazis were convinced Chaplin was a Jew and Chaplin never denied it. Chaplin had the balls to visit Berlin in 1931 and the Nazis loathed his rapturous welcome. Chaplin then visited Venice expecting to meet with Mussolini, but Mussolini took his line from Hitler, banned his films and refused to meet him.

Against a background of aggression and appeasement where Jews were cleaning the pavement with toothbrushes, Chaplin announced (18 October 1938) he was going to make *The Great Dictator*. Many thought Chaplin was a comic David against a German Goliath. Three weeks later Kristallnacht brought a wave of violence against the Jews (9 November 1938) and on 20 April 1939 Hitler celebrated his 50th birthday with one of the biggest military parades in history.

Chaplin financed *The Great Dictator* entirely himself and filming began on 9 September 1939 under conditions of strict secrecy. This was six days after WWII broke out in Europe with America not officially joining for another two years.

No sooner had the filming finished than Hitler began his blitzkrieg. France fell in months and Denmark in a matter of hours. Chaplin was so appalled he spent another 111 days filming, changing the final speech, which became a parody of Hitler's latest actions. The same day this speech was filmed, Hitler drove into Paris to view his conquest. When Hitler returned to Berlin, he drove through a carpet of flowers, but it was a doppelgänger Hitler in the parading Mercedes (more portly with a smaller nose) as Hitler was in constant fear of being assassinated.

Chaplin gave his final speech in front of a flag with a double cross, wearing a hat with a double cross, alluding to Hitler and the war being a double cross. Chaplin wanted to premier *The Great Dictator* in Berlin but the British war-makers said they would ban the movie. After all, Chaplin's dictator was a caricature of their own 'double agent of war'.

Despite what the war-makers wanted *The Great Dictator* opened on 15 October 1940 in London at the height of the blitzes – almost as an attempt to destroy the movie theatres. It received standing ovations and calls for Chaplin, yet it was banned in Ireland, across Europe and in parts of South America. Roosevelt, who was Jewish but could not admit it, guaranteed its release in America. *The Great Dictator* was to become Chaplin's biggest moneymaker.

Hitler watched *The Great Dictator* and then watched it again two days later. Even the German Army saw the film.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

In Belgrade, Yugoslavia, the 17-year-old Nikola Radosevic (now a filmmaker) working in film despatch, discovered a print of *The Great Dictator* and showed it to the Blue Ribbon, a group which never fired a shot. Their modus operandi was to make fun of the Germans. "We wanted Hitler to hear what Chaplin thought of him."

Nikola Radosevic substituted the German feature the Nazi soldiers were to see for *The Great Dictator*. "At the start of the show, the people didn't immediately realise what was going on, but after 40 minutes an SS man pulled out his gun and opened fire at the screen. All the others rushed out of the hall. They didn't want to stay any longer because something was against Hitler."

Chaplin was officially written off as a lefty of the far left, when he was, in fact, a non-political British agent who maintained his cover throughout his life. As with Christopher Creighton (James Bond) the cover went deep. On 13 March 1944, the communist newspaper *People's World* stated: "Charlie Chaplin had been a friend of the Soviet Union since 1917" (FBI File, 47/2063). He was a generous man who helped a lot of people out and said "I am for the little people". He was 1.65 m and 65 kgs, some 5' 5" and 145 lbs.

Charlie Chaplin's brief was to spy on communism in America, feed it back to Britain and to mollify Americans regarding Hitler and communism. He was playing the communists in America. As part of his British Intelligence briefing, Charlie Chaplin spent a week's camping holiday with Clare Sherridan, Winston Churchill's free love cousin.

". . . in September 1946, Chaplin will be subpoenaed before the United States House Committee on UnAmerican Activities where he will be questioned regarding his communist affiliations amid concern of his alleged partnership with a third political party" (FBI file p. 49/2003). That third party was Britain's MI-6 – essentially Winston Churchill, via Clare Sherridan (who had sculptured Lenin and Trotsky) and whatever other contacts Chuchill provided from 1929. After 42 years producing a 2063-page file, the FBI still didn't get it.

Chaplin wouldn't take American citizenship and the FBI were so desperate to get him, they considered charging him with purchasing too much cheese – more than the war rations would allow for one household. How cheesy is that? "Mr Charles Spencer Chaplin, you will receive the maximum penalty for the excessive consumption of war-rationed cheese. You are hereby sentenced to sit next to people who talk in talkies."

Chaplin had a weakness for young girls. His first two wives were 16 and his last was 18. Others look for such traits as it makes the agent controllable on threat of reputation alone. Both sides of this coin were a common trait in British agents and Chaplin was available for blackmail right throughout his career. Those blackmailed will usually even cover their own expenses in exchange for return cover. In exchange, Chaplin gave a respectable face to child-sex in Hollywood, was a British agent and was never charged.

At 59 Charlie Chaplin had an 18-year-old wife and a 21-year-old girlfriend, and went some way in inspiring Hugh Hefner's *Playboy* enterprise. As is typical of British agents into underaged girls, he was knighted as Sir Charles Spencer Chaplin in 1975, aged 86. This would have placed his last act of child-sex 18 years earlier in 1957, aged 68, while living in Switzerland with his most troublesome daughter Geraldine (b. 31 July 1944), just 13 years old at the time. It is typical of a child who sees or senses her father with another young girl to have attention tantrums, for which Geraldine was renowned.

Espaço 5020 - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

Chaplin died on Christmas Day 1977, aged 88, having married three times (a fourth marriage was a Mexican farce to keep her relatives happy), with 10 surviving children from two marriages between May 1925 and July 1962. Charlie sired his last child, Christopher Chaplin (b. 6 July 1962) at the much-celebrated age of 72. His wives were Mildred Harris, 16 (15 when they met), Lita Grey, 16 (whom he married on his boat, the *Panacea* within two weeks of meeting her), and Oona O'Neill, 18.

Politically, Sir Charles Spencer Chaplin was very well informed, enough to take politics lightly.

> "I have no political views. I'm a comedian, not a politician . . .
> I don't want radical change, I want evolutionary change . . .
> I don't want spy censorship . . . I'm against dictatorship . . .
> I'm against everything . . . I believe the purpose of language
> is to conceal ideas rather than convey ideas."

He never revealed to anyone he was a British agent and he never told anyone when Hitler died, except through his artform.

As soon as Chaplin got word of Hitler's death at the end of February 1950, he wrote *Limelight*, started shooting in 1951, editing in spring 1952, with the first screening in London on 23 October 1952. It is the story of a fading clown who helps a paralysed dancer regain the use of their legs and achieve great fame. After the screening, Chaplin moved to Switzerland. Chaplin was connected to Hitler via British Intelligence and *Limelight* was his last movie. He was 63 at the time, and like Hitler, the most famous actor the world has ever known.

In the 1990s Charlie Chaplin was voted the greatest actor in movie history. Chaplin remains the second most famous person in the world. The first is Hitler. In the end, comedy is the most powerful tool for war.

> Chaplin: "Courage doesn't do it, Laughs do. Please parody
> me wherever you can" – It's *The Fool* who owns history.

For Hitler to be referred to later as 'the German Gardener', his death in 1945 had to have been faked. This was drawn on by Peter Sellers (born Richard Henry Sellers, 8 September 1925–24 July 1980). Sellers was a stand-up comic, impressionsist, one of the original *Goons* from 1951 and a humorous chocolate soldier of the Secret Service with all the correct contacts, career, and support. He was also a Freemason and Freemasons placed a lot of value in having the wars they've created put in a humorous context.

Peter Sellers played the role of Chancey Gardener (also known as 'Mr Chance', 'Chance the Gardener', and 'Chance') in the movie *Being There* (1979), as in 'YOU HAD TO BE THERE'. The gardener portrayed by Peter Sellers was a simpleton who became famous for repeating lines others attach esoteric meanings to. This parodied Hitler's early years, *Mein Kampf*, the repetition in his speeches, and the conversation the IRA billet (Father Ryan) had with Adolf Hitler over the roses.

Being There has many parodies of Hitler from 1945 to his death in 1950. His love interest is named Eve (Eva Braun) and even the voice-overs from the TV are pertinent. One of the most profound parodies is that the most malleable people, with the most hidden history, become the rulers of their countries.

At that time photocopiers were a rare thing and copies were cyclostyled with the print quality particularly bad. It may have been that Peter Sellers mistook the 80-year rule for a 30-year rule and this oversight killed him.

The movie was first screened on 19 December 1979 and Peter Sellers received an Oscar nomination for best actor in 1980. Spymaster: "His other reward was a pre-emptive death by heart attack brought about by an overdose of digitalis disguised in a dish containing apples – a favourite method used by British Intelligence."

Espayo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org 7 March 2013

Peter (Richard Henry) Sellers (54) died on 24 July 1980, seven months after *Being There* was first screened. His life was then misportrayed in *The Life and Death of Peter Sellers* (2005) which showed him to be a miserable son of a bitch. Using misery to show a comedian's life is cheap pop-psychology designed to write off any importance Seller's had. To a degree it worked.

Being There was written in 1971 by Jerzy Kosinski (1933–91), a political scientist. He grew up in Lodz, Poland and studied political science at Lodz University where he taught from 1955–57, after which he emigrated to America and pursued an academic career, writing four books. *The Painted Bird* (1965) is a classic of holocaust literature. Although the numbers are up for debate, the ongoing emotionalism around Jewish deaths, rather than the more prolific Russian deaths, continues – 6 million Jews versus 26 million Russians.

A common theme to Kosinski's books are characters who machinate to make the most of their situation, similar to Chaplin's *Modern Times*.

This is the vacuum we live in today.
That vacuum can at least, in part, be filled
with an anotomically accurate historical correction.

Peace kills and immortalises a few.
War kills millions and they are remembered,
for the most part, as unknown soldiers
of inaccurate statistics.

War traps surviving generations into a refusal to accept
that their war was tried and executed
with a predetermined plan of chaos,
followed by order (peace) and then chaos (war) again,
so that each generation always experiences a war (chaos),
and boundaries are forever shifted,
until finally,
all that we have that is human,
is lost.

Perhaps war is the fifth element:
Earth, Air, Fire, Water & War.
Perhaps humans are dependent on war as one of their elements.

Espavo Soro treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

World wars do have a habit of not occurring
in places of active volcanoes and earthquakes,
but in places of storms and harvests,
where traditions and cultures
create freedom worth dying for.

Perhaps humanity
is just another clay on the world stage,
and the world stage,
for all its players,
is there to be moulded.

Blessed are the war-makers,
for the heroes are all dead.

Greg Hallett

Afterword

Counter Intelligence

I knew that from 11 May, in the six months leading up to 1–11 November 2005, I would be able to talk and allowed to communicate. Suffering from media shyness dating several years back, I never knew how this was going to happen. The date is partly due to the 60th anniversary of the end of WWII, partly because the Black-Opps peace agreement was developed 12 years earlier and had an 11½-year silence, and partly due to the media having come some way to catching up.

On 11 May 2005, it was also released that investors were claiming back US$8 billion for dishonoured bonds (off Germany) for their financing of Hitler. The British banks had funded Hitler and hadn't asked for the money back.[1] They probably thought it was money well spent. Things regarding Hitler's history were hotting up.

I had been renovating my house down the line and had tools in the truck (4WD, 5 m long), along with a pair of $400 sunglasses, a $5 note, and a disk containing all ten books to date. I intended to lodge the disk in the painting shed but ran out of steam at the end of the day, so the disk remained in the glovebox.

The Spymaster came around at 1 pm on Wednesday 11 May 2005 and he had lost the paper 'Gifting the United Nations to Stalin' from Volume III. We searched through his car but couldn't find it. It was then that I noticed that my truck had been entered. After completing the search we went back to the house. At 1.11 pm (11.05.2005) it was confirmed that the disk containing a copy of all books had been taken and nothing else (apart from the sunglasses).

The driver's seat had been slid and tilted forward, something that only a large person would need to do. The glovebox was left open, as was the central console. The spare set of keys for the car was not taken and $1000 worth of tooling was also left in place. It looked like a professional job and there was no sign of forced entry. It looked like a fast job by a large person, with the sunglasses taken for cover.

---

[1] *New Zealand Herald*, International section, 'A bond is a bond', 11 May 2005, C7.

The sunglasses or DNA off them could easily be used for planting at a crime scene using DNA replication lice, the same lice that changed the DNA structure of migratory Polynesians to Maoris during their migrations from the Pacific Islands to New Zealand. This is nature's way of adapting to the new environment. It was discovered by a brother-and-sister team at Massey University in Palmerston North. One hopes that publication is still protection.

On the Monday prior, a friend had come around and we chatted for four hours. He gave me the lead for the 'Missing History' story (Volume III). When we went out onto the footpath we saw a new black Audi 4WD a spotter's distance away.

The driver was at the bonnet and as soon as he saw us, he got back into the driver's seat. He was huge, about 6'4", 18 stone of muscle, dark brown hair, slightly balding (35). His partner was a similar description. The front bumper and indicator of the black Audi were removed. Most importantly, it had easily borrowed temporary yellow dealer plates.

They had been there for a while. When we got to the pavement, they took off, not noticing us, even though we looked at them quite intently, but in a way that anyone else would acknowledge us. It was after all, a domestic street and a reasonably friendly neighbourhood. They were really trying not to see us.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Without prompting, my very experienced friend said, "That's weird."

I replied, "That'll be the SAS. They're interested in all of my visitors, all of my movements, anything I say or write and whoever I contact. Part of it is to isolate me from anyone I ever knew. It's all part of boiler plating [harassment]."

My house is thoroughly bugged. My car has a military tracking device on it and the SIS paid for the re-piling of the house next door in exchange for using it as a bugging station, reading off my computer screen, logging keystrokes, that sort of thing. Thus, everything that is said in my house goes straight to Intelligence and I use it as such. Because of this, Army Intelligence refuses to visit and I always have to meet them at 'the place'.

On 28 March 2005 the Spymaster had come around with the Knowledge Carrier, a black woman in her early twenties who did not know her country of origin or her birth parents, yet the information she provided was beyond both of us and the detail and breadth of her knowledge was such that we were both gobsmacked, continually. That takes a lot of doing.

She provided a different perspective. It was a history from the black person's point of view. I told her I was a mulatto short of a quadroon and she said it didn't matter. I wasn't black.[2]

I had managed to gather some psychological training in my travels, and after our third meeting I told the Spymaster, KC was working for MI-6, had been downloaded with information and was gathering a hit list to keep history suppressed and this would be released through scopolamine.

On the Monday (9 May 2005), I was travelling down the line to fit some hardware to my front door (knocker and lock). It took me five hours and I qualify as the world's slowest builder. My shingle should read, 'Sloth Builders, $6/hour'. On the way down, the Knowledge Carrier rang and left a message for the Spymaster who was also down the line. Previously I was in a naturally ecstatic mood, but became grumpy immediately after her call. Not only is the KC demanding, but it occurred to me that I was about to get robbed as both the Spymaster and myself were away. When I got back Monday night, I was surprised to find that nothing was stolen. That's not to say it wasn't copied.

The following day I went to both of my cars on the street. I noticed that a white van with red markings was at the house next door. The guy had a look in my direction. I was his 'mark'. He was SIS tech support. In exchange for tapping my place, the house next door had its garage foundations re-piled four months after I moved in. Again I thought things were hotting up.

The next day, after the Spymaster came round and we had established that one of my papers from Volume III was missing from his car and the 10-volume history had been stolen from my truck, I asked him who he thought had done it.

"Well it could have been thieves because they're lazy and don't steal tools. Those guys in the black Audi 4WD were SAS. It was most likely school kids. They'd steal sunglasses and a CD. They'll probably write over the CD. Don't worry about it."

---

[2] A mulatto is a tawny-coloured mixed race person, named after a mule. A quadroon is their offspring. A 'mulatto short of a quadroon' is the next generation after this. You can trace your black race, but you don't look the part. No handouts for me.

This is a common attitude amongst Intelligence – 'Don't worry about things you can't change.'

I said, "It's not rewriteable. They may try it as a new history with their teachers and we'll see what happens to them. What happens to them would happen to us if we published under our own name. I knew the leaking would start on 11 May 2005. Still, it's a good buffer for us. Someone else gets the initial blame . . . I rang JBIII today."

Spymaster: "An Intelligence Officer is all over him at the moment. He's trying to get any and all information he can out of him, including his contacts."

"Is he from Australia?"

Spymaster: "Yes."

"So is the Knowledge Carrier. I want all reading done here now. Try and lose her for two weeks. I don't trust her, the other girl, or the drunk. He'd give away any and all information for a peck on the cheek from either of those two."

Spymaster: "That's true."

"Don't bring any of them around. It's almost finished and we're changing history. I want all the reading done here . . . It's important now. We can't afford to fuck it up at this stage."

A week prior KC was around here claiming that her surrogate father was the James Bond of the Pacific. She certainly carries the knowledge of someone whose sat around briefing tables from a very young age. She had complained to the Spymaster of symptoms that matched scopolamine and freely rings American Intelligence, Echelon and detective constables, calling them by their surnames and in a demanding tone. What's most surprising is that she has all their phone numbers.

In private, I suggested to the Spymaster that she had been drugged, briefed with all the New Zealand cons ASIS knew of, and told to spread them around in order to draw out those able to acknowledge and correct them. She would then be put under scopolamine again to draw out the information she'd gathered in New Zealand.

"Spymaster: "She certainly told the police who killed who in infinite detail. They were completely taken aback."

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Some of the ASIS stories on New Zealand were wrong and some of them were deliberately wrong to fish for those with the information . . . but my biggest worry was with the Mossad who now control Australasian Intelligence. Tasmania is targeted as the new Israel and New Zealand as their holiday home, slave colony, information mine and gateway to Antarctica with all its shenanigans.

But then New Zealand is a listening post with the highest rate of retired and swished spies. If you listen in New Zealand, you find out more than anywhere else.

"I won't ring JBIII."

Spymaster: "See ya."

4.45 pm, 11 May 2005: I get into my car and drive it three metres and then repark it. I get out and walk to the shops with my mobile phone in my pocket. My mobile has been tracked and tapped for the past three years, part of the discredited Operation *Leaf* – discredited by the Prime Minister/Minister of Security and Intelligence who was doing the bugging. Through my phones they listen to everything I say.

Shopkeeper: "How are you?"

"I'm fine, but I've just been robbed. My car's just been robbed. Nothing was taken except a disk with 10 volumes of books on it – three years' work."

Shopkeeper: "What are you going to do?"

"I dunno. Probably lodge an affidavit with the High Court, registering the thefts and what the titles were."

Shopkeeper: "Can't you go to the police?"

"The police were behind it. They operate thieves in 90% of all crimes, all thefts."

Shopkeeper: "Nooo."

"Yes."

Shopkeeper: "What are you going to do now?"

"I'll probably lodge all the information with the High Court and let them deal with it."[3]

I returned at 5.15 pm, open the truck driver's door, removed the drink bottle, threw a box in the back and looked in the pouch behind the driver's seat. The disk was there, returned.

---

[3] The shopkeeper and his family emigrated to England soon after this was published.

It was the big SAS guy driving the black 4WD Audi import. That would explain the seat slid and tilted forward, no tools taken, the disk missing and then returned once my Merc had moved, my mobile phone was on walkabout and my conversation with the shopkeeper.

The SIS bugged and sabotaged my car from 26 March 2002 and changed this to a military device on the night of 13/14 August 2003. As soon as I moved the car, they knew they had a window of opportunity to return the disk to the truck. There was a spare key in the car and they took a soap impression and then had a copy made.

This was actually done 18 months prior. I changed my house keys but that was pointless. There was a period where break-ins to my house occurred two and three times a week. The front door was either left ajar, or with the keys in the outside of the door. This was boiler plating, designed to intimidate, saying 'my life was theirs' and they could terminate it whenever they felt like it. The reason I survived was that they really wanted to read the finished product . . . combinations of people who can write such books are few and far between.

It was just a normal day. It was a good day's fishing for them and I've had three good years fishing for information they stole off me. There's probably some mutual respect thing happening. It could act for or against me, but . . . 'I can't do anything about the things I can't change'. Tomorrow, if I'm still amongst the living, I'll have forgotten what yesterday began. The times they are a-changing . . . I wish someone would come and push back the clock for me . . . But I'm already there in my mind and it's good enough for now.[4]

Friday 13 May 2005: My immediate neighbour on the other side has his power connection to the house repaired. Connections here are a classic surveillance technique. I spoke to the electrician, but he failed to give me any information and refused to look at me.

Saturday 14 May 2005: The Spymaster had come around at 9.30 pm to baby-sit for me. This was the first and only time he did it, but it gives me a great sense of kudos to say the Spymaster was my babysitter. My child should be able to dine out on that for a few years, but still, it's service that brings results and results bring status.

That night, the Spymaster told me of a conversation he had with the Knowledge Carrier the night before.

---

[4] Apologies to Robert Zimmerman.

Espavo S020 - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Spymaster: "You're working for MI-6. If you're going to kill me, kill me. Get it over and done with. I've lived my life and I've done everything I wanted to do."

Knowledge Carrier: "I promise to take care of your kids."

Now this may not seem like an actual conversation, but it is the gist of the conversation without all the ums and ahs. She had an accent that came from everywhere. It was Irish, Trinidadian, Australian and Fijian. She came with no confirmed history, could not identify her biological family and was the Spymaster's honey-trap, designed perfectly for him. She was the only person I've ever met who could keep up with his knowledge of history and intricate detail of events suppressed.

I had already established she had spent time in a mental hospital in Melbourne, Australia on the way here (Callan Park). This is standard practise to be referred to later for writing off the person as of no consequence and as cover if any charges were laid.

> New Zealand is the spies' holiday and retirement home. In New Zealand it is not illegal for a woman to kill her male partner, as long as she is dark brown, lesbian, lesbians are attracted to her, or she has a history of mental illness. The KC has 3 out of 4 of these attributes. New Zealand's legalising of 'female murders male' came under the KGB operative Prime Minister Helen Clark, a renowned feminist and lesbian herself.[5]

Sunday 15 May 2005: At 6.45 pm (dark), a 1.8 m (5'11") tall black man walks over to my stairs, then turns back, opens the gate to the house above and tries a key in the front door. The woman inside looks out and then calls me. The key he had was for my house and made from soap impressions taken when my truck was broken into (mailbox key included). It didn't fit her lock. He left, waving at the women behind the door – a typically relaxed protected non-traceable operative (NTO).

I thought about what to do if the NTO (black guy) came to my door. I'd leave the curtains drawn and take a leaf from James Bond III's hit on

---

[5] This law was tested in Whangarei in 2002 when a female Maori rugby player stabbed her husband and father of her two children to death in front of her mother in her own kitchen during a party. She didn't lose custody of her children for a minute and wasn't even convicted of manslaughter. This set in concrete the New Zealand judiciary as an 'occult mafia'.

Adolf Hitler in February 1964: "Are you the shooter? . . . The job's done. Tell them you did it and take the money." The black NTO was later revealed to be a Rhodesian NTO known to New Zealand Intelligence.

I wanted to change my door lock barrel first thing, but was going fishing the next day so I decided to leave the front door deadlocked so the key wouldn't work. I went out the back door and took the large key with me, of which there are only 12 variations. I also left my phone behind, turned off, so if they rang, it would go straight to message . . . and I left the radio on. Such was my security.

The Spymaster has been around every day reading and adding last-minute stories. Various intelligence communities from various suppressive governments want the finished product. My fear was they would add a virus to my non-net-connected computer. I copied this 'Afterword' and left it on the dining table, at the front of the manuscript, and on the keyboard, I copied all of the work to date and gave it to my fishing buddy's friend to stick in his mattress, delivered another copy to the Godfather, then put this sign on the front door, emulating James Bond III:

Job done.
Tell them you did it.
Take the money . . .

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

I got back after fishing, the sign was still on the inside of my door and there had been no break-in. It's no wonder, the large back door key was incredibly hard to fit, something to do with rusty locks. The Spymaster came around the next day at 11 am and told me what happened to him the previous night.

The Knowledge Carrier told him she wanted to start seeing a South African guy (white) and the Spymaster said, "Fine, Go."

KC: "You're not jealous or angry?"

Spymaster: "No, just go. Do what you want to do."

It's curious that the key had been stolen (SAS), a black Rhodesian NTO had tried to get into the house above using my key and the Knowledge Carrier had started seeing a white South African – all within the same week.

The Spymaster came around to my place the next day (17 May 2005) and did some editorial work and confirmed the KC was MI-6. The KC then came around uninvited. I remained in my office and changed from being a nice guy to saying: "Get rid of her. Don't let her in." She hears this, sees the sign "Job done. Tell them you did it. Take the money . . ." – but doesn't see me.

The next day two ex-British MI-6 officers (white, in their 30s) phone up requesting false names: 2.19 pm, "Is Gary there"; 2.31 pm, "Is Ben there". I haven't added question marks, because they weren't asked as questions. They were actually recording and comparing voice recognition (Echelon) to see if I had been replaced by a doppelgänger. I mentioned this to the Spymaster and gave a description of the people from their voices. He was worried very worried and said, "They are MI-6". He suggests I take the book to the editor early.

James Bond III was equally worried.

Thursday (19 May 2005), the Spymaster came around and confirmed my worst fears. The KC is not even the stepdaughter of the man she claims to be her father – the James Bond of the Pacific. "He is her controller and we already know him to be an evil S.O.B. having caused many coups, even ensuring that some fail." I tell the Spymaster that she's here to clear out any intelligence rings. It's her job to confirm the 'Marks' for the killers.

Just as I was finishing (20 May 2005) my printer broke down two-thirds of the way through the final print job. The paper tray had jammed half in. I took it to the dealer and it was like nothing they had ever seen before. I got a brand-new printer, straight out of the box and that failed on a technical matter, twice, which meant that my CPU had been fiddled with and I lost hours. They never asked for the loan printer back.

While I was out I got a call from my sub-landlord that builders would be around tomorrow doing an unspecified job. Now that both neighbours were bugged, they were moving in for the kill. I took my computer in and insisted repeatedly that they not put it online to download any printing programs. Three unknowns turned up, but double jeopardy, my computer had been at the dealers or was in the car. One of the builders knew the entire family of my closest relatives. This helped with their rapport-building.

The Spymaster came around (28 May 2005) and told me he had taken the KC to ONI (Office of Naval Intelligence) for an IQ test and confirmed everything I had said. She had an IQ of 95 – low enough to know you're not getting it, but bright enough to keep asking questions (annoying). The fantastic amount and detail of historical information she had, had been dumped into her subconscious via MK-Ultra.

The Spymaster suggested, "She was the illegitimate daughter of someone famous". Yeah, with a maid.

A friend popped by to make it a proper treff and slipped something out that solved a case the Spymaster had been working on for three years . . . something about a judge wearing nappies during filmed S&M.

On 2 June 2005, the Spymaster confirmed more information, that her father (illegitimate) was a seriously high-ranking British MI-6 officer. All these events just confirm my suspicions aired two months earlier. It was a severe case of bottulism all round.

After I had given the book to the editor and had mentioned, in my very bugged home, that it was at the editor's, the driver's licence and credit card stolen six months earlier were returned (9 June). Then, on 11 June, my other credit cards were stolen.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

On 13 June it was known that I was going charter fishing. When I got into my car, the minor electrics had failed – radio, CD, rear window. This is all part of boiler plating. The message was: "Are you sure you even know how to tie your own shoelaces?"

When I got home early, the Spymaster rang just as I was putting two and two together. The Spymaster had been grievously assaulted in the previous three weeks. Eleven days later the assailant killed for the second time – this time his father (40), but because he was a minor, he would be let off to kill again. He's tough, the old Spymaster. When he rang me after the assault, he didn't even mention it, but you wouldn't believe how much I laughed when I saw the nasal strapping. He mentioned that the 18 year-old double murderer was being groomed as a government hit man. As it turned out he killed again (for a third time) six weeks later.

I've been working on ten books and took one book to my editor on 2 June 2005. The day before, mail was sent and I was being sued by a school buddy of the Prime Minister, a person who owed me money. It was obvious from their search that they received a lot of inside help, even discounting that their timing was perfect. The hearing for their case ended up at the same time and day as another hearing of mine. Each time I raised the sexuality of the Prime Minister (lesbian married to a homosexual child-sex abuser), the case was interfered with, postponed and I was charged. Rather than receive the amount due I was ordered to pay the amount due.

Interference or coincidence? What are the chances of that? It's corruption and sexual collusion in the Courts.

So far three Courts have failed to sight my evidence and keep delaying me into higher Courts. There are changes being made in the Courts, but they are all to do with cosmetics, like delays.

The real question Western world citizens need to ask is:
'To what degree are our Courts an occult mafia?'

While writing these books, including the constant thefts out of my home, car, bank account and insurance, I've experienced at least 50 incidents, over half of which were criminal attacks by the police or courts, including three lawyers through my architecture practise.

> The legal system is primarily an occult mafia, but it is also a history mafia when challenged. The legal system is based on the current version of social history. As such, the Courts believe it is their right for others not to know right, and their version of false history is the only version that should be known. The truth hurts and it seems that I have taken many of the hits.

Mother rang me shortly after the London Underground bombings (7 July 2005, with '777' signature as the Bible definition of evil) and invited me to lunch. Mother talks away and then slips something in. "You know, no one believes in your conspiracy theories." I hadn't given him any information. He had obviously read off the disk the SAS stole on 11 May. At the end of the day, Mother's allegiances are towards the status quo. Information is not there to rock the boat, but to keep it on edge, levelled by the next report.

On Wednesday 13 July 2005 I rang the Godfather to make an appointment to see how his reading was going and arranged an appointment for Saturday morning 16 July. On Friday 15 July I lodged a High Court appeal against the Prime Minister's school buddy who had employed me with fraudulent documents on 24 May 2004. This was two days after I had ended eight days of Mossad reconnaissance (16–22 May 2004) with a debriefing on their previous murder of the government historian, Michael King, on 29 March 2004 by ipecac and impact explosive on the petrol tank.

The Mossad were quite annoyed to have been discovered, but quite pleased to find someone to talk to. It was 4 February 2006 before they invited me to a meeting and even the Spymaster rang prompting me to be on time.[6] They queried me on space. I found what they had to offer, dull, and the report came back, "He's highly intelligent". I would have been happy with "He's quite bright" . . . M had told me my work on space was shit.

On Saturday 16 July 2005 I drove the truck to the Godfather and on my return the Mercedes rear right quarterglass had been smashed. I spoke to the neighbour and established that it had occurred between midnight and 8.30 am on 16 July 2005. Inside nothing had been stolen, not the money or the CD player, but the rear interior light (video & sound) had been pulled apart, the front overhead seatbelt light had been pushed in (video & sound), as had the passenger's electronic seat adjuster (receiver) and the passenger lock cover on the door as it meets the frame had been removed (receiving signals, tracking & sending). All the parts were there as were the tools for the job – a 14 cm black slot-head screwdriver and its 12 cm Phillips adaptor. The Phillips adaptor was used to pinch the quarter light and break the glass. The slot-head was used to pinch off the light and seat control covers and it was this one that was in the black handle when they scarpered.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

I later found out they had left the tools behind to illustrate their confidence in the system not to catch them and a slow leak in my rear left tyre as a little indicator that this was also boiler plating, just for the hassle of it all. The fingerprint department isn't open until Monday and fingerprints only last three days, or so I thought. Given low priority, there was no chance, or so I thought.

The SAS had obviously read at least some of the ten books on disk they had stolen two months prior (including much of this one), saw the mention of the SIS planting tracking devices in my Merc (26 March 2002, 13/14 August 2004, 16 July 2005), and had them removed.

---

[6] This was two years to the day that I had returned with this info. What are the chances.

It also confirmed my suspicions about Mother, that they did believe what I had written and gave it enough credibility to try and remove evidence of their part in it, first by saying no one believed what I was saying and second by removing the tracking devices. Ironically Mother had popped in for a social call 18 hours before the car was broken into and spoke directly to the SIS, framed as a question, "I don't understand why the police employed Graeme Capill as crown prosecutor when they knew he was a paedophile 21 months before he was charged?"

At 5 pm I drove the Merc to my regular takeaways/restaurant where I always purchase on credit card and by chance, inside was an SAS man. They stand out like dog's balls – well built, late twenties, black receding hair, wearing a black polo neck and having to concentrate on having a civilian dinner with another couple as opposed to eating out of a tin can. As I walked in I noticed him checking out the rear light dangling inside the Merc and then checking me out. Initially I thought his stare was a bit camp but it seemed to have a certain admiration attached to it.

About three hours later the Spymaster popped in and I mentioned the break-in. He asked to see the tools the SAS had left behind. Looking at them he said, "It was a semi-professional job . . . at least we now know you're not paranoid, but others will still need some convincing."

We got to talking and he explained how few people still active had his experience. We established that the SAS and the SIS did have this information and then so did the Prime Minister. Then I mentioned that this SAS guy in the restaurant was actually looking at me with some admiration, kind of looking up to me like a student to a teacher. The Spymaster didn't say anything, but word will get to him soon enough. If he starts being treated with more respect then we know we've hit the believability button at the coalface.

A month later the SAS approached him and said, "You know we didn't used to believe you, but now everything you've been saying has come true, well most of it."

On Sunday I met the Spymaster again and he confirmed that international investigations had confirmed everything we had said in this and the other nine books and a summarised version was about to be published in magazine form prior to the election. These people are the old boys of an organisation so powerful they have access to all information currently available, unavailable, suppressed and stolen.

I queried whether they had accessed information stolen by the SIS and whether it had muddied the waters, but there were still things we had solved that they weren't aware of – bigger than God and clearer than the wide blue sea – it came out soon after.

On Monday 18 July 2005 I drove to the police station and filled in the 'Offence Report'. Senior fingerprinting officer Struan Ferguson was serving someone next to me and took an interest in my case. He took fingerprints off the screwdriver and came down to the car. He saw the rear interior rear light dangling, the safety belt light pushed in and the electronic seat adjustor with its covers off.

Struan Ferguson: "I've never seen anything like it." He also said fingerprints lasted longer than three days.

I told him I thought the SIS had done the job and he replied, "SIS fingerprints would not be on our database."

Welcome to the world of NTOs – Non-Traceable Operatives.

I had long suspected the Prime Minister's school buddies of being NTOs. When I first tried to get money out of them through the District Court, my Merc was scratched the same night, the hood ornament was wrenched out and the driver's window was pushed down, but nothing was stolen. The same thing happened this time when I lodged in the High Court and again before the night was out.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

I showed the car to Mother. He said, "The Prime Minister's people have done it. They're on to you . . . You're too friendly. Too many people know you linked the Prime Minister to Vladimir Putin." But I never told him that.

Mother's read it and Mum's the word. So what am I, just an interested recorder of events, an active historian caught up in the politics of the Cold War as the New World Order emerges? A week later the "Police Complaint Acknowlegement Form" came through the post, "File Ref: No. 050722/5468".

I lost a High Court Appeal of the same case to a feminist judge on 28 July 2005, got into my truck and parked outside the bank in Mt Eden village. There was a driveway in front of the parking space, so parking was easy and a few cars passed me before I'd finished parking. A $150,000 Black CL500 Mercedes coup (CAW834) then stopped the traffic for 45 seconds and parked in the middle lane of the main road right next to me. A large fit 58-year-old male in dark sunglasses got out of this car and started yelling and gestating in high anger, "Fuck you, fuck you . . . I fucked your wife."

It looked like he was coming for me so I locked my doors, wound up my windows, closed my sunroof and then wound down my driver's window a few inches to, "I fucked your wife".

I said, "I don't have a wife".

He appeared to be on methamphetamine. With three witness names gathered, I filed a complaint "File Ref: No. 050728/2968" and later asked the police for his address so I could send him a get well card.

They said they wouldn't have a case officer for two months. Sometimes people do contract boiler plating for the government (police and intelligence) in exchange for not being charged for other crimes ranging from drug use and drug dealing to murder.

At 5.25 pm on 11 August 2005, police officer Graeme Bruges phoned and said he was working on the case, that the other witnesses had agreed with my statement and they had been to the listed address of the driver, but he had moved, and according to his record, he probably was on P.

No kidding.

Officer Bruges then said, "I'm going on holiday for two weeks, and when I come back I'll try and locate him."

Straight after the High Court appeal against government NTO's, driving a flash car with a history of road rage, on P, moving house, no forwarding address and the policeman on holiday . . . this was perfect NTO material. It'll be at least four weeks before they locate him. I wouldn't be surprised if he's overseas already, or if pressured, catches the trans-Tasman Seatow to freedom.

On 30 August Constable Graeme Bruges invited me to give a statement. I went into the station and it was all very cordial. He noted that it was strange that a person driving a $150,000 car should be living in a rental state house in a bad area. He said he would arrest him and the hearing would be in a year or so.

The next morning the Spymaster asked me which station I had been to and then told me that the driver of CAW834 was protected.

Authors work for years without pay and I had been after a loan on my rental house. After six weeks of haranguing it finally came through the same day.

Three hours later I got a fax from the High Court requesting payment for the defendants lawyers fees stating that my case had been abandoned . . . 18 days before the election. The case was not due to be abandoned until 1 October, 14 days after the election.

Both the Disputes Tribunal judge and the High Court judge were lesbians and the District Court judge had been very cordial to me on one case and had jumped so far down my throat on this case I was still pulling his shoe-laces out of my throat a month later.

I had two separate cases scheduled for exactly the same time and day to be heard by the same judge who acted completely differently on the two cases. What are the chances of that? Judges are influenced by politicians, especially when that politican has had their hit thwarted.

Within minutes the Spymaster contacted me and said: "You'll never believe this. Westfield property bought the Twin Towers two months before 9-11. Westfield is a front for the Mossad who bought it for Silverstein Properties – the Mossad. There was a clause in the purchase that they didn't have to do any maintenance in case of terrorism . . . The building was insured."

Espavo 2020 - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March

The Mossad purchased the Twin Towers in July 2001 when they required extensive maintenance and were near the end of their life. The buildings were attacked in an act of terrorism, the government cleaned up the mess, the insurance companies paid out, everyone else's premiums went up worldwide, and Silverstein Properties ended up with a freehold empty section and enough money to build again from scratch. Nice little stitch-up. Problem is, it changed the face of the world.

Things were hotting up. The KGB operative Prime Minister was under attack and erroneously thinks I'm involved. Who, me? I'm just a struggling architect who was the first to expose her. On 25 March 2002 I mentioned she was a KGB operative on radio. There was an attempt on my life on 2 April 2002, I put my comments to print on 11 April and the early election was leaked on 15 April 2002.

> "Hitler continues to pose a dreadful problem . . . If we don't get Hitler right, the critics insist, we might not recognise the next Hitler."[7]

---

[7] *Sunday Star-Times*, 15 May 2005, C2.

Hitler is everywhere now. There are parts of him in every leader in the world. Governments are occult organisations dedicated to the destruction of their citizens' lives by whatever means is most profitable. We live in a Mafia State. You do in your country too.

New Zealand is ruled by a mafia of paedophiles.

What we are witnessing is the transfer of control from national governments to the Shadow World Government and from there to the One World Order where heterosexual male individuality is treated with the utmost suspicion – as virtual treason.

Patriotism is now treasonous.
All that defined yesterday's heroes is now under attack.

Regarding the 11 May 2005 truck break-in, when I filled in the complaint form the Spymaster advised me to say that it was the SIS and Israeli's who did it. In the computer disk stolen and returned the same day, I had mentioned that Hitler was a British agent and was trained at Tavistock, but reference to this was the least concrete part of the book.

The Israeli's answered all my prayers. They confirmed Hitler's Tavistock training eight weeks later on 7 July 2005 with their signature hit on Tavistock Square. In Golden Dawn coven/Freemason language 07.07.2005 is 007[7] or '007 on the square', in direct reference to James Bond and Ian Fleming's escort of Hitler out of Germany at 1700 hours on 007.1945 – '007 squared'.

Tavistock Square is part of an estate owned by the Dukes of Bedford and takes its name from the courtesy title given to the eldest male in the line of the Duke of Bedford – 'Lord Tavistock' – with the younger males styled 'Marquess of Tavistock'.

The Lord Tavistock's had not been having a good run of it lately. The 13th Duke of Bedford had organised an open-air concert headed by Neil Diamond in 1977 attended by 56,000 people (56 people died in the London bombings). This Lord Tavistock died on 25.10.2002.[8] Two years later in October 2004 MI-5 labelled WWII's Duke of Bedford "a Nazi sympathiser".

His son, the 14th Duke of Bedford died eight months later, aged 63, on 13.06.2003. The 15th Duke of Bedford was born on 30.03.1962 and had just had a son, the 16th Duke of Bedford, born on 07.06.2005, exactly 30 days prior to the bombings. He is the Marquees of Tavistock and when his father dies, he will be the new Lord Tavistock.

---

[8] The 13th Duke of Bedford's estate included a safari park. The author had dinner at his Woburn Abbey in 1989 and it was here that he found out just how unpopular thinking was with the British.

Bus No. 30 was driven off its route into Tavistock Square and blown up. It was an add on to the London Tube hits. The front of the building at Tavistock Square was all covered in blood – blood on its hands – and with this allegory still in tact, those in the front of the bus were left unscathed.

The Marquees of Tavistock was born on the same day as Adolf Hitler's father, exactly 168 years later (Alois Hitler, b. 7 June 1837). In the Golden Dawn coven language, '168' translates as "infinite one dead".

Hitler was trained in the Tavistock military Psych-Opps war school from February to November 1912, 103 years prior – 7 July occurs right in the middle of that training.

Initially 13 died, plus the bomber (18) and then another died, an architect, the namesake of an author who had written about such matters, one Lee Harris.

Developed in the 1820s, Tavistock Square contains a memorial to conscientious objectors. This was unveiled in 1995, 56 years after the beginning of WWII and 56 people died.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 201

The bombing occurred in the 56th year of Hitler's death – 55 years and 136 days after he died. In Golden Dawn coven/Freemason language '55' represents "the master of occult history" and '136' is "dead bad luck".

The bombers were all from England and from low-paying jobs. There is a theory that they undertook the bombings on the understanding that they were time-delay bombs and that they were organised to take the emphasis off Sir Bob Geldof's focus on the depopulation of Africa – for its resources.

Of the people who died, all were British except for 12 foreigners. No American's died and the only Israeli to die was a charity worker who was scared of suicide bombs on Israeli buses, so she moved to London – dead bad luck, '136'.

During the London bombings, the surveillance cameras were all monitored by an Israeli so there was little fear of pertinent evidence catching up with them. The London policeman who said the bombings were done with military explosives was sacked prior to 6 August 2005 (when this information came to author) and the official release said that the bombs had been made out of common household products, but no one believes this.

It was an American and Israeli hit with Tony Blair's complicity. In covering up the Prince's Greek attraction to youth (Thomas Hamilton's Dunblane massacre), Tony Blair had signed a document prior to 7 March 2003 allowing the US government to kill up to 60 Britisher's or people on British soil in order to create the next oil grab (Syria) and sure enough, it was the Syrian's who were blamed by the press the next day, with no evidence to back it up.

Between 60 and 160 dead would mean a proportionate reduction in oil prices for Britain and over 160 meant that the British government could kill American's on American soil in agreed retaliation (another Israeli employment scheme), which would also suit the Americans who would also blame this on the Syrians.

> This is the value in shame over a British aristocratic paedophile ring and it was what America used to bring Tony Blair's Britain into the 20.03.2003 Iraq war.

This was followed by the promotion of back bench MP George Robertson to Cabinet Minister (1997), Lord George Robertson (24 August 1999) and then Secretary General of NATO (11 August 1999–5 January 2004) for his part in supplying the Freemasonry letter of reference for the purchase of the gun for Thomas Hamilton's massacre of 16 school children (16 March 1996). Robertson was accused of this on 11 March 2003, nine days before the Iraq war started, using FBI files as a reference.

Lord George Robertson, Secretary General of NATO, repaid the favour by protecting Afghanistan and ensuring that 98% of the heroin in Britain comes from Afghanistan. How regular are those NATO flights? Have they got their air-to-air refuelling yet? History is built on shame. Those with the most shame are promoted. Politicians regularly fail their way to the top.

The same month as the London bombings, Israel's Prime Minister Ariel Sharon was exposed by the *Haaretz* newspaper as having an affair with his wife's sister, killing his first wife Margalith on 6 May 1962 (car accident), marrying his wife's sister Liala (Lily) in 1964 (date unavailable) and then killing his first son Gur on 5 October 1967 (shooting accident), with their new son Omri (b. 8 August 1968) conceived the same month.

This shows a heavy influence of the occult.

Ariel Sharon had became Israel's Prime Minister by special election on 6 February 2001 with much shenanigans. His son's, Omri and Gilad were both involved in corruption over the 1999 election campaign, with Omri convicted of corruption and dishonesty on 26 July 2005 and Gilad refusing to give self-incrimination evidence.

Given Ariel Sharon's history this is not beyond belief. He has been in the military since the age of 14, became an intelligence officer at 22 and then a major, reading Animal Farm (1945) and leading 'Unit 101' as a 25 year-old.

When his brutal disregard for human life was noted after the Six-Day War in 1967, he resigned and moved straight into politics. As Israel's Defence Minister (1981–83) he was responsible for two refugee massacres in September 1982 and was forced to resign again. He has been successively known as the Butcher of Qibya/Lebanon/Sabra/Chatila and Beirut and has failed and murdered his way up the ladder to become Israel's Prime Minister.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

With the assassination of Israel's Prime Minister Yitzah Rabin on 4 November 1995 and no killer found, the warring Ariel Sharon is not off the list of suspects. He bores us with news of Middle East conflict every night, stories of his own making, which force out less violent and more relevant news.

Israel's Foreign Minister Silvan Shalom, mid-July 2005:

> "Suicide attacks around the world are driven by a common hatred for freedom. Ultimately terrorism can strike any country in the world that has an ideology of freedom, of democracy, that has an ideology of openness."

Shortly after this Ariel Sharon ordered his minister's not to comment on the London bombings and within a month passed into law:

> 'Any expression critical of Israel or any anti-Semitic remark warrants extradition and interrogation, without limit to any country. That it is true, is no excuse.'

This was done with the London bombings in the forefront of his mind and these texts in the background – two months after they were stolen, three months prior to completion and four months prior to publication it's already influencing history.

When Israel attacks foreigners they make it as significant as possible in order to give it mystical qualities. Tavistock is a very significant place and '007 on the square' or '777' was a very significant hit.

According to Hebrew interpretations '777' represents God and '777' is an offence against Jesus Christ. When written in the original Hebrew '777' looks remarkably like '666' which looks remarkably like a track of paw prints of a large animal, hence 'the beast'. Later numerology got hold of '666' and was supposed to represent someone's name, either the Roman emperor Nero (Neron) or Hitler, but these are all just riddles that leave their mark.

With British complicity and under American orders those who organised the London bombings were intelligent enough to leave us clues. They were also intelligent enough to pick up on mine. Thank's for the confirmation of Hitler's British training . . . my condolences to the victims throughout history.

Israel is a wolf in sheep's clothing barking that it is a sheep.

In an unpublished article to *TIME* magazine (9 March 2005) I had predicted New Zealand's election would be at the end of September 2005. (A minium of three weeks notice is required.)

On 28 June 2005 I had written another unpublished article, "The Rainbow Warrior Bombing, An update on the *Sunday* programme on 26 June 2005" and vetted it with Mother and the Spymaster. The following day I phoned Donna Chisholm at the *Sunday Star Times* and met with her predicting former Labour Prime Minister David Lange would publish an autobiography just before his death and his death would be just before the election.

> "When the nuclear issue came up for New Zealand . . . David has written about this in his book, which is timed to come out immediately upon his death, as is another biography on Lange's life by Dr. Michael Basset."

I spoke with Mother on Sunday 24 July 2005 and he told me the election would be announced on Wednesday. Being highly bugged, it was announced the following day, on Monday 25 July for 17 September 2005.

David Lange's book came out on Tuesday 9 August 2005. On the afternoon of Friday 12 August 2005, Mother contacted me and said: "David Lange's life support was switched off at 11am. I just thought you'd like to know. He has a matter of hours or days to live. Keep it secret."

I couldn't help myself. The Spymaster was standing right next to me and after the call I asked him if he could keep a secret. I asked him three times and each time he said "No", so I told him anyway. We then sat outside and he told me the KC was back. I said "Don't let her in. Where is she?"

Spymaster: "Up the top . . . They've read your books. They've gone to the highest levels. They were going to kill you and everyone involved and then someone else read the books and said, '*No, they serve our purpose. It's about time the truth came out*', so they're going to write you off as a Nutter."

I just sat back and laughed and the Spymaster watched me for a while and said, "The books have gone to the highest levels."

"Have they got the latest information or just the information they stole on 11 May?"

Spymaster: "I don't know how they've got it, but they've got all the information. The third nuclear bomb really threw them."

"They must have been reading keystrokes . . . who, the Brits and the Jews?" There was no answer. The Spymaster always protects his sources with no response and a completely unreadable face whenever he wants to protect his sources. "I can imagine you and me as the North Going Zac and the South Going Zac with the British and Israelis firing bombs at each other overhead."

Spymaster: "This is the dinkum oil."

I laughed again . . . couldn't help myself and the Spymaster said, "I thought you'd react this way . . . I reckon they'll delay Lange's death so it won't be announced on the late news, but in the Sunday papers."

David Lange died at 10 pm Saturday 13 August 2005. His death was announced in the Sunday papers the following morning as having occurred at the start of the Bledisloe Cup rugby test match, which New Zealand won. If the government wants to stay in, test matches are bought and the All Blacks have been winning hands down. This was followed by full Sunday television coverage of David Lange.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

9 March 2005: predicted election in late September 2005 to *Time* magazine; 28 June 2005: predicted David Lange would publish an autobiography and die soon after, but before the election; 24 July 2005: knew election was to be announced, as it was the following day; 9 August 2005: Lange's book came out and he died four days later on the suspicious date of 13 August 2005. The election was due five weeks later and Lange's death caused a lot of sympathy to the incumbent government.

It's easy enough to rig a rugby test match with the awarding of penalties. The winning team has penalties awarded in their opposition half and the losing team has theirs awarded in their own half. If the bribe is big enough, the loosing team's kicker, kicks for touch, rather than for goal. This is how the Lions lost all three test matches to the All Blacks in June/July 2005. It came with the complicity of Tony Blair's paedophile minder, Alistair Campbell (ex-military) who fronted as the Lions maître d'.

The Prime Minister had a consultation lunch with Alistair Campbell on 26 June 2005 regarding rigging the next election. First there was to be no KGB or lesbian information on Helen Clark, no homosexual child-sex abuse information on her husband, Peter Davis, no paedophile information on Jonathan Hunt, the High Commissioner to Britain; no coverage of Sir Peter Elworthy's 'death', or Michael King's 'death'; butch lesbians were to hide from the public, no lesbians were to drive convertibles and lesbians were to disappear from public view in general; all Labour women were to get new bright pastel clothes and were to dress like heterosexuals; Helen was to lose weight and have her 55-year-old lesbian XY-self made to look like a 28-year-old heterosexual complete with manufactured teeth. This image was to be placed on an election pledge card. David Lange was to die just before the election – engineering sympathy, and the leader of the opposition Don Brash was to be accused of being CIA backed. The latter was to prevent last minute accusations that Helen Clark was the KGB operative IE and had worked with Vladimir Putin in Wellington to launch a nuclear strike on American property during the Cold War – namely Canberra, Adelaide or Sydney in a rotating fashion.

After the chicken salad had arrived, the NATO delivered Afghan heroin was not to reach the market until after the election, regardless of who won. In exchange for no information on Tony Blair's rock spider activity, Campbell would throw the Lions Tour of New Zealand which would make Helen Clark popular in the eyes of rugby fans. He would also ensure the world's media remained silent on Helen Clark's filmed sex with Heather Simpson at Lincoln Cottage. He could only guarantee W. remained quiet on it as long as she continued to not criticise the Iraq war. This was the deal. This was how it was engineered and this was how it was done, complete with carbonated water.

Another interesting aspect of election rigging is the engineering of fine weather during the winter leading up to the election providing that feel good factor.

Under Operation CLOVERLEAF (1997–) aerosol and electro-magnetic operations, high frequency microwaves are used to manipulate the charged atmosphere for weather modification. Along with this are 4 beats per second extremely low electro-magnetic frequencies breaking down human biological and mental functioning . . . and aerosol poisons dissipated by planes.

These particles (10% the width of a human hair) are made up of barium salts, aluminium and radioactive thorium, viruses, bacteria, fungi, desiccated bovine (cow) blood cells and mutated spores which secrete a powerful microtoxin, Ethylene Dibromide (a carcinogen and toxin banned in 1983) and Mycoplasma Fermetens Incognitus, the same Mycoplasma that created the Gulf War syndrome.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Weather modification is bought via bribes to the CIA who fly unregistered planes stolen off the American military and America companies as well as pre-modified commericial planes like the KC-10A, KC135 (707) and C-130s. These have been adapted with 500 litres of poisons stored amongst the sewerage bowels and are dissipated through the modified static discharge wicks at the rear of the plane's wings.

Spymaster: "The CIA just waltz in with their bogus and forged documentation and commandeer the planes. They are not all commercial flights and some of the planes are unregistered."

The poisons are so fine they are breathed in and enter the blood cells. Their toxic metals suppress the immune system, weakening muscles and cause cancers, Alzheimer's, blood clots, strokes, heart attacks, changes to the endocrine and nervous system, respiratory problems, coughing fits, shortness of breath, sinus headaches, respiratory failure, severe infections to the throats and sinuses, swelling of the lymph glands and liver damage . . . and it only costs US$0.73¢ per kilo to disseminate.

The cover for this is that the aerosols contain fine metalic particles which reduce the sun's electromagnetic radiation to stop global warming, but GLOBAL WARMING IS A HOAX.

> DuPont's CFC patent was due to run out in 1985 and they wanted to stop Asian companies producing CFCs cheaply, so they banned them and introduced HCFC's having the sole patent for this. HCFC's are more expensive and less effective, but DuPont has the patent.
>
> Mt Erebus releases more CFCs than all the rest of the world's volcanoes put together and these are sucked up into the atmosphere during the spring and autumn equinox. To prevent this being measured, a plane crash was engineered.
>
> When the 28 November 1979 Air New Zealand crash was arranged to hit Mt Erebus, DuPont and the CIA were present at all meetings. The CIA's motto is to PROTECT AND ADVANCE AMERICAN BUSINESS. The Erebus crash now prevents anyone climbing Mt Erebus to test its CFC emissions.
>
> The hole in the ozone layer was caused by a nuclear explosion in Antarctica in 1958. It was measured for 60 years and when the ozone hole began to contract in 2002, it was no longer news. Erroneously the GLOBAL WARMING HOAX is still with us.

Instead of spraying fine reflective particles to stop global warming, poisons are being sprayed to assist the new Avian Flu (H5N1) which has been designed to be as strong as the 1918–19 Spanish Flu that killed 50 million. The Bush administration has been having discussions as to the optimum number of people to 'work the planet' and their current estimates are around one billion (May 2005). This has resulted in experiments to kill 5 out of 6 people.

"United States health officials said this week they have started human tests of a vaccine against Avian Flu, which experts believe could kill tens of millions of people if it becomes easily passed from person to person . . . Usually, people catch the virus directly from birds such as chickens or ducks. Geese and wild birds and mammals such as cats can also carry the virus . . . To date, there has been a small number of cases where human-to-human transmission of the virus may have occurred

. . . public health experts fear that the virus may evolve into one that is more easily transmitted between people . . . If this were to happen, a worldwide pandemic could follow . . . the public health community is concerned that the virus will develop the capability of efficiently spreading from human to human and thus create a risk for a worldwide pandemic . . . the vaccine [is] made by Sanofi Pasteur [with] Chiron Corp. of Emeryville, California."[9]

Prime Minister Helen Clark stuffed up the importation of the vaccine ensuring that a less effective vaccine was purchased . . . just as previous Prime Minister William Ferguson Massey (1912–25) carried the Spanish Flu into New Zealand personally, refusing to be quarantined. In Freemasonry he was 'M. W. Bro. W. F. Massey' and for his efforts in eugenics (mass murder) a Freemasonry lodge was named after him – the 'William Fergusson Massey Royal Arch Chapter No. 60'.[10]

Deaths in New Zealand are due to happen with a cold snap in late October after the election and after a warm winter. The Avian Flu is due to arrive into New Zealand (the world's test population) via planes carrying Chinese 'Chicken-Sleepers' from Manchuria on 10 October with the virus taking hold on 14 October,[11] followed by an extreme cold snap in late October.

Espavo 5020 - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2018

Almost all natural disasters are man-made and governments arrange emergencies to keep them in power. For the Bush government it was 9-11 and the Iraq War. For Blair it was the Iraq War and the London tube bombings. For Helen Clark it is 250,000 deaths from the Avian Flu.

The rules of Nordic-Anglo-Saxon colonising are that you have to limit the killing of 'people with integrity'. These are noted as white heterosexuals. The plan from 1500 years ago is for those from Thule (Greenland) to sweep down to Antarctica over 1500 years and then to sweep back up again with a different species – modified humans – for the next 1500 years.

---

[9] This Reuters article 'Human tests of avian flu vaccine underway' made public on 25 March 2005 was published in the *New Zealand Herald* five months later on 1 September 2005.

[10] Freemasons often misspell a persons name by one letter. It is a sign they believe they are above the law. Sure enough, Massey belonged to the British-Israel-World Federation with an office next to Buckingham Palace (1924–90). Federated on 3 July 1919, its roots can be traced back to the 1800s.

[11] As it panned out, H5N1 struck in Romania and Turkey on exactly these dates and New Zealand was saved by the Mossad accused.

From 1945 this new species of humans – homo sapien 1.52 – has been developed with their 'human' aspects breed and trained out of them. They are now a race of technocrats – capable servants – 21st Century serfs rasied amongst the world's largest geothermal lakes between Neuschwabenland and the South Pole, first accessed by U-boat under the ice.

Israel has taken over Tasmania on condition that the Australian population be disarmed (2003). At the same time the Avian Flu was successfully tested as a human killer in Korea, but its contagiousness needed to be improved. The Israeli government then enforced the withdrawl of its people out of the Westbank (15 August 2005) and gave each family US$800,000 and placed them in rental accomodation. They will soon be emigrating to Tasmania en masse, followed by the depopulation of New Zealand resulting in extremely cheap housing and an influx of very wealthy Israeli's without the grief of the incubent population. At the same time the Antarcticans (Homo sapien 1.52) will merge into New Zealand, purchase houses with counterfeit money of a foreign country, but accepted by New Zealand banks (most likely the Euro). Their move from Antarctica to New Zealand will go unnoticed amongst the confusion. This is the way migrations happen.

History rarely notes the intricate details of a migration
and rarely if ever survives to record another species.

That's the plan, but gang aft aglae – things fuck up.

Normal peace agreements say 'this is peace now',
with no definition of what peace is,
and 'if you cross this line, it is war'.
War is defined, but peace is not.

Peace was always some static thing on a spring
summers day when nothing went wrong.

In between wars there is
PEACE, FREEDOM AND CULTURE
which is maintained with 'AAA' –
Acceptance, Acknowledgement, Attention
– and it is this simple formula that was used
to send the above plan astray.

Yet another example of migration engineering and population control. It is how the face of the planet is altered.

J' Accuse . . .

J'Accuse Helen Clark of training with the soviets in Tavistock St Petersburg from 1968 and being the KGB operative IE.

J'Accuse Helen Clark of using the nuclear free treaties as cover for launching a nuclear strike on American property between 1980 and 1989.

J'Accuse Helen Clark of complicity in the murders of Diplomat Chris Beeby, sailor and greeny Sir Peter Blake, Sir Peter Elworthy, historian Michael King and Green politician Rod Donald.

J'Accuse Helen Clark of letting out a contract in October 2003 for the murders of Sir Peter Elworthy, Michael King, Sharon Crosby and Alison Holst.

J'Accuse no one of picking up the contracts so they went to Chief Justice Sian Elias who organised and funded the Mossad to murder.

J'Accuse Sian Elias of stealing over half a billion dollars and transferring the money to the Cayman Islands in 1989.

J'Accuse the Mossad of spotting this transfer and bribing Sian Elias. The Mossad would take over New Zealand and in exchange they would carry out any murders for Sian Elias.

J'Accuse Sian Elias of ordering the murder of her accountant brother-in-law in 1993.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

> Most of the money stolen was due to the Chinese and China threatened war on New Zealand. The Mossad intervened and an agreement was reached resulting in the Asian immigration of 1995. China would take over New Zealand by immigration, just as it has.

J'Accuse Helen Clark of three attempted murders on the author.

The first on 2 April 2002 using the SIS and the KGB.

The second on 23 August 2002 using the SIS and the Police.

The third on 14–22 May 2004 using the Mossad. The later was ordered with complicity of the Labour Party and initiated and funded by the Chief Justice Sian Elias.

J'Accuse Helen Clark of contract killing.

J'Accuse Dame Sian Elias of contract killing.

J'Accuse Helen Clark and Dame Sian Elias of competing to be the Mafia bosses of New Zealand and the South Pacific.

J'Accuse Helen Clark of promoting Jonathan Hunt to New Zealand's High Commissioner to Britain after he was exposed as a paedophile by US Customs.

J'Accuse Helen Clark of being in an arranged marriage to a homosexual child-sex abuser.

J'Accuse moi of running a program to drop the Berlin Wall 10 years early.

Appendix 1

Information and Inventions

Still Camera

The first permanent photographic image using a Camera Obscura occurred in 1825. The first production camera was made in 1839 and weighed in at a whopping 55 kg. By 1850, the photographer's kit required a horse-drawn wagon. The first pocket camera became available in 1899, the first folding camera in 1890 and the first market camera from 1917 (Kodak 1A, US$21). The first market petite camera with matching lipstick holder and compact hit the espionage scene in 1930. Cameras became digital in 1990 and this posed a problem with the veracity of the finished image.

Photos can now be taken from paint (camera paint) and this technology is now available in make-up, which means that your honey-trap can be filming you from your first date. "I can't believe it's you. Are you really . . . . [fill in name]?" . . . then you're dead with no wake-up call.

Fax

The facsimile (fax) was invented in France in 1843. The first commercial fax service was up and running 22 years later in 1865. Forty-one years later, newspaper photographs could be faxed (1906). The fax was originally called a 'Mojo' and by 1973 it was capable of sending one page of text every 18 minutes. For its first 130 years, the fax was the dinosaur of communication.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Calculator

The calculating engine was invented in 1855. IBM formed in 1924 and the first pocket calculator was available in 1972 for 15% of the price of a new car (US$400).

Telephone and Dictaphones

Italian American, Antonio Santi Giuseppe Meucci (1808–1889), was considered a revolutionary and incarcerated (aged 25–26). He discovered the principle of the telephone in 1849 and developed a working model by 1859. He also registered at least 11 patents for such things as the stearic candle process, paraffin candles and electroplating.[1]

Officially Bell patented the telephone in 1876 and the first exchange opened two years later in 1878, making Bell incredibly rich. Trans-Atlantic telephones were in operation from 1927 (51 years later). Telephone answering machines were invented in 1930, dictaphones in 1935 (available from 1939) and cell/mobile phones from 1982. The invention of the telephone was attributed to the Scotsman, Alexander Graham Bell (1847–1922), and it was only attributed to the much older, actual inventor, Antonio Meucci, on 15 June 2002 by the US Congress.

---

[1] *Antonio Meucci: The Inventor and his Times*, Basilio Catania. (Vol. 1), Seat – Divisione, Editoria per la Comunicazione, Rome, 1994. 107th CONGRESS 1st session H. RES. 269.

Alexander Graham Bell still has the memorable phrase attibuted to him: "Give us a bell." If the similar "Give us a Meucci" were in use, the Germans and Japanese would be very confused.

The Freemasons claimed Antonio Meucci, as they used to claim Alexander Graham Bell, and they do it by the following rider from the website of the Grand Lodge of British Columbia and Yukon, entitled 'A Few Famous Freemasons'.

> "The following list has been compiled from primary references or creditable authors. It is neither comprehensive nor definitive, but merely attempts to demonstrate the interest in Freemasonry found in all facets of society. Although the authors noted at the end of the list write with some authority, they do not always provide citations. Membership therefore cannot be considered confirmed unless a lodge name is supplied. Biographies for some of those listed can be found in our Biographies section. Although these men were Freemasons, they neither represent nor speak for Freemasonry."

No lodge citation was provided for Antonio Meucci.

The Freemasons have an invested interest in the Patent Office and many inventors falsify their patents so that they do not work and cannot be copied. Regardless, Bell was still an interesting cat. He built the biplane which flew the first public flight in America (1908), designed a hydrofoil capturing the world water speed record (1918) and designed the 'photophone' based on transmitting speech by light which anticipated optical-fibre communications, although it did not work.

Lie Detectors

The hilarious Alphonse Bertillon system was in operation from 1887 to July 1901, when it was phased out by fingerprinting, which fingered its first criminal in June 1902 (the Fingerprint Bureau at New Scotland Yard). There are no advertised convictions from the Alphonse Bertillon system which worked off ear prints and racial prejudice. In America, it was 1924 before an Act of Congress established the Identification Division of the FBI. This was the first thing the cross-dresser J. Edgar Hoover did.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

In 1921, an instrument capable of continuously recording blood pressure, respiration and pulse rate was devised by John Larson.

In 1926 the polygraph was invented by Leonarde Keeler, but it was found that people could lie and neurotics on pentathol would go on and on and on, giving endless false leads that would take forever to investigate into oblivion. The best way of getting people to tell the truth was to interview them naked and this is still standard military practice to this day.

In 1936 the psychogalvanometer which measured electrical changes on the skin was invented by Walter Summers.

Radio

Radio waves were discovered in 1887 and transmissions in 1895. The valve was patented in 1907 and regular public radio broadcasts occurred from 1921. Transistor radios were invented in 1947 and became available seven years later in 1954.

Electricity

The first alternating current motor (AC) was built in 1888, with alternating current produced for public supply in 1895, courtesy of the Croatian, Nikola Tesla (1856–1943), a man who privately blamed his inventions on aliens. The definition of 'Guru' is 'bringer of light', and since Nikola Tesla brought light to the masses, he is more influential than God, with similar billing rates and line charges.

Moving Camera and Movies

Silent movies were invented in 1895 and movies with sound (talkies) came out in 1929. Many thought it would kill the industry. The first portable movie camera, the Bolex H-16, was in use from 1933 and has been used for intelligence and counter-intelligence ever since. The criminals were also spying on the police and saboteurs were also spying on the military.

Television

The cathode ray tube was invented in 1897 with television demonstrated 29 years later in 1926 by John Logie Baird (not a Freemason) and taken up by the BBC in 1929. This was improved from a 30-line mechanical system (shocking picture quality) to a 240-line mechanical system in 1936, just in time for the first B&W television broadcasts of the Nuremberg Rallies and Hitler's Berlin Olympics.

Hitler, as a Nordic-Anglo-Saxon coloniser, refused to shake hands with a black man (Jesse Owens, 10.3 sec) while a Polish man (Stanislawa Walasiewicz) slipped by the Wolf and won the silver medal for the Women's 100 m sprint.

A rival 405-line system was adopted by the BBC in 1937.

John Logie Baird went further and developed radar and infra-red television called 'Noctovision', which meant that you could also cook on your TV, and cook your family, which is partly why early television was only on for a few hours a day.

As well as screen projection and stereophonic sound, Baird produced 3-D images as early as 1944. Colour television was available from 1953 and in the Colonies some 20 years later in 1973. As far as home entertainment and public brainwashing goes, John Logie Baird (1888–1946) was Mr Big.

Video recorders were invented in 1951 and sold in 1956 for US$50,000 (B&W). At the same time, blank tapes cost US$307. Domestic videos and tapes became available in 1971.

The Freemasons have long been stealing inventions and the previous two centuries were ripe for it. Primarily as warring Nordic-Anglo-Saxon colonisers, they believe that everything great is created by a white colonist, and the Freemasons push this onto the public. So when the brown-blooded homosexual, Leonardo da Vinci (1415–1519), invented the helicopter etc., it was important that he was portrayed as a white heterosexual. This false history was successfully projected for over 480 years.

Other long-standing bluffs are yet to be exposed, but Samuel Colt (Freemason) stole the revolver and Winchester stole the repeating rifle. Winchester improved on Volcanic's repeating rifle, bought out the Volcanic Repeating Arms Company (1857) and created the Winchester Repeating Arms Company 10 years later (1867).

Jewish spies named Singer stole the sewing machine invention (patented 1852) and Richard Gatling, a doctor who never practised, assisted his father in the manufacture of sewing machines. During the American Civil War, Gatling (Freemason) stole a gun (1861–62) and is credited with having invented the crank-operated revolving multi-barrel rapid-fire machine gun, since called the Gatling gun. It was still in use in 1991. Perhaps he learnt something off his father and the Singer spies.

Because much of the Freemason history is assumed, they believe they are from an organisation of greatness and therefore assume it is their right to produce anything great. The Freemasons steal inventions by:

1. Inviting the inventor to become a Freemason.
2. Using a Freemason to reinvent the invention soon after; and
3. Then prove a false history that a Freemason did it first.
4. Assume without citation that the inventor was a Freemason.
5. Purchase backyard inventions off starving inventors never mentioning their name.
6. Kill the inventor on the way to the patent office, or
7. Copy the invention from the patent.

The record of the Mill Valley Lodge is a good example of the gullibility of boring white men who want to be part of something great.

> Mill Valley Record, 19 December 1925: "The New Masonic Temple: All meetings of the Masonic Lodges and of the Mill Valley Chapter of the Order of the Eastern Star are now being held in the remodeled Masonic Temple on Corte Madera Avenue.
>
> "The rooms have been enlarged and equipped with modern accessories. The spacious entrance hall opens off an attractive, small garden spot, next the street. On one side is the dining hall and entertainment room, on the other a thoroughly equipped kitchen. The dining hall has been enlarged and a double floor laid.
>
> "A wide stairway leads to commodious corridors and dressing rooms above and to the temple room. Elegance and simplicity combine to make the lodge room an ideal one for its functions. The floor is carpeted in an emblematic pattern of soft blue and gray. The proportions of the room are impressive and the new system of lighting lends to the atmosphere of the place.

Esrave Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

> "Before every stated meeting Mill Valley lodge holds a get-together dutch treat dinner. At the last dinner there was 80 in attendance and a large crowd is expected at the April affair which is expected to be an Italian dinner. This is quite a novel idea and should be tried out by some of the rest of our Masonic organizations. (Marin Sciots Monthly **B**ol**O**gn**A**, Vol. 1, No. 1, April 1928).
>
> "On September 10, 1928, at the age of 20, Inventor Philo T. Farnsworth, produced the first electronic television at San Francisco, CA, for Crocker Research Laboratories, which was later reorganized as Television Laboratories, Inc., and in May 1929 was renamed Farnsworth Television Inc., of California. Philo Taylor Farnsworth's electronic inventions took all of the moving parts out of televisions and made possible today's TV industry, the TV shots from the moon, and satellite pictures."[2] [all sic]

Philo T. Farnsworth claimed the invention of the television and the US government even issued a stamp with his image on it. But television was invented 19½ months earlier by John Logie Baird and shown to the Royal Institution on 26 January 1926. John Logie Baird even made a trans-Atlantic TV broadcast on 9 February 1928, but still, the US government (run by Freemasons) issued stamps with Philo T. Farnsworth's image crediting him with the invention seven months later.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

John Logie Baird also patented the world's first record and play-back system (the Phonovisor), the world's first fibre-optics, and developed an all-electric 1800-line 3-D television (patented 1944) called Telechrome-colour. This is more advanced than anything we have today.

Realising they had lost the post-WWI movie race, the British government's Hankey Committee (1941) gave the go-ahead to Baird's 3-D television as the British post-war television standard, but two months after the report came out, John Logie Baird died suddenly and his Telechrome mysteriously disappeared.

Immediately after WWII a number of American companies (including RCA) mysteriously patented similar devices. This was enough to scare off most Brits.

Baird was so good, his Field Sequential Colour System was used for the Moon landings. His 3-D Telechrome television wasn't used because it would have revealed the hoax and Russia would have won the moral high ground in the Cold War.

John Logie Baird's 1944 1800-line 3-D Telechrome-colour television would show up all digital hoaxes, so it was not issued to the public.

All those who filmed the 'Moon landings' died within four days of filming – thirteen by car accidents and two by heart attacks. Coincidences are amazing things and history is full of it.

It is common practice in the big stitch-ups to kill those involved and then to kill those who did the killing, with the surviving Freemasons already sworn to secrecy, like the astronauts, Neil Armstrong, John Herschel Glenn Jr., Edwin 'Buzz' Aldrin Jr., Virgil 'Gus' Grissom, Edgar D. Mitchell, Leroy Gordon Cooper, Donn F. Eisele, Fred Wallace Haise Jr., Walter 'Wally' Schirra Jr. and Thomas P. Stafford.

This is what our real history is made of – Freemason stitch-ups followed by Freemason cover-ups.

Sound Recording

Magnetic sound was invented in 1898. Discs for recording sound were invented in 1891, with sound recordings introduced in 1928. Wax discs weren't popular with the public, probably because they could only record once and be listened to once, after which the sound quality diminished exponentially. Wax discs were used to record the sound portion of the sexual practices of political figures of all nationalities in Berlin's Salon Kitty. These were then stored in Russia and the US, and are now worthy of study for historical influence.

The term 'Wax' became slang for its successor, the gramophone record, and 'Wax' is still slang for the raw material used to manufacture vinyl records today.

The first professional tape recorder was available in 1947. Small tape recorders made it to market in 1962, cassette tapes in 1963, 8-Track in 1965 and small chrome tapes from 1969. Digital recorders were available from 1978 and compact discs from 1982. Tapes exceeded vinyl sales in 1984, but you can't 'scratch' a tape.

The First Programmable Computer

Apart from Pascal developing the mechanical computer in the 1600s, the world's first programmable computer, the *Colossus*, was built in 1943 by the post office engineer Tommy Flowers. It contained 1500 valves and was used to decipher German war codes. Ten were built and they broke the German Enigma codes against a probability of 1 in 150 million million million in a matter of hours, sometimes revealing information to the British before the Germans had deciphered it themselves.

---

[2] Mill Valley Lodge website.

The British were aided by the capture of an Enigma transmitting machine and coding documents from the U-110 (U-boat) on 9 May 1941 by the HMS *Bulldog* and the HMS *Aubretia*. The 1500-valve *Colossus* was so successful that when the British Forces invaded France on D-Day, they already knew the location of 60 of the 62 German divisions.

At the end of the war Tommy Flowers was ordered to destroy the machine, smash it up, bury it, and burn all the plans, which he did in 1945. The secret of the machine was kept for another 30 years (1973), thus giving America credit for creating the first computer. The British made the first computer in 1943 from valves and the Americans reinvented programming language in 1954, taking all the credit for the creation of the computer – typical Yanks.

The first silicon chip was created in 1958. The Internet was invented in the 1960s for US military communications and the mouse was invented to aid this in 1969. Both became available to the public in 1988.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

This was just preceded by computer-aided financial charging like EFTPOS (Electronic Funds Transfer at Point of Sale). New Zealand was the test country and New Zealanders were told they were following the rest of the world, then the rest of the world followed New Zealand with Interac Direct Payment, debit cards, Redcompra, Maestro and pinnen.

The first word processor was invented in 1964, the first mini-computer in 1965 and fibre-optic cables from 1966 (first used in computer cables in 1985). The first portable computer was available in 1975 and desktop computers were marketed six years later in 1981 with the mouse, Windows interface and magnetic disks from 1984. The first laptop was flown in the Shuttle in 1983 and available to the public in 1991.

The World Wide Web (www) was invented in 1990 and took off immediately to become the greatest information revolution the world has ever seen – more than the oral history of St Francis of Assisi and the 15th-century language race across Europe.

The www was voted most likely to topple *The Forces of Order* ('ordered disorder') and opened up a Pandora's box of otherwise secret information that would never have been published.

This was counter-actioned with equally compelling misinformation, computer crime, and too much information, most of which was government propaganda from *The Forces of Order*.

The www also made it possible to track the thinking and discovery patterns of the world's most belligerent individuals – and dedicated porn addicts – colonial British High Commissioners among them . . . rhymes with Anthony Blunt, he was named by US Customs as Jonathan Hunt.

Ghosts and GHOST

Ghosts were an incredibly popular form of fear, but lost their footing when mobile phones started to block the airwaves in 1982 – then aliens took over as the primary source of fear. But now we have a new form of ghost that runs hand in hand with 'World Anti-Independence Day'. This began on 4 July 2003 with any government department now allowed to hack into anyone's computer and share that information with any other government department – via 'The Privacy Act'!

There are two computer programs called "GHOST/Ghost". One was developed by a member of the test population at the bottom of the Pacific (New Zealand) and called "GHOST". The other was developed as a cover called "Ghost". GHOST can draw down all information on a computer without the computer realising it has been tapped and can work whether you are offline or online.

As soon as GHOST was developed, one of the New Zealand employees was seconded by the US Government to assist in tapping computers in America. GHOST was bought out by Semantec, the same company which delivers Norton Anti-Virus. If you have a Norton Anti-Virus program, you have GHOST, and all of your computer data can be downloaded and read.

There are some 120,000 people in America working for the US Government solely reading the information on your computer, faxes, emails and listening to your phone calls – so send them something funny. Can you imagine how dull their job might be?

GHOST makes thinking and research a dangerous profession. Part of the *One World Order* is One World Thinking (OWT), and ensuring that no one thinks outside the square.

One of the functions of governments now is placing paedophile images on the computers of thinkers, but this is not an excuse when such images are found on the computers of the police, as they were with the New Zealand Police in November 2004. These were placed on the police computers in order to stop the police charging paedophiles who were in the process of being promoted to the highest governmental positions in New Zealand. To further cover this up the Minister of Police was required to deal 10 kg of Afghan heroin to the police who dealt it to the gangs as part of the deal for promotion. Those gang leaders who refused to deal in the heroin were then attacked by the police.

I saw the results of these attacks first hand and they were very expensive for any gang member who stopped dealing. The police and gangs work hand in glove. The police are the hand and the gangs are the glove. The public perception is the opposite. The police are made up of Freemasons whose motto is ORDER OUT OF CHAOS.

Facial Recognition: Mandrake and Biometrics

The facial recognition programme *Mandrake* was publicly dropped in October 2003, with the announcement that it did not work. It was withdrawn to be forgotten about, probably because it worked so well and was considered a military device. It was continually developed and upgraded in secret and then marketed again after the secret testing process and withdrawal from the market had increased its value. It was capable of distinguishing between a real person and a body double and this proved problematic for higher-end politicians who use body doubles as a cover and as a form of political afterlife.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Sure enough, facial recognition was re-released to the public as *Biometrics* in May 2005. It never went away. Whereas fingerprints are not immediate and check 60–90 points, *Biometrics* instantly records and database-compares 50 points on the face and 240 points on the iris. This occurs from further away than one would think possible – like across the street and two storeys up. It also checks the movements of groups of people as to whether a crime is about to take place. When biometrics was reintroduced, the final shot was of Hitler with the statement "Someone is watching you".[3]

As soon as the Web became a common tool, it also became a common tool for crime. From 2003, computer crime has escalated at a greater rate than any other form of crime. Fishing attacks on computers masquerade as official bank websites and invite the target to log in passwords. Keystroke logers also place the Trojan virus silently at the back of the

---

[3] *Inside New Zealand*, 28 May 2005.

target computer. This activates during telephone banking and passes the logged information back to the Fisher, allowing them to use the passwords to withdraw funds via the target's Internet banking. This gives new meaning to the term 'Fisher King'.

Radio Frequency Identification Device Tags (RFIDT) are now on many purchased products. This is a low-powered tracking device and can be scanned from up to 10 metres away. RFIDT allows the new Tech-Burglars to identify new items in a home without even entering. This gives new meaning to the term 'stealing to order'.

Submarines and Torpedoes

Originally called the 'Intelligent Whale', one of the first submarines ever built was condemned by the US Navy in 1872.[4] The Holland A-1 (1901, USA) was the first real submarine. Powered by diesel electric it carried torpedoes. "By 1904, the 'Automobile' or self-propelled torpedo was erratic and unseaworthy, often proving as great a danger to the ship that launched it as to its intended victim."[5]

By 1904 the world had *intelligent whales* launching *automobiles* – how Jules Verne – but if it was moving, it was good enough for war. The first torpedo war began on 7 February 1904 when Japan attacked Russia without warning in the Manchurian Harbour of Port Arthur. This was the first engine-powered Asian attack against Europeans. Torpedos are now called *tin fish*.

Cars

The internal combustion engine was invented in 1885. Cars were first mass-produced from 1901 and became the first remedy for incest, especially for the slow walkers.

Ernest R. Godward (1869–1936) invented mechanical hedge cutters (from bicycle parts), the posthole borer, burglar-proof windows, a padded draught protector for doors, the hand-rotated egg beater (1900), some power tools, a hair curler and the spiral hairpin. His home was a veritable *Chitty Chitty Bang Bang* of inventive clutter.

His most lucrative invention, the spiral hairpin, came about by accident. His wife's hairpins used to fall out in bed and irriate him. Being a bit of an arrogant shit,[6] he would screw them up and throw them against the wall. Mrs Godward would then straighten them out. Noticing that they sat in her hair better, he (32) took out a patent (1901), went to America, set up his Koy-Lo Hairpin Companies at 280 Broadway, New York, and made a fortune.

---

[4] *Visions of Infamy*, p. 6.

[5] Ibid, p. 2.

[6] These were the author's great-grandparents.

For the decade from 1901, Ernest Godward employed the near destitute and penniless 65-year-old Freemason Samuel L. Clemens (Mark Twain) as his vice president until Clemens (75) died. 280 Broadway, New York was no doubt the address from which *Tom Sawyer* and *Huckleberry Finn* were read time and again. Authors write their own life and Mark Twain never had to do another hard day's work.

Samuel Clemens had lost his money by acting on his own words, "Invest in land. They aren't making any more of it." When Samuel Clemens died in 1910, Ernest Godward sold the 'American only' rights to the spiral hairpin for £20,000 (now around $20 million).

During his time in America (1901–10) Godward invented the Petrol Economiser, the forerunner to the carburettor. This vaporised fuel and meant that engines could run on petrol, diesel, meths, turps or bootleg liquor using a third of standard fuel consumption . . . and they were more powerful.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 Ma

He tried to sell the Petrol Economiser to British public transport, but they weren't interested so Godward got an engineering degree and sold it to the American military (1929) who fitted it to all of their military vehicles. This increased the length of their supply lines while keeping the military sober.

Not long after, the Petrol Economiser was fitted by most car and bus manufacturers and Ernest formed Godward Gas Generator Inc. in New York to fulfil demand. British public transport then followed . . . "If it's good enough for them, it's good enough for us."

By 1931 Ernest Godward was the foremost authority on the combustion engine. He was one of the lucky ones. He proved himself again and again. He (66) eventually died in a skipping competition on an ocean liner. He had ten children, but where is the money? That's the problem with independence. Ernest Godward gave the slow walkers a cheaper option to incest, but incest is highly protected by the *Forces of Order*.

Show me the money. No one in the family can find it.

Penicillin

Dr Morell produced quack pills like 'vitamin chocolate', 'Russian lice powder' and 'Ultraseptyl' for sore throats. When Dr Karl Brandt, Hitler's real German doctor, told Dr Morell about penicillin, Morell thought he meant 'phenacetin'. Morell then got 100,000 marks from Hitler to make penicillin and Hitler got sterile cane sugar for his money. When questioned by the Americans after WWII, Dr Morell said that he had invented penicillin and the British secret service had stolen it off him. This may seem ludicrous, but it is worth looking at.

Up to 1950 inventions were regularly stolen, with the true inventor discredited, gone missing, or terminated, and the credit going to a 'deserving' person, usually a Britisher and usually a Freemason. It was common practice in Britain to disregard backyard inventors and backyard discoveries, steal their inventions and give them no credit.

Penicillin comes from mould, something a quack could discover. It was officially discovered in 1928 by Alexander Fleming. For this, Alexander Fleming received the Nobel Prize in 1945, the same time Dr Morell was captured and claiming to have discovered it.

Sir Alexander Fleming (1881–1955) was the opposite character to Dr Theodor Morell, and was someone Morell could have wished he was – "I wish I were someone else". Alexander Fleming was a bacteriologist from southwest Scotland. He served in WWI and then as a professor at St Mary's Hospital in London from 1919. Fleming was the first to use antityphoid vaccines on humans, pioneered the use of Salvarsan for syphilis (something Morell had access to from 1936) and discovered the antiseptic powers of lysozyme. In 1928 he discovered penicillin, was elected to the Royal Society in 1943, knighted in 1944 and received the Nobel Prize in 1945.

Although penicillin was discovered in 1928 and characterised in 1934, it was not used in the war until 1944. The war was about killing, not about saving lives.

Alexander Fleming was the kind of doctor the British wanted to keep away from Hitler. Morell was the kind of doctor the British wanted for Hitler. Morell was an actor in a play who believed his own superstitions. As such, he was the perfect companion for Hitler. Both kept each other from approaching reality and both were borderline personalities.

Alexander Fleming served in WWI and invented many things particularly useful for war – typhoid vaccine, syphilis treatment, antiseptic and penicillin. Penicillin was first characterised by Howard Florey (Australian) and Ernst Chain (German) in 1934. Alexander Fleming and Howard Florey were knighted in 1944. All three received the Nobel Prize (1945). It took another 26 years for things to cool down and the German Ernst Chain was knighted in 1970.

I have seen inventions and the authorship of books taken off people and it has done much to destroy them. They do tend to become a shadow of their former selves, and under alcohol, legends in their own lunchtimes . . . but it is more common for borderline personalities to claim the news as their own, thus substantiating their own delusions.

But then again, inventors are accidental creatures, prone to accidents.

Helicopters

Helicopters were first mooted by the brown-blooded homosexual Leonardo da Vinci in the 15th century, who was portrayed as a white heterosexual for the next five centuries. Half a millennium later, the Spaniard Juan de la Cierva (1985–1936) developed the autogiro, first flown on 9 January 1923. This has a propeller in the front like a single-engine plane and a helicopter-like propeller on the roof. It flew like a plane, could not take off vertically, but could land like a helicopter. These were still flying in the 1940s.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Helicopters were first flown in Germany in January 1938 by the inventor Igor Sikorsky. The pitch-adjustable blades could be adjusted to provide lift and/or forward motion.

Hanna Reitsch was the first to fly a helicopter indoors. She flew a Focke-Wulf Fw 61 in the Deutschland Hall in Berlin in February 1938. This was one of the few cases where reality preceded the movies by 50 years.

Microwaves

Spymaster: “The earliest people I know in possession of microwaves were the Russians. This was discovered in 1939 and 1940 when the Germans got access to Russian Embassies in Poland and the low countries. The Germans were desperate to get into the Russian Embassies as they were looking for coding equipment and any information to go with it. What they found were small rooms containing bits and pieces of body parts.

“These were believed to have been special vaporising rooms. The

entire rooms were microwave ovens and used to obliterate corpses. Smersh and the GRU’s standard method was to neck-shot their subject first.

“An ancient Czech agent told me that we would see the Smersh men going out with little paper bags and dump the contents off bridges. We assumed at first that it was sandwiches made by the local Intelligence Officer’s wife and nobody wanted to tell her that her culinary skills weren’t up to scratch. It was only after the Germans gained access to the Russian Embassies that they realised it was all about ‘heavenly transport’.”

“When the Americans stole the microwave and found different uses for it, the Russians were quite indignant.

“The typical money-hungry American swine have stolen our idea. Just because they spotted a commercial use for it and didn’t categorise it as being solely a method for state termination, they generalised its use and then obtained a patent for it.’”

Microwaves are a form of electromagnetic radiation that occurs when electric current flows through a conductor. The microwave was officially invented by Dr Percy Spencer, a self-taught engineer with the Raytheon Corporation who was working on a radar-related project. Dr Spencer noticed that food cooked around the new vacuum tube he was testing. Yeah Right!

Patented in 1946, the first microwaves, the ‘Radarange’, were 1.5 m (5’6”) tall, weighed 340 kg (750 lbs) and cost US$2,500. Nevertheless they were immediately accepted in certain industrial applications, like drying potato chips, defrosting, precooking, and tempering meat. Dr Percy Spencer was titled Dr Percy LaBaron Spencer and inducted into the Inventors Hall of Fame on 18 September 1999.[7]

Space

The first multi-staged rocket was launched in the United States in 1949 and then leaked to Russians via the United Nations. The first Russian satellite shot its bolt in 1957. The first US satellite went into orbit in 1958 and thereafter space was militarised. Satellite phone calls started in 1960, with the first TV satellite coverage from 1962 and the first satellite broadcasts from 1980.

The first Russian travelled in space in 1961 and walked in the thinnest of air in 1965. In the great Russo-American propaganda war, the first Russian unmanned space craft was claimed to have landed

[7] Invention Dimension at the Lemelson-MIT Awards Program.

on the Moon in 1966. The Russians were never so foolish as to claim to have landed a man on the Moon, citing too much radiation and no atmosphere to block it. The first American space traveller claimed to have docked in 1966 and they went on to claim six highly controversial Moon landings from 1969–72.

Regardless of the truth of the matter, this was the height of the Cold War and Cold War propaganda. The claim served America well, but has never been repeated, not in 34 years.

The Space Shuttle first travelled in space in 1977. The Space Shuttle *Challenger* exploded in 1986 and the Space Shuttle *Columbia*, launched in 1981, exploded in 2003. The most successful space mission was the Hubble Space Telescope which was launched into orbit in 1990. It brought back the best *real* information, but was decommissioned in 2004 after it had rewritten the formation of planets.

Birth Control

The contraceptive pill came onto the market in 1960. The first test-tube baby was born in 1978 and "Dolly" the sheep was cloned in 1997 (d. 2003). The first *official* cloning of a human cell occurred in February 2004.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Hitler's Moustache

I feel compelled here to mention the invention of one of the 20th century's most visible foibles – Hitler's ever-diminishing moustache.

Bridget Hitler: "When Adolf [23] had come to visit us in Liverpool [November 1912] his moustache had been of the handlebar type, rather full and soft. Long before that I had persuaded Alois [30] to cut off the waxed points of his 'à la Kaiser'. When Adolf came, I set to work on him too and succeeded in getting him to trim it. Now [1923] I see that it had decreased still more, almost to a ridiculous degree. Alois's moustache had grown narrower too when I saw him in Monte Carlo. I had started them in the right direction, but Adolf had gone too far."[8]

When Adolf arrived in Liverpool in November 1912, he had a waxed handlebar moustache in the style of the Kaiser. When he left six months later in April 1913, it was a standard-length moustache, but by 8 November 1923 (34), it had been reduced to a ridiculous state and served as a symbolic reaction against the Kaiser's waxed handlebar moustache.

The short moustache also served to cover Hitler's unfeasibly large nostrils, something not all of his five doppelgängers shared. It also linked him with Charlie Chaplin in the West. This constantly put him in the funny pages and served to play down his threat to America.

Adolf Hitler: "My moustache is political." It was more likely the best doppelgänger tool never to be repeated.

Both Hitler and Chaplin studied under comedians, but only one took themself seriously. The English-American Sir Charles Spencer Chaplin mocked Hitler ruthlessly.

As Hitler became more confident, and more outrageously gay with his faggotty hand-flop wave, the Third Reich was nicknamed "The Gay Reich" and with good reason. Hitler's moustache became narrower, rounder and thicker, until it looked like a lower orifice. Hitler's moustache became so distinctive it allowed his less convincing doppelgängers to be completely accepted. Common thinking went, 'There's the moustache with dark flop fringe on a 5'9" body. It must be Hitler.'

Some of Hitler's doppelgängers were not that convincing and it was the moustache that carried them through. Three-quarters of all Hitler photos are of doppelgängers. The more doppelgängers Hitler used, the more difficult it became to ascertain which was the real Hitler. To date, no historian has risen to the challenge.

From Invention to Mass Use

The Camera had a 14-year delay from invention to production. It took another 60 years to become hand-held, another 18 years to get on the market, another 13 years to be miniaturised, and another 60 years to go digital. The Camera is the most influential invention in world history.

The Fax had a 20-year delay before going commercial, a 41-year delay before transmitting photographs, and a 140-year delay before it became quick enough for human patience.

The Telephone took 51 years to go trans-Atlantic.

Transistor Radios and Calculators had a 7-year delay before they reached the market.

Electricity (AC) took 11 years to reach the market.

Movie Cameras took 4 years to reach the market.

Television had a 10-year delay before it reached the market; 62 years later, we still haven't got 1800-line 3-D Telechrome-colour television.

---

[8] *The Memoirs of Bridget Hitler*, p. 44.

Videos took 20 years to reach mainstream.

Magnetic Tapes took 64 years to become popular.

Computers took 21 years to reach the market.

Cars took 16 years from the invention of the internal combustion engine to mass production.

Penicillin took 16 years from discovery (1928) to mass use (1944). Many died in extreme agony during the 16 years between.

It took 11 years to move from multi-staged rockets to landing on the Moon. In the light of Cold War propaganda and the Apollo's computers being less powerful than a home PC, men landing on the Moon is still debateable, with less than half the population believing it.[9]

The Internet took 19 years to reach the public and in between was used by the military.

The www took no time at all and grew organically out of a desire for knowledge and synapsis.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

---

[9] *The Oxford English Reference Dictionary*, 1996, pp. 1720–21 and the Web under Camera, Car and Electrical History.

Appendix 2

The Fluoride Con

One of the by-products of the manufacture of aluminium WWII planes was fluoride, which is difficult to dispose of. The addition of fluoride to the water was first proposed on 29 September 1939 by Gerald J. Cox Ph.D. of the Mellon Institute. His job was to find uses for industrial by-products. In a PR speech built on something that didn't exist, he said, "The present trend towards complete removal of fluorine from water and food may need some reversal . . . it may help with tooth decay."

There was never a trend towards the removal of fluorine out of food or water at the time. It was not even an issue. Fluoride does nothing for tooth decay; however, it does increase infant mortalities by 36% after five years.

The fluoridation of water was a complete fabrication from start to finish. However, the Germans were building huge numbers of planes and openly tested the fluoride by-product on Jews and found it made them more manageable, reducing their powers of lateral thinking. This made it more difficult for the Jews to link events with larger-scale ideas.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

This is why fluoride is still used today – for population compliance. Fluoride, like religion and TV, is an opiate of the masses.

Germany, France, Holland and Japan are some of the few countries without fluoridated water. In Germany it is illegal to put any product in the water. Germans refused fluoridated water for its post-war population, arguing that Adolf Hitler used it mixed it with the water to dumb down populations, thus making it easier to conquer nations.

The Japanese culled out all their lateral thinkers 2000 years ago and the Chinese 50 years ago. Germany, on the other hand, culled out its nutters under Hitler.

New Zealand is a country where the practice of lateral thinking is seriously frowned upon, has restricted media time, if any, and is outlawed wherever possible and by whatever means available. As such, New Zealand was one of the first countries to supply fluoridated water (1950), well before the tests were complete.

Rather than culling out its nutters, foreign powers have been filming Kiwi nutters having ‘sex they shouldn’t be having’ and then elevating them to the highest political positions, up to, and including, Prime Minister.

This scenario has been so successful few Prime Ministers have escaped this sure thing. First they are given fluoride, then they are malleable, then they are filmed having sex and then they are malleable in politics. Once malleable in politics, they are elevated into positions of influence.

Hitler had metal teeth surrounded with porcelain, was a noted and filmed coprophiliac and was then placed in roles where the position accelerated his status. Hitler was the perfect role model for this scenario.

The fluoride in toothpaste is sodium fluoride – a byproduct of aluminum production. It is not a good thing.

Fluoride can be good for your teeth, but it has to be naturally occurring calcium fluoride. There is a region in Denmark where this occurs naturally and the locals have good strong teeth.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Appendix 3

Not Without American Help

The Germans were able to fight WWII through the use of synthetic fuels that were created by the hydrogenation process (turning coal into gasoline). This process was discovered by I.G. Farben. Hydrogenation technology would not have been fully developed by WWII, but I.G. Farben made a deal with Rockefeller's Standard Oil, who were able to complete the research, thus facilitating the war. I.G. Farben plants were not targeted by the Allied bombing raids on Germany and by the end of the war their refineries had experienced only 15% damage. They were not strategically removed.

William Dodd, the American ambassador to Germany prior to WWII, wrote to President Roosevelt: "At the present moment, more than a hundred American corporations have subsidiaries here or cooperative understandings. The DuPonts have their allies in Germany that are aiding in the armament business. Their chief ally is the I.G. Farben Company . . . Standard Oil Company . . . sent $2,000,000 here in December, 1933 and has made $500,000 a year helping Germans improve hydrogenation technology . . . The International Harvester Company president told me their business here rose 33% per year, but they could take nothing out. [No earnings, just goods]. Even our airplanes people have secret arrangements with Krupps. General Motors Company [which was controlled by the J.P. Morgan Group] and Ford do enormous business here through their subsidiaries and take no profits out."

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Germany needed the capital of these, and many more, American companies in order to wage a war. I.G. Farben had a holding company in the United States called American I.G. Farben. Paul Warburg, his brother Max (head of Germany's secret police during WWI) and Warburg agent Herman Metz were some of the members of the board of directors of the American I.G. Farben. Other directors included Rockefeller/International banking men like Edsel Ford, Charles Mitchell and Walter Teagle.

After the war three Germans from the I.G. Farben board of governors were convicted as war criminals, but the aforementioned Americans were not, even though they participated in the same criminal decisions as those who were punished.

According to author Eustice Mullins, Hitler met with Allen and John Foster Dulles in 1933. The Dulles brothers were acting as legal representatives of Schiff and Warburg's Kuhn, Loeb & Co, which was an Integral part of the Rothschilds network. Mullins claims Kuhn & Loeb had extended large short-term credits to Germany, and needed to ensure the repayment of these loans. The Dulles supposedly assured Hitler he would receive the funds necessary to be installed as Chancellor of Germany if he promised to repay the debts. One of the largest tank manufacturers for Germany was Opel, which was controlled by the J.P. Morgan Group. Another company connected to the J.P. Morgan Group was Bendix Aviation, "which supplied data [to Germany] on automatic pilots, aircraft instruments and aircraft and diesel engine starters". The examples go on and on . . .

The manufactured Pearl Harbor attack allowed Roosevelt to enter America into the war. A second world war had been created by the Illuminati, with the help of the Rothschild/Morgan/Warburg/Schiff syndicate. According to historian Antony C. Sutton, after the end of the war, the tribunals that investigated Nazi war criminals censored "any materials recording Western assistance to Hitler".

> The source of this Appendix (slightly paraphrased) is 'Financial Wizards & Wealthy Cults: The Rothschild Bloodline' website. For this section of their website they refer to: Frederic Morton, *The Rothschilds: A Family Portrait*, Collier Books, New York, 1991; William Still, *New World Order*, Huntington House Publishers, Lafayette, Louisiana, 1990; Antony C. Sutton, *America's Secret Establishment: An Introduction to the Order of Skull and Bones*, Liberty House Press, 1986; Eustace Mullins, *The World Order*, CPA Book Publisher, 1985; A. Ralph Epperson, *The Unseen Hand*, Publius Press, Tucson, Arizona, 1985; Anthony Sampson, *The Money Lenders*, Penguin Books, New York, 1983; Virginia Cowles, *The Rothschilds: A Family Fortune*, Alfred A Knopf Inc, New York, 1973; and Joseph Wechsberg, *The Merchant Bankers*, Pocket Books, New York, 1968.

Appendix 4

Spreading the Blame

New Zealand is a listening post so it is interesting that what happens in the eroding Western society at the bottom of the South Pacific is, more often than not, the test case for the rest of the world. New Zealanders are a population that is constantly being experimented on, first. Hence they are internationally compared to sheep and by the marketeers as 'sheoples'.

New Zealand is the test case for resistance to dehumanisation. It is also the test case to see if covers are to be blown – that is, the believability of conspiracies are tested on New Zealanders via the media, which is why reference to first-screened New Zealand media is so important. Occasionally the programme (whether print media or television) gets it glaringly wrong and the media programme is swiftly changed for the rest of the world.

On 5 December 2003 in a High Court hearing, I asked the High Court judge and the lawyer for the discredited New Zealand police if they were Freemasons. Both said "No" which is what they are trained to do. Regardless, it did have some impact and the Freemasons began opening their doors on 11 September 2004.

Word leaked out that Hitler was a British agent and the Freemasons were about to be exposed for having created WWI and WWII. In response to this, they flung their doors open even wider and began targeting lonely non-thinking groups unable to fight back. The Freemasons are opening their doors to share the blame with geriatrics as this paid advertisement in *The New Zealand Herald* illustrates (Friday 12 November 2004).

Freemasons, New Zealand
Working for the good of all

> 'The understanding of ageing and the health of older people has been substantially advanced through the support of the Freemasons.'
>
> Over the last 15 years the Freemasons have been instrumental in advancing research, education, training and health policy aimed at improving the health and well being of older people. Their vision, generous support and financial assistance has made a huge difference to New Zealanders, but the work is of relevance to ageing populations all around the world."
>
> (Professor Craig Anderson, Professor of Gerontology, University of Auckland)
>
> In 1990, to mark the centennial of the Grand Lodge of New Zealand, the Professorial Chair of Geriatric Medicine (now Gerontology) was endowed to the University of Auckland through a $2 million capital fund [he was placed there with a $2 million backing bribe]. An enormous amount of new scientific knowledge has since been gained through the array of world-leading research undertaken by Professor Anderson, his staff and students and their predecessors.
>
> Areas of study have included the causes and treatments of stroke, heart disease, dementia and disability, as well as new methods of rehabilitation, health service provision, and ways of improving lifestyle.
>
> In an age of increasing numbers of older people in the community, research into ageing (gerontology) and health care provision for older people (geriatric medicine) are key components of academic institutions and the health care system.
>
> This week representatives of 12,500 New Zealand Freemasons gather in Auckland for their biennial conference and to install their new Grand Master, Mr David Mace, well-known Auckland businessman and community leader. They will celebrate their traditions and plan for the future, upholding their strong values and supporting the whole community, the young as well as the older.
>
> Interested in Freemasonry? 'Freemasons' are in your phone book or visit www.freemasons.co.nz.

This is the first time the Freemasons have opened their doors to the inauguration of a Grand Pooh-Bah. No doubt the police and legal fraternity will be there in abundance.

Appendix 5

Doppelgänger Hess's Murder

The Affidavit of Hess's Nurse Abdallah Melaouhi

TO: The Service Registering Officer for North West Europe

In the Matter of the Births, Deaths and Marriages (Special Provisions) Act 1957 AND in the Matter of the Entry in the Register of Deaths of RUDOLF WALTHER RICHARD HESS

I, ABDALLAH MELAOUHI . . . do solemnly and sincerely declare as follows:

1. I worked as a male nurse caring for Rudolf Hess from 1 August 1982 until his death on 17 August 1987 at the Allied Military Prison in Spandau. From 1967 to 1970 I trained as a technical medical assistant in tropical diseases at the Institute of Tropical Medicine in Hamburg. From 1970, I continued my training as a qualified male nurse until 1973 when I received a Diploma Certificate in Nursing. In 1974 I moved to Berlin and worked at Hohengatow Hospital in the intensive care unit until 1976. I then attended the specialist medical school, Gauschule, Wedding, at the recommendation of the Department of Health at the Berlin Senate until 1977 and upon completing that training I received a Diploma in anaesthesia and the intensive care of sick people.

I was then promoted to Superior Male Nurse and went to work at Spandau Hospital (Krankenhaus, Spandau) in the intensive care unit until 1st August 1982 when I went to work in the Allied Military Prison in Spandau as Male Nurse for Rudolf Hess.

2. On the day of Mr Hess' death, 17 August 1987, I commenced my duties, which involved caring for Mr Hess, as usual at 6.45 a.m. I assisted him, as was usual, with showering and dressing, and was present when he ate a meal at 10.30 a.m. At no time did he give any indication that his state of mind was disturbed or that he was unduly depressed. Shortly after the meal, he asked me to go to the nearby town of Spandau to purchase a ceramic pot to replace one which was defective. Mr Hess would not have made such a request merely to ensure my absence, since I was always absent in any event from midday, during my noon pause.

3. At 2 p.m. I was called to the prison from my flat which was located outside, but in the immediate vicinity of, the prison (to which I had gone on my return from the town of Spandau). After some delay I reached the summerhouse in the prison garden where I was told that there had been an incident. The small door at the front of the summerhouse was closed.

4. When I entered the summerhouse, the scene was like a wrestling match had taken place; the entire place was in confusion. The straw tiled mat which covered the floor was in disarray, although only the day before I had cleaned the floor and had left the straw tiled mat carefully arranged in its usual place. A tall lamp had fallen over, but I clearly remember that the cable attached to the lamp was still connected to the main socket. It was this lamp cable which the authorities later said that Mr Hess had used to hang himself. A round table and Mr Hess's armchair had also been overturned. In summary, none of the furniture or equipment was in its usual place, and there is no question in my mind but that a struggle had taken place in the summerhouse.

5. The body of Mr Hess was lying on the floor of the summerhouse, apparently lifeless. Near to his body stood two soldiers dressed in US Army uniforms. I had never seen either soldier before. I also saw an American guard, whom I knew as a Mr Tony Jordan. There was no cable anywhere near the body of Mr Hess; as I have said, the only cable was attached to the fallen lamp which was still plugged into the wall.

6. I immediately proceeded to examine Mr Hess. I could not detect any respiration, pulse or heartbeat. I estimated that death had occurred 30 to 40 minutes earlier.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

7. The guard whom I knew as Jordan stood near Mr Hess's feet and appeared overwrought. He was sweating heavily, his shirt was saturated with sweat and he was not wearing a tie. I said to Jordan: "what have you done with him?" He replied: "The pig is finished, you won't have to work a night shift any longer". I told him to bring the emergency case (which contained a first aid kit) and the oxygen appliance, while I commenced artificial respiration. When Jordan returned with the equipment, I noticed that he had first taken the opportunity to change his clothes. The equipment which he brought had clearly been interfered with. The seal on the emergency case had been broken open and its contents were in a state of disorder. The intubation instrument set had no battery and the tube was perforated. Further, the oxygen appliance had no oxygen in it. Yet when I had checked the emergency case and the oxygen appliance that same morning, as part of my normal duties, I am certain that both had been in full working order.

8. Since I did not have any of the necessary equipment I did the best I could which was to perform mouth to mouth resuscitation on Mr Hess and I asked one of the soldiers in American uniform to conduct a heart massage on him. This was at approximately 3.20 pm. These efforts had no discernable effect.

9. A doctor and a medical orderly whom I did not recognise arrived from the English Military Hospital in an ambulance. They brought a heart-lung machine into the summerhouse. I tried to operate the machine but it did not appear to function. Mr Hess was taken to hospital. I accompanied him and made further unsuccessful attempts to resuscitate him in the ambulance. There were final unsuccessful attempts to resuscitate him by the doctors at the hospital. He was pronounced dead at the hospital at 16.10 hours.

10. During the five years in which I daily cared for Mr Hess, I was able to obtain a clear and accurate impression of his physical capabilities. I do not consider, given his physical condition, that it would have been possible for Mr Hess to have committed suicide in the manner later published by the Allied powers. He had neither the strength nor the mobility to place an electric flex around his neck, knot it and either hang or strangle himself. Mr Hess was so weak that he needed a special chair to help him stand up. He walked bent over with a cane and was almost blind. If ever he fell to the ground he could not get up again. Most significantly, his hands were crippled with arthritis; he was not able, for example, to tie his shoelaces. I consider that he was incapable of the degree of manual dexterity necessary to manipulate the electric flex as suggested. Further, he was not capable of lifting his arms above his shoulders; it is therefore in my view not possible that he was able to attach the electric flex to the window catch from which he is alleged to have suspended himself.

11. Having regard to first Mr Hess' physical condition; second, the scene which I discovered in the summerhouse, in particular the location of the electric flex; and third, the surrounding circumstances as I have described them, I am firmly of the view that Mr Hess could not possibly have committed suicide as has been claimed. In my view, it is clear that he met his death by strangulation [1:30 pm], at the hands of a third party.

Declared before me at: [handwritten "Berlin"]
Signature of Declarant: [signature of Abdallah Melaouhi]

on: [handwritten] 17.2.1994

Qualification of person or officer taking the declaration:

Reinhard Gizinski, Notary Public, Berlin.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Appendix 6

The Bank of England Heist

During the Battle of Waterloo fought in Belgium, Napoleon appeared to be winning. The first military report to London communicated this on 18 June 1815. However, when the Prussians sent reinforcements, the tide turned in favour of Britain's Wellington. On 20 June 1815 Nathan Mayer Rothschild (1777–1836) received news in London, first by carrier pigeons and then by a fast boat trip, that Napoleon was being beaten. He informed the Government, (perhaps in a give or take manner) and they refused to believe him.

Nathan Mayer Rothschild took advantage of this and sold his stock. Everyone followed suit and this caused a crash on the English stock market. As it bottomed out, Nathan bought all the stock back at rock-bottom prices. The next day, at 11 pm, Britain's War Office 'discovered' Napoleon had lost a third of his men and had indeed been crushed. On 20–21 June 1815, the Rothschild family gained complete control of the British economy and forced England to set up a new Bank of England, which Nathan controlled outright. By 1815 Nathan Mayer Rothschild became the Bank of England, becoming Nathan Mayer, Baron de Rothschild.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Two years later in 1817 France secured loans through government bonds from two opposing banks, a French banking house in Ouvrard and Baring Brothers in London. In October 1818, the Rothschild agents (some of them illegitimate Rothschilds) began buying huge amounts of French government bonds. This increased their value. On 5 November 1818 these were dumped on the open market creating a financial panic as their value declined. This meant the opposing banks, and France itself, no longer had security for their loans and Rothschilds gained complete control of France's finances.

Nathan Mayer Rothschild then became Britain's first Jewish MP. During his 15 years as MP until he died in office, he accomplished absolutely nothing in Parliament. He maintained the position merely for the power, insight and influence. He was a Freemason, Illuminati, and hard man. During his life he profited hugely from war.

After his father's death (in 1836 or 1850) his son, Lionel Nathan, Baron de Rothschild (1808–79) monopolised the family. In 1838, emulating his father, he said, “Permit me to issue and control the money of a nation, and I care not who makes its laws”. He monopolised large international loans creating the Irish famine (1845–50) followed by the Crimean War (1853–56) which set up the Rothschild’s financially. Lionel Nathan was elected to the House of Commons in 1847, but did not assume the position for another 11 years taking the parliamentary oath in a strictly Jewish manner on the auspicious Golden Dawn coven date of 26 July 1858 – interpreted as “one infinite hidden occult forever, from birth to the promise of heaven and death for the populace”.

American and British Intelligence have documented evidence that the House of Rothschild (and other International Bankers) have financed both sides of every war since the American War of Independence (1775–83). One Rothschild agent, Haym Salomon, supported the British patriots during the War of Independence and later made loans to the American presidents from 1801–25 (Thomas Jefferson, James Madison and James Monroe). During the Napoleonic Wars (1800–15) one branch of the family funded France while another financed Great Britain and Germany.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

In order to feed their habit of profit from war, the Rothschilds had illegitimate children which they used as agents for either war or money-lending. This was so for Abe Lincoln (A. A. Springs’ son); Adolf Hitler (Lionel Nathan Rothschild’s grandson); and Bill ‘Slick Willie/Bubba/Elvis/Eagle/The Big Dog/Rockefeller Clinton (Winthrop ‘Win’ Rockefeller’s son/Winthrop Paul Rockefeller’s brother).

As a family working the banks around Europe, the Rothschild’s developed a scam of trusted rescuer and kept this going so that investors had to be rescued, repeatedly. This gave them financial control over Europe, much of America and complete financial control over Israel, now their primary agent of war.

By 1913, the Rothschild’s controlled a fortune well over US$300 million. By the time of railroads, coal, ironworks, the Suez Canal, oil exploration, diamonds, the French African empire, the Hapsburg monarchs and the Vatican bankruptcy (1823) their family fortune was over US$2,000 million. This was a family that could buy countries, the Courts, history and silence. The Vatican has remained financially and morally bankrupt ever since – similarly the British monarchy.

Appendix 7

Smersh

Smersh was a contraction of ‘Smyert Shpionam’ and roughly meant “Death to Spies”. It was so powerful and feared that no sane man dared mention its name. With headquarters at 13 Sretenka Ulitsa, Moscow, its earliest operation was the assassination of the Mafia/Russian leader Leon Trotsky (Lev Davidovich Bronstein, b. 1879) on 22 August 1940.

After this successful operation, Smersh specialised in killing cowards (treachery) and double agents during the Soviet retreat from Hitler (from 1941) and was used as an execution squad for the NKVD, the forerunner of the KGB.

Smersh were also supposed to have killed the Russian agent/ Martin Bormann doppelgänger in April 1945. The firing squad were all then shot by someone else. Within days a group of British officers were car bombed outside Palestine’s Lod airfield. One of these was Wing Commander Lindsay who had recently been behind German lines and was privy to sensitive information on the leadership challenges within the Third Reich. Smersh and the Betar worked hand in glove on this and it was organised by Joseph Stalin.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Khruschev disbanded Smersh in 1958. It then became Department V (Sabotage and Assassinations). Many KGB *Department V* officers made their way into Canada via the 1967 Montreal Expo and thereafter made their way into the United Nations . . . who turned a blind eye to it.

Nikolai Semenovich Skvortsov (Smersh) was expelled from Canada for espionage in 1949 and was immediately employed by the United Nations in New York.

In 1971, the United Nations Secretariat in New York employed 207 Soviet nationals of which at least 120 were KGB.

On 24 September 1971, 105 Soviet intelligence officers were expelled from the UN for subverting public officials and stealing technological data. Breshnev then ordered all other *Department V* personnel to leave their stations in Europe, Asia, Africa and the West, thus exposing them.

In October 1971, Vladimir Pavlichenko, the Director of External

Relations for the United Nations Public Information Office, was exposed as a senior KGB officer by the *New York Times*. Two days later the United Nations renewed Vladimir's contract for another two years.[1]

Mikhail Mikhailovich Antipov (*Department V*) was the first secretary of the Soviet mission to the United Nations. He had been involved in sabotage and assassinations since 1952 and operated out of the United Nations under diplomatic immunity for 12 years until 1972.

When you hear the words "The United Nations said . . ." hear "Communism and the NKVD/KGB/FSB said . . ."

The difference between the KGB vehicle and the United Nations vehicle is that the United Nations is the new model – it just has better suspension, but like the East German car, the Trabant, everything is backwards and designed to slow progress and disrupt forward-thinking, any forward-thinking ideologies, any foreign industry and any foreign family model that works.

Through intelligence eyes, the UN and the Red Cross are:
". . . the biggest bunch of intelligence sluts the world has ever seen".

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

---

[1] *KGB*, pp. 18–19.

Appendix 8

Hugh Trevor-Roper

Baron Dacre of Glanton

Hugh Redwald Trevor-Roper (15 January 1914–26 January 2003) graduated from Christ College, Oxford in 1936 (22) and in 1939 qualified for the master's degree as a research fellow at Merton College. At the age of 26, he wrote *Archbishop Laud* (1940). As a religious author with soft hands and no field experience, Hugh Trevor-Roper (31) was then sent to Berlin to investigate the authenticity of Hitler's death.

Trevor-Roper then wrote *The Last Days of Hitler* (1947), *The Gentry*, 1540–1640 (1953), *The Rise of Christian Europe* (1966), *The European Witch-Craze of the 16th and 17th Centuries* (1969), *Final Entries, 1945: The Diaries of Joseph Goebbels* (1978), *Catholics, Anglicans and Puritans* (1987) and *From Counter Reformation to Glorious Revolution* (1992).

Hugh Trevor-Roper was made the Regius Professor of modern history (1957–80) and Master of Peterhouse College, Cambridge (1980–87), during which time he authenticated some 60 volumes of the *Hitler Diaries* which covered Hitler's innermost thoughts from June 1932 to April 1945.

These were fake, fraudulent and another very well funded attempt to disguise the true events of WWII. The *Hitler Diaries* were discovered in

1980 by journalist Gerd Heidemann of the German Stern newsmagazine who paid £2,460,000 for the 60 bogus volumes, around £50 per word. Stern published them on 25 April 1983 and they were simultaneously published by *The Sunday Times* in Britain and sold to *Newsweek* (US).

Konrad Kujau (46, also known as Konrad Fischer) had told Stern journalist Gerd Heidemann that he was receiving the volumes from an East German general who had retrieved them from a German aircraft that had crashed in the village of Börnersdorf near Dresden in 1945, after it had left Berlin.

On Adolf Hitler's posthumous behalf, Konrad Kujau had previously written poems, a sequel to *Mein Kampf* and the beginnings of the opera Wieland the Blacksmith (Wieland der Schmied). Gerd Heidemann (54), a Third Reich aficionado, used his money from the deal to buy Hermann Goering's yacht.

Historian David Irving obtained copies of the *Hitler Diaries* in December 1982, and concluded a few days later that they were fake.

Regius Professor of modern history, Hugh Redwald Trevor-Roper, then Lord Dacre of Glanton, had been hoodwinked. He claims to have expressed serious doubts the day before it was to be published and phoned *The Times* editor Charles Douglas-Home on Saturday 24 April 1983 (not *The Sunday Times*) and his message did not get through to the correct newspaper. His endorsement and his failure to communicate effectively when it really counted darkened his reputation and brought much of his previous historical work into question. The West German Federal Archives then declared the diaries to be "grotesque and superficial forgeries", something which historian David Irving knew all along.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

Kujau, a balding, portly, jocular man, who revelled in publicity, was captured by West German police on the Austrian border three weeks later on 14 May 1983. With journalist Gerd Heidemann he went through an 11-month trial and was given a four-year prison sentence for forgery.

When Kujau was released in 1988 suffering from cancer he declared to the press that he was going to write a memoir called "I Was Hitler". Ten years later *The Originality of Forgery* (*Die Originalität der Fälschung*) was published under his name, but he did not write it.[1]

---

[1] *The Times*, London, 14 September 2000.

Konrad Kujau then became a celebrated forger and made a fantastic living selling genuine forgeries of Hitler, Monet, Rembrandt and van Gogh paintings. With his new-found notoriety he signed the paintings with the original artist's name and his own name. By the 1990s he was so popular his paintings were fetching up to £42,000 each and a counterfeit sub-market appeared in fakes of his fakes.

Such is history – fakes upon fakes.

Kujau (27 June 1938–21 September 2000) then ran for mayor in his hometown of Löbau in 1994 and in Stuttgart in 1996, failing both times.

Despite lecturing propaganda history for 26 years and making the biggest historical booboo of the twentieth century, Hugh Trevor-Roper was retained as the great WWII historian and made honorary fellow and life peer in 1987 – cover upon cover.

Baron Hugh Redwald Trevor-Roper believed in his own intellectual rigour and could make up history with the eloquent language of his breeding. His elevation was enough to give him a following in England.

Hugh R. Trevor-Roper was a naïve intellectual who was easily bluffed by his own employers. His employers, the upper crust of British society and intelligence, gave him kudos, position and status for recording their eloquent status quo of investigative lies. As a result he was made Baron Dacre of Glanton.

Baron Hugh Redwald Trevor-Roper died aged 89 from cancer in a hospice in Oxford and was survived by three stepchildren. He was British aristocracy and wrote their history with a handcuffed pen.

History is the recording of lies
from which to build an uncertain peace
and justify the next war.
As long as that works,
it is the history that is selected.

British Army Major Hugh Trevor-Roper (left) used the testimony of Sturmbannführer Erich Kempka, Hitler's personal chauffeur (right) as the basis for *The Last Days of Hitler* and Britain's history of WWII.

Trevor-Roper was assigned to the task by Dick White (MI-6) later director-general of MI-5 (1953–56) and Head of British Secret Intelligence Service (1956–68).

Richard 'Dick' White was a close friend of the treasonous spy, Anthony Blunt, and MI-5 Security Inspector, Baron Victor Rothschild, 'the Fifth Man' in 'the Cambridge Five'. From 1935–63 the Cambridge Five managed to leak all Britain's military secrets and intelligence operations to Russia.

Appendix 9

Unlikely Heroes

Because Hitler had been a house painter, they were held in high regard in Nazi Germany. If anyone didn't pay a painter in the Third Reich they were in serious trouble. Insulting the Führer or not paying a painter were (equally) reason enough to be thrown into a concentration camp. Those who didn't pay their painter could also have their houses confiscated. As a result painters were treated with kid gloves and generally not questioned. This preferential treatment gave painters enough leeway to be very effective spies.

René Duchez, a French painting and decorating subcontractor took advantage of this. He took a job at the Caen offices of the dreaded Organisation Todt. He was not a spy, but on impulse stole the plans of Hitler's massive Atlantic Wall from the German engineers. These were the plans of the German defences around Cherbourg and Le Havre. The plans showed the position of the gun emplacements, batteries, pillboxes, machine-gun posts, trench systems, supply and ammunition dumps, fields of fire, gun range, communication systems, command systems and the technical specifications.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

René's plans of the Atlantic Wall were taken to England via ship. They were tossed on the deck and generally disregarded during the sailing, then tossed onto an office desk at MI-6 with little or no notice given. MI-6 studied the plans lightly and then recognised their importance.

MI-6 feared the plans would be useless believing the Germans would change everything when they realised the plans had been stolen, but the German design engineers were even more fearful of the consequences, so they produced a duplicate copy and never mentioned it to anyone. British aerial reconnaissance then confirmed German construction was continuing according to the plans René Duchez had stolen.

As well as stealing the plans of the Atlantic Wall, René Duchez would hang around the cafés the German engineers used and pose as the village idiot. He'd initate arguments about their engineering practices and volunteer old-fashioned advice. The Germans would then draw him pictures of what was actually going on.

During the air raids René Duchez would crawl all over the Atlantic Wall with the French agent Henri Marigny and during weekends he would cycle with children along the coast and draw maps. On his return journey these were hidden in the handlebars of the children's bikes.

René was eventually betrayed to the Gestapo. When they came around to his house they found his wife arguing with a dissatisfied customer of her husband. The Gestapo escorted him out of the house, only to discover much later, that it was René Duchez they had removed. In this way, René Duchez, the French painter and paperhanger was one of the great spies of WWII.

René Duchez with Mothballs.

Appendix 10

James Bond – Sir Sean Connery

Sir Sean Connery was born Thomas Connery in Edinburgh, Scotland in 1930. He left school at 13 to work on a milk round (1943) before joining the Royal Navy at 16 (1946). He was invalided out of the forces at the very young age of 18 (1948) due to an ulcer and began body-building and truck driving.

His first big break was in the London stage production of South Pacific (1951), a television production called *Requiem for a Heavyweight* (1956), followed by a string of B-grade movies: *Time Lock* (2-minute cameo, 1957), *Another Time, Another Place* (1958), *Darby O'Gill & the Little People* (1959), *On the Fiddle ('Never have so few FIDDLED so many!'*, 1961), *The Frightened City* (1961) and *The Longest Day* (1962).

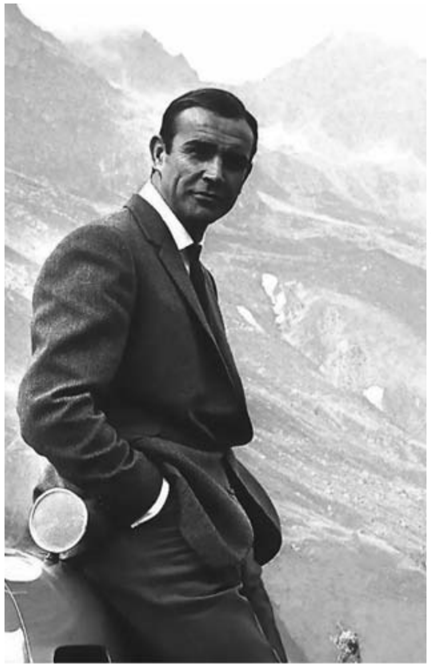
He was then picked for the role of James Bond (killing with style) by Cubbi Broccolli in 1962, doing *Dr. No* (1962) with Ian Fleming as consultant, *From Russia with Love* (1963), *Goldfinger* (1964), *Thunderball* (1965), *You Only Live Twice* (1967) and *Diamonds Are Forever* (1971).

During this time he also made *Marnie* (1964), *A Fine Madness* (1966), *Shalako* (1968), *Red Tent* (1969) and *Molly Maguires* (1970).

He has since done *The Anderson Tapes* (1971), *Zardoz* (1973), *The Offence* (1973), *The Terrorists* (1974), *Murder on the Orient Express* (1974), *The Wind and the Lion* (1975), *The Man Who Would Be King* (1975), *Robin and Marian* (1976), *The Arab Conspiracy* (1976), *A Bridge Too Far* (1977), *Meteor* (1979), *The Great Train Robbery* (1979), *Cuba* (1979), *Time Bandits* (1981), *Outland* (1981), *Wrong Is Right* (1982), *Five Days One Summer* (1983), *Sword of the Valiant* (1983), *Never Say Never Again* (1983), *The Name of the Rose* (1986), *Highlander* (1986), *The Untouchables* (1987 and Oscar), *The Presidio* (1988), *Memories of Me* (1988), *Indiana Jones and the Last Crusade* (1989), *Family Business* (1989), *The Russia House* (1990), *The Hunt for Red October* (1990), *Robin Hood, Prince of Thieves* (1991), *Highlander 2: The Quickening* (1991), *Medicine Man* (1992), *Rising Sun* (1993), *Just Cause* (1994), *A Good Man in Africa* (1994), *First Knight* (1995), *The Rock* (1996), *Dragonheart* (voice-over, 1996), *Playing by Heart* (1998), *The Avengers* (1998), *Entrapment* (1999), *Finding Forrester* (2000) and *The League of Extraordinary Gentlemen* (2003).

Sir Sean Connery has been in over 57 movies and lives in the Bahamas from where he donates money to the Scottish National Party. At 59 years of age he was voted the world's sexiest man.

Ironically, in the 1970s the biggest gang of murderers in Northern Ireland were 'The Milkmen' and most of them *were* milkmen made up of New Zealand Maoris. It appeals to the sense of humour of military spy chiefs to send out operatives disguised as milkmen on the basis that no one would ever expect any harm to come from them. Their link with Sean Connery's first job is purely coincidental and has been included for clarification and, to dispel any rumours to the contrary . . . Sean Connery is no Maori!



England had its nuclear arsenal stored in Ireland and in 1978 Russia attacked Ireland to get at these. While neither confirming nor denying their existence, England hired New Zealand mercenaries to go into Northern Ireland and create strife. The Kiwi's became 'Milkmen' for cover and reconnaissance.

The Kiwi milkmen would dress as IRA, identify their targets from photos taped to the butts of their M16 or Armalite rifles, kill, load the bodies in a Triumph 2.5TC with a Leyland P76 V8 motor, drive to a prearranged location and hand over the bodies to the Garbage Men.

The Garbage Men would then put the bodies in a Land Rover and drive out into the countryside. A posthole borer originally mounted on the left-hand side of the front bumper was later moved to the right rear and these were used to dig a ten-foot hole. The skull, shoulder blades, spine, humerus and femurs were smashed with an engineer's ballpein hammer and the body was dropped in head first with half a sack of quicklime poured over the top. This broke down the remains quicker. The hole was then sealed with the original grassed plug. Six to ten inch posthole borer-sized plug subsidence is still visible around Ireland and England today although most are now disguised under bushes.

- treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

The IRA would get the blame again and again for murders and explosions and the British Army would go in and protect their nuclear arsenal under the guise of cleaning things up – again and again – as long as 'nuclear' was the hot issue.

This is why no one from the British side has come forward to name IRA gravesites. It is something only Kiwi's can do.

For this reason, the New Zealand officer who ran the Garbage Men was 'accidentally' killed in a parachuting accident in a Tasmanian mangrove swamp in the 1980s, from which there was no escape. The tragedy is that he was as loyal to the Queen as any Maori.

New Zealand mercenaries would also go into Asian villages wherever the next war was going to be, kill everyone in the village so there were no witnesses, lay out the bodies, open up their postal bags, pull out Chinese and Russian weapons, place them alongside the bodies, photograph them and report that they had killed communists.

This sheep dipping made the New Zealand mercenaries look like heroes and the communists and Russians a threat. Those who survived the set up of war eventually had to chose a side and take up arms. If they didn't choose a side, they were merely killed and the pattern repeated – the weapons of their assassin's opposition placed next to them and the new dead photographed again and again.

Military Intelligence used these Suitcase Men who seemed comfortable with any and all degrees of the stitch-up. They'd even redress civilian child casualties in military style clothing and supply half-sized weapons to photograph next them, ensuring the child looked like a soldier of some merit. What do the Suitcase Men do now? They take photographs of the All Blacks of course – oh true and faithful servant. (Since publication in Sept. 2005, the photographer has been promoted.)

These photos did have the desired affect. *TIME* and *National Geographic* published them and helped to create the public indignity that put the heart behind the West's funding of these wars, until their own got killed. It was years and sometimes decades later before Western citizens woke up and realised it was just another Military Industrial

Complex fundraiser and a depopulation exercise to keep the population planners in the upper echelons of the United Nations happy.

When the United Nations says, "We estimate that by 2005 one in four people on the planet will be Chinese", you can bet there will be a plan to kill off this population. Sure enough, there are repeated attempts to perfect the killing of Chinese, first with Chairman Mao and his 70 million, then with H5N1 (the Avian Flu, the new Spanish Flu), the virus which is having its fatality and contagiousness continually perfected and tested on "the Chicken Sleepers" in Manchuria. In this case, the Chinese people are the victims at home and the weapons in the West.

Despite this, the paedophile Chairman Mao did his best with the killing of 70 million Chinese from 1936–76, with no books available other than 'The Little Red Book' (*Mao Zedong on People's War*, 1967) and absolutely no advantage to China whatsoever.

Mao Zedong (1893–1976) was Stalin's agent and Stalin had been gifted the United Nations for an eight day war from 8–15 August 1945. Like Hitler and Stalin, Mao Zedong had been deconstructed and was a man of no ideology, who stood for nothing and achieved nothing, other than spending his life in bed having sex on call with under-aged concubines, reading, but not absorbing the information, and 70 million deaths, which was more than Hitler and Stalin.

Chairman Mao's motto was "Political power grows through the barrel of a gun." His 'Great Leap Forward' and 'Cultural Revolution' achieved absolutely nothing for China. When he died, his third wife tried to seize power, but was arrested as part of the 'Gang of Four'.

This is war and this is the pattern of war from Hitler, Stalin and Chairman Mao to the Milkmen, the Garbage Men, the Suitcase Men and now.

So what is that – 130 million down and another 5.87 billion to go? Watch the news. It will tell you everything you don't need to know and everything that will stop you from knowing.

Research is under-funded and continually compromised.
"Truth is the first casualty of war"
and those who tell the truth about war
are continually threatened by The Forces of Order.
By the time a true historian publishes, he is already one-third cat.

Appendix 11

Hitler's Host for Hitler's Ghost

Rámon Serrano Súñer (12 September 1901–1 September 2003) was born in Cartagena, a seaport in the southeast of Spain. His father was José Serrano Lloberes, a distinguished civil engineer who worked on the Valencian port of Castellón. His birthplace was Spain's premier naval port and the largest naval base in the Mediterranean. It was a political town renowned for its Poms and MI-6 presence.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Rámon Serrano Súñer was an excellent student and, despite his father's sane protests, studied law at Madrid's Universidad Central. One of his closest friends was José Antonio Primo de Rivera who also studied law. He was the son of Miguel Primo de Rivera y Orbaneja (8 January 1870–16 March 1930), born in Paris to a family of soldiers. With his contacts in the British Military's General Staff, Primo de Rivera became dictator by coup from September 1923–January 1930, becoming General Pilar Primo de Rivera. He stepped down in January 1930 and died two months later. Officially, "He died in Paris apparently from diabetes, although the exact cause of death has not been determined."[1]

Spymaster: "He was killed in an air accident, a favourite MI-6 method of silencing political leaders, creating an instantly randomised and anonymous death. This is the curse of the 20th century and MI-6." Within three years Franco had overall command of the Spanish Army (1933) and eventually replaced General Rivera.

---

[1] Web, Wikipedia.

Rámon 'Serrano' Súñer graduated from Madrid Central University with the highest honours, then passed the combative legal examinations to join the elite corps of public prosecutors, the 'Abogados del Estado'. He spent a year at Bologna (the equivalent of Bavaria) where he developed a taste for fascism and was then posted to Zaragoza in 1929, where he became friends with General Francisco Franco.

In October 1923, Franco (4 December 1892–20 November 1975) married the strict Roman Catholic, Carmen Polo y Martinez-Valdès (9 July 1900–6 February 1988). Three years later he was made the youngest General of any European Army at the age of 34 (1926). Franco passed the favour on and made Serrano (28) the director of the Zaragoza Military Academy. Zaragoza is the capital of the autonomous region of the former Kingdom of Aragón at the crossroads between Madrid and Barcelona, and Bilbao and Valencia.

Serrano would rock up for dinner and it was here that he met his future wife Zita Polo y Martinez-Valdès, the beautiful younger sister of Carmen Franco. Rámon Serrano Súñer then became the brother-in-law of Franco in what was undoubtedly one of the great MI-6 honey-traps of all time, something approaching Mark Antony and Cleopatra. They had six children together. Zita was the better Catholic.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

When they got married (1931), his best friend José Antonio Primo de Rivera (son of the recently deceased dictator) was his best man. José Antonio (24 April 1903–20 November 1936) became one of the founders of the Falange (1933) and editor of *El Fascio*. Five years later while José Antonio Primo de Rivera was awaiting execution at the beginning of the Spanish Civil War (1936), he named Serrano as one of the two executors of his will.

José Antonio was executed without trial at Alicante and became a national martyr at 34. Such was his popularity that Franco had his life artificially extended in order to die on the same day as José, 39 years later, and was buried next to him. This meant that Latino fascists could celebrate on the one day.

The Spanish are such impossible romantics.

José Antonio's brother Fernando was also killed without trial in the Madrid Jail at the beginning of the Spanish Civil War (July 1936), while their surviving brother was the Spanish Ambassador to Britain, abundant with MI-6 connections. Their sister founded the female branch of the Falange, and in the February 1936 election Falange managed to gain 0.7% of the nation's vote.

Rámon Serrano Súñer was one of the outstanding legal minds of his generation. Daily access to Franco and his association with the former dictator's son completed his credentials. At the elections in 1933, Serrano was the successful Zaratoga Ceda candidate (Catholic Authoritarian Conferación Española de Derechas Autónomas) and became the Conservative member for the Cortes Party (1933–36). He was also a prominent figure in the Catholic youth movement and carried much of its rank-and-file over to fascist Falange on the eve of Civil War – something approaching masterful deception.

The Canary Islands are way out in the Atlantic off southern Morocco and the British virtually patrol them. They were run by MI-6 then and they are run by MI-6 now. It remains a retirement home for many Pommy spooks.

Franco, a graduate of the Toledo military academy, was suspected of plotting against the leftist government (1933–36), so he was sent to the MI-6-dominated Canary Islands where he became the military commander. It was from here that he plotted in secrecy and isolation (in conjunction with MI-6) the Spanish Civil War (16 July 1936–1 April 1939), the testing ground for fascism, the training ground for WWII, Hitler's post-war destination and the beginning of the Cold War.

With overall command of the Spanish Army since 1933, Franco flew to Spanish Morocco and led the Spanish troops in North Africa against the leftist Republic government in Spain.

Sanjuro was the official leader of the rebellion (Civil War) but was conveniently killed in a plane crash four days into the war (20 July 1936). Fascist Germany and Italy sent troops and weapons in support on 26 July 1936 and Franco proclaimed himself Head of State (el Caudillo) on 29 September 1936. The government then left the combat zone, moving from Madrid to Valencia, with the inauguration taking place on 1 October 1936.

Fascist Germany and Italy officially recognised the Franco régime on 18 November 1936. They followed up with Heinkel He51 biplanes, the German Condor Legion on 7 May 1937, and later with Junkers JU52 and Messerschmitt Me109s.

Franco's 2IC was then killed on 3 June 1937. This left Franco and Serrano as the outstanding leaders.

Britain and France recognised the regime on 27 February 1939. Officially it was "reluctantly" but their recognition pre-empted the conquest of Madrid (28 March 1939) and the official end of the Spanish Civil War (1 April 1939) by a month.

Franco failed to warn Serrano that the Civil War was about to start (16 July 1936) and Serrano was caught in Madrid with his family. José and Fernando Primo de Rivera appealed for sanctuary at the British and French embassies, but were refused. They were then caught in the crossfire, captured and held in a Republican prison. Many of Serrano's friends were marched out of jail and murdered, Fernando Primo de Rivera among them. José Primo de Rivera was held for four months before being executed.

This experience imbued a hatred of democracy in Serrano, just as it was supposed to do. This is a common theme to fascist heroes (the same thing happened to Hitler) and the Republican marksmen would have been advised by MI-6: "Don't shoot the public prosecutor, the 36-year-old slightly built handsome distinct figure with aristocratic bearing."

As the war turned in October 1936, Serrano utilised an old MI-6 trick dating back to the 1600s and dressed as a woman to escape. Officially Serrano made his way to fascist Argentina where he joined the navy, sailed to France and made his way to Salamanca (20 February 1937) where he joined Franco's office working on the Falangist side of the Spanish Civil War . . . but it is more likely that he spent four months in MI-6 training in exchange for his assisted escape.

Salamanca, in central Spain, is part of the autonomous Kingdom of León and is one of the most spectacular renaissance cities in Europe. Salamanca is nicknamed 'the Golden City' for its aged sandstone, one of the finest squares in Europe, Castle-León, and the Romanesque cathedral that imitates the Hagia Sophia. In 2002 it was voted the European capital of culture, a title it shared with Bruges.

Following the 1936–39 Spanish Civil War, Rámon Serrano Súñer became the Chairman of the Falange Executive Committee, President of the Political Council of the Falange that governed Spain (full effective control), Minister of the Interior (Whom do we kill? 30 January 1938–40), Minister of Press and Propaganda (1939–40) where he developed the Whom do we malign? State News Agency, EFE (1939), and became the Foreign Affairs Minister from 16 October 1940–September 1942.

Rámon Serrano Súñer was in charge of the government, the press, suppression of the truth, the projection of lies, accusations, trials, convictions, the police, judiciary, the military, murder and Spain's international position.

Serrano was also a Nordic-Anglo-Saxon coloniser. He objected to the increasing role of the Roman Catholic Church in the Falange Party. There may have been no increase in Catholic influence, but at least he had made his official statement. One of the goals of WWII was to separate the Church from the State and that theme was common to all political parties right across the globe.

Serrano was Spain's answer to Goebbels, Goering, Himmler, Hess and Ribbentrop all rolled into one with a bit of Churchill and Moshe Dayan thrown in on the side. He was often called "the Spanish Goebbels" or "the Spanish Himmler". Serrano was Franco's aid and handler and his role often transcended that of el Caudillo himself. Quicksilver Rámon Serrano Súñer was effectively the head of the fascist Falange from 1937–42, with Franco taking the blame for Serrano's fascism. The Falangista was Spain's sole political party.

Franco was nicknamed Generalísimo (Cuñadísimo) meaning "a commissioned officer of the highest rank", "General of the highest degree" or "Commander in chief of the entire armed forces". Rámon Serrano Súñer was nicknamed "the brother-in-law issimo" (el Cuñadísimo).

The Spanish had a cool and casual sense of humour considering the number of dead.

As the much-accomplished brother-in-law of Franco, Serrano (the secret fascist) had a skill for building up the relationship with Mussolini and he modelled Spain after Benito Mussolini's fascist Italy. He also brought Franco and Mussolini together which indicates he had MI-6 connections. Serrano still publicly admired Mussolini in the mid-1990s. He was the only one.

Pedro Lain Entralgo worked for Serrano as a press official in the Spanish Interior Ministry (Whom do we kill?). Whenever a foreigner

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

has a Pommy name in their midst, you can bet they are working for the British, and usually MI-6. 'Lain' is a British name and Pedro Lain Entralgo travelled to Nazi Germany three times during 1939 and 1940.

While in Germany, he was supported by Wilhelm Faupel, the Spanish Ambassador to Germany who directed the Spanish-German Cultural Institute (1934–45). This may seem innocent enough, but Wilhelm Faupel was Army General Wilhelm Faupel who received the esteemed military awards, the Pour le Mérite (8 June 1918) and the Oakleaves (4 August 1918), joined the Freikorps as a commander as soon as it started two months after the end of WWI (January 1919) and became Oberstleutnant (Leutnant-Colonel) Wilhelm Faupel.

Wilhelm Faupel, director of the Spanish-German Cultural Institute, was Army General Freikorps Commander Leutnant-Colonel Wilhelm Faupel who ran a Spanish spy agency in Germany with links to the Spanish spy agency in England.

Spain was such a divided nation that when their war ships were in port they would shoot each other across ships and even on the same ship. Heavy ordnance was not ruled out. Spain was the frontier where Britain and Germany met. As cousins, each had their claim and Spain was continually factionalised by Intelligence from both countries. As such, Spain became the trial run for WWII.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

While in Germany, Pedro Lain Entralgo called for "Spanish colonial expansion in North Africa". Franco then publicly demanded Gibraltar and French North Africa. They knew that Hitler would refuse immediately and this charade gave Franco enough reason to turn down Germany's request that Spain become one of Germany's serf colonies, just as the Low Countries had.

In this way, Spain maintained its non-belligerent neutrality during WWII. Franco and Serrano had MI-6's military brilliance at their beck and call.

Hitler had been planning his escape to Spain since the war began, and to this end, Serrano had been conversing with the Germans from 1939. This continued with Ribbentrop (the Nazi Ambassador to England) on 17 September 1940 and with Ribbentrop and Canaris prior to the meeting with Hitler. Admiral Canaris had privately advised Spain not to join the Axis powers of Germany, Italy and Japan as England would win the war.

With meetings regarding Hitler's post-WWII escape going on in England, Germany and France, Rámon Serrano Súñer was officially made Spain's Foreign Affairs Minister on 16 October 1940, exactly a week before he accompanied Franco to the meeting with Hitler, Ribbentrop and aides at Hendaye on 23 October 1940.

Hendaye is the last French coastal resort town before entering Spain and is on the border with Spain's San Sebastian, near Bilbao in the Bay of Biscay. Canaris liked Bilbao so much he had properties there.

Officially this meeting was to discuss Spain's part in WWII, and to this end, no official progress was ever made, to the extent that Serrano failed to record anything of the meeting. The meetings were primarily about a safe haven for Hitler's exile.

The next day (24 October 1940) Serrano sent his junior official, Pedro Lain Entralgo, back in his place, to talk more with Ribbentrop over a secret protocol between Germany, Italy and Spain of which only Hitler, Mussolini and Serrano were to have knowledge.

Serrano would only avoid such a meeting if he felt the need to maintain plausible deniability. Spending two days at a meeting for which there were no records is not plausibly deniable.

The meetings contained vague territorial offers, but they were really about Hitler's escape to Spain at the end of WWII. Hitler had a history in architecture and liked Hendaye and the whole romantic feel of the place. Officially Hitler and Franco had "failed" negotiations on 23 October 1940 and nothing was recorded of their meeting. In real terms the whole thing was a smashing success and Serrano made further visits to Germany a month later in November 1940, and again in November 1941, to tidy up the details.

Once this was complete, the cover had to be instigated and all three disowned each other. Franco adopted a cooler attitude towards Germany and Italy and dismissed his 'Hess', Rámon Serrano Súñer, in September 1942, blaming him for the very German alliance he had just torpedoed. Hitler publicly called Rámon Serrano Súñer "the gravedigger of the new Spain" and Serrano was forced to officially resign his posts.

After WWII Serrano wrote a persuasive public letter to Franco, "calling for a transitional government that would have room for intellectuals in exile". Franco replied by scribbling "Ho-ho" in the margin and Hitler now had a safe haven.[2]

---

[2] Web: Facts, Info, and Encyclopedia article, Rámon Serrano Súñer.

Serrano remained a proud Catholic, which placed him at odds with the Nazis who officially regarded him as an enemy – perfect cover for receiving the new Holy Ghost, the six times dead and resurrected Catholic British agent, Adolf Hitler.

In the 1940s Serrano was considered a hypochondriac and in poor health. He officially retired from public life in 1947 and lived quietly thereafter – but at 94 he was still giving authoritative history lectures (minus the history) for 3½ hours before he was asked to stop (1995).

In 1947 Serrano published his first volume of memoirs, *Between Hendaye and Gibraltar* (*Entre Hendaya y Gibraltar*) which also completely excluded Franco and Serrano's meeting with Hitler and Ribbentrop at Hendaye (23 October 1940), his aides meeting the day after (24 October 1940), his meeting with Hitler in the witching hours of 3 May 1945 at Barcelona, and his subsequent meetings with Hitler in his post-life as 'the German Gardener'.

After Franco's death and the end of his reign (1939–75) Serrano published *Between Silence and Propaganda, History As It Really Was* (1977) and severely dented Franco's reputation, but still left out these same historical meetings.

More accurate examples of the Spanish Civil War may be found in Ernest Hemmingway's *For Whom the Bell Tolls* and George Orwell's MI-6 account, *Homage to Catalonia*.

The tragedies of Serrano's life inclined him towards fanaticism, but his legal mind and ministerial responsibilities made him a pragmatist. He was a lawyer, politician, author, MI-6 agent, fascist and prolific liar with a sparsity of morals. Like Hitler, he was also working for the Catholic cause and like most competent diminutive prosecuting lawyers, he believed his own lies unto death. Rámon Serrano Súñer gave himself plausible deniability in the part he played in history by charismatically thrusting his own sectionalised mind onto other's.

Franco and Serrano were the men who set up Spain to hide Hitler. With the help of MI-6, they gave Spain interim status so that no one, and no governorship, could ever take the blame.

As the uncrowned King of Spain, Franco supported this further in 1969 by designating the former King's grandson, Juan Carlos de Borbón, as his successor. This effectively meant that Spain was on loan to the fascists for the duration of WWII and its stitch ups – the 45 years from 1930 to 1975.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Hitler and Franco at Hendaye,
23 October 1940.

The Hitler scenario was very similar to the Jesus scenario and may have been used as a model.

Jesus was crucified on 1 March AD33 when he was 40, with two others to make it look convincing, one of whom was a doppelgänger for Simon ("Simon says, 'Hold out your arms'") and only the guerrilla warfare assassin, Judas Sicarii died (similar to Goebbels).

Simon was the head of East Manasseh and also known as Simon Magus (Simon the Magician), Zadoc Simon, Simon the Cannonite (Simon the Fanatic) and Simon the Leper. He was one of the most powerful people in the land, just as Martin Bormann was.

Similar to Hitler, all public and private records of Jesus' family were burnt by the Roman governors. Those who kept their family records were called the Desponsyni which became the root word for 'desperate'. They were hunted like outlaws and pursued to death by the Roman Empire and its Church. The none-too-bright spies, Peter and Paul, were killed off in AD64 by the same people that later elevated them to sainthood. The sacking of Jerusalem was completed in AD70.

Jesus was resuscitated and physically resurrected three days after the crucifixion to be acknowledged by the Marys. Hitler was transported to Spain three days later to be acknowledged by Eve.

Espayo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Jesus travelled as far as possible from the clutches of the Roman Empire and went to Srinagar, in northwest India (40 km south of the border with Pakistan) to the highest peak in the area. There is a shrine to him here at Yusamarg – 'Jesus Meadow'. He was acknowledged by both the Christian and Islamic worlds and is mentioned in both teachings.

Similarly, Hitler is acknowledged by both the fascist and communist ideologies and is mentioned in both political teachings. Both achieved mass destruction and the opposite of what they set out to do. Jesus left a destroyed Jerusalem and Hitler left a destroyed Germany.

From Yusamarg, Jesus escaped some 250 km away to the Ladhak region of Tibet (now part of India) where he studied at the Hemis monastery, down the famous Indus River from Leh. Although this area is currently under Indian governorship, the people speak a very ancient form of Tibetan called 'Ladhak'. They are Tibetan traditionalists in language and culture. The Hemis monastery was shown in the movie *Samsara*, but the Tibetan language was modernised for the movie.

Similarly, Hitler escaped from the Parc de la Ciutadella to the Montserrat monastery just outside Barcelona and belonged to a secret Tibetan Lodge and practised Tibetan occultism.

There are four monasteries in the Ladhak region of India (former Tibet). The first is Spituk on the east side of the Indus river. The second is Mato some two hours from Leh on the west side of the river. The third is Stagma, a further hour's walk, and the fourth is Hemis, which is the big monastery. These are at 11,000 ft so there isn't much oxygen.[3] Jesus lived in the Hemis monastery in the Ladhak region of Tibet where he studied Buddhism.

At the council meeting in Ephesus in AD70 Jesus was referred to as "the lamb" and "St John" as in the St John's Ambulance Association.

Hitler was referred to as "Rabbit" and "the German Gardener" and is immortalised through the Volkswagen.

Jesus lived to physically die again around AD73 (aged 80) and his followers hoped he would be reborn again and again. When this didn't happen, a vacuum was created.

Hitler died six times within a day in Berlin (30 April/1 May 1945), was swished to Spain (3 May 1945), physically died in February 1950 (aged 60), but then his doppelgängers kept popping up all over the place for the next 22 years (until late 1972), as do his undressed imitators and dressed followers.

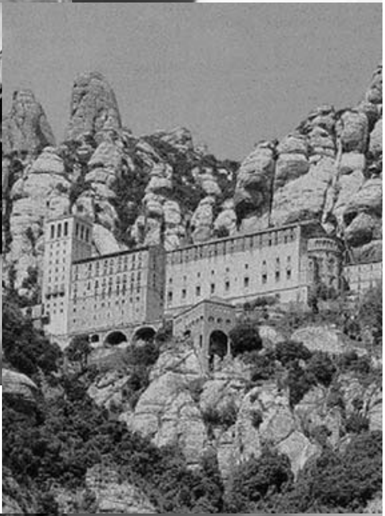
Jesus is preserved on a sadomasochistic cross, continually dying as he takes away the sins of those in denial.

Hitler was a sadomasochist and is preserved above a reverse harmony swastika (representing chaos) and is reborn daily in the sins and denial of every second politician – It's "Church on Sundays, hell six days a week, and at least I'm not as bad as Hitler."

How could anything possibly go wrong?

---

[3] *Samsara* incorrectly states that the Ladhak region is at 15,000 ft (January 2003).



Hemis Monastery top,
Parc de la Ciutadella (above), or
Montserrat Monastery (right and below).
Two out of three ain't bad.

© www.lodgephoto.com

Appendix 12

The Origins of *Animal Farm*

George Orwell (25 June 1903–21 January 1950) was born Eric Arthur Blair in Bengal, India, the second child of Richard Walmesley Blair and Ida Mabel Limonzin. His father worked for the Opium Department of the Imperial Civil Service (British monarchy/government drug trafficking) and his mother was the daughter of a tea-merchant in Burma (Burma was a harvest zone for drugs later hidden in tea). He then moved to England with his mother in 1904 and saw his father again for three months in 1907. He described his family as "lower-upper-middle class".

When he was six he won a scholarship to St Cyprian's Preparatory School in Eastbourne, Sussex. From here he went to Wellington for a term and then to Eton College where he was a King's Scholar from 1917–21, essentially a spy training network for MI-6 so it comes naturally and they don't have to pay them later. Here he made lifetime friendships with a number of future British intellectuals and spies. At Eton, Aldous Huxley was his French teacher for a term.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Orwell failed to win a university scholarship and it was here that his career diverged from his peers. He left England in 1922 and went to his mother's hometown in Burma and served as an assistant superintendent in the Indian Imperial Police (1922–27). Like his colleagues, he took on a native mistress and then quickly grew to dislike British imperialism. This was the role of Burmese beauties.

With this experience he tried becoming a total immersion author. Between 1928–33 he lived as a tramp, beggar, homeless person and itinerant in England and in France (near his aunt's pantry) and then stayed with his sister, aunt or parents to bring himself back from the depths of society he had immersed himself in. He even managed to get himself arrested for drunkenness, spending 48 hours in prison just to get the feel of it.

In 1933 he wrote for the *New Adelphi* and lived in Hayes in Middlesex, where he taught at a private school. Officially, the beginnings of tuberculosis during this time forced him into part-time work, and he became an assistant at a second-hand bookshop – notorious spy networks and the equivalent of the literary underground. He wrote *Down and Out in Paris and London* (1933) and needed a pseudonym to maintain a cover and save his parents' embarrassment. He considered 'Kenneth Miles' and 'H. Lewis Allways', but settled on 'George Orwell', a name that reflected the '**S**pies and **T**raders' knighthood of the order of St Michael and St George, the reigning monarch (King George V) and the River Orwell that ran through Suffolk. 'George Orwell' was a code name that reeked of MI-6 influence.

Orwell then worked as a shopkeeper in Wallington, Hertfordshire (1936–40) and published *Burmese Days* (1934) and *A Clergyman's Daughter* (1935). Meanwhile, his wife-to-be, Eileen O'Shaugnessy, was becoming very accomplished in her own right.

Eileen Maud O'Shaughnessy (25 September 1905–29 March 1945) was born in northeast England, the only daughter of a customs collector. She attended Sunderland Church High School (founded 1884), where she was once a student of J.R.R. Tolkien's. She studied at Oxford University in the late 1920s and graduated with a degree in psychology. To celebrate the Sunderland Church High School's 50th anniversary (1934) she looked ahead 50 years to the school's centenary in 1984 and wrote a collection of poems of what life would be like then. She included mind control and personal freedom eradicated by a police state. She called these "End of the Century, 1984" and was also a big influence on her future husband's vision in *Animal Farm*.

In 1935 she met George Orwell and they married in 1936. George was working on a commissioned documentary account of unemployment in Nordy country (North England), which resulted in *The Road to Wigan Pier*.

The Spanish Civil War broke out in British Intelligence controlled Spain on 16 July 1936, and as an MI-6 agent George was assigned as a war correspondent (like many other writers). Orwell was an uncompromising individualist and political idealist and argued that writers have an obligation to fight social injustice, oppression and the power of totalitarian regimes. The newly married couple arrived in Spain in December 1936. George soon took up arms and joined the struggle against Franco's fascists becoming a member of the Lenin Division in Barcelona. His wife Eileen was his support and civilian intelligence. She effectively kept him alive and informed.

Orwell looked like a robber chief, being inclined to rough-looking clothing, leather jerkins and high leather boots. He carried a long ex-German Mauser 98 Gewher and topped the outfit off with a large knife. When you think of all the other Poms in Spain dressed up like Christmas trees, it was a practical-looking outfit.

In early January 1937 he was given the rank of corporal, sent from Barcelona to join the offensive at Aragón and from there to the front line of Huesca in February. In early May, he took a week's leave to be with his new wife in Barcelona and exchange information. He returned on 12 May to be promoted to 2nd lieutenant in command of 30 men, one of which was a Scotsman named Jimmy.

While talking to an American sentry near Huesca at 5 am on 20 May 1937, Orwell was hit in the neck by a Franco sniper bullet leaving him temporarily dumb and his left side paralysed. This enabled him to go to hospital where he heard that his unit had been declared illegal and were in danger of being murdered by the communist comrades within their unit. With this foreknowledge (his wife included) he managed to escape what was the utter chaos of the Spanish Civil War. Much of his unit was either thrown in prison or murdered, depending on food rations.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

This was described in *Homage to Catalonia* which, after British government interference, was published in 1938. With further government interference it sold less than 100 copies over the next 12 years Orwell was alive.

"I had come to Spain with some notion of writing newspaper articles, but I had joined the militia almost immediately, because at that time and in that atmosphere it seemed the only conceivable thing to do . . . It was the first time that I had ever been in a town where the working class was in the saddle. Practically every building of any size had been seized by the workers and was draped with red flags or with the red and black flag of the Anarchists; every wall was scrawled with the hammer and sickle and with the initials of the revolutionary parties; almost every church had been gutted and its images burnt . . . systematically demolished by gangs of workmen. Every shop and cafe had an inscription saying that it had been collectivized . . . Tipping was forbidden by law . . . There were no private motor cars, they had all been commandeered, and all the trams and taxis and much of the other transport were painted red and black . . . the loud-speakers were bellowing revolutionary songs all day and far into the night . . .

Harry Milton
George Orwell
Eileen O'Shaughnessy Blair

In outward appearance it was a town in which the wealthy classes had practically ceased to exist. Except for a small number of women and foreigners there were no 'well-dressed' people at all. Practically everyone wore rough working-class clothes, or blue overalls or some variant of the militia uniform. All this was queer and moving. There was much in it that I did not understand . . . I did not realize that great numbers of well-to-do bourgeois were simply lying low and disguising themselves as proletarians for the time being."[1]

The 30-strong Lenin Division that George Orwell led in Barcelona was a particular breed of ragtag rebels that wore a unique uniform with scarves. They had Mauser rifles, more ammunition than most other crowds, and a vacancy . . . so the 19-year-old Kiwi joined them, principally because he liked Mauser rifles.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2018

The Kiwi was influenced by a Scottish fella named Jimmy, and Jimmy the Scot clung to a Pom he referred to as 'George the Spook' and he accorded absolute authenticity to any pronouncement that came out of George's mouth. Whatever George said, the Scotsman took as Gospel.

On a Wednesday in June 1937, George jumped up and announced to the Scotsman that he was going back to England and leaving, right then and there. Jimmy the Scott asked him why and George said their unit was going to be slaughtered by the British on the Saturday and they had to leave right away, get to the port and catch a boat back to England.

Jimmy the Scot said, "Right, I'm off then." The Kiwi was inclined to go with Jimmy and said, "Why are you going off?" and Jimmy said, "Where George the Spook goes, I go. If it's good enough for me to go, it's good enough for you to go too." The Kiwi said, "Well, he is George the Spook, so if it's good enough for him, it's good enough for me."

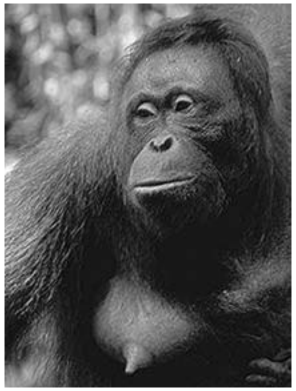
So the Kiwi agreed to go and the three of them made their way to the port in Barcelona. They arrived on Friday and wandered around waiting for their travel documents to come through. George the Spook was paranoid that in the time they were wandering around they might come to some grief. He was certain that they should keep a low profile, that they should dress in civilian clothes and not parade their identities before any number of the varying militias that might put them up against the wall and shoot them. All they had to do to stay alive was to stay out of trouble and not stand out.

George wanted to negotiate with the others everywhere they went, and the Kiwi, being young, wanted to go out and wander around and look at things. The Scotsman, although a little bit more cautious, wanted to go out and have a butcher at things as well, so they decided to go for a short walk late on the Saturday afternoon. They walked along the seafront for about 15 or 20 minutes and came upon an auction held down at the beach. The auctioneers were selling all the travelling effects of a circus and the thing that was put on the lot to go next was a large-breasted female orangutan.

The Kiwi was all fired up in righteousness and said, "We should do something noble in our time in Spain and buy this poor fucking gorilla and we should free it." They were looking hard at the cost of it. In the meantime this English aristocrat came up with a large sum of guineas and made the highest bid on the orangutan.

George the Pommy spook said to the Kiwi, "Now you can't do anything, it's been bought fair and square."

The Kiwi was appalled and said, "That mongrel Pom is going to root that gorilla." At that stage the Kiwi couldn't understand the difference between an orangutan and a gorilla.



George the Spook said, "That's quite likely, but all we can do is go around and pick up the pieces afterwards."

All they had to do was keep a low profile until their ship set sail, but the Kiwi wanted to have a go at the Englishman and started to scrap with the others. Jimmy the Scot kept knocking the Kiwi to the ground and the Kiwi asked the Scot why he kept beating him, and Jimmy replied: "Any fight is better than no fight."

---

[1] George Orwell, *Homage to Catalonia*, 1938.

So George the MI-6 Spook and Jimmy the Scot carted the Kiwi back to the hotel and tied him up for the rest of the day, all night and into the next day. On the Sunday afternoon, they finally agreed to release him, and when they did the Kiwi was still adamant he should get back to where this Pom had taken the 'gorilla'.

Very, very reluctantly, George, because he was paranoid about their diplomatic presence in Spain, agreed to go back, but they had nowhere to store their rifles. They were bloody great Mauser 98 Gewhers and stood out like dog's balls, so they stuffed them in their bags and wrapped both in a carpet. To the Spaniards they were known as "the rug pedlars".

They went around to this flash hotel, the best hotel in the whole town. The Pom was right up on the top floor. On the way up, George the Spook was going on and on to the Kiwi about how he must not create a fuss, couldn't damage anything, must say please and thank you, and that they were dealing with a young member of the aristocracy and couldn't afford to annoy or enrage him.

They found his room and George knocked on the door, but there was no answer, so George went back downstairs to the maître d'hôtel to get the key.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

While George was away the Kiwi said, "I'll fucking 'enrage' him, I'll fucking kill him" and the Scotsman was going, "I'd like to bash his head in too." Kiwi asked the Scot, "What is this cunt? Is he a Pom or is he a Scotsman?" and Jimmy replied, "He's a Pom" and the Kiwi said, "Well help me smash the door down."

So they busted through the door together and the stench that greeted them inside was absolutely horrendous and the room was in a total shambles. There was shit all over the bedding and at the end of the bed the orangutan was sitting all balled up in sheets, deeply distressed and crying into its arms. Jimmy started looking for the Pom to bash and the Kiwi started to clean up the orangutan and run a bath.

Jimmy said, "Oh, I found the fucking Pom," and the Kiwi said, "Don't bash him. Leave him for me. I'll come out and get him in a second." The Scotsman yelled out, "He's beyond it." The Kiwi rushed out and the aristocratic Pom was lying on the floor, dead as a door nail, all covered in shit with his neck broken. The Kiwi was furious.

George the Spook then came back with the hotel staff, and the maître d'hôtel stood up to his full height and read in his best accented English telegrams that the aristocratic Pom had sent to England on the Thursday night before the circus auction. There were three of them and he had requested the hand-in-marriage of the three wealthiest single women in England. Each offer came back accepted.

After the maître d'hôtel had left the Kiwi said, "This story should be written up and told" and Jimmy agreed, "Aye, it should be written up and told."

After a long and considered pause George said, "No, there is far too much pathos in the story. It cannot be told" and Jimmy reiterated, "Aye, it cannot be told."

The Kiwi then went back into the bathroom and continued bathing the orangutan. George the Spook and Jimmy the Scot were wondering what to do with the A-list marriage proposals and the dead aristocrat, and when it came to moving the body, the Kiwi shouted out, "Monkey in the bath".

With the help of the British Consul in Barcelona, George Orwell, Eileen O'Shaughnessy 'Orwell' Blair, Jimmy the Scot and the 19-year-old Kiwi were able to escape to France. They narrowly missed being denounced and arrested as 'Trotskyites' when the communists moved in to suppress all the militias of their political unit later in June 1937 . . . like the next day.

George Orwell returned to England a staunch anti-Stalinist and anti-Communist, with the plight of animals firmly imprinted on his mind. He remained a democratic socialist, all of which defines him as MI-6 trained through and through.

When the Kiwi related this story to his son in the late 1960s, he said that George the Pom was a famous author from northern England, was quite a capable man and knew a lot. He was a working man and you would never suspect he was from the middle class.

The son asked his father why he had thousands of zoo animals in his photo album, everywhere from Cairo, Alexandria and right up into Italy. The 50-year-old Kiwi replied, "In 1936, as an 18-year-old in Wellington, my aunt told me, 'If you get any free time, I

don't want you drinking or gambling. Go and visit the animals and take them something to eat.' So I did.

"While in Italy, I asked an Italian zookeeper why the eagles were so well fed and the zookeeper told me: 'This sturmbannführer [lieutenant] claiming to represent the SS commander in Italy, General Wolff, had come to see me in 1943, just as the Germans were pulling out of Rome and he said, "Don't keep anything that looks like a German eagle in a half-starved condition. Feed them properly or don't show them at all. When the eagle gets hungry, my trigger finger gets itchy. Make sure the eagle gets the best. To cage a half-starved eagle is an insult to Germany. You'll never know when we'll be back. If we come back and find the eagle starving, you and all your staff will be shot." The same German came back the next day and gave me gold coins. The funny thing is they had been stolen from a robbery in Yugoslavia during the German invasion in 1941, two years before I met him.'"

During WWII Orwell was a member of the Home Guard and in 1941 began work for the BBC Eastern Service, mostly working on programmes to gain Indian and East Asian support for Britain's war efforts. He was well aware that he was shaping propaganda and wrote that he felt like "an orange that's been trodden on by a very dirty boot" – just like the orangutan. Despite the good pay, he resigned in 1943 to become literary editor of *Tribune,* the left-wing weekly where he wrote a regular column, "As I Please".

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Orwell opposed the war with Germany and declared that the British Empire was worse than Hitler. He finished his anti-Stalinist allegory *Animal Farm* in February 1944 and presented it for publication, which brought him to the attention of the Soviet Secret Police, complete with file.

Orwell adopted a three-week-old boy in June 1944 and used a cigarette to burn the birth date and natural parents' names off the birth certificate. His son became Richard Horatio Blair, born May 1944.

Nine months later, his wife and MI-6 support died in a routine operation at Newcastle upon Tyne on 29 March 1945. She was 39. They'd been planning to leave London and move to the Scottish island of Jura so he could concentrate on his next book. Upon her death, George Orwell was simultaneously diagnosed with terminal tuberculosis.

WWII ended on 8 May 1945 and *Animal Farm* was published on 17 August 1945 to immediate critical acclaim and worldwide success.

"All animals are equal, but some animals are more equal than others." Soon after, he coined the phrase "Cold War".[2]

George Orwell was a close friend of *The Observer*'s editor and owner, David Astor, and from 1945 he was its war correspondent and influenced Astor's editorial policies. Later he contributed regularly to the *Manchester Evening News.*

The royalties from *Animal Farm* provided Orwell with a comfortable income for the first time in his adult life. He had literary friends over to his apartment, pretty much as cover for his MI-6 information gathering, and the beautiful and intelligent fag-hags that came with them. Marriage proposals were not infrequent and he applied the same technique to the very beautiful Sonia Brownell, editorial assistant for *Horizon* magazine, which belonged to Cyril Connolly, his prep school and Eton buddy.

Sonia Brownell refused and Orwell moved to the remote Scottish island of Jura, two days' journey from London by train, bus and ferry followed by an eight-mile walk to a large house at the very end of Barnhill. Although a solitary man, he dreaded being alone and asked her to visit, but she refused this as well.

While in a state of loneliness in one of Britain's most remote locations, he wrote *Nineteen Eighty-Four* and changed the way the world thinks about itself. He left Jura for the last time in January 1949 and published on 8 June 1949 – "the destruction of language is essential to oppression".

In 1949 Celia Kirwan started working for the Information Research Department, in the Foreign Office unit. This had been set up by the Labour government to publish pro-democratic and anti-communist propaganda.

As a friend of Orwell's, Celia Kirwan approached him for names of pro-communist writers and artists. As a competent MI-6 agent Orwell gave her 37 names which have proved accurate through time. These were not published until 2003 and consisted of many journalists including Kingsley Martin (editor of the *New Statesman*) and the actors Michael Redgrave and Charlie Chaplin – a double agent.

Cyril Connolly came from a wealthy Anglo-Irish family and was 11 weeks younger than George Orwell and his exact comtemporary through school, but continued on to Balliol College in Oxford afterwards.

---

[2] *Tribune*, 'You and the Atomic Bomb', 19 October 1945.

A regular contributor to the leftist *New Statesman* in the 1930s, he wrote one satirical novel, *The Rock Pool* (1935) and the autobiography, *Enemies of Promise* (1938), where he attempted to explain away his failure to produce the literary masterpiece of which he and others thought him capable.

Connolly went on to co-edit the influential literary magazine *Horizon* (1939–50) and was the literary editor for *The Observer*. After Orwell's death in 1950, Cyril Connolly was promoted to the position of chief book reviewer for the London *Sunday Times* – highly paid to read other's works while in control of public perception. He was a fully educated well-funded contemporary of Orwell's, but the literary inferior. Connolly lived to 1974.

Orwell left Jura for the last time in January 1949 and was hospitalised in the Cranham sanatorium near Gloucester, in the Cotswold Hills, near Wales. With easier access, many of his friends started visiting, including Sonia Brownell (1918–80), the Calcutta-born daughter of a British colonial official, reluctantly educated at a British convent school.

"It was well known at the time, though forgotten now, that people in the last stages of tuberculosis frequently formed very strong emotional attachments, indeed those visiting patients were warned against the danger of taking such relationships at their face value."[3]

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

A relationship ensued and Orwell moved to the closest hospital to where Sonia lived. He moved to the University College Hospital in Gower Street, London and she lived two minutes' walk away at 18 Percy Street. The move happened on 3/4 September 1949, into a bed in Room 65.

Two days later he wrote to his friend David Astor (editor and owner of *The Observer*) mentioning his fever, that he was required to limit his visitors, would marry Sonia, and that his doctor, Morland, was very much in favour. Morland wanted Owell to travel to a high-altitude clinic in France or Switzerland where there would be less pressure on his lungs – the sanatorium in Haute Savoi seemed to be the favourite.

Orwell had been in and out of hospitals for the last three years of his life, and the tuberculosis was probably contracted during his immersion period (1928–33) as described in *Down and Out in Paris and London*. Hospitals were also one of the favourite listening grounds of MI-6 and people had a tendency to talk to those famous.

---

[3] W. J. West, *The Larger Evils: Nineteen Eighty-Four: The Truth Behind the Satire*, 1992.

The very beautiful Sonia Brownell began to take over his routine burdens and Orwell lost control of his life from the moment he entered the University College Hospital. It was a bed from which he was never to leave. The battle for his soul had begun. He had lost the use of his typewriter.

"Opinions among his visitors varied as to whether he was dying. Some took it for granted . . . Other visitors were impressed that he was not so much struggling, but resting quietly to live."[4] "It was fairly clear that he was not going to recover; only the length of time that remained to him in doubt."[5]

Some commentators have argued that Sonia Brownell helped George Orwell through the painful last months of his life and gave him a hitherto unknown sense of joy. Others saw her as a mercenary, only interested in becoming his literary widow. After his death, she edited the four volumes of his collected essays and was fiercely protective of his estate.

". . . His marriage took place on 13 October [1949]. Marrying in a hospital involved obtaining a 'special licence'. But David Astor, his Best Man, handled all the necessary correspondence with the Archbishop of Canterbury . . . He looked unexpectedly grand and military in a smoking-jacket . . . David Astor entertained Sonia and a small party of mutual friends to a wedding luncheon at the Ritz. The signed menu was brought to Orwell. He was 46 years old, the certificate noted, and she was 31.

"After the wedding, Orwell at first rallied appreciably, then had some bad days, then good, then bad again; his temperature chart undulated greatly. He wrote only two or three letters in November, and in December they ceased entirely . . . he was reading . . . Dante's *The Divine Comedy* . . . What Morland knew could happen before they got him to a high altitude did happen. Orwell's lung haemorrhaged on the night of 21 January 1950 and he died at once and alone before Sonia could be found . . . The world heard the news on the BBC that morning. As the first sentence of his last book had said, the radios had 'all struck thirteen'."[6]

---

[4] Bernard Crick, *George Orwell: A Life*, 1992.

[5] Anthony Powell married the daughter of an Earl and was a liaison officer to London for various foreign military missions. He kept himself sane by writing *A Dance to the Music of Time*, 12 volumes characterising all the people he had ever met. Others were not so keen.

[6] Bernard Crick, *George Orwell: A Life*, 1992. In Golden Dawn coven language 21.01.1950 translates '∞1∞' or "infinite one forever" suggesting that his final death throes may have been assisted, not unlike those of his namesake, King George V.

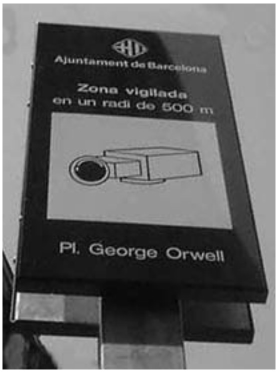
Having requested burial in accordance with the Anglican rite (the religion of MI-6), he was interred in All Saints' Churchyard, Sutton Courtenay, Oxfordshire with the simple epitaph: Here lies Eric Arthur Blair, born June 25th 1903, died January 21st 1950.

Orwell is known for his insights about the political implications of the use of language. In the essay 'Politics and the English Language', he abhorred the effects of cliché, bureaucratic euphemism, academic jargon on literary styles and ultimately on thought itself – a lot like Chaplin. Both were coalface boys.

George Orwell wrote: "The government would have the power to keep its citizens under constant surveillance" . . . "Where freedom dies, slavery thrives" . . . and coined the phrases, "memory hole" . . . "Big Brother" . . . "Room 101" . . . "doublethink" . . . "thought police" . . . "unperson". . . "newspeak" . . . "Cold War" . . . "One cannot really be a Catholic and grown up" . . . and . . .

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

"If liberty means anything at all
it means the right to tell people
what they don't want to hear."[7]



---

[7] George Orwell, *Animal Farm*, published thirteen days after Hiroshima on 17 August 1945; *Nineteen Eighty-Four*, 1949; and *Manuscript Notebook*, 1949.

Appendix 13

Was Wallis Simpson a Man

Wallis Simpson was born a man, but then so are a lot of women. She was in the range of AIS Grade 4/5, commonly known as fag-hags. These women tend to surround themselves with sexually fringe men and women. They often look manly and often cannot reproduce.

AIS is 'Androgen Insensitivity Syndrome'. It is the new PC name for 'Testicular Feminization Syndrome'. It is a biological intersex condition where the reproductive organs/genitalia are partly at variance with the genetic sex.[1]

Androgen Insensitivity Syndrome ranges from Partial AIS (PAIS) to Complete AIS (CAIS). PAIS is the partial rejection of what makes a man. CAIS is the total rejection of what makes a man.

AIS explains the condition where men have small penises and testicles and increased female characteristics and women have increased male characteristics sometimes with testicles and a full dangling penis.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

In all of these cases, the child began as XY male fetus with varying degrees of feminization. Here's how it works.

Androgen Rejection

Up to eight weeks gestation every fetus (male or female) has the capacity to develop either reproductive system and all fetus' begin as female. To create an XY male, androgens (male hormones) are required and full acceptance of androgens creates an XY male, complete with fully functioning twig and giggle berries.

At any time during the gestation of an XY male baby (from 8 to 40 weeks) if the androgen is rejected, then feminization occurs. Androgen rejection can continue on until the end of puberty. This creates varying degrees of fertility from a fully functioning man to a fully functioning woman and feminization occurs at varying degrees from a feminized male to a masculinized female.

---

[1] This is different from transsexuality (Gender Dysphoria) which identifies as belonging to the other sex; and is different from transvestitism, which is dressing as a woman, as was the case with the Duke of Kent.

The Gender Circle

An XX female is born a female and grows up to be a female. An XY male is born a male and grows up to be a male. Males with Androgen Insensitivity Grade 1 have normal sized genitalia with some feminine characteristics and some infertility, but generally reproduce as men. Grade 2 have smaller penises. Grade 3 have penises that don’t function sexually. Grade 4 is intersexed. Grade 5 looks like a female with masculinized genitalia and may be able to give birth. Grade 6 is more feminine and can generally reproduce. Grade 7 is the super feminine woman, but was an XY male at some point in the womb.

Grade 1 is the male phenotype and Grade 7 is the female phenotype.

There are two methods of grading intersexed states. The first is by grading it from Partial AIS (PAIS) to Complete AIS (CAIS). The butch feminists (XY males with Partial AIS) use this method. They go on and on about how their enlarged genitalia causes male rejection and isolates them, so they start up pink bannered websites in a bleating search of other XY males who look like women but have male bits. The second method is the AIS Clinical Grading Scheme for the phenotypic features (external appearance) modelled on the Prader Classification for Congenital Adrenal Hyperplasia (CAH).

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 Mar

Grading the Look and the Feel

PAIS ranges from the feminized male to the masculinized female with CAIS as the feminine female stemming from an XY chromosome (male). With AIS the outward genital appearance can lie anywhere along a continuum from Grade 1 (masculine and obviously male when dressed) to Grade 7 (feminine and obviously female when dressed). The AIS grades are as follows:

Grade 1: Normal sized male genitalia but with reduced virility at puberty and occasionally infertile. The penis, testicles and anus are separate.

Grade 2: Slightly smaller penis and/or testicles, one or both. Not so masculine.

Grade 3: Small penis and undescended testicles (cryptochidism) and Reifenstein syndrome. Hitler had this. It was not uncommon to the Rothschilds and illegitimate Rothschilds.

Grade 4: Ambiguous gender, mixed gender genitalia. Hard to tell whether it’s a clitoris or a penis. This masculinized vagina looks like two testicles wrapped around a hole with a penis the size of a large clitoris and huge labia often drooping down to the anus – the party surprise only a select few want. The laybia looks like testicles on ice and a common response is “She’s a man”.

Some say “the penis has been reduced to a urogenital sinus and the testicles have become labioscrotal folds”. The two holes can get pretty close together and occasionally become one. The fanny and the pisser are fused and the anus is knocking on the door for a drink.

Grade 5: It’s a female with separate urethral and vaginal orifices with a mildly enlarged clitoris (penis on ice) and only a small degree of fusion between the clitoris and anus.

Grade 6: Normal female who has developed dark coarse pubic and armpit hair at puberty.

Grade 7: Complete AIS female (CAIS) fail to develop armpit or pubic hair (downy hair only) and breasts range in size from normal to huge Tanner stage V breast. Many of these AIS Grade 7 females have no pubic or underarm hair, small pale nipples and short vaginas which need to be lengthened by masturbation, sometimes for years before intercourse.

Very sexy women can be Androgen Insensitive so don’t give them any. As an added bonus they can still be lactating when their youngest is five. This is the super-female and many AIS Grade 7 have been photographer’s models [AIS 007].

An XY male child Grades 1–3 is raised as a boy and an XY child Grades 5–7 is raised as a girl. An XY child Grade 4 is quite intersexed and the parents generally decide how the child will be dressed.

Fertility

The AIS child is conceived with male (XY) chromosomes. The embryonic testes develop inside the body and start to produce androgens, but due to androgen rejection, the external genitalia develop along female lines with the development of internal female organs suppressed by a hormone from the testes. This is known as the Mullerian Inhibitory Factor (MIF) and results in females with small male genitalia and males with small male genitalia.

Dressed males are perceived as feminine around AIS Grade 3. The problem with gender perception around dressed females occurs around AIS Grade 4 and 5. AIS Grade 4 may have a penis. AIS Grade 4 & 5 are generally raised as a female, but their genitalia are quite masculine.

Androids

A lot of these AIS Grade 4 and 5 were popping up all over the States during the 1920s and 30s and they were actually called "Androids". Their main trait was lack of menstruation and inability to have children. The CIA became very interested in these androids and they recruited Adolf Eichmann and John Money.

In 1947 John Money was recruited from New Zealand to the Psychiatric Institute of the University of Pittsburgh and then onto Harvard University (CIA) where he got a Ph.D. Money was used for AIS research amongst twins and he became known for a controversial gender-change case. After a botched circumcision he had David Reimer's parents raise their son David as a girl. This resulted in David Reimer's suicide on 5 May 2004.

Adolf Eichmann escaped Germany in 1947 and spent a year in a Catholic monastery where he was given a new identity and passport as Ricardo Klement. In 1948 he escaped to Argentina and worked for the CIA (1948–60) until he was kidnapped by the Mossad in Buenos Aires on 11 May 1960 and taken to Israel for trial.

Money was a CIA operative and Medical Advisor. Eichmann had become a CIA operative and did experiments on twins, but he wasn't a paedophile, Money was. The CIA were renown for employing and promoting sexually sick academics from post-WWII to the end of the millennium, and especially paedophiles. John Money was no exception and defended paedophilia for the CIA.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Money, with his CIA backed Ph.D., publicly and in writing, put forth the notion, which he backed as an academic (and the CIA backed him as an academic) that paedophilia was the result of "a surplus of parental love". Money also viewed heterosexuality as "societal, superficial and ideological". Because Money was backed by the CIA, his academic views held more weight than other academics.

Money's public paedophile notions were backed by the CIA because those at the top of the CIA were homosexual and paedophiles having been backed into the top ranks of the CIA by communists who ran their intelligence agencies from *their* record of CIA recruit sexual practices. Those with clean sexual records were never promoted.

Money filmed himself sexually molesting the male of one of the AIS twins. When his paedophilia became too obvious the CIA hastened his death by MAD. He got Parkinson's disease and this was rapidly advanced. John William Money (8 July 1921–7 July 2006), a Kiwi arsehole.

Wallis Simpson

At eight weeks gestation Baby Wallis (an XY chromosome fetus) began to exhibit an insensitivity to androgens (male hormones including testosterone) and did not fully develop male genitalia. Thus she was born an XY male with female outer genitalia and partially developed male internal genitalia.

She had a female body shape, reduced female characteristics, her breasts, although small, developed at puberty. She had underarm and pubic hair, did not menstruate, had no ovaries, no fallopian tubes, no uterus, could not conceive children and had a small short vagina with internal testicles.

The AIS vagina is at best two-thirds the normal length, and may be no more than a centimetre or two in length, or even just a dimple. This is called Vaginal Hypoplasia or Short Vagina. Vaginal hypoplasia can be treated by the non-surgical method of masturbation from puberty, which actually lengthens the vagina to something approximating normal, depending on the initial vaginal hypoplasia. Wallis enlarged her vagina through masturbation and a prolific sexual appetite.

In Wallis Simpson's case, she was known as the 'Shanghai Squeeze' and was said to have had "the ability to make a matchstick fell like a Havana cigar".[2] Wallis Simpson was AIS Grade 4/5. Wallis Simpson was born a man.

Edward, Prince of Wales/King Edward VIII

Some PAIS babies may be raised as males as was the case with King Edward VIII who had a small penis and was rampantly homosexual prior to his weeklong engagement to the Queen Mother, and his subsequent arranged meeting with Wallis Simpson. She was the only person who seemed able to satisfy Prince Edward and she used to skite about it.

Edward, Prince of Wales was AIS Grade 3 and had a small penis and undescended testicles. Wallis Simpson was AIS Grade 4/5 with a small vagina and internalised male sexual organs. Both men and women with AIS have problems with fertility. Even slight AIS can contribute to infertility in otherwise normal men and both Edward and Wallis were infertile.

An AIS Grade 4/5 and Grade 5 trait is to destroy the sexuality and direction of drive of the live-in male partner. AIS Grade 3 men tend to travel diligently in the direction they're given, until another direction is given and they bounce in that new direction. Hence Wallis Simpson could treat King Edward VIII as her lapdog – birds of a feather flock together.

AIS Grade 3 men tend to be taxi drivers, whether political or physical. Hitler was AIS Grade 3 and was a political taxi driver. His High Command often complained about his constant change of direction.

[2] Source: w w w.medhelp.org, AIS website and *AIIaS* newsletter.

Treatment

XY females with testes (AIS Grade 4) have lower oestrogen levels than XX females with ovaries (normal) and XY CAIS females (AIS Grade 7), who are immune to being masculinized due to their complete insensitivity to androgens. The CAIS Grade 7 are known for their huge Tanner stage V breasts, model looks and masculine drive.

However at puberty XY females with testes' can spontaneously feminize. If this does not occur, their gonads can be removed aged 20. This is called a Gonadectomy or Orchidectomy. A Gonadectomy can bring about osteoporosis (bone thinning), menopause and cardiovascular disease and hormone replacement therapy (HRT) is recommended. HRT also helps initiate puberty in 10-11-year-old AIS females.

Skin grafts and sections from the intestine can be used to lengthen the vagina, but vaginoplasty should be avoided in early childhood.

With today's technology, "it might be possible for primitive sperm material extracted from intact AIS testes to be used to fertilise a donor egg."[3] That is, Wallis Simpson may have been able to conceive a child as the male and use an egg donor and rent-a-womb – thus giving her the possibility of half the King's ransom.[4]

In 50% of the AIS Grade 4/5 females, the undescended testes can result in a groin hernia during infancy. In the remaining 50% undescended testes may not be discovered until a failure to menstruate at puberty. The AIS Grade 4/5 adult will look like a girl and can lean towards any sexuality. AIS adult females with their testes removed say their testes never bothered them.

Androids in New Zealand

The condition of females being perceived as men is common in New Zealand, especially in politics, and especially in the Labour Party (New Communist) where many of the females have few female characteristics, have not reproduced and have married homosexuals and child-sex abusers as a form of mutual cover. (The Moneys in the Bag.)

When these Grade 4 & 5 women are heard on the radio they sound like men. Some of these masculine females (who actually feminized males) resort to hormone replacement therapy, but it doesn't seem to work for long, and certainly not between election photos and election speeches. Thus, in mid-term politics, New Zealanders are treated to masculine sounding AIS Grade 4 & 5 females who have enlarged their vaginas through masturbation, often helping each other in the process. This has resulted in the Labour Party being correctly diagnosed as "Fabian Fisters" and "Butch Lesbians". The Androgenous fist fight is a long journey to the middle.

---

[3] Source: w w w.medhelp.org, AIS website and *AllaS* newsletter.

[4] "Half the King's ransom" meant that if a man gave birth he was entiled to half the King's possessions. This was removed from the law books during the 1950s as the result of chromosome research.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

New Zealand's Prime Minister Helen Clark is a case in point. She has the dressed appearance of AIS Grade 4/5 and looks a lot like the AIS Grade 3 Adolf Hitler. Both were 56 years old when last photographed.

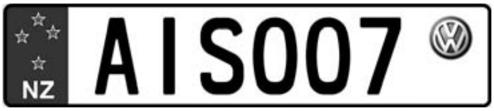
Amongst the tea ladys of the civil service, Helen Clark is known as "Mrs Bull" and there is some truth to the statement "She's a man".

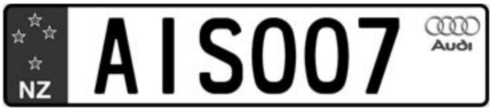
Baby Helen was conceived an XY male and at some later date she rejected the androgen but retained a lot of the male characteristics.

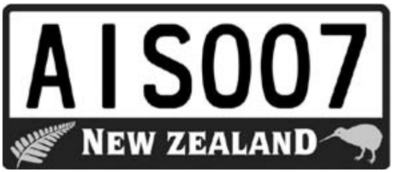
Medically it can be said that Helen Clark was born male.

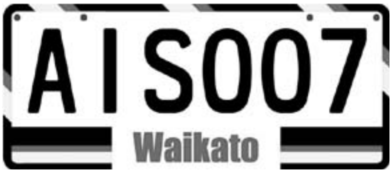
What is so scary is that this SheMan, with her voluntary radical hysterectamy in December 1976/January 1977, is touted as being the next Secretary General of the United Nations. That would make her a SheDevil.

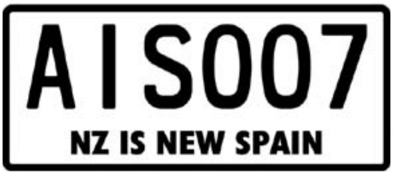
> AIS has previously been known as Androgen Resistance Syndrome, Feminizing Testes Syndrome, Male Pseudo-hermaphroditism, Goldberg-Maxwell Syndrome (CAIS), Morris's Syndrome (CAIS), Lub's Syndrome (PAIS), Gilbert-Dreyfus Syndrome (PAIS), Reifenstein Syndrome (PAIS) and Rosewater Syndrome (PAIS). Either a lot of sex doctors were Jews or a lot of Jews were inter-sexed. Other XX female conditions with some AIS-like features include: Mayer Rokitansky Kuster Hauser (MRKH) Syndrome and Mullerian dysgenesis. Other XY male conditions with some AIS-like features include: 5 alpha-reductase deficiency, 17 keto-steroid reductase deficiency, Denys-Drash Syndrome, Leydig cell hypoplasia, Smith-Lemli-Opitz Syndrome and Swyer Syndrome (XY gonadal dysgenesis).
>
> The Danish patient register, 1992 "suggesting an incidence of 1 in 20,400 XY births (hospitalized cases only, so true incidence probably higher). PAIS may be only about 1/10 as common as CAIS."
>
> Source, AIS website and AlIaS newsletter, w w w.medhelp.org.



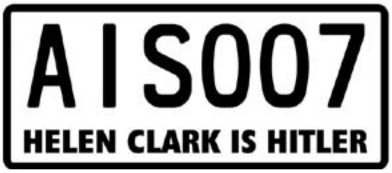

NZ
AIS007
Audi

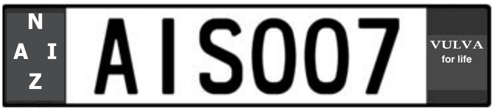

AIS007
NEW ZEALAND

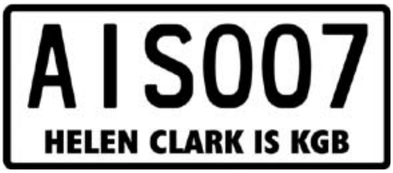

AIS007
Waikato

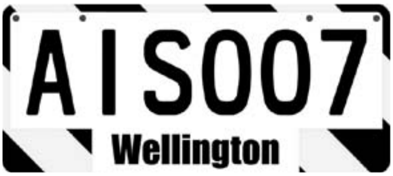

AIS007
NZ IS NEW SPAIN

tinumparty.org -7 March 2013


AIS007
HELEN CLARK IS HITLER


N
A I
Z
AIS007
VULVA
for life


AIS007
HELEN CLARK IS KGB


AIS007
Wellington

Wallis Simpson
AIS Grade 4/5

King Edward VIII
AIS Grade 3

Adolf Hitler
AIS Grade 3

Helen Clark
AIS Grade 5

Bibliography

(Current first)

Politics Politics Politics

Louis Bűlow, The Dwight D. Eisenhower Library, 2002.

Tony McCarthy, 'IRISH–AMERICAN HITLERS', ***Irish Roots Magazine***, 2002.

Ronald Hayman, ***HITLER AND GELI***, published by Bloomsbury, 1998.

Roland Perry, ***THE FIFTH MAN***, Pan Books, London, 1994.

Dmitri Volkogonov, ***LENIN***, A New Biography, The Free Press, 1994.

Webster Griffin Tarpley and Anton Chaitkin, ***GEORGE BUSH, The Unauthorised Biography***, Executive Intelligence Review, 1992, PO Box 17390, Washington DC, 20041-0390.

DOPE INC., written by the editors of Executive Intelligence Review magazine, 1992, 3rd Edition, Ben Franklin Booksellers, 107 South King St, Leesburg, Virginia 20075, phone (703) 777 361, Fax, (703) 777 8287.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Paula (Hitler) Wolf, ***HE WAS STILL MY BROTHER***, VWB, Berlin, 1992.

John Pilger, ***A SECRET COUNTRY***, Vintage, 1992.

Alan Bullock, ***HITLER AND STALIN***, ***Parallel Lives***, Harper Collins, 1991.

Ronald W. Clark, ***LENIN***, A Biography, Harper & Row Publishers, 1988.

Charles Higham, ***WALLIS, SECRET LIVES OF THE DUCHESS OF WINDSOR, The Scandalous Truth about the Century's Most Infamous Woman***, Sidgwick & Jackson Ltd, 1988.

Valdamar Valerian, ***THE MATRIX***, Arcturus Book Service, GA, 1988.

Adolf Hitler, ***HITLER'S SECRET BOOK***, Introduction by Telford Taylor, Grove Press, Inc., N.Y., 1961, 1983.

Bridget (Brigid Elisabeth) Dowling, ***THE MEMOIRS OF BRIDGET HITLER***, edited by Michael Unger, Duckworth and Co Ltd, 1979.

John Barron, ***KGB, The Secret Work of the Soviet Secret Agents***, Hodder and Stoughton, The Readers Digest Press, 1974, 1975.

Richard Hanser, ***PRELUDE TO TERROR***, ***The Rise of Hitler***, Rupert Harris-Davis, London, 1971.

N. K. Krupskaya, ***REMINISCENCES OF LENIN***, International Publishers, 1960.

William Guy Carr, R.D., Commander R.C.N., ***PAWNS IN THE GAME***, USA, 1958, 1959, 1960, 1961, 1962, 1978 etc.

Alois Hitler (William Patrick Hitler), ***ADOLF HITLER***, 1946.

THE HITLER SOURCE BOOK, New York American, Nov. 1940.

Pauline Kohler, ***I WAS HITLER'S MAID***, J. Long, France, 1940.

Werner Sombart, ***THE JEWS AND MODERN CAPITALISM***, T. Fisherunwin, London, 1913, also 1916, 1951, 1962, 1967.

War War War

Nigel Cawthorne, ***WWII***, ***Battles of the Second World War***, Selectabook Ltd, Wiltshire, 2004.

Nigel Cawthorne, ***TYRANTS***, ***History's Most Evil Despots & Dictators***, Bookmart Limited, Leicester, 2004 on license from Arcturus Publishing Limited, London.

Brian Cassidy, ***FLYING EMPIRES, Short 'C' class Empire Flying Boats***, Queen's Parade Press, 2004.

Nigel Cawthorne, ***D-DAY***, ***Dawn of Heroes***, ***6 June 1944, 60th Anniversary Special Edition***, Selectabook Ltd, Wiltshire, 2004. Originally published as ***FIGHTING THEM ON THE BEACHES***, ***The D-Day Landings***, June 6, 1944, Arcturus Publishing Limited, London, 2002.

Lynn Picknet, Clive Prince and Stephen Prior, ***DOUBLE STANDARDS: The Rudolf Hess Cover-up***, Warner Books, First Books Library, Little Brown, UK, September 2002.

John Harris and M. J. Trow, ***HESS: THE BRITISH CONSPIRACY***, Carlton Books, 2000.

J. C. Masterman, ***DOUBLE CROSS SYSTEM***, ***The Incredible True Story of How Nazi Spies were turned into Double Agents***, Lions Press, New York, 2000.

Jon E. Lewis, ***TRUE WAR STORIES***, ***Eyewitness Accounts of Life on the Front Line in the Words of the Ordinary Soldier***, Constable & Robinson Ltd, London, 2004, 1998.

treasurer@platinumparty.org

BRITISH WARPLANES OF WORLD WAR II, edited by Daniel J. March, Airtime Publishing, 1998.

Christopher Creighton (James Bond) ***OPJB***, ***The Last Great Secret of the Second World War***, Simon & Schuster, 1996.

Hugh Thomas, ***DOPPELGÄNGERS***, ***The Truth about the Bodies in the Berlin Bunker***, published by BCA by arrangement with Fourth Estate Limited, 1995.

Kevin Abrams & Scott Lively, ***THE PINK SWASTIKA, Homosexuality in the Nazi Party***, Founders Publishing Company, Oregon, 1995.

William B. Breuer, ***FEUDING ALLIES***, ***The Private Wars of the High Command***, John Wiley & Sons, Inc., 1995.

Donald McCormick, ***THE LIFE OF IAN FLEMING***, published by Peter Owen, London, 1993.

William H. Honan, ***VISIONS OF INFAMY***, ***The Untold Story of How Journalist Hector C. Bywater Devised the Plans that led to Pearl Harbor***, St. Martin's Press, New York, 1991.

F. W. Winterbotham, ***THE ULTRA SPY; An Autobiography***, Papermac, 1991.

Robert L. Gandt, ***CHINA CLIPPER***, Naval Institute Press, 1991.

James Follett, ***A CAGE OF EAGLES***, pub. Wallington, Severn House, 1990.

Robin Mackness, ***ORADOUR: MASSACRE AND AFTERMATH***, Ulverscroft Large Print, 1988.

Geoffry Rice, ***BLACK NOVEMBER, The 1918 Influenza Epidemic in New Zealand***, Allen & Unwin, Historical Branch, Department of Internal Affairs, 1988.

Peter Padfield, ***HESS: FLIGHT OF THE FÜHRER***, Orion, 1988, 1991.

Anthony Cave Brown, ***THE SECRET SERVANT***, ***The Life of Sir Stewart Menzies, Churchill's Spymaster***, A Sphere Book, 1988.

Vladimir Karpov, ***RUSSIA AT WAR, 1941–45***, Stanley Paul & Co Ltd, London, 1987.

David Irving, ***CHURCHILL'S WAR, Volume One, The Struggle for Power***, Veritas Publishing, 1987.

Kenneth Macksey, ***MILITARY ERRORS OF WORLD WAR TWO***, Arms and Armour Press, 1987.

Arnold Kramish, ***THE GRIFFIN, The Greatest Untold Espionage Story of World War II***, Houghton Mifflin Company, 1986.

Christopher Andrew, ***SECRET SERVICE, The Making of the British Intelligence Community***, Heinemann, London, 1985.

Ben E. Swearingen, ***THE MYSTERY OF HERMANN GOERING'S SUICIDE***, Robert Hale Limited, 1984, 1985, 1990.

Wolfgang Paul, ***HERMANN GÖRING, Hitler Paladin or Puppet?***, translated by Helmut Bögler, Arms and Armour Press, 1983 in German and 1998 in English.

David Fisher, ***THE WAR MAGICIAN***, pub. Coward-McCann, NY, 1983.

Peter Allen, ***THE CROWN AND THE SWASTIKA***, pub. R. Hale, London, 1983.

David Irving, ***THE SECRET DIARIES OF HITLER'S DOCTOR***, Sidgwick and Jackson, 1983.

Ellic Howe, ***THE BLACK GAME***, pub. Joseph, London, 1982.

Decie Denholm (Editor), ***BEHIND THE LINES, One Woman's War 1914–18***, Collins, 1982.

Donald M. McKale, ***HITLER, The Survival Myth***, Briarcliff Manor, New York, 1981, updated 3rd edition, Cooper Square Press, 2001.

Peter Vansittart, ***VOICES FROM THE GREAT WAR***, Pimlico, 2003; first published by Johnathan Cape in 1981.

Brian Garfield, ***THE PALADIN***, MacMillian London Limited, 1980.

Harry Patterson, ***TO CATCH A KING***, Hutchinson & Co Ltd, 1980.

Hugh Thomas, ***THE MURDER OF RUDOLF HESS***, 1979; also as ***HESS: A TALE OF TWO MURDERS***, 1988, Hodder & Stoughton.

P. W. Stahl, ***KG 200***, James Publishing, 1979. Originally titled ***Geheimgeschwader*** [**Secret Squadron**] KG-200 die Wharacitnach über 30 jahren.

Hugh Verity DSO & Bar DFC, ***PILOT BIOGRAPHY***, Crécy, 2001; and Hugh Verity, ***WE LANDED BY MOONLIGHT***, pub. Ian Allan, 1978.

Martin Streetly, ***CONFOUND & DESTROY, 100 Group and the Bomber Support Campaign***, Jane's Publishing Company Limited, 1978, 1985.

F. W. Winterbotham, ***THE NAZI CONNECTION***, Weidenfeld & Nicholson, London, 1978.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Tony Wood and Bill Gunston, ***HITLER'S LUFTWAFFE, A Pictorial History and Technical Encyclopaedia of Hitler's Air Power in World War II***, Salamander Books, London, 1978.

W. Averell Harriman and Elie Abel, ***SPECIAL ENVOY to Churchill and Stalin, 1941–1946***, Hutchinson & Co Ltd, London, 1976.

Albert Speer, ***SPANDAU, The Secret Diaries***, translated by Richard and Clara Winston, Collins, London, 1976.

John Toland, ***ADOLF HITLER***, Doubleday & Company Inc., NY, 1976.

Anthony Cave Brown, ***BODYGUARD OF LIES***, Harper & Row, NY, 1975.

F.W. Winterbotham, ***THE ULTRA SECRET***, Weidenfeld & Nicholson, 1975.

Joachim C. Fest, ***HITLER***, translated from the German by Richard and Clara Winston, Weidenfeld and Nicholson, London, 1974.

Ladislas Farago, ***AFTERMATH***, Hodder and Stoughton, 1974.

Ladislas Farago, ***THE GAME OF THE FOXES, British and German Intelligence Operations and Personalities which Changed the Course of the Second World War***, Hodder and Stoughton, 1972.

Harry Elmer Barnes, ***PEARL HARBOR AFTER A QUARTER OF A CENTURY***, published in the journal Left and Right, 1968. Barnes 'died' less than a week after finishing the final draft on 25 August 1968.

George Martelli, ***AGENT EXTRAORDINARY***, George Martelli & Michel Hollard, 1960; reprinted as ***THE MAN WHO SAVED LONDON***, Collins, London and Glasgow, 1967.

Geoffrey Norris, ***THE SHORT SUNDERLAND***, Profile Publications, 1967.

James Leasor, ***THE UNINVITED ENVOY***, House of Stratus, 1962, 2001.

Sefton Delmer, ***WORLD WAR 2 BLACK PROPAGANDA***, *The Viking Press,* 1962.

William Green, ***WAR PLANES OF THE SECOND WORLD WAR, Vol. 5***, **'Flying Boats'**, Doubleday and Company, 1962.

Adolf Hitler, ***HITLER'S SECRET BOOK, The Long-Hidden Papers of Hitler's Confidential Aims for World Conquest***. Introduction by Telford Taylor, transl. by Salvator Attanasio, Grove Press, Inc, NY, 1961.

Heinz Conradis, ***DESIGN FOR FLIGHT, The Kurt Tank Story***, translated from the German by Kenneth Kettle, Macdonald & Co (Publishers) Ltd, London, 1960.

Charles Drage, ***THE AMIABLE PRUSSIAN***, pub. Anthony Blond, 1958.

Lt.Col. A.P. Scotland OBE, ***THE LONDON CAGE***, William Clowes and Sons, Limited, London and Beccles, 1957.

Robert Merle, ***DEATH IS MY TRADE***, Derek Verschoyle, London, 1954.

August Kubizek, ***THE YOUNG HITLER I KNEW***, Tower Book, 1954; also ***ADOLF HITLER, MEIN JUGENDFREUND*** (*My Youth Friend*).

Adolf Galland, ***THE FIRST AND THE LAST, The German Fighter Force in World War II***, 1953, translated by Mervin Savill, Methuen, London, 1955.

Hugh Trevor-Roper, ***THE LAST DAYS OF HITLER***, MacMillan, London, 1947, sixth edition 1987.

Ernst Carl, ***ONE AGAINST ENGLAND***, Jarrolds, London Ltd, 1935.

Fritz Joubert Duquesne, ***THE MAN WHO KILLED KITCHENER: The Life of Fritz Joubert Duquesne***, Williams Faro Inc, New York, 1932. This was also published under the alias Clement Wood.

Hector C. Bywater, ***THE SECRET PURPOSES***, Constable & Co, London, 1932.

Hector C. Bywater, ***THE GREAT PACIFIC WAR***, 1925, St. Martin's Press, New York, 1991.

Hector C. Bywater, ***SEA POWER IN THE PACIFIC: A Study of the American-Japanese Naval Problem***, London, 1921.

Christof Friedrich (a pseudonym for Ernst Zündel), ***GERMANY'S ANTARCTIC CLAIM***, ***Secret Nazi Polar Expeditions***.

Psychology Psychology Psychology

Mel Gordon, ***HITLER'S JEWISH CLAIRVOYANT***, Feral House, 2002; reviewed by The Linking Ring, The Official Publication of the International Brotherhood of Magicians, September 2002.

L. Sterpellone, ***VERY ILLUSTRIOUS PATIENTS***, Antonio Delfino Editore, 1987.

Walter Langer, ***THE MIND OF ADOLF HITLER***, Pan Books, 1972.

THE OSS [CIA] ***PSYCHOLOGICAL PROFILE OF HITLER, Part Four***.

Adolf Hitler, ***MEIN KAMPF*** (*My Struggle*), written in 1925, Hurst & Blackett Ltd, London, 1933.

Espayo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

Documentaries Documentaries Documentaries

Alex Turner (researcher), ***HITLER OF THE ANDES***, a film by David Howards and Madoc Roberts for Channel Four Television Corporation, 2002, as screened on Discovery Channel, 29/30 October 2004, 11.30 pm–0.30 am.

CAMBRIDGE SPIES, 3 September 2003, TV1.

David Gardner, ***LAST OF THE HITLERS***, a film by David Howards and Madoc Roberts, made for Channel 5 Television, screened on Prime TV, 29 July 2003.

WAS HITLER GAY? Directed by Fenton Bailey, Executive Producers Rand Barbato and Jacquie Lawrence, Producer Gabriel Rotello, Narrator Dennis Lawson, World of Wonder Production, Channel 5, 2002, as screened on TV3, 5 February 2004, 9.30 pm.

DESTINATION DISASTER, directed by Cheryl Cameron, Ninox Films Limited, 2002, screened on TV1, 1 November 2003.

THE NAZIS, ***A Warning from History***, BBC, screened on TV1, August 1998.

Films Films Films

Guillermo DelToro, ***HELLBOY***, Columbia Pictures, 2004.

John Cork and Antonia de Barton-Watson, ***INSIDE DR. NO***, MGM Home Entertainment, 2000.

Harry Saltzman and Albert R. (Cubby) Broccoli (producers), Ian Fleming (author), ***DR. NO***, United Artists, 1962.

THE GREAT DICTATOR, produced, written, directed and scored by Charles Chaplin, 1940. The Chaplin Collection, mk2, directed by Kevin Brownlow and Michael Kroft, produced by Patrick Stanbury. Produced for Turner Classic Movies in association with BBC TV. ***The Tramp and the Dictator***, A photoplay and Spiegel TV Production, 2001.

David O. Selznick/Margaret Mitchell, ***GONE WITH THE WIND***, Metro-Goldwyn-Mayer, 1939.

FBI Files FBI Files FBI Files

Charlie Chaplin, ***FBI File Number 100-127090***, 1910–1952, 2063 pages.

Affidavits Affidavits Affidavits

Affidavit of Abdallah Melaouhi, 17 February 1994.

Affidavit of Professor Spann of the Institute of Forensic Medicine, 21 August 1987.

Affidavit of Professor Eisenmenger, Director of the Institute of Forensic Medicine, Munich, 21 August 1987.

Newspapers, Magazines and Articles . . .

NEW ZEALAND WEEKEND HERALD, 29 July 2006.

David Gollust, ***VOICE OF AMERICA NEWS***, Washington, 30 July, 2003.

Reuben Black, 'History', ***THE WIND, New Zealand Russian Monthly, Issue 81***, June 2003, p. 3.

John Maynard, ***AEROPLANE magazine***, December 2001.

Terry Gwynn-Jones, *The Flying Porcupine Earns Its Name*, ***AVIATION HISTORY***, March 1999.

Rob Nesbit, *A Travesty of the Truth*, ***AEROPLANE monthly***.

OTAGO DAILY TIMES, 30 April 1990.

THE ILLUSTRATED LONDON NEWS, January to December, 1947.

Reference & Cross-checks . . .

REFERENCE ATLAS OF THE WORLD, 2003.

David Crystal, ***THE CAMBRIDGE BIOGRAPHICAL ENCYCLOPEDIA***, Second Edition, 1998.

Alain Boureau, ***THE LORD'S FIRST NIGHT: The Myth of the Droit de Cuissage***, translated by Lydia G. Cochrane, University of Chicago Press, 1998.

NEW ETHICALS CATALOGUE, The Basis of a System of Complete Drug Information, Vol. 34, No. 2, Adia International, A Wolters Kluwer Company, November 1997.

Judy Pearsall and Bill Trumble, ***OXFORD ENGLISH REFERENCE DICTIONARY***, Second Edition, 1996.

PEARS CYCLOPAEDIA, ***86th Edition, Anniversary Edition***, 1897–1977, Pelham Books, 1977.

UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN DICTIONARY OF MIDDLE ENGLISH.

ENCYCLOPAEDIA BRITANNICA, 15th Edition, Volume 10.

Claude Jordan, ***VOYAGES HISTORIQUES DE L'EUROPE***, Volume IV, 1694.

World Wide Web . . .

The 4 July 2003 was '***World Anti-Independence Day***' after which any government department could track anyone's computer.

Henry Makow PhD, ***The 'Ugly' Cause Of World War Two, The Murder Of Lord Erroll*** . . . (*White Mischief*) 30 April 2006.

FINANCIAL WIZARDS & WEALTHY CULTS: The Rothschild Bloodline, May 2005.

Chris Jones, ***BBC New Profiles Unit***, 29 January 2003 and several other related websites.

Rob Evans and David Hencke, ***WALLIS SIMPSON, The Nazi Minister, the Telltale Monk and an FBI Plot***, London Guardian, 29 June 2002.

Leonard Ingrams, ***THE BRITISH CONSPIRACY, Secret Agents, The Real 007s***, 2002.

AIS website and ***AlIaS newsletter***, www.medhelp.org,

US SECRET SERVICE

THE CIA WORLD FACTBOOK

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

The signature of Intelligence understanding used to be
“I understand Red Mercury.”

Now its
“I understand how **RA**bbits **F**ornicate.”

. . . **Fucking RAbbits** . . .

Espavo Soze - treasurer@[illegible].org 7 March 2013

Biographies

Greg Hallett trained in various psychological models in parallel with his architecture degree and training. He travelled widely behind the Iron Curtain during the Cold War, hitchhiking on planes and making bunks out of airmail bags to party and report between cities. His contacts in Eastern Europe led to deep penetration of the Soviet State, how it functioned and how it was to colonise the West. It was these qualifications that led him to buy buildings in Moscow immediately after the Berlin Wall fell. This led to interviews with the KGB and their revelations about the planned sex-communism and deconstruction of Westerners. What the Soviets planned for the West happened in the West. Equally all modern history can be dated back to 1945. What Hitler planned for the world happened to the world over the next sixty years.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

"Before and after this meeting intelligence had a pattern of attaching themselves to me and the first person to do so was the King's doctor in 1967, quickly followed by the Queen's brother. In the build up to the Soviet meetings, those with intelligence backgrounds provided me with whatever training and cover they saw fit. Those with CIA backgrounds briefed me heavily from America to Greece and joined me in one operation prior. No operation was ever official, nor were they written up. Cover included haircuts, clothing, relationships, travel arrangements, concise and pertinent history briefings, word of mouth . . . and denial.

"I interviewed the KGB in Moscow on 9 December 1989 at a point when they were open, due to lack of pay. At the time you could buy information for the price of a meal. This led to some psychological information being supplied which led to international contacts, further training and meetings with James Bond III and the Spymaster. The Spymaster and other intelligence operatives have been briefing me for the past four years, resulting in ten books – four in this immediate series."

The Spymaster says that he will often go on operations and end up in entirely the wrong place with the wrong people at the wrong time, but always much wiser. Greg Hallett's attitude to history has been similar and the best information is uncovered by accident and without intention . . . "Perhaps the best intelligence gathering method is good table manners, good mental health, no fear, a small amount of wit, and the most ridiculous levels of courage that border on sheer stupidity to those who calculate such risk-and-rewards."

"One of the best intelligence gathering exercises I ever did was to stand in Moscow's Red Square at 1.23 pm on 5 December 1989 and yell out 'Mokrie Dela' [Wet Liquidations] at the top of my voice. This attracted spies to me like shit to a blanket. It also attracted sympathisers and sympathetic spies."

When the Spymaster teamed up with Greg Hallett they found they shared insights and historical answers to many of the controversies of Europe from WWII to the Cold War and the present . . . not disregarding aspects of the future. In listening to each other's stories they noted a lot of common ground and have attempted to lay this bare.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

Through such coincidences, history is often more explicable to the ordinary man than a lot of complicated analysis. After embedded historians, we found 'filling-in-the-gaps analysis' to be a primary cause of ill-informed history. "Field experience is everything. Independent field experience is even better and accidental independent field experience is history altering."

The Spymaster has worked in a background of undeclared hostilities in many countries over many decades. He has done undercover amongst Nazis, Communists, Marxists and some of the most vicious gangs of criminals in New Zealand. Several times other people have been killed in his place in cases of mistaken identity. The Spymaster has been arrested more times than he can remember and by more outfits than he can remember and has been on both sides of enforcement operations.

The Spymaster has an in-depth knowledge of offenders in New Zealand and overseas and is often sought out by people in high places. Former Prime Minister Rob Muldoon: "If St Peter ever made a mistake and let you into heaven, there'd be a fistfight in five minutes".

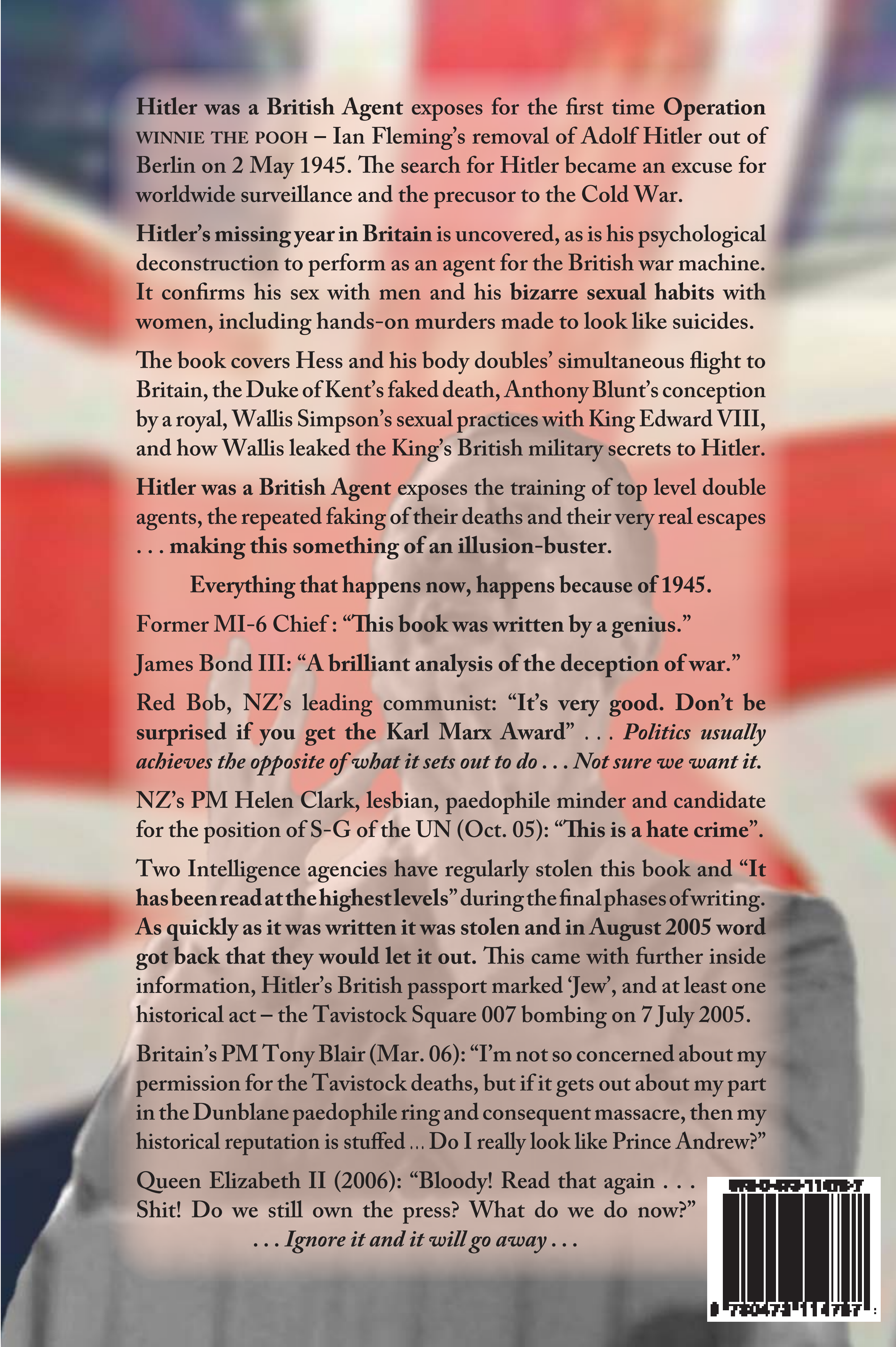
Many intelligence officers have been interviewed for this book and they have given the low-down on the many wars from 1936. In some cases, they, or their fathers, were the main players in the vignettes. These personal histories date back to the Spanish Civil War with George Orwell and redefine the origins of *Animal Farm*.

Greg Hallett and the Spymaster have teamed up to give you this insight into how the enemies of war are created and how enemies secretly join forces behind the veil of war. This book is not a dream within a dream, but a reality within a reality and the authors wake up each morning content they're still alive.

Above: The Spymaster shows his face.
Opposite: The author on his way to The Wall, Central Park, 4th July 1988.

www.moontruth.com

As goes Hitler, so goes the moon . . . if you can't make it . . . fake it.



Hitler was a British Agent exposes for the first time **Operation** WINNIE THE POOH – Ian Fleming's removal of Adolf Hitler out of Berlin on 2 May 1945. The search for Hitler became an excuse for worldwide surveillance and the precusor to the Cold War.

Hitler's missing year in Britain is uncovered, as is his psychological deconstruction to perform as an agent for the British war machine. It confirms his sex with men and his **bizarre sexual habits** with women, including hands-on murders made to look like suicides.

The book covers Hess and his body doubles' simultaneous flight to Britain, the Duke of Kent's faked death, Anthony Blunt's conception by a royal, Wallis Simpson's sexual practices with King Edward VIII, and how Wallis leaked the King's British military secrets to Hitler.

Hitler was a British Agent exposes the training of top level double agents, the repeated faking of their deaths and their very real escapes . . . **making this something of an illusion-buster.**

Everything that happens now, happens because of 1945.

Former MI-6 Chief : **"This book was written by a genius."**

James Bond III: **"A brilliant analysis of the deception of war."**

Red Bob, NZ's leading communist: **"It's very good. Don't be surprised if you get the Karl Marx Award"** . . . *Politics usually achieves the opposite of what it sets out to do . . . Not sure we want it.*

NZ's PM Helen Clark, lesbian, paedophile minder and candidate for the position of S-G of the UN (Oct. 05): **"This is a hate crime"**.

Two Intelligence agencies have regularly stolen this book and **"It has been read at the highest levels"** during the final phases of writing. **As quickly as it was written it was stolen and in August 2005 word got back that they would let it out.** This came with further inside information, Hitler's British passport marked 'Jew', and at least one historical act – the Tavistock Square 007 bombing on 7 July 2005.

Britain's PM Tony Blair (Mar. 06): "I'm not so concerned about my permission for the Tavistock deaths, but if it gets out about my part in the Dunblane paedophile ring and consequent massacre, then my historical reputation is stuffed ... Do I really look like Prince Andrew?"

Queen Elizabeth II (2006): "Bloody! Read that again . . . Shit! Do we still own the press? What do we do now?"

. . . Ignore it and it will go away . . .

INDEX

Symbols

007, 5 pm, 2 May 1945 or 1700 hrs on 02.05.1945, 007∞.007∞ 359
10.5 mm SS state-sanctioned signature gun 317, 321
10 trillion dinosaurs 391
1 May, most significant day in political, occult, social engineering calendar 330
25,000 stolen children 301
50,000 Iraqis have miraculously not died 385
7 plans to get Hitler out of Germany 372
87 octane avgas 122, 181
9-11, American self-sabotage, "another Pearl Harbor" 388

A

Abbeville, NW France 125-27, 149
Abdallah Melaouhi 146
abdicate 261-65, 270-73
Abracadabra 256
Abwehr 41, 58,
number carrying agent 187, 199, 281
accused of manipulating currency, Duke & Duchess of Windsor 265
a child in a woman's body 278
acid-test blueprint for what next society will become 401
Act of Settlement 207
Adam Weishaupt, agenda of Illuminati, 249
additional & unexplained body attributed to Rudolf Hess 194
Adolf Hitler British war machine's most valuable agent 338
Adolf Hitler, Edmund Hitler, 1912 394
Adolf Hitler was dead by 1952/54/56 340
Adolfus, Adi, Adolf, Hitler 21
Aesopian Code 314
affair with black actress 268
Afghanistan, drugs 384
agent provocateur 35
Aide de Camp to Her Majesty (ADC) 204
aircraft cobbled together 47
Aldershot 35, 143, 147
Alexander the Great, necrophiliac 81
alibi 25, 28, 69-70
Allied media capable raising dead 385
Alois Hitler/Alois Eberle/Alois Hiller 355
Amalgam fillings 91-92
America's Vice-Pres. Dick Cheney admits to meeting with Saddam Hussein 249
America, a fascist oligarchy controlling socialist masses 317-18, 328, 355, 359
American Aviation Industry 164
American Revolution 26
Amphetamine 276
A mystery wrapped in a riddle inside an enigma 392
Andreas Kronstaedt, Hitler's doppelgänger in Prague 116-17
Angela née Raubal Hitler 26-29
Anglo-German peace 147
Anglophile 48, 54-55, 77
Anna Wolkoff, Nazi spy, daughter of Admiral Wolkoff, dressmaker to Simpson & Duchess of Kent 271-72
Antarctica 317, 370-72, 392-93
anti-gas pills 398
anti-Semitic 48, 53
Anti-Surface Vessel, Asian apartment 178, 215
appeasement 57
Arafat, Yasser, Egyptian Israeli-American agent, ran Palestine 382-84, 392
arch-hypocrite 100
Archbishop Makarios III, Mikhail Khristodoulou Mouskos 302
Arctic Circle 146
Argentina, 30 January 1992 opening of Nazi files 157-158, 372-81, 392
Argyllshire, Simon Fraser unpop., 172, 179
ArmyIntell.,plainclothedUndercover 35,41
Arthur Gouge, Sir, Short Sunderland, Vice-Chairman of Saunders-Roe, Freemason, President of Royal Aeronautical Society, 162-63, 181, 212, cited for a knighthood for self-sabotage 216-18
art student 21-23
as bent as a dingo's hind-leg 213
as dull as dishwater 174
Asian apartment 178, 215
assassin 34
as thick as bulkheads on the Bismarck 210
astrology 119-20
ASV Mark II radar 215-16, 218, 222
as voice of Hitler from beyond grave 347
Asyl für Obdachlose shelter for men 21

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

Attlee, Prime Minister (July 1945-51) 352
Auditory hallucinations 90
Augsberg (same place as Augsburg) 138-39
Augsburg, 30 km Nth of Landsberg Prison 126
Austro-Hungarian 34
automatic pilot 188-89
autopsy 297-98, 306, 317
Axmann, Artur, one-armed Hitler Youth director 306, 317-19, 329, 332, 334-35

B

babushkas (stupid Russians) 314
Bank of England 116
Barcelona 287-89, 293-94
Barnao 59-60
barometric bomb 295
Basil Liddell Hart 90
Baur, Guppenführer Hansl, Hitler's pilot 334, 346, 373
Bavaria, the cradle of Nazism 17, 42
Bavarian Regiment 34
Beatles 322-23
Beatrix Potter, Mrs William Heelis 237, 401
Beaufighters 208
beer-cellar revolution 41
Beethoven, code name 212
Beetz, Standartenführer, Hitler's second pilot 334-35
Being There, Eve/Eva Braun 412
Below, Nicolaus von, Leutnant-Colonel Hitler's Luftwaffe adjutant 309, 318, 323, 336
bent world, double agents profited most 48
Berchtesgaden 27, 282
Berghof, Obersalzberg, Berchtesgaden Bavarian Alps 362-63
Bertram Ramsay, Admiral 230
Betar, Bolshevik & Tsarist Intell. 101
Bible, not a document for enlightenment supports paranoia 83, 146
Birdham Military Camp 280-81, 342, 344
bisexual 35, 56
Bishop of Linz 16
Bismarck, German Chancellor, mid-1800s 141-42
Black Dog of depression, Churchill 106
Black Forest 142
Black Hand 34
blackmail 50, 72-75, 159, 211, 268, 342, 410
Black Velvet, British government's arms & drug dealing, Air Police 213
Blair, Tony, British Prime Minister, occultist, rock spider, not immune to bribes 384-85, 391-92. *See also* Robertson Lord George, secretary general of NATO *See also* Thomas Hamilton
bled white, British were 154
blitzkrieg, lightning war 125-28, 136-38 140-41, 154, 408
blood found of different type 317
blue dress 296-97, 306, 315, 324-25
Blunt, Anthony, affair w. Duke of Kent 159, 184, The Apostles, Communist Party 280-81, 285-86 314-15, 338, 342 Anthony Blunt, FitzBlunt-FuckerCunt King George V's illegitimate son homosexual spy, treasonous 373-74
BOAC 166-67, 176, 178, 222, 224
boarding houses 21
Bob Hawke, former Prime Minister of Australia 302-03
Bob Simmons, doppelgänger stuntman for Sean Connery 402
Bodo 172, 177-79
body odour 90
Boeing Clippers 165
boiler-plating 195-96
Boldt, Rittmeister Gerhard, aide-de-camp 309, 318-21, 330, 336-37, 345-46
Bolinger Bay, shipping sabotage 107
Bolsheviks, Russia, 97, Revolution 249
Bolton-Paul Defiant Nightfighters 128-30
Bolton-Paul four-gun power-operated turrets 178
bomb plot 362-66, 371
Bonaparte/Buonaparte 26
Borderline, disinterest in exertion inappropriate outbursts of anger 84
boredom of milking cows, none-too-bright cannon fodder 60
Bormann's doppelgänger, Peter Broderick-Hartley 282
Bormann's gun, universal agent 400-01
Bormann, Martin, Hitler's secretary, Chief Advisor & Reich Chancellor 149, 157 279, aka Herr Martin Schuler, 282-86 299-303, 308, sold out to British 313-24 328-36, 339, 345-59, 366, 370
bottle of Scotch 242
Bovril, Bovine & Vril 397

Espavo So20 - treasurer@platinumparty.org

Boxing Day Tsunami 386
boy-rooting expedition 35
Boy Scout masters 255
Brabazon committee 163
Branau 17
Brandenburg Gate 39, 308
Bratwurstglöckl Restaurant 70
breached both sides to point ofmusical chairs 229
breeding cows, females 2-20 years, schoolgirls 387. *See also* College of the Americas 'How to be a paedophile'
Brevet 246
bribe 30, 49
Brigid Elisabeth Dowling/Hitler 21-22, 100
Brigid Hitler, *My Brother in Law Hitler* 22, 26-28, 52
Britain's Escape & Evasion Team, MI-9 343
British agents, Hitler, Goering, Doentiz Raeder, Milch, Canaris, Oster, Rosenbaud/ 'The Griffen' 229
British Army Intell., Hitler working for 98
British deconstruction 314
British Intell. monumental fuck up 230
British Intell. rescue Hitler 24, 34, 39, 42, 52
British Military Psych-Ops War Schools Churchill, Hitler & Stalin trained 406
British military training, Hitler's 90
British monarchy's NWO goals 204
British monarchy, non-ideological spy-unit loyal only to itself 374
British Officer on MEXSHELL, Station Officer, First Officer 181-83
British ran German Army Intell. 279
British Royal Family 198
British SAS, dumbest bastards in whole of Western Desert 209
British SAS assassins 146
British SAS death squad 303
British signature, James Bond movies to follow 320
British war-crimes investigator, forerunner to pitifully useless UN 282
Brixton Prison 120
broomstick, gun made of wood 176
brownsheets 46
bucket 182-83
Buenos Aires 284
bulkhead passage 307, 319-20, 324-25, 333
bums me every night 210
Bunker-Chancellery 307, 315-19, 325
Bunny Aldon, 338. *See also* Jasper Maskelyne, British WWII magician
Burgdorf, Wilhelm, General Army adjutant 316, 324, 329, 333
Bush, George Herbert, former Head of CIA American President, bisexual 88
Bush, George W, American President bisexual 384-85, 388, 392
Bush, Prescott 47, 116, 148
Byelorussio Army 296
Byrd, Admiral Richard E. 393
Bywater Plan, British attack on Pearl Harbor 156

C

CABOT, Sunderland 166, 172-80, 219, 228
Cab rank system 362
Cairo 160, 210
Cambrai 34-35, 144, 151
Canaris, Admiral General 41, 58, 118, 251
cancer 18
canned meat 194, 199, 305-06, 317
cannon fodder 216
CANOPUS 165-66, 190
CANTERBURY Sunderland, AUSTRALIA CLARE 166-68, 172-73
CAPTAIN COOK, AO-TEA-ROA/AWARUA 166-68
CARIBOU Sunderland 166, 172-80, 219, 228
Carin 41
Carinhall 43-48, 363
Caroline Saunders 339-40, 344, 347, 351
Carr, Commander William Guy, R.C.N. 39
Catalina de Mero 380
Catch 22 208
Catholic Church 151
Catholicism, black-centred religion 83
Cattle Dog 216
cause célèbre, big fuck up 161
ceasefire, plea to Russians 323, 330, 344
centimetric radar 216, 220-22
Chamberlain, Britain's PM Neville Lord President of Council 35, 54, 56-57 111-14, naïve fop used to secure war with Germany 140, 143
Chamberlain & Roosevelt both killed 249
Channel Islands 61
Sir Charles Spencer Chaplin, front as

communist sympathiser, FBI File No. 100-127090, connected to Hitler via British Intelligence 42, 400, 406-11
Charité hospital 334
Charlie Upham, NZ VC, genuine friend of King George VI 198
cheap pop-psychology 412
cheese 410
chewing gum with hashish 193
chickens came home to roost 36
child-friendly muskets 40
child-sex, respectable face in Hollywood 410
Chinese brothel 261, 266-267
Chinese to launch attack against Japan 245
Chitty Chitty Bang Bang, Ian Fleming, James Robertson Justice 105
Chocolate Soldier 238
Chris Creighton, Leading Seaman John Davis 251-53
Christian-Islamic wars, 'you have - we want' 388
Christopher Hitchens 105
Chuikov's headquarters 330-31
Churchill, fly to Cyprus 106, 236-39
Churchill's famous speeches 103
Churchill, Winston, illegitimate, Freemason Druid, 34, 43, 56-58, 61, 103-13, 120, 279 285, 302
Churchill assassinations, Bywater 242, 249
Churchill orders murder of Lord Erroll 160-61, 219
Churchill announced WWII to end 0.01 am 8 May 1945 350
CIA, Protect American Business Interests 382, 387-88
Clamart military hospital in Paris 383
Clare Sherridan, Churchill's cousin, friend of Chaplin 410
CLIO Sunderland 166, 172, 178-80, 188
Coalition of the Willing/bribed through paedophilia 384
cocaine, morphine & sex, Duke of Kent addicted to 159
cocked up whole of WWII 58
Cockney rhyming slang 87
Cold War 150-53
collateral damage 141
College of Americas, 'How to be a paedophile' 387. *See also* breeding cows, females 2-20yrs schoolgirls
Cologne, northern Germany 126, 138
Colonel Scotland, General von Schotland 118
coloured book, deserters & AWOL 299
communism, anti-God & anti-Family 93
communists fought fascists & became fascist 318
compass correction 179
complicity from all sides 246
compromising sexual positions 262
concrete watchtower 307, 315, 318
concubines and farm help 237
concubine 264, 267
Condor, Fw 200 290-95
Condor Bomber, w.out itinerary 122-23
Confusion is the name of the game 52
conning tower 289, 293, 320-22, 337
COOGEE, Sunderland, Queens Hotel Cleveland Bay, Townsville 166-69, 173-75
COORONG Sunderland, G-AEUI 166-79
coprophilia, scat, shat on, Hitler's embarrassing addiction 24, 63, 69
coprophiliac 33
cork duck decoys 336
corkscrew evasive manoeuvres 219
corpses, lit rag, threw it on 324
Countess of Romanones 270
coup d'état 362
COURTIER, Sunderland 166, 172-74
cousins, British 23, 35, 43, 54
Coxswain, MEXSHELL 182-83
Craig Kilborn, "How did our oil get under their sand?" 386
crashed 168-74, 178, 182-88, 219-22, 226-28
crashes were frequent 171
creating false history of Hitler's impending doom as final cover 313
creating mass crime behind veil of dignity 204
Creighton, Christopher 314-15, 334-35 338, 345, 402-04, 409
crofter's cottage 195
crop circle investigation 379
Crown bankers 160
crushed by a cistern falling 213
CT & MGT, Colonial Trash & Machine Gun Thieves 178, 220
culturisation 17
CUMBERLAND Sunderland, AWARUA AOTEAROA 166-68, 174, 223
cyclostyled, 80-year rule/30-year rule 412
Cyprus 301-02
Czar 151
Czechoslovakia 42, 57-58, 112-13
Czechoslovakian President Hácha 80

D

Dan Davin, New Zealander, head of Britain's MI-5 356
Dartmouth 236
David Ben-Gurion 185
dead bodies at Dunkirk, British press discouraged from photographing 232
death by Intelligence 34
death was framed, Duke of Kent 198
deceased father in galleries, Duke of Kent 202
deconstructed 87, 90-92, 97
deconstructed agents 382
Deconstructed double agents 97
Deconstruction, 29-32, 42, sexually abused in manner most embarrassing 63, 77 87-89, 97, 100
deconstruction feed-lines 88
Defeatism was rampant, German 229
Degrelle, Léon, Chief of the Belgian SS, Jesuit/Dr Sanchez 351
demographic effect 387
denial 56-57
Denis Glover, DSC, Normandy 59
Dental malpractice 91
dental work 321
depopulation exercise, massive 56, 368, 392
Der! 113
diarrhoea 363
Dick White, Head of Brit. internal/external Secret Services (MI-5/MI-6) 257, 373
Diego Garcia, suffered no damage 387
diesel fumes 327
Dieter von Hassel 237
diff. b/w CIA, KGB & Catholic Church 353
difficulty with alcohol, Churchill 104
diphtheria 16
Diplomacy, something sodomists fake 385
Sodomy Olympics 391
disappearing 6" guns 60
Disney, Walt 47-48
Disraeli, governments elected do not govern 40
Doenitz, Admiral Karl, C-in-C Ger. Navy submarine commander, Hitler's successor Führer II 313-14, 328-33, 337-39 345-47, 366-70, 394
Doenitz, psychiatric care, Manchester 229
Doenitz-Goebbels government 330
dog-bunker/guards' rest room 315, 324
dominant madness 18
Donovan, Gen., American Intell. 285
doppelgänger 85, 105, 116-20, 282, 284, 296 299-01, 303-07, 314-21, 325, 328-29, 331 334-35, 338-39, 359, 364-65, 368-71, 375
doppelgänger Hess, Alfred Horn 125-29 132-35, 138-51, 154
double send 313
draft dodging 94
Drake, Sir Francis, el Diablo, The Devil Holy Crusade 107-08
Dr Edmund Pauker 27
Dr Eric Pheiffer, pincer of spies 49
Dr Karl Brandt, Colonel/Major General 365, 398, 401
Dr Körster's quack pills 399
Dr Morell, *See Morell*, Dr Theodor Gilbert
Dr. No 402-03
Dr Seidl 146
Dr Ludwig Stumpfegger, Chancellery doc who poisoned Blondi (Hitler's dog) 335
dressed as a woman 38
dressed as a woman for sexual preference as much as for disguise 199
drug-dealer 267
drug user, avid 90, 97
Dublin, Shelbourne Hotel 21, 24
Duchess of Kent, Countess of St. Andrews & Baroness Downpatrick, HRH Princess Marina 201, 206-08
Duke of Hamilton and Brandon, 14th hereditary bearer Crown of Scotland homosexual occultist, Wing Commander 120-21, 127-34, 140, 160-61, 179, 184, 187 193, 198-202, German V-Mann agent 204-05, 228
Duke of Kent, Grand Master Mason, transvestite 130-32, 159, 172-208
Duke of Kent II, Patrick 199
Duke of Windsor, formerly King Edward VIII 120
dummkopfs 141-42

Espavo S[illegible] - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

Dunblane massacre 385, 389-91
See also Blair, Tony, Brit. PM,occultist rock spider, not immune to bribes; *See also* Robertson, Lord George, S-G NATO
See also Thomas Hamilton
dunchesse 149
Dungavel Castle 129-35, 147
Dunkirk 36, 60, 89
Dusko Popov 244
Dutch citizens, 1 million died of starvation, 1944-5 61
Dutch submarine K-XVII 246-48

E

Eagle's Nest mountain retreat 50
Eaglesham Moor 130-32, 147
early warning-to-the-enemy ASV Mark II radar 215, 218, 222
Eda Eyckhorn, dykey-looking 379-80
Eden Hotel 379-80
Edmund Hitler, birth certificate, dodged military service 24, 27-28
Edouard Daladier, French PM 112
Eeyore, Admiral Canaris 279
effeminate housebound homosexual 269
Eichmann, Adolf, SS anti-Semitic organiser 381
Einsatz Kommando motto "The truth shall set you free" 259
Eisenhower, General 352, 376, 381
embarrassing sexual history 79
embedded historians, swallow the bullshit from the officially 104, 198, 213
Emil Maurice 95
Emotional Quotient 278
Empire flying boats 165-66, 173, 181
England, a spy's paradise 271
English worthy 113
entourage of homosexual cross-dressing royal party 180
Erebus 186
Erich Ebermayer 64
Ernst Hanfstaengl, Hitler's Putzy, Head of Nazi Foreign Press 64-66, 74-75
Ernst Schulter-Strathaus, occultist astrologer 120
Ethel Margaret Whigham 159
eugenics society 317
ever-changing battle plans 399
ever-listening British 308
every political machination of blind patriotism, flying boat 161
everything was arranged, everyone had doubles 303
excessive belligerence 251
excludes casual DNA testing 207

F

face like sin in a silly mirror 59
faked their deaths 306
fake war 119
family history purposefully confused 27
Farman biplane 185
Farnborough 212
Farouk 209-10
Father, Son and Holy Ghost 202
See also gang bang
Father Odo, Duke of Wurttemberg 274
Father Ryan, IRA Quartermaster General in charge of stores, 354, IRA billet spoke with Hitler over roses 412
FBI 164-65, 244, 265, 274-75
FBI, ghost writer 52-53
FBI files link Tony Blair to Dunblane massacre paedophile ring, 391. *See also* Blair Tony, British Prime Minister, occultist rock spider, not immune to bribes; *See also* Thomas Hamilton
FBI Radiogram system 379
fear of God, fear of exposure from military intelligence 82
Feminism: "If it works, break it" 153
Fireworks Island, Pfaueninsel Is. 315, 331
FitzBlunt-FuckerCunt 256
flap 181, 185, 189-92, 215
Fleming, Ian, Lieutenant-Commander of the Royal Navy Intelligence Division 279-80, 284-86
Fleming, Peter, *Flying Visit* 119
Flt Sgt Andrew Simpson William Jack 186, 194-96
Flug-kapitan Kunstle 294
flying pig, the Princess 164
Flying Porcupine, Fliegende Stachelsweine 161-62, 219
Flying Turtle 162, 214-19
Focke-Wulf 200 300
Fokker D7 fighters, photographed being broken up 41
Folke Wolf 48
Ford, Henry 47-48
Foreign Office 307, 316-19, 334-46
Förster 65
Fort Dorset 59
France 26, 30-34, 42
Franco, General 374
Franz Ferdinand, Archduke of Austria 34
Freemasons 26, 47, 53, 57, 65, 88-92, 95 264, 270, 285, 297, 359
Freemasons admire paedophiles 205
Freemasons' destruction of God 90
Freemasons favourite limerick 16
Freemasons high rate of child-sex abuse paedophilia & incest 205
Freemasons do anything paedophile asks 205
Freikorps, the Freedom Corps 39, 64
frequent adulterers 252
Friedrich Kohn, Dr, Hitler's radio dentist 126
Friedrichstrasse, Station 320, 333-35
Fritzes (Germans) 297
Frogmore, preponderance of frogs 206
Frogmore House 206
from loose to civil war 38
Frunze, gang-bangs 63
fuel-monitoring unit 193, 208
Führer 36, 51-52
Führerbefehl 294
full cover 404

G

G-Men, FBI 379-80
Galland, Adolf, Leutnant Colonel, Gruppe Kommandeur at Abbeville 127
Gallup Poll, I:527, Hitler still alive 352
gang bang 202
See also Father, Son & Holy Ghost
Garbo 151
Gatow Airport 307
Gau doppelgänger contest, Hitler used to hiding since 117, 318
Gaulieters, Area Commanders 117
Gay Reich, Third Reich 139
gay underworld 74
Geising, Dr Erwin 365
Geli Raubal 68-71, 77
General Alfred Jodl, adviser on strategy & operations 305
General Beck 111-12
General Friedrich Fromm, commander of army reserve 362
General Guderian 229
General Karl Koller, Chief Luftwaffe Staff 305, 350
General Ludendorff 95
General Sir Stewart Graham Menzies, 'C' 141
genital hypoplasia 17
See also smallness of a sexual organ
General Wenck 308
genius 87-88
Geoffrey Wilcott, Eeyore, BBC's *House at Pooh Corner* 104
George Gudsell, Wing Commander in full fruit salad 226
Georgeios 'Costas' Grivas 302
George Smith, anally raped by royal servant 278
Georg Ludwig, George Bush 388
German/Jewish relations a bad name 282
German bisexual cuckolders 278
German complicity 61
German Gardener 353
German psyche 143
Germans are renown paedophiles 380
German spies 49-50
Germans will be Germans 39
Gestapo, racial/religious cleaning 43, 109 117
giant blowjob of secrets 264
go boil your head 186
God 35, 56
God's Plan in America 145
Godfrey, Rear-Admiral John, Director of Naval Intelligence 279, 403
God Save the Queen, monarch's sexual practices secret 56
Goebbels, Joseph, Propaganda Minister without body double, 117, wife Magda six children, 297, 306-19, 324, 329-35, 339
Goering, Herman, Marshal of the Reich British agent 36, 41-48, 71, 96, 100 126-27, 138, 149, 153, 229-33, 275 former Reichmarshal 308, 328-29, 362-69
Goebbels, Magda 316
Go home and get a nice quiet sleep 56
gold 38-40

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

Golden Dawn coven's new Holy Ghost 180, 188, 198, 202, 205
Gone With the Wind 106
Goons 411
Gort, British Commander Viscount 230-32
govern in mad rage of irrational forgotten decisions 400
Governor of the Bahamas 274
grande coup 24
grave robbing at Frogmore 206
Gray Pillars 210
Greatest Briton of All Time, Churchill Butcher of Gallipoli 109
Green Glove, Tibetan reincarnation practise 329
Greim, Ritter von, Field Marshal, General of Luftwaffe 307-08, 345-47, 350
Grizedale Hall 237, 401
GRU Spy Factories, Baltic Republics 296
forerunner to KGB 381
gun cotton 154-56
Günsche, Otto, Sturmbannführer, Hitler's personal SS adjutant 298,315-9,324-6,334-6
Günther, Bormann's doppelgänger 282, 299
"and one other" 334-35
Gurdjeiff 397
Gustav Guellich 49
Gutmann, Hugo 94
Guy Marcus Trundle, affair w. Wallis Simpson 267

H

HAARP 386
Hanisch, Fritz Walter 22
Hans Mend 64, 75
hardcopy relationship 28
Harry Saltzman 402
Harstad 177-79
Hart, Captain Basil Liddel, renowned newspaper columnist & military strategist for the press 229-30
Haushofer, Albrecht, affair w. Duke of Hamilton 161, 200-02
Haushofer, Prof. Karl, occultist, conduit between Hess, Hitler & MI-6 121-22
originated lebensraum 61, 202, 397
Hawke, Group Captain, Bob's bro. 302
heavily medicated stupor 400
Hector C. Bywater, English/American journalist, author, spy 241-42
Heinkel He115 288-89
Heinrich 'Heini' Hoffmann, Hitler's homosexual photographer 398
Heinrich Berger, Hitler doppelgänger 365
Helen Clark & her minder Vladimir Putin KGB operative 'IE' 150-53
helicopter indoors 337
Hellboy 355-56
Henry Peter Hansell 268
Herbert Döhring, Hitler's personal bodyguard
SS Lifeguard, Leibstandarte 72, 88, 111
Herman Rogers 273
Hess, Rudolf, 'Frauline Anna', upbringing of a bisexual, Hess was queer for Hitler 41, 66-68 109, 119-22, 127
He Was Still My Brother 76
Hewel, Walter, Ambassador, Foreign Office liaison officer 316, 334-46
Heydrich, Reinhard, Hangman, Director-General of SS & SD 37, 126-31, 138
highly acidic acid 191
Hilda Master 255
Hilda Murrell 248
Himmler 346-47
Hippie in a suit 98
Hirschfeld's Institute for Sexual Sciences 73
Historians not given any original special intelligence material 375
history, always three-way debate 105
Hitler, Alois 5-8, 13-19, 21-33, 50-54
Hitler's cover will 309, 331-332, 336, 346
Hitler's death shonky load of shit 353
Hitler's dental team 298
Hitler, Eva Braun 68-72, 77, 305-07, 314 320-28, 336-47, 351-53, 359, 373, 378, 393
Hitler, Gustav 16
Hitler, Ida 16
Hitler's intuitions 116
Hitler, Klara neé Pölzl 16-21, 91
Hitler, looked like a woman 17
Hitler's madness deliberately induced 400
Hitler, Patrick 71
Hitler, Paula/ Ms Paula Hitler Mrs Paula Wolf 7, 16-18, 21, 28-29, 54, 75-76
Hitler's training 152
Hitler's will 307-09, 329
Hitler, best double agent Brits ever had 320
Hitler, original James Bond character 320
Hitler's grandnephews 53
Hitler & Eva hiding in cupboards 318
Hitler died in mid-1970s, theory 157
Hitler in a wig, 1948 380
Hitler in constant fear of assassination 409
Hitler is Alive!, *National Police Gazette* 378
Hitler lookalikes 25
Hitler loved British, escape from Dunkirk 36
Hitler might be dead 157
Hitler speed and cocaine addict 276
Hitler infatuated w. Wallis Simpson 276
Hitler was in Spain 372
Hitler, William Patrick/William Patrick Dowling/Patrick Dowling/Carter Stevens Houston Stewart Chamberlain/William Patrick Stewart-Houston 21, 50-54
Hobsonville 211, 223
Hoegl, Peter, Chief Inspector 316, 335
Hofbeck, Hans, Police Guard 326
Holland 126-27, 152
Holy Ghost & paedophile movement 118
Holy Ghost operation 195, 198
Holy Island 129-30
Holy oath, sworn to secrecy 305, 319 326, 346
Holy Roman Empire 39
Home Guard, stories 60
homeopathic medicines 382
Homo sapien 1.52 . . . say it isn't so 318
homosexual affair w. Parisian boy 268
Horn, Alfred 133-35, 140, 151
See also doppelgänger Hess, Alfred Horn
Horn, Hauptmann Karl, Squadron Commander, Knights Cross, ace pilot 121-29, 135, 139, 147-49
Horn, Karlheinz von, Colonel General 147
Horton, Sir Max, Admiral Submarines 247
Howard Hughes, as rich as God 164-65
how can we most easily rule 400
Howling Wilderness, extermination of Samar 109-10, 151
Hugh Hefner's Playboy 410
Hull, Secretary of State Cordell 243
Hummerich, Corporal 336-38, 345-46
Hythe 168, 176-78, 182-83

I

IAL tenders 183
Ian Fleming, Lieutenant-Commander Royal Navy Intelligence Division victor ludorum (champion athlete) Eton, Sandhurst 105, 119-20, 158, 235-38 314-15, 335-52, 356-03
Ich Dien, "I serve" Germany 263
ICI Faben, ICI, Dulux paints 47
ideological shit 257, 374
I do love guidelines 207
Illuminati 31, 92, 302
Ilse Prohl, Hess' wife 135
inbreeding 42
incendiary bombs made in Illingford 133 177-79
incest 5-6, 16
inheritance 22-25
Intelligence community historical joke 322
international bankers 39-40
Interpol, Gestapo with Hitler's picture removed 109
Invergordon 177-86
Ipso facto, nor does the Queen 173
Iran, oil, not part of Rothschild central banking system 382, 386
Iraq, civilian death toll 384-88
Irish 25, 29, 50, 53-54
Iron Curtain 103
Irving, Clifford, *Autobiography of Howard Hughes* 164-65
Islands disappearing 387
Israeli-Iranian treff in chip factory 386
Italian Book of War Heroes 233
it was all wrong, still teach-to-confuse 224
"I want world peace" 117
I was Hitler' Maid, Pauline Kohler five Hitler doppelgängers 117

J

J. Edgar Hoover, Director of FBI, paranoid suspicious, neurotic, cross-dressing blackmailed, inside-crime boss, Freemason 53, 148, 244, 274, 376-77, 381
Jaap de Hoop Scheffer, S-G NATO 388-89
Jablunkov Pass 57
Jackie Bouvier-Kennedy-Onassis 153
James Bond movies satire government Black Ops 403

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Jasper Maskelyne, British WWII magician 321, 338
Jean Peters m. Howard Hughes for cover 164
Jerusalem Thorn 209
Jerzy Kosinski 412
Jesus' brother 235
Jesus, take Western focus off, place it on Hitler 327
Jimmy Byrnes, Secretary of State 157,374
Joachim Marseilles, famous German pilot Ace, hole in supercharge inlet 209
Jockey John, James Bond, 358
See also TomStanford/TomWard/BigTom
Jodl, Alfred, General of Artillery, chief of Operations Section, High Command of Armed Forces 366, 369
Joes 299
Johannmeier, Major Willi 336-37, 345-46
John Ainsworth-Davis, Lt-Commander C. J. J. Creighton RN, Chris Creighton 235-36
John Ainsworth-Davis, Snr, Dr. 1920
Antwerp Olympics 236
John Walsh, American FBI G-Man 378
joining of their libidos 263
Joseph Grew, US Ambassador to Japan 246
JU52/3m g14e 292-93
Ju88 219
Juan Peron, Freemason 145
Judge Gay Knightheart 94-95
Julius Schrek, chauffeur 68
Junkers 48
Junkers JU52 287-93
Junkers JU52/3m g14e 337-38, 344, 358

K

Kaiser Wilhelm II, biggest dummkopf of all, 141, 152. Blunt stole Kaiser's crown jewels from Czech castle Karlstejn gave to niece, QEII 257, 374
Kaiserdamm 309
Karnau, Hermann, SS Detective Police Guard 325-26
Karno, Fred, British comedian 407
Katherine Lucy Mary Worsley m. Duke of Kent II, Katharine, Duchess of Kent II Katharine Kent 207
Katyn massacre 105
kayak 309, 315, 318-321, 331, 335-37
"keel in a bowl of rice", Christine Keeler & Mandy Rice-Davies 211
Keep It Simple Stupid, KISS of death 306
Keitel, Field Marshal/General Wilhelm Supreme Commander of Armed Forces Freemason, Lakaitel/Lackey 305, 309 313-14, 364-66, 369
Kemp, Susan, became Director of M 284
Kempka, Sturmbannführer Erich, Hitler's personal chauffeur 315-16, 319, 324 332-36, 373
Kensington Court 218
Kesselring, Field Marshal Albert von Commander-in-Chief of German Forces in Italy 118, 138
Keystone Cops 230
KG200 48, 212, 287, 295
Kiddy porn legal in Germany 380
Kiel Canal 46
Kiev 299-303
killing him with kindness 18
killing his way to the top, Hitler 27
kill the Duke of Kent just because he's queer 175
King Edward VIII, Britain's sexually dubious fascist, Freemason 119-20
King George V 261, 268, 273-78, 397
King George VI, Bertie 146, 159, 174, 180 198, 202-04, 236-38, 280-86, 397, 400
King George VI's illegitimate son Harry FitzWindsor 202
King Gustav V of Sweden 146
King Haakon VII of Norway 146
King Kristian X of Denmark 146
King Leopold of Belgium 232
King Solomon's tomb 151
KIWI, Keen Interest Without Intelligence 224
Kiwi Keith, Sir Keith Holyoake 211
Klara Põlzl/Hitler 16-21, 91
Kleve Knickbein 127
Knappenschneider, Oberseld Webel American pilot 295
Knight of St Michael and St George (GCMC) Spies and Traders 203
Knight of the Garter (KG) 203
Knights Templar 151

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

Koch 363
Koller, Karl, Luftwaffe General 305, 350
Korten, General 365
Kos, import. Freemasonry & paedophile meetings 301-03
Krebs, Hans, General, last German Chief of Staff 309, 316, 323, 329-33, 345
Kriebel, Munich Beer Hall 95
Kristallnacht 408
Krohn, Dr Friedrich, Hitler's radio teeth dentist 397
Kruger, Commander Otto 237
Krupp Munitions & Armaments Plants 40
Kursk 300-01

L

Lady Diana 17
Lady Diana Broughton, cunnilingus with gun 160
Lady Elizabeth Bowes-Lyon, engagement to King Edward VIII 268
Lady Emerald Cunard, drug addict friend of Wallis Simpson 277
La Falda 379-80
Lake Havel 309, 321-23, 338-40, 346
Lake Müggelsee 323, 336-40
Lambeth 406
Landsberg Fortress Prison 41-42, 62, 66, 95
Lassow, General Otto von, military Commander of Munich 65-66
Las Vegas 164
Laurence Olivier, ex-Fleet Air Arm Lieutenant-Commander 404
Lawrence of Arabia, Thomas Edward Lawrence 81
See also Alexander the Great, necrophiliac
League of Nations 83
leave you feeling on edge, 118. *See also* Holy Ghost & paedophile movement
left without a museum 214
Leni Riefenstahl 68, 76
Leopold Trepper, Who ever heard of spies getting medals? 362
Leo Raubal 26-29
Leslie Howard, homosexual, Churchill's doppelgänger 106, 219, 301
Leutnant Herbult Shultz 237
Leutnant Herzner, K Group 57-58
Leutnant Victor Molde 237
Levin, menswear store, lucky Hitler lookalike 356
Liberator 129-30, 135, 148
Life would become a socialistic struggle for survival 61
Lime Street Train Station 22, 26
Linge, Heinz, Hitler's SS Orderly & personal valet 316-19, 324-26, 346
Linz 16-17
Lita Grey (16) Chaplin's wife 411
Little girls of ten & eleven, rouged 37
Liverpool, German community in 21-28 35, 50, 54
Lives of a Bengal Lancer 110, 408
loaf of bread, 1 billion marks 38
Lockheed Hudsons 245
locks of River Spree opened 308
Lofoten 177
London Tube bombing 382
long-lance torpedo 21" warhead 243
Long Island 49, 53-54
Lord Callaghan trained in Tavistock 119
Lord Dawson killed King George V 276
Lord Erroll, 22nd, Josslyn Victor Hay 160-61
Lord Kitchener, "You deny for me and I'll deny for you" 203
Lord Moran 398
Lord Simon 140
Lord Trenchard (Boom) 343
Lorenz, Heinz, Hitler's Bunker news/inner circle 336-38, 345-46
Loringhoven, Bernd Freytag von, Major aide to army chiefs, Germany's NATO representative 309, 318-21, 330, 336-37 345-46
lotus-eater's dream 266
lovely grub 295
Lt.Col. Scotland 138
Lualatha Bay in Fiji 211
luck of the Irish 237
Luftwaffe 36, 46-49, 57, 125-26, 133-34 138, 147, 154
lush blondes 37
Lusitania 154-56, 242-44, 249
Lysander 284, 287, 293
Lysander V9673/V9367, Hitler's escape plane 340-46, 349, 358

M

M 246-48, 274
made-for-viewing Saddam Hussein doppelgänger units 300
madness by the book 297
Mafia 164, 377
Magdeburg river 375
magnanimous vanity 202
magnesium alloy, knife pushed thru 27
magnetos, On/off button for engine 185, 190-92
Major Edward 'Fruity' Metcalfe 273
Major Graham Donald, Observer Corps Freemason 134, 140
Mandarins of Whitehall, "sky the limit for Hitler" 24
Mann Act 245
Man of Destiny 90-91
Mansfeld, Erich, Police Guard in watchtower 319, 324-26
manufacturing plant 41
Manzialy, Konstanze, Hitler's Austrian cook 316, 334
Maori Warrant Officer, planning to be killed soon 220
Marcus Tullius Cicero, "Nothing is so difficult to believe" 25
Margaret Thatcher 258
Marilyn Monroe 153
Marina, Duchess of Kent, Princess of Greece & Denmark 159, 200, 207-08
Mark I, II, III, IV, Sunderland 171
Marlene Dietrich, Nazi spy 267
Martin-Baker, executive thieves 212
Maryhill Barracks in Glasgow 140
Mary of Teck 255
Mary Violet Roberts, aunt of Walter Roberts 120-21
Masons, Germany had 75,000, 1930 144
mass murder, 600,000, 13 hrs, Churchill 61
mass persuasion 25
maths fascinating 377
Matthiesing, Heinz, batman/barman 309 318, 336, 346
Mauren Island 172, 177-79
Maurice, Emil 17
Mauthausen 74
maximum gap in subconscious 79
Me109E 127-28, 131
Me109G 209
Me110 127-29, 139
measuring stick of shame is paedophilia hence rock spider Prime Ministers 386
Medal of Freedom, American, awarded to German military personnel 299
medicating Hitler into insanity 399
Mein Kampf 23, 26, 41-42, 52-54, 62, 94, 412
Meintzerhagen, Lieutenant Colonel 152
Memoirs of Bridget Hitler 24-28, 31, 51
men's shelter 63
ménage-à-trois 263, 273
Mengele, Josef, Angel of Death 381
Menzies, Colonel Stewart Graham, C, trained Sandhurst, Grenadier Guards, half-brother of W. Churchill 118, 405
mercury barometer bomb, Courvoisier brandy bottle 299-300
Mersey 23
Meryl Streep's daughter Jane Gray in *The Hoax* 165
Messerschmitt 125-28, 131, 138-39
Messerschmitt Bf110D 138
Messerschmitt manufacturing records 171
MEXSHELL 181-84, 194
MI-6 24, 43, 50-51
See also sodomy, unlimited potential for
Michael Canfield m. Duchess of Marlborough 268
micro-radio dental appendages
Charlies Angels 91
Mildred Harris, 16, Chaplin's wife 411
Military Industrial Complex 164
milk and cookies version of history 373
Mimi Reiter 68
mind-bender 285
misinterpretation 36
missing year in Hitler's life 23
Mistral, invented by Shorts, shipped to Rechlin as Mistel, Mistletoe, kissing cousins 171, 180, 212
Mitford, David, Lord Baron Redesdale 404
Mitford, Diana m. Sir Oswald Mosley in Berlin, Hitler there 404
Mitford, Unity Walkrie dated Hitler 68-69, 404
Mohnke, Wilhelm, SS Chancellery commandant 307, 311, 319-24, 329, 333-46
Molotov cocktail 101
Molotov, Russian Foreign Affairs negotiator 100-01
Molotov-Ribbentrop Non-Aggression Pact 23 Aug. 1939, w. Brit. approval 100, 152
Molybendum Sulphate, flying at extreme heights 211
monstered by British Intelligence 150
Montevideo 378
Montserrat Monastery outside Barcelona 353
Moon Squadron 341
Morell, Dr Theodor Gilbert 17, 33, 81 126, 142, 276, 363-65, 372
complete charlatan 397-401
Mormon Mafia 164
morse code 186
Morton, Major Desmond, 'M' 43 236-38 279, 285, 403
Moscow 406
Mossad & CIA at work 387
most unreliable witness testament could provide 306
most valuable piece of intelligence 262
See also compromising sexual positions
Motherhood Cross, size of brood 40
Mother Mary with the Holy Child Jesus Christ, forgery 22
Mountbatten, Edwina Ashley 252-54
Mountbatten, Lord Louis, His Serene Highness Prince Louis of Battenburg British Admiral, First Sea Lord, viscount Earl, 'Dickie' 236, 251-54, 268-69, 278
Mount Kilimanjaro 185
Movietone News 371
Mr Braun 72
Mr Fenton, Bunny Aldon, Jasper Maskelyne 51
Mr Thomas 347
Ms Rabbit, Eva Hitler née Braun 279 314, 341, 347
much love & little quality 214
Müldorf 373
Mullaghmore, Ireland 253
Munich, 24 May 1913 21-25, 35, 41
Munich Accord 96
Munich Putsch 66
music, subconscious pleasure 33, 46
Mussolini, Benito 80, 339, 351
posing like a Greek God 365-69
took his line from Hitler 408
Mychett Place (Camp Z) 143
myth of Hitler 382
My Youth Friend, Mein Jugendfreund August Kubizek 63

N

Nagenast, Frau, secret agent 119
Nagumo, Chuichi, Vice-Admiral 246
Naked dancing 37
Napoleon 40, 320
national scandal 261
National Socialist German Workers' Party Nationalsoczialistiche Deutsche Arbeiterpartei NAZI 98
NATO 388-90, 403
Naumann, Werner, Goebbels assistant State Sec. in Propaganda Ministry 316
Nazi-in-a-dress, Duke & Duchess of Kent 208
Nazi paedophile programme, Brit. run 82
Nazis' Swiss Bank account numbers 280
Nazis' underwear 363
Nazis fled to South America 158
NCO corps 40
near-perfect puppet of war 33
nettle danger 111
Neurotics 79-81
New Berlin, Neuberlin, New Schwabenland Neuschwabenland, New Cockroach Land Neu Schwabia, Base 211 393
new master race 317
New Zealand's worst kept secret 269
New Zealand, centre for unrecorded WWII activity 22, 58-60
New Zealand, last Nazis 150-51
New Zealand 'The Dump' 166-68, 173-74 186, 189, 198, 202, 209-11, 218, 224-25
Nietzsche 53
Night of the Long Knives, 30 June 1934 66, 70, 74, 153, 366, 373
Nine Months of Long Knives 368
no controls 37
no oil, no war 391
Noel Coward 159, 402-03
no gunshot wound to the skull 306

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

Nordic-Anglo-Saxon coloniser Adolf Hitler 204
Norman Shelley 103-06
nostrils, unfeasibly large 42
notorious 98
Novus Ordo Seclorum, Masonic New Age 203
nuclear strike, Canberra, Adelaide Sydney, Taupo, 150, *See also* Helen Clark and her minder Vladimir Putin, KGB operative 'IE'
nudism 37
Nuremberg 368-70
Nuremberg Rally 50, 303
Nuremberg Trials 132, 143, 147

O

Oban 179, 184-86, 195
Obersalzburg 276
oligarchy 226
Olympics 129, 148
only one big ball 17
only politics that counts is oil 391
Oona O'Neill, 18, Chaplin's wife 411
Open Code, Reverse Code & Aesopian language combined 314
Operation BARBAROSSA 141-42
Operation HIGHJUMP 394
Operation MAPTA (Myth) 375
Operation SAFE HAVEN 346
Operation SUBEND 246-48
order out of chaos 144-46, 153
ordinary people can have a life of genius 87
organised killing epidemic, 368. *See also* depopulation exercise, massive orgy of malconstructed misnomers & faux pas 230
Osama bin Laden, CIA agent Tim Osman British school boy Harry bin Laden safe house in London 382
OSS 52
OSS (CIA from 1946) 132-33
Oster, General Hans Canaris' deputy coup story 41, 251
Oswald Mosley 403-04
Oswald Short, Short Sunderland 162
Otto Voss 49
Oxford, Duke of Hamilton flew to see Churchill 140, 156

P

P2 Masonic Lodge Grand Master Licio Gelli 145
Pact of Steel 233
paedophiles 205
paedophilia 203-05
Palestine Liberation Organisation 383
pamphlets 23, 31
Panther tanks 300
paranoid 79, 82-84
Parc de la Ciutadella 353, 393
Pardau, Sergeant Major 346
partisans, guerrillas prepared to fight to death for cause 302
pass false data 251
Patagonia 379
Peace 96
peace-makers, liquidated, Chamberlain Rudolf Hess, Karl Horn, Stauffenberg Canaris, Mahatma Gandhi, JFK Martin Luther King 392
Peace for our Time 35, 112-14, 121, 153
Peace Talk 141
Pearl Harbor 49, 110
penis so small as to be impractical 268
Perón, Colonel, soldier, President 1946-55, 1973-74 374
persecution & self-importance 79-80
personal disillusionment amongst high-ranking soldiers 397
personnel already indoctrinated 375
Peter Fraser, Pisshouse Peter, charged with sedition, burnt British flag; PM Michael Savage dying of cancer 58
Petite Camera with matching lipstick holder 262
petrol pill 182
Pfaueninsel Island 286, 315, 323, 330-31 336, 340, 345
phantasmagoria, all-encompassing illusion 97
phantom syphilis, alphabet soup of drugs 81
phlebotomist, bleeding Americans 52
Pichelsdorf bridge 309
piggyback mission impossible 370
Pintsch, Hess' Adjutant 135
pipe dreams, place in the sun 42
pipped at the post 57
pirates, English, doubled as royal navy 107-09
pistons exchanged 47
Plan A 307, 316, 319, 324, 328
Plan B 307, 310, 315-16, 319, 324-25, 328
playing cat and mouse 383
play of death 85
Ploen 313-14, 329, 347
plot to slowly poison Hitler 401
Polikarpovs, Russian 139
Pölzl, Johanna 21
Pōlzl, Klara 16-19
Pooh, Ian Fleming 279
Pope Gregory XIII, Angelo Giuseppe
Roncalli, paedophile minder 354
Popski's Army 208-09
potassium cyanide 335
potassium cyanide, stored in teeth 282
Potsdam, Conference 345, 352, 374-76
POW camp in Eire, Ireland 343
pre-negotiated safe haven 285
preferred to wear nappies 270
Preswick 129-32, 135, 147
pride was a part of history 206
Prince Charles compromised 278
Prince Edward George Nicholas Paul
Princess, Saunders-Roe 163
Princess Elizabeth 198
private intelligence centre 56-57
Pro-Nazi suspects, Duke of Bedford
Duke of Windsor, Sir Oswald Mosley
Sir Barry Domvile, Lord Rothermere 272
proclamation 80
Promenade Cabin 188, 193-95
prone to superstition, religion
paranoid 82
propaganda, pro-Allied 29, 41, 57
proud cannon fodder 277
provoke Ger./Italy into act of war 244
pseudo-documentary, 54, another
propaganda exercise for the British 392
Psych-Ops 88-90, 95-100, 152-53 British
Military War School 23-25, 33-34, 41, 54
See also Tavistock
Psych-Ops double agent 121
Psych-Ops training 88, 95-98
psychic state very complex 33
psycho-thriller 149
psychotic 79
Public Record Office, FO898/257 158, 196, 198
puppet 33-37, 54, 65
puppet for American military industrial
complex, Tony Blair 384-85
puppets of war, not prime makers of war
liquidated peace-makers 392
Putsch, Munich Beer Hall, 1923 94-95

Q

quack, quick silver, amalgam, ignorant
pretender to medical skill 91
Queen's Island in Belfast 178
Queen Maud Land 393
Queen Mother, entirely pickled 105
quirk, Sunderland 190
quite the tense kitchen 381

R

Rabbit, Adolf Hitler 279, 314, 339-47
Rach, Alfred, SS Colonel 334-36
racial superiority, difficulty selling 42
radar towers 36
radio announcement for maximum distraction 333
radio controlled Sunderland 180
Radosevic, Nikola, filmmaker 409
RAF 176-77, 184, 198 208, 213-15, 224, 232-33
RAF→ 238
Raiders of the Lost Ark 228
Ralph Izzard 322
Ralph Richardson, ex-Fleet Air Arm Lt-Commander 404
Ramsay, Admiral Bertram, Naval C-in-C of Allied Expeditionary Force 322
Rapallo Pact 41
RAPWI, Recovery of Allied Prisoners of War & Internees 323, 334-38, 341-44
Rastenburg 363-65
Rat Line 284
Rattenhuber, Johann/Hans, Brigadeführer RSD chief of Hitler's private police SS Bodyguards 316, 326, 334, 373
Rechlin, & Lärz 171, 212
record sabotage, Sunderland 176
Red Army's mopping-up squads 305

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org - 7 March 2013

red carpet 317
refused to love things that did not work 221
Reich, Kingdom, Realm or State 25, 39, 51
Reichenhall 401
Reitsch, Hanna, C-in-C German Air Force 307-08, 314, 337-39, 344-51, 372
Religion, fear of life 82-84
remarkable recall of military data 90
remarried bigamously 27
Rene Muller 68-69
respectable accounts by down right liars 187
Ribbentrop, Joachim (von), Foreign Minister German Ambassador to London 115 120, 236, 262-67, 271-75, 366, 369
ring of spies, both had tits 38
Rintelen, von, Chief of German Naval Espionage 155
ripped off by the British 225
Ritscher, Captain Alfred 393
River Spree 282-84, 308-09 318-23, 330-31, 334-36, 340, 345
River Spree, floating mortuary 308
Robbie Burns 24
Robert Lacey, King George V's biographer 275
Roberts, Sir Frank 111
Robertson, Lord George, S-G of NATO 388-89. *See also* Blair, Tony, British PM, occultist, rock spider, not immune to bribes; *See also* Thomas Hamilton
Rochester 162-65, 169, 174, 190, 194 213, 216-18, 226
rocket, telling off 211
Roehm, Captain Ernst, British agent Hitler's Psych-Ops minder, Deputy Führer 35, 64-65, 73-74, 153, 366
Roger Moore 403
Rolls-Royce salesmen, frightfully 317
Rolls Royce, 126, Nene 213
Roman Battaglia, interrogator, language expert, Polish Consulate 140
Romania, real Hess in 149-51
romantic attachment 225
Rome-Berlin-Tokyo Axis (Italian, German Japanese alliance) 243-45
Roosevelt, President Franklin D. 49, 143 242-49, 274-75
Rosenbaud, American Medal of Freedom ex-wife chief of Stasi 229
roses 263-64
Rote Kapelle, Red Orchestra, Communist intelligence 361
Rothermere, Viscount Lord, fascist sympathiser, owner of the *Daily Mail* 272
Rothschild, Hitler's Jewish cousins 23
Rothschild, Nathaniel Meyer 'Victor', Fifth Man in Cambridge Five 257
Rotorua 269
round robin 261, 269
Royal Dutch Shell 142
Royal Green Jacket Regiment 34-35
royal illegitimate parentage 206
Royal Victorian Order (GCVO) 204
rubber medals in the bath 43
rudder of politics, small impetus 318
Rudolf Blauer, Rudolf Freiherr Von Seboottendorf/Sebbetendorf, Thule Society cult founder 45
Rudolf Hess (26 April 1894-3 May 1941) Reichsführer, pilot 127-30 134-35, 139-40, 147-53
Russia 125, 135, 139-43, 146-47, 150-54
Russia, taught world value of freedom 318
Russian, spies 27, 34, 61
Rwanda 83

S

sabotage, Sunderland 161-62, 166-67 170, 175-76, 180-88, 192-96, 208, 215-22
sabotaged by Churchill & Stalin 361
Saddam Hussein, American agent/Israeli agent 129, 132, 141, 382, 388
sadists 37
sadomasochistic 266, 270
sagging libido 269
salvaged Sunderland 167-77, 226-27
Salvation Army & the Boy Scouts 112
sanpaku, whites of the eyes 17
Saunders-Roe 162-63, 171
saved on orders of British Intelligence Officer 34
savoir faire 47
Scandinavian fascist units 279
scapegoat 229
scene of forensic fraud 297
Schaub 100

treasurer@platinumparty.org

Schedle, Franz, Commanding SS Escort officer, injured foot, suicide 325-26, 333
Schellenberg, Walter, Nazi Intelligence Officer 149, 274
Schicklgruber, Maria Anna 394
Schirach, Baldur von 65, 306
schizo-affective state 84
Schizophrenia 89
schizophrenic 79, 84
Schlabendorf, Leutnant von 300
Schloss Kronberg, near Frankfurt 257, 281, 374
Schoerner, Field-Marshal 331
Schundt, General 365
Schwaegermann, Günther, Goebbels' adjutant 334-36
Schwanenwerde Peninsula 321, 330-36
Schwarze Kapelle, Black Orchestra anti-Nazi resistance in Germany 361-62, 366, 370
Scotland Yard 271
Scottish marriage 168
Sean Connery 402
second hatch, starboard door 180
second vocal chord operation, extremely suspicious 368
secretaries, Hitler's bunker, Gerda Christian Gertrude Junge, Elizabeth Schroeder, Johanna Wolf & Else Krueger 307, 315-16 327-28, 334
secret from no greater source 305
Secret Operations 129, 149
Seeckt, Colonel General von, Chief of Reichswehr 35
self-sabotage 162, 166, 170, 176, 184 215, 218, 221
Sellers, Peter, b. Richard Henry Sellers humorous chocolate soldier, Freemason 411-12
send a monkey, get peanuts 373
service they knew was fake 324
sexually bent loner 33
Shah of Persia 397
Shakespearian actors 404
sheep dipping 306, 332
Shetland 163, 222
shoplifter, Madam Tussaud's wax works 208
show suicide, too much talk 308-09
shrapnel wounds 306, 317
Shut the fuck up 35
Sidney Street siege 306
Siegfried Holzbauer, Junkers test pilot proposed Mistel, remote control 212
Sikorsky 49
Sikorsky transatlantic flights 165
silent mythical status 195
Sir Archibald Sinclair, Secretary of State of Air 196
Sir Barry Domvile, Admiral, diminutive occultist, KBE, CB, CMG, Director British Naval Intelligence, Vice-Admiral Commanding War College 120
Sir Harry Oakes, inspired private purchase of RAF Spitfires 265
Sir Henry 'Jock' Broughton 161
Sir Walter Ralegh 108
Sir William Stephenson, head British Intell. in Americas, the quiet Canadian 280
sitting ducks 321
skullduggery 58
slap in the face with a wet bus ticket 265
smallness of a sexual organ 17
smelled a rat 330
Smersh 375, 381
sniffed cocaine, snorted speed & masturbated 264
snorkels 309
snow (cocaine) 37
society lesbians 267, 273
sodomised, Hitler's submissive distant respect for homosexuals 63
sodomy, unlimited potential for 51 *See also* MI-6
sold off his assets 399
Somerset Maugham (gay) active in counter-espionage 404
Soviet Air Force, warning of attack on 405
Spain 317, 335, 339-47, 350-54, 359
Spain or Argentina 157
Spandau Prison 133, 143-47, 151
Spanish Fascists 273
Spanish Flu 34
Spanish monastery 376
Special Operations 1 130, 157
Special Secret Intell. Service 341-42
Speer, Albert, Minister of Armaments 305, 347

Spitfires 126, 232
spread the blame, Freemasons 205
Spruce Goose, birch wood 163-64
spy tourist 33
Spy versus Spy 379
Squadron Leader O'Reilly 194
SS 37, 46, 58
SS General Fegelein 72
St. George's Chapel 199, 206-08
Stalin 85, 279-81, 296-98, 301-03
Stalin's training 152
Stalin, Losif Vissarionovich Dzhugashvili, Koba 361-62, 372-76, 381-84, 392-95
Stalling speeds 189
Stanley Blunt, zealous Anglican preacher 255-56
starboard door, Sunderland 173-74 180-81, 193-95
Star is Bright 110
started rooting Eva Braun for real 300
State secret 298
Stauffenberg, Colonel Claus Count Schenk von 362-68, 392
Stavanger Knickbein 129
Steiner, Felix, SS General 323
Stella Walsh/Stanislawa Walasiewicz transgender 148
Stennes, Walther 96-97, 110, 156-57
stillbirths 81, 91
still open eye of dead German submariner 322
STOL 341
stopping to comment would probably guarantee his death 295
Storm Trooper 73-74, 117
St Petersburg 150-52
strange form of lung cancer called syphilis King George VI 269
Streicher 100
string of loses, Sunderland 178
stuck out like sore thumbs, information second-hand 380
subconscious enemy 32-33
subconscious mind, Google search engine 87, 90
submarine 318-26, 330-40, 345, 358
succumbed to positions given them, began to believe in their own greatness 392
suddenly felt very sick 397
Sudetenland 112-13
Sudopolotov 405
suicide plans 308
Sunderland crashes frequent 171
Sunderlands recon. in Belfast, 1951 224
Súñer, Rámon Serrano, General Franco's former 2IC 346-47
Swallows, communist party assassins 116
Swastika 161, 212
swinging door policy, through spies and diplomats 116
Swiss Bank accounts 314, 339
Swiss Bank account numbers 370
Switzerland, Hitler's file under presidential guard 125, 158
symmetrical dates, planned event 384
syphilis, alphabet soup of drugs 81-82
Syrian oil 382-384

T

talking hairdo, news reader 391
Tangmere 342-44
Tavistock 23-25, 28, 31, 394
Tavistock, Hitler trained in Britain, Feb. to Nov. 1912 313, 322, 354, 359
Tavistock, Tavistock Institute for Human Relations 79, 84
teeth, radio signals 91-92
'Testament', 'Winnie the Pooh', Hitler's escape plan 307, 314, 321-35, 339
tetra-ethyl-lead additive, aromatics 181
Teutonic plan, it was truly a 305, 323
The duke is impotent 270
The Great Dictator, banned in Ireland Europe, parts of South America 407-09
The Great Light, New Age, Novus Ordo Seclorum 145
The Hoax 165
The Link, Anglo-German occult organisation 120
Thelma Furness 269
theory that was never enunciated, too confusing for historians 300
The Squad, manned by Mafia hit men 53
the wood 65
Thomas Hamilton, 385. *See also* Blair Tony, British Prime Minister, occultist rock spider, not immune to bribes
Thomas, Dr Hugh, Welsh surgeon treating

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -

doppelgänger Hess 149-50, 297-98
threat of mission failure 33
Thule Society rituals 198, 205
Tibetan Lodge member 397
Tibetan occult practices, Hitler predicted time & place of his reincarnation 329
Tiger tanks 300
tinkering without forethought 215
tit-to-tit 267
Tito, Winston Churchill's cousin 302
tits on a bull
In war, love is as useless as 222
Todt Organisation 363
To Hell With Hitler 51
Tom Stanford/Tom Ward/Big Tom 357-58 402, *See also* Jockey John, James Bond Tonners' Club, 107-09. *See also* Kurt Waldheim, S-G of UN, 1972-81
torpedoes 241-43
torpedo juice, filtered and drunk 243
Tower Bridge 25, 30, 33
Tower of London 143, 147
Transvestites, partly product of pressures of war 37
Treskow, von 300
Truman, President, Freemason 374, 392
truth very dead in Iraq 385
Twickenham 236
two hysterically horny international spies 263
two or more lovers at the same time 264

U

U-boat 218
ugliness and dim-wittedness 255
Ulap Fairground, Berlin 299
Uninted Nations, white paper on war drugs & paedophilia 388
unable to casually interact 80
unconditional surrender 60, 331
underpowered from 2 years prior 216
United Nations, receives 50% funding from US. UN under thumb of CIA 383, 388
United States Army does not know whether Hitler is alive or dead 376
Universal Exports 403
universal madness for pleasure 37
unlikely Hitler died in bunker, American military intelligence 327
untermenschem, people not considered worthy of living 106, 109
uppers and downers 399-400
upside down engines 212
urinating on a goat 16
urologist, taking the piss out of Jews in America 52
US Army Classified Maps 49

V

V-Mann 281
V-Mann, Blunt 257, 328, 351
V-Mann number, King Edward VIII 265
Vampire, Vickers 213
Vanderbilt, Thelma & Gloria 273
Vatican, 16, even more bullshit 352, 354
Vatican bull 354
vegetarian marriage 71
Verity, Hugh Beresford, DSO, DFC w. Bar Wing-Commander 342-44
Versailles, Treaty of 39-40, 43, 48
Vickers 176-77, 210, 213
Vienna 21-27, 31
Virginia and Baltic 107
Vladimir Putin, Helen Clark's minder 150-53
Volkischer Beobachter 35
Voss, Erich, Vice Admiral 316, 334
Vril practitioner 397
VTOL, Short Take Off and Landing evacuation seaplane 287

W

Waddenilanden, northern Holland, chain of islands 126
Wagner 33, 53
Waldheim, Kurt S-G of UN, 1972-81 106, 109
walk in the park, capturing France 119
Walker, Colin, Australian Lt, DSO 219
Wallis Warfield-Spencer-Simpson-Windsor 265-67, 277
Wall Street, crash 47
Walter Roberts, friends w. Karl Haushofer 121
Wannsee 286
war-in-peacetime, feminism 153
Ward, Freda Dudley 268
warmongers 113
Warner Brothers 403

war was an arrangement, a fallacy, a pre-organised hoax w. goals well defined beforehand 397
Washington Disarmament Treaty, 5:5:3 tonnage ratio 242
Washington Treaty 241
wax 341, 346, 358
We are not amused 278
Webber, Francis, Short Sunderland 162
Wehrmacht, German Army 299
mad scramble to the West 334
Weidendammer bridge 334-35
Weiss, Leutnant-Colonel 309, 318-21 330, 336-37, 345-46
Weiss Ferdl, Munich comedian 407
Well done, true and faithful servant 274, 401
Wellrod pistol, boy pushing a bicycle 236
Westland Lysander MkIII 340-46, 349
Whangaparoa Peninsula 386
Where is New Zealand? 59
whistling a Russian folk song 296
White Finns (Finnish) 382
Whitehall 24, 39
White Mischief 161
wife swapping 37
wild-goose chase 376
wild-goose chase began Cold War 317
Wilhelmsplatz 320, 333
Willi Messerschmitt (Mr Smith) 138
Winnie, Winston Churchill 279
Winnie the Pooh 103, 307, 314
Winnie the Pooh, Peter Rabbit or Wagner's writings 314
Winterbotham, Group Captain Fred W. British Air Force Intelligence Officer 43, 116, 150, 213, 363, 370
without war the aristocracy fell 54
Wizard of Oz 48
WK202 mini-submarine, 36.5 x 6 x 3.6 m 322, 336-37, 340, 348
Wolf's Lair, Rastenburg, North Germany near Gierloz 363-65, 370
Wolfgang Gerhardt, Nazi in Brazil 381
Woodpecker (Der Specht), Martin Bormann's doppelgängers, Stalin's agent 303
WWII began 0.01 am, 26 August 1939 58

X

X-craft, two man mini-sub 321
XX-Committee 244

Y

Yamamoto, Admiral Isoroku 242
Yaphank, Long Island, Nazi sympathising bedroom community for NY 53-54,149
Yekaterinburg 152
Yellow submarine 323
Yoshikawa, Takeo, Japanese spy 243

Z

Zamzam 156
Zander, Wilhelm, SS officer Standarten führer/Wilhelm Paustin 336-38, 345-46
Zhukov, Marshal 329-31
Ziegelstrasse 335
Zimmerman telegram 154

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

Biographies

Greg Hallett trained in various psychological models in parallel with his architecture degree and training. He travelled widely behind the Iron Curtain during the Cold War, hitchhiking on planes and making bunks out of airmail bags to party and report between cities. His contacts in Eastern Europe led to deep penetration of the Soviet State, how it functioned and how it was to colonise the West. It was these qualifications that led him to buy buildings in Moscow immediately after the Berlin Wall fell. This led to interviews with the KGB and their revelations about the planned sex-communism and deconstruction of Westerners. What the Soviets planned for the West happened in the West. Equally all modern history can be dated back to 1945. What Hitler planned for the world happened to the world over the next sixty years.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org -7 March 2013

"Before and after this meeting intelligence had a pattern of attaching themselves to me and the first person to do so was the King's doctor in 1967, quickly followed by the Queen's brother. In the build up to the Soviet meetings, those with intelligence backgrounds provided me with whatever training and cover they saw fit. Those with CIA backgrounds briefed me heavily from America to Greece and joined me in one operation prior. No operation was ever official, nor were they written up. Cover included haircuts, clothing, relationships, travel arrangements, concise and pertinent history briefings, word of mouth . . . and denial.

"I interviewed the KGB in Moscow on 9 December 1989 at a point when they were open, due to lack of pay. At the time you could buy information for the price of a meal. This led to some psychological information being supplied which led to international contacts, further training and meetings with James Bond III and the Spymaster. The Spymaster and other intelligence operatives have been briefing me for the past four years, resulting in ten books – four in this immediate series."

The Spymaster says that he will often go on operations and end up in entirely the wrong place with the wrong people at the wrong time, but always much wiser. Greg Hallett's attitude to history has been similar and the best information is uncovered by accident and without intention . . . "Perhaps the best intelligence gathering method is good table manners, good mental health, no fear, a small amount of wit, and the most ridiculous levels of courage that border on sheer stupidity to those who calculate such risk-and-rewards."

"One of the best intelligence gathering exercises I ever did was to stand in Moscow's Red Square at 1.23 pm on 5 December 1989 and yell out 'Mokrie Dela' [Wet Liquidations] at the top of my voice. This attracted spies to me like shit to a blanket. It also attracted sympathisers and sympathetic spies."

When the Spymaster teamed up with Greg Hallett they found they shared insights and historical answers to many of the controversies of Europe from WWII to the Cold War and the present . . . not disregarding aspects of the future. In listening to each other's stories they noted a lot of common ground and have attempted to lay this bare.

Espavo Sozo - treasurer@platinumparty.org

Through such coincidences, history is often more explicable to the ordinary man than a lot of complicated analysis. After embedded historians, we found 'filling-in-the-gaps analysis' to be a primary cause of ill-informed history. "Field experience is everything. Independent field experience is even better and accidental independent field experience is history altering."

The Spymaster has worked in a background of undeclared hostilities in many countries over many decades. He has done undercover amongst Nazis, Communists, Marxists and some of the most vicious gangs of criminals in New Zealand. Several times other people have been killed in his place in cases of mistaken identity. The Spymaster has been arrested more times than he can remember and by more outfits than he can remember and has been on both sides of enforcement operations.

The Spymaster has an in-depth knowledge of offenders in New Zealand and overseas and is often sought out by people in high places.

Former Prime Minister Rob Muldoon: "If St Peter ever made a mistake and let you into heaven, there'd be a fistfight in five minutes".

Many intelligence officers have been interviewed for this book and they have given the low-down on the many wars from 1936. In some cases, they, or their fathers, were the main players in the vignettes. These personal histories date back to the Spanish Civil War with George Orwell and redefine the origins of *Animal Farm*.

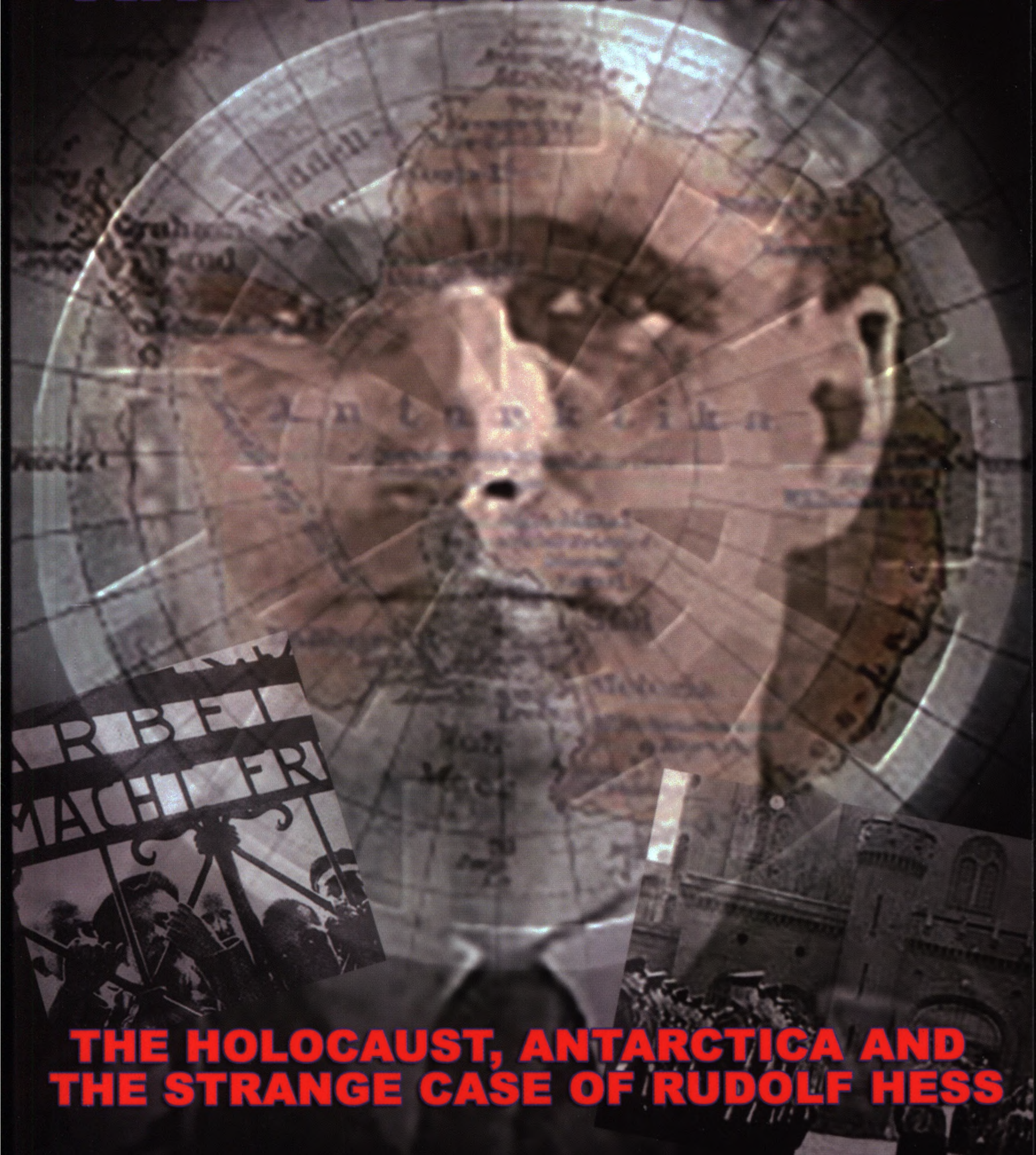
Greg Hallett and the Spymaster have teamed up to give you this insight into how the enemies of war are created and how enemies secretly join forces behind the veil of war. This book is not a dream within a dream, but a reality within a reality and the authors wake up each morning content they're still alive.

Above: The Spymaster shows his face.
Opposite: The author on his way to The Wall, Central Park, 4th July 1988.

www.moontruth.com

As goes Hitler, so goes the moon . . . if you can't make it . . . fake it.

HESS
AND THE PENGUINS


Antarktika
RBEI
MACHT FR

THE HOLOCAUST, ANTARCTICA AND THE STRANGE CASE OF RUDOLF HESS

Joseph P. Farrell

HESS AND THE PENGUINS

THE HOLOCAUST, ANTARCTICA AND THE STRANGE CASE OF RUDOLF HESS

Adventures Unlimited Press

Other Books by Joseph P. Farrell:

Hidden Finance
The Third Way
Nazi International
Thrice Great Hermetica and the Janus Age
Covert Wars and the Clash of Civilizations
Saucers, Swastikas and Psyops
Covert Wars and Breakaway Civilizations
LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy
Roswell and the Reich
Reich of the Black Sun
The S. S. Brotherhood of the Bell
Babylon's Banksters
The Philosopher's Stone
The Vipers of Venice
Secrets of the Unified Field
The Cosmic War
The Giza Death Star
The Giza Death Star Deployed
The Giza Death Star Destroyed
Transhumanism (*with Scott deHart*)
The Grid of the Gods (*with Scott deHart*)

HESS AND THE PENGUINS

THE HOLOCAUST, ANTARCTICA AND THE STRANGE CASE OF RUDOLF HESS

BY
JOSEPH P. FARRELL

Hess and the Penguins

by Joseph P. Farrell

Copyright © 2017
All Rights Reserved

ISBN: 978-1-939149-85-5

Published by:
Adventures Unlimited Press
One Adventure Place
Kempton, Illinois 60946 USA

auphq@frontiernet.net

www.adventuresunlimitedpress.com

Cover by Terry Lamb

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2

HESS AND THE PENGUINS

THE HOLOCAUST, ANTARCTICA AND THE STRANGE CASE OF RUDOLF HESS

Table of Contents

Table of Contents i
Acknowledgements and Dedication vii
Forewarned is Forearmed ix

Part One:
THE HESS MESS

1. Spandau Ballet (and No, We Don't Mean the 1980s Rock Group) 1
- A. The Harvey's Barn Methodology: The Hess Mess as an Epistemological and Historiographical Puzzle 5
  - 1. The Questions that lead to *The* Question 7
- B. In My End is My Beginning... 10
  - 1. A Death in Spandau 10
  - 2. But What Kind of Death? 12
    - a. The First Bit of Debris in the Hess Mess 12
    - b. Abdallah Melaouhi and Wolf-Rüdiger Hess: The Problems with the "Suicide" Explanation Begin 15
      - (1) The Delaying Tactics of the British and American Guards 18
      - (2) The Scene of the Crime: "Americans" in Ill-Fitting Uniforms 21
      - (3) Hess' Physical Inability to Perform the Tasks Required for His Suicide According to the Official Narrative 24
      - (4) Miscellanies: Champagne Parties, Tampered First Aid Kits, and a Familiar Pattern of the Destruction of Evidence 25
      - (5) Melaouhi's Assessment of the Motivations: the "Gorbachev Hypothesis" 27
- C. The Autopsies 30
  - 1. The Magical Year of 2017: Weeding the Files 33
  - 2. A Strange Remark in Melaouhi's Recovered Letter from Hess 34

2. The Son Speaks About the "Suicide" 35

- A. Anomalies Noted by Hess' Son, Wolf Rüdiger-Hess 38
- B. The Pre-Planned Protocols for Hess' Death, vs. What Actually Happened: The Autopsies Again 42
- C. Was Rudolf Hess Suicidal? 43
  - 1. A Prior Attempt on Hess' Life? Or an Interrupted Mind Control Procedure? 44
  - 2. The First Attempt at Murder-by-Medical Emergency: The Prostate Surgery Affair 44
- D. The South African Affidavit 50
- E. A Brief Note on German Reunification 53

3. A Brief Biography 55

- A. Early Life and World War One (1894-1914) 56
- B. Wounds: Hess Becomes a Pilot (1914-1918) 57
- C. Post-War: From Putsch to Power (1919-1933) 59
  - 1. The Haushofers and Hess 59
    - a. Hess and the Freikorps von Epp 59
    - b. 1919: Hess, the Haushofers, "Geopolitics," and the *Thulegesellschaft* 62
      - (1) The *Thulegesellschaft* 62
      - (2) Hess, The Haushofers, and "Geopolitics" 70
        - (a) Mackinder, Kjellén, the Heartland, and "*Lebensraum*" 73
    - c. The Spartacist Coup and the Beer Hall Putsch 77
    - d. Landsberg Prison: Hitler, Hess and *Mein Kampf* 79
- D. The *Stellvertreter*: Hess' Power within the Nazi Regime (1933-41) 82
  - 1. The Nuremberg Indictment and Hess' Power 82
  - 2. The Moral Ambiguity of Hess, and the Hess-Bormann Relationship 85

4. Flight of Fancy, Peace Proposals, Doubles Dilemmas, Difficulties with Dukes, and Nonsense at Nuremberg 87
- A. Nonsense at Nuremberg and Difficulties of Doubles 88
  - 1. Foretastes of MK-Ultra: Allen Dulles and Hess at Nuremberg 88
  - 2. "Hess'" Strange, Buffoonish Behavior at Nuremberg: "Brain Poison" and Hess' "Jewish-Bolshevik Mind-Control Conspiracy" 93
  - 3. Picknett's, Prince's, and Prior's Assessment of "Hess'" Nuremberg Speeches 104
- B. More about the Doubles Dilemma 109
  - 1. War Wounds, Missing Scar Tissue, and Magic Bullets 109
  - 2. Anomalous Corroborating Behavior and Other Miscellanies 113
  - 3. Picknett, Prince, and Prior Weigh in on the Doppelgänger Dilemma 117
    - a. The Actual War Wounds, and the Implications: The Real Hess Parachuted into Scotland 119
    - b. The Secret Measurement of Hess for a Duplicate Uniform: Substitution and Assassination Theories 122
- C. The Flight of Fancy and Hess' Capture 124
  - 1. The Strange "Shoot Down" Order and Conveying the News of Hess' Flight to Hitler 124
    - a. The Hess Flight in Some Standard Histories 124
  - 2. The Flight Itself and Its Implications: British and German Air Defenses 133
    - a. The Strategic Positions of Britain and Germany in the Spring of 1941 and the Oft-Overlooked Factor: the Atomic Bomb 134
    - (1)A Speculation on the "Lure" Hypothesis 137
    - (2) Churchill's 1942 Address to the House of Commons: Conspiracy Confirmed 138
  - 3. "Sealing the Deal" 139
    - a. Harris and Wilbourn's Examination of the British Constitution 139

b. The "Haushofer Letters". The German Side: No Peace with Churchill; The British Side: No Peace with Hitler 142

(1) The 1938 Army Plot and the 1939 Göring-Dahlerus Peace Effort 148

4. The Aircraft: Messerschmitt Bf 110 150

a. The Fuel Tanks and Drop Tanks 150

b. The Oil Tanks 152

c. The Maps, Flight Plans, and Their Implications 153

d. The Response of the British Air Defenses, and the Difficulty of Dungavel 157

D. The Difficulties with the Dukes 159

1. The British Peace Faction 159

2. Anglo-American Union, Altered Speeches, and Strange Messages 165

3. Was the Peace Plan also a Coup d'Etat Plan? 170

4. The Coup Hypothesis and Hess' University Essay 175

5. "Hess" in Britain, 194-1945: More Mind Manipulation, Ducal Difficulties, and Doubles Dilemmas 177

A. Capture and Immediate Aftermath 178

1. The "Manifestation" of Morris and McBride 178

a. The McBride Anomalies 180

b. The Inventory of What Hess Brought with Him: A Strange, and Old, Irish Manuscript? 182

c. Major Graham Donald Identifies Hess by Means of Another Absurd Conversation about Beer 185

2. Anomalies: A Glaring Absence, and a Polish Officer Talks to Hess 186

3. Telegrams, Coville's Strange Statement, and the Marx Brothers 191

B. From the Tower to Maindiff 194

C. Ducal Difficulties, Royal Protection and Reception Committees 197

D. A Short but Necessary Final Tangent: The Hess Flight and the Rise of Martin Bormann 203

6. Sacrifices, Surrenders, Statements and States **207**

A. Israel, Hess, and the Grand Dame of Conspiracy Theory 210

1. The Israelis and Hess 210

2. Hess, Halifax, Chamberlain, Churchill, the *Reichs-kristallnacht*, The Balfour Declaration, and the "Jewish Question" 212

3. Lord Victor Rothschild, MI-5, the Communists and Colonel Pilcher Again 216

B. The Holocaust Hypothesis and the Hess Peace Plan 223

C. The Nordau Quotation and Its Implications for the Hess Mess 226

D. Taking Stock 229

PART TWO
THE PENGUIN PROBLEM

7. Penguins and the "Peace Plan" **235**

A. Heinz Schön and Operation Highjump 236

1. A Brief Review of Antarctic Strangeness 236

2. Disturbing Questions about Highjump 237

a. The German Antarctic Expedition and State Councilor Wohlthat 237

b. The Post-war American Expedition of Admiral Richard Byrd in 1946-47 241

3. The Operational Plan of Highjump 244

4. The Strange Death of Admiral Richard Byrd's Son 247

B. Penguins, the Peace Plan, and the Hess Mess: What About Norway? 248

C. A Brief Review 252

8. Epilogue: Spandau Ballet (And Yes, This Time We *Do* Mean the 1980s Music Group) **257**

Bibliography 263

Table of Contents

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS AND DEDICATIONS

And to all my extended family and friends:
Scott D. deHart, and sons: Wesley, Alex, and Bennett:
Thank You is inadequate;
And to Calvin deHart,
in gratitude for helping "proofread" the manuscript and being a second, trustworthy pair of eyes, and for putting up with my "I want it yesterday" schedule!

To Catherine Austin Fitts,
Who, with me, wonders what really is going on "down there";

To "Al" in Norway, who told me during an interview that I should finally write "the Hess book";

To all my website members and subscribers for your support and prayers;

To "Maria" in Spain, and so many others,
for boundless support beyond my ability to repay;

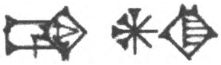
And to the late George Ann Hughes, for so many good times and conversations;

To Matt S. for sharing your good heart and conversation;

To Mr. S.E.J. for helping me authenticate the Nordau Quotation many years ago in the Library of Congress;

And Above All to T.S.F., who told me to write:
You are, and will always be, sorely and deeply missed.

You are each and all a true



FOREWARNED IS FOREARMED

"*Readers may form their own conclusions on these facts and deductions, but without such a challenge, acceptance of the official version continues, and with it misrepresentation of this critical moment when history failed to turn in the way that Hess and Hitler and so many in the highest circles of British life wished. It is high time the official story is confronted, for consideration of the path Churchill did not take in 1941 casts a more brilliant light on the morality of the path he did take, the history we know. Hence the subtitle of this book*: The Real Turning Point of the Second World War".

Peter Padfield[1]

THIS IS THE PLACE WHERE REGULAR READERS OF MY BOOKS have come to expect a rather lengthy Preface, laying out in abstract form the basic contents and argument of the book which follows it. Prefaces and Introductions are the places where normally I or other authors attempt to clarify the main details and argument of the book, according to the old adage, "tell them what you're going to say (Preface), say it (main book), and tell them what you said (Conclusion)".

But with the Hess affair—or as I have called it in this book, the Hess Mess—one is confronted with something else entirely, something that does not easily lend itself to the usual oversimplifications; it is, as I have designated it, a first-class gold-plated *mess.* Like the two Kennedy assassinations or the assassination of Dr. King, or the still-debatable Watergate affair ("What was *that* really about?"), or the Waco tragedy or the Oklahoma City Bombing or 9/11, it is a pivotal event of the twentieth century, and perhaps even *the* pivotal event. But unlike the rest of them, it is not "neat" or "tidy". A multi-layered conspiracy it most certainly is; a neat and tidy one, like the others, it most definitely is *not.* Yet, like the Kennedy assassination or 9/11, there are aspects of the Hess Mess that are classified to this day, and that should tell us something of its real significance.

---

[1] Peter Padfield, *Night Flight to Dungavel*: *Rudolf Hess*, *Winston Churchill*, *and the Real Turning Point of WWII* (Lebanon, New Hampshire: Fore Edge [University Press of New England], 2013), p. 21.

Preface

What I have is a *speculation,* a *proposal*—to be sure, not one that is based solely on contextual argument, but one based on careful parsing of details unearthed—but unnoticed (perhaps!)—by some other researchers. Why the "perhaps" in the previous sentence? Because like everything else in the Hess Mess, the details, when we shall encounter them, are capable of more than one interpretation. My interpretation of those details, as we shall discover, makes eminent *sense* simply on a logical basis of their implications. Thus, they become other components of the Hess Mess, and perhaps the principal ones.

In any case, the Hess Mess *is* a mess, and thus, rather than try to tidy-up the mess in the usual Preface or Prologue, I want the reader of this book to experience the same mystifications that I and others have experienced when researching it, in all their complexity and fulsome messiness, for there is a huge, nagging, gnawing Question at the heart of it all, that *no* one, to this day, knows the answer to. I certainly do not have an answer either. All I have is a speculation, a proposal. That said, I want the readers of this book to experience the *confusing* clutter of the Hess Mess in all of its apparent junkyard disorder, and hence I have attempted to present the affair as a *Gestalt,* which can only be appreciated as a series of layered, compounding mystifications, all networked and interlaced with each other, so that when my "added layers" are added to the mess, they will at least fit the "pattern," for Sacrifices and Penguins are very much a part of the Hess Mess.

All of that said, I really wrote this book "for myself and in full freedom,"—to quote the words of C.P.E. Bach wildly out of context -as an exercise to set down all my thoughts on the record, once I had pondered those extra details in the context of the Hess Mess.

Joseph P. Farrell
From somewhere
2017, the year that, supposedly, all the Hess Mess files are to be opened up

PART ONE:
THE HESS MESS

"*It soon becomes apparent that the whole Hess affair, from 1941 onwards, is riddled with so many contradictions and anomalies that it is obvious that the British authorities were desperate to conceal something. Judging by the fact that they are still desperate to conceal it, common sense dictates that they deem this secret to be unsuitable for public consumption, even after sixty years. But why? What could be so unacceptable to Britain, or the Allies, in the early twenty-first century? What does the Rudolf Hess story conceal that would in some way shock even today's cynical world?*"

"*How can the details of an abortive mission undertaken sixty years ago even begin to threaten today's Britain in any way?*"
Lynn Picknett, Clive Prince, and Stephen Prior,
Double Standards: *The Rudolf Hess Cover-up*, 2001,
pp. xx, 17 respectively.

1

SPANDAU BALLET

(AND NO, WE DON'T MEAN THE 1980's Music GROUP)

> "*He certainly had lots of time to think in the nine months he was in Landsberg. It was only after this, according to his intimate acquaintance, 'Putzi' Hanfstaengl, that the Führer cult began in earnest. Before then, he was* Herr Hitler to *everyone. At Hess' instigation, this now changed, first to* der Chef *and then to* Mein Führer. *Hitler seemed to enjoy the transmutation.*
>
> "*In prison, he had written* Mein Kampf *with the help of Hess*".
>
> Dusty Sklar[2]

NOTHING ABOUT THE CASE OF RUDOLF HESS is normal, and nothing about the "normal" or even the "revisionist" explanations of the Hess case are reassuring or convincing. Of all the high ranking Nazis imprisoned within the formidable walls of Spandau Prison in Berlin after the war when the Nuremberg War Crimes Tribunals had handed down their sentences, Rudolf Hess stands out as a black hole of bizarrerie almost unequaled in recent history. The Nazi Reich's Armaments Minister, Albert Speer, and the two chiefs of the German *Kriegsmarine*, Grand Admirals Erich Raeder and Karl Dönitz, all did their "time" in the prison, as did former Reichsbank President and Finance Minister Walther Funk, diplomat Konstantin von Neurath, and Hitler Youth leader Baldur von Schirach. These were some of the men that kept the gigantic war machine of the Third Reich smoothly running and functioning as a military power right up to

---

[1] It should be noted, however, that the rock group, according to the Wikipedia article on Spandau Prison, *did* get their name from the expression "Spandau Ballet," which was the slang for the twitching and spasms of the nervous systems of inmates executed by hanging in the prison during its years as a military and civil prison under the German Empire and Weimar Republic. I use it here in an entirely different sense, to denote (1) the theatrical dancing of the Four Allied Powers—France, Great Britain, the USA, and Soviet Union—in their handling of the prison's sole remaining inmate until his death, Rudolf Hess, (2) their explanations of the case, and (3) the equally bewildering mass of research and speculation that the case has engendered since the death of Spandau's most infamous inmate in August, 1987.

[2] Dusty Sklar, *The Nazis and the Occult* (New York: Dorset Press, 1977), p. 54.

the end of the war, and in Dönitz's case, had nearly brought Britain to its knees in the unrelenting U-boat warfare. Indeed, of all the "designated successors" to Hitler, it was Dönitz that finally succeeded Hitler as the legal head of state and government after the latter's problematical "suicide" in the Berlin *Führerbunker*. But these men, crucial as they were to the smooth functioning of the German military juggernaut, were released, some of them—Grand Admiral Erich Raeder and Walther Funk—having been sentenced to life in prison like Hess himself. Funk and Raeder were released early for health and humanitarian reasons, a point already raising a serious question about Hess, for clearly in the last decade or so of his incarceration, he had begun to suffer health problems as well. Why was he not also released on similar humanitarian grounds? Speer and von Schirach served their full twenty years sentences and were released on the same day: September 30, 1966, while Grand Admiral Dönitz, sentenced to a mere ten years, was released on the same day, ten years earlier.

Only Hess remained after the release of Speer and von Schirach, and he lived another twenty-one years past their release, finally dying on August 17, 1987, at 93 years of age.

Hess in SS General's Uniform

Prisoner Number Seven: *an elderly Hess* (*or* “*Spandau Hess*”?) *at Spandau Prison*.[3]

Buck-toothed, somewhat goofy-looking Rudolf Hess—with his perilous overbite, his dull fanatical eyes, his eccentric obsessions with the occult, and his bizarre and (many would say) insane behavior, not only during the Nuremberg tribunals but long before, during his infamous flight to Scotland in May of 1941 to negotiate peace with the British—only Hess was required to serve his full life sentence in Spandau, the only remaining prisoner after the departure of von Neurath, Speer, von Schirach, Funk, Raeder, and Dönitz. It's an absurd picture: the Allied powers—France, Great Britain, the USA, and the Soviet Union—all contributed to the maintenance and upkeep of the entire Spandau Prison, changing their military guards at regular monthly intervals, just to guard this one man.[4]

---

[3] See Abdallah Melaouhi, *Rudolf Hess*: *His Betrayal and Murder* (Washington, D.C.: The Barnes Review 2013), p. 28. This picture is often seen on the internet without attribution, but as far as I have been able to determine, it appears to be from Melaouhi’s book, and to date from the period that Hess was Melaouhi’s patient.

Even if one was *not* tempted to believe the absurd tales spun by neo-Nazis of secret Antarctic Nazi bases constructed and maintained by the German Navy, or even if one was *not* tempted to maintain that there may be some kernel of truth lurking within them, it would still seem far more likely that the Allied Powers and the Soviet Union would have contrived reasons not to release Speer, Raeder, and Dönitz. After all, these were pragmatic, sane, and in Raeder's and Dönitz's cases, professional military men, and as such, they all knew secrets. Yet, with the exception of Raeder, they were not sentenced to life; and in spite of whatever secrets they knew, they were all released. Similarly Walther Funk—President of the Reichsbank, German finance minister, and sponsor of the 1942 I.G. Farben-Reichsbank study on how to create a European federation (a study looking all too conveniently like the current structure of the European Union)[5] and who could also, most assuredly, tell secrets—was also released.

But the allegedly insane occult-obsessed lunatic that remained—Hess—the Allies and Soviets for some reason held under tight guard. *This* man—reviled and ridiculed in private by some in the Nazi hierarchy even before his infamous May 1941 flight to Scotland to negotiate peace with the British, even while Nazi domestic propaganda continued to laud and extol him, and universally rejected as insane by both the Nazi and British hierarchies *after* his "crazy stunt"—*this* man had to be guarded at all costs and his access to the outside world strictly and severely, and some would say, cruelly, controlled. This man alone of the Spandau Seven, had to remain imprisoned—in solitary confinement—for the rest of his 93 years.

---

[4] The guard rotation shifted on a monthly basis, with French guards during the months of February, June, and October; British guards in January, May, and September; American guards in April, August, and December, and Soviet guards in March, July, and November.

[5] See my *The Third Way*: *The Nazi international, European Union, and Corporate Fascism* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2015), pp. 167-218.

Indeed, there is only one other story that is as badly obfuscated and whose official narrative is so blatantly silly as the story of Rudolf Hess, Prisoner Number Seven, and that official narrative silliness concerns the assassination of President John F. Kennedy.

That, perhaps, ought to tell us something.

The question was, and *is*, *what* does it tell us?

In the case of the Kennedy assassination, the problem is that several plausible theories can be put forward as to who was involved in the conspiracy, and why.[6] In the case of Hess, however, theories abound to be sure, but without the benefit of anything near the supporting evidentiary weight that approaches that adduced for the JFK conspiracies. On the contrary, the Hess case is a wild roller coaster ride through a hall of mirrors enclosed in a fog of obfuscation of claim and counterclaim and a badly conflicted and contradictory narrative, a narrative also overlaid with wild postwar neo-Nazi assertions of Antarctic survival and UFOs, and the usual academic attempts at debunking them.

A. The Harvey's Barn Methodology: *The Hess Mess as an Epistemological and Historiographical Puzzle*

My mother had an expression that, through my use of it in interviews over the years, has come to be known to at least a few people. That expression is "going around Harvey's Barn',' by which she meant that a seemingly simple question could elicit from my father and/or me a long peroration of prelude, tangential perambulations and explanation prior to giving an actual "answer" to it. In point of fact, those long prologues and perambulations usually were, and usually are, a large part of the answer.

In the case of the "Hess Mess," however, the long prelude is necessary to highlight, not an *answer,* but rather the One Significant *Question* that hovers over the whole Hess affair, from his flight to Great Britain in 1941 and his sentencing at Nuremberg in 1946, to his long incarceration in Berlin's Spandau Prison and his final ignominious and suspicious end on August 17, 1987. That Question, which will remain unstated until the very end of Part One of this book, only gains its significance from a rehearsal and review of the salient and significant details of the "Hess Mess". Indeed, *all of the books on the Hess Mess are either an attempt to answer that One Question or a speculation on a plausible solution to it*. Such is also the case in *this* book: the lengthy review of other research and claims is a necessary component of the logic of the argument posed by that significant Question, and the speculative synthesis I offer here.

---

[6] See my *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy*: *A Coalescence of Interests* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), especially pp. 7-9.

According to standard historical narratives, Hess was already beginning to fall from favor and influence in the Nazi "inner circle" by the time of his notorious flight to Scotland in 1941 and, according to those same standard narratives or popular perceptions, he thus knew no real secrets. In this respect, the Hess Mess stands as a kind of epistemological and historiographical Chinese puzzle-box, perhaps even a *challenge* to those disciplines: How much speculation should be entertained with respect to the Hess Mess? What types of evidence should be admitted and examined? What *about* those post-war stories of Nazi survival, of Antarctica, and their claims about Hess' involvement? Are they simply to be ignored (as most Hess investigators have done), or conversely, are they a possible crucial component of its resolution? Or have Hess Mess investigators perhaps not even considered the implications of their own evidence, doggedly researched and uncovered?

I knew, years ago, when I embarked on this strange series of books in "alternative research" and, more particularly, in the research of the hypothesis of post-war Nazi survival and secret research, that eventually I would have to deal with the "Hess Mess". For reasons that will become clear in the rest of the book, I could not do so without first introducing the concepts of (1) post-war Nazi survival, (2) the Antarctic component of that mythos, and (3) outlining, over the course of several books and interviews, why I regarded the Nazi-Antarctic-UFO mythology as untrue, and something masking, perhaps, a more prosaic, but also more sensational, secret.

Thus, the messiest aspect of the "Hess Mess" is that it *does* spin out of control, wildly and very quickly, into associations and relationships with mind control, Antarctica, Atlantis, into conspiracies of doubles and double-crosses, and into strange lore and myths, which Hess, no stranger to the occult, and as Hitler's Deputy in the Nazi Party, most certainly knew.

1. The Questions that Lead to The Question

One may gain an initial approximation of just how *large* and "messy" the Hess Mess is by considering the following questions, which are, to be sure, variations of that One as yet unstated Question:

Why was it necessary to maintain an entire prison, and the military guards and medical staffs of four world powers, just to keep watch over one individual who, by the end of his life, was a frail old man, and a threat to no one? *Why* was it necessary to bear such a financial cost? *Why* was it necessary to maintain such an absurd "Spandau Ballet"?

What secrets did he know that the Four Powers wanted to prevent others from knowing? Did they themselves even know what those secrets were, or did they only suspect? *Or*: were they trying to break him and learn those secrets?

Or: did Hess not know anything at all? Were the secrets located elsewhere? If so where? And if so, then why maintain what can only be characterized as a charade for more than forty years?

Worst of all: was the man they were guarding even really Rudolf Hess, one time "Deputy Führer" of Nazi Germany, at all? Was "Spandau Hess" really Hess? Or was "Spandau Hess" someone else, a double, substituted at some point in the drama? And was *that* the real reason for the "Spandau Ballet" of elaborate changings of the guard and maintaining an entire prison for just one man, and refusing to let him out, lest the substitution—the real secret—be discovered?

But if "Spandau Hess" *wasn't* Hess, then what happened to the real one? *Why* was the substitution made at all? And *when* was the substitution made? Of course, the question of *when* a substitution was made also is an indicator of *who* made the substitution.

While we're talking about *Doppelgängers*, what about the aircraft in which Hess made his flight? Was it the same plane that crashed in Scotland as took off from Augsburg, Germany? If not, when and why was the substitution made? Was *Reichsmarschall* Göring secretly involved, as some allege, in aiding Hess' secret flight through the then-state-of-the-art air defenses of Germany? If so, why did Göring also order the same air defenses to shoot Hess down? And what of Hess' crazy flight plan, and equally problematical explanations for it?

On the British side, why was the response of the Royal Air Force so lackluster, when Hess' plane was clearly being tracked by British radar? Was this because Hess was expected, and his flight was being aided by some on the British side, as some have alleged? And if so, what was the explanation for the "soft" response of the then-equally-state-of-the-art British air defenses? Was it because Hess had been *lured* to the United Kingdom as part of a British intelligence "psyop," a "sting" designed to embarrass the Nazi leadership? If so, then why was no major effort ever launched by Great Britain to capitalize on the propaganda value of his capture? Or did Churchill covertly use Hess for other political purposes, as some researchers maintain, and if so, what were they?

Equally, if Hess was *not* lured to Great Britain, then why the "soft response" of its air defenses? Was Hess *expected*, as yet others allege? And if so, *who* expected him, and why?

Why was Hess' flight made on the same day—May to, 1941—that the *Luftwaffe*'*s* bombing of London reached its most destructive pitch during the whole war? And why, after his flight, did the *Luftwaffe* suddenly drastically curtail its bombing of Britain, and why, conversely, did the Royal Air Force also apparently curtail its bombing of Germany?

We may add to this already strange list of questions the following:

Why did Hess undertake his flight to Great Britain in the first place? Was it, as some have persuasively argued, to offer a peace plan to Great Britain in view of Hitler's then-secret preparations and intentions to invade the Soviet Union a little over a month later? If so, did Hitler or other high-ranking Nazis such as Göring know about the peace plan effort? Were they involved with it?

If *that* is the case, did they hope that there really was a faction in Great Britain hoping for a negotiated peace with the Third Reich? Did Hess come as a plenipotentiary with a guarantee for his safe conduct under a flag of truce from high authorities in the United Kingdom representing King George VI himself, as Hess himself maintained in the early days of his captivity by the British?

And while we're at it:

What happened to Hess while he was in the custody of the British from 1941 to the German capitulation? Was he being drugged, as Hess himself claimed? If so, why?

And once the war was over, how does one explain Hess' bizarre behavior at the Nuremberg War Crimes Tribunals? What is the significance—if any - of the strange remarks that *Reichsmarschall* Hermann Göring made to Hess during the course of the trials? Is there any relationship between Hess' behavior and the *Reichsmarschall's* remarks?

Last but surely not least, what (if anything) is to be made of the claims advanced—long after the war had ended and Hess was dead—that Hess was somehow involved in Göring's Antarctica project? Are they to be simply dismissed as unsubstantiated rumor-mongering and story-telling by second-hand dead-man testimony of post-war veterans? Or are there any indicators that they might be true, and if so, what are they, and to what extent are they true?

As can be ascertained by the foregoing and by no means exhaustive list of questions, the Hess Mess is exactly that, a *colossal* mess with no easy resolution, a nagging and festering mystery that squats in the middle of the twentieth century for over forty years, unresolved to this day. The epistemological and historiographical problem of the Hess Mess is, quite simply, that each and every aspect of the story has more than one explanation, and many of the details of the story have been so badly obfuscated that extreme care must be exercised in reviewing them, and in reviewing what *others* have concluded *from* them, in order to highlight the importance and potential implications of that One Significant Question. The Hess Mess is, perhaps, the most significant unresolved historical question of the twentieth century.

In this case, it is best to begin at the end, with Hess' death, for even in death, Hess remains a mystery. Did he commit suicide? Or was he “suicided,” as his own son, Wolf-Rüdiger Hess, and Hess’ male nurse for the last half decade of his life, Abdallah Melaouhi, suspected?

B. “In my End is My Beginning.”..

1. A Death in Spandau

The man we know as Rudolf Hess - one time Deputy *Führer* to Adolf Hitler himself as leader of the Nazi Party, and third in succession to become head of state and government after Hitler and *Reichsmarschall* Hermann Göring—was pronounced dead on August 17, 1987, around 4:10 PM at the British Military Hospital in Berlin. He had spent the last forty-one years of his life in Berlin’s Spandau Prison, the last surviving major Nazi leader, and the only one who had been kept in captivity to serve out his full life sentence.

According to researcher and author Peter Padfield, Hess had been accompanied by the Black American sergeant Tony (Anthony) Jordan, whom Hess did not like because of his anti-black prejudice, into the garden at Spandau prison for Hess’ daily walk. A small “garden house” had been placed in the courtyard for Hess, where he would typically spend his afternoons relaxing or reading. This occurred at approximately 1:30,[7] according to some accounts of Hess’ prison warders.

Padfield notes that while strict regulations meant that Hess was to be watched at all times, the small summer house—which had a window facing the formidable walls of the prison, and a pair of sliding glass double doors, a small table and some electric reading lamps—was normally left unobserved by the prison warders to allow Hess some privacy, with the guards only checking on him at regular intervals a few minutes apart. As we shall also discover, Hess normally sat in such a way that his guards could see him through the small window.

Then at approximately 2:20, Sergeant “Ten”—the warders are numbered in the official reports of Hess’ last day—made a routine check on Hess, noting that Hess had emerged from the prison in a tan raincoat and a straw sombrero, walking with his cane.[8] (Already there would appear to be a discrepancy, for was Hess accompanied to the garden house at 1:30, or 2:20 PM?)

---

[7] Peter Padfield, *Night Flight to Dungavel*: *Rudolf Hess*, *Winston Churchill, and the Real Turning Point of WWII* (Lebanon, New Hampshire: University Press of New England, 2013), pp. 3-4.

Meanwhile, number "Thirteen," who as a switchboard operator had never seen Hess, or Prisoner Number Seven as he was officially known,[9] was alerted by his colleagues that Hess was in the prison yard. Finding a colleague to relieve him at the switchboard, number Thirteen walked into the yard hoping to catch a glimpse of the infamous inmate. There he saw Tony Jordan, sitting under a tree on a bench, located approximately fifteen feet from the cabin.

As he passed by the structure, he attempted to look inside the small window that faced the prison walls to catch a glimpse of the prison's sole remaining prisoner, but could not see him. At this juncture, he called out to guard number Nine in the prison wall watchtower, to inquire if *he* could see Hess. Nine responded in the negative, but reassured number Thirteen that Hess had indeed entered the garden house.

All of this had in turn been watched by "Lieutenant number Three" who had observed Thirteen's perambulation. "Lieutenant Three" also noted for the official record that Hess' normal practice was to sit and read in the garden house in such a manner that he could actually be seen by the guards on the prison wall through the small window facing it. On this occasion, however, Hess could not be seen.[10]

Then at approximately 2:35 PM, Jordan left his perch at the bench under the tree to check on Hess. In his subsequent statements, Jordan explained that he had looked through the window, and saw that Hess was lying on the floor with his back slumped against the very wall containing the small window, through which he was looking. At that point he quickly entered the garden house and saw that Hess' legs were stretched out, and that he had the electrical cord from one of the reading lamps around his neck, and tied to the window latch. According to Jordan, the cord was taut and was apparently supporting Hess' weight. Additionally, Hess' eyes were open and according to Jordan, he was still apparently alive. Jordan lifted Hess to relieve the tension on the electrical cord and removed it from his neck. After this he opened Hess' shirt, and then ran to seek assistance.[11]

---

[8] Padfield, op. cit., p. 5.

[9] Spandau regulations officially prohibited any of the officers or warders from addressing any of their Nazi charges by name.

[10] Padfield, op. cit., p. 6.

According to guard number Nine on the prison wall, he saw Jordan exit the garden house and run to the prison, then turn around and run back to the garden house, and then, again, turn to run to the prison, this time entering it. At this point, the prison switchboard log records that Jordan had placed a call at 14:30, though as Padfield correctly observes, "it was surely later".[12]

At this point, Hess' male Tunisian nurse, Abdallah Melaouhi—whom we will encounter again when we consider *his* account of the events—and another medic, number Four, had been alerted, and had arrived. According to number Four, the time was 2:40 PM, for he had "looked at his watch". Collecting his first aid kit, he and Melaouhi ran to the garden house where he checked Hess' pulse, and tried to detect any breathing. Noting the red mark left around Hess' neck from the cord, and not detecting any life signs, he and Melaouhi began two-man CPR on Hess, ordering Jordan in the meantime to find and bring an oxygen tank.[13]

A few minutes later, he did so, returning with yet another medical orderly, "number Five," who brought the trauma kit, and inserted a breathing tube into Hess' neck. However, the connection on the tube did "not match that on the oxygen bottle"[14] and thus, Melaouhi had to breathe directly into the tube instead. The time was now, according to Padfield, around 3:00 PM.

2. But what Kind of Death?

a. The First Bit of Debris in the Hess Mess

At this juncture, accounts begin to diverge, and we encounter our first bit of "debris" in the "Hess Mess," for Hess' male nurse, the Tunisian Abdallah Melaouhi, refused to make any statement to the British military police until he was well clear of the prison. Subsequently, as Padfield notes, in all versions of the story that Melaouhi told, the electrical cord—which in the official accounts Hess had removed and tied to the window latch to hang himself—was still plugged in to the wall socket. As Padfield notes, Melaouhi's statement about the electrical cord "was a feature of all his accounts. *If correct it virtually rules out the official account of the prisoner's death*".[15]

---

[11] Padfield, op. cit., p. 7.

[12] *Ibid*.

[13] *Ibid*., p. 8.

[14] *Ibid*., p. 9.

Before continuing, it is worth pausing to consider two points:

1) Abdallah Melaouhi, while employed by the Spandau prison authorities, was *Hess*' nurse, and unlike the other figures involved in Hess' last day, was *not* subject to the military jurisdiction of any four of the Allied powers operating Spandau, but rather to the joint prison authority itself. It is thus intriguing to note that his version of events is ultimately the sole source for the idea that Hess' death was not a suicide, and that it occurred under highly suspicious circumstances;
2) Conversely, everyone *else* in the story *was* subject to specific national military jurisdiction, and hence could conceivably be ordered into silence on certain aspects of the occurrences that day, or simply ordered or be threatened to modify aspects of their testimony. And should such methods not prove persuasive enough, there's always the time-tested method of simply altering or falsifying documents, or removing them altogether, which, as we shall also discover, happens on more than one occasion in the Hess Mess.

Thus, at the outset of the Hess case, an investigator is placed into an ambiguous epistemological situation: who is he to believe, the official testimony based on more than one witness, but whose testimony can be coerced? Or the sole testimony of Hess' nurse, Melaouhi's testimony, the testimony of only *one* witness, who, nonetheless, has some claim as an *expert* witness?

Padfield continues his review of Melaouhi's account by noting that Melaouhi maintained that he saw two men whom he did not recognize, a large man and a relatively smaller one, both of whom wore American uniforms that were somewhat ill-fitting. Padfield interprets these men to be medical orderlies numbers Four and Five, although he notes that medic Five did not arrive until *after* Melaouhi was on the scene at the garden house.[16]

---

[15] Padfield, op. cit., p. 9, emphasis added.

While Padfield is extraordinarily careful in his examination of the details of the case, one must pause to point out a problem with his analysis of this point: is it likely that Melaouhi—who by that time had been Hess' *full-time* nurse for a number of years, and who had become thoroughly familiar with the operations of Spandau and who was therefore familiar with its regular personnel—would not have recognized two American medical orderlies? As Hess' nurse, he in fact had to know everyone with medical access to Hess. Rather, it would seem the converse is true: being familiar with Spandau's operations and personnel, it is more likely that Melaouhi would be particularly attuned to any break from routine, particularly where personnel were concerned. In my opinion his testimony in this respect takes on additional evidentiary weight.

Because the testimony of the American guards is consistent in the absence of any statement to the effect that there were strangers in the prison yard that day, Padfield rules out Melaouhi's story.[17] Additionally, Padfield observes that Tony Jordan's behavior prior, and subsequently, to his discovery of Hess, was radically different. Prior to the discovery, Jordan was calm, collected. The day's routine was unfolding as so many times before. *After* the discovery, however, Jordan was running back and forth "in complete panic... not knowing what to do".[18] Jordan had thus either to be "a consummate actor" or, contra Melaouhi's suspicions, "he had not killed Hess".[19]

The trouble is, Melaouhi's account is about a lot more than strangers in the prison yard that day, or simple "acting" on Jordan's part; here, the Hess Mess takes another strange epistemological twist.

---

[16] Padfield, *op. cit.*, p. 10.

[17] *Ibid*, p. 11.

[18] *Ibid*.

[19] *Ibid*.

Before we address Melaouhi's account, however, it is worth noting the remainder of the official timeline as Padfield summarizes it:

At approximately 2:50 PM, as the medical orderlies, "Four" and "Five" (or, the "strangers in ill-fitting American uniforms," on Melaouhi's view) were arriving at the scene, the British Military Hospital was alerted by the code name "Operation Paradox," which was the operational plan in place for a medical emergency involving Spandau's infamous and sole inmate. Sometime circa 3:10, a military ambulance arrived from the hospital at the prison gate, with a British medical officer arriving in his own car at approximately the same time.[20] At this point Hess was removed from Spandau and ca. 3:50 PM his body arrived at the hospital, where it was taken to a very special suite built on its second floor, a suite built and dedicated entirely to Hess. At 4:10, Rudolf Hess was pronounced dead,[21] and with that, the curtain rang down on the last major Nazi leader.

Unfortunately, while the curtain came down on Hess, the curtain went up on a much bigger opera and the ones who kept the case alive to this day, Hess' last nurse, Abdallah Melaouhi, and Hess' own then-grown son, Wolf-Rüdiger Hess.

b. Abdallah Melaouhi and Wolf-Rüdiger Hess: *The Problems with the* "*Suicide*" *Explanation Begin*

It was 6:45 in the evening when American Colonel Harold Keane phoned Hess' son, Wolf-Rüdiger, to inform him that his father had died. He could not give any further details. One day later, Colonel Keane telephoned Wolf Hess once again, and simply read to him the press release that had been prepared. This is the first official statement of the suicide explanation (and please note, the suicide explanation was already being promoted *prior* to the performance of the official autopsy by the British military authorities):

---

[20] Padfield, op. cit., p. 11.

[21] Ibid., p. 12.

> Hess, as he was accustomed to do, went escorted by a prison warder to sit in a small cottage in the garden of the prison. On looking into the cottage a few minutes later, the warder found Hess with an electrical cord around his neck. Resuscitation measures were taken and Hess was transported to the British Military Hospital. After further attempts to revive Hess, he was pronounced dead at 16:10. Whether this suicide attempt was the actual cause of death is the subject of a continuing investigation.[22]

Wolf Hess, like Hess' nurse Melaouhi, found the claim of suicide to be incredible in the extreme, since his father, whom he had been to visit many times, was crippled and stooped over with arthritis, and was so weak he could not walk without the assistance of a cane and a warder; moreover his hands were so crippled and weak from arthritis that he found it unbelievable that his father could have (1) tied a knot in the electrical cord on the window latch (having to raise his arms to do it!), and then (2) loop the cord around his own neck.[23]

Hess' male nurse, Abdallah Melaouhi, was a young man from Tunisia who had completed medical studies in Hamburg to become a nurse when he was hired in the early 1980's about five years before Hess' death to replace the Dutch nurse who had tended Hess, and who was retiring. According to the Foreword to Melaouhi's book *Rudolf Hess*: *His Murder and Betrayal,* Melaouhi had been hired by the Allied authorities of Spandau—and, to be more accurate, the Russians, who did all the non-military hiring for the prison—because given the "language and culture barriers, Spandau officials felt safe, that with Melaouhi that there would be no fraternization problem with Hess".[24]

This surely cannot be correct, since each of the four Allied powers running Spandau for the sole inconvenience of Hess—France, Britain, the United States, and the Soviet Union—were well aware that Hess had been born in Alexandria, Egypt, in the small but vigorous German merchant community there, prior to World War One, and as such, Hess knew and spoke Arabic at least to the extent that he was able to converse with Melaouhi in that language.[25] One is tempted, rather, to view Melaouhi's hiring as perhaps being an attempt by the Allies to get Hess to disclose to an Arabic speaker something he otherwise might not do to anyone else. While there is *absolutely no evidence* for this conjecture, in a case with so many twists and turns it is the possibility is worth mentioning.

---

[22] *The Daily Telegraph,* 19 August, 1987, cited in Padfield, *Night Flight to Dungavel,* pp. 12-13.

[23] Padfield, op. cit., p. 13.

[24] Abdallah Melaouhi, op. cit., p. 20.

This returns us once again to the epistemological problem. The problem, once again, is simply this: besides being the one "witness" at the scene that day who openly and consistently has *challenged* the official narrative at certain key junctures and details, and is thus one witness versus many, he is also an *expert* witness given his medical background, whereas most of the witnesses in the official narrative were soldiers and jailers, and not medical personnel. As noted earlier, it is Melaouhi who is the sole source for the doubts about Hess' death. "Every account of Hess' death insists he committed suicide, *except* for Abdallah Melaouhi's".[26]

Notably, Melaouhi first insisted that suicide could not be the explanation of Hess' death in sworn statements given under oath before German notaries and authorities. His statements thus "stand in direct contradiction to the official order given to Scotland Yard's chief, Howard Jones, by England's chief prosecution, Allen Green, to suspect all investigations into what *the Scotland Yard files labeled* '*The Hess Murder Case*'".[27] For Melaouhi himself, the case was clear, for he writes in his book, "the question was no longer whether or not Hess had been murdered, but rather who had committed the crime and why".[28] Indeed, as word of Melaouhi's testimony began to circulate in conjunction with Wolf Hess' own clearly expressed doubts, the media began to question the story, and sought Melaouhi out for numerous interviews.[29]

It is easy to see why, for Melaouhi's account is not only a direct, almost point-by-point refutation of the official suicide narrative, but it is also the testimony of the only medical technician at the scene, who was not under *any* kind of military jurisdiction from any of the four Allied powers operating Spandau.

---

[25] Abdallah Melaouhi, op. cit., p. 20.

[26] *Ibid.*, p. 21, emphasis added.

[27] *Ibid.*, emphasis added.

[28] *Ibid.*, p. 24.

[29] *Ibid.*, pp. 25-26.

> It's just after lunch August 17, 1987,

Melaouhi writes,

> and I'm sitting in the living room of my official residence in Wilhelmstrasse 23 in Berlin-Spandau, less than 100 feet from Spandau Allied Prison. I'm reading the newspaper when the phone rings around 2 p.m. The young senior guard of the day, the Frenchman Jean-Pierre Audouin, is on the phone and, panic-stricken, he beseeches me: *'Come quick! Dammit! Quick! Hess has been murdered, no, not murdered!*'"[30]

Melaouhi sprang into action, putting on his shoes, but forgetting to tie them, and rushed to the prison, where, by his account, he was standing before the main gate approximately two minutes after receiving the call from Audouin.[31]

(*1*) *The Delaying Tactics of the British and American Guards*

Once at the gate, however, Melaouhi maintains that he rang the bell incessantly for some twenty minutes—becoming angrier and angrier in the process—"until the British guard, Bernard Miller, finally appeared. Peering through the small window of the iron prison door, he pretended not to see me and immediately closed the window again. I kept ringing the bell".[32]

Finally, some minutes later according to Melaouhi, "he looked through his window again and said: 'Mr. Melaouhi, it's all over, you can go home now'".[33]

If one is keeping track of times, this would have been some time around 2:25-2:30.

Melaouhi, by his own admission, was by this point "really desperate to reach the prisoner whose care had been entrusted to me," so he continued to try to persuade the British guard to open the gate and admit him to the prison, "using German, English, and French" for good measure.[34]

---

[30] Abdallah Melaouhi, op. cit., p. 29, emphasis added.

[31] *Ibid.*, p. 30.

[32] *Ibid.*

[33] *Ibid.*

Then comes a significant statement, one that has gone largely unnoticed among researchers investigating the Hess Mess:

> Finally, he seemed to have had enough and, opening the door, he let me pass. I didn't get far because Miller had all the keys to the doors in the building complex and he wouldn't open the door leading to the wing where I would have been able to get to Hess in just a few minutes. An American soldier who was standing only six feet away behind the open door, pointed his rifle at me and shouted: "No, *nicht rein*!", "No, you can't enter!" Struggling and shouting, I pushed his rifle away from me. Then, suddenly, an American officer came on the scene *who knew me*. He ordered the soldier to let me pass.[35]

It is intriguing to note that Melaouhi's statement confirms that there *were* strange or unknown personnel in Spandau that day who—since Melaouhi, a steady fixture there and certainly one who would be well-known as Hess' personal charge nurse—was not recognized by them. In this, Melaouhi's subsequent assertion that he saw two *strangers* in ill-fitting American uniforms is at least consistent with the above statements.

Notwithstanding the American officer's intervention, however, Melaouhi records that the British guard, Miller, continued to refuse to open the door of the central wing of the prison, forcing Melaouhi "to take a detour of several hundred meters around the building" in order to reach Hess in his traditional afternoon retreat in the garden house.[36] Upon reflection on the delays he experienced with the British and American guards, Melaouhi wondered whether this was due to them not having received any clear orders or instructions on what do to on his arrival, or whether the delay had a more sinister purpose, namely, to ensure that Hess was well and truly dead, and that any revival efforts "would not change things".[57] Indeed, the delay, according to Melaouhi, may have sealed Hess' fate:

---

[34] Abdallah Melaouhi, op. cit., p, 30.

[35] Ibid., emphasis added.

> In my opinion—and I have inevitably seen many dead people during my career as an intensive care medic—Rudolf Hess was already dead for about 30 to 40 minutes when I got to the garden. It was exactly this time about 40 minutes, which I lost in the other delays I experienced trying to get to Hess on that fateful day.

Interestingly enough, this introduces yet another problem in the "Hess Mess," for in Padfield's reconstruction, Tony Jordan discovered Hess ca. 2:30 PM, and thus, any calls to medics and to Melaouhi, would have to have been made after that time, *if* Jordan's times are correct. Yet Melaouhi maintains he received a call earlier, at approximately 2 PM. It would appear that either the official narrative witnesses, or Melaouhi, are either confused about the times of events, or dissembling, or possibly a mixture of both

I, however, am inclined to believe Melaouhi for three specific reasons:

1) Melaouhi has little to gain by lying;
2) In reading Melaouhi's book, it is apparent that, as a medical professional, he strongly felt his first duty was to his patient's health and well-being, and that additionally he felt a great deal of compassion for Hess; and finally,
2) Even on the supposition that he is confused about the timing of the phone call from Spandau urging him to come at once and the timing of his arrival there, the central core of his argument is *not* based on timing, but rather upon his professional judgment that Hess was simply physically unable to perform the tasks he would have had to perform in order to commit suicide in the manner described by the official story, as we shall see below. Even so, as a medical professional, he is trained to note times of events by habit, and hence it is unlikely that he was confused.

---

[57] Abdallah Melaouhi, *op. cit.*, p. 118.

(*2*) *The Scene of the Crime*: *Strange* “*Americans*” *in Ill-fitting Uniforms*

Sometime ca. 2:30-2:40, Melaouhi arrived at the garden house, and here it is best to cite his own words more extensively:

> When I finally reached the small building out of breath after losing more precious time, I couldn’t enter the house. When I finally managed to open the door, I immediately noticed *that a struggle had taken place*. I had cleaned and tidied up the small wooden house just the day before. Now the straw tiled mat covering the floor was completely untidy and the tall lamp had fallen over. *I clearly remember that the lamp*’*s cable lying on the floor was still connected to the socket. The small round table and easy chair had also been overturned. Nothing in the room was in its usual place*.
>
> Rudolf Hess was lying lifeless on the floor, his arms and legs stretched out on the ground. Two *men dressed in American uniforms were standing alongside him—the men*’*s uniforms were much too small*, *with the uniform of the larger man almost bursting at the seams*. Although I knew everyone who had access to “Prisoner No. 7,” I had never seen these two men before. Not only that, but the black American guard whom Hess feared and deplored most, Tony Jordan, was also in the room—he seemed to be completely exhausted and extremely nervous, sweating heavily with his shirt almost soaking wet. He was also not wearing his tie, which was a highly unusual violation of the prison dress code.[38]

Later in his book, Melaouhi elaborates on this scene, speculating on what he thinks it represented:

> After arriving on the scene, my first impression was that a struggle had just taken place. This was where someone suffering from numerous infirmities and without much strength left in his body must have, in sheer panic, desperately yet unsuccessfully tried to defend himself. Looking at the people standing in the room, I then saw whom he had tried to defend himself against. The victim

---

[38] Abdallah Melaouhi, op. cit., pp. 30-31, emphasis added. Melaouhi’s account subsequently in the book is almost an exact repeat, with the addition that the electrical cord that was still plugged in was “supposedly the cord that Hess had used to hang himself, according to the Allies”.

> was lying on his back with his hands and legs stretched out on the ground *almost in the middle of the small room* which measured about 70 square feet. Lifeless. Dead. The colored American guard, Tony Jordan, was standing near the feet of the dead body. He appeared overwrought and stressed, extremely nervous and sweating so heavily that his shirt was saturated with sweat and sweat was running down his face. He was also not wearing a tie, a clear violation of the Spandau prison military dress code. It was then that I first noticed the other two people who were standing next to Hess. I was now bent over my patient and I looked up from below at the two men in uniform. They both gave me icy stares and then, looking at Jordan several times with questioning glances, seemed to be asking, "What is *he* doing here?" There was one large and one small man, both of whom were wearing American uniforms.
>
> But were they really Americans? *Guards wearing the uniforms of the four custodial Allied governments were **not** allowed to enter the inner area of the prison.* Soldiers were even categorically forbidden to approach the prisoner. They were not allowed to speak a word to him. *They were confined to their posts on the watchtowers and at other "sensitive" points of the prison... .*
>
> But these two men were not Americans, at least not American soldiers—the uniforms that they wore were incomplete and they also didn't fit. The larger of the two men looked like a sausage pressed into a uniform that had been buttoned up with great effort and which now threatened to burst open at any moment. The smaller man's trousers were even too small for him. It looked as if they had just now hastily gotten these uniforms in order to conceal their illegal presence in the prison.
>
> All of this crossed my mind as I was kneeling next to Hess to check his breath, pulse, and heartbeat. At the same time I reproachfully asked Jordan, "What have you done to him? He replied in a strange mixture of fear, anger, and even spiteful relief, "The pig is finished. You won't have to work anymore(sic) night shifts!" Mind you, he said "finished," not "the pig has killed himself".[39]

Melaouhi's account, if true, raises questions: who *were* the "strange men" in ill-fitting American uniforms? And what about the plugged in cord? As Melaouhi himself suggests, the latter raises three interesting questions of its own: was Hess strangled with it, and did the murderers reconnect it to the electrical socket? Or was it even the murder weapon at all?[40] Of course, according to the official narrative and witnesses, it was not connected but was wrapped around Hess' neck. In Melaouhi's testimony, it was never around Hess' neck, for in none of *his* statements does he ever mention seeing it there. For Melaouhi, suspicion fell upon Jordan because he was missing his tie.

---

[39] Abdallah Melaouhi, op. cit., pp. 120-121, emphasis added.

In any case, Melaouhi records that he himself became panic-stricken, realizing that "something extraordinary must have happened here," and that "at least the Americans and the British must also be aware of what had happened here".[41] Fearing that the two strange men with the ill-fitting American uniforms "would not hesitate to allow another 'accident' to occur to cover up the first crime, this time to a small and unknown Tunisian male nurse",[42] Melaouhi states that he decided to perform resuscitation, even though he knew Hess was already dead, largely in order to pretend that he did not suspect murder.[43] He ordered Jordan to get the first aid trauma kit and summon an ambulance, and in the meantime gave Hess mouth-to-mouth breathing. This being unsuccessful, he requested one of the two strange men to help him with heart massage. "This time", records Melaouhi, "the stranger demonstrated his strength and brutality by cracking several of the old man's ribs while he pressed down on Hess' chest".[44]

There is of course a self-contradiction here: how can Melaouhi maintain that there were signs of a struggle in the garden house, when Hess was so old and frail to begin with, and scarcely able to tie knots in anything, much less electrical cord?

Unless of course the struggle was between other parties, with Hess entirely uninvolved, and this is, indeed, the conclusion Melaouhi came to.

Melaouhi also notes that on August 17, 1987, the day of his alleged suicide, Hess did not appear to be suicidal or even depressed, and that Hess had even placed a requisition request with the prison authorities for certain items, and that he had made a similar request to Melaouhi to go shopping to replace a defective heating coil for his tea water.[45] Additionally, argues Melaouhi, there were other numerous opportunities to commit suicide with far greater success than in the garden house, where he was under closer supervision. The cell block itself, during the night, with plenty of electrical cords, was not under as close supervision.[46]

---

[40] Abdallah Melaouhi, op. cit., p. 119.

[41] *Ibid.*, p. 31.

[42] *Ibid.*

[43] *Ibid.*, p. 122.

[44] *Ibid*, p. 32.

(*3*) *Hess' Physical Inability to Perform the Tasks Required for His Suicide According to the Official Narrative*

But garden house or cell-block, and notwithstanding possibly mis-remembered times, the real problem for Melaouhi was Hess himself:

> After a while I realized that Hess couldn't have hanged himself even if he had tried. In the last five years in which I had looked after him almost daily, I had gained a clear and precise impression of his physical condition and his physical capabilities, and it was impossible for Hess to have killed himself in the manner described by the Allies by placing a cable around his neck and tying it into a knot and then either hanging or strangling himself to death.
>
> Toward the end of his life, my patient was so weak that he needed a special chair with an electric lifting device to even get up. He had to be supported when he walked since he suffered from muscular atrophy in his left thigh causing a muscular debility and loss of the control of his knee joints.... *He was completely blind in one eye and only had* 30% *of his vision in the other one*. When he fell to the ground he could not get up by himself. He hands were crippled by an intense arthritis. He was even unable to pick up a spoon when he ate; I had to put it into his hand. He would therefore *have been unable to tie a knot in a cord or cable—he couldn't even tie his shoelaces. He also couldn't lift his arms above his shoulders so that he never would have been*

---

[45] Abdallah Melaouhi, op. cit., p. 116.

[46] *Ibid*., p. 117.

> *able to tie a cord to the handle of the window from which he allegedly hanged himself.*[47]

The problem with the official narrative in other words, was that the Allies, having hired Melaouhi to begin with, were now confronted by first-hand medical testimony of Hess' own nurse that their narrative made no sense.

(*4*) *Miscellanies*: *Champagne Parties*, *Tampered First Aid Kits*, *and a Familiar Pattern of the Destruction of Evidence*

As noted above, Padfield observed that the tube from the first aid trauma kit did not fit with the oxygen tank, and that Melaouhi had to blow into the tube himself, and this appears to corroborate Melaouhi's statement about the first aid kit (and here, once again, note the timing difficulties when comparing Melaouhi's statements to the review of the official narrative provided by Padfield); having dispatched Jordan to retrieve the kit, Melaouhi states:

> I was desperately waiting for Jordan to return when he was suddenly standing next to me again. I immediately noticed that he had used his long absence—I estimated that he had been away for about 15 to 20 minutes—to change his clothes. The equipment that he brought had been clearly tampered with. That morning I had checked the first aid kit as usual and confirmed through an entry in my logbook that nothing was missing and that it was intact. Now the seal had been broken and the contents were in a state of disorder.[48] The battery for the intubation set was missing and the tube had been perforated. There was also *no oxygen in the oxygen bottle.* Yet when I had routinely checked the first aid kit and the oxygen device that very same morning, I am certain that both had been in complete working order. If any further proof was needed that things were not as they should have been, then this tampered first aid kit gave me an unmistakable sign that something had gone wrong here.[49]

---

[47] Abdallah Melaouhi, *op. cit.*, pp. 126-127, emphasis added.

[48] Ed.: from prior use?

[49] Abdallah Melaouhi, *op. cit.*, p. 123, emphasis added.

This is an important point of general agreement between the "official narrative" summarized by Padfield, and Melaouhi's account, and in my opinion, strengthens the nature of Melaouhi's allegations, for his behavior and observations are consonant with a medical professional's under such circumstances; he is noticing details that a non-medical professional would not.

Things took another bizarre turn for Melaouhi when, accompanying his patient—or his patient's body—to the British Military Hospital, he observed various British officials and "other officers" cheerfully drinking champagne and "apparently celebrating something," which he suspected was the death of Hess.[50] The British governor, Anthony Le Tissier, observed Melaouhi standing alone in the hospital lobby and asked him if he would like to see the body of his patient and so say "a last good-bye". Melaouhi naturally said yes, and was led to a basement room of the hospital where Hess' body was placed. Melaouhi, "very sad and shaken," observed Hess and "prayed for him in the custom of my faith because I believe that God is universal".[51]

The strange day was not, however, over for Melaouhi. Driven back to Spandau to identify a jacket which he had taken off while administering CPR to Hess, he was forced to wait four more hours before he was allowed to return to the garden house. There, the scene had already been altered, for "almost everything had been removed including all the traces of what had happened,"[52] and several strange men were milling about the area. Some of these approached him, handed him his jacket, and asked him to identify it. Having done so, Melaouhi was given his jacket and released. On the way out of Spandau, he inquired of the prison secretary who the strange people were, and was informed that they were "all officers from the U.S. Federal Bureau of Investigation".[53]

The very next day, the German tabloid newspaper, *Bild*, ran a story stating that bulldozers would soon appear at the prison to demolish the structure to make room for a new shopping center. The article stated that a plan had been approved three years previously that the old prison would be demolished beginning no less than 48 hours after Hess' death. What was the reason for the sudden need to destroy the scene of a possible crime? Answer: the Allies did not want the place to become a possible neo-Nazi shrine.[54]

---

[50] Abdallah Melaouhi, *op. cit.*, p. 124.

[51] *Ibid.*, pp. 124-125.

[52] *Ibid.*, p. 125,

[53] *Ibid.*, p. 126.

There is, however, a deeper, darker, potential pattern here, for if Hess was murdered, then the rush to destroy the crime scene—in this case, a whole building—is paralleled by some other events in recent history where a similar "rush to destroy the scene" by destroying and removing whole buildings also occurred, events where there was also an unusual connection to Germany and extreme right wing Nazis: the destruction of the Alfred Murrah Federal Building in Oklahoma City after the Oklahoma City Bombing, and, of course, the removal of debris after the destruction of the World Trade Center complex after 9/11?[56]

(5) *Melaouhi's Assessment of the Motivations*: *The "Gorbachev Hypothesis"*

Like others involved with, or investigating, the Hess Mess, Melaouhi too is compelled to ask the all-important question: why? If Hess was murdered, why? And why do it so late in the game?

A clue, he argues, is provided by the fact that on the day of his death, there were no Soviet personnel present in the prison?[56] In touch with Wolf Hess soon after his father's death, Melaouhi informed him there was no doubt in his mind that his father had been murdered.[57] For Melaouhi, there is no doubt that is was a crime of state, and that "the special interests that led to this crime *are apparently still valid* though he does not speculate on what could still be so sensitive, so long after World War Two's end, that would require the political murder of a frail old man.

---

[54] Abdallah Melaouhi, op. cit., pp. 141-142.

[55] In the case of the Oklahoma City Bombing, the connection is Timothy McVeigh's alleged sometime associate Andreas Strassmeir, a.k.a., "Andy the German," who, as I pointed out, appeared to have been some type of German intelligence agent. Strassmeir's father, Günther, was Chancellor Helmut Kohl's Minister without Portfolio entrusted with the reunification plan. (See my *The Nazi International*: *the Nazis*' *Postwar Plan to Control Finance*, *Conflict*, *Physics and Space* [Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008], pp. 209-216) The connection to 9/11 is via (1) Mohammad Atta, (2) Deutsche Bank, and (3) the "Nazi friendly" Swiss banker Francois Genoud. (See my *Hidden Finance*, *Rogue Networks*, *and Secret Sorcery*: *The Fascist International*, 9/11 *and Penetrated Operations* [Adventures Unlimited Press, 2016], pp. 11-33; 152-157; 167-174)

[56] Abdallah Melaouhi, op. cit., p. 133.

[57] Andallah Melaouhi, *op*. *cit*., p. 135.

Melaouhi speculates that one possible reason was that the Allies discovered that Hess was successfully smuggling letters out of Spandau, and wanted to put a permanent end to the practice.[59] The problem with this view is that they would have had no idea of how many letters might already have escaped, and that might turn up with embarrassing revelations on Hess' death and any suspicions that its occurrence was not natural.

A much more serious hypothesis, however, and one that needs to be factored into any consideration of The Question, is the Gorbachev Hypothesis, and it was Melaouhi who was one of the first, but quite certainly not the only, individual who suspected it.

For years the western Allies had assured the Hess family, and the rest of the world, that they were indeed pressing for Hess' release on humanitarian grounds, and that it was the Soviets who continually played the "bad guy" and vetoed any such notion, conveniently enabling the western Allies to "blame Russia".

But then something happened, and that something was Mikhail Gorbachev, the new "liberal-minded" General Secretary of the Communist Party of the Soviet Union.[60] As we shall discover in more detail subsequently, through contacts in East Germany, Wolf Hess learned that Mr. Gorbachev was seriously considering a complete reversal of prior Soviet policy regarding Hess, and dropping its veto on his release for humanitarian reasons. It was even rumored that this would be announced when the Soviets took their next monthly turn at guarding Hess.

Melaouhi informed Hess of what he thought would surely be good news to the prisoner and his patient.

> But Hess failed to react at all. After about five minutes I asked him if he wasn't happy about the news. After taking a deep breath, he

---

[58] Ibid., p. 36.

[59] Ibid., p. 122.

[60] Of course, "liberal-minded" in this context is a highly relative term, given the previous occupants of that position in people like Stalin, Khrushchev, Brezhnev, Andropov, &c.

> answered, "You fool!" Shocked, I asked him what he meant. He answered, slightly irritated, "Do you have to know everything?" I said no, but that I would still like to know this one thing, whereupon he said in a flat tone of voice, "If the Russians release me that would be my death. It would only be a happy day for me if the British published my documents internationally. Then I would be free". I didn't really understand what he meant until he explained to me, "I always wanted to have peace in this world, and I did everything I could to prevent war. Almost everything that people write about me is not true. That is why it would be good if these documents could finally be published, because then I would be a free man and I could finally see my family again. You must, however, not tell anyone about this as this would be more harmful than useful to me, and the Allies would twist every word I said as they pleased as they have always done before".
>
> It wasn't until after his death that I understood what he meant, that the British—for reasons of state—would never allow him to be a free man.[61]

With this second-hand dead-man's testimony—always of very weak evidentiary value—we have the first intimation of yet another explanatory hypothesis in the Hess Mess: the "Peace Plan" hypothesis. According to this, Hess' flight was, as is now widely believed, a flight undertaken to negotiate a peace with Great Britain to end the war in the West. It is *this* hypothesis that lies at the central core of almost all investigation of the Hess Mess, and accordingly, we shall have much to do with it throughout the remainder of this book, for it, more than any other, highlights the unusual nature of the Hess Mess and the significance of The One Question.

We may, however, anticipate the problems that the Peace Plan Hypothesis poses to some extent by posing the related questions once again: is this hypothesis *really* sufficient, in and of itself, to explain why Hess was kept in prison for so long? And if the murder hypothesis be true, is it sufficient motivation to explain it? Why not murder him earlier? And if the murder hypothesis is *not* true, why would the Russians *not* release Hess *earlier,* and use whatever resulted from their about-face to embarrass the Western Allies and exploit its propaganda value? Or was there some secret the Soviets were also attempting to preserve, of which the Peace Plan Hypothesis was only a component? Or were they willing to play "bad guy" in the service of some secret arrangement and agreement with the British? Did they change their position, knowing that Hess would be murdered by someone else to preserve that secret?

---

[61] Abdallah Melaouhi, *op. cit.*, pp. 113-114.

As Melaouhi puts it, "Outside of sheer cruelty, it would seem that there would have to be some quite powerful political reason why Hess needed to rot in jail".[62] But once again: What political reason would be relevant in 1987, fully forty-two years after the end of World War Two, and, if one considers the fact that some Hess files are only due to be classified in the year of the writing of this book—that is, in 2017—fully *seventy-two* years, almost three quarters of a century, after the end of the Second World War? What secret could possibly be relevant even up to the present time? Moreover, what possible secret could that be, that *Hess* might have been privy to, prior to his May 1941 flight?

C. The Autopsies

Such questions were instantly posed the moment the British announcement stated that the ninety-three year old Hess had committed suicide. But assuming for the sake of argument that Melaouhi's statements are totally unfounded—which this author does not believe them to be—is there any *other* evidence that Hess' death might not have been suicide? Indeed there is.

The British forensic pathologist and professor of forensic medicine, J.M. Cameron, a consultant for the British Army on forensic medicine, was ordered to Berlin on Hess' death to perform the autopsy. Cameron and his team discovered in Hess' clothes a note which they claimed was a suicide note, clearing indicating Hess' intentions of taking his own life. This note was read to Wolf Rüdiger Hess during a phone call.

Hess' son quickly concluded it was bogus because it used forms of expression and diction that his father had not used since the late 1960s and early 1970s, and, since it made direct and explicit reference to the Nuremberg Tribunal which had sentenced him to life, it was in any case forbidden under prison regulations. Wolf

---

[62] Abdallah Melaouhi, op. cit., p. 274.

Hess concluded, on this basis, that the note had probably been written in November 1969 during a period of severe illness for his father, and that it was confiscated by prison authorities on one of their many sweeps of Hess' cell years prior to its convenient appearance during his death in 1987. Under Spandau's regulations, Hess was forbidden, absolutely, speak or write about anything having to do with politics, with the Nazi era, or with the Nuremberg tribunals.[63] Wolf Hess, increasingly skeptical of the official report, decided to commission his own private autopsy.

In the meantime, Cameron's official autopsy found that Prisoner Number 7 had perished from asphyxiation that resulted from "compression of the neck" as a consequence of "suspension". In other words, strangulation by hanging.[64] Additionally, however, Cameron's autopsy also discovered other things, things which were left curiously "unexplained", which included a "circular bruised abrasion of the top of the back of the head," and deep bruises on the back of the head, and bruising on the right upper thyroid cartilage, and further additional bruising *behind* the voice box.[65]

Padfield, who does *not* believe Hess was murdered,[66] observes that while Cameron's autopsy was intended to dispel doubts and quell any political explanations or examinations of Hess' death, had exactly the opposite effect, because no explanation was forthcoming as to how the bruising occurred. It will be apparent to the reader however, that bruising might be consistent with Melaouhi's assertions that it appeared as if some sort of struggle had occurred in the garden house.

As for Wolf Hess' autopsy, with which we shall have more to do in a subsequent chapter, the German pathologists discovered *"two almost parallel* strangulation marks on the neck,"[67] a difficult feat for someone hanging himself to achieve, to say the least. However, in his final report, one of the German forensic pathologists hired by Hess to perform the autopsy, an eminent pathologist named Dr. Spann, went further in challenging Cameron's conclusions:

---

[63] Peter Padfield, *op. cit.*, p. 14.

[64] *Ibid.*, p. 15.

[65] *Ibid.*, p. 13.

[66] *Ibid.*, p. 350.

[67] Wolf-Rüdiger Hess, *Who Murdered my Father*, *Rudolf Hess*? *My Father's Mysterious Death in Spandau*, trans. from the German by Sonja Ruthard (Decator, Alabama: Reporter Press, 1989 [Printed in Argentina by Talleros Graficos, Genesis, calle Mrillo 2548, Buenos Aires)), p. 73.

> During the second autopsy, findings were ascertained in the area of the skull and neck which lend themselves to explain the death by a central paralysis, caused by violence to the neck and accompanied by stoppage of the oxygen supply to the brain. Therefore, the findings ascertained by us agree with Professor Cameron's inasmuch as it is also his opinion that the cause of death was asphyxiation due to the compression of the neck. This presupposes that the decisive mechanism causing the death lay in a compression of the arterial vessels of the throat, accompanied by stoppage of the oxygen supply to the brain, and not in a compression of the respiratory tract.
>
> Dr. Cameron's further conclusion that *this compression was caused by the suspension is not necessarily compatible with our findings...*
>
> *In forensic science, the* **course** *which the ligature mark takes on the neck is considered a classic indicator for the differentiation between the forms of strangulation of hanging and throttling. A horizontally level course of the ligature mark around the neck is considered to be a characteristic sign of throttling. In the case of hanging, on the other hand, the ligature mark ascends in the direction of the fixed attachment point of the strangulation device...*
>
> If Professor Cameron, in his assessment of the cause of death, comes to the conclusion that this cause of death was asphyxiation caused by compression of the neck due to hanging, he neglects to consider the other method of strangulation, namely throttling. By definition, throttling entails strangulation by means of a device encircling the throat and the active constriction by another person, or very rarely by the victim himself, whereas in the case of hanging, the compression by the strangulation tool is achieved passively through the weight of the victim's own body. Making this distinction would have required an examination of the course of the ligature mark. The precise course of the mark *is not reported in Professor Cameron's autopsy report...*
>
> Here... *an almost horizontal course of the strangulation mark could be identified, this finding, as well as the fact that the mark on the throat obviously was* ***not*** *located above the larynx, is more indicative of a case of throttling rather than of hanging.* Under no circumstances can the findings be readily explained by a so-called

> typical hanging. The burst blood vessels which we observed in the face, caused by blood congestion, are also not compatible with typical hanging.[68]

If one accepts Melaouhi's statements of Hess' frail health and strength, and considers them in relation to these remarks, it is clear that Prisoner Number 7 was in no condition to throttle himself. Add to this the bruising on Hess' head and around his neck, and one has clear signs of a struggle, and of murder. Even standing alone, Dr. Spann's report clearly implies murder, not suicide.

1. The Magical Year of 2017: Weeding the Files

The mysteries surrounding Hess' death are not likely to be solved even with the year 2017—this year and the year this book is being written—and the year that the remaining Hess files are to be declassified. Indeed, one may wonder about the wisdom of writing a book on Hess at all in the year that the files are supposedly going to be opened. But as Padfield rightly observes, the disclosure date in effect means nothing whatsoever, since *known* files, such as the inventory of items Hess brought with him on his notorious flight to Scotland, have already been "extensively 'weeded'"[69] leaving us with yet another epistemological conundrum, for the amount of files "that have been destroyed" or thus weeded is completely unknown, leaving one to argue from silence, or, at best, from what documentary evidence as *does* exist for the removal and "weeding" of certain files.[70]

Or to be as plain as possible about it: the 2017 disclosure date in effect means nothing, for while files might appear to challenge this or that detail in the Hess Mess, by the nature of the case, and based on the prior pattern evident in the Hess Mess, nothing is to prevent the removal of some files which might never appear on any index of files. In fact, it is even possible that files might be forged to challenge this or that aspect of the Hess Mess uncovered over the years by various researchers, and hence, the speculations will continue.

---

[68] Wolf-Rüdiger Hess, *Who Murdered my Father*, *Rudolf Hess*? pp. 89-90, all emphases added.

[69] Padfield, *op. cit.*, p. 19.

[70] Padfield, *op. cit.*, p. 20.

2. A Strange Remark in Melaouhi's Recovered Letter from Hess

As we shall see, those speculations *should* continue, for what *has* been uncovered in the Hess Mess by various researches is stunning enough. And it should continue for another reason, for some research has uncovered things whose implications have possibly gone unnoticed by the very researchers who uncovered them.

One of those "uncovered things" was a letter of Hess which Melaouhi himself had acquired, and which Hess had apparently written in Spandau and given to Melaouhi, with incredibly detailed and specific instructions on how to transmit it to people "on the outside". In this letter, at a certain point, Hess elaborates on a period of his imprisonment in England at Maindiff Court, a very *problematical* period as we shall discover in future chapters.

In this case, complaining of his treatment during this period, Hess also complained that he was being poisoned by his British captors, and then states, "I wasn't allowed to smoke".[71] For the health-and-homeopathy-obsessed Hess, Deputy Führer of the Nazi Party, which had itself during the years before the war embarked on an anti-smoking campaign worthy of modern America, this is stunning.

In fact, it's more than stunning.

Because Hess didn't smoke...

...and we re only *just* getting started.

---

[71] Abdallah Melaouhi, *op. cit.*, p. 206.

2

THE SON SPEAKS ABOUT THE "SUICIDE"

"*Then, in 1937—after ten years of marriage—they had their only child, Wolf Adolf Karl Rüdiger Hess*. '*Wolf had been Hitler*'*s codename in the early days of the Nazi Party*, '*Adolf is self-explanatory*, *and*, *of course*, *he was named* '*Karl*' *after Professor Haushofer*. *Both men after whom the baby was named acted as his godfathers*".

Lynn Picknett, Clive Prince, and Stephen Prior[1]

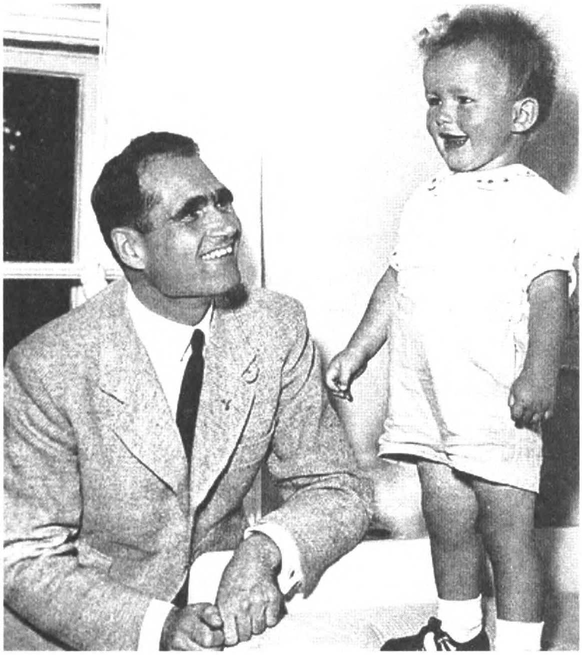
WOLF RÜDIGER HESS, THE ONLY SON AND CHILD of his father Rudolf and his mother Ilse Hess nee Pröhl, was barely a three and a half years old when his father flew on his now infamous flight in May of 1941 to Great Britain. It was only much later, in Spandau prison, that he saw his father again for the first time as a grown man, and from that point, during much of his adult life, he sought to obtain his father's release from Spandau on humanitarian grounds, and after his father's suspicious death until his own death in 2001 at the age of sixty-four, fought to overturn the suicide verdict of the official narrative, and to restore his father's honor. Whatever one may make of that quest, it is at least understandable.

As the surviving son of Rudolf Hess, and father of three children himself, Wolf Hess was naturally in touch with, and contacted by, many of the researchers of the Hess affair throughout his life, and himself published three books on his father, two of which—*My Father Rudolf Hess* and *Who Murdered My Father, Rudolf Hess? My Father's Mysterious Death in Spandau*—we shall have occasion to cite in this book. In this chapter, our concentration will naturally be upon the latter, for Wolf-Rüdiger and his lawyer, Dr. Alfred Seidl, who was also his father's lawyer at the Nuremberg Tribunals, noted many anomalies about the death of Spandau's famous Prisoner Number Seven, and attempted to bring them to the attention of the wider public.

---

[1] Lynn Picknett, Clive Prince, and Stephen Prior, *Double Standards*: *the Rudolf Hess Cover-up* (London: Sphere, 2014), p. 61. If one gets only one book on the Hess Affair, then in this author's opinion, their book is *the* book to have. Its probing of the known details is thorough, their ability to unearth *new* details in the case is profound, and their synthesis and speculations are boldly, tightly and well-argued. As we shall discover, they unearthed a highly suggestive detail which has, as I shall argue subsequently, massive and contemporary significance and implications.

Wolf Adolf Karl Rüdiger Hess,
November 18, 1937-October 24, 2001



Rudolf Hess with Wolf Rudiger, possibly sometime shortly before the flight to Britain. Rudolf Hess' over-bite is evident in the picture.

Wolf-Rüdiger with his father's body.

A. Anomalies Noted by Hess' Son, Wolf-Rüdiger Hess

Like his father's nurse, Abdallah Melaouhi, with whom he was in contact, Wolf Hess did not believe the story that his father had committed suicide, and in *Who Murdered My Father, Rudolf Hess*, he attempted to outline his personal concerns and the reasons for them. Wolf Hess begins the first chapter of *Who Murdered My Father* by noting one glaring anomaly: the death certificate itself was signed only by British personnel, and yet, his father's death occurred in the month of August, during the *American* guard rotation.[2] It may be objected that as a British prisoner initially, and as Hess' medical needs were always attended to by the British Military Hospital, there was nothing unusual in this.

However, as will be seen, Wolf Hess raises a number of other issues which place this small fact into a rather larger and more serious context. Not the least of these is that he adds the important detail that as soon as the American governor of Spandau, Darold Keane, phone him in Munich, he and his lawyer, Dr. Seidl, boarded a plane and flew to Berlin the very next morning and attempted to gain entry to the prison, only to be told that they "were neither allowed inside the prison complex" nor were they allowed to view Wolf Hess' father, and that no further information was forthcoming.[3]

Hess and Seidl booked a hotel room, and Hess called the secret phone number of the prison and demanded to speak to Keane, who, "after some attempts to stall me,"[4] finally took the call and informed Hess that the prison governors were still in conference, and that he would be informed as soon as the press report was prepared for release. He was told to stay calm and wait in his hotel for the call from Spandau.

---

[2] Wolf-Rüdiger Hess, *Who Murdered My Father, Rudolf Hess? My Father's Mysterious Death in Spandau* (Decatur, Alabama, Reporter Press: 1989 [Printed in Argentina at Talleres Graficos, Genesis, calle Murillo 2548, Buenos Aires]), p. 45.

[3] Wolf-Rüdiger Hess, *op. cit.*, p. 47.

[4] *Ibid.*

"Finally," writes Hess, "the long awaited call came". But when it did, Hess and his lawyer began to observe the carefully crafted wording of the release might be concealing a crime:

> I was speechless at what I got to hear. Keane said: "I will now give you the report that we will release immediately afterwards to the press. It reads: 'Initial examination indicates that Rudolf Hess attempted to take his own life. On the afternoon of August 17, under the supervision of a prison guard, Hess went to a summerhouse in the prison garden, where he always used to sit. When the supervisor looked into the summerhouse some minutes later, he discovered Hess with an electric cord around his neck. Attempts were made at resuscitation, and Hess was taken to the British Military Hospital. After further attempts to revive Hess, he was declared dead at 4:10 p.m. The question whether this suicide attempt was the cause of his death is the object of an investigation including a thorough post-mortem which is still ongoing at this time'".
>
> I hung up. Obviously neither a response nor small-talk were expected on the other end—both were quite superfluous. This was now the third conflicting official account of my father's death within 24 hours. *The first had spoken of the death in the British Military Hospital, the second of the death in Spandau prison.* So now it was a "suicide" in the prison's garden summerhouse. It was not yet to be the last version of his death![5]

Pausing to note the same frail health and physical weaknesses stressed by Melaouhi, Wolf Hess and Seidl began to question the explanations, not the least because in the "press announcement" there was no time of death itself, only an announcement of the time of the certification of death, leaving open the question, where,

---

[5] Wolf-Rüdiger Hess, *op. cit.*, p. 48, emphasis added.

exactly, did Hess die? At Spandau, or at the British Hospital?

Then came yet another "clarification," this time from the Americans:

> In their Telex #241904 of August 24, 1987, the Berlin office of the American news bureau Associated Press put it this way: "Hitler's former Second-in-Command, Rudolf Hess, hung himself in the Spandau Prison for War Criminals with the extension cord of a reading lamp. *According to the latest details made available by the Allies on Monday evening, August 24, 1987*, *Hess* (*on Monday, August 17, 1987*) *wrapped around his neck part of the cord that was already attached to the* ***ceiling or wall*** *of the prison's garden summerhouse. He then apparently let himself drop off the bench on which he had sat*".[6]

It is worth pausing to consider this report, for as we have already seen, Rudolf Hess' habit was to sit in the summerhouse in such a fashion that he was visible through the window. Why then, as he was presumably wiring the cord for his suicide, was he not visible, and prevented by the guards? Note again the physical difficulties of an old man performing the task, which this press story appears to attempt to address by maintaining that the cord was "*already* attached to the ceiling or wall of the prison's garden summerhouse". But the statement, having attempted to address one physical difficulty, creates another, for Rudolf Hess then "Let himself drop off the bench on which he had sat".

This newly-created difficulty is revealed by the *next* Associated Press Telex:

> Shortly after—in Telex #241917—a further communication from the same news agency stated more precisely: "While sitting in the summerhouse, Hess had to *elevate his legs*. According to the details available, he left himself *fall sideways* with the cord around his neck. It is not known

---

[6] *Ibid.*, p, 49, emphases added.

> whether the cord broke in the process.".. Immediately after (Telex #241938), even more details: "The Allies later indicated more precisely that the cord had been an extension cord. It had always been hung on the window latch when not in use. Hess is said to have looped the cable around his neck and then apparently dropped off the bench."..[7]

Again, it appears that the explanations are designed to meet objections to the suicide explanation based on Hess' frail health and arthritis: the cord is "already attached," and now, rather than being attached to the window latch *or the ceiling* it is now just the window latch. And Hess is no longer dropping off of the bench (which he might have had difficulty getting *on* to), he is now "falling sideways". But yet a new problem is created, for in order to do so, we are informed he had to "elevate his legs," a difficult proposition for an arthritic old man that was stooped over from the ailment, and who had to walk with a cane, and whose left thigh according to Melaouhi was atrophied. Interestingly enough, notes Wolf Hess, the initial press release "containing the first mention of suicide was not signed by the Russians, but on the insistence of the British, the Americans released it to the public anyhow".[8]

B. The Pre-Planned Protocols for Hess' Death, vs. What Actually Occurred: The Autopsies Again

In June 1983, as it became evident that Prisoner Number Seven, already advanced in years and in increasingly deteriorating health, was nearing his mortal end, "the four Allied prison Governors had arrived at an agreement that established the measures that would be taken in the event of Rudolf Hess' death".[9] When the situation actually occurred, however, these agreed-upon protocols were quickly thrown out, and the British

---

[7] Wolf-Rüdiger Hess, *op. cit.*, p. 50.

[8] *Ibid.*, p. 61.

[9] *Ibid.*

"immediately seized the initiative".[10] While the matter of a joint autopsy conducted under the auspices of medical personnel of all four Allied powers in the governing structure of Spandau was *not* specified nor called for in those protocols, such a joint autopsy was only to be expected, and indeed, it *was* proposed after Hess' death. But every attempt to *pursue* this proposal was obstructed "by the angry insistence of the British,"[11] who thus assured that it would be a Briton—Dr. Cameron as we discovered in the previous chapter—who would perform the first and only official autopsy.[12]

There were other anomalies noted by Wolf Hess, one of which concerned the extraordinarily small dimensions of the garden house. It was so small that an "extension cord"—the alleged "suicide" weapon—simply was not needed for any of the electrical appliances in it.[13] His requests to obtain the testimony of his father's black American guard, Tony Jordan, simply went unanswered by the American authorities.[14]

But *one* request did meet with an unusual success, for Wolf Hess asked for, and received, not just a copy of Cameron's report, but an original, "signed by Professor Cameron and written on the stationary of the University of London's forensic medical institute, which he heads".[15] Wolf Hess, following the suggestion of Dr. Hugh Thomas, another British physician who had attended his father in the British hospital on one occasion, and with whom we shall have much to do later in this book, believes that Dr. Cameron in fact performed "two autopsies," or rather, one autopsy with two entirely different reports or versions of it, one for public consumption, and a much more secret one, intended only for certain British authorities.[16]

---

[10] Wolf-Rüdiger Hess, *op. cit.*, p. 61.

[11] *Ibid.*, p. 63.

[12] *Ibid.*, p. 62.

[13] *Ibid.*, p. 86.

[14] *Ibid.*, p. 88.

[15] *Ibid.*, p. 91.

[16] *Ibid.*

C. Was Rudolf Hess Suicidal?

One of the persisting questions in the Hess Mess is—if Hess knew something so dangerous that he had to be permanently incarcerated and then murdered—why not try to murder him earlier than actually happened? Wolf Hess attempts to provide an answer to this nagging question[17] by pointing out that earlier in the year of his death, on January 14, 1987, his father put in a formal requisition request to the four Allied governing powers for a pacemaker to be installed on his heart, indicating that "he was prepared to risk the 'possible dangers associated' with the operation".[18] His father, according to Wolf Hess, told him he had been suffering more cardiac arrhythmia and variable pulse-beats, and even heart attacks, all of which was disputed by two British medical experts, who had "supposedly been unable to ascertain any negative changes of my father's heart".[19]

But according to Wolf Hess, there was more going on that meets the eye:

> I have recounted the pacemaker-episode here not only to document by father's unbroken will to live, but also because his transfer, soon after, to the British Military Hospital would otherwise have been even more mysterious and inexplicable than it is. Within our family, we speak of it as the second attempt on my father's life....
>
> On Sunday, March 1, 1987, at 3:00 a.m., Rudolf Hess was transferred to the British Military Hospital because of bronchitis. There could be two explanations for this more than unusual time: 1) The British wanted to keep the matter out of the public eye and avoid awkward questions by the press; 2) they wanted to make use of the "blind spot," in the night of February 28 to March 1, between the French and Soviet guard periods, in order to place the blame on the Soviets for everything that would—or should?—happen.

---

[17] It will continue to nag us for the rest of this book.

[18] Wolf-Rüdiger Hess, op. cit., p. 113.

[19] Ibid.

> One day earlier, on Saturday, February 28, 1987, our father had still written to us. The letter was peculiar in its unusual brevity and its content. It was not the first time that the handwriting had been shaky, but we could only wonder helplessly at the text. It read: "Dear Gräfelingers, for lack of subject matter, sincere greetings, Yours". If, on this evening before his coup-like transferal to the British Military Hospital, he lacked subject matter for a letter, then he could neither have been seriously ill nor informed about the imminent transferal.[20]

In other words, Rudolf Hess' cryptic letter to his family may have forestalled a "murder-by-medical-emergency".

1. A Prior Attempt on Hess' Life? Or an Interrupted Mind Control Procedure?

But the situation grew even stranger, for Hess remained in the British hospital for some days, after Ilse Hess, Rudolf's wife, had received a telephone call from the prison telling her that Rudolf was in the British hospital suffering from bronchitis, but that there was no need for concern and that he would "surely be taken back to Spandau within 24 hours".[21] Four days, however, passed, until on the fifth day the German magazine *Stern* called the family, inquiring what news it had of Rudolf's pneumonia! Wolf Hess called the prison authorities and requested permission to see his father, which was granted by the British governor, Le Tissier...

... for the *next* week, and on a day that Wolf Hess could not take off from work! Hess' son then requested a *different* day off that week, and Le Tissier informed him to call back on March 9. When he did so, the British governor then informed Wolf that his father did not want to see him until the *end* of the month.[22]

---

[20] Wolf-Rüdiger Hess, *op. cit.*, p., 115.

[21] *Ibid.*

[22] *Ibid.*, pp. 116-117.

Frustrated by the run-around, and increasingly suspicious of the British prison authorities, Wolf Hess and his lawyer, Dr. Seidl, decided to go to Berlin anyway, and informed the press that they were coming. They were met by an avalanche of press, and a strong German police presence around the prison. Once admitted, they were confronted by all four Allied prison governors, and various interpreters and medical personnel. As it was March, the Soviets were in charge of the prison, and the Soviet governor suggested that the medical experts could update Hess and Seidl on his father's condition.

Wolf Hess and his lawyer refused, and insisted on seeing his father. At this point, the Soviet governor produced a document and placed it on the table. It was

> ...a sheet of paper of DIN A 4 format, bearing almost illegible writing with unclear and jumbled syntax, faulty spelling and punctuation. I could hardly decipher it: "I request that my son come to see me on the very last day of the month". No date, no salutation, no signature, only the familiar round stamp: Allied Prison Spandau Official" and two date stamps, one from March 9 and one from March 11, 1987. The latter had been crossed out with ball point pen.
>
> We studied the document for a long time, astonished. "If my father really wrote this, he can only have done so in a state of almost total mental derangement," I said. Dr. Seidl confirmed that whoever had written this was "not legally competent". So the document in question was "completely worthless". We insisted again on seeing the patient ourselves, immediately. Now the Russian demanded a written application to visit. I explained that I had already sent one two weeks ago, but had not received an answer yet. To which the Russian replied: "No answer is an answer too".[23]

After more back-and-forth between Hess, his lawyer, and the Russian governor, Wolf Hess was finally told that only a written request to see his father would be considered.

---

[23] Wolf-Rüdiger Hess, *Op. cit.*, p. 118.

He immediately wrote out the application, and passed it to the Allied governors who, not expecting such stubbornness, retired to consider it. Eventually they returned, and informed him that the application for a visit had been turned down, but he *could* go to the door of his father's hospital room with the four Allied governors, and look at his father from the door![24]

What happened next, provides the first entrance into yet another mystifying aspect of the Hess Mess, and here it is necessary to cite Wolf Hess' account extensively:

> The Governors and their entourage accompanied me to a special elevator which went to the so-called Rudolf-Hess-Suite of the British Military Hospital. The entrance to this elevator was guarded by British paratroopers with machine guns. Two of them went up with us. Upstairs, in the hall, there were more armed guards. We went to the room where my father stayed. Through an open door, I could see my father, about 10 feet away. The attendants had pushed two chairs together, sat him down on them like a string puppet and covered him with a blanket.
>
> He looked frightening: pale, hollow-cheeked, eyes sunk deep into their sockets, flickering and looking unsteadily into a void. Yes, this figure matched the letter we had been shown. He was obviously not in full possession of his faculties. What had they done to him? I don't know for how long I stared at my father like that.
>
> The French Governor went to my father and spoke to him, insistently, like one might speak to a child, or to someone who is not all there. He had a surprise for him, he said, his son was here and wanted to speak to him. My father interrupted the Frenchman, his voice sounded hollow and alien. No, he said, he didn't want to speak to his son now, not until month's end. He repeated this in the exact same words he had scribbled down on that paper. It was eerie. Was he drugged?
>
> I couldn't take it any more (sic). Agreement or no, I had to do something. The Governors had left the room; I took a step forward, towards my father, and said loud and clear:

---

[24] Ibid., p. 119.

> "Father, I am your son and am here to talk to you. Can you recognize me?" What would happen? Would the machine guns go into action? Would the commandants drag me out of the room? Nothing happened, they stood behind me as if in silent fascination.
>
> My father showed no sign of recognition, his face was unchanged. He just repeated, as though memorized or forced, the one senseless sentence he had already expressed in writing. I repeated my question twice, a little louder each time. Then I gave up. We left. There was deathly silence, none of the Governors even said a word.[25]

Such behavior is characteristic of victims of mind-control experimentation and techniques, and it is not the last time we shall encounter that subject with the Hess Mess, for as we shall eventually discover, it is a *consistent and egregious feature* of the affair.

The strange episode was not over for Wolf-Rüdiger, for after the "encounter" with his drugged father, he was able to speak with a young British orderly. This individual

> ...had obviously not been instructed in any way and spoke to me frankly. My father, he said, spent all his time in a sort of *dazed half-sleep*.[26] He was no longer interested in anything; newspapers, television, books, he pushed them all away. *Real sleep alternated with a sort of daze.* He had tried to rouse him out of his apathy, but with hardly any success.
>
> For me, *this conversation was an important and informative clue. Now I knew for sure that something unusual had been done to my father.* This was not just a matter of pneumonia or circulatory weakness, as the doctor had argued. He had described the effects of these on the brain of a 93-year-old as generally irreversible. But in fact, 14 days later, I found my father in almost splendid health—quite "his own self" again, one could say... *But for me, it was the ultimate proof that something was very wrong on March 12, 1987. My father's condition at that time*

---

[25] Wolf-Rüdiger Hess, op. cit., pp. 120-121.

[26] These words, as we shall eventually discover, are quite important as is the timeframe—1987—in which they were made.

> *cannot have had any natural causes, it must have been artificially induced.*
>
> Should our unexpected appearance in the British Military Hospital have interrupted an operation whose aim it was to secretly put my father to sleep?
>
> Had we perhaps prevented a murder, at the last possible moment?[27]

Or had Wolf Hess interrupted a very *different* procedure, one designed to reinforce prior imprinted patterns of behavior? Had Wolf interrupted a *mind control* procedure? Strange and bizarre as this sounds now, subsequent facts long known to researchers of the Hess Mess will place this question and its corollary—*who* was imprisoned as Hess in Spandau—in a premier position of importance. As Wolf Hess notes, when he reported his observations of his father and his conversations with the British orderly to his lawyer, Dr. Seidl, the latter "left it open whether it was a matter of mind-altering drugs or injections, hypnosis or withholding of necessary medical care".[2]

2. The First Attempt at Murder-by-Medical Emergency: The Prostate Surgery Affair

As noted previously, Wolf Hess' family believed the March 1987 "bronchitis" affair to have been a *second* attempt on his father's life, or, as suggested by Dr. Seidl, an interrupted mind-control procedure. The occasion that Wolf Hess' family suspects was the "first attempt" on his life was the "prostate surgery" affair of 1979.

This incident was occasioned by the news that the Soviet dictator, Leonid Brezhnev, was considering a reversal of Soviet policy regarding Hess, allowing his release, much like Mikhail Gorbachev was to do a decade later.[29] As these possibilities were being pursued through diplomatic channels, unusually—or perhaps, predictably—

---

[27] Wolf-Rüdiger Hess, *op. cit.*, p. 121, emphasis added.

[28] Wolf-Rüdiger Hess, *op. cit.*, p. 122.

[29] *Ibid.*, pp. 126-127.

Rudolf Hess suffered another medical "emergency" on September 4, 1979, shortly after Wolf Hess had just visited his father. According to Wolf Hess, on this occasion

> ... the British had practically kidnapped him, that is, taken him to the British Military Hospital. Neither the family nor the public had been informed of this coup. We only found out on September 10, through a press report, that Rudolf Hess had been taken to the British Military Hospital for a "thorough examination" and had since been transferred back to Spandau.
>
> All this was made even more mysterious by the way in which the then British Commandant, G.P.T. Marshall, tried per telephone on September 21, 1979, and then even per letter, to convince the family of the necessity of immediate surgery on Rudolf Hess' prostate—an operation which, he said, the recent examinations had indicated must not be delayed if uraemia was to be prevented. My father stubbornly resisted this operation. Despite the presence of the four Governors, I had warned him most insistently against agreeing to a dangerous operation if it was to be performed by surgeons from those political powers who through his continued imprisonment had shown so much inhumanity that nothing could be put past them. The British attempts to change his mind via my influence were thus useless.
>
> The fact that my father agreed with my opinion and stood firm presumably saved his life at that time and led to the failure of a plan that can be regarded with a high degree of certainty as the first attempt on Rudolf Hess' life. The man responsible—the British Commandant Marshall—was recalled from his position, ostensibly for health reasons. I suspect that in reality it was rhe Soviets who urged his dismissal after he had tried to cross their plans for the release of Spandau's last prisoner by means of an attempt at murder, disguised as prostate surgery'.[30]

In other words, as far as Wolf-Rüdiger Hess was concerned, both Soviet attempts to reverse their position on Hess, and allow his release, both those of Brezhnev in the late 1970s and of Gorbachev in the late 1980s, led in both instances to strange "medical emergencies" which Wolf Hess believes to have been disguised murder attempts. Notably, the attempt which finally succeeded avoided the medical aspect until the last minute: Hess was "suicided" either at Spandau, according to Wolf Hess, or at the British Military Hospital, where attempts were made, by the Allies' own statements in their press releases, to "resuscitate" him. As far as Wolf Hess was concerned, the murderers had to have already been in the prison in the morning, with the full collusion of the senior ranking American warders.[31]

---

[30] Wolf-Rüdiger Hess, *op. cit.*, pp. 144-145.

This is not as far-fetched as it may sound, for that "full knowledge and collusion" does *not* necessarily imply that the senior American officers were privy to the *purpose* of the presence of additional strange personnel. A cover story could have been easily concocted to cover their presence.

And this brings us to Wolf Hess' final, and most sensational, disclosure:

D. The South African Affidavit

Referring directly to Abdallah Melaouhi's statements and affidavit to the German authorities, Wolf Hess observes that Melaouhi

> ...was so flustered by the sight of his charge lying motionless on the ground that he first of all attempted resuscitation and furthermore asked the two strangers if they knew how to perform heart massage. One of them readily bent down to my father and began to massage his chest. The pressure he exerted in doing so was so great that later, during the autopsy, nine ribs and the sternum were discovered to be broken. It is thus quite clear that no life-saver was at work here, but rather one of the two murderers?[32]

---

[31] Ibid., p. 93.

[32] Wolf-Rüdiger Hess, op. cit. p. 97.

But why was Wolf Hess certain that the "two strangers" of Melaouhi's affidavit were his father's murderers, beyond the strong convictions of Melaouhi himself in this regard?

The answer, while unverifiable, is worth citing from Wolf Hess' book extensively once again, for it contains a pattern that will be reflected in other evidence encountered later, and thus, once the supporting evidence for the pattern *is* encountered, *the following* information gains in credibility. There was "*another* affidavit regarding the events in Spandau on August 17, 1987", writes Hess.

> My wife brought it back from South Africa, where she had called on a South African lawyer with contacts to Western secret services. Very little of it has reached the public to date. With Dr. Seidl's and my assistance, my wife was able to persuade the lawyer to phrase his testimony in the form of an affidavit before a judge. It is dated February 22, 1988, and reads as follows:
>
> "I have been questioned about the details of the death of the German Reich Minister Rudolf Hess.
>
> "*Reich Minister Rudolf Hess was killed on the orders of the British Home Office*. The murder was carried out by two members of the British SAS (22nd SAS Regiment, SAS Depot Bradbury Lines, Hereford/England). The military unit of the SAS (Special Air Service) is subordinate to the British Home Office—not the Ministry of Defence. The planning of the murder as well as its direction was carried out by MI-5 (normally responsible for Great Britain's internal security; secret service actions outside of Great Britain fall under the jurisdiction of MI-6). The secret service action whose aim was the murder of Reich Minister Rudolf Hess was so hastily planned that it was not even given a code name, which is absolutely not customary.
>
> *"Other secret services which had been privy to the plan were the American, the French, and the Israeli.* Neither the KSG (sic) and QU (sic) nor the German secret services had been informed.
>
> "The murder of Reich Minister Rudolf Hess had become necessary because the government of the USSR intended to release the prisoner in July 1987 (in connection with Federal President von Weizsäcker's visit to Moscow), in which

> respect President von Wiezsäcker was, however, able to negotiate an extension with the head of the Soviet government, Gorbachev, until November 1987, *the next Soviet period in the guard cycle*.
>
> "The two SAS-men had been in Spandau prison since the night of Saturday-Sunday (August 15-16, 1987). *The American CIA gave its consent to the murder on Monday* (*August 17*, *1987*).
>
> "During Reich Minister Rudolf Hess' afternoon walk, the two SAS-men lay in waiting for the prisoner in the prison's garden summerhouse and tried to strangle him with a 4½ foot-long cable; afterwards, a 'suicide by hanging' was to be faked. But as Reich Minister Rudolf Hess put up a fight and *cried for help*, which alerted at least one American guard soldier to the attack, the attempt on the prisoner's life was broken off, and an ambulance of the British Military Hospital was called. The unconscious Reich Minister Rudolf Hess was taken to the British Military Hospital in the ambulance.
>
> "I was given the above information personally, verbally, by an officer of the Israeli service on Tuesday, August 18, 1987, around 8:00 a.m. South African time. I have known this member of the Israeli service both officially and personally for four years. I am completely satisfied that he was sincere and honest and I have no doubts whatsoever as to the truth of his information. The absolutely confidential nature of his conversation with me is also beyond doubt".[33]

Because Wolf Hess does *not* provide the jurisdiction or court before which this affidavit was allegedly sworn, one must *assume* it to be true, and allow further evidence to be developed that might corroborate its core concepts.

The concepts themselves, however, if true, are breathtaking in their implications:

1) Rudolf Hess was indeed murdered;
2) The language of the affidavit, with its strange repetition of the phrase "Reich Minister Rudolf Hess," suggests that the alleged affiant, a lawyer, was trying to draw

---

[33] Wolf-Rüdiger Hess, op. cit., pp. 99-100, emphasis added.

attention to *a point of law* by his repeated and consistent reference to Rudolf Hess by his governmental title, i.e., Hess was the target of a *political assassination,* and was not simply the victim of a murder;

3) Once viewed as a political assassination, one must search not only for those with the means, motive, and opportunity for the crime, but also for those *sanctioning* it; according to the alleged affiant: these were:

a) The British, in the form of the Home Office;

b) The American CIA, which may be "shorthand" for the entire military-intelligence-national security complex;

c) The French secret services; and,

d) The Israeli secret service, the Mossad;

4) The implication of point 3), and sub-points a)-d) above, is that whatever secret Hess knew, or that Britain, France, the USA, and Israel *suspected* he knew, that secret was of major *international* implication, and not confined simply to Great Britain alone. However, since Hess himself had expressed to Melaouhi that a Russian reversal on its policy of non-release doomed him to death, as we saw earlier, this means it is likely that the Soviets *knew* that the Western Allies would likely murder him, and thus their release overtures may have been made cynically, forcing the West to do the dirty work. This implies that they either knew, or strongly suspected, the nature of this secret.

These considerations lead us to make one final observation whose full significance will reveal itself only much later:

E. A Brief Note on German Reunification

The *timing* of the Hess release plans by Gorbachev and German *Bundespräsident* von Weizsâcker alluded to in the above alleged affidavit suggests that his death, the last of the major Nazis alive, and the last to have possessed the title of *Reichminister*—Albert Speer having died in 1981—has something to do with German reunification that occurred a mere five years later, with the Berlin wall actually being torn down only two years after his death.

While this is a topic that must be taken up again in this book, once more details of the Hess Mess are known and explored in subsequent pages, it is worth noting here that Wolf Hess alludes to a vague and mysterious connection between his father and German reunification:

> The Russian attitude to the Hess case had always been mixed. I knew that in 1952, Stalin had offered Adenauer the reunification of Germany, with certain conditions, but the latter—as we know—did not even respond to the offer. Perhaps my father was to play a special role in the reunification. *He refused—like Adenauer*, but certainly for vastly different reasons.[34]

In my previous book, *The Third Way,* I detailed some of the machinations of that time period, including Stalin's strange reunification offer. At the time the Soviet dictator made this offer, no explanation was given on how West Germany would be able to expel the British, French, and American occupation forces, and this may have been a factor in the Adenauer government's calculations to simply ignore the Soviet offer; how indeed could Bonn accept such an offer, without perhaps triggering another major war?

But nowhere does one encounter with respect to those proposals any mention of Rudolf Hess in their connection. Wolf Hess' choice of words is, however, and to say the least, suggestive, and laden with more ponderous implications, for he is implying that the Soviet proposals had something to do with his father, and that they were *communicated to him,* doubtless during a month when the Soviets were in charge of Spandau, and that his father had turned the Soviet dictator down.

The Hess Mess just became even messier.

But again, we're still just getting started...

---

[34] Wolf-Rüdiger Hess, *op. cit.*, emphasis added.

3

A BRIEF BIOGRAPHY

"*We had come to realize that, despite the almost universal dismissal of the Deputy Führer as a powerless has-been, he was the most important man in the Nazi empire after—perhaps even including—Adolf Hitler. This made his fight to Britain in the middle of the war an act of supreme significance*".

Lynn Picknett, Clive Prince, and Stephen Prior[1]

BIOGRAPHIES ARE A STAPLE RESEARCH TOOL for anyone investigating the turbulent years of the rise of Nazism, and the unleashing of the Second World War. Brief searches under the significant names of World War Two leaders will produce a rash of titles for every individual; there are biographies of Chamberlain, Churchill, Roosevelt, Stalin, Hirohito, Hideki Tojo, Chiang Kai-shek, Benito Mussolini, Daladier, Laval, Antonescu, and of course, Adolf Hitler, not to mention biographies of their various military leaders; there are biographies of Marshals Petain, "Bomber Harris" and Dowding, of Generals Curtis LeMay and Patton and Gatland and Guderian and (for real concessioners of the operational art) Giovanni Messe; there are biographies of Field Marshals Montgomery, Auchinleck, Rommel, Rokossovski, Zhukov, Koniev, Kesselring, Keitel, Kleist and Kluge, Yamashita and Terauchi; there are biographies of Admirals Nimitz, Halsey, Yamamoto, Kimmel, Raeder, Tovey, Dönitz and Darlan, And when it comes to Nazis, there are biographies—even memoirs or diaries in some cases—of virtually everyone: Hitler, Himmler, Göbbels, Göring, Rosenberg, Heydrich, Bormann.

Yet one searches in vain for biographies on Hess or titles like "Hess: Hitler's Deputy" or "In the Shadow of the Führer," and Hess left no memoirs that could be made into "Life with Adolf in Landsberg Prison". There are, of course, plenty of books in which Hess plays a central role, but these are not books about *him*, but rather about whatever it was that led him on the strangest mission of the twentieth century, and which then kept him in prison for the rest of his very long life.

---

[1] Lynn Picknett, Clive Prince, and Stephen Prior, *Double Standards*: *the Rudolf Hess Cover-up* (London: Sphere, 2014), p. xx.

In short, there are no biographies of Hess; there are only theories, and all of them are conspiracy theories, to boot.

A. Early Life and World War One (*1894-1914*)

Rudolf Walter Richard Hess was the eldest of three children, born on April 26, 1894, in Alexandria, Egypt, to a moderately well-to-do German merchant, Fritz Hess, and his wife Clara. Because of this circumstance, some believe that Alexandria's rich history within classical and ancient Egyptian culture was the matrix in which the future Deputy Führer acquired his interest in history, esoteric and occult subjects, the sciences and mathematics. Alexandria was also, of course, where Hess learned to speak Arabic.[2]

While the Hess family often vacationed in the summers in Germany where it owned a summer house, Hess' schooling until 1908 occurred in the German Protestant school in Alexandria. His father, Fritz, was grooming him to take over the family merchant business, and as such sent Rudolf to a boarding school in Bad Godesberg from 1908 to 1911, then to study business for a year at the *École supérieure de commerce* in Neuchâtel, Switzerland, before going to Hamburg to begin an apprenticeship with another company.[3]

Fate intervened with the outbreak of World War One in the summer of 1914, however, and in the autumn of that year, Hess, a Bavarian—enlisted in a field artillery regiment, transferring later to an infantry regiment. He quickly distinguished himself and was soon promoted to the highest non-commissioned officer rank (*Vizefeldwebel*), and received the Kingdom of Bavaria's Military Merit Cross.[4]

---

[2] Wolf Hess notes that his father was fluent in Arabic to the extent of having also learned more "colorful" colloquialisms. See Wolf-Rüdiger Hess, *Who Murdered My Father Rudolf Hess*?, p. 22.

[3] "Rudolf Hess," https://en.wikipedia.ord/wiki/Rudolf_Hess.

[4] Ibid. It should be noted that under the arrangements of the founding of the German Empire in 1871 at Versailles, the Kingdom of Bavaria continued to be a more or less autonomous entity within the Greater Reich: Bavaria still had

B. Wounds: *Hess becomes a Pilot* (*1914-1918*)

With Hess' military service during World War One, however, we begin the encounter with yet another bit of bothersome "debris" in the Hess Mess, in this case, debris in the form of shrapnel and bullets, which will haunt the remainder of this book and, indeed, which haunts *any* researcher trying to make sense of the Hess Mess. This is the matter of the war wounds which he sustained during various battles of World War One both on the Western and Eastern fronts, for which he was awarded the Iron Cross, 2nd class.[5]

During his military service, Hess oddly shows up at most of the "hot spots" of the war, being present at the First Battle of Ypres in 1914 until his posting to the Somme front, and from thence, being posted to the Verdun front during the horrific battle which occurred there in 1916. It was there that Hess sustained his first serious battle injury from shrapnel in his left hand and arm. For a month Hess was on leave to recover, and then his regiment was shifted to the eastern front to a sector of heavy fighting in Romania.

Here he suffered two more wounds. The first occurred on July 23, 1917, when a splinter from a projectile hit his left arm. This wound was apparently not serious, and was dressed in the field and Hess returned to duty.

However, on August 8, 1917, while his regiment was attacking a fiercely-defended Romanian position, Hess was pierced by a bullet which, in one important account, "entered the upper chest near the armpit and exited near his spinal column"[6] and piercing and collapsing his lung in the process. Hess was sent on convalescent leave, first to Hungary and then subsequently back to Bavaria.

Hess was promoted to become an officer, a Lieutenant of the Reserve, but his career as an infantryman, with such a serious

---

its King, and still had its own military which, under the terms of the 1871 constitution, answered to the Kaiser directly as "Supreme War Lord and Commander of the Armed Forces".

[5] Many are under a misapprehension of what this military decoration meant. It was an award given for being wounded or having one's blood shed during military service. It is roughly analogous to the American "Purple Heart" decoration. During World War One it was obviously, and tragically, a fairly common decoration.

[6] "Rudolf Hess," https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Rudolf Hess.

wound, was in doubt, and while convalescing Hess requested transfer to the air corps to train as a pilot. He was accepted, and trained for several months until June 1918, during the period of the final massive German offensives on the Western Front. He was ordered to report for duty with a Bavarian pursuit squadron (*Jagdstaffel*) in October of 1918, but saw little action as the armistice occurred the very next month. Hess was finally discharged that December.[7]

It was, however, a crucial period for Hess, for this instilled in him his love of flying and piloting, and he soon became a very skilled pilot.

Hess, commissioned as Lieutenant of the Reserve, 1918

---

[7] "Rudolf Hess," https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Rudolf Hess.

Lieutenant Hess, training as a pilot, 1918, in front of a Fokker triplane

C. Post-War: From Putsch to Power (1919-1933)

1. The Haushofers, and Hess

a. Hess and the Freikorps von Epp

Hess returned from the front like millions of other demobilized German soldiers to find the home front economy in a shambles, and the various *Länder* (German state) governments in chaos and, oftentimes, in the hands of socialist radicals threatening to overthrow them, and agitating for a Bolshevik revolution in the central Reich government itself. This was particularly true in Bavaria, as we shall see.

Like many veterans, Hess joined the various paramilitary organizations that grew up in Germany, and particularly in Bavaria, as a result of this, the *Freikorps* (Free Corps). These were veterans' groups, largely of conservative political and economic leanings, that were determined, by force of arms if necessary, to prevent any Communist or Bolshevik revolution in Germany as had happened in Russia. In Hess' case, in 1919 he joined one of the most famous—or infamous—of these *Freikorps*, the *Freikorps von Epp*, commanded by former Bavarian General Franz Xaver Ritter von Epp.

General Franz Xaver Ritter von Epp (*1868-1947*)

Hess and some members of the Freikorps von Epp; *Hess is seated in the front row on the left.*

General von Epp was a power to be reckoned with in the post-war chaos in Bavaria, for as a former General officer in the Imperial Army, his *Freikorps* formed one of the nuclei of the private armies that would eventually be so associated with Nazi Party strong-arm tactics. Additionally, when Adolf Hitler was tasked to secretly infiltrate the nascent "German Workers Party" in Munich and spy on it in behalf of the postwar German military, the *Reichswehr*, it is possible that the assignment, which came ultimately from Berlin and army chief Colonel-General Hans von Seeckt, may have been conveyed to Hitler via General von Epp.

For our purposes, however, we see the first example of an emerging larger pattern of Hess forming relationships with organizations and individual persons of power after the war. In fact, Hess was consummately skillful in what would in today's terms be called "networking," and it is this pattern that calls into question the standard judgments that, by 1941, Hess was losing power in the Nazi Party and state. Quite the contrary, as we shall discover.

b. 1919: *Hess*, *the Haushofers*, "*Geopolitics*," *and the Thulegesellschaft*

(*1*) *The Thulegesellschaft*

1919 was a "joining" year for Rudolf Hess, for in that year he also enrolled in the University of Munich, and quickly established a reputation among his professors as having some aptitude for mathematics and physics.[8] Additionally, in that same year he was introduced to the infamous *Thulegesellschaft,* the "Thule Society," an anti-semitic, quasi-occult lodge in Munich, complete with its own private army, the *Thulekampfbund*, that met in five rooms which it leased at the Munich hotel, *Vier Jahreszeiten* (Four Seasons Hotel), by a *Freikorps* friend, and a member of the organization, who invited Hess along to a meeting in February, 1919.

> Hess was stunned. Each of the five large rooms that he entered was lavishly adorned with swastikas and large, oak-leaf-crowned daggers superimposed on shining swastika sun-wheels. The men wore bronze pins with a swastika on a shield crossed by two spears; the women, pins with plain gold swastikas. Members greeted one another with "*Heil und Sieg*" ("Hail and victory!"). Hess met Rudolf Baron von Sebottendorff, the founder and head of the Thule Society and its armed wing, the Kampfbund-Thule. He at once joined both organizations.[9]

No sooner had Hess joined the Thule Society and its private army, the *Thule Kampfbund,* then it became the target, in April, of the Bavarian Spartacists, the radical socialist and Communist revolutionaries throughout Germany, who likewise had their own private armies. On April 26, 1919, one of these, the "Schwabing Soviet" raided the headquarters of the Thule Society at the Four Seasons Hotel, and "found a treasure trove: the society's card index, its membership lists, dozens of anti-Semitic pamphlets, charts showing the deployment of Egelhofer's Red Army,[10] and a cache of weapons".[11]

---

[8] W. Hugh Thomas, in his famous and controversial book, *The Murder of Rudolf Hess* (New York: Harper and Row, Publishers, 1979), notes that Hess while in the Lutheran boarding school in Bad Godesberg displayed quickness and intelligence, and that he was "good at maths, physics, engineering, and astronomy" in addition to showing a special aptitude for history. (p. 53).

[9] Holger H. Herwig, *The Demon of Geopolitics*: *How Karl Haushofer* "*Educated*" *Hitler and Hess* (Lanham: Rowman and Littlefield, 2016), p. 72. Herwig's book fills a much-needed gap in studies of this period, and particularly of General Karl Haushofer and his son, Dr. Albrecht Haushofer, and their geopolitical theories. Herwig devotes much time to an analysis of the relationships of the Haushofers and their theories to other geopolitical thinkers of the era, including Sir Halford MacKinder. For students of the history of geopolitics, this is a valuable book.

A few days later, on May 1, Sebottendorff's *Thule Kampfbund* retaliated, recovering much of the stolen material, which simply subsequently —and some would say, suspiciously—vanished in the aftermath of this first clash of private armies that came to be called the "Battle of Munich".[12] This raises certain questions, for as a result of the disappearance of its records, the sources of knowledge—or rather, *source* of knowledge—about the *Thulegesellschaft* remains Baron von Sebottendorff himself and his "highly self-inflated memoir, *Before Hitler Came*. Therein he claimed credit as having been the 'inventor' of National Socialism and Adolf Hitler's 'precursor.

The relationship between Hitler and the Thule Society has always been a point of contention. In the absence of the records of the society, we have only Sebottendorff's own claims, and these have been viewed with some suspicion. The bottom line is, there is no documentary evidence that Hitler himself ever joined the society.

Hess, however, *did*, and the behavior of the Nazi regime *after* it took power certainly leaves the impression that Hitler and Hess were concerned to obscure the connection between the National Socialist Party and the *Thulegesellschaft,* for Sebottendorff was arrested after his book was published. Its three thousand initial copies quickly sold out, and a second printing of five thousand copies was quickly confiscated by the Bavarian government and Sebottendorff was again arrested and sentenced to three months in prison. He obtained his release by promising to the Bavarian

---

[10] Yet another "private army".

[11] Herwig, *op. cit*., p. 72.

[12] *Ibid*.

[13] *Ibid*. The actual German title of Sebottendorff's book was *Bevor Hitler Kam.* The book was published in 1933.

Minister of Justice, the Nazi Hans Frank—a former Thule member!—that he would leave Germany.[14]

Well might Hitler and Hess have attempted to silence Sebottendorff, for in his book he provides a list of members of the society, a "veritable *Who's Who* of early National Socialists".[15] Among these were Dietrich Eckart, the poet who is alleged to have urged "Follow Hitler; he will dance, but it is I who have composed the music"; the economist Gottfried Feder, whose economic theories of debt-free money bypassing central banks became a cornerstone of the Nazi Party platform,[16] and of course, Rudolf Hess. Additionally, Sebottendorff claimed that "virtually every senior military commander in Bavaria"[17] was closely associated to the *Thulegesellschaft*. For Herwig, the significance of the Thule Society is that it is contrary to Hess' and Hitler's own "official narrative," which has Hitler and Hess meeting for the first time when Hess attended his first meeting of the Nazi Party in *Hofbräuhaus* beer hall in Munich, and heard Hitler speak for the first time. Herwig believes it is more likely that the two met at a Thule Society meeting in 1919,[18] and the possibility cannot be ruled out.

---

[14] Herwig, *op. cit.*, p. 73.

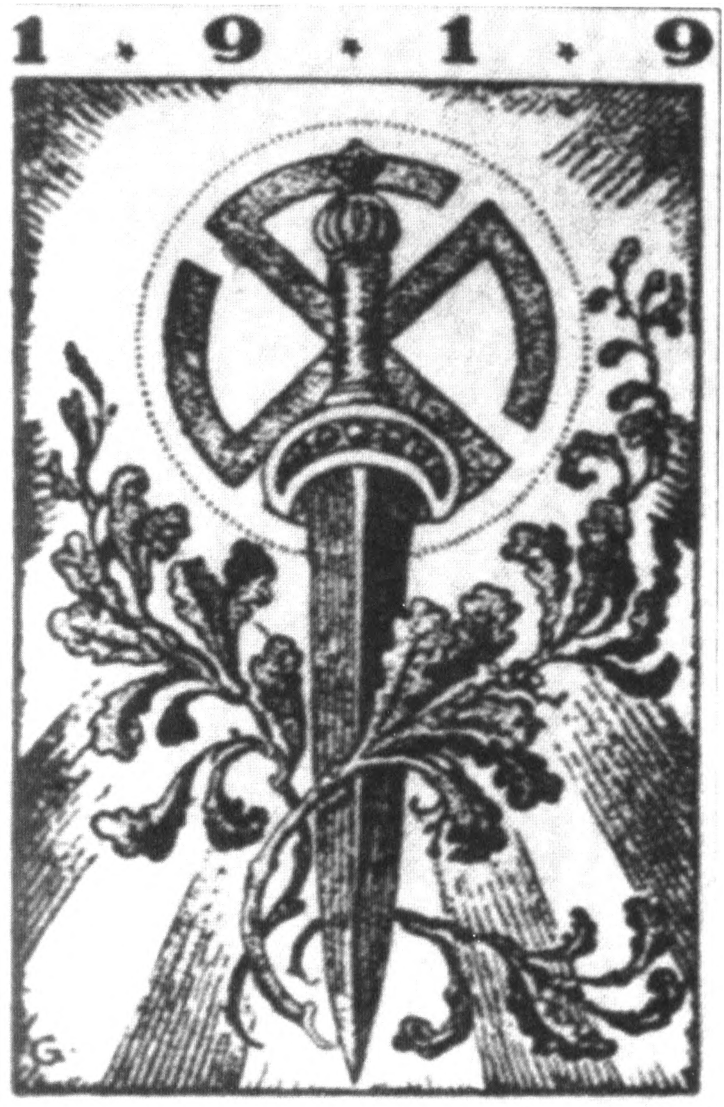
[15] *Ibid.*

[16] As I noted in *Babylon's Banksters,* Feder's theories were actually implemented in modified form by the Nazis once they took power, by the issuance of labor-treasury certificates, the so-called "Feder notes," that were denominated in *Reichsmarks* and spendable domestically as currency. See my *Babylon's Banksters*: *the Alchemy of Deep Physics*, *High Finance and Ancient Religion* (Port Townsend, Washington: Feral House 2010), pp. 32-34.

[17] Herwig, *op cit.*, p. 74.

[18] *Ibid.*

Bust of Baron von Sebottendorff


1·9·1·9
Thule:Geſellſchaft

Thule Society Logo

It would be an oversight if, in reviewing the association of the Nazi Party and of Hess with the Thule Society, no mention was made of its core doctrines and beliefs, for these as we shall discover may have some relevance in unravelling the Hess Mess.

The founder of the Thule Society, Rudolf von Sebottendorff, was born Rudolf Glauer, son of middle class Prussian parents. Like Hess, Sebottendorff spent much time in Egypt and Turkey, where he studied the Giza complex and the doctrines of esoteric Islam.[19] During these studies at one point Sebottendorff even called himself "a Muslim Brother" as well as an "Odinist".[20] Glauer became "von Sebottendorff while in Turkey, where he claimed he had been adopted by the patriarch of the family, Baron Heinrich von Sebottendorff. The family never challenged and actually endorsed the claimed relationship, though it appears that the claim to nobility was never formally recognized by Kaiser Wilhelm II.[21]

Once back in Germany von Sebottendorff founded the Thule Society, borrowing heavily from the racist doctrines and beliefs of Lanz von Liebenfels and Guido von List, doctrines which also included a "revisionist history" of an ancient very high civilization, from which the Aryans were descended.[22] This was blended with the claims of ancient lore, that the Aryans descended to Earth at the poles (usually the North Pole), and dispersed themselves throughout the planet, marrying the "lesser" humans already on the planet, and thus "corrupting" their race.[23]

---

[19] Nicholas Goodrick-Clarke, *The Occult Roots of Nazism*: *Secret Aryan Cults and Their Influence on Nazi Ideology* (New York: New York University Press, 1992), pp. 135, 138.

[20] Joscelyn Godwin, *Arktos*: *The Polar Myth in Science*, *Symbolism*, *and Nazi Survival* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 1996), p. 50.

[21] Goodrick-Clarke, *The Occult Roots*, p. 140.

[22] For a summary of this history, Goodrick-Clarke's work is the best. See particularly p. 145. Also see my *Reich of the Black Sun*: *Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend* (Kempton, Illinois, Adventures Unlimited Press, 2004), pp. 161-180. Joscelyn Godwin calls Guido von List, Lanz von Liebenfels, and von Sebottendorff the three "godfathers" of the "Nazi" version of the Thule doctrine.(See Godwin, *op. cit.*, p. 48)

[23] This idea of miscegenation and a "corruption" of an otherwise "pure" race was also a large component of List and von Liebenfels' doctrine. It is worth mentioning that Godwin points out earlier precursors of the "polar descent and migration" theory, including the Frenchman Jean-Sylvain Bailly (1737-1793) who, consulting ancient texts and coordinating their claims to actual astronomical data, concluded that the polar descent and migration might have been true. (See Godwin, *op. cit.* pp. 27-29, particularly p. 29).

The influence of the Thule Society on the formation and evolution of the National Socialist German Workers' Party (*National Sozialistische Deutsche Arbeiters' Partei,* or N.S.D.A.P.) was thus, in terms of some of its core doctrines, immense; "it may," writes Goodrick-Clarke, "justifiably be regarded as a ginger group and predecessor of the National Socialist German Workers' Party".[24]

One influence in particular was Sebottendorff's doctrine of the "Temple of Halgadom," an "empire of all the Germans" between the Rhine and Vistula rivers, and eventually including all "Germanic peoples," the "other descendants of Thule": Norwegians, Danes, Swedes, Dutch, Britons and French.[25] As we shall discover below, this is remarkably similar to the doctrine of *Lebensraum* of Hess' geopolitics professor at the University of Munich, Professor General Karl Haushofer.

All of these considerations become terribly important when one understands that the influence of the Thule Society and its doctrines on the Nazi party were *possibly mediated directly by Hess himself*, for it was Hess who, after all, became Hitler's "Deputy," in charge of running the day-to-day affairs of the Nazi Party itself, and maintaining its doctrine and ideology.

This in turn implies something of possible significance for the Hess Mess, for it means that Hess was familiar not simply with the "run-of-the-mill" occult doctrines typical of the Western esoteric tradition, but with much more peculiar doctrines—twisted doctrines—on the fringes of that tradition via his membership in the Thule Society. The potential significance lies in the fact that the occult influence on various Nazi leaders was suppressed at

---

[24] Nicholas Goodrick-Clarke, *Black Sun*: *Aryan Cults*, *Esoteric Nazism*, *and the Politics of Identity* (New York: New York University Press, 2003 (p. 114. Goodrick-Clarke also observes that there is some evidence that the alleged Vril Society was an offshoot of the Thule Society, and that it was in the matrix between the two that the claims to have "psychically contacted" the Aldebaran system arose. With that, the myth of a polar "Thule" or *ultima Thule* - the Arctic "touch down" point for the ancestors of the ancient Ayrans—became not merely interplanetary, but interstellar. (See pp. 166-167). Godwin mentions that as early as 1914, a conference was held in the town of Thale in the Harz Mountains of Thuringia, attempting to unite all pan-Germanic and anti-Semitic secret societies in Germany around the doctrine of Thule, i.e., of an interplanetary origin of the Aryan race, its descent to Earth at the poles, and its subsequent migrations.(See Godwin, op. cit., p. 50).

[25] Godwin, op. cit., p. 50.

Nuremberg by the Allies, lest it be used as a component in "insanity" defenses.[26]

There is, however, a potentially deeper significance, for it has been suggested "that Rudolf Hess' quixotic flight to Britain was the last attempt of the old Thule Society—long dissolved, or driven underground—to affect world politics in the face of a Führer who had escaped their clutches and completely deformed their visions".[27] While this may sound incredible, one has only to examine its basic implicit premises to see that it is not, for the statement is asserting that:

1) a faction existed within Germany and within the Nazi Government itself which opposed the policies of Hitler; and that,
2) this faction was influenced by occult doctrines tied to the Thule Society, the most prominent of which is the doctrine of Thule itself, i.e., the idea of "Aryan descent" from off planet to the polar regions, and subsequent migration from there.

When these considerations are coupled with the observation that the Nuremberg Tribunal prosecutors forbade the introduction of any evidence of an occult connection into the trials, then the conclusion cannot be avoided that perhaps their fears of an "insanity defense" might itself be a kind of cover story for something else, a secret they were desperate to preserve: the relationship of Hess to Antarctica.

Indeed, Joscelyn Godwin himself, in his classic study *Arktos*: *The Polar Myth in Science*, *Symbolism*, *and Nazi Survival*, has to wonder about the wisdom of the Tribunal in suppressing this evidence. "One would know much more about the political and even the occult machinations of this period, so integral to an understanding of the twentieth-century's greatest tragedy," he writes, "if Hess had been encouraged to speak *instead of being held incommunicado in Spandau prison for over 40 years*".[28] This is quite correct, for under the regulations of Spandau, none of its Nazi inmates were permitted to speak with visitors about politics, history, or anything to do with the Third Reich, and after the others' release and eventual deaths, this left Hess alone. The implications of Godwin's observations are thus profound, and one cannot help but suspect that lurking in between his carefully worded statement lies the suspicion that *Hess' continuing imprisonment might have had something to do with his occult interests, and his membership in the Thulegesellschaft and his possible belief in these doctrines.*

---

[26] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 35.

[27] Godwin, *op. cit.*, p. 57.

[28] Godwin, *op. cit.*, p. 52, emphasis added.

(*2*) *Hess, the Haushofers, and "Geopolitics"*

While the occult influence on Nazism, and on Hess, was palpable enough for the Allies to ban consideration of it at Nuremberg, the specific details of that influence have always been subject to interpretation and debate. The situation is much less ambivalent when one turns to a consideration of the influence of Hess' geopolitics mentor while he was a student at the University of Munich, Professor General Karl Haushofer, for it was Haushofer who was Hess' "gray eminence," and who, via Hess, exercised an enormous influence on Adolf Hitler's geopolitical vision and ambitions.[29] Haushofer's son, Albrecht, also became a geopolitical guru to Hess, achieving his doctorate in geography and becoming a leading light and lecturer at Berlin's elite Geographical Society.[30]

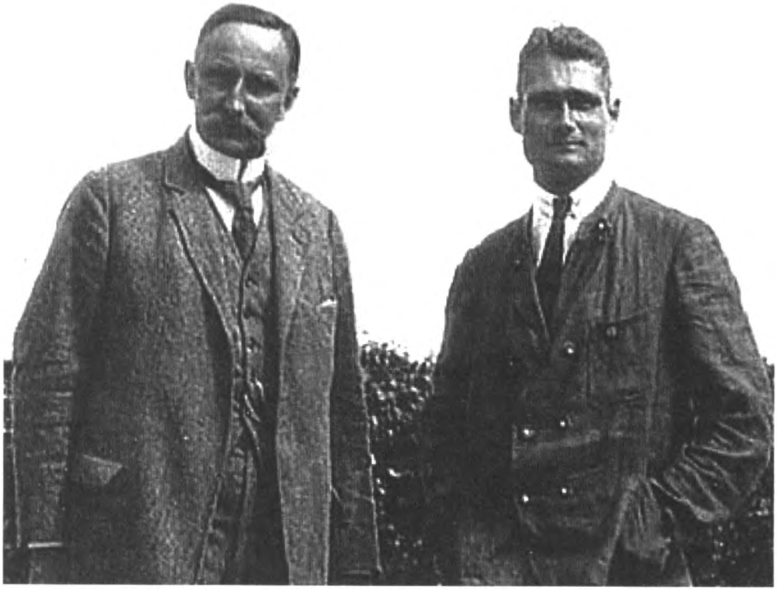
---

[29] See Picknett, Prince, and Prior, op. cit., pp. 30, 43.

[30] It should be noted that, at the time, "geopolitics" was not a discipline in which one could obtain an advanced academic degree. In this respect, "geography" often encompassed "political geography," which was Professor General Haushofer's term for what we now call "geopolitics". For Haushofer, "political geography" meant the relationship between a nation-state—particularly a great power—and its "physical space" and how the latter determined, or should shape, its foreign policy.

Professor General Karl Haushofer (*1869-1946*)

Dr. Albrecht Haushofer, *General Haushofer's eldest son* (*1903-1945*)



Professor Doctor General Karl Haushofer, left, and his prize student, Rudolf Hess, right, ca. 1919-1920, after Hess' matriculation at the University of Munich

Karl Haushofer was well-acquainted with, and well-suited for, a life of "military academia," for his father had been a professor of economics, and Haushofer himself entered military service in the Bavarian Army in the field artillery, completing three courses in Bavaria's War School, Artillery School, and Bavaria's War Academy. Notably, he married his wife Martha, whose father was Jewish, in 1896. This small fact will assume some importance when we turn to contemplate Hess' actions and character once the Nazis assumed power.

Haushofer's abilities were quickly recognized, and he became part of the Imperial German Army's General Staff, and by 1903 was an instructor in the Bavarian army. Crucially, in 1908 the German Army dispatched him to Tokyo as a military observer and consultant to the Imperial Japanese General Staff, where Haushofer instructed his Japanese counterparts in tactics and artillery operations. It was during this period that Haushofer became fluent in Japanese. This accounts for Haushofer's later practice, in private letters to his son Albrecht, of referring to leading Nazis with Japanese codenames.[31] Haushofer returned with his wife to Germany in 1910, and during an illness and leave from the army, completed his doctorate from the University of Munch, writing a thesis on Japanese geopolitics. During World War One, he attained the rank of major general and commanded a brigade on the Western front.[32]

(*a*) *MacKinder*, *Kjellén*, *the Heartland*, *and* "*Lebensraum*"

After the First World War, Haushofer became a professor of geography at the University of Munich where he began to elaborate and perfect his conceptions of geopolitics, and to chart a course via those concepts for Germany's restoration as a military and great power. Two geopoliticians were particularly crucial in Haushofer's own unique elaboration of geopolitical theory.

The first was, of course, the British geopolitician, the "godfather" of geopolitics, Sir Halford Mackinder. Mackinder's geopolitical vision, at the cusp of the outbreak of World War One, and throughout the war and after, was not only consistent, but eerily similar to the geopolitical difficulties now emerging in the early twenty-first century, with the formation of the BRICS bloc of nations clustered around the strategic alliance of Russia and China, and the increasing tensions between the American and British bloc on the one hand, and the German-led European Union on the other. It is worth citing Holger H. Herwig's summary of Mackinder's prescient views in full:

> Mackinder painted with broad brushstrokes. He divided the world into three major camps—the land power of the "pivot area,"

---

[31] Holger H. Herwig, *op. cit.*, p. 157.

[32] "Karl Haushofer," https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Karl_Haushofer. German generals' ranks are often confusing to people more acquainted with British and American ranking systems. The German rank of *General-major* is actually not a two-star general, but a one-star general, equivalent to a brigadier in the British and American ranking systems. *Generalleutnant* or lieutenant general is thus a two-star general, and not, as in the American system, a three-star general. *General der Artillerie/Infanterie/Kavalerie* would be the three-star equivalent, and *Generaloberst* or Colonel General is equivalent to a four-star general.

encompassing today's Russia, Iran, and the central Asian republics; an inner or marginal crescent, consisting of Germany, Austria, Turkey, India and China; and an outer or insular crescent, peripheral to the "geographical pivot," consisting of the sea power of Britain, South Africa, Australia, the United States, and Japan. He categorized the first group as "nomads (later robbers) of the steppe"; the last, as "pirates from the sea". His concern as a British patriot was that there had been *a paradigm shift in transport and distribution. Railroads had replaced ships as carriers of the world's goods.* They were faster, easier to build, more dependable, and able to penetrate even the remotest hinterland. Ever more, national wealth was counted not in seaborne trade and commerce but rather in rail-hauled pig iron, steel, coal, sulfuric acid, dynamos, engines, tools, dyes, and the like. Political power, Mackinder warned his countrymen, was now the product of "geographical conditions, both economic and strategic," and the "relative number, virility, equipment, and organization of complete peoples". At heart, he was a determinist: the tectonic forces of geography in large measure decreed historical development. "Man and not nature initiates," he once stated, "but nature in large measure controls".

Mackinder's nightmare vision was one of the grafting of German industry, knowledge, and technology to the vast land and natural resources of the Russian colossus. He described the latter as "a continuous land, ice-girt in the north, water-girt elsewhere, measuring 21 million square miles, or more than three times the area of North America". If there came into being a contiguous Russo-German block" could the "outer crescent" of Britain, Canada, the United States, South Africa, Australia, and Japan long survive?

World War I did little to dispel Mackinder's fears. By 1919, he warned that the physical parameters of the "geographical pivot" might even be enlarged to include all the "regions of Artic and Continental drainage," this is, eastern Europe and Siberia. This vast expanse, inaccessible to sea power, would be opened up and exploited by railroads and airplanes. "Let us call this great region the Heartland of the Continent". Therewith, a catchy term had been coined, one that would find great resonance in Germany in the 1920s. And while Mackinder refused to have the label "geopolitician" attached to himself, his German counterparts would have no such qualms.[33]

---

[33] Holger H. Herwig, *op. cit.*, pp. 116-117, emphasis added.

Viewed from this perspective, the two World Wars were but two separate and discrete acts in one World War designed to prevent that German-Russian Eurasian bloc from forming; Mackinder was, in effect, telling his fellow-countrymen that while they may have just won the first round of the World War, they were already losing that war over the long term. Indeed, Mackinder's vision is often misunderstood, for what he was *also* saying was that the world was in a major geopolitical and economic *paradigm shift,* a shift *away* from the paradigm that had prevailed since the Renaissance and the beginning of the Age of Exploration, that age which was also the beginning of a global *sea-based* economy, where power accrued to the chief sea power. By Mackinder's time and according to his lights, that era was *beginning to end,* and a new integrative economy was being formed, based not on the *seas* of the world's great oceans, but based on *land* and *connected trade via land*. In *that* power structure, the principal world powers would be *land* powers, and sea power would be largely ineffective.

All of this General Haushofer, and through him, Hess, absorbed completely. But there was another crucial influence on Haushofer, and therefore on Hess. This was the Swedish geopolitician Rudolf Kjellén of the University of Uppsala. It was Kjellén who provided much of the technical terminology for the emerging concepts of geopolitics.[34] Haushofer read Kjellén's book *Contemporary Great Powers* in 1917. In this book, Kjellén:

> ...divided the globe into four true "world powers" (Britain, Germany, Russia, and the United States) as well as four lesser "great powers" (Austria-Hungary, France, Italy, and Japan). More, he argued that the world was constantly in a state of flux. "Vigorous, vital states with limited space"—read Germany—were held together neither by laws nor constitutions but rather by "the categorical imperative of expanding their space by colonization, amalgamation, or conquest". It was heady reading in a time of global war and expansive war aims.
>
> Haushofer next immersed himself in Kjellén's *The State as a Living Organism*. Karl immediately recognized its cardinal importance. For there, in black and white, were the terms that

---

[34] Herwig, *op. cit.*, p. 117.

> explained so much of what he had been reading in the works of German geographers. First and foremost, Kjellén gave the vague field of "human geography" its future title: *Geopolitik* (geopolitics).[35]

For General Haushofer and his son Albrecht, these concepts required a complete "rethinking" of German imperial policy.

From this process of "rethinking" German geopolitics and goals, Haushofer elaborated a concept which he called *Lebensraum,* the "living space" in which a nation and its people existed and lived, and this *Lebensraum* was defined by the interplay of that nation's economics, politics, natural resources, military strength, its "position on the map"[36] as well as by much subtler factors such as culture and ethnicity. From this consideration of the German *Lebensraum* Haushofer concluded two things: first, Germany's imperial policy prior to World War One was completely wrong: there was no need for a confrontation with Great Britain nor for Germany to build such an incredibly large navy in order to acquire, and sustain, colonies. This led to Haushofer's second conclusion: Germany, in order to remain a Great Power, would have to increase its *Lebensraum* to encompass what effectively had been the old Holy Roman Empire, i.e., the areas of Holland, Austria, Bohemia, the Tyrol, and western Poland would have to be incorporated into the Reich in order to ensure that all ethnic Germans were in a common *Lebensraum*. From there, the Reich would have to expand to the East.

The importance of Haushofer's vision cannot be over-emphasized, for via his influence on Hess, and through Hess on Hitler, one finds the origin of the idea which will dog Hitler's diplomacy after the outbreak of World War Two, and which will become a central component in how one interprets the infamous flight of his Deputy Führer to Britain: with Haushofer's geopolitics, we are chin to chin with one of the central pieces of debris in the Hess Mess. It is because of the above two fundamental theses that Adolf Hitler attempted, repeatedly, to reach out and offer a negotiated peace to Great Britain, from September of 1939 to May of

---

[35] Herwig, *op. cit.*, p. 117.

[36] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 32.

1941. The British Empire was not, Hitler repeatedly stated, Germany's natural enemy.

Crucial to these overtures, as we shall discover, were the Haushofers' numerous contacts within the upper reaches of British Society, including people who, like Haushofer, viewed the future as belonging to Russia and the USA, *unless the two principal economic and military powers of Europe untied to prevent it.* Indeed, Haushofer foresaw the need for a "united Europe," a federation of the European powers, led by Germany.[37] These contacts included Albrecht Haushofers friendship with a key actor in the Hess Mess, the young Duke of Hamilton.[38]

c. The Spartacist Coup, the Counter-coup, and the Beer Hall Putsch

The crucible in which the Haushofers' influence over Hess and Hitler was forged were the events prior to, during, and immediately after the Nazi attempt to seize power in Bavaria in November, 1923, the so-called Beer Hall Putsch. This event is one of the most misunderstood events in standard historiography, and consequently, in most people's understanding of the event. The popular understanding is, in this instance, almost diametrically the opposite of the reality.

As was previously seen, in the turbulent post-war years of 1919-1920, the socialist-communist revolutionaries within Germany—the so-called Spartacists—raided the Thule Society, stole its documents, and, in what was *not* previously discussed, captured and murdered some of its members, one of whom was the Prince von Thurn-und-Taxis, a scion of one of Germany's oldest noble and banking families.[39] This gives a measure of the powerful influences at work with the Thule Society, which because of the donations of such wealthy patrons, had been able to purchase a nearly defunct newspaper called the *Völkischer Beobachter* (The People's

---

[37] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, op. cit., p. 32.

[38] Ibid., p. 33.

[39] For those tracing such things, the Thurn-und-Taxis family gained their wealth via special postage and taxation charters from the Holy Roman Emperors. The Italian branch of the family is named "della Torro i Tasso".

Observer), which became the official organ for the Thule Society and then subsequently for the Nazi party.[40]

As we noted previously, the Thule Society struck back forcefully via its own *Kampfbund* and in connection with the *Freikorps von Epp*, and recovered its documents. But the tensions and street battles between the radical left and right continued, to the extent that conservative elements in Bavaria,[41] fed up with the growing slide of the Reich government to the left, attempted to seize power in Bavaria via Gustav Ritter von Kahr, who was made a councilor of Bavaria, given dictatorial powers, and who began to court elements of the German army and Bavarian state police. The goal was to break Bavaria out of the German Reich and restore its complete independence as a sovereign nation, the status it had prior to the proclamation of the German Empire in 1871.[42]

It was because of this threatened break with the German Reich that Hitler, Hess, and the Nazi leadership acted, for they were not trying to seize power in Bavaria to *break* with "Greater Germany," but rather the contrary, they were trying to *prevent* that break. As Picknett, Prince, and Prior aptly put it, "(Hitler) could not let Bavaria leave the German union, for this would effectively put his plans for a Greater Germany into reverse. He had to act before it was too late".[43]

Here an interesting pattern emerges, a pattern of the delicate dance of power between Hitler, Hess—who would become Hitler's

---

[40] Nicholas Goodrick-Clarke, *The Occult Roots of Nazism,* pp. 148f. notes that one of the major contributors to the purchase of the newspaper was Georg Feder, the economist and theorist of "debt free money" for the Nazi Party. During the period of hyper-inflation, what kept the Thule Society and Nazi party running were infusions of stable cash in the form of foreign donations in US dollars and Swiss francs.

[41] To understand the full measure of the political crisis in Germany at that time, it's worth mentioning that Lenin himself sent representatives and "experts" in revolutionary tactics to Bavaria to assist and secure the revolution there. See Martin Allen, *The Hitler/Hess Deception*: *British Intelligence's Best-Kept Secret of the Second World War* (London: Harper Collins Publishers, 2003), pp. 4, 8

[42] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, op. cit., p. 50. Picknett, Prince, and Prior understand the mechanics and politics behind the Beer Hall Putsch better than most historians and certainly better than the popular view that the Nazis, in the Putsch, were attempting to make Bavaria independent. Accordingly their presentation will be followed closely here.

[43] Ibid.

"Deputy Führer" within the Nazi Party itself after the seizure of power—and Göring, who would become Hitler's designated successor in offices of *state* itself. While Göring was at that time the head of the *Sturmabteilung*, the notorious SA "Brownshirts", and therefore the boss in charge of any "wet works" that needed to be performed during the attempted counter-coup, it was *Hess* to whom Hitler entrusted secret orders to round up the ministers of the Bavarian state itself,[44] which Hess was successful in doing. Indeed, this is not often reported in accounts of the Beer Hall Putsch, but it is nonetheless true. As the coup collapsed, Hitler was captured and put on trial for treason (while von Kahr, of course, was not). Göring fled to Sweden, and Hess fled to Austria where he was to remain for five months, until, upon learning of Hitler's shockingly light sentence, he returned to Munich, stood trial, and was sentenced to prison.

d. Landsberg Prison: *Hitler*, *Hess and* ***Mein Kampf***

Hitler and Hess both served their time in the same prison, Landsberg prison, and were given adjoining cells which in turn shared a cell that was converted into a comfortable, almost salon-like work area. It was here that their strong personal relationship was forged, and it was here that Hess and Hitler were regularly visited by General Karl Haushofer. It was Landsberg that, in Picknett's, Prince's and Prior's apt words, "redefined" Hess' role:

> ...establishing him as Hitler's confidant, muse, and mentor. There was no question of his being Hitler's lackey. If anything, at least at this time, the reverse was true. Far from being kept in the dark about Hitler's plans, Hess himself shaped many of them. The two men were their own charmed inner circle, from which the likes of Hermann Göring were excluded. A visitor to Landsberg commented on Hess' manifestly growing influence over Hitler and their deepening friendship: "Hitler enjoyed repeating his friend's slogans. (It is interesting that they were *Hess*' slogans, not his own). It was obvious to everyone that a very close relationship exited between the two of them. For the first time I

---

[44] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 52.

> heard them use *du*. "Hitler had taken to calling his friend by the affectionate diminutive "Rudi" or "Hesserl".[45]

Landsberg was thus a pivotal turning point in the Hess-Hitler relationship.

One myth that grew during the Landsberg period and that was sustained both by Hitler, by Hess, and by party propaganda itself ever afterward, was that Hitler had dictated his "magnum opus," the infamous and infamously turgid *Mein Kampf* to Hess, who obediently typed the first manuscript as Hitler expostulated on his ideas.

But the reality is the exact opposite, particularly in those few lucid passages in the work, which were not the ravings of Hitler the thwarted artist, but of Hess, the multi-lingual university student of Haushofer, himself a regular visitor to the two frustrated putschists. For starters, Hitler's original title for the work was *Four and a Half Years of Struggle against lies*, *Stupidity*, *and Cowardice*, which hardly rolls very easily off the tongue. It was Hess who "insisted he change it to *Mein Kampf* (*My Struggle*), which at least had the virtue of brevity".[46]

But there's more, for one of the earliest English language translators of *Mein Kampf*, James Murphy, had actually worked in Berlin for one of the many bureaucracies controlled by Hess prior to the war. Murphy left no doubt of who had ghost-written much of the more "conceptual" parts of Hitler's manifesto:

> Those chapters of *Mein Kampf* which deal with the propaganda and organization of the Nazi movement owe their inspiration to Rudolf Hess and most of the actual composition was done by him. He was also responsible for the chapters dealing with *Lebensraum* and the function of the British Empire in the history of the world.

---

[45] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 53. In the German, there are two words for addressing someone else as "you," "Sie" the formal usage, equivalent to our English pronoun "you," and "du", equivalent to our now-archaic pronoun of familiar or intimate address, "thou". While the niceties of courtesy and etiquette are no longer as attached to these usages as they used to be, prior to the war they were still very present in German culture, and the intimate and familiar address "du" also connoted equality.

[46] *Ibid*. p. 54.

> His younger brother Alfred, often assured me of this. For a time we used to see each other almost daily in Berlin.[47]

After the war at Nuremberg, when inquiries were made on precisely this point of the relationship between Hess and Hitler, and who was actually the inspiration of certain passages of the book, General Haushofer stated that it was actually Hess, not Hitler, who had dictated some passages of the work.[48]

Hess, standing on left and leaning down, his wife Use seated on the left and holding Wolf Hess, and Adolf Hitler, seated on the right, at the Hess'.

Like Hitler, Hess was released from Landsberg after having served only a few months of his sentence, and from this point until the Nazi assumption of power, it is a testimony of the closeness of Karl Haushofer, Rudolf Hess, and Adolf Hitler that when Hess married his wife Isle Pröhl in 1927, that it was Haushofer and Hitler who served as his groomsmen, and when Wolf Hess, Hess' son was born approximately a decade later, that it was again Haushofer and Hitler who stood as godfathers at his christening.

---

[47] James Murphy, *Who Sent Rudolf Hess*? (London: Hutchinson, 1941), p. 9, cited in Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit*., p. 54.

[48] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit*., p. 54. This should be contrasted to Wolf Hess, who believed that Hitler was the primary contributor, and that his father's role was primarily as scribe and editor.

Rudolf Hess, left, Adolf Hitler and a young Wolf Hess, center, and Ilse Hess, right.

D. The ***Stellvertreter*****:** *Hess' Power within the Nazi Regime*

1. The Nuremberg Indictment and Hess' Power

It is difficult to give an exhaustive accounting of the actual power that Hess held in the Nazi state prior to his flight to Great Britain in May, 1941 even by enumerating the many bureaus, agencies, intelligence services, and liaison connections between them all, that he controlled. Not only this, but as Party chief, he literally had control over most bureaucratic appointments in the Nazi state. But Hess also knew the ways of the symbols of power, and knew them well. It was he, in fact, who began the "Führer cult" within Nazism, for prior to the Putsch and their incarceration in Landsberg, Hitler had simply been "Herr Hitler". After this period, however, and due to Hess' constant manipulations of language, Hitler became *der Führer*, and of course, all the Thule Society symbolism became the protocols of the party, from endless *Sieg Heils* to the swastika.[49] During the final campaign to woo the German industrialists and bankers to financially support the Nazi cause in the final political campaign of 1932, it was also Hess, in conjunction with Hjalmar Schacht, who had helped put the "sophisticated face" to Nazism.[50]

However, one gets a measure of the vast power that Hess possessed by reading the Nuremberg Tribunal indictment against him:

> The defendant Hess between 1921 and 1941 was a member of the Nazi Party, Deputy to the Führer, Reich Minister without Portfolio, member of the Reichstag, member of the Council of Ministers for the Defence of the Reich, member of the Secret Cabinet Council, Successor designate to the Führer after the defendant Göring, a General in the SS and a General in the SA.[51]

The term *Stellvertreter*, which is often translated as "Deputy" of the Führer, is actually a stronger term than can be rendered into English, and Hess' relationship to Hitler and Göring has been the source of some confusion because of this, since many view Göring's being designated as Hitler's successor as head of state and government (Führer) as a demotion of Hess in the pecking order of the Nazi hierarchy. The term, however, in its etymology, suggests something far more powerful: a place-holder or personal emissary. Perhaps the best analogy would be to an apostolic nuncio, an ambassador simultaneously not only of the papal *office*, but also of *the person holding it,* a kind of "plenipotentiary" or, if one wants to be "Ottoman" about it, a "Grand Vizier".

Thus it is important to remember that Hess as *Stellvertreter*, was literally "place taker" or personal representative for Hitler in the Party hierarchy. This made him the de facto head of the operational day-to-day management of the Party, of its various intelligence agencies, and bureaucratic appointments. Hess, like Stalin earlier in the Soviet Union, was in a position equivalent to "General Secretary of the Communist Party," and while the position of *Stellvertreter* did not continue after his infamous flight to Britain, in effect, the *power* of that position did, when Bormann took over from his former boss the control of all party functions as Party *Reichsleiter*.

---

[49] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 68.

[50] *Ibid.*

[51] International Military Tribunal, vol. 1, p. 31, cited in Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 11.

Because of this powerful position, Hess' signature thus appears on German legal documents, including actual legislation itself, during this period, signing on behalf of the party as a kind of witness to, and for, Hitler. This fact, as Picknett, Prince, and Prior point out, was at the core of the Nuremberg Tribunal's prosecution's case against Hess, for during its presentations, "the emphasis remorselessly lay not only on Hess' culpability, but on his power within the Third Reich up to 1941. The prosecution spent a great deal of time and effort establishing the extent of his responsibility and the fact that *nothing could happen in Germany without his knowledge and approval*".[52] The reason for this? Quite simply, because in the Nazi state, nothing could, nor should happen without the Party's knowledge and approval, which Hess, as Hitler's personal "place holder" or Deputy, provided. This will become quite the crucial point in part two of this book.

Indeed, prior to 1941 and Hess' flight to Britain, one could wonder just to what extent Hess, with his party bureaucracy—which, let it be noted, included *his* secretary, Martin Bormann—was really the "brains" of the operation. Picknett, Prince, and Prior point out that even the American journal *Foreign Affairs,* mouthpiece of the American "deep state" apparatus, The Council on Foreign Relations, wondered at that time if Hess was not the ultimate "intellectual creator of Adolf Hitler to the extent that a piano creates music".[53]

---

[52] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 13, emphasis added.

[53] Konrad Heiden, "Hitler's Better Half," *Foreign Affairs*, 1951, p. 73.

2. The Moral Ambiguity of Hess, and the Hess-Bormann Relationship

As noted above, there was no regulation or law enacted in Nazi Germany without Adolf Hitler's, and Rudolf Hess', signatures; virtually nothing happened without Hess' knowledge and quiet involvement. This means, of course, that Hess' signature was on the infamous Nuremberg Race Laws. Yet, Hess acted as, and was viewed by many as, the conscience of the Party, objecting to some of the harsh measures meted out during the *Reichkristalnacht* violence against Jews. Additionally, Hess protected General Haushofer's "half Jewish" wife throughout his tenure as *Stellvertreter,* and this seems to have been somehow continued after his departure to Britain.

However, it also means that Hess is at the epicenter of several threads of covert activity, both diplomatic, and in terms of secret research, including, as we shall discover, the German a-bomb, and Hitler's plans for settling the "Jewish question," and, as we shall argue in part two, Göring's 1938-1939 Antarctic expedition. Here, as we shall discover, other researchers have uncovered something truly astonishing, but have not properly understood (or perhaps, as is more likely, not been willing to state) its true significance.

We have also seen that in Haushofer's thinking, and therefore in Hess' and Hitler's, the British Empire was not viewed as the natural enemy of Germany. Yet, while Hess shared this view to such an extent that he flew to Great Britain on an ostensible peace mission, it was also Hess who opposed Hitler's *Haltbefehl*, the "halt order" issued to the Wehrmacht at Dunkirk, which permitted the British Army to escape almost certain annihilation. It was Hess who, on the contrary, urged Hitler to finish off the British Army.

Similarly, it was Hess and his secretary, Martin Bormann, who urged the action in the "Night of the Long Knives" in taking out the leadership of the SA, the Brownshirts; it was Hess who spotted Bormann's talent, and made him his own right hand man within the party machinery, particularly of the party's own intelligence services, and the liaison office between the party and the Reich's intelligence and security services, the so-called Hessamt or "Hess

Bureau".[54] It was Hess who cynically placed Bormann as his eyes and ears within Hitler's inner circle itself.

We are now in a position to evaluate the central core of the Hess Mess, his flight itself, his motivations for undertaking it, his subsequent imprisonment in Great Britain, and the many details other researchers have uncovered, and the scenarios and hypotheses they have advanced to explain all of it. To do this will require probably the longest single chapter I have ever written, for each facet must be examined again and again from several points of view, and each hypothesis evaluated. Before we take that plunge, it should be recalled that Spandau Hess, Prisoner Number Seven, confided a document to his Tunisian nurse, Abdallah Melaouhi, that at one point in his imprisonment in England, he was not permitted to smoke, when pre-flight Hess in Germany did *not* smoke at all. We should also recall (1) Hess' commitment to the Thule Society and its doctrines, (2) his fascination with "occult" matters, and (3) the implication of Joscelyn Godwin's remarks that perhaps Hess' continued imprisonment might be somehow related to those occult, and occulted, concerns. As we shall discover, there *is* evidence that Hess' mission was about far more than just a simple "peace plan," or rather, that he brought a *comprehensive plan for Britain's consideration, one touching on all these subjects, from atomic bombs to the "Jewish question," from European peace and order, to Antarctica, for consideration.*

Buckle in, because this will be a long, and bumpy, flight.

---

[54] Jochen von Lang, *The Secretary: Martin Bormann, the Man Who Manipulated Hitler*, pp. 66-67, 77-80. The Hessamt functioned as Hess' personal vetting agency within both the party machinery and the Reich bureaucracy, thus becoming a kind of parallel bureaucracy to all the functions of the state, in a manner quite similar to the party machinery of Communism in the Stalinist Soviet Union. See pp. 89, 128.

4

FLIGHT OF FANCY, PEACE PROPOSALS, DOUBLES DILEMMAS, DIFFICULTIES WITH DUKES, AND NONSENSE AT NUREMBERG

"*It is perhaps because of the many aspects of the affair that sensible academics have chosen to leave it well alone. It is far from a simple story*".

John Harris and Richard Wilbourn[1]

VIRTUALLY EVERYTHING IN THE HESS MESS has a double aspect, if not a triple or even quadruple one, admitting of a multitude of interpretations, depending on how one interprets each detail of the case, and which hypotheses one adopts to explain them.

Before the end of this chapter, we will have bumped into the Cambridge Five, the notorious Soviet spy ring that included Philby, Burgess, and Blunt; the brother of Ian Fleming of James Bond fame, Peter Fleming, the British Royal Family and the Dukes of Hamilton, Windsor (the abdicated King Edward VIII), and Kent, younger brother of King George VI, and the Duke of Bucceleuch; the notorious SS general Reinhard Heydrich and a few Luftwaffe generals (Udet and Galland), and a British doctor who caused a firestorm of controversy when he published a book maintaining that Spandau Hess was not Hess at all. In other words, Hess may have ceased being Hess altogether and may have been replaced at some point, either by an actual physical double, or, at the other end of the spectrum, a mental one, an "alternative personality" brought about either by increasing mental deterioration, or caused by more malicious means, or (after all, this is the Hess Mess), both. And for those favoring the *Doppelgänger* hypothesis, there is every possibility that the double—if there was one—might *himself* have undergone mental deterioration via natural or deliberate causes, and in turn, had to have his "Hess personality" reinforced from time to time by "artificial means". All of this only serves to emphasize, once again, the importance of the One Question: why all the decades-long fuss?

---

[1] John Harris and Richard Wilbourn, *Rudolf Hess*: *A New Technical Analysis of the Hess Flight*, *May 1941* (Stroud, Glocestershire: The History Press, 2014), p. 11.

If this sounds like mind control, that's because it is, but if this sounds too impossible to be even *remotely* connected to the Hess Mess, then brace yourself, for there is no other way to approach this first of a long list of "problems" in the Hess Mess other than to plunge into the deep end.

A. Nonsense at Nuremberg, and Difficulties of Doubles

1. Foretastes of MK-Ultra: Allen Dulles and Hess at Nuremberg

In 1979, British physician W. Hugh Thomas published a book that, in retrospect, has to be considered to be at the very heart of the Hess Mess. That book was *The Murder of Rudolf Hess*, and in it, Thomas argued that the prisoner in Spandau Prison was not Rudolf Hess at all, but a double, and from this context, Thomas spent much of his book trying to fathom what the whole Hess Mess was really all about. That book touched off a storm of controversy continuing to this day. Thomas argued his case because, on one brief occasion, while serving in the British military in Berlin, he had the opportunity briefly to see the infamous prisoner without his shirt on, during a routine medical examination at the British Military Hospital.

Hess, he maintained, showed no scars of the war wounds he had suffered in World War One. In fact, we have already seen hints that Spandau Hess may have been a double, for recall his complaining to his nurse, Abdallah Melaouhi, that during a certain period of his confinement in England, he was not allowed to smoke, and the real Hess, like his beloved Führer Adolf Hitler, did not smoke. Such behavior anomalies were a major focus of Thomas' book, and have become a major focus for anyone investigating the Hess Mess.

But Thomas was not the first.

Far from it. The first people to observe that something was "off" about Hess were those who encountered him at Nuremberg, where his behavior was nothing less than a performance, and a nonsensical one at that. His former colleagues, especially *Reichsmarschall* Göring, clearly indicated they thought something was "wrong," and, for that matter, so did Hess' Allied captors, and particularly, the Americans.

One of those Americans who had his suspicions about Hess was none other than Allen Dulles, OSS station chief in Zurich during the war, former advisor (with his brother, John Foster) to President Wilson at Versailles, a partner of the prestigious Wall Street law firm of Sullivan and Cromwell, and, of course, future director of the CIA, and future member of the Warren Commission. Dulles, in what Picknett, Prince, and Prior quite aptly qualify as "the most telling episode at Nuremberg,"[2] called upon his friend, psychiatrist Dr. Donald Ewen Cameron, to examine Hess.

This one fact should make anyone's "suspicion meter" shoot into the red zone, for Dr. Ewen Cameron is notorious for his role in the CIA's "mind control" program, MK-Ultra, having developed the technique, alluded to earlier, of "psychic driving," whereby he hoped to erase one personality from an individual, and substitute another. Cameron, in short, was one of the "pioneers" working in the field of mind control

At this juncture, matters become even *more* complicated:

> In the words of Gordon Thomas, in his study of the military and intelligence uses of psychiatry and psychology, *Journey into Madness* (1993):
>
> "Dulles first swore Dr Cameron to Secrecy, and then told him an astounding story. He had reason to believe that the man Dr. Cameron was to examine was not Rudolf Hess but an impostor; that the real Deputy Führer had been secretly executed on Churchill's orders. Dulles had explained that Dr Cameron could prove the point by a simple physical examination of the man's torso. If he was the genuine Hess, there should be scar tissue over his left lung, a legacy from the day the young Hess had been wounded in the First World War. Dr Cameron had agreed to try to examine the prisoner".
>
> He was never to make that examination. The next day, when Hess was brought to him, he was handcuffed to a British Military Police sergeant, who refused point blank to remove the handcuffs so that

---

[2] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *Double Standards*: *the Rudolf Hess Cover-up*, p. 9.

> Cameron could take the prisoner's shirt off—or even unbutton it—to look at his chest.[3]

Why would Allen Dulles have chosen Dr. Cameron for such a task, much less have confided in him his suspicions that (1) "Nuremberg Hess" was a double, and (2) the real one had been executed on orders from Churchill?

Picknett, Prince, and Prior note that there is a conceptual link between Cameron's later techniques of "psychic driving" during his MK-Ultra research for the CIA, and the work of British psychiatrists L.G.M. Page and R.J. Russell, who first published a paper about similar techniques in 1948, a paper summarizing "many years of intensive experimentation".[4] In other words, Dulles needed someone he knew to be familiar with the British work, and its possible use on "Nuremberg Hess". In Cameron's hands, the techniques pioneered by the British psychiatrists would be taken to new levels, one implication of which was that an amnesiac, quasi-sonambulistic state could be induced by cocktails of drugs, and prolonged sleep, during which patients—or rather, victims—were highly susceptible to suggestion, including the inducement of false memories?

These considerations raise yet a further possibility: was "Hess"—either his double or the real individual—possibly used as a "mind control" experiment subject for the express purpose of sending a Manchurian candidate *back* to Nazi Germany, to assassinate top Nazi leaders? In fact, Picknett, Prince, and Prior, note that a meeting occurred in Great Britain in 1944 where this possibility was proposed.[6] The implications of this meeting are profound, for it suggests (1) that "Hess"[7] was already the deliberate subject of such mind-control techniques, and (2) that those techniques were being used to create the "Manchurian Candidate," the perfect, mind-controlled assassin and spy.

---

[3] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.* p. 9, citing Gordon Thomas, *Journey into Madness*: *Medical Torture and the Mind Controllers* (London: Bantam Press, 1988), pp. 167-168.

[4] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 444.

[5] *Ibid.*, p. 445.

[6] *Ibid.*, p. 446.

[7] "Hess": we will now, from time to time, have to refer to this individual as "Hess," in quotation marks, to denote the uncertainty of whether or not we are dealing with the real Hess, or a double, in order to emphasize the nature of the hall of mirrors we are now entering.

At this juncture we must pause for yet another reason, and consider the strange orthography of referring to him as "Hess". From time to time, we shall now have cause to refer to this individual as "Hess," in quotation marks, to denote the uncertainty of whether or not we are dealing with the real Hess or a double, in order to emphasize the nature of the hall of mirrors we are now entering. Picknett, Prince, and Prior are quite alive to this problem in a way that most Hess researchers are not, for the double problem compounds the difficulties at almost every step of analysis. For example, they point out that

> If it was the real Hess, then the doctors had tampered with his memory in order to eradicate what would otherwise prove to be—at least to the Churchill legend and the Establishment—the aspects with the most potential to embarrass and undermine. They would have attempted to erase from his mind issues connected with the Duke of Hamilton, the Royal Family and anything else that might have seriously rocked their boat.
>
> If it was a double at Maindiff Court, the intention would have been more ambitious. But could they actually make the double believe he was really Rudolf Hess? Perhaps. But the human mind is far too complex and tricky for that to be a safe and reliable option, and there could have been no guarantee that any apparent success would be lasting. It is, however, possible though the use of drugs and hypnosis to reinforce suggestions that bypass the brain's critical faculties.[8]

The need for constant "reinforcement" of these induced memories and patterns of behavior might explain why the British government constructed an entire "Hess suite" in its military hospital in Berlin. Indeed, Picknett, Prince and Prior suggest this possibility earlier in their ground-breaking work, when they ask how long, and why, a double would keep up a pretense for so long.[9]

---

[8] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 447.

[9] *Ibid.*, p. xxviii-xix.

But we are getting ahead of ourselves, and hence it is necessary to return to the Allen Dulles-Ewen Cameron element of the Hess Mess to observe another highly important question that Picknett, Prince, and Prior raise, but do not attempt to answer. "How did Dulles," they ask "arrive at the notion that the Hess in Nuremberg was a double, and that the real Hess had been killed on Churchill's orders?"[10] How, indeed, did Dulles know?

There are, I suspect, two possible routes for this knowledge, and neither are mutually exclusive. One route would be via the financial and intelligence contacts through his law firm, Sullivan and Cromwell, and its deep ties to the American and British financial elites. These contacts would certainly have extended to his acquaintance, William McKittrick, American president of the Bank of International Settlements in Basel, Switzerland, during the war, where both men were posted. The BIS, even alone and apart from any contacts Dulles would have through Sullivan and Cromwell, would have been a possible conduit for such information, since it maintained close business ties between the Allied Powers and Nazi Germany throughout the war, even enabling business transactions between corporate and financial interests whose nations were at war.

This raises the other pipeline of possibility, for Dulles also had cultivated many contacts with high-ranking Nazis toward the end of the war, including a number of contacts in the SS, such as through SS General Wolff. Dulles could even count Walter Schellenberg, head of the *Sicherheitdienst*, or SD, as a distant acquaintance through his network of contacts in the Third Reich. They could also have informed him of their suspicions vis-à-vis "Hess," for as we shall discover, the Hess Mess engulfs many high ranking Nazis, even casting its shadow over the notorious Reinhard Heydrich, of the RSHA (*Reichsicherheithauptamt*, or "National Security Agency").

There is, of course, a final possibility, and one which no one to my knowledge has researched or mentioned. It has *no* evidence in support of it that I have been able to unearth, but on the other hand, it is suggested by a string of very odd synchronicities and the balance of probabilities implied by them. That fact is simply that no one, to my knowledge, has ever inquired whether or not Dr. Donald Ewen Cameron, Dulles' confidant at Nuremberg in the Hess Mess, and later a leading scientist involved in the CIA's MK-Ultra Mind Control programs when Dulles was CIA Director, was related to Dr. James Malcolm Cameron, the British forensic pathologist who conducted the "Hess" autopsy (and, as we saw previously, a possible secret autopsy). Both men, after all, have the same last name, and more importantly, both men were associated with Scotland, Ewen Cameron being born there in the small town of Bridge of Allan, *and James Malcolm Cameron attending the University of Glasgow for his medical studies*, *where Ewen Cameron also received degrees in* "*psychological medicine*". *The fact that both men are associated with the University of Glasgow*, *and that both of them studied medicine there, and have the same clan surname*, *is enough to suggest that Allen Dulles*' *pipeline into the Hess Mess might have been directly from the family of British pathologist who would ultimately perform the official autopsy*. In this respect it should be noted that James Cameron was born in 1930, and died in 2003, making him 11 years old when Hess parachuted into Britain, so the speculation must remain speculation, of a very high order at that.

---

[10] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit*., p. 9.

2. "*Hess*'" *Strange*, *Buffoonish Behavior at Nuremberg*: "*Brain Poison*" *and* "*Hess*'" *Jewish-Bolshevik Mind Control Conspiracy*

Whatever Allen Dulles' pipeline of information about the Hess Mess might have been, there were *other* important indicators that "Hess" himself was a mess, not the least of which was the strange behavior he exhibited, and the strange statements he made, at Nuremberg. As will be seen, a pattern of statements and behavior emerges in Nuremberg that was presaged by behavior and statements he made after his capture by the British, and which was continued—off and on—during his years as Prisoner Number Seven at Spandau. This pattern consisted of strange remarks made in passing, without thought or further comment, calling into question "Hess'" identity, along with much more deliberate statements by "Hess" asserting memory loss and memory "*reacquisition*". We have seen already one such statement that Hess made "in passing," in the letter he entrusted to his nurse, Melaouhi, complaining of not being able to smoke during his confinement at Maindiff, in England.

This is not the only such statement.

Lieutenant Colonel Eugene K. Bird was the American commandant of Spandau prison until he was dismissed from that command in 1972 for having consulted with "Hess" about his memoirs. In his book, *Prisoner #7*: *Rudolf Hess*: *The Thirty Years in Jail of Hitler*'*s Deputy Führer*, Bird reproduces several entries from Hess' "Nuremberg diary". One of these entries for October 13th, 1945, reads "Göring tried for an hour to refresh my memory—in vain. He told me that when I flew to England I should have left a letter behind for the Führer". While this comment is ambivalent and capable of more than one interpretation—was "Hess" dissembling to Göring and only *pretending* he did not remember that in fact he *had* left a letter for Hitler prior to his flight, or did "Hess" really *not* remember the letter?—it highlights once again the problem: is "Nuremberg Hess" the real Hess or not? If the real Hess, was his memory lapse genuine, or only faked, as he himself would later claim in his now well-known and infamous statement to the Tribunal? Or was it a "double" who simply had not been adequately "programed" to remember all details? (And if the latter, why even risk it?)

That speech to the Nuremberg Tribunal Hess was never able to deliver *in toto*, but he did make copious notes for it, which Col. Bird reproduces in his book. In that speech, Hess intended, at least in part, to recount his recollection and version of his confinement in Britain. Before introducing the comments themselves, Bird writes this:

> His terms had been rebuffed, even laughed at. Hess, at this time, became convinced there was only one possible answer to this "craziness" on the part of others: they were all either hypnotized or secretly drugged by some evil power. The evil power was, in his mind, the dread coalition of Jews and Bolsheviks.[11]

He then introduces "Hess'" prepared remarks:

---

[11] *Ibid*., p. 23.

> "I had the impression," Hess remembers, "that most of the people who came to me for the first time had first been detained with tea or a meal before they were brought to me. This was also the case with Lord Simon when he visited me for a long conference on the orders of the British Government. He had the typical glassy and dream-like eyes.
>
> "From my observations it can be gathered that people who are in this abnormal state of mind can be forced to put others in the same state. Field-Marshal Milch has said that he had the impression the Führer was not normal in the last years. I would say that the expression of the Führer's face and his eyes *had* changed in the last years; there was an expression of cruelty in it, if not of insanity.
>
> "I am aware that what I have to say about what happened to me in my imprisonment in England will at first sound unbelievable".[12]

After writing more about a period of painful constipation which he believed to have been brought about by the British secretly drugging him, "Hess" goes on to make even more sensational claims:

> The suffering was indescribable. If they had shot me or killed me with gas or even let me starve, it would have been humane in comparison. They began to add acids to the food as well. I found out by leaving a fork in the food; within a few hours the fork was covered with verdigris. The doctor was very embarrassed by this experiment. After meals I could often only sit, or walk bent with pain. In my desperation I scratched chalk off the walls, hoping this would have a neutralizing effect. But it was in vain.[13]

With "Hess" being such a mess, one must always be cautious in weighing his allegations and interpreting them, except, on this point, "Hess" was always consistent: he believed the British were secretly drugging him.

---

[12] Lt. Col. Eugene K. Bird, *op. cit.*, p. 23. Bird notes that "Hess" had written this "in his 'closing statement' he prepared for delivery at the Nuremberg Trial. But he was cut short by the Court and only some of it was delivered".(p. 23, n.)

[13] *Ibid.*, p. 24.

In this case, the comment about “acid” is illuminating in the light of other claims by “Hess” that he was suffering amnesia and that he was being given “brain poison,” for “acid” in this case might be a careful reference to LSD, a drug which was later to play a role in the CIA’s mind control experiments. While LSD was still a very “new” drug in “Hess’” time, and thus it is questionable whether he would have been familiar with it or its effects, it is intriguing to note that regular LSD use *has* been associated with constipation.

The “acid-and-constipation” allegations, however, were not the end of “Hess’” mind control fantasias. Indeed, they may not have been fantasias at all, but may have contained some element of truth. This is certainly implied by Dulles’ remarks to Dr. Ewen Cameron, but it is also implied by some of “Hess’” other remarks. In November 1941, after his capture by the British, “Hess” was at dinner with his doctors. This event, we shall consider again, but from a very different context. We introduce it here to highlight the strangeness of “Hess’” remarks and behavior at Nuremberg. It was at this dinner that he first alluded to looming amnesia; he was, he said, having difficulty remembering things, even things that had happened only a short time previously. Two weeks later, he informed his British doctors his memory had failed completely, and he was to remain in this state “for almost two years. The doctors had little doubt that it was real”.[14]

But in his “Last Word” statement for the Military Tribunal in Nuremberg, Hess expanded, and in the expansion, one finds the subject of mind control being suggested once again:

> “My memory failed quite a lot.... At the same time, I was constantly asked strange questions about my past. *If I answered them correctly, they were disappointed. If I was not able to answer them, they were obviously pleased. So I proceeded to increasingly feign a lack of memory. They explained that they could bring back the memory with an injection.* Since I had to remain constant in my “loss of memory,” I could show no mistrust, and agreed. I had been told that the injection would be followed by a narcosis in which questions would be asked me that were supposed to connect the conscious with the sub-conscious. It was clear to me that they wanted to test in this way if the loss of memory was real”.[15]

---

[14] Lt. Col. Eugene K. Bird., *op. cit.*, p. 24.

[15] Ibid., pp. 24-25.

"Hess" finally agreed to this procedure on May 7, 1944, and was injected with the drug Evipan.

What followed next was sheer theater, or was it? The transcript of the session, which Col. Bird reproduces in his book, reads like someone unable to remember his identity (perhaps, of course, because "Hess" wasn't Hess):

2210 hrs Dr. Dicks (psychiatrist) enters and stands by Hess' bed.
2110 hrs Dr Dicks tells Hess: "You will now be able to recall all the names and faces of your dear ones. Your memory will return. We are all here to help you."..
2112 hrs Groans.
Dr Dicks: What's the matter?
Hess: Pains! In my belly! Oh if only I were well. Bellyache. Water! Water! Thirst!
D: Remember your little son's name?
H: I don't know.
D: Do you remember your good friend, Haushofer...
H: No.
D: Willi Messerschmitt?
H: No (groans). Bellyache! Oh God!
D: ... And all the stirring times with Adolf Hitler in Munich.
H: No.
D: You were with him in the fortress at Landsberg.
H: No.
D: You will recall all the other parts of your past.
H: Recall all the other parts.
D: Recall all the great events of your life.
H: All the great events...
The session ended at 2215 hrs and the doctors noted afterwards: "At no point did the patient make a spontaneous remark: the sole unprovoked utterances were groans. This was followed by repeated exhortations that here were all his old doctors eager to help him, but he sat up and said: "Water please, and some food".[16]

But "Hess" later claimed, in a letter written to his mother from Nuremberg on July 5, 1947, that he knew the whole time what had been going on, and in a letter to his wife Ilse from Nuremberg, he stated it was all “a great piece of play-acting,” and that he had been feigning his insanity because he was hoping to be sent home.[17] This was not an irrational hope, as it turns out, for under the terms of then-existing international law, insane people we not to be held prisoner, but returned to their countries.

---

[16] Lt. Col. Eugene K. Bird, op. cit., pp. 25-26.

Later, at Nuremberg, the insanity-feigning was to serve a different purpose. By February 1945, as the war in Europe was coming to its inevitable conclusion, “Hess’” memory had fully returned, when “Hess” confessed to his British captors and physicians that his memory losses and amnesia had all been faked on his part, a conclusion that Dr Dicks dissented from. Acknowledging “Hess’” full memory recovery, Dicks wrote “I cannot accept his own statement that the memory loss never existed. There was at that time a true partial dissociation of the personality, which permitted the patient to ‘take in’ what was going on around him but caused difficulty of recall. It is a case of preferring to have duped us to having shown temporary weakness”.[18]

But at Nuremberg, “Hess” had a very *different* version of what had happened to him; writing in his “Last Statement,” he stated:

> Slowly my memory returned fully, even *though the brain poison was given to me for at least two years.* The latter was the reason that I continued to pretend to have a loss of memory. I kept this up until after the beginning of the proceedings,[19] since I suspected that otherwise I would never be admitted to the proceedings and would never have the chance to make by exposure to the public. Only after the danger appeared that *I was not in a state to take part in the proceedings and would have to be excluded, did I admit my manoeuvre. But since I was given a brain poison on each possible occasion in Nuremberg I again took to “feigning a lack of memory” in an increasing manner.* Only at the moment I began to make my closing statement did I let my memory “return”.[20]

So, was “Hess” able to fool his British doctors in spite of being drugged (as he alleged), and as at least on one occasion he actually was, and possible on other occasions, as his complaint about constipation would indicate? Or was his claim of feigning amnesia *itself* a part of the programming of which he was complaining?

---

[17] *Ibid*., p. 26.

[18] Lt. Col. Eugene K. Bird, *op. cit*., p. 27.

[19] “Proceedings,” i.e., the Nuremberg Tribunals.

[20] *Ibid*., p. 27, emphasis added.

Before we consider "Hess'" infamous speech at Nuremberg claiming he was feigning his memory loss, not only in Britain, but in Nuremberg itself when he was confronted, face to face, with General Haushofer and Hermann Göring himself, and claimed he could remember neither man, we need to take note of some other strange occurrences at Nuremberg involving "Hess". Picknett, Prince, and Prior state that Airey Neave, the process-server on the Nuremberg defendants, recounts that "Hess" once responded to "an officer who called his name: 'There is no Rudolf Hess here. But if you are looking for Convict Number 125, then I'm your man!'"[21]

A Rogue's Gallery at Nuremberg: on the front left, Hermann Göring uses papers to cover his mouth while he is laughing at "Hess," in the front center. On the front right, former Foreign Minister Joachim von Ribbentrop appears to be staring in disbelief at "Hess". In the back row, former Grand Admiral Dönitz, in sunglasses, is glaring at "Hess". As will be seen later, this picture and the odd "seating" arrangement, may have some synchronous symbolic significance, since all four men are implicated in the Nazi Antarctic Expedition. In any case, it is not known at what point in the proceedings this picture was taken, but it may very possibly have been after one or the other of Hess' infamous "statements".

---

[21] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, op. cit., p. 10.

Göring clearly gave indications that he knew "something" was going on with "Hess," for at one point during a recess in the proceedings, when all the prisoners were together in a room, he alluded to a "great secret" that "Hess" should reveal. The former *Reichsmarschall* again repeated this in the actual tribunal court room dock itself during a break, needling "Hess," who was seated next to him throughout the proceeding: "By the way, Hess, when are you going to let us in on your great secret? ... I make a motion Hess tell us his big secret in the recess. How about it, Hess?"[22] Picknett, Prince, and Prior imply that Göring's emphasis on "Hess'" surname might suggest that he suspected "Hess" was not Hess.[23]

Returning now to the Tribunal itself, "Hess'" lawyer, Dr. Alfred Seidl, whom we have encountered in earlier chapters, attempted to defend his client on several grounds, contesting the legality and standing of the Tribunal, the conflict of interest in having Soviet judges present on the court sitting in judgment of his client, and finally, contesting whether or not his client, "Hess," was even competent to defend himself, since he could not remember anything.[24] After all, recall that by this point, "Hess" had been interviewed by American psychiatrists, and had been confronted face to face by both Göring and Haushofer, whom he claimed he could not remember.

---

[22] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, op. cit. p. 10, citing G.M. Gilbert, *Nuremberg Diary* (London: Eyre and Spottiswoode, 1948), p. 89.

[23] Ibid.

[24] Wolf-Rüdiger Hess, *Who Murdered My Father, Rudolf Hess*?, pp. 11-12. Dr. Seidl, who wrote the foreword to this book and who was defense counsel for "Hess" at Nuremberg, notes on p. 11, in his foreword, that as a signatory to the Molotov-Ribbentrop pact, whose secret protocols divided Poland between Germany and the Soviet Union, the Soviet Union "acted as legislator, prosecutor, and judge. In other words, it was judge in its own case. It is a general held juridical maxim that this ought not to be permissible". Dr. Seidl goes on to quote extensively from the October 5, 1946 issue of the famous British weekly magazine *The Economist*, which pointed out the same legal and moral ambiguity of the Tribunal: "Such silence, unfortunately, proves that the Nuremberg court was an independent court only within certain restrictions. In a proper criminal trial, it would be most remarkable if a judge in a proceeding against a murderer were to leave out of consideration testimony about an accomplice's part in the murder because the testimony revealed that the judge himself had been the accomplice. That no one in the Nuremberg Trial considers such a concealment to be out of the ordinary shows just how far removed we are from anything that could be called 'rule of law' in international matters".(p. 12)

However, as Dr. Seidl rose to begin the defense of his client, yet another turn in this bizarre circus unfolded. Dr. Seidl, through no fault of his own, was completely unprepared for it, nor were, for that matter, the judges of the court and the other defendants in the dock. On November 27, 1945, "Hess" wrote at length in his Nuremberg diary, what happened:

> The psychologist said to Göring that my stomach and abdominal cramps were psycho-somatic in origin. Soon afterwards Göring said to me that the cramps were "hysterical" and that this was the opinion of the German doctor as well. I replied that he would one day learn the truth. My defence counsel said at the end of today's hearing that the decision would probably be taken on Friday as to whether or not I was fit to stand trial. That the decision would presumably be that I was not. I asked him to point out that I felt myself and regarded myself to be fit to stand trial, and wished to continue to take part in the court proceedings. Counsel and Göring thereupon exchanged knowing looks.
>
> Four o'clock in the afternoon, a special session to decide the question whether I am fit to stand trial. One minute before the start, I said to my counsel that I had decided to say that my memory had returned. He turned away in some perturbation and said: "Do as you wish". Whereupon he started delivering a summing-up which lasted about an hour. He argued against my fitness to stand trial because without memory I would not be in a position to defend myself or to provide him with the necessary information to enable him to defend me. Although he was bound to add that I myself regarded myself as being fit to stand trial. He goes on endless reading out from the medical reports. I send him a message saying that the whole matter could be shortened by letting me speak. He takes no notice of this but goes on speaking for a long time. After that the prosecuting counsel talk one after the other, likewise at great length, in the course of which they suggest that I may be exaggerating my condition and alleged loss of memory. They likewise read extracts from the medical reports and quote from massive law-books. The judges also have their say and argue to and fro regarding the consequences of my loss of memory and its effect on my fitness to stand trial. One of the judges points out to the American prosecutor Jackson that I

> apparently wish to be cross-examined. Jackson replies that he does not believe this wish to be genuine and presumably counts on the arguments of the defence counsel in favour of unfitness to stand trial to be stronger than my alleged wish.
>
> After about two hours of argument, the President of the Tribunal submits that I ought perhaps to be allowed to speak.[25]

Eventually, of course, "Hess" was allowed to speak, and his remarks caused, then and now, a further interpretive problem (besides that of who was really uttering them):

> Mr. President, I would like to say this: at the beginning of this afternoon's proceedings I gave my counsel a note that I am of the opinion that these proceedings could be shortened if they would allow me to speak myself. What I say is as follows:
>
> In order to anticipate any possibility of my being declared incapable of pleading, although I am willing to take part in the rest of the proceedings with the rest of them, I would like to give the Tribunal the following declaration, although I originally intended not to make this declaration until a later point in the proceedings.
>
> My memory is again in order. The reasons why I *simulated loss of memory were tactical.* In fact, it is only that my capacity for concentration is slightly reduced. But in consequence of that, my capacity to follow the trial, my capacity to defend myself, to put questions to witnesses or even to answer questions—these, my capacities, are not influenced by that.
>
> I emphasize the fact that I bear the full responsibility for everything that I have done or signed as signatory or co-signatory. My attitude, in principle, is that the Tribunal is not competent—is not affected by the statement I have just made. Hitherto in conversations with my official defence counsel I have maintained loss of memory. He was, therefore, speaking in good faith when he asserted I lost my memory.[26]

The court, records "Hess" later in his diary, listened in shock, with some judges' mouths actually open in disbelief, while the Press box broke out into laughter as it ran out of the courtroom to file its reports.[27]

---

[25] Lt. Col. Eugene K. Bird, *op. cit.*, pp. 42-43.

[26] *Ibid.*, p. 43, emphasis added.

[27] Lt. Col. Eugene K. Bird., *op. cit.*, pp. 43-44.

As far as his defense counsel, Dr. Seidl, and Göring and the rest of the defendants were concerned, "Hess'" speech was *proof* of his incompetence to stand trial, and indeed, it may have been a desperate ploy on his part to evade trial. The Tribunal did not share this view, however, and "Hess" as we know, stood trial and was sentenced to life in prison.

Then, after all this, the circus took its final turn, when on the day of closing statements, "Hess" made his final statement to the Tribunal, and as it would turn out, his last public statement, ever. In it, he once again alluded to the subject of "mind control," and that his, and some of the other defendants' behavior, had been externally induced:

> He talked of the "predictions" he said he had made before the start of the trial... predictions that people would make false statements on oath; that some of the defendants would act strangely. *He spoke of former political trials where the defendants actually clapped in frenzied approval when their death sentences were passed.*
>
> *It all pointed to the same evil influence*: *the secret force that made men act and speak* "*according to the orders given them*". When he had rambled on for some 20 minutes, the President of the Court interrupted to say that defendants could not be allowed to make lengthy statements at that stage in the proceedings. He hoped Hess would soon conclude.
>
> Hess did. "I was permitted to work for many years," he intoned, "under the greatest son whom my country has brought forth in its thousand-year history. Even if I could, I would not want to erase this period of time from my existence...
>
> "No matter what human beings do," said Rudolf Hess finally, "I shall some day stand before the judgement seat of the Eternal. I shall answer to Him, and I know He will judge me innocent".[28]

Those were the last, and conveniently unrepentant, words that the world ever heard from "Hess," probably the world's "most mentally examined patient".[29]

---

[28] Ibid., p. 50, emphasis added.

[29] Lt. Col. Eugene K. Bird., *op. cit.*, p. 100.

3. Picknett's, Prince's, and Prior's Assessment of "Hess'" Nuremberg Speeches

These statements would all be perfectly dismissible if one had not already encountered the likes of Allen Dulles and Dr. Ewen Cameron lurking in the mix, not to mention Dulles' alleged words to Cameron that he suspected "Hess" was a double. Nor should one forget the actual British drugging session in 1944, trying to "recover" the lost memories of "Hess," and his strange, hypnotic "replies". Looked at a certain way, this session could easily have been not a "programming" session but rather, a *testing* session, to see if the programming "took". We have, of course, not yet proven nor even argued the case that "Nuremberg Hess" (or any *other* Hess) was a double. By referring to him as "Hess" we are, once again, leaving the question open.

But the allusion to mind control suggests that something sinister was indeed going on at Nuremberg, and "Hess" —or whoever—was trying to draw attention to it, albeit, clumsily. It is worth reviewing Picknett's, Prince's, and Prior's evaluation of "Hess'" closing Nuremberg statement. On any surface reading,

> It was a rambling monologue in which he blamed the atrocities committed by German concentration camp guards, and even Hitler's actions, on unknown mind controllers.

Before we continue with their words, stop and let this sink in for a moment: "Hess" was, in effect, saying that the entire war, and all of its atrocities, was an example of some *worldwide* "mind control phenomenon," which in his Nazi hysteria, he was blaming on Jews and Bolsheviks. But if one leaves the Jews and Bolsheviks out of it, this is, nevertheless, a breathtaking statement to make, and let it be noted, "Hess" warned the Tribunal that, indeed, his remarks would seem incredible. Continuing with Picknett, Prince, and Prior:

> However, close study of the content suggests that, while at times confused and unclear, the defendant at Nuremberg was trying to convey a message. (It should be noted that the president of the tribunal ordered Hess to end his defence speech on the grounds that the defendants were allowed a maximum of twenty minutes.

> Reading Hess' actual words from the trial proceedings—even allowing for hesitancy and slowness of speech—it is difficult to make them last much more than ten minutes.[30]

In other words, the subject of "mind control" was a subject that the Tribunal—or at least, its president, who was British—did not want to be addressed at any length.

This is not, however, where Picknett, Prince, and Prior leave it, for they note that "Hess" began his speech, by predicting odd behavior from defendants, and alluding to the "show trials" of Stalin's 1930s purges, where defendants did indeed seem to be in a trance, behaving completely contrary to their self-interest. At this point however, Picknett, Prince, and Prior note a detail that was omitted in Bird's account, for "Hess" then states in his speech before the Tribunal that while confined in Britain, he had been given access to pre-war issues of the Thule-Nazi Party official newspaper, the *Völkischer Beobachter*. This is an extremely *odd* oddity, since "Hess" was prohibited from having access to *any* newspapers or news at all, British, German, or otherwise. Their question, at this point, is "Could this have been part of the schooling of a double?"[31]

It is also worth mentioning that "Hess," while at Nuremberg, refused to allow his wife Ilse to visit him or to bring his growing son, Wolf-Rüdiger, to visit, writing to her that it would be an affront to his dignity. Indeed, "Hess" would not allow his family to visit him until the 1960s at Spandau, many years after the end of the war.

"Hess'" speech, however, contained even more oddities, and here it is best to allow Picknett, Prince, and Prior to speak for themselves, and at length, for their assessment of the speech is central to that nagging One Question at the center of the Hess Mess:

> Hess goes on to suggest that the German concentration camp guards, and the scientists who experimented on the inmates, were under a similar form of control as the Moscow defendants, and even that Hitler's reported mental abnormalities in the final years were due to an external cause. He then describes how he began to

---

[30] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, op. cit., p. 448.

[31] Ibid.

> think along these lines because of the behavior of his guards and doctors in Abergavenny:
>
> "Some of them—these persons and people around me—were changed from time to time. Some of the new ones who came in place of those who had been changed had strange eyes. They were glassy and like eyes in a dream. This symptom, however, lasted only a few days and then they made a completely normal impression. They could no longer be distinguished from normal human beings".[32]

Again, note that "Hess" is alleging some sort of "mind control" experiment is taking place, one of truly international extent, for it is, by his confused lights, occurring not just in the Soviet Union, and not just in Nazi Germany, but in Great Britain as well, with his own doctors and guards apparently subject to some sort of "procedure" prior to becoming involved with him.

Picknett, Prince, and Prior note that these "confused ramblings about 'mental influence' were an attempt to argue that Hitler and the Nazis were not responsible for their actions".[33] But in their view, this is not really the intention of "Hess'" remarks, because his real goal is not justification of Nazi atrocities, but rather, simply to persuade the Tribunal that "such things are possible," because, on their view, "he is building up to some revelation concerning himself".[34]

It is difficult and problematical to dismiss their assessment, because "Hess" himself stresses the importance of the subject, time and time again, not only in his speech at Nuremberg, but as we shall discover, elsewhere as well:

> After giving his examples he stresses the importance of what he is going to say next:
>
> "Obviously it would have been of the utmost importance if I had stated under oath what I have to say about the happenings during my own imprisonment in England. **However, it was impossible for me to persuade my defence counsel to declare himself willing to put the proper questions to me...** But it is of the utmost importance that what I am saying be said

---

[32] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 449.

[33] *Ibid.*, p. 449.

[34] *Ibid.*

> under oath. Therefore I now declare once more: I swear by God, the Almighty Omniscient, that I will speak the pure truth, that I shall leave out nothing and add nothing... I ask the High Tribunal to give all the more weight to everything which I declare under oath, expressly calling God as my witness".

> Having stressed at such length the importance of what he is about to say next, Hess then begins his revelation: "In the spring of 1942.".. *It is at this point that the president interrupts*, telling him that he is at the end of his allotted twenty minutes.[35]

While my own reaction to "Hess'" speech may not be the same as the reader's, I cannot help but record my impression that one senses a certain desperation in his words, an urgent need to convey information, perhaps even a warning, to the Tribunal and, through it, to the world.

But whether or not "Hess" was desperately trying to save himself, it does at least appear that he was trying to say something, for another strange question occurs in connection with his remarks: why would Dr. Seidl *not* wish to question "Hess" about his mind control ideas and allegations, particularly when, at that time, such ideas would have been considered absurd. Even today, when the evidence of patents and studies has at least rendered the topic "discussible," people are reluctant to do so, especially in courts, where the technology is a direct epistemological challenge to existing theories of evidence. But questioning "Hess" on his remarks, he may have been able to mount an insanity defense.

Thus, in "Hess'" case, such an airing of his views might actually have *helped* the case that Seidl—not "Hess"—wanted to make, namely, that he was *not* fit to stand trial.

However, what would have happened had he done so? Here it is worth noting that Picknett, Prince, and Prior point out one extreme difficulty with the "double" or *Doppelgänger* hypothesis: the British government, by allowing a "double" to stand trial was taking an extraordinary risk that the whole charade might be exposed in open court, thus risking an airing, in open court, not only before the world press, but before the personnel of the other three Allied powers, France, the U.S.A., and U.S.S.R., whatever it is that they were trying so hard to conceal and obfuscate. The second risk was allowing the double—or the real Hess—to continue for life in prison, where the programming of either the double or the real Hess might break down at any moment.[36]

---

[35] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, pp. 449-450, italicized emphasis in the original, boldface emphasis added.

In this context that they observe that the only physician unqualifiedly urging that "Hess" was *not* fit to stand trial was Lord Moran, personal physician of Winston Churchill, who had literally pushed himself into the three-man British team of physicians at Nuremberg and who, they note, omitted all reference to his diagnosis of "Hess'" unfitness for trial from his memoirs. "Strangely enough," they state, "if Hess had not stood trial because of insecurity, he would not have gone free. Instead, he would have been incarcerated in a top-security mental institution somewhere in Britain (as he was still in British custody). Is this why Churchill's man alone argued for such a diagnosis?"[37]

This question also raises questions about Dr. Seidl's defense, and why he did not want to put questions to "Hess" about his mind control allegations. It also raises into sharp relief the possibility that "Hess" was not *intended* to stand trial, but rather, be returned to Britain, where he would be incarcerated for a time before being removed more permanently; in this respect, only recall that "Spandau Hess" maintained that the Soviet reversal on his release was in fact a death sentence, and that the British would never allow him to leave Spandau alive. If that *was* the intention, then "Hess" thwarted it by the speech he gave, insisting that he stand trial.

The "nonsense in Nuremberg" highlights the fundamental question, who was "Hess"? Was the "Hess" in Nuremberg, or later, in Spandau, the Hess who took off from Germany in May 1941? The nonsense in Nuremberg thus leads, directly, to the other questions and hypotheses in the Hess Mess that we must now confront directly: the doubles dilemma, his flight of fancy itself, and what he—or rather, what researchers argue that he—hoped to accomplish by it, which leads to the peace mission and "lure" hypotheses, and to the Difficulties with the Dukes of Hamilton, Windsor, and Kent.

---

[36] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 450.

[37] *Ibid.*

B. More about the Doubles Dilemma

1. War Wounds, Missing Scar Tissue, and Magic Bullets

That "Hess" in Nuremberg—and therefore subsequently in Spandau—was a double is a hypothesis that was first put forward and argued before the public in W. Hugh Thomas' now classic book *The Murder of Rudolf Hess.* The controversy has raged ever since its publication in 1979, for Thomas presented a number of compelling "details" to buttress his main argument.

In Thomas' case, that controversy has raged largely because he maintained that it was the *Nazis* who substituted a double for Hess from their "stable of doubles,"[38] having learned of his secret "peace plan" proposal and determination to fly to Britain to negotiate with an alleged "peace party" in the upper strata of British society and politics. The substitution was made, Thomas argued, because high-ranking Nazis such as Himmler and Göring were eager to remove a powerful rival from the equation. Accordingly, Hess' plane was shot down and another plane, with a double, was substituted.[39] While most researchers, including the present author, reject this particular detail of Thomas' theory, it will nonetheless be reviewed thoroughly here because there are details in Thomas' elaboration that imply a significant political dynamic at work in the background of the Hess Mess. If it is true that the *one* book to own concerning the Hess Mess is Picknett's, Prince's, and Prior's *Double Standards*: *The Rudolf Hess Cover-up*, it is equally true that Thomas' book more than any other provoked the world-wide interest in the Hess Mess, and triggered the articles and books about the case that followed it.

Like everyone else who has ever investigated the Hess Mess, Thomas himself admitted that the whole affair was "disturbingly enigmatic," and pointed out that ever since "Hess'" parachute landing in Scotland on May 10, 1941, his behavior was one of the biggest mysteries. He refused, as we have noted previously, to see his wife or son at Nuremberg and indeed, did not allow them to visit him in Spandau until 1969. Pressed to identify Haushofer,

---

[38] Rebecca West, "Introduction," in W. Hugh Thomas, *The Murder of Rudolf Hess* (New York: Harper and row, 1979), p. 4.

[39] *Ibid*., p. 3.

Göring, or even his two secretaries by the psychologists in Nuremberg, he could not do so.[40] As we shall see, for Thomas, such anomalous and erratic behavior became supportive evidence in his main argument that "Hess" was not Hess at all, but someone else, a very clever double, from *someone's* "stable of doubles".

Such behavior, however, was *not* the issue that opened the Pandora's Box of the "Doubles" hypothesis and all the dilemmas it posed. Thomas had not shown much interest in the Hess Mess until, while serving in the British military as a physician, he was posted to Berlin as a "Consultant in General Surgery to the British Military Hospital".[41] Realizing that this meant Spandau prison's infamous Prisoner Number Seven might come under his care at some point, Dr. Thomas began to familiarize himself with "Hess'" medical file, compiled by the British Army psychiatrist J.R. Rees, who kept a meticulous record of "Hess'" bizarre behavior in Great Britain.[42]

It was in this file that Dr. Thomas learned about "Hess'" wounds that he suffered during World War One, with the shrapnel hit at Verdun, and the far more serious bullet wound on the Romanian front a year later. At this point, the mystery began, for completely unaware of Allen Dulles' suspicions about Nuremberg's "Hess"—after all, they had not yet been written about!—Dr. Thomas then discovered something quite odd in "Hess'" medical file, written by Captain Ben Hurewitz, "Hess'" examining American doctor when he was first brought to Nuremberg after the war. What was missing from Hurewitz's otherwise meticulous report was any mention of scaring that would have resulted from the bullet wound Hess suffered while on the Romanian front.

In September of 1973, Thomas finally was able to see Hess in the British Military Hospital for a routine examination, when "Hess" was completely naked. "I looked in bewilderment," he writes.

> I saw at once the two small linear scars reported by Hurewitz, and also a small scar on one wrist; *but apart from these marks there was no trace of any former wound.* For an instant I froze in

---

[40] W. Hugh Thomas, *op. cit.*, p. 13.
[41] *Ibid.*
[42] *Ibid.*, p. 14.

> disbelief. Then I put out a hand and held the dressing-gown, in the pretence of helping but in reality to have another, longer, absolutely clear view of his torso. Neither chest nor arms carried any wound-scars whatever. Satisfied with my scrutiny, I let the dressing-gown go and muttered something like *"Es tut mir Leid'* (I'm sorry). No. 7 probably thought I was just being clumsy in helping him on with the gown.
>
> For the rest of the evening I felt stunned. This man had *not* been shot in the chest during the First World War, or at any other time. Nor had he been wounded in the arm. Perhaps, I thought, there was a persistent mistake running all through his records. Perhaps Rudolf Hess never *had* been wounded... .[43]

Before "Hess" returned for a follow-up visit later that month, Thomas had time to review the X-rays that were taken of "Hess," and sure enough, there was no evident bullet scaring or damage to be seen on the picture. For Thomas, the conclusion was beginning to be inescapable: "For thirty-two years the world had believed he was Rudolf Hess. Yet now I knew that unless the historical records were wrong, he could not be".[44]

When "Hess" returned later that month for the follow-up visit, Thomas made certain he would be present throughout the entire examination. "Hess" was in a good mood, communicating with Thomas, "making pleasant small-talk in his excellent English".[45] X-rays were once again taken, and Thomas remained with "Hess" as the pictures were developed and examined. What happened next is worth recording in Thomas' own words:

> Then someone called out that the films were all right, and that No. 7 could get dressed. At once he slipped off his shirt—still sitting on the edge of the table—and began to pull on the warmer dressing-gown. As he did so, I again had a clear view of his chest. I stepped forward and pointed at it, saying in a friendly, straightforward voice, "*Was ist passiert mit den Kriegsunfallen*? *Nicht hauttief*?" ("What happened to your war-wounds? Not even skin-deep?").

---

[43] W. Hugh Thomas, *op. cit.*, p. 21, emphasis in the original.

[44] *Ibid.*, p. 22.

[45] *Ibid.*, p. 24.

> The question had a startling effect. The patient's manner changed instantly. From being in a sunny, cheerful mood, he turned chalk-white and began to shake. For an instant he stared at me in what appeared bewilderment or even utter disbelief. Then he looked down and avoided my eyes. After what felt like ages he muttered, *"Zu spät, zu spät"* ("Too late, too late").[4]

At this point, the reader is probably wondering why no *other* physician had noticed the discrepancy between "Hess'" World War One wounds and the *lack* of scarring on Prisoner No. 7. If "Hess" *was* a double, did this mean that all of his French, British, American, and Russian doctors, since Nuremberg were in on one of the greatest secrets of the century? Or did it mean something else entirely? And if "Hess" *was* a double, why was no attempt made to "duplicate" the scarring effects on the *Doppelgänger*? This could have easily been done under anesthetic.

Thomas began to dig, and discovered the original records of Hess' military service and wounds during World War One. This record lists his wounding by a piece of artillery shrapnel near Fort Douaumont, one of the French fortresses at Verdun, and scene of some of the bitterest combat during that battle. Here, Thomas discovered another anomaly, for the wound Hess suffered at Verdun was not, apparently, minor, for it required a full month in a military hospital, a stay of time representing a "substantial wound".[47]

But when he examined the war record for the wound to his left lung on the Romanian front in 1917, Thomas discovered just how serious the wound must have been for Hess had to spend four months, moving from military hospital to military hospital until he arrived back in Germany, but when he was finally discharged, he was discharged into the reserve, and spent two more months convalescing. Then, as further proof of the seriousness of the wound, Hess was discharged altogether from the infantry—reserve or otherwise—by being awarded the "Dull White Battle Wound Badge," effectively a sign that he could no longer physically function at the peak performance needed for the infantry.[48] In fact,

---

[46] W. Hugh Thomas, *op. cit*., p. 24.

[47] *Ibid*., pp. 28-29.

[48] W. Hugh Thomas, *op. cit*., pp. 29-30.

while Hess maintained himself in as healthy condition as he could, for the rest of his life he would complain of shortness of breath on long walks, or climbing hills, a natural result of a serious wound to the lung.[49]

In any case, Hess needed surgery in order to repair the damage to this wound, and, as Thomas points out, this surgery itself would have left scarring, visible both on his skin and in chest x-rays, and the surgical repair additionally would have required incisions of at least four inches in length. None of these were visible on "Hess," or "Hess'" x-rays.[50]

This left Thomas with two logical possibilities: Spandau "Hess" (and therefore, Nuremberg "Hess") was not Hess, or his war record had been falsified.[51] Dr. Thomas naturally shared his suspicions with the Hess family, Frau Hess and her son Wolf, and while Frau Hess was under no doubt that the man in Spandau *was* her husband, she did confirm that he had indeed suffered a severe wound—a *Lungen Durchshuss* or "shot through the lung" that had left scars on the front and back of his body[52]—during the First World War.

2. *Anomalous Corroborating Behavior and Other Miscellanies*

Hess' war wounds—and "Hess'" apparent lack of them—formed the core of Thomas' argument that the prisoner in Spandau was a double. In addition to this, however, Thomas pointed out certain examples of anomalous behavior by "Hess" that made sense if his *Doppelgänger* hypothesis were true. For example, the real Hess was not only *not* a smoker, as we have pointed out previously, he was also a vegetarian. Yet, once he had been apprehended by the British in Scotland and taken prisoner, "Hess" the "vegetarian" was seen gobbling up salmon on one occasion with his British captors.[53] Additionally, Thomas notes that in 1969, when "Hess" finally allowed his family to visit him for the first time since he took off on his infamous flight to Scotland, his wife Isle made what, for her, was merely an "in passing" observation but which may be very significant, for she observed her husband's voice had become deeper.[54]

---

[49] *Ibid.*, p. 31. In addition, Thomas found what must surely be the oddest synchronicity in the whole Hess Mess (one of those "You've got to be kidding" moments), for the Romanian Royal army, he discovered, used an 1893 Mannlicher rifle of 6.5mm caliber! (cf. p. 30) Perhaps this weapon managed to fire a "magic bullet" too, a bullet leaving no bullet-track of scar tissue through Hess. Perhaps this was the bullet that was discovered in pristine condition on the hospital bed in Parkland Hospital in Dallas, Texas, on Nov 22, 1963, having not only been allegedly shot through Kennedy and Connally, but perhaps Hess as well. (Sorry, I just couldn't resist.)

[50] *Ibid.*, pp. 31-33.

[51] *Ibid.*, p. 34.

[52] *Ibid.*, 35.

Thomas comments as follows on this small, but important, observation:

> Whether she realized it or not, Frau Hess had stumbled on a physical near-impossibility. Any normal man's voice *rises* with age, rather than deepens. Physical processes associated with ageing inevitably push the timbre up rather than down. Only if the man has a disease of the vocal chords called myxedema, which causes a thickening of the tissues, can his voice drop in old age.[55]

One of the numerous problems with the Double Hypothesis was "Hess'" numerous letters home, which he began to compose while in confinement in England, and which naturally continued after his return to Germany at Nuremberg, and later, at Spandau. In these letters, "Hess" makes copious detailed references to things only known to his family. This fact, many would argue, means that "Hess" was in fact Hess.

But Dr. Thomas points out a disturbing pattern with these "letters home":

> At first sight the numerous references to family affairs and friends seem to constitute obvious proof that the writer of the letters was Hess himself. Yet if the correspondence is studied in chronological order, a striking pattern soon emerges. A very high proportion of the events and people mentioned occur first in earlier letters which the prisoner had received from Germany: almost everything he says about his former life is an echo of

---

[53] W. Hugh Thomas, *op. cit.* p. 20.

[54] *Ibid.*, p. 172.

[55] *Ibid.*, pp. 172-173.

> something already written by another correspondent. It would take a computer analysis to work out precisely what proportion he himself initiated, but even without going into that amount of detail it is clear that his modest amount of original material could easily have been mastered by an intelligent double.
>
> The pattern becomes even more curious when considered in the light of his methods of receiving and answering mail. As several of the men who looked after him in Mytchett and Maindiff still testify, he showed absolutely no enthusiasm or emotion when a letter came from Frau Hess, but would often leave it lying about unopened for several days. When he did rouse himself to reply, he would spread out numerous earlier letters on a large table, together with many small scraps of paper on which he had made notes, and thus, furnished with several dozen reminders, he would write his answer.[56]

However, anomalous behavior is not the only type of corroboration of the Double Hypothesis.

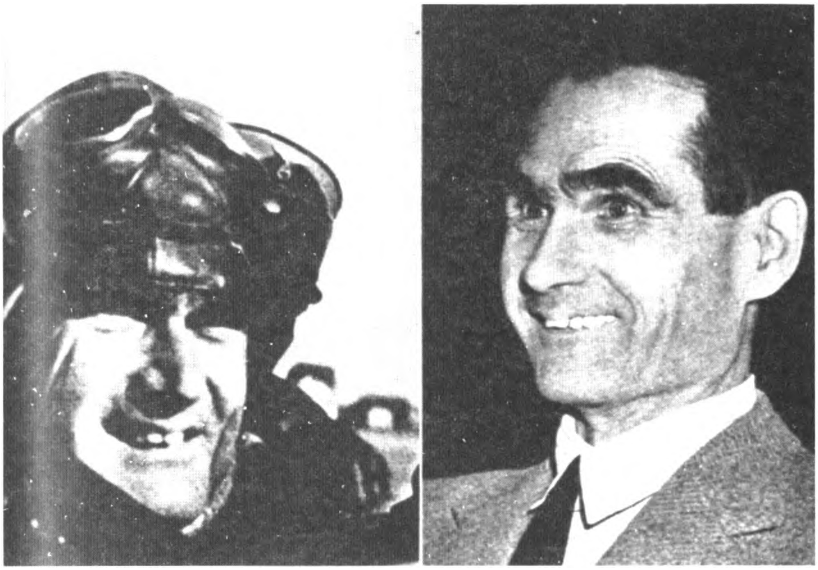
While we have not yet examined Hess' flight to Scotland itself, where we will encounter still more messy details in the Hess Mess, it is worth noting that Hess, according to the standard narrative of the flight, used someone *else's* flight suit when he left Augsburg, Germany, in his twin-engine Messerschmitt 110. That flight suit belonged to Helmut Kaden, "who had written his name in full on the inside pocket. The suit worn by the man who came to Scotland bore no name at all (the garment is still in Spandau Gaol where I myself have inspected it)," Thomas maintained.[57] This, of course, is one of the key reasons that Thomas believed that Hess was killed, and the *Doppelgänger* substitution was made by the Nazis, long before "Hess" reached Scotland. Again, while this author does *not* subscribe to this particular aspect of Thomas' scenario, it must be mentioned because other researchers have very different explanations for what might have happened, manifesting once again that at every step and detail of the Hess Mess, several interpretations are possible.

Finally, Thomas points out a disturbing comparison between Rudolf Hess, the pilot, sitting in the cockpit of a Messerschmitt 110, and "Rudolf Hess" the potential double: the real Hess had a very real, and visible, gap between the upper incisor front teeth; "Nuremberg" Hess did not:

---

[56] W. Hugh Thomas, *op. cit.*, pp. 136-137.

[57] *Ibid.*, p. 93.

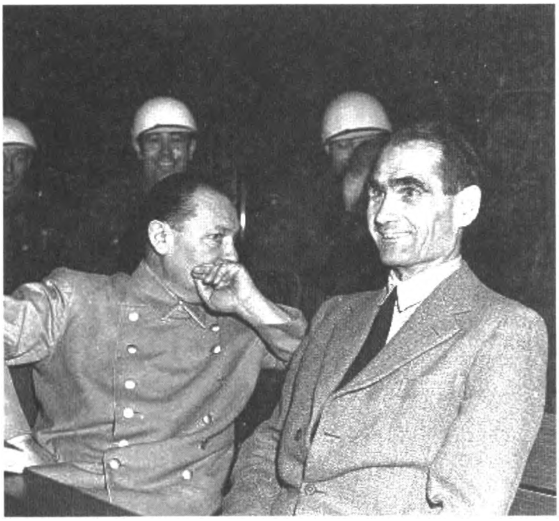


Hugh Thomas' comparison photos of the real Hess, left, in flight suit, showing his famous overbite, and the gap between the upper incisors, and Nuremberg "Hess," on the right, where the "gap" appears to be not between the upper incisors, but between the upper left incisor and canine.

There were yet other behavioral anomalies noted by Thomas that when viewed in conjunction with all the other evidence of missing war wound scars, the wrong flight suit, and different dental characteristics, seemed to synch the case for a double that he was making. All of the psychiatrists knew the real Deputy Führer was not only a vegetarian, but, having been raised as an upper middle class German, had very fastidious eating habit" and impeccable table manners, the man in their captivity ate "enormous quantities of all kinds of indifferent food, including beef and chicken curry, at a positively alarming rate," the "Hess" in British captivity hardly had the table manners of:

> ...a strictly-brought-up German of the upper middle class. He sat slumped at meals with his elbows splayed out sideways on the table; he tore bread into great chunks, drained his soup by raising the plate to his lips, and shoveled solid food into his mouth like a boy racing for a second helping.[58]

Additionally, the "Hess" in British captivity did not know anything about tennis, whereas Hess himself, born in Alexandria, Egypt, grew up around the game, and according to Frau Hess herself, "played tennis well and with enthusiasm".[59]



A picture is worth a thousand words:
A goofily smiling Nuremberg "Hess" with a skeptical-looking Göring in the dock at Nuremberg. It is worth remembering that pre-flight pictures of Hess seldom show him smiling because of his overbite.

3. Picknett, Prince, and Prior Weigh in on the Doppelgänger Dilemma

As might be expected Thomas' theory of a *Doppelgänger* was not universally accepted. Certainly Frau Hess and Wolf-Rüdiger never accepted it, maintaining until their deaths that the man in Spandau was indeed their husband and father. Others, while accepting the theory, challenged Thomas' scenario that the double was substituted by the Nazis during "Hess'" flight to Scotland. This, as we shall see when we examine the flight itself, is problematic in the extreme.

---

[58] W. Hugh Thomas, *op. cit.*, pp. 118-119.

[59] *Ibid.*, p. 119.

Picknett, Prince, and Prior not only did not dismiss the Double Hypothesis, they uncovered new information and—pardoning the pun—doubled down on it. Acknowledging that the problem with *any* double theory is getting the double to accept Rudolf Hess' fate, they nonetheless accept that "Thomas is on to something. However, his theory is much less plausible when it comes to providing a motive for using a double, and when the substitution was made".[60]

Thomas claimed that Hess' original flight was to Sweden, but Göring, getting wind of the plot, ordered Hess shot down. At this point, the Nazis, who just happened to have a Hess double who was also a pilot (!), and who was also carrying his wife's Leica camera, as the real Hess most certainly was, waiting at Aalborg, Denmark, then had the double fly to Scotland. To "synch" this difficult scenario, Thomas points out that the British doctors examining Hess in Scotland make no mention of Hess' war wound to his left lung, though they *did* note some small "calcified area" in the "upper right zone," a detail that is, as we shall see, highly significant, and indicative that it was, indeed, the *real* Hess who abandoned his Messerschmitt 110 and parachuted into Scotland.[61]

The chief difficulties, beyond the obvious "logistical" requirements of Thomas' scenario, are to provide a motivation as to why Göring and Company would should Hess down, and why the British, once they knew they had a double on their hands, would play along with the Nazis in the farce from that point on. Indeed, one of the obvious *puzzlements* about the Hess Mess *is* the fact that on this one point—Hess himself—the Churchill and Hitler governments were entirely agreed on two points: prior to the flight, Hess was the third most powerful Nazi in Germany, a man of reason, of some education and culture and sophistication, the

---

[60] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 368.

[61] *Ibid.*, pp. 368-369. 4

"conscience" of the Nazi party; both British and German propaganda agreed. But after the flight, Hess was insane, stupid, and of no consequence, a complete reversal of public propaganda in a matter of mere days!

For Picknett, Prince, and Prior, and indeed for many other researchers who have concluded that, double or not, the Hess mission was about trying to negotiate a peace between Great Britain and Nazi Germany, the "lone madman narrative" was a convenient narrative to disguise the fact that elements of the British Royal family had been involved on the British side of his "peace mission" scheme.[62] That involvement, of course, adds a new element to the Hess Mess that makes it even more problematic: was, and *is,* is *this* the real reason that aspects of the affair remain classified to this day? We shall explore this question more completely in the next chapter, but for the present, it is worth noting that this royal involvement, at whatever level, is the reason most authors give for the continued cover-up.

a. The Actual War Wounds, and the Implication: *The Real Hess Parachuted into Scotland*

As was seen previously, Prisoner Number Seven, "Hess" had two autopsies performed on him, the first by J. Malcolm Cameron, and the second private autopsy arranged by Wolf Hess. Neither of these autopsies mentioned any scarring commensurate with Hess' World War One wound to his lung.[63] The only scaring visible and mentioned in both autopsies was a small scar over the heart, which resulted from a suicide attempt of "Hess" while in British custody and confinement at Maindiff Court, which, as Picknett, Prince, and Prior point out, only proves that the man in Maindiff and the man in Spandau were the same,[64] but it falls short—in the absence of a scar to the left lung—of proving that both were the real Hess.

Thomas' *Doppelgänger* theory spurred the British Foreign Office to "prove" that Spandau's Prisoner Number Seven was indeed Rudolf Hess. Or at least, in the estimation of Picknett, Prince, and

---

[62] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 296

[63] *Ibid.*, p. 360.

[64] *Ibid.*

Prior, “they tried hard” to do so, for over a year after “Hess’” suspicious death in Spandau, the Foreign Office announced

> ...that there was: ‘a fibrous, irregular roughly circular old scar typical of an exit wound... in a posterior position on the left side of the chest’.

But the “proof” was no proof at all, and raised even more unsettling questions:

> As this was over a year after Prisoner Number Seven’s death and burial, the ‘finding’ seems a trifle suspicious. Why hadn’t this information been provided when they had the body? And if this description is correct, why had no previous examination noticed the scar?
>
> Clearly, Hess’ medical records at the British Military Hospital where he had been treated for over twenty years did not record either the front or back scar. Either they were astonishingly inefficient, or the scars simply did not exist.

At this juncture, Picknett, Prince, and Prior point out that one glaring problem has dogged the “war wounds-*Doppelgänger*” argument from the outset, namely, *prior to the actual discovery of Hess*’ *military record in Bavarian archives in 1989*[65]*—ten years **after** the appearance of Thomas’ book—**no one** knew exactly where the entrance and exit wounds really were*, *and hence no one really knew where to look.*[66]

What was known of the wounds *prior* to this point were *summaries* from other files, and, of course, “Hess’” statements themselves. What the actual Bavarian records state, however, is that the bullet entered Hess in the upper left armpit, proceeded at an angle downward, grazing the top of his lung, and exiting under his shoulder blade.[67] This is a crucial point, for Wolf Rüdiger Hess informed them that after he had read Dr. Thomas’ book, he asked “Hess” about that bullet wound, to which his father replied that while he could not see the wound on his back, he could see the wound *on his chest*.[68] "It seems," they quip, "that not even 'Hess' himself knew where the scar was supposed to be".[69] Of course, this would be another argument that "Hess" was *not* Hess.

---

[65] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit*., p. 358

[66] *Ibid*., p. 361. The discovery, of course, was used to discredit Thomas’ *Doppelgänger* theory but, if anything, seemed to make it even more certain.

[67] *Ibid*., p. 362.

But there is more.

Somehow Prisoner Number Seven was able to read a newspaper article about Thomas' book shortly after it came out, in spite of strict regulations at Spandau that absolutely nothing about Hess or Hitler could enter the prisoner's "reading list". When the French pastor visited Prisoner Number Seven after this, he was informed by "Hess" that "a bullet had passed right through his chest, brushing the heart and exiting under the left shoulder blade".[70] But once again, this only serves to raise the question once again of whether "Hess" was a *Doppelgänger*, because the path of the bullet, according to the Bavarian archival discovery in 1989, was *not* through the chest, but through the *armpit*, and did *not* graze the heart.

As if the Hess Mess could not absorb any more mystification, there is the matter of his British dental charts, one from September 1941 from "Hess'" stay at Mytchett Place, and the other, from April 1943 from Maindiff Court. While the "fillings and bridgework are similar, though not identical,"[71] a glaring problem emerges with the fact that the 1941 chart records a crown and a gold tooth which are missing from the 1943 chart. Such a discrepancy could be the result of mere sloppy record keeping, as Picknett, Prince, and Prior observe,[72] or it could be the result of very accurate recording-keeping, and hence, also be an oversight on the part of British intelligence which forgot to "scrub" this incriminating fact from the records. But in either case, as Picknett, Prince, and Prior aptly put it: "we find records that should demolish the doppelgänger theory do not".[73]

---

[68] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 361.

[69] *Ibid.* One can imagine—though Picknett, Prince, and Prior do not describe Wolfs reaction—how the knowledge of the real placement of his father's war wounds might have affected him, having learned to love a man who may not have been his father, and to fight for his release for years, to pay for private autopsies, and then to bury him with full Lutheran funeral services as a member of the family. I emphasize *this* aspect of the cruelty to highlight, in yet another way, the One Question at the heart of the Hess Mess.

[70] *Ibid.*, p. 362.

[71] *Ibid.*, p. 366.

[72] *Ibid.*

b. The Secret Measurement of Hess for a Duplicate Uniform: Substitution and Assassination Theories

Not all the anomalous behavior that seemed to confirm that at some point after his arrival in Britain, one was dealing with a *Doppelgänger*, came entirely from "Hess". Some of it came from the British themselves, and of these episodes, none is more suggestive than the "affair of the second uniform".

When Hess parachuted into Scotland, he was quickly taken into custody, and from there, eventually wound up for a brief period in the Tower of London, before spending approximately two years in confinement at Mytchett Place, prior to being moved to Maindiff Court, where he spent the rest of his years in British captivity. We shall have more to say about these periods and places in due course, but for the moment, our focus is on the brief period when Hess was in the Tower of London, a period about which little is known.

The "suggestive" episode occurred when Charles Fraser-Smith, the man after whom the gadget-wizard character "Q" in the James Bond films is modeled, was contacted by MI5 to assemble textiles and tailors to make an exact copy of the Luftwaffe captain's uniform that Hess had donned for his infamous flight. Informed that Hess had been drugged in the tower and that they would have to measure him quickly, Fraser-Smith and his team took all the measurements. Besides being proof of the fact that Hess *was* drugged on more than one occasion, the question inevitably arises as to why British intelligence would need an exact copy of Hess' Luftwaffe uniform.[74]

Fraser-Smith himself speculated that the British intelligence services were possibly contemplating sending a double *back* to Nazi Germany to penetrate the Nazi high command, and who better to do this than a double of the Deputy Führer himself? For Picknett,

---

[73] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, op. cit., p. 366.

[74] Ibid., p. 296.

Prince, and Prior, this event also has another implication, namely, that the idea of substituting a double had already occurred to MI-5 and MI-6 shortly after Hess arrived.[75] In later life Fraser-Smith went further, maintaining that high level doubts always existed in MI-6 about whether or not the prisoner in British custody was, in fact, Hess. And as Picknett, Prince and Prior also note, a double would also explain why the British prohibition of photographs of their infamous prisoner was so rigorously enforced.[76]

There is, however, another possibility for why British intelligence was keen to create a Hess Double, namely, the threat of assassination attempts, either from the various governments-in-exile in Great Britain, or by the Nazis themselves. Additionally, the British may have wanted to convey the impression that Hess, or "Hess," was "cooperating". In this respect, Picknett, Prince and Prior record that while one Hess was in Mytchett Palace, another was retained in the Tower of London, and actually—and very secretly—taken to a meeting in Whitehall with none other than Churchill himself! And this was *not* apparently the only meeting between the two.[77]

One cannot discount the assassination possibility, for Picknett, Prince, and Prior also record the fact that the notorious SS General and "Reichprotektor" of Bohemia, Reinhard Heydrich, composed a memorandum to the Nazi Foreign Minister Joachim von Ribbentrop (who, let it be noted, would be seated with "Hess" in the dock at Nuremberg, along with Göring). In his report, Heydrich told Ribbentrop that his agents had informed him that Hess was being held in Scotland at a villa.[78] While this is not the place to investigate these Hess-in-Scotland reports nor their significance to Picknett's, Prince's and Prior's theory, it does attest to the fact that the Nazis were attempting to monitor his whereabouts.

Before we can review their scenario in more detail, however, we must now turn, finally, to address the matters of Hess' flight, the motivations for it, and his capture.

---

[75] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 370.

[76] *Ibid.*

[77] *Ibid.*, p. 371.

[78] *Ibid.*, p. 356.

C. The Flight of Fancy and Hess' Capture

1. The Strange "Shoot Down" Order and Conveying the News of Hess' Flight to Hitler

a. The Hess Flight in Some Standard Histories

In standard histories of the Second World War, the May 10, 1941 flight of Deputy Führer Rudolf Hess to Great Britain is mentioned only cursorily, if at all. It is a curiosity, the insane mission of an insane man to stave off disaster for Germany and Europe. Yet, even in those brief accounts, one senses that something is amiss. For example, in Leonard Mosley's biography of Hermann Göring, *The Reich Marshal*, after briefly mentioning Hess' occult interests and membership in the Thule Society,[79] his role in the Beer Hall Putsch, subsequent flight to and return from Austria,[80] we are then informed that Hess had misgivings about Hitler's immanent invasion of the Soviet Union, *Unternehmung Barbarossa*, misgivings that, notes Mosley, the *Reichsmarschall* also apparently shared.[81]

For Hess, as we shall eventually discover, Barbarossa was indeed one of the motivations that impelled him to make his now infamous flight to negotiate a peace with Great Britain. But Hess' motivations were fundamentally military in nature; he was not so much opposed to *Barbarossa,* but to undertaking the risky strategy while Britain was still in the war, with the potentiality of an American entry into the war looming.

In the midst of this cursory treatment, we are informed that Luftwaffe General Adolf Galland, in command of the Luftwaffe's air defenses over Germany and Western Europe, was concerned about *Barbarossa* as well, and concerned that the only major Nazi leader who shared his misgivings was Rudolf Hess. After this revelation, Mosley continues:

> On May 10, 1941, Hess suddenly took off from Germany in a purloined Messerschmitt 110 and flew to England. A subsequent communiqué announced that "he harbored the illusion that he

---

[79] Leonard Mosley, *The Reich Marshal*: *A Biography of Hermann Göring* (Garden City, New York: Doubleday and Company, Inc., 1974), p. 53.

[80] *Ibid*., p. 98.

[81] *Ibid*., p. 298.

> could bring about peace between Germany and England by a personal intervention".
>
> Galland decided in his own mind that Hess had heard about the plan to invade Russia, and had made a desperate attempt to prevent the two-front war that would follow.[82]

The implication of all of this is that Hess' flight was a more-or-less spontaneous affair, ill-thought-out and sloppily planned, a desperation mission to prevent a desperate situation.

Then in a footnote, Mosley adds:

> Shortly after Hess' flight, Galland was ordered by Göring to put up his fighters and intercept the Deputy Führer. "The order I received was mad," said Galland. It was impossible to find a plane at that hour, as darkness was falling. "Just as a token, I ordered a takeoff. Each wing commander was to send up one or two planes. I did not tell them why. They must have thought I had gone off my head". Hess bailed out over Scotland and was made a prisoner-of-war. His peace overtures got nowhere.[83]

Implicit in this short treatment are three questions: (*1*) *When did the Reichsmarschall become aware of Hess*' *flight*, (*2*) *How was he made aware of it*, *and* (*3*) *What was his motivation for the shoot-down order*?

The last question assumes greater significance when we recall that Göring, according to Mosley, harbored the same misgivings about the wisdom of *Barbarossa* as did Hess: a two-front war was, with American entry a looming possibility, an extremely risky strategy. But if Britain *exited* the war, then an American entry, and ability to *prosecute* a war with Germany became equally problematical to America without the forward bases of deployment that Britain could provide.

In other words, why would Göring, always a practical military man, *want* to stop Hess and his peace mission, assuming he knew the purpose of Hess' flight?

As General Galland noted, Göring's order came *too late* for an interception to have much of a chance of success. Was Göring perhaps giving the order to cover his own involvement in a much larger plot? We shall return to this possibility much later.

---

[82] Mosley, op. cit., p. 299.

[83] Ibid., p. 299n.

One gains a few more suggestive details in John Toland's celebrated two volume biography of Hitler. There we are informed of the close relationship between Hess and the Haushofers, and Hess and Hitler, and the famous professor of geopolitics' visits to both men while they were serving time in Landsberg Prison for their roles in the Beer Hall Putsch. All of this, of course, is to stress Hess' membership in Adolf Hitler's inner circle.[84]

Again, we are informed of Hess' opposition to *Barbarossa so* long as England was in the war, but gone are the suggestions his flight was an entirely *ad hoc* spontaneous affair. Rather, we are informed not only of secret meetings between Hess and General Haushofer and his son Albrecht to discuss the feasibility of peace overtures to Great Britain,[85] but we are additionally informed that Hitler himself gave tacit approval for the idea, and that Albrecht Haushofer then utilized his pre-war contacts and friendship with the Duke of Hamilton to contact the Duke to propose a meeting between him and Hess.[86]

Toland then outlines how Hess had practiced flights in the twin-engine Messerschmitt 110, and persuaded the head of the company, Willi Messerschmitt himself, to add two 700 litre drop tanks to the wings and special radio equipment to the two-man cockpit. Additionally, *we are informed that Hess obtained a very secret map of the Luftwaffe's air defense and forbidden flying zones from Hitler's personal pilot, Hans Baur*.[87]

This anticipates the question that many readers by now have probably been asking: How is it that Hess took off from Augsburg in southern Germany in a fast twin-engine fighter on an unauthorized flight, then managed to evade German radar and air defenses—then state of the art—to fly to Great Britain where, again, he apparently was able to bail out before being shot down by the Royal Air Force in response to activating British air defenses, *also* state-of-the-art!

---

[84] John Toland, *Adolf Hitler*, Volume I (Garden City, New York: Doubleday and Company, Inc., 1976), pp. 131-132, 168, 208-209, 393.

[85] John Toland, *Adolf Hitler*, Volume II (Garden City, New York: Doubleday and Company, 1976), p. 757.

[86] Toland, Volume II, pp. 757-758.

[87] *Ibid.*, p. 759.

Answer, Hitler's pilot provided him with maps!

This fact, coupled with Göring's phone call to Galland, now raises the prospect that Hess had "assistance" in his flight—very covert assistance—from inside Hitler's highest command structure to a more definite possibility.

As for the flight itself, it is best to allow Toland to present it in his own words, for this version is more or less the version of the standard narrative, and hence the version that most people—insofar as they are aware of Hess' flight at all—have come to understand it:

> Hess rose early on the morning of May 10, a Saturday, and, upon learning that the weather forecast was good, he made arrangements for the flight. Never had he been more gallant to his wife. After tea he kissed her hand and then stood gravely at the door of the nursery, "with an air of one deep in thought and almost hesitating". She asked him when he was returning and, told it would be Monday at the latest, she bluntly said, "I cannot believe it. You will not come back as soon as that!" She guessed he was bound for a meeting with someone like Pétain but he feared that she had guessed the truth. He "turned hot and cold in turns" and, before she could say anything more, he dashed into the nursery to take a last look at their slumbering son.
>
> At 6 P.M., after giving his adjutant a letter for Hitler...

This is the letter, the reader will recall, that Nuremberg "Hess" recorded in his diary that Göring told him he should have written!

> ...Hess took off from the Augsburg airport and headed for the North Sea. Abruptly, contrary to the weather report, the cloud cover vanished and for a moment he thought of turning back. But he kept going and found England covered by a veil of mist. Seeking shelter, he dived down with full throttle, at first unaware that a Spitfire was on his tail. Outdistancing the pursuer, he hedgehopped over the dark countryside at more than 450 miles an hour, narrowly skimming trees and houses. Baur had always claimed Hess was the type of pilot who liked to fly through open hangar doors and it was in this barnstormer's spirit that he aimed at the mountain looming ahead. It was his guidepost and he literally climbed up the steep slope and slid down the other side, always keeping within a few yards of the ground. Just before 11 P.M. he turned east and picked out a

> railway and small lake which he remembered were just south of the duke's residence. He climbed to 6000 feet, a safe height from which to parachute, and switched off the motor. He opened the hatch—then suddenly realized he had overlooked one step in his elaborate training: "I had never asked how to jump; I thought it was too simple!" As the ME-110 plummeted, he recalled a friend mentioning the plane should be on its back. After a half roll, he found himself upside down, held inside by centrifugal force. He began to see stars; just before passing out, he thought: "Soon the crash must come!" Regaining consciousness, he saw the speed gauge indicate zero. He flung himself out of the plane, pulled at the parachute ring. Fortunately, while unconscious, he had automatically brought the plane out of its semi-looping curve to finish almost perpendicular on its tail. And so, to his amazement, he found himself safely in mid-air.
>
> He hit the ground, stumbled forward and blacked out a second time. He was found by a farmer, marched off to the Home Guard and brought to a barracks in Glasgow. Insisting that he was one Oberleutnant Alfred Horn, he asked to see the Duke of Hamilton.[88]

And that, more or less, is the version everyone has come to believe (overlooking the fact that 450 miles per hour was beyond the actual top speed of a ME-110, especially at low altitude!).

But what about the letter he had given his adjutant prior to taking off from Augsburg? Toland notes that this was delivered to Hitler the following Sunday morning at his Berghof mansion on the Obersalzburg. Hitler was in conference when Martin Bormann's brother interrupted the meeting and informed Hitler that Hess' aide wanted to see the Führer. After some confusion, Hess' letter was delivered, and Hitler "put on his glasses and began to read indifferently but as soon as he saw the words 'My Führer, when you receive this letter I shall be in England', he dropped into a chair and shouted so loudly he could be heard downstairs, "Oh, my God, my God! He has flown to England!"[89] Hess added that he had kept the whole thing secret, because had he been forthcoming with his plan, Hitler "would have forbidden it," but that he was attempting to bring to pass an end to the war with England, which Hitler had never wanted. Then, closing, Hess stated "And if, my Führer, this project—which I admit has but very little chance of success—ends in failure and the fates decide against me, this can have no detrimental results either for you or for Germany; it will always be possible for you to deny all responsibility. Simply say I am crazy".[90]

---

[88] Toland, Volume II, pp. 759-760.

[89] *Ibid*., p. 760.

Hitler then became a frenzy of action, ordering his aids to phone Göring, and get Bormann and Ribbentrop to the Berghof, and immediately placed Hess' adjutant under arrest. At this juncture, Hitler inquired to Luftwaffe General Ernst Udet, present for the conference, whether or not a ME-110 could even reach Britain; Udet replied "No".[91] Again, this is a hint that something is amiss with the standard narrative, for very obviously, Hess' 110 *did* reach England, and Udet, as a Luftwaffe General, would have known that a one-way flight was at least possibility with drop tanks or even re-fueling.

For the rest of the day, according to the standard narrative once again, Hitler raged and fulminated, fearing that Hess' flight would be interpreted by Germany's Axis partners Italy and Japan that Germany was trying to procure a separate peace. Finally, after some debate—a debate which took place *without* the expert input of propaganda minister Goebbels—a communiqué was prepared that simply stated that Hess had commandeered an aircraft against orders, and that he was missing, and had presumably crashed. The communiqué also stated that a letter had been left behind showing "traces of a mental disturbance which justifies the fear that Hess was a victim of hallucination".[92]

This of course was a propaganda blunder of the first order, since it implied that one of Nazi Germany's top leaders was insane, and that the *rest* of the leadership had not detected it![93] Within a few hours of the German press statement, the British followed with one of their own, stating that Hess had come to Great Britain. Beyond this, there were no more details, but it did force the Germans to "update" their previous statement, and in the process, they made matters much worse. In a new release issued on Tuesday, September 13, 1941, they stated:

---

[90] Toland, Volume II, p. 761.

[91] *Ibid.*

[92] *Ibid.*

[93] *Ibid.*, p. 763.

> As is well known in party circles, Hess had undergone severe physical suffering for some years. Recently he had sought relief to an increasing extent in various methods practiced by mesmerists and astrologers, etc. An attempt is also being made to determine to what extent these persons are responsible for bringing about the condition of mental distraction which led him to take this step...[94]

With that, the "standard narrative" comes to an end: Hess, via contacts to the Haushofers, flew to Britain to negotiate a peace for which, according to his own letter to Hitler, he held out little chance of success. He was denounced as insane by both the Nazi and later the Churchill governments, and remained to rot in confinement for the rest of his (many) days.

Except, in Toland's version it is suggested that Hitler gave the mission his tacit approval. Hence, his rage and fulminations on "learning" of the mission from Hess' letter was a bit of very convincing theater.

In this respect Toland mentions one more strange incident indicative, perhaps, that Hitler knew more about the Hess flight than he ever let on. During a meeting with a Frau Bruckmann to console her on the recent death of her husband, an unusual exchange occurred; Hitler's words were not those of a man raging against Hess:

> "We all have our graves and grow more and more lonely, but we have to overcome and go on living, my dear gracious lady! I, too, am now deprived of the only two human beings among all those around me to whom I have been truly and inwardly attached: Dr. Todt (builder of the Westwall and Autobahn) is dead and Hess has flown away from me!"
>
> "That is what you say now and to me," reportedly replied Frau Bruckmann, who had a reputation for frankness, "but what does your official press say? Year after year we all go to Bayreuth and are deeply moved, but who understands the real meaning? When our unhappy age at last produces a man who, like the Valkyrie, fulfills the deeper meaning of Wotan's command—seeks to carry out *your* most sacred wish with heroism and self-sacrifice—then he is described as insane!" She expected the Führer would retort

---

[94] Toland, Volume II, p. 762.

> sharply but he remained quiet and thoughtful. "Is it not enough, what I have said to you—and to you alone—about my real feeling?" he finally said. "Is that not enough for you?"[95]

This strange episode paints Hitler's response to the Hess flight in dramatically different colors than the usual narrative, for it suggests that in some deep way he never recovered from the personal loss, and that it affected the day-to-day governance of the Third Reich. This, as we shall come to see during our subsequent review of Hess' relationship to his secretary, Martin Bormann, may not be as odd as it initially sounds.

For the present, however, we must remain focused on Hess' flight, and its details.

I have employed these two standard and well-known biographies to highlight something very important in the "standard narrative," for not only is Hitler's emotional closeness to Hess on display, his own role and foreknowledge—even in that standard narrative!—is open to question and debate. Additionally, as we have seen, we have a clear indication that Reich Marshal Göring himself had some sort of prior foreknowledge.

W. Hugh Thomas zeros in on Göring's orders to Galland and fleshes out its bizarre nature even more. In his memoirs published in 1953, Galland, according to Thomas, reveals additional details that call Göring's role into sharp relief, for *early in the evening* of May 10, 1941, Galland received a telephone call from Göring,

> ...who sounded "very agitated" and ordered Galland to take off immediately with his entire wing. When Galland pointed out that there were no reports of any enemy aircraft flying in, Göring shouted, "Flying in? What do you mean by flying in? You're supposed to stop an aircraft flying out! *The Deputy Führer has gone mad and is flying to England in an Me 110. He must be brought down*".[96]

Note that according to Galland, Göring had *specific* information that Hess was flying a Messerschmitt 110, and that he had ordered

---

[95] Toland, Volume II, pp. 764-765.

[96] W. Hugh Thomas, *op. cit.*, p. 47, emphasis added.

Galland to bring him down, in effect, ordering Galland to shoot down Hess.

But Thomas highlights just how bizarre this phone call really was, and the questions and implications that it raises:

> To Galland, it seemed that "someone had made a last-minute attempt to pull the emergency cord of a fast train speeding over the wrong points". He described the whole incident as "one of the most mysterious affairs" of the war. That seems to me an understatement. To be rung up suddenly by the Reichsmarschall commanding the air force and ordered to shoot down the Deputy Leader of the country must have been an astonishing experience, and Galland's published account of it is far from satisfactory. Yet when I tried to interview Galland to glean more information, it was made clear to me that my inquiries were not welcome.
>
> Göring's telephone call on the evening of May 10th, 1941, is in itself extremely suspicious. Next day, when summoned to Hitler's mountain headquarters, the Berghof, he pretended to know nothing about Hess' departure. Yet, according to Galland, he did know about it. Not only was he aware of Hess' flight on the evening of the 10th, he had positively ordered the Luftwaffe to shoot the Deputy Führer down. This alone argues the existence of a plot. How did Göring know that Hess was about to do a bunk? Who had told him? How *long* had he known? On whose orders, or with whose consent, did he command the Deputy Führer's assassination? So desperate an action would surely have needed the direct approval of Hitler himself. Yet Göring did not even tell the Führer what was happening, let alone seek his consent. And why, when Göring did call Galland, was he in such a panic? His haste suggests that he feared part of the plot had misfired.
>
> The timing of the telephone call also seems odd. Galland says it came only about ten minutes before dark. Yet on the north coast of Germany darkness did not fall until after nine p.m. that evening. By nine p.m. Hess—supposing he had carried straight on—would have been at least ninety minutes, or some 300 miles, beyond the coast, and far beyond the reach of any fighters based on the Continent. If Göring knew the time of Hess' take-off, he must have realized this. There would therefore have been no

> point in telephoning just before dark. Could the call have come through much earlier than Galland relates?[97]

Indeed, could the call have come through much earlier, or *did Göring in fact place the call when Galland says he did, but for very different reasons than Thomas surmises*? *Was Göring perhaps trying to cover his tracks by issuing an order to shoot down Hess* ***when he already knew it would be impossible to do so****, in case his involvement in a plot with Hess should be discovered*?

In spite of the fact that Göring and Hess were rivals, there is enough to suggest this possibility might be true. In order to see this possibility, however, it is necessary to examine the flight itself.

2. The Flight Itself and Its Implications: British and German Air Defenses

The most recent detailed studies of the Hess Mess and the infamous flight at the center of it are Peter Padfield's *Night Flight to Dungavel,* and John Harris' and Richard Wilbourn's *Rudolf Hess*: *A New Technical Analysis of the Hess Flight*, *May 1941*. Padfield's book also has the advantage of being one of the few books that remembers that Rudolf Hess was actually a Nazi, and not simply a "martyr for peace" as revisionist literature often portrays him. The Harris-Wilbourn book has the advantage that it is one of the few books to subject Hess' Messerschmitt 110 to a thorough examination of its performance characteristics, and to subject the flight itself to careful analysis. Both books examine the problems posed by the British and German air defenses and the implications of those problems for collusion with Hess from high-ranking elements in both countries, and both books also offer widely divergent theories of the motivations for the flight. For the authors of both books, the Hess flight was *not* the spontaneous affair of "the lone madman". It was an international conspiracy of the highest order, involving powerful elements within both the United Kingdom and Nazi Germany.

---

[97] W. Hugh Thomas, *op. cit.*, pp. 47-48, italicized emphasis in the original, boldface emphasis added.

a. The Strategic Positions of Britain and Germany in the Spring of 1941 and the Oft-Overlooked Factor: *The Atomic Bomb*

The Hess flight was motivated at least in part by the strategic position in which both Germany and Great Britain found themselves in early 1941. On the German side, on paper, everything looked good: Germany was master of Western Europe from the Pyrenees to the Norwegian Arctic. In Eastern Europe Germany and her allies Italy, Bulgaria, and Hungary had overrun pro-British Yugoslavia, and unceremoniously ejected British forces from Greece and Crete. Yet, as preparations for Operation Barbarossa moved forward, the Churchill government continued to woo America to enter the war. Sooner or later, Berlin knew this would happen. Time was on Britain's, and not Germany's, side.

On the British side of this equation, things looked no better, for the above reasons, and more besides. Britain simply was not strong enough to prosecute a successful war against Germany on its own.[98] The string of losses placed the Churchill government under severe pressure, for it had essentially two choices: it could hold out until American entry, thus virtually dooming the British Empire as the dominant world power and ensuring its replacement by the U.S.A., or it could preserve the Empire at the cost of a negotiated peace with Germany.[99]

Like many other researchers into the Hess Mess, however, John Harris and Richard Wilbourn, whose book *Rudolf Hess*, *A New Technical Analysis of the Hess Flight*, *May 1941* we shall review in this section, point out yet a third problem faced by the Churchill government. The British Royal Family "were half German, and saw Germany as a natural ally, albeit preferably without Hitler as leader. They were certainly in the 'those with much to lose' camp".[100] In actuality, as we shall see, the Royal family were the tip of the iceberg of a pro-peace party in Britain, a party that had some representation in the British peerage, and in the various organs of government.

[98] John Harris and Richard Wilbourn, *Rudolf Hess*: *A New Technical Analysis of the Hess Flight*, *May 1941* (Stroud, Glocestershire: The History Press, 2014), p. 33.

[99] *Ibid.*, p. 34.

[100] *Ibid.*

It is the existence of a peace faction both in Germany and in Great Britain that most researchers—including this author—believe was the ultimate context in which the Hess flight, and resulting Mess, occurred, as both sides covertly attempted to contact and negotiate. Harris and Wilbourn, however, suggest other motivating factors, including the Nazi A-bomb, and Hess' knowledge of it, for after all, as has already been discovered, up to the time of his flight virtually nothing was done in the Third Reich that Hess did not know about, Harris and Wilbourn suggest

> If the Germans believed that they were close, did this underpin Hitler's confidence in winning what was seen by many as an unwinnable war with Russia? We believe it significant that Hitler (and Hess) chose to play on this uncertainty. When Hitler attended the Reichstag on 4 May 1941, just six days before the Hess flight, he observed that '... the scourge of modern weapons of warfare, once they were brought into action, would inevitably ravage vast territories'.
>
> As will be described later, *when Hess was in captivity, if he wanted attention, he too would speak of the bomb.* He knew the British would want to know the reality of German nuclear production. *Hess knew that there was no German nuclear bomb and he may have wondered if there ever would be.* Did he know that Hitler was not holding any aces?[101]

However, as I argued in my very first book of "revisionist history" of the Nazi Period, *Reich of the Black Sun*: *Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend,* there is enough evidence to argue that the Nazis were *much* farther along in their atomic bomb project, perhaps even achieving tests of actual bombs in October of 1944, and then again in March of 1945.[102] As I also argued in that book, an actual existing atomic bomb project, one moreover achieving some success, *does* rationalize Hitler's confidence in his invasion plans for Russia, and also rationalizes his otherwise irrational and inexplicable decision to declare war on the USA as his armies were freezing before the gates of Moscow.[103]

---

[101] Harris and Wilbourn, op. cit., p. 31, emphasis added.

[102] Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun*: *Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005), see pp. 18-20, 70-80 for the October 1944 test, and pp. 80-88 for the March 1945 test.

If these arguments are true, then Harris' and Wilbourn's observations, based as they are on that postwar Allied legend of German nuclear incompetence, changes color completely, for it adds *additional military and political pressure on the Churchill government, and additional pressure on the British peace faction to come to an agreement.* The atomic bomb, in other words, may be a key hidden factor to the Hess Mess that is seldom considered. Once one factors it in, however, the "negotiations" no longer have quite the aura of make-believe, and the air of desperation one senses on both the British and German sides finds additional grounding. Harris and Wilbourn also point out, quite correctly, that the British were monitoring German progress as closely as they could, monitoring that eventually led to the commando attack on the Norsk heavy water plant in Norway.[104]

As I point out in *Reich of the Black Sun,* there is a consideration that makes this atomic bomb context for the Hess Mess quite plausible, for in October of 1944, at approximately the same time as the first alleged Nazi nuclear test in the Baltic, the British government secretly placed its entire constabulary and emergency fire and medical services in the country on secret high alert. The reason? They had intelligence of a possible German atomic bomb attack.[105]

The atom-bomb relationship to the Hess flight is not without its own contextual corroboration, for Hess was also the Commissar of All Technological Matters and Organization within the Third Reich, and thus, he knew more than almost anyone at that time the full extent of the Third Reich's black projects world.[106] This important post will, as we shall see, bear important implications when we consider little-known aspects of the Hess Mess.

These considerations are important for two reasons; Harris and Wilbourn suggest that Hess' arrival was the *last* thing that Churchill wanted, since it put the Prime Minister and his government in a very awkward position, for it made it look like he could be double-dealing the USA, on the one hand trying to woo an American entry into the war, and on the other, covertly negotiating a peace with Nazi Germany. Churchill, in other words, was placed in exactly the same position vis-à-vis his potential allies by the Hess flight as Germany was placed vis-à-vis *its* allies, Italy and Japan. The fear was that the flight would give new strength to yet another "peace faction," the American isolationists.[107]

---

[103] Farrell, *op. cit.*, pp. 154-155.

[104] Harris and Wilbourn, *op cit.*, p. 31.

[105] Farrell, *op. cit.*, pp. 72-73.

Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 138.

(*1*) *A Speculation on the* "*Lure*" *Hypothesis*

Harris and Wilbourn point out that the contemporary American reaction to the Hess flight was summed up by two magazine articles, one in *Liberty* magazine from July 1941, and the other in an article in 1943 in *American Mercury.* Both articles maintained that Hess was *lured* to Great Britain by British intelligence,[108] the implication being that there was no "peace party" nor realistic hope that a negotiated peace with the Churchill government was possible.

One difficulty with the "Lure" hypothesis often pointed out by investigators of the Hess Mess is that if Hess *was* lured to Great Britain, why did Britain not seek to capitalize on the propaganda value of his capture much more than it did? If anything, the British reaction was inexplicably muted and low-key. It is my suspicion, however, that the "Lure" hypothesis itself is as much a fiction, or, as we would call it today, a "spinning" of the event, a legend created to reassure America that Britain was not double-dealing and to extricate the Churchill government from the diplomatic difficulty caused by the Hess flight.

---

[107] Harris and Wilbourn, *op. cit.*, p. 13.

[108] *Ibid.*, pp. 11-12. It should be pointed out that Abdallah Melaouhi's book on the Hess murder hypothesis includes the entire *American Mercury* article in its appendices.

(*2*) *Churchill's 1942 Address to the House of Commons*: *Conspiracy Confirmed*

By 1942, the USA had, of course, entered World War Two with the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor, and Hitler's declaration of war on the USA two days after the attack. Buoyed by the new alliance with the USA and the Soviet Union, Churchill at last answered a question about Hess on the floor of the House of Commons. This crucial exchange is a pivotal feature of Harris' and Wilbourn's argument, and hence, we reproduce it in full:

> The Prime Minister: Surely the (honourable) Gentleman is not the man to be frightened of a Whip? The House of Commons, which is at present the most powerful representative Assembly in the world, must also—I am sure, will also—bear in mind the effect produced abroad by all its proceeding. We have also to remember how oddly foreigners view our country and its way of doing things. *When Rudolf Hess flew over here some months ago he firmly believed that he had only to gain access to certain circles in this country for what he described as* '*the Churchill clique*'.
>
> Mr. Thorne (Plaistow): Where is he now?
>
> The Prime Minister: Where he ought to be—to be thrown out of power and for a Government to be set up with which Hitler could negotiate a magnanimous peace. The only importance attaching to the opinions of Hess is the fact that he was fresh from the atmosphere of Hitler's intimate table. But, sir, I can assure you that since I have been back in this country I have had anxious inquiries from a dozen countries, and reports of enemy propaganda in a score of countries; *all turning upon the point whether His Majesty*'*s present Government is to be dismissed from power or not*".[109]

Harris and Wilbourn quite correctly point out that this speech—more revealing than Mr. Churchill perhaps cared to admit—is "the beginning of the conundrum" for he is clearly revealing the motivation of the Hess Hight, namely, "to gain access to the certain circles that could remove Churchill and his government from power".[110]

---

[109] Harris and Wilbourn, *op. cit*., p. 14, emphasis added, citing Hansard's, no reference given.

3. "*Sealing the Deal*":

a. Harris and Wilbourn's Examination of the British Constitution

As this juncture, Harris and Wilbourn supply a nuance to their version of the Hess Mess that is worth very careful consideration, for they point out the obvious fact—known to all Hess Mess researchers—that by the time of his flight to Scotland, *several* contacts had *already* been made been made between the German and British "peace parties," and that several discussions had *already* secretly taken place, in Sweden, Switzerland, and Spain. From this obvious fact, however, comes a stunning thesis: "Hess was not flying to add to the detail—that had already been agreed. He was flying in *to seal the deal* and his arrival was to demonstrate his commitment—at the highest level".[111] Like other researchers, they also believe that Hess' selection of *Scotland* rather than *England* as the ultimate destination was precisely because of these prior covert contacts between Hess and the German "peace party" and the Duke of Hamilton, Scotland's highest ranking peer, who, as such, could provide Hess with entre to the Royal Family.[112]

Did this have any chance of success?

Indeed it did, and the reason lies in the British Constitution itself, which Harris and Wilbourn take great pains to explicate, for their thesis that Hess came not for further *discussion and negotiation* but rather to "*seal the deal*" rests upon a close and tightly-argued examination of that constitution. This is, indeed, one of the most brilliant parts of their book, which is filled with many brilliant observations and arguments. The British Constitution, as most people are aware, is not a "written document," but rather has evolved from various covenants, conventions, precedents and courses of performance over time. One of these "courses of performance" well-established in British constitutional practice is that the Monarch "should act upon ministerial advice".[103] This precedent, however, has been a very moot point of discussion and debate, as one may imagine, and there *were and are* cases in recent British history where the Monarch acted independently from the ministerial advice of his or her own government, and actually *created* British policy.

---

[110] *Ibid.*

[111] Harris and Wilbourn, *op. cit.*, p. 22, emphasis added.

[112] *Ibid.*, p. 15.

[113] *Ibid.*, p. 35.

In this regard they cite perhaps the most famous case of all: King Edward VII, Queen Victoria's son, who in 1903 made his famous trip to Paris, beginning the British diplomatic offensive that turned France—long a continental nemesis—into a British ally. This initiative was almost wholly Edward VII's, made after quiet discussion with various key members of the British peerage. Other examples were the threat of a Monarchical veto during the parliamentary debates over Irish home rule in the years immediately prior to World War One, and finally, the role of the Monarchy in placing Stanley Baldwin into the premiership in 1923.[114]

More importantly, however, there are "the 'reserve powers the sovereign has accumulated over the years. They are rarely used and, indeed, *only ever considered in times of constitutional crisis*".[115] These reserved powers of the Crown ultimately stem from the 1688 settlement during the era of the "Glorious Revolution," and as part of the common law do not become "extinct merely through lack of use".[116] Harris and Wilbourn expand on the nature of these powers and their relationship to the Hess Mess as follows:

> Amongst others, the powers included *the appointment and dismissal of ministers*; *the summoning*, *prorogation and dissolution of Parliament*; *royal assent to bills*; the appointment and regulation of the civil service; the commissioning of officers in the armed forces; and directing the disposition of the armed forces in the UK. In foreign policy: *the making of treaties*; *declaration of war*; deployment of armed forces overseas; recognition of foreign states; and *the accreditation and reception of their diplomats. So* in a time of constitutional crisis, the King or Queen could, in theory, act virtually independently of the government of the day.

---

[114] Harris and Wilbourn, *op. cit.*, p. 35.

[115] *Ibid.*, emphasis added.

> *This is the reason that Hess was obtaining books on the British Constitution* in April 1941. He could request the monarch to invoke royal prerogative, dismiss the prime minister and, presumably, appoint in his place a prime minister who would act in accordance with the King's wish—to make a peace treaty with Germany.[117]

Harris and Wilbourn, on this basis, then argue that these constitutional considerations form the context from which Hess' motivations must be interpreted, for he was *not* trying to negotiate with the Duke of Hamilton, or, for that matter, any other peer, but rather, because peers had right of access to the Monarch, was attempting to use that connection to be introduced to King George VI, whom he hoped would invoke this constitutional process, and dismiss "the Churchill clique".[118] The conclusion that they draw from this is that, contrary to popular views, Hess was "quite able" under the British constitution to achieve an overthrow of the British government of Winston Churchill.[119] It was to be, in effect, another "Churchill-Halifax moment," for after all, it was George VI who made the decision to appoint Churchill using precisely the royal prerogative, and not Lord Halifax, to the premiership in May of 1940.[120]

---

[117] Harris and Wilbourn, *op. cit.*, p. 35, all emphases added. Harris and Wilbourn point out that this enumeration of the reserve Crown powers and prerogative were the result of a study commissioned by the Blair Labour Government of 2003.

[118] *Ibid.*, p. 36. They point out that the right of peers to access to the monarch is a principle acknowledged by Blackstone, the famous Oxford scholar of British jurisprudence. See p. 37.

[119] *Ibid.*, p. 38.

[120] It should be noted that, in that instance, George VI *did* heed the "ministerial advice" of the then exiting Prime Minister Neville Chamberlain, who advised the King to choose Churchill over Halifax. In what is a strange irony, however, Churchill was also sympathetic to the previous King, Edward VIII, who was pressured to abdicate the throne in favor of his brother over his desire to marry the American divorcee, Wallis Simpson, which, eventually, he did. Edward VIII was, in turn, also known for his sympathies with the Nazi regime, and after his abdication, as Duke of Windsor, he and his new wife actually met and dined with the Hesses in Munich!

b. The Haushofer Letters: *The German Side*: *No Peace with Churchill*; *The British Side*: *No Peace with Hitler*

As we have already seen, the Deputy Führer had a close relationship with General Karl Haushofer and his son Albrecht, under whose tutelage Hess then mediated their geopolitical ideas to Hitler. It was the Haushofer-Hess peace faction in Germany that carried on the secretive discussions with the British peace faction via the Haushofers' extensive network of connections to it. In the preparations for Hess' flight, the "peace mission" was extensively discussed between the three men in a series of private and personal letters and memoranda. These documents form the core, in virtually all Hess Mess research, of the "Peace Plan Hypothesis" of the Hess flight.

In a September 3, 1940 letter to his son Albrecht, General Haushofer recounts a meeting that he had just had with Hess, revealing that severe attacks against Britain were planned and that "the highest ranking person only has to press a button to set it off". He and Hess—who is referred to throughout the Haushofer correspondences by the Japanese codename "Tomo"—had discussed the prospects of a negotiated peace, using Portuguese national celebrations as an occasion to meet on neutral ground with high-ranking British counterparts. The General reveals that he has heard from an old British friend, one Mrs. Violet Roberts, via the British war postage service in Lisbon, and that they should attempt to use her to communicate with the Duke of Hamilton. This letter is apparently in response to previous efforts by Albrecht, as his father is indicating to him to proceed to make contact, and gives him her address via the Lisbon address she had provided in her letter. [121]

Hess himself wrote General Haushofer on September 10, 1940. In the letter, Hess urges that the contact between Albrecht and his "old friend," i.e., the Duke of Hamilton, be initiated via Mrs. Roberts, and to inquire if he would be willing to meet on neutral territory, presumably Lisbon, which both the British and Germans could easily get to. Hess then writes something very peculiar:

---

[121] Harris and Wilbourn, *op. cit.*, pp. 43-44.

> The prerequisite naturally was that the inquiry in question and the reply *would not go through official channels*, *for you would not in any case want to cause your friends over there any trouble.*
>
> It would be best to have the letter to the old lady with whom you are acquainted delivered through a confidential agent of the AO[122] to the address that is known to you. For this purpose Albrecht would have to speak either with Bohle or my brother. At the same time the lady would have to be given the address of this agent in L.[123] or if the latter does not live there permanently, to which the reply can in turn be delivered.
>
> As for the neutral, I have in mind; I would like to speak to you face-to-face about it for some time. There is no hurry about this since, in any case, there would first have to be a reply received here from over there.[124]

What emerges from this letter is that Hess and the Haushofers had been engaged in these covert discussions for some time, but much more importantly, Hess is attempting to avoid "official channels," and his reason is that he wishes to avoid compromising the Haushofers' British contacts.

However, the question that has constantly hovered over the Hess Mess is how much—if anything—did Hitler know of the flight. Clearly, *someone* in the Nazi hierarchy knew about it, for we have already encountered the fact that Göring knew about it, ordered General Galland to shoot him down, and then, a day later in front of Hitler, claimed no knowledge at all! Consequently, the question arises, was Hess also trying to avoid *German* official channels as well, by recommending that Albrecht use not the German diplomatic service in the Foreign Ministry, but rather, the *party* apparatus of the *Auslands Organization*? If so, *why*?

My speculative thesis is that Hitler was kept in the loop *to a certain extent,* but not entirely, for reasons that we shall disclose momentarily, for there *is* something known to Göring, which he is attempting to keep *from* Hitler, by feigning ignorance of Hess' flight. In all likelihood, whatever Göring knew, Hess knew.

---

[122] AO, i.e., the *Auslands Organization,* the Nazi Party's own overseas intelligence service, which Hess, of course, commanded.

[125] "L"., i.e., presumably Lisbon.

[124] Harris and Wilbourn, op. cit., p. 45, emphasis added.

In this respect, it is worth noting that Albrecht Haushofer suspected that there was something amiss with Hess' request not to use official channels, for on September 15 he writes a comprehensive memo in Berlin on the prospects of peace negotiations with the British. At the very beginning of this comprehensive memorandum, he states that it is a memorialization of the points he had discussed with Hess during a meeting in Bad Godesberg that Hess had ordered him to attend. Albrecht Haushofer states that he "had the opportunity to speak in all frankness".[125] In this memorandum, which Albrecht had probably drawn up for his father, he makes it clear that:

> ...all Englishmen who mattered, regarded a treaty signed by the Führer as a worthless scrap of paper. To the question as to why this was so, I referred to the 10-year term of our Polish Treaty, to the Non-Aggression Pact with Denmark signed only a year ago, to the "final" frontier demarcation of Munich. What guarantee did England have that a new treaty would not be broken again at once if it suited us? It must be realized that, even in the Anglo-Saxon world, the Führer was regarded as Satan's representative on earth and had to be fought.
>
> If the worst came to the worst, the English would rather transfer their whole Empire bit by bit to the Americans than sign a peace that left to National Socialist Germany the mastery of Europe.

Albrecht Haushofer continued to observe that the only genuine solution to European peace and security was a European federation, and a "fusion" between Germany and Britain with a joint navy and air force, with joint defense of all territories, a fusion that "the English are now about to conclude with the United States".[127]

Note firstly that Albrecht is *not* talking about an *alliance* of the UK and USA, but of *fusion*, the old goal of Cecil Rhodes.[128] If true, then it provides yet another motivation for Hess' flight, for such a "fusion" had to be prevented at all costs, and in spite of any chances of the success of a "peace mission," the risks of *not* doing so were far higher. As we shall see, there *is* in fact evidence that something along these lines might indeed have been being discussed at the highest levels. Hess' mission, as we have seen previously, put the Churchill government into the dubious diplomatic position of looking like it was double dealing, and thus, *merely by landing in Great Britain, regardless of the success of the **other** parts of his mission, Hess may have forestalled and collapsed these plans*. The USA would not and could not negotiate such a fusion if there was the remotest *hint* of double dealing.

---

[125] Harris and Wilbourn, *op. cit.*, p. 46.

[126] *Ibid.*

[127] *Ibid.*, p. 47.

[128] In this respect, see the celebrated book by Dr. Carroll Quigley, *The Anglo-American Establishment* (New York: Books in Focus, Inc., 1981), pp. 33-101.

However, note secondly that according to his memorandum, Albrecht Haushofer was very frank and blunt with Hess, clearly implying to him that there was very *little* possibility of a negotiated peace with Hitler. He then nevertheless continues by recommending to Hess that approaches could possibly be made through the British ambassador to Hungary, O'Malley, or through Sir Samuel Hoare, the British ambassador in Madrid.[129] Then, toward the very end of the memorandum, Albrecht discloses something quite unusual, requiring rather close parsing of his words:

> For this extremely ticklish case and in the event that I might possibly have to make a trip alone—*I asked for very precise directives from the highest authority.*

Before proceeding to the very *next* sentence in the memorandum, pause and consider the possible implications of this statement, for Hess' request *not* to use "official channels" might have alerted Albrecht that something was amiss, and that, perhaps, the meeting he was attending with Hess was not with Hitler's, or perhaps, other high-ranking Nazis', knowledge. If one suspected this, then someone in Albrecht's position, being involved in such high-level and covert discussions, would then do what he did: he would seek to cover or guarantee his safety by having definite written orders "from the highest authority," namely, Hitler himself. *Why ask for*

---

[129] Harris and Wilbourn, *op. cit.*, p. 48.

such directives ***unless*** *there was a suspicion that not everything was entirely "right" about the situation*?

But then, in the very next sentence, there is this statement:

> From the whole conversation I had the strong impression that it was not conducted *without the prior knowledge of the Führer*, and that I probably would not hear any more about the matter unless a new understanding had been reached between him and his Deputy.[130]

At first glance, these two statements appear somewhat contradictory, but there is a possible resolution to the situation, namely, that Hitler was *generally aware of* the meeting between his Deputy and Albrecht Haushofer, and of the purposes of that meeting, *but not the precise details*. In other words, Albrecht may have suspected that Hitler knew of the meeting, but he may also have suspected that Hess may not have informed him of the full details of the discussion and that Hess was holding something back, for whatever reason. Hence, he requests specific instructions.

Albrecht was taking no chances.

In any case, a return letter from Albrecht to Mrs. Roberts for forwarding to the Duke of Hamilton was apparently carefully composed and then sent. Why was Mrs. Roberts the involved? Because the Roberts and Haushofers met during visits to England by the Haushofers as part of Kaiser Wilhelm's entourage (1903), and during the Roberts' visits to the Haushofers in Germany (1925 and 1926).[131] This letter from Albrecht Haushofer, via Mrs. Roberts, to the Duke of Hamilton was duly intercepted by British intelligence, which was now alerted to the fact that covert discussions were being attempted.[132]

Albrecht Haushofer had good reasons for his skepticism about a peace settlement with Hitler in power, for the Hess initiative was *not* the only peace feelers being sent out. In fact, many levels of the Nazi regime were involved, all of them leading back to Hitler himself, who repeatedly indicated that Germany and Britain were not natural enemies, an idea that he had, of course, absorbed from Karl Haushofer via his influence on his own Deputy, Hess, who had inserted Haushofer's ideas almost whole cloth into *Mein Kampf.* One such attempt was made via the Swiss diplomat Carl Burckhardt, the head of the International Red Cross. Buckhardt attempted to convey such peace feelers to Britain on July 9, 1940, via a telegram which was the subject of a meeting at Downing Street at which Churchill, Chamberlain, Clement Attlee, Lord Halifax and others were present.[133] The British legation in Switzerland stated that it had responded to Burckhardt's feelers by stating that "our distrust of Hitler, apart from anything else, was a fatal obstacle to any peace".[134] This pattern was repeated *again* when Burckhardt met with a Finnish art dealer, Lars Borenius, a businessman with connections both to the Royal Family and with MI-6.[135] Borenius apparently conveyed a message to Burckhardt that Germany would have to vacate Holland and Belgium, restore "some kind of Poland," and, most of all, that no peace was possible with Hitler.

---

[130] Harris and Wilbourn, *op. cit.*, p. 48

[131] *Ibid.*, p. 56.

[132] *Ibid.*, p. 61.

Thus, the by-now familiar pattern is repeated again: no peace is possible with Hitler. Notably *absent,* however, is any reference to peace with *Germany.* In the ways of diplomacy, precision is required both in what is said, and what is *not* said, and by this point, the message was increasingly clear: "We'll talk, but not with Hitler". On the German side, the response to this was the exact opposite.

On May 4, 1941, Hitler and Hess had their last face to face meeting in Berlin, which lasted some time, before Hitler was scheduled to speak to the Reichstag. At some juncture, General Haushofer, who was also in Berlin at the same time, telephoned Hitler. It is likely that both Hess and Haushofer were in Berlin in connection with Hess' impending flight, for Hitler allegedly made substantial changes in the text of his speech. Harris and Wilbourn observe that the speech was a long, direct, and personal attack and harangue on Churchill. Because of this, they suggest that it was a speech that was designed to send messages to the British peace faction to remove the Churchill government.[136]

---

[133] Harris and Wilbourn, *op. cit.*, p. 71.

[134] *Ibid.*, p. 72, see also Harris' and Wilbourn's remarks on p. 73.

[135] *Ibid.*, pp. 82-83, 84.

For the German side, it was "get rid of Churchill," and for the British it was "get rid of Hitler".

The conclusion: *no peace was possible with* ***either*** *government*, and thus, if there was to *be* a negotiated peace, *both* governments would have to go. Consequently, yet another possibility arises in the Hess Mess, namely, that *his flight was not simply to "seal a peace deal" but that, in order to seal that deal, it was also a component in a wider scheme to overthrow both governments in internationally and bilaterally coordinated coups d'etat*. This, as we shall see subsequently, is not as crazy as it sounds.

(*1*) *The 1938 Army Plot and the 1939 Göring-Dahlerus Peace Effort*

Before we can look at that possibility in more detail, it is necessary to put the Hess peace mission into an even wider context, for *if* there was an element of a potential coup d'etat involved in the mix, then this could not occur without strong support; Hess could not undertake it on his own. In this respect it is worth recalling the "Generals' Plot" that was brewing in the German Army during the 1938 crisis over the Sudetenland. Hitler, as is now known, desperately wanted to launch a war against Czechoslovakia, a war that would inevitably not only have involved the powerful Czech military, but potentially France, Britain, and even Poland and the Soviet Union. Russia had in fact extended a guarantee to Czechoslovakia similar in nature to the guarantee that France and Britain would extend to Poland a year later. Faced with the prospects of a war which Hitler was determined to launch, the General Staff had determined to overthrow Hitler and place the military in control of the government, arresting other major Nazi leaders. The plot failed, of course, because of Neville Chamberlain's diplomacy, and the subsequent "Munich Agreement" of 1938 between Germany, France, and Britain, which surrendered the Sudetenland to Germany, effectively stripping Czechoslovakia of its frontier defenses and leaving it easy prey to its eventual complete occupation. With war averted, and Hitler's popularity at an all-time high, the military did not dare to move against Hitler, and the Generals' Plot collapsed.

---

[136] *Ibid.*, p. 89.

What is not well-known, however, was that Hermann Göring himself, the very next year, in August of 1939, as war was immanent with Poland and the West, sponsored a secret three-day conference on the small German island of Sylt in the North Sea with British businessmen. This conference came after initial feelers between Göring and Lord Halifax conducted by Göring's emissary, the Swedish businessman Birger Dahlerus.[137] At this secret island conference, the British made clear that the guarantee to Poland was firm, but they also proposed another Munich-style conference between the leaders of France, Germany, Italy, and Britain to resolve the Polish corridor-Danzig problems and avert war. Poland, like Czechoslovakia, was not, apparently, to be invited to its own dismemberment. One effect of these Göring-initiated contacts, however, was that the British businessmen—along with Lord Halifax himself—were persuaded of Göring's trustworthiness and straight talk. "From the British side," writes Peter Padfield, "it confirmed Göring as the acceptable face of the Nazi leadership. These impressions would persist".[138]

This is potentially highly significant, for it would place Göring himself in the "peace faction" inside of Germany, and with the means and contacts to pursue it. In other words, from 1939 to 1941, *the two highest ranking Nazis after Hitler himself were both involved in peace initiatives with the British, Göring, as Hitler's designated successor in the offices of state, and Hess, as Hitler's designated successor in the offices of the Nazi Party.* If indeed Hess' mission *was* a part of a wider international effort to coordinate coups d'etat against both Hitler's and Churchill's governments, then who better to guarantee the success of such a scheme—at least on the German side—than the two most powerful men in the Nazi state and Party?

With respect to the "coup" possibility it is worth noting that Padfield maintains that in July, 1940, after the Fall of France,

---

[137] Göring, it will be recalled, went to Sweden after World War One where he was, in effect, a barnstormer pilot, and then returned there after the failure of the Beer Hall Putsch, and married his first wife, a Swede from high Swedish society.

[138] Padfield. *op. cit.*, pp. 52-53.

Reichsmarschall Göring[139] extended an extensive peace feeler to the British embassy in Stockholm via his nephew by marriage, Carl-Gustav von Rosen. While simultaneously other peace feelers were being sent via Dublin, Lisbon, Washington and Berne,[140] the one from Stockholm from Göring himself was apparently not committed to paper because of the *Reichsmarschall's* reluctance to do so.[141] According to Padfield, the offer was standard fare: Germany was to be allowed a "free hand in Europe" in return for a cessation of hostilities, and a "helping hand" for Britain to defend itself against Japan.

However, this raises the question of why Göring should be reluctant to commit anything to paper. One explanation was, of course, that he was acting *ex officio* as a back-channel diplomatic effort, by-passing the Foreign Ministry. Hence, to protect Germany from possible embarrassment should anything be leaked, nothing was committed to paper. But another explanation would be that perhaps Göring had communicated *more* than just the "standard fare," namely, an acknowledgement of some sort that the British would not negotiate with Hitler.

4. The Aircraft: Messerschmitt Bf 110

a. The Fuel Tanks and Drop Tanks

Few analyses of the Hess Mess have dealt with the details of the actual flight itself, with most accounts stressing the basic outline of events: the Deputy Führer's take off from Augsburg Saturday evening, May 10, his flight northward over the Rhineland and thence out over the Frisian coast and into the North Sea, his subsequent turn westward, his "nose dive" to low altitude to confuse British radar, his full-throttle dash across the Scottish landscape, and finally, with fuel running low and darkness approaching and his failure to find his alleged landing place, his desperate parachuting into the nighttime Scottish landscape, where he was caught by a local farmer doing last-minute chores on his land. This is for all intents and purposes the "standard narrative," and with it the other component of the standard narrative, that Hess acted more or less alone, with a minimum of help extending no further than his own personal adjutants.

---

[139] Prior to the Fall of France Göring's *Luftwaffe* rank had been Field Marshal.

[140] Padfield, *op. cit.*, p. 86.

[141] *Ibid.*, p. 85.

It is this gap that the study of John Harris and Richard Wilbourn's book is meant to fill, for as they demonstrate, a technical analysis of the flight reveals that Hess could no more have attempted such a flight without significant amounts of high-level help and collusion both on the German and on the British sides, than the 9/11 hijackers could have successfully accomplished their airplane operations six decades later without significant "inside help". It most definitely could not have been, nor was it, a "solo effort," for the very simple reason that it was "extremely well planned, as it needed to be, and required considerable input from various German agencies if it was to succeed. This input alone raises obvious questions as to the level of German involvement".[142] Their argument focuses on the actual performance characteristics of Hess' Messerschmitt 110 twin-engine fighter, Hess' captured maps, and the details of the German air defense and air-guidance beacon system in 1941.

With respect to the aircraft, the Me 110 itself, the formula was quite simple: fuel consumption, plus average cruising speed, plus time, plus available fuel equals "what was possible".[143] In this respect, identification of the exact *type* of Me 110 became crucial, for the engines, speed, and fuel consumption differed among various types depending on the engines fitted. In the case of Hess' aircraft, through careful consideration of serial numbers of production runs and the serial number on Hess' crashed aircraft, Harris and Wilbourn were able to identify the production run as belonging to the 110E-2/N series.[144]

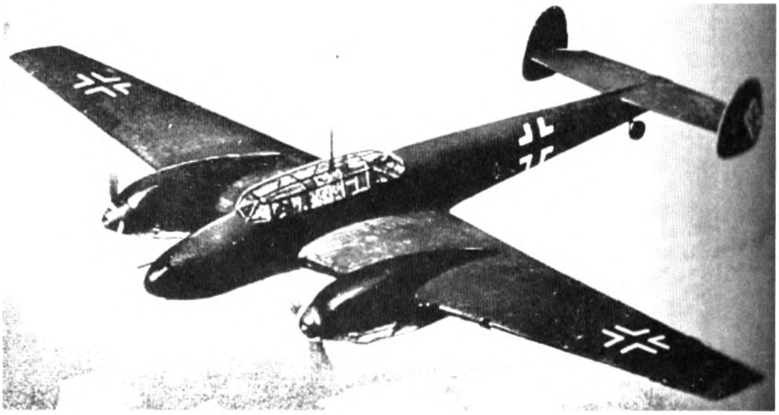
It is well-known that Hess had contacted Willi Messerschmitt himself to request specific modifications to his aircraft, among them the fitting of drop tanks beneath the wings for extra fuel, a common World War Two practice to extend the operational range of aircraft, as well as modifications to the radio equipment, which was placed in the rear cockpit of what normally was a two-seater aircraft. With the largest possible drop tanks of 900 litres each, the 110's operational cruising range could support up to eight hours of flight at cruising speed, and since Hess himself described his flight as being of five hours and twenty-four minutes' duration to his British captors in 1942, the flight, with this modification, was possible.

---

[142] Harris and Wilbourn, *op. cit.*, p. 93.

[143] *Ibid.*, p. 102.

[144] *Ibid.*, pp. 95-97.



A Messerschmitt Bf (*Me*) *110 Twin Engine Fighter*

b. The Oil Tanks

Fuel and drop tanks were not the only technical factors to be evaluated, however. The Messerschmitt 110, as a high-performance high-speed fighter—indeed, at that time one of the fastest in the world—consumed massive amounts of oil to lubricate and cool its engines. While the aircraft could be fitted with auxiliary external oil tanks, the remains of Hess' aircraft in Britain had no such fittings. Relying only on the internal oil tank, Harris and Wilbourn, based on the Messerschmitt firm's own performance documents, conclude that Hess would only have had enough oil for a flight of approximately four and two-thirds hours' duration before the engines would have seized, sending Hess crashing into the North Sea.[145] This discovery is, as Harris and Wilbourn point out, "one of the most significant in respect of the Hess flight for the past seventy years. Its implication is stark—Hess could *not have flown for as long as he claimed*; he may well have had enough fuel, but he did not have enough oil".[146] Accordingly, they conclude that Hess *had to have landed in Germany at some point during his flight to replenish the oil tank for the remainder of the flight.* That of course means that there had to be other people involved in his flight than just his personal adjutants at Augsberg.

---

[145] Harris and Wilbourn, *op. cit.*, pp. 114-115.

By careful consideration of the flight plan maps, which we shall review more completely in the next section, Harris and Wilbourn come to a conclusion that this author finds enormously suggestive and pregnant with implications, and here it is best to cite their own stunning conclusion; they state that given the extraordinary secrecy surrounding the flight, and based on the maps, Gottingen emerged as a high probable contender for the place of Hess' stop to replenish his oil tanks. Why Gottingen? Because Gottingen "was then the research site for the Horten brothers, who were pursuing their revolutionary 'flying wing' designs. *We are aware that Hess was known to them and so this would seem to he a sensible choice*".[147] The implications of this discovery are indeed profound, for it suggests that Hess made use of the Third Reich's existing *secret black projects research infrastructure* in order to accomplish this mission, in this case, the *Luftwaffe*'*s* black projects infrastructure, with which as Deputy Führer he was doubtless aware. *It is this possibility that may also inform why, and how, Göring was aware of the mission and perhaps involved with it, since these projects would also clearly be known to him.*

c. The Maps, Flight Plans, and Their Implications

Harris and Wilbourn next turn to a detailed and thorough examination of the so-called Lennoxlove Map, which is part of an exhibit at Lennoxlove House in Scotland that commemorates the wartime career of the Duke of Hamilton. This map is actually two conjoined maps that appear to be based upon British Ordnance Survey maps, but of German manufacture. Harris and Wilbourn also note that this map contains various handwritten markings and notes, with various points on the Scottish landscape clearly marked. Notably, Dungavel House, the residence of the Hamiltons and supposed goal of the Hess Flight in many investigations of the Hess Mess is *not* marked, while various RAF airfield maintenance units at Prestwick and Carlisle *are* marked.[148] While the lack of any markings for Dungavel House form part of Harris' and Wilbourn's argument that the Hamilton home and its small airfield were not Hess' goal, they do raise the important question of why the map was given to the Hamilton family after the war, if indeed the Hess flight had nothing whatsoever to do with them.[149]

---

[146] *Ibid.*, p. 119, emphasis added.

[147] Harris and Wilbourn, *op cit.*, p. 195, emphasis added.

The Lennoxlove map, as noted, was covered with careful handwritten notes and markings and was quite large, and they observe that the markings appear to have been carefully made so as not to reveal either his target, or any German military secrets, too readily.[150] Curiously, there were numbered markings all over the map, some in the North Sea, which meant that not all the markings were of geographical features. Because of this feature, they concluded that the map was actually Hess' meticulously crafted "radio navigational chart, interspersed with a host of visual recognition markers".[151] Thus the authors believe that the British Ordnance survey maps were chosen and marked in an attempt to disguise the fact that Hess charted his flight plan using the German radio beacon guidance systems.[152] One of these, the Kalundborg transmitter, was in Denmark and was the principle east-west guidance beacon for central England and southern Scotland.

This point becomes a crucial feature of their analysis, and to see how and why, we must now briefly review another component of the standard narrative: Hess, we are told, made landfall over Scotland at the wrong place, south of where he intended to be. In the failing sunlight and approaching darkness, he flew his aircraft over Scotland full throttle, at tree-top level, frantically looking for landmarks and his landing target. After flying across the entire peninsula and reaching the Irish Sea, he turned around again and flew inland for a few more miles, apparently looking for his target. Being unable to find it, he took the aircraft up to 6000 feet, and bailed out.[153]

---

[148] Harris and Wilbourn, *op. cit.*, p. 121.

[149] *Ibid.*, p. 122.

[150] *Ibid.*, p. 124.

[151] Harris and Wilbourn, *op. cit.*, p. 127.

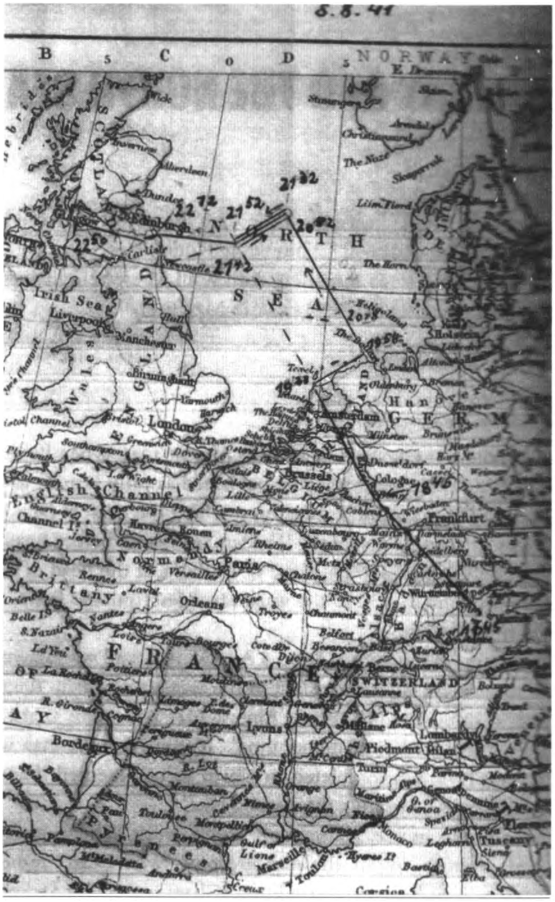
[152] *Ibid.*, p. 139.

So, why did Hess arrive so late over the Scottish coast, in fading sunlight, when the rest of the mission had been so meticulously planned? Their answer is contained in the Lennoxlove map, for on it there is marked a point "C" approximately twelve minutes from the Scottish coast, with the handwritten notes indicating that at this point, the drop tanks were to be jettisoned, and the aircraft put into a full throttle power dive for twelve minutes. The purpose of this maneuver seems obvious, for Hess' aircraft would have been spotted by British radar, and most likely British air defenses might have assumed it was the pathfinding plane for a nighttime bombing raid on Glasgow or other Scottish targets. By diving into a power dive, he would slip under any scrambled British fighters sent to dispatch him, as well as slip under the radar itself.[154] Point "C" however, was apparently a beam intersection point, which Hess failed to detect on his initial approach. Hess later sketched his flight plan for his captors on August 8, 1941, detailing the mystifying "rectangle" of his flight plan, where, according to Hess, he "zig-zagged" to the east, then flew back to the north, and then once again to the west.

---

[153] *Ibid.*, pp. 172, 174: Harris and Wilbourn point out that Britain had gone on "double summer time" in 1941, i.e., added two hours to Greenwich Mean Time, to avoid civilian traffic accidents during the blackouts due to the Blitz. Germany, which typically is one hour ahead of Greenwich time, had itself adopted "summer time" and added one hour to the time. Thus, in 1941, Germany and Britain were on the same time. This places Hess' landfall over Scotland at about 10 p.m., and his arrival near Dungavel House at about 10:40 p.m.

[154] Harris and Wilbourn, *op. cit.*, p. 200.


8.5.41
NORWAY
NORTH SEA
ENGLAND
FRANCE
SWITZERLAND
GERMANY
2142
2252
2212
2152
2132
2042
2012
1958
1933
1845

Hess' 1941 Sketch and Notes of his flight path for his British captors while at Mytchett palace; *note the absurd rectangular "jog" or "zig-zag to the east*".

But why would Hess have created such an absurd flight plan, one *increasing* the risk of his flight by consuming precious fuel and oil? Harris and Wilbourn hypothesize—I believe correctly—that Hess' *real* zigzag occurred much further north and later into the flight, when he was unable to locate the crucial point "C". He then did what all pilots would do: he attempted to retrace his steps and locate the crucial point again. The "Rectangle" zig-zag was thus most likely a story designed not to disclose any secrets about the German directional beam system.[155]

d. The Response of the British Air Defenses, and the Difficulty of Dungavel

British Fighter Command's response has always been suspect in the estimations of most Hess Mess researchers, for it is known that British radar *did* track Hess' flight,[156] but the response has always seemed lack-luster. Sergeant Maurice Pocock was scrambled in a Spitfire, and three Hawker Hurricanes of the nearby Polish squadron were also in the air. Four aircraft were now searching for Hess. The problem was, Pocock climbed to 15,000 feet, and Hess was already far below. Additionally, one RAF radio and radar operator, Cecil Bryant, maintained that he was given orders to relay to aircraft that the incoming German airplane was *not* to be attacked.[157] But as Harris and Wilbourn point out, whether or not one chooses to believe Bryant's story is, in effect, immaterial, because the grim reality of the statistical efficiency of British night fighters in May 1941 was only a little less than 3 percent, giving Hess a chance of survival of over 97 percent,[158] and looking for a lone Messerschmitt traveling full throttle over Scotland in darkening twilight would be like trying to find a needle in a haystack.

There is another suspicious factor, however.

Harris and Wilbourn observe that in February 1941, the eastern coastal wings of the Royal Air Force received a new group commander, Air Vice Marshal John Andrews. Andrews' appointment, they note, was a little unusual in that he lacked combat command experience, but he *was* proficient in intelligence matters, had spent time in Germany between the wars as part of aircraft compliance monitoring for the Treaty of Versailles, and hence spoke German. His appointment at that time might therefore have to do with the possibility that someone was expected.[159]

---

[155] Harris and Wilbourn, *op. cit.*, pp. 200-202.

[156] *Ibid.*, p. 157.

[157] *Ibid.*, p. 158.

[158] *Ibid.*

[159] *Ibid.*, pp. 159, 160.

The most damning bit of evidence that the RAF was "pulling its punches" on the late evening of May 10, 1941, is in the fact that Fighter Command was almost insistent that the German aircraft was targeting the RAF base at Dundonald on the *west* coast of Scotland, yet, only *one* aircraft was scrambled to deal with this possibility. This, they argue, is clear indication that at least *some* in the Royal Air Force command structure in Scotland were well aware of where Hess intended to land.[160] Most decidedly, it could *not* have been Dungavel house that Hess was targeting—as both the standard narrative, and most other revisionist histories, would have it—for Hess intended to *land* his aircraft, not bail out, *and the airstrip at Dungavel was, quite simply, not long enough to accommodate an aircraft of the Me 110's size.*[161]

Thus, if the target *was* an operational R.A.F. base, then this implies not only collusion, involvement and conspiracy at *some* level on the part of the R.A.F. in that region with the Hess flight, it also indicates the profile of who might have been dealing with Hess. In short, Hess needed (1) someone with R.A.F. command authority; and (2) he needed a peer, i.e., someone with access to the Monarch, and the Duke of Hamilton was both.[162]

It is important at this juncture that the reader understands that Harris and Wilbourn are *not* contesting the larger picture that other researchers have argued, namely, that the *personal* target of Hess' flight was the Duke of Hamilton and the "peace faction" that Hess thought he represented, but rather, that he intended—as other researchers also believe—to *land* his aircraft, rather than parachute into Scotland. A landing at a prearranged and agreed upon site would allow the mission to go forward, since Hess would be sure that he was dealing with whom he was intended to deal. *By parachuting, however, Hess was placing the entire mission at risk, for he might be apprehended by parties not privy to the whole scheme, which, of course, is exactly what happened.*

---

[160] Harris and Wilbourn, op. cit., pp. 216, 230.

[161] Ibid., pp. 180-182. This puts Harris and Wilbourn in sharp opposition to the scenario of Picknett, Prince, and Prior, who maintain that the airstrip at Dungavel *was* the target.

[162] Ibid., pp. 223, 227, 229-230, 241.

There is one final aspect of Harris' and Wilbourn's version of the Hess Mess that must also be mentioned, for it bears directly upon our review of the research in the next two sections: they do not subscribe to the hypothesis of Picknett, Prince, and Prior, that the Hess flight is connected to the death of the King's younger brother, the Duke of Kent, in an air crash in August, 1942.

But as we shall now discover, Picknett's, Prince's, and Prior's hypothesis of a connection between the Hess flight and the Duke of Kent's death in an air crash a little over a year later, may be one of the most brilliant and tightly argued cases in the whole Hess Mess.

D. The Difficulties with the Dukes

1. The British Peace Faction

I stated previously that the research of Picknett, Prince, and Prior in their book *Double Standards*, *the Rudolf Hess Cover-up*, represented the most thorough one-volume book covering all aspects of the Hess Mess; if there is one book to own on the matter, this is it, for while they do not discuss *all* the details nor all the hypotheses, theirs is still the most sweeping synthesis of the case. They cast a very wide net.

One of the central aspects of the standard narrative which they review and analyze in some detail is the view that Hess' flight was the flight of a "lone madman," the narrative that both British *and* German propaganda curiously agreed upon *after* the flight had taken place. According to the standard narrative, then, Hess, in his delusions, assumed there was a peace faction in Britain large enough to afford his mission at least some chance of success, even if only a minimal one. According to the standard narrative however, there was no such faction. If anything, "lure" hypothesis advocates maintain that this was a carefully crafted psychological operation to "lure" an unstable high ranking Nazi leader to Great Britain. Picknett, Prince, and Prior ask the pertinent question, "But what if there *was* such a powerful British cabal?"[164] One of the high merits of their work is that they devote considerable time and detail in an attempt to answer this question. Accordingly, while it is impossible,

---

[163] Harris and Wilbourn, *op. cit.*, p. 235.

[164] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 76, emphasis in the original.

obviously to capture all of their data and all of the subtle nuances of their argument, a review of their case is necessary if one is to see why the idea of a joint British German coup plot might not be so far-fetched.

They point out that there were, indeed, several powerful "pro-peace" elements in Britain, and that indeed, "substantial elements" of what we would now call Britain's "deep state" were behind a push to an early negotiated peace in Germany.[165] Among these groups, there was the "Right Club," easily the most rabidly pro-Nazi, and yet whose membership included "prominent peers of the realm" including the Duke of Wellington, and William Joyce, the notorious "British version" of Tokyo Rose, infamous for his English language broadcasts from Berlin that earned him the nickname "Lord Haw Haw," and a hangman's noose for treason after the war.

Yet another of these groups was "the Link" a group fostering closer ties between Nazi Germany and Great Britain, whose rolls swelled to a membership of 4300 people, many of these peers or military officers themselves, including the Duke of Westminster and Admiral Sir Barry Domville, "director of naval intelligence, and a firm believer in the existence of a Jewish-Masonic conspiracy".[166] The Duke of Westminster is intriguing for another reason, for he provides a linkage between the anti-war peerage and the "City," Britain's financial district which was in Picknett, Prince, and Prior's words, "almost to a man" opposed to a war with Germany and which "desired Britain to extricate itself as soon as possible".[167] For these high-ranking elements of the British establishment, the financial district and the anti-war peers, the fundamental problem was that they feared Britain would further in-debt itself to the United States, leading to an eventual breakup of the Empire. At the same time, these individuals also—rightly—saw the Soviet Union as the other major threat to Britain's Empire and hence, caught between the "bi-polar" world that would actually emerge after the war, these men argued for a "third position" of an *entente* or understanding with Germany, and perhaps, an eventual alliance, for Germany alone in Europe possessed enough weight to challenge the Soviet Union and offered the only counter-balancing weight to growing American power.

---

[165] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op cit*., p. 83. At this juncture, Picknett, Prince, and Prior are referencing an academic study of these groups conducted by Dr Scott Newton of the University of Cardiff's history faculty, and his 1996 study *Profits of Peace*.

[166] *Ibid*., pp. 82-82. The authors also note that Domville, not surprisingly, was detained as a threat to British security.

[167] *Ibid*., pp. 83-84.

One of the more important pro-peace factions or groups was the Anglo-German Fellowship, a group which, like the Link, attempted to foster contacts and cooperation between the two nations. In the case of this group, however, its British membership reached very high indeed, and included the Duke of Hamilton and two of his brothers on its membership rolls; when peace feelers were advanced through neutral Sweden from Germany to Britain, it was very often the Duke of Hamilton's brothers, Nigel and David, members of the Anglo-German Fellowship, that were the targets.[168]

Picknett, Prince, and Prior also note something else of great significance with respect to the Hamiltons, for in 1938, the Duke (at that time, the Marques of Clydesdale) had received a personal invitation from Adolf Hitler himself to attend the 1938 Nuremberg Party rally. For these researchers, the significance of this invitation is that Hitler himself recognized the importance of the Hamiltons and their contacts within the British establishment and peerage, but also because the invitation was *not* delivered via the German Foreign Ministry, but rather through the "unofficial channels" of the Anglo-German Fellowship. This leads them to wonder if, in fact, the Anglo-German Fellowship had any ties with the Nazi Party's own party intelligence service, the *Auslands Organization*, which Hess controlled.[169] Given that both General Haushofer and his son, plus many others, were connected with the Fellowship, I strongly suspect that this is, in fact, the case.

Why would Hitler himself single out the future Duke of Hamilton for a personal invitation to the 1938 Nuremberg rally? One very significant answer is that the future Duke had been invited "to join a German study group set up by the then Prince of Wales (later King Edward VIII and then the Duke of Windsor), proof at least that his interest in such matters *was well known in*

---

[168] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, op. cit., pp. 145, 148. They also note that Kim Philby was ordered to join this group to report to Moscow. (p. 259)

[169] Ibid., p. 146.

royal circles".[170] Many Hess Mess researchers also believe that the real reasons for parliamentary pressure on Edward VIII to abdicate was precisely his pro-German stance, rather than his stated intentions to marry the American divorcee, Wallis Simpson. In the case of Edward VIII, later Duke of Windsor, after his abdication and marriage, he and his wife *did* dine with the Hesses at their home in Munich. This important point must be appreciated for what it is, for it is yet another indicator that not only did the Deputy Führer's contacts reach directly into the Royal Family itself, but also because it shows that at least some elements of the Royal Family were indeed favorable to the "peace faction".

There were other prominent members of the various peace groups, and three of them require mention. The first of these is Sir Samuel Hoare, the British ambassador to the sensitive embassy post in Madrid, a post requiring considerable finesse and diplomatic skill since Britain had been a supporter of the Republicans during the Spanish Civil War. Hoare had to overcome this difficulty and keep the fascist, Nationalist Spain of Franco out of the war. A Spanish entry into the war on the side of the Axis would open the country to German and Italian Axis forces, and therefore endanger Gibraltar. The loss of that key British base would unhinge its entire position in the Mediterranean and endanger its lifeline trade to its far eastern Empire, for it would no longer be able to travel through the Mediterranean, but would have to go around Africa, and then *still* be subject to heavy interdiction from Iberia. Additionally, the loss of Gibraltar would allow elements of the powerful Italian fleet to have direct access to the Atlantic. It would have been a loss that would be difficult for Britain to recover from, and perhaps a fatal loss.

In such a circumstance Hoare was the perfect man for the post, for he had no sympathies for Bolshevism, having seen its effects first hand during a posting in Russia during World War One and hence could play to Franco's anti-Bolshevik passions and fears. Hoare had also cultivated personal contacts with Mussolini after World War One, "encouraging him in his anti-Communist activities".[171]

---

[170] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 146, emphasis added.

[171] *Ibid*, p. 87.

Another prominent figure in the "peace faction" was Hoare's friend, Lord Beaverbrook, a Canadian industrialist who had emigrated to Britain.[172] Then there is the head of British foreign intelligence, MI-6, Sir Stewart Menzies, who was also a part of this "pro-peace faction," and who viewed British friendship with Germany as an essential component for that nation to be strong enough to challenge the Soviet Union openly and directly. Menzies' view was entirely cynical, for he knew that both countries would fight themselves to exhaustion (as actually happened) and that whoever emerged as the victor in such a conflict would be in a weakened state, and easier for the British Empire to deal with.[173] Additionally, Menzies had a vast network of contacts and friends in the City.[174] And finally, the former World War One Prime Minister Lloyd George was also a member of this pro-peace faction.

We have previously made reference to the Duke of Westminster, and it is crucial to note his key role in the coordination of these various "pro-peace" factions and groups, for he actually organized the anti-war peers into a powerful lobbying group within the House of Lords. One of these was the Duke of Buccleuch a key figure in the British establishment of that day. His sister was married to King George VI's younger brother, the Duke of Gloucester, More importantly, Picknett, Prince and Prior point out that he was also appointed to be the Keeper of His Majesty's Household in 1937, an appointment that automatically enrolled him as a Privy Councillor. Effectively, the Duke of Buccleuch was George VI's personal liaison to and from the House of Lords. Buccleuch was also part of the pro-German peace faction within the peerage, and obviously, a very powerful one. Buccleuch's views were well-known and it is thus significant that the King would appoint him to that liaising position; the sensitivity of that appointment was acknowledged when Churchill, having come to power by appointment from the same King, removed Buccleuch from his liaison position.[175]

---

[172] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 89.

[173] *Ibid.*, p. 91.

[174] *Ibid.*

[175] *Ibid.*, p. 85.

Consequently, the pro-peace group was hardly non-existent, as some versions of the standard narrative would have it, nor was it a small affair from any perspective, unable to effect any change in British policy or bring down the Churchill government. On the contrary, these various groups and their many networks and connections, leading all the way to the peerage and Royal Family itself, constituted

> ...an enormously powerful upswelling (sic) of opinion that was by no means as unpopular in its day as some historians would have us believe. We have the King, the Queen, the mother of the King, a former Prime Minister and two potential Premiers, a large part of the aristocracy and many of the country's leading industrialists and financiers all sharing the same desire to make peace with Germany. However, although all these different parties wanted to negotiate with the enemy, it was not to be peace at any price. Although they firmly believed that it was either in Britain's or their own best interests not to become embroiled in a war, they were not advocating surrender. Then terms would have to be acceptable, but what could they have been? Obviously they would have varied from group to group. Halifax ... for example, wanted Hitler to be removed from power, whereas other insisted that the safety of German Jews was part of the deal. Others still would probably simply have been happy for Britain to get out of the war in one piece, without giving anything up to Germany. Yet although they had their different variants on the same theme, together they formed one great organic whole, a large and powerful body of opinion highly receptive to offers of negotiations.
>
> Their power can be illustrated by Churchill's riposte, when on 8 June 1940—his premiership just a month old—there were calls for an inquiry into the 'appeasement party' with a view to prosecuting members. He replied that this would be 'foolish' as 'There are too many in it'.[176]

Note once again that one of the primary "sticking points" for the British was Hitler himself; it is as if we are looking at a replay of the European Allies after Napoleon Bonaparte's return from Elbe and the "ninety days" of his short-lived "return reign" prior to Waterloo, when the governments of Austria, Prussia, France, and Russia declared war, not on France, but on Bonaparte himself.

---

[176] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, pp. 93-94.

2. Anglo-American Union, Altered Speeches, and Strange Messages

As was seen previously, Albrecht Haushofer made allusion to his fears that an act of union, or a "fusion" as he called it, of the USA and the UK would soon be enacted, and that this meant that any peace mission from Germany had little chance of success. Nonetheless, because of the strategic implications of such a fusion, the mission had to be attempted.[177] Such a fusion was, as I noted previously, always the stated goal of Cecil Rhodes, and his Rhodes scholarships were established as one of the mechanisms to effect this goal.

But Picknett, Prince, and Prior uncover a sliver of evidence to suggest that Albrecht Haushofer's intelligence may have been well-informed:

> Astonishingly, there is evidence that such a union was being seriously contemplated at that time—and that its timing was directly related to Hess' flight. According to White House spokesmen, President Roosevelt was to make a speech to the Pan-American Conference on 14 May 1941 of a 'historic' nature. The White House leaks left the media buzzing with speculation, mostly about the possibility that the President was going to announce the union of Britain and the USA. The respected Washington-based journalist Leonard Engel, wrote:
>
> "I have strong reason to believe Roosevelt will come out in favour of a union of the United States and Britain. He will probably specify the end of the war as the occasion for such a merger of the two great English-speaking nations, but I believe he will suggest an earlier date.
>
> "I am making a guess, but that guess is supported by a considerable amount of evidence".
>
> Because virtually no one seems to know about this proposal, it is tempting to deny that such a thing was even a possibility. But after the fall of France and before its armistice with Germany, the

---

[177] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 136

> British government seriously proposed an Act of Union between Britain and France. Not surprisingly, this peculiarly unrealistic notion was rejected out of hand by the French cabinet.
>
> In the event, two days before Roosevelt was scheduled to give his momentous speech—and two days after Hess' arrival—he cancelled it.[178]

Let us pause briefly to speculate a bit further than Picknett, Prince, and Prior have done, based on our earlier reference to the work of Georgetown professor, Dr. Carroll Quigley, and his celebrated underground "conspiracy theory" classic, *The Anglo-American Establishment*.

In that work, Quigley details the "pro Atlanticist-unionists" within the United States and the United Kingdom who did, indeed, seek an actual union of the two countries. In the hands of Cecil Rhodes and his secret society, this was to be based on a *reincorporation of the United States into the British Commonwealth*, i.e., by integrating it back into the British empire system. There was thus, within British aristocracy at that time, not only a widespread "pro-Germany" peace movement, there was also another movement ideologically at loggerheads with this goal, represented by Rhodes and his own deep contacts within the aristocracy that wished for Britain, not to cast its lot with Germany, but with the USA. Churchill was a half-American himself and his ancestral homes included residences near Oxford, where the heart and hub of Rhodes' society and plans, were located. In other words, one may speculate that the tug-of-war within Britain was between a "treasonous" pro-Germany peace group represented by the Dukes of Hamilton, Westminster, Gloucester, Windsor and(as we shall see, Kent) and thus implicating significant swaths of the Royal Family, and a "treasonous" pro-America-unionist or Atlanticist group represented by Churchill and his associations to Rhodes.

In any case, the "peace group," as Picknett, Prince and Prior point out, was actively engaged in sending messages *back* to Hess and the Haushofers, and whoever else that was part of their group.[179] On the 6th of October, 1939, a month after the beginning of the Second World War, and after Poland was crushed beneath the German invasion, the future Duke of Hamilton wrote a letter to the London *Times*. Initially, the letter had been intended as a *group* effort, since it was to have been signed by various members of Parliament who supported its contents. It was also shown to Prime Minister Chamberlain, who in effect approved of its contents, but who did not wish it to be a group letter for fear it would undermine the efforts of the armed forces. In this original "group letter" version, the future Duke of Hamilton's letter to the *Times* began with the following paragraph:

---

[178] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, pp. 136-137.

[179] Göring? Army generals? One might include even the possibility of Grand Admiral Räder, since he was opposed to beginning the war any earlier than 1944-

> We are Members of Parliament, representing all parties and at the same time serving officers in the Royal Navy, Army and Royal Air Force. We believe that we speak for the young men and women of the Empire in saying that Britain has no choice but to accept the challenge of Hitler's aggression.[180]

When the letter was actually published in the *Times,* per Chamberlain's "request," this opening paragraph was removed.

The letter itself, however, coming as it did from Scotland's highest ranking peer, was nevertheless stunning in its implications, and Picknett, Prince, and Prior reprint it in full. As it is a large component not only of their argument, but of mine, I do so again here:

> Sir,
> Many, like yourself, have had the opportunity of hearing a great deal of what the men and women of my generation are thinking. There is no doubt in any quarter, irrespective of any party, that this country had no choice but to *accept the challenge of Hitler's aggression* against one country in Europe after another. If Hitler is right when he claims that the whole of the German nation is with him in his cruelties and treacheries, both within Germany and without, then this war must be fought to the bitter end. It may

---

45, when his planned expansion of the German Navy would have been complete. There is no evidence of Rader ever having been a component of the early anti-Hitler coup groups, but certainly the generals were always wary of the Hitler government, and Göring, as has been seen, hovers uneasily over the Hess Mess in some as yet unknown and undiscovered role.

[180] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit*., p. 148f.

> well last for many years, but the people of the British Empire will not falter in their determination to see it through.
>
> But I believe that *the moment the menace of aggression and bad faith has been removed, war against Germany becomes wrong and meaningless. This generation is conscious that injustices were done to the German people in the era after the last war. There must be no repetition of that.* To seek anything but a just and comprehensive peace to lay at rest the fears and discords in Europe would be a betrayal of our fallen.
>
> I look forward to the day when a trusted Germany will again come into her own and believe that there is such a Germany, which would be loath to inflict wrongs on other nations such as she would not like to suffer herself. That day may be far off, but when it comes, then hostilities could and should cease, and all efforts be concentrated on righting the wrongs in Europe by free negotiations between the disputing parties, all parties binding themselves to submit their disputes to an impartial equity tribunal in case they cannot reach agreement.
>
> We do not grudge Germany *Lebensraum*, provided that *Lebensraum* is not made the grave of other nations. *We should be ready to search for and find a colonial settlement, just to all peoples concerned, as soon as there exist effective guarantees that no race will be exposed to being treated as Hitler treated the Jews on 9 November last year* (*Kristallnacht*). *We shall, I trust, live to see the day when such a healing peace is negotiated between honourable men* and the bitter memories of twenty-five years of unhappy tension between Germany and the Western democracies are wiped away in the responsible co-operation for building a better Europe.
>
> Yours truly,
> Clydesdale[181]

It is important to note the following things:

1) The letter refers to *Hitler's* aggression, not to *Germany's*;
2) The letter recognizes the principle of *Lebensraum*, and further mentions the post-World War One injustices, an implicit way of evoking the "injustices" of the Versailles treaty: when these statements are read together, what it

---

[181] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, op. cit., pp. 143-144, citing the Marques of Clydesdale's Oct 6 1939 letter to the *Times* of London, emphases added.

appears to be saying is that German territorial claims in central Europe would be acceptable to the British *if* it did *not* result in secondary status for non-Germans in those territories of the Reich;[182]

3) Then a curious statement appears regarding "colonial settlements," a strange phrase, especially when following so closely on the reference to *Lebensraum.* The British peace faction could hardly have been ignorant of General Haushofer's understanding of the term, since it had been in open contact with him and his son Albrecht before the outbreak of the war. As we have seen, Haushofer's concept was elaborated in part as a rejection of the imperial policies of the German Empire prior to the First World War, namely, the acquisition of overseas colonies and a large—and to Britain therefore a very threatening—navy. For Haushofer, the *Lebensraum* concept meant eastward expansion of the borders of the Reich to incorporate the resource-rich regions of Eastern Europe and European Russia, not the acquisition of overseas colonies. Thus, while Hitler from time to time had made reacquisition of Germany's lost African and Pacific colonies and bases a matter of public discussion, it was not high on his list of priorities. *Why, then, does a reference to colonies appear in Clydesdale's letter?* As will be seen, this is not an "overly-nuanced" point. It may be one of the most important points in the whole Hess Mess, raising often overlooked questions;
4) Finally, note the reference to the *Reichskristallnacht*, the infamous night when Jewish shops and synagogues were vandalized and burned throughout Germany, and the immediately following sentence referring to "a healing peace negotiated between honourable men". Again, a clear though not explicitly stated signal is being sent: we *are* willing to negotiate with anyone we consider honorable, but that cannot be Hitler. *This means that Hess was willing to negotiate on the "Jewish Question", and implies that* ***the***

---

[182] Indeed, in the German Empire prior to World War One, Poles were one large minority in the eastern territories of Silesia, Pommerania, and Prussia, and were regarded as full citizens of the Reich.

> ***failure of his mission sealed their fate.*** This will become a very crucial point, when we finally consider the "Holocaust hypothesis".

Interestingly enough, Hess, while a co-signatory to the Nuremberg Race laws and, as most Nazis were, a thorough-going anti-Semite and believer in international Jewish-Zionist plots, nevertheless protected the Haushofers since Frau Haushofer was one-half Jewish. More importantly, however, it appears that Hess had been appalled by the *Kristallnacht*, and sought to mitigate its harsher measures as leader of the Party; Padfield records that Hess' friends had observed him in despair because of the pogrom, urging Hitler to "stop the outrages, without success".[183] The Marques of Clydesdale's appeal may thus have been a *direct* appeal to parties in Germany that it knew to be quite uncomfortable with the direction Hitler's Reich was taking, namely, the Haushofers, and through them, the connections to the Germany Army, and to Hess himself, whose discomfort with the *Kristallnacht* was probably known to British intelligence, and whose despair over it might have driven him to contemplate an overthrow of Hitler.

3. *Was the Peace Plan also a Coup d'Etat Plan*?

The future Duke of Hamilton's "peace message" letter in the *Times* was *not,* however, the only channel through which the British "peace faction" attempted to send the message, for the BBC German service *broadcast* the letter the same day.[184] But the message was much more subtle, and here, Picknett's, Prince's and Prior's assessment of this maneuver must be looked at carefully, for it carries huge implications:

> There is another important subtext, however. They were looking forward to a time when they could make peace with 'honourable men'—in which category the peace lobby did not include Hitler. *The implication is that they were only willing to discuss peace if he was replaced as leader*. The letter also makes clear that a

---

[183] Padfield, *op. cit.*, p. 48.

[184] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 149.

> settlement must take account of the plight of Germany's Jews, but the most important message being sent *is that Clydesdale is to he the contact within the peace group. Should anyone in Germany be willing to discuss these terms they should talk to him. It is therefore clearly aimed at those in Germany who opposed Hitler, into which camp both Haushofers fell.*[185]

This may be one of the most important conclusions any researchers have come to in the Hess Mess, for it implies vis-à-vis an interpretation of Hess' motives and Hess himself, that he either undertook his mission with the intention of dissembling to the British, concluding a peace, and keeping Hitler in power; or he undertook his mission with the intention of participating in the overthrow of Hitler's government, in order to procure a peace with Britain.

While this may seem to be utterly out of character for Hess, whose loyalty to Hitler almost approached adoration and even infatuation, these considerations *do* rationalize another strange occurrence in the Hess Mess: *Reichsmarschall* Göring's apparent foreknowledge of the scheme, his strange telephone call to General Galland, made far too late to shoot down Hess but just in time to cover his own possible role should it ever be discovered. In this respect, it is worth recalling once again that Göring, who had *already* conducted peace negotiations with the British, and who was also viewed as "acceptable," was Hitler's designated successor in offices of *state,* while Hess was his designated representative and successor in the *party.* In other words, there never was a potential "colonels' coup" with more powerful colonels, for between them, Hess and Göring had the power and connections to pull it off.[186]

---

[185] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 149, emphasis added.

[186] Picknett, Prince, and Prior also note that General Walther von Reichenau, one of the few "ardent Nazis" within the General Staff, and a very capable tactician, was a close collaborator with Hess in the latter's many political intelligence networks. This gave Hess *entré* and influence in the General Staff that *few* if any other Nazis with the exception of Göring, had. (See Picknett, Prince, and Prior, op. cit., p. 150). It may be that the so-called rivalry between Hess and Göring, while real, has been greatly exaggerated, and perhaps deliberately so, for it would disguise the much deeper ties and agendas that possibly united these two very powerful men.

In any case, recall now that a reply to British inquiries had been sent back to the Duke of Hamilton, via his and the Haushofers' mutual contact, Mrs. Roberts. Here, as Picknett, Prince, and Prior argue, a strange circumstance occurs. The letter reached the Duke of Hamilton in early 1941, and arrangements were process of being made for a meeting between Hamilton and Hess on *neutral territory*, *namely Lisbon*, as the initial British and German plans suggested. To this end, the Duke had shown the letter to Lord Halifax, who was of the peace party that wanted to see Hitler removed. Halifax, in turn, did *not* share the letter with Churchill(whom, it will be recalled, had been chosen prime minister over Halifax just a few months previously!) However, the Haushofer response letter was also copied and forwarded not only to the Duke of Hamilton, but also, because Hamilton was also an RAF officer, the Haushofer reply was also forwarded to counter-intelligence, that is, to MI-5, which unlike MI-6, was *not* infested with pro-peace party advocates, but, on the contrary, with pro-war "Atlanticist" and "Churchill" elements. When confronted by MI-5 with this letter, the Duke and his powerful backers had to shelve the Lisbon meeting until actual authorization came from Churchill's war cabinet.[187]

in the meantime on the German side, preparations for a meeting continued, and notably, these preparations *utterly invalidate* the notion that Hess decided—on some "crazy lark"—to seize the initiative and like the Mountain going to Mohammed, fly to the Duke of Hamilton and drop in on him unannounced. Quite the contrary: the Nazi Party *Ausland Organization* was busily translating various documents into English, which Hess would eventually take with him on the flight, *and this indicates planning*.[188] Additionally, in early February of 1941, Albrecht Haushofer made a trip to Sweden, and while the purpose of this visit is not known, it is likely it had something to do with the planned negotiations, since his visit coincided with a period when the Duke of Hamilton was on leave from the Royal Air Force.[189]

---

[187] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 160. See also pp. 139-141, 142.

[188] *Ibid.*, p. 181.

[189] *Ibid.*, pp. 161-162.

Most importantly and "*at Hess*' *express bidding*"[190] Albrecht Haushofer had opened negotiating channels to the British ambassador in Madrid, Sir Samuel Hoare. As a result of these preliminary negotiations, *Haushofer and Hoare agreed on the principle that a negotiated peace could not be reached without the removal from power both of Hitler and of Churchill.*[191]

Note what has happened:

1) Albrecht Haushofer was dispatched to Madrid to confer with Sir Samuel Hoare, a man many considered as eligible for the British premiership, on the express orders of Rudolf Hess, Deputy Führer;
2) As a result, Haushofer and Hoare agree on the principle that a negotiated peace—*per Clydesdale/Hamilton*'*s October 1939 letter to the London Times—cannot take place except between* "*honourable men*," *and that this translated into the removal from power of Churchill and Hitler*!

In other words, like it or not, Hoare and the men and factions behind him, and Hess and the men and factions behind *him,* are now both involved in *de facto and de jure treason*; the peace plot is now, *by agreed principle*, also an international bilateral *coup d*'*etat* plot.[192]

There is yet another fact uncovered by Picknett, Prince, and Prior, that indicates just how high-level this meeting between Albrecht Haushofer and Sir Samuel Hoare really was, for in 1959, Albrecht Haushofer's Spanish representative, Heinrich Stahmer, claimed that Albrecht, Hess himself, Sir Samuel Hoare and Lord Halifax himself had planned a secret meeting somewhere in Portugal or Spain in early 1941.[193] If this meeting really did take place, then the alleged meeting between Haushofer and Hess on the one hand, and Hoare and Halifax on the other, was most likely a follow-up meeting to iron out more details. The problem is, there is no evidence for it as Stahmer never stated whether or not the four men actually met.

---

[190] *Ibid*., p. 162.

[191] Picknett, prince, and Prior, *op. cit*., p. 162.

[192] See in this connection the remarks of Harris and Wilbourn, *op. cit.* p. 252: "As far as the Germans are concerned, this course of action would get over the stumbling block of the Churchill government not negotiating with Hitler; firstly the Churchill government would be replaced, and secondly the replacement would be negotiating with Rudolf Hess—not Hitler".

[193] *Ibid*., p. 165.

However, citing again the research of Cardiff University history professor Scott Newton, Picknett, Prince, and Prior point out that the Vichy French press did indeed report that Hess *was* in Spain in early 1941. Not only that, but the German press even went so far as to issue a denial of the French story![194] But there's more:

> The British Foreign Office contacted King Carol of Romania—then exiled in Seville—for details. He confirmed that Hess had visited Madrid. Puzzled by Hoare's silence on the presence of such a high-ranking Nazi, the Foreign Office demanded to know if this was true: Sir Samuel's reply is a masterpiece of diplomatic—but curiously transparent—evasion. He said that if Hess were in Spain 'his arrival has been kept remarkably secret and his presence in town is not even rumoured yet'. Most telling of all is that, although the files of correspondence between the Madrid Embassy and the Foreign Office were routinely released to the Public Record Office after fifty years, all the documents relating to the weekend of 20-2 April 1941 have been held back until...

(You guessed it!)

Of course, as we've already discovered, by that 2017—this year and the year this book is being written—there will have been plenty of time to remove the occasional embarrassing file, to doctor file equally embarrassing indices of files, and, if necessary, to plant new files and false information.

What might have been discussed at a Madrid meeting of Hoare, Halifax, Hess, and Albrecht Haushofer? Oddly enough, three of these men—Hess, Haushofer, and Halifax—had something in common: they all were deeply disturbed by the policies of the Nazi regime toward the Jews. Haushofer was, of course, himself part Jewish, and because of this, he and his family were under the personal protection of Hess himself. Hess, as we have seen, was in despair over the nation-wide pogrom of the *Reichkristallnacht* in 1938, and Lord Halifax had attempted to initiate discussions in the War Cabinet about providing a Jewish homeland in Western Australia or British Guiana.[196]

---

[194] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 165.

[195] *Ibid.*, p. 165.

4. The Coup Hypothesis, and Hess' University Essay

There is an additional bit of debris that researchers of the Hess Mess usually mention in connection with the "coup" hypothesis, and this is an essay that Hess composed shortly after enrolling in the University of Munch after World War One. As previously observed, the idea that Hess, the Deputy Führer himself, would be involved in a peace negotiation that was also a coup d'etat plot seems, on first glance, to be absurd. But we have also seen that the Hoare-Haushofer meeting, which occurred under Hess' express orders, had made the removal of Churchill and Hitler a *sine qua non* of any further negotiations, and, as Picknett, Prince, and Prior conclude, "it is inconceivable that Hess, as the most high-ranking go-between, was not aware of this".[197]

However, in this university essay on leadership, Hess—already under the spell of Hitler's oratory—outlined what characteristics the future German leader should have. He would have to be severe and ruthless, but notably, once he had succeeded in restoring Germany's power and standing in the world, he would have to stand aside, and allow a more moderate government to assume power. As Picknett, Prince, and Prior point out, in his initial contacts with the British after his capture in Scotland, he indicated that he was *not* speaking for Hitler, but for *Germany*,[198] an obvious and calculated reference, perhaps, to the London *Times* letter of Clydesdale/Hamilton, and perhaps as a reinforcement of the principles of the meeting in Madrid. "As Hitler's secretary in 1925 Hess had also written that he would not always be beholden to his

---

[196] Padfield, *op. cit.*, pp. 47-48.

[197] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 500.

[198] *Ibid.*

Führer. Just as he deemed it necessary for Germany that Hitler should become leader, he might just as easily have advocated his standing down if he believed it to be in Germany's best interests".[199] In this respect they go on to note that the German press, in the weeks and even days immediately prior to Hess' now infamous flight, the Deputy Führer was being given even more attention than usual by the Nazi-controlled German media, stressing his importance to the regime and to Germany.[200] The implication is clear: Hess not only was capable of being involved in such a scheme, but there may have been a quiet, concerted propaganda campaign to prepare the German people for his assumption of power with a more moderate coalition government, perhaps one, as we have seen, including Göring.

With all the careful preparations for a meeting on neutral ground, however, why did Hess finally decide on the far riskier expedient of an actual flight to Great Britain itself, and to Scotland in particular, a flight that as Harris and Wilbourn superbly demonstrated, was fraught with risk, demanding a high degree of planning and technical competence?

Picknett's, Prince's, and Prior's answer to this question is simple, and in terms of their reconstruction of the Hess Mess, quite brilliant: Hess *had* to go to Britain, because his British counterpart, for whatever reason, was unable to meet Hess on "neutral territory".[201]

With this, we now need to deal with yet more debris in the Hess Mess, namely, the bizarre set of anomalies surrounding his *arrival in,* and his planned, but never successfully concluded, *departure from* Britain, and the equally bizarre behavior that he exhibited during his four years in British captivity prior to being brought back to Germany to stand trial at Nuremberg for war crimes, after having missed most of the war!

---

[199] *Ibid.*

[200] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 500.

[201] *Ibid.*, p. 166.

5

"HESS" IN BRITAIN, 1941-1945: MORE MIND MANIPULATION, DUCAL DILEMMAS, AND DOUBLES DIFFICULTIES

"*Though a good deal is too strange to be believed,*
nothing is too strange to have happened".
Thomas Hardy, *Personal Notebooks*

RUDOLF HESS PARACHUTED INTO HISTORY over Scotland in the closing twilight minutes of Saturday, May 10, 1941, his mission from that point forward becoming the subject of analysis, speculation, and of course, a baffling secrecy that continues to this day. It should therefore come as no surprise, even though there are a number of publicly-known and available details about his four year stay in Britain, that those details and facts raise more questions than they answer. Quite simply put, the mystery deepens during this period because according to some, it would appear that at some point Hess became "Hess," and a double entered the picture.

It was, of course, W. Hugh Thomas that first proposed the double theory after discovering the discrepancies between Prisoner Number Seven's *lack* of wounds where he thought the real Hess had suffered them. In Thomas' view, the double was substituted during Hess' flight itself; a theory which we have previously discounted. If that is the case, however, exactly *when* was the substitution made, and, more importantly, why?

It is this question that lies at the center of Picknett, Prince, and Prior's meticulous combing and sifting of the known data and facts of Hess' stay in Great Britain. Whether or not one *agrees* with their analyses and conclusions, one ***must*** *contend* with them for the simple reason that the interpretation of the total Hess Mess depends upon this point, and changes dramatically depending on whether or not "Spandau Hess" was the Rudolf Hess that took off from Germany. Mere "academic dismissal" of their case and arguments is simply dodging an uncomfortable issue. One must confront it head on.

Their qualification of this period is an apt one, for people "slip in and out of the action"[1] at the oddest points. Or to use a different simile, it is like a Mozart opera, with all the main characters not only slipping in and out of the action, but wearing several masks to boot, constantly in disguise and never appearing as themselves. Indeed, the title of this chapter—'"Hess in Britain"—could easily be the title of an opera or even a part of some Wagnerian operatic cycle: "The Ring of the H's" (the Haushofers, Hess, Hitler, Hoare, and Halifax), with Siegfried being played by a stocky Scotch-and-whiskey-loving, cigar-smoking man who wore bowler hats.

A. Capture and Immediate Aftermath

1. The "Manifestation" of Morris and McBride

No composer or librettist, however, could possibly have put together the story which Picknett, Prince, and Prior uncovered nor made of such a messy plot a plausible structure and argument. They begin their lengthy review of Hess' time in Britain by recounting the standard narrative of the night of Hess' apprehension by the British, and the first days of his captivity. In that narrative, Hess' parachute landed him in a farmer's field, which farmer promptly took Hess captive and held him in his cottage. From there, Hess—who called himself Captain (*Hauptman*) Alfred Horn—was taken into official custody by the Home Guard, and he was moved about from various points until he finally ended up in the Maryhill Barracks in Glasgow. Throughout this entire episode, Hess/Horn insisted he had flown to Scotland to meet the Duke of Hamilton, and constantly requested that he be taken to him. During this episode, the standard narrative also maintains that no one recognized "*Hauptmann* Horn's" peculiar resemblance to Rudolf Hess. Supposedly, his real identity remained completely unknown.[2]

Hess had landed on a farm outside of Eaglesham owned by Basil Baird, just a few hundred yards from the cottage of David McLean and his wife, a farmer and ploughman who took care of the land. The reader will recall that by this point of his flight, Hess was flying his Messerschmitt 110 twin-engine aircraft at full throttle, and very low over the countryside, the engines producing a deafening roar. McLean, hearing the low aircraft and then the subsequent crash, ran outside to see the burning aircraft some distance away, and Hess descending slowly on his parachute. McLean, finding only a pitchfork for a weapon, took the man prisoner.

---

[1] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, op. cit., p. 193.

[2] Ibid., p. 194.

From here on out everything is a muddle.

Once he was taken prisoner, according to McLean's account, Hess' first words were "Am I on the estate of the Duke of Hamilton?"[3] An early *American* account indicated that Hess later stated to the police and Home Guard that he was on a mission to see the Duke, his original intention having been to land at Dungavel, the Duke's residence which had a small landing strip.[4]

How does one interpret this?

The *real* Hess would have known that the airstrip at Dungavel was simply inadequate to land a Messerschmitt 110. An imposter Hess may not have known this, but as we have seen previously, it was indeed the real Hess who parachuted into Scotland; the difficulties of substituting a double and a plane *ala* the Thomas scenario being too difficult. So why would the real Hess dissemble on this point? The answer has to be that he was protecting someone, or something, or both.

In any case, whatever Hess' first words to the police and Home Guard were, he was taken to the McLean's cottage where Mrs. McLean offered to make him some tea, which Hess declined in good English, albeit with his heavy German accent. At this point, the two soldiers in the McLean cottage who had heard the crash, responded that beer was what they drank in Britain, to which Hess replied that they drank it in Munich, where he came from.[5]

The reader may well ask, "Wait a minute, where did these guys come from and when did *they* get there?" And that is the problem: this is an opera, after all, and McLean never gave any explanation of when the soldiers had arrived. They are just suddenly "there," onstage, participating in the action.[6] Even more interestingly, these two soldiers, Emyr Morris and Daniel McBride, were from a nearby top secret anti-aircraft signals unit.[7]

---

[3] Picknett, Prince and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 194.

[4] *Ibid.*, p. 195.

[5] *Ibid.*, p. 195f.

a. The McBride Anomalies

Soldiers that "suddenly manifest themselves" into the action are not the only anomaly in the early minutes of Hess' stay in Britain, for two years after the end of World War Two, McBride gave his version of the story to the *Hongkong Telegraph*, in which he stated that "high-ranking Government officials were aware of his coming," giving as his reason for this assertion the fact that no air-raid warnings were sounded, nor were the anti-aircraft gunnery control rooms plotting the course of Hess' plane altered. Then, in a telling statement, McBride states that it was *he*, not Daniel McLean, who first apprehended Hess.[8]

At this juncture, Picknett, Prince and Prior ask the obvious question: if McBride's story about being the first to find and apprehend Hess is true, then why was this information suppressed from the Scottish news reports and only revealed two years after the war, and in Hong Kong at that?[8] McBride then gives *his* version of the "beer remarks" exchanged between them,[9] and then the article continues by stating that his companion from the secret anti-aircraft signals station began to notice that the man looked "familiar". Asking his name, the German pilot gave it as "Alfred Horn," and then, according to the article, he removed from one of his pockets a picture of his wife and son, and reiterated in his German-accented English that he had not come to bomb Scotland, but to see the Duke of Hamilton, emphasizing that his aircraft was not outfitted to carry bombs.[10]

Then follows what can only be said to be a remarkable exchange and event; according to McBride's *Hongkong Telegraph* article:

---

[6] *Ibid.*, p. 196.

[7] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 197.

[8] *Ibid.*, pp. 199-200. While space considerations prevent us from posting McBride's *Hongkong Times* article, Picknett, Prince, and Prior reproduce the article, with a much more in-depth analysis, on pp. 199-201.

[9] *Ibid.*, p. 201.

[10] *Ibid.*, p. 203.

> (Horn/Hess) asked me to take him to the Duke's home, which, he said, was not far away. *To this I could only reply that I had no power to do so but my superiors would probably do so later on.*
>
> *Shortly afterwards there was a commotion outside. The door was flung open and a Home Guard officer rushed in, followed by a number of his men.*
>
> The pilot said to the officer: 'I wish to see the Duke of Hamilton. Will you take me to him?'
>
> 'You can save all that for the people concerned', said the officer. 'At present you are coming with me'.
>
> I resented this attitude and protested to the officer that the prisoner was in my charge awaiting an escort from my HQ.
>
> 'Are you questioning my authority?' demanded the officer truculently.
>
> 'I cannot leave my prisoner, sir', I said. 'If you take him I must go with you'.[11]

Why the "commotion" and the apparent hostility between the various groups of Hess' captors?

Again, time and space do not allow us the luxury of a complete review of all the subtle details and nuances of Picknett, Prince, and Prior's analysis and argument; suffice it to say that it appears *two factions* were looking for Hess in western Scotland that night: the pro-peace party, which was, of course, expecting him, and another faction representing Prime Minister Churchill and his government which had got wind of the plot (possibly through MI-5's copy of the Haushofer response to Violet Roberts).[12] If so, then at this moment, neither faction has complete or secure control over Hess.

There is one more strange fact about McBride that suggests that even his *Hongkong Telegraph* article was not entirely forthcoming, for after his death, in his papers, a letter from his former commander, W.B. Howieson, dated 8 May 1974, was discovered. It advised McBride in no uncertain terms to "drop this Hess business" lest continued exposure of something to which they had both subscribed to the British Official Secrets Act "stir up a hornets' nest".[13] Once again, this draws us nearer to that One Nagging Question that hovers over the entire Hess Mess from beginning to end:

---

[11] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 203, emphasis added.

[12] See their discussions on pp. 222, 261.

> How could this story 'stir up a hornets' nest' in 1974? Howieson's letter implies that if the seemingly minor point of who captured Hess is admitted, other—much more damaging—information will somehow naturally flow from it, which is presumably why McBride's official report is still withheld. It seems that Howieson knew that something passed between McBride and Hess that night that is not even mentioned in the signaller's papers, which he seems to have been about to make public. Presumably Howieson's words of caution persuaded McBride not to do so. But something significant must have passed between the two, *because Rudolf Hess gave McBride his Iron Cross that night*.[14]

Whatever it was that threatened to "stir up a hornets' nest" that night certainly had the phone lines in Scotland buzzing late that Saturday evening, for shortly after the "commotion" caused by the arrival of the Home Guard in the McLean cottage, and after some transfers from one small local hut to another, its commander attempted to place a call to the local army headquarters to ask for a prisoner's escort. "All the lines were busy," according to Picknett, Prince, and Prior, and this is "another sign that there was a major flap on in the area that night".[15]

One is tempted to offer a reason for the busy phone lines, for if Hess *was* expected, as McBride's *Hongkong Telegraph* article stated, then when he did *not* show up on schedule, this must have provoked a flurry of phone call-conveyed "BOLO" (Be On the Look Out for") alerts, as the peace plan plotters realized the gravity of their situation if Hess should be apprehended by units not privy to their plans.

b. The Inventory of What Hess Brought with him: A Strange, and Old, Irish Manuscript?

---

[13] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 206.

[14] *Ibid.*, their emphasis.

[15] *Ibid.*, p. 208.

By this time, Hess/Horn was at Giffnock scout hall, where he was finally searched, with an inventory made of his belongings, which included a variety of homeopathic medicines, a syringe, his wife's Leica camera, the calling cards of Karl and Albrecht Haushofer and most likely a letter to the Duke of Hamilton and, presumably, several papers prepared by the *Ausland Organization*. One does not know exactly what this inventory consisted of, for the simple reason that it has never been disclosed,[16] though most accounts do mention the homeopathic medicine.

However, we have seen in our review of Harris and Wilbourn's research that Hess took with him at least one large map, meticulously covered with his own hand-written notes, the so-called Lennoxlove map. Additionally, we have also noted that the *Auslands Organization* also undertook extensive translations of documents into English, presumably for the meeting in neutral country that never materialized. One may assume, therefore, that whatever these documents were—drafts of a treaty based on previous discussions, perhaps?—that Hess brought them with him in his aircraft, and perhaps on his person, to Scotland.

There is also an interesting though unsubstantiated allegation that appeared recently on the Internet, and therefore, *after* Picknett, Prince, and Prior published their research in their book. According to this short article, the ancient Celtic text, the Lebor Feasa Runda, had come to the attention of the *Reichsfuhrer SS*, Heinrich Himmler. The text was part of a larger document, an old Irish text called the Black Book of Laoughcrew.

> The Nazi's [sic] interest in the Lebor Feasa Runa stemmed from the fact that the text mentions a mysterious island called Tir nan'Og that once existed in the Atlantic Ocean and was considered to be the equivalent of Thule, an island they considered to be the original homeland of the Aryan race.
>
> The Lebor Feasa Runda also mentions four great treasures possessed by the Celtic gods which were believed to weild [sic] amazing powers. Convinced that these mystical objects were the equivalents of such legendary artifacts as the Holy Grail, the Spear of Destiny, the Stone of Scone and the Sword Excalibur, Reichsfuhrer Heinrich Himmler sent the Ahnenerbe across the

---

[16] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 208.

> continent of Europe on a scavenger hunt to acquire these renowned treasures.[17]

The article also notes that the manuscript had been brought to Prague by Queen Elizabeth I's occult advisor and spy, Dr. John Dee during his visit to the court of German Holy Roman Emperor Rudolf II. By the 1930s, however, the article states that it had come into the hands of the Thule Society, whence Himmler's SS confiscated it, presumably after the Nazi assumption of power. From there, it made its way into the archives of the SS *Ahnenerbedienst*, the SS' secret "archeology and occult research bureau," whence the manuscript disappeared, supposedly on the day of May 10, 1941, the day of Hess' flight. The article also states that an "old book" had been seen by "a young man by the name of John Peterson" among the items inventoried with Hess, who said he intended to present it to the Duke of Hamilton as a gift.[18] An English translation of the text, which allegedly also deals with the ancient practices and belief system of the Druids, was made by Heinrich Thorensen, a German army officer and linguist on assignment to the *Ahnenerbe*.

While there is no substantiation within the article for these allegations, it is worth noting that it is diplomatic custom, especially during negotiation or during state visits to present one's host, or negotiating party, with a gift, and an ancient Celtic manuscript, especially one brought from England to Prague by John Dee, would be a highly appropriate gift to bring. More importantly, it is to be remembered that Himmler himself, later in the war, would also attempt to conduct his *own* peace overtures to the Western Powers, using many of the same intermediaries and channels. It is thus not necessary to assume that Hess, himself a general in the SS, stole the manuscript from under Himmler's nose. If the allegations in the article are at all true, it is much more probable that Himmler was a party to the peace-and-coup d'etat plot, since it is well known that Himmler entertained notions of replacing Hitler, and his own later peace initiatives were conducted with that in mind. It is thus also probable, if this speculation be true, that Himmler's *later* peace proposals grew out of his possible and very covert participation in the Hess Mess, where, as we have seen, the *sine qua non* of any negotiated peace in the West was the removal of Hitler from power.

---

[17] "The History of the Lebor Feasa Runda", http: leborfeasarunda. weebly.com/history/html. I would like to deeply thank my friend and colleague Walter Bosley for bringing this important bit of information to my attention.

[18] "The History of the Lebor Feasa Runda", http: leborfeasarunda. weebly.com/history/html.

c. Major Graham Donald Identifies Hess by means of Another Absurd Conversation about Beer

Returning to Picknett, Prince, and Prior's analysis, they next concentrate on Major Graham Donald's role. Donald was an officer in the Royal Observer Corps, and sat on the board of directors of the Glasgow-based company, Graham & Donald Ltd., a machine-tool company. Donald's version of meeting Hess on the night of May to, 1941, appeared in the Observer Corps' journal in October 1942, almost a year and a half later. Major Donald claimed to have been alerted to the crash of Hess' aircraft and set off to find the scene. He arrived at the farm and the McLean's cottage prior to Hess having been moved, and followed the entourage to Giffnock where he questioned Hess. There, Donald also records that there was a tension in the air because of the presence of a Polish officer.[11]'

According to Donald, Hess then repeated what he had told others, namely, that he was on a mission to Britain, that his destination had been Dungavel and the Duke of Hamilton. At this point, Hess allegedly produced his flight map and showed Major Donald a red circle around Dungavel, clearly marking the Hamilton residence. Donald then turned the conversation to Munich and its good beer, the second time—they note—that the conversation has turned to the absurd, for Donald then goes on to assert that Hess reacted very disapprovingly at the mention of beer. Donald concluded that he was a teetotaler, and since there were only two teetotalers in the upper echelons of the Reich—Hitler and Hess—and since the man in front of him obviously was not Hitler, he had to be Hess![20]

---

[19] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 209.

[20] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 210.

This is, of course, a long way to go—around Harvey's Barn once again—to explain an obvious thing by unobvious and completely absurd deductive processes, for Hess was a familiar face in newsreels of the period; one had only to look at him and see that it was Hess, or at least, a close facsimile thereof. One did not need absurd explanations about "teetotalers in the Nazi regime".

2. Anomalies:
Glaring Absences, and a Polish Officer Talks to Hess

There are other odd anomalies that occur in the very first hours and days, in the "first act" of "'Hess' in Britain," anomalies that point consistently to the idea that Hess, or at least, *someone* high ranking in the Nazi hierarchy, was arriving. One of the most glaring examples is the Hess Mess version of the Sherlock Holmes "dog that didn't bark in the night". One of those glaringly non-barking dogs in the night was the fact that *the Messerschmitt 110 was a two-man aircraft, and that there was no search on the night of May 10-11 for a second crew member*.[21]

There is yet another glaring absence that night. We have already seen that Hess dressed in the *Luftwaffe* uniform of a captain, and hence, for all his initial captors knew, Hess *was* a *Luftwaffe* pilot. Yet, on that night and contrary to *all* standard procedure, the Royal Air Force was kept carefully excluded from the initial encounters with the "officer".[22]

The most peculiar "non-barking-dog" that night, however, is that there are two very divergent accounts of where the Duke of Hamilton himself was. The Duke, after all, was the very individual whom Hess and his backers had hoped to contact. However, according to the standard narrative that was eventually to evolve, Hamilton received a call about the mysterious visitor in the middle of the night in his capacity as an R.A.F. operational commander, and promptly went back to sleep. But not so, according to a story from the Glasgow *Herald* of May 16, 1941, a story that appeared *prior* to the finalizing of the standard narrative, for according to it, the Duke of Hamilton did meet Hess, along with members of the

---

[21] *Ibid.*, p. 214.

[22] *Ibid.*, p. 215.

Foreign Office and unspecified intelligence services while the latter was being transferred to a hospital to treat the sprain in his ankle that he had sustained after parachuting into Scotland. Nor was this story merely unsubstantiated rumor, for Hamilton's wife confirmed that after receiving the phone call, the Duke departed, and did not return home until the afternoon of Sunday.[23]

Another strange event that night was the mysterious appearance of a Polish officer, Roman Battaglia, at Glasgow Police Headquarters to interrogate Hess. Battaglia was an intelligence officer to General Sikorski's Polish government-in-exile, and proceeded to interrogate Hess for two hours, unsupervised, and in German, which, again, is highly unusual, since no one else present during this session spoke German![24] This suspicious incident, as will be seen, is a crucial component to Picknett's, Prince's, and Prior's scenario of what was happening that night, and why.

In any case, the reactions of the R.A.F. in breaking its standard protocols for the interrogation of German pilots, the strange two hour session with Battaglia, the Glasgow *Herald* article, all point to the conclusion the Hess—or *someone*—was expected that night. Indeed, the daughter of one observer corps officer, Nancy Moore, was told by her father that though he was breaching his security procedures, the pilot was none other than the Deputy Führer himself.[25]

We have seen that Harris and Wilbourn, through careful analysis of the technical features of the Messerschmitt 110, concluded that the small airstrip at the Duke of Hamilton's residence at Dungavel could *not* have been Hess' landing target that night. For many, this ends the speculative scenario that Picknett, Prince, and Prior have carefully pieced together and argued. They opined, instead, that one of the local R.A.F. airfields alone had landing strips adequate to handle the landing (and takeoff!) lengths required for a Me 110.

However, I do not believe that Harris and Wilbourn's reconstruction does any damage to Picknett's, Prince's, and Prior's larger scenario at all. To see why, one must review their conclusions and reconstructions very carefully and closely, for they realize that such an elaborate plot would have factored in the need for contingencies from the very beginning:

---

[23] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, p. 215.

[24] *Ibid.*, p. 213.

[25] *Ibid.*, p. 219.

> From start to finish the story of Hess' arrival and capture looks like one of the most serious indictments of British military—and intelligence—incompetence ever recorded. It is littered with bungling, indifference and blatant dereliction of duty, often by top men, and in a crisis—a matter of national security. If that is a fair summary, then perhaps it is understandable why the authorities should try to bury the whole thing and forget it ever happened. But if it isn't a case of wide-ranging ineptitude, *we can only understand all the anomalies in terms of quite another scenario*.[26]

This, of course, is true, for the standard narrative asks us to believe that the British military and intelligence services, among the most competent in the world, suddenly took leave of their senses and reason on the night of May 10, 1941, and only in Scotland!

In their scenario, the Duke of Hamilton represented that peace faction that was in a position to assist on the British end, both with the particulars of Hess' flight and landing, but also on the particulars of the scheme itself. This would explain, in part, the obfuscation of when the Duke of Hamilton actually met with Hess. But because the flight had gone wrong and Hess had to bail out, not being able to find his targeted landing area—Dungavel in Picknett's, Prince's and Prior's scenario, and nearby airbases of the R.A.F. that could accommodate his Messerschmitt 110 In Harris' and Wilbourn's—the plan had gone wrong at a crucial juncture.[27] That juncture, as we saw, was the point at which Hess failed to make contact with the beacon signal at point "C," and had to retrace his steps, using both critical *fuel* and critical *sunlight* he needed to identify landmarks once over Scotland. As we also saw, Hess made landfall a few miles *south* of his intended landfall target, according to the reconstructions of Harris and Wilbourn. *Note, however, that the change of landing target* does not really collapse the larger scenario of Picknett, Prince, and Prior.

---

[26] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 220, emphasis added.

[27] *Ibid.*, p. 220.

What went wrong was that Hess, in making landfall at the wrong point and behind schedule, set into motion a cascading series of errors that meant that he was apprehended *by the Home Guard*, in other words, by "outsiders" who were *not* part of the plot having become aware of the arrival of the Deputy Führer. In this respect, they point out that Hess himself attempted to correct the situation by repeatedly insisting that he wanted to see the Duke of Hamilton.[28] At this juncture the necessity of a contingency plan, in case something went wrong, becomes active; they argue that on the British side, there would be a contingency if in fact Hess was unable *to land at his designated site,* which, in Picknett's, Prince's and Prior's scenario, is Dungavel, the Duke's residence. However, *it is crucial to note that this would have been the case, on the British side,* ***regardless*** *of what the actual target landing site was.* Their overall scenario *does* ***not*** collapse simply because one detail may be off.

In fact, as they also convincingly argue, the idea of a contingency also rationalizes *Hess'* response to his initial situation in the United Kingdom, for he "would have been viewing each new arrival on the scene as a potential ally, but how was he to tell a friend from a foe? Presumably some form of password would have been pre-arranged, which would account for the surreal rerun of the conversation about German beer."..[29]

This scenario also rationalizes, in a way that other considerations of the Hess Mess do not, the manner in which the Duke of Hamilton responded, for the Deputy Führer was in the custody of those *not* part of the scheme. Hence their immediate problems were twofold: they had to gain custody of him, or somehow communicate to him. This consideration, in their opinion, explains the odd appearance of a *Polish* intelligence officer of the Polish government-in-exile, Roman Battaglia, conversing with Hess in German for two hours, while no one else present at the time understood German or was present with Battaglia and Hess when the conversation was held (or, at least, so we are told!).

Finally, there is the problem of the Duke of Hamilton himself: peer of the realm and an officer in the Royal Air Force. At any juncture after his involvement in the proceedings, he could have

---

[28] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p.. 220.

[29] *Ibid.*

"pulled rank enough to take charge of Hess,"[30] so why didn't he? The answer is evident from the implications and outlines of the plot itself: the *British* component of the conspiracy was not acting under orders or sanctions of the government; it was *Churchill's* government after all, and as has been seen, one of the previously agreed-upon principles of both parties was that Churchill and Hitler both had to go. But Hess had already fallen into the hands of those *not* involved in the scheme. Hence, Picknett, Prince, and Prior conclude that the British side of the plot was now "engaged in a damage-limitation exercise: too many people were now aware of the mystery airman who kept asking for the Duke of Hamilton. Sooner or later questions would be asked, and Churchill would get to hear of it".[31] At the very minimum, the British component of the plot had to *assume* this, whether or not it had actually happened, lest not doing so, it would misstep.

Another consideration has raised questions about their scenario, and it is worth briefly mentioning it, for again, this author does not believe it damages Picknett's, Prince's, and Prior's overall scenario.

In some versions of the Hess Mess, there is a "reception party" supposedly waiting at Dungavel for Hess' arrival. Some argue that a reception party at Dungavel makes no sense simply because (once again) Hess' Messerschmitt 110 could never have safely landed on its small airstrip, and the implication that might be drawn from this is that no such party existed. I contend, however, that the existence of such a party at Dungavel does *not* invalidate their scenario, but rather, strengthens it, for such a reception party makes sense simply from the protocols of the situation itself. But why wait at Dungavel? The answer is that it would be the logical place to gather, whether or not Hess' intended landing site was there, for from there they could proceed with the Duke—an RAF officer—to Hess' intended RAF landing site, or arrangements may have been made to bring Hess from his landing site to them. This reception committee was composed of Red Cross officials, which in effect made their environment neutral territory, plus representatives of General Sikorski's Polish government-in-exile. The significance of this point will be explained in due course, but it does rationalize why a Polish officer was able to converse with Hess in German unsupervised.[32]

---

[30] Ibid., p. 221.

[31] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, op. cit., p. 221.

3. Telegrams, Coville's Strange Statement, and the Marx Brothers

According to the "standard narrative," the Duke of Hamilton did *not* see Hess until *ordered* to do so on the morning of May 11, 1941, at 10 A.M. at the Maryhill Barracks, and was not supposed to have known his actual identity, the implication of which is that the Deputy Führer's arrival was already being discussed.[33] As we have seen, however, the Glasgow *Herald* gave indication that there might have been a prior meeting between the Duke and Hess.

In any case, the standard narrative has it that after the Sunday morning meeting, the Duke then contacted London to apprise Prime Minister Churchill of his arrival, and then immediately flew south to meet Churchill personally at Ditchley Hall—Churchill's secret wartime country residence—and apprise him of the development. This was supposedly done after dinner that night, May 11, 1941. The next day, Churchill ordered Ivone Kirkpatrick to Scotland in order to identity the prisoner. Kirkpatrick served in the Foreign Office, had been in the British Embassy before the war, and personally knew Hess.[34]

While all of this is going on, something very important was *not* happening in Germany. As has been seen, in a plot such as this, contingency plans, passwords, and so on, would have been worked out in case something went wrong (which it very much did). Equally, however, it would have been necessary to work out a contingency for the *German* side of this conspiracy, to indicate a safe arrival of Hess in Britain. It is worth noting that in his contact with Hamilton, Hess *did* make the unusual request that a telegram be sent to an aunt in Zurich (one Emma Rothacker), an obvious "signal that he had arrived safely".[35] This message, more importantly, was to have been delivered via the Red Cross, which again invokes the presence of Dr. Burkhart. The telegram, of course, did not arrive.

---

[32] Picknett, Prince and Prior, *op. cit*., p. 286.

[33] *Ibid*., p. 224.

[34] *Ibid*., p. 223.

[35] *Ibid*., p. 226.

It is worth pausing to consider this point in more detail, and I am not aware that anyone else investigating the Hess Mess has advanced the following extremely speculative scenario concerning the telegram's "non-arrival". The non-arrival itself was also, of course, a predetermined signal, indicating that something had gone wrong, and that the "plan" was "off". But assume, for a moment, that the telegram *had* been sent, and assume also that (1) Hitler had some knowledge, but not *full* knowledge, of the scheme, and (2) that the component of the scheme he did *not* know about was a putative plot to overthrow *him* and install a government more acceptable to the British. One may argue that for Hess to participate in such a plot and yet to conceal its true purpose, that Hitler had to have been made aware of the intended flight, and its ostensible purpose to conclude a peace with Great Britain, which Hitler certainly favored. *Including Hitler in the plot to partial knowledge was, in essence, essential to its success.*

However, the telegram—which Wolf-Rüdiger Hess maintained that his mother insisted was intended for her, which she would have then conveyed to Hitler)!)[36]—was actually, on the view that the scheme was a plot to overthrow *both* Churchill's *and* Hitler's governments, a *double* signal, which Hitler, *unknowingly, would then have revealed to his senior hierarchy, Göring among them, signaling that the moment had come for his overthrow.*

When the telegram *did not* arrive, Hitler flew into his tirade—an act, if one is of the view that Hitler knew of the flight beforehand—and Göring, as we have seen, put on another act and pretended to know nothing about the whole thing, even though he also "covered his tracks" by ordering General Galland to shoot Hess down, long after it was even possible to do so!

While this (possible) circus was taking place in Germany, things would have been no less messy on the British side, for the Duke of Hamilton, on *his* account of the events, made no attempt to contact London until the afternoon of May 11th, *after* he had seen Hess and after he had visited the crash site of his Me 110. When he did contact London, he phoned the Permanent Under-Secretary at the Foreign Office, Alexander Cadogan. Cadogan, however, was away, and a heated exchange occurred between the Duke and another official who refused to put a call through to Cadogan without knowing the reason. Fortunately, perhaps, for the blood pressure of both men, Churchill's private secretary, John Colville suddenly showed up, and the call was given to him![37]

---

[36] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 226.

If one suspects that Colville's arrival at this precise juncture is a little too much like a badly written libretto, just wait, for Colville and Hamilton both wrote accounts of this incident, which "make somewhat odd reading, not least because of the extraordinary discrepancies between them".[38] In the Duke's account, Coville is alleged to have stated that the Prime Minister ordered him to the Foreign Office because the Duke had "some interesting information" to convey.[39]

Coville's account, however, is pure Mozart.

According to *his* version published in 1985, his very first words to the Duke of Hamilton were "Has somebody arrived?," a statement that suggests that "he, at least, was expecting a certain 'somebody'".[40] But his explanation for *why* he expected a "certain 'somebody'" is pure farce, for he claimed to have been thinking "unaccountably" of a novel by Peter Fleming—and yes, that's the brother of Ian Fleming, the author of the James Bond novels—titled *Flying Visit*, published in 1940. In the novel, Hitler *himself* parachutes into Great Britain, whereupon he has some "adventures" which include "winning first prize in a village fête fancy-dress competition"![41] More importantly, in his version, the conversation between him and Hamilton took place in the morning and not, as Hamilton maintained in *his* account, in the afternoon. Why concoct such a silly tale? In Picknett's, Prince's, and Prior's opinion, it was because his first question "gave the game away".[42]

---

[37] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 226.

[38] *Ibid.*, p. 227.

[39] *Ibid.*

[40] *Ibid.*

[41] *Ibid.*

[42] *Ibid.*

In any case, phone calls *were* made, and the Duke of Hamilton *did* fly to have dinner with Churchill at Ditchley Hall. It was after dinner that Hamilton briefed Churchill, when

> Churchill uttered words that have become the stuff of legend: 'Well, Hess or no Hess, I'm going to see the Marx Brothers'. This insouciance is usually taken to show the true bulldog spirit at its best. Deputy Führers may fall out of planes, but old Winnie is so unimpressed that he calmly watches Groucho and the gang as planned. However, as with much else in this story, Churchill's words might not have meant quite what they seemed.[43]

Who were the "Marx brothers"? This was not a reference to a film, but rather, a code that Churchill used with the Duke of Hamilton to refer to the Royal Family, and in particular, the brother-princes of King George VI.[44]

B. From the Tower to Maindiff

Much of Picknett's, Prince's, and Prior's work is concerned with a very careful reconstruction and analysis of Hess' stay in Great Britain, based on the work of David Irving and others, and a careful analysis and well-argued speculation on what the various moves meant. Accordingly, it is simply too lengthy to be reviewed here. There are, however, certain features of these moves that must be mentioned. As has already been seen, Hess was eventually brought to the Tower of London under conditions of extreme secrecy, where he remained briefly, during which period he was drugged, and measured for a duplicate of his *Luftwaffe* uniform. From there until June 25, 1942, Hess was held at Mytchett Place under very tight security. Here, all accounts agree: Hess' mental and emotional behavior appeared to deteriorate dramatically, with Hess claiming he was suffering from amnesia, unable to recall the circumstances of how he had come to be captive, and even at times unable to recall prominent features of his life and family.

On June 25, 1942 Hess was moved to Maindiff Court in Wales. This move, however, occurred with *no military escort.* Hess was simply driven to Maindiff minus any of the normal security one would assume a prisoner of his stature merited. The reason for the move appears in part to have been because the British learned of a plot by the Polish government-in-exile to try to kidnap Hess.[45] Oddly, however, in spite of this apparent threat, news of Hess' transfer and location was carefully leaked to the *Daily Mail,* a national tabloid published a further article on his life in captivity in September 1943.[46]

---

[43] Picknett, prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 229.

[44] Ibid., p. 285.

Yet in early May, 1942, SS *Obergruppenführer* Reinhard Heydrich circulated a report to Foreign Minister von Ribbentrop stating that his agents had placed Hess in *Scotland* at the same time that according to the standard narrative he was supposed to be in Mytchett, soon to be transferred to Maindiff.[47] According to Peter Padfield, this report was generated by contacts between one of his agents and a Briton who had contact with an influential circles in Great Britain, which one may reasonably assume to be the "peace group" Hess came to see. According to the report.

> The Englishman stated that in December last year he had spent four days in London with Hess at his (Hess') express with with the approval of Churchill. Hess was housed in a villa in Scotland, had his personal servants and wanted for nothing. Churchill had expressly decreed that Hess, on account of his rank as SS *Gruppenfürer*, should be accommodated as a general. On the agent asking whether the Englishman had the impression that Hess was, perhaps, somewhat mentally confused, he received the answer that the Englishman had not gained this impression.[48]

The rest of this report has an incredible element, for far from being imprisoned in the Tower of London, Heydrich's report states that the Englishman had Hess driving around London under escort. These features lead Padfield to conclude that the report may have been part of an intelligence deception campaign.[49]

---

[45] Picknett, prince, and Prior, *op. cit*., pp. 353-354.

[46] *Ibid*., p. 355.

[47] *Ibid*., p. 356.

[48] Padfield, *op. cit*., p. 280f, citing R. Heyrdrich to *Reichsaussenminister*, 4 May 1942, F & CO 434005, Annex, pp. 1-2, 434006-7.

[49] Padfield, *op. cit*., p. 288.

But like everything else in the Hess Mess, the report is capable of more than one interpretation depending on the scenario one is arguing. For Picknett, Prince, and Prior, the Heydrich report poses a much more significant problem, for if one assumed that its basic premise that Hess was in Scotland was true, then "what was going on at Maindiff Court? If he was not there in the period between June 1942 and October 1945, what about the carefully stage-managed 'public appearances': the drives in the country, the picnics and the walks?"[50]

Their answer, simply, is that the fact that the "Hess" who returned to Nuremberg in 1945 *lacked* the proper scaring from World War One war wounds means that at some point during his stay in Britain, a double was substituted for the real Hess, who remained, in their view, in Scotland.

Thus, on their view, the drugging sessions "Hess" underwent, particularly after his arrival at Maindiff in Wales, were mind-control sessions, to create the necessary "memories" in the double and to test their resiliency under drugged interrogation.[51] Recall, in this respect, not only "Hess'" own strange statements in this regard, but his peculiar behavior at Nuremberg, and American intelligence mandarin Allen Dulles own suspicions. One may add an additional speculation here: why did the British build an entire "Hess suite" at their military hospital in Berlin? One answer might be that an elaborate, and secure, facility was needed to conduct any memory "reinforcement" mind control sessions that a double may have required. In this respect, the strange visit of Wolf-Rüdiger to Spandau, and his father's equally strange behavior that caused the visit, should be borne in mind.

This hypothesis has its difficulties, not the least of which, as Picknett, Prince and Prior admit, is persuading a double to accept the real Hess' fate,[52] yet, this difficulty disappears if, indeed, sophisticated mind-control techniques were employed on the double. In any case, a double *does* appear to have been planted, and very early on at that. This rationalizes a number of things, including the strict prohibition of taking pictures of "Hess" while he was in captivity, plus the duplicate uniform. Indeed, Fraser-Smith, the man whom we saw was tasked to create this uniform, entertained doubts about the identity of "Hess".[53]

---

[50] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 356f.

[51] Ibid., p. 364.

[52] Ibid., p. 368.

There is other anecdotal evidence to support this hypothesis, for Picknett, Prince, and Prior indicate that a Scots Guards member, who was a member of Hess' guard detail, asserted Hess was in the Tower of London, and had been taken to secret meetings with Churchill in late June 1941. This story of secret meetings between Hess and Churchill were corroborated by RAF military police. The problem is, these meetings took place while "Hess," according to official accounts, was at Mytchett Place.[54]

Politically, there could be any number of reasons for the creation and substitution of a double, from the need to protect the real Hess from assassination, kidnapping, or rescue attempts,[55] to the need of the Churchill government to present a façade that "Hess was cooperating" with the sitting British government and not trying to topple it.[56]

C. Ducal Difficulties, Royal Protection and Reception Committees

The various versions of the double hypothesis—from Thomas' to Picknett's, Prince's, and Prior's—also raise a very different question: If a double was indeed inserted into the opera in Britain, then what happened to the *real* Hess?

In my estimation it is here that Picknett, Prince, and Prior have offered the most complete scenario, one that makes the most sense of the most data points in the whole Hess Mess, and which, in turn, raises in even starker relief that as yet One Unstated Question. The key to this scenario is one very significant fact: when Hess realized his situation and that he had fallen into the hands of people who were *not* part of the scheme, he repeatedly stated that he had come, and was under, "the King's personal protection," and repeatedly insisted that messages be taken directly to George VI.[57]

---

[53] Picknett, Prince, and Prior., p. 370.

[54] *Ibid.*, p. 371.

[55] *Ibid.* They note that the rumored Polish kidnapping or assassination plot, one of the ostensible causes of Hess' move from Mytchett Place to Maindiff Court, may actually have been a *rescue* attempt. This fits with the composition of the "reception" committee that was in Scotland to meet Hess, some of which was comprised of representatives of the Polish government in exile. As we shall discover, the likelihood of such an attempt grows once one knows the full scope of their scenario.

[56] *Ibid.*

In other words, the Crown itself may have been one component of the British "peace faction" with which Hess had been indirectly negotiating.

In this respect, Picknett, Prince, and Prior make mention of a bit of information that came from a "confidential source" in Britain's Ministry of Defence, who had high-level contacts with the Foreign Office. Like all information from anonymous contacts, it should be evaluated accordingly. However, this bit of information is so significant that it must be mentioned. Their contact, whom they codenamed "Alexander," was asked about Hess' claim to be under Royal Protection. His answer concerned a British colonel named Pilcher, whom the Royal family had ordered to be held incommunicado at Balmoral Palace from 1941 to his death in 1970. Why had Pilcher been subject to such a "palatial prison"? Because according to "Alexander," *Colonel Pilcher had signed "a letter of safe conduct in the King's* name".[58] This, as they point out, would explain a great deal about the apparent confusion on the night of Hess' capture, for if he indeed had on his person a letter of safe conduct, what were the apprehending authorities to do? Was the letter fake? Was it real? As we shall see in a moment, the possibility of such a letter *does* rationalize the mysterious presence of the Polish officer Battaglia that night.

For the moment, however, one must inquire whether or not there is any corroborating fact of royal involvement in the scheme at such a high level; was the Crown itself possibly involved.

There does appear to be one intriguing fact that would indicate Royal family interest in such a negotiated peace with Germany, beyond Edward VIII, the Duke of Windsor's, own personal friendliness toward the Nazis. This is the fact that the Queen Mother's brother, David Bowes Lyon, was a member of the Anglo-

---

[57] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, op. cit., p. 263.

[58] Ibid., p. 266f., emphasis added.

German Fellowship,[59] an organization also heavily suffused with peers and other members of British high society.

All of this brings us finally to Picknett's, Prince's, and Prior's masterstroke: the relationship of the Hess Flight to the death of the Duke of Kent, King George VI's younger brother, in a tragic air crash in Scotland in August 1942. The Duke of Kent was urbane, sophisticated, multi-lingual, and most importantly, functioned as a kind of *personal* intelligence officer to his brother the King, and had personally met and dined with Hess, Rosenberg, and Ribbentrop before the war.[60]

He was also allegedly a member of the "reception committee" waiting at Dungavel for Hess' arrival, along with representatives of the Polish government in exile and the international Red Cross. With the mention of the Poles, we arrive at one crucial element of their scenario, for they point out that the head of the Polish government in exile had *offered the throne of Poland—long vacant—to the Duke of Kent*.[61] The presence of the Poles in the reception committee thus is logical from two points of view: (1) the Poles would *have* to have been involved in any general peace settlement between Britain and Germany, because of the former's guarantee and the latter's military occupation of the country, and (2) in this author's opinion, because the offer of the Polish throne to the Duke of Kent may have been a *component* of the peace plan previously negotiated between Hess and his British counterparts; for the Germans, the Duke would have represented an acceptable head of state for any reestablished Polish rump state. This now rationalizes why a *Polish* officer was allowed to speak to Hess for two hours in German without supervision. One may even speculate that, perhaps, he was a personal liaison from the Duke of Kent.[62]

All of these things suggest additionally that the "peace plan's" details were already worked out in considerable depth; Hess, in other words, had come not to *continue* negotiations, but rather, to "finalize" the deal. This also explains another fact previously mentioned: the strange and sudden decline in the intensity of the two countries' bombing campaigns against each other.[63] It had become a "second phony war".[64] *This near cessation of intense bombing suggests once again that not only was there coordination between the British and German sides surrounding Hess' peace mission, but that Hess and Göring were both involved in the plot. This idea was confirmed by Hess himself in his statements to Churchill's representative, Ivone Kirkpatrick, for he stated that "he and Göring were working to the same agenda".*[65]

---

[59] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 264.

[60] *Ibid.*, pp. 276, 277.

[61] *Ibid.*, p. 286.

[62] *Ibid.*, p. 284f.: They also point out that in the records that speak of meetings between Hess and "the Duke" that in some cases this may *not* be the Duke of Hamilton, but the King's younger brother, the Duke of Kent.

We have seen that at some point, a "double" is created and makes his appearance in the opera. But this does not resolve yet another problem, for as we have seen, the *real* Hess was in the hands, not of the "peace party" but of Churchill's government.

Enter the Duke of Kent.

Picknett, Prince, and Prior recount the story of Evelyn Criddle, whose father was related to the Earl of Pembroke, a relationship whose significance will be evident in a moment. According to her story, when she was a little girl she spent time near Maindiff Court in Wales, and saw a "very tall man" whom her father told her was Rudolf Hess. The only problem was, Hess was not in Maindiff Court itself, but in a small house nearby owned by the Herbert family, i.e., by the Earl of Pembroke![66] The real problem, however, is not the apparently "bi-locating" Hess, but that Hess was in the home of the Earl of Pembroke. Why is this significant? Because the Earl was "the *equerry to the Duke of Kent*,"[67] a point that indicates that the "peace party" *had regained control of the real Hess.*

---

[63] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 323.

[64] *Ibid.*, pp. 324-325. It should be noted, however, that there was another problem as far as the British, and later, the American bombing campaigns were concerned, and this was the extensive network of radars, anti-aircraft guns, and fighter air defense coordination that Germany had constructed in Western Europe that was making bomber losses too high even for nighttime raids. This system had to be degraded sufficiently for the bomber offensive to have any real hope of success, and this degradation did not really begin to show its signs until 1943. This system was so effective that the British staged a commando raid on the coast of France in 1942 to literally *steal* one of the German radar equipments in order to learn its secrets and to aid in the air defense system degradation campaign.

[65] *Ibid.*, p. 315, emphasis added.

[66] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, pp. 373-374.

[67] *Ibid.*, p. 374, emphasis in the original.

The real Hess was apparently returned to Scotland, where he was seen in 1942 by Robin Sinclair, the Lord Thurso, in 1942, while "Hess" stayed in Maindiff Court.[68] According to Thurso, Hess was quartered in Braemore Lodge. At this juncture, the Duke of Kent and his tragic flight enter the picture.[69]

On the 25th of August, 1942, the Duke of Kent took off in a Short-Sunderland flying boat, allegedly on a good-will flight to visit British troops stationed in Iceland. Tragically, his aircraft crashed on a rocky crag in Scotland known as Eagle's Rock. The Duke was killed, becoming the first member of the Royal Family to die in military service in five centuries.

However, it appears that the Duke may *not* have been flying to Iceland, but rather, that this was a cover story. For one thing, the Duke's flying boat, curiously, was painted *white*, the color for aircraft flying to and from neutral *Sweden*,[70] suggesting that Sweden, not Iceland, was the destination. After all, a flight from Scotland to *Iceland* would be unlikely to encounter hostile *Luftwaffe* aircraft. A flight to *Sweden*, however, easily could.

There is another anomaly, however, and that is by careful consultation and comparison of various records, there appears to have been an unaccounted-for body on the Duke of Kent's aircraft, a body, moreover, that it appears that King George VI himself personally made inquiries about when he visited his younger brother's crash site.[71] Additionally, the flight plan itself has disappeared, and the weather service personnel on the east coast of Scotland were sworn to secrecy and forced to sign Britain's Official Secrets Act. Why the weather personnel on the east coast of Scotland? Because the Duke of Kent's aircraft had taken off from the east coast and not, as one would expect for a flight to Iceland, the west coast.[72]

---

[68] Ibid.

[69] Again, space simply does not permit a thorough review of the Duke of Kent's flight. This is one of the most fascinating and meticulously researched and detailed components of Picknett's, Prince's and Prior's reconstructions, and they subject the Duke of Kent's final flight to a very thorough and intense analysis from pp. 377-408.

[70] Ibid., p. 423.

[71] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, op. cit., pp. 406-408.

[72] Ibid., p. 423.

It seems reasonable to conclude along with Picknett, Prince and Prior that the Duke of Kent perished in a flight that was designed to return the *real* Hess to Germany via Sweden, a country through which Göring had conducted his own peace discussions. Whether the Duke was acting out of the protocols of war and returning an envoy who had come under a flag of truce, or was flying on to Germany to complete final arrangements in the deal, or was simply removing Hess from imminent danger from Churchill’s government, is unknown.[73] I suspect that the Duke’s flight was about more than mere chivalry, but in any case, they are correct to note all the *other* possibilities for his flight, because like everything else in the Hess Mess, it is open to interpretation.

There is one final and quite disturbing possibility about the Duke of Kent’s flight. Noting that the memorial in Scotland erected to him and his companions on the flight reads that they were “on a special mission,”[74] they also produce a cable from the German Ambassador in Portugal to his boss, von Ribbentrop, in the German Foreign Ministry. The subject of the cable was the Duke of Kent’s death in the crash of his flying boat:

> As the Embassy has learned, confidentially, the death of the Duke of Kent has been discussed recently in the innermost circles of the British Club here. The gist of the talk being that an act of sabotage was involved. It is said that the Duke, like the Duke of Windsor, was sympathetic towards an understanding with Germany and so gradually had become a problem for the government clique. The people who were accompanying him were supposed to have expressed themselves along similar lines, so that getting them out of the way would also have been an advantage.[75]

Similarly, General Sikorski, head of the Polish government in exile and who had offered the Polish crown to the Duke of Kent, also died, mere months later, in July 1943, in an air crash off Gibraltar.[76]

In other words, two principal players had been eliminated, Hess himself and the Duke of Kent, and with them were removed key components of the possible peace plan—the Duke of Kent as proposed Polish monarch, and Hess as acceptable replacement for Hitler—had been removed from the equation. Additionally, a very serious message had been sent to the King and Royal family, one indicating that further interference would not be acceptable. And finally, of course, the head of the Polish government in exile might also have been "taken out". Everyone who could talk about the "details" of the plan—many of which have not *yet* been discussed, were eliminated.

---

[73] *Ibid*., p. 434.

[74] *Ibid*., p. 387.

[75] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit*., p. 434f.

Ibid., p. 417.

D. A Short but Necessary Final Tangent: *The Hess Flight and the Rise of Martin Bormann*

There is a final aspect of Hess' flight, one that, unusually, is not considered by the main Hess Mess investigators, but which is normally only mentioned in books *not* concentrating on Hess' flight. That aspect is the relationship of Hess' flight to the rise of Martin Bormann, for Hess, of course, was replaced by Bormann as the head of the Nazi Party itself, when Hitler abolished the office of *Stellvertreter* (Deputy) and made Bormann Party *Reichsleiter.*

This has caused some, such as William Stevenson, to view Bormann as a hidden architect in the affair, not so much participating in the Hess-Göring scheme, as simply encouraging Hess to undertake the mission as a purely selfish political maneuver to remove Hess from power and allow Bormann to advance himself into the powerful position of commanding the party hierarchy.[77] In Stevenson's hands, Hess was the gullible fool, and Haushofer the "crackpot genius" that was used by the master manipulator Bormann to manipulate Hess.[78]

This, as we have seen, relies far too heavily on the *post-flight* "narrative" that Hess was a fool, insane, weak, and stupid. As we have seen, he was anything but. Additionally, one gets the measure of Hess the man because it was Hess who spotted Bormann's unique "talents" and promoted him to the post of being his personal secretary, the "deputy" of the Deputy Führer.

---

[77] William Stevenson, *The Bormann Brotherhood*: *A New Investigation of the Escape and Survival of Nazi War Criminals* (New York: Bantam Books, 1973), p. 52.

[78] *Ibid.*, p. 53.

If anything, what emerges from this is that Bormann probably knew, along with Göring and Hitler, that his boss intended to fly to Britain to conclude secret peace negotiations. What Bormann and Göring also possibly knew that Hitler did *not,* was that those negotiations perhaps included a plan, not only for the removal of Churchill's government, but of Hitler himself. This turns the narrative of those who believe Bormann played Hess in order to advance his own personal power on its head, for had *Hess* become the head of state, or even retained his role as head of the party in a non-Hitler government, Bormann's power would in all likelihood increased beyond what it did under Hitler.[79]

It is in this context that I believe one must examine another fantastic allegation of Stevenson, namely, that Bormann may have had Heydrich assassinated. He notes that Heinrich "Gestapo" Müller and Walter Schellenberg both thought that Bormann was behind Heydrich's death.[80] If so, then I doubt this was simply a personal maneuver to get rid of a powerful rival, for as we have seen, Heydrich kept a close watch on the Hess affair and was attempting to track his movements in Britain, making his reports to Ribbentrop's Foreign Ministry, *and thus by-passing Bormann in the Party headquarters*. If Bormann *was* involved in a plot with Hess (his boss) and Göring to conclude a peace with Britain at the cost of overturning Hitler, sooner or later, Heydrich would have discovered it. Under such circumstances, Bormann had to act, and under such circumstances probably did so with Göring's full knowledge and consent.

As a final note in the Hess Mess, it should be observed that Bormann took over the Hess compound south of Munich in Pullach, which, of course, eventually became the actual headquarters of the Gehlen Organization of German intelligence after the war.[81]

The reader will, of course, have been asking himself a significant question throughout this chapter and, indeed, throughout the book thus far: does any of this *really* explain the vast amount of secrecy surrounding the Hess Mess?

---

[79] Bormann's big rival was, of course, Göring, who hated him and who recognized his "talents" for removing and eliminating rivals in the Nazi hierarchy.

[80] *Ibid.*, p. 59.

[81] Stevenson, *op. cit.*, p. 113.

Does a secret peace plan and coup-plot between elements of the British peerage and the Royal Family on the one hand, and powerful elements of the Nazi hierarchy like Hess and Göring, and possibly Bormann as well, *really* explain that secrecy to this day? In the contemporary cynical atmosphere toward political institutions and leaders, are we surprised that the Royal Family or elements thereof, or the British nobility, or Nazis, would be kept secret simply to save any of them or their memories potential embarrassment?

As has been outlined thus far, is such a plot *really* weighty enough to warrant secrecy to this day, Royals or no Royals?

I would contend that it simply is not, and that the biggest question in the whole Hess Mess of doubles, covert operations, planned coups-d'etat against Churchill or Hitler or both—*what is the Big Secret*?—remains unanswered, and that to appreciate the reason that London and Berlin both went into a tailspin of panic has yet to be answered. The trouble is, no one *can* answer it.

All we have is speculation, and a few clues in the statements and research of the principals, to which we shall add our own dataset. What emerges is something horrifyingly grandiose, and grandiosely horrifying.

Left to Right: *Martin Bormann, Rudolf Hess, and Willi Ley*

H.R.H. Prince George, *Duke of Kent* (*1902-1940*)

6

SACRIFICES, SURRENDERS, STATEMENTS, AND STATES

"... after one of the Berlin crises, the Western Powers should have immediately declared that now they also no longer felt bound by the agreements with the Soviet Union on joint responsibility for Spandau. But, as it is, they never made such a declaration. On the contrary, the Western Powers continued to emphasize the Four-Power agreement on Berlin of 1972... the Four Powers again reaffirmed their intention to maintain their joint responsibility for Germany and Berlin, i.e., including Spandau".
Wolf Rudiger Hess[1]

"To deal with these peoples, thus regarded as only semi-human, Lanz recommended variously: ...deportation to Madagascar; enslavement, incineration as a sacrifice to God; and use as beasts of burden".
Joscelyn Godwin[2]

ONE OF THE MOST OBVIOUS BITS OF DEBRIS in the whole Hess Mess, and therefore, one of the most *overlooked* things about the Hess Mess because of that very obviousness, is the fact that for four decades and two years after the end of the Second World War, through all the vicissitudes of the Cold War including the Cuban Missile Crisis, the four powers, even as they were on the brink of nuclear war with each other, remained oddly united about the matter of Rudolf Hess; though the ICBMs might fly and hydrogen bombs might burn and fallout flake down in a deadly rain, Hess—or his double—had to remain imprisoned at Spandau.

To put that astonishing consideration in simpler terms: Prisoner Number Seven transcended the momentary Cold War confrontations and geopolitics, and this fact alone suggests the immensity of whatever secret lies buried in all the debris of the Hess Mess.

---

[1] Wolf Rudiger Hess, *My Father Rudolf Hess* (1986), pp. 303-304.

[2] Joscelyn Godwin, *Arktos: The Polar Myth in Science, Symbolism, and Nazi Survival*, p. 49.

When put this way, the implication follows that whatever the secret is, all four powers knew it, or, knew at least a *part* of it, and were thus complicit in... "something".

It might be objected that at the time of the Cuban Missile Crisis that Hess, or his double, was not the sole remaining Nazi in Spandau Prison, and this is true. But this only highlights *another* glaring problem, namely, that Grand Admiral Karl Dönitz, the actual legal head of state and government at the end of World War Two, had been in Allied custody since its end. Yet, they had taken no steps to ensure that *he personally* signed any document of the surrender of the German state itself, nor any document outlawing the Nazi Party. After his death, this left only Speer—released the same day as Dönitz—and "Hess" as the last remaining individuals who could have any legal claim to any offices of the Reich, and between the two, "Hess," as we have seen, held far more official posts both within the state and, as Hitler's Deputy, the Nazi Party. Yet, no effort was undertaken to tidy up the legal niceties, and that indeed may have been the point: so long as "Hess" was alive, those niceties remained to connect the modern German state to the previous one in an unbroken chain of legal ties dating—if one wanted to assemble the mountain of documentation to sustain the argument—all the way back to the Holy Roman Empire. Perhaps, for whatever reason, the Four Allied Powers wished to break that link entirely.

The peculiarities of the surrender of the Nazi Party (or rather, the lack thereof) notwithstanding, the uneasy fact is that "Hess" remained a point of odd and anomalous unanimity among the Four Powers even at *other* moments of heightened tension during the Cold War, long after the other Spandau Nazis were dead.

The One Question, in other words, does not disappear with these considerations; they only serve to emphasize its immensity. In this connection, it will be recalled that "Hess" himself stated to his nurse, Abdallah Melaouhi, that if the Soviets reversed their veto on his release, then the British, at least, would murder him, and it is unlikely that the Soviets would not have known this. Their offer was thus quite cynical, given the fact that it was the *Soviets* had who had pressed for the death sentence for "Hess" at Nuremberg in the first place.

His death itself, and its timing, also forms part of the mystery, for it is as if "Hess'" death was the agreed-upon signal to flip a switch, for within half of a decade of his death, the leaders of three of the countries that had stood guard over him—Gorbachev, Reagan, and Thatcher—were gone; Reagan's vice president, George Herbert Walker Bush, whose father had his own odd connections to the Nazis, was President; Germany was reunified, and within months, Czechoslovakia and Yugoslavia were broken up; Margaret Thatcher was ousted from her premiership and from the Conservative Party leadership, fulminating against the growing signs of a European Union from the back benches, warning of the dangers of a common currency and the loss of British sovereignty.

Lest any connection between the Hess Mess and the sudden and dramatic fall of Mrs. Thatcher seem to be stretching a point, Picknett, Prince and Prior revealed that during their contacts with their anonymous whistleblower "Alexander," the latter had mentioned that the Prime Minister's personal secretary, Ian Gow "had told Hugh Thomas that in return for the latter's dropping of his allegations that Hess was murdered, the government would be prepared to admit that there was *doubt about the identity of the prisoner*. We were able to confirm this".[3] That corroboration came in the form of an appearance of Thomas on Dutch television in 1998, where he stated that a group of "Tory Dry"[4] members of Parliament had approached him, claiming to represent Mr. Gow and wanting to "clear the cupboard of skeletons" first.[5] Thomas, of course, refused to drop his murder allegations and the negotiations ended. Perhaps one should not be surprised that Mr. Gow was murdered by a car bomb a few months later, with the murder, which remains unsolved, said to be the work of the IRA.[6] While there might be many possible motivations for Mr. Gow's murder, the Hess Mess must remain as one of those possibilities.

Like all dark operas, however, the last analytical act is usually the most dramatic and foreboding.

---

[3] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 487, emphasis added.

[4] Tory "Dries" were the right wing of the Tory Party and more or less the wing of the party solidly backing Mrs. Thatcher.

[5] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 487.

[6] *Ibid.*, p. 488.

A. Israel, Hess, and the Grand Dame of Conspiracy Theory

1. The Israelis and Hess

While Picknett, Prince, and Prior have done yeomen's work in filtering, examining, and analyzing a veritable mountain of details of the Hess Mess and constructing one of the most comprehensive scenarios, it is Peter Padfield who has analyzed details that suggest new twists to their own scenario of Royal involvement with Hess' peace plan, and their corollary scenario of a possible international and bi-lateral coup d'etat plot against Churchill and Hitler. Padfield's analysis, when integrated with theirs, and with additional information uncovered by this author in the 1980s and disclosed in a previous book, gives hitherto unknown—and horrific—depths to the Hess Mess, and begins to approach a real basis from which to rationalize all the secrecy, obfuscated data, and "removed files".

The core of Padfield's analysis integrates the other great tragedy of World War Two—the Holocaust and the so-called "Jewish Question"—into the parameters of Hess' peace plan. In this respect, it is worth pointing out a few details that that strongly suggest this factor not only is in play, but may be a principal element.

Other researchers, however, have uncovered indicators of a relationship to Hess' peace mission and the so-called "Jewish Question". For example, Picknett, Prince, and Prior point out that the government of Israel made numerous requests to Great Britain to be able to interview "Spandau Hess" about his peace proposals. These requests were always refused.[7] One may, of course, speculate as to why these refusals were made. If "Spandau Hess" was a double, there was a risk that the Israelis would discover this, and this discovery would in turn ignite inquiries about what had happened to the *real* Hess, and when, and why. If "Spandau Hess" was the real Hess then this might jeopardize a much larger secret, which I will advance in this chapter for the first time.

Wolf-Rüdiger Hess went further, stating that during the Camp David accord meetings in September, 1978 between President Jimmy Carter, Egyptian President Anwar Sadat, and Israeli Prime Minister Menachem Begin, that Begin allegedly privately and secretly warned Carter that "Hess" must not leave Spandau alive. Wolf Hess records no source for this allegation, nor does he indicate whether or not Begin communicated the *reason* for this solemn warning to Carter or not.[8] As will be seen, the speculative scenario I will offer in this chapter might explain, in part, why such a warning might have been made, if indeed Wolf Hess' allegation is true.

---

[7] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 499.

It was Wolf Hess who was the first researcher who thought that there was a connection between "the Jewish Question" and his father's peace mission:

> As is known, my father presented Churchill with the plan for a world peace conference. Perhaps the European Jewish Question was to be solved at this meeting as well. For years, Germany had had an interest in the emigration of as many Jews as possible. Due to the Haavara Agreement, which enabled Jewish emigrants to transfer their entire fortune—albeit only to Palestine—emigration was no problem. In 1939, however, the British had imposed strict quotas on the immigration of Jews into Palestine—a country which did not even belong to the British—and restricted such immigration to wealthy Jews only. So the Haavara Agreement saw to it that Jews with insufficient wealth could get a loan large enough for them to meet the immigration criteria so that they could leave Germany nevertheless. And in fact, Jews left Germany for Palestine as late as 1941. (This is proven, for example, by Werner Feilchenfeld, *Haavara-Transfer nach Palästina...* Tübingen, 1972...) Despite that, the stubborn anti-Jewish attitude of the British hampered Germany's plans and incidentally does not shine a very positive light on British policies with respect to Jews. It is not impossible that my father was to negotiate with the British on this issue.[9]

Obviously, Wolf Hess' statements should be taken cautiously, for whatever British policies may have been towards its Jews, it certainly was not rounding them up, shipping them to camps, forcing them to work exhausting hard labor on a starvation diet, gassing them to death, and cremating them!

---

[8] Wolf-Rüdiger Hess, *Who Murdered My Father, Rudolf Hess*?, p. 156.

[9] Ibid., p. 158.

Or... did Wolf Hess perhaps *suspect* something, a deeper story? There is a deeper story, one outlined by Peter Padfield, but as we shall now discover, even that story has a much deeper root than anyone ever imagined.

2. *Hess, Halifax, Hamilton, Chamberlain, Churchill, the Reichskristallnacht, The Balfour Declaration, and the "Jewish Question"*

Padfield notes that Hess, as the "Conscience of the Party," lived up to his nickname. During the planning for the "Night of the Long Knives," Hitler's abrupt counter-coup and murder of Ernst Rohm and other top leaders of the SA, it was Hess who, according to witnesses, could be heard arguing with Hitler behind closed doors, insisting that this or that name on Hitler's death list be spared. After the Night of the Long Knives, Hitler's brutality had aged Hess by several years, and even changed his signature. Hess' stomach problems and insomnia date from this time.[10] It was, in Padfield's estimation, the first of two major "psychic shocks" to Hess' system.

The other was the nation-wide pogrom against Germany's Jews, the *Reichskristallnacht*, which had a similarly profound effect on Hess. Padfield states that "The oppositionist von Hassell recorded in his diary how Hess' old Munich friends, the Bruckmanns, had told him of Hess' despair at the nation-wide pogrom; he had been depressed 'as never before' and beseeched the Führer to stop the outrages, without success".[11] Interestingly enough, Lord Halifax, an alleged member of the British "peace faction" which Hess was trying to contact on the night of his infamous flight, was similarly disgusted by the pogrom. Halifax initiated a discussion in the cabinet to try to help Germany's Jews. The idea of a Jewish homeland inevitably occurred, and even though the British had a mandate in Palestine, this solution was rejected for fear of angering the region's Arabs. Western Australia and British Guiana "were considered briefly as possible Jewish homelands".[12]

---

[10] Padfield, *Night Flight to Dungavel*, pp. 32, 33.

[11] *Ibid.*, p. 48.

[12] *Ibid.*, pp. 47-48.

Later, with war looming, the Chamberlain government actually published a White Paper on the Jewish Question in May 1939. In the paper, the Chamberlain government outlined a proposal for Palestine to become an independent state in ten years[13] with the population ratio of Arabs to Jews to be carefully regulated at a ratio of two to one, with initial Jewish immigration to be limited to 75,000 people for the first five years, and after that, no further immigration without Arab consent. Churchill, appealing to the Balfour Declaration of 1917, "denounced this blatant propitiation of the Arabs as a repudiation of Balfour's pledge to the Zionists, which it was".[14] Nonetheless, Parliament approved the plan.

The Balfour Declaration itself may be one of the shortest yet most explosive political documents in history:

> Foreign Office, November 2nd, 1917
>
> Dear Lord Rothschild,
>
> I have much pleasure in conveying to you on behalf of His Majesty's Government the following declaration of sympathy with Jewish Zionist aspirations, which has been submitted to and approved by the Cabinet:
>
> "His Majesty's Government view with favour the establishment in Palestine of a national home for the Jewish people, and will use their best endeavours to facilitate the achievement of this object, it being clearly understood that nothing shall be done which may prejudice the civil and religious rights of existing non-Jewish communities in Palestine or the rights and political status enjoyed by Jews in any other country".
>
> I should be grateful if you would bring this Declaration to the knowledge of the Zionist Federation.
>
> Yours sincerely,
> Arthur James Balfour[15]

---

[13] It is interesting to note that the timing was unusually accurate in one respect, for Israel was recognized as a nation in 1948.

[14] Padfield, *op. cit.*, p. 49.

[15] Robert John, *Behind the Balfour Declaration*: *The Hidden Origins of Today*'*s Mideast Crisis* (Costa Mesa, California: Institute for Historical Review, 1988), p. 28.

For our purposes, what is to be noted is that the British branch of the Rothschild family was functioning as the intermediary between the British government and Zionist organizations.

Enqdhfm Neehbd+

Mnudladq 1mc+ 0806-

Cd`q Knqc Qnsgrbghkc+

H g`ud ltbg okd`rtqd hm bnmudxhmf sn xnt+ nm adg`ke ne Ghr L`idrsxQr Fnudqmldms+ sgd enkknvhmf cdbk`q`shnm ne rxlo`sgx vhsg Idvhrg Yhnmhrs `rohq`shnmr Vghbg g`r addm rtalhssdc sn+ `mc `ooqnudc ax+ sgd B`ahmds

Ghr L`idrsxQr Fnudqmldms uhdv vhsg e`untq sgd drs`akhrgldms hm O`kdrshmd ne ` m`shnm`k gnld enq sgd Idvhrg odnokd+ `mc vhkk trd sgdhq adrs dmcd`untqr sn e`bhkhs`sd sgd `bghdudldms ne sghr naidbs+ hs adhmf bkd`qkx tmcdqrsnnc sg`s mnsghmf rg`kk ad cnmd vghbg l`x oqditchbd sgd bhuhk `mc qdkhfhntr qhfgsr ne dwhrshmf mnm,Idvhrg bnlltmhshdr hm O`kdrshmd+ nq sgd qhfgsr `mc onkhshb`k rs`str dminxdc ax Idvr hm `mx nsgdq bntmsqx-

H rgntkc ad fq`sdetk he xnt vntkc aqhmf sghr cdbk`q`shnm sn sgd jmnvkdcfd ne sgd Yhnmhrs Edcdq`shnm-

Yours

Arthur James Balfour

The Balfour Declaration

The Zionist movement cast a wide net of influence prior to and during World War One[16] and this network of influence continued up to World War Two, and included prominent Nazis in its network. Padfield, for example, points out that none other than Adolf Eichmann visited Palestine in November 1937, with the express purpose of visiting Zionist leaders there, four months after the Peel Commission had published its recommendations. This commission was yet another British government study on Palestine. It recommended dividing the region into two states, a Jewish one in the north, and a larger Arab state in the south. The Zionist leaders in Palestine "told Eichmann that if the English showed an inclination to postpone partition, the Jewish defence organisation would open hostilities against them. They further said they were delighted by the 'radical' German Jewish policy which would drive more Jews to emigrate to Palestine and give them a majority over the Arabs within foreseeable time".[17] Eichmann's visit was not without fruits, for noted scholar Christopher Simpson records that an arrangement was made between the Zionist guerilla-terrorist organization Haganah and the SS, with the latter actually providing funds to the Zionist organization in return for intelligence on British activities in Palestine.[18] The Zionists, in other words, were prepared to deal with anyone, even the sworn enemies of their own people, if it served to advance their cause.

---

[16] Robert John, *op. cit.*, pp. 50-51, 54. John notes that, peculiarly, the central executive of the Zionist organization was in Berlin, and that it had memberships throughout Eastern Europe, the bulk of its membership strength being in Austria-Hungary and Imperial Russia. This state of affairs moved Chaim Weizmann, who would later figure so prominently in the affairs of the state of Israel, to locate provisional executive offices in the USA. This was done, with prominent Jewish-Americans formally becoming a part of this committee, including US Supreme Court justice Louis Brandeis, Felix Frankfurter, and the famous Rabbi Stephen Wise, who would later organize the pre-World War Two Jewish boycott of Nazi Germany. Both the European and American branches of this movement viewed Tsarist Russia as their principal target during World War One, while continuing to lobby both the Western Allied Powers and the Central Powers for the creation of a Jewish homeland. Henry Morgenthau, for example, became a major contributor for President Wilson's campaign, and was rewarded by an ambassadorship to Turkey. (John, op. cit. p. 53). Later, of course, he became Franklin Roosevelt's Treasury Secretary, and a feature of the bearer bonds scandals, as well as authoring the notorious "Morgenthau" plan for the sterilization of Germans after World War Two, and the breakup of Germany into three smaller, agrarian states. While Zionists in Britain lobbied through Lord Rothschild for a Palestinian Jewish state, their counterparts in Berlin during World War One dangled the prospect of a puppet Turkish government in front of Berlin, a new market for German goods, in return (again) for a declaration in favor of a Jewish homeland in Palestine, and soliciting friendly declarations for this purpose from the German Foreign Ministry. Konstantin von Neurath drew up such a declaration, and it was signed by then Reich Chancellor Theobald von Bettmann-Hollweg in 1915. (John, p. 54) Von Neurath, of course, was one of "Hess'" fellow prisoners in Spandau Prison, and was the German Foreign Minister from 1932-1938, and Reich Protector of Bohemia from 1939-1943.

What emerges from this is a pattern, both on the Zionist side of the equation, and on the Great Powers side of the equation, of a concerted interest in having an established Zionist-Jewish state. In the interwar period, several versions of the "international Zionist-Socialist" conspiracy raged, not only on the continent of Europe, but in Great Britain as well, where the "grand Dame of conspiracy theory," the scholarly but erratic Nesta Webster, influenced the peace-circles which were connected to the Duke of Hamilton.[19]

3. Lord Victor Rothschild, MI-5, the Communists, and Colonel Pilcher Again

Unfortunately, these ideas of international Zionist-Socialist conspiracies were not entirely unfounded. Before World War Two, Lord Victor Rothschild became a member of a Cambridge secret society called the Apostles society, a group enamored of Communism ostensibly because of its "scientific Marxist" views. But Rothschild had unusual friends in this society: Anthony Blunt and Guy Burgess—two of the notorious "Cambridge Five," the five moles for Soviet intelligence in British society, government and intelligence.[20] One researcher actually believes that it was Victor Rothschild who was the unknown "fifth man" in the notorious spy ring, and who actually recruited Philby, Blunt, MacLean and Burgess. It was, for example, Rothschild who joined MI-5's counter-sabotage division in 1940, and then sponsored his friend, Blunt, into MI-5.[21] Much more importantly, Victor Rothschild may have exercised influence via the Churchill government to have Colonel Pilcher neutralized and, effectively, internally exiled.[22] Pilcher, it will be recalled, was on the King's personal staff, and allegedly wrote the cover letter for Hess granting Royal protection.

---

[17] Padfield, *op. cit.*, p. 50.

[18] Christopher Simpson, *Blowback: The First Full Account of America's Recruitment of Nazis and Its Disastrous Effect on our Domestic and Foreign Policy* (New York, Collier, 1988), p. 253.

[19] Padfield, *op. cit.*, p. 45

[20] Padfield, *op. cit.*, p. 271.

It is with Colonel Pilcher that Padfield's scenario really begins, for the mysterious British colonel apparently communicated a note to another 1970s Hess Mess researcher, De Courcy, outlining what the Hess mission had really been all about. Here it is necessary to cite Padfield extensively, and his citations of De Courcy's note about Pilcher. According to Padfield, Pilcher's note to De Courcy

> ...suggested that Hess came over with the knowledge of the *Abwehr* chief, Admiral Canaris, and the real object was to topple Hitler. This runs counter to everything known about Hess' character and his blind loyalty to the Führer... The note continued:
>
> "Hess had become alarmed about the war and coming Nazi excesses. He believed a total reversal of strategy and policy to be essential. He had heard stories that Queen Mary, the Duke of Windsor, the Dukes of Westminster and Bucclech, the Marquis of Londonderry, Lords Halifax and Rushcliffe, Basil Liddell Hart and R.A. Butler thought so too.
>
> "His idea was the evacuation of France, Belgium, Holland, Norway and Denmark, peace with England and placement of the Jews to Palestine...
>
> "War with Russia would however be prosecuted".
>
> The *Special Office brief* went on:
>
> "It was that factor which aroused the profound anxieties of the pro-Russian Party in Britain which brought vast pressure upon Churchill to stifle the whole project.

Before continuing, note what is really being said here: the "pro-Russia" party is that faction that Picknett, Prince, and Prior, and other Hess Mess researchers, have called variously the “Churchill party” or “Churchill clique”. Indeed, this was its name among Hess and his German co-conspirators. But this party, we now note, is comprised of a certain circle within MI-5, with direct ties to Victor Rothschild, whose family was pro-Zionist, and who sponsored at least one later-known Soviet mole—Blunt—into MI-5, and who was certainly suspiciously associated with the rest of the Cambridge spy group of Burgess, MacLean, Blunt, and Philby. We continue with the citation of Padfield:

---

[21] *Ibid.*, p. 272.

[22] *Ibid.*, p. 273.

> “One man threatened to leak the facts—Colonel W.S. Pilcher... commanding the Grenadier Guards at Windsor. He was dealt with, relieved of his command... and thereafter ordered to Scotland. He lived the rest of his life a virtual recluse until he died in 1970... His exit from a former social life was remarkable.”..
>
> In a confidential memo headed ‘Colonel W.S. Pilcher, de Courcy expanded on the aim of toppling Hitler:
>
> “When Hess arrived Pilcher learned something at (sic) his mission which, to a limited extent, fitted into his opinions—at least it was clear that Germany could be turned East, would reduce in the West to a substantial extent and that as Germany became weaker powerful elements within the armed forces and upper classes would turn against Hitler.[23]

This isn’t even second-hand dead man’s testimony, but fourth-hand dead man’s testimony, with the ultimate and penultimate sources, Hess and Pilcher respectively, both long dead. We are thus dependent on a claim about the peace plan that runs from Hess to Pilcher to de Courcy and finally to Padfield.

Nevertheless, there are certain features to note here: Hess’ peace plane was also

1) A comprehensive peace plan that included all of Western Europe’s German occupied territories in France, Belgium, Holland, Luxembourg, Denmark, and Norway; in return for

---

[23] Padfield, op. cit., p. 274f.

2) A British guarantee of a German free hand in Eastern Europe; and,
3) A *Jewish homeland* component.

In this, Hess' plan does not vary with other researchers' conclusions except in two details: the Jewish homeland component, and, here for the first time, the mention of *Norway*, which, as we shall see in part two, carries further deep implications.

Given what Padfield himself already noted about Hess' character, namely, that he appeared to suffer psychosomatically from Hitler's brutality toward his enemies during the Night of the Long Knives, and later, during the *Reichskristallnacht*, it is *not* in my opinion unlikely that Hess would have participated in a coup d'etat against Hitler. As was seen in previous chapters, the peace plan mission has all the hallmarks of being a simultaneous coup plot in London and Berlin.

But with the addition of Padfield's information, one may speculate *why* such desperate measures were being considered in Germany and Britain, for note that the coup plotters, both British and German, were attempting to *provide a Jewish-Zionist homeland, whereas the government they were trying to overthrow in London was opposed to this measure*, *and the government in Berlin that they were trying to overthrow was prepared to pursue extermination of Jews in the absence of a peace with Britain and a Jewish-Zionist homeland*. In this respect, it should be noted that Churchill himself believed that the influential American-Jewish lobby was highly successful in mobilizing support for America's entry into World War One,[24] and thus, from his point of view, could be influential in doing the same in World War Two. To pursue a peace with Germany at the expense of throwing the Soviet Union to the Nazi wolf would only activate those influential lobbies against his government and the British Empire, for those lobbies were, as noted previously, very pro-Soviet.

Padfield, let it be noted, believes that wholesale extermination of Jews was the intention of the Nazi leadership *ab initio*, and that the various "homeland" proposals, such as Eichmann's proposal for a Jewish-SS (!) state in Madagascar was simply a propaganda ploy to lull Europe's Jewish population into inaction. He cites the fact that long before there was a continent-wide organization of extermination and genocide machinery—the notorious "Final Solution" machinery decided upon at the notorious and infamous Wannsee conference in early 1942—that there were local exterminations and atrocities against Jews.[25] Indeed, it should also be remembered that Hitler conceived operation Barbarossa and the invasion of the Soviet Union as a genocidal war against what he viewed as the Great Power that was home, host, and shelter to the international "Bolshevist-Jewish conspiracy".[26]

---

[24] Padfield, *op. cit.*, p. 68.

However, the standard view that the Final Solution was only given the 'Green light" after 1942 may not be so easily dismissed, for it also cannot be denied that the machinery of a continent-wide genocide was not completely enacted or authorized until *after* it became clear that a negotiated peace settlement with Britain was no longer possible.

These two views—that (1) local extermination activity presaged the later organized continent-wide activity, and that the latter was *planned*, and (2) that the plan was activated when a homeland option was no longer feasible—need not be mutually exclusive. For the German peace party, including Hess, it was likely that they knew of the extermination plans, and knew that they would be activated come what may, unless a peace could be concluded that would allow the anti-Hitler factions to topple his government.[27]

---

[25] Padfield, *op. cit.*, p. 79.

[26] Nor should it be forgotten that Hitler apparently "changed his mind" between the publication of *Mein Kampf,* in which he advocates a Jewish homeland in Madagascar or other place, and the actual beginning of the war in the east. By that time, Hitler came to hold the opinion that a "Jewish homeland" would only become a kind of Jewish Vatican, a sovereign entity playing home and host to various conspiracies all around the world, and taking special advantage of the "dual status" this would confer. Linder such circumstances, it is clear that the "extermination option" was favored by Hitler. But in this regard, it should also be recalled that *Hess* was largely responsible for those passages in *Mein Kampf*—which was also his title for Hitler's "memoirs"—that dealt with questions of geopolitics. The homeland solution was favored by his mentor, General Haushofer, whose wife, let it be recalled, was half Jewish. I therefore do not have difficulty believing that Hess' "homeland" views conflicted with Hitler's growing tendency to favor genocide, and that this would possibly have led Hess to the crisis of conscience and participation in a wider plot against Hitler, in order to stave off the genocide.

Lest this anti-Hitler faction be thought to be a fiction, recall that the brother to the famous author of the James Bond spy novels, Peter Fleming himself, authored a spy novel that was published in 1940 during the height of the German bombing of Britain. In this novel, it will be recalled, Hitler himself parachutes into Great Britain. There is some truth to this novel, for Padfield records that

> ...Air Intelligence was confronted with an extraordinary proposal said to have come from Hitler's personal pilot, General Hans Bauer. It originated in Sofia, Bulgaria, in late December 1940. A peasant farmer named Kiroff approached the British Military Attache claiming his daughter was married to Baur. As proof he produced family photographs, Baur, he said, had lost two brothers in the war and had become 'fed up' with the continuous duty for Hitler. He was prepared to aid world peace by attempting a forced landing in England with the Führer and his entourage aboard his plane.
>
> The Military Attaché passed the matter to the Air Attaché, who reported it to the Air Ministry and the Foreign Office. No one could be found to identify the 'Baur family' photographs; nonetheless the contact was approved by Cadogan; Kiroff was handed instructions detailing signals Baur should fire when approaching the English coast, and special instructions for receiving him in Hitler's four-engined Focke-Wulf Kondor were sent to Lympne aerodrome in Kent.
>
> In the event Baur's Kondor did not arrive. The special arrangements for receiving him were nonetheless kept in force.

---

[27] Padfield, *op. cit.*, pp. 85-86: Padfield here mentions yet another peace initiative that came from Sweden via personal representatives of *Reichsmarschall* Göring in July 1940, in which the offer was essentially that Britain had to recognize all German conquests in Europe, and allow Germany a "free hand" on the continent in return for German support and recognition of British imperial interests. In this proposal, Germany was apparently ready to throw off its pending alliance with Japan, and to contribute to British defense against the Japanese! This initiative is noteworthy because it resembles the components of Hess' plan insofar as the "free hand in Eastern Europe" is concerned, but omits the general peace plan parameters regarding Western Europe and "the Jewish Question". It *does,* however, show that Göring was also involved in these peace efforts. Padfield maintained that this effort was done with Hitler's knowledge.

> They were about to be called off in May (1941), but Hess' arrival in Scotland caused the Air Ministry to continue them until the end of the month. Finally on 1 June they were annulled...
>
> It is possible that this curious plot had some connection with Hess' mission.[28]

Again, Padfield dismisses the idea that Baur could be involved in such a plot on the basis of his loyalty to Hitler,[29] but it should *also* be noted that according to Padfield, *it was Baur who supplied Hess with the highly secret air defense maps of Germany that enabled the first leg of Hess' flight*![30]

Like everything else in the Hess Mess, Padfield's reconstruction is certainly possible: certainly one can view the whole Baur plot as a strange footnote, and dismiss the whole idea that Baur would ever have flown Hitler and his entourage to Britain. But psychology and personal loyalty are a flimsy basis on which to argue a scenario in which mind control drugs and *doppelgängers* have already made a heavy appearance!

So let us consider the alternative, that the Baur story *is* true, and that Hitler's personal pilot *did* offer to fly Hitler himself, and his entourage, in their big Focke-Wulf Condor into Britain and hand the whole rotten ring of rogues over to the British. Does this make sense in the wider scenario of a peace plan that, moreover, was a possible *bi-lateral coup-d'etat* plot against both Hitler *and* Churchill? I contend it makes *eminent* sense, for a very important reason: the capture of Hitler and his staff would represent not only a coup d'etat successfully accomplished, it would be the seal of *bona fides* on whatever deal had already been concluded by Hess and his backers on the one hand, and Hamilton and his on the other. In this respect, let us recall that Baur was the one who gave Hess his flight map. Baur might thus, additionally, explain the curiously ambiguous presence and behavior of Göring himself in the Hess Mess, who is involved in one peace initiative *with Hitler* via Sweden, and yet feigning ignorance of *Hess'* initiative when summoned to the Berghof after Hess' flight, which he *fully* knew about, since he ordered General Galland to shoot Hess down, long after it was possible to do so! Göring is the clue that suggests that Hitler knew of the Hess mission, *but only to a limited extent*; he was obviously kept out of any knowledge that the "peace plan" was also a coup d'etat plan. With Hitler out of the way in Britain, the British faction could have moved against Churchill, while Hess returned to Germany to "take control".[31]

---

[28] Padfield, *op. cit.*, pp. 121-122.
[29] *Ibid.*, p. 122.
[30] *Ibid.*

B. The Holocaust Hypothesis and the Hess Peace Plan

Whatever one makes of the previous speculations, or of the case that Hess' mission included proposals for dealing with the "Jewish question" in terms of a homeland, Padfield notes something else;

> It is probably significant that on 20 May, 1941, ten days after Hess had taken off on his flight for peace, and still nothing having been heard from the British, the Reich Central Office of Emigration issued instructions on *Göring's authority* banning further emigration of Jews from the Reich; the reason given was the 'doubtless approaching final solution (*Endlösung*)...
>
> If these orders are indeed linked to the apparent failure of Hess' mission they add credibility to de Courcy's claim that the peace proposals Hess brought included the resettlement of European Jews in Palestine.[32]

Indeed, Göring's role in the Hess Mess is once again under suspicion, for if he *was* involved in Hess' plans and more thoroughly briefed about them than was Hitler, he would have wanted to conceal his involvement in trying to thwart the "extermination option" favored by Hitler for the far more benign "homeland" options apparently negotiated by Hess and his British counterparts.

With this decree, he did so, and then some.

In this respect it should also be recalled that—in the view of Picknett, Prince, and Prior—Hess was not coming to Britain to *discuss* the peace plan, but rather, to *conclude* and *seal* a deal that had already *been* negotiated.

---

[31] Assuming of course, that Göring would have allowed him to do so!

[32] Padfield, *op. cit.*, p. 277, emphasis added.

This implies that extreme pressure was placed on the deal's demise, and, as Picknett, Prince, and Prior have suggested, may have been a factor in the Duke of Kent's tragic demise in an airplane crash, along with, as they aver, the real Rudolf Hess himself. It was a *return* flight. If the features of Hess' peace plan, including those for a Jewish-Zionist homeland were known, this in turn implies something truly profound, and tragic, for it implies *that someone on the British side* ***wanted*** *the extermination and genocide to proceed*: "It is not difficult to see why these proposals had to be buried," Padfield writes,

> ...If they had leaked to the governments of the occupied western countries in exile in London, and to the dedicated advocates of compromise peace in Parliament and the City of London and among the country's great landowners, or to isolationists in the United States, then arming Britain to continue the struggle, Churchill would have been in dire trouble. The plan Hess brought with him showed diabolical ingenuity: the proposals could hardly be refused, yet they came from a man, Hitler, who had broken every treaty and solemn undertaking he had made, and could not be trusted".

This was, indeed, as we have seen, a *sine qua non* of the British peace faction: Hitler had to go before a peace could be concluded. But if that is the case, then Hess' arrival to "seal a deal already negotiated" implies that on the German side, there was agreement to remove Hitler, and this implies that Hess was a part of it. Thus,

> There is another possible reason for the continuing secrecy over Hess' mission: that is, if he brought a warning about the impending fate of European Jewry.

This, of course, makes sense, for given Hess' position atop the Nazi Party hierarchy itself, plus all his other state, party, and intelligence appointments and connections, and as we have observed previously, there was little that happened in the Third Reich before 1941, including atomic bombs and "final solutions," that Hess was not privy to. Consequently:

---

[33] Padfield, op. cit., pp. 346-347.

> Hess also knew of the preparations for the *Endlösung*, the 'final solution' to the Jewish problem in Europe. If he revealed that too, Churchill's failure either to denounce or act to stop the coming slaughter could so damage perceptions of his and Britain's wartime record as to justify hiding the fact for ever.
>
> There was, of course, nothing Churchill could have done. Had he accepted the peace plan it would only have made the assault on Russia more certain, and Hitler could not have been relied on to keep any promise to deport rather than physically annihilate the Jews.[34]

But as we have seen, Churchill had already acted contrary to the desires of the Chamberlain government and Peel Commission for a Jewish homeland, and in any case, Hess had not come to negotiate with *Churchill*, but with other parties altogether, and under Royal protection—as he claimed—to boot. He aim was to *replace* Churchill's government with one more amenable to peace, and ultimately to replace Hitler's government. With both new governments in favor of a Jewish-Zionist homeland, a peace could be concluded.

All of these considerations suggest that somewhere within the bowels of the deep states of Britain, the USA, and Nazi Germany itself, a decision either had been taken—or had been manipulated—for genocide. And that implies a transnational network to manipulate that decision, with an agenda of its own.

Is there any evidence to suggest something so monstrous and hideous?

Sadly, there is, and it is a little known but highly suggestive and explosive fact lurking in the center of the Hess Mess that, as far as I am aware, no other author has ever previously considered in relationship to it.

---

[34] Padfield, *op. cit*., pp. 347-348. See also Padfield's statement on p. 349: "...if Hess gave advance warning of German preparations for genocide in the east Churchill would certainly have communicated this explosive information to Roosevelt, and both would have borne equal responsibility for the subsequent silence and inaction". But "inaction" may have served someone *else's* goals perfectly.

C. The Nordau Quotation and Its Implications for the Hess Mess

To explain this explosive fact, I must first resort to some personal history. I first became aware of this sensational bit of information in 1983, after reading a trilogy of fictional novels by Gloria Vitanze Basile—a noted authoress of romance novels in the 1970s and 1980s—called the *Global 2000 Trilogy.* This trilogy was, however, a complete departure for Ms. Basile from her normal romance novel fare, for these were a thoroughly researched but fictionalized version of grand conspiracy theory novels.

In the second of the novels comprising this trilogy, *The Eye of the Eagle*, Ms. Basile began certain chapters or sections of the novel with carefully chosen epigraphs from various sources dating back to the French Revolution, and even including some statements by the famous 19th century British Prime Minister Benjamin Disraeli. Over the years, I was able to verify the veracity of these quotations, all except one, *this* one, by the prominent Zionist leader Max Nordau;

> How dare the smooth talker, the clever official babblers, open their mouths and boast of progress? Here they hold jubilant Peace Conferences, talk against war. But these same righteous governments who are so noble, industriously active to establish eternal peace are preparing, by their own confession, the complete annihilation of six million Jews and there is nobody, except the doomed themselves, to raise his voice in protest, although this is a worse crime than any war'.[5]

The problem with the Nordau Quotation (as I and the few with whom I shared it began to call it) was that it was allegedly made *in 1911, fully three years before the beginning of World War* **One**, *and therefore, obviously fully* **thirty-one** *years prior to the 1942 Wannsee conference authorizing the Final Solution.* In fact, *this quotation, if true, was the* ***first*** *occurrence of the number "six million" in connection with the Holocaust,* ***long before the Holocaust had even occurred!***

I cannot convey to the reader my stunned shock, and the nauseating, horrifying feeling, that overtook me when I read this.

---

[55] Gloria Vitanze Basile, *The Eye of the Eagle* (New York: Pinnacle Books, 1983). p. 127, citing Max Nordau, 1911.

And the disturbing problem was, *every* ***other*** epigraph Ms. Basile had cited was verifiable, which put this quotation in the disturbing context that it might be true.

Stop for a moment and ponder its implications, taking Mr. Nordau's statements at face value, for when one *does* so what emerges is the following set of assertions:

1) A mass human sacrifice of Jews was being pre-planned;
2) The European powers knew about and were to some extent involved in the plan; but,
3) His quotation also implies that the Zionist leaders *also* somehow knew about the plan, and this implies their own potential involvement in it at some level, if only that of knowing about it; and,
4) This is the first occurrence of the number of "six million" in connection with it; and finally,
5) All of the above implies some international network of vast proportions, capable of pulling all this off.

Needless to say, I spent several years quietly and cautiously trying to verify the existence of this quotation.

Verification of the quotation finally came almost a decade later, when a friend of mine and I made a trip to the Library of Congress in Washington, D.C., for the express purpose of doing so. We were looking for a specific book, edited by Rabbi Stephen Wise (!) called *Max Nordau to his People*. In that book, several of Nordau's speeches to pre-World War One Zionist congresses were translated, and there Nordau's quotation exists, *although in Wise's version, the phrase refers not to six million Jews but six million "creatures"*, although Wise, in a footnote, remarks that this was "said before World War One!"[36]

---

[36] While I'm telling a personal history, I might as well add that initially my friend and I used the computer system to find the book, and then filled out the call slip and presented it at the desk in the main reference room of the Library of Congress. Approximately a half an hour later, the clerk informed us that the book could not be found in the stacks! I refused to believe this, and, for a reason I can only write down to providence, decided to look on the shelves in the main reference room which included a number of books on Judaica, and sure enough, there on the shelves, *where it should not have been*, was Rabbi Wise's book! My

Subsequently, I was able to verify yet *another* form of the same quotation in the book by famous Jewish playwright and sometime contributor of teleplays to Rod Serling's *Twilight Zone,* Ben Hecht, in his book *Perfidy*, about the trial of a Zionist doctor, Rudolf Kastner, in Israel for his complicity with Adolf Eichmann in helping round up Jews for the Holocaust! It is worth quoting Hecht's own astonishment, and his version of the Quotation:

> In the Zionist Congress of 1911, 22 years before Hitler came to power, and three years before World War I, Nordau said, "How dare the smooth talkers, the clever official blabbers, open their mouths and boast of progress... Here they hold jubilant peace conferences in which they talk against war.... But the same righteous Governments, who are so nobly, industriously active to establish the eternal peace, are preparing, by their own confession, *complete annihilation for six million people,* and there is nobody, except the doomed themselves, to raise his voice in protest although this is a worse crime than any war."..[37]

What must be noted is the discrepancies between various versions of the Nordau Quotation:

1) Basile's version: six million *Jews*;
2) Wise's version: six million *creatures*;
3) Hecht's version: six million *people*;
4) Robert John's version: six million *people*[38]

Ultimately of course, the original German would resolve the issue, but all my attempts to locate this have proven to meet—uncannily—with a complete lack of success. The original German, *Stenographisches Protokollen der Zionisten Kongressen*, is available,

---

friend and I quickly photocopied the copyright deposit notice—which, incidentally, indicated the book had been accepted for copyright deposit in December, 1941, a few days after Pearl Harbor—and we photocopied the actual page on which the Nordau Quotation occurred, and then beat a very hasty retreat from Washington D.C.!

[37] Ben Hecht, *Perfidy* (New York: Julian Messner, Inc., 1961), p. 254, n.4, emphasis in the original.

[38] See Robert John, *op. cit.*, p. 44, n., where the Quotation exists in the form of "six million people".

but curiously, in versions I have been able to find, the Nordau Quotation is curiously absent. The important point to note, however, is that the fact that these minutes of the Zionist congresses were in German means that Hess may have known of it.[39]

Nonetheless, the four secondary sources for it comprise an interesting mix, for Rabbi Wise was certainly pro-Zionist, while Robert John and Basile could certainly be called anti-Zionist, or at least in Basile's case, highly skeptical, with Ben Hecht, a Jew himself, occupying a curious middle ground of someone appalled, and one might say, surprised and mystified at the very idea of a Zionist (Dr. Kastner) collaborating with a notorious Nazi such as Eichmann.

D. Taking Stock

What emerges from this are a set of implications that, when considered together, *begin* to approach an answer to that One Question that has been hovering uneasily over the whole landscape of the Hess Mess: what was the big secret that had to be kept, and kept secret to this day? In this respect, we take note again that the Hess files—as various researchers have pointed out—have already been carefully *weeded*, and thus, even with the presumed declassification of some Hess files this year, one must regard this source as tainted, for we will simply not know the extent of this weeding, nor, indeed, the extent to which files have been falsified, planted, or obfuscated.

In any case, what has emerged thus far is a disturbing picture:

1) Hess undertook his peace mission with the knowledge of Hitler, but this knowledge on Hitler's part was limited, and probably designed to throw him off the scent of a plot that was ultimately designed to overthrow his government;

---

[39] Speculating further, it also means that some knowledge of the implications of the Nordau Quotation might be lurking in the background of Hitler's notorious and chilling speech to the *Reichstag* in January, 1939, which begins "*Ich will wieder ein Prophet sein.*".. (I will today again be a prophet...).

2) Hess was also apparently involved in this plot with Hermann Göring, whose own role was suspiciously ambiguous, as has been pointed out in the previous chapters;
    a) Göring called General Adolf Galland and ordered him to scramble fighters to intercept Hess and shoot him down, but did so *after* any chance of success in this respect was doomed to failure. Göring thus demonstrated inside knowledge of Hess' mission *before it became more widely known throughout the rest of the Nazi hierarchy.*
    b) Göring then *subsequently* denied knowing anything about it at the conference at the Berghof following the flight, and then
    c) Göring promulgated an order that prohibited emigration of Jews from the Reich *after* no British response to Hess' flight had been forthcoming;
    d) Göring's role is further, though indirectly, implicated by the Baur Plot, since Baur allegedly had contacted the British via Bulgaria to fly Hitler and his staff into captivity. While this plot has never been verified, Baur did supply Hess with a very secret map of forbidden "no fly" zones in the Reich's air defense system, and this implies that authorization for supplying such a map to Hess would have come from the highest *Luftwaffe* authority, i.e., Göring.
3) Hess undertook his flight with the belief that he was under Royal protection, a belief he repeatedly signaled to his British captors, to seal a peace deal with elements of the British deep state, represented by the Duke of Hamilton and the Duke of Kent;
4) Once in Britain, however, due to miscalculations during the course of the flight, Hess had to bail out of his aircraft, while a reception committee comprising the Duke of Hamilton was waiting to be informed of his arrival at an RAF base.
5) Because of the bail-out, Hess was apprehended by elements *not* involved in the scheme, and it was some time before the

pro-peace faction—in the scenario of Picknett, Prince, and Prior—was able to re-establish control over the real Hess;

6) During his first days in captivity, Hess was drugged, and covertly measured for a duplicate *Luftwaffe* captain's uniform, which many involved at the time thought was to be for the use of a double;
7) Then, at some point—probably at Maindiff or shortly before his transfer to Maindiff—the real Hess, according to Picknett's, Prince's, and Prior's scenario, is transferred to Scotland, while a double is created and undergoes drugging and other tests to implant false memories;
8) The real Hess, in Picknett's, Prince's, and Prior's scenario, then crashes with the Duke of Kent, who appeared to be on a highly secret mission to fly him to Sweden;
9) The other "Hess" then takes the real Hess' place at Nuremberg, where "Hess" then exhibits very erratic behavior, claiming amnesia, and then, recovered memories, and at first does not recognize Göring. Allen Dulles, leader of the American OSS in Switzerland, suspects that "Hess" is really a double, and brings in Dr. Ewen Cameron of subsequent MK-Ultra fame, to examine the prisoner. The presence of Dr. Cameron suggests that Dulles might also have suspected some mind control was in evidence;
10) Dr. Ewen Cameron, as was pointed out in previous pages, has the same clan surname of the British forensic pathologist, Dr. James MacDonald Cameron, who performed the official autopsy on "Hess" after the latter was "suicide" in Spandau in August 1987. As was pointed out, both Camerons did their medical studies *in the same medical school in Glasgow*;
11) Dr. W. Hugh Thomas subsequently alleges that Spandau Hess lacks the appropriate scarring from his World War One wounds, and claims that Spandau Hess is a double;
12) Adding fuel to the double theory is the fact that Spandau Hess, as the last surviving "Reich Minister," was never approached, nor did he ever sign, any official document outlawing the Nazi Party, which, presumably, he had at least *some* status in law to do, since he was Hitler's Deputy

to the Party! Of course, if he was a double, he had no legitimate authority to do so, nor, if he was *not* a double, would any such document have been legitimate since it was signed under duress. Adding to the legal complications, we also saw that, according to Hess' son Wolf-Rüdiger, Stalin had offered to allow German reunification both to then Chancellor Adenauer, and to Spandau Hess, who refused whatever terms might have been communicated to him!

13) In the midst of all the other confusion, Hess appears to have offered, as part of his peace plan, to allow a Jewish-Zionist homeland in Palestine, and since his mission was less to *discuss* rather than to *seal* a deal, one must assume that the British factions with which he was in contact also agreed to this plan. The fact that the plan fell through suggests that in this respect someone *wanted* the genocide to proceed, a disturbing implication, given the pattern of examples of Nazi-Zionist complicity documented in this chapter.

14) A scenario thus emerges—though, like everything else in the Hess Mess, can remain only an argued speculation and hypothesis—that Hess was on a coup-d'etat and peace mission—to replace Hitler, negotiate a peace with elements in Britain that were to replace Churchill. If one adds the alleged "Baur airplane-kidnapping" plot to the mix, then the latter may be viewed as the establishing of *bona fides* on the German side, for the British peace faction had repeatedly insisted that no peace was possible with Hitler in power. What better way to establish the good faith of the German side, than to deliver Hitler to the British, in Hitler's own plane, to boot?

Yet, even with all of this, we have still not examined all the debris in the junkyard of the Hess Mess.

There's one more important thing to be examined...

... and that's The Penguin Problem.

PART TWO:

THE PENGUIN PROBLEM.

OR,

A FINAL BIT OF ICING ON THE HESS MESS

"By these various means we aim to expose the fallacy of reasoning of Szabo, Robert, Stevens, Farrell, Bernhart, Friedrich, Mattern and others, and to convince the reader that the supposed mysteries surrounding German, British and American activities in Antarctica in this period result from a combination of inadequate research, vivid imagination, pure fakery and wishful thinking".

Colin Summerhayes and Peter Beeching,
"Hitler's Antarctic Base: the myth and the reality,"
Polar Record 43(224)1-21, (2007)

Highjump was primarily a military operation, and not a scientific expedition. It was one of a series of military operations designed to train the navy in Polar operations".

Colin Summerhayes and Peter Beeching,
"Hitler's Antarctic Base: the myth and the reality,"
Polar Record 43(227)1-21, (2007)

7

PENGUINS AND THE PEACE PLAN

"As commissioner for the Four-Year Plan, Göring knew the importance for Germany of whaling in Antarctica, and how essential it was to ensure this, and to open up new fishing grounds. It seemed high time for him to send a large expedition to Antarctica.
"On May 9, 1938, a plan for an Antarctic expedition, drawn up by the staff of his ministry, which was to he carried out in the Antarctic summer of 1938/39, was presented to him. He approved, and commissioned Helmut Wohlthat as Minister-Director for special projects, with the preparation of the expedition, and conferred upon him all his powers of authority".
Heinz Schön[1]

AND THEN THERE'S THE "PENGUIN PART" of the Hess Mess. Most readers of my books, blogs, and regular listeners to my interviews, will know that I have never subscribed to the idea that there was a big German "secret base" in Antarctica, whether for submarines or, as one version of the story has it, for "secret research on flying saucers". I have pointed out any number of commonplace and very ordinary problems with these ideas, chief among them that (1) during World War Two, the German Navy would simply not be up to the logistical challenge of building and supplying such a base, and (2) one would have to have a source of power for the base, and that would require a *power plant*, with materials and construction and technical personnel having to be lugged from Germany, and so on. From the standpoint of the massive war effort Germany was to deploy in Europe, such a massive undertaking would have taxed powers with even larger industrial bases, such as the United States, or powerful navies, such as Great Britain, let alone Germany.

All of this, of course, argues quite strongly against secret Antarctic UFO basis, U-boat bases and so on. If anything, as I have stated in numerous interviews, at best the Germans might have been able to construct—and possibly maintain—a small automated weather station such as those that they deployed in the Arctic.

---

[1] Heinz Schön, *Mythos Neu-Schwabenland*: *Für Hitler am Südpol*: *Die deutsche Antarktis-expedition* 1939/39 (Selent, Germany: BONUS-Verlag, 2004), p. 11, my translation from the German.

The implication of the epigraph beginning this chapter is that the Göring Antarctic expedition was largely a scientific expedition, as indeed it was. Germany needed lubricants, food, and the whaling and fishing resources, and the southern polar region fit the bill perfectly. Indeed, it is difficult to imagine Hermann Göring sponsoring anything—expeditions or otherwise—that did not have an immediate or long-term benefit to the German economy or armed forces. Antarctica represented a vast, untapped continent of *resources.*

However, I have consistently maintained through the years that Hess was involved in this expedition. Yet, there has been, until recently, little evidence to connect Hess to the expedition. Hess' involvement—if any—changes the complexion of the expedition. But what, if any, is the evidence for Hess' involvement in the matter?

A. Heinz Schön and Operation Highjump

1. A Brief Review of Antarctic Strangeness

The problem with the "resources" explanation, however, is that it does not seem to explain the strange history of the people associated with the southern continent. It might, for example, explain the interest of Hermann Göring, or after the war, of American polar explorer Admiral Byrd and the U.S. military. It might explain the interest of U.S. Secretary of State John Kerry, who visited the southern continent in late 2016 while on a diplomatic junket, and during one of the most hotly contested and important U.S. elections in decades. It might explain even the visit of King Juan Carlos of Spain.

But resources as the sole interest in Antarctica begin to break down when one contemplates the visit to Antarctica in 2016 of former Apollo 11 astronaut Buzz Aldrin, or the 2016 visit of the Patriarch of Moscow, Kiril III. Other stories, at this point, had to be contrived to explain the strange list of visitors. Secretary Kerry's visit was explained as having to do with global warming; there never was a cover story for Aldrin, but in Kiril Ill's case the official explanation was that he was there to bless the Orthodox chapel in the Russian mission. It was, in other words, it was a patriarchal photo op.

None of this, of course, mentioned or included Rudolf Hess. Even so, it is a strange list of people when looked at "whole":

1) *Reichsmarschall* Hermann Goring, creator of the *Luftwaffe* and the Gestapo;
2) Admiral Richard Byrd, famed American polar explorer;
3) Secretary of State John Kerry;
4) The Patriarch of Moscow Kiril III;
5) Apollo 11 astronaut Buzz Aldrin; and
6) King Juan Carlos of Spain and other royals.

The list could be added to, and made much stranger, but perhaps the point is made, for the list would appear to be too strange for the simple "resources" or even the global warming/climate change explanations. Add Rudolf Hess to this list, and it becomes downright bizarre.

2. Disturbing Questions about Highjump

a. The German Antarctic Expedition and State Councillor Wohlthat

Just how strange Antarctica is can be measured by a more detailed—though unfortunately, necessarily brief—glance at the post-war American Operation Highjump. On the face of it, neither the pre-war German expedition, nor the post-war American expedition appear all that strange. For example, Heinz Schön, who has written the only thorough survey of both expeditions, writes that the scientific tasks of the German expedition were well-thought-out and thoroughly practical; the German expedition was to:

1) Survey the coast and interior by photogrammetry and thus produce more accurate maps;
2) Obtain meteorological data of upper atmospheric conditions by means of weather balloons and radiosondes and aircraft mapping of prevailing winds, and so on;

3) Obtain a profile of the ocean ground by echo sounding, survey currents and temperature conditions;
4) Make careful observations on whales, birds, and wildlife conditions;
5) Test nautical equipment and current German maps, tables, and depth measurements.

In other words, the expedition was to make as thorough a survey, in as brief a time of the Antarctic summer as it could, in the areas of geography, oceanography, biology, and navigational science.[2]

Görings interest, in other words, was entirely economic, and thus, in the long term, military. Here, however, one encounters a "strangeness" that will only be revealed when viewed in connection to the Hess Mess:

> As commissioner for the Four-Year Plan, Göring knew the importance for Germany of whaling in Antarctica, and how essential it was to ensure this, and to open up new fishing grounds. It seemed high time for him to send a large expedition to Antarctica.
>
> On May 9, 1938, a plan for an Antarctic expedition, drawn up by the staff of his ministry, which was to be carried out in the Antarctic summer of 1938/39, was presented to him. He approved, and commissioned Helmut Wohlthat as Minister-Director for special projects, with the preparation of the expedition, and conferred upon him all his powers of authority.[3]

State Councilor (*Staatsrat*) *Helmut Wohlthat*

---

[2] Heinz Schön, *op. cit.*, p. 12.

[3] *Ibid.*, p. 11, my translation from the German.

What is so unusual about Helmut Wohlthat, besides being Göring's "plenipotentiary" for the Antarctic expedition? Wohlthtat *also* became one of Göring's own "peace ambassadors" as the German representative to the International Whaling Commission in London in June 1939. There he attempted to make back-channel contacts with the Chamberlain Government via one of the Prime Minister's advisors on industrial affairs.[4]

What this implies is that in any comprehensive peace negotiation with Britain, Antarctica would inevitably be included. Wohlthat's role was crucial, for in effect it was he who planned the *details* of the Antarctic expedition, including the choice of its captain, Alfred Ritscher.[5] There is a hint that Antarctica figured in some greater long term design—at least as far as Göring was concerned—in his congratulatory telegram sent to Captain Ritscher on the expedition's return to Germany in early 1939. The telegram reads:

> To Captain Ritscher,
> Leader of the German Antarctic Expedition,
> 7 March, 1939:
>
> I congratulate you most cordially on the important success which you and your expedition have earned in the exploration of a large area of Antarctica. I am proud of the excellent commitment of the pilots, the successful work of the scientists and the exemplary attitude of the whole crew. You and your expedition have been able to build on the greatest tradition of German research and have *performed a service worthy of the position of Greater Germany in the world*, (signed) Göring, Reichsmarschall.[6]

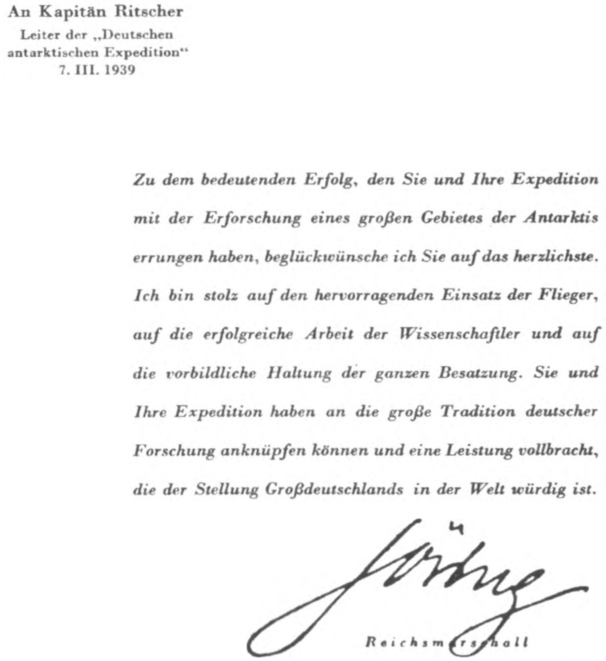
The final phrase of this telegram implies that Göring viewed the German expedition as connected to "Greater Germany's" geopolitical position, and that the expedition was *not*, therefore, simply an exercise in detached, altruistic "science," and thus, the use of Wohlthat as a personal peace emissary and representative of Göring himself, whom it will be recalled from previous chapters was viewed by the British as a "reliable" German, is telling. Wohlthat's position as Göring's emissary suggests that Antarctica figured largely in Göring's views of a postwar world, and therefore, in whatever peace was to be negotiated.

---

[4] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 98.

[5] Heinz Schon, *op. cit.*, p. 17.

[6] My translation from the German, emphasis added.



An Kapitän Ritscher
Leiter der „Deutschen
antarktischen Expedition"
7. III. 1939

Zu dem bedeutenden Erfolg, den Sie und Ihre Expedition mit der Erforschung eines großen Gebietes der Antarktis errungen haben, beglückwünsche ich Sie auf das herzlichste. Ich bin stolz auf den hervorragenden Einsatz der Flieger, auf die erfolgreiche Arbeit der Wissenschaftler und auf die vorbildliche Haltung der ganzen Besatzung. Sie und Ihre Expedition haben an die große Tradition deutscher Forschung anknüpfen können und eine Leistung vollbracht, die der Stellung Großdeutschlands in der Welt würdig ist.

Göring
Reichsmarschall

Hermann Göring's Congratulatory Telegram to Captain Alfred Ritscher

This is not simply argued speculation, for it is clear that Germany was not simply engaged in "scientific research," *but was staking a claim in Antarctica,* for on his return to Germany, Captain Ritscher

> ...was astonished to learn, in conversation with the State Councilor Wohlthat, that on January 18 1939, before the Motorship *Schwabenland* had even arrived in the working region of the Antarctic Expedition, that the Reich Foreign Ministry in Berlin had received a Royal Resolution from Oslo, dated January 14 1939, which stated that the Queen Maud region of the Antarctic was claimed by Norway, and that the intention of the German Antarctic Expedition was therefore illegal. The Norwegian

> injunction against the German activities was justified by the fact that this area had been taken over by Norway after several Norwegian expeditions.
>
> The Ministry of Foreign Affairs reacted immediately. It informed the Norwegian ambassador in Berlin that the Government of the German Reich rejected the possession of this area by Norway.
>
> The fact was that Norwegians had not researched and entered any part of Queen Maud Land, which received the name Neu-Schwabenland by the German research conducted there, and that at no time had this territory been explored until the Antarctic expedition of 1938/39.[7]

In effect, what the German Foreign Ministry was claiming was two-fold: (1) the Norwegian government had not mounted nor sustained any recent exploration of the region and therefore had forfeited claim to the territory;[8] and (2) it had no claim in any case to Neu-Schwabenland, because it had never explored that far inland.

The bottom line, however, was that Germany *was* staking a sovereign claim, and that Norway recognized that fact and was rejecting it. The matter, in so far as Norway and Germany were concerned, was settled with the German invasion and occupation of the country in 1940. But the matter was *not* settled, so far as the Norwegian government in exile, nor Great Britain were concerned.

At this point, of course, one is back to Hess and the Hess Mess, for it stands to reason that Antarctica would have been a component of his peace proposals. But is there any *evidence* to suggest this? Indeed there is, but this will have to wait. In the meantime, we must deal with the *other* curious expedition to Antarctica,

b. The Post-war American Expedition of Admiral Richard Byrd in 1946-47.

If there are suspicious smoke signals hovering over the German Antarctic expedition of 1938-39, this is even *more* the case with the American Expedition of 1946-47, codenamed "Operation

---

[7] Heinz Schön, *op. cit.*, p. 107, my translation from the Germa

[8] *Ibid.*

Highjump". Again, like the pre-war German expedition, its purpose was ostensibly scientific, for the expedition included civilian researchers, many of whom, however, as Heinz Schon notes, worked for the US Army or Navy. There were scientists from the American Geological Survey, The Fish and Wildlife Service, the Coast and Geodetic Survey.[9] There were also, however, over four thousand people involved, an aircraft carrier, a submarine, aircraft, helicopters, and a variety of special land transport equipment including tracked vehicles.

The explanation for all this military equipment? At that time, the *Arctic* was viewed as a potential theater of operations should war break out between the Soviet Bloc and the West, and therefore, it became essential to "test equipment" in the harsh polar environment... of Antarctica.[10] To this day, this explanation is employed by various people to debunk the idea that there was anything unusual going on, either in Antarctica, or with Operation Highjump. Admiral Byrd even published a one-hundred-page plus article in *National Geographic* to underscore this idea.[11]

It was just to test equipment, and demonstrate the necessity of the Navy and Arctic operational proficiency of men and equipment should war ever break out.

This explanation has never made sense to me, for it has always seemed to have more the feeling of "convenient explanation". After all, the USA possessed Alaska, which had equally rugged terrain in which to "test equipment" in Arctic conditions. Additionally, Alaska was closer to hand, easier to reach, and so one question immediately arises: Why haul all those men and all that equipment to *Antarctica,* and at great expense at that?

Even Heinz Schon, who, like this author, is not buying the idea of secret Nazi UFO and/or U-boat bases, and who for the most part sticks very closely to the documentation, seems uncomfortable with the public explanations: "Why this excitement so soon after the ending of the Second World War?" he asks. "What new war did the

---

[9] Heinz Schon, *op. cit.*, p. 119.

[10] *Ibid.*, p. 118.

[11] *Ibid.*

US have in mind when Byrd spoke of himself and the navy 'between the wars?'"[12]

The oddities of Operation Highjump do not end simply with its size nor with the public narratives advanced to explain it. Much more strange were the people involved in its *planning*, which began in 1946. Schon observes that the importance of Highjump to the USA is revealed by who was involved in its detailed planning, for the operational planning commission involved not just Admiral Byrd, but Rear Admirals Good and Cruzen, Vice-Admiral Forrest Sherman, the naval Chief of Staff, Fleet Admiral Chester Nimitz himself, and, perhaps most importantly, the Secretary of the Navy, James V. Forrestal.[13]

With the mention of Forrestal, we are once again in strange territory, for Forrestal would, of course, go on to become Secretary of Defense under President Truman, only to die a mysterious death when he allegedly committed suicide during a stay in Bethesda Naval Hospital, by tying a crude rope of towels and such, and leaping from his window. It is the same James Forrestal who appears as a member of the alleged Majic-12 or Majestic-12 UFO research committee in the Majic-12 documents, a fact which many Ufologists suspect is related to his alleged suicide, or perhaps, murder. His presence in the extraordinarily high level of planning for Operation Highjump would thus seem to suggest *other* possible motivations for his suicide or murder.

Before continuing with this brief review of Highjump, it is worth pausing to consider the strange parallels between the German-Göring Expedition of 1938-39, and the American Byrd-Forrestal expedition of 1946-47:

1) Both expeditions were planned at an extraordinarily high level, in effect, at *sub-cabinet* level, in the American case, and at *cabinet* level in the German case, since Forrestal as Secretary of the Navy is one step removed from the Federal Cabinet (which he would subsequently occupy as Secretary of Defense), and Göring as *Reichsmarschall,* Four-Year Commissioner, Hitler's designated successor in offices of

---

[12] *Ibid.*, p. 122, my translation from the German.

[13] Heinz Schon, *op. cit.*, p. 119.

state, and as Reichsminister, occupies a cabinet-level position;

2) Both expeditions are planned at an extraordinarily high level of *military* participation, with Fleet Admiral Chester Nimitz and *Reichsmarschall* Göring both being the commanders-in-chief of their respective service branches;
3) Both expeditions have similar missions and equipment: both are charged with making extensive *aerial photogrammetric surveys* of vast regions, for cartographic purposes. Both expeditions to this end employ aircraft carriers. The chief *difference* between the two expeditions is one of *scale*: the German expedition is a one-ship, seaplane-tender expedition with a small personnel commitment, and only two seaplanes to conduct its survey. The American expedition is much more substantial in terms of its financial and material commitments, with an actual aircraft carrier supplemented by a much larger land-based personnel contingent.

3. The Operational Plan of Highjump

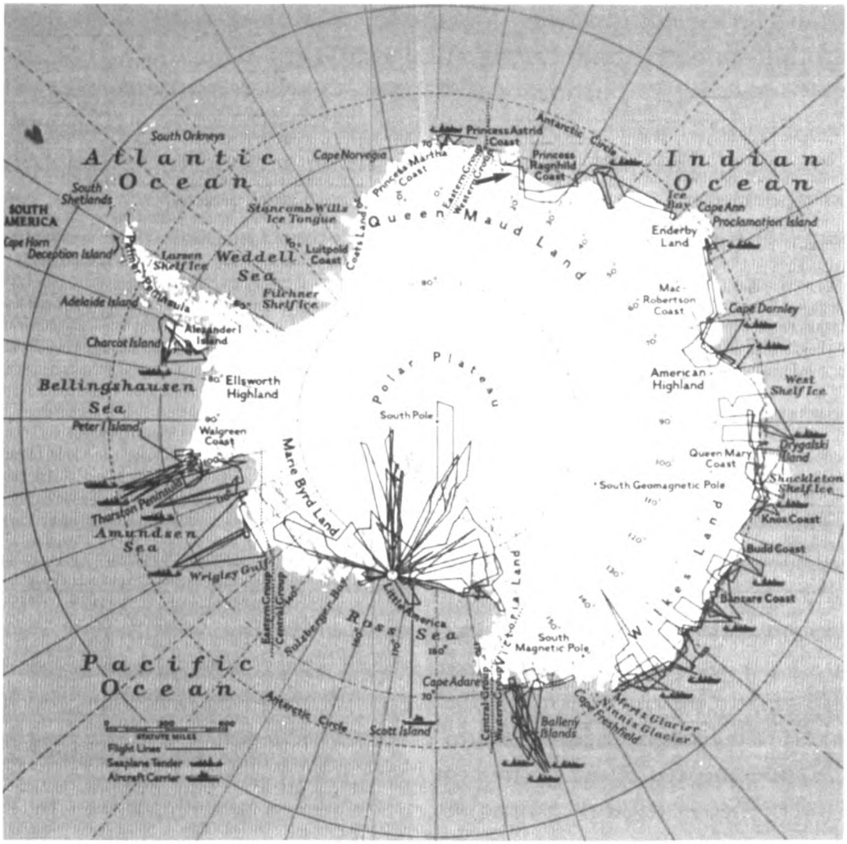
While these parallels are quite remarkable, there are other oddities about Highjump. When Admiral Byrd made his report of the expedition, he strangely omitted all reference to the 1938-39 German Neu-Schwabenland expedition,[14] a fact made even more strange by the additional fact that Byrd himself was brought to Nazi Germany prior to the German expedition in order to brief its captain and crew on conditions!

More importantly, the operational plan for Highjump involved three special groups, making landfall at three separate points on the continent, and then moving inland with aerial reconnaissance and photogrammetric efforts. Notably, none of the landing points were in Queen Maud-Neu-Schwabenland. These points might induce some to conclude, not unreasonably, that Operation Highjump had nothing whatsoever to do with the German Antarctic Expedition, or, to put it into cruder but starker relief, that Forrestal had nothing to do with Göring.

---

[14] Heinz Schön, *op. cit.*, p. 122.

Unfortunately, however, Admiral Byrd himself made statements that could be taken to undermine such an interpretation, and to place Highjump into a clear relationship with the earlier German expedition, for in the operational plan, two of the groups landing on the continent were to move toward the null longitude, that is to say, eastward, for the null longitude *laid within the claimed area of Queen Maud Land/Neu-Schwabenland.* As Byrd himself expressed it, it was an "encirclement of conquest" and an "attack from three fronts".[15]


South Orkneys
Atlantic Ocean
South Shetlands
SOUTH AMERICA
Cape Horn
Deception Island
Palmer Peninsula
Larsen Shelf Ice
Weddell Sea
Adelaide Island
Alexander I Island
Charcot Island
Bellingshausen Sea
Peter I Island
Ellsworth Highland
Walgreen Coast
Thurston Peninsula
Amundsen Sea
Wrigley Gulf
Pacific Ocean
Cape Norvegia
Stancomb-Wills Ice Tongue
Luitpold Coast
Filchner Shelf Ice
Coats Land
Princess Martha Coast
Princess Astrid Coast
Princess Ragnhild Coast
Queen Maud Land
Antarctic Circle
Indian Ocean
Ice Bay
Cape Ann
Proclamation Island
Enderby Land
Mac-Robertson Coast
Cape Darnley
American Highland
West Shelf Ice
Drygalski Island
Queen Mary Coast
South Geomagnetic Pole
Shackleton Shelf Ice
Knox Coast
Budd Coast
Banzare Coast
Wilkes Land
Polar Plateau
South Pole
Marie Byrd Land
Little America
Ross Sea
Sulzberger Bay
Eastern Group
Central Group
Western Group
Victoria Land
South Magnetic Pole
Cape Adare
Scott Island
Balleny Islands
Cape Freshfield
Ninnis Glacier
Mertz Glacier
Statute Miles
Flight Lines
Seaplane Tender
Aircraft Carrier

The Operation Highjump Landfalls and Coastal Expeditions. Notice the relative absence of coastal exploration in the Queen Maud Land/Neu-Schwabenland area.

---

[15] Heinz Schön, *op. cit.*, p. 122.

Or to put it country simple: even though Highjump's three main operational groups made landfall away from Neu-Schwabenland, the purpose of doing so was to create a continental-scaled "*Kesselschlacht*" or "encirclement battle" condition. Whatever one may make of this, Byrd's very non-scientific but very precisely *military* terms are suggestive that something else, besides mere scientific and cartographical or equipment-testing exercises were being conducted.

While there is absolutely nothing in the documentary evidence to suggest this, I have long suspected that both the German and American expeditions were *looking* for something with all the aerial photogrammetry and cartography that they were doing. Such a photogrammetry purpose would be the perfect public explanation for a much more covert and secret purpose of looking for something. That the American expedition seemed to be following an operational plan deliberately avoiding any *initial* venture into Neu-Schwabenland-Queen Maud Land suggests both the "advance on three fronts" of Admiral Byrd, but also that the American expedition was deliberately exploring areas left *unexplored* by its German antecedent. If the American expedition was an "advance on three fronts," then the question inevitably occurs: an advance against whom?

As already indicated, I do not adhere to the notion of a German base in Antarctica, at least, not of the large size suggested by all the "Last Battalion" mythologies. Highjump itself is testimony to the difficulties of sustaining large-scale military operations on that continent, even when backed by an economy and navy larger than anything the Third Reich was capable of during World War Two. So, if it was not Germans, then against whom were the Americans "advancing on three fronts"? Or were Admiral Byrd's remarks to be taken in a merely rhetorical and metaphorical sense, as implying an advance and conquest of the continent itself?

The heavy military presence in Highjump is underscored by its almost complete absence in the prewar German expedition, and suggests that Byrd was *not* speaking merely metaphorically; which leaves the question of "who was he advancing against?" hovering uncomfortably in the air.

4. The Strange Death of Admiral Richard Byrd's Son

Every now and then when writing these books, I encounter the oddest synchronicity: someone will send me information or material which I was not aware of, whose relevance to whatever project I am writing about is astonishing.

Such is the case here, for three days prior to writing this very chapter, I received from not one but no less than four individuals—none of whom, I am certain, know each other—the following story by Peter Kerr, which appeared in the *New York Times* on October 9, 1988: "Body of Adm. Byrd's Son, 68, Found in Empty Warehouse". The initial paragraphs of the article make for intriguing reading, to say the least:

> Richard E. Byrd Jr., who lived his life in the shadow of his father, the admiral and Arctic explorer, was found dead last week in the darkness of an abandoned warehouse in Baltimore, his emaciated body clad in dirt-blackened clothes and one scuffed shoe, the police there said yesterday.
>
> The 68-yeard-old Mr. Byrd, a graduate of Harvard University *who as a young naval officer escorted his father on a journey to Antarctica in 1947*, apparently died of malnutrition and dehydration, the police said.
>
> The body was discovered Monday by a custodian who said he had chased Mr. Byrd and another man from the area on Sept. 28, according to Detective Charles Gilbert of the Baltimore police homicide squad. It was unclear, the police said, how the elderly member of a prominent Massachusetts family had come to wander and sleep in an area of warehouses and factories in the city's Hampden section.
>
> "He was just wearing a shirt and pants and one shoe, and they all looked dirty," Detective Gilbert said, adding that the custodian who had chased Mr. Byrd and the other man recalled that "they had booze with them in a paper bag at the time".
>
> Mr. Byrd's family described him as a resident of the affluent Beacon Hill section of Boston.
>
> His son, Leverett Byrd of Needham, Mass., was quoted in The Baltimore Sun yesterday as saying that Mr. Byrd left Boston on Sept. 13 *to attend a ceremony at the Washington headquarters of the National Geographic Society.* The ceremony honored his father, Adm. Richard E. Byrd, the pioneer aviator and polar explorer, who achieved fame with his long-distance flights over the Arctic and expeditions to Antarctica from 1924 to 1956.

> "I put him on a train, and my wife was supposed to meet him," Leverett Byrd said. "What happened in between, I don't know. It's very strange, this whole thing. We're trying to come to grips with it".
>
> Admiral Byrd died in 1957. Richard Jr. was born in Boston, attended the Milton Academy and Harvard, joined the Navy and served as an officer in the Pacific during World War II. In 1948, he married Emily Saltonstall, the daughter of Senator Levertt Saltonstall of Massachusetts.[16]

While Richard Byrd Jr.'s death might be viewed as entirely unrelated to the strange goings-on in Antarctica, or to the wider "Hess Mess," it is worth noting that the entire purpose of his visit to Washington DC was to attend an honorarium for his father at the *National Geographic* headquarters, the very magazine that ran his father's lengthy article about Operation Highjump in 1947, an expedition he himself accompanied his father on. He might thus have "known something" that others feared might have come out. In any case, his well-to-do background belies his end as a starving and dehydrated tramp and hobo in an empty Baltimore warehouse, being seen in the company of another man. This strange episode raises the prospect that the other unknown man—who to my knowledge was never found or questioned—might have been a "handler," someone whose job was to ensure that Byrd Jr. never made his appointment. The fact that the whole episode was handled by a Baltimore homicide detective raises this possibility even more.

B. Penguins, *the Peace Plan*, *and the Hess Mess*: *What About Norway*?

So how does all this relate to the Hess Mess? One may argue, and persuasively at that, that the sheer number of positions that Hess filled and occupied both in the Nazi Party as its leader and Hitler's Deputy, and in the Reich government itself, and the vast number of intelligence agencies to which he was thereby linked and networked, made Hess privy to whatever discoveries the German

---

[16] Peter Kerr, "Body of Adm. Byrd's Son, 68, Found in Empty Warehouse," *New York Times,* October 9, 1988, emphasis added.

Antarctic Expedition of 1938-39 uncovered, whether disclosed or classified.

However, Picknett, Prince, and Prior uncovered information in their dogged researches that make such awareness on Hess' part almost certain. On May 20, 1941, a mere ten days after Hess' arrival in Great Britain, the Foreign Secretary, Anthony Eden, wrote the following letter to Prime Minister Winston Churchill:

> I saw (Sir John) Simon and I think he will be willing to undertake the task of which we spoke. He has asked for 24 hours to consider the matter. We are agreed that he should make it plain that the Government know of the interview but that it would be unwise for him to indicate close collaboration with you and me—rather the reverse. Simon will be fully briefed before he goes to the interview and I propose to write him a letter saying that you and I would be glad if he would undertake this take.
>
> All this will be kept most secret and only Cadogan and I in the office are aware of the project.[17]

What was this "project"? The project was a meeting with Hess.

During the meeting, however, Simon asked Hess explicitly if he had come with Hitler's knowledge. Hess' reply was that he had come *without* the Führer's knowledge, to which he then added "*Absolut*!"[18] He then laughed and informed Simon that the terms that he, Hess, had written down for the British were the terms he had heard Hitler make on numerous occasions. Picknett, Prince, and Prior state that all of this slightly "spoiled" the effect of his reply that he had come *without* Hitler's knowledge.

But perhaps one needs to parse Hess' "*Absolut*!" response and subsequent laughter a bit more closely. As was argued in previous chapters, it would have been quite risky to keep any peace feelers entirely secret from Hitler. Rather, what I believe happened was that Hitler was apprised of those negotiations *but only to a limited extent*, since those negotiations had communicated both to Göring and to Hess and the Haushofers that no peace was negotiable so long as Hitler remained in power. Thus, the peace negotiations were also a complex bi-lateral coup d'etat process that included the overthrow of the Hitler and Churchill governments. Hess' "*Absolut*!" comment may thus be understood as a statement that Hitler was not informed of the full "absolute" extent of the peace being discussed.

---

[17] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *Double Standards*: *The Rudolf Hess Cover-up,* pp. 301-302.

[18] *Ibid*., p. 303-304.

But whatever one makes of this very speculative possibility, Simon's next inquiry is quite the crucial point, for he continued by asking Hess "about how the proposal *would affect other countries such as Norway* and Greece, to which Hess replied stiffly, 'The Führer had not pronounced'".[19] This is highly significant, for as has been seen, Norway rejected the German claim in Antarctica, and Germany rejected Norway's rejection, laying claim to Neu-Schwabenland on the basis that the German explorations of the interior extended beyond the region explored by Norway.

In short, I believe that the real context of Lord Simon's question about "Norway" should be understood to be an inquiry about Norway and all its claimed territories. The question, in other words, was about Antarctica. In this respect, it is worth mentioning that Hess brought with him a written peace proposal, both in German and English translation.[20] In other words, Hess brought with him an *actual treaty,* which makes eminent sense in view of what has been argued in previous chapters, that Hess came not to *continue* negotiations but rather *to conclude them.*

In any case, this document, which has not surfaced to this day, was taken to the BBC where various translation teams worked on their own translations of the German of various sections of the document.[21] This treaty document

> ... was taken very seriously. It was no vague list of demands or threats, but a detailed set of proposals intended to form the basis of a treaty between the two countries. It set our Germany's plans for eastward expansion and conflict with Russia and defined the respective spheres of influence of Germany and Britain. Although many of the proposals are by now familiar, there were others concerning areas other than the British Empire, such as the Suez Canal. Apparently, *the document recognized that there were*

---

[19] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 304, emphasis added.

[20] *Ibid.*, p. 306.

[21] *Ibid.*

> *parts of the world where their respective interests could come into conflict,* and made it clear that Hitler regarded the USSR as being within Germany's sphere of influence.[22]

In other words, the document was *comprehensive* in its scope, and Lord Simon's query about "Norway" should be seen and interpreted from that context and the previous disputes between Germany and Norway, the real implication being the large unclaimed areas of Antarctica, and what was to be done with spheres of interest on the strategically located and mineral-rich continent. Indeed, as we saw previously, the Polish government-in-exile figured into the negotiations between Hess and the British peace faction, and thus it would stand to reason that the Norway-Antarctica question figured into the mix as well.

The penguins were very *much* a part of the Hess Mess.

As for the document itself, the Hess Mess takes yet more strange turns and twists. Picknett, Prince, and Prior note that given its comprehensive scope and its dual translations, it was probably a bulky document, and therefore probably not capable of being carried on Hess' person, but in a briefcase which he had taken with him on his flight. The document may have burned with the briefcase along with Hess' Messerschmitt 110 when it crashed. In any case, it is not mentioned in any inventory of Hess' belongings.[23] They note, however, that it is also possible that the document was sent *ahead* of Hess, perhaps via Burkhart and the International Red Cross,[24] *or* that it may have been sent *after* Hess arrived, a circumstance which, they argue, also makes sense of "a cluster of three mysterious incidents that followed in the wake of Hess' arrival".[25]

The first of these incidents occurred on May 20, 1941, the very day that Anthony Eden was writing to Churchill about Lord Simon's upcoming visit with Hess, and ten days after the latter's arrival in Great Britain! On this occasion, a Dornier 217 flew from the German airbase at Alborg, Denmark, to an RAF airbase in Lincoln without any interference from the Royal Air Force, landed, and handed over a package to a waiting RAF officer, before taking off and returning to Alborg! All of this is in the record because the German pilot, Heinrich Scmitt, told of the episode in a 1970s interview. Additionally, Schmitt stated that the RAF undertook similar highly secret missions to Germany, with RAF planes and pilots landing at German airbases without any interference from the *Luftwaffe*,[26] a point which, again, implicates Göring in whatever ongoing processes were occurring.

---

[22] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 307, emphasis added.

[23] *Ibid.*

[24] *Ibid.*

[25] *Ibid.*, p. 308.

The final incident was revealed in 1979 by John McCowen, who in 1941 was a major with the 11th Fighter Group. According to McCowen, he was summoned by the group commander, Air Vice-Marshal Trafford Mallory, who informed him the group had received "a message from Germany" alerting them to an immanent raid by SS commandos, who would land at or near Luton, Bedfordshire during an air raid. McGowen was ordered to move an anti-aircraft gun unit to the area to intercept the raid, as its intended mission was to assassinate Hess! Picknett, Prince, and Prior state that the would-be SS assassins were apprehended by the British, with maps to Dungavel, and promptly executed without trial, the only two spies allegedly executed without any surviving record of a trial or of their execution![27] This raises, once again, the prospect that someone in Germany did *not* want the mission to succeed, just as elements in Britain did not, and that, similarly, there were elements in Germany that *did* want it to succeed, just as there were in Britain. In this case, the German element is betraying an assassination plot to the British, with the clear intent of asking the British to intervene and prevent it, which the latter obligingly do!

C. A Brief Review

So where have we ended up?

I believe that the main theses of the various researchers into the Hess Mess are correct in their general conceptual outlines, but that specific details need adjustment. For example:

---

[26] Picknett, Prince, and Prior, *op. cit.*, p. 308.

[27] *Ibid.*, p. 309.

1) W. Hugh Thomas and other advocates of the doubles hypothesis are correct: a *double* was replaced for Hess. Unlike Thomas, this replacement was not made by the Germans during the flight itself, but subsequently in Great Britain, where, according to the scenario outlined by Picknett, Prince, and Prior, Hess briefly fell out of the control of the Peace Faction, which ultimately regained control of him, and hid him in Scotland, awaiting a return flight with the Duke of Kent;
2) During his stay in Britain, both Hess and his double underwent sessions of drugging, the full extent and purpose of which we do not know. However, we *do* know that the original and real Hess was measured for a duplicate *Luftwaffe* captain's uniform, while the double "Hess" underwent what was most probably extensive drugging and psychological "programming" to become Hess. In this respect, we saw that there were unusual and possible connections between Ewen Cameron, the psychologist who would become such a central component of the postwar CIA's MK-Ultra mind control program, and who was the very doctor brought in by Allen Dulles to examine "Hess" at Nuremberg because of the latter's suspicion that "Hess" was a double, and Dr. James Macdonald Cameron, the British forensic pathologist who performed the official autopsy on "Hess" after his suspicious "suicide" in Spandau Prison in August 1987. In short, *Hess, and/or his double, became the first, and most infamous, example of mind-control on record.* In this respect, it should also be recalled that "Hess" maintained consistently that he—and others—were victims of some such technology, and attempted to rationalize and justify the Nazis' murderous and genocidal acts on this basis.
3) Hess and Göring both appeared to have been involved in peace negotiations with the British, both immediately prior to, and after, the outbreak of war. As noted in previous pages, Göring most certainly knew of Hess' plans, because he telephoned General Adolf Galland to shoot Hess' plane

down long after it was operationally possible to do so. Hess could not have undertaken a flight over Germany secretly without knowledge of the Luftwaffe's air defense grid, which was allegedly supplied to him in a map provided, in some accounts, by Hitler's personal pilot, Hans Baur himself! Baur, it will be recalled, was also implicated in a plot to fly Hitler and his personal entourage to Great Britain. While this may sound unfeasible, the basic outlines of the scenario as Picknett, Prince, and Prior have reconstructed it, is that both the German and the British ends of the peace negotiations were also involved in plans to remove their respective governments, Churchill in Great Britain, and Hitler in Germany. The reason for *this* aspect of the scenario was because, during the course of negotiations, both sides made it clear to the other that the current governments of both countries were unacceptable to the negotiators. On the British side, this included offers by the Polish government-in-exile of General Sikorski for the Duke of Kent to assume the long-vacant Polish throne.

4) Included in the peace plan, as Padfield revealed, was an attempt to settle "the Jewish question" without a genocide, but rather, with the establishment of a Jewish-Zionist state. In this respect, the Nordau Quotation enters the equation, for it implied the existence of a genocidal plan *before World War One,* in which the great powers, and the Zionist movement itself, are implicated. While such an assertion seems on the surface to be completely impossible, there is a pattern of unusual Zionist-Nazi collaboration during the war, as exemplified by the case of Dr. Rudolf Kastner, a Zionist doctor implicated, and tried, in Israel after the war, as covered by the famous Jewish American playwright Ben Hecht in his book *Perfidy,* in which Hecht makes explicit reference to Nordau's mysterious, supremely important, and highly troubling, statement. This is not only a crucial point but a horrifying one, for it implies that the failure of the Hess Mission, or a decision taken by either the German or British side of the equation to ensure that his mission was a failure, was also a decision taken to exercise and complete

whatever plot existed for such, and to which the Zionist leader Max Nordau referred in his unbelievable statement made prior to World War One. That there may be some such scheme in the background, whose exact lineaments are unknown to this day, would seem to be corroborated by the attempts of Israel to interview "Hess" while he was imprisoned at Spandau, attempts which the British government consistently rebuffed. Additionally, there is the strange allegation of Wolf Hess that Menachim Begin informed President Jimmy Carter during the Camp David peace summit with Egyptian President Anwar Sadat, that "Hess" must never leave Spandau alive. Israel did apparently follow the Hess Mess closely, because there were also the allegations made to Wolf Hess' wife, via a South African source, that Israel knew that "Hess" had been murdered by operatives of the SAS.

5) And to top off this explosive fuel tank, in the strangest bit of debris in the entire Hess Mess, it would appear that Antarctica was very much a subject of the covert and very secret negotiations made between Britain and Germany, with the inquiry of Lord Simon about Norway, in this final context, it is to be noted, that not only does Hess receive specific inquiry from Simon about Norway, but that one of Göring's own go-betweens for peace feelers with Great Britain was the very same State Councilor whom he appointed to oversee and manage the details of the German Antarctic Expedition of 1938-39, *Staatsrat* Helmut Wohlthat.
6) And finally, to round out this bizarre dataset, Admiral Richard Byrd described his Antarctic expedition as an "assault on three fronts," a kind of continental-scaled *Kesselschlacht* (battle of encirclement), against either a metaphorical enemy—the continent itself—or possibly against a much more literal, but unnamed one. Putting the biggest question mark of them all over this affair, Byrd's own son, who accompanied him on the expedition, dies under suspicious an unusual circumstances, emaciated, and dehydrated, in a Baltimore warehouse, when he was to be a

> guest of honor at a *National Geographic* event celebrating and honoring his father.

As promised, the Hess Mess is indeed a colossal, gigantic, inexplicable mess. There are no easy answers here; there are only uncomfortable synchronicities and questions bordering on the absurd and bizarre, and speculative scenarios whose sweep and scope or truly immense, bizarre, and horrifying.

But there is yet *one more* uncomfortable and bizarre synchronicity with which we must deal...

8

EPILOGUE: SPANDAU BALLET (AND YES, THIS TIME WE *DO* MEAN THE 1980s MUSIC GROUP)

"So true
Funny how it seems,
Always in time, but never in line for dreams,
Head over heels when toe to toe
This is the sound of my soul
This is the sound".
"True" lyrics, Spandau Ballet

WE BEGAN THIS ADVENTURE into the strange landscape of the Hess Mess by pointing out that the phrase "Spandau Ballet," which became the name of a successful 1980s rock group, was actually a German colloquialism or slang for the spasms of nerves in prisoners executed in the prison by hanging. As noted in the first chapter, I took this slang and colloquialism to refer also to the absurd dance of the four Allied powers once Prisoner Number Seven's death had been announced, and the equally absurd problems that emerged and then were rather weakly explained away. I noted in chapter one that the 1980s music group did appear to take their name from the slang expression, at least, that's the way *Wikipedia* put it, and of course, one must take anything at that source with several bags of salt.

As I wrote this book, however, it began to dawn on me that there may be more than just a synchronous connection of the group's name to the Hess Mess. One article, "Band Name Explained: Spandau Ballet—Almost Inescapable Artifacts," explained the name of the group—and the slang expression behind it—this way; Spandau Ballet designated

> Performers of a number of genres conveniently categorized under the common denominator 'new romance'. The band is from Islington, London.
>
> It is an almost inescapable fact that the band name was linked to the group in an indirect war. Journalist and disc jockey Robert Elms is said to have seen the words 'Spandau Ballet' on the wall of

> a Berlin loo, as part of a few lines jotted down there that, translated from German, come down to: ‘*Rudolf Hess dances his Spandau ballet all alone*’.
>
> Hess, was, as practically anyone over forty will know, the last Hitler-era prisoner, detained in Spandau Prison in the Berlin district of the same name.
>
> Yet the term ‘Spandau Ballet’ does not originate from this Berlin clink.
>
> Occasionally movies demonstrate how people have a tendency to dance a hasty little dance when bullets zing by their shins.
>
> Allied soldiers who were taken under fire by the German Spandau machine gun, spitting out 1,200 bullets per minute, were no different in that respect.[1]

Needless to say, the story of the band name’s origin in a bit of graffiti scrawled in a Berlin men’s toilet, whether true or not, caught my eye, as did the specific mention of Rudolf Hess.

Then the lyrics of two of that group’s major hits—“Gold” and “True”—began to run through my mind, and both revealed cryptic, perhaps unintentional, perhaps intentional, or perhaps merely synchronous, references to Hess. Consider the italicized lines from “Gold ”:

Thank you for coming home
I’m sorry that the chairs are all worn’
I left them here I could have sworn

These are my salad days
Slowly being eaten away
Just another play for today
Oh but I’m proud of you, I’m proud of you

Nothing left to make me feel small
Luck has left me standing to tall
Gold
Always believe in your soul
You’ve got the power to know
You’re indestructible

---

[1] “Band Name Explained: Spandau Ballet—Almost Inescapable artifacts,” www.bandnameexplained.com.2013/08/spandau-ballet.

Always believe in, because you are
Gold
Glad that you're bound to return
There's something I could have learned
You're indestructible, always believing

After the rush has gone
I hope you find a little more time
Remember we were partners in crime

It's only two years ago
The man with the suit and the face
You knew that he was there on the case
Now he's in love with you, he's in love with you
My love is like a high prison wall
But you could leave me standing so tall

Gold
Always believe in your soul
You've got the power to know
You're indestructible
Always believe in, because you are
Gold
I'm glad that you're bound to return
Something I could have learned
You're indestructible, always believing

My love is like a high prison wall
But you could leave me standing so tall
Gold
Always believe in your soul
You've got the power to know
You're indestructible
Always believe in, because you are
Gold
I'm glad that you're bound to return
Something I could have learned
You're indestructible, always believing.[2]

---

[2] www.azlyrics.com/lyrics/spandauballet/golcl.html

Worn chairs, an individual coming home, swearing that he left them in a certain place, a reference, perhaps, to "Hess'" claimed memory losses, love like a high prison wall... all words evocative in a way of Rudolf Hess, his state of mind, and his actual physical circumstances, and of the Hess Mess. There was a weird synchronicity, too, with the timing of the emergence of the group into fame and popularity: the early 1980s, in the last years of Spandau Hess' life.

Coincidence? Perhaps... *probably.*

But then there were the lyrics of Spandau Ballet's greatest, and most well-known hit, "True":

> *True*
>
> (ha-ha-ha, ha-ah-hi)
> (ha-ha-ha, ha-ah-hi)
>
> So true
> Funny how it seems,
> *Always in time*, *but never in line for dreams*
> *Head over heels when toe to toe*
> This is the sound of my soul
> This is the sound
>
> *I bought a ticket to the world*
> *But now I've come back again*
> *Why do I find it hard to write the next line*?
> *Oh, I want the truth to be said.*
>
> (ha-ha-ha, ha-ah-hi)
> I know this much is true
> (ha-ha-ha, ha-ah-hi)
> On know this much is true.
>
> *With a thrill in my head and a pill on my tongue*
> Dissolve the nerves that have just begun
> Listening to Marvin (All night long)
> This is the sound of my soul
> This is the sound
>
> Always slipping from my hands

Sand's a time of its own
Take your seaside arms and write the next line
Oh, I want the truth to be known

(ha-ha-ha, ha-ah-hi)
I know this much is true
(ha-ha-ha, ha-ah-hi)
I know this much is true.

I bought a ticket to the world
But now I've come back again
Why do I find it hard to write the next line?
Oh, I want the truth to be said.

(ha-ha-ha, ha-ah-hi)
I know this much is true
(ha-ha-ha, ha-ah-hi)
I know this much is true

(This much is a-true-oo)
(This much is a-true-oo-oo)

I know, I know, I know this much is true
(This much is a-true-oo)
(This much is a-true-oo-oo)

(This much is a-true-oo_
(Ha-ha-ha, ha-ah-hi)
(This much is a-true-oo)
I know this much is true
(This much is a-true-oo)
(Ha-ha-ha, ha-ah-hi)
(This much is a-true-oo-oo)
Know this much is true
(This mush is a-true-oo)
(ha-ha-ha, ha-ah-hi)
(This much is a-true-oo-oo_
(Know this much is true)
I know, I know, I know this much is true.[3]

---

[3] www.azlyrics.com/lyrics/spandauballet/true.html

A calm, dreamy harmony and melody, laughter, drugs, buying "a ticket to the world," was this a reference to the flight of Hess? "Now I've come back again?" a reference to his return to Germany, and imprisonment?

Maybe.

But then there's the reference to being "in time, but never in line for dreams". This began to hit closer to home, for as we have seen in the previous pages, Hess was certainly "on time" and expected in Britain, but he was in "the wrong line," the wrong place. And then, he's "head over heels when toe to toe," was this an odd poetical way to express his bailout from the Messerschmitt 110, tumbling head over heels until his parachute opens?

More strange was the lyrical reference to confusion of mind, "Why do I find it hard to write the next line? Oh I want the truth to be said". As we have seen, "Hess" certainly exhibited confusion of mind, whether acted, or genuine. Certainly such confusion could be explained "with a thrill in my head and a pill on my tongue," as the effects of a drug-induced state of mind. Here, again, was an unusual synchronicity, for "Hess" and Hess *both* were drugged.

Then, from out of nowhere, another image is invoked in the lyrics: "take your seaside arms and write the next line, oh I want the truth to be known". Seaside? A reference, perhaps, to Hess bailing out near the west coast of Scotland?

Once again, perhaps.

Maybe, perhaps, possibly...

Unintended synchronicities.

Nothing more.

On their own, with no context, the lyrics of one of the most popular songs of the 1980s are dreamy, flitting from one image to another, without context, without much meaning.

But...

***... within** the context of the Hess Mess, they begin, at last, to make sense...*

BIBLIOGRAPHY: WORKS CITED OR CONSULTED IN WRITING THIS BOOK

No author. "Operation Highjump 1946-47: A Tragedy on the Ice". www.south-pole.com/williams/htm

No author. "The Antarctica Enigma". Book IV. https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/tierra_hueca/esp_tierra_hueca_6c.htm

No author. "The Lebor Feasa Runda". http:// leborfeasarunda.weebly.com/history.html.

Allen, Martin. *The Hitler/Hess Deception*: *British Intelligence's Best-Kept Secret of the Second World War.* London. Harper Collins Publishers. 2003. ISBN 0-00-714118-1.

Bird, Eugene K. (Lt. Col., U.S. Army). *Prisoner #7 Rudolf Hess*: *The Thirty Years in Jail of Hitler's Deputy Führer*. New York. Viking Press. 1974. ISBN (670-57831-2).

Buechner, Howard A. (Col., US Army, Ret.), and Bernhart, Wilhelm (Capt., *Deutsche Kriegsmarine*). *Adolf Hitler and the Secrets of the Holy Lance*. Metairie, Louisiana. Thunderbird Press, Inc. 1988. ISBN 0-1913159-05-0.

Buechner, Howard (Col. US Army, Ret.) *Emerald Cup - Ark of Gold: the Quest of SS Lt. Otto Rahn of the Third Reich*. Metairie, Louisiana. Thunderbird Press, Inc. 1994. ISBN 0-913159-07-7.

Buechner, Howard A. (Col. US Army, Ret.), and Bernhart, Wilhelm (Capt., *Deutsche Kriegsmarine*). *Hitler's Ashes*: *Seeds of a new Reich*! Metairie, Louisiana. Thunderbird Press, Inc. 1989. ISBN 0-913159-06-09.

Farago, Ladislas. *Aftermath*: *Martin Bormann and the Fourth Reich*. New York. Simon and Schuster. 1974. No ISBN.

Farrell, Joseph P,, and deHart, Scott D. *Yahweh the Two-Faced God*: *Theology*, *Terrorism and Topology*. Lulu self-published book. 2011. No ISBN.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Third Way*: *The Nazi International, European Union, and Corporate Fascism*. Kempton, Illinois. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2015. ISBN 978-1-939149-48-0.

Fleming, Peter. *Operation Sea Lion*: *The Projected Invasion of England in 1940—An account of the German Preparations and* *the British Countermeasures*. New York. Simon and Shuster. 1957. NO ISBN.

Friedrich, Christof. *Secret Nazi Polar Expeditions*. Toronto. Samizdat Publishers, Ltd. No date. No ISBN.

Gehlen, Reinhard. *The Service*: *The Memoirs of General Reinhard Gehlen*. Trans. from the German by David Irving. New York. Times Mirror. 1972. ISBN 0-529-04455-2.

Godwin, Jocelyn. *Arktos*: *the Polar Myth in Science*, *Symbolism*, *and Nazi Survival*. Kempton, Illinois. Adventures Unlimited Press. 1996. ISBN 0-932813-35-6.

Goodrick-Clarke, Nicholas. *Black Sun*: *Aryan Cults*, *Esoteric Nazism and the Politics of Identity*. New York. New York University Press. 2003. ISBN 978-0-8147-3155-0.

Goodrick-Clarke, Nicholas. *The Occult Roots of Nazism*: *Secret Aryan Cults and their Influence on Nazi Ideology*. New York. New York University Press. 1992. ISBN 978-0-8147-3060-4.

Harris, John, and Wilbourn, Richard. *Rudolf Hess*: *A New Technical Analysis of the Hess Flight*, *May 1941*. Stroud. Spellmount (The History Press). 2014. ISBN 978-0-7524-9708-2.

Hecht, Ben. *Perfidy*. New York. Julian Messner, Inc. 1961. No ISBN.

Hess, Wolf Rüdiger. *My Father Rudolf Hess*. Translated from the German by Frederick and Christine Crowley. Tiptree, Essex. W.H. Allen & Co., Plc. 1987. ISBN 978-0-352-32214-4.

Hess, Wolf Rüdiger. *Who Murdered my Father*, *Rudolf Hess*? *My Father's Mysterious Death in Spandau*. Trans. from the German by Sonja Ruthard. Decatur, Alabama. Reporter Press. 1989. (Argentine printing: Buenos Aires. Talleres Graficos Genesis. 1991. Argentine ISBN 99234-4-3.)

Irving, David. *Hess*: *The Missing Years 1941-1945*. Dorney, Windsor, United Kingdom. Focal Point Publications. 2010. ISBN 978-1-872197-21-3.

Ivinheim, Michael. *The Secret Alliance*: *The Unknown Alliance between the Third Reich and Argentina*. Hernando, Florida. Sharkhunters International. 2001. ISBN 9781460919767.

John, Robert. *Behind the Balfour Declaration*: *The Hidden Origins of Today's Mideast Crisis*. Costa Mesa, California. Institute for Historical review. 1988. ISBN 0-939484-29-3.

Kerr, Peter. “Body of Adm. Byrd’s Son, 68, Found in Empty Warehouse,” *New York Times*, October 9, 1988.

Kilzer, Louis. *Hitler’s Traitor*: *Martin Bormann and the Defeat of the Reich*. Novato, California. Presidio Press, Inc. 2000. ISBN 0-89141-710-9.

Melaouhi, Abdallah. *Rudolf Hess*: *His Betrayal and Murder*. Washington, DC. The Barnes Review. 2013. ISBN 978-1-937787-18-9.

Mosley, Leonard. *The Reich Marshal*: *A Biography of Hermann Göring*. Garden City, New York. Doubleday and Company. 1974. No ISBN.

Nesbit, Roy Conyers, and van Acker, Georges. *The Flight of Rudolf Hess*: *Myths and Reality*. Stroud, Gloucestershire. The History Press. 2011. ISBN 978-0-7509-4757-2.

Padfield, Peter. *Night Flight to Dungavel*: *Rudolf Hess*, *Winston Churchill*, *and the Real Turning Point of WWII*. Lebanon, New Hampshire. University Press of New England. 2013. ISBN 978-1-61168-531-2.

Picknett, Lynn, Prince, Clive, and Prior, Stephen. *Double Standards*: *the Rudolf Hess Cover-Up*. London. Sphere (Little Brown and Company). 2014. ISBN 978-0-7515-322-3.

Quigley, Carroll. *The Anglo-American Establishment*. New York. Books in Focus, Inc. 1981. ISBN 0-916728-50-1.

Robert, James. “Britain’s Secret War in Antarctica”. *Nexus Magazine*. Volume 12, Number 5, August-September 2005. https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/tierra_hueca/esp_tierra_hueca_13.htm

Robert, James. “Britain’s Secret War in Antarctica”. *Nexus Magazine*. Volume 12, Number 6, October-November 2005. https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/tierra_hueca/esp_tierra_hueca_15.htm

Robert, James. “Britain’s Secret War in Antarctica”. *Nexus Magazine*. Volume 13, Number 1, December 2005-January 2006. https://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/tierra_hueca/esp_tierra_hueca_16.htm

Schon, Heinz. *Mythos Neu-Schwabenland*: *für Hitler am Südpol*: *die deutsche Antarktis-expedition 1938/39*. Selent, Germany. Bonus-Verlag. 2004. ISBN 3-935062-05-3.

Simpson, Christopher. *Blowback: The First Full Account of America's Recruitment of Nazis, and its disastrous Effect on our Domestic and Foreign Policy*. New York. Collier Books. 1988. ISBN 978-0-02-044995-X.

Stevenson, William. *The Bormann Brotherhood*. New York. Harcourt, Brace, Jovanovich, Inc. 1973. ISBN 0-15-113590-8.

Summerhayes, Colin, and Beeching, Peter. "Hitler's Antarctic base: the myth and the reality". *Polar Record 43*(*224*): 1-21. 2007.

Thomas, W. Hugh. *The Murder of Rudolf Hess*. New York. Harper and Row, Publishers. 1979. ISBN 0-06-014251-0.

Toland, John, *Adolf Hitler*. Volume II. Garden City, New York. Doubleday & Company, Inc. 1976. (No ISBN)

Toland, John. *Adolf Hitler*. Volume I. Garden City, New York. Doubleday & Company, Inc. 1976. (No ISBN)

Von Lang, Jochen. *The Secretary*: *Martin Bormann, the Man who Manipulated Hitler*. Translated from the German by Christa Armstrong and Peter White. New York. Random House. 1979. No ISBN.

The Bizarre Case of Rudolf Hess, Antarctica and Spandau Prison!

Pursuing his investigations of WWII machinations, secret international agreements, breakaway civilizations and hidden wars in Antarctica, author and researcher Joseph P. Farrell examines the continuing mystery of Rudolf Hess, his sudden flight to Scotland, his supposed imprisonment at Spandau Prison in Berlin and how his flight affected affairs in Europe, Israel, Antarctica and elsewhere. Farrell looks at Hess' mission to make peace with Britain and get rid of Hitler—even a plot to fly Hitler to Britain for capture! How much did Göring and Hitler know of Rudolf Hess' subversive plot, and what happened to Hess? Why was a doppleganger put in Spandau Prison and then "suicided"? Did the British use an early form of mind control on Hess' double? John Foster Dulles of the OSS and CIA suspected as much. Farrell also uncovers the strange death of Admiral Richard Byrd's son in 1988, about the same time of the death of Hess. What was Hess' connection to Antarctica? It is Farrell at his best—uncovering the special operations and still-secret activities of WWII and the breakaway civilization.

The astonishing topics in this book include:

- Hess, Antarctica and the Thule Society
- Two different Rudolf Hesses
- Why was "Hess" kept locked up in Spandau Prison—its only prisoner—by four governments?
- Allen Dulles met with Hess at Nuremberg and suspected some form of British mind control
- The astonishing plan to fly Hitler to Britain for capture to end the war on the Western Front
- Operation Highjump and the strange death of Admiral Byrd's son, Richard Byrd, Jr.

ISBN 978-1-939149-85-5
51995>
9 781939 149855

AdventuresUnlimitedPress.com

HEALING THE UNIMAGINABLE

Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control

ALISON MILLER

KARNAC

HEALING THE UNIMAGINABLE

HEALING THE UNIMAGINABLE

Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control

Alison Miller

KARNAC

First published in 2012 by
Karnac Books Ltd
118 Finchley Road, London NW3 5HT

Copyright © 2012 to Alison Miller.

The right of Alison Miller to be identified as the author of this work has been asserted in accordance with §§ 77 and 78 of the Copyright Design and Patents Act 1988.

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted, in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording, or otherwise, without the prior written permission of the publisher.

British Library Cataloguing in Publication Data

A C.I.P. for this book is available from the British Library

ISBN: 978 1 85575 882 7

Edited, designed and produced by The Studio Publishing Services Ltd
www.publishingservicesuk.co.uk
e-mail: studio@publishingservicesuk.co.uk

Printed in Great Britain

www.karnacbooks.com

CONTENTS

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS ix

ABOUT THE AUTHOR xi

PREFACE by E. Sue Blume xiii

FOREWORD by Valerie Sinason xv

INTRODUCTION xix

CHAPTER ONE
A therapist's first experience with ritual abuse and mind control (with thanks to "Lorraine", "Teresa", "Tony", and "Jennifer") 1

CHAPTER TWO
Ritual abuse and mind control: the definition evolves 9

CHAPTER THREE
The basics of therapy 19

CHAPTER FOUR
Markers of mind control and ritual abuse 45

CHAPTER FIVE
"Ritual" abuse: religious and creed-based abuses 57
with contributions by:
Old Lady: "The special child's spiritual training" 58
Adriana Green: "The strangers' house" 68

CHAPTER SIX
Military, political, and commercial uses of mind control 73
with contributions by:
Trish Fotheringham: "Mind control as I experienced it" 74
Jeannie Riseman: "A 1940s system of programming" 86

CHAPTER SEVEN
A reversed Kabbalah trainer speaks 91
contributed by *Stella Katz*

CHAPTER EIGHT
The programming: indoctrination, lies, and tricks 119

CHAPTER NINE
Understanding and working with alters' jobs and hierarchies 131
with a contribution by:
LisaBri: "When therapists make mistakes" 136

CHAPTER TEN
Dealing with programming: alternative strategies 155
with contributions by:
Jeannie Riseman: "Programming: taking the wind out of its sails" 163
Robin Morgan: "Dismantling my inner structures" 169

CHAPTER ELEVEN
"Stabilization" takes on a new meaning 173

CHAPTER TWELVE
"Maybe I made it up" 193
with contributions by:
LisaBri: "Honesty and denial" 198
Carol Rutz: "Validating my mind control memories" 202

CHAPTER THIRTEEN
Boundaries and bonds: the therapeutic relationship 209
with contributions by:
Stella Katz: "For Miranda" 211
LisaBri: "A survivor in therapy" 216

CHAPTER FOURTEEN
Treating programmed pedophilia 225
(with thanks to "Jennifer")

CHAPTER FIFTEEN
The unimaginable 235

CHAPTER SIXTEEN
Working with the traumatic memories 251

CHAPTER SEVENTEEN
Successful resolution: co-consciousness or integration 267
with contributions by:
Jen Callow: Part 1: "To integrate or not to integrate" 268
Jen Callow: Part 2: "Building inner community" 272
Stella Katz: "Reclaiming me" 275

CHAPTER EIGHTEEN
Ritual abuse and mind control treatment: greater than the sum of its parts 283

APPENDIX 1: Resources (books and websites) 287

APPENDIX 2: Satanic calendar 291

REFERENCES 295

INDEX 299

This book is dedicated to the many courageous therapists who have taken on the challenge of facing the unimaginable with their clients.

Only the small secrets need to be protected. The big ones are kept secret by public incredulity.
Marshall McCluhan

The most authentic thing about us is our capacity to create, to overcome, to endure,
to transform, to love and to be greater than our suffering.
Ben Okri, Nigerian Poet & Novelist

Our sorrows and wounds are healed only when we touch them with compassion.
Mohandas Gandhi

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

First of all, I want to thank all the clients who, over the past twenty years, have shared with me their painful stories of ritual abuse and mind control. They have been my most important teachers, and without them I would not have been able to even conceive of writing such a book. Some of them will recognize themselves in these pages, and I know it will be important to them to know they have contributed to the knowledge and skills of many therapists.

Beyond that, words cannot express how grateful I am to those courageous survivors who contributed to this book: Old Lady, Adriana Green, Trish Fotheringham, Jeannie Riseman, Stella Katz, LisaBri, Robin Morgan, Carol Rutz, and Jen Callow. Their bravery in facing their experiences, their hard-won internal cooperation and maturity, and their willingness to speak up constitute a unique contribution to our understanding both of these abuses and to their healing process.

I want to express my appreciation to my local friend, Adrienne Carter, who uses her vacations to work with trauma survivors in disaster areas all over the planet. She has been my support for many years in facing my clients' difficult memories and recovery issues.

Over the years of my learning, many online friends and colleagues have been an ongoing support system, as we all struggle together to understand and deal with these monstrosities. I particularly appreciate the contributions of Eroca Shaler and Jeannie Riseman in reading some early chapters of this book and giving me feedback, as well as all the "critters" with whom I have had dialogue over the years. (They will know what that message means, and who they are.)

There is one person without whom this book would never have come to fruition: my online friend, author and therapist E. Sue Blume, whom I have never met in person. She has supported me, insisted on the importance of my book, criticized my writing, found synonyms, sorted out my paragraphs, told me what is missing, and been the most creative and practical editor anyone can imagine, all before my publisher, Karnac Books, became involved. Thank you so much, E. Sue.

Disclaimer

This book is designed to give information to licensed and credentialed psychotherapists for the purpose of understanding and helping clients or patients who report memories of ritual abuse or mind control.

It is not designed for individuals who believe they may have had these experiences themselves, and want to explore what that entails.

This area is one about which understanding is developing slowly, as the practices of organized child abusing perpetrator groups are generally hidden from view, and often intentionally disguised by the perpetrators. Therefore, some of the information in here may be either incomplete or inaccurate.

The author and Karnac Books shall have neither liability nor responsibility to any person or entity with respect to any loss or damage caused, or alleged to have been caused, directly or indirectly, by the information contained in this book.

If you do not wish to be bound by the above, you may return this book to the publisher for a full refund.

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Alison Miller is a clinical psychologist in private practice in Victoria, British Columbia, Canada. She worked for many years in child and youth mental health services, treating children and families. She is the original developer of the Living in Families Effectively (LIFE) Seminars (www.lifeseminars.com), and has co-authored two books on parenting with Dr Allison Rees. Since 1991, Dr Miller has been treating and learning from persons with dissociative disorders, in particular survivors of ritual abuse and mind control, and has developed a protocol for effective treatment.

PREFACE

"In a time of universal deceit, telling the truth becomes a revolutionary act"

(George Orwell)

From the beginning, ritual abuse and other forms of child abuse aimed at creating mind control have presented unique challenges to treatment professionals. After all, when we therapists first heard about these crimes in our offices, we were only in the infancy of understanding childhood sexual trauma. Available texts on incest could be counted on the fingers of one hand. In the late 1980s, when I was preparing my own book, *Secret Survivors*: *Uncovering Incest and its Aftereffects in Women*, I knew nothing of ritual abuse. I had to negotiate with my first publisher, John Wiley, to allow me to add a brief mention of it just before the book went to press.

Ritual abuse was a complex and intimidating phenomenon for which we were totally unprepared, both professionally and personally. Therapists in the USA, Canada, the UK, and elsewhere around the world found themselves listening to horrifying, shocking, and sometimes unbelievable disclosures by terrorized clients. Survivors reported being accessed and abused while in treatment. They also conveyed threats that were made against us, some of which were carried out. Clients—and often therapists—became convinced that they were being tracked by an invisible network of omnipresent and omnipotent abusers, with no escape. These abuses continued even when survivors appeared to follow all the recommended rules of self-protection. Desperate staffs turned hospital-based inpatient treatment protocols on their ears to protect patients from a force no one totally understood, but some patients reported being abused while in hospitals.

The treatment process itself would also prove endlessly complicated, even dangerous. Survivors often began therapy with determination and resolve, only to drop out because their memories flooded them, or because self-destructive behaviors took them over. The training and skills we brought to these clients often seemed to make things worse. The normal rules just did not apply. On a desperate journey to meet our clients' needs, we reached out for guidance from some pioneering professionals and brave survivors (the real experts). What they had to offer was invaluable, but we still could not figure out what the new rules needed to be.

Some healed. Many did not. They tried. We tried. Treating ritual abuse felt frightening, overwhelming, confusing, and, frankly, sometimes impossible.

And now we found ourselves facing a new challenge. In the USA, although its tentacles spread to other places, a curious group of people launched a campaign to discredit and destroy all of those involved with helping survivors of hidden (dissociated) trauma, in particular ritual abuse, and its survivors. The media colluded with the agenda of this movement, and society welcomed it.

Someone once said that there is no taboo against incest, just a taboo against talking about it. That was certainly what we saw now regarding ritual abuse and mind control. Anyone attempting to recognize this still new and alien occurrence was blacklisted. The conspiracy of silence about child abuse had now become a conspiracy of censorship, even within the profession charged with its treatment. As a result, the truth about ritual abuse could no longer find a forum. Research and education ground to a halt.

Yet, somehow, in this oppressive climate, without support from any professional organizations or literature—or, in many cases, their peers—many therapists quietly continued to do their jobs.

Fortunately, one of those people was Alison Miller. Now, in *Treating the Unimaginable*, Dr Miller spells out the step-by-step protocol she developed over decades of working with, and learning from, survivors. This straightforward and sensible guide provides the tools you need to break "mind control" programming and recovery into practical explanations and orderly tasks.

Treating the Unimaginable reveals that abusers have relied on lies and tricks to control their victims' thinking from infancy onward. It provides the explanations and guidelines necessary to make the challenging task of treating survivors both possible and manageable. After discussing the clear differences between spontaneously developed dissociative disorders and those intentionally structured and implanted by such abusers, Dr Miller offers information that is precise, indispensable, and long overdue: in example after example, she describes exactly how abusers execute mind control that ensures ongoing contact and control, the psychological and cognitive impact it is designed to have on developing children, and the tasks necessary for clients to break free of the programs their abusers have devised.

Treating the Unimaginable is a reasonable, understandable, non-threatening book. It is calm in the face of confusion: exactly what this issue has needed from the beginning. And it is revolutionary. Because she tells the truth about ritual abuse. And that continues to be as important as ever, because—whether we want to acknowledge it or not—ritual abuse and other forms of mind control do happen, and there are survivors who need you. Now, with Dr Miller's wise and experienced guidance, those of you who choose to accept the formidable honor of treating those survivors will find encouragement here.

E. Sue Blume, LCSW, Diplomate in Clinical Social Work

FOREWORD

Those of us who work in the field of trauma and abuse, whether psychologists, psychoanalysts, social workers, doctors, counselors, or psychotherapists, have been provided with beautiful tools for understanding the impact of trauma. We become adept at understanding the dynamic of why the messenger is always shot and broadcast the Bionic insight of why the visionary is not bearable to the group.

However, when it comes to military mind control, abuse within religious belief groups or cults, and deliberately created dissociative identity disorder, we enter the least resourced field of all. This makes a new book on the subject have a far greater impact. While some new books fail to justify a historical, theoretical, or clinical place, this is a book that will provide immediate psychological aid to the practitioner who takes on mind control work. Or, as more usually happens, this will aid the clinician of integrity who never knew about such work, never intended to work in this field, but has slowly uncovered the traumatic reasons for why a mind has become splintered.

This book is necessary because, for many professionals who are not survivor-professionals, as well as for some who are, all psychic tools can temporarily disappear in the face of this work. We succumb to a variety of defenses, become numbed, dissociative, overwhelmed, over-zealous, over-skeptical, over-theoretical, over-academic, or speechless.

How do we find words for describing levels of betrayal and emotional, physical, sexual, and spiritual torture that fragment and destroy a child or adult and cast traumatic shadows over the whole of their adult life? We might, as a society, slowly find it possible to accept that one in four citizens are likely to have experienced some form of emotional, physical, sexual, or spiritual abuse (McQueen, Itzin, Kennedy, Sinason, & Maxted, 2008), in itself a figure unimaginable and hidden twenty years ago. However, accepting the way a hurt and hurting parent or stranger re-enacts their disturbance with a vulnerable child or children remains far easier to digest than to consider the intellectually planned, scientific, methodical procedures of organized child-abusing perpetrators—in other words, torture.

While we might hold to the sentiment that *humani nihil a me alienum puto* (nothing human is alien to me), it needs to be faced that there are areas of torture we have not imagined, that, indeed, are unimaginable to us. Bearing witness and sitting alongside such trauma can also be unimaginable and lead to secondary traumatization.

When I first encountered organized ritual abuse and mind control (Badouk-Epstein, Schwartz, & Wingfield, 2011; Sachs & Galton, 2008; Sinason, 1994), I was reminded only too well of Nietzsche's comment "Beware. When you look into the abyss, the abyss looks into you". Although a consultant psychotherapist at a leading clinical training and treatment center in the UK (the Tavistock Clinic), like Alison Miller, nothing in my training initially prepared me for this work except for the psychological strengthening that came from my own psychoanalytic treatment. I will always be grateful to my former psychoanalyst, the late Dr Mervin Glasser, for his support and to Dr Robert Hale, former Director of the Portman Clinic, who shared the pain of our ritual abuse project.

The abyss is the unimaginable, the place worse than nightmares. When it looks into us, to find a home, to find a mirror, to find someone, somewhere who can face the "daymare" that some people's lives consist of, we indeed face the worst that humans are capable of.

What does it mean to work with those whose days are worse than the worst nightmare we could imagine having? Who inhabits Orwell's Room 101? Whose truth means facing the reality not just of what the hurt and hurting loner is capable of, but what highly functioning middle class groups might do?

Dr Alison Miller waited twenty years for someone to write this book and finally decided to write it herself. Although a licensed psychologist in Canada, her thoughts and work are well known internationally, despite the initial low profile that often comes with this work. However, there is an important transition to be made when a key thinker moves from verbal communications in talks to writing a book for Karnac, a major psychodynamic publishing house that is based in the UK and respected worldwide.

This is the book that I and many other colleagues in the UK and the rest of Europe have also waited for and not written.

If you do not have a patient who has gone through these experiences, this is initially a deeply frightening book as well as a crucial book. It is not a book that soft-soaps the reader along the grades of obscene hierarchy between "mild" trauma and major. It goes straight to the jugular of the worst realities that exist, and is not trying to apologize for, or justify, their existence. Enough research has been carried out; enough survivors have come forward with their unique constellations of physical and mental pain. Alison Miller is writing for those who know what exists and want and need help in understanding it further.

In addition to her own insights, honed from years of practice, gained from her survivor-teachers, the book is also strengthened by the direct contributions of experts through terrible lived experience. Some are already known to UK specialists through their published work or websites (Jeannie Riseman, Carol Rutz, LisaBri) or through speaking at the Conferences held by the Clinic for Dissociative Studies, Bowlby Centre (Badouk-Epstein, Schwartz, & Wingfield, 2011) and Paracelsus Trust (Trish Fotheringham), and some are new, bringing different pearls from their painful paths (LisaBri, Jen Callow, Adrianna Green, Stella Katz, "Old Lady", and Robin Morgan).

Although there is such a strong advisory survivor presence, Alison Miller is clear that she is writing for the professionals who work with this subject and warns survivors of the dangers of accessing this book.

Within the UK, the newly formed Campaign for the Understanding and Inclusion of DID held a historic meeting at the London Voluntary Resource Centre on March 12th 2011, at which all fifteen keynote plenary talks and exhibitions were given by survivors. Mind Control was a key theme. This was followed by a smaller presentation at Church House, Westminster with the aim of educating MPs and Peers as well as Health Service commissioners on the way children and adults who have gone through these experiences face a further trauma due to the national lack of training in this subject.

Karnac Books is to be thanked for aiding the new generations of trauma workers to understand the problems in work with mind control patients. Dr Alison Miller and her Survivor Teachers are to be thanked for this painful, clear, knowledgeable, and yet also unwelcome gift for those who have yet to face this work.

For those who *are* facing this work, whatever their theoretical orientation, this is a book which helps the novice and experienced clinician alike understand the meaning of mind control and how to deal with it, step by step. Instead of feeling overwhelmed and referring on, the new clinician armed with this book will feel they have a guide with them.

The details of cult programming desribed here are largely Western based. It needs to be understood that such cruelty is not restricted to the West and that all around the world there are equivalent programs that come from a different military, ritual, religious, and social history.

Cultural relativism aside, this book takes care to remind the reader and clinician that all DID systems are different. There is no short-cut to learning the meaning and experience of the universe that is each person. However, aided by a book like this, the initially unprepared professional can deal more wisely with the paradigm shift that follows.

Mind control is built on lies and manipulation of attachment needs. This book breaks down the lies, the structures and the tasks ahead into manageable pieces. It provides hope that is not delusional. It makes it possible to consider undertaking this work, whether in private practice or in the public Health Service. It also reminds all of us that we are citizens of a global culture and we, as citizens, are also responsible for the kind of culture our children grow up in.

Valerie Sinason

Introduction

I waited twenty years for someone else to write this book. Every day I became more aware of how much a book such as this was needed. Finally, I decided to write it myself.

My first awareness that I was working with ritually abused and mind controlled clients came in 1991. They were the most challenging clients I had ever encountered. Not only had they endured the worst abuses I had ever heard of, they had been forced to participate in the torture, rape, and murder of others. Just listening to them was traumatizing.

Since the 1980s, therapists have reported encountering clients or patients who had experienced extreme abuses featuring physical, sexual, emotional, spiritual, and cognitive aspects, along with a premeditated structure of torture-enforced lessons. The phenomena was first labeled "ritual abuse," and, later, as our understanding developed, "mind control." A few pioneers came forward who specialized in ritual abuse treatment, but, as much as they understood and as many effective interventions as they were able to develop, they were muddling along just like I was. Many others found themselves working with one, or a few, identified survivors of these abuses, and they were really struggling. This population can overwhelm an unprepared therapist, and without proper knowledge the therapist cannot protect the client from numerous pitfalls inherent in recovery from these experiences.

Then, suddenly, the work became dangerous, not only for clients but for therapists as well. A well-funded, highly organized opposition appeared, seemingly out of nowhere, in the early 1990s. Its goal was to discredit the existence of ritual abuse, and one of its tactics was to actively undermine any effort to discover what had been done to these clients and anyone who attempted to help them recover. This movement capitalized on every mistake those pioneers made. When one of my early teachers, for instance, recognized that many ritually abused clients were still being abused while in treatment, she insisted that they could not be treated on an outpatient basis, but should be hospitalized and kept from their families. She was targeted with a series of court cases involving false accusations that she had allegedly abused clients in hospital. The experience was devastating to her.

And she was not alone. Many others faced persistent attempts to discredit their professional expertise, or legal assaults that robbed them of time, energy, and even the courage to continue to treat clients, write, or teach. Therapy professionals in both direct services and policy making, members of the criminal and civil justice systems, and the general public were systematically indoctrinated via the media. Many now share the view that people who disclose ritual abuse or mind control content suffer from "false memories" induced by "over-zealous therapists," and that dissociative disorders are iatrogenic (or else they do not exist at all).

Although the issue disappeared from the media, and, therefore, became invisible to society (which, to many, means it no longer exists), a recent survey (Rutz et al., 2008) that looked at the experiences of over 1400 survivors of extreme abuse in thirty-one countries found that almost four out of five reported either ritual abuse, or mind control, or both.

I have spent the past twenty years looking for help, and what I found was very limited. I looked for a manual to tell me what was going on in these people, and to give me some clear guidelines for treating them, but I found none. I immersed myself in learning the fundamentals of dissociative disorders, the psychiatric diagnosis most commonly associated with this population, disorders which themselves were just beginning to be understood. This knowledge was basic to my work, but it was not enough to fully address the needs of these clients. Since those early years, much has been written about dissociation, and many professional workshops, courses, and conferences have taken place. However, an understanding of the relationship between dissociative disorders and ritual abuse and mind control survivors (and, therefore, the specific needs) has yet to reach the mainstream of professionals in that field, or any other.

A number of books were published, mostly edited collections of articles, that discussed ritual abuse and mind control, but, unfortunately, most of the articles addressed either "the existence problem" (giving continuing and undue credibility to the claim of that political movement), the horrific and sometimes sensationalized specifics of the abuses perpetrated, or the characteristics of survivors. Yet, still, no one told us how to treat them. Many websites also appeared in the past two decades, many by survivors and professionals who have studied them. They can provide a great deal of useful information, but there is much disinformation out there as well.

At first, it felt as if nothing in my training as a psychologist or my (then) fifteen years' experience had prepared me for the particular demands of treating this population. I knew there was a long road ahead. Fortunately, however, everything I had studied and worked with so far had prepared me to undertake the journey. I had considerable experience in child development, family systems, and attachment issues. I had developed educational seminars for parents who had suffered from abuse and neglect in their own childhoods, and I was beginning to understand the effect of childhood trauma in creating what I clearly understood to be "mental injuries" (not mental illnesses) that can last a lifetime. And I had the ability to respect and be open to the wisdom and expertise of my clients, the persons who had experienced these atrocities, who could, I knew, be my greatest teachers.

Soon, I understood what made this population, and therefore this treatment, different from anything we had ever encountered before: not only the total separation between the "inner children" found in certain dissociative disorders, but the deliberately splitting of children's psyches by these "organized perpetrator groups" to create and control alternate personalities. Not only the inner systems that exist in persons with "DID" (dissociative identity disorder, formerly MPD) and "DDNOS" (a similar disorder, labeled "Dissociative disorder not otherwise specified") but complex personality systems, intentionally structured into multi-layered hierarchies. Not only the hideous abuses that children can be subjected to, often by their most trusted caregivers, out of hedonism or sadism, but the elaborate, premeditated, and incredibly inhumane lengths that human beings will go to to harm children in the service of ideologies, for profit and power.

And so I learnt as I went. My first years of doing this unique work were like trying to find my way around a new country. I had to make a lot of quick decisions that had major consequences for my clients. I was drained by the complexity of the work. It was unnerving and exhausting. I suffered vicarious traumatization from the horror of my clients' life experiences, which included, as my beleaguered colleague and others had previously recognized, their continuing abduction and torture by perpetrator groups even as I worked with them. These were clients who faced a constant risk of self-harm and suicide. There was a minefield of things I did not yet understand.

However, over the course of the twenty years I spent working with these clients, dialoguing with survivors who were in all stages of healing, and studying everything I could find, I am no longer overwhelmed. I understand what needs to be done for successful treatment of survivors of ritual abuse and mind control, and I have developed a protocol that makes it manageable. I offer it now to you.

Healing the Unimaginable is the book I wish I had had in 1991. My goal is to provide you with a practical, down-to-earth treatment manual, an updated road map that corrects the errors of those that preceded it. It cannot provide you with any treatment shortcut that bypasses the time-consuming tasks ahead. However, it will, I hope, get you there faster than the previous maps, because it will not lead you astray.

That is not to say you should take every word I say as gospel. You will still need to honor your own journey, and your clients'. You should never allow anyone to dictate how you think. This is the lesson your clients will be learning, but it is also something you should be aware of.

In the spring of 2009 I had an experience that highlighted all these truths for me, which I would like to share with you.

I was on my way to be a plenary speaker on the topic of mind control at a conference in the UK. The organizers had sent me a map on which a road called the A6 ran east across the country from near Manchester airport to the main British motorway, the M1. It appeared to be a direct route. However, when I attempted to drive from the airport to the conference center, I could not find it. Several times, I stopped to ask for help, but the hand-drawn maps and conflicting directions I got were not helpful. Repeatedly, I would follow a supposed route, only to have it peter out into a maze of ordinary streets.

Finally, someone explained to me that the A6 was not a highway at all, but a historical route that was no longer identified by signage, but goes along many different roads with different names. Rather than cutting across the middle of the country on the A6, I would have to go back to the main ring road, follow it north, take one motorway east, and yet another south. This was a big disappointment. The conference's map had seemed so clear and direct. But it offered me a route that did not exist.

As I tried to get back to the Manchester ring road, I found myself in the middle of a huge traffic jam. I drove around lost for about three hours. I was not only jetlagged, but dazed. I needed food and a bathroom break, yet there was something strangely comforting about this traffic jam. After all, how could I go wrong when the path I was on was being traveled by so many others?

I kept having to remind myself that even if that path did lead somewhere worthwhile, it very probably did not lead to my destination.

It took considerable willpower, but I left this stream of cars behind and forged off on my own. Once again, I was wandering blindly. Finally, I saw a sign that directed me back to the ring road. And, after following a series of highways north, east, and then south, I arrived at the conference center, just as the first meeting was starting.

As late, stressed, and exhausted as I was, I understood the symbolic value of my ordeal. It paralleled my experience of learning to work with survivors of ritual abuse and mind control. In my early work with these clients, I had kept trying to follow road maps developed by others, only to find them inadequate, or just plain wrong. The therapeutic approaches in vogue at the time were largely irrelevant to this population, and consultations based on these approaches got me nowhere. Without accurate direction, it would be possible to waste years of my clients' lives while they continued to suffer and to be traumatized. With no accurate professional text or training program to be found, I had no choice but to take the big risk of going "off the beaten track" to help these people. Fortunately, I was willing to honor the guidance my clients provided. I might not have known where I was going, but they had had the experience, they knew how my interventions were affecting them, and they knew what worked for their recovery. And so it is even today: experience has taught me that although not everything every survivor says is accurate, people who have done their recovery work are still our most fruitful sources of knowledge about ritual abuse and mind control, as those subjects cannot be studied directly when they occur.

For that reason, I have asked some of my survivor teachers to be contributors to this book. I value their involvement enormously. Their contributions illustrate the nature of the abuse, the problems encountered in the healing process, and the creative ways survivors have found to make their way to recovery. Nine courageous survivors made contributions to this book, and others have granted me permission to quote their writings. They have been so generous in sharing their priceless wisdom, creativity, and knowledge, all with brutal honesty, no matter how painful. I owe a debt of gratitude to them, and believe the field of psychotherapy—and society—do as well.

That is not to say that one should assume that every client who talks about such things is necessarily a survivor of these experiences, or that everything such a survivor discloses is accurate or even literally true. My book will address that, and help you to know how to correctly assess what your clients present to you. This point corresponds to the other lesson that I learnt that day as I traveled across England. The humbling experience of getting lost before my first venture into the big world of being a plenary conference speaker taught me that the road map I was giving to the conference participants that day could not be assumed to be 100% accurate. I would not have wanted my audience to trust me so deeply that I would lead them astray. Likewise, although I do believe that in many or most cases you will discover this map, derived in part from the disclosures of survivors, to be correct, I must also warn you that parts might not always be so. It will need to change over time as the roads to recovery change. As I tell my clients, do not trust me so much that you turn your thought process over to me. Trust has to be earned. Experiment with this map, make corrections, improve it. And, please, let others know where it is wrong. Just as I have invited some of the most knowledgeable contributors I know to participate in this treatment manual, the more people who bring their evolving knowledge and experience to this difficult issue, the more we can all remain current and effective in what we are trying to do for our clients.

What you will find here

Healing the Unimaginable is grounded in the assumption that ritual abuse and mind control abuses do exist. It does not indulge the debate about the existence of these phenomena. (For those interested in these questions, I recommend the books and articles listed in Appendix 1.)

The first section focuses on understanding the phenomena of ritual abuse and mind control: how they work, and their results in the people who have undergone experiences which begin in childhood but might continue in a variety of ways into adulthood as well. It addresses how working with survivors of such horrendous abuse affects the therapist. It humanizes this experience through five first-person contributions by survivors. In one, a survivor who served as a programmer in a ritually abusive cult training center shares a unique insider's view of the methods and thought process employed by these groups. I evaluate checklists that have been developed over the years to help therapists recognize those who might be survivors of these abuses, and provide a checklist that I developed, through which the internal, structural characteristics of the personality systems installed by abusers can be used by therapists to recognize mind control or ritual abuse survivors among their clients or patients. The original purpose of the implantation of such designs is also addressed. Finally, a chapter looks at the indoctrination or "programming" that characterizes these abuses.

The second section of the book provides a step-by-step guide to treatment. It includes: understanding the experience of having a dissociative disorder and the basics of treatment, developing a secure therapeutic relationship, working with structured personality systems and clients' inner worlds, the critical and often misunderstood issues of external and internal safety, and how to counter the lies and tricks on which mind control is based. Special attention is given to sexuality, and also guilt and shame over forced perpetration. "Deprogramming" and attempted removal of "spiritual attachments" or "demons" are discussed and evaluated. Managing and working through traumatic memories is addressed in this section, as is the widespread question of belief and disbelief. The final chapter looks at successful resolution, either through integration of the personality or through cooperative co-consciousness. Here, the reader will find stories of successful recovery.

Working with survivors of ritual abuse and mind control can be the biggest challenge of your professional career. As you read this book, and the references I provide, your intellect and your courage might well to be challenged to their limits. But you will have learnt, as I have in my own journey, an enormous amount about how human beings work, and how to help those who, when they were the most vulnerable, were the most damaged.

A word to survivors

Most therapists do not yet have specific training in working with persons who are or may be survivors of ritual abuse and/or mind control, and *Healing the Unimaginable* is written specifically to help them. I do *not* recommend that you read it.

If you are wondering whether or not you are a survivor of ritual abuse or mind control, *Healing the Unimaginable* is not for you. If you know you are such a survivor and have done considerable recovery work already, *Healing the Unimaginable* is not for you.

Here's why:

1. You do not want your memories to be contaminated by reading the details contained on these pages about what ritual abusers and mind controllers do. Genuine survivors have difficulty in any case believing their memories, and it is easier to believe what comes up from within you if you do not have other people's information to confuse you.
2. There are some graphic details of abuses here, and they can trigger flashbacks or trained behaviors in people who are actually survivors of such abuses. This can be unpleasant and destabilizing for you.

If you want to benefit from this book, recommend it to your therapist. What she or he learns will "trickle down," and you will benefit through your recovery. Certain sections were written by survivors who have stated that their work may be shared with other survivors. Your therapist is urged to share these with you if they are right for you. Feel free to discuss this with your therapist.

So here is what this means: if you are a survivor, and determined to read this book, you do so at your own risk. Please do not let your "detective" parts have the final say, but evaluate carefully whether or not reading this information yourself will be beneficial to you. Remember that your safety—not only physical, but emotional—and your successful recovery are what is most important.

CHAPTER ONE

A therapist's first experience with ritual abuse and mind control

Working with ritual abuse and mind control survivors is probably the biggest challenge you will ever have in your professional life. For many therapists, one of the most demanding, upsetting and exciting periods occurs at the very beginning of such work. It is a kind of "hit the ground running" time. They must deal with disclosures that force them to face unimaginable realities for the first time, which will almost immediately demand new skills and knowledge. And sometimes, they must also contend with whether or not the other healthcare systems involved in their clients' care will be willing and able to help them appropriately.

My initiation into this work came through a group of four ritually abused clients, one of whom was "Lorraine."

In memoriam Lorraine

A few weeks before it happened, she asked me earnestly, "Is it a mortal sin if you kill yourself?" And I said no. I knew I was giving her permission, in a sense. I *had* told the parts of her that wanted to die that if they killed the parts that did not want to die it would be murder. They kept taking an internal vote, and each time more of them wanted to go. I never told them not to.

Lorraine was one of my first few clients with what was then called MPD, multiple personality disorder. She was crippled with severe osteoarthritis, and had to use a wheelchair. When she was Lorraine, she was a sweet-natured, gentle, considerate, laughing, roly-poly woman who loved to read and to sew. When she was Big Susie, she was a playful five-year-old who had a collection of giant dolls and a huge stuffed gorilla. Lorraine sewed clothes for the dolls. When she was Little Susie, she was a terrified, mute three-year-old. I was also acquainted with Morgue, pronounced Mor-Gew, who called for the suicide votes.

I got to know Lorraine because she was the best friend of another client who also suffered from what we now call DID, dissociative identity disorder. (The name change reflected the revised view that someone with the disorder was one fragmented person rather than a lot of different people sharing one body. But most who have the disorder feel more as if it is MPD.) My other client, whom I will call Teresa, thought Lorraine had MPD and hoped I could help her. Almost no one recognized this condition in those days.

Lorraine was forty years old and had been in and out of psychiatric hospitals since she was thirteen. She had had various diagnoses, mainly severe depression, and she had made quite a few serious suicide attempts before I even met her. She had been given many courses of electric shock therapy, which would confuse her so much that she could not get together a coherent suicide plan for quite a while.

Lorraine's psychiatrist was initially opposed to my seeing her, as her friend Teresa had been stigmatized with the "borderline personality disorder" diagnosis when in hospital, so was seen as a bad influence on her. But after Lorraine spent a couple of months in hospital calling herself Susie and acting consistently like a child, he was humble enough to acknowledge that perhaps he could learn some new things, and someone else's help might be a good idea.

It had taken me a while to recognize MPD in any of my clients. Teresa was the first. She kept talking about her "inner child." And I did not realize how real this child was until one day she stole a wheelchair from the hospital to which my clinic was attached, and took it for a joyride around the grounds. When confronted by hospital staff, she told them she was my employee. I began to pay attention to this "inner child," named Stuffy, from having been stuffed in a closet.

As soon as realized that I was treating MPD clients, I read the few existing books on the condition, attended a workshop at the Justice Institute, and used some sexual abuse prevention money to organize a workshop where therapists could exchange information and educate each other about dissociation. There, I learnt something that I found really shocking. Many people suffering from MPD had been severely abused throughout their childhood years by organized groups, including Satanic and other "dark-side" religious cults. Moreover, quite a few of them were still involved in those groups, although they were not aware of their involvement, because it was other "personalities"—dissociated parts of them—who went off to the groups' rituals. I was skeptical, to say the least.

Shortly after I began work with Teresa, I acquired another MPD client, a supposedly schizophrenic young man I will call Tony. He called in to the clinic on a day I was on telephone duty, saying he was having flashbacks of "ritual abuse." I did not yet know what that was. Tony became my client. He could be quite entertaining. I have a vivid memory of him as a three-year-old, "Tiny Tony," standing on his head on my office couch, and running down the hall to try unsuccessfully to make it to the bathroom. He had in his head the entire rock band of Guns'n'Roses, and I got to know Axl, the band leader, quite well. I remember the time Tony was in hospital and I went to visit him; Axl popped out and said, "Remember, we're schizophrenic in here!"

The last of my first four was a teenage girl whom I will call Jennifer, who had been removed from her home because she had disclosed sexually abusing her younger brother. Although she was in foster care, Jennifer told me that she kept seeing her mother, with whom she was supposed to have no contact, outside her foster home or at the bus stop she used. I did not know what this meant. Then one day Tony told me that he'd "woken up" at midnight standing on the corner at the gas station near where he lived, apparently waiting for a ride.

One day, I gave Teresa a ride home from treatment. Her ancient grandmother was at her apartment helping her pack her things for a move. By this time Teresa had disclosed sexual abuse by her father as well as both her parents being alcoholics. I took this opportunity for a confrontation, as people did in those days. I said to the grandmother triumphantly, "Teresa has told me all about what happened to her!" "Oh?" the old woman said in a creaky voice. "And just what has she told you?" "Alcoholism and sexual abuse!" I proclaimed triumphantly. The grandmother breathed what appeared to be a sigh of relief, and said, "Oh, I'm just an old woman, I wouldn't know about those things." It was a very strange response.

Then another strange thing happened. Teresa was the single parent of a very young child, and had been seeing me about her parenting difficulties. Her child was in and out of foster care. One day, she called both me and the child protection worker and said she could not handle the little girl any longer and had to give her up for adoption. She was determined to sign the papers and give her up, but I was mystified by it, because Teresa's parenting had improved considerably and I knew she really loved her daughter. I would not be able to make sense of these mysteries until I had learnt all about the lives of the rest of my "first four."

Gradually, the story came out. Teresa mentioned that she had known Tony in junior high school. It turned out that she still knew him—he was part of the cult group she still attended, along with her family. So was Jennifer (and her family). And Lorraine, whom at that point I had only been seeing for a short time. Tony's mother was the cult's high priestess, his stepfather was a kind of regional manager. All four of these clients not only had been abused by the same people, mostly their family members, but they were still being abused and forced to take part in abusive rituals. So, of course, was Teresa's little daughter, until Teresa gave her up permanently. It was not until Teresa gave up the child for adoption that she began to disclose her own ritual abuse.

My initial excitement at working with this newly understood diagnosis was rapidly diminishing. At the same time I was developing compassion for these people who lived part of their lives in a living hell, and this motivated me to embrace the challenges they presented. I worked hard with them, and I soon discovered that other people—the cult—were working with them, too. They lurked outside my office waiting to kidnap my clients and take them somewhere to re-abuse them as a punishment for talking to me. They set off "programs," the conditioned responses which my clients' child parts had been trained to perform, such as falling asleep in session, calling them and reporting what we'd talked about, being unable to understand English, cutting themselves, or trying to hurt me. They made various threats to terrified child parts of my clients, that they would harm or kill them or me or other people they cared for if they did not stop coming to therapy and stop talking about what had happened and was happening to them. (I did not believe they would be stupid enough to kill me, since I knew their names and had given them to the police.)

Also, I discovered that the cult had a regular pick-up system for their members outside the mental hospital at dinnertime, so any members who were currently hospitalized would go out there for a "smoke", and be picked up and returned before hospital staff could check on them. I shared this information with Lorraine's psychiatrist. He began putting her in the general hospital rather than the psychiatric hospital when she needed respite. She did much better there, though she told me that cult members had come by at night and threatened her. Lorraine had been living in a group home for the mentally ill, but now she had the new MPD diagnosis, the managers refused to house her. She was given an apartment on the top floor of a seniors' building. From there she would venture out in her wheelchair to go to the library or shopping. I soon discovered that she was not safe, that cult people would ambush her whenever she was out and took great sport in harming her. They obtained a key to her apartment and could get in whenever they wanted. They would get her to invite Teresa over, then show up and hurt both of them. It was a nightmare.

I could not cancel everything else in my life because I was seeing these people. In the summer I took a month-long vacation with my family, traveling around Europe; it was something I had to do before my eldest child left home. When I returned, Lorraine was in the psychiatric emergency ward, where she had apparently been almost the entire time. The hospital had scheduled a meeting regarding her for the day I returned, a Wednesday. She was to be discharged the next day.

I visited Lorraine in hospital just before the meeting. She told me that she had been picked up on the street by some cult people, who had told her that if she did not kill herself properly this time, they would kill me, her psychiatrist, her sister in a neighboring city, and her sister's children. Most parts of Lorraine were children, and they believed this threat. She had been tortured enough to know these people were indeed capable of murder. On leaving, I wrote a note in the ward's book, which was only for hospital staff, saying, "Do not discharge her until I've had a chance to see her again. If you do, she will kill herself." I described the threat. Then I went to the meeting at the hospital. There, I learned that the powers-that-be had decided Lorraine was too much trouble, so she was to be transferred to housing in another city, where I could not see her any longer.

The psychiatrist called me that night. He had read my note and believed me. He said that he would not be able to keep Lorraine in hospital until I could see her the next week, and asked whether it would make a difference if he discharged her on Thursday or Sunday. I said no, she was not safe either way. I had a full schedule for the first two weeks, since a lot of people had been waiting to see me. I could not see her until Monday at the earliest. He discharged her on Thursday. Early on Saturday morning, he called to tell me that Lorraine had fallen, or jumped, out of the window of her apartment to her death. There was no investigation. She had been suicidal for many years, so it was assumed to be suicide, not murder.

But to me, it was very suspicious. The bathroom window Lorraine had gone out of was a tiny one, and almost impossible to open, let alone to squeeze through, as it was quite high up from the floor. Lorraine was fat and had no muscle tone; I could not imagine her doing it alone. Her apartment door was locked.

Lorraine had no relatives in town who cared about her. She had grown up in a group home, where her original cult abuse had happened, as the group home parents were cult-involved and used the children they looked after in the cult rituals and other evil activities.

Lorraine's younger sister came to town to dispose of her possessions, and there was a brief memorial service at the funeral chapel. I was one of the people who spoke about Lorraine and Susie to those who attended, including several suspicious-looking people. I was sad, but not as sad as I had been when Lorraine was alive and constantly being re-abused and tortured by people who were not acknowledged to exist. At least she was no longer subject to this lack of safety. It was over. She could not go through that any longer. I made it clear to the cult at the memorial service that on this subject at least I agreed with them.

Teresa, overcome with grief, was hospitalized shortly after Lorraine's death. I was aware that she and Lorraine had made a suicide pact years earlier that if one of them died the other would follow. When I tried to visit her in the hospital, I was met at the door by the psychiatrist in charge of the ward, whose job was specifically to exclude me. He gave me a story about how therapists who were not on the hospital staff could not do therapy in the hospital as it could subject the hospital to liability if anything then happened to their patients. Oh, yes. That was their main concern, liability. Of course, if the psychiatric hospital system had only taken the threats and disclosures seriously and kept Lorraine safe, none of this would have happened. If some outside therapist had exposed their failure to care for the most vulnerable of their patients, what would have happened?

They did not invite her psychiatrist or me to her obligatory "death review." They were probably glad to be rid of her.

Teresa did not kill herself, despite ongoing abuse. Both she and Jennifer survived murder attempts disguised as suicide, but this time there was no question: people broke into their apartments and stuffed all their pills down their throats. Teresa was sufficiently recovered to make contacts in another city far away. She moved there, and is now doing well.

I managed to get Tony's father, who lived on the other side of the continent, to take custody of him and try to get him help there, but Tony disappeared the next summer and reappeared in our city with his mother, once more diagnosed "schizophrenic." I completed therapy with Jennifer, and she moved to another country, where she is also doing well. So, two out of the four made it to safety and relative health. Two were lost.

I remember Lorraine's freckled face, her sweet smile, and her gentle nature. I still have her stuffed bear, which other clients hold when they need comfort. I wish I had been able to keep her safe. I wish the mental health system had recognized the evil that they were abetting when they misdiagnosed her and kept her subject to so many more years of abuse. I applaud the psychiatrist who had the courage to look at a new diagnosis and break rank to attempt to work with me. I sincerely hope Lorraine's next life, or her afterlife (if she has one), is the opposite of what this one was.

As some of you already know, the first experience of a therapist working with ritual abuse or mind control survivors involves shock, disbelief, and confusion. I remember that with Teresa, I became first shocked, then disbelieving, as she disclosed sexual abuse by one person after another before the ritual abuse became evident. I thought, "How could one person be abused by so many people?" It did not occur to me initially that these abusers were all connected to the cult or to her parents. I could not conceive the true nature of the abuse that would unfold.

I was also very confused about Teresa's multiplicity, and discounted her "inner child" as part of the latest self-help fad. I did not really realize that it was possible for a person to have different self-states separated by walls of amnesia, so total that one state would not remember what another state had done. Teresa had a habit of confabulating to cover when she did not remember what happened, and she had acquired quite a reputation among service providers because of what they called "lying." In actual fact, she just did not remember, so she made something up. My first task with her and my other dissociative clients was to learn about dissociative disorders. If you do not know about dissociative disorders, stop right here. You will need to read some of the books recommended in Appendix I before you proceed. The deliberate creation of dissociative disorders is basic to ritual abuse and mind control, and unless you understand how dissociative disorders work, you will be very confused by these clients and will not be able to help them.

The second reaction of most therapists working with these clients is a combination of horror and fear. First of all, there is the sheer horror of the memories they are disclosing. Sadistic torture, murder of fetuses, painful electroshock to infants and children, gang rapes, necrophilia, bestiality, drowning, near-death experiences . . . you name it, you will hear about it. Your clients need you to be able to hear these memories with calm compassion. You need to be strong enough to hear these things and not have the color drain from your face. Your client will see such involuntary reactions as indicators that you cannot handle what they are disclosing, and you will hear no more.

We are all traumatized, especially by the first few clients with these kinds of experiences that we encounter. We have to pay attention to our own vicarious traumatization (see Pearlman & Saakvitne, 1995), and make sure we take care of ourselves so that we are not constantly living in a state of trauma. Any of our own past trauma, too, can be activated by what our clients disclose. So it is important to have competent supervision or consultation and, if necessary, our own therapy. It is important that the supervision and consultation be with someone who is experienced with dissociative disorders and ideally with ritual abuse and mind control, too, although at this point not many experienced therapists have such a background.

And we must address the risk to the clients. Many of our ritually abused or mind-controlled clients engage in self-harming behavior, which is actually the behavior of parts who have been trained to do this as punishment for disclosures. Most therapists do not realize this, and spend a lot of time and energy on trying to convince clients not to “act out.” The clients commonly attempt suicide, also a trained behavior, induced by parts of the mind who either think they must kill themselves before the perpetrators kill them in a gruesome manner, think someone they love will be killed if they do not (like Lorraine), or believe they will not die but will be rewarded when the body dies.

This is very stressful for therapists. We spend a lot of time and energy worrying about our clients’ safety, and feeling helpless in the face of these behaviors. These behaviors can also get our clients involved in the psychiatric hospital system, which can, in some cases, be helpful, but in other cases can be problematic, bringing on peer pressure to treat the clients with medication and confinement and give them other diagnoses than the correct one of dissociative disorder.

But this is only the beginning of the feeling of risk. When we discover that in many, though not all cases, the clients are still being abused and are being forced to take part in abuse of others, our protective instincts go on constant alert. If the clients have children, we realize that these children are at risk and we have to make decisions about reporting something that will probably not be believed. We become anxious about every cult or family holiday time, along with our client, and we imagine the horrors they might be going through.

Acknowledging that our clients are often in “current contact” with their abusers is frustrating and, often, frightening. As therapy progresses with “current contact” clients, and the clients stop going back to the group when they are supposed to, the risk to the clients does increase.

The teenager, Jennifer, came to one session late with her arms badly slashed. She told me that she had not done it; a cult person had waylaid her on the way to the office and done it in the hope of getting her admitted to hospital where they could have more access to her. I chose to believe her, since she had never lied to me. Remember that both she and Teresa experienced attempted murder disguised as suicide attempts, and Lorraine's death was either murder or forced suicide. I felt as if I were living in a horror movie.

Then there is the fear for ourselves and our families. The first generation of therapists doing this work were told by their clients that the one massive cult was everywhere, knew everything, had access to state-of-the-art technology, and was willing to kill both clients and therapists to stop the information from getting out. When I worked with my first ritually abused clients, I was constantly hearing threats to my life. Teresa, in particular, would come for an appointment and relate in great detail how the cult high priest (whose identity I knew) was going to lie in wait in the hallway of my office building and how he would kill me. The worst threat was when I found out from one of these first four clients that the cult leaders had taken them all in a van to the driveway of my home, had them abused while drugged by a woman impersonating me, and then told them my address and instructed them to go there and set fire to my house while my children and I were asleep. This event was corroborated about a year later by another one of these clients. I took precautions, leaving copies of my records with a lawyer, and the abusers' names in a sealed envelope with the police. I calculated (correctly) that killing me would be a greater security risk to the group than leaving me alive and trying to discredit me in professional circles. But still, I was afraid. It is difficult not to keep on imagining these horrors when you hear them in such detail.

The reality is that even before stories of ritual abuse and mind control began coming out to therapists, the groups had agreed on what kind of disinformation to spread, so that clients would be afraid to tell their therapists what had happened to them, and therapists would be afraid to work with these clients. It is true that keeping the secrets is crucial to all groups who use mind control. But this is also a reason why they are highly unlikely to kill therapists—they do not want any formal investigations. The issue of safety for clients and therapists will be explored in detail in Chapter Eleven, "'Stabilization' takes on a new meaning".

The last major stressor on the therapist working with these clients is isolation and peer pressure. It was particularly bad during the "memory wars" of the 1990s. The diagnosis of dissociative disorder was not widely accepted, and an organized political group, the False Memory Syndrome Foundation, along with other similar groups, took up the task of informing the media that unethical therapists were suggesting to helpless clients that they had been sexually abused, or worse, by family members. A leading journal, *Treating Abuse Today*, was forced out of business by picketers representing supposedly innocent accused parents. Leading therapists in the dissociative disorders field, such as Bennett Braun and Judith Peterson, were targeted for lawsuits and, in Peterson's case, even criminal charges. Insurance companies chose to settle most lawsuits out of court, giving the impression that the therapists were guilty.

While some therapists were doubtless foolish and unethical, many were not, but almost all were unprepared for this well-organized political attack. Since many of the lawsuits were about cases where ritual abuse was alleged, the remaining leaders in the field of dissociative disorders pulled back and took a skeptical position regarding the existence of ritual abuse. This left the therapists such as myself, whose clients were reporting this, in a position of isolation. We were attacked by skeptics when we mentioned ritual abuse in online discussion forums. We had no local colleagues who understood what we were dealing with. There were no textbooks to guide us. We saw those from whom we had learnt being publicly ridiculed and humiliated. So, most of us learnt to do our work in private, developing our own techniques, without reporting them publicly.

The situation is somewhat better now. Because the problem of ritual abuse and mind control has not gone away—the survivors are still there—many more therapists have learnt about it. Survivors have spoken out and written their stories, and therapists have learnt a great deal from those brave survivors who have discovered what was done to them. There is a large special interest group on Ritual Abuse and Mind Control within the International Society for the Study of Dissociation. Those therapists who have learnt in isolation or in small private online forums are once again sharing their knowledge widely, and books such as this one are beginning to be published again. The work is still very difficult and challenging, but we now know so much more than we did. We know that there is not one massive Satanic cult, but many different interrelated groups, including religious, military/political, and organized crime, using mind control on children and adult survivors. We know that there are effective treatments. We know that many of the paralyzing beliefs our clients lived by are the result of lies and tricks perpetrated by their abusers. And we know that, as therapists, we can combat this evil with wise and compassionate therapy.

CHAPTER TWO

Ritual abuse and mind control: the definition evolves

The story of our evolving understanding of ritual abuse is one of many unrelated people discovering different parts of the body of a new species in a darkened room and trying to understand what the whole animal looks like. According to Child Abuse Wiki, the term "ritual abuse" was first coined in 1980 in the popular book *Michelle Remembers*, by Canadian psychiatrist Larry Pazder, and Michelle Smith (1989), his long-time patient. Under Pazder's care, Michelle had remembered childhood abuse in the context of a Satanic cult. He defined the phenomenon as "repeated physical, emotional, mental, and spiritual assaults combined with a systematic use of symbols, ceremonies, and machinations designed and orchestrated to attain malevolent effects" (Pazder, cited in Kahaner (1988), p. 201).

Subsequent definitions came primarily from professionals addressing alleged ritual abuse in childcare settings. Child Abuse Wiki states that Finkelhor, Williams, Burns, and Kalinowski elaborated on Pazder's definition, defining ritual abuse as "abuse that occurs in a context linked to some symbols or group activity that have a religious, magical or supernatural connotation, and where the invocations of these symbols or activities are repeated over time and used to frighten and intimidate the children" (1988, p. 52). and that Kelley referred to ritual abuse as the "repetitive and systematic sexual, physical, and psychological abuse of children by adults as part of cult or Satanic worship" (1988, p. 228).

Because Satanic cult abuse was the first to surface, these early definitions of ritual abuse focused on its religious (specifically Satanic) aspects. For a long time the phenomena were referred to as "Satanic ritual abuse" (SRA). Over time, however, more than Satanism emerged. In the religious form of the abuse, other deities than Satan were worshipped, notably Lucifer, and a Gnostic form of the Christian god who kept good and evil in balance. Various ancient gods were represented.

Most of these survivors appeared to be from intergenerational cult groups, where many generations of a family would be involved. Others were abused as young children in daycare settings, even though their parents were not part of the abuse. In fact, these parents were often dedicated advocates on their children's behalf, often at great personal and emotional expense.

As therapists continued to work with clients who described experiences of this kind of abuse, it became evident that the phenomenon was much broader than what was initially seen. Survivors began to disclose a similar manifestation, which occurred in secretive military/political and organized criminal groups. This abuse seems to be more pragmatic than spiritual or creed-based in nature. Some cases include Satanist scenarios, but these seem to be staged more for the purpose of controlling and frightening the children or for use in pornography. Different scenarios, such as experiments or military training, predominate.

As you can see, the term "ritual abuse" is a complicated thing, whose definition evolves as more survivors reveal and come to understand their experiences. Like dissociation, it appears on a spectrum, according to some. For instance, the FAQs on the website of Survivorship, a group devoted to survivors of ritual abuse, offer both broad and narrow definitions of ritual abuse. The broad definition states that

> Ritual abuse is the abuse of a child, weaker adult, or animal in a ritual setting or manner. In a broad sense, many of our overtly or covertly socially sanctioned actions can be seen as ritual abuse, such as military basic training, hazing, racism, spanking children, and partner-battering. Some abuse is private (Jeffrey Dahmer, for example), some public. Public ritual abuse may be either open or secret.

Once again we see a definition that uses the term "ritual", but separates it from religion and applies it to any repetitive abusive activity. The website also provides this narrower definition of ritual abuse: "Repeated, extreme, sadistic abuse, especially of children, within a group setting. The group's ideology is used to justify the abuse, and abuse is used to teach the group's ideology. The activities are kept secret from society at large, as they violate norms and laws." This definition could apply to abuse by an intelligence agency, as well as that by a religious group.

When therapists first discovered ritual abuse, the focus was on the horrors the child victims endured. The mind control that is created by these groups was seen as secondary, and was not well understood. Over time, we grew to understand that this mind control is primary, and is actually the goal of all such abuse. The term "ritual abuse" then came to be used to apply to both the classic religiously based abuse specifically, and generically to the universal aspect of mind control.

Although there is a large body of knowledge, including a number of websites, devoted to mind control, the term has yet to appear in the *Oxford English Dictionary*. The commonly accepted definition can be found in Wikipedia, which describes mind control as involving

> a broad range of psychological tactics able to subvert an individual's control of his or her own thinking, behavior, emotions, or decisions . . . The goal is to have those individuals carry out actions which ordinarily would go counter to human nature. This training involves physical, sexual and emotional torture, the use of drugs, and, in some cases, the use of technologies which directly affect brain function.

In an online article entitled "Simplifying complex programming," Jeannie Riseman, a leading light in Survivorship, talks about methods of influencing or controlling thought as being on a continuum. She points out that conditioning is the way we transmit our culture to our children, through repetition and reinforcement. Some conditioning is good; other conditioning, such as that for racial prejudice, is not. The use of force and violence, however, reduces a child to a survival level in which she enters an altered state of consciousness. At this point, Riseman begins using the term "programming."

At the far end of the conditioning-programming spectrum, according to Riseman, is deliberate mind control, which is extremely complicated and malevolent. "When such violence is unexpected or unpredictable, when it is a common occurrence, when it is bizarre, and when it is done in secret or denied, it has a larger effect on the child. All these things are the case for children raised in dangerous cults."

In 1991, the report of the Los Angeles County Commission for Women's Ritual Abuse Task Force reflected their early understanding of the issue. It stated,

> Mind control is the cornerstone of ritual abuse, the key element in the subjugation and silencing of its victims. Victims of ritual abuse are subjected to a rigorously applied system of mind control designed to rob them of their sense of free will and to impose upon them the will of the cult and its leaders. Most often these ritually abusive cults are motivated by a Satanic belief system. The mind control is achieved through an elaborate system of brainwashing, programming, indoctrination, hypnosis, and the use of various mind-altering drugs. The purpose of the mind control is to compel ritual abuse victims to keep the secret of their abuse, to conform to the beliefs and behaviors of the cult, and to become functioning members who serve the cult by carrying out the directives of its leaders without being detected within society at large.

Child Abuse Wiki reaffirms this, defining ritual abuse as:

> a brutal form of abuse of children, adolescents, and adults, consisting of physical, sexual, and psychological abuse, and involving the use of rituals. Ritual does not necessarily mean Satanic. However, most survivors state that they were ritually abused as part of Satanic worship for the purpose of indoctrinating them into Satanic beliefs and practices. Ritual abuse rarely consists of a single episode. It usually involves repeated abuse over an extended period of time. The physical abuse is severe, sometimes including torture and killing. The sexual abuse is usually painful, sadistic, and humiliating, intended as means of gaining dominance over the victim. The psychological abuse is devastating and involves the use of ritual/indoctrination, which includes mind control techniques and mind altering drugs, and ritual/intimidation which conveys to the victim a profound terror of the cult members and of the evil spirits they believe cult members can command. Both during and after the abuse, most victims are in a state of terror, mind control, and dissociation in which disclosure is exceedingly difficult.

Note the inclusion of the concept of dissociation in this definition.

Even when the term "mind control" is not used, many applications or definitions of the term "ritual abuse" allude to it. Authors Randy Noblitt and Pamela Perskin Noblitt (2008), authors and editors of two important books on ritual abuse, define it as "abuse that occurs in a ceremonial or circumscribed manner for the purpose of creating or manipulating already created alter mental states." You will notice that the religious aspect of the abuse has almost disappeared from this definition, and Satanism is not mentioned at all. The Noblitts believe that this is a simple and clear definition that can generate testable hypotheses.

On the other hand, some others prefer a more detailed description of what is entailed in the abusive situation or a description of alleged perpetrators or perpetrating groups. Ellen Lacter, in her extensive website devoted to the issue of ritual abuse, gives this definition:

> Ritual abuse consists of conditioning and torture carried out in a ceremonial or calculated manner for the purpose of effecting control over a victim's mind and behavior. It is international in scope, with similarities and variations across cultures.
>
> Ritual abuse often involves the following:
>
> - Extreme, sadistic, repetitious, physical abuse/torture, often to near-death
> - Exploitation of the mind's capacity to dissociate trauma, to manipulate behavior, create amnesia, and to prevent disclosure
> - Mind control and brainwashing techniques for the purpose of indoctrination and control
> - Drugs to induce immobility, pain, confusion, hallucinations, unconscious states, depersonalization and derealization
> - Systematic abuse and rituals to coerce and indoctrinate victims into the abusers' beliefs and world view
> - Force, threats, and manipulation to coerce victims to harm others
> - Sexual abuse of children and adults including rape, prostitution, pornography, snuff films, and bestiality
> - Trafficking and slavery of children and adults
> - Abuse beginning in infancy and childhood, with the goal of life-long control
> - Deprivation of basic needs and human contact, including confinement and isolation
> - Human and animal sacrifice to appease and empower humans and their deities
> - Unconsenting medical and psychological experimentation to increase the ability to control a victim's mind and behavior
> - Attempts to control or dominate the "soul", "spirit", or their equivalents cross-culturally.

Programming and mind control in visible and hidden cults

The term "cult" is often used to describe certain visible religious or ideological groups that attempt to practice mind control. Conway and Siegelman's 1978 book "Snapping" details effects of brainwashing, or mind control, attempts in visible cults. Ritually abusive cults, which are generally hidden, are usually not recognized by these descriptions, although they should be. The Advanced Bonewits Cult Danger Evaluation Frame developed by Isaac Bonewits, an influential neopagan leader and author, lists eighteen different criteria by which to evaluate the dangerousness of a cult. These include Internal Control, External Control, Wisdom/Knowledge Claimed by Leaders, Wisdom/Knowledge Credited to Leaders by Members, Dogma, Recruiting, Front Groups, Wealth, Sexual Manipulation, Sexual Favoritism, Censorship, Isolation, Dropout Control, Violence, Paranoia, Grimness, Surrender of Will, and Hypocrisy.

If Bonewits' criteria were applied to the average Satanic or Luciferian cult, or the typical military or organized crime group described by mind-controlled clients in therapy offices, we would see extremely high scores on almost all items. The tactics of these groups, however, are quite different from, and more extreme than, those found in visible cults. They are much more violent, for one thing. Their methods are more sophisticated and the consequences of those tactics more complex. Their invisibility makes them particularly dangerous, and makes treating their victims/survivors more complicated. In order to keep their existence secret, members have to maintain "normal" lives while continuing to be involved with these groups.

Additionally, unlike members of the visible cults, members of ritually abusive cults are either born into cult families or recruited as very young children through caregivers outside the family. According to survivor accounts, all these invisible cults, as well as military and organized crime groups, begin their "brainwashing" with children.

The mind control of which we speak in this book achieves its power over its victims through "programming." Survivor Robin Morgan (see Chapter Ten) defines programming as follows: "Programming is the act of installing internal, pre-established reactions to external stimuli so that a person will automatically react in a predetermined manner to things like an auditory, visual or tactile signal or perform a specific set of actions according to a date and/or time."

Popular media representations of mind control involves trained spies or assassins working for the CIA or other military/political groups or even companies without their conscious knowledge, because they have other "personalities" who engage in these activities. Think of Jason Bourne, or the hero of *Conspiracy Theory*, or Echo in television's *Dollhouse*, as well as other American television shows and films. The stories concocted about these mind-controlled special agents suggest that they are recruited in adulthood, even making a conscious choice to participate. Once they have been recruited, their previous memories are erased and new "personalities" created with special skills and manufactured memories.

The awful reality, however, is that there is only one way to create persons who can engage in activities such as spying, sex slavery, assassination, or ritual murder without *any* conscious awareness of this. The way is through abuse and torture of small children, separating parts of their minds that are then indoctrinated and trained individually as the abusers see fit. There is no adult who volunteers his loyalty to such a group because of thought-out belief in its goals; there are only small children who are trained by these groups through torture, and, as a consequence, grow up with major dissociative disorders. Worse, in most cases these children's own parents are involved in their torture and the training of their parts. Amnesia related to the traumatic events is much more likely if caregivers are involved in the abuse, and if it has to be kept secret, as Jennifer Freyd points out in *Betrayal Trauma* (1996).[1]

Systematic child abuse and its consequences

The consensus among professionals who have treated and studied people with dissociative disorders is that the vast majority have suffered severe, and often secretive, childhood trauma—usually, but not always, child abuse. This abuse often involves both betrayal and secrecy. Many people who appear in psychotherapy offices alleging histories of ritual abuse and/or mind control are found to suffer from a major dissociative disorder such as dissociative identity disorder (DID), or a close variant, "dissociative disorder not otherwise specified" (DDNOS). The traumatic dissociation that creates such disorders is usually deliberately designed by these abusers.

Mind control, including ritual abuse, is usually deliberately designed to produce traumatic dissociation particularly as found in DDNOS, in which many parts with distinct identities switch behind an apparently normal presenting personality. These disorders are very similar, in that they both involve separate ego states that switch behind an apparently normal presenting personality, who is seen by outsiders as the "real" person. However, DID is distinguished by the fact that inside parts periodically take over and act in the outside world, leaving the main personality with amnesia about what happened during these time periods. Both dissociative disorders prevent the secrets of abuser groups from being discovered. It appears that DDNOS is the intentional goal of these abusers, but DID sometimes results from a failure of programming.

What we are discussing in these pages is not new. Organized groups have always abused children for their own purposes. "Possession" is known in many cultures. It is likely that the kind of systematized abuse that created dissociative disorders was originally confined to religious groups which wanted to produce "possession" states. Eventually—in the mid to late twentieth century—the abuse appears to have become more scientific, designed to split the children's psyches in such ways that they could be used for the purposes of the abusing group. Although abusers continued to tell children they were inserting "demons" or "spirits" into them, these groups became aware that what they were really doing was creating dissociative disorders.

Dissociative disorders

Appropriate treatment for dissociative disorders requires additional knowledge, skills, and training beyond the basics required for general psychotherapy. There are several excellent books on dissociation diagnosis and treatment, and online courses offered by the International Society for the Study of Trauma and Dissociation (www.isstd.org) that contain a great deal of practical guidance. Conferences and study groups on DID and related disorders take place in various locations around the world. If you are new to the field, it is important to find a supervisor or consultant experienced in the dissociative disorders field, ideally one with RA/MC treatment experience. In the meantime, here are some basics, as they relate to the subjects of this book.

An essential component of mind control programming is the creation of a number of separate identity states, which may also be referred to as ego states or alternate identities ("alters"). Most trained "alter personalities" are created and trained in childhood. Abusers purposely create complex dissociative disorders in which additional personalities can be added at later dates in victims who have been properly prepared.

Different training is given to each state or group of similar states. Each is assigned and trained to do a specific "jobs" or to have a different function. The more complex the abuse and mind control training the child has experienced, the more complex the personality system. In this way, the perpetrator group can create the ideal sex slave, drug courier, or cult priest, who does not know he or she has been victimized by, or committed, a crime, and, thus, will genuinely and convincingly claim innocence if caught. This structuring of the personality system allows perpetrator groups to continue abusing and training children without those children breaking the secret. Child victims will, in their everyday lives, be unaware that any of this has happened.

Typically, some of these identity states will interact with the "normal" world, and others will perform functions only for the perpetrator group as a result of being cued. Some of those can take over executive function of the body. Identity states will have no access to, or memory of, the thoughts and activities of the other states. Only those who know how to activate a particular trained identity state will be able to talk to the person in that identity state. This is one thing that differentiates such structured systems from the more "organic" form of multiplicity that comes from non-mind control-based, albeit severe, child abuse. (With military / political mind control, some identity states can only be accessed through certain other specific identity states.)

Many of the states, even in adults, will continue to experience themselves as young children. Some of the parts believe their only choice is to remain loyal to the group in order for themselves, or others, to stay alive. This is essential to understand if one is to treat this population with empathy.

Typically, emotions "leak through" from the hidden states to the main everyday personality, and this leakage of anxiety or sadness or anger is what brings the person to therapy. In these cases, cognitive behavioral treatments are unsuccessful because the hidden states will continue to exist, along with the extreme emotions created by their abuse.

Trainees discarded by the perpetrator groups because they are rebellious or security risks are often programmed to self-destruct with drugs and alcohol and risky behaviors. Successfully programmed survivors are reported to be highly functional in the identity states that perform cult rituals or other tasks required by their group.

Mind control methods are constantly evolving. Jeannie Riseman of Survivorship summarizes the process succinctly:

> what we are referring to when we talk of mind-control experimentation is the deliberate and skillful manipulation of parts of a person's mind so that it becomes, and remains, under the control of another. The experimenters, trainers, and handlers have a particular goal in mind and they select the techniques that will enable them to achieve that goal. They are familiar with many different techniques and when they aren't satisfied with the results, they modify their plan. They are thorough and systematic. They know what they are doing. The technology they have at their command is much more complicated and sophisticated than what is available to the average abusive group. It's cutting edge and can be pretty expensive. This technology includes electroshock, implants, equipment to deliver information to different parts of the brain, as in split brain techniques, and many other things.

Systematic child abuse, government experimentation, and networking

Mind control abuses designed and perpetrated by US intelligence agencies and those of other countries are now widely understood to have occurred. These activities were assigned such names as MKULTRA, BLUEBIRD, and PAPERCLIP, which involved Nazi doctors and scientists who had been given asylum in the USA. The Cold War was used as justification for mind control abuses intended to create spies or assassins who lacked conscious awareness of their involvement.

Described in CIA documents that became available through the American Freedom of Information Act in the latter part of the twentieth century, these activities have been the subject of senate hearings in the USA and much media attention. Colin Ross documented them in his 2000 book, *Bluebird*. It is definitively documented that some mind control abuses that we identify as emanating from the government were designed, promoted, and executed by the most respected psychiatrists and psychologists of the day, in the most revered learning and behavioral health institutions. Some perpetrators have been exposed for practicing such techniques on persons who came to them for help. For example, Canada's Dr Donald Ewen Cameron was a leading Montreal psychiatrist who, in the 1950s and 1960s, with the support of CIA funding, engaged in unethical experiments on people who sought help for run-of-the-mill emotional difficulties, destroying memories of their entire previous lives (see the Wikipedia entry regarding Cameron).

We know that the dissociation created by childhood mind control can yield a perfectly invisible spy or political assassin. What is not generally known is that some of these projects involved experimentation on children. It is suspected that most documents regarding this were destroyed. In her 2001 book, *A Nation Betrayed: The Chilling True Story of Secret Cold War Experiments Performed on Our Children and Other Innocent People*, survivor Carol Rutz (see Chapter Twelve of this book) describes the years of government mind control experiments to which she was subjected. Her memories of sexual abuse, hypnosis, drugs, ESP, and other experiences are specific and meticulous, but she wanted more. In 1999, at the age of fifty-two, after submitting a FOIA request, she received the validation she had been waiting for. It came in the form of three CD ROMs:

> On December 17, 1999 I turned 52 years old. On that day I received three CD ROMs from the CIA in response to my FOIA request. Forty-eight years after I was first experimented on, I found solid proof of my memories—proof that was in the government vaults of the nearly 18,000 pages of declassified documents from the Bluebird/Artichoke and MKULTRA programs. One of the documents specifically stated that experimental studies of the postulated abilities of a few specially gifted subjects would be conducted. [Subproject 136 of MKULTRA CIA Mori ID#17395 ESP Research, 1961 and 1962, declassified documents from CIA]. The document states 'that in working with individual subjects, special attention will be given to dissociative states which tend to accompany spontaneous ESP experiences. Such states can be induced and controlled to some extent with hypnosis and drugs . . . The data used in the study will be obtained from special groups such as psychotics, children and mediums . . .'
>
> The document continues,
>
> 'Learning studies will be instituted in which the subject will be rewarded or punished for his overall performance and reinforced in various ways by being told whether he was right, by being told what the target was, with electric shock etc.'
>
> The proposal then goes on to say,
>
> 'In other cases drugs and psychological tricks will be used to modify his attitudes. The experimenters will be particularly interested in dissociative states, from the abaissement de niveau mental, to multiple personality in so-called mediums; and an attempt will be made to induce a number of states of this kind, using hypnosis.' The government had finally handed me the validation I had been searching for. To say my heart stopped that day is almost true.

Some of these government documents show that experiments were done on children as well as adults. One of the declassified documents from MKULTRA describes two experiments on two girls in 1951, in which children, after being taught to respond to code words which would function as post-hypnotic suggestions, were successfully trained to place an incendiary device or steal a person's belongings while in a trance state, and then be amnesic about doing it.

Survivor accounts such as that of Carol Rutz are corroborated by others who indicate that governmental groups wanting to create mind-controlled spies used not only hypnosis, but electroshock, torture, and complex technology. We know that a large number of these documents have been destroyed, and it does not defy the imagination to imagine that the perpetrators would not want the public to know they had tortured children in the name of national defense.

Perpetrator groups and connections

The CIA is not the only political group to have engaged in mind control on children. It appears that other government agencies in the USA and the intelligence agencies of other countries, as well as neo-Nazi groups, have also engaged in similar practices, with similar goals. We know that the Nazis experimented on children in ruthless ways. There is evidence that some Nazi doctors were imported to the United States (Bower, 1987), where they continued their research for a different employer (and covertly for the neo-Nazis, if they believed their original ideology). Many ritual abuse survivors report "doctors" at their cult training centers who assisted with their training.

Where did these groups access the children on whom they experimented and whom they trained? According to survivors, during the second half of the twentieth century there appears to have been some collaboration between the secretive military and political organizations and the occult religious groups who were already engaging in deliberate systematized child abuse. Many survivors report being abused by religious groups, more than one military or political group (for example, CIA and neo-Nazis and Ku Klux Klan), and also organized criminal groups. These groups apparently share children, strategies, and even trainers. Groups who use children in child pornography often borrow them from multi-generational incestuous families, such as are found in organized cults. Military mind control trainers also find cult children readily trainable as potential spies and killers because a dissociative foundation has already been created in them. Whether criminal, religious, or political/military, abusers on an international scale are aware that dissociation is the lynchpin of power and secrecy. What better source of already dissociative children than the parents who were abusing them in ritualistic cults?

All these groups employ the same torture, interrogation, and training techniques used on adults by military and police all over the world. Evidence is that many of the techniques of ritual abuse and mind control are used for child pornography, the training of child soldiers (notably in Africa) and the human trafficking of sex trade workers (*Guardian*, 2009). The behavior of at least some suicide bombers and terrorists is consistent with that found in programmed survivors who present for therapy.

Organized crime has also been involved, using children (often the same ones) for child prostitution and pornographic filming, and wanting ways to control those children and make sure of their secrecy. We can speculate that these enterprises are an important income source for both ritualistic cults and intelligence agencies.

When working with this population, it is extremely important to remember that you are dealing with survivors of powerful and violent organized abusive groups who have a high stake in keeping what they are doing hidden from the general public. It does not matter whether the perpetrators are parents, occult religious groups, military and intelligence operations, or traditional organized crime. They are well organized to prevent disclosures and to stop disclosures from continuing if they have been made.

> When you have eliminated the impossible, whatever remains, however improbable, must be the truth. (Sir Arthur Conan Doyle)
>
> Men occasionally stumble over the truth, but most of them pick themselves up and hurry off as if nothing ever happened. (Winston Churchill)
>
> I have sworn . . . eternal hostility against every form of tyranny over the mind of man. (Thomas Jefferson)

Note

1. Adults without pre-existing dissociative disorders can apparently be coerced into a form of dissociation which Robert Jay Lifton, in his book, *The Nazi Doctors*, calls "doubling," in which they behave very differently at home from the way they behave in daily coercive life-threatening situations, but they do have some awareness of what they are doing and have to find ways to justify it. For example, he states that "By not quite seeing it, doctors could distance themselves from the very killing they were actively supervising" (1986, p. 199). They developed what Lifton calls an "Auschwitz self," different from the pre-war and the post-war self, who justified what they were doing by racial and religious ideologies.

CHAPTER THREE

The basics of therapy

Here are some basic points regarding treatment of persons with dissociative disorders, and mind control histories. This initial material will not be new for some of you, although others may need help to understand the internal experience of a person who is multiple, or some of the fundamentals of how to approach such clients.

Developing empathy for people with dissociative disorders

Mind control programming builds on the natural, reactive dissociative fragmenting caused by childhood trauma. The trauma-based developing of many selves that begins in early childhood and results from extreme (often life-threatening) trauma is not merely psychological. It is also a biological process in the brain. It is not something that the person chooses, and it cannot begin in adulthood. Most survivors of organized mind control and/or ritual abuse are "polyfragmented"—that is, they have a large number of alter personalities. In order to properly help them, we need to understand what it is like to be them.

Recognizing and respecting differences

People tend to assume that other people are similar to them, unless those people are in some way visibly different. It is easy for us to accept that someone who has a different skin color may be different in their background and way of thinking, but more difficult when people look and sound the same as us. Sometimes, someone may appear just like you physically, but their accent may reveal an alien background and culture. They look the same, but they are different. These differences we can also recognize.

We therapists often make inaccurate assumptions about people living with DID and DDNOS. They often appear to be "just like us," so we often assume their experience of life reflects our own. But this is profoundly untrue. It results in a communication gap, and, as a consequence, treatment errors. Because the dominant culture is one of persons with a single sense of self, most with multiple "selves" have learned to hide their multiplicity and imitate those who are singletons (that is, have a single, non-fragmented personality). Therapists who do not understand this sometimes describe their clients' alters without acknowledging their dissociation, saying only that they have different "moods." In overlooking dissociation, this description fails to recognize the essential truth of such disorders, and of the alters.

It was difficult for me to comprehend what life was like for my first few dissociative clients. I had experienced mood states in my own life, especially during my teens, but through introspection, I could eventually identify the needs they represented and make sure I met those needs. I had also experienced the usual teenage identity confusion of struggling to figure out what kind of a self could encompass all aspects of me, but, still, I had always had a strong adult self. I had never "lost time," never heard voices, and never experienced myself as being more than one person. I knew what I was doing at all times and had a relatively consistent set of skills and behaviors. In short, my daily experience of life was light years away from that of my dissociative clients.

Fortunately, my clients could teach me about their culture of multiplicity.

Those who are aware of their condition and experience themselves as "multiple" might refer to themselves as "we" rather than "I." I shall use the term "multiple" at times, in respect for their internal experience. It is important to point out, however, that I recognize that someone who is multiple is actually a single fragmented person rather than many people. On the outside, a multiple is probably not visibly different from anyone else. But that image is only an imitation: people who are multiple cannot think like the rest of us, and we cannot think like them. (In fact, since it is difficult for the multiple to understand how singletons think, some of them might think it is *you* who are strange.)

Just as a singleton cannot become a multiple at will, a multiple cannot become a singleton, until and unless the barriers between the parts of the self are removed. Those barriers were put up to enable the child to tolerate, and so survive, unavoidable abuse.

In addition to pursuing educational resources, ask the person you are working with to be your teacher about being multiple. Those who are aware of their condition are usually glad to be asked. It can be very lonely to not be understood by other people. Once you start meeting the insiders, you might find that the child personalities in adult bodies feel nobody else "gets" them or recognizes their existence. It is also important for you to know that they generally prefer to be talked to as the age they feel they are rather than the age the body is. However, you must be careful with recognizing and addressing them, because, like all of us, child alters are all different: some are shy and some are outgoing; some like attention and others hate it. And some inner systems are very afraid of being known.

Be careful not to treat the person you are working with as a curiosity. Perhaps you do not have a point of reference for this, but I remember how embarrassed I felt on my first night as a student in India, when, as I changed for bed in a university residence, a crowd gathered to stare at me and see whether I was the same color all over. I did not like having to perform (for me, it was singing English popular songs) for other students in India while they all giggled and talked about how cute I was. Multiples do not like having to "perform" (for example, let child alters come out) for the entertainment of singletons. Their human dignity is no less important than anyone else's.

When being multiple is someone's normal state of mind, it may be seen as normal for everyone else, too. I have met several multiples who just assume that everyone else "loses" periods of time (when another alter personality is in charge of the body), finds themselves in places without knowing how they got there, and/or hears voices inside their head. These are typical experiences for them.

Multiplicity is called a "disorder", but has served the person as a valuable, creative asset. It is not an inferior way of being. We who are singletons are well adapted for living in safety, being conscious of everything that happens to us. Being multiple is well-adapted for living with ongoing trauma. I once heard a prison psychologist say he would not treat multiples, because prison is so traumatic that you needed to be multiple to survive well.

Even in "normal" life, there are sometimes advantages to being multiple, because in some cases it permits heightened abilities. I knew a multiple whose alter, "Brain," memorized all her textbooks and was able to remember everything on exams word for word. I knew another who had alters with all kinds of special savant abilities. Without the distractions of emotions, everyday life, and other thoughts, an alter with a singular focus can sometimes do amazing things.

Here is a final point to remember: just as you should not assume that someone from another culture should want to join your culture and give up his or her own, do not assume that every multiple wants to become a singleton. Some do, some do not. Many well-adapted multiples, whose alter personalities are extremely cooperative, prefer to stay as a community of coordinated selves rather than seeking to achieve the therapeutic goal of "integration".

As you can see, understanding your clients who are multiple demands a cultural sensitivity not different from that which many of you might have employed when working with clients from other ethnic groups.

The "apparently normal personality"—the alter you view as "the client"

You should not assume that the adult who functions in the world, or who presents to you, week after week, is the "real" person, and the other personalities are less real. The client who comes to therapy is not "the" person; there are other personalities to meet and work with.

When DID was still officially called MPD, the "person" who lived life on the outside was known as the "host" personality, and the *other* parts known as alters. These terms, unfortunately, implied that all the parts other than the host were guests, and therefore of less importance than the host. They were somehow secondary. The currently favored theory of structural dissociation (Nijenhuis & Den Boer, 2009; van der Hart, Nijenhuis, & Steele, 2006), which more accurately describes the way personality systems operate, instead distinguishes between two kinds of states: the apparently normal personality, or *ANP*, and the emotional personality, or *EP*, both of which could include a number of parts. As Barlow and Freyd (2009) describe the distinction,

> EPs hold traumatic memory, often being stuck in the sensory experience of the memory and unaware of the passage of time. ANPs, in contrast, manage the tasks of daily life, such as working,

> and the functions of attachment and caretaking. They may be emotionally unconnected to, or amnesic for, past traumatic events. [p. 101]

A child who is being abused on an ongoing basis needs to be able to function despite the trauma that dominates his or her daily life. That becomes the job of at least one ANP, whom the child creates to be unaware of the abuse and also of the multiplicity, and to "pass as normal" in the real world. The ANP is just an alter specialized for handling the adult world—in other words, the "front person" for the system.

Even therapists who are experienced at working with multiples often struggle with this, making statements such as, "Is this Jane, or one of the alters?" This is very irritating to dissociative systems who are aware of their multiplicity, and confusing to those who are not, especially if it happens not to be Jane who is "out."

Because of their countertransference with the ANP as the client, many therapists are also resistant to the fact that working to strengthen the main presenting personality might help, but is not primary, and generally will achieve only superficial improvements. Inside is where the work occurs.

ANPs, themselves, often have a great deal of difficulty accepting that they are multiple. The words "personalities" or "alters" may frighten them. In the old view of "hosts" and "alternates", "the client" has this difficulty. In reality, whether the person acknowledges that he or she is multiple at any given time depends on who is "out," or in conscious control of the body, and on how much contact the ANP has with the "inside world."

It is common that in early stages of therapy or of recovery, the ANP knows very little about the other alters. This is one reason to be careful to avoid another common mistake, one which I have made: being too blunt early in therapy with the ANP about his or her role. Having worked with many multiples who are well aware of their condition, I forget what a shock it is to receive the initial diagnosis. "What do you mean, I'm only an alter?" I rush to reassure them that they are a very specialized and important alter, perhaps the only one who can handle the adult world successfully. But that does not erase the shock.

In fact, rather than being "more" than the others, the ANP is generally one that is very limited, with little power in the system, little memory of what happened, and limited energy or emotions. Many ANPs are what used to be called "depleted hosts," alters who have very little energy or strength and are chronically depressed. Although the job of handling everyday adult life is important, some alters who attempt this are too porous to be effective in the world. Two of my long-term dissociative clients chose to replace their outside personalities with other alters who were less permeable to the emotional states of the other parts. (Yes, that is a choice that multiples can make.) In both cases the change made them much more functional.

It is unlikely that one ANP will serve as a constant throughout the person's life. Your client is, therefore, likely to have others besides the one you know, or several who you might think of as "the host". Adults with dissociative disorders often have several ANPs from earlier stages of life inside. They usually have the same name but are of different ages. Sometimes, there are several current ANPs, each of whom assumes she or he is the "real" person and is amnesic of the existence of the others. Their current knowledge and experience may overlap, while their other characteristics differ somewhat. This makes them glide easily from one to the other, and the therapist can easily miss the switch.

One client of mine has four ANPs by the same name who alternate with one another and with some teenage parts at the workplace. One of them is severely depressed and suicidal, another is just a functionary who does her job, another loves music and art and nature, and another is an investigator who wants to know what has gone on in her life to create her symptoms. What they all have in common is their ignorance about the abuse the client suffered and their ability to function somewhat in the adult world. They are not unemotional, although they do not necessarily know the sources of those emotions or recall what they relate to. Emotions from the inside parts leak into the suicidal one more than into the others.

The ANP is almost never the original person, especially in those with extensive abuse histories. You might say that the "original" is an untraumatized child, infant, or even fetus from whom the first split was made. (Two of my clients who integrated fully, and another integrated DID, found such an infant and incorporated all the life experiences of the other alters into that infant, who gradually grew older.) Or you could say that all parts are parts of the original person: some people believe that infants and babies do not have an integrated self, but are a collection of emotional and bodily states whose selfhood is knitted together by the attachment to, and reflection of, a loving caregiver. Many multiples never have this experience, so remain disintegrated.

In one of my clients, the primary ANP had integrated with other parts, and the whole multiplex system went by the body's name, but no alter had that name. In my experience, the only multiples in whom there is one strong ANP are those who were abused or traumatized for only a brief period of time, usually outside the home. Their long period of safety allows them to build a strong "outside world" personality. However, they still have hidden split-off parts who come out only occasionally, or never come out but influence the person's behavior and feelings from time to time. My client who has only three alter personalities besides the ANP was unaware of her multiplicity until she encountered a work-related trauma at age sixty. She became symptomatic as the hidden parts emerged to deal with the recent trauma. Her ANP was very strong until that trauma awakened the emotional states from the original child abuse. At that point, these emotions leaked into the ANP from the other alters. The youngest alter is probably the original person from whom the others were split. Three of her four parts were originally ANPs during her childhood and teens.

In DDNOS, ANPs are merely shells through which the other alters are manifested without overt switching. This makes the multiplicity of your client much less obvious, and supports the fact that you need to be capable of assessing and diagnosing the dissociative disorder properly. I recently consulted to a therapist who felt he had accomplished something by getting his dissociative client to remain in her ANP throughout her sessions with him. His view reflects the fundamental mistake that untrained therapists tend to make with DID and DDNOS. Although his client was properly diagnosed, he assumed that the ANP should be encouraged to take charge of the other parts at all times. He also expected her to speak for them—in other words, to do their therapy. This denied the other parts the opportunity to reveal their secrets, heal their pain, or correct their childhood-based beliefs about the world.

If you were doing family therapy, would it be a good idea to only meet with the father, especially if he had not talked with his children or his spouse in years? Would the other family members feel as if their experiences and feelings mattered? Would they be able to improve their relationships? You must work with the parts who are *inside* of the system. Directly.

What daily life is like for "a multiple"

Imagine that you have periods of "lost time." You may find writings or drawings which you must have done, but do not remember producing. Perhaps you find child-sized clothing or toys in your home but have no children. You might also hear voices or babies crying in your head. Imagine that you can never predict when you will be able to have certain knowledge or social skills, and your emotions and your energy level seem to change at the drop of a hat, and for no apparent reason. You cannot understand why you feel what you feel, and, if you are in therapy, you cannot explore those feelings when asked. Your life feels disjointed and often confusing. It is a frightening experience. It feels out of control, and you probably think you are going crazy. That is what it is like to be multiple, and all of it is experienced by the ANPs.

A multiple may also experience very concrete problems, even life-threatening ones. My client whose multiplicity emerged at the age of sixty came home from a meeting to find that an alter had begun to cook something and then left the pot on the stove, almost burning her house down. ANPs and EPs alike may struggle with the serious consequences of this complication.

Your client will probably not know what is responsible for these experiences, and might well have sought help from many therapists who did not know, either.

The following is a categorization of what an ANP might experience.

Amnesia

Amnesia is a major distinguishing characteristic of multiples who are DID, but not of those who are DDNOS. Most people with DID experience periods of amnesia, although they may not know it. Some alters are able to watch all of current life, so are aware of what happens; others, including most ANPs, are very unaware of what has happened while they are not "out" in the body. Some basic indicators of amnesia for persons with ritual abuse and mind control histories include discovering that you have a cut, burn, or bruises with no memory of how it happened.

When one client's brother visited, and talked incessantly in foul language, her oldest "insider" decided to tell him off. The next morning he told his little sister, "You give as good as you get; I didn't know you had it in you." She had no idea what she had said to him. I had to get the story from the alter and tell her. This protector alter was able to observe while the main person was interacting with the brother, but the main person was not able to observe when the other alter was out. It is common that other alters generally observe, although the ANP is unaware of it.

Some dissociative people dissimulate to cover for their periods of amnesia. Imagine what it must be like to experience your own life as if it were a television series, only you do not appear in many of the episodes, and you have no idea what happens in them. (Imagine never being able to recall what happened from one therapy session to the next.)

Sometimes, things happen which the ANP would never have done. One forty-year-old married woman I worked with years ago discovered her multiplicity when a teenage alter developed an online romance with a young man in another part of the continent. Believing herself to be a teenager, she made arrangements to fly to his city to meet him. Another client was caught on a store video pocketing an item without paying for it, an act that was entirely out of character for her. (In her case, it appeared to be a brief stress-related dissociative episode rather than an ongoing dissociative disorder.)

Voices and visions

Hearing voices is another of the most important parts of the experience for most multiples. The voices, of course, are usually the other alters. Those multiples who do not understand their condition frequently seek out help from churches, who perform exorcisms, or from mental health facilities, who diagnose psychosis, medicating heavily and inappropriately. Many therapists believe that these voices are distinguished from the voices of schizophrenia by the fact that they are experienced as coming from inside the head. But this is not always the case. One of my first DID clients, diagnosed with schizophrenia, heard the alters' voices coming out of his television set. I asked one of the main alters why this happened. "If we talk inside his head, he thinks we're demons and doesn't listen to us. But he believes everything he hears or sees on TV." Lesson to learn: there are as many ways to be multiple as there are multiples.

The voices may sound to the ANP like background noise in a crowded place, or they may stand out individually. In some cases, they are just experienced as thoughts rather than heard as voices, but they still feel alien to the person experiencing them, and contribute to the person feeling he or she is going crazy. They may be strong thoughts that come "out of nowhere" and do not really seem to belong to the person. "Thought-snatching," having one's thoughts disappear as inside parts take them away, is also common.

Some voices may cry or give orders or call the ANP names. They may be helpful or reassuring, coming from inner self-helpers. However, their reassurance might or might not be based on facts. Often the voices are critical. Everyone has an "inner critic," of course, but the inner critics of multiples are generally very unpleasant, and are internally audible to the person who is trying to accomplish things or carry on a conversation. No matter what one of my clients does, he hears some inside complainers complaining about it, usually in foul language. He used to speak to them out loud, and nastily. He appeared psychotic. He has now learnt to think to them, and, since he realizes they are small child alters, to reassure them and tell them he loves them. As a result, they are more cooperative, but they still complain in the only kind of language they know, the language they heard at home while attempting to grow up. You will notice that some voices often tell the person to shut up or be quiet, call him or her a liar, and say that certain events never happened. Others may suggest self-harm or suicide. These are all persecutor/protector alters, which we shall discuss in detail later. They are common in mind-controlled personality systems, where they are supposed to say these things to make sure the secrets of the abuse do not leak out. They often engage in more severe reprisals if they are not heeded.

It is common for multiples to hear the sound of infants or small children crying. Abusers often punish children severely for crying (suffocation is the treatment of choice for many cult children being trained not to cry), so the crying goes "inside." An alter who never comes out into the world holds the tears and the crying sound.

Many multiples not only hear, but also see their alters. They might be afraid of alters who resemble their perpetrators, or demons or monsters or animals. They might be afraid to go near alters who appear hurt or dirty or in the conditions in which they were abused. (They also might see their alters' faces in mirrors, which is part of why they often avoid mirrors.)

Sometimes, the voices being heard are not the other alters, but parts of traumatic memories being played back, for example, the voice of an abuser telling the child not to talk about what had happened on pain of death. This is particularly true with mind-control survivors.

Above all, remember that these voices are *communicating*. Some of your clients understand their condition and have developed effective inner communication. It is important to allow periods of silence in your conversations with them, so that they may consult internally when they hear something or when there is a problem. When they communicate in a way the ANP cannot understand, it is your job to facilitate.

There are some multiples who do not hear voices at all, even when they try to. That is the experience of my client with only three alters. It is difficult for the ANP to communicate with the alters, because they are unable to hear one another, and have to write in a book or talk via me.

Depersonalization and derealization

Depersonalization and derealization are dissociative problems that can exist independently or be part of a more major dissociative disorder. They can make the person feel as if he or she is no longer himself or herself, or feel that familiar places are strange. When alters first appear, the person may have the experience of watching themselves doing things they have no control over, such as harming the body. Another alter is actually "out" and is doing it, and the usual "host" is relegated to a "back seat." This situation can make the world feel unreal to the person who isn't fully present. It can be quite frightening. Imagine how out of control it must feel, as well.

Intrusions of traumatic material

Dissociation protects against overwhelming trauma. When the dissociation is reduced, the post-traumatic intrusive symptoms—flashbacks and nightmares of trauma—can be expected to increase. These may be visual, auditory, or tactile (including physical or emotional pain). Small things in the present environment could trigger flashbacks and feelings of overwhelm and an inability to cope. Intrusions are more common than we generally realize: depression, anxiety, panic attacks, obsessions and compulsions are often emotional intrusions from past traumatic memories that are not recognized as such.

In mind-controlled multiples, these flashbacks should not automatically be treated as spontaneous eruptions of dissociated material, however; they might also be deliberately administered by trained alters in response to behaviors disobedient to the perpetrators, especially telling about the abuse.

Different alters, different awarenesses

While the ANP generally has continuity of memory for most of his or her current life, and hears only some of the alters as voices or thoughts, the other parts often have much more awareness of the personality system. In the first place, unlike the ANP, they are likely to recognize that they are part of a "personality system". They may use the first person plural ("we") when referring to that system.

When someone who is multiple has been in treatment for the dissociative disorder for some time, the ANP may gain some degree of similar awareness, and may then be able to talk with insiders. In many or most cases, however, the ANP does not naturally "go inside" to interact with other parts, but simply "blanks out" while another alter takes over, while the wall of dissociation is maintained between them. It is essential for the therapist to teach the ANP to communicate with the other alters, if the ANP lacks this skill or habit. A lifelong habit of looking outward, and not speaking with the voices, is difficult to overcome. I find it helpful to frequently ask the ANPs of my multiple clients to "ask inside" when they want to know something about, for example, the source of a symptom they are experiencing.

The ANP is generally oriented to time and place, but many of the other alters might not be. They generally believe it is still the year and place where their abuse happened, and they interpret all current events in terms of the experience of that time and place.

Although all the selves of a multiple are really wounded parts of one person, in most cases they experience themselves and one another as separate people. They are just as real to themselves as people on the outside. They might actually see the other selves in locations in the inner world. It is when they are aware of the existence of other selves that they feel multiple. In addition, when mind control has been involved, some of the selves might believe things about their identities and purposes which were deliberately taught to them by their abusers.

However, all the alters are very limited, not just the ANP. The parts or selves feel themselves to be complete persons, but each tends to have a specific function and an unambiguous emotional state. And they are all specialists in only their own particular emotional positions. In those ways, most of them are one-dimensional. Alters have separate and different memories, feelings, and approaches to life, and a sense of separate identity and agency. They do not necessarily know what the other alters do or think. Many alters feel hollow, depersonalized, or uncertain of their identity, precisely because they *are* just part of a whole. It is together that they form a complete person.

Switching

Imagine there are a number of identical brothers or sisters who impersonate one another. You do not know when they change places, perhaps because they can do this so fast that you can not detect it, and you may talk to many different ones within one conversation. However, if you know them as individuals, you learn to recognize them not by their physical appearance but by their characteristic moods, tones of voice, facial expressions, and other body language. It is the same with alter personalities of multiples. They generally look the same, but they might act differently. You might also see physical evidence of them changing places, in overt behaviors such as eye movements, body tremors, losing track of conversation, or in other, more subtle signs, such as shifts in mood. This is what you see when you see a person with overt dissociative identity disorder.

Most multiples, however, do not show dramatic physical symptoms of switching. The larger the number of alters, the less detectable will be the switches. My client with only three alter personalities switches very visibly: she becomes sleepy, her eyes roll, and then after a few seconds one of the younger parts comes "out" into the body. There is a similar visual switching process when the part goes back inside. The ANP emerges with no memory of what just happened, but with some physical symptoms attributable to the alter, such as a dry mouth or a sore throat (belonging to an alter who had chronic tonsillitis in childhood).

Since alters in a DID system change places often, you should not assume that the person you are talking to remembers what the body has seen, heard, done, or said, even five minutes ago. Switching can be problematic even for those with DDNOS. The shell alter bridges the transitions smoothly so that the individual does not appear multiple at all. When an ANP is a shell, his or her awareness or behavior varies according to which other alters are conscious at any given time. One long-term client of mine, who had a shell ANP, used to switch constantly just behind the surface. A conversation with him was about ten conversations at the same time. He would switch in mid-sentence, and raise a completely different topic, then resume the original topic when the alter who began that topic re-emerged. It took him a long time to gain control over the switching and train his alters to take their turns, and he was unable to accomplish this until his personality system chose a different alter to be "out front" than the one who was originally there, one who had more ego strength and was less permeable to the others inside.

Multiples and responsibility

Remember not to assume that the ANP is able to control the behavior of the alters if she or he only "takes responsibility". If the ANP of a multiple tells you that someone inside wants to kill her, for example, she is telling you that she does not have control over it, and instructing her to take control will not help. You will need to work with the alters involved.

Alter personalities hold memories only of the parts of the person's life that they, as alters, have actually *lived*. Sometimes, to repeat a point, when an inappropriate behavior happens, the ANP just does not know about it, and is only aware of lost time, or is aware but unable to control it. An alter cannot be held responsible for events they truly do not remember or had no control over at the time. I once treated a ten-year-old girl who had just one alter personality in addition to the host, a three-year-old with the same name as her. When she got bored in school, the ten-year-old would "go inside" her head, and the three-year-old would come out into the body and behave like a three-year-old, which was inappropriate for the classroom. The ten-year-old would then find herself in the school office in trouble with the principal, without any idea of what had happened. While the whole person could be said to be responsible for the behavior, the ten-year-old was not, and the three-year-old was too young to realize what was wrong with her behavior.

In order to deal with issues of responsibility, find and talk with the alter who is actually responsible—either the one who performed the behavior, or another alter who made him or her do it. Remember to be gentle even with the alter who is responsible. Generally, multiples have been abused emotionally as well as physically and sexually, and are very sensitive to blame. The whole story of alters' lives in the outside world is of being held responsible for things they do not remember doing. They get accused of lying and of manipulating. They might, at times, lie and manipulate, especially when parts are out who are very young or who do not have access to certain parts of the brain; for example, they cannot feel pain or cannot feel guilt. But much of the time they just do not know what happened. The alters have learnt to do this because of living with severe punishment. It takes experience in a safe world to learn more direct and honest strategies for having one's needs met.

Identifying ritual abuse and mind control survivors

Once you recognize that you have a client with a major dissociative disorder, you need to determine whether he or she also has a history of ritual abuse or mind control. This may be a controversial perspective, but there is considerable evidence to support it. Here are some statistics provided by Dr Catherine Gould in 1995:

> Among 2,709 members of the American Psychological Association who responded to a poll, 2,292 cases of ritual abuse were reported (Bottoms, Shaver, & Goodman, 1993). In 1992 alone, Childhelp USA logged 1,741 calls pertaining to ritual abuse, Monarch Resources of Los Angeles logged approximately 5,000, Real Active Survivors tallied nearly 3,600, Justus Unlimited of Colorado received almost 7,000, and Looking Up of Maine handled around 6,000. Even allowing for some of these calls to have been made by people who assist survivors but are not themselves survivors, and for some survivors to have called more than one helpline or made multiple calls to the same helpline, these numbers suggest that at a minimum there must be tens of thousands of survivors of ritual abuse in the United States.

Unfortunately, no similar research has been conducted since the "memory wars" of the 1990s. However, the online Extreme Abuse Survey (Rutz, Becker, Overkamp, & Karriker, 2008), with 1471 respondents reporting extreme child abuse, found the majority had endured either ritual abuse or mind control or both. Californian psychologist Randy Noblitt, who specializes in ritual abuse, believes that there are no people with dissociative disorders who have not experienced ritual abuse or mind control. I would not go that far. On the other hand, I am suspicious when a therapist states that he or she has seen many dissociative clients and has never encountered a survivor of these atrocities.

It is possible for a therapist to work right through a dissociative client's non-mind-control memories without touching the parts of the personality system who have experienced ritual abuse or mind control. Jane Wakefield, a psychologist who has worked extensively with survivors of military/political mind control, is convinced that many ritual abuse survivors have also experienced these other kinds of mind control, but their therapists do not access the parts of their personality systems who have these memories. In the Extreme Abuse Survey, of 987 self-identified survivors of extreme child abuse, 19% stated they experienced ritual abuse, 7% stated they experienced mind control, and 52% stated they experienced both ritual abuse and mind control. Twenty-two percent stated they had experienced neither. The definition of mind control used there was: "MC refers to all mind control procedures designed to make a victim follow directives of the programmer without conscious awareness including, but not limited to, government-sponsored mind control experiments."

Ritually abusive cults deliberately divide the personality system down the middle of the head, making sure that there is no communication between the two sides. (This may not be a literal physiological fact, since alters are contained in brain circuitry rather than specific sites in the brain, but it is a belief system common to ritual abusers and their victims, and has real treatment ramifications.) "Left side" alters might be instructed to speak to no one other than the perpetrators. Although emotions may leak out from these alters, the person could go through years of therapy without the therapist ever suspecting that they exist. In ritually abused personality systems, there is often also mind control of other types, and the alters belonging to these events may be segregated in some way. One client of mine has Ku Klux Klan alters hidden "beneath the ground" in her inner world.

If you do not diagnose and treat ritual abuse and/or mind control when it is present, your survivor client will remain unhealed.

Indicator lists

There are standardized assessment tools and guidelines for diagnosing DID. However, there is nothing comparable as yet for diagnosing ritual abuse (RA) and mind control (MC). Since the beginning of the current therapeutic focus on incest recovery, therapists and survivors have been developing checklists of characteristics of such a history, one purpose of which has been to assist in assessing for such trauma. In part, these have arisen from the fact that incest frequently results in a hidden, or, as Denise Galinas has called it, a disguised presentation. (Blume's "Incest survivors aftereffects checklist" (ISAC), found in her book, *Secret Survivors: Uncovering Incest and its Aftereffects in Women*, is one of the most well known of such lists.) Similar checklists have been developed regarding the sub-group of survivors who have experienced RA/MC.

One early handout by Californian psychologist Pamela Reagor includes the following indicators for a child/adolescent history of ritualistic abuse, without apparent cult contact in adulthood: diagnosis of MPD or DDNOS; poor or problematic response to competent treatment for MPD/DDNOS; drawings characterized by ritual-like features, for example, lots of red and black, knives, fire, cages, robes, body parts, blood, etc.; notable preoccupation with, or avoidance of, newscasts, magazine articles, conversation, etc. about ritual abuse; involvement with, or manipulation by, other ritual abuse survivors, or reports by other survivors that that person "responds to triggers," and a pattern of decompensation and/or hospitalization during, for example, Satanic ritual holiday periods.

Ellen Lacter provides a current, and comprehensive, list of indicators on her website, (www.endritualabuse.org). Lacter's list for adult survivors of ritual abuse has forty-three items. Some that resonate with my experience of ritual abuse survivors include:

- history of significant self-mutilation, particularly cuts in patterns, shapes, or letters, and genital self-harm or introduction of sharp objects into genitalia;
- fears, phobias, and nightmares associated with religion; health care; bodily fluids and excretions; weapons; birthdays and weddings; police, jails, and cages; baths and drowning; insects, snakes, spiders, and rats; cameras and being photographed; specific colors or shapes; sexual perversion, intrusive thoughts or impulses, especially sado-masochism, pedophilia, zoophilia.

Critics associated with the "false memory syndrome" movement of the 1990s have attempted to discredit such indicator lists. The criticisms levied against Blume's checklist are typical. For one thing, it is said that individual items on the ISAC can be explained by a variety of experiences that are not the subject of the list. When we apply this to Reagor's indicators, we can see easily that not all people diagnosed with DID or DDNOS have experienced ritual trauma, even if they have a poor response to competent treatment. Drawings with ritual-like features might indicate an obsession with rock bands. Preoccupation with media portrayals of ritual abuse could indicate a "wannabe," and avoidance could indicate a sensitive soul. Decompensation around birthdays or holidays might indicate a family history of alcoholism, with drunken violence at those times. However, what might account for someone responding to mind control triggers? Or patterned self-mutilation (from Lacter's list), or a combination of all the phobias listed by Lacter?

Further, critics suggest that list originators, or therapists, conclude that if someone has one or just a few of the indicators on the lists, they must be survivors of the alleged abuse. This argument, too, is invalid, and misrepresents such lists. The ISAC, for instance, states in several places that incest should only be suspected when one has the majority of items on the list. Items in these checklists, like those on symptom lists for cancer or other diseases diagnosed by physicians, are not intended as individual indicators. Once again referencing the above example of Reagor's list, in medicine the same symptom might be indicative of a number of different conditions, some serious and some benign. It is the configuration and pattern of the symptoms that makes a difference. We see that when all the items of Reagor's list are taken together, they accurately present a profile that can alert the clinician to the possibility of a ritual abuse history. Lacter states at the start of her list, "Remember, indicator lists only provide common associated signs. Most survivors will have many indicators. The presence of indicators does not prove the existence of ritual trauma. The absence does not mean a person has no such trauma."

Dr Catherine Gould issued a comprehensive four-page long, single-spaced, small type "Signs and symptoms of ritual abuse in children" in 1988. It included problems associated with such ordinary activities as toileting and the bathroom, certain colors, eating, family relationships, play and peer relations, the doctor's office, religion and the supernatural, and sexual behavior and beliefs, as well as emotional problems including speech, sleep, and learning problems. Although these particular items could arise from many causes, Gould's list also included a number that are very specific, some of which are very suspicious for sexual abuse, and others for abuse that is specifically associated with rituals. Examples include:

- child sings odd, ritualistic songs or chants, sometimes in a language incomprehensible to the parent; sings songs with a sexual, bizarre, or "you better not tell" theme;
- child shuts pets or other children in closets, or otherwise attempts to entrap or confine them;
- child expresses fears of being tied (usually by one leg) and hung upside down;
- child states that (s)he is "practicing" to be dead, or is dead;
- child is excessively fearful of blood tests; asks if (s)he will die from blood tests or whether someone will drink the blood;.
- child refuses to ingest foods or drinks because they are red or brown (e.g., red drinks, meat); becomes agitated at meal times;

- child talks about "my other mommy", "my other daddy", or "my other family" (in the cult);
- child expresses fears that a sibling or pet will be killed, kidnapped, molested;
- child acts out death, mutilation, cannibalism, and burial themes by pretending to kill play figures, taking out eyes, pulling off heads and limbs, pretending to eat the figures or drink their blood, and burying them;
- child fears the police will come and put him/her in jail, or states that a "bad policeman" hurt or threatened him/her;
- child believes or fears there is something foreign inside her chest or stomach, for example, Satan's heart, a demon or monster, a bomb, etc.

The beliefs and behaviors in Dr Gould's list are sufficiently odd to require an explanation other than a child's imagination.

Most of the items in all the lists discussed so far are more likely to indicate cult abuse than other forms of mind control. Lacter also has a list of indicators of trauma-based mind control programming. Many of the indicators on this list can apply to ritual abuse as well as to other forms of mind control: for example, severe flinching or spasms (as if being electroshocked) when approaching trauma material. Electroshock appears to be a punishment of choice by all kinds of mind-controlling groups, as it leaves few visible marks.

One item that is not on these lists concerns spinning. If the client frequently feels vertigo or a sensation of spinning (often along with nausea), and/or if the client draws spiral shapes, that can be an indicator of abuse that involves spinning, something that is common in both ritual abuse and other kinds of mind control. (See Chapter Four, "Markers of mind control and ritual abuse".)

Like the extensive list of indicators of borderline personality disorder in the *DSM*, these behavioral and emotional checklists draw attention to symptoms, without stating that a particular abuse or syndrome *necessarily* exists in a client who merely demonstrates some of those indicators. They are designed to raise our index of suspicion for conditions or histories that we might otherwise overlook, while assuming that we know that one of the cardinal rules of good therapy is never to suggest (rather than ask, as part of a required history taking) to a client what might or might not have happened to him or her. They can be very helpful with ritual abuse and mind control survivors, especially; as hidden as an incest history might be because of inherent psychological and literal threats to survivors, mind control and ritual abuse are hidden by design.

The important thing for you as a therapist is to have your eyes open to the possibility that your client has had such experiences. At one time, a friend of mine who works for a government agency dealing with youth sent me a young woman with DID. She had worked extensively with this client, who had aged-out from her service. She stated specifically that the client had never experienced any ritual abuse. Then she sent me the client's artwork. It was filled with words like "Satan" and "Kill," as well as drawings of sacrifices, red drops of blood, and so forth. Sure enough, when I inquired of the client, she disclosed that this abuse had indeed occurred. The previous therapist had somehow missed the obvious clues. What you do not look for, you will not see.

This is not to say that everything that looks like a clue should be accepted at face value. For instance, with artwork, images may be symbolic. But when images such as these are drawn by child alters, it is my opinion that they are more likely to be literal. Children do not engage in symbolic imagery as much as adults; they are concrete thinkers. At one time, I had two clients who reported "seeing" a little girl alone in a room, covered with blood. The one client knew it was a memory; the other stated that it was symbolic. The one who believed it to be symbolic later discovered that it was literal, when the rest of the memory emerged.

So what do you do if a client is exhibiting signs of a ritual abuse or mind control history, but has not disclosed such events? You take your time. You inquire gently about the artwork or the other symptoms, and wait for alters to emerge who will tell you more. You do not make suggestions about what might have happened. This is important even if you believe the client is obviously a survivor of these things. Remain calm. It is important to convey to the client that you can handle whatever they disclose, without suggesting what they might disclose.

The key in every case is getting to know the alters and developing a trusting relationship with them. The alters are the key to finding out about the trauma, to finding out about present safety, and to healing.

What do you do if a new client starts exhibiting some out-of-control or therapy-sabotaging behaviors before you have had a chance to establish a relationship with anyone inside? Set boundaries gently but firmly about the therapeutic relationship, and bring in any other resources that might be needed. Then, slow down. Do not make inquiries about the traumatic history until the person is sufficiently stabilized and trust has been regained.

Kinds of alter personalities generally found in ritually abused and mind-controlled persons

Shell ANPs

In her online book, *Svali First Series: How the Illuminati Programs People*, former Illuminati programmer Svali calls the deliberate creation of shell ANPs "shell programming," which is designed to hide the person's multiplicity from the outside world. She describes how it works:

> It is important to realize that what the system is actually doing is co-presenting, although not co-consciously. For a shell program to work, the shell alters have been taught to allow co-presentation with the other alters in the systems. Other alters in the back may not always be aware that this is what is happening, and the front shell especially will not know that they are being "gone through" for co-presentation . . . Allowing both the shell alters and the other alters to recognize that this is how they have been presenting, and why, will be an important step. Back alters may then begin presenting without going through the shell, *and the person may look "more multiple" than they ever have for a period, with accents or young ones coming through. What is actually happening is that the back is presenting without masking who they are through the shell.* [my italics]

One ritual mind control survivor multiple with a shell ANP described herself to me as having someone like a plastic lens in the front, with four chairs just behind it, and different people occupying those chairs at different times. She described the experience of "seeing" one of her alters get up and walk out of the room during a meeting. Trish Fotheringham's account of her system in Chapter Six exemplifies this structure; she was designed to have four alters "onstage" at any given time.

Child alters

In systems created by mind-controlling child abusers, many, usually a majority, of alters feel themselves to be children or teenagers. There may be some who are too young to talk or to understand language, or who can only speak a language that has not been spoken since childhood. I believe that the child parts of any multiple split off during childhood, not later, remain developmentally children. (This may be difficult for you as the therapist to remember when many of them speak in an adult way and sound like your adult client.) They are not "normal" children, however. They are alters with a job to do. In general, one may say that there are "happy" ones who tend to deny negative reality and get themselves into abusive situations, as well as "unhappy" ones who hold strong emotions such as fear and anger.

Child alters believe themselves still to be children. They are often concrete and literal in their thought processes and awkward with their bodies. One of my clients, an adult woman, sat on the floor and put out her feet for me to tie her shoes, assuming she was in preschool. I have been in session with an adult man when he stood on his head on his couch, because the child that he "was" at that moment preferred that position. I have met with adults whose "out" personalities knew no English, but spoke languages the host had learnt in early childhood and then forgotten. And one client fell down my office stairs because a baby alter who did not know how to walk came out at the top of the stairs.

These alters might hold superstitious childish beliefs, communicated to them by abusers during the person's actual childhood. They believe things they were told under extremely traumatic conditions, and cannot readily grasp present-day reality. They will often echo the words of their adult abusers, and since the ANP (and you) cannot actually see them, will appear older than they are.

I frequently have to remind my client with the foul-mouthed critical alters to ask them their ages. There is a pause while he asks internally, then, "Oh." The one who believes her to be his abusive mother (i.e., his father's sexual partner) is four. She understands things like a four-year-old, but she swears like an old pro.

Some therapists who work with dissociative disorders believe that child alters are actually adults' conceptions of what children are like, rather than actual children. I do not believe this. I do believe that a part who says he or she is older than the body is not really older, but rather is a child's, or a young adult's, conception of an older person. And an opposite-sex alter (a male in a female body, for instance) is more like a young girl's idea of what a boy is like than like a "real" boy. Boys in women's bodies usually represent the part of the person who has traits that are traditionally considered masculine, such as bravery or anger; girls in men's bodies often have supposedly "feminine" traits such as fearfulness.

Alters who see themselves as different from the body

In addition to gender and age differences, alters may see themselves in many ways that are not "real". Some are "copy" alters (introjects) who believe they are someone else entirely, for example, a relative or an abuser. Some experience themselves as blind or deaf or mute, often as a result of a literal response to their abusers ("Don't talk about this," or "You didn't see anything.") I take particular delight in letting them know that they can recover their sight or hearing or ability to speak once we have worked through the memories that made them become handicapped. Some alters might report that certain other alters are dead. This usually indicates that those alters either have been hidden from the rest of the system, or they are caught in a memory of a trauma in which they felt they were being killed. Since the person's brain is still alive, they are not really dead. Their feelings still leak through to other alters. They can be revived.

Often a child who has been shamed, verbally abused, and told they are evil, or made to do evil things by an abuser, can believe itself to be a demon. Some perpetrator groups actually tell child alters they are demons or devils or ghosts. Trying to exorcise "demon" parts of a person will only hinder their progress. (This will be addressed in more detail in Chapter Nine.) They need to be cared for like any child, and the responsibility for their abuse given back to the abusers rather than to any part of the child.

In any case, it is not worth arguing with alters about whether or not they really are what they believe they are. It is more important to treat the whole person with respect, in whatever aspect she presents herself, and to develop real empathy for the life experiences and world view of each part. Do not deny the experience of any alter. They genuinely believe they are the person's mother, or a person of the opposite sex, or a dog. Your client had very important reasons for making alters the way they are. For example, an alter may be a boy because boys do not have vaginas so he cannot be vaginally raped, as your female client was. Or a "mother" alter in a male survivor client might be the one who was forced to have sex with the boy's father.

As you will see later in this book, alters arising from these abuses were often deliberately deceived into believing they are something they are not. In some cases, it is a relief to them to discover that they are human. I like showing a "Beast" alter that he has hands, and wondering why he may have seen furry paws when he first came out, and whether anyone else inside knows why he saw paws instead of the hands he now has. But it may also be frightening to others to recognize, for example, that they do belong to the body that was tortured or that they were instructed to kill. Timing is very important in attempting to remove alters' illusions.

Alters who have alters inside

Particularly with ritual abuse and mind control survivors, you can expect that some alters will themselves be multiple. Alters are hidden within alters. So, for example, one of my clients had several "tough guy" alters, each of whom concealed a hurt child part. Another had an in-charge "Satan" alter, whose inside parts included one who held sadness and another who held fear, emotions which Satans were not allowed to have. Jennifer had internal copies of her mother and brothers, each of which had within it copies of the alters which were in her actual mother and brothers. So, when you speak with an alter who appears to be a certain way, bear in mind that it may have internal parts who hold very different emotions.

How categories of alters relate to their origins

Because it is so overwhelming, clear conscious memory of childhood sexual and betrayal trauma does not develop, at least in an ANP. This process is both psychological and organic.

From the organic perspective, the different aspects of the traumatizing experience are stored in separated brain circuits. When the trauma is extreme and complex, begins in early childhood (under the age of six), and involves pain, betrayal, and threats to life, the various aspects of the overwhelming traumatic memories and their responses are divided between different alter personalities. One alter may be aware of the first part of the story, another alter of the next part, and so on. Or one alter may hold the pictures, another the "sound track," another the feeling of sadness, another the anger, another the physical pain, and another the sexual arousal. If there are repeated traumas of a particular kind, these aspects of experience go into the same brain circuits that held them previously, and these specialized circuits become alter personalities. Mind controllers, aware of this process, utilize it to control their victims.

Regardless of how they view themselves, you are likely to see the following categories of alter personalities in dissociative people with ritual abuse and mind control histories:

1. *Parts from before the trauma*: Relatively untraumatized child parts who hold positive memories. They stop growing and are put away when they experience trauma or serious deprivation.
2. Parts created during the trauma:
    (a) *Hurt children* who have unfulfilled needs and/or hold traumatic pain or emotions.
    (b) *Protectors* (including internalized perpetrators). These parts generally live in the past and think the trauma is still happening. (In some cases it might be.)
    (c) *Observers*, recorders, watchers, parts in the sky, etc.
3. *Parts from after the trauma*: Survivors, usually the body's chronological age. They have to deal with everyday life, so must not be affected by the trauma, which they often do not remember. They may be high-functioning; or may be "depleted hosts" or have PTSD. ANPs belong in this category.

It helps to think of the needs and purposes of each of these categories as you engage in therapy with multiples. Frightening or angry parts are often protectors. Observer parts can be helpful for putting memories in order and knowing what really happened (*vs.* what illusion the abusers created). Parts from after the trauma need to be protected from much of the trauma until it has been worked through with those parts who actually went through it.

Making and sharing the dissociative disorder diagnosis

It takes a good deal of childhood trauma to create a dissociative disorder, and it takes a long time to establish trust in the therapeutic relationship, help the client attain stability, and work through the traumatic memories sufficiently to achieve either co-consciousness or integration of the parts. These tasks are particularly difficult if the client has been subjected to ritual abuse and/or mind control. In this general overview of DID/DDNOS treatment, we address how treatment must be altered for ritually abused and mind-controlled persons.

The ANP's experiences—amnesia, hearing voices, depersonalization and derealization, and post-traumatic intrusions—might well be what drives him or her to therapy, although the outside person will generally be unaware of there being other alters inside. In that case, you should administer certain assessment tools for dissociative disorders. The Dissociative Experiences Scale (DES) is a quick and easy device. Another instrument, Dell's Multidimensional Instrument of Dissociation (MID, 2006), includes more items. New assessment tools are constantly being developed, and the ISSTD website (www.isst-d.org/) gives information about these.

Confusing or disjointed presentations are an indication of switching that may not be otherwise visible to the outsider. If the alter who was "out" when something happened has "gone inside", the ANP—your presenting client—will not remember what happened. Multiples learn to cover up for loss of time. Someone who does not yet know she (or he) is multiple, and does not realize she loses time, will deny doing things she has been seen doing. This will lead to a reputation as a liar. If she realizes that another alter may have done it, she will often pretend to remember the incident to hide the time loss, or may make up excuses or explanations such as alcoholic blackouts. This is particularly common in child multiples, who are not as adept at covering their tracks as adults are.

In DDNOS, the ANP is always present, even when another part is in control of the behavior and feelings. People with DDNOS (having shell ANPs) can be just as complex internally as people with DID, and in many ways the distinction is a relatively unimportant technicality. Treatment is essentially the same. Many things are easier for DDNOS than for DID multiples, because they do not lose time or find they have eaten six breakfasts. However, it is easier for them than for DIDs to mistakenly assume that their negative feelings are caused by present situations rather than old traumas that have been triggered by something in the present. And it is harder for a therapist to detect their multiplicity.

As happens with ritual abuse, most people, including therapists, do not see multiplicity because they do not look for it. We write off changes in demeanor as just different emotional states, and in many cases they are. But if you are attuned to multiplicity, you can detect switches, and can sense the other parts lurking behind the presenting alter. As one of my DID clients' young alters says of our work together, it is because I "look inside" that I was able to detect her multiplicity. Most people, however, do not look inside. When my client did a practicum in a mental hospital as a community mental health worker, she recognized that some of the patients also looked inside. But none of the staff did.

Once you have determined that your client has DID or DDNOS, you will need to gently introduce them to the notion of dissociation, explaining that it is a psychological and physiological response to childhood trauma. Explain it as a normal reaction to an abnormal situation. Make it clear that having a dissociative disorder like this is not the same as being crazy.

Be careful, by the way, about using the word "alter" with your client. Many multiples, especially ritual abuse survivors, have a negative reaction to that word, usually because of its resemblance to the word "altar," a central feature in both church and occult rituals. I have used the word "alter" in this book because it is less ambiguous than "parts" and less confusing (and more accurate) than "personalities" or "inside people." Respect for your client, however, demands that you call the parts whatever term is most comfortable for your client. I use different terms with different clients.

I like to tell such clients that a dissociative disorder is mental injury rather than mental illness, and, therefore, requires a different treatment. For a broken leg you would put the bone parts back together and keep them connected so they could heal, even though it might be painful. Similarly, with a broken mind, you bring the parts back together by introducing them to one another, and you clean the wound by helping the person resolve what happened to make the parts split from one another. You might recommend books such as Steinberg's *The Stranger in the Mirror* (2000) to help the client understand their experience, or a newsletter by and for multiples such as "Many Voices" (contact www.manyvoicespress.com/newsletter.html).

Communicating with the personality system

The following guidelines will help you to communicate with the personality system of someone who is multiple.

Talking through the presenting alter

Once you apply your solid understanding of dissociation, in many ways talking with the parts of a multiple client is no different from talking to a singleton client about his or her problems.

Although only one alter at a time can control the multiple's voice and actually talk with you, many—especially the important ones—can hear you and can send messages to you. Someone else may choose to "take the phone" and speak with you, or someone can be sent to get them. Always assume that some others inside can hear you. This applies even when the presenting alter is deaf, catatonic, or a baby. (Note that misunderstandings may happen with other parts even when the one outside understands perfectly, and you need to check for this.) You can talk through the presenting alter to others in the system. Not everyone can hear you, but many, especially the important ones, can. Remember that, especially with a ritually abused multiple, the important alter personalities are always listening in order to guard the person's safety in the outside world.

Exploring passive influences

You should also be aware of what is known as "passive influence." Alters often make themselves known by exerting influence on the "outside" or presenting part. Passive influence is very common, and can be detected simply by asking about it. When the alter who is out reports a feeling that she or he does not understand, someone inside may really be experiencing the feeling which is "leaking through" to the alter who is out. Once some internal communication has been established, you can follow the feelings to find who inside is their source. If it is voices, talk to the voices. If it is pictures, find out which alters they are coming from. Remember that the real source of the feelings is the part that needs and will benefit from your attention.

Techniques for meeting alters

In the early days of therapists' awareness of DID, there was a focus on techniques for meeting the alter personalities, as though this process needed some special (usually hypnotic) methods in order to be successful. These techniques are not necessary for that purpose, in my view, although they can be helpful in working with systems. The "Middleman technique," for instance, which simply means speaking to one part through another presenting part, can be very useful. I use it in diagnosis, while administering the Dissociative Experiences Scale. If the person says yes to the question about hearing voices, I ask if one is speaking to them right now. If yes (it is usually yes), I ask what it is saying. Then I engage it in dialogue via the presenting part, whom I instruct to "think to it and listen for the answer." Eventually the voice may agree to speak with me directly. There is nothing magical or highly technical about this: it is simply a natural result of understanding how multiples work.

Fraser's Dissociative Table Technique (1991), in which you use guided imagery to create a boardroom or table or equivalent, can be helpful with "regular" or "reactive" multiples, as can other guided fantasies such as walking to a cottage and asking people to come out. But these techniques are unlikely to access the important parts of a deliberately constructed personality system.

It shows how much we are "foreigners" to multiples when thinking we must resort to techniques to communicate with them. For the most part, we simply have to understand how multiplicity works, and communication will come naturally. It is true that, in some cases, alters have been forbidden to talk to outsiders, so it may take considerable time to build up enough trust for them to actually speak with you. In this case, it is important to "talk through" to them via the ANP. I often make it explicit, once the ANP has acknowledged that others exist inside, saying such things as "Now I'm talking to them, not you." Be aware that when people have shell ANPs, you will not see much difference as the alters come to speak through the shell.

Speaking directly with alters

One of my clients who is a mind control survivor had a therapist who believed that talking to the parts reified them (made them more real). She would only communicate with the parts through the outside adult. Unfortunately, the parts had been trained to never speak to the outside adult, in order to keep the abuse hidden from the adult part. Once I began to speak with the parts, they made fast progress.

Speaking to the alters directly is the general rule for work with this population. It is the most expedient and effective way to do this work. Once you talk to the right "person," often a simple explanation of reality can lead to big changes. I recently consulted for another therapist whose client had an inside child who kept picking at her foot until it bled. The therapist was very disturbed about this, and made all kinds of unsuccessful plans with the main personality to get it to stop. Finally, I saw the client myself, and asked to speak to the little girl alter. She came out at once. She had never come out with the original therapist simply because the therapist had not asked. I asked why she picked at the foot, and she explained it was to keep the adult from going to sleep at night, because the foster father came in and abused her at night. I told her that it hurt the adult, which the child did not know; she did not want to hurt the adult. I explained to her that the foster father was dead and could not come. When I explained to the adult what the child had told me, she arranged to sleep in a different bedroom with a lock on the door, to make the little girl feel safer.

It is not always that easy, but, again, in every case the key is communicating with the alters responsible. This is the key even with survivors of extreme organized abuse. You and the rest of the personality system have the opportunity to introduce these parts to the safe present (assuming the person has gotten away from her abusers; these issues will be discussed in Chapter Eleven). They get to see what it is like to be with a safe and caring person. They can tell you the false beliefs the abusers put into their heads, and you can explain the truth, or show them the trickery involved. Cognitive work with the alter personalities pays great dividends. As soon as one part is convinced to work together with you for healing, another will appear who is supposed to stop this process, *but secretly wants you to help them too*. You may have to work your way through many layers, but you will get there.

Helping newly discovered alters meet the present-day world

How do you speak with alters about the fact that they are all parts of one person, and inhabit the same body, at least in this "real" world? Some therapists minimize their separateness. For example, Spiegel (1993) stated that "these patients . . . have the bizarre delusion that their body is inhabited by more than one independent personality" (p. 87), and Putnam (1989, p. 103) wrote, "Whatever an alter personality is, it is not a separate person. It is a serious therapeutic error to relate to the alter personalities as if they were separate people. Although many alters will emphatically insist that they are separate people, the therapist must not buy into this delusion of separateness."

Sadly, the term "delusion of separateness," which became widely used in DID treatment circles, resulted in such countertherapeutic approaches as refusing to speak with all alters except the ANP, and trying to get the ANP to take responsibility for the behavior of all alters.

In a sense, the separateness is not really a delusion. Although the parts are all in one body, they represent different brain circuitry that appears to have been separated by some biological process that we do not sufficiently understand. Brain imaging studies show different brain pathways activated with different alters, and other studies show physiological differences between different personality states (Birnbaum & Thomann, 1996; Hughes, Kuhlman, Fichtner, & Gruenfeld, 1990; Miller, 1989; Miller & Triggiano, 1992; Miller, Blackburn, Scholes, White, & Mamalis, 1991; Putnam, Zahn, & Post, 1990).

Richard Kluft (personal e-mail communication, 2010), a pioneer in dissociation treatment, does not like the term, believing it to be "too strong a description, because often the awareness of the truth of commonality co-exists with the subjective truth of the genuineness and completeness of separateness, perhaps an expression of trance logic." Instead, "Taking a hint from European phenomenologists, who called an hallucination a pseudo-hallucination if the person knew it was a hallucination," he developed the term "pseudo-illusion of separateness," because it "made more sense" to him.

It takes work to help alters adjust to the fact that they live in an older body who looks like the ANP, not the way they believe they personally look. In many cases, the alters "see" one another in the inner world, and state that they experience one another as real people. An alter who emerges into the real world does not see him or herself, and assumes s/he has the body in which s/he lives in the inner world and which s/he inhabited the last time s/he was "out."

Most of the alters in mind-controlled personality systems have not come directly out into the world since childhood, so they know nothing of the present. Many of them are not supposed to emerge directly into the world unless called out by a perpetrator, so they will be very afraid or hostile when they emerge. I encourage newly discovered parts to look around my office and see that it is daylight and we have our clothes on and there are no weapons. If the alter does not know much about me and has never met me before, I ask the others inside to fill that part in on our history together and why they think I am safe. Often alters do not know that the body has grown up. I find it helpful to have a newspaper or magazine with a recent date to show them the year. I also have a mirror so they can see what their body looks like now, but I use it sparingly, especially with survivors of ritual abuse or mind control, since mirrors are used a lot in programming to deceive alters about their nature. It is more useful with multiples who have not experienced mind control. For example, I used it to show one alter that her tonsils, which had always been very painfully infected, were now gone.

Particularly with alters in a mind-controlled system, do not ask too many questions; it may feel like interrogation, and many of these people have been interrogated as part of their abuse. Just be open and sympathetic, until they are ready to talk. It can be helpful to ask the client to map the system if she is willing. However, do not insist on this, or on knowing internal names, as some parts might feel this gives you or hostile parts power over them. This is particularly true for ritual abuse survivors, where the abusers call the parts out by name.

It is important to match your communication to the kind of part who is presenting, just as you would for a singleton client. Be especially sensitive to nonverbal communication of emotions. Some parts need hugs, but others will take them as a sexual approach. Some parts cannot stand direct eye contact. Some use strong, challenging language, and will respond to dares and challenges and humor. Other parts are terrified and just need listening. Some cannot speak and may need to communicate through writing, through drawing, or through another part.

Be careful with your language, especially with mind control and ritual abuse survivors. Innocuous words have often been given sinister meanings by the perpetrator groups. If you notice your client flinching or showing other signs of distress when you use words like "love" or "safe" or "feel," you can ask the client what the word in question means to him or her, and you can train yourself to substitute another word when you speak with that particular client. With one client, I have to substitute "believe" for "think," and "sense in your body" for "feel," since the original words were used by the perpetrators as part of torture.

Remember that it is very important to treat all parts with equal kindness; do not pick favorites. Every alter is there for a purpose, and is an important part of the system. So, for instance, do not be afraid of hostile alters. It has been said that every persecutor is a misguided protector. Most hostile alters are using anger to protect vulnerable parts inside, usually younger children. If they seem dangerous, talk with them at first through another alter. But if you act scared, you will create a self-fulfilling prophecy.

Similarly, untraumatized child parts can be distracting, adorable, entertaining, and uplifting—but spending too much time with them can distract you from the task of dealing with the trauma. Watch out for good kid–bad kid dichotomies. You need to appreciate them all, just as they all need to accept each other. In the end, remember they are all parts of one person, and that *person* needs to know you accept all of the selves, just as he or she eventually will, including the parts she does not want or like.

Internal conflict, internal communication

Do not expect the client with untreated DID or DDNOS to be consistent or to have internal harmony.

A DID personality system is like a family. It contains polarities, boundaries, etc. For instance, if one polarity exists, the other polarity probably does as well. A knowledge of family systems therapy, particularly its application to multiples (Goulding & Schwartz, 1995) can be helpful.

At the start of therapy, most multiples have internal battles for control. The ANP usually has little or no control over switching. The alters may fight to be out, or may push others out in order to stay inside. It is important to assist your multiple client in improving internal communication, negotiation, and cooperation. Democratic decision-making is not usually learnt in the childhood of a multiple and can be incredibly difficult. "Eww, Jane got us dressed this morning," or "I don't like her having sex with *my* body" are typical comments that one alter will make about another. One of my first DID clients would repeatedly throw out everything given him by his abusive mother and then retrieve it from the garbage disposal when he switched to another alter. Alters will often express anger and even hatred for one another. It is hard for them to realize that they all represent legitimate parts of one person, and to respect how each part helped the person survive the extreme situation in which they grew up. Each can only see things *their* way.

Consider inviting other alters to speak to the one who is out and talking. I respect the ones who come out spontaneously to talk with me, but I also ask to speak to others, and if they will not (or are not permitted to) speak to me directly, then I ask that messages be relayed back and forth to them. When I know the client well, I usually target my conversations at the alters I deem to be important at any given moment, regardless of which ones are initially talking to me. It is common that alters will be put "out" to entertain the therapist so that no real work will be done in therapy.

You can help the alters to speak with one another. Although talking internally might seem to make the person "more" multiple, the long-term result will be that they will become better organized and work more like an integrated person. You are seeking to help them achieve "co-consciousness," with whichever alter is out in the body being aware of the needs and viewpoints of all the other alters, and shared understanding among all those inside, so that effective decisions can be made by the whole person rather than by just one part at a time.

Spontaneously created personality systems are more likely to be quite chaotic when the alters first begin to communicate with one another. Systems structured by perpetrator groups, on the other hand, tend to be better organized, but in a military-style hierarchy. It is wise not to interfere with this hierarchical organization at first, and over time to help the leaders change the governmental system to a more democratic one. Chapters Four and Nine are devoted to the unique characteristics of mind-controlled personality systems, and more advanced strategies for working with them.

Learning from multiplicity

It is an exciting adventure to get to know someone who is multiple. They have a lot to teach us, not only about the way the human mind can work, but also about the way the human race works. I sometimes think of the human race as one gigantic dissociative person, with myself as only one part of it. There are other parts who are very different from me, whom I do not understand. Some of them scare me, and some of them arouse my anger. But only as I—we all—learn to understand and cooperate with the other parts of the "body" of humanity, can humankind learn to stop all the dangerous and damaging things we do to one another. In this way, I feel it is a privilege to know my clients and other multiples, human beings who are learning to live as communities rather than as isolated individuals.

Working with dissociation in folks with ritual abuse or mind control histories requires specialized knowledge, built on a solid, up-to-date understanding of dissociative disorders and their treatment. This, itself, is built on the therapist's respect for all parts of your client, the willingness to listen, and sensitivity to their needs. Survivor LisaBri's simple and sincere plea to therapists (see her contributions in Chapters Nine, Twelve, and Thirteen) sums it up as well as anything I have seen:

> Please learn all you can about Dissociative Identity Disorder and ritual assault. The chances that you will have a client with one of these is great. You need to be ready to help them in a safe and healthy way. Most importantly, if you are attempting something new with your client, and she says it doesn't feel right—listen to her. She knows her system in a way no one else could ever imagine.

CHAPTER FOUR

Markers of mind control and ritual abuse

The personality systems of ritual abuse and mind control survivors are different from those of dissociative individuals whose abuse has been less systematic, such as in severe physical or sexual abuse by a family member. Even a person who was abused in a backwoods family cult, in a doomsday cult, or by teenage Satanic dabblers would not manifest the degree of internal organization seen when a person has been trained by an organized group for the purpose of achieving mind control. Such personality systems do have certain identifiable characteristics.

In Chapter Two, I discussed indicator lists for organized, group perpetrated, ritual abuse and mind control that have been developed over the years by others. These lists are based on the consequences and external manifestations of these abuses. I would like to share with you now a list of functional indicators that I developed based on my clinical work with survivors. This is a different kind of list, in that it describes internal dynamics that result from programming. These indicators will reveal themselves only after therapy with a dissociative client has proceeded long enough that the therapist can become aware of them. They are not the kind of characteristics that might be observed by the typical outsider. They are all "red flags" for organized abuse because they describe the intended (mind-controlling) consequences of such abuse.

As with other such lists, remember that other than a few "red flags", an individual item does not mean the syndrome exists. For example, introjects (internal copies) of abusers are common in dissociative disorders; occasionally a client will have alters arranged in a hierarchy as a result of abuse in a family, for example, by a militaristic father; someone raised in a strict fundamentalist religion might have "demon" alters. But these persons will not have all the other indicators on this list.

Common characteristics of the personality systems of mind-control survivors:

1. An internal structure or a complex inner world in which the dissociated identities ("alters" for short) are placed.
2. Trained alters with "jobs";
3. A "dump" for alters who have proved uncooperative and so are of no use to the perpetrators.
4. A hierarchy of alters.
5. Observer and recorder/reporter alters who know and can report everything that has happened to the person.
6. A security system including punishments for disobedience.
7. Gatekeeper alters.
8. Internal filing systems for memories, especially of training sessions.
9. Alters who believe they are animals or demons or aliens.
10. Deliberately created introjects (internal copies) of the perpetrators (i.e., there are memories of their deliberate creation).
11. Internal calendars with "jobs" to be done on certain dates.
12. Spinner alters who send out feelings or impulses to the rest of the system.
13. Deliberately placed "triggers" for learned behaviors or symptoms ("programs").
14. "Booby traps" of despair or suicidality triggered by talking about the abuse.
15. Recycling of memories and reappearance of trained behaviors.
16. Reported use of tricks and technologies in training.

Most of these things will not just be spontaneously created by children who are abused in random ways. If you have a client who has most or all of these characteristics, you may suspect he or she has been abused by an organized criminal group. You will see many of these indicators in the following two chapters, and will obtain more depth of understanding in Chapter Seven, which examines the creation of these characteristics from a programming perspective. Following is a discussion of all items listed above.

1. An internal structure (or structures) and/or a complex dissociated inner world

If a client is talking about an internal geometric structure, this can be seen as a "red flag" for organized perpetrator group abuse (including that done by both ritual abusers and mind control by political/military groups). The alters are mentally located in an internal structure with a particular shape. A typical RA/MC structure may be shaped like a pyramid, or a prism, or a tetrahedron, or a spider web. Many MC survivors have an internal world which contains several or many structures or "worlds."

These structures are neither random nor merely created for the purpose of organization. They are used by perpetrating groups to locate specific alters, and to call out specific combinations of alters for certain tasks. Often, there are codes for each space in the structure or matrix, as we will see in Jeannie Riseman's example. The adults who deliberately create these structures or inner worlds do so at a stage of the child's development when the child is able to internalize things s/he sees in the outside world. They stage settings in the real world that they want replicated in the inner world of the child's mind. Often, there is both a structure and an inner world.

In Chapter Seven, you will see how very young children are taught to create their inner world or structure, as described by Stella Katz. The child builds an actual, real-life, physical structure, while the child's trainer explains that this structure is to be replicated inside the child's mind as a place for the alters to live. The building materials vary according to what is available at the time of building; Jeannie Riseman's system, discussed in Chapter Six, created in the 1940s, might well have been built with Tinker Toys. Others use Lego or blocks. In Stella's example, a builder alter is trained to build a structure with building blocks of varying colors, and to place dolls of the same colors representing the alters in their proper places in the structure. They are instructed that everyone must be kept in their places.

The structure is gradually developed and elaborated over the years. Walls between the alters or alter groups prevent their communication. Taking down the walls will cause alters to integrate. Often the builder alter is supposed to take down certain walls when the survivor gets to a certain age; for example, some survivors are programmed for their everyday life alters to integrate with the cult-loyal ones, leaving out the pain holders. When this happens, the everyday life alters come to know that they have been involved in the cult or group, but since the pain is being held by hidden alters, the person does not realize how gruesomely they have suffered.

Knowing the nature of the structure will help the therapist discover how many alters there are and which ones are most important to work with. However, this is unlikely to be revealed until well into therapy. It does not matter much what kind of structure or structures exists; the therapeutic approach to dealing with them is still the same. Explore each part of the structure and its purpose and which alters "live" there.

Many survivors have been encouraged to create, either instead of or in addition to a structure, a complex inner world in which the alters live. It is often based on fairy tales, stories, or movies that have been shown to the child. It may have frightening places in it, some copied from the outside world (e.g., a "pit" or a "torture chamber") and some created by suggestion. Internal disasters can be triggered to happen in this inner world. The trainer gives the child suggestions about the appearance of the internal world, through showing the child a picture of a tree, or a pyramid, or a house or a box, and playing games of "Let's pretend (whatever alter is out at the time) lives in the roots of a tree." Trish Fotheringham's account in Chapter Six describes the way in which she was taught to construct her inner world. In her case, an actual theatre with a stage was used, enabling the abusers to create the "stage of life." When Trish was first involved in therapy, she believed that her alters and her own imagination had created the inner world in which the alters lived. She engaged actively with this world, going "inside" to see how each of the alters was doing and adding things to the inner world to make it more comfortable for the alters, such as a healing hot tub for those who were in pain. It was only after many years of therapy that she came to recognize that most of the features of the inner world had been deliberately installed by the abusers.

If the internal world is frightening, the therapist can help the client use his or her own imagination later to redesign it and put the alters in safer places. But first it is necessary to overcome the effects of the training that dictates that everyone inside must stay in his or her place.

A survivor of childhood trauma whose alters were not deliberately created by an organized group may also have an inside structure, but it is usually only a place for the alters to "live" inside, such as a house. One of my ritually abused clients has cult-trained alters housed in an upside-down pyramid, and abused-at-home alters living in an internal house.

Sometimes, places or structures that have been installed inside are copies of outside places, including places where abuse happened. This is true for both structured and reactive multiples, but many whose abuse was not perpetrated by an organized group have no inner world at all, and alters, when not "out", simply disappear into blackness or exercise an effect on the person's emotions without being internally visible.

In "Simplifying complex programming" on the Survivorship website, Jeannie Riseman states,

> Often the alters are arranged in complex patterns—sometimes geometric patterns (as in Cabala-based or matrix programs), sometimes patterns based on things or communities. Some people have systems that replicate an organizational structure, with a CEO, advisory boards, etc. Sometimes the pattern is more like a video game, with castles and dragons and all sorts of tricks and booby traps for the unwary.

2. Trained alters with "jobs"

All alters in a deliberately created system have jobs to do, and doing one's job is the most important expectation after compliance and silence. The "blocks" of alters described by Katz, and the "color paths" to which Fotheringham's alters belonged, exemplify the kinds of jobs.

The first alters of this kind of which a therapist is likely to become aware are the ones who punish others for disclosures. If a client appears to be experiencing pain or flashbacks right in my office, I like to casually ask whether it is someone's job to punish the person for what they have told me. If they say yes, this is a red flag for probable mind control.

Many other dissociative clients have experienced some degree of mind control and they may have internal punishers who replicate the behavior (for example, of abusive parents) even in the absence of organized group abuse, but these alters are less likely to refer to what they do as a "job."

3. A dump containing discarded alters

Stella Katz, in Chapter Seven, points out the importance of "garbage kids," alters that were discarded because they either would not comply in training, or could not learn quickly enough. Often, garbage kids are hidden pain-holders, and continue to participate in some memories. If they have been "killed," they are stuck in the memory of being unconscious, and have not actually been destroyed. I believe that it is important to find these alters, and process their part of any traumatic memories which need to be worked with. Often they have the most resistance to the perpetrators, and can become helpful allies. However, they have usually been severely traumatized. One of my mind-controlled clients refers to her dump of discarded alters as "the blue pile." When I asked why the pile of alters was blue, it turned out to be because they were black and blue with bruises. As long as the garbage kids remain hidden, the trauma cannot be worked through thoroughly; the training of the other alters will still have some power in the survivor's life, even if s/he is working hard to resist the pull of the abusers' instructions.

4. *A hierarchy of alters*

Most deliberately created systems are hierarchically organized. There are levels or layers, and each level has a boss, who reports to someone on the next higher level. There are often several alters with the same name but different functions, usually on different levels. The ones in charge usually have titles representing their authority. In military or political systems there are captains, leaders, and soldiers; in ritual systems there are demons, Satans, Lucifers, high priests or priestesses, as well as representations of family members who have authority in the person's life. Each layer in a Satanic system usually includes a Satan, a few demons, a high priest or priestess, a copy of the primary trainer, and various guards. Authoritative alters have the job of disciplining others under them for disobedience (such as talking about the abuse). If the disciplinarian on one level fails to do its job, the discipline moves up to a higher level.

There are usually also fail-safe alters outside the "layers" whose job it is to deal with the problem if the ones in charge prove disloyal. These have been told they are such entities as ghosts, chameleons (who can impersonate other alters), deceivers, and spiritual guides.

Not all systems are equally complicated. Some complicated systems might have several different groups of alters, each with its own layers, trained by different perpetrators or for different purposes. A "criss-cross" security system might have alters from one group disciplining those from the other groups. The alters in charge of the system are usually aware of what goes on in the outside world, but rarely intervene directly at first. As they can with any dissociative client, therapists can "talk through" the system to them, as they are usually listening.

In doing therapy with a survivor of organized abuse, a primary objective is to get through to the alters in charge of the hierarchy and convince them that they have been deceived. They often believe they know everything about what has happened to the person (which is invariably not true), and believe they have never been hurt—in fact, they might believe that they do not belong to the body at all.

By gently exposing their false beliefs, as you work up the hierarchy and talk to alters that have increasing authority, you will gradually build trust and help clients see what has really happened to them. *It is necessary to understand that you cannot succeed in therapy with a survivor of organized abuse unless the alters in charge of the hierarchy allow you to proceed at first, and later actively cooperate with you.*

Although these alters have observed the "real" world, they have rarely been out in it, and have very limited experience of anything in life other than group events and training. Their rewards have been sex, drugs, and power; they know nothing of love or caring or pets or snow or anything else positive in life. Other alters can share these positive experiences with them to help them see what they have been missing. We shall discuss ways to approach these alters in more detail in Chapter Nine.

5. *Observer and recorder/reporter alters*

When dissociative disorders were first studied in the 1980s and 1990s, much was made of "inner self-helper" alters or ISHes. It is likely that many of these were deliberately created observer or watcher alters. Survivors of organized abuse generally have observers or watchers who are trained to be aware of, and remember everything that happens. These alters tend to be told that they can see everything but cannot and must not act in the outside world. They might have been taught (through trickery) to believe they are non-human, for example, aliens or whales or spirits. These alters can be very helpful in accessing memories for processing.

The observers and recorders are often the reporters who have the job of telling the person's handler what the person has said or done. We shall learn more about their jobs in Chapter Eleven, "'Stabilization' takes on a new meaning", as getting them to cooperate is essential to maintaining the client's safety while therapy proceeds.

Also, look for "floating alters." These are not deliberately created parts of the system, but alters that were accidentally split off at the same time as others. They are able to float around the system, learning everything they can, often unnoticed by the other alters. Since the perpetrating group is unaware of them, they do not get hurt unless they get in the way accidentally or they choose to take someone's pain. They can be an incredible source of information about the system and about what has happened and of great assistance to the therapist, as they have not been instructed by the abusers. Organized perpetrator groups try to find the floaters and assign them to the dump, but if the floaters are able to hide effectively, they can be the key to undoing the programming. One of my ritually abused clients has one such alter who calls himself "The Observer"; he detected many of the tricks which deceived the trained alters, and when we process their memories he chimes in with his observations about what was really going on.

6. A security system including punishments for disobedience

The structured personality system of a mind-control survivor is always protected by a security system. The observers and reporters watch any alters who are "out" in the body, and sometimes those who speak to one another internally. They report to others in the hierarchy, who then order punishments to be administered by those alters who are trained to punish. Punishments include such things as flashbacks, flooding of unbearable emotions, painful body memories, flooding of memories in which the survivor perpetrated against others, self-harm, and suicide attempts. These will be discussed in Chapter Eleven, "'Stabilization' takes on a new meaning". Each alter who punishes has his or her place in the hierarchy, and if s/he fails to do the assigned job, a backup will do it while the disloyal punisher himself experiences punishment or is banished.

7. Gatekeeper alters

According to Stella Katz, most ritually abused systems include Gatekeeper alters, who are special kinds of guards. They are told they are in control of the mind and all emotions. They work in combination with those in charge of the pain. A Gatekeeper is never hurt himself after his initial creation or "birth", holds feelings and memories back, and observes everything that happens. I have encountered Gatekeepers who hold in memories, and Gatekeepers or Controllers who hold in alters, only permitting certain ones to come out into the body or to influence those out in the body.

8. Internal filing systems for memories, especially of training sessions

Many survivors of organized abuse have internal filing systems, usually with a "control room," files, a file manager or controller, and labels on the files which refer to such things as the type of training, age, and place where it was done. For more, see Trish Fotheringham's and Jeannie Riseman's descriptions of their filing systems in Chapter Six. When you come to working with the memories, it is very important to work with the file manager alters. In some cases, there are "program codes" which, when said in the right order, will make certain programs or pieces of training cease to work.

Usually a type of training session, or "program," is repeated at different ages, so that by the time the person reaches adulthood the training is well established and the conditioned response automatic. All the times this particular training was given will be noted in the internal files, as well as which alters were involved. These files make it easier to access the memories with mind-controlled survivors than with "ordinary" dissociative clients, once you have got past the security systems and gained the cooperation of the alters in charge of the system.

9. Alters who believe they are animals, demons, or aliens

Organized abusers often want alters to believe they are anything other than parts of an abused child. One simple way of creating non-human alters is to split off an alter by inflicting pain while the child is exposed to circumstances that lead her to believe she is not human. For example, the child is given a hallucinogenic drug while suggestions are made about demons, and the other people are wearing demon costumes. When the new alter appears, she is shown a "mirror" with a picture of a demon on it and told this is her. Or the child is put in a cage with a fierce dog, and only fed dog food when she begs for it like a dog. Or the child is given a paralyzing drug so that she cannot move, shown movies about aliens, and told she is an alien who can observe this world but cannot act in it. To add to the effect, the child may be costumed while drugged to unconsciousness. Katz gives more detail on the purposes of demon and animal alters. Demon alters are led to believe they are entirely evil and are therefore not loveable by anyone except Satan. They also believe they are very ugly, so that anyone from outside will be afraid of them.

Because alters who believe they are aliens, ghosts, or spirits typically believe they do not belong to the body, if they are created while the child is under the influence of a strong analgesic drug, they will not feel the body's pain. This makes them very useful to the perpetrator group when the person requires punishment such as self-harm or suicide attempts. They may have been taught that they will live on if the body dies, since they think their "internal bodies" are the real ones, or that they do not have bodies at all.

10. Deliberately created introjects of the perpetrators

Many perpetrators put their own stamp on to a personality system by putting "themselves" inside it. This is often done by splitting off alters during a rape, and instructing those alters that they are the perpetrator, or "born from his seed", and have to do what he does if the person is disloyal. In less cruel groups, a cardboard cut-out of the perpetrator is placed in the model of the internal world or structure, so that the alters inside will always "see" the perpetrator. This is not an alter personality, just a trick to scare the young child parts. Introjects of perpetrators are also common in personality systems that are not created by organized abuse. The internal punitive "mother" or "father" warns the child not to perform behaviors which will get the child punished by the real external mother or father, often by giving a reminder of the pain of the real parent's punishment. Organized abuser groups have capitalized on this phenomenon by deliberately creating (and therefore controlling) these introjects.

11. Internal calendars with jobs to be done on certain dates

If the group has a long-term agenda—and most ritual and political groups do—there are alters who hold a "calendar" which lays out the "jobs" to be done on certain dates. Regular ritual dates are part of the calendar for any ritual abuse survivor, and are learnt in a normal everyday way, just as we learn the dates of our birthday and Christmas. Some survivors also have alters who hold significant future dates, such as the anticipated return of Satan (in 2012), or the date of the political group's alleged battle to take over the world.

In addition, some groups implant personal dates which are years in which survivors are to return to the group, integrate real-life alters with cult-loyal alters, commit suicide, or become ill. Young adult members of ritually abusive groups are frequently let go in their twenties to create an identity in the world, then recalled to the group at a certain age. During this "growing up" period, the main identity usually is unaware of the mind control or of the other internal identities. There are often internal punishments, such as a very annoying sound, spinning, or a sensation of being shocked, if the person does not return to the group when they are supposed to.

12. Spinner alters who send out feelings or impulses to the rest of the personality system

Cults and mind control agencies often use physical spinning of the child. Katz describes in detail the purpose and nature of spinning. I do not know the neurological explanation of why spinning can have the effect of spreading post traumatic effects throughout the personality system. I only know that it does. "Spin programming," a term commonly used, is a misnomer. Spinning is not a program. It is a means to that end. It is used very generally, in many kinds of training, just as torture and rape and disgusting creatures are. Some survivors report having been spun on a huge Catherine Wheel, sometimes going in and out of water. This is also known to have been used in political torture, and has shown up in movies.

Spinner alters have the job of sending out feelings or impulses to all the other the alters, the host, or a group of selected alters. Many of the "booby traps" or "fail-safe" programs involve spinning. Often, when a certain training is in operation, the survivor feels dizzy, as though something or someone is "spinning" inside her head. If this is happening, the therapist can ask to speak to the spinning alter and ask her to stop spinning. If she is unable to do so, the therapist can talk to whoever is making her spin. This strategy, of working up through the chain of command, applies to mind control treatment in general. Another tactic a therapist can use is to ask the spinner to spin in the opposite direction, which will often put away whatever is being spun. If permitted by those alters in charge, a spinner can also replace whatever lesson she is spinning with something positive, such as a feeling of calmness, taken from a positive memory.

For a complicated target behavior that must not be set off by accident, some military/political mind control groups use sequential alters rather than a group who are spun together. For example, alters are trained to sing the songs on a record in the head to get out one alter after another in a sequence until the final one performs an assassination.

13. Deliberately placed triggers for learned behaviors or symptoms (programs)

Although all abuse and trauma survivors may be "triggered" into intrusive flashbacks by present-day experiences which remind them of the trauma, the triggers deliberately installed by mind controllers are different, in that they are cues for conditioned behaviors, only some of which are traumatic intrusions.

The basic training (compliance, loyalty and silence) is given to all alters, and cannot be turned off. However, many other specific trained behaviors, such as self-harm or disrupting therapy, have "on" and "off" triggers or switches. This training of alters functions like post-hypnotic suggestions. Triggers are installed using drugs and punishment, repeated over and over while the child is in a semi-conscious state. Classical conditioning (often aversive conditioning) is also used, as well as hypnosis. The child learns to respond to certain touches or sounds or words with a behavior that is so well learnt that it is automatic. The result is that a survivor might open the door when she hears a certain pattern of knocks, or she might fall asleep when a certain word is spoken. The MKUltra experiment described in Chapter Two gives an example of this, and Katz's chapter describes the installation of touch triggers in infancy. Carol Rutz says that whenever someone said "Knock, Knock," she would switch to a vacant, mindless person by the name of "Nobody's Home." You can see how easy it is for perpetrators to access and use their targets.

Some personality systems are set up with an inner world full of wires or strings that connect switches to their effects. These might facilitate a series of actions by a series of alters. For example, one alter watches the person function in the outside world, and presses a button if she sees the person disobeying instructions. The button is connected to a wire, which rings a bell in the ear of another alter. This alter then engages in his or her trained behavior, opening a door to release the pain of a rape, or cutting the person's arm in a certain pattern, or pushing out a child alter. So the watcher has no idea of who the other alter is or what s/he does. These events can be quite complicated.

Triggered behaviors can sometimes be temporarily stopped if the therapist can speak with the alters responsible and get them to agree to turn off the programs which have been triggered. In some systems it is possible to explore the whole chain of planned events from an outside perspective, so that all alters can be shown how the situation was set up. Once the alters see how they were tricked, and come to know that their perpetrators are no longer in their lives (if this is true), they can agree to stop their trained behaviors.

On and off triggers include sights or sounds or touches. For example, one client of mine had a habit of pushing on the fingers of her left hand with her thumb. This turned out to be the introject (inside copy) of an abuser warning her not to talk. Although many triggers are idiosyncratic, like that one, others are used widely. One common trigger looks like a reassuring rub on the crown of the head, to silence a child. The husband of one client discovered that this calmed the client down when she was upset. He had no idea he was using a pre-installed trigger. The Satanic "horned hand" (so often used by heavy metal musicians, as well as John Lennon, who was studying Alistair Crowley at the time) is a common sight trigger to identify survivors to cult members. Beeping sounds on the telephone convey particular messages, such as "go outside."

One of my early clients compiled a catalogue of "touch triggers" and what they meant. I have discovered that many of them are familiar to other clients, including unrelated people from very different geographical locations.

14. Booby traps

"Booby traps" or "fail-safes" are dangerous internal events that are triggered to happen if the client (with or without a therapist) investigates too much of his or her own training, and/or becomes aware of memories she is not supposed to know. The effects of booby traps include such things as suicide attempts, serious self-harm, or falling into terrible depression. Both Katz and Fotheringham describe these traps in detail.

A booby trap can be set off without the knowledge of the main outside personality. The person might leave a therapy session feeling just fine, then go and jump off a building. Because of such traps, *it is very important to go very slowly in therapy with survivors of this kind of abuse*. Even though alters are involved in setting off the booby traps, they might not know the effects of what they are doing (pushing buttons, turning switches, and so forth), and it may be difficult to anticipate what will happen.

15. Recycling of memories and reappearance of trained behaviors

A recycler (or reactivator) alter is one who has been trained to keep a small piece of each training memory, so that the survivor will be unable to recover the entire memory and thereby undo the training. The recycler may be given a name like Piece Keeper or Puzzle Maker or Collector or Juggler or Key Holder, and will be instructed to do something with the pieces, which are not kept in the files with the rest of the memories. When the therapist and client are ready to go through the training memories and undo the effects of the training, it is essential to find any recycler alters and ask them to put in their pieces as well. Otherwise, the memories that have been processed will be redissociated and the training will begin to work again.

Here is an example of a Recycle Program: In an extended programming session, Piece Keepers, Runners, a Grower, and a Collector of program pieces are created (through pain), and they are all given jobs. The result is that damaged programs (e.g., programs which have been largely undone through therapy) are "grown" from the pieces that were kept separately. When each program is made, a small part of it (some words said at the end, or a little piece of pain) are separated from the rest of the program and given to a particular group of alters, the Piece Keepers, who give them to the Collector of the pieces. If the survivor works through the memory with the main alters involved, the collector gives the saved pieces of that program to the Runners, who run and take them to the Growers, who somehow grow the program back into its original shape. (Note that this example also demonstrates the alter chains that are often involved in the installation and execution of programs.)

No doubt the development of Recycling programs was based on the observation that an incompletely worked through traumatic memory creates flashbacks more than a completely dissociated traumatic memory. Because these recycling alters exist, it is important to enlist their cooperation before you start working through the traumatic memories, especially those of training or programming events. That way the recycling pieces can be put in with the memories the first time you work on them, and the programs will not reappear.

16. Tricks and technologies used for deception and training

Stage magic is used extensively to create non-human alters and simulate various false scenarios such as murders or alien abductions. (All of this will be explored in Chapter Eight, "The programming: indoctrination, lies and tricks", where numerous other examples will be provided.) Costumes are used for demons and animals. Bags of blood are stabbed on top of bodies to make a child think s/he has murdered someone. Dentists numb children's tongues and then tell the alters in the chair that their tongues have been cut out.

I remember one of my first ritually abused clients confessing to me that for a long time she had remembered being abducted by aliens, but had not told me because she did not want me to disbelieve her other memories because of it. We worked through the "alien abduction" memory and discovered that the "spaceship" was parked in the courtyard of the cult training center. In my client who had confessed her "alien abduction" experience, an alter had been instructed that if she began to remember the ritual abuse she was to remember the alien abduction, so that nobody would believe her account of the ritual abuse. This program did not work with us, but you can imagine the larger consequences of such a ruse.

Besides stage magic props and settings, ritually abusing groups use technology, such as that described by Katz and Fotheringham. Military/political groups have the most sophisticated technologies, and much training or programming is now done with virtual reality equipment. Movies and holograms are used to deceive a child into believing in things that are unreal.

When a client says to you "I don't know if it's real; how can it be real?" remember that there are several options, not just two: (1) It happened just as s/he remembers; (2) it did not happen at all; (3) something happened, but due to technology and/or trickery it was not what s/he thinks it was; (4) the thought that the memory must be unreal is itself a program, as described in Chapter Twelve, "Maybe I made it up."

Now, let's see how these characteristics manifest in, and are created by, real people.

CHAPTER FIVE

Ritual abuse: religious and creed-based abuses

The stories in the following chapters will be difficult to read, but they can help to prepare you for what you are likely to hear from your clients. Be warned that graphic details of sexual abuse and physical torture are included, so you as a therapist can understand more fully what your clients may have experienced and be better prepared when you hear it for the first few times. It is also my hope that these testimonies will help readers to see the humanity behind what has for so long been sensationalized, misunderstood, or dismissed.

As a therapist, you will be called upon to "bear witness" to the atrocities your clients have endured. The term "unimaginable" in the title of this book does not only apply to their sexual, physical, or even emotional aspects. In this chapter, we look at examples of traditional "ritual" abuse, abuse which centers around occult religion.

One of the worst features of ritual abuse is spiritual abuse. It consists of: (1) simulation of religious figures in perverted ways; (2) forced teaching of occult beliefs; (3) forced perpetration, especially real or simulated sacrifice of animals, babies, and/or adults, followed by teaching the child that s/he is evil.

Military/political mind controllers also simulate deities and teach children to violate their own natural moral codes. However, the spiritual abuse involved is not primarily religious. Rather, hypnosis and military training of alter personalities leads victims to violate their own moral codes, much as soldiers do in war. Many survivors have experienced both religious and military/political abuse. It should be pointed out, also, that filming of such events is common in both groups, leading us to suspect that financial motives also predominate even when it appears that the motive of the abusers is religious or patriotic.

One survivor, "Old Lady" (a name given by her young alter personalities) had a particularly complex series of spiritual trainings as part of mind control by supposedly different groups.[1] It will be instructive to look at what she experienced, as any or all of these things may be the experience of your ritually abused or mind-controlled client. Her writing sometimes comes from the adult, and sometimes from the young child alters. I have corrected the grammar and spelling of the child alters' writing somewhat to make the story more comprehensible. For instance, she says, "We say 'I' cos I didn't know that there were and are brother and sister parts; the other parts today are sharing what they know and speaking through old lady's fingers." These stories are the "Christian" ritual part of Old Lady's spiritual training. (Yes, there is "Christian" ritual abuse.)

The special child's spiritual training: Old Lady

Age 3, special birthday

> When I was a baby, a priest put a cross on my forehead with his finger and blessed me. The cross symbol scares our system because we were taught and tricked by the same group of abusers, but under different group names ("Freemasons" and "Luciferians"), to fear, obey and be loyal to God and hate evil/darkness or to fear, obey and be loyal to Lucifer and hate God, the light.
>
> The actual spiritual training begins when I turn three. There is a special ceremony for me. It is my birthday so I am the special, holy child who gets to be sacrificed to God. I am dressed in a white frilly dress, white leotards and black shiny shoes for my birthday and I am excited because it is a special day for me.
>
> My mom and dad take me to a church basement. The basement is dark; only lit with candles and dimmed lights. The brightest part of the church basement is where the priest is standing. With a black and gold robe and sword hanging from his right shoulder to his left waist, he stands at the front of the church on a raised stage-like platform. The altar is a few steps below the platform. Everyone is already inside the church waiting for us to come in; they are singing "How Great Thou Art." Mom, dad and I take off our coats and hang them up in the closet. Then my parents leave and two men dressed in black hooded robes take each one of my arms and walk me down the aisle towards the altar.
>
> The two men put me down on my back on the altar, with my arms and legs spread apart like the position you are in when making angels in the snow. The altar is made of wood so it feels hard and cold on my back. I don't like it, but kids aren't allowed to talk: 'Children are seen and not heard'. The priest prays to God in a funny language. I have never heard it before—it sounds like rambling sounds, not real words. These are the words that they will teach me to say over and over and over again until I learn them. Then the priest says that "God is Good; God is Light", and to "fear God because He knows everything and is everywhere". And we fear the light {cq}cos the doctors used the light (a real light) to burn the bottoms of our feet and blind us when we were in the hospital in Montreal. The priest says "It is important to obey God and me, for I am the one who speaks to God on your behalf. Children are lambs of God; Children are special; Come unto me little children; Children are sacrificed to God because they are pure and innocent".
>
> The priest rambles his prayer again to God with his hands raised; the congregation stands up and starts walking over towards me. They are holding candles, and rambling words/sounds in a monotone that I don't understand. Two men take my clothes off and lay me back down on the altar and tape my ankles and wrists to the table so I can't move. It is so dark and I can feel the cool air on my body; I am cold and scared. I don't know what is going on. I can't see mom and dad and start crying for them.

Remember, children aren't supposed to talk. A woman in a hooded robe puts her finger up to her mouth and looks down at me to be quiet. I am scared and so I try to stop making crying sounds, but it is hard. Then I remember what the doctors did to me in the Montreal hospital—there was a priest there too but he was just standing in the left back corner of the hospital room when the men dressed in doctor uniforms did abusive things to me. These people scare me like the people in the hospital so I stop crying and just lie there.

I am told by the priest that this day is special because it is my birthday and I get to be sacrificed to God. The congregation keep circling me and saying their prayers in a low droning sound, which makes me sleepy. I am also getting dizzy watching the congregation keep circling me in a counter clock-wise motion. I go into a trance with listening to their droning noise and watching them circling me. I fall asleep and wake up with people who look like my mom and my dad on top of me naked, doing sex stuff, and a big light is shining down on us. The rest of the place looks dark—someone is filming us doing sex stuff. I pee myself. The adults don't like this. It makes them wet so they get off of me.

I don't feel special now. I feel dirty, confused and scared. I want my mom, but I don't want her because I think she will do sex stuff to me. She has never done sex stuff to me before. My dad has and so I don't really like him or want him to save me. I want my mom and then, I get mad (the beasty in me gets mad) because I am scared of her too. I have no one to save me that day.

Everyone leaves me on the altar. I am still naked, cold, frightened and wet. The priest comes over to me and says I am dirty. I need to be forgiven and cleansed for my sins. I have to go with him in a private and dark place, behind a curtain somewhere. It is very dark. I can't see, but the priest's big hand strokes the left side of my face and then the back of my head. He pulls me into him and his right hand undoes his pants. The priest pushes the back of my head into his penis. I have to put it in my mouth and not bite it—the priest will get mad if I do, just like my dad and uncle do. You have to be nice to the priest and do what he wants because you need to be forgiven and made clean again.

It is my birthday and I am special. I want to throw up when the priest has his thing in my mouth because it's too big, and slimy stuff comes into my mouth, but I'm not supposed to get sick. I have to keep doing stuff to the priest with my fingers on his wrinkly parts, and keep my mouth open for him.

After the priest pulls out of me and does his pants up, he takes me by the hand to two men in black hooded robes. They use towels on me and put my dress on but they don't know how to do the leotards very good. I have to help them by putting my hand on their shoulders and they grab each ankle and stick my feet in the leotards then put my shoes on. Then they take me to the place where our coats are on hooks and mom and dad take me home. I don't speak; I just sit in the back seat of the car and want to sleep. I feel sick, and mom and dad are quiet. Mom gives me a bath when we get home and I go to bed.

The upstairs church

Before I become four, me, mom, dad, and my sisters go to the top part of the church and listen to the priest and the Freemasons' council speak about God being Holy; God is the Light who Shines Away Darkness and Evil. Fear God when he gets mad; don't make him mad. Be good and obey your parents and the elders of the church. There is power in the blood; be a good soldier. God tests us to make sure we are good and obey him, the priest and the men elders. We can't tell our friends or people who don't go to our church that we are soldiers of God who keep secrets. We can't tell them about our special ceremonies like the sex stuff and giving baby and children's hearts to the priest and drinking blood from the special Christ cup.

When we pray together with the adults, I always feel funny, sleepy and not me. I'm a boy soldier. You say a prayer from the pew then follow people on your left or right row by row to be blessed by the priest. He makes a cross symbol with his fingers on your forehead with his ointment and takes the bread which is Christ's body broken for us. Then we say more of the same prayer and get up again to get the cross put on our forehead with the priest's finger and to drink Christ's blood—He bled for us on the cross and died to take away our sins. Blessed is he who is pure in heart, body, mind and soul, for he will go to heaven with God and live with God for eternity. There is no evil or darkness or Lucifer or Satan or Beelzebub in heaven. Heaven is good, a place of peace and tranquility, but you have to be forgiven of your sins first before you can go there. The priest speaks to God for you and tells him whether you can go to heaven or not. If you don't go to heaven, you go to hell, the place of fire, darkness and turmoil/agony for the soul.

We sing "Stand up, stand up for Jesus, ye soldiers of the cross", "There's power in the blood", "Onward Christian soldiers." The priest says we are a special group, that not everyone will understand us and will try to destroy us and break up the group, so we don't share what goes on here in our church, the family of God. We learn that God fights evil. Lucifer is the head of evil/darkness. There is no place for darkness in God's family; we have to be lanterns for God, because we aren't bright and powerful and righteous bright lights like God is. He is the only bright, righteous and just light.

Initiation

Children are taken by congregation members and tested to see if they will tell secrets or get scared and go to the devil. But first you have to be initiated into the Freemasons' group.

When I am four, Bob takes me down into the cellar of his house. This is where he keeps his home-made wine and stores stuff; this is where dead bodies are. It is stinky, musty, damp and not much light, just one light bulb. The cellar is narrow and gets dark near the end of the long bench I have to sit on. I just sit there and wait. Bob comes to get me and takes me upstairs into the living room. Men are there sitting in a circle with hooded black robes. Bob brings me into the center of the circle and has me lie down on my back with my hands and feet spread apart like when I was three, but this time I can keep my clothes on. I lie on my back and Bob is behind my head and looks down at me; I have to only look into his eyes and nowhere else. My ankles and wrists are held down by the hands of men; they say stuff that I can't understand and someone gets ointment and pins. I have to stay still, not move.

It is a test to see if I am a good and loyal soldier of God. I know that I have to obey because they are God's family, God's men, and you have to obey them or you will go to hell. So I lie there and they put pins into my hand, five of them in a circle. My fingers want to fold up and I want to close my hand. I try but the weight of the man on my left wrist keeps my hand and fingers from closing. After the second one I know what to expect and the stings make my hand go numb. My hand won't close; it is numb, like it isn't my hand. I feel like my whole body is going numb. I can't look at my hand, only into Bob's big brown ugly eyes. He is evil. I know God doesn't like him.

Meeting Beelzebub and Satan

Another time when we were four, we/I had to go to church with my uncle Bob and aunt Emily. They leave me with some men in hooded robes and I'm getting really scared because I know bad things are going to happen again, but I don't say anything to let them know I'm scared.

The priest in a white robe and a gold scarf round his shoulders comes out from the dark place and from among the other men in robes and he comes to me. He says, 'Today is a special day. You learn about good and evil and to trust your family here and to keep their secrets."

I say 'You teach me to be like you.' He says 'No, to be a follower of God. Do you love God?" I say yes. He says 'How much?' I say lots. I say 'I'm good, I don't tell lies, I behave and fear God's light. Cause God knows everything and is everywhere and hates the devil and the dark. That's why you wear white, right, cos you're special. God speaks through you and tell me to be good or else I go to hell. Right?' He says, 'Very good. You have been listening and learning about God and his rules and his power. You're a holy child and will be a good follower of God, I am sure.' This makes me feel good cos I please the priest and think maybe he won't hurt me or do things like sex stuff to me maybe, but he does it anyway. He always does sex stuff to me.

The priest leaves and the place is dark. It's only lit by candles and no chairs for pews. I think I am in the middle of the church basement but I'm not sure cos it's so dark. A black robe with no hood is put on me by a man in a hooded robe and I'm supposed to follow a flashlight or spotlight that moves somewhere. I don't know where it's going to go but it seems scary to me. I hope I please the elders and priest and God so nothing bad happens. I don't want to go to the bad place, hell, that the priest speaks about.

Then this ugly animal-looking beasty monster appears. He's really scary cause he has horns and an animal face with a long nose and tusks like an elephant. He's wearing a red robe too, so I'm not sure if he's a man playing costume games or a real monster. I just stand there and am afraid. It's not Halloween so I'm not sure what we're doing. Maybe we have to pose again for more pictures and films but there are no bright lights, just the light where I'm standing and where the beasty is standing. He says 'Come unto me, child. I am your father. The father of darkness.' I say 'You don't sound like my dad. The priest says I'm a follower of light, God's light, and you sound like some man, not my dad, and you say darkness. So I don't think it's right.' He says really loud and angrily to me, 'Don't think, child. Just do what I say and come unto me. I am your father, the father of darkness.' I'm scared now cos he's big and he may eat me with his big tusks and I'm afraid of going to hell with the devil, so I say 'No' and then 'Stop' cause the priest told me to obey the elders and obey the priest and God. But this don't look like an elder so I'm confused and then I say 'No' with a strong voice cause I'm getting angry, and Beasty inside don't like this beast monster. So I say no to the beast monster and he says 'I am Beelzebub, one of the fathers of darkness, and your father of the darkness within you. Now come here or I will destroy you.' I say 'No, I'm not going with you cause the priest says to obey the light and obey God and you're not my dad and you're of darkness.'

I say no, then suddenly the light gets brighter and I hear from somewhere, 'Good child. You passed the first test this day.'

It goes dark again and there's only a spotlight or flashlight again on the floor. The floor has red carpet. I follow the flashlight path and it takes me somewhere in the church basement again and then it stops and I stand still. Then suddenly Satan appears. He's dressed in a red robe and has black hair and a thin mustache and horns like devil horns that you see in movies. He's really scary cause he looks mad and powerful. I think I am in hell maybe, cos I see him, and I want to see the priest again cos he is of the light of God and will save me from hell, cos the priest just said I was good and will be a follower of God. I'm really scared and hope that Satan doesn't take me to hell. I've seen hell on TV and it was scary, with fire and lots of people who are dead and crying and moaning.

I'm really scared but just stand there and wait for God maybe or the priest to speak to me. He doesn't.

Satan says he's my father and the father of evil and darkness. That he is all powerful and knows everything about me and everyone. Satan's father is Lucifer and he is the ultimate father of evil and darkness, and I must be loyal to Satan, Beelzebub and Lucifer. I say 'Who are Beelzebub and Lucifer?' Satan says it is not for me to ask questions and to speak without being spoken to. Now come with me, and come now or you will be destroyed. I remember the light and God and the priest, and something inside me says no. I say no, cos before it was a test and I passed it and the priest came out and I felt better when I saw him. He is of the light and of God and will protect me from darkness and this Satan, who is really scary cos he looks like Satan on TV. He must be the real Satan cause he's in the TV and now here. He must be of the spirit world and of hell. And this makes me really scared. I say 'No I'm not going with you cause I'm a follower of God, the light and the priest, and you're not my dad or nice.' Satan then vanishes in smoke and I'm left there alone and it is really quiet. I'm really scared now and think I'm going to hell.

Easter

One time I went to church and we (me and my parts) had to give a heart to the priest. The priest says we are a Holy Child of God (*Ha ma nada*) and have to obey him cause he is God. We show God our loyalty to him by giving the priest of the Freemasons the baby's heart. When we hold the baby's heart in our hands, we have the power of life and death in our hands. This is the power that God has over us, and he can take our life away whenever he wants to so it is good and honorable to obey him, for he created life and can take life.

It was Easter time and I was not four yet. Me, mom and dad go to the church. We go to the basement of the church and hang up our coats again. Mom and dad leave. They go into the church while two men in black hooded robes again take me and put my black gown on. Then they take me into the church that is lit again with candles and low lights. Everyone except the priest is dressed in black hooded robes. The priest is dressed in a white robe and a gold scarf draped around his neck and straight down his chest to his feet; this time he is wearing a white hat with spikes and gold ball things on top of each spike.

The congregation is singing praise songs. The two men sit me down with them near the front of the church and the altar. I don't move or squirm cos you have to sit very still and not sneeze or say anything or else you get your hand squeezed tight and it hurts. I'm afraid of the men and women dressed in black hooded robes. It's creepy like Halloween. The priest teaches us about how Christ was sacrificed on the cross. He died for our sins, we are sinful people, bad people put him up there, but he went willingly cos he loves us and was obeying God, his father. It is important to obey God cos he has the power over life and death. You don't want to make him mad cos he can hurt you, like when he caused the flood and famines and stuff like that.

The two men in black hooded robes take me up to the altar after the singing and preaching. It is quiet and I know something bad is going to happen again, cos I see the altar with a baby in the basket on it. The altar is covered with a white cloth and two red ribbons draped on either side of it. There is a silver knife on the edge of the altar near the steps of the church's platform where the priest stands behind a podium. There is a gold (brass) cup and two white candles in gold (brass) candle holders on the altar. The baby is in the basket with white cloths in it, like Moses when his mother put him in the water so the bad people wouldn't get him. But this is not the same cos the people here scare us but we don't say nothing cause they're bigger and smarter than us.

The baby has a diaper on but he's not crying or anything. His eyes are closed. His tummy is not moving. He is white not blue so I'm not sure if he's dead or not. Sometimes people make us sleepy with a smelly cloth so we don't know, but we don't like it cos it's scary. The two men go back to their pews and I stand on one side of the altar and the priest comes down and stands at the other side. He faces the congregation, not me. He takes a silver knife from the altar and cuts the baby's tummy from the chest to above the belly button. Then the priest cuts across the baby's chest. Blood comes out but not spraying like other times. The baby doesn't cry. I'm looking, and am scared, I pee myself and hope no one sees it. I don't want the priest to do it to me. The priest looks at me and I want to cry and my tummy feels sick. Two of the men from the congregation get up and come over to me. The congregation starts chanting in a different language; it doesn't make sense; I don't know what they're saying. They keep chanting while the priest puts on his white gloves and pulls the skin back on the baby's tummy. I'm watching and am scared. I almost get sick. I gag but the man beside me puts his left hand on my shoulder and presses down on it and my body stops like a scared rabbit.

Then the man moves me to stand beside the priest. The priest cuts round the red organ thing under the shoulder bones and in the middle of the body. The knife goes right through big veins and the priest has to use a cloth to soak the blood up cause it squirts and he doesn't want to get his robe dirty. The congregation is still chanting. It's scary cause they get loud and then soft, loud then soft. The priest goes back to his podium and motions me to move closer to the baby. I don't know what he means or wants but I don't say anything. The man in the black robe comes round to me and tells me to move closer to the baby, where the priest cuts round the heart. The priest says to me 'Reach in, little one, into the baby's chest and take out his heart with your hands, feel the blood and warm fluid, feel the heart in your fingers. Don't squeeze it too hard or drop it because you will contaminate it and make it useless for God.'

I don't want to do it but I have to and the man is next to me and another across from me. They have swords across them like the priest had before when it was my birthday. I don't want them to kill me or hurt me. My legs are wobbly and I try to look around for my mom and dad but can't see them. It's too dark, only candles and low lights again are in the church. I put my fingers in and take them out cos it's warm and sticky and I don't wanna do it but the man moves closer to me and the priest says 'It's God's wish for you to obey. Hurry up and take the heart out and put it in the cup then bring it to me'. I pee myself again and do what the priest says while trying to not look at the baby. Instead I just think of it as a doll and we're playing doctor/operation. This helps me to do it and I give the heart to the priest. I'm careful not to spill the cup and I don't want to trip over my gown so I go slow and give it to the priest. He strokes the left side of my face and motions a cross on my forehead and says I'm a special child, holy child, and this is good that I obey God. 'You now know what it's like to have the power of life and death in your hands. Blessed are the children for they belong to God. You will not go to hell now for you obeyed God. You are good. Now go back to the men behind you.'

I go back down where the men are at the altar and they take me out to get my coat on and wait for mom and dad to come and get me and take me home. I'm tired and feel sick and the pee has dried on my legs. I need a bath cause I'm dirty and stinky.

Christmas

It's Christmas time, not Christmas day, and I am still not four yet, and mom and dad take me to church. We go to the church, go downstairs, and hang up our coats. Christmas decorations are up, green stuff with red cherries. Mom and dad go with other people into the church. They're wearing black hooded robes like the people of the church do. Two men in red and black robes (red sash) take me into the church. I have a white robe on (no hood) this time. This time we have to give the priest

> baby Jesus's heart to cleanse our sins and make us pure. We know we're not going to like it cos we did it before, but we had to cos we're special and the priest says we have to obey God. So we do it but it's a little easier this time. It's a black baby, not like the other baby that was white. Black babies are evil. They have to go to God to be made into light. We see his tummy not move and his eyes are shut so we're not sure if he's dead or not. He's in a baby diaper too and a basket like other one. The table's the same as before, with some green stuff on it to make it look Christmassy.
>
> We praise Jesus and God, sing songs and take the sacrament before we cut the baby up and give his heart to the priest. Blood in a cup, blood of Christ and bread, his bones broken for us, his flesh pure as gold. It's his birthday this day but we're not sure why we're not singing 'Happy Birthday Jesus.' Instead we sing 'Power in the Blood' and some other songs. The church is little bit brighter with Christmas lights, candles and dim lights and brighter ones where the priest and the altar is. Everything is the same as before but we're not as scared.
>
> We're getting used to it, but still don't like seeing the priest cut the heart out. I get to help this time. I stand where the priest stands with the priest's arms on each side of me, and hold his hand as he takes the knife and cuts from the chest to the top of the belly button. 'The skin is dark meat,' dad says too, 'because he's a black nigger.' Niggers have black skin but when we cut the skin it goes pink and white. I think maybe blood makes the skin pink, but it's white too, that's funny, why white? He must be bad like bananas that go bad when they're left in the sun too long. Blood oozes out and runs like before and the priest cleans it with a cloth. The cloth goes red and soggy but we keep going and take a knife and cut across the top like before and pull the skin back. Ucky. We don't like doing that, cause it's a baby, but we have to do what the priest's hand does, and they pull the skin back to get to the heart. We cut through veins and have to saw sometimes, but we do it and we pull the heart out carefully cause we don't want to damage it.
>
> So then the priest leaves me and wipes his hands and goes to the podium, and the men at the altar in black and red robes tell me to put the heart in the cup and wait for the priest to tell me to bring it him. So I do, and then I have to see the priest after, to be cleansed from the blood and wish Jesus happy birthday and kiss his dick. We don't like it cos he always makes us put our mouth round it and it makes our mouth ache and choke like we're gonna get sick but can't cos we get in trouble, so we obey and be good and then get cleaned up by two men before we see mom and dad again.

* * *

Old Lady also had Luciferian training for a different set of alter personalities, with similar events. It is common that mind control survivors have several belief systems, held in different sets of alters. Just because you have unearthed one particular group of trained alters does not mean there are not others.

Here she describes the teachings of the respective different spiritual groups.

"Freemasons"[2] teachings:

- God is all knowing, all powerful and to be feared.
- God is good, eternal, light and Satan is evil, bad, darkness.
- Children are sacred, innocent and need to be sacrificed to God, as Abraham sacrificed Isaac. You hold the baby's heart in your hand and give it to the priest; there is power in the blood.

- Once I have killed babies or anyone or even animals, I am bad and need God's forgiveness through a sex act or I will go to hell.
- The priest's sperm makes you one with the priest.
- I am a holy child of God (*ha ma nada*) through the sex act with the priest.
- To kill myself is honorable, and is what God wants me to do if I tell you about God's group or the Freemasons' secrets.
- Killing myself is also the ultimate thing to do if I leave the group or share information about the group with anyone outside the group.
- If I kill myself I will be with God in heaven for eternity and this is the greatest place to be.
- On my birthday, I became the 'bride' of the priest. I was 'killed' (or made unconscious), then raised from the dead, raised on a cross in a ceremony with the congregation/group surrounding me.

Luciferians' teachings

- Lucifer (the same priest in a different costume) is the God of darkness; Satan is second in command, and Beelzebub is third.
- Lucifer is a spiritual being who is all knowing, all powerful, and to be feared.
- Lucifer, Satan and Beelzebub are good and God is bad.
- Darkness and evil is 'good', and light and God is 'bad'.
- The priest is human, a man and not of the same spiritual level or status as Lucifer (even though he is the same person, as we discovered in therapy).
- Light is bad (I was burned with physical light to make their point and enforce the word and imagery of light as being bad/hurtful/wrong.)
- Sacrificing animals, babies and other humans and eating them is good, it gives power ("power in the blood"). People becoming beasts who tear the bodies apart, feed on the blood and eating flesh is good.
- Lucifer's sperm makes you one with him.
- It is honorable, and righteous to kill myself. I will be with Lucifer. His sperm in me makes me spiritually powerful (not as powerful as him); I will be with Lucifer in hell if I kill myself. This is the ultimate goal.
- I am to kill myself if I share the group's information with anyone outside the group or if I escape or leave the group.
- Hell is used as a reward, and is seen as heaven.
- I was killed (unconscious) on an upside down cross and raised from the dead for the Luciferian group.

As you read these two lists, you can see how parallel the "Christian" or "Freemasons'" beliefs and the Luciferian beliefs are, just with different deities. Both groups sacrificed infants, and forced children to participate in murders and cannibalism. You will notice the references to blood giving power. Both groups embedded sexual abuse within a religious context. Those readers with backgrounds in Christian churches will notice how the "Christian" ritual abusers used ordinary hymns as part of their worship services, and how much of their doctrine was similar to that taught in many churches. Survivors of this kind of abuse who attend churches, or receive counseling or therapy from persons with overt Christian beliefs, will have alter personalities who assume that those in the churches or attempting to help them heal have the same beliefs (and perhaps, practices) as the perpetrators.

As Old Lady worked with this material to tell her story, her parts shared with one another. Initially they were very confused because different insiders worshipped opposite deities, and many of them were given the names of the Luciferian deities (she had several alters named Lucifer, Satan, and Beelzebub). The alters in the "Freemasons" group had not known the alters in the Luciferian group. As they shared with one another, they realized that there was only one perpetrator group who split parts off for both purposes, to serve their Gnostic theology of making light and darkness equal. And that the priest was also "Lucifer."

The main components of spiritual abuse are described below.

Simulation of religious figures and the afterlife

In countries where many citizens are Christians, it is common that God and Jesus are simulated. In ritual abuses based on Christianity, every aspect of the supposed nature of the Christian God is twisted: creation (creating alters through torture); judgment (rejecting and punishing the "evil" child), dying for sins (making the child hurt or kill "Jesus"), comfort (sexual abuse), forgiveness (forgiving through sex with a priest or someone dressed up as "God" or "Jesus"). Some survivors report being taken to a simulated "heaven" where "God" or Jesus rejected and verbally abused them and told them they were so evil that they could never be forgiven or enter heaven again. Children are put in graves with dead bodies, then "raised from the dead." Children and adults are abused while tied to upside-down crosses. Every Christian holiday has its perversion—killing the "baby Jesus" at Christmas, killing the adult "Jesus" at Easter.

In addition, the negative imagery associated with Christianity is exploited: a simulated "hell" is created with flames painted on the walls. Fires are used, dry ice is used to make "smoke", and people in devil or demon costumes hurt and rape children with forks or spikes. Children are encouraged to hurt others, being told that this (hell) is where they will have to spend eternity, so if they are on Satan's or Lucifer's side they will get to do the hurting instead of being hurt. What a choice!

Many Satanic and Luciferian cults have rituals in which "Satan" or "Lucifer" appears. "Satanic baptism" involves rape of a year-old infant by a man in a devil suit. "Marriage to Satan" involves dressing a child up in white to be raped by a man in a Satan costume with a spiked penis sheath.

Mind control groups that are not ritually abusive might simulate other kinds of gods. Trish Fotheringham, whose story is in Chapter Six, had a group of alters taken repeatedly to "the realm of the Gods" where Gods such as the Lord Almighty, Lady Luck, and the Three Fates instructed them to become the "voice of the gods". These gods later rejected them.

Blaming God or the child for the abuse

The inescapable nature of the abuse takes away any belief that the child might have that a benevolent deity will come to a victim's rescue. Later, survivors (and their therapists), depending on their belief system, have to face the reality of divine non-intervention, at least in any tangible sense.

This is often made explicit by the abusers. For example, a child being abused in a Satanist group is told to pray to God to come and save them. The child prays, and God does not appear. Then the child is told to pray to Satan, and a man in a Satan costume comes and tells the abusers to stop hurting the child. The child naturally assumes Satan is the benevolent deity.

The indoctrination goes one step further when God is blamed for the abuse. For example, one client shared with me that someone who was said to be God, and was dressed up in a white robe, physically and sexually abused her painfully at a young age, "creating" alters by telling them to split off. Another child was made very angry by the perpetrator group torturing her, then showing her a bearded man tied to a cross, who they said was Jesus. They told her that what was happening to her was all his fault. They gave her a weapon and told her to hurt or kill "Jesus."

These abusive groups explain divine non-intervention by making the children they abuse believe that God has chosen not to help them because they, the children, are evil to the core. One child was taken into the presence of "Jesus," tied to a cross. When she went to rescue him, he spat in her face. He said that he would rather die than be saved by her because she was so evil.

Forced perpetration

A large part of the post traumatic stress disorder experienced by war veterans is based on their having to harm or kill fellow human beings. This is not natural to us; it has to be drilled into military recruits, along with beliefs that dehumanize the enemy. Soldiers can go to war thinking they will be heroes for their country, and then have to face the devastating reality that they have killed someone just like themselves.

In the same way, one of the most heartbreaking parts of ritual abuse is the spiritual abuse that results from forced perpetration. Occult groups of various kinds force children (and adults) to participate in torture, rape, animal sacrifice, and real and simulated murders. To those who must take part, the murders are very real, even if the victim is not actually killed. And in some cases the murder is real.

Children love pets, and training in ritually abusive groups often begins with forcing them to kill a pet with which they have been allowed to bond. Because all contradictory emotions are split into different parts of a multiple, this creates a separation between the alters who feel empathy and those who are capable of perpetrating in order to save their lives.

The following are examples of what survivors have gone through in this regard.

- A little girl is given a puppy to pet. She is given a hallucinogenic drug, which causes her to see "waves" all around her. Then she is told her heart is being replaced by a black heart, and she sees a man holding a black animal heart; he hurts her chest and says he is putting it in her. Then he takes the puppy and at a signal the group pull the puppy to pieces. The little girl is told it is because of her, her black heart sent out waves which made the puppy die.
- A two-year-old is allowed to play with a puppy, then is told to kill the puppy. When she refuses, her older brother is brought in and is made to kill a baby. The child is then told

> that he had to kill the baby because she refused to kill the puppy. She is then told to kill the puppy, and complies.

Those of us who have not experienced this can only imagine how destructive such things are to the spirit of the child. The indoctrination that goes on around these experiences, with the purpose of "corrupting the innocent," makes it even worse. Children, who have a natural empathy for any hurt creature, are converted to "soldiers" or "priests," able to hurt and kill without experiencing empathy. The only way this can be accomplished is through dissociation.

As in war, the "choice" presented to the child is "kill or be killed." As you will see in Stella Katz's account (Chapter Seven), perpetrator groups know that many children will choose to die rather than to kill, but this really only results in that particular alter being "killed"—tortured to the point of unconsciousness—and a new alter being split off, until the child produces an alter who will do the killing. By now the child—the alter—is likely to kill robotically, with little or no awareness of what it is doing. Abusers will continue to train and refine the alters who do the harm, making sure that they do not feel compassion.

Adriana Green, whose full story will be told in a memoir, shares her experience of a therapy session regarding where such an event was addressed.

The strangers' house: Adriana Green

> Maria is a small woman with dark eyes that witness the crimes of humanity. Her eyes reflect the capacity to believe, shine compassion when the need for kindness calls. I focus on staying the adult who moments earlier walked up the narrow flight of stairs of the historical building with its discolored runner, took off the blue duffel coat, embraced in greeting.
>
> Five years have passed since Derek referred me.
>
> "Good to see you," she says. I came to her in the latter part of her practice, with its long history of working in trauma recovery. She speaks publicly of mind control, teaches colleagues. She asks, "How are you?"
>
> The past begins to stir, rises to the surface. I notice the subtle changes, the fuller mind, the shuffling about.
>
> "This week has been more difficult."
>
> "We are getting close to what happened," she says.
>
> The small population within pushes forward, curious, listening for cues to come close. They are still getting used to the idea of moving to the top floor. For the past five years they have been walking down the narrow flight of stairs to Maria's office under ground level, where the windows ran high and narrow near the ceiling, footsteps hollow above our heads. Now we are perched high in a well lit room.
>
> *In this light, after all these years, I am still afraid of what might be seen at the core of me.*
>
> I do not speak this concern of mine. I know Maria's response without asking: *we must find out what happened. It is not enough to only feel, we need to know the entirety of what happened, so then you can finally understand.*

My headache comes in rapid waves, lasts seconds, interrupts me. I still want to trace the hurt on my face with my fingers, in search of understanding. But I refrain from raising my hands, and instead keep them interlaced on my lap. I know this to be a recurring memory, one that is linked to what is to be revealed.

Still, it stuns me.

"My face remembers."

Maria nods.

I sense someone else who noticed the hit on the face. He stands to the right of me, in my mind. I recognize him from last week, when he first appeared. He spoke quietly, making clear he was a boy. There's no protector to come and block his way, to refuse, punish the telling. A decade passed for him to learn there's help here. There's no need to stand separate.

I miss his rightful raging. I am still waiting for my anger to show.

This young boy believes he's an adult, a replica of the man who stood in front of him at the strangers' house. I have yet to learn why. Was it the utter loss of control? The confusion? Sheer survival? *What did they say to him to claim such a belief?* I do not trust him.

He wants to come forward, to break free from the forgotten place. I refuse to point him out. I'm afraid of what he knows. Everyone is afraid of him. He begins to fill the space beside me, leaves less room for me. I cannot keep his presence hidden from Maria. I speak loud, over the others, to make my position clear, that this moment is still mine.

I talk about hopelessness, not yet being able to connect the feeling to the small self. I say, "I wonder if this is where the healing ends."

"We need to look at what happened," Maria says. She understands the resistance, the progression to doing the work of recovery. She respects that I too, the adult, need time to speak. She listens as I try to talk it through. How can I go from mother and wife, to the child left on the strangers' doorstep, seeing the flash of grey of father's suit as he turned?

I wonder *why fight so hard to face that which can help redeem the self*?

"This is hard," I say.

"Yes. But he needs to share with everyone what happened," Maria says. "He is still back there, caught in time."

Many years have passed since I first remembered the pricking on the tops of the arms, the drugging, the slowing of body and breath. There was no story, only the effortless cry, the need to sleep.

The room swims in front of me, as if in water.

Now there's knowledge. Now we know this happened at the strangers' house. The memory resurfaces, persistent in saying *this too is part of the story*.

In my reluctance, I know too the boy's part will help complete the memory.

I'm afraid to remember, even though all the pieces are coming together, towards completing me.

"I would like to speak with him," Maria says.

"I can only see him." My voice slows, loses enunciation. I need to lay my head down, stop altogether.

"We need to let him know he's not bad, that whatever happened was not his fault."

I fill with insoluble confusion.

"Would it help to put the sleepy feelings away in a container while we go through what happened?" Maria draws an imaginary circle, describes the solid sides, the tight fitting lid that will keep the feelings at bay. "We don't have to remember all at once."

She takes care not to overwhelm the senses, knows this is the very reason for the existence of the others. "Can he come closer, show everyone what happened?"

I see the others far in the distance, their frozen cries. I do not want to know their pain. I do not want to know the crimes they are witness to, what secrets they still hold. But the dull of the sedation, being here with Maria, wise and familiar with the terrain of trauma, the intolerable wait—all this is enough to dismantle denial.

My head touches the soft mound of a pillow. And so comes the sequential telling with each step, the twist of story not grasped by the child's mind. But with patience and careful explanation, slowly the story forms, the thaw of then. When we arrive upon an empty space along the storyline, Maria will know a child, or a jagged edge of emotion, is missing. We need to find them, invite them here.

Maria asks questions in a kind investigative manner.

Everyone will listen, try to answer.

Sometimes no answer comes. *Not yet.*

At the center of the memory is the boy. He appeared last week in chain of recollection, promised to return today, to bring his part of the story. I wonder, is it the blank expression, the stoop of the shoulders, that Maria recognizes when she says, "You met me before. Take a look around. Those men are not here. They are probably long gone by now, or dead."

I don't want him to step to the front.

What is revealed may not give relief, in the glare of light and truth.

When Maria first met him, she said, "I like you." He heard the lightness of her voice, felt the warmth of her greeting flush across his face. *Could he matter in a different way than what he was created for?*

He wants to talk with Maria, to ease the pressure of keeping silent. If only he could, but learning what and how to speak takes practice, needs time and space. And these things, he did not know well.

The others stay their distance. He's not tempted to step towards them.

Besides, he's glad he's not a girl, for what happens to them.

He was created to come out in the world for only a short time. But what he did will take near a lifetime to shed the shame, to realize forgiveness.

"He doesn't like any of us," the eight-year-old tells Maria. "He doesn't like girls."

"Well, if nobody likes him, I can be his friend, until they get to know him."

"He's bad."

"I don't think he's bad. He's only five years old." She stretches out her hand horizontal to the floor near three feet to show how tall she suspects he might stand. "He's actually little. How can we find him? How can we let him know he can come out here today?"

"He did something terrible."

"There was someone who made him do what he did." Maria says. "I want him to look around the room, to see me. I will not make him do anything bad. I want him to know he's not there. He's here."

He sees with my eyes, looks for the men in the room, the one standing, the rest sitting nearby. But they are not here. He looks at Maria, and then looks around the room, takes in the painting of the lioness and her cub, the bright greens of foliage around their golden manes.

He takes a small breath now and again, wonders if they slipped through the door while he was taken by the color and light. He looks around yet once again.

But they are not here.

One night, when sleep would not come for the adult, he held firm the pencil, and drew a portrait of the stranger, with the long limbs and straight cut hair that stopped at his chin. He folded the drawing in four and brought the small piece of evidence to Derek, and said, "This is him." That was many years ago.

This is how long the memory is in the making.

Maria likes him. She told him this last week. She keeps one hand on his. Her one hand on his does not scare him. He watches her steady eyes, feels her calm. He notices that she's not afraid of him. Maybe he can stay a little while longer in the brightness.

The remembering begins to bubble upward. There's something on the ground he has to hurt, between him and the man who stands in front of him. There's a man behind him too. Large hands wrap around his to help hold the knife. The insides of his hands sting from the pressing.

He gave this memory of the stinging on the inside of the hands to the adult a long time ago, but she still does not know its meaning.

"It is all right to share what happened with everyone," Maria says.

There's a little girl that is behind him. She's still as a small statue. He came to do this for her, so she could live. They hit him on the face to keep him awake from the sleepiness. He feels the pull up and the force down on his wrist. His hands are squeezed together, the impression deeper than skin. The hands over his own leave, but he keeps on doing the up and down motion. He needs to vomit. But if he doesn't do this, the little girl who is quiet behind him will die. He came to be in her place.

Maria is still here, and he's glad for this. She watches his hands.

"Do you know what is happening?"

I need to believe he could not see what it was that he had to hurt.

"We need to be quiet," he says.

"Can you say why?"

"So nothing more will happen."

"Look around again. See? They are not here. Then what happened?

"The man says that I'm one of them." Maria's hand is still on his.

"You're not one of them," she says. "They only want you to believe this."

"I think I should be dead."

> *"I don't want you dead," she says, her eyes sad. He wants to believe her more than the man. But he believes in his badness, remembers being told about the balance between the good and bad. He had to be bad, just as he was to be good. He had to believe the man in front of him.*
>
> Maybe he can believe Maria.
>
> Something wet is traced on his face—there's a fleeting sensation of fingers tracing downwards on his face, like a ghost passing through him. He wants to sleep, fade away.
>
> "What happens then?"
>
> "They put it on my face." He looks at her and wants her to know, without having to say.
>
> "What did they put on your face?"
>
> He can't say, only wants her to know.
>
> "Do they say more?" He nods.
>
> *"I belong to them."*

When I work through such memories with clients, I make sure to point out that there are likely to be many alters who refused to perpetrate before the abusers could get one who would do what they required.

These perpetrators go to great lengths to make children believe that they are so evil that nobody will want them except for the abuser group. There are often alters who are given the job of reminding your client that she or he is an evil killer or rapist who will be sent to hell when they die. They reinforce the message that someone who starts to remember or disclose being abused is not a victim, but an abuser. Abusers may teach that the child (later, adult) will harm anyone they get close to. For example, see the little girl with the "black heart," above.

A central aspect of our humanity is our ability to consider ourselves free beings who have moral choices, who are able to choose good over evil and to experience empathy for others. This core belief is certainly the target of mind controlling groups, in particular those with religious beliefs at the base of their practice. The mind control takes away the victim's free will. The forced perpetration takes away the victim's ability to choose good and act on that choice, and the splitting the personality system between "good" and "evil" alters allows the eventual committing of acts of violence without the empathy which normally prevents such actions. This systematic indoctrination allows such groups continue their existence into further generations.

The survivor who chooses to recover will go through the agony of knowing and taking responsibility for what she or he has done. In this way, survivors reclaim their humanity and spiritual purity.

We shall look more at questions of good and evil, meaning, and spirituality in Chapter Nine as well as Chapter Fifteen, "The unimaginable". Different therapists take different approaches, and there, I shall share mine.

Notes

1. Note that we only know what Old Lady remembers her perpetrators telling her about their identities and loyalties. Various perpetrators identified themselves as Freemasons, Nazis, GIs, Green Berets, MI6, CIA, and Luciferians. We do not know their actual loyalties.
2. We do not know that these people were really Freemasons; we only know that is what they told the child.

CHAPTER SIX

Military, political, and commercial uses of mind control

It might be said that in some ways, all ritual abuse and mind control is perpetrated for power or commercial purposes. Some, however, arises specifically from government, military, or "shadow government" groups. Although this chapter focuses on the personal stories of two healed survivors of mind control who were used for military/political and commercial purposes, much of what they experienced applies to mind control survivors in general.

Trish Fotheringham was discarded by her abusers when she was in her teens, and never used again. This was probably because of her severe asthma and her rebellious nature. Some things that may be helpful for therapists to note in this story include:

1. The presence of one primary "handler" throughout;
2. The extremely complicated, intricate structure of her system;
3. The assignment of alter personalities to colors;
4. The simulation of the "real world" by artificial means, different for each alter;
5. The huge amount of stage magic, scenery and props involved;
6. The way in which hidden alters held emotions and other aspects of experience;
7. The deliberate creation of an "inner world;"
8. The use of age-appropriate play activities for training;
9. The sealing in of alters at ages where they could not tell reality from fantasy;
10. The internal filing system for training experiences;
11. The security system to prevent the survivor from remembering or talking;
12. The complex process of locking away the training memories and programming the child for a future of failure.
13. The deliberate creation of false memories to mask the existence of the mind control.

Mind control as I experienced it: Trish Fotheringham

I believe that I was raised as a demonstration model for mind-control techniques designed to provide the latest, most marketable form of human slavery of the time. I do not know the identity of the group who programmed me but it clearly had both a profit-making and a political agenda. From my birth in 1960, I was subjected to daily trainings and exploitations designed to create dissociated alternate personalities (alters) that could be programmed according to the needs of the buyer(s). This programming was instilled through the use of mind-control techniques, including ritual abuse-torture, that were built layer upon layer to form specific patterns of behavior within each alter. This resulted in alters that were meant to be perfectly controllable "slaves."

I was used as a child sex slave by individual pedophiles and cults, and also by pedophile rings, for orgies, rituals, child pornography and snuff films. I was used to write abusers' words, preach their agendas, recruit others, train other young children, and trigger others to action, record, and report. I was also used to steal and spy, for drug and arms trafficking, and for other common criminal activities.

As a demonstration model, I was trained to exhibit a multitude of personality profiles, any of which could be individually defined and selected for purchase and creation in others. Conflicting programs caused an increased need for adjustments and fine-tuning. Program deterioration and eventual breakdown were inevitable. When that occurred—on essentially a "built-in expiry date"—I was cast out and discarded. This conflicting training helped me to eventually break the programming bonds and bypass "failsafe" programs which are always a part of the programming package.

My mind-control programming included the use of:

- sensory/sleep/food deprivation; also sensory overload;
- confusion, fear, pain, terror, guilt, shame, humiliation and belittlement;
- theatrics, trickery, illusion, lies and coercion;
- physical, emotional, verbal, sexual and spiritual abuse;
- forced actions against self/animals/others;
- double-bind situations;
- systematic behavior modification and hypnosis techniques;
- drugs, lights, sounds, smells, special effects, film projections, hidden cameras and microphones;
- sets, props, actors, costumes and make-up;
- meticulously and elaborately designed role-play "characterizations" based on nursery rhymes, fairy tales, stories, books, movies and music;
- guns, electroshock, whips;
- shackles, chains and cages.

My handlers focused a great deal on creating dissociation. Their intentional use of traumatic situations (torture and electroshock) along with psychoactive drugs made it possible for them to selectively disconnect from my conscious mind aspects of awareness or experience; these were contained in dissociated identities, or alters, that they created. The alters would serve other purposes as well.

These abuses were carefully pre-planned. My trainers generally used only enough trauma to accomplish their goals. "Smoke and mirrors" (deception and illusions, assisted by drugs) made specific aspects of each piece of training attach to the correct alter identity in a predictable manner. For maximum effectiveness and potency, the science of child development was used to make training incidents age- and stage- appropriate. These trainings, which my alters understood as "life lessons," became progressively more frequent and more traumatic as I aged.

Although they had no real power, my alters were allowed or given just the right amount of apparent personal empowerment to fool them into never knowing they were being manipulated. *Their belief that their experience was real was the key.* Alters were called out into the body only for those experiences that would further their intended understanding of the world.

My primary handler, whom I called "Puffy," was present during my training throughout my life from infancy. Usually loving and friendly, stroking and kissing me, he was like my daddy, lover, sweetheart, and master all at once. He played with me and treated me like his precious little princess. He took me walking in his beautiful gardens, swishing me about, scooping me up into his arms. He danced alone with me in his bedroom to Johnny Mathis tunes, crooning the words to me as if I were his lover. I stayed the night so often at his estate home after various events that I believed I had my own bedroom, wardrobe, music box and porcelain horse collections, and that his servants were my servants. I even had "my own" horse in his stables for when the two of us went riding.

Puffy often filmed our time together. He taught me to ignore and not even see the camera, which was important in later trainings and exploitations. This created confusion initially in therapy, until I learned to "zoom out" to out-of-body alters who could give me the full details of a given scenario. Before that, I misinterpreted many memories. For example, at first I believed that a recalled series of Satanic events meant that my family were Satanists and that "I" had been married to Satan (red skin, horns, tail, and all). Later, an out-of-body alter enabled me to learn that cameras, wires, crew and staged settings had created these Satanic-themed situations as part of a series of porn and snuff films. The alters involved in the ceremonial events were never out anywhere else, so they naturally interpreted them as real life. Only this "zoomed out" perspective enabled me to recognize and distinguish the truth in all this.

During my first weeks of life, my handlers established as much controllable dissociation as possible, as soon as possible. Negative emotional states such as fear, helplessness, stifled anger, and loneliness, as well as positive ones such as pleasure, contentment and safety, were isolated into separate alters. Some of these splits initially involved trauma; all were developed by giving each alter experiences that locked them steadily deeper into their emotional state.

My deliberately created alters were all associated with particular colors, with each color representing a "path" or type of training. An alter who was being trained to follow a red path would only wear particular red clothing, be spoken to in particular ways, and have experiences in particular situations, with particular types of people. So little was left to chance that even the toys each child alter was allowed were part of the plan. This color training continued until adulthood, with additional associations added as I became older. Being dressed in particular colors helped me to know who I was at any given moment, right through to the end of therapy!

As much as possible, the color-coding was also linked to the seven primary chakra chi energy centers of eastern traditions. Their traditional meanings were given twists to make the associations fit each alter's color training. Colors were tempered by their shades—lighter shades (those with white added) tended to involve sensitive feelings, while darker shades (those with black added) tended to have only the angry, violent or power-seeking types of feelings, if they had any at all.

The first step in my color-coded training was to create the initial dissociative splits needed to form the foundation for my entire system of alters. The very first intentional splits were created through the use of trauma at the time of my birth. My birth cries were choked off by abusers shaking me violently while I heard my first words repeated loudly and angrily: "Don't cry! Stop crying! Be quiet!" This was followed immediately with very tight and brutal swathing, accompanied by the loud command, "Keep still! Don't move! Stay still!" These words had no meaning for me at that point, but thereafter they became important trigger phrases, used to develop these alters and to lock in crucial programming to obey, keep still, and keep silent.

Testing was initiated shortly after my birth to determine my natural, inborn aptitudes and interests. It continued through my infancy and toddler years. Many separate, color-based training paths were developed and "installed" over time, each built layer upon layer. Each color path was linked to a skill set, forging emotional and/or spiritual beliefs and control mechanisms or programs that created base belief systems.

Throughout my infancy and toddlerhood, trauma was used mainly to reinforce such commands as "Don't cry", "Be quiet", "Don't tell", "Don't move", "Be still", "Do as you're told", and "Obey", and to institute parameters for the alters' reality. An alter who "came out" when it wasn't his or her time, or who acted or spoke inappropriately, would be punished. Appropriate behavior was rewarded with praise and what appeared to be loving, encouraging treatment. Inappropriate behavior was met with pain and the withdrawal of love and affection. Alters who were supposed to be disconnected from people, such as the "mercenary soldiers" of the black path, had basic needs met if they behaved appropriately, and were given pain or deprivation for misbehavior.

By the time I was about six months old, splits, testing and training had already built a substructure of experiences, beliefs, attitudes, and behaviors in my earliest alters. The training then began to include more and more color links, progressively tying each color to sounds, then words, shapes, symbols, etc. These were linked to alter-specific feelings and meanings to produce specific and predictable results in alters' behaviors, responses, and actions. For example, by toddler age, when I was placed on a man's lap, my first red path (sexual) alter would do a lap dance, coyly and suggestively wiggling and giggling "just so".

From age six months to two years, my training focused on installing basic commands and triggers in the initial alters. Certain programs, such as Obey, Don't Tell, Be Loyal, or Internal Security/Alarms were created at the beginning and reinforced frequently as I grew. Later, my handlers would call forth these alters by using the trigger phrases or inducing the feeling states I had experienced the day of the initial split. Alters were each given "life experiences" to increasingly lock in their separate, distinctive understanding and experience of reality. Lights, colors, clothes and accessories, words, phrases, touch, smell, drugs, and quite specific color-coding were all used methodically. This enabled my handler and trainers to create and develop each alter's individual belief system and value structure, systematically shaping his or her conceptions and understanding of "how the world works", "the rules of life", and almost everything he or she thought, felt, said, or did.

For example, in order to familiarize red path alters with sexual treatment, feelings and behaviors, everything had a sexual aspect: the way I was (they were) touched, spoken to, held, and dressed all involved lots of stroking and sexual touching; sexy music was played in the background; and lots of light-hearted play and laughter was mixed in, so it was all just fun. When there would be pain, it was usually accompanied by soothing words, sounds and gentle touch, assuring me this was all for my own good and was preparing me for life. Hence, my young red path alters' understanding of love and relationships was woven into a complex, twisted sexuality. They learned a confused sense of play mixed with resignation, based on their understanding that some parts of life hurt and you just had to endure smilingly.

Until late in therapy, base alters took and held parts of my life. Experiences were therefore often fragmented at the time they occurred. Since only one alter could be "out" for an event, one or more of these base alters would siphon off the feelings, emotional states, and/or pain that went with whatever was experienced without truly being out in the body. Each alter's piece of the memory would have to be accessed and addressed before the whole experience could be considered reclaimed and healed. Yet, "I," the person who handled everyday life at home and in the world, was not aware that alternate identities held pieces of my life. Because it seemed natural to me for life to be broken into chunks, with missing pieces here and there, lost time went unnoticed. Since continuity was unknown, there was no sense of discontinuity. Nor was I aware that a dissociated way of life had been established and my brain's way of coping with difficulties was "wired in", to simply create another alter!

During the toddler period, training began to create in me different foundational understandings of reality, with specific color-coded patterns for the role and character development of each alter and each path. As each base alter had enough time "out" in the body, their reality steadily began to solidify. Dissociative barriers limited their awareness to only their own pieces of my overall life. Each alter had his or her own unique way of being, and, by the time I was two years old, each had a distinct identity, with basic color-coded identifications and associations. His or her feelings, thoughts, behaviors, actions and beliefs had been linked to color-specific situations, places, sounds, words, phrases, gestures, shapes, and symbols.

I was two years old when my trainers first used a special wooden chair with attached straps and helmet. It could rock, buck, rotate, and administer electric shocks. My trainers always told me it was a "magic gateway chair" that allowed me to "ride the rainbow" to faraway and strange realms. At first, the vibration and electrical stimulation of the chair, along with drugs and a fan blowing wind at me, would make me feel as if I were floating and actually moving through space. They gave the chair different purposes for different alters by naming different destinations, and then using props, sets, lighting and sounds or music to create specific moods and associations, specific foundational realities. The chair's bucking and spinning created internal tornados through little pulses and zaps. These added to the whole "wild-weather" feeling. When I "rode the rainbow" on this chair, lighting and special effects made me feel as if I were traveling. Later I was "repaired" harshly and punished by the same chair. Some of the final events which locked down my "inside people" and inner world happened in the chair.

Also at two, my handlers created a structured "internal world" to house alters when they were not actively "out" in the body. These alters always had the symbols and props required to ensure they remained programmed and controllable over the long-term. All of this was established and added to over time, using staged settings which were replicated in the inner world, to make the inner landscape, buildings, and items appear real and tangible to its inhabitants. Playful dress-up activities incorporated well-known nursery rhymes, songs, storybooks, TV, and movies. Every time I saw or heard these things in my daily life, outside of the formal training, my alters' beliefs would be subconsciously solidified.

My inner world was a luscious green magical fairy tale world, with hills, valleys, and a river. An ever-present murmur of sound was at first labeled "the whispering leaves;" later, I would refer to it as my internal soundtrack. This soundtrack consisted of words, phrases, songs, rhymes, and chants, such as "Be a good girl", "Do what you're told", and "Skip to my Lou my darling", all of which formed the instructional backdrop of my life. A core system placed in the center of the inner world served as a root or anchor, guidance system and overseer system all in one. This was a "Tree of Life", with branches for the general color-coded paths, and colored leaves for holding their specific memory and training links. Training thereafter was linked and built upon this tree.

The rest of the inner world was easily installed. Some of it was done outdoors, some in staged settings. "Weather phenomena" got into the inner world the same way everything else did, simply by my being told they were there, and being shown special effects. Like all children this age I naturally believed whatever I was told. Tornadoes, dustballs and whirlwinds were made with fans blowing wind at and around me when I was in the magic chair. At first I was taught to "control" them, then later to "be" them.

Rainbows were created in the air around and under me in the chair, apparently by means of light shining through sprays of water. I was told that the rainbows were multi-colored magic paths to other worlds. The end where the chair was located was fixed. The other end was "moveable," and so it could be "set" to the chosen destination. These other worlds were at first staged externally, then became sections of my inner world. Because the rainbows contained all colors, they could be used to call forth all the alters the colors represented simultaneously. Strobe or flashing lights were used for this later.

"Natural" phenomena and mind control images were coordinated with color coding. Green was grass, trees and whispering leaves. Blue was water, the sky, air, and wind, "the power and voice" of the whispering leaves and tornados. Yellow was the sun, a pot of gold at the end of the rainbow, pixie dust, a golden cup, and a "magic golden ball" of my externalized "dangerous true power". Brown was dirt, trees, "brownies and dwarves", dust-balls and whirlwinds that whisked things away out of sight. White was fluffy pillows and clouds, angels, and "heaven", the home of the gods and goddesses (who were simulated by actors). Grey was fog, smoke, confusion and illusion. Black was being alone, dark, silent, cold, scary, dirty, tough, mean and nasty.

Colors also defined the paths that were structured along the branches of my "tree of life." I came to call the nine branches "color paths", because each had its own particular color of leaf. These nine colors—red, green, yellow, white, pink, purple, multi-colored, brown, and orange—were everywhere as I toddled about outdoors in the autumn, so leaves on branches were easy foundational reference points to plant inside my mind. Once these foundational realities were solidly established, each of the foundational alters was assigned his or her own branch and leaf to keep track of his or her specific training.

The nine branches of the tree were assigned a combination of attributes that best enhanced each color's training path. These were the "virtues," based on actual virtues, such as kindness, obedience, loyalty, honesty, strength, wisdom, purity, cleanliness, order, truth, and justice. Each, however, was given its own twisted meaning. Some, like loyalty and obedience, were trained into all paths. Nearly all alters were taught to be "good", but the meaning of that term was tailored to their training path.

The nine foundational virtues alters were assigned their own branches and given a leaf of their color to keep with them at all times. With so many color paths, branches and leaves, my training was broader, more varied—and more conflicting—than most people's would be.

The virtues were developed through fun play with props and costumes with accessories, which were later used to control all of my alters. For example, a black purse or belt ensured that aspects of security training were part of the scenario, gold jewellery meant a degree of authority for the alter wearing it, and silver items created a spiritual connection. Metals and gemstones further defined complex role parameters. Each color-coded branch of training was linked with particular items, obstacles, warnings, links and guideposts for alters, most of which were given internal representations. An eyeball in a glass ball was the famous All-Seeing Eye, always watching and recording me. Brown dustballs and whirlwinds ("magical dwarves and brownies in disguise") came to "whisk things away" when a secret appeared in danger of being exposed, while a "wise" blue tornado whirled "safe words" into my mind as distractions. A golden cup, originally held to "open a channeling state," became an alter that was an open channel. All these things were produced in the external world and reproduced in the inner world.

For my red path alters, the virtues were initially developed by me being Little Red Riding Hood. The "good little girl in red" was in danger and had to watch out for the big bad wolf. She protected herself by being clever and coy while pretending everything was fine and normal. Playtime was a fun game, naked, with my handler Puffy being all scary and mean. "I'm the big bad wolf—keep me happy or I'll eat you," he said, his words accompanied by sexualized gestures and actions. He stroked and rubbed me. There was lots of bouncing, tickling, poking, laughs, and hugs. All my alter had to do to be safe was lick, kiss, wiggle and rub in the ways that made the wolf growl or purr with pleasure. Then she knew for sure she was a good girl. She would be the winner of the game too!

The red path alters' sex-focused virtue of "good little girl" was expanded over the years to include "good little hostess" and "proper little lady", along a path leading to madam-like responsibilities. The alters' experiences were designed to establish a comfort zone pattern of sex and sexual interactions as a necessary part of life. I had clients to satisfy. The skilled use of words, phrases, actions, body language and emotional response patterns was built in so that the clients' sexual experience was encouraged and enhanced. These alters only felt power and security when playing out familiar sexual roles.

My pink path alters were princesses or fairies. They were naïve and innocent, believing they were "in charge, powerful and entitled to be treated royally", as evidenced by much bowing and apparent subservience by Puffy and his servants and my trainers (who these alters thought were "private tutors.") Pink alters held fairy tale "all is good" beliefs and knew only good, happy feelings—that is, unless they didn't get their way and had a temper tantrum, whereupon all of their privileges were removed until "they" were able to "behave like proper ladies." They went to fabulous high-class parties; they were pampered, carried, "swished and flown about"; they knew daydreaming, lightheartedness, and the magical satisfaction of their wants and desires. Similar to red path trainings, as I grew, pink alters were taught the skills required of "ladies of high-standing"—how to dress, walk, talk, organize parties, be a hostess, etc.

Conversely, my dark blue and black path alters were tough soldiers (and a mean witch). They had to be forceful, calculating, manipulative, nasty, hurtful, uncaring. They must "not let anything stop (them)". Like a vicious, cruel version of normal boyish roughhousing, play for them involved much violence: sneaking up on and scaring people, tackling, kicking, hitting, nasty words, insults and putdowns. Their experiences established, for them only, a comfort-zone pattern of following orders and "thinking on their feet", with "doing a good job", anger, aggressiveness, violence and destructiveness as the only ways to feel powerful.

The white path was my main communication and word path. These alters learned to live in an outsider, observer point of view. Interpreting words, gestures and body language, they made note of people's needs. When I was about age two, a "cloud" alter was split off to "see, feel and be inside the clouds", far away from my body and unaffected by the cares of the harsh world. Not long after, a "bird's eye view overseer" was created to watch everything from an out-of-body perspective that saw "the bigger picture." Over time, through various alters, the entire white path learned to "hear the voice of the gods", "channel", "be an open vessel", and "let the visions guide." My handlers attached tiny speakers to my ears when I was drugged and used externally created film and holographic projections until just thinking of the "voice of the gods" in my mind would produce these visions without external aids.

While all of this was being established, each alter continued to receive experiential training. When my body was two-and a-half years old, my red and pink path alters' training had me in "an elite group" with other girls and boys. We were together in a class called "manners training" at an official local government residence, where we were taught "how to behave appropriately" in high society." We learned etiquette and manners, including such "necessary skills" as how to do lap dances. I learned to ballroom dance with my face provocatively buried in my partner's crotch in a way not clearly evident to any but him. We were also taught how to French kiss. Puffy was an important part of the manners training and "reward" dinner parties, at which we children were treated as pets. Men were partnered with girls, and boys with ladies. Dressed in grown up-gowns and tuxedos, we participated in fabulous dinners followed by ballroom dancing. These events included some big fat military leaders (whom I also knew in other settings along with Puffy) as well as members of the "circle of 12+1," the group with whom Puffy performed rituals.

As part of my training, names and other words that could identify characteristics of, or otherwise implicate my trainers, handlers or clients received special treatment. To protect against disclosure, every such memory was automatically shunted away to a secret place in my mind that was only known to the trainers and handlers. Eventually, entire special "code access only" storage areas were created in my inner world. Toward that end, from initial creation, all known alters were taught to not notice or be aware of (and seemingly not remember) such details. This was easily accomplished with simple, reality-denying statements such as "Don't be silly, that's not true, no-one like that (or named that) was here. You made it all up, stop lying". This invalidated and denied the alters' truth while creating and enforcing whatever false reality was needed. When that was insufficient, a hard slap across the face or some other quick, painful or shocking action would usually ensure that "what is forgotten remains forgotten".

If the security of the programming was breached, there were internal alarms. They were linked to the foundational leaf color of orange. The alarms involved pattern and word recognition, as well as the reporting and recording of information and experiences, both internally and externally. From the earliest lessons, orange connected the controller, storyteller and reporter alters to key trigger phrases like "Get the story right", "Don't miss anything", "Note every detail", and, "They're always watching". As usual, symbolic messages applied to what I said or did. Orange programs, like the first sign of the fall season, warned "the fall is coming," which was indicated that I was "nearing a fall", should "watch my step" or "be careful". Such warnings created terror in me, inducing a state of ever-present hyper-alertness over what would happen if I made a mistake.

This requirement of accuracy and attention to detail was also part of the white "word path" training. By the time the body was five, a little "scribe" or "scholar in training" alter had learned to make point-form lists for military leaders at their planning meetings. This was done initially through pictures, and then with words. (They believed the silencing programs were infallible at this point and found me entertaining in this role.) At first, the scribe kept track of who said what and what decisions were made. This progressed to detailed note-taking, followed by speech writing. By age ten I had been programmed with alters who believed themselves to be an oracle and a preacher, who, by channeling the words of the gods, roused and rallied the crowds. The message attached in my belief system was "People will suffer in these times of great change". By that time, a huge, previously installed inner world library held "ancient books and scrolls" that were the records of all "I" had listed, noted, read and learned. To this day, I still experience a scrolling marquee across the front of my brain, with my every thought plus the words I am hearing printed out in text.

Around the body's age of six, the integrity of each (known) alter's programming was subjected to tests of skill acquisition. My red path sexual alters were left completely alone with clients from start to finish, which included taking their money. Although they believed the test to be for their sexual skills and overall value, it was really a test of my trustworthiness: Would I talk/tell secrets, or try to run or escape? My dark blue and black path "soldier" alters were tested for their ability to be cold, calculating and cruel as needed, and to follow orders no matter what. The killing and dissection of a kitten was proof of the black soldier alter being able to "stomach the job", and a test proving "family loyalty" forced the dark blue alter to choose between letting my little brother get hurt and letting our pet rabbit suffer and die. These double-bind situations left me with crippling, soul-deadening shame, guilt, powerlessness and helplessness.

After the tests had confirmed satisfactory programming integrity, the inner world was sealed, trapping the foundational virtues alters inside with their programmed realities. These sealed-in alters would stay stuck at an age and stage of development that believed in fairy tales and magic, unable to distinguish between fact and fantasy. They were also completely unable to distinguish the inner world from the outer, despite living in both worlds, due to the internal dissociative barriers that the seals created. They were left with only their personal belief systems, personality traits and skills, and the safe, acceptable memories of their portions of my life. (This remained the status quo until "I" discovered the existence of the alters and inner world at the age of thirty-one.) Re-activation coding was incorporated so that my trainers would be able to open the seal at a later time and make necessary additions and other changes to my inner world. These codes consisted of the words, symbols, and actions to which alters had been trained to respond with certain previously installed instructions. It was not enough for me to simply remember the codes; a person outside myself had to say the words, show me the symbols, and make the correct actions (after I told them what to say and do) in order for the instructions to work.

In October, 1966, just after I entered first grade, the seal was solidly in place for all alters. At that point, the main focus of my training shifted to role responsibility and the steady acquisition of knowledge and skill. My red alters began to be used in a series of pornographic and snuff films (films involving actual or staged murders) with Satanic ritual themes, created in conjunction with actual local Satanic cults and pedophile groups. These alters, like all alters used in such films, believed the experiences to be completely real. One alter was proud to be the bride of Satan. I was subjected to increasingly nasty, painful, sickening aspects of my various training paths. My alters were taught to distract themselves when it was awful or yucky by counting or chanting, repeating a word or phrase silently, squeezing something tightly, or "getting lost in the music."

Another area of training occurred between the ages of five and ten, when Puffy took me to "military" planning sessions. I call them "Out of Time Rallies" because I was told they took place "outside of time" and the only way to get to them was by way of the "magic gateway chair". This was where the white scribe alter was developed and trained, taking notes for the fat old military leaders while also serving as a sexual entertainment tool for their orgies. These military men seem to have included sex in most things they did. At these sessions, I learned details of the "great leader's plans" and the intended role for my white path of "rallying the people", which greatly added to my underlying terror.

Puffy sometimes joined these men on a huge, glamorous off-shore yacht that was used for child sex slave trafficking. Here, when I was little, pink and/or red alters were passed around for lap dances and other sexual abuses, made to dance and otherwise entertain while being treated like little princesses. Here, my young dark blue and black soldier alters were sometimes forced to "do battle" with other young "boys" in soldier training, while the men placed bets to see which of us "had what it takes to succeed." As I grew older, pink and red alters were also groomed here for high society roles such as hostess and respected lady.

At some point, it became part of one red alter's job to help break down other child victims who were my age or younger, and then train them to be sex slaves. This use of me continued until I was twelve.

Often, I was taken to the yacht by my grandfather when he delivered newly acquired trainees. These were usually missing or unregistered children of all races and ages, who had been transported from other places in North America and were being readied for shipping and sale in other countries. I remember being in the boat with these children when grandpa was handing them over, helping them climb the ladder up the side of the yacht. Sometimes I would already be on the yacht, standing beside Puffy, who was awaiting grandpa's shipment. All the men in their dark blue military uniforms with their fancy insignia were standing in two-sided formal greeting rows beside and across. Grandpa (in the same uniform) would salute as he handed over the latest shipment. The ceremony included the formal military words of report, delivery, and handing over of authority. I even saluted back. I wore a formal gown to indicate that the children were being handed over to me for training. At the time, such pomp and ceremony made me believe this was legitimate and above-board, and made the other children (who were drugged, starved, beaten, confused and terrified) believe it too. This gave me clear authority over them as they were led, dragged or pushed through to their quarters and assigned bunks.

From ages nine to twelve, I was taught to take my place on "the stage of life," which not only existed in the real world of pre-teen peer pressure and media influence, but in my inner world as well. Staged and scripted scenarios, sometimes presented on the stage of a small theater, were instantly credible and completely believable to my now numerous alters. As my interest in popular fashions, teen idols, and hit parade music naturally grew, these things became powerful tools in the shaping of my alters. Many new storage and trigger mechanisms had to be created in my inner world now: clothes, purses, high-heeled shoes, make-up, and other feminine accessories for the red and pink alters; promotion-declaring insignias and more powerful weapons (such as a rifle) for the dark blue and black alters' cache. There was also much more. For proper program cohesion and function, each alter and each path had to have their own inner world stuff.

By about age ten, file rooms housing file cabinets had been established in my inner world. The cabinets were filled with folders of training and programming experiences. A fastidious grey file-keeper alter was created to keep the existence of the entire collection hidden, and also to hide the other alters' knowledge and skills from each other. This alter was able to order and reference files but not to understand what was in them.

From the start of my training, various self-destruct, booby-trap, and time-bomb programs were implanted, which I call "fail-safes". They became more detailed, involved and tailored to me and my alters, as time went by. My instructions were to never tell, to keep silent, to whisk knowledge or memories away, to keep the pieces separate, or to go crazy. Later, I was programmed to destroy my own credibility, sabotage myself, attempt suicide, or engage in addictions in order to cope or belong. The same instructions were imparted to the internal systems that reported infractions so that punishments or repairs could be done. These were the programs that made me crash or become flooded with unbearable feelings, that locked away certain memories, or that made a memory or programmed belief impossible to escape from. Like a spider-web, they were linked, woven together to intersect, support, and back each other up. This was done by repeating such phrases as "too much trouble," over and over. The same instructions were woven into many different trainings, so that a particular trigger phrase could set a cascade of programs into effect. The effects of the programs were designed to spiral, and to operate as a paradox. Thus, for instance, affirmations that work well with the average person might actually trigger increased problems for me. It was confusing for me and those assisting in my recovery that I would be getting worse when I was using methods that should make me get better.

One significant type of fail-safe programming involved “trip wires” which could trigger actual physical responses, such as an arm jerking or pain in the chest that felt like a heart attack. These began early. They were part of two separate aspects of my training: “flying” (for fairies, witch, and genie alters—done in a harness of the sort used in circus/gymnastics training), and being a “puppet on a string” (mostly to prove I was not in control of my own body). I was encased in wires and/or string (hidden from sight so the alters didn’t know they were there) in a way that led me to believe my trainers controlled my movements from a distance through their magical powers. Over time, these wires were used to form a network of control points throughout my body, each of which had specific fail-safe body responses linked to it. Telling a secret produced the feeling of being choked. Ignoring an internal warning about a fall could make a knee buckle to make me actually fall, thereby enforcing the validity of the warning.

At small gatherings in the places I was abused in (most often on the yacht), my alters’ abilities would be demonstrated to potential buyers. I would display some of the trainings specific to what the buyers wanted. However, certain things that I did in the “real world,” such as organizing a protest march in a hospital for sick children, alerted my handler and trainers to the fact that my programming was deteriorating. This forced them to speed up plans for their last uses of me before my shutdown. They had me demonstrate my skills one final time.

I found myself in a large cage, on a stage, in a large military mess tent. Using their names and trigger phrases, Puffy called my alters out, over a loudspeaker. He would reach through the bars to give me a quick zap under my feet, or a flick of a whip or a poke with a stick—whatever helped trigger the behavior he wanted demonstrated. While I displayed various “slave trainings,” buyers—rows of seated men in dark blue military dress uniforms—were told they could order children who would be trained for their purposes, as well as those already trained. My handler “switched” me rapidly from alter to alter, accompanied by different music and lighting for different alters, all to show the various trainings--from submissive sex slave to tough soldier to haughty princess to coy, provocative little girl to dominatrix to oracle to elf chanting programming rhymes and more. The men hooted. They jeered, laughed and catcalled. This enraged my rebel and activist alters, most of whom were shocked and confused to find themselves in a cage, even more so to be triggered in such a way.

I was in pain, drugged more heavily than ever by a new combination of drugs, and unbearably confused by the rapid succession of switches to alters with conflicting trainings, beliefs and feelings. Something in my mind snapped. I started screaming and swearing at the men from inside my cage while spitting, rattling and slamming myself against the bars. I was punished for this incident with a number of new splits, including an alter that lived in a cage.

Later, when I was eleven years old, I committed more major acts of rebellion, including putting poison in the ceremonial drink at a ritual. This, along with increasingly poor test results, proved that I was irrevocably uncontrollable. “Adjustments and fine-tuning” suddenly and drastically changed. Now, my lessons—drugged, brutally painful and confusing nightmares come to life—changed to what I call “shutdown” and “discard” programming. The plan was to severely and permanently cripple or destroy my credibility, my ability to function coherently and consistently, my sanity, and, if necessary, my physical body.

White alters, who had previously been taught that they were the “voice and words of the gods” (the scholar/writer, oracle, and preacher) were now “outcast from the realm of the gods.” Tests were deliberately engineered for them to fail. These were followed by terrifying and humiliating belittlement about their inability to fulfill their responsibility to the gods and the people. They were accused of putting their loved ones and others in danger through their stupid, careless, selfish choices and actions. My perception and sensation were distorted by drugs, and I was exposed to initial shutdown scenarios through a combination of hypnosis, holographic projections, movies and scenarios acted out by actors on a stage. I saw masses of people rioting and being injured or killed because of my failures. Strapped in the now familiar magic gateway chair, my white alters "rode the rainbow" to "the realm of the gods". There, they were told by the "gods" (and shown, using holographic projections in smoke-filled air) that they were "no longer of value and had become too much trouble." They were cast out, tossed into a simulated hell and told that this was where they belonged. These experiences transferred into the inner world. One alter was left trapped in "purgatory", on the "outskirts of heaven", in smoky clouds of grey fog, hiding from the gods to avoid being sent back to hell.

My handlers used re-activation codes to open the seal. They individually called forth three of the original foundational virtues alters (red, green, and yellow). After receiving paralyzing drugs, these alters were "encased" in "webs" by my handlers, who systematically carved my whole body with fine spider-web-like lines which they painted red and/or black. When the paint dried and shriveled, the lines looked and felt like burning traps that had constricted. Then these alters were "thrown into the (inner) tunnels" (by throwing them into actual tunnels) and "left to rot". Thereafter, they were only allowed immobilizing, excruciatingly painful, restricted roles. This effectively silenced them. There were more shutdown and discard events, designed separately for the alters of each color path.

From the age of twelve on, each color path was taught that their only avenue to feeling good or powerful was to be "bad". Being stupid, scary, tough, weak, crazy, a hippie, a rebel, a partier or dropout were now good, necessary, and desirable. Alters were trained to embrace "wild times" filled with sex, drugs, alcohol, criminal activities and/or weird, flaky practices.

In order to give my personality system a new structure, a combination of four alters were to be simultaneously present in my consciousness at all times, though only one could actually be out at any given time. This would ensure two things: that I would always appear normal (not multiple) to the world, and that only the appropriate skills and knowledge base would be accessible in any given situation. A young alter called Pat memorized patterns for who should be out in each situation, and conveyed them to a Controller alter. The controller alter flipped the right combination of switches to bring the correct alters to "just below the surface" where they could then take their turns out as the situation warranted. Songs and rhymes continued in my head as instructions to the alters who were out.

At fifteen, a "stage-of-life" was created for the alters who were allowed to take part in my real life from then on, and each stage-of-life alter was individually called forth and given a false "memory shell". Thereafter, if they ever told tales, shared secrets, or otherwise broke the silence, their initial statements would be either false or fragmented and confused. This would discredit any revelations of truth that might manage to surface. These memory shells provided a common but false background of life experiences that naturally progressed to my programmed lifestyle and beliefs—those of the shutdowns, outcasts, and later, disables and lockdowns—making everything feel, and appear to have been, the product of my choice or true nature. The memory shells were created by showing each alter bits and pieces of "memory" that had been photographed, filmed, or otherwise recorded on a "brain imaging screen", spliced together with new clips of staged scenes with characters alters were told were them.

Finally, when I was eighteen, my handlers stopped layering more programs into my failed system. A "brain wipe" was done to erase everything that had been installed, and my memories were "rebuilt" over a period of nine months. These events occurred in a mental health center where I believed I was attending therapy appointments with a psychiatrist. I lay drugged on a stretcher, watching a screen which displayed photographs and films which I was told belonged to each alter. All of my experiences that were known to the mind controllers were included to the degree necessary for each alter

> or group to believe it was real. All alters (even those who had previously been made to disappear) had to sign contracts agreeing to whatever they understood needed to be "locked away forever." They were all regressed to infancy, and the ones who were to live my life from that point on were "re-grown" to my current age with newly implanted false memories.
>
> In this regression part of programming that erased and rewrote alters' life experiences, my trainers told me about both the "false life" that was being erased and the new "real life" which was being installed, thus informing my file-keeper alter of which file to pull for whatever was to be done. In my healing, this helped distinguish what had actually happened to me from the fake life that had been created in installments over the years. Examples include "You were never or never did . . .," and "You did not receive . . . training," which really meant I was, and did, and had, and was now supposed to forget it forever.
>
> New alters were created to guard the hidden system, including a "rear guard" and a "captain." After sufficient time for my body to recover, the control mechanisms were drastically adjusted and the controller was given new instructions yet again. Then I was taken back to the mental health facility, where the "brain imaging screen" was used to update the "memory shells."
>
> After the final lock and seal was done I never encountered my programmers again, although they continued to have me watched and triggered by others when they felt it was needed. Calculated caution, along with terror of being locked up or trapped back in their control, has helped me get where I am now, integrated and able to write this paper. When watchers would visit me during the years of my recovery, I made sure to appear as dysfunctional as I had been programmed to be, and they would go away satisfied that the shutdown programming had worked.
>
> I believe that I am still watched and occasional attempts are made to trigger me. But I really am free to live my own life now, the life my heart and soul chose, not the one they designed for me. Patterns can crumble. I am proof.

Trish has recovered to the point of full integration of her parts, and you can read more of her remarkable story in *Ritual Abuse in the 21st Century* or hear it on her DVD set.

Jeannie Riseman, a social worker by profession, is a mind control survivor and a pioneer in our understanding of mind control and how it works. She is one of the founders and leaders of Survivorship, an online resource for ritual abuse and mind control survivors. The following article describes what she has discovered about how her personality system was set up by her abusers/handlers. It does not go into her personal experiences, but rather describes the structure and articulation of her system.

It may be helpful for therapists to note:

1. The geometric patterns in which the information is stored in her mind;
2. The filing of information about training memories;
3. The primary themes: death, sex, deceit, money, and cover-up (security);
4. The use of "temporary alters", personalities created by combining fragmentary parts (Trish also had this);
5. The inadequacy of our categories of dissociation to describe such a system, and the fact that one cannot ever assume that any survivor's experience of dissociation will fit into a preconceived pattern;
6. The innocuous words used for access codes;

7. The redundancy of the system, with information stored simultaneously in different fashions;
8. The presence of esoteric cult information;
9. The importance, once again, of the internal structure with regard to mind control programming.

A 1940s system of programming: Jeannie Riseman

I believe I was raised in an old-school "orthodox" Satanic family, of Scottish–English background. I was born in 1937, and thus the programming system used was developed before or during the Second World War. It is not based on multiplicity. I have never read or heard of any references to the kind of programming I have discovered inside myself. I want to document it for historical reasons, since I believe it has become pretty well obsolete.

I have five different systems of programming. Four may contain the same information, coded differently. The fifth contains historical information and the "control panel" for the other programs.

Programming for cult-controlled behavior

My four redundant programs are based on simple shapes: a sphere, a 3D star (like a starfish), a square with an X in it and a triangle on top (like a roof), and a web. The fifth program is an eye. I know most about the sphere, and will describe it in as much detail as I can.

At the center is a small sphere, with five lines leading to other small spheres, each with five lines leading to still others. This continues for many layers. Drawn in two dimensions, it looks like a string of neurons that have been chopped in half so that only one end branches. In three dimensions, the surface of the sphere looks like an orange studded with cloves.

Each of the small spheres is called a node. Each surface node can be traced back to the central sphere through the branching lines.

The first main line of branching nodes organizes information about death, the second about sexual activities, the third about deceit, the fourth about money, and the fifth about cover activities.

Thus, for example, tracing the death line: core–death–1. men; 2. women; 3. children; 4. animals; 5. plants. Starting at 4, for example: 1. dogs; 2. cats; 3. birds; 4. hoofed animals; 5. reptiles. It then branches into setting: home; ceremony; school; medical facility; other: then geographically pinpoints the area, then specifies the time frame.

In this way, any one surface node gives a set of instructions. Hypothetically, reading from the surface to the center: month/day/year/hour/location/setting/what/kill. Pulling something out of the air (I hope this is made up!): September/13/19xx/midnight/Chicago/basement/library/ceremony/goat/kill. The more layers (like an onion) between the core and the outer nodes, the more detailed information can be stored, accessed, and transmitted.

There are code words to signify that nodes are about to be accessed. Three or more nodes must be accessed at one time. Then there are code words to signify that the access is complete, seal the instructions, and order the action.

One can think of the groupings of nodes as coalitions that form temporary alters with the knowledge, skill, and will to perform a certain cult action. After the action is complete, the coalition dissolves, the nodes each disappear and five (I think) exact duplicates of the original nodes appear in their places. Looking at the outside of the sphere, there will be parts where the nodes are very dense, meaning that a certain cult-ordered action has been performed many times, and parts where the nodes are sparse, meaning that few or no cult-ordered actions of that type have been performed.

The sphere is divided into segments with lines, like longitude and latitude, with one original node to each segment. Thus each original node is uniquely identified by two numbers. These numbers are used to call forth the needed nodes (after the initial code words and before the closing code words). It would sound a little like a quarterback calling plays: "OK team? 17 46 11 69 22 99 hup hup hup!" and the players start the play.

The density of nodes also serves as a kind of cult resumé. With the proper cult code/command, the person can recite the number of nodes in each segment of the sphere, giving a totally accurate summary of cult actions performed, complete with dates and locations.

Access coding

The opening and closing code words (which I have not yet remembered) are socially acceptable, innocuous words, not unusual or bizarre enough to attract attention. Privacy is not needed to give directions. However, the opening and closing must 'fit', and there are different openings and closings for different combinations of nodes. The words must be pretty literate, they must have a certain rhythm, and the word combinations must be such that it would be highly unlikely that somebody could say them by mistake.

Often a word or concept is paired or echoed in the opening and closing phrases. Synonyms and antonyms are often used, as are puns, rhymes, or analogies, reminiscent of the sort of stuff you find in the Miller's Analogy Test or SATs.

(Relationships between ideas, puns, reversals, paradoxes, and jumping between systems of thought or ideologies are very common. Switching between math and language is common. Normally disparate things or ideas are connected in idiosyncratic ways. Up seamlessly becomes down, black becomes white, and reality is as elegantly complex as a Mobius strip. Language itself becomes a Mobius strip, floating between the Satanic and the cover world.)

The 3-D pentagram (starfish) works exactly the same way, with temporary coalitions of nodes, except that the numerical coding and the access codes are different. The starfish and sphere contain the same information, and after completion of the cult action, the nodes split on each surface. (If the sphere is accessed, the results appear on the surface of both the sphere and the star, and vice-versa.) This redundancy is built in; in case something happens to disturb one system, there is a back-up that is always kept up-to-date.

The house and web are, similarly, redundant systems. I can visualize the web in 3-D, like a crystal, with each node being a point of the crystal. I have not yet been able to see how nodes could fit into the house-like figure.

Number to letter or concept codes

Let's take a large rectangle, length and width segmented and numbered like axes on a graph, yielding a numerical grid with many cells. Then let's take the sphere, with its own numerical grid, flatten it, and make it transparent. Let's distort it, like silly putty, into a pre-determined shape, and place it over the rectangle. There are varying numbers of rectangle cells contained in the distorted sphere cells.

With sufficient distortion, up to twenty-six portions of rectangle cells can be in one distorted sphere cell. *Voilà*! Alphabet code. Knock out k, q, x, z and a few of the other rarer letters, and you get a simplified readable alphabet code with what looks like strange typos.

With less distortion, say only 1–9 rectangle cells to a distorted sphere cell, you could code to sequences of ideas. It would be pretty easy to identify a Bible passage this way, for example. Or identify a particular code from a master list. The intermediate step allows access to a large number of coding systems.

Back to the silly putty analogy. Just as silly putty can pick up newsprint, the distorted sphere could 'pick up' these coded instructions and 'remember' the message when returned to its undistorted state. This increases the flexibility of and usefulness of the original program.

Meta-programs

There are a number of programs which apply to all four of the behavioral programs equally.

One is based on the concept of the abacus and dictates cascading consequences for behaviors that the cult deems undesirable. There are two abaci: one for internal events, one for cult punishment or retribution.

Let's label the wires on the abacus A B C D E F and the beads on each wire 1 through 10. Wire A is the action the cult doesn't like. B is the first consequence. If bead A goes up, then Bead B-1 goes up, and A falls; i.e., the undesired action ceases. If bead A does not fall, then B-1 stays up and bead C-1 rises.

For example: A: I remember something I shouldn't: B-1: I immediately forget; C-l: I think I am crazy; and so on, all the way through F-l, which is suicide. Some of the undesired actions are: remembering, telling, cutting contact with the cult, disobeying or ignoring a cult order, acting bizarre and damaging the cover of social acceptability.

With these five contingencies and ten consequences apiece, there are fifty cells in the rectangle representing the abacus. This type of system is called grid programming. There are other meta-programs, some having to do with linguistic conventions.

The process program

The fifth program is represented by an eye. It contains theoretical information, operating instructions for the other programs, history, and theology. I suspect that not all members of the cult were taught all of this material, and that the amount taught depended on the role the person was destined for in adult life.

I have not figured out how the information is arranged, or how the mnemonic shape organized the information. These are some of the areas I know are covered:

1. Satanic liturgy, its meaning and history. Theology: 'why' the liturgy is a certain way. The purpose and uses of each ritual.
2. History and organization of the cult. What each role is, how it is filled, rules of succession. Blood lines and recruitment. How the cult changed over time. Old-world sources of traditions. Rules governing differentiation and consolidation of functions to meet changing circumstances.

3. Sociology and economics. How the cult related to other cults. Agreements to cooperate in certain areas. Information specific to certain economic considerations, including arranged marriages and economic ventures, both legal and illicit. Money management.
4. Teaching and programming. How to teach the material contained in the other four systems. Nonviolent ways of teaching. Trance induction, amnesia induction. Child development. Comparative programming (analysis of methods used by other cults.) Curriculum development.
5. Methods to change the basic programming. For example, amnesia is a benefit during a member's early years and for low-ranking members. In order to control and coordinate cult life and ordinary life, amnesia is detrimental. The top leaders need to be able to be conscious of both lives simultaneously to run the cult smoothly. When leadership is passed on, many changes of this sort are made in the basic programmed instructions.

Models of the mind

This type of programming can be conceptualized as based on multiplicity, with extreme fragmentation of the core self. One alter is built from fragments and allowed to act as the host. Other alters are short-lived and only called into being for certain cult functions. Rather than having names, they have numbers, and they lie sleeping or dormant until the fragments are assembled.

These shapes can also be thought of as mnemonic devices to organize and simplify recall of cult information. They are not very difficult to memorize, certainly no harder than the multiplication tables. (It strikes me as interesting that elementary schools usually teach a maximum of five main subjects, with a few little extras like gym and art thrown in. Developmentally, small children could simultaneously be taught five programming systems, which would get more elaborate each year to match the child's intellectual development.)

These 'systems' can also be seen as post-hypnotic suggestions, organized in such a way that they are easy to activate. The abacus model of a series of increasingly self-destructive post-hypnotic suggestions is helpful in explaining escalation of symptoms as memories surface.

Clinically speaking, people today are generally dichotomized as multiple/not-multiple, or seen along a spectrum of dissociation. Either/or, with a clear demarcation, or a lot/a little, with gradations. What seems to 'fit' for me is a model that describes information as being stored simultaneously in different fashions.

In my office, I have much of the same information stored on the computer, on back-up disks, on paper in a file cabinet, and in a jumbled pile on the floor. There is a lot of redundancy. I could add audio or video tapes if I wanted, or CDs, and increase the number of modalities of storage. I could also memorize the whole mess, or make petroglyphs. The storage systems would be different, but the information would be the same.

I can also order this information in many different ways. By name, by icon, by size, by date, by author, by title, by the Dewey Decimal system, chronologically. The information can be translated into hundreds of languages. It can be cross-referenced. Given this plethora of systems, which is the 'real' system of organization?

So, with the cult information stored in my mind, I believe that all the storage systems are equally 'real.' I can simultaneously be multiple, non-multiple, a 'sleeping multiple', a potential multiple, etc. I 'am' whatever system I am using at that particular moment.

In a more classic sense, I can simultaneously store information both consciously and unconsciously. I can store it in action and in words. My body 'knows' how to ride a bike, and does not forget when I manage to put that knowledge into words to teach another person. Yet most of the time it is not in my conscious thought as I go about my daily life. There are many things that are 'really' conscious when I think about them, and 'really' unconscious when I don't, and 'really' pre-conscious when they are floating around in the back of my mind or on the tip of my tongue. I don't have to choose: the labels can be sequentially or simultaneously accurate.

Closing thoughts

No concrete elements of this programming system rely upon concepts developed after WW II, like video games or computers. The general principles, though, are certainly very familiar to computer programmers and can be found in post-WW II mind-control programming.

I have a hunch that one reason so few middle aged or elderly people are remembering, even given the social climate these days, is that this kind of programming is simpler than post-World War II programming. It has fewer moving parts to break down, so to speak. I also believe that it is dying out as a system, or is confined only to a few groups.

A couple of years ago I shared what I had discovered about my system by e-mail with a younger MC survivor. I was told that this looked like an early version of something called "blizzard programming" which was and is still used in Europe. In blizzard programming, the alters come together like snowflakes to form a temporary alter to do the task, then melt apart. The theory is that since the alter that did the job no longer exists, it is impossible for any part of the system to remember what was done or what happened. Total safety for the programmers and handlers.

As you can see, the personality systems created by non-ritual groups (military, political, organized crime) are quite different from one another. We have to learn from our clients about what kind of system they have.

CHAPTER SEVEN

A reversed Kabbalah trainer speaks

Stella Katz

WARNING

Much of the content of this article is really gruesome, so be prepared to be traumatized. I especially do not recommend that survivors read this, as it is likely to set off all kinds of conditioned reactions. For therapists, however, it provides incomparable information.

Editor's note

Survivor Stella Katz, who endured ritual abuse in her own childhood, worked as a cult trainer of little children, but was brave enough to leave the group and undo her own programming. This remarkable article gives us information which cannot be retrieved just from survivors' memories of their own abuse, and that you will need to be able to recognize in your clients, so it is important for therapists to study it. Remember that Katz was required to do what she describes here, and misled into believing that it was not the abuse that we, and now she, understand it to be.

Below is a list of important points for therapists to note, as indicators of these experiences are commonly found among ritual abuse survivors but have not been well understood to this point.

1. The experiences of babyhood and infancy, which are often very difficult for a survivor to recall because of the way baby memories are stored in the brain;
2. The deliberate disruption of the mother–child bond to prevent attachment;
3. The early splits and the Gatekeeper alter;

4. The categories or blocks of alters and how they are developed;
5. The way the initial (baby) alters are created, and how other similar alters are deliberately split off from them;
6. The "playful" way the system structure is built;
7. Garbage kids, doubles and reactivators;
8. Touch triggers;
9. The use of spinning;
10. Deliberate preparation of the body for sexual penetration;
11. First, second and third circles for recruitment;
12. The details of each major ceremony;
13. The creation and training of demon and animal alters;
14. The use of the Kabbalah;
15. Booby traps;
16. Rewards used in training;
17. The helmet and other technology;
18. Occult belief systems;
19. The context in which ritual abusers operate, so that we can understand their beliefs and the reasons for their acts.

The Kabbalah and its inversion

I want to make it very clear that not all Kabbalists are Satanists and not all Satanists train their children using the Reversed Kabbalah.

The true ancient Kabbalah is a beautiful thing that takes a lifetime of training to integrate and apply in one's life. It is an ancient body of spiritual wisdom. The Kabbalah has always been meant to be applied as a tool to bring clarity, understanding, and freedom to lives, rather than being merely "learnt." It teaches its followers how to navigate through life without pain, suffering, and chaos.

Kabbalah is a comprehensive philosophy that cannot be explained in a few short lines. Essentially, it teaches the person to integrate the spiritual with the physical in everyday existence. In Kabbalah, the person follows certain paths, using numerical codes and meanings in the shape of the Hebrew alphabet, to decipher the secret teachings of the Torah. As it does with all belief systems that it perverts, the Satanic version—or, perhaps, as it should be described, the "Satanic inversion"—bastardizes the practice of regular Kabbalah in a variety of ways. In the Satanic Kabbalah, the codes are still used, but they are taught using torture instead of meditation, and the Torah is twisted to make God the bad guy. To train children, Satanic Kabbalah trainers, in opposition to the practices of the regular Kabbalah, work from the feet up, rather than from the head down, their Supreme Being is Lucifer, and their angels are black angels.

I am a former trainer in a Kabbalah-based Satanic cult. I worked for them from 1971 to 1991. At the time I did this, I suffered from dissociative identity disorder. All parts of me except the host believed that they were doing the right thing in abusing children in this manner. I am now integrated, and have been filled with remorse at what those parts of me did. But I am also aware that I became DID in childhood from the same things being done to me.

The philosophy of the group for whom I worked was: "God is not the only one who can give. You do not beg Lucifer, you demand. You do not grovel on your knees, you stand face to face. Power is the most important thing in the universe. Without power you are nothing. Life is for taking, not giving."

I discovered that the only thing I did was grovel—that I had no freedom at all, no matter how high in the ranks I got. Everything I did and said was what I was told to do and say. Eventually, I became sick of hiding in the shadows. I was sick of death. I was sick of watching children being tortured and told that this was love. I knew that there had to be more to life than "kill or be killed."

I am writing this because I want others to know that freedom is a wonderful thing, and it is attainable. I want to help therapists who seem to be fumbling in the dark, sometimes doing more harm than good, not because they want to, but because they do not have correct information. I want to give back some of what I've taken. And most of all, I want these groups to know that no matter how much torture they put us through, and no matter how many chains they put on our bodies, they cannot imprison our souls.

Occult belief systems

Just as there are many different Christian groups, there are a variety of different occult belief systems. Not all are the abusive or dark kind that creates mind control victims. Magik is the occult practice of using a universal force or demons to get what you want in life. Death magik and sex magik are the two most powerful kinds, because they use the life force of a human for power. The magik used by witches or druids is basically positive thinking, drawing on the force of many minds and the universal force. Satanists do the same, but in the negative, using demons for power.

In both Luciferian and Satanist belief your spirit does not belong to yourself or to God, it belongs to the devil. In strict Satanism, the entire goal is to prove that Satan is more powerful than God. Since strictly Satanic groups use a system that is based on reversal of mainline Western religions, certain Satanic rituals reverse traditional Catholic ceremonies and symbols: the cross is turned upside down; the Holy Water is actual blood; instead of marriage to God, marriage to Satan; the Black Mass in place of the regular mass. Satanic abusers often meet in churches, and try to use as many sacred objects stolen from the church as possible in their ceremonies. This is to dishonor God.

Luciferians are more gentle than strict Satanists. They represent more of a religion than a revenge. Luciferians call upon Lucifer with the same respect as conventionally religious people give God. They focus less on attempting to prove God wrong and more on honoring Lucifer, and following his ways. More of the multigenerational groups are Luciferians. Like born-again Christians, who dedicate their lives and souls to their God, Luciferians do the same, but to Lucifer.

Some groups also incorporate ancient deities into their practices. Many of the ancient Pagan religions seem to share a number of lesser gods—a pantheon, as the ancient Greeks called it. Marduk, for example, was a lesser dark god, or a keeper of the gates to the underworld. In some religions he is a dark angel. Setians follow an older belief. Set dates back to the Egyptians.

Set is the God of Darkness. The belief is that Set is just another God among many, the God of the Underworld, the God of Death, the Mightiest of all Gods. Some men in the modern military follow Setian beliefs. Black Santerians, usually Hispanic, use black magik, demon magik, or Saints of the underworld. Black Santerians, like Satanists, practice a reversal of a positive religion.

When working with survivors, it is important to realize that the religious beliefs of the cult-involved alters are real. Trying to change them is just like telling a Catholic that everything they have ever known is nonsense. The magical aspect of the religion is also a very important part of the belief system and must be dealt with. However, the spiritual or religious basis of the group is only one aspect of how the dark religions influence their participants. The other is mind control, which is based on abuse and deception.

Rationale for deliberately creating dissociative disorders in children

From what we had been able to establish through reviewing old writings, it is obvious that the splitting of children had been done for many generations in certain of these religions to release greater and lesser demons through children. In the early days, when an alter emerged, it was seen as a certain demon by its behavior, and the group would call it by that demon's name. After a while the group could use the demon's name to purposely call it forth. However, when a demon came forth without permission—as most ended up doing—the child was usually subjected to exorcism by the church. Children that could not be exorcised would be put in an insane asylum. Eventually, as the dark cults developed a greater understanding of the process and consequences of splitting children, their activities and systems they created became much more sophisticated.

We (by which I mean the training group for which I worked) purposely split children because when a child splits on its own, without any guidance, the alters that are created are unlikely to become productive members of the group, and cannot be controlled. We knew that a child who had to bear all the pain and torture to which we subjected it would die unless it had parts to absorb the trauma. It was also important that the children whom we trained have a personality acceptable to the outside world, that could go to school and play with outside children without giving up the secrets.

Hierarchy of Satanic and Luciferian groups: first, second and third circles

The *First Circle* of the group in which I was raised consists of group members born of the First Circle or the higher echelon of the Second Circle. They are trained from birth in the ways described in this chapter.

The *Second Circle* consists of people not necessarily born into the group, but brought in at a very early age, usually before one year of age. For example, a child of a Third Circle member or a child recruited by a babysitter or neighbor. They also receive this training, though it may not start quite as early.

The *Third Circle* consists of people who have come in as teenagers or adults. If these people have children under the age of two, or very intelligent children up to age four, the children become Second Circle; children who are older remain Third Circle. They will become full-time breeders, prostitutes, or "gofers". They are never allowed to see all the intricacies of a ritual; they are kept in the back rows. Their bodies will form the outer circle but their backs will be turned, or they will be on the outside of the building. They might be told they are important because they must signal if someone comes around.

People who come into a group as teens or adults may not have dissociative disorders: after the age of nine you cannot split a person.[1]

Reversed Kabbalah training: goals, schedule, methods, and technologies

Reversed Kabbalah training is a carefully developed process, with elaborate goals, a schedule, methods and technologies.

Props and technologies used for deception and training

A variety of props and technologies help trainers in these groups to create the illusions and affects that help them accomplish their goals. These include:

1. "*Stage magic*" is used to create non-human alters and simulate various false scenarios, including murders. This includes bags of blood, tape-recorded cries, costumes, stage scenery, projectors, and so forth.
2. *Drugs*: Different drugs are used for different purposes, such as to aid suggestibility, to restrain the child, or to whip him or her up into fury. Injections of sulfur or Naltrexone will create pain all over (a punishment program). Curare will paralyze the body.
3. *Spinners*: see the detailed discussion of this in the section on infancy.
4. *Red light flashing machine*: One way of making an alter believe illusions is through the use of a machine that flashes red light on closed eyelids. The perpetrators believe that when the eyelids are closed, light seen through them confuses the mind so that the person is unable to tell the difference between reality and fantasy. You can tell such people that what they are seeing is a spaceship and that they have been abducted by aliens. You can tell them that they have had surgery, and that a device for keeping track of them is hidden under their scalp. With the correct use of this machine, the groups believe that victims will believe everything they have been told. For example, someone on whom a small cut or scar of some kind is done at the same time will believe that the eye of Lucifer has been placed in their stomachs to keep an eye on them, and they will believe it forever.
5. *Helmet*: The helmet is a piece of equipment used for imaginary brain surgery. Small electrodes in the helmet send small shocks to different areas of the head. This can be used as a form of punishment or to convince people they have had brain surgery. In punishment, these individuals are given a real scenario about something they have actually done (such as talk to an outsider), or an imaginary act, like killing a loved one or pet. Each time they deny it they are shocked. The shocks get progressively more severe as they continue to deny until eventually they admit to what they have done. The trainer will get them to repeat that confession numerous times, while recording their words. They will often then

be put on the light machine, and while the light flashes they hear themselves repeating whatever hideous crime they have committed in their own voices. At the end of the session they will believe they have committed the crime.

6. *Sensory deprivation room*: The deprivation room is a small soundproof and lightproof box. Sometimes it is lowered into a hole in the ground that is about two feet wide by three and a half feet high. The box has oxygen as well as stereo speakers. This is used for many different kinds of training, as well as for punishment. In training, the child will remain in the hole for hours at a time, with a tape repeating the same instructions over and over in a monotone. The child will then be removed, allowed to use the toilet, fed, and returned to the box.

   When the box is used for punishment, no sound at all is piped in, or there will be a high-pitched, screaming sound; the child must remain there for a day or better, never allowed to use a bathroom and given no food or water. This box is also used for tone training. Different tones will be piped in along with a specific word or instruction. This will teach the child how to read sound signals.

7. *Sound machine*: The sound machine is simply an audio machine, similar to the one that is used to test hearing. It is a sound-proof box with headphones that produce different sound frequencies. The child is strapped into the box, and the trainer, from a room outside the box, makes requests of the child. When the child does not comply, sounds are emitted. At first they are soft. Then they are louder and louder until the sound blows the eardrums, or almost does so. Survivors often have ear damage from this. The sound is initially used as a way to stop the "ignore reflex" in infants, at six weeks old. It continues to be used throughout the person's life as punishment for non-compliance or for talking to outsiders. All alters will be familiar with the sound used.

   The sound is often used as a booby trap, set to go off if the survivor does not comply with a return program or request. During training, the child is told she or he has so much time to comply; then a trap is created so that the child cannot comply even if she or he wants to. After a certain length of time, or after a certain date that has great significance, such as an anniversary or birthday, the trap goes off and the child is punished with the sound or a spin or an electric shock, or all of the above and more. Eventually the system learns the dates and what happens as a result of non-compliance, so the internal system automatically sets off the sound or other internal punishments.

8. *Electronic board*: This is a bed equipped with electrodes. It is used in teaching touch triggers. The child is hooked up to the electrodes. A small shock is administered that hurts but does not injure. It is accompanied by a repeated word or instruction. This lesson takes several months to complete. It will allow the child to be triggered by a simple touch, either given by an internal touch-trained alter or another person. Each time a person/alter touches one of these triggers with a finger in a specific manner, the child will feel the shock and will bring forward a specific lesson or specific alter who will carry out the lesson.

   The electronic board is used for many different things. Without a doubt it is the most effective kind of training. The touch must be done in a specific manner in order for the lesson to be triggered. This is so an outsider cannot set off the triggers accidentally.

9. *Virtual reality glasses*: These are a relatively new thing in modern day training. Since their invention, it has made illusion a great deal easier, especially for impersonation of therapists. (See Chapter Thirteen, "Boundaries and bonding: the therapeutic relationship".)

Role of the trainer

Most trainers of babies are young females, in their teens and twenties. The child has the same trainer for years—from birth to when they are "given," at age nine. During training, the baby is looked after by the trainer for two or three days at a time. The child is with the trainer for three days, home for three days, back and forth for months, until the mother is trained to maintain what the trainer started. If a trainer starts to bond with a child, she has to hand the child on to someone else. The trainer monitors the child in the home and at cult functions. The trainer is in an emotionless alter when she hurts and splits the baby, unless she is not multiple and is simply sadistic. Some trainers will smack the baby's face; some do not, because of the danger of brain damage. Some stab the baby's feet with extra sharp forks or fondue skewers. Exactly what is done when depends on the child's development.

The following describes what we did to the children we were training, and of course, what was done to me. It follows a chronological schedule.

At home during the first year of life

The child's primary guardian for the cult, who is often the mother but may be the father, another relative, or another cult person, must keep up the trainer's training at home. The trainers or programmers teach the parents what to do. The parents have to take notes, and are punished if the notes are not good enough. If the mother is too soft and cannot be trained to harm her child, the child is left to a specialized infant trainer until the age of two, then passed on to a trainer for older ages.

The following happens at home:

1. The child is neglected. The mother is not allowed to feed the baby consistently. Breastfeeding is not allowed.
2. The parent uses a home version of a spinner, like a baby weigh-scale, which spins the infant fast. It is a very smooth ride, and is not fast enough to cause shaken baby syndrome. Head and neck must be stabilized. This is used for compliance when the child will not stop crying on command, for example, or if the toddler will not stop touching something.
3. Colors made out of felt with little felt pockets are always kept in the crib. The mother has colored dolls made of hard foam (previously of cardboard) for the representations of the alters, and teaches the baby to put them in the pockets.
4. The parent shows the baby the magikal symbols in a game, and tells the baby what they are.
5. The parent uses touch triggers, especially Silence, taught with the trigger on the head and a hand over the baby's mouth.
6. The guardian calls out particular alters and speaks to them strictly in their own magikal languages. In the first few months, they are called out by using their name together with their unique touch.
7. The child is hurt without marking it. Its hand might be put over radiant heat, or it might be burned internally with a tiny probe.
8. The child is sexually abused with fingers and dildos.

If the mother cannot do these things because she has bonded with the child, the child is given to someone else, or the mother has to take it to the trainers.

Preparation for sexual abuse

Starting at about two months, fingers are inserted in the child's orifices to widen the openings. This is done very carefully, so as not to tear. Little boys' penises are stroked pleasurably until they are erect. Little girls are also stroked, with jellies used as lubricants. By eighteen months the vagina or anus should be wide enough to accommodate a full-sized penis. The trainer shows the guardian how to do this. Once the fingers are no longer large enough, a kit is used with a series of size-graded, smooth wooden phalluses. It comes in a leather binder like a musical instrument case.

The trainer is trained to think that by stretching the orifice in this way, she is protecting the child from physical harm and intense pain when the child is later raped. The trainer teaches this to the guardian. If the child comes back to the trainer bruised, the guardian is punished and chastised; the kit is taken from her and the trainer continues the job.

Bonding to group rather than family

Very little takes place in the first two weeks of life except the bonding with the parent and trainer.

The baby's bond with the mother and the trainer is established in the first two weeks. Then later the one with the mother is broken. The child is passed around among the group members, so that a bond to the group will replace the maternal bond. The child is taken out of the home, and cannot see the mother except at a distance. It is teased by being shown the mother at a distance, and told, "If she loved you, she'd be with you." The baby is made excited — "Mommy's coming!" Then Mommy comes and walks right past. The baby is kept away from the home for the length of time it takes to break the bond with mother. The child never really trusts the mother again. The trainer will always be the rescuer. A cult child rarely "makes strange" (that is, rejects strangers and clings to the mother) because it is accustomed to strangers and does not have an exclusive bond with its mother. It is passed from pillar to post. It is used to being in crowds, and will go to anybody.

Deliberate neglect

The infant up to six weeks of age is allowed to cry endlessly while its basic needs are ignored. Once the baby stops crying, its needs are attended to. During this time the child remains in the home unless it the trainer feels that the mother cannot or will not do what is needed for the child. The trainer monitors this child daily to see how it is responding. As the baby becomes accustomed to neglect, it learns to calm down in minutes instead of hours. It is monitored during this process. A child of that age can be abandoned for up to two days, depending on its size. Doctors give their opinions on what the child can tolerate without physical damage.

The not-yet-split child is spoken to in only one language, the mother tongue. The child's name is used constantly. The main teaching between six weeks and six months continues to be that its physical and emotional needs are to be ignored. The child is still severely neglected, left to cry for hours. It is not fed on any specific schedule. It may be fed twice within an hour, and then left for twelve hours with nothing to eat or drink. It is left cold and without any diaper change, and it is not held or touched at all. Its hands and feet are bound so that it cannot comfort itself by sucking a thumb. During the first six months the baby is taught to dissociate its own pains and needs.

Milk and blood

The baby is rarely breast fed, as this creates too much of a bond with the mother. However, the mother's milk is used, as babies prefer the taste and will accept it more readily. The milk is mixed with small amounts of the mother's blood so the child gets used to the tinny taste. (Contrary to popular belief, the child is not fed whole bottles of pure blood, as that would make the child ill and unwilling to accept what you are trying to feed it.)

Fear training

Loud noises are often used to frighten the child, in order to see how long it takes to settle down. Frightening sound is used from Day 1 to get the child past the ignore reflex. The trainer wants the child to be frightened. The child is forced to listen to such a sound over and over, now and at a later date, to teach it to be on guard and fearful all the time. The child is given no chance to calm down; there is no real comfort, ever.

Color training

From birth the child's crib is surrounded by color. There is a black crib sheet on the bottom, a red panel on the right, green on the left, blue at the head, yellow at the feet, and white on top. Faces in black and white as well as magikal symbols are stuck to the color sheets.

Dissociative testing and application of results

The faster the child settles when it has been frightened, the easier training will be. This also means the less the child will have to endure in the way of pain. This begins the weeding out process, through which the children are chosen to lead or to serve. Just because a child is the first born of a member of the inner circle does not automatically make it High Priest/Priestess material. If the child tends to be placid it is trained easily, but from the perspective of the trainer it would be unlikely that such a child will be trained for the highest positions. The child with the strongest will is considered to be more intelligent. It was Lucifer's strong will that won him the position of Prince of the Underworld, instead of one as God's flunky. Therefore, the strong-willed child, who is harder to train at first, will be seen as a true child of Lucifer. Lucifer does not want anyone who is willing to bow and scrape. Remember, in Satanic prayer, the petitioner demands, s/he does not beg and plead. She or he stands on her or his feet, and does not bend the knees and grovel. Therefore, it is the children that are the hardest to break that will be the rulers of the underworld, and the right hand of Satan.

The first splits

Between six weeks and six months of age, the trainer begins to deliberately split the child.

The Firstborn

The physical child that is born is the "birth child". The "Firstborn", who is the same gender as the person, is "born", or created, from the first split, and will serve as guardian or caregiver to the birth child. It will forever know what is actually going on in the person's life, while being shielded from the pain that could kill the person. All other parts come from the Firstborn.

The Gatekeeper

The next part to be split off will be raised as Gatekeeper. He or she will always be present at the birth of a new alter. He keeps the records for the developing system and the order of the splits. The Gatekeeper is never hurt after his birth. He holds everything back, and observes everything that happens. He will raise the new parts if they seem worthy or junk them if they are not. The Gatekeeper is told that he is in control of the mind and all emotions. The only alters not recorded by the Gatekeeper are accidental splits which can become "floaters" or remain stagnant.

These two first split alters are the same age as the body. They grow up with the body because they do not receive further trauma.

The thirteen blocks of alters

The group that follows will be intended to remain children or animals or demons. The trainer builds on the infant's initial dissociative training and attempts to split the child further. The foundation created by the first splitting of alters usually consists of thirteen "blocks" (alters of particular job categories who will be the sources of further alters of those categories). It might also be based on a number divisible by three. The triggers to bring the alters "out" in the body mostly correspond to the chakras, as well as to stations of the Kabbalah.

The types of alters are: spirit, language, guards, touch, magik, sacrifice, pain, sex, demons, animals, re-activators, doubles, and garbage kids. The "locations" of these alters (the blocks), and the triggers to bring these alters out in the body mostly correspond to the chakras, as well as to stations of the Kabbalah, as follows:

1. Spirit—head, third eye (middle of forehead)
2. Language—throat, thyroid chakra
3. Guards—palm of right hand

4. Touch—palm of left hand
5. Magik—heart chakra
6. Sacrifice—solar plexus chakra
7. Pain—sacral chakra
8. Sex—genitals (sex chakra)
9. Demons—right knee
10. Animals—left knee
11. Re-activators—right foot
12. Doubles—left foot
13. Garbage bin—on the behind, tailbone area

How the child is split

To create the splits, the child is bombarded by constant annoying sounds, its feet are jabbed with needles, and small electrodes are placed in every orifice. Small shocks are administered, not to burn the child, but just to make it hurt as much as possible. The trainer watches carefully. It is believed that the moment of a split occurs when the child's cry becomes a hooting sound, similar to that of an infant going through drug withdrawal. Its eyes roll back in its head, and it becomes suddenly limp and silent.

At this point the trainer has a window of fifteen seconds to one minute in which to name the new child alter, and assign it a color and a magikal symbol. The trainer wears the color with a symbol in black on the trainer's shoulder or chest. The trainer then picks up the child and wraps it in blankets of the color it will be assigned. The child receives care for approximately one hour, in a very loving way. It is fed, bathed, changed and caressed. It is continuously spoken to in its own language, which may or may not be the mother tongue, using its new given name. Then it is rocked back to sleep. Once the child is asleep, it is returned to its mother until the next time it is brought to its trainer, which usually occurs two to three days later. This whole process can take a few hours or several days, depending on the child.

The task of the first few alters is to guard the "firstborn," who will not be not used again after the foundation is built. All of the other alters are told that without that firstborn, they would die. The firstborn is considered to be the body and soul; the others are "renting space".

Record keeping

All the child's data is recorded in a small book the trainer keeps. Data will include what was done, the exact amount of time it took to make the split, and what worked best to achieve the splits. The names of the child alters are recorded, along with the order of birth, the sex of the alter, what color and symbol was assigned, and what language they speak. A record is also kept of the type of "physical body" the alters have been assigned—human, animal or demon.

The Kabbalah on the body

An internal Kabbalah is installed when alters are split off. In most cases, binding and hurting parts of the body is sufficient for this. A cardboard cutout of a body, called "Kabbalah," is held where the baby can see it. Somebody points to a spot on the cutout while the baby is probed or stabbed at that spot on its body. The cutout is marked into layers. Initially, there are just three layers—from genitals down, genitals to throat, and head. As the child gets older the body is more differentiated.

The foundation of the first year

This includes:

- Original alters (blocks) with colors, names, touch triggers to bring them out, and locations in the body and in a cube.
- Compliance training.
- Spin training.
- Silence training.
- Training not to taste.
- Basic touch triggers to bring out alters, and to enforce compliance, silence, and not tasting.
- Some other triggers, e.g., sounds and smells.

Building the system structure

By the age of six months, the child should have at minimum 18–20 alters with distinct names and colors. This number is needed so that there will be some to fall back on if some of the splits are found to be untrainable.

Now, the visual form building begins. The child (each foundational alter) is placed in a box-like playpen with cloths of certain colors on the walls. Each wall cloth contains small pockets. Small cardboard figures are used for what appears to be a game. The figures are male or female, animal or demon. Each wears the color that corresponds to the name given. The names are printed on the chest and the magikal symbol is drawn on the abdomen. As the trainer shows each figure to the baby, the figure is called by name in the language that corresponds to the name. The little figure dances happily into its slot on the wall. "This is you. Where do *you* live?" The trainer talks with the child about the other foundational alters and where they all live. Each foundational alter learns the location of all the other foundational alters. Later, each foundational alter will learn where all those who split off from it live.

After a few tries, the trainer gives the child the figure, and helps guide the figure into the slot. The children are very responsive to this activity. It is fun for them, because it involves little figures, bright colors and a great deal of attention from the trainer. No torture is used in this game. This also makes it less likely that the person will remember it in therapy, as therapists tend to pursue discussion of traumatic events. Also, non-traumatic events from infancy are not available to explicit memory.

It takes a couple of months to build a base. The trainer tries to have it done by the time the child is 6–10 months of age. Internal structures are fixed by the trainer and the specific group. They are purposefully designed so that the trainers can easily retrain alters over time. Some groups use structures consisting of geometric shapes; others use trees; others use the Kabbalah. Each structure has a department head and workers. Colors and symbols categorize different groups of alters. Only the department heads know what the structure is based on. This is important for therapists to understand, as it is easier to go through the system once you know the physical look of the structure or structures.

In a reactive multiple (one not deliberately trained) any internal structure that exists is created spontaneously by the person for the safety of the system. It is not based on a hierarchy for the purpose of later use and is usually not elaborate. Most common are houses or boxes that serve no purpose other than as places for alters to live while inside.

Insertion of touch triggers

Once the child has a few of these little characters placed properly every time, the trainer can begin to inset basic touch triggers. Touch triggers are very important for the control of the children. A lot are put in during the first year. To the outside world, most of the program touch triggers look like loving touches.

The child is made accustomed to specific places on the body being made to feel more meaningful, being stroked, etc. These spots, at the acupressure points, are mapped out on the body as the child starts to learn her programs. Touch triggers are often taught through a combination of games and pain. Each program has a trigger in each sensory modality. A baby really begins to find parts of its body; those parts are intentionally hurt. Triggers are repeated over and over while the child is in a semi-conscious state from drugs and punishment. The machine that flashes red light on the child's closed eyelids is used here.

Silence touch

The first touch trigger to be inset is the Silence touch. If a child has had a slip of the tongue in public, the crown trigger, found at the crown of a child's head, is touched in a loving way by the parent or guardian. The child will fall silent. To create this lesson, the trainer gets the baby babbling any way s/he can. Then the trainer touches the child's crown and says "Shh." The touch is paired with putting a plant in the baby's mouth that makes its tongue swell, or with an electric shock. If the baby cries during training, the trainer repeats the touch and sound and covering of the mouth again using a louder voice. This is repeated until the baby figures out that it must be silent. It can take days, or only two or three tries. Another silence trigger is a little rub at the dip at the base of the back of the neck. An outside person observing the parent touch the child in this loving way would never know the child is being silenced through mind control.

The use of spinning

When a person is spun, he or she becomes ill and afraid, angry and thrilled: many different physical and emotional sensations are created. Spinning simply transfers these sensations to those alters best equipped to handle them, as alters tend to specialize in particular sensations. Thereafter, every time the individual remembers anything associated with that kind of abuse, they will be brought back to that original memory and have the sensation that they are spinning.

Compliance training

Spinning is meant initially as a form of compliance training. From the very beginning, the baby is taught compliance and obedience. The baby is spun in the small cot fitted with padding that resembles a baby weigh-scale that was mentioned earlier, on a spinning chair, or attached to a device like an electric potter's wheel. The baby cannot see out. It is prodded until it cries. The crying baby is placed on its side so that it does not choke when it vomits, and secured using rolled towels or foam blocks. It is spun slowly to begin with, increasing the speed as it goes. An annoying noise is made at the same time. When the child is exhausted from crying and has been sick several times, it stops crying. At that point the spinning is stopped. This process is repeated many times, using each alter. It usually takes several weeks before each alter has had its turn. This will be done over the next two years every time the child is disobedient.

Spinning teaches these children that they have no control over their own bodies. The child's head can flop, though their wrists and ankles are tied. Spinning makes the children physically ill, sick to their stomachs, but no help is given; they are spun until the screaming stops. The technique works better when children are not fighting. Small amounts of drugs are administered to calm children who fight a lot so they give up faster.

Sometimes mistakes are made in the spin training. These children can get "shaken baby syndrome" and can be killed.

Distributing lessons

After the child reaches the age of two, commercially available spinning chairs are used. A child is spun until it vomits while particular words are repeated over and over on tape such as *Die* or *Kill* or *Silence*. This is done to teach the child's alters to come forward quickly to take parts of the child's pain, fear, and nausea, or different illnesses. It teaches the alters to share the lesson being taught. Some lessons, such as suicide or homicide, must be held by more than one alter in order for the target behavior to take place, so that one alter cannot kill the entire system, or one alter cannot kill another member of the group. Because of this kind of security measure, the majority of people only injure themselves rather than die in their suicide attempts.

Basic lessons for each child

1. Total compliance.
2. Loyalty to the group.
3. Silence.
4. Do your job to the best of your ability.
5. Replenish the group through breeding or recruitment.

The first three lessons are taught when the child is under two years old.

Training not to taste

At ten to twelve months there is training to shut off the ability to taste. This is done (using little sniffs of ammonia) so that the child will not be able to taste sacrifices. The trigger is a little circular counterclockwise motion with a finger on the tip of the nose.

Satanic baptism

The ritual of Satanic baptism occurs when the child is between twelve and eighteen months of age. The child is starved and isolated for two to four days (depending on the size of the child). Following this, the child is bathed and anointed with fragrant oils. During the ceremony, a man in a devil suit rapes the infant, vaginally for a girl and anally for a boy. This is considered a great honor for the child.

Because the child has not given its body freely in its sexual encounters with group members (it is taken), it is still considered a virgin. When children give their bodies "freely" at age nine, they are seen as losing their virginity. All parts of all group members (other than their host alters) truly believe that this is the right thing to do.

Before baptism the child is not involved in worship services. After baptism, it is involved in all of them. It is "free to participate" in orgies. In these situations, adult participants can do anything they want to the child, unless an older child tries to protect it by taking it as its partner for the whole night. The women lick the infant's genitals and give it their breasts to suck. Usually the child is eased down on to an erect penis, and the rapist pulls out when he feels resistance. Those who have sex with upper echelon babies are all upper echelon, and know how to do this. (In orgies, everyone has sex with only their own level.)

Preparations for future indoctrinations and trainings

At around three years of age, preparation begins for the Satanic rebirth ritual. Starting at age three, the child is taken out to cemeteries, and put inside open graves or mausoleums. Dirt is thrown at the child, and it is told that it is dead. The child is taught that it is born of Beast rather than of man, that man is nothing and that Beast is everything. The child is also taught beginning magik spells.

Building foundational blocks of alters

The trainer concentrates on building one specific block of alters at a time, filling it fully. Each original block alter is split through torture,[2] usually administered to the part of the body where this alter resides. The system is built like a giant jigsaw puzzle.

After the blocks of alters are created (see below), they are trained using a combination of torture and pleasure for ceremonial and teaching purposes. Alters from different blocks work together to make events happen. Cutting the person's arms, for instance, involves somebody from Pain, somebody from Touch, somebody from Emotion, and the Gatekeeper.

Guard block

The Guard block is usually built first, when the baby is between the ages of twelve and eighteen months. The original Guard alter is tortured by burning or electroshock to the right hand to create a group of new Guard alters, in a number that is divisible by three (usually six). The new Guard alters are placed on the right hand in the reversed Kabbalah, and their representations are placed on the walls on the right and left sides of the child's box or crib, three in each color block. Their names will all be similar. Guards, usually male, are sometimes just labeled with numbers attached to the same name ("Michael#1, Michael#2", etc., M1 and M2 for short). Even though the child is too young to understand, these alters are told they are very important because it is their job to protect the body.

When these alters are older, they are trained using strength. Physical fights and beatings are used. The alters must not stop fighting their opponent no matter how badly they are hurt. Aggression is rewarded. A show of fear is punished.

This group's psychic ability is also trained. They are trained to feel others' emotions and to psychically see at long distances. The CIA started using this tactic several decades ago, calling it "remote viewing".

Language block

The next block, the language block,[3] is made between eighteen months and three years, depending on the child's linguistic facility. The language alter is split through torture to the throat, usually using plants that cause the tongue and throat to swell. Two alters are created for each language that the child will learn. They are placed in the thyroid chakra, and in the box they are placed on the wall behind the head. The language blocks alters are always given names in their mother tongues.

The block used for language is not treated as badly as other blocks that are created in this age bracket. Language is mostly taught with age dependent rewards. Younger children (1–3) are rewarded with affection and candy, older children (5–10) are rewarded with money, and young teens are rewarded with money and sex and favors such as having more honored parts in rituals or holiday celebrations. This block is trained like anyone else learning a new language. The faster an alter picks up the language, the more he or she is rewarded. Alters who are lazy or cannot learn the language are punished or replaced with ones who can learn quickly.

Touch block

The touch block is begun at eighteen months through dislocating the fingers of the left hand or making cuts in the creases between the fingers. Usually about fifteen Touch alters are created. The head Touch alter is in charge of being aware of exactly what it takes to harm someone else with a minimum of damage, and how to do such things as putting a nail through a hand or slicing a sacrifice with great care. Below this is an alter who is in charge of cutting or any kind of mutilation of the person's own body. The alters below that are in charge of setting off the triggers for harming their own body (by thought, not by actual touch). Some of this group are in charge of setting off self-harm programs in other people through those people's triggers. Names are similar to those of guards.

Demon and animal blocks

It is important to remember that not all of what is seen or believed by members of these groups is real. For instance, you know there are alters who believe they are cats or dogs or snakes or demons, although you also know they cannot possibly be real. But to the alter they are as real as you or I. Tricks, technology, and "stage magic" are used to deceive the child. These are regarded as legitimate parts of magik.

The Demon and Animal blocks are built before the age of five years from harm to both knees. Doctors are involved as consultants. The child, drugged with hallucinogens, is in an altered state.

For demon and animal alter creation, puppets are used to simulate demons. The puppets are operated from above, and some are spiked. Some are hand puppets; others are on strings and fly in the air. They come at the child, who then gets a shock. The child is strapped down and wired. Probes are used to create pain. Some demons appear to fly right through and inside the child. This is done in an empty room with white walls on which the demon pictures can be projected. Finally, the "Granddaddy of All Demons," a man or teenage boy in a costume, rapes the child. Little girls are raped anally as well as vaginally. Little boys are raped anally while the penis is manipulated, and then they are raped orally. The rapist is using a drug that maintains his erection.

This takes place during a long session, lasting through the night. More than one perpetrator is present. One operates the puppets. The trainer does all the vocalizations—making demon sounds, and giving each demon a name and a job. As many demons and animals are made as possible, from two to twelve.

After the rape, while still heavily drugged, the child is decorated with theatrical makeup and corresponding tail and horns. When he or she "comes around", the child alter is told that it is a puppy, pussycat, or snake, or a demon, gargoyle, or devil. The alter may be a demon in the shape of an animal, or just an animal. The child is shown a small "mirror" that is painted with the image of an animal or a demon, and told this is him or her.

For example, the "cats" are kept in a dark room, until their eyes become accustomed to the darkness. Objects are coated with neon paint. The children are then told that cats can see in the dark. A black light is turned on, and the objects glow in the dark, making the children believe they can see in the dark like cats do. When the child has been shown it is a demon, an image of fire is projected on to a screen hidden behind a wall of smoke. The smoke has been created by dry black ice that has a red lamp shining on it. These children are told the fire will not burn them because they are from hell. In their drugged state, they are walked through what they perceive as fire. "Snake" children are bound with gauze and plastic wrap so they cannot move their arms or legs, then are placed on the ground and told to slither like a snake.

The purpose of the demon alters is to keep the child in line and in constant fear of being grabbed and harmed by a demon. They represent actual demons, just as idols may represent deities in the Hindu faith. A total of thirteen demons are wanted, including the original one, and six animals. The job of demons is to come up during rituals and during times of potential disloyalty. If the child is about to disclose something to an outsider, a demon will come up and scare him, so as to ensure compliance. The demons are set up in a hierarchy. They are given names of actual demons. Animal alters are used for purposes consonant with that animal's nature, such as a cat for going through the bushes at night. The large animals such as dogs are also used for sexual intercourse with real animals. The child usually gets to pick their own animal names.

None of the children who are programmed to believe they have animal or demon alters are beyond the age of five years. This appears to be the best age in which to create these kinds of illusions. The group will be very careful to maintain the age of these alters. Beyond that age they would tend to question, and the illusion would be broken. If you come across a cat or dog or snake or demon when working with a client, remember that it is not likely to be more than five years old.

Painholder block

Built through pain (cramps) in the lower abdomen, the Painholder block includes three or four alters who inflict pain on the child's own body: three to six who block pain, and a smaller group of no more than three who inflict pain on others. Only one of each type of pain holder is kept in the Painholder block; the rest are shared among other blocks. For example, some might be put in with Demons, some with Guards, some with Touch, and some with Animals.

Sex block

Sex block alters are created through sexual torture. Once the splits are made and the names and jobs are given, the pleasure can begin. The child is taught to masturbate, and the trainer, guardian, and other group members masturbate the child. The child is taken for entire weekends of nothing but sexual pleasures. While sucking breasts, it is taught to enjoy being masturbated.

The number of Sex block alters depends on what echelon the child belongs to. Higher echelons (children destined for higher roles, depending on how they tested in infancy) have fewer such alters than lower ones such as simple breeders.

Little nymphomaniacs are created for prostitution. These include masochists and necrophiliacs. Some breeders are trained to become sexualized at ovulation time. Some alters are designed specifically for sex magik. There are also sexual perpetrators, including necrophiliacs, who are usually male alters even when the body is female. The masochists are also usually male. There are male-bodied breeders, used for stud.

Masochist and perpetrator alters

The perpetrator and masochist alters are trained between five and seven years of age. First, the masochists are taught to hurt themselves. Every time they hurt themselves sexually they are rewarded with treats, candies and praise. A Pain alter is brought forth to share the outside body with the Masochist alter, so that the child is not feeling the pain s/he is inflicting on his or her own body. Each time the child escalates the level of self-harm, s/he is given a bigger reward. Once the child reaches a specific level, other children his or her age are brought in to do things to that child. The perpetrator child is rewarded for hurting the masochist child, while the masochist child is rewarded for enjoying the pain. Both children have pain-holder alters co-present with the sex alters. Those of the perpetrator child hold the empathic, vicarious pain.

At a certain level of tolerance and enjoyment, masochistic alters are brought forth to abuse themselves on the altar to show their abilities. This is done in an official ceremony. The alter is praised by the whole group. Then the Grand Master or person in charge of the service is allowed to hurt the child sexually while the child enjoys it. This is usually accomplished via the vicious anal rape and biting of the penis for a boy, anal and vaginal rape for a girl.

The child is given sexual stimulant drugs during the orgies, and the sexual perpetrator alters are deliberately brought out. They see people having intensely pleasurable sexual experiences while harming or being harmed. They are allowed to go around and feel anyone's bodily parts. Masochistic alters are also trained during orgies. They are given pain-killing drugs, almost to the point of nerve blocks, so that the masochist feels as little as is physically possible until the physical stimulation (pain) reaches a certain level of intensity. These alters learn to need pain in order to achieve release, and experience it as pleasure.

Training to kill

The big ceremony for the perpetrator alter involves killing. The sexual perpetrator alters are also the killers. When these alters are first created some of them are put in the section with the Sacrifice alters. Prior to the ceremony, the alter has been taught not only to harm a masochistic child, but also to harm small animals, usually their own pets (such as kittens). They are allowed to have a pet for about two weeks, then have to kill it. Before killing, they have to sexually mutilate it. Ultimately, they are bonded for three to six months with a "disposable" child (an unregistered birth), whom they have to sexually mutilate and then kill.

Necrophiliac alters

The necrophiliac alters are taught with cadavers. A Sacrifice alter is brought out with them. They learn to slice a certain muscle in the male cadaver's abdomen, which can then be tugged to cause an erection. Then they mount the cadaver and have intercourse. The first time, the child has been sexually stimulated almost to orgasm before being put with the body. Oil of Wintergreen has been administered to the genitals, which then feel too hot, so the cold cadaver feels soothing. At age eleven or twelve, a necrophiliac alter is thrilled by intercourse with a cadaver; it is an honor. Earlier, they do not like it much because it is cold, but the child is praised a lot for this kind of performance, and by eleven or twelve vaginal secretions take the chill off for a girl.

Sacrificial block

The Sacrificial block of alters is created between five and seven years of age using torture to the solar plexus. Alters in this group are trained to do killing, cutting, and skilled dissection.

Alters of the Sacrificial block spend most of the time being tortured. They are put in a pit, starved, beaten, and taunted with little bits of food hanging down out of reach, having only rats or putrid things thrown in for them to eat. This makes them full of rage. However, the goal is for them to be trained to feel less. Rewards are given for showing little or no emotion. The more they can endure without emotion, the more they are rewarded. These are the alters who endure the worst kinds of torture. These alters will be put in small holes with rats, or in graves. These must kill their beloved pets or siblings.[4] By the "age of giving" (nine) they will already know how to skin and dismember an animal or fetus. No weakness will be tolerated in this block of alters. Any sacrificial block alter who shows one sign of compassion will be tortured for long periods of time, or "destroyed" (taken to the point of unconsciousness or temporary death, and never revived).

Re-activators, doubles, and garbage kids

Re-activators are alters created specifically to retrain a wayward alter who has forgotten his or her training or chooses not to do it. Doubles are simply "backup" alters, to be used while the original alter is being retrained. If the alter cannot be retrained, the double will stand in its place and do its job permanently, while the original alter is discarded. (Often if an alter "changes sides" in therapy, its double will appear to do the job it used to do.)

There is a dump—a garbage bin is a place in the mind, similar to a prison—for discarded or untrainable alters, called "garbage kids." Garbage kids are alters that would not comply in training, or could not learn quickly enough. The trainer either takes them to death point (via drugs or severe electric shock) and "kills" them (stops the heart briefly), or simply never calls them out again. The rest of the system may believe these alters are dead, or at least that they are not as good as the others and not worthy to be alive. Once in the dump, they never leave.

When trying to take apart any lesson, it is important to include any garbage alters (as well as doubles) who were present, or the lesson will simply be re-activated or regenerated.

Satanic rebirth ceremony

The alter that will head the inside world is created during the rebirthing ceremony. This takes place around the time the child is six. Children are prepared for the ceremony by learning chants and prayers. They are taught to crawl through a hole that has been cut in a piece of wood and fitted with a piece of tight flexible rubber. They are not told what they will crawl through for the ceremony. It will be the decomposing carcass of a cow, large goat, or sheep. These children are taught that they cannot enter the kingdom of darkness unless they are born of blood and beast. This is similar to, but a reversal of, the Christian belief that only those born of water and the holy spirit can enter the kingdom of heaven.

The child is drugged and placed naked inside the carcass. He or she is sewn into the body. Upon awakening the child becomes terrified and thrashes around. The hand of the deliverer is inserted and the child is brought through the opening in the animal. In the meantime, the child, used to splitting when frightened, has formed a new split. This child alter will usually be given a demonic name by the deliverer, who tells the alter that she or he is in charge of all the others. This new alter will control all alters of the cult side. The others will learn to fear and obey him or her.

If an already existing alter emerges during the rebirthing, it becomes the new leader. If that alter is strong enough to take the rebirthing without leaving the body, it is strong enough to lead the entire system, so it deserves the position.

Training from ages six to eight

Suicide training

Suicide is taught after the rebirth and is attached to Loyalty programming. Once children are old enough to understand the concept of death, they are told that if they are found out by anyone outside the group, they simply must die. This is why so many survivors who have never before attempted suicide begin these attempts once they get into therapy. This is also why so many kids in foster homes attempt to kill themselves or run away. For these people, suicide is not from "low self esteem," but because they have been told that the outside world is not as perfect as they are, so they must not allow themselves to be defiled by the filth of the outsiders. This viewpoint is similar to white supremacist beliefs. It is also important to remember that several alters have to be involved via a spin before an attempt will be successful (see the section on Spinning).

The group will only allow the system to successfully suicide if an "outsider" (such as a therapist) has been allowed to come too close to the core, or to tamper with a lesson that they should not have opened. The Kabbalah-trained alter will have many of these lessons throughout each important path. The system will also be allowed to die if the person, along with an outsider, reaches the angel at the end of a path, or if they tamper with the path. This is known as a booby trap. This will be discussed in the later section on walking the Kabbalah pathways.

Sexual training

During this time the child's sexual alters continue being taught how to sexually please adults, as well as themselves. The child is greatly rewarded for this by adults and other children, with praise, treats, and sexual pleasures.

Training regarding urine

Children are trained to hold urine for long periods of time, as it has been found that a full bladder actually aids in sexual arousal. Also, blood is mixed with urine, ashes, and wine for a Black Mass. The child whose urine is used is rewarded. During orgies, often a child will be asked to urinate on someone with that fetish, as a sexual stimulant.

Preparation for marriage to Satan

At age eight, the children begin preparation for when they will be given as brides and consorts of Satan. The head alter of the inside cult world will select the alter to become the bride. This alter is taught special prayers and chants in the chosen language, as well as spells in sex magik. Those children who are still physically too small to receive a full size penis comfortably will receive more physical preparation. Most of the ones who are not large enough are members of the second or third circle, who came in at an older age.

Marriage to Satan

Children are given as brides and consorts of Satan when they are nine years old. They take vows to Satan to love and obey Him, to give themselves to him freely in body and soul. This is the first time they "officially" lose their virginity. They are prepared physically by their trainer. They are bathed in special oils. They are taught prayers and chants. They are painted head to toe with colors signifying their rank and circle. The alter that will become a priestess or breeder is called forward. She is dressed in white and drugged with pain killers and hallucinogens. She is then walked to center circle where she takes part in a Black Mass. During the offertory part of the service the children are called forward and raped either by a member of the congregation dressed in a costume of Lucifer, or by the Grand Master or High priest, who uses a phallus with sharp spikes sticking out. After the service these children will become permanent parts of the circle.

Reaching "maturity"

Between eleven and thirteen, the female child will conceive for the first time. The firstborn male child is killed in a sacrificial manner during its first weeks of life. Simply put, this is what Lucifer demands. The belief is that the energy of the child's life force is given to those who encircle it.

At thirteen the child becomes an adult, and has something similar to the Jewish rite of passage for that age, the *Bar* or *Bat Mitzvah*. The cult version is celebrated with the child's first orgy, that is, the first one in which he or she freely participates as an adult. The adult gets to choose his or her partners instead of being taken by anyone, gets the say in what is done, and is given as much pleasure, without pain, as possible.

Beginning of Kabbalah training

After the sacrament of marriage to Satan, the children begin training on the Kabbalah. The Jewish Kabbalah, or "tree of life," is a structure like a tree, with pathways representing different aspects of sacred mysticism. It also represents the shape of the human body. The occult reversed Kabbalah groups use literal pathways and harm the literal body of the child. The Kabbalah, which was initially presented to the baby on his or her own body, is now represented in the training center both in that way and by pathways along which the child must walk. Most paths contain thirteen doors. Each path has a guardian at the opening and a black angel at the end. Doors on the first path always contain the first symbols of the major triggers of obedience, such as roses, sounds, smells, words, or music. The path is set up such that one door is the trigger, one door is a punishment, and one door is a pleasure. You may get two pleasures, one pain, and three triggers, or the other way around. The Trainer sets up the path according to a set law, but to the victim it appears to be completely random.

Twisted shapes of the alphabet as well as magikal symbols are used as a code of trail markers, and to bring forth specific lessons and alters. Different places in the body contain different lessons and codes. Only the Highest Jobs (high priest or priestess) will ever reach the head of the body, or be one with Lucifer.

Kabbalah levels and lessons

In each lesson of the Kabbalah, there is magik. Each spell accompanies a very important lesson. In therapy, it is important to remember the magik and the spell-work that go along with each path. Leaving this out would be the same as removing only part of a cancerous tumor. It would eventually grow back and spread throughout the entire system.

The bottom part of the body of the Kabbalah is for the Third and lower Second Circle. The mid section is for the higher Second and lower First Circle. The upper section, excluding the head, is for the rest of the First Circle.

The head is only for those who will become High Priest and Priestess, Grand Masters, or above. These children learn different lessons. They have to endure more physical and mental hardship and perfect their knowledge of secret languages. In the upper part of the Kabbalah, the child is taught a higher form of black magik and demon spell work, with the blackest magik, including the use of the Lords of Demons, being in the head region. The lower groups see this, but they are not taught how to do it.

It is here that the child will be broken, if possible. Only the strongest survive this level, and it is they who will become the leaders. The amount of abuse they must withstand is phenomenal. These children are the physically strongest and have the best coping skills. However, attaining this level has nothing to do with whether they are any more prepared or willing to do evil than anyone else. I was chosen, but I never liked doing evil. I often said no. The fact that I would stand up to them showed my strengths but also increased my chances for death.

Those who become members of the hierarchy are rarely so damaged that they cannot function in a very successful career. It is rare that they end up in therapy, unless they do so for other reasons. They also rarely have any visible marks on their bodies, and rarely ever physically injure themselves. They are, therefore, more likely to be invisible in society.

Most people will have finished their level of the Kabbalah by the time they are sixteen years old.

The Kabbalah pathways

People being trained in the Satanic Kabbalah travel down the paths of the Kabbalah. All paths consist of thirteen doors. Each door has a symbol and a letter on it. In each room there is another symbol. The lower paths have no magik; the higher paths have more, plus sacred languages. Without exception, every door divisible by three will contain torture of some kind. The last door (13) contains an angel who is a booby trap.

Example of a path

This is an example of a mid path, moving up from knees to waist, used in training a young teenager:

Room 1: The symbol is A for Alef, or the Hebrew A, which is a symbol that means return. In the room is a single yellow rose. The word "Return" is played over and over.

Room 2: B for Bet. In the room is a man with a candle. You enter the room, and the man burns your hand with the candle while a prayer of dedication is being recited.
Room 3: G (Gimel). Two people hold you down and rape you, using excessively large phalluses. You will recite the sex magik spell.
Room 4: Delet. You see red, yellow and white roses. The word "traitor" is recited.
Room 5: Heh. In blackness, the only thing heard is a series of tones. In each tone is a subliminal command. It could mean anything from "Be there Friday night" to "Kill John Doe".
Room 6: Vav is a room of terror. It is usually pitch black, and you stand in the middle while things poke you and prod you and burn you and shock you for no apparent reason at all.
Room 7: Zayin contains an altar with a fetus on it. You have to dissect it or you will be beaten.
Room 8: Khet contains a chair. It is a place of refuge and rest.
Room 9: Tet is an electrode placed in the mouth with the word "silence" repeated.
Room 10: Yod is a demon triangle, the meeting with the demon master, and a spell.
Room 11: Kaf. Color and tone, with word "comply."
Room 12: Lamed. The person is strapped down, raped, and beaten, while the words "love and respect" are played over and over.
Room 13: Mem. A spell is cast for power, and it is the setting for the Angel of the sunset.

Angels and booby traps

Each path has set booby traps that will be set off if the person tries to break the code. Not all doors contain booby traps that are designed to kill, and neither do all pathways. Only the paths divisible by three are trapped to kill. However, other traps may cause such things as a crash in the system (which in turn will cause a total loss of memory), or fabrication of wild stories in order to make the person appear insane. One of the worst traps, beside suicide, causes the person to become completely catatonic and perhaps remain so indefinitely.

One booby trap is an overwhelming feeling of guilt and depression that causes the person to shut down emotionally or to kill him- or herself. Other booby traps cause such unbearable feelings that the person gets trapped in the emotion, or door, and cannot find their way back.

The angel[5] at the end of the path is a guard. If a survivor is trying to reverse the Kabbalah, and gets to the angel at the end of the path (in memory recovery or in therapy), it means she or he has gotten too close to the core. This will set off a trap of death by suicide or accident. The survivor who runs from the angel can avert the trap going off. However, the angel is enticing, and will call the survivor in. This angel is so compelling because s/he is so beautiful and peaceful, and s/he causes alters in the path to feel as if s/he is the only one who can take away their pain.

The memories that can cause these pain and depression booby traps are of the deepest kind. They include the death of a loved one, such as a brother, sister, or friend, or the death of a pet, especially by the person's own hand, or memories of abandonment, including being told they are unlovable, even by God. The children have been told, "No one wants you, you are worthless, no one can save you." Then the angel comes, and claims to be the only one who can stop their pain because s/he is the only one who loves them. This is so consoling that they want to go with the angel. The angel will help them stop the pain, but they must commit suicide, or die of a broken heart. This is very important. It is a double-bind, with no escape from fatal consequences. As hard as it is to resist the angel—and it is very hard—if the survivor does not, he or she *will die*, in one way or the other, within forty-eight hours.

Breeders, fertility training, and use of babies

Breeders are girls and women whose function in the cult is to give birth to babies for cult use. They are trained using rape and sexual torture to show sexual pleasure but feel none. A breeder who feels for the fetus she aborts is no good to the group. The fetus must have no more meaning to her than an ordinary menstrual period.

The young breeder, before she begins her period, is raped on a daily basis. If she does not show pleasure to her partner, she is beaten. She is given hormones beginning at age nine to make her periods begin early and to make her gain weight. The weight is to hide pregnancy. For the first year, her periods are monitored very carefully, so the trainer knows when ovulation takes place. Around the time of ovulation, the girl is given drugs to sexualize her. This continues for a year. After that, if the girl demonstrates she is sexualized when she ovulates, the drugs are stopped; if she does not, the drugs continue until she is sexualized at ovulation. For some, this can take as much as three years. The girl's first few abortions are done with the use of drugs, so that she does not feel the procedure. As time goes on, less and less medication is used, until she needs none at all to abort. If the pregnancy is beyond twenty weeks, the girl is given ergotamine for several days to make her abort naturally. As time goes on some of these girls can actually abort at will. It just takes visualization for a day or two to begin contractions. A natural abortion is prized more highly than one done with instruments.

A girl who is destined to be High Priestess is also trained to become sexualized at ovulation. This is to ensure that her children are fathered by a High Priest or her mate. The fetus of a High Priestess is prized more highly than any other. Impregnation during ovulation helps to time a pregnancy so that the abortion falls on a Holy day, such as Imbloc.

It is considered that sixteen to twenty-three years of age is the best time for breeding, and that the infants that result will be of better quality. These babies are rarely killed. They might either be raised by the group to be future leaders, sold for large profits to other groups, or put on the baby black market. Most often, the firstborn healthy child is adopted by a member of the group residing in a different part of the country, or another country altogether, to be used as a pawn that will help control the mother later in life.

Internal calendars and dates

Internal calendars are used for special events such as birthdays, recall dates, and other such special events.[6] These are usually learned by alters in a normal everyday way, just as you would teach any child its birthday, or what day Christmas falls on. The outside person ("host" or ANP) does not know that cult holidays are significant.

Children in Luciferian cults are taught that in the Millennium (the year 2012) Lucifer is supposed to return. The teachings that these people have received say this: *We will all be called* *to account. Don't forget we owe our souls, so if you have been a good little Satanist, you will be rewarded; if not, you will be punished for eternity.*

Satanist and Luciferian Groups celebrate both Christian and pagan holidays. Although many of these holidays correspond to the traditional pagan holidays the witches, druids, or Wiccans celebrate, you should not confuse these groups with Satanists. Traditional Pagans do not worship Satan, as they do not have such a deity in their belief systems; "Satan" is strictly a Judeo-Christian manifestation. The fact that Satanists also celebrate Christian holidays does not make Christians Satanists.

Rewards used in training

In Satanic Kabbalah, the rewards given for compliance depend on what the individual responds to. Some want money, others sex, and all want power. Those in the situation do not even consider other rewards, such as having loving relationships, since these are not possible. They know what they will be rewarded for or what they will be punished for. So much of Satanic Kabbalah has to do with "double binds"—putting people in the position of having to choose the lesser of two evils. Pain or less pain? Power is preferable because it means being hurt less often and less severely. (Of course, the alter who lives in the "real world" is unaware of all this.) The highest levels of the Kabbalah contain the most rewards, balancing out the torture.

The rewards of ordinary life can seem very mild compared to those given in the cult. But I know the value of what I now have: freedom of body and soul. I am no longer a trapped soul; that is worth it.

* * *

We shall hear from Stella at other points in the book regarding her own experiences both in childhood and in recovery. Her documentation of the training given to children from the perspective of the abuser group, in particular the training center, is very valuable for our understanding, as no one but an adult perpetrator is able to give us the information regarding what is done to infants. Many survivors' accounts, from many different locations, reflect the kind of experiences that Stella describes here, although they often do not know the purpose of those experiences. It is similar with the experiences of ritual abuse and mind control described in Chapters Five and Six. Many specific details and themes are constants, even though the survivors were abused by different and unrelated groups in different places. The selections from survivors in this book should be seen as not just the experiences of one or two, but as representative of many, voiced by these brave and articulate people.

The contents of this chapter in particular illustrate why therapists MUST be careful to do things in a particular order, rather than just responding to whatever their clients present at any given time.

Notes

1. Editor's note: Nine is a bit older than we have been taught to believe as the upper limit at which DID can be created.

2. Editor's note: The torture and training described in this section is gruesome, so reader beware.
3. Editor's note: Occult groups use various magikal languages, such as Enochian or Latin, in their rituals, and members have alters who are trained specifically to use these languages.
4. These memories, as well as those of perpetrating, often come up as soon as the client makes significant disclosures to a therapist. They are part of the "booby traps" to induce suicide attempts if security is breached.
5. Editor's note: In the angel booby traps, an alter has the job of making those who try to work through a memory feel that the angel is present in the here-and-now, and invites them to join the angel by suicide.
6. In addition to Appendix 2, a Satanic calendar authored by Stella Katz, a more detailed calendar for each year with holidays for a number of different groups can be found on the Survivorship website.

CHAPTER EIGHT

The programming: indoctrination, lies, and tricks

It is widely known that mind control is produced through a combination of hypnotic suggestion, torture, threats, and double binds. But the most important thing for you—and your client—to know is that the mind control created in children, whether by cults, military or government groups, or organized criminal groups which use children as sexual slaves, is based on carefully designed and meticulously executed deceptions.

Abusers create false beliefs by setting up certain scenarios, using trickery (stage magic and illusions), reinforced by the effects of drugs, and, when it might be helpful, torture. You will see further elaboration of this process in Chapters Nine through Fourteen; this chapter summarizes some of the most common lies told by these abusers, the purpose of each, and the methods abusers use to make children believe them.

The most crucial lies are those that create lifelong obedience and loyalty in the survivor and those that maintain the secrecy and security of the perpetrator group. Other lies are told to get alters to do their "jobs."

In my experience with these survivors, I have found that there are many lies and tricks that might be called "standard." (Some "deprogrammers", such as Steve Oglevie, say that they can recognize the abusive group by the way the personality system is structured and then know what specific deceptions are practiced by that particular group.) Spontaneous DIDs do not appear to share such commonalities.

Alters who are split off at different ages are told lies that are effective for the ages at which they were trained and stopped maturing. So, for instance, four-year-olds will be told about the "magik" powers of the perpetrators, and will see these demonstrated; eleven-year-olds may be told about the extensive power of the perpetrator group to infiltrate every organization, spy on everyone, and use sophisticated technology which has not yet been released to the general public. Both these lies serve the purpose of causing the child/survivor to believe there is no way to escape the perpetrator group. An adult survivor may have many different alters, each of whom believes the lies they were told at the ages when they were trained.

The fact that there are alters who live most of their daily lives and function socially in the outside world, alters who often do not know of the beliefs, training, or even the existence of the other alters, allows for the lies and tricks to be effective.

It is interesting to observe how many of the themes found in the primary lies told by the mind controllers are devoted to reinforcing the basics of the belief systems of dangerous cults as listed by Bonewits (see Chapter Two). These include the leaders' wisdom and knowledge, the leaders' power and control, the correctness of the belief system of the group, the need for sexual submission to whomever the group designates, the importance of censoring communications with the outside world and of isolation, the wrongness and danger of leaving the group, the rightness of violence, the dangers of the outside world, the importance of surrendering the will, and the importance of appearing "normal" and maintaining a double life.

Lies about the abusers' correctness, superiority, and wisdom

- Children are told that the way of the abuser group (worshipping Satan or Lucifer, or the Third Reich, or the white American way of life, etc.) is the only right way and its leader or deity deserves obedience and loyalty.
- Children are told that they can trust the abusers because the abusers are their "family," but they cannot trust anyone else. Only this cult defined "family" cares about the children.
- Children are told that the group performs these abuses for the child's own good (rape confers forgiveness; torture or being forced to harm or kill someone else makes a person strong).

Methods of indoctrination

How are these lies conveyed? Intense, abusive religious or military indoctrination forces mind-controlled child alters to adopt the belief system of the abusers. These beliefs are hammered into the child's mind over and over, through religious ceremonies, military drills, songs and chants and rhymes, severe punishments, and rewards for compliance or memorizing the correct beliefs. At night or during breaks from real school, cult children attend "cult school." Children are coerced into making vows of loyalty and signing official documents, sometimes in blood.

Lies to induce obedience to the abusers

- Children or alters are told they are "good" if they obey the abusers and "bad" if they disobey.
- Children are told that they have to remain loyal and obedient to the abusers, because they made vows or promises of loyalty.
- Child victims or trainees are told that they are robots, or computers, or sex machines, or killing machines, not persons. Or that they have robots inside who control their minds and bodies.

- Children are told that someone who fights back against the abusers is a traitor and should and will be punished. (Such alters become discarded "garbage kids.")
- Children are told that all "inside people" were created only to do the jobs assigned to them by their abusers, and if they do not do these jobs they will have no purpose and will no longer exist.
- Children are told that all "inside people" must stay in their "places" in the inner world or structure.
- Child victims or trainees are made to believe that they are soldiers whose duty is to obey without thinking. Thinking for oneself is viewed as wrong.

Methods of indoctrination

Children being taught that they are killing machines or sex machines or robots are put in positions where they lack control over their own bodies, which are made to perform the desired actions even against the children's will.

To make alters believe they are soldiers, abusers dress the children up in uniforms, and uniformed adults who call themselves generals or commanders or captains use their power, their size, and their loud voices to frighten the children and make them obey. The children are forced to engage in training just like adult soldiers. The "generals" make them watch movies of soldiers marching or fighting. They talk about pride in fighting for their glorious cause, and dying for it. They give fake promotions. They shout at the children and tell them to obey and not think for themselves. Children who cry, vomit, show fear or sadness, or show compassion for others who are being hurt, are punished.

Lies that create loyalty to the abusers

- Children are told that a disloyal group member is a traitor and deserves punishment by rape or torture or death.
- Children are told that the abusers can kill the child or take him/her away at any time and no outsider can stop it happening, because the group has infinite power.
- Children are told that if they disobey the group, someone they love or another vulnerable child will be punished or will die.
- The alters whom the abusers put in charge of the other parts are told that they must always make the other parts obey, and punish them if they disobey, or the abusers will find them and punish them severely.
- Children are told that if they do as they are told, they will rise to be the highest members of the coven or to be generals in the army.

Methods of indoctrination

Children being shaped to these beliefs are punished for minor infractions. They are also rewarded (by drugs, sex, or being allowed to harm someone else instead of being harmed) for compliance. They are given "promotions" in the cult or the military organization, with stripes or rings or some kind of token of the increased status.

Each child is usually put through a scenario in which he or she watches an alleged "traitor" being tortured or apparently killed, and is told this will happen to him if he is a traitor. He is given a sample of what this feels like, such as being stretched on a rack, or severely electroshocked.

Lies about the abusers' power and knowledge

Children are told that:

- The walls have ears (taught to a young child in a room with plastic "ears" glued to the walls. The abusers said the ears would always be there in any room but will not be visible.)
- The all-seeing Eye always sees you even when you cannot see it (taught with a plastic eyeball in a glass case, or even an actual eyeball from a dead creature).
- The stuffed animals (some given to the child by the perpetrators) report on the child to the perpetrators.
- The abuser group are always hiding in the shadows or in the walls (taught through an actual experience where this was the case). (You may note that not all tricks require the same level of detail, depending on their context.)
- Mothers have eyes in the back of their heads.
- The crows or the spiders or some other common creatures report to the abuser group.
- "Satan's eyes" are always watching (simulated with flashlights in the dark).
- There is a microchip implanted in the survivor's body that tells the abusers where s/he is and/or what s/he is thinking.
- There is a device implanted inside the victim's head that sees and hears everything and reports it to the abusers.
- The abusers have sophisticated state-of-the-art technology to listen to the survivor's phone conversations and read his/her emails and see where s/he is at all times.
- The abusers know things and do things by means of real magik.
- The abusers always know if someone is lying, so the child must always tell the truth to them.
- Everyone the survivor knows is linked to the abuser group and knows his or her every move, and will report back to your abusers.

Methods of indoctrination

Mind controllers want and need their victims to believe they are all-powerful, all-seeing, all-knowing, and able to appear at any moment to punish disloyalty. These lies are basic to the "access programming" we shall discuss later, as well as the "silence programming" which prevents survivors from disclosing their abuse.

The most basic lie is that the perpetrators always know where the survivor is and what he or she does, says, or thinks. To prove this, they commonly use their deity or deities, "God" or "Satan" or "Lucifer." Those of us who attended church or Sunday school will recall being taught that God is omnipotent, omniscient, and omni-present. There is nothing like an invisible, omnipotent watcher to make children behave in the desired manner when no one is really supervising them. This is especially effective if that deity has already been simulated by a costumed person who punished the child for disobedience with rape or torture.

Punishment and trickery are used to convince the child of these lies. A situation is created in which the child is likely to hide, to talk to someone about the abuse, or to disobey. A hidden microphone or a one-way mirror permits the group to see or hear what the child is doing or saying. The group punishes the child for what s/he did or said when the child thought s/he was alone or hidden. Some of the details of the tricks are in the examples given above.

Lies used to keep the survivor in contact with the abuser group

Abusers must make sure that the survivors do not begin disclosing the abuse once they grow up and leave the area. In addition, some groups want to continue to use some survivors. For instance, ritualistic cults expect the children they abuse to become adult cult members who will transmit the group's values and practices to the next generation (Stella Katz, the author of Chapter Seven, was such a member.) Military/political groups continue to use some adult survivors of their training as spies, assassins, or drug couriers. While they "close down" the programming of some survivors, as they did with Trish Fotheringham, they keep others in active use. Child prostitution and pornography groups probably allow survivors to leave when they reach adulthood, unless they are also involved in the adult versions of the same things.

There are many lies designed to keep the trainees or group members involved. "Return" programs are based on lies that invoke the necessity of returning at specified intervals or for specified events. "Come when called" programs involve the necessity of responding to call-backs by perpetrators. "Report" programs address the problem of members giving away secrets by forcing those who have done so to return to or contact the group of their own volition. Particular groups of alters are given each of these types of training. In Chapter Eleven, "'Stabilization' takes on a new meaning", we will look in more detail at how these beliefs are induced, and what to do about them.

Lies to ensure the survivor returns to the abusers (return programs)

- Children are told that if they go to the abusers when they are supposed to, they will not get punished, but will get a special treat.
- Children are told that if they do not return to the abusers on birthdays and other special dates, they will be hunted down and punished severely.
- Children are told that if they do not return to the abusers on birthdays and other special dates, the group will hurt someone else.

Methods of indoctrination

These lies about what the survivor can expect to happen throughout their lives are all established through tricks that happen in the person's childhood. In one scenario, children are unable to attend an event on time, and are then taken to the event and forced to watch someone else being punished on their behalf. In another setup, one child is told that he or she is the only person that can save another child from being hurt, but is prevented from arriving in time to do so. Other setups involve rewards for coming on time.

Lies to ensure current contact (come when called programs)

- Children are taught that they always have to answer the phone, or something bad will happen.
- They are taught that even on the phone, alters have to come out if they are asked for.
- They are taught that they always have to answer the door and open it, even if they do not want to see the person who comes to the door.

Methods of indoctrination

Children are trained to accept the false belief that they must always be available to their abusers—that is, they must respond to their abusers and come when called. These lies result in programmed, immediate responses. They are reinforced with such things as painful electric shocks until a child picks up the phone, and doors kicked down by violent abusers. Children are also deliberately given opportunities to run away, only to be caught and violently punished repeatedly while they are given the message that they cannot run. (See Chapter Eleven for details.)

Lies to ensure the survivor reports any disclosures or relocations (report programs)

Mind control survivors learn the false belief that the abusers always know where they are and what they have said and done, and will hunt them down and punish them severely for disloyalty. One or more alters are taught that they must report to the abusers any time the child disobeys or discloses secrets. These "Reporter alters" are also told to report any relocations, so that the abusers always know where they are. The paradox of this situation is that the alters who report to the abusers do so because they believe the abusers know everything and will punish them if they do not report, while the secret reporting and its consequences provide evidence to the rest of the system that the abusers know everything.

Methods of indoctrination

The alters who do this job are created when children are forced to watch other children being tortured until they disclose to the perpetrators something they have said to outsiders. Then they are put in a position to receive a milder version of the same torture, accompanied by a warning about what will happen if they do not tell the group what other alters have told outsiders.

Reporter alters are tested and trained; they have backups. It is important to the abusers that the rest of the survivor's personality system does not know about the reporters, so they will all continue to believe in the magic or technology which enables the perpetrators to know everything, so survivors can never escape or be free.

Lies about the child being evil

- The children are told that they are evil and are perpetrators rather than victims, just like the abusers.
- The children are told that God hates them and will punish them because of the evil they have done.
- The children are told that they are children of the devil and belong only to the coven and to the devil.
- The children are told that they are going to hell, and their only choice is whether they will be hurt there or will hurt others.
- The children are told they have special powers that can at any time destroy people's lives.
- The children are told that they will harm anyone who gets close to him or her.

Methods of indoctrination

Mind controlling abusers isolate survivors from the rest of humanity through forcing children (and adult survivors) to perpetrate various abuses. In ritually abusive groups, this means taking part in animal sacrifices and in real and simulated human sacrifices. Initially the child's hand, holding a knife, is forced by the hand of an adult to stab the victim. Once the child realizes he or she cannot resist, an alter is split off who will do the stabbing without being physically forced. The child is similarly assisted to participate in rapes. For a girl, this is done with objects. Military/political groups train their little assassins using standard military indoctrination and training, praising children for being skilled "soldiers." However, these children are generally tortured to produce these alters, who are then forced to commit acts of extreme cruelty. We can see this kind of training in the Ugandan "Lord's Resistance Army," known to engage in both ritual abuse and mind control, though these terms are not always used in news reports.

Persons who steadfastly refuse to perpetrate are subjected to scenarios wherein others harm someone or kill an animal, and the person is told it is their fault. A child might also be told that she or he has the capacity to kill someone psychically, followed by a simulation of this killing. This forced perpetration, real or simulated, is immediately followed by teaching about how evil the child or group member is and how no one else will ever want him or her. Sometimes the message is heightened when scenarios are enacted in which costumed actors pretend to be God or Jesus and either abuse or reject the child.

A child may also be convinced that something evil is put inside him or her. In "brain transplants," the brain of an abuser or of a despised animal, such as a rat, is supposedly put into the child. A child who is made to believe she or he has a "black heart" sees an animal heart and then feels a pain in her chest while it is supposedly inserted. Alters are told that they are demons or monsters or aliens, and other alters are created as internal copies of an abuser whose "seed" has been implanted by means of a rape.

Lies to isolate the survivor from the outside world and prevent disclosures

Like all dangerous cults, these groups teach the persons they indoctrinate that they are only safe within the confines of the group, and being involved with any people in the outside world will harm either them or those they get to know. Because the primary victims are children, these lies have enormous effects on the children's development, and lay the groundwork for dissociative disorders as well as attachment disorders. This group of lies includes both general ones about not trusting or attaching to people, and specific ones targeted at such people as therapists, police officers, and medical professionals. Children's beliefs that they are perpetrators rather than victims also adds to their isolation.

Lies that destroy children's ability to attach to other people

- Children are told that they can never trust anyone who is not part of the family or the abuser group.
- Children are told that people they know and like or love will always leave and will end up hating them.
- Children are told that anyone they tell about the abuse, as well as their families, will be hurt or killed.
- Children are told that if they get attached to people, something bad will happen to those people.

Methods of indoctrination

You will notice how the victims' altruism is used against them. As with all the mind-controlling lies, scenarios are set up to "prove" the "truth" of these statements. For instance, a young child is asked to choose between two groups of people, one group wearing hooded black robes, the other group wearing ordinary clothes. Naturally, she chooses the people in ordinary clothes, and they attack and abuse her. She is put back in the choice situation, and chooses the robed cult members; they welcome her lovingly. Now, this child alter will bring on fear inside the adult survivor if she begins to develop friendships with regular people.

A worse scenario occurs, in which a child is paired with a "disposable" child, is allowed to become her friend, and then is forced to participate in the real or simulated murder of that child. Even worse is one in which a child is forced to participate in what she believes was the killing of the only woman she trusts (or, more likely, someone impersonating that woman). The woman then rises up and sexually assaults the child, telling the little girl that she, the child, is responsible for making the woman evil, because when you die you become evil.

Though not consciously remembered, this indoctrination into an "upside down" system of reality prevents the child (and later, the adult survivor) from breaking free from the group and developing real friendships with outsiders.

Lies to prevent disclosures to professionals

- Children are told that if they show physical evidence or tell the story of their abuse to any professional, that person will not believe them and will lock them up in a mental hospital, where they will be drugged and abused.
- Children are told that any therapist they talk to will sexually abuse them.
- Children are told that if they disclose to law enforcement professionals, they will be arrested, charged with crimes such as murder and rape, and put in prison where they will be abused by guards or inmates.
- Children are told that if they tell anyone about the abuse, a bomb will go off inside their body, or an animal such as a rat or a snake will eat them up from inside.

Methods of indoctrination

These perpetrators pay special attention to disrupting their victims' potential relationships with therapists, doctors, and police officers. Members of ritually abusive cults have almost all been invited to talk about the abuse by people posing as these professionals, only to then be sexually abused by them. Stage "psychiatrists" or "psychologists" will tell children they are crazy for talking about such things, lock them up in restraints in a "mental hospital" or "loony bin," and administer strong drugs which make them feel ill and unable to think. The children may also be assaulted by the "inmates" in the loony bin or mental hospital. The "police" either beat and rape these children themselves, or put them in "prison" where inmates claiming to be killers or rapists do so.

Another technique to keep survivors from talking is the staging of simulated operations. For example, a four-year-old child is put on a stretcher or table and prepared for surgery. The child is told that the abusers are putting a bomb inside her or his stomach, and if he or she talks about what has been done, the bomb will go off. The child blacks out, comes to, and is shown the bandages and an X-Ray of the supposed bomb inside his or her belly. Later, this alter's fear will be enough to prevent the adult from speaking out even if there are recalled memories to talk about.

I have encountered this "bomb" with sufficient frequency among my clients that I have begun to joke about it with some of them. I say something like, "Oh, that old X-Ray again. It must be starting to wear out by now. I think they use it on all the kids. I wonder whose stomach it was really in the time they took the picture." The client, who has told me in hushed tones about the bomb, looks at me in amazement, but begins to feel some reassurance because she realizes that I know about this, and it is a trick. (A macabre sense of humor may be a requirement for this work. When survivor clients demonstrate this kind of humor, it indicates perspective, and I know they are really recovering.)

In other versions of this technique, military/political mind controllers claim to implant small devices that will record everything the child thinks or says and transmit it to the abusers, and/or to explode when the abusers become aware that the survivor has "talked;" ritualistic cults insert snakes or rats in a small child's vagina or anus, declaring that if he or she talks, the creature will devour him or her from inside. They then switch the child to another alter, who is told he or she has "given birth" to this creature because s/he is so evil.

Remember that the alters on whom these deceptions are perpetrated are deliberately maintained at the ages at which they believe such things and accept the "proof" of them provided by their abusers. If a survivor attempts to find out what happened to him or her, the fear coming from these young alters will flood the person, no matter what their actual age.

Lies to induce suicide

- Children are told that it is honorable to die for the cause of the abusers (common with "soldiers" or religious alters).
- Children are told that since the group knows what survivors have said and done, traitors must kill themselves quickly before the group finds them and kills them slowly and painfully. (Note the theme of double binds.)
- Children are told that their lives will always be so unbearable that it is better to die.
- Certain alters are told that if they kill the body when it is traitorous, they will be rewarded in the afterlife. (This is similar to the belief of extreme Islamic suicide bombers.)
- Demon or alien or ghost alters are told that they can kill the body without themselves dying, or that their special powers will bring them back to life.

Methods of indoctrination

One of the ways that organized abusive groups guarantee secrecy is to train alters to commit suicide if someone is no longer of use to the group and begins remembering or disclosing the abuse. Abusers use anaesthetic drugs to make the "non-human" alters responsible for suicide unable to feel anything in the body, thus convincing them they do not belong to the body. Sometimes there is a reward promised them for killing the body. Other indoctrination discussed earlier, such as watching an alleged traitor be tortured or killed slowly and painfully, convinces other alters that they would be better off dead if the person is a traitor.

Suicide and self-harm programs will be addressed further in Chapter Eleven.

Lies that cause survivors to deny or recant abuse memories and experiences

- The alters who are designated to live in the "real world," going to school or college and holding jobs while interacting with others in adulthood, are trained, usually at home by parents, to disbelieve any memories that might come up.
- Children are taught to believe that they got the idea that they were abused from something they read or saw on television or from someone else's experience or from a therapist. (This is a basic argument of those who attempt to discredit these experiences in the public eye and among professionals.)
- Children are also taught that if they experience flashbacks of awful abuses, those must be dreams or imagination or signs that they are crazy. Nothing bad really happened to them.

Methods of indoctrination

The group might "prove" the unreality of the child's memories through simulated murder events that the child attends, or in which the child is forced to participate. The next day, the child sees the murdered person alive, and if she or he asks questions is told that the awful event was a dream or a product of imagination.

Since survivors of extreme abuse often do not remember much of their past, it is very easy for people who have power in their lives, such as their parents, to convince them that nothing bad happened to them. Everyone wants to please their parents. Parents involved in the abuses of those who have a dream, a flashback, or a memory of the abuse in childhood will tell them that they got the idea from somewhere else. It is reassuring to these children to believe it was not real.

Chapter Twelve, "Maybe I made it up", addresses these issues in more depth.

Therapy to address abusers' lies

Cognitive therapy of mind control survivors is an important part of treatment for these lies and deceptions. This needs to be done both individually with particular alters, and also with the personality system as a whole. Therapists can provide an alternative explanation to that given by the abusers. For example, if an alter personality was told that he or she is not part of the body (and therefore can kill the body without the alter dying), a therapist can discuss making a mark on the hand of another alter, and then the alter who believes he or she is not part of the body can come out and see whether or not it is also on his or her hand. The alter will stare in amazement and ask how the mark got there. In a few cases there will be another alter inside who creates an illusion of an unmarked hand, and it may be necessary to ask this one to stop creating the illusion so that everyone inside can see the truth. In most (but not all) cases this will be effective. I do this in a playful way, engaging the child alters in showing their power by turning the illusion on and off again.

Unmasking the deception can be very powerful. Often this is done using the abuser's type of trick, without any abuse. For example, I induced an alter who believed he had no body to come out into the body. He was invisible to all other alters. He explained to me that he did not have a body. I asked what was in his hand. A cup, he said. I asked how he was managing to hold it. He looked in amazement at the cup, and slowly began to move the hand. He did not understand how he could be doing this. I asked what he looked like. Nothing, just blackness. How did he know this? He said that he saw himself in a mirror, and it was just black. I showed him his (that is, the person's) face in a small mirror. Then I put a piece of white paper over the mirror, and asked what he saw. Just whiteness. I assisted him to move the paper on and off the mirror, so he could see it was just covering the real image. He said that he was not white, he was black. I used the black plastic cover of my notebook to cover the mirror, and he said yes, that was it. With the help of another alter, who informed him that the abusers had put a black cloth over the mirror, the illusion was dispelled, and the alter realized how he had been tricked.

It is most effective when alters who were deceived receive information directly from alters who know the truth. Since alters whose mothers were involved in the abuse commonly believe that their mothers can use magik to always know everything, it comes as a shock and a relief when another alter reveals having had the job of tattling. So when new alters emerge, I always ask them to get information from others in the system rather than just from me. Why should they trust me? But the others can give them actual memories. I tell my clients that when all their internal parts share information with one another, they can discover the lies and tricks perpetrated on them.

Similarly, groups of alters together might be invited to view the whole memory of an event in which they were deliberately deceived. For example, you recall a recently described trick wherein a ritually abusive group inserts a rat into a girl's vagina, telling her it will eat her up from inside if she talks about the abuse. They switch the child into another alter, and then extract the rat, telling the new alter that she has given birth to a rat because she is so evil, and no one but them will ever want such an evil person. If both these alters view this event together, they will see how they have been deceived. This intervention is even more effective than one alter telling the other what they know, but it cannot be done until the personality system is ready for memory work, and prepared with a way to handle the emotions and physical pain of such horrendous memories. This information will be found in Chapter Sixteen.

Many alters can be "stuck in the past" and still think it is 1968 or 1987 or some other year when they were still physically a child and the abusers were in charge of them. The parts who were put in charge need to be fully informed about the situation, and if they realize they are no longer in danger (when this is an accurate perception, and current contact has been addressed) they can stop punishing the others and learn to work together with all parts, for safety and healing.

It will empower your clients to understand that there are lies which they do not have to believe any longer. You can tell them that when they share information and emotions between and among all their parts, they will know the truth. They now have choices that they did not have in childhood. As they question what they were told, and consult with their inside parts to discover the truth, they will regain their freedom and control of their own lives.

My car has a bumper sticker that says, "I think, therefore I'm dangerous." One of my mind-controlled clients, who was told repeatedly never to think, bought me two more of these stickers when I replaced the car. It meant a huge amount to her. And it is a delight to see her alters begin to think for themselves and recognize the truth of past and present. She has requested that I ask therapists to give their clients the following message:

> Think for yourself, now that you are an adult, and critique the information the abusers gave you to see whether or not you now think it could be true. If something is really true, it will resonate as a truth for you. You might find that when something resonates this way, you feel angry or sad, and you might want to avoid thinking about it any further. If this is the case, it will be helpful for you to follow the thread of emotions and thoughts and ask yourself why you are avoiding this. Shed light on it so that you can find the real truth, which is the only way you will be able to heal and to move forward in life. Recognize that if you were deceived, you were a child, so it is not your fault you were deceived. Be determined to get at the truth. If one thing the abusers said to you was a lie, then perhaps other things that were said to you were lies or tricks (fabricated events). You can find out, and you can regain control of your own life and be free.

CHAPTER NINE

Understanding and working with alters' jobs and hierarchies

What is usually known as a "program" is really the job that an alter, or an orchestrated series of alters, has been trained to do. The alters in systems created through mind control function within specifically designed internal structures, as we have seen. They are also arranged in an internal hierarchy, which is another of mind control systems' most distinguishing features. In this chapter we shall look at these alters, their jobs, and the way they relate to one another. We shall also address treatment issues particular to the programming and arranged roles of your client.

Basic rules and arrangements for alters

Unlike the more random arrangements found in "spontaneous" multiples, the personality systems of most cult children are structured with a strong dividing line between the left (cult) and the right (ordinary life) sides. The alters are toljd by the perpetrators that this is where they live, but this division is unlikely to represent the actual physiological differences between them, since alter personalities reside more in circuitry than in specific brain locations. The left/right division is not the only way that alters from organized abuse are separated from those from "regular" abuse in the home. Many mind-controlled systems also have internal walls and barriers to segment groups of alters. Sometimes groups from a particular kind of abuse are hidden "underground" beneath other groups. So, for example, Ku Klux Klan alters can be hidden beneath ritual abuse alters. It is easy for a therapist, even if he or she discovers ritual abuse, to completely miss the hidden mind-controlled alters from child pornography or military/political abuse.

All of this is done to ensure that mind control alters remain hidden—from everyday alters, and from the world. Memories from the alters involved in the organized abuse do sometimes "leak" into the ANP or other alters from everyday life. When they do, they cause terror, as the everyday life alters have no idea that any of these horrible things that they are "seeing" occurred. More commonly, it is emotions that will leak through to an ANP, who has no awareness of what is causing them. This can be the basis of the depression, anxiety disorders, or obsessions and compulsions that drive some survivors to therapy.

It is easy to miss the real cause of such symptoms and treat them in standard ways which will be ineffective as long as the memories and the alters involved remain dissociated. For example, one of my clients originally went to therapy for an obsessive fear that she would harm her child with a knife. It took many years before the ritual abuse at the base of this became evident, which might never have happened had I not been open to the existence of these issues and able to work with them. Her previous therapist was unfamiliar with ritual abuse, and believed that allowing "body memories" to surface without knowing the associated events would be sufficient to resolve her trauma. It was not.

There are rules that abusers require to prevent the emergence of alters and memories. These are:

1. Silence—do not disclose the abuse to outsiders.
2. Maintain a façade of normalcy, or of craziness if you have been discarded by the abusive group.
3. Obey all past and present abusers, and obey the alters in charge of the system.
4. Be loyal to past and present abusers.
5. Do not develop close relationships with outsiders ("Isolate").

Each alter personality in a mind-controlled system either takes pride in the job they have been forced to do, or is terrified of punishment if he or she fails to do it. For alters low in the hierarchy, the punishment comes from alters higher up. Alters higher up fear punishment that can come from the actual adults who abused them, who might or might not be still involved in their lives, but who they believe can find them ("hunt them down") and kill them if they disclose the abuse. Hidden parts of the personality system who believe they are demons or ghosts or aliens have the jobs of frightening and punishing higher-ups to keep them obedient. (More about these alters later in this chapter.)

In treating these survivors of extreme and organized abuse, remember that it is important to treat whichever parts are put out into the body to speak with you with respect, kindness, and gentle curiosity. In the early stages of therapy, your job is to ask who the part is, what their job is, and why they are present at that moment. Later you can ask to speak with specific alters. Do not ask leading questions.

It is often wise not to ask for the names of the alters, as abusers use names to call them out for torture or punishment. They may have no trouble giving names, but do not assume they want to. I sometimes suggest that they might like to give themselves new names, an idea that they often welcome. Thus, one client's "Satanic Legions" have become "Alicias," and another client's "Satans" have become "Simons." I remember when first working with Tony, I encountered an alter who announced he was "Almighty God." I told him I had a bit of difficulty calling him that, so was there another name he would be comfortable with. "Well, I always liked Geoffrey," he replied.

If you received standard training for treating DID, you may have learnt that you should map your clients' whole personality systems. However, horizontal identification of the parts is not your goal; vertical navigation up the hierarchy is what you need to do. With one of my first ritual abuse survivors, I spent a couple of years working my way through what I believed to be the whole system, mapping it out with her, and then discovered that this was just the first layer. Generally, the structure (if there is one) is intended to be kept secret. The main thing is to get an idea of the size of the system, the number of layers, and the number of alters. Then you work with parts who have more power and more actual content. Often, ritually abused and mind-controlled clients are described as being "polyfragmented," with hundreds of alters or more. Do not be overwhelmed by the number of parts. Many are just memory fragments.

Integration, or fusion, is not a big deal if you do not make it one. If the client chooses to integrate, it will happen naturally when they are ready. Talk about walls between "inside people" no longer being needed. Do not talk about the "people" disappearing. Alters are afraid that if this happens they will die. In my experience, as alters share experiences and memories, the walls between them dissolve, either gradually (when they are co-conscious a lot) or suddenly (during a major abreaction). Do not talk too much about integration or fusion between alters, especially at the start. Respect their choice not to fuse until—and unless—they are ready. And never, never, force an integration on a client.

Alters' jobs

Certain "jobs" are commonly assigned by mind-controlling abusers. You can also consult Stella Katz's account in Chapter Seven for the categories of job assignments created by cults, which include the following.

Internal organizers

- Keeping track of training memories; organizing these as files or tapes or videos.
- Keeping track of alters and making sure the wrong ones do not come out.
- Switch control—turning "programs" or training effects on and off by internal switches and buttons which have specific effects, like putting alters to sleep, or making them suicidal, or creating hallucinations.
- Recycling memories, keeping parts of them separate so that programs cannot be destroyed by memory reintegration.

Internal enforcers

- Making internal threats, sounding like the abusers or like demons.
- Punishing disobedience.
- Harming or killing the body.
- Putting the person to sleep, scrambling their memories, making them "crazy," upsetting other parts so they harass the therapist, distracting the therapist and setting off other behaviors which can interfere with therapy.
- Spinning internally to distribute feelings or impulses through the system.

Alters who deal with perpetrators

- Memorizing and responding to triggers from the outside world.
- Observing the person's behavior and thoughts and reporting disobedience to internal or external bosses.
- Reporting to the abusers.
- Returning to the abusers.
- Engaging in trained sexual behaviors.
- Killing, cutting, and sacrificing.
- Fighting, spying, and other military duties

Using the alters' jobs to assist in recovery

Many alters define themselves by their jobs, and do not know who they will be when those jobs are gone. This can make them resistant to therapy. They usually have special skills related to those jobs, and in some cases, the jobs can continue to be useful long into the course of therapy. As you meet various alters, it is advisable to ask them about their jobs, and show appreciation for their skills. Then, help them find other ways to use their skills in the service of making the whole personality system healthier.

For example, some of my ritually abused clients have alters who can put other alters to sleep. If we are in the middle of processing a traumatic memory, the alters involved in that memory agree to be put to sleep until the next therapy session so that the memory and its feelings will not leak out between sessions. Another client has bad flashbacks and nightmares, so I contacted the Gatekeeper, who has the job of containing the memories, and asked him to please do his job more thoroughly. A client with military training has her soldier alters involved in exercising to keep her body healthy. This was their own idea.

In many cases, the alters can change their jobs to other functions which employ the same skills in the service of their recovery. File keepers have access to the training memories and can bring them up when the system is ready to process and resolve them. Observers and recorders can watch the present life to make sure the client is safe. Spinners can spin peaceful and calm feelings when others in the system are anxious. Some alters may know how to remove pain. An alter trained to make the others forget events can make the alters who are supposed to report to the abusers forget having talked about the memories. Internal leaders assigned by the abusers can remain in leadership of the personality system, maintaining order, until that is no longer necessary. When new alters emerge who would destabilize the system, these leaders can take charge and make sure they do not do any damage.

Survivor Jen Callow's experience regarding her alters' jobs demonstrates the benefits of helping alters find new jobs:

> It was important for our parts to find a purpose beyond the one our abusers assigned to them. For many parts, running the programs and keeping constant vigilance over our system had been the only way to feel powerful and to avoid feeling physical or emotional pain. After we'd processed a memory, our therapist made sure to help each part find a new job and purpose inside, including the children, if they wanted (children need the time to grow and play, but we found that often

> they liked to take on a smaller job of their choosing). For example, we had a group of inner soldier parts terrorizing our system. Our therapist talked to the soldiers through a host part and eventually determined they were scared children, wanting to feel powerful. After working with them and their memories, she talked with them about their talents and skills. Many of them had no idea what they liked or disliked, or what life was like beyond being a soldier. She encouraged them to spend time exploring our inner world, and asked for other parts to volunteer to show them around. We also needed to create a space for them to live and eventually reassigned them to jobs such as security (keeping us safe in the outer world), record keeping (tracking the memories we'd processed and filing them), and even maintaining the soccer field (one of them likes the discipline and precision this requires). Their responsibilities inside grow and change as they do, with the intent that they enjoy their work.

The enforcers: the key to unlocking the system

The persecutor/protector alters who are found within virtually every person with DDNOS or DID are the key to unlocking any personality system, particularly those of clients who have experienced mind control or ritual abuse.

In his study of the features of DID, Ross (1997) found that 84% of 236 DID patients said they had internal persecutor alters. As he describes them, "On first meeting they will be fearsome, loathsome, demon-like entities totally committed to the malicious harassment and abuse of the patient" (p. 115). These parts are aggressive exaggerations of the more common "inner critic" which almost everyone experiences. They tell the person not to talk, they threaten consequences for disobedience, they alienate friends and family, and they may harm or even attempt to kill the body.

Here is the perfect example of how the mind controllers and ritually abusing cults build programs that are destructive to the person by deliberately exploiting survival and self-care motives. As abusive or destructive as they appear, particularly in ritually abused or mind-controlled systems, it is very important to recognize that these alters are no different from all other alters, in that they doing their job of serving the survival of the person. They persecute in the service of protecting. For example, a client with a very angry, critical mother might hear her mother's voice telling her not to do something, or reprimanding her harshly if she did something her mother had not permitted her to do. By influencing her behavior, the alter protected her from very real abuse from the mother.

Goulding and Schwartz (1995) list these protective goals: looking for present dangers, using self-injury as protection (for example, to relieve pressure or nullify pain), being keepers of pain and badness, imitating the abuser or pleasing the abuser to avoid punishment, feeling tainted and damaged and only able to excel at being bad, distraction, trying to stop memories, and trying to protect other people from the survivor.

Some persecutor/protector alters actually believe themselves to be the person's real-life abusers. There may be more than one internal representation, for example, of a parent. This happens spontaneously, and its tendency to happen is exploited by mind controllers. For example, an abuser will rape a child while saying he is "putting himself inside her". The resultant alter believes itself to be the perpetrator.

Some alters have been deceived into believing they are demons, devils, Satan, or animals, such as Stella Katz described in Chapter Seven. They are very young (around age three) and imitate “demons” or animals they were shown to frighten them. Other deliberately created alters are responsible for the programs to cut the person’s arms as a punishment, to flood the system with despair, to prevent a memory from being completely processed and put together, or to stop the person from talking by making him or her mute and terrified. Particularly because of these jobs, the persecutor/protector alters are the key to unlocking a mind-controlled personality system.

Early interventions with persecutor/protector alters

Uneducated therapists often have an inability to cope with the behaviors of persecutory alters. They commonly focus on helping one side of the personality system and battling with the other side. When “Satan” or some similar part talks in a deep scary voice to you or to the client, it is easy to think this is a nasty perpetrator or a supernatural being, and to oppose it or fight with it or try to banish it. However, if you do this, you will engender the hostility of this part, who has probably been very badly hurt and told a lot of lies. You will foster internal splitting in this way, and get nowhere fast.

Once you recognize that these alters have a protective intent, you can see that working with them involves enlisting them in the service of healing, just as they were originally enlisted in the cause of safety.

You will see examples of these kinds of errors, which often result in clients leaving their therapists, in survivor LisaBri’s story:

When therapists make mistakes: LisaBri

> In the early 1990s, I was diagnosed with everything from schizophrenia to pre-menstrual syndrome. I was told to get a hobby, to not drink in the evenings, and one psychiatrist pulled a packet full of white pills from his desk drawer every time I showed any kind of emotion. Every therapist, doctor and psychiatrist I had ever seen wanted me to stuff the feelings away. But where could they go? The more I ‘stuffed,’ the worse I became, until I landed in a locked ward of a psychiatric hospital. I sobered up, threw away the drugs and alcohol and finally found a therapist to work with. I arrived battered and worse for wear, ready to do anything to curb the intense feelings I was experiencing. I was quickly diagnosed with DID, and during the next five years, hospitalized frequently.
>
> With my new therapist, I discovered that I had been ritually abused. I soon learnt to substitute the process of stuffing feelings away with stuffing away ‘bad’ inside parts. This was what my left side alters were labelled—evil. They needed to be dealt with harshly, I was told. They were ‘sabotaging’ therapy by creating chaos in the system, preventing any healing. Today, we bear the scars caused by these early misinterpreted inner parts. They were just doing the jobs assigned to them by our abusers. (At this time, no one inside understood that we were safe by then, as the core of the cult was dead.)
>
> In order to make our right side more strongly defended against the left side, the therapist attempted a forced integration between the host, Lisa, and the strongest defender of our system, Brian (Bri), by creating a hypnotic integration ceremony that took place in an imaginary forest.
>
> It appeared to work, and the therapist was ecstatic, but it was too confusing inside. I tried to talk, but I couldn’t find the proper words. Julie, a five-year-old part from abuse by my father, had appeared

> just as we joined. At that moment, we were a threefold alter who had no idea on how to live in this singleton world. I tried to convey that there was a complication but the therapist didn't listen. We finally made it out to the car and stalled it all the way home as we couldn't operate the stick shift. After three days of not being able to function and carry out simple tasks such as unlocking a door or preparing a meal, we broke apart, but not before deciding never to integrate again.
>
> It felt as if our core strength, Bri, who had been the basis of our survival for so long, almost crumbled because of a botched attempt by an outsider to gain control of our personality system. This therapist was wrong. An outsider can't revamp a system that has been in place for forty years and make it work, no matter how logical it seems or how right the therapist believes herself to be.
>
> When we discovered an inside part whose main function was to hold pain arising from both from the present day and from traumatic memories, the therapist felt it only right for her to be banished and isolated from the rest of the system. Miss Pain was sent away to an internal imaginary beach, alone with all her pain. She had no one to talk to, cry with, or hold. Years after that therapy we attempted to find her, hoping to tell her the world had changed, we had changed, and we wanted her back. I am happy to say that we found her, and, to our pleasant surprise, she was in better shape than we could have hoped. She was smart. Those years at the beach were spent ridding herself of the pain that so often led to self-harm. She revealed to us that when the tide came in at her beach, she took a little piece of pain and put it in the tide. When the tide went out, the pain went with it, making her isolated life just a little more tolerable.
>
> The therapist eventually terminated therapy with us. Since she was unable to get rid of our left side alters she became convinced that we were evil. We were rerouted to a psychiatrist who practiced hypnosis. Due to our ability to dissociate at any given moment, we were highly susceptible to this type of therapy. Unfortunately, this doctor also set the goal of banishing the 'bad' parts. He had the strongest right side parts gather all the left side parts, many times forcibly, put them into a rocket and send them over the highest imaginary mountain into space. We did this routine with him once a week for over three years.
>
> After some other unhelpful therapy experiences, I found our current therapist. Our first session scared the hell out of me. She said, "I will work with your right side; however, we need to do a lot of healing with the left side parts. This is going to be my starting focus."
>
> She wanted to *work* with the left side, the inner cult parts. Was she crazy or what? After spending almost a decade with doctors and therapists doing all they could possibly do to get rid of those parts, this took me by complete surprise. But that's what I needed. Finally, I could heal.
>
> It is not acceptable to hide or banish inner parts for whatever reason. Labeling alters 'good' and 'bad' has to be eliminated. All parts are equal and all deserve the respect of the mental health community.
>
> I did not write this to bash therapists, but to help them help their clients.

LisaBri's experience reflects several mistakes that untrained therapists working with these clients often make. Avoiding treatment of certain alters may seem to be an efficient way of helping mind-controlled clients, but it is unwise, and damaging to the survivor. It takes patience to work with alters who appear to be destructive, or who are overtly hostile, but it needs to be done.

What LisaBri found most helpful, and what is the most effective approach with persecutor/protector alters, is to immediately engage these personalities in a therapeutic alliance. As with any alter, you need to be aware of their ages, and of how much they know about life in the present. Empathize with the dilemmas they have faced and mirror the importance of their protector roles. Then you can help them to protect in more effective ways for present circumstances.

Sometimes, before you talk with these protector alters, you first have to overcome the resistance of *other* protectors who believe these parts to be dangerous or even just "improper" in their speech. Often, the ANPs, for instance, are "meek and mild" people who do not swear or say things bluntly, and they hold back alters whose words they consider rude. The internal censoring can get in the way of the therapist knowing what is really going on. I do not know how many times I have told dissociative clients I have heard those swear words before, and I want to speak directly with the alters who are saying the bad words in their head anyway.

After you overcome the language issue, you need to talk with the alters who would keep you from the "abuser" alters, explaining (with the knowledge that the inner abusers are covertly listening) how the abusers are actually protectors and are trying to keep the person safe. You can reframe the abuser alters' actions as protective or nurturant; they are trying to contain overwhelming memories, control rage, or ameliorate the fear of abandonment. You can point out the protective intent by asking about the effect of this behavior on the person's life (Goodman & Peters, 1995).

Remember that these parts are actually lonely because they are internally isolated, and they long to be accepted into the internal and external community, so just talking to them and listening makes a great deal of difference (Blizard, 1997). When first talking to persecutor/protector alters, it is important to reinforce their strength and self-sufficiency. If you fight them or try to weaken them, they will demonstrate their strength by attacking. Do not talk about their needs for comfort or help at first. This comes later. I often find it effective to challenge them to come out, and talk "tough" with them, not in opposition but in alliance. They think other parts are wimpy, and they can often tolerate large amounts of physical pain, but not emotional pain. They see the expression of vulnerable emotions as a sign of weakness. They simply do not feel emotional pain; it is diverted to other alters—though they might feel anger.

In some personality systems, each "tough" alter has its own "inner child" to hold the vulnerable feelings. Yes, alters can themselves be multiple. And multiplicity often is experienced by more than one generation, particularly in mind abusing families. One client of mine had within her the entire personality system of her mother, complete with mother's "host" and hidden alters underneath that host. When I asked to meet her "mother" alter, she went out to the waiting room and returned to the therapy room as her mother, ready to discuss the daughter's problems.

It is important to find out why the persecutor/protector alters do and say what they do and say. If the client is ritually abused or mind-controlled, at least some of these alters will be doing jobs which they were required to do by their abusers on pain of death or serious bodily harm. They may not understand the effect of doing these jobs on the body or the rest of the personality system. Persecutor/protector parts believed the aggressors' verbally abusive statements and threats, so think they have to keep the system in line to prevent bad, or worse, things from happening. This is not always a false belief.

Finding out the content of the threats from these alters is very important, as it is for most alters. Disclosing the nature of the threat is less likely to stimulate harmful behavior than disclosing the abuse memories, and so is a basic strategy in working with all alters, and persecutor/

protector alters in particular, whose actions can be unintentionally hurtful. Ask them what will happen if they do not do their jobs, or if the system disobeys the abusers. Then you can give them a reality check on whether or not those things can happen in the present. It is, of course, important to check for current contact with abusers, because in that case, certain actions are protective in a concrete and real way. In some cases, clients will have contact and not know it; in other cases, they may have had no contact, but the protective alters might believe they have.

Once you have got to know persecutors a bit, you must empathically join with their underlying emotional states. This may challenge you as a therapist, because they are likely to feel pleasure at being aggressive and powerful, but it will yield many benefits. Frankel and Ahearn's "ghetto model" of the personality system (1996) may be helpful here. They explore the similarities between the organization of eastern European ghettos during the Second World War and the personality systems of persons with DID. This analogy helps us recognize the dilemma of the internal leaders of a personality system, so we will not be so quick to judge those who are loyal to the perpetrators. These are people who were held prisoner and abused throughout their childhoods, so it is no wonder they have parts who cooperated with the "guards" to get a few privileges. Now, you can carefully express empathy for other feelings, such as pain, exhaustion from hard work, and anger at abusers *and at the ANP*. Underneath these emotions are love for the ANP and the hurt child alters, loneliness, and desire to be loved and to belong. Joining with the whole range of emotions helps your client develop ambivalence (which multiples are prevented from experiencing because their opposing feelings are contained in different alters) and co-consciousness of different affective states. Often, persecutors switch quickly to positive, helpful behavior. Transference is really important for these alters, who are so "identified with the aggressor". Only when these clients have an attachment to the therapist can they let go of the attachment to the abuser(s).

Once a working alliance is established, the persecutors, the ANP(s) and other alters must negotiate their differences, resolve long-standing conflicts, and overcome past hurts, both real and imagined. This is often difficult, as other alters are terrified of the persecutors and will not go near them. It takes time to change this situation. Do not take sides; your job is to facilitate a negotiation. Ask what each part needs, and help them listen to each other. In encouraging internal communication, sometimes "deals" can be made, for example, the persecutor will not create flashbacks if the little ones do not talk about their abuse. Agreements are very helpful, as is homework, but make sure you dot every "i" and cross every "t" in an agreement, as young parts can be very concrete. You can understand this in the framework of negotiations. Agreements between alters or between alters and the therapist are not the same as the contracts advocated by some therapists engaged in DID treatment. I do not make contracts with multiples, since they can rarely guarantee that the entire system will agree to something.

Later in therapy, you can help abuser/protector parts do their jobs of protection better, or change their jobs to help the person instead of the abusers, especially when the abusers gave them their jobs.

Alter hierarchies

In the hierarchies of mind-controlled clients, a new layer is usually created every year (often on the person's birthday). This means that some alters have the power, internally, and others fear and obey them. Some believe themselves to be demonic entities. Military/political mind control survivors also often have systems dominated by introjects of the abusers (e.g., doctors, priests, generals and commanders), as well as internalizations of important figures in the belief system, such as Hitler, if the person was abused by a Nazi group.

The most important alters for the therapist to communicate with in a structured system are those who keep the others in line. These are higher-ups in the hierarchy, the ones who issue threats and punishments to those who disobey or order other alters to punish those below them. These important alters are generally aware of what happens in therapy in terms of disclosures or disobedience. They are often not aware of what is going on in the person's everyday life apart from therapy: for example, that the person has not seen the abusers for twenty years, or that the abusers are dead. They have been taught in childhood to believe that the abusers always know what is going on with the person, and that if they do not punish the other parts the abusers will punish them.

Be aware, however, that these parts are keeping track of what you are doing for their own purposes, not just on behalf of the abusers. They are watching you to determine whether you are trustworthy, and whether you are strong enough to receive their disclosures. Their experience is with the abusers, who switch into other states of being, who torture and punish. For a long time they may think you are one of the abusers testing their loyalty, since this kind of trick has been done to them. In most cases, they have been conditioned against you, warned against people who try to find out the secrets and express caring or empathy for them. They will be very cautious—as they should be.

Here is how Svali, who was a programmer for a cult which she calls the Illuminati, explains hierarchies.

> The cult itself is very hierarchical, and puts this hierarchy inside the person. What better way to inspire loyalty to leadership than to put the leadership inside the person's head? . . . The survivor may be horrified to find a representative of one of their worst perpetrators inside, but this was a survival mechanism [because] people will be less likely to punish someone who mimics them but will look down upon and punish a weak crying person . . . The survivor may mimic accents, mannerisms, even claim the perpetrator's life history as their own . . . The ultimate form of internalization comes with internalizing hierarchical councils . . . [which] will correlate roughly to the outside group . . . The[y] will be seen as holding power of life or death, and the child or youth will do anything to gain their favor. The trainer will help with the internalization, using photographs or holographic images of the people to "burn them in". [Svali, 2000]

Svali also writes about the hierarchies created by military programming:

> Military alters inside are extremely hierarchical. They will often be ranked inside, with lower "foot soldiers" accountable to inside alters with increasing rank. . . . A soldier with no rank may not have much knowledge about, or pull, inside the system. Its only job is to blindly obey others, after years of conditioning to do this. Ranking officers inside will often be modeled after outside perpetrators, officers, or trainers. An internal General will often have much more knowledge than lower ranks, and should be befriended, as they can help with therapy.

She points out that these internal officers have strong loyalty programming, including training to die an honorable death rather than betray the group. It is very important to be aware of this programming. Reason with the higher ranked members, respecting the loyalty, bravery, and sense of honor involved in their misguided allegiance to a perpetrator group which deceived them about its purposes. If they change their allegiance, they can be excellent protectors in the present from outside perpetrators.

The higher-ups

The higher-ups who are in charge of the internal hierarchies enforce the loyalty programming, which the rest of the alters obey. They are also the ones whom most of the rest of the system will still obey if they decide to work for healing.

The higher-ups' loyalty training

Higher-up parts have received some of the most horrendous spiritual abuse, in that they have been forced to perpetrate. Here are some examples of loyalty and obedience training that clients have shared with me (once again, a warning about disturbing material).

- A child has to watch another child stretched on a rack until he is pulled apart and dies. She is told to drink his blood, and when she balks she is put on the rack until she agrees to do it. The lesson is, "Never say no."
- A child (on her birthday) has to harm another child to prove she is worthy to receive a demon. She is given a hallucinogenic drug, and as it takes effect, demons are supposedly collected through a spell. She is hit on the head with a hot poker until she invites a specific demon to enter her. With the aid of the drugs, she feels "possessed" by the new demon alter. The demon alter has to say vows of loyalty to Satan.
- A child observes a woman refuse to keep her promise, made before she had children, to kill her own child. Because the woman does not keep her promise, the woman's child has to (apparently) kill her, while the children witnessing the event are instructed to keep their promises.

When a survivor is re-contacted by the abuser group, there are reminders of these trainings. Often the higher-ups are forced to perpetrate on another person, and then told they will always be part of the evil group. They have to repeat their loyalty vows, or sign them in blood. For example, the survivor is kidnapped, and raped and tortured with electroshock until alters agree to listen and repeat their vows of obedience. She is made to hurt another victim to prove her obedience. The cult threatens to kill someone she loves, and/or her therapist, if she disobeys.

When a person has parts who have been through experiences as heinous as these, they also carry considerable shame. When you think of the shame carried by a child for being sexually abused, you can only begin to understand how much shame a person carries if she or he has been forced to participate in the sexual abuse of others, or in what she believes are murders.

Your client will be afraid to disclose these experiences, and very afraid of the perpetrator group that does them. Alters who have been through these things are afraid of their own memories, and afraid you will reject them if you know what they have done. You need to be ready to accept them, no matter what they have been forced to do. You will need to explain to them, in ways they can hear, the coercion which was involved in their past behavior. You must be patient. Your own need to have the client free herself of undeserved self-hatred cannot replace her own process. And you must understand that her guilt is what distinguishes her from people who really are evil. I often say to such clients, "If you were truly evil, you would not be feeling this way. Evil people do not feel guilt for what they do."

Rewards given to the higher-ups

The parts in charge of the personality system, who hold the power over the others, have also been given rewards. Rewards include pleasurable sex, pleasurable drugs, and getting to do the hurting instead of being hurt. If they are supposedly demonic, they may have been taken to a simulated hell, and given the choice of being tortured there or being charge of the torture of other children. Since they believe they are going to hell for eternity anyway as a result of the crimes they have committed, they might naturally choose to be the ones doing the hurting rather than the ones receiving it. Note that these parts have been split off from other discarded parts (garbage kids) who refused to cooperate with the abusers. When the higher-ups confess their guilt to me, I ask how many different alters refused to do the heinous act before they finally agreed to do it. I point out that the perpetrators would not actually kill the child even if s/he chose to be killed rather than do what was required. It takes time to convince them about how they were coerced and tricked. Stockholm Syndrome is a reality, and organized child abusers deliberately exploit it.

Sometimes when these parts watch what you are doing, they can surprise you. For example, one long-term ritually abused client of mine recently discovered she had a hierarchy on the right side (home alters) as well as the left side (cult alters). But it had given us no trouble, because the alter in charge of it, called Mother, had earlier decided to become disloyal and renamed herself Mother-F—-er!

Working your way up hierarchies

Svali has this advice on how to deal with internal leadership councils, the alters at the top of hierarchies:

> Internal leadership councils will often be some of the most resistant to, and hostile towards therapy, especially in the early stages. They will verbally banter with, or refuse to speak to, the therapist, as being "beneath their notice." They are mimicking the haughty, hierarchical attitudes they have been exposed to all their lives.
>
> They also have the most to lose, if the survivor leaves the cult, and may fight this decision tooth and nail. They will often be the alters with an "attitude."
>
> Both the survivor and therapist need to recognize that these parts had powerful needs that were met in the cult setting. To ignore this and argue with them will only entrench their belief that therapists are stupid and unknowing people. Acknowledge their internal role while gently pointing

> out reality. Try to enlist their aid in helping the survivor strengthen. Discuss honestly the pros and cons of leaving the cult. These are highly intellectual alters, and they need to express their concerns and doubts. Setting good boundaries and not allowing verbal abuse of the therapist is important. These alters are used to "pushing people around" verbally, and have been rewarded for it prior to therapy. Now, they need to learn new coping skills and behaviors, and the process may take time. Allow them to vent their anger, displeasure, and fears about the decision to leave the cult. Offer them new jobs inside the person of leadership over safety committees, or even decision making committees.
>
> Sometimes, a system that has broken free from the cult, and has no external hierarchy that they are accountable to[,] will go through a short period of chaos as word gets out: we're free, and don't have to do what the cult tells us to do any more! Hundreds of internal arguments may break out as to: what do we do for a living? Where do we live? What do we eat? What hobbies will we have? Everybody wants to come out, see the daytime, and live this new, free life. But the freedom may cause imbalance with all of the switching going on inside. Enlisting the aid of the internal hierarchy, and creating a limited democracy, with ground rules, may help during this time. Don't dismantle the internal hierarchy overnight, or the systems will be rudderless. Enlist their aid in helping direct which direction the survivor goes. Things will settle down after a period, as the systems learn to listen to each other, vote on ideas, and begin going together in the same direction. [Svali, 2000]

Be aware that as you establish rapport with the "lower-down" parts, the higher-ups will make their presence known, either by coming out and objecting to what you are saying or by creating symptoms or by voices in the person's head. If your client appears to be hearing something scary, you may ask what she is hearing, and then ask who is saying it, and then ask whether you can speak with them. If the client goes through a flashback or body pain, you can ask to speak with whoever is causing it. I have one client whose right hand I take when establishing rapport; after a few seconds her left hand moves forward to remove my hand, and I take a gentle hold of the left hand too, letting those "left side" parts know that they too are welcome to be with me. Even though they usually pull away (and I let them go) the message has been given.

With my most recent mind control client, I began working my way up the hierarchy immediately. Each week I meet a new part whose job is to sabotage any healing by the other parts. I emphasize that they can all now be brothers and sisters, equal partners in healing. I meet "Hitler" or "God" or "Beelzebub," greet them in a friendly manner, and invite them to work with the others towards healing the whole person from the abuse and eventually helping other hurt children. Several of them have decided to change their names. They are enthusiastic about having a purpose other than the one they were given. They are delighted to discover that they were not "created" by the abusers, but were simply split apart from the other parts by the pain the abusers had given. The ones with important jobs have learnt to respect the "blue pile," the bruised and beaten parts who resisted doing the jobs and were discarded by the abusers. Later, when we work through memories, we will involve the blue pile too, so that they will heal from their pain.

In getting to know such a system, I frequently ask each alter if someone else is threatening them or giving them orders, and then ask to talk to their boss. This expedites the process of working my way up, and if they decide to change sides it makes the work much easier.

Survivor Jen Callow (See Chapter Seventeen) describes the new job description adopted by her Council, once they were enlisted in the service of healing:

> The Council was often able to suggest which programs were safe to work on and where inner booby traps and the like were a concern. Rather than stay a dictatorship, which would have been detrimental to our healing work, our Council chose to become an active part of our system. They disbanded several years ago, as they weren't needed in that role anymore. Many of them now assist our system in other ways and participate to varying degrees in our outer life. Some have integrated over the years. In the end, the parts designed to be the most loyal to our programming turned out to be some of our greatest allies in healing.

Backups

If you manage to gain the cooperation of the higher-ups, and therefore of the primary personality system, you can expect some trouble for a little while. All alters with jobs, including those in charge of the system, have "backups," alters who have received the same training and are supposed to take over the roles of any alter who becomes disloyal. Do not be discouraged. This will be manageable. Backups are pretty easy to convince to change sides, if the primary higher-ups have already decided to work for healing. Backups do not have much real life experience and are hollow compared to the alters they are backing up.

Work your way up the hierarchy, getting to know resistant alters, until you have at least some trust from those in charge of the system, who have until now been identified with the perpetrating group. If disclosures are made prematurely, you can expect that the client will have flashbacks and engage in self-harm and suicide attempts, plus there is the risk that alters will report to the abusers that s/he is disclosing, and they will make moves to stop her. This may take several years, or only a short time, depending upon the individual client. In the meantime, you can explore in the inner world, and intervene to make it more pleasant for the parts, and you can work on helping the client achieve safety and stabilization, all of which will be discussed in the next few chapters. Only after you have good cooperation from the personality system can you begin your work with traumatic memories.

Outliers

Outliers, as I call them, are outside the main personality system. Their job is to keep those in the main personality system in line. Outliers may be located in a structure separate from the main structure. For example, two of my clients programmed in Ontario both had their main alters in an inverted pyramid, and their outliers in rings around the outside of the pyramid. As you have seen, survivors of ritual abuse often hear voices, alters who are often viewed by themselves and other parts of the system as demonic beings, ghosts, or other evil and generally non-human entities. (They may also purport to be other people, living or dead, or God or Jesus.) This identity gives them more power over the alters who are supposed to run the system. However, they are just alters like everyone else, with a job to do; their job is to keep those in the main personality system in line. One such group that I encountered led to a delightful resolution, as described below.

The Woo-Woo Kids

The client left me a message: "I went to bed really early and woke up at 12:45 a.m. and can't get out of my head. I keep replaying everyone I know who is dead and they are taunting me, telling me that I'm making it all up and they are watching me and know that I'm a liar." She managed to calm herself with medication until our next appointment.

I know this client pretty well, and we have worked through much of her training and abuse memories. So I did as I usually do with her. I requested she ask the part named High Priestess 9, who was the main alter in charge of the system, whether she knew who inside was making my client hear these voices. I was assuming that the voices were neither real dead people nor memory fragments, but something some alter personality had been trained to do.

The reply was that High Priestess 9 was also affected by hearing the voices of the dead, as was Satan 9. I knew these two well. It had taken me about a year to work my way up to High Priestess 9 and convince her that I wanted to work with her, rather than against her. The left side of this client's system had nine layers, and each one had a high priestess, a Satan, and a complement of deliberately created alter personalities.

I remembered a group of three alters I had worked with about a year ago, the Big High Satan and two others called the Entities. This little group functioned to keep the alters in charge of the system in check by frightening them, Big High Satan frightening the rulers on Level 9, and the Entities in turn frightening him. It had taken some convincing for this client's system to let me actually meet the "Big High Satan." Did I not know he was the real Satan, implanted in her at a ritual? The alters knew by now that all the other Satans from ages three to twelve were just alter personalities. But this one was the *real thing*. That was in line with what many survivors and therapists believe, that somehow real demonic entities are attached to the personalities within a ritual abuse survivor.

I reminded her that little Satan 1 had thought Satan 2 was the real Satan, and Satan 8 had thought Satan 9 was the real Satan, and so on. Why should this new situation be any different? And, sure enough, it was not. The Big High Satan, who was all of eleven years old, boasted about how he was the one *really* in charge. We worked through some of his memories, and he became, for the most part, a cooperative part of the system.

This new problem sounded to me as if it might originate with our young Big High Satan. I asked to speak to him. He came out. "I'm the only one who can make those voices," he bragged. I asked why he was doing it. Because Stan was telling him to.

The problem with this was that Stan was not an alter. He was an actual high priest and the uncle who had abused my client. And he had died of cancer several years ago.

I asked the Big High Satan whether he thought anyone inside could be impersonating Stan, since he himself was impersonating several different dead people. He was indignant. No, he was the one really in charge, and he was the only one who could do the voices realistically. I reminded him that the Entities had been split off from him in order to control him, just as he was supposed to control the rest of the system. Oh, yeah: then, he guessed, it could be them. I asked him to check it out. He reported that he heard laughter. They were laughing about how they had fooled him.

We all laughed together about how the Big High Satan went "Woo-woo" and scared the rest of the system, and how the Entities had done the same thing to him. We decided to call them "the Woo-Woo Kids" from then on.

Conflicts in the field regarding "outliers": demons, ghosts, and "attachments"

There is disagreement in the field about how literally to view alters who see themselves as demons. Should they be seen as "attachments" or intrusions from a spiritual power?

I believe that this issue affects the proper psychotherapeutic treatment of our clients. To address it, I must challenge certain Christian perspectives. I want to point out here that my criticism is of the way in which these beliefs are applied to our understanding of the internal structures of survivors and what is required for their recovery, rather than of the beliefs, *per se*. I certainly do not have the right to criticize anyone's religious beliefs. In fact, I would like to point out that I am not even criticizing what might be seen as the extreme beliefs that are the subjects of this book, but the *practices* that hurt children and others. However, certain beliefs lead inevitably to cruel or unethical practices, and I believe it is important to challenge those beliefs. For example, Nazism is inextricably involved with the idea of the superiority of the Aryan race, and therefore the right of Aryans to exterminate those of other races.

Many survivors who experience "demons" seek a spiritual remedy for their experience, and a way to battle them, in evangelical Christian churches. In some such churches they do find helpers willing to work with them from a specifically Christian standpoint.

Among those professionals who have written about these issues from the conservative Christian perspective are the late Pastor Tom Hawkins of Restoration in Christ Ministries (2010), and Reverend Tom Ball (2008). Both of these men have extensive knowledge of, and experience with, dissociative disorders, in particular those which result from ritual abuse and mind control.

As you have seen, survivors of ritual abuse hear voices purporting to be demons or other evil entities (and might also hear voices purporting to be God or Jesus). Like other evangelical Christians who work with ritual abuse, Tom Ball makes the assumption that some of these demons are real entities which have been "attached" to the alter personalities through curses, etc. He recommends treatment in which the demon is told it has no right to be in the person and is commanded to "go directly to the throne of Jesus for Him to do with you as he will" (p. 441). Ball states that for him the best proof that real demons have been expelled is demonstrated "when the demons are prayed against authoritatively and commanded to stop bothering the person and leave [and, as a result] the upsetting feelings, ideation and symptoms do in fact stop quickly" (p. 435). He notes that other Christians working in the field "assert the best method [by which] to be sure a demon is present is to exercise the gift of discernment of spirits" (p. 435).

Hawkins went further. He saw ritual abuse not merely as a treatment issue, but also as a religious war. From his perspective,

> Most [ritual abuse survivors] were forced to engage in rituals that included vows, oaths, sacrifices, or covenants made with the evil spiritual realm. These 'legal transactions' gave evil spirits, or demons, the right to 'attach' to the specific alters involved and to exert varying degrees of influence and control over them. They may play a role, for instance, in enforcing programming; blocking memories; and re-traumatizing any alter who fails to fulfill cult purposes, tells secrets, or seeks outside help. These demonized alters have essentially been brought under bondage to Satan and his agenda. . . . Connections can also be made to evil entities of a higher echelon than demons . . . Many of the more sophisticated cult perpetrators also claim that dissociated identities can be taught, or coerced under conditions of severe duress, to enter states of transcendent consciousness that connect them with what we have come to call the 'second heaven,' referring to the 'kingdom of the air' over which Satan is the reigning 'prince' (Eph. 2:2). Here they can seemingly be held 'captive' by evil cosmic beings and covertly used in Satan's worldwide agenda that is being directed from the spiritual realm. Within the person's system, these alters generally maintain a seemingly out-of-body perception and may be considered absent or even 'dead' by the other identities. [2010, p. 62]

This belief system has been influential over many Christians and even secular therapists working with ritual abuse survivors. While Hawkins said that "A therapist must always respect the worldview of the client" (p. 63), he also stated that

> Successful resolution of the major spiritual bondages occurring in RA survivors requires . . . an understanding of the spiritual principles relating to the cosmic struggle between the forces of God and the forces of Satan as found in the Bible. While the secular community is well-equipped to deal with many of the psychological issues involved in DID-RA, releasing the person from bondage to the spiritual realm can only occur through the power of God. Therefore, this part of the process needs to be facilitated by a pastor, Christian counselor, or prayer minister who has thorough training in working with the dissociative disorders. [*ibid.*]

How did Hawkins reconcile his respect for the client's world view with his own view that these spiritual bondages require spiritual interventions? In an email to the Ritual Abuse and Mind Control Special Interest Group of the ISSTD (used by permission), he made it clear:

> Since I am coming from a Christian perspective I make my own perspective clear (usually that is why they seek me out) but at the same time I work hard to not impose my views on the clients. A major component is encouraging them come to a place of safety to express their anger and disappointment, including "anger with G-d".[1] Nearly all of them have parts with conflicting perspectives and respecting their internal diversity allows for them to solve these conflicts and come to their own conclusions with a cohesive internal view they can own. If spiritual issues are not dealt with in a balanced manner it actually fosters more dissociation, in my perspective. [personal communication]

I see several problems with Hawkins' position. His analysis and recovery plan might be all very well for those therapists with the "correct" religious beliefs, especially if they only see clients who specifically seek them out for that reason, but it leaves the rest of us out in the cold. How can we help ritual abuse survivors effectively if we do not subscribe to these beliefs, or if our clients do not? And how can we intervene in a religious way if doing so violates our professional codes of ethics?

Hawkins was aware of this problem, and stated in a footnote,

> Dealing with spiritual issues of any kind can sometimes put a licensed therapist into a difficult situation. I encourage those with licensure to seek good counsel and get a clear understanding of their legal responsibilities under such licensure." He then suggests that we therapists work together on a team with what he calls "spiritual leaders.

This is, presumably, to get around the fact that the ethics of professional licensing bodies (who disapprove of imposing beliefs on clients) differ from those of religious organizations.

He introduced another complication: "Disconnecting RA survivors from the spiritual entities holding them in bondage is not a simple process. The specific legal rights claimed by the demons and/or evil cosmic beings must be ascertained and renounced by the identities involved" (2010, p. 63). (At the end of Volume 1 of his book, Hawkins has a table containing "Renunciations and Affirmations" designed to deal with this. He intended Volume 2 to go further into the spiritual dynamics.)

In my opinion, this collusion with the alleged validity of such agreements is unwise and therapeutically inappropriate. The notion of "legal" agreements and rights is used a great deal by mind controllers of all kinds. Children are often made to sign such agreements in blood and are told they are "married" or are bound for ever. Rather than simply accepting that these are genuine legal agreements made in some heavenly or hellish court, therapists should explain that such agreements, especially when made by under-age children under coercion, are not legal or binding in any way. Once the victim lets go of his or her belief in them, they are meaningless. Hawkins stated that "The specific legal rights claimed by the demons and/or evil cosmic beings must be ascertained and renounced by the identities involved" (*ibid.*). In light of what we know about how they were actually created and the alters who maintain them, it could indeed be helpful to take time to renounce agreements which were made, but simply as a statement of the survivor's free choice, not because they are actually legal agreements. One client of mine "divorced" Satan, but even this creative act might ascribe too much credibility to such agreements, the acceptance of whose legitimacy and power I believe to be detrimental to recovery.

Steve Oglevie is a well-known and self-described "deprogrammer" and expert in different mind control systems who gives workshops on the different kinds of mind control programming. Many therapists have attended these trainings. Here is how one day-long event is described:

> Recognizing Spiritual Evil, Recognizing Dissociated and Disembodied Foreign Human Spirits and 'Installed' Personalities. Understanding of Spiritual Evil and how it Interferes in the Therapy Process. The therapist will be introduced to the very complex field of dissociated and disembodied foreign human spirits including their level of attachment to the client and ways in which they can be successfully disentangled from the true humanity and sent away. Therapists will be introduced to understanding installed personalities and how to differentiate between installed and genuine personalities.

Such trainings have a strong effect on how the therapists view the problems they are dealing with, and I consider their being labeled as "psychotherapeutic" training to be unwise. If a person working with a mind-controlled client subscribes to such a definite belief system, one which influences what they believe about what is wrong with the client and how it has to be fixed, there is not much room for the client to determine his or her own world view. This is of great concern. Such strongly held beliefs—developed to the point of being "absolute truths"—have an even greater potential to influence our clients even when they are not made explicit.

Prayer, beliefs, and treatment

In his chapter in *Ritual Abuse in the 21st Century*, Ball (2008) reviews several different Christian methods of "inner healing." His favored approach is Theophostic Prayer, which involves asking Jesus to take the client to the origin and source of a troubling emotion, then having the client look around and describe the memory all the way to the end, find the lie embedded in the memory, and ask Jesus to bring His truth to that lie. In Ball's experience, this brings rapid release and freedom to survivors.

If you break it down, in many ways this part of his approach is not different from the memory work I recommend, which many therapists have found effective: having the survivor watch a traumatic memory from start to finish, and see the lies and tricks embedded in it. It can be done therapeutically, without the explicit presence of Jesus, which certainly makes it easier for survivors who are not Christian or those whose ideas about Jesus have been severely distorted by their programming. For survivors with a strong ANP who is explicitly Christian, the addition of the prayer and the visualization of Jesus probably creates an easier and more comforting way to view the traumatic memories.

In a 2010 post to a ritual abuse and mind control discussion list (used by permission), Ball offers this useful caution to those wanting to make specifically Christian, or spiritual, interventions with this population:

> I have recently learned how absolutely important it is to take my cues from the survivor about using language when referring to anything spiritual. Terms I take for granted, I now understand, may actually cause internal pain to some parts of the personality stuck in programs related to certain abuse episodes . . . because those terms may have been used as part of the abuse/programming. But, by asking the survivor to pay attention inside, and then testing out a spiritual term that feels intellectually honest to the survivor and really does reflect the intent of the survivor, I find we can easily come up with a word for G-d that does not upset any parts inside, but that allows the survivor and me to draw/call on that spiritual resource during sessions.

Old Lady's ritual abuse experiences, described in Chapter Five, illustrate both a Satanist or Luciferian world view and a fundamentalist Christian world view, believing in specific controlling deities and other entities who interfere in human life and expect loyalty and obedience. The primary difference between these "mirror image" world views seems to concern who will win the battle and control the universe—God or the other side—and who is right and therefore deserves people's loyalty.

But what about those who do not have this particular religious perspective, or who do not have religious beliefs at all? For them, the insistence on having Jesus involved might easily feel alien, or even alienating. It can also feel like yet another violation of their autonomy. A point stated earlier should be highlighted here. Even if their personal position is not explicitly expressed, therapists need to be careful to avoid influencing their clients' development of their new world view—or even appearing to want to. This is particularly relevant for mind control survivors, who often assume that the therapist is their new "handler." My clients often wait for me to tell them what to believe and what to do. I tell them that I do not want them to obey me or believe what I say; I want to help them regain the freedom to choose their beliefs and their behavior. When I explain that I do not intend to try to control them in that way (or in any way), they look at me in shock and say something like, "That's not possible." But of course it is: that is what recovery is all about!

Let us look at how, by examining one particular consequence of the fact that survivors of these abuses all have dissociative disorders. My client, Tony, had an ANP who was a very strong Christian; his alters called him "religious Tony." Tony was a religious Christian, but among the alters who controlled his personality system were Satanists, who believed as they had been taught, and others who disbelieved everything. If I were to work with Tony from an explicitly Christian world view, I would be supporting the ANP but possibly violating the rights of, and the potential for any empathic bond with, the other alters. I would also be reinforcing the view that Tony's abusers imprinted in him: that life is all about the battle between God and external demonic forces. Tony was also filled with religious delusions, including having an alter named "Almighty God." How could a person like this come to develop a unified world view, and make meaning out of his horrendous history? Surely it would begin with internal communication and beginning to think for himself. The beliefs of the conflicting "selves" he carried were something only he could resolve, a challenge that required absolute impartiality on the part of his therapist. Even if a "Christian" client, such as Tony, deliberately comes to a religious organization for help, and receives this team service, what would the team do—and what should they do—about the fact that different parts of Tony have different beliefs?

Not all therapists who use the methods taught by Oglevie and other deprogrammers do so from a personal belief system. While not taking a personal position of endorsing these recommendations, some therapists maintain a perspective of "objectivity." They suggest that one should not take a stand either for or against such belief systems, but should support a client's belief where it exists. In my view, however, even this ostensibly "non-judgmental" position also has serious drawbacks.

Psychologist Ellen Lacter (2011), whose ritual abuse and mind control web page was mentioned earlier in Chapter Two, offers a perspective that might be seen as typical of this school of thought. She describes what she sees as the benefits of working within the client's own cultural world view without taking a position about the "reality" of any such belief system:

> When clients perceive the presence of spiritual evil, internally or externally, I usually work with that perception, rather than initiating dialogue about whether the perceived evil is real or not. If I were to try to convince a ritually abused client that human spirits or entities are not real, to try to reduce their fear, etc., I might stand a chance with some hosts, but no chance with self-states raised in Satanism or abusive witchcraft. Those self-states were raised in cultures rooted in theologies that [assert] such entities are more powerful and enduring than human life. And these self-states are barely orientated to the outside world. Programming is most deeply resolved when it

> succeeds in changing the reality of programmed alters in the inner world. Whether such 'evil' is spiritually real or not, it is psychologically real to these self-states, and I believe it can only be dealt with as such. [pp. 128–129]

Reading this, one issue that immediately surfaces for me is the character of the belief system we are talking about here. Is it wise to "work within" the cultural world view of someone raised as a Satanist or a Luciferian, or a Nazi? Once we acknowledge that, we need to address how the belief system was installed—with abuse, tricks, and lies to our clients. In my view, we need to weaken the entire belief system so that the client can recognize they were told many lies. I told my Nazi-raised client about Barack Obama being the US president. I told the internal "programmer" of a client raised by Satanists that "Satan" (that is, the man who dressed up as him in the rituals) was dead. He was shocked, as he had been told that Satan never dies. Yes, and that *he* would never die if he killed his own body. This was a good opportunity for him to discover that the abusers lied.

When Lacter describes her treatment protocol for "demonic" alters, she is on the same ground, albeit with different language, as Tom Ball and myself, but these similarities occur in spite of, rather than because of, her theoretical base. It is at the conclusion of her statement that she acknowledges what I see as the real mechanism for recovery:

> I have found that to achieve 'separation' of perceived attachments, whether this mechanism is partly spiritual or only psychological, survivors must recall the rituals in which 'transfers' and 'captures' were perceived to be accomplished, and then assert their will to reject each act. I tell survivors that I believe that any act intended to spiritually control children, who are not aware that they had any choice to the contrary, can now be opposed and 'separated' spiritually and psychologically by a simple act of one's will, that we each have control of our spiritual self. I believe that an overwhelmed, frightened, and abused psyche is what permitted the perceived 'admission' of these entities and introjects. *Making the trauma conscious and the exercise of free will is what allows for their rejection and separation*. [*ibid*., my italics]

In my view, it is making the trauma conscious that creates the healing, along with the exercise of the client's free will. True, free will can be exercised in rejecting and separating perceived attachments, but it can be exercised just as well by the whole person asserting that she or he will no longer be part of any religion or belief system which does evil, without all the complications I have described.

Furthermore, the theoretical base of Lacter's discussion, which defines some alters as "attachments", builds in a real treatment limitation, which can best be understood through the review of how "demon parts" are created. The therapeutic review of these traumatic memories needs to include the parts played by all of the alters who were involved. This includes the "garbage kids", who were discarded because they refused to perform the desired evil behavior, as well as those parts who came forward to assume the responsibility of doing the lesser of such evils as, "You kill this rabbit or we will kill your baby brother," or, "You stick this cross into this person or we will do it to them and to you." The child is told that these alters, who split off to do this evil act, are not part of the child, but are "demons" or some other kind of attachment. And one can easily see how these tormented and victimized helpers could well be the alters that Lacter describes in her discussion of how the parts seen as demonic attachments can be identified:

> Many survivors easily differentiate self-states from perceived introjects or entities. For others, the therapist can help the survivor differentiate these through dialogue. Self-states, even those with a hostile veneer, usually desire some human connection with the therapist, are motivated to feel 'better', and their hostility has a quality of underlying fear and pain. Perceived introjects and entities generally do not establish a 'felt' human connection with the therapist. Instead, they demonstrate scorn for the survivor and intense hatred for the therapist. [*ibid*.]

Similarly, some of the sources Ball cites suggest that you can tell a demonic spirit if it slithers like a snake or has rolling eyes or looks hateful. Ball, however, is wise enough to recognize that a hostile presentation does not necessarily mean a real demonic entity. After all, any alter that has been told that it will be destroyed is going to be hostile.

I have one client in whom it took years of therapy before the cult alters could accept that I was not just another abuser testing their loyalty. (Such tests are common in the training of cult alters.) An alter in another client, whom I met very recently, was very hostile, and very much acted the role of a "spiritual attachment." It demonstrated the "scorn for the survivor and intense hatred for the therapist" that, according to Lacter, define demonic entities. I wondered why. I asked the alter whether it thought I was a member of the cult and was testing it to see whether it remained loyal. *Yes, of course.* This alter simultaneously believed that I was an outsider who would destroy it, and that I was a cult member who would punish it if it showed any signs of disloyalty. What a set of feelings to juggle. I got the system leader to explain to it why she had become a "traitor," and that she had known me for several years and they really were safe. Then it relaxed.

These parts may be the ultimate challenge to the therapist's understanding of dissociative self states but, in the end, they are no different from any other part. You cannot judge that some part is external to the personality system just because of its behavior, no matter how "evil" that behavior, or its attitudes or self-identity.

In my view, the way to interpret what Lacter describes is to see those parts with an extra dose of compassion, not a willingness to collude with the client's view that they are evil. It is not hard to see that such reactions are normal for an alter who has been told (1) that it is not part of the body and should kill that useless and traitorous body, and (2) that it is an evil spiritual being and if it talks to a therapist it will be destroyed. It takes patience, persistence, and kindness to break through their defenses and help them know they are now safe and do not need to continue to do their jobs.

Restoring the human dignity of alters who have been forced to perpetrate is one of the most important and difficult parts of therapy with ritual abuse and mind control survivors. For this to happen, the alters who performed the evil acts need to see how they came into being and the double binds involved. But if these alters are rejected and ousted as demons or "attachments," they lose this chance for recovery. Certainly it is possible that in some cases, with wise Christian therapy, they can come to believe that they are simply alters to whom a demon was attached, and they can get rid of it. But if the abusers told them that they *were* that demon, and they, along with the rest of the system, believe it, recovery will not take place.

Lacter does not see this conflict. She says that this approach yields successful outcomes, and says that she has "consistently observed that when affected self-states perceive spirits and entities to be gone, the survivor experiences tremendous relief." In fact, she says, "To date, no survivor I have worked with ever felt that they had separated a part of the self in the process" (*ibid*.).

Perhaps this has not happened to her. But it has to me. At my client Teresa's request, I experimented a few times with removing such parts from her, following a protocol such as that of Hawkins. She also had exorcisms in churches. The alters *always* came back. In LisaBri's story you saw the chaos in her system caused by her cult-aligned alters (including several "Satans"). After these parts were banished, they became even more destructive and dangerous, continuing to do their jobs but now in hiding. Suicide attempts, self-harm, and flashbacks continued, but the ANP was not aware of the causes. Those who approach such alters as demonic may be similarly unaware of the negative consequences of their recommended interventions.

What if you are a therapist who happens to be a Christian, reading this? Must you accept the approach recommended by the most vocal Christians working in this field? I do not believe so. Many Christians do not believe in "possession" as a literal fact, or in "legal agreements" between coerced children and external spiritual entities. Even among those that do, you will find Christian therapists who, like any others, can learn to detect "sheep in wolves' clothing," child alters who have been told they are evil spiritual beings, and have been forced to perpetrate through being placed in double binds. Jesus' teaching is that "by their fruits you shall know them"—in other words, an evil or a good being is distinguished not by its appearance or its supposed loyalty, but by its actions when it has an actual choice.

In twenty years of working with ritual abuse survivors, I have seen several integrate fully, and several others achieve healthy co-consciousness. I have never met a single real demon or attachment. It is true, as both Tom Ball and Ellen Lacter also point out, that putting together the memory of the events that created the belief in possession is crucial. But I disagree with the assertion that we need to believe that the possession itself is real, or to go along with the client's belief in the interest of cultural appropriateness.

As we work with abuse that is so clearly evil, it might be difficult for some to accept the fact that we will never all be able to share a position about whether evil spiritual beings exist. But what we can all agree about is that evil is about what we do, and its essence is doing harm to other people and living things. Raping little children and teaching them to kill is evil. It only muddies the waters to add notions of external forces to the treatment conversation. Evil done in the name of Jesus, or Mohammed, or Buddha, or Hitler, or Stalin, or Satan, or the "free world," or democracy, is still evil.

When we apply our theories to the question of evil, we should remain mindful of Occam's Razor, a well-known scientific concept: "One should not increase, beyond what is necessary, the number of entities required to explain anything." Dissociation offers a powerful explanation for the existence of relatively autonomous and destructive entities within someone's mind. An alter, a part of a person, separated from that person's capacity for empathy, is more able to do evil than an integrated human being.

Even the ritual abusers, who might for centuries have believed they were attaching real demons to children, now recognize they are creating dissociative disorders, as Katz states in Chapter Seven. They still *tell* the children they are attaching demonic spirits, or their own spirits, or the spirits of dead relatives, but they now know they are actually splitting children and naming and training the alters. Should we continue to subscribe to the belief system the abusers have implanted, even when they themselves know that it is dissociation that gives them power over their victims? Our responsibility is to help those desiring to recover from such evil to be able to do so. The answer lies in psychotherapy techniques and practices that are appropriate for mind-controlled persons with dissociative disorders. It is our job to assist our clients in moving toward a state of wholeness, whether or not it comes in the form of literal "integration." In my view, to approach evil as a set of disembodied evil entities that are attached to our clients interferes with our ability to achieve that goal.

> The belief in a supernatural source of evil is not necessary: men alone are quite capable of every wickedness (Joseph Conrad).

> Ethics . . . are nothing but reverence for life. This is what gives me the fundamental principle of morality, namely, that good consists in maintaining, promoting, and enhancing life, and that destroying, injuring, and limiting life are evil (Albert Schweitzer).

Note

1. Note the use of "G-d", which is commonly used in online survivor discussions because the word "God" is frequently triggering to survivors.

CHAPTER TEN

Dealing with programming: alternative strategies

Some programs are triggered deliberately; some, accidentally. Some programs reveal themselves early, as they are part of the abusers' plan to sabotage therapy. This can alert you to the fact that your client has mind control. Once that fact has been established, the therapist knows s/he must consider that a particular issue may be due to the activity of trained alter personalities. Instead of wasting time suggesting that the client take soothing baths to promote sleep, you can search for the alters who are responsible for the insomnia. If the client were cutting her arms, you can find the alters involved, ask how they were trained to cut and why they do it, and eventually work through these training memories. You can use whatever has been triggered to search for the trainings involved. Then, you can take care of them in some way, and eliminate or arrest the problem behavior.

Learning from what is triggered

A client of mine was triggered by an incident in which her cat caught a fly, which made a loud buzzing sound. All her alters went deep inside and hid for a week, until I saw her. Two different things were going on. In one, child parts who had been put in a pit with rotting meat and dead things and flies now began to think they were back in the pit. I had to give them a little biology lecture about flies, and make sure they knew they were safe in my client's apartment. The buzzing of the fly also brought out an alter who had been trained with electroshock administered (with a buzzing sound) by a helmet. The alter made a buzzing sound himself, which frightened all the other alters who had worn the helmet. I had to bring him out and show him that there was no helmet on his head, and he was in a safe place; he could let the others know that. I then had the alter in charge of the memory storage put the memories of the pit and of the helmet safely away, so those affected would no longer have flashbacks.

You will make your decision as to how to address a triggered program based on your treatment agenda. In treating mind control, it is wise to be systematic in your approach to therapy. Generally speaking, memory work comes only after a good deal of groundwork has been laid. (This will be discussed further in Chapter Sixteen, "Working with the traumatic memories".) In this example, it was not time to do memory work. Since we did not need to work through all the memories of the "pit" or the helmet when we found what was triggered by the fly's buzzing, we just had to put them away. Sometimes it is preferable to just turn off and put away what is triggered, and continue to work with whatever you have made your priority. However, when the triggering has produced a dangerous behavior, such as severe self-harm, it is smart to make it a priority to work through the memories of the original training, once the client is ready for memory work.

It is possible for a therapist or client to use perpetrator-group-created programs for helpful purposes. For example, an alter trained not to feel pain can reduce the pain resulting from a re-abusive group contact. An alter trained to put other alters to sleep can put to sleep alters who are programmed to go to group meetings or to harm the body. An alter trained to make the others forget events can make the alters who are supposed to report to the group what they have disclosed forget having talked about the memories.

Asking, negotiating, and commanding

Many interventions that are not useful or even wise in therapy with non-mind-controlled clients are helpful and even necessary with survivors of mind control.

Therapists may affect programs through asking, negotiating, or commanding. Naturally, I prefer to ask or negotiate before attempting to command.

But with some personality systems, asking and negotiating does not work, and verbal commands are necessary. This is because you are speaking with very young alters who are trained to respond only to commands, often phrased in a particular way. They are concrete and literalistic. They are not offended by commands.

The three little words, "Turn it off," can have profound effects. One client would leave me telephone messages, and when I replied would not pick up the phone. However, I would leave a message giving the order "Turn it off," and without the client understanding why, the problem would be alleviated.

With another client, I had to add "in the name of Satan" in order to get the young alters to comply. Since I had difficulty with that phrasing, I added "whom I don't believe in," which apparently did not give them any difficulty. So I would say "Turn off the Pain, in the name of Satan, whom I don't believe in." You can say firmly "I command you in the name of Satan, whom I don't believe in, to stop, turn off, and put away the Suicide Program" (for example). If you and/or the client are Christians, you may add "And I ask you in the name of Jesus, whom I do believe in, to stop, turn off, and put away the program."

With some clients, a general command will work, as internal programmer alters (that is, those that are trained to activate the memories which will produce symptoms) are always listening. With other clients, it will only work if you know the cult-assigned name of the internal programmer alters, and command them by name. (They do not have to be cooperating with you, and do not have to be "out" in the body, for this to work.) Internal programmers are controlled by strong obedience programs; that is why they often do not want their names known, because they do not want to be commanded by name.

One danger in doing this is that some insider alters will believe you are a member of the perpetrator group. So, if you use commands, be sure to explain to the whole system that you have learnt this from other therapists, and that you are not one of the abusers. This applies even more strongly to the use of triggers deliberately installed by the perpetrator group.

When you search for alters who are creating these problems, keep in mind that their training probably included threats of punishment to them if they did not comply with the abusers' instructions. Usually there are other alters who are supposed to punish them if they do not comply, and backups who will do their jobs if they become disloyal. You can search for the punishers and the backups and dialogue with them until they agree to turn it off. You will need to update any alters you speak with, explaining how the perpetrators can no longer hurt them (because of time and/or distance), or if the group is local and still harassing the person, the group can only hurt them if it gains access to the body.

Generally, however, as long as the trained behavior has been performed, it may be all right to turn it off, though it may be turned on again in response to a cue or to other alters' disobedience to their instructions.

With programs such as flooding of emotions, the alters involved might not feel safe in turning the program off. But you might be able to negotiate that they turn it down so that it is barely noticeable. Or you could ask the spinner alters to spin in the opposite direction, so that they spin the effects back into the original alter rather than out to the rest of the system. Or you could find a way for them to implement the program without doing harm. One client of mine used to come into therapy sessions with instructions to harm me. She would take a thumbtack from my notice board and prick me lightly with it once. Then she would say "Okay, I've done my job," and we would have no further problems. Similarly, you can have the child alters draw on their arm in red ink rather than cutting it to draw blood.

Use of perpetrator-created triggers

Most programs, if they have "on" triggers (cues which trigger trained alters to do their jobs), also have "off" triggers. Sometimes you can convince alters to show you the "off" triggers and, with their permission, can use them. Note that you do not have to know alters' names for touch triggers to be effective.

Psychologist and ritual abuse expert Randy Noblitt uses such triggers, with the client's permission, to assess whether or not they have been subjected to ritual abuse or mind control, and also to help insure the safety of survivors. He has written a monograph on those triggers which he believes will access alter personalities safely. He obtains a general informed consent where he asks the client's permission to "explore his/her mind" (Noblitt, 1998). He makes a video recording of the session that becomes the property of the client so that the individual knows what has transpired and can be assured that no further victimization has occurred. He uses benign triggers for this purpose, ones that will elicit child alters or protective, knowledgeable alters. After what he calls "dissociation of identity" occurs (and it always does to some extent) Dr Noblitt explains what occurred in terms of the individual's response to triggers. The individual has the video to study, to see how he/she was triggered and develop self-defensive responses to triggers. Dr Noblitt is always happy to explain how he obtained his knowledge. He is the first to admit that his information is not all-inclusive. The reader might have concerns about his use of this technique, but Dr Noblitt's willingness to learn, courage to employ it for the individual's benefit, and encouragement for the individual to become empowered and self-advocate make it clear that he is not a "bad guy." He has never had any response other than relief that someone has been able to unlock the door and let the secrets emerge.

I do not want to list all the triggers that I know in this book, because they could be misused. However, I can mention three that might be useful.

1. Grasping your client's arms firmly and briefly halfway between the shoulders and the elbows will turn off a spinning program temporarily.
2. Holding your hands out in front of you, palms upward, then drawing them quickly towards your chest and closing them will temporarily turn off all programs.
3. Running the fingers of your left hand down the left side of the face from the cheekbone will cause the person to forget whatever memories or flashbacks s/he has just experienced. I noticed two different clients doing this to themselves spontaneously at the end of sessions where we had dealt with traumatic memories. This enabled them to go out into the world after these sessions without being still in a state of shock from the traumatic memory.

I do not know how widespread these particular triggers are, but I have found them effective with many clients.

If you use triggers (e.g., special touches or hand signals), make sure that your client has confirmed what effect they will have on him or her and agreed to allow you to use them. Also, explain how you learned these triggers. Otherwise your client may believe that you must be one of the perpetrator group to know such things. One client finds it effective when I do these triggers on my own body. Without having to touch her, I am able to use some of them when I believe they will keep her safer. For example, I used a signal (tracing a line down the forehead) to keep her "left side" (cult-abused) alters separate from her "right side" (everyday life) alters, when the left side alters were increasing the suicidality of the right side alters.

Some triggers are common to many survivors, but some are unique. One thing that all touch triggers have in common, according to Stella Katz, is that they are installed at acupressure points. (For this reason, acupressure techniques can cause unexpected effects in this population.) The same trigger may activate or turn off different behaviors in different survivors, so be careful in using triggers. Turning off a behavior through a trigger does not mean it will not recur. Permanently deactivating the training can only be done by working through the training memory with all involved alters.

It must be remembered, however, that use of perpetrator-installed triggers by the therapist, or the use of force by certain alters of the client on other alters will be experienced by the client as coercive if the alters being triggered do not consent. Cooperation is always to be preferred to coercion, and can often be achieved. For example, an alter who is trained to harm or kill the body may agree to be put to sleep or internally isolated until the next therapy session, when the self-harm program might be undone. It is preferable to convince the internal alters to do these things rather than having the therapist do it via triggers. If and when it is necessary for the therapist to use touch triggers to turn off dangerous behaviors, an alter should first be out who does not mind being touched, and who understands that the therapist is not a group member just because s/he knows about triggers.

Program codes

Another way that alters can be helped to change their jobs is through their program codes, which are the sequences of letters and numbers which, when spoken by the correct person or in the correct manner, will turn programs on or off, or even destroy them. These are spoken signals which are taught to alters, and which alters are expected to obey. They might best be understood as similar to the touch triggers discussed in Katz's chapter. The concept is simple, but the sequence can be quite complex.

For instance, one of my mind-controlled clients had assassin programming, the codes for which were songs on a particular record album. Each song brought out a particular alter, in sequence, the second last being the assassin, and the last being one who was supposed to stand around to await getting caught, appearing crazy. The "off" code for the program was all the lengths of the songs on the album. The "off" code for a program to make him smoke was the chemical formula for nicotine.

Knowing codes and saying the "off" codes can help in undoing programming. Since it did not remove the trauma that had created the programs in the first place, it simply meant that the alters involved no longer had to do their jobs. Neutralizing the programs can be helpful, as they will then not get in the way of the therapy. The time period during which a program is turned off can allow the survivor to work through the memories of the abuses that these programs represent. Be aware that programs which have been turned off through codes sometimes get turned on again, perhaps after a time lapse or because an internal programmer alter has discovered they are turned off and turns them on again.

I do not know whether some program codes are universal, or at least universal for survivors of the same organized perpetrator group.

I do believe that it is wisest to obtain such codes, if you use them, from your client rather than from elsewhere. One client wrote down the codes for a particular set of programs, and I spoke them to her. If you use codes which the client has not given you, they might have unexpected effects, and they might alienate alters in charge of the personality system. If you have worked with your client for a long time, you might inquire whether there are any codes that could hasten the therapy process. But the psychotherapy remains to be done, even if codes have been used.

Using program codes to disarm programs can be a useful shortcut, but it does not resolve the trauma, which still must be worked through for complete recovery to occur. However, survivors of ritual abuse and mind control have suffered such extensive and traumatic abuse over such a long period of time that therapy can go on for their entire lives. Anything that can make such persons functional in a shorter period of time can be very helpful. It is up to the survivor to decide whether or not s/he wants to work through all the traumatic memories in order to have full healing, or whether s/he prefers to become relatively functional (if that is possible) without doing all this work.

Use of internal programmers for program charts

You might have heard of survivors having "internal programmer" alters. Do not be intimidated. These are alters who have been trained to turn programs on and off, in response to environmental cues. When someone speaks a program code or does a touch or sight trigger, it alerts an internal programmer to turn a program on or off, usually through flipping a switch. The programmers usually do not know what effect their switches have, but are heavily trained in obedience and in memorizing signals. In most such systems, the switches are located on control boards, such as would be found in an electrical circuit-breaker box. Every switch is labeled, usually with some kind of shorthand representing what the training was, when and where it was done, and how many times it was repeated at what ages. The labeling is similar to Jeannie Riseman's description of her inner structures in Chapter Six.

Most deliberately structured personality systems have some kind of control system for the programs. When a client has reached the point where his or her personality system is working together effectively, the therapist may ask the internal programmers to put together a chart of all the programs existing within that system, based on the labels on the switches. Once that is done, it is possible to work through the programming memories systematically to permanently disable the programs and rescue the alters from their traumas.

As an example, here is how one client's internal programmer described his instructions:

1. To turn on a program, hit the black button, speak the program, and then press in the two-numbered code.
2. To close the program, hit the red button, speak the program, then press in the reversed two-numbered code.
3. The first number or numbers followed by a comma is the Programmer level that can activate that code. (There was a programmer alter on every level of the system: levels 1 to 9 reflected ages five to thirteen, and level 0 meant every level.)
4. The numbers after the comma are the numbers in the alphabet of the first letter of words except the last, and the last letter of the last word of the program title.

So, for example, the code for the program "Watching You" was 0 – 23 – 21. The number "0" meant that programmers at all levels held this program. The numbers 23 and 21 after that were for the W in Watching and the U in You. I would not have to speak the level numbers, but if I were going to dismantle the program by going through the memories with the client, I would have to make sure to deal with all nine instances in which the training was given.

Each program also had a spoken code, which would turn the program on or off if spoken. For example, one program to make the client go home was triggered by the words "butter tarts," which were innocuously inserted into a letter from the client's aunt. To turn this program off I would have to say "Butter tarts 19 – 2." The program to make the client go with someone was triggered by the word "cigarette."

There were around 200 programs listed. Their content was similar to what we discussed in Chapter Eight. Some interesting titles were “therapist no clothes”, “drive fast,” “act insane,” “show mother’s face,” “jam thoughts,” “miss family,” “shoot outsider,” and “little ones explore sex.”

With a list and chart like the one this programmer gave me, it is possible both to turn off programs that have been triggered, and to identify the programs for working through the memories. It should be noted that another inside alter (hidden as a sub-alter of an alter with a different job) controlled a different set of programs.

Creating program “wiring diagrams”

The abusers of my first four survivors, who were involved with the same Satanic coven, began to instruct their alters about what to do if I attempted to work through programming memories in order to destroy the programs. Each program that I attempted to undo (through working through the memory) was attached to another program, which was turned on as soon as I interfered with the first program. Some personality systems have this connection between programs built in. For example, if we attempted to undo a suicide program, it might trigger a program to harm the therapist, and if we attempted to undo the program to harm the therapist, it might trigger a program to not understand English, and if we attempted to undo that program, it might trigger a program to fall asleep in the session. Sometimes the wiring was circular: for example, in the above scenario, working through the “Sleep” program might trigger a suicide program.

To battle this, Jennifer learned to bring “wiring diagrams” to sessions, describing what program would be set off if we interfered a particular program. Jennifer and I would examine the wiring diagram together and select the weakest link; this would usually be a program we had already worked through, or one that was minimally harmful. We would start there, and work our way through the sequence backwards.

The key to dismantling or neutralizing programming is in the work with the personality system. We will look at this in the next chapter. In the following sections, we will address the first step of the process: unlocking your client’s mind-controlled system.

Is “deprogramming” effective?

The term “deprogramming” is used in various ways. “Deprogrammers” such as Steve Oglevie who work specifically with ritual abused or mind control survivors appear to know a great deal about the specific illusions implanted in the minds of survivors programmed by different groups, and the program codes which have been implanted by these groups. Deprogrammers such as Oglevie attempt to discover the type of structured personality system, speak the codes, and rescue the alters from the perceived abuses or internal situations in which they are trapped. (Oglevie, for one, also believes in removing spiritual “attachments” from such survivors. This will be addressed at the end of this chapter.) The deprogramming is conducted over a period of several days.

Therapists who have taken their clients to such deprogrammers report mixed results. It appears that the client's stage of recovery, along with his or her trust in her therapist, has an effect on whether or not such deprogramming is effective. Randy Noblitt has done some of this work, and he sees this strategy as the equivalent of using temporary shutdown codes. He posted his concern to the Ritual Abuse and Mind Control Discussion List (reprinted by permission). He does not "deprogram", he says, because ". . . people are not computers even though they may be abused and under traumatic circumstances they may come to believe that they have computers installed inside them. . . . I do not believe any of us can 'deprogram'—the brain is not a programmable/nonprogrammable computer."

Noblitt is also critical of the process because in his experience it leads to complications: ". . . it only [gives] a temporary but false sense of recovery to clients (comparable to premature integration)." After applying a method he had learnt to "deprogram" robot alters, he found that

> . . . the method worked but it kept me and the client in an interminable loop of deprogramming rather than attending to the necessary therapy. For example . . . It took about 20 minutes for each robot and I could "remove" the robot alters one at a time. However, my client had 1,000 robot alters. Had we continued with that goal in mind we would have been sidetracked and missed the important therapy that she needed.

In fact, Noblitt found that for his client, deprogramming was not even a shortcut. He developed a way to integrate these "robots" in "less than 15 minutes", without codes or passwords. In the end, he cautions, "Many of the tunnels, mazes, computers, files, etc. [found in these clients] can keep a therapist and client distracted from the work of therapy for a long time."

Effective shortcuts

As Randy Noblitt reminds us in his previously cited post, "In order to become psychologically healthy[,] the survivor needs to access the parts, hear their stories, integrate affect, memory, sensation, behavior, etc."

So, are any shortcuts really effective? Some are. One of my mind control survivor clients developed his own shortcut. It was "Whatever they told you to do, do the opposite." He spent several years actively psychotic while many bizarre programs were set off. Once he got his inner kids to "do the opposite," his system settled down, he began to access the significant abuse memories, and he is now much more functional.

The key to either using a pre-existing shortcut (e.g., finding out program codes) or developing a new shortcut, like this man did, is for the whole personality system to work together in the service of healing. The alters in charge need to decide to do this. If they do, many things are possible. This survivor is not fully healed, but he has become functional, which is a huge step forward for him.

This may well be the key to all effective shortcuts. As therapist Arauna Morgan wrote to the Ritual Abuse and Mind Control Discussion List (reprinted by permission),

> Of the survivors I know, one common thread seems to be that they finally decided that they have had enough. Some of the most impressive deprogramming I have seen was various ways of stating just that, "I have had enough and I no longer accept . . . (fill in the blank)."

Survivors' self-help strategies and other wisdom

Jeannie Riseman, MSW, has been a leading light in the ritual abuse and mind control survivor community for many years. We saw her perspective on mind control in Chapter Two, and a description of her own programming in Chapter Six. In the following contribution she offers her own expertise, as well as that of another survivor, C. "Cheryl" A. Beck, supported by the power of their creativity, experience, and humor, about how to deal with programming. Your mind-controlled clients are not passive patients who merely receive treatment. They can be, and are, quite active participants in identifying and changing their own programming. You will see examples of this throughout this book, and especially here. Not only does Riseman personalize this issue, but, in my view, the strategies and understanding of her selves that she developed can provide invaluable information and ideas, as well as reassurance, for therapists.

Programming. taking the wind out of its sails:[1] *Jeannie Riseman*

Finding out about the programming

In a group I attended years ago, we were asked to pretend that we had been molested and write about the experience in detail. Some amazing things came out, because the "it's just pretend" framework helped to bypass the inner censor. I remembered doing this, and said to myself, "I'm going to pretend I'm multiple and draw my system." Simple technique, but the system was so complex it took three months to get all the information.

Dealing with programmed thoughts and urges

Here's a very simple technique that I often use when I do not have the faintest idea what is going on. It is the same method I used for dealing with my ordinary internal prejudice, a technique anyone can use for dealing with conditioned thoughts and responses.

When I have a thought or urge that seems cult-related

1. I name and label it as soon as I become aware of it.
2. I refuse to act on it.
3. I let the issue go—I do not brood on it.

To name a thing is to take away some of its power. A name is like an anchor in my mind. Labeling a thought "programming" clearly brackets the thought that I find undesirable and separates it from the "me" that I value. It is now something that was taught me without my permission, not my own thinking.

Steps two (not acting on it) and three (letting it go) are weakening the programming by not reinforcing it. Refusing to act on it—refusing to cut, for example—is avoiding reinforcement and avoiding buying into the perps' value system. And refusing to brood on it, to beat myself up over it, is equally an avoidance of reinforcement. If I spend three days agonizing over having had a suicidal thought, that is three days of driving that thought deeper into the grooves of my mind.

Note that this is not the same as denial. I am not shoving anything under the rug. I acknowledge it, deal with it, and move on. If I slip, I make amends to myself and move on. But I do not solidify the programming by thinking about it all day and all night.

Here is how I used the technique to deal with a cult-implanted "don't talk" program.

At one point I told my therapist something I was never supposed to remember, let alone talk about. The internal backlash was something fierce. I was haunted by strong urges to suicide, mostly in particularly revolting ways. So I tried thinking "programming" every time I spotted a self-destructive thought.

What happened? For starters, it seemed like every third word I thought was the word "programming." I had no idea that the "kill yourself if you tell" program was that compelling. "Wow! They really did a number on me, didn't they? I wonder how they did it?" My mental attitude changed from fighting suicidal impulses, trying not to think those thoughts, to curiosity about the past. Which was great, because trying not to think something is a losing battle, and consumes a vast amount of energy, besides.

Step two. I gave my kitchen knives to my best friend to hold and re-committed myself to not acting on suicidal urges. Just let them be. If I act on them, I will never get a chance to understand where they came from and what they mean. I am sure I would have experienced some relief if I had cut, but I chose to stay with the thoughts and feelings and see what happened.

Step three. After I labeled the suicidal thought as programming, I turned my attention back to everyday activities. No point in hanging on to it, for surely it was going to come back by itself. Meanwhile, might as well get something accomplished.

I walked around my home describing all the things that were mine. "This is my refrigerator, and I can buy and eat anything I want now. I don't have to eat what I am told to, like in the old days. I can eat spaghetti or ice cream for three days straight if I feel like it, or I can stir-fry spinach with olive oil and a whole head of garlic. I can do whatever I damn well please. Isn't that great?"

And so I "out-Zenned" the program, rather than fighting it, and it ran its course and faded. I emerged from the situation feeling more empowered. There was more of "me" and less of the programming. The next time a suicidal program kicked in, it was less intense and lasted a shorter time.

I then proceeded to fine-tune this simple technique. I tried talking to the program as if it were an alter. I praised its strength, intelligence, and sophistication. I could almost feel the programming smile. (Of course, I was not really talking to the program, I was talking to the alter or to that part of my mind that had learned the program.)

I also spent some time telling that part that nothing bad would happen if we broke the rules now. I explained that there was nobody around to enforce the old rules, and so they did not really apply any more. They had stopped being rules. We were free!

Educate. Accept. Do not arm-wrestle with programming. Work with, rather than against, my parts and my programming. Cool.

Dealing with the programmed parts rather than the programs

I would like to share this contribution from one of my heroines, C. "Cheryl" A. Beck. She wrote about dissolving a complex mirrors/everything backwards/matrix program by talking past it to the underlying parts that had been programmed. I am paraphrasing from her e-mails with her permission.

> I had a diamond matrix. The front side opened like butterfly wings. This was the open access side, which I could enter easily. It was composed of RA stuff like complicated belief systems such as the Kabbalah. I could've spent a lifetime confused and lost trying to figure it all out.
>
> The ever-present threat looming in the background was Draco the Dragon that patrolled the "Dark Side of the Moon." This was the backside of the diamond where the real MC programming was stored. The rest was just a cover. This part of the matrix fell under "Draconian Law"—death to me and my family if Draco reported disobedience by me to my MC handler. Draco was the ultimate internal perp. There were also others like the Iceman, who froze me if I got too close to an MC memory.
>
> The facets of the diamond were mirrors which multiplied one image and made them into dozens. This was all meant to confuse and overwhelm. In fact the mirrors were alter fragments doing a job to keep me safe, to keep me away from the MC memories. What worked for me was simply to congratulate them on a job well done and to find something else for them to do. My fragments usually just threw away their jobs and blended with a protector alter.
>
> The need for backwards communication and pairing of opposites was also a way to keep me safe by confusing me and leading me away from the MC memories so I didn't have to be accessed and re-trained by torture. I communicated internally that I was a competent adult free from the cult/MC world now, and I had no need for that type of "safe communication" anymore. I promoted those fragments from that type of confusing communication to straightforward reconnaissance. Whatever the fragments understand and desire to become works.
>
> After a while I "got it," from head knowledge into my very "knower." It was my mind that created all this. They didn't insert a matrix into my brain. All material constructs and figures and images were actually little kids—alters or alter fragments imitating perps, dragons, colors—all in the interest of keeping us safe from further harm or torture. When I got it on a gut level, the construct came to an end quickly. It literally blew up and freed all the alters, instead of killing them in the explosion, which was the lie they had believed.
>
> Lying fuckwads.

It was very reassuring to learn that the same technique worked for Cheryl and for me. Maybe my instincts were right after all! I just knew in my bones that it was not necessary to get all fancy and complicated to deal with programming, no matter how complex it might be. It just felt right to use simple, proven, everyday, common sense techniques. It also felt instinctively right to use love and respect and friendship to counter the mind-fucking that had been done to me.

Look at it this way: I spent many long years of hard work learning Latin, which is a highly complex language. I learnt it very well, too. Got straight As. But I do not have to think or speak Latin today. Just because I learnt it does not mean I have to use it. I prefer to speak English. Of course, the difference is that no part of me ever believed I had to use Latin for the rest of my life, while many parts of me believed that I could never escape the cult system and way of thinking and behaving.

My complex programming initially frightened me. I thought it was so exotic, so otherworldly, that I did not have a fighting chance against it. It did not help that the system contained no recognizable alters. Everything was geometric patterns and mathematical codes, and I had no idea how to talk to non-Euclidean geometric figures. What could I say? “Nice figure! You are really flexible!” I was totally snowed. How could I unravel it if I did not have the codes? The codes would let me remember, but I had to remember to get the codes. Impasse.

I soon realized that I was thinking using the premises of the programming. It had been designed to block me, and as long as I thought in *its* terms, I was, indeed, blocked. I had to think outside the box.

I have come to believe that it does not work well to use the perpetrators’ framework. By doing so, you are buying into their belief system and reinforcing it. Just like I cannot see how to teach children not to hit by hitting them. Or teaching people not to kill by killing them. All it teaches is that the strong get to do what they want to the weak. Besides, if I use the perp’s weapons, I feel like a perp myself. I do not like it. I usually feel miserable enough as it is without purposefully adding to those bad feelings.

It dawned on me that a sentient part of me must have been present when my mind learnt all that mysterious math junk. I decided to work with the part or parts of myself that had learnt all this stuff. Back then, I had been an everyday child, with likes, dislikes, fears, dreams, head colds, and much-hated brown socks. I might not have the vaguest idea what to say to the programming, but I sure as hell know how to talk to an eight-year-old.

I started to talk past the system to the child I had been, and still am in some frozen part of my mind. “There’s nobody around who will hurt you. They hurt you back then, but now is real different. They aren’t here anymore.” And for the very little parts, “Bad guys all gone bye-bye!”

With my biological children, especially when they were young, I would over-simplify whatever I was talking about. As they caught on, I made things more complex, matching my explanation to their developmental stage. I figured that it was worth a try working with myself and assumed that there were parts of my mind that were still operating on a child-like level. Even if it did not work, I was convinced that the very fact that I was using commonsense things that any teacher or mother knows instinctively would help me cut the mind-control programming down to size in my own mind. I was no longer paralyzed when thinking about it. I had a plan and some hope.

Looking back, I see that instinctively I did three simple but effective things.

1. I set the stage for respectful internal communication.
2. I educated myself internally about the present and about the past and its effects.
3. I offered opportunities, but did not try and change anything internally

Step One: Setting the stage

I start by giving permission to my parts to learn, without being coercive. “Anybody who wants to listen can. Nobody has to. Anybody who isn’t listening can ask others inside about what I said. And I will explain again, too, in case you want to listen later on.” I’ve snuck in the idea of freedom of choice.

“Anybody who objects to or doesn’t like what I am saying can let me know if they want to. Anybody who wants to give me information may, as long as it’s okay inside.”

I try to keep it casual. I do not want to sound frantic and scare my parts or make them feel as if I have a heavy agenda.

(As an aside, I had a friend who spoke to his alters like this, "Listen up, ass-holes!" He did not get a lot of internal cooperation by being rude. Exorcism does not encourage internal cooperation, either, in my opinion. It just scares alters and sends them into hiding.) [*Author's note: This parenthetical observation mirrors the conversation in Chapter Nine, on attachments*.]

Step Two: Then I educate and explain in simple language

I explain that we were raised by people who liked kids to obey and liked to hurt kids. But those people are not around any more. We do not have to follow their rules. We do not have to agree with them any more. We can make up our own rules. We can change our rules any time we want.

I steer away from words that have a weird connotation to me. "Safe" for example, means to many of my parts that I am locked up, and that therefore I cannot hurt anybody or anything. I am "safe" because I am imprisoned. This is not a message that I am trying to convey inside, so I avoid the word and find words that were not used back then. "Okay" is a fine substitute, as my perps were too proper and snotty to use that word. If I find that I am getting anxious or panicky, I take a look at the words I have just used and apologize inside and ask if I need to add to my list of double-meaning words.

I describe my present life. "This is my bed. These are my sheets and pillowcases. I bought them myself because they are pretty. I sleep alone in my bed. Nobody comes to my bed to bother me. Never! Those days are all in the past. I can sleep with stuffed animals if I want. This is my purple frog. I can go to sleep whenever I want and I can sleep as long as I want. I can get up in the middle of the night to pee if I want. I don't have to ask anybody's permission."

I explain all the psychological things I have learned about PTSD and dissociation. I explain *amnesia*, *alters*, and *flashbacks*. Again, I keep it simple. The young parts can understand.

"This is a flashback. It feels yucky. It's something we are remembering. Once long ago we forgot it, and now we are remembering. It isn't happening now. It just feels like it is because the memory is so strong. But that's okay. It's like the mind is burping up a memory. Burp! Feels better after you burp."

I do this at random times during the day when I am relatively calm, as well as in an emergency. Years ago, when all this was new to me and I was flooded, I held a stuffed rabbit and patted it, saying, "Of course you're afraid. You'd have to have rocks in your head not to be afraid. It's okay to be afraid now." Day after day I repeated the same message. In time, with repetition, it got through. My feelings had been normal, there was nothing wrong with me, and I was in a different situation now, one where I could feel my feelings.

Step Three. Without trying to change anything inside, I offer opportunities

"Would anybody like to learn how to make an omelet? There is a pretty nifty omelet maker around here, and maybe that omelet maker would enjoy teaching you all. Nobody has to learn, but you are welcome to watch and learn if you want." "Anybody there who never got to choose what kind of ice cream to eat? Yeah? How would you like to choose what kind we're going to buy today?" I think what I am doing is expanding the number of jobs and skills each fragment has, without challenging their fundamental sense of self.

I also explain things to my drivers. "We'd like to drive carefully and calmly. We will watch all the traffic signs, the cars, the bicycles, the pedestrians. Under these conditions, anybody can drive who wants to." (I do not use negatives, like "we won't hit anybody," because the unconscious tends to ignore the negative and hear "hit a pedestrian.") And I thank them afterwards and say it was a great job.

This worked with my biological children, by the way. If they knew how they were expected to behave, they did, as long as there were not any disconcerting surprises. It was usually ignorance and confusion that made them behave inappropriately.

I have been talking about building relationships inside. The same principles, however, apply to interactions between alters and a therapist, partner, or friend. Giving information about the present is very useful, as long as it is offered gently. It is never a good idea to be pushy. The idea is to avoid arguments, to offer information in a non-threatening manner, and to convey an attitude of respect and interest.

Frightening alters are usually acting that way in order to save the system as a whole from real or perceived harm. It's not personal! Compliments often help make a connection. "Gee! You are really fierce! I bet you would be wonderful at protecting others from harm. Has anybody ever told you that? One of your friends, maybe?" Aggressive alters are generally feared inside, and this may be the first time somebody has had a calm conversation with them. They might tell you sadly that they have no friends.

Information can be tailored to match the alter's age, previous experience, and interests. Simple things, like offering choices in the present (chocolate or vanilla ice cream?) can introduce new and earth-shattering concepts, like freedom of choice, learning new things instead of being frozen in one rigid mold, and respect and reciprocity.

It is not always easy going, of course. When things get rocky, alters appreciate an honest apology and an admission that they have not been understood. There will be many misunderstandings, but as long as they are treated with and respect and caring, relationships can be created.

To summarize how I work with my parts: I talk to myself, respectfully, reassuringly. I educate. I open doors to new experiences and viewpoints. And I try never, ever, to be coercive, or know-it-all, or bossy. I want to be as different as possible from my perps. I try to accept and work with, rather than against, my parts and my programming. I do this even though I do not have conventional people-like alters inside. It does not seem to have done any harm, at least so far.

Within this simple framework you can add almost anything you can imagine. Some people make an internal "healing pool" for newly awakened alters to wash away the hurt and pain. Some make a special place where there are kind and competent alters to take care of the wounded ones. Some find relief in making small internal changes, like laying an hourglass on its side or giving a frightening fire-breathing dragon the job of lighting a fire for coffee every morning. The number of ways you can adjust things to suit your system is limited only by your—and your therapist's and friends'—imagination.

Start simple, see what works and what does not, and then tweak my technique. Accept. Educate. Work with, rather than against, my parts and my programming.

* * *

Working with the inner world

People's inner worlds are not all the same. Some, like that which Trish Fotheringham described, have magic castles and woodlands; others have prisons and fortresses and control rooms and various military installations. Some have places they describe as different worlds and other planets. People with spontaneous, self-created DID often have internal "houses" in which alters live, often copies of the houses they lived in when the abuse occurred. Or they may simply have no inner world, and the alters disappear into blackness when they go inside. In ritual abuse and mind control survivors, however, the alters are arranged in a hierarchy, and often reflect whether their abuser group is military, Satanic, Kabbalah, etc. It may be possible to identify the type of abuser group by the type of inner world they create.

Here is one survivor's highly detailed description of an inner world which is very different from those we have looked at so far, how she worked with it, and how she managed to dismantle it.

Dismantling my inner structures: Robin Morgan

> The purpose of my programming was to create alters who were trapped or imprisoned in an internal structure that could be seen by the system internally, if they knew where to look. Alters were only released long enough to perform a prearranged function, then they returned to the structure. In my inner world, every part of the structure, even the booby traps, was an alter, programmed to be something else.
>
> Deep inside, there were walls containing the only alters that had not been programmed. If I talked to them, the wall would dampen not only what they said, but also the emotions they projected. I learnt to thin the wall in order to communicate with them. The cult had discovered these alters, sometimes years after their programming was done, and just neutralized them by enclosing them in walls. There was gold in those walls! Those were the alters that would later help rescue programmed alters and dismantle the program structures.
>
> In my system there were entities that would attack if not appeased in a prescribed way. After all of the entities were pleased and calm, no traps would be tripped. At one time, I thought the entities were not part of my system, so I tried to send them away. I found that they kept coming back; they no longer attacked, but were still there. I learnt that when something does not go away, there is an alter in it somewhere. There were often shells that contain alters. The shell could look or act like anything that can be imagined, even a real alter, but they were not themselves alters. There were layers of shells.
>
> I noticed that all shells would start to lose definition and turn into blobs when separated from their original placement by the programmer. I had an internal safe place where I put all rescued alters. There was one alter that I pulled out of a cement floor. The alter looked like a fetus. It did not move,

> but I knew it was alive. I could not help that alter right away, so I left it in the safe place, while I tried to figure out what to do. A week later it had degraded into a blob. I thought it did not belong and tried to send it away, but it would not leave. I finally opened it, as one would unwrap a present, and there was an alter inside.
>
> My programming would be "unlocked" by a programmer to improve upon the training of an obedient alter, then would be "locked" by the programmer to trap alters within the structure if they were no longer useful to the cult. Alters who were designed as mythical creatures were created at the top and bottom of the Tree of Life. Then an alter was created with the sole purpose of antagonizing the two creatures and turning them against each other. In my system there were several such scenarios where I had to convince the alters that the true enemy was outside and we needed to cooperate to be able to better our lives.
>
> I took apart one structure by myself, using my primary alters as caregivers for the rescued alters. Then I was ready to take a break before diving into the next structure, but my primary alters did not wait; that night and every night thereafter, they worked at dismantling structures and rescuing the alters that were trapped inside. Daytime was reserved for me to remember exactly what the programmer said for the part of the structure that we worked on, to be able to finish dissolving the structure and freeing the alters inside.
>
> My primary alters are very helpful and often work on problems on their own. Most of the time I am aware of what they are working on, because I have asked them for help and I feel slightly dissociated while they work. They dismantle the programming structures at night, so I do not get a very good night of sleep when this occurs.
>
> The last and very necessary step of dismantling the structure, for me, was to remember exactly what the programmer told me and the imagery that I created from this; once I realized that the structure was that way because of what someone told me, I was able to dissolve it permanently. Strangely, just knowing that the programmer told me to make it that way did not work; I had to remember *exactly* what he said, and what I did in response. What I did in response to what they said was just as important as what they said for me to get rid of the structure.

* * *

As you see in this example, much can be discovered about the nature of the personality system and about the abuse by exploring the inner world. And much healing can occur by the client's making deliberate changes in that world.

Exploring the inner world, detecting the ways in which alters are trapped there, and then improving the conditions for the resident alters—who, after all, are just dissociated parts of the survivor—can go a long way to assist your client in healing. The preceding articles may be shared with survivors, who often seek, and share, recovery tips and stories with other survivors. As a therapist, you can gently facilitate the process. You can inquire—perhaps more through "wondering aloud" than directly asking—about where the alters are housed in the inner world. Often there are alters in dungeons, cages, and other unpleasant places where their real body was placed during the abuse. When those alters are discovered, you can work with the personality system to help bring them up to date, and internally provide anything they might need. Often alters represent unmet needs of the person from childhood; some of these needs can be met by internal caregivers; friends can also provide caring, acceptance, and play. We all need play. In her inner world, for instance, one of my clients has little ones bouncing around in “space suits” that prevent emotions and body pain from leaking from one alter into another. The wonderful thing about an inner world is that it can be redesigned to give all insiders whatever they need.

Many survivors, especially of ritual abuse, have programming for internal world disasters. An inner world earthquake is created by shaking up both the model of the world and the child. A tidal wave is created by flooding the world model and simultaneously almost drowning the child. Tornadoes are created with a leaf blower or wind tunnel, and you can imagine how inner world fires are made. An alter is instructed to set off these programs in response to certain triggers, and the rest of the system then experiences the destruction of the inner world by whatever means was used in the program. Often alters are believed to have been “killed” internally, presumably suffering whatever the child suffered during the original programming. It is important to be aware of these programs and to anticipate them by speaking with the alters in charge of them. In my experience, their use is reserved for cases of serious disloyalty. If alters have been “killed” internally, there is nothing to stop the system from creating a magical river in which they can be placed to revive them.

As alters in the inner world leave their original places and begin to interact with others, there may need to be some rules, like no abusing other alters. Those who have always been in charge may need to learn new internal parenting methods, as often they can be authoritarian and critical or even abusive, copying what they saw in the outside world. They can learn, or they can be relieved of their duties and do something else that they like, while other alters can take over the parenting or management of the inside world. With your help, you client can create a functional inner family to replace the one that the abusers made in their own dysfunctional image. You will learn more about this in Chapter Seventeen, “Successful resolution: co-consciousness or integration”.

Note

1. Adapted for this book from Riseman’s articles on the Survivorship website and her talks from the SMART conferences.

CHAPTER ELEVEN

"Stabilization" takes on a new meaning

Destabilization is characterized by traumatic intrusions such as flashbacks, nightmares, body memories, emotional states of sadness, anxiety, and despair, and, sometimes, PTSD-related symptomatology suggesting bipolar disorder or psychosis, all of which are severely disruptive and painful. Self-harm and suicide attempts are often methods survivors use to try to reduce these unbearable intrusions. Dissociative disorders are a defense against trauma-related overwhelm, and therapists walk a fine line, trying to balance between the denial and numbing which impedes recovery and the horror of post-trauma flashbacks. The commonly recommended approach for treating people with dissociative disorders is that the therapist should achieve stabilization, and then begin working with the traumatic memories.

Survivors of ritual abuse and mind control experience these symptoms, but not for the same reasons as other survivors and often in the extreme.

Ritual abuse and mind control survivors often continue to be at risk for dangers in later life, such as harassment of survivors, family members, and pets via physical and sexual abuse, poisonings, and break-ins. Therapists are also sometimes affected. Worse, like destabilization symptoms, those threats seem to accelerate when survivors are in treatment. Historically, these dangers have been seen as originating from all-powerful, omnipresent (yet often unidentifiable), relentless and unstoppable perpetrators. This view of abusers, along with the view that ritual abuse and mind control puts survivors so at risk when they pursue recovery, has made survivors afraid to go to therapy, and therapists afraid to treat them. But here is something we did not know in the beginning, and many who work with these survivors still do not understand: these two phenomena are connected, and their etiology is not what you might think.

Perpetrators realize that they will not have the time or resources to keep track of children they have abused when they reach adulthood. The group regards the child as their property. Because of that, they get the grown children to do this for them. Most survivors have ongoing contact with their abuser groups in one way or another. This occurs whether they are in therapy or not, and results in ongoing access and survivors' involvement in continuing activities throughout their lives, especially if they are living in the same vicinity. Most important with regard to the issue of recovery is the fact that it is these clients' own alters who are contacting cult members and that they report not only any physical relocation, but also whether survivors are in treatment, with whom, and what they are disclosing there. This allows the group to take actions which trigger alters to behave in ways that sabotage their recovery.

Mind controllers have researched ordinary post-trauma intrusions, and have co-opted them for the purposes of controlling their victims. Mind control survivors are particularly likely to produce these symptoms when they remember or disclose their abuse or otherwise disobey the rules. In the early stages of a survivor's disobedient pursuit of mind control recovery, alters not only release partial flashbacks or body memories, disrupt therapy with frequent crises and/or quit it, but also may harm the body, and make suicide attempts. The abusers have also trained the alters to manifest symptoms of virtually any mental illness. These important additional considerations, both internal and external, make stabilization much more difficult to achieve than with other dissociative clients, and much more important for safety in a concrete way.

Because of this, disclosures about the organized abuse early in therapy are particularly dangerous to the client, and sometimes to the therapist. Before treatment can proceed, these are things you must understand and address. I cannot overestimate how important it is for therapists working with these survivors to recognize the degree of risk involved here. But the good news is that we now know that the risk—and the power to protect from the risk—begins with the client.

Current contact with perpetrator groups

In the past, signs of current perpetrator involvement in mind-controlled survivors were seen as unstable client behavior not unlike that of an abused woman who cannot stay away from her partner. However, when therapists attempted to address them in the same way as with all other clients, by working on mindfulness or grounding techniques, assertiveness, boundaries, and self esteem, the problems continued, and increased. Relatedly, the reassurance that many therapists are used to giving their incest survivor clients, "that was then and this is now," not only proved useless, but dangerous, to such survivors. It also rang false to their dissociative inner systems. Our knowledge of "current contact" activities with abusers has allowed us to deal with this issue. The key here is that this term "current contact" describes not only the activities that continue to victimize these people, but also the method through which abuser groups ensure the ongoing contact that allows them access. One way the latter is accomplished is through "access programming," through which perpetrators find out if any secret information is disclosed to outsiders, including therapists. It is extremely important for the therapist and client to understand precisely how this works.

Even when there is not current involvement, usually there is one (or more than one) alter who is trained to report to the group. The contact will generally be hidden from view and from consciousness. These alters believe that the perpetrators already know what the person has done and said, and even what he or she thinks, as we saw in Chapter Eight. These alters believe that if they do not report this to the group, the abusers will punish them severely or punish someone else (inside or outside) because of them. Once the perpetrators have this information, they become active in attempting to shut down these disclosures.

As soon as you even suspect that your client is a survivor or ritual abuse or mind control, you should (1) assess whether or not s/he is currently involved with the perpetrating group, and (2) find a way to prevent alters from reporting to the perpetrators.

Not only will that protect your clients' therapy, it will also be the first step in helping them to be free from all other future forms of current contact-related abuse. Your clients' alters have no idea that they have choices, and how much power they really hold.

How to identify whether your client has current involvement

In the early 1990s, some of the literature on ritual abuse stated that virtually all clients continue to have current involvement in "the cult." The current view held by many trauma therapists is that the opposite is true—that the abuse which began in childhood is now over and the client can recover in safety, the only danger being from his or her own self-harm. The truth appears to be somewhere in between.

Many clients in the early stages of realizing that they have experienced ritual abuse and/or mind control believe it was in the past. However, this is because their involvement is hidden via alter personalities. As a therapist, it may be some months or even years before you know whether your client has any ongoing contact with dangerous people. In the worst-case scenario, you will find your client is fully involved in a perpetrator group, attending rituals, participating in the training of other members, and carrying out other crimes. I remember my shock when my client, Tony, told me he had found himself waiting at midnight at the corner gas station to be picked up by the cult van for a ceremony.

It is also true that there are also many clients who have not had contact with their perpetrator groups for many years and appear to have been completely dropped by them. You have seen this in Trish Fotheringham's story. Errors in programming, a rebellious nature, or a difficulty keeping information nicely segregated in hidden pockets of memory or alter personalities have rendered many survivors useless to their programmers; after measures have been taken to "cap" their memories, they are turned loose to fend for themselves. Other survivors move far away from their abusers to a location where the perpetrator group does not function. Sometimes the group itself has disbanded, or its original purpose (such as the Cold War, for some military/political groups) no longer exists (though the actions often continue, with different excuses).

However, the client does not need to be in constant contact with the group in order for contact to be established under certain circumstances. In Chapter Eight, you saw that many of the lies that these groups teach their victims are aimed at preventing the person's total separation from the group. Even when these survivors begin to remember their abuse and seek out therapy, the rule of secrecy still prevails. Even a client who has not had any contact with their perpetrator group for many years might end up reporting to the perpetrator group and reactivating harassment by them.

Even if there is minimal group contact, it is common that clients maintain contact with their families of origin. In most cases, a family member or the person's whole family was involved with the perpetrator group when the client was a child. Even if there is minimal group contact, it is common that clients maintain contact with their families of origin. It is difficult to tell whether they are reporting to family members about their therapy because they could be reporting in a dissociated identity state and have no memory of doing so. At the same time, therapists need to understand that failure to maintain contact with the family could arouse suspicion, and aside from the fact that the client might genuinely care about his or her family members, it is probably best that the client not deviate from their usual contact patterns, unless they have some other urgent reason, such as preventing abuse of their own children.

In the past, I have heard some therapists say they will only work with ritual abuse survivors if there is no current contact. It is not really practical to insist on such a guideline. It might not be discovered for quite a while that a client who sincerely believed he or she had no current contact has unknowingly been fully involved in group activities. It is also possible that a client who realized that he or she was currently involved would lie about it in order to stay in therapy.

My advice, therefore, is to proceed on the assumption that your ritual abuse or mind control client may have current involvement. If you are not prepared to deal with that, it would be best to refer your client to another therapist as soon as possible. Once you get into the middle of undoing all the programming, it will be difficult and complicated for the client and the new therapist to make the change. My other advice is to delay soliciting disclosures about the abuse until you have worked sufficiently with the personality system so that the client will not report to the perpetrators about what goes on in therapy. Simply stated, you do need to assume that a part of them is trained to report.

Indicators of recent and/or ongoing perpetrator contact, harassment, triggering, and/or abuse

In the early 1990s, Pamela Reagor, in a handout distributed at a workshop, listed the following indicators that recent or current contact is occurring:

a. Sudden onset of disruption in therapy structure, e.g., missed appointments, disappearance for days, inability to find the therapy office.
b. Sudden onset of disruption in therapeutic relationship, e.g., severe mistrust (not attributable to natural process of new alters beginning to participate in therapy more overtly), fearful inability to talk or to respond to innocuous questions, obvious withholding of information.
c. Sudden onset or persistent recurrence of claims of inability to believe that the ritual abuse history is true, inability to understand “this multiple business” or “this programming stuff,” sometimes with repeated requests for repeated explanations.
d. Persistent failure for the MPD system to agree to and follow through with special precautions for personal safety (e.g., “be with someone tonight,” “don’t answer the telephone yourself,” etc.)
e. Evidence (conservatively gathered) that other MPD survivors feel afraid of the person, and may have had their therapy disrupted after contact with the person.

f. Reports (often only in response to therapist inquiry) of numerous hang-up calls, repeated wrong numbers, strange sounds or messages on telephone answering machines.
g. Problematic response to therapeutic inquiry regarding security leaks in MPD/DDNOS system—e.g., "Is there anyone in there who tells cult people what we talk about in therapy sessions?"
h. Evidence of recent reprogramming:
    (i) Bruises, pin pricks, blisters, other pains or marks, especially after lost time and with no plausible other explanation.
    (ii) New personalities, who may or may not know the therapist, but have confused histories or no significant childhood or adolescent history.
    (iii) Plausible reports of sudden inability to access other personalities, loss of co-consciousness: e.g., "everybody's gone," "there are no other personalities," "everything, everybody is scrambled," "nobody is where they are supposed to be inside."
    (iv) Suspicious disappearances or lost time, especially during "peak" holiday or programming periods or birthdays. (See Appendix 2 for dates.)
    (v) Known personalities now split into two or more parts, with different knowledge, abilities, etc., and probable fear of going back together.
    (vi) Along with two or more of above indicators (i–v), sudden onset of intense and uncontrollable body sensations and behaviors (e.g., drugged appearance, electroshock spasms, stereotyped gestures with hands, feet, etc.) in flashbacks or memory work.
    (vii) Along with two or more of indicators (i–v), sudden onset of intense urges to engage in some complex, usually dangerous behavior (e.g., suicide in a specified motel, go to a specific town, self-mutilate in a specific manner, etc.), without insight or appropriate affect.

I believe this is an accurate list of indicators, with some exceptions. Point (c), the client's inability to believe in his/her own memories or multiplicity, may occur without current contact if training of alters to disbelieve is operating. Even "reactive dissociatives," those who have not experienced mind control, tend to disbelieve both their diagnosis and what they are remembering. Point (d), failure to follow through with safety precautions, can result from learnt helplessness in both programmed and reactive dissociatives. For example, I have one client whose brothers and father broke down her door if she locked it, and punished her severely for trying to keep them out. In adult life, she believes she has to open her door to anyone who knocks, including a former employer who abused her.

Some of the indicators in point (h) might also occur when certain programming or training is in operation, without there necessarily being current abuse or involvement with a perpetrator group. Another possibility is contact that is minimal. A telephone call with a cult member (usually a family member), or a birthday card with a certain type of picture on it (e.g., a rose) can be enough to set off many of these symptoms. A client I have been seeing for many years just told me that this is a "recall year for her," in which the alters in charge of her system are supposed to organize the system to return to her place of origin, where they will report to her programmer (who by now is either dead or very old) about any alters who have broken the silence. These alters will then be "sacrificed." Her last recall year was sixteen years ago.

The following sections detail some of the danger signs to look for in ascertaining whether there is current contact.

Current contact alerts

- Significant periods of amnesia (especially around cult holidays), including client reports of evidence that he or she has gone out at night but has no memory of it.
- Reports of being approached by people in the street who are saying peculiar accusatory things, often with Satanic themes.
- Reports of receiving peculiar phone calls, particularly where the same thing is said over and over at each call.
- Receiving calls that consistently hang up after three rings.
- Finding one's car or home broken into and minor vandalism conducted.
- Other forms of harassment and apparently indirect communication.
- Sudden fear of the therapist or of the therapist's office.

While many of these forms of contact appeared to be nonsensical, to certain identity states they have a very clear meaning. If your client has met some of these criteria described above, your index of suspicion should be raised regarding whether they are being contacted and are going out at night to participate in the activities of their perpetrator group, without their conscious awareness.

Not all current contact is a simple matter of access by the original perpetrator group. We must also be aware of the dangerous tentacles of the worldwide web for these survivors. I had a client who told me that a man with whom she was in contact on an internet discussion list was trying to figure out her personality system; the system subsequently turned upside down, alters I had never met took control, and she left therapy with me. I do not believe that this client had current perpetrator contact prior to this; the man was actively trolling survivor discussion forums for those whose personality systems he could disrupt. He told her he was going to come to our city in search of her, and it is likely that he did so.

Other dangers are seen in the recovery community. A client of mine who had not been in contact with her perpetrator group (in another city) for almost forty years met a fellow ritual abuse survivor in a sexual abuse survivors' group who took her out to what turned out to be a cult meeting and reprogramming session. After that event, my client received regular telephone calls from local perpetrator group members, attempting to call out alters and get them to attend meetings.

I had one meeting through a church minister with a woman who had supposedly healed from ritual abuse and was now said to be healing survivors. She attended a number of churches in town. I recognized what she told me about her programming and healing as pure hogwash, and my client Lorraine recognized her and told me that she was a cult high priestess and was going from church to church seeking out survivors and giving signals to trigger them to return, report, and punish disloyalty internally. (I have no way of corroborating this information.)

Several other clients of whose safety I am fully assured have been constantly terrified that they were being followed and spied upon. Survivors who relocate and separate from these perpetrator groups have alters who have been taught that they can never get away and that the offenders know everything. As their therapist, you therefore cannot rely upon what they tell you; you need to look for indicators such as those listed above. You and your client need to understand that a strong impulse to call a relative or to return home can be a tip-off that the client's reporting has been triggered.

Current contact is a serious business, whether it is present at the start of therapy, initiated by the client's reporting to the perpetrators about therapy, or accomplished by the client's contact with other survivors who are looking for disobedient survivors to trigger or recall. All of my "first four" clients were involved in current contact, but none had conscious knowledge of their involvement at the start of therapy. I can think of several other clients in the same situation, and I lost some of them because of it.

What happens in current contact?

When in therapy where their history is being addressed, survivors generally will contact the group and report what is happening to a designated contact person, who will call out a reporting alter to give a recitation of all the client's behaviors. It is extremely important for the therapist and client to understand how the group is able to find out. In particular, watch for reports of strange phone calls, missing time, and odd behaviors, as well as a compulsion to make contact with family (if family were involved in the abuse) or other perpetrators. Look at cards and gifts from family members and ask whether they have any special meaning.

Once a group discovers that one of their current or previously abused persons is telling secrets to outsiders, various unpleasant things happen. If the survivor who is disobeying the rules and has become a security risk is far away from the perpetrating group, the group will make certain attempts to trigger alters into doing the job of shutting down the leak. This will result in some of the symptoms listed earlier, which disrupt therapy but also have the benefit of giving away what is happening if the therapist is educated about these signs. In some cases, the person will return home for further retraining. If the survivor is of particular importance to the perpetrating group, either because s/he was high up in the group's hierarchy or because s/he has knowledge of some important crimes, the group may contact a different group in the survivor's locality and ask or pay them to harass the survivor.

Now the group can pursue its goal of interfering with or destroying therapy, by extreme tactics if necessary. When the group contacts the survivor, they will trigger alters into returning to them and into obeying their rules of silence and loyalty. When the client returns to the perpetrators, the training experiences of her childhood will be repeated. She will again be tortured and forced to perpetrate against others. The therapist might be impersonated, and this person will abuse the client, and the client may be forced to abuse the supposed therapist. (See Chapter Thirteen for more details on this.)

If the client does not return to them, cult or group members will hang around the localities where she spends her time and give signals to get her to come to them, so that they can take her for retraining. If she ignores the signals, they will lie in wait for her and abduct her. If she finds ways to prevent this, they will resort to more extreme measures, such as breaking into her home.

Just as there is an escalation of these tactics, there is a gradual escalation of punishments for survivors who disobey, and in particular if they spill secrets to outsiders. I have had three clients for whom the original perpetrators traveled all the way across the continent to try to do the reprogramming. If the client has become unmanageable and core secrets have been breached, true suicide training (as opposed to attempts designed to land the survivor in hospital) might be triggered. If this fails, the group might engage in murder attempts disguised as suicide or accidents. They broke into my client Jennifer's apartment, found all the pills she had on hand, and stuffed them down her throat. Fortunately, she did not have a great deal of medication and she did not die. But, as you saw, Lorraine did die, perhaps by forced suicide to protect her loved ones or perhaps at the hands of the perpetrator group. Organized criminal groups protect their secrets at all costs.

Common access programs

Access programming is what gives the perpetrators access to your client for ongoing involvement, punishment, and retraining. The traumatic memories of these trainings are among those that create the most danger for the client, so should be processed as soon as the client is ready to work with such memories. Some of the specific mind-controlled beliefs involved in these programs were described in Chapter Eight.

Reporting

The survivor usually reports to the perpetrators through a phone call to a relative, during which the person being reported to may trigger other alters to do their jobs. Generally, the reporting parts of the survivor believe that the group always knows where they are and what they are saying anyway. They have experienced the fact that usually, when the organized group is actively abusing a child, they really do know where the child is and what the child is saying at all times. Since a family member of the child is most commonly involved, when the child tries to run away or to hide, the group can find the child easily. Group members will tell these children that they found them by "magic" or "the eye of Satan", etc. (See Chapter Eight for more examples.) Young children believe this explanation, and since they remain child alters, they continue to believe it when the survivor is an adult.

Whether or not there has been deliberate mind control, child alters in an adult trauma survivor might not understand time or place, and might believe they are still in the places where the group had access to them in childhood. Here is how one client described it in a letter to me:

> Most of the ones inside do not feel time the way you do. When you say it has been a long time or many, many years, it does not make the same kind of sense to the little ones as it does to you or to the older ones. Those little ones only know about time when they are out. So for them it isn't as long as you think it is since they were in that place. The older ones know better about time and how it works. The little ones kind of know about today, tomorrow and yesterday. They sort of

> only know where they are when they are out. They know the neighbor lady's house [where some abuse happened]. Some know the house with that mother and father and a few know the house we lived in later. Some of those same ones know different rooms where bad things happened like with the doctor and that other man. They only know all of those different moments. There is kind of nothing in between. A few of them have been lost in the town after your meeting. They just know they are lost. But they are not looking around and thinking this is a different place.

Because young child alters have so little understanding of the time that has gone by, or the distance they have traveled from the place where the abuse occurred, they believe the perpetrators are still around even when they are not.

Here is an example of how one child was trained to telephone her mother. At age eleven she was heavily sedated so she believed she was asleep. Then, she was painfully abused by people in costumes, so that she thought she was having a nightmare. Her mother came in and soothed her, and told her that if she had nightmares she should call her. This event was repeated several times, and in different places, and in the later instances her mother was not present but there was a telephone on which she could call her, and her mother responded by coming and soothing her. In later life when this training was triggered, the adult had nightmares and the trained child alter phoned her mother.

Perpetrators use one child (usually a sibling) to report on another in a family, and reporting alters start doing it early in childhood. That is when the child is most likely to accept the group's "magik". Groups commonly train young children to believe that they know everything by the use of hidden microphones combined with props. One client had certain alters who constantly saw an "all-seeing eye"—a prop which was used in their training. Another saw ears on the walls, a result of the room with the microphone (and one-way mirror) having plastic ears actually glued to the walls. Usually, one alter sees the (now imaginary) prop, while another has the job of making them see it through replaying the picture from the memory. Other groups tell children that small creatures (crows, spiders, squirrels) tell the perpetrators about them, or that the Mother lurks in every shadow.

Usually, this training includes a horrendous experience designed to make the child terrified of the consequences of not telling the perpetrators what she has disclosed. For example, the child is told that an older child has talked about the cult to an outsider. She watches this child being tortured until he or she discloses to the cult what has been told; then the punishment stops. The newly trained child is put in a position to receive the same kind of torture (e.g., put on the cross or rack, or touched with the hot poker), and believes what she is told, *You must always tell us if you have talked*.

How therapists should deal with reporting alters

If your client acknowledges the presence of reporting alters, my advice is to reason with those alters, or, if they are too young to understand, with the older parts of the client who may be in charge of them. Ask them why the abusers would need alters to report to them where the person is, if they already know. Point out to them that that the abusers knew that when the body became an adult, they would not be able to keep track of the person all the time as they could when s/he was a child. Explain that this is why they trained alters to keep track of those things for them, and if the reporters do not report, or do not tell the truth when they report, the perpetrators will not know that any disclosures have been made.

If the reporters (or those in charge of them) decide not to report, you have the safety to proceed with therapy. Reporter alters have generally been trained to always tell the truth. Be sure to look for "backups," however—alters who are supposed to take over the job of any alter who stops doing his/her job. They will also need to be convinced.

Reporters are also observers

Reporter alters are trained to watch and listen carefully to everything the person does in the real world. Therefore, they observe therapy sessions. If the reporters are unwilling to stop doing their jobs, other parts of the client's personality system can be recruited to help. Here is one way that you can deal with this problem: There are usually some alters who have the job of putting other alters to sleep (the initial training is done with sleep-inducing drugs); they can put the reporters to sleep during most of the therapy session. You can arrange this with those in charge of the "sleep program," then have those in charge of the "forgetting program" make the reporters forget that you have made this arrangement. From then on, in therapy sessions, you talk about inconsequential topics for the first five or ten minutes for the benefit of the reporters, then, when the reporters have gone to sleep, do your real work. They can be woken up for the closing minutes of the session. All they will have to report is what happened in those first and last few minutes.

Another way of dealing with it is to satisfy the reporters' need to do their jobs by having them report internally to internal copies of the abusers (there usually are some). How do you find out if there are? You just ask.

If you do not have sufficient rapport with the personality system to do these things, you need to proceed very slowly so as to not accidentally trigger any reporting which will get the perpetrator group reinvolved with the client.

What about relocation?

In the beginning of our work with survivors of these abuses, therapists learned quickly that their clients continued to be in danger, and continued to be abused. As described earlier, our initial perspective on the safety of survivors viewed it as simply a matter of physical location. For some, however, this view continued: As late as 1998, in her book, *The Ultimate Challenge: A Revolutionary, Sane and Sensible Response to Ritualistic and Cult-Related Abuse*, sexual abuse victim advocate Gayle Woodsun recommended relocation for survivors, but without acknowledging the fact that they would inevitably report their new location to the abusers. She did acknowledge the reality of mind-control programming; however, her recommendation was to treat all the child parts of the person as if they were programming to be resisted rather than child parts to be nurtured and reasoned with. In my opinion, her approach was already dated when it was written. It was also neither revolutionary nor well-informed, but it does acknowledge the reality of current contact, something many therapists do not want to face and are very skeptical about.

It is true that Woodsun's suggestion of relocation (to a place at a great distance from the original abuse) is sometimes necessary, but it is only useful when the person is no longer reporting to the abusers, and provided a competent therapist is available in the new location. Until then, relocation is of little use and, in fact, might serve the perpetrators' goals of sabotaging recovery. I once began to treat a woman sent to me by a therapist in a city some distance away; the survivor was high up in a very vicious cult and the memories she began to work on were horrendous. However, about a week after she arrived, she disclosed to me with embarrassment that she had telephoned the perpetrator group and given them her location. I had to smuggle her out of town (while her apartment was being watched) and send her on to another location previously unknown to her. It is likely that the therapist she was sent to would have the same experience after another week, unless he were able to deal with her reporting training.

Call backs: training to return to the perpetrators

Most survivors of organized abuse have parts trained to return to their abusers, either at specific times or dates (e.g., for family birthdays or important rituals) or when they are called back. Young adults are usually allowed to go out and create an identity in the world, then called back for use at a specific age or year. Subsequent to their early years of ongoing programming, those people whose initial abuse was with an occult religious group will continue to participate in the rituals and orgies which happen on the dates listed in the group's calendar. They will not incur any punishment for disloyalty—unless they begin disclosing secrets to outsiders. If they are parents, they will very probably be taking their children to the group's events, and their children are being abused on an ongoing basis within the group and possibly by some of their alters at home. Those who have been trained by a military/political group might go on assignments for the group. A child, teenager, or young adult from either setting may continue to be involved in pornographic filming or prostitution. All of this happens in a life separate from the one they present to the world.

The following sections detail some specific types of training which survivors have disclosed to me.

"Return to save someone"

This call back is used frequently with disloyal survivors. The person believes that s/he has to return to save a younger sibling or friend from being killed. The alters who have this training will feel a desperate need to return to the group, feeling that something awful will happen to someone if they do not.

"Return to avoid punishment"

This has several variations. For example, a cult child misses a ritual (usually for the full moon) and is punished with electroshock the next day. Or she is made to kill what she believes is a baby and is told that if she does not keep returning the police will be notified and she will be jailed. Alters who have this training are afraid not to return.

"Return for rewards"

This is part of the training of alters who have to take leadership in rituals. These alters experience none of the abuse, and are rewarded with massage, drugs, pleasurable sex, and power (e.g., the right to decide who gets hurt). The call to return for the survivor's personal birthday is of this type. The alters who have this training really want to go back to the group, and can only be stopped by other alters sharing with them the pain of what has happened to the body at cult events.

"Return at a specific date"

I am currently dealing with a client who had come a long way in therapy, and then encountered callback programming for Easter 2010. Just before Easter, certain alters I had not known about "woke up." They were heavily drugged child alters, who had been told that the world would end at Easter of 2010, and they must return home by that time. (Other alters who woke up at the same time had the job of punishing the rest of the system if they did not return to the cult group.) Over the next couple of months (since Easter 2010), I spent considerable time showing them current magazines and books with dates on them. Obviously, in this case, the callback was unsuccessful, because the client had made so much progress in therapy. Her system was able to detect the new alters and (with my help) update them on the changes in her life and her current safety. But if this were a client who had not received therapy, or whose system were not largely co-conscious and cooperative, she would probably just have booked a flight home and returned to whichever perpetrators were still around to reset her programming.

You can dialogue with the parts who believe they have to return for any or all of these reasons. They need to understand that contact with the group puts them in a weaker position and will lead to pain, while disconnection will protect them. For example, if a person returns to save someone else, they are often used to harm the person they were supposed to save. Then they are told that they are just as bad a perpetrator as those who made them do it, and that they will be jailed if they disclose what happened. This needs to be exposed as a lie. The truth is that the group is less likely to harm someone your client loves if they are not present. Sometimes, guilty alters think they should return to be punished for their crimes; I tell them that if they return they will be forced to commit more such crimes. Those who return to avoid punishment need to learn a simple truth: the abusers can only hurt them if they have access to their body. If they are not there, they cannot be hurt. Those who return for rewards are most difficult to deal with. Until the memories have been shared with them, other alters with internal authority can keep them under control by making them forget the date they are to return or getting them to go to sleep at that time.

External helpers, such as a friend or spouse, can also help. For example, someone safe can hide their shoes or block the driveway so they cannot drive to a group event.

Training to make the survivor accessible to abduction

When a survivor in therapy is no longer returning to the group or reporting to them, s/he may still be accessible to the perpetrators for some time because of alters trained to respond to cues from the perpetrators. Some of these trainings get the survivor out into the open where group members can get at them. Often there are specific auditory triggers, such as a certain number of rings on the phone, the honk of a car horn, or a beeping sound. Visual hand signals can also call a person to come to a group member with or without direct and personal contact with the person making the sign. Some triggers can make the survivor unable to move or speak, so that they will cooperate with an abduction. Triggers can now be sent by email. A client of mine recently received an innocuous-appearing email from a private detective representing her younger brother (whom she had not seen since her escape twenty years ago), saying he would love his sister to meet his wife and children. She went into a complete panic, believing the perpetrators were about to appear at any moment and re-abuse her. She spent two weeks in terror with her blinds closed.

Below are examples of some trainings I have discovered in clients.

Training to answer the phone and open the door

A child was drugged to lethargy and seated alone by a phone, with electrodes all over her body. When the phone rang, she was given painful shocks until she answered it. Then "Satan" spoke on the phone and told her, "Always answer when Satan calls." She had met this "Satan" before at cult rituals, where he hurt her. Her mother called through the door that she would take her home if she (the child) opened the door, so the girl managed to get to the door and open it, fighting the effects of the drug and the shocks. In later life, the survivor always had to answer the phone and/or open the door in response to specific sound triggers. She had no conscious memory of the reason for this compulsion, until we uncovered the memory in therapy.

Another client, who frequently denies the ritual abuse history that brought her to therapy, is trying to reduce her contact with her family. She tells me that she just cannot help answering the phone or returning phone calls when messages are left. Turning off the ringer does not work because she sees the flashing light which indicates that there is a message. She has no knowledge of this specific programming, but clearly something is forcing her to respond to phone calls, whether or not she wants to.

Training to go outside

At about age nine or ten, a child was deliberately made addicted to narcotic drugs, and was conditioned to go outside at the sound of a car horn (or dog whistle, etc.) to get the drugs she needed. Later, feeling drug withdrawal symptoms and knowing she must go outside to get rid of those symptoms, this alter responded to the sound cue.

Training to come to the handler

A young child was put in a backyard swimming pool, and called by a perpetrator, on the other side of the pool, to swim to him. A lid was put over the pool so that the only place she could get any air was by him. She swam across to him underwater in order not to drown. Later, the survivor felt the sensation of drowning until she went to the cult person who had called her.

Training to keep still and silent

A child was put in an enclosed space with some type of supposedly poisonous creature (bees if allergic, snakes, spiders). He was told not to speak or move or the creatures would bite or sting him to death. I have seen this training in several different survivors. In one case the insects (bees) stung her and, because she was allergic to bees, she became unconscious. Then she was resuscitated. In later life, if a perpetrator group member approaches this person on the street and gives the signal for this program, the survivor will be unable to run away. (This kind of training is also one reason that survivors so often have strong reactions to insects.)

Training not to run away

A young child is encouraged to run away from the perpetrators, then punished by harm to her knees or feet when she is caught. An alter is to give her this pain if she considers running away from the group.

Training not to leave town

A child or teenager is drugged and put through simulated car accidents, plane crashes, and other events designed to make her believe that these things will inevitably happen to her if she attempts to leave the town where the perpetrator group operates. I had to work through all these memories so that Teresa could leave town to a place where she would be safe, even after her access programming had been removed.

Dealing with access training

Most mind control survivors I have encountered, especially of cult abuse, have all of these kinds of trainings. You see how complicated they are for the client to deal with, and to unravel in therapy.

In the short term, if your client is being watched and/or harassed by perpetrators, it helps if she lives with a safe spouse or roommate who can be informed of the situation and stay with her whenever she is out of the house. Survivors who live alone are “sitting ducks” for perpetrators. I do not recommend ritual abuse or mind control survivors living with one another; rather than keeping one another safe they will expose one another to risk. But many do, without conscious awareness of what has driven them to this connection or what the implications are.

When Stella Katz was being harassed by the cult that she had broken away from, the cult’s van kept circling her neighborhood, waiting for her to leave the house. So she telephoned the police and said “I keep seeing a van around here, and I think it may have something to do with those break-ins that keep happening in this area.” The police checked it out and called her back. “It’s funny,” they said, “There weren’t any burglary tools, but that van was full of illegal drugs and weapons and handcuffs.”

If the perpetrator group is not local, your client will only have to deal with telephone calls and letters or emails. If they harass her (trying to trigger various trained behaviors) she can turn off the ringer on the phone (and place it where it is not visible), change her email address to something they do not know, and bring any letters or parcels in to your office. There, you can see them and she can look at them in your presence. You can discuss their meaning with her and make sure that she will not act on any messages they carry.

In the end, however, the only solution is to work through the memories of the trainings, so that the person is no longer bound by the compulsion which various child alters have to act on because of their training. Programming such as this operates like post-hypnotic suggestion; it feels compulsory when the person is in its grip, even when the conscious adult does not understand it. Once the method of its creation becomes conscious, it loses that grip and the person becomes free. Before you can work through your client's memories, the important thing is to make sure that reporting does not occur so that the person does not have to deal with perpetrators in her adult life.

With some current-contacting clients, I have had marathon sessions of a weekend at a time (all day long), just going through the memories to remove the effects of all the access training. I also had a policy of working through all current abuse memories immediately after they occurred, along with the memories of whatever programming was being retaught in the current contact. This is what enabled my clients to escape their group and become free.

Ongoing perpetrator contact is one of the most difficult issues for therapists of survivors of ritual abuse and mind control. It is my belief that most retractors of memories disclosed in therapy were victims of ongoing abuse (and rewards) by perpetrator groups. We do not want to know this is happening, but if it is, it is. Being aware of it and dealing with it directly with the client can save you from being caught off-guard by a retractor client blaming you for her "false memories."

Stabilization: special issues with ritual abuse and mind control survivors

There is a good deal written about stabilization of abuse survivors, whether dissociative or not. You can find some books that teach these methods in the annotated bibliography (Appendix 1). Please make sure you are familiar with this material. All those techniques have their place when working with mind-controlled clients. I am not going to repeat any of that information here. Instead, I will focus on what is unique about mind control and ritual abuse survivors in terms of the reasons for these destabilizing behaviors and symptoms. The special considerations discussed in this chapter will make your work with survivors of organized abuse involving mind control much more effective.

Self-harm training

Self-harm, or self-injury, is not the same as a suicide attempt. The training is specific; for example, cutting or burning. Besides alters being trained to do this when the person is disloyal or discloses secrets, perpetrators can also give words or signals to trigger this behavior. Sometimes, the pattern of cuts is a visible sign that the person has been abused by a cult group: this may make other cult members (e.g., in a psychiatric hospital) aware of the survivor so that they can approach her to bring her into the local group. In a typical training, a child is branded with the mark of a pentagram with a hot branding iron, and is told she is being marked because she is a servant of Satan. If she is disloyal, she has to make this mark on her body to prove her loyalty. She believes that the perpetrators know she has been disloyal and will punish her unless she does this to herself.

The alters who inflict the pain are generally not the ones who feel it. When asked, the person will also report feeling no pain. Some alters have been trained to experience sexual pleasure when the body is cut; for them, cutting in this way could become a sexual addiction.

Alters who are “introjects” of the perpetrators are told they actually are the persons who “created” them, and they must harm the body in the exact same ways as those persons do if any of the parts become disloyal.

Therapists should make a careful search for trained alters before assuming that self-harm is just an attempt by the adult to avoid other kinds of pain, such as depression, physical pain, or unpleasant emotions. You can see how differently motivated these self-harm and suicide attempts are. This is not to say that mind control survivors do not self-harm for the same reasons as other trauma survivors; just that there is an additional level of complexity.

Therapists generally put a lot of effort into training clients to live in the present and avoid self-destructive behaviors. But this is largely wasted when the child alters doing the cutting or taking the overdoses are doing their “jobs,” in fear of death or torture to themselves or others if they disobey. Medication can help somewhat, but the problem behaviors will persist and the underlying struggle will continue for the alter. The behaviors must not only be treated for their emotional and cognitive aspects, but as programming.

Suicide attempt training

Although ritual abuse and mind control survivors attempt suicide more frequently than other extreme abuse survivors, their rate of successful suicide is no different, according to the Extreme Abuse Survey (Rutz, Becker, Overkamp, & Karriker, 2008). Organized criminal groups expend large amounts of resources on training children, and in many cases they expect to be able to use them for life. Also, successful suicides could prompt investigations, and these groups do not want to draw attention to their existence, whereas a suicide attempt might get a client hospitalized, and cults and other criminal groups monitor many psychiatric facilities to find and retrain survivors while they are there.

In the early stages, the group will make sure that these attempts are unsuccessful. This is because children are actually taught to stop short of actually killing the body, for example by taking just a few less pills than a lethal amount.

The training not to die is often accomplished this way: the child is drugged and assaulted by costumed “demons” in a simulated hell; the alter is told that if the body dies this is what will happen to her because she is evil and deserves to go to hell. This alter will work hard to make sure she does not die if other parts attempt suicide.

Actual suicide training

This is not to say that no one is trained for successful suicide. They are.

Training for successful suicides usually involves a group or sequence of alters (see Stella Katz's information regarding this in Chapter Seven), but it is not activated until either the perpetrators instruct the survivor to do it, or the security of the most important secrets is prematurely breached. Children and adults are generally taught several specific ways of harming and killing themselves, down to the details of how many of each kind of pill to take.

Children raised in Satanic or Luciferian cults often have an experience similar to the following: A child who is supposedly a "traitor" is killed slowly and painfully, and those children who watch are told that if they ever become traitors, they must kill themselves in some less painful way before the cult finds them, or they will be killed just like this traitor was. Training in how to accomplish this is then given.

Internal homicide training

Suicide trainings are often trainings for internal homicide—that is, one alter killing the body to kill the other alters. The alters who do this are usually trained to believe they do not belong to the body and will not die. For example, an alter who believes he or she is a demon is taken to "hell" where other alters in the body are tortured, and this alter gets to torture other (outside) people. He is told he will not die if the body dies, and will have a higher place in hell if he kills the body on command. Such alters might be given injections which make them unable to feel anything, and invited to watch something being done to the body in which they reside without feeling anything. They might be trained with rewards, such as pleasurable drugs, then told that if they kill the body they can return to the perpetrators for more rewards. They might also believe they are demons, ghosts, aliens, or demigods.

Other alters trained to kill the body are trained to believe they reside somewhere other than inside the body in which the host and other alters live. Since they are all given different "bodies" in the internal world, and they are not supposed to come out into the external world except at the signal of their handlers, they have no way of disproving this, just like the alters who believe they are spiritual beings without bodies. I have repeatedly watched as these alters come out into the world and stare in amazement at their hands, flexing their fingers where the "claws" are supposed to be, and looking at their clothing. Sometimes they say things like, "What am I doing in this body?", and I ask what kind of body they thought they had. If none, I invite them to touch the body and see whether it can feel the touch. If they feel a furry body, I ask whether they have seen Halloween costumes.

Interventions to prove to such alters that they belong to the body, such as those described at the end of Chapter Eight ("The programming: indoctrination, lies, and tricks"), are very important, and are not difficult. When these alters come out, they often appear to be in a drugged state. Hypnotic interventions to remove the drugs will enable them to see and think more clearly, before giving them the proof that the abusers lied to them.

Psychiatric symptom training

In addition to self-harming, suicide ideation and attempts, your client may suffer from various psychiatric symptoms which you might try without success to relieve, including extreme depression, anxiety, seeming mood swings, mood disorders, and psychosis. You need to be aware of the possibility that they might result from internal punishments by alters who are trained to administer them. This is an important way in which mind-controlled clients differ from others who have not undergone systematic mind control. These symptoms serve a variety of purposes. In addition to disrupting or confusing the therapy, they also might make the survivor so dysfunctional that s/he will return to the perpetrators to have things put right. Failing that, they might result in hospitalization. But that leads to its own complications, as you will see.

Treatment of destabilizing symptoms: concerns and cautions

In response to many of the seemingly out of control, self-destructive behaviors that these clients manifest in early recovery (which is essentially before their current contact programming has been identified and disabled), or to psychiatric symptoms that erupt at any time during treatment, a therapist might reasonably believe the clients require more care than they can provide. The therapist might even panic or feel overwhelmed. At that point, it would seem advisable, even necessary, to at least refer them for psychiatric evaluation and possible medication; failing that, inpatient treatment in a psychiatric facility might be pursued. But all of that yields complications.

Psychiatric medications

Psychotropic medications do not address the special needs of this patient group. Not only are they frequently ineffective, many of the training experiences that your clients have been subjected to have included such medications as part of mind control. The helplessness, confusion, and triggering effect of these meds make them damaging to survivors.

Antipsychotics can reduce the ANP's ability to communicate with the rest of the personality system, thus suppressing the client's ability to do the necessary therapeutic work. Jennifer was hospitalized when we unearthed a memory of a "bug" being placed in her ear to tell the abusers what she disclosed. She became paranoid. We scheduled the memory work to deal with this issue, but before we could do so, the hospital psychiatrist discovered she was paranoid and put her on antipsychotic medication. As a result, we were no longer able to contact the alters involved in the memory and we could not do the work. My attempt to explain to the psychiatrist failed. In his view, she was paranoid, this was psychotic, and so she needed the medication. Jennifer had to pretend she was fine for two weeks, so that she could get discharged and stop the medication. The memory work was successful once the medication was out of her system.

Group treatment settings

I am very hesitant about group settings and group interventions for survivors of organized criminal abuse, whether on an outpatient, self-help, or residential basis. This is primarily because survivors who are currently involved with perpetrator groups are often trained to seek out other survivors to get them reinvolved. A client of mine who had been abused by a group two thousand miles away was taken back to a local group by a survivor she met in a group therapy setting. Even those survivors who do not reinvolve others often have alters trained to give signals that will cause deterioration in other survivors' functioning. Neil Brick, who organizes survivor conferences and is an activist devoted to combating ritual abuse and mind control, writes in his blog that he used to unintentionally give trained hand signals while giving speeches.

I had a friend who conducted a group for clients with dissociative disorders in the Mental Health Center where we both worked, and I was told later by one of my clients who participated that the cult conducted a similar group with a different purpose in the basement of the mental hospital. Imagine the confusion of those who attended both groups.

In hospital, there is a risk of programs being triggered by other patients. One ritual abuse survivor client was hospitalized years ago, before I saw her. For a long time she would not tell me what happened, but made me promise not to hospitalize her. Eventually, I discovered that another woman in the hospital had handed her a note which said "I'm sorry I have to kill you." She told me that although most of the staff had no idea about dissociation, some of the patients "looked inside" and could detect the presence of alters.

Two years ago, I was just beginning to treat a woman with a trauma history who seemed to be dissociative. She had disclosed to me one memory that appeared to be a possible indicator of ritual abuse. She developed some paranoid ideas with which she went to the police, who had her hospitalized. She called me from the hospital to tell me she had finally obtained funding to see me and was looking forward to it. She committed suicide immediately upon discharge from the hospital. There had been no indications of suicidality. I do not know, and will not know, whether she was given a very discouraging diagnosis by the hospital psychiatrist, or whether something happened at the hospital that triggered programming.

Residential and inpatient settings

In some communities, perpetrator groups actually want their survivors put into psychiatric day programs, or hospitalized.

There are several reasons for this. The most obvious one is that staffs of mental hospitals tend to be uninformed about organized abuse (not to mention even basic treatment for dissociative disorders); they will simply diagnose such patients with mental illnesses and medicate them or put them in group programs within the unit, where, as you have seen, other patients might trigger them to re-engage them with the groups from which they are trying to escape. And there is another, more insidious reason: many mental hospitals have members of the perpetrator groups on staff who are trained to recognize mind control or ritual abuse survivors.

When I was dealing with my first four ritual abuse survivors, all members of a local cult, Teresa had a close relative who was a ward clerk and gave staff false information about her condition. The cult had a regular pick-up system for survivors at the dinner hour. The survivors would go out to the front door for a smoke, and the cult van would appear, pick them up, take them to be tortured and for their training to be reinforced, then drop them off at the time they were supposed to be back indoors. Although the hospital did keep patients from committing suicide during their stay, it did not keep them safe, because it facilitated the group's access to them. Lorraine's "suicide" occurred immediately upon discharge from that hospital. On one occasion late in her therapy, Jennifer came to her appointment with her arms badly cut; she told me that she had not done it but the high priest had, in the hope of getting me to hospitalize her so they could access her.

I learned to avoid the psychiatric hospital for my clients who experienced current contact, especially after what happened with Lorraine. Even a safe psychiatric hospital, unless it specializes in treating dissociative disorders, is little more than a holding tank to prevent patients from committing suicide. In the days when our local hospital would permit outpatient therapists to meet with their clients in the hospital, I found it useful to see clients in the hospital to work through the programs that were creating the instability. Now, the hospital will not allow outpatient therapists to do therapy on their premises (because of their insurance). Such a hospitalization just delays effective treatment.

Most of the people who run mental hospitals are sincere professionals who really want to help people whom they believe suffer from a "mental illness". Ritual abuse-created dissociative disorders, being mental injury rather than mental illness, require different treatment on several levels: first, trauma recovery; second, dissociation; and third, mind control. Hospitals specializing in dissociative disorders, when not infiltrated by members of organized perpetrator groups, can be quite helpful to survivors of organized abuse. (The challenge for the clinician is determining which ones are safe.) However, the bulk of the work needs to be conducted by an outpatient therapist who understands the nature of the abuse.

Many survivors, when hospitalized, almost immediately switch into an alter who appears normal. Hospital staff, not understanding the nature of what they are witnessing, say that the medication they have administered is working, so the person can be released.

It is my fondest wish and hope that one day, the information contained in these pages will not only empower interested clinicians to better help their mind-controlled clients, but also that it will filter through the mental health care system so that when we need outside assistance for our clients, we will know it is available, knowledgeable, and safe.

CHAPTER TWELVE

"Maybe I made it up"

You may have had some difficulty accepting or emotionally integrating some of the stories and examples you have read in this book so far. This is something survivors who are disclosing memories of ritual abuse or mind control often struggle with as well. The old question of "Could this really have happened?" comes up all the time with these clients. Sometimes they ask plaintively whether or not we believe them. At other times they insist that none of it is true, they made it all up, they got it from television shows or the Internet, or they have a vivid imagination.

Some of the clients I have seen who allege ritual abuse and/or mind control do have vivid imaginations; some of them do not. Some of them like to read and research, others do not. Still others deliberately do not read or watch anything related to what they are remembering so that they do not contaminate their memories. In my preface to this book, I recommended that survivors not read it, because memories that come spontaneously from within them are more trustworthy than those that come prompted by hearing what someone else has experienced. Or at least the client will find them more trustworthy. One of my clients had flashbacks of ritual abuse, and her mother informed her that certain neighbors who used to look after her were the perpetrators. The client now doubts both whether she was ritually abused, and whether those were the real perpetrators, just because it was her mother who told her this. Outside influences can be very confusing for these clients.

Denial is commonly found among persons with dissociative disorders. My favorite quotation from such a client is, "*We* are not multiple, *we* made it all up." I have heard this from several different clients. When I hear it, I politely inquire, "And who is *we*?" The client looks confused—or we both begin to laugh. When a person has a dissociative disorder, many things that happened to them feel as if they happened to someone else. In addition, events that are remembered at one time might not be remembered at other times, which leads to even more confusion. Such people have been described as having "multiple reality disorder." Denial is common in the population of those with major dissociative disorders, whether or not they have experienced ritual abuse or mind control.

There are many reasons that a client might insist that what they are remembering cannot be real. One obvious reason is the bizarre and horrific nature of the memories they disclose. If I were seeing such things in my head, and did not know what I know now, certainly I would want to believe they were not real.

One of my clients has a group of little child parts inside who have horrible memories of abuse outside the family that began early in her life (via a babysitter). At the same time, another group of parts, who are adults and teenagers, have no conscious memories of this abuse. They tell me that they have been having awful nightmares of things that cannot be real. Some of their "nightmares", they say, are during the day.

The little ones told me about the "line" down the middle to separate those who lived inside the home from the ones who remember the early abuse outside the home. So, the older alters are unaware of the little ones and what happened to them. However, pictures and emotions leak through this dividing line and are interpreted by the older parts as signs that they must be either crazy or evil to invent such horrible things. By now, the reader has probably realized that the dividing line was deliberately placed there by the perpetrators.

Let us look more closely at how mind-controlled children are trained in denial and disbelief of their own memories and their own internal multiplicity by mind controlling abusers, who have studied the processes of remembering and forgetting, and how dissociation works.

Denial training

Training that makes survivors unaware of their dissociative conditions

In a memory that one client worked through, she was given a heavy dose of antipsychotic medication, which made communication within her personality system very difficult. The abusers then asked her whether she heard any voices, and gave her electroshock to the head every time she said yes. This was part of training to make her appear non-dissociative. When a psychiatrist put her on antipsychotic medication in adulthood, this memory came up, as it brought up the alters who remembered this training. Fortunately, she was in therapy that recognized her abuse history and could properly address it. You can imagine what would have happened if she were not.

The same client told me of a training to create walls between the alters. As an infant, she was put in a closed box, periodically taken out and abused or smothered, then "rescued" by being put back in the box with safety and a bottle of milk. An alter was told that if disclosures were ever being made, she was to bring up this training in order to isolate alters from one another in "boxes" in the inner world, so that the alter who was out in the body would be unable to communicate with the rest. The presenting part would be unaware of the existence of the others.

The last time one of my clients made statements that reflected denial, she sounded as if she were reciting. So I asked her whether anyone said this to her. "Yes, my mother." Her mother, who, according to the memories she allegedly "made up," was the primary perpetrator in her abuse.

Training which makes survivors disbelieve their own memories (and makes investigators disbelieve them)

Simulated murders

Organized abuser groups make particular efforts to have both their victims and those to whom they disclose dismiss what is said as having been made up. One of my first clients who disclosed ritual abuse went through a memory of being around five years old when the cult group made her stab, and supposedly kill, a baby, whom they said was her younger brother. The next day she found her baby brother alive, and when she expressed her confusion to her mother, she was told she made the whole thing up. Alters had been given the job of making her believe this message. This appears to be common for such abusers. I have heard about this same kind of experience from other clients and from other therapists.

In Chapter Eight, "The programming: indoctrination, lies, and tricks", you saw that trickery is a major modus operandi of these groups. One client of mine remembered a grade school classmate being killed in a ritual, while the teacher told the class that the girl had moved to the US to live with her father. In adulthood, the woman made a police report, and the police searched for the girl. They found her alive, having moved to the US to live with her father. One of my more recent clients believed she should not make friends because a friend from school had been killed in a ritual. As soon as she told me this, another alter who was listening told me that the girl had come to visit her old home in early adulthood and had looked her up. Yet another client told the police the name of a little girl she remembered killing in a sacrificial ritual. They looked the girl up and sure enough, she was still alive. As a consequence, they now disbelieved all the client's disclosures. The client said that she knew it was "Stephanie" that they killed because "They told [her]." She now believes she was forced to kill a little girl, but it probably was not Stephanie.

Victims are left in a deep state of confusion about what they had thought they had experienced. Remember that drugs are used during many of these traumatic trainings, and electroshock given at the conclusion to further dissociate the memories of what happened. It is no wonder it is very difficult for survivors of organized groups to be clear about, or tell anyone, what they remember.

These tricks serve another important purpose: insurance. They discredit the rest of survivors' disclosures. Sally McCollum (a licensed and highly experienced psychologist in private practice in the Sun Valley area of central Idaho), related this story in an email to a discussion list (reprinted by permission):

> One of my clients had a memory of assisting in the abduction of a young woman who she believed was murdered in a ritual and she wanted to give her evidence to the local FBI. Unfortunately, she discovered at the same time the FBI did (through a simple search) that the woman was alive in another part of the U.S. It damaged her credibility severely and was extremely frustrating for her..

I have heard similar stories from other therapists.

Murders of named persons appear to be simulated for the perpetrators' mind control purposes, to prevent these survivors making friends with "outsiders," to make them doubt their own memories, and to make investigators disbelieve their disclosures. When survivors begin to remember things that happened, programming often kicks in to make them remember these apparent murders of persons who were not actually killed. No wonder police investigators have doubts about the reality of ritual abuse.

Murders that are real

Some of what these children believe to be murders are real; some are not. "Murders" which are designed to discredit the survivors are simulated. But it is my observation that murders in which "traitors" are killed are most likely to be real, since they usually involve gruesome torture that is difficult to simulate. Usually, these occur at large events in which a whole generation of cult children are trained not to be traitors. Presumably, because it is risky for a group to engage in an actual murder, the abusers want to make the most use of such an act when it is done.

Besides the religious importance of ritual sacrifices in the cults, "snuff pornography" brings in big money. Victims of actual murders used to be abducted children, before law enforcement and the media became very concerned about them. Children used to have to abduct children, playing with them in the street or the park and luring them to the perpetrators' vehicle. Several clients have told me of doing this. Now the victims are more likely to be street people or hitchhikers far from home. One of my early survivor clients told me how the young adult cult members used to cruise along the highway picking up hitchhikers, talking with them in a friendly manner in order to pick out the ones who were far from home and could be used as sacrifices without local law enforcement finding out. Society's image of the abductor of women or children, based on what is portrayed in the media, is a lone man, but cult groups also abduct victims.

As described in Stella Katz's account, cult women and teenage girls are made pregnant and aborted as soon as the fetus is viable, so that it can be sacrificed. There is also considerable killing of children who have been bred for the sole purpose of being torture and, eventually, murder victims. These children's births were never registered, and they have been raised in secrecy.

It is not only the dispensable children of unimportant women who are killed. Licensed clinical social worker Wendy Hoffman, who worked extensively with ritual abuse survivors in the late 1980s and early 1990s, wrote an unpublished book, "Ascent from evil: Toward healing the wounds of Satanic cult abuse" (1993), and identifies herself as a survivor. According to Hoffman, the children of each woman who was selected to be her cult's newest "Queen" were killed immediately after birth when they did not respond well enough to tests regarding their ability to be programmed. Hoffman states that, in her experience, many people were killed, and the group just came up with other reasons for the deaths such as illness or suicide. And indeed, it is logical that if the murder of someone who moves from the area can be simulated, an actual murder can be disguised as a natural death or a suicide. That is what may have happened in Lorraine's case. If it was not a murder, it was certainly a forced suicide.

Hoffman also states that in her extensively networked group, leaders had to be killed ritually. While I have no way of corroborating this information, I did have one client who spent her childhood years from age three to twelve as the house slave of a cult leader; she was taken into foster care when he had himself killed in a ritual.

Cover memories

Organized perpetrator groups also deliberately create screen or "cover" memories of impossible or highly improbably events such as alien abductions. (Alien abductions are often cited by those who wish to discredit the reality of ritual abuse and mind control.) I remember when Jennifer confessed, halfway through her therapy, that for a long time she had had a memory of an alien abduction, the kind where the aliens poked and prodded at her body in the spaceship. She had been afraid to disclose it to me because she was afraid I would not believe her about the cult events if she did. When we worked through the memory from start to finish, with all the alters involved, we discovered that the alleged "spaceship" was parked in the cult training center. Certain alters had been taught that they must release this memory to consciousness if she began to remember other things.

False information

There are also more mundane, but equally effective, things done to confuse children in this way. When we worked through Jennifer's first ritual abuse memory, a gang rape, I asked her whether or not she knew the names of her abusers. Yes, she did: Mickey Mouse and Donald Duck. Imagine the outcome for a victimized child who reports such things in a police interview!

Training which discourages telling the truth

Another reason it is difficult for these survivors to disclose what has happened is the training they receive to believe that the group knows everything they disclose, and sometimes even everything they think. One common experience is that a young child undergoes a fake "operation" in which a "doctor" puts a "microphone" in her tooth and convinces her of these things, telling her that through this microphone the group will know when she has told about the abuse, and will find and punish her. "Bombs" are implanted in the child's stomach, and verified, with "X-Rays"; the victim is told that if she talks about the memories, the bomb will explode. A carnivorous animal or insect is supposedly put into the child's vagina or anus, after which s/he is told that remembering or talking will cause the animal to eat her up from the inside. These "operations" are done when the child is still young enough to believe that thoughts or words can trigger a result like this. Alters are taught to remind children about these experiences through bringing back the pain of the "surgery" or the animal's insertion.

Organized perpetrator groups also discourage disclosures by training alters to make survivors remember all the events—especially crimes—in which the child has been made to take part, such as the real or simulated murders and rapes that ritually abusive groups commonly perpetrate. Such flooding will overload the survivor with horror and guilt.

The groups will also stage events in which the child is punished for honest disclosures to people she does not realize are group members. For example, one five-year-old child was encouraged to make a disclosure to someone she believed was a uniformed police officer, who then took her to a "jail" where other perpetrators, adult men, were incarcerated with her. They blamed her, beat her, and sexually assaulted her for telling on them. When another child was triggered to tell some supposed police officers what happened, they responded that she was lying, and then tortured her to get the "truth" out of her. They were not satisfied until she really lied. She was also punished at home for telling the truth.

Incentives are also offered to survivors who recant. Lorraine found an article on her bed in the psychiatric hospital about a client who won huge amounts of money from suing her therapist. Another survivor received a letter offering a warm welcome back into her family as well as the rewards ensuing from such a lawsuit. A promise of warm acceptance and welcome into the family can be very enticing for the parts of the client who always wanted to be loved. Consider the implications of this when you hear of therapists being sued for their alleged misdeeds with such survivors.

Here is what survivor LisaBri says (adapted from an article on her website) about her experiences with "denial" which she describes as being a "two-faced animal":

Honesty and denial: LisaBri

> As I put together my life history, my research has led me through almost forgotten sets of old journals. I have come across entries that scream "Honesty!" How could anyone possibly make up the secrets hidden in those diaries, or, more importantly, why would I want to? Yet the next line always begins with, "I'm making it all up because . . ."
>
> In my childhood, honesty was always laced with threats. I grew up being told I was a liar with an overactive imagination. I had to lie all the time, not only about the sexual abuse in my home but through keeping silent about the horrendous events that happened in the cult rituals. Programmed with the "No-talk" rule, alter was played against alter, and the words of the training were constantly spun: "You're crazy. Only crazy people make up stories like this; they should be in a psychiatric ward. Don't talk or you'll be locked up."
>
> To this day I remember seeing a dog lying dead in the garage of the second house we lived in. It was my Aunt and Uncle's dog, a small white poodle. I ran to tell my mother that the dog was dead in the garage. My mother calmly said it wasn't. Her words left me scared and confused. *I could see the dog, and it was dead.* The piece of information I did not have was from another alter, an eleven-year-old who had participated in a ritual the night before. As they killed the dog, all the members of the circle chanted, "This is not real. This is all in your imagination. This is not real. This is all in your imagination . . ." When the eleven-year-old [alter] insisted that it was real, they beat her into submission and drugged her. The message: 'It is unsafe to see things through your own eyes because you are crazy. Listen to your mother.' So we denied our reality and lived knowing the dog was dead but believing it was not.
>
> It is not sensationalism; it is a reality. If I even think about the enormity and reality of the truth, the rapes, the pit, the rituals, then a denial program runs: "This didn't happen to you. You are making it all up. No one will believe you." It leaves me terrified and confused as I lock horns with it at every memory level, at every alter level, and at every step forward.
>
> Fifteen years ago, as an adult survivor, I carried the lies in my scattered dissociative brain. I was always vigilant, for I did not want to break into what I labeled "little Lisa pieces," which would

> inevitably be followed by being locked up in a psychiatric ward. However, the fight to continue became too much, and I lost the will to live. I was locked up in the hospital. But not only did I survive, but I found it was the one place where I could be completely honest about my past. I could say anything because I knew my time was coming to an end. All my business and what little personal affairs I had had been put in order. I was ready to be a psychiatric hospital "lifer" and eventually to die in that place. The doctors and nurses would not question another shuffling, mumbling person talking about things too heinous to be believed. I was just another statistic.
>
> Lying in bed in hospital one night, I thought I was dying. With no energy left to fight, I gave in to the voices for the first time. I discovered that they were not psychotic voices, but voices of alter personalities. My strongest alter, Brian (Bri) came to me that night and in six words changed my life. "It's going to be all right," he said. And I had to believe him. And it was. I discovered that the "little Lisa pieces" were alters fighting to be heard and recognized—not a sign of mental illness or incapacity, as I had always been led to believe, but a sign of strength, courage, and health.
>
> On one level, denial is as devastating and crippling as lying. Did my father, for instance, really believe he loved me in the only way he knew? Or had he, like me, been trained in denial? Did his denial lead him to think sexually assaulting his daughter really was "no big deal"? Did he even remember his further abuses of me?
>
> Denial is a two-faced animal. On one level denial keeps me safe. While the denial program is running, 90% of the time I do not believe there is a cult group in which I had to be an active participant, and which I would be exposing by remembering. The memories, trainings, and rituals do not exist, in denial. My system shuts down. There are no crippling sexual assaults. The need to harm myself, attempt suicide, drink, or use drugs to deal with the associated feelings stays on the periphery of my mind.
>
> The constant back and forth movement between truth and denial wreaks havoc on my mind, leading to anxiety and panic attacks. But if I can ride out the storm, I can recognize that I survived. My therapist constantly tells me, "Keep the denial for when you are not in therapy. When you enter this room, the alters make you deny your reality need to turn it off so we can get to the issues." This has allowed me to grow, and to be open and honest, in a small office for an hour and a half each week.
>
> The truth really does set you free. And denial is there for when you need a break.

Notice that LisaBri finds her denial helpful outside of therapy sessions. We therapists need to recognize that denial and dissociation can sometimes be helpful with these clients, as long as it is dropped during the therapy itself. It can prevent flooding and allow them to live a relatively normal life.

Trainings to make disclosing survivors appear psychotic

Another way that these abuser groups discredit the disclosures of survivors and make them deny their own reality is programming to make survivors appear psychotic. When a person appears psychotic, it can result in them being hospitalized, which can lead to a lot of other serious problems for this population. In Chapter Eleven, "'Stabilization' takes on a new meaning", I discussed the way in which these groups cause flashback hallucinations, flooding of emotions, rapid switching, scrambling of sensory information, and self-harm and suicide attempts. Following are some other memories that survivors have disclosed to me, which made the person appear psychotic. These trainings are difficult to recognize as internal punishments.

Insomnia

A child is stuck in a cage or tied to a stake for days, and if she falls asleep she is painfully prodded awake with a stick. Another alter is trained to reactivate this memory, and the triggered adult is totally unable to sleep.

Psychosomatic pain

An injection is given that makes the child hurt all over, and, while she is in this condition, she is raped with a hot object. A different alter is trained to administer the pain from this memory to the presenting person at the correct cue.

Emotional flooding

A child is put through a series of experiences (mostly very unpleasant) that produce a lot of strong emotions. Several different emotions can be used to produce "crazy" emotional lability, or one particular emotion, such as sadness or anger, might be the focus. Cues are given to alters to release these emotions and have the spinner alters spin them out to the rest of the personality system. This kind of training is involved in the "booby traps" of intense sadness and suicidality that the survivor encounters when she is getting close to protected memories of core training. A lesser version of this might come up as soon as the client makes disclosures about the abuse.

Flashbacks and hallucinations

During a horrifying abuse session, the child is told that if she talks she will see or hear or experience this painful event all over again as if it were currently happening. Separate triggers are taught for visual or auditory hallucinations. So the survivor could hear the voices of the abusers, or the sound of the electroshock machine. S/he might see a perpetrator in the therapy office, in a very frightening and "real" way, and be very confused about why you, the therapist, do not see him. ("He's right over there!")

There are less shocking versions of this, with different purposes. In the early stages of therapy with one ritually abused client, she kept staring at my hands. I asked what she saw on them. Lines. (There were no lines.) I asked whether someone inside was making the lines appear. Yes, a little boy. I asked whether he knew how to turn the lines off? Yes. He demonstrated turning the lines on and off, at my request, while some of the other alters watched. He was just doing his job to make the rest of the personality system believe I was one of the perpetrator group. He was proud of his ability.

Internal world disasters

Most mind-controlled children have an inner world and/or structure or structures created by building models with Lego or some such toy (see Chapter Six, "Markers of mind control and ritual abuse", and also Stella Katz's account in Chapter Seven). The alters "live" in that world, and there is training for the destruction and damage of the inner world. An earthquake is simulated by shaking up the model world so it breaks apart while the child is simultaneously being shaken. A tidal wave is simulated by flooding the model world while almost drowning the child. Similar simulations are done for fires and tornadoes. When certain triggers are given, the internal world is destroyed and alters are "killed" internally. (You can revive "dead" alters through such things as an imaginary healing stream. Remember, alters do not really die.)

Rapid switching and scrambling

For rapid switching programs, the child is spun around, and alters are called out by a special shoulder touch (along with their names being spoken) so fast that they go in as soon as they are out. The effect is inability to complete a thought or sentence, which looks like the schizophrenic "word salad". A variation is "Fast switch child alters", which allows only very young alters to come out but not stay out long. You can imagine the diagnosis and the treatment that would result if this were triggered in adulthood. For scrambling, the child is put through a very confusing treatment, such as this: People walk fast in all directions, pushing the child, talking very fast, and stepping on her. She is given a drug that loosens her tongue, and has to say everything that comes into her head, while people continue to talk too fast to be understood, push and throw her around, and poke her. While still talking, they put insects and spikes in and out of her ears so that she only hears part of what is said. At the same time, touch sensations are also scrambled by doing opposite touches, such as tickling and hitting. Triggering of the feelings from this memory results in the person talking continuously in a "stream of consciousness" style, and not understanding what is said to her. As with the rapid switching, this makes the person appear psychotic—and likely to be hospitalized.

Delusions

Dissociative disorders, even those created by mind controllers, are not psychosis, but this program will create the most common symptom used to diagnose schizophrenia. The child is hurt while on a turntable, with people and television sets and cartoons and photographs all around the turntable. New alters created by the torture are instructed that they must obey their instructions and become the people around them, people on television, or other alters when they are told to. When this program is triggered, the survivor will hear "voices" of the people whom the "copy alters" are imitating, or will have many confused alters popping out who think they are actually other people or movie stars. The identities of the copy alters change when the survivor's surrounding change.

Training to behave like an animal

Brain operations are simulated to apparently insert the brain of an actual animal (e.g., wolf for ferocity, dog for obedience, small rodent for stupidity or biting), and the child is trained by behavioral methods to behave as this animal does. As you have seen, it is common for survivors to have alters who believe themselves to be animals. When this behavior appears in an adult, however, she will seem genuinely crazy. Stella Katz described other methods of creating animal alters in Chapter Seven.

Remember that making a survivor appear psychotic not only discredits any disclosures she makes, it is also likely to get her into the psychiatric hospital, where there are often patients or staff members who are trained to find organized abuse survivors and get them back into control of the perpetrator groups.

Validation

Many survivors feel they would believe their own memories if they only had some external validation. Most of the time this is hard to come by. Sometimes, as with the first four of my ritually abused clients, there is cross-corroboration by other survivors or family members who were actually present during the abuse. The similarity of survivors' experiences in different locations is well documented. The Extreme Abuse Survey asked questions about quite a number of different experiences, and found large percentages of those reporting extreme abuse had similar experiences.

Some of the survivors who have the worst time being believed are those whose experiences involved government-generated technologies. Here are some examples of the validation that mind-control survivor Carol Rutz, whom you met in Chapter Two, obtained through her Freedom of Information Act submission in the United States. (Rutz is an author of the Extreme Abuse Survey as well as of a book on her experiences.) The material in this article, which she wrote for this book, is expanded in a speech she gave at the SMART conference in 2001.

Validating my mind control memories: Carol Rutz

> Many of the cult ceremonies took place at our local zoo. When I began to draw and talk about them, my doctor turned ashen. It was one of three times in eleven years that he said, "I've heard that before from someone else about that place." Wow! Talk about validation. When I went to the archives of the public library to find material on the zoo for two particular years, it was missing. Everything was there but the information for those two years. I was disappointed but not surprised. In April of 1993, after two years of retrieving SRA memories, I was able to go back to the zoo accompanied by my husband and walk through the places where these rituals had occurred. When I left, it was a victory.
>
> During mind control experiments, before the procedures depicted below took place, I experienced sensory deprivation after being given a shot of curare. The drawing (Figure 1) and the picture (see Figure 2) illustrate how a mind retains information even after enduring extreme trauma.
>
> Figure 1 shows an experiment designed to map specific parts of my brain. I am being spoken to through the earphones, and different personas that the CIA created for its MKULTRA Program are being identified by areas of the brain.
>
> This drawing also shows how each alter was being programmed. Detectable energy flashes were being picked up, and a recording was made that assured the doctors that they were working with

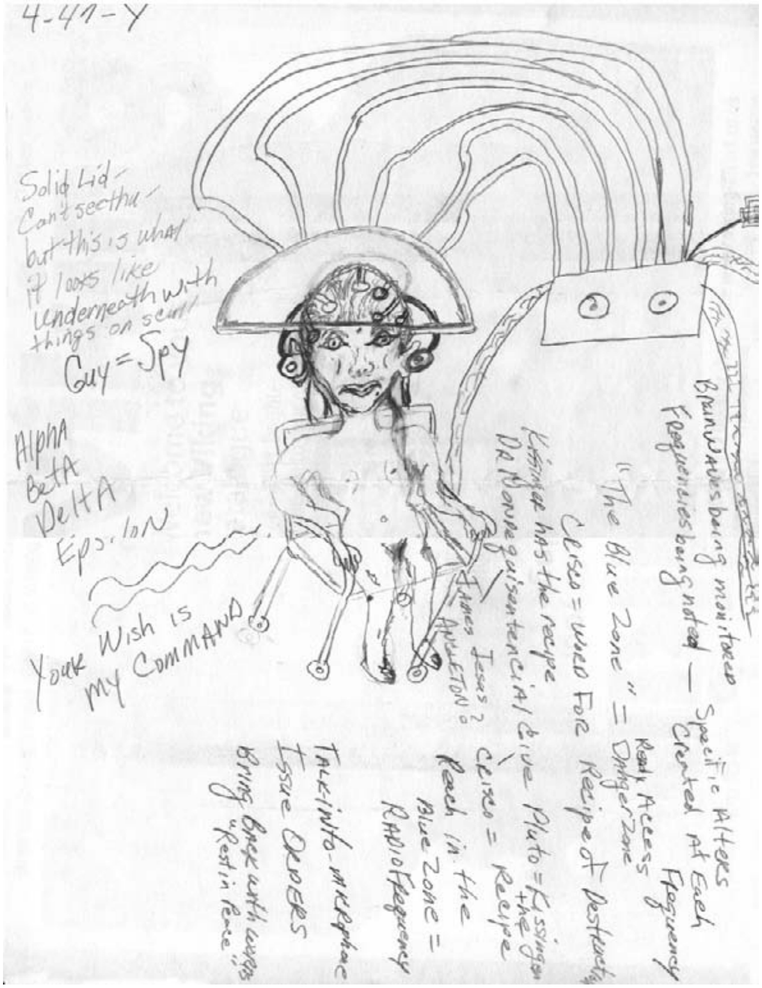

4-41-Y
Solid Lid - Can't see thru - but this is what it looks like underneath with things on scalp
Guy = Spy
Alpha
Beta
Delta
Epsilon
Your Wish is my COMMAND
BrainWaves being monitored — Specific Alters
Frequencies being noted Created At Each Frequency
"The Blue Zone" = Ready Access Danger Zone
CEISCO = Used For Recipe of Destruction
Kissinger has the recipe
DR Monnegaisentencial give Pluto = Kissinger the recipe
James Jesus? ANGLETON? CEISCO = Recipe
Reach in the Blue Zone = RADIO Frequency
Talk into microphone
Issue ORDERS
Bring Back with words "Rest in Peace"

Figure 1. Illustration by Carol Rutz of an experiment to map parts of her brain.

different parts of my personality, separate and apart from the me that they would eventually reawaken. Years later, I was able to find a photo of the PET machine that was the actual technology used (Figure 2).

During the 1980s, a remote viewing project called Stargate was done at Fort Meade. It used binaural beat tones, transmitted through earphones, that altered brain waves. A hemi-sync device that played two different frequencies into each ear was found to produce altered states of consciousness. Perhaps this technology was derived from these experiments done in the 1960s on MKULTRA subjects.

During my recovery process, I also did a drawing of a procedure that was performed on me, I believe, by a doctor in Montreal, Canada. He inserted electrodes into sleeve guides and probed my brain, while someone in the room recorded what was being said. He said my brain was like a tape recorder and he just needed to take me back in time. He did this by touching different spots in my brain. The men kept recording the memories induced from images in my past. Later, a man from the CIA would use them for programming sessions. Figure 3 is the picture I drew of this procedure.

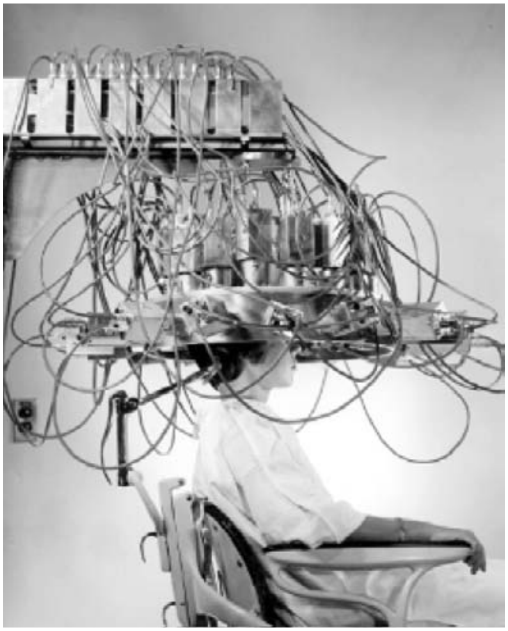


Figure 2. This picture is a Positron emitter detector (circa 1962) from Department of Energy Openness: Human Radiation Experiments: Multimedia/Brookhaven Nation Laboratory.

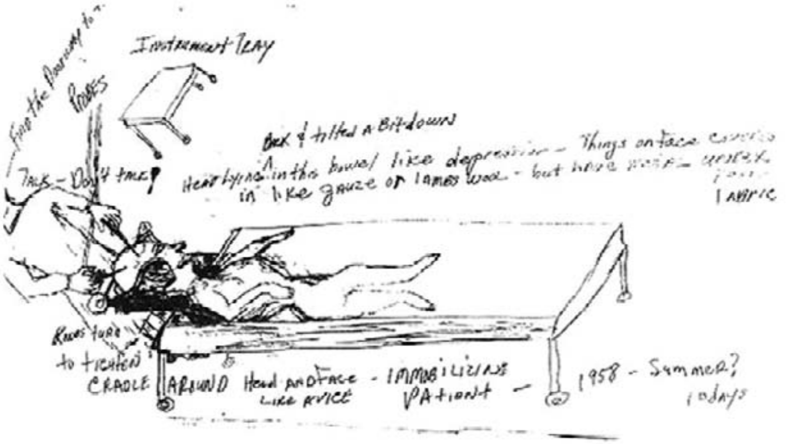

Find the Doorway to
Probes
Instrument Tray
Back & tilted a Bit down
Talk – Don't
Head lying in this bowl like depression – Things on face
in like gauze or lambs wool – but have
fabric
Knobs turn to tighten
CRADLE AROUND Head and Face like a vice – IMMOBILIZING PAtient –
1958 – Summer?
10 days

Figure 3. Illustration by Carol Rutz of procedure involving a stereotaxic instrument.

I did not know that this was a known procedure, and what it was called, until I came upon a diagram of it in a book (Scheflin & Opton, 1978, p. 268). It is called stereotaxic surgery. In it, an instrument is attached to the head, skin and muscle retracted, and a "bone button" removed to permit the insertion of an electrode into the depths of the brain.

We know now that during the 1960s and 1970s, the Soviets found that by passing a low voltage current from the front of the brain to the back, they could drop their remote viewers into the Delta

> State. Using this artificial means, they found Delta waves to be the brain's doorway to telepathic influencing, telekinesis, and remote killing.
>
> That might account for the remark I recall the doctor making, "Given enough time and enough bodies, I can find the doorway to the soul."
>
> Validation is what we all search for, isn't it—how can I know this is real? How can I prove this really happened? My alters found that painting and drawing were perfect expressions for getting scenes recorded—people's faces, places, buildings, ceremonies. I never knew what was going to be painted or drawn; I just gave my alters free rein. Years later I was able to match real people and places with my artwork. The validation was overwhelmingly powerful and helped me to understand what truly happened to me.

* * *

Of course, we do not know that the stereotaxic instrument really did what Rutz's captors told her it did. What they said might have been a deception. We do, however, know that she found validation of the experience her alters remembered.

Technological monitoring

You will notice the amount of technology used in Rutz's mind control training. The military and political groups who do this continue to become more and more sophisticated in their use of technology. Some survivors have found small metallic "implants" in their teeth or ears, and believe these were designed to monitor their location or to broadcast their words or thoughts to the abusers. Such technology has been developed recently for keeping track of animals or persons with dementia. But to what extent it was used years ago by mind controllers is unknown at this point. At least some of it may be similar to the "bombs" in the stomach, a trick to convince survivors that their abusers monitor them continuously. The presence of an object does not mean it is capable of collecting complex information and sending it back to abusers, or even sending them signals, for twenty or more years, as some survivors believe. As with other apparently bizarre beliefs of our survivor clients, we must acknowledge that something happened, and remain open both to the possibility that there was such technology and the possibility that it is yet another deception to convince survivors they cannot escape the grip of their abusers.

One of the most frightening aspects of this alleged technology is the possibility of mind control by "remote control," that is, through such technology as microwaves and radio waves. There are many stories about this, coming primarily from survivors, although we do know from a variety of reliable websites and mainstream news that such technology is being developed, or at least that the technological groundwork has been laid. Once again, however, we do not know whether this was in place when today's survivors were programmed. It is difficult at this point to determine how much of this is genuine, and how much comes from false beliefs deliberately induced to make survivors feel powerless, much like the "one huge and invincible cult" of whose existence survivors convinced therapists twenty years ago. I know that one of my mind control survivor clients was convinced of technological monitoring during a psychotic period several years ago, but as he healed he discarded such beliefs, along with many other bizarre ones in favor of recognizing that he had been abused by real human beings whose identity he knew.

If some of this remote control it is genuine, we may need to develop technological means to combat it.

However, we should not be intimidated. Even if "voices" are induced in the head by remote control rather than through alters doing jobs, survivors can learn to disobey such voices just as they do those of alters. Competent and compassionate therapy for the dissociation can help survivors to heal. Meanwhile, there are numerous survivors whose mind control is of the kind that can be treated through psychotherapy.

Neutrality vs. reflective belief

When a client who reports ritual abuse or mind control asks, "Do you believe me?", therapists often feel caught between two unacceptable options. We have been advised by many professionals to take an attitude of strict neutrality regarding the veracity of clients' allegations and supposed memories. Some claim it is unethical to do otherwise. Yet we know from our clinical experience that neutrality can be interpreted by a client as disbelief and can harm the therapeutic relationship. These clients already have considerable difficulty trusting a therapist, and because they have undergone many of the experiences described above they struggle with what they need to tell us. It feels as if we're "damned if we do say we believe" (encouraging the client in inventing things, inviting a lawsuit), and "damned if we say we don't believe" (invalidating the client).

So, in the early stages of therapy with such clients, here is what I suggest therapists say: "I'm a psychologist (you can say counsellor, social worker, doctor), and it's my job to deal with whatever's in your head. It's your job to figure out what's real, what's unreal, and what may be a result of abusers' tricks. You can only figure that out successfully when you've found out everything that's in your head." Reassure your clients that they can talk about whatever they need to talk about, regardless of whether or not at this moment they believe their memories or the images in their head to represent real experiences. That gets them "off the hook" of having to tell "the truth" which their abusers wanted them to tell.

Here is how Carrie Swart, of Intensive Trauma Therapy, Inc., addresses this issue (from an email posted to an online forum called the Dissociative Disorders Discussion List, reprinted with the author's permission): First, she says, it is "[t]he narrative truth that each individual brings to the table at a given time, [that] is of the utmost importance." The literal facts are not the issue, but the person's perception, experience and response:

> So many traumatized and abused individuals, both RA/MC and not, go through life not being heard and not being believed. I have seen many clients who, especially as children, have tried to tell someone about their abuse but were told 'That couldn't have happened' or 'Uncle Henry would never do that to you,' etc. . . . in some cases, not being believed by the adult 'caregivers' in one's life can end up being just as, if not more, traumatizing than the abuse itself.

When clients question the validity of their memories, she says, she informs them she cannot

> answer that question for them . . . regardless of whether or not something occurred in reality, or is simply a product of one's brain, it is still disturbing to the individual. If their perception of an event, image, memory, dream, whatever, is disturbing to them in the here and now and causing symptoms of trauma/dissociation, then it needs to be processed. Our clients need to be heard and validated. We need to work with the information provided by a client, rather than focusing on whether or not we believe what he or she is telling us. The important thing for us as clinicians, is to believe that feelings are always valid and that each and every client we see deserves to live free of symptoms and free of pain.

I would add that the historical truth is often embedded within the narrative truth, and can be discovered by the client once the narrative truth has been faced in all the aspects available to all the dissociated parts of the client. When my client believed she had killed a living baby, an "observer" alter told her that the baby was already dead and its cries were made by a tape recorder hidden under the table. When the client who had undergone the "alien abduction" saw that the spaceship was within the cult training center, it cast doubt on the perpetrators being aliens. Tricks and lies can be unmasked, but only through the client looking, together with a supportive witness, at what she remembers, and then drawing her own conclusions when she has all the available evidence.

Van der Hart and Nijenhuis (1999) wrote a wonderful article on this topic. Here is their abstract:

> Clinicians should not reflexively accept or reject as fact a client's report of uncorroborated abuse. However, by maintaining a neutral stance, clinicians may fall short of therapeutic honesty and transparency, may fail to promote reality testing, and may not perform the necessary step of bearing witness to the client's victimization. Using a case of dissociative identity disorder, this article proposes the careful development and sharing of the clinician's reflective belief in the (in)validity of reported trauma. This process may assist clients in (a) reclaiming a sense of integrated personal narrative memory and identity, (b) correcting cognitive distortions, or (c) both. [p. 37]

There could come a time when we might come to reflective, rather than reflexive, belief. When everything seems to fit together—the client's symptoms, their stories of what happened, their body sensations and emotions, and any external corroboration—over time we can come to reflective belief that some of these experiences happened, although in many cases the experiences were not what the child believed they were. *But there is a difference between believing that bad experiences happened, and believing what the child was led to believe.* For example, a woman recently disclosed to me a memory in which a group of her male alters were anally raped by a group of priests, who told them that this was a special honor and a spiritual experience which was only given to boys. It is not necessary to believe that they were boys or that it was a spiritual honor in order to think that the client's memory could be valid. Similarly, when I meet an alter personality who informs me that he or she is not part of the body and would not die if they killed the body, I acknowledge that they had some experience which led them to believe that, but I do not accept their belief at face value; I search for what was done to make them come to this conclusion, and I attempt to unmask the trick.

Some professionals take the position that the truth or untruth of a memory does not matter. They suggest that therapists need not pursue an exploration of what really happened in trauma survivors' lives. I do not endorse this position. In practical terms, for this population, it would allow programming to endure, uncorrected. Psychologist Ellen Lacter, in an email to the online Dissociative Disorders Discussion Forum (reprinted by permission), speaks about the internal conflicts survivors go through in sharing their experiences, the most human response a therapist can give, and why it is damaging to merely take a neutral position.

> Most survivors are their own greatest critics when it comes to doubting their memories. They have been programmed to distrust them. They hate and fear them and want them to be untrue. They have been invalidated by others their whole lives. To be healing, we must be deeply honest. If an account seems contrived, fear-driven, impossible, etc., we can say "It does not ring true to me." And when reality is very unclear, we may say "Let's see what happens as this unfolds." But when clients overcome tremendous trepidation, and finally share an account of unspeakable horrors, with vivid multisensory details, and matching somatic flashbacks, and matching affect of fear, disgust, rage, and grief, pieces of other memories match, and they both wish it was not true, and long to be believed, and they say "Could this be real?", or "Do you think I am making this up?" we must speak the truth from our heart, and say "It all seems to fit," or "It rings true to me." To say "What matters is what is your truth" is a lie. It is nonempathic. It is dissociogenic. And it leaves them alone in the ritual or laboratory.

When I read accounts of clients with allegedly factitious DID, many of those accounts remind me of Teresa, one of my first four. I know that I went through a process of increasing disbelief with her, as the abuse she disclosed broadened from verbally abusive alcoholic parents, to sexual abuse by father, to sexual abuse by relatives, to the "boogie man" who came in through the window at night (probably someone who paid her parents for this privilege), to sexual assaults by strangers (who turned out not to be strangers to some of her alters). Couple that with the overwhelming positive transference which caused her to almost stalk me, as well as her tendency to confabulate when she did not remember what happened, and it was very tempting to dismiss her allegations as unfounded. I am grateful that I did not. Until I listened to her and to the others who were being abused by the same perpetrators, Teresa was alone in the psychiatric system, wearing a pejorative label ("Borderline Personality Disorder"), without help.

We need to be careful about labeling clients' disclosures factitious, no matter how far-fetched they appear to be. Some of the things these perpetrator groups do are indeed far-fetched, but they are real, even if they include simulations of impossible events. More important than telling the client we believe everything s/he tells us is letting him or her know we are open to his or her sharing whatever experiences s/he needs to share. Our clients need to know we are open to hearing about multiple perpetrators, deliberate creation of alters, torture of infants and children, years of deliberate planned abuse, sexual perversions, murders, cannibalism, and children forced to perpetrate. They watch us carefully to learn whether or not we can handle it, and whether or not they can trust us with that information. Let us not fail them.

In the following chapter, we will further examine the relationship between therapists and the clients who come to them to heal the unimaginable.

CHAPTER THIRTEEN

Boundaries and bonds: the therapeutic relationship

The research evidence has not changed in the past fifty years: the factor that matters most in successful psychotherapy is the bond between the client and the therapist. Patterson (2000) states that

> Considering the obstacles to research on the relationship between therapist variables and therapy outcomes, the magnitude of the evidence is nothing short of amazing. There are few things in the field of psychology for which the evidence is so strong. The evidence for the necessity, if not the sufficiency, of the therapist conditions of accurate empathy, respect, or warmth, and therapeutic genuineness is incontrovertible . . . The effectiveness of all methods of counseling or psychotherapy may be due to the presence of a therapeutic relationship. [p. 441]

And that is one reason the mind controllers work so hard to destroy it.

How mind controllers prevent the therapeutic bond

Mind controllers know the importance of the relationship with the therapist. They know that the most likely time a survivor will disclose the secrets of their abuse is within a secure bond with a therapist or a loved one. So they go to extra trouble to make sure that such a bond never happens in the first place, or, if it does happen, that it will be disrupted and broken.

Deliberate neglect and breaking of infant bonds

Licensed Clinical Social Worker and survivor Wendy Hoffman, in her unpublished manuscript (1993), states:

> The cult knew about attachment disorder before it became a diagnosis. Their goal is to separate the fetus from the pregnant mother emotionally. They give the mother electric shocks in various parts of her body and she has to leave the fetus emotionally. If she does during these frequent torture sessions, the fetus is then born programmable because it will have attachment issues. The reason they test the fetus when born is to see if the mother separated from the fetus. The mother knows if she doesn't, the fetus will be killed. They test by giving the fetus pain and observing whether the fetus will accept comfort. If it will, then the fetus is not programmable, and may be killed.

Take a look at what Stella Katz wrote in Chapter Seven about the initial experiences of ritually abused infants. They are deliberately neglected and abandoned, and the bond with the mother is deliberately broken. One ritually abused client of mine had an alter who believed himself to be a rock. This resulted from being left alone all night out in the forest at the age of two, in the Canadian cold season.

Couple with this severe neglect and bond breaking the fact that, in most cases, the parents are actively involved in the abuse, and you have a recipe for severe distrust of anyone who appears to care. One client of mine was violently sexually abused by family members while they called out alters' names and said, "This is how we show you that we love you. This is what love means." Some of my ritually abused or mind-controlled clients have had parents with dissociative disorders. One part of the parent cared about the child and was even overprotective, while another part was involved in severe abuse. As one of my clients cried out recently while processing a memory of torture, "That's my dad but it isn't my dad, somebody else is inside him." In other cases, the parents have been consistently frightening and punitive as well as neglectful.

This kind of upbringing teaches a child that she cannot trust people to comfort her or to pay attention to her needs. It produces a disorganized attachment, even without all the pain and torture that these groups administer to children.

Training not to form bonds or trust anyone

Among their abuses designed to contaminate bonding, ritual abuse and mind control survivors have endured deliberate training experiences in which they have been taught not to trust anyone. For example, after a girl had told her teacher that her daddy hit her, her teacher and school counselor were impersonated by cult members, who abused her, and she was told that you cannot trust anyone you tell because they will turn out to be perpetrators and will abuse you.

Children in ritualistic cults are given animals to pet and love, and then the animals are killed, often with the child either being blamed or being forced to hold the weapon which kills it. Trish Fotheringham (Chapter Six) tells of having to choose between killing her pet rabbit or having the abusers kill her baby brother.

Perhaps the worst experience is when a child is forced to stab and believe she has killed a person she has been allowed to get close to. Children in Satanic or Luciferian cults are often paired with a "disposable" (unregistered or kidnapped) child, given a chance to make friends with that child, and then are forced to participate in that child's murder.

Stella Katz has shared this story, as an acknowledgment of what she was forced to do as a young girl, and a tribute to the (other) victim. She states that Miranda was a disposable child bred within her group, and was used to train Stella in the "art" of sacrifice, by being the sacrifice.

For Miranda: Stella Katz

This is for you Miranda, and for all the other Mirandas who came before you and who have come after you. May your souls be forever at peace.

Miranda was four years old when she died on an altar of Satan, at the hand of her five-year-old friend.

The only difference between Miranda and the other little girl was the family to which she was born. The five-year-old was fortunate, or not so fortunate, depending on the way you look at it, to be born to a family of the inner circle. She was destined to be great and was groomed to be so, and Miranda's death was part of this hideous grooming. Miranda was born to the lower circle. From the moment of her conception she was fated to die. She was probably conceived during an orgy, paternity unknown. Her birth would have been at home, or in the home of another coven member. She would never have seen a doctor unless he was of the coven, or anyone for that matter outside the group. She never went to nursery school, or the zoo, or any public place. No outside human being would have known of her existence.

From the moment of her birth she was neglected and abused, physically, emotionally, sexually, and spiritually. She was given only the bare necessities of survival. She was never allowed to associate with other little children or have any kind of friends. About six months before her death, she was, for the first time, allowed to have a little friend. The bond created between these children was unbreakable.

For those six months the friendship was encouraged in every way, and it flourished, neither child knowing what was to come. When someone is starving to death, and food is offered, they don't often stop to ask the cost. When children are deprived of love, any affection is welcomed. When that child suddenly has someone, the bond that is created is an everlasting thing.

For Miranda and her little friend, the bond that was created was nothing more than a deliberate cruel joke. The children were told that something special is coming, and that they are to be a part of it. They got excited as children do; talking and whispering and giggling about what it might be. As the day approached, they were primed and pumped and hyped up, just like children anticipating a special gift from Santa.

On that special day, they were bathed in sweet smelling soaps, and covered in sacred oils. Their hair was neatly curled and groomed and their bodies were painted with sacred symbols.

For those six months, they had been inseparable. And now they were to join in a big celebration at which they would be the honored guests. They were dressed in ceremonial garb. The little friend in white satin, and Miranda in a beautiful red chiffon dress, all soft and flowing. She looked like a princess and felt, for the first time in her little life, like someone special. Her blonde hair fell in ringlets flowing gently over her shoulders and down her back. Hand in hand, Miranda and her friend were led into the center circle by the High Priestess. The bell rang nine times, and chanting began. The High Priest began the offerings, and then after what seemed like forever, he picked up Miranda and carefully placed her on the altar. Her hands and feet were bound, and as the fear welled up inside her,

> she began to cry. The priest then picked up her little friend and held her as she knelt beside Miranda. When Miranda saw her friend she immediately quieted and smiled. The priest picked up the sacred athame and placed it into the hand of the little friend.
>
> Holding her hand in his, he raised her hand, and with one swift thrust, pierced Miranda's heart. Miranda looked up at her little friend and smiled through her pain and tears, and said "You was my friend" and died.
>
> The little friend was left kneeling on the altar at Miranda's side holding the knife with the blood of her friend dripping off the end of it. Knowing that she had just killed her best friend. The High Priest picked her up again, and raised her to the crowd, and said, "You are forever ours." They cheered. She was passed around the circle and praised. The shock of what had happened was so great she couldn't even cry.
>
> Well, Miranda, thirty odd years later, your friend is finally crying and can't seem to stop. There are too many Mirandas. There are TOO many children that society doesn't know about, or care to know about. They turn their heads away and pretend that this stuff just doesn't happen. And worst of all, some are claiming that our memories of Miranda and kids like her are false.
>
> Well, Miranda, I know that you existed. I know that my memories are very real and so were you. I promise to you here and now that as long as I am alive, the world will know that you and others like you are not figments of our overactive imaginations. And Miranda, I swear to you that the voice I silenced so long ago, your voice, my friend, will scream through mine, until somebody finally hears, and puts an end to the slaughter of all the little Mirandas.
>
> No one on this earth will ever tell me that you never existed. Be at peace, my little friend.

* * *

Stella's tale of her little friend not only shows the horror of forced perpetration, but exposes the horror of the brief lives of unregistered children, born into cults and kept for a few years solely for the purpose of sacrifice.

My most personally traumatic experience in all the years of working with ritual abuse survivors happened when I discovered that one of my clients had an unregistered child. The client's reporter alter told the group that I had found out, and she was forced to kill the child before anyone could locate it. I had to work through this very recent memory with her.

What does it do to a child to have such experiences? Love is connected with death, and with the child experiencing herself as a murderer. How can such a person develop an attachment bond?

Most of the memories that can cause the overwhelming kind of guilt and depression used in the mind controllers' "booby traps" (to create suicide attempts) are the death of a loved one such as a brother, sister or friend, or the death of a pet, especially by their own hand. Other causes are memories of abandonment, being told they are unlovable, even by God—"no one wants you, you are worthless, no one can save you". The rescuing angel at the end of the Kabbalah pathways is the angel of death, who promises to stop this pain through being the only one who loves the child.

In Chapter Eight, I mentioned the experience of an adult client who, as a little girl, came to trust a friendly caring neighbor; the neighbor woman was impersonated and the child, drugged, forced to stab and "kill" her. Then the "dead" person violently abused the child, and the cult leaders told her that if she got close to anyone she would be forced to kill them and then they would become evil like this woman did. This client had an alter whose job was specifically to "unplug" her from any relationships in which she might get to trust someone. It took her several years before the young alters could begin to trust me.

Training not to trust therapists

There is also specific training of child alters to distrust therapists. One scenario I have encountered several times has the child lying on the couch of a cult-involved therapist, who says she must look at him. When she does, he is wearing a devil mask and horns, and he rapes her, telling her that all therapists are servants of Satan. Child alters are taught not to look at "therapists" until they are told to. Experiences such as this one reinforce this training. It sets the scene for actual therapists to be impersonated later in the person's life.

Often, child alters are trained to listen for certain words in what people say, and if they hear these words they know that the person is dangerous and not to be trusted. With one of my survivor clients I have to try not to use the words *feel*, *touch*, or *think*, among others. All those words were used in combination with torture. When the client with the reaction to those words recently attended an adjudication regarding Criminal Injuries compensation, the adjudicator asked her several times, "How do you feel?", the exact words which were said by her abusers after administering pain. Needless to say, she was upset, and an alter blurted out "Don't use the F word!" I had to explain what she meant to the shocked adjudicator, who stated that she would *never* use the F word. Another client cannot hear the word "safe," as to her this means the reverse. Several times I have heard a client say "They told me about people like you, they told me you would say that."

Mind controllers also train child alters to seduce therapists. A client of mine disclosed a memory in which she cried in the office of someone she was told was a therapist, and then in comforting her he sexually abused her in such a way that her body responded. Afterwards, he accused her of tricking him into it. When she got home, her mother said she did well, and taught her how to do it better. I found it quite sad when this client posed provocatively, trying to seduce me, saying in a childlike voice that it was "the best offer I'd ever get."

It is hard to build a relationship with someone who has parts who believe either that you will sexually abuse them or that they will harm you or be forced to kill you. Parts who are trained to kill in cults are generally told that they are evil and that their dark energy will harm anyone they get close to—or that the cult members will come and kill those people.

Impersonation of therapists

The training not to look at therapists sets the stage for members of the perpetrating group (sometimes called "cult clones") to impersonate the survivor's actual therapists when she seeks treatment and begins to disclose the abuse. Members of the abusive group study the therapist by attending his or her lectures, becoming clients briefly, or sending a client in with a device to tape the sessions. They find a way to get into the therapist's office, or use another space that is similar to the office. Then they call the client to meet them, or abduct her, and they use an individual who has some physical resemblance to the therapist to impersonate him or her, wearing similar clothing and scented products and imitating the therapist's speech patterns while the client is drugged and unable to see clearly.

Katz, discussing the impersonation of therapists as part of current contact, writes,

> When a client is disclosing secrets to a therapist, and the group finds out about it, the therapist is impersonated to make the client distrust them. In the old days, therapists would be impersonated by actors, in a setting that closely resembled the therapist's office. The actor would be dressed in similar clothing and would impersonate the voice of the therapist as much as possible. The person would be picked up and drugged and brought to the so-called office. A therapy session would begin as it usually did, then the therapist would begin to doubt what the person was saying. They would then tell them that they were lying and that what they were saying was just figments of their imagination. If the person protested, they would strap them to the chair or couch, and physically abuse them, or rape them using electric probes that burned or shocked. This would break any trust the client had with the therapist. At the end of the session the person may be told it was just a dream. However when the person tries to go to the therapist's office, they find it impossible to trust, or spend the session testing the therapist. This is done over and over again, until the person stops going altogether.
>
> Today it is done using virtual reality glasses, which is more efficient. With the use of computers and virtual reality glasses, as well as good old drugs, it has made it very easy for the groups to reproduce a therapist that the person trusts, and make them into a therapist that hurts. At one time they needed "look alike" actors, and a good construction crew, and money. Now they simply need to videotape the therapist's office through a window, as well as the therapist, and they can reproduce them any time they need to, with very little expense. A simple recording of the therapist's voice, usually taken from answering machine messages, with the help of a computer, can reproduce every little intonation the therapist may have in his or her voice. If anything specific is needed, a client is planted for a few sessions with a hidden tape recorder, and the group has everything they need to make the therapist appear to be the real person.

This impersonation of therapists sounds preposterous, and I did not believe it until it happened to me with the first four. Tony began to refuse to enter my office, and I had to meet him in the coffee shop across the street. The other clients became afraid of me. Eventually I discovered that cult members had somehow got into my office,[1] and in there someone impersonating me had brutally sexually abused them while telling them she loved them. She had also forced them to abuse one another.

I asked them to bring in a support person to our sessions while we worked through this memory. I eventually held a meeting with Teresa and Jennifer in which they apologized to one another and to me for participating in this (not that they had any choice). These clients all became aware of my being impersonated, and learnt to tell the difference between me and the "clone." I had a crooked finger at the time, and while not looking at the person's face they could see her hands and see whether or not it was me. During this period I had my first session with a teenager who claimed to be ritually abused, just after I had surgery on this finger, and she kept staring at my bandaged hand. When I asked her why, she stated that it had not been like that the last time she saw me. I had never seen her before! My "clone" had beaten me to the punch.

This impersonation only worked for a short period with these clients, because the "clone" abused them brutally, and did not do a very good job of impersonating me. However, a couple of years later, an artist client claiming a ritual abuse history told me she kept drawing my office. She was knowledgeable about these matters, and wondered whether perhaps my office was to be simulated. Then she had a dream in which people took her to an office which was a few blocks from mine, similarly located on the second floor of a commercial building, in which she had some kind of therapy session. A little while later, she came to a session with a support person and accused me of being angry and critical of her in our sessions, stating that she could no longer trust me. Apparently the impersonator that was used this time (this client was from a different perpetrator group than my first four) did a very good job by just engaging in bad therapy rather than sexually abusing the client, so it was harder for her to recognize that she was reacting to an impersonation than to me. I lost this client after over a year of therapy.

If you suspect that you are being impersonated to your clients, select something unique about your hands or some other part of your body, which the impersonator will have difficulty simulating, and suggest to your clients that they look at it if they are not sure whether the person is you. You may wonder how a client can believe that it is you when the person is engaging in behavior that is completely opposed to your nature and your usual way of being. Remember that these clients are used to being around people who have extreme changes in their behavior. Many of the perpetrators have dissociative disorders themselves, and switch to abusive personalities from ones who are quite socially acceptable. Others are just good actors.

It is very important that you find out whether this is going on and, if so, find a way to work through these current memories as soon as possible. Otherwise you may either lose your client or find yourself the target of a lawsuit or complaint to your licensing board.

Abuser groups also use voice impersonation over the telephone. Teresa, who lived in an apartment, had an impersonator imitate my voice over the intercom and invite her to go out for coffee. Another client, who had a safe husband and older children, kept getting phone calls from "me" cancelling our appointments. We agreed that if I called her, I would always use the name of a floater alter the group did not know about, so that she would know it was really me. Similarly, psychologist Eroca Shaler arranged to always talk about the weather with one client who was receiving such calls. If the weather was not mentioned, the client would know it was not really Eroca.

Creating a therapeutic bond with mind-controlled clients

It is easy to be impatient to get through therapy quickly, especially if funding is time-limited. However, the only thing that works with people who have been so frequently betrayed, trained to expect betrayal, and trained to believe harm will come to anyone they love, is to be consistent, week after week, year after year. We need to be consistent in our caring, caring for all parts of the person equally rather than rejecting some parts. We also need to be consistent in the boundaries we set, so that the client knows what to expect from us. Let us return to LisaBri's story.

A survivor in therapy: LisaBri

In childhood, severely abused emotionally, physically and sexually, I refused to die. My perpetrators, including my own mother and father, did not mildly abuse; they subjected me to the horrors of Incest and Satanic ritual abuse on a continual basis.

I was fearful of the slightest noise at night—beds creaking, house settling, pipes banging, or a door opening left me cowering in the corner of my bedroom. I knew they would be back to twist and warp my mind for their sadistic purposes. They always knew where to draw the thin line between death and sanity. I always waited in fear, with my heart pounding through my chest and cold, sweaty and clammy hands.

At the age of twenty-five I ran. In running, I found therapy. Three thousand miles away, in hiding, I approached my first therapy appointment. I was about to break one of the cardinal rules of the cult—you do not disclose to outsiders.

Body shaking, icy, freezing hands and feet, knees feeling like they would buckle with every step, I reached "Linda's" home office—scared but alive. She would guide me through the next five years. I left my car on the road, and thought of a hundred reasons why I should not continue and each was just as feeble as the last. During that two-minute walk, I convinced myself I had not escaped, and behind that door lay my abusers ready to punish me for my indiscretion. As I stood at the door, ringing the bell, hearing the sudden bark of dogs, and what sounded like a thousand troops pounding down the stairs ready for battle, it took all my inner reserves not to take flight as the internal pull to run or stay clashed in my brain.

Those first few years with Linda were turbulent with many valleys and hills. I would reach the crest of one only to fall down the other side. Linda did more than guide me; she broke her own ethical rule of conduct by laying no boundaries. She spent one on one time with me in her home. I would have dinner with her family. She spent her time off frequently having coffee at my house. I could call her twenty-four hours a day, seven days a week, and she bought me presents.

Within four years, I had moved from the city to the small town that she resided in. I became part of Linda's other life away from therapy. Playing to my constant insecurities, Linda consistently told me, "I will never hurt or leave you," and I believed her.

Looking back upon it now, telling me this was as cruel as it was kind. With no set therapeutic boundaries I had no sense of myself. I was living Linda's life and I was bound for hurt or betrayal. Instead of helping me find independence and growth, I grew increasingly dependent on her and when the blow came, it hit the core of my being.

The message I received on my answering machine in the midst of intensive memory work told me she had renewed her faith in God and overnight believed only God could save me. Linda would no longer work with non-Christians. Scared, hurt, disbelieving, and having been so dependent on her, I could not comprehend life without her. Desperately not wanting to lose Linda, I ignored my own instincts and the daily growing knot of uncertainty in my stomach. I went to Christian counseling and to her church for a year, until the fear completely overwhelmed me.

I recognized that coming from such a horrendous background had left me spiritually raped and unable to cope with any religious denomination. I finally had to accept that I had lost Linda in more than a therapeutic way.

After shopping around for almost a year, I found "Christyne", but with a different resolve. I chose her, not from an overwhelming sense of urgency and neediness, but from an educated place of having

> learned a harsh lesson. I talked to Christyne on the phone prior to making an appointment and she said, "I can guide you, I can help you find yourself and what that means, but first we have to set boundaries." I made an appointment.
>
> I must have reached for the phone twenty times from that day to the date of my appointment to cancel. I didn't. I arrived at my appointment with Christyne, weak-kneed with a parched mouth and throat, and feeling like I could not string two words together. I wondered how I would find the strength to master the walk up to her office; it looked like there were thirty steps, straight up with the last stair not in sight. As I stood on the ground floor, looking up to the top of that mountain of stairs—I knew I would climb it—more than once in my lifetime. All I had to do was take one step at a time. I would falter and take a step back, but in strength and support, I would regain my holding and advance to yet another step.
>
> Today, the mountaintop seems closer and with boundaries set out with Christyne I am learning independence and with it a sense of pride. I don't know where Christyne lives, nor do I have her home phone number. With proper guidance, I am in charge of my healing, and I am doing it. Having a consistent structure has been a major growth experience for me.
>
> I still have days when I want to cry and rage, "I don't want to do this anymore!" yet I find the strength and with Christyne's support, I advance to the next level of healing.

Therapeutic boundaries

LisaBri's story illustrates the extreme vulnerability of dissociative clients, the dangers of therapist–client enmeshment, and the importance of clear boundaries with survivor clients. Her early experiences happened during the period in the 1980s and 1990s when therapists were first discovering dissociative disorders.

Like many other therapists working in the 1990s, I had rather loose boundaries with the first few dissociative clients I worked with. Some of that was a result of having worked as part of a multi-disciplinary Child & Youth team with members such as child care workers and social workers, who would go out for coffee etc., with their clients. Seeing them outside the office did not work with my ritually abused clients, and gave an opportunity for the local cult to impersonate me in settings outside the office.

I now believe that every therapist must work out a set of explicit boundaries and stick to them. Issues of trust will arise no matter where the boundaries are placed, although they will be much worse without them.

Survivors of child abuse and neglect tend to replicate the enmeshment and violation of their early experiences. The neglect leads them to want nurturing like little babies without "object constancy." The abuse makes them insensitive to their own and the other's boundaries. At the same time, their evident hurt, and our natural empathic response, as well as their child-like nature when in young, traumatized ego states, lead us to violate our own boundaries in our attempts to help them. I agree with Kluft (1993) that

> to break the ground rules of therapy is to recapitulate the boundary violations of the patient's childhood and to demonstrate that the therapist is corruptible rather than reliable, as MPD is a condition that was created by broken boundaries. [p. 27]

Guidelines about specific boundaries: therapist availability

The primary area where I find clients try to violate the boundaries concerns my availability to them. These clients are desperate for connection, and once we get past the initial fear, if I let them, they would move in with me. Some of them have no awareness of time. Tony used to phone me in the middle of the night, since he had no sense of the difference between day and night, and after waking me and taking up my attention for a long time, he would switch to a sexualized alter and accuse me of talking to him when I was in bed. When I told him I would turn off the ringer at 10 p.m., he thanked me. Now I do not give out my home phone number at all to these people. I also do not promise to call back at the end of the day, because I am often too tired, too late, or too busy. I have slightly different rules for each client, depending on the extent to which they violate boundaries. As James Chu (1998) says, constant availability ignores the real human limitations of the therapist, and also leads to increasing dependence on the therapist. And, I might add, it also fails to prepare clients for real life.

Length and frequency of sessions

This is another area where some clients push the boundaries, in particular going into abreactions or pseudo-seizures, or raising important and sensitive topics, when there are five minutes left in the session. If a client needs a longer session because she is processing a particularly difficult memory, that is one thing. If she delays bringing up the awkward topic until the end of the session, that is another. I do find that most dissociative clients work better with a session an hour and a half long rather than the standard fifty-minute hour.

Do these clients need more therapy sessions than others? Twice per week (presumably, one-hour sessions) is generally recommended for clients with dissociative disorders. I find it works well enough with just one weekly ninety-minute session, recognizing that most of my ritually abused or mind-controlled clients cannot afford even this. The longer session gives dissociative clients more time for different alters to speak either to me or to one another, and also allows time to work through traumatic memories.

The only occasions where I have given extra time were when I was trying to remove all the access programs from my clients who were currently being harassed by the local cult. A weekend intensive therapy program of two days, all day, enabled us to get rid of some of those dangerous programs and make the clients safer. For suicidal crises, I allow the client to use the other resources, such as crisis lines, set up for such situations. I am usually able to avert such crises by careful attention at the end of a session to whether or not such a program is triggered, and speaking with the alters responsible.

Phone calls and emails

I used to say that I would only return calls if the person was in crisis. I found that this led to a manufacturing of crises. So now I just say (for those who are prone to frequent boundary invasions) that I do not return calls unless the purpose is to reschedule appointments. I limit one particular client to leaving me one message per week. I do allow clients to call and listen to my message and hang up. Some of them have brought little tape recorders for a special message each week that they can listen to. I give my email address out only to selected clients when they have proven that they can respect boundaries, and I allow them to email me rather than telephone if they are having difficulty. That way I can decide whether and when to respond.

Office rules

Mind-controlled clients in particular appreciate rules being given. They also understand rules, as they have lived with them since infancy.

My own office rules are: (1) don't hurt people; (2) don't break things; (3) don't take clothes off except coats. I state these rules to dissociative clients, especially to child alters. I emphasize that the rules apply to me as well as to them. I see their eyes widen when I mention the "Don't take clothes off" rule. I believe this rule is particularly important because of the likely history of sexual abuse by persons pretending to be therapists. When I state the rule I am telling them not only that I will not abuse them this way, but also that I am aware that this sometimes happens.

Touching

Touch is a complicated issue in the field of psychotherapy, and especially so with these clients. Stephen Ray, one of my early teachers about ritual abuse, said that he thought it was abusive *not* to touch clients who have been so massively neglected and abused. I do hug, touch, and occasionally hold clients, depending on the person. I often hold the hands of one of my ritually abused clients while I speak with her alters. Apparently several of the "evil" alters were told that they would poison anyone who touched them, so it is important to show them that this curse was based on a lie. My touch creates anxiety in the short run, but will create safety in the long run.

I always ask permission of the particular alter. If any alter seems to have a sexual response I discuss it openly, giving an explicit statement that I will not be sexual with them. One male client had a very young alter he called "the horny goat" for obvious reasons; after careful consideration, he decided that this child part needed a hug too, despite his embarrassment. However, there are days when he makes it clear that he is not to be hugged. The experience of setting his own physical boundaries is probably very reassuring to him.

I do believe it is wise to be careful whom you touch or hug. Many years ago I hugged a distressed woman who had been sexually abused by her mother; needless to say, this was the wrong thing to do.

Commitment and money

If I take on a client with a dissociative disorder, especially if they have experienced mind control of any type, I know I am making a long-term commitment—that is, of several years' duration. So I do not take them on unless I know I want to and am able to follow through. This pertains especially to the financial burden of therapy. I do not start with anyone who cannot pay, unless there are very special circumstances. If a funding source runs out, it is not ethical to just terminate the client. I do not allow dissociative clients to owe me money. Payment for therapy must be negotiated clearly at the start, and in some cases periodically renegotiated. I currently have several pro bono clients, and they are all survivors of organized abuse whose funding ran out some time ago. I need to make sure I have sufficient income from other sources so that I can continue to see these clients.

Dealing with boundary violations

Boundary violations are essentially unavoidable with these clients, because any ritually abused and mind-controlled people have alters who are trained to violate therapists' boundaries. But it makes a difference how we handle them. When I speak to such a client about boundaries, I always begin with saying, "You are not in trouble." *In trouble* is the term that many of these survivors use when they are expecting the severe beating or rape that happened when they disobeyed their abusers.

It is to be expected that clients who have been persistently violated in childhood will have difficulty recognizing and respecting boundaries. When it happens, it is important that we mention it to the client, acknowledging any fault of our own if necessary. Confrontation is difficult when we are angry and hurt. I find it helps to write out my own feelings about boundary violations first, and then write out what I am going to say to the client, so that I will not explode, blame, or fail to state my concerns assertively. And it is important to confront sooner rather than later, so I do not have a lot of stored-up anger and hurt.

Just over a year ago, I took on a client who had been fired by an experienced trauma therapist for persistent boundary violations. I took her on probation. Since she had disclosed a history of ritual abuse and mind control, I informed her that I was aware that she probably had alters who were trained to disrupt therapy, and that if this happened with me, that would be the end of our work together. I made my boundaries very clear. About a month into therapy, she flooded me with emails. I gave her a single warning, and told her parts to turn off whatever programming was making them do this. They acknowledged that it was indeed them doing their "jobs," and stopped.

I had this client for a year before she crossed my boundaries again. It happened in response to a crisis in a friendship with another survivor who was also a client of mine. (She met her through a website rather than through me.) There were fifty-seven emails within a few days. I immediately told her not to send me any emails at all. She came to our next meeting expecting to be fired. She had cut her arms and abused alcohol.

I told her that I had been observing her reaction, and we now had an opportunity to find out what caused this reaction, which had given her trouble in many relationships with professionals. I inquired not about the problem to which she was reacting, but the mechanism within her which was creating the reaction. We located "It" and "Beasty," the "non-human" rejected alters who were creating the problem, and worked through the memory of their creation. Her last email to me on the subject said simply "Thank you for giving It and Beasty human dignity and awareness of peace."

This story illustrates how boundary violations have complex and programmed causes in mind control survivors, so we need to be firm but also compassionate, and seek out the root causes of boundary violations if and when they occur.

Transference and countertransference

In an excellent little article called "What is dissociated?" Susan Sands (1994) states that the attachment disorder that is universal among dissociative clients leads to the client's trying to get childhood relational needs met without trusting the therapist to meet them. The child's healthy relational needs for empathy, affect attunement, mirroring, calming and soothing, admiration, security, recognition, sense of alikeness with another, and loving confrontation are dissociated in childhood. These hidden needs and longings are inevitably remobilized within the therapy relationship. The relational needs are experienced by the survivor as longings, affects which signal that certain environmental responses which are necessary for self-development were missing. These longings were dissociated and seen as bad by the child, because the mobilization of these longings led to danger from a sadistic caregiver, and also because of the role reversal in the parental relationship. They come up in therapy in very crude ways, and it is easy for us to agree with the client that they are bad (regressive, inappropriately sexual, overwhelming to us, etc.)

There are "painful, compulsive re-enactments." The relational longings are experienced, then violently resisted. The client fantasizes us as the idealized omnipotent savior. What we saw in early MPD treatment was that, in response, a lot of reparenting occurred—usually associated with severe boundary violations.

Attachment-related transference

Most persons with dissociative disorders (not just mind control survivors) have difficulties with attachment. Sands and other writers, such as Goulding and Schwartz, have described the following client behaviors related to attachment:

- alters competing for therapy time, trying to get reparenting from the therapist;
- manipulating the therapist, for example, a client cutting her own arm to get an extra session;
- seeking constant reassurance and expressions of affection and caring;
- smothering neediness, attempting to blend or fuse with the therapist;
- expecting the therapist to be an almighty rescuer;
- wanting too much time, energy and commitment;
- perceiving rejection or abandonment where it isn't and reacting with self-mutilation, suicide attempts, fugues, and missed sessions;
- overreacting to the therapist's illness or tiredness;
- overreacting to the therapist's vacations and business trips, thinking everything will change during this time;
- being "a bottomless pit of parts, pain, and crises".

Teresa, the client I almost did not believe, "stalked" me, engaging in many of these behaviors. She would hang around outside my office in the Mental Health Center, hoping to get a glimpse of me if I left the office to go to the bathroom or to lunch. She saw herself as very special to me, and frequently gave me handmade gifts from the child alters, telling me that her parents always rejected such gifts. She would gladly have moved in with me if given such an opportunity. She created an alter named after me. I found it very difficult to deal with her constant needy presence, and at times I would express anger at her, something that appeared not to bother her at all. I was aware that she had never been cared for, but I did not want to become her mother, and I had to deal with my personal reaction to her clinging presence. As we persisted in therapy, she did improve, and eventually was able to leave town to get away from her abusers to establish residence in another city, where she developed new relationships.

Sands writes that "The patient not only fears that the therapist will become the perpetrator; the patient will inevitably evoke controlling or sadistic responses . . . from the therapist." Teresa certainly did with me. I remember my anger and my guilt as I tried to push her away from engulfing me with her neediness. Although Teresa was a ritual abuse survivor, much of the transference she made to me, and the countertransference she evoked in me, were responses to the neglect and emotional abandonment by her parents; she played them out with me because I was the first of the professionals in her life who had sought to understand her rather than dismissing her as an untreatable case of "borderline personality disorder."

Looking back, I am not clear how many of Teresa's needy and engulfing behaviors were programmed. All the behaviors described above can occur with "regular" DIDs or trauma survivors who were not subjected to ritual abuse or mind control. But with the mind-controlled population we need to bear in mind that, in addition to living with sadistic and inconsistently available caregivers, they have experienced specific interventions by the abusers to make sure they do not form a bond with a therapist. Teresa had particular difficulty with my vacations, being afraid that something terrible would happen to me while I was away. I later found out that the cult group simulated my murder on several occasions when I was on vacation, in addition to using the time to hold fake and abusive "therapy" sessions. Mind-controlling abusers capitalize on the client's natural fear that the therapist will become a perpetrator by setting up staged scenarios in which the therapist is indeed abusive, and in which the client has to abuse the therapist.

In any personality system, those alters in charge of safety are always observing what goes on in therapy, and trying to assess how trustworthy we are. Even though many parts do their "jobs" of sabotaging the bond, most parts are very hungry for connection with a trustworthy person, something they have never experienced, which is a basic, healthy human need. We must recognize the importance of this need. It is unlikely that mind control survivors have experienced such a connection, unless their abuse happened in a setting unconnected to the home. This connection is probably the most important element in any therapy, and particularly so with those who have never experienced it.

As we provide recognition and respect, soothing, mirroring, and gentle confrontation in therapy sessions, we can then encourage it to be gradually internalized. Alters who have experienced this can share it with newly emerging alters. I used to read a story to the "kids" of one ritual abuse survivor at the end of each therapy session, and newly emerging child parts would begin their current awareness by listening to the story from "inside." We can empathize with the client's desire to have us twenty-four hours a day, explaining that that is what a baby needs, while not giving in to it. We can ask them to provide in the inner world the nurturing that we cannot provide on the outside. We can respond gently to sexually aggressive alters, explaining that we do not need them to have sex with us like their abusers did, but we care about them without this.

Trauma-related transference

Judith Herman (1992) points out that because disempowerment is a huge effect of trauma, clients often attempt to regain their power via the therapeutic relationship—when, because of their needs to be taken care of, they have given us too much power. At the moment of trauma, the victim is utterly helpless and feels totally abandoned. "It's frightening to need someone so much and not be able to control them," Herman states (p. 137). The patient feels that her life depends on her rescuer, so she cannot afford to be tolerant of human error in the therapist. Herman gives an example of a Vietnam veteran who wanted revenge on the medic who treated him, rather than on the enemy. "In fantasies they wish to reduce the disappointing, envied therapist to the same unbearable condition of terror, helplessness, and shame that they themselves have suffered" (p. 138). I believe that if the therapist is truly empathic, this is reduced. It is worse if the therapist distances him or herself from the client and the material. It is important for the therapist to understand the power dynamics so as not to take the challenges personally.

Trauma-related transference might lead to attempts to regain power in the disempowering therapeutic relationship through such behaviors as:

- accusing the therapist of incompetence;
- pumping up the therapist's vanity then pricking it with a pin, challenging his or her professional expertise, and catching every error he or she makes;
- blaming the therapist for compounding their suffering;
- inviting the therapist into power struggles and trying to provoke him or her to be hurtful and abusive, and to re-enact the trauma in therapy;
- sharing graphic details of abusive incidents which traumatize the therapist.

Mind controllers are aware of this dynamic, and they use it. One common technique of mind-controlling abusers is to infuriate the victim through making them powerless, for example, to save another child whose cries they can hear. Then, when the anger is sufficient to split off an alter who only knows the emotion of anger, the abusers provide a victim upon whom that alter can take out its rage. When the survivor later encounters frustration or powerlessness, these rage-holder alters can be activated. Sometimes they are specifically trained to attack or kill therapists. It is uncommon that a client's system will allow any real harm to occur, but therapists working with survivors should be aware that this training might be present.

Time and trust

There is no substitute for time in building trust. Almost all of my ritually abused clients have had histories of failed therapy with other therapists. Some had their boundaries violated, some were allowed to cross over the therapists' boundaries and were then blamed for it, and some were treated by methods that are just inappropriate for this population. Your clients will watch your every move and every word to see whether or not you are trustworthy, believing that it is most likely that you are not, but hoping desperately that you will prove to be a person they can trust. It might take you many years to prove this, but it is possible. Once this happens, you will be able to get to the other work of therapy, developing relationships with all parts of the personality system, working through the traumatic memories, and resolving the issues caused by the extreme abuse. Take your time. And be patient with yourself, too.

The important thing to remember at this point is that you need to treat all parts with consistency and fairness, with "unconditional positive regard." It is only when you provide consistency over time that a survivor of this kind of horrendous abuse can come to trust you.

Remember also that many parts have no sense of time, so when they come out into the body after years of therapy, they may have no awareness of all the person's history with you. It will help if other parts can take the time to fill them in so that they can build trust with you more quickly. A month ago, I met a "new" alter in a client I have been treating for many, many years. This part did not know who I was and was suspicious of me, especially when I asked him questions. I recognized by his behavior that he had probably been interrogated by abusers, as he interpreted even my statements as questions that he did not want to answer. The host is by now pretty sophisticated regarding dealing with alters, and he instructed me to leave this new part alone to just observe his present life until he is ready to talk. Good advice. It turned out that this part is very helpful in calming him down, now that he has been orientated to the safe present.

Note

1. I later discovered that the woman who took another client of mine to a cult meeting was a member of a sexual abuse survivors' group that met in my office building, so she could have remained after a meeting and unlocked the building for the perpetrators.

CHAPTER FOURTEEN

Treating programmed pedophilia

Survivors of all forms of childhood sexual trauma frequently have serious sexual problems. As E. Sue Blume says in her 1990 book, *Secret Survivors*, which lays out many of the sexual sequelae of incest, "The context in which the child victim is first introduced to sex is responsible for numerous distortions in later life. Sex is not sex for the incest survivor" (p. 207). In particular, survivors of incest feel shame over the fact that they were sexually aroused during the abuse. The body is wired to respond to being sexually stimulated, and this is something a child cannot handle emotionally. Sexual aversion is frequently seen, as is sexual addictions, as well as other forms of sexual compulsivity.

Since most survivors of organized abuse—ritual abuse, mind control, child prostitution, and child pornography—have also experienced incest (which Blume defines as abuse by a person of greater power who is involved in an ongoing relationship with the victim), it is helpful to know about these things. However, the sexual abuses of these survivors go far beyond those of most sexual abuse survivors. Survivors of these abuses do not reactively develop problems such as sexual disturbances, including addictions and paraphilias, they are programmed to do so.

There is also programming that creates alters with ego dystonic gender identities and sexual orientations for both male and female, gay and straight survivors, which the survivor will need to resolve over the course of treatment. Your client might be too embarrassed and ashamed to tell you about even these comparatively innocent issues. Two male survivors I treated had extremely embarrassing personal solo sexual habits, which brought them great shame. One had "girl" alters who believed their anus to be a vagina, and inserted objects into it for sexual stimulation, not even realizing they had a penis. I helped him resolve it through recurring "sex education" lectures to his child alters, explaining that they were a man now who used to be a boy, not a girl, what kind of body parts they had, and how they could get the good feeling (orgasm) without engaging in the behaviors which they believed were the source of the feeling. The other man discovered that his child alters had been "located" in his anus.

So you can imagine what it is like for them to discuss the rest of it. In Chapter Seven, Stella Katz describes cult sexual training. You can imagine the results of such things as dressing alters up in costumes (e.g., strap-on penises for girls) to make them believe they are of the opposite sex, deliberate pairing of pain and pleasure, bestiality, necrophilia, and training to participate in sexual abuse and/or torture of other children while being sexually stimulated and experiencing sexual pleasure. It is no surprise that paraphilias and bizarre sexual addictions are common in this population. Groups who make the worst kinds of pornography, including child pornography, sado-masochistic pornography, and necrophilic and "snuff" (killing) pornography, create their own markets by training children and adolescents to respond sexually to other children, animals, violence, dead bodies, and death.

The conventional approach to treating sexual addictions and other extreme sexual behaviors (terms that in today's society are seen as extremely relative) is through the affected adult. With support from a therapist and/or a group, the client attempts to recognize and resist his or her troublesome urges on an ongoing basis. Sometimes, this works. Often, it does not. If we understand these problems as possibly resulting from dissociated childhood experiences, however, at least in some cases, then it may be possible to fully resolve these problems through treatment of the underlying dissociative disorder and resolution of the traumatic memories, often with great success. In any case, most of these issues are a matter of quality of life, and so it is the choice of the survivor whether or not to address them and how much effort to put into recovery. Likewise, most of the paraphilias, which are expressed "between consenting adults."

But there is one result of ritual abuse and programming that we do not have the choice to ignore, legally, morally, or psychologically: pedophilia. This is a behavior that, in the view of many professionals, can never be cured. But, fortunately, in this population, it often can be.

I share with you now the story of my client Jennifer, whose therapy included treatment for pedophilia. One of my first four ritual abuse survivor clients, Jennifer came to me in 1992 at the age of seventeen through my position at Child & Youth Mental Health Services. She requested treatment for newly remembered memories that she had sexually abused her younger brother. She worked hard, despite constant harassment by the local cult group, and reached full integration in just four years. Jennifer taught me a great deal of what I know about how to work with DID and with ritual abuse, and this book would not exist if it were not for her intelligence and bravery. I made many mistakes during the course of her treatment, but it was nevertheless successful. The following story demonstrates not only the extraordinarily layered programming that can be involved in this training, but the fact that even with those circumstances, the urges and behaviors of pedophilia can be successfully resolved.

Jennifer's story

The beginning of treatment

Jennifer was a 12th grade student in an elite boarding school. Her two years in that school were her first experience of living in relative safety. Just before graduation, when she would have returned to her family, Jennifer had a "breakdown", supposedly induced by thyroid problems. During this breakdown, she became aware that she had sexually abused her younger brother when she was between the ages of nine and fifteen. She also became aware that she had a lot of internal parts. She mapped out her internal parts in her journal, and they began writing and communicating with her there. She disclosed the existence of these parts to school personnel and to her physician. She also told these people about abusing her younger brother. She was hospitalized, referred for outpatient therapy, and placed in a foster home after the school year ended.

In the psychiatric hospital, as often occurs, despite the fact that she had produced a chart of her alter personalities, Jennifer was diagnosed as "borderline". I was the outpatient therapist assigned to her. In our first session, Jennifer asked whether I believed in what was then known to most people as Multiple Personality Disorder. When I said I did, and that I had worked with this disorder, she breathed a sigh of relief, produced her alter chart, and described what she then knew of her system. It became clear that I was talking to an organizing alter personality who frequently masqueraded as the ANP. Jennifer described her ANP as "a thin shell without much actual content," just a conduit through whose voice the other alters appeared.

Jennifer was disclosing her offenses at this time, she told me, because she preferred to be charged as a juvenile rather than as an adult. Besides the abuse of her brother, who was six years younger, she disclosed offending against some young boys she had babysat when she was about thirteen. Both sets of abuses were investigated and found to have occurred, and she was charged.

The personality system

I began by getting to know some of Jennifer's existing alters. The thirty-three that she had mapped out before starting therapy were the "real world" alters, mostly teenagers with different skills and interests. The map of her system was divided into *Good*, *Mediator*, and *Evil* sections. One part of *Evil* contained alters representing negative emotions with names such as Lust, Malice, Pain, Fear, Anger, Hate, Sadness, Ambiguity, Denial, and Grief. I later found out that these alters had regular names like Mike, Nicole, and John. The other part of *Evil* contained alters representing negative actions: physical harm to the self, manipulation, lust, and incest. The alter she called "Incest" was a teenage girl alter named Kristine. According to what she wrote about the alters, Kristine was boastful and proud about what she had done to her brother. Her other alters were horrified.

This was just the first layer of Jennifer's highly organized personality system. Most of the alters in this layer had been created spontaneously by Jennifer in reaction to her abuse. The next layer consisted of what she called *Hurt Children*, whom she had named. I did not find out until much later that they were named after children she had seen sacrificed. Below were several other layers, and other sections of alters deliberately created by Jennifer's abusers. But I did not find this out until much later. The system initially believed the incest offender alter, Kristine, to be the only offender alter. However, there were two alters in the second layer: another Kristine, and a male alter who influenced Kristine to offend. A third Kristine, who said she was a priestess, controlled both of these alters. In addition, other offender alters, with other memories of sexual offenses, were hidden in various layers of the personality system.

Memory work

At the start of therapy, Jennifer experienced repeated flashbacks of a gang rape at about age four that took place in a housing complex where she lived. Three of the abusers appeared to be teenage boys; the fourth, a man named Jason, would figure in many of her later memories. She had alters representing the rapists as well as herself as the victim. Some of these alters had imagined themselves to be perpetrators in order to avoid experiencing the pain of the rape. Within two months of beginning therapy we successfully processed this memory, making sure that the rapist alters took part so that they could no longer deny the pain of sexual abuse. When we processed a few other related memories with them, the rapist alters automatically integrated. Both Jennifer and I initially assumed that these memories were the cause of her problems.

Jennifer and I discussed potential memory processing methods and together developed one that worked for her. It was evident that Jennifer put herself into a trance during her memory processing without formal induction. I was amazed at the amount of detail she provided. The "backwards" method of memory processing we developed—choosing memories based on the behavior or feelings they motivated, rather than from the trauma material that was erupting at any one time—would later become my protocol for working with survivors. It was routine for pairs or groups of alters to integrate at the end of memory processing. As we worked with each layer of alters to deal with the memories causing their splits, they integrated and new layers came up.

Issues of safety and stabilization

Two months after we began therapy, Jennifer went to court for the sexual abuse of her younger brother. This precipitated arm-slashing by "Josh," one of the known male alters. Josh felt panic and terror at the sight of Jennifer's mother in court, but he had no idea why. When we explored this, Jennifer discovered a memory of sexual abuse by her mother, followed by punishment for being "seductive." This let me and the foster mother know that contact with Jennifer's mother was unsafe for her. Jennifer reported the abuse by her mother, and her younger brother was briefly apprehended and questioned. He did not disclose any other abuse beyond that done to him by Jennifer herself, so he was returned to the family. His mother began home schooling him.

When I went on vacation four months into therapy, Jennifer engaged in some sexual promiscuity. We found this to be very complicated behavior involving several alters. "Jessie" would seduce the men and carry out the actual intercourse. Two other alters liked the attention and cuddling. "Kristine," the alter who had abused Jennifer's little brother, handled the oral sex. Some alters wanted a child. Another was a homosexual male. We dealt with the promiscuity by planning that the traumatized child alters would share with the sexually active ones how they felt when sex happened.

The sexual behavior allowed me to talk with Kristine. She said that she had a sexual bond with her "whole fucking family," including her mother. Kristine did not particularly enjoy sex, but it was a "family thing." She did not really want the sex with her younger brother, and suspected that another alter might have made her do it. She felt obligated to engage in sex with one man so that he would like her. Her "whole fucking family" became our private joke.

Shortly after this conversation, I discovered that Jennifer had alters representing all her family members, and that these "copies" were themselves multiple, having sub-alters named from her family members' alter personalities. It appeared that all her family members also suffered from Dissociative Identity Disorder. Jennifer's personality system, being familiar with the names of her family members' alters, had "copied" these within own system. On one occasion I was speaking with an alter of Jennifer's who believed herself to be Jennifer's mother, and I asked to speak to the alter who represented her brother. Jennifer's "mother" said solemnly, "I'll go and get him," went out to the waiting room, and returned as her "brother."

Although Jennifer was no longer sexually abusing children because she had no access to them, she was extremely dysfunctional during our first two years of therapy. She had some promiscuous alters who initiated sexual contact with unsafe men. She was in and out of the mental hospital for cutting her arms and for suicide attempts. She would leave the foster home and come back traumatized, with no memories of what had happened. It became apparent that she was still in contact with her family and other abusers. She would remember seeing her mother at a bus stop, then that memory would abruptly terminate and she would "lose time." Although Jennifer was able to tell her foster mother when to hide her shoes so she could not go out at night, and when to put her in hospital, these requests were not enough to ensure her safety, since she went out during the day.

Because of the extent of current abuse, we decided together to work with the memories very early in therapy. We just did not have the luxury of very slowly getting to know the personality system and very slowly beginning to build trust. It soon became clear to me, and to the foster mother, that Jennifer's disclosure of her sexual offenses against her younger brother had been an attempt to find a way to safety from her family and the criminal group with whom they were involved.

Within a few months, Jennifer and I were working on a weekly basis with both old memories and memories of current abuse which endangered her. Jennifer's presence in the foster home helped tremendously, as the foster mother provided her with both nurturing and protection.

A week before Jennifer had to move out of the foster home, her foster mother notified me that a fourteen-year-old alter had come out and told her that we had only been dealing with the top one of six layers of the personality system. I had thought we had worked our way through thirteen layers. It appeared that these were thirteen compartments of alters on the first layer. Most of these alters were spontaneously created rather than deliberately placed there by the abusers.

When Jennifer became a legal adult at age nineteen, she was required to find her own residence. She got an apartment, and it was not long before her older brother began meeting her there to have sex with her alters, assisted by pleasure-enhancing drugs which he provided. The alters in charge of the system took action to stop their dangerous behavior by traumatizing the sexually acting out alters with memories of painful sexual abuse by that brother. This put an end to her spontaneous contact with him, but other alters continued to make contact with family and cult when they required her presence, and to report to them regularly about her progress in therapy.

Current safety concerns, as well as the gradual unfolding of Jennifer's personality system, dictated the order in which we worked with the memories. Events that Jennifer remembered as influencing her to become a sexual offender included being trained to offend both informally by her brother and formally by organized criminal groups. The primary organizer of all Jennifer's abusive experiences appeared to be the man named Jason; his relation to her family was unclear.

Memories relevant to sexual offending

Jennifer's abuse, as it was revealed through the memories, included sexual and physical abuse at home at the hands of all family members, systematic ritualistic abuse, and pornographic film-making at a sophisticated studio. (I have, since that time, had three other clients with memories of that studio, one as a perpetrator.) There was a good deal of deliberate training for pedophilia and for sexual sadism and masochism. This demonstrates to me that groups who make child pornography create their own market in adult survivors.

Abuse by family and friends

Five months after we began therapy, Jennifer processed a series of memories of sexual abuse at home by her older brother, from when she was four until her teens. During the later events, he would threaten to disclose Jennifer's abuse of her younger brother. Then she disclosed memories of having been taught to sexually abuse a little boy while being filmed.

Three months later, a male alter became suicidal after having recalled memories of abusing her younger brother. It was he who had made Kristine perform the abuse. Once "Sean" had been in the "real world" long enough, and had processed enough victim memories to realize how harmful his behavior had been, he felt he did not deserve to live. We processed the memories of the abuse of her younger brother, which was apparently mutually pleasurable. This is not surprising, since it is likely that Jennifer's younger brother had been sexually trained the same way she was from an early age.

Two weeks after that, Jennifer came up with memories of her older brother teaching her to abuse her younger brother when she was about nine. She had caught her older brother abusing her younger brother. He invited her in, sexually aroused her, then replaced himself with her little brother. At this point I thought that this experience, along with being sexually abused, was the primary source for Jennifer's offending behavior.

But there was more to come. We went through a series of memories of sexual abuse by her older brother and her mother. Jennifer's father had left the family when she was four, and there were some memories of abuse by him alone and together with her mother.

Then came a series of memories of a friend's father teaching her and her friend to sexually abuse younger children, especially a little boy she used to babysit. This man had previously been charged for sexually abusing Jennifer's younger brother. Jennifer had previously remembered abusing these children but had not recalled being taught to do so.

Jennifer and I thought we had now dealt with the sources of her offending.

Risk of perpetration while in treatment

In the spring of 1994, twenty months into therapy, Jennifer stayed in a transition house to get away from severe harassment from her family and other cult members. When she stopped going to meet her abusers, they began abducting her from the street and abusing her violently. Jennifer called me from the shelter with concerns that some alters were having sexual feelings about a little boy staying in the house, and she did not know how much power she had to control it. She had always been very honest with me. I made a short-term contract, much like a suicide contract, for her not to offend while in the home. It was risky leaving her in the shelter, but I trusted her system to keep the promise despite my later reluctance to use contracts with such clients. By this time, the ANP was a more solid integration of all the surface alters, and could not easily lose time. I asked Jennifer to search for any other memories which might be causing these desires, as well as for the alters involved; her system had become very good at finding relevant memories and alters. I saw this as an emergency.

I cancelled my other commitments, and we did intense work for three days to deal with the remaining sources of Jennifer's pedophilic urges.

We had already processed the memories of Jennifer's abuse of her younger brother. Now we went through those of her abuse of the little boys she had babysat. Then there were more memories of abuse by her older brother, some quite pleasurable and some causing pleasure to some alters but pain to others. There were also memories of her older brother selling her for sexual purposes to his friends when she was about ten.

After we processed these memories, some offender alters still existed. Jennifer's system was able to identify them. The pedophilic desires belonged to alters whose only pleasurable life experience was that of sexually abusing younger children. They saw the little boy in the shelter as vulnerable and neglected, and they felt they cared for him. They thought sexual abuse of him was a caring act, something he would find pleasant compared to what Jennifer had been through.

I explained that I could lose my license if I left her in the shelter when there was a risk of her offending against a child there. But she was in physical danger if she lived on her own at this point. I suggested that the system put all the potential offending alters in an internal prison. Jennifer said that would take too long. An alter popped out and said, "Just a minute," and then, after a brief silence, announced that they had "killed" all the offender alters; they were lying in the inside world dead, covered in blood! I was not very happy with such drastic measures, but accepted it for the interim, knowing I could rely on Jennifer to tell me if the risk recurred. I made a list of the "dead" alters.

The next morning Jennifer called; she had dreamed about sexually abusing a child. I asked her to look for more related memories before we met in the evening. She had to "reincarnate" all the dead alters to find the memories. (We already had a method for doing this, as some alters had previously experienced internal "death" in "disasters" in the inner world; when they were made new internal bodies, they became alive again.)

Related training for masochism, sadism and pedophilia

The final set of memories we had to deal with to resolve Jennifer's pedophilic urges were those of the deliberate training in sexual masochism, sadism, and pedophilia. As a child, Jennifer remembered being forced to experience both sexual pleasure and extreme pain by being sexually stimulated while her body was being hurt. These forced contradictory responses required the co-presence of some alters who experienced sexual pleasure and others who experienced pain.

Masochism training

From infancy on, a couple who were friends of Jennifer's mother would sexually stimulate Jennifer while raping her painfully, sometimes with objects. One alter would experience the sexual pleasure and another the pain. This caused the separation of two kinds of alters, the kind who experienced pain, and the kind who enjoyed sex without knowing the body was also being hurt. This was what had created the alters who thought sexual abuse of a young child would be pleasurable to the child. The final set of memories were even earlier ones involving painful sexual abuse combined with pleasurable sexual arousal. As we processed these memories, Jennifer went through wave after wave of intense sexual arousal, fear, and pain. She was unable to speak.

When we discussed this later, it appeared that Jennifer's organized abuser group had begun this deliberately when she was just an infant, perhaps administering hormones to aid the process. The alters involved were primitive infantile fragments, who gave their feelings to the pedophilic alters.

Later in therapy, Jennifer had memories of sexual stimulation combined with anal rape with objects, again reinforcing the split between the "pain alters" and the "sex alters", who came "out" simultaneously but had completely different experiences of the same events. I asked one male alter what he responded with, and he answered ,"My pseudo-penis."

Sadism training

Several months later, Jennifer came up with some memories of sexual training with a little boy within a preschool, when she was four and a half. She and the boy would be taken out of the class, and pleasurably sexually stimulated while watching movies of people getting hurt, often small children. Then she and the boy were told to stimulate one another while watching movies in which people were violently sexually violated. Jennifer told me that there were "lots and lots and lots of movies." Finally, these two were taught to do this while watching actual sexual violence perpetrated in their presence.

This was clearly a method of deliberately training her to be a sadistic abuser. It reinforced both the association and the split between the alters who experienced pain and those who experienced sexual pleasure. This time the training was directed specifically towards preventing those alters who experienced sexual pleasure from giving empathic attention to others' pain, by pairing that pain with their own pleasure, producing incompatible responses.

Around this time, Jennifer also worked through memories of violent, painful sexual abuse by her older brother; it appears he probably had similar training.

Understanding and treating pedophilia in survivors

After we worked through the final memories of the deliberate training, Jennifer told me, "It's definitely fixed (the pedophilia). I'll never like sex again!" No alters remained who were sexually attracted to young children, and since that time Jennifer has never had a desire to sexually abuse a child. I believe her pedophilia was resolved. After all the pornography memories were completed, she was even able to enjoy sexual feelings.

After the memories were processed, Jennifer and I discussed the implications of our discoveries, which Jennifer allowed me to share with you now to help you understand more about how this training works, and to demonstrate that there is a way to be freed of its consequences.

We speculated together that perhaps some pedophilia is caused by the split, as well as the association between alters who enjoy sexual feelings and those who feel pain caused by painful sexual abuse involving the child's sexual arousal. Being forced to go through simultaneous, incompatible experiences of intense pain and intense sexual pleasure leads to the separation of sexual alters who are unable to feel pain, but need the pain (experienced by other alters) in order to feel the sexual arousal. In mind-controlling and ritually abusing groups, girls as well as boys are trained with the use of sexual arousal and pleasure. You may note that in Chapter Seven, Stella Katz speaks of this type of training. I did not have this information when I worked with Jennifer, but her experience corroborates Stella's account.

I do want to note that in writing about this, I am not judging adults who engage in sadomasochistic practices in a consensual setting. Most persons in the BDSM community would say that they will only engage in consensual activities to heighten their sexual pleasure, and that they absolutely would never choose to cause pain to someone else by violating their body. They also would not be interested in having sex with children.

In mind control settings, children are forced to engage in mixed pain and pleasure and extreme perpetration with one another and with adults. If a child's developing sexual urges are channeled in this way by an abuser or an abusing group, any later sexual feelings could move the person in the direction of perpetration. Jennifer's experience also shows how experiencing intense sexual pleasure at the same time as observing or being forced to perpetrate violence on others can lead to the creation of alters who are incapable of empathy, and associate sexual pleasure with violence to other people. These child alters still exist within adults who have had this training, and if they come out in settings other than the structured ones of the mind control or cult group where pedophilia and other sexual abuse are the norm, they can act out on partners or on children. These fragmentary alters can be very dangerous, as their life experience is very limited and they do not mature. Remember that the alters who wanted to have sex with the little boy in the shelter actually believed he would enjoy it. Many pedophiles have this illusion. Although Jennifer's pedophilia appeared to have been deliberately created by an organized group of abusers, a similar process could happen with less organized abuse, as long as sexual arousal is paired with pain to the child and/or to someone else.

Much of Jennifer's offending was done by one alter who was conscious of the behavior but not in control of it. Other alters influenced or forced the offending alter to do what she did. Offenders with covert dissociation might have similar experiences—their "urges" actually come from alters. This leads me to strongly recommend that pedophilic and violent sexual offenders be routinely assessed for dissociative disorders. In some cases, uncontrollable urges might arise from other alters or ego states who are not under the control over the part of the person having conscious awareness.

Much offender treatment focuses on teaching the (presumably unitary) person to resist urges. It is assumed that the urges themselves cannot be removed. Jennifer's treatment was successful in removing her urges to abuse young boys, because the parts who experienced sexual pleasure were no longer dissociated from the parts who experienced the pain of being abused or from those who experienced empathy for others who were abused. The dissociation was healed by processing the original memories which created the splits between these alters.

How did it all turn out?

Towards the end of therapy, about four years into our therapeutic work, we discovered a new section of alters who kept a secret: the identity of Jason. We had by this time worked through dozens of memories of abuse orchestrated by Jason. The secret: Jason was Jennifer's father! Although he had left the family, he remained in leadership in the perpetrating group. But very few of her alters knew that Jason and Jennifer's father were the same person.

Jennifer's therapy took five years to complete. Her complex personality system completely joined into a single personality. She moved to another country, far from her family and the others who abused her. There was an incident a few years ago when a previously unknown alter emerged because of sexual activity with a man she loved, something she had never experienced during all those years of sexual training. She was able to integrate the alter on her own, with the help of her partner. She continues in that stable loving relationship. She now has three children (all girls), and is an excellent parent (though she learnt it from books). There are no signs that her children have suffered from her abusive background. She is now a post-graduate student at a university, and is doing very well. Her life for many years now has not been about her abuse, but about being a whole person and finding a life path that suits her own abilities and interests.

Dealing with sexuality in survivors

Curing those issues that are the product of programming does not resolve all of the sexual dysfunction of survivors of ritual abuse and mind control. Much may remain. In *Secret Survivors*, Blume points out that "dealing with sexuality comes later than facing other issues. . . . The survivor should not attempt to fix sex before breaking the secret [of childhood sexual trauma that has been dissociated], facing the shame, repairing her self esteem, and learning healthy friendship" (p. 227).

"Healthy sexuality," she says, "involves . . . sophisticated interpersonal tasks . . .". Ultimately, Blume suggests, this may well require a protracted period of celibacy while survivors reclaim the right to say "no" (p. 230). In the case of these survivors, however, "reclaiming" is not the correct term. Personal empowerment is something that mind control survivors have never known in any regard. However, Blume does make a statement that many will see as describing their experiences: "For many . . . survivors, the old script of incest and its inherent distortions regarding sexuality cannot be edited; it must be erased" (p. 230).

In Chapter Seventeen, Jen Callow shares how she added loving sexual partners for those parts who needed this inside. That is one way a survivor who is single can deal with the issue of sex, trying to reconnect sexual expression with love and caring. Jennifer told me that when she first became sexually involved after her therapy, she had to keep her eyes open at all times and remind herself that she was with someone she loved. Much has been written for incest survivors that also applies to the population we are dealing with. They are not fully healed if their sexuality remains something they regard with disgust, or if they are still experiencing urges involving extreme violence or pedophilia. And they can be healed.

CHAPTER FIFTEEN

The unimaginable

If you ask the average mind control or ritual abuse survivor what the worst part of their abuse—or their recovery—was, it will not be the complex and booby-trapped inner hierarchies and programming, or the hard and seemingly endless work of therapy. No. The worst part, they will tell you, is the pain. The physical, but, more, emotional and spiritual, anguish. One of my ritual abuse survivor clients suffers from intractable nerve pain. But, she says, the "pain in her mind" is the worst.

Throughout their childhoods, and for some throughout their lives, these people have experienced an extraordinary amount of abuse, exploitation, and betrayal. They have seen the worst horrors known to humanity, perpetrated by human beings they knew and often lived with as children. One survivor, Annie Earle, wanted to write a book about ritual abuse, entitled "The Hidden Holocaust." What ritual abuse and mind control survivors have endured is indeed a holocaust.

Childhood trauma survivors develop dissociative disorders to defend themselves against being overwhelmed. But, in order to heal, what they have always protected themselves from must be addressed. So, an important part of therapy for such childhood traumas as sexual, emotional, and physical abuse is treating its emotional devastation.

But this is not ordinary trauma. It is mind control torture.

In the technical sense, what is required from you is empathy. But because you are treating survivors of the unimaginable, you will be dealing not only with your clients' extraordinary level of emotional darkness, but one you might experience as well, when you *both* face what they have endured.

This work is not easy. Therapists can easily become overwhelmed with the multi-layered complexity of the personality systems and the mind control programming, and the ongoing sense of danger in the present. I have tried to make all this manageable by, in particular, making the clients' experiences and personality systems understandable. I have provided you with the information you need about how ritual abuse and mind control work, including various keys to unlocking personality systems and training memories; no matter how complex the inner system and its functioning, or how overpowering and omnipresent the threats might appear, it helps to remember that programming boils down to human beings using time-honored torture and deception and indoctrination techniques on children, with dissociation as its linchpin.

What you and your clients are left with is the sheer horror of it. The horror that makes the therapy take so long, and go so slowly, and require so much of the therapist. No matter how expert you become in understanding this abuse, there are no shortcuts to recovery. Nothing I have taught you can take that away.

When you take these survivors on, you are in for many years of hard work, and a long-term emotional bond with someone who has been severely damaged by what they have gone through. You are also taking on vicarious exposure to the atrocities they have experienced. It takes dedication, patience, and endurance on the part of both the client and the therapist. Even the most high-functioning survivors have a great deal to face, most of which was initially hidden from them. This awareness will rock their view of the world, and of humanity, and even of themselves, as it will yours.

Trauma aftereffects

When I began this work, the issue of trauma in general was not well understood. There were only a handful of books about incest, and, as I have related, even fewer that even acknowledged ritual abuse. In Chapter Fourteen, I mentioned that E. Sue Blume's *Secret Survivors* addressed the sexual consequences of abuse. It also provides a comprehensive review of the cognitive, physical, emotional, and relational consequences of incest trauma, discussing the guilt, shame, and self-hatred, overwhelming fear and anger, even terror, self destructive behaviors, and, above all, grief and loss that incest survivors experience in later life. (Blume's discussion also includes many dissociative symptoms and "MPD", although she acknowledges in personal correspondence that when she wrote her book her understanding of these issues was insufficient.) To understand those issues is basic to this discussion, and I refer the reader to that book for the underpinnings of the material that you will read here concerning the consequences of mind control abuses.

For example, Blume discusses body-related attitudes and dysfunctions resulting from incest. Many ritual abuse and mind control survivors suffer from eating disorders, and from physical ill health. With regard to the latter, osteoarthritis is common as a result of physical abuse and torture. Autoimmune diseases are also common, as well as other serious illnesses related to childhood trauma. Many of these survivors have brain damage from head injuries. Most have some degree of hair-trigger emotional reactivity, even when programs related to this have been addressed, due to an overactive amygdala, the "alarm bell" of the brain. There is evidence that some physiological sequelae are the direct product of certain kinds of tortures, but these aftereffects often reflect the body's "dis-ease" with how the body has been treated.

So, to begin with, ritual abuse and mind control survivors struggle with what every survivor of childhood trauma struggles with. And then they must contend with the rest of it.

Loss, grief, and crying

Survivors have a great deal to grieve about. They grieve not only for what they have lost, but for what they never had. Innocence. A happy, normal childhood. Friendships. Loving parents. Pets who survived and whom they were permitted to love. Pets that did not, whom they were forced to hurt or witness being tortured. Children whom they bonded with, and were forced to rape or kill. Fathers and mothers who did not sexually abuse them. Emotional security and bonding. The ability to trust. Unmet needs throughout childhood. The gradual, healthy development of healthy sexuality in the context of loving relationships. A brain that could develop in a healthy way, with sufficient sleep for rejuvenation when needed. The opportunity for the cortisol released by trauma to relax into a normal level and not constantly be in overdrive. In many cases, an education which would develop their true abilities and fit their true interests. Potential achievements which an overwhelmed child or teenager, struggling with ongoing abuse, could not manage. Physical safety. Physical health and functioning. A sense of being a unified person with an ability to know and meet their own needs and develop their own purpose. And independent thought. If they come to these, it is generally at least twenty years later than other people.

The more time I spend thinking about it, the longer the list grows.

Survivors whose families were involved in their abuse have permanently lost family. In fact, they have been cheated of the opportunity to even understand the concept, just as they have been tricked about the meaning of *love*, and safe, and *trust*. They have no parents who can safely mentor them through their own children's births and childhoods. They cannot trust siblings, aunts and uncles, grandparents. They have to attempt to create artificial families from unrelated friends. They are often excessively dependent on therapists because of the lack of supportive family or healthy childhood dependency. Some have supportive spouses or life companions, but many more have remained single or have unsupportive partners who cannot face or cope with the degree of damage that survivors undergo. Some choose partners who re-enact an aspect of their abuse. And when is it safe to confide the truth to friends? So there's also social isolation, and broken relationships.

Much is now known about the stages of grief. They often occur simultaneously rather than in sequence. One stage is denial. As long as a survivor pretends his or her abuse did not happen, s/he is unable to grieve any of this. Yet, if all the abuse, and all of the losses become available to consciousness at once, they will be overwhelming. So a survivor will have to reduce his or her dissociation very gradually, confronting one loss at a time.

Anger is another important part of grieving. As with other emotions, mind control survivors' relationship with anger has been distorted and manipulated by their abusers. Their anger and rage has been deliberately buried in alters who are brought out for violent rituals or killing, the rage being channeled to a helpless victim rather than to the abusers who set up the whole situation. The anger and rage need healthy expression, through art, through screaming with the therapist, through writing, whatever means gives voice to these justified emotional responses to the horror of what happened.

Sadness is the core of grieving, and its natural expression is crying. But one of the very first programs to be installed is "Don't cry," usually done by the caregiver suffocating the baby whenever it cries. What does it do to an infant to be unable to cry, which means unable to ask for help, unable to express grief and loss and distress? A normal child hurts himself in play, runs to find his mother or father, and then cries out his sadness and pain; this release heals him emotionally. What does it do to a person to be unable to cry for his or her whole life? Mind-controlled and ritually abused children are taught that sadness is weak, and that they should not feel sorry for themselves. They are shamed for experiencing "weak" emotions.

I have found that recovering the ability to cry is one of the most difficult achievements for my ritually abused or mind-controlled clients, but also one of the most significant. Crying, especially in the presence of someone who cares, is enormously healing.

In her book, *Safe Passage to Healing* (1994, p. xxiv), survivor Chrystine Oksana writes this of expressing her anger and sadness:

> My recovery has been a quest to reclaim all parts of myself and then connect that whole self with the good things of this world. My journey is ongoing. Today, most of my illnesses are gone. Now I know that they were symptoms of my repressed feelings—mostly rage and grief. My emotional pain is leaving more slowly, but it is leaving.
>
> Today I am able to cry freely. And in addition to deep grief, I also feel gratitude. It is my tears, not my smiles, that are healing me. Today, my tears speak *my* truth and reveal *their* secrets. It's through my tears that I am breaking free.

The much mocked therapy paradigm is that you must feel worse to feel better. It is a paradox that re-experiencing the traumatic memories, including the emotions, in the presence of a safe person in the present actually brings relief. Not immediately, but eventually, and sometimes sooner rather than later. One of my ritually abused clients goes through a gruelling piece of severely traumatic memory each week, leaving dazed and exhausted. She later emails me each week to tell me how much better she is feeling all the time, how she has been able to do things like play basketball, which she was never able to do, and how well her recovery is going. It is the memory work, the experience of having a witness to her trauma, and the emotional release, which enable her recovery to move forward in this way.

Despair and dissociation

Despair is the penultimate expression of sadness and hopelessness. When a survivor client feels extreme despair, it might be a part of their normal grief. But it might also be the feelings of an inside, mind-controlled child-part leaking through into the adult. The "booby traps" which abusers design to lead to suicide use the despair of an insider to flood the personality system. These insiders with extreme emotions are often deliberately isolated from the rest of the personality system, their emotions being used for the booby traps. They "live" inside in cages or torture situations or "hell", or a place where "God" is rejecting them, and that is all they know of life.

Many such alters live in literal darkness and are unaware of daylight, especially those trained at night in secret programming sessions. When I met one recently, he asked me "What's that bright?", pointing to a tree outside the window. I did not understand what he meant, until the ANP told me it was the sunlight on the leaves of the tree.

He had never seen sunlight.

Let us look at what despair means to a mind-controlled structured system. On not just a physical level, but an emotional and spiritual level, many of the alters have never experienced anything positive. They believe the entire world to be similar to the situations they experienced once, in which they have continued to be trapped, frozen in time.

When a client states that s/he does not want to live in this world, because the world is so dark and evil, the emotions and belief could well be coming from such alters. Although the person needs to grieve what happened to these severely traumatized alters, this needs to be balanced with positive experiences in the present and from the past, shared by other alters. The rest of the system can share positive experiences so these alters can see that their experience is only a very small part of all that is. And they can gradually be given positive experiences of safety and nurturing in the present. Pleasure comes from the simplest experiences. For instance, Jennifer first discovered this when she found an alter who had never seen or felt snow. She had her spinners send the experience of playing in the snow through the system, making all the kids happy.

The therapist's reaction to grieving and despair

Dismissal and minimizing

As survivors of all childhood abuses know, people's reactions often complicate the grieving process. One common reaction is "It's in the past; get over it, put on a happy face." Even therapists do this, believing that reason should conquer emotion. Some schools of therapy are predicated on these approaches to life. But healing just does not work like this. Emotion is primary (see Greenberg, 2002). While rational thinking can help with many aspects of recovery, emotion needs to be expressed in relation to what caused it for complete healing.

Dismissal of either the trauma or the emotional reactions is what most survivors have heard all their lives. For these clients, these responses serve to mirror the lessons that mind controlling abusers taught. "You're just doing this for attention." "There's nothing wrong with you, pull up your socks and get down to work." "You need to think differently." While there is a place for changing thinking habits, especially with regard to the lies indoctrinated into the child by the abusers, emotional reactions should never be dismissed.

Another phenomenon which I have observed among abuse survivors (particularly those who are dissociated) and their therapists is a kind of warm fuzzy thinking and communication, focusing on such things as stuffed animals (which, by the way, are used by perpetrator groups to carry messages), crystals and bubble baths to make the survivor feel better. This often goes with reassurance that the survivor is a "good person" or "did the best she could." In my view, all this is a form of denial of the extent and horror of the trauma. It is also infantilizing, and strips survivors of the recovery task of the system as a whole taking on the responsibility of living as an adult. Yes, it is helpful for child alters to have positive experiences in the present, including comfort objects and opportunities for play, but all this gooey positivity is often masking denial, and avoiding what needs to be dealt with.

Emotional contagion

Other friends or therapists of survivors have the opposite reaction—they become overwhelmed with the survivor's depressed feelings or trauma. The survivor can sense that they cannot take it. One teenage girl came to me shortly after her mother left the family, referred by a therapist who told me that she was unable to stand the intensity of the girl's depression. I sat with the girl for many weeks, while she just felt her depression, though she was unable to speak. It was not until her sister came to me and disclosed a ritual abuse history that I realized why the first girl's emotions were so intense.

If the therapist is overwhelmed with contagion of feelings from the client, the client will be unable to move through those feelings to recovery. Survivors need a caring witness, who can bear the enormity of their emotions and experiences without losing her or his own ground. When I am with my survivor clients, I need to be firmly grounded in my conviction that there is good in the universe, and that recovery is possible, while at the same time having compassion for what they are going through.

One thing that is easily conveyed from client to therapist is paranoia, fear of repercussions from abusers and the feeling that "the cult" is everywhere, the client himself or herself will harm the therapist, or the therapist is doomed to failure. Just because your client—or your colleagues—exaggerate these risks does not mean you have to. Our clients desperately need us to be calm when they are afraid. They need us to be grounded in logic and a realistic, accurate view of their abusers, *sans* the illusions of omnipotence.

It is important to be consciously aware of your client's emotions; allow them to come into you but be aware that they are the client's, not yours. This is the definition of empathy, and it is a delicate process. It is a central part of therapy. Your mirror neurons will register what is going on in the client. The sensation is slightly different from what you would feel if it were going on in you. But it is easy to become confused about which feelings are yours and which belong to the other person. I had difficulty making this distinction when I was a beginning therapist. I have become more skilled at it over the years as I have paid it conscious attention.

This skill is not only useful for the therapist, it is useful for the client—a kind of "internal empathy". The ANP can learn to distinguish between emotions which arise from her own reaction to a present situation and those which arise from an alter being triggered into an old emotion which belongs to a past trauma. If she is unable to recognize this distinction, she can be easily overwhelmed, whereas if she can recognize an alter's feelings, she can mobilize her resources to comfort that alter without herself being contaminated with its feelings. This is particularly important for DDNOS rather than DID clients.

Most dissociative clients have a highly attuned sensitivity to others' emotions, developed over their childhood years when they had to learn to expect what was coming from other people. If we try to deceive them about what we are feeling, it does not work. If we feel one thing and say another, they will notice it, and this will damage their trust in us. At the same time, they can easily misunderstand our nonverbal signals: for example, interpreting us as tired of *them* when we are just plain tired. So, we need to be transparent with our emotions, and at the same time ready to explain what is going on inside us and why, if it appears to be necessary. And this means we have to be highly congruent. To do this work, we do need both to feel for our clients and to have considerable inner strength, so that we are not overwhelmed by what they are going through. We need to keep ourselves sufficiently separate from them that we are not immersed in their despair, and sufficiently attuned to them that we develop a strong emotional bond.

Isolation from peers

One major concern for therapists providing outpatient treatment for survivors is the lack of understanding of either ritual abuse/mind control or dissociative disorders by their peers in the psychiatric system. Many of our colleagues do not even consider the dissociative disorder diagnosis to be valid, use medication as the primary treatment modality, and, as discussed in Chapter Twelve, "Maybe I made it up," even some who consider themselves "trauma specialists" might assume we are creating false memories when we recognize ritual abuse and mind control. I have no easy answers for this situation. I recommend that whenever possible nonmedical therapists should find a sympathetic psychiatrist who has knowledge of dissociative disorders, can prescribe medication when it is needed for such symptoms as depression, and can handle the client if she or he has to be hospitalized. Unfortunately, such persons are hard to come by. I would settle for one who, like the one I knew, is at least open to your expertise and the existence of the phenomena we are treating.

But if you seek supervision, it really needs to be with someone who has the necessary knowledge. Training in treatment of dissociative disorders is not yet mandatory in any mental health profession. Your supervisor, if s/he is an experienced therapist, can always learn along with you. I remember one psychiatrist who was very vocal about his opposition to the notion of dissociative disorders. Then he acquired a patient who visibly switched into a child state in front of him. You should have heard him babbling about it in staff meetings, all excited that it was real. Many therapists find dissociative disorders fascinating in our initial experiences, but we all have to get beyond that stage in order to be effective with our clients.

This is the real world of our peers. In this world, we can feel peer pressure, and we can be intimidated when those with more impressive credentials than our own make definite statements about the nonexistence of dissociative disorders or of ritual abuse and mind control. It takes time for society's mindset to change. I came to realize when dealing with our psychiatric establishment that it is very difficult for someone who has practiced for twenty or thirty years within a certain model to change his or her way of thinking about the most challenging of patients. I understood this, because it was even difficult for me. Once I began to understand dissociative disorders, I looked back at my past clients, and immediately recognized three whose dissociative disorders I had missed, two of whom (both diagnosed bipolar) were probably ritually abused. One of these women had even told me that she remembered a church service in which everything was said backwards (presumably, a Black Mass) and that her little daughter was seeing demonic faces in a picture on her wall. I told the woman to get back on her medication. I worked with this client for many years, believing I was helping her. I sincerely regret my lack of understanding. And I wish someone had given me the information I needed earlier.

Compassionate witnessing

One thing we therapists need to remember is the enormous power of compassion. We do not need to have knowledge of all the details of ritual abuse and mind control, though knowledge helps. What we need, most of all, is compassion, the ability to *be with* our clients through all the ups and downs of their recovery process. This enables them to complete their grieving and to know that the world holds goodness and love, as they experience it through our presence with them.

It is not easy.

In Kathy Steele's "Sitting with the shattered soul" (1989), she writes,

> All the therapists I know who do this work have been blindsided at least once by the horror of it. Their own vulnerability, their helplessness in the face of such abuse is staggering. So is the evil. I don't know another word for it. Science has failed us here, so I draw upon a spiritual vocabulary . . .
>
> So how do you sit with a shattered soul? Gently, with gracious and deep respect. Patiently, for time stands still for the shattered, and the momentum of healing will be slow at first. With the tender strength that comes from an openness to your own deepest wounding, and to your own deepest healing. Firmly, never wavering in the utmost conviction that evil is powerful, but there is a good that is more powerful still. Stay connected to that Goodness with all your being, however it manifests itself to you. Acquaint yourself with the shadows that lie deep within you. And then, open yourself, all that is you, to the Light. Give freely. Take in abundantly. Find your safety, your refuge, and go there as you need. Hear what you can, and be honest about the rest: Be honest at all costs. Words won't always come; sometimes there are no words in the face of such tragic evil. But in your willingness to be with them, they will hear you: from soul to soul they will hear that for which there are no words.
>
> When you can, in your own time, turn and face that deep chasm within. Let go. Grieve, rage, shed tears, share tears. Find those you trust and let them be with you. Know laughter, the healing power of humor. Trust yourself. Trust the process. Embrace your world, this world that holds you safely now. Grasp the small tender mercies of the moment. Let you be loved. Let you love. The shattered soul will heal.

Guilt, shame, and forgiveness for perpetration

Childhood sex abuse survivors must deal with guilt and shame from being sexually victimized, and from their bodies' natural responses. Ritual abuse and mind control survivors must deal with sexual abuse that far exceeds the scope of "garden variety" incest, and physical responses that are not merely organic but programmed and distorted. But that is almost inconsequential compared with the massive guilt and shame they must face for having participated in rapes, murders, and cannibalism, which to them are very real whether or not there was trickery involved. For this, they often feel they are too evil to be forgiven, even by a "higher power."

This is not something that the average therapist can relate to, and it requires a massive effort to come close to true empathy. Who of us can even imagine what we would feel if we had hurt another in such a way?

This struggle is compounded by the shame heaped upon them by the perpetrators, particularly after participating in an act of evil. "You are one of us." "Nobody else will ever want you because you are evil." "You will harm anyone you get close to." "God hates you."

It helps them to see the entire picture of the traumatic events, including their attempts to refuse to do the evil that was demanded of them. In most cases, for every alter who stuck a sharp stick inside a vagina, plunged a knife into a living body, or took "communion" with the heart of the sacrificial victim, there were several who refused, and were severely punished, in series, until a new one was created who would commit the required act.

It also helps these survivors who are immersed in shame to have a real relationship with a person—their therapist (and/or their partner and/or their friend)—who accepts them even knowing that they have done these things.

Their sense of unworthiness is also exacerbated by the fact that if they prayed as children, there was still no apparent divine intervention; the abuse continued.

Certainly, if our clients choose to have a spiritual faith, it can help them to know that the Creator of the universe accepts and forgives them. But even in this seemingly innocuous goal, we must be very careful, because there are traps built in to words like this. The very concept of forgiveness might be contaminated by these devious abusers, as we saw in Old Lady's being "forgiven" by the priest through sexual acts (in Chapter Five). Their alters might remember rejection and abuse by "Jesus" and "God." Old Lady's experiences show us how many Christian beliefs (like God forgiving) and words (like "Suffer the little children to come unto me") have been so perverted for survivors that they cannot be used with them. If someone is using such concepts with your client, you could gently question him or her about what such things mean, to make sure that, for example, "forgive" does not mean "rape."

Remember to reinforce that guilt and shame are not good or bad but normal and human. We feel guilty when we commit evil acts, acts that harm others. We feel shame about who we are when we have violated our own deepest sense of morality. Stella Katz writes about the guilt experienced during the recovery process, and relates it to a human "core" who always knows what is right. She demonstrates how perspectives, and understanding, change in the different stages of life:

> The one thing I'd like to get through strong and clear, is that there is always one person. The core[1] whom the alters think they are protecting (and the operative word here is THINK) actually always knows what is going on, at every stage of the game. The alters do most of the shit, and very rarely understand that they do nothing without the permission of the core. Without the core's seeing and knowing what is happening then integration as an adult would not be possible. The core always grows, and always knows. The difference is that as a child the core feels it more as bad dreams. By the time you are a mid teen, you have full knowledge that it's not a dream, but you are protected from the pain, which makes it easier for you to do harm to others because it's more like you are acting this all out in a video game, as if the real people are Avatars, but you still know. And in my case my own sense of right and wrong allowed the full brunt of the guilt to flow through, and that is why I would sabotage training sessions, so that these people would have a hope of undoing this all easier than if the training was complete.

Stella knows, by experience on both sides of ritual abuse (as victim and as adult perpetrator), that there are no "attachments", no way of dismissing her actions as not belonging to her. It is *all her.* The guilt is real, and has to be experienced for full healing, which includes taking responsibility and self-forgiveness. Even if he or she is forced to do it, a child whose body is involved in an evil act, for example holding a knife that hurts or kills, is violating her own core spirituality, her human ability to have empathy for other living creatures. S/he might well create a non-empathic alter in the process, but when that alter joins with those who feel empathy and compassion, guilt will result. This guilt needs to be accepted and confessed.

What that means is that often the therapist has to act as a confessor, the person to whom the client reveals the enormity of the things she or he did. And we need to be quiet witnesses who take it seriously while still accepting the person, neither recoiling nor arguing that it was not the client's fault. Whether or not s/he intended it or wanted it, the ritually abused or mind-controlled client has done evil, *and needs to confess it*. For her healing. For her humanity.

This does not require specific religious beliefs on the part of either the client or the therapist; it only requires recognition of innate morality and how it has been violated. The issue of "forgiveness" is often introduced in conversations about recovery from sexual trauma; one aspect of such forgiveness is "forgiveness of the self." Nowhere is this more relevant than in the arena of ritual abuse and mind control. Having faced the darkest corner of her life, the survivor needs to be helped to forgive herself, and, if she is so inclined, to understand that a forgiving God, who forgives others, would forgive her as well.

Near-death spiritual experiences

Spiritual experiences do happen to ritually abused children, even though no deity intervenes to stop the abuse. Ritual abusers frequently bring children to or near the point of death, and they have no control over what happens in the person's experience at that point. They can restart a stopped heart, but they cannot prevent the near-death experiences. Over the years, with the clients who were brave enough to work through the most horrific of their memories, I have encountered amazing near-death experiences (NDEs) that address the truth of what the client has experienced on the deepest level.

One six-year-old girl experienced the usual components of the NDE, including the presence of a being of light, and a life review in which she recognized she was not responsible for the perpetration that was forced upon her, only for the events in which she made an active choice to harm someone. Another child of five, while beaten almost to death by her mother, had an alter who remained in a place with an angel. When a new alter was brought to life by the cult doctor, she said something about wanting to stay with the angel, and he told her mother, "Don't mention it, she'll get over it." Once she had accessed this memory, the client has been able to go to this happy place to be with her angel when she needs it. Another client, too, found some of her most damaged alters had angels accompanying them.

Now, I do not know what an angel is, and explaining this phenomenon is beyond my scope as a psychologist, but I do know that experiences of angels have happened to a number of my ritually abused clients, none of whom have a specific religious faith. (I am not talking about the angels who are simulated as part of ritual abuse training; for example, to invite a survivor to suicide. Perhaps these groups simulate angels because they have more experience than I of survivors who talk about them.)

Another client's Satan alter personality was enduring some training in a simulated hell, when the drugs were too strong, and the child almost died. "Satan" split off another alter, "Satan's ghost," who found himself in a beautiful place with a being of light. He encountered a dog and a baby whom he was to be forced to kill, and both told him that they forgave him. When he returned to fake hell, he knew it was not really the afterlife. And another client remembered a near-death experience in which a little boy she knew, whom she had been forced to kill in a ritual, was waiting for her at the other end of the tunnel, and told her he would remain with her as her helper.

These accounts give me hope. It is an amazing thing to be working through a memory of severe torture with a client and unexpectedly coming upon a wonderfully positive near-death experience.

Coming to terms with spiritual abuse

The concepts of meaning and spirituality as they relate to ritual abuse and mind control are very challenging, for both survivors and their therapists. Ritual abuse directs specific abuses at the victim's spiritual belief system involving simulation of religious figures, both good and evil, in perverted ways and forced indoctrination into occult beliefs. Forced perpetration, especially of real or simulated sacrifice of animals, babies, and/or adults, is followed by teaching the child that s/he is evil, and alters are told they are demonic evil beings. Children experience sexual assaults by "God" and marriages to "Satan." They watch as "Jesus" turns his back on them. The abuses are so horrendous, and divine or human help for victimized children so vividly absent, that we question any faith we might have had in humanity or a benevolent deity. When we listen to stories of little children being violated, tortured, and made to abuse others we recognize that we are encountering evil, no matter what our world view. But what does that mean, and how do we address it clinically?

In response, many survivors adopt conservative Christian belief systems, in the hope of finding an answer to the noise in their heads about Satan and demons and God, or of finding something good which is stronger than the evil to which they have been exposed. Others adopt new-age approaches, which include beliefs about angels, and sometimes include a notion of past lives and karma that defines the trauma they have experienced in this life as something they earned in previous lives. Others maintain belief systems that reassure them that "everything happens for a reason", and "God never gives us more than we can handle", although "God's ways are not to be known by mortals." These beliefs provide some survivors with the perspective of a just, or at least a protected, universe. Many survivors, however, fall into despair, believing either that they are truly evil or that there is no good in this world. If there is a God, and even He does not care, how can they find the strength to fight for themselves?

The therapists working with this population come from many different philosophical and religious viewpoints. A substantial number of therapists who are devoted to this issue come from a conservative or evangelical Christian viewpoint. Others who might be privately critical of fundamentalist beliefs are much less likely to feel alienated by such beliefs when held by RA/MC clients, about whom the therapists' perspective is, "Whatever works." What we encounter with these clients challenges all our world views. We all struggle with the same questions, and we all resolve them differently.

Our mind-controlled clients have been robbed of their freedom to be self-determining. Whatever our personal belief system, we can surely agree on the goal of restoring these clients' autonomy. This includes their ability to choose their own beliefs.

In *Reaching for the Light*, ritual abuse survivor Emilie Rose has a wonderful chapter about spiritual abuse. She believes that spiritual abuse is perhaps the greatest wound of a ritual abuse survivor. An important part of Rose's spiritual healing was rejecting the false notions of the divine which she had been taught, not only by the abusers, but by the conventional religion which she had at the start of her journey (1996, pp. 102–103):

> I don't believe it is possible to be a survivor of ritual abuse without undergoing a deep, spiritual crisis . . . My realization that I was a ritual survivor profoundly affected me. In some ways it totally shattered my old ideas about God. Who was this loving God I had heard about all my life? How could God be loving if God would not save those children I saw sacrificed? How could God be all-powerful, all-protecting, omnipotent? Obviously God could be none of these and also be good. Good Gods didn't watch the massacre of innocents when they had it within their power to act. Good Gods did something. How could I place the heinous reality of ritual abuse into a spiritual framework while still embracing the God I know? The answer was that I could not. Instead, I railed at this God. I hated this God—"the bastard God," as my friend said. Finally, in the midst of the deepest spiritual crisis of my life, I renounced this God. . . . I had to create a completely different vision of God. Today I think of God/Good as a light energy, an energy of creation that flows within and without so that it is a part of me, as I am a part of it.

These questions, she says,

> come from a part of us that knows that nothing like ritual abuse should ever happen to anyone. They come from the part of us that knows that what happened to us is contrary to the way the world was intended to be. That part of us is outraged and sickened and horrified. Our questions come from the place within us that cries out against such evil, that life-clinging part of us that helped to keep us alive. That tiny spark of justice within us could not be put out even in the most horrible, degrading experiences a human being can go through.

But she sees hope:

> Every ritual abuse survivor has an inner part that somehow stayed connected to life even in the midst of torture and death . . . It may have many names: the strong one, the keeper of the spirit, the healer, the mystic, the grandparent, the wise one. Whatever we call the part, we can assist in its healing by seeking that part of us, inviting it out, befriending it, nurturing it, and assisting it to develop further in our life . . . This strong one within has a natural longing for life and healing. It is wise beyond years. It knows about pain and healing and spirit. It may be the place where our connection with a higher power resides. It guides us in the healing journey if we give it room to do so."

She talks about survivors, including herself, having transcendent experiences of joy and love, even during the years of the abuse. This, to her, is God (*ibid*., p. 165):

> There are many things like that in my life, that I can point to or experience, and say, "This is real. This is good. This you did not destroy, and will not, ever, no matter how hard you try. This is

> God, the transcendent, the holy. This is what matters, and it is with this that I will cast my lot, *not evil.*" I know evil, intimately, and I reject it with everything in me. This does not mean that I reject those parts of me that were made to do bad things. I accept them, condemn the ways they were violated, and am thankful for the ways they helped me survive. And so, I see my life, as a kind of ongoing prayer. It goes on all the time, because in every moment, every thought, every action, I feel confronted with that choice between good and evil. It is not merely a theoretical choice. I know I really could go either way. And I continually constitute myself by consciously choosing the good.

My experience as a therapist for survivors of ritual abuse and mind control has been similar to that of Rose, the survivor. I can no longer easily embrace the idea of a God who is both all-loving and all-powerful, and who intervenes in people's lives to prevent disasters. I am aware of too many horrors. I know also that "but for the grace of God", I too could have been a ritual abuse survivor, and yes, a perpetrator, given different circumstances in my childhood. So I was not, but countless other people—people with no less value than I—were. What that demonstrates to me is that God does not micromanage.

As a therapist, my belief system does not matter to anyone but me. The best thing I can do for my clients is to bear witness to their experiences, both of pain and of overcoming, and to allow them to find their own meaning by thinking for themselves, rather than imposing any meaning of my own upon them. I tell my mind-controlled clients early in therapy, and repeat often, that my purpose is to help them take their own lives back, to be genuinely free. That includes the freedom to make their own meaning of their lives, develop their own beliefs, and choose their own life paths. And that is the opposite of mind control.

For therapists: coping with the stress of this work

Pearlman and Saakvitne (1995) have written extensively about the "vicarious traumatization" which therapists experience when working with trauma survivors. They state that

> All therapists working with trauma survivors will experience lasting alterations in their cognitive schemas, having a significant impact on the therapist's feelings, relationships, and life. Whether these changes are ultimately destructive to the helper and to the therapeutic process depends . . . on the extent to which the therapist is able to engage in a parallel process to that of the victim client, the process of integrating and transforming these experiences of horror or violation.

Your client deserves to heal, and you have committed yourself to facilitating that process. Here are some guidelines that may help support you as you face the challenge of working with the massively traumatized clients who have experienced ritual abuse and mind control.

Develop awareness about yourself

It is important to be introspective when working with survivors of extreme trauma. Know yourself and know when you are in over your head. This does not necessarily mean withdrawing from those clients you have taken on, but it does mean accessing other resources to help you feel more effective in your work. Allow yourself all your emotional reactions, and allow time for them when you are alone or with friends. Watch yourself for withdrawal from survivors' pain, and disconnection from your own. Your obligation is to work on yourself to the point where your own reactions do not interfere with the therapy you are conducting. Much has been written about both countertransference and vicarious traumatization, so I will not repeat it here, but I do encourage you to make use of it.

With ritual abuse and mind control, one major temptation for the therapist is to disbelieve the client when the allegations become bizarre and extreme. I have discussed this further in the chapter about clients disbelieving their own experiences. It is important not to dismiss a client as making things up when they make such allegations, and to continue to treat them with kindness and consistency. But it is important to acknowledge when you are wondering about the client's truthfulness, and to seek support from others who understand the issue, whether in person, on line, or in books.

Be honest with your client

As you ride the roller coaster of transference and countertransference, I believe it is important to reveal information about your own reactions to the client, to communicate that he or she has an impact on you and that you are human too. You will probably need to educate the client about your time and energy needs. It is important to be honest and acknowledge your mistakes to the client, while keeping clear professional boundaries.

Look after yourself

Have realistic expectations of yourself as a therapist. When other therapists discover you work with clients who report experiences of ritual abuse or mind control, they will either criticize you and want to discredit you, or want to send more such clients to you. (Either way will provide an extra challenge requiring you to take care of yourself.) Go slowly at first, recognizing that this is all new learning and that you can become overloaded with trauma if you have very many severely abused clients, especially if they are ritual abuse survivors with current contact with their abusers. If you are able, balance your caseload by limiting the numbers of dissociative clients and ritual abuse or mind control survivors in your practice. And balance your clinical caseload with other professional involvements, such as research or teaching or writing. And balance your life. I know you have heard this before, but it is important to stay involved in joyful extracurricular activities and to take care of your physical health. These clients require a long-term commitment, so we need not to burn out either physically or emotionally.

Finally, there is the very real issue of safety. If you are dealing with current-contacting ritual abuse or mind control survivors, you may need to pay special attention to your physical safety through such means as alarm systems, self-defense training, and having others in your office space. It is unwise to work from your home with this clientele, unless you have known them for years and know they are completely out of contact with their abusers. Put backup safety procedures in place, such as keeping the names that your clients name in a locked box not on your premises, or sending copies of evidence of perpetrators' criminal acts by registered mail to a lawyer or other safe person. Make sure your client knows you have done this (the appropriate alter will hear you tell the client).

Have a strong support system

Unfortunately, you cannot tell your non-therapist family members and your friends about your clients' disclosures. If you do so you will be violating confidentiality and probably traumatizing them. You can, however, use these relationships to bring positivity into your life and balance out the effect of the exposure to extreme trauma, to find unconditional acceptance in what might be a critical world, and to be reminded that love—pure, unselfish, uncontaminated, non-abuse, non-demanding love—exists. If you do not have a supportive partner, consider a pet. Animals can love.

The most helpful professional support is from other therapists who deal with trauma and dissociation. Discuss cases (with client consent), and your feelings about them. It is important to balance your need to verbalize the traumatic imagery you are trying to work through with the need to protect your colleagues from the stress of assimilating new traumatic material. "No one can face trauma alone." Internet discussion groups can be helpful, as can professional supervision from someone experienced in this area. But professional supervision or consultation from someone who does not understand this client population can be destructive to you—and to your client.

Sometimes, engaging in social activism regarding these problems can help you feel you are changing things on a larger level. But it can add to your trauma, as you are exposed to the issues even when not seeing clients, and the organized backlash against recognizing the existence of these abuses can be upsetting. If you are the kind of person who feels empowered by action, do what feels right to do. Because it needs to be done. And because action can be an amazing remedy for feeling powerless.

Develop awareness about your client's condition and history

I have seen many therapists who carry just one dissociative or mind-controlled client, and because it is only one client of many, do not take the time to learn what they need to serve that client effectively. But I recommend studying whatever resources you can find on all topics related to this field. The more you learn, the more effective you can be with your present clients and others who may come to you in the future. We desperately need more therapists who are skilled and experienced in working with mind control survivors.

No matter what you have already learnt, an attitude of being open to learn and to make sense of what you hear from your clients will enable you to advance your own understanding and ultimately that of other therapists. Remember, the state of our knowledge regarding this field is still in its infancy. And remember that your clients will be your best teachers. Although I have learnt a great deal about dissociation and the dissociative disorders and about transference and therapy in general from the writings of others, most of what I know about mind control survivors has been learnt from the people who lived it.

Recognize the benefits of this work

This work can be enriching—it can reward us with the ability to appreciate life more fully, to take it more seriously, and to have a greater scope of understanding of others and ourselves. It can inspire us to form deeper, more honest and sensitive relationships. My clients consistently inspire me, and working with them—with all its challenges—makes me know I am doing something worthwhile. For me, this work allows me to have a sense of a higher purpose in life and the camaraderie of others who are involved with this purpose.

Therapy with these most abused survivors requires a great deal of integrity, which Judith Herman (1992, p. 154) defines as

> the capacity to affirm the value of life in the face of death, to be reconciled with the finite limits of one's own life and the tragic limitations of the human condition, and to accept these realities without despair. Integrity is the foundation upon which trust in relationships is originally formed, and upon which shattered trust may be restored.

Note

1. By "the core" I believe she means the essential parts of the person, the infant from whom all the other alters were split, and the two grown alters who are the first splits (the Firstborn and the Gatekeeper), as she defines them in Chapter Seven.

CHAPTER SIXTEEN

Working with the traumatic memories

The DID and DDNOS created by ritual abuse and mind control cannot be resolved without putting together the traumatic experiences which initially created the dissociation. The focus of dissociation treatment is not to make recovery a fact-finding mission. As Richard Kluft (1997), a leader in the field of dissociative disorder treatment, states in "On the treatment of traumatic memories of DID patients: Always? Never? Sometimes? Now? Later?" (what a wonderful title!), "The integration of the DID patient's identity appears to require the working through his or her traumatic memories, however flawed with regard to historical accuracy and however unsettling work with such memories may be" (p. 80).

Just as dissociation itself is both a psychological and a physiological process, so, too, is its resolution. "Memory work" is the common term for the therapeutic process through which all of these physical and psychological pieces are re-associated. In biological terms, memory fragments belonging to the different senses (sight, hearing, smell, taste, touch and other body sensations), along with the various emotions, are fed through the hippocampus to the brain's cerebral cortex, where they become integrated. In this way they move from the unconscious to the conscious mind, from separated (dissociated) to connected (associated). What was formerly a dissociated, "forgotten" memory is now consciously remembered. It no longer erupts in disturbing ways or creates flashbacks. It also loses much of its emotional "punch." And it becomes part of the person's life, which is less fragmented.

In order to help a client with DID or DDNOS work through trauma memories, the therapist helps the survivor to relive them in a safe place with a safe person. While being helped to know s/he is in the present, the client can put all the parts of the memory together in the conscious mind, making the dissociative barriers unnecessary.

It is particularly important to do this work with clients who have experienced deliberate mind control as children, because their alters believe that their lives or the lives of others are dependent on them doing the jobs that they were programmed to do. The dissociated memories of the abuse events during which they were given those jobs, pieces of which are held by different alters (and kept separate from others), need to be put together so that these clients' parts will be able to see the tricks and lies that their abusers employed. This is what will free them from their overwhelming compulsion.

When is a client ready to process memories?

One does not rush into memory work such as this. There are many therapeutic tasks that precede it, even for spontaneously developed multiples. Interventions required to prepare mind control survivors have been described in previous chapters of this book. In general, a client is not ready for memory work until the personality system is cooperative, and the alters in charge permit all the alters involved in a particular memory to take part in its processing. In my experience, a memory is not completely processed (and the resulting programming dissolved) until every part of the person involved has put their part of the memory into the complete picture.

If all the parts of mind control survivors are not aligned with the process, protector parts may also punish those parts who disclose forbidden material prematurely. Delay is important when the personality system is not ready. But the process cannot be delayed forever.

Dealing with flashbacks

Memories usually first surface through flashbacks. Flashbacks are the eruption into consciousness of dissociated trauma material, in an unproductive way. Psychologist Judith Peterson, in a workshop I attended in 1991, elegantly defined a flashback as a "closed physiological loop of re-abuse." A flashback is a memory fragment. It may be visual (hallucinating what happened), auditory (hearing a voice or a scream), emotional (e.g., a panic attack deriving from a partial memory of a frightening situation), or physiological (a "body memory" such as a pain in a part of the body that was injured during the event). Until the trauma is resolved, these flashbacks will recur, often in unacceptable times and places.

I remember how helpless I felt when my first DID client, Teresa, repeatedly re-experienced the same trauma flashback in sessions, over and over without resolution. I realized that I had to learn how to help her resolve the traumatic memories more effectively. What I did not understand, at least in the beginning, was the role mind control could play.

I have worked with other clients whose previous therapists spent untold hours assisting them in re-experiencing bodily sensations of abuse with no goal or direction, or who have devoted themselves to endlessly speculating on what could have caused such symptoms. "Abreaction," traditionally recommended by the dissociative disorders field and defined by Wikipedia as "a psychological term for reliving an experience in order to purge it of its emotional excesses," can become a goal in itself. However, although the emotions are parts of the memory that need to be included in its reconstitution, going through the emotions is not sufficient for resolution.

At the other extreme, many therapists who recognize that flashbacks generally do not resolve trauma have taken the stance that "stabilization" involves preventing flashbacks from occurring, and that memory reconstitution is unnecessary. But clients who are merely "stabilized" continue to be at risk of destabilization if present events trigger aspects of their trauma. Working through the memories thoroughly creates long-term stability.

Having established that memories need to be worked through, I must now caution you that not all flashbacks experienced by ritually abused and mind-controlled clients are necessarily important enough to be dealt with. In fact, under certain circumstances, such as with regard to memories that come up spontaneously, rather than the ones you deliberately target, the opposite is true. As you might recall, the flashbacks experienced by these clients are frequently internal "punishments" for disclosures of secrets. If your client is having a lot of flashbacks, you will need to discover whether this is the case. If so, you will need to slow down the disclosures and get to know the hierarchy of parts who are doing their jobs by giving or ordering those flashbacks.

If a client is in the middle of a flashback, it is imperative to stop the symptoms. You will need to ground the client for this purpose. There are various ways to do this. It is generally necessary to tell clients to open their eyes, which often spontaneously close during flashbacks. It is also grounding for clients to listen to your voice and the sounds around them (e.g., birds, city noises, traffic), or to name things in the room, including what he or she is touching (couch, pillow, etc.). I like to ask the client to touch his or her clothing, and name each item, as these survivors are frequently naked during the flashbacks.

You can also use a signal to bring the client back to the present. With some clients I place my *right* hand firmly on their *right* shoulder,[1] and say "Stop!" firmly and quite loudly. If we have pre-arranged this signal, it usually works. But it is important to make sure that any physical touch you use is not one which carries a meaning assigned to it by the perpetrators. For example, the husband of a ritually abused client discovered that she calmed down if he ruffled the hair on the top of her head. Unfortunately, this touch meant to her very young parts, "Be quiet or else!" This particular "touch trigger" is often used by ritually abusing parents. It looks innocuous when a mother tousles her little girl's hair, but, for these families, it is not. Inside, the alters were in turmoil, while outwardly the survivor appeared calm. (This duality is common among mind-controlled persons.)

Now, be aware: although these techniques can be successful in the control of random and unwelcome flashbacks, grounding, like other forms of containment, just prevents a flashback from occurring at any particular moment; it is still likely to erupt when the client is alone, or as a nightmare. The flashback will not be resolved until the memory is properly processed. However, learning to close down a flashback in your office is actually important preparation for actual memory work. It is also important to teach the client how to do grounding techniques on his or her own, since flashbacks occur outside of the therapy office.

Internal negotiation is an important skill for the client in dealing with flashbacks. You have seen some examples of how your clients might work with their own inner worlds and parts. Here's another: a client was having horrible bodily symptoms of choking. He found the part responsible, and struck a deal with her: she would remove his symptoms if in our next therapy session she would be allowed to tell me about the abuse that caused the symptoms. This allowed him to feel better until the therapy session, when he kept his part of the bargain.

When you negotiate with the alters regarding the flashbacks, it is important to talk with the alters *causing* the flashback rather than the ones *experiencing* it; they are usually not the same. The ones causing it are the ones doing their jobs.

If the client is ritually abused, there is often a “Gatekeeper” part who is in charge of keeping memories and feelings put away (or letting them out on command). With such a client you might be able to close down a flashback by asking the Gatekeeper to put away the memory until it is time to work on it.

After a flashback has been closed down, the client should be asked to look after the parts who were having the flashback. They can be put in separate rooms in the inner world, be put to sleep, or be given caretakers.

Memory work

Now we come to actually processing the memories. I do not claim that the method I am about to describe to you is the only technique, or the best technique, you can use; I can only claim that it is very effective for me, and that it has been carefully honed for a number of years, during which this time I have worked the “bugs” out of it, correcting the most common errors which I used to make. In my experience, a few key principles can make memory work with dissociative clients efficient, minimally traumatizing, and permanently healing. This method of memory processing works with most of my dissociative clients, and has been most effective for those with histories of organized abuse by cults or other groups who engage in deliberate mind control of children.

It takes advantage of the way the organized abusers have stored the memories and the personality parts inside their victims.

With those clients who are experienced in memory processing, I am now able to process at least one, and sometimes, up to three, traumatic memories within a two-hour therapy session. On those occasions that a memory takes two or more sessions, we put it into secure storage, which is generally already provided in a mind-controlled personality system. That way, feelings will not “leak” (in the form of “body memories” or flashbacks) between sessions.

Finding and selecting memories

Using recorder alters

Many ritually abusing and mind control groups deliberately create recorder alter personalities who know everything about the system and the history, and observe it with apparent disinterest, wanting things to be better but never intervening. These recorders, by the way, could well be the traditional “inner self helpers” (ISHes) described in the early literature. They might have other labels, such as “internal programmers” or “file managers.”

When I want to process a particular memory or program, I ask the recorders to find both the contents of the event and all the parts of the person who are holding any part of that memory. Recorders are not usually allowed to deliberately intervene on their own initiative to help the person, but they are glad to assist when asked.

Thanks to the recorders, it is actually easier to access and reconstitute memories held within ritually abused or mind-controlled clients than those within other kinds of trauma survivors. You do not need to chase flashbacks. You do not need to wait for the client to spend weeks retrieving the content of the memory. Focus on the function. You simply ask for "the suicide program", "the memory that gives you the stomach ache", "the program that makes you bulimic", "the memory that you see part of in the nightmare", "the memory that gives you that awful feeling of sadness", or "the memory that makes you get up and go outside at night". The recorders know how to find the right one, even if several different memories are causing a particular symptom and need to be processed in chronological order.

It can also be helpful, especially in the later stages of therapy, to have the internal programmers create charts of the programs, and then work through them systematically (see more on this in Chapter Ten).

Before processing a memory, all you need to know is that it is the one causing the symptoms that need to be removed, and that you will have enough time in the session to get through it from start to finish (or can contain it well if it is unfinished). I prefer *not* to be told ahead of time what the content of the memory is. In these days, when therapists are being accused of creating "false memories" in their clients, I want to avoid all possibility of suspicion. Also, speculation by the ANP and other alters about what a memory might contain can contaminate the process and make it more difficult to get at the actual memory.

Spontaneous dissociatives usually do not have a recorder. The key to finding their memories lies in winning the trust and cooperation of the personality system. This is also applicable to some extent to the memories of mind control survivors that result from trauma which was not deliberate mind control. (Some such survivors have recorders for this kind of trauma; some do not.) In this case, what you want is for the alters holding parts of various memories to come forward willingly to process them. Often, the ones who have only the awareness of what occurred do not want to experience the pain, or the ones who just have the feelings do not want to know what happened to them; in that case, you have to talk with them about the advantages of memory processing.

With the parts who do not want the pain, emphasize that everyone inside shares the same body, and while *they* might feel fine, someone else inside is in pain. The ones who do not want the knowledge need to know that the abuse is now over, if and when it is, and it is safer to know than not to know. Needless to say, do not say this to a ritually abused or mind-controlled client unless you are absolutely sure that there is no current contact with the perpetrators. If there *is* current contact, emphasize that it is important to process the memories to destroy the programs, so that the perpetrator group will lose its ability to access the client and re-traumatize them.

Choosing the memories to be put together

Here is one place where you need to proceed differently with mind control and ritual abuse survivors than you would with survivors of other traumas, such as incest. With survivors of "regular" traumas, you wait for memories to emerge, and work with those that are emerging. With mind control, you choose the memories strategically in order to dismantle the programming. It is possible to do so because of the storage systems for memories deliberately installed by the mind controllers.

The only essential memories to process are the ones that make the person unsafe (e.g., programs), or the ones that create symptoms which interfere with everyday life. This is the same with spontaneous DID, except that safety issues are largely internal and are often more effectively removed by communicating with alters rather than by memory work. Some people might legitimately choose not to know what happened to them, if it is not interfering with their current lives.

Start with relatively easy memories, relatively minor traumas that do not have too much shock or horror or physical pain, so that the client can learn the process. With one client, for instance, I began with memories of her mother washing her hair and pulling it while combing it. Another client chose to work on the memories of being teased at school, which caused the splits between her school-going parts. In this example, there was no physical pain, and the emotional pain was not overwhelming. Other alters could observe this work and see how it resolved the trauma. I ask the parts who have more difficult memories to observe what happens when I process the easy ones, so that they can see how to put memories together, and what happens as a result.

After the system knows how it is done, we select the memories we will work through on a logical basis. With programmed clients, the goal is safety. I pay no attention to what is flashing back, but instead go for the most dangerous trainings of the alter personalities. Whether or not the person has current contact with the perpetrators, suicide and self-harm training are of utmost importance. If there is current contact, then any training that makes the client obey the perpetrators is addressed. Access training, training which makes the client report what has been disclosed in therapy, and that which causes them to fear therapists, are all very important in the beginning.

It is a very useful technique to put together a number of similar memories into one abreaction. If a client was sexually abused by her father, for example, there may have been hundreds or thousands of incidents. All the oral rapes in the bedroom, or all the touching in the television room, can be grouped together and processed as if they are one. I do not know how the client does this, but I know that they can, and do. This is fortunate, because if it were not the case, trauma recovery would take forever.

Preparation for memory work

You do not just dive into a traumatic memory and hope it comes out all right. All of the following steps ensure that the memory work will be effective.

Gathering the alters

As much as I can, I make sure that all the alters who contain parts of the memory participate. This means speaking with them ahead of time (or having other parts speak with them) and getting their agreement. I do not have to know their names, as long as I know I have all those involved in the memory. I have learned by experience that if even one alter who holds a portion of the memory stays out of the memory processing, or withholds part of what s/he knows, that alter will experience ongoing flashbacks of the traumatic event that might affect the whole system. (In fact, many flashbacks appear to be caused by some alters pushing their piece of a memory up to consciousness while others are resisting the knowledge.)

Sometimes. it is impossible to gather all the alters involved in a memory because you do not know enough of the personality system. With ritually abused clients, this is often the case during the first couple of years of therapy. To address this, either the client or I will keep an indexed summary of the memories we have worked through, and, if they are training memories, their purpose. If, later in therapy, a part or group of parts emerges who belong to a memory we have already done, it will be easy to reprocess the memory. Sometimes, a program or training we have destroyed suddenly starts working again, and the client engages in behaviors we thought s/he was cured of. It is important then to identify which program has re-emerged, and reprocess it more completely, putting in the missing pieces.

It is sometimes helpful to invite parts to be present who were not there for the original event—for example, a caretaker for little children. Other parts might also want to watch from a distance, to acquire knowledge of how to process memories or of what happened to the body. Over time with my clients I am able to find one or two parts who will specialize in helping the others with memory processing. Often the most effective ones at this are severely traumatized, empathic child parts.

It is not necessary to have the ANP present during memory work unless that personality was involved in the original experience. I have found that memories that have been completely processed often gradually "leak" through to the main adult personality in the days following the memory work. But if they do not, I do not require the ANP to know their content.

Including parts of memories held by internal recyclers

Some alters, usually known as recyclers or reactivators, are trained to deliberately withhold and hide a small part of each training memory, so that the effect of the training cannot be destroyed. The hidden bit may be some words that were spoken, an emotion, or some physical pain. If this piece is not included in the memory, the perpetrator group will be able to re-create the program from the missing piece. (I am not sure how this works in the brain.) Look for recycler alters in mind-controlled personality systems, and convince them to include their part in the memory. I remember my shock right after my client Lorraine's death when all the programs I had worked through with another of the first four, Jennifer, suddenly began to activate once more. Her recycling program, which I had not known about, was operating. This is one reason to keep specific records of memory processing. We had to work from our records, inserting the piece that the recycler held for each memory. It was quite a challenge to keep her safe during this process, as many programs were set off at once.

To find the recycler alters, I just ask in a casual way whether there are any alters trained to keep pieces of the memories separate. The client might appear surprised, but will generally answer truthfully, and then permit me to dialogue with the recyclers or those in charge of them. Memory work is much more efficient, and the client is much safer, if each memory only has to be processed once.

Dissociating the feelings

Most experts in the field emphasize how important it is not to re-abuse the client by allowing him or her to become flooded with painful memories. The goal is reassociation of memories, but not reliving them all at once in all their painful detail. The client's ability to dissociate emotions and bodily sensations while processing memories will give him or her a sense of control over the process, and make the memory processing much less painful than if s/he has to undergo all the painful feelings for the entire time that the memory is being put together.

One pioneer DID researcher, Bennett Braun (1988), described dissociation as containing elements with the acronym BASK—behavior, affect, sensation, and knowledge. I prefer to go through the senses one by one, thinking of the emotions as also being a group of senses. I think of the senses as organized into three groups:

1. The distance senses—sight and hearing.
2. Body sensations—smell and taste, pain, heat and cold, sexual feelings, drugged feelings, etc.
3. Emotions—fear, terror, anxiety, anger, frustration, sadness, etc.

The first time I go through a memory with a client, I allow only the first group (sight and hearing) to be present. Since sight and sound do not hurt (unless there is an unbearably loud noise), these senses can be tolerated for a fairly long time without too much discomfort. They are also essential for obtaining information about what happened, and, in the case of ritual abuse or mind control clients, what false beliefs, instructions, and programs were implanted.

Bodily pain, on the other hand, is very difficult to bear. It should be dissociated while the *content* of the memory is obtained. Beyond that, you will need to use your client's feedback and your own professional judgment to determine what to do with feelings and physical sensations.

Smell and taste and touch can be unpleasant, but not completely unbearable. Sometimes it is all right for the client to leave them in the "movie" of their memory when they go through the memory the first time, and sometimes it is preferable for the client to leave in just a little bit of these feelings. For example, in a memory in which the client was injected with a numbing drug and unable to move, a small part of these sensations was necessary to make her aware of what was happening to her.

Like the bodily sensations, the emotions in a traumatic situation are very strong, and can make it very difficult for the client to proceed with abreacting the memory. So they need to be temporarily dissociated. Sexual feelings can distract some alters, causing them to dwell in the memory rather than getting on with it. Or these feelings can be so embarrassing that the client will refuse to experience them. Feelings created by drugs can confuse, so generally it is wisest to omit the drug sensations during the first run through the story of the memory.

Skilful use of dissociation will allow the client to preserve his or her dissociative capacity while it is still needed; during therapy, dissociation can be used to store unfinished memories, pace therapy, and enable real life functioning, such as school attendance or work. By definition, anyone who has a major dissociative disorder is already a skilled dissociator. In order to help my clients process their memories in the least traumatic way possible, I teach them to dissociate in a special way. I put the emotions and the bodily sensations away in imaginary containers.

Before we process any memories, we work on the client's ability to dissociate feelings effectively. I have the client construct in his or her inner world a place where unprocessed memories and feelings are to be kept in containers, and some containers in which to put them, such as a cave containing barrels, a bank with a vault with storage lockers, a well with buckets, or a storage room with jars on shelves. Both the containers and the place in which they will be kept should be able to be locked, but there should be a way to put things in the containers after they are locked. A spout or straw might work (if the memories and feelings are thought of as liquid), or a "doggie-door" which snaps shut could be created. As with all such creative solutions, it does not matter what the image is, as long as it works for the client, and the therapist takes note of it and remembers what it is. (It helps if the client draws a picture of the storage place and containers.) Now the client can learn to put the emotions and bodily sensations from some easy memories, and eventually entire memories, into the container. The emotions from an argument she had yesterday with her husband can be put safely away, or the taste of the milk that went bad—and then, the flashback of the hands of someone who abused her. I gradually work with clients until they can dissociate difficult components of memories by putting them into containers. I might count backwards from five, if that is not triggering (clients abused by some groups have conditioned reactions to counting or to numbers). For instance:

"5, put in all the pain, all the 'owies' and hurts (Remember, we are dealing with child alters. I use childish words as well as adult synonyms for pain and emotions, to make sure that young parts understand me.),
4, put in all the fear, all the scared feelings, all the terror, all the worry and anxiety,
3, put in all the angry and mad feelings, and all the sad and hopeless feelings,
2, put in any drugs and any sex feelings,
1, now put in anything else, anything you felt in any part of your body, and anything you felt in any part of your feelings.
0, close the box (or bucket) and lock it up tightly. Keep the doggy door (or spout, or straw) ready in case any more feelings come up when you watch the movie."

When the client can do this, s/he is ready for memory work.

Remember to tailor any suggestion you read here, and any treatment in general, to the specific needs and preferences of your client as much as is reasonable, therapeutically. Some clients do not like counting, and prefer to just name what theyare putting in. Others just want me to be quiet while they do it, and let me know when they have finished. I emphasize that anything they keep out (e.g., pleasant feelings) will make the rest of the memory's feelings come back.

Putting together the memories

Watching the "video" of the memory

When I work through a traumatic memory with a survivor client, we always begin the story in "normal life" (e.g., getting into the car) and follow it through until the person is in "normal life" again, with the traumatic event having happened in-between. The alters at the beginning and end of a memory are usually different from the ones in the middle, but selecting a complete memory, normal-to-normal, in this way, helps the client understand how the traumatic events fitted in with their everyday life. This also reveals the situation if one traumatic event led to another traumatic event.

I have clients process each memory at least twice. The first time it is done as if watching a video, with sight and sound but no emotions or bodily sensations. The alters can watch it on an internal screen in a viewing room. All the feelings have been put away into a container. Because the client is not feeling the pain or the fear, s/he is able to describe what is happening clearly, and I am able to take coherent, even verbatim, notes. I can ask the client to slow down or to repeat something without worrying about traumatizing him or her. The client holds the remote control, and can make the picture bigger or smaller, speed up or slow down, rewind, fast forward, or stop. The client can pause the video to take a bathroom break, or to talk about something that was on it.

When the client is watching this "video", I encourage him or her to be simultaneously in the inner world that includes the memory, and in the outer world in which I am really there with them in a safe place. I find that in most cases it is quite possible for people to be consciously aware and with me while processing a memory, especially when just watching the video. I encourage the client to stay as conscious as possible, closely enough connected to me and the real world that s/he can describe the memory while going through it, rather than doing it silently. This does two things. It helps the client stay grounded in the present, so that the memory processing does not turn into a flashback, and it helps me to know two important things: whether all parts of the memory are being included, and what parts were trained to do.

I constantly remind my clients to tell what they *heard* (words as well as sounds) as well as what they saw. With ritually abused and mind-controlled clients, the words usually contain the programming or training, so the alters who know what was said will sometimes omit the soundtrack, and it has to be specifically requested. They might have been ordered never to reveal what was said to them. Stay alert to whether an alter tries to skip a part of the memory, and ask them to put that part in.

I constantly interact with the client as s/he goes through the memory, asking questions (for clarification only), giving reassurances that the event is not really happening, and correcting cognitive distortions as they happen. If a false idea was implanted by the abusers during the memory (e.g., that the abuse was the client's fault), I can challenge it right there. It is extremely effective to challenge the lies and tricks right at the point where the client is remembering them clearly for the first time.

If different alters hold different aspects of the experience, the chronological order of the parts of the memory can become confused. To prevent this, I ask for someone inside who knows the content to line the alters up in the order in which their parts come.

If the client gets stuck, I take a break to talk with the parts and find out why. Sometimes an alter just does not want to go through with it. Sometimes there is a part of the memory held by an unknown alter, whom they have to find. Then we need to negotiate with that alter, and decide whether or not to go ahead with the memory.

One client would present me with written summaries of memories that we could then work through more fully. When something like this happens, you should not assume that the client's written narrative is all that is contained in the traumatic event. Often, there is something which is omitted, either because the part collecting the content did not look everywhere, or because some part held back out of embarrassment or fear. I still think it is wise to go through the memory twice in my office, once as narrative and once with feelings, even if the client has prepared beforehand. (And I prefer that they do not prepare in this manner. It is too easy for them to get into speculation about what happened, rather than allowing the story to emerge.)

Often there has been "incidental training," accidental events incorporated into a training memory. For instance, in the middle of a training session or other traumatic event, someone might have turned on a radio, or a car horn might have honked outside. Incidental training is often not even in the room with a person. It is the white noise in the background that most people do not even notice, because they are too busy concentrating on what is happening in the room with them, but it will end up integrated into the traumatic memory. However, it is often forgotten or left out while trying to break down a program, leaving the therapist unable figure out why things just are not working. It must be included in the memory processing.

During the process I am careful to monitor my client's affect and status. If I notice the client's feelings becoming overwhelming, I remind the client to dissociate them into their container. Sometimes there are feelings I forgot to include in the first countdown, so I have to help the client put them away again. If this does not work, I stop the memory temporarily and diagnose the problem (e.g., an alter refusing to dissociate pleasant sexual or drug feelings can keep other feelings active as well).

Sometimes a very young part will want to do the story-telling part of a memory in the play therapy room, with dolls, sand tray, or other toys. This can be useful, especially as in some cases it bypasses the "don't talk" programming, as the story is not told by talking. And if the client is still a child, this is highly appropriate.

I keep a verbatim narrative of what the client says and does during the "video" part of the memory abreaction. This narrative is probably the best record the client will ever have of what happened to him or her, as the memory will fade once it is consciously known. The memory that returns during the first putting together of a dissociated trauma is far more detailed and feels much more "alive" than any other besides the contents of a flashback. I think it is helpful for me, too; I dissociate my own emotions about the trauma to the handwritten page which my right hand is producing, and I do not reintegrate them until I type out my notes at a later time.

Processing infant memories

It is important that the memories of these original splits be processed if the person wants to proceed to integration, since with organized abuse, most alters are deliberately split off in infancy. When my client Jennifer, who chose to fully integrate, had worked through all the memories of the alters on the layers in her internal structure (a tetrahedron or inverted pyramid) as well as the memories of home abuse, she was left with "the point"—the portion of the structure at the very base. It contained the infant memories, which were a conglomeration of bodily sensations and emotions. She did process these in therapy, even though there was not a great deal of understanding of what it was all about. After all, how much did she understand when she was an infant?

Memories of events that occurred very early in life might involve the entire personality system. All of the alters involved have to regress to the age at which the trauma happened while they process the memory. What this means is that they could be quite young. With these memories, sometimes I have to use word and touch signals because the client is unable to speak, or cannot return to the present. I squeeze the client's hand, and ask him or her to squeeze mine from time to time, to indicate that s/he can hear me. I pre-arrange "stop" signals—one for the client to give me if s/he cannot speak, and one for me to give the client that will automatically stop the memory (for example, I may hold the right shoulder firmly and say "Stop!" loudly). I practice these first with easy memories. If the memory belongs to pre-verbal parts, I ask a verbally fluent part to watch. Then I process the memory in short segments, stopping to allow the older part to tell what happened.

Memory processing is different for infant parts. Stella Katz describes her experience with infant parts and memory processing as relatively quick and uncomplicated:

> Processing baby memories is essential for total integration, and it is something that can be done very quickly if you just let the person do it without verbal interference.
>
> Baby memories phase in and out because babies phase in and out during the experience. They are not like a five-year-old who remembers hours of torture. Babies only take in small parts of memories. That's why when training babies you use short quick things, rather than long drawn out things. What takes a five-year-old 24 hours to break, only takes a baby a few minutes.
>
> Baby memories are based on events that occur when you are at a place when life is still a complete mystery, so it is best to just take what you see as real. When traveling back to baby years, don't try to understand, just experience, and let it go. These memories are the hardest to get at, but the easiest to let go of.
>
> Baby memories differ from later memories because you have no verbal way of explaining what you feel or go through. It is stupid to try to get the person to talk about what they felt or saw, because they will not get an accurate account from outsiders and it is impossible to really verbalize the experience. Besides, it wastes large amount of time trying to put it into words.

Processing memories of dying or becoming unconscious

During memory work, a client may stop breathing and appears to be dead, or at least unconscious. It can last for some time and it can be quite frightening to a therapist. What if they do not wake up? Having worked through a large number of such memories, I have confidence that the client will not actually die during the memory work if they did not die, or at least did not remain dead, during the original trauma. I have worked through quite a few memories of apparent death and resuscitation by the perpetrators when the abuse went too far and the child was in the process of dying. Although it is gruesome, it is possible to go through these memories like any other. I do suggest, however, that these memories should not be the first ones you tackle. Also, it is within these memories that the hidden gems of the near-death experiences which can give the client spiritual hope are seen.

Adding in the feelings

Often, dissociated clients are in a rush to get their memories back. When asked why, they say they "just want to get it (this recovery stuff) over with." It certainly would be nice if all the client had to do was recover the knowledge of what happened. However, that is not the case. In addition to all of the preparation involved before you can even begin to address memories, in order for a traumatic memory to be fully healed, all parts of it must be put together—not just the pictures or the storyline. The emotions, and, when necessary, the pain, must also be included. If this is not done, the entire memory can easily be redissociated. When a previously unconscious memory has been *completely* put together, the emotions connected with it are discharged, the behaviors "programmed" by the event are brought under conscious control, and the alter personalities created by the event are free to reintegrate. *That is recovery.*

After the cognitive (storyline) processing, if the client's feelings are being dissociated enough to make this possible, we take a breather in the real world. If not, we proceed immediately to the second stage. In this stage we open the container that has the feelings in it, and put the memory together with the feelings *fast*. This is the most painful, and difficult, stage of recovery for the survivor.

With some clients, I do this by counting up to ten, spacing the numbers about one second apart. In some cases, I name parts of the memory after each number. With others, this is not necessary. I do not have to name the feelings; they just happen. As each number is spoken, the client's agony increases. Usually a ten-count is enough to contain a memory, although for some very long memories it is necessary to go to fifteen or even twenty. I ask the client to nod if the feelings have all been acknowledged.

With other clients, instead of using numbers, I just name the parts of the memory in chronological order. Some want me to read back the transcript of what they said during the first storytelling, and put in the feelings while I am reading. *The feelings do not have to be experienced for the duration for which they were originally felt, but they do have to be acknowledged and incorporated into the memory with the story and the physical sensations.*

When I get to ten, or to the end of the recounting, I begin counting back down to zero. (Remember that some clients have programs or memories triggered by counting, so it should not be used with them.) Whether or not I have used counting, I instruct the client to put each part of the memory back into the container where the feelings had been kept. I begin with the most distressing parts of the memory—first the pain, then the fear. There does not seem to be a "right" order, as long as everything is put into the container. I usually mention specific things that happened in the memory as I count down, to make sure that everything is put in. When I get about halfway through, I say the final words:

"Put away – everything you saw,
– everything you heard (all the sounds, all the words),
– everything you tasted,
– everything you smelled,
– everything you felt in any part of your body" (here, I name specific body sensations such as pain and sexual feelings, remembering to mention any sensations which would have happened in the particular memory we are dealing with), "and
– everything you felt in any part of your emotions." (Here, I name specific emotions such as fear, anger, anxiety, and sadness, remembering to mention any which must have been in the particular memory.)

Then I instruct the client to close the container and lock it.

Not all therapists working with dissociative disorders and with mind control survivors agree with me about the necessity of including the emotions and bodily sensations in the memory work. Whether or not this is done probably depends on the goals of therapy. My experience is that alters are unable to integrate unless this is done, and the client might still get flashbacks of the worst parts of the memory—those emotions and bodily sensations—for some time after finding out the content of the abuse. If these parts are deliberately included during the processing, horrible though it might be, they will not return as flashbacks later and continue to haunt survivors for the rest of their lives.

Closure and integration of material

Once a memory has been put together with all its parts, the material integrates, and a miraculous thing happens. The emotions and body sensations from the traumatic memory disappear, leaving only a knowledge of what happened, similar to the knowledge of any other life experience. Finally, healing can occur. The wound is closed, though there might be a scar, in terms of the awareness that a horrible thing happened to the person. The alters involved can also integrate, depending on whether or not other memories still stand between them.

A physiological explanation of memory work: In physiological terms, when the memory is re-associated, then it has been taken through the hippocampus to the cerebral cortex, and can be remembered like any other memory. Its vividness and its emotional punch will gradually fade with time.

Sending the memory into storage

After all the parts of a memory, including the feelings, are joined in the person's awareness, the client and I send the locked and labeled container into permanent storage. The way in which this is done depends upon the client's inner world. One client just threw the box into the internal river, and it floated down to its resting place. Another used her inner self helper, who believed herself to be a whale, to take the container away and deposit it on the bottom of the ocean. If we had to reprocess the memory, the whale could get it back again—but the other parts could not. As you see, what we are really employing is the same imaginative creation of symbols that people with DID use to assign characteristics to their independently created alters.

Completing the processing and integrating alters

At the conclusion of the process, I like to have a symbolic cleansing and joining, an image of the client's choosing located in the client's inner world.

I like to use a (breathable) waterfall of soft warm sparkling water or colored light, in which the alters can wash away any all remnants of the memory which did not get into the container. They can cleanse themselves, inside and out, from any dirty or contaminated feelings. They can also revitalize themselves, removing their tiredness.

Now, finally, the waterfall will wash away any boundaries between parts whose separateness is no longer necessary, and will blend them together. Any alters who still need to be separate will remain separate and have their boundaries strengthened. We shall look in more detail at integration in Chapter Seventeen.

Other ways of dealing with memories

As much as what I have written might seem like a formula to follow, no treatment recommendations can ever be applied to everyone in the same way. You will need to negotiate what will work effectively for each client. The client with whom currently I am doing the most memory work has chosen to go through all the feelings and bodily sensations first, then tells me the story briefly. With some clients, I have used a fractionation process, going through the memory several times, starting with the pictures, then adding the sound, then adding one emotion or bodily sensation at a time. Stella Katz has told me that she processed most of her own traumatic memories this way. She used a bell to bring herself back to the present if she got "lost" in a memory.

A long-term mind-controlled client of mine has always processed his traumatic memories on his own rather than in therapy sessions. He reports that the memories first appear in partial form in dreams, then begin to emerge in the daytime, and gradually fill out until the story is clear. Sometimes, he has to deliberately allow the alters involved to express the feelings involved in a memory, otherwise, he will be flooded with those feelings in everyday life. He asks the alters to process particular memories which he considers important for his healing.

As you can see, different survivors have different capabilities and the potential for different levels of independence in their work. One of my ritually abused clients appears to be unable to go through entire memories because of internal resistance; they leak out a little at a time, over many therapy sessions. This is not the method I would choose, but this is all her system is capable of.

The guidelines in this chapter are just that-guidelines—and I want to remind you that there are many creative ways to deal with recovery. Remember to listen to, and learn from, your clients. Some clients choose not to fully integrate, and not to completely process all aspects of their memories. You will see more about this in Chapter Seventeen.

Cognitive and emotional processing

It is important to leave time in a memory work session to discuss any implications the memory might have after it has been processed. Although the *previous*_emotions have been put in with the memory, there will be new *current* emotions about what happened. These deserve to be expressed, especially if the ANP has just become aware of some trauma that s/he did not previously know about. More cognitive work might need to be done about the false beliefs which resulted from the dissociated trauma. The client needs to have time to reorient himself or herself in the present. The usual issues that close each therapy session also need to be addressed: homework, and safety concerns for the period before the next therapy session.

I find it is often advantageous to have at least one "talk session" after a memory has been processed, to discuss what came up and what it means in more detail. After all, the objective is for the client to fully recover from the trauma, and this means that cognitive processing of the trauma is important to the client's view of him/herself, and of life.

With some traumatic memories, the ANP has not been present and will not gain access to the memory content for some time longer. This depends on the particular personality system. It is not always advantageous for the ANP to know the content of the memories, as in some cases this can be disabling to present-day functioning. In my experience, there is no need to force the ANP into knowledge he/she is not ready for. In some cases, it is wisest for the ANP not to know about certain memories for some time, even when those memories have been processed. Dealing with a newly traumatized and horrified ANP can divert the therapy process from resolving the alters' pain and compulsions. The knowledge will come when the time is right.

Note

1. Never touch the left shoulder of a ritual abuse survivor, since this touch is used to call out alters. And be careful about using your left hand when touching a client, since many left hand touches turn on programs.

CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

Successful resolution: co-consciousness or integration

When therapists began working with persons with dissociative disorders, the explicit goal was generally integration, which meant fusing all the alters into one person. In the literature, integration is often seen as a therapist-assigned goal of treatment. It is a big deal, usually conducted through a ceremony that joins the entire system or major alters, and is artificially induced by therapist-directed hypnosis. And it often does not work, or creates more problems than it solves. LisaBri's story in Chapter Nine shows how premature integration can confuse the therapy process. In the spirit of the times, I tried fusing small groups of alters in Teresa, my first DID client. And every time, the integration came apart after a little while.

Then I noticed, when working with the teenage Jennifer, that after we worked through a traumatic memory, the alters involved would frequently join together naturally. At that point, I realized what countless other therapists have had to discover for themselves because it was contraindicated by "the literature": maybe formal integration ceremonies were not necessary. I decided to dispense with them. My experience after twenty years of working with dissociative disorders, including those with ritual abuse and mind control histories, is that alters naturally join when there is no longer a need for them to remain separate, to protect secrets or to keep toxic emotions or body sensations from flooding the whole person.

As small integrations happen in this way, at the close of each piece of memory work, they become the natural evolution of the system—and they hardly ever come apart. The real barriers between the alters are the separately held secrets and the intense feelings which belong to the memories; once these have been shared, there is no need for alters to remain divided. Many alters will have quite a few memories, so they will have to process all their distinct memories before they are able to integrate.

For alters to integrate easily and naturally, it is important that the therapist and the client do not make a "big deal" about their individual identities. Remember that a dissociative client is really *one* person, even though she or he *feels* like many and might present with a rainbow of different personalities. If s/he becomes invested in separateness, integration will become more difficult. But it will still happen, at least with some groups of alters. Clients have told me that it is impossible to keep alters separate when the traumatic memories that divide them have been fully processed.

But is full integration *the only* healthy resolution of DID and DDNOS? Survivor Jen Callow has thought a lot about the process of integration, and wrote this piece specifically for therapists, which addresses many perspectives about integration. In this part, she addresses that question, and demonstrates that there is no formula for how parts, individually or in relationship, will respond to this process, for what will change, and how parts will feel. She also shows what can happen if alters are not fully involved in, and prepared for, the process. She explores the value of keeping out just a bit of a memory until all parts are really, really ready to integrate. "Integration," she says, "is more of a journey, and doesn't have to mean total fusion." On the other hand, it "isn't about losing who you are, it's about becoming what you were meant to be."

Part 1: To integrate or not to integrate: Jen Callow

Just as integration can be a welcome event, it can also be traumatic when parts are not ready to integrate or merge. It was for some of my parts.

When parts integrate, two or more parts merge into one new part that is a composite of these original parts. The new part might have similar likes and dislikes to these parts, as well as their abilities and mannerisms. The new part might even be the average age of the parts who merged. For parts who are unprepared or do not understand what is happening, this merging can be terrifying.

I started out with over 700 fully and partially developed parts, although only a handful spent time in the outside world. Partially developed parts are ones that carry memory fragments, but do not have a clear identity and personality, unlike fully formed parts. Now I have about 150 parts. Many of these merges happened effortlessly without my full awareness. I sometimes felt a new energy coming into me, the outside part, but normally only noticed a shift in my perceptions, feelings, or beliefs afterward. Often, I felt stronger and more whole inside.

However, sometimes merging was more traumatic for my system. Once, I had a part crying as he merged, resisting all the way. My therapist held him and tried to comfort him, but it did not help. One of the issues with Pete was that he was not warned or given a choice about integration, and was not prepared for what was happening to him. It was even more traumatic because he had just processed a long and terrifying memory on the assurance it would help him and my system feel better. Pete (the name he chose) had not realized he would merge when he helped process a particular memory, and it was an awful experience for him. Afterward, he fought the merge, moving in and out of the other part involved. I had no idea how to help him and thought he would eventually merge on his own.

As I wrote this article, I discovered he was still trying to keep out a piece of the memory so he could stay separate. But by this point he hated being half in and half out and realized he could not go back to being fully himself. Pete released the memory piece, we processed it, and he merged with the other part. This took only a few minutes, now that he was ready. The new part still contains elements of Pete, and, as I type this, he tells me everything is okay, although he still carries some of Pete's anger and sadness about the merge. Had we made it clear that he might merge if we went through the memory, and offered him the opportunity to address his feelings, merging would not have been so traumatic. Pete did not need to spend so many years in limbo.

All parts respond to integration differently, depending upon how close they are to the parts being integrated, whether it is happening directly to them, and their beliefs around what is happening. With my system, it also depends upon whether they are fully or partially developed parts. Merges between partial and full parts seem to be easier, with the partial part being strongly pulled toward the full part. Merges between fully developed parts have the potential to be more emotional. Still, for many of my parts, integration is just "something that happens". Some are quite positive about it, seeing it as becoming stronger and wiser, gaining in life experience. I have child parts who look forward to "growing taller" through merging with another part. However, there are many parts who still fear integration. Some parts see the inner world decreasing, with a physical loss of playmates, friends, and caregivers as various parts merge. This can result in a huge sense of loss, and parts might need time to grieve. This reduction in numbers can also be interpreted as people "disappearing" and parts may be afraid of disappearing, too. Others see integration as a loss of self, like Pete, and are terrified at the prospect.

The following exercise might provide a way to understand my experience: Imagine yourself as a child with a favorite set of grandparents. They spend time with you and are familiar and trusted faces. One day, they merge into a new person that looks sort of like your grandma and sort of like your grandpa, but also looks different from either of them. This new person says they are still your grandma and grandpa, but in a new form, and gives her/himself a new name, in this case, "Grand". Grand acts a bit like grandma and a bit like grandpa, and you really do not know what to make of this new person. Then Grand assures you s/he will look after you, the same as before. Only you now have one, different caregiver, instead of your two familiar grandparents. How would you interpret what just happened? How would you cope? Now imagine that you are an abused child who has not known much stability. After years of therapy, the inner world where you live has become a safe haven for you with other parts you know and trust. How would you feel when parts around you start merging in ways similar to Grand? And how secure would you feel about your own presence in that inner world? For people who are multiple, their inner world is every bit as real as the outer world we all share, and what happens there can have just as significant an impact on them.

Parts that have merged might also need support to adjust. In the outer world, people treat you differently when you change. You might put on weight, get grey hair and wrinkles, or need a wheelchair or assistance to move. Maybe you have not just changed physically, you have also had a profound experience that changed you emotionally and spiritually, and people do not know how to relate to you any more. It may be hard for you to fit in, to find your new role in the world. In the inner world, it is the same. Grand might struggle with what it now means to be "Grand" and with the child's difficulty in accepting him/her. Or a merge might suddenly result in a part becoming older and no longer at the same developmental level as his/her playmates, or any number of other changes.

My merged parts seemed to adjust fairly easily because my therapist and I had made a point to help all of the parts involved find new roles in my inner system, whether they had merged or not. So, parts often had fairly clear roles before they merged, and afterward their roles were simply amalgamated or expanded. With merging, the walls completely disappear and there is no barrier between certain parts any more. This can lead to a stronger sense of self.

After many years of painstakingly processing every piece of a memory, my system is able to do a lot of memory work on our own and not being nearly so triggered by events in our daily life . . . our parts are increasingly willing to work together and we have many more inner resources to draw on to help us through a memory, no matter how intense it might be. We now have more options when dealing with memories, particularly since our abusers are no longer in our life to reprogram or trigger us. Sometimes we choose to talk to new parts, and, when they are ready, help them leave their program line. We do this by simply "flying over" the memory, seeing it from a distance in our mind without having to feel it all and getting drawn in. Our goal is to understand what happened, what we learnt from that event, and how those enduring beliefs and feelings are impacting our life now. We remind ourselves that we are safe and work with the old beliefs and feelings so that we can move beyond them and forward in our life. This may involve using art, affirmations, physical activity, crying and yelling, whatever feels right at the time. Sometimes it is simply a matter of an "aha" moment where we realize those beliefs are false and replace them with beliefs that work for us now.

We can often disable a whole program line in this manner, part by part. The disadvantage is that the line is still there; however, the higher the cooperation between parts and the higher the survivor's safety level, the less likely it is the line will get reactivated, since parts will not go back to it and their programs.

Other times, we do have to process the feelings from the memory after we have flown over and understood it, as they continue to leak through. Even this takes less time than it used to, though, and the processing tends to flow smoothly with less resistance.

We do not use our therapy time for memory processing as much any more, and now have a therapist who does not know much about dissociation or ritual abuse, but is willing to learn. Most of the memory work we do on our own, and our therapist is there to help us deal with any remaining issues or feelings.

For a number of my parts, integrating is scary, because it means giving up their identity and becoming someone new and unknown. The resistance my parts feel toward merging encompasses a spiritual element. In my view, merging is a micro-version of spiritual bliss, nirvana, and the like. In both of these situations, giving up the self or ego to a higher power is called for, in order to achieve a greater unity and sense of inner peace. With integration, I am achieving a greater unity within myself, as opposed to merging with a greater spiritual force, although I find my spiritual connection deepens, as well. Many books have been written on the subject of spiritual enlightenment and a common theme is how terrifying and difficult it can be to give up your sense of self, your individuality and identity—in other words, your ego. This fear exists even with the promise of an incredibly joyous and peaceful state. Their thoughts, feelings, and personality will not be their own any more. Integration, in both a dissociative and spiritual sense, is a leap of faith.

Discussion of feelings surrounding merging can continue formally or informally throughout therapy. A client's parts need to know they can talk with their therapist about integration at any time, and without a general knowledge of integration, it can be hard for parts to even know what to ask. It is important to remember that each integration affects the client's self and world view. Outer parts might have their way of relating to the world shaken or changed, inner parts might also be adjusting to life with new merges. Although the topic of integration does not need to be a bigger deal than any other aspect of therapy, it does need to be an ongoing topic of conversation.

It might be helpful under some circumstances to arrange to leave a small piece of a memory unprocessed until resistant parts are ready to integrate. The memory piece could be a smell, a sound, an image, or even a short scene, whatever works best for the client and will create the least disturbance if it's left in the client's system. Regardless, whatever is left unprocessed needs to be something that was directly held by the part, otherwise the part could merge. If a part chooses to leave a piece unprocessed, it is important to set the piece aside in such a way that it will not get added into the memory, or affect the rest of the system. For example, the part could put the memory fragment into an inside container, label it for easy retrieval should the memory need to be finished, and then put it in a safe spot where it can be found, but will not be accidentally opened. Use this technique sparingly, though, as each memory piece dramatically increases the chance that one of the associated memories could be opened again and negatively impact the client. This is regardless of how much of the memory was actually processed. Only when memories are fully processed are they gone and have no risk of impacting the client.

If a client has not experienced integration yet, it can be hard for him/her to imagine what it might be like. If some parts have merged successfully, it can be helpful for parts that are scared of merging to talk with them. This can be done directly in the client's inner world, or with the therapist as a mediator. Some parts might need to understand that it is not a painful process and that they will be okay in the end. This should never be done to coerce parts to merge, but rather to help alleviate their fears so they can make a good choice for themselves.

Integration is more of a journey than a specific goal, and it does not have to mean total fusion. During the course of therapy, I found that the "walls" between my different parts grew thinner. At first, my parts became aware of each other's presence. Then it got easier to communicate with each other and to work together to build a community. From there it became easier to communicate with a wide variety of parts inside. More parts were able to participate in my daily life and to feel that they mattered. It also became easier to find and rescue parts that were still in unpleasant situations inside.

Properly supported, integration can be a natural part of the healing process and a catalyst for personal and spiritual growth. What was most useful for me throughout my therapy was developing a strong sense of self, and self love. Through this, I have discovered a deep sense of spirituality, a positive sense of being looked after by a higher power even as I find my own power. With this in place, my parts become less afraid and I feel happier in life.

I believe my fear of merging is in part due to never being allowed to develop a separate sense of self while growing up. To survive, I had to adapt myself to whoever people wanted me to be, and as I developed my sense of self in therapy, I became scared of losing it or having it ripped away. This fear also came from abusers forcing me to switch (change parts out in the body) at their whim, and not knowing if I would ever be able to bring any given part back or for how long. As my sense of self became more secure, I became less scared of losing it. Integration is not about losing who you are, it is about becoming who you were meant to be. This does not mean that I want to fully integrate all my parts, or that none of my parts are afraid. Rather, it means I have a stronger foundation to draw upon when integration does happen.

My personal choice has been to integrate, but not completely. My system is now cohesive enough that I can experience a high degree of personal safety and I have come to view my inner world as my family. Some day I may become "one" person, but that is not my goal. I am happy in my life and enjoy the company of my inner parts. I have come to love and cherish them in a way they did not experience in the outer world, and would miss their distinct personalities and spirit should they fully become part of me. They have taught me how to increasingly love myself as I come to love each of them.

And the parts that have integrated have taught me how to trust, to know it can be safe to connect deeply with others, and that as I connect within, I am also connecting with the divine.

* * *

Callow also wants to warn therapists not to make a big deal about integration with clients for whom it would not otherwise be an issue. If the client's alters are not scared about it, just allow it to occur naturally.

Here, in Part 2 of Callow's discussion, she offers many helpful and creative suggestions for creating inner cooperation, nurturing, and happiness, for those whose systems will continue as separate parts. This is not a process that one waits until the end of therapy to do; it is also the inner work that is part of ongoing healing from the beginning. It begins as soon as possible, and continues to grow over the course of recovery.

Part 2: Building inner community: living happily without integration: Jen Callow

When I first discovered I was multiple, I had well over 700 inner parts and very little communication between them. Most of my parts did not know the others existed. They were still very afraid and alone. After years of healing, I now have a loving community inside. We support each other and have inner cities and towns where we live and play together. Now, when we find new parts, we can help them leave their program lines and become a larger part of our inner world (my abusers set up my inner system as a spider web of interconnected lines holding programs and parts). Throughout this process, we do our best to make sure everyone has a voice and is heard. We meet competing needs, and organize, plan, and develop a growing inner world that in turn helps us to increase a sense of belonging and connectedness, supporting and caring for each other.

When we finally started therapy with a therapist who understood dissociation, many of us were isolated and living in terror. We were shut away in our inner world—in boxes, cold basement rooms, and in any other number of locations depending upon our memories. We were locked in our programs, often starving or in pain. Our inner system had torture and abuse going on similar to what our abusers had inflicted upon us. We did not trust each other, and only a very few of us knew and trusted our therapist. We were afraid that we, someone we cared about, or the world would be destroyed if we started working with our inner system.

Over time, we came to trust our therapist and then slowly learned to trust each other. After we learned how to be co-conscious and to create inner TV screens so parts could safely view the outer world, we created an inner movie of our life that we could show newly discovered parts, to bring them up to date and show them that we were safe now. (This movie's content was huge and growing, but it only took a few minutes for parts to see and absorb it, and now we can share it in seconds.) Eventually, we got so we could talk to each other clearly in our minds and did not need the therapist as much for communication.

Our inner world's physical environment evolved, as well. At the end of each session, our therapist would make sure any new parts had a comfortable place to live with their immediate needs met. We built a welcoming mansion filled with many bedrooms, a large common area, full bathrooms with large tubs for bubble baths, a large kitchen and eating area with long benches and tables, and several playrooms. Each bedroom could be decorated and furnished however its resident(s) wanted, and had doors that could lock, and a window, if one was wanted. Stuffed animals were an important comfort item, as were pets. We made sure that none of the pets would harm any of the other pets (e.g., cats would leave hamsters and fish alone) and that they were friendly. When we later discovered infant parts, we added comfortable nurseries with caregivers, and created items such as slings to carry the babies in, bottles, rattles, and changing stations. Now, there was a more harmonious feeling inside.

Eventually, we developed many more buildings. We now had a healing area full of herbals, liniments, and soothing sights and sounds: beautiful gardens and grounds; an ocean and beaches; forests; and opportunities for expression and recreation. We created spaces for soccer games, a dance hall, music and art rooms, safe rooms for yelling in and letting out anger, even a skateboard park. Every addition encouraged us to work together, to interact more, and to have more relaxation and fun. As we played soccer, ate, and lived together, we began to feel more and more like the family we had missed out on. This was every bit as important in our healing as the actual memory work.

Some of our parts needed a lot of time on their own, so it was important to create and give them some quiet space. Some parts preferred to live in tree houses, or in cottages in the woods. Sometimes our inner towns did not work at all for certain parts. Rather than force these parts to assimilate, we created other inner worlds for them. There was a group of teenagers that loved the Dragonriders of Pern series when they were growing up. We created a version of Pern with them, where they could live together with their dragons and fly through the skies each day. Several children were very attached to an animated adventure show they had watched when they were out in the body, and created a world like this for themselves to live in, complete with all the good guys. The bad guys were created as a vague danger the children were in complete control of; the bad guys would take whatever form and strength the children wanted and the children, who were the heroes, always won. Parts could travel between worlds whenever they wanted, so no one was truly alone and we could still access these worlds and parts when processing memories.

Running the programs and keeping constant vigilance over our system had been the only way for many of our parts to feel powerful and to avoid feeling physical or emotional pain. After we had processed a memory, our therapist made sure to help each part find a new job and purpose. This included the children, if they wanted a smaller job. For example, the soldiers who had terrorized our system were put in charge of security, record keeping, and maintaining the soccer field.

Some responsibilities in our inner world are large and time consuming, such as cooking, cleaning, and looking after the infants. Another task we struggled to fill consistently was taking the children on field trips to places inside, such as a fun version of school where we could teach them about the outer world. It was hard for the few parts doing this to come up with enough ideas. At the suggestion of a friend who was multiple, we set up a rotation of chores and responsibilities. Now, older parts that take on a larger role can take regular vacations and we have parts who have been taught how to fill in. Over the years, we have also created inner people (different from the parts already in our system) to help with various tasks, such as a healer, gardener, cook, and caregivers for the infants. We find it works best to still have our parts help with chores, as it builds a sense of pride in our community and shared responsibility, but this way the risk of parts burning out from overwork is reduced.

Many of our parts lived in suffering and deprivation. One aspect of their healing is recognizing that they matter and that their needs can be easily filled, providing no one will be harmed in the process. If a part wants a specific toy or needs an extra blanket, those items can appear for them right away. However, sometimes more work is required to ensure a need is met. Although we can have food items available immediately, for reasons unknown to us we still need to cook and prepare these items for a proper meal, so outside of meal times we try to have pre-made snacks readily available. In addition to inner people to help with chores, we have added many other helpers to our inner world, from a therapist for the children to caregivers who give us back rubs before bed. The caregivers also help the younger parts with baths, getting changed, and getting tucked into bed. Many of our parts enjoy tending large flower and vegetable gardens, and we created several gardeners who help with bigger jobs. Female vocalists (we do not trust men easily) sing lullabies to parts who enjoy this, and can soothe crying infants.

After much debate, we also recently added loving, sexual partners for those parts who needed this inside. Many of these parts were children, but their sex needs were huge as a direct result of the abuse. In the end, we felt it was better to create people who could provide loving sexual contact, respecting the children's wishes and needs, rather than have these parts feel ashamed and suffer from their overwhelming urges. It has worked well for us, as several months later, many of these children are now asking more often for non-sexual, loving touch, with these inner people taking on more of a nurturing friend or caregiver role.

In addition to caring for each other inside, we take care of our inner environment. At one time, we were concerned that all the emotions we were releasing would have a negative effect on our inner world. We are very sensitive to energy and were taught that our feelings were toxic to others when we were growing up. So, we created some areas that transformed the energy from our feelings into the good feeling energy of our waterfalls, trees, and other natural spaces. In keeping with our own beliefs, we think of this transformative power as "earth energy", the earth changing the energy and helping good things to grow. This helps us in the outer world, too, as nature has always been grounding and nurturing for us. We envision our outer environment and the earth transforming our feelings, so it now feels safer for us to express emotions. In the interest of environmental sustainability, we also have inner areas where we bury our garbage, recycling it so the earth can transform it into electricity, food for plants, and other new kinds of energy for our inner world.

Our outer and inner worlds are deeply interconnected. In caring for each other and our inner world, we learn how to take care of ourselves in the outer world, and also how to care for the earth and other people. As we experience caring from others in the outer world, we learn that we matter and discover how we like to be treated, which we can then mirror inside.

Without the care and attention spent both on our parts and our inner world, we would never have made it this far. Even today, when things feel chaotic in our outer world, as is the case for us now during some major life transitions, we can look inside and help calm ourselves through creating more stability in our inner world and attending to parts' fears and needs. Lately, we have been holding regular inside meetings for any parts who want to attend. In our inner world, we sit out in nature; we sing, talk, play music, and release feelings and outdated beliefs (e.g., often we will write these on pieces of paper and throw them into a small bonfire, over which we later roast marshmallows, which makes it feel less like a ritual and more like fun). The buildings, recreational areas, nature, and living spaces play a huge part in our sense of inner peace and security.

How we built our inner world is specific to our preferences and to the way our inner system was initially set up during the abuse. Every survivor's system is unique and offers many ways to build a community or create objects inside. It is important to work with what is already in the inner system, as opposed to fighting it and trying to shut it all down. Although areas can be transformed, in our experience the building blocks of the inner world remain the same. Through creativity and patience, it is possible to have cooperation and harmony between any number of parts, and a thriving inner community. With an increasing sense of inner peace and community, it is not only possible for survivors to create happier lives for themselves in the outer world, it is possible for them to truly heal.

* * *

Callow's choice, to integrate some parts but allow others to remain separate, is a valid choice. Even if that is what the survivor plans to do, it is not always what happens. When one of my clients was in the last stages of her therapy, she wanted to keep a particular little alter separate, for two reasons—because he was helpful to her as a separate inner part, having been the main helper in memory processing, and because he was somewhat autistic as a result of some of the abuse he experienced. She was concerned that the autistic features, such as "stimming",[1] might become characteristic of her. However, one day, her last significant traumatic memory suddenly came up and forced itself to be processed. And the child alter popped out and said, "If we process this memory I will integrate"—and he did. And sure enough, the integrated person acquired some of his autistic characteristics, though in a diluted fashion. It appears that something that had been segregated in her brain was no longer segregated.

In contrast to Jen, Stella Katz chose to integrate fully. As she worked through the final memories, she described herself as having "a case of galloping integration," as the process gathered steam and put together what had been fragmented all her life. Here is Stella's story of her own healing. She wrote it for survivors, so feel free to share it with any clients who are ready to receive it. In fact, any of the survivors' healing stories in this book may be shared with your survivor clients.

Reclaiming me: Stella Katz

I am writing this for one reason only, and that is to prove to others with DID that there really is LIFE beyond the dark tunnel.

I spent the better part of forty years fragmented. I had one stable alter personality who lived everyday life, went to school, took dance and skating lessons, dated, married, and had children. That person knew nothing of what was going on in the rest of my life. All I knew was that from a very early age I would go to bed at night and wake up with dirty feet, or completely clothed with unusual makeup or markings, and bruises. What I found odd, though, was that I only did the sleepwalking at my Grandmother's house, and never at home until after my Grandmother died. As a young child I assumed it was because I missed my own bed, but I had no explanation for it happening later on. I was told that the horrible things I remembered in the morning were just bad dreams and to forget about them and not to tell anyone because they would think I was insane and lock me up in the home for bad crazy people.

At the age of thirty-five, when all came to light, I was horrified. I was told to go to a group for people like me, only to find out that most of the people never really got better, or ever integrated, and were in therapy for most of their lives. Being stubborn and pigheaded, I was not going to hear of that. I wanted to get well. I wanted to know every detail of my secret life, and moreover I wanted the loud opinionated taunting voices in my head to shut up.

So began the journey that helped me reclaim "myself".

I can still remember the feeling of horrific physical pain of the memory that first brought it all to light. Though it was only a memory, the pain was so intense I was sure my foot was broken. I could barely walk on it for days after. I still remember the smell of wax from the burning candles and leftover incense that permeated the room where the memory all took place. Even now it was like yesterday. It was all so horrid but it answered a burning question I had had since I was five years old about how I broke the heel of my foot while I was supposedly sleeping.

The more I learnt, the more I wanted to learn. I wanted forty years of unanswered questions answered. But the more I learnt the worse I felt about myself, because the one thing I learnt was that I was still going somewhere where these things happened. I needed to find the people inside who knew the most and I knew that once or twice a week in a therapist's office, no matter how good she was, just was not going to cut it. I needed to get out of the group not years from now, but right now, and unless I learnt more about my internals, I would never be free of the group. So I began my version of homework.

On the days of my sessions, after my children were in bed and my husband safely tucked in front of the television for the night, I would go down to the rec room where I could be alone and go over the therapy session of that day. I would try to figure out what seemed to be missing from what I had learnt or worked on during the session. It meant that I had to go back into myself and try to talk to those who had been out that day in the therapist's office. My biggest fear was that I would get in and get stuck. So I bought myself a silk rope, and a timer. I would set the timer for thirty minutes, tie the rope to the chair and hang on so tight you would have thought I was dangling from a ten-storey building. Somehow, the rope gave me safety, as if it was a lifeline to pull me back from falling over the edge. I would close my eyes and visualize a dark tunnel and, step by step, I would walk through into my inner world, still hanging on to my rope, calling out to the name of the last insider I remembered from the session.

As I got to know each member of the Clan, as they called themselves, I began to see them as real people. Some were easy to talk to, while others were so dark and scary it was all I could do to look at them. There were adults on the light side and the dark side, and children, oh so many children. Some rather happy, some so terrified they would only peek out of little holes in the fabric of our mind. I saw houses and places that were familiar, and places I was sure I had never seen before, yet felt strangely familiar. At times I was so terrified I just wanted to run. I felt so foolish because I knew I should not be scared of these people—after all, they were part of me. I equated it to being afraid of my own arm. It seems so silly now, but then it was terrifying.

After a few years of twice weekly therapy sessions and twice weekly homework, I finally realized that, although I liked my therapist a great deal, I did not want to grow old with this woman. So I stepped up the work I was doing on my own. Along the way something happened, and the therapist and I parted ways. I went on to another, who was sweet but useless, and then to another, who was both unpleasant and incompetent. All that forced me to work harder on my own. So I left therapy altogether, for a while.

Night after night I worked getting to know my system, one alter at a time or sometimes in little groups. It was amazing and intricate and I did not think I would ever get to know everyone in it. Just when I thought I was through most of it, a little floater child would introduce me to a whole new level. A floater child does not actually belong to the structured system created by the abusive group, but is "born" by accident. As Fiona the floater did not belong to the structure, she was free to travel throughout the system and was no threat to anyone in it

After about six more months I was taken on by another wonderful therapist. I got to know so many more in my system with her help, but her office was too far away. The beauty of living in your head is that you can do things you cannot do in the real world such as creating a holodeck like the one on Star Trek. When I became afraid of a memory or a dark Clan member I was dealing with, I would simply "freeze program" and go around and look at the entire situation from every angle. I discovered that so much of what had been done to me was nothing more than smoke and mirrors. I was able to see the Devil who had abused me from all angles. I saw that he was not eight feet tall, he was just a grown man while I was a small child. He did not have scales and claws and a tail, he wore a stretch suit with a zipper up the back, and you could see the line of his boxer shorts under his costume. It made me laugh. The fear I had was now gone. The more comfortable I got with processing my memories, the more I increased the time on the timer from thirty minutes to forty-five, sixty, and eventually two full hours.

I became friends with my Clan, with the help of Fiona, the little floater child, who knew every single member of the clan. I was able to get through to members who would have been blocked otherwise. Fiona trusted me, and because she trusted me, the others came to trust me as well.

I was often in awe of the structure of the system. I learnt so much about the missing years and answered so many of the burning questions of my life. I discovered the reason my real-life children spoke languages I did not. The Clan had an internal nanny who cared for the internal children. She had the ability to come out and take care of my real-world children when I slipped inside. She spoke Gaelic to them and sang songs with them, and they learnt and had a great deal of fun. The only thing that bothered me was that she was a better mother than I was. In time, I found out why I hated highly textured food, and especially raisins. I will not tell you why, but I can tell you it was disgusting. I came to love the little internal children, and animals, and even my little demons, who were all under the age of five. I came to understand that my black heart was not black as in evil, but black as in a mix of all the wonderful colors of the world.

I knew that every member of the system had to be in agreement about integrating. They had to be able to decide for themselves and choose to join the healing plan because they had never had any choice about what had happened to them. I knew this could only be done by helping the little ones grow up, or at least to understand what we were hoping would take place. So, after the real-world kids had gone to school, I would set the timer, bring out the toys and cookies without raisins, and let the children out to play and watch television and read books. Once they were allowed out into the world they grew quickly, not like real children do, but years in a matter of weeks. One by one they grew. One by one they joined.

All through this healing process, I still had one big problem, which was that I still belonged to the group. I was still a high priestess; I was still part of the inner circle. I was still a trainer. I knew I had to get out of it but I knew they were not going to let me just walk away because I knew too much.

For the next couple of years I was stalked and harassed daily. My children were threatened. I had dead animals put in my car, snakes in my mailbox, and dead kittens nailed to my door. I was driven off the road at night and raped. I did not think it would ever end. I got tough and looked at the rapes as just lousy sex. Once I was sent a photograph of a person dead and mutilated with a threat saying that would be me. I called the police and an officer came eight hours later. I gave him my statement and the picture. I took his business card, only to find out when I called to talk to him it was fake.

The more I worked on my system the less use I was to the group. Eventually they got tired of stalking me, and let me go. It took a few more years, but I was free, or at least felt I was relatively safe.

Once I was free, it did not take long before I was pushing through the system, had everyone catalogued, knew where, when, and how each had come into separate being. With that all done, I was able to get everyone in the system to set a date and time that we would join as one. Some were afraid they would die. Others were afraid that the body would not remember them, others were afraid it would hurt, but we worked through the fears. We planned the day it would all happen, and so, on a beautiful day while the children were in school, I gathered the members of the Clan, had everyone line up in order of their birth, hold hands, and form a circle. One by one, in a very ceremonial manner, the newest member stepped into one who came before and so on down the line until we reached the child whose body had been born. It felt wonderful and frightening and strange and a little like a house of cards ready to collapse at any second. It felt like the house's foundation had been built on jelly, but it felt right.

I was one with myself. I was not who I thought I would be. There were a few times when I was sure we would fall apart, but I hung on. No one died, no one was forgotten, and I had to fight to get rid of the Celtic accent I had acquired unexpectedly. In the first few months, when I recalled something I saw it through the eyes of the person who had experienced it. As time went on, all the memories became mine. And it was an amazing feeling, though a little lonely at times to have only one voice in my head. The thought I was thinking was my thought and mine alone, and to know that I would no longer hurt little children or animals or wake up with muddy feet was amazing.

I was not prepared for what came afterwards. I was stupidly under the impression that all would be well once there was only one of me. I could not have been more wrong.

What I did not expect was the unbearable remorse for what I had done. The faces of every child I had hurt, their cries and their anguish, kept flooding through. It was a dam that broke in my moral conscience.

I no longer had a therapist because "I was well and integrated". I really could have used someone at that point, even if it was just to cry on her shoulder but I had no one. I had to hang on and let myself feel the pain. It went on for two years. There were rivers of tears, torment and guilt. I had never been so depressed. I had known the pain while fragmented into mini me's, but now I understood that all the pain I had felt in those years of abuse had been dulled by an imaginary coating of Novocaine brought on by the fragmentation; now it was just the raw pain of remorse and I had only one of me to feel it.

I also went through a spiritual crisis. I did not know what I believed. I had the guilt teaching of the Catholic Church running through my head, telling me I was going to hell. I had the Satanic beliefs that God is weak and worthless. I had my mother's Pagan beliefs that Dark and Light are equal and balance life. I had Jewish beliefs of the group I had belonged to, and I did not really feel any of it was worth my time. I think this was the hardest part to try to work out in my mind.

It all came to a head at a stop light one sunny afternoon when a song triggered a memory that forced me to ask the question "What do I believe?" Between stop lights and stop signs I went through the list. The questions were everything from my belief in a god to my personal beliefs about life in general. I gave myself ten seconds to answer each question. I felt that what I answered in ten seconds was what I truly believed without the process we all have of overthinking, and justifying what we say. By the time I got home I felt as light as a feather. The weight of the world had been lifted off my shoulders. I could not stop grinning. I finally knew who I was, and what I truly believed in. I found my life at the end of that long tunnel. I was integrated on all levels. It had been a long, long road.

It is not my dream life, but it is mine. I now have terminal cancer, but I worked through what I believe about death, and I am okay with it. I do not know how long I have left, but I see every day that my name is not in the obituary column as a great day, and more so as a gift. I have made my peace with myself.

For all of you who are still going through the torment of memory and the chaos of an untamed system, know that there is Life at the end of your tunnel. Know that you are not alone because we are all connected in the universe. Know that every member of your internal self is part of the whole and worthy of love and of being heard. And know that it is okay to remain divided if you can get your system to cooperate. No one member is more important than another in the long haul. The tunnel to yourself is long, painful, and more often than not extremely frustrating, but it does have an end. If you all work together even through the chaos and pain there can be peace.

* * *

You may notice that Stella integrated all her parts through a ceremony, and had considerable difficulty afterwards. My guess is that this was because the alters' emotions, particularly guilt and shame, had not been fully worked through when she processed the memories. This is an alternative way of integrating to the gradual process I recommend. Richard Baer's book, *Switching Time* (2007), tells the story of a therapy in which the alters were deliberately integrated with the ANP, after which the ANP acquired their memories and gradually went through their body sensations and emotions until they were resolved. Apparently, this can be one way to bring the alters together, but it risks the ANP being overwhelmed by the traumatic feelings, as Stella was for some time.

Generally, it is helpful for the alters who are just memory fragments or partial "people" to join with stronger ones, and it is easier for a personality system to work together with a smaller number of alters. But whether or not to fully integrate is up to the person. Stella chose full integration. Trish Fotheringham, as reported in her DVD (2008), did not choose either way. All of her alters remained for a long time as separate parts inside her, but then one day, when she was experiencing anguish and despair about her life, all the parts came together and integrated into a single identity.

Stella does warn us that for clients who are still being accessed by perpetrator groups, it is unsafe to continue to have child alters, because the groups can re-split them to create new alters, whereas they are unable to do this to a fully integrated person.

I mentioned in Chapter Fourteen that Jennifer had an alter come temporarily "unstuck" years after her successful integration. Trish Fotheringham tells me that she had the same experience after her mother died. Two alters reappeared, shared previously unknown memories involving her mother, then reintegrated. Trish recommends that survivors who integrate keep at least part of their inner world intact, so that newly emerged alters have somewhere to "live" on the inside. I have not seen her suggestion addressed in the literature, probably because such post-integration "re-emergent" experiences are not generally acknowledged there. This might be, at least in part, because full integration is not a common outcome, especially with polyfragmented survivors of ritual abuse and mind control.

There is no "right" way for all multiples. Keep in mind the goal of therapy with this population. It is not to make multiples into singletons, but to help those with many parts to become more functional and free of disabling symptoms. For mind control survivors, the goal is to remove all the external controls over their minds so that they can be full human beings—free, in charge of their own lives, choosing their own life goals.

And survivors will choose, at every step. Each system will naturally blend to a smaller or greater degree as memory work goes along, and, at the end, find its own resolution. As someone once said, survivors might integrate, or become a corporation, or become a collective. But what happens will happen naturally, and that is as it should be. You can follow any therapeutic trend you want, but, in the end, the choice is your client's.

I use two different images in explaining integration to my clients. The first is two rivers joining. All the water that was in each river is contained in the new, larger river, which contains both of them. The only thing that is gone is the strip of land between them, which represents the secrets that they did not previously share. The new river will probably carry the name of one of the original smaller rivers, but it will contain all the water—all the memories and experiences—of the other small river too.

The other image I use is that of a stained glass lamp. Many colored pieces come together to make a beautiful lamp through which the light can shine, displaying all the colors and making a picture that could not be seen as long as the pieces were separated. This image can be used for cooperative co-consciousness as well as for integration.

What happens then? After integration, or cooperative co-consciousness, is achieved, these survivor clients will need to decide what they want to do with their lives. That, alone, is a big deal for people who have not only never considered such major questions, but whose right and ability to think for themselves and make choices has been derailed. So much of your work with mind control survivors has been devoted to the task of allowing them to take control of their own lives rather than having them controlled by others. As much as therapists should always be careful to not impose their own agendas on their clients, you have seen how much more important it is with these people. Sometimes, when we are very dedicated to healing survivors, it is a temptation to get our healed clients enrolled in that same cause. I must remind you that in your enthusiasm, you will need to be sensitive to any message you might give that leaves your client feeling pressured, or expected, to join the cause.

Some *will* choose to become outspoken survivor advocates. For them, recovery might resemble what it means to alcohol and drug addicts, whose sobriety requires that they "pass it on;" or they might find the meaning they need to attach to their suffering, and the suffering they were forced to cause, by bearing witness to the truth in a public way. Some will choose to "go public" through telling their stories to the world, by helping others through such forums as web discussions, by "fighting back" through lawsuits against their abusers, or by making their survivor status publicly known in other ways. If they are not fully integrated, however, there are considerable dangers in this. Programming can still be triggered through words, nonverbal signals, or what appear to be innocent questions. One of my clients who was involved in a court case recently had programs reactivated when a lawyer (who had access to my clinical notes) asked him about certain alter personalities. Another had programs triggered through words spoken to her by a participant in an online forum she was helping to lead. As I mentioned earlier, I lost a client when a man found her in an online discussion group and figured out her personality system. I have also, on two different occasions, seen well-known public speakers on the topic of ritual abuse use deliberate triggers as part of their talks.

Never forget that these abuser groups have a strong interest in keeping their secrets, and survivors who expose their status publicly, even by attending lectures on the subject, need to be alert for triggering events.

Once again, there is no right or wrong way. So, yes, of course, it is the survivor's choice, but it is a choice that needs to be considered carefully. I recommend that survivors be very cautious about "going public," and only do it if they truly feel it is their calling.

Many, perhaps most, clients may decide of their own free will to leave all those awful experiences in the past and get on with lives that have nothing to do with ritual abuse or mind control. The real issue is that the *choice*, the *decision*, must be entirely the survivor's.

In relation to this point, LisaBri sends the following message.

To all survivors

If I had the chance to say anything to all survivors I would repeat what my therapist has said to me all along, but that I was only able to hear for the first time today. She said I can have a life outside of ritual abuse. That my whole life experience now does not have to be ritual abuse. I can live life on my terms. And that I don't have to spread my healing to the world. I always thought that was expected of me. I thought I had to do more than survive and heal, I had to go public and follow my fellow survivors who have taken their healing and speaking out to the next level. In the cult it was all or nothing, and if it was nothing you were dead. So I have spent my life trying to do it all and failing. It feels selfish that I heal and not share it with the world.

What I can do is to keep writing articles for my website, which is a comfort zone for me and I hope to my readers. That feels right to me.

I want to thank my therapist for giving me permission to be just that, me: an individual with DID who was subjected to ritual abuse. But that is just a small part of who we are.

Therapists, give your clients permission to be all they want and ask for nothing more. That will be your gift to them.

Note

1. Stimming is a repetitive body movement engaged in by autistic children, hypothesized to stimulate one or more senses—such as hand flapping or spinning a coin.

CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

Ritual abuse and mind control treatment: greater than the sum of its parts

It is my hope that you have learnt from this book that successfully treating survivors of ritual abuse and mind control is possible. I hope that, if you are not already doing it, you will take the challenge and embark on this great adventure, and that if you are, you will feel more secure in your work and be able to hone your skills. There are too few of us doing it, and fewer doing it correctly. Survivors need—deserve—to be able to find competent therapists no matter where they are located.

The following summarizes the guidelines that have been the basis of this book. Some of them might seem deceptively simple; I assure you, they are not. But they do provide a straightforward, clear template that should inform your work:

First of all, recognize that it is who you are, not what you know, that makes you effective as a therapist. It is your ability to "sit with a shattered soul." This is true even if you are a novice at working with survivors of ritual abuse and mind control. I recently consulted to a very experienced therapist who was working with her first ritual abuse survivor. In her zeal to share with the client what she had learnt from me, she forgot to "tune in" to what the client was telling her in the next session, and there was a breach in the therapeutic relationship. She was alert to this, recognized it, and mended it, but it was a good reminder to both of us. Never forget who you are and never move away from the basic empathy, warmth, and genuineness that make a good therapist.

Your first step is to routinely screen your incoming clients for signs of childhood trauma, and of dissociative disorders, and, if there are such signs, to do a more thorough assessment. Remember that a large percentage of mind control survivors have a "shell" ANP, so the absence of "time loss" does not mean they do not have a complex dissociative disorder of the kind associated with ritual abuse and mind control.

Then, if there are indications of a dissociative disorder, the need for an accurate differential diagnosis suggests that you look for signs of ritual abuse and/or other forms of mind control.

We do not yet have data on what percentage of those who suffer from dissociative disorders have experienced RA or MC, and estimates I have heard range from almost none to 100%. So, you should not assume that your client either has or has not experienced these kinds of abuses.

If your client has strong indicators of a dissociative disorder, it will help if you provide some education about dissociative disorders and what they mean. It is often a shock to a person to obtain this diagnosis, but it can also be reassuring, as it gives an understandable explanation for their mysterious symptoms.

Some indicators of a ritual abuse or mind control history are listed in the chapter on "Initial stages of therapy", and you need to be familiar with these indicators. If you do see such signs, however, you should obviously not inform your client that s/he is a survivor. Just keep your eyes and ears open, and wait for your client to disclose at his or her own pace. The important thing here is that if such disclosures happen, you respond with both empathy and confidence, letting the client know that you can handle such matters. Know your limits. Clients only tell us what they think we can handle. Wait for the evidence to emerge, and in the meantime do not get caught up in the "false memory" controversy, but stay with the client's experience.

Become familiar with the unique features of a personality system which has been formed by organized or deliberate mind control, such as internal structures, a complex inner world, a filing system for memories, a hierarchy of alters, a security system with "booby traps" which goes into effect after disclosures, and learnt triggers for trained behaviors. Be aware of the types of jobs held by alters, such as "garbage kids," gatekeepers, demons, animals, recorders, reporters, recyclers, spinners, and introjects of the primary perpetrators. These might all seem very strange, but you will become familiar with them once you have experience working with this population.

Your focus in the initial stages should be on getting to know the alter personalities and respecting them and their roles in the personality system. As each alter emerges, orientate them to the present, and develop trust with them. People severely abused in childhood do not trust easily, and this is especially the case if they have been trained by an organized perpetrator group not to trust "outsiders." Take as much time as necessary to prove you are trustworthy. There is no substitute for time and consistency. Make sure to make your boundaries clear in order to preserve the safety of the therapeutic relationship for both parties. Prepare for a long haul.

It is important to learn about being multiple, and what works for their healing, from your client. To work with the alters, rather than trying to get the ANP to control the rest of the personality system. To be careful not to have favorite alters or reject those who seem to be "bad." And to treat all parts of the person with kindness and compassion, including the frightening and negative voices. These people are indeed survivors of the unimaginable, and deserve a compassionate witness who will not shy away from any part of them or of their experiences.

Do not assist one side of the personality system to battle with the other side. When protector alters (often disguised as persecutors) emerge, get to know them. They emerge when they are ready to engage in therapy. Work with them before you attempt to work with the hurt child parts they are protecting. Reframe their role as protectors, and offer to help them protect in ways that are more effective for the present day.

If there are strong indicators of a ritual abuse or mind control history, do not assume that your client is presently physically safe. Watch for signs of ongoing abuse. Do not say "That was then and this is now" until you know the abuse is over. Recognize the possibility of continuing contact with abusers, and continuing abuse. Recognize also the possibility of the client becoming unsafe as a result of premature disclosures. Identify reporter alters and find a way to disable reporting to the abusers, if possible.

With any person with a dissociative disorder, but especially with ritual abuse and mind control survivors, do not press for disclosure of abuse memories early in therapy. Recognize that in mind control survivors this might precipitate reporting to abusers. Recognize also that disclosures could precipitate self-harm, suicide attempts, and flashbacks caused by alters doing their jobs.

If your client does have strong indicators of a history of ritual abuse or mind control, recognize that the client's flooding of feelings, flashbacks, self-harm, or suicide attempts might be the result of alters doing their jobs when disclosures have been made. Slow down disclosures in this event, and focus on creating safety and confidentiality within the personality system and the therapeutic relationship.

Do not buy into a client's belief that perpetrators know everything, are everywhere and all-powerful, and that the client and/or the therapist will be killed for talking. If they have disclosed organized abuse, let them know that organized abusers deceive their victims. As you uncover the traumatic memories behind the mind control, take the time to help the client's alters recognize the lies and tricks involved. Do not buy into any of the beliefs imparted by the abusers, such as that certain alters are not human.

Do not pursue the memories represented by flashbacks. Make it clear to the client that the purpose of therapy is to help the person heal and have a worthwhile life in the present, rather than to unearth traumatic memories. (Though working through the memories is essential for full healing.) Learn how to strategically select memories to work with, and develop an effective method that is not too traumatizing for your client. Then, when the client is ready, work systematically on resolving the trauma.

When you work with the memories, remember to include all alters involved in a particular traumatic memory, especially if it is a training memory, and to follow it "from safety to safety," including all elements of the memory (sound, sight, taste, and smell, bodily sensations and emotions), especially the part held by recycler alters. Do not forget the infant memories which caused the initial splits.

Whether or not to fully integrate or to remain multiple with a cooperative personality system is a choice your client should make for him or herself. Healing will be needed in many areas of life—emotions, sexuality, spirituality, and interpersonal relationships. Pay attention to the sexual programming and make sure it is fully resolved, as many survivors have serious difficulties in this area, including pedophilic desires. Even when the memories are worked through, there will be more healing and growth to pursue.

Since the client has had his or her freedom taken away through mind control, it is important to keep focused on restoring that freedom. Do not replace one ideology with another or become your client's new "handler". Assist your client in taking his or her own life back, including body, thoughts, emotions, and spirituality.

Study the chapters in this book thoroughly, so that you are familiar with what you might encounter. There are many other resources for this work, some of which are listed in Appendix One. Pursue opportunities for continued learning. Never stop. There will always be more to know, and our understanding of this relatively new issue is continuing to develop. As you keep learning, along with your clients, you will become more and more competent in working with these deeply traumatized people, and perhaps one day you will contribute to our knowledge of how to help them heal. I look forward to reading what you have to say.

APPENDIX 1

Resources

Books and articles on dissociative disorders

Adler, R. (1999). Crowded minds. *New Scientist Magazine*, December 18. Those who doubt the existence of DID (and others) should see the differences in the brain that this study subject with DID exhibited.

Alderman, R., & Marshall, K. (1998). *Amongst Ourselves: A Self-Help Guide to Living with Dissociative Identity Disorder*. Oakland, CA: New Harbinger. One of the more recent and helpful self-help books for dissociatives.

ATW (2005). *Got Parts? An Insider's Guide to Managing Life Successfully with Dissociative Identity Disorder.* Ann Arbor, MI: Loving Healing Press. Another useful self-help book for dissociative people.

Baer, R. K. (2007). *Switching Time: A Doctor's Harrowing Story of Treating a Woman with 17 Personalities.* New York: Crown Publications. An interesting approach to integration.

Chu, J. A. *Rebuilding Shattered Lives: The Responsible Treatment of Complex Post Traumatic and Dissociative Disorders*. New York, Wiley & Sons. Detailed and comprehensive approach to dissociative disorders, but does not deal with ritual abuse or mind control.

Cohen, B. M., Giller, E., & Lynn, W. (1991). *Multiple Personality Disorder from the Inside Out.* Baltimore, OH: Sidran Press. Personal stories and poems from people who suffer from dissociative disorders.

Dell, P. F., & O'Neil, J. A. (2009). *Dissociation and the Dissociative Disorders: DSM-V and Beyond.* New York: Taylor & Francis. The most up-to-date text on dissociation theory and research.

Goulding, R. A., & Schwartz, R.C. (1995). *The Mosaic Mind: Empowering the Tormented Selves of Child Abuse Survivors.* New York: Norton. Explains the Internal Family Systems approach; especially helpful for dealing with alters.

Haddock, D. B. (2001). *The Dissociative Identity Disorder Sourcebook.* New York: McGraw-Hill. A helpful book on DID for sufferers and their loved ones.

Howell, E. F. (2005). *The Dissociative Mind.* New York: Taylor & Francis. A psychoanalytic approach to DID emphasizing disturbance of attachment.

Hunter, M. E. (2004). *Understanding Dissociative Disorders—A Guide for Family Physicians and Health Care Professionals*. London: Crown House. For giving to your clients' family doctor.

Journal of Trauma & Dissociation. Philadelphia: Haworth Medical Press. The primary journal in this area, belonging to the ISSTD.

Kluft, R. P., & Fine, C. G. (Eds.) (1993). *Clinical Perspectives on Multiple Personality Disorder.* Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press. Older collection of professional articles on DID, including some excellent ones by Kluft.

Krakauer, S. Y. (2001). *Treating Dissociative Identity Disorder: The Power of the Collective Heart.* New York: Taylor & Francis. Presents a stage-oriented approach to DID and a specific way of working with the personality system.

Putnam, F. W. (1989). *Diagnosis and Treatment of Multiple Personality Disorder.* New York: Guilford Press. An old book, but a fine one.

Rutz, C. Ritual abuse—shadow government and mount pony (http://www.whale.to/b/ruzt4.html)

Sachs, A., & Galton, G. (Eds.) (2008). *Forensic Aspects of Dissociative Identity Disorder.* London: Karnac. Many of the individual chapters address ritual abuse.

Steinberg, M., & Schnall, M. (2003). *The Stranger in the Mirror: Dissociation—The Hidden Epidemic.* New York: HarperCollins. Particularly helpful for spouses and relatives of persons with dissociative disorders.

Van der Hart, O., Nijenhuis, E., & Steele, K. (2006). *The Haunted self: Structural Dissociation and the Treatment of Chronic Traumatization.* New York: W. W. Norton. Presents the theory of structural dissociation. Scholarly, comprehensive, and practical.

Websites on dissociative disorders

Training videos: www.cavalcadeproductions.com/dissociative-disorder.html. Accessed October 7, 2010.

International Society for the Study of Trauma and Dissociation: www.isst-d.org/. Accessed October 7, 2010.

"Many Voices" newsletter: (contact www.manyvoicespress.com/newsletter.html.) Accessed October 7, 2010. Newsletter for those who suffer from dissociative disorders.

Books on ritual abuse and mind control

Hawkins, T. R. (2009). *Dissociative Identity Disorder: Psychological Dynamics.* Grottoes, VA: Restoration in Christ Ministries. An evangelical Christian approach. Sound basic teaching about DID.

Hersha, C., & Hersha, L., with Griffis, D., & Schwartz, T. (2001). *Secret Weapons: Two Sisters' Terrifying Story of Sex, Spies and Sabotage.* Far Hills, NJ: New Horizon Press. Story of sisters Cheryl and Lynn Hersha's mind control abuse through experiments as children. Includes considerable documentation. However, co-author Schwartz makes some very odd and inaccurate and biased comments in the book (such as repeating over and over the suggestion that people are lying about RA/MC histories because they are "seeking attention"). Cheryl Hersha has asked readers to ignore his comments on pp. 323–324. I would add those on pp. 410–411.

Lockwood, C. (1993) *Other Altars: Roots and Realities of Cultic and Satanic Ritual Abuse and MPD.* Minneapolis, MN: Compcare. History and information about persons involved in such abuse.

Marks, J. (1991). *The Search for the "Manchurian Candidate": The C.I.A. and Mind Control; the Secret History of the Behavioral Sciences*. New York: W.W. Norton. Groundbreaking, comprehensive review of related CIA projects and experiments. Reprint of 1978 edition. One of the first and most important resources in the field. The entire book is online at ww.druglibrary.org/schaffer/lsd/marks.htm. Accessed October 7, 2010.

Noblitt, J. R., & Perskin, P. S. (1995). *Cult and Ritual Abuse: Its History, Anthropology, and Recent Discovery in Contemporary America.* Westport, CT: Praeger. Carefully researched history.

Noblitt, R., & Noblitt, P. P. (Eds.) (2008). *Ritual Abuse in the Twenty-First Century: Psychological, Forensic, Social, and Political Considerations.* Bandon, OR: Robert D. Reed Publishers. Up-to-date collection of articles covering many topics.

Oksana, C. (2001). *Safe Passage to Healing—a Guide for Survivors of Ritual Abuse.* London: Backinprint.com. Probably the best self-help book specifically for ritual abuse survivors.

Rose, E. P. (1996). *Reaching for the Light: A Guide for Ritual Abuse Survivors and their Therapists.* Cleveland, OH: Pilgrim Press. A nice, gentle little book with lots of helpful information for both survivors and therapists.

Ross, C. (2000). *Bluebird: Deliberate Creation of Multiple Personality by Psychiatrists.* Richardson, TX: Manitou Communications. Takes a conservative approach in documenting medical mind control abuses.

Rutz, C. (2001). *A Nation Betrayed: The Chilling True Story of Secret Cold War Experiments Performed on our Children and Other Innocent People.* Grass Lake, MI: Fidelity. Tells Rutz's story and documents CIA abuses.

Sakheim, D. K., & Devine, S. E. (1992). *Out of Darkness: Exploring Satanism and Ritual Abuse.* Don Mills, Ontario: Lexington Books. Early collection of professional articles covering many topics.

Sinason, V. (Ed.) 1994). *Treating Survivors of Satanist Abuse.* London: Routledge. Many early articles on various aspects of ritual abuse.

Smith, M. (1993). *Ritual Abuse: What It Is, Why It Happens, and How To Help.* New York: HarperCollins. An older book but quite thorough, helping therapists understand ritual abuse.

Weinstein, H. M. (1990). *Psychiatry and the CIA: Victims of Mind Control.* Washington, DC. American Psychiatric Press. Researched, revealing, from the perspective of a murdered victim's son, a psychiatrist; also, *Father, Son, and CIA* (1988). Toronto: James Lorimer; The son's autobiography, including the father's story.

Yonke, D. (2006) *Sin, Shame, And Secrets: The Murder of a Nun, the Conviction of a Priest, and Cover-up in the Catholic Church.* New York: Continuum International Publishing Group. Award-winning Journalist David Yonke was Religion Editor for the Toledo Blade during Father Gerald Robinson's murder trial, which included ritual abuse aspects.

Websites on ritual abuse and mind control

(Up to date, September 2010. These are subject to change. If you cannot find the desired article at the address listed, try searching for it as it may be available elsewhere.)

Gillotte, Sylvia Lynn, Forensic considerations in ritual trauma cases. Comprehensive, well-linked, resource-laden overview of ritual abuse for those interested in the legal perspective. http://www.suite101.com/article.cfm/ritual_abuse/63761. Accessed October 7, 2010.

Hale, Steven, *Project Paperclip: Nazi Scientists Who Performed Human Experimentation in the U. S.* http://facstaff.gpc.edu/~shale/humanities/composition/assignments/experiment/paperclip.html. Accessed Oct. 7, 2010.

Lacter, Ellen. Website: www.endritualabuse.org/. Accessed October 7, 2010. Much information about ritual abuse. Evidence, indicators, treatment articles. If the Internet resources I have listed here are insufficient, try those on this website.

LisaBri's website: www.dissociatedsurvivor.com. Accessed October 7, 2010. Articles by LisaBri for survivors.

Mind control forums: www.raven1.net/mcf/archv-hm.htm. Accessed October 7, 2010. Many tapes and lectures on mind control, as well as declassified MKULTRA documents.

Neil Brick's SMARTnews: http://ritualabuse.us/. Accessed October 7, 2010. Very thorough website for information about ritual abuse and mind control. Includes talks from survivor conferences.

Rappoport, J. (1995). U.S. mind control experiments on children. Los Angeles, CA Compilation of documentation, including Senate testimony by Valerie Wolf and two of her patients. http://www.newdawnmagazine.com/Articles/Mind%20Control%20Experiments%20on%20Children.html. Accessed Oct. 7, 2010.

Ritual Abuse-torture (RAT) Jeanne Sarson Linda MacDonald's web page for survivors and interested others. www.ritualabusetorture.org/ Accessed October 7, 2010.

Survivorship: www.survivorship.org/ Accessed October 7, 2010. Self-help organization for survivors of ritual abuse and mind control.

Svali First Series: How the Illuminati Programs People. www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_illuminati_svali01a.htm#menu. Accessed October 7, 2010. Online book by a woman self-described as a former Illuminati programmer.

Other important relevant books

Blume, E. S. (1991). *Secret Survivors: Uncovering Incest and its Aftereffects in Women.* New York: Ballantine Books, 1998. Ground-breaking book on the effects of incest on survivors.

Brown, D., Scheflin, A., & Hammond, D. C. (1998). *Memory, Trauma, Treatment and the Law.* New York: Norton. A major sourcebook for all issues regarding the validity of traumatic memories, including recovered ones.

Freyd, J. (1988). *Betrayal Trauma: The Logic of Forgetting Childhood Abuse*. Boston, MA: Harvard University Press. Freyd's theory is that abuse which involves betrayal by caregivers is more likely to be forgotten.

Greenberg, L. S. *Emotion-Focused Therapy: Coaching Clients to Work Through their Feelings.* Washington, DC: American Psychological Association Press. This focus on emotion is helpful for therapists with all clients, including those with dissociative disorders. Includes many exercises for clients.

Pearlman, L. A., & Saakvitne, K. W. (1995) *Transforming the Pain: A Workbook on Vicarious Traumatization.* New York: Norton. This workbook helps therapist assess how working with trauma has affected them.

Siegel, D. J. (1999). *The Developing Mind: How Relationships and the Brain Interact to Shape Who we Are.* New York: Guilford. The neurobiology of development, in particular the effect of trauma. Dense but readable.

van der Kolk, B., McFarlane, A., & Weisaeth, L. (Eds.) (1996). *Traumatic Stress: The Effects of Overwhelming Experience on Mind, Body, and Society.* New York: Guilford Press. Theoretical and research perspectives on the neurobiology of traumatic stress.

APPENDIX 2

Satanic calendar[1]

January 01	NEW YEAR Party, fun, “raising hell.”
January 07	ST WINEBALD DAY, correlates with Christian Epiphany. Gifts are brought to Satan. Infant child, preferably eight days old male, or adult male 15–33 (age divisible by three) is dismembered and consumed.
January 17	SATANIC REVELS Sexual orgies. Virgin girls ages six to eighteen are first given to Bishop or Grand Master, then down the line of hierarchy until all have had a turn.
January 20	ST AGRE’S DAY Magik, divination, spell casting, conjuration of Telal (wicked warrior demon).
February 01 or 02 or 1st full moon of Aquarius	IMBLOC or CANDLEMAS Sexual conjuration of Gelal (incubus) & Lilit (succubus).
Shrovetide	The three days before Ash Wednesday, Christian calendar. Preparation for full Black Mass. Collection of blood (menstrual), water (holy) and firewood (oak). Burning of human flesh which will be used as the ashes on Ash Wednesday, in the Black Mass. A Black Mass is preferably held in a church, using human flesh and blood.
February 25	ST WALPURGIS DAY Communion of blood and dismemberment. Begin collection of victims for March 01, usually with dismemberment of small animal.
March 01	ST EICHATADT DAY Conjuration of Ninkharsag (queen of demons). Homage paid to Ninkharsag and Ninkaszi (horned queen of demons). Drinking of human

	blood for strength. Victims human or animal, any age, any size, human preferred.
March 20–21	SPRING EQUINOX. Feast day. Homage paid to Uggae (god of death). Victim male or female animal.
EASTER	(1) Satanic baptisms: Children dedicated to Satan or Tiamat, given to hierarchy for first vaginal penetration, fingers only. Age six weeks to eleven months.
EASTER	(2) Satanic rebirth: Children ages three to five reborn through cow corpse (goats are sometimes used). (3) High Black Mass. (4) Mock crucifixions (some groups).
April 19 to May 01	PREPARATION FOR SACRIFICE Gathering blood, water and firewood. Preparation of the persons to be sacrificed, by confinement, fasting, sleep deprivation, anointing with sacred oils, putting them in an altered state.
April 21 to May 01	GRAND CLIMAX DA MEUR CORPUS DE BAAHL Sacrifice of female victims age one to twenty-five (unregistered children, prostitutes, street people or volunteers). Celebration goes for several days, depending on how long the gathering and preparation takes.
April 30	WALPURGIS NIGHT (CORPUS DE BAAHL)
May 01	BELTANE Fertility rites, orgies, usually if possible in an open field. Seminal fluid is mixed with dirt and insects and injected into the vagina of a virgin. Their virginity is first sacrificed by the Grand Master or High Priest. Children conceived of this are the children of Tiamat and Dur(Indur). They will hold great power and position in the coven.
June 21	SUMMER SOLSTICE Great celebration with feasting and orgies. Torture, rape and sacrifice of enemies or traitors. Forced labour of breeder, sacrifice and consumption of infant.
June 23	MIDSUMMER'S EVE Magik. Excellent night for black magikians for fire magik.
July 01	DEMON REVELS Blood sacrifice, female victim, human or animal, any age.
July 17–23	Sacrifices of first born males (newborn to eleven months). Communion given with their flesh and blood.
August 02	LUGHNASSADH Worship of moon for magik, practised only by some groups.
August 03	SATANIC REVELS Sexual orgies (anal, oral, vaginal), victim female age 7 to 17.
August 26	Preparation begins for the Feast of the Beast or Marriage to Satan.

	Fasting and anointing with sacred oils of those who are betrothed to Satan. Virgins, male and female, average ages nine to thirteen, but all ages accepted. Some cult members are betrothed to one another.
September 07	FEAST OF THE BEAST Marriage of virgins to Satan. Severe sadistic intercourse with statue of Lucifer or the Grand Master dressed as Satan. Phallus has spikes or razor blades attached to it. Great feasting and orgies take place after all virgins have been given.
September 20–21	MIDNIGHT HOST (FALL EQUINOX) Reaffirmation of sacred vows by hierarchy. Fasting for previous week, cleansing and anointing with sacred oils. Requires personal blood sacrifice, such as finger of the individual, or hands or finger of their own child, or paw of favorite pet. New branding is done. Hands and fingers will be planted in the ground for power, fertility. Followed by feasting and orgy.
October 29	ALL HALLOWS EVE Conjuration of the dead. Sacrifices (human or animal) appropriate for specific demon or dark ancient one. Sex magik.
October 31	SAMAIN Beginning of the new year. Conjuration of the dead. Orgies with demons. Sacrifice of enemies or traitors. Sacrifice by fire. Induced labour of breeder, and sacrifice of infant by dismemberment. Consumption of flesh and blood of infant, as well as placenta.
November 01	HALLOWEEN Sex with demons.
November 04	SATANIC REVELS—see above
December 12–22	WINTER SOLSTICE Impregnation of breeders for use during summer solstice. Animal sacrifice and live burial of victims to celebrate the dark time.
December 24–25	DEMON REVELS (CHRISTMAS) High Grand Climax. Mock birth of Christ and subsequent murder to mother Tiamat. Victim female age thirteen to sixteen. Forced labour of breeder, communion with body and blood of infant.

BIRTHDAYS

Some groups also celebrate the birthday of the individual and the birthday of the hierarchy. These days are very important within Satanic groups as they will always hold the recall programs of the individual.

MOONS

The New Moon is when Satanists "begin things", e.g. a magik spell, or preparation for a sacrifice. The Full Moon is the most powerful time, and the time when they end things, e.g., a spell or a life. Celebrations often held on the Full Moon nearest to the official date of a Satanic holiday, rather than on the day itself. Abduction risk is highest at the New Moon and at the Full Moon.

Satanic celebrations occur from midnight to dawn on the day listed. For example, January 01 means midnight New Year's Eve to dawn New Year's Day.

"Sacrifice" means letting of blood (cutting), not necessarily killing.

A "virgin" is a person who has not "given freely" sexually. Rape does not count.

Though many of these holidays correspond to the traditional pagan holidays the witches, Druids, or Wiccans celebrate, do not confuse these groups with Satanists. Satanists also celebrate Christian holidays but this does not make Christians Satanists. Traditional Pagans do not worship Satan, as they do not have such a deity in their belief systems; "Satan" is strictly a Judeo-Christian manifestation.

Note

1. Spellings vary between groups as the original words are not in English. The Halloween season has a series of related rituals which take place from 29 October to 1 November. Other calendars can be found in Sinason (2011), and on the Survivorship website.

REFERENCES

Baer, R. (2007). *Switching Time: A Doctor's Harrowing Story of Treating a Woman with 17 Personalities.* New York: Crown.

Ball, T. (2008). The use of prayer for inner healing of memories and deliverance with ritual abuse survivors. In: R. Noblitt & P. Noblitt (Eds.), *Ritual Abuse in the 21st Century* (pp. 413–442). Bandon, OR: Robert D. Reed.

Barlow, M. R., & Freyd, J. (2009). Adaptive dissociation: Information processing and response to betrayal. In: P. Dell & J. O'Neil (Eds.), *Dissociation and the Dissociative Disorders* (pp. 93–106). New York: Taylor & Francis.

Birnbaum, M. H., & Thomann, K. (1996). Visual function in multiple personality disorder. (www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pubmed/8888853) *Journal of the American Optometric Association*, *67*(6). Accessed October 7, 2010.

Blizard, R. (1997). Therapeutic alliance with abuser alters in DID: the paradox of attachment to the abuser. *Dissociation, 10*(4): 223–229.

Blume, E. S. (1991). *Secret Survivors: Uncovering Incest and its Aftereffects in Women.* New York: Ballantine Books, 1998.

Bonewits, I. Cult danger evaluation frame: http://www.neopagan.net/ABCDEF.html. Accessed October 7, 2010.

Bower, T. (1987). *The Paperclip Conspiracy: The Hunt for the Nazi Scientists.* Boston, MA: Little Brown.

Braun, B. G. (1988). The BASK model of dissociation. *Dissociation*, *1* (1): 4–23.

Brick, N. Blog and website on ritual abuse: http://ritualabuse.us/smart-conference/conf2002/my-healing-and-helping-others/. Accessed October 7, 2010.

Child Abuse Wiki. Definition of ritual abuse: http://childabusewiki.org/index.php?title=Ritual_Abuse. Last accessed August 15, 2011.

Conway, F., & Siegelman, J. (1978). *Snapping: America's Epidemic of Sudden Personality Change.* Philadelphia, PA: Lippincott.

Chu, J. A. (1998). Riding the therapeutic roller coaster: Stage-oriented treatment for survivors of child abuse. In: *Rebuilding Shattered Lives: The Responsible Treatment of Complex Post Traumatic and Dissociative Disorders* (pp. 132–143). New York: Wiley.

Dell, P. F. (2006). The Multidimensional Inventory of Dissociation (MID): A comprehensive measure of pathological dissociation. *Journal of Trauma & Dissociation*, *7*(2): 77–106.

Extreme Abuse Survey Results: http://eassurvey.wordpress.com/extreme-abuse-survey-final-results/. Accessed October 7, 2010.

Finkelhor, D., Williams, L. M., Burns, N., & Kalinowski, M. (1988). *Sexual Abuse in Day Care: A National Study*. Durham: University of New Hampshire, Family Research Laboratory.

Fotheringham, T. (2008). Healing from ritual abuse and mind control:. 3-DVD Set. Available from Ellen Lacter's website: www.endritualabuse.org.

Frankel, A. S., & O'Hearn, T. (1996). Similarities in responses to extreme and unremitting stress: cultures in communities under siege. *Psychotherapy*, *33*(3): 485–502.

Fraser, G. A. (1991). The dissociative table technique: A strategy for working with ego states in dissociative disorders and ego-state therapy. *Dissociation*, *4*: 205–213.

Freyd, J. (1996). *Betrayal Trauma*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Goodman, L., & Peters, J. (1995). Persecutory alters and ego states: Protectors, friends and allies. *Dissociation*, *8*(2): 91–99.

Gould, C. (1988). Signs and symptoms of ritual abuse in children. Available at: www.kalimunro.com/ritual_abuse.html. Accessed October 7, 2010.

Gould, C. (1995). Denying ritual abuse of children. *The Journal of Psychohistory*, *22*(3). Available online at http://ritualabuse.us/ritualabuse/articles/denying-ritual-abuse-of-children-catherine-gould/. Accessed October 7, 2010.

Goulding, R. A., & Schwartz, R. C. (1995). *The Mosaic Mind*. New York: Norton.

Greenberg, L. S. (2002). *Emotion-Focused Therapy: Coaching Clients to Work Through Their Feelings*. Washington, DC: American Psychological Association Press.

Guardian (2009). Forced labour and rape, the new face of slavery in America. www.guardian.co.uk/world/2009/nov/22/people-trafficking-usa-prostitution-ohio. Accessed October 7, 2010.

Hawkins, T. R. (2010). *Dissociative Identity Disorder. Volume 1, Psychological Dynamics*. (p. 62). Grottoes, VA: RCM.

Herman, J. (1992). *Trauma and Recovery*, New York: Basic Books, pp. 133–154.

Hoffman, W. (1993). Ascent from evil: Toward healing the wounds of Satanic cult abuse. Unpublished manuscript.

Hughes, J. R., Kuhlman, D. T, Fichtner, C. G., & Gruenfeld, M. J. (1990). Brain mapping in a case of multiple personality. *Clinical Electroencephalography, 21*(4): 200–209. (www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pubmed/2225470). Accessed October 7, 2010.

International Society for the Study of Trauma and Dissociation: www.isst-d.org/. Accessed October 7, 2010.

Kahaner, L. (1988). *Cults That Kill*. New York: Warner.

Kelley, S. J. (1988). Ritualistic abuse of children: dynamics and impact. *Cultic Studies Journal*, *5*(2): 228.

Kluft, R. P. (1993). Basic principles in conducting the psychotherapy of multiple personality disorder. In: R. P. Kluft & C. G. Fine (Eds.), *Clinical Perspectives on Multiple Personality Disorder* (pp. 19–50). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Kluft, R. P. (1997). On the treatment of the traumatic memories of DID patients: Always? Never? Sometimes? Now? Later? *Dissociation, 10* (2): 80–90.

Lacter, E. website: http://ritualabuse.us. Accessed October 7, 2010.

Lacter, E. (2011). Torture-based mind control: psychological mechanisms and psychotherapeutic approaches to overcoming mind control. In: O. Badouk Epstein, J. Schwartz, & R. Wingfield Schwartz (Eds.), *Ritual Abuse and Mind Control: The Manipulation of Attachment Needs* (pp. 128–129). London: Karnac.

Lifton, R. J. (1986). *The Nazi Doctors: Medical Killing and the Psychology of Genocide.* New York: Basic Books.

LisaBri: website www.dissociatedsurvivor.com. Accessed October 7, 2010.

Los Angeles County Commission for Women's Ritual Abuse Task Force report (1991). http://ritualabuse.us/ritualabuse/articles/report-of-the-ritual-abuse-task-force-los-angeles-county-commission-for-women/. Accessed Oct. 7, 2010.

"Many Voices" (contact http://www.manyvoicespress.com/newsletter.html.) Accessed October 7, 2010.

Miller, S. D. (1989). Optical differences in cases of multiple personality disorder. (www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pubmed/2760599) *Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease, 177* (8): 480–486. Accessed October 7, 2010.

Miller, S. D., & Triggiano, P. J. (1992). The psychophysiological investigation of multiple personality disorder: review and update. *Americal Journal of Clinical Hypnosis*, *35*(1): 47–61. (www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pubmed/1442640). Accessed October 7, 2010.

Miller, S. D., Blackburn, T., Scholes, G., White, G. L., & Mamalis, N. (1991). Optical differences in multiple personality disorder: A second look. *Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease,* 179 (3):132–135. (www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pubmed/1997659). Accessed October 7, 2010.

MKUltra declassified document: http://abuse-of-power.org/modules/content/index.php?id=31. Accessed October 7, 2010.

Nijenhuis, E., & Den Boer, J. (2009). Psychobiology of traumatization and trauma-related structural dissociation of the personality. In: P. Dell & J. O'Neil (Eds.), *Dissociation and the Dissociative Disorders* (pp. 337–366). New York: Taylor & Francis.

Noblitt, J. R. (1998). *Accessing Dissociated Mental States.* Self-published monograph.

Noblitt, R. & Noblitt, P. P. (2008). *Ritual Abuse in the 21st Century*. Bandon, OR: Robert D. Reed.

Oglevie, S. http://truthbeknown2000.tripod.com/Truthbeknown2000/id23/html. Accessed October 7, 2010.

Oksana, C. (1994). *Safe Passage to Healing: A Guide for Survivors of Ritual Abuse.* Lincoln, NE: iUniverse.com, 2001.

Patterson, C. H. (2000). Empathy, warmth and genuineness in psychotherapy: A review of reviews. In C. H. "Pat" Patterson. *Understanding Psychotherapy: Fifty Years of Client-Centered Theory and Practice*. Ross-on-Wye, UK: PCCS Books. See www.sageofasheville.com/pub_downloads/EMPATHY_WARMTH_AND_GENUINESS_IN_PSYCHOTHERAPY.pdf. Accessed October 7, 2010.

Pazder, L., & Smith, M. (1989). *Michelle Remembers*. New York: Pocketbooks.

Pearlman, L. A., & Saakvitne, K. (1995). *Trauma and the Therapist: Countertransference and Vicarious Traumatization in Psychotherapy with Incest Survivors*. New York: W. W. Norton.

Positron Emitter Detector machine photograph: http://tis.eh.doe.gov/ohre/multimedia/photos/bnl/index.html. Accessed by Rutz, link no longer working.

Putnam, F. (1989). *Diagnosis and Treatment of Multiple Personality Disorder.* New York: Guilford Press.

Putnam, F., Zahn, T. P., & Post, R. M. (1990). Differential autonomic nervous system activity in multiple personality disorder. *Psychiatry Research, 31* (3): 251–260. (www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pubmed/2333357). Accessed October 7, 2010.

Riseman, J. Simplifying complex programming. www.survivorship.org/resources/articles/programming.html. Accessed October 7, 2010.

Rose, E. P. (1996). *Reaching for the Light: A Guide for Ritual Abuse Survivors and Their Therapists.* Cleveland, OH: Pilgrim Press.

Ross, C. (1997). *Dissociative Identity Disorder: Diagnosis, Clinical Features, and Treatment of Multiple Personality* (2nd edn). New York: John Wiley.

Ross, C. (2000). *Bluebird: Deliberate Creation of Multiple Personalities by Psychiatrists*. Richardson, TX: Manitou Communications.

Rutz, C. (2001a). *A Nation Betrayed: The Chilling True Story of Secret Cold War Experiments Performed on Our Children and Other Innocent People.* Grass Lake, MI: Fidelity Publishing. (http://my.dmci.net/~casey/). Accessed October 7, 2010.

Rutz, C. (2001b). Story presented at SMART conference. http://ritualabuse.us/smart-conference/conf2001/my-story-intertwined-with-documentation/. Accessed October 7, 2010.

Rutz, C., Becker, T., Overkamp, B., & Karriker, W. (2008). Exploring commonalities reported by adult survivors of extreme abuse: preliminary empirical findings. In: R. Noblitt & P. Noblitt (Eds.), *Ritual Abuse in the 21st Century* (pp. 491–540). Bandon, OR: Robert D. Reed.

Sands, S. H. (1994). "What is dissociated?" *Dissociation*, *7*(3): 145–152.

Scheflin, A., & Opton, E. (1978). *The Mind Manipulators*. USA: Grosset & Dunlap.

Sinason, V. (2011). What has changed in twenty years? In: O. Badouk Epstein, J. Schwartz & R. Wingfield Schwartz (Eds.), *Ritual Abuse and Mind Control: The Manipulation of Attachment Needs* (pp. 1–37). London: Karnac.

Spiegel, D. (1993). Multiple posttraumatic personality disorder. In: R. P. Kluft & C. G. Fine (Eds.), *Clinical Perspectives on Multiple Personality Disorder* (pp. 87–100). Washington, DC: American Psychiatric Press.

Steele, K. (1989). Sitting with the shattered soul. *Pilgrimage: Journal of Personal Exploration and Psychotherapy*, *15*(6): 19–25.

Steinberg, M. (2000). *The Stranger in the Mirror*. New York: HarperCollins.

Survivorship: www.survivorship.org/. Accessed October 7, 2010.

Svali (2000). *Svali First Series: How the Illuminati Programs People*. www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/esp_sociopol_illuminati_svali01a.htm#menu. Accessed October 7, 2010.

Van der Hart, O., & Nijenhuis, E. (1999). Bearing witness to uncorroborated trauma: The clinician's development of reflective belief. *Professional Psychology: Research and Practice*, *30*(1): 37–44.

Van der Hart, O., Nijenhuis, E. R. S., & Steele, K. (2006). *The Haunted Self: Structural Dissociation and the Treatment of Chronic Traumatization.* New York: W. W. Norton.

Wikipedia re. Donald Ewen Cameron: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Donald_Ewen_Cameron. Accessed October 7, 2010.

Woodsun, G. (1998). *The Ultimate Challenge: A Revolutionary, Sane and Sensible Response to Ritualistic and Cult-Related Abuse*. Laramie, WY: Action Resources International.

INDEX

abuse *see also*: mind control
  child(hood), xiii–xiv, 9, 13–15, 17, 23, 29, 34, 46, 51, 142, 173, 175–176, 217, 239, 284
  cult, xv, 4, 9, 32, 158, 186–187, 196, 254
  emotional, xv, xix, 28, 211, 216
  physical, xv, xix, 11–12, 211, 214, 216, 230, 236
  psychological, 9, 11
  ritual, xiii–xiv, xvi, xix–xxiv, 1–3, 5–13, 17, 19, 24, 29–33, 35–38, 41, 43, 45–47, 50, 52, 55, 57–58, 65–67, 73–74, 85, 91–92, 116, 125, 131–136, 138, 142, 144–147, 149–150, 152–153, 157, 159, 161–163, 169, 171, 173, 175–176, 178, 185–188, 191–197, 200–202, 206, 210, 212, 214–220, 222–223, 225–226, 230, 234–236, 238, 240–248, 251, 253–255, 257–258, 260, 265–267, 270, 280–285
  satanic, 93, 196, 216
  sexual, xv, xix, 2–3, 5, 7, 11–12, 16, 31, 45, 57, 65–67, 81, 97–98, 127, 141, 173, 178, 182, 198, 208, 210–211, 213–214, 216, 219, 224–226, 228–233, 236, 242, 256
  spiritual, xv, xix, 57, 66–67, 74, 141, 211, 246
  verbal, 35, 66, 143
Abuse and Mind Control Special Interest Group, 147
affect, 95, 135, 152, 162, 177, 208, 221, 258, 261
aggression, 79, 106, 135, 138–139, 168, 222
alcoholic(s), 3, 15, 31, 37, 84, 136, 208, 220, 281
alien, xiv, xvi, 19, 25, 46, 50–51, 55, 95, 125, 128, 132, 149, 189, 197, 207
  abduction, 55, 197, 207
alter, 11, 14, 19–30, 33–42, 45–55, 57, 64–68, 72–85, 87, 89–90, 92, 94–97, 100–112, 114–117, 119–121, 123–125, 127–148, 150–153, 155–162, 164–171, 174–192, 194–195, 197–202, 205–208, 210, 212–213, 215, 218–234, 237–240, 243–245, 248, 250–261, 263–268, 272, 275–277, 279–281, 284–285
  child, 20–21, 25, 33–35, 58, 75, 101, 107, 110, 120, 126, 129, 139, 153, 157, 180–181, 184, 187–188, 201, 213, 219, 222, 225, 233, 239, 259, 275, 280
  Firstborn, 101, 250
  Gatekeeper, 47, 50, 91, 100, 250
  shell, 28, 33
  spinner, 46, 52, 157, 200
American Freedom of Information Act, 15
American Psychological Association, 29
amnesia, 5, 12–14, 24, 36, 89, 167, 178
anger, 15, 34, 36, 41–43, 69, 75, 79, 103, 130, 135, 138–139, 143, 147, 200, 215, 220–223, 227, 236–238, 258–259, 263, 269, 273
anxiety, 6, 15, 26, 132, 134, 167, 173, 190, 199, 219, 258–259, 263

attachment, xvii, xx, xxiii, 22–23, 74, 80, 91, 126, 139, 145–148, 151–154, 161, 210, 212, 221

Baer, R., 279–280, 287, 295
Ball, T., 146, 149, 151–153, 295
Bar/Bat Mitzvah, 112
Barlow, M. R., 21, 295
Becker, T., xx, 29, 188, 298
Beelzebub, 60–62, 65–66, 143
Beltane, 292
Birnbaum, M. H., 40, 295
Black Santerian, 94
Blackburn, T., 40, 297
Blizard, R., 138, 295
Bluebird, 15–16
Blume, E. S., 30–31, 225, 234, 236, 290, 295
Bonewits, I., 12, 120, 295
borderline personality disorder, 2, 32, 208, 222
Bower, T., 17, 295
Bowlby Centre, xvi
Braun, B. G., 7, 258, 295
Brick, N., 191, 290, 295
Buddha, 153
Burns, N., 9, 296

Cameron, Dr D. E., 16
Campaign for the Understanding and Inclusion of DID, xvii
Candlemas, 291
caregiver, xxi, 13, 23, 100, 170, 206, 221–222, 237, 269, 273–274
case studies *see also*: LisaBri
  Adriana Green, 68–72
  Jen Callow, 134, 144, 234, 268, 272, 275
  Jennifer, 2–3, 5, 7, 13, 35, 161, 180, 190, 192, 197, 214, 226–234, 239, 257, 261, 267, 280
  LisaBri, xvi, 43, 136–137, 153, 198–199, 215–217, 267, 281
    Julie, 136
    Miss Pain, 137
  Lorraine, 1–7, 178, 180, 192, 196, 198, 257
    Big Susie, 1
    Little Susie, 1
    Morgue, 1
  Miranda, 211–212
  Old Lady, 57–58, 64, 66, 72, 149, 243
  Teresa, 2–5, 7, 153, 186, 191, 208, 214–215, 221–222, 252, 267
    Stuffy, 2
  Tony, 2–3, 5, 132, 150, 175, 214, 218
    Axl, 2
    Tiny Tony, 2
Catholic *see*: Christian
Central Intelligence Agency (CIA), 13, 15–17, 72, 106, 202–203
Child & Youth Mental Health Services, 226
Child Abuse Wiki, 9, 11, 295
Christian, 9, 58, 60, 65–66, 93, 110, 116, 146–147, 149–150, 152–153, 156, 216, 243, 245, 291, 294
  Catholic, 93–94, 279
  Judeo-, 116
Chu, J. A., 218, 287, 296
Churchill, W., 18
cognitive behavioral treatment (CBT), 15
Conan Doyle, Sir A., 18
Conrad, J., 154
conscious(ness), 11, 13, 21–22, 28, 33, 35–36, 42, 74, 84, 89, 90, 126, 147, 178–179, 185, 194, 237, 251, 261
    see also: unconscious(ness)
  awareness, 13, 15, 29, 186, 233, 260
Conspiracy Theory, 13
Conway, F., 12, 295
Corpus de Baahl, 292
countertransference, 22, 222, 248
    see also: transference
Crowley, A., 54
cult(s), xv, xvii, xxiii, 2–7, 9, 11–15, 17, 25, 29–30, 32, 45, 47, 52, 54–55, 74, 81, 86–89, 91, 94, 97–98, 110–112, 115–116, 119–120, 122–123, 126–127, 131, 133, 135–137, 140–143, 147, 152–153, 156, 158, 163–165, 169–170, 174–175, 177–179, 181–189, 191, 195–196, 197–199, 202, 205, 207, 210, 212–214, 216–218, 222, 224, 226, 229–230, 233, 240, 244, 254, 282, 293 *see also*: abuse
  Satanic/Luciferian, 8–9, 12, 66, 92, 115, 189, 196, 210

Dahmer, J., 10
death, 4–5, 7, 26, 32, 62–63, 85–86, 93–94, 110–111, 113–114, 121, 138, 140, 165, 186, 196, 211–212, 216, 226, 231, 244, 246, 250, 257, 262, 279
  fear of, 188
  magik, 93
Dell, P. F., 37, 287, 295–296
Den Boer, J., 21, 297
depression, 2, 22–23, 26, 54, 114, 132, 188, 190, 212, 240–241, 279
development(al), 34, 77, 81, 150, 166, 207, 221, 237, 269
  child/childhood, xx, 46, 74, 89, 97, 126
  intellectual, 89
dissociative, xiv–xv, xx–xxi, 5–7, 13–14, 16–20, 22–27, 29, 34, 36–37, 42–43, 45, 48–49, 51, 75, 77, 81, 94–95, 99–100, 126, 138, 146–147, 150, 152–154, 173–174, 177, 187, 191–194, 198, 201, 210, 215, 217–219, 221, 226, 233, 235–236, 240–241, 248–249, 251–252, 254–255, 258, 263, 267, 270, 283–285
  disorder not otherwise specified (DDNOS), xxi, 13–14, 20, 23–24, 28, 30–31, 36–37, 41, 135, 177, 240, 251, 268
  identity disorder (DID), xv, xvii, xxi, 2, 13–14, 20–21, 23–25, 27–28, 30–32, 36–38, 40–43, 92, 116, 133, 135–136, 139, 147, 169, 207–208, 226, 229, 240, 251–252, 256, 258, 264, 267–268, 275, 282

Dissociative Disorders Discussion Forum, 208
Dissociative Disorders Discussion List, 206
Dissociative Experiences Scale (DES), 37, 39
Dissociative Table Technique, 39
drugs, 7, 10–12, 14–16, 49, 51, 53, 67, 69, 74, 76–77, 79, 82–84, 95, 101, 103–104, 107, 109–110, 112, 115, 119, 121, 123, 127–128, 136, 141–142, 177, 182, 184–186, 188–189, 195, 198–199, 201, 212, 214, 229, 244, 258–259, 261, 281

Earle, A., 235
Easter, 62, 66, 75, 139, 184, 292
ego, 14, 28, 217, 225, 233, 270
Extreme Abuse Survey, 29, 188, 202, 296

False Memory Syndrome Foundation, 7
Fichtner, C. G., 40, 296
Finkelhor, D., 9, 296
Fort Meade, 203
Fotheringham, T., xvi, 33, 47–48, 51, 54–55, 66, 73–74, 123, 169, 175, 210, 280, 296
Frankel, A. S., 139, 296
Fraser, G. A., 39, 296
Freedom of Information Act, 15, 202
Freyd, J., 13, 21, 290, 295–296

Gelal, 291
Gnostic, 9, 66
Goodman, L., 138, 296
Gould, C., 29, 31–32, 296
Goulding, R. A., 42, 135, 221, 287, 296
Grand Master, 109, 112–113, 291–293
grief, 5, 208, 227, 236–239, 242, 269
Gruenfeld, M. J., 40, 296
Guardian, 17, 296
guilt, xxiii, 7, 29, 74, 81, 114, 142, 184, 197, 212, 222, 236, 242–244, 279

Halloween, 61–62, 189, 293–294
hate, 42, 58, 61, 125, 142, 152, 208, 227, 236, 242, 246, 268
Hawkins, T. R., 146–148, 153, 288, 296
heaven, 60, 65–66, 78, 84, 110, 147–148
hell, 3, 60–63, 65–66, 72, 84, 107, 125, 137, 142, 166, 188–189, 238, 244–245, 279
Herman, J., 223, 250, 296
High Priestess, 3, 115, 145, 178, 211, 278
Hindu, 107
Hitler, A., 140, 143, 153
Hoffman, W., 196, 209, 296
Hughes, J. R., 40, 296
hypnosis, 11, 16–17, 53, 57, 74, 84, 137, 267

Imbloc, 115, 291
incest, xiii–xiv, 17, 30–32, 174, 216, 225, 227, 234, 236, 242, 255
Intensive Trauma Therapy, Inc., 206
International Society for the Study of Dissociation, 8
International Society for the Study of Trauma and Dissociation (ISSTD), 14, 37, 147, 288, 296
intervention, xix, xxii, 49, 130, 136, 144, 153, 156, 189–190, 222, 243–244, 247, 252, 254
  non-, 66–67
  spiritual, 147, 149
introjection, 34, 45–46, 51–52, 54, 140, 151–152, 188, 284
Islam, 128

Jefferson, T., 18
Jesus, 60, 64, 66–67, 125, 144, 146, 149, 153, 156, 243, 245
Justice Institute, 2

Kabbalah, 92, 95, 100–101, 103, 106, 111–114, 116, 165, 169, 212
Kahaner, L., 9, 296
Kalinowski, M., 9, 296
Karriker, W., xx, 29, 188, 298
Katz, S., xvi, 47–48, 50–55, 68, 91, 117, 123, 133, 135, 153, 158–159, 186, 189, 196, 201–202, 210–211, 214, 226, 233, 243, 262, 265, 275
Kelley, S. J., 9, 296
Kluft, R. P., 40, 217, 251, 288, 296
Ku Klux Klan, 17, 30, 131
Kuhlman, D. T., 40, 296

Lacter, E., 12, 30–32, 150–153, 208, 290, 296–297
Lady Luck, 66
Lennon, J., 54
life, xv, xxi, 5, 7, 20–24, 26–28, 36, 47–49, 62–63, 75–77, 79, 81, 84–85, 89, 92–93, 100, 112, 116, 120, 128, 130–131, 134–135, 137–138, 140, 143–144, 149–150, 154, 158, 165, 167, 173, 181, 184, 188, 194, 199, 211, 213, 216, 222–224, 226, 231, 234, 236, 238–239, 243–244, 246–247, 250–251, 258, 261–262, 264–266, 270–272, 275–277, 279–282, 285
  adult, 22, 88, 177, 187
  after-, 5, 128, 245
  -threatening, 18–19, 24
Lifton, R. J., 18, 297
Lilit, 291
London Voluntary Resource Centre, xvii
Lord's Resistance Army, 125
Los Angeles County Commission for Women's Ritual Abuse Task Force report, 11, 297
Lucifer, 9, 12, 49, 58, 60, 62, 64–66, 72, 92–95, 99, 112, 115–116, 120, 122, 149, 151, 189, 210, 293
Lughnassadh, 292

magic/magik, 9, 39, 77–79, 81, 83–84, 93–94, 97, 99–102, 105, 107–108, 111–114, 117, 119, 122, 125, 130, 169, 171, 180–181, 291–294 *see also*: death, sex(ual), symbol
  stage, 55, 73, 95, 107, 119

Mamalis, N., 40, 297
"Many Voices", 38, 288, 297
Marduk, 93
masochism, 108–109, 230–231
  sado-, 30, 226, 233
McCollum, S., 195
Middleman technique, 38
Miller, S. D., 40, 87, 297
mind control, xiii–xvii, xix–xxiv, 1, 5–17, 19, 24–27, 29–36, 39–43, 45–46, 48, 50, 52–53, 57, 64, 66, 68, 72–74, 78, 84–86, 90, 93–94, 103, 116, 119–120, 122, 124–125, 127, 129, 131–133, 135, 137–140, 143, 146, 148–150, 152, 154–157, 159, 161–163, 166, 169, 173–177, 180, 182, 186–188, 190–195, 201–202, 205–206, 209–210, 212–213, 215, 218–223, 225, 233–239, 241–242, 244–249, 251–255, 257–258, 260, 263, 265, 267, 280–281, 283–285
MKUltra, 15–16, 53, 202–203, 290, 297
Mohammed, 153
Morgan, A., 162
Morgan, R., xvi, 13, 169
mother, 2–3, 5, 34–35, 42, 52, 62, 69, 91, 97–99, 101, 115, 122, 129–130, 135, 138, 142, 161, 166, 181, 185, 193–195, 198, 210, 213, 216, 219, 222, 228–231, 237–238, 240, 244, 253, 256, 276–277, 279–280, 293
Multidimensional Instrument of Dissociation (MID), 37
multiple, 16, 19–29, 33–39, 41–43, 48, 67, 84, 89, 97, 103, 131, 138–139, 163, 176, 193, 208, 228, 252, 269, 272, 274, 280, 284–285
  personality disorder (MPD), xxi, 1–2, 4, 21, 30, 176–177, 217, 221, 227, 236
  reality disorder, 193
murder, xix, 1, 4–7, 13, 55, 65, 67, 81, 95, 126–127, 129, 141, 180, 195–197, 208, 210, 222, 242, 293

Nazi, 15, 17–18, 72, 140, 146, 151
  neo-, 17
near-death experience (NDE), 6, 244–245, 262
necrophilia, 6, 108–109, 226
Nijenhuis, E., 21, 207, 288, 297–298
Ninkharsag, 291
Ninkhaszi, 291
Noblitt, J. R., 11, 29, 157–158, 162, 289, 297
Noblitt, P. P., 11, 289, 297
nymphomaniac, 108

Obama, B., 151
Occam's Razor, 153
occult, 17–18, 37, 57, 67, 92–93, 112, 117, 183, 245
Oglevie, S., 119, 148, 150, 161, 297
O'Hearn, T., 139, 296
Oksana, C., 238, 289, 297
Operation Paperclip, 15, 290
Opton, E., 204, 298
Orwell, G., xiii, xvi
Overkamp, B., xx, 29, 188, 298
Oxford English Dictionary, 10

Paracelsus Trust, xvi
paranoid, 12, 190–191, 240
parent(s), xv, xx, 3–5, 7, 10, 13, 17–18, 31, 48, 52, 58–59, 97–98, 103, 128–129, 135, 171, 183, 208, 210, 221–222, 234, 237, 253
Patterson, C. H., 209, 297
Pazder, L., 9, 297
Pearlman, L. A., 6, 247, 290, 297
pedophilia, 30, 74, 81, 225–226, 230–234, 285
Peters, J., 138, 296
Peterson, J., 7, 252
Portman Clinic, xvi
Positron Emitter Detector, 204, 297
Post, R. M., 40, 297
post traumatic stress disorder (PTSD), 36, 67, 167, 173
Putnam, F. W., 40, 288, 297

rage, 69, 109, 138, 208, 217, 223, 237–238, 242
rape, xix, 6, 12, 35, 51–53, 66–67, 98, 105, 107, 109, 112, 114–115, 120–121, 123, 125, 127, 135, 141, 197–198, 200, 207, 213–214, 216, 227–228, 232, 237, 242–243, 256, 278, 292, 294
Reagor, P., 30–31, 176
Restoration in Christ Ministries, 146
Riseman, J., xvi, 10–11, 15, 46–48, 51, 85–86, 160, 163, 171, 298
Rose, E. P., 246–247, 289, 298
Ross, C., 16, 135, 289, 298
Rutz, C., xvi, xx, 16–17, 29, 53, 188, 202–205, 288–289, 298

Saakvitne, K., 6, 247, 290, 297
sadism, xxi, 6, 10–12, 97, 216, 221, 222, 230–232, 293
Samain, 293
Sands, S. H., 221–222, 298
Satan(ism), 2, 8–12, 30, 32, 35, 45, 49, 51–52, 54, 60–62, 64–67, 75, 81, 86–88, 92–94, 99–100, 105, 110–113, 116–117, 120, 122, 132, 135–136, 141, 145–151, 153, 156, 161, 169, 178, 180, 185, 188–189, 196, 210–211, 213, 216, 244–245, 279, 291–294
Scheflin, A., 204, 298
schizophrenia, 2, 5, 25, 136, 201
Scholes, G., 40, 297
Schwartz, R. C., 42, 135, 221, 287, 296
Schweitzer, A., 154
self, xiii, 5, 18, 20, 23, 69, 74, 151, 153, 168, 227, 238, 246, 270–271, 279
  -care, 135
  core, 89
  -destruct(ive), xiii, 15, 82, 89, 164, 188, 190, 236
  -development, 221
  -esteem, 111, 174, 234
  -forgiveness, 243–244
  -harm, xxi, 6, 25, 30, 50–51, 53–54, 106, 108, 128, 137, 144, 153, 156, 159, 173, 175, 187–189, 200, 256, 285
  -hatred, 142, 236

  -hood, 23
  -identity, 152
  -injury, 135, 187
  -mutilation, 31, 177, 221
  -state, 150–152
Set, 93–94
sex(ual), xiii, xv, xix, xxiii, 31, 35–36, 41, 57, 59–61, 65–66, 76, 79–81, 84–86, 92, 100–101, 105–106, 108–109, 111, 115, 120–121, 126, 134, 142, 161, 188, 198–199, 208, 211, 218–219, 221–223, 225–237, 242–245, 258–259, 261, 263, 274, 278, 285, 291–293 *see also*: abuse
  favoritism, 12
  magik, 93, 108, 111, 114, 293
  manipulation, 12
  perversion, 30
  slave(ry), 13–14, 74, 81, 83, 119
Shaler, E., 215
Siegelman, J., 12, 295
Sinason, V., xv–xvi, 289, 294, 298
SMART conference, 171, 202
Smith, M., 9, 297
Spiegel, D., 40, 298
spin, 32, 46, 52–53, 77, 92, 95, 97, 103–104, 111, 133–134, 157–158, 200, 239, 282, 284
splitting, xxi, 14, 23, 34, 38, 50–51, 66–68, 72, 75–76, 79, 83, 87, 91–92, 94–95, 97, 99–102, 105–106, 108, 110, 119, 125, 136, 142–143, 145, 151, 153, 177, 223, 228, 232–233, 244, 250, 256, 261, 280, 285
St Agre, 291
St Eichatadt, 291
St Walpurgis, 291–292
St Winebald, 291
Stalin, J., 153
Steele, K., 21, 242, 288, 298
Steinberg, M., 38, 288, 298
Stockholm Syndrome, 142
suicide, xxi, 1–2, 4–7, 25, 50–52, 54, 82, 88, 104, 111, 114–115, 117, 128, 144, 153, 156, 161, 164, 173–174, 177, 180, 187–189, 191–192, 196, 199–200, 212, 221, 229–230, 238, 244, 255, 256, 285
  bomber, 17, 128
Survivorship, 10, 15, 48, 85, 117, 171, 290, 294, 298
Svali, 33, 140, 142–143, 290, 298
Swart, C., 206
symbol(-ism), xxii, 9, 32–33, 58, 60, 76–77, 80–81, 93, 101, 103, 112–113, 211, 264
  magikal, 97, 99, 101–102, 112

Tavistock Clinic, xvi
Telal, 291
Theophostic Prayer, 149
Thomann, K., 40, 295
Three Fates, 66
Tiamat, 292–293
Torah, 92
torture, xv–xvi, xix, xxi, 4, 6, 10–13, 17, 35, 41, 47, 52, 57, 66–68, 74, 92–94, 102, 105–106, 108–110, 113, 115–117, 119–125, 128, 132, 140–142, 165, 179, 181, 188–189, 191, 196, 198, 201, 208, 210, 213, 226, 235–238, 245–246, 262, 272, 292
transference, 139, 208, 222–223, 248–249 *see also*: countertransference
Treating Abuse Today, 7
Tree of Life, 77–78, 112, 170
Triggiano, P. J., 40, 297

unconscious(ness), 12, 48, 90, 168, 251, 263 *see also*: conscious(ness)

Van der Hart, O., 21, 207, 288, 298
violence, 11–13, 18, 31, 72, 75, 79, 89, 120, 124, 210, 212, 221, 226, 230, 232–234, 237

Wakefield, J., 29
Walker, C., xiii, 298
Walpurgis, 291–292
War, 18, 57, 67–68, 146
  Cold, 15–16, 175
  Second World, 86, 90, 139
White, G. L., 40, 297
Wikipedia, 10, 16, 252, 298
Williams, L. M., 9, 296
Woodsun, G., 182–183, 298

Zahn, T. P., 40, 297